Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

svalispeaksagain 9:07 pm on August 28, 2018

Tags: healing (43), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Working with internal pantheons

Note: this article describes how one group programs internal systems and is not meant to comprehensively describe programming in all groups; survivors from other groups may have internal leadership structures that very from this.

In the occultic group I was raised in, leadership in various systems was ranked in various ways. One ruling group in each presentation was a pantheon, or “council of the gods” that oversaw various functions and roles within the system.

For the white, or presentation systems, this pantheon was a Greek pantheon, with numerous gods from Greek mythology represented; in the black, or cult presentation, a Roman pantheon oversaw executive functions. For instance, in this system:

- Jupiter(Zeus) oversaw the meting out of punishment and rewards and oversaw overall system integrity
- Hera oversaw witchcraft
- Poseidon oversaw amnesia (with a spear that would spear fetal and infant parts if the amnesia broke)
- Aphrodite (Venus) oversaw sexual programs
- Minerva oversaw internal “justice” and gave counsel to parts and system controllers on how to best act within situations to avoid punishment
- Nemesis oversaw vengeance and psychic killing, with the help of Thantos and Phobos (terror programs)
- Chaos brought internal confusion to prevent the degradation of programs, and external confusion to help promote agendas during missions
- Morpheus oversaw dream programs (installed in delta state), including those sequences used for reprogramming at night
- Hypnos oversaw suggestibility and believing everything the cult programmers told parts
- Prometheus (Vulcan) oversaw punishment protocols that linked back to the core
- Saturn oversaw reprogramming systems

- Pan oversaw keeping the internal children happy and engaged in Neverland, to prevent their coming out unexpectedly or without authorization

Follow •••

Beneath each of these parts were various controllers who reported to them. These parts lived within internal “temples” dedicated to each, where internal daily sacrifices were conducted (on a rotating basis, starting at 2 am), to keep the spiritual power that drove the programming at a high level.

The pantheons were programmed to believe that they were a wise leadership council whose responsibility was to lead the systems into ascension, and to prevent the degradation of programming (and so, prevent resulting punishment). These parts were internalized first prenatally, with actors talking to the birth mother and fetus, and sharing who they were. During infancy, the programming was installed further, with the programmers dressing in a costume representing the part coming to the infant’s bedside, talking kindly to the infant and sharing who they were, and what they did. They would each bond to the part that had been created (through severe trauma), and would tie a golden cord between themselves and the infant, saying “you are me, and I am you”, as they spoke the scripts accorded to the part.

Behind these pantheons is a third pantheon, consisting of the “ancients” and “those who existed before time”. These “beings of light” were part of the core system, and were first installed prenatally by shining a bright light on the abdomen of the birth mother. The fetus then heard the words “I am a god, and have come to bring you light and enlightenment” and other scripts. This “council of light” internalized was very unemotional, was programmed to believe that it represented “universal consciousness” and would “bring the child into her destiny.” These light beings spoke “prophecies” over the fetus, and later, over the infant, and over time, were internalized.

They sounded quite benevolent, logical and empathetic. They were considered “guides” that the child was to listen to and receive direction from; and they consistently rewarded obedience to the Order (called the path to ascension) and punished instantly any disobedience to group directives (considered the path to descension, which would end in “utter darkness”).

Over early childhood, the programs for all three pantheons were installed more robustly, with re-enactments of Greek, Roman and ancient festivals, and with being dressed in the appropriate robes or dresses depending upon the role being played. By late childhood, I was able to play the role for other infants in the facility, and help with their programming, just as I had been programmed. When in the role, the internal part would rotate out, and I actually *believed* I was that god; it was no “act” but instead, allowing an external dramatization of the internal reality.

Healing of the pantheons has involved getting to know the histories of each one, including the traumas that created them, and how they were programmed. It has meant accepting each, valuing the gifts and abilities they bring to the system, and helping them to see that the old roles are no longer needed; but there are new and better options for them. Each one has had specific conflicts and concerns about giving up their old roles, and healing has meant allowing them to journal, create art, and verbally process their feelings and memories. It can take time to choose to give up or change an important job or role inside, and it is important to offer safe alternatives.

It has meant trying to accept without judgment or criticism what the parts have shared, especially when it conflicts with what the presentation system believes. With time and healing, these parts have added great stability to help to the whole.

Healing has involved healing the infants that these parts came from. Often, high controllers such as these will have a small infant attached to or near them (who during reprogramming, are retraumatized with the original traumas by VR to keep the programming intact). Developing trust with these parts, helping these infants come into present reality, and finding internal safe parts willing to help hold and nurture these infants, has helped to promote intra-system cooperation and mutual caring.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4
September 30, 2021
In "healing"

Presenter Systems/Host Systems Programming
April 15, 2019
In "mind control"

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here...

← Why Getting Memories Back Can Be Difficult

What My Healing Journey Has Been Like →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

svalispeaksagain 12:13 am on June 11, 2019

Why the core or original child may fear healing

While some literature presents the “core”, “original self” or “original child” (I’ll use the term “core” in the rest of this post as being protected from trauma, the reality is that in groups that use mind control, the core will also undergo extensive programming. This programming can include:

- **Programming to fear feeling intense emotions based upon traumas experienced**, such as terror or despair, and teaching the core to “give” these emotions to primary emotional controllers, or splits, who take the burden of these feelings for the systems. These emotional holders are then placed under demonic control, with the agreement by both the core and the holders to allow satan/demons/entities control the emotions to help drive internal obedience and loyalty.
- **Programming to believe that without dissociation, the core will be unable to survive**. This may be put in using various scenarios, from literally being put to death and resurrected using technology after a “coming together” VR is run, or similar ones. If the individual begins healing, and their programs begin failing, this can trigger terror and retaliation at the core level, due to this fear.
- **Programming to bond to a “savior” from pain/trauma/terror**: the core will be put into terrifying situations either prenatally, or soon after birth. The only “rescue” comes from the main trainer, or the demonic entity the group wishes the individual to be bonded to. This bond keeps the core locked into an internal “bubble” inside, since out of love for this individual, and the fear of their displeasure/anger, the core has agreed to never come out and present, unless this individual (or individuals; most individuals are bonded to at least three primary bonds) is present
- **Undergoing programming scenarios in which “healing” or “integration” cause immense pain**. These are used to teach the core to fight any healing work done by the other systems. This type of conditioning will often begin prenatally. If the individual attempts to enter therapy, or to heal, they may feel immense resistance not only from programming of the presentation, but from the core as well.
- **Programming to feel only loved by the main trainer or entity the group worships, and to feel rejected/abandoned by all others**. This includes having the birth mother completely

Follow •••

reject the fetus, and then the others the fetus is to bond to speaking loving words. The core will then associate “healing” and leaving the group as losing this special love, which the core believes has helped him/her survive an extremely painful life.

- **Anti-Christian programming**: this is also done to the core as well, to prevent a decision to embrace Christianity at core level. This is often modeled initially by the birth mother (who is traumatized by a false “jesus” actor); and later, the fetus is also traumatized by a “jesus” who shocks the fetus in the womb, etc. If the individual attempts to pray, or allow the Christian God to help with healing, the core may react with terror, sabotage, or running retaliation programs to prevent this.

It is important to try to discover what types of conflicts regarding healing have been installed (they will be there; this is not left to chance). Instead of “pushing through” resistance in therapy (which will often result in kickback and intrasystem hostility), it is more helpful to ask “What do you believe will happen if this program stops running?” When the individual has reached the core level of healing, this type of dialogue, and addressing concerns and fears, will help the healing process.

The core does want to heal; but both the core and the other system parts may have been programmed with extensive trauma to fear this. Helping to address and resolve these traumas will help the entire system.

Share this:

Twitter   Facebook

Loading...

Related

Primary Emotions that Drive programs
November 30, 2019
In "healing"

Dealing with Emotions
July 26, 2017
In "mind control"

Exposing the Vatican: Part 6
October 25, 2021
In "healing"

Jo 6:53 pm on July 3, 2019

Thank you for allowing comments. Your work has helped me in my healing journey away from multiple personality and dissociation. There is still a lot of strain and heavy emotional weight and burden from remembering all these things that has yet to go. I first became aware of my past in 2011 and came to the saving grace of Jesus Christ and the Father in heaven in that same year.

Your the only one the talks about the assassin corps. I was in it as were other little children that were forced into it as well. My childhood was spent in an underground base. It was so terrible and satanic. Then I spent many years living and "working" off of this world.

I was forced into an arranged marriage as a teenager. This satanic luciferian antichrist and anti life agenda reaches all the way out into the depths of the black up there where I spent a lot of time fighting wars for satan. Please pray for all of God's children. Thank you

★ Liked by 2 people

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Growing Up International Part Five: Ages ten to twelve

Prayer Resource book →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 7:37 pm on August 19, 2018

Tags: dissociation (30), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65)

Why Getting Memories Back Can Be Difficult

Often, when a survivor of ritual abuse and mind control begins to recover memories, there is significant discomfort, whether fear, physical pain, or other symptoms, that goes beyond the normal emotions involved in grieving and processing memories for those without programming. I have heard survivors make comments such as "I feel awful because I am working on some difficult memories", or "I am feeling terrified, I feel as if I will go crazy if I remember this" or even "the terror is unbelievable; I'm not sure I will survive remembering."

It is not the memories themselves that cause these types of feelings, but the programming to not remember, which the survivor agreed to in their past, that is responsible. A non-programmed memory will cause a natural amount of sadness, grieving, fear that resolves fairly quickly once the memory is brought into conscious awareness and the emotions are processed. A programmed memory may be surrounded by barricades inside designed to prevent the survivor accessing the memory, or even wanting to remember; and if the survivor does remember, they may re-experience not only the memory, but the feelings associated with the programming to prevent remembering.

Why do cult and other groups that use mind control do this? One important reason is that if the survivor gets back their personal history, and remembers who they were and what they did, this could alarm the group they left for several reasons:

- They may be considered a "security risk", e.g., someone who could disclose information the group wants kept confidential. This is why many mind control survivors will be programmed with various "security levels" for information inside, with the least important information to the group the most easily accessible by the survivor; while highly confidential information is kept in deeper layers with more retaliation programming involved if the person remembers and/or discloses to those outside the group.
- If the individual remembers their own programming, they can break it, and will no longer want to do their old (programmed) jobs for the group. Programming will not run successfully if the individual remembers how it was put in, and sees the setups, VRs, and lies; this is one

reason why internal programmer parts (who know how things work and are done) are kept extremely isolated and barricaded from the parts who simply do their "jobs" inside, or from the young parts who believe that they were "loved" by their abusers.

Follow

- Recovering their personal life history gives the individual an internal locus of control; once they can see the "big picture" they no longer need to depend on outsiders to tell them what reality is, or what parts of it to believe.

To prevent the above, most groups that do mind control will put in various forms of programming that punish the person if they remember events they were not "told" to remember, or who break their amnesia.

Retaliation Programming

Most systems will have various forms of retaliation programming installed. In its simplest forms, if the individual begins to recover memories, or have bleedthrough of events, there will be parts programmed to immediately punish – severely – with physical or emotional pain. This pain will often be linked to traumas (torture) done when the programming was installed. Retaliation programming is based upon the punishing (retaliatory) parts believing that if the person remembers, bad things will happen. The scenarios can vary, and include: getting hurt; someone they love getting hurt; people will die; I will get overwhelmed with feelings; I and my systems will get flooded and "go nuts" or "be destroyed" and other scripts.

One form of retaliatory programming is internal parts that look like loved ones (in the group) getting punished if the individual remembers their past. This can occur because the individual has made agreements to forget (to be amnesic), or their loved ones will get hurt or killed. If a memory comes forward, the survivor may not remember the agreement, and instead, will fear terror, or reluctance to remember, and wonder why it is so difficult for parts to share information. Once they underlying traumas are resolved, the individual will be able to remember and not undergo retaliation.

Barricades and Barriers

Groups that use mind control will often create various barricades and barriers to remembering. Common barriers can include:

- **Earth, wind, fire and water**: the elements may be used to create barriers between systems and between parts; these elements are used in very painful traumas, and information can only be passed between systems by going through them, unless an authorization code is given (then, a bridge or communicator will be able to cross and parts will not be harmed). Taking down these barriers may include remembering the traumas used to install them, including any rituals that involved the elements, and helping parts to come into current (safe) reality that live within the barriers.
- **Walls:** most groups will create walls between systems, and between front and back (presentation and cult host) parts. These walls will be put in place with terrible traumas that can include seeing a loved one killed, and used in the brick and mortar (with the warning that others will die if the wall is ever taken down or breached without permission); or loved ones and the survivor being tortured on top of the wall, or even being "buried alive" beneath it (the person is rescued with their promise to never cross the wall). Over the years, re-traumatization and reprogramming will be done, with other traumas (such as battering infants against a wall) to keep it in place.

- **Extreme Emotions:** some barriers between systems and parts are created using extreme emotions that have been stored from years of trauma. These can include hopeless despair (if the person remembers, they will feel hopeless despair and/or suicidal); rage (including killing rage); terror; and extreme abandonment. In some systems, these emotions are given to "guardians" in deeper levels who hold the feelings, which then drive this type of programming. Once the survivor is able to get in touch with the parts that hold the feelings, and process the traumas, there will be less emotional retaliation for remembering. In many survivors, anti-healing and anti-memory programs can include the threat of the emotions being unleashed, and the survivor being overwhelmed. It can help to remind the survivor that these threats were made in the past, in a programming lab or other unsafe situation, and that remembering in a safe place with a safe person is very different.

As the various parts heal, and realize that they no longer need to obey their programming to not remember, the memories will often start coming more quickly, and with less fear or retaliation. The survivor will start to remember and recover their own personal history. As this occurs, they may experience deep anger and rage at the manipulation by others that they are now realizing; deep grief over the abuse, as well as a deep sense of finding themselves and discovering who they truly are. The latter is what truly makes the healing journey worth it.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Recovered Memories and Denial May 17, 2018 In "healing"	Agreements to not remember and to punish for remembering November 20, 2020 In "healing"	Presenter Systems/Host Systems Programming April 15, 2019 In "mind control"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Interview with Jo Getzinger of CARE, INC. Part 1: For Those Helping Survivors

Working with internal pantheons →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Design a site like this with WordPress.com

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

svalispeaksagain 12:14 am on April 16, 2025

Tags: dissociation (49), healing (60), mind control (95), programming (84), remembering, ritual abuse (91), SRA (71)

Why Doesn't My Family Remember, Too?

One question I am often asked by email from survivors is "Why doesn't my family remember these things? Why am I the only one remembering?" or even, "Why are my family members denying that anything happened when I try to confront them?"

Family dynamics are complicated, and especially so when severe dysfunction has occurred within the family unit. For instance, in cases of alcoholism, gambling addictions, or domestic violence, it is not uncommon for the individual when confronted to deny the behavior in question – even in the face of evidence (such as withdrawals from a bank account and bookie tickets, or witnesses). Or, in situations where a family member has sexually abused a young child, in some cases the individual a child identified as the perpetrator may deny the allegations even when medical evidence of the abuse has been documented. And, in families where an accusation of perpetration has been made (such as by a teenaged victim of sexual or physical abuse), it is not uncommon for the rest of the family to attempt to maintain familial denial, and to turn upon the victim who is disclosing with hostility and scapegoating. It is a known phenomenon that families, including dysfunctional and abusive ones, will attempt to keep the family dynamics intact by ignoring and/or denying realities that could tear a family apart. Individuals within the family may unconsciously feel that accepting the abuse allegation would mean that they would no longer have a family unit (which feels psychologically threatening, since it could mean the "loss" of a loved one accused of abuse, or overwhelming guilt at not being aware the abuse was occurring); or the accused perpetrator may feel unable to deal with their guilt and so will not acknowledge what they have done. These are just a few of the dynamics that could occur in some families in which severe abuse occurs.

When ritual abuse and mind control occurs, there is an added element. In addition to the above

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

and also programmed. And if this is what has occurred, then confronting a family member with the abuse will most likely trigger denial and amnesia programming; the family member being confronted will say things like “I don’t remember anything like that” and they will be telling the truth, since the part out will not remember these events. They may even be cross-programmed to trigger the survivor’s amnesia programming, saying things like “You’re crazy; nothing like that ever happened”; “How could you hurt me by saying things like this?” “Don’t you think I would remember if something like this happened?”etc.

When cults program a survivor, they also program their (cult active) family members, whether husband, children, fathers, mothers, aunts, siblings, etc. These individuals will be programmed to deny that there was any cult involvement or abuse. The cult will not leave this to chance, and family members of survivors will have scripts that involve discrediting the survivor and his/her memories. This is one reason why therapists will often caution survivors to wait on confronting their family members, since it is extremely rare for those confronted to acknowledge any abuse occurred, or to validate the survivor’s memories.

I experienced these things when I confronted my own family members. I remember years ago sitting in my American mother’s condo, and asking her in German, “I speak German, even though I never learned it in school. How am I able to speak it? How do you explain this?” I then asked her the same in English. She replied to me, “Maybe you learned it psychically?” She had no explanation for the evidence I was giving her in real time, so she retreated into an illogical explanation for what she was seeing and hearing. She also took several stiff drinks that evening in order to be able to go to sleep. The next morning, she warned me, “You need to leave today, so we don’t end up killing each other.” This was consciously said, and I left, realizing that she was unable to handle what I was telling her.

I also remember my younger American sister getting very drunk one evening after I was first starting to have memories of cult abuse, and telling me about a memory she had of being three years old and being sexually abused by numerous people while she was laying on a stone altar; the people were chanting to Satan. But once she sobered up, later she denied that there was ever any cult abuse in our past. She has consistently denied that anything like this happened.

Both my first and second husbands confessed to me their own involvement in cult activity. My first husband even gave me custody of our children after four years of saying I was “crazy, making it all up”, and entered therapy because of his own memories of cult activity. But since then, he has again swung back into denial. My second husband admitted when I left him that he was cult active, and wanted to get out, and asked for help doing so; I referred him to a Christian counselor I knew.

But confessions like these are the exception, rather than the norm, when confronting perpetrators, including family members. Even those who were passive and ignored the ongoing abuse will often maintain a denial of the abuse that was occurring. Because of the threats to self and loved ones if an individual remembers and discloses, when family members deny the abuse, they are not being “difficult” or “lying”; they are simply afraid to go against their own programming and confront the truth. “I don’t remember” can in some cases mean “I’m not psychologically ready to look at the truth”.

This then raises the question, “Why do some people remember and others don’t, in the same family?” This is something that I honestly don’t know. It is possible some individuals have a temperament that causes them to fight against lies and manipulation, regardless of the cost; or that some people are emotionally more fragile and unable to look at unpleasant realities; there could me many possible explanations for these differences. What I have experienced personally is that these differences are real, though. I do not believe that family members “not remembering” should ever be used against survivors as “proof” that their memories are not true, or that ritual abuse or mind control did not occur. The same occurs in cases of alcoholism, addictions and sexual abuse. When family members are confronted, familial denial can be an expected response, and should be taken into account, when deciding when (if ever) to question family members or seek validation of memories.

Share this:

X Facebook

Reblog Like 4 likes

Related

Documentary on ritual abuse
May 6, 2024
In "healing"

50 Voices: Speaking Out about Ritual Abuse
September 3, 2023
In "healing"

Autobiography: Never Give Up
February 7, 2024
In "healing"

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← Never Give Up part 3: First part of chapter 39

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 2:05 am on June 4, 2017

Tags: Christian (24), healing (43), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

What is “programming”?

What is “programming”? What is “breaking programming?”

Mind control involves the installation of programs into a person. “Programming” is convincing a person (a part/personality/alter) that he or she have no choice but to perform a particular action, or hold to a particular belief. This programming is accomplished via (1) clear, detailed and rigorous instruction of the prescribed action or belief, (2) punishments for any departure from the instructions, (3) reward for compliance with instructions, (4) agreement of the person to always unfailingly and perfectly obey the instructions at all times, typically sealed with a ritual.

For instance, when a child is being “programmed” to always get into the car of a person who says “pink chocolate bars” while scratching his left ear, during the “programming” session, that child is told what is expected of her, then horribly punished if she does not perform the action perfectly, and rewarded if she does, over and over and over and over again. This happens till that part is absolutely, absolutely convinced that she must do that.

In general, a mind-controlled person will have parts that are programmed to believe they are perfectly ordinary, with no memory at all of any cult activity, and parts who are programmed to do cult-related jobs. The list below very briefly summarizes these broad categories of programming with a few examples:

(1) “day time” or “host” parts

Parts responsible for convincing therapist and non-cult people in survivor’s life that there is no current cult activity; Parts who are not aware they are members of a cult and believe they are “ordinary” people. Usually programmed to be horrified/overwhelmed etc by any emerging cult memory. Jobs include:

- Denial and amnesia to cult activity
- Enables survivor interact with non-cult people without raising any suspicion

Follow •••

(2) “external” cult parts

Parts responsible for carrying out cult-related duties that enable the cult to achieve its agenda. Usually programmed to be proud or stoic over cult jobs. Jobs include:

- Participating in rituals
- Assignments like research and assassinations
- Training of younger cult members
- Reporting to the cult
- Disseminating misinformation
- Discrediting other survivors and therapists
- Active physical agendas against Christians and those helping survivors break free
- Sabotaging other survivors’ safety or healing

(3) “internal” cult parts

Parts responsible for maintaining belief systems and demonic interactions that ensures person will never leave the cult. Usually programmed to be proud or stoic over cult jobs. Jobs include:

- Making sure that the person’s dissociation/amnesia is intact
- Protecting/guarding classified information or parts inside
- Blocking the person’s healing
- Undoing the person’s work in therapy
- Participating in rituals internally and calling on the demonic

“Breaking” programming is not complex. It is not easy, but it is not complex either. **“Breaking” programming happens when a person (a part) realizes that he or she has the choice to NOT perform a particular action, or the freedom to choose a new belief, AND does so.** As in the example above, if the survivor stops following people who say “pink chocolate bars” while scratching their left ears, then that survivor has broken their programming. Breaking programing can be a terrifying, painful and difficult process for the survivor due the terror of disobedience instilled by the programmer when the survivor was young, and the anguish of realizing how controlled and manipulated she or he has been all these years. But it is possible, as this site and many other survivor and therapist websites and writings attest. It is totally worth it to get free.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Chart for Working on Internal Programs

Processing Mind Control Trauma

Exposing the Vatican: Part 6
October 25, 2021

April 23, 2019
In "healing"

March 24, 2019
In "healing"

In "healing"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← A prayer for perseverance

The two kinds of amnesia →

WEIRD SCENES Inside The Canyon

Laurel Canyon, Covert Ops & The Dark Heart of the Hippie Dream

David McGowan

with a foreword by Nick Bryant

HEADPRESS

WEIRD SCENES INSIDE THE CANYON

LAUREL CANYON, COVERT OPS & THE DARK HEART OF THE HIPPIE DREAM

DAVID McGOWAN

HEADPRESS

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Foreword *by Nick Bryant* 1
Preface 7
1 **Village of the Damned** By Way of an Introduction 11
2 **Power to the People** Call this a Counterculture? 22
3 **Dig!** The Laurel Canyon Death List 30
4 **Related Lives** and Relative Deaths 41
5 **Desirable People** The Canyon's Peculiar Past 50
6 **Vito and his Freakers** The Sinister Roots of Hippie Culture 62
7 **The Death of Godo Paulekas** Anger's Infant Lucifer 73
8 **All the Young Turks** Hollywood Tripping 85
9 **Weird Scenes Inside the Canyon** 96
10 **Helter Skelter in a Summer Swelter** Return of the Death List 106
11 **Detours** Rustic Canyon & Greystone Park 120
12 **Riders on the Storm** The Doors 128
13 **Eight Miles High and Falling Fast** The Byrds 136
14 **The Great Serendipity** Buffalo Springfield 147
15 **Beyond Buffalo Springfield** and the Monkees, too 159
16 **Altamont Pie** Gram Parsons 169
17 **The Lost Expedition** of Gene Clark 187
18 **The Wolf King of LA** "Papa" John Phillips 200
19 **Hungry Freaks, Daddy** Frank Zappa 216
20 **Born To Be Wild** John Kay 227
21 **A Whiter Shade of Pale** Arthur Lee and Love 236
22 **Endless Vibrations** The Beach Boys 249
23 **The Grim Game** Houdini 263
24 **Won't Get Fooled Again** Punk and New Wave Arrive 277
Epilogue 284
Acknowledgements 301
Selected Bibliography & Filmography 302
Index 306
About the Author 315

BEAUTIFUL LAUREL CANYON
Sunset Blvd.

FOREWORD

by Nick Bryant

OSCAR WILDE SAID OF ART, "THOSE WHO GO BENEATH THE SURFACE DO SO at their peril." And author David McGowan has found that Wilde's quote is quite prophetic for the rock'n'roll scene that thrived in Laurel Canyon in the 1960s and 1970s. *Weird Scenes Inside the Canyon* is McGowan taking a hammer to the icons and mythologies of 1960s counterculture, reducing them to dust, swept away by gusts of pomp, pretense, and even deceit. McGowan though isn't wielding his hammer with the zeal of an establishment conformist or neocon, but rather in the same forlorn spirit as Nietzsche declaring that "God is dead." As a homegrown product of Los Angeles with an encyclopedic knowledge of the southern California rock scene, McGowan appears to be essentially declaring that the gods of his youth are dead.

Laurel Canyon was the fountainhead for the peace, love, and brown rice vibes that overflowed America's airwaves as the Vietnam War raged, but lurking beneath its tie-dyed and florid veneer was an exquisite darkness of drugs, unbridled debauchery, full-tilt depravity, and shocking carnage. When readers of this book are delivered to Laurel Canyon's blood-drenched tapestry of murder and mayhem, they will have to decide whether or not those sinister synchronicities are uncanny coincidences, conspiracies—or perhaps a kaleidoscopic blending of both.

Sprinkled throughout these pages is the ominous specter of the military/intelligence complex, and perched quite literally atop Laurel Canyon was the top-secret Lookout Mountain Laboratory, which seems to be McGowan's grand metaphor for Dr. Strangelove having a bird's-eye view of the nascent hippie movement, treating it as though it were a petri dish brimming with a lethal biological weapon that could be unleashed in meticulously monitored increments. Indeed, many of Laurel Canyon's rock 'n' roll idols had former incarnations steeped in the world of military/intelligence operations. Jim Morrison, aka "the Lizard King," was one such example. Mr. Mojo Risin' didn't much like to talk about his parents and was even known to tell reporters that his parents were dead. But as it turns out, Lizard King, Sr. was not only alive and well, he just happened to be the commander of the US warships that allegedly came under attack by North Vietnamese torpedo boats in the Gulf of Tonkin, sparking America's napalm-fueled bloodbath in Vietnam.

Frank Zappa, another major mover and shaker of the Laurel Canyon scene, was certainly the raddest of the rad, so surely he couldn't have had any connections to the military/intelligence complex… right? Not exactly. According to various accounts collected by McGowan, Zappa was a pro-military autocrat who didn't really resonate with the counterculture's peace and love vibe. Like the Lizard King's dad, Zappa, Sr. was a cog in the intelligence community's dark machinations; Francis Zappa was a chemical warfare specialist with a top security clearance at Edgewood Arsenal near Baltimore, Maryland. Some readers might recognize Edgewood as the location of ominous mind control experiments conducted by the CIA under the rubric of MK-ULTRA.

Guilt by familial association has the potential to be an ill-fated formula for speculation, but McGowan relates accounts of Laurel Canyon luminaries whose own hands were possibly awash in the blood of the military/intelligence complex. Consider, for example, "Papa" John Phillips, who penned the smash hit San Francisco (Be Sure to Wear Flowers in Your Hair), imploring thousands of runaways to make bacchanal-laced pilgrimages to the City by the Bay. The son of a Marine Corps captain, Phillips was among the more prominent fixtures of Laurel Canyon who had a particularly interesting interrelationship with the military machine.

Rock superstar Stephen Stills was the cofounder of two Laurel Canyon dynamos—Buffalo Springfield, and, of course, Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young. Surely then hippie icon Stills couldn't possibly be enmeshed in the military-intelligence complex? Maybe, maybe not. The progeny of yet another military family, Stills spent chunks of his childhood in El Salvador, Costa Rica, and Panama, where the US has a history of spreading a genocidal form of "democracy." And McGowan has sifted through accounts of Stills actually confessing to running around the jungles of Vietnam in the early 1960s—anecdotes generally dismissed, as the author notes, as drug-fueled delusions.

Tales of drugs, unbridled debauchery and full-tilt depravity are often populated by ethical eunuchs whose elite deviance yields to particularly malignant appetites, and the people calling Laurel Canyon home were no exception. McGowan introduces us to aging beatnik Vito Paulekas and his "Freaks," a dance troupe of Dionysian goddesses who accompanied Vito to the LA nightclubs where the fledgling Laurel Canyon bands were playing their early gigs. In addition to saturating the dance floors with sultry young nubiles for emerging bands, Vito was also a purveyor of teenage girls for the up-and-coming rockers. McGowan also comments on Vito's swift exodus to Haiti, for reasons explained herein.

Vito Paulekas certainly isn't a household name, but he was far from being a fringe player on the Laurel Canyon scene, where he and his Freaks mingled freely with rock 'n' roll's burgeoning royalty. McGowan collects anecdotes suggesting that Vito may have played a key role in the formation and early success of the Byrds—though his name is conspicuously absent from the autobiographical tome of Byrds co-founder David Crosby. We also find Vito in a string of low-budget films, and in a cameo appearance on one of rock's first concept albums: Zappa's *Freak Out!* Vito's parental skills, however, left a lot to be desired, as evinced by the very mysterious and bizarre death of his young son, Godo.

Further excavating the idolatry of his youth, McGowan encounters Laurel Canyon fixture Billy Bryars, a male madam and gay porn entrepreneur. Bryers was investigated for trafficking child pornography in the 1970s, whereupon his stable of male hustlers began coughing up the names of frequent flyers at his bordello, the most notable among them being super freak G-man J. Edgar Hoover and partner Clyde Tolson.

The 1960s was a "revolutionary" epoch not only in music but also in Hollywood, and McGowan discusses the symbiosis between the Laurel Canyon music scene and Hollywood's "Young Turks," with the box office phenomenon *Easy Rider* providing a salient nexus between Laurel Canyon rockers and Hollywood upstarts. Many of those upstarts, including Warren Beatty, Peter and Jane Fonda, Jack Nicholson, Candice Bergen, Marlon Brando, Roman Polanski and Sharon Tate, Peter Lawford, Dennis Hopper, Ryan O'Neal, Mia Farrow, Peter Sellers, and Zsa Zsa Gabor, were among Papa John and Mama Michelle Phillips' circle of friends.

Also making the rounds in Laurel Canyon was America's favorite psychopath, Charles Manson. And Charlie and his "Family" weren't just a peripheral flock of crazed killers among the Laurel Canyon sovereigns; to the contrary, the Family mingled with many of the Canyon's rock stars. Manson even laid down tracks in Brian Wilson's home studio, stunning the likes of Neil Young. "He had this kind of music that nobody else was doing," said Neil of Charlie. "I thought he really had something crazy, something great. He was like a living poet." Charlie also impressed Terry Melcher, the Byrds' first producer and a major force in sculpting the Laurel Canyon music scene. Melcher also recorded Manson, finding him to be a much more amicable character than David Crosby.

Manson's homicidal lieutenant Bobby Beausoleil also had some impressive moves as a guitarist—and an occultist. Beausoleil played in a number of forgotten bands that had an occult topspin, one of which even opened for Buffalo Springfield. Bobby eventually landed a gig as a rhythm guitarist for the Grass Roots, which later transmuted into the Laurel Canyon band Love.

McGowan also touches on the grisly "Four on the Floor" or "Wonderland" murders, which left notorious drug dealer Ron Launius and three of his gang bludgeoned to death on the floor of a house on Laurel Canyon's Wonderland Avenue. Launius dealt drugs to Laurel Canyon's aristocracy, as well as to porn star John Holmes, then in the twilight of his career. Holmes also befriended LA crime boss/club owner Eddie Nash, who he then betrayed, with fatal consequences.

Truth be told, the Manson and Wonderland Murders were merely spatters on Laurel Canyon's blood-drenched tapestry. In the pages of this fascinating book, McGowan chronicles tale after tale of suicide and murder, while delivering readers to a web of sinister synchronicities. Ultimately, it is up to the reader to decide whether Laurel Canyon, in its heyday, was the counterculture haven portrayed by other chroniclers of the era, or whether it was the epicenter of intrigues whose ripple effects are like the aftershock of a nuclear bomb.

Nick Bryant
July 29, 2013

"I think these days, especially in the States, you have to be a politician or an assassin or something to really be a superstar." Jim Morrison

Before he was the Lizard King: US Navy Admiral George Stephen Morrison and his son, James Douglas Morrison, on the bridge of the USS Bon Homme Richard*, January 1964.*

This book is dedicated to all those whose blood still stains the canyon floor.

PREFACE

It began innocently enough.

In my normal, everyday life I spend a fair amount of time researching corruption and criminality in the realms of politics and law enforcement. Much of that research has taken me down some very dark and twisted paths. But this was going to be different. I was, after all, going to be vacationing in a lush, tropical paradise and I really just wanted to turn my brain off for a couple weeks and forget about all of that.

Not long before this much-anticipated break from reality, my eldest daughter had given me a copy of Michael Walker's *Laurel Canyon: The Inside Story of Rock-and-Roll's Legendary Neighborhood*, which chronicles the Los Angeles music scene of the late 1960s through the 1970s. It seemed like the ideal escapist entertainment that would undoubtedly conjure up many fond memories of the music that provided the soundtrack to my formative years. What could be further removed from my usual reading material?

As is often the case though, things didn't work out exactly as planned. Alarm bells started going off in my head soon after arriving at my destination and diving into the book. What was this about secret underground tunnels connecting some of the iconic Laurel Canyon properties? And what about all those mysterious fires that wiped away the homes of a number of prominent singers and musicians? And why were there so many violent deaths so closely associated with a scene that was supposed to be all about peace and love? And what of Walker's throwaway mention of a "secret fortified" military installation sitting right smack-dab in the middle of hippiedom? And why did at least a few of America's new minstrels seem to come from career military families and from the world of covert intelligence operations? And how exactly do the casual allusions to pedophilia fit into this increasingly curious scene?

While Walker had done a decent job of telling the Laurel Canyon story from a mainstream perspective, there seemed to be a much more intriguing story hidden in the details that he tended to cast aside as interesting but largely meaningless incongruities. Before I was even halfway through my sorely needed rest-and-relaxation time, I was champing at the bit to get back home and dig deeper into this story. And immediately upon my return, I began devouring everything I could find that had been written on the subject.

Although I am regarded by many people as a 'conspiracy theorist,' which is more often than not utilized as a pejorative term, I do all of my research through very mainstream channels. I am a big believer in the notion that 'the truth is out there,' but don't expect it to be delivered to you in a tidy package by any mainstream media outlets. Finding it involves assembling a jigsaw puzzle of sorts, with the goal being to gather up all the bits and pieces of information that other writers tend to present as throwaway facts and/or interesting anomalies. Sometimes those bits and pieces end up being no more than interesting anomalies, but past experience has taught me that if those divergent facts are properly assembled, a new picture often begins to emerge that is strikingly at odds with what is widely accepted as our consensus reality.

At the end of the day, it is really all about pattern recognition. If, for example, just a few prominent Laurel Canyon musicians happened to come from military/intelligence families, then we could probably safely write that off as an interesting but largely inconsequential aberration. But if an uncanny number of the leading lights of the Laurel Canyon scene grew up in such an environment, then that is clearly a meaningful pattern. And if a few of the new breed of stars happened to have violent death intrude upon their personal lives, then that would be a tragic but largely inconsequential fact. But when it becomes clear that violent death surrounded the entire scene, with whole families at times dying off under suspicious circumstances, then that again is a distinguishing pattern—and one that has been all but ignored by other chroniclers of the scene.

There is little doubt in my mind that this book will not be warmly received by all readers. In our celebrity-driven culture, calling into question the character and motivations of so many widely admired and respected figures from the entertainment community is never a good way to win popularity contests. And when those revered figures are overwhelmingly viewed as icons of various leftist causes, it is definitely not the way to win fans among those who consider themselves to be liberals, progressives or leftists. But while my sympathies lie solidly in the leftward flanks of the political spectrum, there are no sacred cows in either this book or in any of my past work.

I really have no agenda other than to seek out unspoken truths and better my own understanding of the world we live in. I have no political party affiliations and have never been associated in any way with any governmental or quasi-governmental entities. And for the record, I was not born into the world of military intelligence operations; my rather uneventful childhood was spent in a quiet slice of suburbia with two public school teachers as parents. I have never claimed to be in possession of any 'inside information' or to have access to any highly placed, confidential sources. My research and the views expressed in my work are very much my own.

While almost all of my past and present literary contributions are generally regarded as being quite controversial, the individual facts contained in this volume are not really controversial at all. All of them, as previously noted, have been mined from very respectable mainstream sources. It is only the way that I have presented those facts—in other words, the way that I have chosen to assemble the puzzle—that makes them controversial.

There will undoubtedly be those who will stridently claim that I have carefully cherry-picked my facts to paint an unnecessarily dark portrait of many of the iconic figures who make up the cast of this story. Anyone, so the argument goes, could be made to look bad through such a journalistic approach. I would strongly disagree with that assessment, however. Such criticisms, in my opinion, completely miss the point of the book—which is that when stripped of the usual spin that accompanies them, and when assembled so that they become part of overriding patterns, these 'anomalous' facts reveal truths that would not otherwise be visible.

Another criticism I anticipate is that I did not go out and attempt to speak directly to the people who made up the scene. True enough, but the primary reason for that is that there is very little chance that the aging rock stars and their handlers would have wanted anything to do with me. Other chroniclers of the era have gained access to those involved, but that access has come, or so it appears to me, with a steep price in journalistic integrity. The inevitable result is what amounts to puff pieces with a mind-numbing sameness, with the same tired anecdotal stories uncritically told over and over again in the very same way, even when those stories can't possibly be true.

I have no desire to serve as a publicist for the estates of Jim Morrison, John Phillips or Frank Zappa, nor do I have any interest in filling the pages of this book with the same apocryphal tales told by other scribes. There are any number of literary offerings listed in the bibliography that will provide that type of a reading experience. My goal here is to break new ground and open readers' minds to the possibility that other writers may have left out some of the most important elements of this underreported tale.

The story of the scene that played out in Laurel Canyon from the mid-1960s through the end of the 1970s is an endlessly fascinating one. It wasn't until fairly recently that the mainstream version of the tale was belatedly told, and even now it remains a story unknown by most of those who were not a part of it. Virtually everyone has heard of the Haight-Ashbury scene up north in San Francisco, but even most native Angelenos remain ignorant of the even larger music and counterculture scene that played out in the Hollywood Hills.

It seems a bit odd that, nearly a full half-century after the fact, the Haight is almost universally regarded as the birthplace of hippies and flower children, despite the fact that the Laurel Canyon scene preceded and largely inspired what became a parallel scene up north. Why is it that the Haight has been thrust into the spotlight for so long while so little attention has been paid to the scene that spawned it? Perhaps the Laurel Canyon scene was hiding so many dark secrets that it was better to just let it lie undisturbed.

And perhaps it is now time to shine a light into some of the darker corners of the canyon to see what kind of skeletons might be hiding there.

1

VILLAGE OF THE DAMNED
BY WAY OF AN INTRODUCTION

**"There's something happening here /
What it is ain't exactly clear"**

JOIN ME NOW, IF YOU HAVE THE TIME, AS WE TAKE A STROLL DOWN MEMORY lane to a time nearly five decades ago—a time when America last had uniformed ground troops fighting a sustained and bloody battle to impose some decidedly Orwellian 'democracy' on a sovereign nation.

It is the first week of August, 1964, and US warships under the command of US Navy Admiral George Stephen Morrison have allegedly come under attack while patrolling Vietnam's Tonkin Gulf. This event, subsequently dubbed the 'Tonkin Gulf Incident,' will result in the immediate passing by the US Congress of the obviously pre-drafted Tonkin Gulf Resolution, which will, in turn, quickly lead to America's deep immersion into the bloody Vietnam quagmire. Before it is over, well over 50,000 American bodies—along with literally millions of Southeast Asian bodies—will litter the battlefields of Vietnam, Laos and Cambodia.

For the record, the Tonkin Gulf Incident appears to differ somewhat from other alleged provocations that have driven this country to war. This was not, as we have seen so many times before, a 'false flag' operation (which is to say, an operation that involves Uncle Sam attacking himself and then pointing an accusatory finger at someone else). It was also not, as we have also seen on more than one occasion, an attack that was quite deliberately provoked. No, what the Tonkin Gulf Incident actually was, as it turns out, is an 'attack' that never took place at all. The entire incident, as has been all but officially acknowledged, was spun from whole cloth. (It is quite possible, however, that the *intent* was to provoke a defensive response, which could have then been cast as an unprovoked attack on U.S ships. The ships in question were on an intelligence mission and were operating in a decidedly provocative manner. It is quite possible that when Vietnamese forces failed to respond as anticipated, Uncle Sam decided to just pretend as though they had.)

Nevertheless, by early February 1965, the US will—without a declaration of war and with no valid reason to wage one—begin indiscriminately bombing North Vietnam. By March of that same year, the infamous Operation Rolling Thunder will commence. Over the course of the next three-and-a-half years, millions of tons of bombs, missiles, rockets, incendiary devices and chemical warfare agents will be dumped on the people of Vietnam in what can only be described as one of the worst crimes against humanity ever perpetrated on this planet.

Also in March of 1965, the first uniformed US soldier officially sets foot on Vietnamese soil (although Special Forces units masquerading as 'advisers' and 'trainers' have been there for at least four years, and likely much longer). By April 1965, fully 25,000 uniformed American kids, most still teenagers barely out of high school, are slogging through the rice paddies of Vietnam. By the end of the year, US troop strength will have surged to 200,000.

Meanwhile, elsewhere in the world in those early months of 1965, a new 'scene' is just beginning to take shape in the city of Los Angeles. In a geographically and socially isolated community known as Laurel Canyon—a heavily wooded, rustic, serene, yet vaguely ominous slice of LA nestled in the hills that separate the Los Angeles basin from the San Fernando Valley—musicians, singers and songwriters suddenly begin to gather as though summoned there by some unseen Pied Piper. Within months, the 'hippie/flower child' movement is begotten there, along with the new style of music that will provide the soundtrack for the tumultuous second half of the 1960s.

Beginning in the mid-1960s and carrying through the decade of the 1970s, an uncanny number of rock music superstars will emerge from

Laurel Canyon. The first to drop an album is the Byrds, whose biggest star will prove to be David Crosby. The band's debut effort, *Mr. Tambourine Man*, is released on the summer solstice of 1965. It will quickly be followed by releases from the John Phillips-led Mamas and the Papas (*If You Can Believe Your Eyes and Ears*, January 1966), Love with Arthur Lee (*Love*, May 1966), Frank Zappa and the Mothers of Invention (*Freak Out*, June 1966), Buffalo Springfield, featuring Stephen Stills and Neil Young (*Buffalo Springfield*, October 1966), and the Doors (*The Doors*, January 1967).

One of the earliest on the Laurel Canyon/Sunset Strip scene is Jim Morrison, the enigmatic lead singer of the Doors. Jim will quickly become one of the most iconic, controversial, critically acclaimed, and influential figures to take up residence in Laurel Canyon. Curiously enough though, the self-proclaimed "Lizard King" has another claim to fame as well, albeit one that none of his numerous chroniclers will feel is of much relevance to his career and possible untimely death: he is the son, as it happens, of the aforementioned Admiral George Stephen Morrison.

And so it is that, even while the father is actively conspiring to fabricate an incident that will be used to massively accelerate an illegal war, the son is positioning himself to become an icon of the 'hippie'/anti-war crowd. Nothing unusual about that, I suppose. It is, you know, a small world and all. And it is not as if Jim Morrison's story is in any way unique.

During the early years of its heyday, Laurel Canyon's father figure is the rather eccentric personality known as Frank Zappa. Though he and his various Mothers of Invention lineups will never attain the commercial success of the band headed by the admiral's son, Frank will be a hugely influential figure among his contemporaries. Ensconced in an abode dubbed the 'Log Cabin'—which sat right in the heart of Laurel Canyon, at the crossroads of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and Lookout Mountain Avenue—Zappa will play host to virtually every musician who passes through the canyon in the mid- to late-1960s. He will also discover and sign numerous acts to his various Laurel Canyon-based record labels. Many of these acts will be rather bizarre and somewhat obscure characters (think Captain Beefheart and Larry "Wild Man" Fischer), but some of them, such as psychedelic rocker cum shock-rocker

Alice Cooper, will go on to superstardom.

Zappa, along with certain members of his sizable entourage (the Log Cabin was run as an early commune, with numerous hangers-on occupying various rooms in the main house and the guest house, as well as the peculiar caves and tunnels lacing the grounds of the home; far from the quaint homestead the name seems to imply, the Log Cabin was a cavernous five-level home that featured a 2,000+ square-foot living room with three massive chandeliers and an enormous floor-to-ceiling stone fireplace), will also be instrumental in introducing the look and attitude that will define the ‘hippie’ counterculture—although the Zappa crew prefers the label ‘freak’. Nevertheless, Zappa will never really make a secret of the fact that he has nothing but contempt for the hippie culture that he will help create and with which he will surround himself.

Given that Zappa is, by various accounts, a pro-military, rigidly authoritarian control-freak, it is perhaps unsurprising that he will not feel a kinship with the youth movement that he will help nurture. And it is probably safe to say that Frank’s dad also would have had little regard for the youth culture of the 1960s, given that Francis Zappa was, in case you were wondering, a chemical warfare specialist assigned to—where else?—the Edgewood Arsenal near Baltimore, Maryland. Edgewood is, of course, the longtime home of America’s chemical warfare program, as well as a facility frequently cited as being deeply enmeshed in MKULTRA operations. Curiously enough, Frank Zappa literally grew up at the Edgewood Arsenal, having lived the first seven years of his life in military housing on the grounds of the facility. The family later moved to Lancaster, California, near Edwards Air Force Base, where Francis Zappa continued to busy himself doing classified work for the military/intelligence complex. His son, meanwhile, prepped himself to become an icon of the peace and love crowd. Again, nothing unusual about that, I suppose.

Zappa’s manager is a shadowy character by the name of Herb Cohen, who had come out to LA from the Bronx with his brother Mutt just before the music and club scene began heating up. Cohen, a former US Marine, had spent a few years traveling the world before his arrival on the Laurel Canyon scene. Those travels, curiously, had taken him to the Congo in 1961, at the very time that leftist Prime Minister Patrice

Lumumba was being tortured and killed by our very own CIA. Not to worry though; according to one of Zappa's biographers, Cohen wasn't in the Congo on some kind of nefarious intelligence mission. No, he was there, on the contrary, *to supply arms to Lumumba* "in defiance of the CIA." Because, you know, that is the kind of thing that globetrotting ex-Marines did in those days (as we'll see soon enough when we take a look at another Laurel Canyon luminary).

Making up the other half of Laurel Canyon's First Family is Frank's wife, Gail Zappa, known formerly as Adelaide Sloatman. Gail hails from a long line of career Naval officers, including her father, who spent his life working on classified nuclear weapons research for the US Navy. Gail herself once worked as a secretary for the Office of Naval Research and Development (she also once told an interviewer that she had "heard voices all [her] life"). Many years before their nearly simultaneous arrival in Laurel Canyon, Gail had attended a Naval kindergarten class with "Mr. Mojo Risin'" himself, Jim Morrison (it is claimed that, as children, Gail once hit Jim over the head with a hammer). The very same Jim Morrison had later attended the same Alexandria, Virginia, high school as two other future Laurel Canyon luminaries—John Phillips and Cass Elliot.

"Papa" John Phillips, more so than probably any of the other illustrious residents of Laurel Canyon, will play a major role in spreading the emerging youth 'counterculture' across America. His contribution will be twofold: first, he will co-organize the famed Monterey Pop Festival, which, through unprecedented media exposure, will give mainstream America its first real look at the music and fashions of the nascent hippie movement. Second, Phillips will pen an insipid song known as San Francisco (Be Sure To Wear Flowers In Your Hair), which will quickly rise to the top of the charts. Along with the Monterey Pop Festival, the song will be instrumental in luring the disenfranchised (a preponderance of whom will be underage runaways) to San Francisco to create the Haight-Ashbury phenomenon and the famed 1967 Summer of Love.

Before arriving in Laurel Canyon and opening the doors of his home to the soon-to-be famous, the already famous, and the infamous (such as Charlie Manson, whose 'Family' also spent time at the Log Cabin and at the Laurel Canyon home of "Mama" Cass Elliot, which, in case you didn't know, sat right across the road from the Laurel Canyon home of Abigail Folger and Voytek Frykowski, but let's not get ahead of ourselves here), John Edmund Andrew Phillips was, shockingly enough, yet another child of the military/intelligence complex. The son of US Marine Corp Captain Claude Andrew Phillips and a mother who claimed to have psychic and telekinetic powers, John attended a series of elite military prep schools in the Washington, DC area, culminating in an appointment to the prestigious US Naval Academy at Annapolis.

After leaving Annapolis, John married Susie Adams, a direct descendant of Founding Father John Adams. Susie's father, James Adams, Jr., had been involved in what Susie described as "cloak-and-dagger stuff with the Air Force in Vienna," or what others like to call covert intelligence operations. Susie herself would later find employment at the Pentagon, alongside John Phillips' older sister, Rosie, who dutifully reported to work at the complex for nearly thirty years. John's mother, "Dene" Phillips, also worked for most of her life for the federal government in some unspecified capacity. And John's older brother, Tommy, was a battle-scarred former US Marine who found work on the Alexandria police force as a cop, albeit one with a disciplinary record for exhibiting a violent streak when dealing with people of color.

John Phillips, of course—though surrounded throughout his life by military/intelligence personnel—did not involve himself in such matters. Or so we are to believe. Before succeeding in his musical career, however, John did seem to find himself, quite innocently of course, in some rather unusual places. One such place was Havana, Cuba, where Phillips arrived at the very height of the Cuban Revolution. For the record, Phillips has claimed that he went to Havana as nothing more than a concerned private citizen, with the intention of—you're going to love this one—"fighting for Castro." Because, as I mentioned earlier, a lot of folks in those days traveled abroad to thwart CIA operations before taking up residence in Laurel Canyon and joining the 'hippie' generation. During the two weeks or so that the Cuban Missile Crisis played out, a few years after Castro took power, Phillips found himself cooling his heels in Jacksonville, Florida—alongside the Mayport Naval Station.

Anyway, let's move on to yet another of Laurel Canyon's earliest and brightest stars, Mr. Stephen Stills. Stills will have the distinction of being a founding member of two of Laurel Canyon's most acclaimed and beloved bands: Buffalo Springfield, and, needless to say, Crosby, Stills

& Nash. In addition, Stills will pen perhaps the first, and certainly one of the most enduring anthems of the sixties generation, For What It's Worth, the opening lines of which appear at the top of this chapter (Stills' follow-up single will be entitled Bluebird, which, coincidentally or not, happens to be the original codename assigned to the CIA's MK-ULTRA program).

Before his arrival in Laurel Canyon, Stephen Stills was the product of yet another career military family. Raised partly in Texas, young Stephen spent large swaths of his childhood in El Salvador, Costa Rica, the Panama Canal Zone, and various other parts of Central America—alongside his father, who was, we can be fairly certain, helping to spread 'democracy' to the unwashed masses in that endearingly American way. As with the rest of our cast of characters, Stills was educated primarily at schools on military bases and at elite military academies. Among his contemporaries in Laurel Canyon, he was widely viewed as having an abrasive, authoritarian personality. Nothing unusual about any of that, of course, as we have already seen.

There is, however, an even more curious aspect to the Stephen Stills story: Stephen will later tell anyone who will sit and listen that he had served time for Uncle Sam in the jungles of Vietnam. These tales will be universally dismissed by chroniclers of the era as nothing more than drug-induced delusions. Such a thing couldn't possibly be true, it will be claimed, since Stills arrived on the Laurel Canyon scene at the very time that the first uniformed troops began shipping out and he remained in the public eye thereafter. And it will of course be quite true that Stephen Stills could not have served with uniformed ground troops in Vietnam, but what will be ignored is the undeniable fact that the US had thousands of 'advisers'—which is to say, CIA/Special Forces operatives—active in the country for a good many years before the arrival of the first official ground troops. What will also be ignored is that, given his background, his age, and the timeline of events, Stephen Stills not only could indeed have seen action in Vietnam, he would seem to have been a prime candidate for such an assignment. After which, of course, he could rather quickly become—stop me if you've heard this one before—an icon of the peace generation.

Another of those icons, and one of Laurel Canyon's most flamboyant residents, is a young man by the name of David Crosby, founding member of the seminal Laurel Canyon band the Byrds, as well as, of course, Crosby, Stills & Nash. Crosby is, not surprisingly, the son of an Annapolis graduate and WWII military intelligence officer, Major Floyd Delafield Crosby. Like others in this story, Floyd Crosby spent much of his post-service time traveling the world. Those travels landed him in places like Haiti, where he paid a visit in 1927, when the country just happened to be, coincidentally of course, under military occupation by the US Marines. One of the Marines doing that occupying was a guy that we met earlier by the name of Captain Claude Andrew Phillips.

But David Crosby is much more than just the son of Major Floyd Delafield Crosby. David Van Cortlandt Crosby, as it turns out, is a scion of the closely intertwined van Cortlandt, van Schuyler and van Rensselaer families. And while you're probably thinking, "the Van Who families?," I can assure you that if you plug those names in over at Wikipedia, you can spend a pretty fair amount of time reading up on the power wielded by this clan for the last, oh, two-and-a-quarter centuries or so. Suffice it to say that the Crosby family tree includes a truly dizzying array of US senators and congressmen, state senators and assemblymen, governors, mayors, judges, Supreme Court justices, Revolutionary and Civil War generals, signers of the Declaration of Independence, and members of the Continental Congress. It also includes, I should hasten to add—for those of you with a taste for such things—more than a few high-ranking Masons. Stephen van Rensselaer III, for example, reportedly served as Grand Master of Masons for New York. And if all that isn't impressive enough, according to the New England Genealogical Society, David Van Cortlandt Crosby is also a direct descendant of Founding Fathers and Federalist Papers authors Alexander Hamilton and John Jay.

If there is, as many believe, a network of elite families that has shaped national and world events for a very long time, then it is probably safe to say that David Crosby is a bloodline member of that clan (which may explain, come to think of it, why his semen seems to be in such demand in certain circles—because, if we're being honest here, it certainly can't be due to his looks or talent). If America had royalty, then David Crosby would probably be a Duke, or a Prince, or something similar. But other than that, he is just a normal, run-of-the-mill kind of guy who just happened to shine as one of Laurel Canyon's brightest stars. And who, I guess I should add, has a real fondness for guns, especially handguns, which he has maintained a sizable collection of for his entire life. According to those closest to him, it is a rare occasion when Mr. Crosby is not packing heat (John Phillips also owned and sometimes carried handguns). And according to Crosby himself, he has, on at least one occasion, discharged a firearm in anger at another human being. All of which made him, of course, an obvious choice for the Flower Children to rally around.

Another shining star on the Laurel Canyon scene, just a few years later, will be singer-songwriter Jackson Browne, who is—are you getting as bored with this as I am?—the product of a career military family. Browne's father was assigned to postwar reconstruction work in Germany, which very likely means that he was in the employ of the OSS, precursor to the CIA. As readers of my earlier work, *Understanding the F-Word*, may recall, US involvement in postwar reconstruction in Germany largely consisted of maintaining as much of the Nazi infrastructure as possible while shielding war criminals from capture and prosecution. Against that backdrop, Jackson Browne was born in a military hospital in Heidelberg, Germany. Some two decades later, he emerged as… oh, never mind.

Let's talk instead about three other Laurel Canyon vocalists who will rise to dizzying heights of fame and fortune: Gerry Beckley, Dan Peek and Dewey Bunnell. Individually, these three names are probably unknown to virtually all readers, but collectively, as the band America, the three will score huge hits in the early seventies with such songs as Ventura Highway, A Horse With No Name, and the Wizard of Oz-themed The Tin Man. I guess I probably don't need to add here that all three of these lads were products of the military/intelligence community. Beckley's dad was the commander of the now-defunct West Ruislip USAF base near London, England, a facility deeply immersed in intelligence operations. Bunnell's and Peek's fathers were both career Air Force officers serving under Beckley's dad at West Ruislip, which is where the three boys first met.

We could also, I suppose, discuss Mike Nesmith of the Monkees and Cory Wells of Three Dog Night (two more hugely successful Laurel Canyon bands), who both arrived in LA not long after serving time with the US Air Force. Nesmith also inherited a family fortune estimated at $25 million. Gram Parsons, who will briefly replace David Crosby in the

Byrds before fronting the Flying Burrito Brothers, was the son of Major Cecil Ingram “Coon Dog” Connor II, a decorated military officer and bomber pilot who reportedly flew over fifty combat missions. Parsons was also an heir, on his mother’s side, to the formidable Snively family fortune. Said to be the wealthiest family in the exclusive enclave of Winter Haven, Florida, the Snively family was the proud owner of Snively Groves, Inc., which reportedly owned as much as one-third of all the citrus groves in the state of Florida.

And so it goes as one scrolls through the roster of Laurel Canyon superstars. What one finds, far more often than not, are the sons and daughters of the military/intelligence complex and the sons and daughters of extreme wealth and privilege—oftentimes, you’ll find both rolled into one convenient package. Every once in a while, you will also stumble across a former child actor, like Brandon DeWilde, or Monkee Mickey Dolenz, or eccentric prodigy Van Dyke Parks. You might also encounter some former mental patients, such as James Taylor, who spent time in two different mental institutions in Massachusetts before hitting the Laurel Canyon scene, or Larry “Wild Man” Fischer, who was institutionalized repeatedly during his teen years, once for attacking his mother with a knife (an act that was gleefully mocked by Zappa on the cover of Fischer’s first album). Finally, you might find the offspring of an organized crime figure, like Warren Zevon, the son of William “Stumpy” Zevon, a lieutenant for infamous LA crimelord Mickey Cohen.

All these folks gathered nearly simultaneously along the narrow, winding roads of Laurel Canyon. They came from across the country—although the Washington, DC area was noticeably over-represented—as well as from Canada and England, and, in at least one case, all the way from Nazi Germany. They came even though, at the time, there was no music industry in Los Angeles. They came even though, at the time, there was no live music scene to speak of. They came even though, in retrospect, there was no discernible reason for them to do so.

It would, of course, make sense these days for an aspiring musician to venture out to Los Angeles. But in those days, the centers of the music universe were Nashville, Memphis and New York. It wasn’t the industry that drew the Laurel Canyon crowd, you see, but rather the Laurel Canyon crowd that transformed Los Angeles into the epicenter of the music industry. To what then do we attribute this unprecedented gathering of future musical superstars in the hills above Los Angeles? What was it that inspired them all to head out west? Perhaps Neil Young said it best when he told an interviewer that he couldn't really say why he headed out to LA circa 1966; he and others "were just going like Lemmings."

2

POWER TO THE PEOPLE CALL THIS A COUNTERCULTURE?

“Everyone there had at one time or another been into Satanism, or, like myself, had dabbled around the edges for sexual kicks.” Sammy Davis, Jr., referring to the victims at 10050 Cielo Drive

IN THE PREVIOUS CHAPTER, WE MET A SAMPLING OF SOME OF THE MOST successful and influential rock music superstars who emerged from Laurel Canyon during its glory days. But these were, alas, more than just musicians and singers and songwriters who had come together in the canyon; they were destined to become the spokesmen and *de facto* leaders of a generation of disaffected youth (as Carl Gottlieb noted in David Crosby’s co-written autobiography, “the unprecedented mass appeal of the new rock’n’roll gave the singers a voice in public affairs”). That, of course, makes it all the more curious that these icons were, to an overwhelming degree, the sons and daughters of the military/intelligence complex and the scions of families that have wielded vast wealth and power in this country for a very long time.

It could of course be argued that there was nothing necessarily nefarious in the fact that so many of these icons of a past generation hailed from military/intelligence families. Perhaps, it could be suggested, they had embarked on their chosen careers as a form of rebellion against the values of their parents. And that, I suppose, might be true in a couple of cases. But what are we to conclude from the fact that such an astonishing number of these folks (along with their girlfriends, wives, managers, etc.) hail from a similar background? Are we to believe that the *only* kids from that era who had musical talent were the sons and daughters of Navy admirals, chemical warfare engineers and Air Force intelligence officers? Or are they just the only ones who were signed to lucrative contracts and relentlessly promoted by their labels and the media?

If these artists were rebelling against, rather than subtly promoting, the values of their parents, then why didn't they ever speak out against the people they were allegedly rebelling against? Why did Jim Morrison never denounce, or even mention, his father's key role in escalating one of America's bloodiest illegal wars? And why did Frank Zappa never pen a song exploring the horrors of chemical warfare (though he did pen a charming little ditty entitled Ritual Dance Of The Child-Killer)? And which Mamas and the Papas song was it that laid waste to the values and actions of John Phillips' parents and in-laws? And in which interview, exactly, did David Crosby and Stephen Stills disown the family values that they were raised with?

We will be taking a much closer look at these performers, as well as at many of their contemporaries, as we endeavor to determine how and why the youth 'counterculture' of the 1960s was given birth. According to virtually all the accounts that I have read, this was essentially a spontaneous, organic response to the war in Southeast Asia and to the prevailing social conditions of the time. 'Conspiracy theorists,' of course, have frequently opined that what began as a legitimate movement was at some point co-opted and undermined by intelligence operations such as CoIntelPro. Entire books, for example, have been written examining how presumably virtuous musical artists were subjected to FBI harassment and/or whacked by the CIA.

Here we will, as you may have already ascertained, take a decidedly different approach. The question that we will be tackling is a more deeply troubling one: "what if *the musicians themselves* (and various other leaders and founders of the 'movement') were every bit as much a part of the intelligence community as the people who were supposedly harassing them?" What if, in other words, the entire youth culture of the 1960s was created not as a grass-roots challenge to the status quo, but as a cynical exercise in discrediting and marginalizing the budding anti-war movement and creating a fake opposition that could be easily controlled and led astray? And what if the harassment these folks were subjected to was largely a stage-managed show designed to give the leaders of the counterculture some much-needed 'street cred'? What if, in reality, they were pretty much all playing on the same team?

I should probably mention here that, contrary to popular opinion, the hippie/flower child movement was not synonymous with the anti-war movement. As time passed, there was, to be sure, a fair amount of overlap between the two 'movements.' And the mass media outlets, as is their wont, did their very best to portray the flower-power generation as the torch-bearers of the anti-war movement—after all, a ragtag band of unwashed, drug-fueled long-hairs sporting flowers and peace symbols was far easier to marginalize than, say, a bunch of respected college professors and their concerned students. The reality, however, is that the anti-war movement was already well underway before the first aspiring 'hippie' arrived in Laurel Canyon. The first Vietnam War 'teach-in' was held on the campus of the University of Michigan in March of 1965. The first organized walk on Washington occurred just a few weeks later. Needless to say, there were no hippies in attendance at either event. That 'problem' would soon be rectified. And the anti-war crowd—those who were serious about ending the bloodshed in Vietnam, anyway—would be none too appreciative.

As Barry Miles has written in his coffee-table book, *Hippie*, there were some hippies involved in anti-war protests, "particularly after the police riot in Chicago in 1968 when so many people got injured, but on the whole the movement activists looked on hippies with disdain." Peter Coyote, narrating the documentary *Hippies* on the History Channel, added that, "Some on the left even theorized that the hippies were the end result of a plot by the CIA to neutralize the anti-war movement with LSD, turning potential protestors into self-absorbed naval-gazers." An exasperated Abbie Hoffman once described the scene as he remembered it thusly: "There were all these activists, you know, Berkeley radicals, White Panthers… all trying to stop the war and change things for the better. Then we got flooded with all these 'flower children' who were into drugs and sex. *Where the hell did the hippies come from?!*"

As it turns out, they came, initially at least, from a rather private, isolated, largely self-contained neighborhood in Los Angeles known as

Laurel Canyon. In contrast to the other canyons slicing through the Hollywood Hills, Laurel Canyon has its own market, the semi-famous Laurel Canyon Country Store; its own deli and cleaners; its own elementary school, the Wonderland School; its own boutique shops and salons; and, in more recent years, its own celebrity rehab facility named, as you may have guessed, the Wonderland Center. During its heyday, the canyon even had its own management company, Lookout Management, to handle the talent. At one time, it even had its own newspaper.

One other thing that I should add here is that this has not been an easy line of research for me to conduct, primarily because I have been, for as long as I can remember, a huge fan of 1960s music and culture. Though I didn't come of age, so to speak, until the 1970s, I have always felt as though I was cheated by being denied the opportunity to experience firsthand the era that I was so obviously meant to inhabit. During my high school and college years, while my peers were mostly into faceless corporate rock (think Journey, Foreigner, Kansas, Boston, etc.) and, perhaps worse yet, the twin horrors of new wave and disco music, I was faithfully spinning my Hendrix, Joplin and Doors albums (which I still have, in the original vinyl versions) while my color organ (remember those?) competed with my black light and strobe light. I grew my hair long until well past the age when it should have been sheared off. I may have even strung beads across the doorway to my room… but it is possible that I am confusing my life with that of Greg Brady, who, as we all remember, once converted his dad's home office into a groovy bachelor pad.

Anyway, one of the most difficult aspects of this journey that I have been on for the last fifteen years or so has been watching so many of my former idols and mentors fall by the wayside as it became increasingly clear to me that people who I once thought were the good guys were, in reality, something entirely different. The first to fall, naturally enough, were the establishment figures—the politicians who I once, quite foolishly, looked up to as people who were fighting the good fight, within the confines of the system, to bring about real change. Though it now pains me to admit this, there was a time when I admired the likes of (egads!) George McGovern and Jimmy Carter, as well as California pols Tom Hayden and Jerry Brown. I even had high hopes, oh-so-many-years-ago, for (am I really admitting this in print?) Bill Clinton.

Since I mentioned Jerry "Governor Moonbeam" Brown, by the way, I must now digress just a bit. As luck would have it, Jerry Brown was, curiously enough, a longtime resident of a little place called Laurel Canyon. As readers of my previous work, *Programmed to Kill*, may recall, Brown lived on Wonderland Avenue, not too many doors down from 8763 Wonderland Avenue, the site of the infamous "Four on the Floor" murders, regarded by grizzled LA homicide detectives as the most bloody and brutal multiple murder in the city's very bloody history.

As it turns out, the most bloody mass murder in LA's history took place in one of the city's most serene, pastoral and exclusive neighborhoods. And strangely enough, the case usually cited as the runner-up for the title of bloodiest crime scene—the murders of Stephen Parent, Sharon Tate, Jay Sebring, Voytek Frykowski and Abigail Folger at 10050 Cielo Drive in Benedict Canyon, just a couple miles to the west of Laurel Canyon—had deep ties to the Laurel Canyon scene as well.

As previously mentioned, victims Folger and Frykowski lived in Laurel Canyon, at 2774 Woodstock Road, in a rented home right across the road from a favored gathering spot for Laurel Canyon royalty. Many of the regular visitors to Cass Elliot's home, including a number of shady drug dealers, were also regular visitors to the Folger/Frykowski home. (Frykowski's son, by the way, was stabbed to death on June 6, 1999, thirty years after his father met the same fate.) Victim Jay Sebring's acclaimed hair salon sat right at the mouth of Laurel Canyon, just below the Sunset Strip, and it was Sebring, alas, who was credited with sculpting Jim Morrison's famous mane. One of the investors in his Sebring International business venture was none other than Mr. John Phillips.

Sharon Tate was also well known in Laurel Canyon, where she was a frequent visitor to the homes of friends like John Phillips, Cass Elliot, and Abigail Folger. And when she wasn't in Laurel Canyon, many of the canyon regulars, both famous and infamous, made themselves at home at her place on Cielo Drive. Canyonite Van Dyke Parks, for example, dropped by for a visit on the very day of the murders. And Denny Doherty, the other "Papa" in the Mamas and the Papas, has claimed that he and John Phillips were invited to the Cielo Drive home on the night of the murders, but, as luck would have it, they never made it over. (Similarly, Chuck Negron of Three Dog Night, a regular visitor to the Wonderland death house, had set up a drug buy on the night of that mass murder, but he fell asleep and never made it over.)

Along with the victims, the alleged killers also lived in and/or were very much a part of the Laurel Canyon scene. Bobby "Cupid" Beausoleil, for example, lived in a Laurel Canyon apartment during the early months of 1969. Charles "Tex" Watson, who allegedly led the death squad responsible for the carnage at Cielo Drive, lived for a time in a home on—guess where?—Wonderland Avenue. During that time, curiously enough, Watson co-owned and worked in a wig shop in Beverly Hills, Crown Wig Creations, Ltd., that was located near the mouth of Benedict Canyon. Meanwhile, one of Jay Sebring's primary claims-to-fame was his expertise in crafting men's hairpieces, which he did in his shop near the mouth of Laurel Canyon. A typical day then in the late 1960s would find Watson crafting hairpieces for an upscale Hollywood clientele near Benedict Canyon, and then returning home to Laurel Canyon, while Sebring crafted hairpieces for an upscale Hollywood clientele near Laurel Canyon, and then returned home to Benedict Canyon. And then one crazy day, as we all know, one of them became a killer and the other his victim. But there's nothing odd about that, I suppose, so let's move on.

Oh, wait a minute… we can't quite move on just yet, as I forgot to mention that Sebring's Benedict Canyon home, at 9820 Easton Drive, was a rather infamous Hollywood death house that had once belonged to Jean Harlow and Paul Bern. The mismatched pair were wed on July 2, 1932, when Harlow, already a huge star of the silver screen, was just twenty-one years old. Just two months later, on September 5, Bern caught a bullet to the head in his wife's bedroom. He was found sprawled naked in a pool of his own blood, his corpse drenched with his wife's perfume. Upon discovering the body, Bern's butler promptly contacted MGM's head of security, Whitey Hendry, who in turn contacted Louis B. Mayer and Irving Thalberg. All three men descended upon the Benedict Canyon home to, you know, tidy up a bit. A couple hours later, they decided to contact the LAPD. This scene would be repeated years later when Sebring's friends would rush to the very same home to clean up before officers investigating the Tate murders arrived.

Bern's death was, as is so often the case, written off as a suicide. His newlywed wife, strangely enough, was never called as a witness at the inquest. Bern's *other* wife—which is to say, his common-law wife, Dorothy Millette—reportedly boarded a Sacramento riverboat on September 6, 1932, the day after Paul's death. She was next seen floating belly up in the Sacramento River. Her death, as would be expected, was also ruled a suicide. Less than five years later, Harlow herself dropped dead at the ripe old age of twenty-six. At the time, authorities opted not to divulge the cause of death, though it was later claimed that bad kidneys had done her in. During her brief stay on this planet, Harlow had cycled through three turbulent marriages and yet still found time to serve as godmother to Bugsy Siegel's daughter, Millicent.

Though Bern's was the most famous body to be hauled out of the Easton Drive house in a coroner's bag, it certainly wasn't the only one. Another man had reportedly committed suicide there as well, in some unspecified fashion. Yet another unfortunate soul drowned in the home's pool. And a maid was once found swinging from the end of a rope. Her death, needless to say, was ruled a suicide as well. That's a lot of blood for one home to absorb, but the house's morbid history, though a turn-off to many prospective residents, was reportedly exactly what attracted Jay Sebring to the property. His murder would further darken the black cloud hanging over the home.

As Laurel Canyon chronicler Michael Walker has noted, LA's two most notorious mass murders, one in August of 1969 and the other in July of 1981 (both involving five victims, though at Wonderland one of the five miraculously survived), provided rather morbid bookends for Laurel Canyon's glory years. Walker though, like others who have chronicled that time and place, treats these brutal crimes as though they were unfortunate aberrations. The reality, however, is that the nine bodies recovered from Cielo Drive and Wonderland Avenue constitute just the tip of a very large, and very bloody, iceberg.

To partially illustrate that point: Diane Linkletter (daughter of famed entertainer Art Linkletter), legendary comedian Lenny Bruce, screen idol Sal Mineo, starlet Inger Stevens, and silent film star Ramon Novarro, all have something in common—all were found dead in their homes, either in or at the mouth of Laurel Canyon, in the decade between 1966 and 1976. And all five were, in all likelihood, murdered in those Laurel Canyon homes.

Only two of them are officially listed as murder victims (Mineo, who was stabbed to death outside his home at 8563 Holloway Drive on February 12, 1976, and Novarro, who was killed near the Country

Store in a decidedly ritualistic fashion on the eve of Halloween, 1968). Inger Stevens' death in her home at 8000 Woodrow Wilson Drive, on April 30, 1970 (*Walpurgisnacht* on the occult calendar), was officially a suicide, though why she opted to propel herself through a decorative glass screen as part of that suicide remains a mystery. Perhaps she just wanted to leave behind a gruesome crime scene, and simple overdoses can be so, you know, bloodless and boring.

Diane Linkletter, according to legend, sailed out the window of her Shoreham Towers apartment because, in her LSD-addled state, she thought she could fly. We know this because Art himself told us that it was so, and because the story was retold throughout the 1970s as a cautionary tale about the dangers of drugs. What we weren't told, however, is that Diane (born, curiously enough, on Halloween day, 1948) wasn't alone when she plunged six stories to her death on the morning of October 4, 1969. *Au contraire*, she was with a gent by the name of Edward Durston, who, in a completely unexpected turn of events, accompanied actress Carol Wayne to Mexico some fifteen years later. Carol, alas, perhaps weighed down by her enormous breasts, managed to drown in barely a foot of water, while Mr. Durston promptly disappeared. As would be expected, he was never questioned by authorities about Wayne's curious death. After all, it is quite common for the same guy to be the sole witness to two separate 'accidental' deaths.

Art also neglected to mention that just weeks before Diane's curious death, another member of the Linkletter clan, Art's son-in-law, John Zwyer, caught a bullet to the head in the backyard of his Hollywood Hills home. But that, of course, was an 'unconnected' suicide.

I'm not even going to discuss here the circumstances of Lenny Bruce's death from acute morphine poisoning on August 3, 1966, because, to be perfectly honest, I don't know too many people who don't already assume that Lenny was whacked. I'll just note here that his funeral was well-attended by the Laurel Canyon rock icons, and control over his unreleased material fell into the hands of a guy by the name of Frank Zappa. And another unsavory character named Phil Spector, whose crack team of studio musicians, dubbed the Wrecking Crew, were the actual musicians playing on many studio recordings by such Laurel Canyon bands as the Monkees, the Byrds, the Beach Boys, and the Mamas and the Papas.

3

DIG! THE LAUREL CANYON DEATH LIST

"I mean, fuck, he auditioned for Neil [Young] for fuck's sake." Graham Nash, explaining to author Michael Walker how close Charles Manson was to the Laurel Canyon scene

During the ten-year period during which Lenny Bruce, Ramon Novarro, Sal Mineo, Diane Linkletter, Inger Stevens, Sharon Tate, Jay Sebring, Voytek Frykowski and Abigail Folger all turned up dead, numerous other people connected to Laurel Canyon did as well, often under very questionable circumstances. The list includes, but is certainly not limited to, all of the following names:

☠ Marina Elizabeth Habe, whose body was carved up and tossed into the heavy brush along Mulholland Drive, just west of Bowmont Drive, on December 30, 1968. Habe, just seventeen at the time of her death, was the daughter of Hans Habe, who emigrated to the US from fascist Austria circa 1940. Shortly thereafter, Hans married a General Foods heiress and began studying psychological warfare at the Military Intelligence Training Center. After completing his training, he put his psychological warfare skills to use by creating eighteen newspapers in occupied Germany—under the direction, no doubt, of the OSS.

☠ Christine Hinton, who was killed in a head-on collision on September 30, 1969. At the time, Hinton was a girlfriend of David Crosby and the founder and head of the Byrds' fan club. She was also the daughter of a career Army officer stationed at the notorious Presidio military base in San Francisco. Another of Crosby's girlfriends from that same era was Shelley Roecker, who grew up on the Hamilton Air Force Base in Marin County.

☠ Jane Doe #59, found dumped into the heavy undergrowth of Laurel Canyon in November 1969, within sight of where Habe had been dumped less than a year earlier. The teenage girl, who was never identified, had been stabbed 157 times in the chest and throat.

☠ Alan "Blind Owl" Wilson, singer, songwriter and guitarist for the Laurel Canyon blues-rock band, Canned Heat, was found dead in his Topanga Canyon home on September 3, 1970. His death was written off as a suicide/OD. Wilson had moved to Topanga Canyon after the band's Laurel Canyon home—on Lookout Mountain Avenue, next door to Joni Mitchell and Graham Nash's home—burned to the ground. "Blind Owl" was just twenty-seven years old at the time of his death. A little more than a decade later, Wilson's former bandmate, Bob "The Bear" Hite, who had once acknowledged in an interview that he had partied in the canyons with various members of the Manson Family, died of a heart attack at the ripe old age of thirty-six.

☠ Jimi Hendrix, who reportedly briefly occupied the sprawling mansion just north of the Log Cabin after he moved to LA in 1968, died in London under seriously questionable circumstances on September 18, 1970. Though he rarely spoke of it, Jimi had served a stint in the US Army with the 101st Airborne Division at Fort Campbell. His official records indicate that he was forced into the service by the courts and then released after just one year when he purportedly proved to be a poor soldier. One wonders though why he was assigned to such an elite division if he was indeed such a failure. One also wonders why he wasn't subjected to disciplinary measures rather than being handed a free pass out of his ostensibly court-ordered service. In any event, Jimi himself once told reporters that he was given a medical discharge after breaking an ankle during a parachute jump. One biographer has claimed that Jimi faked being gay to earn an early release. The truth, alas, remains rather elusive. At the time of Jimi's death, the first person called by his girlfriend—Monika Danneman, last to see Hendrix alive—was Eric Burden of the Animals. Two years earlier, Burden had relocated to LA and taken over ringmaster duties from Frank Zappa after Zappa had vacated the Log Cabin and moved into a less high-profile Laurel Canyon home. Within a year of Jimi's death, a reported prostitute-turned-groupie named Devon Wilson, who had been with Jimi the day before his death, plunged from an eighth-floor window of New York's Chelsea Hotel. On March 5, 1973, a shadowy character named Michael Jeffery, who had managed both Hendrix and Burden, was killed in a midair plane collision. Jeffery was known to openly boast of having organized crime connections and of working for the CIA. After Jimi's death, it was discovered that Jeffery had been funneling most of Hendrix's gross earnings into offshore accounts in the Bahamas linked to international drug trafficking. Years later, on April 5, 1996, Danneman, the daughter of a wealthy German industrialist, was found dead near her home in a fume-filled Mercedes.

☠ Jim Morrison, who for a time lived in a home on Rothdell Trail, behind the Laurel Canyon Country Store, may or may not have died in Paris on July 3, 1971. The events of that day remain shrouded in mystery and rumor, and the details of the story, such as they are, have changed over the years. What is known is that, on that very same day, Admiral George Stephen Morrison delivered the keynote speech at a decommissioning ceremony for the aircraft carrier *USS Bon Homme Richard*, from where, seven years earlier, he had helped choreograph the Tonkin Gulf Incident. A few years after Jim's death, his common-law wife, Pamela Courson, dropped dead as well, officially of a heroin overdose. Like Hendrix, Morrison had been an avid student of the occult, with a particular fondness for the work of Aleister Crowley. According to super-groupie Pamela Des Barres, he had also "read all he could about incest and sadism." Also like Hendrix (and Wilson), Morrison was just twenty-seven at the time of his (possible) death.

☠ Brandon DeWilde, a good friend of David Crosby and Gram Parsons, was killed in a freak accident in Colorado on July 6, 1972, when his van plowed under a flatbed truck. In the 1950s, DeWilde had been an in-demand child actor since the age of eight. He had appeared on-screen with some of the biggest names in Hollywood, including Alan Ladd, Lee Marvin, Paul Newman, John Wayne, Kirk Douglas and Henry Fonda. Around 1965, DeWilde fell in with Hollywood's 'Young Turks,' through whom he met and befriended Crosby, Parsons, and various other members of the Laurel Canyon Club. DeWilde was just thirty at the time of his death.

☠ Christine Frka, a former governess for Moon Unit Zappa and the Zappa family's former housekeeper at the Log Cabin, died on November 5, 1972, of an alleged drug overdose, though friends suspected foul play. As "Miss Christine," Frka had been a member of the Zappa-created GTOs, a musical act, of sorts, composed entirely of very young groupies. She was also the inspiration for the song, Christine's Tune: Devil In Disguise by Gram Parsons' Flying Burrito Brothers. Frka may have been in her early twenties when she died, possibly even younger.

☠ Danny Whitten, a guitarist/vocalist/songwriter with Neil Young's sometime band, Crazy Horse, died of an overdose on November 18, 1972. According to rock'n'roll legend, Whitten had been fired by Young earlier that day during rehearsals in San Francisco. Young and Jack Nitzsche, Phil Spector's former top assistant, had given Whitten $50 and put him on a plane back to LA. Within hours, he was dead. Whitten was just twenty-nine.

☠ Bruce Berry, a roadie for Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young, died of a heroin overdose in June 1973. Berry had just flown out to Maui to deliver a shipment of cocaine to Stephen Stills, and was promptly sent back to LA by Crosby and Nash. Berry was a brother of Jan Berry, of Jan and Dean. (Dean Torrence, the "Dean" of Jan and Dean, had played a part in the fake kidnapping of Frank Sinatra, Jr., just a couple weeks after the JFK assassination. The staged event was a particularly transparent effort to divert attention away from the questions that were cropping up, after the initial shock had passed, about the events in Dealey Plaza.)

☠ Clarence White, a guitarist who had played with the Byrds, was run over by a drunk driver and killed on July 14, 1973. White had grown up near Lancaster, not far from where Frank Zappa spent his teen years. At least one member of White's immediate family was employed at Edwards Air Force Base. The driver who killed young Clarence, just twenty-nine years old at the time of his death, was given a one-year suspended sentence and served no time.

☠ Gram Parsons, formerly with the International Submarine Band, the Byrds and the Flying Burrito Brothers, allegedly overdosed on a speedball at the Joshua Tree Inn on September 19, 1973. Just two months before his death, Parsons' Topanga Canyon home had burnt to the ground. After his death, his body was stolen from LAX by the Burrito's road manager, Phil Kaufman, and then taken back out to Joshua Tree and ritually burned on the autumnal equinox. Kaufman had been a prison buddy of Charlie Manson's at Terminal Island; when Phil was released from Terminal Island in March of 1968, he quickly reunited with his old pal, who had been released a year earlier. By the time of Gram's death, his family had already experienced its share of questionable deaths. Just before Christmas 1958, Parsons' father had sent Gram, along with his mother and sister, off to stay with family in Florida. The next day, just after the winter solstice, Ingram Cecil Connor, Jr. caught a bullet to the head. His death was recorded as a suicide and it was claimed that he had sent his family away to spare them as much pain as possible. It seems just as likely, however, that Cecil knew his days were numbered and wanted to get his family out of the line of fire. The next year, 1959, Gram's mother married again, to Robert Ellis Parsons, who adopted Gram and his sister Avis. Six years later, in June of 1965, Gram's mother died the day after a sudden illness landed her in the hospital. According to witnesses, she died "almost immediately" after a visit from her husband, Robert Parsons. Many of those close to the situation believed that Parsons had a hand in her death (very shortly thereafter, Robert Parsons married his stepdaughter's teenage babysitter). Following his mother's death, Parsons briefly attended Harvard University and then launched his music career with the formation of the International Submarine Band, which quickly found its way to—where else?—Laurel Canyon. Gram's death in 1973 at the age of twenty-six left his younger sister Avis as the sole surviving member of the family. She was killed in 1993, reportedly in a boating accident, at the age of forty.

☠ "Mama" Cass Elliot, the Earth Mother of Laurel Canyon whose circle of friends included musicians, Mansonites, young Hollywood stars, the wealthy son of a State Department official, singer/songwriters, assorted drug dealers, and some particularly unsavory characters the LAPD once described as "some kind of hit squad," died in the London home of Harry Nilsson on July 29, 1974. (Nilsson had been a frequent drinking buddy of John Lennon in Laurel Canyon and on the Sunset Strip.) At thirty-two, Cass had lived a long and productive life, by Laurel Canyon standards. Four years later, in the very same room of the very same London flat, still owned by Harry Nilsson, Keith Moon of the Who also died at age thirty-two, on September 7, 1978. Though initial press reports held that Cass had choked to death on a ham sandwich, the official verdict was heart failure. Her actual cause of death could likely be filed under "knowing where too many of the bodies were buried." Moon reportedly died from a massive overdose of a drug used to treat alcohol withdrawal.

☠ Amy Gossage, Graham Nash's girlfriend, was murdered in her San Francisco home on February 13, 1975. Just twenty years old at the time, she had been stabbed nearly fifty times and was bludgeoned beyond recognition. Amy's father, a famed advertising/PR executive, had died of leukemia in 1969. Not long after, her half-sister had been killed in a car crash. In May of 1974, her mother, the daughter of a wealthy banking family, died as well, reportedly of cirrhosis of the liver. That left just Amy, age nineteen, and her brother Eben, age twenty, both of whom reportedly had serious drug dependencies. Amy's brutal murder, cleverly enough, was pinned on Eben. Police had conveniently found bloodstained clothes, along with a hammer and scissors, sitting on the porch of Eben's apartment, looking very much as though it had been planted. A friend of Eben's would later remark, perhaps quite tellingly, "If Eben did kill her, I'm convinced he doesn't know he did it."

☠ Tim Buckley, a singer/songwriter signed to Frank Zappa's record label and managed by Herb Cohen, died of a reported overdose on June 29, 1975. Buckley had once appeared on an episode of *The Monkees*, and, like Monkee Peter Tork (and so many others in this story), he hailed from Washington, DC. He was the son of a mentally unbalanced and occasionally violent WWII hero. Buckley was just twenty-eight at the time of his death, which reportedly shocked many of his friends and relatives. Despite having released nine albums during his short life, Buckley died in debt, which probably had nothing to do with his management by Cohen. His son, Jeff Buckley, also an accomplished musician, managed to remain on this planet two years longer than his dad did; he was thirty when he died in a bizarre drowning incident on May 29, 1997.

☠ Phyllis Major Browne, wife of singer/songwriter Jackson Browne, reportedly overdosed on barbiturates on March 25, 1976. Her death was—you all should know the words to this song by now—ruled a suicide. She was just thirty years old.

There are a few other curious deaths we could add here as well, though they were more indirectly related to the Laurel Canyon scene. Nevertheless, they deserve an honorable mention:

☠ Bobby Fuller, singer/songwriter/guitarist for the Bobby Fuller Four, was found dead in his car near Grauman's Chinese Theater on July 18, 1966, after being lured away from his home by a mysterious 2:00–3:00 AM phone call of unknown origin. Fuller is best known for penning the hit song I Fought the Law, which had just hit the charts when he supposedly committed suicide at the age of twenty-three. There were multiple cuts and bruises on his face, chest and shoulders, dried blood around his mouth, and a hairline fracture to his right hand. He had been thoroughly doused with gasoline, including in his mouth and throat. The inside of the car was doused as well, and an open book of matches lay on the seat. It was perfectly obvious that Fuller's killer (or killers) had planned to torch the car, destroying all evidence, but likely got scared away. The LAPD, nevertheless, ruled Fuller's death a suicide—despite the coroner's conclusion that the gas had been poured *after* Bobby's death. Police later decided that it wasn't a suicide after all, but rather an accident. They didn't bother to explain how Fuller had accidentally doused himself with gasoline after accidentally killing himself. At the time of his death, one of Fuller's closest confidants was a prostitute named Melody who worked at PJ's nightclub, where Bobby frequently played. The club was co-owned by Eddie Nash, who would, many years later, orchestrate the Wonderland massacre. A few years after Bobby's death, his brother and bass player, Randy Fuller, teamed up with drummer Dewey Martin, formerly of Buffalo Springfield.

☠ Gary Hinman, a musician, music teacher, and part-time chemist, was brutally murdered in his Topanga Canyon home on July 27, 1969. Convicted of his murder was Mansonite Bobby Beausoleil, who had played rhythm guitar in a Laurel Canyon band known as the Grass Roots, which later achieved a fair amount of fame under the name Love.

☠ Janis Joplin, vocalist extraordinaire, was found dead of a heroin overdose on October 4, 1970, at the Landmark Hotel, about a mile east of the mouth of Laurel Canyon, where she occasionally visited. Indications were that she had taken or been given a “hot shot,” many times stronger than standard street heroin. Joplin’s father, by the way, was a petroleum engineer for Texaco. And though it might normally seem an odd coupling, it somehow seems perfectly natural, in the context of this story, that Janis once dated that great crusader in the war on all things immoral, William Bennett. Like Morrison, Hendrix and Wilson, Joplin died at the age of twenty-seven.

☠ Duane Allman and Berry Oakley, lead guitarist and bass player for the Allman Brothers, were killed in freakishly similar motorcycle crashes on October 29, 1971, and November 11, 1972, respectively. Allman was the son of Willis Allman, a US Army Sergeant who had been murdered by another soldier near Norfolk, Virginia (home of the world’s largest naval installation) on December 26, 1949. In 1967, Duane and his younger brother, Gregg, then billing themselves as the Allman Joys, ventured out to Los Angeles. While there, Gregg auditioned for and was almost signed by the Laurel Canyon band Poco, which featured Buffalo Springfield alumni Richie Furay and Jim Messina, as well as future Eagle Randy Meisner. Duane was killed when a truck turned in front of his motorcycle at an intersection and inexplicably stopped. Just over a year later, Oakley had a similar run-in with a bus, just three blocks from where Allman had been killed. Following the crash, Berry had dusted himself off and declined medical attention, insisting that he was okay. Three hours later, he was rushed to the hospital where he died. Both Oakley and Allman were just twenty-four years old.

☠ Gary Thain, bassist for the band Uriah Heep—yet another group with a keen interest in magick and the occult, with album titles such as *Demons and Wizards* and *Magician's Birthday*—was found dead on December 8, 1975, five years to the day before Nilsson sidekick John Lennon would be gunned down at the Dakota Apartments in New York City. Thain had once played with sometime Canyonite Jimi Hendrix and his first live appearance with Uriah Heep was at the Whisky-a-Go-Go on February 1, 1972. His death was, alas, attributed to a drug overdose. Thain is yet another member of the 'Twenty-Seven Club.'

☠ Tommy Bolin, best known as a guitarist for the band Deep Purple, was also found dead of a reported drug overdose almost exactly one year later, on December 4, 1976, though varying stories have surfaced concerning the circumstances of his death. Bolin had previously played for the James Gang, in the position once filled by Joe Walsh, who by the time of Bolin's death had become a member of Laurel Canyon's most commercially successful band, the Eagles. Bolin died a couple years shy of making the Twenty-Seven Club.

It wasn't only the musicians with ties to Laurel Canyon who died young and often under questionable, and sometimes quite violent, circumstances. The dark undercurrents pulsing through the canyons in the early 1970s that left such a trail of destruction extended well beyond the Hollywood Hills, as illustrated by the deaths of a handful of mostly forgotten figures in the rock community:

☠ Phil King, an early frontman for Blue Öyster Cult, a band whose album art and song lyrics suggested a keen interest in the occult, was shot three times in the back of the head in New York City on April 27, 1972, just three days shy of *Walpurgisnacht*. Three months later, on July 24, 1972, Bobby Ramirez, the drummer for an early formation featuring frontman Edgar Winter, was beaten and stabbed to death in a Chicago bar. He was twenty-three years old.

☠ Rory Storm, the founder and frontman for the UK's Rory Storm and the Hurricanes, was found dead on September 28, 1972. Born Alan Caldwell on the autumnal equinox of 1939 in Liverpool, England, Storm had close ties to that other, far more famous band from Liverpool. The Hurricanes' original drummer was none other than Ritchie Starkey, who left the band to join John, Paul and George, becoming Ringo Starr in the process. It is said that George Harrison, who dated Storm's younger sister, initially wanted to join the Hurricanes but had to settle for the Quarrymen when he was deemed too young. That same sister would later date a young Paul McCartney. Popular on the Liverpool/Hamburg club circuit, the Hurricanes at times shared the stage with the Beatles, both before and after Starr's defection. Rory's band though—which he initially wanted to name Dracula and the Werewolves—never caught fire the way the Beatles did and by the late 1960s/early 1970s, Storm had to find work as a DJ. In Amsterdam at the time of his father's death in 1972, Rory returned to Liverpool to be with his grieving mother. On September 28, 1972, just one week after Rory's thirty-third birthday, both mother and son turned up dead in the family home. In a rather unlikely turn of events, it was claimed that both had independently committed suicide on the same day in different rooms of the same house. Storm reportedly had sleeping pills in his system, but not in sufficient concentrations to have caused his demise, leaving the actual cause of death something of a mystery.

☠ Ronald "Pigpen" McKernan, a founding member of the Grateful Dead from its early incarnations as the Zodiacs and the Warlocks, died on March 8, 1973. A vocalist and multi-instrumentalist, McKernan had a short romantic relationship and a somewhat longer friendship with fellow death-list member Janis Joplin. Pigpen was found dead at his home, reportedly of a gastrointestinal hemorrhage. His death is primarily of interest because he was, like Joplin, twenty-seven years old at the time, qualifying him for membership in the Twenty-Seven Club alongside charter members Joplin, Brian Jones, Jimi Hendrix and Jim Morrison, and more recent hall-of-famers such as Kurt Cobain and Amy Winehouse.

☠ Graham Bond, who was widely considered to be a founding father of the 1960s British R&B boom, was killed on May 5, 1974, when he was reportedly run over by a train at London's Finsbury Park station. His death, to no one's surprise, was ruled a suicide. Bond, who was adopted and believed himself to be the biological son of occultist/spy Aleister Crowley, had a deep fascination with the occult. He also reportedly struggled with what the psychiatric community refers to as a manic depressive disorder, which was aggravated by chronic drug abuse. Bond was just thirty-six years old at the time of his death.

☠ Pete Ham, a singer/songwriter/guitarist and the leader of the British band Badfinger, another outfit with close ties to those lads from Liverpool, was found swinging from the end of a rope on April 23, 1975. Ham's band was first signed by the Beatles' own Apple label, and their first single, Come And Get It, was penned by Paul McCartney. According to rock lore, McCartney recorded the song himself and then insisted that Ham's band play and record it exactly the same way. Sir Paul also personally auditioned all four members of Badfinger to decide who would provide the lead vocal on the single. Ham's greatest claim to fame though was being the co-writer of the oft-recorded Without You, a song that became a monster hit around the world when it was committed to vinyl in 1972 by John Lennon's Sunset Strip/Laurel Canyon sidekick, Harry Nilsson—the very same Harry Nilsson whose London flat served as the death scene for both Mama Cass and Keith Moon. The song received numerous awards and Ham and his band moved over to Warner Bros. Records with the expectation that Badfinger was soon to become quite a sensation. It wasn't meant to be. Within a few years, Pete Ham was unemployed and turned up dead in his garage. Ham is yet another member of the Twenty-Seven Club, though not by much; his death came just three days before his twenty-eighth birthday. His passing was barely reported on, due in part to the fact that neither Warner Bros. nor the Beatles organization bothered to make an announcement or issue any public comment. Just one month later, his girlfriend gave birth to a daughter that Ham was never to know. Eight-and-a-half years later, on November 18, 1983, Tom Evans, Ham's former bandmate and the co-writer of Without You, was also found swinging from the end of a rope.

Shit happens, it appears.

4

RELATED LIVES AND RELATIVE DEATHS

"No one here gets out alive."
Jim Morrison

BEFORE MOVING ON FROM THE LAUREL CANYON DEATH LIST, THERE ARE A few more celebrity deaths that demand a closer inspection. The first is a truly tragic tale of a rising star in Laurel Canyon, who, by the time of her death, had been completely forgotten. The second is the story of a man who had only tangential ties to Laurel Canyon, but whose life and death may provide one of the keys to understanding the canyon scene. And the third is the story of a guy who had no real connections to Laurel Canyon, but whose life arc has been so illuminatingly bizarre that it merits inclusion here.

Judee Lynn Sill was born in Studio City, California, not far from the northern entrance to Laurel Canyon, on October 7, 1944. Almost a quarter-century later, she would be favorably compared to such other Laurel Canyon singer/songwriters as Joni Mitchell, Judi Collins and Carole King. When she died though, on November 23, 1979, not a single obituary was published to note her passing.

Judee's father, Milford "Bud" Sill, was reportedly a cameraman for Paramount Studios with numerous Hollywood connections. When Judee was still quite young, however, Bud moved the family to Oakland and opened a bar known as Bud's Bar. He also operated a side business as an importer of rare animals, which required him to spend a considerable amount of time traveling in Central and South America. Such a business, it should be noted, would provide an ideal cover for covert intelligence work. In any event, Bud Sill was dead by 1952, when Judee was just seven or eight years old. Depending on who is telling the story, Bud died either from pneumonia or a heart attack.

Following Bud's death, the family relocated back to Southern California and Judee's older brother Dennis, though still in his teens, took over the family importing business. That career didn't last long though as Dennis soon turned up dead down in Central America, either from a liver infection or a car accident. The animal importing business, I guess, is a rather dangerous one.

Following Bud's death, Judee's mother, Oneta, met and married Ken Muse, an Academy Award-winning animator for Hanna-Barbera who was described by Judee as an abusive, violent alcoholic. At fifteen, Judee fled her violent home life and lived with an older man with whom she pulled off a series of armed robberies in the San Fernando Valley. Those activities landed her in reform school, which did little to curb her appetite for drugs, crime and alcohol. She spent the next few years with a serious heroin addiction, which she financed by dealing drugs and turning tricks in some of LA's seedier neighborhoods.

By 1963, Judee had cleaned herself up enough to enroll in junior college. In the early winter of 1965, however, Judee's mom, her last surviving family member, died either of cancer or of complications arising from her chronic alcoholism (take your pick; the details of this story will likely remain forever elusive). Barely an adult, Judee was left all alone in the world, and thus began another downward spiral into drugs and crime, which culminated in her being arrested and possibly serving time on forgery and drug charges.

In the late 1960s, with her addictions apparently temporarily curbed, Sill joined the Laurel Canyon scene, where she attempted to forge a career as a singer/songwriter. Her first big break came when she sold the song Lady O to the Turtles (yet another Laurel Canyon band to hit it big in the mid-1960s; best known for the hit single Happy Together, the Turtles were led by lead vocalist/songwriter Howard Kaylan, who happened to be, small world that it is, a cousin of Frank Zappa's manager and business partner, Herb Cohen). The band released the song, which featured Judee's guitar work, in 1969. The next year, Sill became the first artist signed to David Geffen's fledgling Asylum record label. The year after that, her self-titled debut album became Asylum's first official release. The first single from the album, Jesus Was A Crossmaker, was produced by Graham Nash, whom she opened for on tour following the album's release.

Though critically well-received, the album's sales were disappointing, in part because the record was overshadowed by the debut albums of Jackson Browne and the Eagles, both released by Asylum shortly after the release of Judee's album. Sill's second album, 1973's *Heart Food*, was even more of a commercial disappointment. Nevertheless, in 1974, she began work on a third album in Monkee Mike Nesmith's recording studio. Prior to completion, however, she abandoned the project and promptly disappeared without a trace. What became of her between that time and her death some five years later remains largely a mystery. It is assumed that she once again descended into a life of drugs and prostitution, but no one seems to know for sure.

It is alleged that she was seriously injured when her car was rear-ended by actor Danny Kaye, causing her to suffer from chronic back pain thereafter, thus contributing to her drug addictions. According to a friend of hers, she lived in a home that featured an enormous photo of Bela Lugosi above the fireplace, a large ebony cross above her bed, and racks of candles. She is said to have read extensively from Rosicrucian manuscripts and from the writings of Aleister Crowley, to have possessed a complete collection of the work of Helena Blavatsky, and to have been a gifted tarot card reader.

What is known for sure is that, on the day after Thanksgiving, 1979, Judee Sill, the last surviving member of her family, was found dead in a North Hollywood apartment. The cause of death was listed as "acute cocaine and codeine intoxication." It was claimed that a suicide note was found, but friends insisted that the supposed note was either a portion of a diary entry or an unfinished song. One of her friends would later note that, at some point in her life, Judee began to realize that "there was a part of her that wasn't under her conscious control." I'm guessing that the guy up for review next could relate to that…

Phil Ochs, a folk singer/songwriter and political activist, was found hanged in his sister's home in Far Rockaway, New York, on April 9, 1976.

Throughout his life, Ochs was one of the most overtly political of the 1960s rock and folk music stars. A regular attendee at anti-war, civil rights, and labor rallies, Ochs appeared to be, at all times, an unwavering political leftist (he named his first band the Singing Socialists). That all changed, however, and rather dramatically, in the months before his death.

Born in El Paso, Texas, on December 19, 1940, Phil and his family moved frequently during the first few years of his life. His father, Dr. Jacob Ochs, had been drafted by the US Army and assigned to various military hospitals in New York, New Mexico and Texas. In 1943, Dr. Ochs was shipped overseas, returning two years later with a medical discharge. Upon his return, he was immediately institutionalized and didn’t return to his family for another two years. During that time, he was subjected to every psychiatric ‘treatment’ imaginable, including electroshock ‘therapy.’ When he finally returned to his family, in 1947, he was but a shell of his former self, described by Phil’s sister as “almost like a phantom.”

Beginning in the fall of 1956, Phil Ochs began attending Staunton Military Academy, the very same institution that future serial killer/cult leader Gary Heidnik would attend just one year after Ochs graduated. During Phil’s two years there, a friend and fellow band member was found swinging from the end of a rope. (I probably don’t need to add here that the death was ruled a suicide.) Following graduation, Phil enrolled at Ohio State University, but not before, oddly enough, having a little plastic surgery done to alter his appearance (doing such things, needless to say, was rather uncommon in 1958).

In early 1962, just months before his scheduled graduation, Ochs dropped out of college to pursue a career in music. By 1966, he had released three albums. In 1967, under the management of his brother, Michael Ochs, Phil moved out to Los Angeles. Michael had begun working the previous year as an assistant to Billy James, who maintained a party house at 8504 Ridpath in—you guessed it—Laurel Canyon. As the 1970s rolled around, and with his career beginning to fade, Phil Ochs began to travel internationally, usually accompanied by vast quantities of booze and pills. Those travels included a visit to Chile not long before the US-sponsored coup that toppled Salvador Allende.

In the summer of 1975, Phil Ochs’ public persona abruptly changed.

Adopting the name John Butler Train, Ochs proclaimed himself a CIA operative and presented himself as a belligerent, right-wing thug. He told an interviewer that, "on the first day of summer 1975, Phil Ochs was murdered in the Chelsea Hotel by John Train… For the good of societies, public and secret, he needed to be gotten rid of." That symbolic assassination, on the summer solstice, took place at the same hotel that Devon Wilson had flown out of a few years earlier. One of Ochs' biographers would later write that Phil/John "actually believed he was a member of the CIA." Also in those final months of his life, Ochs began compiling curious lists, with entries that apparently reference US biological warfare research: "shellfish toxin, Fort Dietrich, cobra venom, Chantilly Race Track, hollow silver dollars, New York Cornell Hospital…"

Many years before Ochs' metamorphosis, in an interesting bit of foreshadowing, psychological warfare operative George Estabrooks explained, in his book *Hypnotism*, how US intelligence agencies had been working to create the perfect spy: "We start with an excellent subject… we need a man or woman who is highly intelligent and physically tough. Then we start to develop a case of multiple personality through hypnotism. In his normal waking state, which we will call Personality A, or PA, this individual will become a rabid communist. He will join the party, follow the party line and make himself as objectionable as possible to the authorities. Note that he will be acting in good faith. He is a communist, or rather his PA is a communist and will behave as such. Then we develop Personality B (PB), the secondary personality, the unconscious personality, if you wish, although this is somewhat of a contradiction in terms. This personality is rabidly American and anti-communist. It has all the information possessed by PA, the normal personality, whereas PA does not have this advantage… My super spy plays his role as a communist in his waking state, aggressively, consistently, fearlessly. But his PB is a loyal American, and PB has all the memories of PA. As a loyal American, he will not hesitate to divulge those memories."

Estabrooks never explained what would happen if the programming were to go haywire and Personality B were to emerge and become the conscious personality, but my guess is that such a person would be considered a severe liability and would be treated accordingly. They might even find themselves swinging from the end of a rope. Phil Ochs was thirty-five at the time of his death.

Stacy Sutherland, the lead guitarist and a founding member of the 13th Floor Elevators, was shot to death on August 24, 1978. Despite considerable critical acclaim, the Elevators had only lasted a few years, from late 1965 through early 1968. Sutherland was imprisoned in 1969 on drug charges and reportedly drank heavily after that. He was just thirty-two when he was shot and killed by his wife Bunny during a domestic dispute. The shooting, curiously enough, was determined to be accidental, which I suppose means that Bunny accidentally picked up the gun, accidentally disengaged the safety, accidentally pointed it at her husband, accidentally put her finger on the trigger, and then accidentally pulled that trigger.

Even more interesting is the story of the band's frontman. During the group's brief period of existence, Sutherland was overshadowed by the enigmatic Roky Erickson. Born Roger Kynard Erickson on July 15, 1947, Roky was a musical prodigy who took up the piano at age five and the guitar at age ten. He was also, according to the 2005 documentary feature *You're Gonna Miss Me*, a severely abused child; there are strong indications, according to the filmmakers, that architect father Roger, who rarely spoke to the family, sexually abused Roky and his four younger brothers.

Though all but forgotten now, Erickson was a hugely influential figure in the mid- to late 1960s. Before there was a San Francisco scene, Texan Roky had coined the term 'psychedelic rock' and was the first to use feedback and distortion. His distinctive vocals were a major influence on fellow Texan Janis Joplin, who considered joining the Elevators before being shuffled off to San Francisco and superstardom. Erickson was also considered to be very good looking and was an immensely charismatic figure who was well liked by all who met him, men and women alike.

Roky began his music career at a young age, after making the curious decision to drop out of high school just a few weeks shy of graduating. By December 1965, he had formed the Elevators with Sutherland and a psychology student by the name of Tommy Hall, who was not a musician but who appears to have nevertheless been the driving force behind the concept of creating a psychedelic band. Hall was a very outspoken, Learyesque advocate of hallucinogenic drugs like LSD and magic mushrooms. He later became a devout follower of Scientology.

The band's first album, *The Psychedelic Sounds of the 13th Floor Elevators*, was released in November 1966, when singer/songwriter Roky was just nineteen. The band's sophomore effort, *Easter Everywhere*, was released the following November. Just months later though, the group's run would effectively end, though two more albums were subsequently released by the band's label.

The Elevators' final performance was at a world's fair in San Antonio, Texas, on, of all days, April 20, 1968. It was there, it is said, that Roky suffered a complete breakdown and began "speaking gibberish." He was still just twenty years old. Erickson was diagnosed as being a 'paranoid schizophrenic' and was forced to endure involuntary electro-convulsive 'therapy.' While hospitalized, he began hearing voices telling him "horrible things." A doctor treating him at the time claimed that Roky would not recover and would be a vegetable for the rest of his life.

After reportedly escaping with the help of a friend, Erickson headed to San Francisco where he started doing heroin and other hard drugs and soon developed hepatitis. Returning to Austin, Roky was busted with a single marijuana 'joint.' An attorney convinced him to plead 'not guilty by reason of insanity,' a ridiculous defense given the charge, and Erickson was quickly hustled off to Austin State Hospital. He was still just twenty years old at the time of his arrest.

Supposedly due to escape attempts, Roky was transferred to Rusk State Hospital, a stark, barren, maximum-security facility for the criminally insane. While there, Erickson was subjected to more forced ECT treatments and the forced administration of Thorazine. For three-and-a-half years. Also while confined there, he put together a prison band known as the Missing Links. One member of the band had killed two kids and raped and stabbed his own mother. Another had been involved in the rape and murder of a young boy in Houston. A third had killed his own parents and a sibling. And then there was Roky, who had been in possession of an insignificant amount of marijuana.

As 1972 came to a close, it was determined that Roky's sanity had been "restored" and he was released soon after. He was, however, just a shell of his former self.

In the mid-seventies, Erickson formed a new band, Roky Erickson and the Aliens, whose albums *I Think of Demons* (1980) and *The Evil One* (1981) revealed the frontman's then-current obsessions. At about that same time, he told an interviewer that, “the devil, you see, he’s my friend.” He also told an interviewer that an alien had taken possession of his body, a belief that he still claimed to hold as recently as 2005.

During the 1980s, Erickson withdrew from public view and continued his descent into madness. It is said that he developed a bizarre obsession with the US mail, particularly junk mail solicitations, and that he indulged that obsession for years, poring for hours over his and other people’s mail. That chapter of his life reached a peak when he was arrested on mail theft charges after it was discovered that he had taken mail from neighbors and had it displayed in his home. He was, alas, once again institutionalized.

Throughout the 1990s, Roky appears to have continued to live a bizarre and troubled life. A reporter for *Rolling Stone* who attempted to interview him in 1995 described a heartbreaking scene: the formerly charismatic singer looked nothing like his younger self, with his teeth reduced to rotting stumps and his hair wild and matted. Multiple televisions, stereos and police scanners blared at maximum volume throughout his home, creating a cacophony of noise apparently intended to drown out the ever-present voices in his head.

Roky’s fortunes began to change in the following decade, after his younger brother Sumner was awarded legal custody of the troubled icon in 2001. In fact, it could be argued that Erickson deserves a special place of honor on this list in that he appears to have pulled off the unlikely feat of returning from the dead. *Rolling Stone*, after all, wrote an obituary for Roky and the band way back in December 1968. But more than forty years later, in 2010, Erickson released an album of new material entitled *True Love Cast Out All Evil*. That disc was released, naturally enough, on April 20. And in March of 2012, Roky completed his first ever tour of Australia and New Zealand.

One final note on Erickson: In 1990, a tribute album containing covers of Roky’s songs by such artists as REM and ZZ Top was released. The title of that collection, *Where The Pyramid Meets The Eye: A Tribute to Roky Erickson*, was an obvious reference to the Masonic symbol that graces the back of the US dollar bill and that plays such a key role in various one-world conspiracy theories. The title was derived from a comment made by Erickson.

And with that, I think we can move on now from the Laurel Canyon

Death List, at least temporarily. The list is not yet complete, mind you, since we have only covered the years 1966–1976. Rest assured then that we will continue to add names as we follow the various threads of this story. Lots of names. It is, as it turns out, an inordinately long list.

5

DESIRABLE PEOPLE
THE CANYON'S PECULIAR PAST

"Charles R. 'Chuck' Heath was born in March of 1938… The family lived on Farmdale Avenue, near the base of Laurel Canyon, close to where Studio City is located today." Geoffrey Dunn, writing in The Lies of Sarah Palin (Chuck Heath is Sarah Palin's father)

UNTIL AROUND 1913, LAUREL CANYON REMAINED AN UNDEVELOPED SLICE of LA, a pristine wilderness area rich in native flora and fauna. That all began to change when Charles Spencer Mann and his partners began buying up land along what would become Laurel Canyon Boulevard, as well as on Lookout Mountain. A narrow road leading up to the crest of Lookout Mountain was carved out, and upon that crest was constructed a lavish seventy-room inn with sweeping views of the city below and the Pacific Ocean beyond. The Lookout Inn featured a large ballroom, riding stables, tennis courts and a golf course, among other amenities. But the inn, alas, would only stand for a decade; in 1923, it burned down, as tends to happen rather frequently in Laurel Canyon.

In 1913, Mann began operating what was billed as the nation's first trackless trolley, to ferry tourists and prospective buyers from Sunset Boulevard up to what would become the corner of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and Lookout Mountain Avenue. Around that same time, he built a massive tavern/roadhouse on that very same corner. Dubbed the Laurel Tavern, the structure boasted a 2,000+ square-foot formal dining room, guest rooms, and a bowling alley on the basement level. The Laurel Tavern, of course, would later be acquired by Tom Mix, after which it would be affectionately known as the Log Cabin.

Shortly after the Log Cabin was built, a department store mogul (or a wealthy furniture manufacturer; there is more than one version of the story, or perhaps the man owned more than one business) built an imposing, castle-like mansion across the road, at the corner of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and what would become Willow Glen Road. The home featured rather creepy towers and parapets, and the foundation is said to have been riddled with secret passageways, tunnels, and hidden chambers. The grounds of the estate were laced with trails leading to grottoes, elaborate stone benches, and hidden caves and tunnels.

Across Laurel Canyon Boulevard, the grounds of the Laurel Tavern/Log Cabin were also laced with odd caves and tunnels. As Michael Walker notes in *Laurel Canyon*, “Running up the hillside, behind the house, was a collection of man-made caves built out of stucco, with electric wiring and light bulbs inside.” According to various accounts, one secret tunnel running under what is now Laurel Canyon Boulevard connected the Log Cabin, or its guesthouse, to the Houdini estate. This claim is frequently denounced as an urban legend, but given that both properties are known to possess unusual geological features, it’s not hard to believe that the tunnel system on one property was connected at one time to the tunnel system on the other. The Tavern itself, as Gail Zappa would later describe it, was “huge and vault-like and cavernous.”

With these two rather unusual structures anchoring an otherwise undeveloped canyon, and the Lookout Inn sitting atop uninhabited Lookout Mountain, Mann set about marketing the canyon as a vacation and leisure destination. The land that he carved up into subdivisions with names like “Bungalow Land” and “Wonderland Park” was presented as the ideal location to build vacation homes. But the new inn and roadhouse, and the new parcels of land for sale, definitely weren’t for everyone. The roadhouse was essentially a country club, or what Jack Boulware of *Mojo* described as “a masculine retreat for wealthy men.” And Bungalow Land was openly advertised as “a high class restricted park for desirable people only."

"Desirable people," of course, tended to be wealthy people without a great deal of skin pigmentation.

As the website of the current Laurel Canyon Association notes, "restrictive covenants were attached to the new parcel deeds. These were thinly veiled attempts to limit ownership to white males of a certain class. While there are many references to the bigotry of the developers in our area, it would appear that some residents were also prone to bias and lawlessness. This article was published in a local paper in 1925:

"Frank Sanceri, the man who was flogged by self-styled 'white knights' on Lookout Mountain in Hollywood several months ago, was found not guilty by a jury in Superior Judge Shea's courtroom of having unlawfully attacked Astrea Jolley, aged eleven.

"Wealthier residents were also attracted to Laurel Canyon: With the creation of the Hollywood film industry in 1910, the canyon attracted a host of 'photoplayers,' including Wally Reid, Tom Mix, Clara Bow, Richard Dix, Norman Kerry, Ramon Navarro, Harry Houdini and Bessie Love."

The author of this little slice of Laurel Canyon history would clearly like us to believe that the "wealthier residents" were a group quite separate from the violent vigilantes roaming the canyon. The history of such groups in Los Angeles, however, clearly suggests otherwise. Paul Young, for example, has written in *LA Exposed* of Los Angeles' early "vigilance committees, which stepped in to take care of outlaws on their own, often with the complete absolution of the mayor himself. Judge Lynch, for example, formed the Los Angeles Rangers in 1854 with some of the city's top judges, lawyers, and businessmen including tycoon Phineas Banning of the Banning Railroad. And there was the Los Angeles Home Guard, another bloodthirsty paramilitary organization, made up of notable citizens, and the much-feared El Monte Rangers, a group of Texas wranglers that specialized in killing Mexicans. As one would expect, there was no regard for the victim's rights in such kangaroo courts. Victims were often dragged from their homes, jail cells, even churches, and beaten, horse-whipped, tortured, mutilated, or castrated before being strung up on the nearest tree."

Before moving on, I need to mention here that, of the eight celebrity residents of Laurel Canyon listed by the Association, fully half died under questionable circumstances, and three of the four did so on days with occult significance. While Bessie Love, Norman Kerry, Richard Dix and Clara Bow all lived long and healthy lives, Ramon Navarro, as we have already seen, was ritually murdered in his home on Laurel Canyon Boulevard on the eve of Halloween, 1968. On January 18, 1923, matinée idol Wallace Reid was found dead in a padded cell at the mental institution to which he had been confined. Just thirty-one years old, Reid's death was attributed to his morphine addiction, though it was never explained how he would have fed that habit while confined to a cell in a mental hospital.

Tom Mix died on a lonely stretch of Arizona highway in the proverbial single-car crash on October 12, 1940 (the birthday of notorious occultist Aleister Crowley), when he quite unexpectedly encountered some temporary construction barricades that had been set up alongside a reportedly washed-out bridge. Although he wasn't speeding (by most accounts), Mix was nevertheless allegedly unable to stop in time and veered off the road, while a crew of what were described as "workmen" reportedly looked on. It wasn't the impact that killed Mix though, but rather a severe blow to the back of the head and neck, purportedly delivered during the crash by an aluminum case he had been carrying in the back seat of his car. There is now a roadside marker at the spot where Mix died. If you should happen to stop by to have a look, you may as well pay a visit to the Florence Military Reservation as well, since it's just a stone's throw away.

Harry Houdini died on Halloween day, 1926, purportedly of an attack of appendicitis precipitated by a blow to the stomach. The problem with that story, however, is that medical science now recognizes it to be an impossibility. According to a recent book about the famed illusionist—*The Secret Life of Houdini*, by William Kalush and Larry Sloman—Houdini was likely murdered by poisoning. Questions have been raised, the book notes, by the curious lack of an autopsy, an "experimental serum" that Houdini was apparently given in the hospital, and indications that his wife, Bess, may have been poisoned as well, though she survived. On March 23, 2007, an exhumation of Houdini's remains was formally requested by his surviving family members. It is unclear at this time when, or even if, that will happen.

Houdini's death, on October 31, 1926, came exactly eight years after the first death to occur in what would become known as the "Houdini house." In 1918, not long after the home was built, a lovers' quarrel arose on one of the home's balconies during a Halloween/birthday party. The gay lover of the original owner's son reportedly ended up splattered on the ground below. According to legend, the businessman succeeded in getting his son off the hook, but only after paying off everyone he could find to pay off, including the trial judge. The aftermath of the party proved to be financially devastating for the family, and the home was apparently put up for sale.

Not long after that, as fate would have it, Harry Houdini was looking for a place to stay in the Hollywood area, as he had decided to break into the motion picture business. He found the perfect home in Laurel Canyon—the home that would, forever after, carry his name. By most accounts, he lived there from about 1919 through the early 1920s, during a brief movie career in which he starred in a handful of Hollywood films. A key scene in one of those films, *The Grim Game*, was reportedly shot at the top of Lookout Mountain, very near where the Lookout Inn then stood.

On October 31, 1959, precisely thirty-three years after Houdini's death, and forty-one years after the unnamed party guest's death, the distinctive mansion on the corner of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and Willow Glen Road burned to the ground in a fire of mysterious origin. (The ruins of the estate remain today, undisturbed for nearly fifty years.) On October 31, 1981, exactly twenty-two years after the fire across the road, the legendary Log Cabin on the other side of Laurel Canyon Boulevard also burned to the ground, in yet another fire of mysterious origin. (Some reports speculated that it was a drug lab explosion.) And twenty-five years after that, on October 31, 2006, *The Secret Life of Houdini* was published, challenging the conventional wisdom on Houdini's death.

Far more compelling than the revelations about Houdini's death, however, was something else about the illusionist that the book revealed for the first time: Harry Houdini was engaged in doing intelligence work for both the US Secret Service and Scotland Yard. And his traveling escape act, as it turns out, was pretty much a cover for those activities—in very much the same way that an actor by the name of John Wilkes Booth appears to have used his career as a traveling stage performer as a cover for intelligence operations. It is a time-honored tradition that seems to remain largely unchanged to this day.

The Sloman book, of course, doesn't make such reckless allegations about any performers other than Houdini. What the book does do, however, is compellingly document that Houdini was, in fact, an intelligence asset who used his magic act as a cover. Not only did the authors obtain corroborating documentation from Scotland Yard, they also received an endorsement of their claim from no less an authority than John McLaughlin, former Acting Director of the Central Intelligence Agency.

It appears then, that, of the eight celebrity residents of Laurel Canyon listed on the Laurel Canyon Association website, at least two (Novarro and Houdini), and quite possibly as many as four, were murdered. That seems like a rather high homicide rate given that, statistically speaking, a white person in this country has about a one-in-345 chance of being murdered. Non-white persons, of course, have a far greater chance of becoming the victims of a homicide, but nowhere near the one-in-four to one-in-two odds that a white celebrity living in Laurel Canyon faced.

Statistically speaking, if you were a famous actor in the 1920s, you would have been better off playing a round of Russian Roulette than living in Laurel Canyon.

Anyway… two ambitious projects in the 1940s brought significant changes to Laurel Canyon. First, Laurel Canyon Boulevard was extended into the San Fernando Valley, providing access to the canyon from both the north and the south. The boulevard became a winding thoroughfare, providing direct access to the Westside from the Valley. Traffic, needless to say, increased considerably, which probably worked out well for the planners of the other project, because it meant that the increased traffic brought about by that other project probably wasn't noticed at all. And that's good, you see, because the other project was a secret one.

What would become known as Lookout Mountain Laboratory was originally envisioned as a fortified air defense center. Built in 1941 and nestled in two-and-a-half secluded acres off what is now Wonderland Park Avenue, the installation was hidden from view and surrounded by an electrified fence. By 1947, the facility featured a fully operational movie studio. In fact, it is claimed that it was the world's only completely self-contained movie studio. With 100,000 square feet of floor space, the covert studio included sound stages, screening rooms, film processing labs, editing facilities, an animation department, and seventeen climate-controlled film vaults. It also had a helicopter pad and a bomb shelter.

Over its lifetime, the studio produced some 19,000 classified motion pictures—more than all the Hollywood studios combined (which I guess makes Laurel Canyon the real 'motion picture capital of the world'). Officially, the facility was run by the US Air Force and did nothing more nefarious than process AEC footage of atomic and nuclear bomb tests. The studio, however, was clearly equipped to do far more than just process film. There are indications that Lookout Mountain Laboratory had an advanced research and development department that was on the cutting edge of new film technologies. Such technological advances as 3-D effects were apparently first developed at the Laurel Canyon site. And Hollywood luminaries like John Ford, Jimmy Stewart, Howard Hawks, Ronald Reagan, Bing Crosby, Walt Disney, Hedda Hopper and Marilyn Monroe were given clearance to work at the facility on undisclosed projects. There is no indication that any of them ever spoke of their work at the clandestine studio.

The facility retained as many as 250 producers, directors, technicians, editors, animators, etc., both civilian and military, all with top security clearances—and all reporting to work in a secluded corner of Laurel Canyon. Accounts vary as to when the facility ceased operations. Some claim it was in 1969, while others say the facility remained in operation longer. In any event, by all accounts the secret bunker had been up and running for more than twenty years before Laurel Canyon's rebellious teen years, and it remained operational for the most turbulent of those years.

The existence of the facility remained unknown to the general public until the early 1990s, though it had long been rumored that the CIA operated a secret movie studio somewhere in or near Hollywood. Filmmaker Peter Kuran was the first to learn of its existence, through classified documents he obtained while researching his 1995 documentary *Trinity and Beyond*. And yet even today, nearly twenty years after its limited public disclosure, one would have trouble finding even a single mention of this secret military/intelligence facility anywhere in the 'conspiracy' literature.

I think we can all agree though that there is nothing the least bit suspicious about a covert military facility operating in the epicenter of hippie culture, so let's move on.

In the 1950s, as Barney Hoskyns has written in *Hotel California*, Laurel Canyon was home to all "the hippest young actors," including, according to Hoskyns, Marlon Brando, James Dean, James Coburn and Dennis Hopper. It was home to Natalie Wood as well. In fact, Natalie lived in the very home that Cass Elliot would later turn into a Laurel Canyon party house. And like the home's later occupant, Wood died young under rather mysterious circumstances. As did, to a lesser extent, Canyonite James Dean. And as did, come to think of it, a few other people with very close ties to Canyonite Dennis Hopper.

Dean, Hopper's close friend and co-star, died in a near head-on collision on September 30, 1955, at the tender age of twenty-four. Then there was Nick Adams, who had formerly roomed with Hopper. Like Hopper, Adams had worked alongside James Dean in *Rebel Without a Cause*. According to Dean himself, Adams had worked alongside Dean even earlier than that, when both were young male prostitutes working the mean streets of Hollywood. Adams died on February 6, 1968, at the age of thirty-six, in his home at 2126 El Roble Lane in Coldwater Canyon (one canyon west of Laurel Canyon, thus narrowly sparing Adams from a spot on the Laurel Canyon Death List).

Adams' official cause of death was listed as suicide, of course, but no one really seems to believe that. Actor Forrest Tucker has bluntly declared that, "All of Hollywood knows Nick Adams was knocked off." Nick's relatives reportedly received numerous hang-up calls on the day of his death, and his tape recorder, journals and various other papers and personal effects were conspicuously missing from his home. His lifeless body, sitting upright in a chair, was discovered by his attorney, Ervin "Tip" Roeder. On June 10, 1981, Roeder and his wife, actress Jenny Maxwell (best known for being spanked by Elvis in *Blue Hawaii*), were gunned down outside their Beverly Hills condo.

Next to fall was Sal Mineo, who, like Dean and Adams, had worked with Hopper on *Rebel Without a Cause* and remained a friend thereafter. Like Hopper, Mineo was a regular in the Sunset Strip clubs where the Doors, Love, the Byrds and the Mothers played. He had been alongside Hopper and Peter Fonda during the infamous 'riot' on the Sunset Strip in November 1966. And as has already been discussed, Mineo was stabbed to death in close proximity to those very same clubs on February 12, 1976.

Last to fall was Natalie Wood, who also appeared in *Rebel Without a Cause* and who had at various times dated both Dennis Hopper and Nick Adams. Wood died on November 29, 1981, in a drowning incident off Catalina Island that has never been adequately explained. At the time, she was in the company of actors Robert Wagner and Christopher Walken. Natalie was forty-three when she was laid to rest.

Of the four actors stricken with what has been dubbed the "*Rebel Without a Cause* Curse," two were former residents of Laurel Canyon, another lived at—and was killed at—the mouth of the canyon, and the fourth lived just a mile away, as the crow flies, in neighboring Coldwater Canyon. As I may have mentioned previously, Laurel Canyon seems to be a rather dangerous place to live.

The list of famous former residents of Laurel Canyon also includes the names W.C. Fields, Mary Astor, Roscoe "Fatty" Arbuckle, Errol Flynn, Orson Welles, and Robert Mitchum, who was infamously arrested on marijuana charges in 1948 at 8334 Ridpath Drive, the same street that would later be home to rockers Roger McGuinn, Don Henley and Glen Frey, as well as Paul Rothchild, producer of both the Doors and Love. Mitchum's arrest, by the way, appears to have been a thoroughly staged affair that cemented his 'Hollywood bad boy' image and gave his career quite a boost, but I guess that's not really relevant here.

Another famous resident of Laurel Canyon was science-fiction writer Robert Heinlein, who resided at 8775 Lookout Mountain Avenue. Like so many other characters in this story, Heinlein was a graduate of the US Naval Academy at Annapolis and he had served as a naval officer. After that, he embarked on a successful writing career. And despite the fact that he was, by any objective measure, a rabid right-winger, his work was warmly embraced by the flower-power generation.

If that capsule biography sounds vaguely familiar, by the way, it is probably because it is virtually identical to the biography of a guy named L. Ron Hubbard, whom you may have heard of.

Heinlein's best-known work is the novel *Stranger in a Strange Land*, which many in the Laurel Canyon scene found to be hugely influential. Ed Sanders has written, in *The Family*, that the book "helped provide a theoretical basis for Manson's Family." Charlie frequently used *Strange*

Land terminology when addressing his flock, and he named his first Family-born son Valentine Michael Manson in honor of the book's lead character.

David Crosby was a big Heinlein fan as well. In his autobiography, he references Heinlein on more than one occasion, and proclaims that, "In a society where people can go armed, it makes everybody a little more polite, as Robert Heinlein says in his books." Frank Zappa was also a member of the Robert Heinlein fan club. Barry Miles notes in his biography of the rock icon that his home contained "a copy of Saint-Exupery's *The Little Prince* and other essential sixties reading, including Robert Heinlein's sci-fi classic, *Stranger in a Strange Land*, from which Zappa borrowed the word 'discorporate' for [the song] Absolutely Free."

And that, fearless readers, brings us to the Laurel Canyon era that we are primarily concerned with, the wild and wooly 1960s. But before returning to that era, what conclusions can be drawn from this brief look at early canyon history? For one, it appears that murder and random acts of violence have been a part of the culture of the canyon since the earliest days of its development. It also appears that intelligence operatives posing as entertainers have likewise been a part of the canyon scene since the earliest days. And, finally, it seems that intelligence operatives who didn't even bother to pose as entertainers were streaming into the canyon to report to work at Lookout Mountain Laboratory for at least twenty years before the first rock star set foot there.

We are supposed to believe that all of the musical icons who settled in Laurel Canyon in the 1960s and 1970s just sort of spontaneously came together (one finds the word "serendipitous" sprinkled freely throughout the literature). But how many peculiar coincidences do we have to overlook in order to believe that this was just a chance gathering?

Let's suppose, hypothetically speaking, that you happen to be Jim Morrison and have recently arrived in Laurel Canyon and now find yourself fronting a band that is on the verge of taking the country by storm. Just a mile or so down Laurel Canyon Boulevard from you lives another guy who also recently arrived in Laurel Canyon, and who also happens to front a band on the verge of stardom. He happens to be married to a girl that you attended kindergarten with, and her dad, like yours, was involved in atomic weapons research and testing (Admiral George Morrison for a time did classified work at White Sands). Her husband's dad, meanwhile, is involved in another type of WMD research: chemical warfare.

This other guy's business partner/manager is a spooky ex-Marine who just happens to have a cousin who, bizarrely enough, also fronts a rock band on the verge of superstardom. And this third rock-star-on-the-rise also happens to live in Laurel Canyon, just a mile or two from your house. Just down a couple of other streets, also within walking distance of your home, live two other kids who—wouldn't you know it?—also happen to front a new rock'n'roll band. These two kids happened to attend the same Alexandria, Virginia, high school that you attended, and one of them also attended Annapolis, just like your dad did, and just like your kindergarten friend's dad did.

Though almost all of you hail from the Washington, DC area, you now find yourselves on the opposite side of the country, in an isolated canyon high above the city of Los Angeles, where you are all clustered around a secret military installation. Given his background in research on atomic weapons, your father is probably familiar to some extent with the existence and operations of Lookout Mountain Laboratory, as is the father of your kindergarten friend.

The question that naturally arises here, I suppose, is this: What do you suppose the odds are that all of that just came together purely by chance?

When early installments of this story were posted online, I received a fair amount of negative feedback. Among other things, I was accused of inferring "guilt by association" and of engaging in "character assassination." One rather strident respondent complained that it was unfair to take a few isolated facts about an individual and use them to paint a sinister picture.

To some extent, these are valid complaints. And yes, it is fairly easy to gather together a few *different* isolated facts and use them to paint a much different portrait of these artists and pen an impassioned defense of any of them. (Jim Morrison and Frank Zappa seem to have the most rabid fans, by the way, in case anyone was wondering.) But what I ask is that you try to stand back and take in the big picture, and then ask yourself the following question: Exactly how many coincidences does it take to make a conspiracy?

And yes, by the way, I am very much aware of the fact that Jim Morrison was fond of telling interviewers that his parents were dead, and that, according to legend, he did so because they were, in essence, dead to him. But as one photograph reveals, Jim’s dad wasn’t dead to him just months before his emergence as a rock star. The photo, reproduced at the front of this book, shows the two Morrisons on the bridge of the *USS Bon Homme Richard* in January 1964. It seems rather obvious to me that telling people that your parents are dead could be a very effective way of avoiding talking about who your father really is. It was such an effective strategy, in fact, that it took over four decades for the truth to finally come out.

6

VITO AND HIS FREAKERS
THE SINISTER ROOTS OF HIPPIE CULTURE

"Call them freaks, the underground, the counterculture, flower children or hippies—they are all loose labels for the youth culture of the sixties." Barry Miles, author of Hippie

"Vito was in his fifties, but he had four-way sex with goddesses… He held these clay-sculpting classes on Laurel Avenue, teaching rich Beverly Hills dowagers how to sculpt. And that was the Byrds' rehearsal room. Then Jim Dickson had the idea to put them on at Ciro's, on the basis that all the freaks would show up and the Byrds would be their Beatles." Kim Fowley

"THIS IS HOW I REMEMBER MY LIFE. OTHER FOLKS MAY NOT HAVE THE SAME memories, even though we might have shared some of the same experiences."

So begins David Crosby's autobiography, *Long Time Gone* (co-written by Carl Gottlieb). As it turns out, quite a few other folks seem to remember some people in Crosby's life who are all but ignored in the lengthy book. The names are casually dropped only once, and not by Crosby but rather in a quote from Byrds' manager Jim Dickson in which he describes the scene at the Sunset Strip clubs when the Byrds were playing: "We had them all. We had Jack Nicholson dancing, we had Peter Fonda dancing with Odetta, we had Vito and his Freakers."

Following that brief mention by Dickson, Gottlieb briefly explains to readers that, "Vito and his Freakers were an acid-drenched extended family of brain-damaged cohabitants." And that, in an incredibly self-indulgent 489-page tome, is the only mention you will find of "Vito and his Freakers"—despite the fact that, by just about all other accounts, the group dismissed as "brain-damaged cohabitants" played a crucial role in the early success of Crosby's band. And in the early success of Arthur Lee's band. And in the early success of Frank Zappa's band. And in the early success of Jim Morrison's band. But especially in the early success of David Crosby's band.

As Barry Miles noted in his biography of Frank Zappa, "The Byrds were closely associated with Vito and the Freaks: Vito Paulekas, his wife Szou and Carl Franzoni, the leaders of a group of about thirty-five dancers whose antics enlivened the Byrds early gigs." In *Waiting for the Sun*, Barney Hoskyns wrote that the early success of the Byrds and other bands was due in no small part to "the roving troupe of self-styled 'freaks' led by ancient beatnik Vito Paulekas and his trusty, lusty sidekick Carl Franzoni." Alban "Snoopy" Pfisterer, former drummer and keyboardist for the band Love, went further still, claiming that Vito actually "got the Byrds together, as I remember—they did a lot of rehearsing at his pad."

According to various other accounts, the Byrds did indeed utilize Vito's 'pad' as a rehearsal studio, as did Arthur Lee's band. More importantly, the freaks drew the crowds into the clubs to see the fledgling bands perform. But as important as their contribution was to helping launch the careers of the Laurel Canyon bands, "Vito and his Freakers" were notable for something else as well; according to Barry Miles, writing in his book *Hippie*, "The first hippies in Hollywood, perhaps the first hippies anywhere, were Vito, his wife Szou, Captain Fuck and their group of about thirty-five dancers. Calling themselves Freaks, they lived a semi-communal life and engaged in sex orgies and free-form dancing whenever they could."

Some of those who were on the scene at the time agree with Miles' assessment that Vito and his troupe were indeed the very first hippies. Arthur Lee, for example, boasted that they "started the whole hippie thing: Vito, Carl, Szou, Beatle Bob, Bryan and me." One of David Crosby's fellow Byrds, Chris Hillman, also credited the strange group with being at the forefront of the hippie movement: "Carl and all those guys were way ahead of everyone on hippiedom fashion." Ray Manzarek of the Doors remembered them as well: "There were these guys named Carl and Vito who had a dance troupe of gypsy freaks. They were let in for free, because they were these quintessential hippies, which was great for tourists."

If these rather colorful people really were the very first hippies, the very first riders of that 'countercultural' wave, then we should probably try to get to know them. As it turns out, however, that is not such an easy thing to do. Most accounts—and there aren't all that many—offer little more than a few first names, with no consensus agreement on how those first names are even spelled ("Karl" and "Carl" appear interchangeably, as do "Szou" and "Zsou," and "Godot" and "Godo"). But for you, dear readers—because I am a giver—I have gone the extra mile and sifted through the detritus to dig up at least some of the sordid details.

By all accounts the troupe was led by one Vito Paulekas, whose full name was Vitautus Alphonso Paulekas. Born the son of a Lithuanian sausage-maker on May 20, 1913, Vito hailed from Lawrence, Massachusetts (though some accounts claim it was Lowell, Massachusetts). Parents John and Rose Paulekas had three other kids, giving Vito an older sister named Albena and two younger brothers, Bronislo and John.

Some accounts claim that from a young age, Vito developed a habit of running afoul of the law. According to Miles, for example, Vito spent a year-and-a-half in a reformatory as a teenager and "was busted several times after that." A family member though disputes those claims. What isn't disputed is that, in 1938, he was convicted of armed robbery and handed a twenty-five year sentence following a botched attempt at holding up a movie theater. In 1932, at the height of the Great Depression, he had won a marathon dance competition held at Revere Beach. His winnings had given him a taste of the good life that he was thereafter unable to sustain, leading to the robbery attempt.

In 1942, just four years after his conviction, Vito was released into the custody, so to speak, of the US Merchant Marines (a branch of the US Navy during wartime), ostensibly to escort ships running lend-lease missions. Following his release from the service, circa 1946, he arrived in Los Angeles. Two years later, a curious event played out in another part of the country, as documented in the February 23, 1948, edition of *Time* magazine:

"One morning last week, bespectacled Bryant Bowden, editor of the weekly Okeechobee (Fla.) News, sauntered into the Okeechobee courthouse and stopped to eye the bulletin board in the main hall. Among the marriage-license applications, which, by Florida law, must be publicly posted for three days before a ceremony, he saw something which made him goggle. Winthrop Rockefeller, thirty-five, of New York—the fourth of John D. Rockefeller Jr.'s five sons and one of the most eligible bachelors in the world—had stated his intention of marrying one Eva Sears, also of New York. Editor Bowden had a bitter moment—his paper would not be published for two days. Then he remembered that he was the Okeechobee correspondent for the Associated Press. He telephoned the AP office in Jacksonville. A few hours later, the whole US journalistic horizon glowed a bright pink with the fireworks he had touched off. While the first headlines blazed (and while Manhattan gossip columnists scrambled to assure their readers that they had known all about the romance for months), herds of reporters were dispatched to find an answer to the question: Who is Eva Sears? Hearst's Cholly Knickerbocker (Ghighi Cassini) haughtily announced that she was Mrs. Barbara Paul Sears of the fine old Philadelphia Pauls and thus a society girl of impeccable pedigree. He was wrong."

Indeed he was. So who was this mystery woman—this woman who, as it turns out, had once had a brief career in Hollywood before moving to Paris and taking a job as a secretary at the US embassy? She appears to have gone by many names at different times in her life, including Eva Paul, Eva Paul Sears, Barbara Paul, Barbara Paul Sears, and "Bobo" Rockefeller. None of them, however, was the name she was given at the time of her birth. As *Time* noted, "Her parents were Lithuanian immigrants and she was born Jievute Paulekiute in a coal patch near Noblestown, Pa." Even that, however, was not her real name—at least not by American custom and tradition.

In her parents' homeland, "Paulekiute" is the feminine version of "Paulekas." Eva Paul's father, as it turns out, just happened to be the brother of Vito Paulekas' father. (A fact verified by—and brought to my attention by—a member of the Paulekas family.) I'm no genealogist, but I'm pretty sure that that means that the self-styled "King of the Hippies" was, improbably enough, a first cousin of Bobo Rockefeller and a cousin-in-law (for lack of a better term) of Winthrop Rockefeller himself. Vito was also a cousin of the couple's only child, Winthrop Paul Rockefeller, who would later serve as the lieutenant governor of the state of Arkansas.

The Paulekas family, alas, missed Winthrop and Bobo's day of celebration. According to *Time*, "Bobo's mother and stepfather… were unable to attend the ceremony because they were making a batch of Lithuanian cheese on their Indiana farm." I guess we all have our priorities. Truth be told though, the Paulekas clan has a somewhat different explanation: they were deliberately excluded from the ceremony as it was felt they were a bit too uncultured to break bread with the likes of the Duke and Duchess of Windsor and the Marquess of Blandford.

As for Vito, he appears to have rather quickly established himself in Los Angeles as a respected artist/sculptor. As early as August of 1949, the *Los Angeles Times* announced that an art exhibit at the Biltmore Hotel was to feature his work. In May of 1956, another announcement held that there would be an exhibit by "Vito and his students" to be held at the Vito Clay Studios on Laurel Avenue. Another announcement, in February of 1958, alerted readers that a gallery on La Cienega Boulevard would be featuring the work of sculptor "Vito Bouleka." And the next year, in May 1959, a gallery on Beverly Boulevard was scheduled to host an exhibit featuring works from "Vito Clay Studios."

Also during the decade of the 1950s, Vito married and fathered two children, though that marriage had melted down by the time the 1960s rolled around. It was Vito's second marriage, his first having been to a teen bride back in his marathon dancing days, before his prison stint. On July 7, 1961, he married yet again, to the aforementioned Szou, whose real name was Susan Cynthia Shaffer. Vito was forty-eight at the time and Szou was just eighteen. She had been only sixteen when they met.

Vito and Szou made their home in an unassuming building at the corner of Laurel Avenue and Beverly Boulevard, just below the mouth of Laurel Canyon and practically within spitting distance of Jay Sebring's hair salon. At street level was Szou's clothing boutique, which has been credited by some scenesters with being the very first to introduce hippie fashions. Upstairs were living quarters for Vito, Szou and their first-born son, Godo. Downstairs was what was known as the Vito Clay Studio, where, according to Miles and various others, Paulekas "made a living of sorts by giving clay modeling lessons to Beverly Hills matrons who found the atmosphere in his studio exciting." According to most accounts, it wasn't really the Mayan-tomb decor of the studio that many of the matrons found so exciting, but rather Vito's reportedly insatiable sexual appetite and John Holmesian physique. In any event, Vito's students also apparently included such Hollywood luminaries as Jonathan Winters, Mickey Rooney and Steve Allen.

As for his erstwhile sidekick, Carl Orestes Franzoni, he has claimed in interviews that his "mother was a countess" and his father "was a stone carver from Rutland, Vermont. The family was brought from Italy, from the quarries in the northern part of Italy, to cut the stone for the monuments of the United States." That would make his ancestors, it stands to reason, of considerable importance in the Masonic community. And there were in fact a couple of brothers named Franzoni who were brought over from Italy in the early 1800s to carve the Masonic monuments of Washington. According to Ihna Thayer Frary's *They Built the Capitol*, Guiseppe Franzoni, who came over with his brother Carlo, "had especially good family connections in Italy, he being a nephew of Cardinal Franzoni and son of the President of the Academy of Fine Arts at Carrara." Also making their way to the New World were Francisco Iardella, a cousin of the Franzoni brothers, and Giovanni Andrei, a brother-in-law of Guiseppe Franzoni.

By Carl Franzoni's own account, he himself grew up as something of a young hoodlum in Cincinnati, Ohio, and later went into business with some shady Sicilian characters selling mail-order breast and penis pumps out of an address on LA's fabled Melrose Avenue. As Franzoni remembered it, his business "partner's name was Scallacci, Joe Scallacci—the same name as the famous murderer Scallacci. Probably from the same family." Probably so.

Franzoni, born circa 1934, hooked up with the older Paulekas sometime around 1963 and soon after became his constant sidekick. Also in the troupe was a young Rory Flynn (Canyonite Errol Flynn's statuesque daughter), a bizarre character named Ricky Applebaum who had half a moustache on one side of his face and half a beard on the other, most of the young girls who would later become part of Frank Zappa's GTO project, and a lot of other colorful characters who donned pseudonyms like Linda Bopp, Butchie, Beatle Bob, Emerald, and Karen Yum Yum.

Also flitting about the periphery of the dance troupe were Navy brat Gail Sloatman and a curious character on the LA music scene by the name of Kim Fowley. Sloatman and Fowley were, for a time, closely allied and even cut a record together, America's Sweethearts, that Fowley produced. In 1966, Fowley produced a record for Vito as well, billed as Vito and the Hands. The seven-inch single, Where It's At, which featured the musicianship of some of Frank Zappa's Mothers of Invention cohorts, came no closer to entering the charts than did Fowley and Sloatman's effort. Sloatman though soon found work as an assistant to, and booking agent for, Elmer Valentine, whom we will meet shortly.

Fowley, as with so many other characters in this story, has a rather interesting history. He was born in 1939, the son of actor Douglas Fowley, a WWII Navy veteran and attendee of St. Francis Xavier Military Academy. According to the younger Fowley's account, he was initially abandoned to a foster home but later taken back and raised by his father. He grew up in upscale Malibu, California, where he shared his childhood home with "a bunch of actors and guys from the Navy." At the age of six-and-a-half, Fowley had an unusual experience that he later shared with author Michael Walker: dressed up in a sailor suit by his dad and his Navy buddies, he was taken "to a photographer named William, who took a picture of me in the sailor suit. His studio was next door to the Canyon [Country] Store." Right after that, he was driven down Laurel Canyon Boulevard to the near-mythical Schwab's Drugstore, where "everybody cheered and two chorus girls grabbed my six-year-old cock and balls and stuck a candy cigarette in my mouth."

It's probably safe to assume that childhood experiences such as that helped to prepare Fowley for his later employment as a young male street hustler, a profession that he practiced on the seedy streets of the City of Angels (by Fowley's own account, I should add, just as it was James Dean himself who claimed to have worked those same streets with Nick Adams). Following that, Fowley spent some time serving with the Army National Guard, after which he devoted his life to working in the LA music industry as a musician, writer and producer—as well as, according to some accounts, a master manipulator.

Around 1957, Fowley played in a band known as the Sleepwalkers, alongside future Beach Boy Bruce Johnston. At times, a diminutive young guitarist named Phil Spector—who had moved out to LA with his mother not too many years earlier, following the suicide of his father when Phil was just nine—sat in with the group. During the 1960s, Fowley was best known for producing such ridiculous yet beloved novelty songs as the Hollywood Argyles' Alley Oop and the Rivingtons' Papa Oom-Mow-Mow, though he also did more respectable work such as collaborating on some Byrds' tracks and having some of his original songs covered by both the Beach Boys and the Flying Burrito Brothers.

In 1975, Fowley would have perhaps his greatest success when he created the Runaways, further lowering the bar that Frank Zappa had already set rather low some years earlier when he had created and recorded the GTOs. The Runaways featured underage versions of Joan Jett and Lita Ford, whom Fowley tastefully attired in leather and lingerie. As he would later boast, "Everyone loved the idea of sixteen-year-old girls playing guitars and singing about fucking." Some of the young girls in the band, including Cherie Curry, would later accuse Fowley of requiring them to perform sexual services for him and his associates as a prerequisite for membership in the group.

Prior to assembling the Runaways, one of Fowley's proudest accomplishments was producing the 1969 album *I'm Back and I'm Proud* by rockabilly pioneer Gene Vincent, featuring backing vocals by Canyonite Linda Ronstadt. Just two years later, Vincent—a Navy veteran raised in that penultimate Navy town, Norfolk, Virginia—died unexpectedly on October 12, 1971, due reportedly to a ruptured stomach ulcer. Not long before his death, Vincent had been on tour in the UK but he had hastily returned to the US due to pressure from, among others, promoter Don Arden. Known none-too-affectionately as the "Al Capone of Pop," Arden had a penchant for guns and violence and he was known to openly boast of his affiliation with powerful organized crime figures. In addition to being a business partner of the equally nefarious Michael Jeffery, Arden was also the father of Sharon Osbourne and the former manager of her husband's band, Black Sabbath… but here I have surely digressed, so let's try to bring this back around to where we left off.

At least as early as 1962, not long before Carl Franzoni joined the group, the freak troupe was already hitting the clubs a couple nights each week to refine their unique style of dance (perhaps best described as an epileptic seizure set to music) and show off their distinctively unappealing, though soon to be quite popular, fashion sense. In those early days, they danced to local black R&B bands and to a band out of Fresno known as the Gauchos, in dives far removed from the fabled Sunset Strip—because, Franzoni has said, "There were no white bands [in LA] yet," and "There were no clubs on Sunset Boulevard."

That, of course, was all about to quickly change. As if by magic, new clubs began to spring up along the legendary Sunset Strip beginning around 1964, and old clubs considered to be long past their prime miraculously reemerged. In January 1964, a young Chicago vice cop named Elmer Valentine opened the doors to the now world-famous Whisky-a-Go-Go nightclub. Just over a year later, in spring of 1965, he opened a second soon-to-be-wildly-popular club, the Trip. Not long before that, near the end of 1964, the legendary Ciro's nightclub began undergoing extensive renovations. Opened in 1940 by Billy Wilkerson, an associate of Bugsy Siegel, the upscale club had flourished for the first twenty years of its existence, with a clientele that regularly included Hollywood royalty and organized crime figures. By the early 1960s, though, the Strip was dead, and the once prestigious club had gone to seed.

Ciro's reopened in early 1965, just before the Trip opened its doors and just in time, as it turns out, to host the very first club appearance by the musical act that was about to become the first Laurel Canyon band to commit a song to vinyl: The Byrds. By 1967, Gazzari's had opened up on the Strip as well, and in the early 1970s Valentine would open yet another club that endures to this day, the Roxy. Smaller clubs like the London Fog, where the Doors got their first booking as the house band in early 1966, opened their doors to the public in the mid-1960s as well.

The timing of the opening of Valentine's first two clubs, and the reopening of Ciro's, could not have been any more fortuitous. The paint was barely dry on the walls of the new clubs when bands like Love and the Doors and the Byrds and Buffalo Springfield and the Turtles and the Mothers of Invention and the Mamas and the Papas and the Lovin' Spoonful came knocking. The problem, however, was that the new clubs were not yet known to the general public, Ciro's had been long left for dead, and nobody had the slightest idea who any of these newfangled bands were. What was needed then was a way to create a buzz around the clubs that would draw people in and kick-start the Strip back to life, as well as, of course, launch the careers of the new bands.

The bands themselves could not be expected to fill the new clubs, since, besides being unknown, they also—and yeah, I know that you don't really want to hear this and I will undoubtedly be deluged with letters of complaint, but I'm going to say it anyway—weren't very good, at least not in their live incarnations. To be sure, they sounded great on vinyl, but that was largely due to the fact that the band members themselves didn't actually play on their records (at least not in the early days), and the rich vocal harmonies that were a trademark of the 'Laurel Canyon sound' were created in the studio with a good deal of multi-tracking and overdubs. On stage, it was another matter entirely.

Enter then the wildly flamboyant and colorful freak squad, who were one key component of the strategy that was devised to lure patrons into the clubs. Vito and Carl's dancers were a fixture on the Sunset Strip scene from the very moment that the new clubs opened their doors to the public, and they were, by all accounts, treated like royalty by the club owners. As John Hartmann, proprietor of the Kaleidoscope Club and brother of comedian Phil Hartman, acknowledged, he "would let Vito and his dancers into the Kaleidoscope free every week because they attracted people. They were really hippies, and so we had to have them. They got in free pretty much everywhere they went. They blessed your joint. They validated you. If they're the essence of hippiedom and you're trying to be a hippie nightclub, you need hippies."

As the aforementioned Kim Fowley put it, with characteristic bluntness, "A band didn't have to be good, as long as the dancers were there." Indeed, the band was largely irrelevant, other than to provide some semblance of a soundtrack for the real show, which was taking place on the dance floor. Gail Zappa once candidly admitted that, even at her husband's shows, the real attraction was not on the stage: "The customers came to see the freaks dance. Nobody ever talks about that, but that was the case." Frank Zappa added, "As soon as they arrived they would make things happen, because they were dancing in a way nobody had seen before, screaming and yelling out on the floor and doing all kinds of weird things. They were dressed in a way that nobody could believe, and they gave life to everything that was going on."

For reasons that clearly had more to do with boosting attendance at the clubs than with the dancing abilities displayed by the group, Vito and Carl seem to have become minor media darlings over the course of the 1960s and into the 1970s. The two can be seen, separately and together, in a string of cheap exploitation films, including *Mondo Bizarro* from 1966, *Something's Happening (aka The Hippie Revolt)* from 1967, the notorious *Mondo Hollywood*, also released in 1967, and *You Are What You Eat*, with David Crosby, Frank Zappa and Tiny Tim, which hit theaters in 1968. In 1972, Vito made his acting debut in a non-documentary film, *The White Horse Gang*.

Paulekas reportedly also popped up on Groucho Marx's *You Bet Your Life*, and Franzoni made an appearance on a 1968 Dick Clark TV special. The golden child, Godo Paulekas, was featured in a photo in *Life* magazine circa 1966, and the whole troupe showed up for an appearance on the *Tonight Show*. According to Barry Miles, Vito also "appeared regularly on the *Joe Pyne Show* and in between the bare-breasted girls in the late fifties and early sixties men's magazines."

Joe Pyne, for those of you too young to remember, is the guy we have to thank for paving the way for the likes of Bill O'Reilly, Rush Limbaugh, Sean Hannity, Michael Savage, Don Imus, Morton Downey, Jr., Jerry Springer and Wally George. For Mr. Pyne, you see, was the guy who pioneered the confrontational interview style favored by so many today. The decorated Marine Corps veteran debuted as a talk-radio host in 1950 and quickly became known for insulting and demeaning anyone who dared to disagree with him, guests and listeners alike. In 1957, he moved his show to LA and by 1965, he was nationally syndicated both on the radio and on television. His favored targets, as you may have guessed, included hippies, feminists, gays, and anti-war activists, and his interviews frequently ended with his guest either walking off or being thrown off the stage. Nearing the peak of his popularity, Pyne died on March 23, 1970, at the age of forty-five, reportedly of lung cancer. His ideological offspring, however, live on.

7

THE DEATH OF GODO PAULEKAS

ANGER'S INFANT LUCIFER

"Vito would come in every night with an entourage—mostly four or five really great-looking girls. It's a weird parallel, but it was like a nonviolent Manson situation, a little cult." Lou Adler, manager/producer of the Mamas and the Papas, co-organizer of the Monterey Pop Festival, investor in Jay Sebring's hair salon, and business partner of mobster/club owner Elmer Valentine

"I have said for years that there are some similarities between Vito and Manson… Vito was sort of like a pimp. He was welcome as a VIP with the emerging rock crowd because he always showed up with these free thinking fourteen- and fifteen-year-old girls that would be happy to satisfy their needs." A member of the Paulekas family, in e-mail correspondence with the author

Recruits for Vito and Carl's dance troupe weren't likely hard to come by, given that, according to Miles, Vito operated "the first crash pad in LA, an open house to countless runaways where everyone was welcome for a night, particularly young women." By the mid-1960s, the group had expanded into a second communal location in addition to the basement studio at 303 Laurel Avenue: the ubiquitous Log Cabin. According to Jack Boulware, writing in *Mojo*, architect Robert Byrd and his son built a new guesthouse (aka 'the treehouse') on the property in the early 1960s, and the "following year, a communal family of weirdos moved into the cabin and treehouse, centered around two underground hipsters named Vito Paulekas and Carl Franzoni, organizers of freeform dance troupes at clubs along the Sunset Strip." By 1967, the dancers were splitting "their rent with staff from the hippie publication *The Oracle*. Retired journalist John Bilby recalls at least thirty-six people living and partying at the Log Cabin and treehouse, including the band Fraternity of Man. 'Tim Leary was definitely there, George Harrison and Ravi Shankar were there,' Bilby says."

For the record, Fraternity of Man was a one-hit-wonder band best known for the ever-popular novelty song Don't Bogart Me. Tim Leary was, in this writer's humble opinion, best known for being a painfully obvious CIA asset. And *The Oracle* was a San Francisco-based publication with intelligence ties that specialized in pitching psychedelic occultism to impressionable youth. Leary, it probably should be noted, also had a home of his own in Laurel Canyon.

According to Barry Miles, "Franzoni's commune ended in May 1968," as that was when *The Oracle* moved out and our old friend Frank Zappa moved in. The lead Mother "had visited Carl at the Log Cabin on a previous trip and realized it was perfect for his needs." And it was an easy move for Frank, since he was already living in Laurel Canyon at the home of Pamela Zarubica (aka Suzy Creamcheese) at 8404 Kirkwood Drive, where Zappa had met his new wife, Gail, and where Gail's old kindergarten pal, Jim Morrison, was known to occasionally pass the time. Ms. Zarubica/Creamcheese was yet another member of Vito's dance troupe.

As multiple sources remember it, Miles is mistaken in his contention that Franzoni's commune came to an end; Frank Zappa took over as ringmaster, to be sure, but Franzoni and all his cohorts stayed on. Carl had a room in the basement, where he was known to bowl in the middle of the night, usually naked and intoxicated. The doomed Christine Frka had a room down there as well, as did other future GTOs. Various other members of the dance troupe occupied other nooks and crannies in both the main house and the guesthouse/treehouse. Indeed, as Miles noted correctly, the freak dancers became so closely associated with the Mothers of Invention that "they got dubbed as 'the Mothers Auxiliary' and Carl Franzoni, in particular, was included in a lot of group photographs." Vito and Carl also received vocal credits on the band's debut album (as did none other than Bobby Beausoleil).

And that, in a nutshell, is the story of Vito and his freak dancers—or at least a sanitized version. Because there is, as it turns out, a very dark underbelly to this story. And much of it is centered around that angelic hippie child that the readers of *Life* magazine met in 1966, and who we now must sadly add to the Laurel Canyon Death List. For young Godo Paulekas, you see, never made it past the age of three. The specifics of the tragedy are difficult to determine, unfortunately, as there is little agreement in the various accounts of the event.

According to Barry Miles, "Vito and Szou's three-year-old son Godo had fallen through a trapdoor on the roof of the building and died." Michael Walker tells of a "two or three" year old Godo "fall[ing] to his death from a scaffold at the studio." An article in the *San Francisco Weekly* had it as "a five-year-old boy" who died when he "fell through a skylight." Super-groupie and former freak dancer Pamela Des Barres agreed with the skylight scenario, but not the age: "Vito's exquisite little puppet child, Godot, fell through a skylight during a wacky photo session on the roof and died at age three-and-a-half." Alban Pfisterer of the band Love recalled a much darker scenario: "[Vito] got married, had a baby, gave it acid, and it fell off the roof and died."

When Robert Carl Cohen digitally remastered his notorious *Mondo Hollywood* for DVD release, he added postscripts for all the famous and infamous people who were featured in his film. For "Godo" Paulekas, he inserted the following caption: "Died age two—victim of medical malpractice." Thus we appear to have a further muddying of the waters. So muddy in fact that in addition to there being various competing 'fell from some scaffolding/fell through a trapdoor/crashed through a skylight' accounts, there are also at least two medical malpractice stories!

Before reviewing those though, it would perhaps be instructive to examine the context in which this tragedy played out. We know, for example, that a musician and writer named Raphael told writer Michael

Walker that he had been present one evening at Vito's place when Godo was brought out: "They passed that little boy around, naked, in a circle with their mouths. That was their thing about 'introducing him to sensuality.'" We also know that Vito and Szou had a rather odd reaction to the death of their firstborn son and only child, as recounted by Des Barres: "I was beside myself with sorrow, but Vito and Szou insisted on continuing our plans for the evening. We went out dancing, and when people asked where little Godot was, Vito said, 'He died today.' It was weird, really weird."

Barry Miles, who was also close to the scene, had a similar recollection, though he attempted to put a more positive spin on the reaction of the parents: "Vito and Szou's three-year-old son Godo had fallen through a trapdoor on the roof of their building and died. That evening Vito, Szou and the gang went out as usual, dancing with an even fiercer intensity to assuage their grief." Godo died at 7:30 PM on December 23, 1966, some thirty-six hours before Christmas morning. On the side of reality that I live on, the death of a child at any time would deter most parents from going out and partying the night away—that it occurred virtually on the eve of Christmas makes Vito and Szou's actions that much more incomprehensible.

Adding to the weirdness factor is the full text of the quote from the *San Francisco Weekly* that I previously presented an edited version of: "[Kenneth Anger's] first candidate to play Lucifer, a five-year-old boy whose hippie parents had been fixtures on the Los Angeles counterculture scene, fell through a skylight to his death. By 1967, Anger had relocated to San Francisco and was searching for a new Lucifer." As some readers may be aware, he soon found his new Lucifer in the form of Mansonite and former Grass Roots guitarist Bobby Beausoleil.

And so it was that the soon-to-be convicted murderer replaced the cherubic hippie child as the face of Lucifer. But what was it, one wonders, that drew Anger's twisted eye to the young boy? Beausoleil has said that some of Anger's film projects were for private collectors: "every once in a while he'd do a little thing that wouldn't be for distribution." Biographer Bill Landis has written that projects such as those led at one time to Anger being investigated by the police on suspicion that he had been producing snuff films.

Pamela Des Barres has shed further light on the dark edges of the freak troupe with this description of a scene that Vito had staged one evening in his studio: "two tenderly young girls were tonguing each other… everyone was silently observing the scene as if it were part of their necessary training by the headmaster, Vito… One of the girls on the four-poster was only twelve-years-old, and a few months later Vito was deported to Tahiti for this very situation, and many more just like it."

It was actually Haiti that Vito appears to have fled to, and then to Jamaica (which at the time had no extradition treaty with the United States), accompanied by his wife Szou and their new baby daughter Gruvi Nipples Paulekas, born on June 23, 1967. The couple would have several more offspring, each given an increasingly ridiculous name: Bp Paulekas, born on December 29, 1969; Sky Paulekas, born, bizarrely enough, on what would have been Godo's eighth birthday, December 1, 1971; and Phreekus Mageekus Paulekas, born on January 28, 1974, just a little more than a year before the couple divorced in March of 1975 in Northern California.

According to Miles, Vito's flight from justice occurred in December of 1968, though other accounts vary. Carl Franzoni, meanwhile, became embroiled in some unspecified legal troubles of his own and went into hiding, later resurfacing in Canada by some reports. At around that same time, Frank Zappa moved on to yet another location in Laurel Canyon, a high-security home on Woodrow Wilson Drive.

Also at around that same time, according to author Ed Sanders, the Manson Family came calling at the Log Cabin: "One former Manson family associate claims that a group of four to six family members lived on Laurel Canyon Boulevard in the log cabin house once owned by cowboy-actor Tom Mix. They lived there for a few weeks, in late 1968, in a cave-like hollow in back of the residence." According to Franzoni, Manson also came calling at the Vito Clay Studio on Laurel Avenue: "Applebaum took over Vito's place when Vito vacated at Beverly and Laurel. So he inherited all the people that came after that… he was the beginning of the Manson clan. Manson came there because he had heard about Vito but Vito was gone."

It makes perfect sense, in retrospect, that Charles Manson and his Family came calling just as Vito fled the scene, and that a Mansonite replaced the freak child as the embodiment of Lucifer. For the truth, you see, is that in many significant ways, Charles Manson was little more than a younger version of Vito Paulekas. Consider, if you will, all of the following Mansonesque qualities that Paulekas (and to some extent, Franzoni) seemed to share:

■ Vito considered himself to be a gifted artist and poet, as did our old friend Charlie Manson.

■ Vito, according to Miles, “was something of a guru,” as was, quite obviously, Chuck Manson.

■ Vito surrounded himself with a flock of very young (often underage) women, as did Manson.

■ Vito was considerably older than his followers, and so too was Charlie.

■ When Vito addressed his flock, they listened with rapt attention as though they were being delivered the word of God, as was true with Manson as well.

■ Carl Franzoni was known to wear a black cape and refer to himself as “Captain Fuck,” while Manson was also partial to black capes and would at times declare himself to be “the God of Fuck.”

■ Vito is said to have had a virtually insatiable libido, as did, by numerous reports, Chuck Manson.

■ Vito’s flock adopted nicknames to aid in the depersonalization process, as did Charlie’s.

■ Vito’s troupe included a Beverly Hills hairstylist named Sheldon Jaman, while Charlie’s included a Beverly Hills hairpiece stylist named Charles Watson.

■ Vito believed in introducing children to sexuality at a very young age, while in the Manson Family, as Sanders has noted, “Infant sexuality was encouraged.”

■ Vito apparently liked to stage live sex shows for his followers involving underage participants, which was also a specialty of Charles Milles Manson.

■ Finally, Vito encouraged his followers to drug themselves while he himself largely abstained, thus enabling him to at all times maintain control, while Manson limited his own drug intake for the very same reason.

Franzoni and Manson were not, by the way, the only folks on the Laurel Canyon/Sunset Strip scene who developed a fondness for black capes in the latter half of the 1960s. As Michael Walker noted in *Laurel Canyon*, during that same period of time David Crosby had "taken to wearing an Oscar Wilde/Frank Lloyd Wright-ish cape wherever he went."

In unrelated news, Ed Sanders notes in his controversial *The Family* that, "Around March 10, 1968, a convoy of seven Process automobiles containing thirty people and fourteen Alsatian dogs journeyed toward Los Angeles." Vincent Bugliosi added, in his best-selling *Helter Skelter*, that in "1968 and 1969, the Process launched a major recruiting drive in the United States. They were in Los Angeles in May and June of 1968 and for at least several months in the fall of 1969."

As Gary Lachman wrote in *Fortean Times* in May 2000, the Process Church of the Final Judgement, often referred to as just "the Process," was "one of the most controversial cults of the Sixties." Formed in 1963 in London as an offshoot of Scientology, the group was the brainchild of Robert Moore, a former cavalry officer who would soon adopt the name Robert DeGrimston, and Mary Ann MacLean, the proprietor of an elite prostitution ring with ties to the UK's so-called Profumo Affair. According to various reports, MacLean was at one time married to famed pugilist and freemason Sugar Ray Robinson, who, as we will see in a later chapter, lived right around the corner from future Love frontman Arthur Lee during that time.

The group arrived in the States in 1968, establishing footholds in Los Angeles, San Francisco, New Orleans, New York and Boston. The organization soon began producing a magazine that, as Lachmann says, had an "editorial policy [that] favoured Hitler, Satan and gore." Singer/songwriter Marianne Faithfull, who appeared in an issue of the magazine, later distanced herself from the group, saying that "There was something almost like fascism about the Process." The cult's fascist mindset was amply illustrated by their choice of a symbol, which Lachman accurately describes as bearing "an uncanny resemblance to the Nazi swastika."

In *The Family*, Sanders describes the Process as a "death-worshiping church" composed of "hooded snuffoids" who were directly connected to the Manson murders. Maury Terry likewise fleshed out connections between the Process and New York's Son of Sam murders in his equally controversial *The Ultimate Evil*. Spokespersons for the cult, not surprisingly, vehemently denied any involvement in any such murderous activities. One thing is certain though: Processians were instantly recognizable on the streets of LA due to their curious habit of donning black capes wherever they went.

In other news, it appears as though Frank Zappa also displayed some of the same less-than-admirable qualities shared by Manson and Paulekas. As Des Barres observed, "Vito was just like Frank, he never got high either. They were both ringmasters who always wanted to be in control." And as Barry Miles noted in his Zappa biography, Frank's daughter Moon "recalls men with straggling beards, body odour and bad posture who crouched naked near her playthings…" Also, the "Zappa children watched porn with their parents and were encouraged in their own sexuality as soon as they reached puberty. When they became teenagers, Gail insisted they shower with their overnight guests in order to conserve water." Apparently the Zappas were having a hard time paying their DWP bill.

By the early 1970s, Vito Paulekas had resurfaced up north in Cotati, California, with Carl Franzoni once again at his side. The two were, by all accounts, treated like rock stars in the funky little town, and they are to this day proudly and prominently featured on the city's official website. By some accounts, Vito even served as mayor of the town, with Franzoni assisting as his Director of Parks and Recreation. Paulekas also taught dance classes at Sonoma State College. Szou went to work for an attorney, leaving the hippie life behind.

Franzoni, meanwhile, turned up now and then on that early version of *America's Got Talent* known as *The Gong Show* (apparently as one of the 'Worm Dancers'). *The Gong Show*, of course, was the brainchild of Chuck Barris, who famously claimed that during the days when he appeared to be working as a mild-mannered game show producer, he was actually on the payroll of the CIA, and that while he was ostensibly serving as a chaperone to the couples who had won trips on *The Dating Game*, what he was really doing was carrying out assassinations. Possibly like that Harry Houdini guy, who we'll discuss in a later chapter.

Anyway, during the 1970s, the "cabin and treehouse scene," according to Jack Boulware, "grew creepy." Actually, it had always been pretty creepy; it likely just became a little more openly creepy. Eric Burden of the Animals moved in after Zappa vacated and the property continued to be communally occupied. In fact, it appears to have remained something of a commune throughout the 1970s, quite possibly right up until the time that it burned to the ground on October 31, 1981. Who paid the rent is anybody's guess—as is why such a prestigious property seems to have been made readily available to pretty much any "communal family of weirdos" who wanted to move in.

Vito Paulekas and Carl Franzoni appear to have remained in Northern California throughout the 1980s and into the 1990s. Vito married once again, for the fourth time, while he was in his sixties. Franzoni was still milling about the Santa Rosa area as of early 2013. In February of 2008, the aging freak, then reportedly seventy-four, rode along on a tour of 1960s hotspots offered by a local tour company and delighted the crowd by reenacting his distinctive dance style in front of Vito's former studio. The tour operator billed Franzoni as "the King of the Freaks," a title formerly held by his mentor, Vito Paulekas. The original king, alas, had died in October of 1992. His memorial service was held, appropriately enough, on October 31, 1992—All Hallows' Eve.

Returning now to the death of young Godo Paulekas, filmmaker Robert Carl Cohen, in an emailed defense of his medical malpractice claim, provided a detailed account of the incident—one that he said was told to him by Carl Franzoni on the evening of the tragedy and retold later by Vito himself: "Godo, two-and-a-half years of age at the time, was with his parents on the roof of 333 Laurel Ave. during a *LA Free Press* photo shoot. Two older children were holding his hands as they ran about. They led him onto a white-painted glass skylight, which collapsed. Godo fell through, sustaining a cut to his head and bruises. His parents took him to Hollywood Emergency Hospital, where the doctors stitched the cut on his head, and recommended he be taken to LA County General Hospital for observation overnight in case he'd sustained a concussion. A few hours later Vito received a phone call from LA County General that Godo had died. LA County DA [Evelle] Younger, convinced that Godo had been given drugs, ordered two separate autopsies by LA County Coroner Noguchi. The two autopsies both revealed that Godo had no drugs in his system, and that the cause of death had been strangulation due to the child's breathing his own vomit.

"Vito sued LA County for wrongful death due to medical malpractice. The charge was that, in contradiction to standard medical practice, Godo had been restrained by being strapped down on his back—something which is not normally done following a head injury (due to the possibility of the victim strangling on their own vomit). The reason this was done in Godo's case was probably because the child was offending the hospital staff by repeating some of the first words he'd learned, ie: 'Fuck you!' The LA authorities offered Vito a $20,000 pre-trial settlement, which he refused. I suggested to Vito that, since the case would be tried by a jury of mostly conservative people, usually retired civil servants, he get his long hair cut short, shave his beard and goatee, and wear a business suit and tie. Vito declined changing his appearance. The jury ruled in favor of the hospital."

A member of the Paulekas family heard a much different account, this one also coming directly from Vito: "He [Vito] and Sue told me that Godo fell from the roof through the skylight, as often told, but died when, in the hospital, the District Attorney's office insisted on testing Godot for drugs to prove Vito was drugging his own child. The best way [to test] was with a spinal tap that killed him because he was so young. That was his story to me and he elaborated about his screaming child being tied down in his presence for the spinal tap and then suddenly becoming lifeless."

It is perfectly obvious that both versions of events cannot possibly be true. In one version, Vito was present when Godo died, while in the other he received notification over the phone. One version of reality holds that the boy was tested for drugs after his death, while the other version claims that the drug test was what killed him. Godo was restrained in both versions of events, but in one it's so that he could be administered the spinal tap that killed him, while in the other it is the restraints that killed him—restraints utilized because for some reason he was yelling "fuck you!" at the hospital staff and no one knew of a nonviolent way to deal with an injured three-year-old!

If the medical malpractice story is true, then why did Vito tell more than one version of it? This is clearly not a situation where memories could have faded over time—no parent could confuse such particulars as if they actually watched their child die… before, of course, donning their dancing shoes and heading out to the Whisky.

There are, to be sure, a number of questions raised by the malpractice scenario, particularly with Cohen's account. For one thing, as if the reaction of the parents was not already difficult to understand, we are now being asked to believe that they went out dancing immediately after Godo was essentially murdered. Also, why is it that no one else who was making the scene in those days seems to remember a malpractice trial? And why were kids being allowed to play unsupervised on a roof? And would a toddler who crashed through a skylight and then fell a considerable distance among shards of broken glass really sustain only a minor cut and a few bruises? And would a hospital really be so callous as to inform parents of the death of a child by telephone? And if Vito was so quick to file suit against the city, why didn't he also sue his landlord for allowing such a dangerous condition to exist?

As it turns out, Godo's LA County Certificate of Death provides some insight into his short life and curious death. Clearly indicated is that the coroner found the cause of death to be "shock" due to "hemorrhage into deep cervical and superior mediastinal areas." The death was deemed to be an "accident" that occurred when Godo "fell through skylight while playing." He did, though, die at Los Angeles General Hospital, at 7:30 PM, precisely five hours after the accident occurred at 2:30 PM (though the times seem oddly approximate).

The timeline offered up by the document certainly seems a bit odd. Despite the fact that Godo died on December 23, his autopsy was not completed until April 13, a delay of nearly four months. Was that delay caused by the fabled second autopsy? Even if that were the case, four months seems like an inordinately long time to hold up the release of the body for burial. To further add to the mystery, even after the body was released, it was almost another full month before it was buried, on

May 9, 1967. Why did it take some four-and-a-half months to lay the child to rest?

The tragedy was reported not by the parents, but by a “Mr. Marvin Cahn, Attorney.” After a child has suffered a serious accident, do parents with nothing to hide generally delay the arrival of help by calling an attorney and having him contact the proper authorities? It appears that there are, and probably always will be, unanswered questions surrounding the short life and curious death of the angelic hippie child who missed his big-screen debut as Lucifer.

I’ll let a member of the Paulekas family provide the final words on the King of the Freaks. Asked by the author if he believed that Vito was a possible pedophile, he answered, “Probably. But I believe you have to go deeper into the libido and drives of so many rock stars and famous people who had an unhealthy relationship with sex and drugs. Any biography of the rockers of that time and probably any time just skirts [around] the reality that their greatest secret and shame includes the sex they had and have with very young girls and boys. Roman Polanski just got caught… I love hearing from people who tell me Vito saved their soul or protected them from danger when they were young and at risk… I am sure some became survivors and others fell deeper into the abyss. So it goes.”

Indeed.

8

ALL THE YOUNG TURKS
HOLLYWOOD TRIPPING

"As all halfway-decent managers in the rock era have done, [Jim] Dickson worked on seducing the in-crowd and creating a buzz around [the Byrds]… The timing was perfect… LA's baby-boomers were mobile, getting around, looking for action. And now they were joined by the hip elite of Hollywood itself, from Sal Mineo and Peter Fonda to junkie comic Lenny Bruce." Barney Hoskyns, writing in Waiting for the Sun

AS IMPORTANT AS THE FREAKS WERE TO BUILDING AN AUDIENCE FOR THE new Laurel Canyon bands, there was another group that played a key role as well: Hollywood's so-called Young Turks. Like the freaks, the Turks became an immediate and constant presence on the newly emerging Sunset Strip scene. And as with the freaks, their presence on the Strip was heavily promoted by the media. Locals and tourists alike knew where to go to gawk at the freaks and, as an added bonus, quite possibly rub shoulders with the likes of Peter Fonda, Jack Nicholson, Bruce Dern, Dennis Hopper and Warren Beatty, along with their female counterparts—such as Jane Fonda, Nancy Sinatra and Sharon Tate.

And as with the freaks, the Turks were also instrumental in distracting attention away from the less than stellar musicianship on the stage. After all, young men offered the chance to see Jayne Mansfield in the flesh probably didn't even notice whether there was a band on the stage at all! Mansfield, by the way, like Mansonites Susan Atkins and Bobby Beausoleil, had direct ties to Anton LaVey and his Church of Satan.

Many of these young and glamorous Hollywood stars forged very close bonds with the Laurel Canyon musicians. Some of them, including Peter Fonda, found homes in the canyon so that they could live, work and party among the rock stars (and, in their free time, pass around John Phillips' wife Michelle to just about every swinging dick in the canyon, including Jack Nicholson, Dennis Hopper, Warren Beatty, Roman Polanski, and Gene Clark of the Byrds). Some of them never left; Jack Nicholson to this day lives in a spacious estate just off the portion of Mulholland Drive that lies between Laurel Canyon and Coldwater Canyon. Not far west of Nicholson's property (which now includes the neighboring estate formerly owned by Marlon Brando) sits the longtime home of Warren Beatty.

From the symbiotic relationship between Laurel Canyon actors and Laurel Canyon musicians arose a series of feature films that are now considered countercultural classics. One such film was *The Trip* (1967), an unintentionally hilarious attempt to create a cinematic facsimile of an LSD trip. Written by, of all people, Jack Nicholson, the movie starred fellow Turks Peter Fonda, Dennis Hopper and Bruce Dern. Seated in the director's chair was Roger Corman, who, throughout his career, worked side-by-side with David Crosby's dad on no less than twenty-three feature films. Recruited to supply the soundtrack for the film was Gram Parsons' International Submarine Band (Parsons' music, however, was ultimately not used, though the band does make a brief onscreen appearance). The house where most of the film was shot, at the top of Kirkwood Drive in Laurel Canyon, became the home of Love's Arthur Lee.

Another 'psychedelic' cult film of the late 1960s with deep roots in Laurel Canyon was the Monkees' 1968 big-screen offering, *Head*. Also scripted by Nicholson (with assistance from Bob Rafelson), the movie included cameo appearances by canyon dwellers Dennis Hopper, Jack Nicholson and Frank Zappa. The music—performed, of course, by the Monkees—was a mix of songs written by the band and contributions from Canyon songwriters like Carole King and Harry Nilsson. Shockingly, some of that music is actually pretty good. Even more shockingly, the movie overall is arguably the most watchable of the 1960s cult films. It is certainly a vast improvement over, for example, 1968's wretched *Psych Out* (starring Nicholson and Dern).

I do realize, by the way, that some of you out there in readerland cringe every time that I mention the Monkees as though they were a 'real' band. The reality though is that they were every bit as 'real' as most of their contemporaries. And while the made-for-TV Beatles replicants were looked down upon by music critics and fans alike, they were fully accepted as members of the musical fraternity by the other Laurel Canyon bands. The homes of both Mickey Dolenz and Peter Tork were popular canyon hangouts in the late sixties for a number of 'real' musicians. Also regularly dropping by Dolenz's party house were Dennis Hopper and Jack Nicholson.

The difference in perception between their peers and the public was attributable to the fact that the other bands knew something that the fans did not: the very same studio musicians who appeared without credit on the Monkees' albums also appeared without credit on their albums. And then, of course, there was the fact that so many of Laurel Canyon's 'real' musicians had taken a stab at being a part of the Monkees, including Stephen Stills, Love's Bryan MacLean, and Three Dog Night's Danny Hutton—all of whom answered the Monkees' casting call and were rejected.

There were undoubtedly other future stars who auditioned for the show as well, though most would probably prefer not to discuss such things. Despite persistent rumors, however, there was one local musician who we can safely conclude *did not* read for a part: Charles Manson. Given that the show was cast in 1965 and began its brief television run in 1966, while Charlie was still imprisoned at Terminal Island awaiting his release in March of 1967, there doesn't appear to be any way that Manson could have been considered for a part on the show. And that's kind of a shame when you think about it, because if he had been, we might today remember Charlie Manson not as one of America's most notorious criminals, but rather as the guy who made Marcia Brady swoon.

Returning to the countercultural films of the 1960s, the most critically acclaimed of the lot, and the one with the deepest roots in Laurel Canyon, was *Easy Rider*. Directed by Dennis Hopper, from a script co-written by he and Peter Fonda, the film starred Fonda and Hopper along with Jack Nicholson. Hopper's walrus-mustachioed character in the film was based on David Crosby, who was regularly seen racing his motorcycle up and down the winding streets of Laurel Canyon. (That motorcycle, by the way, had been a gift from Crosby's good buddy, Peter Fonda.) Fonda's absurd 'Captain America' character was inspired either by John Phillips' riding partner, Gram Parsons, or by Crosby's former bandmate in the Byrds, Roger McGuinn (depending upon who is telling the story). That very same Roger McGuinn scored the original music for the film. His contributions were joined on the soundtrack by offerings from fellow Canyonite musicians Steppenwolf, the Byrds, Fraternity of Man and Jimi Hendrix. And the movie's hippie commune was reportedly created and filmed in the canyons, near Mulholland Drive.

Since *Easy Rider* had such deep roots in the Laurel Canyon scene, we need to briefly focus our attention here on one other individual who worked on the film, art director Jeremy Kay, aka Jerry Kay. Before *Easy Rider*, Kay had worked on such cinematic abominations as *Angels from Hell*, *Hells Angels on Wheels* (with Jack Nicholson), and *Scorpio Rising* (Kenneth Anger's occult-tinged homage to gay biker culture). In the mid-1970s, Kay would write, direct and produce a charming little film entitled *Satan's Children*. Of far more interest here than his film credits though is his membership in the 1960s in a group known as the Solar Lodge of the Ordo Templi Orientis (or OTO), which found itself in the news, and not in a good way, just after *Easy Rider* opened on theater screens across America.

Two weeks after *Easy Rider* premiered on July 14, 1969, police acting on a phone tip raided the Solar Lodge's compound near Blythe, California, and found a six-year-old boy locked outdoors in a 6' x 6' wooden crate in the sweltering desert heat. The young boy, whose father was a Los Angeles County probation officer, had been chained to a steel plate for nearly two months in temperatures reaching as high as 117° F. According to an FBI report, the box also contained a can "partially filled with human waste and swarming with flies… The stench was nauseating." Before being put in the box, the child had been burned with matches and beaten with bamboo poles by cult members. The leader of the cult, Georgina Brayton, had reportedly told cult members that "when it was convenient, she was going to give [the boy] LSD and set fire to the structure in which he was chained and give him just enough chain to get out of reach of the fire." Killing the child had also been discussed (and apparently condoned by the boy's mind-fucked mother).

Eleven adult members of the sect were charged with felony child abuse, the majority of them young white men in their early twenties. All were brought to trial and convicted. In a curious bit of timing, the raid that resulted in the arrests and convictions coincided with the torture and murder of musician Gary Hinman by a trio of Manson acolytes. Though it is, not surprisingly, vehemently denied by concerned parties, various sources have claimed that Manson had ties to the group, which also maintained a home near the USC campus in Los Angeles. There is no doubt that Charlie preached the same dogma, including the notion of an apocalyptic race war looming on the horizon. The massacre at the Tate residence occurred less than two weeks after the raid on the OTO compound. Manson's Barker Ranch hideout would be raided a few months later, on October 12, 1969—the birthday, as I may have already mentioned, of Aleister Crowley, the Grand Poobah of the OTO until his death in 1947.

Anyway, sorry about that little digression, folks. I'm not entirely sure how we ended up at the Barker Ranch when the focus of this chapter was supposed to be on the Young Turks. So having now established that those Turks were a fully integrated part of the Laurel Canyon/Sunset Strip scene, and also that they played an important role in luring the public out to the new clubs to check out the new bands, our next task is to get to know a little bit about who these folks were and where they came from. Let's begin with Mr. Bruce Dern, who has some of the most provocative connections of any of the characters in this story.

It is probably safe to say that Dern's parents had rather impressive political connections, given that baby Bruce's godparents were sitting First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt and future two-time Democratic presidential nominee Adlai Stevenson (he lost both times, in 1952 and 1956, to Eisenhower). Bruce's paternal grandfather was a guy by the name of George Dern, who served as Secretary of War under President Franklin Roosevelt (for the youngsters in the crowd, Secretary of War is what we used to call the Secretary of Defense in a slightly less Orwellian era).

George had also served as Governor of Utah and Chairman of the National Governors' Association. Bruce's mother was born Jean MacLeish, and she happened to be the sister of Archibald MacLeish, who also served under Franklin Roosevelt, as the Director of the War Department's Office of Facts and Figures and as the Assistant Director of the Office of War Information. In other words, Archibald MacLeish was essentially America's Minister of War Propaganda. He also served at various times as an Assistant Secretary of State and as the Librarian of Congress. Perhaps the most impressive item on his résumé, however, was his membership in everyone's favorite secret society, Skull and Bones (class of 1915, one year before Prescott Bush was tapped in 1916).

It would appear then, that, even by Laurel Canyon standards, Mr. Dern has friends in very high places. Let's turn our attention next to the guy who shared the screen with Dern in *The Trip*, Mr. Peter Fonda. Of course, we all know that Fonda is the son of good ol' Hank Fonda, lovable Hollywood liberal and all-around nice guy. And certainly even a contrarian such as myself would not be so bold as to suggest that Henry Fonda might have some skeletons in his closet… right? Just for the hell of it, though, there are a few chapters of the Hank Fonda saga that we should probably review here.

We can begin, I suppose, by noting that Hank served as a decorated US Naval Intelligence officer during WWII, thus sparing Peter the stigma of being the only member of the Laurel Canyon in-crowd to have not been spawned by a member of the military/intelligence community. Not too many years after the war, Hank's wife, Francis Ford Seymour—who claimed to be a direct descendant of Jane Seymour, third wife of King Henry VIII—was found with her throat slashed open with a straight razor. Peter was just ten years old at the time of his mother's alleged suicide on April 14, 1950. When Seymour had met and married Hank, she was the widow of George Brokaw, who had, curiously enough, previously been married to prominent CIA operative Claire Booth Luce.

Fonda rebounded quickly from Seymour's unusual death and within eight months he was married once again, to Susan Blanchard, to whom he remained married until 1956. In 1957, Hank married yet again, this time to Italian Countess Afdera Franchetti (who followed up her four-year marriage to Fonda with a rumored affair with newly-sworn-in President John Kennedy). Franchetti, as it turns out, is the daughter of

Baron Raimondo Franchetti, who was a consultant to fascist dictator Benito Mussolini. The countess is also the great-granddaughter of Louise Sarah Rothschild, of the Rothschild banking family (perhaps you've heard of them?).

Before moving on, I should probably mention that Hank's first wife, Margaret Sullavan—who was yet another child of Norfolk, Virginia—also allegedly committed suicide, on New Year's Day, 1960. Nine months later, her daughter Bridget followed suit. In 1961, very soon after the deaths of first her mother and then her sister, Sullavan's other daughter, Brook Hayward, walked down the aisle with the next Young Turk on our list, Dennis Hopper. For those who may be unfamiliar with Hopper's body of work, he is the guy who was once found wandering naked and bewildered in a Mexican forest. And the guy who, after divorcing Hayward in 1969, married Michelle Phillips on Halloween day, 1970, only to have her file for divorce just eight days later claiming that Hopper had kept her handcuffed and imprisoned for a week while making "unnatural sexual demands."

Without passing judgment here, I think it's fair to say that Michelle Phillips has been around the block a time or two, if you catch my drift, so if even *she* thought Hopper's demands were a bit over the top, then one can only wonder just how "unnatural" they might have been. For what it's worth, Hopper once told a journalist that he "didn't handcuff her, [he] just punched her out!" In his mind, apparently, that made him somewhat less of a troglodyte.

Most official biographies of Hopper would lead one to believe that he was the son of a simple farmer. Dennis recently acknowledged, however, that that was clearly not the case: "My mother's father was a wheat farmer and I was raised on their farm. But my father was not a farmer." To the contrary, Hopper's dad was "a working person in intelligence" who during WWII "was in the OSS. He was in China, Burma, India." Hopper has proudly proclaimed that his father "was one of the 100 guys that liberated General Wainright out of prison in Korea," which might be a little more impressive were it not for the fact that it was actually the Red Army that freed Wainright and other prisoners; the US intel team just came to pick them up, debrief them and transport them home… but that, I suppose, isn't really relevant.

After the war, according to Hopper, his dad routinely carried a gun, which I suppose is what most lay ministers in the Methodist Church do. The family also left the farm in Kansas and relocated to San Diego, California, home of the Imperial Beach Naval Air Station, the United States Naval Radio Station, the United States Naval Amphibious Base, the North Island Naval Air Station, Fort Rosecrans Military Reservation, the United States Naval Training Center, the United States Marine Corps Recruit Depot, and the Miramar Marine Corps Air Station. And just north of the city sits the massive Camp Pendleton Marine Corps Base. Other than that, though, San Diego is just a sleepy little beach town where Hopper's dad ostensibly worked for the Post Office.

The more recent incarnation of Dennis Hopper, by the way, was wildly at odds with the hippie image that he had at one time tried very hard to cultivate. Before his death on May 29, 2010, Hopper was an unapologetic cheerleader for right-wing causes, who proudly boasted of having voted a straight Republican ticket for over thirty years.

To briefly recap then, we have thus far met three of the 'Young Turks' and we have found that one of them is the nephew of a Bonesman, another is the son of a Naval Intelligence officer who was once married to a Rothschild descendent, and the third was the slightly deranged son of an OSS officer. Come to think of it, we have actually covered one of the 'Turkettes' as well, since Jane Fonda obviously came from the same family background as her younger brother, Peter. As for the other female members of the posse, Sharon Tate was the daughter of Lt. Col. Paul Tate, a career US Army intelligence officer, and Nancy Sinatra is, of course, the daughter of Francis Albert Sinatra, whose known associates included Lucky Luciano, Meyer Lansky, Sam Giancana, Carlo Gambino, Goetano Luchese and Joseph Fishetti (a cousin of Al Capone).

Frank Sinatra was also a client of hairdresser-to-the-stars Jay Sebring, as was Henry Fonda, who at one time, strangely enough, lived in the guesthouse at 10050 Cielo Drive. Yet another client of Sebring's was the next Young Turk on our list, Warren Beatty, whose father, Ira Owens Beaty, was ostensibly a professor of psychology. Young Warren, however, spent all of his early years living in various spooky suburbs of Washington, DC. He was born in Richmond, Virginia, in 1937, after which his father moved the family to Norfolk, Virginia, which I think I may have mentioned is home to the world's largest Naval facility (the reason for that, by the way, is that Norfolk is the gateway to the nation's capital). The family later relocated to Arlington, Virginia, home of the Pentagon, where Warren attended high school and where he was known on the football field as—recalls John Phillips, who attended a rival school—"Mad Dog" Beaty.

Ira Beaty's relatively frequent relocations, and the fact that those relocations always seemed to land the family in DC suburbs that are of considerable significance to the military/intelligence community, would tend to indicate that Warren's dad was something other than what he appeared to be—though that is, of course, a speculative assessment. But if Ira Beaty was on the payroll of some government entity, working within the psychology departments of various DC-area universities, then it wouldn't require a huge leap of faith to further speculate about what type of work he was doing, given the wholesale co-opting of the field of psychology by the MK-ULTRA program and affiliated projects.

The next Young Turk up for review is the one who went on to become arguably the most acclaimed actor of his generation, Mr. Jack Nicholson. Before getting to him though, let's take a look at a biographical sketch of serial killer Ted Bundy as presented by Wikipedia: "Bundy was born at the Elizabeth Lund Home for Unwed Mothers in Burlington, Vermont. The identity of his father remains a mystery… To avoid social stigma, Bundy's grandparents Samuel and Eleanor Cowell claimed him as their son; in taking their last name, he became Theodore Robert Cowell. He grew up believing his mother Eleanor Louise Cowell to be his older sister. Bundy biographers Stephen Michaud and Hugh Aynesworth state that he learned Louise was actually his mother while he was in high school. True crime writer Ann Rule states that it was around 1969, shortly following a traumatic breakup with his college girlfriend."

Now if we just change a few names here and there, we come up with an accurate bio of Jack Nicholson, which goes something like this: Nicholson was born at some indeterminate location to an underage, unwed showgirl. The identity of his father remains a mystery… To avoid social stigma, Nicholson's grandparents John Joseph and Ethel Nicholson claimed him as their son; in taking their last name, he became John Joseph Nicholson, Jr. He grew up believing his mother June Francis Nicholson to be his older sister. Reporters state that he learned June was actually his mother in 1974, when he was thirty-seven years old. By then, June had been dead for just over a decade, having only lived to the age of forty-four.

It is said that Nicholson was born at St. Vincent's Hospital in New York City, but there is no record of such a birth either at the hospital or in the city's archives. As it turns out, Jack Nicholson has no birth certificate. Until 1954, by which time he was nearly an adult, he did not officially exist. Even today, the closest thing he has to a birth certificate is a 'Certificate of a Delayed Report of Birth' that was filed on May 24, 1954. The document lists John and Ethel Nicholson as the parents and identifies the location of the birth as the Nicholsons' home address in Neptune, New Jersey.

It appears then that there is no way to determine who Jack Nicholson really is. He has told journalists that he has no interest in identifying who his father was, nor, it would appear, in verifying his mother's identity. What we do know is that the nucleus of the 1960s clique known as the Young Turks (and Turkettes) was composed of the following individuals: the nephew of a Bonesman; the son of an OSS officer; the son of a Naval intelligence officer; the daughter of that same Naval intelligence officer; the daughter of an Army intelligence officer; the daughter of a guy who openly associated with prominent gangsters throughout his life; the son of a possible spychologist; and a guy whose early years are so shrouded in mystery that he may or may not actually exist.

I should probably also mention here that Henry Fonda scored his first acting gig through Dorothy "Dody" Brando, the director of a local theater and the mother of Jack Nicholson's future neighbor, Marlon Brando. Being the small world that it is, Marlon's mom happened to be a good friend of Hank's mom, Elma Fonda. Truth be told, the families had likely had close ties for a long time. *A very long time*. The ancestors of both Marlon Brando and Henry Fonda, you see, arrived in New York at nearly the same time, roughly three-and-a-half centuries ago.

Marlon Brando is in a direct line of descent from French Huguenot colonists Louis DuBois and Catharine Blanchan DuBois (and no, I'm not making that up), who arrived in New York from Mannheim, Germany, circa 1660 and promptly founded New Rochelle. Other descendents of DuBois include former US Senator Leverett Saltonstall, former Massachusetts Governor and Council on Foreign Relations member William Weld, former California First Lady Maria Shriver, and quite likely US

Presidents Jimmy Carter and Zachary Taylor.

Henry Fonda, on the other hand, is a direct descendent of Jellis Douw Fonda and Hester Jans Fonda, Dutch colonists who arrived in New York circa 1650 and settled near what would become Albany. The Fondas had sailed out of Friesland, Netherlands, on a ship dubbed the *Valckenier*, which happened to be co-owned by a very wealthy Dutchman by the name of Jan-Baptist van Rensselaer. And Mr. van Rensselaer, as those who have been paying attention in class will recall, happened to be from the bloodline that would one day produce a guy by the name of David van Cortland Crosby.

It would appear then that Peter Fonda kind of owed Crosby that Triumph motorcycle that he gave him back in the sixties, what with David's ancestors having been cool enough to give Peter's ancestors a lift over to the New World and all.

Let's wrap up this chapter with a quick review of what we have learned about the people populating Laurel Canyon in the mid-to-late 1960s. We know that one subset of residents was a large group of musicians who all decided, nearly simultaneously, to flood into the canyon. The most prominent members of this group were, to an overwhelming degree, the sons and daughters of the military/intelligence community. We also know that mingled in with them were the young stars of Hollywood, who also were, to an astonishing degree, the sons and daughters of the military/intelligence community. And, finally, we know that also in the mix were scores of military/intelligence personnel who operated out of the facility known as Lookout Mountain Laboratory.

I've got to say that, given the relatively small size of Laurel Canyon, I'm beginning to wonder if there was any room left over for any normal folks who might have wanted to live the rock'n'roll lifestyle.

9

WEIRD SCENES INSIDE THE CANYON

"There were a lot of weird people around. There was one guy who had a parrot called Captain Blood, and he was always scrawling real cryptic things on the inside walls of my house—Neil Young's too." Joni Mitchell, describing the Laurel Canyon scene toward the end of the 1960s

As it turns out, Laurel Canyon was large enough to accommodate at least a few more strange characters. Two of them were guys named Jerry Brown and Mike Curb. Actually, it's unclear whether Curb ever lived there, but he was very much a part of the scene in the 1960s and 1970s.

Edmund G. "Jerry" Brown, Jr. had a decidedly conservative upbringing. Born into a politically well-connected Republican family, Jerry devoted his early years to pursuing a career in the Jesuit priesthood. His father, a very active Republican Party operative, was an aspiring politician who initially had no luck in getting himself elected to public office. He ultimately succeeded though in capturing the coveted California Governor's seat in 1959, and he did it by employing a simple gimmick: he changed the "R" after his name to a "D" and was reborn as a Democrat. He held the seat for two terms, through to 1967, and then was replaced by a guy who had employed the exact same trick in reverse: he had replaced the "D" after his name with an "R."

That gentleman, of course, was Ronald Wilson Reagan, and he would govern the state through 1975, after which he handed the reins back over to the Brown family, this time to the younger Edmund Brown, who, like his dad, had decided that he was a liberal Democrat. In fact, according to the consensus opinion of the media at the time, Jerry was an ultraliberal extremist whose politics fell somewhere to the left of Fidel Castro and Che Guevara.

During Laurel Canyon's glory years, Jerry Brown resided in a home on Wonderland Avenue, within easy walking distance of the Wonderland death house and the homes of numerous singers, songwriters and musicians. His circle of friends in those days, as was widely reported, included the elite of Laurel Canyon's country-rock stars, including Linda Ronstadt (with whom he was long rumored to be romantically involved), Jackson Browne and the Eagles.

Another figure making the rounds in Laurel Canyon during the same period of time was Mike Curb. At various times, Curb worked as a musician, composer, recording artist, film producer and record company executive. He also had the notable distinction of serving as the musical director on the notorious documentary feature *Mondo Hollywood*, which ostensibly chronicled the emerging Laurel Canyon/Sunset Strip scene. Filmed from 1965 through 1967, the film featured representatives from the Manson Family (Bobby Beausoleil), the Manson Family's victims (Jay Sebring), the freak troupe (Vito, Carl, Szou and Godo), and Laurel Canyon's musical fraternity (Frank Zappa, along with his future wife, Gail Sloatman). It also featured acid guru Richard Alpert, Jerry Brown's father, Pat Brown, and Princess Margaret, a good friend to John Phillips and a rumored lover of Mick Jagger.

As noted, *Mondo Hollywood* was the creation of filmmaker Robert Carl Cohen. It turns out he, too, had an interesting background for a guy destined to capture on film the emerging 1960s countercultural scene. In 1954, Cohen served in the US Army Signal Corps. The following year, he was on assignment to NATO. Following that, he served in Special Services in Germany. The very next year, he produced, directed, edited and narrated a documentary short entitled *Inside Red China*. Two years later, he wore all the same hats for a documentary entitled *Inside East*

Germany. A few years later, he put together another documentary entitled *Three Cubans*, a decidedly unsympathetic take on the Cuban revolution.

Cohen has proudly proclaimed that he was the first (or at least among the first) Western journalists/filmmakers allowed to enter and shoot footage in each of those ostensibly communist countries. In the case of Cuba (and likely the others as well), he did so under the direct sponsorship of the US State Department. Mr. Cohen would like us to believe that he undertook those projects as nothing more than what he outwardly appeared to be—an independent filmmaker—but a great deal of naiveté is required to believe that a private citizen not working for the intelligence community could land such assignments.

The *Los Angeles Times*, in a lengthy critique of Cohen's counterculture film published on October 1, 1967, offered up some curious and long-forgotten facts about the documentary feature: "I cannot presume to guess how much real life pokes through *Mondo Hollywood*. In violent, sudden ways, real death did intrude during the eighteen months of picture making. Three people were killed in automobile crashes. One of them was Jayne Mansfield, whose brief appearance—as a celebrity in a montage of premieres—remains in the final movie. The other two, including a bona fide philosopher, were scheduled to appear but died before filming. A writer who was to play himself died of drugs. A three-year-old child died of a fall through a trap door, although he and his parents are still in the picture. A pilot, who had agreed to fly in the film, died of a midair crash. In all, six people—none of them old, none of them in bed—died before *Mondo Hollywood* was released. Several buildings were also destroyed in this impermanent place. And the Goodyear blimp, which provided the platform for some spectacular aerials in the finished movie, crashed one day after its chores were done."

It appears then, that, just as in the real Laurel Canyon, Cohen's celluloid version masked a backdrop of violence, destruction and death.

As for Mike Curb, in addition to his work on *Mondo Hollywood*, he also served as 'song producer' on another key countercultural film of the era, *Riot on the Sunset Strip* (which, despite its title, had little to do with the actual event). In addition, Curb scored a slew of cheaply produced biker flicks, including *The Wild Angels*, *Devil's Angels*, *Born Losers*, *The Savage Seven* and *The Glory Stompers*. Along the way, he worked alongside many of Laurel Canyon's 'Young Turks,' including Peter Fonda and Dennis Hopper.

It is unclear whether the paths of Jerry Brown and Mike Curb crossed during Laurel Canyon's glory years, but as fate would have it, they were to cross in 1979 in Sacramento, California. Mike Curb, as it turns out, after being encouraged by Ronald Reagan to venture into politics, was elected to serve as Governor Jerry Brown's second-in-command. And so it was that these two men, both veterans of the 1960s Laurel Canyon scene, came to sit side-by-side in the governor's mansion, one sporting a "D" after his name and the other an "R."

Governor Brown, however, had little time to spend on actually governing the state of California. Tossing his hat into the presidential ring, he spent much of his time out of the state, working the campaign trail. That allowed Lieutenant Governor Curb, as acting governor of the state, to sign into law a withering array of reactionary legislation that was very far removed from what the people of California thought they were getting when they elected 'Governor Moonbeam.' This arrangement allowed the nominal liberal of the Laurel Canyon tag-team, Jerry Brown, to keep his hands clean even as his administration moved far away from its originally stated goals—and even as he made little effort to rein in his underling.

Brown and Curb weren't the only up-and-coming politicos who managed to find living space in Laurel Canyon back in the day. In July 2008, the venerable *Washington Post* revealed that a former reporter and novelist by the name of Alex Abella had "written a history of RAND, which was founded more than sixty years ago by the Air Force as a font of ideas on how that service might fight and win a nuclear war with the USSR… Abella focuses on Albert Wohlstetter, a mathematical logician turned nuclear strategist who was the dominant figure at RAND starting in the early 1950s and whose influence has extended beyond his death in 1997 into the current Bush administration… Wohlstetter epitomized what became known as the 'RAND approach'—a relentlessly reductive, determinedly quantitative analysis of whatever problem the independent, non-profit think tank was assigned, whether the design of a new bomber or improving public education in inner-city schools."

The RAND Corporation is a lot of things, but "independent" has never been one of them. Also in the *Post*'s book review, we find that "it was not so much Wohlstetter himself as his acolytes… who had a major impact in Washington." Most of those acolytes need little introduction: former Assistant Secretary of Defense Richard Perle (who once dated Wohlstetter's daughter); former US ambassador, President of the World Bank, and Deputy Secretary of Defense Paul Wolfowitz; former US ambassador to Iraq, Afghanistan, and the UN, Zalmay Khalilzad; and Andrew Marshall, who has served as the director of the United States Department of Defense's Office of Net Assessment for forty years and who served as a mentor to Dick Cheney, Donald Rumsfeld and Paul Wolfowitz.

In the latter half of the 1950s and into the early 1960s, while Wohlstetter was with the RAND Corporation and also serving as a professor at UCLA (and while his wife Roberta also worked as an analyst for RAND), Albert and his followers—the men who would serve as the architects of US foreign policy during the George W. Bush administration—regularly met in a heavily wooded neighborhood in Los Angeles known as Laurel Canyon. As Gregg Herken wrote in his review of Abella's book, "those bright, eager and ambitious young men… had sat cross-legged on the floor with their mentor at his stylish house in Laurel Canyon." Just as, not far away, Vito's eager young followers sat cross-legged with their mentor. And just as, also not far away, Charles Manson's eager young followers would sit cross-legged on the floor with their mentor.

Paul Young, writing in *LA Exposed*, revealed that, in the late 1960s and early 1970s, there was another curious group calling Laurel Canyon home: "The most infamous male madam [throughout LA's sordid history] would have to be Billy Bryars, the wealthy son of an oil magnate, and part-time producer of gay porn. Bryars was said to have a stellar group of customers using his 'brothel' at the summit of Laurel Canyon. In fact, some have claimed that none other than J. Edgar Hoover, the founder and chief executive officer of the FBI, was one of his best clients… when Bryars fell under police scrutiny in 1973, allegedly for trafficking in child pornography, officers obtained a number of confessions from some of his hustlers, and some of them identified Hoover and [Clyde] Tolson as 'Mother John' and 'Uncle Mike,' and claimed that they had serviced them on numerous occasions."

It appears then that the top law-enforcement officials in the nation were also a part of the Laurel Canyon scene, along with various other unnamed persons of prominence. And we also find, perhaps not too shockingly at this point, that Laurel Canyon was a portal of child pornography.

In January of 2011, the *San Francisco Chronicle* reported on the passing of “Ron Patterson, the flamboyant, free-spirited creator of the Renaissance and Dickens fairs,” who had “died Jan. 15 at a friend’s house in Sausalito after an illness. He was eighty.” As staff writer Carolyn Jones noted in the article, Patterson’s creation “was sort of a medieval precursor to Burning Man.” And Burning Man is, of course, a rather explicitly occult ritual first performed on the summer solstice of 1986 and now performed every summer in Nevada’s Black Rock Desert before an audience of over 50,000.

“In the beginning, the Renaissance Faire was an experiment in Mr. Patterson’s backyard. In the early 1960s, Mr. Patterson and his wife, Phyllis, who were both interested in theater and art, began hosting children’s improvisational theater workshops at their Laurel Canyon (Los Angeles County) home.” One naturally wonders whether aspiring thespian and golden child Godo Paulekas (originally cast, it will be recalled, to play the lead in Kenneth Anger’s *Lucifer Rising*) was involved in those workshops. In any event, there is something decidedly creepy about children’s workshops being hosted in a small, tight-knit community that was home to a child pornography ring and more than its fair share of pedophiles.

Yet another curious character to take up residence in Laurel Canyon was producer Paul Rothchild, who played a key role in shaping the sound of both the Doors and Love. In June 1981, *Sports Illustrated* publisher Philip Howlett penned a short piece to introduce readers to new writer Bjarne Rostaing: “Born in Lincoln, N.Y., Rostaing grew up in various places in Connecticut, where he attended what he recalls as an even dozen schools. ‘I got my B.A. and master’s in English from the University of Connecticut,’ he says. ‘Then I did part of a Ph.D. at the University of Washington before going into the Army Intelligence Corps in 1959. We had Paul Rothchild, who later became producer for the Doors and Janis Joplin, to give you some idea of what the unit was like.’”

It was, in all likelihood, like countless other intelligence units designed to churn out shapers of public opinion, whether actors, novelists, newsmen, or, in this case, sportswriters and producers of popular music. It is quite shocking, of course, to learn that the handler of two of Laurel Canyon's most influential and groundbreaking bands had a background in intelligence work. Apparently the search is still on for *anyone* of any prominence in the Laurel Canyon scene who *didn't* have direct connections to the intelligence community.

Bjarne Rostaing would, perhaps not surprisingly, develop his own indirect connections to the Laurel Canyon music scene. His most notable contribution to the field of literature was penning the mass-market paperback version of *Phantom of the Paradise*, the campy tale of a Phil Spector-inspired music producer who had sold his soul to the devil for fame and fortune and who subsequently manipulated a disfigured young singer/songwriter into likewise selling his soul. The theatrical version, released on Halloween day 1974 and carrying the tagline "he sold his soul for rock'n'roll," starred Laurel Canyon's own Paul Williams as Swan, the demonic producer who surrounds himself with nubile young women eager to do his bidding. Williams, who lived on Lookout Mountain alongside numerous other singer/songwriters, also scored the film.

It is, I'm sure, entirely coincidental that two guys who emerged from the same intelligence unit in the early 1960s would follow such curious career paths—one, Paul Rothchild, becoming what many on the scene in those days would have described as a demonic rock music producer, and the other, Bjarne Rostaing, penning a novel about a demonic rock music producer.

There was one other person who, while he never took up residence in Laurel Canyon, had a profound influence on the scene. That guy was Augustus Owsley Stanley III, the premier LSD chemist of the hippie era. No one—not Ken Kesey, not Richard Alpert, not even Timothy Leary—did more to 'turn on' the youth of the 1960s than Owsley. Leary and his cohorts may have captured the national media spotlight and created public awareness, but it was Owsley who flooded the streets of San Francisco and Laurel Canyon with consistently high quality, inexpensive, readily available acid. By most accounts, he was never in it for the money and he routinely gave away more of his product than he sold. What then was his motive? According to Martin Lee and Bruce Shlain, writing in *Acid Dreams*, "Owsley cultivated an image as a wizard-alchemist whose intentions with LSD were priestly and magical."

Owsley is revered by many as something of an icon of the 1960s counterculture—a man motivated by nothing more than an altruistic desire to 'turn on' the world. But his rather provocative background and family history suggest that his intentions may not have necessarily been so altruistic.

Augustus Owsley Stanley III was the son, naturally enough, of Augustus Owsley Stanley II, who served as a military officer during WWII aboard the *USS Lexington* and thereafter found work in Washington, DC as a government attorney. He raised his son primarily in Arlington, Virginia. Young Owsley's grandfather was Augustus Owsley Stanley, who served as a member of the US House of Representatives from 1903 through 1915, as the Governor of Kentucky from 1915 through 1919, and as a US Senator from 1919 through 1925; Senator Stanley's father, a minister with the Disciples of Christ, served as a judge advocate with the Confederate Army. Owsley's mother was a niece of William Owsley, who also served as a Governor of Kentucky, from 1844 through 1848, and who lent his name to Owsley County, Kentucky.

During Owsley III's formative years, he attended the prestigious Charlotte Hall Military Academy in Maryland, but was reportedly tossed out in the ninth grade for being intoxicated. Not long after that, at the tender age of fifteen, Owsley voluntarily committed himself to St. Elizabeth's Hospital in the nation's capitol. St. Elizabeth's, it should be noted, had a far more sinister name upon its founding in 1855: the Government Hospital for the Insane. He remained confined there for treatment for the next fifteen months. During that time, his mother, in keeping with one of the recurrent themes of this saga, passed away.

Owsley apparently resumed his education following his curious confinement, but he had reportedly dropped out of school by the age of eighteen. Nevertheless, he apparently had no trouble at all gaining acceptance to the University of Virginia, which he attended for a time before enlisting in the US Air Force in 1956, at the age of twenty-one. During his military service, Owsley was an electronics specialist, working in radio intelligence and radar. After his stint in the Air Force, Owsley set up camp in the Los Angeles area, ostensibly to study ballet.

During that same time, he also worked at Pasadena's Jet Propulsion Laboratory, which was undoubtedly the primary reason for his move to LA In 1963, Owsley moved once again, this time to Berkeley, California, which just happened to be ground-zero of the budding anti-war movement. He may or may not have briefly attended UC Berkeley, which is where he allegedly cribbed the recipe for LSD from the university library. Owsley soon began cooking up both Methedrine and LSD in a makeshift bathroom lab near the campus of the university. On February 21, 1965, that lab was raided by state narcotics agents who seized all his lab equipment and charged Stanley with operating a meth lab. As Barry Miles recounted in *Hippie*, "Berkeley was awash with speed and Owsley was responsible for much of it."

Nevertheless, Owsley walked away from the raid unscathed, and, with the help of his attorney, who happened to be the vice-mayor of Berkeley, he even successfully sued to have all his lab equipment returned. He quickly put that equipment to work producing some four million tabs of nearly pure LSD in the mid-1960s.

Immediately after the raid of February 1965, Owsley and his frequent sidekicks, the Grateful Dead, moved down to the Watts area of Los Angeles, of all places, to ostensibly conduct 'acid tests.' The group rented a house that was conveniently located right next door to a brothel, curiously paralleling the *modus operandi* of various intelligence operatives who were (or had been) involved in conducting their own 'acid tests.' The band departed the communal dwelling in April 1965. It was a fortuitous departure as it turned out, since just a few months later, Watts exploded in violence that left thirty-four corpses littering the streets.

Owsley had been with the Dead from the band's earliest days, as both a financial backer and as their sound engineer. He is credited with numerous electronic innovations that changed the way live rock music was presented to the masses—and likely not in a good way, given that his work as a sound technician undoubtedly drew heavily upon his military training.

In 1967, Owsley unleashed on the Haight a particularly nasty hallucinogen known as STP. Developed by the friendly folks at Dow Chemical, STP had been tested extensively at Frank Zappa's former home, the Edgewood Arsenal, as a possible biowarfare agent before being distributed to hippies as a recreational drug. Owsley reportedly obtained the recipe from Alexander Shulgin, a former Harvard man who developed a keen interest in psychopharmacology while serving in the US Navy. Shulgin worked for many years as a senior research chemist at Dow and later worked very closely with the DEA.

In 1970, Owsley began serving time after a conviction on drug charges. That time was served, appropriately enough, at Terminal Island Federal Correctional Institution, the very same prison that had, just a few years earlier, housed both Charlie Manson and Flying Burrito Brothers' road manager Phil Kaufman. A few years later, it would also be home to both Timothy Leary and his alleged nemesis, G. Gordon Liddy. After his release, Owsley continued to work as a sound technician, eventually graduating to a new medium: television.

Owsley eventually moved to Australia in the 1980s, becoming a naturalized citizen in 1996. On March 12, 2012, the aging chemist was reportedly killed in an automobile accident near his Queensland home when his car veered off the road in a storm and plowed into some trees.

10

HELTER SKELTER IN A SUMMER SWELTER RETURN OF THE DEATH LIST

"Everybody was experimenting and taking it all the way. It opened up a negative force of energy that was almost demonic." Frank Mazolla, editor of the film Performance

IT IS NOW, SAD TO SAY, TIME TO ADD SOME MORE NAMES TO THE EVER-growing Laurel Canyon Death List. The first new name is Mr. Brian Jones of the Rolling Stones, who purportedly drowned without assistance in his home swimming pool on July 3, 1969, at the age of twenty-seven. (Jim Morrison would allegedly die precisely two years later, also at the age of twenty-seven.) Just three days after Jones' tragic death, the Stones, with the Hell's Angels providing security, played a previously scheduled concert in Hyde Park, footage of which appears in Kenneth Anger's *Invocation of My Demon Brother*. Despite being the founder of the Stones and being widely regarded as the main creative force within the band, Jones had been unceremoniously dumped by the group on June 9, less than a month before his death. He was replaced just four days later by Mick Taylor, who in turn was later replaced by Ron Wood. It would later be claimed that Jones was booted from the band due to his chronic substance abuse problems, although Keith Richards' legendary drug intake never seemed to pose a problem for the group.

The Rolling Stones were not, to be sure, a Laurel Canyon band, but they did spend a considerable amount of time there and they were very closely tied to the scene. As Barney Hoskyns writes in *Hotel California*, "In the summer of 1968 the English band was flirting heavily with Satanism and the occult… and spending a lot of time in Los Angeles." A lot of time, that is, in and around Laurel Canyon—and during that time, Mick Jagger was involved in two occult-drenched, Crowley-influenced film projects, Kenneth Anger's *Lucifer Rising* and Donald Cammell's *Performance*.

Jagger was the first musical superstar tapped by Anger to compose a soundtrack for his *Lucifer Rising* project, which at the time was to star Mansonite Bobby Beausoleil. Anger would later solicit a soundtrack for the long-delayed film project from Led Zeppelin's Jimmy Page, the proud owner of one of the world's largest collections of Aleister Crowley memorabilia, including Crowley's notorious Boleskine estate on the shores of Scotland's Loch Ness. When ultimately released, however, the film featured a soundtrack by neither Jagger nor Page, but rather one that was composed, recorded and arranged inside a prison cell by convicted murderer Bobby Beausoleil. The footage that Anger had shot of Beausoleil, meanwhile, ended up in a different film, the aforementioned *Invocation of My Demon Brother*. Costarring in *Lucifer Rising*, as Osiris, was *Performance* writer and co-director Donald Seaton Cammell, who happened to be a good friend of Roman Polanski.

Cammell, who some described as a master manipulator, was the son of Charles Richard Cammell, who happened to be a close friend and biographer of notorious occultist Aleister Crowley. Donald himself was, or at least claimed to be, Crowley's godson. Cammell's decidedly Crowleyian film was originally to star his good friend Marlon Brando, but the role ultimately went to actor James Fox. Brando and Cammell did, however, find time to write a novel together.

Speaking of Brando, he somehow found himself at the center of a curious string of deaths that began on May 16, 1990, when Marlon's son Christian gunned down Dag Drollet, the father of his sister Cheyenne's unborn child, in Marlon's Laurel Canyon-adjacent home. Though convicted, Christian got off with a rather light sentence, thanks primarily to Marlon having had his own daughter, the prosecution's potential star witness, locked away in a mental institution in Tahiti, safe from subpoena. A few years later, on April 14, 1995, twenty-five-year-old Cheyenne was found swinging from the end of a rope, her death unsurprisingly ruled a suicide. The next year, Christian Brando was released from prison and promptly became involved with a woman by the name of Bonnie Lee Bakley, who caught a bullet to the head on May 4, 2001, while in the company of new hubby Robert Blake (her tenth husband). Marlon dropped dead next, on July 1, 2004, though his death wasn't particularly shocking given that he was getting on in years. His home was promptly purchased by good friend and neighbor Jack Nicholson, who immediately announced plans to bulldoze it, declaring the structure to be decrepit. He never did though explain why a man wealthy enough to own his own Polynesian island was purportedly living in a derelict home. A few years later, on January 26 of 2008, Christian Brando dropped dead at the relatively young age of forty-nine.

Returning now, after that brief digression, to our discussion of Donald Cammell's *Performance*, we find that Mick Jagger was cast to play the role of 'Turner,' a debauched rock star (which, obviously, was a real stretch for Mick). James Fox played 'Chas,' a violent organized-crime figure. He was trained for the role by David Litvinoff, a real-life crime figure and associate of the notoriously sadistic Kray brothers. Litvinoff reportedly sent Fox to the south of London for a couple of months to hang out with his gangster buddies; when he returned, according to various accounts, Fox had literally *become* the violent character he portrayed in the film. After completing work on the project, Fox reportedly suffered a massive nervous breakdown, suspended his acting career and withdrew from public view for over a decade.

Recruited to create the film's soundtrack was Bernard Alfred "Jack" Nitzsche, an occultist and the son of a supposed 'medium.' Nitzsche, along with Sonny Bono, had begun his music career as a lieutenant for gun-brandishing producer Phil Spector (Nitzsche was one of the architects of Spector's famed "wall of sound"). Nitzsche was also a familiar presence on the Laurel Canyon scene, collaborating with such noted bands and artists as Buffalo Springfield, Neil Young, Randy Newman, Michelle Phillips, the Turtles, Captain Beefheart, Carole King, David Blue, Ricky Nelson and Tim Buckley.

Nitzsche's *Performance* soundtrack was composed, according to author Michael Walker, "in a witch's cottage in the canyon." (I'm not exactly sure what a "witch's cottage" is, but it's nice to know that Laurel Canyon had one.) One of the musicians hired by Nitzsche to play on that soundtrack was Lowell George, who we will also be adding to the Laurel Canyon Death List. For now, let's add Donald Cammell to the list, since on April 24, 1996, he became yet another of the characters in this story to catch a bullet to the head, and yet another to allegedly die by his own hand. David Litvinoff, *Performance*'s Director of Authenticity, reportedly also committed suicide. Nitzsche died of a heart attack on August 25, 2000. A few years earlier, he had made an appearance on primetime television—as a gun-brandishing drunkard arrested on the streets of Hollywood on *Cops*.

The next name on the Death List is Steve Brandt, who was a close friend of both John Phillips and one of the victims at 10050 Cielo Drive. Brandt allegedly overdosed on barbiturates in late November of 1969, some three-and-a-half months after the Manson murders. In the days and weeks following those murders, Brandt had placed numerous phone calls to the LAPD. Those calls became increasingly frantic in nature, and Brandt became increasingly fearful that his own life might be in jeopardy. He soon decided to put some distance between himself and LA, so he headed for New York City. On the night of his death, according to Phillips' autobiography, Brandt attended a Rolling Stones concert at Madison Square Garden, where he attempted to run on stage but was repelled and beaten by a security guard. He then went home and, according to official mythology, overdosed.

It seems obvious that if someone had information that desperately needed to be made public, and if it was the kind of information that authorities had, say, willfully failed to act upon, and if the information was of the type that could not be taken to the mainstream media, and if the year was 1969 and the mass communication technology that we now take for granted did not yet exist, then grabbing the mic at a Stones concert at Madison Square Garden might just be one of the most effective means of disseminating that information. Brandt failed in what may have been an attempt to do just that, and he turned up dead just hours later.

Next up is David Blue, another of the forgotten talents of Laurel Canyon. Blue was born Stuart David Cohen on February 18, 1941; shortly thereafter, his father was deployed overseas. According to David, his dad "came hobbling home on crutches and stayed depressed all his life" (not unlike, it seems fair to say, the family situation of our old friend Phil Ochs). David and his slightly older half-sister, Suzanne, endured a hellish existence consisting of alternating periods of rages and silences. Suzanne got out first, only to end up busted for prostitution in New York City in 1963. Suzanne's next stop, just a few months later, was at the county morgue.

David, meanwhile, had gotten out of the house as well, by dropping out of school and joining the US Navy at the age of seventeen—just as Lenny Bruce had done. And, like Jimi Hendrix, Blue was purportedly booted out of the service, after which he decided to become a folk singer. His first album was released in 1966. A later effort was produced by Graham Nash, who also, as previously noted, produced a record for the forgotten talent Judee Sill, with whom Blue had much in common. Like Sill, David Blue was one of the Laurel Canyon stars who never quite shone as brightly as they should have. And also like Sill, Blue was one of the first few acts signed by David Geffen's fledgling Asylum label. Finally, as with Judee, David was long forgotten by the time of his death, on December 2, 1982, when the forty-one-year-old Blue dropped dead while jogging in New York's Washington Square Park. The former rising star (and occasional actor) lay in the morgue for three days before anyone noticed that he was missing.

Next on the list is Ricky Nelson, who—like Brandon DeWilde, Kenneth Anger, Mickey Dolenz and Van Dyke Parks—began his Hollywood career as a child actor. He was the son, as everyone surely knows, of America's favorite 1950s TV mom and dad, Ozzie and Harriet Nelson. Ricky began his rock'n'roll career in 1957, when he was just seventeen. By 1962, he had scored no fewer than thirty top forty hits, trailing only superstars Elvis Presley and Pat Boone.

Speaking of Elvis, he arrived in LA in 1956 to begin what would prove to be a prolific film career that would continue throughout the 1960s and would result in the inexcusable creation of nearly three dozen motion pictures. In the early years of his film career, Elvis reportedly spent his off-hours hanging out with his two best Hollywood pals—a couple of young roommates and Canyonites named Dennis Hopper and Nick Adams. In later years, Presley's backing musicians—considered to be among the best session musicians in the business—were in high demand among the Laurel Canyon crowd. Elvis' bass player, for example, can be heard on some of the Doors' tracks. The entire band was recruited by "Papa" John Phillips to play on his less-than-memorable solo project. Mike Nesmith's critically acclaimed post-Monkees project, the First National Band, featured Presley's band as well. Gram Parsons also hired Elvis' band to back him up on the two solo albums he recorded at what proved to be the twilight of his life and career.

Those two solo efforts by Parsons, by the way, prominently featured the voice of a young singer/guitarist named Emmylou Harris, a relatively late arrival to the canyon scene. Harris was the daughter—brace yourselves here for a real shocker, folks—of a career US Marine Corps officer. As with so many other characters in this story, she grew up in the outlying suburbs of Washington, DC, primarily in Woodbridge, Virginia—which happens to be the home of an imposingly large Army research and development installation known as the Harry Diamond Laboratories Woodbridge Research Facility.

In 1972, during the time that Parsons and Harris were recording and performing together, columnist Jack Anderson revealed that, "Experiments to control human behavior with science fiction devices are being conducted secretly at the Army's high-fenced Harry Diamond Laboratories in Washington… Ultimately, human guinea pigs will be used to test the devices. Although a classified memorandum in our hands specifies the tests are for riot and civil disturbance control, the memo admits the general purpose is 'short-time-span control of human behavior.'" It sounds as though Emmylou Harris probably fit right in with the rest of the Laurel Canyon crowd.

But here I seem to have digressed from our discussion of Elvis, which was, if I remember correctly, itself a digression from our discussion of Ricky Nelson. Given though that he had only peripheral connections to Laurel Canyon, I guess I don't really have much more to say about Elvis other than that he reportedly died on August 16, 1977, the victim of a drug overdose at the young age of forty-two. As with Morrison, however, there have been persistent rumors that Elvis didn't actually die at all, but rather reinvented himself to escape from the fishbowl. Also as with Morrison, Elvis apparently had a keen interest in the occult, particularly the writings of Madame Blavatsky.

As for Nelson, in the mid-1960s he successfully shed his 'teen idol' image and emerged as a respected pioneer of the country-rock wave that Canyonites Jackson Browne, Linda Ronstadt and the Eagles would soon ride to dizzying heights of commercial success. One future member of the Eagles, Randy Meisner, played in Nelson's Stone Canyon Band. As the name of the band would seem to imply, Nelson had moved to one of the many neighboring canyons, but he had previously lived on Mt. Olympus in Laurel Canyon and he and his band were very much a part of the early country-rock scene that included bands like the Byrds, Poco, the Flying Burrito Brothers and the First National Band.

Nelson was killed on New Year's Eve, 1985, in a rather unusual plane crash. According to Nelson's Wikipedia entry, "the original NTSB investigation long ago stated that the crash was probably due to mechanical problems. The pilots attempted to land in a field after smoke filled the cabin. An examination indicated that a fire originated in the right hand side of the aft cabin area at or near the floor line. The passengers were killed when the aircraft struck obstacles during the forced landing; the pilots were able to escape through the cockpit windows and survived." Nothing unusual about that, I suppose. Shit happens.

For the final eight years of his life, Nelson lived in a rather unique home. In 1941, swashbuckling actor Errol Flynn had purchased an eleven-and-a-half-acre chunk of the Hollywood Hills just off Mulholland Drive and had a sprawling home built to his specifications. According to Laurie Jacobson and Marc Wanamaker, writing in *Haunted Hollywood*, the mansion featured "several mysterious secret passageways, and more than a few peepholes." The home appeared to have been designed to allow for surreptitious observation of guests in the home's numerous bedrooms. It is claimed that Flynn incorporated the unusual design features so that he could satisfy his own voyeuristic impulses. Researcher/writer Charles Higham, however, has cast Flynn as a Western intelligence asset, and if true, then it is far more likely that the home was built not so much for Flynn's personal pleasure but rather as a means of compromising prominent public figures.

After Nelson's death, the palatial home stood vacant until a curious incident took place; referring once again to Jacobson and Wanamaker, we find that "A gang broke in and murdered a girl in the living room. Then a mysterious fire burned half the house. The ruins were torn down." Like I said, shit happens.

Moving on to the next name on the list, we find that on December 31, 1943—precisely forty-two years before the plane crash that would claim the life of Ricky Nelson—Henry John Deutschendorf, Jr., better known as John Denver, was born in Roswell, New Mexico. A few years later, the town of Roswell would make a name for itself and become something of a tourist destination. But that is not really the focus here, though it should be noted that Henry John Deutschendorf, Sr. might well have known a little something about that incident, given that he was a career US Air Force officer assigned to the Roswell Army Air Field (later renamed the Walker Air Force Base), which was likely the origin of the object that famously crashed in Roswell.

After spending his childhood being frequently uprooted, as did many of our cast of characters, Denver attended Texas Tech University in the early 1960s. In 1964, he apparently heard the call of the Pied Piper and promptly dropped out of school and headed for LA. Once there, he joined up with the Chad Mitchell Trio, the group from which Jim McGuinn had recently departed to co-found the Byrds. By November 1966, Denver was front-and-center at the so-called 'Riot on the Sunset Strip,' alongside folks like Peter Fonda, Sal Mineo and a popular husband-and-wife duo known as Sonny and Cher.

A decade later, in the latter half of the 1970s, Denver could be found working alongside a spooky chap by the name of Werner Erhard, creator of so-called 'EST' training. After graduating from the training program, Denver penned a little ditty that became the organization's theme song. In 1985, Denver testified alongside our old friend Frank Zappa at the PMRC hearings. Twelve years later, in autumn of 1997, Denver died when his self-piloted plane crashed soon after taking off from Monterey Airport, very near where the Monterey Pop Festival had been held thirty years earlier. The date of the crash, curiously enough, was one that we have stumbled across before: October 12.

The next name we need to add to the list is one that has already worked its way into this narrative a time or two, Sonny Bono. As previously noted, Bono began his Hollywood career as a lieutenant for reclusive murderer Phil Spector. In the early 1960s, Bono hooked up with an underage Cherilyn Sarkisian LaPierre to form a duo known first as Caesar and Cleo, and then as Sonny and Cher. The pair were phenomenally successful, first on the Sunset Strip and later on television. Bono, of course, ultimately gave up the Hollywood life and found work in a different branch of the federal government: the US House of Representatives.

On January 5, 1998, Sonny Bono died after purportedly skiing into a tree. At the time, he occupied a seat on the House Judiciary Committee, which was about to come to sudden prominence with the investigation and impeachment of President Clinton. The ball was already rolling by the time of Bono's death, and on January 26, 1998, just three weeks after the alleged skiing incident, Clinton held his now-notorious press conference. By that time, Bono's seat on the panel had been set aside for his robowife.

Let's turn our attention now to Phil Hartman, the *Saturday Night Live* alumnus who was murdered in his Encino home on May 28, 1998. That much is not in dispute. Decidedly less clear is the answer to the question of who it was that actually shot and killed Hartman. The official story holds that it was his wife Brynn, who shortly thereafter shot herself—with a different gun, naturally, and reportedly after she had left the house and then returned with a friend, and *after* the LAPD had arrived at the home. There is a very strong possibility, however, that both Phil and his wife were murdered, with the true motive for the crime covered up by trotting out the tired but ever-popular murder/suicide scenario.

In most people's minds, of course, Phil Hartman is not associated with the Laurel Canyon scene of the late 1960s and early 1970s. But as it turns out, Hartman did indeed have substantial ties to that scene. To begin with, during the time that Jimi Hendrix lived in LA (in the spacious mansion just north of the Log Cabin on Laurel Canyon Boulevard), Hartman worked for him as a roadie. Soon after that, Phil found work as a graphic artist and he quickly found himself much in demand by the Laurel Canyon rock royalty. In addition to designing album covers for both Poco and America, Hartman also designed a readily recognizable rock symbol that has endured for over forty years: the distinctive CSN logo for Crosby, Stills & Nash.

Hartman was also the brother of record executive/club proprietor John Hartmann, who was an associate of David Geffen. Hartmann had begun his career as a protégé of Elvis handler Colonel Tom Parker, who, in the 1940s, had worked with cowboy actor/Log Cabin owner Tom Mix. And Tom Mix, in turn, had frequently used the Spahn Movie Ranch as a filming location. That same ranch later became the home of Charles Manson and his girls, including Lynette “Squeaky” Fromme, who happened to have been a high school chum of Phil Hartman. Curiously enough, the Log Cabin’s guesthouse, also known as the Bird House, was designed and built by architect Robert Byrd, who also, according to one report, designed the house at 10050 Cielo Drive where Sharon Tate and friends were murdered, *and* the house at 5065 Encino Avenue where Phil Hartman was murdered.

Phil Hartman was not the only Laurel Canyon luminary who had past school ties to Squeaky Fromme; Mark Volman, co-lead vocalist for the Turtles, knew Ms. Fromme from their days together in Westchester where they attended Orville Wright Junior High School.

During the days of the Manson clan’s stay at the now infamous Spahn Ranch, there was a similarly dilapidated movie set that was located right across the road. Its name, being the small world that it is, was the Wonderland Movie Ranch. Speaking of Wonderland, let’s turn our attention next to four individuals whose names will probably not be familiar to most readers: Ronald Launius, Billy Deverell, Barbara Richardson and Joy Miller. All died on July 1, 1981, all by bludgeoning, and all at the same location: 8763 Wonderland Avenue in Laurel Canyon. All were members of a gang that trafficked heavily in cocaine and occasionally in heroin.

The leader of the group was Ron Launius, who reportedly embarked on his criminal career, and established his drug connections, while serving for Uncle Sam over in Vietnam, which is also where he began to build his carefully crafted reputation as a merciless, cold-blooded killer. At the time that he became a murder victim himself, Launius was a suspect in no fewer than twenty-seven open homicide investigations. He was also a drug supplier to various members of the Laurel Canyon aristocracy, including Chuck Negron of Three Dog Night.

Victim Billy Deverell was Launius’ second-in-command, and victim Joy Miller was Billy’s girlfriend as well as the renter of the Laurel Canyon drug den. Victim Barbara Richardson was the girlfriend of another member of the gang, David Lind, who conveniently was not at the home at the time of the mass murder. That could well have been due to the fact that Lind was, according to various rival drug dealers, a police informant for both the Sacramento and Los Angeles Police Departments. He was also a member of the ultra-violent prison gang known as the Aryan Brotherhood (as is, by several accounts, Bobby Beausoleil). Lind, who met Launius when the two had served time together, is alleged to have overdosed in 1995, though it is widely believed that he actually went into the federal witness protection program.

A year-and-a-half earlier, another drug dealer with close connections to the music scene was brutally murdered in his Laurel Canyon home, though his death was dismissed by the LAPD as a suicide. Lawrence Eugene "Larry" Williams was a singer, songwriter, musician, producer and actor born on May 10, 1935, in New Orleans, Louisiana. He achieved some success in the late 1950s as a solo artist before being convicted and sent to prison on drug dealing charges in 1960. Following a three-year prison stint, he returned to the music business, working frequently with longtime friend Little Richard. He also continued to spend a good deal of time in the violent world of drug trafficking and prostitution.

Williams had no shortage of fans among the Laurel Canyon and British Invasion bands. The Beatles scored a hit with his Dizzy Miss Lizzy and the Rolling Stones covered his She Said Yeah. In the late 1960s and the early 1970s, Williams also tried his hand at acting, including a co-starring role alongside O.J. Simpson in 1974's *The Klansman*. He failed to achieve significant success in the entertainment business; his lavish lifestyle, however, indicated that he did very well for himself as a pimp and drug trafficker.

On January 7, 1980, Williams was found dead in his Laurel Canyon home with a gunshot wound to his head and his blood splattered all over his garage walls. Though ruled a suicide, no one who was familiar with Larry's violent lifestyle was much convinced of that. In a bizarre turn of events, another blues singer named Martin Allbritton appropriated his name before Williams' body was even cold. He continues to this day to claim that he is the real Larry Williams and even tours and performs under the name "Big" Larry Williams.

The next name on the list is Brian Cole, bass player for the Association, a Laurel Canyon folk-rock band known for the hit songs Along Comes Mary and Never My Love. The Association was formed by Terry Kirkman and Jules Alexander; Kirkman had formerly played in a band with Frank Zappa, while Alexander was fresh from a stint in the US Navy. Jerry Yester, a guitarist and keyboardist with the band, was formerly with the Modern Folk Quartet, a band managed by Zappa manager Herb Cohen and produced by Byrds manager Jim Dickson. Guitarist Larry Ramos had formerly been with the New Christy Minstrels, which also produced Gene Clark of the Byrds.

On June 16, 1967, Cole and his band were the first to take the stage at the Monterey Pop Festival, followed by such Laurel Canyon stalwarts as the Byrds, Buffalo Springfield, and the Mamas and the Papas. Five years later, on August 2, 1972, Cole was found dead in his Los Angeles home. The cause of death was reportedly a heroin overdose. Cole was one month shy of his thirtieth birthday at the time of his death.

Another new name on the Laurel Canyon Death List is Lowell George, the founder and creative force behind the critically acclaimed but largely obscure band known as Little Feat. George was the son of Willard H. George, a famous furrier to the Hollywood movie studios. Lowell's first foray into the music world was with a band known as the Factory, which cut some demos with a guy by the name of Frank Zappa. The Factory evolved into the Fraternity of Man, though without George, who had left to serve as lead vocalist for the Standells. George returned, however, to join the band in the studio for the recording of their second album. By that time, as we have already learned, the Fraternity of Man had taken up residence in the Log Cabin, alongside Carl Franzoni and his fellow freaks.

George next joined up with Frank Zappa's Mothers of Invention, though his tenure there was destined to be a short one; like so many others, Lowell left embittered by Zappa's dictatorial approach to making music and his condescending treatment of his bandmates. After parting company with Zappa, George formed Little Feat, a band composed mostly of musicians from the Fraternity of Man sessions. Lowell, who is credited with being a pioneer of the use of slide guitar in rock music, served as singer, songwriter and lead guitarist for the band, which released its debut album in 1970. Though well regarded within the industry and by critics, the band's albums failed to sell and George ultimately announced the demise of the band and recorded a solo album. After playing a show on June 29, 1979, at George Washington University in support of that album, George was found dead in an Arlington, Virginia, hotel room, very near the Pentagon. Cause of death was said to be a massive heart attack, though George was just thirty-four years old at the time.

According to Barney Hoskyns, writing in *Hotel California*, "A regular social stop-off for George was a Laurel Canyon house on Wonderland Avenue belonging to Three Dog Night singer Danny Hutton. A drop-in den of debauchery, the Hutton house featured a bedroom with black walls and a giant fireplace. Lowell would often swing by and entertain the likes of Brian Wilson or Harry Nilsson." Nilsson and his regular drinking buddy, John Lennon, were frequent guests at this "den of debauchery."

Former Beatle John Lennon is, to be sure, one of the most famous names to be found on the Laurel Canyon Death List. Lennon also has the distinction of being one of the few Laurel Canyon alumni whose cause of death is acknowledged to have been homicide. The ex-Beatle, of course, never lived in the canyon, but he was a fixture on the Sunset Strip and at various Laurel Canyon hangouts, frequently in the company of Harry Nilsson.

Lennon was, as is fairly well known, murdered on December 8, 1980, in front of New York's Dakota Apartments, which had been portrayed by filmmaker Roman Polanski in his film *Rosemary's Baby* as a den of Satanic cult activity. Not long before Lennon's murder, assassin Mark David Chapman had approached occult filmmaker Kenneth Anger and offered him a gift of live bullets. Just days after Lennon was felled, Anger's long-delayed final cut of *Lucifer Rising* made its New York debut, very near the bloodstained grounds of the Dakota Apartments.

Precisely three weeks after Lennon's death, Tim Hardin—Canyonite, folk musician, close associate of Frank Zappa, onetime tenant in Lenny Bruce's Laurel Canyon-adjacent home, and former United States Marine—died of a reported heroin and morphine overdose in Los Angeles. At the time of his death, on December 29, 1980, Hardin was just thirty-nine years old, one year younger than Lennon.

Eight years later, on July 18, 1988, singer/songwriter/keyboardist Christa Paffgen, better known as Nico, died of a reported cerebral hemorrhage in Ibiza, Spain, under unusual circumstances. After achieving some level of fame as a vocalist with the Velvet Underground, Nico had left the Warhol stable and migrated west to Laurel Canyon, where she formed a bond with a then-unknown singer-songwriter named Jackson Browne, who contributed a few songs to Nico's 1967 debut album, *Chelsea Girl*. The title was derived from New York's Chelsea Hotel, where Devon Wilson took a dive and where the persona of John Train murdered the persona of Phil Ochs.

11

DETOURS RUSTIC CANYON & GREYSTONE PARK

"By the time Manson shifted base from Rustic Canyon to an old ranch in Chatsworth, he'd begun formulating the notion that he and his followers had to prepare themselves for a race war with Black America." Barney Hoskyns, writing in Hotel California

We must now temporarily relocate to Rustic Canyon, which lies about nine miles west of Laurel Canyon in the Hollywood Hills. It was there, in Lower Rustic Canyon, that Beach Boy Dennis Wilson lived in the late 1960s in what Steven Gaines described in *Heroes and Villains* as "a palatial log-cabin-style house at 14400 Sunset Boulevard that had once belonged to humorist Will Rogers." The expansive home sat on three lushly landscaped acres.

In the summer of 1968, as is fairly well known, Charlie Manson and various members of his entourage moved in with Wilson. Considerably less well known is that Charles "Tex" Watson, for reasons that have never really been explained, was already living there. As many as two-dozen members of Manson's clan spent the entire summer there, with Wilson picking up the tab for all expenses. The Mansonites, mostly nubile young women, regularly drove Wilson's expensive cars and demolished at least one of them. Dennis didn't seem to mind; he was busy recording Manson in brother Brian's home studio and inviting fellow musicians, like Neil Young, over to the house to hear Charlie perform. (Young was so impressed that he urged Mo Ostin to sign him.)

Dennis would later claim that he had destroyed all the Manson demo tapes, that he remembered almost nothing of his time with Charlie and the Family, and that he certainly knew nothing about the Tate and LaBianca murders, which were committed in the summer of 1969, about a year after the Family had vacated the Rustic Canyon residence. At some point in time though, Wilson had a change of heart and decided that maybe he did indeed know a little something about the murders. "I know why Charles Manson did what he did," said Dennis. "Someday, I'll tell the world. I'll write a book and explain why he did it." That book, however, was never written and Wilson's story, if indeed he had one, was never told. Instead, Dennis Wilson drowned under questionable circumstances on December 28, 1983, in the marina where his beloved yacht had previously been docked.

But this story isn't really about Dennis Wilson; it's about Charlie Manson and his alleged motive for allegedly ordering the Tate and LaBianca murders. According to the 'Helter Skelter' scenario popularized by lead prosecutor Vincent Bugliosi, who later penned a wildly disinformational book on the JFK assassination, Manson was hoping to spark an apocalyptic race war. It is said that Charlie believed that America's black population would prevail over whitey, but that, having won the war, the victors would be incapable of governing themselves. And that, alas, is when Charlie and his retinue would emerge from the shadows to take command.

According to Barney Hoskyns, Manson began formulating his race war theory during his stay in Rustic Canyon. If true, then Charlie appears to have been following in the footsteps of a long-forgotten former Rustic Canyon guru—one who preceded him by a few decades, and who, like Manson, had a certain fondness for swastikas.

Just to the north of Dennis Wilson's former home is a vast wilderness of undeveloped canyon lands. Lower Rustic Canyon soon gives way to Upper Rustic Canyon, and all signs of human civilization abruptly vanish. The land remains wild and undeveloped save for an old, unpaved fire road that winds along the summit between Rustic Canyon and a neighboring canyon. That road is closed to the public and vehicle traffic is nonexistent. Aside from an occasional hiker wandering in from nearby Will Rogers State Park, there is nary a human to be seen.

The farther in one hikes, the more wild and untamed it becomes. Along with the sights of the city, the sounds and the scents quickly disappear as well. Within a very short time, it is surprisingly easy to forget that one is still within the confines of the city of Los Angeles. And in its fall splendor, the canyon looks nothing like the Los Angeles that most Angelenos know and don't quite love. It is beautiful… serene… pastoral. And yet, filled with mist and heavily overgrown, it is also vaguely ominous.

If one knows where to look, there is a narrow concrete stairway that is accessible from the fire road. That stairway descends down to the floor of the canyon, and it is a very, very long descent. Five hundred and twelve steps long, to be exact. As one makes the descent, this stairway, which seems to go on forever, seems wildly out of place. With time to kill on the way down, one may find oneself pondering how many man-hours it took to set forms for 512 poured concrete steps, and how truckloads of concrete were poured out here in the middle of nowhere.

Reaching the canyon floor, one finds that, though the native flora has struggled mightily to reclaim the land, remnants of a past civilization can be seen everywhere. Some structures remain largely intact—a nearly 400,000 gallon, spring-fed reservoir serving a sophisticated potable water system; a concrete-walled structure that once housed twin electrical generators capable of lighting a small town; more concrete stairways, hundreds of steps long, each snaking its way up the canyon walls; weathered livestock stables; professionally graded and paved roads; countless stone retaining walls; an incinerator; concrete foundations and skeletal remains of former dwellings; the rusting carcass of a Mansonesque VW bus; and, at the former entrance, an imposing set of electronically controlled, wrought iron security gates.

It is the kind of place that seems tailor-made for Charlie and his Family—remote and secluded, yet accessible by the Family's custom-built dune buggies; with just enough crumbling infrastructure to provide rudimentary shelter for the clan; and with elaborate security provisions, including sentry positions and a formerly electrified fence completely encircling the fifty-acre compound (as well as, by some reports, an underground tunnel complex). And it was located just a short hike up the canyon from the place that Charlie Manson called home in the summer of 1968.

While exploring this place, obvious questions begin to come to mind: Who developed this remote portion of the canyon, in what feels like the middle of nowhere? The goal appears to have been to create a hidden and completely self-sustaining community, and an extraordinary amount of money was invested in infrastructure development… but why?

Very few Angelenos know of the curious ruins in Rustic Canyon, and fewer still know the history of those ruins. Every now and then though, a local reporter will pay a visit and the story will make a one-time appearance in a local publication, briefly casting some light on a bit of the hidden history of Los Angeles. In May 1992, Marc Norman of the *Los Angeles Business Journal* was one such reporter. According to Norman, "County records show 'Jessie Murphy, a widow,' purchasing fifty-plus acres north of [Will] Rogers' property in 1933, but the owners were actually named Stephens—Norman, an engineer with silver-mining interests, and Winona, the daughter of an industrialist and a woman given to things supernatural. Local lore has it that Winona fell under the spell of a certain unnamed gentleman."

This trio, along with unnamed others, began "a ten-year construction program costing $4 million… starting with a water tank holding 375,000 gallons and a concrete diesel-powered generator station with foot-thick walls—both of which are still visible. The hillsides were terraced for orchards, an electrified fence circled the boundaries and a huge refrigerated locker was built into a hillside… The one thing Murphy/Stephens couldn't seem to get right was their main house. The first architect hired was Welton Becket, but there are also sketches by Lloyd Wright, and in 1941, Paul Williams drafted blueprints for a sprawling mansion with twenty-two bedrooms, a children's dining room, a gymnasium, pool and a workshop in the basement."

Thirteen years later, in September 2005, Cecelia Rasmussen of the *Los Angeles Times* added a few details to the story: "Southern California has been the cradle to many odd cults, credos, utopias and dystopias. Among the most mysterious are the ruins of a Rustic Canyon enclave once known as Murphy Ranch… on [Rustic Canyon's] secluded and woodsy floor stand the eerily burned-out and graffiti-scarred remains of concrete and steel structures, underground tunnels and stairways leading from the top of the canyon to the bottom… Behind the locked and rusted wrought iron entrance gates and flagstone wall stand the traces of a small community that had the capacity to grow its own food, generate its own electricity and dam its own water… The hillsides were terraced with 3,000 nut, citrus, fruit and olive trees, and fitted with water pipes, sprinklers and an elaborate greenhouse. A high barbed-wire fence discouraged intruders… research indicates that it could have been home to up to forty local Nazis from about 1933 to 1945… armed guards patrolled the canyon dressed in the uniform worn by Silver Shirts, a paramilitary group modeled after Hitler's brownshirts… A man known through oral histories only as 'Herr Schmidt' supposedly ruled the place and claimed to possess metaphysical powers."

Herr Schmidt, needless to say, was the gentleman whose spell Winona Stephens fell under. According to Marc Norman, Schmidt "convinced her that the coming world war would be won by Germany, that the United States would collapse into years of violent anarchy and that the chosen few (read: the Stephenses, the certain gentleman and other true believers) would need a tight spot in which to hole up, self-sufficient, until the fire storm had passed. Then they could emerge not only intact but, thanks to the superiority of their politics, rulers of the anthill and, not incidentally, the origin of its new population."

Sound familiar?

Murphy Ranch also reportedly featured a 20,000 gallon diesel fuel tank, livestock stables, and dairy and butchering facilities. Along both sides of the compound "rise eight crumbling, narrow stairways of at least 500 steps each," as the *LA Times* noted. Those stairways apparently led to sentry positions high on the canyon walls (for the record, they are not actually crumbling, though most are overgrown with impenetrable vegetation). During Murphy Ranch's years of operation, nearby residents reportedly complained of late-night military exercises and the sounds of live gunfire echoing through the canyons.

To summarize then, it appears that the city of Los Angeles was home to a very secret, militarized Nazi compound that was in operation both before and during WWII. Remnants of that blacked-out chapter of LA history can be seen to this day, though few make the trek. The purpose of the decaying compound was to ride out an anarchic, apocalyptic war, so that the chosen few could emerge as the rulers of the new world. It was all so very Mansonesque, and, ironically enough, Manson and his crew spent an entire summer camped out at a home that was within a two-mile hike of this curious place.

In the late 1940s, after the close of the war, Murphy Ranch was reportedly converted into an artists' colony. Architect Welton Becket, who designed several of the structures at the ranch, would go on to design two of LA's landmark structures: the Capitol Records building and the Music Center. In 1973, the property once known as Murphy Ranch was purchased by the city of Los Angeles. As far as is known, the city has no plans to reopen the facility.

"Van Cortlandt and Untermyer functioned as outdoor meeting sites for the cult." Maury Terry, writing in The Ultimate Evil, in reference to the cult behind the 'Son of Sam' murders

NESTLED IN BETWEEN THE MOUTHS OF LAUREL AND COLDWATER Canyons lies a large estate known as Greystone Park, home of the long-vacant Greystone Mansion. The home, and the grounds it sits on, is said to be, to this day, the most expensive private residence ever built in the city of Los Angeles. Constructed in the 1920s, the home and grounds carried the then-unfathomable price tag of $4 million. (By way of comparison, the Lookout Inn, built a decade-and-a-half earlier, was projected to cost from $86,000–$100,000; in other words, the single-family residence cost at least forty times what the lavish seventy-room inn cost—and the inn required bringing infrastructure and building materials to a remote mountaintop.)

The massive, 46,000 square-foot edifice sits amid twenty-two lavishly landscaped acres of prime Hollywood Hills real estate. This rather ostentatious home was built by uberwealthy oil tycoon Edward L. Doheny as a wedding present for his son, Edward "Ned" Doheny, Jr. If that plotline sounds vaguely familiar, it is probably because Edward Doheny was the inspiration for Upton Sinclair's *Oil*, and thus for the homicidal

Daniel Plainview character in *There Will Be Blood* (some of the interior shots near the end of that film, of expansive, marble-floored rooms, appear to have been shot in the real Greystone).

Upon the home's completion, in September 1928, young Ned Doheny and his new bride moved into the humble abode. Within months, the home would be bloodstained; soon after, it would be permanently abandoned.

Poor Ned, you see, was found dead in the cavernous home on February 16, 1929. Near him lay the lifeless body of his assistant/personal secretary, Hugh Plunkett. Both men had been shot. Despite an inordinately long delay in reporting the deaths, and an admission that the bodies had been moved prior to the arrival of police, who were called only after the family doctor and numerous relatives, all of whom arrived at the home before the LAPD, no formal inquest was ever conducted and the case was written off in less than forty-eight hours as a murder/suicide arising from a gay lovers' quarrel. Despite an unlikely lack of fingerprints on the gun, Plunkett was said to be the triggerman and the media quickly went into a frenzy playing up the scandalous homosexuality angle and portraying young Plunkett as positively demented.

It is anyone's guess whether or not the two really were gay lovers, but it matters little; the rest of the story was almost certainly a work of fiction. In reality, both men were likely murdered as part of the massive cover-up/damage-control operation that followed the disclosure of the Harding-era Teapot Dome scandal, which the Doheny family, as it turns out, was very deeply immersed in. Both Ned Doheny and Plunkett had been scheduled to testify before a Senate investigating committee, as was Doheny's father, one of the wealthiest men in the world at the time. Due to manufactured public sympathy for the grieving father, however, the congressional investigation was shelved.

News reports of the tragedy contained no mention of the victims' deep involvement in the scandal and the tired murder/suicide scenario was trotted out because, as is seen so often in more modern times, if the alleged perpetrator is already dead, it pretty much eliminates the need for things like an investigation and trial.

Some forty years after those gunshots rang out in the opulent Greystone Mansion, a new Ned Doheny, scion of the very same Doheny oil clan, joined the ranks of the Laurel Canyon singer-songwriters club. Like fellow Canyonites Terry Melcher and Gram Parsons, Doheny was viewed by many as a pampered ‘trust-fund kid.’ His closest circle of friends included country-rockers Jackson Browne, J.D. Souther and Glen Frey. In addition to recording his own solo albums (his self-titled debut was released in 1973), Doheny contributed to albums by such Laurel Canyon superstars as Frey, Browne, Don Henley, Linda Ronstadt and Graham Nash.

Strangely enough, New York City once had a large estate known as Greystone as well. That Greystone was donated to the city as parkland, and it thereafter became known as Untermyer Park—the same Untermyer Park identified by Maury Terry as one of the two principal ritual sites used by the Process faction behind the ‘Son of Sam’ murders. The other site used by the cult was Van Cortlandt Park, named for Jacobus Van Cortlandt, a former Mayor of New York and one of David Van Cortlandt Crosby’s forefathers. Another of Crosby’s forefathers lent his name to Schuyler Road, which happens to run along the western boundary of the Greystone estate in the Hollywood Hills.

I have no idea what, if anything, any of that means, but I thought it best that I toss it into the mix.

12

RIDERS ON THE STORM
THE DOORS

"By that, I mean, 'Get me a lead singer. He's got sort of an androgynous blonde hair, very pretty. We need a guitar player, sort of hatchet-faced, wears a hat, plays very fast, very dramatic. He must be very dramatic. Get me a pound of bass player, pound of drummer'… they're making little cardboard cutouts. They hire a producer, they hire writers… And in the current stuff now, they don't even bother getting people to play. Don't bother with that guitar player, bass player, drummer—nonsense… The people in those bands can't write, play, or sing." David Crosby, describing the synthetic, manufactured nature of today's rock bands

AT THE VERY BEGINNING OF THIS JOURNEY, IT WAS NOTED THAT JIM Morrison's story was not "in any way unique." That, however, is not exactly true. It is certainly true that Morrison's family background did not differ significantly from that of his musical peers, but in many other significant ways, Jim Morrison was indeed a most unique individual, and quite possibly the unlikeliest rock star to ever stumble across a stage.

Morrison essentially arrived on the scene as a fully developed rock star, complete with a backing band, a stage persona and an impressive collection of songs—enough, in fact, to fill the Doors' first few albums.

How exactly he reinvented himself in such a radical manner remains something of a mystery, since before his sudden incarnation as singer/songwriter, James Douglas Morrison had never shown the slightest interest in music. None whatsoever. He certainly never studied music and could neither read nor write it. By his own account, he never had much of an interest in even listening to music. He told one interviewer that he "never went to concerts—one or two at most." And before joining the Doors, he "never did any singing. I never even conceived of it." Asked near the end of his life if he had ever had any desire to learn to play a musical instrument, Jim responded, "Not really."

So here we had a guy who had never sang, who had "never even conceived" of the notion that he could open his mouth and make sounds come out, who couldn't play an instrument and had no interest in learning such a skill, and who had never much listened to music or been anywhere near a band, even just to watch one perform, and yet he somehow emerged, virtually overnight, as a fully formed rock star who would quickly become an icon of his generation. Even more bizarrely, legend holds that he brought with him enough original songs to fill the first few Doors' albums. Morrison did not, you see, do as other singer/songwriters do and pen the songs over the course of the band's career; instead, he allegedly wrote them all at once, before the band was even formed. As Jim once acknowledged in an interview, he was "not a very prolific songwriter. Most of the songs I've written I wrote in the very beginning, about three years ago. I just had a period when I wrote a lot of songs."

In fact, all of the good songs that Morrison is credited with writing were written during that period—the period during which, according to rock legend, Jim spent most of his time hanging out on the rooftop of a Venice apartment building consuming copious amounts of LSD. This was just before he hooked up with fellow student Ray Manzarek to form the Doors. Legend also holds, strangely enough, that that chance meeting occurred on the beach, though it seems far more likely that the pair would have actually met at UCLA, where both attended the university's rather small and close-knit film school.

In any event, the question that naturally arises (though it does not appear to have ever been asked of him) is: How exactly did Jim "The Lizard King" Morrison write that impressive batch of songs? I'm certainly no musician myself, but it is my understanding that just about every singer/songwriter across the land composes his or her songs in essentially the same manner: on an instrument—usually either a piano or a guitar. Some songwriters, I hear, can compose on paper, but that requires a skill set that Jim did not possess. The problem, of course, is that he also could not play a musical instrument of any kind. How then did he write the songs?

He would have had to have composed them, I'm guessing, in his head. So we are to believe then that a few dozen complete songs, never heard by anyone and never played by any musician, existed only in Jim Morrison's acid-addled brain. Anything is possible, I suppose, but even if we accept that premise, we are still left with some nagging questions, including the question of how those songs got *out of* Jim Morrison's head. As a general rule of thumb, if a songwriter doesn't know how to read and write music, he can play the song for someone who does and thereby create the sheet music (which was the case, for example, with all of the songs that Brian Wilson penned for the Beach Boys). But Jim quite obviously could not play his own songs. So did he, I don't know, maybe hum them?

And these are, it should be clarified, *songs* that we are talking about here, as opposed to just lyrics, which would more accurately be categorized as *poems*. Because Jim, as is fairly well known, was quite a prolific poet, whereas he was a songwriter only for one brief period of his life. But why was that? Why did Morrison, with no previous interest in music, suddenly and inexplicably become a prolific songwriter, only to just as suddenly lose interest after mentally penning an impressive catalog of what would be regarded as rock staples? And how and why did Jim achieve the accompanying physical transformation that changed him from a clean-cut, collegiate, and rather conservative-looking young man into the brooding sex symbol who would take the country by storm? And why, after a few years of adopting that persona, did Jim transform once again, in the last year or so of his life, into an overweight, heavily bearded, reclusive poet who seemed to have lost his interest in music just as suddenly and inexplicably as he had obtained it?

It wasn't just Morrison who was, in retrospect, a bit of an oddity; the entire band differed from other Laurel Canyon bands in a number of significant ways. As *Vanity Fair* once noted, "The Doors were always different." All four members of the group, for example, lacked previous band experience. Morrison and Manzarek, as noted, were film students, and drummer John Densmore and guitarist Robby Kreiger were recruited by Manzarek from his Transcendental Meditation class—which is, I guess, where one goes to find musicians to fill out one's band. That class, however, apparently lacked a bass player, so they did without—except for those times when they used session musicians and then claimed that they did without.

Anyway, the point is that none of the four members of the Doors had any real band credentials. Even a band as contrived as the Byrds, as we shall soon see, had members with band credentials. So too did Buffalo Springfield, with Neil Young and Bruce Palmer, for example, having played in the Mynah Birds, backing a young vocalist who would reinvent himself as Rick "Superfreak" James (Goldy McJohn of Steppenwolf, oddly enough, was a Mynah Bird as well). The Mamas and the Papas were put together from elements of the Journeymen and the Mugwumps. And so on with the rest of the Laurel Canyon bands.

The Doors could cite no such band lineage. They were just four guys who happened to come together to play the songs written by the singer who had never sung but who had a sudden calling and a magical gift for songwriting. And as you would expect with four guys who had never actually played in a band before, they didn't really play very well. And that is kind of an understatement. Don't take my word for it though; let's let the band's producer, Paul Rothchild, weigh in: "The Doors were not great live performers musically. They were exciting theatrically and kinetically, but as musicians they didn't make it; there was too much inconsistency, there was too much bad music. Robby would be horrendously out of tune with Ray, John would be missing cues, there was bad mic usage too, where you couldn't hear Jim at all."

As fate would have it, I have heard some audio of a young and quite inebriated Jim Morrison at the microphone, and I would have to say that not being able to "hear Jim at all" might have, in many cases, actually improved the performance. But performing poorly as a live band, of course, did not really set the Doors apart from its contemporaries. Another thing that *was* unusual about the band, however, is that, from the moment the band was conceived, the lineup never changed. No one was added, no one was replaced, no one dropped out of the band over 'artistic differences,' or to pursue a solo career, or to join another band, or for any of the other reasons that bands routinely change shape.

It would be difficult to identify another Laurel Canyon band of any longevity that could make the same claim. After their first two albums, the Byrds changed lineups with virtually every album release. Frank Zappa's Mothers of Invention were in a near-constant state of flux. Love and Steppenwolf changed lineups on a regular basis, with leaders John Kay and Arthur Lee routinely firing band members. Laurel Canyon's country-rock bands were also constantly changing shape, usually by incestuously swapping members amongst themselves.

But not the Doors. Jim Morrison's band arrived on the scene as a fully formed entity, with a name (taken from Aldous Huxley's *The Doors of Perception*), a stable lineup, a backlog of soon-to-be hit songs… and no previous experience writing, arranging, playing or performing music. Other than that though, they were just your run-of-the-mill, organic, grass roots, 1960s rock'n'roll band, albeit one with a curious aversion to political advocacy. Jim Morrison was, by virtually all accounts, a voracious reader. Former teachers and college professors expressed amazement at the breadth and depth of his knowledge on various topics, and at the staggering array of literary sources that he could accurately cite. And yet he was known to tell interviewers that he "[had]n't studied politics that much, really." But that was okay, according to drummer John Densmore, since "a lot of people at our concerts at least, they're sort of—it seems like they don't really come to hear us speak politics."

That's the way it was in the 1960s, you see; the young folks of that era just didn't concern themselves much with politics, and certainly didn't want their anti-war icons engaging in anything resembling political discourse.

During the Doors' glory days on the Sunset Strip, Morrison "struck up an intimate friendship" with Whisky-a-Go-Go owner Elmer Valentine, according to a *Vanity Fair* article published in September 2006. At the time, Valentine was also, coincidentally of course, very close to his own secretary/booking agent, Gail Sloatman, whom Jim had known since kindergarten through Naval officers' circles. Valentine was also—by pretty much all accounts, including his own—a 'made man.'

Valentine arrived in LA by way of Chicago, where he had worked as a vice cop—a decidedly corrupt vice cop. By his own account, he worked as a police captain's bagman, "collecting the filthy lucre on behalf of the captain." He also boasted that, even while working as a vice cop, his night job was "running nightclubs for the outfit—for gangsters." One "very close friend" from his days in Chicago was "Felix Alderisio, also known as Milwaukee Phil, who was arguably the most feared hit man in the country in the 1950s and sixties, carrying out at least fourteen murders for Sam Giancana and other Chicago bosses."

Valentine was ultimately indicted for extortion, though he naturally managed to avoid prosecution and conviction. Venturing out to LA circa 1960, he soon found himself running PJ's nightclub at the corner of Crescent Heights and Santa Monica Boulevards (which, as you may recall, was co-owned by Eddie Nash and was the favored hangout of early rocker/murder victim Bobby Fuller). It wasn't long though before Valentine had his very own club to run—the legendary Whisky-a-Go-Go, where numerous Laurel Canyon bands, including the Doors in the summer of 1966, served their residency.

Valentine obviously had considerable financial backing to launch his business empire and it wasn't much of a secret on the Strip where that backing came from. Frank Zappa once cryptically referred to Valentine's backers as an "ethnic organization," while Chris Hillman of the Byrds simply noted that, "whoever financed Elmer, I don't want to know."

Valentine received far more than just financial backing to launch the Whisky; he got a generous assist from the media as well. As *Vanity Fair* noted, "Within months of the Whisky's debut, *Life* magazine had written it up, Jack Paar had broadcast an episode of his post-*Tonight* weekly program from the club, and Steve McQueen and Jayne Mansfield had installed themselves as regulars." Legendary actor McQueen, it should be noted, was a former US Marine who had served in an elite unit tasked with protecting President Harry Truman's private yacht.

Turning now to the Byrds, the band that started the folk-rock revolution, we find that they were, by any reasonable assessment, an entirely manufactured phenomenon. As a fledgling band, they had any number of problems. The first and most obvious was that the band's members did not own any musical instruments. That problem was solved though when Naomi Hirschorn, better known for funding quasi-governmental projects such as the Hirschorn Museum in Washington, DC, stepped up to the plate to provide the band with instruments, amplifiers and the like. But that didn't solve a bigger problem, which was that the band's members, with the notable exception of Jim (later Roger) McGuinn, didn't have a clue as to how to actually play those instruments.

Cast to play the bass player was Chris Hillman, who had never picked up a bass guitar in his life. As he candidly admitted years later, he "was a mandolin player and didn't know how to play bass. But [the other band members] didn't know how to play their instruments either, so I didn't feel too bad about it." On drums was Michael Clarke, who had never before held a set of drumsticks in his hands but who bore a resemblance to Rolling Stone Brian Jones, which was deemed to be of more significance than actual musical ability. As Crosby co-author Carl Gottlieb recalled, "Clarke had played beatnik bongos and conga drum, but had no experience with conventional drumming."

Richie Unterberger noted in *Turn! Turn! Turn!* that the guys in the Byrds "had barely known each other before getting thrown into the studio, were still learning electric instruments, and in a couple cases had never really even played their assigned instruments at all. Actually, Michael Clarke didn't even have an instrument to start with; on his first rehearsals, and even some recording sessions, he kept time on cardboard boxes."

Gene Clark, though by far the most gifted songwriter in the band and a talented vocalist as well, could barely play his guitar and so was relegated to banging the tambourine, which was Jim Morrison's (and various non-musically inclined members of the Partridge Family's) instrument of choice as well. David Crosby, tasked with rhythm guitar duties, wasn't much better. Crosby himself admitted, in his first autobiography (does anyone really need to write more than one autobiography, by the way?), that, "Roger was the only one who could really play."

The band had another problem. With the clear exception of Gene Clark, the group was a bit lacking in songwriting ability. To compensate, they initially played mostly covers. Fully a third of the band's first album consisted of covers of Dylan songs, and nearly another third was made up of covers of songs by other folk singer/songwriters. Clark contributed the five original songs, two of them co-written with McGuinn. As for Crosby, who emerged as the band's biggest star, his only contribution to the Byrds' first album was backing vocals.

Carl Franzoni perhaps summed it up best when he declared rather bluntly that, "the Byrds' records were manufactured." The first album in particular was an entirely engineered affair created by taking a collection of songs by outside songwriters and having them performed by a group of nameless studio musicians (for the record, the actual musicians were Glen Campbell on guitar, Hal Blaine on drums, Larry Knechtel on bass, Leon Russell on electric piano, and Jerry Cole on rhythm guitar), after which the band's trademark vocal harmonies, entirely a studio creation, were added to the mix.

As would be expected, the Byrds' live performances, according to Barney Hoskyns' *Waiting for the Sun*, "weren't terribly good." But that didn't matter much; the band got a lot of assistance from the media, with *Time* being among the first to champion the new band. And they also got a tremendous assist from Vito and the Freaks and from the Young Turks, as previously discussed.

We shall return to the Byrds, and to the ubiquitous Vito Paulekas, in the next chapter. For now, I leave you with this curious little story about Byrd Chris Hillman's initial arrival in Laurel Canyon, as told by Michael Walker in *Laurel Canyon*: "In the autumn of 1964, a nineteen-year-old bluegrass adept and virtuoso mandolin player named Chris Hillman stood at the corner of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and Kirkwood Drive contemplating a FOR RENT sign on a telephone pole across from the Canyon Country Store… It didn't take him long to find [a place to stay], and, in the canyon's emerging mythos of enchanted serendipity, one presented itself as if by magic. 'This guy drives up and he says you looking for a place to rent?' Hillman recalls. 'I said yeah, and he said, Well, follow me up. It was this young guy who was a dentist. It was his parents' house, a beautiful old wood house down a dirt road—and he lived on the top, and he was renting out the bottom part. I just went, Wow, perfect. The guy ended up being my dentist for a while… It was the top of the world, a beautiful, beautiful place. I had the best place in the canyon.'"

In the Los Angeles of the 1960s, you see, it was quite common for a very wealthy person to offer exquisite living accommodations to a random, scruffy vagrant. We know this to be true because it happened to Charles Manson on more than one occasion. In any event, Chris Hillman's former mountaintop home no longer exists because, as tends to happen in Laurel Canyon, it burned to the ground on what Walker described as a "hot, witchy day in the sixties." According to Hillman, "Crosby was at my house an hour before the blaze. I can't connect it yet—where the Satan factor came into play with David—but I'm working on it."

13

EIGHT MILES HIGH AND FALLING FAST THE BYRDS

"I'd have to say that, personally speaking, Crosby was worse for the good feelings of [the local] rock'n'roll [scene] than Manson was." Terry Melcher

One of the most influential people lurking about the periphery of the Laurel Canyon scene was the Byrds' first producer, Terry Melcher. It is fairly well known that Melcher was the son of 'virginal' actress Doris Day, who was just sixteen when impregnated and seventeen when Terry was born. Melcher's father was trombonist Al Jorden, who reportedly regularly beat Day, and likely Terry as well. Jorden wasn't around for long though; his death, when Melcher was just two or three years old, was yet another Hollywood suicide.

After an equally short-lived second marriage, Doris Day married her agent and producer, Marty Melcher, who was universally regarded as one of the biggest assholes in Hollywood—and that's not an easy title to attain, given the fierce competition. Like Jorden, Melcher was well known for being a tyrannically violent and abusive man. He also reportedly embezzled some $20 million from his wife/client. On the bright side though, he did adopt and help raise Terry, who took his name.

Terry Melcher, perhaps more so than anyone else, had deep ties to virtually all aspects of the canyon scene, including the Laurel Canyon musicians, the Manson Family, the group of young Hollywood actors generally referred to as 'The Young Turks,' and the Vito Paulekas dance troupe. As it turns out, Melcher first met Vito Paulekas when Terry was still in high school in the late 1950s. As Melcher later recalled, "Vito was an art instructor. When I was in high school, we'd go to his art studio because he had naked models." A half-decade or so later, Melcher and Paulekas would, each in his own way, become key players in launching not just the career of the Byrds but the entire Laurel Canyon music scene, as well as the accompanying youth countercultural movement.

Also while still in high school, Melcher befriended Bruce Johnston, the adopted son of a top executive with the Rexall drugstore chain. While growing up on the not-so-mean streets of Beverly Hills and Bel Air, the two recorded together as singing duo Bruce and Terry. Johnston also played in a high school band with Phil Spector, who, it will be recalled, shared with Melcher (and various others in this story) the distinction of having lost a parent to an alleged act of suicide.

As has been pointed out already, it was Spector's crack team of studio musicians, dubbed the Wrecking Crew, who provided the instrumental tracks for countless albums by Laurel Canyon bands. Bruce Johnston, meanwhile, went on to become a Beach Boy, replacing Wrecking Crew member Glen Campbell, who had briefly replaced Brian Wilson after Brian abruptly decided that he no longer wanted to perform live. Brian's brother Dennis forged a close bond with Terry Melcher, as well as with Gregg Jakobson, a would-be actor and talent scout who was married to famed comedian Lou Costello's daughter.

The trio of Wilson, Melcher and Jakobson, who dubbed themselves the "Golden Penetrators" (with Wilson referring to himself rather subtly as "The Wood"), infamously forged a close bond with a musician/prophet/penetrator by the name of Charles Manson. In 1966, Melcher, along with Mark Lindsay of the band Paul Revere and the Raiders, leased and moved into the soon-to-be infamous home at 10050 Cielo Drive in Benedict Canyon. (Lindsay would later have the dubious distinction of also living for a time in that other infamous canyon death house, on Wonderland Avenue; Lindsay was also a regular visitor to the Log Cabin.) The two were soon joined by Melcher's girlfriend, actress Candice Bergen. Melcher and Bergen remained in the home until early 1969, frequently entertaining high-profile guests from both the music and film industries.

During the summer of 1968, when Charlie Manson and numerous members of his entourage, including Charles "Tex" Watson and Dean Moorehouse, were shacking up with Melcher's sidekick, Dennis Wilson, Watson and Moorehouse were known to regularly visit the Melcher/Bergen home on Cielo Drive. Charlie Manson is known to have visited the Melcher home on several occasions as well, and to have occasionally borrowed Melcher's Jaguar. Just after Melcher and Bergen vacated the home, Jakobson reportedly arranged for Moorehouse to live there briefly, before Tate and Polanski took possession in February of 1969. During Moorehouse's stay, Tex, who would later be portrayed as the leader of the Tate and LaBianca hit squads, came calling regularly. His address book would later be found to contain a phone number for a former Polanski residence.

Watson had moved out to LA from Texas in 1966 after opting to drop out of college, which those who knew him viewed as being wildly out of character. By the spring of 1968, when Charles Watson met Charles Manson at Dennis Wilson's home, Tex was the modish co-owner of Crown Wig Creations on the corner of Santa Monica Boulevard and Rodeo Drive in Beverly Hills. Through that business enterprise, he had developed extensive Hollywood contacts—contacts that came in handy when he began handling large drug transactions and large piles of cash for Charlie Manson. Tex Watson soon grew so close to Manson that, according to Ed Sanders, he was known to complain at times "that he actually thought he was Charlie."

According to *Vanity Fair*, Tex Watson was also "a regular patron of the Whisky," which isn't too surprising given that Elmer Valentine's club was well known to be a major drug trafficking site during the late 1960s. Watson's frequent sidekick Dean Moorehouse, by the way, hailed from Minot, North Dakota, identified by Maury Terry as the longtime home of a Process faction with deep ties to Offutt Air Force Base. Though it is purely speculation, it seems entirely possible that Moorehouse served as a handler for both Charlies—Manson and Watson. Perhaps tellingly, Vincent Bugliosi mentioned Moorehouse only once in his nearly 700-page treatment of the Manson case (in much the same way that David Crosby ignored Vito Paulekas in his wordy autobiography).

In the spring of 1969, the trio of Wilson, Melcher and Jakobson got close to Bobby Beausoleil as well. Jakobson made at least two trips to the Gerard Theatrical Agency to hear demo tapes that Bobby had recorded. The agency, headed by Jack Gerard, specialized in supplying topless dancers to seedy clubs, and actors and actresses for porno film shoots. Beausoleil's primary job with the agency was to deliver carloads of girls to the clubs; more than a few of those girls were members of Charlie's Family. In March of 1969, just months before he was arrested for the torture-murder of Gary Hinman, Bobby signed a songwriting contract with the agency and began recording demos.

Beausoleil also accompanied Melcher and Jakobson on at least two trips out to the Spahn Movie Ranch, once in May of 1969 and then again the next month. Jakobson was a frequent visitor to Spahn and was known to boast of having held over 100 hours of conversations with the all-knowing prophet known as Charles Manson. Gregg also lobbied NBC to shoot a documentary film about the Manson Family's 'hippie commune' and the network was for a time quite interested in the project. Along with Dennis Wilson, Jakobson also arranged for Charlie to record at an unnamed studio in Santa Monica; that session was also attended by Terry Melcher, Bobby Beausoleil and several of the Manson girls.

Lest anyone think otherwise, by the way, the Manson Family certainly had no shortage of talented musicians. Convicted murderer Charles Manson, of course, was widely viewed by his contemporaries in the canyon as a talented singer/songwriter/guitarist. So too was Bobby Beausoleil, who had jammed with Dennis Wilson, played rhythm guitar for the pre-Love lineup known as the Grass Roots, knew Frank Zappa and had visited the Log Cabin, and later composed and recorded the film score for Kenneth Anger's *Lucifer Rising*. Convicted murderer Patricia Krenwinkle was an accomplished guitarist and songwriter. Convicted murderer Steve "Clem" Grogan was a talented musician as well; he later played in the prison band assembled by Beausoleil to record the *Lucifer Rising* soundtrack. In addition, Family members Brooks Poston and Paul Watkins were accomplished musicians, and Catherine "Gypsy" Share was a virtuoso violin player as well as being a singer and occasional actress (see, for example, *Ramrodder*, costarring Bobby Beausoleil and filmed partially at—where else?—Spahn Movie Ranch).

Catherine Share is notable in other ways as well, including her unparalleled feat of raising the bar so high on parental suicides that no one else, even in Laurel Canyon, is likely to be able to clear it. Orphaned as a child when *both* biological parents purportedly committed suicide, Gypsy was adopted by a psychologist and his wife. Her adoptive mother then allegedly committed suicide as well, leaving her to be raised by her adoptive father. Share is also notable for being the oldest of Charlie's girls, nearly twenty-seven at the time of the murders (most of the others were under twenty-one, and many, including Dean Moorehouse's daughter, Ruth Ann "Ouisch" Moorehouse, were minors). Gypsy lived with Bobby Beausoleil before meeting and living with Manson, and she seemed to serve as a recruiter for both of them.

According to Ed Sanders, Gypsy Share also "arranged for Paul Rothchild, the producer of the Doors, to hear the family music." It seems as though just about everyone had an opportunity to hear the Family's music. Some of it was recorded in Beach Boy Brian Wilson's state-of-the-art home recording studio. Some was recorded by Terry Melcher and Gregg Jakobson at Spahn Ranch using a mobile recording studio. Some was recorded in Santa Monica. By some reports, some was recorded by a major Hollywood studio. Other recordings were likely made as well, though nobody really likes to talk about such things. Gregg Jakobson recorded many of his marathon conversations with Charlie, but as with the demo recordings made by Dennis Wilson, everyone likes to pretend that such recordings were lost or destroyed or never existed.

The Family was filmed at Spahn Ranch by Melcher as well. Family members also shot an extensive amount of film making 'home movies,' which some witnesses have claimed included Family orgies and ritualized snuff films. A vast amount of NBC camera equipment and film was found to be in the possession of Charlie's motley crew, all of which was claimed to be stolen. It seems likely, however, given the network's known involvement with the Family, that the equipment was provided to them so that they could film their exploits.

When not hanging out with Charlie and Tex and Bobby, Terry Melcher also found time to produce the records that first catapulted the Byrds to fame: Mr. Tambourine Man and Turn! Turn! Turn! The first, recorded in January 1965 and released a few months later, was the record that announced to the world the arrival of a new breed of music. Those early hits were created, simply enough, by borrowing from the songbooks of folk legends Bob Dylan and Pete Seeger and then playing those songs on amplified equipment. Dylan himself followed suit not long after, at the Newport Folk Festival in July 1965, much to the consternation of the gathered crowd of folkies.

In *Hotel California*, Barney Hoskyns writes that the Byrds were, from the very outset, “conceived as an electric rock’n’roll group.” What Hoskyns doesn’t really clarify though is who exactly it was that initially conceived of this hugely influential band in those terms. Surely it wasn’t the band members themselves who decided that they were going to pioneer a new musical genre, since they probably had their hands full with just learning to play their instruments. It would probably be slightly more accurate to say that the Byrds appear to have been initially conceived as an electric *folk-rock* group. By July of 1966, however, when the band released its third album, featuring the Gene Clark-penned Eight Miles High, it had morphed into something different and by doing so helped pioneer another genre of music: psychedelic rock. With the later addition of Gram Parsons and the growing influence of Chris Hillman, the Byrds would next morph into a country-rock band, thus helping to spawn that genre of music as well.

According to rock’n’roll legend, the first two Byrds to get together were James Joseph McGuinn III and Harold Eugene Clark. McGuinn hailed from Chicago, the son of best-selling authors James and Dorothy McGuinn. Considered a very talented guitarist, Jim had played with Bobby Darin, the Limeliters, and the Chad Mitchell Trio. In 1962, he left the Chad Mitchell Trio and worked for a time in New York City as a studio musician—before hearing the call that so many others seemed to hear and making his way to Los Angeles. Once there, he wasted no time hooking up with Gene Clark.

Clark had been born in Tipton, Missouri, the second-oldest in a family of thirteen siblings. An undeniably talented songwriter and vocalist, Clark cut his first record with a local rock’n’roll combo when he was just thirteen years old. He later joined the New Christy Minstrels, a vocal ensemble known during his tenure primarily for the hit song Green, Green. Like so many others, however, Gene soon found himself packing his bags for—where else?—Los Angeles, where he met up with the recently-arrived Jim McGuinn. The newly formed folk duo soon added a third voice to the mix—our old friend David Crosby, who had formerly been a vocalist with Les Baxter’s Balladeers.

Crosby brought in manager Jim Dickson, with whom he had done some solo sessions in 1963. The year before that, Dickson had produced a self-titled album for a band known as the Hillmen, featuring a young mandolin player out of San Diego named Chris Hillman. Hillman had cut his first album, with a band known as the Scottsville Squirrel Barkers, while still in high school. He was a highly regarded young bluegrass musician and was generally considered to be a virtuoso mandolin player, which I guess is why Jim Dickson cast him to play the part of the bass player in the world's first folk-rock band. And as we already know, Hillman lucked out in securing luxurious living accommodations right in the heart of what was to become the music community's epicenter, so he was all set to become a rock star.

Raised on a ranch in San Diego, Hillman had traveled alone to Berkeley when he was just fifteen, ostensibly to take private mandolin lessons. At about that same time, his father had—wait for it—reportedly committed suicide. Those two closely aligned events would, I guess, have had a profound impact on the young musician.

Hillman would ultimately become a skilled bass player and a major figure in the Laurel Canyon-spawned country-rock movement. Like many others of that bent, Hillman had been a huge fan of Spade Cooley during his formative years and he later cited Cooley as a major influence on his own musical direction. Most readers are probably not familiar with the story of the "King of Western Swing," which is kind of a shame because as stories go, it's a pretty good one, so let's digress here briefly and meet the man who was frequently cited as one of the forefathers of country-rock, and whom Brian Wilson has cited as a major influence as well.

Throughout the 1940s and 1950s, Donnell Clyde "Spade" Cooley was a popular local musician and bandleader. His weekly shows at the Redondo Beach Pier could draw as many as 10,000 appreciative fans, few of whom knew of his alcoholism, violent temper, or prior arrest for attempted rape. His popularity ultimately landed him his own local television show, *The Spade Cooley Hour*. His career, however, came to an abrupt end on April 3, 1961, when he tortured and murdered his young wife, Ella Mae Cooley, while forcing his fourteen-year-old daughter to watch in horror.

According to court transcripts, Ella Mae had been spending a considerable amount of time in the company of two men, identified as Luther

Jackson and Bud Davenport, both of whom worked in the sprawling, CIA-infested medical research facility at UCLA. On the day of her death, Ella Mae had made the rather bold decision to inform Spade that the two men had initiated her into a 'free love' cult and that she had decided to give up her family and all her possessions to join the group, which was in the process of buying land near the ocean to build and operate a private compound.

Spade Cooley's response to his wife's declaration was to brutally beat, stomp and strangle her to death, but only after repeatedly burning her with a lit cigarette. All of this was witnessed by daughter Melody, who had been told by her father that "now you're going to watch me kill this whore." After doing just that, Spade then asked his daughter if she thought that Ella Mae was really dead, adding, "Well, let's see if she is." He then proceeded to burn her lifeless body repeatedly with another lit cigarette, until he apparently was satisfied that she was indeed dead.

Unlike so many other celebrity homicide suspects, Cooley was convicted of first-degree murder and sentenced to serve a life sentence. He was sent to the rather notorious Vacaville facility where he served eight years before being offered early parole. Just before his scheduled release, he arranged a November 23, 1969, comeback concert in Oakland for which his captors had agreed to release him on a three-day pass. The concert was reportedly a huge success and it looked as though Cooley's star was about to shine once again upon his pending release from prison. But that's not quite how this story ends; instead, Cooley walked back to his dressing room right after the show and promptly dropped dead, thus ending the saga of Spade Cooley and allowing us to return to where we left off… after, that is, taking one more quick detour here to note that not long after Spade Cooley was scheduled for release, another peripheral character in this story decided that it might be a good idea to kill his wife as well. "Humble" Harve Miller was a popular DJ on LA's number one pop music station during that era, KHJ on the AM dial. During the latter half of the 1960s, Miller was yet another of the players who helped launch the careers of the Laurel Canyon bands, by being the first to get their new singles on the radio. But then he, like Cooley, killed his wife and was sent to prison. Also like Cooley, he was granted early release. But unlike Spade, Miller successfully resumed his career. And now, at long last, we can return to the Byrds.

By mid-1964, the nucleus of what would become the band had formed with the bonding of McGuinn and Clark. Between the two of them, they would provide the band with its signature twelve-string guitar sound, its two lead vocalists, and (in the early years, at least) its best songwriters. Then along came David Crosby, who added little more than harmony vocals, at least on the first two albums, but who seems to have largely hijacked the band with the help of manager Jim Dickson, who added fake bass player (but real musician) Chris Hillman. Crosby then rounded out the band by adding fake drummer Michael Clarke.

Clarke had been born Michael Dick in Spokane, Washington. At seventeen, Dick ran away from home and hitchhiked to the land of enchantment known as California, apparently becoming Michael Clarke along the way. The year was 1963. According to rock history as told by David Crosby, Clarke and Crosby met in Big Sur, which coincidentally happens to be the location of the notorious Esalen Institute (where CSNY would play some years later). A year later, the vagrant teenager with no drumming experience would find himself cast to play the role of the drummer in the band designed to be America’s answer to the Beatles. According to Crosby, Clarke’s first LA address was the home of Terry Melcher.

The band, now complete, first dubbed themselves the Jet Set and then the Beefeaters, even recording a less-than-memorable single under the latter moniker, before finally settling on the Byrds. Before the end of 1964, Jim Dickson had signed the band to a deal with Columbia Records. As Barney Hoskyns recounts in *Waiting for the Sun*, “The obvious ineptitude of Michael Clarke and shakiness of most of the others was still a problem when Jim Dickson got the band signed to Columbia in November.” Columbia assigned the new band to staff producer Terry Melcher.

That assignment, it would seem, was a rather fortuitous one given that the fledgling band’s rehearsal space just happened to be in the very same basement studio that Melcher snuck off to while in high school. Just two months after signing with Columbia, the band, or rather its surrogates, were already in the studio recording Mr. Tambourine Man, at the insistence of Jim Dickson. Despite the objections of various band members, Dickson reportedly pushed hard for the song to be the band’s first single. On March 26, 1965, just two months after pretending to lay down the instrumental tracks for *Mr. Tambourine Man*, the Byrds played their first real live show, as the first act at the refurbished and reopened Ciro's nightclub.

I wasn't there so I can't say for sure, but I'm going to go out on a limb here and guess that a band whose entire rhythm section was just learning to play their instruments probably did not put on a very compelling performance. The Byrds apparently played one other live show before the Ciro's opening, though the nature of that show appears to be in dispute (or perhaps there were two previous shows). According to Jim Dickson, "The Byrds first public gig was booked by Lenny Bruce's mother, Sally Marr. She got them a job at Los Angeles City College, noon assembly, for a half hour." According to Carl Franzoni and various others, however, it was Vito Paulekas who booked the Byrds' first live show, at a rented hall on Melrose Avenue just a day or two before the show at Ciro's.

In any event, *Mr. Tambourine Man* was released about a month after the band had its big public debut at Ciro's, and the LA music scene would never be the same again. Before long, clubs big and small were popping up all along the fabled Sunset Strip and bands were spilling out of Laurel Canyon to play them. As Terry Melcher recalled, "kids came from everywhere. It just happened. One day you couldn't drive anymore. It was, like, overnight—you couldn't drive on the Strip."

That would soon change. By the summer of 1967, the mythical Summer of Love, the club scene on the Strip was quickly dying. It had been killed, deliberately or not, by some of the key players who had created it: Terry Melcher, producer of the scene's first band; Lou Adler, business partner of club owner Elmer Valentine; and John Phillips, leader of the Mamas and the Papas. It was the show they produced, you see, the fabled Monterey Pop Festival held on June 16–18, 1967, that killed the Sunset Strip scene. The bands that had filled the clubs became, literally overnight, too big to play such intimate venues. Over the course of the next decade, Laurel Canyon bands quickly moved from clubs to concert halls to massive sports arenas. But here we are, I suppose, getting ahead of ourselves.

As for the Byrds, they carried on for a good many years, albeit with numerous personnel changes. First out was the man who many feel was the most talented member of the group, Gene Clark, who dropped out in March of 1966, just one year after the band had first taken the stage at Ciro's. Clark was also the first original Byrd to pass away, on May 24, 1991, at just forty-six years of age, reportedly due to a bleeding ulcer. Two-and-a-half-years later, on December 19, 1993, Michael Clarke died as well when his liver failed. Both deaths were attributed to chronic alcoholism.

Jim McGuinn, who remained a Byrd through numerous band line-ups, joined the Subud religious sect in 1965. Two years later, upon the advice of the cult's founder, he changed his name to Roger. A decade later, he became a born-again Christian. In a similar vein, Chris Hillman became an Evangelical Christian in the 1980s, but then later switched to the Greek Orthodox faith. Hillman played in various Byrds lineups, with Gram Parsons' Flying Burrito Brothers, and in David Geffen's failed attempt at creating a second supergroup, one known as Souther, Hillman, Furay. David Crosby, of course, left the Byrds and became one-third of David Geffen's first supergroup, Crosby, Stills & Nash. These days he primarily spends his time inseminating lesbians and occasionally reuniting with former bandmates.

Jim Dickson and Terry Melcher continued to work with some of the Byrds, particularly Gram Parsons and Chris Hillman. Melcher formed a particularly close bond with fellow 'trust-fund kid' Parsons, as did Melcher's sometime sidekick, John Phillips. Both Melcher and Phillips, of course, had ties to Charles Manson (Melcher raved about him to Ned Doheny), whose former prison buddy, Phil Kaufman, was, as already noted, Parsons' road manager. In unrelated news, Bill Siddons, the Doors' road manager, was once a paramour of Mansonite Lynette "Squeaky" Fromme.

The Family's fingerprints, it appears, can be found in nearly every nook and cranny of the Laurel Canyon scene.

14

THE GREAT SERENDIPITY
BUFFALO SPRINGFIELD

"This is going to break your heart, but much of the music you heard in the sixties and early seventies wasn't recorded by the people you saw on the album covers. It was done by me and the musicians you see on these walls… Many of these kids didn't have the chops and were little more than garage bands… At concerts, people hear with their eyes. Teens cut groups slack in concert, but not when they bought their records." Hal Blaine, longtime drummer for the Wrecking Crew, quoted in the Wall Street Journal on March 23, 2011

THE BYRDS WERE THE VERY FIRST FOLK-ROCK BAND TO TAKE FLIGHT OUT OF Laurel Canyon, and they were also the one that achieved the greatest fame, but to many discerning ears, the Sunset Strip's other folk-rock powerhouse, Buffalo Springfield, was the more talented band.

In the literature chronicling the 1960s music scene, few stories have been repeated more frequently than the legend surrounding the formation of what would later be regarded as perhaps the first 'supergroup.' All such accounts unquestioningly retell the story as though it were the gospel truth, seemingly oblivious to the improbability of virtually every aspect of the legend. And curiously, virtually every version of the story contains some form of the word "serendipity," as though everyone has been copying off the same kid's homework.

As the story goes, Stephen Stills and Richie Furay, both formerly of the Au Go-Go Singers, had recently transplanted themselves to Los Angeles after the breakup of the manufactured folkie group. Stills had been the first to relocate, in August of 1965. Furay flew out to join him in February 1966, after spending a little time working at defense contractor Pratt & Whitney, and the two set their sights on putting together a folk-rock band.

Meanwhile, up in Toronto, Neil Young and Bruce Palmer were playing in a band known as the Mynah Birds—a band fronted by an AWOL Navy man known as Ricky James Matthews, who would later morph into funkmeister/torturer/rapist Rick James, but whose real name was James Ambrose Johnson, Jr. The Mynah Birds broke up in March of 1965, just after authorities came calling on Matthews and tossed him in the Brooklyn Brig. In search of a new band, Young made the curious decision to head out to LA, for no better reason than that he had what Palmer described as "a hunch, a feeling that… Stephen Stills was in LA."

Of course, Young had no clue if Stills was in fact there, nor did he know anyone else in LA And you would think that he would have realized that, even if Stills was there, there was virtually no chance of finding some random person in a city of millions, especially when the person doing the searching had no idea how to get around the city. But no matter. Neil had a calling, so he jumped into an old hearse, of all things, recruited Palmer to ride shotgun, and the two set off on the lengthy trek to Los Angeles.

They arrived, the legend tells us, on April 1, 1966—April Fool's Day, appropriately enough—and began the search for Stills. Several days of searching yielded no results, however, and on the afternoon of April 6, the frustrated pair decided to head off to San Francisco in the hopes that maybe they would have better luck finding Stephen there. Perhaps they were going to go on a tour of all the big cities in America, in the hopes that somewhere along the way they might find Stephen Stills.

But as fate would have it, just as they were about to head out of town, Stephen Stills *found them*. As Barney Hoskyns tells the story in *Hotel California*, "Early in April 1966, Stills and Richie Furay were stuck in a Sunset Strip traffic jam in Barry Friedman's Bentley. As they sat in the car, Stephen spotted a 1953 Pontiac hearse with Ontario plates on the other side of the street. 'I'll be damned if that ain't Neil Young,' Stills said. Friedman executed an illegal U-turn and pulled up behind the hearse. One of rock's great serendipities had just occurred. Young, a lanky Canadian, had just driven all the way from Detroit in the company of bassist Bruce Palmer. They'd caught the bug that was drawing hundreds of other pop wannabes to the West Coast."

The pair had actually driven out from Toronto, not Detroit, and the hearse was a 1959 model by most accounts, and Stills and Furay were in a van rather than a Bentley, but such inconsistencies are typical of all Hollywood legends. In any event, John Einarson, in *For What It's Worth*, supplies a somewhat longer and more hyperbole-filled version of the legend: "What transpired next is no longer considered simply a chance encounter. Transcending mere fact, the events of the next few minutes have taken on mythic proportions to become, in the annals of popular culture, legendary. More than pure luck, coincidence or serendipity, at that very moment the planets aligned, stars crossed, everyone's karma turned positive, divine intervention interceded, the hand of fate revealed itself—whatever you subscribe to in order to explain the unexplained. Though each of the five participants in that moment in time tell it slightly differently, the fact remains that the occupants of the white van, individually or collectively, depending on who's retelling it, noticed the black hearse with the foreign plate heading the other direction. Once the light of recognition came on, the van hastily pulled an illegal, and likely difficult in rush hour, U-turn, maneuvering its way through the line of northbound cars, horn honking frantically all the while, to pull up behind the hearse. One of the passengers leapt out, ran up and pounded on the driver's side window of the strange vehicle, yelling to the startled travelers inside who had taken no notice of the blaring car horn directly behind them. 'Hey Neil, it's me, Steve Stills! Pull over, man!' The drivers of the two vehicles managed to find curb space or a vacant store parking lot, again depending on whose version is being related, and the five piled out to embrace and introduce one another… On April 6, 1966, in that late afternoon line of traffic, the course of popular music was altered forever."

Anyone who actually lives and drives in LA likely knows that "difficult" is not really the word to describe the feasibility of making an impromptu U-turn in rush hour traffic on the Sunset Strip; the correct word would be "impossible," which is the same word that accurately describes the likelihood of that van "maneuvering its way through the line of northbound cars," or of it finding "curb space" on Sunset Boulevard. But let's just play along and assume that Neil Young and Stephen Stills, each of whom, for some reason, had been dreaming about forming a band with the other, had a random, chance encounter on Sunset Boulevard. In that brief moment in time, a band was formed—or at least four-fifths of a band.

Retiring to the home of Barry Friedman, who would later legally change his name to Frazier Mohawk, the quartet of musicians quickly decided that their newly formed band would only perform original material, though they didn't yet actually have any original material. They did though have three singer/songwriter/guitarists on board (Furay, Young and Stills), along with a bass player (Bruce Palmer), so all that was needed was a drummer. Three days later, on April 9, 1966, they acquired one, in the form of Dewey Martin, formerly with the Dillards.

The Dillards, in another awesome bit of serendipity, had just decided to go back to their acoustic bluegrass roots, so they no longer needed a drummer. They also decided that they had no further need for a whole bunch of new electric instruments and stacks of amplifiers, so Dewey, according to legend, brought all of that with him. Because the Dillards, you know, were just going to throw it all away anyway. So now, with the stars all properly aligned, the band was not only complete but they each had shiny new electric instruments to play—and it all had magically come together in just seventy-two hours!

There was still much work to be done, of course. For one thing, they all had to familiarize themselves with those shiny new electric instruments. And they all had to learn to play together as a band. And they had to build up a repertoire of original songs. And they had to rehearse and polish those songs. But not to worry; they had, as we'll see, at least a couple of hours to work on each of those things.

Unlike the Byrds, the members of the Buffalo Springfield were, by all accounts, talented musicians from the outset. Stills and Young were both skilled lead guitarists and songwriters, though Young's vocals were, to be sure, an acquired taste. Furay was an accomplished rhythm guitarist and songwriter, as well as being the group's best lead vocalist. Bruce Palmer was a respected bass player who, shockingly, actually had experience playing the instrument. And Dewey Martin, several years older than the rest of the crew, had drummed for such legendary artists as the Everly Brothers, Charlie Rich, Roy Orbison, Patsy Cline, and Carl Perkins.

None of that, however, explains the absurdly meteoric rise of Buffalo Springfield. On April 11, 1966, just five days after the quartet had purportedly first met and *just two days* after they had added a drummer and acquired instruments, the band played its first club date at one of Hollywood's most prestigious venues, the Troubadour. Four days later, on April 15, they played the first of six dates around the southland opening for the Byrds, the hottest band on the Strip. That mini-tour was followed almost immediately by a six-week stand at the hottest club in town, the Whisky-a-Go-Go. That gig wrapped up on June 20, 1966.

A month later, on July 25, the band landed the opening slot on the most anticipated concert of the year—the Rolling Stones show at the Hollywood Bowl, sponsored by local radio station KHJ. The station, by the way, had just been launched the previous year, in May of 1965, just a few weeks after the Byrds had taken the world by storm with the release of *Mr. Tambourine Man* and sparked a folk-rock revolution. Just as new clubs magically appeared along the Sunset Strip in anticipation of the about-to-explode music scene, so too did a radio station magically appear to promote those new clubs and the artists filling them. Such things tend to happen, as we know, rather, uhmm, serendipitously.

Three days after the Stones concert at the Bowl, Buffalo Springfield released its first single, the Neil Young-penned Nowadays Clancy Can't Even Sing, which failed to connect with the record-buying public. Several months later though, the band would release what was to be its only hit single and what would become the most recognizable 'protest' song of the 1960s.

Buffalo Springfield had signed with Atlantic Records, which had been founded in 1947 by Ahmet Ertegun and dentist/investor Herb Abramson. Born in Istanbul, Turkey in 1923, the year the Turk Republic was established, Ahmet was both the son and the grandson of career diplomats/civil servants. His father had been named the first Turkish representative to the League of Nations in 1925 and thereafter served as the Turk Republic's ambassador to Switzerland, France and England. In 1935, he was named the first Turkish ambassador to the United States and he promptly relocated the family to Washington, DC.

From about the age of twelve, Ahmet grew up along DC's Embassy Row, attending elite private schools with the sons and daughters of senators, congressmen, and intelligence operatives. In 1947, three years after his father died, Ertegun founded Atlantic Records. At first the label was home to jazz and R&B artists, including Ray Charles, the company's first big star. In the late 1950s, Ertegun took on his first assistant—a guy by the name of Phil Spector. Atlantic soon shifted focus and rock luminaries like Eric Clapton, Led Zeppelin and the Rolling Stones would later join the label's stable of talent.

Curiously enough, Columbia Records, the corporate entity that signed the Byrds, was also born in the nation's capitol. The name is derived from the District of Columbia, where the label was founded and first headquartered some 125 years ago. It would appear then that the two record labels that signed and launched Laurel Canyon's first two folk-rock bands were not only major record labels but also happened to be corporate entities that had deep ties to the nation's center of power. With Laurel Canyon's other bands as well, it was the major record labels, not upstart independents, that signed the new artists. It was the major labels that provided them with instruments and amplifiers. It was the major labels that provided them with studio time and session musicians. It was the major labels that recorded, mixed and arranged their albums. And it was the major labels that released and then heavily promoted those albums.

As Unterberger duly notes in his expansive, two-volume review of the folk-rock movement, "much folk-rock was recorded and issued by huge corporations, and broadcast over radio and television stations owned for the most part by the same or similar pillars of the establishment." The corporate titans of all three branches of the mainstream media—print, radio and television—did their part to help out the titans of the record industry. Unterberger notes that, "AM radio (and sometimes primetime network television) would act as a primary conduit for this countercultural expression." Conservative, corporate-controlled AM stations across the country almost immediately began giving serious airplay to the new sounds coming out of Southern California, and network television gave the rising stars unprecedented coverage and exposure: "primetime variety hours were much more likely to showcase rock acts than they would be in subsequent decades. New releases by the Byrds were often accompanied by large ads in trade magazines that simultaneously plugged the records and upcoming TV appearances."

The boys in Buffalo Springfield, for example, managed to find themselves appearing as guests on an impressive array of network television shows, including *American Bandstand*, *The Smothers Brothers Show*, *Shebang!*, *The Della Reese Show*, *The Go Show*, *The Andy Williams Show*, *Hollywood Palace*, *Where the Action Is*, Joey Bishop's late night show, and a local program known as *Boss City*. They also made guest appearances, curiously enough, on primetime hits like *Mannix* and *The Girl From U.N.C.L.E.*

The print media did its part as well to raise awareness of the new music/countercultural scene. In September 1965, the nation's premier newsweeklies, *Time* and *Newsweek*, "ran virtually simultaneous stories on the folk-rock craze," just months after the first folk-rock release had climbed to the top of the charts. The country's biggest daily newspapers chimed in as well, providing an inordinate amount of coverage of the emerging scene. By the end of 1967, the movement had its very own publication, *Rolling Stone*. Initially designed to look as though it were a product of the underground press, it was, without question, very much a corporate mouthpiece. Another avenue of the print media provided the scene with considerable exposure as well; as Einarson notes, many of the Laurel Canyon stars, particularly members of Buffalo Springfield and the Monkees, were "the darlings of the California teen magazines," including *Teenset*, *Teen Screen*, and *Tiger Beat*.

In 1964, just months before the birth of folk-rock, the *LA Free Press*, widely believed to be the first underground newspaper of the 1960s, was launched from offices at the corner of Sunset and Crescent Heights, at the very mouth of Laurel Canyon. The publication, which quickly became the voice of the canyon, was initially financed by comedian Steve Allen. In the late 1970s, it was purchased and killed off by pornographer Larry Flynt.

As the story is usually told, the 1960s countercultural movement posed a rather serious threat to the status quo. But if that were truly the case, then why was it the "pillars of the establishment," to use

Unterberger's words, that initially launched the movement? Why was it 'the man' that signed and recorded these artists? And that heavily promoted them on the radio, on television, and in print? And that set them up with their very own radio station and their very own monthly magazine?

It could be argued, I suppose, that this was simply a case of corporate America doing what it does best: making a profit off of anything and everything. Blinded by greed, a devil's advocate might say, the corporate titans inadvertently created a monster. The question that is begged by that explanation, however, is why, after it had become abundantly clear that a monster had allegedly been created, was nothing done to stop the growth of that monster? Why, for example, did the state not utilize its law enforcement and criminal justice powers to silence some of the most prominent countercultural voices?

It's not as if it would have required resorting to heavy-handed measures. Since many of the Laurel Canyon stars were openly using, dealing, or at least advocating the use of illegal substances, they were practically begging for the powers-that-be to take action. And yet that never happened. As just one example, three members of Buffalo Springfield (Neil Young, Richie Furay and Jim Messina, along with a dozen others, including Eric Clapton) were arrested in a drug bust at a Topanga Canyon home only to then walk away as if nothing had happened. Why wasn't this case, and so many others like it, aggressively prosecuted?

David Crosby has candidly acknowledged that "the DEA could have popped me for interstate transport of dope or dealing lots of times and never did." John Phillips, busted for wholesale trafficking of pharmaceuticals, was, by his own account, "looking at forty-five years and got thirty days." He began serving his sentence on April 20, appropriately enough, and served just twenty-four days in a minimum security prison that offered "residents" such activities as "basketball, aerobics, softball, tennis, archery, and golf," and that featured a "delicious kosher kitchen, an elaborate salad bar, and a tasty brunch on Sundays."

Time and time again, 'the man' was handed golden opportunities to crack down on Laurel Canyon's most prominent voices, and time and time again those 'dangerous dissidents' were handled with kid gloves. Indeed, the LAPD appears to have adopted a hands-off policy towards the Laurel Canyon crowd. As musician-turned-photographer Henry Diltz acknowledged to writer Harvey Kubernik, "There was not a presence of the heat in Laurel Canyon." Radio personality Elliot Mintz agreed, noting that he couldn't "recall a law enforcement presence in Laurel Canyon." Given the unique geography of the canyon community, it would have been very easy for the police to cut off access and conduct regular sweeps, but nothing like that ever happened. Instead, police seem to have stayed out of the canyon entirely.

The state had another powerful tool at its disposal to silence young critics—involuntary military service. There was, after all, a war going on and hundreds of thousands of draft-age young men across the country were being fed into the war machine. As Richie Unterberger noted in *Turn! Turn! Turn!*, "Most folk rockers (if they were male), like their audience, were of draft age." But curiously enough, "Very, very few had their careers interrupted by the draft." Actually, Unterberger appears to have been playing it safe with the "very, very few" wording since the reality is that *none* of the folks living the rock'n'roll life in the canyons, whether folk rockers, country rockers or psychedelic rockers, had their careers interrupted by the Vietnam War.

The literature is littered with mentions of various rock stars receiving their draft notices, but those mentions are invariably followed by amusing anecdotes about how said people fooled the draft board by pretending to be gay, or pretending to be crazy, or pretending to be otherwise unfit for service. Of course, if it had really been that easy to pull the wool over the draft board's eyes, then Uncle Sam probably wouldn't have been able to come up with all those bodies to send over to Vietnam. The reality is that thousands of young men across the country tried those very same tricks, but they only ever seemed to work for the Laurel Canyon crowd.

How is it possible that not one of the musical icons of the Woodstock generation, almost all of them draft age males, was shipped off to slog through the rice paddies of Vietnam? Should we just consider that to be another one of those great serendipities? Was it mere luck that kept all the Laurel Canyon stars out of jail and out of the military during the turbulent decade that was the 1960s? Not likely. The reality is that 'The Establishment,' as it was known in those days, had the power to prevent the musical icons of the 1960s from ever becoming the megastars that they became. The state, working hand-in-hand with corporate America, could quite easily have prevented the entire countercultural movement from ever getting off the ground—because then, as now, the state controlled the channels of communication.

A real grass-roots cultural revolution would probably have involved a bunch of starving musicians barely scratching out a living playing tiny coffee shops in the hopes of maybe someday landing a record deal with some tiny, independent label, and then, just maybe, if they got really lucky, getting a little airplay on some obscure college radio stations. But that's not how the sixties folk-rock 'revolution' played out. Not by any stretch of the imagination.

And now, without further adieu, let's circle back around and take a look at the Buffalo Springfield story from the beginning, starting from January 3, 1945, when Stephen Arthur Stills was born to William and Talitha Stills. As John Einarson recounts in *For What It's Worth*, Stephen's roots were "firmly planted in Southern soil. His family traces its history back to the plantations of the rural antebellum South. After the Union armies laid waste to much of the Southern farm economy, the family relocated to Illinois."

Einarson describes William Stills as "somewhat of a soldier of fortune, an engineer, builder, and dreamer who frequently uprooted the family to follow his dreams and schemes." That is, I suppose, as good a definition as any for what he actually appears to have been: a military intelligence operative who was frequently on assignment in various hotspots in Central America. Stephen's childhood was spent in Illinois, Texas, Louisiana, Florida, and various parts of Central America, including Costa Rica, El Salvador and the Panama Canal Zone.

At a fairly young age, Stills attended the Admiral Farragut Military Academy in St. Petersburg, Florida. In later years, his authoritarian manner and military bearing would earn him the nickname "the Sarge." He joined his first band, the Radars, as a drummer. In his next band, the Continentals, he played guitar alongside another young guitarist named Don Felder, who would later turn up in Laurel Canyon as a member of the Eagles—because, as we have seen repeatedly, all roads seemed to lead to Laurel Canyon.

According to Einarson, "An unfortunate incident with the administration at his Tampa Bay high school resulted in Stephen's dismissal in 1961, after which he joined his wayward family then settled in Costa

Rica." What that "unfortunate incident" may have been, and why he had been separated from his family at a fairly young age, remains a mystery. In any event, Stephen's next few years are rather murky. Some reports have him graduating from a high school in the Panama Canal Zone. Others have him shuffling back and forth between Florida and Central America. Stills himself has, as previously noted, at times claimed that he served a stint in Vietnam. Whatever the case, circa March of 1964, he surfaced in New Orleans with his sights set on a career in music.

By the summer of 1964, he had drifted to New York's Greenwich Village, where he became fast friends with a young folk singer/songwriter by the name of Peter Torkelson, who, like so many others in this story, hailed from Washington, DC. The two played together briefly as a duo before Torkelson "migrated to Connecticut then Venezuela," which was, I suppose, a typical migratory route for folkies in those days. Torkelson would soon enough make his way to Laurel Canyon, where he would become Monkee Peter Tork. Stills would also audition for the show, but his bad teeth and thinning hair would render him unfit for a leading role on primetime TV.

In July 1964, Stills found work as one of the nine members of the Au Go-Go Singers, the newly formed house band for New York's famed Café Au Go-Go. Singing alongside of Stills was a young folkie named Richie Furay, the son of a pharmacist who had run a family drugstore in Yellow Springs, Ohio. By November 1964, the Au Go-Go Singers already had an album out. But trouble soon arose, due primarily to the fact that the band was under contract to Morris Levy, a known organized crime figure who would soon be indicted on an array of criminal charges. The band soon broke up and Furay headed off to Connecticut where a cousin got him a job at Pratt & Whitney. While working there, he took a little time off to audition for a slot in the Chad Mitchell Trio, but he was beat out by a military brat from Roswell named John Deutschendorf.

Stephen Stills, meanwhile, hung out in New York for a while longer before heeding the call of the Pied Piper and heading out to LA in August of 1965. That was the summer, according to Einarson, that "the epicenter of American rock'n'roll shifted coasts, Los Angeles replacing New York as the power base of the music industry." Richie Furay apparently soon found himself missing Stills but didn't know how to reach his former sidekick, so he sent a letter to Stills' dad in El Salvador, according to legend, and William Stills forwarded the message to Stephen.

What exactly the elder Stills was doing in El Salvador circa 1965/66 is unknown, but former State Department official William Blum provided some possible clues in his authoritative *Killing Hope*: "Throughout the 1960s, multifarious American experts occupied themselves in El Salvador by enlarging and refining the state's security and counterinsurgency apparatus: the police, the National Guard, the military, the communications and intelligence networks, the coordination with their counterparts in other Central American countries… as matters turned out, these were the forces and resources which were brought into action to impose widespread repression and wage war."

Meanwhile, up in Canada, Neil Young and Bruce Palmer were handling guitar and bass duties for the Mynah Birds. Neil Percival Kenneth Ragland Young was born on November 12, 1945, in Toronto to Scott Young, a sportswriter and novelist, and Edna "Rassy" Ragland, a Canadian television personality. Scott Young had spent a considerable amount of time abroad during WWII, first as a journalist and then as a member of the Royal Canadian Navy. Scott's father (Neil's grandfather), like Richie Furay's, had been a pharmacist/drug store owner.

As Einarson recounts, "Neil Young and Stephen Stills had more in common than music. Both had grown up in transient families, Neil's journalist father Scott uprooting his mother Edna 'Rassy,' Neil, and older brother Bob several times during Neil's first fifteen years." Novelists, it would appear, need to move around a lot. Just after his seventeenth birthday, Neil formed his first band, the Squires, and began playing local gigs. According to legend, it was during those early years that Young and Stills first briefly crossed paths up in Canada. That meeting would, a couple years later, allegedly send Young and Palmer—also born in Toronto, to a violinist father and artist mother—off on a cross-country quest to find Stephen Stills.

The Mynah Birds also at one time featured Nick St. Nicholas and Goldie McJohn, both of whom would become members of Steppenwolf. And all the intertwined characters in the preceding narrative—Stephen Stills, Richie Furay, Neil Young, Bruce Palmer, John Denver, Don Felder, Nick St. Nicholas, Goldy McJohn, and Peter Tork—would soon find themselves transplanted to Laurel Canyon.

15

BEYOND BUFFALO SPRINGFIELD AND THE MONKEES, TOO

**"He was great, he was unreal—
really, really good."**

"He had this kind of music that nobody else was doing. I thought he really had something crazy, something great. He was like a living poet." Neil Young, sharing his thoughts on Charles Manson

At the time of the legendary 'serendipitous' encounter on Sunset Boulevard, Stills was living at the home of Barry Friedman, a former circus clown, fire-eater, TV producer and freelance publicist. To say that his home was a bit odd would probably be an understatement. According to folkie Nurit Wilde, "It had a bathtub in the middle of the living room and a secret room behind the bathroom where people carried on liaisons." The massive bathtub sat right in front of the equally massive fireplace. As Friedman himself would later acknowledge, "This was a very strange house."

Not strange by canyon standards, perhaps, but strange nonetheless. Stranger homes can certainly be found, such as in the Holly Mont neighborhood near the base of nearby Beachwood Canyon. One such home is described in the book *Haunted Hollywood*. The house isn't actually haunted, of course, but it does contain some rather unusual features, as a past owner discovered: "the house's most startling feature—a secret passageway behind a built-in bookshelf he'd discovered during remodeling. It connected to a series of subterranean tunnels linking several houses on the hillside… While exploring the tunnel beneath his house, Grey found a makeshift grave. The headstone read 'Regina 1922.'"

In Friedman's not-quite-as-strange home, he had taken both Stills and Furay under his wing, providing them with a place to live and rehearse, doling out spending money, and introducing them to various music industry contacts. Friedman had been present when the fabled meeting took place, and it was to his home that the group adjourned after stopping on the Strip. It was also Friedman who found them their drummer, Walter Milton Dwayne Midkiff, otherwise known as Dewey Martin. Though Martin was, like Young and Palmer, Canadian, he had served a stint in the US Army.

Friedman was working for Byrds' manager Jim Dickson, who also managed the Dillards. It was Dickson who hooked Friedman up with Martin, and with a full slate of electric instruments, just as he had set the Byrds up with instruments and a bass player. Dickson and Friedman would soon become neighbors when Friedman moved from his odd house on Fountain Avenue to a home in, naturally enough, Laurel Canyon. That home, on 8524 Ridpath, would become a rather notorious party house. As Jackson Browne, who Friedman later took under his wing, recalled, "It was always open house at Paul Rothchild's and Barry Friedman's."

Barney Hoskyns writes in *Hotel California* that, "Friedman… orchestrated scenes of sexual and narcotic depravity that soon spun out of control." Among the regular visitors was "a gaggle of girls who mainly lived at Monkee Peter Tork's house"—which was also in Laurel Canyon, where gaggles of young girls were known to cluster around rock stars, sculptors, and mass murderers. Just a few doors down from Friedman, at 8504 Ridpath, lived Billy James, who also played a behind-the-scenes role in the success of the Byrds. A very young Jackson Browne, fresh from the "imposing Browne family home in the tony, old-money neighborhood of Highland Park," lived with James for a year, during which time Friedman worked to build a band around Browne. Toward that end, he recruited someone else who came from “old-money,” a kid by the name of Ned Doheny.

Curiously, publicist/talent scout James had moved into his Laurel Canyon home in January 1964, a full year before the Byrds recorded the single that started a cultural revolution. Within no time at all, that home would be surrounded by the homes of numerous rock stars. Just another one of those amazing serendipities, I suppose.

Most members of Buffalo Springfield also took up residence in everyone’s favorite secluded canyon. Richie Furay initially moved in with Mark Volman of the Turtles, who already had a place up on Lookout Mountain. After marrying in March of 1967, Furay got his own place on the main thoroughfare, Laurel Canyon Boulevard. Neil Young, ever the recluse, found himself what has been described as a “shack” at 8451 Utica Drive, which was far from actually being a shack. And Stills eventually moved into Peter Tork’s home, which was also on Laurel Canyon Boulevard and which once belonged to actor/comedian Wally Cox, a onetime roommate and close friend of fellow canyonite Marlon Brando. It is unclear whether Palmer and Martin took up residence in the canyon.

The band would prove to have a difficult time keeping their lineup intact. Bruce Palmer had a habit of getting himself arrested on a regular basis, usually on drug charges. Some of those arrests led to deportations, since both he and Young were in the country illegally. He never seems to have had much trouble getting back into the country, however, and not too surprisingly, none of his crimes seem to have actually been prosecuted in any meaningful way. He did though go missing on a fairly regular basis. During the band’s two-year run, Ken Koblun, Jim Fielder (formerly of Zappa’s Mothers of Invention), and Jim Messina all filled in on bass for varying lengths of time. And Doug Hastings filled in for an occasionally absent Neil Young, who had a habit of quitting the band due to ego clashes with the Sarge.

The Springfield’s second single, recorded and mixed on December 5, 1966, and written just a couple weeks earlier, was released locally in December 1966 and nationally in early January 1967. It was the group’s only hit single and it is remembered today as the quintessential protest song of the 1960s. That song, of course, is For What It’s Worth, the opening lines of which kicked off this book. As a protest song, however, it doesn't quite measure up. Despite what is commonly believed today, the song was not a commentary on anti-war demonstrations. Far from it. The event under consideration was the so-called Riot on the Sunset Strip, which involved about 1,000 kids who were demonstrating against the imposition of a curfew and the announcement that a popular club (Pandora's Box, at 8118 Sunset Boulevard) was slated to be closed.

Pandora's was a small coffee shop that featured poetry readings, folk music, and, with the birth of folk-rock, Laurel Canyon bands like Love and Buffalo Springfield. The crowds drawn to the club caused a bit of a problem though, as Pandora's sat on a traffic island at the intersection of Sunset and Crescent Heights (the gateway to Laurel Canyon) and overflow crowds would frequently spill out onto the boulevard, blocking traffic and endangering pedestrians. Even before the problems began, the building had been scheduled to be demolished as part of a planned road-widening project. Nevertheless, the announcement of its closing sparked a demonstration and on the night of November 12, 1966, 200 cops squared off against an estimated 1,000 kids. The LAPD, being the LAPD, began cracking heads and arresting everyone in sight. Protestors responded by throwing rocks, setting a car ablaze, and attempting to ignite a bus. Just one month later, a song commemorating the event was blaring from car radios across the city. Eight months after that, Pandora's was bulldozed.

Even if the song had been about anti-war protests, it still would be an odd choice for a protest song. Lyrics such as "Singing songs and carrying signs, mostly say hooray for our side," seem to largely dismiss the concerns of protestors. And the line "nobody's right if everybody's wrong" seems to suggest that protestors are no better than that which they are protesting against. Another curious irony about the song is that it was authored by Stephen Stills, an authoritarian, law-and-order kind of guy if ever there was one. Stills himself later heaped derision on the very notion of writing protest songs: "We didn't want to do another song like For What It's Worth. We didn't want to be a protest group. That's really a cop-out and I hate that. To sit there and say, 'I don't like this and I don't like that' is just stupid."

While For What It's Worth is now the best-remembered 'protest' song of the 1960s, the most successful one at the time was Barry McGuire's recording of P.F. Sloan's The Eve Of Destruction, which was also a curious choice for a protest song, for reasons best explained by Paul Jones of the band Manfred Mann: "I think that Barry McGuire must have been paid by the State Department. The Eve Of Destruction protests about nothing. It is simply a 'Thy Doom at Hand' song with no point."

It is probably safe to say that, to most music fans, there is a world of difference between a band like Buffalo Springfield and a band like the Monkees. That perception, however, is not necessarily accurate. As Unterberger has written, "there was not nearly as much gauche commercialism separating the Monkees and the bold Sunset Strip vanguard as is commonly believed. The Byrds, Buffalo Springfield, and Barry McGuire might have been landing hit records with social protest both gentle and incendiary, but they were tethered to a corporate media establishment in order to deliver those messages. On television's *Where the Action Is* you could see the Byrds lip-synching The Bells Of Rhymney in front of vacuous, grinning beach bunnies and muscle men cavorting on diving boards and plastic inner tubes. When Buffalo Springfield mimed to For What It's Worth on *The Smothers Brothers Show*, they suffered the insertion of a shot of Tom Smothers pointing a gun at the camera during the line 'there's a man with a gun over there,' to a burst of uproarious canned laughter."

The parallels between the bands actually ran far deeper than their mutual fondness for cheesy television appearances. Stephen Stills, it will be recalled, auditioned to be a Monkee (as did singer/songwriters Harry Nilsson and Paul Williams). Stills and Tork remained close friends and frequently jammed together at various Laurel Canyon gathering spots. Both Tork and fellow Monkee Mickey Dolenz at times joined the Springfield on stage at various local shows. And Stills, Young and Dewey Martin all sat in on Monkees recording sessions.

On July 2, 1967, guitarist extraordinaire Jimi Hendrix played the Whisky and reportedly blew the roof off the place (figuratively speaking, of course). Shortly thereafter, he moved into Peter Tork's house in Laurel Canyon. By the middle of July, Hendrix had joined the Monkees on tour as their opening act. He was dropped after just a few dates, however, due to the fact that Monkees fans couldn't quite wrap their heads around Jimi's brand of music. Throughout the remainder of the summer of 1967, Stephen and Dewey's Malibu home became the site of informal jam sessions involving Stephen Stills, Jimi Hendrix, Buddy Miles, David Crosby, and Peter Tork. All of them ultimately ended up living at Tork's Laurel Canyon spread, which, as previously mentioned, came complete with a gaggle of young groupies who spent an inordinate amount of time lounging around the pool in various states of undress.

Those jam sessions, both in Malibu and Laurel Canyon, were fueled by massive amounts of LSD. According to an anonymous insider interviewed by John Einarson, LSD guru Augustus Owsley Stanley, "used to give Bruce [Palmer] baggies full of acid, a thousand tabs of purple. Somehow he befriended Bruce so we [the band and various hangers-on] never lacked for LSD."

There was yet one more curious tie between the Monkees and the Springfield: while together in Chicago, unnamed members of both bands were allegedly immortalized by the notorious Cynthia Plaster Caster. Our old friend Frank Zappa soon took Cynthia under his wing and relocated her to LA to continue with her important work, just as he had taken the nubile young women who would become the GTOs under his wing. It could reasonably be argued that Zappa did more than anyone to create one of the more peculiar artifacts of the 1960s: the rock'n'roll supergroupie.

The aforementioned Ahmet Ertegun, by the way, played a key role in launching the career of Mr. Zappa, so much so that Frank named one of his sons after him. Meanwhile, Zappa's shady manager, Herb Cohen, "was involved with the [Buffalo Springfield] financially… Stephen knew Herbie from New York," according to Einarson. The Laurel Canyon crowd, to be sure, was a close-knit group—all the more so because so many of them seem to have known one another before arriving there.

Just a couple of weeks before Jimi's Whisky debut, he had dazzled the crowd at the Monterey Pop Festival, where the band currently under review, Buffalo Springfield, had also played—though by most accounts, not very well. Neil Young was taking one of his leaves-of-absence from the band and Doug Hastings filled in on second lead guitar. In addition, Stills brought his buddy David Crosby out on stage to join the band, which by many accounts was a rather poor decision on Stephen's part. According to bassist Bruce Palmer, "Crosby stunk to high heaven. He didn't know what he was doing… he was all ego. He came on for forty minutes and embarrassed us." Guitarist Hastings agreed, explaining that Crosby's "problem was that he couldn't play rhythm guitar very well, though he thought he could… that was one of the reasons why we sounded so bad at Monterey."

After spending the Summer of Love jamming with members of both Jimi Hendrix's Band of Gypsys and the Monkees, Buffalo Springfield hit the road in November 1967 as the opening act for the Beach Boys, a pairing nearly as odd as the Monkees and Jimi Hendrix. Bruce Palmer, whom we have already learned was not one to mince words, had this to say about the Beach Boys as a performing band: "They were real lousy musicians but they had terrific harmony and a name. They were a studio group. On stage it was like the Monkees. They would spend weeks and months in the studio with Brian Wilson perfecting harmonies and overdubs, but you put them on stage and they stunk."

That Beach Boys/Buffalo Springfield tour included a stop, curiously enough, at West Point Military Academy, which isn't really a regular stop on most rock tours. While on the road, the members of the Springfield formed a close bond with Dennis Wilson, a bond that would be built upon in April of 1968 when the Springfield again went out on tour with the Beach Boys. That tour was launched on April 5, almost two years to the day from the fabled meeting that allegedly forged the band. It was the last major tour the group would undertake. Just after returning from that 1968 tour, Dennis Wilson bonded with another local musician, a guy by the name of Charles Manson. When Dennis introduced his new friend Charlie to his buddies in Buffalo Springfield, Neil Young in particular was quite smitten.

On April 28, the band began playing its last series of local shows. On May 5, at the Long Beach Arena, Buffalo Springfield played together as a band for the last time. They had been scheduled to play two shows that day, the first at a venue in Torrance, but that earlier show never materialized. The band released its third and final album, *Last Time Around*, some three months later. As with albums released nearly simultaneously by the Byrds (*Sweetheart of the Rodeo*) and the International Submarine Band (*Safe at Home*), the Springfield's final album is often cited as being a pioneering effort in the creation of the country-rock genre.

That was just one curious shift that occurred in the local music scene. The folk-rock movement, as it turns out, didn't really last very long in its original incarnation. To the contrary, it quickly splintered into three distinct new genres: country-rock, psychedelic rock, and the 'introspective singer-songwriter' school of folk-rock most closely associated with former mental patient James Taylor. None of those musical genres, notably, posed much of a threat to the 'establishment.' The navel-gazers eschewed social concerns in favor of focusing on tales of personal anguish, the acid rockers largely preached the mantra of 'turn on, tune in, drop out,' and the country-rockers largely stuck to traditional—which is to say, quite conservative—country music themes.

Following the breakup of Buffalo Springfield, Richie Furay and sometime bassist Jim Messina went on to form the band Poco. Through various formations, the band was critically acclaimed but never had a great deal of commercial success. Jim Messina ultimately left to become half of Loggins and Messina; his replacement, Randy Meisner, went on to become an Eagle. A guy by the name of Gregg Allman, who played briefly with Poco during its formative days, went on to front the Allman Brothers.

Poco debuted at the Troubadour, which served as the breeding ground for the country-rock movement, in November 1968. The band's first album, *Pickin' Up the Pieces*, hit the shelves six months later, not long after the release of the debut album by country-rock rivals the Flying Burrito Brothers, formed by former Byrds Gram Parsons and Chris Hillman. Byrd David Crosby, meanwhile, teamed up with Springfield's Stephen Stills and ex-Hollie Graham Nash (who had arrived in Laurel Canyon in December 1968 and quickly found lodging in Joni Mitchell's canyon home) to form a band first known as the Frozen Noses, a name inspired by the trio's fondness for cocaine.

By the late 1960s, the drug that would eventually become the drug of choice of the disco crowd had already begun pouring into Laurel Canyon. As glam-rocker Michael Des Barres recalled, "Every drug dealer was in Laurel Canyon." Along with the drugs came lots of guns and huge piles of cash. Before long, according to Laurel Canyon chronicler Michael Walker, "cocaine became a pseudo-currency, like cigarettes in prison." A decade later, the world would catch a glimpse of that dark canyon undercurrent when four battered bodies were bagged and removed from a house on Wonderland Avenue… but we've already covered that.

The newest Laurel Canyon band was quickly renamed Crosby, Stills & Nash, and by the summer of 1969 they had the top-selling album in the country. That disc would remain on the charts for an unprecedented two years. When the band got ready to hit the road though, there was a little problem; given that Stills was the only serious musician in the band, and it was he who had played virtually all the instruments on that debut album, it was going to be difficult, as Barney Hoskyns noted, "to translate their layered studio sound to the stage." The solution was, as Einarson has written, to bring Neil Young on board, "to provide more umph to their live sets." And so it was that by the end of the year, CSN had become CSNY.

Now the band just needed a rhythm section. Dallas Taylor, who had played on sessions for the first album, was recruited as a drummer. Stills and Young summoned Bruce Palmer to come down from Canada to handle bass duties. According to Palmer, however, that didn't work out, primarily because once he got to LA and "started rehearsing at Stephen's house with Crosby and Nash, it became real evident that they were nothing but backup singers. They didn't like it and decided to change it. They couldn't take that; they thought they were too big, too famous, too talented. They weren't talented, they were backup singers… It looked to them as if it was Crosby and Nash backing up Buffalo Springfield, being nothing more than harmony singers for Stephen, Neil, myself, and Dallas Taylor."

According to Palmer, the first CSN album was "ninety-five percent Stephen doing everything and he's got his backup singer boys with him." Considering that Stills composed the majority of the material, played most of the instruments, and produced and arranged the album, Palmer's assessment seems a reasonable one. In any event, CSNY didn't last too long, dissolving after their 1970 tour. Stills next recruited the ubiquitous Chris Hillman to form Manassas, which also proved to be short-lived. Not long after, David Geffen teamed Hillman with Richie Furay and J.D. Souther to create a failed clone of Crosby, Stills & Nash.

The real CSN was not the only new Laurel Canyon band to release a debut album in 1969. Three Dog Night, mentored and first recorded by Beach Boy Brian Wilson, released their self-titled debut in January, and in June, a psychedelic rock band from the LC issued its first LP. Throughout 1968, the band, then known as Nazz, had been a regular presence on the Sunset Strip, where they gained a reputation for being heavy on the theatrics but light on the musicianship. The band was fronted by Vincent Furnier, the boyfriend of Miss Christine of the GTOs. Miss Pamela, aka Pamela Des Barres, described Furnier as "a rich kid from Phoenix." A staunch supporter of the war in Vietnam, Vince would later become a golf partner of notoriously conservative Senator Barry Goldwater.

Furnier would soon change his own name and the name of his band to Alice Cooper, after deciding that he was the reincarnation of a witch who purportedly lived in the seventeenth century. Frank Zappa signed the band, whose debut album, *Pretties For You*, was the first release on Zappa's Straight label. After transforming into a shock-rock band, the group would hit it big a few years later with the release of *School's Out*.

Cooper had a curious connection to another rather eccentric canyon character, Mr. Brian Wilson. In later years, both Cooper and Wilson would receive wildly controversial psychiatric treatment from a certain Eugene Landy, who took complete control of Wilson's life for an entire decade. Another star client of Landy's was Academy Award winning actor Gig Young. On October 19, 1978, Young and his fifth wife, Kim Schmidt, were found shot through the head in their New York City apartment. The sixty-four-year-old Young—raised, as would be expected, in Washington, DC—had just married the young art gallery worker three weeks earlier. There was no note found and no one close to the pair could come up with a motive for either to commit suicide, so the incident naturally was written off as a murder/suicide. Young had just taped an episode of the Joe Franklin television show that day and he presumably had given no indication that anything was amiss. The show never aired.

As for the original members of Buffalo Springfield, Stephen Stills and Neil Young are still known to perform at times. Richie Furay founded the Cavalry Chapel near Boulder, Colorado, and for quite some time served there as senior pastor. Bruce Palmer died of a heart attack on October 1, 2004. And Dewey Martin was found dead by his roommate on February 1, 2009. He had been living in a nondescript apartment in Van Nuys, California.

16

ALTAMONT PIE
GRAM PARSONS

"No one could recall ever seeing or hearing about Gram being involved in a protest of any sort." Author Ben Fong Torres, who interviewed scores of people close to Gram Parsons while researching Hickory Wind

LET'S BEGIN WITH THE OBVIOUS: GRAM PARSONS WAS FAR FROM BEING THE biggest star to emerge from the Laurel Canyon scene. In his short lifetime, he failed to achieve any significant level of commercial success. None of his albums, whether recorded solo or with the International Submarine Band, the Byrds, or the Flying Burrito Brothers, climbed very high on the sales charts. But to many fans and musicians alike, he is considered a hugely influential and tragically overlooked figure.

It is safe to say that Parsons does not have nearly the number of fans that David Crosby or Frank Zappa have, and compared to contemporaries who died during the same era and at roughly the same age—legendary artists like Jim Morrison, Janis Joplin and Jimi Hendrix—Parsons is all but unknown. His life story, nevertheless, is a fascinating one, primarily because it contains all the classic Laurel Canyon elements: the royal bloodlines, the not-so-well-hidden intelligence connections, the occult overtones, the extravagantly wealthy family background, an incinerated house or two, and, of course, a whole lot of curious deaths.

We begin back about 1,000 years ago, with Ferdinand the Great, the first King of Castille on the Iberian Peninsula. It is to him that the wealthy Connor family claims their family lineage can be traced. Also in the family tree was King Edward II of England, son of Edward I and Eleanor of Castille. According to some sources, Eddie II was murdered by having a red-hot iron rod shoved up his rectum, though most of his loyal subjects probably didn't shed many tears for the hated ruler. Bringing the royal bloodline to America was one Colonel George Reade, born in the UK in 1608 and married in Yorktown, Pennsylvania, sometime thereafter.

Reade's offspring would ultimately spawn Ingram Cecil Connor, Jr., a well-to-do gent who settled in Columbia, Tennessee. Like his father before him, Cecil attended Columbia Military Academy. In May 1940, at the outset of WWII, he enlisted in the US Army Air Force as a Second Lieutenant. In March of 1941, Cecil, who during the war would become known as "Coon Dog" (though no one seems to remember why), was shipped off to Hawaii. Nine months later, Pearl Harbor came under attack by Japanese bombers.

Not to worry though—Cecil was never in harm's way, having opted to forgo living in officer's quarters on the military base in favor of staying at a luxurious, massive estate near Diamond Head owned by wealthy heiress Barbara Hutton. Hutton, for the record, was the granddaughter of Frank Woolworth, the founder of the Woolworth's five-and-dime store chain. She was also the daughter of Franklyn Laws Hutton, co-founder of E.F. Hutton, one of the nation's most prestigious brokerage firms until it ran afoul of the law for such crimes as check kiting, money laundering and mail fraud. Barbara was also the niece of Marjory Post Hutton, the daughter of C.W. Post, founder of what would become General Foods.

Like so many of the other characters who have populated this story, Barbara was traumatized in childhood by the alleged suicide of a parent. According to news reports, it was five-year-old Barbara who discovered her mother Edna's lifeless body in May of 1917. An empty bottle of strychnine was reportedly recovered by police from a nearby bathroom. There was no autopsy performed and no official inquest was ever conducted, as would be expected when an extremely wealthy person dies under questionable circumstances (see, for example, the Ned Doheny story).

In 1930, just after the onset of the Great Depression, Barbara was thrown a lavish debutante ball attended by those at the very top of the food chain, including members of the Astor and Rockefeller families. The next year, she inherited a fortune estimated to be worth the equivalent of $1 billion today. She was just nineteen at the time. Two years later, she received further inheritance that raised her net worth to an estimated $2–2.5 billion in today's money. Much of the rest of the country was busily wallowing in abject poverty.

Ms. Hutton lived a very troubled life, with numerous failed marriages and relationships. One of her many paramours was a gentleman by the name of Phillip van Rensselaer, who later penned a book about her life which he entitled *Million Dollar Baby*. Van Rensselaer, it will be recalled, was an ancestor of Laurel Canyon's own David Crosby—the man whom Gram Parsons would briefly replace in the Byrds. And that, conveniently enough, brings us back to the subject of this chapter.

As WWII dragged on, Ingram Cecil Connor, Jr. worked his way up the chain of command to the rank of Major. Deployed in the Pacific theater of operations, he was a decorated hero and a squadron commander who flew numerous combat missions. After the war, he continued to serve in the Air Force at a base in Bartow, Florida, very near the Snively family home in Winter Haven. The Snively clan had first come to America circa 1700, about a century after the arrival of the guy who spawned the Connor clan. According to historical records and genealogical charts, Johann Jacob Schnebele, a Swiss Mennonite, was born in 1659. When in his late fifties, around 1715 or shortly thereafter, he ventured across the Atlantic and settled near Cornwall, Pennsylvania. Johann died and was buried in 1743 near Lancaster, Pennsylvania.

Brought over with him to America was his son Jacob, born on the winter solstice of 1694, and his daughter Maria, born in 1702. In 1724, in Mannheim, Pennsylvania, Maria Schnebele married the son of immigrants Hans Hersche and Anna Geunder. That son had Americanized his name and become known as Andrew Hershey. The Schnebele name was likewise Americanized to Snavely (or Snively). The Hershey and Snavely clans would continue to happily intermarry, ultimately producing, in 1857, Milton Snavely Hershey, the son of Henry Hershey and Fanny Snavely.

Milton S. Hershey, of course, would go on to found the world's largest producer of chocolate confections. Less well known is that Hershey failed miserably in his first several attempts to launch a candy company, first in Philadelphia, then in Chicago, and finally in New York City. All of those ventures were financed with Snively/Snavely family money. Hershey ultimately succeeded in launching the successful Lancaster Caramel Company in 1883. In 1900, he sold the caramel company to focus exclusively on chocolate confections. With proceeds from that sale, he purchased 40,000 acres of undeveloped land and built not only the world's largest chocolate facility, but an entire company town as well.

As for Maria's brother, Jacob Schnebele, he died in August of 1766 in Cumberland County, Pennsylvania, but not before fathering an astounding nineteen children. One of those was son Andrew, who himself fathered fourteen kids. From that branch of the family tree would emerge John Andrew "Papa John" Snively, who headed off to Florida in the early 1900s to seek his fortune. By the 1950s, Snively Groves was the largest shipper of fresh fruit in the state of Florida.

Avis Snively, who exchanged vows with Ingram Cecil Connor, Jr. on March 22, 1945, was the daughter of Papa John. On November 5, 1946, Coon Dog and Avis gave birth to their first child and only son, Ingram Cecil Connor III, later known as Gram Parsons. Soon after, the family relocated to Waycross, Georgia, where, as with Winter Haven, the Snively family owned a massive amount of land devoted to citrus fruit production. It was there that young Ingram "Gram" Connor was raised.

The Connor family home in Waycross, as would be expected, was large and luxurious and there were numerous servants in attendance, all of whom had considerably more skin pigmentation than did the Connors. Coon Dog and Avis entertained frequently and both were well known to be heavy drinkers; there were hushed rumors that they were 'swingers' as well. As Gram's younger sister, known as Little Avis, would later recall, "Things were mighty strange around the house."

In September of 1957, when Gram was not yet eleven, he was sent off to attend the Bowles School, a combination prep school and military academy in Jacksonville, Florida. While attending Bowles, he became a member of the Centurions, the school's version of an elite fraternity. The following year, just before Christmas 1958, Ingram Cecil "Coon Dog" Connor, Jr. was found sprawled across his bed in the family home, a bullet hole in his right temple. A .38-caliber handgun was found nearby. There was no note to be found. Cecil's brother Tom had visited just the month before, around Thanksgiving, and Coon Dog had told him that he'd never been happier and that life with Avis was wonderful. Curiously, his death was initially ruled to be accidental but the cause of death was later changed to suicide.

Just ten months before Cecil's death, Papa John Snively, Avis' dad, had also died, so she suddenly found herself with both of the men in her life gone. And yet, according to a family member, she never appeared to grieve and she displayed a "total lack of remorse" over anything she may have done to drive Coon Dog to allegedly commit suicide (by some reports, she had been having an affair). Some six months after Cecil's death, Avis, Gram and Little Avis boarded a train for a cross-country trip. They were gone the entire summer. Not long after returning, the family moved from the house that Cecil had died in and Avis soon met Robert Ellis Parsons, who owned a business that ostensibly specialized in leasing heavy construction equipment. Parsons' clients, curiously enough, happened to be in Cuba, then under the brutal hand of Batista, and in various South American countries that were also under the thumb of US-installed dictators

The Snively clan took an immediate dislike to Parsons, who was described by one family member as a "greedy son of a bitch." Nevertheless, Avis quickly married him and Bob Parsons quickly took control of her life. One of his first moves was to adopt Gram and Avis, even going so far as to have new birth certificates drawn up listing him as their biological father (though it remains unclear exactly how he could have done that). He also promptly impregnated Avis and convinced her to file a $1.5 million lawsuit against her brother, John, Jr., and her sister, Evalyn. The suit was settled out of court with Avis receiving an unspecified number of citrus groves, but the real repercussions would be felt some fifteen years later with the bankruptcy of much of the family business in 1974.

In 1960, just a year after marrying, Bob and Avis added daughter Diane to the family. Also added was eighteen-year-old babysitter Bonnie, whom Bob immediately began an affair with, which apparently was not a very well-kept secret. What was a somewhat better kept secret is that, in the early 1960s, following the Cuban revolution, Robert Ellis Parsons became involved in what was referred to as the 'Cuban cause,' which is to say that he had very close ties to the leaders of an exile group that was being trained in Polk County, Florida, to overthrow the Cuban government. On at least one occasion, he brought young Gram along to visit the group's training camp. As luck would have it, a team from *Life* magazine happened to also be there that day and Gram was photographed at the camp. When Avis was informed of that development, she worked quickly to insure that those photos were never published. To this day, they have never surfaced.

During that same era, Bob Parsons converted a downtown warehouse that he owned into a teen nightclub to showcase the talents of his 'son,' Ingram "Gram" Parsons, who sang and played keyboards and the guitar. Circa 1963, Gram got a folk combo together that was known as the Shilos. During the summer of 1964, the summer before Gram's senior year of high school, the band spent a month in New York. During that brief time, Parsons, as fate would have it, met and bonded with Brandon DeWilde, Richie Furay, and John Phillips. He would meet up with all three again a couple years later in Laurel Canyon.

Despite having expressed an early preference for Annapolis or West Point, Gram applied to Harvard and Johns Hopkins. And despite decidedly unimpressive grades and test scores, he was accepted by Harvard, purportedly due to an essay he submitted that he likely didn't actually write. During his last year of high school, Gram and the Shilos booked an hour-long gig at the campus radio station at, of all places, Bob Jones University. At his high school graduation in June of 1965, Gram was in his cap and gown and all set to proceed with the ceremonies when he was pulled aside and informed that his mother Avis had suddenly and unexpectedly passed away. Seemingly unaffected by the news, he chose to participate in the ceremonies. A classmate and friend has said that there was no sign that anything was troubling Gram that day as he went through the graduation rituals.

Avis had died in the hospital, reportedly of alcohol poisoning, right after Bob Parsons had smuggled her in a bottle of scotch. Gram's mother was just forty-two at the time of her death. His father, Coon Dog, had only made it to the age of forty-one. Neither of their kids, Gram or Little Avis, would make it even that far.

Soon after his mother's death, Gram received a draft notice from the Selective Service. Not to worry though—Bob quickly got him a 4-F deferment and Gram happily went off to Harvard, enrolling in September of 1965. By February of 1966, just five months later, Gram had had enough of Harvard and he withdrew. According to some sources, he never really attended school at all, but rather spent all his time taking in the folk music scene in Cambridge and putting his own band together. Gram arrived at Harvard a few years too late to catch that scene at its peak. In the early 1960s, the college town had been one of the cradles of the resurgent folk movement, hosting such luminaries as Joan Baez, Bob Dylan, Bob Neuwirth, Tom Rush, Pete Seeger, Richard and Mimi Fariña, Geoff and Maria Muldaur, Eric Andersen and Joni Mitchell.

The epicenter of the Cambridge folk scene was the legendary Club 47, opened in 1958 as a jazz and blues venue. A very young Joan Baez, whose reputedly CIA-connected father worked at nearby MIT, was the first folkie to take the stage, not long after the club opened. Dylan reportedly first performed there in 1961, taking the stage between the billed acts. The scene hit its peak in the summer of 1962, which was the Cambridge equivalent of the Haight's Summer of Love. The Cambridge scene, and others in Greenwich Village and elsewhere, were necessary precursors to the Laurel Canyon scene, which was essentially created by taking the music of that earlier scene, particularly the work of Dylan and Seeger, and mixing it with the instrumentation being utilized across the pond by a band known as the Beatles. It is entirely fitting then that, as with Laurel Canyon, the Cambridge scene came complete with its own resident psycho killer.

In addition to the folk scene hitting its peak in the summer of 1962, something else newsworthy happened in Cambridge that summer: a lot of women started turning up dead—six of them in that first summer alone, and seven more over the next couple of years. And as Susan Kelly noted in *The Boston Stranglers*, one of those victims was killed right across the street from Club 47: "Just across the street from [victim Beverly Samans'] apartment, a very young and not yet famous Joan Baez and an equally youthful and unknown Bob Dylan were playing to reverently hushed audiences at the Club 47."

As the title of Kelly's book implies, there actually was no such person as the Boston Strangler, but that didn't stop authorities and the media from pinning all the murders on one Albert DeSalvo, far better known as the Boston Strangler. Just as Laurel Canyon would have Charles Manson as its unofficial mascot, the earlier scene in Cambridge had Albert DeSalvo. Cambridge had something else that Laurel Canyon would later have—Paul Rothchild, who worked at Club 47 and went on to produce the Doors.

Folkie Richard Fariña, by the way, was the husband of Mimi Baez, Joan's younger sister. Fariña had attended Cornell University as an engineering major. Cornell also happened to be where Joan and Mimi's dad, Albert Baez, conducted classified research. Albert Baez tended to move around a lot, popping up for varying periods of time at Stanford, UC Berkeley, Cornell, and MIT, all of which have been revealed through declassified documents as hotbeds of MK-ULTRA research. Albert Baez also traveled abroad, to France, Switzerland, and, in 1951, to Baghdad, Iraq, where he spent a year purportedly teaching physics and building a physics laboratory at the University of Baghdad. Nineteen-fifty-one also happened to be the year that Mossadegh was duly elected in neighboring Iran and the CIA immediately began planning a coup to oust him, but I'm sure that that is just a coincidence.

Anyway, Fariña married Mimi when he was twenty-six and she was just seventeen. The two of them, along with Joan, became stars of the Cambridge folk music scene, which they were introduced to when Albert Baez moved the family to Boston in 1958 when he went to work at MIT. Richard and Mimi's marriage was a short one, alas, as Richard Fariña was killed in a motorcycle accident in Carmel, California, on, of all days, April 30, 1966. On that very same day, in nearby San Francisco, Anton Szandor LaVey declared it to be the dawn of the Age of Satan.

But perhaps I've gotten sidetracked here…

During Gram's brief time at Harvard, he began gathering together what would become the International Submarine Band. When he dropped out in early 1966, he and his new bandmates moved to the Bronx in New York, where Gram rented an eleven-room party house where marijuana and LSD flowed freely. One unofficial member of his band was child-actor-turned-aspiring-musician Brandon DeWilde, known in the 1950s as "the king of child actors." Parsons and DeWilde worked together on demo tapes during their time in New York.

In November/December 1966, nine months after leaving Harvard for New York, Gram ventured out to California. While there he met a certain Nancy Ross, who at the time was living with David Crosby. In Ben

Fong-Torres' *Hickory Wind*, Ross provides some interesting biographical details: "I grew up with David Crosby here in town… I was thirteen when we met. David and I were part of the debutante set… My father was a captain in the Royal Air Force of England… I married Eleanor Roosevelt's grandson, Rex, at sixteen, seventeen. I was still married to Rex when I was with David… The marriage lasted a couple of years. I got an apartment and started designing restaurants for Elmer Valentine of Whisky-a-Go-Go."

At age nineteen, Ross went with Crosby "up to his little bachelor apartment, where I drew pentagrams on the wall." Soon after, Crosby bought a house on Beverly Glen and Ross moved in with him. That is where Gram Parsons found Nancy Ross and stole her away from David Crosby: "Brandon DeWilde, who was a good friend of David's and Peter Fonda's, brought Gram up to our Beverly Glen house one Christmas time." According to Nancy, Gram quickly stole her heart. Shortly after, in early 1967, Parsons permanently relocated to Los Angeles with his band in tow. According to Fong-Torres, Gram—who received up to $100,000 a year from his trust fund, a considerable amount of money in the mid-1960s—"found a house for the rest of the band on Willow Glen Avenue, off Laurel Canyon Boulevard and just north of Sunset." He and Nancy found an apartment together nearby.

Meanwhile, back home, Bob Parsons had married Bonnie shortly after the death of Avis, and the newlywed couple had then moved with Little Avis and Diane to New Orleans. Back in Waycross, the Connor family home that had been abandoned after Coon Dog's alleged suicide had been occupied since 1960 by the family of Sheriff Robert E. Lee (and no, I'm not making that up). In late 1968, on the eve of the election that put Richard Nixon in the White House, the stately home exploded from within and caught fire. The cause of the explosion was never determined.

Once ensconced in the hills above Los Angeles, Gram Parsons and his band began recording what would prove to be their only album, *Safe at Home*, which some pop music historians regard as the first country-rock album, but others regard as a straight country album performed by guys who look like they should be playing in a rock band. Whatever the case, by the time the album was released, in 1968, Gram had disbanded the International Submarine Band and unofficially joined the Byrds, replacing the recently departed David Crosby, who had determined that there just wasn't quite room in the band for both he and his ego.

Parsons' time with the Byrds was rather brief, just four to five months, after which he was replaced by virtuoso guitarist Clarence White, who had been part of the Cambridge folk scene. Despite his brief tenure, Parsons is credited with having a major influence on the album that the band produced during that period, *Sweetheart of the Rodeo*. Soon after leaving the Byrds, Parsons ran into Richie Furay, who was casting about for a new band after the breakup of Buffalo Springfield. Gram and Furay considered working together but quickly realized that they wanted to go in different musical directions, so Furay went to work putting Poco together while Parsons assembled the Flying Burrito Brothers. By 1969, Gram's new band had taken shape, with Gram supplying lead vocals and guitar, Chris Hillman also on guitar, Chris Etheridge on bass, and "Sneaky Pete" Kleinow on pedal steel guitar. With various other local musicians sitting in, the band recorded and released *The Gilded Palace of Sin*. Byrd Michael Clarke would later join the band, as would soon-to-be-Eagle Bernie Leadon.

Also in 1969, late in the year, twenty-three-year-old Gram hooked up with sixteen-year-old Gretchen Burrell. His new love interest was the daughter of high-profile news anchor Larry Burrell, who was very well-connected in Hollywood. Before long, Gretchen had moved into Parsons' place at the notorious Chateau Marmont Hotel, with her parents' blessings—because most wealthy parents, I would think, want their teenage daughter living in a debauched rock star's drug den. Another guest at the hotel at that same time, incidentally, was Rod Stewart, at whose home one of the victims of the so-called Sunset Strip Killers would later be last seen.

At the tail end of 1969, Parsons and his fellow Burrito Brothers had the dubious distinction of playing as one of the opening acts at the Rolling Stones' infamous free show at Altamont Speedway. Gram had become a very close confidant of the Stones, particularly Keith Richards, and he would later be credited with being the inspiration for the country flavor evident on the Stones' *Let it Bleed* album.

Parsons had first met up with the Stones when they were in Los Angeles in the summer of 1968 to mix their *Beggar's Banquet* album. Also hooking up with the Stones around that same time was Phil Kaufman, who once boasted that he had slept with every one of the convicted murderesses in the Manson Family. Kaufman initially lived with Charlie and his girls after being released from prison in March of 1968, and he thereafter remained what Kaufman himself described as a "sympathetic cousin" to Manson. He also went to work as the Rolling Stones' road manager for their 1969 American tour, which is the type of job apparently best filled by ex-convict friends of Charles Manson.

In late summer of 1969, following the curious death of Brian Jones in July, the Stones were back in LA to complete their *Let It Bleed* album and prepare for yet another tour. According to Ben Fong-Torres, writing in *Hickory Wind*, "Mick and Keith stayed at Stephen Stills' house near Laurel Canyon… Before Stills, the house had been occupied by Peter Tork of the Monkees." For the record, other reports hold that that house was in, not near, Laurel Canyon.

On December 6, 1969, temporary Laurel Canyon residents Mick and Keith, along with permanent Laurel Canyon residents Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young and the Flying Burrito Brothers, all gathered at a desolate speedway known as Altamont to stage a free concert. By the time it was over, four people were dead and another 850 concertgoers were injured to varying degrees, mostly by members of the Hell's Angels swinging leaded pool cues. The Angels had, of course, been hired by the Stones to ostensibly provide security. That decision is almost universally cast as an innocent mistake on the part of the band, though such a claim is difficult to believe. It was certainly no secret that the reactionary motorcycle clubs, formed by former military men, were openly hostile to hippies and anti-war activists; as early as 1965, they had brutally attacked peaceful anti-war demonstrators while police, who had courteously allowed the Angels to pass through their line, looked on. It was also known that the Angels were heavily involved in trafficking meth, a drug that was widely blamed for the ugliness that had descended over the Haight.

Perhaps less well known was that more than a few of the biker gangs of the 1960s had uncomfortably close ties to Charlie Manson, particularly a club known as the Straight Satans, one of whose members, Danny DeCarlo, served as the Family's sergeant-at-arms, watching over Charlie's arsenal of weapons. DeCarlo also, by some reports, had close ties to the Process. At least one of the performers taking the stage at

Altamont, curiously enough, also had close ties to some of the outlaw biker gangs; as was revealed in his autobiography, Crosby "had friends in every Bay Area chapter of the Hell's Angels."

The death that the concert at Altamont will always be remembered for is that of Meredith Hunter, the young man who was stabbed to death by members of the Hell's Angels right in front of the stage while the band (in this case, the Rolling Stones) played on. The song they were playing, contrary to most accounts of the incident, was the Process-inspired Sympathy For The Devil, as was initially reported in *Rolling Stone* based on the accounts of several reporters on the scene and a review of the unedited film stock.

Most accounts claim that Hunter was killed while the band performed Under My Thumb, but all such claims appear to be based on the mainstream snuff film *Gimme Shelter*, in which the killing was deliberately presented out of sequence. In the absence of any alternative filmic versions of Hunter's death, the Maysles brothers' film became the default official orthodoxy. Not well known is that someone went to great lengths to insure that there would be only one available version of events; as *Rolling Stone* reported, shortly after the concert, "One weird Altamont story has to do with a young Berkeley filmmaker who claims to have gotten 8MM footage of the killing. He got home from the affair Saturday and began telling his friends about his amazing film. His house was knocked over the next night, completely rifled. The thief took only his film, nothing else."

Contrary to the impression created by *Gimme Shelter*, Hunter was killed not long into the Stones' set. But as the film's editor, Charlotte Zwerin, explained to Salon.com some thirty years later, the climax of the movie always has to come at the end: "We're talking about the structure of a film. And what kind of concert film are you going to be able to have after somebody has been murdered in front of the stage? Hanging around for another hour would have been really wrong in terms of the film." What wasn't wrong, apparently, was deliberately altering the sequence of events in what was ostensibly a documentary film.

One of the young cameramen working for the Maysles brothers that day, as it turns out, was a guy by the name of George Lucas. (It is unclear whether it was Lucas who captured the conveniently unobstructed footage of the murder.) Not long after, Lucas would begin a meteoric rise to the very top of the Hollywood food chain. He would be joined there by another film director by the name of Steven Spielberg; the two of them would emerge as arguably the most critically acclaimed and influential filmmakers of their generation. Just as the second wave of Laurel Canyon bands, with names like the Eagles and CSN, would transform the music industry from a community of artists into a vast money-making machine—ushering in the era of stadium concerts, multi-million selling albums and unprecedented profits—Spielberg and Lucas would perform a similar trick with the film business, producing blockbusters like *ET*, *Raiders of the Lost Arc*, *Jaws* and *Star Wars*. It seems perfectly natural then that in the mid- to late-1960s, USC film student Spielberg was living on Lookout Mountain in Laurel Canyon.

Many of the accounts of the tragedy at Altamont include the dubious claim that Hunter can unmistakably be seen drawing a gun just before being jumped and killed by the Angels. Some accounts even have Hunter firing the alleged gun. What can certainly be fairly clearly seen is the large knife being brought down into Hunter's back, but the footage is ambiguous at best as far as Hunter allegedly brandishing a gun. The Angel who was charged with the murder and then ultimately acquitted, Alan David Passaro, was found floating facedown in a reservoir in March of 1985 with $10,000 in his pocket. Despite a widespread belief to the contrary, Passaro's acquittal was not based on the jury having been convinced that Hunter had drawn a gun, but rather on the fact that the knife wounds that killed Hunter were apparently upstrokes, which meant that they were not the wounds inflicted on-camera by Passaro; someone else continued to stab Hunter after he was down, and it was those wounds, which the cameras didn't clearly record, that killed him.

About one year after Altamont, otherwise obscure singer/songwriter Don McLean penned the lyrics to what was destined to become one of the most iconic songs in the annals of popular music: American Pie. Those lyrics are essentially a chronological recitation of various tragedies that shaped the world of popular music. Not long after a reference to the August 1969 Manson murders and their connection to the Laurel Canyon music scene, and just before a reference to the October 1970 death of Janis Joplin, can be found the following verse in which McLean characterized the death of Hunter as a ritualized murder, with Mick Jagger in the role of Satan:

"And there we were, all in one place, a generation Lost in Space / With no time left to start again / So, come on, Jack be nimble, Jack be quick, Jack Flash sat on a Candlestick, 'cause… / Fire is the Devil's only friend / Oh, and as I watched him on the stage, my hands were clenched in fists of rage / No angel born in hell, could break that Satan's spell / And as the flames climbed high into the night, to light the sacrificial rite / I saw Satan laughing with delight, the day the music died."

As was the custom with big events in the mid- to late-1960s, particularly in the northern California area, Altamont was drenched in acid. And as was also the custom at that time, that acid was provided free-of-charge by Mr. Augustus Owsley Stanley III, also known as The Bear. At the so-called "Human Be-In" staged in January of 1967, for example, Owsley had kindly distributed 10,000 tabs of potent LSD. For the Monterey Pop Festival just five months later, he had cooked up and distributed 14,000 tabs. For Altamont, he did likewise. Also present that day, and featured in the Maysles brothers' film gyrating atop a raised platform near the stage, was the King of the Freaks himself, Vito Paulekas.

Along with Mick and the boys, Gram Parsons made a hasty exit from the chaos at Altamont via the Stones' private helicopter. The next year, his Flying Burrito Brothers released their second album, *Burrito Deluxe*, which was produced by Jim Dickson, the man who had played such a pivotal role in shaping Laurel Canyon's first band, the Byrds. By June, Parsons had been booted out of the band, reportedly due to chronic alcohol and drug abuse. He quickly signed with A&M Records and was partnered with Terry Melcher. Gram soon became a regular visitor to Melcher's Benedict Canyon home, where the self-destructive pair worked on songs together, with Gram on guitar and Melcher on piano. John Phillips became a close associate of Parsons at that time as well.

Meanwhile, sister Avis had been institutionalized back in New Orleans. She had gotten pregnant, after which Bob Parsons had moved quickly to have her committed and to have her marriage annulled. Little Avis reached out repeatedly to big brother Gram for help, but got none.

In late October of 1970, Gram went to A&M and signed out the master tapes of ten songs that he had recorded with Melcher; those tapes were never seen or heard again, as seems to happen from time-to-time with recordings made with Melcher. During roughly that same period of time, Parsons was busted with a briefcase full of prescription drugs. As would be expected, however, the charges were quietly dropped and Gram walked away unscathed.

In 1971, Gram married Gretchen Burrell. The lavish affair was held, curiously enough, at the New Orleans home of step-dad Bob Parsons, a fact that has left Gram's chroniclers somewhat puzzled. Bob Parsons was, after all, the man who had—at least in the eyes of many family members—terrorized and institutionalized Gram's younger sister, carried on a scandalous affair with the family's babysitter, murdered Gram's mother and subsequently married that babysitter, and repeatedly looted the family coffers. And yet it was Bob Parsons, of all people, who Gram trusted to host his wedding, suggesting a bond between the two that would seem to defy conventional explanations.

That same year, Gram spent some time in France, hanging out once again with the Rolling Stones. The following year he was signed to Reprise Records by Mo Ostin and he and Gretchen moved back into the Chateau Marmont, where Gram and Emmylou Harris, who had been raised on various military bases in Virginia, began working on the songs that would make up his first solo album. In 1973, with that first solo album, entitled simply *GP*, due for release, "Gram and Gretchen finally moved out of the Chateau Marmont and found a cozy brown wood-shingled house on Laurel Canyon Boulevard, which wound its way north from Hollywood through the stars' favorite canyon," as recounted by Fong-Torres.

Together again with Emmylou, Gram began working on tracks for what would be his posthumously released second solo album, *Grievous Angel*. But as July of 1973 rolled around, a series of tragedies befell Parsons and the people around him. In July of the previous year, Gram's friend Brandon DeWilde—who had introduced Gram to Peter Fonda, Dennis Hopper, Bruce Dern and Jack Nicholson, resulting in Gram's involvement in *The Trip*—had been killed in a traffic accident. A year later, on July 15, 1973, Gram's friend and fellow musician, Clarence White, was hit by a car and killed. According to Fong-Torres, "Around the same time that Clarence White was killed, Sid Kaiser, a familiar face in the Los Angeles rock scene, a close friend of Gram's and, not so incidentally, a source of high-quality drugs, died of a heart attack." Just after those two deaths, "In late July 1973… [Gram's] house in Laurel Canyon burned down."

Other sources, for the record, have placed that house in Topanga Canyon rather than Laurel Canyon. Whatever the case, Gram was home when the house caught fire and he was briefly hospitalized for smoke inhalation. Having lost their home and all their possessions, Gram and Gretchen "moved into Gretchen's father's spacious home on Mulholland Drive in Laurel Canyon." Gram wouldn't live in the Burrell estate long though; on September 19, 1973, Ingram Cecil Connor III died in a nondescript room at the Joshua Tree Inn. His death is usually attributed to a drug overdose, but toxicology reports suggest otherwise. Parsons' death received minimal press coverage, partly because, as fate would have it, singer/songwriter Jim Croce went down in a blaze of glory the very next day, on September 20, 1973. But though the media had moved on, the Gram Parsons story wasn't quite over yet.

Parsons had been a regular visitor to Joshua Tree National Park, where one of his favorite pastimes was said to be ingesting hallucinogenic drugs and then searching for UFOs. Sometimes he would take friends like Keith Richards along with him to help with the search. In September of 1973, Gram was accompanied to Joshua Tree by his personal assistant, Michael Martin, Martin's girlfriend, Dale McElroy, and Parsons' former high school sweetheart, Margaret Fisher. As the story goes, the group soon ran out of pot and quickly dispatched Martin back to LA to pick up a fresh supply. He was, therefore, officially not there at the time of Gram's death, though why he hadn't returned has never been explained, especially given that his job was, specifically, to keep an eye on Gram and monitor his drug intake.

How Gram Parsons died is anyone's guess. There are as many versions of the event as there were witnesses to it. Actually, that's not quite true—there are *more* versions than there were witnesses, because some of those witnesses have told more than one story. Officially, Parsons died of an overdose, but forensic testing revealed no morphine or barbiturates in his blood. Morphine showed up in his liver and urine, but as experts have noted, those toxicology results indicate chronic, but not recent, use. Police seem to have had little interest in getting at the truth and made no apparent effort to reconcile the various conflicting accounts. Details of the incident—such as how long Gram had been left alone, whether he was still alive when discovered, who made that discovery, etc.—were wildly inconsistent in the accounts of Fisher, McElroy, and Frank and Alan Barbary (the Inn's owner and his son). The Barbarys' accounts conflicted both with each other and with the girls' accounts.

At the hospital, police spoke briefly with the two girls and then released them. Within two hours, Phil Kaufman was on the scene to pick up Fisher and McElroy. Bypassing the police and the hospital, Kaufman went directly to the Inn, which the girls had returned to, and quickly hustled them straight back to LA. Police never spoke to either of the women again, despite the conflicting accounts and the open question of what exactly it was that killed Gram.

On the autumnal equinox of 1973, Kaufman and Martin, driving a dilapidated hearse provided by McElroy, arrived at LAX to claim the body of Gram Parsons. If this story is to be believed, then nobody, including the police officer who was nearby, found it at all unusual that two drunken, disheveled men in an obviously out-of-service hearse (it had no license plates and several broken windows) had arrived without any paperwork to claim the body of a deceased celebrity. In fact, according to Kaufman's dubious account, the cop even helped the pair load the casket into the hearse—and then looked the other way when Martin slammed the hearse into a wall on the way out of the hangar.

Kaufman and Martin then drove the body back out to Joshua Tree, doused it with gasoline and set it ablaze. Local police initially speculated that the cremation was "ritualistic," which indeed it was, but such reports were, and continue to be, scoffed at.

On September 26, LAPD detectives, led by anchorman Larry Burrell, came knocking on Kaufman's door with warrants to serve. Bizarrely enough, director Arthur Penn was there with a full crew shooting scenes for the film *Night Moves* with star Gene Hackman. When you are a friend of Charlie Manson's, it would appear, everyone in Hollywood wants to hang out with you. While the crew continued working, Kaufman was taken in by police but he was back just a few hours later. In the end, he and Martin were fined $300 each plus reimbursement for the cost of the coffin.

In January 1974, four months after Parsons' death, *Grievous Angel* was released to critical acclaim and public indifference. Later that year, Gram's adoptive father, Bob Parsons, died from complications of an alcohol-related illness. He had apparently been making moves aimed at gaining control of the deceased musician's estate. By sheer coincidence, no doubt, the deaths of Gram and Bob Parsons were followed by the 1974 bankruptcy of much of the Snively family business. Around that same time, Little Avis gave birth to daughter Flora. Sixteen years later, both were killed in a boating accident in Virginia. Avis had made it all the way to age forty.

17

THE LOST EXPEDITION
OF GENE CLARK

"In later years, toward the end, he would have really bad nightmares. He would wake up in the middle of the night screaming…" Kai Clark, Gene Clark's son

IN MANY WAYS, THE GENE CLARK STORY READS A LOT LIKE THE GRAM Parsons story. Both were considered by their peers to be among Laurel Canyon's brightest stars, yet both are now largely forgotten. Both of their lives were cut tragically short (though Clark lived considerably longer than Parsons). Both of their deaths were overshadowed to some extent by unusual events that occurred just after their passing. Both were considered pioneers of the country-rock genre. Both played for a time with the Byrds. Both recorded duets with Emmylou Harris, and both employed many of the same musicians on their various solo projects. Both had legions of female admirers. Both had a keen interest in UFOs and believed in alien visitations. And both were notorious drug and alcohol abusers.

Harold Eugene Clark was born on November 17, 1944, in Tipton, Missouri, though the year of his birth was frequently reported as 1941. It seems quite likely that Gene Clark himself was the source of that erroneous biographical detail, to avoid questions about the fact that his alleged father was actually overseas for all of 1944.

Tipton is a small town—the kind of town where everyone knows one another by name. In fact, Tipton is kind of like a big park where the same oversized family reunion is held every day of the year. As Bonnie Clark Laible told author John Einarson, "When I was in Tipton, Missouri, the year my grandfather died, in 1954, I found out I was related to almost everyone in the community. Everyone had married people they knew through the various families like Faherty and Sommerhauser. I couldn't throw a stone without hitting a family member!"

Tipton was founded by Mr. William Tipton Seely, a rather wealthy and influential gent who opened a general store circa 1830. A community soon sprang up around his store, as tended to happen in those days, and Seely named his new little fiefdom Round Hill. A decade or so later, in the 1840s, a group of German immigrant families arrived in the area—the Nieuffers, the Lutzs, the Kammerichs, the Schmidts, the Hoens, the Shrecks and the Sommerhausers. Those families proceeded to intermarry to a rather extreme degree.

In the 1850s, Seely lobbied hard to have both the Pacific Railroad and the Butterfield Overland Mail route pass through his little kingdom. Those efforts proved successful, though the railroad was routed a few miles north of Round Hill. Around that new railroad station was born Seely's second town, tiny Tipton, where Gene Clark would spend the early years of his life.

Meanwhile, just before 1800, a group of Irish families led by a Mr. Edmund Faherty settled in southwestern Illinois. In addition to the Fahertys, the group included the Whelans, the O'Haras and the O'Neills. These families also proceeded to intermarry. Some factions of the family eventually crossed over the border into Perryville, Missouri, where they became slave owners. James and Helena Faherty split from the rest of the Missouri herd and moved to Cole Camp, not too far southwest of Tipton. According to chronicler Einarson, the move was recommended by a "priest who feared too much inbreeding among the families."

Oscar Faherty, Gene Clark's maternal grandfather, was born and raised near Tipton, as was the woman who was to be his wife and Gene's grandmother, Rosemary Sommerhauser. Before long, the Fahertys and the Sommerhausers were intermarrying at a furious pace. According to Bonnie Clark, "The Faherty and Sommerhauser families had double cousins going on." On the summer solstice of 1920, Rosemary Sommerhauser Faherty gave birth to Mary Jeanne Faherty, Gene Clark's mother. After completing elementary school, Mary Jeanne was sent away to work as a "domestic servant" for an unnamed wealthy family living near Kansas City, Kansas. The Depression years were pretty rough, from what I hear, but selling off your barely teenage daughter seems a bit harsh.

The other half of Gene Clark's family tree is, curiously enough, shrouded in mystery and secrecy. As chronicler Einarson notes, "Unlike Jeanne Faherty Clark's well-documented family history, the lineage of Gene's father, Kelly George Clark, is far more murky and mysterious." Indeed, Einarson's extensive research turned up little more than the fact that Kelly Clark was born on November 11, 1918, in Lenexa, Kansas, and that, according to family lore, there might be Native American blood in the family tree that has been concealed. Or maybe Pop Clark's history is murky for other reasons.

What is known is that Kelly Clark apparently quit high school and went to work for the parks department as a groundskeeper. While tending the grounds at the Milburn Country Club, he met young Jeanne Faherty, who apparently was taken there fairly frequently by her employers—because most wealthy people, it seems reasonable to conclude, take their young servants with them to the country club. After a relatively brief courtship, the two married on May 29, 1941, and promptly started a family.

Bonnie Clark was born on March 13, 1942, just over nine months after the couple exchanged vows. Kelly Katherine was to be the couple's second child, but she was, alas, reportedly stillborn on the summer solstice of 1943. Nothing suspicious about that. Nor about the peculiar fact that, while Gene and other members of the family would be laid to rest in the Sommerhauser family plot at St. Andrews cemetery in Tipton, "Kelly Katherine's is a solitary stone at the far south end of the cemetery," as recounted by John Einarson in *Mr. Tambourine Man*.

A few months after Kelly Katherine Clark's curious death, Kelly George Clark was called up for radio and gunnery school. Following training, he was assigned to a unit that served as General George Patton's mop-up crew. Clark's team landed at LeHavre, France, and steadily made their way towards Germany. By May of 1945, immediately following the fall of the Third Reich, Clark was in Berlin. Meanwhile, the third Clark child, Gene, was born in November 1944. Officially, Jeanne Clark was impregnated while her husband was briefly home on leave, presumably in February 1944, though it seems very unlikely that he would have been at home at that time. In any event, Gene spent the first years of his life in a house at 304 Morgan Street, directly across the street from a funeral home.

Kelly Clark returned home at the end of WWII and promptly impregnated his wife once again; Nancy Patricia Clark was born on July 19, 1946. The family would continue to grow until there were no fewer than ten Clark siblings, all living in a tiny house far off the beaten path. As a former classmate and friend told Einarson, "You had to take a dirt road up and it was the only house back in the woods, way up high. I couldn't believe the first time Gene took me there… It was kind of spooky in a way." As sister Bonnie has acknowledged, the Clarks "were known as a very strange family in the community." That may have had something to do with the family's rather unusual choice of recreational activities, such as throwing knives at laundry detergent boxes: "Gene was very good at it. We both were. This was one of the things we did as a family function," noted Bonnie.

Gene would have a lifelong fascination with knives—and guns. According to friend Joe Larson, after Clark began making money with the Byrds, he "started buying guns." In the cover photo for one of Gene's solo albums, he is sitting on a picnic table. As brother Rick Clark has noted, "there are bullet holes in the table where we would shoot at cans and bottles from the back porch with Gene's guns." One of those guns was an antique rifle given to Gene by fellow gun aficionado David Crosby. Apparently a lot of those peacenik hippie types in Laurel Canyon were packing heat.

Shockingly enough, most of the members of that "strange family" living in the backwoods did not fare so well as they grew into adulthood. As of the time of the writing of Einarson's *Mr. Tambourine Man* (2005), one Clark sibling had been diagnosed as a paranoid schizophrenic, another suffered from severe bouts of clinical depression, another was homeless due to untreated mental illness, another was on psychiatric meds most of her life before dying suddenly in 1987, another was bipolar, and yet another was diagnosed with severe mental retardation. Even more shockingly, mysterious father Kelly Clark was said to be a raging alcoholic who suffered from severe mood swings.

Gene's formal education began in 1949 at a strict Catholic school in Raytown. According to big sister Bonnie, quoted by Einarson, "there were truly some abusive people [there]. I can remember some of those nuns being real nightmares." By 1960, the family had moved to Bonner Springs, Kansas, where Gene attended high school. He was known to hang with a rough crowd during his high school days, and a few of his buddies from those years ended up serving prison time.

On August 12, 1963, Gene Clark, still a few months shy of his nineteenth birthday, was inexplicably offered a spot in the New Christy Minstrels vocal group; he was on a plane to California the very next day. The Minstrels were a very busy touring group, averaging some 300 dates a year, so Gene would spend a lot of time on airplanes during his six-month tenure as a Minstrel. Curiously though, fear of flying would be cited a couple years later as Gene's reason for leaving the Byrds.

One of the gigs the group played, on January 14, 1964, was at the White House as special guests of Lyndon Johnson, who had taken office less than two months earlier following the assassination of John Kennedy. After the performance, Gene and other Minstrels (including Barry McGuire, who, as was discussed previously, released Eve Of Destruction a couple years later) went out on the town and partied with Johnson's two daughters, Lynda Bird and Luci Baines, who were just nineteen and sixteen at the time.

As the story goes, Gene quit the New Christy Minstrels a couple of weeks later, in February of 1964, after hearing the first album released by an upstart British band known as the Beatles. Clark immediately headed out to Los Angeles, as would so many others, where he regularly hung out at the Troubadour, just off the Sunset Strip. It was there that he met one James Joseph McGuinn III, who had, curiously enough, once been in the New Christy Minstrels himself, for exactly one day. The two quickly formed a folk duo and began writing songs, hoping to soon get bookings at the Troubadour and other local clubs. But according to McGuinn, the pair "never got to the stage of performing as a duo… Crosby came along quite quickly."

McGuinn was initially quite wary of the interloper, but the three nevertheless became a trio known at first as the Jet Set. With Crosby, of course, came Jim Dickson, who would transform the trio into the Byrds. According to Vern Gosdin—who, along with his brother, Rex, played with many of the Laurel Canyon musicians—it was Jim Dickson who "put the Byrds together, you might say. If I'm telling the truth, this is what I think: I don't think the Byrds had any ideas whatsoever, and Jim Dickson put it all together for them." Dickson originally envisioned the band as a Beatlesque quartet, with Gene as John (lead vocalist/rhythm guitarist), Roger as George (lead guitar and vocals), and Crosby as Paul (bass and vocals).

This arrangement proved unworkable, however, since Crosby was reportedly unable to sing and play bass at the same time. This then led Dickson to recruit mandolin player Chris Hillman to take over bass duties, leaving Crosby with little to do other than provide harmony vocals. That didn't sit well though with Lord Crosby, so he began a relentless campaign aimed at eroding Gene's confidence in his own guitar playing ability. Crosby's constant ridicule paid off and he soon enough took over rhythm guitar duties. The five-man band was then complete: Gene would provide most lead vocals and bang the tambourine, Jim/Roger McGuinn would provide the band's signature twelve-string guitar sound and harmony vocals, Crosby would provide serviceable (at best) rhythm guitar work and harmony vocals, and Chris Hillman and Michael Clarke would pretend (initially at least) to play the bass guitar and the drums.

The band released its first single as the Beefeaters. The record was produced by Jim Dickson, who would go on to guide the Byrds' career, and Paul Rothchild, who would go on to guide the Doors' career. The single, released by Elektra Records, went nowhere. By November of 1964 though, the band, renamed the Byrds, was signed with Columbia Records. Just two months later they would record *Mr. Tambourine Man* and become huge stars. But there was a hurdle to overcome first; as Einarson notes, "[Gene] had received his draft notice. Roger and Michael had already dodged that bullet; now it was Gene's turn." Not to worry though; Gene was able to dodge that bullet as well. According to Einarson, Gene was deemed unfit for military service due to an "old football disease," identified as "Osgood Schlatter's Disease." Luckily for Gene, it apparently didn't prevent him from playing football but it did keep him out of the service.

Gene Clark was, without question, an astoundingly prolific songwriter. Relatively few of his compositions, however, appeared on Byrds' albums, which instead featured a lot of covers. The truth is that Gene had more than enough songs—and reportedly good songs—to fill the early Byrds' albums. Even Crosby has acknowledged that Clark "was prolific. He would show up every week with new songs and they were great songs." Crosby wasn't so generous though with his assessments of Gene's talents back in the day. According to most accounts, it was the jealousy of Crosby and McGuinn that kept Gene's tracks off the records.

In those days, there wasn't a lot of money to be made by performing and recording music. The real money was in song royalties, so Clark was paid considerably more than the rest of the band. As McGuinn put it, "Gene was into Ferraris and we were still starving." That disproportionate compensation quickly drove a wedge between Clark and the other two thirds of the original trio. At times, Gene even shared writing credits on his songs just to get them onto albums. The classic Eight Miles High, for example, was written by Gene but credited to Crosby and McGuinn as well.

As has been noted previously, Vito Paulekas played a key role in launching the careers of the Byrds. And so it is that we find references to Vito and his entourage in Einarson's telling of the Gene Clark story: "Vito and Carl were legendary hipsters on the LA scene and were into LSD long before anyone else. It was at their studio that Gene believed the Byrds truly found their magic as a group." According to Morgan Cavett, the son of Oscar-winning screenwriter Frank Cavett, "They had this group of hippies before that term came into use. Somehow they had hooked up with the Byrds."

When the band launched its very first national tour in July 1965, "Along for the trip were LA scene-makers Vito and Carl and their entourage of crazed hippie dancers whose uninhibited gyrations caused quite a stir in the heartlands of America." Einarson's account though is not quite accurate; Vito stayed home while first lieutenant Carl Franzoni led the faction of the troupe that hit the road with the Byrds. Assisting Franzoni was Byrds' roadie Brian McLean, who shortly thereafter would beat out Mansonite Bobby Beausoleil for the rhythm guitarist position in Love. As troupe dancer Lizzie Donohue would later recall, many of those in America's hinterlands "thought we were from outer space. In Paris, Illinois, they actually threw us off the dance floor." Gene Clark would later remember that the band "could have played out of tune all day. Nobody ever heard us anyway." According to many accounts, the band oftentimes did play out of tune all day. And all night as well.

When the band followed up its first national tour with a tour of the UK, the Byrds were not well received. Often the band would spend more time tuning their instruments between songs than they did actually playing those songs. And by most accounts, the boys made virtually no attempt to forge a connection with the audience. Gene did though forge a bond with the Rolling Stones' Brian Jones, whose life would be tragically cut short a couple years later.

Sometime after that tour, members of the Byrds famously met with members of the Beatles and they all dropped acid together. Some accounts hold that that meeting took place in the Cielo Drive home where Sharon Tate would later be butchered, but it appears to have actually taken place at another home in Benedict Canyon, one that may have been formerly owned by Zsa Zsa Gabor. Laurel Canyon stalwart Peter Fonda was reportedly in attendance, and legend holds that it was he who supplied a very high John Lennon with the line, "I know what it's like to be dead."

In March of 1966, a press release announced Gene Clark's departure from the Byrds. McGuinn has alleged that Dickson and co-manager Eddie Ticknor encouraged Gene to split from the band so that they could exploit his solo potential. If so, then they must have been greatly disappointed since Clark never came close to living up to that potential.

One of the first offers Gene received upon his departure from the Byrds was from drummer Dewey Martin, who invited Clark to join the newly formed Buffalo Springfield. Clark declined, choosing to form his own band, the first of which was dubbed the Group. As Einarson explains, "Six weeks after rehearsals began, Gene Clark and the Group debuted at the Whisky-A-Go-Go on June 22 for a two-week stand, on the heels of a dazzling six-week stint by new group Buffalo Springfield." Around that same time, Clark began having an affair with Michelle Phillips, who lived with hubby John Phillips just a couple of blocks down the canyon.

Following what were reportedly unproductive recording sessions, Gene's first post-Byrds formation broke up. On July 10, he was signed as a solo artist and he entered the studio the next month accompanied by doomed guitarist Clarence White, Brian Wilson collaborator Van Dyke

Parks, our old friend Glen Campbell, the ubiquitous Chris Hillman, and Vern and Rex Gosdin, who had gotten their start alongside Chris Hillman in the formation known as the Hillmen. In January of 1967, Clark's first solo album was released as *Gene Clark with the Gosdin Brothers*.

Like many of the other records we have stumbled upon while on this journey, some fans and critics regard the record as the first country-rock album (released a year-and-a-half before the country-rock forays by the Byrds and Buffalo Springfield). The album, unfortunately, was quickly overshadowed by the Byrds' own *Younger than Yesterday*, which Columbia released just two weeks after releasing Gene's solo effort.

By March of 1967, Clark had put together a new version of the Group, which debuted at the Whisky with Clark, Clarence White and two members of the Mamas and the Papas' touring group, whom Gene had met through his paramour, Michelle Phillips. At the tail end of 1967, Gene briefly rejoined the Byrds, replacing the fired David Crosby. The reunion lasted only a few weeks but it was long enough for Gene to contribute to *The Notorious Byrd Brothers*, released in January 1968.

When Gene had left the Byrds, it should be noted, he had done so empty handed. Not so with Crosby, who was given a substantial settlement upon his departure. He used that money to purchase a yacht, which he dubbed the Mayan. Crosby thereafter was known to spend extended periods of time aboard the Mayan, sailing to and from various locations. He was not the only canyon musician to own and operate such a vessel; John Phillips had one as well, as did Dennis Wilson. All three of them also had a passion for controlled substances. And guns. Perhaps there is some connection there.

Following his brief reunion with the Byrds, Clark composed the original score for *Marijuana*, a short anti-drug film hosted by Sonny Bono. His next project, dubbed *The Fantastic Expedition of Dillard and Clark*, featured Gene, Doug Dillard (formerly of the Dillards, from whom Buffalo Springfield, it will be recalled, had obtained their instruments), Bernie Leadon (who had been a peripheral member of San Diego's Scottsville Squirrel Barkers, alongside Chris Hillman), and, of course, Chris Hillman.

By that time Gene had married and his wife, Carlie, was an avid reader of occult literature, particularly, as she recalled, "this lady named Madame Blavatsky." Circa 1971, Clark was approached by his friend and fellow Canyonite, Dennis Hopper, to compose songs for the soundtrack to Hopper's *American Dreamer*. Around that same time, according to Einarson, "Gene's running buddies included David Carradine and John Barrymore." That was, to say the least, a rather curious group of friends. According to authors such as Craig Heimbichner, Martin P. Starr, and John Carter, Dennis Hopper and John Carradine (David's dad) were both members of the infamous Agape Lodge of the OTO, alongside doomed rocket scientist Jack Parsons, actor Dean Stockwell, and doppelgängers L. Ron Hubbard and Robert Heinlein. According to Gregory Mank, writing in *Hollywood's Hellfire Club*, John Carradine and John Barrymore were also members of the so-called "Bundy Drive Boys," a group that engaged in such practices as incest, rape and cannibalism. And according to Ed Sanders, among the upscale homes visited by a Process work group "was the John Barrymore mansion, located at 1301 Summit Ridge Drive."

The year 1972 saw yet another brief Byrds reunion, with another record released, this one in February of 1973. Gene next began recording sessions for a new solo project, financed by his friend Gary Legon, the husband of porn star and Ivory Soap model Marilyn Chambers. Joining Gene on some of the tracks was Emmylou Harris, whose hubby Tom Slocum—a descendant of famed explorer Joshua Slocum—was a member of Gene's inner circle.

After briefly relocating to Albion, California with his wife and kids, Clark moved back to Laurel Canyon, where he moved into a home on Stanley Hills Drive with his new girlfriend, Terri Messina. Born into considerable wealth, Messina was the daughter of a prominent area physician. In 1963, she had enrolled in theater arts at UCLA, which quite likely would have placed her in the company of a couple of other UCLA theater arts students named Jim Morrison and Ray Manzarek. Terri and Gene moved in together in the summer of 1977. According to Einarson, Messina "laterally work[ed] in film editing, [but] she was better known in exclusive circles as a supplier of cocaine." And heroin. As has been previously discussed, during that time period the "entire Laurel Canyon lifestyle revolved around cocaine," and "Gene fell into line, becoming a legendary partier."

Canyon resident Ken Mansfield recalled those dark years: "That particular point in my life, and most of us, was the craziest time of all, when we were all into drugs the most. Tommy's [Kaye] house was one of the houses we hung out at a lot. David Carradine was my neighbor in Laurel Canyon. Our two properties were side by side. David had a group called Water. I could tell you some wild canyon stories… Looking back it's not a nice memory. Even though we thought we were having a good time, I don't think we really were. Shortly after Tommy Kaye's little girl, Eloise, died in an unfortunate accident, it just seemed like everybody's life got dark and we all kind of lost hope there for a while."

Kids living in Laurel Canyon apparently had to be particularly vigilant about avoiding tragic accidents.

Circa 1978, Clark teamed with former bandmates Hillman and McGuinn for a contrived reunion tour. An album followed in early 1979, with a second released in early 1980. During that time, according to brother David Clark, Gene "was hanging around with these really gross characters who were just a bunch of burnouts and he wasn't much better. Cathy Evelyn Smith was there." Not long after, Smith would attain a certain amount of notoriety for her involvement in the curious death of John Belushi at the Chateau Marmont. We should then, I suppose, add John Belushi to the Laurel Canyon Death List. And Eloise Kaye as well.

Following the release of the second Byrds reunion album, Clark and a close friend, guitarist Jesse Ed Davis, left LA for Oahu, Hawaii, supposedly to get clean. They returned at the end of 1981, with Gene once again settling into his favorite canyon. Among his close friends at that time were former child star Kurt Russell and his then-wife, actress Season Hubley, who had also taken up residence in Laurel Canyon. Gene's solo career sputtered on for another decade, though fewer and fewer people seemed to be paying much attention.

In January 1991, the original members of the Byrds came together for their induction into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame. Clark died just four months later, reportedly of a heart attack. He was just forty-six at the time. The circumstances of his death remain murky to this day. As Einarson has noted, "What transpired over the last three days of Gene's life remains clouded by controversy… conspiracy theories abound; accusations have been leveled." For the most part though, Gene has now been all but forgotten. His vast stockpile of unreleased material, however—much of which mysteriously disappeared after his death—likely lives on, albeit credited to others.

According to Einarson, Clark had been fighting to stay sober but it "is agreed that he began drinking again on the evening of Wednesday, May 22… What happened next depends entirely on who is telling the story. [One witness] claims he searched the house for drugs and did not find any—contrary to claims by others that drugs and drug paraphernalia were present in the house… there are those conspiracy theorists who continue to insinuate that drugs and certain characters were, indeed, present that night, and that Gene's death was a result of misadventure, necessitating a panicked clean-up campaign that morning."

There were apparently numerous people present at Clark's home on the morning of May 24, 1991, as Gene lay dead on the living room floor. One of those people was Saul Davis, who "took it upon himself to contact the media with the news, another bone of contention with some, given that Saul was not serving as Gene's manager at the time." Another was the manager of the property, identified as Ray Berry, who had served during WWII in Special Ops. While people milled about the house, "arguing over the spoils… Gene's body continued to lie on the living room floor, face up."

Days later, David Carradine caused quite a stir at Gene's open-casket memorial service. Former bandmate Pat Robinson remembered it well: "When Carradine came up, he wasn't as much drunk as he was on acid, I think, and his girlfriend and business manager at the time was there with him. And we're standing there and Carradine says, 'You cocksucker…' and grabs Gene by the lapels. When you pull somebody up from a coffin and they have nothing inside for guts they bend higher up. It was really shocking to see that. And Carradine goes, 'You pissed on my daughter when she was thirteen.' And he said it pretty loud and then he says, 'I saw him snicker, boys, heh heh.' Oh, man, that was weird."

Perhaps weirder still is that many of those who were in attendance remember hearing something a little different: "You *fucked* my daughter when she was thirteen." Maybe Carradine had mistaken Clark for Roman Polanski. Or maybe that's just what everyone was doing in Laurel Canyon. In any event, none of the original members of the Byrds bothered to attend the service. Afterwards, Gene was laid to rest in tiny Tipton.

It should be noted here, before concluding this chapter, that there were very clear indications that Gene Clark suffered from a rather severe dissociative disorder throughout his adult life. As far as can be determined from the literature, he was never diagnosed as such, but comments made by his bandmates and family members are quite revealing. One such bandmate, Pat Robinson, has described how Clark "used to slip into these dream states, which I thought was really amazing. He'd go into these dream states and lay down on the couch and go, 'I'll be right back, Patrick.'" Another, John York, has said that Gene "had these multiple personalities." Yet another, Bernie Leadon, remembered that Clark would often appear to be completely out of it, and he'd "say, 'Hey, Gene, what are you thinking?' and he would go, 'Huh? Oh,' like he was being brought back to reality."

Gene's sister, Bonnie Clark, has also noted that there was more than one version of the troubled singer/songwriter: "There was this persona and the rest of Gene was somewhere in there. He was hard to get to know… He could be very warm and loving, but that could change in a heartbeat." Chronicler John Einarson offered the following summation: "It is often difficult for those who knew him—even family members—to reconcile the two Gene Clarks: the cheerful, engaging yet shy loner with the vibrant imagination, and the frustrated, moody recluse who was sometimes prone to violence."

18

THE WOLF KING OF LA
"PAPA" JOHN PHILLIPS

"John [Phillips] was the ultimate controller." Mamas and the Papas producer/manager Lou Adler

"She was practically his slave." Michelle Phillips, describing John's relationship with his third wife, Genevieve Waite

THUS FAR ON THIS JOURNEY, WE HAVE SEEN HOW WHAT ARE ARGUABLY THE two most bloody and notorious mass murders in the history of the City of Angels—the murders of the occupants of the home on Cielo Drive in Benedict Canyon, and the so-called Four on the Floor bludgeoning murders of four drug dealers on Wonderland Avenue—were directly connected to the Laurel Canyon music scene. But the city of Los Angeles can boast of one other particularly notorious murder, one that stands to this day as both the most gruesome single-victim murder and the most famous unsolved murder in the city's history.

On January 15, 1947, the mutilated body of aspiring actress Elizabeth Short was found posed in a field. The ritualistically butchered body was nude, sliced cleanly in half, and completely drained of blood. Parts of the body had been removed, after which the corpse had been thoroughly sanitized. Bruising clearly indicated that the young girl had been savagely beaten. Forensic evidence suggested that she had been forced to eat feces during her tortuous ordeal. She was quickly dubbed the 'Black Dahlia' and it is by that name that she is known and written about today.

Much of what has been written about the brief life of Ms. Short is contradictory. Among the facts that seem to be agreed upon are that she had recently worked at a military facility that is now known as Vandenberg Air Force Base, and that she had some kind of close connection to a US Naval hospital in San Diego, where she may have also worked. That is, in any event, what she had indicated in a letter to her mother.

Unlike the Manson and Wonderland murders, the mutilation of the Black Dahlia occurred some twenty years before Laurel Canyon's glory days. There is, nevertheless, a possible connection.

This story begins on August 30, 1935, with the birth of John Edmund Andrew Phillips to parents Claude and Edna Phillips. Claude was a retired Marine Corps officer and engineer. His father, John Andrew Phillips, who had been a prominent and influential architect, one day "mysteriously fell to his death" on a construction site, according to John Phillips' autobiography.

John's mother, Edna, had what most people would consider a decidedly unconventional upbringing. Her mother was a psychic and faith healer, and many of her eleven siblings were well known locally as gunfighters and bandits. When Edna was just a year old, she was purportedly kidnapped by Gypsies! Not to worry though—her father allegedly found her a year later down in Mexico, though how he would have done so will doubtless forever remain a mystery.

Edna was just fifteen when she met and began a relationship with Claude Phillips, who according to legend had supposedly won an Oklahoma bar from a fellow serviceman in a poker game on the way home from France at the close of WWI—which seems, in retrospect, about as credible as various other aspects of Phillips family history as told by John. By eighteen, Edna had given birth to the couple's first child, Rosie Phillips, born on New Year's Eve, 1922. Rosie would later become a career employee of the Pentagon, where John's first wife would also find work. Years later, according to John, Rosie's daughter Patty would be "found dead of an overdose in a girlfriend's apartment in North Hollywood… There were mysterious questions surrounding her death." This kind of thing tends to happen to families in Laurel Canyon.

In the late 1920s, Claude Phillips was commissioned to Haiti, where he remained for four years. He was then sent back to Quantico, then shipped off to Managua, Nicaragua, before finally returning to Alexandria, Virginia, where John Phillips, who would become arguably the most important music figure in the canyon, grew up and went to school. John attended a series of strict Catholic and military schools. He also served as an altar boy, though according to his own account, he also had a darker side which included forays into vandalism, auto theft, breaking and entering, fighting, and other assorted mischief. His mother, meanwhile, routinely cruised for men, when not spending time with a US Army Colonel named George Lacy. John would later be told that his real father was a US Marine Corps doctor named Roland Meeks, who died in a Japanese POW camp during WWII.

Phillips played basketball at George Washington High School, graduating in 1953. He then scored an appointment to Annapolis Naval Academy, but soon dropped out. One of his first paying jobs was working on a fishing charter boat. As John later recalled it, the crew consisted of him, a retired Navy officer, and four retired Army generals. Seems like a perfect fit for one of the future guiding lights of the hippie movement. Phillips also, for a brief time, tried his hand at selling cemetery plots.

As noted at the beginning of this odyssey, John's first wife was the aristocratic Susie Adams, a direct descendent of President John Adams and an occasional practitioner of voodoo. The couple's first son, Jeffrey, was born on Friday the 13th in December of 1957. Shortly after that, John found himself in, of all places, Havana, Cuba, just as the Batista regime was about to fall to the revolutionary forces of Fidel Castro. According to Phillips, he and his traveling companions "were once whisked off the street by a director, straight into a TV studio to appear on a live Havana variety show." Many of you, I'm sure, have had a similar experience.

Some months later, in 1958, Phillips flew to Los Angeles and began performing on amateur nights at Pandora's Box on the legendary Sunset Strip. His first band, the Journeymen, featured Phillips, Scott McKenzie and Dick Weismann. It was while touring with this formation that John Phillips met a very young Holly Michelle Gilliam. Michelle was born November 10, 1944, in Long Beach, California, to a father variously described as a merchant marine, a movie production assistant, and a self-taught intellectual. When Michelle's mother, a Baptist minister's daughter, reportedly died of a brain aneurysm when Michelle was just five, Gardner "Gil" Gilliam took his daughters and promptly relocated to Mexico, ostensibly to attend college on the GI Bill. They remained there for several years. Upon their return to Southern California, Gil found work as an LA County probation officer. According to John, Gil's work "often required him to go out of town," though one would think that that would make it rather difficult for him to keep tabs on his charges.

In 1958, while future husband John was vacationing in war-torn Cuba, Michelle found a new mother figure in twenty-three-year-old Tamar Hodel. Tamar's father, Dr. George Hodel, was described by *Vanity Fair* in December 2007 as "the most pathologically decadent man in Los Angeles" and "the city's venereal-disease czar and a fixture in its A-list demimonde." Also noted in the article was that "George Hodel shared with Man Ray a love for the work of the Marquis de Sade and the belief that the pursuit of personal liberty was worth everything." In other words, Hodel embraced that all-purpose Luciferian creed, "Do what thou wilt."

According to the same article, Tamar and her siblings had "grown up in her father's Hollywood house, which resembled a Mayan temple, was designed by Frank Lloyd Wright's son, and was the site of wild parties, in which Hodel was sometimes joined by director John Huston and photographer Man Ray." The luxurious home reportedly features, among other amenities, a subterranean walk-in vault, which is always a nice thing to have around. Within the walls of that singularly odd Hollywood Hills home, which lies about three miles due east of the mouth of Laurel Canyon, Tamar has talked of how she "often 'uncomfortably' posed nude... for 'dirty-old-man' Man Ray and had once wriggled free from a predatory John Huston." Her own father, not so shockingly, "had committed incest with her. 'When I was eleven, my father taught me to perform oral sex on him.'" Her father also "plied her with erotic books, grooming her for what he touted as their transcendent union," and freely shared her with his wealthy and influential friends.

"To the girl's horror, she became pregnant" at the tender age of fourteen—with her father's child. "To her greater horror, she says, 'my father wanted me to *have* his baby.'" A friend, nevertheless, took her to get an abortion. Dr. George was so incensed that, according to Tamar, he "struck her on the head with his pistol," prompting her stepmother (who also happened to be John Huston's ex-wife) to assist her in going into hiding. Dr. George Hodel was arrested and charged with, among other things, offering his young daughter to several friends at an orgy. The sensational 1949 incest trial featured a witness who took the stand to describe being hypnotized by Hodel at a party.

Allegations that the rich and powerful were dabbling in incest, hypnotism, pedophilic orgies and Luciferian philosophies must surely have been shocking to Angelenos in the 1940s, as they would still be to most Americans today. Perhaps that is why the jury chose not to believe Tamar and instead acquitted Dr. Hodel. Of course, it should probably be factored in that Tamar was roundly vilified by both the Jerry Giesler-led defense team and the local press.

Far more shocking than the allegations aired at trial was the then-unknown fact that, even while Hodel was standing trial on the sensational charges, he was, and still is today, a prime suspect in the Black Dahlia murder case! There have been, to be sure, numerous suspects identified in the case, including actor/director Orson Welles. But George Hodel does seem to be a much more likely suspect than most of those who have been identified. And his possible guilt, it should be noted, does not exclude others from likely complicity as well. The mistake that virtually all investigators of this case have made is assuming that there was only *one* culprit. It is entirely possible that Hodel committed the crime in conjunction with various others in his Luciferian social circle. Photographer Man Ray, for example, is a compelling suspect given that the posing of Ms. Short's body appeared to mimic the Minotaur, one of his better-known photographs.

It seems unlikely that the fourteen-year-old daughter of a lowly probation officer would fall into the orbit of the daughter of the very wealthy and well-connected George Hodel, but not any more unlikely, I suppose, than numerous other aspects of the Laurel Canyon saga. Tamar, who has been described by Michelle as "the epitome of glamour," quickly took the youngster under her wing, buying her clothes, enrolling her in modeling school, teaching her to drive, and providing her with a fake ID and a steady stream of prescription drugs—obtained, one would presume, from her father. According to Michelle, “Tamar put on perfect airs around my dad and when it became necessary she would sleep with him.” That perhaps explains why, in early 1961, Gil didn’t have a problem with allowing his underage daughter to move to San Francisco with her surrogate mom.

Soon enough, Tamar found herself in a relationship with Journeyman Scott McKenzie, and bandmate John Phillips began coming by Tamar and Michelle’s room on a nightly basis. It wasn’t long before Michelle, still just sixteen, was romantically involved with twenty-five-year-old Phillips, despite the fact that John was still married to and living with Susie Adams, with whom he by then had two children, Laura MacKenzie Phillips having been born on November 10, 1959 in, naturally enough, Alexandria, Virginia. Father Gil, who had recently taken a sixteen-year-old bride of his own (one of a string of six wives), still wasn’t concerned. And it’s probably safe to assume that Phillips’ father, who had pursued his bride when she was just fifteen, wouldn’t have been too concerned either.

In October 1962, a year or so after meeting Michelle, John curiously found himself in Jacksonville, Florida, alongside Naval Air Station Jacksonville and Naval Station Mayport for “two weeks of rest and rehearsal” that just happened to coincide with the Cuban Missile Crisis. For a guy who, in his own words, “never felt comfortable with political advocacy,” John seems to have had a keen interest in Cuban affairs. Two months later, on New Year’s Eve 1962, Holly Michelle Gilliam became John Phillips’ second wife. She also joined his reconfigured band, as did Canadian Denny Doherty, who had formerly been with the Mugwumps alongside Cass Elliot. This new lineup was dubbed the New Journeymen.

The newly formed trio promptly embarked on a drug-fueled Caribbean adventure, arriving first at St. Johns, where John claimed that they “snorkeled on acid” for several weeks. They next ferried over to St. Thomas, where they set up camp at a dive beachfront boardinghouse known as Duffy’s. Soon enough, Ellen Naomi Cohen, better known as Cass Elliot, showed up with John’s nephew, who was a childhood friend of hers. Cass had been born in Baltimore but had grown up in Alexandria, where, like Phillips, she had attended George Washington High School. As the legend goes, Cass waited tables at the dive while the trio performed folk songs. During their time there, "The town was," according to Phillips, "crawling with drunken Marines and sailors on their way home from Vietnam."

Moving on from the boardinghouse, the group next took over an unfinished home on Creeque Alley, where, according to John, they were known as "the island's open house and everyone was welcome to our commune." At some point though the governor supposedly ordered them off the island "because he thought his nephew was doing drugs with the crazies at Creeque Alley." The band had formalized its new lineup of John Phillips, Michelle Phillips, Denny Doherty and Cass Elliot, and they had a whole album's worth of material written. That first album would feature such enduring classics as California Dreamin' and Monday, Monday. On none of the band's subsequent albums would they produce anywhere near the level of songwriting that they were somehow able to achieve on that Caribbean adventure.

Though isolated on St. Thomas, the songs the group brought back to LA with them just happened to be of the previously unheard but soon-to-emerge folk-rock variety. In his autobiography, *Papa John*, Phillips quotes Doherty as saying that everyone was "evolving toward the same sound at the same time without really communicating with each other about it." It was, I suppose, just the way things were fated to be—another one of those amazing serendipities!

To be sure, Phillips told a number of different versions of the story of the origins of the songs on that first album. One version had California Dreamin' being written in a New York hotel room in the middle of the night, with assistance from Michelle. Another version held that the tune was composed on the drive to LA from New York. Yet another version had the song dating back to 1963. Phillips also claimed at times that the song wasn't even written for the Mamas and the Papas but rather for Barry McGuire, who was a hot commodity following the 1965 release of Eve Of Destruction.

Within a month of arriving in LA, the band had a producer/manager (Lou Adler, a Jewish kid who had grown up in a tough, Hispanic section of East LA) and a record deal, and John and Michelle were at home in a comfortable house on Lookout Mountain in Laurel Canyon. They would soon be able to afford to purchase Jeanette McDonald's former Bel Air mansion at 783 Bel Air Road, which featured "hand-carved wooden gargoyles" and "a walk-in vault beneath the house," which, as I already mentioned, is a very handy feature. Sitting on five acres, the lavish home, with five Rolls-Royces in the driveway, was the site of virtually nonstop partying.

The new lineup, of course, needed a name, and John pushed hard for the occult-based Magic Cyrcle, a name by which the band was briefly known before ultimately settling on the Mamas and the Papas. They proved to be a rather short-lived band, recording and performing only from 1965 to 1968, with a brief reunion in 1971 to satisfy contractual obligations to their record company. During that time, the band produced five albums and eleven top forty singles. To date, the lineup has sold nearly 100,000,000 albums.

The Mamas and the Papas' freshman album, *If You Can Believe Your Eyes and Ears*, was released in early 1966 and rose to the very top of the charts. It was all downhill from there. While recording their second album in June 1966, Michelle was discharged from the band due to the fact that she was having an affair with Denny Doherty, which was causing severe friction in the group. By August though she was back, which didn't prevent the group's second album from performing rather poorly. The third, recorded in 1967 and entitled *Deliver*, failed to live up to its name. Then in June of that year, the Mamas and the Papas delivered a closing set at the Monterey Pop Festival that almost everyone agrees was pretty wretched.

Two months after Monterey, the band made their final television appearance on the *Ed Sullivan Show*. Two months after that, the quartet headed off to Europe while recording their fourth album, *The Papas and the Mamas*. Shortly thereafter, the band broke up. John tried his hand at a solo career with the unsuccessful release of *John Phillips, the Wolf King of LA*, which bore the logo of his own Warlock Records. To satisfy record label demands, the group then briefly reformed for their fourth album, *People Like Us*. Following that unsuccessful venture, the band once again dissolved.

During the heyday of the Mamas and the Papas, John and Michelle Phillips knew, and regularly played host to, virtually everyone of importance in the canyons. In addition to all the singers and musicians living in Laurel Canyon, the power couple's circle of friends included Warren Beatty, Peter and Jane Fonda, Jack Nicholson, Terry Melcher and girlfriend Candice Bergen, Marlon Brando, Roman Polanski and Sharon Tate, Abigail Folger and Voytek Frykowski, soon-to-be-dead gossip columnist Steve Brandt, Larry Hagman, presidential brother-in-law Peter Lawford (fresh from his alleged involvement in covering up the murder of Marilyn Monroe), Dennis Hopper, Ryan O'Neal, Mia Farrow, ethereal Freemason Peter Sellers, and Zsa Zsa Gabor. And a short, scraggly singer/songwriter by the name of Charles Manson.

There were, to be sure, numerous ties between the Mamas and the Papas and Charles Manson. And between the Mamas and the Papas and the Cielo Drive victims. John Phillips, for example, had invested $10,000 in Jay Sebring's business venture, Sebring International, which was rumored to have been a front for various illegal activities, including drug trafficking. Michelle Phillips had a brief affair with Roman Polanski in London while Polanski was married to the soon-to-be-murdered Sharon Tate (during that same sojourn to London, Tate was reportedly initiated into the practice of witchcraft). Mama Cass, as previously noted, lived just across the road from the house at 2774 Woodstock Road occupied by Folger and Frykowski. Both homes were frequently visited by known drug dealers. Regulars at Cass' home included Pic Dawson (also a regular at the Frykowski/Folger home and at the Tate/Polanski home), the son of a US State Department official who, according to John Phillips, was suspected by authorities "of using diplomatic pouches to move drugs between countries," and Billy Doyle, a local dealer who Dennis Hopper claimed was filmed while being flogged at the Tate/Polanski house just three days before the murders. Another regular was Bill Mentzer, later convicted of the brutal murder of Cotton Club producer Roy Radin. The LAPD once described Mentzer as a member of "some kind of hit squad."

So dark was the scene at the home of the 'Lady of the Canyon' that, according to journalist Maury Terry, four of the LAPD's initial prime suspects in the Tate killings were drug dealers associated with Cass Elliot. And yet, curiously enough, many of the canyon's peace-and-love spewing musicians were regulars at Mama Cass' home as well. As *Rolling Stone* noted in its fortieth anniversary edition, "'Mama' Cass Elliot's cozy canyon house functioned as a sort of rock salon." In a similar vein, Barney Hoskyns wrote in *Hotel California* that "Cass kept permanent open house." Also noted in Hoskyns' tome was that the Laurel Canyon scene "all spun around him and Cass," with the "him" in this case being David Crosby, who, like Cass, had an insatiable appetite for potent pain killers like Demerol, Dilaudid and Percodan. Crosby was one of many Canyonites who regularly dropped by Cass' place to hang out and engage in impromptu jam sessions, and to mingle with some seriously disreputable characters.

Also a regular at Cass' place, by some reports, was Charlie Manson himself. According to Ed Sanders, it was at Cass' home that Charlie first met her neighbor, coffee heiress Abigail Folger (who helped finance Kenneth Anger's films, like the one that was supposed to star Godo Paulekas but instead starred Mansonite Bobby Beausoleil). According to Maury Terry, the rather notorious Process Church of the Final Judgement—which evidence suggests had deep ties to the Manson, Son of Sam and Cotton Club murders—also came knocking on Cass' door, actively seeking to recruit her as well as John Phillips and Terry Melcher.

Terry has written that the Manson Family's iconic bus was seen parked at the home of John and Michelle Phillips in the fall of 1968. Some reports also hold that Manson attended a New Year's Eve party at the couple's home on December 31, 1968, just months before the murders began. So close were the ties between the Mamas and the Papas and the Manson clan that both John Phillips and Mama Cass were slated to appear as witnesses for the defense at the Family's trial, though neither was ever called. For a band that sang about being "safe and warm, if I was in LA," the members of the Mamas and the Papas kept some pretty dangerous company in the City of Angels.

Speaking of dangerous company, not long after the band hit the charts, Tamar Hodel received a postcard from Michelle Phillips asking her to watch their scheduled performance on the *Ed Sullivan Show* and to then meet the group at San Francisco's Fairmont Hotel before a scheduled concert. Tamar showed up with father George at her side—the two, as with Gram and Robert Parsons, apparently still maintaining a close relationship—and Tamar, George, John, Michelle, Denny and Cass embarked on a drug-fueled pre-show odyssey.

By 1970, John and Michelle had divorced. Many years later, Michelle would reveal that their time together had included at least one episode of domestic violence, one that she was still reluctant to discuss: "It was serious. I ended up in the hospital. That's all I'll say about it." The union had yielded John a second daughter, Gilliam Chynna Phillips, born February 12, 1968, in Los Angeles. On January 31, 1972, John Phillips married for the third time, to actress and Crowley aficionado Genevieve Waite. On the wedding guest list were soon-to-be-governor Jerry Brown and soon-to-be-lieutenant-governor Mike Curb.

The couple's time together would be marked by wildly out-of-control drug consumption and the birth of two more offspring: Tamerlane, whose name is perhaps in part an homage to Tamar Hodel, and Bijou Lilly, who was taken away and placed in foster care in Bolton Landing, New York, after her drug-addled parents were deemed unfit to raise her. In June 1972, shortly after marrying Waite, Phillips moved into a canyon home at 414 St. Pierre Road that had been built by William Randolph Hearst. The Rolling Stones had just vacated the property and their trusty sidekick, Gram Parsons, was still hanging around and would grow very close to John Phillips. Parsons though would soon turn up dead, while John would head off to London where he reportedly planned to record a solo album with assistance from Mick Jagger and Keith Richards. That project never got off the ground, however, as Phillips' addictions rendered him impossible to work with.

Cass Elliot turned up in London the very next year, but unlike her former bandmate, her trip abroad was to be one-way; on July 29, 1974, she was found dead in occasional Canyonite Harry Nilsson's London flat. Ms. Elliot, it seems safe to say, knew a little too much about the dark side of Laurel Canyon.

Following the dissolution of the Mamas and the Papas, Cass had gone on to a successful solo career and had become a familiar face on American television screens. In addition to hosting two primetime network specials, she had guest-hosted the *Tonight Show* and had appeared on such popular early 1970s shows as *The Red Skelton Show* and *Love, American Style*. She had been married twice, first in 1963 to vocalist Jim Hendricks in what was reportedly a platonic arrangement aimed at getting Hendricks a draft deferment. During that first marriage, which was annulled in 1968, Cass had given birth to a daughter, Owen Vanessa Elliot, born on April 26, 1967. Hendricks, however, was reportedly not the father and Cass steadfastly refused to reveal who Owen's true father was. In 1971, following the breakup of the band, Cass married again, to Baron Donald von Weidenman, a wealthy Bavarian heir. That marriage collapsed after just a few months though and Cass was single when she died just a few years later. Owen, already fatherless, was just seven.

Denny Doherty, meanwhile, went on to host a popular variety show in Canada, as well as perform in various formations of the New Mamas and the Papas. He passed away on January 19, 2007, reportedly due to kidney failure.

Michelle Phillips released an unsuccessful solo album and then switched gears and went on to a successful acting career, gracing the small screen in such hit shows as *Knot's Landing*, *Hotel*, and *Beverly Hills, 90210*. She continued to have numerous flings and has married several more times. She is currently the only living member of the original Mamas and the Papas.

As for John Phillips, in 1975 he sobered up enough to put together the soundtrack for the film *The Man Who Fell to Earth*, a surreal venture featuring the talents of fledgling actor David Bowie and director Nicolas Roeg, who had previously collaborated with Crowleyite Donald Cammell on *Performance*. At that same time, Phillips was working on completing a horrifically bad, Andy Warhol-produced stage musical entitled *Man on the Moon*, which closed just two days after opening. Phillips at one time had Don "Miami Vice" Johnson in mind to play the lead in his space opera. Like the rest of the Hollywood notables in this story, Johnson was a canyon dweller at the time. His next-door neighbor happened to be a guy by the name of Chuck Wein, an avid occultist and buddy of Warhol who, in addition to managing bizarre nightclub acts, directed the 1972 documentary *Rainbow Bridge*. Wein shared a curious nickname with fellow Canyonite Charlie Manson: The Wizard.

For the remainder of his career, Phillips' musical output consisted primarily of occasionally writing songs for and with others, his most well known contribution being his co-writing duties on *Kokomo*, recorded and released by the Beach Boys.

In 1981, Phillips found himself facing charges of trafficking large quantities of narcotics. By his own account, he had an arrangement with a pharmacy that allowed him to obtain large amounts of narcotics without prescriptions (daughter Bijou would later say that he had actually purchased the pharmacy, guaranteeing virtually unlimited access). The charges were quite serious; in Phillips' own words, he "was looking at forty-five years and got thirty days." He began serving his sentence, appropriately enough, on April 20 and he was released just three-and-a-half weeks later. It never hurts to have friends in high places.

Phillips' circle of friends in the post-Mamas and the Papas years included J. Paul Getty, Jr., Bobby Kennedy, Jr., and Princess Margaret. Getty and Kennedy, both plagued by demons of their own, were likely being supplied by Phillips. Another name in Phillips' Rolodex was Colin Tennant, the wealthy heir of a massive petrochemical conglomerate in the UK. Tennant owned a private island in the British West Indies where wealthy friends like John Phillips and Mick and Bianca Jagger could engage in unknown activities in complete seclusion.

Upon being released from his preposterously short period of confinement, Phillips put together a version of the Mamas and the Papas that included daughter Mackenzie Phillips and original lead vocalist Denny Doherty. Scott McKenzie, who had summoned all the runaways across the country to come to San Francisco with flowers in their hair, later replaced Doherty. Laurie Beebe subsequently replaced Mackenzie Phillips, after which Doherty returned once again to replace John Phillips. The band finally called it quits in 1994.

Phillips had divorced Waite in 1985. In 1992, he received a liver transplant and a new lease on life. Just months later, he was photographed drinking in a bar in Palm Springs. In 1998, Phillips and the other surviving members of the Mamas and the Papas were inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame. Three years later, on March 18, 2001, Phillips died of heart failure. The saga wasn't quite over, however; Phillips' daughters would carry on with the family tradition—while spilling some dark family secrets along the way.

Oldest daughter Mackenzie began her acting career at the tender age of twelve when she landed a role in what was to be George Lucas' breakthrough film, *American Graffiti*. Just a few years before, it will be recalled, Lucas had been an unknown cameraman at the Rolling Stones' notorious Altamont concert. During the filming of *Graffiti* in 1972, John Phillips, who I'm sure had lots of important business to attend to and therefore little time to look after his daughter, signed over legal guardianship of Mackenzie to producer Gary Kurtz. A few years later, in 1975, Mackenzie landed a role on what would quickly become a hit television series, *One Day at a Time*. During the third season, however, Mackenzie was arrested for public drunkenness and cocaine possession, after which her substance abuse problems continued to spiral out of control, causing frequent problems and considerable tension on the set of her hit show.

Providing a template for Charlie Sheen to later follow, she was fired from her show in 1980. After two nearly fatal overdoses, she was invited back by producers in 1981. The following year she collapsed on the set and was once again fired. What had once seemed a very promising acting career was over as quickly as it had begun. From the late 1980s through the early 1990s, she performed intermittently with the reformed Mamas and the Papas. In 1992, she reportedly entered a long-term rehab program that she didn't emerge from for nine months. Following that, she kept a low profile for many years. In August 2008, however, she was arrested at LAX for heroin and cocaine possession and on Halloween day 2008, she entered a guilty plea and was once again sent to rehab.

A year later, in September 2009, Mackenzie released her tell-all memoir, *High on Arrival*, which painted a disturbing picture of her late father. In addition to introducing her to drugs at the age of eleven by injecting her with cocaine, Mackenzie claimed that Papa John had raped her on the eve of her first marriage and had engaged in an incestuous affair with her that spanned a decade and ended only when she became pregnant and did not know who the father was—a scenario, it should be noted, with remarkable parallels to the ordeal endured by Michelle's surrogate mother, Tamar Hodel.

John Phillips' memoir covering the time period in question made no mention of the illicit relationship with his daughter. He did though claim that Mackenzie was once raped at knifepoint by an unknown assailant. He also noted, shockingly enough, that Mackenzie's "house in Laurel Canyon was destroyed by fire." That, as we all know, hardly ever happens.

The year after dropping her bombshells, Mackenzie appeared on what is arguably the most appalling 'reality' show to ever hit the airwaves, *Celebrity Rehab*, in a role far removed from her glory days on a hit primetime show. That same year, sister Chynna Phillips entered rehab as well, though she was reportedly seeking relief from "anxiety." Chynna first captured the spotlight in 1990 as one-third of the vocal group Wilson Phillips, alongside Carnie and Wendy Wilson, offspring of reclusive Beach Boy Brian Wilson. That group though proved to be very short-lived, as did Chynna's musical career. In 1995, Chynna married actor William Baldwin. In 2003, she became what *Vanity Fair* described as a "fervent born-again Christian. She was baptized in brother-in-law Stephen Baldwin's bathtub." The magazine also quoted Chynna as saying that "being a mom is challenging for me—my perspective is warped."

Like her older sisters, Bijou Lilly Phillips—born April 1, 1980, just a year before her father was harshly punished for running a major narcotics trafficking operation—merged into the fast lane at a very young age. Her mother was addicted to heroin while carrying her and Bijou has candidly described herself as a "crack baby." Raised partially in a foster home, she was reunited with her father by the courts when in the third grade. That wasn't necessarily a good thing.

Described by *Index* magazine as "a wild child who, through fate and circumstance, was somehow allowed to partake of New York's nebulous nightlife at an age traditionally more suited to playing with dolls," Bijou was a cover model from a very young age. She was also the fourteen-year-old star of a Calvin Klein ad campaign that many people (as well as the US Justice Department) considered to be bordering on child pornography, and that Bijou herself has referred to as "the kiddy porn ads."

Bijou told her interviewer from *Index* that coaching her and creepily lurking behind the scenes of that notorious Calvin Klein photo shoot—I'm guessing as a technical adviser—"was this porn guy." The interviewer identified that "porn guy" as Ron Jeremy, who is not your run-of-the-mill "porn guy," and not just because he is arguably the world's most famous porn star. He is also a very well-connected porn star. His mother, for example, was an asset of the OSS, precursor to the CIA. His uncle had ties to notorious gangster Benjamin "Bugsy" Siegel. And he attended high school with none other than future CIA director George Tenet.

Bijou has alluded to the fact that Mackenzie was not the only Phillips daughter to receive unwanted attention from Papa John. In her music can be found lyrics such as "he touched me wrong." Asked directly about such references, she told an interviewer that she had "made this decision not to talk to the press about anything that's gone on in my life, but just to write music about it. They can interpret it themselves," though she then quickly added, “It’s blatantly obvious.” The youngest of the Phillips clan also acknowledged that she has a “Daddy” tattoo on her rear. “That was [done] during a time,” she said, “when I was a pretty sick puppy.”

Bijou made her film debut in 1999 and has had a number of low-profile film and television roles since then. Most recently, she has had a recurring role on the television series *Raising Hope* as, of all things, a serial killer. She is currently an avid Scientologist. Many of the problems she has faced, she ultimately realized, stem from the fact that she’d “never been shown respect by my parents. I’d always been treated like an object, not like a human.”

19

HUNGRY FREAKS, DADDY FRANK ZAPPA

"The fact that Frank Zappa was one of the most prominent rock-star residents of Laurel Canyon didn't change the fact that he viewed the flower-power underground with amused contempt." Barney Hoskyns, author of Hotel California

"Frank openly made fun of the very counterculture he was helping to sustain." Jefferson Airplane vocalist Grace Slick

FRANK ZAPPA WAS BORN ON THE FIRST DAY OF WINTER IN THE YEAR 1940 IN Baltimore, Maryland. Precisely sixty-four years later, on the winter solstice of 2004, his first grandchild, Mathilda Plum Doucette, would be born to daughter Moon Unit Zappa.

Zappa's father, Francesco Vincenzo Zappa, hailed from Partinico, Sicily, described by Zappa biographer Barry Miles as "the Mafia heartland." Francesco was of Greek and Arab ancestry, while his wife Rose Marie was a blend of Italian and French. Many of Francesco and Rose Marie's siblings seem to have lived very short and tragic lives, including Francesco's twin sisters who perished in a train crash. Rose Marie had one sister who died at birth, another (Margaret) who only made it to the age of two, and a third who died shortly after Margaret. She also had a brother who simply vanished at the age of nineteen and was never seen or heard from again.

Francesco Zappa arrived in America in 1908, settling with his parents in the city of Baltimore, Maryland, just outside of Washington, DC. He attended the city's Polytechnic High School and then the University of North Carolina, after which he spent the rest of his life in the employ of the US military intelligence establishment. He and Rose Marie had four offspring, the oldest of whom was Francis Vincent, better known as Frank.

Frank's first schooling was at the Edgewood School, part of the Edgewood Arsenal complex where his father worked and the family lived. Edgewood was, for the uninformed, the longtime home of US chemical warfare research, as well as being, by the government's own admission, the site of human mind control experimentation in the post-WWII years. At some point in the 1940s, the Zappa clan relocated to Florida for a short time for unknown reasons, but they soon returned to Baltimore and the Edgewood Arsenal. In 1951, father Francesco was offered a position at Dugway Proving Ground in Utah, but he chose instead to head further west and relocate the family to Monterey, California. While there, he taught classes at the Naval Postgraduate School.

After a couple years in Monterey, the Zappas relocated once again, first briefly to Claremont before moving on to the San Diego area, the current home of the world's largest naval fleet. While there, Francesco put his skills to work on the Atlas Missile Project, a program that would produce America's very first intercontinental ballistic missiles. Zappa's area of expertise would tend to indicate that the US was looking into developing chemical warheads for those ICBMs; that though is impossible to determine since Zappa's work in San Diego and elsewhere was classified.

In the summer of 1956, the Zappa family hit the road once again, this time landing in Lancaster, California, right alongside Edwards Air Force Base. Frank Zappa wouldn't be the only rising star to later arrive in Laurel Canyon by way of the sparsely populated wasteland of Lancaster; joining him would be tragically short-lived Byrd Clarence White, America vocalist Dewey Bunnell, and the indescribably bizarre Don Vliet, better known as Captain Beefheart.

Shortly before the move to Lancaster, there was an unusual event in Frank's life. According to the Zappa biographies, to celebrate his fifteenth birthday his mother arranged for her son a personal phone call to famed composer Edgard Varese, who at the time was out of the country and unable to take the call. Frank did though speak with the composer's wife and later received, by various accounts, either a letter from Varese or a personal phone call. None of those accounts offer any clue to how Rose Marie Zappa had ready access to someone of Varese's stature.

In Lancaster, Frank attended Antelope Valley High School where he began experimenting with 8mm film and met and befriended Vliet, who would later change his surname to Van Vliet. The two graduated together in 1958, with Frank receiving a diploma despite the fact that he was short on credits. In 1959, at the tender age of eighteen, Frank moved into his own apartment in Echo Park and began attending Pomona College, where he met Kathryn "Kay" Sherman. Frank's brother Bobby Zappa, meanwhile, enlisted in the US Marines.

On December 28, 1960, just a week after Zappa's twentieth birthday, Frank and Kay were married and Frank began working in advertising. The marriage would last just four years. Not long after marrying Sherman, Zappa became involved with character actor Timothy Carey's bizarre underground film project known as *The World's Greatest Sinner*. Zappa provided the soundtrack for Carey's experimental film, which remained largely unseen for decades after its completion in 1962. The occult-based plot revolved around star Carey's metamorphosis from insurance salesman to rock star to cult leader to self-proclaimed god.

At around that same time, Zappa met and played occasional gigs with Terry Kirkman, who would later form yet another Laurel Canyon-affiliated band, the Association. He also began writing songs for other up-and-comers and forged a friendship and working relationship with Paul Buff, owner of the independent Pal Recording Studio in Cucamonga, California. Buff had studied aviation electronics in the US Marines, where he graduated top in a class of 500. Following his time in the service, he secured a job at General Dynamics where he engineered parts for guided missiles. He eventually left that job to, of all things, open his own recording studio. It was in that studio that Buff taught Zappa how to multi-track and overdub. At a time when most independent recording studios featured just mono or, at best, two-track recording capabilities, Buff's studio featured a custom-built five-track tape recorder.

In March of 1963, Zappa famously appeared on *The Steve Allen Show* to 'play' a bicycle as a musical instrument. That same year, Herb Cohen, who would become the manager of Frank Zappa and fellow canyonites Linda Ronstadt, Alice Cooper, Lenny Bruce and Tim Buckley, returned to Los Angeles. After conveniently being in the Congo at the time of the CIA-sponsored coup that toppled (and led directly to the execution of) Patrice Lumumba, the country's first legally elected prime minister, Cohen had spent time in Copenhagen, Denmark, where he functioned as an international arms dealer.

In 1964, Zappa's marriage to Sherman collapsed and he moved into friend Paul Buff's Pal Studio, which he quickly took over and renamed Studio Z. Not long after, in a curious incident in March 1965, Zappa was charged with 'conspiracy to commit pornography' after accepting an offer to produce erotic audiotapes in his studio/home. He was sentenced to a six-month stint in jail, but all but ten days were suspended.

A year later, in June 1966, Frank Zappa and his recently formed band, the Mothers of Invention, released the groundbreaking album *Freak Out!* It was, depending upon who is telling the story, either the first or second double rock album. (Bob Dylan's *Blonde on Blonde* was scheduled to be released a month before *Freak Out!*, but Dylan's album was apparently delayed.) It was also the first rock 'concept album' and the first to print lyrics on the album sleeve. During the recording of the album—which featured contributions from Vito's troupe, Bobby Beausoleil, Frank's ever-present groupies, and various other hangers-on—Zappa moved into a Laurel Canyon home on Kirkwood Drive with Pamela Zarubica, also known as Suzy Creamcheese.

In the spring of 1967, Frank signed a contract to play at the Garrick Theater in New York, an engagement that would last six months. On one notable occasion, Zappa invited active-duty Marines onto the stage and handed them a doll, which he instructed them to pretend was a "gook baby." The GIs happily obliged the request and gleefully dismembered the doll while Frank looked on. Though Marines weren't normally part of the show, concerts by the Mothers often included the "hurling of severed baby-doll heads into the crowd of gaping groovers," as former GTO Pamela Des Barres remembers it in her book *I'm With the Band*. It was a practice that Zappa protégé Alice Cooper would greatly expand upon.

On the autumnal equinox of 1967, Zappa married Navy brat Adelaide Gail Sloatman, who was then working as former cop/gangster Elmer Valentine's personal assistant, overseeing the operations of the Whisky-A-Go-Go and the Trip. Just one week later, on September 28, 1967, daughter Moon Unit Zappa was born. She would ultimately be joined by three siblings, each bearing a progressively more bizarre name: Dweezil Zappa, Ahmet Emuukha Rodan Zappa, and Diva Thin Muffin Pigeen Zappa. All would be pulled out of school at the age of fifteen and their father would refuse to pay for any of them to attend college.

The Zappas soon returned to Laurel Canyon and took up residence in what had already become the community's most notorious commune, the iconic Log Cabin. Des Barres described the living conditions for her and other future members of the GTOs: "Lucy and Sandra shared the vault in the basement of the log cabin that Tom Mix built… Directly across from the vault was a large closet where Christine Frka privately resided." The basement featured a second walk-in vault that was frequently occupied by Carl Franzoni, to whom the Zappa song Hungry Freaks, Daddy was dedicated. People lived in every nook and cranny of the property, as well as on the grounds, which came "complete with a stream and minilake, caves, hideaways…"

Also at that time, Zappa and manager Cohen jointly launched two new record labels, Bizarre Records and Straight Records. Along with a recording of comic Lenny Bruce's last live performance, the labels would deliver to the world some of the oddest and most outrageous acts ever committed to vinyl, including the partially underage GTOs, shock-rocker Alice Cooper, Captain Beefheart and his Magic Band, and Larry "Wild Man" Fischer.

When discovered and signed by Zappa, Fischer was a self-styled 'street singer' with a colorful history and a noticeable lack of songwriting and vocal talent. Born on November 6, 1944, Larry lost his father when he was quite young and his mother was described as being emotionally distant and verbally abusive. Larry had no friends during his childhood and he was reportedly thrown out of high school. At the age of sixteen, he was institutionalized after attacking his mother with a knife. He later made two additional attempts to kill his mother and attacked his brother on at least one occasion as well.

In 1963, he was institutionalized once again, at Camarillo State Hospital, where he was subjected to repeated electroshock ‘treatments.’ “They did all kinds of things to me,” Fischer once said, “like I was like a guinea pig.” He was released in 1964 but was committed again two years later, in 1966. Accounts vary as to whether he was released or whether he escaped in this instance. One way or another he was back out in 1968, although he was never welcomed home again and so took to the streets, singing for change. It was there that he was discovered by Zappa, who released Fischer’s first single in October 1968 on, appropriately enough, the Bizarre label.

Fischer’s magnum opus, *An Evening with Wild Man Fischer*, hit record stores on April 28, 1969. The double album, produced by Zappa, featured Fischer on the cover holding a knife to a maternal figure. Later that year, Zappa got Fischer a booking on *Rowan and Martin’s Laugh-In*. It wasn’t long though before Larry had bitterly parted ways with Zappa following an incident in which Fischer angrily threw a bottle that narrowly missed hitting infant Moon Unit. Larry thereafter dropped out of sight for several years, surfacing again in 1975 when he wrote and sang a jingle for the newly launched Rhino Records.

In 1977, Rhino returned the favor by releasing Fischer’s second album, *Wildmania*, to less than critical acclaim. Billy Mumy, yet another former child actor, co-produced Fischer’s third and fourth albums, *Pronounced Normal* (1981) and *Nothing Scary* (1983), both on the Rhino label. Though Mumy maintained a close relationship with Fischer, Wild Man once pulled a gun on the former *Twilight Zone* and *Lost in Space* star, who Larry suspected of being involved in a bizarre conspiracy involving Weird Al Yankovic and Dr. Demento.

A few years after the release of *Nothing Scary*, Mumy recorded a duet featuring the unusual pairing of Fischer and Rosemary Clooney. After that, Wild Man Fischer largely drifted back into obscurity. By 2004, he was living anonymously in an assisted care facility. On June 16, 2011, his tragic life came to an end, reportedly due to a heart condition. Six months earlier, on December 17, 2010, another decidedly offbeat onetime member of the Zappa inner circle, Captain Beefheart, had also passed away.

Don Glen Vliet, born on January 15, 1941, in Glendale, California, was one of Zappa’s earliest musical collaborators. Vliet, who moved to

Lancaster as a pampered young teen in 1954, was a child prodigy by some reports. He was also the grandson of a second cousin to accused Nazi sympathizer Wallis Simpson, wife of King Edward VIII.

Beefheart first professionally collaborated with Zappa at Pal Studio in 1963, but the demos produced from those sessions were unsuccessful. Vliet then worked for a while as a door-to-door salesman, during which time, if legends are to be believed, he sold a vacuum cleaner to psychedelic pioneer Aldous Huxley. If so, then Huxley must not have gotten much use out of it, since he passed away later that year, just hours after the assassination of John F. Kennedy on November 22, 1963.

By 1965, Beefheart had formed the Magic Band, which would release thirteen albums between 1965 and 1982, albums on which Vliet would play harmonica and saxophone as well as provide his distinctive lead vocals. The first of those albums was *Safe as Milk*, released in 1967, followed by *Strictly Personal* in 1968. The band's third album, 1969's *Trout Mask Replica*, was released by Zappa's Straight Records and is considered to be Beefheart's signature work. To this day, the disc is regarded by some as one of the greatest rock albums of all time, though others have described Vliet's work in considerably less flattering terms.

Whether Vliet was the musical genius some view him as is a topic for others to debate; what is of far more interest here is how that music was created. *Trout Mask Replica* was recorded in a tiny two-bedroom house with blacked out windows in Woodland Hills. It was there that Beefheart's band members were essentially held prisoner for eight months, with the Captain in total control of everything, including the band members' eating and sleeping schedules. The drummer, John French, has described the atmosphere in that house as "cultlike" and has made ominous references to "brainwashing sessions."

The musicians were restricted from leaving the house and were forced to rehearse for fourteen hours every day. They were subjected to both sleep deprivation and food deprivation, and they were actively encouraged to physically attack each other. Beefheart would frequently utilize physical violence to keep the others in line; French wrote in his memoirs of being "screamed at, beaten up, drugged, humiliated, arrested, starved, stolen from, and thrown down a half-flight of stairs." They lived in poverty and squalor, with public assistance the band's only income. For one full month, the abused musicians had to survive on a single cup of beans each per day. Arrests for shoplifting were not uncommon.

Beefheart also assigned new names to all the band members, “loosening,” as Barry Miles wrote, “their hold on their old identities.” John French, for example, became Drumbo. So strong was Vliet’s hold on his bandmates that though a couple were able to escape the deplorable conditions, they ultimately returned to an environment that was, according to a friend of the band, “positively Mansonesque.” For their efforts, the musicians were paid little or nothing. And Beefheart claimed sole credit for composing and arranging the album, though it was in fact a collaborative effort. Later albums would follow much the same patterns.

There certainly doesn’t appear to have been any shortage of “Mansonesque” characters populating Laurel Canyon circa 1969, and they mostly seem to have been clustered around Frank Zappa. We have already seen how Vito Paulekas, who ran the Mothers’ freak sideshow, had clear parallels to Manson and was even described by those close to him as being very Manson-like. Now we see that Beefheart as well seems to have attended the Manson school of cult leadership. And Zappa himself had some rather Mansonesque qualities, including a dictatorial, autocratic style; a penchant for surrounding himself with an endless stream of very young, impressionable girls; some peculiar ideas about child sexuality; his self-assignment as the leader of a commune; and a fondness for handing out offbeat names.

It should also be mentioned here, I suppose, that Manson associate Phil Kaufman served as Zappa’s road manager for a time. And according to Ed Sanders, “In early May [1969]… Beausoleil went to Frank Zappa, the brilliant composer and producer, and wanted Zappa to come to the ranch to hear the music,” an invitation that was reportedly declined. Less than two months later, Beausoleil would conspire to murder musician Gary Hinman.

Nineteen-sixty-nine was also the year that Zappa dissolved the original Mothers of Invention. Together for just five years, there had always been tension within the band, owing primarily to Zappa’s dictatorial style. Frank was viewed by many as a “control freak,” and he was widely seen as being cold and emotionally distant, even with his immediate family (he chose to spend the vast majority of his time alone in his home studio, where it was understood that he was never to be disturbed). He was also viewed by band members and others as elitist, owing in part to his habit of staying at a different hotel than the rest of the band while on the road. David Anderle of MGM Records perhaps summed up Zappa best: “I always felt there was something a little totalitarian about Frank… I was awed by the clarity of the vision and his ability to make it happen… but it was without warmth.”

Some viewed with suspicion Zappa’s fondness for taking out full-page ads in the local *LA Free Press*, ostensibly to report on band news. According to Miles, “there were dark mutterings about Frank’s attempt to control the Freak scene.” The freak scene, that is, that he openly disdained and yet still sought to control. “The other Mothers,” notes Miles, “were concerned by Frank’s somewhat messianic diatribes.”

Around that same time, Zappa gave up his role as ringleader of the Log Cabin and bought a house high up in the hills of Laurel Canyon, on Woodrow Wilson Drive. In stark contrast to his readily accessible prior lodgings, the new home was isolated and security was very tight, including a guardhouse and a closed-circuit television system. It was there that Zappa would live out the remainder of his years. The Log Cabin, meanwhile, was taken over by Eric Burden of British rock band the Animals. The cabin had by then become a mandatory stop for all visiting ‘British Invasion’ bands. According to biographer Barry Miles, the cabin’s new ringleader didn’t much care for working with the former occupant, comparing working with Zappa to “working with Hitler.”

Zappa’s move, and his newfound obsession with security, was said to be prompted in part by a curious visit to the Log Cabin in the summer of 1969—the summer of the Tate/LaBianca murders. A man identified only as “the Raven” arrived wielding a gun. Little else seems to be known about the incident but it is interesting to note that just a few years earlier, a guy who was very fond of that moniker had arrived in California. Also known as the Reverend Jim Jones of the People’s Temple, he would become a rather infamous figure.

Frank Zappa remained an enormously prolific composer, arranger and performer of music throughout his life, sometimes playing with various incarnations of the Mothers. Although never a huge commercial success and almost never heard on the radio, his immense body of work is widely respected among fellow musicians and is considered to be hugely influential. What is of far more interest here though are some specific events from Zappa's later years.

On July 14, 1982, while Zappa was performing on his father's home turf in Palermo, Sicily, a war broke out between tear-gas wielding police and inexplicably armed audience members. According to Miles, the concert was held at the "mafia-controlled Stadio Communale La Favorita and all the security appeared to be made men." The Italian army was soon called in to restore order. Had Zappa's father been alive and in attendance, he might well have joined in the gunplay; he reportedly owned a handgun that he at times threatened to use, and he also was said to enjoy a good brawl now and then.

In September 1985, Frank testified before the Senate Commerce, Technology and Transportation Committee, taking Tipper Gore's PMRC committee to task over the issue of record album labeling. This is said to have ignited in Zappa a passion for politics, to such an extent that he dabbled with the idea of running for president. What he ultimately decided to do instead was serve as something of a front man for organizations like the World Bank, the International Monetary Fund and the World Trade Organization.

In 1990, he visited Czechoslovakia at the request of newly installed president Vaclav Havel, who asked him to serve as a consultant on trade and tourism. Zappa was treated by the new Czech administration (which wasn't nearly as popular at home as it was in the West) as though he was making an official state visit. He announced that he had "come to Czechoslovakia to see Communism die… I have been an enthusiastic capitalist for years." He also announced his intention of starting up an international consulting firm aimed at breaking down barriers to Western trade and investment. Toward that end, he began meeting with multinational corporate entities that had an interest in investing in Czechoslovakia.

The man who had, as Miles has noted, refused during the Vietnam era "to be drawn into anti-war protests or demonstrations," and who had his whole life been "more content to mock hippies and groupies than to criticize the Vietnam War, the American overthrow of democratic governments in Chile and Iran, or any of the other excesses committed in his name by his government," had now "internalized the whole Time-Life anticommunist line." Following his escapades in Czechoslovakia, Zappa made a number of trips to Russia to facilitate business deals through what he dubbed his "international licensing, consulting and social engineering" business enterprise.

Zappa's role as unofficial front man for the World Bank came to a premature end when he died of prostate cancer on December 4, 1993, just a couple weeks short of his fifty-third birthday. Rather bizarrely, he was laid to rest in an unmarked grave following a private ceremony less than twenty-four hours later. And it was not until the next day, December 6, 1993, with the body already safely in the ground, that his death was announced to the world.

In 2001, son Ahmet began dating actress Rose McGowan (no relation), whose colorful history included spending part of her childhood in the pedophilic Children of God cult. Her father ran a chapter of the sect, which also bequeathed to Hollywood the Phoenix brothers, Joaquin and River, the latter of whom died under mysterious circumstances at the tender age of twenty-three outside the Viper Room, very near the mouth of Laurel Canyon, on Halloween night, 1993. McGowan's previous paramour had been shock-rocker Brain Warner, better known as Marilyn Manson. A fourth cousin of bellicose political commentator and onetime presidential candidate Pat Buchanan, Warner, whose stage surname is an homage to—who else?—Charles Manson, has proudly served as a high priest in Anton LaVey's Church of Satan.

20

BORN TO BE WILD JOHN KAY

"I have an explosive temper if someone aggravates me… I have been known to put my fists through one or two walls." Steppenwolf vocalist John Kay

"John had a hell of a temper when he was doing drugs." Steve Palmer, a member of one of many incarnations of Steppenwolf

OF ALL THE SINGERS, SONGWRITERS AND MUSICIANS TO ANSWER THE PIED Piper's call summoning them to Laurel Canyon, none took a longer route there than John Kay, the enigmatic frontman for the band Steppenwolf. Kay, as it turns out, came all the way from Nazi Germany, by way of Toronto, Canada and Buffalo, New York, as did his wife and one of his bandmates.

Kay was born Joachim Fritz Krauledat on April 12, 1944, in East Prussia, a province of Germany before 1914 that was separated from the rest of the country by provisions of the Treaty of Versailles, though it remained a German-speaking province. After the plunder and annexation of Poland by the Nazis, it once again became a part of the German state, but only for the next five years. After the fall of Nazi Germany, East Prussia ceased to exist, with the northern portion being absorbed by the USSR into Byelorussia and the southern portion placed under the Polish flag.

Kay was born in Tilsit to Fritz and Elsbeth Krauledat. Fritz had enlisted in the German army in 1936 and decided to make a career of it, eventually rising to the rank of *Oberwachtmeister*, which roughly translates to Brigade Sergeant Major. He was on hand for the invasion of Poland in 1939 and the plunder of France in 1940. With the launch of Operation Barbarossa on the summer solstice of 1941, Fritz was sent to the Russian front. He last saw his wife at Christmastime in 1943. In March of the following year, she received notification of his death.

Between late July and early August of 1944, the widowed Elsbeth left Tilsit with her infant son. It was a fortuitous exit given that the Red Army almost immediately thereafter began bombing the region into oblivion. Elsbeth had been issued a permit that allowed her to travel anywhere in Germany and she used it to move herself and Joachim to Arnstadt, crossing the pre-Berlin Wall border in the process. Upon arrival in Arnstadt, Elsbeth and Joachim were taken under the wing of the Kranz family, who put a roof over their heads and became their benefactors. Soon enough, Elsbeth met Gerhard Kyczinski, a former German soldier and POW who was a mason by trade. In August 1950, Gerhard and Elsbeth married. For the next eight years, they would share a home in Arnstadt with Joachim.

During those years, young Joachim twice vacationed with his mother in the resort town of Travemunde, which Kay later described as "a very popular vacation spot with white beaches and fancy hotels." He also attended the Freie Waldorf Schule, an exclusive private school with a perpetual waiting list. Mother, son and stepfather seemed to travel rather freely, twice crossing over into East Germany and back to visit Gerhard's family. Also while still in Germany, Joachim acquired his first radio and began listening to US Armed Forces Radio, where he first heard an early idol, Little Richard. He also acquired a record player and began collecting albums by Little Richard and others, including Elvis and the Everly Brothers. He also attended screenings of rock'n'roll themed Hollywood films, like Elvis' *Love Me Tender*. At the age of thirteen, not long before leaving Germany, he acquired his first camera.

It would appear then that Kay experienced a rather privileged upbringing for a young war refugee.

In March of 1958, Gerhard, Elsbeth and Joachim packed up and headed off for Toronto, Canada, where several members of the Krauledat and Kyczinski families had already relocated. The trio opted to travel by plane rather than ship, even though flying was a decidedly luxurious mode of travel in those days. Joachim Krauledat, who would soon become John Kay, entered the Canadian school system in the ninth grade. It is said that he knew virtually no English upon arrival, but within mere months he was reportedly speaking it fluently.

The family quickly acquired a late model Chevy and John acquired his first acoustic guitar—and a reel-to-reel tape recorder. He also discovered that Toronto had far more radio stations playing rock'n'roll music than Germany had had to offer. He discovered other strains of American music as well, including gospel and country. Before long, he would have an electric guitar and an amplifier and speaker, along with a better acoustic guitar.

In April of 1963, Gerhard and Elsbeth relocated once again, this time to Buffalo, New York. John stayed behind in Toronto to finish up high school, joining his parents a couple months later. As recounted by Kay in his autobiography, in Buffalo the family rented "a luxurious main floor flat in a stately old house on Woodward Street out towards Williamsville." Gerhard, according to John, "started his own import-export business," a pretty impressive accomplishment for a guy who had just entered the country.

The family didn't stay long in Buffalo, choosing instead to pull up roots once again and relocate, this time all the way across the country to Los Angeles, California. Elsbeth immediately landed a job at the upscale Bullocks department store in Westwood. Within just a few years, she was named manager of her department. Gerhard, meanwhile, quickly "found the job of his life, working for the German consulate in Los Angeles as the Consul General's chauffer," a job he held from 1964 until 1978. As always, John and his family lived charmed lives; not only did the parents both quickly land good jobs, but the aspiring-rock-star son had the good fortune to land in LA at the dawn of a music revolution!

John lost no time forging a friendship with Morgan Cavett, who was already introduced to readers as the son of Oscar-winning screenwriter Frank Cavett. At the time, Cavett was working as the manager of the New Balladeer coffeehouse. Morgan also happened to be the godson of poet and writer Dorothy Parker, who had been born Dorothy Rothschild and who had herself lived for many years at the mouth of Laurel Canyon, at the famed Garden of Allah apartments (where she attempted more than once to kill herself). Morgan had also gone to school with doomed canyon musician Lowell George and he was a close associate of the Vito Paulekas dance troupe. Kay began regularly sleeping on the floor of Cavett's large home, which sat at the mouth of Laurel Canyon directly behind the Chateau Marmont.

Cavett quit his job at the Balladeer soon enough and Kay took over as manager of the popular club. Among the regulars at the time were soon-to-be-Byrds David Crosby, Roger McGuinn and Gene Clark, and Bryan MacLean, who would become a member of Love. In his off hours, Kay also began hanging out at the Troubadour and was soon working there as a self-styled floor manager. There he met Van Dyke Parks, who was known at the time for hosting drug-fueled parties attended by the likes of David Crosby and Beach Boy Brian Wilson. By that time, Morgan had rented an apartment in Laurel Canyon and John regularly camped out there, sleeping in a large walk-in closet. Kay also became a regular at Ciros and was there, along with Vito and his crew, when the Byrds hit the scene and ignited the folk-rock revolution.

Having quickly formed connections to some of the key players in the nascent Laurel Canyon scene, Kay made the rather bizarre decision to leave Los Angeles and his family behind and return to Toronto, hitchhiking there by way of Buffalo. By then, Toronto's Yorkville district had a flourishing folk scene featuring soon-to-be-stars like Gordon Lightfoot, Neil Young and Joni Mitchell. It was almost as if Kay had been dispatched back to Canada to point the other artists there in the right direction, which is exactly what he seems to have done.

According to Kay's autobiography, "within a day or two of [his] arrival" in Toronto, he met the manager of a local club and promptly got a booking that lasted several weeks. He was also offered the basement of the club to sleep in. John Kay, it appears, just had a knack for immediately establishing himself in a new town. He quickly joined a band that would come to be known as the Sparrow, which was known for swapping members with another local band known as the Mynah Birds, fronted by Rickey James Matthews. The Mynahs were bankrolled by a local businessman named John Craig Eaton. At the height of their power, the immensely wealthy and influential Eaton family, which is often referred to as 'Canada's Royal Family,' was worth some $2 billion.

Kay recruited bassist Bruce Palmer but then traded him to the Mynah Birds for Nick St. Nicholas, who, like John, had begun life in Nazi Germany. St. Nicholas was born Klaus Karl Kassbaum on September 28, 1943, but, as with John, Kassbaum's family had emigrated to Toronto in the 1950s. Also joining Kay was keyboardist John Raymond Goadsby, another former Mynah Bird who went by the name Goldy McJohn. Rounding out the band were drummer Gerard McCrohan, known as Jerry Edmonton, and his songwriter brother Dennis McCrohan, who also adopted the surname Edmonton before later settling on the name Mars Bonfire.

Mynahs Neil Young and Bruce Palmer soon found their calling and rode out of town for their magical meeting with Stephen Stills. Joni soon headed west as well. Kay, meanwhile, married Jutta Maue, with whom he had much in common. Maue was born in Nazi Germany in February 1944, just a couple of months before John was born. Her father was killed on the Eastern Front in May 1944, not long after Kay's father was likewise killed. After the war, Maue and her family emigrated to Toronto, a seemingly popular destination for German families in the 1950s.

With his new band in tow, Kay soon headed out of town as well—the first destination being New York City, where the group cut three tracks before returning to Toronto. They were soon back in New York though with a lengthy club booking and a recording contract that kept them there for an extended period of time in 1966. During that time, according to Kay, the band started listening to Edgard Varese, a favorite pastime of future Laurel Canyon musicians.

Later that same year, bookings at the Whisky-a-Go-Go and the club formerly known as Ciros brought the band out to Los Angeles. After about a month though the boys ran out of gigs and Kay resumed his habit of sleeping at Morgan Cavett's apartment. Things were not looking good for the band in LA at that time; they had run out of work and most band members had expired work visas and were in the country illegally. But John Kay, as we have already seen, seems to have had a guardian angel: "It was like a fairy tale. Here I was, no work, no money, a pregnant wife and no prospects, then in walks this guy living next door, from a successful record label, saying he thought I might have a shot at a contract if I could get a band together. It seemed almost like it was all meant to be. Everything seemed to fall into place at the right time."

Kay quickly began putting together a new band. For guitar duties, strangely enough, he recruited a local high school kid with the rather provocative name of Michael Monarch. According to Monarch himself, quoted in Kay's *Magic Carpet Ride*, when he joined the band he "had only been playing for less than two years." According to legend, Monarch was just sixteen when he laid down the lead guitar track for Born To Be Wild and just seventeen when he did the same for Magic Carpet Ride.

Through posted notices advertising the band's need for a bass player, John met and hired John Russell Morgane, also known as Rushton Moreve. Jerry Edmonton on drums and Goldy McJohn on keyboards completed the new ensemble, which took the Germanic name Steppenwolf—inspired by the occult-influenced novel of the same name by Herman Hesse—and signed with ABC Dunhill. This formation would not last long though. Over time, Kay, whom Nick St. Nicholas has referred to as "the Führer," would fire nearly every one of the original band members. And some of their replacements.

The fledgling band rehearsed through the summer of 1967 in a rented garage. By December 1967, though they had been together just a matter of months, ABC decided the band was ready to cut an album. That self-titled debut was recorded in just four days at a cost of just $9,000 and released the very next month. On April 4, 1968, just a few months after the release, Steppenwolf had their national television debut on *American Bandstand*, lip-syncing to their monster hit, Born To Be Wild.

The week before the band was beamed into America's living rooms, Jutta gave birth to what would be John Kay's only offspring, Shawn Mandy Kay, on March 29, 1968. Growing up, Shawn's circle of friends and classmates would include Carnie and Wendy Wilson (daughters of Beach Boy Brian Wilson), John Phillips' daughter Chynna, Zappa offspring Moon Unit and Dweezil, Ethan Browne (son of Jackson Browne), and Phil Spector's son Donte. Shawn Kay would later recall that she was intimidated by her father when she was young, adding that, "when he was around, there was a certain amount of tension in the air."

In October 1968, Steppenwolf dropped its second album, unimaginatively entitled *The Second*. That disc contained the band's second monster hit, Magic Carpet Ride, based on an unfinished song brought to the band by bassist Rushton Moreve. It was to be the band's last top-ten single. It was also, given that Born To Be Wild was donated to the band by the aforementioned Mars Bonfire, the only hit single written by a band member (a lesser hit, The Pusher, was penned by Hoyt Axton, who also wrote Three Dog Night's Joy To The World, and who was both a resident of Laurel Canyon and the son of a US Navy officer).

It makes perfect sense then, I suppose, that following the release of that second album, Moreve was unceremoniously fired by Kay and replaced with Nick St. Nicholas. According to Kay, Moreve had been "becoming increasingly paranoid of the police and would relate to us these wildly imaginative tales of being arrested and beaten." Moreve, it should be noted, was the boyfriend of 'Animal' Huxley, the only granddaughter of the very same Aldous Huxley who had been sold a vacuum cleaner by Captain Beefheart. As Goldy McJohn recalled it, just before being let go, Moreve and Huxley (who was name-checked on the cover of Zappa's *Freak Out!* album) packed up their belongings and left the state out of fear that there was going to be a massive earthquake that would cause California to sink into the ocean. When that failed to materialize, Moreve ultimately returned to the LA area but was never asked to rejoin the band. He was later killed in a motorcycle accident on July 1, 1981, in Santa Barbara, California at the age of thirty-two.

Steppenwolf released their third album, *At Your Birthday Party*, in March 1969. The cover art featured a photo of the band taken at the burned-out remains of Canned Heat's former Laurel Canyon home. The disc yielded no top ten singles and was largely a commercial failure. Just a few months later though, the band's career got a massive boost with the release of the film *Easy Rider* on July 14, 1969. With a soundtrack that prominently featured Born To Be Wild and The Pusher, both pulled from Steppenwolf's debut album, the film gained the band a worldwide audience. It also solidified their image as a Hell's Angels/outlaw biker band. Kay, who fancied himself to be a tough guy, actively embraced that image, frequently appearing with his band at biker rallies and routinely appearing on stage and in publicity photos clad in black leather and with a perpetual scowl.

As 1969 came to a close, Kay and the band released their fourth album, *Monster*, which sold somewhat better then its predecessor. The band also launched a successful tour in 1970, which included a stop at the Bath Festival of Blues in the UK alongside fellow Laurel Canyon acts the Byrds, Canned Heat and the Mothers of Invention. Another Laurel Canyon band, Three Dog Night, which already had three top ten singles by 1970, tagged along for part of the tour.

Steppenwolf released two more instantly forgettable albums before Kay officially retired the band in 1972. He had already fired Nick St. Nicholas, in part because, as Kay noted in his autobiography, he and the rest of the band "weren't sure what Nick's sexual orientation was or had become." That is apparently a problem when one wants one's band to project a tough, macho image.

Kay had been hinting since the release of Steppenwolf's second album that he had aspirations for a solo career. His first two solo efforts though, released in 1972 and 1973, failed to attract much attention, with the latter of the two stalling out on the charts at number 200. Not surprisingly then, it didn't take Kay long to decide to get the band back together, initially including original members Edmonton and McJohn. Goldy though, whom Kay claimed "had a lot of demons buried deep in his psyche," was fired after the first of three albums the new lineup released, leaving drummer Jerry Edmonton as the only original band member to not be discharged. With the albums failing to gain much traction on the charts, Kay once again retired the band in 1976.

A new version of Steppenwolf soon emerged, however, this one put together by fired former members Goldy McJohn and Nick St. Nicholas. That development though did not sit well with Kay, who felt that he alone had the moral right to use the Steppenwolf name, though he did not have exclusive legal rights to it. Kay would later write that St. Nicholas and McJohn were "both lucky to be alive today after what they did. I knew people who in turn knew people who, for a price, would put a serious hurt on someone with no questions asked." As I may have mentioned, Kay likes to think of himself as something of a bad-ass.

Kay quickly engaged his attorneys in some legal maneuvering to strongarm McJohn and St. Nicholas into signing over all their future royalties to he and Edmonton. He then set about putting together his own version of Steppenwolf, this time leaving out even Edmonton. Kay had decided that, this time around, he alone would cash in on the Steppenwolf name. The reconstituted band embarked on a low-budget tour that featured small venues where band members had to set up and tear down their own equipment. It was a far cry from the band's heyday in the late 1960s and after two failed albums, the second of which was not even released in the US, the band once again called it quits in 1984.

It wasn't long though before Kay, in his own words, "received an offer to tour jointly with the Guess Who, a reconstituted lineup fronted by their original bass player." Kay readily accepted the offer and by doing so lent his tacit approval to a version of the Guess Who that included only one original member. This was, of course, the very same John Kay who had used every means available to prevent his own bass player and keyboardist from using the name Steppenwolf.

The new Steppenwolf lineup released two instantly forgettable albums in 1987 and 1990 before Kay once again retired the band name. He continues to occasionally put out relatively obscure solo efforts, including live albums in 2004 and 2006. Others connected to the band have not fared so well. Steppenwolf's original producer, Gabriel Mekler, who also produced Three Dog Night, died in a motorcycle accident sometime in 1977. Rushton Moreve, as already noted, also perished in a motorcycle accident, in July 1981. Drummer Jerry Edmonton died in a car accident on November 28, 1993. Nick St. Nicholas and Michael Monarch, meanwhile, play in an all-star band dubbed the World Classic Rockers.

And Born To Be Wild and Magic Carpet Ride continue to be played daily on classic rock radio stations.

21

A WHITER SHADE OF PALE
ARTHUR LEE AND LOVE

"We definitely started what became the Hippie movement and it spread from there up to Haight-Ashbury and the Fillmore in San Francisco, and then all across the nation." Arthur Lee, vocalist for the band Love

"Arthur was the whitest black guy I knew. He didn't live the black lifestyle, always liked the white way of life, and liked white girls." Producer Skip Taylor

OF ALL THE BANDS TO POUR OUT OF LAUREL CANYON DURING ITS HEYDAY, none is more shrouded in mystery and rumor than Love, fronted by one of the most talented and troubled figures on the Sunset Strip, the menacingly charismatic Arthur Lee. Though Lee and his bandmates never achieved the sales figures of contemporaries like the Doors, the Byrds, and the Mamas and the Papas, the band's body of work continues to be hugely influential and its album *Forever Changes* is widely considered to be among the greatest rock albums of all time.

Arthur Porter Taylor was born in Memphis, Tennessee, on March 7, 1945. His mother, Agnes Porter, was the daughter of Ed Porter, a white man, and Malvise “Mal” Mosley, a very fair-skinned black woman. Throughout her life, most of Agnes’ friends and acquaintances assumed she was white. Chester Taylor, a black cornet player, was Arthur’s father, but Arthur only saw him a few times throughout his life and he consequently never knew whether he had any half-siblings on his father’s side.

Arthur’s early years were spent in Memphis, where he was raised by his doting—though authoritarian—mother and her sister Vera, who frequently babysat while Agnes worked. Vera was a heavy drinker and smoker who Arthur credited with starting him on cigarettes when he was just three. According to Arthur, Aunt Vera died young from ingesting rat poison, which must have had a considerable impact on the young boy.

Growing up just one block away was friend and classmate Johnny Echols, two years younger than Arthur. In 1952, Agnes and then seven-year-old Arthur uprooted and moved to Los Angeles. The next year, Johnny Echols and his family decided to move to LA as well, strangely finding a home just two doors down from Arthur’s new family home. Agnes soon met Clinton “C.L.” Lee, whom she married on April 23, 1955. Five years later, C.L. legally adopted Arthur, who would from then on be known as Arthur Lee.

Clinton had served in the military during WWII before settling in Los Angeles in 1946. Arthur’s authorized biography provides the following description of C.L. Lee’s postwar employment: “Skilled at masonry, he prospered during LA’s postwar construction boom. Arthur would often point to the sculptures that adorned buildings along Wilshire Boulevard as evidence of his stepfather’s handiwork.” Many of those adornments, as with those on the monuments of Washington carved by Carl Franzoni’s ancestors, are loaded with Masonic symbolism.

Arthur’s LA neighborhood was filled with musical influences. Little Richard, who had such a profound influence on John Kay, was a neighbor, as was singer Bobby Day. Ray Charles had a recording studio nearby. Attending Dorsey High School with Albert were Billy Preston and future Beach Boy Mike Love. And Arthur, unlike other kids in the neighborhood but very much like other future Laurel Canyon stars, had musical instruments and a reel-to-reel tape recorder, as well as a television. He was also known for always having money in his pocket.

Lee was a naturally gifted athlete who served as the captain of Dorsey High's basketball team. He was also known as a tough kid who didn't shy away from a fight. In the late 1950s, legendary fighter Sugar Ray Robinson lived around the corner and Arthur entertained thoughts of becoming a boxer. Instead he opted to pursue a musical career, dropping out of high school during his senior year. Arthur had formed his first successful band while still in school. Dubbed Arthur Lee and the LAGs, their first professional gig was at an exclusive Beverly Hills country club, right across the street from future bandmate Bryan MacLean's family home. The LAGs' unscrupulous manager/agent routinely booked them as the Coasters, or the Drifters, or whoever else had a current hit on the charts. Lee and the rest of the group were, though quite young, very accomplished musicians who could mimic the sound of numerous other bands.

While still a minor, Lee recorded his first single, The Ninth Wave, for prestigious Capitol Records. The release received little promotion though and failed to chart. Also while still a minor, he received a brand new Corvair Monza, courtesy of step-dad Clinton. In 1964, he wrote the song My Diary for vocalist Rosa Lee Brooks. The guitar work on the single was supplied by an unknown musician named Jimi Hendrix, who had never before set foot in a recording studio. That same year, Lee disbanded the LAGs and formed the American Four with longtime friend and classmate Johnny Echols. They soon added acclaimed local drummer Don Conka. The group was essentially a top forty cover band, once again good enough to sound like anyone they chose to mimic, though they did release an original single, Luci Baines, named for the First Daughter who had spent a night out on the town with Gene Clark.

One figure on the canyon scene who would prove to be hugely influential on young Arthur was club owner and former cop/gangster Elmer Valentine. Arthur would later write that "Elmer Valentine was not only a good friend, he was like a father figure to me." Another major influence was the emergence of the Byrds and the human circus surrounding them. As Echols would later recall, "What impressed us when we saw the Byrds were the people in the audience—what the *Los Angeles Times* called the 'Sherwood Forest People'—because they looked like something out of Robin Hood. It was this huge, fascinating group of eclectic people, all dressed totally bizarrely, with long, long hair. These were the leftovers from the Beat era. They followed the Byrds around."

Those Sherwood Forest people were, of course, the Vito Paulekas crew. And they would soon be following Arthur and his band around as well.

When the band had worked its way up from playing a bowling alley to playing the Brave New World club, they changed their name to the Grass Roots. They also added a rhythm guitarist by the name of Robert Kenneth Beausoleil. Shortly thereafter, they added a second rhythm guitarist, Bryan MacLean, who had grown up amid considerable wealth—his father was an architect for the rich and famous. As Bryan later acknowledged, he "knew everyone in Hollywood." Bryan had been a regular at the New Balladeer club, along with Gene Clark, Roger McGuinn, David Crosby, Michael Clarke, and John Kay. He had dropped out of high school at seventeen to pursue an art career, but had decided to focus on music instead, unsuccessfully auditioning to be one of the Monkees. Soon after, he met Arthur and Johnny and gave up his temporary employment as the Byrds' road manager.

For a brief time, both Bobby and Bryan filled the rhythm guitar position, making it a six-piece band. However, Arthur soon found that the band wasn't earning enough to carry both of them and so Beausoleil was let go. Bryan was chosen over Bobby in part because MacLean had a connection to the Vito crew, guaranteeing the fledgling band a lively audience and a lot of buzz on the Strip.

Beausoleil would later migrate to the San Francisco area for the famed Summer of Love, moving into the former Russian Embassy with filmmaker and occultist Kenneth Anger, who—according to Bobby, quoted in John Gilmore's *Garbage People*—"had this contact with this group called 'The Process.'" Anger was also, not too surprisingly, yet another son of the military/intelligence complex; his father, Wilbur Anglemyer, had been an engineer who developed machineguns for Kellogg during WWII and later went to work for Douglas Aircraft.

Beausoleil played in a number of long-forgotten bands, many bearing names with obvious occult overtones. While playing with a lineup known as Orkustra, Bobby once shared a stage with Stephen Stills, Neil Young and the rest of Buffalo Springfield. Another formation he briefly joined was known as the Magick Powerhouse of Oz.

Beausoleil returned to LA in October 1967 following a split with Anger. Meanwhile, Charles Manson, released from prison on March 21, 1967, established his first roots in Los Angeles around December 1967 at a notorious home in Topanga Canyon known as the 'Spiral Staircase,' which by some reports was a cult gathering spot. It was there that Bobby first met Charlie and the two aspiring musicians quickly formed a bond, with Bobby agreeing to join Charlie's band, the Milky Way. That supergroup broke up after only one gig, however, though Bobby and Charlie remained close.

Beausoleil—who, according to John Gilmore's *Garbage People* was chronically abused as a child by an aunt and uncle, with a former girlfriend describing it as "typical of the worst of the sexual and other abuse brought down on a little kid"—had a brief film career as well, appearing as Lucifer in Anger's *Invocation of My Demon Brother* (though the footage was originally shot for *Lucifer Rising*), and as Cupid in Robert Carl Cohen's *Mondo Hollywood*. Later, as previously noted, Beausoleil would compose, perform and record the soundtrack for *Lucifer Rising* from a prison cell, with help from fellow Mansonite/musician Steve "Clem" Grogan.

At the time he met Manson, Beausoleil was living with musician Gary Hinman, as was Mansonite Mary Brunner; Hinman's Topanga Canyon home reportedly featured a basement drug lab. By 1968, Bobby had his own place in Topanga Canyon, at 19844 Horseshoe Lane. By early 1969, he was living in an apartment in Laurel Canyon. In July of that year, Bobby, Brunner and Susan Atkins murdered Hinman in his home, reportedly on the orders of Manson. Bobby was arrested on August 6, just two days before the carnage at Cielo Drive. But here, I suppose, I may have digressed just a bit.

Love's initial lineup of Arthur Lee on vocals, Johnny Echols on lead guitar, Bryan MacLean on vocals and rhythm guitar, John Fleckenstein on bass and Don Conka on drums would not last long. Actually, as was true with Steppenwolf, none of the configurations of Arthur's band would last long. In those early days, Lee and Echols were still living at home with their parents. Bryan though had moved into the upper loft of the Vito Clay Studio; on the lower level was the Byrds' rehearsal space. By the end of summer 1965, Arthur and Johnny had moved in as well.

As John Fleckenstein recalled, "Vito and those guys were like our groupies. They trailed us everywhere we played and brought their whole scene with them." But unlike the other group with whom Arthur's band shared both groupies and rehearsal space, the Grass Roots were considered to be a great live band, arguably the best that Laurel Canyon had to offer. The band though had a slight problem—the name Grass Roots was already taken by another band. So in the fall of 1965, Arthur's band became Love, claimed by some to be an homage to departed guitarist Bobby Beausoleil, whose nickname was Cupid.

With the name change came a new venue, Bido Lito's, yet another of the small clubs lining the Sunset Strip during its glory days. Vito and company, of course, came along for the ride. Kenny Forssi, who had arrived in LA in 1964, was recruited as the band's new bass player, replacing Fleckenstein. Forssi's roommate, Swiss-born Alban "Snoopy" Pfisterer, was subsequently hired to fill in on drums for the frequently absent Conka. Don was, by all accounts, a much more proficient drummer than Snoopy, but his prodigious drug intake made him extremely unreliable.

In January 1966, the band was signed by Jac Holzman to his Elektra Records label. Holzman's was, to say the least, an unlikely success story. Between the years 1950 and 1955, over 1,000 record labels were reportedly launched in the US. Only two survived, one of which was Atlantic Records. The other was Jac Holzman's Elektra Records, launched, as industry legend is written, while Holzman, the son of a Harvard-educated doctor, was a nineteen-year-old student living in the dorms at St. John's College in Annapolis, Maryland. The venture was purportedly financed with just $600, half from Holzman's Bar Mitzvah and the other half from a classmate's veteran's bonus.

As part of Arthur's deal with Holzman, he was given his own publishing company, Grass Roots Records. Publishing royalties were paid through Third Story Music, a company controlled by the shadowy Herb Cohen and his brother. Arthur also had a signed personal management contract with Cohen.

Once signed, the band quickly got to work recording their self-titled debut album. Snoopy laid down all the drum tracks for the perpetually AWOL Conka. And in a strange turn of events, Echols, Forssi, and MacLean actually played their own instruments in the studio, though Lee did fill in at times. It is said that Lee could play any band member's instrument better than they could, with the notable exception of guitar virtuoso Johnny Echols. And all of the band members, needless to say, could play better than the guys in the band they shared rehearsal space with.

Elektra staff producer Paul Rothchild—who would play a key role in shaping the sound of the second rock band signed by Elektra, the Doors—was doing prison time on a minor drug charge so Holzman and various others filled in as producers on the disc. Released just a few months after the band was signed, the album featured cover art photographed at—where else?—the ruins of a fire-ravaged home in Laurel Canyon.

On June 18, 1966, the band made its first television appearance on Dick Clark's *American Bandstand*. Also appearing was the Bobby Fuller Four, performing their hit song I Fought The Law. Exactly one month later, on July 18, 1966, rising star Bobby Fuller would be found dead in his car, the victim of a very obvious homicide that was treated by the LAPD as a suicide. At about that same time, Arthur moved into what was known as The Castle, a massive estate that occupied a full city block and that was, by some reports, the onetime home of Bela Lugosi. Lee had previously been living on one floor of a large home owned by Elmer Valentine.

It is said that the members of the Doors, and Jim Morrison in particular, idolized Love and its leader, Arthur Lee. The Doors' long, improvisational songs like The End and When the Music's Over were directly inspired by Love's long, improvisational jams, as Ray Manzarek has freely admitted. And Arthur often claimed that Morrison would camp out outside Lee's Laurel Canyon home waiting for a chance to hang out with his label mate. For a time in the mid-1960s, Lee dated Pamela Courson, who would thereafter become Morrison's frequent companion and, upon his death, the sole heir to his sizable estate. Courson was with Morrison when he died under what remains to this day a shroud of mystery. She herself was dead less than three years later, on April 25, 1974, allegedly of a self-administered heroin overdose.

Before recording sessions began for the band's sophomore album, Michael Stuart joined as the group's new drummer, with Snoopy moving over to keyboards. Arthur also added John Barbieri, also known as Tjay Cantrelli, on saxophone and flute. Little is known about the mysterious Cantrelli other than that he apparently hailed from Compton, California. The new additions made Love, for a brief time, a seven-piece band, which Arthur felt was necessary for the intricate arrangements that were to be featured on the album.

Stuart's father worked in the aerospace industry, first in Texas and then in the military town of San Diego, where various other Laurel Canyon notables spent time during their formative years. Stuart scored a scholarship to Pepperdine, followed by a stint at UCLA. Before joining Love, he played with the Sons of Adam, yet another band that had a communal home in everyone's favorite canyon. The Sons had gotten their start in Baltimore, just outside Washington, DC, where they were known as Fender IV. Their new name had been bestowed upon them by Vito associate Kim Fowley.

Da Capo, Love's second album, was produced by Paul Rothchild, who had, as previously noted, been a fixture at Club 47 in Cambridge in the Boston Strangler days. Rothchild's parole officer, ever accommodating, had signed off on him venturing out to California. The cover art for the new disc was once again photographed at a fire-ravaged home in Laurel Canyon, though the sound of the record was much different than the first, fusing jazz with psychedelic rock.

Around the time of the *Da Capo* sessions, Arthur vacated The Castle and moved into what was dubbed the 'Trip house' on Kirkwood Drive in Laurel Canyon, so named in honor of the fact that the film of that name was shot there. About that very same time, Peter Fonda, star of *The Trip*, decided to more fully immerse himself in the folk-rock scene by recording an entire solo album that, perhaps mercifully, was never to be released. The disc contained a single penned by up-and-comer Gram Parsons.

As was true of virtually all of Laurel Canyon's stars, the members of Love were of military draft age. As John Einarson's biography of Arthur Lee notes, "Unless you were able to secure a college deferment or a coveted 4-F ineligibility rejection, the draft (compulsory military service) was a cold, looming reality for every adolescent male… [and] black Americans found themselves drafted in disproportionate quantity." And yet, shockingly enough, every member of every incarnation of the band, black and white alike, deftly avoided military service. Arthur is said to have fooled the draft board by pretending to be gay. Snoopy supposedly did so by showing up sleep-deprived and unwashed. And so on.

Soon after the recording of *Da Capo*, Arthur dropped Snoopy and Tjay from the roster and Love once again became a quintet. The pared down band quickly got to work on the material for what is widely regarded as their masterpiece and essentially their swan song, *Forever Changes*. Recording sessions began at the dawn of the Summer of Love. The band Love, meanwhile, made the dubious decision to pass on the Monterey Pop Festival.

Arthur initially brought in Hal Blaine and the rest of the Wrecking Crew for the *Forever Changes* sessions, which he later described as a ploy to motivate the band. By that time, Echols, Forssi, MacLean and Stuart all had serious heroin habits. Arthur was shooting up as well, but his drug of choice was cocaine. He was also a prolific smoker of hash and an acid head. In any event, the ploy reportedly worked and the band pulled it together enough to complete the sessions, but it was the last time they would record together.

Though now considered one of the finest collections of songs ever pressed on vinyl, *Forever Changes* received a lukewarm reception when released in November 1967, topping out at number 154 on the charts. Though a local favorite, Love had never established a strong national presence. And by 1968, local gigs were drying up and band members weren't above pawning their instruments for drug money. Arthur decided to let Bryan go. Around that same time, road manager Neil Rappaport returned home from a Miami gig and promptly turned up dead. Dark rumors circulated suggesting that band members had murdered Rappaport in a dispute over drugs and money. Years later, Arthur claimed that he "still [didn't] know what happened to him." Some of the rumors circulating suggested that he had been hanged. Snoopy told an interviewer that, "Neil and Johnny [Echols] became shooting partners. And then one day, Johnny fixed Neil a little too much—can you dig it? Technically you could call it murder, but each guy prepares his own needle."

By mid-1968, Love had ceased to exist as a band. There hadn't been any formal breakup—Arthur had simply stopped calling the others, who were rapidly descending into a downward spiral of heroin addiction. Forssi was living in the converted garage of a home in Laurel Canyon, with his accommodations, according to Arthur, painted entirely black, including the windows. By late summer 1968, Lee had assembled a new band he was calling Love, though it didn't contain any of the eight musicians who had previously played under that name (John Fleckenstein, Don Conka, Johnny Echols, Kenny Forssi, Bryan MacLean, Snoopy Pfisterer, Tjay Cantrelli, and Michael Stuart). Arthur served as singer, songwriter, manager, booking agent, arranger and producer.

Circa 1969, Lee sold the 'Trip house' and moved to a more secluded, secure location off Coldwater Canyon. There he would become something of a recluse, though stepdad C.L., who handled maintenance of the property, was a frequent presence. That same year, Arthur declined an invitation to play at Woodstock, just as he had done with Monterey. He did though release two new Love albums in rapid succession, just three months apart at the tail end of 1969. Neither gained any traction on the sales charts. A year later, in December 1970, he tried again with an album entitled *False Start*. The disc generated a certain amount of buzz owing to the fact that the first track on the album featured the lead guitar work of Jimi Hendrix, who had also helped arrange the song. It was the first release of new music by the guitar legend since his tragic death just three months earlier, on September 18, 1970. The album, nevertheless, failed to sell.

Shortly before his death, Hendrix had talked to Lee about putting a new band together, which was to feature the two of them and Steve Winwood. Arthur had another curious connection to Hendrix; both had been lovers of Devon Wilson, who had been one of the last people to see Hendrix alive and who died in a mysterious fall at the Chelsea Hotel just five months after the death of Hendrix. And so it was that Arthur Lee was romantically linked to two women, Courson and Wilson, who in turn were romantically linked to two legendary rock stars, Morrison and Hendrix, with all four of them subsequently turning up dead in a span of just three-and-a-half years, from September 1970 through April 1974.

Lee released his first solo album, *Vindicator*, in late 1972. It was poorly reviewed and failed to generate much in the way of sales, so Arthur put together a new version of Love and came back with *Reel to Real* in 1975. No one seemed to really care. Rumors soon began to circulate that Arthur was reduced to working as a house painter or, worse yet, was panhandling on Sunset Blvd. If true, it was a remarkable fall from grace for a guy accustomed to such luxuries as getting his clothes custom-made. He would remain a rather elusive enigma for the next several years, and then begin a series of incarcerations. Meanwhile, in 1980, his uncle, Johnson Porter, was gunned down on the mean streets of Los Angeles.

In December 1983, Lee was arrested and charged with arson, a crime that he did time for at the California Institution for Men in Chino, California. Upon his release, he left LA for Memphis, returning to LA in 1988, only to soon be arrested and charged with auto theft, a crime for which he briefly served more time. Upon his release this time, he moved into his girlfriend's apartment in Valley Village, just north of Coldwater Canyon. A year-and-a-half later, in March 1991, he sold fifty percent of his song publishing catalog to raise cash.

One year later, Arthur released what was to be his last album of new music, *Arthur Lee and Love*. Once again, it was not well received by fans or critics. After remaining largely out of sight for the next three years, Lee was arrested on June 10, 1995, for discharging a firearm off his balcony. He was also found to be in possession of a cache of armor-piercing Teflon bullets and, of course, drugs. Like many of his contemporaries in the peace-and-love crowd, Arthur had a longtime fondness for guns. Less than three weeks later, he was arrested once again for a domestic violence incident.

On June 27, 1996, Lee was convicted on the weapon and drug charges, a 'third strike' under California law that resulted in a twelve-and-a-half year prison sentence. At the end of 2001, he was granted an appeal and released to face a new trial; at retrial he was convicted of lesser charges and sentenced to time served. Arthur was a free man once again, but that freedom proved to be rather short-lived; on August 3, 2006, Lee passed away in Memphis after a battle with leukemia.

Arthur was not the only member of the band to spend time in a California correctional facility. Don Conka, the band's original drummer, though he never actually played on any Love records, reportedly served ten years or more on drug-related charges. In latter years, he rejoined Arthur in reformulated versions of Love, though nothing that came from those sessions and performances was recorded. Conka died on September 24, 2004; many who knew him were surprised that he hadn't died years earlier.

Bryan MacLean initially walked away from the music business following his discharge from the band. As one might expect from a kid born into a life of privilege, he dabbled for a time in the world of high finance, trading in stocks and real estate before suffering a nervous breakdown and then finding his salvation in the mid-1970s with an Evangelical Christian ministry. He then returned to the music industry, focusing largely on Christian music and collaborating at times with his half-sister, Maria McKee, vocalist for the short-lived band Lone Justice. On Christmas Day 1998, MacLean was dining with writer Kevin Delaney at a Los Angeles eatery when Bryan excused himself to use the restroom, where he promptly collapsed and died of a reported heart attack at the relatively young age of fifty-two. Delaney had been working on a book about the legendary band, but that book never materialized.

The fate of Tjay Cantrelli is one of many lingering mysteries that surround the band. It is generally assumed that he died sometime in the early 1990s, but no one really knows for sure. Alban "Snoopy" Pfisterer and Michael Stuart, now known as Michael Stuart-Ware, both reportedly disappeared for varying lengths of time but both eventually resurfaced, with Stuart-Ware publishing a biography of the band in 2003 and Snoopy releasing an obscure solo album in 2008.

Another enduring mystery surrounds the post-Love activities of Johnny Echols and Ken Forssi, both of whom dropped out of sight for an extended period of time. According to persistent rumors, the pair were reduced to holding up donut shops to get drug money, resulting in lengthy prison sentences following convictions on multiple counts of armed robbery. Echols has claimed the rumors are untrue, but he has acknowledged that the pair were arrested outside an LA donut shop, and the fact remains that the two disappeared for nearly twenty years.

Forssi, who showed quite an aptitude for aerospace engineering before embarking on a music career, died of a brain tumor on January 5, 1998, the same year as MacLean's curious death. It is said that he had been obsessed with the notion of global political conspiracies in his final years. His alleged partner-in-crime, Johnny Echols, is currently living in the 'New Age' mecca of Sedona, Arizona.

Ken Forssi was not, it should perhaps be noted, the only Laurel Canyon local with prior connections to the aerospace industry; at least two of Charlie's girls had such connections as well. Nancy Pittman, who was introduced to the Manson Family by actress Angela Lansbury, was the daughter of an aerospace engineer who designed missile guidance systems. And 'Squeaky' Fromme, childhood friend of actor/comedian Phil Hartman, was the daughter of yet another aerospace worker, one who has been described as being abusively authoritarian.

Arthur Lee also had, by numerous accounts, an authoritarian streak of his own. According to drummer Snoopy, Lee was "a megalomaniac; extremely authoritarian." Record producer David Anderle noted that he didn't "want to say that Arthur was demonic, but he was very manipulative and destructive." Lee also had undeniable charisma and a commanding, and somewhat menacing, stage presence. Michael Ware has written that, "Arthur had… an aura of calm, quiet power… he seemed better than 'regular' human beings. More capable. Everyone looked up to him and respected him, and feared him."

Like others in this saga, Arthur Lee also appears to have suffered with a rather pronounced dissociative disorder. Drummer Gary Stern once said that he believed "there were two Arthurs, as if he was schizophrenic." Rock'n'roll photographer Herbie Worthington described Arthur as "a walking contradiction. He could be the sweetest person one minute and then his mind would click and he could be an asshole." Worthington's take on Lee, needless to say, sounds hauntingly like Bonnie Clark's take on brother Gene: "He could be very warm and loving, but that could change in a heartbeat."

22

ENDLESS VIBRATIONS
THE BEACH BOYS

"Dennis Wilson was killed by my shadow because he took my music and changed the words from my soul." Charles Manson

ARTHUR LEE WAS CERTAINLY NOT WITHOUT RIVALS FOR THE TITLE OF 'MOST talented yet troubled musician on the Sunset Strip' in the 1960s. Many would argue that the rightful holder of that crown was the man whose eccentricities are the stuff of legend—Brian Wilson, the primary creative force behind the spectacular rise and enduring success of the Beach Boys.

The Beach Boys were somewhat unique among the bands calling Laurel Canyon home back in the day. For starters, they dropped their first album before there *was* a Laurel Canyon scene, and before there was a British Invasion as well. And their squeaky clean, all-American public image was seriously at odds with the look favored by their long-haired, bearded peers. Their music as well, initially focused almost exclusively on surfing, cars and girls, seemed far removed from the folk-rock revolution swirling around bands like the Byrds and Buffalo Springfield.

Some readers may be inclined to dismiss the Beach Boys as being roughly on par with that other much-maligned Laurel Canyon band, the Monkees. But as was true of Mickey Dolenz, Peter Tork and Mike Nesmith, the Wilson brothers and their bandmates were very much welcomed as peers by the rest of the canyon community. Brian Wilson was, in fact, looked upon as an almost God-like figure, regarded as arguably the finest musician, songwriter, producer and arranger of his era. No less a figure than David Crosby has said that, in the 1960s, "Brian was the most highly regarded musician in America, hands down."

The story of the Beach Boys begins in the late 1700s, when the Wilson clan first ventured across the Atlantic and put down roots in New York. Henry Wilson, born in 1804, was the first American-born member of the family. He moved to Ohio where, according to Peter Carlin, "he worked as a stonemason." Not unlike Carl Franzoni's father. And Arthur Lee's stepfather. And John Kay's stepfather. There might be a pattern developing here.

In the late nineteenth century, William Henry Wilson moved to Kansas to try his hand at farming, but soon lost interest in that and went into the industrial plumbing business instead. Again according to Carlin, he soon scored "contracts to work on the state's new reformatory system." There was, no doubt, lots of money to be made in the prison-building business. Some of that money was invested in ten acres of prime farmland in Escondido, California, where he arrived around 1904. By 1905 though, he was back in Kansas in the plumbing business. William Henry's son, William Coral "Buddy" Wilson, set out for California a decade later, in 1914.

Buddy has been described by Carlin as "Moody and scattered, plagued by searing headaches and a self-destructive thirst for whiskey… Often awash in alcohol and self-pity, Buddy's bile regularly boiled over into violence, directed most often at [wife] Edith. But he could also turn his fists on his children." One of those children, who came to blows with his dad on more than one occasion, was Murry Gage Wilson, born July 2, 1917. Murry reportedly despised his abusive father and after the death of his mother never saw or spoke to him again.

Murry left school in 1935, at the height of the Great Depression, and, though many Americans were struggling to eke out a living any way they could, he had no trouble finding work as a clerk with the Southern California Gas Company. On March 26, 1938, he married Audree Korthof, with whom he would have three boys, two of them born in curious proximity to the summer and winter solstices: Brian Douglas Wilson, born June 20, 1942; Dennis Carl Wilson, born December 4, 1944; and Carl Dean Wilson, born December 21, 1946.

By 1942, Murry had landed a better job as a junior administrator at Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company. A few years later, he took a foreman's position at AiResearch, an aeronautics firm tasked with manufacturing parts for Boeing civilian and military aircraft. He next decided to go into business for himself, opening an industrial equipment rental company in South Gate that he called ABLE Machinery.

Like his father before him, described by Steven Gaines in *Heroes and Villains* as having an "explosive temper," Murry was widely regarded as being volatile and prone to violence. Son Dennis would say that he and his brothers had "had a shitty childhood. Our dad used to whale on us... That asshole beat the shit out of us." The chronic abuse, he noted, led to both of his brothers being bed-wetters into their teens. Gaines wrote that, "on many occasions [Murry's] punishments went beyond simple beatings into the realm of the sadistic." It is said that Dennis, the most rebellious of the three boys and therefore the most frequent target of Murry's wrath, was on various occasions beaten with a 2 x 4 and burned with matches. One particularly savage beating delivered to brother Brian when he was just two left him nearly deaf in his right ear.

Even more disturbing if true was another aspect of the boys' childhoods that Dennis would later allude to when he would tell people cryptic stories about being raped by black men.

Murry's younger sister Emily had also married in 1938, to Milton Love, whose family owned a thriving Los Angeles-area sheet metal business. Milton and Emily lived in a luxurious 5,000 square foot villa in Baldwin Hills with their six offspring, the oldest of whom was Mike Love. The couple were said to be rather rigid disciplinarians.

Following his graduation from high school, Brian began taking music and psychology classes at El Camino Junior College. It was at that time that the Beach Boys, conceived as a family business, came into being. Brian was joined by brother Dennis, who would evolve into the band's drummer, and brother Carl, who would become the group's lead guitarist, as well as cousin Mike Love and neighbor/classmate Al Jardine. Dennis, the only real surfer in the band, is credited with suggesting the group's musical direction. The band's first single, Surfin', was recorded in September 1961 and released December 8 of that same year. The song quickly climbed to numbers two on the local charts and seventy-five on the national Billboard charts. Brian promptly dropped out of college to devote his undivided attention to music. Dennis was just seventeen at the time and Carl was not quite fifteen. They were, it appears, getting into the music business at the right time—in the decade from 1955 to 1965, record sales increased tenfold, from about $60 million annually to $600 million.

Murry almost immediately appointed himself the band's manager and producer, while assigning Audree bookkeeping duties. He then formed the Sea of Tunes publishing company to handle Brian's songs, granting himself controlling interest. He also got the boys a contract with prestigious Capitol Records. The Beach Boys offices, fortuitously enough, would end up being located right across the hall from the offices of master publicist Derek Taylor, so they would naturally become clients. Taylor would arrive in Los Angeles seeking work as an independent press agent just in time to take on the Byrds as his star clients. But first he would make quite a name for himself in the UK by generating a media firestorm around a fledgling band known as the Beatles.

Throughout his life, Brian worked with a series of collaborators, many of them with interesting connections. His first such collaborator was Gary Usher, an aspiring twenty-year-old musician who, according to industry legend, happened to be walking down a Hawthorne, California, street while visiting a relative when he heard the Boys in their home studio working on the song Surfin' Safari and, intrigued, knocked on the door. Usher is credited with starting what would become a Beach Boys trademark—songs about cars.

On June 4, 1962, with Dennis and Carl still just seventeen and fifteen, Capitol released the Beach Boys' first major label single, Surfin' Safari, backed by one of Usher's automotive songs, 409. Both songs soared up the charts, leading to a summer tour and a commitment from Capitol for a full album. By October, *Surfin' Safari* the album had debuted and Murry had the band booked at Pandora's Box. He also managed to convince Capitol to give up producing duties to Brian. Though just twenty years old, Brian Wilson was granted unprecedented artistic control, serving as the band's songwriter, producer and arranger. He would prove to be amazingly proficient at those duties, putting out an astounding ten albums in just over three years, beginning with *Surfin'*

USA in March of 1963, which climbed to number three on the Billboard charts, and carrying through to the groundbreaking *Pet Sounds* in May of 1966. Along the way, Brian wrote and recorded for other artists as well. After *Pet Sounds* though, following the much-publicized failure-to-launch of *Smile*, his output became considerably more erratic and of decidedly variable quality.

Back in those early days at Pandora's Box, Brian met and was immediately drawn to Marilyn Rovell, who, along with her sister Diane, made up two-thirds of the vocal group the Honeys. The Rovell family home on Sierra Bonita Drive soon became Brian's favorite hangout, despite the fact that he was twenty and the object of his affections was just fourteen. The pair quickly fell into an illicit romantic relationship, as Carlin writes, "seemingly with the knowledge and permission of [Marilyn's parents], who were sleeping under the same roof at the time."

In the fall of 1964, Brian moved into his own apartment on Hollywood Blvd., where Marilyn, still just fifteen, was a frequent guest. The two were married by the end of the year. Brian though was not the only Beach Boy with a preference for very young girls. Brother Dennis would later begin an affair with Carole Freedman, who, though just sixteen, had already been married and was the mother of a one-year-old son (rumored to have been fathered by Jim Morrison). Brother Carl would marry barely sixteen-year-old Anne Hinsche, the daughter of a wealthy casino owner from the Philippines. Mike Love's second wife would be seventeen-year-old Suzanne Belcher. In the summer of 1968, also known as the summer of Manson, Dennis would begin an affair with fifteen-year-old Diane Adams. And shortly before his death, Dennis would marry Shawn Love, who, in addition to being only fifteen when she moved in with Dennis, then well into his thirties, was by most accounts the illegitimate daughter of first cousin and bandmate Mike Love!

The lyrics to some of the Beach Boys' songs also at times revealed a taste for underage girls, which is often the case in rock'n'roll records. This was particularly evident in tracks such as I Wanna Pick You Up and Hey Little Tomboy. And Brian once shared with an interviewer some disturbing observations concerning his then three-year-old daughter Carnie. After describing her sexual experimentation, which he attributed to her having picked things up from observing her parents, he concluded: "It just goes to prove that if you don't hide anything from kids, they'll start doing things they normally wouldn't do until much later."

Around the time that Brian married Marilyn, he fell into the social circle of Loren Schwartz and Tony Asher, best friends from their days together at Santa Monica High School. Asher, the son of silent film star Laura LaPlante and movie producer Irving Asher, had grown up in a sprawling Westside mansion, surrounded by Hollywood luminaries. Schwartz was yet another former child actor whose home functioned as the gathering spot for the clique, which also at times included Stephen Stills, Chris Hillman, David Crosby, Roger McGuinn and Van Dyke Parks. It was at Loren's place that Brian was first introduced to pot and acid.

In 1965, Brian and Marilyn bought their first real home, on Laurel Way, where Schwartz was a regular visitor. By then, Brian had been heavily influenced by the work of deranged producer Phil Spector, having repeatedly sat in on Spector's recording sessions with the Wrecking Crew, who became the musicians featured on most of the classic Beach Boy recordings. Brian was also by that time regularly getting his hair styled at the salon of a guy named Jay Sebring, who Sammy Davis, Jr. credited with having introduced him to Satanism.

Two of the guys from Schwartz's social circle, Tony Asher and Van Dyke Parks, would later become Brian's two most acclaimed collaborators, Asher on Pet Sounds and Parks on the legendary lost album, *Smile*. Parks was the son of a Jungian psychiatrist as well as being, as previously noted, another former child actor. A few years before the *Smile* sessions, Van Dyke's older brother, Benjamin Riley Parks, was killed in unusual circumstances in Frankfurt, Germany, while on an unspecified assignment for the US State Department. According to Richard Henderson, writing in *Van Dyke Parks' Song Cycle*, Benjamin had been the "youngest member of the State Department to date" and a "pall of uncertainty surrounded the tragedy, as evidence suggested that his brother could have been a casualty of the Cold War." That, of course, would seem to suggest that Parks was, in reality, doing intelligence work under State Department cover.

Though Wilson and Parks were previously acquainted through Schwartz, Terry Melcher is credited with getting the pair together as a songwriting team; Melcher reintroduced the two at a party at his 10050 Cielo Drive residence and they got to work soon after that at Brian's home studio on Laurel Way. Melcher had recently been one half of the vocal duo Bruce & Terry; the other half had been Bruce Johnston, who in 1965 became a touring member of the Beach Boys, replacing Glen Campbell.* Both were replacements for Brian, who was always far more comfortable in the studio than on the stage.

By 1967, Brian and Marilyn had relocated to Bellagio Road in Bel Air, to a home reportedly once owned by Edgar Rice Burroughs. According to Gaines, "The house boasted… a hidden study that could be entered by a secret door behind a bookcase." Around that same time, Brian developed a ravenous appetite for Desbutals, a potent combination of methamphetamine and pentobarbital that was, remarkably enough, legally available with a prescription at the time. His bedside reading material in those days included the novels of Hermann Hesse, who inspired the name of John Kay's band, and literature on the Subud philosophy, which inspired Jim/Roger McGuinn's name change.

Also in 1967, Brian made the decision, just two weeks before show time, to cancel the Beach Boys' booking for the Monterey Pop Festival. Wilson was of the opinion that his band wouldn't quite fit in with the likes of Jimi Hendrix and Janis Joplin, and he was probably correct. By the next year, 1968, the Boys were clearly out of step with popular youth culture.

Around that time, Brian took on a side project—building a band around his good friend Danny Hutton. Born in Ireland in 1942, Hutton had moved to the US as a child and grown up in Los Angeles. Before hooking up with Wilson, he had produced tunes and done voiceover work for Hanna-Barbera and had also, like many of his peers, auditioned to be a Monkee. With Wilson's help, he joined with Cory Wells and Chuck Negron to form a vocal trio originally named Redwood. Their first singles were recorded and produced by Brian in his home studio.

Wells was born Emil Lewandowsky in 1942 in Buffalo, New York, where he was raised by his mother and a violently abusive stepfather. He joined the US Air Force right out of high school, in large part to escape his home life. After being discharged, he formed the Enemies and soon relocated to Los Angeles, just in time to join the emerging scene and become the house band for a time at the Whisky. Negron was also born in 1942, in New York City. Raised in the Bronx, Negron was a high school basketball star who had been recruited to play for a college in California. He would later become a raging heroin addict for some twenty years and make three-dozen failed rehab attempts before finally getting clean.

---

* Campbell, a former member of the Wrecking Crew, was another member of the Laurel Canyon community with curious views on the war and the draft. He told *Variety* magazine back in the 1960s that protestors who were burning their draft cards "should be hung… if you don't have enough guts to fight for your country, you're not a man."

Brian Wilson wanted to sign the new band to the Beach Boys' Brother Records, but that idea was vetoed by Brian's brothers and cousin. It was probably not the best financial decision by the other Beach Boys given that the new band, renamed Three Dog Night, quickly became one of the most successful recording acts of the era, selling millions of albums and releasing a long string of hit songs, many of which, including Harry Nilsson's One, Paul Williams' Just An Old Fashioned Love Song, and Randy Newman's Mama Told Me Not to Come, were written by other famous Laurel Canyon residents.

Nineteen-sixty-eight proved to be a rather strange and eventful year for many of the Beach Boys. Mike Love, who had bought a house in Coldwater Canyon in the summer of 1967, ventured off to India to visit the personal compound of Maharishi Mahesh Yogi and engage in some Transcendental Meditation. Perhaps he was seeking a little anger management. In *Catch a Wave*, Carlin notes that "barely harnessed rage was a recurring feature of Mike's public persona." In *Heroes and Villains*, he is described as "a pretty evil guy, kind of like a secret service agent, with a real military attitude." Joining Love at the compound were all four Beatles, singer/songwriter Donovan, and Mia and Prudence Farrow.

Brian, meanwhile, found himself committed to a mental hospital in 1968, which very likely means, given the era, that he was subjected to electroshock 'therapy' and heavy doses of anti-psychotic drugs. In February 1970, cousin Mike Love would also find himself committed to a mental hospital, but only, according to Carlin, after "a long, high-speed car chase through Hollywood as he attempted to evade cars driven by his father and brothers." Love was taken away in a straightjacket for involuntary treatment.

It was Dennis Wilson though who would later have the most memorable 1968 stories to tell, though he would claim to have virtually no memories of that time. Early in the year, he moved to Will Rogers' former home at 14400 Sunset Blvd., at the mouth of Rustic Canyon. It was there that, through the summer of 1968, he played host to Charles Manson and a number of his followers. Wilson not only provided the Family with food and very comfortable accommodations, he also picked up the tab for their medical expenses and allowed Charlie and Co. the use of his expensive vehicles, at least one of which, a Ferrari, was wrecked by aspiring musician Steve “Clem” Grogan, who was barely sixteen at the time.

Through Dennis, Manson met and gained the admiration of various other Laurel Canyon regulars, including Terry Melcher and Gregg Jakobson. Dennis also took Charlie on several occasions to record some of his songs at brother Brian’s home studio, where Manson met Brian and his then-collaborator, Van Dyke Parks, and where Redwood was also recording at the time. No recordings from those sessions have ever seen the light of day, though one of Manson’s songs, Cease To Exist, was essentially stolen by Dennis and renamed Never Learn Not To Love.

On November 22, 1968, the fifth anniversary of the assassination of JFK, the Beatles released what is known as “the White Album” (*The Beatles*), which would allegedly inspire the ‘Helter Skelter’ Manson murders. Just days after the Beatles’ release, the Beach Boys released the single Bluebirds Over The Mountain backed by the Manson b-side Never Learn Not To Love. The next year, Dennis told an interviewer that, “Sometimes the Wizard frightens me—Charlie Manson, who is another friend of mine, says he is God and the devil! He sings, plays and writes poetry.” Wilson added that Brother Records would likely be releasing an album by the aspiring singer/songwriter. But Manson, like Three Dog Night, ended up taking his talents elsewhere.

By 1969, Brian appeared to have lost interest in making music and was selling vitamins out of a health food store in West Hollywood. In November of that year, Murry sold Brian’s Sea of Tunes song catalog to A&M, with Brian reportedly not seeing a penny of the proceeds. The next year, the band hired a new publicist, former radio newsman Jack Rieley, who many considered to be something of a huckster. According to Gaines, a “report claimed that Jack was in the employ of a Washington, DC, right-wing conservative organization called the Stern Concern.”

As the early 1970s rolled around, Brian took to hanging out at Danny Hutton’s house, which was, not surprisingly, on Wonderland Avenue in Laurel Canyon. The home's most compelling feature was the 'party room' with blacked-out windows, where piles of cocaine could usually be found. Wilson wasn't the only regular visitor—Ringo Starr was known to hang out there as well, as was John Lennon and his sidekick Harry Nilsson. Keith Moon, who would soon turn up dead in Nilsson's home, was a regular as well.

The world barely bothered to say goodbye to Murry Wilson, who passed away on June 4, 1973 after suffering a massive heart attack. So loathed was he that neither Brian nor Dennis bothered to show up for his funeral.

Around the time of Murry's death, Brian began working with Tandyn Almer, one of the more curious figures circulating around the Sunset Strip scene. Almer's biggest claim to fame was penning the song Along Comes Mary, which was a massive hit for the Association in 1966. The following year, Almer appeared on a CBS special entitled *Inside Pop: The Rock Revolution*, hosted by Leonard Bernstein. Showcasing the best of the new acts, the show also featured Frank Zappa, Hollie Graham Nash, Byrd Roger McGuinn, and Beach Boy Brian Wilson. Tandyn Almer was clearly expected to be the next big thing, but that never came to pass.

The project that Brian initially sought Almer's help with was a bizarre one—writing new lyrics for his beloved old songs. That project was ultimately aborted though and Wilson instead penned some new songs with Almer, including the 1973 hit Sail On, Sailor. Around 1974, after completing his work with Brian, Almer left LA and disappeared. For decades, no one knew his whereabouts and there was much speculation that he was dead. Not known until his actual death, on January 8, 2013, was that he had been alive and well and living a reclusive life in and near Washington, DC for nearly forty years! He died in a nondescript basement apartment in, of all places, McLean, Virginia. What he was doing for all those years living in the CIA's backyard will likely forever remain a mystery.

On June 24, 1974, the Beach Boys released *Endless Summer*, a double album of their early hits, and for the first time in years they were back on the charts and drawing huge crowds at their concerts. The record spent three full years on the charts and sold more than three million copies. With Brian Wilson once again a valuable commodity, Stan Love—younger brother of Mike, former NBA player, and at 6' 9" a physically imposing figure—was assigned as a full-time minder and bodyguard for the perpetually troubled songwriter.

By 1975, Stephen Love, another brother, had taken over as the band's manager and the wildly controversial Eugene Landy had replaced Stan Love as Brian's minder. Landy preached the gospel of complete control over his patients' personal, professional, social, financial and sexual lives. Employing an army of minions, he monitored, recorded and controlled every aspect of Brian's life, with strong indications that he also kept him heavily drugged. Wilson was treated like a child and constantly humiliated by his coterie of handlers.

Landy's outlandish and ever-escalating fees led to his ouster by the rest of the Beach Boys the following year. He was replaced with a brawny trio of bodyguards/minders: towering Stan Love, former professional football player and *Playgirl* model Rocky Pamplin, and Steve Korthoff, another Wilson cousin and a former US Marine. Brian also retained a new psychiatrist, Steve Schwartz, but as Carlin reveals, Schwartz didn't last long: "One day the phone rang and a strange doctor asked Brian to come see him; when Brian arrived at the office, he was told that Dr. Schwartz had been in a terrible camping accident and had fallen off the side of a mountain to his death." Wilson had apparently picked an unacceptable handler.

In late summer 1978, Brian and Marilyn separated, ending their troubled marriage amid allegations that Brian had supplied drugs to his two very young daughters. Around that same time, Brian spent several months in the Brotman Memorial Hospital's psychiatric ward.

The summer before, Dennis had released the first solo album by a Beach Boy, the critically acclaimed but now largely forgotten *Pacific Ocean Blue*. The album was co-written and co-produced by fellow Manson fan Gregg Jakobson. By the end of the year, Dennis was living in Coldwater Canyon with Christine McVie of Fleetwood Mac, a British band that had been transformed into a Laurel Canyon band following the mid-1970s addition of Lindsey Buckingham and Stevie Nicks. Wilson lived with McVie for more than two years, during which time the home's pool house burned to the ground.

As 1980 rolled around, the Beach Boys could be found playing a benefit concert in support of the presidential campaign of former spymaster George H.W. Bush. Early the next year, they played one of the inaugural balls for the incoming administration, putting their stamp of approval on the Reagan/Bush era. It wasn't the first time the Reagan and Wilson families had crossed paths; Dennis had once had a brief affair with Reagan daughter Patti Davis, who also had a relationship with Eagle Bernie Leadon. The Boys later played a private birthday bash for then-Vice President Bush.

Around the time of the Reagan inauguration, Stan Love and Rocky Pamplin invaded the home of Dennis Wilson, who by then was said to have a serious alcohol addiction, and savagely beat him. Wilson was reportedly kicked, stomped, bludgeoned with a telephone receiver and thrown through a plate glass window. The assault, later described by Love as "one of the most brutal beatings ever," left Wilson in the hospital with broken ribs and a battered face. Love and Pamplin were served with restraining orders and received fines and probation for the attack, which was allegedly motivated by the desire to prevent Dennis from supplying drugs to Brian. It seems likely though that it was actually motivated by Mike Love's rage over Dennis' affair with his illegitimate and underage daughter.

After having a son together in September 1982, Dennis and Shawn were married on July 28, 1983. The marriage though was a violent and turbulent one, with divorce papers filed just four months later, in November 1983. The divorce case never made it to court though because Dennis allegedly drowned in thirteen feet of water in a Marina Del Rey boat slip the next month, on December 28, 1983. At the time, he reportedly had no home of his own and had taken to crashing at friends' houses. He was largely estranged from his brothers and cousins, once telling an interviewer that if "there wasn't the Beach Boys and there wasn't music, I would not even talk to them."

Dennis was known throughout his adult life for living life in the fast lane, with a fondness for fast cars, faster women and mass quantities of controlled substances. He was married five times in his brief thirty-nine years on this planet, a record bested by cousin Mike Love, who according to Carlin had already been married and divorced six times by 1981. One of Dennis' paramours, according to a court filing, was one of Love's wives. Another, as previously stated, was Mike's daughter. Dennis was also known for having expensive tastes and for being generous to a fault. He was said to be obsessed with sex and to at times refer to himself as ‘The Wood.’ All of which, along with his obvious interest in music, made Dennis an ideal companion for Charlie Manson, who continued to see Dennis from time to time after the summer of 1968, even turning up at his door a day or two after the Cielo Drive murders.

A year before Dennis’ untimely death, Eugene Landy had reentered Brian’s life. He would remain in control of Wilson this time for nearly a decade, pocketing millions of dollars in fees along the way. The California Board of Medical Quality Assurance ultimately filed charges against Landy, leading to him surrendering his license to practice psychology in the state. That did not, however, end his complete control over Brian’s life; Landy soldiered on, claiming that Brian was no longer his patient and that the two were now creative and business partners.

In May 1990, Stan Love filed to be Brian’s legal conservator, igniting a battle over, quite literally, the control of Brian Wilson. That battle came to an end on February 3, 1992, when Landy was ordered by the courts to permanently remove himself from Brian’s life. Wilson remained curiously conflicted about his longtime therapist/controller, claiming at one time that he slipped so far into the abyss under Landy’s care that he attempted suicide in 1985, but also contending that Landy’s death on March 22, 2006 left him devastated.

A few years after Brian was liberated from Landy’s control, he married Melinda Ledbetter, with whom he adopted five kids. A couple years later, in December 1997, Audree Wilson, matriarch of the clan, passed away at the age of eighty. Carl Wilson succumbed to cancer just two months later, on February 6, 1998, leaving Brian as the last Wilson brother standing, an outcome that few in the 1960s and 1970s would have likely predicted. Following Carl’s death, Mike Love, ever the authoritarian control freak (because every Laurel Canyon band had to have one), worked diligently to oust Al Jardine from the touring band, leaving himself in complete control of a band that featured him as the only original member.

Brian, meanwhile, finally completed the long overdue *Smile* project. He debuted the work live from the stage in 2004, and followed with an album in September of that same year, nearly forty years after the album’s originally intended release date.

As with various other artists profiled herein, there is little question that Brian Wilson has throughout his life suffered from a serious dissociative disorder. He has at times complained of hearing disembodied voices. His biographers have frequently described what the psychiatric community would identify as 'fugue states.' Gaines, for example, has written that, "Often Brian would disappear," turning up days later "penniless in Watts or East LA." Carlin has likewise described an incident that involved Brian going missing for days before turning up in a gay bar in San Diego happily playing the piano for drinks. Carlin also provided a revealing description of Brian's writing technique: "While composing, Brian appeared strangely absent, as if he were functioning less as a conscious artist than as a kind of antenna."

23

THE GRIM GAME HOUDINI

"What struck both of us was that there were huge gaps in Houdini's life story and some puzzling inconsistencies. So we embarked on a journey to discover the real man. Early on, we discovered an important connection that most biographers seemed to miss." From the Introduction to The Secret Life of Houdini, by William Kalush and Larry Sloman

THERE IS CONSIDERABLE DEBATE OVER THE QUESTION OF WHETHER HARRY Houdini ever lived in the Laurel Canyon home known locally as the 'Houdini House.' Even if Houdini did live in the home that now lies in ruins, his story would seem to have little relevance here. After all, Houdini, widely considered to be the consummate entertainer of his era, reached the peak of his career long before there was a Laurel Canyon—before there was even that magical place known as Hollywood. But perhaps there is still something to gain through an examination of the life of the famed magician.

What are generally claimed to be the basic details of Harry Houdini's life can be found in several published biographies. Born Erik Weisz in Budapest, Hungary, on March 24, 1874, he was the fourth of seven children born to Rabbi Mayer Samuel Weisz and the former Cecelia Steiner. The family later changed the spelling of their names and Houdini became Ehrich Weiss, known by friends and family as "Ehrie," which ultimately became "Harry." His stage surname was an homage to famed

French magician Robert Houdin.

In mid-1878, Rabbi Mayer, with his five sons and pregnant wife in tow, set sail for America, arriving on July 3, 1878. The family first put down roots in Appleton, Wisconsin, before later moving, in 1887, to New York City. Four years later, Houdini launched his career as a magician, at first performing basic card tricks. He had little success and at times would make ends meet by performing in freak shows. In 1893, he met singer/dancer Wilhelmina Beatrice Rahner, known as "Bess," who would become both his wife and lifetime stage assistant. The pair though, performing as "The Houdinis," continued to find success an elusive goal.

To say that Houdini's fortunes changed in 1899 would be a bit of an understatement. As recounted by Kalush and Sloman, "Within months, he had gone from cheap beer halls and dime museums to the big-time—vaudeville. In one year's time, he had gone from literally eating rabbits for survival to making what today would equal $45,000 a week." After finally hitting it big, however, Houdini then did something rather inexplicable—he abruptly sailed off to England to begin a lengthy European tour. Kalush and Sloman pose the obvious question: "Why would someone who had finally made it big risk everything and leave behind lucrative contracts to go to England with no real prospects in sight?" Why indeed? Such a move in those days would normally be an act of career suicide, but things worked out a little differently for Houdini; everywhere he went—first in England and then in Scotland, Holland, Germany, France and Russia—he was lauded by the press and quickly catapulted into the national limelight.

After a four-year absence, Houdini returned to the US in 1904 and resumed his lucrative career. For many years he was the highest-paid performer on the vaudeville circuit and would frequently perform to huge crowds in stunts that were sometimes arranged with corporate sponsors to promote their business. In 1912, he introduced what would become his most famed escape act, the Chinese Water Torture Cell.

In 1918, Houdini decided to try his luck with the fledgling new entertainment medium known as motion pictures, starring first in a multipart serial and then in *The Grim Game* (1919) and *Terror Island* (1920). It was during this time that he is said to have taken up residence in Laurel Canyon, at the corner of Laurel Canyon Boulevard and Lookout Mountain Avenue. Following that, he moved to New York and started up his own production company, the Houdini Picture Corporation, which released *The Man From Beyond* (1921) and *Haldane of the Secret Service* (1923), after which Houdini gave up his less-than-successful film career.

For the last few years leading up to his death on October 31, 1926, Houdini primarily focused on debunking psychics and mediums, leading some to speculate that the spiritualist movement may have been behind his untimely demise. To this day, séances are regularly held around the world in attempts to contact the famed magician and escape artist.

And that, in a nutshell, is the Harry Houdini story as it is usually told. But telling stories as they are usually told is a rather boring pursuit, so we are going to take a slightly different approach to see if maybe there isn't an entirely different story hidden in the obscure details of Houdini's life—beginning with his sudden rise to fame after wallowing in obscurity for years. As noted by Kalush and Sloman, "The young Houdini… couldn't make enough money to succeed at magic. Hungry and crestfallen, he was ready to give up his dream, until he walked into a Chicago police station and met a detective who would change his life. Immediately after this fateful encounter, his picture graced the front page of a Chicago newspaper. That picture catapulted him to renown." Within months, Houdini was arguably the most famous entertainer in the country.

The detective with whom he had that fateful encounter was John Wilkie, a major player in the formation of the International Association of Police Chiefs, which was founded in Chicago in 1893, at the outset of what has been dubbed the Decade of Regicide (which set the stage for WWI). Wilkie also had a hand in the formation of the ominously titled National Bureau of Identification, and he ultimately became the chief of the US Secret Service, America's premier intelligence operation during that era. It should probably be noted here that one of Houdini's nephews, Louis Kraus, worked for the Treasury Department, overseer of Wilkie's Secret Service.

Authors Kalush and Sloman are of the opinion that, "It was forward-thinking for the chief of America's only intelligence operation to be using entertainers for covert activities in 1898." Maybe so, but the authors duly note that such actions were not unprecedented; nearly four decades earlier, Abraham Lincoln had recruited an eighteen-year-old magician named Horatio G. Cooke to serve as a Civil War spy. Lincoln and Cooke were close enough that he was reportedly present at the president's deathbed. Later, near the end of his life, Cooke became a close friend of Harry Houdini. An entertainer of a different variety, stage actor John Wilkes Booth, also appears to have served as an intelligence operative during the Civil War.

There are indications that the practice of using entertainers to carry out covert operations dates back to well before the 1860s. If researchers Graham Phillips and Martin Keatman are to be believed, the most acclaimed entertainment figure of all time, poet/actor/playwright William Shakespeare, was part of a spy ring serving under Sir Francis Walsingham, head of the Elizabethan Secret Service. So too were Christopher Marlowe and various other of Shakespeare's contemporaries. As Phillips and Keatman point out, spymaster Walsingham chose "the best possible recruits—poets and dramatists, whose lifestyles were ideally suited to his purpose. They had the perfect cover, travelling widely and receiving welcome everywhere, and since many were also actors, role playing was often second nature… many knew foreign languages. Furthermore, as the usual social barriers were often dropped for poets, they were equally at home in back street pubs or in the palaces of the mighty. They were thus in the privileged position of having their eyes and ears everywhere."

It appears then that the practice of utilizing entertainers for covert operations didn't begin with Wilkie, who was himself a magician and a disciple of escape artist R.G. Herrmann. In addition to Houdini, Wilkie recruited other magicians as well, including Herrmann, Louis Leon, and heavyweight prizefighter/magician Bob Fitzsimmons. In addition to Wilkie, another of Houdini's covert backers was Senator Chauncey Depew, an uncle of magician Ganson Depew and a former mentor to then-Vice President Theodore Roosevelt (who would be catapulted into the presidency by the assassination of William McKinley, one of the final victims of the Decade of Regicide). Houdini soon gained another hidden backer—William Melville, the head of Scotland Yard's Special Branch and the most visible law enforcement official in the UK. Melville would ultimately become the first chief of Britain's MI5, assuming essentially the same position filled more than three centuries earlier by Walsingham. As Kalush and Sloman discovered, "Within days of arriving in England, Houdini met with a prominent Scotland Yard inspector and once again, his career took off." That inspector was Melville, whom Houdini secretly met with on June 14, 1900, five days after arriving on England's shores. He had left the US on May 30 using a passport issued just two days earlier—a passport that contained more than its fair share of anomalies.

The document listed Houdini's birthday as April 6, though his actual birthday is said to be March 24. It claimed that he was born in 1873, making him one year older than he actually was. Most curiously of all, the document indicated that Houdini was a native-born citizen, though he most assuredly was not. For reasons that no one seems able to explain, he had been allowed to surrender his previous passport, issued to a naturalized citizen, in exchange for the officially issued but clearly fraudulent passport that he used to tour Europe.

Given his background as both a magician and a Mason (by his own account), it goes without saying that secrecy, deception, and illusion were second-nature to Houdini. He also, as Sloman and Kalush noted, had the unusual "ability to interact with a country's police officials and do demonstrations inside their jails," and he was known to be rather proficient at the art of breaking-and-entering. Needless to say, these abilities would have served Houdini well in the world of espionage. So too would many of the devices he boasted of inventing. Again according to Kalush and Sloman, Houdini "told the *New York Herald* that he invented rubber heels and cameras that work only once. The *Boston Transcript* reported that he invented 'an envelope which cannot be unsealed by steam without bringing to light the word 'opened' and a wash which will remove printer's ink from paper'… In his own *Conjurer's Monthly*, he touted the use of chloride of cobalt for sending invisible messages."

A friend of Houdini's, fellow magician Billy Robinson, was also well-versed in the tradecraft of the intelligence community. In his book *Spirit Slate Writing and Kindred Phenomena*, Robinson "detailed thirty-seven methods for secret writing [which] would play an important part in spy communication during World War I." He also "detailed how to read other people's letters without opening the envelopes by using alcohol to render them temporarily transparent," and offered readers "subtle methods to share information while being closely scrutinized." Kalush and Sloman share what became of Robinson not long after penning the book: "Then, virtually overnight, he changed his name and appearance, left the country, and broke many of his connections. Years later, his only brother wouldn't even be able to find him." Robinson died in 1918 while performing a bullet catch trick that he had performed many times before. Houdini would write that "it seems as if there were something peculkar [sic] about the whole affair."

In addition to possessing skills and knowledge that were ideally suited to the spook trade, Houdini also ran what could best be described as his own personal spy ring; in addition to an unknown number of fulltime confederates (mostly young women, including one of his nieces), "Houdini employed female operatives on an *ad hoc* basis when he came to town." Probably the most important of his operatives was a young fellow magician named Amedeo Vacca, whose relationship with Houdini was unknown to virtually everyone throughout the escape artist's life. So secret was the close relationship between the two that even Harry's wife, as well as his brother, magician/confederate Hardeen, were unaware of it.

Houdini was a man for whom secrecy seems to have been something of an obsession. His home was said to be laced with secret passageways and hidden rooms, and his desk contained hidden compartments. There are indications that, while on the road, he would frequently maintain, for unknown purposes, a second hotel room in a different hotel. A man named Edward Saint (aka Charles David Myers), who was close to Bess, once claimed that Houdini "had safes and vaults in his home, and vaults in banks that his lawyers had access to; but one secret, now made public for the first time, is the fact that Houdini had one safety deposit vault in a bank or trust company in the East under some familiar name other than Houdini, and of which the secret location rested only in Houdini's brain. In this vault was kept highly secret papers." As far as is known, no one—not even Geraldo Rivera—has located that secret vault.

With his espionage tradecraft and dubious passport in tow, Houdini traveled to Germany in September 1900 after taking the British Isles by storm. As was the case in England and Scotland, the press immediately showered the visiting entertainer with accolades. There was one key difference in the German press coverage though: "The newspaper accounts of Houdini's demonstrations at German police stations portray him as a police consultant rather than a mere entertainer… For a vaudeville performer, Houdini seemed to spend an inordinate amount of time and have unprecedented access at the Berlin police station."

As he had in the US and the British Isles, Houdini established some unusual connections in Germany for a stage performer. One associate of his in Germany was a chemist named Hans Goldschmidt, who had patented an incendiary compound known as thermite. "Houdini noted that he was in Berlin when Goldschmidt performed his first test on a safe. He didn't explain why a stage escape artist would be at such a demonstration."

Houdini continued his pre-WWI tour by visiting France and Russia. Curiously, the countries that Houdini visited on his unusual tour—Russia, Germany, France and England—would have the distinction of being the major players in the soon-to-unfold Great War, but that's probably just a bizarre coincidence. In Czarist Russia, "the magician had official permission to appear in any city in Russia, an extraordinary set of circumstances that bespeaks the close relationship between Superintendent Melville and the Okhrana, the imperial Russian secret police." Houdini's Russian tour was booked by a guy named Harry Day, "a mysterious expatriate American who changed his name and met Houdini in London around the same time as Houdini's first meeting with Melville… [Day] eventually became a member of Parliament and did overseas espionage for the British government." For many years thereafter, the shadowy Day would handle Houdini's European bookings.

Following his lengthy tour of prewar Europe, Houdini returned to America with much press fanfare. One of his most high-profile stunts upon his return was escaping from the heavily fortified Cell #2 at the United States Jail in Washington, DC—the cell that had famously housed Charles Julius Guiteau, convicted assassin of President James Garfield, prior to Guiteau's hanging at the facility. Guiteau, who, like his father, was closely affiliated with a religious cult known as the Oneida Community, shot Garfield on July 2, 1881, having learned how to use a handgun just a few weeks earlier. He claimed to be acting on orders from God.

Houdini, needless to say, succeeded in escaping from Guiteau's former cell—and also rearranged all the prisoners residing on the jail's fabled 'murderer's row.' To do so, of course, he would have needed a master key, which someone clearly provided to him. But why? Such were the perks provided an entertainer who appeared to be "working as an agent for US government agencies, international police associations, and a special branch of Scotland Yard."

A couple years after his escape from the US Jail, there was an unusual incident at the Houdini household. On October 25, 1907, an intruder made a concerted effort to kill the performer, slashing at the sleeping figure more than 100 times with a razor. Harry Houdini, however, was not home at the time. Had he been, there might have been a different outcome, given that some reports contend that the escape artist carried a handgun at all times. The victim of the attack instead was his brother Leopold, who closely resembled Harry. Household servant Frank Thomas was arrested and charged with the attack, though there was scant evidence linking him to the crime and no known motive. Indeed, Thomas had arrived the next morning for work seemingly unaware the attack had taken place. Remarkably, Houdini was able to keep his name out of all press accounts of the crime and trial despite the fact that the attack occurred at his home, he appears to have been the intended victim, and the alleged assailant was his own servant.

On November 26, 1909, Houdini became the first man to successfully fly a powered craft on the Australian continent. He cheerfully dispatched publicity photos featuring him in a plane surrounded by German soldiers—a move he would soon regret when those German soldiers found themselves on the opposite side of the battlefields of WWI (following America's entry into the war, Houdini would attempt to destroy all photographs documenting his training of German pilots). That first flight and all subsequent Australian flights were arranged by Lieutenant George Taylor of the Australian Intelligence Corps. Curiously, despite Houdini's avid early interest in aviation, he did not, as far as is known, ever fly again after leaving Australia.

On April 29, 1911, Houdini debuted his famed Chinese Water Torture Cell escape in Southampton, England, though he had perfected and copyrighted the act well over a year earlier. The inherently dangerous stunt caused quite a sensation: "Just the sight of the apparatus was enough to give you shivers and make you believe, as one critic noted, that you were about to witness a ritual sacrifice." Around that same time, Houdini was, for reasons unknown, busily buying mothballed electric chairs at auctions across the country.

In 1913, Houdini's beloved mother passed away, which apparently resulted in Harry learning some deep family secret. Following her death, Houdini sent the following cryptic note to one of his brothers: "Time heals all wounds, but a long time will have to pass before it will heal the terrible blow which Mother tried to save me from knowing." The meaning of this rather provocative note remains a mystery. Houdini, by the way, was in Denmark when his mother died and he requested a delay of her funeral to allow himself time to return to the States. Despite strict prohibitions in Jewish law, the entertainer's request was granted.

In December 1914, just a few months after the provocation that allegedly triggered WWI, Houdini was summoned to the nation's capitol for a private audience with then-President Woodrow Wilson. It is anyone's guess what business the two men discussed but it probably had little to do with stage tricks. A year-and-a-half later, on that most notorious of dates, April 20, an estimated 100,000 people gathered in Washington, DC to watch Houdini perform a straightjacket escape. Other than for a presidential inauguration, it was said to be the largest crowd ever assembled in downtown Washington. One year later, in April 1917, the US declared war on Germany.

For the duration of the United States' involvement in the war, Houdini spent a considerable amount of time aiding the war effort, both through fundraising and by frequently visiting the front lines, where he ostensibly went from camp to camp providing entertainment for the troops. Houdini's Hollywood career also began just as the US was entering the war. It has often been said that one of his first credits was as a special-effects consultant on the *Mysteries of Myra* cliffhanger serial, though others have claimed that Houdini had no involvement in the production. Curiously, the real consultant for the project is said to have been occultist/intelligence asset Aleister Crowley.

Houdini's first feature-length film, *The Grim Game*, opened to rave reviews. Ensconced in Hollywood, Houdini quickly made friends with mega-stars Charlie Chaplin and Roscoe "Fatty" Arbuckle, both of whom would soon be caught up in scandals—a career-ending one in Arbuckle's case. The fledgling actor next began work on *Terror Island*, filmed largely on Catalina Island. Unlike his feature debut, *Island* opened to poor reviews, leading a discouraged Houdini to launch his own production company to create his own starring vehicles.

Just after completing *Terror Island*, in December 1919, Houdini was involved in yet another bizarre incident. Having injured his ankle performing the water torture escape, he paid a visit to a doctor who examined the performer and pronounced him in imminent "danger of death." Houdini nevertheless lived on for several more years; the doctor, meanwhile, turned up dead within two weeks.

By the end of 1921, the Houdini Picture Corporation had two feature-length films in the can—*The Man From Beyond* and *Haldane of the Secret Service*. The first, co-written by Houdini himself and released on April 2, 1922, featured a strange plotline revolving around a man found frozen in arctic ice and brought back to life, a case of mistaken identity, confinement in a mental institution, escape from that same institution, and an abduction. *Haldane*, released the following year, was Houdini's first attempt at directing himself. It featured the magician as his real-life alter ego, but its performance at the box office signaled the end of Houdini's film career.

For the rest of his years, Houdini devoted a considerable amount of time to investigating and debunking the spiritualist movement, which flourished in the post-WWI years as legions of fake 'mediums' preyed upon the grief of those who had lost loved ones in the war. By design or otherwise, Houdini's crusade served primarily to publicize the movement, which included among its members a number of Harry's friends, most notably and prominently Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, creator of fictional detective Sherlock Holmes and possible perpetrator of the infamous Piltdown Hoax of 1912. Both Doyle and Houdini also had connections to Le Roi and Margery Crandon, and that is where this story takes a decidedly dark turn.

Margery, born Mina Stinson in Canada in 1888, had moved with her family to Boston, Massachusetts, at a young age. As a teenager, she is said to have been a musical prodigy and to have played various musical instruments in local orchestras, while later working as an actress, secretary and ambulance driver. In 1917, the then-married Mina was hospitalized and operated on by Dr. Le Roi Goddard Crandon, a man who occupied a prestigious position in Boston society. Crandon was a direct descendent of one of the original twenty-three Mayflower passengers and a member of the Boston Yacht Club. He had graduated from Harvard Medical School and had also obtained a master's degree in philosophy from Harvard, where he also served as an instructor. Just before meeting Mina, he had served as a Naval officer and as head of the surgical staff at a US Naval hospital during WWI.

Shortly after meeting the doctor, Mina divorced her first husband and, in 1918, became the much older Le Roi Crandon's third wife. The two seemed hopelessly mismatched, she being young, vivacious and, by all accounts, very attractive, while he was said to be rather arrogant, unpleasant and antisocial. Nevertheless, the pair quickly became the talk of Boston's high society, particularly after the summer of 1923 when they began holding regular séances in their home. One member of the couple's inner circle was a fellow by the name of Joseph DeWyckoff, a wealthy steel tycoon born in Poland and educated in England and Czarist Russia before settling in America to practice law. He was jailed in Boston on embezzlement charges, later fleeing to Chicago after embezzling yet more money. He soon turned up in, of all places, Havana, Cuba, where, according to Kalush and Sloman, "in 1898 he was recruited by John Wilkie, the Secret Service chief, as a co-optee and was involved in spying for the United States during the Spanish-American War."

That would be, needless to say, the very same John Wilkie who had kick-started Harry Houdini's career that very same year. As a reward for his service, DeWyckoff, who "had a history of violence," "was given the contract to salvage the Battleship Maine in the Havana Harbor." The Maine had been sunk in what appears to have been a false-flag operation carried out by US intelligence operatives to justify launching a bloody colonial war.

Although fragmentary, there is clear evidence that Le Roi and Mina Crandon, in conjunction with DeWyckoff and various others, began sometime soon after getting married to 'adopt' an untold number of children who subsequently went missing. A number of letters that Dr. Crandon penned on the subject and dispatched to his buddy Doyle appear to have gone missing as well. As Kalush and Sloman note, "Strangely, many of the letters regarding the investigation into the boys have been expunged from Crandon's files." In one surviving letter, sent on August 4, 1925, Crandon notes that "about December first I had Mr. DeWyckoff bring over a boy from a London home for possible adoption… In April 1925, our Secret Service Department at Washington received a letter saying that I had first and last sixteen boys in my house for ostensible adoption, and that they had all disappeared."

Four years earlier, a Boston newspaper had reported that two boys had been rescued from a raft; one, eight-year-old John Crandon, was Margery/Mina's son from her previous marriage; the other, a ten-year-old English 'adoptee,' was reportedly so unhappy at the Crandon home that he was frantically attempting an escape, with the younger boy in tow. "Two years later, when Margery began her mediumship, there was no trace of that boy in the household." Perhaps he was the 'homeless' boy whose dead body was reportedly found on the outskirts of Joseph DeWyckoff's large estate in Ramsey, New Jersey, during that time period.

By 1924, Dr. Crandon was openly asking his many friends in the British spiritualist movement to "be on the lookout for suitable boys to adopt." Around that same time, as another associate noted in a letter, Crandon was "being sued for $40,000 for operating on a woman for cancer, when she was simply pregnant, and destroying the foetus… A highly incredible story which persists is that a boy who was in his family some weeks mysteriously disappeared. He claims that the boy is now in his home in England, but still official letters of inquiry and demand are received from that country. This is no mere rumor, for I was shown some of the original letters… The matter has been going on for more than a year. It is very mysterious."

In response to questions raised about the disappearance of one particular boy, Margery/Mina complained that "people wrote asking his whereabouts, and the prime minister of England cabled to ask where he was and demanded a cable reply. Why people even said Dr. Crandon committed illegal operations on little children and murdered them." According to Margery, "the poor little fellow had adenoids and had to be circumcised," so Crandon opted to perform the surgery at home. It was widely rumored that the good doctor had performed another procedure at home as well—surgically altering his wife's vaginal opening to allow her to 'magically' produce various items at séances.

On one occasion, Margery opened a closet in her home and showed an associate a collection of photos of well over 100 children, "most of them really lovely." Margery told the woman that, "Those are Dr. Crandon's caesareans—aren't they sweet? All caesareans." Given that Crandon wasn't known for delivering babies at all, the notion that he had delivered over 100 of them via caesarean was an absurdity. Who then were all these children and why had Dr. Crandon photographed them? Such are the questions raised by the fragmentary evidence trail indicating that an untold number of young boys fell into the nefarious hands of a cabal of wealthy individuals with connections to the intelligence community. Not to worry though—the disappearances were investigated by John Wilkie's Secret Service and a British MP by the name of Harry Day.

Not long before his death, Houdini, who had an extensive library of literature on the occult, began working with horror writer and occultist H.P. Lovecraft on various magazine articles. In 1926, he hired Lovecraft (who could, like Crandon, trace his lineage to the Massachusetts Bay Colony) and Clifford Eddy, Jr. (another occultist and horror writer and one of Houdini's covert operatives), to co-write a book debunking superstition. According to Kalush and Sloman, "Shortly after meeting with Eddy and Lovecraft, Bess was stricken with a nonspecific form of poisoning." Indeed, there is evidence suggesting that both Harry and Bess Houdini suffered from some form of poisoning prior to Harry's death. In addition, Houdini is said to have exhibited severe mood swings and had some "aggressive confrontations" in the weeks leading up to his death, both of which were out of character for the illusionist (though Bess is widely reported to have suffered from extreme mood swings throughout her life).

As the story goes, Houdini, who prided himself on being able to take a punch from pretty much anyone, was sucker-punched in his dressing room by a McGill University student, causing his appendix to burst and ultimately leading to his death on October 31, 1926. Houdini's physicians dutifully swore out affidavits certifying the cause of death to be "traumatic appendicitis," though the medical community now acknowledges that such a medical condition has never existed. No autopsy was performed. Joscelyn Gordon Whitehead, the guy credited with sucker-punching Houdini, had some rather provocative connections. His father, for example, was a British diplomat serving in the Orient. After Houdini's death, Whitehead is said to have become a recluse living something of a hermetic existence. He did have at least one close associate though—Lady Beatrice Isabel Marler, a wealthy heiress and the wife of Sir Herbert Meredith Marler, a prominent Canadian politician and diplomat who once served as Canada's ambassador to the US.

The mid-1920s were not a good time for the Houdini/Weiss brothers. Brother Gottfried Weiss, born two years before Harry, died in 1925. Harry followed suit the next year. Brother Nathan Weiss, born four years before Harry, died soon after, in 1927. On June 22, 1927, Houdini's European booking agent, Harry Day, reported that his apartment had been ransacked. That day would have also been Houdini's wedding anniversary—assuming, that is, that Harry was actually legally married to Bess, which may not have been the case. Two months after the break-in at Day's apartment, Theodore 'Hardeen,' one of Houdini's two surviving brothers—the one who had inherited all of brother Harry's props, effects and papers—reported that his home had also been broken into while he had been on the road.

After Houdini's death, it was widely rumored that Bess—who in addition to suffering from wild mood swings was also an alcoholic and a drug addict who was occasionally suicidal—ran an illegal speakeasy/brothel in conjunction with a woman named Daisy White, said to have been Harry's mistress. Nothing unusual about that.

In mid-1945, Theodore 'Hardeen' checked into Doctor's Hospital for a scheduled operation. On June 12, 1945, Hardeen left that hospital in a body bag. It was reported at the time that Hardeen had been planning to pen a book on his brother and had begun work on the project before checking into the hospital. Nearly two decades later, on October 6, 1962, Leopold Weiss—Harry's last living sibling and the one who had been brutally attacked in his brother's home—is said to have jumped off a ledge and fallen six stories to his death. The last of Houdini's secrets went to the grave with him.

It has often been noted that Houdini took far longer to perform many of his stage escapes than was actually necessary and that he was frequently out of view of the audience during such times. This has generally been assumed to have been for dramatic effect. Authors Kalush and Sloman though offer a far more compelling possibility: "One explanation is that such challenges gave Houdini both the opportunity and an alibi to conduct a mission while he was performing." It was, in other words, the perfect cover, for how could a man be responsible for something that occurred elsewhere when he was performing on stage for a captive audience at the time? There are, it should be noted, clear parallels here to the story told by Chuck Barris, who has claimed that he was similarly slipping off to conduct covert missions while performing his duties as a chaperone for *The Dating Game*.

Of course, no one took Barris seriously because we all know that such things don't really happen in the real world—or at least not in the world that most of us think we live in.

24

WON'T GET FOOLED AGAIN
PUNK AND NEW WAVE ARRIVE

"He seriously thought that Miles, Stewart and I were part of some conspiracy hatched by my father and backed by the CIA." Ian Copeland, referring to Bernie Rhodes, onetime manager of the Clash

As the 1970s wore on, the sounds emanating from Laurel Canyon began to be replaced by a new genre of rock music. What was initially dubbed "punk rock" was soon transformed into the less raw version known as "new wave," and both were sold to the masses as a new form of rebellion against the status quo.

The new scene was populated with a new batch of rising stars, bands and artists with names like Sex Pistols, the Clash, Buzzcocks, the Cramps, Generation X, Cherry Vanilla, General Public, the (English) Beat, Public Image Ltd., the Fleshtones, the B-52s, the Cure, the Police, Blondie, Television, REM, Patti Smith, Lou Reed, John Cale, Magazine, Simple Minds, the Specials, Wall of Voodoo, the Go-Gos, the Bangles, Joan Jett & the Blackhearts, Echo and the Bunnymen, the Psychedelic Furs, Joy Division, Bow Wow Wow, Gang of Four, Squeeze, Siouxsie & the Banshees, Oingo Boingo, Adam Ant, Gary Numan, the Smiths, the Fixx, A Flock of Seagulls, Bananarama, Sting, Thompson Twins, Katrina and the Waves, Lords of the New Church, Midnight Oil, Steel Pulse, Dread Zeppelin, Social Distortion, Human League, Soft Cell, Timbuk 3, Camper Van Beethoven, Circle Jerks, dada, the Alarm, the Jesus and Mary Chain, the Plimsouls, the Ramones, the Stranglers, UB40, Suburban Lawns, Stan Ridgeway, XTC, Concrete Blonde, Ultravox, and the Fine Young Cannibals.

All of the acts listed above had something in common: In addition to being among the most critically acclaimed and commercially viable of the new artists, all of them owed their success at least in part to their association with one or more members of the Copeland clan.

The patriarch of that clan, Miles Axe Copeland, Jr., born in 1916, was something of a legend in Western intelligence circles. At the outbreak of WWII, the former working musician was magically transformed into one of the founding members of the OSS. During the war years, while he was stationed in the UK, he met Elizabeth Lorraine Adie, a British intelligence asset then assigned to the Special Operations Executive (SOE). Lorraine's brother, Ian Aide, was also a highly placed British intelligence operative.

Miles and Lorraine, he the son of a doctor and she the daughter of a prominent neurosurgeon, were married in the UK on September 25, 1942. After the war, the two moved to Washington, DC, where Miles worked alongside other intelligence heavyweights like "Wild Bill" Donovan to form the Central Intelligence Agency. For the next several decades, Copeland would play key roles in various nefarious activities throughout the Middle East, Africa and Asia. In 1947, he was dispatched to Damascus, Syria to serve as the CIA station chief and to orchestrate a series of coups that resulted in power being consolidated in the military and national security sectors. These were the first coups orchestrated by the newly formed CIA, but they would certainly not be the last. Along for the adventure was firstborn son Miles Copeland III, who had been born in London on May 4, 1944. On April 25, 1949, second son Ian, born just outside of Damascus, joined the family.

The Copeland family thereafter alternated between various posts in the Middle East and their sometime home in Washington. On July 16, 1952, third son Stewart was born in Alexandria, Virginia. That same month, the senior Copeland worked with Gamal Nasser to organize a coup in Egypt. In 1953, Miles worked closely with Archibald and Kermit Roosevelt to orchestrate the coup that toppled Iran's democratically elected Prime Minister Mohammed Mossadegh and consolidated the power of Shah Reza Pahlavi. That same year, the Copeland family was dispatched to Cairo, Egypt, where Miles was tasked with creating the Mukhabarat, Egypt's version of the CIA, for soon-to-be President Nasser. Copeland stayed on for four years, becoming Nasser's top Western adviser and the country's CIA station chief. While there, Lorraine developed a keen interest in archeology and thereafter worked as, or at least posed as, an archeologist. And a very young Miles Copeland III became friends with Colonel Hassan Touhaimi, described in a web-posted bio of Copeland as "Nasser's machine gun toting bodyguard who lived next door." Every pre-pubescent boy, I think we can all agree, needs friends like that.

From 1957 through 1968, the Copeland clan was stationed in Beirut, Lebanon, where Miles, Sr. served as that country's CIA station chief. In his memoirs, son Ian has described Beirut at that time as a "center of intrigue and espionage." During the early years of that assignment, Copeland worked closely with such intelligence community luminaries as Secretary of State John Foster Dulles and CIA chief Allen Dulles. Also during those years, the Copeland sons attended the American Community School in Beirut, where Miles III served as the president of his senior class. When he was just sixteen, Miles also obtained a license to teach judo to the Lebanese Army. Of those years spent in Lebanon, Ian Copeland has written that he "grew up thinking we were stinking rich. We certainly lived like we were." Ian has attributed that lavish lifestyle to his father's rather lucrative expense account.

Following his stint in Beirut—during which time he had frequently been on assignment in various hotspots throughout the Middle East, northern Africa and Asia—Copeland played a more low-profile role in US intelligence operations. In 1988, he penned an article entitled "Spooks for Bush" that argued that the intelligence community heartily backed the presidential bid of former spymaster George H.W. Bush. Three years later, Miles Axe Copeland, Jr. passed away, survived by his wife, daughter and three sons.

From fall 1962 through 1966, Miles Copeland III attended Birmingham Southern College, spending one semester at the American University in Washington, DC. After that, he was off to Lebanon to attend the American University of Beirut, where he spent three years. During that time, he formed his first business partnership with, again according to his online bio, “his close friend, Amr Ghaleb, son of Egypt’s ambassador to Lebanon (known to run the largest spy network in Lebanon).” While at work at the business entity he dubbed Middle East Security Consultants, Copeland was reportedly fond of answering the phone with the greeting: “CIA, how can we help you?”

After graduating from the university in 1969, Miles joined the rest of the family in the UK, where he quickly began serving as a manager for the band Wishbone Ash and signing other new musical acts, including Joan Armatrading, Al Stewart and the Climax Blues Band. By 1974, he had launched his first record label, British Talent Managers (BTM), become a partner in a concert-booking agency and started a music industry magazine, *College Event*. As Ian later recalled, “When [Miles] found it difficult to get press on some of his bands, he simply determined to start his own magazine.” He also joined with then-unknown attorney Allen Grubman to form what would become the most powerful music industry law firm in the country.

It was, needless to say, a natural progression for a kid who had grown up immersed in the world of covert operations and whose first business venture had been a security consulting firm co-owned by the son of another powerful figure in the intelligence community. The publication *College Event*, not surprisingly, employed some classic spytrade subterfuge: Copeland kept his name off the publication by employing a frontman editor so that he could then write glowing endorsements of his own bands, disguised, of course, as objective reviews.

In 1976, Miles gave up the magazine, record company and booking agency partnership and started over as an agent, manager, producer and record company for numerous new punk and new wave acts that would soon emerge as some of the very brightest stars on the new musical horizon. Copeland launched several new record labels—including Illegal Records, Deptford Fun City Records, Step Forward Records and New Bristol Records—and executive produced the first film dedicated to promoting the new scene, *Urgh! A Music War*. His office soon became the headquarters for the most influential fanzine of the era, *Sniffin’ Glue*. In 1979, Copeland and Jerry Moss, the head of AMC Records, launched International Records Syndicate, Inc., better known as IRS Records. The label quickly became home to many of the most influential new wave acts. In 1983, Miles became the only music producer to be given his own show on the upstart MTV network, *IRS Records Presents The Cutting Edge*, which ran through 1987 and served to, not surprisingly, primarily promote Copeland's acts.

Copeland was also given his own prime-time television show in the UK, *Miles Copeland's England*. The program was widely viewed as being pro-Conservative Party and pro-capitalist and was reportedly a favorite of then-Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher. A repeat showing of the short-lived series was cancelled amid complaints that it would have undue influence on pending elections in the country.

Meanwhile, younger brother Ian Copeland had become quite a mover-and-shaker in the music industry as well. His self-professed wayward youth in Lebanon had included joining an older 'outlaw' biker gang after acquiring his first motorcycle at the age of fifteen. His memoirs are filled with other tales of bold adventures—including running away from home as a minor and making his way through several countries—but most of them seem rather apochryphal. He claims that his first business enterprise, when he was still quite young, was "basically running a whorehouse" servicing the US Marines called into the country by his father. He also claims to have helped a friend flee the country after said friend had likely killed a cop.

On September 19, 1967, at the height of the increasingly unpopular Vietnam War, while other kids were desperately trying to avoid the draft, Ian voluntarily enlisted in the US Army. As he emphasized in his memoirs, he "*wanted* to go to Vietnam." Assigned to the 1st Infantry Division, also known as the Big Red One, he arrived 'in country' just after the Tet Offensive of 1968. As recounted in his tome, his unit would soon find itself "banned from Saigon… following numerous complaints alleging brutality." Ian also writes approvingly of his unit's habit of "randomly bombard[ing] places around the country where we suspected Charlie might be," blithely ignoring the fact that those places likely harbored mostly noncombatants. Of his time in Vietnam, Copeland has written that he "loved it—not all the time, but enough to have seen me through it all, and to have mostly fond memories as I think of Vietnam." His fond memories are no doubt influenced by the fact that, as someone cleared to handle sensitive communications, he was given a considerable amount of autonomy: "Since we handled messages classified as Confidential, Secret and Top Secret, we were able to close off our area with barbed wire and make it off-limits to absolutely everyone, including officers."

While just nineteen, Ian Copeland was promoted to the rank of sergeant, becoming, by his account, the youngest US serviceman ever to achieve that rank. He has credited that promotion in part to the fact that he rode as a bodyguard for an unnamed lieutenant who was heavily involved in black market operations. What Copeland fails to mention is that black market operations in Vietnam were mostly run by our own CIA. Copeland also was awarded a Bronze Star, a Good Conduct Medal, four campaign medals, a National Defense Service Medal, a Vietnam Service Medal, and a Republic of Vietnam Commendation Medal.

Following his tour of duty in Vietnam, Ian was assigned to Fort Lee, Virginia, just outside Washington, DC. There he was tasked with providing riot control training to troops being prepped to police the May Day peace march on Washington. He subsequently volunteered for a second tour of duty in Vietnam, but soon found himself facing drug charges in the UK. He was ultimately found "not guilty" of the charges, owing largely to the fact that his father secured representation for him from a member of the Queen's Counsel. His time spent fighting the charges though resulted in his Vietnam orders being rescinded and instead he was dispatched to a remote communications outpost in England. In October 1970, he was sent to one of the numerous US military installations around Mannheim, Germany, a hub for military intelligence operations. A few months later, in January 1971, he was honorably discharged after serving his country for nearly three-and-a-half years.

In late April 1971, shortly after his discharge, Copeland incongruously decided to join a week-long protest organized by the group Vietnam Veterans Against the War. Given his own history and his family history, readers are excused for questioning whether his sudden misgivings about the war were sincere or whether he was in fact working to infiltrate the dissident group. A clue can perhaps be found in the fact that, not long after joining the protest, Ian answered an ad seeking Vietnam veterans who would be willing to sign up to fight as mercenaries in the Congo.

Copeland never made it to the Congo though; instead he went to work for big brother Miles. By 1979, Ian had founded Frontier Booking International, better known by the acronym FBI, which quickly became the go-to booking agency for "new wave" acts, a term that Ian Copeland claims to have coined. Soon he was booking all of brother Miles' acts and many more as well. Between the two of them, Miles and Ian signed, managed, booked, recorded, produced or otherwise handled a remarkably high percentage of the big name acts that emerged from the new music scene.*

The youngest and best known of the Copeland brothers, Stewart, also opted to venture into the emerging punk/new wave scene, but he did so by forming his own 'punk' band. Before actually recruiting any musicians, he quickly came up with a band name, the Police, and designed the band's logo and an album cover. The band that he would then assemble, featuring himself on drums, Gordon Thomas Matthew "Sting" Sumner on bass and lead vocals, and Andrew James Summers on guitar, would soon become arguably the most critically acclaimed and commercially successful of the new bands. The initial success of the Police in the US is what largely opened the floodgates for a new British invasion of punk and new wave bands. And that was in spite of the fact that the band was in no way a punk band and didn't really even qualify as a new wave band. As the British press pointed out, band members were much too professional, and a bit too old, to really fit into the new scene.

In 2002, Stewart Copeland played briefly in a reconstituted version of the Doors, alongside founding members Ray Manzarek and Robby Krieger. Copeland's former bandmate, Andy Summers, who was a decade older than Stewart and Sting, had been on the Laurel Canyon scene back when the original Doors were playing the Sunset Strip. As he wrote in *Rolling Stone* in July 2007, in 1968 he "was living in Laurel Canyon and going to Sunset Strip every night." Briefly a member of Eric Burden and the Animals at that time, Summers had been one of the regulars at the Log Cabin.

And the beat goes on…

---

* Ian Copeland was also in a three-year relationship with actress Courteney Cox, who famously made her debut dancing with rocker Bruce Springsteen in a music video. Cox, as it turns out, was partially raised by and is the step-daughter of Hunter Copeland, brother of Miles Axe Copeland, Jr. and an uncle of the three boys. Hunter Copeland had been a decorated WWII officer, returning home with a Silver Star, four Bronze Stars, and a Purple Heart.

EPILOGUE

"For whatever reason—it's still not understood by criminologists—California in the 1970s was ground zero for serial killers."
Stella Sands, writing in The Dating Game Killer

ONE THING THAT HAS BECOME VERY CLEAR WHILE RESEARCHING THIS BOOK is that there are disturbing parallels between the Laurel Canyon saga and my previous research on the phenomenon of serial killers—research that led to my earlier book, *Programmed to Kill*. Nowhere is that more true than in the details of the curious case of Rodney Alcala, otherwise known as the Dating Game Killer, who is said to be one of the country's most prolific serial killers. He has been convicted of seven murders, accused of several more, and some law enforcement officials have claimed, rather ludicrously, that he could be responsible for as many as 130 murders. It is only in recent years though that he has been identified as a serial killer, despite the fact that all the crimes he is accused of were committed in the 1970s.

In addition to being an alleged serial killer himself, Alcala allegedly operated on the same turf as a few other, more high-profile serial killers. And as fate would have it, he also had a number of connections to the Laurel Canyon scene and some of the key people and places that made up that scene. In other words, Alcala's story seems to provide a bridge between the seemingly idyllic Laurel Canyon scene and the brutal world of serial murder.

In the opening chapter of Stella Sands' *The Dating Game Killer*, that connection is hinted at:

"As cars cruised up and down Hollywood Boulevard and the Sunset Strip, radios blared edgier, angrier rock and roll: Masters Of War by Bob Dylan, What's Going On? by Marvin Gaye, Eve Of Destruction by Barry McGuire. Musicians from bands like the Doors, the Byrds, Cream, and the Animals played the Whiskey-a-Go-Go [sic] on the Sunset Strip—and partied with wild abandon at the Chateau Marmont Hotel up the street… Amidst all this turmoil and social upheaval in 1968, an event occurred that is not well documented by the era's historians: 'Tali S.,' age eight, was abducted on her way to school."

This story begins though in 1943, in San Antonio, Texas, with the birth on August 23 of one Rodrigo Jacques Alcala-Buquor. Growing up, young Rodrigo (known as Rodney) attended mostly private Catholic schools where he got excellent grades and never showed any signs of being a problem child. In 1951, when he was about eight, he and his family moved to Mexico where he attended the American School. Not long after relocating, Rodney's father left the family and returned to the States alone. In 1954, after a few years in Mexico, Rodney and his mom and siblings relocated once again, this time to Los Angeles, California. By 1956, he was enrolled at the private Cantwell High School for boys, which later merged with Sacred Heart of Mary High School for girls to become the Cantwell-Sacred Heart of Mary High School, owned and operated by the LA Archdiocese.

Alcala finished out his senior year at Montebello High School, graduating in 1960. According to various reports, he had a wide circle of friends and never had any trouble lining up dates during his high school years. In addition to being an excellent student and talented athlete, he was on the yearbook planning committee and he took piano lessons. He was, in other words, a well-rounded and popular kid—the kind of young man you would expect to see voted "most likely to succeed" by his high school classmates.

On June 19, 1961, Rodney Alcala enlisted in the US Army. His older brother was at the time attending prestigious West Point Military Academy, which generally requires a nomination from a US Senator or a member of the House of Representatives. There is no explanation in the available literature as to how the Alcala family had either the financial means or the political connections to secure such an appointment.

Rodney meanwhile entered a program in North Carolina to become a paratrooper but instead served as a clerk, if his service records are to be believed. He was stationed, interestingly enough, at Fort Bragg, which had become, with the creation of the Psychological Warfare Center in 1952, a hotbed of research on 'unconventional warfare.' Fort Bragg is also the longtime home of US Special Forces.

After two years of military service, Alcala unexpectedly showed up at his mother's Montebello home after having gone AWOL. He was quickly hospitalized and informed that he was in immediate need of psychiatric treatment. Taken first to San Francisco, he soon found himself at a military hospital at the Marine Corps Air Station at El Toro, near Irvine, California. He remained there for an unspecified length of time.

Following his release, he returned to his mother's home in Montebello and shortly thereafter enrolled in UCLA's College of Fine Arts, from where he earned a degree in 1968. During his first year there, another young student who had just moved out from Florida—a guy by the name of Jim Morrison—likewise enrolled in UCLA's College of Fine Arts. Both young men displayed a passion for making student films. According to Morrison biographers Jerry Hopkins and Danny Sugerman, during Jim and Rodney's time at the College of Fine Arts, a fellow student cut his girlfriend's heart out.

On September 25, 1968, an eight-year-old girl later identified as Tali Shapiro was abducted while on her way to the Gardner Street Elementary School in Hollywood. At the time, according to Sands, Shapiro was "living temporarily at the Chateau Marmont Hotel in West Hollywood with her brother, sister, mother, and music-industry father." The family was temporarily rubbing elbows with the likes of Jim Morrison and Janis Joplin because, as it turns out, "their home had recently burned down in a fire." As Gary Valentine Lachman has written, the hotel during that era was widely rumored to offer a decidedly unhealthy environment in which to raise a young girl: "Tales of pacts with the Devil followed [Led] Zeppelin throughout their career, and stories of orgies, black masses and satanic rites were commonplace, mostly centered around the infamous Chateau Marmont off the Sunset Strip."

On the morning of her abduction, Shapiro is said to have woken early and, without informing her parents, decided on her own to walk to school rather than taking the bus—which seems difficult to believe given her young age and the fact that the school was a little over a mile away down seedy Sunset Boulevard. As the story goes, Alcala was spotted luring Shapiro into his vehicle by a good samaritan, who then followed Alcala back to his apartment where he called police from a nearby phone. The police though apparently didn't rush over, giving Alcala time to strip, viciously rape and then bludgeon the young girl nearly to death. She was so thoroughly battered, with her head bashed open and a heavy bar placed across her throat, that the responding officer initially thought she was dead.

Upon arrival, the officer knocked on the suspect's front door and was greeted through the window by a partially naked man who claimed he had just gotten out of the shower and would need a minute to get dressed. Despite the fact that the officer was responding to a report of an abducted child (with the witness on the scene) and had just encountered the presumed suspect, he nevertheless allowed that suspect time to get dressed and escape. According to Sands, "In the short time it had taken to kick in the door, the perpetrator—the *monster*—had slipped out the back." The *LA Weekly* concurred, claiming that Alcala "escaped through a backdoor." Not many apartment units, it should probably be noted, come equipped with a back door.

In any event, the apartment was found to be full of photographic equipment and stacks of photographs of young girls. The suspect, however, was nowhere to be found. The case was assigned to, of all people, LAPD detective Steve Hodel, brother of Michelle Phillips' surrogate mom, Tamar Hodel, and son of accused Black Dahlia killer George Hodel. According to a January 21, 2010, article in the *LA Weekly*, Hodel was at the time a "newbie detective working juvenile crimes." The Shapiro family, meanwhile, abruptly decided to relocate to Mexico, a move that is routinely cited as the reason the crime was never prosecuted.

Following his unlikely escape, Alcala immediately relocated to New York and, using the name John Berger, applied for admission to the prestigious New York University School of the Arts. Although the semester had already begun at the notoriously selective school, Berger/Alcala was nevertheless admitted. He attended for three years, working at times as a security guard and, during the summers of 1969, 1970 and 1971, as an arts counselor. One of Alcala's instructors at the school was a guy who during those same years had a slaughter perpetrated at his home, and who Pamela Des Barres once described as being "definitely *not* normal," Mr. Roman Polanski.

In June of 1971, Cornelia Crilley, a TWA stewardess who lived with her family across from the sprawling Cavalry Cemetary, was found dead. She had been in a two-year relationship with a Leon Borstein, then an assistant district attorney for Brooklyn who later became the chief special prosecutor for New York City. Borstein, who claimed that Crilley was the love of his life but who nevertheless married just a year after her murder, was initially the prime suspect. The crime appeared to have nothing whatsoever to do with Rodney Alcala—but a full four decades later, in 2011, he would be indicted for her murder.

By the time of Crilley's murder, Sands notes, "detective Steve Hodel and his LAPD team had been trying to locate Alcala for nearly three years." They finally got a break when Alcala was added to the FBI's Ten Most Wanted list and was subsequently recognized by a couple of the teens at the camp where he served as a counselor. Upon his arrest and return to Los Angeles, Alcala was facing very serious charges of kidnapping, rape and attempted murder, yet he was allowed to cop a guilty plea to a single count of child molestation, for which he received a sentence of one to ten years. He ultimately served less than three years, with much of that time spent at the notorious California Medical Facility at Vacaville. Also housed at Vacaville during that time was Donald DeFreeze, who would soon emerge as Cinque, leader of the so-called Symbionese Liberation Army. According to Dr. Colin Ross, during that same time period, "the CIA was conducting mind control experiments [at Vacaville] under MKSEARCH Subproject 3."

In August 1974, a prison psychiatrist recommended that Alcala be released and he was paroled to LA County and required to register with the local police as a sex offender. Within just weeks of gaining his freedom though, Alcala kidnapped a thirteen-year-old girl and was promptly arrested once again. He again caught a lucky break and was found guilty only of violating his parole and of furnishing drugs to a minor, escaping far more serious charges. He served about two-and-a-half years and was paroled on June 16, 1977. Just days after being released, he asked his parole officer for permission to take a trip to New York City, and, since he had behaved himself so well the last time he was on parole, his request was granted.

Alcala remained in New York for a little over a month, ostensibly to visit relatives. During his time there, a woman by the name of Ellen Jane Hover went missing. Being the small world that it is, Ellen just happened to be the daughter of Herman Hover, who had been the longtime owner of Ciro's on the Sunset Strip, the club that famously launched the career of the Byrds. She was also the goddaughter of Sammy Davis, Jr. For reasons that were never explained, the FBI took a keen interest in Hover's disappearance, which happened to come at a time when New York City was gripped by intense fear. It was, after all, the infamous 'Summer of Sam' and Hover's disappearance on July 15, 1977, was sandwiched between two Son of Sam attacks, one on June 26 and another on July 31.

Hover remained missing for almost a full year, until her skeletal remains were discovered in June of 1978, in a shallow grave on, of all places, the Rockefeller estate in Westchester County. It would be over three decades later that Rodney Alcala would be charged with her murder.

Upon his return from New York, Alcala applied for a job as a typesetter at the *Los Angeles Times*. He applied using his real name and was promptly hired, despite having been twice convicted for felony offenses, having served time for crimes committed against children, being a registered sex offender, being on parole, and holding the distinction of once numbering among the FBI's Ten Most Wanted. A coworker would later say, perhaps tellingly, that Alcala seemed like he knew a lot of famous people.

On November 10, 1977, the nude, brutalized body of eighteen-year-old Jill Barcomb was found posed on a side road adjacent to, and in full view of, the Marlon Brando estate overlooking Laurel Canyon. The murder was investigated by LAPD detective Phillip Vannatter, who would later famously tote a vial of blood around with him while investigating the murders of Nicole Brown Simpson and Ron Goldman. For many, many years, Barcomb's death was credited to the Hillside Strangler team of Angelo Buono and Kenneth Bianchi. Like the Strangler victims, Jill was found nude, strangled, tortured, sexually assaulted, bound and posed on a hillside. And her death occurred amidst a string of Strangler killings—Judith Miller on October 31, Lissa Kastin on November 6, Barcomb on November 10, Kathleen Robinson on November 18, and Kristina Weckler, Delores Cepeda, and Sonja Johnson all found dead on November 20. In addition, Barcomb knew Strangler victim Miller. Nevertheless, the murder would eventually be credited to Alcala, but not for nearly forty years.

According to the official version of events then, Judith Miller, chosen at random, was killed on Halloween by a pair of serial killers. And then a mere ten days later, in an officially unrelated event, her friend Jill Barcomb, also chosen at random, was killed by a different serial killer who, despite being unconnected to the other two serial killers, nevertheless killed and posed Barcomb in a manner remarkably similar to the way Miller was killed and posed. One has to wonder what the odds of that actually happening would be.

In any event, Jill Barcomb, found not far from where Marina Habe had been found nearly a decade earlier, is yet another tragic addition to the Laurel Canyon Death List. As is, I suppose, Ellen Jane Hover. Tali Shapiro narrowly avoided making the list.

At the request of the FBI, Alcala was brought down to the LAPD's Parker Center in December 1977 for questioning concerning the still-missing Ellen Hover. He admitted knowing Hover and even acknowledged being with her on the day she vanished, but he claimed to know nothing about her disappearance. That same month, twenty-eight-year-old nurse Georgia Wixted was found brutally murdered in her Malibu, California, bedroom. For nearly thirty years, there would be absolutely nothing linking Rodney Alcala to the crime or the crime scene.

In early 1978, Alcala was questioned by the Hillside Strangler Task Force, which was composed of members of the LAPD, the LA Sheriff's Department and the Glendale Police Department. He was arrested at that time, though only for the benign offense of being in the possession of marijuana, for which he served a brief jail sentence. For a time though, he was considered a "person of interest" to the task force. On June 23, 1978, just after Alcala's release from that brief jail stint, the savaged body of thirty-two-year-old legal secretary Charlotte Lamb was discovered on the floor of an apartment laundry room in El Segundo, California. Once again, there was no evidence linking Alcala to either the crime, the victim, or the crime scene, and he would not be named as a suspect for some twenty-five years.

On September 13 of that same year, Alcala infamously appeared as Bachelor #1 on television's *The Dating Game*. Despite his criminal history and sex offender status, which surely would have been discovered during the show's screening process, he was presented to women across the country as one of the nation's most eligible and desirable bachelors. The guy doing that presenting was *Dating Game* producer Chuck Barris, who has stated publicly that he was a CIA asset at the time the show was in production and that the show itself was essentially an elaborate CIA front designed to provide cover for Barris' own travels and activities. Mr. Barris was also, according to some reports, a onetime resident of everyone's favorite canyon.

On February 13 of the following year, Alcala picked up a fifteen-year-old hitchhiker by the name of Monique Hoyt, who voluntarily spent that night at Alcala's home. The next day, Valentine's Day, thirty-four-year-old Rodney Alcala took fifteen-year-old Monique Hoyt into the woods to shoot nude photos. At some point the situation turned violent and nonconsensual, resulting in yet another arrest for Alcala. Though facing very serious felony charges, including kidnapping, rape, and the production of child pornography, his bail was set at a paltry $10,000. At the end of April, Alcala gave his two-week notice to his superiors at the *LA Times*. How he had managed to keep his job through his jail sentence for marijuana possession and his arrest for kidnapping a young girl is anyone's guess. The *Times* apparently used the same screening service as *The Dating Game*.

On June 14, another young woman, twenty-one-year-old Jill Parentau, turned up dead in her Burbank, California, apartment. Once again, there was no evidence linking Rodney Alcala to the crime and Parentau's murder would remain unsolved for two-and-a-half decades. Six days after her murder, on the eve of the summer solstice, twelve-year-old Robin Samsoe of Huntington Beach, California, went missing after spending time at the beach with her best friend. Officially, her remains were discovered twelve days later in a heavily wooded area allegedly chosen by Rodney Alcala. But the reality appears to be that it is unknown what became of Samsoe. What is known is that from the time of her disappearance, authorities took a much different approach to dealing with Alcala than they had in the past. Before a month had passed, he was back in prison and would never walk free again.

As the story is generally told, Samsoe was strolling the beach with her friend when they were approached by Alcala with a request to take their photos, ostensibly for a student photo contest. A neighbor who happened to be passing by approached the trio, at which time Alcala lowered his head and quickly shuffled off. The girls went about their business without giving the incident much thought and Samsoe soon said goodbye to her friend. Borrowing the friend's bike, she headed off to a ballet class that she never made it to.

On the afternoon of July 2, a worker with the US Forestry Service discovered human skeletal remains in a heavily wooded section of the Angeles National Forest. The area was littered with discarded beer bottles and cigarette butts. The remains appeared to be those of an adult, and investigators, according to a June 1989 article in *Orange Coast Magazine*, believed the death to be "drug-related." The crime scene, according to the same report, "was given only a cursory examination by the Los Angeles Sheriff's Department." Five days later an LA County coroner decided that the remains were actually those of a child. And not just any child, but the missing Robin Samsoe. Unexplained was how the remains of a child could have been mistaken for those of an adult. Also unexplained was how the child could have been reduced to skeletal remains, completely stripped of flesh and hair, in an absurdly short amount of time.

The only thing that would ever tie Rodney Alcala to those scattered remains would be the testimony of one Dana Crappa, a twenty-year-old seasonal firefighter with the Forestry Service. And it is here, with the introduction of Dana Crappa, that this story grows very murky. As *Orange Coast Magazine* noted, "The exact bit of information that first tied Crappa to the disappearance of Robin Samsoe is not known." Indeed, there doesn't appear to be *anything* that initially tied Crappa to Samsoe. But with considerable molding by police, Crappa would emerge as the star witness for the prosecution.

For reasons that have never been adequately explained, Huntington Beach Police called Crappa in for questioning on August 2, 1979, exactly one month after the discovery of the remains. At that time, Crappa was shown photos of Alcala and Samsoe as well as of Alcala's car. She told investigators that she had never seen the man or the girl before, but that the car might resemble one she had seen parked near Mile Marker 11 (near where the remains were discovered) on either June 7 or June 14 at around 9:30–10:00 PM. Seeing as how the dates provided by Crappa were well before Samsoe's disappearance, this information was of no use to police. The time of day was entirely wrong as well.

Pressed by police to state whether it might have been June 20 or June 21 when she saw the vehicle, Crappa responded that it "definitely could not have been."

On August 7, Crappa was again questioned by police. Miraculously, on this occasion she recalled that she had seen the vehicle similar to Alcala's on June 21, and had done so between 8:00 and 8:30 PM! She added that, prior to her discovery of the remains on July 2, she had no awareness of the crime scene. But at preliminary trial proceedings not long after that meeting, Crappa told a different version of her story; she again said that she had seen the car on June 21, but she now claimed that it had been between 10:00–10:30 PM. She added that she had not seen anyone near the parked car. She also added that she had first seen the corpse on June 29, several days earlier than she had previously claimed. And she added that the corpse was already skeletal at that time.

On February 7, 1980, Crappa met with Huntington Beach Police detective Art Droz and a police psychologist named Larry Blum. She had, however, previously stated that she wanted no further interaction with the police so she was deliberately not told that the men she was speaking to were police personnel. Although authorities heatedly deny it, it is painfully obvious that Ms. Crappa was subjected to hypnotic interrogation techniques during that meeting and at future meetings. According to police, at the February 7 meeting she claimed that she had seen the vehicle on June 21 and that she had in fact seen a man by the car after all! She also said that when she had returned on June 29 she had found clothes strewn about the area, a crusty knife, and six .22-caliber bullet casings. For reasons never explained, she also claimed that she had picked up the bullet casings and thrown them away!

By that time, Crappa's testimony was so ridiculously riddled with contradictions and inconsistencies that it should have had no value to prosecutors in any kind of real trial. Police and prosecutors though weren't quite done with her.

On February 11, she once again unknowingly spoke to police investigators. On February 15, she met with a detective and one of the prosecutors on the case. By then she was claiming to have seen the car on June 20 and to have seen a man guiding a young girl away from the car and into the woods! On the day that meeting was held, the presiding judge ruled that Alcala's prior offenses would be allowed into evidence, including the fact that Alcala was suspected of involvement in Hover's death, a crime he had never even been charged with, let alone convicted of. As Sands noted, "The ruling was a momentous victory for the prosecution. Because there was little direct evidence linking Alcala to the Samsoe crime, the prior attacks would lend credence to their case." It was becoming perfectly obvious that Rodney Alcala was not going to get anything resembling a fair trial.

On February 26, Crappa once again met with detectives and prosecutors. Somewhere around that time she reportedly suffered a nervous breakdown and allegedly became suicidal, leading to her being involuntarily institutionalized. That, needless to say, must have greatly facilitated the process of programming the witness. A defense psychiatrist by the name of Albert J. Rosenstein would later describe Crappa in open court as "a Manchurian candidate at a minor level."

As Alcala's trial got underway on March 6, 1980, the defendant was paraded into the courtroom in cuffs and leg shackles in a deliberate attempt to prejudice the jury. But the real "linchpin of the trial," as Sands wrote, "would be the testimony of one Dana Crappa, twenty-one." On the stand, Crappa's demeanor was odd, to say the least. She frequently took long, awkward pauses—when she wasn't staring blankly into space. According to *Orange Coast Magazine*, her demeanor was so bizarre that the trial judge considered ending her testimony prematurely. She did though tell the story prosecutors wanted her to tell—a story that bore no resemblance whatsoever to the story she told when first mysteriously contacted by police.

In court, Crappa claimed that she had seen the suspect's vehicle on June 20. She also said that she had seen a man resembling Alcala guide a young girl who resembled Samsoe into the woods. Although she had found what she allegedly observed disturbing, she acknowledged that she had told no one of the incident. When her curiosity got the best of her, she said, she had returned to the area on June 25 to have a look around. At that time, she had allegedly seen Samsoe's body, decapitated and with part of her face gone. She had, of course, returned by herself and told no one of her supposed discovery. Crappa further told the jury that she had returned a second time on June 29, again alone. On that visit, she claimed, she had observed that Samsoe's body had been reduced to a pile of bones. In just four days! Following that extremely unlikely second visit, she again, of course, told no one. We are apparently to believe then that she was brave enough to return to a remote murder scene alone on two occasions, but not brave enough to report her discoveries, even anonymously.

Crappa's testimony had no credibility whatsoever, and she was not the only seriously dubious witness trotted out by the prosecution. There were also Robert J. Dove and Michael Herrera, a pair of Orange County jail inmates, both of whom testified that Alcala had given them jailhouse confessions. A third OC inmate, however, testified that he, Dove and Herrera had fabricated the confessions to gain favor with authorities. What the jury didn't hear was that all three inmates just happened to be clients of Alcala's first court-appointed attorney. Of the thousands of inmates in the OC jail, Alcala had supposedly chosen to confess his crime only to three guys who happened to be represented by the guy who was supposed to be defending him.

Despite their best efforts, prosecutors were unable to present any physical evidence at all tying Alcala to the murder of Robin Samsoe; there was no fingerprint evidence, no fiber or hair evidence, no blood evidence, and no DNA evidence. There also don't appear to have been many witnesses who weren't delivering brazenly perjured testimony.

After a half-hearted defense that included alibi testimony from Alcala's girlfriend and two of his sisters, followed by closing arguments and jury instructions, deliberations began on April 29, 1980. Jurors returned the next day with a guilty verdict on the charge of first-degree murder. The date was, of course, April 30—because that's just the way these things always seem to work. The penalty phase of the trial was a perfunctory affair with just two witnesses appearing for the prosecution, both of them parole officers to whom Alcala had previously reported. He was quickly sentenced to death.

At Alcala's first appeal hearing, inmate Joseph Drake took the stand to repeat his claim that he, Dove and Herrera had fabricated Alcala's confessions in order to strike an "informer's bargain" with authorities. He was joined by Dove, who freely admitted on the stand that his previous testimony had been perjured. The inmate testimony had been crucial to the prosecution's goal of adding the special circumstance of kidnapping, which was necessary for the imposition of the death penalty. On May 28, 1981, the presiding judge issued an extraordinary ruling stating that there had been no "perjured evidence introduced during the trial, *and that even had there been*, that was not a substantial consideration regarding Alcala's guilt." (emphasis added)

The special circumstance of kidnapping, therefore, would stand and Alcala was returned to Death Row. On August 23, 1984, however, the California Supreme Court ruled that the lower court had erred in allowing into evidence Alcala's prior offenses. Rodney Alcala would be getting a new trial after all. The available literature invariably expresses outrage over this reversal, claiming that the allegedly criminal-coddling 'liberal' courts let him off on "a technicality," though that is far removed from the truth.

In April of 1986, Alcala's second trial for the murder of Robin Samsoe got underway. There was a problem though: Dana Crappa, whose testimony was the only hope the state had of getting a conviction, privately informed the judge that she would not be able to testify because she remembered nothing about the incident. She also told him that she did not remember previously testifying, which isn't surprising considering that she delivered that testimony in an obviously induced mental state. Signaling that this trial was going to be just as much of a sham as the first trial, the judge ruled that he would allow Crappa's previous testimony to be read into the record without Crappa being present. That, of course, deprived the jury of the ability to judge Crappa's demeanor and body language and all the other non-verbal clues that jurors use to gauge someone's honesty and credibility. It also denied the defense the opportunity to cross-examine the witness and confront her with her wildly varying accounts of the incident.

The remainder of the trial largely followed the pattern of Alcala's first trial, with a number of women—including Alcala's mother, two sisters, and a female coworker at the *Times*—providing testimony for the defense. The jury once again returned with a guilty verdict and he was once again sentenced to death, but only after blasting his attorneys in court for being "unprepared and unwilling" to mount a real defense. Some six years later, on December 31, 1992, the California Supreme Court affirmed Alcala's second conviction. And that, for the next decade or so, would be the end of the Rodney Alcala saga.

That all changed on March 30, 2001, when a federal district court set aside Alcala's second conviction based on the wildly improper introduction of Crappa's prior testimony. The court also opined that the defense had been improperly prohibited from introducing evidence that Crappa's testimony had been induced. On June 27, 2003, the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals upheld the decision of the federal court and vacated Alcala's conviction, additionally citing the failure by police to secure and properly investigate the crime scene.

The stage was now set for Alcala to stand trial for the *third time* for the murder of Robin Samsoe. The state though was facing quite a dilemma: for whatever reason, there was still a very strong desire to have Alcala take the fall for Samsoe's disappearance, but there was no semblance of a case left. There would be no perjured inmate testimony. There would be no induced testimony from Dana Crappa. There would be no inflammatory admission of prior uncharged crimes. There would be no parading of Alcala in handcuffs and leg shackles. And there still was not a shred of physical evidence tying Alcala to the crime or the alleged crime scene.

On October 17, 2003, Alcala filed a motion to act as his own attorney in the coming trial. This was cast by the media as a misguided, narcissistic attempt by Alcala to put himself in the spotlight. In truth, he was undoubtedly aware that he had been sold out twice before and likely would be again. Indeed, in June 2003, the very month that Alcala's conviction had been vacated, DNA evidence had supposedly identified him as the killer of Georgia Wixted. The state was going to be taking a novel approach to railroading Alcala this time.

Alcala would soon allegedly be linked by DNA evidence to the Lamb, Parentau and Barcomb murders as well. Like Wixted, they were all killed in Los Angeles County, which is under a different court jurisdiction than Orange County, where Alcala had previously stood trial for Samsoe's murder. All five cases were handed off to a grand jury, which, as California grand juries do, met secretly to render a decision. According to Sands, "After hearing all the evidence against Alcala, the grand jury came down with an indictment. Although Lamb, Parenteau, Barcomb, and Wixted had all been murdered in Los Angeles County, the grand jury held open the possibility that prosecutors could consolidate all *five* cases—including that of Robin Samsoe—and try Alcala in Orange County."

After numerous delays, the consolidated trial began in Orange County in early 2010. It was the first time, and to date the last time, that such a cross-county consolidation had been allowed. The state was now going to try to convict Alcala for the Samsoe murder by presenting it as one of a string of murders, with the other four allegedly being open-and-shut, scientifically unimpeachable cases. It appeared that judicial malfeasance had now reached such a level that the state had dusted off four very old murder cases and manufactured evidence linking Alcala to them as a way of garnering a conviction for a fifth murder that was otherwise not prosecutable.

Alcala was by then being widely identified by police and the media as a prolific serial killer who was likely responsible for other, undiscovered murders. Some of the most over-the-top media coverage came from the UK, where a February 2010 headline in the *Telegraph* declared that "US serial killer Rodney Alcala could be 'new Ted Bundy.'" An April 2010 headline in the London *Daily Mail* was even more histrionic: "The 'most prolific' serial killer in US history is sentenced to death as police fear he could be behind 130 murders."

At Alcala's third trial, a fingerprint technician testified that a palm print recovered from the scene of Georgia Wixted's murder thirty-three years earlier was a match for Rodney Alcala. Another technician testified that blood evidence recovered from another of the murder scenes also was a match. Nobody though bothered to explain why Alcala was just then being identified as the perpetrator of these crimes if the evidence linking a known violent sex offender and 'person of interest' to the murders had supposedly been in existence for more than thirty years!

Craig Robison, one of the lead detectives on the Samsoe case, testified that he had arrested Alcala on July 24, 1979, and taken him down to the station while other Huntington Beach officers executed a search warrant on the home. It was at that time, according to Robison, that a Sergeant Jenkins had allegedly discovered a receipt for a Seattle storage locker. Rather then seize the receipt, however, he purportedly left it there and copied down the information on it. The actual receipt was never produced at trial and there is no way of verifying that it ever existed. Following that seriously dubious lead, detectives had discovered a storage unit purportedly filled with photographs and other evidence Alcala had stashed there. Immediately after the discovery of Samsoe's alleged remains, Alcala is said to have driven to Seattle and deposited the items in the unit, after which he stayed overnight and then drove back home. He had, of course, told no one of this alleged trip and no witnesses could place him in Seattle. And there was no explanation for why he would have driven all the way there, to a city he had no known connection to and was not known to have ever visited, to stash the items. Police would later try to connect Alcala to murders previously attributed to Seattle's so-called Green River killer.

Alcala was, needless to say, convicted a third time for the murder of Robin Samsoe, as well as for the murders of Lamb, Wixted, Parentau and Barcomb. On March 2, 2010, the penalty phase of the trial began. A week later, on March 9, the jury returned once again with a recommendation that Alcala be executed. Three weeks later, the presiding judge formally sentenced him to die by lethal injection.

Six months after that third conviction, the television show *48 Hours Mystery* aired *The Killing Game*, a look at the Rodney Alcala case that had been produced by longtime correspondent Harold Dow. The episode was aired posthumously; Dow had died suddenly and unexpectedly a month earlier, on August 21, 2010, just before completing work on the project. It is not beyond the realm of possibility that Dow had discovered something about the Alcala case that those with vested interests did not want aired on national television.

Whether or not Alcala's third conviction in California will stand remains to be seen. Probably as a fallback option in case the convictions are once again overturned, as they certainly should be, Alcala was indicted in 2011 and subsequently convicted in New York for the murders of Crilley and Hover, though it is unclear what evidence those convictions were based on. Over the last several years, authorities have circulated scores of Alcala's photographs in an attempt to link him to additional crimes. To date, not one of those photos has been linked to any known murders or missing persons cases.

So what, at the end of the day, are we to make of Alcala's curious connections to the Laurel Canyon 'peace, love and understanding' scene? If his official bio is to be believed, his first victim, the daughter of a record executive, was snatched from the mouth of the canyon. One of his last victims was left posed at the northern end. And all along the way, such names as Jim Morrison, Roman Polanski, Marlon Brando and Steve Hodel, and such iconic places as Ciros and the Chateau Marmont, unexpectedly pop up in the storyline.

Rodney Alcala’s story is a strange one even by serial killer standards. But it is far from being the only serial killer story that the mainstream media got wrong. Interested readers can find a wealth of such stories in my previous book, *Programmed to Kill*.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Though I have a fairly short list of people to thank here, their contributions were invaluable and this book wouldn't have been what it is without them.

First off, my sincerest thanks go to Thomas McGrath of Headpress for, among other things, convincing me to overcome my initial skepticism about working with a publisher to turn this material into a book (it began life as a series of web posts). Thanks go out to Thomas as well for his proofreading and editing skills, and for coming up with the title and epigraph. This book would have never come into being without the salesmanship, and infinite patience, of Mr. McGrath.

Next on the list is David Kerekes, again of Headpress, who also lent his considerable proofreading and editing skills to this work. David was also responsible for the formatting and layout of the book, as well as for coming up with a number of the chapter titles. For all of that and more, I owe a huge 'thank you' to Mr. Kerekes, as I do to Mark Critchell, who perfectly captured the tone of the book with his eye-catching cover art.

Thanks must also be extended to my esteemed colleague, Mr. Nick Bryant, for graciously agreeing to pen the Foreword to this book even though he was working on various projects of his own at the time. And also to my eldest daughter, Alissa McGowan (www.redpenforrent.com), for her irreplaceable editorial advice and assistance.

Lastly, I wish to thank my readers for their invaluable input during the time that this book was a work-in-progress. A good portion of the material in this volume was unearthed only by following links and other tips sent in by alert fans of my website. I can't thank you all individually because there are too many of you, a pretty fair number of whom I know only by email handles, but know that this book would have been considerably shorter and less interesting without your input.

SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY & FILMOGRAPHY

Allen, Nick. "US serial killer Rodney Alcala could be 'new Ted Bundy,'" the *Telegraph*, February 26, 2010.

Anderson, Jack. "Secret Study in Behavior Control," *Ocala Star-Banner*, August 4, 1972.

Anderson, Lessley. "Lucifer, Arisen," *San Francisco Weekly*, November 17, 2004.

Anger, Kenneth (dir.). *Scorpio Rising* (1964), Fantoma DVD, 2007.

—— (dir.). *Invocation of My Demon Brother* (1969), Fantoma DVD, 2007.

—— (dir.). *Lucifer Rising* (1981), Fantoma DVD, 2007.

Anon. "'60s: Decade of Tumult and Change, The," *Life Special Double Issue*, December 26, 1969.

——. "Bride Wore Pink, The," *Time*, February 23, 1948.

——. "Mystery of the Greystone Mansion Murders," *New York Social Diary*, August 30, 2007.

Atkins, Susan Denise and Lawrence Schiller. "Witness Tells of that Bloody Night at Tate's," the *Arizona Republic*, December 14, 1969.

Austin, John. *Hollywood's Unsolved Mysteries*, Shapolsky Publishers, 1990.

Bain, Donald. *The Control of Candy Jones*, Playboy Press, 1976.

Barris, Chuck. *Confessions of a Dangerous Mind: An Unauthorized Autobiography*, Miramax Books, 2002.

Bishop, Greg and Joe Oesterle and Mike Marinacci. *Weird California: Your Travel Guide to California's Local Legends and Best Kept Secrets*, Sterling Publishing, 2006.

Black, David. *Acid: The Secret History of LSD*, Vision Paperbacks, 1998.

Blum, William. *Killing Hope: US Military and CIA Interventions Since World War II*, Common Courage Press, 1995.

Boucher, Geoff. "LA Felt the Love of '67," *Los Angeles Times*, August 2, 2007.

Boulware, Jack. "The Rock'n'roll Treehouse," *Mojo*, April 20, 2006.

Bowser, Kenneth (dir.). *Phil Ochs: There But For Fortune* (2010), First Run Features DVD, 2011.

Boyd, Alan (dir.). *Hey Hey We're The Monkees* (1997), Immortal DVD, 2003.

Bugliosi, Vincent with Curt Gentry. *Helter Skelter: The True Story of the Manson Murders*, Bantam Books, 1974.

Burks, John. "Rock & Roll's Worst Day," *Rolling Stone*, February 7, 1970.

Brewer, Jon (dir.). *Legends of the Canyon: Classic Artists* (2009), Image Entertainment DVD, 2010.

The Byrds: Under Review (2007), Sexy Intellectual DVD, 2007.

Captain Beefheart: Under Review (2006), Sexy Intellectual DVD, 2006.

Carey, Timothy (dir.). *The World's Greatest Sinner* (1962), unreleased.

Carlin, Peter Ames. *Catch a Wave: The Rise, Fall and Redemption of The Beach Boys' Brian Wilson*, Rodale, 2006.

Carter, John. *Sex and Rockets: The Occult World of Jack Parsons*, Feral House, 2005.

Childs, Andy. "Lowell George Interview," *Zig Zag: The Rock Magazine*, March 1975.

The Chuck Negron Story: Biography of an Entertainer (2005), Delta Entertainment DVD, 2005.

Cohen, Robert Carl (dir.). *Mondo Hollywood* (1967), CustomFlix DVD, 2006.

Constantine, Alex. *The Covert War Against Rock*, Feral House, 2000.

Copeland, Ian. *Wild Thing: The Backstage, On the Road, In the Studio, Off the Charts Memoir of Ian Copeland*, Simon & Schuster, 1995.

Copeland III, Miles. "Biography of Miles Copeland III, Senior Political Editor," *And Magazine*, www.andmagazine.com/contributors/126_miles_copeland.html.

Corman, Roger (dir.). *The Trip* (1967), MGM DVD, 2003.

Cromelin, Richard. "John Phillips; Singer-Songwriter Led the Mamas and the Papas," *Los Angeles Times*, March 19, 2001.

Crosby, David and Carl Gottlieb. *Long Time Gone: The Autobiography of David Crosby*, Doubleday, 1988.

Des Barres, Pamela. *I'm With The Band: Confessions of a Groupie*, Jove, 1987.

Dow, Harold (prod.). *48 Hours Mystery: The Killing Game*, CBS television, September 2010.

Edelstein, Andrew J. *The Pop Sixties*, Ballantine Books, 1985.

Einarson, John. *Desperados: The Roots of Country Rock*, Cooper Square Press, 2001.

——. *Forever Changes: Arthur Lee and the Book of Love*, Jawbone Press, 2010.

——. *Mr. Tambourine Man: The Life and Legacy of The Byrds' Gene Clark*, Backbeat Books, 2005.

—— and Richie Furay. *For What It's Worth: The Story of Buffalo Springfield*, Cooper Square Press, 2004.

Estabrooks, G.H. *Hypnotism*, Dutton, 1957.

Fong-Torres, Ben. *Hickory Wind: The Life and Times of Gram Parsons*, Pocket Books, 1991.

Forbes, Gordon (dir.). *The Doors: No One Here Gets Out Alive* (1981), Eagle Rock Entertainment DVD, 2002.

Franzoni, Carl. "The Sundazed Interview," www.sundazed.com/scene/exclusives/franzoni_exclusive.html.

Frary, Ihna Thayer. *They Built the Capitol*, Garret and Massie, 1940.

Fricke, David. "Life of a California Dreamer," *Rolling Stone* #867, April 26, 2001.

Frost, Lee (dir.). *Mondo Bizarro* (1966), Image Entertainment DVD, 2012.

Gaines, Steven. *Heroes & Villains: The True Story of The Beach Boys*, Signet, 1986.

Gardner, David. "The 'most prolific' serial killer in US history is sentenced to death as police fear he could be behind 130 murders," London *Daily Mail*, April 1, 2010.

Gilmore, John and Ron Kenner. *Manson: The Unholy Trail of Charlie and the Family* (formerly *The Garbage People*), Amok, 2000.

Goodman, Fred. *The Mansion on the Hill: Dylan, Young, Geffen, Springsteen, and the Head-On Collision of Rock and Commerce*, Vintage, 1998.

Gorightly, Adam. "The Process Church of the Final Judgment and the Manson Family," *Paranoia*, Winter 2007.

Greenfield, Robert. "The King of LSD," *Rolling Stone*, July 12–26, 2007.

Grimes, William. "George S. Morrison, Admiral and Singer's Father, Dies at 89," *New York Times*, December 8, 2008.

Hall, Mark (dir.). *The Mamas and the Papas: Straight Shooter* (1988), Standing Room Only Entertainment DVD, 2010.

Heimbichner, Craig. *Blood On the Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society*, Independent History and Research, 2005.

Henderson, Richard. *Van Dyke Parks' Song Cycle (33 1/3)*, Continuum, 2008.

Hennig, Gandulf (dir.). *Gram Parsons: Fallen Angel* (2006), Rhino DVD, 2006.

Herken, Gregg. "Dr. Strangelove's Workplace," *Washington Post*, July 6, 2008.

Hiatt, Brian. "High Times in Laurel Canyon and on the Sunset Strip," *Rolling Stone*, July 12–26, 2007.

Hinsche, Billy (dir.). *Dennis Wilson Forever* (2008), Sony Pictures DVD, 2008.

Hopkins, Jerry. *The Lizard King: The Essential Jim Morrison*, Fireside, 1992.

Hopper, Dennis (dir.). *Easy Rider* (1969), Sony Pictures DVD, 1999.

Hoskyns, Barney. *Hotel California: The True-Life Adventures of Crosby, Stills, Nash, Young,* *Mitchell, Taylor, Browne, Ronstadt, Geffen, the Eagles, and Their Many Friends*, Wiley, 2006.

——. *Waiting for the Sun: Strange Days, Weird Scenes, and the Sound of Los Angeles*, St. Martin's Griffin, 1996.

Jacobson, Laurie and Marc Wanamaker. *Hollywood Haunted: A Ghostly Tour of Filmland*, Angel City Press, 1994.

Kalush, William and Larry Sloman. *The Secret Life of Houdini: The Making of America's First Superhero*, Atria Books, 2006.

Kamp, David. "Live at the Whisky," *Vanity Fair*, September 4, 2006.

Kay, John and John Einarson. *John Kay: Magic Carpet Ride*, Quarry Press, 1994.

Kelly, Susan. *The Boston Stranglers*, Birch Lane Press, 1995.

Kubernik, Harvey. *Canyon of Dreams: The Magic and the Music of Laurel Canyon*, Sterling, 2009.

Kurtz, Pete. "An Interview With Snoopy Pfisterer," www.60sGarageBands.com.

Labruce, Bruce. "Bijou Phillips Interview," *Index*, 2000.

Lachman, Gary Valentine. *Turn off Your Mind: The Mystic Sixties and the Dark Side of the Age of Aquarius*, Sidgwick & Jackson, 2001.

——. "The Process," *Fortean Times*, May 2000.

Lacy, Susan (dir.). *Joni Mitchell: Woman of Heart and Mind* (2003), Eagle Rock Entertainment DVD, 2003.

Landis, Bill. *Anger: The Unauthorized Biography of Kenneth Anger*, Harper Collins, 1995.

Lawson, Kristan and Anneli Rufus. *California Babylon: A Guide to Sites of Scandal, Mayhem, and Celluloid in the Golden State*, St. Martin's Griffin, 2000.

Lee, Martin and Bruce Shlain. *Acid Dreams: The Complete Social History of LSD: The CIA, the Sixties, and Beyond*, Grove Press, 1985.

Lemons, Stephen. "Return to Wonderland," *Salon*, June 9, 2000.

Lindsell, Alec (prod.). *Frank Zappa and the Mothers of Invention: In the 1960s* (2008), Sexy Intellectual DVD, 2009.

Logan, Dan. "After Extensive Investigation and Two Trials, Huntington Beach Police Finally Put Rodney James Alcala Behind Bars," *Orange Coast*, June 1989.

Longfellow, Matthew (dir.). *Frank Zappa: Apostrophe/Over-Nite Sensation* (2007), Eagle Rock Entertainment DVD, 2007.

Lovett, Anthony R. and Matt Maranian. *LA Bizarro: The Insider's Guide to the Obscure, the Absurd, and the Perverse in Los Angeles*, St. Martin's Press, 1997.

MacDonell, Allan. "In Too Deep," *LA Weekly*, October 3, 2003.

Mank, Gregory William. *Hollywood's Hellfire Club: The Misadventures of John Barrymore, W.C. Fields, Errol Flynn and the Bundy Drive Boys*, Feral House, 2007.

Manzarek, Ray (dir.). *Turtles: Happy Together* (1991), Rhino DVD, 2000.

Mayorquin, Jose (prod.). *Eye on LA: The Legends of Laurel Canyon*, ABC television, 2012.

Maysles, Albert and David Maysles (dir.). *The Rolling Stones: Gimme Shelter* (1970), Criterion DVD, 2000.

McAlester, Keven (dir.). *You're Gonna Miss Me: A Film About Roky Erickson* (2005), Palm Pictures DVD, 2007.

McGowan, David. *Programmed to Kill: The Politics of Serial Murder*, IUniverse, 2004.

——. *Understanding the F-Word: American Fascism and the politics of Illusion*, IUniverse, 2001.

Miles, Barry. *Hippie*, Sterling Publishing, 2004.

——. *Zappa: A Biography*, Grove Press, 2004.

Moench, Doug. *The Big Book of Conspiracies*, Paradox Press, 1995.

Myers, Marc. "Who Else Made More Hit Songs?" *Wall Street Journal*, March 23, 2011.

Nash, Jay Robert. *Bloodletters and Bad Men, Book 3*, Warner Books, 1975.

Neil Young: Under Review: 1966–1975 (1975), Video Music, Inc. DVD, 2007.

Newton, Michael. *Raising Hell: An Encyclopedia of Devil Worship and Satanic Crime*, Avon, 1993.

Norman, Marc. "Hermit Chic" *Los Angeles Business Journal*, May 1, 1992.

O'Casey, Matt (dir.). *Dennis Wilson: The Real Beach Boy*, BBC television, 2008.

O'Neil, Paul. "The Love and Terror Cult," *Life*, December 19, 1969.

Owen, Frank. "The Dark Side of the Summer of Love," *Playboy*, July 2007.

Parkinson, Mike (dir.). *Jimi Hendrix: The Last 24 Hours* (2004), GMVS DVD, 2004.

Pennebaker, D.A. (dir.). *The Complete Monterey Pop Festival* (1967), Criterion DVD, 2002.

Pelisek, Christine. "Rodney Alcala: The Fine Art of Killing," *LA Weekly*, January 21, 2010.

Phillips, Graham and Martin Keatman. *The Shakespeare Conspiracy*, Century, 1994.

Phillips, John with Jim Jerome. *Papa John: A Music Legend's Shattering Journey Through Sex, Drugs, and Rock'n'Roll*, Dolphin Books, 1986.

Pierson, Jim (prod.). *California Dreamin'—The Songs of the Mamas and the Papas* (1994), Hip-O Records DVD, 2005.

Priore, Domenic and Arthur Lee. *Riot on the Sunset Strip: Rock'n'Roll's Last Stand in Hollywood*, Jawbone Press, 2003.

Rafelson, Bob (dir.). *Head: The Monkees* (1968), Rhino DVD, 1998.

Rasmussen, Cecelia. "Rustic Canyon Ruin May Be a Former Nazi Compound," *Los Angeles Times*, September 4, 2005.

Reda, Scott (dir.). *Hippies*, History Channel television, 2007.

Roeg, Nicholas and Donald Cammell (dir.). *Performance* (1970), Warner Home Video DVD, 2007.

Ross, Colin A. *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*, Manitou Communications, 2006.

Rubin, Josh (dir.). *Derailroaded: Inside the Mind of Larry Wild Man Fischer* (2005), Ubin Twinz Productions DVD, 2011.

Sanders, Ed. *The Family: The Story of Charles Manson's Dune Buggy Attack Battalion*, Dutton, 1971.

Sands, Stella. *The Dating Game Killer: The True Story of a TV Dating Show, a Violent Sociopath, and a Series of Brutal Murders*, St. Martin's Press, 2011.

Scheinfeld, John (dir.). *Who is Harry Nilsson (And Why is Everybody Talkin' About Him)?* (2006), Lorber Films DVD, 2010.

Schudel, Matt. "Tandyn Almer, Enigmatic Composer of 'Along Comes Mary,' Dies at 70," *Washington Post*, February 16, 2013.

Shreck, Nikolas (dir.). *Charles Manson Superstar* (1989), Screen Edge DVD, 2002.

Seidenbaum, Art. "'Mondo,' Home to Roost," *Los Angeles Times*, October 1, 1967.

Seireeni, Rick. "Early Canyon History," Laurel Canyon Association Website, www.laurelcanyonassoc.com/EarlyHist.html.

Sragow, Michael. "'Gimme Shelter': The True Story," *Salon*, August 10, 2000.

Starr, Martin P. *The Unknown God: W.T. Smith and the Thelemites*, Teitan Press, 2003.

Steinberg, Susan (dir.). *Atlantic Records: The House that Ahmet Built* (2007), Rhino DVD, 2007.

Stuart-Ware, Michael. *Behind the Scenes on the Pegasus Carousel with the Legendary Rock Group Love*, Helter Skelter Publishing, 2003.

Street-Porter, Janet. *Scandal!*, Penguin Books, 1981.

Summers, Andy. "LSD Gave You a Sense of Rightness," *Rolling Stone*, July 12–26, 2007.

Terry, Maury. *The Ultimate Evil: The Truth About the Cult Murders: Son of Sam and Beyond*, Barnes and Noble Books, 1999.

Trubee, John. "Last of the Freaks: The Carl Franzoni Story," www.united-mutations.com/f/last_of_the_freaks.htm.

Unterberger, Richie. *Eight Miles High: Folk Rock's Flight from Haight-Ashbury to Woodstock*, Backbeat Books, 2003.

——. *Turn! Turn! Turn!: The sixties Folk Rock Revolution*, Backbeat Books, 2002.

Walker, Michael. *Laurel Canyon: The Inside Story of Rock-and-Roll's Legendary Neighborhood*, Faber and Faber, 2006.

Weller, Sheila. "California Dreamgirl," Vanity Fair, December 2007.

Wick, Steve. *Bad Company: Drugs, Hollywood, and the Cotton Club Murder*, St. Martin's, 1990.

Wilson, Chris (dir.). *Hotel California: LA from the Byrds to the Eagles*, BBC television, 2012.

Young, Paul. *LA Exposed: Strange Myths and Curious Legends in the City of Angels*, St. Martin's Griffin, 2002.

INDEX

101st Airborne Division 31
Abella, Alex 99
Abramson, Herb 151
Adams, Diane 253
Adams, John 16, 202
Adams, Nick 57, 68, 110
Adams, Susie 202, 205
Adie, Elizabeth Lorraine 278
Adler, Lou 206
Admiral Farragut Military Academy 156
A Flock of Seagulls (band) 277
Aide, Ian 278
Alarm, the (band) 278
Alcala-Buquor, Rodrigo Jacques (*see also* Alcala, Rodney) 285
Alcala, Rodney 284, 285, 287–292, 294–300
Alexander, Jules 116
Allbritton, Martin 116
Allende, Salvador 44
Allen, Steve 67
Allman Brothers, the (band) 37, 166
Allman, Gregg 166
Almer, Tandyn 258
America (band) 114
Alpert, Richard 97, 102
Altamont 178–182, 212
AMC Records 280
American Bandstand (tv show) 153
American Four, the (band) 238
A&M Records 182
Anderle, David 224
Andersen, Eric 175
Andy Williams Show, the (tv show) 153
Anger, Kenneth 76, 88, 107, 110, 139
Anglemyer, Wilbur 239
Animals, the (band) 32, 285
Annapolis Naval Academy 202
Ant, Adam 277
Applebaum, Ricky 68
Arbuckle, Roscoe “Fatty” 58, 271
Arden, Don 69
Armatrading, Joan 280
Aryan Brotherhood 116
Asher, Irving 254
Asher, Tony 254
Association, the (band) 116, 218, 258
Astor, Mary 58
Atkins, Susan 86, 240
Atlantic Records 151, 152, 241
Au Go-Go Singers (band) 148, 157
B-52s, the (band) 277
Badfinger (band) 40
Baez, Joan 175
Baez, Mimi 176
Bakley, Bonnie Lee 108
Baldwin, Stephen 214
Baldwin, William 214
Bananarama (band) 277
Bangles, the (band) 277
Barbary, Alan 185
Barbary, Frank 185
Barbieri, John 242
Barcomb, Jill 289, 290, 297, 299
Barris, Chuck 276, 291
Barrymore, John 196
Beach Boys, the (band) 29, 69, 165, 167, 211, 249–262
Beatles, the (band) 39, 40, 116, 175, 191, 194, 257
Beat, the (band) 277
Beatty, Warren 3, 85, 86, 92, 207
Beaty, Ira 93
Beausoleil, Bobby 4, 27, 37, 75, 76, 86, 97, 116, 139, 140, 209, 219, 223, 239–241
Becket, Welton 125
Beckley, Gerry 19
Beebe, Laurie 212
Beefeaters, the (band) 144, 192
Belcher, Suzanne 253
Bennett, William 37
Bergen, Candice 3, 137, 208
Berger, John (*see also* Alcala, Rodney) 287
Bern, Paul 27
Bernstein, Leonard 258
Berry, Bruce 33
Berry, Jan 33
Berry, Ray 198
Bianchi, Kenneth 289
Bilby, John 74
Bizarre Records 220
Black Sabbath (band) 69
Blaine, Hal 135
Blake, Robert 108
Blanchard, Susan 90
Blavatsky, Helena 43, 111, 195
Blondie (band) 277
Blue, David 108, 109, 110
Blue Öyster Cult (band) 38
Blum, Larry 293
Bobby Fuller Four, the (band) 36

INDEX

Bob Jones University 174
Bolin, Tommy 38
Bond, Graham 39
Bonfire, Mars 231, 233
Bono, Sonny 113
Booth, John Wilkes 54, 266
Borstein, Leon 288
Boss City (tv show) 153
Boston Transcript (publication) 267
Boulware, Jack 51, 74
Bow, Clara 52, 53
Bow Wow Wow (band) 277
Brady, Marcia 87
Brando, Christian 108
Brando, Dorothy "Dody" 94
Brando, Marlon 3, 57, 86, 94, 107, 161, 208, 289, 299
Brandt, Steve 109, 208
Brave New World (club) 239
Brayton, Georgina 89
Brokaw, George 90
Brooks, Rosa Lee 238
Brown, Edmund 97
Browne, Ethan 232
Browne, Jackson 19, 36, 43, 97, 112, 119, 127, 160, 232
Browne, Phyllis Major 36
Brown, Jerry 25, 26, 96, 97, 99
Bruce, Lenny 28–30, 110, 145, 219, 220
Brunner, Mary 240
Bryars, Billy 3, 100
Buchanan, Pat 226
Buckingham, Lindsey 259
Buckley, Jeff 36
Buckley, Tim 35, 108, 219
Buffalo Springfield (band) 2, 4, 13, 16, 37, 70, 108, 117, 131, 147–158, 161, 163–166, 168, 178, 194, 195, 239
Buff, Paul 218, 219
Bugliosi, Vincent 79, 121
Bundy, Ted 93, 298
Bunnell, Dewey 19, 217
Buono, Angelo 289
Burden, Eric 32, 283
Burrell, Gretchen 178, 183
Burrell, Larry 185
Burroughs, Edgar Rice 255
Bush, George H.W. 260, 279
Bush, George W. 100
Bush, Prescott 90
Buzzcocks (band) 277
Byrd, Robert 74, 115
Byrds, the (band) 4, 18, 19, 29, 31, 34, 57, 63, 64, 69, 70, 88, 112, 113, 117, 133–135, 136–146, 150–153, 160, 161, 163, 165, 169, 171, 178, 182, 187, 191–197, 230, 234, 238, 239, 285, 289
Cahn, Marvin 84
Cale, John 277
California Medical Facility at Vacaville 288
Cammell, Charles Richard 107
Cammell, Donald 107, 109, 211
Campbell, Glen 135, 137, 195, 255
Camper Van Beethoven (band) 278
Canned Heat (band) 31, 233, 234
Cantrelli, Tjay 242, 245, 247
Canyon Country Store 25, 32, 135
Capitol Records 125, 238, 252
Capone, Al 92
Captain Beefheart 13, 108, 217, 221–233
Carey, Timothy 218
Carradine, David 197, 198
Carradine, John 196
Carter, Jimmy 25, 95
Castro, Fidel 97
Cavett, Frank 229
Cavett, Morgan 231
Celebrity Rehab (tv show) 213
Cepeda, Delores 289
Chad Mitchell Trio (band) 113, 141, 157
Chambers, Marilyn 196
Chaplin, Charlie 271
Chapman, Mark David 118
Charles, Ray 152, 237
Chateau Marmont Hotel 178, 285, 286
Chelsea Hotel 32, 45, 119, 245
Cheney, Dick 100
Cher 113
Cherry Vanilla (band) 277
Cinque (*see also* DeFreeze, Donald) 288
Circle Jerks (band) 278
Ciros (club) 230, 231, 299
Clapton, Eric 152, 154
Clark, David 197
Clark, Dick 72, 242
Clarke, Michael 134, 144, 178, 239
Clark, Gene 86, 117, 141, 145, 187–199, 230, 248
Clark, Kelly 190
Clark, Nancy Patricia 190
Clash, the (band) 277
Climax Blues Band (band) 280
Cline, Patsy 151
Clinton, Bill 25, 114
Clooney, Rosemary 221
Club 47 (club) 175, 176, 243
Cobain, Kurt 39
Coburn, James 57
Cohen, Herb 14, 35, 42, 117, 164, 241
Cohen, Mickey 20
Cohen, Robert Carl 75, 81, 97, 240
Cole, Brian 116
Cole, Jerry 135
Collins, Judi 41
Columbia Military Academy 170
Columbia Records 144, 152, 192
Concrete Blonde (band) 278
Conjurer's Monthly (publication) 267
Conka, Don 238, 245, 246
Connor II, Cecil Ingram 20
Cooke, Horatio G. 265
Cooley, Ella Mae 142
Cooley, Spade 142, 143
Cooper, Alice 14, 168, 219, 220
Copeland, Hunter 283
Copeland, Ian 277, 281–283
Copeland III, Miles 278–283
Copeland, Jr., Miles Axe 277–279, 283
Copeland, Stewart 277, 278, 283
Corman, Roger 86
Cornell University 176
Courson, Pamela 32, 242
Cox, Courteney 283
Cox, Wally 161
Coyote, Peter 24
Cramps, the (band) 277
Crandon, John 273
Crandon, Le Roi 272–274
Crandon, Margery 272, 274

Crappa, Dana 292–294, 296, 297
Crazy Horse (band) 33
Cream (band) 285
Creamcheese, Suzy 74, 219
Crilley, Cornelia 299
Croce, Jim 184
Crosby, Bing 56
Crosby, David 3, 4, 13, 17–19, 22, 23, 31, 33, 59, 62, 63, 64, 72, 79, 86, 88, 95, 114, 127, 134, 135, 141, 144, 146, 154, 164, 166, 169, 171, 177, 178, 180, 191–193, 195, 209, 230, 239, 250, 254
Crosby, Major Floyd Delafield 18
Crosby, Stills & Nash (band) 17, 18, 146, 167
Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young (band) 2, 179
Crowley, Aleister 32, 43, 89, 107
Curb, Mike 96–98
Cure, the (band) 277
Curry, Cherie 69
dada (band) 278
Danneman, Monika 32
Dating Game, the (tv show) 81, 276, 290, 291
Davenport, Bud 143
Davis, Jesse Ed 197
Davis, Jr., Sammy 289
Davis, Patti 260
Davis, Saul 198
Dawson, Pic 208
Day, Bobby 237
Day, Doris 136
Day, Harry 269, 275
Dean, James 57, 68
DeCarlo, Danny 179
DeFreeze, Donald 288
DeGrimston, Robert 79
Delaney, Kevin 247
Della Reese Show, the (tv show) 153
Densmore, John 131, 132
Denver, John 113, 158
Depew, Chauncey 266
Depew, Ganson 266
Deptford Fun City Records 280
Dern, Bruce 85, 86, 89, 90, 183
DeSalvo, Albert 175
Des Barres, Michael 166
Des Barres, Pamela 32, 76, 219, 288
Deverell, Billy 115
DeWilde, Brandon 20, 110, 174, 176, 177, 183
DeWyckoff, Joseph 273, 274
Dickson, Jim 117, 141, 144, 146, 160, 182, 192
Dillard, Doug 195
Dillards, the (band) 150, 160, 195
Diltz, Henry 154
Disney, Walt 56
Dix, Richard 52, 53
Doheny, Edward 125
Doheny, Ned 126, 146, 161
Doherty, Denny 26, 206, 207, 211, 212
Dolenz, Mickey 20, 110, 163, 249
Donohue, Lizzie 193
Donovan 256
Donovan, "Wild Bill" 278
Doors, the (band) 13, 57, 64, 70, 101, 111, 128–135, 140, 176, 192, 283, 285
Douglas, Kirk 33
Dove, Robert J. 295
Dow, Harold 299
Downey, Jr., Morton 72
Doyle, Arthur Conan 272
Doyle, Billy 208
Drake, Joseph 295
Dr. Demento 221
Dread Zeppelin (band) 277
Droz, Art 293
DuBois, Catherine Blanchan 94
DuBois, Louis 94
Dugway Proving Ground 217
Dulles, Allen 279
Dulles, John Foster 279
Durston, Edward 29
Dylan, Bob 140, 175, 219, 285
Eagles, the (band) 97, 166, 181
Easy Rider (film) 3, 88, 233
Echols, Johnny 238, 241, 242, 245
Eddy, Jr., Clifford 275
Edgewood Arsenal 14, 104, 217
Edmonton, Jerry 232, 234, 235
Ed Sullivan Show, the (tv show) 207, 209
Edwards Air Force Base 14, 34, 217
Einarson, John 149, 156, 164, 189, 190, 191, 197, 243
Elektra Records 192, 241
Elliot, "Mama" Cass 15, 26, 35, 40, 57, 205, 206, 208–210
Elliot, Owen Vanessa 210
Enemies, the (band) 255
Erhard, Werner 113
Erickson, Roky 46–48
Ertegun, Ahmet 151, 164
Estabrooks, George 45
Etheridge, Chris 178
Evans, Tom 40
Everly Brothers, the (band) 151
Factory, the (band; *see also* Fraternity of Man) 117
Faherty, Edmund 188
Faherty, Helena 188
Faherty, James 188
Faherty, Mary Jeanne 189
Faherty, Oscar 188
Faithfull, Marianne 79
Fariña, Mimi 175
Fariña, Richard 175, 176
Farrow, Mia 4, 208, 256
Farrow, Prudence 256
Felder, Don 158
Ferdinand the Great 170
Fielder, Jim 161
Fields, W.C. 58
Fine Young Cannibals (band) 278
Fischer, Larry "Wild Man" 13, 20, 220
Fisher, Margaret 184
Fishetti, Joseph 92
Fitzsimmons, Bob 266
Fixx, the (band) 277
Fleckenstein, John 240, 245
Fleetwood Mac (band) 259
Fleshtones, the (band) 277
Flying Burrito Brothers (band) 20, 33, 69, 105, 112, 146, 169, 178, 179, 182
Flynn, Errol 68, 112
Flynn, Rory 68
Flynt, Larry 153
Folger, Abigail 16, 26, 30, 208, 209
Fonda, Elma 94
Fonda, Henry 33, 90, 92, 94, 95

INDEX

Fonda, Hester Jans 95
Fonda, Jane 3, 85, 92, 207
Fonda, Jellis Douw 95
Fonda, Peter 3, 57, 63, 85, 86, 88, 90, 95, 99, 113, 183, 194, 207
Ford, John 56
Ford, Lita 69
Forssi, Ken 241, 245, 247
Fort Bragg 286
Fowley, Douglas 68
Fowley, Kim 68, 69, 71
Fox, James 107, 108
Franchetti, Afdera 90
Franchetti, Baron Raimondo 91
Franklin, Joe 168
Franzoni, Carl 64, 67, 70, 71, 73, 74, 77, 78, 80, 81, 97, 117, 134, 145, 220, 237, 250
Franzoni, Karl (*see also* Franzoni, Carl) 63, 75
Fraternity of Man, the (band) 74, 88, 117
Freedman, Carole 253
French, John "Drumbo" 222, 223
Frey, Glen 127
Friedman, Barry 149, 159, 160
Frka, Christine 33
Fromme, Lynette "Squeaky" 115, 146
Frykowski, Voytek 16, 26, 30, 208
Fuller, Bobby 36, 133, 242
Fuller, Randy 37
Furay, Richie 148, 150, 154, 157, 158, 161, 166, 168, 174, 178
Furnier, Vincent 168
Gabor, Zsa Zsa 4, 194, 208
Gaines, Steven 120
Gambino, Carlo 92
Gang of Four (band) 277
Garden of Allah (apartments) 230
Garfield, James 269
Gaye, Marvin 285
Gazzari's (club) 70
Geffen, David 43, 146, 167
General Public (band) 277
Generation X (band) 277
George, Lowell 109, 117, 230
George, Wally 72
George, Willard H. 117
Gerard, Jack 139
Getty, Jr., J. Paul 212
Ghaleb, Amr 280
Giancana, Sam 92, 133
Giesler, Jerry 204
Gilliam, Gardner "Gil" 203
Gilmore, John 240
Gimme Shelter (film) 180
Girl From U.N.C.L.E., the (tv show) 153
Go-Gos, the (band) 277
Goldman, Ron 289
Goldschmidt, Hans 269
Goldwater, Barry 168
Gong Show, the (tv show) 80
Gosdin, Rex 195
Gosdin, Vern 191
Go Show, the (tv show) 153
Gossage, Amy 35
Gossage, Eben 35
Grass Roots (band) 4, 37, 76, 139, 239, 241
Grateful Dead, the (band) 39, 104
Greenwich Village 157, 175
Grim Game, The (film) 264, 271
Grogan, Steve "Clem" 139, 257
Grubman, Allen 280
GTOs, the (band) 69, 74, 168
Guevara, Che 97
Guiteau, Charles Julius 269
Habe, Hans 30
Habe, Marina Elizabeth 30–40, 290
Hackman, Gene 185
Hagman, Larry 208
Haight-Ashbury 10, 15
Haldane of the Secret Service (film) 265, 272
Hall, Tommy 46
Ham, Pete 40
Hanna-Barbera 42, 255
Hannity, Sean 72
Hardeen, Theodore 276
Hardin, Tim 118
Harlow, Jean 27
Harris, Emmylou 183, 187, 196
Harrison, George 39, 74
Hartmann, John 114
Hartman, Phil 71, 114, 115, 247
Hastings, Doug 164
Havel, Vaclav 225
Hawks, Howard 56
Hayden, Tom 25
Hayward, Brook 91
Head (film) 86
Hearst, William Randolph 210
Heath, Charles R. "Chuck" 50
Heinlein, Robert 58, 59, 196
Hell's Angels 106, 179, 180, 233
Hendricks, Jim 210
Hendrix, Jimi 31, 32, 37–39, 88, 110, 114, 163, 165, 169, 238, 245, 255
Hendry, Whitey 27
Henley, Don 127
Herken, Gregg 100
Herrera, Michael 295
Herrmann, R.G. 266
Hershey, Andrew 171
Hershey, Fanny 171
Hershey, Henry 171
Hershey, Milton Snavely 171
Higham, Charles 112
Hillman, Chris 64, 133–135, 142, 144, 146, 167, 178, 195, 254
Hinman, Gary 37, 89, 139, 223, 240
Hinsche, Anne 253
Hinton, Christine 30
Hippies (film) 24
Hirschorn, Naomi 133
Hite, Bob "The Bear" 31
Hitler, Adolf 79
Hodel, George 203, 204, 287
Hodel, Steve 287, 288, 299
Hodel, Tamar 213, 287
Hoffman, Abbie 24
Hollywood Palace (tv show) 153
Holmes, John 67
Holzman, Jac 241, 242
Honeys, the (band) 253
Hoover, J. Edgar 3, 100
Hopper, Dennis 4, 57, 85, 86, 88, 91, 92, 99, 110, 183, 195, 196, 208
Hopper, Hedda 56
Hoskyns, Barney 57, 107, 118, 121, 135, 141, 144, 148, 160, 208
Houdini, Bess 275
Houdini, Harry 51–54, 81, 263–276

Houdin, Robert 264
Hover, Ellen Jane 289, 290, 293, 299
Hover, Herman 289
Howlett, Philip 101
Hoyt, Monique 291
Hubbard, L. Ron 58, 196
Hubley, Season 197
Human League (band) 278
Hunter, Meredith 180
Huston, John 203, 204
Hutton, Barbara 170, 171
Hutton, Danny 87, 118, 255
Hutton, Franklyn Laws 170
Hutton, Marjory Post 170
Huxley, Aldous 132, 222, 233
Huxley, Animal 233
Illegal Records 280
Imus, Don 72
International Association of Police Chiefs 265
International Records Syndicate, Inc. (aka IRC Records) 280
International Submarine Band, the (band) 34, 86, 165, 169, 177
IRS Records Presents The Cutting Edge (tv show) 281
Jackson, Luther 142
Jagger, Bianca 212
Jagger, Mick 97, 107, 108, 181, 212
Jakobson, Gregg 140, 257, 259
James, Billy 160
James, Rick 131, 148
Jardine, Al 261
Jeffery, Michael 32
Jeremy, Ron 214
Jesus and Mary Chain, the (band) 278
Jet Propulsion Laboratory 103
Jet Set, the (band) 144, 191
Jett, Joan 69, 277
Joan Jett & the Blackhearts (band) 277
Joe Pyne Show, the (tv show) 72
Johnson, Don 211
Johnson, Sonja 289
Johnston, Bruce 69, 137
Jones, Brian 39, 106, 134, 194
Jones, Paul 163
Jones, Rev. Jim 224
Joplin, Janis 37, 39, 46, 169, 181, 255, 286
Jorden, Al 136
Joshua Tree Inn 34, 184
Joshua Tree National Park 184
Journeymen, the (band; *see also* New Journeymen, the) 202
Joy Division (band) 277
Kaiser, Sid 183
Kaleidoscope Club 71
Kalush, William 263–267, 275, 276
Kastin, Lissa 289
Katrina and the Waves (band) 277
Kaufman, Phil 34, 105, 146, 178, 223
Kaye, Danny 43
Kaye, Eloise 197
Kaye, Tommy 197
Kay, Jerry 88
Kay, John (*see also* Steppenwolf) 232, 239
Kay, Jutta Maue 231
Kaylan, Howard 42
Kay, Shawn Mandy 232
Keatman, Martin 266
Kennedy, John F. 222
Kennedy, Jr., Bobby 212
Kerry, Norman 52, 53
Khalilzad, Zalmay 100
King, Carole 41, 87, 108
King Edward II 170
King Edward VIII 222
King Henry VIII 90
King, Phil 38
Kirkman, Terry 116
Knechtel, Larry 135
Koblun, Ken 161
Korthoff, Steve 259
Krauledat, Elsbeth 228, 229
Krauledat, Fritz 227, 228
Kraus, Louis 265
Kreiger, Robby 131
Krenwinkle, Patricia 139
Krieger, Robby 283
Kubernik, Harvey 155
Kurtz, Gary 212
Lachman, Gary Valentine 79, 80, 286
Lacy, George 202
Ladd, Alan 33
L.A. Free Press, the (publication) 81, 153
LAGs, the (band; *see also* Love) 238
Lamb, Charlotte 290, 297, 299
Landy, Eugene 168, 259, 261
Lansbury, Angela 247
Lansky, Meyer 92
LaPlante, Laura 254
Launius, Ronald 4, 115
LaVey, Anton 86, 176, 226
Lawford, Peter 3, 208
Leadon, Bernie 195, 199
Leary, Timothy 74, 102, 105
Ledbetter, Melinda 261
Led Zeppelin (band) 152, 286
Lee, Arthur (*see also* Love) 13, 63, 79, 86, 236, 240, 248
Lee, Clinton “CL” 237, 238
Legon, Gary 196
Lennon, John 35, 40, 118, 258
Leon, Louis 266
Les Baxter’s Balladeers (band) 141
Levy, Morris 157
Liddy, G. Gordon 105
Life (publication) 72, 75, 133, 174
Lightfoot, Gordon 230
Limbaugh, Rush 72
Lincoln, Abraham 265
Lind, David 115
Lindsay, Mark 137
Linkletter, Art 28
Linkletter, Diane 28, 29, 30
Little Feat (band) 117
Little Richard 116, 228, 237
Litvinoff, David 108, 109
Log Cabin 13–15, 31–33, 51, 54, 74, 77, 114, 115, 117, 137, 139, 220, 224, 283
London Fog (club) 70
Lone Justice (band) 247
Lookout Mountain Laboratory 1, 55, 56, 59, 60, 95
Lords of the New Church (band) 277
Love, American Style (tv show) 210
Love (band) 4, 57, 86, 87, 101, 136–248
Love, Bessie 52, 53
Lovecraft, H.P. 275
Love, Emily 251
Love, Mike 237, 253, 256, 260, 261
Love, Milton 251
Love, Shawn 253

INDEX

Love, Stan 261
Lovin' Spoonful, the (band) 70
Lucas, George 180, 212
Luce, Claire Booth 90
Luchese, Goetano 92
Luciano, Lucky 92
Lucifer Rising (film) 139
Lugosi, Bela 242
Lumumba, Patrice 14, 219
MacLean, Bryan 87, 230, 239–241, 245–247
MacLean, Mary Ann 79
MacLeish, Archibald 90
MacLeish, Jean 90
Magazine (band) 277
Magick Powerhouse of Oz (band) 239
Maharishi Mahesh Yogi 256
Mamas and the Papas, the (band) 13, 23, 26, 29, 70, 117, 131, 145, 195, 206–208, 210, 212, 213, 236
Manassas (band) 167
Manfred Mann (band) 163
Man From Beyond, The (film) 265, 272
Mank, Gregory 196
Mann, Charles Spencer 50
Mannix (tv show) 153
Man Ray 203, 204
Mansfield, Jayne 86, 133
Mansfield, Ken 196
Manson, Charles 4, 34, 58, 77, 78, 80, 87, 89, 100, 105, 120, 121, 123, 135, 137–139, 146, 165, 179, 185, 208, 209, 211, 223, 226, 240, 257, 261
Manson, Marilyn 226
Manzarek, Ray 64, 129, 131, 242, 283
Marler, Lady Beatrice Isabel 275
Marler, Sir Herbert Meredith 275
Marlowe, Christopher 266
Marquis de Sade 203
Marr, Sally 145
Martin, Dewey 37, 151, 160, 163, 168, 194
Martin, Michael 184
Marvin, Lee 33
Marx, Groucho 72
Maxwell, Jenny 57
Mayer, Louis B. 27
Mayer, Rabbi 264
McCartney, Paul 39, 40
McCrohan, Dennis (*see also* Bonfire, Mars) 231
McDonald, Jeanette 206
McElroy, Dale 184
McGovern, George 25
McGowan, Rose 226
McGuinn, Roger 88, 113, 141, 146, 191–194, 230, 239, 254, 255
McGuire, Barry 162, 163, 206, 285
McJohn, Goldy 131, 158, 232, 234
McKee, Maria 247
McKenzie, Scott 202, 205, 212
McKernan, Ronald “Pigpen” 39
McKinley, William 266
McLaughlin, John 55
McLean, Brian 193
McLean, Don 181
McQueen, Steve 133
McVie, Christine 259
Meeks, Roland 202
Meisner, Randy 112, 166
Melcher, Marty 136
Melcher, Terry 4, 127, 136–140, 144–146, 182, 183, 207, 209, 254, 257
Melville, William 266, 269
Mentzer, Bill 208
Messina, Jim 154, 161, 166
Messina, Terri 196
Midnight Oil (band) 277
Miles, Barry 24, 59, 63, 72, 74, 76, 80, 216, 223
Miles, Buddy 164
Miles Copeland's England (tv show) 281
Miller, “Humble” Harve 143
Miller, Joy 115
Miller, Judith 289, 290
Millette, Dorothy 27
Mineo, Sal 28, 30, 57, 113
Mitchell, Joni 31, 166, 175
Mitchum, Robert 58
Mix, Tom 52, 53, 77
Modern Folk Quartet, the (band) 117
Mohawk, Frazier 150
Monarch, Michael 232
Monkees, the 29, 86, 87, 153, 163, 165, 239, 249
Monroe, Marilyn 56
Monterey Pop Festival 15, 113, 117, 145, 164, 182, 207, 244, 255
Moon, Keith 35, 40, 258
Moorehouse, Dean 138, 140
Moorehouse, Ruth Ann 140
Moore, Robert (*see* DeGrimston, Robert) 79
Moreve, Rushton 232
Morrison, Admiral George Stephen 6, 11, 32, 59
Morrison, Jim 2, 6, 13, 15, 26, 32, 37, 39, 60, 63, 128, 129, 132, 134, 169, 286, 299
Mosley, Malvise “Mal” 237
Mossadegh, Mohammed 278
Moss, Jerry 280
Mothers of Invention, the (band) 13, 57, 68, 70, 117, 132, 161, 219, 234
MTV 281
Mugwumps, the (band) 131, 205
Muldaur, Geoff 175
Muldaur, Maria 175
Mumy, Billy 221
Murphy, Jessie 123
Mussolini, Benito 91
Mynah Birds, the (band) 131, 148, 158, 230, 231
Mysteries of Myra (film) 271
Nash, Eddie 4, 133
Nash, Graham 31, 33, 35, 43, 110, 127, 166, 258
Nasser, Gamal Abdel 279
Navarro, Ramon 52, 53
Negron, Chuck 26, 115, 255
Nelson, Ricky 108, 110, 111, 113
Nesmith, Mike 43
Neuwirth, Bob 175
New Balladeer (club) 229, 239
New Bristol Records 280
New Christy Minstrels (band) 117, 141, 191
New Journeymen, the (band) 205
Newman, Paul 33
Newman, Randy 108, 256
Nicholson, Jack 3, 63, 85, 86, 88, 93, 94, 108, 183, 207
Nicks, Stevie 259
Nico 118
Nietzsche. Friedrich 1

Nilsson, Harry 35, 40, 87, 118, 163, 256, 258
Nitzsche, Jack 33, 108
Novarro, Ramon 28, 30
Numan, Gary 277
Oakley, Berry 37
Ochs, Dr. Jacob 44
Ochs, Michael 44
Ochs, Phil 43–45, 110, 119
Oingo Boingo (band) 277
O'Neal, Ryan 4, 208
Oracle, the (publication) 74
Orbison, Roy 151
O'Reilly, Bill 72
Osbourne, Sharon 69
Ostin, Mo 183
Page, Jimmy 107
Palin, Sarah 50
Palmer, Bruce 131, 148–150, 158, 160, 164, 167, 168, 231
Pamplin, Rocky 259, 260
Pandora's Box (club) 162, 202, 252, 253
Papa John (*see* Phillips, John "Papa John")
Parentau, Jill 291, 297, 299
Parent, Stephen 26
Parker, Col. Tom 114
Parker, Dorothy 229
Parks, Benjamin Riley 254
Parks, Van Dyke 20, 26, 110, 194, 254, 257
Parsons, Bob 186
Parsons, Gram 32–34, 86, 88, 111, 127, 141, 146, 169–187, 209, 210
Parsons, Robert Ellis 34, 173
Passaro, Alan David 181
Patterson, Ron 101
Paul, Barbara (aka Eva Paul; *see* Paulekiute, Jievute)
Paulekas, Bp 77
Paulekas, Godo 3, 72, 73–84, 97, 101, 209
Paulekas, Gruvi Nipples 77
Paulekas, Phreekus Mageekus 77
Paulekas, Sky 77
Paulekas, Szou 63
Paulekas, Vito 3, 62–75, 77, 78, 80–82, 84, 97, 100, 137, 138, 145, 193, 223, 230, 239
Paulekiute, Jievute 65, 66
Paul Revere and the Raiders (band) 137
Peek, Dan 19
Penn, Arthur 185
Perkins, Carl 151
Perle, Richard 100
Pfisterer, Alban "Snoopy" 241, 245, 247
Phillips, Andrew 16
Phillips, Bijou Lilly 214
Phillips, Captain Claude Andrew 16, 18
Phillips, Claude 201
Phillips, Edna 201
Phillips, Gilliam Chynna 210, 213
Phillips, Graham 266
Phillips, John Andrew 201
Phillips, John "Papa John" 2, 4, 10, 13, 15, 16, 26, 86, 88, 93, 97, 109, 146, 154, 174, 182, 194, 200–215, 232
Phillips, Mackenzie 212, 214
Phillips, Michelle 4, 86, 91, 108, 194, 195, 202, 203, 206–208, 211, 287
Phillips, Rosie 201
Phillips, Tamerlane 210
Pittman, Nancy 247
Plimsouls, the (band) 278
Plunkett, Hugh 126
Poco (band) 37, 114, 122, 166, 178
Polanski, Roman 3, 84, 86, 107, 118, 198, 208, 288, 299
Police, the (band) 277, 283
Porter, Agnes 236
Porter, Ed 236
Porter, Johnson 246
Post, C.W. 170
Poston, Brooks 139
Presley, Elvis 57, 110, 111, 228
Preston, Billy 237
Princess Margaret 97, 212
Process Church of the Final Judgement 79, 80, 127, 179, 180, 209, 239
Profumo Affair 79
Psychedelic Furs, the (band) 277
Public Image Ltd. (band) 277
Pyne, Joe 72
Radin, Roy 208
Rafelson, Bob 86
Ragland, Edna "Rassy" 158
Rahner, Wilhelmina Beatrice 264
Ramirez, Bobby 38
Ramones, the (band) 278
Ramos, Larry 117
Ramrodder (film) 139
Rappaport, Neil 244
Reade, Col. George 170
Reagan, Ronald 56, 97, 99
Red Skelton Show, the (tv show) 210
Redwood (band) 255, 257
Reed, Lou 277
Reid, Wally 52
REM (band) 48, 277
Reprise Records 183
Reza Pahlavi, Mohammad 279
Rhino Records 221
Rhodes, Bernie 277
Richards, Keith 106, 178, 184
Richardson, Barbara 115
Rich, Charlie 151
Ridgeway, Stan 278
Rieley, Jack 257
Rivera, Geraldo 268
Rivingtons, the (band) 69
Robinson, Billy 267
Robinson, Kathleen 289
Robinson, Pat 199
Robinson, Sugar Ray 79, 238
Robison, Craig 298
Rockefeller, "Bobo" (*see also* Paulekiute, Jievute) 65, 66
Rockefeller, Jr., John D. 65, 171, 289
Rockefeller, Winthrop 65, 66
Roecker, Shelley 31
Roeder, Ervin "Tip" 57
Roeg, Nicholas 211
Rogers, Will 120, 257
Rolling Stone (publication) 153, 283
Rolling Stones, the (band) 106, 107, 109, 116, 151, 152, 178, 180, 194, 210, 212
Ronstadt, Linda 69, 97, 112, 127, 219
Rooney, Mickey 67
Roosevelt, Eleanor 89
Roosevelt, Theodore 266
Rosenstein, Albert J. 294
Ross, Colin 288
Ross, Nancy 176, 177
Rostaing, Bjarne 101, 102
Rothchild, Paul 102, 131, 140,

160, 176, 192, 242, 243
Rothschild, Dorothy (*see also* Parker, Dorothy) 229
Rothschild, Louise Sarah 91
Rovell, Diane 253
Rovell, Marilyn 253
Roxy, the (club) 70
Rumsfeld, Donald 100
Runaways, the (band) 69
Rush, Tom 175
Russell, Kurt 197
Russell, Leon 135
S., Tali (*see also* Shapiro, Tali) 285
Saint, Edward (aka Charles David Myers) 268
Saltonstall, Leverett 94
Samsoe, Robin 291, 292, 294–299
Sanders, Ed 58, 77, 79, 80, 138, 140, 196
Sands, Stella 284, 286, 287, 294
Savage, Michael 72
Scallacci, Joe 67
Schmidt, Kim 168
Schwab's Drugstore 68
Schwartz, Dr. Steve 259
Schwartz, Loren 254
Scottsville Squirrel Barkers (band) 142, 195
Sears, Barbara Paul (aka Eva Paul Sears; *see* Paulekiute, Jievute)
Sebring, Jay 26–28, 30, 92, 97, 208, 254
Seeger, Pete 140, 175
Seely, William Tipton 188
Sellers, Peter 4, 208
Sex Pistols (band) 277
Seymour, Francis Ford 90
Seymour, Jane 90
Shakespeare, William 266
Shankar, Ravi 74
Shapiro, Tali 286, 287, 290
Share, Catherine "Gypsy" 139
Share, Gypsy 140
Shebang! (tv show) 153
Sheen, Charlie 213
Sherman, Kathryn "Kay" 218, 219
Short, Elizabeth (aka the Black Dahlia) 200, 201, 204, 287
Shulgin, Alexander 104
Siddons, Bill 146
Siegel, Bugsy 70
Sill, Judee 41, 43, 110
Sill, Milford "Bud" 41
Simple Minds (band) 277
Simpson, Nicole Brown 289
Simpson, O.J. 116
Simpson, Wallace 222
Sinatra, Frank 92
Sinatra, Nancy 85, 92
Sinclair, Upton 125
Siouxsie & the Banshees (band) 277
Sloan, P.F. 162
Sloatman, Gail 97, 132
Slocum, Joshua 196
Slocum, Tom 196
Sloman, Larry 263–267, 275, 276
Smith, Patti 277
Smiths, the (band) 277
Smothers Brothers Show, the (tv show) 153
Sniffin' Glue (publication) 280
Snively, Avis 172
Snively, John Andrew "Papa John" 172
Social Distortion (band) 277
Soft Cell (band) 278
Sommerhauser, Rosemary 188
Son of Sam 80
Souther, J.D. 127
Spahn Ranch 115, 140
Sparrow, the (band) 230
Specials, the (band) 277
Spector, Phil 33, 69, 137, 152, 254
Spielberg, Steven 181
Spirit Slate Writing and Kindred Phenomena (publication) 267
Springer, Jerry 72
Springsteen, Bruce 283
Squeeze (band) 277
Standells, the (band) 117
Stanley III, Augustus Owsley 102–104, 164, 182
Starr, Ringo 39, 258
Steel Pulse (band) 277
Steiner, Cecelia 263
Step Forward Records 280
Steppenwolf (band) 88, 131, 227–235
Steve Allen Show, the (tv show) 219
Stevens, Inger 28–30
Stevenson, Adlai 89
Stewart, Al 280
Stewart, Jimmy 56
Stewart, Rod 178
Stills, Stephen 2, 13, 16, 17, 23, 33, 87, 148–150, 156–158, 162–164, 166–168, 239, 254
Stills, William 156, 158
Sting 277, 283
Stinson, Mina (*see also* Crandon, Margery) 272
St. Nicholas, Nick 158, 231–235
Stockwell, Dean 196
Storm, Rory 38
Straight Records 220, 222
Stranglers, the (band) 278
Stuart, Michael 242, 245
Suburban Lawns (band) 278
Sullavan, Margaret 91
Summer of Love 15, 145, 165, 175, 239, 244
Summers, Andy 283
Sumner, Gordon Thomas Matthew (*see also* Sting) 283
Sunset Strip 13, 26, 35, 40, 57, 63, 70, 71, 74, 79, 85, 89, 97, 113, 114, 118, 132, 145, 147, 149–151, 162, 163, 167, 178, 191, 202, 236, 241, 249, 258, 283, 285, 286, 289
Sutherland, Stacy 46
Tate, Lt. Col. Paul 92
Tate, Sharon 3, 26, 30, 85, 92, 194, 208, 224
Taylor, Chester 237
Taylor, Dallas 167
Taylor, Derek 252
Taylor, George 270
Taylor, James 166
Taylor, Skip 236
Taylor, Zachary 95
Teen Screen (publication) 153
Teenset (publication) 153
Television (band) 277
Tenet, George 214
Terror Island (film) 264, 271
Terry, Maury 127, 138, 208, 209
Thain, Gary 38
Thalberg, Irving 27
Thatcher, Margaret 281

Thomas, Frank 270
Thompson Twins (band) 277
Three Dog Night (band) 26, 87, 115, 118, 167, 233, 235, 256
Ticknor, Eddie 194
Tiger Beat (publication) 153
Timbuk 3 (band) 278
Tiny Tim 72
Tolson, Clyde 3
Tonight Show, the (tv show) 72, 210
Tork, Peter 157, 158, 160, 161, 163, 164, 249
Torrence, Dean 33
Train, John 45
Train, John Butler (*see also* Ochs, Phil) 45
Trip, the (club) 70, 220
Trip, The (film) 86, 90, 183, 243
Truman, Harry 133
Tucker, Forrest 57
Turtles, the 70, 108, 115, 161
UB40 (band) 278
Ultravox (band) 278
Unterberger, Richie 134, 163
Urgh! A Music War (film) 280
Uriah Heep (band) 38
Usher, Gary 252
Vacca, Amadeo 268
Valentine, Elmer 68, 70, 132, 133, 177, 238, 242
Vandenberg Air Force Base 201
Vanity Fair (publication) 130, 132, 133, 138
Vannatter, Phillip 289
van Rensselaer III, Stephen 18
van Rensselaer, Jan-Baptist 95
van Rensselaer, Philip 171
Varese, Edgard 218, 231
Velvet Underground, the (band) 118
Vincent, Gene 69
Volman, Mark 115, 161
von Weidenman, Baron Donald 210
Wagner, Robert 58
Waite, Genevieve 200, 210, 212
Walken, Christopher 58
Walker, Michael 7, 8, 68, 75, 79, 109
Wall of Voodoo (band) 277
Walsh, Joe 38
Walsingham, Sir Francis 266
Warhol, Andy 211
Watkins, Paul 139
Watson, Charles “Tex” 27, 78, 120, 138
Wayne, Carol 29
Wayne, John 33
Weckler, Kristina 289
Wein, Chuck 211
Weismann, Dick 202
Weiss, Ehrich (*see also* Houdini, Harry) 263
Weiss, Gottfried 275
Weiss, Leopold 276
Weiss, Nathan 275
Weisz, Erik (*see also* Houdini, Harry) 263
Weisz, Rabbi Mayer Samuel 263
Weld, William 94
Welles, Orson 204
Wells, Cory 255
West Point Military Academy 165, 285
West Ruislip Air Force Base 19
Where the Action Is (tv show) 153
Whisky-a-Go-Go (club) 38, 70, 132, 151, 177, 194, 220, 231
White, Clarence 33, 183, 194, 195, 217
White, Daisy 276
Whitehead, Joscelyn Gordon 275
Whitten, Danny 33
Who, the (band) 35
Wilde, Nurit 159
Wilde, Oscar 1
Wilkerson, Billy 70
Wilkie, John 265, 273, 275
Williams, Lawrence Eugene “Larry” 116
Williams, Paul 102, 123, 163, 256
Will Rogers State Park 122
Wilson, Brian 4, 118, 137, 140, 142, 165, 167, 168, 194, 214, 230, 249, 250, 252–254, 256, 258, 259, 262
Wilson, Carl 253, 261
Wilson, Carnie 214
Wilson, Dennis 120, 121, 138–140, 165, 250, 256, 257, 259, 260
Wilson, Devon 32, 45
Wilson, Murry 250, 251, 258
Wilson, Wendy 214
Wilson, Woodrow 271
Winehouse, Amy 39
Winter, Edgar 38
Winters, Jonathan 67
Winwood, Steve 245
Wishbone Ash (band) 280
Wixted, Georgia 290, 297–299
Wohlstetter, Albert 99
Wolfowitz, Paul 100
Wood, Natalie 57, 58
Woolworth, Frank 170
Worthington, Herbie 248
Wrecking Crew, the 29, 137, 147, 244, 254, 255
XTC (band) 278
Yankovic, Weird Al 221
Yester, Jerry 117
York, John 199
You Bet Your Life (tv show) 72
Younger, Evelle 82
Young, Gig 168
Young, Neil 4, 13, 21, 33, 108, 131, 148–151, 154, 158, 160, 161, 163, 164, 168, 239
Young, Paul 100
Young, Scott 158
Zappa, Ahmet Emuukha Rodan 164, 220
Zappa, Bobby 218
Zappa, Diva Thin Muffin Pigeen Zappa 220
Zappa, Dweezil 220, 232
Zappa, Frank 2, 10, 13, 14, 29, 32, 34, 35, 42, 59, 60, 63, 68, 69, 71, 72, 74, 77, 80, 81, 86, 97, 104, 117, 118, 132, 133, 139, 161, 164, 168, 169, 216–226, 233, 258
Zappa, Gail 15, 71, 80
Zappa, Moon Unit 33, 216, 232
Zappa, Rose Marie 216, 217, 218
Zarubica, Pamela (*see also* Creamcheese, Suzy) 74, 219
Zevon, Warren 20
Zevon, William “Stumpy” 20
Zwerin, Charlotte 180
Zwyer, John 29
ZZ Top (band) 48

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

McGowan was born and raised in Torrance, California, just twenty miles south of Laurel Canyon. He graduated from UCLA with a degree in psychology and has, since 1990, run a small business in the greater Los Angeles area. Currently single, he is the proud father of three daughters. He is also a lifelong music fan who still frequently keeps his radio tuned to classic rock stations. McGowan's previous books include *Programmed to Kill: The Politics of Serial Murder*, and *Understanding the F-Word: American Fascism and the Politics of Illusion*. Still at home in LA, he can be reached at < davemcgowan@roadrunner.com >.

Visit the Weird Scenes Facebook page at
< www.facebook.com/WeirdScenesInsideTheCanyon >.

Vatican Ratline

The Vatican, the Nazis, and the New World Order

By Mauri

Vatican Ratline

The Vatican, the Nazis and the New World Order

By Mauri

http://www.reflectionsinthenight.com

Vatican Ratline

The Vatican, the Nazis and the New World Order

All Rights Reserved Copyright © 2007 by Mauri

No part of this book may be reproduced or translated in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the author.

Published by BookSurge

ISBN: 1-4196-5356-3

Dedicated To The End Of Empire
And Slavery For All Times

ALSO BY MAURI

Reflections in the Night

CONTENTS

1 The Hitler Myth - 7

2 Cedar City - 10

3 Cult of Rome - 19

4 Please or You Die - 24

5 The Rats - Nazi Faces - 34

6 A Mansion in Pasadena - 45

7 Hail Mary - 57

8 Mrs. Hildebrand and the Greys - 66

9 The Lion and The Lamb - 74

10 Pyramid Scheme - 82

11 Wicca - 92

12 Ritual Rape of the Child - 96

13 International Banking - 102

14 The Game of Three Children - 114

15 Mind Control Dropout - 126

16 War on Truth - 139

1
The Hitler Myth

The story of the Vatican ratlines is in part a personal story. As a small child I was on the receiving end of this Nazi invasion into the Americas. What I remember is not the same as what is discussed in the media, read in the history books or taught in school. What I remember came from the Church and the Nazis themselves, as it went down. The ratline, the Catholic Church's dirty little secret, is not so secret. The Vatican's defense is that they were only helping the refugees after the war. It was purely a humanitarian motive, and done by only a few sympathetic priests and bishops, not the Vatican itself. To question their motives and methods is to be not Christ-like and to be unforgiving. The surviving Nazis were shipped where they could live out their lives in peace, mostly to South America. For the next half-century stories of the Nazis, safely tucked on private estates, drinking wine and reminiscing, circulated through the rumor mills. A few even included Hitler. My experience tells me this is a myth.

The Nazi was a well-oiled, obedient, fighting machine, often without personal feelings including a conscience. They had been carefully created, or programmed and were a valuable asset. Asset to whom? The ratlines tell the answer. At the end of the war a mad rush to round up money and other valuables occurred. The Vatican was at the head of that effort. Like gold and silver, the Nazi covert army would be difficult to replace. With the war over, the Nazi movement spread, like a cancer you think is dead only to learn later it had metastasized to the rest of the world. I can assure the reader from personal experience the mind-controlled soldier that was the Nazi had no personal life. To continue his existence he must perform. In describing his personality, the word zombie comes to mind. He had truly lost his soul. The Catholic Church had no intension of letting this human resource sit in the Amazon jungle and drink wine; not with a world not yet conquered.

But why pick on the poor Vatican as the main puppet-master on the road to world domination? The reason is simple, the Roman Catholic Church, which has a history of similar abuse, is the oldest and most powerful of all the competing candidates as head honcho. History is far more than the actions of a few prominent individuals, as the history books would have one believe. To know and understand the past takes more than famous names and dates, which just create more trees in which the forest can hide. History is full of intent. It is the intent that needs scrutiny as that intent comes to fruition. Many actors could play the characters on the stage. It is the intent of history that creates the part, not the part that creates history. The Roman Catholic Church fits this analysis best of all the competition due to the fact that it is an institution representing ideas and not persons. The Global elite, the bankers, the Zionist Jews, the Mafia, the Illuminati, the Satanists and on and on are all smaller groups of a bigger whole and therefore none are center stage. The main player is not a person, but ideas that are thousands of years old. Those ideas have been nurtured in the halls of the Roman Catholic Church since its inception, almost two thousand years ago. Those ideas are a question of good and evil, which remain unanswered even to this day.

One example of the true history hiding behind a face is the case of Hitler. History carefully records the Hitler mystique, which the world swallows whole, and because Hitler is dead everyone feels safe again. After all, World War II and the genocide was all Hitler's idea. He must have been the most brilliant man in history to have pulled-off so much devastation and death, all alone. It always struck me as odd how the public school system regarded the most deranged among us as brilliant. But for all the propaganda I was fed, I failed to learn what was taught as it did not fit with what I had heard and seen. I knew the Nazis better than most, as they owned me. No one I saw or heard worshiped Hitler. He had lost the war and was gone. His face, or the swastika symbol, like the skull and cross-bones of the pirates, was good to put the fear of torture and death into others, but that was it. The real Nazi survivors of the war were now into future conquests, not past failures. The Nazi ideals were alive and well, it was only Hitler that was dead. I viewed Hitler as a controlled dupe, like all of the rest of the Nazis, with the real culprit behind the curtain pulling the strings. Removing that curtain to take a peak at what might be going on behind the scenes is the goal of this book.

2

Cedar City

In order to understand what might be the Vatican's intent, I will begin with a little hindsight by telling my story. I was born April 30th, 1941, in Cedar City, Utah. My birth was forced with pitocin, which caused my mother to lose most of her hearing and me to be born on the occult holiday of Walpurgisnacht. According to the Church of Satan, Walpurgisnacht is one of their three main holidays, the other two being one's birthday and Halloween.[1] The German doctor in attendance spoke with a thick German accent and practiced Satanism. The location of my birth was a hub, near a railroad connecting it to far away places, near the deserts and wilderness often used by the military, and near the heart of the Mormon Church. This at first glance seems far removed from the Vatican. But it was ideal, if the intent was that Satanism be spread into the Protestant Churches, and Nazi influence into the Military. Further it was easy to get to, first by train, later by plane.

Mormon history gives clues why its Church was so successfully infected by satanic cults, not the least of which is its practice of secret rituals and the ties of its founder Joseph Smith to Freemasonry.[2] Connections to the "Society of Jesus" can also be found chipped in stone. "This is the Place" monument in Utah records the close relationship between Brigham Young and Father Pierre - Jean de Smet, an important Jesuit priest.[3] And we find some proof to the speculation, as related to the Mormon Missionary, True Ott, by a Jesuit Priest, that the Jesuit secret council has a secret alliance with the Mormons, and it is similar to their secret alliance with the Zionist Jews.[4]

My mother said the German Doctor was a German Jew, and very afraid because of the war. It may have been a cover, considering at the time the Germans were an enemy. But the possibility remains that he was a Masonic Zionist Jew working with the Nazis. The Utah Satanists also hung out with witches.

Freemasonry, Jesuits, Mormons, Masonic Zionist Jews, Satanists, Nazis, witches, and the plot thickens. My parents, who due to the Great Depression were dirt poor, though well educated, had made a pact with the devil. They had sold me to an occult group, and within a year they went from living in a dirty motel without a refrigerator or radio, with their two older kids, to owning a house of their own.

My father had always bragged to me when I was a child, how he had never made a mortgage payment. Someone in the Great Depression had money to buy souls. A well-connected and wealthy group now owned me. Unfortunately, their plans for my future included ritual torture and sacrifice.

A dent was put into the soft bones of my forehead, marking me as a slave to their system. And when my first tooth came in, my mother dutifully knocked it out injuring the bud of the permanent tooth, which later erupted with a brown stain. One didn't need to look any farther than my face to see my witch heritage. And that is what my tormentors called themselves, witches.

The witches did all kinds of magick involving my torture. Much of it occurred in a barn and used barnyard animals. We practiced bestiality in the barn. These memories are held mostly as smells and feelings. Many rituals used animal feces along with animal blood and body parts. Much of the content of their rituals was of a religious nature. In one memory, I'm tied to a wheel they are spinning around while they hit at my body with sharp sticks. I think this ceremony had a pagan significance and was also intended to result in spin programming. In a Christmas memory I'm laying in a manger of hay as "Baby Jesus," they slaughter a cow and threw its blood and sex organs on me. In another ritual, I'm in the barn with bales of hay and the witches brought in a very large cross with a dead baby nailed to it. Many ceremonies reflected an angry violence toward organized religion and were satanic in content. These witches practiced Satanism.

Sex was also a favorite theme. From a very young age I was taught I must do oral sex. I remember with great fear and feelings of very low self-esteem. To insure my compliance, I was often treated like an animal, fed food on the floor and kept in a state of constant hunger. Defiance might mean death.

Witches like to go to the wilderness in the dark of night under the full moon. The Utah witches were no exception. I remember walking barefooted through swamps, the mud oozing between my toes, the wet at my ankles. I remember the blazing bon fires, the full moons. Witches like to dance naked (skyclad) under the moon, or so it is rumored. I certainly remember the naked part, as I was often so cold I was numbed to the feelings. Most of the bonfire activities I remember were somber and fear producing, the ritual carefully orchestrated down to the last step.

The quaking aspen is a sacred tree to these satanic worshipers. The quivering leaves of the aspen are said to be arrogance at the Crucifixion. A German version claims the aspen to have been the wood of the cross that Christ was crucified on and that it did not recognize Jesus' divinity. Aspens grow in large colonies connected by an underground root system. "Pando" in Utah is the largest such colony and is thought to be 80,000 years old.[5] To these satanic witches Pando is a sacred area.

I remember another bonfire, as I stood naked with a group of children with chains connecting us around our necks like animals. It was very frightening and I felt my bowls had let go. The witches were supposedly murdering a baby, but I think it was a small pig. They next brought out a blood covered baby or small child, cut off its hand and threw it in the fire. I think the child was a corpse because the hand didn't bleed when they cut it off from the arm and it was a funny bluish color.

In my head I often hear the chanting, "Hecabeing, Hecabeing." Hecate was a goddess of the ancient world sometimes associated with sorcery. In modern cults, which take at random much from the ancients, she is often seen as the goddess of witchcraft. As I remember I was the Hecabeing the satanic witches conjured up in a puff of smoke to impress a group of children with their magical powers. Often the magician's assistant, there was little reason to brainwash me as my days were numbered.

My death was planned and I knew it, and I was to die over and over again. For Thanksgiving, in front of a group of small children, they put me naked in what felt like a big roasting pan. Their intention was to roast me alive. In the memory I was so scared my bowls let go. I'm convinced that whatever they served the children for dinner they said it was I. My next death was at the hands of my brother. He shot me in the head with a gun. When it was my sister's turn to kill me she was blindfolded then given a knife and asked to cut out my heart. She cut up a small pig instead. Even my cousins got in on the act. In the loft area of the barn, a rope was put over my head, and an older cousin was told to push me so that I am hung. Her younger sister stood beside her. My cousin pushes; I swing and leave my body once again, appearing quite dead. Now that half the town thinks they have murdered me and I am gone, the real murder attempt is to come next.

The real attempt on my life came to me wrapped in sheer unadulterated terror. It was of my mother drowning me and came to me as a flashback. I was sitting in a bathtub full of water to the top of my chest. I felt a peaceful quiet as I watched the floating toys in the tub hit the sides then start back toward my small body. Without warning, two large hands were on both of my shoulders. With sudden force, those hands shoved me under the water and held me down. I knew the hands. They belonged to my mother. My near death experience began by my leaving my body and watching what happened next from above in the safety of the white light. I was taken outside and many other people were there, as it was a big celebration. A big yellow pumpkin was at the side of the house by the water faucet and there was a large bucket full of water with apples floating on top; it was undoubtedly Halloween. Next I remember myself at the hospital, my body lying flat, stiff and heavy as though it weighed a million pounds. I couldn't move my limbs. Nothing about my body worked any longer. Four very large people surrounded me. I could hear their masculine and feminine voices converse as they hit me. They hit and I bounced like a rubber doll. They began acting like what they were doing was futile. I heard them repeatedly refer to me as dead.

I escaped to the other side, where it was agreed that I would come back. So I did. I later awoke in the hospital's small morgue. I opened my eyes, and I felt my naked body lying flat on a hard cold object without sides. I sat up pushing back the white sheet covering my head and then looked around the small room in which I lay. The good people at the hospital next returned me to them. And for the rest of my life, whenever I looked at my mother I painted her in my mind as the ugliest woman on Earth.

At about nine months of age a professional photograph was taken of me wearing a hand-done 1930s style white batiste christening gown, similar to or the same as those made in Madeira, Portugal, by a commercial photographer. I suspect the photo was so that the witches would have a permanent reminder of their child sacrifice.

Drowning victims were occasionally taken for dead, when in fact they weren't. I had experienced something called the mammalian diving reflex.[6] Apparently, until you warmed up, you appeared quite dead even to trained medical personnel. And you could be submerged as long as 38 minutes with little or no brain damage if the reflex was stimulated, which under perfect conditions occasionally happened.

One version of the Black Mass was similar to a Catholic Mass, but instead of wine, water from a well, in which an unbaptized baby had drowned, was used. Undoubtedly their intention, like good little depression era witches, was to save every drop of the water in which I had drowned. Over and over, they could put up my picture, drink a little Unholy water, and wallow in how evil they all had been.

When the cult got wind of the fact that I survived, after all the trouble and expense they had gone to, my family was in big trouble. Within six months that nice Nazi doctor relocated us two states away in sunny California.

The cult to which I had been sold was like an octopus whose tentacles reached out everywhere. It did rituals in the wilderness next to bonfires under a full moon by groups of worshipers who called themselves Mormons by day and witches by night. They were also into Satanism with their many anti-Church ceremonies. Goddesses from the ancient world crept into their rituals such as Hecate and the Hecabeing. My birth on the German occult holiday of Walpurgisnacht linked them to the Nazis. And that nice German Jew Doctor who moved us all to California showed a possible Masonic Zionist connection. To find the source linking it all one must start the search in antiquity.

[1] The Satanic Bible by Anton Szandor LaVey (Avon Books 1969), p. 96

[2] Early Mormonism and the Magic World View by D. Michael Quinn (Signature Books; Revised edition 1998)

[3] Utah History Encyclopedia; "This is the Place" monument.

[4] Free At Last by A. True Ott, PhD (selfpublished ebook 2006), p. 35

[5] Wikipedia: Aspen

[6] Wikipedia: mammalian diving reflex

3
Cult of Rome

Orgies, phallic symbols, slaves, violent pastimes and wars all were an important part of our history. They describe the cult of power that ruled over their weaker neighbors and brought us progress or Western Civilization. These cults are still with us, and for the most part history records the lists of their names. The largest surviving cult from the past had its beginnings in the end. The Roman Empire, dying in its own crapulence, morphed into a religion, interestingly stolen for the most part from its enemies, the Jews and the Christians. Even the Pagans made a contribution or two. And Rome baptized itself "The Roman Catholic Church." To assume that Rome had seen the light and had mended its ways is to be foolish as to the facts. The newly formed Church was more interested than ever in empire and since it believed God to be on its side, nothing could stand in its way. The old Rome was rule by the Lion, but when the Lion began to eat Rome, it was locked in the dungeon. The new Rome would be rule by the Lamb.

The Church of the Lamb created their own doctrines taken from many sources, but they started with the Holy Bible. The first celebration of the new Church was of the Last Supper of Christ with unleavened bread and wine. This later developed into the Catholic Mass.[1] While I can understand the emotion of the crucifixion, it is still a celebration of death. Biblical teachings are mostly about life and how to live it in the best possible manner to find happiness here on Earth; at least that is the message. Follow the Ten Commandments and a good life is yours. This new Roman Church of the Lamb makes no promise of a good life on Earth. Why, because it is not their intent that one has a good life. The Lamb is to serve. The focus of Roman Catholic Church doctrines is about getting back to heaven when one dies. The Church promises a safe return to God for obedience. Conquering societies have done the same thing throughout history. This shows the militaristic aspects of the Catholic Church. The Church couldn't very well have animal souls return to God and not human without the Church. So animals were declared not to have souls. Every new addition to Church doctrine placed greater controls over the parishioner's free will. Images, relics and the cross were worshiped instead of ideas on how to live. Purgatory was introduced and also the sale of indulgences to avoid purgatory. Prayers became memorized and counted on beads. To keep tract of all thoughts all is confessed to a priest. No one is saved without the Church, baptism and last rites. Praying to Jesus was replaced with Mary, Mother of Jesus, and the Saints, who give comfort for misery and promises of heaven for obedience. Jesus and the Bible, which focuses on how to live a good life, almost drop out of sight, except for the crucifixion, which is all about death. This conflict between Church doctrine and Bible became such a problem that the Bible was labeled a forbidden book and placed in the index of forbidden books by the Council of Toledo in 1229 AD.[2] What a fall from grace.

The Bible is the Good Book, if for no other reason than reading the Bible causes one to think. It is no accident that the biblical stories have many interpretations. Each story is good for a thousand sermons because there are so many ways to view them, even going through time. Whatever one's conclusions, the stories encourage reflection on what constitutes a moral life. The Catechism of the Catholic Church, on the other hand, removes the thought process entirely. Suddenly it is the Church that does all the thinking and even speaks for God. The stories are reduced to one simplistic interpretation, or none, as a good life becomes unimportant. Only the Church has value and obedience is traded for the promised salvation of souls.

The teaching of Jesus was a major obstacle to such ideas, as he preached in near poverty, dressed in simple clothing, and focused on personal responsibility, rarely obedience. This does not sit well with the three crowns of the Pope or the opulence in which the Church hierarchy governs. Jesus washed the feet of the Disciples as a show of humility. The Kings kissed the feet of the Pope as a show of adoration, as manifested in the practices of the Roman emperors. Jesus is rarely mentioned in Church doctrine, except perhaps when he was martyred on the cross, which of course was the fault that Jew Judas. The evil Roman governor Pontius Pilate is given a pass, because he is, well, Roman. From day one the Roman Catholic Church took the side of the Romans against the Jews. The story of Judas gives clues as to which side was writing the history. If the Christian Jews had dominated the Church, the Roman governor would have been the villain.

How closely did the Church follow biblical teachings? The Catholic version of the Ten Commandments gives clues. To preserve and glorify the Church's wealth and to control with the awe inspiring psychological use of art and architecture, the second commandment about not making graven images is tucked out of sight. But now only nine commandments are left. So the Church broke the tenth commandment into two parts, forbidding the coveting of one's neighbor's wife and separately the coveting of one's neighbor's goods. The precious Church's images are left free to be worshiped and even occasionally to shed blood or tears in a miracle. As for the rest of the Ten Commandments they too are given the old heave ho when they became a silly nuisance to Church power. A closer look at The Society of Jesus, the Jesuits, reveals they follow a code of conduct quite the opposite of the remaining nine commandments of the Bible.

Ignatius of Loyola, a former soldier, founded the Society of Jesus to serve the Pope. Its members, known as Jesuits, have been called "Soldiers of Christ" and "Foot soldiers of the Pope." In 1540 Pope Paul III confirmed the order through a Papal bull, making the members priests, and in 1543 Ignatius was chosen as the first superior-general. The Jesuits concentrated their efforts in founding schools throughout Europe, sending out missionaries to convert non-Christians to Catholicism and in stopping Protestantism from spreading. The Jesuit Constitution created a monarchical organization with absolute self-abnegation and obedience to superiors and the Pope. The obedience Ignatius expected is shown by the following example of his writing, "I will believe that the white that I see is black if the hierarchical Church so defines it."[4]

True to the admonition of their founder, the Jesuits came to believe a lot of the black that they did was white. They introduced an "end justifies the means" education. The "means" included breaking all rules of morality and the Ten Commandments. Proof of this mode of operation can be found in the Jesuit Extreme Oath of Induction, which contains the following quote.

> "I do further promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly, against all heretics, Protestants and

Masons, as I am directed to do, to extirpate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex nor condition, and that will hang, burn, waste, boil, flay, strangle, and bury alive these infamous heretics; rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly I will secretly use the poisonous cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard, or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honour, rank, dignity or authority of the persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agents of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Father of the Society of Jesus."[5]

It comes as no surprise that in modern times the Mafia and the Catholic Church have such close ties. Mafia members, for all the wealth they accumulate, live rather modest lives. The money, from drugs, the sex trade, and every other illegal activity under the sun, disappears into the abyss, while the Catholic Church absolves them of all sins. I personally see a connection.

---

[1] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: Liturgy of the Mass

[2] The Grand Design Exposed by John Daniel (CHJ Publishing 1999), p. 41

[3] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: Kiss

[4] Wikipedia: Society of Jesus

[5] Subterranean Rome by Charles Didier (New York, 1843)

4

Please or You Die

In 1945 my parents packed up their old black sedan and moved to California. That nice German Jew Doctor arranged our escape from the witches by moving us two states away. Both parents had jobs as teachers waiting for them. And a nice house had been purchased in their name. We were ready to start our new lives.

For a brief moment in my history my family acted like we were a real family. I was given a doll and a buggy for Christmas. I even had a coat to wear, which I apparently put on even in warm weather. Relatives from Utah visited our wonderful new home, to share in our wonderful new life. Then reality struck like a thunderbolt from the sky. We were a part of the California version of the cult and in a ritual ceremony they wanted me to cut up my precious doll. I remember I held my hand firmly open, the knife falling to the ground. I was not going to cut up my doll and that was it. So they cut her up and threw it in the fire along with her buggy.

Our family had a few talents, which were immediately utilized to earn the cult a little much need cash. My mother and father were budding photographers and I was a budding porn queen. What a lucky combination of skills. The William Mortensen Studio supplied us with an attractive male model, Guido, who would be a perfect partner for me. Together we posed for erotica, such as the tip of my tongue touching his erect penis.

As a child I liked laughter. Humor was a wonderful escape. I would pose for the camera with joy as long as I was treated with dignity. The photo of me holding the purse shows the space in my lower row of teeth. That space was created when my mother knocked out my first tooth. Guido was a joyful, handsome young man, who liked to play for the camera, as shown in the second photo. Today I consider myself very lucky, as at that point in history the pornography tended toward arty, especially including oral sex and close-ups of private parts, as opposed to today where it has moved in a very violent direction. The real pornography photos were never shown to me, let alone given to me. I have only memories and a number of suspicious shots leading up to the real stuff.

In this photo my dignity is starting to be removed. I am looking with anger and fear at three people who are making fun of me. At least some of us were enjoying this session.

I remember the hours, holding perfectly still under the hot lights, as I tried hard to cooperate with their demands. They like the use of interesting props, Mortensen Studio style.

The photos are starting toward the real hardcore material.

Having found my place in the cult as child porn princess, I was turned over to the experts to advance my career. Under the tutelage of Mrs. Hildebrand in Manhattan Beach, California, who worked as a schoolteacher at the same school with my mother, my training began. I lived with her during the week. In my memories she had a small desire to watch over me, if I would do as I was told. I looked at her with fondness, and I think she came to feel some fondness back.

Her Nazi friends were a whole different story. They spoke German or with thick German accents. They often wore military uniforms, and pranced around in threatening ways. In their eyes you did not exist, or worse when you did exist they might hurt you unbearably.

I knew the Nazis, their wealth of technology and contraband washed up out of the sea. I remember one cold night sitting high of a cliff, shaking and afraid to look down. Below a U-boat was dropping its load on to the shores of the cove where it was hidden. I later recognized the place as the cliffs of the Palos Verdes Peninsula, with its numerous beautiful coves, and majestic cliffs. It was a sharp drop and I was afraid of heights, so I just sat frozen. I think I was being used as a decoy in case strangers came by. Mrs. Hildebrand could divert their attention by having them rescue her child from the cliff. I'm not sure that was ever necessary, but I wondered if they even cared if I fell.

I first remembered the Nazis not as men but as black boots. In a room with many Nazis and little girls, those black boots held me firmly down on the floor. "Please or you die," the black boot say as they press hard on my chest knocking the air out. "Please or you die," they repeat. These Nazis spoke German and the "Please or you die" were the only words I understood. But I knew the meaning. Out of a dark corner of the room came a little boy who began to cry and complain. They "killed" him with a bayonet on the end of a rifle. German or not, the message was now crystal clear. I'm not sure if I wanted to live, but I was afraid of dying, so I tried hard to "Please!"

Mrs. Hildebrand tended to the fine art of seduction as she braided my hair in two perfectly done French braids and painted my nails a lovely shade of red. I was given a very nice wardrobe of clothes, including a pink sexy nightgown for night. She taught me to talk and walk in an exaggerated manner of sexuality. I often wondered as a child, why I did this. But of course I had repressed all knowledge of my education along with all the deep pain. My mother frequently remarked that some children are just born sexually precocious, and then she looked right at me. The problem with the Beta sex programming was that I was unable to turn if off. I was inappropriately sexy all the time.

I have a photo taken of me at Knott's Berry Farm, where I sit hugging an Indian statue. Everyone else in the photo, my aunt, my mother and my sister, could stand up respectably and say cheese, then later give me dirty looks for my behavior. The photo clearly shows their success at the Manhattan Beach "slut school" in creating a seductive child who was Beta programmed to "Please."

I sat on the lap and hugged the dirty old man even though he was made of clay. The dirty old man with an empty lap was the trigger. As I remember this one smelled of old cigarette butts.

Mrs. Hildebrand was the first person, in my life, who took a real interest in me. She cared what I did. She was very concerned with how I looked. I tried very hard to please her. She knew she was teaching me to hustle sex from strangers, as I was very carefully programmed to do. Maybe she even felt a tiny guilt. I remember she often looked at me with fondness and told me to "be a good soldier." Mrs. Hildebrand must have considered herself "a good soldier." Interestingly the Jesuits consider themselves "good soldiers." Perhaps she viewed what she did as part of some magnificent battle or war. The end did justify the means. I'm sure I came to look at her through eyes that shone with affection, as a child does for a parent. And even though it was forbidden, I think she began to feel some love for me.

I remember one day she decided that it was important to save my soul. She dressed me to perfection then endlessly fussed about what I was to wear on my head. When she was satisfied, she gathered us up and headed for the Church on the sand. I remember kicking the sand with my feet as we hurried along. I remember approaching the front entrance of the church, with Mrs. Hildebrand yanking me forward like my mother would often do, Mrs. Hildebrand's confident demeanor suddenly turning dark in fear. She took one last look and impressed upon me that I must do everything just right, and that my head must be covered just so when we went inside. Such a fearsome place, I was sure we were about to meet the devil. I remember standing and listening to the conversation between Mrs. Hildebrand and the man dressed all in black, as though I did not exist. Mrs. Hildebrand argued for my soul and the man in black declared me no better than a Jew. I was to burn in hell was his decision.

The man dressed all in black seemed truly irritated, almost disgusted that Mrs. Hildebrand had developed an emotional attach with such an inferior human being as myself. To this day I will not wear a hat, because somehow they make me look ugly. I wasn't pretty enough had been my conclusion. Being pretty was the only parameter by which I was allowed to judge my success or failure in life, and in this most important issue I had failed. Her job may have been to spread Satanism into the local Protestant churches, but Mrs. Hildebrand was a practicing Catholic.

That day marked a change in my worldview. I looked ugly in hats. Catholic Churches were to be avoided at all costs. And I was anxious to make friends with the Jews, the enemy of my enemy. It is simply impossible to be neutral on this issue, as the idea of an eternity burning in hell to a small child is very traumatizing. Even the ritual abuse I was forced to endure had a hard time competing in sheer evil with that Catholic priest, the vicar of Satan.

I have darker memories of American Martyrs Catholic Church. It was a place of Nazi indoctrination. It was the house of hell, Hail Mary full of hate. I remember looking up at the painted clay stature of the lady in blue while I'm bent over being solemnized by a Nazi. Films of the holocaust concentration camp are shown while the Nazis do sexual acts with children. We were the Jews in the films and the Nazis were associating sexual pleasure with extreme violence. Rape a Jew child, have an orgasm.

The Nazis filmed everything. The rape, torture, humiliation, and death of the Concentration camp victims was far worse than the films in the news, which showed only the aftermath. The road to the result was a sadistic hell, carefully recorded in secret on film to be used for indoctrination and mind control. Associate violence with the pleasure of sex and you create a Nazi killing machine.

When I turned eight years old I was moved to the school near my parent's house in Los Angeles. On my last day at my old school I threw-up in Mrs. Hildebrand's car. She had been the closest thing I had experienced to a mother. My feelings for her disappeared into the deep recesses of my brain, even though I continued to be under her direction. I was now delivered to my destiny in Manhattan Beach. This continued until I was ten years old and I crossed one of Mrs. Hildebrand's Nazi friends.

5

The Rats - Nazi Faces

As a child I saw many faces attached to the terror that surrounded me. I knew few names, but photos, of those faces, hold memories. When I went over the photos of World War II Nazi Joseph Mengele it shook loose fear and began a week long obsession about the space between his front teeth that I knew was there, but hidden by the camera's angle or the lack of a smile. I remembered when looking at the photo of Adolf Eichmann that he spoke English. He came to Manhattan Beach about the same time as Mengele, around 1951. He appeared to me to be suffering from shell shock and therefore seemed less enthusiastic than the rest. Perhaps this is why he was chosen to be the Nazi who would stand trial in Israel for war crimes, when the New World Order wanted to call world attention to Israel and the Holocaust. History records Eichmann as one of the rats of the Vatican ratline. At the end of the war he was captured by the US Army, then escaped and hid in Germany a few years. In 1950 he went to Italy and with the powerful connections of archbishop Alois Hudal, he obtained an International Committee of the Red Cross humanitarian passport and an Argentinian visa, then made his escape to Argentina.[1] The photo of Heinrich Mueller sent me fleeing the room on the verge of tears, images of black boots going through my mind. I believe he was the one that killed the little boy while the Nazis were terrorizing little girls in a room, setting the stage to turn them into obedient slaves. Martin Bormann's photo also stirred up the past. Bormann, like Mengele, Eichmann and Mueller, was reported to have escaped to South America. There is abundant evidence that Bormann was whisked to safety in the arms of the Vatican ratline. In my long ago image of Bormann, he was dressed all in black like a Priest, but without the white collar. Martin Bormann, the face of the man of power, who dispatched his will quietly, I believe he was a part of the Nazi UFO hoax. A good candidate for the young handsome Nazi, who accompanied the greys, would have been Bormann's 17 year-old son, Adolf. In my memories of the UFO hoax, Martin was there, looking on with fatherly pride at his very handsome son. These Nazis spoke German and came soon after the war's end around 1946. Martin likely came to California by U-boat from his headquarters in South America, and Adolf was headed to become a Jesuit Priest in the Church. American Martyrs Catholic Church and Mrs. Hildebrand in Manhattan Beach, California were just one leg of the journey on the road to rule the world. Mrs. Hildebrand, a few Catholic Priests and the Nazis all worked to spread Satanism into the Protestant Churches in the area. Wait a few years and they move on to the pre-schools. In between they meet up with the CIA, the money machines in the government military industrial complex, the university system and they began to orchestrate the takeover of the once great America.

Unlike Mueller, Martin Bormann was not a thug, but was noted for his cunning. He got the job done, period. And his job was to move Nazi money in the years just after the war. Follow the money, everyone, who is anyone, had a motive to keep Bormann alive and his activities a secret. And the Catholic Church did not want their ratline exposed.

But what is the evidence? The evidence I present is taken from the book "Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile" by Paul Manning copyright 1981.

1. "Gerda, Martin Bormann's wife, died in 1946 in an Italian monastery in Merano. She appointed a Roman Catholic priest as guardian of her ten children." [pg. 18]

The ratline was reputed to have been through the monasteries into Italy. It seems likely Martin would have stayed close to his family.

2. "In 1972 the eighty-five-year-old bishop of Munich, Johannes Neuhausler, made public a document of the Roman Catholic Church, which stated that Bormann had escaped to Spain. The document said, in part: 'Albert Bormann had awaited the return of his brother Martin to Munich, and they fled from Salzburg airport. The airport had not been destroyed and there were also at least ten flights from there of the Fuehrer's messengers with official documents. All aircraft were suitable for night and long distance flights.' The bishop made the foregoing statement to prove that 'Bormann had enough ways and means to flee Germany, and that the Vatican had not done anything special to help him.'" [pg. 15]

But if Bormann died in 1945, this seems a detailed and odd statement by the Vatican.

3. A conspiracy to fake Martin Bormann's death as occurring one day after he left Hitler's Bunker was orchestrated.

"In 1973 the West German government of Willy Brandt, in collusion with the CIA, acted to end for all time the speculation that Bormann is still alive. It held a press conference in Frankfurt to declare that Martin Bormann had died in Berlin on the night of May 1-2, 1945. It displayed a skull alleged to be that of Bormann. On December 8, 1972, a crew of ditchdiggers had unearthed two skeletons near the ruins of Berlin's Lehrter railway station. Investigators had tried to locate these remains seven years earlier, but now quite by accident, it seemed, they were found just 20 yards from the previous effort. A faded military pass on the second body identified it as that of Dr. Ludwig Stumpfegger, Hitler's physician, who had left the Fuehrerbunker with Bormann in 1945. Bormann's dental record, prepared from memory in 1945 by Dr. Hugo Blaschke on order of a U.S. Army investigation team, was produced at the Frankfurt press conference, along with a skull. Dr. Blaschke had been personal dentist to Hitler, Eva Braun, and Martin Bormann. Prudently, before the Russians took Berlin, he had moved to Munich. He had died in 1957. Chief testimony was by Fritz Echtmann, a dental technician who had made fittings for these three; he testified that the dental work in the skull was that of the missing Reichsleiter. So we have two items of proof: first, dental data prepared from memory by Bormann's dentist who had been loyal for many years to Hitler and Bormann; and, second, the statement of a dental technician, who had suffered imprisonment in Russia because of his knowledge of dental work on Hitler and Bormann." [pgs. 15-16]

4. Of Martin Bormann's children, Adolf was close to his father.

"The eldest, Adolf Martin, named for his godfather, Adolf Hitler, became a Jesuit priest, serving the order for years in the Congo. He asked for reassignment to South America, and the request went to the Vatican because of his father's prominence in history; the request was denied, for Vatican officials felt that it was no coincidence. It was assumed that Martin Bormann in exile missed his children and had requested his eldest son to join him in South America. Approval would have cast a spotlight of disaffection on the Vatican. Denied, Adolf Bormann resigned from the priesthood, subsequently married a former nun, Cordula, and today they are working together as missionaries to the Indians of Brazil and Bolivia. Can it not be thought that he visits Bormann, Senior, in his last years?" [pg. 18]

If Adolf wanted to be with his father, it seems likely they had grown close right after the war when they both fled to the Americas. It also seems likely the Vatican knew exactly where Martin Bormann was living. For all of Martin Bormann's negative statements about Christianity, it seems plausible to me that the reason this gifted paper-pusher did so much that met with the approval of the real powers that be, was because he had been working with the Catholic Church all along. The Christianity that met with his disapproval, after all, may have been Protestant.

5. "The surveillance report of Martin Bormann's movements stated the following, in brief:
SPECIAL INFORMATION BULLETIN MARTIN BORMANN
German Nazi politician, born in 1900, in Halberstadt, Magdeburg, Germany. Titular head of the National Socialist party. The Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal sentenced him to death, along with other criminals of the Third Reich. Came to Argentina in a clandestine manner, disguised as a Jesuit priest, arriving from Genoa, Italy, with false papers, around 1948." [page 205]

The following excerpts are taken from the book "Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile" by Paul Manning, pages 23-27.

"Reichsleiter Martin Bormann himself had ordered the conference, and although he would not physically be present he had confided to Dr. Scheid, who was to preside, 'The steps to be taken as a result of this meeting will determine the postwar future of Germany.' The Reichsleiter had added, 'German industry must realize that the war cannot now be won, and must take steps to prepare for a postwar commercial campaign which will in time insure the economic resurgence of Germany.' It was August 10, 1944."

"A smaller conference in the afternoon was presided over by Dr. Bosse of the German Armaments Ministry. It was attended only by representatives of Hecko, Krupp, and Röchling. Dr. Bosse restated Bormann's belief that the war was all but lost, but that it would be continued by Germany until certain goals to insure the economic resurgence of Germany after the war had been achieved. He added that German industrialists must be prepared to finance the continuation of the Nazi Party, which would be forced to go underground, just as had the Maquis in France."

"Dr. Bosse closed the meeting, observing that 'after the defeat of Germany, the Nazi Party recognizes that certain of its best known leaders will be condemned as war criminals. However, in cooperation with the industrialists, it is arranging to place its less conspicuous but most important members with various German factories as technical experts or members of its research and designing offices."'

"The meeting adjourned late. As the participants left, Dr. Bosse placed a call to Martin Bormann in Berlin over SS lines. The conversation was cryptic, merely a report that all industrialists at the one-day Strasbourg conference had agreed to the new policy of 'flight capital' as initiated by the Reichsleiter."

I would conclude that these plans did not come from Hitler who would certainly qualify as one of the best-known leaders awaiting condemnation as a war criminal. His usefulness as spokesman for the cause was over. Was Hitler ever top dog? I think he was not. It makes the most sense to me that Hitler's personal physician Stumpfegger and Bormann had a job to do at the Bunker and they did it before jumping in a tank and crossing the Weidendamm Bridge in Berlin May 1, 1945, then vanishing into history. It paid to be important to the real top dogs.

In the end, as punishment for the great genocides of World War II, the evildoers died in the Bunker. Or did the real evildoers live on? When the story was told Adolf Hitler, Joseph Goebbels, two women, six children, and Blondie (Hitler's dog) met their fate. Two women, six kids and a dog? Who orchestrates this stuff? Hitler I believe died because he was worthless in the post war Nazi movement. Maybe less than worthless, as he raged against Hermann Goering for taking charge and Himmler for trying to negotiate with the West. Joseph Goebbels may have made some powerful enemies early in the war, such as the Catholic Church Bishop Hudal by banning his book.[2] What the women, children and dog did I can only guess?

So what happened to Martin Bormann between his escape from the Bunker in 1945 and his resurrection under the cloth of the Church in 1948 Argentina? From my memories he was safely tucked in the arms of the Jesuits in sunny California. Oh, but how did he get there, you may ask? I think the answer is obvious, the same way much of the booty looted after the war got to the Americas, by U-boat. In fact I was witness to where the U-boats landed on the rocky coastline, just down the road from Manhattan Beach and American Martyrs Catholic Church. Not just Nazis made it onto our shores just after the war, but also technology. Advanced German flying machines were unloaded in creates to be reassembled in the Mojave Desert and used in the UFO hoax. That our shores were breeched by a U-boat invasion was such an obvious tactic, why has no one ever mentioned this possibility? I think the answer is simple, because the activity, which worked so well, never stopped. The U-boat drop was on the coastline on the Palos Verdes Peninsula, just under an area of land later occupied by the oceanarium "Marineland of the Pacific." Marineland has an interesting history. It was built in 1954 and sold to the owners of Sea World in 1986. The whales were moved and the facility closed down in 1987. Assuming a greed motive to the purchase, what use of the land was more valuable than a popular seaside aquarium park? Some clues may be found with a Google search. The area between the Palos Verdes Peninsula and Santa Catalina Island is a big UFO hotspot. Lots of activity appears to be going on in the ocean, including speculation of an underwater UFO base. I wonder if those "UFOs" might be doing a little drug running, perhaps up from South America? Smuggling drugs under the cover of the ocean and night, and later under increasingly corrupt and compromised military and government agencies become a distinct possibility. Arms running may also have been going on.

Other items smuggled from U-boat to shore included snuff films to be used in mind control and Nazi indoctrination. The secret societies and the Nazis filmed everything. I learned in gruesome detail what happened to the Jews in the concentration camps. I knew what these people were capable of doing. One of my first dreams of the Satanism in which I was raised was of the torture of the Jews in the Concentration camps in Europe. The holocaust was not exaggerated, it was far worse than the films in the news. American Martyrs Catholic Church was a place of Nazi indoctrination. Films of the holocaust concentration camp victims were shown while the Nazis violated children while referring to them as Jews. Many survivors feel a connection to the Jewish victims of the concentration camps, so I assume this was a common mind control practice.

Reinhard Heydrich, who opened the first concentration camp on orders from Goering and Himmler, is another Nazi face that I find for my sanity I must hide from sight. I am suspicious his face was front and center in the torture films as chief perpetrator. Apparently his proclivity for this activity was well known. The story is told that when Heydrich showed Hitler, Himmler and Bormann his eleven by fourteen inch photos of the camp carnage Hitler was so upset he had to be led from the conference room. He never invited the butcher Heydrich to his headquarters again.[3]

When I saw the photo of Heinrich Himmler I was again very disturbed. Something about his teeth and his hair bothered me. The pit in my stomach grew, and over the next few days I felt I knew why I was disturbed. I believe I saw that Nazi face in another of their snuff films. In the film they pulled out his teeth and pulled away skin while he was still alive. The message was something about his arrogance as the Hitler regime began to see themselves above the Church and the Pope. It was hard to be neutral about the Catholic Church after that show. No Nazi since Hitler has been a major public figure. I think no Nazi would dare.

Heinrich Himmler, who thought he was next in line, after Hitler's death, was removed as successor via Hitler's last will and testament. Hitler also expelled Hermann Goering from the party.[4] The survival of the Nazi elite after the war, if one goes through the list name by name, appears to have a direct correlation to the Vatican and Bormann. Most of Bormann's adversaries died, his friends survived. Among those enemies included Field Marshal Erwin Rommel, famed general of Hitler's North African and French campaigns. In 1939, when Warsaw Poland fell, Rommel let Hitler's car pass a barricade, but stopped the car Bormann was in, which infuriated Bormann. "I am headquarters commandant and you will do as I say," Rommel told Bormann. 5 years later Bormann took his revenge. When Rommel's record of hostility to the regime came to Bormann's desk, he wrote in the margin, "This confirms other, even worse facts that have already reached me." Rommel was later given the choice of death by cyanide capsule or by hanging.[5] If the euphoria of power brought hubris to the Nazi elite, the Vatican, like the Greek Gods of Myth, sent them crashing back to reality.

Mrs. Hildebrand would often look at me with fondness and tell me to be a good soldier. "Be a good soldier," echoes though my head still. Why would Mrs.

Hildebrand tell me that? If she were the Satanist she pretended to be, I would have been given a more evil message, perhaps in a more sinister tone of voice and manner. The only explanation in my mind is that Mrs. Hildebrand considered herself "a good soldier." Interestingly the Jesuits consider themselves "good soldiers." Being a good soldier is a part of being a good Jesuit, as shown by the Jesuit Extreme Oath of Induction. The oath contains such terms as, "faithful soldier of the pope," "fellow soldiers of the militia of the Pope," and "the soldier's of Jesus Christ."[6] Mrs. Hildebrand was a closet follower of the Jesuits. It was the Jesuits who were in charge.

[1] Wikipedia: Adolf Eichmann

[2] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), pp. 30-31

[3] Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile by Paul Manning (1981), p. 286

[4] Ibid., p. 170

[5] Ibid., pp. 173, 174

[6] Subterranean Rome by Charles Didier (New York, 1843)

6

A Mansion in Pasadena

With the successful completion of the metamorphosis of my childhood into a sexual robot for the Vatican-Nazi cause, I was next sex trafficked into their blackmail ring. My first destination was the O.T.O. in Pasadena, California. This was the third group, in a connected string of groups that I was required to adjust to for reasons of survival and it was very different from the first two. Unlike the Utah "witches" and the "good soldiers for the Vatican" Nazi and Mafia, this group was consumed with "enlightenment."

The members showed up at the bewitching hour with the intention of having a good time. My job was to see that a good time was what they had and to be sure it was done in a manner that could be recorded on film, as the bright lights always shined on our activities. I was used to this and so were many of the guests since the list included a number of Movie Stars.

One of the places I was sex trafficked to was the home of famed rocket scientist Jack Parsons. I remember the room full of physicists, as they had a large impact on my developing personality. The movie stars seemed self centered and only interested in their own tiny world of self-gratification and power over others, but the physicists had a grand worldview. They were one idea away from a theory that would explain the Universe, and one earthly project from going to the moon. Given the choice of hero worship of the Hollywood child molesters and adopting the views that included the grand design of God, I chose to focus my attention on the physicists. Except for one that I remember, Edward Teller, they were more interested in talking science than in raping children and made a good choice. Much of their conversations leaked to my conscious awareness in later life, and I began to put their physics to paper. I did not know at the time where the information was coming from, only that it held great fascination.

Edward Teller was a violent and cruel man. Whenever he appeared on television a dark shadow crept over me; his wild hair and thick sloping eyebrows, his dead eyes gave him a demonic look in my mind. His message was always about death in the form of some horrible new weapon, such as the H-bomb. He had argued for its development even though he speculated it might start the atmosphere on fire. I guess he cared little about the air we all breath, because he was also the father of chemtrails geoengineering.

Edward Teller's FBI file contained the usual trail of investigation into his Communist Party ties, but gave his true political views only a passing page, in the form of a newspaper clipping with the following quote. "Declaring that there is no defense against the atomic bomb, Dr. Teller said future wars could be prevented only by the complete surrender of all civil and military authority to a world government." I guess he figured if he played his cards right, this "new world government" would let him do as he pleased, including destroying our atmosphere, nuking our coastline to make new harbors and raping children.

Atom Expert Urges World Government

Dr. Edward Teller, atomic scientist at the University of Chicago's Institute of Nuclear Physics, called for the establishment of a "true world government" in an address at memorial services for the war dead of Evanston held yesterday in Dyche Stadium.

Declaring that there is no defense against the atomic bomb, Dr. Teller said future wars could be prevented only by the complete surrender of all civil and military authority to a world government.

Approximately 1,500 persons listened to an interracial chorus composed of church choristers, which was accompanied by the Northwestern University band.

The memorial services were sponsored by the Evanston Council of Churches, representing Protestant, Jewish and Catholic congregations, and the Evanston War Veterans Council, composed of veterans organizations established before World War II.

I remember being driven to the Pasadena mansion by one of Mrs. Hildebrand's Nazi friends. In the memory I am sleeping in the back seat of the car when I hear a loud bang on the window. I obediently get out of the car and walk with the Nazi up to the side of the house. We walk into the kitchen area and I see a lot of scantily clad people wandering around. A mafia type, dressed in an expensive suit, comes to greet us. Jack Parsons was definitely not in charge of the group. The Nazis and the Mafia were running the show in their usual no-nonsense brutal style.

The famous faces I saw over a period of about five years included Bob Hope, John Wayne, Howard Hughes, Bing Crosby, Dean Martin, Ronald Reagan, Richard P. Feynman and more, including scientists galore. Ronald Reagan, Bob Hope and Bing Crosby were on the membership list for Bohemian Grove. Bob Hope was also a Monarch slave owner.[1] He had close ties with the Military, beginning with his USO shows during World War II.[2]

The California Freemasons claim John Wayne as one of their own. Richard P. Feynman, in his book, "Surely You're Joking, Mr. Feynman!" tells the story of a certain John Big (very famous last name) who picks him up in Los Vegas where he is strangely surrounded by very available young women and show girls. John Big appeared to be John Wayne and the activities they engaged in were very cult, where sex is the usual mode of entrapment. The following is taken from John Wayne's FBI files.

FBI

Date: 4/23/59

Transmit the following in AIRTEL
(Type in plain text or code)

Via AIR MAIL
(Priority or Method of Mailing)

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: SAC, LOS ANGELES (94-558)

RE: CRIMDEL - CRS

E.H [illegible]

Actor JOHN WAYNE Linked
With Alleged Revolt in Panama

Los Angeles newspapers today headline the statements attributed to Panamanian Presidential Press Secretary SALUSTIANO CHACON, linking the motion picture actor, JOHN WAYNE, with a suspected revolt under direction of ROBERTO (TITO) ARIAS, son of a former President of Panama and now a lawyer in that country.

The "Hollywood Citizen News" quotes CHACON as saying letters and documents found in a suitcase abandoned by ARIAS, allegedly in a flight from Panama while being sought, included an envelope bearing the name and return address of JOHN WAYNE. Inside the envelope was said to be an interoffice memorandum to WAYNE from a ROBERT D. WEESNER, dated 4/9/59, outlining a "schedule of funds totalling $682,850 given to or drawn by Tito Arias in connection with his Panamanian operations in which you are involved."

CHACON continued there was "nothing here to implicate WAYNE. But the fact that the memorandum mentions $525,000 turned over to Arias personally, apparently without supporting documents to satisfy Mr. Weesner, seems a little strange."

REC- 58 63-4296-

3 - Bureau
2 - Los Angeles

LJL:pk
(5)

66 MAY 5 1959

7/47

EX-113

APR 25 1959

CENTRAL RESEARCH

cc-Six
cc-[illegible]

Approved: _____ Special Agent in Charge

Sent _____ M _____

CRIMDEL (94-558)
4/23/59

WAYNE is quoted as saying, in an interview in Hollywood, that he was shocked to hear reports ARIAS and his wife, Dame MARGOT FONTEYNE, premier British ballerina, had been named as connected with a plot to overthrow the government, and he described such accusations as "ridiculous." According to the news articles, WAYNE said, "I have been in business with the Arias family for a long time. A group of us are in several business ventures, including a shrimp import company. ROBERTO never talked politics, and I never heard him say anything about overthrowing the Panamanian Government."

The news articles state the alleged evidence was discovered at Santa Clara, a Pacific beach resort 73 miles from Panama City and a residential resort area where many retired Americans have homes.

- 2 -

The biography of John Whiteside Parsons, where his mansion at 1003 South Orange Grove Avenue, Pasadena, was reputed to have been the location of a cult of sexual perversions, gives some physical evidence for my memories. My first memories of being sex trafficked began with the "Pasadena Mansion" and parties where I was the child "lover" of Ronald Reagan and Richard P. Feynman. The room, where guests wandered around partially clothed, was brightly lit. I know photos were taken of our activities. Evidence of sex with a pre-pubescent child is a powerful blackmail tool for future control of the guests, never mind that they might be drunk or drugged or both. From his biography, just round 1950, Ronald Reagan suddenly changed his politics and moved in a new direction toward a Brave New World. Feynman went on to a distinguished career, even winning a Nobel Prize for his contributions to Nazi Physics.

Ronald Reagan's connection to the Nazis, the Jesuits, and the occult surfaced in much of what he did and said. In 1950 there is a newsreel of Reagan helping to raise money for a front group that laundered money to Fascist "freedom fighters." When he was governor of California he proclaimed April 10th, the day Hitler set up Pavelić's puppet government resulting in mass genocide of Serbs, Jews and Gypsies, as 'Croatian Independence Day'.[4] An example of groups being labeled as "freedom fighters" after the war included the Catholic Galician SS, Ukrainian volunteers who had committed genocide against the Jews under the supervision of the Nazi SS and were later protected by the Vatican.[5] When Reagan was President an attempt was made to teach the lessons of the Holocaust in school. An organization applied for a grant to develop Holocaust curriculum to teach what happens when the rule of law is eliminated. The grant was denied because it did not present the Nazi opposing view.[6] The reason Reagan visited the Kolmeshöhe Cemetery, Bitburg, West Germany May 5th, 1985, but did not visit a concentration camp, was because he identified with the Nazis not the Jews. He even laid a wreath at the cemetery where 49 members of the Waffen-SS were buried. One year previous, 1984, Reagan re-established diplomatic relations with the Vatican, after it had been broken off since 1865 because of the Vatican's support for the Confederacy (and slavery). Like the good Nazi sympathizer that he was, he probably just considered the Nazis "good soldiers" in the service of the Pope. He worked with the Vatican, the Nazis, and the secret societies throughout his political career. Licio Gelli was a guest of honor at Reagan's 1981 presidential inauguration. Gelli was a member of the Knights of Malta, head of the Masonic lodge Propaganda Due (P2). He was a fugitive to Argentina, associated with the Mafia and the Vatican bank scandal.[8] Secret Societies, Mafia, Vatican, money and Argentina, Gelli fit right in with Reagan's circle of friends.

Pasadena is the home of the California Institute of Technology, Jet Propulsion Laboratory, the Pasadena Playhouse and the O.T.O. Representatives of all these groups met at Jack Parsons' place. Jack's place also played a large role in the UFO hoax.

My first memories of the mansion began years previous to the actual sex trafficking memories. I remembered a beautiful woman with lovely red hair, named Elizabeth and her husband John. They lived in a large old house full of antiques. I knew the memory was important but for a long time I didn't know why. Cameron's name was Marjorie Elizabeth and she was married to John Parsons.

In a much later recovered memory of John Whiteside Parsons, I'm in a bedroom of the Pasadena Mansion with a pretty red-haired young woman who is very sensual and smells of perfume. She seems to be showing me the ropes (such as rubbing her hand across her genitals then waving her fingers near the nose of her partner to smell the pheromones.) I look around the room and see a dark dresser with glass on top, covered with bottles of potions. Jack comes in and decides that I do not have to go in with the guests in the other room if I don't want to. Jack and Cameron playfully hide me in amongst all the coats and clothing of the guests. The thought goes through my mind, "you don't understand, I have to do as I am told." I wait until they are gone so that I do not hurt their feelings because they are helping me. I slip out of the bedroom and do what I am ordered to do.

Sometimes the meetings were casual orgies and sometimes they were very formal such as in the next recovered memory. I am in a large room. At one end is an altar with a fat white candle that is burning, a big black Bible and a chalice. I hear a bell ring. It is placed on the altar. A beautiful nude woman (probably Cameron) enters the room and lies down on the altar. A tall man (probably Jack) in a red satin cape walks into the room and crosses it to the altar. A sexual encounter begins. In the audience are lots of nude guests and many children wearing only a long white veil held to the head by a ring of flowers. The adults become sexually stimulated by the ceremony and they begin partnering with the children and each other in an orgy. The room is brightly lit; therefore the real Satan in charge, some Nazi, is filming this entire scene.

This activity peaked the interest of the FBI.

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

Form No. 1
THIS CASE ORIGINATED AT LOS ANGELES
FILE NO. 65-1753

REPORT MADE AT CINCINNATI, OHIO	DATE WHEN MADE 11/22/50	PERIOD FOR WHICH MADE 11/17/50	REPORT MADE BY [redacted] b7C NJB
JOHN WHITESIDE PARSONS, aka Jack Parsons			CHARACTER OF CASE ESPIONAGE - IS

SYNOPSIS OF FACTS: Records, Command Air Provost Marshal, Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Dayton, Ohio, reflect subject denied access to classified information on 9-29-48 because of membership in a religious cult in Pasadena, California. Also reportedly associated with [redacted] an alleged CP member. Suspension removed 3-7-49 by Industrial Employment Review Board.

b7C

- RUC -

DETAILS: AT DAYTON, OHIO

Major SAM BRUNO, Chief, Security Division, Command Provost Marshal's Office, Air Materiel Command, Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, advised that his records reflect an investigation under the date of May 17, 1946, regarding subject, by 115th Detachment, CIC, Headquarters, Sixth Army, San Francisco, California, which contains the following information:

A religious cult, believed to advocate sexual perversion, was organized at subject's home at 1003 South Orange Grove Avenue, Pasadena, California, which had been reported subversive, and that subject had been questioned regarding this organization on two occasions but nothing of a subversive nature was learned. The report further reflects that subject reportedly associated with one [redacted] an alleged Communist Party member.

b7C

Major BRUNO further advised that on September 29, 1948, the Army, Navy, Air Force Personnel Security Board, which handles clearance of Government contractor personnel, denied subject clearance for access to classified information.

SPECIAL AGENT IN CHARGE
DO NOT WRITE IN THESE SPACES

65-59589-2

COPIES OF THIS REPORT
Bureau
- Los Angeles (65-5116) (1-OSI)
COPY IN FILE
DEC 1 1950

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
DATE 1-29-79 BY

PROPERTY OF FBI—THIS CONFIDENTIAL REPORT AND ITS CONTENTS ARE LOANED TO YOU BY THE FBI AND ARE NOT TO BE DISTRIBUTED OUTSIDE OF AGENCY TO WHICH LOANED.

The cult members were seeking enlightenment, secret knowledge and communication with the spirit world. They often worked by the use of ritual and drama. Their secret meetings attracted the intellectuals and the famous. The promise of enlightenment and sex was attractive to all. The fact that they introduced children just made it that much more forbidden and therefore exciting. Jack Parsons was the exception. He loved the idea of heading the O.T.O. (Ordo Templi Orientis), which claimed a descent from Masonry, the Bavarian Illuminati, the Rosicrucians and even the Knights Templar.[9] He loved having a relationship with his mentor Aleister Crowley. But Jack was a very kind soul and did not like the idea of the sexual abuse of children. Perhaps this started him on the road to his ultimate downfall with the Vatican, the Nazis and the Mafia, the three other groups intimately connected to the O.T.O.

Jack's demise was a violent one. In 1952 he was blown to bits in his new residence just down the street from the mansion[10]. It was a climatic end to years of attacks on his professional character. He appears to have been chosen to be the example of what happens when one departs from blind obedience to those above. It was and probably still is a common practice of the Nazis to make an example of one group member, so that all the rest are sure to fall in line. Jack Parsons became the natural choice. His downfall was likely orchestrated and his death was likely a murder. His mother, who died only hours later, was probably "suicided".[11] It is possible that Cameron survived because she was a Beta sex slave (like me) and they controlled her anyway.

[1] Bloodlines of the Illuminati by Fritz Springmeier (Ambassador House, 2002), pp. 501, 508, 516

[2] www.bobhope.com

[3] www.freemason.org; Wikipedia List of Freemasons

[4] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), p. 271

[5] Ibid., pp. 189-190

[6] The Secret War Against The Jews by John Loftus and Mark Aarons (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), p. 126

[7] New York Times (6 May, 1985)

[8] Wikipedia: Licio Gelli

[9] Sex and Rockets - The Occult World of Jack Parsons by John Carter (Feral House, 2004), p. 37

[10] Ibid., p. 177

[11] Ibid., p. 179

7
Hail Mary

Hail Caesar! Hail Mary! Hail Hitler! If you think the Roman Catholic Church is separate from Rome, and if you think that the Roman Empire does not still exist, think again. The Roman Catholic Church, having sent the Bible and Jesus to the cloakroom, so that the good parishioners are not encouraged to do something anti-church such as to think, it continued to build its empire. In Church teachings Jesus was born and then he was nailed to the cross. Jesus' life is given little mention, as discussions on what constitutes morality and a good life are not the focus of Church doctrine.

Any institution consumed with ideas of conquest needs enemies to galvanize the flock. The classic enemy of the Catholic Church was and is the Jewish people. In 313 Constantine published the "Edict of Milan" which gave religious tolerance of Christians.[1] In 325 the "Council of Nicaea" separated Easter from the Jewish Passover. They stated, "By rejecting their custom, we establish and hand down to succeeding ages one which is more reasonable, and which has been observed ever since the day of our Lord's sufferings. Let us, then, have nothing in common with the Jews, who are our adversaries."[2]

In 529 Justinian I issued the first part of Codex Justinianus. The code made the emperor an absolute monarch with unlimited legislative, executive and judicial power. It made Christianity the state religion of the empire, uniting Church and state, making anyone who was not a practicing Christian a non-citizen. The principle of "Servitude of the Jews" established new laws designating the emperor as an arbiter in internal Jewish affairs. Jews could not testify against Christians in court and were prohibited from holding public office. The Hebrew language was forbidden in worship, and the Jews were prohibited from building synagogues or even assembling in public. Jews could not celebrate Passover before Easter and the prayer "Hear, O Israel, the Lord is one" was banned because it was considered a denial of the Trinity.[3]

The Councils of Toledo, ecumenical councils of the Church held in Spain from the fifth to the seventh century, tell the main focus of the Church during that period of time. The Third Council in 589 made Roman Catholicism the official religion, forbade Jews from having Christian wives, concubines or slaves, and ordered the children of such unions to be baptized. It disqualified Jews from any office that might punish Christians. And Christian slaves were freed if they had been made to share in Jewish rites. The Fourth Council in 633 regulated church discipline, decreed the uniformity of the liturgy, and punished baptized Jews who had slipped back to the practice of Judaism. The Ninth Council decided if a cleric had a child that the child would automatically become a slave of the church in which his father served. No ecclesiastic was allowed to marry a freeman and if one did the children of such a union were enslaved to the church. The Tenth Council in 681 expelled all clerics who traded Christian slaves with Jews. The Twelfth Council in 681 enacted twenty-eight laws against Jews including the reading of the canons against the Jews in all the churches. All converted Jews were prohibited from returning to Judaism. The Thirteenth Council in 683 repeated the prohibition on harming the royal family after the death of the monarch. The Sixteenth Council in 693 reestablished the law against the mutilation of slaves, reaffirmed the penalty of castration for homosexuality, allowed converted Jews to trade with Christians and their tax burden was transferred to the unconverted. The Seventeenth Council in 694 decreed that all Jews, except those in Narbonensis, were to have their property given to their Christian slaves and were to be enslaved themselves.[4]

The First Crusade by the Catholic Church began in 1096. The meaning of the word crusade in the eyes of the Church includes all wars waged in pursuit of a vow and directed against infidels, including Mohammedans, pagans, heretics, or those under the ban of excommunication. The idea behind the crusades was a union of all peoples and sovereigns under the Pope. All crusades were announced by preaching. Each warrior pronounced a solemn vow, received a cross from the pope or his legate and was then considered a soldier of the Church.[5] By the Church's own definition of crusade, the Catholic Church Crusade continues in secret down to the present day, it's goal the creation of a "New World Order" under the Church of Rome.

In 1182, Philip expelled the Jews from France and confiscated their property. The crown was thus the beneficiary at the expense of an unpopular sect of the population.[6] This became a common practice as the Jews were driven from country to country, establishing a little wealth only to have it confiscated and be driven out once again.

In 1215 The Fourth Lateran Council, Canon 3 states a condemnation of all heretics and proposed they be handed over to the secular authorities for punishment. Their goods were to be confiscated. Those that were only found suspect of heresy were required to prove their innocence or be excommunicated. If the excommunication persisted for more than a year they were to be condemned as heretics, turned over to secular authorities and expelled from their lands.[7] Canons 78 and 79 state Jews and Moslems shall wear a special dress to enable them to be distinguished from Christians.[o]

Combine, an obsession with death and the need for a scapegoat to spread passion to the flock, with empire and The Passion Play about the crucifixion of Jesus is given birth. These plays reached their highest development in the fifteenth century.[9] They portrayed the Jews and Judas in a light that made the audience feel a lot of negative passion toward Jews.

> Then Judas, which had betrayeth him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders.
>
> Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.
>
> And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.
>
> Matthew 27: 3-5

The chief priests and elders were men of power, and as is well known power often corrupts. They were naturally willing to rid the community of Jesus and his ideas of change. But they did not necessarily speak for their Jewish following. The actions of Judas tells of possible motives that are secret to the reader as the outcome was not what he expected to happen, the condemnation of his good friend Jesus. He repented, threw the silver back at the priests, then hanged himself. This is hardly the behavior of an evil man, who without a conscience has plotted a death. It is the behavior of a man whose plans had suddenly taken an ugly turn of events. With so little in the record, the world will never know. But as is true with much of the Bible, the passages lend themselves to many interpretations. It must be assumed that the interpretation of the Bible by the Catholic Church was biased and self-serving since the Jews were their declared enemy.

The Church treated the "heretics" badly, but it didn't treat their Christian followers much better. The priest Martin Luther wrote of his pilgrimage to Rome, "No one can imagine what sins and infamous actions are committed in Rome; they must be seen and heard to be believed. Thus they are in the habit of saying, 'If there is a hell, Rome is built over it: it is an abyss whence issues every kind of sin.'" Disillusioned, Luther returned from Rome and vowed to preach only the word of God, not the sayings and doctrines of the popes. The Protestant Reformation began October 31, 1517, when Martin Luther posted on the door of the castle church of Wittenberg a paper declaring ninety-five propositions against the doctrine of indulgences.[10]

In 1533 King Henry VIII of England declared the annulment of his twenty-four year marriage with Catherine of Aragon. This led to his excommunication from the Catholic Church. In retaliation against the pope Parliament passed the 'Act of supremacy', which made the King the head of the Church of England. Parliament also enacted statutes suppressing the monasteries and confiscating their property. This stopped the flow of money to Rome.[11]

The Reformation struck a powerful blow to the Catholic Church from which it has yet to recover. The Lambs began walking off with Luther and the Lions departed with King Henry VIII of England. Each left the Church for very different reasons, but both declared religious freedom from Rome and both printed a Bible. The Gutenberg press became the Catholic Church's worst nightmare. The Bible told a very different story than did Church doctrine, and now the common man could read all about it himself.

The Catholic Church's response to the Reformation was the revitalization of the Inquisition, soon joined by the formation of the "Soldiers of Christ" or "Foot soldiers of the Pope," the Jesuits, and for good measure, the witch-hunts. The Catholic heresy prompted Pope Paul III to establish the "Sacra Congregatio Romanae et universalis Inquisitionis seu sancti officii" by the Constitution "Licet ab initio" July 21, 1542. Six cardinals made up this inquisitional tribunal. It was the final court of appeal for trials concerning faith and for cases reserved to the pope. The end justifies the means attitude of the Inquisitors was based upon the belief that their religion was an objective gift of God and therefore outside the realm of free private judgment, and that the Church was a society perfect and sovereign, based on pure and authentic Revelation.[12] Whatever they did, in their mind, God told them they could. The Vatican archives hold few records of the period because the Church had a tradition of burning the most delicate heresy files, but the Bible is found to be on its index of Forbidden Books along with other "heretical" works, which were burned.[1]

One book, which escaped the bonfires, was the manuscript Malleus Maleficarum (The Hammer of Witches), published by Catholic inquisition authorities in 1485-86. It states, "All wickedness is but little to the wickedness of a woman. ...What else is woman but a foe to friendship, an unescapable punishment, a necessary evil, a natural temptation, a desirable calamity, domestic danger, a delectable detriment, an evil nature, painted with fair colours. ...Women are by nature instruments of Satan — they are by nature carnal, a structural defect rooted in the original creation." This book, with the Catholic Church blessings, was used extensively during the witch-hunts from 1450 to 1750.[14] The Bible was banned while a book that promoted ideas that women were witches was promoted. Well if nothing else the Catholic Church was consistent.

Catholic Church doctrines were to be spread to the rest of the world during the period of conquest. Christopher Columbus, motivated by feelings of crusade, wrote in his journal the following quote.

"Your Highnesses, as Catholic Christians and Princes who love the holy Christian faith, and the propagation of it, and who are enemies of the sect of Mahoma and to all idolatries and heresies, resolved to send me, Cristobol Colon, to the said parts of India to see the said princes, and the cities and lands, and their disposition, with a view that they might be converted to our holy faith; and ordered that I should not go by land to the eastward, as had been customary, but that I should go by way of the west, wither up to this day, we do not know for certain that any one has gone."[15]

True to his Catholic roots, Christopher Columbus began to round up and enslave many of the natives in the new lands. Some were sold. The natives on Haiti above 14 years of age were required to find a certain quota of gold; those who failed would have their hands chopped off. In 2005 an account of Columbus' 7 year reign as the first Governor of the Indies was discovered in Spanish archives.

It reported that Columbus was known by friend and foe for the atrocities he imposed on his subjects.[16] The Order of the Knights of Columbus, the world's largest Catholic fraternal service organizations, founded in the United States in 1882, was named in honor of Christopher Columbus. The Catholic Church must have approved.[17]

In 1609 the Jesuits in South America began founding reductions or missions that brought Catholicism to the natives of parts of Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Uruguay. Everyone worked the communal land, and all products were shared.[18] The Jesuits gained valueable skills on setting up a communist society, which would later be applied to the rise of Communism in Eastern Europe. But in this case instead of natives the Jesuits would make major use of the Jews.

Reading Catholic Church history one discovers what concerned Church leaders most. It was property, power, and obedience. They felt total justification in the killing of heretics, making their history an endless parade of violence. It becomes easy to understand, given Church views on slavery, why they so adamantly object to the celebration of the Jewish holiday of Passover, which commemorates the time when the Jews were freed from slavery in Egypt. The biggest supporter of slavery throughout history has been the Catholic Church, who reaped enormous benefits in the wealth the slaves earned their owners through huge donations to church coffers. It is no surprise in modern times the Catholic Church plays an intimate role in the creation of Beta sex slaves out of the small children in their reach. The international sex slave trade is useful for bribery and blackmail besides the accumulation of gold.

[1] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: Constantine the Great

[2] Theodoret, Jerome, Gennadius, & Rufinus: Historical Writings - Chapter IX - The Epistle of the Emperor Constantine, concerning the matters transacted at the Council, addressed to those Bishops who were not present.

[3] Wikipedia: Corpus Juris Civilis

[4] Wikipedia: Councils of Toledo

[5] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: Crusades

[6] Wikipedia: Philip II of France

[7] www.dailycatholic.org/history/12ecume1.htm

[8] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: The Fourth Lateran Council

[9] Wikipedia: Passion play

[10] The Grand Design Exposed by John Daniel (1999 CHJ Publishing)

[11] Wikipedia: King Henry VIII of England

[12] New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia: Inquisition

[13] Rome, Jan 22, 1998 (Reuters)

[14] The Holocaust in Historical Context by Steven T. Katz (New York, Oxford University Press, 1994), pp. 438-39

[15] Christopher Columbus, *Journal of His First Voyage,* Markham, p. 16

[16] Wikipedia: Christopher Columbus

[17] Wikipedia: Knights of Columbus

[18] Wikipedia: Jesuit Reductions

8

Mrs. Hildebrand and the Greys

The grey alien is a creation of Nazi innovation. An alien being was needed to accompany the secret advanced flying machines made during WWII in Germany, which after the war were smuggled onto the shores of America and developed into the Nazi UFO hoax. What was their secret formula in creating the grey aliens? Let's start with the stocking mask. It turns out the nylon stocking was useful for more than just a gift to the ladies. In fact the stocking mask was the precursor of the ski mask so often used today in many a bank robbery. The stocking contorts the face down to the bones and removes a person's individual facial features. The ears become just two holes and the nose (on a child) becomes two nostrils instead. The mouth becomes a nonfunctional slit. And the eyes disappear altogether. Why it makes you look almost alien; except for the eyes. One could add a nice pair of WWII army surplus goggles to hide the lack of eyes. Oh wait; if one hides the elastic on the goggles, each lens (which is almond shaped) becomes an eye. Cool! If the stocking is wrapped around the head, covering the hair, the head becomes bigger and bald. Add a little white bath powder to blend it all together. And, oh did I mention that the Nazis liked to use children, specifically little girls. The Nazis were not only innovative; they were cheap. The little grey alien doesn't even get clothes, but has to run around in the cold night air naked. Berrrrr.

Why is the 'grey' alien not the 'gray' alien when reported in the American press? One might assume the use of the American spelling 'gray' would be the one of choice. A scratch of the surface and one discovers the term 'grey', with British spelling, has Western Intelligence roots. After World War II the Western Allies labeled refugees by color-coding. 'Black' denoted war criminals, 'White' denoted victims of Nazi oppression and 'Grey' denoted known Nazi collaborators. Only Blacks and Greys needed the Vatican ratline to escape justice, and become a worldwide pool of anti-communist 'freedom fighters', or so they rationalized their actions.[1] When I was a grey alien I was certainly collaborating with the Nazis, the UFO hoax's little joke.

The grey aliens were a part of a larger program of mind control, especially of cult-connected members (victims.) No one comes back from abduction with anything good to say about grey aliens because they were a substitute in what used to be "Satan" programming, as in Satan is watching you, only now it's the greys and they are inserting implants and watching you. Same difference. Both Satan and grey aliens also like animal mutilations, not to mention both are involved in the sexual creation of hybrids, Satan-human and alien-human. Who would like an alien that mimics Satan? Actually I consider that view unfair. When I was a grey alien I just stood there, cold and scared, ready to piss in my pants, if I had been allowed to wear them.

What are grey aliens good for? They can't reproduce to make more grey aliens. This is true since they only used prepubescent females and then called them adult males. The Nazis seemed confused on this issue. Maybe the grey aliens had long life spans; which might enable them to travel in their Nazi UFO many millions of light years from home. At any rate they turned out to be enormously popular with the general public and cult alike. Two of the original space aliens, the Venusians and the Greys, were created out of people the Nazis already controlled, their army of Beta sex slaves. Sex trafficking and blackmail is one of the big guns in the Nazi war on sanity. With the Earth going to hell as we speak, the Nazis have supplied us with an otherworld salvation, about which we have a choice. We can all form a One World Government to fight the alien invasion, or we can all form a One World Government to follow our alien overlords, its up to you.

One of my recovered memories of Mrs. Hildebrand and her friends was when I was transformed from Homo sapien to grey space alien. I remember I was in a large room full of prepubescent girls just like me. We were all naked and powdered white, giving our cold bodies a slightly sweet fragrance. I felt the tight stocking on my head making it hard to breath. I looked out on the room through what felt like dark goggles, making it hard to see. The other children were running around out of control. I was holding Mrs. Hildebrand's hand with one hand and my genitals with the other. I felt fear as I was disciplined into a line. A tall handsome man with blond hair came into the room wearing a fancy light tan military uniform. I especially noticed the whip in his hand and the flair of his pants at the hips because that was my eye level view of him. He spoke German. It is likely that the young man was Adolf Bormann, Martin Bormann's son, an ardent young Nazi who attended the Party Academy in Bavaria during the war.[2] He was tall and strikingly attractive, something I noticed even as a six-year-old child.

The other little grey girls and I marched into a smoke filled room. I could see something burning at its center (probably belladonna). I began to feel doped. Next we were led single file into an enclosure that rocked slightly beneath our feet. We all lined the sides and watched, feeling cold, gasping to breath and struggling to see. We watched, the silent audience to the show taking place only a few feet away. I could see the fear on the participant's faces. I could feel the fear in the room, what little there was left of me to feel. The other participants this time were the ones being terrorized and by me.

Wipe off the powder, dress the child, role up the stockings, fold up the goggles and zero evidence remains. The costume they used didn't need to be perfect because the level of fear in the participant's mind would erase details. And if everyone were drugged, even more details would go. The very simplicity of the costume made me laugh. How like them it was. No wonder I was kept so thin as a child. A space alien with baby fat just wouldn't do. A child's genitals wouldn't do either, so they only used girls. Their goal must have been to give the grey a more adult and therefore sinister appearance. A wispy grey humanoid with a head too large for its body that was I. Add a few blips and lights and special effects, throw in some drugs, and you could create a whole space alien invasion. How terrifying it must have been, terrifying enough to repress the memory.

The fact that the grey had no clothes was a signature of the cult's control agenda. A naked child is a cold child who probably has disassociated into a more docile mode. The cult knew that they could better control their members by simply removing their clothes, nothing too sophisticated really. (Higher members might get a black robe to wear. I never got that high, so I was either naked or in a filmy see-through white garment.)

When I was a child we drove in a car to the desert in the dead of night frequently. On one occasion, I remember looking up at the night sky and seeing a large, shinny round object with flashing colored lights. It looked like an impressive UFO. They stored the aircraft in a hanger in the middle of almost absolute nowhere. The aircraft could hover and move in a vertical direction. My feeling was it was a dressed-up helicopter, which was a German specialty from World War II. From the book by Richard Hall, NICAP, The UFO Evidence: "At Muroc Army Air Field (now Edwards AFB) and adjacent Rogers Dry Lake, scientists and engineers test and develop the latest aircraft, including secret projects. All thoroughly familiar with anything that flies, the base technical personnel had no explanation for the UFOs which maneuvered over the area July 8, 1947. Twice that morning, disc-shaped objects were observed cavorting overhead. Then about 11:50 AM, a crew of technicians at Rogers saw a round white, apparently metallic object descending, moving west northwest against the wind. They observed thick projections on top which crossed each other at intervals, suggesting either rotation or oscillation. In their official report they stated: 'It was man-made, as evidenced by the outline and functional appearance.'" According to the reports on "The Muroc Army Air Field Incidents" two similar spherical or disc-like UFOs were spotted on July 8, 1947.

Little did they know that the greys that went with the spacecraft were being groomed not far away, probably at the military installation at China Lake. Taken from the 50th anniversary edition of The Rocketeer, China Lake's in-house newspaper, 4 Nov. 1993, "In 1943, adequate facilities were needed for test and evaluation of rockets being developed for the Navy by the California Institute of Technology (CalTech); at the same time, the Navy also needed a new proving ground for all aviation ordnance.

The Naval Ordnance Test Station (NOTS) was established in response to those needs in November 1943, forming the foundations of NWC." And the connection is made; the physicists at CalTech who are associated with Aleister Crowley's Thelema, sexual and ritual abuse of children, mind control and the military, rockets, UFOs, the Nazis, Martin Bormann and his son Adolf, the U-boats and Nazi innovation dragged ashore by the Jesuits. Put it all together in a cauldron, add eye of newt, toe of frog, give it a stir with a witch's broomstick and it boils and bubbles up New World Order.

I don't know how many times they used me as a grey. I was in the desert a lot with the Nazis. The China Lake area seems right. My gut feeling is that mostly we hoaxed other cult members, and it was a very secret project. My parents were never high enough members to know any of the things the Nazis and the Military were doing. I remember telling my father that we were going to the moon. He laughed and asked how would we get back. According to Fritz Springmeier, the China Lake area next became a major mind control-programming place of young children.

In three separate speeches Ronald Reagan spoke of the possibility of an alien invasion from outer space. The subject of Armageddon being discussed in the White House was admitted in a 1984 Presidential debate. Don Reagan disclosed that Nancy had been consulting astrologers to arrange the President's appointments. When the media reported horoscopes at the White House, Reagan responded about the possibility of the Earth uniting against a threat by "a power from outer space." In response to the question, "What do you consider to be the most important need in international relations?" Reagan replied, "I've often wondered what if all of us in the world discovered that we were threatened by an outer - a power from outer space, from another planet." He concluded that such an occurrence would erase all the differences, and that the "citizens of the world" would come together to fight that threat.[3] Reagan, a believer in the biblical prophecy of Armageddon, Astrology and the desirability of an alien invasion was an eloquent propagandist for the New World Order.

Why would the Vatican ratline include amongst its treasures, to be sneaked ashore the California coast in the dead of night, a disk shaped flying machine? How does the UFO hoax benefit the Church of Rome? An alien invasion has played a major role in the psychology of population control for a century, or more. In the past, the role of Satan was to control human beings by taking their soul. In this new "scientific" age, Satan is dead. The grey was his New Age replacement. He was a scientific Satan, a Satan for atheists. In the cult ceremonies the greys did the same things that Satan did. Satan put rocks in my orifices to watch me. The greys used implants to spy and read minds besides. Satan conducted gang rapes to produce a baby for Satan, maybe even a Satan-human hybrid. Greys sexually probed and produce alien-human hybrids. Both are also associated with animal mutilations. With Satan declared dead perhaps God is next.

Is it the goal of the One World Religion to totally eliminate God? Science deals with the Earthly physical side of our existence. Religion deals with spirit and often an after-life in the spiritual kingdom of God. God is the great and magnificent entity that rules the dimension beyond the physical, and interacts in the physical world in mysterious ways.

It appears that there are those who bit the apple and listened to the snake. After conquering the world, what is next but to become as gods. In order to achieve that feat the real God must die, at least in the hearts of those ruled by the new false god. How does one go about killing God? One must start by killing spirit, which is a part of God. Next one kills the place one naturally returns to when one dies, heaven or the home of spirit. These ideas are quickly replaced with a myth that is under the control of the new false gods, and it includes not spirit but physical beings such as space aliens, or hybrids or genetically modified superior humans. To make these alien beings fit to rule, they can be given "new scientific knowledge." The new home of god is not heaven, but somewhere in space. Perhaps God will live on Alcyone in the Pleiades as Charles Russell taught in WatchTower Magazine. Since these new gods can only rule in the physical realm, that is the only reality that will be allowed. If the Catholic Church is behind this new religion its next move will be to not only ban the Bible (or worse rewrite it) and demote the teaching of Jesus, but next to go will be heaven, the spirit world and the God of the Universe. A large part of what makes us human beings will be considered heretical knowledge and its expression in words or thought will be a crime.

[1] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), P. 205

[2] Wikipedia: Martin Adolf Bormann

[3] The Shocking Truth: Ronald Reagan's Obsession With An Alien Invasion by A. Hovni (UFO Universe, the September 1988 issue)

9

The Lion and The Lamb

The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them.
And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.
Isaiah 11:6-7

In Church interpretation of this passage, why is it not the wolf and the lamb, or the leopard and the kid, or the young lion and the calf? Why is it "the lion shall lie down with the lamb"? The answer is in the symbolism. The biblical passage refers to a future time when man will live without fear. The Lion and the Lamb passages, written in church text and preached from the pulpit, have another reference. The Lion is the "King of Beasts" and is an allegorical reference to the ruler of man (the Lamb.) When the Lion lies down with the Lamb, the Church is the ruler of man.

The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want.
He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters.
He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.
Psalm 23:1-3

This biblical passage clearly states that the Lord is the ruler of man, not the church. Such tiny re-statements of biblical text often result in huge changes in meaning. The Lion as symbol finds its way into even such groups as Freemasonry in the Lion's Paw hand signal[1]. From this we know it is a goal of the Freemasons to be the rulers of men, in other words that its top members desire power.

Freemasonry's murky possible origins include King Solomon and the construction of the Temple at Jerusalem, Euclid or Pythagoras, the Knights Templar, Moses, the Ancient Mystery Schools, the Essenes among others. The foundation of the fraternity by the builders of King Solomon's Temple is their allegorical myth. Whatever its beginnings Freemasonry advanced out of the Operative Lodges of the middle ages in Europe. They possessed the skills required to build complex stone structures such as churches and cathedrals and were free to travel and find work at will. From the beginning the Freemasons had a close relationship with the church and the state. An apprentice was trained with the moral values and myth of the trade along with the skills of the craft. This may help explain the abundance of symbolism found in the architecture and the layout of cities the Freemasons helped to create. Scottish Lodge records show a gentrification process as early as 1630s evidenced by the increasing number of non-skilled gentleman among the membership. With these new members began an infusion of Enlightenment philosophy. In 1717 organized Freemasonry was established in London when four lodges came together to form the Premier Grand Lodge of England. Freemasonry was now large, well organized, full of secrets, and ripe for the picking by the Jesuits of the Catholic Church, who were even more organized, larger and had even more secrets.

It is likely that the Freemasons changed with the times. The fact that its inner workings were secret made it a good tool for opposition to the powers of church and state. This was likely one of its historical functions. But an analogy to modern times can be made with the Cult Awareness Network, which was created to keep track of the abuses of cults and help survivors. It was sued by and sold at auction to Scientology, one of CAN's main offenders. With time The Cult Awareness Network came to represent the opposite of its original intent. The same is likely true of Freemasonry.

In 1776 Adam Weishaupt, a professor and former Jesuit, formed the Illuminati within the Bavarian Masonic lodges, a secret society within a secret society.[4] For detailed insider information on what became of the Illuminati read 'Bloodlines of the Illuminati' by Fritz Springmeier, and learn all about the secret lives of the global elite.

The old Rome successfully ruled by mysticism and magic, and so would the Roman Catholic Church continue this practice behind the scenes. Evidence the Lion was alive and well, hidden from view, is shown in the Jesuit infiltrated and run secret societies. Magic eventually became Magick, which often seems to operate with consistency. For example, it is best done in the nude, throw in a little group sex, a dash of drugs, perform noxious acts, add a little violence, produce fear, and the group becomes ripe for a little brainwashing, not to mention a dose or two of blackmail. A cohesive group is thus created and ruled from above. Under the guise of enlightenment, secret control of the outside world began. In reality the cult of mysticism and magic is a con game. Man seeks enlightenment above the daily toil of the world. I consider this a noble endeavor. Enlightenment is separate from the high of sex, drugs and magic. Sex in the wild is a dangerous business. This activity reduces vigilance and leaves one open to attack. Drugs reduce reality testing as the environment is interpreted through a stupor brought on by poisoning the brain. And magic paints pictures of illusion. One is less inclined to become enlightened under these circumstances as to become the prey of some predator. Some consider the predator as even coming from the spirit world in the form of demons and Satan. Human or Spiritual the result is the same. Control of the group through pleasure and pain, sex and violence, is the mentality of conquest or war. When the Bible advises that these activities are best left alone, perhaps it is just passing on good advice.

I saw the Nazi and Mafia control of Aleister Crowley's American O.T.O. lodge, which had connections with the military and the space programs. Their Magick suggests a relationship to the current rush to do fetal research and human cloning. Jack Parsons' magical working with Jumbo at the Trinity Site, where the atomic bomb was tested, made use of both the worlds of myth and science. By the use of aborted children and machines to create an alchemical Cyborg, Golem or "Terminator" and usher in the final Aeon after Horus, the Aeon of Maat, as proclaimed in "The Book of the Law" by Crowley, shows influences beyond just rational thought.[5] The secret societies pushed their agenda based on a combination of myth and pseudo-science. And as both worlds come together, with an "end justifies the means" philosophy, evil can be the only result.

The New World Order advances its agenda by throwing endless mud at the wall to see what sticks. This is shown by the ever-changing UFO hoax. The aliens not only keep changing in physical characteristics, their motives change also. They are here to save us, to rule over us, to enslave us, to kill us, or even to enlighten us, whatever gets the job done. But there is one motive that never changes, they are here to brainwash us. Social control of the masses has always been the real agenda, and social control by miracles is the hallmark of the Catholic Church. The miracle at Fatima is just one example.

In 1917 three shepherd children at Fatima, Portugal reported that the Virgin Mary appeared to them for several months with a series of messages for mankind. The final in the series of apparitions ended with a large crowd who observed the event known as the "Miracle of the Sun."[6] The first secret told by the children, as reported by Lucia in her Memoir in 1942, was a vision of the torments of hell. The second secret included Mary's instructions on how to save souls from Hell by converting the world to the Catholic Church. Specifically mentioned was the conversion of Russia as shown by the following quote. "If my requests are heeded, Russia will be converted, and there will be peace, if not, she will spread her errors throughout the world, causing wars and persecutions of the Church. The good will be martyred; the Holy Father will have much to suffer; various nations will be annihilated."[7] True to Catholic Church doctrines there is no mention of living a moral life beyond counting memorized prayers on beads. But then a good life is not promised for the conversion, only that the torture in this life and the next will not come to fruition. The goals and mode of operation of the Catholic Church and the New World Order are one and the same.

Project Blue Beam by NASA is little more than a technologically advanced creation of an apparition, by the use of holographic projections from space, that all can see and hear. If successful we all become the children of Fatima. If one wonders why science has taken such an evil turn, one need look no farther than the Vatican and The Pontifical Academy of Sciences of 80 members both lay and Jesuit. What are their plans? The following quote from Steven Hawkins gives a clue. "It is important for the human race to spread into space for the survival of the species. Life on Earth is at the ever-increasing risk of being wiped out by a disaster, such as sudden global warming, nuclear war, a genetically engineered virus or other dangers we have not yet thought of."[9] Who should know better what is in the works by the Vatican, using modern technological advances, than Hawkins, as he is one of the Pontifical Academy's members.

One might ask what exactly are we doing in space? Is Project Lucifer true? Will NASA end the Cassini spacecraft orbit by plunging it and its Plutonium 238 load into Saturn attempting to create an Earth size explosion, as was done on Jupiter with the Galileo spacecraft? Such fireworks from space can produce fear and be given religious meaning. The Catholic Church could even call it the Great Chastisement by the Virgin Mary.

The UFO controversy was the motive given by Gary McKinnon when he hacked into the computers at NASA. When interviewed by The Guardian, he told of the list of officers' names under the heading "Non-Terrestrial Officers" he had found. He continued. "Yeah, I looked it up and it's nowhere. It doesn't mean little green men. What I think it means is not earth-based. I found a list of 'fleet-to-fleet transfers', and a list of ship names. I looked them up. They weren't US navy ships. What I saw made me believe they have some kind of spaceship, off-planet."[10]

Space, UFOs, space aliens, pseudo-science, myth and technology, our future control is being worked out down to the tiniest detail. The New World Order seeks to make Lambs weaker and Lions more vicious. I do not believe they want to bring in a Luciferian religion and make us all Lions. More likely the church will "save" the Lambs from a few Lions. The Catholic Church even favors the exposure of satanic ritual abuse as long as it is the heretics doing the abusing. An example of just one such case is shown in the McMartin preschool molestation trial.

On the sand dunes of Manhattan Beach sits a church with a very interesting history. It is called American Martyrs Church, dedicated to eight "American Martyrs," eight Jesuits who were killed between 1642 and 1649 while trying to Christianize Indians in southeastern Canada. They were canonized by Pope Pius XI in 1930. Immediately plans for a church in their honor was executed. The community chosen soon had a large population of Mafia and Nazis (from the Vatican Ratline and Project Paperclip.) This is also the church (original structure) of my memory.

Taken from the Easy Reader, a local newspaper, "The McMartin Preschool case: What really happened?, Part VI," is the following quote.

> "When Gits approached the podium he showed the girl a class photo taken during her last year at American Martyrs Catholic Elementary School and asked her to identify the children she believed had been molested at the preschool. She pointed to half a dozen former classmates, three of whom were complaining witnesses in the case. All of the complaining witnesses who testified attended American Martyrs."

Was American Martyrs recommending the McMartin Preschool to its flock? One must assume. And when the activities at the preschool became exposed, did American Martyrs quickly support the victims in an effort to distance themselves from the perpetrators? American Martyrs actively supported the allegations of ritual satanic abuse. The Jesuits helped create the abuse then heroically provided the salvation.

As an adult, when my memories began, one of the places I visited was the beautiful new American Martyrs Catholic Church. The structure was not triggering, having replaced the building from my childhood, but the Jesuit Priest acted strange. I briefly told my story then searched his person for a reaction. He looked at me with a detached sadness and curtly said, "Be thankful you're out of it." That ended the conversation. Was he suffering his own guilt? Why was I not proselytized to become a good Catholic? Apparently I wasn't worthy, being no better than a Jew.

[1] Duncan, Malcom C. Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor. 3rd ed. New York: Dick and Fitzgerald Publishers, undated.

[2] Wikipedia: History of Freemasonry

[3] Wikipedia: Cult Awareness Network

[4] Wikipedia: Illuminati

[5] Blood On The Altar by Craig Heimbichner (Independent History and Research, 2005), p. 125

[6] Wikipedia: Our Lady of Fatima

[7] Fatima In Lucia's Own Words, Lucia de Jesus (1995), The Ravengate Press, pp. 101, 104

[8] Blue Beam Project by Jim Seabourn (Contact Aug 11, 1998), pp.8, 9

[9] Hawking Says Humans Must Colonize Space by Sylvia Hui, Associated Press (13 June, 2006)

[10] Interview by Jon Ronson, The Guardian (Saturday July 9, 2005)

10
Pyramid Scheme

The cult I was raised in was like a multifaceted beast. I saw the top as the Jesuits. The priest at American Martyrs Catholic Church thought he was serving a great and mighty cause. He had a belief system that heretics, including all non-Catholics, were less than human and deserved to burn in hell, especially the Jews. The level of violence that resulted, the more the better, often measured success.

The next level down included Mrs. Hildebrand, the Nazis from the ratline and the mafia. They were the "soldiers" in the magnificent war to save humanity and create a New World Order. I was a part of their regular brainwashing, in this endeavor, by the use of violent acts, rituals, and indoctrination films. These people directed all the operations below them. Other groups, who take their orders directly from the Jesuits or the top, would include all the decision-making groups of the global elite.

Next down I saw the top occult levels, such as those who ran the O.T.O. These members helped infiltrate the military industrial complex such as JPL or TRW, politics and the media. Members here are a mix of knowing who was in charge and not knowing.

The base of the pyramid is large and very diverse including such groups as the Satanists, Masons and endless others. This level had a very different worldview. Many had very strong anti-Catholic Church sentiments and would have been devastated if they had known the Vatican was directing their activities. They were very cult-like and saw themselves as intellectual superiors. Many believed in the sex magic, or were so dissociated that they had multiple personalities and lived in a kind of constant terror. I would describe most as scary zombies. This level was very eclectic and members were from a large range of groups including many Atheists, Protestants, Mormons and Jews. I feel all were vulnerable, when the time is right, for exposure, as proof that humanity is depraved and can only be saved by a one world religion.

My Christmas gift from Mrs. Hildebrand, a book of Christmas Carols from the Mortuary W. A. Brown and Son.

Christmas Carols

Nothing quite shows their goal for the destruction of our culture like the degenerate manner in which religious holidays were treated. This was especially true of Christmas. Whenever people asked about my childhood, I always said the same thing, "I had all the toys I wanted as a child." I view that as a true statement since my memories came to include much abuse using children's toys, including being pelted with marbles and burned with crayons (after they had let me experience the joy of coloring of course.) Toys are associated with Christmas, a hated time of the year.

My first Christmas in California was one of the most joyous memories of my childhood. We had relatives come and there were many gifts, even for me. I was given a beautiful doll with clothes, blankets and a large fancy buggy to ride her in. Later in a ceremony they wanted me to cut up my own precious doll. I held my hand defiantly open; the knife fell to the ground. I didn't care what happened! I didn't kill! I wasn't going to become one of them! In my eyes, they had no dignity, and they weren't going to further remove mine. They burned my toys, buggy and all.

My second Christmas in California, when I was five, I remember seeing my parents trying to force me into the dining room. I viewed the scene from the ceiling, my fear having forced me out of my body. On the floor was a fancy box wrapped with ribbon. They wanted me to open it. I had refused, so they opened it for me. It was full of live snakes. When I was six, they opened the box for me. I guess that was to reassure me there wasn't a snake inside. It was a gold heart shaped necklace with a tiny blue sapphire stone. There was a matching bracelet. I still have it. Then they gave me a box to open. I did. It was full of feces. In my memory, I felt someone rubbing my face in it. When I was seven, I got roller skates. I remember skating back and forth between home and the local public school. It would soon be necessary for me to walk to school alone as I was to stop living at Mrs. Hildebrand's house during the week, and the skates made it fun to learn the route. When I was eight, everyone joyously opened a present but me. Then I remembered the words, "Oh, we forgot to get a present for you." When I was nine, I got a Tony Doll, which is a precursor to the Barbie Doll (excellent tool for Beta Programming.) The object was to fix her hair so she looks sexy, not to learn to mother. Mattel was located in the Redondo Beach area, just down the street from TRW. When I was ten I got a blue bicycle, mostly as payment for the paper route that I worked on foot three times a week before dawn. I was only to keep the bike barely long enough to learn how to ride it. When I crossed Mrs. Hildebrand's friend, it was promptly removed along with the rest of my possessions, my hair and my newspaper delivery job. Every year after that I seemed to get some small gift, most of which soon disappeared.

When I was fifteen, I went shopping to buy gifts for the entire family. I remembered the stress, hoping the gifts would be appreciated, but feeling they wouldn't no matter what I chose. My fears were well founded. On Christmas Eve, when we normally opened our gifts, my parents threw all the presents I bought in the fireplace and burned them. They told me I wasn't getting a gift because I hadn't been cooperating.

When I was sixteen, for Christmas I was sent away from home to live in a room at a stranger's house, by my psychiatrist. When I was seventeen I received nothing again for Christmas, but was given a belated present a month later, after I ran off and got married.

Other memories of Mrs. Hildebrand include her Christmas Celebration. When I was ready to buy a house as an adult, my parents told me I must live walking distance from my sister's house. It turned out that I was also walking distance from where some of my childhood abuse had taken place. Mrs. Hildebrand was associated with many churches in the Manhattan Beach area. One of the Protestant Churches she frequented was just down the street. This Christmas memory began at that church with me feeling great joy. It was Christmas and they were going to let me be an angel. I could feel the excitement as they dressed me up in a beautiful white gown with big white wire wings. I joyously joined other children who were also dressed up as angels. We all ran around the church among the many strangers. Then I heard a baby crying. I saw a baby boy in a manger. Suddenly my mind switched to flashes of knives dripping in blood. The angels started to run wild in desperation. Someone killed baby Jesus! An adult dressed in red as the devil appeared and was triumphant. Even though it was fuzzy and I couldn't quite look, I knew what I saw was a real murder. I was very used to the phony kind, having played the role so many times. The memory was very traumatizing. It took me a long time to get over it, and produced many calls to the police and trips to church to light candles.

Mrs. Hildebrand's church did quite a few unorthodox celebrations. In another recovered memory, my parents leave me off at the door in the dark of night. Inside is a room with many books on shelves. I felt myself in the room looking up at the rows of books while many people were walking around behind me. Suddenly the memory changed places. I felt myself being carried into the large main area inside. The room had lots of exposed wood as part of its architecture, and even the floors were wooden. The place had a familiar musky smell and look about it. I was dressed only in a filmy white gown. They placed me on a large wooden table, which served as their altar, and I was told to dance seductively. I did. Mirrors were used to expose my genitals. A man rubbed his erect penis against my genitals and the ceremony concluded by my performing oral sex on the man.

I have few memories of Halloween, their biggest holiday next to Walspurgisnacht, until my late teenage. But I was able to recover one ceremony. Halloween evening, we all went to bed. Suddenly I was awoken in the middle of the night, and I quietly got dressed. We got in the car and drove to the desert. A gathering was there. At the center of the ceremony was a soft fuzzy white rabbit with long pointed ears. A sharp razor was used to slit each of its eyes. The throat was slit open, then the front. We were told to put our hands inside and wipe blood on our naked bodies. The bunny was still warm and felt almost alive. If this was typical, and it may have been, many of these rituals took place in the dead of night. I remember the many times I put my head down on my desk at school and just fell asleep. No wonder, with little sleep, I was probably still tired. As an adult when I would go to sleep at night, I would often have the flashback of two knocks on wood, which would awaken me. When I looked up I would feel people just outside my window looking in. This may have been a trigger used to get me up in the middle of the night for rituals as a child.

I have other desert memories. In another I remember myself at the bottom of a cliff with a big bag of rocks held by a rope over me. I see the rocks crashing toward me, then felt myself rolled under the cliff just in time. On top of the cliff was a group of children. Can you imagine how they must have felt when they went home that night, thinking they had just murdered a child? Yes, they just couldn't give up on having other children murder me. The cult had a name for this game. It was called "The Game of Three Children." The object of the game was that one child would watch, one would die, and one would kill the other. Of course, as with all games, much was hoaxed behind the scenes, but not in the eyes of the participants, except the one that was "murdered." That child frequently lived to be murdered yet again.

The California witches liked the desert, and I continued to be the center of their attention under the full moon. My mother and I often worked together. In another memory, I felt myself nude lying flat on my back, propped up on some kind of altar. I saw my mother, the light from a torch shown yellow across her face. Her eyes were like saucers. She looked evil. She passed the burning torch back and forth in front of my eyes. The fire singed my hair. I smelled it burning. I felt myself holding a branch in both hands above my head. A large branch protruded between my legs. She lit all three branches with the torch, and then warned me that she was in control if I burned. I held breathlessly still. My mother seemed angry, but probably was more afraid. Suddenly I felt very cold and wet as the buckets of water almost drowned me. The circle of witches let the branches burn until just the right moment, and then in unison they extinguished the fire with water. I don't have scars on my body. I think they were careful to only scar my mind.

I remember these witches with slightly more fondness than that evil bunch in the barn in Utah. I am suspicious that my mother and I worked with fire a lot. I think I may have done fire walking on hot coals. For this I made sure I had thick calluses on my feet. I remember my brother burning the soles of my feet, along with another recollection of him putting spiders on me. I recovered another image of my mother and myself at the center of some ritual in the middle of the desert in the middle of the night. She stood over me with her ritual knife. She threatened to cut open my vagina, then draws on my body with the sharp tip. As ever, I am mostly someplace else. In another image she has the knife to my throat as she holds my head up by my hair.

I remember when these memories began to surface, one day I woke up with the thought, "The rocks are watching you." The rocks were apparently my surveillance implant. I remember in a desert ritual, they put rocks in my vagina and told me the rock was Satan and that now Satan controlled my body and my mind. To this day, I like rocks as a part of nature. But one thing is surely true, no rock collections are allowed in my house. The rocks will simply have to "watch me" outside.

I continued to visit Mrs. Hildebrand and her many Nazi friends, who spoke German and wore fancy military uniforms. I remember one of her friends in particular, whom I later discovered looked exactly like Joseph Mengele, right down to the space between his front teeth. I believe they were one and the same. I met him around 1950. I think I was ten years old, so it may have been 1951 or 1952. I remember when he entered a room all eyes focused in his direction; his neediness, desperation, giving rise to sadistic urges to pinch your upper arm or hold so hard it hurt, he grabbed your attention. His self-importance dwarfed everyone else that was present. He was on a mission to save mankind with his work, and no one could accomplish this but him. He was there to correct the mistakes of others. And I was one of the mistakes. I had not been properly Alpha Programmed, which is the cults general program to create a follower that would kill or die for the cause. I didn't like knives and would do neither. Before he came to town, no one else seemed to care. I was, after all, Beta Programmed. It just went to prove how important he was, and that others could not be trusted.

I remember Mrs. Hildebrand's friend handing me a knife. He wanted me to use it to kill a chicken. I was very agitated about the use of a knife. I had refused to cut up my doll, five years earlier, and it was a stand I was not going to back down on. After all, I had gotten away with it then. An intense psychological struggle began; his will versus mine. He grabbed at my arms painfully, then the chicken, white feathers flapping wildly. He strangled the chicken with his bare hands. We moved on to his next task. I was ordered to cut myself. I was not going to cut myself! Why should I become one of them? I thought I would pass out at the very thought of cutting myself. I felt immobilized, frozen. Perhaps it was time to leave the body. It's hard to program someone when they keep passing out, leaving the body behind. It was my strategy. If I was not present what could they do?

Having crossed Mrs. Hildebrand's friend, they were now mad at me. No bad deed goes unpunished. My waist length hair was ordered cut and all my meager possessions removed. Isn't that what they did at Auschwitz? You may be sure I felt steps from the ovens. And I was well aware of who I was dealing with, having seen the torture and snuff films of the Jews in the concentration camps when I was raped by the Nazis. I kept the cut hair with my important papers, and 50 years later was able to retrieve it. That's how traumatized I was by the emotion under which it was cut.

My life changed. No longer did I rub noses with the rich and powerful. I was demoted to breeder under the tutelage of my parents and their coven. What a fall from grace. I no longer worked the room. Now the room worked me, as I was regularly gang raped. But wait! Maybe it wasn't such a change after all. I had few possessions before and eventually my hair did grow back. And being raped by one stranger isn't that much different from another. The Nazis were gone, and the members of my parent's coven were nicer.

11
Wicca

You shall not suffer a witch to live.
Exodus 22:17

The biblical reference to witches does not refer to a Pagan religion; it refers to a practitioner of evil, such as one who casts evil spells. Everyone knows of the European medieval witch-hunts. No one wants to return to those days of false and terrifying accusations. The so-called "witches" were martyred by the hysterical and suspect evidence brought against them. This martyrdom was not lost on secret society opportunists who capitalized on it by starting a new religion, Wicca.

My main perpetrators in Cedar City Utah called themselves witches. Since they had my murder on their mind, did this protect them from prosecution because no one wants another witch-hunt? Is anything done in the name of religion, protected by freedom-of-religion laws? Some "witches" need to be hunted and prosecuted for the crimes they committed.

If the witches of the Wicca religion are so good, why then did they not support the children in the pre-school molestation cases? Instead they stood in unison and called it a "witch-hunt." If you read the Wicca and Neo-pagan websites, they stand by the "False Memory" group and cry that satanic ritual abuse does not exist. How do they know?

Wicca presents itself as an ancient, gentile nature-religion. The historical accounts describes it as Neo-pagan, and not so old. I myself go to the woods to be with God. The night sky, the moon and the stars, the changing of the seasons, all make me feel apart of something far more important and greater than myself. It's the casting of spells and the magic that I object to. It's telling the spirit world what to do that sends shivers up my spine. The things of God are best left to God in my mind. And if these witches think they can order God around, can you imagine what they think they can do to me? Who starts a religion, and calls themselves the most feared person in history, the witch. And why do they celebrate 8 seasons, when every other religion only recognizes 4. The Celtic Calendar is thought to have 12 months and 4 seasons. Add to the 4 Celtic seasons the 2 Equinoxes and the 2 Solstices, and you have created something new, a Wicca calendar of 8 sabbats or seasonal festivals.[1]

Gerald Gardner, the person most associated with the formation of Wicca, wrote that he joined an existing Wiccan Coven in 1939 taking their vows of secrecy He wrote four books on the subject and expanded the religion at a furious rate.[2] Garder may have been inspired to establish this new pagan religion by Aleister Crowley. Gerald Garder was an initiate of the Ordo Templi Orientis under Crowley and the material used in Gardner's third degree Wiccan initiation ritual is taken from Crowley's "Gnostic Mass," written for the O.T.O. in 1913.[3]

All roads lead to Rome, perhaps with a detour or two in the direction of London and Aleister Crowley. The goal of the secret societies is the rule of the Lion over the Lamb. In order to trap as many Lambs as possible it becomes desirable to have a large number and variety of secret societies for them to join. This was indeed the goal as shown by the following passage from the writing of Aleister Crowley.

"All members of the Order are each entitled to found Orders dependent on themselves on the lines of the R. C. and G. D. orders, to cover types of emancipation and illumination not contemplated by the original (or main) system. All such orders must, however, be constituted in harmony with the A.·. A.·. as regards the essential principles."[4]

In 1875 Eliphas Levi (former priest, magician and author of books on magic) died, Aleister Crowley was born (he said a reincarnation of Levi) and Madame Blavatsky founded the Theosophical Society, which supplied much of the ideology of Hitler's Third Reich, Satanism and White Supremacists by popularizing the idea of the Aryan race superiority. The Theosophical Society also put out the infamous "Protocols of the Elders of Zion," which proposed the existence of a secret Jewish conspiracy for world domination. Blavatsky introduced the use of tarot cards and runes with symbols of occult significance including the swastika and SS lightening bolts. One of Levi's disciples was high ranking Freemason Albert Pike, head of intelligence for the Confederate Army. Following the civil war, together with Confederate generals and intelligence operatives, he helped create the Ku Klux Klan.

And the web of connections continues with links back to the O.T.O. and Aleister Crowley, Nazi admirer and British intelligence asset. Crowley inspired filmmaker Kenneth Anger (associate of Marjorie Cameron, Jack Parson's widow) and Anton Szandar LaVey formed the Magick Circle in San Francisco, which became the Church of Satan in 1966. Member and intelligence asset Lt. Col. Michael Aquino left the Church of Satan in 1972 to form the Temple of Set. L. Ron Hubbard, close friend and associate of Jack Parsons at the Pasadena O.T.O., started the Hubbard Dianetics Research Foundation in 1950. In 1953 it became the Church of Scientology whose members included Charles Manson. In the 1960s Robert Moore and Mary Anne MacLean, better known as the DeGrimstons, broke off from Scientology in London and formed the Process Church of the Final Judgment. This was the source of much of Charles Manson's ideology.[5] These secret societies not only carried on the Nazi ideologies they were supported by the actual Nazis themselves through the ratline and the Jesuit order of the Catholic Church. The story continues with this just the more visible tip of the iceberg.

Wicca, Scientology, the Church of Satan and the Temple of Set all had similar roots in the O.T.O. and Aleister Crowley. Is this Parallel evolution or Secret Chief policy on forming new groups? End game of the "witches" obsession maybe to prove the Vatican right in is relentless pursuit of the "witches" of old. It is important to remember that this time around it is likely the Vatican had a hand in their creation. (Maybe last time too.)

---

[1] Eight Sabbats For Witches by Janet & Stewart Farrar (Phoenix Publishing Inc. 1988)

[2] Wikipedia: Gerald Gardner

[3] Witchcraft out of the Shadow: A complete History by Leo Ruickbie (2004) Robert Hale Limited.

[4] Magick: In Theory and Practice by Aleister Crowley (Magickal Childe Publishing, Inc., New York 1990), p. 233

[5] Programmed to Kill: The Politics of Serial Murder by David McGowan (iUniverse, Inc. 2004), pp. 121 -129

12

Ritual Rape of the Child

My parents were strict atheists - of the fundamentalist kind. The family that prays together stays together.

I practice the fine art of the dance.

Dance was a hobby that was encouraged. I was even given dance lessons. Mostly I practiced the ballet to classical music. My family considered popular music "low class." I can tell by photos of me at what point I was demoted to breeder. My hair is cut short - my long French braids a mere memory. From that point on I comb my own hair, no longer the victim of my mother's sharp yanks and angry remarks. For school I had a large collection of dark heavy hand-me-downs, mostly from my sister. Mrs. Hildebrand's pretty dresses were gone. My life changed forever, I am demoted to cult breeder. This put me center stage in cult ceremonies that included gang rape.

The first California rape memory to surface was of my satanic wedding. As my past began to unfold, I found myself nude, sitting on top of my father in intercourse. The candles that flickered around us were white and in individual cups, like those found in a Catholic Church. They lined the pentagram mosaic on the floor. Around the perimeter of the circle, I felt the presence of a black robe wearing audience watching. The candlelight flickered and the image was gone. But I knew it was real, some moment from my past reincarnated in a vision. I wondered what it meant? If I got pregnant, would the baby be taken from me and then murdered, just as I had almost been?

I knew the location of my satanic wedding. I had recently visited it with a friend and her realtor. The realtor wanted to see the "witches house" while it was for sale, but nobody went there alone, so she asked us to join her. It was located in Redondo Beach near the ocean. The room in my memory was in a separate house on the back of the property. It was a secret place of magic, illusion and superstition. The floor was made of tiny tiles arranged with a huge pentagram mosaic dominating the center. To the one side was a table covered by a cloth with white candles on it. At the other end of the room was a dressing area, the large visible display of make-up, wigs, and costumes giving it a theatrical appearance. Behind this was the sleeping area complete with bed. The Satanists do like their drama. Theater often dominated the ritual.

When the memories of ritual rape began, they just kept on coming. Whenever I closed my eyes I was back on a ritual altar, nude, my legs spread. With my mother at my head, I watched as every male in the room was allowed to penetrate me with his penis, including my father. I kept feeling them raping me, one by one, as they filed silently by. I kept seeing their faces, deadly serious. The pain wouldn't go away. I recognized some of the rapists including the owner of the house we were in. He and his wife had been friends with my parents. They lived in a beautiful house, the interior of which was decorated entirely in white. Their living room, which had a large window with an ocean view, was where many of my memories took place. When I visited the gray and white house as an adult after my memories began, I noticed the front garage door had a large wooden S on it, apparently marking the house as the place of Satan.

In another memory the line of rapists are filing by but this time they were all licking my menstrual blood. Again I felt myself lying flat with my legs folded up. The altar on which I lay was the height of a man's pelvis. Again the silent figures filled by, each penetrating me and then moving on. I felt my mother at my head holding me down and watching. I was frozen with terror by each figure, and the thought that death awaited me at the end of the line. The image faded and was replaced by another. The line of male figures continued in front of me, but this time I was performing oral sex. As the procession wound round each penis climaxed and I felt covered in sticky semen. My mother was there, standing next to me, watching. I felt desperate when she left my side. I looked anxiously around the room for my parents. I wanted them close by, as I was petrified of the strangers. I got to know no one. I didn't talk. I was barely alive.

Back in the living room at the S house once again, the lights are dim and I'm lying nude in the center. I'm being gang raped by a silent procession of men. My father dramatically bursts into the room wearing a large animal mask. He climaxes the ceremony by being the final rapist. Were they trying to get me pregnant, with my father as the father or the father unknown? I had no memories of being pregnant, and no blank spaces long enough to include a pregnancy. They undoubtedly didn't succeed. I wasn't a very good Satanist. First I refused to die when I was supposed to, then I wouldn't get pregnant when I was supposed to.

But perhaps the lack of a baby for Satan was more my mother's fault than mine, for some reason she had been neglecting to feed me adequately. Always in our house, we had hot cereal for breakfast and everyone had lunch at school. We were thin, but in reasonable heath. For me that all ended when I went to junior high school. The school no longer saw to it that I had lunch and neither did my mother. So I was subsisting on a good breakfast, but little else in the way of good food, mostly candy. The cult was concerned at the lack of my conceiving so I was sent for a complete gynecological exam. It was discovered my basal metabolic rate was minus 21 percent. I was given thyroid pills. Unfortunately those damn pills didn't contain much protein, so my condition remained the same. I was put in special PE in high school because I developed a scoliosis in my back, and after having been a very athletic child, I was now unable to throw a ball. I simply was not getting enough good food and especially protein to make new bone and muscle as I was growing. Near the end of high school I got a job in a fast food place. The nutrition I needed was then available to me and lo and behold I got pregnant, with my boyfriend at the time.

According to the occult literature there are two kinds of rituals, sexual and bloody. From my memories the sexual would include oral sex, incest, and gang rape. Bloody rituals included murder, phony or otherwise and the sacrifice of an animal. But most of my memories can't be so neatly divided. Two other elements were present in large dose. The ritual often added an anti-religious theme, such as nailing a dead baby to a cross or abusing "baby Jesus." Most rituals featured unnatural acts. Included in these were eating, drinking or covering one's self in an obnoxious substance such as feces, urine, blood, or menstrual blood; the perpetration of a child especially with his own toys; sex between a child and an adult, family member or an animal; the perpetration of others and especially children or family members with such things as whips, ropes, guns, knives, fire and electricity.

They said these rituals were done to make magick. But what magick did they produce? For one thing they very effectively replaced love with fear. And fear was the key to control. I remember no joy at any ritual. Only deadly serious faces lined the bonfire or room. This was a cult that took all, your safety, your dignity, your love of self and others, and especially your love of God. What remained? Satan and fear! If they had been caught it would have meant professional and personal ruin, maybe even a prison term. What better way to create a strong bond between perpetrators than the potential of their mutual downfall? What better way for the hierarchy above to control them?

And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

Revelation 14:11

My last memory of gang rape at the S house was when I was 15. I knew the date was Friday the 13th, July 1956. It was the dark of night. I found myself nude in the S house in a small room. The other occupants of the room were all wearing black robes. My parents stood next to me. I looked at myself then at them. I was big. They weren't that much bigger. I felt myself thinking, "I'm almost grown. I'm too big to be taking this." Suddenly I felt myself break free. I ran through the house, out the back door and into the small cement yard. I hid nude, the best I could, in the bushes. I shook as I hid. When they found me they wrapped me in the blanket, and we all drove home. Had I run down the street naked, they would have all been exposed, I reasoned. I had a new power and I knew it. I was out! I never had to cooperate with them again. I'd be crazy or dead, but I was too big to control. They had threatened me with death so many times that they had nothing left to threaten me with. It simply didn't matter. I was truly the product of over-kill. I remember the summer I turned fifteen. Something bad did happen that summer. But, I didn't know what it was at the time, just that I suddenly became incapacitated and left my summer job. (Both times that I crossed the cult, at ten and at fifteen, a job was removed. Perhaps they had gotten me those jobs in the first place.) Unlike the Knights Templar in 1312, Friday the 13th turned out to be my lucky day.

13

International Banking

The Knights Templar order under the Pope was considered to have been the first international bankers. They grew in power throughout Europe until an even more powerful player, King Philip IV of France, decided to end his debts to the order by torturing members into confessions and burning some at the stake. Pope Clement V sided with the King and disbanded the order on Friday, October 13, 1312.

The Knights Templar, an order of both monks and soldiers, was created after the First Crusade in 1096 to protect European pilgrims who traveled to Jerusalem after its conquest. It started with only nine knights and relied on donations. King Baldwin II of Jerusalem let them headquarter on the Temple Mount, above the ruins of what was thought to be the Temple of Solomon. From this the Order was named "Poor Knights of Christ and the Temple of Solomon."

The order operated under the Pope and received massive donations of money, land, and noble-born sons throughout Europe. They held the valuables of pilgrims then gave credit as they traveled. From the wealth generated they acquired land, farms and vineyards, built churches and castles, became involved in manufacturing, import and export, owned a fleet of ships and for a time owned the island of Cyprus.[1]

The crusades were no passing fancy. Jerusalem is the holy place of many of the World's largest religions including the Moslems, Protestants, and Catholics, Orthodox and Roman; all are connect to the area by their common roots. The goal of a one-world religion is to come out on top, and then to consume all the competing religions into their flock. The biggest player on the block is the Roman Catholic Church whose goal is to give Jerusalem to the "infallible" Pope so that he may rule the world from Solomon's rebuilt Temple and be worshiped as a living god. The Jews would prove important in their plans, by the use of both sympathy and by creating global anti-Jewish fury.[2] The Muslims have a role to play, mostly terrorist. The Protestants are to be controlled from within, often by the introduction of cult-like or dysfunctional doctrines. What kind of a world would this create? History tells the story as we follow the money.

The Vatican along with the Monarchies took up the International Banking slack in the age of world conquest as they became very involved in the trafficking of drugs, slavery and wars all over the world, along with spreading Church doctrine. Their very visible corruption led to the breakup of the mother church and the Reformation (1517). This resulted in a widening of the Inquisition (1184 -1834). When the problem remained unsolved, the Church began a more clandestine approach to power with the Jesuits, a military order formed in 1538, leading the brigade.

The Jesuits successfully infiltrated and later controlled the powerful Freemasons. They had a gift and they knew it. Why stop when they were on a roll. Why not infiltrate the cults of more enemies of the Catholic Church? Why not go after their biggest enemy, the Jews? Cults tend toward dysfunction, that's why they are cults. Through fear, blind obedience is often the rule. An established cult is ripe pickings for takeover by even more devious and powerful groups. And lucky for them the members have already had their free will removed.

The false Jewish messiah, Shabtai Tzvi founded the Donmeh cult in Turkey in the 1660s. His followers founded the Sabbataian cult. The movement spread through Europe in the 18th century by Jacob Frank and his followers the Frankists.[3] They practiced mysticism, and the Jewish Cabala. They were also associated with Freemasonry and Catholicism. Add Jesuit influence and the automatic result is the deterioration of the cult into mind-controlled criminal activity and Satanism. Could such a group work with the Nazis in the killing of millions of their fellow Jews? My mind-controlled parents were willing to kill their own child when the Nazis told them to. The brainwashing to get to such a state is horrific.

The most famous Jew, since biblical times, was one Mayer Armschel Bauer, the patriarch of the Rothschild banking family. He came from a line of ancestors believed to have practiced Sabbatism and Frankism. The Bauers' practice of Jewish Cabalism is indicated by the use of a hexagram as the family sign. He even adopted it as his new name, Mayer Armschel Rothschild (Red Shield).[4] He had the good fortune to become friends with Prince William of Hanau whom he met through Freemasonry. A Jew, a head of State, and Jesuit infiltrated Freemasonry, just the right mix to cook up a criminal international banking empire. Criminal you say? Well that's what international banks do; they fund criminal activities such as wars, drugs and slavery. Oh, and then they money launder the profits.

The Jew as the moneylender is cliche. The Vatican can't very well play that role, so why not give it to the Jews. The international banking passed from the very visible heads of state and the Church to the very secretive Rothschild Family. The Rothschilds supposedly made their wealth by deception. In 1815 the stock market was watching Rothschild's stocks to guess who would win the Battle of Waterloo. When the Rothschilds began selling stock and it was assumed Napoleon had won. Panic selling began and prices crashed then the Rothschilds bought up the stock at rock-bottom prices.[5]

The Rothschilds took over the management of Catholic Church wealth in 1823, according to researcher Eustace Mullins.[6] The Jewish Encyclopedia credits the Rothschilds as "the guardians of the papal treasure."[7] The Rothschild family had no army, no public support or following, and international banking funded crimes against humanity. The extraordinary rise of the Rothschild bankers only makes sense if what they really are is a front for the Vatican Bank. Now that is a group that has the manpower and backing to pull off any devious and illegal stunt they might like.

Is the Rothschild dynasty Jewish? The Mormons that practiced witchcraft at night, were they Mormons or witches? The Rothschild family marries and interacts with the occult elite. And that is who they are, just pretending to be Jews. Since they are a part of crimes against humanity, wearing the Jewish cloak in their evil acts is just another betrayal of the Jews. They are no better or worse than the Utah witches, just richer.

And what did the Rothschild family decide to fund? The Mormon Church, which has Freemason roots through its founder Joseph Smith, Jesuit influence through Father Pierre - Jean de Smet, was funded by the Rothschild banking family through Kuhn, Loeb and Co. Why would the Vatican be interested in supporting, then funding their religious competition? The answer lies in the Mormon Church Doctrine of promoting the practice of polygamy. Was this a move to break up the family? Most Mormons fought back and got rid of the polygamy. But it showed resurgence right before the millennium (end of the world).

Polygamy is a destabilizing factor to an independent democratic society for a number of reasons.

1. It favors a hierarchical rather than equal opportunity structure of the society, as only the older and wealthier males take multiple wives.
2. Women and children are more likely to be viewed as property and collected as such.
3. Children are essentially raised in a one-parent family, as the father's attention is spread among numerous family groups. Often jealousy and competition occurs between the wives for resources.
4. Favors a commune lifestyle as the family unit is destabilized.
5. Young males are often driven from the community so that they do not reach a position where they can compete for the females.
6. Favors homosexual unions of those that remain without support.

A major goal of the New World Order is to break up the family unit, remove the children and put them under the influence of the state (and the church) and indoctrinate them to a New World Order worldview. Homosexuality, the women's movement, massive adoption of children, removing them from their family of origin, is also destabilizing to the family. And when the family complains about the destruction of its bedrock of middle class values, "Hate Speech" laws have been enacted to shut them up.

If the Jesuit secret council has a secret alliance with the Mormons, and it is similar to their secret alliance with the Zionist Jews, the very visible bridge is through

Rothschild funding. The Rothschild money machine started the ball rolling toward Zionism in 1861 when The Zion Society was formed in Frankfurt am Main, Germany, followed by settlements in Palestine.[9] Frankfurt was the headquarters of the Jesuit and founder of the Illuminati, Adam Weishaupt, headquarters of the Rothschild Bank and home of Jacob Frank and his cult.[10]

A little propaganda was needed to convince the world and especially the Jews of the advantages of Jewish immigration to the newly formed settlements in Palestine. Enter Watch Tower Magazine, Jehovah's Witnesses, the Jesuits and Zionism.

The cream of society often has interesting stories as to how they acquired the fat. One such example is Charles Taze Russell who started the Watchtower Society, now called the Jehovah's Witnesses. Ancestor Rev. Nodiah Russell and Rev. James Pierpont helped found Yale. The descendents of the Rev. Nodiah Russell became slave and opium shippers as well as pirates. It follows that when Gen. William Huntington Russell and Alphonso Taft started one of the five Illuminati groups at Yale in 1833, they would call it Skull & Bones. Ezra Taft Benson, recent Profit of the Mormon Church, is a descendent of Alfonso Taft.

In 1868-1869 the Illuminati gave plans at their Feast of the Beast for a mock-alien invasion. Several types of aliens claim to be from the star Alcyone in the constellation Pleiades. Theosophical Presidents H.P. Blavatsky and Alice Bailey thought Alcyone in the Pleiades was the center point of our Sun's orbit. In the May 15, 1895 issue of WatchTower on page 121, Charles Taze Russell taught that God lived on Alcyone in the Pleiades.

In 1880 Russell predicted Jews would return to Palestine. And in 1911 in St Louis he preached "Zionism the hope of the world." Russell had a vision of a universal Israel with Jerusalem as the world Capital. WatchTower, as a Christian publication not Jewish, was more easily spread into Russia to convince Jews to immigrate to Palestine. The Watchtower publication was used to spread the Illuminati goals of bringing in a one-world government all over the world, where heaven would be created right here on Earth. Russell supported J.P. Morgan, the Rothschild representatives in the United States, when he set up trust funds to unite Christians. It was connected to Kuhn, Loeb & Co., the Warburgs, the State Department, Hitler, the Rockefellers, B'Nai B'rith and Frank Goldman and the Illuminati. His work done, in 1917 Russell was killed on Halloween.[11]

The principles of Zionism, the creation of a Jewish State in Palestine, seem a benevolent answer to worldwide anti-Semitism. But one must always question these random acts of kindness by the global elite and the International Bankers. Zionism may have led to the Holocaust of the remaining Jews in Europe.

The Jesuits pushed the idea of communism based on their experience with the communes in South America. They joined with the apostate Jews Karl Marx and Frederick Engels to further this goal, which later gave rise to Bolshevism in Eastern Europe. By 1933 only Labour Zionism was allowed to represent the Jews in Germany. German Jews were first indoctrinated into Bolshevism in Labour Zionist camps and then transferred to Palestine, to work on a kibbutz (commune), with British approval.[12] The Jesuit inspired communism was atheistic (which reduced the influence of the Orthodox Church in Eastern

Europe and of Judaism.) The only explanation of why the fascist Germany would support and work with communist Labour Zionism was because it was a Jesuit idea, and they had plans for the Jews.

In 1935 the Zionist-owned steamer "Tel Aviv" transported German Jews who had taken advantage of the Haavara program of the exchange of money for Germany products in Palestine. The Captain was a member of the Nazi Party and the ship flew the Nazi flag. The Nazis required Jews to join the "Reich Union" whose goal was emigration and Zionism. About 70,000 of Germany's 500,000 Jews eventually left for Palestine under the Haavara program before it was ended at the beginning of the war.[13]

In this endeavor the Nazis and the Labour Zionist Jews were working together. The Zionists may have even viewed the anti-Semitism as a positive because without this extreme social pressure perhaps no Jews would have emigrated. The International Bankers, including the "Jewish" Rothschild family funded both sides of World War II. But it was of no advantage to the Zionists to kill their fellow Jews once the doors to Palestine closed. What must be remembered is that Hitler had a Concordat with the Catholic Church[14] and the Nazis were organized based on the Jesuit Order. The almost two thousand year-old goal of the Vatican is the killing of heretics, and especially Jews. Combine the orchestrated anti-Semitism to encourage the immigration of Jews to Palestine with the fact that during the war the Jews were then trapped behind "enemy lines." The anti-Semitism turned into a "burn the heretics" philosophy, which resulted in the Holocaust, benefiting Vatican goals, not Zionist.

International banking deals in all kinds of deception. Nothing demonstrates this better than the Dulles brothers, lawyers for the law firm of Sullivan & Cromwell. After World War I Germany encouraged cartels and monopolies to rebuild and to pay the Versailles reparations. Americans loaned Germany gold to repay reparations to France and Britain, who repaid their war loans to America with the same gold. In payment clients of Sullivan & Cromwell took stock in German Corporations, which held important patents and trade secrets. It is estimated that 70% of the money used to rebuild Germany came from Wall Street. When World War II began Sullivan & Cromwell began to hide their foreign investments in Switzerland to avoid repercussions from the Trading with the Enemy Act. The Dulles brothers held the German investments for their clients. John Foster Dulles even served on the board of I.G. Farben, which later built Auschwitz. Allen Dulles, who worked in U.S. intelligence (OSS) and at the same time had bank ties to the Bank of International Settlements (BIS), moved his headquarters from America to Switzerland in 1941. Among other transactions BIS purchased over $4 billion in gold from Germany during World War II. The Vatican invested heavily in Germany and a large portion of Nazi gold stolen by the Croatian war criminal Ante Pavelić ended up in the Vatican bank. Much of the German "flight capital" beginning near the end of World War II was laundered through the untraceable Vatican Bank. The Dulles brothers even represented a number of Argentine businesses where the money was finally invested. The inventor of the poison-gas vans used to massacre Jews, Walter Rauff, who was associated with the Dulles brothers, was released from custody when arrested after the war with the help of James

Jesus Angleton, Dulles' contact in Italy and later head of the CIA's Vatican Desk.[15]

At the end of the war, when the true story began to be told and the Holocaust became news, everybody was so very, very sorry. And a further push, this time using sympathy, was on to move the Jews to Palestine. The Diary of Anne Frank became a best selling book and Israel got major world funding. Hate the Jews, love the Jews, feel sorry for the Jews and the real controllers behind the scenes manipulate the public's loyalties. The Vatican's goal of control of Jerusalem moves ever closer to a reality, through the help of corruption at the highest levels of Zionist leadership in Israel. That extra element of War, so necessary an ingredient in New World Order goals, was next added by pushing around the Muslims in the area, so that there could be no peace.

In 1917 the British expelled the Arabs and took over Palestine. The Jewish settlers came into this hostile environment adding fuel to the fire. In retaliation, Islam allied itself with Nazism. After the end of World War II Europe's Jews were shipped to Israel, which ignited a war. Against all odds the Jews survived. Using Nazism as a model an artificial terror-based "Palestinian" nationhood was created, out of which grew the likes of Osama Bin Laden. Jimmy Carter of the Council on Foreign Relations ordered a covert war against the Soviets in Afghanistan and the CIA funded the Taliban.[16] The secret training and funding of Muslim groups for war continued alongside the training and funding of Israel. The end result of this intentional setting of one group against another was a guaranteed holocaust in the Middle East.

The West held the answer to everyone's woes and it began with the Oslo Accords. Nothing creates unrest between neighbors like a dispute over property lines. Move those lines around, arm the participants and a bloody fight is a given. The Oslo Accords cut up Israel and changed borders and authority in a way guaranteed to cause disputes down the road. The fate of Jerusalem was left dangling in the air, with the Vatican poised to grab it like the brass ring. In 1993 Yasser Arafat signed for the PLO, and Shimon Peres signed for the State of Israel, in the presence of representatives from the United States, Russia and Israel.[17]

Ziyad Abu'Ein of Fatah during an interview on Alam TV July 4, 2006 stated: "If not for Oslo, there would have been no resistance. Throughout the occupied territories, we could not move a single pistol from one place to another. If not for Oslo, the weapons we got through Oslo, and if not for a the 'A' areas of the Palestinian Authority, if not for the training, the camps, the protection provided by Oslo, and if not for the release of thousands of Palestinian prisoners through Oslo - this Palestinian resistance could not have carried out this great Palestinian Intifada, with which we confronted the Israeli occupation."[1]

The fate of Jerusalem still hangs in the balance with the Vatican daily becoming a major player. For Christians, Jerusalem is the place of Jesus and holy sites include the Church of the Holy Sepulcher, the Garden of Gethsemane, the Site of the Last Supper and the Via Dolorosa with the fourteen stations of the Cross. For Islam, The Dome of the Rock and the Al-Aqas Mosque, both built on the Temple Mount in the seventh century, is the most holy place after Mecca and Medina.

The end of the story has yet to come. Will the Dome of the Rock and the Al-Aqsa Mosque in Jerusalem be destroyed in order to rebuild Solomon's Temple on the

Temple Mount? Will the Jews, the Moslems and the Protestants then fight to the death? Will this then put the Pope and the Roman Catholic Church in position for a world takeover? And the Armageddon of history just keeps repeating itself. The time has come to put Rome to rest. The story ends when we all stop playing our very predictable parts and do what is right instead. (Read what Jesus preached in the Gospels for a clue as to what that might be.)

[1] Wikipedia: Knights Templar

[2] Vatican Assassins by Eric Jon Phelps.

Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism And The Holocaust by Barry Chamish (Modiin House, Israel)

[4] Bloodlines of the Illuminati by Fritz Springmeier (Ambassador House, 2002), pp. 236, 237

[5] Wikipedia: Rothschild family

[6] The Curse of Canaan by Eustace Mullins, p. 125

[7] Jewish Encyclopedia, Vol. 2, p. 497

[8] Rocky Mountain Empire: The Later-Day Saints Today by Samuel W. Taylor, (Macmillan Pub. Co., Inc., 1978), p. 66

[9] Wikipedia: Timeline of Jewish history

[10] Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism and the Holocaust by Barry Chamish (Modiin House, Israel) p. 205

[11] Bloodlines of the Illuminati by Fritz Springmeirer (Ambassador House, 2002), pp. 313-353

[12] Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism and the Holocaust by Barry Chamish (Modiin House, Israel) pp. 206-208

[13] Zionism: A Conspiracy Against Jews by Henry Makow Ph.D (June 27, 2004)

[14] The Vatican Concordat With Hitler's Reich by Robert A. Krieg (America: The National Catholic Weekly, Sept. 1, 2003)

[15] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), pp. 293-300

[16] Save Israel by Barry Chamish (Modiin House, Israel, 2002), pp. 212

[17] Wikipedia: Oslo Accords

[18] Wikipedia: Oslo Accords; Memn TV transcript

14

The Game of Three Children

The secret society in which I was raised played a game. It was called The Game of Three Children. In this deadly serious game one child would kill the other, one would die and one would watch. World War II played just such a game. The players were the Vatican, the Nazis and the Jews. The role of each player is well known to history. The Nazis killed the Jews while the Vatican watched.

"I will believe that the white that I see is black if the hierarchical Church so defines it," wrote Ignatius of Loyola. Hitler was certainly a closed adherent to the ideals of Ignatius. In a speech made on January 30, 1939 he said, "Today I will once more be a prophet. If the international Jewish financiers inside and outside Europe should again succeed in plunging the nations into a world war, the result will not be the bolshevization of the earth and the victory of Jewry, but the annihilation of the Jewish race throughout Europe."[1] If the enemy was truly Jewish greed and ambition, how then do we account for the behind the scenes looting of Europe organized at the end of the war by Bormann's "Operation Eagle's Flight"[2]? The mad rush to hide wealth that would insure Germany's command over the industrial and financial institutions, to make it a world leader after the war, was a major war effort. If the Jews did it, it was black, but if the Nazis and the Vatican did it, it became white? Since the major Jewish bankers represented Vatican wealth and the Vatican supported the Nazis, the issue is less one of black and white and more one of deception. Either way the Jews lose big time, as they are loaded aboard boxcars to a Vatican determined destiny.

Himmler promised I.G Farben an unending supply of Jews in the 300,000 population concentration camps to work I.G. Farben Auschwitz in the manufacture of synthetic oil and rubber. The facility used more electricity than the city of Berlin, required an investment of 900 million Reichsmarks and worked 25,000 inmates until they dropped dead, yet not one pound of Buna rubber was ever produced.[3] Walking skeletons may save money on food, but they make very poor workers.

The piles of dead bodies in camps gave the recovering Nazis an image problem that had to be addressed. Herman Schmitz, the head of I.G. Farben, had a solution he told to Bormann, "Germany will have a poor image problem this time. Much worse than after the First World War. It can all be placed on the doorsteps of Goering, Himmler, and Heydrich. Goering and Himmler thought up the Final Solution for the Jews and Heydrich made it a fact." Among other things, I.G Farben had produced the poison gas for the camps. Schmitz was tried at Nuremberg and sentenced to four years.[4] At the same trials, Bormann was sentenced to death in absentia. In the mean time, Mueller engineered Bormann's escape by finding concentration camps look-alikes to throw future investigators off with phony look-alike bones and teeth.[5]

The end of 1943 began Operation Tierra Del Fuego, in which gold, money, stocks and art including paintings were shipped to Argentina by submarine. These submarine runs with mysterious cargo continued even after the fall of Germany. Flight Capital investments accomplished the establishment of subsidiaries of large German firms. Over half the German Flight Capital in Switzerland was used setting up holding companies, which held stock in other companies, for I.G. Farben, Merck, Siemens, Osram, Henkel and others. German firms and 750 new corporations established under the Bormann program, gave them absolute control over a postwar economic network of companies from Portugal, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, Turkey to Argentina. Other methods of dispersing German assets outside the Third Reich included moving gold, Amsterdam diamonds, bearer bonds, and U.S. stocks to Stockholm by a Foreign Ministry special courier. A similar pattern developed for South America, where deposits were made in the Buenos Aires branch of Deutsche Bank. Many individual Nazis also hid their looted treasures, including stolen art, with Bormann's permission. This economic empire was staffed by loyal to the party experts in business. In the liberated lands after the war, there was no desire to disturb the German cartels. Obvious inequities and seizures were adjusted. The paintings and the family bank were returned to the Rothschilds, and all vestiges of Nazism were hidden from view.

The Deutsche Bank was the main conduit for laundering Nazi money into Argentina during the war according to the Nuremberg records. In the 1970s the financial collapse of Vatican-supported banks was a scandal that cost the Vatican Bank hundreds of millions of dollars, and it involved the same group of people connected to Dulles's and Angleton's money laundering network.

At the end of the war stolen loot was hidden everywhere. The U.S. Third Army found such a treasure in a salt mine near Merkers in April 1945. It obviously belonged to the SS or the Gestapo because it contained gold from dental work of individuals who had been murdered and was valued at over $500,000,000.[8]

Before the sentence of death from the Nuremberg trials could be carried out, it is speculated that Bormann and friends were moved through the Vatican ratline by ODESSA from the Dominican monastery of San Domingo by freighter to Buenos Aires.[9] He is not seen again until 1948, when he entered Argentina, coming from Genoa on a second-class ticket, with forged Vatican documentation. I speculate in the interim he was in Manhattan Beach, California hiding out with the Jesuits and spreading Nazi influence into the local communities.

The ratline was organized using priests, monks and brothers from such orders as the Jesuits, Benedictines and Franciscans. They printed false identity cards, coordinated the network of convents and monasteries that served as safe houses, and even helped launder money.[10]

The Zionists organized a parallel ratline for the Jewish survivors of the Holocaust. True to their nature of quietly going about their own business, the Jews excelled at espionage. They played a major role in the War's outcome using deception. The espionage network Max, largely run by the Zionists, penetrated every one of the Axis and Allied powers. The Zionists knew everyone's secrets which was to prove very useful after the war. The communist Jews of the Max network fed true information to the Germans followed by false, which led the Germans into death traps on the Eastern front, destroying 70% of Hitler's divisions. The Zionists had tried to barter with the Nazis for Jewish lives before and during the war with little success. But after the war when they switched to blackmail, that worked. Dulles was told if he wanted to use the Max network to move Nazi money across Switzerland to the Vatican, he must save Jews. A Jewish network of safe houses was set up across Italy and for every Nazi a Jew also escaped. Thousands of Jewish refuges came illegally into Rome to be helped by the Zionists to escape to Palestine or to Egypt. The Communist and Fascist networks also often used the Jews' railroad and all three overlapped.

The British concluded the mass migration of Jews out of Eastern Europe was a Communist plot and tried to stop it. The Jews had even been accused of dominating the governments of many countries behind the Iron Curtain. In truth Stalin was a great anti-Semite and not a Zionist supporter. In the 1930s the blood purges were to drive all the leading Jewish Communists out of power. Jews were the only group required to have their religion stamped on their passports. In 1945 Stalin opposed any Jewish interests in Palestine that were not approved by the Arabs. But suddenly in 1947 the Soviet Union became a leading proponent for a Jewish state. David Ben-Gurion had made a bargain with Stalin that he would not disclose that the Kremlin ran Max in return for his vote. The blackmail worked.

The fate of the fledgling Israel still hung in the balance. It was necessary to quickly find more support in UN votes if Israel was to become a state. Ben-Gurion had a plan and it involved more blackmail. Nelson Rockefeller had many secret dealings with the Nazis, which ended up in the Jews' hands. The Jews took their dossier full of Rockefeller's Swiss bank records with the Nazis, which helped set up the German Cartel in South America, transcripts of conversations with the Nazis during the war and evidence he helped Allen Dulles smuggle Nazi war criminals and money from the Vatican to Argentina. Confronted with the facts, Rockefeller bargained for South American votes in the UN for the state of Israel in exchange for silence and amnesty by the Jews for the remaining war criminals.[11]

ODESSA not only moved Nazis for the Vatican ratline, they trafficked in army surplus, to help cover their expenses. They bought and sold American arms to Egypt and other Middle Eastern nations, who intended to destroy the new State of Israel. Since President Truman barred Israel from purchasing American war surplus, Israel began to buy black market arms through ODESSA.

Using funding from American Jews and elsewhere, the Jews purchased rifles, machine guns and ten Messerschmitt-109 fighter planes from Czechoslovakia. 60,000 Germans, including Nazis, scientists and administrators at all levels made their way to South America after the war. Argentina had a large European immigrant population including 450,000 Jews. The new wave of Germans and their flight capital boosted the Argentine economy. Bormann hid under the Jewish last name of Goldstein. His flight capital funded many Jewish businessmen, who in turn helped to support Israel financially.[12]

Robert Maxwell, an MI6 agent and a Zionist Jew, made the critical arrangements with the Czechs and the aircraft was shipped to Israel by packing inside American cargo planes, which had been smuggled out of the U.S. in defiance of Truman's embargo. The Arabs had been allowed to build up their military by the West, but not Israel. Many Nazis had been smuggled to Syria and were training the Arabs for a new Final Solution. The Nazis were also training the Mossad, Israel's foreign intelligence service.[13] The Vatican, with its eye on Jerusalem, was using the Nazis to exert its influence into the Middle East. While the Jews' enemies the Vatican and the Nazis appeared to be occasionally helping them, the Jews' friends the British and Americans were spying on them then turning the information over to the Jews' enemies the Arabs.

In 1943 an agreement was made between the British and American Communications Intelligence agencies to spy on each other's citizens. After the war this practice continued avoiding the need for search warrants. In the "Jew room" (no Jews allowed), they spied on Israel and Jews in Britain and America, and then gave the information to various Arab governments. The Navy banned Jews from electronic surveillance ships including the USS Liberty. (When the Liberty was attacked by Israel during the 6-day war, it was likely spying with the intention of passing the information to the Arabs.) American Jews were the principle targets of FBI surveillance during the McCarthy era. J. Edgar Hoover considered all Zionists as potential Communists, which was also the British view.[14]

It soon became necessary for tiny Israel to obtain an atomic bomb to defend itself against friend and foe alike. Again the Nazis came to the rescue. The Israelis had the skilled scientists to solve design problems. The French provided the machinery to build a plutonium reprocessor. The Nazi scientists in Argentina and South Africa had created crude nuclear warheads with enriched Argentine plutonium and had tested them. In 1968 the West German intelligence service arranged enriched uranium to be sent to Israel, illegally. The code name for the first Israeli bomb was "never again."[15]

The Vatican had gone to a lot of trouble to get the Jews where they wanted them, which was in Israel. And they didn't want them prematurely wiped out. The Jews were the scapegoat for the war in Europe and the Vatican was positioning them to be the scapegoat for the coming war in the Middle East. The Vatican moved its Nazi pawns all over the world board lining everyone up for the final checkmate. Much of the booty from World War II flowed into the Vatican's bank. In 1985 Fortune magazine published a list of the hundred richest men in the world and not one Jew was on it.[16]

The Inquisitions and the Witch Hunts of the Middle Ages were the result of the rule of the Lion over the Lamb. And a part of what is going on today is to prove the Catholic Church acted with justice. Much of my training as a child associated me with the Jews and the Witches. It was intended that I work as a criminal and was evil. If all had gone well I could be exposed at the very least as a Jew sympathizer and a practitioner of witchcraft. I consider it no accident that my friends were mostly Jewish. Actually this worked out well for me as I developed a great respect for their family values, their love of humor as a way of coping with diversity and their love of knowledge.

The recruitment of Jews into the secret societies and the addition of Jewish traditions, such as the Cabbala, into their secret belief systems ensured the Jesuits a ready source of scapegoats should they need them. The addition of witchcraft put the icing on the cake. I guarantee I did not freely choose to become a criminal. Under the duress of violence to the extreme I was forced. I can't help but wonder how many others were subjected to the same tactics as I? And how far back in time does this activity go?

The Jesuits have a secret agreement with the Zionist Jews. They made a similar agreement with the Mormons, and the next thing you know, Satanism was being heavily practiced in the heart of Utah. I saw up close and personal the methods used to ensure obedience. No one in this Game is operating with free will. It is the intent of the Game, world domination, which needs to be destroyed. It is time for Rome to disappear into history.

Most Mormons have no connections to secret societies, but a few do and they have unlimited resources to advance their position. Most Zionists have no connection to secret societies, but some do. And likewise they are often put in positions of power. Secret society members congregate at the top when successful and at the very bottom of society if they fail. At any moment the Vatican can expose the Zionist Jews and the Mormons as evildoers. Wicca and the Neo-pagans aren't any safer. That is how the game is played. It is the cult of death, with the promise of salvation in the afterlife. To me that promise smacks of the 72 virgins promised suicide bombers. Raw Roman thoughts of empire motivate Catholic Church doctrine.

The main "Jewish Problem" that I see happening for the Jesuits, is that if they keep killing them soon they will run out of scapegoats. They will then have to start using tactics to increase their numbers by going after distant relatives of Jews or friends of Jews, or crypto-Jews. But beware; when they finally run out of Jews, the Muslims and Protestants are next, once again. And of course they could always get the few stragglers by calling them Witches.

Genocide is the object of world conquest. The fewer pesky humans left at the end of the battle, the more booty for the victor. And if one's dreams are of world domination, one's opposition must be neutralized. As a child growing up in the center of this battle I could understand why the Jews would not like becoming Catholic. Given the choice I myself might choose death before bowing down to the Pope. Sodomy as a "religious" practice used for control, as I saw the Catholic Church do, would not be the religion I would choose. I think sodomy in the Catholic Church may serve a function and so it is continued in secret. Commit a sin, do penance. The most obedient priests are those that have the most penance to do. The sodomized child, himself may later become a pedophile priest and the tradition goes on. I can only assume that any one-world religion that the Vatican finally adopts would not be any better than the one they now have, and probably it would be worse.

In the philosophical argument of Jew versus Vatican as real controller behind the scenes, in my view, the Jews just don't fit the profile for the following reasons:

1. They keep getting wiped out, and exist in ever decreasing numbers.
2. They don't proselytize to increase their flock.
3. They form close-knit groups and ignore what the world around them does and thinks.
4. If a Jew becomes a member of the secret societies it is usually for reasons of personal gain or greed by their well-connected criminal activities.

On the other hand the Vatican does fit the profile for the following reasons:

1. By their teachings about heretics they practice a philosophy that you are either with them or deserve death.
2. They encourage a high birth rate and missionary work aimed at the conversion of large populations to Catholicism.
3. They think they should be able to tell even non-Catholics what to think and do.
4. The Jesuits and their followers consider themselves "good soldiers" for the Pope and rationalize their behavior as "the end justifies the means." The New World Order is their final crusade.

As World War II history fades, the numbers game and the Holocaust starts to enter the public debate. Exactly how many died in the concentration camps and what groups did they represent? How and why did they slowly perish to skin and bone? Looking at a two thousand-year history, the question to me is not how many died, but how did those people get to the camps in the first place. Certainly it began with a public dialog. The scapegoats were chosen with those most vulnerable, such as minorities, put at the top of the list. Next the round ups began. Into small areas those labeled as guilty of the crime of being different were herded. Then, so that all the "innocents" were not confused with the "guilty," the "guilty" were marked by such things as armbands. As the public conditions worsened the anger grew along with the expression of violence, until the guilty parties were finally robbed of all their worldly goods, loaded in boxcars on trains and moved to distant locations then dumped like garbage behind barbed wire walls. Much of this was filmed and numbers were taken. I saw the torture recorded in a flickering two-dimensional world. The individual suffering was very real 10, 100, 1000, or 1,000,000 times. And if you or yours was one of those labeled as enemies of the state, it really didn't matter how much company you had your life was reduced to unbearable pain. But what is the true number of this atrocity? The Jews have attempted to count the dead through those that made it out alive by personal testimony of missing relatives. Those numbers are in the millions. And of course to be listed on such a record a relative or two, willing or able to supply data, must have survived. World War II was a holocaust with huge numbers dead in its wake, Jew and non-Jew. What sets the Jewish experience apart is not the number dead. It is the evil, methodical method in which they were chosen to die. Tolerance of this behavior puts us all at risk that at any moment the pendulum may swing and the guilty finger point in any direction. The Jewish experience is a history lesson that we must never forget.

Perhaps a better approach to the "Zionist Problem" might be to switch focus to the real problems of war, conquest, slavery, intolerance, envy, greed, international banking, one world religion, one world government, just to name a few. Unfortunately these activities know no race or religion, as all groups supply participants.

[1] Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile by Paul Manning (1981), p. 170

[2] Ibid., p. 135

[3] Ibid., p. 153

[4] Ibid., pp. 158, 159

[5] Ibid., p. 180

[6] Ibid., pp. 134, 136, 137, 147, 154

[7] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), p. 279

[8] Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile by Paul Manning (1981), pp. 232-233

[9] Ibid., p. 202

[10] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), p. 203

[11] The Secret War Against The Jews by John Loftus and Mark Aarons (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), pp. 133-169

[12] Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile by Paul Manning (1981), pp. 194, 202-204, 207-209, 227

[13] The Secret War Against The Jews by John Loftus and Mark Aarons (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), pp. 194, 200, 207-208, 216

[14] Ibid., pp. 187-189, 194

[15] Ibid., pp. 295-296

[16] Ibid., p. 101

15

Mind Control Dropout

American Martyrs Church in Manhattan Beach was dedicated to the eight Jesuits who were killed between 1642 and 1649 while trying to Christianize Indians in southeastern Canada. I often wonder if in the twentieth century they finally got their revenge. The sad story told by the Duplessis Orphans suggests that they did, and then some. Taken from the Jesuit Extreme Oath of Induction is the following quote. "I will spare neither age, sex nor condition, and that will hang, burn, waste, boil, flay, strangle, and bury alive these infamous heretics; rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race." And that is pretty much what they did to the Duplessis Orphans in their care in Quebec Canada. In the 1940s through the 1960s the parents of more than 5,000 children in Catholic orphanages were promised the children would be given a good education. They were instead falsely labeled as mentally ill or retarded and sent to psychiatric hospitals managed by the Church. The children were abused and forced into child labor, often by nuns and then experimented on by psychiatrists with the new drug chlorpromazine. Some were even treated by Ewen Cameron at Allan Memorial Institute of McGill University as part of the "mind-control" programs connected to the C.I.A., which did such things as test drugs, electric shock and did lobotomies. The unexplained death of hundreds of Orphans and bogus paperwork to cover up has been discovered.[1] It is a story with no end as psychiatric hospitals in Canada and the United States are often little better than snake pits of immoral and sadistic research.

I remember my mother telling me I was sent to the psychiatrist because she had a dream I was drowning. I knew I was going to the psychiatrist because I was in big trouble once again, a problem he was expected to solve.

I don't look like I need weekly visits to the psychiatrist's office. But according to my family, I'm a big "trouble-maker."

Maybe a shot of scopolamine, a little electro-shock and few suggestions can turn me around.

Oh, oh! It looks like Lotus Blossom. That Beta Programming just sticks like glue. And now it is being reinforced by the use of Narco-hypnosis and electro-shock torture.

Good before and after shots, that psychiatrist really knows his stuff.

My refusal to be a good sex slave then breeder in which I was gang raped caused me to be shunned by my family. It was a condition that was to last the rest of my life. My extensive wardrobe of dark garments was whittled down to nothing, and I was told I had to sew my own clothes. Being shunned didn't turn out too different from being the scapegoat, which was my previous role, so life continued much as before.

The psychiatrists had originally entered our lives on what seemed like a positive and a negative note. Suddenly we were the center of their interest. They gathered together to help us with their almost magical knowledge of the human mind. They arranged to send my brother to a sanitarium in the San Fernando Valley to help his depression. I was unaware he was depressed. I remember when we all visited my brother; it was traumatic to see him, as his personality was gone. We all sat around a picnic table surrounded by Eucalyptus and Olive trees. In the distance on one side was a structure that looked like a huge old house, in the other direction were courts where the residents could play ball. The trees dribbled debris on us as we sat. I would have considered the area beautiful if it were not for my brother. He seemed unable to function in any way, as he showed us the craft he had done. My brother, who was very skilled with his hands, showed us something that looked like a small child had made it. I knew that he was being electro-shocked. This colored the memory to shades of a Frankenstein movie. When we finally got him home my parents were furious. It took a long time to nurse him back to health, and in some ways he was forever changed by the experience. But still we couldn't shake those psychiatrists.

The first summer I went to the psychiatrist, I have no real memories of his office only that I was to see the same psychiatrist my mother had been visiting and his office was a long drive away, over the hills, past UCLA and in the Valley. My father and brother went to a psychiatrist, Dr. T, whose office was much closer, the Crenshaw Medical Center. We had all visited him as a family the year before, so I remembered him.

The first summer I believe I was taken to the Valley and we met the psychiatrist at the same psychiatric hospital where my brother had been electro-zapped to vegetable status, a year or so previous. I remember lying in a bed on wheels with an I.V. attached to my arm. Many ladies all in white scurried around the spotless room. I noticed their spotless white shoes that laced up to the ankle with small square heels nurses-style. One nurse in particular caught my eye, her shiny new white shoes with a pin hole design on the top, contrasted with the dark brown of the wood floor. I looked through the square pains of glass connected by wood panels in the doors and the windows out into a yard full of graceful trees. I didn't feel quite present, more on the verge of emotional departure from the scene. The room began spinning and everything ran into everything else then went out of focus and the memory ends. I guess the drugs from the IV were kicking in. By this memory I feel my meetings with Dr. Jacobs began at the sanitarium in the Valley, probably associated with UCLA, because the psychiatrists were associated with UCLA. Most likely it was Olive View Sanitarium.

My visits to the sanitarium were to be kept secret especially from me. I recovered memories of being drugged by my parents, driven to the Valley, then carried into the sanitarium in a drugged state. I remember sitting in a chair, barely conscious of my surrounding, when the psychiatrist, Dr. Jacobs, with his head full of brown hair came into the room to talk with me. In another vision I tip toed to the door, opened it and looked out, heard someone coming then ran back in. If I looked like I might be in my right mind, I was quickly tied down. Drugs and more drugs, electro-shock and fear of the nurses, I kept to myself as much as I could. In many memories I see the doctors and nurses but have little knowledge of what might be said. One doctor came into my room holding a human skeleton then began shaking it at me. To me he looked like a man shaking a skeleton. I think he was trying to scare me, but I have no recollection of what he was saying. I think perhaps I was required to wear a headpiece with wires attached, as my brain waves were recorded. This put me in a bit of a fog. Later I wrote about just such a device in my science fiction. Many of my repressed experiences crept into my writing.

I remember my mother stating that she would have to make the drive to the Valley twice a week for the rest of the summer. I assume the first trip was to take me to the hospital and the second was to pick me up. For the rest of my life I have done everything possible to avoid psychiatric hospitals, so the experience was an unpleasant one.

After the school year began, my mother would drive me to the psychiatrist's office weekly. I vividly remember the drive with my mother to the psychiatrist's office. Sometimes we ate in the medical building coffee shop. I remember the small waiting room, with the table full of New Yorker magazines. I remember looking at the jokes, as the articles were a little beyond me. I remember going in the psychiatrist's main office, with brown everywhere. Dr. Jacobs had a head full of brown hair; the carpet was brown as was the furniture. But as to the session, for one hour every week I was amnesic. I became so concerned about what went on in that hour that I asked my mother if she knew. She said she didn't. Once I remember he asked if I masturbated or if I'd ever had an orgasm. He was trying to convince me how much better I would feel if I would only participate in sex. Having three aspects to my personality left me confused as to the conversation. I didn't know what in the hell he was talking about, and I thought it a bit inappropriate.

As an adult I spent a lot of time trying to recover what may have happened in that little brown office, with the brown haired man that for some reason I hated. I closed my eyes and a few images of oral sex came up and one of me threatening him with an open scissors. I may have had a small scissors, as I was now required to sew my own clothes. I later recovered more memories that gave big clues as to what was really going on. The session began with a shot. I was amnesic for a physical reason, scopolamine or some similar drug. Most of the time was spent in that office doing narco-hypnosis, human experimentation and mind control programming.

It is debatable how effect programming was under the influence of drugs that cause twilight sleep. It was too effective for my taste, but not effective enough for Dr Jacobs. He frequently seemed disgusted with me. But after all, if one is amnesic to the session, how is one expected to effectively remember the programming. I remember dipping my fingers into a liquid or jell, and then metal cylinders with black wires attached were put over my fingers. Electro-shock was used to monitor the session, be it programming or even investigations into my psychic abilities (sort of similar to the opening scene in "Ghost

Busters.") As my memories continued I could see him scurry around the little brown room as he made use of my 50-minute hour. He seemed to have a list of projects that needed investigation, most of which resulted in pain or humiliation on my part.

Sometimes the Psychiatrist would bring out a white enamel basin partially full of water. This gave me great fear. He would place my bare feet in the basin, and then give me a large series of shocks of electricity. I think he was a sexual sadist because this seemed to arouse sexual feelings in him. These sessions were followed by my performing oral sex on him. For this my parents were paying him fifteen dollars for the hour. I learned one big thing from this torture; it was not safe to be controlled by the use of pain. I became so dissociated to pain that when I went into labor with my daughter years later I felt the labor pains as pressure rather than pain, a learned response I'm sure. Having recovered these memories, my earlier memory of threatening the psychiatrist with an open scissors became clear. Torture by electro-shock makes one very fearful and angry!

My education included suicide programming, some of which got through, as one day I left the office with a full bottle of pills, went dutifully home, straight to the bathroom and took them all. I immediately realized what I had done and reported it to my parents. I survived with little more than a stomachache, but who knew. A more serious attempt on my life through hypnotic programmed behavior occurred when he had finally become totally disgusted with my progress and decided more drastic action was needed. On my sixteenth Christmas I was sent away from home to live in a room in a strange house on the corner of two very busy streets, by the psychiatrist. I think it was his version of throwing me out. I did feel lonely and a little bit lost. It was necessary for me to take public transportation by myself to get to school, so I was isolated from my few friends. It was here that the "walk on red" incident occurred, so maybe the psychiatrist was so disgusted he meant to get rid of me. He came close. I went to the corner to cross the very busy streets that lined both sides of the house where I had been moved and waited at the light. The thought kept going through my mind, "Walk on red, walk on red." I became very confused thinking the red light meant go. I walked out in traffic to the sight and sound of cars heading toward me, breaks screeching. To this day I check to make sure I know it is walk on green. After a month or two living in the strange house my mother came to visit, she took me shopping, and then she just took me home. I don't know if in doing so she was crossing the government and it's secret programs, but she was nicer to me after that.

Judging from photographs taken of me during that period of time, I did become more cultist. I occasionally referred to myself as Lotus Blossom. The smile disappeared from my face, replaced by tension, and I took on my trademark sultry expression. Part of the programming was to keep the secret of who, what, when or where. To this day I don't remember the names or faces of anyone but close friends. The hypnotic suggestions must have been terrible, because I started to have feelings of extreme dread, I still don't know of what. But I never returned to the cult activities and so the sessions would have to be judged a failure. I think that was the Psychiatrist's view because after the "walk on red" incident my visits to his office were sporadic and fewer. It seemed only necessary that I occasionally report in.

Was I one of the many victims of the secret government program Project MKULTRA? Mind control research was given high priority by the U.S. military just after the war and was one of the CIA's pet projects. In 1947 the CIA was formed out of the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) created by William J. Donovan during World War II. Its role and functions were similar to those of the United Kingdom's MI6 and Israel's Mossad.[2]

The fact that the Vatican and the intelligence community of Britain and the United States were all working together was clearly shown by the ratlines. An example is in the search for Ante Pavelić, who massacred with extreme cruelty a half million innocent Serbs, Jews and Gypsies over the four years he was in power in Croatia. He escaped to the safety of the Vatican with the help of Father Krunoslav Draganović and the West. Pavelić had under threat of death converted tens of thousands of Serbian Orthodox to Catholicism. The British protected him for two weeks as he moved through Draganović's Ratline. Pavelić was hidden on Vatican property and even driven around in a Vatican car while the British and United States intelligence tried to arrest him. American intelligence documents reveal that Pavelić was to be taken into custody on sight. A week later hand written new instructions added the comment "Hands Off." Pavelić continued on to Argentina with no further interference. The Nazis were beginning to co-ordinate activities with the Vatican and the intelligence agencies of the United States and Britain.[3]

The CIA agency quickly filled with many Nazis, who were experts in aerodynamics, rocketry, technology or medicine, and were recruited with promises of money and forgiveness from prosecution for war crimes through

Operation Paperclip.[4] Allen Welsh Dulles was the CIA's first civilian director. His nephew, Avery Dulles, was a Cardinal of the Catholic Church and a Jesuit priest.[5] Close to the top, but hidden from view, again we detect the ever present Jesuit.

Allen W. Dulles, who had been a United States espionage agent during World War I, socialized with the German elite between the wars, even attending a reception with Hitler and Bormann. He was friends and did business with Fritz Thyssen, head of Thyssen mining and steelmaking, who had initially supported Hitler financially. The element that bound them all together was ideology, money and power. Hitler had promised to establish a social order according to the plan of Dr. Klein of I.G. Farben and Thyssen that would realize the ideas of Pope Leo XIII as expressed in the encyclical "Rerum novarum". In 1933 Hitler arranged the Concordat with the Pope. Thyssen's relationship with the Third Reich soured over time, and the Gestapo held Thyssen for four and a half years. Bormann instructed SS General Mueller to handle Thyssen with care and he was quartered outside the concentration camp areas at both Dachau and Buchenwald. Bormann could not free Thyssen because Goering, Himmler and Hitler outranked him. After the war Thyssen joined Bormann in Argentina.[6] The friends of the Vatican, Thyssen, Bormann and Mueller survived after the war, where as Goering, Himmler and Hitler didn't.

The Dulles Brothers were big players on the world stage. Allen Welsh Dulles, 1953 head of the CIA, socialized and had business dealings with the group that had orchestrated the Vatican's peace plan, based on ideas of Pope Leo XIII, and John Foster Dulles was chairman of the Federal Council of Churches' Commission on a Just and Durable Peace. In 1942 they met and adopted a plan calling for a world government of delegated powers, strong limitations on national sovereignty, international control of the military, a universal system of money, worldwide freedom of immigration, worldwide free trade and a democratically controlled world bank.[7] John Foster Dulles was a founding member of the Council on Foreign Relations in 1921 and in 1945 was the U.S. delegate at the U.N.s founding. His son Avery Robert Dulles became an influential Jesuit Priest. If history is a clue much of the ideology for a "Just and Durable Peace" came directly from the Vatican. World War II was fought for the very same ideals on both sides of the conflict. But remember, "by its fruit it shall be known." I was unfortunate enough to get an up close and personal look at what was really going on.

Under Dulles direction the CIA created MKULTRA, a top-secret program for research of mind control, and in 1953 they put Sidney Gottlieb in charge. He sponsored Ewen Cameron and Harris Isbell in controversial psychiatric research using unwitting humans as guinea pigs. The CIA, Gottlieb and the Rockefeller Foundation financed this research.[8]

It would appear that I was a part of MKULTRA. Dr. Jacobs was a board certified psychiatrist who was closely associated with a group of psychiatrists who worked out of a psychiatric sanitarium near Los Angeles, which was probably associated with UCLA, as were the psychiatrists. It was here that my older brother was sent. Since he had no psychiatric illness I can only assume they were experimenting on him. I have little information on Dr. Jacobs. I have more information on the second psychiatrist I was sent to after my divorce, in my early twenties. Dr. T, I considered much nicer, but not too bright. He diagnosed me as having sex problems, because I had refused to be gang raped by strangers I assume. My view was different having chosen near electrocution over the gang rapes. He further diagnosed me as "making mountains out of molehills." He would frequently lament, "Sometimes you have to hurt people." I suspect he did. I wondered what it was they were teaching in the school of psychiatry to come to such conclusions. But at least I was not amnesic to the sessions and no electric shock was employed. We had one family session in which my father again repeated his complaints about me that I was always stirring up trouble. I felt that was an untrue statement, so I just walked out.

I found Dr. T's credentials on the Internet proudly displayed on his personal web pages. Interestingly he graduated from High School in 1942, but instead of going into military service in World War II, he went on to college earning his Bachelors of Science degree in 1945. He was in the U.S. Navel Reserve from 1943 to 1944 and again in 1946, so he owned them something. He then earned his MD in less than two years. Close association with the U.S. Military, no active duty, accelerated through school, somebody liked him. His Military record included Chief of Psychiatry at Barksdale AFB, Bossier City, Louisiana, Staff psychiatrist at Tachikawa AFB, Japan, and Chief of Psychiatrist Services at Headquarters 5th Air Force, Korea. He did his residency in V.A. Hospitals. And he was a part of such things as being the Psychiatric Consultant, Detached Service to U.S. Army, Operation "Big Switch," Ossan, Korea & USS Black. He must have worked closely with the CIA. He was associated with the secret societies and the Nazis as my family knew him on a personal level. And he wrote professional papers with Dr. Jacobs, who occasionally gossiped about him. I assume if I had access to Dr. Jacobs' background it would be similar. Strangely his history is very similar to another famous psychiatrist, Dr. Louis Jolyon West, for many years director of UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute and whose links to MKULTRA are virtually uncontested. Both West and Dr. T were born in 1924, both went to the University of Wisconsin, Madison, instead of active duty in the military. Both earned an MD under the wing of the military's specialized training program. In 1952 both were stationed in San Antonio Texas, West as Chief of Psychiatry Services at the Lackland Air Force Base and Dr. T at the U. S. School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph AFB. (In 1953 he became Chief of Psychiatry at Barksdale AFB.) Both were trained as psychiatrists and both were associated professionally with UCLA. It's hard to believe they didn't know one another both personally and professionally. The one big lesson I learned from the experience was "be worthless for any possible use." I think it was the thing that made them finally give up on me.

[1] Committed and Abused: Were Quebec's Orphans Used as Guinea Pigs? By Christine Hahn (Freedom Magazine)

[2] Wikipedia: Central Intelligence Agency

[3] Unholy Trinity by Mark Aarons and John Loftus (St. Martin's Griffin, New York, 1998), pp. 70-87

[4] Wikipedia: Operation Paperclip

[5] Wikipedia: Allen Welsh Dulles

[6] Martin Bormann: Nazi In Exile by Paul Manning (1981), pp. 254-256

[7] Time - The Weekly Newsmagazine, March 16 1942, American Malvern, pp. 44-47

[8] Wikipedia: Sidney Gottlieb

16

War on Truth

In 1951, the Columbia Broadcasting System, with its "eye" logo, began a relationship with the CIA.[1] Under the espionage and counter-intellegence branch of the CIA, an operation so secret that it didn't have a name was started which concentrated on influencing the domestic and foreign media. In 1975 its activities were made public during the Church Committee investigation. It was later named Operation Mockingbird. Philip Graham of the Washington Post was recruited to run the project within the industry. Members of the New York Times, Newsweek, CBS and others went along. The CIA often commissioned articles and even provided classified information to help with the work.[2] And the media began its long decent into propaganda and mind control. Project Mockingbird has since grown to such proportions that one doesn't know if a story is real or a CIA fabrication, whether listened to on the radio, viewed on television or seen at the movies. Everything we see and hear in the media is starting to beat the same drum with little or no opposition, much of it highly dysfunctional as it attacks morality, society and the family. Perhaps when the media no longer makes us feel good it's time to just turn it all off.

History is full of examples of the media's enormous and uncritical power to control all the rest of us. When the powers that be want us to enthusiastically go along with something that is bad, they use a media blitz. The Reagan administration started just such a blitz of almost holy proportions on the value of taking tax money and giving it to private companies to do the government's job. The reality is that Reaganomics, marked by privatization, deregulation and commercialization, helped the Vatican and its supporters the global industrialists, the Nazis and the Mafia, as they all diligently worked for a world takeover and a New World Order, but it didn't benefit the general public.

The Mafia gets much sympathetic press in the media, when in reality it is a dangerous secret society. When the Mafia neophyte becomes an associate then a soldier an orientation ritual is performed such as the spilling of blood from a pricked finger onto a scared religious image, which is lit on fire and held until consumed. Many of the Mafia's occult rituals and customs were based on Catholic confraternities, Freemasonry and even military-religious orders of chivalry.[3] The Mafia and the Vatican are often blood brothers.

The story of the Gigante brothers illustrates the close ties of the Vatican and Mafia criminal infiltration of government agencies in the United States through "privatization," glorified by the media but in reality is just another word for the stealing of tax dollars into criminal enterprises. Father Louis Gigante, a priest for the Catholic Church, and his brother and confident, reputed Genovese crime family boss Vincent "The Chin" Gigante, are just one example. Father Gigante, a former City Councilman and head of the Bronx's biggest housing empire, was SEBCO's chief, a for-profit management company which won a 2.75 million dollar contract from the New York City Housing Authority (NYCHA) to manage its nonprofit Murphy housing project. The priest used mob-connected contractors in developing over 2,500 units SEBCO produced in the South Bronx, which were reasonably well managed, unlike the NYCHA properties, which were reported maintained in very poor condition, the income going directly into SEBCO's bank account.[4]

The media beats the drums of war and the threat of "Terrorists." It supports a ridiculous hypothesis of the attack on the Twin Towers and 911, which is scientifically impossible. The more brazen those in power become; the closer to their goal of a takeover of the country, the more the media supports the ridiculous. Empire is built by only one mechanism, war. War concentrates wealth and power. While peace may bring prosperity to the general populace, war robs the people and concentrates the wealth into the hands of the few. Again we are faced with the issue of intent. The wheels of war are greased by fear, especially through the public demonstration of torture, which is often rationalized under such excuses as intelligence gathering.

Torture is not done to gain intelligence information, as is told the public through the media, so that they will excuse the activity because they think it benefits them. Torture is a game of terror. And it doesn't disappear because it works, at least in the moment. This game has two players; the one who tortures is educated in terror techniques and the one being tortured has his free will crushed, enhancing mind control. Both are important. In the modern debate over what constitutes torture, waterboarding comes under public scrutiny in the media. The waterboarding torture dates from the Italian Inquisition in the 1500s. The prisoner is bounded, gagged and water poured over him so he starts to be drowned. In the modern version, of this Catholic Church Inquisition technique, the victim is handcuffed and his face covered with cellophane.[5] If one wonders why a practice that reveals unreliable confessions is still used, the obvious answer is that the CIA is simply the latest in a long history of Grand Inquisitors.

One of the very scary things the media has done in my view concerns the Scott Peterson trial. When no hard evidence was ever found to convict Scott, the media went after his personality. All the "experts" on television, who had never interviewed Scott, angrily declared him a sociopath or a psychopath, and quickly convinced the public to this "fact." This was not based on anything violent he had done in the past. Scott had an affair and had a habit of flirting while married. One might label him an adulterer or a sex addict. Scott was inclined, for whatever reason, to tell little white lies. He became dissociative, which may have resulted in reduced reality testing, after his family disappeared. But the only evidence that Scott was a sociopath would be that he killed his wife and unborn child. In other words the media was declaring Scott a murderer by labeling him a sociopath before he had the justice of a trial. Whatever the truth, if this is how we conduct the judicial system in America, we are all at risk of being the target of stones cast by the very suspect, globally controlled Media. Anyone, by such criteria as was used on Scott, could be labeled a sociopath. The case was about to bring Satanic Cults to the public's attention, was that the reason for the media's behavior? As quickly as Scott was labeled a sociopath, Satanic Cults were declared nonexistent. The cult "expert" Rick Ross led the attack with his many public statements that Satanic Cults were an urban myth. It shows the power of the media, that by a well-orchestrated attack they could put a man on death row with zero physical evidence of his guilt. Dr. Jeffrey Mac Donald also sits in prison for the murder of his pregnant wife and two young daughters, suppressing any mention or evidence of the satanic cult suspected in that 1970 crime.

Words, such as sociopath, can be defined as anything, and the media can be used to push the new definition. One's political opponent might be re-defined as a "terrorist." To give these new definitions more clout, laws could be enacted that support the new definition. While one's political opponent may be neutral everyone knows a terrorist or a sociopath is bad. Just as fuzzy as what constitutes a "terrorist" or a "sociopath" is what constitutes "hate speech." Yet, all over the world there is a push to legislate Hate Speech Laws. Who is manipulating our politicians and the media in these deadly word games? On the Internet there is a clue. A website, with a document called Project Vatican was posted. It caused such a stir it has since disappeared.[6] But the Project Vatican document, hoax or real, is worth an examination. Like the Satanic Bible gives clues to Satanism, Project Vatican gives clues to the motivations of those who seek world domination.

According to the document on the website, Project Vatican is dedicated to restoration of the Global Kingdom of Jesus Christ in the third millennium, by means of a five-fold plan:

"I. The Jesuit infiltration of the English colonies on the North American continent."

"II. Jesuit control of Christian schools and universities."

"III. Roman Catholic control exercised through Vatican operatives in the United States military, judiciary and media."

"IV. The weakening of the U.S. military, both in strength and resolve, in preparation for the Vatican-led One World Government."

"V. Total control of all institutions and resources on Planet Earth, including political, military, economic, educational, religious and environmental systems, for the purpose of ensuring global peace, prosperity and order."
"Phase I through Phase IV have taken 523 years to complete, and at the dawn of the third millennium Project Vatican is poised to launch Phase V." The implementation strategies for Phase V of Project Vatican include:

"Devotion to the Sacred Heart of Jesus and to the Immaculate Heart of Mary through the perpetuation of visions, miracles and revelations."
(The most notable includes the Miracle of the Sun in 1917 at Fatima.)

"Dilution of the eschatological models of Biblical prophesy by means of the aforementioned extrabiblical revelations."
(It is speculated that Protestantism will fall when they are no longer able to defend and promote their "last days" interpretations of the Bible. This will help remove the "papal threat" from pulpits of Reformation congregations.)

"The alignment of the homosexual agenda with religious and racial equality, guaranteeing a support base sufficient in number to legislate Biblical Christian fundamentalism into the category of 'hate speech'."
(The Vatican will then be free to implement the Roman Catholic Ecumenical Assemblies (RCEA) as the only legal religious assembly. This will pave the way for the arrest, incarceration and re-education of all clergy and their families who are not in communion with the RCEA.)

"International monopolistic control of all financial institutions and transactions."
(Corporation can label every citizen with a bar code, which will allow the World Trade Organization (WTO) to join the European Roman Empire (ERE) system in identifying all citizens and monetary transactions. The numbers 666 are used in implementing this citizen accounting system.)

"The Global Eucharistic Community."
(Compel international compliance to Eucharistic adoration and communion - One World Religion of Roman Catholicism. According to the document, the Global Eucharistic Community will force us to observe a literal interpretation of their version of the Bible in which we are to eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood. And then we are all to confess our sins.)

I think there just might be a little opposition to such ideas as put forth by strategies for Phase V of Project Vatican. Some might consider accepting the labeling by VISA with its 666 Mark of the Beast bar code and the eating of flesh and drinking of blood a sin. Not everyone sees the world in the same way. Perhaps it is a good thing to have many religions through which people may express their devotion to God. Diversity makes the world a far more interesting place, besides providing an arena in which new ideas can be exchanged.

Will the media be instrumental in convincing the world we need the Vatican to have total control of all institutions and resources on the Planet Earth, as stated in point V of the Project Vatican document? And if the Vatican does have total control, will this bring enduring global peace, prosperity and order?

Pope Leo XIII in 1880 named St. Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274) patron of all Catholic universities, academies, colleges and schools throughout the world.[7] A close look at the writing of this man of the Church makes a good case for home schooling. Taken from Summa Theologiae a part of his body of works is the following quote.

"With regard to heretics two points must be observed: one, on their own side; the other, on the side of the Church. On their own side there is the sin, whereby they deserve not only to be separated from the Church by excommunication, but also to be severed from the world by death."[8]

The only "peace" the teaching of Thomas Aquinas would bring is "rest in peace."

Who would manage the control over all institutions and resources on the Planet Earth? Apparently the Vatican's army of Nazis would be one big player. Remarks made by the Dr. Rath Health Foundation sum up just how little has changed the Nazi grip on the world through their control of powerful global industries.

"Just fifteen years after they were convicted in the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal, Bayer, BASF and Hoechst were again the architects of the next major human rights offences. In 1962, they established the Codex Alimentarius Commission."

"The deceptive title 'Codex Alimentarius' is no accident. It was devised by the same firms and indeed the same individuals, who gave the Auschwitz concentration camp inmates the deceptive slogan 'Arbeit macht frei' ('Work makes you free')."

The word 'codex' refers to a book produced from Late Antiquity through the Middle Ages, and is a Roman invention of bound separate pages that replaced the scroll. This New World Order intends to return us all to the Dark Ages, right down to its terminology.[9]

Nature is an ecological system of opposition. Nowhere in the natural world is there not a continuing fight to survive. Remove gravity and calcium begins to flow out of our bones. Remove opposition in the political system and death on a massive scale results. A Utopian one-world government is not a dream that brings peace it is a nightmare that brings devastation. Under a global system, a disaster becomes instantly global. Failure of one part of the system creates suffering for all, by design. No man, no group has the wisdom to anticipate all that may go wrong. Insuring some isolation and diversity helps ensure survival of the species in times of global turmoil. God's design set the world up with isolated pockets of interdependent life for a reason. God created diversity for a reason. Only God has the wisdom to rule.

As some human beings, none-the-less, seek to become as gods, the measure of their success is numbered in human slaves. It is difficult to see the evolutionary advantage in the infantile dependence of such a system. The beehive may build a huge structure, but the Queen faces death without the cooperation of her army of workers. The bear, on the other hand, meets survival based upon his own wits. Who is cleverer, the bee or the bear? I think perhaps humans have reached a crossroads. Do they want to function independently, with dignity, with a variety of cultures? If they do they must learn to cooperate and respect one another.

To have a brighter future the intent of our institutions can no longer be conquest and endless war. Nor can it be the perpetration of the idea that safety lies only in the center of the hive of human aggression against the insecurity of the outside world. That is the function of prayer, to escape to the safety of God in times of stress. The answer cannot be to make these institutions of power bigger to solve the problem of their dysfunction. The answer must lie in a change in their intent. If we want the individual to thrive, our churches must preach respect for the individual, not obedience to some hidden evil agenda of power for those at the top, and then say that is what God wants. Such institutions often seem focused on greed. Do we worship a god that loves money? Morality is not something one does to please God or to get to heaven when one dies. Morality is something one practices to have a good life and in the end to gain that most precious of gifts, self respect.

[1] Wikipedia: Central Intelligence Agency

[2] Wikipedia: Operation Mockingbird

[3] Wikipedia: Mafia

[4] City Limits Magazine, February 1997, Murphy's Flaw by Glenn Thrush

[5] ABC News Report, Brian Ross, Nov. 29, 2005

[6] http://projectv.nventure.com

[7] New Advent Encyclopedia: St. Thomas Aquinas

[8] New Advent > Summa Theologiae > Second Part of the Second Part > Question 11 Article 3. Whether heretics ought to be tolerated?

[9] Wikipedia: Codex

The Vatican ratline brought a plague to the world that is infecting the flow of time, as we all cascade back to the Middle Ages, with its crusades, inquisition, slave trade, constant war and conquering of nations. The Jesuits, the soldiers of the Pope, are leading the brigade, with the Nazi run CIA as Grand Inquisitor. Even the sixteenth century inquisition torture technique known as waterboarding is back. This is also the true story of one survivor of the horror building up to the biggest holocaust money can buy, the Vatican's New World Order.

Unshackled:

A Survivor's Story of Mind Control

KATHLEEN SULLIVAN

“Ten years ago we provided support to a woman exiting a ritual abuse-torture (RAT) family and group. At that time the social silence about the reality of RAT was deafening. Kathleen Sullivan is continuing to break this silence by speaking of the atrocities she experienced as an infant, child, youth, and vulnerable adult. Her writings are an important contribution to a civil and human rights movement focused on developing a child friendly world.”

— Linda MacDonald RN, BN, MEd &
Jeanne Sarson RN, BScN, MEd

“I met Kathleen Sullivan near the beginning of my healing as a ritual abuse survivor. We connected through PARC-VRAMC. It was early in the survivor movement, but Kathleen was already there reaching out to others and sharing her knowledge of recovery issues. I purchased one of her books, *Lessons We Have Learned: A Survival Guide*, and found it full of valuable information. She told me about her living memorial garden to honor the dead and comfort those who had survived. I was able to see some of the gardens, walkways and monuments in her newsletters and on her website.

“When I considered starting my own non-profit organization, it was Kathleen who pointed me in the right direction and assured me I could succeed. With determination, I found my way through the stacks of government forms. Kathleen has remained a courageous and outspoken advocate to this day. She is an example of strength and fortitude. I wish her much success with her new book. She has earned that success. May her book be a means to educate the public and assist survivors around the world.’

— Jeanne Adams,
founder of Mr. Light & Associates, Inc.

“Kathleen Sullivan makes the critical connection between the communications industry and the mind control projects. Her ability to see through the pain and horror to the truth, the actual reasons behind the systematic abuse of children, is exceptional. I highly recommend this book for those interested not only in what happened, but why.”

— Patty Rehn,
US Contact
The Advocacy Committee for
Human Experimentation Survivors (ACHES-MC)

“We all look for the purpose God gave us to be put on this earth. Sometimes we come to find out that purpose. If I have one thing to teach from my experience, it is that we must be knowledgeable so we don’t continue to make the same mistakes and allow bad people to take advantage of us and our children. The answer is there. Dig for truth and then share it.”

— Jackie McGauley, Advocate,
Affirming Children’s Truth (ACT)
TunnelReport@aol.com

“As a criminal justice trainer and consultant on cult crimes and crimes against children, one of the difficult tasks is coming to terms with the unacceptable evils that are done against little ones. One has a choice: ignore it and pretend it isn’t real or face it and do something about it. The second way is more painful and difficult; but to do nothing is to let the evil flourish. Ms. Sullivan’s book is a book that demands a response. Read it only if you are prepared to be responsible for the awful truth you will learn, and brave enough not to turn away.”

— Dr. Gregory Reid, DD
Occult Research and Crime Consultants

Unshackled

A Survivor's Story of Mind Control

Kathleen Sullivan

A Dandelion Books Publication
www.dandelionbooks.net
Tempe, Arizona

In Memorium

Penny
Cindy
“Momma”
Molly
Daddy K.
J. Hodges
David
Deborah
Peter D.
Rose
Grandma S.
Lola D.
Valerie Wolfe
Lorraine B.

I am grateful for having had the opportunity to spend a bit of time with each of you. I thank you for having shown me—in your unique ways—the better path. I look forward to seeing you again in the next life. Until then, God bless and keep you.

With all my love,

Kathleen

Contents

Foreword xvii
Author's Introduction xxiii

Government Programming 1
What Happened? 1
Agencies and Organizations 2
Government Facilities 3
Black Ops 5
Travel to Exotic Places 7
Firefight 9
Validation 12

Early Years 15
Good Times 15
Infancy 19
Early Childhood 20
Elementary School 21
Middle School 21
Ritual Abuse 22
Dr. Black 24
Undamaged 25
Nazi Meetings 27
Dr. J 27

Sexual Abuse 33
Dissociation 33
Orgies 33
Parental Dissociation 34
Pedophilia 35
Sex Equaled Love 36
Kiddy Porn 37
Comfortably Numb 38

Family Matters 42
Physical Conditioning 42
My Father's Sadism 42
Grandma M's Kindness 47
Grandpa M's Control 49
Racism 49
Interpreter 50
Nazi Recruitment 51
Paternal Grandparents 52

Basic Programming 57
Western Electric 57
Experimental Laboratory 58
Chain Programming 59
Wizard of Oz 61
Otherword 63
Greek Alphabet 64

Horrification 72
House of Horrors 72
Arson 73
Nightmares 74
Perpetrator Alter-States 74

Adolescence 77
Junior High 77
Cross-Country 78
High School 78

Georgia Rebellion 81
Georgia 81
Acting Out 82
Sexuality 83
Pastor Hodges 84
Exercise Regimen 85
Violence 86
LSD 87
Secret Investigation 87

Escalation 88
Running Away 89
Mission Possible 90
School Intervention 90
Busted 91
Turnaround 92
Volunteer Work 92
Divorce 93

Married 96
Albert 96
Albert's Family 97
Pregnant 98
Illinois 99
Married 100
Nursing Home 101
The Sisters 104
Baby Rose 104
Love Lost 106

Brainwashed 114
Immersion 114
Energy Exchange 115
Submission 116
Insanity 118

Memory Manipulation 121
Temp Jobs 121
Op Preparations 122
"Husbands" 124
Blammo 124
Movie Screens 126
Memory Scrambles 129

Enslaved 132
Ecclesia Split 132
Local Church 133
Atlanta 133

Local Airport 133
Aryan Cult Network 134
Child Victims 137

Cover Positions 141
Reinsurance Clerk 141
Maryland Casualty 141
Cotton States 146
Covert Activities 147

Interventions 155
Grandma’s Gift 155
Meadowlark 155
The Mansion 157
William 159
ASA 160
Coercion 160

Freedom 164
Baptist Church 164
Albert’s Affair 166
Facing the Truth 169
Not Crazy 170
Going It Alone 171
New Ministry 171
Falling Apart 172

New Family 174
Bill 174
Pentecostal Church 174
Religious Control 175
Married 175
Blended Family 177
Learning to Communicate 177
Schism 178
Arrest 178
Crossroads 179
Letting Go 180

Reality Check 183
Codependency 183
Incest 184
Notifying the Authorities 184
Arrest Warrant 185
Intimidation 185
Left-Hand Memories 186
West Paces Ferry Hospital 188
Dr. Adams 189
Suicide Attempt 190

Death 194
Gone 194
Dreaming of Justice 194
Phone Call 195
Final Visit 195
Funeral 196
Disposal 197
Betrayal 198
Epitaph 199

Healing 202
Charter-Peachford 202
Clash with Religion 207
SIA 209
Therapeutic Fragments 210

Alter-States 226
Back to the One 226
Inner Children 230
New York City Ritual 234
Suicide Programming 235
Bethesda PsychHealth 236
Cindy – Age 5 238
Nikki – Age 13 238
Dolly/Dreia – Age 7 239
Andreia – Teenaged Part 240
Catalina – Teenaged Part 241

Little Kathy – Age 4 241
Renee – Age 8 242
Kate – Adult Part 242
Home Alters 243
Internal Cooperation 256

Traumatic Memories 277
Dr. R 277
Dr. X 277
Charter-Grapevine 279
Witch Hunt 281
Therese 284
Black Op Alter-States 284
Reframing 286
Return to Texas 288
Exploring the Dark Side 289
Verifications 292
Phobias 293

Witness 298
Suicide? 298
Memories of Dad's Murder 300
"You Killed Your Dad" 303
Was He Moved? 303
Multiple Emotions 304
Self-Defense 305
Suicide by Lifestyle 305

Connections 325
Bill's Past 325
More Verifications 327
Reaching Out 335

"Good Guy" Perpetrators 339
The Luciferian 339
Dr. J 343
Unethical Hypnosis 350
Recycled Predators 351

Going Public 357
  Talking to a Wall 357
  Internet Connections 357
  Reaccessed 358
  Believe the Children 359
  Helen 360
  Silenced 361

The Void 369
  This is to Mother You 369
  On the Wings of an Angel 374

Letting Go of the Guilt 378
  Sociopathic Mentality 378
  Divided Personality 380
  Addiction to Secrecy 382
  Defusing the Threat 383
  Cult Recruitment 384
  Nazi Sadism and Rituals 385
  Never Forgotten 387
  Understanding My Father 389
  Not Guilty 393

Saying Goodbye 402
  Goodbye, Fantasy Mom 402
  Goodbye, Childhood Family 406

Coming Home 410

New Life 418
  Progress 418
  Gift to Myself 419

Bibliography 425
Recommended Reading 430
Supportive Organizations for Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Survivors 433
Index 437

It is from numberless diverse acts of courage and belief that human history is shaped. Each time a person stands up for an ideal, or acts to improve the lot of others, or strikes out against injustice, he sends forth a tiny ripple of hope, and crossing each other from a million different centers of energy and daring, those ripples build a current which can sweep down the mightiest walls of oppression and resistance.

— Robert Kennedy

Foreword

By H. Michael Sweeney[1]

What is mind control, this curious force that is rarely mentioned in the mass media? Mind control can be traced back to the earliest of ancient history, in the sacrificial rites of the worshipers of Baphomet and other Satanic idols of Biblical times. It is also a tool that has been scientifically developed and cultivated by the CIA and other intelligence organizations; it is ultimately an instrument of political control.

The focused and intentional abuse of a small child can result in forcing the mind to split into multiple personalities, a phenomenon that under normal circumstances has traditionally been thought of as rare. Those who use it as a tool to program people want us to believe that Multiple Personality Disorder, or Dissociative Identity Disorder, as it is now known, does not exist, or that patients who display its symptoms are either prompted to do so by dishonest therapists, or are imitating something they have seen in a book or movie.

In reality, the mind of a normal child readily splits into alter-personalities when repeatedly and inescapably subjected to unspeakable terrors. The split-off alter contains the memories of the terrors behind a veil of amnesia. Though deeply scarred, this terror-ridden fragmentary personality will be suppressed, leaving the primary self relatively free to continue in life without further displaying any symptoms of the suffering the victim has endured. Sadly, this desperate form of self-preservation can be manipulated with evil intention.

In mind-control programming, this effect is achieved time and time again, creating dozens, hundreds, or even, as with Kathleen Sullivan, thousands of fragmented alter personalities. Each tormented alter has a unique identity, life experience, personality, set of moral values, skills and capabilities, fears and weaknesses, and even a unique understanding of reality itself. In fact, some can be so detached from reality that they believe they are objects or animals, not even human at all. These beliefs reflect their programming. How they are actually used is up to their programmers or handlers.

Programmed operatives are not fictitious entities invented for theatrical productions. Take *The Manchurian Candidate*, an action-adventure-spy thriller. It is considered a form of imaginative entertainment; however, the book and film were based on top-secret, classified information involving the intelligence activities of Red China, Korea, and the United States. This knowledge is in the hands of other nations, too, including the "good guys" in England, Canada, and Australia. As early as World War One, countries on both sides relied on early "prototypes" for spy work, ever advancing the technology and learning by its use as they went.

Through methodical manipulations via drugs, hypnosis, torture and training, it is possible to create a Manchurian Candidate; a programmable person with absolute obedience. There seems to be no limit to the complexity and ingenuity employed in this process. Handlers pick and choose alters, assign them duties, and give them their own set of memories, instructions, triggers, and fail-safe booby traps, to ensnare anyone attempting psychological reconstruction of the self. Once the ability to fragment has been established, other alters are cultivated to amplify their skills and taught how to best serve their master. Examples of controlled programming can be found among serial killers, mass murderers, and even terrorists whose "inexplicable" crimes explode in living color on our television screens.

As much as I would like to, I cannot discount the vastness of this phenomenon. The sad fact is, the technology is so well-researched, and so easy to employ, it is being used in truly creative ways. I estimate there are now tens of thousands of "sleepers" in place and certainly hundreds of active programmed operatives with experiences comparable to Kathleen Sullivan's. Other experts in the field mention even higher estimates.

Evidence of the perpetration of mind control by agencies of the United States government has found its way into the Congressional Record and proposed state and national legislation. Government documents from MKULTRA and Project Paperclip have been released under the Freedom of Information Act. Patents for devices that allow control of the mind have been filed. Articles in medical journals and scientific papers discuss advancements in the technology. Interviews with medical professionals who are dealing with the aftermath of uncontrolled experimentation and manipulation have been published. Themes involving mind control are found in fiction, music, television and film, and documented in confessions by perpetrators and victims. Brazen bragging by the likes of Satanist and military psyops expert, Michael Aquino, has placed valuable confirmations on the record.

Those few brave victims of mind control who have come forward, typically report being used as lab rats in bizarre experiments, and in many cases, sent on missions. What makes Kathleen Sullivan's story so remarkable is that she reluctantly admits having been used to kill. In the course of relating how that came about, she reveals unique and invaluable insights into the infrastructure, the methodologies, and the purpose behind it all.

Our first instinct is to turn away from any ugliness. Although the experiences revealed in *Unshackled* are painful and often repugnant, we dare not turn away, for this is not only a bold and courageous revelation; it also serves notice that just as we are all victims of these atrocities, so we all have the potential to free ourselves from their insidious influence, to resist and transcend them.

Our whole society is affected by the sanctioned use of our own non-consenting citizens as programmed assassins. Insofar as we are persuaded by propaganda not only to tolerate such a practice, but also to endorse it, we all become enmeshed in the machinery that makes mind control work.

In becoming aware of the baneful influence of propaganda, it is helpful to bear in mind that our world history is not the random happenstance as presented in what they call the "news." I am skeptical of messages purveyed by the mass media because these corporations are largely owned by military contractors and have been compromised by CIA interests ever since Operation Mockingbird; at this point you will find thousands of intelligence operatives in key positions of what you may believe to be our "free press."

Thus, whenever some explosion, assassination or other tragedy seems to "just happen," especially when there are unasked and unanswered questions, there is a very good chance that a programmed operative was involved, either as the doer of the deed, or as a patsy set up to take the blame for it. The questions that should be asked will become readily apparent. To unravel the clues, always start with the question, *"Cui bono?"* Who benefits, or whose agenda will now be less encumbered? Then ask what social changes are being promoted by opinion-makers, often citing reports of polls. Connect the dots, and a recognizable picture of mind control will emerge.

Most victims of mind control programming are not assassins. Many have been used less dramatically to infiltrate and manipulate the development of corporations, foundations, agencies, and other socially influential infrastructures. Many more seem not to have been used at all; as sleepers, they may simply be awaiting some future event requiring them to be triggered into action.

While historically, the CIA has been the most significant developer of programmed operatives, today it is clear that the same technology has been widely used by other groups, including intelligence agencies of other nations, various mafias and occult groups, select "elite" families, and perhaps most frightening of all, certain churches and fraternal organizations. What makes the latter so frightening is that many of them operate networks of hospitals and clinics that specifically involve themselves in the creation of programmed victims, as well as the recapture and reprogramming of those whose control mechanisms seem to be slipping.

In my first book, *The Professional Paranoid*, I listed over 400 CIA fronts and CIA-influenced companies and institutions. Fully half of these are involved with mind control. Half of those seem bent on convincing us that mind control does not work, and that complaints of ritual abuse are nothing more than false memories induced by bad therapists. I'd rather that was true. But in point of fact, nearly a third of all my clients turn out to have suffered ritual abuse and/or programming, though when they initially reached out for help, they generally had no concept of what lay behind their problems. Virtually every one of these people has had some exposure to cults, military intelligence or the CIA. None had been to therapists, except those belonging to these groups—their programmers.

Mind control is a covert crime perpetrated by covert means. There are organizations which have been established to rush in and ensure any exposure of the crime is dealt with quickly, and effectively covered up with disinformation. It thus remains the perfect crime, reduced to nothing more than a mysterious bump in the long, dark night of our political and social nightmare.

Victims of mind control often do not realize they are victims. They are even less likely to wake up to their own reality if there are people deliberately put into their lives to ensure the secrecy–people disguised as friends, relatives, or coworkers–their handlers and programmers. In my book, *MC Realities*, I offer a long list of symptoms and clues to help identify such unhappy states, as well as advice on how to fight back.

It is not a hopeless journey, but it is a perilous and difficult one. This book is testimony that success can be had.

Unshackled will cause many readers to question whether we are being told the truth about the political and social landscape of our world. If you value the purpose of our laws and our constitutional rights, if you treasure free will and the pursuit of happiness, you will realize that these rights are in jeopardy for all of us, when they are denied to anyone.

Notes

1. H. Michael Sweeney is the author of the following publications:
    - *The Professional Paranoid: How to Fight Back When Investigated, Stalked, Harassed, or Targeted by Any Agency, Group, or Individual.*
    - *MC Realities: Understanding, Detecting, and Defeating Mind Control and Electronic Weapons of Political Control Technology.*
    - *The ProParanoid Newsletter.*
    - *The ProParanoid Reference CD-ROM: A collection of materials useful to victims, investigators, and students of the intelligence community, mind control, and political intrigues.*

These publications are available from his website, http://www.proparanoid.com. Readers may request a sample newsletter by sending an email to theprogrammedassassin@proparanoid.com.

Author's Introduction

By way of introduction, I am above all a dedicated American. A physician might describe me as a "well-nourished Caucasian female of average height and weight," and note that I have naturally brown, short straight hair and gray-blue eyes. I am neither beautiful nor ugly, which means that most people would scarcely notice me in a crowd–an important asset during my covert past.

As far back as I can remember, my IQ has tested toward the high end. I'm grateful for my intelligence because I have been able to use my mind analytically to come to terms with what was done to me.

Because of the traumas I sustained for more than three decades, I spent most of my life severely dissociated. From one day to the next, I didn't know who I was. Although I'm now fairly integrated, I may continue to have occasional flashbacks and may shift more in my moods than those who have never been prone to dissociation.

As of the date of *Unshackled's* publication, I continue to study Social Work at a local university, with an additional minor in psychology. Although I struggle with an anxiety disorder (PTSD), I've managed–thus far–to keep a high grade point average.

My initial vocational goal is to become a Licensed Clinical Social Worker (LCSW). I hope to help other trauma survivors find their way to richer and fuller healing, and to teach mental health professionals how to work more effectively with severely dissociated clients.

In part, my healing process has focused on finding positive value in the years of trauma that I endured. If I didn't believe that I could turn evil into good, I would not have fought so hard to survive the pain of my past.[1]

Unshackled has not been easy to write, nor will it be pleasant to read. Much of my past was ugly and brutal. Although I have done my best to remove any gory details that do not go to the very essence of my story, some sections will still be difficult to read. If you feel uncomfortable with any information in this book, please feel free to skip that section and go on to the next.

Although the traumas I describe may seem more than any human can endure, I assure you I not only endured them, but am now healing from their long-term effects. I hope that in a way, this book will be a testament to the strength and creativity of every ritual abuse and mind control survivor. We've been through hell and have lived to tell you about it–if you're willing to listen.

Too many TV shows, books, and movies promote the idea that being a professionally trained operative is exciting and adventurous. Nothing could be further from the truth. Assassinations in particular take assailants to a place in their souls where no mentally healthy person would want to go.

One of the reasons I have chosen to tell my story is my anger at the people who broke my mind and conditioned me to become a mentally controlled slave, and at those men and women who used me to harm precious innocents at the risk of my own life. I am angry that I have needed many tens of thousands of insurance benefit dollars to heal. I am angry that I am (as of the date of publication) still legally disabled because of what was done to my mind, body and soul. I am especially angry at detractors, some with "M.D." or "Ph.D." after their names, who publicly label ritual abuse and mind control survivors "fabricators" and "liars"–while hiding the fact that they (the detractors) have ugly covert reasons for attacking us.

I am going public about my past because I have run out of patience with those who perpetuate the following lies:

- Ritual crime does not occur in North America, or
- Ritual abuse in North America is a phenomenon that has suddenly appeared out of thin air;
- Because survivors' stories are bizarre, they cannot possibly have occurred (in other words, bizarre equals impossible);
- Hypnosis cannot be used to influence people to perform acts against their will, or
- Hypnosis doesn't exist;
- Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID), formerly known as Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD), is fabricated, rare, and/or bizarre;
- Dissociation is caused by demonic possession;
- Pagans and occultists are demonically possessed or spiritually evil;

- People commit evil acts because they are driven by evil spirits;
- Recovered memories of childhood abuse are unreliable, fabricated, or have been implanted by unethical therapists;
- Repressed memory doesn't exist;
- People who remember, in therapy, that they were abused as children, are likely to drag the abusers through the court system and destroy their reputations;
- Child sexual abuse survivors are not responsible for their decisions to remove themselves from unsafe family members, when they remember what those individuals did to them–their therapists are;
- Child sexual abuse survivors are solely responsible (or maybe their therapists are, too) for "destroying" their childhood families if they say what was done to them; and therefore,
- The child molesters and rapists are not responsible for the long-term effects of their crimes within the family and the lives of their victims;
- People who claim to be survivors of child abuse are sick and want to stay in a fake victim role;
- People who claim to have been abused by family members are playing a "blame game" to avoid taking responsibility for their emotional problems;
- If FMSF spokespersons say that alleged child abusers–who have been successfully prosecuted–are not guilty, then they are innocent of all charges;
- Because the victims cannot prove what had been to them, they have fabricated their memories of the abuse;
- Sexual assaults against children are acts of love;
- Children want to be sexually assaulted;
- Children are not harmed by sexual assaults;
- Documented ritual abusers always work solo—they are not usually part of a larger criminal occult group that remains hidden;
- Even though Timothy McVeigh and Eric Rudolph were certainly brainwashed by the leaders of isolationist Aryan cults that encouraged violence, these young men and others like them have not been mentally controlled and manipulated to commit terrorist crimes;
- The CIA's MKULTRA program never included experimentation on, or traumatization of, children;

- The CIA's mind-control programs ceased in the mid 1970s;
- Such experimentation was unsuccessful and didn't go to the next step of creating mentally controlled slaves;
- Only the CIA has used mind control techniques against nonconsenting citizens;
- Those who claim to have recovered memories of having performed crimes in altered states of consciousness are seeking attention or want to be punished for crimes they never committed;
- People who recover memories of having been abducted and harmed by aliens are psychotic or insane;
- The CIA and US presidents never authorized illegal assassinations before 9/11;
- The CIA created assassination techniques and tools but never used them before 9/11;
- The worst of criminals can be identified by odd or deviant behaviors, isolationism, criminal records, a clear disinterest in participating in the local church, mosque or synagogue, making children uncomfortable by their presence, and so on;[2]
- The worst of criminals work alone–they can't get along with other criminals and therefore cannot successfully network and do business with other criminals;
- Pedophiles work alone–they don't meet as groups to share deviant materials and to assault children;
- Only males sexually abuse children;
- The worst of criminals don't operate in our neighborhood/town/county/state/country.

Most citizens in North America are still unaware of the existence of a large network of pedophiles and black-marketers who buy, sell, and use child and adult slaves in our continent and beyond. Because many of these slaves' bonds and chains are mental, they are invisible and difficult to prove in a court of law. Regardless, mental slavery is a clear and flagrant violation of our civil rights and should be addressed as such.[3]

Although this book includes information about my having been used in controlled alter-states as an assassin, I am not suggesting that all, or even most, mind-control survivors were trained or used to kill. I do not know what percentage of us have. I fervently hope that we are a small minority within the mind-control survivor community; if not, our country is in serious trouble.

Several people have suggested that I and other mind-control survivors could have used information from fictional movies and television shows to create "false memories." Although a few people may have done this, many mind-control survivors recalled specifics about techniques, agencies, types of programming, and more–*years* before such material was made available through television shows and movies. Most likely, scriptwriters used our stories that were available to the public in books, magazines, postings and websites to create their quasi-fictional stories.

Although fictional mind-control characters may appear sexually titillating, exciting, and appealing, our real experiences have consistently been demeaning and horrific.

I will share a *few* of my verifications with you. The remainder will remain in my possession as "life insurance," to ensure the safety of my loved ones and myself.

Until the early 1990s, I didn't know that I had a dissociative disorder and amnesia. My split-off altered states of consciousness (henceforth known as "alter-states" or "parts") had efficiently functioned away from my conscious awareness. Some people call this condition a "split personality," although it would be more accurate to say that my personality was shattered.

Contrary to popular opinion, Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) is not schizophrenia. Schizophrenia is a lifelong, hereditary chemical imbalance in the brain that is often successfully treated with psychotropic medications. Although a genetic component may increase a person's ability to develop DID, it isn't necessarily a lifelong disorder. It can be reversed, given the right kind of therapeutic help and support–in a safe environment.

A common, knee-jerk reaction to hearing the stories of survivors of ritualized abuse and mentally controlled slavery is that–because our stories are bizarre to the extreme–they cannot possibly be true. I've also observed a secondary reaction to our horrific stories: after claiming our stories are fabricated, these people openly deride us. (I find this reaction bizarre. Would they also roll down their windows, then point and laugh at victims of serious car wrecks as they drive by?)

I ask you to please keep in mind that we survivors have been exposed to hardcore criminal minds for whom what is considered bizarre in normal society, is their acceptable norm. Most of these criminals (mostly men) are intelligent sociopaths who have zero conscience and no fear of the law. My primary tormentor, a brilliant and creative man, often said to his criminal associates, "If it works, why not?" In other words, he wasn't mentally and emotionally constrained by written and unwritten social mores and rules. He and his associates had no limitations, other than their humanness, and therefore did *anything they chose* to reach their goals.

When deciding which life-information to incorporate in *Unshackled,* my litmus test was that I must be so certain about that information's validity, I would be (and still am) willing to swear to it in a court of law.

I am reasonably certain, and am therefore willing to testify, that the CIA was the agency primarily responsible for my having been experimented on and traumatized in controlled settings as a child, to eventually be used against my conscious will as a covert slave-operative.[4] I do not, however, want the CIA to be scapegoated. Other federal agencies and groups, including criminal occult leaders and Mafia organizations, also use mind control techniques on unwitting victims. I still value most of the services the CIA provides for our country. Those of its many thousands of employees and contractors who genuinely seek to do what is right for our society and the world should not be held accountable for the actions of criminals who secretly operate among them.

As I relate my past interactions with various organizations and groups, I am not suggesting that all of their members or employees would follow the examples of those individuals I was forcibly exposed to. Decent, caring people, as well as people of ill intent, can be found in every social and professional milieu.

Where I mention the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), I am not suggesting that all of its members are former CIA MKULTRA perpetrators, child molesters, and/or criminal occultists. Some members may have been falsely accused of crimes against children. Others may be so dissociated that they truly do not remember having hurt innocents. And some of the FMSF's supporters may have accepted the clever lies fed to them by more unsavory members–particularly its founders.[5]

Although I do mention mind-control techniques that I've witnessed in several Christian denominations, I am not suggesting that all, or most, of their ministers and pastors choose to use mind-control techniques on their congregations. I sincerely hope that those who do, will remain a small minority.

The opinions that I express in *Unshackled* are not the opinions of PARC-VRAMC [Positive Activism, Remembrance and Commemoration for Victims of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control], an advocacy organization I founded, nor are they the opinions of the book's publisher or editor. They are mine alone.

I do not want it to be used as a tool to recklessly slander or libel any person. For that reason, regardless of the ways that certain individuals harmed me in the past, I will not name most of them. I am, however, willing to testify in court about them if their identities are made public, and about those perpetrators I do name. Although human nature tends to sanctify the dead, history should not be unnaturally revised or contorted to meet the emotional needs of surviving family members.

Varying perspectives about an event or an individual can be equally valid. I ask that my childhood family respect my right to speak out about memories and recollections that may understandably differ from theirs. I regret any pain I stir up in the minds and hearts of those who know they were also victimized. And yet, I must remind them that I am not responsible for their pain; those who harmed them are. I hope that, if needed, they will seek professional help to cope with their painful pasts.

After learning of this book, other family members who are active perpetrators may try (again) to callously assault my mind and my character in an attempt to silence me and to dissuade other observers in the family from remembering, breaking free, and speaking the truth. To these perpetrators: I have the right to speak out about what was done to me, and by whom. Although I have not named some of you, I reserve the right to do so. If I am challenged in court, I will gladly testify against you. I'm sick unto death of carrying the back-breaking burden of the knowledge of our family's sins against the innocent. I'm laying that burden down and will not pick it up again. If going public means losing any remaining ties to the family, so be it. I'm worth it.

Because I focus attention on the behaviors of certain perpetrators who negatively changed the course of my life, I readily concede that the information I present about them may appear biased. I am not, however, suggesting that this is all they were and did. Some parts of their personalities were not destructive, and they may have even enriched the lives of others. No one is all good or all bad.

To protect the privacy of family members who acknowledge that they, too, were victimized, I will not reveal information from a number of their documents in my possession that directly verify some of my memories. Their stories belong to them.

While I have my stepmother's express permission to name and write about some of my experiences with my father, I have not released the names of my stepmother, mother, ex-husband, maternal grandparents, or surviving daughter. If you happen to know their names or identities, please do not reveal them to others. My goal with this book is not to shame them–even though those who are perpetrators deserve to feel ashamed. I also ask that the privacy of my father's adult children be respected.

To protect the identities of people I prefer not to name, I've given them the following aliases: Dr. J, Dr. T, Dr. X, Albert, Emily, Clyde, Dee, Fritz, Geena, Gerrie, Grandma M., Grandpa M., Grant, Dr. M, Helen, Janie, Jessie, Joan, Lucian, Pam, Pete, Poppa, Rose, and Therese.

To trauma survivors: this is a non-fictional account of my life, no one else's. If you sense that certain sections are similar to your own history, please skip those sections to avoid possible memory contamination.

Information about the criminal network within which that I was forced to co-exist may seem new and strange to some of you. My suggestion is to think of the groups and organizations comprising that network as a hidden co-culture that has operated, largely undetected, in Europe and North America since at least the 1940s.[6]

Not unlike the mafias, these organizations have rules and mores that are drastically different from those of "normal" society. And yet, as a full-fledged co-culture, their world has existed in plain sight, totally interconnected with mainstream society, politics, religion, academia, business, banking, entertainment, and more.

Although the leaders of this co-culture do not want the public to know that it exists, I hope *Unshackled* will help you to recognize some of their ideas and intentions, their activities and their endangered victims.

In my past, I was extensively exposed to individuals and groups who practiced the occult religions of Druidism, Satanism, Paganism, Rosicrucianism, and Luciferianism. Although at times I may appear to be biased against occult practitioners, I beg you to take my expressions in context; it was certain practitioners of these beliefs who hurt me and others.

In a similar way, I ask you to remember that not all Aryans and Neo-Nazis are like those who it is my regrettable duty to describe in this book. And please remember that most Germans are not Nazis.

Although I have written about a series of related crimes that I witnessed in Reading, Pennsylvania and in Cobb County, Georgia, I am not suggesting that local residents supported such activities, nor am I suggesting that local law enforcement personnel helped to conceal such crimes. The criminals were clever and well-financed, and had numerous high-tech resources that would have made detection and prosecution extremely difficult, if not impossible.

Since 1991, I have met other survivors of ritual abuse and mind control who independently verified my memories of experiences that we'd shared. Because they have reason to fear for their lives, I will not reveal their identities.

To protect myself legally and to preserve my life and the lives of my loved ones, I will not provide any identifying details of any crimes that I was forced to perform in the past.

Wherever you see the word "I," please be aware that I may be relating experiences that I'd had no awareness of, before I connected with split-off parts of my personality and mind.

Because I am only one limited person, and because I value my privacy, I am not willing to provide one-on-one support for those who read this book or learn of my history in other ways. If you need support or information, please feel free to utilize the resources listed at the end of this book.

What I experienced in my past, no other ritual abuse or mind control survivor has experienced in exactly the same way. And yet, much of what I describe in this book has also been experienced in a comparable way by many trauma victims and survivors. I gratefully dedicate this book to them.

Kathleen A. Sullivan
Tennessee, USA
http://www.kathleen-sullivan.com

Notes

1. " . . . positive reinterpretation of a traumatic event requires the victim to think about whatever positive gains or lessons can be gleaned from the horrific experience, and to focus on them in readjusting to the future . . . such positive reinterpretations are therapeutic, since they allow victims to see meaning in the world and to improve their self image, feeling stronger and more capable of confronting adversity." (Bower and Sivers, pg. 647)

2. If you are a parent or grandparent, daycare operator, school teacher, law enforcement officer, therapist, or minister; if you're none of the above and still want to know more about pedophile mentality; I strongly urge you to purchase Dr. Anna Salter's *Predators: Pedophiles, Rapists, and Other Sex Offenders* and keep it close at hand. *Predators* explains pedophile behaviors and mentality in a way I've not found in any other piece of literature. It breaks every entrenched myth about child molesters that can keep us from recognizing one in our midst–one who right now, this minute, may be hurting a child. I believe it should be required reading for anyone who has responsibility for the care of children.

3. Article XIII of the *Bill of Rights* states: "Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude, except as a punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, shall exist within the United States, or any place subject to their jurisdiction."

4. I am amazed that journalists and reporters still ask CIA spokespersons and Directors, "Did your Agency perform assassinations?" and then report their negative replies as gospel truth. Wouldn't they look ridiculous if they were to interview alleged murderers and then report *their* claims of innocence as true–simply because they said they were? The same holds true for those who accept–at face value–the CIA's claims that it didn't employ or use certain individuals, because it has "no records" of them.

5. Dr. Colin Ross wrote: "The FMSF is the only organization in the world which has attacked the reality of multiple personality in an organized, systematic fashion." (Bluebird, pg. 115) Why would they do this? I believe some of the doctors who perpetrated crimes as CIA mind-control contractors became afraid when their former victims started to remember. I believe this is why some of these perpetrators formed or joined the FMSF–to use it as a disinformation mechanism to discredit the victims *in advance*, by convincing the public that recovered memories and MPD/DID are "fabricated" or "implanted." Perhaps they knew that their victims would be less likely to remember the crimes against their humanity if public opinion was turned against them:

    > It is far harder for memories to be recovered when there is a threat of social retribution or powerful social or political determinants of shame about what is recalled . . . a more comfortable survival can come

> naturally into being when conditions mean that the unspoken is given a social voice. (Woodcock pp. 147, 149)

6. In their leaflet, *Seeing Inside the Ritual Abuse-Torture Co-culture*, Sarson and MacDonald wrote:

> We have named the culture of these destructive families/groups as a co-culture versus a sub-culture because the ritual abuse-torturers exist among us, undifferentiated from the neighbour next door. They draw no attention to themselves by way of unique clothing, body piercing, or hairstyle, or by race, or by living in a commune, or by openly advertising their evil-based beliefs and behaviours, hence the reason we have entitled our book, a work in progress, *The Torturers Walk among Us*. Perpetrators of RAT [ritual abuse/torture] can be living successful lives, making a living "legally" employed, hold positions of extensive positional power and community status, others have class and wealth, others are "simply common folk." (pg. 1)

Government Programming

What Happened?

In the summer of 2001, I reached a critical crossroads in my life. For the past several years, I'd tried to follow the examples of a large part of the ritual abuse/mind-control survivor population–a community with whom I had the good fortune to connect. Due to their fear of being cruelly ridiculed or harmed again, most of those brave men and women have chosen to quietly get on with their lives, never speaking about their remembered experiences outside of their personal support networks.

I've tried silence too, but it hasn't worked well for me. I felt like a counterfeit when I mimicked others around me, hiding my past while presenting myself as a "new" Kathleen. Because I wasn't being authentic, I was miserable.

When I opened up to one of my professors about my past, she said I ought to write an autobiography. Blushing, I told the professor that a prolific author, Gordon Thomas, had already suggested the same. "Then why are you hesitating?" the professor asked.

Accepting that teacher's challenge, I took a year off from my studies to do what I'd dreaded the most: to review thirteen years worth of handwritten journals that were full of my memories of traumatic events that I'd previously blocked out. I had stored the journals out of sight in my basement in six white plastic file cartons. The task of piecing together my life story from the journals still seemed impossible.

As I slowly worked my way through them, I was troubled by how fragmented my memories still were. Most of those I'd recorded had, in reality, lasted only between ten seconds and a minute or two.[1] Assembling and connecting the memory fragments was like trying to reassemble a ten-thousand-piece jigsaw puzzle.[2]

Day and night for over a year, as I reviewed the journals, an uncanny urgency drove me to absorb every bit of the memories–only to block them out again when I put the journals down! Determined to remember this time, I read them again and again, typed them onto diskettes, and reviewed them verbally in therapy.

Although those memory reinforcement techniques seemed to help, I was horrified to rediscover some of the deeds I'd committed in the past, under the direct control of professional handlers. How could that have been me: so brutal, so cruel and heartless? How could I have actually wanted to hurt people and make them feel–in their bodies–the pain I had felt in my soul? *What had happened to me?*

Agencies and Organizations

Another question plagued me: who and what were the groups and facilities I remembered having been exposed to? Certainly, none of them had been part of my "normal life"!

My journals indicated that I had performed illegal acts for a network of organizations, groups, networks and agencies. My alter-states knew most of them by code names.

Various spook handlers referred to the CIA as *the Web, the Agency, the Organization, the Family,* and *the Company.* A former CIA Director, George Bush Sr., was sometimes called *the webmeister.* Some CIA employees who had also previously been in the OSS referred to themselves as the *Old Guard.*

Several self-identified NSA employees I met in Atlanta in the late 1980s and early 1990s alternately referred to their agency as *the Net* and *the Dragon.*

I was exposed to several Mafia members, beginning when I was a young child. Dad sometimes took me with him as his cover when he met with mobsters who may have been members of the Colombo-Profaci crime family that operated in the Northeast. As a young adult, I met mob members in Chicago. Later, I met members of Trafficante's organization and was taken more than once to a compound in Florida that I knew as Marina Del Largo–not to be confused with Donald Trump's resort, which has a similar name. I also met and interacted with mobsters in Atlanta. (I will not provide any other details about my experiences with any of these groups or individuals.)

I knew NASA by its official name.

I was taken to meetings of groups known as the "Golden Dawn" and the "Illuminati." At those gatherings, I learned that some members of Illuminati were also members of the Golden Dawn. They exposed me to a mish-mash of Luciferian and Pagan beliefs. The members of the international Illuminati organization seemed to be covert "Rosicrucians." The words, "the Illuminati" alternately referred to the group and to its individual members. Although I used to be in awe of the Illuminati, I now consider it to be one of many secretive cartels.[3]

I was also exposed to a mob-connected occult network, headquartered in New York City, code-named "Satanic Hierarchy." (Again, I will not provide further details about my interactions with this organization.)

As an adult, I repeatedly encountered members of a large, national Aryan network–"The Brotherhood." Another Aryan group, perhaps part of that same network, was called "The Order." Another, Western Mysteries, was especially involved in publishing literature. I met representatives from many smaller Aryan groups over the years–each had a code name that was known only to insiders.

Alleged CIA handlers referred to male Secret Service personnel as *bus boys*. Self-identified Secret Service agents called one of my highly trained bodyguard alter-states, *plain Jane*.[4]

I was also forcibly used by members of an international network, code-named the Octopus, that included alleged CIA employees and contractors, members from several *Mafia* families, and more.

Government Facilities

I was taken to numerous US military bases and government facilities over a period of more than thirty years. I have since been able to identify several of them, first-hand.[5] These are the names of some that I believe I was taken to for programming and/or training:

Fort Payne, Alabama. After our family moved to Atlanta, Georgia, I was taken to a military base that I was told was Fort Payne. Female teenagers and women were given special training there. I was called a "Golden Girl" and received what was code-named "Black Claw" physical training.[6]

Redstone Arsenal, Alabama. There, I believe I received MKNAOMI biochemical black op conditioning, briefings, and debriefings.

Juvenile Facility in North Carolina. When I was sixteen, I was taken by my parents to a facility near Morganton and Marion, North Carolina. The grounds were enclosed by a high chain-link fence. A separate observation tower was attached to an above-ground enclosed walkway that led to the main building, where I and other youths received specialized ops training, and where I was also brainwashed about the Aryan, Pagan Golden Dawn belief system. Those who didn't follow orders were brutally punished. I first remembered this facility in the early 1990s when an emerging alter-state drew a crude map of the buildings and grounds. A social worker from North Carolina recognized the drawing, and said that she'd known the facility as the "Western Carolina Adolescent Correctional Center." (I've not yet found a verification of a facility having that name.)

Great Lakes Naval Base near Chicago, Illinois. My first husband, Albert, took me to a large building on the base where I and other adult female "patients" wore hospital gowns and endured extensive mental programming and training in a psych ward setting.

Fort Gillem near Atlanta, Georgia. I was repeatedly driven there by a man who escorted me into a set of underground corridors and rooms where he seemed to be in charge of local spooks. He and other professionals sometimes briefed and debriefed me there.

Fort McPherson near Atlanta, Georgia. After I'd had several vivid memories of that base in the 1990s, my second husband, Bill, drove me there to see if any of the buildings looked familiar. I immediately recognized the large, white Forcecom building where, in a below-ground room, a female programmer had forcibly reconditioned me after a failed op (by threatening to shoot me), so that I would continue to do assassinations. I had also remembered a one-story cafeteria building behind it, where I'd been taken by a male handler who had been hungry. As Bill and I sat in the Forcecom parking lot, we saw several casually dressed individuals leave the smaller flat-roofed building, carrying Styrofoam take-out food containers.

Fort Benning, Georgia. I believe that, as an adult, I received limited training at this Army base. At that time, a male handler told me that I was the only woman receiving it there. I was told that I was given specialized training to familiarize me with how Rangers worked together on ops. (Over the years, I developed tremendous respect and deep appreciation for those men; unlike most spook handlers, they remained gentlemen.) I was also put through brutal mock torture/interrogation sessions to condition several of my alter-states to respond in specific ways if I were ever caught and interrogated while overseas on an op.

Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland. When we lived in Maryland, my father took me to a sprawling government facility code-named “Edge-of-the-Woods.” There, I endured the unexpected effects of a hallucinogen and mind-shattering mental programming.

The Farm. When I was a teenager, Dad took me to this spook-run facility to have me trained for black ops. It may have been at the CIA’s Camp Peary; it may have been at a CIA/Aryan-run “counterterrorism” camp in Powder Springs, Georgia; or it may have been at an entirely different location.[7]

Fort Campbell, Kentucky. I reported to this huge Army base several times to be briefed for special ops and to receive limited conditioning and training.

Dobbins Air Force Base, Georgia. When I lived near Atlanta, I was often transported from this base by jet to other locations for covert ops, and then was brought back to the base before being transported home.

Goddard NASA facility near Washington, DC. I believe I was taken there in approximately 1968, to be mentally programmed.

Huntsville NASA facility in Alabama. I believe that mental programming was done to me at that facility after my family moved to Georgia in 1969. During a tour in the mid 1990s, I easily identified several of the buildings.

“Meadowlark” Air Force Base, exact location unknown. I was flown there from Dobbins AFB in 1985, and was interrogated in underground rooms by military intelligence personnel.

Black Ops

The years of programming and conditioning at these and other government facilities prepared me to become a covert slave-operative. When I fell asleep at home in my adult years, my nighttime alter-states emerged. Because these alter-states were adrenaline junkies, ops were their drug of choice.

Sometimes I was first taken to a local cult meeting. After the horrific ritual, other parts were triggered out to be transported. Most of my op-trained parts were more than willing to go on far-away assignments. It was what they existed for.

These are some of the activities that my covert op programmed alter-states performed while under the control of professional handlers:

- Protection, body-guarding, and escorting
- Assassinations
- Hostage interventions and rescue
- Arms smuggling, including transportation of small rockets
- Bombings and sabotage
- Teaching children how use standard and makeshift weapons against mock adult attackers
- Kidnapping
- Taking out snipers
- Surveillance
- Torture and interrogation
- Clandestine photography
- Clandestine search of an organization's files
- Killing assassin-programmed individuals who had gone out of control and were an imminent danger to those around them. (Because they were so dissociated they felt no pain when injured, I was trained to kill them in a particularly gruesome way.)

Professional handlers used a succession of my pre-programmed covert op alter-states to successfully perform each operation. Afterwards, I was transported home with no memory of the event.

My black op (assassin) trained alter-states were even more specialized. Through hundreds of repetitive acts, each was conditioned to kill in at least one of the following ways: zip wire, gun, knife, or chemicals. Other methods were also used on certain ops. The zip wires were sometimes sewn into loosely-basted hems of garments, particularly blouses and jackets, with soft ends to protect my hands from being sliced through.

Each black op alter-state was trained to use at least one type of weapon. Some were also trained to select a certain number of objects or surfaces in any environment to use as makeshift weapons.

In the early 1990s, I was severely re-traumatized as I remembered the crimes that I'd been forced to commit. As I resuscitated the dead parts of my soul, I felt the immense emotions of pain, grief, and horror that I hadn't felt during the actual ops.

Travel to Exotic Places

To give you an idea of what remembering was like, I'll share from two days of journals that I wrote in January, 1993.

First, I relived a series of emerging traumatic memories in bits and pieces, starting with a childhood memory of my father driving his chisel into my skin to lift my kneecap–just enough to frighten me. Then he used a drill to wound my feet–again, not enough to leave a lasting scar.

As I remembered this, I slipped into the same kind of trance state that I'd gone into as a child, to escape the pain. When I came to, I found that I had written many pages of memories. Several were especially upsetting:

In a teenaged training session, I held a long sharp knife and plunged it deeply into the front of someone's torso. I was being taught that there were two ways I could do it. I could either do the "T," which was to cut from below the belly button up, and then–at an angle—do the upper stomach and heart, or I could do it with one deep, lower slash from one side to the other, through the intestines.

I was taught that either way was extremely effective. The lower slash would leave the person in pain for a while before the actual death, if that was what was intended. To simply kill, the "T" was preferred. Before doing it to live adults, I was made to do it on upright adult cadavers. Each time, I wiped the fatty tissue off my long knife. I was taught that it was important to keep the knife clean; and anyway, I didn't like looking at it.

Then I remembered standing in a room with white walls. I saw an intense, slim woman, average height, with short, dark hair and eyes. Other people stood in the room, too. On a table to my right were objects that could be used to attack and kill.

I had no choice; the woman held a knife and kept reaching out as if to slice at my forearms. When I finally got tired of parrying, jumping back, and moving my arms away from her, I went after her full-force. I grabbed her knife and cut her neck deeply–from one carotid artery, then right through her throat to the other artery.[8]

In the next memory, another adult was fighting me. I grabbed a knife from the table. Unfortunately, because it was dull and serrated, I couldn't use it on the attacker's neck. After I successfully took the attacker down, a slim, friendly, middle-aged man with curly, graying hair took the knife from my hand and pushed it down hard on the victim's fingers–cutting several of them off.

When I came back into consciousness and read these journaled memories, I was devastated. I felt solely responsible, even though the gray-haired man had instructed me. After all, the knives had been in *my* hand.

(Nearly every day, similar heart-pumping, gory memories emerged in my dreams and waking hours. They followed me to the store and to the post office, to church and to school. The memories were clearly telling me that I had been trained to kill. Why me? Having no answer, I felt a heavy weight of guilt.)

That afternoon, I decided to shake off the effects of the memories by going to a nearby shopping mall. While investigating a sale at a pharmacy, I found a bin full of bumper-stickers. I bought several: "JOIN THE ARMY! Travel to exotic places . . . meet unusual people . . . and kill them." "I'M A VIRGIN . . . but this is a very old bumper-sticker." "TOTO, I don't think we're in Kansas anymore." "I'd kill Flipper for a tuna sandwich." "I'm Glad I'm Not You."

My favorite was, "In spite of the cost of living, it's still popular." Although I was remembering horrible things that I'd done in the past, I was determined to survive.

When I returned home, I tried to get some sleep. Instead, I struggled through one vivid dream after another.

Early the next morning, my husband left for work in his pickup truck. Alone in the house, I placed several pillows between my back and our queen-sized bed's wooden headboard. I grabbed the spiral-bound notepad that I'd placed on my dark brown wooden nightstand, and wrote whatever came to mind. Soon, I felt as if I were falling asleep, although my eyes remained wide open. I didn't understand that I was capable of putting myself into a trance state, thereby allowing split-off alter-states to emerge and write in my notebook.

When I came back into consciousness, I found that I'd written about a covert operation in a foreign country. As usual, this memory had no beginning and no end.

Even if it should someday be proven to me that this particular episode was an implanted screen memory, I still feel grateful that I was able to recall it. After being so emotionally battered by horrifying memories, this recollection restored my sense of inherent goodness.

Firefight

I have no idea how I arrived there, who took me, or how I got back home, nor do I know the year the event unfolded. I suspect that it occurred between 1982 and 1987.

Based on the architecture and the vehicles, the angle of the sun and speech patterns of the natives, I can venture a guess that we were in a South or Central American nation.

It was daytime, warm outside. I was inside a battered, old, two-story clapboard residential retirement home not far from a downtown area. It had lots of bedrooms occupied by a number of elderly Caucasians. The kitchen was on the first floor in the right rear, the living room in front. A porch, bordered by a wooden railing, was in front of it. The residence wasn't fancy, but it was livable and clean. The residents were taken care of by a small team of professionals, including nurses.

Several of the bedrooms were downstairs in back. Some of the residents had to sleep in them because they couldn't walk up the stairs. One, an older man, was very slim with thinning brown hair on top of his head. He seemed quite ill. I helped put him on his back in the smallest bedroom. We covered him with a colorful, handmade, pastel pink, block-style quilt. He was in a lot of pain–I think it was his heart.

Some kind of political action was taking place in the vicinity. I was at the residential home with a makeshift team of CIA agents, mercenaries, and others–anyone in the area who was available had been called in to help. The elderly folks were in danger, and our assignment was to protect them.

Had we not been in imminent danger, the professional handler who had brought me there would probably have taken greater care to ensure that I did only what he gave me orders to do, nothing more. This time, however, I was free to follow my own instincts, because he was too busy doing other things.

During the late afternoon, we received a directive from a young, slim, fiery man with thick, curly, dark-brown hair. We were told that he'd commandeered the downtown area, and wanted to use this house as his base of operations against soon-to-arrive military forces who we prayed would kick his ass. Unfortunately, the elderly residents couldn't be transported away in time.

Some of the aged males had served in previous wars. They knew how to fight, but most of them could no longer shoot straight, due to shaking hands or poor eyesight. Others were quite senile, and there was no safe place to take them.

As more residents returned to the house, we gathered them in the center of the house, with groups upstairs and downstairs.

Two elderly gentlemen who still had good eyesight were asked to carefully hide by the windows and alert us if they saw any movement coming up the dirt streets.

We knew that the action would be coming from the downtown area. The military leader had already ordered filled burlap bags to be stacked in piles across the dusty street from the front of the house, his men guarding them. An "SOS" had gone out for more of our folks to find their way to the house to help us defend the elderly residents.

We were told to hold our fire, due to insufficient weapons and ammunition.

My dark-haired, short handler handed me a shotgun and ordered me to use it. I explained to him that I didn't know how.[9] Several rifles and pistols were quickly taken up by the others. They had a sweet automatic machine gun–a newer model. Big and black, it used brass projectiles. All I had to do was aim and pull the trigger–it would do the rest. After I tested it, I didn't want to use anything else, and they didn't take it away.

The real trouble didn't start until dusk. We turned off all the lights in the house, so nobody could see where we were when we fired. Some men started approaching the house by pushing what looked like rectangular plywood dollies on wheels, stacked with filled burlap bags. They seemed to be using them as moving shields. Our lookouts warned that it was time to start firing.

The enemy had a lot more ammo than we did. We only shot when we had a good chance of hitting one of them.

We couldn't afford for even one of those men to get into the house. Too many people could get killed too fast. If we could just keep them at bay! More men came in droves through nearby buildings, settling down behind the stacks of bags. Typically, they had flat, dark-skinned faces and wavy dark hair.

Although they had automatic weapons, they must have been drugged or drunk or both, because they couldn't shoot straight. It took a while for us to realize this. I was genuinely frightened, and didn't expect to live through the night. I tried my best to shoot the crowns of any heads that rose an inch or two above the tops of the bags, but they were too small a target and I didn't want to waste my ammo.

Several male spooks and mercs hid behind furniture that we had stacked behind the wooden rails on the porch. One man and his partner, both American businessmen, had come by earlier in the day to volunteer their services.

I went from window to window in the house when the lookouts told us they saw movement outside. We were quite nervous, because there were several roads–it was hard to see everything going on.

Unfortunately, we weren't paying attention when the sick elderly man, clad in a light-colored terrycloth robe, unexpectedly walked out onto the porch. Several of the men tried to grab his robe to stop him. I went berserk and ran out onto the porch. A middle-aged, brown-haired man helped me force him down onto the wooden surface, while the others remained hidden behind the furniture. Unfortunately, we three were now in plain view of the enemy.

I knew the color of the robe made the man an easy target. I saw several men behind the bags rise up, as if to get a better shot at him.

Without thinking, I stood up with my black machine gun and started firing at their heads. There was some light on their side of the street, perhaps from the moon, and I could see a black substance fly through the air from two of the men who had crouched side-by-side. They deserved it for shooting at that innocent, senile man!

After that, we were more aggressive and held them off through the night. I don't remember how long I kept firing. When I went into the house to get more ammo, it suddenly hit me: I had stood out there on the porch in full view of those men across the street as I had fired at them, making myself a very easy target! I shouted to the others, "Did you see what just happened! I was standing right there, and they were shooting at me, and none of the bullets hit me!" My preoccupied handler agreed it was a miracle.

One man seemed to be in his sixties. In the kitchen, he offered me some of his cartridges. He had several different shapes and sizes in a clear plastic box. I didn't even know which kind to use. When I grabbed a bunch, he stopped me and showed me how to select the right ones. I put the others back and thanked him. A black, long "drawer" pulled out from the lower side of my machine gun. He showed me how to insert the projectiles. He said all I had to do was point and shoot.

Time lapse. I woke up in the early morning, startled, wondering why everything was so silent. It was dark in the house and nearly everyone was sound asleep in chairs, sofas, and on the floor. Only one other person seemed to be awake–one of the old vets who had posted lookout the night before.

He whittled a piece of wood as he sat at the old cloth-covered kitchen table. I was beginning to feel the emotional impact of what had happened. I asked, “Are they gone?” He nodded, then told me about the elderly robed man, who had been shot in the leg. We talked quietly for a while, so as not to wake the others. I felt very comfortable with him. He was a man of few words. I thought of him as the kind of person I hoped to someday become.

Later that morning, the others started to wake up. While they chose food from the refrigerator, I opted for a peanut butter sandwich. I was deeply touched when the old gentleman quietly gave me one of the bullets that he said I’d shot the previous evening. It was rather flattened and a little bent. It meant more to me than any medal that may have been given to me. I sensed it was a symbol of his personal respect and his way of honoring my help. I put it in my right jeans pocket, vowing never to lose it.

As always, my handlers did a full-body search before they transported me home. Although they took away the memento, they couldn’t completely erase the memory of another mission accomplished–this one, with satisfaction.

Validation

After I read this journaled memory, I told my husband, Bill, what I’d remembered about the ammunition that I had used. As I spoke, his face registered shock. A retired Army NCO, he explained that the elongated brass bullets were called 7.62 gauge, 30-caliber universal projectiles because they could be used in a number of different weapons. From his extensive experience with ordnance, he told me that yes, the gun I used *was* a machine gun, and yes, those projectiles *would* have been used in such a gun, and yes, the way I described loading it really *is* the way it would have been done.

After that, he shook his head and chuckled about what he called the Shootout at the OK Hilton. He said, “What kind of woman am I married to?” Calling me his “Pistol-Packing Mama” he declared, “You were a *hero*!”

When he called me a hero, my face crumpled and I started to cry. “Yeah, I was a hero, all right . . . but I was also the worst monster there could be.” I wished so bad that the way I had behaved on that particular op had been the way I’d behaved on *every* op. Soon, more emerging memories reminded me that this simply wasn’t true.

Notes

1. “Fragmented encoding of a traumatic event makes voluntary retrieval and reconstruction of a trauma in explicit memory difficult, if not impossible.” (Spinhoven et al., pg. 263)
2. “More compelling and less consciously available dimensions of denial are when memories of gross violations are so threatening to the psychological and physical integrity of the survivor that recollections are literally split off from consciousness . . . the shattering manner in which torture and atrocity violate the physical and psychological boundaries of survivors frequently causes their recall of events to emerge in ways that may be fragmentary, disconnected and bizarre.” (Woodcock, pg. 144)
3. I am not opposed to participation in secret, invitation-only organizations. I am, however, concerned when such groups use tax revenue to create governmental policies, agreed on at those meetings, that are diametrically opposed to the will of most taxpayers and voters.
4. I think one reason I was also chosen and trained to perform protection services for targeted individuals was that I’d done a number of very successful hits and snuffs, and therefore had a better feel and sense of how a person might go about killing the client. I was acutely alert to the body language, eye expressions, hand movements, and vocal inflections of potential assassins.
5. I’ve not yet tried to validate the memories of other bases and facilities, because if I go to any of them, I risk being re-accessed. I’d rather be without some validations than be hurt again.
6. I repeatedly remembered that the boys and girls who were trained to become Aryan super-warriors were called “Golden.” After these memories emerged, my stepmother gave me copies of letters that Dad had sent to her while attending Purdue

University in Indiana. I was astonished that, in a letter dated 6/25/79, he'd written: "I went to see *Golden Girl* Friday night–about a big blond test-tube baby raised by 2 scientists from Hitler Germany who was trying to prove his theories about the superiority of white, blond, Republicans. He kept sprinkling super vitamins and growth hormones on her grits, then convinced a group of rotten capitalists with mustaches to finance an Olympic training facility for her. If she wins three golds in Moscow, they have her name for their living bras, cereals and panty hose, and the professor gets to prove that blonds can do anything better."

7. Camp Peary, A.K.A. The Farm, is a CIA Directorate of Operations "spy school" near Williamsburg, VA. Another facility code-named The Farm was a 60-acre estate in Powder Springs, south Cobb County, in Georgia. It was owned and run by a spook named Mitchell "Mitch" WerBell III. This counter-terrorist training camp, COBRAY-SIONICS Training Center, contained a "clandestine factory developed to perfect the tools and techniques of sniping, counterinsurgency, and the *coup d'etat.* (*New York Review,* pg. 2) WerBell III was a highly respected "OSS Captain, guerilla fighter, military advisor, soldier of fortune, paramilitary expert, silencer designer and weapons wizard." (*American Ballistics*, pg. 1)

8. Some of my black op trainers called the resulting gash a "smile."

9. Because my trainers didn't want me to use my weapons training on my own volition, I was only allowed to touch a gun when it was given to me with specific instructions about what to do with it. Each time, it was already loaded.

Early Years

Good Times

Although I endured many traumas that I mercifully blocked out over a period of more than thirty years, I also lived a reasonably "normal" life that I was comfortably able to remember. These are my favorite childhood memories from that part of my life.

Almost every year, our family–consisting of Mom, Dad, two younger brothers and I, went to the annual Shriner circus that was held in a large building in downtown Reading, Pennsylvania. We were each allowed to buy one souvenir. My favorite was a brown, furry, toy monkey on elastic strings.

Once in a while, Dad took us to the "band shell" in the city. The concrete structure, shaped like a giant opened clam shell, sheltered orchestras and bands that played free concerts. I especially enjoyed watching big goldfish as they swam in a murky pond in front of the stage.

After we moved to the nearby suburb of Reiffton, my brothers and I discovered how to climb a huge pine tree in our back yard. When Mom removed the lower branches, we nailed boards to the trunk and scampered up again. Climbing to the top, I could see forever!

On warmer days, we met with neighborhood boys at a creek below a huge, grassy hill near Exeter Township Junior High School. We spent many lazy summer days catching crayfish, chewing on watercress, wading barefoot on big slippery rocks in the cold water, and occasionally falling in while the others laughed.

In the winter, the big hill above the creek was our favorite sledding spot. Adventurous souls used wooden sleds or round, metal saucers with handles to hurtle down the packed white snow to the edge of the creek.

We dubbed our favorite neighborhood play area, the "rock pile." It was really a large cluster of boulders. I played Jane when the boys took turns playing Tarzan. When they were knights storming our rock castle's turret, I was the damsel in distress.

In the winter, we built snow forts to hide behind during snowball fights. Our snowmen had carrots and raisins for their noses, eyes, and mouths, and sticks for arms. Sometimes we lay on our backs and moved our arms and legs to make "angels" in the snow. Tired and cold, we went inside and placed our wet snowsuits, scarves and gloves on radiators until they were toasty dry.

We regularly attended a Lutheran church several blocks from our home. It was just down the road from the elementary school that my brothers and I attended. Although Dad and several other church members ritually abused me in the church buildings, especially at night and on traditional Christian holidays (Dad had keys to all the buildings), I enjoyed attending Sunday School classes and participating in the children's choir. We proudly sang, "Praise Him, praise Him, all ye little children . . . God is love . . . God is love," *Beautiful Savior*, *Onward Christian Soldiers*, and other music that made God and the church seem non-threatening and beautiful.

On warm summer days, we walked to a nearby A&W drive-in restaurant. I loved the frosty, ice-cold glass mugs that the root beer was served in.

When we visited Mom's parents in the nearby town of Laureldale, we sometimes went to a large carnival at the Reading Fairgrounds several blocks down the road. I usually ate a red candied apple or pink cotton candy as I went on slower rides, or stood and watched my brothers ride faster, higher ones.

At night in the hot summer, my maternal grandparents' windows stayed open. I often stood next to their living room window that faced the direction of the fairgrounds. Feeling the cool breeze on my face, I enjoyed listening to the screams of race cars and excited crowds.

When Dad drove us on Sunday afternoons into the countryside, I looked for brilliantly colored hex signs painted on barns. Most were based on superstition; locals believed they brought good fortune or provided protection from witches and demons.

Once in a while, we went to Crystal Cave in Kutztown. I was awed by its gorgeous, natural quartz formations.

Dad stored rock specimens in several cardboard boxes in a closet in our basement. Sometimes he encouraged me to handle them. My favorites were embedded with rough gemstones and chunks of iron pyrite, also known as fool's gold.

Dad occasionally drove us to Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania and nearby Zelienople to visit Mom's extended family. A great-aunt and her husband lived in a small brick house. Behind their back yard was a single-wide, white trailer. One day, my great-aunt walked me to the trailer to introduce me to a big, black-haired woman who lived there alone. My great-aunt explained that Nellie had been a nurse, and was paralyzed from the waist down from a car accident.

Fascinated, I watched as Nellie swung her legs in either direction through the long trailer, balancing herself on wooden rails affixed to its walls. She showed me woven potholders and other items she'd handcrafted, as well as her collection of postcards that friends sent her from their travels all over the world.

When I expressed an interest in the postcards, she offered to give them all to me. I was stunned by her kindness, more so when she offered to be my pen-pal. After that, I wrote back and forth with her on a regular basis. Every time we visited my great-aunt, I immediately went to Nellie's trailer to spend more time with her.

Sometimes, when we visited my mother's parents in Laureldale, we walked at night to a nearby miniature golf establishment. I looked forward to buying a cone of swirled, soft-serve ice cream from a nearby food stand.

One summer in Reiffton, my oldest brother's best friend gave us a large roll of red tickets for a carnival in a nearby wooded area. We sneaked to the carnival one night, fascinated by the dancing women, small gambling trailers, and other attractions that were clearly meant for grownups. The people there were nice to us. When Dad found out, however, he forbade us to go again. He said it was run by "filthy gypsies." Still, I was glad we'd gone–it was an adventure!

Because my oldest brother's large bedroom was in the attic, we often played up there for hours at a time, when we couldn't go outside. One Christmas, our parents gave him a hobby kit that included a miniature oven, metal molds, and tubes of Plastigoop. We spent countless hours making colorful rubbery bugs, miniature snakes, and other Creepy Crawlers.

One August, I was with Mom at her parents' house. My birthday was in a couple of days. She said that my present was on the back porch. When I opened the storm door and looked out, I saw a white cardboard box. I cried as I heard mewing and saw a tiny paw poke through a hole. I named my black and white kitten "Snoopy," because he investigated every piece of furniture in our living room. I dearly loved him.

One of my favorite school field trips was to the chocolate factory in Hershey, Pennsylvania. I was fascinated at how the little Hershey Kisses were manufactured by big machines, then wrapped in silver foil. At the end of the tour, each visitor received a big chocolate bar. Afterwards, we went to the amusement park. Even the street lights looked like giant Hershey Kisses!

When Dad drove us home from Laureldale to Reiffton, we often stopped at the Pagoda, a seven-story building atop Mount Penn. We climbed several sets of stairs to look at the city of Reading far below. If we were below the mountain at night, we could look up and see the Pagoda's multiple roofs outlined by bright red-orange horizontal lights. On some of my worst nights, its consistent presence was soothing.

On warm summer days, I always looked in our yards for four-leafed clovers. I shared them with my brothers so they would have good luck, too. I also liked to observe and play with bugs. I especially looked for praying mantises, because they were supposed to bring good luck.

Every spring, tent caterpillars invaded the stunted crabapple trees at a nearby high school. I kept the squiggly creatures in a big glass jar in my bedroom until I gagged from the inevitable stench.

I often caught fireflies in the small yard behind our paternal grandparents' house in the upper end of Laureldale. Grandma gave us glass jars to keep the bugs in. I marveled at how they blinked in the dark. Sometimes my brothers, younger cousins and I played kick the can and freeze tag in the yard.

In the daytime, we stood behind the house and waved to the men who stood in the engines and cabooses of passing trains on a railroad track beyond the back yard. We jumped and shouted happily whenever they waved back.

Buttercups grew wild in the grass near our house in Reiffton. I rubbed the small yellow blossoms' pollen on my nose and upper lip, fascinated by the petals' shininess. Our next-door neighbors' cherry trees were full of lovely pink blossoms in the spring. Sometimes, when they gave me permission to break off a small branch, I took the cloud of blossoms to my favorite school teacher.

Large maple trees flanked both sides of our street. My brothers and I called the seed pods "helicopters" because they rotated in circles as they floated to the ground. We opened the sticky pods and placed them on our noses, pretending to be rhinoceroses as we playfully charged at each other.

Sometimes in the summer, locusts flew up into the tall trees to attach themselves to the bark and shed their shells. The night was often filled with their rhythmic buzzing. We would sell their empty shells to neighbors for five cents apiece.

Mom's mother grew roses and other lovely flowers in her yard. Each summer, we plucked colorful snapdragon blossoms and pinched them between our fingers to make their "mouths" talk.

My favorite flowers, Queen Anne's Lace and chicory, grew wild along roads and highways. The blue chicory flowers nicely contrasted against the tall green grass. Each white Queen Anne's Lace blossom was really a large cluster of hundreds of tiny, individual flowers. The blossoms reminded me of snowflakes–so delicate and intricate!

This is how I preferred to know my life. Although I thought this was the whole story, I lived another life that I was unaware of.

Infancy

My birth certificate states that I was born in the Reading Hospital in August of 1955. I was first child in my generation of our extended family. My first home was a second-floor apartment in downtown Reading.

Although some authorities on memory claim that people cannot retrieve memories of infantile experiences, I believe they are in error.[1] I've had many flashbacks of lying on my back in a wooden crib in a room. When I turned my head to one side, I saw a dark brown door frame surrounded by a light colored wall. I explored with my eyes and mind. Although I couldn't talk, I could observe and anticipate. Sometimes my mother entered the room and walked towards my crib, avoiding my eyes as she silently changed my diaper.

When the shadows grew longer, my gut spasmed as I recognized the tall outline of my father in the doorway. His eyes were cold and gray; his hair short, straight and dark blond. His posture was erect, his figure lean. He changed my diaper and more. I looked into his eyes as he gently caressed my tiny genitals with his fingertips. I enjoyed the pleasurable sensations.

Sometimes his eyes were expressionless as he looked into mine, while pushing a diaper pin into my tender flesh. I quickly learned that crying was useless, and endured the torture in silence.

Although my mother breast-fed me at the beginning, one day, Dad introduced the head of his penis after I'd suckled at her breast. Because I was a sucking machine, I did to the head of his penis as I had to Mom's nipples. Because Dad put sweet liquids on his penis at first, I enjoyed the sugary taste and soon adapted to the secondary taste of a clear, slightly sticky liquid. I acclimated to that taste before I could crawl.[2]

When I look at early pictures of myself, I do not see a child who was apathetic. For the first couple of years, especially when away from home, I still smiled and was curious about my environment. I don't think I would have done as well if Dad hadn't made regular, direct eye contact with me as he sexually stimulated me.

Dad sometimes volunteered to change my diaper, pretending to be a helpful father. As time went on, he pushed soft items into my tiny vagina, including dark red, canned Vienna sausages, then his pinkie finger, then his larger fingers–while using other fingers to manipulate my clitoris. That created waves of vaginal contractions that were so powerful, they hurt. As my vagina stretched, Dad gradually inserted grapes, hot dogs, bananas, and eventually his large, long penis.

By the age of four, I sometimes jumped up and straddled one of his legs. If we were in the presence of other adults, Dad pushed me away and said quietly: "Not now, not now." Later, if he had time, he took me to a private room and pleasured me. By then, I was totally addicted to his scent and touch, and to the orgasms.

As I grew older, one of the results of the ongoing sexual abuse was incontinence. Sometimes, when I played outside with my brothers, I wet my pants. They made fun of me as I ran home and hid my clothes in the washing machine.

Although I enjoyed vaginal orgasms, Dad also inserted his penis into my rectum. He used Vaseline and later, KY Jelly, as lubricants. Still, I felt immense pain and was often constipated.[3]

Early Childhood

In 1957, after my first brother was born, we moved to a rental home on Bellevue Avenue in Laureldale, several blocks up the street from my maternal grandparents' home. Because my parents didn't own a car at that time, Grandpa M. took Dad and me at night to meet with small groups of men in their homes. Grandpa M. seemed to know them well.

Some of the men digitally penetrated me as the others watched with lust or amusement on their faces. Because Dad didn't smoke or drink liquor, I was repulsed by their odors. When I wasn't being molested, I quietly watched and listened as they talked and joked. I noticed that Dad's laughter was different–the noise came out of his mouth in bursts that ended abruptly.

I also noticed that he seemed agitated when he didn't know what to say, or how to say it. Although he did whatever Grandpa M. ordered, Dad's body was extra stiff in the presence of those men.

Elementary School

After my second brother was born in 1961, we moved across town to a two-story, red brick home on East 36th Street in Reiffton, a sedate community. Already a tomboy, I found lots of places outside to play and hide.

I was painfully shy when I attended Reiffton Elementary School, a red brick building several blocks from home. Although I made good grades, I was frustrated when teachers wrote on the backs of my report cards that I was shy. I couldn't help it!

My inability to socialize created other problems. I was usually the last child chosen to be on a dodge ball team during recess. I tried not to cry when the leaders of the two teams argued about who would have to take me.

Still, school was important to me. It was my safe place. I do not yet have any memories of having been abused by any of my elementary teachers. They were my lifeline to sanity and morality.[4]

Because I received positive attention from the teachers, I worked hard to please them. They treated me as a good girl, worthy of attention and praise. From them, I learned to treat others fairly and to obey rules. They proved to me that some adults were fair and honest. I'm grateful that they cared about me, because they laid the essential foundation for my sense of morality and social responsibility.

Middle School

I transferred to a distant middle school for fifth and sixth grade, after being tested and placed third highest in its top, accelerated class. For the first time, I rode a bus to school. Although I was proud of my good grades, I now became the daily target of a snobbish clique of girls. For two years, whenever they harassed and belittled me in front of the other students, I didn't know how to respond assertively. I did try to become friends with the blond leader, but when she just laughed at me, I wished the floor would swallow me up.

One afternoon at home, I sobbed to Mom that I couldn't take their torment anymore. Instead of comforting me, she said I should do as she had in school: "Laugh with them; then they won't know they're getting to you." The next day, the clique made fun of me for laughing at myself when they did. Every day after that, I cried and stayed as far away from my classmates as I could.

Although we were told to eat lunch together at the same table in the cafeteria, no one in my class would allow me to sit with them. I made books my new friends, because they didn't hurt me or make fun of me. I went to the school library and checked out every book I could, regardless of its content. I read each one from cover to cover. I read every encyclopedia and book in our home, including Mom's adult *Reader's Digest Condensed Books*. I read cereal boxes at the breakfast table. I read books during lunch in the school cafeteria, pretending that I preferred being alone.

Even when I went to Girl Scout meetings and troop campouts, I still had difficulty socializing. I continued to read books at every opportunity. They were my escape when reality was too painful to endure.

Ritual Abuse

Although I was almost always in emotional pain and had difficulty connecting to others, I successfully blocked out all memory of why I was that way. I still believed I led a normal life.

Although I had only one close friend, I did have my extended family. Whenever he could, Dad drove us to Laureldale on Sundays after church to visit with my mother's parents in the afternoon and with my father's parents at night.

On most weekdays (except for the summer), I went to school, then came home to feed and pet my cat, do my homework, perform chores for Mom, and then play outside with my brothers and the neighborhood boys–if they'd let me.

I didn't know that I had amnesia about psychopathic Friday night rituals that Dad officiated.[5] In most of those rituals, cats or dogs or humans were tortured and sometimes killed; adults raped me and other children and even animals with abandon; blood was smeared and drunk after it was mixed with opium and red wine; and knives and stabbings were an integral part of the group structure.

When I was only four years old, Dad started making me kill babies, his hands forcing mine. Each time he made me kill a precious baby (really, he killed it), he said that either I would do exactly as he said, or he would kill the baby himself, after giving it additional pain. Dad never made an idle threat. When I resisted, he immediately tortured the infant and laughed, forcing me to watch.

Although the guilt of killing the babies was unbearable, I knew they were better off with my killing them as quickly and painlessly as possible, than if my father tortured them first.

I couldn't possibly live in both my home and ritual worlds with a single mind and consciousness. I'm certain I would have either gone insane or died from the cumulative emotional shock and physical pain.

Since he kept me up late during those rituals–going to bed around 3:00 AM was the norm–I was often sleep-deprived the next day. Exhausted, I sometimes accidentally slipped into a trance state. When I did, I had flashbacks of the rituals. The strange words spoken at them poured out of my mouth. To a psychiatrist unfamiliar with ritual chants, my words might have sounded like "word salad," a kind of gobbledygook spoken by some people who suffer from schizophrenia.

Each time I did this, either Grandpa M. or another relative drove me in his car–usually a station wagon–to a flat-roofed, one-story facility some distance from the city. Mom usually sat in the front, passenger seat while I lay down on the back seat to keep from throwing up from motion sickness.

The driver usually parked just beyond a dull-colored, plain metal door on the right side of the building, near the back. Each time, I was whisked through that side entrance, then a short distance down the narrow corridor into the first empty room on the right.

Each time, I was made to lie on my back in that private room on a single-sized hospital bed, with my wrists and ankles in leather restraints. Up to my left, in a cement wall, was a white-covered window. The door to the corridor was across the room. It was also made of dull-colored metal with a small, criss-crossed, wire-reinforced window that a tall, putty faced, brown-haired man in a white medical coat occasionally peered through.

Whenever Grandpa M. brought me there, he talked to me alone in the room, reminding me that I had to stay there until I stopped "talking." After he was gone, the room became my safe place. Alone and undisturbed, I was able to remember what I unconsciously repressed at home.[6]

In that private room at the facility, I fully remembered the secretive, occult rituals. I remembered that Dad took me to several different buildings in the Reading area. I remembered a large, encircled hexagram on the floor of each ritual room–white if the floor was painted black, and black if the floor was light colored. I saw the flickering white candles that were placed carefully on each point of the star, where it touched the circle. I heard the otherworldly chants of my relatives and other adults who walked around the circle, clad in long black robes with pointed hoods.

I recalled ritualistic activities that my father and other adult cult members performed in those buildings. Their "sacrifice" might be a child to be raped, an animal to be killed, or–on special days–a (pure) infant or a child to be slaughtered. Afterwards, during the inevitable anticlimatic orgy, I was ordered to sexually service the adults.

I remembered another night when Dad took me into a large wooded park near our neighborhood. There, he bound me, naked and inverted, by my wrists and ankles to a big wooden cross that he'd laid on the ground. After he restrained me, he inserted a cattle prod into my stretched vagina and electrically tortured me in a way that quickly broke my mind, creating an alter-state that compartmentalized a deep and powerful rage.

During some of the indoor rituals, Dad told me that child sacrifice was sanctioned by God, because He had commanded Abraham to sacrifice his son. He also said that unholy communion–cannibalism and drinking victims' blood–was sanctioned because, after all, Christians professed to drink Jesus Christ's blood and eat His flesh during communion.

Dr. Black

Alone in the private room, I remembered more: Dad and Grandpa M. transported me to private meetings comprised of men who spoke fluent German. All of them boasted about being a Nazi, and bragged about their special heritage. One Nazi was neatly groomed with an erect posture. I knew him alternately as Dr. Schwartz, Dr. Black, Joseph, and Yusef, depending on which adult was talking to him.

The doctor (whom I'll call Dr. Black) was slim with short, slightly wavy, shiny black hair and dark, glinting eyes. He was intelligent and seemed to have a scientific mind. I once saw a narrow, gray metal slat (a brace?) beside his inside, right ankle. His shoes were shiny and black, and he usually wore a plain, neatly pressed black business suit.

These Nazis provided Dad much-needed respect and acceptance. He seemed unusually happy and relaxed in their presence, whereas most other groups of men made him stiffen.

In English, Dr. Black emphasized the importance of my learning their traditions and beliefs. He said that I and other children were bred to carry on their traditions, and to fight for their cause. He and an older man with straight, gray-blond hair recited phrases in German that I was instructed to repeat, verbatim.

Because I felt stressed from being with those men while also being conditioned at school to be pro-American, my mind developed two separate entities–a brown-haired American girl who only spoke English, and a blond-haired Nazi boy who spoke only German. I didn't have enough emotional strength to consciously be both at the same time.[7]

Undamaged

Still lying on the bed at the facility, restrained and unable to move, I also remembered that Dad forced me to participate in child pornography. When I was two years old, he had driven me to a town not far from Reading. As usual, he didn't explain where he was taking me. The sun shone brightly outside. We entered a building that had a large room with a high, white ceiling. In it was a large, white, possibly circular stage. Beside the stage stood a short man with wavy brown hair. He held a megaphone and called out instructions.

Across the hall from that big room, two beautiful, long-haired women dressed me in a sheer blue robe with a matching sequined border, and applied makeup to my face. As I walked onto the stage, I saw Daddy standing behind the middle-aged director, watching me silently. As ordered, I lay down on my back. One of the pretty women rubbed herself atop me as if she were masturbating. Then a slim, blond man in a skin-tight, leopard-print suit did the same.

After that, one of the women led me into an unlit hallway and left me standing there. Alone for a minute, I tried to kill myself by beating my head against the hard, ceramic tiled wall. When that didn't work, I remembered how my favorite cartoon character, Casper the Friendly Ghost, made himself invisible and flew away without anyone seeing him. I instinctively developed a male child Casper alter-state that felt disappointed when the woman took him back to the dressing room. People weren't supposed to be able to see him! My Casper alter-state went under, and I came back into consciousness.

Again, the two women dressed me–this time in a sheer purple gown with a thin, purple-feathered border. I was again told to lie on the white stage, this time with my face to the floor and my stomach propped up on a pillow. The blond man from the first scene walked towards me with a small, black Scottish terrier. He flicked the tip of a black whip to either side of my face whenever I tried to move away, as the dog penetrated me from behind.

I felt great pain and tried to make my heart stop so the dog would be removed. I may have fainted, because when I awoke, a man wearing a white lab jacket held the round, cold metal end of a stethoscope against my little chest.

After that, I was dressed in one more robe–orange with a matching sequined border. While on the stage, I was told to walk towards a huge, muscular, brown-haired man with a handlebar moustache. He held a metal bar way above his head; old-fashioned barbells hung from either side. His engorged penis poked through a hole in his strongman circus costume.

When the director told me to hold the penis with my hands and suck it, I was confused. I was accustomed to doing that to Daddy in private! Ashamed, I obeyed. One brown-haired, clean-cut man standing beyond the stage was visibly upset. His facial expression helped me to know that what was being done to me was wrong. Because of that, I kept my sense of inherent goodness–in spite of my shame.

Afterwards, Dad drove me to a veterinarian's office, where I was examined and pronounced "undamaged." Wordlessly, he drove me home, never mentioning what had just been done to me.

Nazi Meetings

In the psychiatric facility, remembering and reliving the clashing memories of rituals, porn shoots, and secret Nazi meetings was too much for my young mind. Between school and church and these secretive events, I was being exposed to too many groups with opposing belief systems. Exhausted and lonely, I believed there was no one I could safely confide in. (Dad and Grandpa M. had repeatedly threatened that if I told a teacher about what they were doing, they'd kill him or her. This was another reason why I seemed shy at school.)

I felt despair as I reviewed what Grandpa always told me before he left me alone in this room: no one would believe me if I *did* talk, because the attending doctor (male, Caucasian, middle aged, short, balding with brown, straight hair) had written in my chart that I was schizophrenic. Grandpa repeatedly reminded me that "nobody believes schizophrenics–everybody knows they're crazy."

As I lay on the hospital bed, unable to move, I felt trapped. I had no escape and no chance of being rescued from the rituals and bestiality and the Nazi men. A major part of my core personality went down into my subconscious and didn't emerge again until the late 1990s.

In the interim, I allowed my father and other perpetrators to chip tiny pieces off the thick, concrete shell I built around that part of my original core self. They could have the outside, peripheral parts of me, but I would never again allow them to touch that part of me. I instinctively knew if they ever reached and broke my core self, I would die.[8]

Dr. J

When I was about four or five, Grandpa M. and Dad took me to meet with another man. Unlike most of the CIA MKULTRA-contracted psychiatrists I was subsequently exposed to, Dr. J didn't use an alias.[9]

Dr. J was probably the most proficient practitioner of mind-control I ever met. He was nearly emotionless when he conditioned me. Over the years, he told me that he wasn't defeated by mental defenses, because he used them to advance his own purposes. He either agreed with me or he totally ignored my resistance. He knew what my worst traumas were, and he also knew which spoken words would trigger my memories of them.[10]

He seemed to quickly pick up on and use people's psychological vulnerabilities against them. He noticed that I had the need of a father's love, since the only "love" I got from Dad was in the form of pain, terror and sex.

Dr. J took over where Dr. Black left off, as a "fatherly" doctor-figure in my life. Dr. J would pat my head and say, "Good little girl." Dad had never said those words to me. And so, despite all that Dr. J did to me, I looked forward to seeing him again.

Before I entered kindergarten, Dr. Black had tried to use the tactic of becoming my "loving father" substitute, but he wasn't successful because he was always emotionally cold–a true Nazi. And he enjoyed raping me, which made him too much like my real dad.

In my earliest recovered childhood memory of being with Dr. J, I sat alone and naked in a fetal position in the middle of a whitish linoleum floor in a fairly large, white-walled laboratory room, alternately screaming and crying, snot and tears flowing unchecked. I didn't understand that I just had been dosed with a hallucinogen. Nobody came to comfort me. It was such a horrible feeling, knowing that something terrible had happened in my mind and in the room, while fearing that it would come again soon.

Dr. J sometimes wore strange costumes. He even dressed in drag (women's clothes and makeup)–something I saw no other MKULTRA psychiatrist do. This time, he entered the lab wearing an adult-sized cat costume with no face mask. As he approached me in that costume, I hallucinated again. His face changed and I felt that I was going insane.

As the "cat," Dr. J said English words to me in nonsensical patterns, as if creating his own language that he expected me to remember. I can't remember the words now, but they sounded as if he had adapted them from Lewis Carroll's children's classic, *Through the Looking Glass.*[11]

After Dr. J left the room and I was alone again, I saw things that one would only see in nightmares, never in daytime reality. I knew that what I saw was not possible, yet I saw it clearly.

Then suddenly he was back. He'd changed costumes–this time he was a big white rabbit with long, white and pink ears. He talked about following the white rabbit and going down into the rabbit hole.

Then he picked up a real, dead, full-grown white rabbit by its ears from a silver metal table and swung it, slamming it again and again against the shiny white ceramic tiled wall until it was smeared with the rabbit's blood. I trembled violently as I wondered, would he do the same to me?

Then he walked towards me and stood in front of me. As I stared at the blood on the tiles and at him in the absurd white rabbit costume, he said, "There is no white rabbit." . . . as if to say, what I had seen did not exist, so there was no point in telling anyone, because only I saw it and therefore for everyone else, it simply did not exist.

I knew that Dr. J was the crazy one, not me, because of what he did to the rabbit, and because he wore those costumes and acted especially crazy when he wore them. The man had no more shame or embarrassment about his bizarre behavior than the Mad Hatter.

At home after that, I sometimes had hallucinatory flashbacks. When things "changed," taking on a form I could see but no one else could, Grandpa M. again smirked and ordered one of several relatives to take me to the side entrance of the facility to be restrained.

Even at that age, I knew I was not crazy. I decided that I must be having "daymares." But because they weren't nightmares, *I had no way to stop them.* When I had nightmares, sometimes I could tell myself in the middle of one, "This is a nightmare; I need to wake up now." But when I was drugged and hallucinating, or having hallucinatory flashbacks, I couldn't stop it until it wore off. Sometimes I was assaulted for hours by the worst visions and experiences possible. No escape, no way out. And because I was regularly taken to rituals where I saw killings and dismemberments, my small mind had a lot of horrific material to process during those bad trips.

Notes

1. In *Memory and Abuse: Remembering And Healing The Effects Of Trauma*, Dr. Charles Whitfield explained the ongoing debate over recovered infantile memories:

> A common tactic of FMS advocates is to attack the credibility of survivors who remember having been abused before age three or four–whether or not they have always remembered it. They use the "infantile amnesia" variation of the "false memory" defense. But many

> people can and do remember traces, fragments or even the majority of traumatic experiences from this early age. (pg. 25)

2. When I remembered this event, I wondered if I'd unconsciously fabricated it. Several years later, I read *Trance Formation of America* and discovered that Cathy O'Brien, one of its authors, had remembered that her father had done the exact same thing to her as a baby. (pg. 81) Why did our fathers do this? Was it strictly for their own pleasure? Were they hoping we would bond with them instead of our mothers? An even more horrifying thought flitted through my mind: was this an early phase of our sexual programming?

3. One of the ways the FMSF and other detractors have tried to discredit survivors of childhood abuse, is by claiming they have no medical records to prove their stories. I have remembered, as have many other mind control survivors, that our parents took us to doctors who, for whatever reasons, helped to cover-up for them during our medical examinations.

4. Bobbie Rosencrans, MSW explained why school became my safe haven: "Although some were initially wary of school, some daughters found they loved the safety, structure and basic fairness of most elementary school classrooms. School may have been their retreat from painful family life." (pg. 180)

5. "More compelling and less consciously available dimensions of denial are when memories of gross violations are so threatening to the psychological and physical integrity of the survivor that recollections are literally split off from consciousness." (Woodcock, pg. 44)

6. Carla Emery explains this form of memory recall:

   > Revivification is not based on current memories, recollections, or reconstructions. The present itself and all subsequent life and experience are blotted out during this type of hypnotic event. The memory tape plays. The subject relives the experience. Revivification is very different in subjective experience, and objective significance, from reenactment. The reliving of revivification is compelling, vivid, and experienced as "now." (pg. 234)

   For more information about memory recovery and hypnotic programming, see Emery's website at http://www.hypnotism.org.

7. In *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation Of Multiple Personality By Psychiatrists*, Dr. Colin Ross presented information about the CIA's and US Army's joint project PAPERCLIP and two other related projects, NATIONAL INTEREST and PROJECT 63: "Through these programs, over 1000 German scientists and their families were secretly brought into the United States without State Department scrutiny or approval. Recruitment of German scientists through PAPERCLIP and related projects continued into the 1980s." (pg. 3)

When I remembered the secretive meetings in the 1990s, I was willing to accept that Nazi war criminals had been brought into the US by our government. However, I didn't want to believe that some of them could have been the men I'd met at those meetings. I mentioned my concern to a journalist who tracked Nazi activities in America. In February, 2002 he told me about an article he'd found on the Internet, "New Jersey and the Nazis." Its author, Hans Wolff wrote:

> . . . an important segment of the New Jersey Germans were pro-Nazi before the war and also gave safe haven to Nazis after the war. As we will see, these Nazis also included many Eastern Europeans and Russians, including the elite and largely White Russian SS VorKommando Moskau, which organized the killings of Jews and Slavs in Nazi occupied Eastern Europe and Russia. (pp. 1-2)

This article helped me to understand that even if the Nazis I met didn't actually live in Reading, Grandpa M. and Dad could have easily driven to nearby New Jersey to meet with them there. It also explained several other odd memories I'd recalled, in which Grandpa M. had taught me about White Russians, their political importance, and their plans to regain control of Mother Russia.

8. "The dimension of life-threat may be primary for symptoms of fear, anxiety, hyperarousal, and intrusive memories. The dimension of social-betrayal may be primary for symptoms of dissociation, amnesia, numbness, and constricted or abusive relationships. High levels of both life-threat and social-betrayal characterize many of the most severe traumas." (Freyd and DePrince, pg. 142)

9. Because this book doesn't have enough pages to hold all of my memories of childhood programming sessions, I will mainly focus on four programmers: Grandpa M., Dad, Dr. Black/Schwarz, and Dr. J.

10. Laura S. Brown explained verbal triggers when she wrote that "memory is considered to be state-dependent, and recall is frequently contingent on the re-creation of certain internal or external cues associated with the original event or experience." (International Handbook, pg. 200) In *Memory and Abuse*, Dr. Charles Whitfield also explained state-dependent memory:

> We tend to remember better when we are in the same inner or experiential state that we were in when we first experienced or learned something . . . If our internal state is different in the present from what it was during the original experience, then we may have difficulty remembering the experience or event . . . memories acquired in one neuro-psycho-physiological state are accessible mainly in that state, but they are dissociated and less available for recall in an alternate state. (pp. 44-45)

11. Given how crazy-making Lewis Carroll's book can make readers feel, it's no wonder it was used extensively in mind-control programming. If, when

reading the following excerpt, you temporarily feel your mind short-circuit (even if only for a split-second), that is when you are most vulnerable to hypnotic suggestion:

> "But I don't want to go among mad people," Alice remarked. "Oh, you can't help that," said the Cat. "We're all mad here. I'm mad. You're mad." "How do you know I'm mad?" said Alice. "You must be," said the Cat, "or you wouldn't have come here." Alice didn't think that proved it at all; however she went on, "And how do you know that you're mad?" "To begin with," said the Cat, "a dog's not mad. You grant that?" "I suppose so," said Alice.
>
> "Well, then," the Cat went on, "you see, a dog growls when it's angry, and wags its tail when it's pleased. Now I growl when I'm pleased, and wag my tail when I'm angry. Therefore I'm mad."

Sexual Abuse

Dissociation

Because I endured many different kinds of trauma that were perpetrated by many different people over a period of more than thirty years, I also developed many different kinds of alter-states and personality fragments. Some were instinctively modeled after the *perceived* personalities and belief systems of the adults who hurt and betrayed me. For instance, I created a Dr. J part, numerous Dad parts (each one visualized as having dark blond hair and cold gray eyes), a Grandpa M. part, several Mom parts, a Dr. Black part, and more.

I also developed animal alter-states that were patterned after real animals' personalities. This was, in part, because Dad and other adults repeatedly put me in cages with the animals, instructing me to observe and become like them. By trancing and focusing on the animals' personalities, I was able to block out my fear of them until I was safely out of the cages.[1]

I also created alter-states that specifically compartmentalized the occult teachings from rituals. I believe that what I was forced to endure in those mind-shattering rituals was deliberate and pre-planned. Dad even assigned different names to the alter-states that he created during them.[2]

Orgies

At many of the rituals, especially those held on Friday nights, I observed the adult members as they seemed to use orgies to release their tension after the gory ritual sacrifices. I figured that they must fear Dad as much as I did; after all, what guaranteed that he wouldn't become angry at them and use them as the next sacrifice? I knew this was possible, because we'd watched him murder several adult members, always using the excuse that because they'd betrayed him, he killed them to "teach" the rest of us not to talk to outsiders about what we witnessed in the rituals.

During the orgies, I created alter-states that blocked out unpleasant scents, sounds and memories by focusing both on my sexual pleasure, and on successfully pleasuring the adults–male and female. What they did to me sexually was wrong, but because two of the men showed me small kindnesses, I emotionally bonded with them.

Parental Dissociation

Although I may have been genetically predisposed to dissociate during times of great stress, switching into separate alter-states was also modeled to me by both of my parents.[3]

When we lived in Laureldale, I stayed at home with Mom while Dad went to work at a factory. On at least two occasions, Mom took me up a flight of stairs into what was probably the attic of our rental house.

Each time, she used a twisted, white bed sheet to hang me by my neck from an exposed wooden rafter.[4] When she did this, her voice became a little girl's. She seemed to verbally reenact what someone had done to her when she was a child. Then her voice became a strange, older adult's and she said ugly things to me. Each time I started to pass out, her voice changed back to normal and she asked me what I was doing up there.

She also repeatedly put me inside a wooden peach crate in what may have been our basement. Sometimes I stayed in it for hours, cramped and in pain. When she came downstairs to look for me, she "rescued" me from the crate, asking how I got in there. Because she didn't seem to remember, I saw no reason to tell her that she was responsible.

Because Dad was an electrical, chemical and mechanical engineer, he was familiar with electricity and its many types of conductors. After we moved to Reiffton, he used some of his tools and live electrical wires in the basement to torture me. At those times, his voice and facial expressions changed. He grinned oddly and his voice went up about half an octave. He often sing-songed as he tortured me. Even though he hurt me badly, I felt protective towards him. Because he was not an adult at the time, I mentally took his place, convinced that *someone* had to fill that role! (This was how I created several "Dad-the-torturer" alter-states that were later used by professional handlers to interrogate others.)

The telling factor in each of these situations was that my parents became amnesic strangers and did things that they didn't seem to remember afterwards. For this reason, I believe that both parents had alter-states that perpetrated some acts that they had no conscious knowledge of.

Unbeknownst to Dad, I developed many “home” alter-states in a futile attempt to adapt to my parents’ unsettling changes and shifts in personality.[5] This was a good thing, because those child alter-states preserved my sense of being good and decent when adults poured their shame on me.

The effects of my parents’ dissociation continued to influence me when I was an adult. Because I had felt protective towards Dad when he regressed into a sadistic child alter-state, I later gravitated towards men who switched into child alter-states, feeling equally protective and maternal towards them. If they hurt me, I blocked out their abuse in the same way I had, when Dad had switched and then tortured me.

Pedophilia

Dad raped me regularly after we moved to Reiffton. To keep me in bed at night, he convinced me that alligators lived under it. He said that they would bite my feet if I left it.

My heart pounded when I had to go to the bathroom in the middle of the night. I nearly screamed as I bounced off the bed, landing as far from it as I could, then sprinting into the bathroom. When I prepared to crawl back into bed, I first lifted the covers and bent down to see if any creatures waited to snap at my tender little feet. I became so afraid of the alligators that no matter what the temperature was in our house, I covered my feet with a blanket.

If I left the bed, the alligators might bite my feet. If I stayed in bed, Dad might rape me again. I developed a child part named Annie (based on my middle name) that compartmentalized the feeling of utter hopelessness and the memories of Dad raping me in my own bed.[6]

Although Dad continued to sexually assault me, he seemed more interested in molesting boys. He often used my unsuspecting brothers to lure neighborhood boys into playing touch and tackle football on a grassy upper field at the nearby high school. Behind our house, Dad also erected a basketball goal. Again, he encouraged the children to play with him. At the time, I didn’t understand why Dad didn’t encourage the boys’ parents to play with us. Now, I believe he wanted every possible opportunity to touch the children’s bodies, undetected.

According to a letter that Dad wrote in 1989, he was also an advisor to the Catholic church’s St. Catherine’s Orphanage in Reading from 1960 to 1964. He taught Math and English to some of its child residents, and repeatedly invited his favorite male student to spend nights in our home. I believe that Dad used his volunteer work at the orphanage for the primary purpose of accessing more child victims.[7]

In the summer, we often walked several miles from Reiffton to a membership swimming park. When he wasn't swimming in the adult section, he lay on a big towel on the grass, propped up on his elbows. In the same way that some men like to watch beautiful women in swimsuits, my father lusted after the innocent children.

He had a certain look when he was sexually aroused by them. His upper eyelids closed halfway like a contented feline's and his lips became full and soft. Many years later, I grew nauseous when I found an old photo of a trusting young female cousin sitting on Dad's lap . . . he had the same expression.

When I was an adult, Dad sometimes forced me to attend secretive pedophile meetings where he told the listeners, mostly men, that he chose to cultivate a six-month "relationship" with a boy before he made his first sexual move. He said once the boy believed that Dad loved him, he knew the boy wouldn't tell anyone that Dad had "approached him sexually."[8]

Sex Equaled Love

Although they'd had plenty of opportunity, neither Mom nor Dad ever–to my memory–privately held or caressed me in an unselfish, nonsexual way. Mom also never told me that she loved me, although she did sign, "Love, Mom," on letters and greeting cards when I was an adult.

Mom didn't say good things about me, other than that I was smarter than she and that I resembled my father's only sister. I considered that a compliment, since Dad's sister was warm and loving towards me in a respectful way.

The only holding and touch I received from Dad, other than spankings and torture, was sexual intercourse–although gradually I also blocked out those memories.[9] Sometimes, after he had finished raping me, Dad would say, "I love you, daughter." Because this was the only time that he said he loved me, I mentally paired love with sex. Lying beside him on the bed he normally shared with Mom, I felt warm and wonderful inside. I believed I was lucky to have a dad who gave me special love and attention!

My sexually conditioned alter-states looked forward to our "special times." Whenever Dad made fun of Mom, as we lay alone together in the bed, my alter-states felt superior to her. Dad encouraged me to believe I was his wife, and that Mom was the usurper.

Kiddy Porn

Even more unacceptable to society than parental sexual abuse of children, are the actions of parents who film their children being sexually abused, and then sell or swap the pictures and videos with other perpetrators.

I have repeatedly remembered that as a child, I was often given to adults to be sexually violated, both in and away from rituals. I've also clearly remembered being raped by a succession of men for porn shoots that Mom, who was there to supervise me, called "soap operas."

I was used in a lot of pornography, both as a child and later as an adult. Dad told me that some of the kiddy porn films that he forced me to participate in were sold for a profit on the black-market to other voyeurs and pedophiles. Most people do not understand that pornographers can make big money by selling illegal pornography that can include bestiality, snuff (murder), and kiddy porn.[10]

I'm glad most parents are genetically "programmed" to love and protect their children. Unfortunately, a healthy emotional bond never existed between me and my parents. They were both broken on the inside, and had turned to sexual perversions to physically and emotionally satiate their desires. They had found and associated with other broken people for whom what was unacceptable to society, was eerily "normal."

I still mourn the loss of not having had a mother and father to love, protect, and make me feel good about myself. I sometimes wonder what my life would have been like if they had. I also think about the many children in our country who are being hurt in frighteningly similar ways. Although I am free to heal my wounds, tragically, many victim-slaves are still imprisoned in one of a number of brutal pedophile and black-marketing networks.[11]

Some people may want to believe that these predators, and groups of predators, are rare. I believe this is a fallacy, because I have met many career pedophiles who seemed to network in sophisticated ways. I was present at some of their secretive meetings, where Dad was so brazen, he happily presented information on how to sexually ensnare children and then use them for pornography. Kiddy porn, child prostitution, and child slavery continue to be highly lucrative trades.[12]

Comfortably Numb

Because of the sexual assaults and torture, I became physically numb. Even when I walked into furniture, I felt no pain and later wondered at my bruises.

In the early 1990s, when I began to remember, my body woke up in tandem with my mind. The following changes in my body suggest to me that at least some of the memories were real:

Before I began to remember the rapes and torture, my blood pressure usually hovered somewhere between 90/60 and 80/50. Now, my blood pressure averages about 120/80.

Before recovery, I couldn't sweat–this was dangerous in hot weather. Now, I sweat as easily as most people.

Before I remembered the abuse, my hands and feet were constantly cold. I always wore socks to bed. Now, my extremities stay warm most of the time.

In the past, I rarely felt physical pain. Now, I feel pain as soon as I hurt myself. This change angered me; dammit, I didn't want to feel pain! A therapist helped me to understand that feeling pain is important, because it signals when I am injured, so that I can attend to the injury.

Before recovery, most of my sexually addicted alter-states required pain to be able to experience sexual pleasure. Now, because my body is much more sensitive to touch, and because I've remembered the source of the original pain, I no longer need pain to enjoy an intimate relationship with my husband.

These and other physical transformations have indicated that I was in a trance-state before I remembered. Physical disconnection had been important, because I couldn't dare to feel my body during sexual assaults and torture sessions–the pain could have killed me. I feel grateful that at those times I was able to dissociate and numb my body.

Notes

1. One of those experiences was unexpectedly beneficial: Dad put me in a cage with a relaxed, older lioness. Although I initially feared that she would eat me, she instead let me lie in front of her elongated torso, my back to her abdomen, and then

she put her large right paw atop my left side. Feeling her closeness and warmth was probably the closest I ever came to experiencing maternal nurturing.

2. In *The Osiris Complex*, Dr. Colin Ross wrote:

   > The only time personality states are deliberately created and named by parents, according to the information we are getting from MPD patients in North America, is in cults. In Satanic and other types of cults, apparently, personalities are deliberately created to carry out certain ritual tasks, to hold post-hypnotic instructions, and for other purposes. (pg. 137)

   Some self-described "authorities" on ritual crime and recovered memories–including Kenneth Lanning (an FBI employee) and FMSF spokespersons–have publicly insisted that no proofs of ritual crime in the US exist, and that alleged survivors and their therapists are fabricating "false memories." I find it difficult to believe that these professionals are so inept that they are unable to locate proofs that are openly available to the public.

   In the 1990s, a pro-survivor organization, Believe the Children (BTC) published a long list of documented occult crimes, most of them perpetrated within the US. To review an online version of the BTC's Ritual Abuse Report, go to the PARC-VRAMC website at http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com and click on "BTC RA Report." Karen Jones' "Satanism and Ritual Abuse Archive" contains newer information about such crimes. It can be found at http://www.newsmakingnews.com/karencuriojonesarchive.htm.

3. Carla Emery explained the process of spontaneously switching from one altered state of consciousness to another: A fugue is a spontaneous, complete dissociation. Persons with split personality are in fugue when being an alternate persona. The original personality is amnesic for the fugue period. M.H. Erickson called such a trance an example of posthypnotic behavior which erupts from the unconscious up "into the conscious stream of activity and fails to become an integral part of that activity" (*Nature of Posthypnotic Behavior*)—unless the subject later manages, or is enabled, to remember. (pg. 230)

4. Because of this and other physical traumas, the muscles in the back of my neck are always tight and painful. Some professionals now believe that fibromyalgia can result from injuries done to muscles, ligaments and tendons during physical and sexual assaults.

5. Dr. Colin Ross wrote: "It is common for adult women in treatment for MPD to describe clear evidence of MPD in one or both parents, which can include clear descriptions of switching and names of parental alter personalities." (*Osiris Complex* pg. 199)

6. For the child who depends on an abusive caregiver, the situation demands that information about the abuse be blocked from mental mechanisms that control attachment (bonding) behavior... the closeness of the victim-perpetrator relationship

impacts probability of amnesia. Amnesia rates across a variety of studies appear to be higher for parental or incestuous abuse than non-parental or non-incestuous abuse. (Freyd and DePrince, pg. 142)

7. Like other pedophiles, Dad sought physical contact with as many children as possible. In the late 1980s, Dr. Gene Abel and his associates interviewed sex offenders who were clients, guaranteeing them confidentiality. Few people were prepared for the results of their study:

   > Two hundred and thirty-two child molesters admitted attempting more than fifty-five thousand incidents of molestation. They claimed to have been successful in 38,000 incidents and reported they had more than 17,000 total victims. All this from only 232 men. Men who molested out-of-home female children averaged twenty victims. Although there were fewer of them, men who molested out-of-home male children were even more active than molesters of female children, averaging 150 victims each . . . Despite the astounding figures, most of these offenses had never been detected. In fact, Abel computed the chances of being caught for a sexual offense at 3 percent. (Salter, pg. 11)

8. Why would Dad brag to other pedophiles about the techniques he used to entrap and sexually molest children? Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. explains:

   > The truth is that many sex offenders like to talk about their exploits—if it can be done in some way that doesn't hurt them in court. They are proud of what clever fellows they are. Narcissism is their Achilles' heel. (pg. 5)

9. I not only blocked out memories of feeling terror, pain, and horror; I also blocked out memories of having felt very ashamed. This often occurred when I was forced to do something that I knew was socially unacceptable–especially if I enjoyed the activity. This included orgasmic "sex with" Dad and other adults. Some pedophile organizations claim that children's enjoyment of sexual stimulation is "proof" that children want sex with adults, and that children shouldn't be kept from "doing it with" adults. These molesters seem to miss the point.

   Children and even adolescents are grossly underdeveloped–sexually, physiologically, emotionally, and even mentally. I firmly believe that any adult who willingly and repeatedly takes advantage of a vulnerable child's natural inclination towards pleasurable sexual stimulation should be kept completely away from children until and unless that adult is sufficiently rehabilitated and truly understands the depth of the pain and damage he or she caused in the child victims' minds and lives.

10. In the 1990s, when I remembered decades of forced participation in porn shoots, I felt embarrassed and worried that some people might still own revealing films or pictures of me. I also feared that someone in my new life might accidentally come across them. Another fear arose from threats that Dad and other handlers made

when I was an adult: they would send porn pictures to my neighbors and co-workers if I didn't stay silent. My way of dealing with that last fear is that if such pictures ever surface, I'll use them as verifications of my past enslavement.

11. In August 8, 2002, the Associated Press reported arrests made for crimes, perpetrated by a group of adults, that were painfully familiar:

> WASHINGTON – A group of parents sexually molested and photographed their own children and swapped pictures over the Internet, forming what one man called "the club," said US Customs Service officials who announced charges Friday against 10 Americans and 10 Europeans.
>
> Forty-five children were victimized, including 37 Americans ranging in age from 2 to about 14, said Customs Commissioner Robert C. Bonner.
>
> "These crimes are beyond the pale," Bonner said. "They are despicable and repugnant."
>
> The suspects are men except for Bente Jensen of Denmark, who was charged along with her husband . . .
>
> "What is particularly disturbing about this case is that the majority of the people who have been charged were actually the parents who were sexually exploiting their own children," Bonner told a news conference.

As I read the article, I wept for the children and also for myself–for the hell we've all endured. I also felt grateful that someone cared enough about their welfare to intervene on their behalf. Now they have a chance to experience normal childhoods.

12. To learn more about the child black-marketing trade, read *The Commercial Sexual Exploitation of Children in the US, Canada and Mexico*, published in September of 2001. It can be obtained via the Internet at http://caster.ssw.upenn.edu/~restes/CSEC.htm, from the University of Pennsylvania, School of Social Work, Center for the Study of Youth Policy, 4200 Pine St., 3rd floor, Philadelphia, PA 19104-4090, or by phone: (215) 898-5531.

Two websites, http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com and *The Finders Case* at http://www.gregoryreid.com/id87.htm provide information about an investigation (reportedly thwarted by the CIA) into organized child sexual abuse, black-marketing of children, criminal occult ritual abuse, and kiddy porn, allegedly perpetrated by members of the CIA-connected Finders cult in Washington, DC.

Family Matters

Physical Conditioning

Before I was born, Dad was a celebrated cross-country runner. (Albright, pp. 96, 104–105) In 1960, he barely missed representing the United States at the Olympics in Rome. I suspect because he saw his children as extensions of his own ego, he wanted each of us to also become star athletes. He took us almost every day to the race track at the nearby high school and used a stopwatch to time us as we sprinted in the grassy field or ran long distances on the encompassing oval cinder racetrack. He also entered us in local children's track meets. My brothers did fairly well, but because I was overweight, I came in last every time. Each time, Dad berated and belittled me in front of the other participants and their parents.

My Father's Sadism

Although I always knew Dad had a cruel streak (forcing me to run when I hurt was a good example), I wasn't able to remember the rituals, the torture sessions, or the rapes. Still, I always felt fear and anxiety in his presence. I knew something was very wrong with him.

After we'd moved to Reiffton, Mom bought a record album, *The Best of Spike Jones & His City Slickers*, from a city bus driver for Dad's birthday. Delighted, Dad constantly played the record. He especially played a parody of *My Old Flame*. In that song, the singer pretended to set fire to his lover. As Dad listened, he grinned in a childlike way, baring his teeth. His laughter and facial expression scared the crap out of me. His other favorite song on the album was *You Always Hurt the One You Love*. It could have been his theme song. Another song, *Der Fuehrer's Face*, made fun of Hitler. I think Dad may have enjoyed that particular song because he sometimes chafed against his Nazi mentors' rigid control.

Over the years, he amassed a large collection of long-playing record albums. He especially loved big bands, jazz, movie soundtracks, and classical music. He repeatedly forced me to sit in the living room and listen to some of them. One was an orchestral version of the *Red Shoes Ballet.* Each time he played it, he told me the story of the girl who found a pair of magical red shoes that she believed would help her become a good ballet dancer. When she couldn't remove the shoes, they made her dance until she died from exhaustion. Dad said the girl was punished for being selfish. After that, I stopped asking for anything from my parents–I didn't want to die!

Another record included the *1812 Overture.* Dad laughed as I froze whenever I heard a set of notes that signaled the cannon blasts were coming. He turned up the bass so the walls reverberated, forcing me to listen to it again and again until I wasn't afraid of the booming sounds anymore.

Sometimes he unscrewed my bedroom's ceiling light bulb. I don't know how many times I entered my bedroom at night, terrified of the dark, and flipped the switch–to find it didn't work. He often hid in my room in the dark, waiting for me, then hurt or raped me. He sometimes unscrewed the light bulb after he tucked me into bed and laughed as he walked out of the room, knowing that I'd be too terrified of the dark to try to run to the bathroom.

Until I remembered those frightening experiences, I had recurring nightmares of entering my dark bedroom, the light switch not working, my heart thudding as I felt the presence of great evil in the darkness, then physical pain.

My cat, Snoopy, was the only warm-blooded creature I fully trusted. I don't remember how old I was when Mom gave him to me, but I probably had him for at least ten years. (When I was about to leave home and marry my first husband, she made me leave Snoopy beside a road far away from home, next to an opened can of tuna.)

Snoopy never betrayed me. Feeling his soft fur and the vibration of his purring kept me emotionally soft and connected. He often pulled me out of bad moods by rubbing against me and meowing, demanding to be held and petted.

Unfortunately, Dad decided to use Snoopy to control me. He knew that I dearly loved my cat and felt personally responsible for his safety. I was a constant nervous wreck, because I knew Dad could hurt or kill him at any time. He used my fear of what he could do to Snoopy to ensure that I obeyed him and didn't tell neighbors about our family secrets.

Whenever I showed a spark of defiance towards Dad at home, he picked Snoopy up and petted him while baring his teeth at me. When my shoulders drooped, he put Snoopy down. I got the message; he didn’t need to say a word.

Dad also knew I was especially concerned for my youngest brother’s safety. Sometimes I felt as if I were his mother. Although I feared what Dad could do to Snoopy, my greater fear was that Dad would kill my brother. Recognizing my instinctive drive to protect him, Dad repeatedly threatened that if I didn’t do exactly what he said, or if I ever told outsiders what went on in the house, he would kill him. Although I didn’t remember Dad’s threats after a while, I still felt the terror. I remained hyper-vigilant whenever my little brother and I played together in the house. Alert to the sound of Dad’s heavy footsteps, I usually tried to distract Dad and keep him in a good mood by telling him about my good work that day at school.

Whenever Dad caught us saying an unacceptable word, he made us stand in front of the basement sink as he rubbed a bar of soap, hard, on our teeth and sometimes on our tongues; then he told us to stand there. When I cried and begged him to let us wash our mouths out, he grinned at my discomfort. Even now, I cannot stand the taste of soap or shampoo.

By punishing us for cussing, he magically made himself appear moral. Because his behavior created cognitive dissonance in my mind, I unconsciously blocked out contradictory memories of the times when he was amoral and dangerous.

Dad’s favorite form of sadistic abuse at home was “spanking.” The sexually voyeuristic abuse usually went like this: first, Mom was angry about something we did. When Dad came home from work, she told him we needed a spanking. Dad called us into their bedroom while Mom went into another part of the house. He made us stand in a row beside their bed and then told one of us to get his brown, plastic hairbrush from their medicine cabinet. I shook and cried when he told me to bring it to him. (One day, I hid the brush. I learned not to do that again.)

One at a time, he made us pull down our underpants and bend over the bed. He said in advance how many spankings he’d give us. His arm was strong and the spankings were very painful. On one occasion, he lost control of his anger, and used the bristle side of the brush to make hundreds of bleeding pinpricks on my buttocks and upper legs.

(Mom was upset about that–not because he'd hurt me, but because he'd made noticeable marks.)

Usually, Dad kept control and spanked us very slowly. He'd hit us once and then wait until we felt the full intensity of the pain.[1] That increased our fear of being hit again. I usually cried and begged him to please not spank me anymore. He usually responded by saying, "You'd better stop crying or I'll give you something to cry about!" His words made me feel crazy, because they suggested that I had no reason to cry when he hurt me.

After Dad spanked us and went into another part of the house, Mom hugged us and angrily said that Dad was a bastard. And yet, the next time we misbehaved, she started the cycle again.

When we attended Sunday morning services at our nearby Lutheran church, we always sat with our parents on a hard, uncomfortable wooden pew. We were not allowed to wiggle or talk as the pastor's voice droned on. Once in a while, Dad let Mom bring coloring books and crayons to keep us quiet. More often, Mom shared a small pad of blank paper from her purse that we were allowed to doodle on with tiny church pencils. Sometimes, Dad allowed us to draw on our church bulletins.

He often fell asleep during the sermon–sometimes he snored. And sometimes, when he awoke from his nap, he drew odd heads of Indians with lumpy, slanted foreheads, feathers coming out of the tops of their heads. He laughed when he showed us those pictures. I felt relieved when he drew them, because then I knew he wouldn't hurt us.

Sometimes, however, he grew angry as we wiggled, whispered, or dropped a pencil on the floor. That was when the mental torture began. With every movement or sound that we made, he raised a finger and wordlessly counted with his lips, staring at us. Each finger raised meant how many "spankings" he would give all three of us as soon as we got home. Of course, that upset us and we cried. Our tears meant even more spankings.[2]

When we lived in Pennsylvania, we only had one car. Sometimes on Saturday afternoons, Dad drove all of us to town. He usually dropped Mom off in front of a store, telling her he'd drive around the block while waiting for her. When Mom emerged from the store with packages in her arms and tried to open the locked passenger door, Dad moved the car away. Mom walked towards the car and tried again, fussing at him through the closed window. He again moved away. She tried again.

Eventually, he drove around the big city block while Mom waited by the curb, humiliated and angry.

When he finally stopped and unlocked the front passenger door, Mom climbed in and yelled at him. When Dad laughed at her, baring his crooked teeth, I laughed too. Then she turned her rage onto me, sometimes reaching over the seat and furiously hitting me as Dad kept laughing.

Dad's sadism spilled over in other settings, away from rituals and home. When he was given permission to torture me and other children in controlled laboratory settings, his sadism increased exponentially. With the CIA allegedly backing him, he could do anything he wanted, knowing he didn't have to worry about being arrested for his crimes against humanity.

This is the main reason why I am so angry about the CIA's MKULTRA program. Although it may have initially been created for good, it also basically gave carte blanche to sadists and pedophiles who took advantage of defenseless children in secretive settings.

One of Dad's programming techniques that he used in a building where he held rituals was to attach ropes to cages. Then he put me and other naked children in them (one per cage). He would use the pulleys he'd attached to the ceiling to pull the cages up into the air, jiggling us occasionally by jerking on our ropes to keep us off-balance and helpless. Sometimes he kept us in the cages up in the air for days. By doing this, he conditioned me to believe he had total control over me and my body.

He also took me to a laboratory in the Reading area that I suspect was in a Bell Lab building. The following is a journaled childhood memory that explains one way Dad successfully programmed my mind in that lab:

Pain, isolation, deprivation. Torture, training, total isolation in a dark, not black, soundless box made of metal. Dad poured his pain into me (via electrical torture). I became the repository for his pain. Pain kills. I was alone in that box . . . no one to talk to, no one who cared. *NO ONE*. He was master of horrors. He cut the kitten open alive, starting with its sweet tender stomach. It trusted him. It trusted him and he killed it. He said he was teaching me not to care. Then he put me in the box that was too small to stand in; I had to sit in it, one side open.

I saw the lab. I saw my father. The box was my only respite. And he let me decide when to come out again. He kept busy and patiently waited until I decided to come out again – to *HIM*. He forced me to choose to come to him, to be with him, no matter what pain he gave me. I became Frankenstein's lab assistant. His creation. Cold. Uncaring. Wooden. You are what is done to you. Do unto others what was done unto you; give out as has been given unto you. These were Satan's laws and he was Satan in the flesh. Satan is human pain-giving. Hate hate hate let the whole world hate. Kill kill kill let the whole world kill . . . all should have to feel as I feel and yet it is never enough. Never enough. I'm always back in the box. With the knowing and the pain.

The way that box worked, I sat in it with a roof, front and two sides completely closed, the "door" side behind me–my father left it open just enough so light from the lab came in between the top of that side and the roof of the box. The light from the lab was inviting and I was never totally in the dark. Dad knew I was scared of totally black places. It was like he was saying, "See how kind I am to you? I even make sure you have some light! And see, I'm not dragging you out–you have to want to come into the lab–you have to want to be with me." I had to turn around and crawl out on all fours.

When I opened the box and came out, I chose to be with him, with those men, in the lab. Tortured in the lab, then put in the box, no torture, then go back into the lab for more; tortured again. And no, I never learned to like it. I never liked the pain. Sometimes they didn't torture me–and when they didn't, it was even worse, because then I felt like I was becoming one of them.

Grandma M's Kindness

Unlike my parents, my maternal grandmother was often kind and attentive when I visited with her in her home in Laureldale.[3] When Mom started working as a secretary at a nearby insurance agency, Grandma took care of me, especially when I was ill. Every time I eat chicken noodle soup and saltine crackers, I still remember how good Grandma made me feel as I lay on her rough-textured living room sofa and watched afternoon soap operas with her. If not for Grandma and the kindness and positive attention I received from my elementary school-teachers, I might have broken all the way and become a willing sadist like my father.

Perhaps the kindnesses I received from others is also why I'm unable to hold onto my hatred towards Dad for what he did to me and so many others. I suspect he didn't have anyone to love and cherish him when he was hurt as a child. Maybe this is why he broke all the way and became a human monster.

I often visited my maternal grandparents in their old, two-story house. One day, as Grandpa worked in a small repair shop near the house, I grabbed a handful of roasted peanuts from his jar in a kitchen cupboard. I couldn't understand the fear on Grandma's face when she caught me. She begged me not to do it again, but I couldn't resist–they were so delicious! Fortunately, Grandpa never seemed to notice.

Grandma seemed to do whatever Grandpa told her to do. Sometimes she shook when she told me that I must be careful not to make him angry. Mom often called Grandpa "king of the hill," albeit never to his face. Although Mom seemed bitter and angry towards him, she still insisted that we go to their house at least once a week.

I didn't understand Mom's anger when Grandpa ranted about "niggers" and "kikes" and "Pollocks." I was too inexperienced to know that his words weren't part of a normal person's vocabulary.

Sometimes, I sneaked down their wooden, enclosed stairway that led from the kitchen into the basement. I sat quietly on a narrow, painted step and listened as Grandpa talked to men on his elaborate ham radio set. Although he often spoke in English, he occasionally spoke in German and several other languages that I didn't recognize. Although I didn't understand much of what the men said, I felt proud of Grandpa for talking to men who lived so far away. How many grandfathers could do that?

One day, he caught me sitting there. Angry, he yelled at Grandma to make sure I didn't spy on him again. Since I didn't want Grandma to get into trouble, I reluctantly stayed upstairs and gave him his privacy.

The family's need to protect Grandma from discomfort seemed extreme. When I became an adolescent, a teenaged male relative sexually molested me, several times, in their basement. When Mom asked me why I didn't want to go to Grandma's house anymore, I told her. Instead of comforting me or expressing anger that I'd been molested, she said, "You mustn't tell Grandma–it will break her heart." She never mentioned it to me, again.[4]

Grandpa M.'s Control

Before 1990, I didn't know that I had altered states of consciousness. I also didn't know that Grandpa M. had created several of them for his own future use. He had used a rudimentary form of torture to split my personality by holding the lit end of his ever-present cigar against my forearm when we were alone in his repair shop. The pain put me into a trance state. He then verbally implanted hypnotic suggestions. When he finished, he gave another suggestion that completely blocked out all memory of the torture–if I noticed the pain, he either said I accidentally brushed against his cigar, or burned it on another hot surface.

Back inside the house, he gave me a paper band from one of his cigars. I wore it proudly on my finger. Sometimes he even gave me an empty cigar box to take home. Because he tortured me sometimes and was friendly at other times, I both feared him and was loyal to him.

That loyalty was used frequently by professional handlers when I was an adult. I was conditioned to call Grandpa at home if I was on a state-side op that went awry. Whenever he answered the phone, I told him what had happened, and then he told me what to do. My child alter-states were always excited when handlers tricked them into believing we were going to Pennsylvania to see Grandpa.

Grandpa told some of my child alter-states that he worked for "The Company." He said he had been part of the O.S.S., which he called the "Old Guard." He seemed angry about certain changes that had been made within the Company. He told me he had personally recruited my father for them. From what I have remembered, Grandpa also seemed to have covert connections to at least several high-ranking politicians.

Racism

When I was a child, I only interacted with Blacks one time. At Dad's urging, our Lutheran church had donated its old wooden pews to a Black inner-city congregation. They responded by sending their choir to our church to give a concert.[5] Although I would like to believe that Dad had a soft spot for Blacks, I think he more likely went out of his way to seem supportive, even contributing money to a Black arts organization, so if anyone ever tried to accuse him of affiliating with local Nazis, those witnesses would effectively be discredited.[6]

At Aryan and neo-Nazi meetings in Pennsylvania, and later in Georgia, Dad often talked about Blacks' inferiority and their tendency towards violence–as if he had none.[7] Because I believed him and other Aryan leaders, I irrationally feared anyone with dark skin. Even when I was an adult, I was convinced (although I couldn't remember why) that Black men would want to hurt me because I was a white woman.

Dad and other local handlers occasionally transported me to run-down parts of large cities, making me meet alone with Black men for drug transactions. Sometimes the handlers drove away, leaving me alone with those strangers. Each time, I was terrified that the Black men would kill me. Although I blocked out those memories, the irrational fear kept me from interacting with Blacks.

Unlike Dad, Grandpa M. openly expressed his bigotry at home. And yet, he seemed to change in his later years. When I was in my thirties, Mom told me a lovely story: because he was a volunteer fireman, Grandpa was sent into the home of an elderly Black woman who had fallen out of her bed, breaking her hip. She was in great pain and cried out every time Grandpa tried to move her. He surprised himself by being gentle and empathic towards her. That experience changed his life and his attitude towards Blacks in general.

He also became more gentle and compassionate towards Grandma after she was stricken with Alzheimer's disease. Several relatives told me that Grandpa visited her almost every day in a local nursing home, doting on her.

Grandpa's changed behaviors proved to me that anyone has the capability to change and become a better human being. How ironic that the same man who I believe set me up to become an MKULTRA slave, eventually showed me how to recover my soul through his own life-example.

Interpreter

Although Grandpa M. told me that he had introduced Dad to the CIA, and also seemed to be Dad's primary handler in Pennsylvania, Dad told me that Dad had been "tapped" by the CIA to act as an interpreter for some of the Nazi immigrants that the CIA and US Army had secretively brought into the US. He said that because he was a native American who spoke German, he wasn't considered a security threat.[8] If Dad told me the truth about his recruitment, then I suspect it occurred after he enrolled at Reading's Albright College, where he earned a Bachelor of Science degree.

Although he had listened to weekly German radio programs as a child, and although his mother spoke fluent German at home, Dad hadn't seemed comfortable with the language until after he'd joined two clubs at Albright that focused on German language and culture.

The meetings of the first club, *Delta Phi Alpha*, Beta Psi chapter, were conducted in German and focused on "important and interesting aspects of German culture."

The monthly meetings of the second club, *Der Deutsche Verein*, included "folk songs, student talks on Germany, Christmas caroling, and films." Dad was vice-president of the second club for one year, and participated in both clubs during his last two years at Albright. (Albright, pp. 40, 70–71, 125)

This may have been a marked change in Dad, because his earlier 1948 Muhlenberg High School yearbook states:

> Bill . . . delights in chemistry . . . would rather run than study . . . member of "mad" track team . . . Mixed Chorus standby . . . plays bass horn in band . . . prefers Jarrof and Como records. . . *struggles in German class* [italics added]. (Muhltohi, pg. 43)

Nazi Recruitment

In 2003, when President George W. Bush ordered the US military to invade Iraq, he did so against the wishes of the majority of the United Nations, including two of its most powerful members, France and Germany. As a result of their governments' unwillingness to support our President's actions, many US citizens joined together to boycott their imports–some restaurants even changed their menus to show "Freedom Fries" instead of "French Fries!"

Although the animosity was strong between our countries during that time, it paled in comparison to the hatred most Americans felt towards Germans during WWI and WWII. Because Dad's mother was a

German-American, she and others in their community protected themselves by hiding their heritage. They did this by claiming that they were "Pennsylvania Dutch." Because I didn't remember being taken to meet the Nazi men and didn't know I was part German, I believed Grandma when she told me that I was instead part Dutch.

This was the environment Dad grew up in. He heard people call Germans "dirty Krauts" and worse. Some of the neighborhood boys even targeted him for brutal beatings, possibly because of his heritage.

Dad was forced to hide half of who he was. And yet, he was regularly exposed to German radio programs at home that surely would have encouraged him to feel proud of his heritage. The schism between who he was, and who he feared to let people know he was, must have been painful and crazy-making.

I believe this is the primary reason why he so quickly aligned with the Nazis he later introduced me to. Whereas he'd been made to feel dirty and ashamed for being half German, these men helped him to feel proud of his heritage. They also provided a form of paternal nurturing and acceptance that his own father hadn't been able to give him.

Once Dad emotionally aligned with these hardened Nazi immigrants, he never seemed to want to be anything else. And yet, because our country was still understandably biased towards Nazis, Dad again hid who he was.

Paternal Grandparents

According to family lore, Dad's father, a Welsh immigrant, was sold as a boy by his mother to a ship's captain, to pay the family's property taxes.[9] As an indentured servant (really, a slave), Grandpa was brought by ship to America, where he was eventually adopted and raised by an uncle who changed the boy's last name from Chirk to Shirk.[10]

I believe Dad's long-term minimization of the seriousness of Grandpa's mother's betrayal, and of Grandpa's subsequent slavery, may be one reason why Dad saw nothing wrong with using me and other children as objects to be bartered, sold, and abused.

When I was older, Dad told me more about his tumultuous childhood. (He also told the story to several other relatives.) When Dad was a child, his father was sometimes in a dangerous rage when he came home drunk at night. Dad said that more than once, his mother locked herself in the basement while Dad led his four siblings into the woods to hide all night. As the eldest child, he also seemed to suffer the worst of his father's abusive rages.

I believe Grandpa Shirk was a complex and wounded man. I believe he drank heavily to medicate deep emotional pain. Heaven only knows what the men did to him, a defenseless boy slave, on that long overseas voyage. And if his mother had sold him to strangers, what else did his childhood family do to him?

Still, Grandpa Shirk often gave me positive male attention–something I never received from my own father. Grandpa usually acted as if he liked me, and sometimes he talked to me as if we were the only two people in the room. Because he was often kind to me (although not always), I emotionally bonded with him, more than I did with Dad.

In the summer of 1968, I vacationed at my paternal aunt's house. One sunny day as I played in the back yard, she received a phone call. A relative told her that Grandpa had committed suicide in front of the church where he worked as a janitor. When she told me, I went into shock: "No! He can't be dead!"

The next day, after I'd returned to Laureldale, Grandma Shirk told me that Grandpa had stuffed a towel in the tailpipe of his car and had "gone to sleep" by inhaling the exhaust fumes. She said Grandpa had killed himself because the pain from his recent stomach cancer was too much to bear. Unfortunately, because Grandma didn't add that what Grandpa had done was wrong, I believed committing suicide to avoid pain must be an acceptable family tradition.

During the funeral service, Grandma led me and several younger cousins to Grandpa's coffin in the front of the room. She encouraged me to touch his cold, hard cheek with my finger. As I did, I realized that the one man I truly loved was gone forever. And as I rode with Grandma in the black limousine, my heart shattered. He really was dead. He was gone.

At home, neither of my parents ever discussed Grandpa or his death with me. It was if he had never existed.

For a long time after that, I had grief-filled dreams in which strangers drove me on a city street. Each time, I saw Grandpa walking along a sidewalk. I tried to break the car window with my feet so I could call out to him, but I was always too late. When I escaped from the car, he'd already disappeared. Each time I awoke, my pillow was soaked with tears.

Notes

1. Anna C. Salter, Ph.D., explained why sadists like Dad liked to prolong the agony of their victims:

   > The point of sadism is not indifference to pain. It is the deliberate infliction of pain and terror . . . Often sadists will tell their victims in advance what will happen to them in order to increase the terror . . . Rather than being indifferent to how others feel, they are exquisitely attuned to it. But suffering in others does not produce the same feeling state in them. Instead, it produces the opposite. Other people's helplessness makes them feel powerful. Other people's vulnerability makes them feel invincible. Other people's dying makes them feel alive. Other people's submission makes them feel dominant. (p. 108)

2. It's not as easy as one might think, to pick a sadist out of a crowd. I do not find it strange that most people didn't know Dad was one. Anna C. Salter explains why:

   > If you think that the sadists and the Ted Bundys of the world must somehow look different and can be spotted on the street, think again. Despite an extraordinary level of deviancy and callousness, they are often well ensconced in communities . . . Those sadists who were termed "more severe" (defined as killing three or more people) were considerably better adjusted and more successful than those termed "less severe" (defined as killing only one person), according to one study. For example, 43 percent of the more severe sadists were married at the time of the offense, as opposed to 7 percent of the less severe ones; 33 percent had military experience as opposed to none of the less severe; 43 percent had education beyond high school as compared to none; and a full one-third had a reputation as a solid citizen, as opposed to none of the less severe." (pg. 113)

3. Rosencrans explained how an adult survivor of child sexual abuse can have a poor relationship with her mother, and yet the girls in the next generation can have a positive relationship with the same woman:

   > Some . . . may be viewed and experienced by their grandchildren as much more positive maternal figures than the adult daughters have ever experienced them to be. This transformation may be a relief for the now-grown daughters, but it can also be painful. Their children may get from their grandmothers the nurture and safety that the daughters never received. The grandchildren may trust and love their grandmothers, even though the daughters may never be able to trust them, accept positive information about them as grandmothers, or love them. (pg. 80)

4. In my early twenties, I confronted that male relative by letter. In response, he apologized for what he'd done to me. This is the only apology I have ever received from a sexual abuser.

5. I mean no disrespect when I use the word "Black" instead of "African-American." I prefer to use that word when necessary, because some Blacks have told me they do not want to be called African-American since their ancestors emigrated to the US from other countries.

6. Throughout my life I have met many people, some of whom were politicians or ministers, who publicly professed to support Black rights while also being heavily involved in secretive Aryan organizations and activities. The same has held true for individuals, including ministers, who claimed to be staunch Christians while secretly practicing occult religions. My rule of thumb is this: the harder a person consistently works to "prove" how unbiased or Christian he or she is, the more likelihood I think there is, that the person is the opposite.

7. In 2001, I found a verification about racism and neo-Nazism in the Reading area. The article by Mark Stuart Gill was published in *Ladies' Home Journal.* Gill wrote about Bonnie Jouhari, a Black woman who had worked at the US Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD) in Reading:

   > Through her work, she had discovered that 98 percent of minorities in Berks County lived in a ten-square-mile radius in the city of Reading. The other 864 square miles, with better, more affordable housing, were almost entirely white. Minorities who tried to move outside of the urban neighborhood met with stiff resistance . . . [Jouhari stated that] "there is a deeply entrenched prejudice that people here accept as a matter of daily life." (pp. 118–122)

   Because of Jouhari's work at HUD, she was targeted by two white supremacist leaders. She and her teenaged daughter were cruelly harassed as they fled from one state to the next. Although Jouhari eventually won a lawsuit against one of the leaders, she and her daughter were, at last report, still living in hiding. (pp. 118, 122–124, 190)

8. In the 80s and 90s, Dad continued to speak German fluently. At least once at its AT&T factory in Norcross, Georgia, Dad served as a tour guide for a group of visiting Germans.

9. In a 1989 letter to his second wife, Dad wrote: "My father was sold as a child." That part of Grandpa's history was confirmed to me in a subsequent letter from a relative who wrote: "Thomas Curtis Shirk was an orphan. His father died when he was a young boy. His mother hired him out to be an indentured servant. Then she died also." I have since learned that most Whites refer to their enslaved ancestors as "indentured servants" to avoid the feeling of shame that is attached to the label of "slave."

10. Dad often bragged that his father's side of the family had partial inheritance rights to the "Chirk family castle in Wales." I thought these claims were pure fantasy until I found proof of the castle's existence through the Internet. Although I found nothing that indicated that it had ever belonged to Dad's family, information about the owners' family coat-of-arms raised the hair on my arms:

> The Red Hand of Chirk
>
> There are interesting myths or legends about the origin of the red hand in the Myddleton coat-of-arms. One story tells of a dispute which arose between two youths of the family in the distant past, over inheritance of the castle. To settle the dispute it was agreed that the two youths would run a race, to finish with the winner touching the Castle gates. It is said that the first youth to reach out to the gate at the finishing line was deprived of victory by a supporter of his adversary, who drew his sword and cut off the youth's outstretched hand–thus the "bloody" hand. Another version of this story tells that they swam across the castle lake, and the first hand to touch the far shore was cut off.
>
> The second legend says that the red hand was put as a curse on the Myddleton family. It was said that the curse would only be removed if a prisoner succeeded in surviving imprisonment for 10 years in the Chirk Castle dungeons. The red hand still survives as part of the Myddleton coat-of-arms, proving legend says, that no one in history was able to live longer than 10 years in the terrible conditions of imprisonment at Chirk Castle.
>
> Another version of this story says that if a prisoner could stay alive for 12 years (without cutting his nails) he would inherit the Castle. A further story tells that one of the early Myddletons who was leading a battle, was badly injured. He placed his blood-covered hand on the white tunic he was wearing and left the imprint of the bloody hand. This then became his heraldic symbol (http://www.chirk.com/castle.html).

Basic Programming

Western Electric

Dad worked at the Western Electric (WE) factory in Reading for about thirteen years. I have a wood-framed “good luck” caricature of Dad that one of his co-workers drew for Dad when he was preparing to transfer to a position at another WE factory in Baltimore, Maryland. Most of his Reading plant co-workers added their signatures in pen. Occasionally, as I look at their names, I wonder if any of them were Nazi immigrants.[1]

I’ve had numerous recurring memories of one of my father’s co-workers. The big, black-haired man, also named Bill, had a German last name. He was Dad’s best friend for many years. Our family spent a lot of time with him, his wife, and their two sons who were about the same ages as my brothers.

I’ve repeatedly remembered that Bill’s wife was one of Dad’s long-term advisors, especially when Dad programmed my mind. She also attended some of his occult rituals. Although Dad despised women in general, he did whatever she said without balking. He genuinely seemed to respect her. I’ve had no memories of their having an affair, and don’t know whether she truly cared about him or was merely controlling him.

Sometimes, when Dad wanted to take me to meet with the woman, he first instructed me to drug Mom so that she’d sleep while we were gone. Dad kept a small, brown glass container of liquid in an old paint can in a narrow basement closet with a green wooden door. As instructed, I used the dropper to surreptitiously put one or two drops of the liquid into whatever Mom was drinking–usually coffee. That always seemed to work.

Even away from cult settings, Bill’s wife seemed to have a lot of power over our lives. Mom often depended on her for help and advice, from one mother to another. Bill’s wife seemed to have endless patience with Mom.

Because Bill’s wife was nice to me at times, I didn’t hate her. I was not, however, emotionally connected to her–she was cold as ice. I did like her husband; he was often funny.

Because I didn't remember that couple's involvement in Dad's cult activities, I felt sad when Mom eventually decided we mustn't socialize with them anymore. When Mom told Dad (and us children) that Bill had asked her to have sex with him, Dad angrily refused to believe her and blamed her for his loss of their friendship.

I have two good memories about Western Electric. In the first memory, Dad took my brothers and me to the factory whenever the Navy's Blue Angels–a precision aviation team–performed an air show over the city of Reading. He let us stand on the roof for a clear view of their performance. I jumped and clapped as the jets flew overhead in perfect formation.

In the second memory, Dad brought home vacuum tubes from the factory that he had helped to design. One weekend, for "show and tell" at school, he helped me fasten them onto a wooden board. I felt proud when I showed my classmates what Dad had made.

Unfortunately, he also introduced me to a darker side of his work.

Experimental Laboratory

Dad repeatedly drove me to a large, red brick building in the Reading area, telling me that his work there was connected to his work at Western Electric.[2]

The multi-story building housed at least one upper-floor scientific laboratory, where Dad and other men wore white lab coats. In that laboratory, he experimented on white rats and guinea pigs that they kept in large aquariums atop long counters. Whenever I went there with him, Dad told me I was his guinea pig. I believed him. We entered the lab through a guarded door with a rubber seal that whooshed when it slid open. We walked along a short encased corridor, then through another whooshing door, into the lab. The scientists in it seemed to perform chemical experiments. This may explain why Dad was involved–after all; he bragged that was a mechanical, electrical and chemical engineer.

One afternoon in that big lab, Dad forced me to stand and watch a Caucasian, blond, clean-cut man standing inside a glass-fronted, small, sealed room. As I stared, the man's skin turned red as a lobster. Because I didn't see what happened to him after that, I believed Dad when he said that he'd died from radiation.

That horrible experience generated a series of nightmares that I've never forgotten. In them, the blond, red-skinned radiation monster chased me up and down the streets of Reading because I'd watched him die and had done nothing to save him.

After that incident, some of the lab scientists conspired to play a trick on me. One of the white-coated men would look agitated and yell that the radiation monster was on the loose: "Run for your life; he's coming!" Each time, I left through the sealed corridor, then quickly ran down several open flights of metal stairs, and then out past a solid door where, just beyond, Dad usually parked the car. Then Dad inevitably exited and drove me home, using back roads to confuse me about the lab's whereabouts. As usual, by the time I returned home, I'd completely blocked out having been to that building.

That same evening, Dad would force me to watch the weekly *Outer Limits* sci-fi television show. Sometimes it was about a lab-created monster. Although I always cried and begged him not to make me watch the program, he didn't relent. I was so terrified of the radio frequency sounds signaling the beginning of each show that professional handlers played them over the phone when I was an adult, to put me into a controllable trance-state.

Chain Programming

At home, Dad-the-engineer drew flowcharts of my "systems" of alter-states, leaving them on his easel in our upstairs screened-in porch. Because he drew the systems in code, only he and some of my alter-states understood what the charts represented. Those parts believed him when he told them he knew me better than I knew myself.

Although non-traumatic hypnosis could have effectively been used to control my mind, Dad clearly preferred using trauma-based programming to split it. To create a new *system* (group) of alter-states, he first triggered (called out) a primary alter-state that he'd previously created. When that alter-state emerged, he traumatized that alter-state, sometimes using electricity, until that part couldn't take any more pain. That part "went under," leaving another part of my mind conscious to endure the next trauma.[3]

Dad called this technique *chain programming*. He traumatized one alter-state after another, verbally assigning each one an individualized code name, until I stopped functioning altogether. When that happened, he knew he'd gone as far as he could. He'd start the next session on another day, again calling out a primary alter-state and then traumatizing that part to create another succession of linked alter-states and personality fragments.[4]

Somehow, Dad knew that if a trauma was familiar, a previously conscious part would emerge that had coped with that type of trauma before. The only way he could create new alter-states and personality fragments was to expose me to traumas that I hadn't yet learned how to cope with.

Using this technique, Dad eventually created over a thousand alter-states and personality fragments in my shattered mind. He assigned each one a code name that was later used by him and other professional handlers to trigger them back out into consciousness. He also took me to spend time with other adults, allegedly working for the CIA, who used more sophisticated techniques to program and train many of these alter-states.

Some of those professional trainers taught me how to use various deadly weapons. They especially used repetition to condition the split-off parts of my mind to respond so automatically while using those weapons, that during ops I used them without even thinking–similar to driving a car without thinking about how to do it. Not having to think about how to hold and aim a weapon probably saved my life many times, because even a second or two of extra response time could have easily led to my death.

I had the bad luck of being raised by a father who enjoyed hurting and terrorizing me and other child victims. He was a sociopath with no moral brakes. He often boasted that the sky was the limit as to what he could do to children's minds. He repeatedly told me I was his prototype, and explained if a technique worked with me, he'd use it later on other children.

How could any group of adults torture and brutalize innocent children for years? I'm not sure I have an answer, because that reality is still so horrific to me. Nonetheless, some do enjoy it.

The following is a childhood memory about a professionally run programming facility that I and other children were taken to, mostly by our parents.

I was exposed to torture/kill training when I was no older than eight, in a "school" housed in the same building where I was taken by relatives when I had flashbacks. I believe it may have been set up, financed, or both, by the CIA to condition children in controlled alter-states, to become future assassins.[5] In special rooms in the middle of the same building, we were also forcibly exposed to radiation and more. Whenever he was present, Dr. Black seemed to be in charge of those forms of experimentation.

We slept in that middle section of the building until our training was complete. This seemed to take place in the summer because we wore warm-weather clothes. Mostly brick, two-story houses with slanted roofs were in a row across the road from the facility. The facility itself was tan or red brick on the outside, with a wide, mustard-colored band that seemed to have been painted around the perimeter of the recessed, upper external wall atop the building's otherwise flat roof.

I was taken there at least twice by my parents in the summertime for special training. Although my parents indicated they knew what was being done to me there, I do not know if all of the other parents were aware that their children were being traumatized. I believe the teachers and trainers were, in part, sifting through the groups of children to determine which ones would be likely candidates for future ops.

One of the most upsetting things they made us do there was to use sharp knives to gut teddy bears they had given us, in a big shower room in the back, left side of the building. (Sections of the building were given alphabetical codes–A, B, C, and so on.) The teachers also used modeling clay to fashion life-sized heads with faces, then taught us how to assault the faces with our fingers and hands–especially gouging the eyeholes.

More benign classrooms were in the front part of the building, where relatives brought the children and picked them up. Those adults may not have been aware of what went on in other parts of the building. During our classes in the front rooms, we were taught various subjects, including how to conduct ourselves at social events. One time, some of the girls and boys were taught how to behave during a mock tea party.

This is the first of several facilities I've had memories of having been taken to, as a child, to be programmed and trained for future use by–I believe–the CIA and some of its affiliates.

Wizard of Oz

Dad, Dr. Black, and other mental programmers often used movie and storybook themes and characters to create alter-states and systems of alter-states in the minds of their child victims. *The Wizard of Oz* was known among programmers as the "base program" movie for child victims in my generation.

Each year, Dad forced me to watch the movie on television, even though I cried and begged him not to make me. This was before the VCR was invented. The Wicked Witch of the West and her monkey soldiers always frightened me, as did the tornado that lifted and carried Dorothy in her house from Kansas to the Land of Oz.

Later, Dad hypnotically imprinted the identities and personalities of several of the movie's characters onto a succession of blank slate alter-states that he'd created through unusually severe torture. Several of these alter-states were later used on black ops.

One was given the name, *scarecrow*. This part of my fragmented mind was hypnotically conditioned to believe he had "no brain," and therefore was completely obedient and suggestible to whoever triggered him out.

My *cowardly lion* alter-state compartmentalized much of my fear, and never emerged outside of handlers' control. Keeping my fear separated was crucial on ops because otherwise, I might have hesitated or frozen instead of thinking and acting quickly.

The alter-state that Dad and Dr. Black seemed to prize the most was given the code name, *tin man*. That male alter-state was created for the sole purpose of performing assassinations in my adult years. Based on the movie's character, this part had "no heart" and therefore couldn't emotionally connect with other humans. (Because this part believed he was male, he also didn't feel intimidated when he went one-on-one against larger, muscular males.)

My Wizard of Oz programmed alter-states were also conditioned to believe that Washington, DC was *Emerald City.*

In the movie, the tornado transported Dorothy away from her homeland, Kansas–which represented my normal home life. The phrase "over the rainbow" was used to mentally "transport" me from my normal life to the ops world, with the symbolic rainbow hypnotically bridging them.

When I was an adult, I unconsciously identified my Wizard of Oz programming to potential handlers via personal checks with rainbows printed on them, and a rainbow sticker I had placed in my car's back window.

Dad also reinforced the programming by giving me, as a birthday present, a large, faceted Australian crystal that he told me to hang inside a window at home. Whenever the sun shone through it, many tiny "rainbows" moved back and forth on the opposite wall. (I also hung a crystal from my car's rear-view mirror.)

In the movie, Dorothy was told to click her ruby slippers and chant, "There's no place like home," to go back to Kansas. When a handler took me home and parked in front of my residence, he or she said that same phrase. As I heard the words, I mentally clicked my ruby shoes and switched back to my home alter-state. Believing that I'd been given a ride home by a coworker, I exited the car and walked into my residence. I'd already been conditioned to never look back at the car to see who was driving.

Although the *Wizard of Oz* was the primary movie that was used to program my mind, Lewis Carroll's books, *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* and *Through the Looking Glass,* were also effective. Unique themes and phrases from the books and the subsequent Disney movie, *Alice in Wonderland,* were used to transport me mentally from my normal world into "Alice's World," where nothing was ever as it seemed, and insanity was always just around the corner. Anyone who knew that I had this particular mental programming could approach me in public, claiming to be the White Rabbit. Then, by saying "I'm late, I'm late," the handler–usually male–knew that I'd go into an immediate trance and follow him.[6]

Otherworld

"Otherworld" was another hypnotically implanted mental program that was used to convince many of my alter-states that when they emerged in strange places with spook handlers, they had been transported from my home life into another space-time dimension. This belief discouraged those alter-states from trying to find out where they were, and made them feel hopeless about trying to find a way back home.[7]

In "otherworld," nothing was real, and nothing had to reconcile with my regular world. Such knowledge kept me from being afraid. When I was in "otherworld," I believed I was safe from pain and mortal danger, because the programmer told me that no one ever was hurt or died in "otherworld"–after all, no one in it was real – including me!

An extra benefit to my handlers from this particular mental program was that, because I believed nothing in that world was real, I had zero fear of carrying out instructions on black ops. This was because I didn't fear being hurt or killed, and because I had no fear of being arrested–after all, the crime had never happened! This was probably the closest I ever came to experiencing what the mind of a sociopath must be like.

Greek Alphabet

When I became an adult, many of my programmed alter-states were "owned" or "time-shared" by groups and agencies who utilized my services. The rank of ownership went like this: first dibs went to a succession of individuals who held a high office in DC; then came individuals who allegedly worked within the CIA's Directorate of Operations; then came wealthy "owners," including a British tycoon and several influential DC politicians, most of whom had the power to (in some way) cover-up for some of the CIA's illegal stateside activities and its more questionable budgetary needs (most of these "owners" were connected to The Octopus); lastly came "lower level" covert associates such as occultists, pornographers, pedophiles, Nazis, and Mob members–they used me to do stateside activities.

This time-share plan was necessary because I only had one body. Those who personally "owned" some of my alter-states had to agree to wait their turn to use me. For this reason, some owners either purchased, or were given (for bartered favors), access to similarly programmed alter-states created in a number of adult slaves. This is why a surprising number of mind-control survivors reportedly had the same owners, and it is also why many of them have discovered alter-states having the same programming and code names.

To the best of my knowledge, Dad was put in charge of arranging my schedule and negotiating with those who used me.

Having access to a personal slave gave some of my owners a sense of power, prestige, and control that they might not have otherwise experienced. They were confident I would not be able to remember who had instructed me to perform the crimes, or how I got into each situation. They knew I would do both the crime and the time if arrested, while they'd remain free to use other disposable, amnesic slaves at their beck and call.

I'm grateful that I was not caught doing their dirty work. If I'd been put in prison for what I'd had no choice about doing, I never would have received the professional help that I desperately needed, to remember and heal![8]

Daniel Ryder was one of the first authors I told about my CIA mental programming. He verified that the code-names of several systems of alter-states I had listed in 1991 were later mentioned by Dr. D. Corydon Hammond, a psychiatrist, at a professional conference in the summer of 1992. At that conference, Dr. Hammond described the CIA's Greek alphabet coded systems of implanted alter-states, based on information he had received from a remarkable number of recovering mind-control survivors and their therapists.[9] (I have never talked to or consulted with Dr. Hammond.)

To the best of my understanding, my ***Alpha*** alter-states compartmentalized memories of my primary traumas. Dad created them first, and then traumatized each of them to create more fragmented alter-states as parts of my "chain programming." My Alpha system included personality fragments (information storage parts) that compartmentalized what were code-named *mind files*. To the best of my understanding, these parts of my brain stored information that was hypnotically implanted by several individuals operating at high levels in our government, to be retrieved by them as needed. This ensured that no paper trail would be left behind.[10]

Several of my Alpha-programmed alter-states also couriered verbal messages, diamonds, Krugerrands, illegal drugs, and arms. Unfortunately, some of these parts were also used to transport child slaves to several D.C. politicians who are probably still hard-core pedophiles.[11]

My ***Beta*** alter-states were sexually conditioned and trained. Some programmers referred to them as *Barbie* parts. Handlers used them in prostitution and pornography–particularly bestiality, kiddy porn, snuff films, and necrophilia. When I was a child, several of my Beta alter-states were used to sexually blackmail drugged or inebriated politicians. In my adult years, my Beta alter-states were used to sexually service and blackmail both men and women.

My ***Delta*** alter-states were trained to do covert operations. Although these alter-states often performed assassinations, they also participated in hostage interventions, protection of individuals who were in danger of being assassinated, body-guarding of politicians and other VIPs, and the training of future slave-operatives.

My ***Theta*** alter-states received specialized psychic training. Children like me were chosen for this training because, as abuse victims, we were highly sensitized to the moods and thoughts of others–especially of our abusers.[12]

I am convinced that certain individuals working within or contracted by the CIA were aware of the trauma-paranormal link long before most mental health professionals “discovered” it.[13] I believe the ongoing suppression of this information and the clever demonizing of these human abilities has occurred because the CIA, and other intelligence agencies that have also funded psychic research, have a vested interest in keeping the knowledge away from the public domain.

I’ve had recurring memories of receiving part of my childhood Theta training from James Jesus Angleton, a CIA counter-intelligence chief. Perhaps because he knew I attended a Christian church every week, he used New Testament scriptures to teach me to expand my consciousness.

He started my mental training by reminding me that Jesus Christ had said that anything He had done, we could do *more so*–with our minds. Angleton then taught me that the biggest block for people in accessing and utilizing their natural psychic abilities was their belief that they could not, or must not, do it. He taught me that if I chose to bypass that mental block, I could do anything I wanted with my mental energy, even telepathically moving a mountain, as long as I believed that I could.

To the best of my memory, Angleton worked intensively with me, one-on-one, conditioning my mind to process problems and experiences away from rigid societal rules and mores. He said this would always be my ultimate edge: while my adversaries would respond in ways in which they’d been socially conditioned, I’d use unexpected methods and weapons to attack and defend (e.g., using a concrete floor, a tiny, sharp stone, or a pen as a lethal weapon).

Sometimes he gave me a deck of cards and watched as I played solitaire. When I laid the king card down first, then the queen and jack, he asked, “Why not put the two on top of the king, then an ace? You can put the cards down any way you want.” If we played checkers or chess, he made similar statements.

He said the human brain has potential that we haven’t even begun to tap into. He encouraged me to use as much of it as possible.[14]

Other mental programmers further conditioned my Theta alter-states to believe they could read the minds of other people, communicate with some of them telepathically, and perform what is commonly known as remote viewing. Some of this training may have been successful.[15]

My limited experience with remote viewing involved sitting in a room while being observed through a two-way mirror. I was taught to send out my mental energy like a radio signal, to contact the mind of a person in another location. I was taught to assess that person's physical health and to see their environment through their eyes. I do not know, to this day, if it was my imagination or if I really "saw" what was occurring in the other person's life. At that time, however, I believed the ability was real.

I was also taught to place my palms on another person's body and channel the energy from my body into the person's body, or to draw out the person's pain or illness.[16]

When I was an adult, my Theta capabilities were fine-tuned as I served as an intercessor and prayer warrior in several Christian churches. If these abilities are legitimate, then I do not believe they are anything other than human. I do, however, believe they could be considered part of the forbidden fruit mentioned in the book of Genesis, since a person using them might feel godlike. I choose not to use my Theta training anymore–not out of fear of demons, but because I simply want to respect the mental, emotional and physical boundaries of others.

My *Omicron* alter-states were handled by Mafia individuals when alleged CIA employees from the Directorate of Operations wanted stateside hits performed. I will neither divulge details of those hits, nor will I identify any of the individuals who handled me within the Mafia. They are extremely dangerous people, and I intend to live a long and healthy life.

Notes

1. According to a Western Electric website at http://home.earthlink.net/~rhodyman/rdgworks.html, WE personnel in Reading, PA performed classified work for the US government, even in the early 1950s:

   > Operations in Reading began when Western Electric converted a nearby knitting mill in Laureldale into a factory that produced devices for the US government for use by the military and the space program.

2. When I told a private investigator (a former WE employee) about this building, he said that it may have been owned by Bell Laboratories. He further explained that engineers who worked for Western Electric were required to work for six months in Bell Labs facilities as part of their employment.

3. The CIA had experimented on the minds of its own employees, to create controllable, amnesic alter-states. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross cited CIA Artichoke documentation about a "series of cases" in which alter-states were hypnotically created:

   > A CIA Security Office employee was hypnotized and given a false identity. She defended it hotly, denying her true name and rationalizing with conviction the possession of identity cards made out to her real self. Later, having had the false identity erased by suggestion, she was asked if she had ever heard of the name she had been defending as her own five minutes before. She thought, shook her head and said, "That's a pseudo if I ever heard one." (pg. 33)

4. Carla Emery reported similar mental programming that Pavlov performed on the minds of dogs:

   > The **breaking point** is a physiological event. Abuse causes the ego, the "I," to shrink, pull back, and weaken until, finally, exhausted, it gives up. Pavlov named that moment of giving up the **ultraparadoxical stage** . . . [William] Sargant argued that anything that causes temporary cortex overstimulation and collapse has the healing effect of loosening up old programming patterns, thereby allowing the implant of new ones . . . Pavlov stressed dogs, through deconditioning, into the ultra-paradoxical crisis. After the breakdown, he conditioned new habits into them. Sometimes, he put the dog through the whole routine again: stressing it into another breakdown, and then retraining into [it] yet another set of habits. (pg. 426)

5. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross wrote:

   > Manchurian Candidate [assassin programming] work was done under MKULTRA Subproject 136, which was approved for funding on August 23, 1961. *The deliberate creation of multiple personality in children* [italics added] is an explicitly stated plan in the MKULTRA Subproject Proposal submitted for funding on May 30, 1961. TOP SECRET clearance status for the Principal Investigator on Subproject 136 had been initiated by the Technical Services Division of the CIA at the time the Subproject was approved. (pg. 61)

6. Although the following links between the CIA and *Alice in Wonderland* might seem coincidental, please note that in both articles, this is the only book that was mentioned:

   - "A Tour Through 'Hell Week': A Newsweek correspondent takes the CIA spy tests," by Douglas Waller 4/12/93: "Much of spying is making sense out of Byzantine secrets. One personality test has 480 true-false questions: 'I like *Alice in Wonderland* by Lewis Carroll'; 'I gossip a little at times.'" (pg. 33)

- AP Washington 4/30/94: "CIA chief plans to fix flaws in scarred agency: 'But I will not espouse the judicial philosophy of the Red Queen and *Alice in Wonderland:* sentence first, verdict after,' [James Woolsey] said."

7. A similar program was also installed in my mind by a stocky, brown-haired, brutal, alleged CIA programmer who used the alias "Spencer." His program was triggered by the phrase: "Spencer's World."
8. This is the main reason why I and other recovering mind-control survivors feel deep concern for slave-operatives who are arrested. Most of them are immediately approached by Company-contracted psychiatrists who pretend to befriend them (as Patty Hearst, Timothy McVeigh, and Jack Ruby were compromised by Dr. Louis Jolyon West and others). By being assigned a Company-connected psychiatrist, slave-operatives have no chance of experiencing true recovery through the help of *legitimate* mental health professionals–especially if they are put to death before they can receive such help.
9. To find an unauthorized transcript of Dr. Hammond's historic presentation on the Internet, use the words "Greenbaum Speech" as your search term.
10. When I found some of these odd personality fragments, I remembered that when they were previously activated, they had verbally given the information like ticker tape coming out of a machine. I seemed to have unconsciously memorized the information in such a way, that because I recognized that none of it belonged to me, it was kept totally separated and undisturbed until recalled. One of my dilemmas upon finding the stored information was: what should I do with it? I decided it will remain my personal property–after all, it was put in *my* brain!
11. I delivered verbal messages from US politicians to influential persons in other countries, and also delivered "messages from God" to mentally programmed Christians who accepted the orders as coming straight from God. The majority of these Christians were members of Charismatic, Baptist, and Pentecostal churches.
12. In *The Osiris Complex*, Dr. Colin Ross wrote:

    > According to my model and data, speaking analogically, the genes for dissociation and the paranormal are closely linked to each other on the same chromosome . . . any extragenetic factor that activates one tends to activate the other, since they are linked. Severe, chronic childhood trauma is one such factor . . . highly psychic individuals tend to be highly dissociative . . . trauma opens a window to the paranormal. (pg. 70)

13. Dr. Ross wrote, "Although ESP is a universal aspect of human experience, it has been suppressed by the intelligentsia in the twentieth century, and is not a subject of mainstream psychiatric discussion or research." (*Osiris*, pg. 68)

14. When I first remembered having been trained as a child by Angleton, I thought I was fabricating these memories. How could I, just a child, have met with such a busy man? And even if I had, how could he have been connected to MKULTRA, when he'd overseen counterintelligence? Nearly a decade later, I found information that explained his connections to MKULTRA:

    > The ARTICHOKE [pre-MKULTRA] Team must have been under the command of James Angleton, who was Chief of the CIA Counterintelligence Staff from December 1954, until 1974. Angleton was also involved in MKULTRA, as described in an article in the February 18, 1979 *Wilmington Sunday News Journal* entitled: "UD prof helps concoct 'mind control' potions." The article . . . mentions Angleton's involvement in MKULTRA. Angleton's name appears in "a list of all persons who have been briefed on 'Bluebird' [also pre-MKULTRA]." (Bluebird, pp. 27-28)

    Several months later, I received a copy of an article, *James Jesus Angleton & the Kennedy Assassination*. Its author, Lisa Pease, explained one of Angleton's connections to Nazi war criminals, some of whom may have taught mind-control techniques to Angleton and other CIA personnel:

    > . . . Angleton obtained access to the Ratlines the Vatican was using to move people out of Europe to safety abroad. Angleton and others from the State Department used the Ratlines to ferry Nazis to South America. (pg. 19)

15. In the early 90s, Keith Harary wrote a surprisingly honest article, "Selling the Mind Short: Exposing the Myth of Psychic Privilege," for *Omni* magazine. In it, he exposed the fallacies of several myths about "psychic" powers and abilities:

    > Disseminating propaganda requires subverting rational thinking with seemingly plausible lies. I was a teenager when I first believed the lie that there was something about me or anybody else that could properly be labeled "psychic." A part of me felt sick when the label was used on me–the way I felt when I smoked my first cigarette. There was something compelling and forbidden about the experience, and something I also knew could eventually do me in down the line . . . the authority figures who sold me the bill of goods were parapsychologists at one of the field's major laboratories, who used the label "psychic" to explain my performance in a parapsychology experiment. That the mind is capable of remarkable feats is undeniable. Exploring the implications of this realization does not require resorting to extremes. It should encourage us to create a middle ground–one that defines human potential in human terms. If a higher perceptual, communicative, and thinking capability exists with us, then it cannot be destined to remain anomalous or denied by rational people or consigned to the realm of

> the psychic and paranormal. It must be understood within the context of normal experience and achievable human potential and considered within the emerging framework of mainstream science. (pg. 6)

16. Frank Herbert's story, *Dune* and its subsequent movies were used by mental programmers to reinforce my belief in my ability to transfer my energy to other humans.

Horrification

House of Horrors

Richard Rhodes has written a fascinating book, *Why They Kill: The Discoveries of a Maverick Criminologist*, that presents the personal story of Lonnie Athens, a criminologist who specializes in the study of violent criminals. According to Athens, "dangerous violent killers" first must pass through "four separate stages of violentization": brutalization, belligerency, violent performances, and virulency.

Athens divided the process of the first stage, brutalization, into three sub-stages: "violent subjugation, personal horrification, and violent coaching." During violent subjugation, "authority figures from one of the subject's primary groups use violence or force [the victim] to submit to their authority." In the second sub-stage of brutalization, "personal horrification," the victim witnesses the violent subjugation of someone emotionally close to them. Finally, during "violent coaching," the victim is coached by a person in their primary group to perform violent acts. (pp. 112–120)

Unfortunately, I experienced all three sub-stages of brutalization in my father's occult rituals; my father was my personal coach.

Although Athens considers horrification to be the experience of witnessing brutal harm being done to others, I consider horrification to be more than that. In my opinion, it is a mind-bending experience that involves either witnessing harm done to others, or being harmed ourselves, by individuals or groups that either use horrific methods or perform the harmful acts within horrific environments.

I believe horrification is the primary emotional response of victims who are forced to participate in criminal, occult rituals–particularly children. During such rituals, both the methods used (e.g., intimidation, threats, torture, rape, ingestion of repulsive substances, mock or real killings of animals or humans) and the environments in which the rituals are performed (physical location, robed participants, candles, chants, frightening animals, ritual implements and symbols, and more) can easily horrify, scar, and even split the minds of child victims.[1]

During my childhood, Dad and several other cult members took me to numerous buildings and homes in the Reading area. One of the ritual locations was a large stone building on the side of what locals called Schuylkill Mountain, just outside the city of Reading. More than once, Dad ritually traumatized me in its underground dungeon.[2]

I have also vividly recalled that Dad made me crawl on my hands and knees into a large crawl space under a stone building, probably on the same mountain. The entrance into the ground-level crawl space was sealed by a square, flat-surfaced, hewn granite block that had been placed in the wall. Words were engraved on it. Behind the wall were bags full of the remains of many dead babies.

Dad made me lie atop the bags in the daytime while he met with men inside the building. As I lay perfectly still, I became one with the sweetly innocent dead. I felt safe because I believed no adult would want to crawl inside to hurt me. I desensitized to the pungent odor and became friends with it. This was a sad bonus when, as an adult, I was used to do body disposals. I can still easily differentiate between the odor of a dead animal and a human, because a decomposing human corpse smells sickeningly sweet.

Arson

Dad didn't limit his criminal activities to secretive rituals, rape, and pornography. Even outside the rituals, I saw more horror than any child should. He knew if he took me with him to commit crimes, nobody would believe he was responsible. He occasionally burned houses and other buildings at night, sometimes with people still in them. To this day, I detest the odor of gasoline.

He always seemed fascinated with fire. In the late 1960s, after our family moved to Georgia Dad set fire several times to a large wooded area near our house. Then he stood and watched excitedly as a fire truck came, its siren blaring. Each time, he claimed local teenagers had set the fire and acted like a hero as he helped the firemen put out the blaze.

When committing arson at night, Dad's prepared excuse for being in the locale was that I'd had a nightmare, and therefore he'd taken me for a walk or a drive. If he didn't commit the crime too late at night, he then took me to an ice cream parlor and bought me a butterscotch sundae.

The smell and taste of the delicious sundae blocked out the smell and taste of gasoline and smoke. By the time he took me home, all I could remember was the ice cream.

In the summer, after he'd performed a nighttime arson job, he sometimes searched fence lines for honeysuckle vines and encouraged me to inhale the blossoms' fragrance and suck on their nectar. This also blocked out previous smells and their attached memories. When we returned home, all I remembered was the blossoms' lovely fragrance.

Nightmares

Although he tried, Dad couldn't stop my repressed memories from seeping through into my dreams. I've never forgotten that most nights during my childhood, I awoke with a pounding heart and sweat-soaked sheets. Many times, my pillow was inexplicably soaked with tears. The bad dreams were so terrifying, I feared they would eventually kill me.

What I didn't remember during the day became my nemesis in the dark. I tried to avoid night terrors and dreams by reading books until I couldn't keep my eyes open. I cannot remember a single night that I did not have nightmares. I naïvely believed that everyone must have them as much as I did.

On at least two occasions, I woke up downstairs, standing alone in my nightgown. I had no memory of having walked down the stairs. Frightened, I screamed for my parents. Each time, Dad came and told me I had been sleepwalking, then carried me back up the creaking wooden stairs to my bedroom. Because I didn't understand what caused my sleepwalking, I felt embarrassed that I'd caused such a fuss.

Perpetrator Alter-States

I continued to compartmentalize unpleasant memories in alter-states, keeping them separate from my consciousness. I unconsciously fashioned some of them after the perceived personalities of adult criminals like my father. These parts were sociopathic, emotionally cold, and deadly.[3] Dad and other programmers called them "blank slate" alter-states, because they had zero memory of my life at home, church, or school. Having been created through extreme torture and mental duress, these parts initially emerged with only the most basic memories of how to dress, breathe, eat, walk, use the bathroom, and so on.

Because of their insane lust for ego gratification, my father and his cohorts seemed especially pleased to create alter-states that worshipped the ground they walked on. When I was an adult, these alter-states were used to perform crimes–always under the control of professional handlers–that I could not, and would not, have carried out under any other circumstances. Why is this?

For whatever reason, I was born with a naturally soft and caring heart. As a child, I cried and begged my oldest brother to stop when he pulled wings off of flies in the basement window as he laughed at them, or used the sun's rays through a magnifying glass to burn grasshoppers to death on big rocks.

I couldn't stand to see anyone, or anything, being hurt–and I especially would not allow myself to hurt them. Because of this, Dad and his associates used extreme torture and related trauma to break my mind and then create the blank slate alter-states that had no awareness of time other than the moments in which they existed.[4]

These alter-states were then conditioned to harm others without balking. I guess it takes a monster to create one.

Notes

1. In psychology classes, I learned that some of the early indicators of the development of anti-social personality disorder are: setting fires, cruelty to animals, property destruction, and an inability to emotionally attach to others. Antisocial personality disorder and *criminal* occultism may be directly linked, because such rituals often include fire and inhumanely sadistic acts perpetrated against animals, children, and even adults.

2. A correspondent who lived in Pennsylvania heard about my desire to find that building. In July, 1998 she sent me a pamphlet and photos of Stokesay Castle, a mansion that had been converted into a popular restaurant. The stone castle was located at Hill Road and Spook Lane, within walking distance of Reiffton. In an E-mail, she wrote:

   > There is a restaurant halfway up Schuylkill Mt. It's called Stokesay Castle. Before I ventured in there, I asked a waiter who was outside, how long it'd been a restaurant. He said 20 years. I went inside and

> asked permission to look around and sure enough, there was your dungeon . . . Upon reading a pamphlet of theirs, I found that the castle was . . . kept as a summer home until 1956 when [the owner] sold it to "a group of individuals" who converted it into a restaurant.

3. Carla Emery wrote about eighteen "techniques of criminal hypnosis," as compiled by Paul Campbell Young. Young's "Technique #17" may explain why blank slate alter-states take on the perceived personas of perpetrators:

   > *Assumption of Another's Identity*—Young cited M. H. Erickson's "*experiments on transidentification*" for this item. The hypnotic subject unconsciously incorporates wishes and attitudes of the hypnotist, like a child incorporates parental rules and views. Just as each adult has attitudes absorbed in childhood from their parents still influencing them, so each hypnotic subject acquires unconscious parameters and a role model from the hypnotist too. (pg. 353)

4. "It is a fact that memory becomes disoriented under hostile interrogation and that torturers aim at deliberately confusing recall. It is the torturer who not only determines real units of time under torture but who also damages historical orientation. The unit of time for torture remembered under intense emotions becomes stretched out and thus distorted. In the brain, fear of annihilation leads to a slowdown in the experience of time–similar to the impact of hallucinogens–that changes the synchronization between time as it is lived out and calendar time." (Graessner et al., pg. 192)

Adolescence

Junior High

As my trauma-based programming continued, I blocked out all memory of it so I could continue to cope with my "normal" life activities and responsibilities.

During my seventh and eighth grades, I attended Exeter Township Junior High School, less than a mile from home. There, I felt more secure. It was especially nice not to have to suffer any more mental and emotional abuse from the snobbish girls' clique at the middle school.

Dad insisted I play the French horn in the junior high school band. The heavy brass instrument was difficult to carry back and forth to school, and draining spittle from it certainly wasn't feminine. Still, I did what Dad wanted. As I played it, I noticed that my lungs' air capacity increased.

In the summer months, my brothers and I competed at the membership swimming pool to see how long we could remain underwater. I usually won, because I was able to do more than two minutes without great discomfort.

I believe I was obsessed with swimming long distances and holding my breath underwater, because I was unconsciously conditioning myself to survive drownings. As part of Dad's ongoing near-death trauma regimen, he would drown and then resuscitate me, creating even more alter-states that he had complete power over. I think it gave him the ultimate sense of power over me–"killing" me, then bringing me back from the dead.[1]

Dad arranged for a professional French horn player, Al Antonnuci, to be my tutor. I studied with the bearded man at night, once a week, in an old, multi-story building in Reading. After each session, I listened as Mr. Antonnuci played his shiny silver horn. The notes were so pure, I sometimes wept with joy.

At the new school, I emotionally bonded with a married German couple who taught classes in separate rooms on the second floor. The dark-haired husband was our science teacher. He kept a large black snake in an aquarium in his classroom's front wall. We often watched in fascination as the mounds of white mice slowly moved along the length of the snake's body.

I took two years of German from his gentle, tall, brunette wife. Although I spoke German fairly well at the time, I now remember little of the language, because of the horror of having been tortured and raped by German-speaking men. They made the language repugnant to me.

Cross-Country

In the summer of 1969, Dad transferred to Western Electric's plant in Baltimore, Maryland for a one-year assignment. We moved into a newly built, two-story house on Saxon Hill Drive in a recently developed subdivision not far from the town of Cockeysville.

Each morning, Dad woke my brothers and me up at 5:30, even in the middle of winter, to run up our steep street, then out into the countryside and back, for a total of three miles. Sometimes he made me run up a steeper dirt hill behind our row of homes.

Although running up the dirt hill made my calves burn like molten steel, I felt exhilarated as I reached the top. I'd finally found my runner's high. I've since learned that running increases the amount of cortisol in the brain, which probably helped me to fight off depression.[2]

Running with Dad was unpleasant. He insisted that I keep pace with him. Because he was a foot taller, it was impossible to match his long, loping strides. I cried when he wouldn't slow down. He usually stopped and waited as I cried, yelling at me or doubling back behind me and then hitting me on my back or buttocks, knocking me to the ground. When he did that, I cried so hard that I panicked and couldn't breathe. My pounding heart felt like it would burst. Each time, he looked at me with disgust and ran home, leaving me crumpled on the ground. I cried harder, my heart breaking. I knew I'd never be good enough to please him.

High School

Although I made good grades at our new school in Maryland, I again felt like an outsider. I met several other girls who also had difficulty socializing.

Although we ate together in the cafeteria, we didn't do much else together.

That same year, I developed adolescent "crushes" on several boys, especially a brown-haired, chubby, gentle boy named John. He also played a brass horn in the school band. He called me "Snaggletooth" because I'd accidentally broken one of my top front teeth in Pennsylvania and it had never been repaired. I felt embarrassed about it and rarely smiled. When John teased me into smiling, his kindness drew me to him. I felt devastated when I discovered that he had a steady girlfriend. Would any boy ever want me?

Once a week, Mom took us to the public library. It was a safe place where nobody hurt me. Still an avid reader, I always took home a stack of books. The stories took me where nobody could hurt or betray me. Sometimes, when bad things were done to me, I flew away into the stories in my mind.

I know that I participated in classes at Cockeysville High School. I have records to prove it. And yet, I've had numerous memories of exiting our regular school bus in the morning at the school, then boarding another yellow bus that took me and other students to several other locations. Each was a training facility set up like a regular school. Because these memories are vivid, consistent, and continue to recur, I believe they are of real locations and people. At these spook schools, the teachers taught subjects that never would have been allowed in a public school–including becoming familiar with holding and handling various types of knives, handguns, and other lethal weapons.

Notes

1. In his web-published memoir, *My Father the Serial Killer*, Steve Griggs describes an alarmingly similar pattern of behavior exhibited by his father, who was brought over from the Lithuanian Death Camps to serve in the United States Army, plausibly as a push-button assassin. A homicidal sadist, Steve's dad developed a taste for recreational violence on the side, and his children were not only witnesses, but victims. Steve describes himself and his sister as "a couple of MKULTRA kids who just wanted to get through the next 24 hours, every day." From *My Father the Serial Killer*:

> In 1962, I was 10, my sister Dianne was 6, and we lived at Fort Devens, Massachusetts. I overheard my father tell my mother that he would

> drown my sister while she took a bath. I went outside and sat next to her in the woods and spoke to her.
>
> "If you want to live, you have to practice holding your breath every minute of every day, even when you are in school, even in the laboratory. Look at the clock, hold your breath and time yourself. What's going to happen is this: when you're taking a bath, he's going to come in and hold you under. You have to be ready with air in your lungs–but don't let him hear you take it in. At first you have to struggle but stay relaxed in your mind. Then let some bubbles come out, but not all of it, and let your body go limp. He'll stand there and look down at you for a while, so don't move or open your eyes. Nothing! Do you understand? Nothing!"
>
> Dianne shook her head yes, and started holding her breath.
>
> "I don't know exactly what's going to happen after this, but if we can get this far, there's a good chance that something else will happen to interfere with their plan because they haven't thought it out this far and they don't know that we know."
>
> It worked.

The rest of the story of Dianne's drowning may be found along with other excerpts from *My Father the Serial Killer* at http://www.sondralondon.com/ tales/griggs.

2. The drug-like high of being on dangerous ops may have been due to a similar increase in cortisol levels, and may be why I grew addicted to ops. Dr. Zebulon Kendrick, Ph.D., a kinesiologist at Temple University in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, explained:

> . . . produced by the adrenal glands during stress, cortisol rises during intense bouts of exercise and, unlike endorphins, crosses the blood-brain barrier. Cortisol has an anti-inflammatory and analgesic effect and dampens or hides pain and can give you a general feeling of well-being. (*Ladies' Home Journal*, February 2003, pg. 118)

Georgia Rebellion

Georgia

The following summer, Western Electric transferred Dad to an engineering position at its new cable factory in Norcross, Georgia. A growing industrial suburb, Norcross was a half-hour drive north of Atlanta. To anyone who would listen, Dad bragged that he'd been chosen to create the plant's new cable reel yard. I felt proud of him, and was glad that he was happy.[1]

Although I was disappointed that Atlanta was nowhere near the Atlantic Ocean, the big city was surprisingly clean and modern. The sky above it was startlingly blue, and the clouds seemed so huge and white that I fantasized I could reach up and touch them.

Our new, two-story, red brick house was built on Club Drive in Snellville, a tiny rural town about a half-hour from Norcross. The woods behind our home overlooked the town. With its white columns, our house looked like a Georgian mansion. It was built on the highest property in the area. Mom said that Dad liked the idea of looking down on everyone else; I think she was right.

The hill behind our row of houses was covered with tall pine trees. Their branches didn't start growing until about two-thirds of the way up the trunks. This was a problem, because in the winter during ice storms, some of the tops of the trees bent all the way down to the ground, their trunks snapping like huge twigs from the weight of the ice that coated the long needles. Still, the ice storms were spectacular. When the sun shone on an entire landscape coated with ice, the sheer beauty took my breath away.

Mom was hired as a secretary at the W.E. Norcross plant, so my brothers and I were left unsupervised at home after school and during the summer. In warm weather, we spent a lot of time at our subdivision's swimming pool. I felt peaceful as I lay on my back on the concrete, sunning and listening to the lapping, chlorinated water and the rock music from my portable radio.

Since my body was beginning to develop, I was embarrassed to let boys see me in a swimsuit. Mom told me they would only want me for one thing: my big breasts. Terrified, I stayed away from the boys as much as possible.

Dad also made nasty comments about my developing body, and weighed me on the bathroom scale at least once a week. Whenever I gained a pound, he accused me of not adhering to a diet that he'd created for me. Because I dieted faithfully, his accusations made me feel crazy.

Acting Out

Since we'd moved far away from our childhood family, Dad seemed freer to do whatever he wanted to us, while continuing to present himself to the outside world as a perfect father of a perfect family. As in Pennsylvania, Dad was active in church and several civic organizations. Again he went to an extreme to prove he wasn't a racist. This time, he intervened on behalf of a Puerto Rican neighbor who was being harassed by an elderly racist neighbor who drove through his manicured front yard, leaving deep ruts in it. Dad personally confronted the elderly man and ensured that from then on, the Puerto Rican man and his family would be treated with respect.

At the same time, Dad took me to Aryan meetings and occult rituals in Gwinnett County and in several other parts of northern Georgia. His shifts in behavior from one extreme to the other was one of the reasons I continued to be unaware of his darker side. I naturally preferred to know my father as a champion of the proverbial underdog instead of a dangerous racist.

Although Dad still terrorized me in rituals, I followed Mom's example at home by becoming more rebellious towards him. Then they started fighting openly, yelling and hitting each other. I soon spiraled into depression.

Within a short time, an unexpected source of relief entered my life. Tom, our teenaged lifeguard, was funny and cute. At first I hoped that he'd want me to be his girlfriend. I quickly noticed that many other girls also wanted to be with him. Ashamed of my developing body, I didn't think I could compete against them for his affections. Instead, I resigned myself to becoming a friend.

One hot summer day, while the afternoon rain pummeled the red clay dirt outside the fenced pool area, I found Tom and another teenaged boy huddled inside the pool's pump house. At first, I didn't understand what they were doing—smoking a joint of marijuana. Tom said I could try it, if I didn't tell anyone. I coughed when the harsh smoke burned my throat. After the rain stopped, we walked outside to the pool and sat on a roofed, wooden picnic table. As Tom played his twelve-string guitar, I was fascinated by the beauty of the chords. I couldn't stop laughing and smiling–I felt so wonderful!

When I returned to school the following fall, other students hooked me up with local drug dealers. Soon, I was smoking marijuana nearly every day. When I wasn't high, depression hit hard, leaving me lost and hopeless. Because all of my new friends were drug users, we shared whatever we could find with each other. And yet, because of all the horror stories I'd heard about hard drugs like heroin, I was careful only to take what I knew I couldn't get hooked on. To supplement my newly rebellious lifestyle, I also started smoking about two packs of cigarettes a day.

One reason why I preferred marijuana to alcohol was that my parents could easily recognize the smell of liquor. The only sure signs of my drug use were enlarged pupils, inappropriate emotional affect, and the munchies.

For a teenaged girl already suffering from compulsive overeating and low self-esteem, the munchies were an aftereffect from hell. Whenever my friends and I came down from our drug-induced high, we raided the local convenience store. Bags of Fritos and Doritos, Three Musketeer candy bars, and beef jerky satisfied our enormous cravings. When I was stoned, I didn't care if I ingested huge quantities of calories.

On the days when I couldn't find any marijuana, depression hit me over the head like an iron skillet. I was so desperate, I tried anything, including inhaling sulfuric fumes from lit matches.

Sexuality

As a newcomer to the South, I quickly learned that rules of conduct were drastically different from those in Pennsylvania and Maryland. Many of the students teased me about how I talked like a Yankee. I retaliated by calling them rednecks. Some of the boys affectionately called me "Socks," insisting that I must have stuffed my bra. Although I feared getting close to them, I did feel drawn to those who were emotionally troubled.

Several times, I mistook a young man's sexual advances for love. Because the thought of intercourse terrified me, I did everything I could to avoid it. And because I still blocked out all memory of having been sexually abused, I believed I was a virgin.

The first time I did have sex, I was disappointed by the lack of sensation. I was also concerned because I didn't bleed when penetrated. What had happened to the "cherry" everyone joked about?

Mom had recently purchased a paperback book, *Everything You Want to Know About Sex But Are Afraid To Ask.* She hid it in a small drawer beside her bed. Because my parents never discussed sex or birth control with me, this book was the extent of my official sex education.

Some of the teenaged drug users called themselves "freaks." They taught me how to rebel against authority figures. We called policemen "pigs" and oinked at them when they drove by in their patrol cars.

Feeling increasingly rebellious, I dressed outrageously to embarrass Dad–although never in his presence. Sometimes I secretly borrowed Mom's too-short skirts and dresses that she wore to work, and enjoyed wolf whistles from construction workers who were building new homes in our neighborhood. I also wore leather moccasins instead of shoes.

Because a local double standard permitted teenaged boys but not girls to smoke, I smoked cigarettes while walking beside the main road to and from the high school each day. Sometimes I took the tobacco out of my cigarette and smoked the marijuana in full view of passing cars. I didn't understand that I was unconsciously trying to draw attention to what was wrong in our home.

At sixteen, I wore blue jeans nearly every day. I even wore them to our Methodist church's Sunday night services, which was considered scandalous. That pleased me immensely. By then, most of the adults in our church had stopped asking me to baby-sit their children. Only one person seemed to see past my rebellious façade.

Pastor Hodges

Since a Lutheran church wasn't nearby, we'd joined the local Methodist church. Our pastor, Judson "Judd" Hodges, was a marvelous, black-haired mountain of a man. He became my saving grace during those dark teenaged years. Since he was taller and wider than Dad, I wasn't afraid to tell him about the constant fighting in our home.

The church was just off the main road between our wooded property and the high school, so I passed it every day as I walked to school and back. On many afternoons, I visited with Pastor Hodges either in his study in the church or in the living room of the next-door, red brick, one-story parsonage–when his gracious wife, Betty, was there. Pastor Hodges' consistent appropriate behavior meant the world to me. With him, I always felt safe.

When I wasn't numbed by drugs, I was in great emotional pain. During each visit to his office, Pastor Hodges sat quietly as I cried and talked about how miserable I was at home. He didn't try to shut me down and he didn't ask questions that I couldn't answer.

Instead of being judgmental, he gently tried to help me understand that my new friends at school weren't really friends at all. He knew most of them, and warned me that they were using me. He said they would drag me down with them. I wasn't ready to admit he was right–I still needed drugs to survive.

Pastor Hodges didn't try to preach down to me; instead, he met me where I was at. He didn't argue when I told him I couldn't stand going to Sunday morning church services "because of the hypocrites" (really, my parents). Instead, he invited me to use that hour to read Christian books that he'd placed on a set of wooden bookshelves in another part of the church. Instead of judging and chastising me, he helped me to feel loved and accepted.

Pastor Hodges wasn't just there for me. He was also supportive of my mother as she struggled to break free from Dad's brutal control. When she decided to have a medical procedure that would ensure she'd have no more children, Dad was furious and refused to drive her to the clinic. Having no one to turn to, she drove there herself. After the surgery, she was in so much pain, she couldn't drive. When Dad refused to come get her, she called Pastor Hodges, who transported her home. Dad hated the pastor after that, and never forgave him for "interfering" in their marriage.

Exercise Regimen

Still despising my developing body, Dad created a new exercise regimen. First, he cleared dirt paths in the woods behind our house by removing some of the pine trees. Then, at 5:15 each morning, he ordered me to get out of bed, get dressed, run down the steep path behind our house, then across the bottom of the woods and then back up to the top. My lungs burned and I cried from the pain in my calves, chest, and sides. At first he ran ahead of me, demanding that I keep up with him. Then he stood at the top of the hill and timed me with his stopwatch. Finally, he let me run with our family's dog, a half-collie/half-German shepherd he'd named Lassie. I preferred her company to his.

If the ground was muddy, I learned not to slide. I constantly watched for exposed tree roots and leaped over felled trees that blocked the paths. My calf muscles burned like fire every time I ran up the steep hill. When I sobbed from the pain and my inability to breathe, he ordered me to run the entire trail again. Pity wasn't a part of Dad's vocabulary.

He purchased a work-out bench and barbells, and trained my brothers and me to lift them in our big basement. He also made me exercise on a mat, where he sexually assaulted me when the rest of our family was either busy upstairs or away from the house. Even the way he approached sex with me had changed. Unlike the past, when he'd often convinced me that he loved me as he raped me, he now did it brutally. It was almost as if he hated the woman I was becoming.

One Saturday afternoon, as I did a set of sit-ups on the mat in the basement, the door to the upstairs kitchen was open. I heard Dad and Mom arguing loudly in the kitchen. Mom criticized Dad for being so strict with me. I wept bitterly when I heard Dad yell, "Kathy looks like a baby elephant!" I finally realized I could do nothing to make him satisfied with my body.

Violence

At home, Dad's physical abuse of Mom escalated. He beat and raped her so forcibly at night, I could hear her head banging against their headboard as she screamed, "Bill, don't! Bill, please stop!" I clenched my fists and cried myself to sleep, holding my pillow over my head, frustrated that I couldn't save her and angry that she didn't leave him. (In a deposition in 1989, Dad admitted he had beaten Mom, although he tried to convince the lawyers that he'd only done it two or three times.)

Mom started taking valium, and later told me she visualized a bubble around her that made Dad's cruel words bounce back at him as she smiled at him. She lost so much weight, she looked like a prisoner of war–I suppose in her own way, she was. Fortunately for her, the women's liberation movement was now in full force. Whenever we went out to eat at a truck stop in Norcross, Mom put a dime in the juke box and played Helen Reddy's hit song, *I Am Woman*. Dad fumed quietly as it played, while Mom smiled triumphantly at him. When we returned home, Dad usually beat her again, but she kept playing the song in restaurants and smiling.

LSD

I experimented with LSD three times, by choice. The first pill was a dud. The second time, I felt an almost uncontrollable urge to grab pruning shears from my younger brother's hands and stab him in the stomach with them. Frightened, I ran to an excavated area beside our subdivision's main entrance. I sat alone for hours and enjoyed watching Egyptian hieroglyphics that wavered and moved in the dirt until the acid wore off.

The third time I took LSD, I saw lines of tiny, colorful, Mickey Mouse cartoon characters move like miniature traffic grids on the dirt and trees behind our house. Each time they moved, they clicked. When the hallucinations wouldn't stop, I ran into the kitchen and drank milk to purge my stomach. The vomiting frightened me, so I drank some of Mom's refrigerated paregoric. The opium in it seemed to make the hallucinations worse.

I called my closest friend, whose boyfriend was a drug dealer, and asked them to come take care of me until I came down from the acid trip. Her boyfriend laughed when I threw up in his car on the way to my friend's house. Terribly ashamed, I vowed never to take LSD again.

Secret Investigation

As part of my rebellion, I started a sit-in demonstration with Tom's youngest sister in the corridor outside the office of our high school's principal. Our large, vocal group demanded that female students, like the males, be allowed to smoke at school if they brought a signed permission slip from their parents. Dad didn't tell me that the principal called him at work that day, to tell him what I'd done.

In 1989, Dad stated that when I was a teenager, he'd been asked to participate in a secret commission that, he claimed, had been organized to investigate drug trafficking in Snellville. He said he'd known that I was taking drugs daily, and had known who was supplying me.

Only once in my teen years did Dad indicate to me that he thought I might be taking drugs. That day in our living room, he showed me a magazine article about LSD. He said I should stay away from the drug because it could damage my brain. Then he walked away, signaling the end of our one-sided discussion.

Escalation

Dad still drove us to church every Sunday morning. Regardless of what went on at home, he wanted us to continue presenting ourselves as a model, upstanding family.[2] He now taught a Sunday School class and sang in the adult choir with Mom. I enjoyed singing in the junior choir. What the church members didn't know was that after church, as Dad drove us home, Mom yelled at him, calling him a "liar" and a "hypocrite."

Sometimes Dad stopped the car in the middle of the road and hit her; more often, he waited until we were inside the house and then beat her as she screamed in rage at him. The way they expressed their hatred towards each other broke my heart.

Mom secretly consulted with a divorce lawyer. He advised her that in Georgia, unlike in Pennsylvania, if she filed for divorce, she had the legal right to half the property value of the house and any attached land. She also learned that if Dad bruised her, she could have him arrested. After she told Dad what the attorney said, he used football tackles to push her against the refrigerator and walls with his chest and shoulders, laughing at her helplessness and outrage as he pinned her. Sometimes he deliberately tripped her and laughed as she fell on the kitchen floor.

Although I was horrified and feared for her safety, I did nothing. If Mom couldn't stop him, how could I? Sometimes when they fought, Mom shouted, "I'm not your squaw!" Dad retorted that he still owned her and she was his property. I felt confused by his strange words–surely he knew that men couldn't own their wives!

Running Away

The stress at home grew unbearable, especially at night and on weekends when Dad was home. Three times, I ran away from home to escape it.

The first time, I ran as fast as I could through the woods in the late afternoon, because I was afraid Dad would beat me for something I'd done at school.

I went to the house of Janie, a young friend from school. Her mother was the quiet epitome of a true small-town Southern woman. At dinnertime, the black-haired, dark-eyed woman introduced me to my first full Southern meal of grainy white corn bread, buttermilk, fried fish, and home-grown vegetables. After the wonderful meal, she welcomed me to spend the night in Janie's room. Not wanting to anger my parents, she called Pastor Hodges, who mediated with Dad to ensure I wouldn't be hurt when I walked home the next morning.

The second time I ran away, I again went to Janie's house. Her mother again contacted the pastor, who called my parents. After that, the gentle woman said that I was welcome to come to their home any time my parents fought, with the understanding that I had to return home after they'd had time to cool off. I wished I could live with her family.

The last time I ran away from home, I was afraid of Dad's temper because I'd quit the school's marching band and its female track team without his permission. Summoning up my courage, I hitchhiked to the nearby town of Stone Mountain, then took a bus to Atlanta. Being alone in the big city was scary. I didn't have enough money to spend the night in a hotel. What would I do?

A middle-aged, male, Caucasian pimp approached me and invited me to stay at his place for "just one night." He promised he wouldn't do anything. I followed him into his first-floor apartment and tranced as I stared out his bedroom window, watching a strong breeze blow through several big hardwood trees. He quietly walked behind me and caressed my buttocks. A protector alter-state emerged and screamed at him while running out of the building. When I was safely away, I reemerged. Not knowing where I was, I cried. Now what would I do?

I stopped at a tiny "greasy spoon" Huddle House restaurant to buy a sausage biscuit and soda, then called a classmate to tell her what I'd done. Although she couldn't help me, I felt better, knowing that she cared. I decided to keep walking until I could find a safe place to sleep.

Mission Possible

Early that evening, I talked to two young, blond women I encountered on a city sidewalk. Because they seemed nice, I asked if they knew a safe place where I could spend the night. One of them pointed to a large, upright white cross in the yard directly behind us. On it were the words: *Mission Possible.* She said she knew the older couple who ran the mission–they would give me safe shelter.

I was warmly welcomed by the Lands, who said they were Pentecostals. Mrs. Land said they provided a safe haven for male and female drug addicts and prostitutes who wanted help. She said she and her husband occasionally risked their lives to help enslaved prostitutes break free from their owners.

Mrs. Land asked my permission to call my parents, and said she'd make sure they wouldn't hurt me. The young female residents, who wore long dresses and skirts, led me upstairs to their large, shared bedroom. We stood in a circle and held hands as they prayed together in English and in tongues. Although their strange babbling frightened me a bit, I felt at peace and sensed that everything would be all right.

Mrs. Land walked into the room and said she had called Mom, who agreed to come for me and not harm me.

When Dad picked me up instead, I was frightened, but soon I relaxed–it was the nicest he'd ever been towards me. First, he drove through Atlanta's Piedmont Park, where he said hippies took drugs and slept on the grass. He talked as if they were filthy, and said I might have ended up there. I made a mental note to stay there if I had to run away again.

To my surprise, Dad offered a compromise: if I would do the best I could in school, he wouldn't ask for more. Although I continued to take drugs every day, I maintained a good grade average. That seemed to satisfy him.

School Intervention

At the high school in Snellville, my female guidance counselor seemed to be the only adult who sensed the depth of my pain. She had amazingly smooth, porcelain skin and shiny, short black hair. Her voice was soft and she was never confrontational. She was the only person at school I felt safe to open up to, although I didn't remember enough to be able to tell her about the more hidden traumas.

She arranged with all my teachers to let me leave my classes any time I wanted to meet with her. She also encouraged me to spend my study hall periods in her office. I read my assignments at a table while she worked at her nearby desk. Her quiet, unobtrusive caring provided another calm oasis in my troubled life.

Busted

In the fall semester of my senior (12th) year at school, I bought two unusually large, white Quaalude tranquilizer pills from a young blond student who was making a small fortune selling drugs in the school's parking lot. He said another teenager who had burglarized the local pharmacy the night before had sold him a large volume of the pills. I bought two, paying twenty-five cents for each. Later, my closest friend asked me to sell one to her. I did, for twenty-five cents.

That day, students who took the pills dropped like flies all over the parking lot and in the classrooms. To keep some of them from being arrested, we hid them in cooperative students' cars until the drug wore off. I made an unscheduled visit with the guidance counselor, and told her I was upset because my friends were getting sick. I didn't tell her I had bought two of the pills, because I didn't want her to think badly of me.

As we talked, my back was to the corridor outside her office. I heard a commotion and turned to look. Two men half-dragged my friend into the vice principal's office. I started crying because I was worried about her health. Soon, the vice-principal sent for me. In his office, he said my friend had told him I'd sold her the drug. He said if I told him who I bought the pills from, he wouldn't have me arrested.

I shook and cried. Then I said I'd tell him whatever he wanted, as long as he'd call Dad at work to smooth the way for me when I was home. I also asked him to call Pastor Hodges. Soon, the big man entered the small room and enveloped me in his strong arms as I sobbed uncontrollably. The vice-principal said I would have to be suspended from school for the rest of the semester. Then he said he'd make sure my record was kept clean if I told him who sold me the pills. He kept his word–my high school transcript doesn't indicate my suspension.

Turnaround

My friend's mother was furious that I'd given her daughter the pill. During a phone conversation with Mom that afternoon, the girl's mother accused me of being her drug supplier, and banned me from having further contact with her. I was incredulous, because the girl's much-older boyfriend had supplied both of us for years! I was relieved when Mom believed me.

That night, Dad angrily questioned me and asked who had started me on drugs. I told him about our lifeguard, Tom. Dad immediately went to Tom's house and confronted him. The young man lied and said he'd never given me marijuana. Because Dad was on the neighborhood's pool committee, he immediately fired Tom. That really tore me up, because I liked Tom and had become friends with his youngest sister. Within a half a day, I'd already lost three friends.

Later that night, Dad yelled at Mom and blamed her for my becoming a drug addict. He said if she'd remained at home instead of going to work, none of it would have happened.

Volunteer Work

To keep me out of trouble during my suspension, Mom and Dad decided I would do volunteer work away from home.

A neighbor invited me to spend several days a week with her at the large office of a regional magazine in downtown Atlanta. She was kind and respectful; I enjoyed riding in her car and talking with her. A huge room above the office area stored large stacks of magazines. Sometimes her boss asked me to look through them for defects. I also did small odd jobs in the office, and felt excited to be in a professional working environment. Although I looked a mess with my long hair and faded blue jeans, the young office workers went out of their way to make me feel welcome. Some of the men even let me bum cigarettes from them when my neighbor was away.

On my last day there, the editor-in-chief gave permission for her and another female employee to take me to an expensive French restaurant, the *Fleur-de-lis*, for my first fancy meal. They even ordered cherries flambé! Although I cannot remember the magazine editor's name, I'll never forget his kindness. My neighbor also put a white carnation in a vase on my desk. I cried. For the first time in my life, I felt special in a good way.

My other volunteer job was with the Red Cross in the nearby, old town of Lawrenceville. A petite, elderly woman was my supervisor. Early each morning, Mom dropped me off on her way to work. I helped the supervisor tear donated, well-used bed sheets into bandages for soldiers in Vietnam–that was my only connection to the war.

During Thanksgiving, I went with her to deliver boxes of food to elderly shut-ins. I didn't know that so many older people were lonely! Back at the office, a local newspaperman took a picture of me in a white uniform, filling cardboard boxes with canned goods. I laughed when I saw it in the paper–I certainly didn't look like a "freak" now!

When I returned to school for the winter semester, my friends were disappointed that I didn't want to get high with them anymore. Some even accused me of being an undercover narcotics agent. That accusation hurt, but I understood their fear. I focused on doing well in my schoolwork and staying out of trouble.

When I met with the guidance counselor to discuss what I'd like to do after I graduated, she gave me a battery of vocational tests. After reviewing the results, I decided to go to college and major in either library science or psychology. When I told my parents what I wanted to do, they seemed pleased.

Divorce

One month after I'd returned to school, Mom secretly filed for divorce. She didn't tell anyone she was having an affair with Dad's best friend, a fellow engineer at Western Electric who was also married.

The night Mom arranged to have Dad served with the court summons, she told my brothers and me that she'd filed for divorce because Dad never spent time with us anymore. She ordered us to act as if nothing unusual was going to happen, when Dad came home from work.

My stomach hurt as I listlessly shoved scrambled eggs around the inside of a frying pan with a spatula for our dinner. I'd just been sucker punched; the runny eggs were making me nauseous.

When Dad entered the kitchen from the carport, he was excited in a childlike way. He said he'd purchased tickets for all of us to go to Disney World. Seeing the happiness in his face, I felt guilty for not telling him what was about to happen. I wanted to rescue him. When the sheriff's deputy came to our house in a police car, he handed Dad the summons and told him to leave. Dad must have been in shock, because he didn't argue.

We remained in the house in Snellville while Dad moved into an apartment with a friend, about twenty minutes away. Mom divorced him for "mental cruelty." Because Dad didn't contest the divorce, it was quickly finalized. For the first time in my life, I wasn't afraid of his walking into the house and hurting us. I felt the beginning of freedom and looked forward to a happier future.

And yet, at the same time, their divorce created a deep schism in the center of my being. As sick as our family had been, I'd felt more secure when their marriage was intact. Because Mom wouldn't allow Dad to have any contact with us, I'd suddenly lost my father. And because Mom now spent most of her free time away from home, I'd basically lost her, too.

Since my brothers and I were left to fend for ourselves, I cooked lots of rice, scrambled eggs, grilled cheese sandwiches, and tuna noodle casseroles–the extent of my culinary skills.

After I graduated from high school in the spring of 1973, I told Mom that I planned to go to college the following fall. I was stunned as she coldly said that since Dad had his own living expenses now, they couldn't pay for me to go.

I was hit by a tidal wave of fear. How could I build a new life? Because of my bad reputation as a former drug user, nobody in town would hire me. And because I didn't have a driver's license or a car, I couldn't work anywhere else! I had no viable way to plan for a self-sustaining future, and didn't know how to begin.

I couldn't discuss my fears with Mom, because she was always gone (secretly spending time with Dad's friend). Dad wasn't allowed to contact us. I didn't think Pastor Hodges could help me. And because I'd graduated, I didn't believe I had the right to talk to the school counselor any more. Feeling completely hopeless, I sank back into depression and started using drugs again.

Notes

1. Although Dad did do a great deal of work for Western Electric, which later merged with AT&T, he may have also used his position there as a cover for other activities. In a 1989 letter to his lawyer, he wrote, "In my job, I must travel to all points in the US and to many foreign countries at a moment's notice. We are under a company directive to use our AT&T [credit card] for these reservations."

2. Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. interviewed Mr. Woodard, an incarcerated rapist and molester, who explained how he'd gotten away with so many crimes before he was finally caught:

   > I lived the life of a chameleon or salamander, changed colors with the wind. I didn't just live a double life. I lived multiple lives. Whatever the situation called for, I lived it. If I hung around Christian people and I knew that they were Christian, then my actions and my mannerism were similar to theirs. And I adapted to whatever the situation required. (pg. 35)

   This was the same behavior I witnessed in Dad. Based on her years of interviews with sexual offenders, Salter gave a warning to her readers that we would be wise to heed:

   > Sex offenders are well aware of our propensity for making assumptions about private behavior from public presentation. They use that information deliberately and carefully to set up a double life. It serves them well but doesn't do much for the rest of us. (pg. 38)

Married

Albert

Shortly after graduating from high school, I met Albert. A native of Miami, Florida, he'd recently moved to the city of Atlanta to stay with an old friend in a Christian men's home. Seven years older than me, Albert was 5'7" with wavy, dark brown hair.

When we first met, I was spending the weekend with Cynthia, an older girl who worked with Albert at a factory in Norcross. She arranged for him and a male co-worker to go on a double date with us. The first night, Cynthia dated Albert and I dated his friend.

The four of us drove around in a small car for a while, talking and listening to the radio. Later that night, we stopped at a small park. While Cynthia and Albert kissed in the car, his big, shy friend sat next to me on a picnic table and tried to kiss me. Feeling nauseous, I pushed him away. We silently sat on the picnic table the rest of that long night, careful not to touch each other.

The next morning, Cynthia suggested we go out again that night. I said I would if we switched partners. That evening, as she and Albert's friend kissed in the car, Albert and I spent most of the night standing and talking on a bridge over a wide creek. I felt happy when he didn't try anything sexual. He encouraged me to share deep, personal thoughts and feelings. His interest in my life made me feel good.

Early the next morning, on the way back to Cynthia's house, I sleepily lay on the back seat with my head on Albert's knees, facing his stomach. I awoke to see his bulging zipper rhythmically poking at my face. As tears slipped out of my eyes, I turned my face away and pretended to still be asleep. I felt so degraded!

After the men left Cynthia's house, I felt so dirty and ashamed that I lied and said Albert had been a perfect gentleman. She said she knew I was lying, and warned that he was "nothing but trouble."

That afternoon, Albert called Cynthia and cried for at least an hour. He said he was depressed because his live-in girlfriend in Miami had broken up with him. As I listened, Cynthia told him he should forget about the past. I was drawn to the intensity of his emotions as he wept almost non-stop. Against Cynthia's stern advice, I agreed to go out with him on a real date.

When Albert learned that I was using illegal drugs, he said it was sinful and insisted that I stop. I did. Then he took me on "dates" to shoddy bars in the outskirts of Atlanta. I didn't drink to get a buzz or have a good time; I drank until all the sounds and lights and faces merged together. Drinking made my problems go away–until the next morning.

After several weeks of driving from the factory to our house late at night, Albert asked Mom if he could sleep in our living room on a pull-out sofa bed instead of going home. She readily agreed. Years later, she admitted to me that night after night, she'd heard me tiptoe down the stairs, and had heard us having sex on the pull-out sofa in the living room, leaving deep grooves in the wooden floor. She never indicated that she knew what we were doing, nor did she ever mention birth control to me.

The first time we had sex, Albert pushed my head down hard against him. I gagged and felt like I was suffocating. I went away for a while. When I came back into my body, I didn't know that I'd switched to a sexually experienced alter-state.

Albert probably thought that I'd remembered the entire experience, and was pleased with my skills. Soon, he spent almost all his free time at our home.

Albert's Family

Albert's English father had abandoned his wife and five children when Albert was very young. His mother, Virginia, eventually married Paul, a dark-haired, slim, short man who claimed to be a Nazi who had immigrated to the US via Spain.

Albert expressed hatred whenever he talked about Paul. His stepfather was a radio minister and blue-collar worker. Albert and one of his three sisters hinted that Paul had done terrible things to them and their mother, although they never shared any details with me.

When Albert drove me to Miami the first time to meet his parents, I was horrified that his mother wasn't allowed to drive several blocks to the grocery store or to church without Paul's express permission. Like Albert, Virginia had large dark circles under her eyes.

I was even more appalled when, upon Paul's command, their large black dog crawled across the small wooden living room floor to where he stood. For hours at a time, the dog lay on the wooden floor, not moving until Paul gave it permission. Huge calluses were on its legs.

Although going to Miami helped me to recognize that Albert's stepfather was overly controlling, I didn't understand how the horror that Albert had endured as his stepson had affected his mind and poisoned his soul.

Pregnant

Since Dad had conditioned me to be a sexual machine, when I was alone with Albert, I was like a sexual robot with no "off" switch. I felt secretly ashamed of my lack of control and wished Mom would intervene, but she never indicated that she knew what we were doing.

We also had sex in my bedroom during the day while Mom and my brothers were away. It was easier than trying to find something to talk about. When he was there at night and my family was still awake, we sat outside on the cool cement floor of our family's large screened-in porch. A Pentecostal, Albert played his Spanish guitar (he was tone deaf) while insisting that we sing Christian songs together. Sometimes he tape-recorded our songs to send to his older brother, Richard, in Illinois. Afterwards, Albert would lead me in prayer, then give me "prophecies from God." Because I believed that God was really speaking through him to me, I felt special and became dependent on Albert to facilitate a deeper relationship between me and God.

One night, Albert called from the factory. He said he had something important to discuss with me when he came to the house. When I told a friend, she suggested that he planned to give me an engagement ring. Believing her, I was excited as Albert drove up the cement driveway and parked in our brick-walled carport.

Mom and my brothers had driven to Pennsylvania, so Albert and I sat alone in the living room. We played my radio in the dark as candles illuminated the wood-paneled walls. I was disappointed when Albert frowned and said that we were sinning against God by having sex outside of marriage. He said that because I was causing him to sin, he didn't want to see me anymore. I was stunned and deeply hurt–all along, I'd believed that he loved me and wanted to be with me!

Just then, we heard Diana Ross's hit song, *Touch Me In The Morning*. Believing it must be a message from God, I told Albert, "Just this one more night. Give me this one more night." For the first time, we made love so gently, it squeezed the breath out of me. By morning, he decided to continue dating me.

Although birth control pills were available, I knew nothing about them. Instead, Albert used a less reliable method–condoms. He convinced me that as long as he used them, I couldn't get pregnant. One night in September, a condom was defective. Although Albert freaked out, I privately thought that God had caused it to happen, because He wanted me to become pregnant and marry Albert.

Within weeks, I felt more full inside than normal. Mom took me to a medical clinic in Snellville for a pregnancy test. The doctor smiled and said, "The rabbit died." Mom later explained that I was pregnant.

When I told Albert over the phone, he accused me of trying to get pregnant so he'd have to marry me. Then he tried to talk me into "shacking up" with him in Florida, as he'd done with his rich, blond ex-girlfriend. He said he'd even paid for a wedding announcement in a Florida newspaper, to con her parents into thinking he'd married her! That bothered me–I didn't want to marry a dishonest man. I was also troubled by his refusal to remove her picture from his wallet, no matter how much I cried and begged him to. I didn't understand that he was still on the rebound from their broken relationship.

All I wanted to know was that he loved me and would be happy with me as his wife–later, if not now. If having his baby was what it would take to rope him into marrying me, then I was glad I was pregnant.[1]

A year earlier, Mom had told me that if I should ever become pregnant, she'd fly me to New York to get an abortion. But now, she didn't make that offer. Instead, she encouraged me to marry Albert.

At the time, I wasn't aware that Dad had quit paying child support for me. I also didn't know that Mom was preparing to sell the house and move into a smaller rental home with her still-married lover–leaving no room for me in her life.

Illinois

Albert's older brother, Richard, was thin and lanky with red hair and a full beard. He was an elder of a small Charismatic church in

Waukegan, a sprawling, large, old city on Lake Michigan, about an hour north of Chicago. Waukegan was usually hot and humid in the summer and bone-freezing cold in the winter. Far above, its sky was almost always a dull color.

Richard's pastor, Bob, had perfectly styled white hair and a neatly groomed moustache. Bob's wife, Barbara, was large with a strong operatic voice and long, straight, thick blond hair.

Bob, Richard, and several other men were in the process of developing a new church that would be under the direct authority of Apostle John Robert Stevens, the leader of the Church of the Living Word in Anaheim, California. Members called the church network The Walk, signifying their unique walk, or relationship, with God.

When Albert told Richard that I was pregnant, Richard insisted that Albert bring me to Waukegan to be married before God. Albert decided that if he cooperated with Bob and Richard, he could convince them to help us financially. First, he sent me to Illinois for one week to spend time with the church members. He wanted to be sure that I'd be happy living there.

During a church service that week, Pastor Bob, Richard and other elders laid their hands on my head and shoulders and "prophesied God's word" to me. Bob, Richard, and one other man said they "saw" me coming back there to serve God, but not with Albert.

When I returned to Atlanta and told Albert what they'd said, he was furious. He reminded me that he was God's mantle of authority over me. Hadn't God given him many prophecies for me when we prayed together? Because Bob and other elders had also told me that God had revealed to them that Albert was a "chosen prophet," I continued to believe that Albert's prophecies were from God.

Married

In late November 1973, Albert drove us in his rickety old sedan to Waukegan. On December 2, we were married in the church's ranch style, one-story house that doubled as a residence for Bob, Barbara, and their two young sons. I felt excited that I was joining a community of Christians who would become my new family. Half a country away from Dad, I felt safe.

Mom and Dad traveled there separately for our small wedding. I wore a tight-fitting, long, yellow dress that a female church member had quickly sewn for me. Albert and I had written our own vows. In mine, I promised to follow Albert as Ruth had followed her mother-in-law, Naomi: “Thy people shall be my people, and thy God, my God.”

Later, when I saw photos of the ceremony, I noticed that sunlight coming through a window behind Bob had seemed to make a white aura around his head. I believed this was a sign from God that He’d supernaturally blessed our marriage. (Bob taught us that a white aura indicated God’s strong presence.)

For $125 a month, we rented a small upper-floor, government-assisted apartment at 2409 Dugdale Road, part of a large, low-income housing complex. Cooped up in the apartment in the frigid winter with no phone and no TV, I thought I’d go mad. Fortunately, Richard and his family lived in a nearby apartment building. I spent most of my free time with them, and quickly adjusted to the constant pandemonium in a household with five energetic children. I grew to love each of them and became one of their regular babysitters.

Nursing Home

Barbara A., a middle-aged brunette church member, offered to hire me as a weekday nurse’s aide at the All-Seasons Nursing Home in Waukegan. After I was hired, I had to walk about two miles each way, sometimes wading through deep drifts of snow. Although I only earned $2 an hour, I felt better about myself because I had a job and wasn’t lonely anymore.

Although most of the patients on the first floor of the two-story nursing home were elderly, one Black, male, paraplegic patient was middle-aged. Lonely and depressed, he said his wife refused to let him come home, and rarely visited him. His muscles were wilting from lack of exercise. As often as I could, I took him upstairs to the exercise area, where he began to bulk up his arms and upper torso.

My work at the nursing home was character-building. I was careful to show respect to bedridden patients as I fed and washed them, changed their urine-soaked bed sheets, and emptied their urine and colostomy bags. I also pushed heavy meal tray carts down the halls and helped patients turn in their beds and transfer to wheelchairs and back. The work was exhausting, but I loved it.

One winter day, a large, young, Black male patient–the paraplegic's roommate–had a grand mal seizure in the large first-floor community dining room. I was down the hall in an elderly patient's room when I heard the loud thuds as the young man's head repeatedly slammed against the linoleum covered floor. My sister-in-law, who had also been hired as an aide, witnessed the seizure. The man was taken by ambulance to a hospital.

When I walked into our dark apartment that night, I felt so exhausted, I left pots of macaroni and cheese and green peas on the stove. It wasn't much, but surely Albert would understand.

Although he drove to work while I walked, Albert constantly complained about having to be on his feet all day in the shipping department of a nearby store. When he walked into our apartment that night, he started complaining again as I lay on our mattress on the bedroom floor with a migraine headache.

Ignoring my discomfort, Albert screamed and cursed at me for leaving him a pan of cold pasta. He threw it against the kitchen wall and shouted, "Clean it up!" Then he angrily insisted that I get up and make him a decent supper. I cried as my head throbbed. I tried to tell him how upset I'd been about the patient. He didn't care.

What had happened to the man who had enjoyed talking with me late into the night? Frightened and hurt, I walled off my emotions. As I crawled on my hands and knees to wipe up the sticky mess, I decided I wouldn't let him hurt me that way again.

At the nursing home, I was angry at how badly the patients were neglected. I ended up doing the work of several nurses' aides. I also did chores I wasn't qualified to do, like changing patients' colostomy bags, and their surgical and bedsore dressings. Someone had to do it. While I toiled, the male orderlies hid in the laundry room and played poker. They often laughed at the cries of patients who lay in urine and feces on their stinking hospital beds.

Someone always tipped off our normally absent male supervisor when a state investigator was about to pay a "surprise" visit. Before each inspection, the supervisor handed us various colored pens to fabricate entries in patients' charts that "proved" we had done what was required by state law.

One day, a young female inspector came to the nursing home. No one was expecting her this time. As the first-floor staff played their daily poker game in the laundry room, unaware of her presence, I showed her how we'd fabricated the patients' records. She asked me to show her more.

I took her to the room of an elderly, petite, female, Black patient. The poor woman's tendons were so tight and hard, she couldn't move her curled arms and legs at all. Covered with large bedsores, she lay in a fetal position on her back with decaying food inside her clenched fists, her uncut fingernails growing into her palms.

The inspector taught me how to work with the elderly woman by slowly and gently moving her frozen arms and legs. As she did this, the woman, who was in agony, yelled in a hoarse voice: "Lord have mercy! Lord have mercy!" Although I understood that I had to cause her pain in order to help her, her cries broke my heart.

After that, I did what I could to give extra help to that elderly woman and several others. Unfortunately, I injured myself in my seventh month of pregnancy. An extremely overweight Black woman had repeatedly called out for help. She wanted to get off her hospital bed into the wheelchair so she could use the bathroom. Because the orderlies refused to help, I ran out of patience and tried to move her on my own. As I shifted her from the edge of her bed to the wheelchair, the chair moved away and she fell on her rump on the floor. Although she was uninjured, I felt something tear or split between my legs. Unaware that I should report the injury to the administration, I walked home, frightened.

That night, I was in so much pain, I had to crawl from our mattress to the bathroom. Albert accused me of faking an injury so I wouldn't have to work. My frustration and helplessness instantly turned into anger; I'd be damned if I would let his selfishness push me into losing my baby! Because Albert said we couldn't afford another exam with the obstetrician, I lay in bed for several days until the pain subsided. I never went back to the nursing home.

I couldn't understand why Albert was so distrustful and bitter towards everyone, including me. As much as he'd insisted on my moving with him to Waukegan to join the church, he now opposed my bonding with church members, and insisted we move back to Atlanta. I felt torn between my love for the church family and my duty to my husband. Pastor Bob, Richard, and other church leaders challenged me to put my devotion to God and the church first. I was already so brainwashed, I believed I couldn't have a relationship with God outside The Walk.

Albert was furious when I refused to move back to Atlanta with him. He said he wasn't willing to raise our baby in Waukegan because the city was "too depressing." When he told Dad what he wanted to do, Dad invited Albert to live with him in Atlanta while Albert searched for a job. Despite Albert's cajoling and angry threats, I stayed in Waukegan.

The Sisters

After Albert found a job in Atlanta, he refused to send me any money. He said I'd have to come to Atlanta since I had no way to pay the rent on our apartment. Instead, I sublet the apartment to two young men and moved into our church's two-story women's home on Greenbay Road, a wide, busy city street in Waukegan. For over a month, I subsisted on church members' charity. The women living there became my sisters. They gave me a private bedroom that had previously been occupied by Lynn, a friendly young, long-haired female who had recently birthed a baby girl. I enjoyed Lynn's company–she reminded me of a reformed Janis Joplin, my favorite singer.

Bob and the church elders continued counseling me to choose the church and God's will over my marriage. They said because Albert was staying away from his calling as a prophet in the Walk, he was in rebellion against God.

I cried every night, afraid I'd have to divorce the father of my baby. Although I couldn't remember what Dad had done to me, I feared going back to Atlanta. Pastor Bob and the elders said my baby and I were protected by God's umbrella of protection as long as I stayed in The Walk. I believed them.

Baby Rose

I told Albert that Barbara, the pastor's wife, had become my Lamaze partner and coach in his stead. Realizing I wasn't going to come to Atlanta, he gave up and returned several weeks before our baby's due date. He moved into the men's Greenbay house, two blocks away, and took his rightful place as my partner at the Lamaze classes.

Ever since I'd learned I was pregnant, I'd done everything possible to ensure that my baby would be healthy. I'd stopped smoking and drinking, and ate only natural foods. One female church member gave me a large package of expensive Shaklee prenatal vitamins. I walked two miles almost every day in the spring and the hot, muggy summer. I regularly had my baby blessed by Bob and the elders, who placed their hands on my swollen belly and head and prayed for both of us.

Pastor Bob and Barbara negotiated with a young newlywed couple, Bob and Ann-Marie M., who had recently received an old, two-story wood-framed house from Ann-Marie's parents as a wedding present. The couple agreed to let us live with them until we could afford to rent our own apartment.

Slim and bubbly with blue eyes and blond hair, Bob M. was our church's music leader as well as an elder. Quick-tempered Ann-Marie had coal black eyes and dark straight hair. Since she wanted to have Bob's baby, she hoped she could learn how to raise hers by observing me with mine.

One morning, when I was two weeks overdue, my obstetrician called. I liked the thin, dark-haired man because even though I could pay little, he remained gentle and respectful. He said he wanted me to go to the hospital so he could induce labor. Because I'd avoided all drugs–even aspirin–to protect my baby, I cried and asked God for help. As I packed my hospital bag, the contractions began on their own. I took this as a sign that God was blessing my baby.

In the hospital, my labor lasted twelve hours. A scowling gray-haired nurse walked into the labor room after several hours and demanded that I stop using the Lamaze method. She said because I panted like a puppy during contractions, I was depriving my baby of oxygen. I tried to breathe normally, but that made the pain unbearable. Physically paralyzed by its intensity, I screamed that she could go to hell. As I resumed panting, she angrily stalked out of the room, shouting that I was killing my baby.

A few minutes later, a young, brunette nurse entered. She had a gentle, calm disposition and was comfortable with the Lamaze method. Dr. T. came in once in a while to see how much my cervix had dilated. Dissatisfied, he gave me injections that sped the contractions. They started coming every minute. I was so tired! A sterling Lamaze partner, Albert encouraged me and wiped my face with cold wet washcloths.

I cannot describe the happiness I felt when my precious baby, who I'll call Rose, came out of my womb. She had the most beautiful cry. Hearing her voice, I fell completely in love.

Love Lost

Although at first they'd been excited about having a baby in their new home, Bob and Ann-Marie weren't prepared for Rose's nighttime crying. Since our upstairs bedrooms were right next to each other, Ann-Marie insisted I put her in a borrowed, white wicker bassinet I kept in the downstairs living room. Ann-Marie said I should let my baby cry to keep from spoiling her. In my mother-heart, I knew she was wrong. My baby was crying because she needed me. Each night, I waited until they'd closed their bedroom door, then tiptoed downstairs and held Rose on my stomach until we both fell asleep on the sofa. I felt like the happiest woman on earth.

I was lucky to be able to stay home and breast-feed my baby with no complications. I wanted the best for her—La Leche members in our church taught that mothers' breast milk protected babies from many illnesses.

Rose was the only human I had ever fully bonded with. For the first time, I knew what true love was. We locked eyes every time she sucked greedily at my engorged breasts. I couldn't get enough of her. Her soft fuzzy skin fascinated me. She was brown-haired with blue eyes and had the most amazing, flowery-scented breath. I was blessed to experience a month and a half of bliss and bonding with her.

The rest of this chapter honors her memory, and Emily, the daughter who I unwittingly raised in her stead. It is a compilation from daily journals, written by many of my alter-states over a period of about five years. The death of my baby girl was so traumatizing that the memory shattered into little disconnected pieces that surfaced, decades later, one small piece at a time.[2]

I strongly advise ritual abuse survivors to avoid reading the remainder of this chapter–it can be extremely triggering.

Before Rose was born, I'd been transported in a vehicle (by whom, I don't yet remember) to secretly meet with a young couple I'd previously visited with Dad in their home in Virginia. The olive-skinned, black-haired, dark-eyed young husband was a lawyer. He bragged that he was a "dandy." Like Dad, he loved doing awful things to his victims; and like some hard-core Satanists, he stored human body parts in large glass jars of formaldehyde in white, wooden kitchen cupboards. His slim, lovely young wife was light-skinned with long, straight, light brown hair.

That Sunday, not knowing how I came there, I stood talking with the young couple in Chicago in an empty, below-ground parking deck with thick concrete walls. When the young mother held out her new baby to me, I saw the husband smirk. Not a good sign. I was doubly concerned when I saw the same ugly smirk on the young woman's face. I removed the thin receiving blanket from their baby's face.

At first, I couldn't comprehend what I saw. They'd put plastic wrap on the squirming, premature baby's face. Its complexion had turned unnaturally dark. Even though I knew I was in danger of being tortured if I dared to break that man's mental control, I snatched the plastic away. The baby screamed in absolute fury. I was so shocked by the experience, I pushed the memory away.

Several months later, in September, 1974, Dad secretly paid for me to fly with Rose to Atlanta to meet with him. The afternoon we arrived in Atlanta, the air was almost cool with just a hint of a breeze. The sun shone brightly. Dad seemed to drive aimlessly, then stopped and got out of his car. Carrying Rose in my arms, I followed him onto the middle of a large, dusty, sparsely vegetated piece of empty property. No people, buildings or houses were anywhere near us. I saw a treeless subdivision in the distance–all its homes looked alike.

Fear clutched my heart as I held my baby girl tightly. I felt doom, although I didn't know why. When I looked at Dad again, he held out a large, sharp knife with a black handle, similar to the knife he'd used in rituals when I was a child, putting his hands over mine and forcing me to kill precious babies.[3]

My mind short-circuited. Dad looked into my eyes and said, "If you don't kill her, I will." Instantly, a succession of ritually conditioned alter-states emerged. Each one frantically assessed the situation, trying to figure a way out. When one part saw no way out, that part went under and the next part came out.

They knew they could try to run with Rose to the distant houses and yell for help, but since Dad was a cross-country athlete, they couldn't outdistance him. They could try to fight him, but he was much stronger, and where could they put the baby to keep him from hurting her in the struggle? And if he killed me or I killed myself, there was no telling what he'd do to her.

A mother-part emerged and stared at my baby's sweet face. She tried to comfort herself with the knowledge that Rose would soon be with God in heaven, where He'd keep her safe and surrounded with His love. And even if it killed the mother-part, she was determined to be the one to do it with every ounce of love in her. She would not allow Dad's cruel, filthy hands to touch Rose's innocent body. She'd seen Dad rape baby girls to death. He was not going to do it to Rose! She'd kill her first, with love and gentleness. She wanted the love and reassurance in her own eyes to be the last thing Rose would see.

As she prepared to cut Rose's carotid arteries, she felt such piercing pain, she realized she couldn't go through with it. She couldn't kill the most important person in her universe. When she submerged and a ritually conditioned child alter-state emerged, Dad noticed the shift and grinned. As he'd done so many times in the past, he put his right hand atop mine and forced it to cut Rose's soft neck. I believe it was a mercy that the child alter-state didn't recognize Rose as her child. Dad forced my hand to cut Rose's carotid arteries, one at a time.

After the deed was done, the mother-part reemerged. She wanted to scream with wild grief as she saw the blood pulse and Rose's precious eyes faded to dull, then black. She was losing her baby, dear God, she was losing her baby. As Rose's eyes stopped seeing, she told herself, "She's with God now. She's safe." But the dark pain of her baby's leaving was unbearable.

She didn't move as she watched Dad carry Rose by her ankles to keep from getting her blood on him. He wouldn't allow the alter-state to bury Rose. He said that since the baby came from my body, she was garbage. He put her precious body in a black, plastic garbage bag and threw it into a nearby commercial sized, metal dumpster.

Within minutes, Dad had successfully destroyed the one relationship in my life that made me feel good as a human being. So many parts of me now felt pure hatred towards him, wanting to kill him. But deep down, they knew they could never go there. Because they were dependent on him to tell them what to do, think, and believe, if they killed him, they believed they would also cease to exist. Survival came first.

After putting her body into the dumpster, Dad raped me on the dusty ground, reclaiming me for himself.

I believe Dad tried to murder my goodness that day, to make me like him. When he ordered me to kill Rose, that was the closest I ever came to breaking forever and becoming a willing perpetrator. But by holding onto my love for her and my hatred towards him, I was able to preserve my truest self, deep inside. He could make me kill her, but he could never take away my love for her. It embodied my gentleness and kept me from becoming monstrous like him.

The darkness in him did not engulf the light in me that day, but my grief over losing my beautiful sweet baby was so great, I couldn't allow myself to feel softness and caring anymore. I erected thick concrete barriers around my love and my memory of her, so that Dad could never touch or hurt that essence inside me. Unfortunately, by walling up and preserving my deep love for her, I couldn't express love or caring towards anyone else.

Later that day, I walked along an open-air, concrete balcony to Dad's room at a hotel where we were staying. When I knocked on his dark, solid door, he silently opened it. Shirtless, he walked toward his bed. Because he had drawn his thick drapes shut against the bright sunlight, I couldn't see well at first.

As my eyes adjusted, I saw something moving beneath a white-cased pillow on his bed. I looked closer and saw the squirming legs of an infant. Dad watched calmly as I snatched the pillow off the infant, not caring if he punished me. I yelled, "How could you do this?" In an even voice he said, "No one will ever know she's not yours. She's physiologically compatible."[4]

In a sudden flash of insight and memory, I realized he'd set up everything that had occurred that day. But why had he chosen this particular baby? I felt cold as I picked up the screaming infant and looked at her face.

Although she was the same general size as Rose, her hair and skin were a bit darker. She was physically stronger and much angrier when she cried. As I looked closer, I remembered. The preemie in the garage. Dad grinned. I walked out to the open-air balcony, clutching her against my chest as she continued to scream. Although my heart felt like stone, I made a decision: by God, he was not going to kill her! Holding her tightly, I lost all memory of Rose and gave this baby my birth-daughter's legal name. (From now on, I'll call this baby "Emily.")

After I returned to Waukegan with her, to stay sane, I had to believe she was mine. Still, I felt cold every time I looked at her. Because she seemed different and was angry when she cried, I believed that demons had invaded my baby's body.

One day, in the church's nursery room behind the sanctuary, a young female member with short, curly, dark hair picked Emily up and cooed at her, laughing. When I told her my baby was demon-possessed, she looked at me in horror and said, "Why, she's an angel!" My stony heart couldn't accept her words. I believed my baby had become the epitome of evil.

Determined to save her from Satan, I followed the teachings from Apostle Stevens and Barbara. I constantly laid my hands on her and anointed her body with olive oil, commanding the demons to leave her body in the name of Jesus.

Because I focused on her, I didn't recognize that I, too, had changed. I was now ready to do assassinations. Each time I, in controlled alter-states, was sent to kill a targeted man, I unconsciously killed Dad. My fury and hatred were tremendous. And when I was ordered to do "disposal" and "clean up" (dismembering male bodies and more), I visualized cutting Dad completely apart so he could never hurt anyone again.

My professional handlers knew my rage at the targeted men was really about Dad. And although I was used again and again, my fury never abated. Because the adrenaline rush and the rage gave me additional strength, when I was pitted against larger, more muscular males with equal training and conditioning, I always won.

Something else happened during the day of Rose's murder. Several of my alter-states were now certain that Dad wanted me dead. Because he'd killed Rose, they knew that he'd really killed me by proxy since she came from my womb. I believe that in Dad's mind she was merely an extension of me. He couldn't have gotten closer to killing me without actually doing it. Some of my alter-states feared they might be next.

Why did he groom and train me from childhood to perform the most dangerous ops? I believe he hoped that someday I'd be killed on an op. That way, he wouldn't have actually killed me. My death would have been so emotionally sanitized, he wouldn't have felt any guilt. After all, such things happened.

Whenever my professional handlers sent me into situations to do assassinations, my own life was also at risk. Many of the targeted men knew they were in danger. Some were armed and ready; some had even hired professional bodyguards that I had to find a way past, usually by posing as a prostitute. Some of the targeted men were also seasoned professionals, which made them extremely dangerous. Each time, I fought hard to survive.

By keeping my emotional energy focused on Dad and visualizing him as I attacked those men, I preserved my sanity. Each time, I mentally fought like an animal against the greatest beast of all, knowing that he, the man who had killed my precious daughter, was also the man who now sent me to die. This knowledge gave me the strength I needed to fight, stay alive, and come home one more time.

Notes

1. When I told Dad the good news, he didn't respond at all. Later, he wrote a scathing letter to Albert, accusing him of "impregnating" me and taking me into a life of poverty.

2. Some readers may ask, how do I know this isn't a fabricated memory? My answer is this:

   > Although I initially chose to believe that the pieces of this memory were fake, I was consistently slammed by powerful attached emotions–especially grief and love. I also began to vividly remember the month and a half I'd spent with my baby *before* her death–those memories had been completely missing.
   >
   > In 1994, I did try to have DNA tests done on me and my given daughter, Emily, with her permission. Unfortunately, the person we gave the samples to (later proven to be CIA-connected) reneged. Since then, Emily and I have both determined that I probably am not her birth mother, because our skin tone, hair color, eye color, and physical stature are dissimilar. Regardless, I carefully reminded her that, whether or not I'd birthed her, I had raised her as my child and loved her just as much.

3. This form of excruciating mental torture seems to have been used by other sadists as well. In their leaflet, *Acts of Torture*, Sarson and MacDonald reported that a knife was forced into the hands of Sister Diana Ortiz in November 1989, by one or more members of the Guatemalan army's counterinsurgency force. Her torturers forced her to continue to hold the knife "as they plunged it into another woman and this horror [was] videotaped for blackmailing purposes." (pg. 1)

4. Although I remembered well enough to know—to my great sadness—that this memory was valid, I still had difficulty accepting that my father would do such a horrendous thing to Rose, Emily, and me. I later learned that baby switching in Nazi/Aryan cults is not uncommon. By keeping the children from bonding with their birth mothers, the cult leaders can more easily bond with and mentally control the children.

It's garbage because it came from garbage.

Dad put my baby, Rose in a black garbage bag. She was dead. He made me kill her. I couldn't believe it was happening.

K. Sullivan
9/27/01

AFTER ROSE'S 9/74 MURDER, 9/27/01

Brainwashed

Immersion

Even though I couldn't remember my sweet baby's murder, the immense emotional pain remained. If I didn't find a way to block it all out, I would die. My escape was to fixate on The Walk's teachings. I spent most of my waking hours in a trance state, making the cult's "spiritual" world my only reality. Nothing else mattered anymore. By then, the construction of our church's new, one-story building in North Chicago had been completed. Pastor Bob named it "Ecclesia Fellowship." Since Albert refused to go to church anymore, other members transported me and Emily as often as needed.

The congregation had become my safe family, and I felt at home whenever I was with them. Pastor Bob and Barbara became my spiritual parents. Because I believed they loved and cared about each of us, I did whatever they said. Some of the women taught me how to sew, cook, and do basic household chores. In effect, they became my mothers.

After about a year, Bob and Ann-Marie tired of how we took advantage of their free hospitality. They insisted we find another place to live. We found a cheap attic apartment in a large old house at 14 Jefferson Avenue in downtown Waukegan. Unfortunately, because we'd moved near Lake Michigan, the temperature changes were more severe. One winter's night, the outside temperature dropped to 60 degrees below zero with the wind chill factor.

Alone and isolated during weekdays, I grew paranoid about being attacked by Satan and his hordes of demons, especially the big, bad ones that Apostle Stevens called "Nephelim." Since I didn't have a job anymore, I did intercessory prayer for hours on my knees each day, prayerfully fighting invisible demons that our leaders said were constantly attacking us from the spiritual realm.

The leaders also told us that every word we spoke as sons of God had the power to become reality. For this reason, I feared if I said I felt like I might be getting the flu, I'd accidentally speak the illness into existence!

I didn't want to dirty my spirit with earthly information and demonic influences from "Babylon" (normal society). Now, at the leaders' encouragement, printed literature and taped sermons from the Walk became my primary sources of information about the outside world. I believed I was as happy as I could ever hope to be, since I was drawing so close to God.

Energy Exchange

During praise and worship services at Ecclesia Fellowship, we were told to raise our hands. We sang any way we wanted, especially in "tongues" that sounded remarkably like baby babbling. We were told that when we prayed in tongues, the Holy Spirit was sweeping into the building, filling our spirits like oil being poured into lanterns. We were told that this would prepare us, Jesus' spiritual bridesmaids, for the impending wedding of Christ and the Church. We were told that, by becoming more holy, pure and obedient–filling ourselves with the "living word of God" (mostly from Stevens), we would hasten Jesus' return to the earth to reclaim his spiritual bride (us), and to set up his new kingdom.

Sometimes, as we prayed together in church services, we were instructed to hold our palms outstretched toward whomever the leaders prayed for. We were told to send the power of the Holy Spirit from our bodies, through our hands, to them to give them strength, healing, or deliverance from demonic influences.

I often experienced a physical exchange of energy after church services. In the back of the sanctuary, Barbara and other seasoned female members hugged me and others, chest-to-chest. When they did, I felt strong energy flow from the center of my torso to theirs, and back again. As the energy flowed, we comfortably swayed back and forth in rhythm with it.

I never sensed that this practice was sexual–the energy transfer felt clean and pure. Sometimes the force of the flow was so strong, it knocked us away from each other. When it did, we stood there quietly, praying and swaying peacefully until we'd recovered our faculties. We were pleased that the Holy Spirit was channeling so strongly through us!

We were also instructed to pray for people who were not in the building, and to visualize where they were, what they were doing, and what their special needs were. If we had a "prophetic" vision about a person we prayed for, we were to walk up onto the stage where Pastor Bob and the elders stood and share the vision with the rest of the congregation. Because my heart pounded rapidly nearly every time I thought of walking up onto the stage, I usually remained silent.

One night, in a rented room in a small commercial building in downtown Waukegan, Barbara set up a meeting where church members viewed a film that showed how physical energy transferred from one human body to another. It focused on scientific Russian experiments, in which individuals were instructed to interact with each other while their energy fields were filmed. We watched energy move from one person to another. As one couple interacted sexually, their auras even changed in size, shape, color, and intensity. Fascinated, I wondered why more people didn't know about energy exchanges and energy-field auras.

Submission

Because I still believed Albert was God's mantle of authority over me, and because he continued to give me prophecies from God when we prayed in our large, airy, wooden-floored bedroom at night, almost everything he demanded, I did. Even when he told me to do things I didn't feel good about, I continued to obey him.

The only time I disobeyed him was when people with higher authority gave me different instructions. These instructions came from Pastor Bob, Barbara, the elders, and Apostle Stevens (through taped sermons and rare visits to Ecclesia).

I'd been conditioned throughout my childhood to obey Dad. Disobedience wasn't allowed. Now, because Albert was my primary male authority figure, I obeyed him.

Albert was often cynical, demeaning, and abusive towards me; he had a cruel temper. If I didn't immediately obey his commands, he screamed at me and made life hell until I fully complied.

Another reason for my obedience was that I was dependent on him. I didn't have a car and was phobic about driving in traffic, not knowing that some of my hidden alter-states had been driving for years.[1] I also didn't know how to use a bank account or write checks because Albert handled all of our money. I felt worthless, believing I couldn't survive without his help and guidance.

My submission towards Albert was reinforced within the Walk. Our leaders and some of the women–especially Barbara–taught us that we must obey our husbands, because rebellion against their God-ordained authority would bring demons into our homes, and would put our children in danger of becoming ill, demon-possessed, or even dead.

Following Barbara's example, some of us even wore white lace Spanish mantillas on our heads to publicly display our submission to our husbands and church elders.

We were constantly taught that if we obeyed our husbands, God would honor our obedience and would miraculously manipulate them to treat us right. Since we were encouraged to read Church of the Living Word literature and were discouraged from reading the Bible on our own, I didn't know that the leaders often used scriptures out of context to manipulate and control us.

We were instructed to listen to cassette tapes of sermons, especially those given by Apostle Stevens, several times a week. He and other leaders told us we must listen to each tape at least three times in a row, so the "living word of God" would "go down into our spirits." Over a period of three years, I purchased and listened to hundreds of tapes, allowing the leaders' teachings to bypass my critical thinking. I wanted God's "living word" to fill and transform me.

In their sermons, many of the leaders–especially Stevens–used a combination of Ericksonian hypnotic techniques and Neuro Linguistic Programming (NLP).[2] Whether this was accidental or intentional, most of their sermons were so irrational and metaphorical, they created a spiritual fantasyland in my mind that became more real to me than the physical world.

The leaders taught that demons could come into our homes through worldly literature and television programs. Following their teachings, I used cooking oil to anoint our television, doorways, windows, pillowcases, mail, and more. I would do whatever it took to keep my family safe.

Each night, I placed our tape recorder next to Emily's bed and played Stevens' messages as she fell asleep, so the Spirit-breathed (pneuma) word of God would fight off any demons that she was too young to recognize.

Alone with Emily in our apartment on weekdays, I “danced in the spirit,” stomping and twirling as I sang to God “in tongues.” I didn’t care what she or our downstairs neighbors thought. Stevens and other leaders had taught us that such dancing and singing were inspired by the Holy Spirit. We were taught that it would please God, since He had been pleased when King David had publicly danced in praise to Him. I wanted to be as close to God as King David had been!

Insanity

Behind the walls of our attic apartment were thick layers of residue and feces from years of roach infestation. At night, when I walked into our large kitchen and turned on the light, they scattered into cracks and crevices. Every time I opened a drawer, they dropped egg sacs as they scurried away into the darkness. The feces, egg sacs and crawling bugs nearly drove me out of my mind. Albert refused to let me use chemical sprays to control them. He said they’d make his hair fall out, and then he’d go crazy.[3] I tried to work with him by using natural remedies to make the roaches go away, but they did no good.

Appalled by the infestation, a new landlord hired two men to thoroughly spray all of the apartments. When the men finished, insecticide dripped down the sides of the doorway between Emily’s narrow bedroom and the kitchen. Albert freaked out and wouldn’t let us walk through it. After the chemical dried and we did walk through it, Albert insisted we take off our clothes and wash them immediately, so that any chemicals that touched our clothes wouldn’t get near his head. Because we couldn’t yet afford to use the Laundromat down the street, I washed our “contaminated” clothes in our big cast-iron bathtub and hung them in the enclosed back stairwell to dry.

Each time the exterminators sprayed our apartment, Albert insisted I wash the doorways and any other parts of the apartment that the spray had contacted. I had to throw away the cleaning rags, then scour the sink and bathtub to remove every last trace of the chemicals. Still, he was convinced that residual insecticide was on my hands. Although I washed them many times, he never let me touch his head again.

One day, Dad’s mother sent me an unexpected birthday present: two beautiful rugs she’d crocheted by hand. I treasured them, knowing they’d taken her many hours to make. I decided to put them on our kitchen floor. Unfortunately, Albert believed our shoes were also contaminated by the chemicals on the wooden doorways. After we'd walked on Grandma's rugs, he ordered me to throw them in the garbage. I cried and begged him to please let me wash them, but he refused. Although I obeyed, I never forgave him and grieved losing this precious connection to my grandmother.

He soon developed another phobia towards the acid inside car batteries. He was convinced that it, too, would make his hair fall out and make him go crazy. If I walked within several feet of a closed car hood, I had to wash my purse and all of its contents. If Albert had an especially bad day, I had to throw my purse into the trash in a sealed plastic bag, so the trash container wouldn't be contaminated.

Albert's logic had no logic, and yet it dictated our daily lives. Every time I had to dispose of another "contaminated" personal possession, I felt more anger towards him.

At times, I also appeared insane. After Emily started walking, I decided she needed a pet and adopted a small calico kitten. Soon, it started stalking and pouncing at Emily, claws bared. Something in me snapped. I felt an irrational need to protect Emily from it. First, when it pounced at her, I picked it up and shoved it across the floor, away from her. Then I started throwing it a little harder. One day, I totally lost control. I threw it so hard, it thudded into the far wall.

After that, it stayed away from me, making an eerie howl that made the hairs on my arms stand up. I was deeply ashamed of what I'd done to the poor kitten, especially since I didn't know why I'd done it. I enlisted a man from church to come and take it away. He looked disgusted when I wouldn't admit that I was responsible. I didn't know that I'd flashbacked and seen it as a danger to Emily, because I'd been forcibly exposed to frightening wildcats as a child. I felt like a monster.

On another occasion, convinced by Barbara that I must cleanse my intestines to make my body purer and more acceptable to God, I began giving myself a coffee enema every day. Sometimes I did it when Albert was home. Although it disgusted him, I refused to stop since Barbara's authority was higher than Albert's. Starved for a father's love, I was determined to do whatever it took to make God love me more.

Notes

1. Such schisms in my overall personality weren't unusual. Often, if I had a phobia that kept me from doing something that most people could comfortably do, I'd have a hidden alter-state that had compartmentalized the ability to do it. For instance, as the host alter-state, I was terrified of heights. And yet, I had at least one alter-state that wasn't afraid of dropping down from one open-air apartment balcony to the next, many stories high.

2. Dick Sutphen explained why, although is a powerful tool for mental control, we've heard so little about it:

   > The concepts and techniques of Neuro-Linguistics are so heavily protected that I found out the hard way that to even talk about them publicly or in print results in threatened legal action. Yet Neuro-Linguistic training is readily available to anyone willing to devote the time and pay the price. It is some of the most subtle and powerful manipulation I have yet been exposed to. A good friend who recently attended a two-week seminar on Neuro-Linguistics found that many of those she talked to during the breaks were government people. (Sutphen, pg. 13)

3. Chances are good that Albert suffered from Obsessive-Compulsive Disorder (OCD). Although some people with this mental disorder are obsessed with protecting themselves from germs and constantly wash their hands, in Albert's mind, chemicals were the invisible enemy.

Memory Manipulation

Temp Jobs

The more time I spent with Emily, the more I enjoyed and was fascinated by her. I no longer believed that demons inhabited her body. I was ignorant, however, about child development. Treating her as I'd been treated as a child, I didn't use baby talk and expected her to reason as an adult. Nonetheless, I marveled at her cuteness and her excitement as she explored the world around her.

Unfortunately for both of us, I was not yet in control of several "Mom" alter-states that did some of the more benign things to Emily that Mom had done to me. For instance, in public, I secretly pinched Emily to make her obey me, not understanding that I was actually conditioning her to fear me. Whenever she cried in a restaurant, I took her into the bathroom and spanked her on her rear, not understanding that I should instead find out what her need was. I was convinced that she was rebelling against my authority whenever she failed to do what I told her.

I even spanked her when she refused to repeat a prayer after me. I didn't understand that at the toddler stage, part of the child's personality development includes saying no. Any time she rebelled, I believed–based mostly on Barbara's teachings to the women–that a new demon in Emily was making her do it. I was convinced that I must spank Emily to keep her from giving the demon more power–after all, we were taught that demons could kill our children!

Whenever I spanked, pinched, or otherwise hurt Emily, I always felt horrible afterwards. And yet, because I didn't understand why I did some of those things, I created false rationalizations for my abusiveness. I was too frightened of myself to acknowledge my guilt and loss of control.

In one good way, I bonded closely with Emily. Unfortunately, I let it go on for too long–perhaps bonding her too closely to me. Because of the radical teachings of several pastors' wives in the La Leche League, I breast-fed her until she was two-and-a-half. I was taught not to stop until she didn't want it anymore. They said it should be up to the baby, not the mother.

After she'd weaned herself, Pastor Bob and Albert told me it was time for me to get a job. I didn't see how that was possible–how would we pay for a babysitter? I was touched when several church members offered to baby-sit for free. At the time, I believed they would be best for her because they were filled with the Holy Spirit. Now, I wonder if that was a mistake. After all, most of them were as "spiritually" psychotic as I!

I started working through Jobs, Inc., a temporary employment agency in downtown Waukegan. Because I'd taken two years of typing classes in high school, I was assigned to various departments at the sprawling Abbott Laboratories pharmaceutical facility in North Chicago. Sometimes, on a new assignment, I was led to an empty desk and given magazines to read for days at a time. I didn't understand that some of those temp jobs were cover positions for covert ops.

Op Preparations

Sometimes, when I was to be sent out on an op, Albert personally drove me to meet with professional handlers. At other times, handlers picked me up at home and drove me to buildings where I was hypnotized and tricked into believing I was at a regular job. I reported to many buildings and offices during the next two decades.

Because the handlers didn't want me to remember the exteriors of the buildings they transported me to, I was not allowed to look out the vehicle's windows. If I did, one of the handlers either tortured me with a stun gun–usually on one of my forearms, or painfully pressed on a pressure point near my neck or shoulder.[1]

Sometimes, they made me lie on the sedan's back floor, face-down. Sometimes they transported me in car trunks. When they transported me in the back of white, windowless panel vans, I was usually strapped to a gurney with an IV in my arm to keep me sedated.

One method they used to block out memories of civilian air flights was code-named "Sound Of Silence" programming. To do this, programmers created a "Helen Keller" alter-state that was certain she was blind, deaf, and unable to speak. When in this altered state of consciousness, I was led by the hand by my assigned handlers in and out of planes and airports. Even though my eyes were wide open, I literally was unable to see.[2]

Part of this programming was accomplished through hypnosis paired with the threat that if I did see any identifiers that indicated which flight I'd been on, or if I heard anything that would do the same, I would be killed. Therefore, to stay alive, I unconsciously chose not to see and hear.

By triggering out a succession of alter-states for each op, my handlers ensured that each participating alter-state contained only one piece of the whole experience. That increased the fragmentation of my op memories, which is one reason why the memories eventually emerged in so many bits and pieces.

Most of the op briefings were routine. Usually, I was led to a desk in a commercial building, and was told that the desk was mine. I was so drugged or hypnotized, I believed I was at my regular office job. Another handler, posing as my supervisor, placed a stack of files on the desk in front of me, or on a shelf above it.[3] An alter-state was triggered out by the sight of a red-jacketed manila file in the stack. That op trained alter-state opened the file consisting of a printed dossier, one or more black-and-white 8-1/2 × 11s of the intended male target, and other pages of printed information.

To the best of my knowledge, each dossier stated that the "target" had recently raped children, women, or both. Sometimes it stated that the target had just been released from prison and was an "imminent danger to society." My op parts believed that my duty as an American citizen was to "take him out." A simpler command from a handler was: "Do him." We both understood that "do" meant "kill."

After one alter-state read the file, another op-trained alter-state was also triggered out and briefed, to ensure that at least two op-trained parts always had the information necessary to complete the assignment. This ensured that if one part accidentally submerged into unconsciousness during the op, the other part could then be triggered out via a tiny transceiver that the handler had placed in my right ear.

The male professionals who briefed me often increased my deep store of volcanic rage towards men by ordering me to get down on my knees and perform oral sex on them before they sent me to perform the op.

I was then transported by car, van, truck, motor home, ambulance, plane, jet, boat, cargo ship, mini-submarine (ideal for rivers), or helicopter to perform the op.

I have also had numerous memories of having been in groups of American tourists that supposedly participated in guided tours in various countries. It seems that this was an overseas cover that not only made me seem innocuous; it also ensured the happy cooperation of my “tourist” alter-states. After all, who wouldn’t want to go on free overseas vacations?

“Husbands”

My professional handlers couldn’t risk my breaking free from their control in the middle of a mission. If a male handler could convince a female, emerging alter-state that the handler was my legal husband, then that alter-state would more likely obey his commands without argument. Most of my op trained alter-states didn’t know that Albert was my husband. Instead, when they emerged, they believed whatever they were told. Some of the “husband” handlers took further advantage of my parts’ ignorance by having sex with them after an op was completed, ensuring that those alter-states would more likely obey them on future assignments.

While preparing to take me home, my handlers always did a full body search. They checked my mouth, vagina, rectum, and all of my skin. They made sure that none of my op alter-states had hidden any clues or secret messages in or on my body for me to find back home. (Several parts had been caught using ink pens to write messages on my skin to tell me, the host alter-state, what was happening.)

Albert and other people close to me, including relatives, supervisors, and “friends,” helped to cover-up for my absences. Whenever I returned home, they acted as if I’d never been gone. Their behaviors reinforced my amnesia.

At home, I wasn’t able to remember having had extramarital sex with some of my “husband” handlers, since I repressed those experiences too. I did, however, remember it in my dreams. Because I felt embarrassed by the vivid orgasmic dreams, I decided they must be from Satan. Although my sexual needs were no longer being met at home, I still wanted to stay faithful to Albert so that God would be pleased with me.

Blammo

The following is a journaled memory of a typical op. As usual, I remembered the memory itself, with no knowledge of how I arrived in that location or how I returned home. And as usual, during the event, I didn't know who I was or even what year it was. Amnesic, I only knew what my handlers told me.

> I found myself alone in a foreign country, slowly driving along a narrow, crooked street in a small car. It was right before dawn. A row of narrow, small, one-story, wooden houses were on each side of the street. My temporary home base that I shared with my "husband" (handler) was the last house on the left. The street was still quiet, but people would soon be waking up and coming out.
>
> As I drove slowly along the street, I saw that somebody had placed a detonation device atop the front doorstep of each house, anticipating that when a person opened their front door and stepped out, blammo! The house would be damaged, at the very least, along with the victim.
>
> I could make out several of these doorstep devices in the pre-dawn shadows. By our back door, I noticed a stack of three logs. A long, thin metal pin stuck out beyond the top log, to be triggered when the solid wooden door pushed open against it.
>
> My first thought was for the man I called my husband, and the small, brown-haired, intelligent girl staying in the house with us. I believed she was our daughter. Though our "marriage" was a cover, this operative part of me believed in the reality of the arrangement.
>
> The husband had short, straight brown hair, and was grizzled from lack of sleep. Muscular and clever, he knew how to disassemble bombs.
>
> As prearranged, I drove on past the house, and pulled the little car around into an industrial area for a hastily-called rendezvous with him. He had just come back from a quickie assignment. I told him about the bombs I had seen, and begged him, "Come on, let's get out of here *now*!"

He gave me a grim look; taking it as a personal challenge, he was determined to stay behind and disassemble every bomb.

"Just because you know how to do it," I said, "doesn't mean you have to be the one to do it!"

As we stood arguing about what to do, two of the houses detonated from the doorstep bombs.

"Come on! It's not worth dying for!"

He wasn't going to go away with me, so I told him I wanted to take our daughter out of there to a safe place, before she got blown up too. We had another car, a station wagon with brown side panels, sitting next to the left side of the house, parked in the wet, leaf-covered dirt. When I suggested taking the station wagon, he shrugged, then gave me instructions about where to go next.

I tried one more time to get him to come with us, but I saw a gleam in his eye as he sought out the pin in the log on the back porch. The man was too far gone.

After he safely dissembled our log bomb, I entered the house, picked up the sleepy child, wrapped her in a red blanket, carried her outside, and lay her gently on the shiny brown leather seat in back. "There, now, honey, just take a little nap while I drive. We're going on a trip."

As I drove slowly away from the danger zone with the child lying quietly in the back seat of the car, I felt nostalgic, yearning for the man I had left behind. I also reached the sad realization that it may very well be the last time I would see him.

Movie Screens

After most covert ops, the professional handlers had to ensure that I would not remember what had occurred. One way they did this was by implanting fake "screen memories" in my mind that blocked out previous legitimate memories.

One type of screen memory was implanted at a location that I believe I was taken to after ops, to be debriefed. The Janus building was in Washington, DC. According to a photograph still in my possession, its street number was 1666.[4] The theater section was on the bottom floor of this multi-story building. The outside marquee sported two masks, one laughing and one sad, representing the dual faces of Janus, a mythological god. The concept of Janus was regularly used in my CIA mental programming because I lived two completely different lives, one at home and the other in the field.

At that building, I was usually taken upstairs first to a small, plain-walled office. The assigned debriefer, usually a clean-cut Caucasian man wearing a black business suit, triggered out every alter-state that had been conscious during the op and transportation. Each part told him what that part remembered. The parts knew that lying could lead to being tortured, so they were careful to tell the truth. They were not, however, averse to holding back pertinent information that could lead to their being tortured for having screwed up.

Afterwards, I was taken downstairs into the empty movie theater. While I watched a movie, a male handler sat to my right and carefully monitored my responses to what I saw and heard. Because I was in a trance state and was sometimes drugged, I believed the movie was really happening. Sometimes, the man added verbal hypnotic suggestions to make the movie seem more real.

Whoever chose these movies seemed to look for anything in them that could parallel at least one or two details they knew I'd experienced during the previous op. They understood that my future retrieval of memories of repressed events would work backwards. In other words, because of how my memory was naturally stored and retrieved, I would remember the most *recent* part of a series of experiences before remembering what had previously occurred. This means I would remember the movie screen memory before I'd remember the real op preceding it. If the movie seemed unrealistic, I'd be so confused by my memory of it, I'd think I was psychotic and therefore wouldn't believe the op memory if it emerged later.

Sometimes I was led into a plain-walled room–perhaps at a different location. I was told to sit in a small, tireless car that had been placed in front of a movie screen. Two more same-sized, white screens were attached to each side wall. Sometimes, instead of sitting in the tireless car, I was instructed to pedal a stationary bicycle or run on a treadmill, again surrounded by the three movie screens. Regardless of the mode of fake transportation, the scenery moved as I “drove” the car, pedaled the bicycle, or ran on the treadmill.

Sometimes when I pressed down on the car’s brake, the moving scenery didn’t slow down. I watched in terror as the car plunged off a cliff and crashed into the ground below. Each time I believed that I’d died, and then wondered why I could still see and think.

Using the bicycle or treadmill was also crazy-making because at first, as I pedaled or ran, I was going at the same speed as the fast-moving automobile traffic on the wide road that I believed I was also on (really, the traffic was on the screens). Then suddenly, the cars on the screens would seem to zoom around me and I believed I’d somehow lost my strength and energy to keep up. Each time, I panicked and felt ashamed. Because I believed I was on real roads with unfamiliar numbered signs, I worried. Where was I, how could I keep up with the traffic, and how would I ever get home?

These particular screen memories were especially effective in blocking my memories of having previously driven, in an alter-state, to specified locations.

Before the advent of virtual reality, Dad had preferred using what he called “acted-out scenarios” to implant screen memories in the minds of victim-slaves. Sometimes he and other alleged operatives contracted with established Hollywood actors and actresses to participate in these mock scenarios. At other times, they used people the victims would never see or meet in regular life.[5]

Dad believed by using all of a victim’s senses during an acted-out scenario, the victim would be more convinced that the retrieved memory of the acted-out scenario was a fully legitimate event.

In the 1990s, my way of determining whether or not a remembered event had been acted-out was to review the expressions on the faces of the other participants. I usually could remember a bit of a sneer, or a smile in the eyes of a participant who should have been upset or frowning if the event weren’t legitimate. Another clue was if I’d felt woozy or drugged during the event. During a real op, I would not have been drugged.

The implantation of another type of screen memory went like this: by phone, a male handler would instruct one of my alter-states to meet him at the ornate carousel atop a small hill in Six Flags Over Georgia, a large amusement park near Atlanta. Not knowing I was being controlled, I'd tell Albert I was going to the park for the day to "have fun." When I approached the carousel, its lights and calliope (organ) music and its rotation and the up and down movement of the horses quickly put me into a deep trance.[6]

Then the man walked towards me and triggered out a compliant alter-state that recognized him and enjoyed being with him. From there, he took me on another overseas assignment.

After the op and my debriefing, he brought me back to the carousel, had me watch it again until I tranced, then implanted a verbal hypnotic suggestion that blocked out all memory of the op. Finally, he melted into the crowd.

When I "came to" and drove home, I didn't know I'd been gone for several days. At home and at work, Albert and other local handlers helped to convince me that I hadn't missed any time at all.

Memory Scrambles

Some handlers hypnotically tricked my mind into seeing something that was not there, or tricked me into seeing something as other than what it really was. When I first remembered having been hypnotized that way, I felt embarrassed and scared. I didn't want to believe anyone could fool my mind so easily![7]

Stateside handlers used several "themes" to keep me compliant. One hypnotic trick was to make me "see" flowing molten lava outside a building, so I didn't dare leave it. (An adult alter-state related that this had originally been created in my mind when handlers made that alter-state walk on a bed of burning coals while in a deep trance.)

Some handlers told me to look out a multi-story office building's plate glass window at a cloud in the sky. They said the cloud was an approaching tornado. They knew that because of my Wizard of Oz programming, I had a strong fear of tornados. Sometimes they laughed so hard they doubled over, tears streaming down their faces, as I frantically yelled at them to follow me, then ran down several flights of stairs to the lowest level and hid there. At other times, if a helicopter were landing nearby, they mentally tricked me into believing it was another tornado.[8] Because the rotors created a strong gust and were noisy, hypnotically tricking me into seeing a tornado instead of the copter wasn't difficult.[9]

Notes

1. Although Groome, et al, described how a head concussion can temporarily negate a person's ability to retain bits and pieces of new memory, their description of its effects may also explain why the electrical effects of stun guns kept me and other slave-operatives from retaining certain information: "In all probability the contents of the STM [short-term, temporary] working memory at the time of the accident are lost because they have not yet been transferred to the LTM [long-term, permanent memory storage], and the STM working memory (which depends on conscious awareness) is put out of action during the period of unconsciousness." (pg. 161)

2. Some followers of Sigmund Freud would probably call this, "hysterical blindness."

3. I've had hundreds of flashbacks of "coming to" while sitting at a strange desk, surrounded by unfamiliar office workers, then opening a file and panicking because I didn't know what I was supposed to do with it.

4. Although 666 is a common symbol used by occult practitioners, some mental predators who are not occult practitioners have used it and other occult symbols to frighten and intimidate victims who had been ritually abused.

5. Some mind-control victims have even reported being put in full-scale, fake UFO's that were sometimes moved up and down by hydraulics. In the fake UFO's, drugged, tranced victims met humans dressed in "alien" costumes. Later, because of the effects of forcibly administered drugs and Ericksonian hypnosis, the remembering victims weren't able to differentiate between preceding, legitimate events and the subsequent acted-out UFO scenarios. They also were not able to recognize that the "alien abductors" were really human. Although some survivors are convinced that their abductors were aliens because they remember them as having been unnaturally tall, changing the perceived size of perpetrators in the minds of victims can easily be accomplished through hypnosis. For example, due to "Gulliver programming," I initially remembered some of my persecutors as being several *inches* tall!

   In the introduction to one of his fascinating books about true conspiracies in the US, Alex Constantine wrote:

   > The "Alien" Invasion–a very active cover story for the development of mind control technology. Supposedly (as those weird syndicated UFO television programs keep reminding us) alien scientists have voyaged millions of light years to place CIA implants in the bodies of human subjects. This incredible cover story is widely believed–yet most "skeptics" scoff at the notion that human scientists might want to do the same thing. The aliens have been pounded into the heads of the American consumer by a slue of books penned by military intelligence officers (*Psychic Dictatorship*, pg. xii).

6. Most mind-control survivors I've been in contact with have specifically remembered being taken by handlers or family members in the US to Disneyland (in California) or Disney World (in Florida) for programming sessions, as was I. I suspect this was done to us for a minimum of two reasons: 1) being in such a trigger-laden environment would easily cause dissociated individuals to regress into childlike states of consciousness; and 2) the overwhelming colors, shapes, sights, movement, and sounds–added to mental and physical fatigue–could easily cause dissociated individuals to go into a lengthy hypnotic trance.

7. Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, a FMSF spokesperson and self-proclaimed "memory expert," has generously provided the mind-control survivor community with irrefutable proof that, by using regression and hypnotic techniques on unsuspecting adult subjects, a professional can convince a fair percentage of them that they either experienced or saw something that didn't happen the way they remembered, or that they experienced something that didn't occur at all. If Loftus could accomplish these results by using benign, harmless techniques in controlled settings, imagine what could be implanted in a survivor's mind by using terror, coercion, sleep deprivation, food deprivation, hostile environments, drugs, Ericksonian hypnosis, Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP), and more.

8. It would be just as easy to hypnotically implant a screen memory in a victim's mind of the helicopter being a UFO.

9. Carla Emery explained this hypnotic technique:

   > Words act as conditioned stimuli in a totally mechanistic, automatistic way when the subject is deeply hypnotized. During hypnosis, the conscious mind, one of whose functions is to keep us hitched to reality, has been turned off. The conscious is not there to interpret or deny. The unconscious is literal and, frequently, obedient. When the subject's conscious mind is turned off because of hypnosis, language takes the place of reality. If the hypnotist says, "You see a cat waltzing alone in pink pajamas," you might see exactly that. (pg. 209)

Enslaved

Ecclesia Split

While Albert and I lived in Waukegan, Dad and Mom occasionally paid for us to either drive or fly to Atlanta to visit them in their separate homes. Pastor Bob and Richard kept insisting that God wanted us to stay in Illinois. Angry that I still refused to relocate, Albert started coming home late at night from nearby taverns. Each time, he was so drunk, the fumes nearly knocked me out. He'd lie on our mattress on the floor and cry about how miserable he was. His incessant complaining made me feel like crap. I tried so hard to please him by being a good and godly wife; and yet, he still wasn't happy.

To protect myself from the pain of not being loved or accepted by my husband, I clung harder to the church and to the Apostle's teachings. Pastor Bob, Richard and Barbara assured me if I kept obeying the Word of God, Albert would eventually submit to their authority. They said that once Albert obeyed, our family would live in harmony.

We probably would have divorced, had Ecclesia Fellowship not unexpectedly split. It began when Pastor Bob and Barbara flew to Anaheim, California, as they'd done several times in the past, to visit with Apostle Stevens in his home. When they returned home this time, they were noticeably troubled. The next Sunday, Bob told our congregation that Stevens was no longer living for God. Barbara later stated that she had learned–true or not, I don't know–that Stevens had become an alcoholic, was committing adultery, and was consulting with astrologers.

Bob said he knew his personal decision to break away from the Apostle's authority would not be acceptable to any members who still chose to follow Stevens. He asked the church members to fast and pray, asking God what they should do–start a new church with Bob as their pastor, or stay in the Walk. Many of the younger adults chose to stay in the Walk under Stevens's authority. They relocated to a smaller church that we'd recently helped start in southern Illinois.

Bob's decision helped to break what I believe was John Robert Stevens's long-distance hypnotic control over my mind–and the minds of many other gullible believers. I was finally free to question what the Apostle had taught. Elated, Albert demanded that I discard all my Living Word cassette tapes and printed materials. As I obeyed, I felt as if I were going into physical withdrawal.

Local Church

A young, red-bearded friend of Albert invited us to go with him to downtown Chicago to attend church meetings held by another Christian group that identified itself as the "Church in Chicago." It was part of an international religious organization, the Local Church. The Local Church was led by a small, balding man named Witness Lee. He claimed to have been a disciple of one of Korea's famous Christians, Watchman Nee.

At these new meetings, my first lesson in how to pray the Local Church way was to cluck my tongue once, then say: "Oh . . . Lord . . . *Je*sus." The men and women in the Church in Chicago were very friendly. They used a technique I've since learned is called "love bombing." Someone always invited us to eat and rest in their home on Sunday afternoon so we could go to the evening service before returning home.

Atlanta

When I finally agreed to move back to Atlanta, I discovered I'd accrued enough hours as a temp worker to receive two weeks' vacation pay. That same week, a young couple from the Church in Chicago came to visit us and gave us $300, saying it was from God. I believed these were signs from God that confirmed we were to return to Georgia.

After we loaded up the car and traveled to Atlanta, Dad and his new wife invited us to stay in their home in an older subdivision in the outskirts of the city.

Local Airport

After several months of living with Dad and his wife, we found a second-floor apartment at Cumberland Court, a low-rent complex in

Chamblee, Georgia. Our new apartment was within walking distance of Dad's house. It was also close to Peachtree DeKalb Airport, a small air field used mostly by light planes.

I didn't know that sometimes I was flown from that airport to be briefed and prepped for ops. In fact, I had no conscious memory of ever going there. Although I've not yet found any evidence that Dad ever had a pilot's license, I've had several memories of him flying me from the airport and back in small aircraft.

I doubted these memories until a private investigator reminded me that because my father had been a flight engineer during his four-year stint in the Air Force, he would have known how to fly small planes. Another professional explained that often when a person "borrows" an owner's plane, he gets away with it by not having to present a pilot's license.

Aryan Cult Network

I was unaware that Dad was manipulating some of my younger alter-states to go to cult meetings in Atlanta and Cobb County, officiated by local Aryan associates. Although some of their criminal occult rituals were similar to what I'd experienced in Pennsylvania, the north Georgia Aryan network focused more on the manufacturing and sales of illegal drugs and pornography. Unfortunately, as in Pennsylvania, pedophilia seemed to be the norm, as was the horrification and torture of their victims–particularly children and women. Further, I was forced to help Dad and some of the leaders when they transported children who, Dad claimed, were being bought and sold through their extensive, lucrative black marketing network.

In Pennsylvania, Dad's cult had often used dogs, snakes, and an occasional circus-trained lion in bestiality porn shoots. The Cobb County Aryan network's leaders seemed to prefer using domesticated animals, including trained dogs, although they also sometimes used tamed wildcats.

Unfortunately, when several children victimized within the network testified about the wildcats in court in the late 1980s, they were disbelieved. As with that jury, most people are unaware that owning a large, tamed wildcat is a status symbol among certain groups of black-marketeers.[1]

Dad continued to break child victims' minds, creating pliable altered states of consciousness they weren't aware of. In the mid-1970s, Dad had easy access to a large, two-story warehouse in Atlanta. On Saturdays, he and several male associates brought children there to be traumatized and mentally programmed.

Although he now used mannequins with fake blood to traumatize the children, he still insisted that the children use knives to kill baby animals on plain, cafeteria-sized tables. Doing this served several purposes: 1) the children had to suppress their consciences before they could kill the innocent baby animals; 2) they then developed perpetrator alter-states that didn't mind killing; and 3) even if they remembered, they wouldn't tell anyone, because Dad and the other men told them everyone would hate them for killing the animals.

Because the warehouse's exits were always guarded on the inside by men, my cult-conditioned alter-states didn't try to break and run. They believed there was no escape. Dad was also careful to always make another alter-state take over whenever I left the building, so I would not remember what had just occurred inside. And as I was being transported home, whoever drove me would verbally trigger out several more alter-states in succession so that, by the time I arrived home, the memory of the warehouse was completely gone. Dad and his criminal associates called this technique "information compartmentalization."

Dad taught several of the local Aryan leaders (including a man I'll name "J.C.") how to trigger out and use several of my child alter-states. Because these alter-states hadn't developed mentally or emotionally, they didn't feel old enough to be a parent and therefore didn't accept responsibility for Emily's welfare. Because Emily had no way of knowing this, she believed that sometimes her mother didn't care if those people hurt her terribly.

Some of the Aryan leaders called themselves "Southern Gentlemen"– an oxymoron. They told my participating child parts what to do during hardcore rituals and kiddy porn shoots. The rituals also were used to create more screen memories in my mind. When I remembered them in the early 1990s, their horror blocked out memories of preceding, covert assignments–for a while.

My forced participation in the Aryan occult rituals was also used to blackmail some of my adult alter-states into performing more assassinations. Dad and other professional handlers repeatedly told these parts that if they went on ops, they wouldn't have to perform illegal acts in rituals and wouldn't have to see more children being hurt. Then they reassured the alter-states that the CIA would cover for them at home so they wouldn't be arrested for any stateside (ritual and porn) crimes that they were forced to perform.

Albert also participated in some of the local Aryan occult rituals, and often transported us to them. He seemed to do whatever Dad wanted, even taking me to a specialized facility where I was repeatedly drugged and electro-shocked. This usually was done when I became noticeably depressed or agitated at home and sat on our carpeted floor in the hallway or bedroom, holding my head in my hands and crying out, "I have a whirlwind in my head!" (These whirlwinds seemed to consist of rapid thoughts and images that circled nonstop in my mind–some survivors call this phenomena "rapid switching" of alter-states.)

In the 1990s, when I first remembered Albert's many betrayals, I felt hurt and angry. To be fair, however, I had to consider that Dad might have blackmailed him into compliance and silence.

One reason I think this is possible is that, in the early 1980s, after Albert suddenly refused to have further contact with Dad, Albert kept ranting about how when "they" came to get him, he'd "take out" as many of them as he could before they killed him. At that time, I thought his mind had snapped–especially when he refused to say who "they" were. Now, I believe he was terrified that members of the Aryan network might kill him for breaking away from their control.[2]

In spite of Albert's animosity towards Dad, however, he had a streak of racism that perhaps helped him feel comfortable around some of the other white supremacists. He shared many of their beliefs, possibly because he was raised by a Nazi stepfather.

As an example: when Emily was about six years old, Albert repeatedly told her and me that if she ever had a "nigger's" baby, he'd disown her. He was angry when he said this, irrationally behaving as if she'd already become pregnant.

Albert nursed a terrible hatred towards Blacks. Sometimes he deliberately drove too close behind small cars driven by elderly Black women, deliberately terrorizing them and making frightening faces at them. Each time, I felt so embarrassed, I slid down in my seat. When we'd be near a Black male, Albert would usually sneer and call the man a "jigaboo." He clearly believed that people with darker skin were inferior, and avoided walking near or talking to any of them.

Whenever he drove past a government-subsidized housing project in Lawrenceville, Georgia, he sneered at the Black children playing outside between the rows of single-story buildings, calling them “yard apes” and “jungle bunnies.” Because I didn’t remember the Aryan meetings, I didn’t understand where he got those strange words.

I was alarmed by his behaviors and often felt ashamed to be his wife. He seemed to be so full of hatred and rage–I prayed constantly to God to touch his soul and make him the good man I sensed he had the capacity to be. I wasn’t willing to accept that God can’t force any person to do or become anything, against that person’s will. I needed many more years to realize that, unlike most of the male figures in my life, God was not a perp.

Child Victims

Because Dad created and conditioned most of my programmed alter-states, he knew which buttons to push, which triggers to use, and which parts to pull out to perform specific activities. He was careful never to trigger out a child-rescuer part when he wanted me to help him do awful things to children.

He and his criminal associates enjoyed using victims to harm and traumatize each other. They reminded me of prison guards who choose prisoners to harm each other for the guards’ entertainment. By having victim #1 perform an act against victim #2 while the controller stands in the shadows or in another room, victim #2 will believe that victim #1 was responsible.

Forgiving myself for obeying Dad has been hard work. I’ve had to accept that I was weak. I broke. I reached my limits of endurance again and again, until I did whatever he and his criminal associates commanded. Holding onto undeserved guilt has also been a sneaky way to avoid remembering how weak and helpless I’d felt, having had no control over the situation.

When Dad made me do terrible things to children, he used a control technique that he’d first developed when he’d forced me to participate in murderous rituals as a young child. Each time, Dad gave me a choice between performing a greater or lesser evil–a classic double-bind. Either way I went, I ended up believing I was guilty and therefore a monster.

Based on Dad's specific instructions, I could either hurt the child, or he would take over and torture the child before carrying out my original assignment.

Dad's threat of torturing a child was always given to me away from the child's hearing. The victim had no way of knowing that my disobedience could lead to the victim's being brutally tortured. Because Dad made sure the child saw me participate without a struggle, I believed that each child saw me as a willing perpetrator. That especially broke my heart.

Because Dad controlled when my cult alter-states came out and when they went back under, those parts couldn't stay conscious long enough to be able to report the crimes. He also ensured my continuing cooperation by telling those alter-states that if they did report the crimes, they would go to prison. He never mentioned the word "coercion."

Because my alter-states didn't know they were not guilty for what they'd been forced to do, they believed they were just as guilty and monstrous as Dad.

Although those alter-states believed his threats and did whatever he commanded, the alter-states initially felt different towards J.C., the Cobb County Aryan leader. They weren't so sure that he'd carry out similar threats if they dared disobey.

The first time he told an alter-state what to do to a brown-haired boy for a porn shoot, that alter-state chose to disobey him rather than traumatize the boy. Livid with rage, J.C. came into the room, dragged the boy into another room, and tortured him by using a branding iron heated red-hot on a portable barbeque grill. Later, J.C. convinced this alter-state that my rebelliousness had caused the boy to be tortured. The lesson went deep; all of my cult alter-states obeyed J.C.'s instructions from then on.

Although they were careful to obey Dad and J.C., these alter-states still attempted to secretly soothe and comfort the young victims–since the men didn't say they couldn't. If the alter-states believed they weren't being watched, they whispered words of encouragement into the children's ears. Seeing no way out, these parts believed they could best help the children from within the system.

If a child was to be bathed as a preparation for ritual sacrifice, my parts bathed the child gently and soothingly, looking directly into the child's eyes the entire time. These parts knew that for some children, death was a mercy, compared to what they'd have to endure each day as slaves. My parts wanted each child to know that someone did care. They did the best they could in each evil situation.

My professional handlers knew I would much rather be given pain than witness children being tortured. And when I was forced to harm children, I took on the controllers' disowned guilt as my own.

Notes

1. In the early 1990s, several of the children's adult relatives told me that a female therapist in North Georgia, who had believed the children's stories and had planned to testify for them, was brutally murdered–officially as the result of a robbery attempt.

2. Through personal experience, I've learned that about 90% of the threats made to mind-control and ritual abuse victims are never carried out. Oftentimes, perpetrators believe if they can hurt and terrorize victims while they still have control over them, then if the victims decide to leave, the internalized terror and memories of torture and horrification are usually strong enough to influence them to give up and go back without a single threat being carried out. The use of threats to control the minds of victims is not an unfamiliar tactic. *Time* magazine 2/10/97, "By the Book":

    > To the growing list of popular "how to" manuals, add this release from the CIA, recently made public under a Freedom of Information request from the *Baltimore Sun.* The agency says it no longer follows the rules of the 124-page 1983 "human resource" handbook, used to train security forces in Latin American countries, which includes passages on mental torture: "A threat is basically a means for establishing a bargaining position by inducing fear in the subject. A threat should never be made unless it is part of the plan and the 'questioner' has the approval to carry out the threat. When a threat is used, it should always be implied that the subject himself is to blame by using words such as, 'You leave me no other choice but to . . .' He should never be told to comply 'or else!' The threat of coercion usually weakens or destroys resistance more effectively than coercion itself. For example, the threat to inflict pain can trigger fears more damaging than the immediate sensation of pain. In fact, most people underestimate their capacity to withstand pain. In general, direct physical brutality creates only resentment, hostility, and further defiance." (pg. 21)

    After 9/11, President George W. Bush and numerous other government officials constantly used the media to attack certain foreign leaders as either being terrorists or promoters of terrorism. This can be perceived as hypocritical, because *what employees of our government and their associates have done to the minds and lives of mind-control victims is a working definition of terrorism.* The ongoing traumas and mental torture perpetrated against these victims literally changed their brain chemistry. Added to that are the implanted threats that operate 24/7 in their minds, at least on an unconscious level. The perpetrators' terroristic threats can still dictate their actions, dampen their hope, sap their energy and strength, isolate them from the rest of humanity, and cut short any sense of a future.

Cover Positions

Reinsurance Clerk

As I continued to be taken to rituals and professionally handled on covert ops, I needed a plausible cover–a seemingly normal life that would hide the existence of the other activities.

My first full-time job was at a small insurance company in downtown Atlanta. I was hired to temporarily fill the position of reinsurance clerk, held by a petite, black-haired woman who handled large sums of premiums paid to reinsurance companies like General Re and Munich American, to insure the solvency of the policies issued by the agency. The volatile woman would soon go on maternity leave, and was understandably outraged that I'd been interviewed and hired without her knowledge.

During my initial training, she deliberately withheld essential information to sabotage my success as her replacement. I basically trained myself while she was gone, using her previous work as my guide.

Both before and after her leave, she screamed at me nearly every day, making cruel remarks in the presence of the other office workers. Each time she screamed, I froze. When she finished her tirade, I hurried to the bathroom to cry. My face was always blotchy and red when I returned to my desk. Then she smiled triumphantly and berated me more. The other employees were concerned about me. They didn't know I wasn't able to assert myself with her because I'd been a victim of both men and women for many years.

Before she returned from her maternity leave, a new supervisor tried to convince me to be the clerk's permanent assistant. I declined. To the best of my knowledge, while I worked there, I was sent out on covert ops on weekends, when I called in sick (the flu always made a great cover), or when I was on "vacation."[1]

Maryland Casualty

My next full-time employment was with Maryland Casualty Company at the insurance company's regional office located in a sprawling office park, north of Atlanta. To the best of my memory, all of my positions at that company were actively used as covers for my participation in covert ops.

Because nearly all of my supervisors and managers at Maryland Casualty appeared to be directly complicit in covering-up for my absences, I couldn't separate my feelings about the ops from my feelings about working there. When Albert dropped me off at the front entrance of the flat-roofed, one-story building, I usually cried. Each time I prepared to enter the building, an invisible darkness seemed to crush my soul. I have never forgotten telling Albert that Maryland Casualty reminded me of the song, *Hotel California,* "You can check out any time you like, but you can never leave."[2]

Because my mind was constantly active, typing insurance policies and endorsements bored me silly. After six months, I transferred to another room where I worked as a CRT operator for a year and a half, inputting pages of cryptic codes from insurance policy files. After that, I transferred to the Commercial Casualty Department located in the front part of the building. There, I was an insurance policy rater/coder.

Pam, our department's middle-aged supervisor, was petite with short auburn hair. I quickly learned to fear her, and tried hard to avoid angering her. Because Pam's behaviors reminded me of my childhood relationship with my mother, I developed an emotionally conflicted relationship with her. Unfortunately for me, she used my fear of her anger and stern disapproval, as well as shaming tactics, to keep me under tight control.

Our department's manager, Clyde, was a tall, middle-aged man with short, thinning brown hair. He usually wore a plain, long-sleeved white shirt, dark suit, and glasses. His bald manager, Fritz, usually sat quietly in his own cubicle and said little to anyone. Clyde soon became my substitute father figure.

Pam and Clyde seemed to cultivate similar childlike loyalties in many of the other young female workers in our department. Pam also used her religiosity and moral recriminations to keep us compliant. Tension often built up between those female raters who vied for Pam's attention and approval. Because tempers often ran high, a common expression was, "The shit just hit the fan."

At that time, if I'd been told that my positions were cover jobs, I would have said the idea was pure craziness. I didn't know what I couldn't remember.

Because I enjoyed being a rater/coder, I was rarely bored. Whenever I'd learned everything that I could at my current level of expertise, Pam encouraged me to attain more training. Since I received a raise every six months during my employment at Maryland Casualty, I believed I must be a highly valued worker.

After several years, our regional office transferred to a large new building near Perimeter Mall, located in a wealthy section of north Atlanta. The building had a huge multi-story atrium with dining tables, water fountains, and a long goldfish pond that many employees tossed pennies into for good luck.

Around that same time, Albert and I hunted for our first house. Still in control of our money, he claimed we couldn't afford more than the most basic home. In August, 1982, we found a tiny new pine-sided, three-bedroom, one-bath house on Cedars Road, out past the sleepy old town of Lawrenceville. Although we had no air conditioning in the hot summer and only small space heaters to warm us in the winter, I was ecstatic–finally, we had our own home!

Because we now lived an hour's drive from both of our jobs, Albert tired of transporting me. For a while, he encouraged me to rely on co-workers to drive me to work and back. When that was no longer an option, he agreed to let me purchase a small car of my own. (Still phobic about driving, I didn't obtain a driver's license until I was in my late twenties.)

I chose a new white Mazda GLC hatchback with standard transmission and blue–gray interior. When Albert tried to teach me how to drive it on the rural country roads near our home, he made me so nervous, I insisted on teaching myself. Within hours, I drove fine! I didn't know that I'd become co-conscious with an alter-state that had been driving since I was a teenager.

I felt more in control of my life as I drove to work and back each day. And yet, at work and at home, I was still being controlled.

Sitting at my desk each day, I helped to process huge stacks of files. Our copies of the business insurance policies, endorsements (changes), cancellations, audits, underwriters' policy renewal instructions, and our own sheets of coding were stapled inside the off-white manila files.

Any of the files that were jacketed by extra blue or red folders were to be processed first, because they either had large premiums that needed to be input on the computer ASAP, or they were so old, we could get in trouble with state auditors for not having processed them yet. Although

I tried to please Pam by working hard and fast, she always seemed to expect more from me. I usually enjoyed that challenge.

When Pam had first hired me, she'd agreed I would never have to work overtime. She broke her word when she and Clyde insisted that every rater must work overtime, either during weekdays or on weekends.

This was a problem, because I was often transported at night to Aryan meetings, and was exhausted from going on ops, doing my regular job, driving an hour each way to work and back, and now working overtime. It was more than my mind and body could endure.

One Saturday, I came to work early in the morning. When I sat down at my desk, I broke into tears. Surprised, Pam asked what was wrong. I held out my arm to her and said, "What does Clyde want? My blood?" Although they let me go home that day, the pressure to work overtime continued unabated. I was constantly exhausted and sick.

I didn't know enough about healthy boundaries to recognize that Pam was overly controlling and intrusive about my personal life. Therefore, I didn't think it strange when she told me what to do at home, as well as on the job.

I wanted to believe Pam when she claimed to be a godly Christian. I couldn't accept the alternate reality–that she and Clyde not only were *not* concerned about my health; they were deliberately using my mental programming to control and handle me. My belief that Pam was a devout Christian clashed with the hidden knowledge that she was not what she claimed to be. That clash created cognitive dissonance in my mind; one of the two sets of knowledge must be repressed. Believing that Pam was "good" was preferable to knowing that she was actively and willingly betraying me.

Because I repressed all memories of Pam and Clyde's covert activities as assigned handlers, I was shocked and dismayed when I discovered that for years, Pam had deliberately withheld information from me that directly affected my professional future.

Her betrayal fueled my anger, helping me to break loose from her control. I quietly inquired about rating positions at nearby insurance companies. An elderly female co-worker told me she'd been hired to work at Cotton States, another insurance company about a mile away. At her suggestion, I applied there and was quickly hired.

When I gave Pam my required two-week notice, she was icy cold and wouldn't speak to me unless absolutely necessary. Not having encountered that side of her before, I was deeply hurt.[3]

One day, I took some of my personal possessions from my desk outside to my car during a coffee break. When I returned, Pam furiously yelled at me in front of the other raters, informing me that from then on, she would inspect everything I took from my desk. I was stunned by her sudden distrust and by the realization that although I'd worked closely with her for five years, I didn't really know her. After that, leaving was easy.

In the 1990s, I pieced together enough information from my journals to know that much of my seven years of employment at Maryland Casualty was a front for other activities. To the best of my understanding, I often reported to work and then left the building–sometimes for days—to do covert ops under the control of one or more professional handlers.

Occasionally, Clyde or Pam were my handlers for local activities. I've had several vivid memories of Clyde driving me from Maryland Casualty to the Fort Gillem Army base south of Atlanta, to meet with spooks in rooms and corridors hidden beneath one of its small buildings. I've also remembered that on at least one occasion, Clyde personally handled me on an overseas assignment. I've also had numerous memories of Pam's involvement in Cobb County Aryan meetings and activities.

One alter-state journaled that Clyde's manager, Fritz, had privately told that alter-state that my personnel records had been doctored so if anyone asked about my unusual number of absences, my records would show that I was in the Army Reserves. I don't know if this is true, since I was never permitted to see that part of my personnel file.

Pam also told some of my alter-states that she covered for my absences by telling other raters that I'd gone to other branch offices or to the Baltimore home office for "special training" (I never did). Because Pam was in charge of our vacation schedules, she chose when I could take days off. Sometimes, if I felt exhausted from an op, she encouraged me to take the rest of the day off to recuperate. Not knowing that I'd just come home from a stress-filled op, I believed her when she said I had a 24-hour virus.[4]

On numerous occasions, both Albert and Pam suggested I take Emily to visit my mother and her second husband in South Carolina. I didn't know that after my arrival, they often triggered out alter-states and drove me to nearby airports to go on more ops while keeping Emily at their house as a coercive measure, ensuring that I would comply with my assigned handlers.

When I first remembered that my positions at Maryland Casualty were covers, I was very upset. How could I have been gone for days at a time, leaving my desk at the drop of a hat, with no questions asked? Damn it, I'd worked hard for my pay! I was a good worker!

As the memories continued to emerge with remarkable consistency and vividness, I realized I had probably been given semi-annual raises to keep me from seeking other employment. I also realized that, because of the way our department's file distribution system had been set up, any rater/coder could have easily completed another's work. This may be one reason why I had often started working on a complicated file, then had later discovered it had been completed by someone else–often by Pam herself.

Pam and Clyde had repeatedly reminded the Commercial Casualty rater/coders that the Baltimore home office required all workers to maintain and update our bulky, red-jacketed "desk manuals," so that no employee would be indispensable. Each desk manual contained indexed, handwritten, detailed instructions on how to perform any task handled by any person sitting at that station. In other words, any person could have completed my files while I was away.

When I finally accepted that my employment there had been a cover, I felt miserable. Pam had repeatedly told me I was one of their best workers. What a blow to discover I probably wasn't! Worse, Albert had been actively complicit. My bosses, Albert, my mother and her husband, Dad . . . had *anyone* in my life not betrayed me?

Even several co-workers, who Pam had assigned to drive me to work and back and to befriend me away from work, had been used to help transport me for ops!

I'd been raised from early childhood to believe that my value as a human was based on what I did, instead of who I was. Learning that I hadn't earned my pay was a powerful blow to my fragile self-esteem.

Cotton States

After I left Maryland Casualty and started working at Cotton States, I felt better about myself. We were treated with respect, and our employment benefits were excellent. Although I still don't know if my position there was a cover, I've consistently remembered that at least two supervisors had also handled me away from the building. I've also repeatedly remembered having taken solo walks outdoors during lunch breaks, strolling around the white Marriott hotel less than a block away. On the far side, I met briefly with a male spook who waited for me in a white car. Each time, I gave him information and he gave me new instructions.

Covert Activities

When I had worked at Maryland Casualty, several of my professional handlers had come there during the day to transport me. Although I didn't recognize them as they walked towards my desk, some of my alter-states emerged, happy to be with them again. With a nod from Clyde or Pam, these parts followed the handlers out to their waiting vehicles.

One of my regular handlers claimed to be with the CIA's Directorate of Operations. He was fairly handsome and charismatic with short, blond hair. He called himself "Jed," which he said was short for "Jedediah"–I'm sure that was an alias.

When he came there to transport me, Jed usually drove a sporty white Jaguar. He convinced several of my female alter-states that he was my legal husband. Because those alter-states didn't know of my life at home and didn't know that Albert was my husband, they believed Jed. Compliance came easy, because he gave those alter-states gentle, attentive sex.

These op alter-states loved going on trips with Jed and other alleged CIA handlers. One of Jed's sidekicks was a heavyset, wide-built man with fairly short, slightly wavy orange-red hair and a full beard. I rarely met with Jed in his office (if it really was his), without the red-bearded man standing close by–perhaps for extra protection.

When Jed called me at home, he first played the recording of a fax machine's wavy tones. My mind always short-circuited when I heard those tones, because one should hear them when *calling* a phone number that has an active fax machine. (We didn't have one in our home.) The resulting cognitive dissonance quickly put me into a trance. Then Jed spoke, and one of my CIA-loyal parts emerged to do exactly as he commanded.[5]

Once in a while, Dad acted as my local assigned handler. After triggering out a compliant alter-state over the phone, he gave that part specific instructions. Albert never intervened or argued when those parts said they had to leave. Each time, Dad told the triggered-out traveler alter-states that if they didn't do exactly what he and the other handlers said, he would personally kill Emily.

Believing my father's threat, each alter-state obediently drove to a contact point where an awaiting handler triggered out another alter-state to begin the next leg of the journey. These adult alter-states instinctively knew I couldn't survive the pain of losing another precious child. Although they hadn't emotionally bonded with Emily, they understood that if I died, so would they–since we inhabited the same body.

Although my handlers used my compartmentalized rage to do kills, that powerful emotion rarely emerged away from their control. In fact, I would often isolate or walk long distances, alone, to keep from hurting anyone if I felt angry. If it did unexpectedly emerge at home, I either told Emily to go to a friend's house, or to lock herself in her bedroom from the inside. Although we both knew I could easily use a wire hanger to open it, the temporary barrier gave me enough time to regain control and avoid hurting her.

My rage had been with me for many years. When I was fourteen, I had stabbed my oldest brother in the forearm with the pointed end of my styling comb after a ritual alter-state was accidentally triggered out while watching a TV movie, *Brothers of the Bell.* After I came back to consciousness, I was horrified at what I'd done, and cried and begged him to please not tell our parents. As far as I know, he never did.[6]

As an adult, the closest I'd ever come to consciously hurting a man was when Albert approached me menacingly in our bedroom in Lawrenceville one afternoon in a fit of rage. He shoved me backwards onto our bed, his fist balled, ready to punch me. An op alter-state emerged, raised my knees to my chest, pushed my feet against his midsection, then lifted and slammed him backwards into the wall. I was astonished and pleased that I'd done this to him; in turn, he never tried to physically assault me again.

Before my recovery, none of my assassin alter-states had emerged at home. When Dad murdered Rose, a new adult part had split off from my consciousness. Dad and other professional handlers code-named that male part, "Dark." He visualized himself as tall and muscular. He'd internalized Dad's overwhelming, murderous personality, to make himself equal to and unafraid of Dad. To keep that part under control and separate from my consciousness, Dad and others tortured him with electricity.

After the severe electrical torture, this alter-state was unable to connect with me or any other alter-state. He was also emotionally disconnected from the rest of humanity. He served only one function: to kill.

Once in a while, local handlers took this alter-state to a private home in Cobb County. In warm weather, the back yard contained a garden full of flowers and vegetable plants. Sometimes the handlers instructed this alter-state to take care of the plants by watering them and weeding around them. Although he wasn't capable of emotionally connecting with humans, this alter-state did develop a bond with "his" plants, perhaps because they subconsciously represented Rose.

When my professional handlers wanted this part to perform an especially reprehensible assassination, they took him *back* to the garden and forced him to stand and watch as they used a flame-thrower to cremate the plants. That killed what was left of the alter-state's ability to bond with any living creature.

After that, he was a stone cold killing machine with zero remorse or guilt. His only remaining pleasure was in doing each job well. Although he hated and despised everything that lived, he hated and despised himself most of all. And although he had a strong survival instinct, he dreaded facing another day of totally dark existence. He held the greatest emotional and psychic pain of any of my parts and was, more than any other alter-state, the wandering dead.

Some of my other specialized black op parts had been trained to disarm and kill hostage takers by pretending to be intellectually challenged. Those parts had no fear of weapons, having been taught that most people who hold a loaded gun are just as afraid as the targeted individual.

Although I was never allowed access to a gun at home, I used various kinds on ops. Since my forearms and wrists weren't as strong as a man's, I was more comfortable using smaller handguns. Because my aim was excellent (grey eyes are a plus), using a smaller-caliber weapon wasn't a handicap.

I was fortunate to also have the ability to see bullets coming at me in slow motion. I always had enough time to shift my body so they went past me.[7]

I also speeded up, physically and mentally, during dangerous ops. This may have been due to a powerful adrenaline rush paired with the effects of repetitive training. While my opponents fumbled for their guns, I'd already taken aim and formulated my next moves. While they were still raising their guns to shoot me, I easily picked off one or two of them.

These special abilities were invaluable, because I could go after more than one man at a time in a hazardous situation and come out alive and unharmed. Most of my spook handlers were so cowardly, they sent me in alone to take care of a situation during sniper and hostage interventions. My op alter-states never complained, however, because they'd been conditioned to believe they were disposable and dispensable. They fought to survive each op so they could go home, not knowing where home was.

During some nighttime ops, I emerged from a van (usually white, unmarked, and paneled) that my handlers parked out of sight, a block or two from a target's house. One of the handlers in the van monitored me via a tiny two-way radio device, reminiscent of a wireless hearing aid, that he inserted in my right ear. This way, the handler could hear what was happening and could give me more instructions, if needed. If a controlled alter-state accidentally froze or went under, the handler could verbally trigger out a second op-trained part to take over and complete the job.

Due to long-term exposure to criminal occult rituals, I felt comfortable with all kinds of knives–I still do.[8] As long as the blade was sharp, I carried out my orders with ease. On at least one occasion, I wore a leather contraption around my right wrist and forearm, the spring-released blade positioned against the inside of my forearm, hidden by a long sleeve. I didn't like that device because it was too awkward to use. The simpler the weapon, the more I liked it.

My MKNAOMI-programmed alter-states had limited training in the use and administration of deadly chemicals. A typical assignment involved my carrying a small plastic container of Vaseline in a purse. As instructed, I pushed the point of a long hatpin from the bottom/inside of the purse, outwards through a reinforced corner, making sure the point of the pin was directed away from my body as I carried the purse over my right shoulder. I then extracted the Vaseline container, opened it, and dipped the exposed point into a small, clear pool of liquid floating atop the petroleum jelly.

After coating the point and giving it time to dry, I then walked up to a male target and pretended to accidentally bump him with my purse, careful to scratch his skin through his clothes. Because the targeted individual didn't understand that he'd been fatally assaulted, I always had sufficient time to leave the area before anyone noticed me.

Some of my MKNAOMI parts were also sent into buildings to "paint" a clear substance onto a doorknob that a targeted individual was expected to use, usually while under surveillance. Some of these parts were even used to insert, or smear, clear substances onto targeted individuals' personal items in their homes, especially toothbrushes and the open ends of their tubes of toothpaste.[9]

When the first alter-state with biochemical training emerged in the early 1990s, she identified herself as Naomi. Unlike other black op alter-states, she was neither rageful nor emotionally cold–she'd simply done her job.[10]

A bulky, lightweight handgun that at least one op trained part had used (against a sniper) seemed to have been made of dark colored plastic. It could shoot three types of plastic cartridges that were color-coded: red, blue and yellow. That alter-state was told that each cartridge contained a unique deadly substance. Not only did the weapon pass through a metal detector; had it been examined, it probably would have been mistaken for a child's toy.

The hardest part of being overseas was that my black op alter-states couldn't remember who I was and where home was. They were more disconnected from me than my traveler alter-states were. This was, in part, because my op-trained alter-states had been created through extreme torture. Because they were blank slate alter-states, they didn't have my morals.

They were rarely allowed to carry any identification. If they did, the identification was always fake. Because they didn't know who they were, they assumed they were the person that the papers, travel visas, driver's licenses, etc. identified me as being. This helped the alter-states to pass through inspection points without appearing suspicious.

To keep any of my alter-states from breaking control and making an emergency phone call when someone was injured or killed, some of my mental programmers had exposed me to fake violence, then had let me "escape" into a room that had a phone. Each time I'd picked up the phone and dialed "0" to report the mock injury or death, a fake operator had answered and then either changed the subject or convinced the alter-state that local authorities didn't have time to deal with the problem. This conditioned the alter-states to believe there was no point in calling for medical aid if an injury or death occurred on a real assignment.

On most overseas ops, at least one specialized alter-state was made to memorize a temporary emergency number in case something went wrong. Such phone calls were occasionally unavoidable–handlers, op partners, and even assigned clients were occasionally injured or killed. At those times, my alter-states usually required further instructions.

In later years, several of my alter-states were temporarily given a small, black cell phone. All the alter-states had to do was press the "0" button, then a spook contact answered, posing as a phone company operator. These alter-states were trained to ignore what the operator said. When they gave a pre-arranged identifier code and reported the current circumstances, the fake operator stopped talking and transferred the call to a spook handler, who gave new instructions.

A particularly unpleasant assignment, after botched overseas ops, was to dismember dead spooks' bodies so they could be buried, undetected, in pieces. I was made to believe this was standard fare for overseas ops. I was told that local authorities couldn't be allowed to know the CIA was operating clandestinely in their jurisdiction. My op parts were also told that if I died overseas, my body would be disposed of the same way.[11]

Since Dad and other men had taught several of my alter-states how to dismember bodies in rituals, funeral homes, and in other closed environments, those parts became good at it. To stay sane, I developed one female alter-state that mentally did mathematical equations while cutting up the bodies. To this day, I visually "remember" numbers instead of the body parts and blood.

Some bodies were disposed of, stateside. At such times, a professional handler came to wherever I was and said that he had a job for "Angel." That emerging Angel alter-state (I had several with that code-name) specialized in body disposal, via acid. Although Angel was told that the bodies were deceased operatives, it is quite possible that they weren't.[12]

Most of the ops that my alter-states were used for, including bodyguarding and hostage interventions, had the potential of traumatizing the alter-states. Sometimes, bad things happened to the people they were supposed to protect–the best of plans sometimes went awry.

Notes

1. Out of all of the years I worked full time, with nearly all of them generating two weeks of paid vacation each year, I only have one memory of having gone on a real vacation–to Miami. Even that trip was a cover for other activities I was forcibly involved in, while in Florida.
2. The lyrics were used as part of my CIA-compliant mental programming. Several spook handlers bragged that the song was an Agency favorite, partly because of the implied threat, and partly because "CIA" is embedded in its title.
3. As a child, I had learned to separate my awareness of the two "sides" of my parents' abusive personalities in my mind. By blocking out the abuse and danger, I was able to survive being in their presence each day without being terrified. This coping

mechanism continued when I was an adult. When an abusive person became an integral part of my life, I blocked out all memory and awareness of the harmful side of that person's personality, and only recollected the person's "good" side.

This is one of the primary reasons why I allowed abusive people to have power over me for so long. Only when their negative behaviors were so blatant that they punched through my wall of denial, was I able to recognize what they really were. When that happened, I (as the host alter-state) had one of two choices: I could accept the fact that the person was a threat to me and totally separate myself from that person to protect myself; or I could push the truth away, pretending that person's negative behaviors did not exist, and go back into denial about that person's true character and motives. I suspect this is what some alleged ritual abuse survivors have done: after they initially believed their emerging memories, they were influenced to go back into denial and return to their dangerous families, who then influenced them to blame the "false" memories on their therapists.

4. Because I was conditioned not to consult with regular medical doctors, I treated myself.

5. Carla Emery explained this effective hypnotic technique, known as Telephone Induction:

> The hypnotist speaks, or sounds the post-hypnotically suggested induction cue over the phone when he gets his subject's ear on the other end. He doesn't have to say "Hello" first. That would give his subject a predator-on-the-phone warning and the chance to hang up before the induction cue is spoken. Instead, the hypnotist gives the induction cue first. Immediately, in a person programmed for routine amnesia during trances, the subject's conscious mind is off-line. Only the reflexive hypno-robot is listening. The hypnotist gives his instructions to that subject's unconscious. When he is finished, the phone call and the hypnosis are terminated (probably both at once) by a routine suggestion. (pg. 65)

Possibly the best way for a novice to understand telephone induction is by reviewing the fictional movie, *Telefon,* starring Charles Bronson. In it, sleeper agents were unwittingly programmed to respond to a coded phrase. Not knowing that they were mentally programmed, they responded to a trigger phrase given to them during an unexpected phone call. In response, they each tranced and carried out the caller's instructions. The movie is an overly crude example of mental programming because most mind-controlled slaves are given many different programs that can be triggered, usually one at a time. Another difference is that in the movie, the sleepers were only used one time. In real life, because they are a serious financial investment, most slave-operatives will be used for decades.

6. At times, my brothers and I were fiercely loyal and protective towards each other. And yet, given our shared parentage, I am aware that I may not be the only sibling who was

programmed to have compliant alter-states. For this and other reasons, I choose not to have any more contact with them. Sometimes, to stay safe, mind-control and ritual abuse survivors have to care about those they love from a great distance.

7. I remembered this with no verifications in the early 1990s. Nearly a decade later, I attended a graduation ceremony in Chattanooga. The CEO of the Gallup Poll gave the address. He said he had interviewed successful professional hockey goalies and had learned that they had the unusual ability to see the puck coming at them in slow motion. In July, 2000, I wrote to Gallup for more information. An employee replied in an E-mail that this ability is called *elongated time.*

8. Some therapists call this a "trauma bond."

9. Not long before these memories emerged, I developed a sudden phobia about touching doorknobs and using toothpaste. In the past, I'd always carried a small container of Vaseline in my purse–perhaps as an unconscious reenactment. The initial awareness of my first emerging NAOMI programmed part was triggered during a class at a Baptist seminary, in which a student recounted the story of Ruth and Naomi. The impact of hearing the word Naomi was so tremendous that I ran to the bathroom and cried loudly for nearly a half-hour, not realizing that the adult students could hear all of it through the building's ductwork. I dropped out of school shortly after that.

10. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross explained why the CIA's MKNAOMI project was developed. MKNAOMI was a joint project of the CIA and the Army's Special Operations Division in Fort Detrick, Maryland. It ran from 1953 to 1970. MKNAOMI involved "developing, testing, and maintaining biological agents and delivery systems for use against humans as well as against animals and crops" (pg. 67). At least one alter-state having that project's code name had continued to be used on black ops for years *after* the project officially ended.

11. This was a powerful, unconscious incentive to survive, because I didn't want my loved ones to grieve over losing me while having no idea what had happened to me!

12. I'm still phobic about handling all forms of acid, because I know what some of them can do to human flesh.

Interventions

Grandma's Gift

Because I was so busy going to work, rituals, ops, and more, I didn't have the time or energy to casually visit with my extended family in Pennsylvania. This was unfortunate, because I didn't have the chance to see my paternal grandmother one more time before she died of a massive heart attack in March, 1982, in the presence of her second husband. Although I deeply grieved losing her, I was glad she'd had the opportunity to experience safety, love, and happiness with him in his home during her remaining years.

When Dad was told of his mother's death, he was stone cold and showed no sign of grief. He insisted that he saw no reason to go to her funeral; after all, she was dead. My stepmother had to fight to get him to take her with him to Grandma's funeral to pay their last respects.

Before Grandma's death, she had secretly instructed one of Dad's brothers–the executor of her estate–to travel to Georgia and hand-deliver her brilliant diamond solitaire ring to me at Dad's house. Because I hadn't known that Grandma had owned it, I was deeply touched. It was my first nice piece of jewelry.

Grandma's legacy helped me to feel special. The knowledge that she had cared that much about me gave me new strength and helped me to stand taller. My uncle told me that because Grandma's first husband had never bought her an engagement ring, she had decided to save up her hard-earned money and buy one for herself.

Upon hearing the story, I realized if I was ever going to be happy, I couldn't wait the rest of my life for Albert to change. It was time to create my own happiness.

Meadowlark

Grandma's ring was the first step of my journey into strength and freedom. More changes came quickly after, almost as if an invisible hand was choreographing the events.

In the early 1990s, an alter-state named Andreia recounted an experience in which I had been forcibly transported in 1985 to an Air Force base that was identified to me only as "Meadowlark."

I was escorted there by a spook named Jim who fancied himself to be a cowboy. He led me into a set of below-ground corridors and rooms at that base. Soon, a succession of alter-states was triggered out and painlessly interrogated by a gray-haired, ramrod-straight, retired Army General who some of my alter-states had known in the past as "Poppa."

After the interrogations, Poppa asked to speak to any alter-state that would consider defecting and working for him and his people. Andreia emerged. Having known Poppa in the past, she still liked him.

Poppa warned Andreia that if I continued to go to the Aryan rituals in Georgia, I'd be put in prison for the rest of my life and could lose contact with Emily. He said his hand-picked, retired Army intelligence personnel were working covertly, on a strictly voluntary basis, to shut down Aryan organizations in the US as part of an extensive covert operation he called, "Clean Sweep." He said he knew about the nationwide Aryan network's plans to overthrow the government in the year 2000, since it was one of Hitler's long-term goals. He said that, because much violence was planned (including bombings in Atlanta during the Olympics), ASA and other intelligence agencies had chosen to intervene.

I write "ASA" with the understanding that I'm not able to recall, clearly, whether Poppa said his covert intelligence agency was the Army's ISA–Intelligence Support Activity, or ASA–Army Security Agency. Years after I remembered meeting Poppa at Meadowlark, several alter-states journaled that Poppa's recruits were connected to ASA, and that I had picked up the moniker ISA from a book about the extensive US intelligence community. For simplicity's sake, I will identify the agency as ASA with the understanding that it may not have been that agency at all.[1]

Poppa's face registered hatred towards the Nazi conspirators as he spoke. Then he talked about ASA's dedication to "God and Country." Although he had done hurtful things to some of my parts in the past, supposedly out of necessity, he now convinced Andreia that he'd become a true Christian and that, because of his conversion, he wanted to do what was right. Andreia believed him and agreed to cooperate with him and the ASA after I returned to Georgia.

Poppa warned that either I could stay completely away from the Aryan meetings from now on, or Andreia could attend them as his mole to help bring the network down from the inside. He reminded Andreia that if she chose to secretly participate in the Aryan meetings while pretending to be other alter-states, she would have to perform the same repugnant acts they'd already performed. He added that he would assign one of his inside men, already a mole, to protect her.

Although she grieved that she would have to harm others, Andreia agreed to stay conscious as much as she possibly could during the cult meetings. She was willing to lose pieces of her soul to help free the children.

When Andreia journaled this memory in the early 1990s, I thought I'd lost my mind. I could find no proof of any Air Force base named "Meadowlark." I put the questionable memory in the back of my mind to wait for verifications—if any existed.[2]

Several of the other alter-states interrogated at Meadowlark journaled that Poppa had told them that the CIA had made a disastrous mistake by bringing Nazi professionals to the US and installing them in secure positions.[3] He said the CIA had allowed our sworn enemies to work towards taking our government over from the inside-out. He said the public would not be told about the attempted overthrow, because there would be "riots in the streets" and "mass panic." He said Clean Sweep had to be conducted quietly. The main reason why our government was not willing to admit that criminal occult activities were rampant, Poppa told me, was because much of the occultism had been covertly introduced into the US, in a Trojan Horse sort of way, by some of the Nazi immigrants.

Poppa said the CIA was tight with many Aryan occult organizations, just as the FBI continued to collaborate in secret with a number of Mafia organizations still operating in the US. He said the CIA had a vested interest in ensuring that these secretive, dangerous cults continue to operate, unimpeded, and this was why other federal agencies enacted Clean Sweep. Poppa said that as they attempted to do damage control, they were having to work against the CIA in the process.[4]

The Mansion

In 1985, after I was flown back to Atlanta from Meadowlark, Andreia and some of my cult-conditioned alter-states continued to attend the

Aryan meetings in the Cobb County area. Many of the meetings were held in warehouses; some were held in old houses in and near Kennesaw. Those houses were owned by cult members who clustered in several neighborhoods. Some of the houses were connected by hidden underground tunnel systems that they used to store contraband and children who were bought and sold on the lucrative black market.[5]

On numerous occasions, I was also taken to an elaborate underground installation that was probably a former SAM missile site.[6] A large brick house had been built atop the site.

When I was taken there, the mansion's exterior walls were beige-colored brick. Sometimes men stood in black uniforms on the roof, holding rifles. Behind the mansion, I sometimes saw men dressed in similar garb, practicing martial arts.[7]

After entering through the front door, I saw at least one large chandelier hanging from the high ceiling in the open living area to the right that could also be used as a ball room. Walking through the house towards the rear, several enclosed rooms were to my left.

A hidden entrance was in a wall between two of those rooms. When it slid open, I saw a wide concrete ramp that sloped down to the first sub-level of a complex of concrete walled rooms and tunnels. On that first sub-level was a large nursery room in which young children, especially babies in cribs, were taken care of by rotating shifts of female Aryan cult members.[8]

I was told that some of these women's children were sold to childless couples through cooperative adoption agencies. I knew from previous experience that these children were birthed by cult mothers away from hospitals, so the babies had no birth records. Many of the women who birthed and tended the children were known in the Aryan network as "breeders."[9]

Another underground, concrete walled room housed expensive electronic equipment that accessed what was identified to me as the "Brandon" computer system.[10] J.C. and his father-in-law, B.H., told me that the computer system held pertinent information on every government programmed slave in the US–including the names and training of all their documented alter-states and how each one could be triggered out. They taught several of my alter-states how to use the system; based on what I saw, what they told me seemed to be correct. They said the reason the information would never be found in the CIA's files, was because it was stored on at least one of NASA's computer systems.[11]

The alter-states that were trained to input data into that system were amazed at how much information they found on it about people they knew. The Aryan leaders didn't know that Andreia was also accessing the information and funneling some of it back to ASA.

B.H. and J.C. met frequently at the mansion with a thin man who was both a Satanist and a civil war buff. B.H. and the thin man seemed to have a surprisingly loving and sexually intimate relationship. In some of the mansion's basement rooms, B.H. happily videotaped humorous pornography that was just as professional as Great Britain's Benny Hill TV shows. One of my alter-states personally assisted B.H. in the production of some of that pornography.

In that mansion, B.H. used an innovative form of electrical torture to create a new child alter-state in me that he named "Leah." That part became his personally owned slave alter-state.

In my last years in the Aryan cult network, B.H. seemed to convince himself and just about everyone else that I was, by choice, his cult wife. Several of my child alter-states liked him because he was nice to them at times. They were very upset to learn from other parts, after I broke away, that B.H. also had a cruel side to his seemingly split personality.

William

In 1985, J.C. introduced a new cult member, William, to us. Although he wasn't tall, William's shoulders and neck were strong, and his posture was ramrod-straight. J.C. explained that William had retired from the Army as a Sergeant Major after thirty years of service, and was now seeking J.C.'s personal protection.[12]

J.C. enforced strict rules about cult membership: each new member had to perform illegal, distasteful acts to prove his or her loyalty. They didn't know that J.C. would use secretly videotaped films of their initiations to blackmail them into ongoing compliance and silence about the cult's numerous illegal activities.

Several of my cult alter-states watched as William performed the demoralizing tasks in a stone-faced way. Unlike my father and J.C., William never fully relaxed at the cult meetings. My cult-loyal alter-states didn't know about my trip to Meadowlark, and worried that William might betray J.C. They didn't know that Andreia, a part they weren't aware of, already had.

William soon gained J.C.'s permission to drive me to the Cobb County meetings, and then back home to the east side of Atlanta. Some of my cult alter-states noticed that when William drove them home, his face screwed up with disgust and anger as if he needed a long, hot bath. Those alter-states were confused because they were accustomed to being in the presence of criminals who were noticeably relaxed and happy after performing illicit acts.

ASA

My cult alter-states didn't know that William was triggering Andreia out and driving her to covert ASA meetings that he officiated. At those meetings, the other ASA volunteers called him "Bill."

Andreia was amazed by the volunteers' selflessness. They seemed sincere when they stated that they were willing to give their lives, if necessary, to bring down the local Aryan cult network from within, brick by brick. Their #1 motto was "God and Country." A recent fundamentalist Christian convert, Bill believed if he served God and Jesus, he would be protected from the cult's evil.

The unselfishness and caring of the ASA volunteers became the human antivenom to the sociopathic poison I'd been immersed in, for nearly all of my life. They became my lifeline to sanity and morality, ushering me into a new state of grace.[13]

Coercion

Although I didn't remember J.C. or the Aryan cult network when I was home, I often thought about divorcing Albert and starting a new life with Emily. Twice, I secretly met with a local female attorney to discuss filing for a divorce. Each time, Albert found out and talked me out of it. Based on what I'd told her about Albert's abusiveness, the attorney was unhappy that I kept backing off and suggested I seek professional help. I never talked to her again.

At some of the Aryan cult meetings, J.C. and Albert repeatedly threatened some of my alter-states that if they should ever try to break and run, taking Emily with them, Albert and J.C. would use cult funds to ensure that Albert would gain full custody of Emily. The alter-states believed their threats and decided to stay and protect Emily within the system as much as they could, since they were convinced they'd never be able to take her away.

At home, Albert used another tactic to keep me controlled. He said if I ever tried to divorce him, he'd move to another part of the country and change his name, so that I'd never get a penny of child support from him. Because I didn't earn much as an insurance clerk, I believed I couldn't afford to raise our daughter on my own. In every way, I felt hopelessly trapped.

Notes

1. Although the ASA was officially disbanded after the end of the Vietnam war, some of its members may have continued covert operations, identifying each other as "ASA".
2. In July, 1992 I was at a local library, scanning the *1990 Encyclopedia of World Crime, Vol. III* for verifications of the names of several Mafia figures I'd remembered. In it, I found a section about a violent, subversive Aryan organization I'd already remembered: The Order. I also found verifications of what I'd recalled hearing at Aryan planning meetings. Best of all, it verified the existence of the federal government's Clean Sweep operation:

   > **Order, The**, prom. 1983-88, US consp.-secret crim. soc. Fifteen white supremacists were indicted in Fort Smith, Ark., and Denver, Colo., in late April 1987 as the US government moved to eradicate America's racist movement. A lengthy investigation named "Clean Sweep" linked a group of neo-Nazis called The Order to racially-motivated killings and robberies dating back to 1984, and resulted in arrests in five states.

   Two of The Order's leaders were arrested. They had planned to "murder blacks and Jews, poison city water supplies, carry out terrorist actions to overthrow the US government, and bomb public utilities." (pg. 2376)
3. In 1994, a consultant told me that a new video had come out about the retired general. When I reviewed it, I learned that Poppa had been one of the first Army officers to enter a Nazi concentration camp in WWII. The camera panned a handwritten letter that he'd sent to his mother, expressing strong hatred towards Nazis. In the summer of 2002, I researched ASA, ISA, and Poppa (using his real name) on the Internet. I still didn't want to believe that the Meadowlark memories were true. I was astounded to find websites and articles on the Internet that directly connected him to *both* Army intelligence agencies!

   I found another verification on the Internet in early 2002. When I used the search terms "Meadowlark" and "Air Force," the Google search engine indicated the existence of "about 1490" website listings that included both. After ten years of clinging to denial, I finally accepted that the Meadowlark interrogation memory was valid.

4. If what Poppa told me was true, then this effort may have hit a brick wall when George W. Bush, the son of a former CIA director, was elected president-especially since many of his father's close associates had recycled themselves as George W's advisors.

5. Many ritual abuse survivors have reported that members of some criminal cults and black-marketing networks prefer to cluster in select neighborhoods. Often, when one cult owner has to sell a home, another member of the group will quickly buy it. This may be a reason why, when some ritual abusers are publicly accused of hurting children, their neighbors-in surprising unison-insist that the accused is innocent.

6. In the December, 2001 edition of *GQ,* I found a diagram of a former underground missile site with a house built atop it. The diagram of the underground rooms and tunnels was *identical* to the layout of the tunnel system I'd remembered beneath the mansion. Because the government-contracted Lockheed and Martin-Marietta plants were close by, logic can conclude that a SAM missile site might have been constructed there to protect them. And true or not, a consultant once told me that the US Department of Defense sold some of its defunct missile sites to members of the nationwide Aryan network.

7. In 2003, while researching a former CIA handler named Mitchell Werbell III, I found information that may explain the martial arts and black uniforms. Werbell owned and operated COBRAY-SIONICS Training Center, a spook counter-terrorism training facility in Powder Springs, Georgia. It seems that black uniforms and martial arts training were a part of their operations (Lau 1). I also learned that Blackhawk helicopters were used by some of these operatives-perhaps the same helicopters I'd watched land on the roof of the mansion (American Ballistics).

8. Although this may seem ludicrous, other survivors of that Aryan network have also spoken of the underground nursery and tunnel systems. Some of them had never repressed their memories.

   Because this Aryan network is a tightly closed system, with many of its members fearing death to themselves or loved ones if they leave or tell, few outsiders (until now) have been aware of its existence. I want to emphasize that I am not opposed to the rights of Aryans to believe as they choose. What I do oppose is the cowardly torture, sexual abuse, black-marketing, prostitution, brainwashing, forced porn participation, and murder of babies, children, and adult slaves. I would be willing to bet that some members of these Aryan organizations are also opposed to these ongoing crimes. True pride is strong in itself; it doesn't need to prop itself up on the shoulders of slaves.

9. Some breeders are brainwashed to believe that bearing children in honor of Hitler is the highest possible honor. Most of them don't realize they are actually slave-prostitutes.

10. In 1996, I used NASA's ArchiePlex Internet search engine to find information that might verify certain memories. During that search, I ran across the word "Brandon." Nearly every reference concerning that word was about Brandon University, including information about its Computer Services and its Department of Math and Computer Science. What an odd coincidence!

11. According to Linda Hunt's *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990*, NASA was basically created by a group of Nazi immigrants who had been brought into the US by the Army and CIA, their records whitewashed in the process. Some were proven war criminals. Although I am certain that most of NASA's current activities are legitimate, it is quite possible that some of its Nazi founders and their associates could have worked all along as double agents, using its facilities and equipment-as I believe was also done within the CIA-to further the Reich's heady goal of eventual world domination (A.K.A. the New World Order).

12. According to J.C., William's cover story was that he had gotten into serious trouble with an Aryan group in Kentucky, and needed J.C.'s protection from them. In return, William offered to do whatever J.C. wanted of him.

13. The reason I mention these individuals now, is that their cover was compromised in the mid 1990s when a fake "good guy" named Mark Phillips gained this information and everything else I'd compiled. Later, he admitted that he gave it all to CIA officers working in Atlanta. Since then, I've been given the go-ahead by ASA operatives to share this part of my and Bill's story, with the understanding that doing so will no longer put their people at risk.

Freedom

Baptist Church

Before my unexpected trip to Meadowlark, several young people from Hebron Baptist, an old one-story, white wooden church in the tiny town of Dacula, had started to visit our rural neighborhood as part of their church's outreach program. After some initial reluctance, I gave Emily permission to ride with them in the church bus each Sunday.

After talking to the young driver and his girlfriend for several more months, I decided to go to Hebron, too. I hadn't attended a church on a regular basis since I'd left the Local Church. This was, in part, because Albert had great difficulty staying in any church for long.

Although he'd taken us to numerous Charismatic and Pentecostal church meetings in the Atlanta area, he'd eventually insisted that I support him in setting up a Charismatic church in our home in Lawrenceville, with him as pastor. I'd refused, because I believed he was unstable and dishonest. I wasn't willing to support his living a lie before God. He never forgave me for that.

Hebron became an important source of healing for my wounded, shattered soul. Its black-haired, dark eyed, energetic pastor, Larry Wynn, seemed determined that the congregation would reach out to all neighbors and newcomers, to share the love of Christ with them.

I was surprised to learn that his wife, Ethel, had been in my high school class in Snellville. Because I had liked her when I first knew her, and because Larry seemed sincere, I chose to risk trusting them. Every time I went to Hebron, members hugged me, talked to me, and made me feel welcome. Their caring and joy seemed genuine, unlike the "love bombing" I'd previously experienced in religious cults. I joined Hebron and was soon baptized in a tank of water behind the pulpit. I'd finally found a place where I could belong.

Soon, I was going to church three times a week. Albert angrily accused me of being a hypocrite. He claimed that all Baptists were fakes because they weren't filled with the Holy Spirit and didn't speak in tongues. Although he never set foot inside the church, he constantly criticized its members and said they were just pretending to care about me.

As I spent time with happily married couples from the church, I realized I was stuck in a stagnant, decaying relationship with Albert. Although I'd tried hard, I didn't love him and I knew he didn't love me. Since I didn't believe in divorce, I resigned myself to an empty marriage. The love of the people at the church, and from God himself, would have to suffice.

The insane pace of my life continued. I was transported to Aryan cult meetings at night and on weekends. I was sometimes taken from the cult meetings to Dobbins Air Force Base and from there for ops. I still worked at my day job. I went to nighttime exercise classes several times a week, and then walked around the local high school's track. I did all the chores at home, including cooking, cleaning, laundry, and mowing the lawn. I took care of Emily. And now, I went to church three times a week to try to get my life right with God.

Unfortunately, several of my male spook handlers took advantage of my naïve devotion to God. They triggered out gullible alter-states while claiming to be angels sent by God with special messages for me. Because I'd recently read evangelist Billy Graham's book, *Angels: God's Secret Agents*, I–in those alter-states–believed the men. The alter-states didn't know they were being manipulated by humans who were far from holy.

In church, Pastor Wynn taught that God didn't need anyone else to translate for Him. He said if we remained prayerful and open to obeying God, He would speak directly to our hearts. His words helped me to become more skeptical towards people who came to me, claiming that God had given them a revelation or a special message for me. I decided if God didn't tell me something first, then self-proclaimed "messengers" were either delusional, or were lying to manipulate me.

Something else happened at Hebron that drastically changed the direction of my life. On most Sundays, especially during the evening services, Pastor Wynn invited members to kneel at the front altar to pray. For several months, I felt a strong pull to the altar. Each time I knelt, I felt deep pain and couldn't stop crying. If I remained at my pew, I still felt an urgency to get on my knees, to ask God to please change me. I felt as if the true Holy Spirit was shining a spotlight in places inside that I couldn't see.

For many years, I'd felt a great blackness inside. Although I didn't know what it meant, I now think it represented the amnesic barrier between my conscious self and hidden alter-states. I had also sensed for a long time that something evil was in my soul, but I hadn't known what it was. I didn't dare tell other people about it—I was afraid they'd reject me if they really knew me. Still, I could be honest about it with God.

One Sunday morning at the altar, I felt a message form in my mind. Maybe an alter-state was talking to me. Maybe the words were from a hypnotically implanted suggestion. Regardless, it was what I needed to hear: "If you truly love God, if you really are willing to give Him your life unto death, then you will have to be just as willing to give Him your openness to the greatest pain you'll ever experience."

I sensed if I said yes, He would apply his Holy Spirit to my life, using it as a purging fire to burn away everything that was evil and corrupt. I sensed that the holy fire would be the source of the pain.

I wanted to be cleansed inside. I wanted to be pure for God. I didn't want to be a hypocrite anymore, hiding the secret darkness from other Christians. I was tired of living a lie, pretending to love people when I felt no warmth inside. I was tired of smiling when no joy was in my heart. I wanted to be what I believed God had given me the potential to be.

That day, I surrendered to God. I opened my arms and my heart. Although I didn't know how the purging would come, I decided not to struggle when it did. Since then, I've watched God keep His end of the bargain by enacting a strange sequence of events that I never would have dreamt possible.

Albert's Affair

One hot Saturday at home, I opened our doors and windows to let a breeze blow through. As I washed dishes in the kitchen sink, a weak voice called to me from beyond the doorway to our carport. I turned to see a thin, brown-eyed, middle-aged, sweaty woman standing outside the screen door, asking if I would give her a glass of water.

As Geena sat on our green living room sofa, gulping the ice-cold water, she said she'd hitched a ride to Lawrenceville to find shelter with some old friends, only to discover that they'd moved away, leaving no forwarding address. She said her current husband, an avowed white supremacist who worked for an Atlanta television station, had recently beaten her so badly, she'd ended up in the hospital. She said she couldn't go back to him.

I told her to wait in the living room, and discussed her story with Albert, away from her hearing. We concurred that God must have sent her to us, so we could minister to her. I told Geena she could live with us temporarily, paying us back by helping with light cleaning and weekday meal preparations.

In record time, Geena and Albert were lovers.[1] Two neighbors saw them kissing on different days in Albert's car at nearby shopping center parking lots. The neighbors later admitted they'd been afraid to tell me, because they'd believed that I didn't want to hear the truth. They were right.

Geena was significantly older than Albert, and claimed to have cancerous tumors all over her body. She'd already been married five times. Because I couldn't imagine that Albert would ever choose her over me, I didn't believe she was a threat to our marriage. And yet, as I continued to block out indications of their affair, my subconscious wouldn't leave me alone.

I had unnerving nightmares of walking through the doorway of an old house with wooden walls. As I entered an empty room, I heard rats scurry inside the wall to my immediate right. By the time I walked into that room and looked at the partially exposed wall, the rats had gone into hiding again. Each time I awoke, my heart pounded and I felt great dread.

Several weeks later, Albert took Geena to a large indoor flea market–one of their favorite weekend haunts – on my birthday while I did the weekly chores. That afternoon, after they returned home, Albert gave me my birthday present: fingernail clippers with a daisy painted on top. Then Geena showed me what he'd bought her: an "engagement ring." She assured me that its stone was just cubic zirconium, and said she needed it when Albert took her to country music bars at night, so other customers wouldn't "hit on" her. Seeing my anger, Albert encouraged me to hit him, saying I would feel better. I didn't.

About a month later, on a warm Saturday afternoon, I was coming home from my weekly trip to the grocery store. As I drove up a dirt road into our neighborhood, dread and pain built up intolerably inside me. Then something broke. I knew. The pain completely took over as I drove up our sloped, concrete driveway. I sat in the car for a long time, so paralyzed by the pain, I couldn't move. I couldn't even cry. When Emily came outside to check on me, I told her to go to a friend's house. I knew I'd go mad if Geena spent one more day in our home.

When Geena and Albert came home from the flea market that night, I demanded that he remove her immediately. Although he accused me of being crazy and claimed they'd done nothing wrong, I stood my ground. Geena screamed and threw objects in the living room as I hid behind my locked bedroom door. After Albert calmed her down, she packed her belongings and he drove her to a relative's house.

If I hadn't received genuine love and caring from the people at church, and if I hadn't subconsciously learned about integrity from Bill and his ASA associates, I might have backed down and become even more of a doormat to Albert. Fortunately, their positive influence short-circuited my scriptural religious programming: "Wives, be in subjection to your own husbands." (I Pet. 3:1, RSV)

After Geena was gone, Albert pretended to be a model husband and father during the week. And yet, he refused to be with us on weekends, claiming he needed some time alone to "figure things out." Although I wanted to believe him, I occasionally wondered if he was spending the weekends with Geena. When I questioned him about it, he accused me of being crazy. Sometimes I wondered if he was right.

One day, Albert surprised me by saying he wanted to drive to Miami by himself and stay there for a week. He said he needed time alone to figure some things out about his life, and to decide what he wanted to do with it. I believed him, and hoped that spending time away from me and Emily would help him to appreciate us when he returned.

Several months later, I asked him to go to marital counseling with me. He made an appointment with one of his co-workers, who was studying to become a Presbyterian minister. We went to two sessions at the man's church. Each time, Albert insisted he was not having an affair. Both men made me feel guilty for not trusting his intentions. The counselor said I should support Albert's godly friendship with Geena.

Although I'd tried to hold on to what I sensed was true (that they were having an affair), I caved in and accepted Albert's claim that their relationship was pure. I had very little knowledge about proper boundaries and behaviors between men and women, between a married couple and a single woman, and so on. I didn't know enough about life and relationships to say, "This particular behavior between you and Geena is inappropriate and I won't stand for it." Not knowing what was proper and what wasn't, I believed I must be wrong for thinking that Albert was having a sexual relationship with her. After all, even the counselor said he was innocent. As I accepted their false reality, I strongly considered the possibility that I was insane.

Facing the Truth

After several more months, Albert asked me to go with him to look at a new car that he wanted to buy at a local dealership. The salesmen seemed to suppress their grins when Albert introduced me as his wife. That bothered me; had Geena been there earlier with him, to choose the car? (Later, he admitted that she had.)

On another weekend, I took a long walk out into the countryside and was startled to see Albert driving home from that direction. As he pulled up beside me, I confronted him and asked if he was still seeing Geena. He said yes, insisting they were just friends and that I was crazy for thinking that Albert–a "man of God"–was committing adultery. He tried to make me feel sorry for how poor and lonely she was. He said I should be grateful that he was ministering God's love to her.

I decided I'd know the truth if I saw them together. When I asked Albert to invite Geena to our house for Thanksgiving dinner, he seemed surprised and elated. That holiday afternoon, their body language may as well have spelled "lovers" in flashing neon lights.

Several days later, on Albert's birthday, I confronted him and gave him until the following New Years Day, 1997, to agree to sell our house and split the net profit. Because I had no savings, I'd need the money to pay rent for an apartment. Instead of showing remorse, Albert screamed that I was ruining his birthday. I refused to back down.

When he realized that I meant what I said, he became openly cruel and said things I never would have believed he was capable of. I went into emotional shock and feared for my life.

His dark side emerging, he made all kinds of threats, even against my life. He still insisted I was crazy and that I was imagining he and Geena were having sex. He accused me of sinning against God by planning to divorce him. I struggled with that last accusation, because I wanted to please God by doing what was right. He added that if I divorced him and married another man, I would commit adultery–which I believed was a major sin.

After much soul-searching, I decided I'd rather sin against God than live one more year with Albert. If I divorced him, at least I'd still have God's love. Another concern was that if he and Geena were having sex, Albert could pass a disease on to me. Pastor Wynn told me that regardless of whether or not Albert was committing adultery, God loved me so much, He wouldn't want me to continue to suffer in an abusive relationship. I hired a new lawyer and filed for divorce.

Albert's rage increased when I still wouldn't back down. Whenever he was in the house, I locked myself in our spare room. Although he wasn't big, he had terrorized me for years with his muscular arms and fists, screaming and spitting in my face, pushing my back against walls for long periods of time while Emily watched, helplessly.[2]

Now, he constantly made threats and accusations. I spent innumerable hours on my knees in the small carpeted room, shaking, crying, and begging God for protection, sometimes reading the Bible aloud.

One day, as Albert screamed outside the plain wooden door, I read in the Bible that Jesus had said we should treat our enemies with kindness. Although the idea seemed irrational, I decided to give it a try. During the rest of our time together, I was the nicest wife Albert could ever want. I was pleasantly surprised when he stopped threatening me.

Not Crazy

After we'd sold the house, Albert started making new threats. He said he'd use Geena's gun to shoot anyone who tried to help me take any appliances from the house that he wanted for himself. Because I was tired and simply wanted my freedom, I let him have whatever he wanted.

My divorce attorney was unhappy that I insisted on splitting the profit with Albert. I even agreed to accept the legally required minimum in child support payments from Albert, although the judge soon decided that Albert should pay more. After Albert bought a small mobile home and had it placed in a trailer park near Lawrenceville, I prepared to move with Emily into a rented duplex on the other side of town.

While sorting through some of the personal belongings that Albert had left in our small attic, I found a set of Polaroid pictures of him and Geena standing on a Miami beach, embracing each other. Staring at the photos, I realized I'd been right all along–they *were* having an affair!

Emily celebrated when I showed her the incriminating pictures. She said she'd always known they were having an affair, and had been terribly frustrated and angry when I wouldn't believe her.

Going It Alone

When our divorce was finalized in the spring of 1997, I hated the word "divorcee" and didn't want a relationship with any man. I just wanted to be left alone with Emily and my relationship with God. My biggest treat each week was to sit on the carpeted living room floor of our duplex on Friday nights, eating canned oysters and cheddar cheese on crackers while listening to my favorite Christian radio programs. For the first time in thirteen years, I didn't have to worry about Albert yelling that I was contaminated by battery acid on the carpet.

I worried about running into Albert and Geena when I went to town on errands. Because I couldn't bear the pain of seeing them together, I wanted to move away from Lawrenceville. I didn't consider what another move would do to Emily, who had already lost contact with her friends from our former neighborhood. Although I took her to visit and spend the night with them as often I could, it just wasn't the same.

New Ministry

One Saturday morning at Hebron, I attended a women's workshop on intercessory prayer. Our petite, middle-aged, red-haired presenter, Jessie, said that she and her husband, Grant, had created an international intercessory prayer network.

After the workshop, I couldn't get Jessie out of my mind. Because I still believed I had the Holy Spirit's gift of intercessory prayer, I decided their ministry was right for me. After several months of visits and phone conversations, Jessie suggested I break my lease and move near their home in Conyers, in order to do voluntary secretarial work for their ministry. She said I could work in their home on Saturdays and on weeknights, as needed. She said God would financially bless me for what I would do for their ministry.

In July, Emily and I moved to the lovely old town of Conyers. It had quaint shops and seemed safe enough for me to walk my dog at night in the dark. I rented a duplex that stank. Dark and dirty, it was the best I could afford.

I first met Grant when I attended a weekend prayer retreat near Atlanta. I was impressed when he told us that for the past eight years, he'd worked for Billy Graham's extensive evangelistic organization. Grant's soft voice and startling blue eyes easily put me into a hypnotic trance-state. At the retreat, Grant and Jessie encouraged some of the female participants to sit on his lap and imagine him to be their father, so they could "emotionally heal" from negative relationships with their real fathers. Although I was uncomfortable and refused to do it, the other women's trust in Grant influenced me to also trust him.

On the last day of the retreat, Grant challenged us to go for a walk in the woods to see if God would speak to us, individually. I came back, convinced that God had given me a personal message. Others claimed to have had similar experiences.

I was impressed with how well-behaved Jessie and Grant's teenaged children were. I told Jessie I wanted Emily to spend as much time with them as possible, because I wanted my daughter to have the positive influence of a stable family with two godly parents. I didn't understand that I was infinitely more important to her than a houseful of strangers. I also didn't comprehend how grief-stricken she was since Albert had stopped calling her, and had told her he didn't want her to visit him anymore.

Falling Apart

At Jessie's suggestion, Emily and I transferred our church memberships to a large Baptist church in nearby Lithonia. I did what I could to keep Emily active in the new church, believing her youth leaders would provide a positive male influence. As a single mother, I was so exhausted and overwhelmed with responsibilities and worries, I didn't have the energy to open my heart to her anymore. Instead of loving her and listening to her, I became a religious, controlling disciplinarian. I spent many hours each week on my knees in my bedroom, praying desperately for God's help and guidance. She resented my fanatical Christianity and wanted her old mother back.

I also didn't understand that she'd probably developed a learning disability. She constantly brought notes home from teachers; they complained that she wasn't doing her schoolwork and spent most of her class time writing notes back and forth with other girls. When I confronted her, she said the classes bored her. Because I knew she was bright, I thought she was being lazy and rebellious. I restricted and disciplined her more, making her a prisoner in the duplex for every minor infraction.

I also punished her for my memory lapses. At least twice, she asked an alter-state for permission to spend the afternoon with a friend. Because I, as the host alter-state, wasn't conscious when she asked, I grew frantic when she didn't come home on time. Each time she arrived hours later, saying that I'd given her permission, I punished her for lying.

Although she had made good grades in the past, they now plummeted. She associated with local teenagers who were also having trouble at home. The more she fought for her independence, the more I panicked and fought to keep control over her. I didn't understand that parents aren't supposed to control and confine their adolescent children, but are to guide and encourage them to grow and become independent. When she needed consistent love and respect, I gave her harshness and control.

Notes

1. After their affair was confirmed, my mother's second husband told me he believed Geena had been "sent in" to live with us. Tight-lipped about his own covert connections, he didn't elaborate.

2. Although several alter-states have journaled that Albert sometimes hit me with his fists, I still have not recovered enough memories to be sure of this. It's possible that I'm still blocking the memories out because I don't want to remember how terrified and helpless I felt when he was enraged.

New Family

Bill

In the spring of 1997, I learned that an insurance company closer to home had an opening for an experienced Commercial rater. I applied for the position and was quickly hired.

Located near the end of an isolated road, this company's southeast regional office building was six stories tall with a flat roof. It was surrounded by acres of black-tarred pavement and perfectly manicured, green grass.

Within a week of starting my new job, I officially met Bill Sullivan for the first time.[1] He was responsible for the maintenance of the building's immense air conditioning and heating system, all the building's lights, cafeteria equipment, electrical wiring, and more.

After our first encounter, he spent an inordinate amount of time in my department on the fifth floor, standing on his tall ladder to change florescent light bulbs up in the ceiling while peering over my cubicle wall. He always whistled when he entered the area. Soon, he was leaving cryptic handwritten notes on my desk. Each one had a scripture reference. After several weeks, he asked me to go out on a date.

Because I hadn't been on a real date since I'd married Albert, I was nervous. What if Bill expected sex? I couldn't do that–I wanted to stay chaste for God! Still hesitant, I let him take me to lunch at a nearby Chinese restaurant. It soon became our regular haunt.

Pentecostal Church

After several months of dating, Bill persuaded me to stop associating with Jessie and Grant. I'd actually considered becoming an overseas Baptist missionary, perhaps–at Jessie's suggestion–in Indonesia or South Korea, where Grant sometimes addressed Dr. Cho's Baptist mega-church.

Unimpressed with my plans, Bill reminded me that my first responsibility was to Emily. Although I didn't want to let go of my escapist fantasy, I agreed not to do any more volunteer work for the couple.

Next, I agreed to attend Bill's Pentecostal church with him. They met in a small, red brick building for which he did all the maintenance—at no charge. I flashbacked constantly during their Sunday morning and evening services and felt as if I were losing my grip on reality. Bill insisted that I continue going there. Because I wanted to deepen our spiritual relationship, I relented, feeling miserable.

Religious Control

Bill suspected that Emily was taking street drugs. Although I refused to believe him, I admitted I was worried about her, too. He convinced me that if I married him, she'd have a more stable and secure environment.

During the year we dated, I recognized that Bill was a control addict. He tried hard to change both Emily and me. Because she and I both preferred androgynous clothes, Bill bought stylish, uncomfortably feminine garments for us and insisted that we wear them. Then, he paid for both of us to change our hairstyles. After the makeovers, I saw a total stranger in the mirror and felt fake.

Because he wanted to please God, Bill insisted that we abstain from sexual intimacy until marriage. Given my history, this was difficult. When I visited Bill at his house, he always insisted that we pray on our knees and read our Bibles together to stay out of trouble.

Although I believe that Bill meant well, both Emily and I rankled under his control. Nonetheless, I chose to marry him. I sensed that he was a good and loving person underneath the religiosity. I also believed that his influence as a stepfather was what Emily needed, to heal from the loss of her relationship with Albert. I didn't know that no man could replace what her father had been in her life.

Married

During the spring of 1988, I was under a great deal of stress. My finances were very tight, especially when Albert refused to pay child support. Bill offered to pay me if I'd help him to do odd jobs at people's houses at night and on weekends. I didn't know that these odd jobs were often a cover for my going with him to Aryan and ASA meetings.

When Albert learned that I was engaged, he resumed weekend visitations with Emily. Because Geena was now living with Albert, who still claimed that their relationship was nonsexual, I didn't want to let Emily spend the night with them. And yet, because I believed that she needed to be with her daddy, I let her go.

One Sunday afternoon after Emily had visited with Albert and Geena, they drove her to our church's parking lot. Bill and I sat in his car, waiting. When Albert got out of his car, Bill walked towards him to shake hands. Not saying a word, Albert stalked back to his car, got in, and drove away in a hurry. Although I couldn't understand his behavior then, I now believe that he'd recognized Bill from the Aryan meetings.

That evening, Albert called me three times, threatening to kill Bill. Although a local judge issued a restraining order at my request, I still feared that Albert was so irrational, he might follow through. Between that worry and the stress of arranging my wedding to Bill, I was mentally and physically exhausted.

On July 1, the day before the wedding, Emily disobeyed me about something insignificant and then locked her bedroom door. An infuriated male alter-state emerged and angrily banged on her wooden door, yelling at her to open it. When she refused, the alter-state used a wire hangar to unlock it. When he saw her trying to climb out a window, he became more enraged and ran at her. She shrieked and couldn't get out quickly enough.

I was completely amnesic as that part hit her on her back again and again with the wire hangar. When I came to, I was horrified at what I'd done and feared that I'd go to jail! Because I couldn't remember why I'd beaten her, I used a false rationalization–insisting that I wouldn't have "had" to hit her if she hadn't disobeyed me.

The next day at church, Bill and I married. I'd asked Dad to give me away to Bill and he seemed happy to oblige. I didn't know how much power I was still giving him. I also didn't know that a large percentage of the witnesses sitting on the church pews were handlers, Aryan cult members, or ASA personnel.

Although I was mentally unaware that I was surrounded by enemies and spooks, I felt unsafe and dissociated and became a curly-haired, mechanical Barbie doll. In our wedding pictures, my face was either frozen or I wore a pasted-on smile. The only time I felt any warmth was when Bill and I faced each other at the altar. He cried, and tears filled my eyes as he silently mouthed, “I love you.”

While I posed as the glowing bride, Emily–one of my bridesmaids–smarted under her pretty blue dress, her back covered with fiery red welts. She stayed with Dad and his wife during our week-long honeymoon. Twice in one week, I seriously hurt her and betrayed her trust in me . . . as Bill and I had fun traveling across the Southeast, Dad was free to do whatever he wished to her.

Blended Family

After the honeymoon, we moved into Bill’s large house in a new subdivision in the small, rural, unincorporated town of Centerville–several miles south of Snellville. His two-story house was several years old. I felt like the lady of the manor, and had difficulty accepting that God was now blessing me so lavishly!

His combination living-dining room had a cathedral ceiling. I was overwhelmed by all the open space, after having lived in a small, dark, smelly duplex for a year. Sunlight shone through the large house’s many windows. In addition to the living-dining room, the upstairs contained three bedrooms, two full baths, a small kitchen, and a large wooden back deck. Downstairs were a fourth bedroom, a half bath, a recreation room, and a huge, high-ceilinged double garage. All through the house, the white walls were spotless; Bill still hadn’t hung a single picture.

I chuckled when I noticed that he hadn’t yet used his dishwashing machine. Was he in for a change, living with us! I often teased Emily about being a walking tornado because she constantly left dirty clothes and dishes in her wake.

Learning to Communicate

Bill and I continued to work at the same insurance company. Because he had to be there at 6 AM, he usually left before dawn in his blue pickup truck. I started work at eight. Although we got along well there, at home, our tempers often flared. We both were accustomed to being in control, and neither of us had learned how to constructively express our hurt feelings and anger. I cried a lot and wrote him dozens of angry, barbed notes.

Sometimes, when I was icy and uncommunicative, Bill grabbed my wrist and pulled me into our bedroom. He closed the door and made me kneel with him on the carpet to ask God for help. He usually started by praying and telling God what he felt and needed. Then he waited patiently until I did the same.

Believing that God was in the room with us, I felt safer to say what I really felt. Although our prayer sessions were extremely painful, we were learning how to be honest with each other about our feelings.

Schism

Almost every day, Emily and Bill snapped at each other. The more she rebelled, the more frustrated he felt. And yet, he showed her a kindness and gentleness that I was incapable of. I felt ashamed when I realized he was a better mother to her than I was. Instead of constantly restricting and punishing her, he tried to negotiate her privileges. I hated myself and wondered if they would be better off without me.

As hard as Bill tried to work things out with her, however, their disagreements escalated in intensity. Tired of all the stress, slammed doors, tears and barbed words hurled back and forth, and Emily's insistence that she'd be happier with her dad, I decided she should live with Albert for a while–so she'd appreciate what she had with us. Albert agreed to the temporary arrangement when I promised that he wouldn't have to pay child support.

After Emily moved into Albert's trailer in November, she refused to talk to me. I was devastated. Several times each week, Albert called me at work to tell me how well she was doing at home and at school. Although I felt sad that I'd failed as her parent, I was glad that she'd finally found some happiness and stability.

Arrest

In December, the sky fell. Albert called me at work to tell me that Emily had just been arrested at school with Geena's gun in her possession, the safety off. He said Emily had planned to shoot another girl who–fearing Emily's rage–had chosen to stay home that day.

Emily later told me that after shooting the girl, she knew she was "supposed to" walk into the school cafeteria, climb up on a table, and "blow her brains out all over everybody."[2] I'm deeply grateful that the principal was able to talk her into giving him the gun without anyone being hurt.

On the day Emily appeared in Juvenile Court, Bill and I sat as close as we could to the judge's bench. Although Albert had sheepishly admitted to me that Emily had recently become an Aryan skinhead, I was unprepared for her drastic change in appearance.

She wore a dirty denim jacket with the words, "Sex Pistols," hand written on it in thick, black magic marker. A large Nazi swastika was visible from the far end of the courtroom. She'd shaved her head in a Chelsea, a style that she later explained was fashionable for Nazi skinhead girls. Only her dyed bangs and a "tail" at the nape of her neck remained.

Because I didn't remember the Aryan network or its meetings or rituals, I was stunned that she'd turned into a hard-core skinhead in just one month!

Although she knew that Bill and I were present in the courtroom, Emily refused to acknowledge us. At first she seemed rigid and defiant, but when the judge gave his sentence, her face crumpled into a frightened little girl's. I wanted to hurdle the benches, run to her, and enfold her in my arms. I hurt so badly, knowing I couldn't do anything to comfort her.

Christmas was especially painful for Bill and me. The judge wouldn't allow Emily to leave the county juvenile detention center. I brought a specially embossed Bible to the center as her Christmas present. I hoped she would draw the same hope and strength from it that I did. It only angered her again. My heart broke more when she welcomed holiday visits from Albert and Geena, but not from us.

Crossroads

Emily's assigned county caseworker believed that Emily's acting-out was a symptom of hidden family problems. She wisely arranged for Emily to enter a juvenile rehabilitation program at the Crossroads of

Chattanooga facility in Tennessee. Each of its large cottages housed an individualized recovery program. Emily stayed in her adolescent cottage for over a month.

Before her discharge, she invited Albert, Geena, Bill, and me to her "family week" sessions. Although Albert declined, Bill and I attended them together. Initially there to support her, we both soon realized that we also needed professional help.

Because of what I learned about chemical addictions and dysfunctional family systems during that intensive week-long program, I recognized that our family was a mess. More important, I realized that I was almost completely disconnected from my emotions. I didn't feel fear, except for Emily's and Bill's health and safety. I felt no love, happiness, emotional warmth, or empathy. This frightened me. Why was I so emotionally frozen?

Emily's counselors gave me a challenge with a promise: if I would enter Crossroads' 28-day adult inpatient codependency therapy program, they'd recommend to the judge that Emily be placed back in our home. Unable to bear the thought of losing her again, I took a month-long leave of absence from my job and entered the program.

Letting Go

After Emily was discharged from the adolescent unit at Crossroads, she lived with us for several more years before marrying and starting a new life with her young husband. Until she moved out, our relationship stayed extremely rocky. Although Emily continued to block out what she'd endured in the past, she unwittingly acted it out in nearly every way possible.

While she was with us, I took her to a succession of therapists and hospitals, looking for a miracle for her–and for us. I didn't understand then, as I do now, that in part, I was frantically fighting to keep her alive because somewhere in my mind, she and Rose (who I didn't remember) were one. Even after Emily married and moved away, I still tried to save her from death – especially when she was suicidal.

One night, after spending the day with Emily and her young family, I was alone in a hotel room bathroom while Bill slept. As I thought about my conversations earlier that day with Emily, how she again threatened to suicide, even telling me about her plans for her funeral, I had a devastating moment of truth: by obsessively holding onto Emily and trying to save her from self destruction, I was actually feeding her suicidal tendencies and her exponential, destructive rage towards me. Over the years, I'd conditioned her to depend on me, which now kept her from being able to feel good about what she could do for herself.

Realizing this, I knew I had a choice. I could continue to lead us both down a destructive path, or I could distance myself from her and work to break our emotional dependency on each other.

When I first distanced myself from Emily, I began to experience the fullness of my suppressed grief from having lost Rose in such a sudden and brutal way. I had never experienced such pain. By working through that grief a little bit at a time–it was as much as I could survive–I was able to recognize that Rose and Emily were two totally different entities in my life.

Now, I feel a long-distance love for Emily that is wholly separate from what I will always feel for my baby girl. I smile now, as unexpected flashes of Emily's childhood come back to me. She was a sweet and beautiful child, and I am comforted with the new-found knowledge that, as broken and unstable as I was in the past, I did dearly love her and did want the best for her.

A great tragedy between us remains: now that I have the capability to truly love her for the person she is and always was, she is unwilling to trust and receive my love. (And really, can I blame her? This is her right!)[3]

Can there someday be a happy ending for us as mother and adult daughter? I don't know. And I don't know what's ahead for either one of us–no one has that kind of foresight. Every day, I find myself hoping that she will eventually encounter helpful support and a way to heal. Maybe it's already happening for her.

In the meantime, regardless of what happens to her, to Bill, or to anyone else I dearly love, whether it be life or death or anything in-between, I *must* focus on my own healing and recovery, and on doing what I believe is right for my own life.

From these painful experiences, I have extracted a powerful and life-changing truth: *the only person I have the power to save is me*.

Notes

1. Because Bill is firm about maintaining secrecy concerning his past activities for ASA, our first encounter at the insurance company remains his cover story for how

our relationship began. I respect his right to keep secrets, and he honors my right to speak out about my experiences with him.

2. Her too-calm statement that she was “supposed to” kill herself after killing the other girl sent chills through me. Now, I wonder: was it a hypnotically implanted command? If so, who had put it in her mind, and why was she commanded to self-destruct? What she said she was “supposed” to do was eerily similar to what we’ve witnessed time and time again over the last decade, in public schools throughout the US. What is happening to our young people?
3. This is perhaps one of the strongest grievances I have against the FMSF: some of its most outspoken members seem to insist that adult children do not have the right to distance themselves from childhood families that they believe are detrimental to their mental and physical health. I believe this proves those FMSF members’ true motivations. If parents truly love their adult children, they will give them all the time and space they need to find their own way in life-even if it means grieving their absence. Control addicts cannot bear to lose control of their victims, whereas truly caring parents will-despite the pain-let their loved ones go their own way without making private and public recriminations against them. The greatest gift we can give ourselves, and our children, is encouragement, to build independent lives, and to teach them how to become self-sufficient. I wish I had learned this, sooner.

Reality Check

Codependency

In the summer of 1989, after Emily was discharged, I hesitantly entered Crossroads of Chattanooga's adult codependency program. I didn't like the idea of sharing my thoughts and feelings with a group of strangers. Still, for Emily's sake, I believed I must try.

Since most people with dependent tendencies focus on others to avoid their own needs and problems, the counselors in our cottage insisted that visits, phone calls, and incoming mail be kept to a minimum. Since my handlers and family couldn't use phone calls and mail to trigger me into silence and forgetfulness, I was safe to begin to remember.

In group therapy sessions, I listened to other patients talk about why they were there. Most of them were there because they had relatives suffering from chemical addictions. Although I talked a little about Emily's arrest, I sensed that my problem was much deeper.

Each patient was asked to draw a chart of major life events from early childhood to the present. Most of the childhood side of my chart was blank. As for the events I could remember, I didn't know how old I'd been, or when they'd occurred. When I compared my chart to those of other patients, I noticed that most of them had remembered the dates of important life events. Why couldn't I?[1]

Our codependency group performed two sets of relaxation exercises in a room where we lay on our backs on the floor, listening to either a female counselor's soft voice or to a cassette recording. Each time, we were told to visualize ourselves walking along a path through a forest, then finding unexpected treasure. Each time, I had flashbacks, sat up, and looked around the room to make the flashbacks stop.

I didn't want to believe what I was remembering: that when I was a child, my father had sexually assaulted me. Deeply shaken, I told no one.

Incest

One day, as I relaxed on a lounge chair near the facility's outdoor pool, another memory unfolded: it was daytime, because sunlight streamed through a window. I, an adolescent, was alone with Dad in his bed in Snellville, Georgia. We were both naked under a white sheet. He smiled as he moved towards me. The memory was so vivid, I couldn't make it go away. Again, I told no one.

Several days later, we were taken in a van to a nearby shopping mall to see a *Batman* movie. About halfway through it, I had more flashbacks. During the drive back to the cottage, I hyperventilated and wept. What was wrong with me?

After we arrived at the cottage, an older, gentle female counselor walked with me on a path that circled it. Because we were not allowed to take medications, she held a cold, wet washcloth against my forehead as I continued to cry, uncontrollably. She and the other counselors waited patiently, careful not to suggest anything.

During the next few days, I had numerous flashbacks of Dad perpetrating sexual acts against me and two other children in our bathroom in Reiffton, Pennsylvania. I wondered, "Why now? Why hadn't I known it all along? Could I be making it up?" My assigned counselor was concerned when I told her that Dad still had easy access to young children. She insisted I go to the authorities after my discharge and tell them what I was remembering. Although I agreed to do that, I felt uncomfortable–what if Dad wasn't hurting children anymore? Wouldn't I then be hurting him?

Notifying the Authorities

After I returned to Atlanta, I balked for about a week. Then I decided to send separate certified letters, one to my stepmother at home and the other to Dad at work, asking to meet with them. In the letters, I hinted at what I'd remembered. A day or so later, my stepmother called to say that she'd made Dad leave. After receiving my letter, she'd discovered that Dad was now molesting at least two children. When they were taken for a medical examination, physical evidence was found. They met with a child psychiatrist, and the eldest child gave a videotaped statement to a detective at the DeKalb Police Department Sex Crimes division, that incriminated Dad.

Not knowing what the children had said, I provided the detective an independent, handwritten statement about what I'd remembered.[2] I hadn't yet been told what the eldest child had disclosed during the videotaped interview. After I gave my statement, the detective told me that it was nearly identical to what the child victim had stated. I broke down and wept with both relief and dismay: I was happy to hear I wasn't crazy, but dammit, this meant the memories were real! I didn't want my dad to be a child molester, and I didn't want to accept that he'd sexually abused me!

Arrest Warrant

On August 26, 1989, a criminal warrant was issued for Dad's arrest. It stated that Dad "did commit an immoral or indecent act to or in the presence of [a child] . . . with the intent to arouse or satisfy the sexual desires of either the child or himself."

He was arrested, placed in jail, and released on bail shortly thereafter.

Intimidation

As I met with an assistant D.A. to prepare to testify against Dad, he warned me that Dad was facing a maximum prison sentence of sixty years. That upset me; although I didn't want Dad to hurt more children, I still cared about him and didn't want him to be put in prison.

During the next several months, Dad became openly hostile towards me. His behavior helped me to realize he wasn't the father I'd made him to be in my mind.

He told people in his church and community that I'd gone to Crossroads because of a "drug problem." He said my therapists had implanted the memories in my mind. He said that I wanted him sexually and was therefore lying to my stepmother to influence her to divorce him–so that I could have him to myself!

He also tried to intimidate me through the mail. He sent a photo album full of pictures from my childhood. Attached to it was a plaque with the words, "Recipe for a happy marriage." Although I was pleased with the pictures, I felt nauseous as I read the plaque. He also sent a series of greeting cards with threatening messages–some coded, some overt.

He instructed one of his criminal attorneys to send me a letter, threatening to sue me for interfering with his marriage. He attempted to subpoena my Crossroads records. He even admitted hiring a female private detective to secretly investigate me and "dig up dirt" about me.

When I learned of Dad's actions, I was heartbroken. His behaviors proved that he didn't love me, and that he now believed I was his enemy. That thought especially frightened me, although I didn't know why.

I continued to have visual flashbacks of his having sexually assaulted me and other children, and decided to go back to work to get my mind off the past for a little while. Too much of an emotional wreck to go back to a full-time office job, I applied for a part-time position as cashier at a nearby McDonald's fast food restaurant.

Left-Hand Memories

When I was at home, I constantly struggled with sensory overload. Day and night, I endured many visual flashbacks and strong physical and emotional memories known as abreactions.

Most of the journals I wrote during that time were about bits and pieces of memory that emerged throughout my waking hours. They were usually visual, odorous, physical, and/or audible. Some days, I had ten or more flashbacks in succession, all of them totally disconnected from each other. Each flashback usually contained no more than a half-minute's worth of memory. Their abruptness made journaling very frustrating, because they had no "before" and no "after."[3]

As I sat on my bed and journaled some of them, they were like opened doors that led into full memories. And like the ends of threads of individual memories, if I was willing to relax, trust, and follow the threads, the rest of these particular memories came quickly.

A new problem soon developed. I was so mentally stuck in the past that I kept forgetting what month or year it now was. To remedy that, I affixed a large calendar to our kitchen wall and I marked off each day. After completing each morning's journaling, I wrote the current date on the top of the first page. Writing and seeing the current date seemed to help bring me back into the present.

I also experimented with "right hand/left hand writing." I'd learned at Crossroads that writing with my right hand accessed information stored in the left side of my brain, while writing with my left hand accessed information stored in the right half. After journaling in the morning with my right hand, I then put the pen into my left hand and gave permission to hidden parts of my mind to journal. That technique helped me to access suppressed memories, and was my first attempt at connecting with alter-states that I still didn't know I had.[4]

One day in December, after Bill had left for work, I tried to learn more of what I'd blocked out from my childhood. Sitting cross-legged on the middle of the bed, I put the pen in my left hand. Immediately, I felt something unfamiliar in my mind, as well as new body sensations. The pen seemed to move on its own:

> I . . . Mommy where . . . come in here . . . why won't you come in . . . don't you know . . . blood red bloody red . . . you bitch you bastard . . . you knew and you didn't stop and you didn't try to stop . . . He broke me He broke the red thing in me . . . You didn't come in the room . . . You stayed safe in another room . . . bloody red hands . . . bloody red . . . I hurt in my tummy I gagged and went to throw up . . . bloody bloody hands . . . dad you are a god-damned animal you broke me your prick is as big as a house . . . what you did hurt me in my tummy . . . bloody red bloody red hands . . . my peehole legs are bloody red . . . It is getting down my legs stop moving stop blood stop . . . What I want . . . I want you to stay away from me . . . I want you to love me . . . I want you to do it again . . . You felt so good in me . . . you screwed up you made a mistake now what . . . she'll catch us . . . you are my prince . . . you make me feel real special . . . just between you and me . . . let's not tell her she's just a bitch anyway . . . you deserve better . . . you deserve ME!

I remained conscious as that child part of my broken mind told me more of what I had previously been unable to remember. In succession, I vividly experienced the pain, the too-big penetration, the fear, the unwanted sexual stimulation, the anger towards Mom for not stopping Dad, the adoration towards the man who had just raped me and torn my flesh. Weeping, I put the pen in my right hand and wrote to the child part of me as I would have to an external child. I explained that what Dad had done was wrong and the child was not to blame.

I put the pen in my left hand again. Another unpleasant memory emerged in writing. Again, my body was racked by the sensations of Dad raping me.

> Mommy . . . why didn't you stop him . . . He kept eating me up . . . No one could stop him . . . he was big and strong . . . he laughed if I tried to fight him . . . he pinned my arms to the side of the bed . . . he made my legs like scissors . . . he was a robot . . . He put his prick in me it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt . . . it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt it hurt I cried Oh God how could this happen to me I've been a good girl . . . he gave me a candy cane to suck on while he washed me . . . Mom and brothers were gone shopping . . . Dad was babysitting me . . . I had a cold I felt so awful . . . How could he do it to a sick girl

Freed by my left-hand writing, these memories slammed me. Every time I wrote with my left hand, I learned more than I could bear. I screamed when my body relived another childhood rape. I slammed myself into walls as I physically relived Dad throwing me against walls in the past. On my back on the floor, I bucked as I physically relived Dad humping my little body.

Trying to make me feel better, Bill teased that I should carry a "snot bucket" around the house because I cried so much. Trying to find humor in my pain, I told him that I should buy stock in the Kleenex tissue corporation. Making jokes took the edge off a bit, but it didn't make the pain and horror go away. More and more, I feared what else lurked in my unconscious mind.

Exhausted at night, I laid my head on my husband's legs as I watched TV with him. When I closed my eyes, I saw Dad's penis coming at my face again. I wept.

West Paces Ferry Hospital

After Dad's arrest, my stepmother learned about a support group for family members of sexual offenders that met once a week at West Paces

Ferry Hospital, northwest of Atlanta. When we went to a meeting we heard hard, cold facts about criminal mentality that made me realize that Dad would probably do whatever he could, to avoid prison. Although I had still hoped that he'd choose to tell the truth for the children's sake, I had to consider that he might never do that.

I worried more and more about Dad's future. Because he still ran for miles every day, I feared he wouldn't survive being in a locked facility. I didn't want to hurt him. And yet, if he'd recently assaulted children, he was dangerous. I knew if I testified against him, I'd never have a chance of receiving real love from him. I asked God to give me the strength to testify, and to give me the love that my earthly father never would.

We didn't know that Dad's court-appointed psychiatrist was actively working to have him evaluated on an in-patient basis as part of the hospital's Sexual Behavior Treatment Program. Had he gone into that program, the rest of this story *might* have had a better ending–but it doesn't. His AT&T medical insurance plan refused to pay for his treatment there.

Dr. Adams

On November 17, 1989, Dad received an indictment from a 23-member DeKalb County Grand Jury for three counts of child molestation. To prepare for his defense, he met privately with Dr. Henry Adams, a professor of psychology at the University of Georgia in Athens. In a subsequent civil deposition, Dad described Adams as "the leading authority on sexual abuse in children." Adams (deceased) had previously testified for the defense in the infamous "Little Rascals" ritual abuse trial.

Because Dad lied throughout his deposition, I do not know how many of his statements about his conversations with Adams were valid. Dad claimed that Adams said Crossroads was a sexual encounter clinic. I believe Dad was telling the truth about that, because before he'd met with Adams, he hadn't used that particular argument:

> [Adams] claims that . . . there are a number of people, mainly fundamentalist ministers, who are setting up a number of bogus psychological clinics all over the country. They call them sexual encounter clinics. Almost everybody that goes into these clinics comes out sexually abused, across the board . . . he said this is the kind of thing that's happening all over the

> country right now. It's called scapegoating, where you dump all of your problems, whatever they are, on the person who raised you, as sexual abuse. (Deposition 76–77)

Suicide Attempt

Although Dad eventually enlisted Dr. Adams to testify for his defense in the upcoming trial, he became suicidal immediately after one of his initial meetings with the doctor. Dad later told his estranged wife that first, he visualized himself driving into a concrete bridge support. Then he "saw" himself climbing to the top of a nearby mountain and throwing himself off the side. Although he successfully fought off the first two urges, he then checked into a hotel near home, cut both of his wrists deeply with a razor blade, then went to their house to enlist her help. Seeing the blood, she called a neighbor who was a nurse. That woman in turn called the police.

One of the responding officers wrote: "He stated that he was very depressed because he is facing four counts of child abuse, and felt that suicide was the only way out of it."

According to that officer's memorandum, when he tried to talk Dad into seeking professional help, Dad said, "You don't know how bad it is, the prosecutor is . . . out to get me; I'm probably facing the rest of my life in prison; [he] is half prosecutor and half crusader."

After being taken to a medical facility, Dad was transferred to a psychiatric hospital where he stayed for several weeks. While being treated for depression and suicidal ideations, he developed a plan of action designed to help him feel more in control of his future.

Because I was quite shaken by Dad's drastic action, the assistant district attorney told me that one of the reasons Dad might have cut his wrists was to influence me not to testify against him (if so, it nearly worked). He reminded me that the welfare of the child victims, not Dad's mental state, should be my primary concern. I feel grateful that the assistant DA believed me and the children. His swift and determined action against Dad probably saved them and other children from being sexually assaulted, and worse.

When Dad was released from the hospital, he traveled to a conference at Disney World in Orlando, Florida. After that, he traveled to Pennsylvania to spend several days with his childhood family.

At Dad's request, the judge handling the criminal case moved the grand jury hearing forward by several months, making the older child's videotaped testimony inadmissible in court. I was told that the child would have to testify in Dad's presence.

As much as I loved Dad and wanted the best for him, I didn't believe I had any other choice than to testify against him. Clearly, he was still capable of sexually assaulting little children. I wanted to be a solid witness and not fall apart in court. I didn't dare tell anyone that I constantly visualized myself talking like a little girl on the witness stand.

I knew I wasn't ready to go through with it. Terrified and ashamed, I didn't know who to tell. When I prayed for additional strength, none came.

Notes

1. Carla Emery explained why amnesia is used to keep a "hypno-robot" from remembering and breaking free:

   > The hypnotic suggestion that makes a subject most likely to carry out orders contrary to their self-interest is amnesia. The most important element in a case of abusive hypnosis is amnesia. The biggest roadblock to uncovering a crime of criminal hypnosis is amnesia. Amnesia is, therefore, the central problem of a survivor of abusive hypnosis. It is central to the operator's setup, central to the years of secret life hidden under the consciously known one, central to the struggle to escape and heal. (pg. 227)

2. Before the oldest child disclosed that child's negative experiences with Dad, the adults who carefully questioned the child did not indicate what I'd said about my own memories. The child freely and willingly disclosed to them-in graphic detail-without being coached.

3. "Psychogenic amnesias are quite different [from organic amnesia] in their origin, as the causes are psychological and tend to involve the repression of disturbing memories which are unacceptable to the patient at some deep subconscious level. Psychogenic amnesias can be disorienting and disruptive to the patient, but they are rarely completely disabling, and as there is no actual brain damage they are reversible and in most cases will eventually disappear." (Groome, et al., pp. 137–138)

4. One of the therapeutic memory recovery techniques that FMSF spokespersons occasionally ridicule and try to discredit is left-hand writing. I believe they attack its credibility because they don't want the public to know how well it works!

#1

I feel so alone
I'm stuck in my
room and noone
will come in I'm
all by myself
I'm a prisoner
I want to get
out but I dont
know how I dont
know where to
get out I'm up
at the ceiling
all the windows
are closed How
Where do I go I
want to come
I need somebody

to tell me how
to get out I
dont need to
eat or drink
I just float and
dream I am dead
and its is nice
nobody bothers me
I can just float
and float this
is nice I dont
want to come
down please dont
make me come back
down like a
balloon just
floating up at the
ceiling I can

look at the windows
they are nice they
are white please
be quiet no noise
just thinking and
thinking noone
bothers me here
noone comes in
I am safe here
noone can - oh
Jesus too late I
have to come back
he touched my
breasts damn him
it was nice for a
while I will cry
now

LEFT-HAND WRITING - 1989

You are a murderer

You are guilty

You are bad.

You are evil.

If people really
knew you;

They'd hate you
They'd never want
to be near you
again.

I'm the only one who
really knows you

Four-year-old children
are incapable of
understanding what
death is. They
don't believe in it.

Children are not
guilty, bad, or evil.
I was a child.
∴ I was not, and
am not, guilty,
bad or evil.

There are some
people who do
know who I really
am, and still
want to be near
me.

He told me who
I was, but he
never knew who
I was.

Kathleen Sullivan
7/29/02

REVERSING DAD'S GUILT MESSAGES – 7/29/02

Death

Gone

A month later, in January of 1990, my abreactions and flashbacks increased in intensity and frequency. Although I'd been consulting with a local therapist, she wasn't used to working with sexual abuse survivors, and didn't know how to help me–other than to listen.

I learned about an eight-day Intensive Experiential Program (IEP) at Charter-Peachford, a psychiatric hospital north of Atlanta. The next IEP session would start in one week. I signed up for it, believing it would give me the strength and tools I needed to keep on going.

That Monday night, Bill and I went to a banquet hosted by a fundamentalist Baptist Bible college that we both attended. Sometime between that night and the following Wednesday morning, Dad died.

Dreaming of Justice

On Wednesday morning, I awoke from an unusually strong, vivid, symbolic dream. In it, Dad was dressed like a desperado cowboy. Chased by a big gray wolf, he rode a brown horse down a steep hill. At the bottom, he crossed a stream; the wolf stayed on the other side. Knowing he was finally free, Dad smiled. I smiled too and felt happy for him. Then, as Dad looked at the gray wolf, a huge black wolf, its hackles raised, emerged from a dark cave above Dad and his horse. As it moved stealthily towards them, a bell slowly tolled.

The dream changed. I saw a huge, blond male angel, robed in white. As he stood and watched the wolf kill Dad (I didn't see it), he held the oldest child witness in his arms. The angel said, "Now justice is served. The child is mine." I woke up, trembling, still hearing the bell toll.

The dream was so powerful, I never forgot any of the details. At that time, I believed it was a message from God.

Phone Call

Several hours later, as I stood behind the counter at McDonald's, I was still dazed by the dream. As I pondered it, my stepmother called on the phone and said, "Kathy, your father is gone." I felt relieved, thinking that she meant Dad had gone underground to start a new life. She elaborated: "Your father is dead." My hands and body turned to ice and I became robotic. My manager told me to go home. I never went back to that job.

At home, I called my stepmother. She said Dad's body had been found on the back seat of his Grand Prix in the garage that morning by his apartment manager and his criminal lawyer, who grew alarmed when Dad didn't show up for an appointment.

She said because Dad's body had started to decompose, making the time of death impossible to determine, the coroner had instead used the time of the discovery of his body.

Believing God must have given me the dream to prepare me for the news of Dad's death, I told her about it. After I hung up the phone, I dropped to my knees and cried with grief while at the same time thanking Him for having protected the children. I didn't know how I was going to survive the rest of the week–I felt so cold!

Final Visit

Because I needed all the support I could find to get me through the next couple of days, I went to my weekly codependency group therapy meeting the next evening. After that, I planned to go to the funeral home to see Dad's body. The support group encouraged me to spend time alone with his body, reminding me that I needed to say goodbye to him. My stepmother agreed, and arranged for me to have a half-hour alone with his body, despite grumblings from some of his business-suited mourners.

Dad's official cause of death was *sequelae of carbon monoxide poisoning*. And yet, I've since been advised by three different professionals who are familiar with the effects of carbon monoxide poisoning, that the car exhaust would have turned Dad's skin bright blue. One calls the unusual color, "Smurf blue."

If these professionals are correct, I am not suggesting that the forensic examiner didn't do a thorough job. According to an article in the Atlanta paper from that time period, his office was swamped with cases. Several of the consultants told me that the examiner probably didn't see any point in pursuing an investigation because no one was raising a fuss about his death, and all other signs did point to suicide.

When I was alone with Dad's body in the funeral home, it was so swollen I had difficulty recognizing it. The only way I could positively identify him was by standing beyond the crown of his head and looking at him lengthwise. My stepmother had warned me that his skin was dark red from the carbon monoxide. Although I believed her, I still needed to see it for myself. As I stared at his face and neck, I noticed that someone had covered the skin with heavy beige makeup. I had to know. I unbuttoned the collar of his white shirt and saw that the skin beneath it was dark red. The body really was Dad's, and he really was dead.

Funeral

The following day, my brothers, their wives and children, my stepmother and half-siblings, Dad's sister and her husband, and others gathered in a small room next to the church sanctuary to prepare for his funeral. Other visitors joined us, including a retired, slim, grey-haired pediatrician who had been a neighbor and close friend of Dad's for years. Although I didn't yet recognize that man, he glared at me with obvious hatred and loudly told whoever would listen, that I'd lied about Dad. I later learned that Dad had claimed in his deposition that this man had actively coached him for his defense–including telling him to say that I'd wanted Dad, sexually.

When Mom entered the room, I broke down and wept, happy that she'd come to comfort us. Instead, she grabbed my arm tightly, pulled me out into the hallway, and said I had to get myself together and not let my brothers see me cry. I remembered what the people in the support group had told me: I had the right and the need to grieve. Defiantly, I told Mom I would cry as much and as often as I needed to.

I remained stunned by her callousness as we silently walked back into the waiting room.

The funeral was surprisingly healing for me. Dad's Methodist pastor didn't try to pretend that Dad had been anyone other than who he really was. He didn't try to minimize or cover up for what Dad had done. He did tell us that on the previous Sunday night, Dad had walked up to the altar and had asked the pastor to pray with him. That gave me some comfort.

Dad's death was one of the most shattering experiences in my life because he was the first person I had ever bonded with. When I was young, we were much closer than a father and daughter should ever be. He had been my first long-term sex partner. And yet, I was also able–at least as an adult–to love him in a non-sexual way. Some of the love and grief that I felt after his death was for the terribly wounded little boy inside who had never had a chance to grow up and experience love. For the funeral, I purchased a flower arrangement with a small teddy bear, and addressed the card to that little boy.

Perhaps part of my ability to love Dad non-sexually had come from what I had learned about God as a little girl. I'd almost always believed that He cared about me when no human did. And although He couldn't make the bad people stop, or magically pick me up in His arms and carry me to safety, I believed that He'd always been with me.

I believe that God also gave me the ability to love Dad because of the love I'd received from caring people. Unfortunately, Dad had been too broken to be able to receive my love–his soul had been a sieve.

Disposal

Due to his prior arrangements, Dad's body was cremated after the funeral. Ironically, that wasn't dissimilar to what he'd done to the bodies of some of his ritual victims. His widow scattered his ashes in a cemetery fountain. This could have symbolized the way he'd denied some of his victims a burial place. I still have no place to go, to kick his headstone and curse his memory or fall down on my knees and tell him again how much I love him. His family has no place to put flowers, just as I'd had no place to put flowers to honor my baby girl.

In so many ways, the giant blond angel in my dream had been right: justice was served.

Betrayal

Mom and her second husband stayed in our home through the following weekend. On Sunday, the day before I entered the hospital, Bill received an emergency call from work, informing him that the building's burglar alarm had been triggered. As he exited the house, climbed into his truck, and prepared to drive away, Mom walked towards him. His window was down. Knowing that the rest of us were still asleep, Mom leaned in, pulled Bill's head towards her, and kissed him full and hard on the lips.

Stunned, Bill moved his head away and said, "I want you to know I'm a happily married man."

She looked surprised, then stepped back and said, "Well then, I'm happy for you."

As Bill drove away, he felt angry and decided he would have no more contact with her.

That same afternoon, I lay down on my bed to take another nap–I was so exhausted! As I relaxed, Mom came in and sat down next to me. I was shocked as she quietly told me not to tell anyone at the hospital about her; then she said that if I did, she'd have me killed.[1]

When she finished speaking, she gently stroked my hair. That made me feel crazy. Because the two conflicting realities about Mom's personality and motives clashed, one had to go. When I woke up later, I didn't remember the instruction and threat, and believed she'd come into the bedroom to comfort me. Her touch lingered for days.

For twelve years, Bill stayed silent about Mom's inappropriate behavior earlier that morning. He was furious that she'd done it when my dad had just died, and I was deeply grieving. He was certain, and I agree, that because Mom was never a casual social kisser, she had cold-bloodedly attempted to seduce him.[2]

Epitaph

Throughout his adult life, Dad had secretly operated on the dark edge of society. He'd locked himself into an insatiable sex addiction with his back to an unyielding wall that had blocked off the immense pain fueling and driving the addiction. He died a lonely man who had spewed his incessant pain and rage onto innocent victims for probably more than forty years. When the sexual addiction had stopped working in the last decade of his life, I had also watched him turn to cocaine to numb his psychic pain.

Until a sex addict is willing to stay away from other sex addicts and victims, and actively seeks help to go through the childhood pain that sex temporarily numbs, that addict cannot give or feel genuine love. Most sex addicts confuse sex with love, perhaps because as children, they'd been seduced or sexually assaulted by adults who had claimed to rape or molest them because they "loved" them. For these victims, the concepts of "sex" and "love" are super-glued together. Too many sex addicts believe if others have sex with them and accept their bodies, then they are loved and accepted. What a sad lie!

Because I was addicted to sex for decades, I have no right to judge others who still struggle with the addiction. I'm one of the lucky ones; with much therapeutic help and my husband's genuine love and devotion, I've been able to excavate and accept the excruciating emotional pain from my childhood that perhaps thousands of orgasms had masked and medicated–although never for long. I now know that love and sex are two distinct (albeit overlapping) facets of humanity, and that having sex with a partner does not guarantee that partner's love.

I recently found a poem, written by an anonymous recovering sex addict, that seems to be a fitting epitaph for my father:

> We know better than others the limits of our sexual addiction:
> that it is solitary, furtive, and satisfies only itself,
> that, contrary to love, it is fleeting,
> that it demands hypocrisy,
> that it enfeebles strong sexual feeling,
> that it is humorless and cruel,
> that it is hollow,
> that it distances us from our feelings,

> that it works to exclude our family,
> that it exploits power over others,
> that it destroys good feelings about ourselves,
> that it causes us to abuse our bodies, and
> that we end up broken and alone.

Notes

1. Years after I remembered Mom's death threat, I learned that most people are highly suggestible to verbal suggestions for several days after a trauma. I believe she knew that because Dad's death had traumatized me, her words would go deep inside my mind.

2. Based on numerous memories I've recovered, I am certain that Mom blamed me for "seducing" Dad. Instead of intervening and protecting me from his sexual assaults when I was a child, she seemed to view me as a competitor for his affections. I have yet to recall a single time in which she attempted to intervene as Dad sexually assaulted me in front of her-in fact, sometimes she gleefully joined him in the assault. At such times, she seemed to be in her normal state of mind. And yet, I've also had many memories of her switching into an older "stranger" alter-state while Dad was absent, punishing me for my sexual sins and calling me a whore and worse.

   A therapist who has worked extensively with child sexual abuse victims and their mothers told me that a surprising number of mothers do turn against the children and blame them for "seducing" the mothers' partners. She explained that this especially occurs if the mother is an unhealed survivor of childhood sexual abuse. Often, such mothers unconsciously choose a partner with poor sexual boundaries, which opens the door for the mothers to reenact their repressed traumas by not intervening and by sometimes even encouraging their partners to assault the children; and then, blaming the children for the sexual assault.

   Rosencrans discovered the same bizarre dynamic when she communicated with adult female survivors of maternal sexual abuse:

   > Some of these mothers must feel they have, for better or worse, reproduced themselves through their daughters. These mothers may re-experience their childhood pain, ambivalence, and rage through contact with their daughters, their daughters' little girl bodies and vulnerability . . . For example, a mother might feel sexually ashamed and sinful and repeatedly project those feelings

> onto her daughter as a way to get them out of herself. The daughter may take those messages in as true about herself. (pg. 125)

My experience has been that my mother irrationally hated me and repeatedly sought to harm me and enlisted others to harm me-perhaps because she had made me “little her”. Of course, she was careful to do this only in private and at gatherings where child abuse was encouraged. For this and other reasons, I choose not to have any more contact with her. Her shame belongs to her alone.

Without outside intervention, maternal abuse-including mothers passing on the baton of undeserved guilt and shame to their daughters for their having been sexually assaulted-can continue through many generations.

Healing

Charter-Peachford

I guess it's common for abuse survivors to fantasize that when their primary perpetrator dies, their traumatic memories, nightmares, flashbacks, and abreactions will magically stop. In reality, the opposite often happens–they get worse.

After Dad's death, the number of flashbacks and abreactions increased noticeably. I suspect it happened because I felt safer. I was ready to remember more.

The Monday after his funeral, as prearranged, I entered the eight-day Intensive Experiential Program (IEP) at the Charter-Peachford psychiatric hospital. I was still hoping for a quick fix.

Upon admission, my diagnosis was major depression.[1] Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) delayed was added later.[2] As a nurse led me by the hand to the IEP unit, I noticed that a large part of me seemed to have died. I was beyond exploring my emotions anymore. They were gone.

Most of my eight days in the Intensive Experiential Program were a blur. One day, I play-acted a mock funeral at a female counselor's suggestion, pretending that Dad's body lay on the floor, surrounded by small paper cups symbolizing lit candles. Although I said–to Dad–what the counselor suggested, I still felt nothing.

A day or two later, she told our therapy group to visualize stepping "on and off a stage" during a skit. As I did, I flashbacked and relived a pornography shoot that Dad had forced me to participate in when I was small. I sat on the floor with my back to a row of wooden cabinets and refused to budge until the flashbacks subsided.

One night, our group was herded into a room outside our unit to watch Barbara Streisand's movie, *Nuts*. We were left there, unsupervised. I wasn't prepared for the content of the movie–it included a very sick relationship between Barbara's character and her father. Halfway through the movie, I started to hyperventilate and weep. When I couldn't stop, a neatly groomed, gray-haired male patient comforted me as he guided me back to our unit. A nurse standing behind a window told me to sit on a sofa until she had time to talk to me. I kept shaking and sobbing.

I didn't know that a friend from Hebron came to the hospital each week to encourage recovering alcoholics. I was surprised to hear his voice as he spoke to the nurse behind me. He was equally surprised to see me sitting there, and hugged me as I wept even more. His unexpected presence restored my spiritual footing. After that, I believed that no matter what other surprises emerged from my subconscious, God still cared about me.

On the last day of the experiential program, we had a small graduation ceremony. Without warning, the head counselor told me I would have to stay in the hospital. As each of the other patients said goodbye to me and walked out the door to awaiting loved ones, I wanted to die. Having come there to take me home, Bill was angry. We were equally in denial about the severity of my condition.

That weekend, I was placed in a dual diagnosis unit that housed patients who had a combination of mental difficulties and chemical addictions. Because I didn't understand why I was there, I grew more depressed and stopped eating altogether. After meeting with a psychiatrist, I was transferred to the hospital's general adult psych ward. There, I enrolled in an experiential track that was similar to the IEP.

In those group therapy sessions, our petite, gentle female counselor used techniques similar to what I'd learned at Crossroads. They included Gestalt methods, relaxation, and visualization. Because all of the counselors were careful not to use guided imagery that could suggest memories, mine emerged on their own.

I remembered that when I had been in the city of Atlanta one day as a teenager, I'd been sexually assaulted by a group of Black men in a run-down neighborhood. I relived the emotional pain of seeing their neighbors stand on their front porches across the street from the empty lot, watching silently as the men group-raped me. No one tried to stop them. I relived the rape so intensely that I felt the sharp corner of a partially buried brick press into the back of my head as I left my body by focusing on wispy clouds in the blue sky above.

I also worked through previously recalled torture memories in greater detail. Although I felt embarrassed about sharing the memories with male patients in group therapy, their gentleness and genuine concern helped me to understand that not all men were like Dad. I needed to know that.

During my two-month stay at Charter-Peachford, I was aware that I seemed to be at least two people: a rebellious teenager and a cooperative adult patient. I didn't tell anyone because I was afraid that I'd be kept there longer.[3]

Dr. V., my assigned psychiatrist, was petite, dark-haired, and intelligent. When I told her that I was embarrassed about having had so many orgasms as a child, she said: "Your sexual sensory neuron path developed very early in your childhood." She helped me to understand that I had no reason to feel ashamed–it hadn't been my fault.

In our therapy group, we were asked to write affirmations (positive statements) about each other. Afterwards, we were to go to our bedroom and look into our own eyes in the bathroom mirror as we read, aloud, the affirmations that the others had given us. As I spoke to my mirror image, I felt as if I were lying. Further, I was spooked because a complete stranger stared back at me. What was happening to me?

Our group therapy counselor consistently challenged us to go beyond our emotional comfort zones. One of my greatest fears was to be in a room with Dad, even though he was dead. To help me overcome that fear, she suggested that I sit on the floor and surround myself with large pillows to create an imaginary protective barrier that he couldn't breach. Then she asked who else was I especially afraid of. I said, "My ex-husband."

She asked me to choose two men in the group to represent Dad and Albert. For Dad, I picked a large, gentle Black man who had become my buddy. I sensed that he wouldn't hurt me. I picked another man to play Albert. The counselor asked me to choose someone else to stand guard between me and the two men. I chose the largest man, also Black, to protect me from Dad and Albert.

She then asked me to tell "Dad" and "Albert" to go farther and farther away. Each time I commanded them, the two men took another step backwards, until they were out of sight in the hallway. The third man blocked their way. For the first time in my life, I felt stronger than Dad and Albert.

In music therapy sessions, we were asked to pick our favorite songs from a large selection of record albums and explain why these songs were special. My favorite was *Leader of the Band* by Kenny Loggins. I said the song represented my relationship with Dad because "he's my leader, and his blood runs through my veins." Although the music therapist's expression seemed odd, she made no comment.

One day in art therapy, I fashioned a clay heart with a jagged line down the middle. I made a clay knife stick out of the crack. Although I knew it represented what Dad had done to my heart, when asked, I only said that it represented my relationship with him. The female art therapist looked stunned, but said nothing. Refusing to take it to my bedroom, I told her to destroy it.

On another day, I drew a picture on a large piece of white paper with felt-tipped, colored pens. It was me as a child, lying naked on my back on Dad's cold, metal power saw table in our basement in Reiffton. He'd used thick, metal C-clamps to fasten my wrists to each side of the table. That day, he had worn a red shirt, blue pants, and brown boots. In the picture, his hands were reaching towards my lower body. This must have been one of the times he'd tortured me on that table, because I was unable to draw my body from my chest down. I just left a blank space where it would have been.

In another art therapy session, I used watercolor paints to draw Dad's outline. Again, he wore blue pants and a red, long-sleeved shirt. This time, he held a black wire and a red wire in his outstretched hands. They were attached to a black battery he'd set on the basement floor. His gray eyes stared.

In another picture, I used a black felt-tipped pen to make an outline of what seemed to be a giant bat wearing a black robe. Again, Dad's eyes stared. His two long fangs were tipped with fresh blood. To his side was a green-painted, wooden door to a closet. In a child's scrawl, I wrote, "He raped me in there sitting on the shelf 9 years old."

At no time did our art therapist suggest my memories. Although she was visibly shocked by nearly every creation, she wisely kept her hunches to herself.

For many weeks, each time Dr. V. asked me if I was considering suicide, I honestly told her yes. Since Dad had died, I just didn't feel like living.

Dr. V. brought up another subject: she was concerned that I hadn't expressed any emotions about my mother. When she encouraged me to start talking about her in group therapy, I felt strangely frightened. What if Mom found out? Dr. V. continued to insist.

Still nervous, I agreed to at least think about my relationship with Mom, although I wasn't willing to talk about her to anyone–including Dr. V.

Although Mom had presented herself as loving and caring when I was young, she'd been a different creature in the privacy of our home. I'd always known that she didn't love me. I'd never forgotten an afternoon in South Carolina, long after Mom had married her second husband, when she'd insisted I sit beside her on their king-sized bed and listen as she told me, in detail, what a wonderful lover he was and how he pleased her sexually. I also never forgot how, from childhood through my adult years, she'd insisted that I sit on her bed or stand nearby as she sat, naked, in front of the mirrors in her bathroom–preening. She'd seemed to enjoy exhibiting her naked body to me, despite my obvious discomfort.

I'd never forgotten a week in our house in Reiffton when she had walked through the house, up and down the stairs, every day–stark naked. She'd insisted that she'd done it to tone her muscles. When we'd protested and asked her to put clothes on, she'd angrily exhibited herself more!

I'd never forgotten how each time I left her home in South Carolina as an adult, she gave me at least one paper grocery bag full of steamy paperback novels that she'd recently purchased. She'd collected so many erotic novels, her husband had attached long brown wooden shelves to their bedroom wall to hold them all. Although I'd told Mom I didn't like the novels because I was uncomfortable with their detailed descriptions of intercourse and orgasms, she'd continued to insist that I read all of them.

Away from Mom's presence, I now felt braver to question some of her past behaviors. I'd always felt uncomfortable with how sexually inappropriate she'd been with me, but I'd been too afraid of her to say it to her face. I decided to send several letters of confrontation to her. Dr. V. advised me to keep copies of them (I did) and assured me that if Mom really loved me, she would try to work out our relationship in family therapy. When I asked Mom to come to my family sessions, however, she flatly refused. Adhering to our family's "protect Mom at all cost" tradition, another relative soon contacted me and took me to task for having upset her.

Although Mom never communicated with any of my therapists and didn't know what my recovery entailed, she nonetheless told family members, including my teenaged daughter and my stepmother, that I'd "gone off the deep end" and had inherited a "bipolar disorder from Bill Shirk's side of the family."

She alternately accused my husband and therapists of implanting "false memories" about her inappropriate past sexual behaviors in my mind. Years later, she even sent my teenaged daughter a magazine article promoting the FMSF's bogus claims about recovered memory. She said the article "proved" that my memories had been implanted by therapists![4]

During the last month of my stay at Charter Peachford, I met an adult female trauma survivor who had Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD). I was discomfited by her odd behaviors and stayed away from her as much as I could. Each time she regressed into a child alter-state, several nurses led her into her private bedroom that was full of stuffed animals. Although the nurses always closed the door, we could still hear her screams as she relived one trauma after another.

After two months, my primary insurer's mental health benefits limit changed from one million dollars to a hundred thousand. Since I'd stopped wishing I could die, my secondary insurer claimed that I must be stable enough to be discharged. I was pleased, because I wanted to go home. Being in a locked psych ward was too much like prison–I'd had enough.

Before my discharge, Dr. V. asked: "Do you think you might have amnesia?" I said no. Years later, I realized the irony of my reply–if I had amnesia, how could I know that I had it?

After my return home, I was surprised at the difficulty I had in performing the most simple chores. I felt like a young child, having to learn basic life skills all over again. The flashbacks continued, although not as intense as before. I was convinced that I was almost finished healing.

Clash with Religion

In therapy at the hospital, I'd learned how to identify people who were overly controlling. I'd also learned how to set mental and emotional boundaries with them, so they wouldn't take advantage of me. This caused a problem, because I now felt become uncomfortable with some of our denomination's teachings–especially its insistence that members should do whatever the pastors said "God" wanted us to do.

We were even told that God required us to tithe a minimum of ten percent, then twenty percent of our gross income to the church! Our pastor insisted if we did this, God would "bless" us financially. Although we complied, the promised blessings never came. Instead, our financial situation deteriorated.

Still, I tried to believe what we were told in church. During worship services, I continued to raise my hands and sing praises to God both in English and in "tongues"–really, babbling like an infant. At the altar, male leaders and established female members placed their palms on the heads and bodies of members, to pray for our spiritual help or physical healing. As usual, their chants and "speaking in unknown tongues" washed over my mind.

When we sang songs over and over again during the worship part of each service, we seemed to enter a group trance. We were told that our subsequent feeling of joyous elation "proved" that God's Holy Spirit was in the sanctuary. In response to that sensation, we raised our hands and praised Him. At that point, I entered a total trance state, my eyes rolling up in their sockets.[5]

Being in a trance made it much easier to accept mental suggestions from the church leaders that otherwise, I would have rejected as ludicrous. I now believe that was their intention. During the trance, the door to my subconscious mind opened, flooding my mind with many new flashbacks. Several church leaders and members tried to convince me (and perhaps themselves) that my emerging memories and flashbacks were evidence of demons lurking in my body.

They told me that when I'd consulted with secular therapists, I'd sinned against God because I'd sought their help instead of His. They claimed that these rebellious acts had enabled demons to enter my mind and body. They said the demons were giving me false memories to make me "accuse the brethren."[6] They repeatedly criticized me for not depending solely on God, Jesus, and the Bible for healing. They convinced me to repent and seek spiritual "deliverance" to get rid of the demons, and said this would make the false memories go away.

Unfortunately, when they encircled me at church or in a member's home, putting their hands on my body, chanting and speaking in strange tongues, louder and louder, I relived occult ritual traumas that I'd otherwise had no memory of. As I abreacted, these people became my former abusers.[7]

I screamed and writhed, although I was in too much of a trance to leap up and run out of the room. The more I physically struggled and cried out, the more they were convinced that the "demons" inhabiting my body were fighting their prayers and the invoked "blood of Jesus." When I stopped fighting, sometimes after an uncontrollable, ear-splitting scream, they congratulated themselves for having cast the demons out.

As a result, I felt lower than an ant's belly. And yet, I wanted to believe that invisible demons *had* caused the memories and flashbacks. Because my esteem was still scraping bottom, to occasionally endure several hours of demeaning deliverance sessions at no cost was vastly preferable to suffering daily flashbacks and abreactions, spending months in hospitals, and paying many thousands of dollars for therapy.

I was deeply disappointed when the deliverance sessions didn't stop my flashbacks and nightmares. I had to face the truth: there was no magical or supernatural quick fix for the effects of long-term trauma. What I really needed was courage, time, energy, and support from people who were either unscathed or had gone through their own recovery.

Some church members tried to silence me in other ways. They insisted that God wanted me to let go of the past–as if flashbacking and having vivid, recurring nightmares was a choice! They claimed the Bible said I was to "forgive and forget" (forgive, yes; forget, no).

They said because God had cleansed me of my sins, I ought not to revisit them by remembering and talking about them. How odd! I was remembering sins that had been perpetrated against me as a young child by my father and other adult predators–and yet they seemed to be saying that when I was an innocent child, I'd sinned against God by being raped and tortured![8]

Their constant criticism and lack of emotional support left me feeling as if I had to fight the whole world to do what was I sensed was right.

Within months, Bill told me that he wanted to become a missionary. I told him I couldn't do it. I didn't feel right serving in a church system that discouraged its members from seeking professional help to heal.

SIA

During this phase of my recovery, I attended 12-step group meetings with Bill and Emily. They included Al-Anon and Co-Dependents Anonymous (CoDA). I wondered if any 12-step programs existed for sexual abuse survivors to talk freely about what the sexual assaults had done to their minds and souls.

Searching for specialized support within the 12-step community, I found Incest Survivors Anonymous (ISA) and Survivors of Incest Anonymous (SIA). Soon, I started the first SIA 12-step meetings in the Atlanta area. Although I did it to meet my own needs, I felt honored to support other recovering survivors who also sought to heal from the effects of childhood sexual abuse.

Therapeutic Fragments

It was time to review my artwork and journals from the previous summer at Crossroads of Chattanooga. I hoped they'd give me more clues about my childhood.

Looking through my Crossroads folders, I was dismayed to discover that a lot of what I'd written and drawn at that facility still didn't make sense.

First, I looked through the folder from Emily's family week. As part of our homework after each session, we'd been expected to journal all of our dreams. I still couldn't make sense of what I found in one night's dreams:

5/31/89 – Wednesday Night

1. Getting on expressway—starting downhill—other cars going 70. Me and some others on roller skates, skateboard, bike, can't keep up. Keep having to pull over to let cars go on, get on again, can't keep up. Recurring dream.
2. Maid of honor in church. Inappropriate dress—slip instead of gown. Recurring dream.
3. Husband fesses up about sex with other women due to our going through problem time. Wants me to forgive and accept his weakness. Binds together through sexual act.
4. On a large boat. Enemy invasion—enemies come with mines and other explosives. I dive off, swim to enemy territory, try to hide or pretend to be one of them, to be safe and try somehow to help comrades in trouble.
5. Large centipede—two-colored—stinging many people in room. It's poisonous, but they don't realize it when it stings them. Bill and I approach it cautiously—hit it with something. Cut it in pieces. Parts scurry off. I'm still afraid of parts.
6. Recurring—snakes.

On a questionnaire entitled "Family Systems/Roles," I'd written the following responses:

Describe Mom and Dad in one word each.
Mom – sick (emotionally); Dad – dictator[9]

What childhood role(s) do you see for yourself growing up? List characteristics of roles:

Hero: hypercritical of self, overachiever (grades)

Lost child: quiet one, withdraws, daydreams, fantasy life, independent, ignored, forgotten, loner/confused, materialistic (things and pets), solace in food, intimacy problems

Scapegoat: defiant, rebel (not to Dad, just social rules and morals), peers important, law and school problems, unplanned pregnancy, self-destructive, negative attention, family focus, addict

What adult role do you see for yourself?

Addict: Alcohol & drugs up to 18; strong sex drive within bounds of marriage; work; food; religion (gives me boundaries, family, and morals); excitement (crisis oriented)

How do you feel about the roles you see for yourself?

I feel angry, afraid, stuck in a way I don't want to be. Afraid for our family's children—that patterns would continue. Angry that we children are still covering up for Dad and Mom, carrying their guilt (Dad still won't be honest about his own guilt).

On another questionnaire, *Day of Change – Day of Decision*, I'd written:

Where were you stuck last night? Role (in family):

Lost child and hero

Feeling:

Angry and not whole and afraid

Who or what set you up for the role?

Dad

What has been/is the payoff (reward) for your role?

Keeping peace in the family—no upsets. Peace.

What has it cost you to play role?

Health, relationships, ability to be myself—don't really know who I am, except spiritually.

What are you willing to change?

I've had to stay away from Dad and brothers for a long time—want to begin own counseling. Want to be more open with mother—caused her much hurt in past by invalidating her pain. Will need to give Dad his shame back and quit carrying it for him. Want to be myself and accept my faults and own needs and wants.

As I reviewed these papers, I realized that Emily's family week had probably been my first step in recognizing how dysfunctional my childhood family had been. Except for a few rebellious teen years, I'd tried hard to be the family peacekeeper—I mustn't upset anybody; mustn't rock the boat. The counselors at Crossroads had helped me to recognize how much I'd sacrificed to make my family happy.

Next, I reviewed my inpatient Crossroads folder. In it, I found a set of diagrams of my childhood home in Reiffton that I'd drawn with colored pencils. I'd color-coded anything in the house that still bothered me, whether or not I understood why. I'd outlined certain furniture with colored markers, indicating suppressed anger, sadness, happiness, guilt, anxiety, shame, and depression. I'd indicated that I'd felt anxiety and shame when near my parents' bed. I'd made a blob of black shame, surrounded by the color for guilt, on the bathroom floor, where I'd often slept at night. I'd marked a trail of anxiety and sadness at the stairs where Dad had stomped from the ground floor kitchen to the landing in front of our second-floor bedrooms. I'd color-coded other areas of the house for reasons I still couldn't explain.

I reviewed lists of family messages and values that I'd internalized as a child:

- Victim
- Future marriage failures—bitterness—due to Mom's example with Dad
- Male/female role confusion
- Triangular communication
- Lack of self-esteem

- Isolation
- Fear of heavy stomping on stairs (Dad's)
- Abusing future children
- Fear of anger directed at me from others, even when their anger is appropriate
- Lack of trust and fear of males
- Treating sex as a tool instead of expression of love
- Fear of criticism
- Lack of confidence in groups and around older people
- Inability to express emotions
- Inability to make choices for self
- Co-dependency (excessive dependence on others)
- Wives must resent husband
- Sex is a duty—no love involved
- I am not wanted by Dad except to work and be an object of vented rage
- I am not wanted by Mother
- When adults are present, kids must stay in another room. No mixing
- Kids stay out of sight and mind—don't mix with adults unless for adults' pleasure
- Children shouldn't be seen or heard unless they're doing chores
- If I fall down slippery stairs, it's my fault
- Boys can have fun and toys, girls can't
- If the dog goes hungry or thirsty, and dies, it's my fault
- The dog is more important to Dad, than me
- My physical needs are unimportant
- Don't talk at table
- Don't talk about feelings

I pulled out another diagram from the file. It was so big and bulky, I had trouble unfolding it. As I scanned it, I remembered that each adult patient had been instructed to take turns lying on their back on a large sheet of paper on the floor, and then another patient outlined the body, being careful not to be disrespectful. After our outlines were completed, we were given crayons with instructions to color-code any emotions and experiences from our past that were especially important. Looking at the paper now, I was stunned to see a large gash of red crayon drawn between my hips and the beige outline of a large fetus above that. And over one breast, I'd drawn three people holding hands. What did it all mean? I couldn't remember!

On the back of another large piece of paper was a crayoned message to my counselor, scrawled in a little girl's handwriting: *"4 U – Kathy."* I didn't write like that!

As I reviewed a second full-sized body diagram in the same file, I was amazed that I'd viewed myself as a container of negative emotions: fear, anger, pain, sadness, and loneliness. Nothing good, nothing happy. Where was my joy, peace, and happiness? Why did I feel so icy inside? Why was I still unable to feel love for my husband? What was wrong with me?

Those questions seemed to prime my mental pump. More emerged: Why did I still freeze when strange men were sexually inappropriate with me in public, even rubbing their engorged penises against my butt in supermarket checkout lines? Why couldn't I get angry and yell at them or at least move away?

Why did I have so much difficulty opening my mouth to tell Bill that I was bothered by something that he'd done? Why was I filled with pain? Why was I so terrified that if I expressed myself, he'd leave me?

Why did I have anxiety attacks whenever I anticipated having to go to social gatherings in rooms full of strangers? Why was socializing so easy for Bill, and still so hard for me?

Next, I reviewed several entries in my Crossroads journal:

6/16/89 – Dreams last night

> Major gore. Going up path up hill to home to where brothers are. Path through woods. Try to go past girl and dog/boy. Dog tries to attack and bite me. I have scissors—have to cut head off to make it stop. Then girl does same. It grieves me. I do same to her. I reach top of hill. Two spreads were laid out (different foods)—1 on one side, 1 on other. Tempted to eat from 1 side, start to, put it back in dish. Poisonous (Dad's).

6/18/89

> Me and other person with Princess Di and husband (not Charles) in water, frozen underneath, Styrofoam under that.

> On bottom of pond was trash and coolers. I tried to get out quick. Tried to warn others. Snakes—various kinds. Water moccasins that look like rattlers. Later on, in a house—man with boots had snake in boot. Tried to take off boot without disturbing snake. Took boot off, snake hanging on leg with fangs in knee. He pulled snake's head out—harmless—round head. Put in old hamster container as pet. I felt sorry for the snake—used to living in the wild.

6/23/89

> Dream—in institution, large building somewhere upstairs. Radioactive accident, people contaminated, became mutated. It tried to go after others in building. I was only person who knew what was going on upstairs. I was afraid, tried to find way out of building without being spotted. On highway, accosted woman driver in front of me. Next step was to hide in woods, but afraid they were in the woods, too. Dream—mute woman alone in house set me up to have sex. Dream—going up apartment stairs—I played role of husband with woman and child—I was both!

In these early journals, my handwriting had changed from day to day. Many of the words were tiny. Why had I been so secretive? Who had I tried to hide my thoughts from?

In an envelope in the file, I found pieces of paper on which fellow patients had written positive affirmations for me. I felt sad because I still didn't believe any of them. Why?

I found an early left-hand communication that I'd written there. I must not have wanted to read it, because I'd crumpled it up as if to throw it away. Then I'd smoothed it out, folded it, and put it in the folder:

Dear Kathy

I hurt real bad Mom is never there every time I try to catch up to her she goes more away from me sometimes she is too much ahead and I cry I want my mommy she wont hear me she leaves me alone and goes away in front of me. I am all alone it is scary I don't know people where is she I am scared I want to go home Mom I need you. Grandma are you there help me please.

I was startled by the way some of the words had been spelled–the note had been written by a child! And why had I written that Mom kept going away? What did that mean? Unnerved, I shoved the paper back into the folder.

I found more drawings that startled me. I'd drawn one of them because a counselor had asked us to divide the big piece of paper in half, drawing our "public" self on one side and the person we preferred to be known as on the other.

Using brightly colored markers on blue paper, I'd first drawn my adult persona on the left side. I looked almost male as I flew through the air, wearing a blue "Superman" suit with a red cape and belt. The only feminine detail was my pink boots. I was carrying the world in my hands.

On the right side, I'd drawn a young girl sitting cross-legged on the ground with a brown bunny rabbit in her hands. She had blue doll's eyes and wore a pink, short-sleeved T-shirt and blue pants. I'd used those colors for the clothes because pink represented the girl part of my personality and blue, the boy part.

I'd made a similar drawing in art therapy at Charter-Peachford. That counselor had also challenged us to draw our public and hidden selves. Again, I'd divided the drawing into two parts. On the left side, I'd used crayons to draw myself as a young woman sitting cross-legged on the ground, reaching for a spring flower, wearing blue jeans and a short-sleeved, pink T-shirt. In this picture my arms and body were muscular. I was smiling.

On the right side I'd drawn my hidden self, using a pencil to outline an androgynous face with no nose or mouth. I'd used blue chalk to outline my staring, lidless eyes. The face peered wordlessly from behind thick black, vertical lines that seemed to represent prison bars.

I felt chilled as I pulled that drawing out of my Charter-Peachford file and stared at it. What did it mean? Who was that prisoner? After I put it back into the folder, the hairless creature's face haunted my mind.

Looking through the Crossroads folder one more time, I found a drawing that had embarrassed me, because I hadn't been able to explain it during group therapy. Our counselor had asked us to each draw a picture of our relationship to our higher power. With colored pencils, I'd drawn a tunnel of yellow light that was walled by many strands of different colors. The tunnel was preceded by a larger circular wall comprised of many hundreds of diamond shaped fragments. Some fragments were individual, while others were conglomerations of two, three or four pieces. The darker colored, more vivid fragments were closest to the tunnel of light.

I'd also drawn a winged female angel flying up into the mouth of the fragmented part of the tunnel, holding little girl me with one arm. The first diamonds and clusters they approached were given lighter, more soothing pastel colors.

I wondered: what did the hundreds of diamonds and fragments represent? Although I remember having felt a powerful compulsion to draw them, I'd had no conscious reason for doing so. Why had I drawn a multicolored tunnel of light, extending up beyond the fragments? And why had I drawn myself as two persons—a flying angel in blue jeans and a little girl in a dress?

I sighed as I put the picture away. The strong sensation that more mysteries lurked inside my mind wearied me. Would I ever know all of myself?

Notes

1. More about Major Depression can be found at this website: http://www.psychologyinfo.com/depression/major.htm.
2. According to the National Institute of Mental Health, the symptoms of PTSD are:

   . . . flashback episodes, memories, nightmares, or frightening thoughts, especially when . . . exposed to events or objects reminiscent of the trauma . . . emotional numbness and sleep disturbances, depression, anxiety, and irritability or outbursts of anger . . . intense guilt . . . [avoidance of] any reminders or thoughts of the ordeal. (Facts 1)
3. Although I did check into the hospital voluntarily, leaving wasn't as easy-especially if I still appeared to be a danger to myself or to others. A common warning given to me and other patients in psych hospitals was that if we left "AMA" (against medical advice), our insurance might not cover our previous days in the hospital. That always kept me from attempting to leave before I was properly discharged.
4. Memory researcher Laura S. Brown wrote:

   > I am aware that therapeutic malpractice exists and that rarely such malpractice includes iatrogenic induction of false beliefs that are co-constructed by therapist and client as memories of childhood abuse. But I view this line of the discussion as a red herring that focuses attention away from the more basic questions of the way trauma affects memory. (*International Handbook*, pg. 196)

5. At the World Congress of Professional Hypnotists Convention in Las Vegas, Dick Sutphen explained why such techniques are sometimes used in church services:

   > If you'd like to see a revivalist preacher at work, there are probably several in your city. Go to the church or tent early and sit in the rear . . . Most likely repetitive music will be played while the people come in for the service. A repetitive beat, ideally ranging from 45 to 72 beats per minute (a rhythm close to the beat of the human heart), is very hypnotic and can generate an eyes-open altered state of consciousness in a very high percentage of people. And, once you are in an alpha state, you are at least 25 times as suggestible as you would be in full beta consciousness. The music is probably the same for every service, or incorporates the same beat, and many of the people will go into an altered state almost immediately upon entering the sanctuary. Subconsciously, they recall their state of mind from previous services and respond according to the post-hypnotic programming.
   >
   > Watch the people waiting for the service to begin. [In our church, this occurred during the worship part of the services.] Many will exhibit external signs of trance-body relaxation and slightly dilated eyes. Often, they begin swaying back and forth with their hands in the air while sitting in their chairs. (Sutphen p. 4-5)

6. One winter, I'd noticed that an adolescent girl in our church acted very sexual while in an obvious trance state. After I tried to communicate to her mother that I was concerned, the girl's father and our pastor insisted on meeting privately with Bill and me. In that small room, both men angrily accused me of letting Satan attack the "fine family" through me. Their accusation was odd, because I'd never suggested that the father had done anything-nor had I even considered it! Several weeks after that, during a worship service, Bill and I watched the same father absent-mindedly caress his younger daughter's buttocks in front of us in a way that should have been reserved for his wife. In response, the younger girl smiled happily at him and leaned into him. I think Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. was right on the mark when she wrote: "If children can be silenced and the average person is easy to fool, many [sexual] offenders report that religious people are even easier to fool than most people." (p. 28) We all want to believe the best in people, as they present themselves to us. But sometimes we do so at the children's peril.

7. After discussing marching and meditation during group meetings designed to gain control of the minds of participants, Sutphen explained how chanting can also put a person into a suggestible trance state: "The third thought-stopping technique is chanting, and often chanting in meditation. 'Speaking in tongues' could also be included in this category. All three thought-stopping techniques produce an altered state of consciousness." (Sutphen, pg. 11) My experience has been that, when I was "speaking in tongues," I was actually regressing into my babyhood-hence, my infant babbling. I now wonder if this is what I heard from others, who might have

also been in regressive altered states of consciousness. I am not suggesting that "speaking in tongues" is a bad thing. It can be a very peaceful experience. In fact, being in a trance state can be very addictive. I am, however, concerned that many people who "speak in tongues" may not realize that when they do this, they are indicating to the wrong people that they are vulnerable to mental control.

8. I've been told by several believers in reincarnation that when we were sexually assaulted as children, we were being punished for sins that we'd committed in past lives. This seems to be another version of "blaming the victim." I'm amazed that so few people are willing to place the guilt and blame where they belong-on human predators who willingly hurt, rape, torture, and sometimes even kill innocent children.

9. Mom usually presented herself as the emotionally sick, downtrodden wife (which she was, to a degree) while hiding the fact that she wielded enormous power in all of our lives. I called her manipulative crying, "crocodile tears" because she knew how to use it to manipulate me (and others) to feel sorry for her miserable state in life and to protect her from the consequences of her behaviors-especially when others were disgusted by the behaviors. At the same time, she narcissistically ignored my emotional needs and continued to abuse me. From her, I learned that I had no importance or value; only she did. I had to fight very hard not to perpetuate the same kind of relationship with Emily; unfortunately, I failed many times.

HIDDEN “PRISONER” PART, EARLY 1990

DAD PREPARED TO TORTURE ME WITH ELECTRICITY

DAD CLAMPED ME TO HIS SAW TABLE TO TORTURE
ME WITH ELECTRICITY, EARLY 1990

4-31-90

The lady was gray not pink she lay on the
floor they cut her tummy open it look funny.
inside I feel sick throw up Why they cut her
tummy open Daddy and other man they do
it one man hold her daddy cut her tummy
He reach in pull her guts out they spill all over
the floor he think it funny Cat guts

WOMAN RITUALLY MURDERED BY DAD, 4/31/90

5/3/90

Dad

DAD WITH RITUAL ROBE AND KNIFE, 5/3/90

5/19 Altar

Dad made me lay back on the altar then they lay the little boy on top of me he didnt move- limp- they cut his tummy open blood ran down me I tried to sleep but I felt the blood It wasnt a dream as hard as I tried to make it one

DAD RITUALLY KILLING A BOY ATOP ME, 5/19/90

Alter-States

Back to the One

After I reviewed the drawings and journals, I sensed that I needed help to reclaim hidden territory in my mind to which I still seemed to be amnesic. I told Bob, a local codependency support group facilitator, that I was having trouble finding a therapist who was qualified to work with sexual abuse survivors.[1] Because I was comfortable with him and he was already familiar with my history, he agreed to be my therapist. Careful not to prompt any memories, the big, bearded man patiently listened to whatever came to my mind during each fifty-minute session.

He kept big boxes of Kleenex in his office, which helped me to feel comfortable about crying in front of him. Because he had a Master of Divinity degree, he helped me to understand that God had never abandoned me, and that if He'd been angry at anyone, it was at the adults who had hurt me.

I didn't want to believe that, contrary to what I'd been taught in church, God didn't send His angels into dangerous situations to magically rescue and protect His children from being harmed. It took away my sense of safety and left me feeling exposed and vulnerable. And yet, no matter how spiritual or righteous I tried to be, I was really no safer from being assaulted than any other human being.

As I struggled with my anger towards God for not intervening on my behalf in the past, Bob reminded me that all humans have free will. He said that, having given us the ability to choose between right and wrong, God does not miraculously intervene and change the minds and behaviors of hurtful people; only they have the power to do that. And because their free will can include the will to harm children, God in all His power and glory will not stop them.

This explained why, no matter how hard I'd prayed for God to touch Dad's life or speak to his mind, he had never changed, had never indicated that he loved me, and had never said he was sorry for what he'd done to me and the children.

A powerful new anger stirred inside me. If God couldn't protect me, then he wasn't my loving Father. Ever since I was a little girl, I'd wanted a father who would love me. Because Dad had been anything but loving, I'd chosen God to be his big, strong replacement. In Sunday school, I'd been taught that God had created the world; He'd formed the seas and the biggest, most ferocious creatures. He'd decided when the sun would come up, and when it would set. All my life, I'd been told that He even created millions of angels to protect us!

The knowledge that God didn't protect us from harm stoked new rage, disappointment, and disillusionment. In my mind, God had become helpless, His hands tied behind His back.

What in the hell good was He, then? Why did He let me be born when He knew I was going to be hurt so badly? What kind of cruel, sadistic bastard was He, to put me on this earth, knowing I'd be betrayed and tortured and raped, over and over?

Bob encouraged me to express my anger towards God. He said that prayer was communication–that God made our emotions and wanted us to tell Him what we felt towards Him. Bob said that God, like a loving father towards his little children, was big enough to take our rage and still love and accept us. He encouraged me to cuss and yell at God, if that was what I needed.

Too embarrassed to do it in front of Bob, I did it at home–first on my knees beside the bed, then standing when I would not kneel for God anymore. My fist raised, I yelled and cursed at God. Let him strike me dead! I dared the lightning to come!

"Where the fuck were you?" I demanded. "Why didn't you care? Why did you let me be born to the bitch and bastard? Do you get off on sending kids to twisted parents, knowing what they'll do to them? Why did you give Dad free will, knowing what he'd do to me? What perverted kind of cosmic joke is this? You know what, God? I don't believe in you anymore. I think men just made you up, to keep us controlled. To make rules for us.

"'*Don't blaspheme.*' God'll get angry and strike you dead. '*Honor your parents so you'll have a long life.*' Oh, that one is a real joke, isn't it, God? And, '*Obey your husbands to please God.*' Even if they hit you or rape you or hurt your kid in front of you? Yeah right, God. Sure thing. That's how much you really care about the children, isn't it? And all these damned angels you created to protect us–why are you still holding them back? Why, God, Why?"

Time and again, after my rage was spent, I found myself sitting on the floor, my legs bent under me, rocking back and forth. I held myself as snot and tears ran freely. "Why God, why? Why?" I keened like a small child, then lay on my side on the carpeted floor, curled into a fetal position, still weeping. "Why? Why?"

One rainy afternoon, an old set of memories drifted into my exhausted mind: I was in the children's choir of our Lutheran church in Reiffton. We sang "Beautiful Savior" and "Fairest Lord Jesus," two soothing songs that made me love Jesus all over again. And "Onward Christian Soldiers" had a rhythmic cadence that sent the blood marching through my veins.

They and so many other hymns had helped me feel positive and comforted. I remembered how, many times, regardless of what else had happened in that church, I'd still felt comforted by what had seemed to be God's direct presence.

On the floor of my bedroom, I remembered what that presence had felt like–a powerful, pure love that had filled my body with every breath. It was a love that was so eternal and so "now" that nothing else had mattered. It said, "I'm here, I'll always be here, I'll always love you. No matter what you do, I'll always love you. I'll always be your Father."

As I remembered, I realized that my greatest anger wasn't at God; it was at myself–because I hadn't been what I believed God had wanted me to be. I'd failed Him; I'd done so many things that had displeased Him. I felt dirty, soiled, and filthy.

Wanting to hide under the bed from His nearly tangible presence, I prayed: "Oh, God, I fucked up so bad. I did everything you didn't want me to do. I'm dirty; I don't deserve you anymore." I meant it. I was ready to walk away from God forever, not because He'd failed me–but because I'd failed Him. He deserved a better daughter than me!

I was surprised as the same message broke through to my mind that I'd received so many times as a child: "I'll always be here, I'll never change, I'll always love you." His love gently broke through my shame-barrier and drew me back to Him. As it did, I knew that God really was my loving spiritual Father. He always had been and always would be.

I took comfort in the words of the apostle Paul who, as a rebel named Saul, had once caused the murder of many followers of Jesus: "For I am sure that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord." (*Romans 8:38–39, RSV*)

In a flash, I understood why I'd felt ashamed, why I'd distanced myself and blamed God for the distance between us. I'd foolishly tried to understand Him as I would a human father. Over the decades, I'd accepted teachings from a succession of church leaders who had preached that our heavenly Father had the same attributes as their earthly fathers. Thus, God was judgmental, angry, punitive, demanding, rigid, shaming, and non-accepting.

Now, I knew those men had been wrong: the God I'd known as a young child hadn't changed one iota. Before my mind had been tainted by human teachings and beliefs, I'd had the purest understanding of who He was.

Rising from the floor, I came back to the One who had been with me from the start. I vowed on my very soul that I would never deny God or turn from Him again. It was time to separate God from Dad in my mind, to stop blaming God for what Dad did and stop blaming Dad for not having loved me as God did.

Revelation after revelation came as I stood alone in the bedroom, enveloped by God's gentle comfort blanket of love. My heavenly Father had never deserted me. Maybe He couldn't break the rules by entering a room when I was being raped, to throw the human beast aside and carry me out of the room in what I imagined to be His big, strong arms. But He'd been right there with me.

And when my heart had cracked and broken from tears I'd dared not cry, He'd felt the awful pain and had cried for me. And when I'd hurt, He'd hurt with me. And when I'd lost the ability to withstand any more pain and horror, He'd given me the ability to dissociate, to block it all out, so that my mind and body could continue to survive.

Knowing this now, I was ready to feel the pain, to cry the tears, to endure what I could not bear as a child. As long as I had my heavenly Father and His enduring love, I could bear anything. He would be with me, right there with me, as I went through each tormenting memory. And then He would heal my terrible wounds with His eternal love.

Inner Children

Because I hadn't held a job since quitting my part-time position at McDonald's, I now had extra time alone at home to tap into whatever was still hidden in my unconscious mind. I did this, in part, by using several of the techniques I'd learned at Crossroads–especially right-hand/left-hand journaling.

I always kept a spiral-bound notepad next to my bed. Uninterrupted, I sat on the bed and used my right hand to journal any dreams I could still remember, and then diary what had happened the previous day, as well as the previous day's flashbacks.

Then I held the pen in my left hand and mentally invited my "inner child" to write to me. As before, each time I did left-hand writing, I was slammed by the physical, visual, and emotional effects of newly emerging traumatic memories. Sometimes I cried for hours; sometimes I stormed and yelled in rage at Dad for having hurt me.

Bob encouraged me to invest in a punching bag. I went to a second-hand sporting goods store and paid fifty dollars for a nice, big Everlast bag. Bill used a thick chain to hang it from a big wooden beam in our large garage. On weekdays, when I knew the neighbors living on our cul-de-sac were away from home, I whaled away at the punching bag. It was satisfying to hit and kick it as hard as I wanted.

As my rage erupted towards Dad and other men who had raped me, I screamed at them and pummeled their imaginary faces and bodies with my fists and feet.

Although the anger work sessions helped me to feel empowered, I was dismayed by the way more memories emerged right on the heels of previous ones. Would they never end?

When my rage erupted on weekends, I carried a children's plastic bat into our spare bedroom that was partially below ground. After placing a "Do Not Disturb" sign in front of the closed door, I whacked the bat as hard as I could on a pile of sofa cushions, screaming until my rage-energy was spent. Each time I ran out of anger, I collapsed and wept.

Bob suggested that I stockpile the same kinds of art supplies in that room that I'd used as a child. They included a big box of Crayola crayons, colored pencils, colored felt-tipped pens, different colors of glitter, glue, colorful construction paper, and drawing pads.

Sometimes, as I sat on the carpeted floor and drew, I seemed to go away for as much as several hours. When I came back to consciousness, I was unnerved by what I'd drawn.

One new drawing was of a yellow walking path that wound through a grassy meadow. Brown footprints temporarily left the trail to where a dead baby had been gently deposited in the grass; then the footprints went back to the trail and went on from there, heading towards big, stinking piles of feces with relatives' names on them.

Another drawing alarmed me. It depicted the naked body of a brown-haired Caucasian woman with black pubic hair, lying on the floor on her back, her abdomen cut open vertically. She was quite dead.

A location that kept recurring in my dreams emerged in another drawing of a "road on mountain . . . a long drive home." On one side of the road was a building marked "Episcopalian College/School/Church" and, a bit farther along, another building described as a "big red brick house with a white porch–Satanist headquarters–[teachers] taught us things better . . . Dad and me learned . . . demons taught here . . . later years, [I] taught classes here . . . near Little Rock, Arkansas."

Another drawing was of what Dad called the "Community Room." It seemed to be inside a building in or near Reading, Pennsylvania. The walls and floors were painted black; the doors were brown. The drawing included a door to a bathroom, marked "water to clean up blood," and a carved, brown, wooden "snake on pole carried by Dad–head pointed DOWN." Black squiggles on the floor represented the "killing, dismembering area." A horizontal squiggle along the wall was identified as "woman's intestines." One note on the drawing was about "double doors to outside–where cut up body in trash bags was carried out."

Another drawing was of a different room with a brown, wooden altar. On it were two lit candles and an upside-down bronze cross. I remembered I would sit on the edge of the altar and "watch, and swing my feet." Facing the altar in a semi-circle were nine metal chairs: "They would sometimes sit in chairs in robes and eat and drink refreshments. Sometimes they would stand & line up in the same order. Men who raped me [stood] to the right." A spiral drawn on the floor represented "where they would gang rape me." One corner of the room was labeled my "hiding corner."

One afternoon at home, alone in our kitchen, I absent-mindedly looked down at a large carving knife lying in our stainless steel sink. Suddenly, I had a vivid flashback of Dad wearing a long, black, pointy-hooded robe. In his hands, he held the blade of a large bloody knife. I ran downstairs, grabbed my sketchbook, and drew what I'd just seen.

Another drawing showed me lying naked on my back on a wooden table. Also naked, Dad stared into my eyes as he straddled and raped me. Six adults wearing black, hooded robes stood in a semi-circle, watching silently. Words were written on the paper: "Dad reminded me not to talk back."

The next drawing described what had happened just before the rape. I was lying on my back on the same table. A little brown-haired boy had been placed atop my torso, his back on my abdomen. Dad had used his big knife to vertically slit the boy's abdomen open, making lots of blood run down the side of the boy's body, then onto and under my side and butt. "Dad made me lay back on the altar then they lay the little boy on top of me," the note read. "He didn't move–limp – they cut his tummy open blood ran down me I tried to sleep but I felt the blood It wasn't a dream as hard as I tried to make it one."

Another drawing was of Dad's mother, wearing a hooded black robe, and in her hands she held a thick, old book, bound in brown leather. A picture of a naked goddess was embossed on the front of it, her torso encircled by a snake. Its head pointed towards the side of her head. The book seemed to be very important to Grandma. In it were symbols that she called "runes." Although I was expected to read and understand them, I don't remember if I ever did.

In another drawing, I appeared to be an adolescent, now also wearing a hooded black robe. Dad "taught" me how to vertically cut open a boy's abdomen as the boy lay on his back on the floor. "First human cutting," read the words on the drawing. "Dad's hands on mine. He liked brown curly hair. I was 13." And, "I safe now I one of them still altar girl but they won't cut me now Now I big girl now I have to cut like cutting a cow."

I was confused; most of the pictures and messages seemed to come from children of different ages–mostly between the ages of five and twelve. What in the hell was going on?

Soon I "felt" voices talking in my mind.[2] At first, I was convinced they must be demons that were trying to trick me into believing they were human. I prayed to God to make them go away. When that didn't work, I commanded them to leave "in the name of Jesus." The childlike voices kept talking, whispering their names, sometimes making threats about hurting me. Was I going insane?

I wondered if I had Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) like that female patient at Charter-Peachford. If I did have MPD, would my life be ruined? Would I be locked up in a hospital for years, like she had been? Would my neighbors think I was crazy? I chuckled at the last thought–if they'd heard some of my screams during my anger work sessions at home, they might already think so! It was time to stop worrying about what everyone else thought and go with the flow to see what happened next.

Several times in therapy, I hesitantly tried to tell Bob about the voices in my mind. Although he and other codependency counselors had taught me about getting in touch with my "inner child," I sensed I had a lot more than one child inside me. And although the counselors had talked about the "inner child" in a figurative way, mine seemed quite real. Sometimes so many children's voices talked to me at once, I had difficulty following them all.

When I told Bob I might have multiple personalities, he sat in his upholstered chair with a straight face, saying nothing. Uncomfortable with his silence, I tried reasoning with him. "Bob, I keep hearing voices."

"Are those voices inside your mind, or are they coming from the outside?"

"Definitely inside."

He seemed relieved and explained that some schizophrenics hear external voices.

I continued pushing my point. "You've seen my art work. It's not adult stuff. I go away for hours sometimes and when I come back, I don't remember drawing any of it."

He said this might indicate a split-off inner child that held some of my traumatic memories, but he was certain I didn't actually have MPD.

I felt frustrated. Why wouldn't he listen to what I was telling him? Didn't I know myself better than he ever could, since I was the one who had to live in this body and listen to those damned voices all day long?

Because he kept insisting that I didn't have MPD, I stopped mentioning the possibility to him and encouraged the children inside to write to me in my journal at home. Their journal entries were like the drawings—describing events that I'd had no prior memory of. That worried me. If these child parts were part of me, then whatever they'd experienced, I had, too. And yet their memories weren't mine! How they could be so vivid and yet not feel like parts of my history? Was I making them up?

I didn't think so, because I hadn't read anything, anywhere, that suggested such graphic and bizarre images. And some details of the drawings did match details of recent dreams. Were the dreams my mind's way of preparing me to cope with the impact of daytime memories?

I was exhausted from the incessant voices and memories. And because they were so damned bizarre, I absolutely could not accept them as being real. To help me to cope with them without having to accept them, Bob taught me to visualize a pantry room in the back of my mind with wooden shelves along the back wall. At his suggestion, I put each bizarre memory in a big glass jar and left it there on the shelf to "sit and simmer."

Living in both the past and the present was difficult. Although I talked about some of my new thoughts and memories in therapy, I never had enough time to process them all. I had to cope with most of them at home on my own.

New York City Ritual

Within weeks, I suffered a horrendous series of flashbacks about a sadistic ritual gathering that had been held in the summer that my family had gone to the World's Fair in New York City–either in 1963 or 1964.[3] Although I'd never forgotten about my parents taking us to the huge fair, I'd suppressed all memory of this part of the trip. I contacted an investigator at our District Attorney's office. The investigator encouraged me to come and give a verbal statement about what I'd remembered. A female secretary typed it:

> *INTERVIEW WITH KATHLEEN SULLIVAN*
>
> On May 23, 1990 at approximately 2:00 PM Ms. Sullivan gave the following information to the secretary:
>
> My dad was the leader of a satanic cult in the area of Reading Pennsylvania. We lived in Reiffton. This begin [sic] when I was approximately 8 to 13 years of age, about 1963 to 1969. I witnessed weekly meetings on Friday nights where I saw both adults and children murdered, mutilated, dismembered. They

> also did a lot of pedophile rituals with boys who were not physically cut or hurt (only sexually related) . . . I do remember that during the ’64 Worlds Fair in New York City my dad took me to some kind of special meeting where it seemed to be either a national or international gathering of pedophiles who were involved in sadisam [sic]. I watched as they demonstrated rubbing a penis on the private parts of a baby and later saw approximately fifteen dead babies laid out on the floor. A woman took me by the hand and told me it was just my imagination. I believe that by what I saw there may have been some representatives from the Maffia [sic] there due to the way they were dressed and their skin coloring and the power that they obviously had over the group. We also moved to Cockeysville, Maryland when I was fourteen. I do not remember any events that occurred after that time relating to satanic activities . . . I will related [sic] other things as they are remembered to . . . the District Attorney’s Office. At this time I am unsure of who to trust in relating information to family.

Because I hadn’t yet discovered similar information on ritual abuse or pedophilia, I wasn’t willing to accept what I was remembering and reporting.

Suicide Programming

After telling Bob about some of these memories, I felt a powerful, repetitive compulsion to insert the blade of a large knife into my abdomen and vertically gut myself. Each time the urge came, I felt unusually peaceful and believed I would feel no pain. Staying by myself at home during the day was dangerous; I was losing strength and was afraid I might not be able to fight the urge much longer.

Other therapists advised Bob that I might be experiencing *suicide programming*. They explained that this type of mental programming usually kicked in when a client’s ritual abuse (RA) memories first emerged. Bob gave me the names and phone numbers of several psychiatric facilities in the US that specialized in working with RA survivors. As I contacted each facility, I “saw” myself cutting off my hands or cutting the veins in my wrists. Again, I felt peaceful and believed if I followed through, I'd feel no pain.[4]

The most highly recommended program was at the Columbine psychiatric hospital in Denver, Colorado. When I called there, a man said their unit was filled to overflowing. He told me about a smaller program for ritual trauma survivors at Bethesda PsycHealth Hospital, also in Denver. I soon flew to Colorado to start the next phase of my recovery.

Bethesda PsycHealth

Because Denver is at a high altitude, the sky above the city was startlingly blue. The hospital, a former tuberculosis sanitarium, consisted of several large, red brick buildings. The walking paths and lovely flower gardens between the buildings helped to soothe my frazzled mind. One weekend during my stay there, my red-haired roommate talked her boyfriend into driving us to the Red Rock Amphitheater on a daytime pass. I was awed by the majestic mountains that I saw towering in the distance. That was the pleasant part of my stay.

Several days after I'd checked into the specialized unit, I met its director, a bespectacled, soft-spoken psychiatrist, Dr. T, for the first time. We met almost every weekday during my month-long stay. Sometimes I giggled when he entered the empty conference room to talk with me, because he usually burped.

During my first consultation with the psychiatrist, I described my internal children. He asked questions and told me that I probably had MPD. A battery of standardized psychological tests confirmed his suspicion.[5] When he verified my new diagnosis, I spiraled into depression. I instinctively knew that my life was about to change forever–I didn't want that to happen!

Remembering the movie *Sybil* and the odd behaviors of the female patient with MPD at Charter-Peachford, I believed I'd be treated like a freak for the rest of my life. I felt angry; I didn't want to share my body with other personalities! Damn it, it was mine!

For about a week, I didn't try to get better. I just wanted to die. Dr. T and the other staff members gently explained that I needed to learn how to work *with* my disability, instead of fighting it. Dr. T said if I used every coping tool they taught me during my stay, participated in every therapy group, stayed honest with the staff, asked lots of questions, and learned to cooperate with my alter-states, I should survive back in Atlanta. I appreciated his honesty and decided to follow his advice.

The staff encouraged me to allow hidden alter-states to emerge and explore the hospital grounds. Most of my alter-states had been flash-frozen in a Rip Van Winkle way by the traumas they'd compartmentalized. When they first emerged, they discovered that the world had changed a great deal. Some of them had difficulty with simple things like using feminine products, wearing a bra, and opening white plastic packets of jelly sealed with thin foil.

New alter-states emerged almost every day. I didn't like the idea of their taking control of my body. Because I resisted, they usually took control after I'd fallen asleep. Because I couldn't stay awake all the time, I decided to let them emerge during the day–I usually did this by taking a nap, knowing I'd be missing a chunk of time when I came back into consciousness. I wanted to learn how to negotiate with them so that they wouldn't hurt or embarrass me the next time they had control.

During this hospitalization, fourteen distinct alter-states emerged. Each had unique memories, emotions, and perspectives about life and past events. I'm still fascinated by how, when they first emerged, they were still "frozen" at certain psychosocial stages of development. That, more than anything, proved to me that they were real.[6]

Weekends in the hospital were hardest for me. Most of the other clients were visited by loved ones and went out on pass with them. Having no visitors and nothing to do, I used my solitary time to become more intimately acquainted with my emerging alter-states.

Whenever I could, I walked into the unit's combination conference/music room, lay on my back on the floor, propped up my calves on the seat of a wooden chair, and listened to a "love song" radio station on the stereo.

Although this technique may sound silly, it seemed to work wonders. Each time a love song played, I mentally dedicated it to my other alter-states, adapting the words of the songs and visualizing myself sending them all the way inside–into every crack, crevice, and recess in my soul. Over and over, I communicated "I love you, I care about you, I want you" to every part, no matter how hidden.

Internal cooperation increased dramatically after that. I soon felt safe enough to cede control of my body to the other parts, almost all of the time. Because my time at the hospital was limited, I wanted them to have as much time "out" as possible to work through their traumatic memories, before I was discharged. This was when the real repair work and connectedness began.

Neither Dr. T nor anyone else on the staff suggested my emerging memories. They still contained completely unfamiliar material that I frankly didn't know how to deal with. The memories seemed so utterly bizarre and impossible.

Warning – the remainder of this chapter may be triggering for trauma survivors.

Cindy – Age 5

Sometimes as I "came to," I found myself walking along a hallway in the hospital unit, wearing my nightgown and holding a stuffed white teddy bear that Bill had sent me. This child alter-state called it "Cindy Bear" and insisted that Bill buy it panties because she didn't like its privates being exposed. My Cindy alter-state had been flash-frozen at the emotional age of five.

She recollected that she had felt terrified of round holes drilled in the wooden floors of our living room in Reiffton. She constantly searched my shared hospital bedroom and the dayroom floors for similar holes (there were none). Dad had told her that snakes would crawl up through the holes and bite her for talking to outsiders. She still believed everything he had said. Because he'd been a terrifying, looming presence in my life, he was still alive and frightening to Cindy. She saw herself as a small girl with curly, soft, short blond hair.

Nikki – Age 13

Nikki was the second part to emerge. She insisted that she was asexual and proudly announced to Dr. T, "I don't do sex." Then she told him what she had experienced.

On my thirteenth birthday, Dad had told Nikki that she was now an adult, and that she was in charge of the occult rituals. Although Nikki had previously been naked during rituals or had worn a see-through "initiate's" robe, Dad now made her don a child-sized, hooded, black robe like the ones he and the other adults wore. Then Dad commanded her to stand in the middle of an encircled hexagram on the floor. He said, "Nikki, you're a big girl now."

He commanded her to kneel in the middle of the hexagram. She knew not to move out of the circle because if she did, demons would attack her. She tried to dissociate by staring at the white, flickering candles that Dad had set on each point of the large, painted star. She obeyed him by killing ("sacrificing") a boy in the middle of the star as Dad and the other black-robed cult members walked around the outside of the circle in single file, chanting louder and louder. Nikki had survived the horror by visualizing herself cutting a cow instead.

When she first emerged in Bethesda, she felt great emotional pain. She still believed that she'd been solely responsible for the child's murder. She smoked cigarettes and plotted to run away from the hospital on a pass so she could "get drunk and screwed." She was restricted to the hospital grounds after several other alter-states reported her intentions to the staff.

Dolly/Dreia – Age 7

Dolly, who also answered to the cult name Dreia, was developmentally stuck at the age of seven. Dad had taught occult beliefs to her that he'd said he had mostly gotten from the writings of the infamous British Satanist and intelligence operative, Aleister Crowley.

Sometimes, Dad's cult had met in a large old gray stone building in or near Reading.[7] A thick, gray, granite altar, upon which babies were murdered, was in one of the rooms. Dad told Dolly that the most powerful life-energy was stored in the blood of babies because they hadn't sinned yet. He said that a weaker but still effective life-force was stored in the semen of animals and humans. He seemed to believe that his body would never deteriorate or grow old if he continuously ingested both. He made Dolly do the same.

As Dolly tried to explain these beliefs to a nurse at Bethesda, she said that Dad acted as if he were a battery that needed to be recharged by blood and semen–either human or animal. In my sketchbook, she drew a succession of diagrams of hooded adult cult members positioned in and around the encircled hexagram. She drew pictures of the sequence of one ritual from beginning to end. Dolly was proud to have been an occult practitioner and wrote a page–with graphic illustrations–about the Magick that Dad had taught her during those rituals.

Eventually, Dolly felt the horror of what she'd been involved in as a child. Alone in the hospital bedroom, she frantically searched for something to kill herself with. She tried to remove metal screws from a metal window frame to cut her wrists, but they wouldn't come loose. She tried to escape by opening an emergency door–it didn't budge.

There wasn't any point of trying to walk out the building's main door–the staff constantly checked with me and other clients to make sure that unfamiliar alter-states wouldn't break and run if we strolled around the hospital grounds. Dolly was trapped with no way out, other than to talk and heal.

Andreia – Teenaged Part

Andreia was the same alter-state that had covertly met with the retired Army general, "Poppa," in 1985. Because Dad hadn't known about Andreia's existence, she'd successfully preserved a large portion of my morality. Like Dolly, Andreia was suicidal when she emerged at Bethesda. She felt great emotional pain and held memories of Dad's deadly rages. Even though he was dead, she still feared him. She drew a picture of him as a deadly black tornado.

Andreia recalled having watched Dad beat a male cult member to death in a ritual room in Pennsylvania. In the picture, the unconscious man hung by his wrists that were tied with a rope that was attached to a pulley Dad had previously fastened to the ceiling. (These were the same pulleys Dad used, when making me and other children hang from the ceiling in cages—sometimes for days.)

Andreia mourned the red-bearded man's death. Although she'd been one of his sexual "partners" during orgies, he'd been kind to her. And because of what she'd seen Dad do when he lost control of his rage, Andreia feared her own anger and worried that her rage might go out of control and hurt others.

Catalina – Teenaged Part

Catalina didn’t like to be in charge of the body. She preferred to stay inside and mentally buffer younger alter-states from stress and traumas. She’d occasionally taken control of my body in the past, away from handlers’ control, to protect me when she’d sensed danger. Her name came from a German rhyme that my paternal grandmother had recited to me as a child–something about going to the bathroom.

Visualizing herself as male, Catalina felt no compunction about assaulting anyone who might attempt to hurt “the body.” Sometimes her rage translated into a need to self-mutilate. One Saturday, alone in the bedroom, she removed a metal number plate attached to my closet door and used its sharp corner to scratch an upside-down cross on my belly as she wept. A grey-haired nurse was making rounds and saw the metal object in Catalina’s hand. After she obtained the object, she gently talked Catalina through a surfacing ritual memory that the etched cross represented.

In my sketch book, Catalina drew a picture of herself as a pressure cooker full of tiny cut-up bodies and blood, red steam swirling out through the hole in the lid at a dangerous rate. She seemed to keep a lid on the rage that younger parts couldn’t control.

Little Kathy – Age 4

My most dangerous experience at Bethesda was when Little Kathy emerged. Her plan was to set my bed on fire while sitting on the middle of it. She believed she would feel no pain when she burned to death. After stealing a cigarette lighter from an unsuspecting female patient in the day room, Little Kathy shut the bedroom door.

Catalina was able to emerge part way, but because Kathy fought so hard for control, Catalina wasn’t able to get off the bed. As Kathy tried to regain control of the body, Catalina screamed for help. When several staff members ran into the room, they found Catalina shaking and weeping. She handed the lighter to a stunned nurse and told her what Little Kathy had intended to do.

The nurse commended Catalina, and then—knowing that Little Kathy feared being punished—she gave a verbal message to Little Kathy through Catalina. The grey-haired woman said she believed that Little Kathy might be very angry at someone, and if she ever wanted to come out, the nurse would love to sit and talk with her.

Later that day, Little Kathy re-emerged and shared several memories with the nurse. She explained that she'd tried to kill herself out of rage at my parents and other cult members. The rage came from one experience in particular: at the age of four, she'd been forcibly penetrated from behind by a large yellow dog as Dad, Mom, and other Reading cult members had sat at a kitchenette table and watched. The adults had laughed as Little Kathy had screamed and shaken in terror, unable to break free from the dog's penis. (The child alter-states that had compartmentalized memories of having been penetrated by dog penises hadn't known that because of their unique anatomy, the poor dogs couldn't remove their penises until the swelling went back down.)

The nurse and other staff members taught Little Kathy and Catalina to vent their shared rage in constructive ways: through physical anger work, poetry, artwork, and sharing their experiences with the staff.

Renee – Age 8

During Friday night rituals, Dad had created Renee and then triggered her out by name. Each time, he had commanded her to sit naked on a wooden altar. The guilt of *not* being harmed, while being forced to watch Dad hurt other children and adults, had been unbearable. Renee still felt partly responsible for what was done to them because she was, after all, Dad's daughter. She had also been conscious during a part of the New York City ritual. She provided more details about that event. Softhearted, Renee wept every time she emerged. She was so full of grief that she had great difficulty speaking.

Kate – Adult Part

Like Catalina, Kate preferred to stay inside. Her "job" was to internally comfort younger alter-states that felt upset or frightened. Kate had compartmentalized the nurturing I'd received from my maternal grandmother. Not only did Kate grieve past traumas; she also mourned the current loss of Grandma M's mind and memory to the ravages of Alzheimer's disease.

Home Alters

After my discharge from my month-and-a-half stay at Bethesda, I fervently hoped I wouldn't find many more alter-states. Encountering and adjusting to emerging parts was hard. At home, I didn't have supportive people to help me cope and negotiate with them.

I still had great difficulty accepting the validity of many of these new memories, because I couldn't accept that Dad and his criminal associates had perpetrated such seemingly unbelievable crimes against me and other helpless victims. How had they gotten away with these crimes for so many years? Why hadn't the law caught up with them?

At home, I constantly went in and out of denial. I would try to make it all go away—at least for a couple of hours—but whenever I started to feel "normal" again, another set of flashbacks started.

Bill was unhappy with my new personality shifts and changes. When I had dissociated in the past, he'd blamed it on my moodiness and hormone fluctuations. What he encountered now was more drastic. These new alter-states had unique belief systems, personalities, and experiences. They even spoke and carried themselves differently. Those that emerged for the first time at home didn't know how to vacuum, use a dishwasher, cook, or drive. From one moment to the next, I went from loving and gentle, to rigid and distant, to hysterical or hopeless, to childlike.

Some parts were very young—they needed parents instead of a husband. Some of them didn't trust Bill at all, and refused to be in the same room with him. Quite a few of my newly emerging alter-states were either too young for a sexual relationship or were male—which meant no sex at all!

Many times, when we did try to have sex, I had bizarre flashbacks. Most were from decades of porn shoots that I'd been forced to participate in. One night, I saw a pig instead of Bill (I decided not to tell him about that one). When the flashbacks got ridiculous, as porn often is, I started poking fun at the grotesque memories instead of letting them re-traumatize me.

Another problem developed when child alter-states emerged that had been sexually tortured in the past. These parts still paired pain with pleasure. They'd been conditioned to want rough and painful interactions and had never experienced the gentle give-and-take of making love.

Although he was already monitoring me to make sure he didn't inadvertently have sex with a child part, now he also had to ensure that he didn't fall into the trap of being too rough at my request! This was making our relationship very complicated—he was more miserable every day.

Bill was especially alarmed by the parts that still compartmentalized occult beliefs. He was afraid that they, like Dolly, would reject Christianity and blaspheme God. Still overbearing about his fundamentalist Christian beliefs, Bill insisted that every part believe as he did. His open hostility and rejection of my cult-conditioned alter-states made some of the older ones want to go back to the Cobb County Aryan network, where they believed they'd be accepted just as they were. Fortunately, these urges were curbed by the intervention of wiser parts like Catalina, Andreia, and Kate.

From the time my alter-states first emerged in late spring, 1990 until the following March—a period of ten months—I documented a total of fifty-seven parts. Each held unique beliefs, experiences, and personality traits. And each part either journaled, drew pictures, and/or communicated to me in writing through more mature alter-states I was co-conscious with. Many of them were angry at me for not having accepted their existence before now. They were also angry that they'd suffered terribly, while "host alter-state me" had escaped the traumatic experiences.

Some of them were so angry, they tried to torture me in ways that didn't leave noticeable scars. One of their favorite methods was to relentlessly tweeze my hairs in hidden places until I bled or the wounds became infected. Another was to use several vibrators on my genitals at one time (torture/sex reenactment), leaving me in constant pain.[8]

These parts were careful not to leave lasting scars, because Dad had thoroughly conditioned them to believe if they were ever noticeably wounded, they'd be put to death.[9]

Even though Dad was dead, his threats still held great power over my mind and life. Because of his past influence, I remained terrified of surgery. I was certain that if I ever went under the knife, I'd be murdered.

Some of the alter-states that had emerged in Bethesda continued to communicate with me at home. I was surprised to learn that some of them had also found a way to repress traumatic memories. Their own repressed memories were triggered by the most innocuous events. One saw a flickering candle on television and immediately re-experienced another horrifying ritual!

Dolly/Dreia remembered where part of her name came from. She wrote that as a child, some of the occultists had repeatedly told her that ritually murdered babies were "just dollies." Later, while watching a video about the Holocaust, I was stunned to learn that some Nazi war criminals had called their murdered victims, "*figuren*" (dolls, in German).[10]

Little Kathy re-emerged and told me that as a very small child, she'd been terrified of Dad's staring eyes, and of his hands as they'd poked through the wooden bars of the crib. She described what I'd dreamed all my life: Dad often threw me up into the air, then lowered his hands just above the floor to convince me that my body was about to hit it full-force. That method bonded me closer to him. Although he was the one who initially endangered me, in the end he was also the one who rescued me from mortal danger–again and again.

Catalina shared that she had been my mental protector during "brainwashing sessions" conducted by Dad in experimental settings. She wrote that he'd closely watch her, "like playing chess. He would do something over and over and over again (mental or physical torture) until I learned not to show any reaction whatsoever, not even a muscle twitch. Then he would use another technique." She also recalled having been forced to sit in a chair with a floor-length metal lamp shining strongly in her face. "Could see nothing else. The room was black. I remember the light flashing and accessing the very insides of me."

Renee wrote that she'd watched Dad commit several daytime murders of adult cult members in Pennsylvania. They were so gory and inhumane that Renee was convinced nobody could save her from Dad. He was all-powerful, not just at home, but even within the cult! Because he first accused each victim of having told outsiders about cult activities, Renee also believed she must never talk about what she'd witnessed.

Glenda, a teenaged part, wrote that she'd compartmentalized the hopeless, depressed part of Renee. Glenda communicated that she didn't want to come out of the dark—she wanted to stay there forever.

Younger Kathleen, age eight, wrote about a dungeon in a stone-walled mansion that had been built on the side of Schuylkill mountain. She described a sloped hallway beyond a hidden entryway in the wall of an elegant old library with wooden, red leather-upholstered chairs. She recalled the underground circular dungeon. Lit candles had been placed in recessed hollows in the rough-hewn stone wall.

She wrote that the house was above an old cemetery, at a distance from the other houses on the road. I'd had recurring nightmares about that mansion, but when Younger Kathleen wrote about her vivid memories, the full horror of it came to life.

Heather, a young adult alter-state, wrote that she'd helped Dad "and a retired pediatrician and several others" to prepare several young boys to be filmed in child porn at a high school in north Atlanta, at night. As usual, Dad had a key to the building. She said Dad would summon her there each time, over the phone. She wrote that on another occasion, he placed a "huge wet Q-tip next to my nose and left me paralyzed on the floor." She watched helplessly, unable to intervene, as he raped a beloved child on the floor next to her. Later he told her, smiling, that the child would believe she hadn't cared that the child had been raped. He was right.

Ashley, age eight, had compartmentalized an unusual quantity of cult memories. Dad had given her that name after triggering her out and forcing her to watch him burn some of the cult victims' bodies into ashes.[11]

She held the memories of ritual events that had especially marked my soul. She wrote about a "cave with a stone tunnel leading to it in Pennsylvania." In it, Dad had forced Ashley to get down on her hands and knees, totally naked, setting a dog's water dish in front of her. Dad had placed a dog collar around her neck, with a chain attached to it that went back into the cave. Ashley was allowed to look out the mouth of the cave, but couldn't leave—the chain kept pulling her back. Dad had told her that if she tried to leave, she would choke. Sure enough, when she fought the chain, she choked as it cut into her neck. Dad said the chain would always "tie her to the cult."

In that same cave, Dad had forced Ashley to lie on her back on a low, stone altar. She must have been drugged, because she felt no desire to get up when she came into consciousness in that position. Her abdomen was covered with blood. Dad told her that he'd performed surgery on her stomach while she was asleep. He told her that a koala bear with very sharp claws and a snow owl with a sharp beak and talons were now inside it.

He said if the animals ever sensed that Ashley was thinking about telling cult secrets to anyone, the animals would claw at her insides and make her bleed to death.[12] Dad convinced Ashley that even if someone believed her, they wouldn't be able to save her in time. Years later, during phone calls, he often said the words "wet paint"—symbolizing human blood—to reinforce Ashley's secrecy.

On another occasion, Dad had told Ashley that a big, green, ugly, squat "frog demon" lived inside her, and that the demon held her rage. Then he had conditioned her to "let the demon out" by giving her a baby doll and telling her to stab it with a knife. In an uncontrollable rage, Ashley had stabbed it over and over. Although the killing wasn't real, the induced guilt was; she believed there was no hope for her, and was convinced that she was irretrievably guilty.

Marisha, an adolescent alter-state, had also been forced to lie naked on a stone altar. Dad and other cult members had ritualistically bound her to it with ropes that he claimed were "magick" because they were made from dried human intestines of other victims. He told Marisha that, because the bonds had magical powers, she could never be released. When she first emerged at home, because she still felt tied to the altar, I had difficulty moving my hands and arms.

Cindy wrote about a "television or radio station" in downtown Reading where Dad, Mom and other cult members had gathered on Sunday afternoons for more trauma-based mind control sessions. She wrote that, on one occasion, she had been bound and placed on the floor while Dad had dumped a wicker basket of wriggling snakes onto her torso. Cindy had thought she was going to be bitten and die from the poison.

Tiger was an animal alter-state that I'd developed on my own. He helped me to survive my fear of being bitten by snakes. I must have seen on television that a tiger could kill a snake. Tiger embodied most of my dignity and self-esteem, as well as great emotional pain. He was one of the few alter-states that had felt powerful in Dad's presence, although Tiger hadn't let Dad know of his existence. He had a flashback of Dad holding out a very large snake, with the markings of a copperhead, issuing me a direct order to hold it. Tiger had emerged, looking Dad in the eye, and had staunchly refused to take the snake.

In some of the rituals near Reading, Dad had ordered me to kill babies on a granite or marble stone altar, using an extremely sharp knife to cut their carotid arteries. He'd then handed me an ornate silver chalice, into which I was to drain their precious blood. Mixing their fresh blood with opium powder and red wine, he'd ordered me and every other cult member drink from the chalice.

Because I couldn't stand what he was forcing me to do, I created an alter-state named **Blood** that experienced and compartmentalized those traumas. Blood's heart broke every time she watched a baby's eyes go black, knowing that she was the last human the baby would see as it died. Blood's overwhelming sense of guilt made her dangerously suicidal when she emerged at home. Full of pain and grief from having watched so many precious infants die, she remained suicidal. Blood was never allowed full control of the body outside of therapy, and was in too much pain to try to fight for it. Hers was a living death.

Because adults had read nursery rhymes to me as a child, I developed two alter-states based on the rhyme about the butcher, the baker, and the candlestick maker. I created those parts after Blood. No one part of me could cope with the full horror of killing babies, seeing their blood, and being forced to dismember their sweet, soulless bodies.

Butcher emerged after Blood. Using Dad's large knife, Butcher learned to dismember the dead babies' bodies, and eventually was able to cut between their joints with ease.[13]

Blood and Butcher were forced to witness and perform what no human, let alone a child, should. (When I became an adult, these parts were occasionally triggered out by professional handlers, to disfigure or dismember a "target's" body. These alter-states again protected me from going insane from the horror.)[14]

After Butcher finished his job, **Candlestick Maker** emerged and watched as Dad and other adults rendered body parts that they'd thrown into boiling water in a large black cauldron that hung inside a round-topped, stone fireplace. After the liquid cooled, Dad removed the top layer of fat and mixed it with melted wax to create a new batch of white ritual candles. Candlestick Maker believed if he gave Dad too much trouble, he might be the next dead candle donor. He also watched as the victims' bones were given to cult members' dogs to chew on.

Not all alter-states developed during rituals. **Melissa** began in a large stone public building in downtown Reading. The building had at least one large wooden stage with big, heavy, dark colored drapes. I was taken there in the daytime, on Saturdays. I was eight years old.

Each time, Dad instructed several male Caucasians to stand inside the exits. Then he ordered a male street dweller, who he called a "bum," to stand on wooden stairs that led down from the stage. I stood above the "bum" on the stage with Dad and other men from the cult as they silently donned their black, hooded robes, which triggered tremendous rage inside me–not only because of what they'd done to me in rituals, but also because of what I'd seen them do to other children.

Triggered by the robes, I developed a new part, Melissa, that was able to remember both the rituals and portions of my experiences in this big building.[15]

Knowing that Melissa couldn't express her rage directly at the black-robed men, Dad pointed at the "bum" and said, "Kill the bad man." After he told the man to "start running," Dad then handed Melissa either a large knife or a loaded handgun. He never ordered Melissa to go after more than one "bad man" per training session.

Because I loved reading Sunday morning comic strips, I created a new alter-state that split off from Melissa. **Dick Tracy** visualized himself wearing a black fedora and overcoat as he chased after each man, fully intending to end the bad man's life. Each time he cornered the man, he brutally killed him. (I think this happened because: the rage made me unusually strong; the street people that Dad chose were probably weakened by malnutrition and debilitating alcoholism; and the shock of being attacked by an eight-year-old girl may have kept them from fighting back until it was too late. Knowing Dad's bag of tricks, he may also have drugged them.) My Dick Tracey alter-state felt completely justified because Dad had said they were bad men. This alter-state didn't understand that he probably, by proxy, was expressing Dad's hidden rage towards his own alcoholic father.

After Dick Tracey finished each "assignment," he submerged into my subconscious. After that, Dad–who always took off his black robe before searching for me–found me on my knees, bent over the dead man's bloody body, not wanting to believe I'd just killed the poor soul.

Ever alert for the tiniest changes in my body, voice, and behaviors, Dad recognized that I'd created a third new alter-state, a **young child part** that grieved each victim's death. He pointed to the spreading red blotches on the victim's clothing and said, "Look at the pretty red flower." The hypnotic suggestion worked because seeing a pretty flower was preferable to seeing human blood.

(Several professional handlers used this same technique when I was an adult. They would tell me to "look at the pretty red flower" after a black op alter-state had obeyed instructions to shoot a man. I suspect if they hadn't said it, I might have turned the gun on myself.)

Teenaged **Gloria** held my grief over a fetus that Dad had forced me to abort and then ingest during a ritual, when I was a teenager. She held other memories, too. She was the female I had seen in the bathroom mirror in recurring childhood nightmares. During each of those dreams, I was unable to cover my ears or turn away as she screamed. I've never forgotten waking up from these nightmares, drenched with sweat, praying that I wouldn't see the screaming lady again in my sleep.

When Gloria drew pictures of her experiences in my sketch pad, I finally learned why she had screamed in the nightmares. Dad had bound her to a wooden cross and had vaginally tortured her with a cattle prod. Gloria seemed to compartmentalize my blackest rage and my strongest memories of physical pain.

A child part that Dad had named **Margaret** was my only fully analgesic alter-state. Because she'd been created through torture paired with hypnosis, she was able to block out all physical pain. Margaret had stopped developing, mentally and emotionally, at the age of nine.

One day at home, Margaret proved to me that she could feel no pain if injured. She took control of the body while I watched (at those times, I visualized my body as a vehicle; the dominant alter-state "drove" while I observed from the "back seat"). She pushed a fairly large sewing needle through the web of skin between my left thumb and index finger. As long as she had control of the body and I just watched, I felt no pain at all; neither did she. When she receded and I regained full control of the body, however, I felt the pain. I was in awe.

Margaret drew several pictures of childhood torture sessions. She wrote about a gray-haired man she'd known as a "pain giver." He had spoken kindly to her while he'd done the most awful things. His gentle voice and demeanor had been crucial in helping Margaret to dissociate completely from the pain he'd inflicted. By focusing on his voice, she totally blocked out what he did to the body.

In one picture, Margaret drew a picture of him holding the flame of a lit candle under my left arm's soft flesh. She wrote, "Old Man Gray har [sic] likes me." The cognitive dissonance created by what he was doing, as opposed to his presenting himself as a caring person, was mind-splitting. Suppressing her fear and horror, Margaret emotionally attached to the torturer. He was much kinder in his face and voice than Dad had ever been.

During another "test," Margaret noted that Dad seemed fascinated as he stood silently, watching. First, the older man threw a live cat on a bed of nails that were affixed to a large wooden board that had been set on the floor, the points of the long nails sticking straight up. The cat screeched loudly as it scrambled off, bleeding. Then the older man told Margaret to lie on her back. When she obeyed, she felt no pain. As he examined her back afterwards, he said, "Very impressive," and commented on the absence of blood. Dad seemed pleased, which added to Margaret's sense of pride.

The older sadist's final act was to dislocate all the fingers on one of my hands. Again, Margaret felt nothing. The torturer popped each digit back into place, telling Margaret that she had "passed the test." Again she felt proud.

The ability to block out pain when injured, and to trance so that I didn't bleed, was crucial when I was sent into dangerous situations as an adult. I was made to believe that if I was disabled by any injury, my handlers would kill me. Since I wanted to stay alive, I tranced to stop any bleeding. I didn't want them to notice an injury and kill me![16]

A sweet-tempered teenaged part that Dad had perversely named **Evil** had been forced to participate in the most depraved rituals. Dad had convinced her that she belonged in a cage because she was too evil to ever come out. Evil had great difficulty relating to other humans. I saved both of us from her hopelessness by reversing her name and giving her a new purpose: "Live."

Tonya had compartmentalized most of Mom's sexual abuse at home and at rituals. She also remembered that she'd been orally raped, twice, by my only close childhood friend's oldest sister in their home. Although Tonya had felt guilty because of the physical pleasure, she'd refused to let the older girl do it a third time. Forlorn Tonya journaled that she'd "just wanted to be left alone to play" with my Ken and Barbie dolls.

Marla, an adult alter-state, wrote that when she was young, she'd been sent to "special classes" to learn how to dismember bodies. She wrote about a black liquid that had been poured into the stomach cavities by an adult male trainer. She'd been given black gloves with a red border around the wrists, and had used a special set of surgical tools kept in a black velvet-lined case. She wrote that she'd only emerged to dismember bodies after the victims were dead. She'd used "precise, scientific thinking and over-awareness of colors and artistic patterns of the bodies as coping mechanisms." She had no noticeable emotions.

Roddy, a male adult alter-state, also emerged with no emotions. Like Marla, he was very logical and scientific-minded. (I suspect these parts internalized some of Dad's personality traits.)

In my journal, Roddy wrote that Dad had ordered him to help with the disposal of the remains of murdered infants in Atlanta. He wrote that some of their body parts had been "pickled" in formaldehyde in glass jars, to be sold on the local black market to "med students from Emory University." He wrote that he and Dad had put other remains in garbage bags, then in large, white plastic paint buckets filled with moth balls, before dropping them off on the way home in dumpsters behind commercial buildings. They used a different dumpster for each drop-off. Dad made Roddy wear surgical gloves to avoid leaving any fingerprints.

After Roddy shared these ghoulish memories with me, the guilt hit hard. He was in such anguish, he might have suicided, had not other adult alter-states prevented him from taking full control of the body.

I was happier to discover a core alter-state named **Kathleen Ann**. She wanted to talk about how Dad had tried, at home, to touch her and do things to her that she knew weren't right. She had hidden from him as much as she could, while playing with her dolls.

She remembered when two strange boys had lived with us in our rental home in Laureldale, although she couldn't remember how long they were there. She told my therapist that the older boy had blond hair and was "old enough" to have a box that contained "pencils and pins." She liked that boy, but noticed he was reluctant to talk about his parents. She wrote that she didn't know why the boys had stayed with us, and added that no one talked about them after they left.

She shared another memory, again in therapy. One day, in the kitchen in Laureldale, she'd tried to reach for a cup perched atop a rack of dishes on the kitchen counter. She was terrified when the rack unexpectedly teeter-tottered on the edge of the countertop. She tried to hold it up with her little arms, but it was too heavy. As her shaking arms gave way, the dishes crashed to the floor. Mom entered the kitchen, saw the mess, and grabbed a broom to sweep it up. Surprised that Mom didn't hit her with it, a wave of relief washed over the small child. That wasn't the end, though:

> *Then Dad came in there and told me to go to my room. I had my very own bedroom. It was dark. I sat on the bed and waited. When I heard his big feet coming up the steps I peed on the bed. When he walked in the room and saw the dark wet on my bed, he got really angry and grabbed my arm and threw me against the far wall across the room. Then he grabbed all the sheets and pulled them off the bed. He told me to go in the closet. I was very upset because my panties were wet and cold. I sat in the closet and he shut the door. Then I heard Mom come into the room. She said something and I heard a slap. It sounded like she slapped him. I got real scared for her. I opened the door a peek to see if there was anything maybe I could do to help her fight him. I saw him throw her down on the floor. Her head hit it real hard. Then I saw him [rape] her. She got real soft after he did that and she didn't fight him anymore. He told her to make the bed and she did. They both forgot about me. I sat probably a couple of hours until suppertime. I made TV shows on the door. Lots of Captain Kangaroo. Finally mommy came to the closet and opened the door and asked what I was doing in there, silly, and why were my pants wet. She took me into the bathroom and washed me and changed my clothes like I was wrong and nothing had ever happened.*

Kathleen Ann communicated in a separate drawing that she had gone completely "under" at the age of four. A new host alter-state named **Kathleen** had split off from her that day, as Kathleen Ann had walked up a large dirt hill to a daytime pagan family ritual where she knew–from past experience–"bad things" were going to happen.[17] That particular day, she'd decided that she just couldn't take any more. For the next thirty-two years, she'd remained hidden inside, encased and protected by other alter-states.

A child part called **Baby** was one of a cluster of "home" alter-states that I seemed to create on my own. Baby had stopped developing, mentally and emotionally, at the age of ten. She explained that Dad had often called her a "cry-baby." She was terribly afraid of sudden noises and movements, and anything else that seemed inexplicable. She was petrified with fear when she turned a light switch to the "on" position at night, but the light didn't come on. She was the alter-state that had sleepwalked at night. She'd enjoyed spending time with my cat, Snoopy, and our family dog, Lassie, although she'd hated it when the pets fought.

Fatty, an adolescent part, had internalized that name because Dad had often called me "Fatty." This part almost always hid in our house in Reiffton with a good book and a paper napkin full of food. Mom had abused her, verbally and physically, when Dad was away at work. She wrote: "Mom would drink and get into a rage. I tried to win her approval and affection by cleaning the house and ironing. It never worked. I was afraid of her when she pulled out her bottle from one of the top kitchen cabinets. I remember having to iron all of the family's bed sheets." This is the only alter-state, to-date, that reported seeing Mom secretively drink liquor at home while Dad was away. She also reported that Mom often forced me to put my hand on the ironing board, and then Mom touched it with the scalding hot iron, telling Dad later (if he asked) that I'd done it to myself.[18]

Jennifer's mental and emotional development had been arrested at age 14. She'd compartmentalized a memory of having been brutally sodomized by Dad after we'd moved to Maryland. Showing rare spirit, she'd physically fought against him. She had desperately wanted to live a normal life and enjoy normal relationships with kids her own age.

Marcey, a child alter-state, usually emerged when I was sick and needed to rest. She visualized herself wearing a white nurse's uniform and cap. She tried to protect me by taking the brunt of the abuse whenever people took advantage of my illnesses and temporary lack of strength. When she emerged at home this time, I had the flu. She mentally "stood guard" and wouldn't allow Bill to talk to me until after I'd slept soundly.

Andreia remembered another terrible childhood memory and drew four sequential pictures of it. I was about six years old. It was a warm day; the grass was green and Andreia was clad in blue shorts and a red, short-sleeved T-shirt. At first, she stood near Dad and several other male cult members in a cemetery. She clearly felt helpless because in the first picture, in which she stood next to a deep dirt hole holding an unearthed coffin, she didn't draw her legs or feet. She wrote, "*They made me stand beside the coffin they put the dirt on the black cloth.*"

In the second picture, she was lying on her back inside the open coffin, down in the hole. She drew her legs, but her hands and feet were still missing–signifying that she'd been unable to run or fight against the men.

She wrote, "*They take the lady [fresh corpse] out and make me lay in the coffin and shut it. I pretend I am dead then they open it and put her back in on top of me. I will not draw that she has no head. This is just a bad dream. I will wake up soon. She has juices come out of her neck, they get on my face and hair and top. Bad Bad Bad. I am dead. No more bad things.*"

The memory of the "juices" was, by far, the most gruesome part of the entire memory. It was beyond any horror I'd previously relived. Because I couldn't stand the physical sensations and visual flashbacks, I called Bethesda and asked one of the nurses for help. She talked to Andreia and asked her to draw a closed coffin. On that page, Andreia wrote: "*The lady told me to close my memory until I can see the doctor. Coffin U R Locked until I say so!*"

Exactly one week after the memory first emerged, Andreia met with the therapist in his office. Having a supportive listener helped Andreia, tears and snot flowing, to survive the memory of the decapitated woman lying atop her, crushing her to where she could barely breathe.

At home that night, she drew a picture of the open coffin, with Andreia lying beneath the decapitated body that still wore a dress. Because young child Andreia was now blending and sharing information with me, and me with her, she now used grown-up words to explain the logic that had kept her sane: "*Her body was there but her soul was gone. My body was there and my soul was still there too. She was dead but I was alive. Not the same! Who was she? Was she somebody important to them? What was the purpose in them doing this?*"

Underneath the picture, she wrote: "*I got gooey stuff–slimy–on my face and hair and shirt. They took me to [a female cult member's] house. She made me take a shower and she washed my clothes so no one would ever know.*"[19]

In this journal entry, Andreia seemed to be describing the trauma that had initially created her. Because her personality was like mine, and because she didn't identify herself by a new name during that horror, Dad hadn't realized that she wasn't the host alter-state. I believe this is why Andreia was able to stay hidden from Dad for decades, conserving my sense of innate goodness and my ability to love.

I was most surprised by the emergence of an alter-state named **Lisa**. Mentally and emotionally, she was more than thirty years old. She explained that she'd usually been conscious and in control at home as an adult, rarely allowing me to emerge away from work. She'd protected me from what she still perceived as Albert's "insanity." She'd also taken on the responsibility of enduring abusive and demeaning sex with him that no part of me had enjoyed.

Since 1981, many more alter-states and personality fragments–hundreds upon hundreds–shared their unique experiences with me. For a while, I tried to document each one, but after several years, I grew overwhelmed. There were so many, I didn't think I could ever experience integration! I realized if I was going to stay positive about my recovery, I needed to stop counting them.

Internal Cooperation

Although my personality and soul had been brutally splintered into many "pieces," I'd nevertheless started out as one person with one body and one mind like everyone else. Now, I prefer to visualize each alter-state as having been a glob of experience that was stored in one or more areas of my brain. I was not those alter-states before I became co-conscious with them; nor were they me. I did not yet have access to these parts of my brain.

That's why, when they did certain activities, I did not consciously participate; nor did the majority of them experience my life at home, at church, and at work. "My" experiences as the primary host alter-state had been stored in areas of my brain that were not yet accessible to them. And those alter-states had been stored in parts of my brain that were not yet accessible to me.

As pieces and fragments of my shattered personality emerged and communicated to me through diaries, drawings and more, new neuron and chemical paths bridged the gaps between where they were stored in my brain, and where "I" was stored. Many times, when I connected with an emerging part for the first time, I had a strong headache behind my forehead. Sometimes it went all through my head and down into the back of my neck.

Although some scientists claim that we are unable to feel our brains, I disagree. When I participated in therapeutic EEG biofeedback sessions, I was able to feel changes in pressure in different sections of my brain as I shifted from my Beta brainwaves to Alpha, and so on. That experience explained why, when some alter-states emerged, they described themselves as being up or to the right or left, or down a little. I believe those alter-states were describing where, in my brain, they could be found.

As I became more familiar with my emerging alter-states, and they with me, we became co-conscious and shared our information and knowledge with each other. Over time, I realized I was only one part of the original whole–a large piece, but just a part, nonetheless. I didn't have sufficient strength to take on all their traumas, but I could lend my knowledge and blend with them so that, as a more cohesive whole, we'd amass enough strength and understanding to successfully cope with future memories and attached emotions.

Notes

1. Although the codependency group helped me to be more assertive and to set and maintain stronger and healthier boundaries with others, I eventually terminated my membership in it and several other support groups. Even in groups designed for survivors of child abuse, I felt lonely and disconnected because my memories were too horrific to share.

2. Later, I experienced audio flashbacks. Like visual flashbacks, they were always unexpected. As an example, I might be working outside in the garden and suddenly hear one or two words. It wasn't as if they'd necessarily been addressed to me in the past; it was more like I had been in the same room when I'd heard that person speak.

3. I wasn't yet aware that not knowing the time frame or physical location of a remembered event is common among dissociated trauma survivors. At the time, I felt pressured to give a date for the event, even though I wasn't certain of that date. Now, I feel comfortable in stating that it must have occurred in either 1963 or 1964, because that's when the World's Fair was in New York City.

4. Being suicidal and committing suicide are two different things for me, although they can get way too close together when the emotional pain is at its worst. Because I've seen people killed via faked suicides, suicide is not an option for me. If a memory is absolutely unbearable and I have no safe way to get through it

at home, I will call my psychiatrist and ask to check into a hospital so that I can survive it.

5. At that time, many therapists believed that a person was capable of having more than one full personality (hence, multiple personalities). In 1994, the APA published a more accurate diagnosis, Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) in its *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders, Fourth Edition (DSMIV).* The symptoms of DID are:
    - The presence of two or more distinct identities or personality states;
    - At least two . . . recurrently take control of the person's behavior;
    - Inability to recall important personal information that is too extensive to be explained by ordinary forgetfulness;
    - The disturbance is not due to the direct physiological effect of a substance . . . or a general medical condition. ("Psych Central 1")
6. One might wonder if I'd inadvertently internalized other patients' traumatic memories. In reality, most hospitalized trauma survivors are so discomfited by their memories, they prefer not to discuss them-not even in group therapy. In group therapy sessions, I spent most of my time learning how to cope with my alter-states and unfamiliar emotions. Reliving horrific memories in individual therapy was exhausting and very painful. For that reason, when we socialized, we talked about light subjects and were careful not to trigger each other's memories. I have found this to be equally true at other specialized hospital units for trauma survivors.
7. I've been amazed by the number of recovering ritual abuse and mind-control survivors who have contacted me, who had either grown up in that part of Pennsylvania or had moved there as active victims when they became adults.
8. They finally stopped when a therapist explained to them that if they continued to do this, they might damage the nerves in my genitals, and then *no one* would be able to enjoy sex anymore!
9. This was a problem for me when my torture and op memories emerged, because I had no noticeable marks or scars to verify those memories. I envied survivors who had proofs on their bodies. I believe that Dad preferred using electricity, drowning, sensory deprivation, mental torture, and similar methods to split my mind because they left little to no evidence. Not having scars doesn't mean that one wasn't tortured. Graessner, et al wrote:

    > Altogether, there are several forms of torture that are either hard to prove or can only be established based on a patient's complete presentation. One should not, however, make the error of dismissing a particular form of torture and its consequences simply because one has not heard of it before or has run into extreme difficulty explaining it. Torturers vary their methods, and our proofs inevitably lag behind. This

> is especially true for those states that are increasingly replacing physical torture with refined forms of psychological torture. (pp. 195-196)

10. After I'd begun to remember Dad's Nazi affiliations, I was deeply shaken when, on the Internet, I found a set of notes about the Holocaust film, *Shoah.* Claude Lanzmann wrote: "Itzhak Dugin-another survivor of Vilna-told of being forced to dig up the buried bodies with just his hands in order to burn them. When the last mass grave was opened he recognized his whole family. Was forced to refer to the corpses as 'puppets' or 'dolls' (*Figuren*) or 'rags' (*Schmattes*)." (Shoah 1)

11. Dad sometimes jokingly called the resulting sound, "snap, crackle and pop." He would reinforce the horror the next morning at our breakfast table by pouring milk on our bowls of Rice Krispies cereal, grinning as he watched me listen to the too-familiar sounds, so tranced, I couldn't lift my spoon from the table.

12. Even when I was an adult, Dad sent me items, such as stuffed animals, that represented snow owls and koala bears.

13. Every week, for years, I had a powerful compulsion–to buy a whole chicken at the grocery store and cut it into pieces. I couldn't buy already-cut chicken; I had to cut it apart myself. When I realized it was a ritual reenactment, I didn't have the compulsion anymore.

14. When the ritual memories emerged, my biggest question was, how could my father and his cult associates have done such gory and horrifying things to other humans without having nightmares and flashbacks? Why was I so traumatized that I tranced and split off the memories, but they didn't? Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. explained why:

    > The rest of us blink when we're startled in the middle of viewing something unpleasant. Why is that? Who knows? But maybe the aversiveness of something unpleasant puts our nervous system on red alert. Being tense already, it reacts more when startled. Nothing like that happens to psychopaths. Landscapes. Burn victims. There's not much difference from their point of view. (pg. 9)

15. In April, 1998 a contact near Reading, PA did some investigatory work for me. She wrote:

    > I wanted to see if the old abandoned movie theatre in Reading on Sixth St. was still standing so I took a drive over there and found that it is. It's a very large building and it sits right up close against the sidewalk. Sixth St. is right in the middle of town.

    I believe this may have been the building where I was forced to endure my kill training as a child. Unfortunately, because I have remembered many traumas that

I suffered at the hands of criminals living in or near Reading, I choose not to return to that area.

16. When I first became co-conscious with Margaret, I had great difficulty accepting her memories. How was it possible that she had felt no pain, when tortured? And how could she have lain on a bed of sharp nails and not bled, although the cat did?

    Carla Emery explained this phenomenon:

    > Pain can be blocked by suggestion. Hypnosis enables people to endure more pain than otherwise would be possible. The deeper the trance, the more pain can be endured. Because hypnotic anesthesia is of psychological origin, numbing patterns induced by suggestion are what the subject thinks they should be, rather than correct nerve anatomy . . . Persons I have known, whose dental work was done under hypnosis, were pleased with how well suggestion overcame fear, pain, and bleeding. (pp. 217-218)

17. Although Dad chose to practice a combined form of Nazi Teutonic Paganism (as will be discussed in a later chapter) mixed with British and American Satanism and Luciferian practices, several of his older relatives, who publicly attended Christian churches, adhered to their family-generational Druid religion. For this reason, I-as the oldest child on both sides of my family-was expected not only to learn and participate in Dad's form of occultism; I was also expected to learn and perpetuate the family's old-world Pagan practices. This terrible burden increased my dissociation.

18. Fatty and other parts shared that, like with Dad, being alone in the house with Mom usually meant being sexually assaulted, tortured, or both. Another of Mom's favorite ways of torturing me was to wound me with straight pins and needles from her sewing kits because they left tiny, hard-to-notice marks. For this reason, I still have great difficulty motivating myself to mend our clothes.

19. When I remembered the coffin trauma, I hadn't yet read any occult literature. (I avoided such materials, so that my ritual memories would be untainted.) Because this was straight memory, I really thought Dad had ritually traumatized me out of his insanity. Then I received information from a researcher who indicated that the "occult tradition of initiation involving the ritual passage through death had occurred as far back as the Egyptian *Book of the Dead.*" The researcher wrote:

    > The German Brotherhood of Death Society that Hitler belonged to was the Thule Society. Their coffin rituals are very similar to those Ron Rosenbaum describes in his article, "The Last Secrets of Skull and Bones." In the initiation ceremonies of this highly secretive occult organization that boasts several United States Presidents, including

George Bush Sr., new members “lay [sic] naked in coffins and tell their deepest and darkest sexual secrets as part of their initiation.” (pg. 85) Aleister Crowley, in *The Ritual of Passing Through the Tuat,* described the initiation ceremony into the Order of Thelema: “The candidate then undresses; and is clad in the shroud of a corpse. His feet and hands are wrapped closely, his mouth is stopped, and his eyes are blindfolded. He is then placed in the coffin. The officer approaches, now that the coffin has been carried into the darkened temple. He stops with a napkin dipped in the consecrated water the nostrils of the candidate, much distressing him.” Anton LaVey wrote in *The Satanic Rituals: Companion To The Satanic Bible:* “The ceremony of rebirth takes place in a large coffin. This is similar to the coffin symbolism that . . . is found in most lodge rituals.” (pg. 57)

Andreia 6/27

Die
NO MORE PAIN
NO MORE
Live
Bill hates me
Nobody loves me yet
Much

I dont know which to choose to live or die every body I loved is gone I dont know Kathleens husband and daughter I dont know if they will accept me I am scared I dont want to feel old pain / new pain but part of me wants to live who is helping me?

ANDREIA – CONTEMPLATING SUICIDE, 6/27/90

Catalina's
rage from
little Kathy

6/28/90

CATALINA–CHANNELING LITTLE KATHY'S RAGE, 6/28/90

6-28-90

Flashback - dad
swings to hit
man on side with
wooden bat. I think
he hurt him really bad.
Dad was very angry.

Catalina Age 11

Andreia's memory - I do
not talk about it much.
I do not want to be
angry like dad was angry.
Andreia

CATALINA AND ANDREIA – DAD BEAT MAN TO DEATH, 6/28/90

Reality
Andreia 7/2/90

ANDREIA – MY RAINBOW PROGRAMMING, 7/2/90

7/2

"Dolly" - Purpose - Magick

Take what is bad and make it good
Take what is good and make it bad

Blood into water

(Water of life, living water)

Water into blood
Life into death

(Babies are best, uncontaminated)

Death into life

(Newness of life)

Strong into Weak

(Renewed strength)

Weak into Strong

(sacrifice to our lord)

DOLLY/DREIA – RITUALISTIC "ENERGY TRANSFERS", 7/2/90.

DORA
MARCEY
GO TO SLEEP
REST
KATE
NIKKI
NO SEX
(4) CINDY
SCREW YOU
DOLLY
UNDECIDED
WAKE
SLEEP
?
MAYBE
WHO REALLY KNOWS
DOES IT MATTER
WHO REALLY KNOWS
LOST CHILDREN
RENEE
SAD
NOT TIME YET
WAKE SLEEP
?
I AM SAFE HERE
LET ME SLEEP
WHO REALLY KNOWS
DOES IT MATTER
WAKE SLEEP
WHO REALLY KNOWS
come up! DANGER!
Ashley (Nikki help)
BAD THINGS
(3)
PENNY
SANDRA/KATHLEEN
(5)
BAD
KATHY
I'm tired
HEATHER
FAT
ANDREIA
I say some
Noone does it
DRINK
CATALINA
I WANT A
(HIDE)
KATHLEEN JR
HELEN
THEY BLAME ME
GLORIA
OTHER FRIEND
CHRIS

GROUP OF CHILD ALTER-STATES AS DIAGRAMMED
BY A CHILD PART, SUMMER 1990

RENEE – HER PART OF THE MEMORY OF DAD RITUALLY MURDERING A FEMALE CULT MEMBER, 7/90 (SEE 4/31/90)

They made me stand beside
the coffin they put the dirt
on the black cloth

Andreia 7/11

Her body was there but her soul was gone
My body was there and my soul was still there
too.
She was dead but I was alive. Not the same!!
Who was she!! Was she somebody important to [illegible]
What was the purpose in them doing this?

I got gooey stuff—
slimeys on my face & neck & chest. They took me to the
[redacted] [redacted] house. She made me take a shower and
she washed my clothes so noone would ever know.

ANDREIA – COFFIN MEMORY, 7/11-7/18/90

Kathleen- recurring nightmares about 'screaming lady'- (Gloria)

8/17/90

GLORIA – RECURRING CHILDHOOD NIGHTMARE, 8/17/90

8-17-90

Gloria- being tortured w/ 'cattle prod' (whatever the hell *that* is!)

GLORIA – TORTURED BY DAD WITH CATTLE PROD, 8/17/90

Margaret Age 9 8.23.90

" Bed of Nails"

Cat bleed on it and meow loud cry
I lay on it no blood bokey holes in my
back and butt - look like I sat on a
catus. "Very improssive", men said.

MARGARET – BED OF NAILS, 8/23/9

Margaret
Age 9 (8-23-90)
Old Man
Gray har
likes me
No pain No gain

MARGARET – TORTURED BY FIRE, 8/23/90

KATHY – AGE 4, SPLIT OFF NEW PART (KATHLEEN), 1/4/91

Age 8-10
Melissa
Assassin Training

MELISSA – AGE 8, SPLIT-OFF DICK TRACEY ALTER-STATE, 8/12/90

MARLA DID LADY
I WACHET
ANNIE
DONOT TELL
KATHLEEN
GET UPSET

MARLA – WAS TAUGHT HOW TO CUT A BODY AND REMOVE ORGANS; ANNIE SHARED CONSCIOUSNESS

Traumatic Memories

Dr. R

Because alter-states and memories continued to emerge after I'd returned from Denver, Dr. T referred me to an associate in Atlanta who had some understanding of MPD. I first consulted with Dr. R in June, 1990. The psychiatrist was intelligent and surprisingly gentle. I was impressed by the many framed, black and white photos that he'd hung on the walls of his large, ornate room where he conducted our therapy sessions.

Although we met three times a week, there was never enough time for all of my emerging alter-states to share their experiences with him. I continued to process most of my memories at home, letting the parts draw pictures or write their memories in my journals.

After I'd met with Dr. R for about six months, he asked if it were possible that my memories were fantasy. At home that night, a child part that had opened up to him felt so painfully betrayed that she prepared to swallow all the pills in the house. As usual, Catalina took temporary control of the body and called Dr. R to explain the situation. Dr. R apologized to both alter-states, and said he'd work harder on listening to them without judging.[1]

Although I felt frightened and angry when I learned that I could have died that night, I now believe that what I'd told Dr. R about my past had probably been so horrific, his gentle soul couldn't deal with it.

Dr. X

In the late spring of 1991, several black op parts emerged. Full of emotional pain, they were dangerously suicidal. To stay alive, I needed to remain in a locked hospital unit while working with them. A contact told me about Dr. X, a psychiatrist who practiced in Dallas, Texas. She said that Dr. X was familiar with my mental programming, and advised me to check into his dissociative disorders psychiatric unit at Bedford Meadows Hospital, where she said I would receive specialized help.

When I told Dr. R that I wanted to go to that hospital, he said I should remain in Atlanta to work through my memories with Dr. R on an outpatient basis. When I disagreed, we had a falling-out. I never talked to him again.

Unhappy about traveling to Texas to enter another locked psych ward for God only knew how long, I kept reminding myself of a saying I'd learned at Crossroads: "The truth shall set you free, but first it shall make you miserable."[2]

When I checked into Bedford Meadows, Dr. X was away on vacation. His unit was tiny, and there wasn't enough staff to meet clients' basic needs. When some of the female clients tried to kill themselves, I and other clients had to protect them from self-injury with pillows, our bodies, and whatever else was available.

One young female constantly banged large dents in the corridor walls with her forehead. Anytime we heard thuds, we rushed to her and placed our pillows between her head and the wall. An older female repeatedly wrapped a telephone wire tightly around her neck, grinning. Her face turned gray-purple and her eyes bulged each time she fought our attempts to loosen it–still grinning. A thin, elderly female nearly died when she hung herself in her shared bedroom.

I was traumatized from witnessing one suicide attempt after another. I still joke that I should have been paid for the work I did that first week as a "staff member." Because I felt unsafe, I wasn't able to start working on my own reasons for being there.

Exhausted one day, I lay on my back on a sofa in the tiny lounge beyond the locked nurses' station. Suddenly and without warning, I experienced a powerful, full-body abreaction. My body tensed all over and I screamed involuntarily. Every muscle seemed to either tense or lengthen–it was hard to tell–and I couldn't stop the convulsions.

Each time another abreaction started, I pushed my face into a pillow to mute my screams. A soft-spoken, older female patient sat on the sofa and stayed with me through two days of convulsions. She stroked my hair and spoke soothingly until each abreaction ended. The seemingly unending onslaught frightened me, and yet neither of the unit's two nurses ever asked if I needed help. I was frightened because I didn't understand what these abreactions were about, and I didn't know if they'd recur (after the second day, they didn't).[3]

After a week, Dr. X returned to the unit. The psychiatrist's presence was like oil on troubled waters. He reminded me of a tall, thin Svengali.

His dark, commanding eyes and voice put clients into an immediate trance; they instantly stopped acting out. That amazed me.

Because the small unit and insufficient personnel didn't meet our needs, Dr. X convinced all of us to transfer to Charter-Grapevine, a nearby hospital. I decided that if Dr. X moved to the other hospital, I would go with him.

As we boarded several white Charter-Grapevine vans in Bedford-Meadows' parking lot, Dr. X excitedly boasted that the incident would be reported in professional journals. He said it was the first time in history that an entire psychiatric unit had transferred in protest from one hospital to another. I felt empowered by the idea that I had participated in such an event.

Charter-Grapevine

During one of our first group therapy sessions in the new dissociative disorders unit at Charter-Grapevine, Dr. X said that he'd secretly set it up during his vacation. Then he told us to map our internal systems of alter-states on large pieces of paper and bring our maps to the next session. He didn't suggest any specifics.

Alone in my shared bedroom, I put myself into a trance so knowledgeable alter-states could emerge and draw the map. Within hours, they'd used pastel pens to create a fairly elaborate, large diagram of different groups of alter-states that had specific programmed functions. The primary groups, or systems, were code-named Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta and Omicron. When I compared my diagram to others' at the next group session, I was disappointed. I found no similarities in their maps, and didn't understand–yet–that my map was encoded. I feared that it was pure gibberish.

After the session, I went back to the bedroom, relaxed, and ceded control to the parts that had drawn it, asking them to please explain it to me. When I regained consciousness, I learned that an unfamiliar adult male alter-state had emerged. Emotionless, he had told a nurse sitting behind a large counter that he could scan the nurse's station and quickly identify twelve items to kill the staff with.

The nurse had handled the situation well by listening without showing any fear or anger. She later told me that she'd recognized that the alter-state had tried to communicate, in an awkward way, what he'd been trained to do.

The next day, another male adult part emerged. He believed that he must kill “the body” because other parts were close to telling secrets to the staff. He was frustrated when he couldn’t find a television antenna to pierce my heart–the unit had cable hookup. Since he’d been programmed to suicide in only that way, he was then free to talk to the staff and to share his memories with me.

Lee, a tall, young blond technician, was especially gentle and helpful during my stay. He and another male technician spent a lot of time talking and bonding with my male, black op trained alter-states. They helped those parts to accept my brand of morality, and to discover new reasons to live.

Lee made a deal with several of them: if they sensed that a new part was emerging that could be dangerous to “the body” or to others, cooperative alter-states would alert the staff, walk willingly into the quiet room, and be put in leather restraints on a padded table. That way, the staff could talk to potentially violent alter-states in safety. Most of my op-trained alter-states first emerged in those restraints.

Being put in restraints had a downside, however. It re-traumatized alter-states that had previously been put in restraints by perpetrators to be drugged, electro-shocked, and more.

I’m glad that none of my alter-states attacked staff members. I watched as other patients, especially females, physically assaulted and injured some of the workers–especially males. Too many times, staff members came to work with casts on their arms, or limping, or with broken fingers.

Dr. X’s hand-picked, personally trained staff had been careful to search all my belongings. They’d removed all metal and glass objects–“sharps”–that I could have used to harm myself or others. Even spiral bound notebooks were not allowed.

Several emerging alter-states searched for light bulbs they could break and use to cut my veins, but the bulbs were encased in metal cages. Because no bars had been installed in the clothes closets, they couldn’t hang themselves. Even the mirror in my vanity case had been removed. The search continued.

One day, a female child alter-state emerged in the bedroom while my roommates socialized in the day room down the hall. Sensing she was in a place where secrets might be told, she believed she must kill the body. She dismantled my wind-up alarm clock and prepared to slice my wrists by using one of the clock’s metal hands.

Susan, my young female therapist, unexpectedly entered the bedroom. As the black-haired woman introduced herself to the child part, who refused to speak, she asked what the child part was hiding in her hand. Unable to lie, she showed Susan the metal objects. Susan praised the child part for being so clever, and obtained the clock and metal pieces without a struggle.

Several days later, another child part emerged and discovered she could cut my flesh with the sharp point of folded foil from containers of orange juice in the unit's refrigerator. She tried to cut my exposed veins in my wrists and inner elbows. Fortunately, the foil wasn't sharp or strong enough. When the child part realized she wouldn't succeed, she receded. Catalina took over and cried from pain and emotional shock as she showed a nurse the throbbing gouges. The nurse murmured soothingly as she applied small bandages; she was used to seeing self-injuries.

When I emerged after that incident, I realized that some of my alter-states seriously wanted to successfully suicide. I feared for my life and deeply resented their existence.

About a week later, an adult female op-trained alter-state gained full control. For some reason, she believed that an airline ticket waited for her at the Dallas-Fort Worth Airport, across the expressway from the hospital. At dusk, she stood on the unit's open-air, concrete patio until the other clients had all gone inside to watch television. When she silently ascended the wooden fence that surrounded the patio, the flimsy latticework atop it cracked loudly. She receded and I emerged to find myself flopped over the top of the fence, unable to move in either direction without making a lot of noise.

Lee sprinted outside to the opposite side of the fence to prevent me from running away. Several nurses came out onto the patio and gently coaxed me down, then escorted me inside as I cried and shook. I was so embarrassed–what else were these parts capable of? And what might have happened to me at that airport?

Witch Hunt

Dr. X and his staff made a crucial mistake that slowed down my recovery process for several years. They constantly encouraged me and other patients to focus on "demons" and "demonic ties" that they said lurked within our bodies. They instructed us to mentally review every occult ritual that we could remember. They told us to pray and break every demonic tie imaginable, including any ties from our past that were created during sexual interactions–even from being raped!

Trusting they had information I didn't, I obeyed. Some of my newly emerging adult parts grew alarmed. They had risked death to divulge important information about how they had been programmed to perform black ops–especially for the CIA. And yet, I was now being told to focus on invisible ties from occult rituals and sexual interactions!

Because I was a member of a Pentecostal church, I believed Dr. X when he repeatedly insisted that most of our alter-states were demonic introjects (spiritual invaders). He gave each of us a paperback book written by his colleague, Dr. James Friesen, who seemed to believe the same. One evening, we sat in the day room as Dr. X played a videotape about trauma survivor Truddi Chase, author of *When Rabbit Howls*. Dr. X told us Ms. Chase had "failed to integrate" because she hadn't prayed away her hundreds of demons that, he said, were still posing as alter-states.[4]

In individual sessions and in group therapy, we were encouraged to visualize ourselves pouring the "blood of Jesus" on internal child alter-states to chase away lurking demons. This definitely was not good for me, mentally. Dr. X also told us to visualize placing alter-states in cages or soundproof rooms, so that the few remaining "true" alter-states couldn't hear the lies of the "demons," or their screams, in our minds. Again this wasn't good for me, but I did it, believing that Dr. X knew what was best.

In group therapy, he told us to prayerfully ask Jesus and angels to enter our bodies to oust the remaining demons. This especially bothered me because as a child, I'd been raped during a porn shoot by a bearded man dressed in a white robe–he'd played the role of Jesus Christ. (Some pornographers are really twisted.)

Although uncomfortable with most of Dr. X's instructions, I still complied. Because no one else openly complained, I assumed I must be wrong for feeling uncomfortable and for daring to consider that my "demons" might be human.

My assigned hospital psychiatrist, who saw patients in several different units, formally complained that members of Dr. X's staff were constantly putting me and other clients in restraints in the quiet room, then praying over us—rather like exorcists. In response, I filed a handwritten complaint against that psychiatrist, reminding the hospital administrators of my right to practice my religion. Dr. X expressed his appreciation for my doing this.

By the end of my two-month hospital stay, I'd used visualization techniques to internally lock up, cage, and exorcise all of my "demons." I'd also created a new host personality named Grace. During a phone call, I told Bill to address me as Grace from then on. Dr. X seemed pleased, and told me that I was fully integrated. I believed him. He said he would add me to his list of success stories that he shared with other mental health professionals.

In the beginning of October, I was discharged. When Bill came to the hospital to take me home, I cried and didn't want to leave. He was deeply hurt and didn't understand that I feared I'd be killed for having told people about what I'd done for the CIA. I now believed that Dr. X's hospital unit was my only safe refuge.

After leaving the hospital, Bill took me to Dr. X's nearby office for a private meeting. There, the psychiatrist instructed me to send him copies of all of my future journals. He said he would use my information to help other clients to deprogram. Flattered, I agreed to do so.

At home in Atlanta, I typed my daily journals and sent copies to the psychiatrist, once a week. Later, I recorded some of them on cassette tapes to send to him. For some bizarre reason, I believed that as long as Dr. X had copies of all of my journals, no one would hurt me. I also believed that as long as I communicated my alter-states' emerging memories to him, I didn't need a local therapist.

Because I'd developed strong emotional bonds with several staff members and some of the patients at Charter-Grapevine, Atlanta was a lonely place. I had no one to talk to about my still-emerging memories. I slipped back into denial, insisted I was fully integrated, and did my best to ignore new flashbacks.

After about a month, a friend called to confront me. She said she was tired of my bullshit; no one could integrate hundreds of alter-states in just two months! Happy to hear her voice, several child alter-states popped out and told her that "Grace" was a smokescreen I'd unconsciously created to hide the existence of my unintegrated "demonic" alter-states. They asked, what else could I have done? If I'd refused to say I had cast the "demons" out, I would have been accused of not cooperating with Dr. X or with Jesus Christ!

When I came back into consciousness, I remembered what those parts told my friend. Terribly embarrassed, I apologized to her and to Bill and asked them to please call me Kathleen from then on.

Therese

For the next six months, I tried to cope without a therapist. I gave up when my flashbacks were too severe to handle on my own. After several weeks of asking around, I learned about Therese, a local psychologist who had successfully worked with Vietnam Veterans and with several severely dissociated ritual abuse survivors. During my first consultation with her, I sensed she was what I needed. She was upbeat, intelligent, and a fighter.

We decided I would meet with her twice a week. I noticed that her office was full of unusual knick-knacks that she said clients had given her over the years. Several were similar to paraphernalia I'd seen in Pagan rituals. When I mentioned that, she explained that their real meanings had nothing to do with Paganism. She helped me to understand that because I was sensitive to hundreds of triggers, I would inevitably encounter some of them in regular life.

With her help, I accepted the reality that not all candles and Halloween items in store windows represented occult rituals, and not all people who used triggering phrases were bad guys. Coincidences happened. I practiced desensitizing myself to such items and phrases by giving them nicer, non-perp meanings. As I did, I started to gain power over many of my trauma-induced triggers.

Because Therese was familiar with multiplicity, alter-states and personality fragments emerged in her presence. Each was eager to share information and experiences with her. She was careful not to suggest anything, and explained that her job was to listen and to help me adjust to the information that those parts compartmentalized.

Therese recognized that I still suffered from heavy guilt and grief because of what I'd been forced to do in the past. In a gentle voice, she often repeated a phrase: “Less judgment and more curiosity.” Her serene acceptance of what seemed abhorrent in me saved my life when the bulk of my sociopathic assassin alter-states emerged.

Black Op Alter-States

Most of my black op alter-states saw themselves as adult males. They complained to Therese that life at home was painfully dull. They were accustomed to working within extremely dangerous parameters, adrenaline pumping, making split-second decisions, enjoying the rush, facing death again and again, and winning. They didn't want to live a normal life. They wanted to go back to their handlers; they didn't want to be freed. As I interacted with the alter-states in therapy sessions, journals, and internal dialogue, I discovered deeper and more troubling reasons for their insistence in going back to the perpetrators.

First–if a local handler were to call me at home to instruct an alter-state to meet with him or her, and if the alter-state were to refuse, retribution could be swift and painful. Because these alter-states had been created through severe torture, they were terrified of pain and would do anything to avoid being "punished" for disobedience.

Second–they were convinced that if they did not obey, someone else–possibly my daughter–would also be tortured, raped, and possibly killed. Although some of these parts didn't want to do illegal activities again, they also couldn't bear for any child to be hurt or killed in their stead.

Third–these parts felt hopeless and believed they had no choice but to obey the handlers.

Finally–in the past, if they had been instructed to participate in a murder, they had cooperated because they'd believed the targeted individual would be killed regardless of who was sent in to do the job. They'd been programmed to believe it was better to kill one person than to disobey and be killed along with the target. In each situation, they'd been forced to choose between a lesser or greater evil.

The mental and emotional toll from performing black ops had been intense. Each time these parts had killed human targets, they'd felt more emotionless and bestial. They carried the greatest pain and horror of all: believing they were irretrievably evil.

Most of my black-op alter states had wanted to commit suicide at some time in the past. One had tried while in captivity, after she'd been forced to sign a legal document given to her by an alleged CIA handler. Afterwards, while left alone in a bathroom, she'd punched a glass mirror in a medicine cabinet and prepared to slash my wrists with a shard of glass. Fortunately, a black ops partner named Peter had entered and intervened, gently coaxing her into giving him the shard. That had made the alter-state feel more hopeless–she couldn't even suicide to stop the killing!

Some of my alter-states had emotionally bonded with op handlers, programmers, and with men who had claimed to be my owners. Some alter-states believed they were still owned by the men who had paid to use their services. These parts were so lacking in everyday knowledge, they didn't even know that slavery was illegal!

Some of the emotional bonding had occurred during sexual encounters. And some of my parts had identified with and molded themselves after the perceived personalities of programmers and "masters." An especially powerful type of bonding had occurred when these alter-states had witnessed the "good side" of the tormentors. Even the worst perpetrators had good qualities. Some of them were deliberately kind to the alter-states, pretending to treat them as equals. Those perp-loyal alter-states didn't know that other parts of my shattered personality had been betrayed, tortured, and sometimes sexually assaulted by the very same criminals!

I felt helpless and frightened when I couldn't stop my perp-loyal parts from reporting back. I had to wait until they became co-conscious with other alter-states that held memories of having been hurt or brutally betrayed by the same perpetrators. Only then were they willing to break their allegiances and cooperate with me.

I made sure these parts had sufficient time to grieve the loss of their unhealthy relationships with the perpetrators. Once they realized they'd been betrayed and duped, they became my fiercest fighter and self-protector alter-states.

Part of breaking away meant choosing not to respond to late-night, encoded phone calls from a succession of young children. They inevitably called just before a major occult holiday, asking to speak to an alter-state, by name, that I'd already identified and documented. The children sounded emotionally blank, as if they were reciting what they'd been told to say. Those phone calls were especially upsetting, because I believed the children were still being hurt at Aryan rituals.

Reframing

Each time I found another part that was still active, I felt devastated. Sometimes I wondered if maybe I should just give up and go back to the perpetrators. During that phase of recovery, I learned that I am a fighter. When facing overwhelming odds, I have a spark inside that just won't quit. I'm lucky that my fight instinct had been powerfully reinforced during brutal black ops training, and then by real op experiences.

Even if the entire world were to burn down around me, I was determined to be the one human still standing with a heartbeat.

Therese helped me to forgive myself when some parts did report back–usually by phone. Instead of berating myself, I reframed each discovery. Each time I successfully enlisted another reporting part's loyalty, I was a step closer to full freedom.

After a year of working with Therese, I uncovered another secret that terrified me: Bill also had spook-loyal alter-states. I hadn't remembered earlier, because I hadn't felt strong or supported enough by people outside our marriage. Now, however, I was ready to face the hard, cold truth. Not only had he recently done work with the ASA; he had also, in the past, occasionally handled me for the CIA during covert ops. As I remembered this, I feared that his CIA-loyal alter-states could be activated to betray me again.

Therese taught me to set up contingency plans in case of an emergency. My stepmother agreed I could stay at her house if needed. I insisted that my car be put in my name only. I opened a safety deposit box in my name, where I put my passport and other important papers that Bill couldn't access.

Only then did I confront him about his own multiplicity and insist that he also see a therapist. I explained if he didn't start getting co-conscious with his own alter-states, our marriage was over. As much as I loved him, I couldn't put myself at that kind of risk anymore.

Bill decided to consult with Bob since I'd done fairly well with him in the past. As Bill allowed alter-states to emerge in Bob's office, several of Bill's adult parts related details of covert ops that Bill, as the host alter-state, had completely blocked out. Because he'd never worked with a client like Bill before, Bob wasn't quite sure how to respond.[5] Therese explained to Bob that the best he could do was to simply listen in a non-judgmental way.

After Bill's alter-states emerged in therapy with Bob, they came home to meet me. Having so many alter-states popping out at the same time put an additional strain on our marriage. We often regressed and flashbacked at the same time. Sometimes, we both morphed into op trained assassins that were edgy, hyper-vigilant, and distrustful. (Play wrestling was *not* a good idea at those times.)

As we continued to remember, independently of each other, we both realized that we definitely had known each other long before I'd first met Bill's "William" alter-state in 1985.[6]

Bill's verification of our previous connections worried me. I questioned why we had chosen to marry each other. Was it because of our strong trauma bond from past ops? Was I Stockholming with Bill, marrying him and drawing close to him so that his CIA-loyal parts wouldn't hurt me? How much of our marriage was healthy? Any of it? Could it still be salvaged after we'd each remembered enough to take charge of our own lives?

I chose not to make any hasty decisions. After a number of heart-to-heart talks with Therese and other people in my support network, I decided I would focus on recovering, integrating, and growing stronger and more independent. I developed a stronger support network outside of our marriage so if I did have to leave Bill to stay safe, I wouldn't crumble. Having the freedom to leave also gave me the freedom to stay.

Return to Texas

In August 1992, two new child alter-states emerged. They both threatened to self-destruct–one, by fire. I returned to Texas to consult privately with Dr. X at his new unit at Cedars Hospital. As I met with him during our initial consultation, I told him that hundreds upon hundreds of alter-states had come out since I'd discharged from Charter-Grapevine. He said this meant I had "polyfragmented MPD" (poly = many). This fit, because some of my alter-states had journaled that Mom had told them I was a "thousand-piece jigsaw puzzle."[7]

I consulted with Dr. X almost every day for the next two weeks. During one private session, a male alter-state, code-named Lucifer, emerged. At the next session, Dr. X said this alter-state was the real Lucifer, which he'd met in another client a week earlier in Florida. Certain that Dr. X was wrong (the alter-state was definitely human), I realized that going back to Texas was a mistake. For the remainder of my hospitalization, I pretended to believe whatever Dr. X said so that I could leave as soon as possible.

After my discharge, I ceased all contact with the psychiatrist. After working so hard for years to accept and blend with my alter-states, I had–at his advice–rejected and accused them of being deceitful demons! And by rejecting and harshly judging them, I'd really rejected my own self–thereby *increasing* my amnesia and personality fragmentation! I decided that would never happen again.

Exploring the Dark Side

Because I've had many struggles about accepting the misnomered "evil" or "demonic" side of my personality, I understand why some severely dissociated survivors don't want to believe that their seemingly malevolent or "dark" alter-states are not split-off parts of their original whole personalities.

Acceptance of our fully human "dark side" requires great courage and a willingness to self-forgive.[8] Too many of our religious leaders have difficulty accepting the primal and wounded parts of their own humanity, which is why they often use excessive religion to avoid knowing themselves. Some of them treat their past selves as something that can be cut off or discarded, instead of being forgiven and embraced as part of the whole. If they're afraid to accept all of *their* own humanity, is it any wonder that some of them try their best to discourage us from accepting all of *our* selves?

I did things during ops that were absolutely bestial. I believe this is why I'd tried so hard to be spiritual and holy, before the memories came. My personality was polarized between overly "good" and overly "bad," keeping me from being able to blend and integrate into one entity.[9]

Before I started working with Therese, I'd had a hard time forgiving myself for what my assassin programmed parts had done. With her skilled help and support, I learned that I was no exception to the rule: any reasonably intelligent person can be brutally manipulated and conned into committing crimes against their conscious will–especially if the conditioning and torture begin in early childhood.

It was time for me to grieve the knowledge that I had experienced a soul-shattering crossover from rational humanity to primal brutality that, if I were God, no person would experience.

One of my difficulties in forgiving myself was that I was a female living in the Southeast. One of our Southern society's moral codes is that females are supposed to be gentle, passive caregivers. When assaulted, they are supposed to stay victims. They are not supposed to be physically aggressive, and they are expected to cry instead of expressing anger. I'd broken all of these rules to the nth degree.

During this crucial phase of my recovery, my depression and alienation from humanity were especially dangerous. So many times, I had to go to extraordinary measures to survive one more day, one more night. Part of my survival kit was information. The more I learned about what humans are capable of under extreme pressure and duress, the more I was able to accept my faults and limitations as well as the primal side of my human personality.

Lieutenant Colonel David Grossman wrote a ground-breaking book that examines the motivations and effects of killing others. Although the study was based mostly on his findings within the military, I could relate to much of what he wrote. His book, *On Killing: The Psychological Cost of Learning to Kill in War and Society* helped me to make great strides in understanding and accepting my "dark" side.

Grossman explained that the primal parts of the human brain that take over during danger do not need to function during safe times. This explains why my black op parts were so feral, a state in which I didn't find myself at any other time. I learned that my black op alter-states couldn't have rationalized and thought about the consequences of their actions (even if they'd had access to my store of knowledge) because they'd been in danger, and therefore had tunnel vision and tunnel thinking. All they'd been able to think about was carrying out their orders and surviving–one more time.

When my more empathic parts had first learned about the assassinations, they'd felt powerful remorse, regret, and guilt. They'd also felt anger and hatred towards the black op parts for not having cared about the targeted victims. Grossman's book helped bridge the schism between these two polarized sets of alter-states. Gradually, they met in the middle and began to blend.

Would I attack someone now, if provoked? Only if absolutely necessary. Although my "kill or be killed" primal reflex will always be in the background, I've developed other responses that are more helpful in stressful situations.

With emerging rage comes strong physical energy. During the early part of my recovery, I occasionally needed physical outlets to safely exert my volcanic energy in ways that would harm no one. This was the rage that had deliberately been reinforced and compartmentalized in my mind for decades, to be triggered and used by handlers to hurt and kill others. I had to learn new ways to express that energy. Although many abuse survivors turn their anger onto themselves by self-harming, I was conditioned to express it outwardly–albeit in controlled settings.

If I feel angry now, I might physically remove myself from the situation until I can think and respond calmly. I might call a support person to help me think things through. And instead of freezing, trancing, and obeying when approached by former handlers, I can now enlist help from others, or walk away and laugh, knowing that the handlers are still trapped and I am free.

In earlier stages of my recovery, I expressed my anger in many unmailed letters to perpetrators and complicit family members. The rage and pain were so intense, my clothes were often soaked with sweat by the time I'd finished writing.

I expressed some of my rage's immense physical energy by walking fast on my treadmill or by visualizing faces on a punching bag and slamming it. When I grew exhausted, I knew that particular "pocket" of rage had been sufficiently expelled.

If I felt fury, which was stronger than rage, I used a sledgehammer to break old slabs of concrete, or a pickaxe to remove rocks and thick roots from the ground in my garden, imagining the roots to be rapists' penises. (That was highly satisfying.)

In the house, I used a wooden dowel or a plastic bat to hit a mattress while I screamed at visualized perpetrators. (I wore a pair of sports gloves to avoid blisters.)

For a period of several days, one child alter-state that had been conditioned to kill had so much fury at anything living and breathing–including me–I nearly didn't survive. She wanted to pull up and destroy every plant on our property. She wanted to go to a mall and kill many people, indiscriminately. She wanted to drive my car at a high speed into an oncoming cement or dump truck.

Her unique solution was to find dead animals on the road and drive over the carcasses, back up, and drive over them again. This sounds extreme, but her *rage* was so extreme that nothing else worked. After about two days, the need to harm others was gone, and she never had to run over carcasses again.

So much rage emerged during my first decade of memory recovery, I felt like a walking volcano. That terrified me, because I didn't want to hurt innocents! I gradually realized that, regardless of my emotional state, I'd always worked hard not to hurt others–when I had a choice. When the rage had surfaced in my "regular" life, I'd chosen to isolate, power walk, or turn the rage into tears to protect those around me.

My support network has helped me to understand that I was not and am not a perpetrator, because perpetrators commit crimes by choice. I was a good person who was repeatedly forced into the most awful situations. I did what was necessary to survive and remain sane.

Working with my rage-filled parts, I also learned that no matter how much anger they had, they would never take it out on anyone who gave them caring and kindness. Perhaps this is because they had become rageful through torture and abuse, and therefore were starved for positive attention.

Therese encouraged me to take the acceptance of my primal side one step further. She explained that I needed to honor the parts of my humanity that had preserved my life. That concept was uncomfortable at first–how could I honor parts that had killed other humans? As I came to understand that the victims would have been killed regardless, and that I was a human tool and not a murderer, I allowed myself the right to feel gratitude for having survived.

Verifications

As memories continued to emerge, I scanned books at a local library for information that might verify some of them. Because my covert experiences had been so unusual, however, I had little luck. I was still careful to follow advice from a male staff member at Bethesda PsycHealth: I avoided reading books by survivors who claimed to have similar histories. When using reference books, I only looked at pages that contained specific information about names and organizations that I'd already remembered and journaled. I decided I'd rather not have enough information to verify a memory, than to subconsciously take in information from written materiel that could taint my memories.

Accepting my memories and making peace with them was hard work. The attached emotions were especially difficult to process, because they were new and unfamiliar. I needed time to learn how to feel and express them without being overwhelmed. Even joy was difficult to feel.

Although I processed some of my emerging memories with Therese, I worked through most of them at home by myself. So much information emerged after three decades of repression, no therapist could have possibly helped me to process it all.

Phobias

One of the ways I've been able to accept my memories is by recognizing that many of my irrational behaviors and phobias had actually originated from traumas I'd been blocking out. After I'd worked through the traumatic materials and integrated them as part of my conscious past, the resulting phobias usually faded away.

In May of 1994, a private consultant asked me to list my phobias. In one day, I listed 176. Since I've worked through almost all of their underlying traumas, nearly all of the phobias have dissipated. Having cognitive awareness of the underlying causes of those fears helped me to lessen their power over my mind and life. For example:

Before recovery, if the tiniest bit of a male dog's pink penis poked out, I couldn't stand for it to come anywhere near me.[10] Then I remembered the bestiality porn and worked through how it had affected me. After that, I adopted a male dog. The phobia is gone. I've emotionally bonded with him and don't see him as a sexual threat.

I felt nauseous if I was given any meat that was touched by sweet sauce–this phobia came from having been forced to suck on Dad's penis after he'd put honey or maple syrup on it. Since I have remembered and worked through the traumatic memories of having gagged and feared I'd die from suffocation, I can now eat meats with sweet sauces without flashbacking.

For decades, I was obsessed with looking for every stray hair in my bathroom – on the floor, in the tub, or wherever–and placing it in the trash receptacle. I "had to" brush off our bed every morning so not a single hair would be on it when I went to bed again. I couldn't stand to eat any food in which I'd found a hair. This phobia resulted from Dad's forcing me to eat victims' hair that he'd cut into bite-sized pieces with scissors. I'll admit that I'm still working on this phobia–but at least I know what it's about.

For decades, another phobia was about being in a room with a gun. This fear had developed, in part, because my mental programmers had implanted hypnotic suggestions to ensure that I would never allow a gun in my home, and would only handle one when professional handlers and trainers had direct control of me. I suspect they did this to keep me from accidentally reliving a training session or op at home and shooting someone.

After I remembered the black ops, the phobia was replaced by a new obsession: several of my alter-states *had* to have a "baby blue Beretta." They stated this was one of the guns that I'd used on ops. When Bill asked why I'd used such a small-caliber handgun, those parts explained that because they'd been conditioned to have excellent aim, the caliber hadn't mattered much. And of course, such a small gun is *much* easier to hide from human targets–until it's too late.

One day, I decided to face my fear by purchasing a small Beretta. I was so relieved when no one came to our home to arrest me for buying it! The first time I went to a local underground shooting range for target practice, I let several op-trained parts come out. Although their aim was still surprisingly accurate, they were uncomfortable because Bill insisted they hold it with both hands. Later, they explained to him that professional trainers had taught them to hold the handgun in just the right hand, so they could always keep the left hand free to self-defend and attack in other ways. (I probably couldn't have done this with larger handguns.)

At home, I practiced holding the Beretta in just my right hand. On a primal level, it was a completely natural sensation. I recalled what some of the spook trainers had told me about "my" gun: that it was my "baby," the most important thing in my universe. As I continued to use and feel the Beretta at the shooting range and at home, I realized another reason for my phobia towards guns was that I feared they would trigger visual flashbacks of the gory results of some of the black ops. Fortunately, that has not happened.

Whenever I feel a new fear that is irrational, I remind myself that this is probably a signal that another memory is emerging. This knowledge, paired with positive self-talk and relaxation techniques, keeps the fear from taking over.

Notes

1. One of the FMSF's claims is that mental health professionals should discourage their clients from accept emerging memories without proof of their veracity. I believe this irrational demand is a violation of survivors' basic rights. Why?

- Most repressed memories are of traumas that were perpetrated against the victims, in secret, by adults who had a clear and vested interest in hiding all evidence (to avoid societal disapproval, prison sentences, and more). Therefore, verifications are often unavailable to the recovering victims.
- If therapists tell clients they shouldn't accept their emerging memories without external proofs, the clients will not feel safe in baring their souls to the therapists. Perhaps this is what the FMSF wants-if we cannot talk to mental health professionals about what was done to us, we are effectively silenced.
- If trauma survivors are not supported in accepting their memories, this can reinforce their amnesia and dissociation, thereby keeping them vulnerable to certain types of predators.
- If the FMSF is successful within the legal system in forcing mental health professionals to discourage clients from accepting memories that the clients cannot initially prove, thereby silencing the clients during therapy, *the FMSF will have effectively sabotaged clients' right to free speech!*

2. Rick Stahlhut, M.D., M.S. is the originator.

3. A decade later, I remembered enough to know that the convulsions had been my body's way of reliving memories of forced electro-shock applications that I had endured as an adult, along with being forcibly drugged, in a government-run reprogramming ward in a psychiatric hospital not far from Atlanta. I believe this was intended to erase my memories of the most recent black op. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross cited information from a CIA ARTICHOKE (pre-MKULTRA) document that may explain why ECT (electroconvulsive "therapy") can be used to create amnesia in victims of mind control:

> The use of electric shock to the brain for the creation of amnesia, and amplification of the amnesia with hypnosis were discussed by the author of an ARTICHOKE document dated 3 December 1951:
>
> > . . . *One setting of this machine produced the normal electric-shock treatment (including convulsion) with amnesia after a number of treatments . . .[the experimenter] felt he could guarantee amnesia for certain periods of time and particularly he could guarantee amnesia for any knowledge of use of the convulsive shock.* (pg. 43)

4. Truddi Chase was one of the first severely dissociated trauma survivors to have their autobiography published. It helped an untold number of trauma survivors with MPD/DID to understand dissociation and the recovery process.

5. Although Bill's spook alter-states did share limited information about some military and/or covert ops with his therapist, they refused to divulge any details that would violate whatever oaths they or Bill had made during his 30-year career in the Army. I was equally careful not to share specific details of covert ops with any of

my therapists-not because I was worried about violating oaths (I'd taken none by choice), but because I didn't want to endanger them by telling them too much-my handlers had repeatedly told me that if I shared the memories with anyone, that person would be killed.

6. Because we had the potential to contaminate each other's emerging memories, I didn't discuss my op memories with Bill, other than a few specific details that I needed to verify (for example, the names of certain weaponry). I also insisted that he not tell me his op memories. Instead, we relied heavily on our therapists for primary support. They, in turn, didn't share our memories with each other. After about six years, Bill and I realized that our training and experiences, in general, were markedly different. After that, we occasionally shared op memories with each other-but only after we'd independently journaled and processed them.

7. Mom was aware that my mind had been so badly shattered by Dad and others that I had many hundreds of alter-states and personality fragments. This was deliberate on their part; Dad constantly told me he wanted to see how much of my brain he could activate and use, one piece at a time. Dad was careful, however, not to let Mom know my programming. I've met other mind-control survivors who were encouraged by perpetrators (as Mom encouraged me) to constantly assemble jigsaw puzzles. Doing that reinforced our false, implanted belief that we were in so many pieces that we would never fully come together. Dr. Colin Ross described polyfragmentation in *The Osiris Complex*:

    > It is impossible to have hundreds of fully formed personality states in one person because there isn't enough lifespace in one lifetime. In a polyfragmented patient, there will usually be a relatively small number of more fully formed personality states that have been responsible for the bulk of the person's experience. Often the personality fragments will hold a single memory or feeling, and many may never take executive control of the body . . . [the process of creating fragments] seems more like a memory-filing device in which memories are broken down into small pieces and stored under filing labels consisting of names and ages. (pg. 55)

8. Dr. Ross described one of the biggest problems that trauma survivors encounter when they choose to believe that their alter-states and personality fragments are negative spirit entities: "Defining demonic alter personalities as actual demons reinforces the dissociation, and perpetuates the problem, even if the alters are temporarily suppressed by an exorcism." (*Osiris* pg. 131)

9. I believe this is one reason why so many religious leaders have gotten into serious trouble. What happened to Jimmy Swaggart, a Pentecostal evangelist, was a good example. (More than once, he was caught interacting with prostitutes.) Some religious leaders try too hard to be holy and perfect in public. Secretly, they may feel fake and ashamed. To compensate for their excessive morality (as Bill Bennett did

by gambling), they may unconsciously allow their misnomered "dark side" to emerge and have control for a while, in an attempt to bring a temporary balance between the two poles of their personality.

10. Sometimes, as I remembered the bestiality, I felt angry at certain types of animals. When I did, I reminded myself, as many times as needed, that the animals had been trained and conditioned to do what was unnatural to them, as had I. They were not responsible for what they had done to me-their human trainers were.

Witness

Suicide?

Some of my emerging memories were so painful, I continued to push them away–including my memories of what I'd been forced to witness when Dad died.

After his funeral in 1990, I'd grown comfortable with the idea that he'd committed suicide. It made sense to me for two main reasons: first, two months earlier, he'd deeply cut his wrists, necessitating treatment in a psychiatric hospital. Second, his body had been found the same way his father's had–in his car, with carbon monoxide poisoning documented as the cause of death.

Several years after his death, two male relatives sent me letters in which they accused me of having killed Dad. Each man insinuated that because I'd gone to the authorities about Dad, he'd suicided. By the time I'd received their letters, however, I'd healed enough to know that he alone had been responsible for his suicide. And his being arrested for child molestation had equally been his fault . . . if he hadn't sexually assaulted me and other children, he wouldn't have been arrested!

Although I felt sad to have lost him prematurely, I also felt peace in knowing I had done all that I could while he was alive. I hadn't stopped loving him in a pure way, despite what he'd tried to do to distort that love. I had confronted him in several letters while reminding him that I still loved him. Because I had no regrets, I was able to grieve in a healthy way.

My peace was shattered in late 1992 when a new series of alter-states emerged. Each part gave me new pieces of memory about his death. At first I was shocked by what they told me. As the shock wore off, I was pummeled by waves of terror, guilt, grief, and rage. I expressed the emotions at home and in therapy. I realized that I'd pushed the memories completely away because I was severely traumatized by what I'd witnessed the night of Dad's death. On a scale of one to ten, based on all the traumas I'd ever experienced, his demise was definitely a ten.

With each revelation from these alter-states, I was more certain that Dad had been murdered.

In November of 1992, a sociopathic, op-trained alter-state emerged that had been conscious that night. She journaled:

> *I was with some adults at night. I had been given folded-up clothes that I was supposed to wear. They really upset me. There was a thick, black spandex, short-sleeved leotard with a sad-looking hound-dog appliqué on front. It had a nasty saying about "Joe's Bar and Grill." And then there was a blue, short-type spandex outfit that went over it with straps. It looked awful on me! It made me look like a lady mud wrestler or something!*
>
> *An older man was present. He was balding with curly, thinning, gray hair. We were using his facilities to change clothes. I had to pee, bad! We were in a hurry and the guy who was letting us use his place seemed really nervous. He had several bathroom stalls in a row that we were using to change in. Not very impressive looking. The doors and walls of the stalls seemed to be made of plywood.*
>
> *I was making everybody late by going back one more time to pee. The man was even more nervous, now. I was told that we were going to do a "hit job." I felt really offended and embarrassed that they had picked out this particular outfit for me to wear, but I also accepted the fact that if anyone tried to describe me, it would be the outfit they'd remember most, instead of my physical description.*
>
> *I remember too, that there was a plump-faced lady in one of the stalls to my left. Her hair was curly, black, and short. She was begging everybody not to flush the toilets, because if we do, then her toilet will start to overflow while she's still in there, changing her clothes. The plumbing was really screwed-up.*

Later that day, the alter-state recalled more: She'd been transported in a van to Dad's apartment complex and had seen him being assaulted in his rented garage while sitting inside his Pontiac Gran Prix. She didn't write that part of the memory because she knew I wasn't ready to know about it. It stayed hidden with her until January of 1993 when the memory tried to break through again, this time in a vivid dream:

It was the night Dad died. In the dream, I finally got up the nerve to go to his apartment, to see what it looked like. I had no conscious memory of ever going to that apartment. Yet, in the dream I had alters that swore they had watched Dad die in his rented garage, and that they had obeyed orders to clean out his apartment of all incriminating evidence connecting him to the Aryan cult network and the CIA.

Though I noted the dream in my journal, I blocked it out of my mind again. I wasn't ready to consider its significance.

Memories of Dad's Murder

Several days later, I got up the nerve to call my stepmother. When she answered the phone, I told her I'd recently remembered details that made me think Dad's death might not have been a suicide.

I'd been afraid to tell her, partly because I feared she would blame me for his death (she didn't) and partly because I didn't want to cause her more pain. Like me, she had begun to heal. I didn't want to cause her to feel the same raw grief I was experiencing. And yet, when she insisted that I tell her what I remembered, I felt obligated to do so. After all, she was an adult and his widow; she had a right to know.

When I told her what I'd remembered, I feared she would think I was making it up. Instead, she indicated that murder was a possibility. She said she had a copy of the coroner's autopsy report, and asked me if I wanted to know what was in it. I declined, explaining that if I'd really witnessed what had been done to him, I needed to ensure that the rest of the memory, when it emerged, would be uncontaminated.

The next day, more pieces of memory emerged, starting with emotions I'd still been suppressing. I journaled:

> *I am in bad shape today. Not suicidal—everything but. Major depression. Want to cry, but can't. Feel frantic inside, like I want to scream and scream, deeply. Primal emotions. Raw pain, anger, grief. Can't eat worth a flip, again. My stepmother called yesterday to talk some more about what I had told her about my father's "suicide" actually being a snuff job. She said that the*

> *Sunday night before Dad died, he went out of his way, during a quick visit to her and the kids after church, to hug and kiss each of his children and say goodbye. She had wondered why he said goodbye. He'd handed her the support check, which was also unusual for him. She also told me that three coils of rope had been found in the trunk of the car in which he was found dead, and the coroners showed her pictures of his body, with blood running out of his mouth. Also, she thinks it is very strange that they decided not to do any tests on his blood samples.*

Suddenly, I found myself co-conscious with an alter-state that had compartmentalized another piece of memory. As that part emerged, I fully relived the memory–visual, audible, tactile, everything. Devastating. As I journaled, its impact hit me like a hard punch in my stomach.

> *The night of my father's death, his spook associates had told him, in front of me, that he was being taken underground, to live somewhere else with a brand-new identity. That's why Dad was sitting in the front passenger seat of his car inside the small garage when I saw one of the goons, a professional assassin I knew as "Fred," put his arm around Dad's neck to kill him (I thought) from the back seat of the car. This is also why he didn't struggle or fight as we went into his rented garage. He honestly thought he was home, free!*[1]

I was puzzled by what I wrote. My stepmother had told me that the coroners had found his body on the *back* seat of his Gran Prix. But I had watched the man's arm go around his throat as he sat on the *front* seat.

Another puzzle: my stepmother had asked me why I thought his killers had wanted me there at all. When she'd asked, I hadn't been able to answer. When they had taken me to his garage, I'd believed they were probably going to interrogate him and maybe search his apartment, but I hadn't been prepared for seeing them *kill* him. Then I realized that I'd been forced to watch, to frighten me into silence. And more.

As I sat on my bed, pondering these new revelations, the same adult alter-state[2] wrote a scalding critique:

> *These assholes knew my psychological profile. They knew that I tended to blame myself, personally, any time someone*

> *died in a room with me, even if I had nothing to do with it. That, plus being a witness of [an execution] was meant to blackmail/frighten me into silence. After all, if they could do it to* him, *it only was a logical conclusion that they could do it to* me *next, if I didn't cooperate and keep my mouth shut . . . It worked very nicely (for them), at least until today.*

After the shock started to wear off, I felt sheer terror. I couldn't stop shaking and crying. If I'd been a witness, then I was an active liability to the killer and his accomplices because I could still identify them! All the fear I'd felt towards Dad, I now felt towards those men because they'd proven they were stronger and more powerful than he.

Several months later, my stepmother and I visited the Senior Forensic Investigator at the Office of the Medical Examiner in Decatur, Georgia. He had performed Dad's autopsy. I agreed to let him tape-record my statement about what I'd remembered. I wish now that I had made a second tape for myself because I remember very little of what I told him. I do remember that he offered to show me Dad's autopsy report, and that I declined. And I remember he did say, after I told him I remembered "Fred's" arm around Dad's neck, that no bones had been broken–therefore, that hadn't been the cause of death.

After I returned home that day, I wondered: although it would be nice to document what had been done to Dad, would taking further action help or hurt me? After talking to several people in my support network, I came to the conclusion that I'd be hurting myself if I pursued it further. I'd done my duty as a citizen by telling them what I'd remembered. I needed to leave it at that.

I wrote a five-page letter to the investigator, explaining that I was not willing to share more memories if they emerged, and was not willing to testify if Dad's connections to the CIA could be proven.

My stepmother had been concerned that the investigators might think I'd made up the story so she could get additional life insurance payments for my father's death (she didn't). In the letter to the examiner, I explained that I hadn't known about that possibility until after I'd told her what I'd remembered. I ended the letter: "Dad is dead. He can't be brought back. We who survived need to go on living."

"You Killed Your Dad"

Over the years, I recovered more bits and pieces of memories of Dad's murder. I recalled that one of the killers had led me across the dark parking lot into my father's apartment. Because I'd seen Dad's coded files before, and knew what was in them, I was now told to look through the metal file cabinet in which Dad had kept them. I was to pick out any that could connect Dad to the Aryan cult or to the CIA.[3] A slim woman stood to my left, watching me closely. She was maybe 5'7" with short curly brown hair. She was very agile and emotionally cold. Her light complexion was pitted; she had brown doe eyes. I would have guessed her to be about 35.

In another fragmented memory, Fred had driven me away from Dad's apartment in a black, compact car. I don't know where we went or how long he drove, but I do remember that we arrived at a one-story warehouse. Fred ordered me into the warehouse and handed me a black handgun. He told me to shoot a black paper silhouette of a man, hanging on a wire about halfway between us and the far wall. My training kicked in; I shot through where the heart would have been.

Fred leaned over my shoulder and spoke in a lowered voice, "You just killed your dad." Immediately, all of the guilt I'd felt for not saving Dad, for not even trying, slammed and immobilized me, sealing the memories of that night behind a desperately self-protective amnesia.[4]

Was He Moved?

In January 1995, Emily saw her first autopsy during training at the Georgia Bureau of Investigation. The case she saw had resulted from carbon monoxide poisoning. When she questioned the medical technician about how the circumstances of my father's demise compared with this case, he explained that bodies with carbon monoxide poisoning do not get red like Dad's did. He said that the red on the front of Dad's body would have resulted from his having lain, face-down, on a surface for more than four hours. He explained that the reddish discoloration came from blood that had pooled and settled in that part of his body after his circulation had stopped.

This was odd because Dad was six feet tall and his body was too long for him to have comfortably lain face-down on his car's back seat. I wondered–was Dad's body moved after he died? Was it possible that when the man put his arm around Dad's neck, he hadn't actually killed him?

Later, I discussed this with my husband, who had special forces training, and also with a trained wrestler. Both men explained that the arm lock around the front of my father's neck would have temporarily cut off the blood to his brain–rendering him unconscious but not necessarily dead.

This confirmed what the forensic investigator had told me, and meant that more had been done to Dad than I could remember. It couldn't have been that they'd left him in the car, because he wouldn't have stayed unconscious long enough to die from the carbon monoxide poisoning–at least, not from the arm lock alone.

As hard as I tried, I couldn't remember what had happened after I'd shot at the silhouette in the warehouse. That worried me.

Multiple Emotions

In March of 1996, as I sat on our carpeted bedroom floor, I went back into the memory of losing Dad, and recovered more of my shattered emotions. Like a very little girl, I wailed and wept and rocked myself. My journal captured the turmoil.

Daddy! It wasn't supposed to happen this way! It's wrong! It's wrong! It just so wrong!

A teenaged part wrote: *What does it matter? What does* anything *matter, anymore? Dad is dead. I was supposed to die with him. His secret-keeper was supposed to die with him. It is understood.*

So now I'm reeling. Oh no. Oh no. This is *real.*

Why, Daddy? Why?

I'm not Dad. It's not my place to protect him. He made his choices. I'm not Dad. Whatever his decisions, it was his choice, not mine.

Then an "angel" alter-state wrote: *Poor little boy Dad. They killed you. But did they really? Can your hidden goodness ever be killed?*

I never felt so murderous in my entire life as I did at Dad's attacker when that man put his arm around your neck.

And yet survival took over. Crawl. Obey. Stifle the screams with whimpers.[5] Pray–oh how I prayed–to God, to them–that they wouldn't finish me off too! Who wants to die when there is so much creativity and love yet to be expressed? Oh please don't kill me! Please don't end who I am! It's not time yet!

So then, just then, I began to betray you, little boy. By putting myself, my life, first. As I watched them, I felt so guilty. I still feel guilty, putting myself first.

Self-Defense

In the summer of 1997 at a local college, I took a self-defense course taught by a police trainer who was also a judo expert. Tall and strong, he patiently taught us basic moves to thwart attackers.

To my chagrin, I realized I didn't know how to defend myself against attackers without automatically planning to kill them! I was excited as I realized that now I could learn how to disable attackers without causing serious damage.

A difficulty arose when he told one of the women to sit in a chair in the recreation room, then stood behind her and put his arm around her neck. As he put the choke-hold on her, I had difficulty hearing and came very close to a full faint.

Pulling myself back into consciousness, I realized I was still deeply traumatized from having seen Fred do it to Dad, and was terrified that someone might do it to me! To get past the fear, I asked the instructor to teach me how to break that hold. He did.

I would have earned an 'A' in the self-defense class, but our final test was to encounter our fully padded, helmeted instructor in an unexpected location, and then defend ourselves when he attacked us. Fearing that an op-trained alter-state might be triggered out and get me into serious trouble, I skipped that test and settled for a high 'B.'

Suicide by Lifestyle

In March of 2002, I finally remembered that after Fred had taken me to the warehouse to shoot Dad's silhouette, Dad's unconscious body had been carried in, accompanied by several of his associates whom I knew very well. After that, they'd forced me to watch as one, a professional assassin, had killed Dad, leaving a tiny mark in a place no one would have thought to look.

Shaken, I pondered the significance of this new memory. What should I do now? Should I report what I saw? Wouldn't that put me in direct danger? And how could I prove what I saw, now that his body was gone? What good would it do to risk my life to tell what happened to a man who was already dead? It was time to let the guilt and pain of my lack of intervention go. I'm still certain that was the right decision to make–what's done is done; I need to go on living.

After that, I felt new grief over the loss of the Dad-I-could-have-had. I realized when the real Dad had been murdered, my fantasy Dad had also died. This grief was even worse!

Several days later, Bill and I went to a movie. After it ended, we watched a father and his teenaged daughter stroll up the carpeted aisle in front of us. I felt a sharp pain in the middle of my chest and fought back stinging tears. Later that night as I sat in bed next to Bill, I journaled:

> *They had their arms around each other, then let go and walked and talked. They looked completely relaxed and seemed to truly enjoy being together. I was almost physically paralyzed. For a few seconds, I was barely able to take another step.*
>
> That *was what I had wanted from Dad all along. Not sex. Real love! But to Dad, love meant nothing more than sex. So he never loved me as a father should love his child.*
>
> *From infancy, the man had me addicted to orgasms and his touch and smell, like an animal. He conditioned me to be addicted to what I didn't want, and meanwhile, what I needed the most, he never gave me.*
>
> *He robbed me of my dignity and my innocence. He made me feel filthy, no good, dirty, shameful, undeserving of human kindness. He made me feel "different" from the rest of the world. When I was with him, I was not myself.*
>
> *Every time Dad dragged me into the sea of shame, I found my way back to the safe dock of hope, based on the human hunger for a father's love, that love-that-could-still-be.*

> *And I waited there. For so many years, I waited, with my back turned to Dad's stinking sea, watching loving fathers with their emotionally fulfilled daughters. I kept waiting for my prince, the "Good Dad," to finally come and truly love me and cherish me, protect me and take me away from this horrid, stinking, shameful place. But he never came.*
>
> *And when his body was murdered and his soul left our world, still I stood on that dock, looking at the land of love and hope, ever scanning the horizon for the Good Dad, the Loving Dad. And he never came. And he will never come.*
>
> *In all truth, no one could ever be the "Good Dad" to me. My father cheated me. And then he robbed my soul. But I have my soul back now. And he's the loser. He's the sick one, not me . . . He was the only one who had the power to take my hope away. Now Dad is dead.*
>
> *So now I'm no longer waiting forlornly at the dock for the Good Dad who won't be coming. I'm headed back into the city of life and love, where I can re-light my little flame of hope and make sure it doesn't flicker out.*

Not long after I'd finally accepted Dad's manner of death, a psychologist familiar with the criminal underworld told me that, regardless of the physical cause of death, Dad had ultimately died of "suicide by lifestyle." This wise man's observation gave me a new perspective that helped me let go of the guilt I'd felt because I'd been unable to save Dad in the end.

Notes

1. After much soul-searching, I have decided that–as a witness to Dad's murder, my first moral responsibility is to protect myself and the lives of my loved ones. For this reason, I must limit what I write about it. Some secrets will probably die with me because for people like me, the witness protection program is not a viable option.
2. I had many alleged CIA-programmed, CIA-loyal alter-states. For years, some had secretly viewed my world through my eyes and learned what I knew while

continuing to hide their existence from me. Out of all my alter-states, these were least comfortable about sharing information with me. They feared that once I knew they existed, I would merge with them and then they wouldn't be able to go back anymore to the spook handlers who had claimed to work for the CIA's Directorate of Operations. These parts were emotionally addicted to being with those men. And yet, as they learned what I did about how cleverly I (and they) had been manipulated, they began to get angry at the handlers. That was their first step towards freedom.

3. Although I've retrieved memories of the contents of those sensitive files, I will not describe them because documentation is no longer available to validate them. (After Dad's death, his surviving widow-unaware of the value of certain items in the apartment-took them to the city dump.)

4. Mark L. Howe of the Memorial University of Newfoundland wrote a journal article, "Individual Differences in Factors That Modulate Storage and Retrieval of Traumatic Memories." It explains the neurological chemistry behind the mystery of why some traumatic memories are not forgotten, while others are completely disconnected from conscious memory. One of his conclusions is that "low and high levels of stress typically lead to little or no memory for an event (for different reasons) and moderate levels can lead to enhanced remembering." (pg. 686) My being forced to witness Dad's murder definitely created a high level of stress.

5. I remembered, and told the medical examiner, that Bill had also been in the garage that night. When I'd crawled to the closed garage door to where he'd stood, he'd stood there rigidly. When I first remembered his being there and doing nothing to comfort or rescue me, I hated him and wanted nothing more to do with him. One of his ASA associates had a long talk with me after that. The man helped me to understand that it had been a very dangerous time for both Bill and me. Bill had been in as much danger as I had, because he was still acting as an ASA mole. If he'd fought what they were doing to Dad, or had tried to interfere with what they were doing to my mind, they might have killed us both. For my sake, he had to act as if he was fully cooperating. Once I understood this, I was able to forgive him. After all, he had the right to be scared, too. There were three of them and two of us; and they were all professionally trained assassins. (Bill still has no memory of these events.)

RESUME

BILL SHIRK, PCMM/PCMH (PROFESSIONAL CERTIFIED IN MATERIAL HANDLING AND MANAGEMENT)

- Senior Engineer of Material Management, AT&T
- 1945 Shipping Clerk - Hans C. Bick Dye Works
- C10 Steel Worker, Orr & Sembower Boiler Factory
- Four years, U.S.A.F. - Jet A & E Specialist, Flight Engineer
- BS Chemistry, Mathematics, Albright College
- Joined Western Electric in Transistor and Diode Manufacture - 1956. Responsibilities included site plans, plant layouts, raw materials, stores, shipping, chemical and cryogenic handling and distribution, cranes, trucks, conveyors, etc.
- 1969 - moved to Atlanta to plan Norcross Cable Plant
- Graduate studies included Mechanical Engineering - Ohio State, MS in Operations Research - Purdue University
- Past President, International Material Management Society
- Technical Advisor to Chinese Mechanical Engineering Society
- Associate Editor, Co-author of Production Handbook (Wiley - 1987)
- Frequent Lecturer, Author for Material Handling Engineering, Modern Material Handling, Fortune, Distribution, Manufacturing Week, etc.
- Member MHI, MHRC, IIE, APICS, MHEF
- [redacted]
- Hobby - Archeology, Kingdom of Jordan

DAD'S PERSONAL RESUME, LATE 1980s

KALB COUNTY POLICE DEPART. IT
Statement Form

D

Case No. ____________

STATE vs. William T. Shook Sr. Address ____________
Statement of Kathleen Ann Sullivan Address 4321 Wrexham Ct. Lithonia, GA 30058
DOB: 8-20-55 SEX F HGT. 5'3" WGT. 129 RACE W
EMPLOYER'S NAME: Housewife Address N/A
PHONE NUMBER: (RESIDENCE) 978-1176 (BUSINESS) N/A
STATEMENT TAKEN BY Det. P E Warner DATE 8/25/89 TIME 3:14 pm

I had total blocked out memory of any physical contact w/ my dad from birth up to age 14. During psychiatric treatment (in-house) this summer, some memories began to come to the surface, and others since then, in the following age sequence:

Toddler (age 2-3) I was alone w/ dad in our house. He bent over w/ rear facing me & told me to "lick it". I then licked his anus. I have memory of the physical sensation.

Same age - I was again alone w/ him, he told me to pull my panties down. I did. Was then naked, standing in front of him.

Age 4 - dad & his brother [redacted] raped me in a field away from a house. I was laid on a folding card table when they did it. Dad said nothing, just walked away when it was over. I cried, but told noone, just pretended I was "carsick" on the trip home. I cannot remember all the details of the rape itself.

Age 6 - full memory incl. physical sensations - I was laying on bathroom tiled floor at night (upstairs) because bedroom was too hot. Dad came in - picked me up - put me in my bed & then raped me. I felt awful, cried myself to sleep. This is my strongest complete memory. It was done in complete silence, with [illegible] in the house all asleep

MY HANDWRITTEN STATEMENT GIVEN TO A DEKALB COUNTY, GA DETECTIVE, 08/25/89

STATE OF GEORGIA, DEKALB COUNTY:

Personally appeared the undersigned prosecutor, who being sworn on oath says that to the best of prosecutor's knowledge and belief, the defendant herein, WILLIAM THOMAS SHIRK, at ____ m. 7th OR 8th day of AUGUST, 1989, in DeKalb County, Georgia, did commit the offense of Child Molestation at 2730 BRAITHWOOD RD. ATLANTA, DeKalb County, Georgia, for that defendant did commit an immoral or indecent act to or in the presence of [redacted] (6 YOA) a child under the age of 14 years with the intent to arouse or satisfy the sexual desires of either the child or himself/ [redacted]

in violation of O.C.G.A. Sec. 16-6-4, and prosecutor makes this affidavit that a warrant may issue for defendant's arrest.

P E Warner
PROSECUTOR

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 26 day of AUG, 1989

Judge, Magistrate Court of DeKalb County

89-279618

STATE OF GEORGIA, DEKALB COUNTY

To the Chief of Police of DeKalb County, any Policeman thereof, and to any Sheriff, Deputy Sheriff, Coroner, Constable, Marshal or Law Enforcement Officer of Said State, authorized to execute warrants, GREETING:

For sufficient cause made known to me in the above affidavit, incorporated by reference herein, and other sworn testimony said establishing probable cause for arrest of the accused you are hereby commanded to arrest the defendant named in the foregoing affidavit charged by the prosecutor therein with the offense against the laws of this State named in said affidavit and bring him before me or some other Judicial officer of this State to be dealt with as the law directs. HEREIN FAIL NOT.

This 26 day of AUG, 1989.

TO: DET. P.E. WARNER

Judge, Magistrate Court of DeKalb County

HEARING RESET

Date: ____, 198__

Time: ____ a.m. ____ p.m.

Place: Room 132, Magistrate Court

Please Subpoena: ____

Remarks: ____

Defense Counsel: ____

Address: ____

Phone: ____

Appoint Public Defender: Yes ( ) No ( )

Date: ____

Judge: ____

Tape No. ____

D 248 /PG. 309 /$ N/C
CRIMINAL WARRANT

No. 297326

MAGISTRATE COURT
DEKALB COUNTY, GEORGIA

THE STATE
vs.

WILLIAM THOMAS SHIRK

Race	Age	Sex	Ht.	Wt.
W	59	M	6'	175

Hair	DOB	SS#
BRN	06-08-30	165 24[redacted]150

Auto ____ Tag ____

Address
Home 3097 B. PARK POST APTS
3125 S. FLOWERS RD.
ATLANTA
Work AT&T 2000 W. E. Exp. Way
NORCROSS, GA

Bond: ____

Charge: Child Molestation

O.C.G.A. Sec. 16-6-4

Prosecutor: DET. P.E. WARNER

Agent for: DKPD

Address: SEX CRIMES

Phone: 244-2574

Attorney: ____

Phone: ____

DAD'S ARREST WARRANT, 8/26/89

CERTIFICATE OF DEATH/STATE OF GEORGIA

Local File Number: 00099

DECEDENT'S NAME: WILLIAM THOMAS SHIRK, SR.

SEX: MALE

DATE OF DEATH: JANUARY 10, 1990

RACE: White

ORIGIN OF DECEDENT: American

DATE OF BIRTH: June 8, 1930

AGE-Last Birthday (Years): 59

COUNTY OF DEATH: DeKalb

CITY, TOWN or LOCATION OF DEATH: TUCKER

HOSPITAL OR OTHER INSTITUTION NAME: NORTHLAKE REGIONAL MEDICAL CENTER

IF HOSPITAL OR INST.: DOA

STATE AND COUNTY OF BIRTH: Berks Co. Pa.

CITIZEN OF WHAT COUNTRY: USA

MARRIED, NEVER MARRIED, WIDOWED, DIVORCED: Married

SPOUSE: [redacted]

WAS DECEDENT EVER IN U.S. ARMED FORCES: Yes

SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER: 165-24-4150

USUAL OCCUPATION: Engineer

KIND OF INDUSTRY OR BUSINESS: American Telephone & Telegraph

RESIDENCE – STATE: Georgia

COUNTY: DeKalb

CITY, TOWN or LOCATION: Chamblee

STREET AND NUMBER: 3097 -B Flowers Road

INSIDE CITY LIMITS: No

FATHER'S NAME: Thomas Shirk

MOTHER'S MAIDEN NAME: Edith Strunk

INFORMANT'S NAME: Mrs. [redacted] Shirk

MAILING ADDRESS: [redacted] Rd, N.E. Atlanta, Ga. 30345

RELATIONSHIP: Wife

BURIAL, CREMATION, REMOVAL: Cremation

DISPOSITION DATE: Jan. 12, 1990

CEMETERY OR CREMATORY NAME: Atlanta Crematory

LOCATION: Atlanta, Fulton, Georgia

FUNERAL DIRECTOR: Fred C. Turner

FUN. DIR. LICENSE NO.: 2775

EMBALMER: James M. Watt

EMBALMER LICENSE NO.: 2739

NAME AND ADDRESS OF FACILITY:
A. S. Turner & Sons
P. O. Box 430
Decatur, Georgia 30031

EST. LICENSE NO.: 21

23. IMMEDIATE CAUSE: SEQUELAE OF CARBON MONOXIDE POISONING

AUTOPSY: YES

IF YES WERE FINDINGS CONSIDERED IN DETERMINING CAUSE OF DEATH: YES

WAS OPERATION PERFORMED: NO

ACCIDENT, SUICIDE, HOMICIDE, UNDETERMINED: SUICIDE

DATE OF INJURY: 01/10/90

DESCRIBE HOW INJURY OCCURRED: Inhalation of auto exhaust fumes.

HOUR OF INJURY: unk.

INJURY AT WORK: NO

PLACE OF INJURY: HOME (Garage)

LOCATION: 3097 B Flowers Rd, South, Atlanta, GA, Dekalb C

DATE SIGNED: January 18, 1990

HOUR OF DEATH: unk.

DATE PRONOUNCED DEAD: ON JANUARY 10, 1990

HOUR PRONOUNCED DEAD: AT 12:40 PM

NAME AND TITLE OF CERTIFIER: WAYNE K. ROSS, M.D., M.E.

ADDRESS OF CERTIFIER: 4285-C Memorial Drive, Decatur, GA. 30032

REGISTRAR: Wanda Stone

DATE RECEIVED BY REGISTRAR: JAN 22 1990

GEORGIA DEPARTMENT OF HUMAN RESOURCES/VITAL RECORDS SERVICE

DO NOT FOLD THIS CERTIFICATE

"CERTIFICATE OF RECORD"

"THIS IS AN EXACT COPY OF THE DEATH CERTIFICATE RECEIVED FOR FILING IN DEKALB COUNTY".

(VOID WITHOUT ORIGINAL SIGNATURE AND IMPRESSED SEAL)

COUNTY CUSTODIAN Wanda Stone

ISSUED BY ______ DATE ______

DAD'S DEATH CERTIFICATE, JANUARY 1990

Deposition for Stan Hall
investigator w/ Gwinnett Co
DA's Office 5/23/90

1 of 2

INTERVIEW WITH KATHLEEN SULLIVAN

On May 23, 1990 at approximately 2:00 P.M. Ms. Sullivan gave the following information to [redacted].

My dad was the leader of a satanic cult in the area of Reading Pennsylvania. We lived in Reiffton. This begin when I was approximately 8 to 13 years of age, about 1963 to 1969. I witnessed weekly meetings on Friday nights where I saw both adults and children murdered, mutilated, dismembered. They also did a lot of pedaphile rituals with boys who were not physically cut or hurt (only sexually related). I don't remember yet if my mother was present but she must have been. [redacted] were used during these rituals also. I do remember that during the 64 Worlds Fair in New York City my dad took me to some kind of special meeting where it seemed to be either a national or international gathering of pedaphiles who were involved in sadisam. I watched as they demonstrated rubbing a penis on the private parts of a baby and later saw approximately fifteen dead babies laid out on the floor. A woman took me by the hand and told me it was just my imagination. I believe that by what I saw there may have been some representatives from the Maffia there due to the way they were dressed and their skin coloring and the power that they obviously had over the group. We also moved to Cockeysville, Maryland when I was fourteen. I do not remember any events that occurred after that time relating to satanic activities. [redacted] contacted me last night and believes that my dad has involved [redacted] from [redacted] in satanic activities in or near the Atlanta area. She will be

contacting a [redacted]. Mr. J. Tom Morgan has some information on my dad's pedaphile activities.

I will related other things as they are remembered to Stan Hall of the District Attorney's Office. At this time I am unsure of who to trust in relating information [redacted].

I now reside at 4321 Wrexham Court - Lithonia, Georgia 30058
Phone #978-1176.

Kathleen Sullivan

TRANSCRIPT OF STATEMENT I GAVE AT THE GWINNETT COUNTY, GA DISTRICT ATTORNEY'S OFFICE, 5/23/90

Fahrenheit°

LIVING

GOING UNDERGROUND

FEARING THE WORST, REAL ESTATE TAKES A DIVE

In times of crisis, we have a tendency to tighten our belts and hunker down. Or, in the case of 20th Century Castles, a property consultancy in tiny Dover, Kansas, *bunker down* might be the more appropriate phrase. Ed Peden, who founded the company, specializes in selling decommissioned missile silos from the Cold War. He bought one in 1983, cleaned out the junk and eventually rehabbed it into a 5,000-square-foot, very high ceilinged home, with 13,000 square feet of secure closet space to boot. Peden has since sold twenty-eight Atlas E, Atlas F and Titan I missile sites over the years, at least five of which have been turned into private residences. He currently represents nine sites (www.missilebases.com).

HERE'S WHAT YOU'LL GET FOR...

$133,000

The perfect starter silo for the handy family. Located in Creta, Oklahoma, this twenty-two-acre site features an Atlas F silo, an old-fashioned Quonset hut, two ponds and its own high chain-link fence. Needs work.

$575,000

A central-Kansas silo home featuring 2,400 square feet of underground steel-stud luxury. It comes equipped with satellite TV, three baths, a whirlpool and a commanding view from a hilltop entry point. Your mother-in-law will love the property's surface-level domed concrete studio apartment.

$1 MILLION

An Atlas E command center, comprising 15,000 square feet of refurbished living space in Wamego, Kansas. The 4,000-square-foot living area features a marble bath, a domed four-head shower room, a sauna and a hot tub. Twenty-two surrounding acres dotted with fruit and nut trees can supplement your diet of freeze-dried food.

$1.7 MILLION

A luxury silo getaway, *shown above*, bordering scenic Saranac Lake in New York's Adirondack Park. A private airstrip leads to a cedar-sided mountain lodge set atop what is perhaps the country's most thoroughly overhauled Atlas F site. Above ground sits 2,000 square feet of rugged luxury. Below, the command center has been transformed into a two-story three-bedroom home with limestone bathrooms lit by fiber optics. The government spent more than $14 million to build it in 1958; you can have it for nearly one-tenth the price.—STEPHEN P. WILLIAMS

MISSILE SILO DIAGRAM IN DECEMBER 2001 ISSUE OF GQ MAGAZINE

DAD POSING WITH GUNS, EARLY 1950S

DAD CHANGING MY DIAPER, 1955

STILL ABLE TO RELAX AND REALLY SMILE, 1957

SCHOOL PHOTO – IN FULL TRANCE STATE, UNDATED

DAD IN HIS CROSS-COUNTRY TRACK OUTFIT, 1962

DAD (FAR RIGHT) LIP-SYNCING WITH “MAGGOTS”
ROCK-AND-ROLL BAND, LATE 1960s

SCHOOL PHOTO–MATURE, SECRETIVE ALTER-STATE, 1971

HOME PHOTO – CHILD ALTER-STATE HOLDING KOALA BEAR
FROM DAD, 1971

HOLDING ROSE SEVERAL DAYS AFTER HER BIRTH, 7/74

DAD AT WORK, 1986

RELIGIOUS PROGRAMMED ALTER-STATE HUNTING FOR EASTER EGGS NEAR MOTHER'S HOME, SPRING, 1989

IN THE PARC-VRAMC LIVING MEMORIAL GARDEN, SPRING, 2000

Connections

Bill's Past

My husband, Bill has a long military history that contributed to his need to control or be controlled. In 1978, after 30 years in the US Army, he retired as a Sergeant Major. During his last two years of service, he was a ROTC instructor at the University of Georgia in Athens. During previous active duty, he'd served in the 11th Airborne Division, the Airborne 187th RCT, the 82nd Airborne Division, the 101st Airborne Division, and the 173rd Airborne Brigade.

A master parachutist, Bill had successfully completed over 300 parachute jumps–which, VA doctors later told him, had led to his spinal deterioration. Beginning in 1991, he had five operations on his spine.

During one of his three tours of duty in South Vietnam, Bill served as an intelligence analyst and interrogator.[1] He served a total of fifty-one months of front-line ground combat in Korea and Vietnam. His medals and commendations include a Purple Heart; Silver Star; four Bronze Stars (one for valor); three Army Commendation Medals (one for valor); two Meritorious Service Medals; an Air Medal; and four Army Commendation Medals (one for valor).[2]

As memories of Bill's covert military experiences emerged in therapy and then at home, I was alarmed by how often he said, "The Army is my mother and my father." Couldn't he see how he'd been used–putting his life at risk again and again? Why wasn't he angry? Even though he'd been retired for more than a decade, his loyalty to the Army was still strong. I couldn't understand: why wouldn't he accept that that part of his life was over?

As Bill retrieved more buried memories and emotions, I learned why he was so dissociated. Not only had he been traumatized in Korea and Vietnam, and been severely abused by his stepfather for years; he had also lost most of his family. (Bill is the second youngest out of fifteen children; as of this book's publication date, only one other remains.) Perhaps worst of all, his father had died when he was a toddler and then, after Bill had joined the Army at the still-tender age of fifteen, his mother–who he says was his “whole world”–had died two years later, leaving him a homeless orphan still too young to vote.

Because of the terrible cumulative grief of losing so many loved ones, and the traumas he’d endured at home and during wartime in Korea and Vietnam, he could only feel and express his emerging emotions a tiny bit at a time. Like me, he had PTSD and needed to learn constructive ways to express and control his anger.

I told Therese that sometimes I felt as if an impenetrable steel vault door was inside Bill’s mind. Although I yearned for deeper communication with my husband, I believed he was incapable of it. I decided to give myself some time to choose whether or not I would stay in that kind of marriage. After a couple of months of grieving what could have been between us (had we not both been so damned wounded), I decided to stay.

Once in a while, I wondered if Bill still had orders from ASA to handle me. Although I was afraid to talk to him about this–he was so secretive about his intelligence connections–I needed to know. On two occasions, once in Atlanta and again in Chattanooga, I talked with Bill about his ASA connections. He grudgingly allowed me to tape-record each conversation. One of his ASA alter-states told me that his contacts were waiting for me to “clear out the cobwebs” in my mind. That alter-state indicated that he was tired of being used by the ASA. He said he wanted to retire all the way. I was elated because this meant I could finally help Bill to free himself from his own handlers.

Using the techniques I’d developed over the years in identifying my local handlers, I helped Bill to analyze the behaviors of people in his own life, including some of his relatives who lived in Fayetteville, North Carolina–most of them had worked for the government, mostly within the military with at least one (a brother-in-law) within the CIA.[3]

Bill’s therapist and I worked hard to teach Bill how to set healthy mental and emotional boundaries with the people in his life. He made a pleasant new discovery: he has the right to feel anger towards anyone who disrespects his personal rights and freedoms. That includes me.

One by one, Bill recognized and broke free from his most obvious handlers. He did this by assessing their odd and controlling behaviors, triggering phrases, government connections, and lack of emotional affect. Each time Bill identified one and quietly stopped accepting the handler’s orders, the handler’s personality suddenly changed and he or she expressed an unusual amount of anger and frustration towards Bill.

Then the handler tried–for a while–to regain control. Such behaviors verified to Bill that these people were controllers and not the friends they'd claimed to be.[4]

To protect us further, I wrote to all the journalists and authors with whom I had contact, giving them local handlers' names and addresses. I didn't care if the handlers were from the CIA, the ASA or the Aryan network. Good guys, bad guys, or both, it didn't matter anymore–*no one* had the right to manipulate our minds![5]

As we continued the weeding-out process, I realized why, whenever I'd come home later than planned, Bill had switched and gone into a dark mood. Each time, he'd made cruel, unfounded accusations that wounded me. During one of our "ASA talks," an alter-state emerged and said he'd feared that while I was away from home, I'd be re-accessed by someone from the Aryan cult.

Then that part explained why Bill's "William" alter-state refused to come out and talk to me. William had been forced to watch me having sex with other men in the cult, even after we'd married. That was J.C.'s primary method of ensuring that all members' first loyalty remained with him. William hadn't known that J.C. had triggered out alter-states in me that hadn't been aware that they were married to William/Bill, and had therefore felt no obligation to be faithful to him! (Some of them had even thought they were still married to Albert.)

My heart breaks when I think of what the sight and knowledge did to William. And yet, he never stopped fighting to free me. Love sometimes comes at a great price, but I believe it's always worth the experience.

I've learned the hard way that when one marries a severely dissociated person, one may not marry *all* of the partner. Some of the partner's alter-states may not like the idea of being married, and may choose not to emotionally bond. Some of Bill's alter-states may never choose to bond with me. For them, the covert world may always be more important than our marriage. That is another loss I've learned to grieve.

More Verifications

Although there are still times I don't want to believe my memories, staying in denial isn't a safe option. It can leave me open to being accessed and traumatized again.

In hospitals and at trauma survivor conferences, I received verifications from several ritual abuse and government mind-control survivors who recognized me as a figure from their pasts. Each person provided details to me about my alter-states and activities that I'd already journaled. In most cases, I was able to do the same for them–usually with a therapist present to carefully mediate between us.

A group of recovering survivors from J.C.'s Cobb County Aryan cult network, some of whom had never repressed their memories, have helped each other to build mental strength and stay safe. Through third parties, several of them directly verified numerous memories that I'd already documented, of specific cult activities and of several of the cult leaders' activities and personality quirks. Their verifications–sometimes in the form of documents–helped me to stay out of denial and stay safe.

Every survivor who recognized Bill as a past participant in Aryan meetings and rituals said they'd known him as William. (This was significant because William isn't part of his legal name, nor did he let people call him that, away from the gatherings.) They told me things about his William alter-state that I'd already independently remembered and journaled. They also identified pictures of several of my complicit relatives, accurately describing their unique personality quirks and bizarre behaviors.

I received numerous letters and documents that Dad had left behind in the house he'd shared with his second family. Sorting through them years after his death, my stepmother sent me anything that might be significant. I'm delighted that Dad's handlers hadn't known he'd left those papers behind. Some of them directly verified my memories. I'm lucky that way, because most mind-control survivors have no proofs at all.[6]

I was given the opportunity to review psychiatric and legal documents from some of Dad's other victims, with the understanding that what I learned would only be shared with hand-picked investigators and authors who I believed would honor their privacy. These verifications helped me to stay anchored in reality.

Between 1989 and 2002, I consulted with a succession of over twenty-one mental health professionals on either an in-patient (hospitalization) or out-patient (private practice) basis. Extensively tested more times than I can count, I consistently received the diagnoses of PTSD, delayed; Multiple Personality Disorder (which later changed to Dissociative Identity Disorder); and major depression—a partly genetic condition that is exacerbated by cumulative trauma or stress.

Only one time did I ever exhibit any psychotic features. This occurred at home. A memory emerged that was so unbearable, I had to escape from reality until I was able to go through it in the hospital (even then, it was unbearable). My psychotic belief at home was that it was perfectly all right to shoot myself in the head as I lay next to Bill, with the intent of making him feel the pain that a beloved op partner had put me through when he'd suicided in front of me. That was the extent of my psychosis.

One of the ways I knew I had a dissociative disorder (DID) was that, before I achieved the bulk of my integration, I could easily do several mental tasks at once. For instance, at night I would work on a crossword puzzle or read a book while holding a conversation with Bill and watching a movie on television. Multi-tasking is fairly easy for most dissociated trauma survivors.[7]

I discovered another proof in several sets of recurring dreams that I'd never forgotten. Because they'd been powerful and wouldn't go away, they'd troubled me for decades:

The first set of dreams began when I was very young. In them, I either rode a horse or straddled a large tree limb, my legs hanging down. As I rubbed my genitals on the limb or the horse, I had powerful orgasms. I believe those dreams were an indicator that as a child, I'd been addicted to orgasms. And I believe the tree limbs and horses represented my dad's penis. Although many children masturbate, my addiction to orgasms was abnormal because it was too much a part of my life.

Another dream lasted from childhood well into the 1990s. In it, I moved up through the air to the ceiling of a room. With my bare hands, I tore a hole in the wood and insulation, only to find another ceiling above it. I clawed a hole through that, to find another, and another. Each time I awoke, I felt hopeless and trapped. The message of this dream was that, no matter how many times I split off, I still could not escape.

In another kind of recurring dream, I tried to fly into the air by flapping my arms as wings. Sometimes I tried to fly as I jumped off a high, elevated place, attempting to soar over trees. In almost all of these dreams I was pursued by short-haired Caucasian men in dark suits who, running on the ground, eventually grabbed my feet because I'd lost altitude. Each time they pulled me down to them, I awoke full of unnamed dread.

In another kind of dream, Mom and Dad took me to a location in the countryside. Large lots, covered with weeds and grass, were flanked on one side by a wooded area full of hardwood trees. Each time, I walked through a patch of meadow with the woods and two white, clapboard houses to my far left. I always encountered a rectangular “pit” in the ground in front of me. It was full of water green with algae. Even though I never saw them, I was terrified of the alligators and snakes that lurked in the water, waiting to bite me.

Eventually I remembered that the location had been a real place where Dad had often taken me when I was young. Because the pit was full with green, murky water, I couldn’t see what else was in it. As Dad forced me into the water each time, the grass and mud around the edges of the man-made pond made it impossible for me to get out. He said alligators and snakes lived in it. Terrified with no way out, I switched into a new alter-state that had *no* fear of alligators, snakes, or murky water. Noticing my lack of fear, Dad ordered that part to dive to the bottom and retrieve objects that he and several neatly groomed men in black suits threw into it.

Another kind of verification I had never forgotten occurred on two separate occasions. Each time, I responded in an odd way as my body was accidentally punctured.

The first time, I was walking with other students outside Reiffton Elementary School in the daytime, shortly before Halloween. As was our yearly custom, we came to school dressed in our Halloween costumes. The teachers led our classes in single rows to “parade” through our quiet neighborhood.

This time, a female teacher first made us stand in a line behind a brick building. I didn’t notice that a railroad timber had been placed behind the brick wall. As I walked, I accidentally swung my foot into it. I was horrified when I looked down and saw a large splinter sticking out of my cloth-covered foot.

Paralyzed by the sight, all I could do was stay still as my classmates continued walking. The teacher finally came to investigate. When she saw the splinter, she laughed at me for being so upset. Yanking it out, she told me to hurry up and join the others. Although I did, I still felt so horrified, I was sick to my stomach.

The second event occurred shortly after I’d “graduated” from our local drill team. During the previous year, I had appeared at public gatherings and had marched in a wintertime parade in Reading with the other baton-twirling girls. This particular day, we were expected to turn in our uniforms at the nearby high school. Since our house was only a block away, I decided to walk down the hill to it.

I carried my uniform on a wire hanger, balancing the tip of the hook on the middle of my upturned palm. Then I tripped on the hem of the skirt, which pulled the tip of the hook into my fleshy palm. Transfixed and horrified, again I was unable to speak.

Then I pulled the hanger out, still staring at the hole in my palm. In a trance state, I carried the garment to the big brick building. A woman sat in front of a table heaped with uniforms. Speechless, I held my wounded palm out to her. When the woman laughed, I felt embarrassed.

All through my younger adult years, I had tremendous mood swings. Although I wanted to believe they were from hormonal fluctuations, they continued throughout each month. At home and at work, I often cried heavily for no reason. If I was at work, I usually hid in the bathroom and wept for about a half hour, then used gobs of cold, wet paper towels to make the red blotches go away.

Sometimes depression slammed me so hard at home, I could barely function. At other times, I felt tremendous rage and had to take long walks to work off the energy. Sometimes emotional pain hit so hard, it literally paralyzed me. For several years, I was so depressed, I often walked through cemeteries, wishing I was in the ground with the dead.

For nearly two decades, Mom diverted me from going to professionals for help by insisting that I had hypoglycemia (low blood sugar). She convinced me that all I needed to do was to read *Prevention Magazine* (a natural health publication) and avoid sugar. Because we'd been taught in The Walk that sugar was poisonous, I believed her. I grew so phobic towards sugar, I refused to eat anything that had even a trace in it. That made socializing difficult. When my mood swings didn't lessen in frequency or intensity, Mom insisted I was still eating something with sugar in it. I believed her and became even more phobic.

Before recovery, I preferred being alone. At work, I walked outside nearly every day, even during some of our coffee breaks. I couldn't stand to socialize with other employees unless it was after work, when I could have a couple of drinks at a nearby restaurant with them. Then it didn't matter.

This started to change when I worked at Cotton States. Several older women in my department invited me to eat with them each payday at the next-door Marriott Hotel's fancy restaurant. Whenever I ate with them, I felt an odd, bittersweet warmth in the center of my torso. I liked that feeling and wanted more of it. I didn't know that this was the feeling that came with emotionally connecting with others.

Recently I discovered the underlying cause of an odd behavior I've had for many years. I began to understand it when I remembered a series of childhood porn sessions in which Dad took pictures of me "having sex with" young boys from a YMCA Indian Guides group that he often hosted at our house in Reiffton. The porn sessions occurred during sleepovers in our basement. I was made to wear a buckskin Indian girl costume and the boys wore the same feathered headdresses that they sometimes donned during regular meetings. While the boys and I sexually interacted, he made another boy play a set of tom-toms that were also used during their regular meetings. During this trauma, I focused on the rhythm of the drumbeat to block out what was being done to us. Since then, whenever I felt overly stressed, that same rhythm played in my head.

When I was still a victim, because I had PTSD and was often sent on dangerous ops, I was often ill. Mom usually said I had a "24-hour virus" and I didn't need to consult with a doctor. Because I believed her, I always stayed in bed (if I could) until I felt better. Now that I don't do ops anymore, and I make sure I get enough sleep and keep my stress level down, I'm rarely ill.[8]

According to therapists and other trauma survivors, grinding one's teeth seems to be a common symptom of PTSD. Since I've started remembering, I've grinded mine so much, five of my back teeth have been capped. I especially grind them when I feel stressed. (Because of decades of forced oral sex, I cannot bear to wear a protective retainer.)

After my recovery started, I often flashbacked while driving. This was dangerous for me and anyone else on the road. Some emerging memories were so powerful, I parked on the side of the highway to weep or yell until the attached emotions ebbed. One day, after an especially intense therapy session, I left the office and drove on the wrong side of the road. As I pulled off the road, my heart racing and hands shaking, I thanked God that no other cars were on the road at that time.

One of my most prevalent fears has been of imminent doom and death–either mine or a loved one's. This is a common symptom of PTSD that was powerfully reinforced by the many deaths I witnessed or was forced to participate in.[9]

In the late 1990s, a neuropsychologist gave me a battery of tests. While reviewing the results with me and my therapist, he told us the results indicated I had an anxiety disorder "the size of Dallas." Although I was aware that I had at least several anxiety attacks each day (heart racing, non-stop fear and thoughts of bad things happening), the confirmation of my diagnosis depressed me. Was it that noticeable? Would I be stuck with it the rest of my life? I was so sick and tired of not being able to handle problems like other people, without overreacting!

It happened again in the summer of 2002 when Bill had a stroke–he called it an "explosion" in the left side of his brain. When he told me about the odd sensation, the cortisol level in my brain spiked and my body flooded with adrenaline. Wanting him to get help before it was too late, I drove up to 97 mph down the highway towards the hospital.[10]

The cortisol didn't lessen when he was in safe hands–that's one of the reasons why my anxiety disorder can be disabling. For several days, my body shook and I couldn't stop circular thoughts and fears from flooding my mind. I was hyper-alert and had difficulty sleeping. The anxiety seemed to have no end; it only stopped when I realized I needed to take anti-anxiety medication.

Another verification has been my difficulty in trusting and bonding with others–a direct result of decades of betrayal trauma. Emotional bonding is still a new experience, because trust doesn't come easy.[11]

Another reason I believe the bulk of my recovered memories were of real events is that not all of them were of serious traumas. Because I dissociated easily, I also suppressed memories of non-harmful events in which I'd felt strong fear, confusion, pain, or embarrassment.[12]

For instance, I recovered a childhood memory of standing outdoors one day with several other girls, not realizing that a large beetle had landed on the front of my blouse. My fear of the creature was enough to make me repress the entire memory!

I've also recovered a series of memories that I had repressed out of sheer embarrassment. Each time, I was left alone while my handler was in the next room, talking in a relaxed way to someone (we were between ops). Each time, needing to use the bathroom, I was so tranced, I mistook a chair for a toilet and peed on its seat. Whenever I saw my urine splash to the floor, I felt ashamed and tried to clean it up before anyone would notice.

One of my most powerful verifications recurred over a two year period. Whenever I power-walked in a mall near my therapist's office, and a man or woman walked towards me, one of two types of flashbacks occurred.

In the first type of flashback, I "saw" myself running at the person, grabbing their right wrist and arm with my hands, and then using my momentum to force the person's arm up and back, until I dislocated the victim's shoulder. In the other type of flashback, I grabbed an adult male's chin and hair and used one of several methods to "swivel-snap" his neck.

The strength I felt in my body and hands during each flashback was enormous. I knew I could do it right there, in the mall. To keep from doing it, I used self-talk, reminding myself that although I had the right and the need to remember, I did not have the right to hurt anyone.

For months, I didn't tell my therapist about these flashbacks. Ashamed, I believed she would despise me if I told her. How could I have done such horrible things to people? I felt like a monster! Was there no hope for me?

When I told her, I instantly became co-conscious with a highly trained male, black op alter-state.[13] As I took on that part's knowledge and memories, I learned that he felt irritated whenever he watched police or spy characters on TV that seemed inept. He had zero patience towards characters who gave up their guns to assailants to bargain for the lives of hostages. Each time, not understanding they were just actors, he yelled, "You *never* give up your gun! Shoot him!" (To Bill's great irritation, I've responded the same way ever since I blended with that part.)

I learned that the alter-state had survived similar situations by shooting hostage-takers, since the hostages' bodies could never fully hide the captors'. He'd also been trained to "read" opponents' facial expressions, body twitches, and vocal tones to know whether or not he had time to shoot first. He wasn't afraid to take a gun away from an opponent. He said that unless the opponent was also a professional, the opponent would be surprised and wouldn't think to shoot until it was too late. So far, this seems to have been my most highly trained black op alter-state.

Another verification was my occasional changes in handwriting along with my inability to see the changes. During the first twelve years of recovery, I felt frustrated because my handwriting didn't seem to change when different alter-states emerged–I'd read that handwriting changes were a way to determine if a person was severely dissociated.

In 2001, when I decided to take a year off from school to type all of my journals–a Herculean task–I was astounded to discover marked differences between several types of handwriting. I had been so dissociated, I hadn't been able to see what was literally in front of my eyes!

Recently, I've been able to feel peace and stability. I love it! My mood swings are nearly gone. I don't have as many crying jags. My old, pent-up rage has decreased to a manageable level of righteous indignation and occasional frustration. The emotional pain has also lessened.

I still have days when more unresolved grief emerges. When this occurs, I give myself permission to have "bummy days" in which I don't shower or brush my teeth or get dressed. I let myself fully feel my grief, knowing that this is the only way to really heal. Then I get on with my life.

These and other experiences have convinced me that I was a trauma survivor, that I was severely dissociated, and that the majority of my retrieved memories were of real events.

Reaching Out

In the 1990s, I sent packages of information about my remembered history to journalists and authors who wrote about ritual abuse, government-sponsored abuses, and mind control. I wanted more proofs to help me stay anchored in reality, and I hoped that if I shared information from my life with these people, they might tell me where I could find further verification.

One of the authors was writing a new book about the connections between occult ritual abuse and government mind-control programming. I sent him a packet of information that included copies of my 1991 systems maps. With my permission, he included some of the information in his new book. When I reviewed it, I felt frightened: would former handlers recognize my information and retaliate against me for "talking?"

The more I allowed authors to include my information in their books, the more I felt afraid. Numerous handlers had previously threatened that if I "talked," either I or a loved one would be killed. Since they'd used me and other slaves to kill for them, what would stop them from sending a slave-operative to do the same to me?

I constantly balanced my need for support and protection against my need to avoid upsetting former handlers and owners. I never knew whether I was talking too much or not enough. Although Bill supported my going public, he didn't understand the fear and anxiety that wracked my body and mind every single day.

Notes

1. In the mid 1990s, I met an alter-state that Bill had unconsciously created in childhood when he was severely abused by his stepfather. This part of Bill had compartmentalized his powerful rage towards the man. In Vietnam, as part of the CIA's Operation Phoenix, this alter-state had been used to transfer that old rage onto male prisoners via brutal interrogations and torture. Bill was horrified when he discovered this alter-state, which had tortured men with great zeal.
2. To this day, Bill prefers not to talk about why he received several of the medals. This is, in part, because he has very little memory of those heroic acts.
3. In the electronic version of his 2002 book, *Mindfield*, Gordon Thomas stated that in 1954, the CIA's "field training school" was located in Fayetteville, North Carolina. (pg. 15) *Mindfield* explores the issues of biochemical weaponry and mind-control technology. For more information, you can visit Thomas's website at http://www.gordonthomas.ie.
4. Incapable of bonding with and trusting others, we'd both developed pseudo-friendships with our handlers, not understanding that they weren't real friendships.
5. When individuals who are inappropriately controlled by family members or partners begin to think for themselves and to break free, the controllers will often accuse others (such as therapists) in the victims' lives of brainwashing the victims and turning the victims against them. I believe that such claims indicate the complainants are control addicts and possibly abusers. For whatever bizarre reason, abusive controllers seem incapable of comprehending that their victims have the strength, intelligence, and ability to make their own life-decisions.
6. To ensure that I didn't keep any proofs, I was conditioned to occasionally throw away every item I owned, other than the clothes in my closet. I was programmed to believe that each time I did this, I was getting rid of demons from my past that were attached to those personal items. For this reason, I do not have access to my childhood records. All I have from before my marriage to Bill are photos that several family members had since given me.
7. " . . . individuals who are high dissociators have developed ways to cope in life that allow for their dissociation without apparent problems under many circumstances. This lack of integration of experiences, memories, and thoughts creates an environment that requires constant divided attention. Individuals who habitually dissociate

information may come to be best able to function in multi-tasking, divided attention, divided control structure environments." (Freyd and DePrince, pg. 157)

8. According to the National Institute of Mental Health's website article, "Stress and the Developing Brain," "Cortisol and other stress hormones . . . temporarily suppress the immune response." (pg. 1)

9. To learn more about PTSD, you can visit the US Veterans Affairs National Center for PTSD website at http://www.ncptsd.org or call their PTSD Information Line at 1-802-296-6300.

10. During anxiety attacks, my brain has too much energy and I literally cannot stop thinking and obsessing about either what had gone wrong or, more likely, what *could* go wrong. This is why anti-anxiety medication is helpful for me: it reduces the level of cortisol in my brain so that I relax and stop worrying about possibilities that probably won't ever occur!

    > Cortisol secretion increases in response to any stress in the body, whether physical (such as illness, trauma, surgery, or temperature extremes) or psychological. When cortisol is secreted, it causes a breakdown of muscle protein, leading to the release of amino acids . . . into the bloodstream. These amino acids are then used by the liver to synthesize glucose . . . [raising] the blood sugar level so the brain will have more glucose for energy." (Stoppler, pg. 1)

11. Dr. Jennifer J. Freyd's *Betrayal Trauma: The Logic of Forgetting Childhood Abuse*, thoroughly addresses this issue. Dr. Freyd is the daughter of Pamela Freyd, Ph.D., the FMSF's executive director and one of its primary founders.

12. Carla Emery explained the relationship between dissociation, amnesia, and hypnotic suggestibility: "In dissociation amnesia, you are not told to forget. You just do. It is a spontaneous, natural result of being in a very deep trance. However, the deeper you are, the more responsive you are to suggestion." (pg. 229)

13. Co-consciousness between two alter-states can feel like having two heads on one set of shoulders. This temporary condition can be disorienting and frustrating–not only for the survivor, but also for others interacting with the survivor. The effects lessen as the two alter-states fuse into one new, fuller alter-state. Family therapy can be especially helpful during this phase of recovery.

BILL SULLIVAN AS FIRST COMMANDANT OF THE US ARMY'S NCO RETRAINING AND RECLASSIFICATION ACADEMY, FORT CAMPBELL KENTUCKY, 1976

“Good Guy” Perpetrators

The Luciferian

Part of my preparation to go public was to decide whether or not I would name some of the men who had owned me and/or had used me to perform crimes for them. Although several mind-control survivors (e.g., Cathy O’Brien and Sue Ford A.K.A. Brice Taylor) did this in the past, I was reluctant to follow their lead for several reasons.

First, I don’t know of any well-known figure who doesn’t have ardent fans. Idolatry is part of being human; many people are too willing to buy into the polished public personas of people who may actually be wicked in their private lives.

In one radio interview and in subsequent interviews with several journalists, I did mention two well-known politicians who I believe had hurt and used me–in controlled alter-states–to perform criminal activities for them and others. One of them is a former CIA director. Soon after I went public on the radio program, I was re-traumatized. That experience forced me to re-think my desire to name perpetrators. I’d named the men so that, if I or a loved one was harmed, at least some people would have an idea of who might have been responsible. But after the assault, I realized I would only be harming myself by continuing to name them.

Beside the fact that they and each of their criminal associates are idolized to some degree, they also have an enormous number of influential contacts—particularly in the media and political arenas—and are also regularly advised by public relations professionals who teach them how to look good and be believable as “good guys.”[1] How in the world could I, with my limited resources, convince anyone that these wealthy, well-connected men had hurt me and used me to perform crimes for them?

I finally found peace in my belief that regardless of how much they get away with in this life, they’ll have to answer for their choices someday—in the next life, if not in this one. That keeps me sane and gives me hope that justice does come around—just not when I’d like it to.

The men I named are only two out of perhaps thousands of mind-control perpetrators currently operating in the United States. These men and women comprise an extensive covert population.

I will call one of them, an elder statesman, Lucian. A master hypnotist, Lucian was a flaming pedophile when I was a child, and probably still is. When I was a teenager, Dad–in a trade for certain favors–gave Lucian ownership of several of my alter-states, including one named Sasha. Lucian was an odd character, in that although he pretends to be a practicing Jew, he is really a behind-the-scenes Luciferian who doesn't mind mixing and mingling with staunch Aryans.

Over the years, Lucian taught me his Luciferian beliefs and told me about his involvement in Lucis Trust, an organization that he said was based on Luciferianism. He taught me that the sun, which he called Ra, was their God.[2]

He also taught me that Lucifer was the true son of God, and that Jesus Christ was the usurper. He said that one of the primary goals of Lucis Trust was to bring Lucifer back into his rightful position before God.

True or not, Lucian told me that Lucis Trust planned to make a man called "Lord Maitreya" their representative to the world, to attract and indoctrinate the masses into the Luciferians' planned world religion (as part of their Aryan-Greco-Roman-Egyptian "New World Order"). Lucian said the Lucis Trust would convince Christians that Maitreya was the reincarnated Messiah, returned to earth.[3]

Lucian taught several of my alter-states that he and his fellow worshippers were being kept in spiritual darkness along with Lucifer, who took on the persona of the dark lord, Satan, when Jesus Christ stole the light from him. He said that Lucifer was being kept in darkness against his will by Christians who worshipped Jesus Christ, whom he called "the liar." He said that Jesus had faked his own death and resurrection to make him appear to be God's son.

Lucian and his associates said that some day, they will all rise up as one. By subjugating all Christians, they would free Lucifer from the darkness and restore him to his rightful position as the true son of God. Lucian said that then and only then would Ra's worshippers live in the light forever, favored by Lucifer, eventually also becoming gods.

He explained that some Luciferians had already passed on and became gods. He called them "Ascended Masters." He convinced me that some devotees are able to "channel" the Masters in occult rituals.[4]

Lucian despised Christian politicians, and enjoyed blackmailing them–sometimes using me and other Beta-programmed slaves to sexually compromise them. When these Christians fell, he called them hypocrites. He didn't seem to understand that being a Christian doesn't guarantee that one will never sin again; it just means that one is expected to do one's best as a follower of Christ.[5]

Over the years, I accompanied Lucian to international Golden Dawn meetings, where he and other influential men and women–many of them also members of the Illuminati–participated in rituals in which they worshipped not only Ra, but also a myriad of other gods and goddesses that included Diana, Isis, and Gaia, goddess of the earth.

At these meetings they expressed pro-Aryan beliefs, including the denigration of "inferior" races. And yet, oddly, they occasionally invited "token" black politicians and their wives to participate in rituals–perhaps to enlist their support.

Lucian and other Golden Dawn members instilled their belief systems in a succession of my alter-states that came out only at Golden Dawn gatherings, including an alter-state named Gaia.

In 1993, I learned about a daytime, all-female Golden Dawn ritual that I'd been taken to as an adult. It was held in Atlanta, Georgia in what seemed to be a white, chilly greenhouse. Made of stone, it was behind an imposing mansion. A cult-conditioned child alter-state named Laurie Ann emerged and wrote about her experience there:

> *After ritual chanting, I took my seat, cross-legged in the middle of the sun on the floor. We all just sat and waited. There was a gold circle around the tips of the sun rays–they called it the rainbow. Women took turns speaking, positioning themselves on the circle–some of them started "channeling" and giving messages of encouragement and power from the gods.*
>
> *The light in the room got brighter and brighter and we felt it fall on our faces and skin, like a mist. We all were happy and we celebrated and felt better. The golden sun mist was like radioactive energy that our skin absorbed.*[6] *And we didn't need our body as much. And no one wanted to eat or have sex. But we did get sleepy. And they would give us glasses of liquid sun rays to drink. It shone with a bright fluorescent yellow glow in the dark.*

Another alter-state explained that this thick liquid was called the "Elixir of Life." It was actually human semen that had been processed in advance, to eliminate the transmission of any diseases.[7]

> *They liked to discuss philosophy. They would enjoy the light, and read poems to the gods. It was "Ode to this" and "Ode to that." They liked Greek statues, white ones, and water fountains and pools of water and lots and lots of flowers, in white stone vases. They liked to inhale the smell of fresh flowers in the room. Especially the long ones with rows of brilliant flowers on them–purple and red and yellow.*
>
> *Some of the wives of powerful politicians occasionally joined us in the rituals. Except for me, they all wore white robes with long sleeves and sandals and gold belts. No makeup was allowed. Long hair had to be worn down. Purity and simplicity. Oneness with nature. They were called acolytes.*
>
> *Lucian had told me they were willing to be sacrificed if they were chosen (by any of the gods, but especially Zeus). Not their children–themselves! I believed him, and was impressed by their level of devotion to the deities they worshipped.*
>
> *After the rituals, everyone was peaceful and gentle, and no one wanted to talk much.*

One of the reasons Lucian took me with him to international Golden Dawn meetings was that he triggered out an alter-state that heard everything that was said and later recited it verbatim, upon Lucian's command.[8] At some of their planning meetings, Lucian and other leaders discussed their goal of developing a one-world religion that would incorporate all religions. They said that Judaism and Christianity would be welcome at the beginning, but would eventually be outlawed. Although some members didn't seem to approve, Lucian and some of his friends also discussed their intention to legalize adult-child sex.

When I told a number of investigative journalists about this man's Luciferian beliefs and his involvement in both the Illuminati and the Golden Dawn, I received no verifications. That left me wondering if I'd somehow made it all up! I was about to give up on these memories when I purchased a book by Texe Marrs, a right-wing Christian author. Although I do not approve of some of his spiritualized fear tactics, I did find verifications in his *Book of New Age Cults & Religions*. In a nine-page chapter about Lucis Trust, he included the names of Lucian and several other politicians I'd remembered meeting at the secretive Golden Dawn and Illuminati gatherings. Marrs explained the connection between Lucis Trust and Luciferianism:

> The word "lucis" comes directly from the name Lucifer, which means "light bearer" or "the one who brings light" . . . when the Lucis Trust first began, founded by Alice Bailey, it was called *Lucifer Publishing!* It was incorporated in 1922, however, under its present name . . . the Lucis Trust defines its purpose as that of establishing a "New World Order." (pp. 238–239)

I was alarmed by what I read, because if my memories of these people were real, then I was in danger! Some of them still have enormous clout; I could imagine them squishing me like a bug on a sidewalk if they thought I posed a problem. My anxiety nearly went through the roof. After several days, I calmed down enough to realize that people like Lucian are so grandiose and narcissistic, they probably wouldn't care if I told what I knew about them.

As time went on, I also remembered enough to realize that although Lucian had used his political positions to hurt me and others, he was still just one individual, and part of a fringe minority at that. I suspect most of the participants in these secretive rituals were not blatant pedophiles, nor were they part of an evil conspiracy to rule the world and stomp out anyone who opposed them.

This knowledge has been important, because it has helped me to become less fearful of non-criminal Pagans and practitioners of other "alternative" religions.

Dr. J

Not all of the "good guy" perpetrators I remembered were influential politicians or wealthy businessmen. I was horrified to learn that several had been CIA-contracted psychiatrists who had been directly involved in MKULTRA![9] In my early recovery, I reconnected with one of them, Dr. J, in an odd way.

During his nationally televised daytime talk show that aired on March 5, 1993, Phil Donahue interviewed an elderly couple who had been accused of ritually abusing their grandchildren. I took notes as I watched the program. Donahue seemed to side with the accused couple. He even described them as being "Norman Rockwell" grandparents.

Using phrases that would soon be extensively promoted as "fact" by spokespersons from the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, an invited guest, Dr. Richard Gardner, suggested that what was being done to the grandparents was a "witch hunt." He said the grandchildren had been "programmed" to remember. He called the professionals who had helped protect the children, "zealots and fanatics." He also introduced other phrases, including "sexual abuse hysteria," "Salem witch trials," "overzealous therapists," and "mass hysteria," to the viewing audience.[10]

Initially, the faces of most of the audience members registered anger towards the accused grandparents. When Gardner spoke, however, many people in the audience seemed to go into a slack-jawed trance, then seemed confused. Towards the end of the program, some of them seemed to side with the grandparents.

I was concerned that the show might have been used to manipulate the public into disbelieving the children's claims. I wrote an angry letter to Donahue and sent copies to organizations that educated the public about the effects of criminal occult ritual abuse.

The director of a pro-survivor organization asked me to send copies of the letter to a list of nine individuals she'd been trying to educate about ritual abuse–including Dr. J. Because I didn't yet remember his name, I was willing to send a copy to him. However, as I addressed an envelope to him, something tugged at my mind. I ignored the odd sensation since no memory came with it.

Within weeks, the psychiatrist sent me a one-page, typed, signed letter. In it, he claimed to be on our side in the "war against the cults." He provided his phone number at work and asked me to call him, collect.

As I read the letter, I couldn't shake the sense that something was wrong. I sent copies to several authors. One responded post-haste, warning me that the psychiatrist was heavily connected to the CIA. Angry that Dr. J had tried to con me, I wrote a scolding letter to him; he never wrote back.

I now believe that Dr. J had written to me and had asked me to call him because he'd been worried that I was waking up and might eventually remember and tell others about what he'd done to me.

Nearly a decade later, Dr. J died from cancer. News of his death triggered a series of memories of experiences that I'd had with him as a CIA-contracted mental programmer.[11] In one, I was an adult. I felt completely alone and wore a bright orange prison jumpsuit. I stood in a wide, bare corridor. Its concrete floor was very clean, perhaps painted grey, with a yellow line painted right down the middle. The concrete walls were lighter colored. At the end of corridor, about twenty feet ahead, I saw darkness to the left, an entrance into another area I couldn't see.

As I recalled this and other experiences, I knew that although Dr. J was dead, I was keeping him alive within me. I told my therapist, "It's like I'm a movie projection machine and the reels haven't yet been given me to go through." She replied, "He is dead. He is dead."

I asked, "Why am I crying?"

She said, "You told me before that he was another father-figure to you. So this is another loss. He's dead and you're not."

I said, "It's so strange that the man tortured me and threatened my life, and yet I am crying. Am I angry? Is that what's beneath this?"

The therapist said, "Perhaps."

I said, "I feel like I've just been tortured, like it just happened. Like I'm still in that corridor." I kept telling her, "I'm stuck." I had odd thoughts that my stuckness had something to do with keeping secrets and "National Security." Then suddenly I dropped down inside and my body went limp in her upholstered chair.

I went back in memory to a brightly-lit room behind me, to my right, off the corridor:

> I was lying naked on a table with round metal "loops" at the very end that restrained my ankles. Dr. J was in charge. A shorter, balding man with short, straight, thin, light brown hair was there too. The second man wore silver-framed glasses, and was probably in his thirties or forties.
>
> First, the two men had done what many perpetrators called "cat scratch." Making me lie on my stomach on that table, they had "lashed" (really, scratched) my back with a bare-ended, live

black electrical wire. Even though Dad had tortured me this way in the past, I still was never prepared for the intense pain. Then they turned me over and restrained me as I lay on my sore back.

After that, Dr. J brutally rammed a large, hard dildo into my vagina, saying, “This will ensure your silence about what you couriered that way.”

Then the short man held my eyelids open while Dr. J put drops of liquid in them that did something, so that even when I stared, I saw only black. Dr. J said, “You will see nothing.”

Then Dr. J gave me a choice of what they would do to my mouth to ensure my silence. I could either have something awful-tasting or I could “take” a live wire in it. I was heavily sedated and couldn’t move my arms at all. I felt like my head was disconnected from my body. I could still feel some pain.

They’d done awful tastes and electricity to my mouth before. Even though I preferred to suck on a live wire to get it over with, I refused to choose either method. So Dr. J declared there was a third option: “We can cut out your tongue.” I heard a whining sound to my left that sounded like a workman’s drill. I opted for the live wire and sucked on it as I had done so many times before.

After that, Dr. J said, “There’s one more part of your body we must do, to ensure your silence.” No rush this time. I heard the drill again and thought, they’ll probably do my hands. The psychiatrist said, “We can make you like Christ–give you your own stigmata.” I prepared to have my hands drilled.

I was surprised when instead, the second man pinched my left palm, both front and back. He said, “Feel that?”

I didn’t respond although I did feel it.

He pinched harder. “Feel that?”

> It hurt, but again I refused to respond. Then they each grabbed a hand and bent my wrists back very hard. The second man said, "We can break your wrists so you'll never write again." I feared that they'd damaged them.
>
> The second man then lightly touched my belly button with the revolving drill, saying, "We can kill you now." I prepared myself for the intense pain, but he didn't go any further.
>
> After that, the song "America the Beautiful" was broadcast from a small, brown wooden speaker attached to the far wall, below the ceiling. Dr. J intoned, "If you ever talk, you will be put in prison for the rest of your life. You'll never be able to talk to anyone again, not even to write or receive letters. You will be completely alone in prison for the rest of your life."
>
> As he had in the past, he kept calling me his "good little girl." He said, "You are a good American, you love your country, you want to protect your country, you will never betray your country."
>
> He knew me well enough to know that I do love my country. It is an integral part of who I have been since early childhood. People like Dr. J took that love and twisted it into an instrument of blackmail, a thing of fear.
>
> He told me that at any cost, I would protect my country's "national security." With those words, he effectively sealed my secrecy–using my love of my country.
>
> Then the two men made me stand up beyond the end of the table. I was unable to use my hands, so they assisted me. I was able to see some light but little else. They dressed me in a jumpsuit, and before long I found myself standing all alone outside the brightly-lit room, which was now back to my right. Miserable, I regressed and wanted to get down on the floor of the corridor and crawl, but I didn't.

As I recovered these memories in the therapist's office without any prompting, I realized with a rising sense of anger that what Dr. J and the other man had done to me had nothing to do with "love of country" or "national security." Dr. J had really been afraid I'd talk about *him* some day!

I was reduced to tears again, weeping because he had deeply hurt the good part of me that cared about my country. I'd put my life on the line for my country, over and over again. Maybe I'd been tricked, maybe I'd been misled and lied to, but my motives had been honest and good. Damn him for using my love for my country against me! All those years, I'd been made to feel like filth because of the dirty work I'd done for the handlers. But it wasn't out of love for them, it was out of love for my country!

At home after that exhausting therapy session, I rested and determined to pull myself together. "The bastard is dead," I reminded myself. I used self-talk to stay alive:

> *I know that I must master my emotions. He couldn't kill what was pure and good in me. He walled it off using torture and terror and fear of imprisonment, but he couldn't kill it. He could have chosen to do what was right, too. He could have sought to heal, to do good, to love. But no, he chose to torture and to hate. I am not like him. I will go on from here. To hell with the trauma-bond between me and him. I'm not going to suicide because he's dead.*
>
> *And what I do from now on, is nobody's business but my own. Love for country is love for its people. And I am one of my country's people too! I don't know what to do with this love I've reclaimed, but if I die, my love of country dies and I can't have that. So I'm going to take a bath, wash my hair, brush my teeth, get dressed, go to the grocery store–and live.*

The next day, more emotional pain built up inside me. I could sense another imminent wave of emerging memory. I was so exhausted, but there was no way to stop it. I relaxed to let it come without a fight. Then I heard myself saying, "I'm going down the rabbit hole." I felt as if I were going into craziness. The memory was going to be a strong one.

At Bill's insistence, I called my therapist and asked for an emergency appointment. She asked how fast we could get there; a client had just called and cancelled the next full hour. I mumbled, "I guess God wants me to live."

Because I couldn't stop flashbacking, Bill drove. Already beginning to regress, I couldn't wear my prescription glasses (I didn't wear glasses as a child). I closed my eyes against the bright sun. As we drove past groves of trees, I kept seeing sun, shade, sun, shade in quick succession. That triggered hallucinations of varied colored, different shaped objects flying at my face. This was new.

I asked Bill to stay with me for extra support. A child part told him and the therapist that having what she called "daymares" was like being with Alice behind her looking glass, where she saw things that clearly did not happen in regular life. The therapist explained to my child part that my daymares were called hallucinations, and that later on, when they'd happened at home, they were called flashbacks.

I regressed further into that child alter-state when the therapist asked why Dr. J mattered in my pain about not having had a father's love. I told her that the intensity of my pain was from the realization that I'd *never* had a dad who loved me, and that from now on I'd have to find ways to be my own father.

The absence of paternal love had left a painful void in me that I'd tried to fill with smatterings of attention and non-sexual "love" from older men like Dr. J. Although I'd previously struggled with similar pain about my mother's inability to love me, this pain was probably more intense because with it, came the realization that I'd had no parental love at all! Even the shadowy substitutes like Dr. Black and Dr. J had never really loved me.

After recovering the early childhood memories of being dosed with a hallucinogen and traumatized by the doctor in the bunny costume, that child part of me wanted to take Dr. J and do to him what he'd done to the white rabbit–slam him again and again against the white tiled laboratory wall. Only one problem: Dr. J didn't really have long white ears!

My greatest horror was that I'd been drugged to the point where, as I hallucinated, my nightmares had broken through to my waking hours and had become as real, at least visibly, as the furniture in the therapist's office. I cannot think of any greater horror than this, and this is what Dr. J had done to me.

This incensed me: the bastard had given *a little child* a powerful hallucinogen! The entire time this child part related the emerging lab/hallucinogen/rabbit memory to Bill and the therapist, my left leg shook uncontrollably and I kept crying and shaking and hyperventilating. I sometimes wasn't able to breathe at all.

After I'd processed that memory, I told Bill that I wanted to go out and get "shit-faced drunk." At a local restaurant, we had our private version of an Irish wake for both Dr. J and Grandpa M. (who had also recently died). At my initiation, we toasted both men's deaths. We then toasted the special part of hell that I chose to believe those men are now in, reserved for cruel spooks. I told Bill, "I don't want to imagine the punishment in hell I could assign for Dr. J and Grandpa." I decided that Satan could do better than I could imagine, and that was good enough for me. To free myself from the bondage of my baneful past, I needed to be angry and not feel guilty for it. I needed to feel free from my fear of being punished by God for saying such things.

It's amazing and humbling to me that so many of those men had mentally programmed me to suicide if I remembered them. And yet, I've survived every suicide program while *they've* died, one after another. And as each one has died, I've become freer to remember and heal from what they'd done to me.

Unethical Hypnosis

Because of my experiences with Dr. J and other CIA programmers, I have precious little patience with anyone who claims that adults cannot be hypnotized into performing acts that are, to them, morally reprehensible. This is a destructive and dangerous lie.[12]

A highly published expert on hypnosis, T.X. Barber, helped to promote the same lie when he claimed that subjects faked being hypnotized, and that hypnosis therefore didn't even exist. He failed to mention that he had previously "thanked CIA and Navy-funded hypnotists for favors given," in more than one of his written works. (Emery, pg. 341)

The late Martin T. Orne, who had worked with the CIA's MKULTRA program, was a founding member of the FMSF and created its Scientific and Professional Advisory Board.[13] He, too, seemed to actively promote disinformation about the benignity of hypnosis (Emery, pg. 345).[14]

I worry when people say they cannot be hypnotized into doing something wrong. By not understanding how powerful hypnosis can be, they're *especially* vulnerable to being victimized by unethical hypnotists. By understanding hypnosis and how it works, we can more effectively protect ourselves from those who use it to trance and control others to perform unsavory deeds–against their will.[15]

Recycled Predators

Some mental programmers and handlers have had the audacity to reenter awakening victims' lives, posing as voluntary helpers and saviors. Some of these men (and a few women), whom I think of as "carpetbaggers," masquerade as sympathetic investigators, therapists, authors, and conference presenters. They pretend to bring attention to ritual abuse and mind-control atrocities while secretly feeding disinformation to targeted victims and to the greater public. At least three of them still convince survivors to *pay* them to "deprogram" their minds! Since I began my recovery in 1989, I've had the misfortune of being conned by a succession of these devious individuals.[16]

Like many other mind-control survivors, I've occasionally had difficulty recalling the faces and voices of former programmers, owners, and handlers. Such perpetrators know that former victims are less likely to remember them if the perpetrators re-contact the survivors, posing as good guys.[17] The memories created by these *new* contacts serve as an overlay. They effectively block out the older memories while providing a plausible context for the strong sense of familiarity felt by the survivor.

Cognitive dissonance can also arise when a fellow survivor presents one of these recycled perpetrators as a good guy. This causes one's repressed memories of the perpetrator to clash with the fellow survivor's favorable information about the perpetrator. If one doesn't yet remember that the "good guy" is really a former handler or programmer, then one is *more* likely to accept him or her as a hero or a savior than would a non-victim!

When I am unable to remember what a particular perpetrator did to me in the past, I am also more likely to emotionally re-attach to them, a la Stockholm Syndrome. I call this instantaneous, unconscious response a "vacuum seal effect." I've observed this reaction enough times for it to generate automatic red flags when it occurs again. Each time it happens, I remind myself that genuine emotional bonds take time to develop.[18]

When re-accesses were attempted by former mind-control perpetrators in the past, I was usually too disconnected from my intuition and my memories of them to recognize who and what they really were. I did, however, feel oddly addicted to them when they re-entered my life, posing as good guys. Another clue was that I was much too quick to do whatever they wanted.

The reason for such mindless compliance was simple: when they'd hurt me in the past, I'd felt gratitude towards them for not killing me. That profound feeling of gratitude, mixed with my repressed fear that they might kill me now, created a new "blind spot" in my mind. Although some of my suppressed memories of those individuals did seep through in dreams after we'd reconnected, I was still unable to remember, or accept, that I had known them in the past in an unhealthy way.

After figuratively being burned again and again by these con artists, I have learned the importance of letting go of my pride and admitting that I may always have a mental blind spot towards some of them. My advice to mind-control survivors who feel an instant attachment to any stranger is this: run, don't walk, in the opposite direction. Get help from your tried-and-true support network to stay away from that person. Trauma survivors don't need "iffy" people in their lives, to deprogram and heal.

Notes

1. Anna C. Salter warned of the illogic of assuming that a person's persona is the same as his or her private persona: "It seems impossible to convince people that private behavior cannot be predicted from public behavior. Kind, nonviolent individuals behave well in public, but so do many people who are brutal behind the scenes." (pg. 23-24)

2. During my codependency treatment at Crossroads, a physical activity director told us that many people are addicted to lying outdoors during the day, because the sun's warmth provides the closest sensation they'll ever have to experiencing a mother's love. Perhaps this is why some people choose to believe that the sun is their loving God.

3. That memory seemed impossibly bizarre, until I started researching Lucis Trust on the Internet at http://www.lucistrust.org. In less than an hour, I learned that it is closely connected to Share International; furthermore, Share International is run by Benjamin Crème, who seems to be Maitreya's primary promoter.

4. Although some Christians would claim that this is proof of their being demonically possessed, I believe it indicates that they are so dissociated, when they go into an inevitable trance-state, their alter-states emerge and fake being spiritual entities.

5. I am amazed that he didn't recognize his own hypocrisy-posing as a dedicated Jew while practicing his Luciferian religion in secret.

6. I suspect that I had been drugged before this ceremony began, possibly causing me to hallucinate.

7. These female members of the Golden Dawn, when drinking liquid semen, claimed to be superior to Satanists who drank human blood in rituals. I do not understand why these normally intelligent women don't recognize that drinking semen is actually a form of sexual self-degradation.

8. In the same way, some of my alter-states were used as "mental couriers" to deliver unwritten, highly secretive messages to influential men in other countries. Those alter-states then couriered the recipients' verbal replies back to my owners and handlers-again leaving no paper trail.

9. I believe that Dr. J and other CIA MKULTRA psychiatrists have used the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, a non-profit organization, as a conduit for disinformation and propaganda designed to convince the public that: recovered memories aren't real; survivors fabricate "false memories"; mental health professionals implant memories of abuse in clients' minds; and alleged survivors fabricate MPD/DID. Certain individuals who have been employed to participate in government-sponsored mind-control programs have had a clear and vested interest in discrediting their former victims. If the former victims are not believed, then the perpetrators can escape prosecution for their crimes against humanity, including torture, false imprisonment, and slavery.

   Carla Emery wrote that the FMSF's claims about the existence of memory confabulation are valid. I agree with her to a point; however, my experience has been that *genuine* "false memories" (really, screen memories) were methodically implanted by Dad, Dr. J., and other perpetrators, Emery did cite an article that reinforces my concern that some prominent members of the FMSF may have used the non-profit organization to promote a hidden agenda:

   > . . . the False Memory Syndrome Foundation may have an ulterior motive in its efforts to deny validity to memories acquired-or recovered-after some passage of time . . . FMSF has some on their Board of Advisors who may want to cover up their own work. One is

> Louis West, another is Martin Orne, one of the key MKULTRA researchers in hypnosis, and a third is Michael Persinger, who did research on the effects of electromagnetic radiation on the brain for a Pentagon weapons project. Regression therapy could threaten to reveal techniques the CIA may have secretly developed involving the use of hypnosis. (Daniel Brandt, "Mind Control and the Secret State," *Prevailing Winds* magazine, Number 3, pg. 73, NameBase NewsLine, #12, Jan–March 1996. pp. 239-240)

10. In its 5/31/03 obituary about Dr. Gardner, the Independent.co.uk website cited his explanations for the basis of his bogus theory, Parental Alienation Syndrome (PAS). Although PAS like "False Memory Syndrome," was never empirically proven, Gardner promoted it as scientific fact in self-published literature and in many court custody battles, providing an adequate false defense for an untold number of fathers and stepfathers who were accused of having sexually molested their children. As a result, many of these fathers gained *full custody* of the children.

> Gardner . . . believed that 90 per cent of mothers were liars who "programmed" their children to repeat their lies, and never mind the corroborating evidence. He theorised that mothers alleging abuse were expressing, in disguised form, their own sexual inclinations towards their children.

Like so many other people with suspected pedophile mentalities, I believe Gardner displaced his own sexual inclinations towards children onto the genuinely concerned mothers:

> And he suggested there was nothing much wrong with pedophilia, incestuous or not. "One of the steps that society must take to deal with the present hysteria is to 'come off it' and take a more realistic attitude toward pedophilic behavior," he wrote in *Sex Abuse Hysteria – Salem Witch Trials Revisited* (1991). Pedophilia, he added, "is a widespread and accepted practice among literally billions of people" . . . Along the way, he also turned into an authentic American monster. (Independent, pg. 2)

The callous and exponential damage Dr. Gardner wreaked upon our gentle society may continue for generations. More of his pro-pedophilia statements can be found on the Internet at http://cincinnatipas.com/richardgardner-pas.html.

11. My experience has been that when former owners or mental programmers died, my knowing that they could never hurt me again subconsciously freed my mind to recall more of what they had done to me. This also occurred after Dad died. I do not believe that I would have been able to remember the ritual and government experiences, had Dad remained an active threat to my life and safety.

12. Carla Emery explained that the person most influential in promoting this fallacy was Milton H. Erickson, a well-known hypnotist.

    > Erickson claimed . . . that a subject cannot be made to do anything against his will, or against his morals. What he really demonstrated, however, is all of the methods by which a hypnotist can cleverly and deliberately fail to produce self-destructive or unethical behavior-if he wants to report those types of results. (pg. 334)

13. In the introduction to the FMSF's 2002 webpage entitled *The FMSF Scientific and Professional Advisory Board Profiles*, Executive Director Pamela Freyd, Ph.D. indicated that Martin and Emily Orne were instrumental in identifying "people whose published research in the field of memory or clinical practice might provide insights into the problem." Orne was, to the best of my understanding, not only a founding member of the FMSF-he was also primarily responsible for creating the advisory board and recruiting its members.
14. In *Bluebird*, Dr. Colin Ross named Dr. J. (who I'm fairly certain was Dr. L. J. West), Dr. Martin Orne, and other mental health professionals who had contracted with the CIA and/or the Pentagon to perform experiments on humans, and who later actively supported the FMSF (pp. 112-124, 137-142, 154). A large list of institutions, facilities, and individuals who allegedly participated in human experimentation in North America can be found on my personal website at http://www.kathleen-sullivan.com on the "Government Research" page. Much of the list has been compiled from *Bluebird*.
15. Carla Emery warned readers against the dangers of believing common myths about hypnosis:

    > They say, "Hypnosis does not exist." Or they say, "We're not doing hypnosis. This is *something else*, and it's wonderful, and ineffable, and totally harmless, and mysteriously helpful." Saying that calms the public's fear, increases volunteering, increases subjects' susceptibility. This is the first stage of induction." (pg. 346)

16. Carla Emery explained how an awakening mind-control survivor can be unwittingly reaccessed by a former controller:

    > The exploiter typically tries, to the bitter end, covertly to perform damage control and keep his secrets hidden as long as the subject is within his reach. If secretly he can access his longtime subject, he gives the old accustomed induction cue, then asks questions to bring himself up to date on the status of the investigation. Then he gives new suggestions to that conditioned mind, designed to protect himself or to further exploit his subject. (pg. 378)

17. One Christian author calls these individuals, "wolves in sheep's clothing."

18. In *Journey into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*, Gordon Thomas described the powerful bond that can develop between captors and their victims. He stated that "pathological transference . . . could be seen, for instance, where parents seriously abused their children, even threatening their lives, yet when their offspring were rescued, perhaps by social workers, the children almost never complained about their treatment; they were overwhelmed with gratitude that their parents had let them live." (pg. 75)

Going Public

Talking to a Wall

Even as I was remembering and beginning to integrate, I continued to be contacted by handlers and Aryan cult members—not only by phone but at church, the grocery store, post office, shopping mall, and more. Because I didn't feel safe living in Atlanta, and Bill had recently been awarded medical disability for his spinal deterioration, we decided it was time to relocate. After much discussion, we chose Chattanooga, a lovely older city we'd had the opportunity to explore during our family visits to Crossroads. Three hours north of Atlanta, Chattanooga is surrounded by mountains and divided by the Tennessee River. It's relaxed and friendly–perfect for retirees.[1]

After we'd moved into our new home, traumatic memories continued to emerge. It was time to find a new therapist. I learned of Dr. M., a psychologist who claimed to be familiar with MPD and ritual abuse recovery issues. I assumed I could teach him about the issues surrounding government mind-control. After several months of twice-a-week sessions, he started curling into a fetal position in his leather upholstered chair, his eyes widening as I talked about what had been done to me by mind-control professionals.

Although I felt as though I were talking to a wall, I was afraid to stop consulting with him. I didn't know of anyone else in the area who worked with dissociated trauma survivors.

Internet Connections

Several friends encouraged me to buy a computer so I could use the Internet. After I bought it, I joined several on-line support groups. How wonderful to be able to communicate with other mind-control survivors! I no longer felt isolated. Unfortunately, I didn't understand that I was also reporting details of personal life, via E-mail, to people who could easily forward my information to active perpetrators. (And to be fair, I could have done the same to them.) My need for support was so great, I still ignored potential risks.

Predators posing as "good guys" soon contacted me through the Internet. They were actively trolling the on-line ritual abuse/mind-control survivor community for information and new victims. Several of the predators tried to cultivate my dependence on them for help and advice. One, an author who pretended to expose government mind control, was the most successful. I eventually broke away from him when I realized that he was attempting to gain control of my mind, and therefore my life.[2]

Reaccessed

I wanted to believe that because we'd moved away from Atlanta, I wouldn't be accosted again. I was in denial about the tenacity of my former handlers and owners. Mentally unprepared for their ongoing contacts, I blocked out each attempt.

One morning, as I drove south on a local highway (Hwy. 27) in the right lane, three vehicles surrounded me. They positioned their vehicles in front, behind me, and to my left. I recognized a bearded man, driving an SUV, as being from J.C.'s Aryan cult. I was unable to break away from them, and do not remember what happened after that.

Another day, I drove on a rural road from the town of Soddy Daisy towards home. As I came to a bridge that spanned a creek, several men stood next to orange and white striped construction barriers. A middle-aged, thin, unkempt man, wearing a hard hat, stood closest to where I had to stop. Because I was new to the area, I rolled down my window to ask for alternate directions home. He approached the car. Again, I don't remember what happened afterwards.

Several years ago, I looked in a mirror at my back to examine my moles. I was unhappy to see two new, small, perfectly circular, flat, dark brown marks exactly one inch apart to the left of my upper spine. Handlers had used stun guns in the past to control and torture me, leaving many small, white circular marks on my forearms and other parts of my body. Still, they hadn't given me the brown marks that reportedly identify most Beta-programmed slaves. I still don't know who might have marked my back, or why.[3]

We received calls, on our unlisted phone, that activated more of our still-hidden alter-states. We were also skillfully compromised by a local husband-and-wife team that, we later learned, were actively connected to the intelligence community! (The wife had previously divorced the brother of an NSA Director; her current husband, who admitted couriering for the government, was given a used laptop computer by his handler–I found a blank CIA employment form on it.) I felt frightened and devastated when I realized that dammit, we were still being reactivated! I wanted to live a clean life–I didn't want to wake up in a jail cell, not knowing why I was there!

Many mind-control survivors seem to struggle with this particular fear. Some of the perpetrators who had controlled us don't want to let us go, even after we've told others about what they'd done to us. Part of their obsession with us seems to be a matter of pride–by losing control of us, they may appear inept to other controllers.

I believe another reason why they persist is that a great deal of time and money was spent on programming each of us; some controllers view us as financial investments and are not willing to let us go.

I also believe they don't want us to break away because if we do, it will be easier for us to remember them. And then, if we can identify them (as I was eventually able to identify Dr. J in a video that his university had put on the Internet), we could testify against them in court.

I suspect the deepest reason why they don't want to let go is that they're emotionally addicted to "their" former slaves. I believe these control addicts unconsciously fear that their own minds or lives will fall apart if they're left with no one to control.

I feel sad for those men and women. I believe that recovering survivors are more free than they, even if we're re-accessed. We're discovering and accepting who we are, all the way through. We're finding peace with ourselves and our imperfect world. They may never find such peace. We're learning to trust and bond with healthy people. They may never be able to bond, because they're immersed in a shadowy world in which bonds are built on shifting lies and secrecy.

Believe the Children

In April, 1997 I had the opportunity to meet with a group of mind control survivors, face-to-face, at a conference in Illinois. It was co-hosted by Believe the Children, a marvelous pro-survivor advocacy organization that disbanded soon afterwards. At the conference, I met some of the survivors with whom I'd communicated through an Internet deprogramming/support group.

Blanche Chavoustie and Lynne Moss-Sharman had created a pro-active organization, ACHES-MC, to inform the public about mind-control experimentation. Each night of the conference, Blanche and Lynne opened their suite for survivors and therapists to meet together and talk. One night, I listened to Valerie Wolfe, a clinical social worker who had recently testified before a Senate subcommittee with two of her clients—Claudia Mullens and Chris DiNicola.

On the second day of the conference, Lynne asked if we'd be willing to participate in a video that ACHES-MC was filming. She asked those of us who volunteered to tell a bit about our histories, then say what we would like the government to do. Feeling happy and empowered, I smiled as I gave my statement.

The videotape was sent to President Clinton with a letter from Lynne and Blanche, asking for an investigation to be opened into the CIA's MKULTRA experiments. When I learned about that, I felt another wave of fear–would I now be killed for talking? Again, I tried to balance my fear with the knowledge that I was probably safer for having gone public.

Helen

One night in Lynne and Blanche's suite, I met a professor of criminal justice. A good listener, he had a kind and gentle soul. I cried as I told him I wished I could have a therapist like Valerie. She was intelligent and compassionate, and seemed to be willing to hear whatever her clients needed to say without cringing or shutting them down. The professor smiled and said that he'd recently met a therapist in Chattanooga who might be what I was looking for. He said Helen was familiar with MPD, and had worked extensively with ritual abuse survivors and Vietnam veterans. He gave me her office number and suggested that I contact her.

Although I didn't want to give up on Dr. M., I knew I was getting nowhere with him. After several more unsuccessful consultations, I contacted Helen. During our first meeting in her office, I was surprised by how much emotional pain I felt. Her warm brown eyes and soft voice seemed to cut right through my armor. I decided I would work with her.

Helen seemed to be intelligent, warm, and empathetic. She said she'd be willing to learn more about mind-control while working with me. I insisted on one boundary up-front: although she was a skilled hypnotherapist, I wouldn't allow her to use hypnosis with me. I'd heard too many horror stories about abuse survivors who had lost legitimate court cases against perpetrators because the survivors had undergone hypnosis during therapy.

Whenever I did memory recovery work in Helen's office, she waited quietly in her chair as I relaxed and allowed parts to come out and talk about their experiences. Because she often testified in court, Helen understood suggestibility and was careful not to make any statements that could affect the credibility of my emerging memories.

Silenced

After I started consulting with Helen, the most serious re-access attempt occurred. This was shortly after I'd made two big strides in my recovery:

In September of 1997, I'd completed the manuscript for *MK*, a cathartic fictional account of my life.

That same month, I'd also given my first public interview with CKLN (a Canadian radio station) as part of its series about mind control. During the interview, I'd provided a large amount of information, although I'd chosen not to provide any specifics about the black ops.[4]

When nothing bad happened after the interview, I felt relieved and decided the threats that handlers and owners had made in the past against my life were lies. That same month, another female mind-control survivor[5] accidentally discovered a direct connection, through the Internet, between a well-known "Satanist"/Army psyops expert and an author who had posed within the survivor community as a concerned good guy for years.

Deeply shaken by this unhappy discovery, I shared it with the on-line mind-control survivor community. Like myself, many of the survivors were emotionally rattled. Some of us had trusted the author and had given him very personal information.

The author was scheduled to speak at the ECLIPSE-sponsored "Ritual Trauma, Child Abuse and Mind Control Conference" to be held in Atlanta on October 1–3. Knowing that he'd be there, I felt uncomfortable about attending the conference. I had, however, agreed to emotionally support a female mind-control survivor who would also be presenting. Despite the concerns of other survivors who had learned that the conference wasn't safe for us, I decided to go.[6]

D.W., an alleged mind-control survivor, also planned to attend the conference. Although we'd originally "met" through an Internet support group, she had also privately communicated with me via E-mail. She asked if I would share a motel room with her in Atlanta and split the cost. She convinced me that we could support and protect each other during the conference. I believed her.

What I experienced during the ECLIPSE conference and the following weekend was so upsetting, I still have not remembered all of it.

Because D.W. insisted on keeping me awake in our hotel room by incessantly talking into the wee hours each morning, sleep deprivation put me into a partial trance. (Each morning when I left for the conference, she stayed behind and caught up on her sleep–another red flag I ignored.)

At the ECLIPSE conference, I was shadowed and intimidated by a tall male attendee who the presenting author claimed to have hired to "protect" him from me. I recognized the professional bodyguard as a spook who had handled me, at least once, in the past. Other attendees were concerned about his odd behaviors towards me. Unfortunately, I couldn't stop him from intimidating me with his too-close presence. I felt trapped because I'd agreed to support my friend. I didn't understand that I had the right to break my promise and leave, if it put me at risk.

On the last day of the conference, the bodyguard used a neo-Nazi hand signal to trigger out an adult, op-trained alter-state, code-named Katherine, that I hadn't yet discovered. Katherine immediately recognized the bodyguard. She felt an overwhelming urge to follow him out of the room and go wherever he told her. Several other mind-control survivors recognized what was happening and convinced Katherine to stay with them.

Katherine stayed in control of "the body" throughout most of the following weekend. On Sunday morning, she drove D.W. and another survivor to the Atlanta Hartsfield airport, dropping off the other survivor at her terminal first, at D.W.'s suggestion, and then walking with D.W. to another terminal, where she'd catch her flight.

Before Katherine walked away, D.W., a former nurse, unexpectedly applied painful pressure to nerve bundles in my shoulder, then gave Katherine new instructions.

Instead of taking the underground train back to the concourse that she'd parked near, Katherine (now in a full trance) walked beside the underground moving walkways that connected several of the concourses. Recognizing one area from the past, a CIA-programmed alter-state emerged and walked towards a small room off a corridor just beyond an escalator that would have taken me up to the ground floor.

That alter-state had previously been conditioned to emerge in that part of the airport after ops, to report to awaiting handlers for debriefing. As she walked into the room, she saw at least three tall men in dark suits who stood silently with their backs to the wall, next to the doorway. One, a male relative near my age, had received the same black op training as I.

Looking further into the room, she recognized a psyops expert who had been one of my overseas handlers, and two other men who had previously told me they had worked within the CIA's Directorate of Operations.[7] The psyops expert and the handlers quickly triggered out a succession of CIA-loyal alter-states, threatening each part and giving some of them new commands.[8]

After the psyops expert left the room, the two alleged CIA spooks and my male relative raped me in succession, giving more threats and commands, knowing that the new trauma opened my mind so their words would go deep inside. Each rapist first donned a large, tacky, yellow, plaid sports jacket that they shared. I believe they did this so that if I recalled the rape, I would remember seeing the jacket instead of their faces. Each man used condoms, probably so that I would have no physical proof of the rape. The assault went on and on until I blacked out.

When I came back into consciousness, I was alone in the room with an older, bearded man who had been one of my primary mental programmers. He triggered out several more CIA-loyal alter-states and implanted two new sets of mental commands that were clearly intended to ensure that I would never "talk" about these men and my connections to them again.[9] After he finished, I again lost consciousness.

When I came into consciousness, I was walking dazedly in a concourse in the airport. Having confused the North and South concourses, I walked outside to the covered parking deck. Frantic when I couldn't find my car, I believed it must have been moved or stolen by spooks who had attended the counter-terrorism conference. I went downstairs and reported my concerns to a City of Atlanta police officer. When he helped find my car in the opposite concourse, I felt foolish.

I didn't yet remember the assault, although I did feel pain where there shouldn't have been any. Going to the police was totally out of character because I'd been conditioned all my life to stay away from cops. Calling Bill at home in Chattanooga and asking him to come to Atlanta with a loaded gun was equally out of character. Something very bad was happening, but I didn't know what.

That night at home, several alter-states emerged, called Helen, and communicated the pieces of the trauma that they'd experienced. They warned Helen that other parts that had previously emerged in therapy were now "missing." With Helen's help in therapy the next day, we were able to reverse some of the newly implanted mental programming.

It took me several years to recall most of the rest of that traumatic experience. First I remembered the yellow jacket, then the physical description of the first rapist, then the second, and then the relative who had raped me last.[10]

I believe the main reason why I didn't immediately remember these men was that the rape had been the worst part of the assault. The first two spooks who raped me were men that some of my CIA-loyal alter-states had been emotionally attached to. One alter-state had believed that the first rapist, who was in charge of the assault, was her husband!

For the next two years, I repeatedly pushed the memories away and told myself that the rape didn't matter. I told myself that I needed to get on with my life. That changed when I interned at a local agency that, among other things, helps rape victims. When I attended a required workshop about rape, I recognized that I needed specialized support and counseling to heal from what had been done to me.

I am fortunate that the agency provides free help to rape survivors. Those counselors helped me to release my buried anger and stop living in fear of being raped again.[11]

Until the summer of 2000, however, much of my behavior was still dictated by the effects of what the men had done to me. I didn't try to market *MK*; instead, I tried to bury it. And although I'd previously wanted to, and many people had asked me to, I now refused to write a factual account of my life (other than a brief piece I rebelliously wrote for PARC-VRAMC, a proactive nonprofit agency).

When I presented recovery information at conferences for ritual abuse and mind-control survivors, I was careful not to share specifics about my experiences with former handlers, programmers, and slave-owners. I only gave one television interview (in the shadows) as a favor to a good friend. I didn't understand that I was still allowing the rapists to control my life.[12]

Rape is one of the most horrible assaults a human can experience. It invades and wounds the body, mind, and soul in so many different ways.[13] Although I'd been raped hundreds of times in the past, only one or two of my alter-states had experienced and compartmentalized each rape. At the airport, however, I was gang-raped when I was probably about 90% integrated. This meant that at least 90% of my mind was directly affected by the assault.

Those cruel men's actions and words betrayed and wounded my soul and shattered my still-fragile self-respect. Feeling soiled and dirty, I isolated from others in shame. I had great difficulty opening my heart to Bill anymore, and he had great difficulty trusting and "forgiving" me for "letting" the men rape me.[14]

I also feared for my life and safety, and wondered when–as the second, red-bearded rapist had threatened–one of those awful men would suddenly pop up in my life and rape me again, or worse. I stayed in abject fear of them and their professional associates for over four years. I remained silent about the details of my past, despite the entreaties and encouragement of many people in my support system. They couldn't understand why I'd stopped speaking out.

During the rape crisis counseling, I gradually realized and acknowledged that I was still terrified, as I'd been during the assault, that those men–all trained killers–would kill me.

As I continued to heal, I learned that some of my CIA-loyal alter-states were grief-stricken that they'd been betrayed by the two spooks who'd previously been kind to them. They also grieved the heinous betrayal by the male relative, an Atlanta resident, for whom I'd once deeply cared. In turn, I—as the host alter-state—grieved the loss of four potentially productive years of my life since the assault.

As I returned in my mind again and again to that below-ground room at the airport, I relieved more pieces of the traumatic experience. Several CIA-loyal alter-states came out and gave me more specific descriptions of the rapists.

Eventually I realized that the first rapist had lied to me. He and the other two men hadn't "had" to rape me because I'd gone public. They had *chosen* to rape me, to reassert their control over me. The bastards! My resulting anger helped me to break their grip of fear over my mind and life.

Regardless of what is done to me or to my loved ones in the future, and regardless of who those criminals and their associates may recruit to try to assault my mind or body or reputation or loved ones or anything else in my life, I have made a vow to myself–based on my very life. From now on, I will speak out about my history and experiences when, where, and with whomever I choose. I will not allow those animals in human skin, or any of their associates, to silence me again. Their shame stays with them.

Notes

1. I wasn't consciously aware that during one of a series of private meetings with Poppa in Atlanta, before we moved to Tennessee, Poppa had given Andreia encouragement about starting a new, clean life and had showed her a Chattanooga realtor's magazine. In it was a picture of an old house in a backwoods community not far from Soddy Daisy, a peaceful rural area a half-hour north of Chattanooga. Poppa had told Andreia to purchase the house, which obviously needed remodeling. Although I couldn't remember Poppa's instructions, I found a copy of the magazine and "fell in love" with the house. Although Bill resisted, I wore him down until he agreed to buy it. Imagine my horror when I learned that a good portion of the people who had founded our small community had had high secrecy clearances-many of them having been involved in intelligence operations! Even the man whose widow sold us the house had been a career intelligence operative! When I realized that we'd probably moved into a spook retirement community, I had an emotional melt-down. Damn it, had I walked into another trap? I was trying to get free! Then Andreia explained that Poppa had said we would be more "protected" there. After having had the opportunity to interact with the few spooks who remain, I've discovered-to my great surprise-that they are just as human and vulnerable as I. That knowledge has taken a lot of the fear away. I also realized that I can't look to anyone else to protect us; only Bill and I are capable of doing that. Such knowledge has strengthened me and bolstered my courage.
2. This was confirmed to me by several survivors. One sent proofs that the author is still affiliated with a large, international, pseudo-religious cult that practices mind-control on its members.
3. Remembering the actual stun gun assaults has been next to impossible, although previously I had remembered enough to know that the white marks on my forearms

were from such assaults. (Their origin was independently confirmed to me by an private investigator in Atlanta who was a former police trainer.) I believe that either the pain or the electrical disruption in my brain (or both) created temporary amnesia, since I knew better than to scream and therefore wouldn't have been out of breath during the assault. "Estimating the effects of torture by means of electricity on the ability to remember is a very uncertain enterprise. In most cases, loss of consciousness resulting from electrical torture is likely to be caused by hyperventilation, induced by screaming and intensified breathing under torture." (Graessner et al., pg. 195)

4. During the interview, I unwittingly provided information about implanted "alien" screen memories that unfortunately still seemed as real as my legitimate op memories.

5. We give these survivors the honorary title of "Nancy Drew." Although some of them are living in the worst possible circumstances-some struggle with debilitating disabilities and many are still being reaccessed-they have nonetheless painstakingly sifted through massive amounts of available information, including the CIA's CD of released MKULTRA files, to find verifications for themselves and for others within the survivor community. Their contributions are invaluable.

6. An E-mailed advertisement stated that Marketing International Corporation of Arlington, Virginia was producing both the ECLIPSE conference and the "Counterterrorism, Tactical, Investigative, and Security Exhibition and Seminar," also known as the "CT Expo," on a lower floor in the same building at the same time. The CT Expo was heavily attended by law enforcement and intelligence personnel.

7. Specific and descriptive information about the men in that room remains in safe hands, and will be released if anything unusual should ever happen to me or my loved ones.

8. They expressed some anger about the CKLN interview, but seemed more upset about my *MK* manuscript. The man in charge of my being raped, a blond spook allegedly from the Directorate of Operations, threatened my life, should I ever publish it. I have since realized that he might have feared that I'd sufficiently identified him within the manuscript–as the character named "Jed."

9. This kind of "silence" or "suicide" programming is also called *booby-trap* programming. It can lay dormant for years in the survivor's mind until an alter-state that compartmentalized the implanted instructions comes back into consciousness. If the programmed alter-state takes control of the body, the survivor may temporarily be in extreme danger. The two ways I've found to successfully keep self-destruct programmed alter-states from carrying out programmed instructions are: 1) I can enter a hospital on an emergency basis so that I can safely disassemble the programming, or 2) I can become co-conscious with that part at home or in my therapist's office and relive the trauma(s) that influenced that part to prefer suicide or self-harm over safety.

10. I saw no point in reporting the rape. I didn't know the names or home addresses of the first two men-all I could remember was one of their aliases. And because the third rapist, a relative, had black op training, I chose not to confront him. Also, the blond rapist told me they had already created alibis that fellow spooks, who had also attended the counterterrorism conference, would back up. I believed him. Finally, because I didn't immediately remember the rapes, I had no physical proofs that they had occurred. All I had were the emotional and mental scars that would not go away.

11. The specialized counselors never suggested my memories-they came completely on their own. Instead, they taught me how to regain my emotional power by allowing myself to feel the full gamut of my suppressed emotions, to understand that the after-effects from the rape were normal, and what the rapists had done to me was about power, not sexuality.

12. "Survivors of torture, sexual abuse, and rape . . . have been put into a position of . . . "forced silence," that is, the assailant has often directly threatened the victim that death will result from disclosure, and thus the victim fears annihilation (as well as rejection from the listener) for telling about the traumas." (Blank A 14)

13. "Rape . . . is inherently humiliating and degrading of self-esteem; those are not meanings supplied by the victim, but rather are objectively contained within the event, as is the violent and tyrannizing imposition of the perpetrator's will and power." (Blank A 14)

14. I've learned that this is a surprisingly common response in many partners of rape victims, who believe that if it had been them, they could have successfully fought off the attackers. In reality, being in a room full of assassin-trained spooks didn't allow me that luxury; my goal was simply to survive.

The Void

This Is To Mother You

Although remembering and deprogramming were crucial parts of my recovery, my biggest step in healing was to accept how the methodically perpetrated traumas, betrayals, and absence of childhood nurturing had affected my mind and soul.

I'd always felt different from other people, partly because my parents had used me to meet their emotional and sexual needs instead of being there for me. Dad had conditioned me from infancy to bond with him through sex. In those conditioned alter-states, I'd believed that I was his partner, especially since he did things to me that should have been reserved for Mom. I'd bonded with him not only through touch and sex, but also through terror and torture.

From early childhood on, I'd also been a living receptacle for the hatred inside my parents and some of my other adult relatives. What I saw in their faces when they looked at me was what I believed I was. Rarely was I held gently, talked to in a soothing voice, or nurtured–other than by one paternal aunt and by my maternal grandmother. In the rituals, some of my adult family members openly treated me with scorn, hatred, and sadism. Believing that they and the other cultists wished that I didn't exist, I'd complied by going away in my mind.

After I'd married Albert, Mom had told me that she understood Albert's coldness towards me because she wasn't capable of loving anyone, either. Although her words had cut deep, they hadn't surprised me. I'd always known that she didn't love me. That is the mother I always knew. She was so focused on her own needs, wants, and desires that she seemed incapable of giving of herself, emotionally, to others–unless she wanted something from them.

I didn't have a mother who mirrored love to me. Instead, she avoided looking at my face when she changed my diaper. She didn't delight in picking me up out of the crib or holding me close to her beating heart as I did with Rose.

As a child, I never bonded in love with humans, other than to a limited degree with my brothers and one childhood friend who was also a victim. Feeling responsible for my brothers' welfare, I saw myself as their surrogate mother. The death of my baby daughter was probably the final stake that Dad drove through my heart's ability to bond. Her death totally split off the warm, caring part of me. Caring and connecting with other humans came at too great a cost. I couldn't bear any more pain.

In childhood, when I drew pictures of trees, I always drew a large black hole in the middle of each trunk. Even though the trees were full of leaves and fruit, I was communicating that the tree (really, my soul) was empty and black inside. People might have looked at me and seen life and intelligence, leading them to think that all was well while in reality, my soul was dying. Although I felt hollow inside, I tried to be like other people–but this was not possible. It took so much energy to survive and stay sane!

After we married in 1988, Bill assumed the role of mother-nurturer. He gave me consistent love, caring and acceptance. His actions helped me to begin to trust and open up to him.

In August of 1999, we were at home on a Sunday morning, making last-minute preparations to attend an annual SMART conference later that week.[1] Bill was shaving in the bathroom when he felt a strong pain in his chest that traveled down his left arm. When he couldn't dissociate it away, he yelled at me to take him to the hospital. I called for an ambulance. As I followed it in my car, listening to the siren scream, I switched into autopilot mode.

After several tests, the emergency room physician told Bill, "You're my prisoner now." Bill told me that he'd be on the golf course the next day. I wanted to believe him, but then he was transported by ambulance to the main hospital in downtown Chattanooga.

The following morning, an angiogram indicated severe blockage in three main arteries. His cardiologist met with me in a private room and said, "Mrs. Sullivan, if your husband leaves this hospital, he's a dead man." My body turned to ice; I seemed to hear his voice inside a barrel. A nurse kindly led me into a large room where Bill was being prepared for his heart bypass operation.

As Bill lay on his back, joking and teasing the nurses, I thought: "This might be the last time I'll ever talk to him." I tried to laugh at his jokes as I watched another heart attack on the monitor. Because he was drugged and dissociated, he never even felt it. As I held back my tears, my heart felt as if it were shattering into a million pieces.

I felt so alone and frightened, having no safe family members to call for support. An elderly couple who lived near us, rushed to the hospital after I called them. They sat and talked with me in the Surgical ICU waiting room to keep my mind occupied while I counted the hours. Their presence helped me to realize that I didn't have to be alone anymore. It was time to let honest, caring people become members of my new adopted family.

After Bill's surgery, I was led into the surgical ICU ward to see him for a few minutes. I wasn't ready for what I encountered. His body was ice cold and his skin was grey. A machine was breathing for him. Although he'd always responded when I'd touched his hand, now there was no response at all. And although the smiling, young nurse told me that Bill was doing well, I felt as if he had just died.

When I returned home from the hospital that night to wash up and get a few hours of uninterrupted sleep, I felt a shift inside. Pain and grief paralyzed me. I felt terrified and wasn't sure I could survive it. Fortunately, its intensity ebbed away by the next morning–especially when I saw that Bill was awake, talking to visitors.

Bill's near-death experience both traumatized me and helped me to appreciate him more. All the little infractions I'd held against him stopped being important. Nearly losing him helped me to value our relationship in a much deeper and mature way.

Do I regret loving Bill, when I know that love can bring pain? Do I regret having hesitantly moved towards him in my heart, soul, and mind for fifteen years, so afraid that he'd hurt me, that he'd leave me, that he'd despise me if he really knew me? Not anymore! How can I regret the greatest healing force I've ever experienced?

Bill taught me how to bond–not just through sex, but by learning to care and to give and receive love. He taught me that because I'm loved, I can accept myself as lovable. And by accepting caring from him and others in my support network, I am also able to care.

He oh-so-slowly helped me to peel away hundreds of thin layers of steel that had encased my soul. Because of his love and fierce devotion, I dared to open my soul to him, surprised again and again when it wasn't pierced to death by sudden betrayal and cruelty.

Bill was my soul-hospital, my triage, my burn unit. He helped me to survive and to know that life is worth living and risking love for.

A year after Bill's heart surgery, a woman in my support network sent me an unexpected care package. In it was iridescent, shredded plastic grass, several beautiful adult coloring books, a 64-count box of Crayons, several small toys, a card with small pressed flowers on the front, and a customized CD.

The first song on the CD was Sinead O'Connor's *This Is To Mother You.* Pain paralyzed me and tears streamed down my face as I played it over and over. Sinead sang about a kind of mother-nurturing that I'd never experienced, but had always hoped for: a mother who would love me and forgive my imperfections.

Sinead's words went deeper and deeper, all the way down into the black hole that my shell of a soul encased. Then I became the black hole. The null, the void. The place that had never been filled with loving touch and compassion, caring and kindness, encouragement, and gentle, non-sexual kisses. This hole could have only been filled by one person: my mother, the woman who I believe gave me life. I was astonished by the depth and intensity of my pain.

For days, I sat and grieved and played the song over and over. I finally allowed myself to feel the absence of mother-love. I grieved over who and what I'd never had the chance to be: maternally loving. Caring. Compassionate. Kind. Gentle. Nurturing. How could I be, when it had never been given to me by my primary care-givers? And how could I give out of a deep place that had never been filled?

During my next therapy session, I had great difficulty putting these thoughts and feelings into words. I told Helen, "I didn't know how to become close to other women. I have a big black hole inside with no way to fill it–my mother hadn't been what I needed, and probably never can be. What can I do to fill the hole? Is it even possible?"

She said, "You must learn to nurture your own self. You'll need to become your own mother." As we talked, I realized that the grieving child inside me needed to let go of the fantasy that Mom might eventually love me. How could she, when she was unable to love herself?

Now I understood why I'd never been able to forgive myself, and why I'd always felt "bad." If my primary caregivers chose not to mirror forgiveness and acceptance towards me when I made mistakes or failed to meet their stringent expectations, then how could I have possibly learned to forgive and accept myself? No wonder I was so damned dissociated; I'd never developed a core sense of self, because I'd never been accepted as who I really was!

Although I knew I needed to learn healthy ways to nurture myself, I had no idea how to start. Helen suggested I buy fragrant bath lotions and stroke my skin with my fingers in the shower: "sensually, not sexually."

I splurged on a bottle of French vanilla scented body soap. Standing in the shower, I felt my own skin, really felt it, for the first time. I enjoyed the lingering scent of vanilla and the softness of my skin. I stared at the hairs on my arms as they stood up when I stroked them backwards with my fingertips. I touched other parts of my body as a healthy mother might have if I'd been her delightful, soft-skinned baby. I kissed and held myself and wept.

Within a week my bottomless appetite for food went away. That surprised me, because during the past decade, I'd gained over fifty pounds from bingeing on the same foods that Mom had fed me as a child. Suddenly, I realized that I'd tried to use the food to fill the hole in my soul. No wonder I'd never felt full! How can anyone fill an emotional hole with food? Just as I'd believed that Dad had loved me because he'd gone to work to pay for our home and our physical needs, I'd erroneously believed that Mom's cooking had proven that she loved me.[2]

The next step in healing was to accept nurturing from other adult females. Because I hadn't wanted to feel the pain of not having been nurtured by Mom, I'd been phobic towards caring females. I needed to get past that fear. First, I thanked the woman who had sent me the care package. I told her she was the first non-therapist in my recovery who demonstrated to me that women other than my mother could give me bits and pieces of nurturing. Then I met with several women in my local support network and told them why I hadn't tried to emotionally connect with them. I told them that as I practiced loving and forgiving myself, I would also work harder at opening up to them.

Once I knew how it felt to bond with those women, I felt sad that I'd spent at least half my life isolating from such wonderful sources of soul-life. I gave myself permission to grieve that loss, too.

On the Wings of an Angel

I still didn't know that I had a hidden nurturer alter-state. In March, 1999, a sad little Aryan girl part wrote in my journal. She was in great pain. She hadn't emerged since Dad's death in 1990, and was unaware that my life had changed quite a bit since then. She wrote:

> *I don't want to talk to anybody. Why bother? I was one of theirs all of my life. How can I be anybody else now? I had no will. They took it all away and hurt me and slapped me and kicked me and laughed at me and I am not good. I am a puppet their puppet and I will do whatever they tell me to do. And if it's a good day I will feel something good down there maybe. Why bother to look for doors when there is no way to get away from them? They have my girl, my husband is with them, my dad and mom and brothers are with them, my in-laws are with them, my neighbors are with them, even the police and FBI are with them, and of course our lovely CIA–so where can I go that they won't hurt me again, where they won't do that thing to me down there again? There is no place but with them, always with them. Maybe I'm not with them, but I feel I am, and I don't like me, I don't hate me, but I don't like me, and I don't want to live. I want to sleep, sleep forever, but I don't want to hurt anybody. I don't want to hurt Bill, he's a nice man, but when he yells he is too much like them. So what do I do now? I'm supposed to brush my teeth and take a shower, and I'm supposed to do a term paper, but I don't want to do anything, I am crying again, and I don't want to do the computer, because bad people can read it, and they will know what I am doing. I wish Helen was here. I wish Bill would listen. I wish I had a friend, but I have no friend, never do. I just want to have a friend and I want to be in bed under the covers, and I don't bother anybody.*

She drew a picture of herself, naked with short hair, arms crossed across her chest, eyes closed, crying. Then an adult "angel" alter-state emerged. She drew herself in behind the lonely little girl and wrapped her wings around her. She wrote the words of a lullaby on the picture while crooning them softly:

I will hold you
I will comfort you
I will be with you
You are no longer alone
I will stay with you
I will share your soul-shattering pain
Rest in my wings
Fall back into my wings

The girl part responded, I feel bad about losing Emily. She saw so much badness.

I know, I feel bad about it too.

I did so much badness, I would get so mean at people, even to people I liked. It's like all the bad things they did to me built up and built up and I would be with non-hurters, and I would get upset or angry, and I kept hurting people I didn't mean to hurt, and then I wanted to say I'm sorry. But it was too late to say I'm sorry. Oh god, Oh god. I am such a monster, worse than them, I am a monster.

Not in my eyes. In my eyes you are not a monster. They trained and taught and tortured you to be a killer. They did NOT give you some magic on/off switch.

I talk so soft, but then I get so ANGRY, and then my hands and fingers get so STRONG, and it is like I don't think for a while, and when I think again—it's too late.

Emily is still alive. You did not kill her.

But all those people I hurt, all those children I hurt and scared—

Do you know how attack dogs are trained? Well, they are put in cages. And they are tortured over and over again until the good nature is *terrorized out of them. Until their wills are broken, until they will do ANYTHING their masters tell them to do. But their aggression from all that torture has to go somewhere. They are dangerous, because sometimes they just "snap"–not when their masters tell them to attack. And just like an attack dog, you were terrorized and brutalized and tortured repeatedly. Your aggression had to go somewhere. Since it was not safe to turn it on those who tortured you–because they could do it again–you turned it on yourself–or if called out – on those who would not torture you. They broke your personality, they made you into an attack dog.*[3]

That mean man and lady—she made the Dobermans . . . they growled so much at me, I thought they were going to eat me up! And they put their things in me! Ugly! I'm so ugly!

Yes, I know about that too. I know how heartbreaking and terrifying and degrading that was. They made you a dog. An attack dog. They took you away from your natural state of being and made you over, into something totally different.

All those people—all those bad things, those bad bad things I've done—

You can thank our Uberfuhrer for that. Dr. Black and his assistants liked to rechannel aggression and make naturally peace-loving humans turn on each other.

Why? Why would he do that to me—to them—to all of us? Why?

I wish I could tell you. I honestly do not know. He was a very sick man and a very perverted man.

They all were.

Very much so. But you had no choice. You had to go where he took you. You were his hostage, you were his victim, you were his prisoner, you were his slave. It was never your fault.

I hate myself.

No you don't. It's him you hate.

Rest in my wings, Little One
Fall back into my wings
I will comfort you
I will hold you
Rest in my wings

Notes

1. Each summer, SMART sponsors an annual *Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference*. To contact SMART, see the "Supportive Organizations" list in the back of this book.
2. Rosencrans explains the strong emotional connection between maternal nurturing and food:

   > Food and mothers are so intertwined for the daughters that it's hard to separate them. Food is used for discipline, rewards, emotional expression, cultural pride, and many other things . . . The roots of many eating problems are established in childhood and can lead to life-long struggles. (pp. 144-145)

3. This has also been done to other animals, to break their wills. In an article in *National Geographic Today*, Jennifer Hile reported on a technique still being used to condition elephants in Thailand:

   > [A] four-year-old elephant bellows as seven village men stab nails into her ears and feet. She is tied up and immobilized in a small, wooden cage . . . The cage is called a "training crush" . . . In addition to beatings, handlers use sleep-deprivation, hunger, and thirst to "break" the elephants' spirit and make them submissive to their owners . . . [a shaman said that] to control animals that can eventually weigh as much as 10,000 pounds, it's essential they fear their keepers. He believes it's the only way to safeguard against the animal kicking, goring, or otherwise injuring the people with whom they work. (pp. 1 & 4)

   Common sense dictates that when these handlers torture the elephants, they enrage the elephants. Then, fearing the rage, they torture them further to make them fear them and not attack them. Those who conditioned and tortured me for future ops used the same insane logic.

Letting Go of the Guilt

Sociopathic Mentality

Although I occasionally discovered comforter parts like the angel, I was more likely to find assassin trained parts. That was always very painful. To survive the pain, I had to believe I could survive it. But sometimes I wasn't sure I could. More than anything else, the guilt was slowly killing me. I didn't know, yet, that Dad had methodically created a foundation for this deadly guilt.

When I was a child, he'd repeatedly told me I was going to hell for my sins. Because he was a blatant sociopath who refused to accept responsibility for his own horrific sins, he seemed to encourage me to internalize his un-owned responsibility and guilt.[1]

In the 1990s, going to church and a Baptist seminary didn't help to free me from this pervasive sense of guilt. I was reminded again and again that Jesus had died for my sins, and that God had already forgiven me and washed me clean as snow. This added to my pain, because no noticeable exceptions were made for those who had been forced to commit sins against their will.

As I reviewed literature about criminals who were diagnosed with MPD or DID, I felt more depressed. Even if their host personalities didn't commit the crimes, most juries still believed their "criminal" personalities must be incarcerated, instead of being helped by legitimate mental health professionals to heal and possibly integrate.

Helen tried to help me understand that I'd had no way out and that my choices, in controlled alter-states, had been extremely limited. Although she made sense, every time she uttered the words "making amends," I again felt guilty and believed I should spend the rest of my life making up for my terrible crimes.[2]

When I tried to make amends by helping other mind-control and ritual abuse survivors to recover and heal, I ran out of energy and strength, spiraled into major depression again, and checked into a local psychiatric hospital to stay alive. Even after giving a presentation entitled "Letting

Go of the Guilt" at a SMART conference, I couldn't let go of my own. I didn't know how.

I tried to free myself from the guilt by mentally reviewing the techniques that had been used to mold some of my alter-states into torturer and killer parts. I was still seeking answers to free me from the guilt-shackles that held me back from building a new life.

When I was only three years old, Dad had started working on my mind at least once a week, if not every day. Because he'd focused on making me a receptacle for his guilt and self-loathing, I'd rarely felt good about myself. And after a while, even though I didn't remember his mental assaults, the ritual killings, and other related horrors, the sense of being guilty and unworthy of human kindness and forgiveness remained.

Because I was so young, I didn't understand that Dad wasn't capable of feeling guilt. He and most of his criminal associates were sociopaths. Instead of feeling remorse for their crimes, they gloried in breaking the law. To them, it was fun and exciting!

Because I'd spent most of my covert life in the presence of sociopaths, I've recently been fascinated by the hit HBO television show, *The Sopranos*. Listening to its shady characters' rationalizations for why they perform violent acts has almost been like being with Dad and his criminal associates again.

The rules in their twisted world were almost the direct opposite of those of normal society. For them, good was bad and bad was good. Murder and adult-child sex were expected and encouraged. They had no empathy or compassion for their victims. Torturing innocents, especially babies, seemed to sexually excite some of them. Murder seemed to be the ultimate thrill for people like Dad; but because the thrill didn't last long, they had to find more and more victims.

I think this is why he extended his mind and hands through mine, using me to kill even more innocents. I believe he was one of many ritualistic serial killers who have not been brought to justice.[3] The more Dad got away with murder and wasn't caught, the more untouchable he felt, and the more he murdered. The more he raped children and wasn't brought to justice, the more he raped children. His criminality spiraled out of control.[4]

Many parts of my shattered personality were forced to live exclusively in his sociopathic world. I absolutely could not reconcile his bizarre world with the normal world that I experienced at school, church, and play. I had to split completely to function and survive.

Divided Personality

In normal society I was taught to obey, to give, to care, to do good, to reach out and help those who weren't as well off. That benign training and conditioning was the foundation of my core personality.

In addition to that healthy part of myself, Dad created "bad" parts that were exposed exclusively to immorality, lust, lies, rape, sadism, torture and murder. Using trauma, drugs and hypnosis, he built impenetrable walls of amnesia that separated my normal life parts from my covert, hidden parts that were accustomed to sociopathic mentality.

Then he used hypnosis and brutality to put my anti-moral parts in invisible mental cages with locks that only he and other professional handlers had the keys to. Specific code words and other triggers released those alter-states, to perform like trained animals for the handlers and owners.

My covert alter-states were only conscious for as long as those masters and handlers allowed. These split-off parts weren't familiar with my life at home, nor did they know about my past. They had no sense of future. They didn't know my real name or how old I was or where I lived. Most of them didn't know what the year was, or who my husband was, or if I had children. Some of them didn't even know if "the body" was male or female, young or old, animal or human. Their only reality was what the programmers and handlers told them.

These alter-states and personality fragments had extremely limited life experience and knowledge. Most of them had never tasted and swallowed food, touched the soft fur of a pet, slept on a bed, or felt warm sunshine. When triggered out, most of them didn't know what country they were in. And most of them considered the professional handlers to be their friends and saviors.

They weren't allowed to talk to strangers. They weren't allowed to look out vehicle windows. During debriefings, handlers lied about where my alter-states had been. They hypnotically implanted false information to scramble the parts' memories of the real locations.

The alter-states were often smuggled into buildings through back doors and underground parking areas and service elevators. Sometimes they were shipped overseas in big wooden crates in planes or on the open decks of large boats, so they could see nothing and so that no one, other than assigned handlers, could see and talk to them.

Many times, when handlers made me wait in an office before taking me home, they either made me sit or walk around with no clothes on, or only let me keep some of my clothes while they remained fully clothed. When I emerged from amnesia and found myself naked or partially clothed, I believed it was my fault. The handlers laughed as I frantically looked for something to cover myself with. When they held me in rooms and buildings, they also made me remove my footwear to discourage me from running away.[5]

In spite of all this, some of my alter-states would have stayed, even if they'd been given permission to leave. To them, the covert world was addictive and exciting. There is something in the world of amorality and deception that draws the untamed parts of the soul.

Having been sexually assaulted and conditioned by Dad from infancy, some of my alter-states sought one male sexual partner after another. After each interaction, they wanted more. Several female alter-states that had compartmentalized "black widow" mental programming, saw nothing wrong with having sex with a man and then killing him while he slept–as ordered.

Because I'd been sexually assaulted and molested by my mother throughout my childhood and beyond, I'd also developed sexually conditioned parts that hadn't seen anything wrong with having sex with women–anytime, anywhere. Like with men, it was never about love–it was about sexual pleasure, and the power that came from knowing that, at least for a moment, these parts were able to make the women vulnerable as they brought them to orgasm.

Finding my sociopathic alter-states was a tremendous shock. They were everything I'd never allowed my rule-oriented self to be. They were all that I believed was wrong and evil. I judged them by the knowledge and rules I'd lived by in the normal world. I didn't understand that they'd never experienced goodness, sinlessness, honesty, kindness and love. I blamed them; I hated them; I despised them. I didn't understand that they'd had no choice. Feeling ashamed for what they'd done, I carried a relentless load of guilt-bricks on my back, day after loathsome day.

I argued that they should have done differently. I wasn't willing to acknowledge that amnesic barriers or gaps had kept my knowledge and morality from reaching where they had resided in my brain. I didn't want to know that they had been tortured and more, to transform them into seemingly less-than-human, primal and reptilian creature parts.

As I began to blend with them, however, I was overwhelmed by the intensity of their pain and rage. I realized *I did not have the right* to judge them, or myself, for what they'd been manipulated and controlled to do.[6]

Addiction to Secrecy

In 2001, I made another major discovery about myself. For years, I'd heard Madonna's hit song, *Live to Tell*, but hadn't listened to the words. One day, I sat in my office at home, I typed a journal entry. In it, I wrote my concern that some of my op-trained alter-states still wanted to go back to spook handlers. These alter-states missed the quiet excitement of living a double life that even the neighbors knew nothing about.

As I typed, I heard *Live to Tell* again. Madonna sang about the "secret inside of me." Tears streamed down my face as I realized I really was addicted to secrecy, and I wasn't the only person struggling with this problem.

In my next therapy session, I talked to Helen about my insane desire to go back to living a secret double life. She surprised me by telling me that secrecy is a common addiction among childhood sexual abuse survivors.

She explained that many women who marry and then have a series of affairs on the side, are drawn to illicit sexual relationships because they're reenacting secretive sexual "relationships" that childhood abusers had had with them.

As we discussed this phenomenon, I had another revelation. When I was a child, most of the mind-control programmers I'd been exposed to, had sexually assaulted me.[7] And when I was an adult, sexual assaults by spook handlers had seemed to be the norm. Had some of them used me to reenact their own childhood sexual traumas, this time acting out the role of the powerful, controlling perpetrator?

I told Helen I was beginning to grasp the powerful connection between addiction to secrecy and seeking employment within an intelligence agency. Over and over, I'd heard that the CIA and other intelligence agencies *expect* their employees to lie as part of their employment.[8] If the employees can't be honest with their families and neighbors about their employment, does lying gradually become second nature? And how many of them gravitate to intelligence agencies because, having grown up in secretive families, such environments are most comfortable?

When I shared these thoughts with Bill, he said that–based on his never-forgotten experiences with CIA spooks in Vietnam–what I theorized was probably true. More important, he said he also struggled with a strong desire to go back to living a double life in a “James Bond” manner. In spite of all that had been done to him by his spook handlers, his addiction was so strong, he desired to work for them again, without pay!

Although going back to those handlers would mean being controlled, abused, and possibly placed into deadly situations, we both *still* desired to be used by them again!

The allure of living a secret life is powerful. Since I’ve made that discovery, I’ve worked harder to stay honest with my support system–even admitting to them that I wanted to go back.

Defusing the Threat

After I’d retrieved the bulk of my black op training memories, I fantasized about doing serious damage to those who had hurt me and other precious innocents. Perhaps I was lucky that my fundamental morality restrained me–it put on the brakes. The law that I’d been taught to respect, by teachers and scoutmasters and pastors and more, still guided me. As imperfect as our legal system is, without it we’d have my father’s world. I cannot bear to enter that world again.

Before I’d found and connected with my covert alter-states, they’d only had enough information to perform their duties. When I blended with them, my shared knowledge balanced out their conditioning and programming. Other than their experiences, training, and the traumas that had been used to create them, the only big difference between me and them had been lack of information. They hadn’t known what I did, and I hadn’t had their knowledge. After they blended with me, they had a new opportunity–to choose between a nearly infinite number of choices; whereas before, they’d only been permitted to choose between the lesser of two evils.

Numerous child alter-states wrote or talked about having been repeatedly sexually assaulted, ritually abused and tortured, and more. Some of those parts had stored my greatest rage. Dad and his spook associates had used them to do the worst physical damage to targeted males. If a part had held rage from having been raped by men, that part had then been used to attack that part of a male target's anatomy or to have sex with him and then kill him.

An especially effective form of mental programming had been to convince several of my child alter-states that penis monsters had extended up into men's throats. Because an engorged penis and a male's windpipe feel alike, those powerfully strong alter-states were conditioned to grab targeted males' windpipes and yank them forward in total fury, believing they were *saving* the men from the invasive monsters!

When these programmed alter-states emerged in therapy, they were immediately suicidal, feeling tremendous pain as they realized they'd been tricked into killing the very men they'd tried to save!

The good news is that once those parts shared their experiences with me in a therapeutic way, and received my knowledge that they'd been tricked, they immediately stopped being a threat to society. Although very young, they'd never had the opportunity to play, eat ice cream, and do other things that "normal" children might experience. As I introduced them to such activities and experiences, they integrated with me and we became one.[9]

Cult Recruitment

Because Dad was a sadist, he'd enjoyed torturing and traumatizing others. I suspect he'd also used occult rituals to unconsciously reenact sexual, physical, and even ritualized traumas that he may have endured as a child. I also believe he would have perpetrated those crimes, regardless of whether or not he'd been influenced by his alleged CIA and Nazi connections.

Beyond all this, I believe he had another reason for forcing me to experience such horrors.[10] I believe that employees and operatives working within several intelligence and military agencies made secretive arrangements with criminal occult leaders to traumatize and condition children and to create alter-states in those youths, with the foreknowledge that their alter-states would eventually be used by these same agencies to perform illegal activities as mentally controlled slaves. I believe this is the reason why the deadly cover-up about the existence of ritual crime, repressed memory, severe dissociation, and mentally controlled slavery continues.

Investigative journalist Alex Constantine thoroughly exposed CIA/cult recruitment/mind-control/FMSF connections in his 1995 book, *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.* Based on years of extensive research that included many interviews with recovering ritual abuse and mind control victims, Constantine concluded:

> . . . the CIA and its cover organizations have a vested interest in blowing smoke at the cult underground because the worlds of CIA mind control and many cults merge inextricably. The drum beat of "false accusations" from the media is taken up by paid operatives like Dr. Orne and the False Memory Syndrome Foundation to conceal the crimes of the Agency. (pg. 54)

I strongly recommend reading Constantine's *Psychic Dictatorship,* Dr. Colin Ross's *Bluebird,* Carol Rutz's *A Nation Betrayed,* and Gordon Thomas's *Enslaved* if you want to learn more about the documented connections between complicit groups, federal agencies, and other organizations.

Nazi Sadism and Rituals

The more I've remembered about my childhood exposure to Nazis and neo-Nazi wannabes, the more I've felt appalled and amazed at their hatred towards strangers. My forced attendance at innumerable Aryan meetings throughout my life helped me to understand that when people chronically hate strangers who have never harmed them, based solely on their skin color or ethnicity, they're actually projecting their self-hatred onto them. That is one reason why I've worked hard on my own self-hatred; I don't want to irrationally project it onto others.

I've also concluded that when primary caregivers hate their children, the children learn to hate themselves, using the caregivers as their role models. In other words, as the caregivers model *their* projection of self-hatred onto the innocent children, the children are likely to do the same to others when they become adults![11]

No one likes to feel self-hatred. Self-hatred is extremely painful. It's always easier to direct one's self-hatred onto someone else as pseudo- or false-hatred. (I call it pseudo-hatred because real hatred occurs when one despises something in a person whom one *truly knows*.) Self-hatred that comes from having been neglected or abused as a child may explain many staunch Aryans' "need" to hate and attack people they don't really know.

I suspect these Aryans keep an emotional distance from their hate-targets because if they ever really know these people, they will recognize that their pseudo-hatred is irrational. They may be afraid to know it's irrational because then they'll have to give up the pseudo-hate and feel their painful self-hatred.

The only way I know to get out of this vicious trap is to get professional help to deal with the underlying cause of the self-hatred. It is hard work, but it can be done. Although one will have to feel the seemingly unbearable pain of self-hatred for a little while when confronting its root causes, surely that's better than running away from it and unfairly hating and isolating from others for the rest of one's life.

Self-hatred can also generate sadism towards the pseudo-hate targets. The most powerful article I've read to-date about the origin of Nazi sadism, "War as Righteous Rape and Purification," was published in the Spring 2000 edition of the *Journal of Psychohistory*. Written by the journal's editor, Lloyd deMause, the article extensively documents the abuses that *average* German parents perpetrated against their children in the late 1800s through early 1900s.[12]

Such horrific abuse must have generated tremendous rage and hatred in those children's minds and souls. I want to clarify that I'm not condoning the crimes that many of them committed or supported when they became adults. And yet, it's crucial that we understand that what they did to the victims in the concentration camps may have been their way of unconsciously reenacting what they had survived as children. I believe that such heinous brutality always has a source.

DeMause stated: "Every one of the things done to Jews in the Holocaust can be found to have been perpetrated by parents and others on German children at the turn of the century. The precise details of earlier events that were reinflicted upon Jews later are astonishingly minute and literal." (pp. 434–435) I believe this is true.

What the Nazis did to many of their victims in the concentration camps was also perpetrated against American victims (especially children) in secretive occult rituals and also in government-sanctioned experiments like the CIA's MKULTRA program right here in North America. This is one of our country's dirtiest secrets. I will spend the rest of my life, if necessary, to help survivors and pro-survivors to fully and permanently expose it.[13] (We're angry as hell about what's been done to us. We're *not* going to be quiet and we're *not* going to stop telling! Even if some of us are stopped–it has been done–others will take our place. I believe our movement's momentum, built on decades of pure moral outrage, is now unstoppable.)

The Nazi immigrants I was taken by Dad and Grandpa M. to meet as a child, practiced a Teutonic form of occultism. I still wonder if any of them were aware that they were using these rituals to reenact childhood traumas.[14] I've found verifications from a number of sources that sun worship, Paganism, and other religious beliefs that I was exposed to at Aryan Golden Dawn meetings and rituals had also been part of Hitler's occult practices.[15]

In my presence as a child, Dad and some of his Nazi associates had repeatedly bragged that they were reincarnated Knights Templar. Dad had also repeatedly told me that I was an "honorary daughter of Templar." He'd told me and the men that our "duty" was to perform assassinations. To me, the Templar rituals appeared insane; and yet, to those men, they were logical.

Dad and his Nazi friends seemed to be mentally disconnected from the world around them and from their own humanity. They claimed they wouldn't die if they continued to ingest the life-force stored in human blood and semen. They believed it would keep them young and strong. They also told me that, because they'd incorporated Gnostic beliefs into their Teutonic religious practices, they were gradually transforming into spiritual gods. They welcomed pain and physical deprivation (other than from sex), claiming that this speeded their transformations. Living in a spiritualized fantasy world seemed to be their way of dissociating from the harsh reality of their real lives.[16]

Never Forgotten

Although Dad kept his criminal and Nazi connections secret, he did say and do other things over the years that I never forgot. Although these statements and behaviors had seemed odd, I now believe he had tried to communicate about his covert world to me and others–possibly because he'd felt lonely in holding onto so many secrets.

He told my stepmother and me that when he was a teenager, he'd worked as a lifeguard for a Mafia family at their Florida hotel. He seemed proud of that.

When I was a teenager, he often took our family on Sundays to a fancy buffet brunch at Atlanta's Stone Mountain Park hotel. Occasionally, he pointed to certain sedans parked outside the hotel that, he said, belonged to "mobsters" who met regularly at the hotel to discuss "business." Although he told us some of their names, because knowing them wasn't important to me, I didn't try to remember them.

In the early 1970s, after Mom divorced Dad, he moved into an apartment in North Atlanta. During a rare visit to his apartment, Dad told me that he'd recently fallen in love with a woman named Ellen, who had been the girlfriend of a Mafia hit man. Dad cried and seemed very depressed as he told me his sad story: Ellen had approached him, telling him that her boyfriend was cruel to her. Then she'd charmed and dated Dad, indicating that she wanted to marry him. In return, Dad had agreed to protect her from the ex-boyfriend. Dad was emotionally devastated when Ellen unexpectedly broke up with him and went back to the hit man. Because I didn't remember that Dad had taken me to meet mobsters in several states, I thought it odd that he would get involved with such a woman.

Dad's income tax return statements from 1973, 1974, and 1975 verify that before he married his second wife, he was hired by Pinkerton Inc., a security agency based in New York City.[17] His first Pinkerton position was as a night guard in an Atlanta jail. His second position was as a nighttime security guard at Atlanta's posh Piedmont Driving Club, where the local elite and visiting dignitaries discussed business and socialized. One night, Dad gave Albert and me a tour of the main building and encouraged me to make a butterscotch ice cream sundae in the club's huge, stainless steel kitchen. He bragged that he didn't need to carry a gun because he knew how to talk people out of shooting him.

When he was younger, he probably didn't have the same level of confidence. Years after his death, his widow sent me four small black and white pictures of a much younger Dad. Wearing a long-sleeved white shirt and dark pants, a handgun was in a holster at his waist while he aimed a rifle under the supervision of an unidentified man.

Understanding My Father

Although I accepted and blended with my black op parts, I still had great difficulty reconciling "Dad the serial killer" and "Dad the pedophile" in my mind. How could he have been both? I wasn't willing to admit how strongly those two aspects of his personality had been intertwined.

Confused, I scoured many books and articles, searching for information that would help me understand Dad's criminal mentality. Anna C. Salter, Ph.D.'s book, *Predators: Pedophiles, Rapists, and Other Sex Offenders* was most helpful. I found other valuable materials listed in Safer Society's extensive book catalog. The non-profit's primary goal is to inform the public about sexual abuse and its harmful consequences.[18]

One professional journal article helped me to understand how Dad's mind worked. "Sexual Compulsivity as Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder: Treatment Perspectives," was written by Mark F. Schwartz, ScD., the "Clinical Director, Masters & Johnson Sexual Trauma Programs."

Schwartz explained a compulsion called "trauma reenactment," in which men and women who do not work through their original traumas "may repeat in concealed forms events that are too terrifying to remember." This may explain why Dad was so violent (even to the point of killing his victims) and yet he constantly minimized his own childhood traumas. Schwartz explained that by performing repetitive trauma reenactments, sexual abuse victims may also substitute the reenactments for normal intimacy. (pg. 333)

His description of a typical victim-turned-abuser may explain some of Dad's behaviors, especially towards children and women:

> Another common theme among sexual compulsives is the introjection of their perpetrator's passive or active rage. Among boys who have watched their mother being raped, it is common for the child to identify with the rapist in reenactments during play. Similarly, both male and female victims of abusive parents frequently "identify with the aggressor," i.e., introject the values and beliefs of the powerful perpetrator and reject the weak, ineffectual, yet equally rageful, passive parent. Traumatized children internalize the perfectionist, rigid,

> demanding, critical, and conditional love of their parents and then as adults repeat their parents' messages daily. The result is a self-abusive adult often similarly demanding and cruel to others, particularly his or her own children. (pg. 334)

Some abuse survivors binge and purge or self-mutilate to feel a release from the discomfort of emerging emotions. Dad seemed to use long-distance running, even during blazing hot summer afternoons, to attain the same release and to numb his body. Throughout his life, running and sexual intercourse seemed to be the two primary compulsions that helped him to avoid the depths of his painful self-hatred and depression.

Schwartz explained why people like Dad would minimize the severity of their childhood traumas: "When sexually compulsive patients have a history of physical and/or sexual abuse and neglect, they are often either amnesic or they minimize and distort their histories."

In describing the phases of the cycle of sexual addiction, Schwartz explained that towards the end, "addicts' lives become unmanageable and the compulsive sexual behavior becomes the focus of their lives." (pg. 334)

Schwartz's explanations fit what I'd remembered about Dad. He had become such an ardent pedophile almost every time that I'd been with him, he'd seemed to be looking for his next child victim.

Dad made several telling statements in his 1989 civil, pre-divorce deposition. They may be the only keyhole I'll ever have, to peer through to Dad's internal fantasy world. He made the following statement after an attorney asked if he was a pedophile:

> I do love children, but I do not love them sexually. I am crazy about children. And I can go to any airport in the country, any place, and the kids come to me like a dying maggot. I admit that I love them, and I have no problem with that. (Q: Do you know what a pedophile is?) No. Now I know; it's a man who loves children–sexually. (Q: A sexual sense?) Yeah, right. (pg. 197)

Because Dad had ritually abused me for many years, I was exposed to many decomposing bodies that crawled with maggots. In the spring of 1964, when I was eight years old, Dad and several of his friends created an entertainment group, "The Maggots." One night at dusk during our community's annual May Day festival at Exeter Township High School, the men were brought to the stage in a paddy wagon, its siren blaring.

The crowd screamed as Dad and his friends, wearing black wigs, ascended the stage and then lip-synced several Beatles songs. A big "M" was marked on the front of each of their white T-shirts, and the word "Maggots" had been printed on a sign that was draped across the front of the wooden stage. Later, Dad bragged to us that he'd personally named the band.

Fast-forward twenty-five years. During his deposition, Dad identified himself as a "dying maggot." Only he knew, somewhere deep inside, what horrifying trauma that mental image may have represented.

Although Dad initially denied knowing what the word "pedophile" meant, he then stated that a pedophile is "a man who loves children–sexually." He also said that children were drawn to him. In reality, I met very few children who initially were comfortable with Dad. I think Dad had to believe that children were drawn to him and wanted him sexually because otherwise, he would have to face that he was a molester and a rapist. He didn't want to know that what he'd done was wrong. I believe he had to believe that he was sexually desired by his objects of lust and sexual pleasure. I believe if he'd ever faced the truth, his carefully constructed false self would have crumbled and *he* would felt the pain of having been sexually abused, beaten, and betrayed as a child, by those who should have loved and protected him.

When I'd accompanied Dad (in controlled adult alter-states) to meetings of pedophiles, child traffickers, and kiddy pornographers, I'd noticed that he'd surrounded himself with criminals and pedophiles like himself. Their world had seemed to become his primary reality; everything else had grown ethereal and temporary. He often told some of my alter-states that he and his "friends" were the only honest people in society. He said that everyone else was a hypocrite–at least *he* was willing to be who he really was.

Dad seemed so convinced that adult-child sex was normal, he had to believe that everyone else had the same tendencies. He told me the only difference was that they didn't "have the guts" to do what they secretly desired, whereas he did. This may be why, in the deposition, he said:

> I guarantee it, and I don't know how better to put it, if I molested my children, every father in this room is a molester.

> Every father in this office is a molester, and every father in the City of Decatur or the State of Georgia is a molester. (pg. 202)

In the same deposition, he insinuated that I'd "stalked" him in the early 1970s after he'd moved away and was sharing an apartment with a man in another town. What he said would have been impossible because I didn't have access to a vehicle and didn't know where he lived. I believe that Dad's strange statements were another indication of his fantasy world:

> Now, when I was sick and when I was single–during–after we were divorced, Kathy kept coming to my house time and time again. And from–time and time again, she'd write me something bordering on MASH notes. (Q: Define what you think MASH notes means.) When you have your daughter talking to you like she would like to have a man like me have her children for her, I consider that MASH notes. And this goes on and on. I have one of her [Fall 1989] letters here that I'd like for you to–(Q: Let me see.) And when Kathy–when Kathy started sending out those registered letters, yes, I put that through the shredder. I had gotten hundreds of her letters, and I'm absolutely sick of them and I don't want to see them anymore. (Q: But you have an example of this MASH–of a MASH note from her that you received some time in the past?) I tried not to save these things because they made me so mad. This one I started to scribble up because–the word is pissed off, I guess. (Q: You were, after reading these letters.) And that's where I started scribbling my replies. Then I decided–(Q: Oh, that is your language.) Yeah, that's my language. (pp. 206–207)

In reality, several months prior to the deposition, I had written a total of three or four notes and short letters of confrontation to Dad. Other than the first one, each had been my response to cards and other items that he'd sent to me through the mail, to try to frighten and intimidate me. In each response, I'd tried to set new boundaries with Dad while asking him to seek professional help. And in each, I'd written once or twice that I still loved him. I didn't understand that, because Dad equated sex with love, he'd inferred that I was requesting to have sex with him!

> (Q: Do you consider that a MASH note, in terms of your definition?) It is a little much. (Q: In what respect? What language in there?) Her profession of love. I don't mind a person telling me they love me, but when they tell me 25 or 30 times in one letter, I object. (Q: And that upsets you?) It certainly does. (pg. 208)

Because Dad is dead, I may never know who caused him to internalize the false belief that when an adult rapes a child, the rape is an expression of love. In the deposition, he made only one admission about having been molested as a child:

> I had a cousin who was very horny. She was about the horniest woman I've ever met in my life. And when I was about [her] age, nine or ten, she would shake me down continually. (Q: How old was she?) Well, she may have been 13 or 14. She was always about five or six years older than I was. Trying to get me to touch her, you know, and play with her and all this kind of stuff. And when she came around, I used to have to run and hide. But that—the story stinks.[19] (Q: Well, did she ever touch you in an—) She never touched me. (Q:—in your sex organs or anything?) No, she never touched me. She tried to get me to touch her. (Q: Oh? And you say that was the most serious–any other such incidents?) No. (Q: Did any adult ever try to sexually molest you?) No. (pg. 213–214)

Not Guilty

As I showed Dad's deposition to Helen, I told her that I knew I wasn't responsible for what Dad and his associates had forced me to do. I was beginning to see they had refused to accept their own guilt and had laid it on me, making me a monster instead of themselves.

She sat in silence. Then she said, “If I remember correctly, this is now the fourth time you came to the conclusion that you were not guilty. Why doesn’t your discovery last? Why do you again believe you were a criminal? Why do you still blame yourself for what you had no choice about doing?”

I couldn’t answer.

When she softly said, “You are not a criminal,” I looked at the floor. I couldn’t look into her eyes because something in me was warring against her words.

As I sat quietly in her office, I realized my biggest recurring problem was that Dad had told me countless times, starting when I was four, that I was a murderer. That I was guilty. That I was bad. That if people really knew me, they would not want to have anything to do with me. That they would hate me. That I deserved to be in prison for the rest of my life. And so on.

I had lived with him for seventeen years; three hundred sixty-five days a year, minus the times one of us was away from home. If I were to halve the number of days I’d lived with him, I still count at least 3100 days that he’d had access to my mind. Dad had hardwired my brain by using verbal repetition and more, so that his words had become so much an integral part of my own thought patterns, I hadn’t recognized that the constant thoughts about being guilty had originated from him!

Dad couldn’t see himself as who and what he really was. He’d constructed an immense, nearly impenetrable mental wall behind him. Behind it was the pain of his having been abused and betrayed as a child. In front stood the part of Dad that had secretly operated in the criminal world. This adult part had dumped his guilt onto me, his small victim, because he’d been unwilling to recognize that *he* was a murderer and a pedophile.

Dad had lied to himself most of all. In his fantasy world, he wasn’t a molester; he expressed his love for children by having sex with them. He wasn’t a murderer; he had to “teach a lesson” when he believed that adult cult members had betrayed him. He wasn’t a murderer when he slaughtered “disposable” infants on altars–he’d need their life-force to survive. He’d tortured and sometimes killed children for being weak, with the justification that only the strong should survive. He’d raped and sometimes killed women because “women always get you in the end.”

He'd killed "street bums" because they were worthless and caused problems. He wasn't a murderer; he did the world a favor by "taking out the trash."[20]

Perhaps he couldn't feel his guilt because he couldn't accept the knowledge that those who should have loved and protected him as a child, had instead willingly hurt and betrayed him.

I believe he also refused to own his guilt because it was too uncomfortable–he didn't want to see himself as who and what he really was. His free-floating guilt and self-hatred had to go . . . well, where else? Onto his innocent victims.

I became one of several primary extensions of Dad's ego. He made me a receptacle for much of his disowned guilt and hatred. In his mind, I was "bad."

At the age of four, I was the dark one, the guilty one. I was the one with blood on my hands and body and soul. It was all me. He was free. I was enslaved.

In spite of all the trauma that was done to me for decades to make me an assassin-by-proxy for spook handlers and their associates, I couldn't accept that I'd never had a choice. Dad's thousands of reinforced accusations had effectively anchored my sense of guilt.

In therapy with Helen, I began to separate these thoughts from my own. They definitely had Dad's feel and signature. Perhaps I could fight them by refusing to accept them as another form of his lies, throwing them back onto him one by one.

Helen gave me a better solution: reverse his messages. I was not a murderer at the age of four; in reality, Dad had been the serial killer. Dad had feared that people wouldn't want anything to do with *him*, if they really knew him. It was all about *Dad*, not me. For the first time in my life, I began to mentally separate from Dad and feel my individuality.

I'm now convinced that Dad really didn't want to know me, because then he would have had to know himself. To avoid the pain of self-knowledge, he instead made me one of his egoless, mental/emotional poison containers.

Armed with that knowledge, I can now accept and love myself for who I really am. I was never a murderer by choice; Dad was. Step by step, truth by truth, I'm breaking free of the false, self-destructive beliefs that he'd implanted in my mind.

Notes

1. Rosencrans wrote about the false guilt that plagues many abuse survivors:

    > Oppressed people . . . frequently believe that they themselves are responsible for their failures and problems. This self-blame is often encouraged and even planted in the oppressed by their oppressors. The oppressed may live in an environment that not only allows oppression but reinforces it as justified. (pg. 231)

2. In *Necessary Losses*, Judith Viorst described a famous experiment conducted by a psychologist, Stanley Milgram:

    > [He] brought people into a Yale University psychology laboratory to engage-or so they were told-in a study of memory and learning. The experimenter explained that the issue to be explored was the impact of punishment on learning, and to that end the designated "teacher" was asked to administer a learning test to a "learner" strapped in a chair in another room–and to give him an electric shock whenever his answer was wrong . . . the teacher was told that, with each wrong answer, he was to give the learner the next higher shock. Conflict began when the learner went from grunts to vehement protests to agonized screams, and the teacher became increasingly uneasy and wished to stop. But each time he hesitated, the person in authority urged him to continue, insisting that he must complete the experiment. And despite the concern for the level of shocking pain that was being inflicted, a large number of teachers continued to push the switches all the way up to the highest voltage. (pp. 138-139)

    Reading about the obedience and willingness of some of those students to shock the "learners" to death did help me a little to forgive myself for having obeyed my professional handlers' orders.

3. If ritual abuse survivors are telling the truth about these crimes, and I'm convinced they are, why isn't our government going after the criminals and shutting down their operations? I think this is because some government agencies like the CIA-and US military-are selecting ritually conditioned victims to perform illegal acts. Similar cover-ups have already been exposed. In 7/28/02, Associated Press's Jeff Donn wrote the first of a series of explosive articles that exposed the FBI's involvement, from the national headquarters on down through the ranks, in covering-up for the existence and crimes of members of mafia families-some of whom still continue to operate freely within the US. The cover-up included "shielding them from prosecution for serious crimes including murder." Donn reported that he and his co-workers discovered that although the "scandal has been portrayed largely as the work of local agents-mavericks willing to deal with the devil

to bring down a Mafia family" (a typical disinfo ploy), they'd discovered documents that "directly connect FBI headquarters to a pattern of collusion with notorious killers."

4. Viorst's description of a psychopath provides a glimpse into Dad's secretive world:

   > There are . . . the so-called psychopathic personalities who seem to display a genuine lack of guilt, whose antisocial and criminal acts, whose repetitive acts of destructiveness and depravity, occur with no restraint and no remorse. These psychopaths cheat and rob and lie and damage and destroy with remarkable emotional impunity. These psychopaths spell out for us, in letters ten feet high, what kind of world this world would be without guilt. (pg. 138)

5. Shortly before I remembered this, I suddenly "had to" buy as many pairs of socks as I could cram into my bureau drawers. I probably have enough to last a lifetime!

6. Gordon Thomas's *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse* solidified that reality. In it, he wrote about his good friend, William Buckley, who had been one of the CIA's top spies. In March, 1984, Buckley was kidnapped in Beirut, Lebanon. After learning of the abduction, CIA officials consulted with specialists, asking them what they thought Buckley would most likely do while in captivity:

   > . . . the Agency specialists believed that Buckley's reactions would follow an almost immutable pattern, characterized by four distinctive steps. *It would make no real difference in the end that he was a trained intelligence officer trained in ways to resist interrogation* [italics added]. Because he would be in close and prolonged contact with his kidnappers, Buckley's psychological responses would be little different from any other kidnap victim; there is no actual way to prepare a person to cope with the stress of being taken hostage. (pg. 42)

   After nearly two months, the CIA received the first of at least two videotapes of Buckley giving false confessions and making political demands for his kidnappers' terrorist organization. Twenty-three days later, they received the second videotape. On June 3, 1985, Buckley died of pneumonia–still a hostage. (pp. 42, 46–48, 351) If the will of a highly trained career CIA operative was broken in less than two months to where he betrayed his beloved agency; then how could a child who was tortured, drugged, raped, and more on a near-weekly basis resist becoming mindlessly compliant?

7. Many other mind-control survivors have reported that they were also sexually assaulted by CIA and military intelligence personnel, and/or by CIA-contracted MKULTRA doctors.

8. This is why I find it so bizarre that, on a wall in the entrance to the CIA's headquarters in Langley, is the phrase, "The Truth Shall Set You Free."

9. Blending with emerging child parts sometimes made life difficult, because adult "me" suddenly became childlike and socially inept. As I integrated with those child parts, I often felt a sudden need to pursue childlike experiences that they had been totally deprived of. A bonus to integrating with those child parts was that they'd compartmentalized wisdom and insights about humanity that had been split off from my consciousness. And because of their pure and childlike self-knowledge, these parts could also analyze others in insightful ways. These parts also had essential character strengths and a pure sense of moral outrage that helped me-as the host alter-state-to stand up to abusive and controlling people and say "no" to unreasonable demands.

10. Carla Emery describes a series of techniques that can make a person vulnerable to hypnotic suggestion. Many of them are used in criminal occult rituals:

    > Brainwashing researchers have analyzed the types of **emotional shocks** and their power to devastate. Shocks are most likely to make a person suggestible—and to break him—when they are: intense, repeated, unpredictable, uncontrollable, linked to pressure, incomprehensible, humiliating . . . Any excitement or trauma (sudden fright, fear, terror, threats) makes you more suggestible . . . erotic excitation and orgasm greatly increase suggestibility. (pp. 298–299)

11. Dr. Charles Whitfield explains this sad legacy:

    > . . . the parent or parent figure is previously wounded from having grown up in a dysfunctional family and world. As a result, they feel that they are inadequate and bad at their core, yet they have a toxic store of unfinished business inside. Because there is no safe place to express it, the parent or parent figure then regularly or periodically tries to express their pain, but ends up discharging it in the form of abusing self or others, including their children or others in or outside of the family. (pg. 170)

12. In detail, deMause describes what most of the Nazis, as children, had been forced to endure at home and even at school:

    > Murder, rejection, neglect, tying up and beating by their mothers and other women . . . [mothers birthed] "their babies in the privy, and treated the birth as an evacuation" . . . [mothers coldly] killed their newborn babies . . . [babies] could easily be neglected and not fed enough . . . [mothers] refused to breastfeed their babies . . . [babies were given to] nursemaids, governesses and tutors . . . Mothers and other caretakers tied them up tightly for from six to nine months, and strapped them into a crib in a room with curtains drawn to keep

> out the lurking evils . . . restraint devices such as corsets with steel stays and backboards continued their tied-up condition to assure the parents they were still in complete control . . . Children were given away and even sometimes sold . . . the mother was far more often the main beater . . . The widely-followed Dr. Schreber said the earlier one begins beatings the better . . . [they endured] routine beating, kicking, strangling, making children eat excrement, etc. . . . [parents "hardened" them] by washing them with ice-cold water before breakfast . . . [children were bound] in controlled positions all day long . . . [they were] frightened by endless ghost stories where they were threatened with being carried away by horrible figures . . . [infant toilet training began] at around six months of age, long before the infant has sphincter control. The training [was] done by regular use of enemas and by hitting the infant . . . [enemas] resembled sexual assaults on the anus . . . [children were] used by parents and servants as sexual objects from an early age . . . incestuous assaults were regular . . . After using them sexually, [parents] then would threaten to punish the child for their sexuality . . . [parents used] anti-masturbation devices such as penis-rings, metal cages with spikes, and plaster casts to prevent erections while sleeping . . . [children were] again raped at school, as servants, on the streets and at work. (pp. 410, 412-414, & 416-421)

13. I am not the first person, by far, to make such statements. Other brave souls are also making the connections between criminal occultism, Nazi immigrants, the CIA, and mind-control experimentation:

> In 1993, Dr. Corydon Hammond, a professor at the University of Utah's School of Medicine, conducted a seminar on federally-funded mind control experiments. Topics covered by Hammond included brain-washing, post-hypnotic programming and the induction of multiple personalities by the CIA. Hammond contended that the cult underground has roots in Nazi Germany, and that the CIA's cult mind control techniques were based upon those of Nazi scientists recruited by the CIA for Cold Warfare . . . Hammond was forced to drop this line of inquiry by professional ridicule, especially from the CIA's False Memory Syndrome Foundation, and a barrage of death threats. At a regional conference on ritual child abuse, he regretted that he could no longer speak on the theme of government mind control. (*Psychic Dictatorship*, pg. 61)

14. As was experienced by many of the German children, most occult ritual abuse survivors in North America with whom I have been in contact have reported that they were also forced to eat excrement and drink urine. Many of them claimed they either witnessed and/or were forced to perform the murder of babies

and young children. And almost all of them reported they were sexually assaulted and/or tortured during rituals. Survivors like Carol Rutz, author of *A Nation Betrayed*, reported that as children, they were forced to stay in cages for long periods of time, naked and unable to bathe or use a toilet. Many ritual abuse survivors have also reported having been starved and/or put in sensory isolation containers, especially in boxes and coffins. Many of them have also reported "bug traumas" in which they had been placed inside containers and covered with insects.

15. An excellent resource is *The Occult Roots of Nazism: Secret Aryan Cults And Their Influence On Nazi Ideology,* by Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke.

16. Joseph Moreno, MT-BC, a Director of Music Therapy at Maryville University, St. Louis, Missouri, wrote *Orpheus in Hell*, a fascinating journal article about how both concentration camp inmates and their Nazi captors used music to cope with their experiences. Moreno made an observation about those Nazis that I believe also would have applied to Dad and his Nazi associates in America:

    > Once a person has reached that level of criminality, to give up one's defenses would be an overwhelmingly self-destructive confrontation. The individual would then be obliged to move from a position of self-esteem, believing in the rightness of their actions, to a *totally* reversed position, that one was, in fact, a monster of evil. One can readily understand that many would avoid taking such a threatening psychic leap. (pg. 13)

17. I have repeatedly been advised by investigative journalists that the Pinkerton agency and the CIA have worked closely together for decades. This may explain why Dad, a skilled chemical, mechanical and electrical engineer, had also done security work for Pinkerton.

18. To obtain a free catalog or to learn more about Safer Society, you can mail your request to Safer Society Foundation Inc., PO Box 340, Brandon, VT 05733-0340 USA; call (802) 247-3132; send a fax (802) 247-4233; or go to their website at http://www.safersociety.org.

19. From what I read in Dad's remaining papers, and from my talks with several family members, I learned that Dad was phobic about odors emanating from female bodies. He even named a small female child victim "stinky" and brought her a toy skunk from Disney World.

20. Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. explained why people like Dad put unrealistic labels on their victims:

    > This type of excuse, that the victim is somehow evil or defective or "less than human," is simply projection. The father of one of my clients told her she was too egocentric to ever have children. Another sadistic

father told his daughter/victim that she didn't feel things but only pretended to. Someone was, indeed, too egocentric to have children in that house, and someone didn't feel things. Someone was also less than human, but in no case was it the child.

This process of projection is the same one that nonsadistic child molesters use, projection of the offender's inner world onto the victim . . . Some denigrate whole classes of people, such as women or children. Many rapists believe that women are "bitches" who deserve anything bad that happens to them. Those who attack children employ similarly distorted cognitions in regard to children. (pg. 111-112)

Saying Goodbye

Goodbye, Fantasy Mom

Part of saying goodbye to my mother involves telling others what she did to me. It's not easy. I've already lost my father by telling the truth about him; all I have left of my parents is my mother. And yet, to hold back and continue covering-up for her past sins puts me in a bad position. Why? Because covering-up for her still reinforces my denial about what she did to me, about who and what she really is. It keeps me hoping against hope that maybe she'll turn around, maybe she'll get help and see the error of her ways, maybe she'll grow up, mature, and discover love inside herself for me. Maybe she'll stop being a narcissist and reach out instead of pulling everything into her. I want my mommy–not the mommy I had, but the mommy I never had.

I tried, once before, to go through the entire process of letting go and saying goodbye to her (figuratively, not in person) when I found the black hole inside my soul. I got about halfway through the grieving process, the letting-go-of-fantasy-Mommy process, but then I took a ninety-degree turn and sabotaged it.

Instead of fully feeling the grief of knowing that Mom never loved me and never will, I started looking for mommy-substitutes. I gravitated towards one woman after another whose personality resembled Mom's–to some extent, each woman was cold, controlling, and shaming. I locked into each one, emotionally, and tried to fashion her into my mother's personality. This was sick, but I didn't realize I was doing it–at least, not at first.

After breaking away from the most recent abusive female, I decided not to look for another substitute. I knew I needed to get honest with myself and take a hard look at what was underneath my unhealthy behavior. It was time to admit that I was still trying to fill the gaping void that the absence of mother-love had left in my soul.

It was hard to let go of my fantasy mother. Doing this always takes a lot of courage, strength, and support. As I began to let go of the fantasy, really let go, I was immediately slammed by new emotions that were so sharp, so keen, so breath-taking, I could barely move.

I finally entered the full reality that as a child, I'd had nobody. Nobody at all. Just a little girl, I'd been tortured and sexually assaulted at home *nearly every day*, and nobody had been there to help me survive it.

Then I remembered and felt what else I'd blocked out–that as a child in constant danger, I'd had to stay *in the moment* to survive. Back then, I couldn't bear to think about the next moment, what might happen–my mind couldn't survive that. I had to blank my mind out and think of nothing. Because nothing was all that was left to me.

How did I survive day after day, year after year of unending torture, rape, and more? To be honest, I really don't know. I have given myself pat answers in the past: I managed to dissociate it away; Mom's mother gave me nurturing at times; teachers and other adults gave me sprinklings of love and caring now and then; God loved and cared about me; but in reality, most of the time (especially at home), I had no one to care about me, no one to protect me from human evil, no one to hold me, love me, comfort me. Not even God was there, that I could see or feel. I was completely alone.

At home with Mom and Dad, the only way I could mentally survive was to stay in the moment, choosing not to think about what might be done to me next. I couldn't bear thinking about such possibilities. And I was always acutely aware that nobody was there for me. *At all.*[1]

In our rental home in Laureldale, Mom usually made sure my brother was in his crib for the night before Dad came home from work. My stomach hurt whenever I saw a gleeful expression on her face. My stomach hurt even more when, as Dad entered the house, she bounced on her toes and clapped her hands.[2] That's how I knew it was going to happen again. And I was certain I was going mad. At the age of three, I already knew what madness was.

The reality I've still been running away from is hard and harsh: I was raised by two sadists. Not one—two. Both of my parents had enjoyed torturing me – individually, together at home, and with others in larger gatherings. Any way they could. I had no heroes. I had no rescuers. I had nobody to love me. Instead, I lived in perpetual dread of what they were going to do next.

Nearly every night, when we lived in Laureldale, when it was just me, my parents, and baby brother in the house, Mom and Dad would take me into the downstairs kitchen in the back of the house to start the next torture session.

One time, when I was being toilet-trained, they ordered me to sit on my potty seat in the kitchen. Dad stuffed purple grapes and a piece of banana into my rectum and ordered me to sit there all night without going to the bathroom. This was excruciating for a small child. (Terrified of Dad's anger, I obeyed by staying in a trance state – which is probably what Dad wanted.) Mom laughed at my discomfort and made fun of me as she watched.

On another night in the kitchen, I sat on a chair. Mom placed a brown metal bobby pin on my arm and Dad touched it with the end of a live wire, burning an imprint the shape of a bobby pin on my tender flesh. Then they both called me "Bobby." I instinctively created a boy alter-state that answered to that name from then on.[3]

I've clearly remembered one night when they went beyond their normal limits. Earlier in the evening, Mom had placed a large skillet full of grease atop of the stove. After supper, one parent picked me up and held me tightly, approaching the stove. The other grabbed my hand and forced my outstretched palm on top of the scalding-hot grease for several seconds. It was one of the few times they didn't punish me for screaming or struggling. I screamed until my throat was raw. I kicked and wriggled furiously, trying to get away from the heat and the incredible pain. Snot ran out of my nose and tears poured down my cheeks. Then I saw Dad smile and Mom laugh.

I didn't want to believe that particular memory when it first emerged. It didn't fit their profile – usually they tortured me in ways that either didn't leave marks at all, or had left marks that could be explained in other ways. And yet, for the next couple of days, I felt an odd need to be very gentle with that hand. To not let it touch anything. To nurse it as I would have, had it recently been burned. Then, in therapy, a child part came out that had endured the pain and the aftermath. She explained to Helen and to me that my palm had turned "gooey white." I can still clearly see what it looked like. I have no other memory of having been badly burned, and have not known anyone else who was. The gooey white substance was pure memory.

Helen confirmed that this is how my hand would have looked, had it been burned that way. The child part explained that when adults asked about my hand, Mom told them that I'd burned it atop the stove by myself. That child part couldn't understand why the adults believed her–after all, I wasn't even tall enough to reach the top of the stove!

Because Dad was an electrical engineer with a creative mind, he used a new variation of a set of standard forms of torture nearly every night. He might make me sit in a different part of the room. He might say different words. He might have Mom do something new. By keeping me on edge, never letting me get used to a predictable pattern, my personality split and split and split. I believe this is what he intended.

In our home in Reiffton, after Mom gave me my cat, she and Dad started what they called "cat scratch." Similar to what Dr. J did to me as an adult, they used the live end of a stripped electrical cord and scratched its bare copper end on my back, my arms, anywhere they wanted. I cannot adequately describe the intensity of the pain of being simultaneously scratched and shocked. It's still one of my worst physical memories. Each time they did it, they said if I told anyone, they'd tell that person that when I picked up my cat, it scratched me. Believing their threat, I stayed silent and then blocked it all out.

Other than "cat scratches," the worst ongoing torture I suffered at home was being bitten. I've had more memories of this than I can count–I usually relive the pain of the bites when I'm lying in bed at night, trying to sleep. It's excruciating.

In each memory I've recovered thus far, they made me lie on their bed, sandwiched between them, all three of us naked, and literally bit me all over my body, making comments about how I was food. I'm not talking about nibbles and nips – they bit me hard. By saying I was food, the implied threat (in my mind, at least) was that they might eat me (cannibalism) as they had the bodies of babies and children at the rituals Dad officiated. This, more than anything else, made me terrified of my parents. I believed that someday they would eat me alive, making me feel every incredibly painful bite.

This was the life I lived at home as a child. Yes, there were good times. And yes, most of the time, I wasn't being tortured. But even when I wasn't being tortured, I was always waiting for the other shoe to drop, waiting for when they'd grab me and do something new that was even more terrible. I became hyper-vigilant when I was just a little child; I've been that way, ever since.

If a child cannot bond with and trust the primary caregivers (an oxymoron in my case), then how can the child fully bond with anyone else? If the child is conditioned to constantly live in fear, how can the child feel safe? Perhaps the home torture I experienced as a child is why I'm still unable to relax completely at home. Even when I'm sitting in my recliner, my feet propped up, reading a good book or watching TV, I still have figurative eyes in the back of my head. I'm alert to every change in air pressure, to the tiniest sound in another room, to anything that indicates someone is about to hurt me – even though I know that no one is there. The fear never completely goes away.

There. I've told you. I've told everyone who reads this book. The cover-up is over. Reality has finally asserted itself: my mother tortured me, too. My mother chose to torture me. My mother looked forward to torturing me, and laughed when she did it. And she laughed when she gave me to other people to hurt me. My mother was, and may still be, a sadist. Both of my parents were sadists. And I had the bad luck to be born to them.

This is reality. This was my life. This was what I experienced. I never had a mother who gave a damn about me. I was a soul-orphan. Goodbye, fantasy mom. I will not miss you. Goodbye.

Goodbye, Childhood Family

I've said goodbye to Dad and to Mom. But there are more goodbyes to be said, before I'm really free.

Part of becoming an independent, mature adult involves cutting ties to my childhood and all it represents–not to the memories, but to my child-like relationships with the people I knew back then. This is hard to do, especially since I'd developed Stockholm Syndrome relationships with a few of the adults in my childhood family–on both sides.

During a therapy session several years ago, Helen told me a story that has helped me to understand why I have still feared the recriminations of perpetrators lurking within the family. The story she told me was about the strange relationship between two dogs that lived together.

First, the owners adopted the Chihuahua. Their only pet at the time, it grew up to be a feisty adult. Then the owners adopted a second pet: a Great Dane puppy.

The Great Dane was small at first, which made it vulnerable to the domination of the aggressive, controlling Chihuahua. And yet, as the Dane grew bigger and bigger, it remained submissive to the Chihuahua. The owners laughed at the Dane's odd behavior, not realizing it wasn't able to comprehend that it was now much bigger and stronger than the Chihuahua!

Helen said that abused children who grow up into adulthood often perpetuate similar mental/emotional relationships with childhood perpetrators. Even though the children gradually become bigger and stronger, they may still feel little and helpless in the abusers' presence. And sometimes, the adult children still feel a powerful emotional attachment to the abusers that they wouldn't feel if they *hadn't* been abused.

This is the attachment I've still felt towards several much-older perpetrators in my childhood family. Even though I haven't seen them for many years, and have only heard from two of them in the last decade, if you were to ask me if they still matter to me, I would say (in my heart of hearts), absolutely. I can't explain why, and yet, the attachment is both illogical and powerful.

My concern about what these perpetrators might say to me, and about me to others, has continued to have a strong effect on my mind and my decision-making processes. Even though I'm much bigger now, and am better educated with good resources and an excellent support system, I've still felt a vulnerability towards them that I haven't felt towards anyone else. It has continued to affect my life, even though I haven't heard from most of them in a long time. Even though I've recovered greatly. Even though I'm much wiser and have gradually gained my mind back. Even now.

As I look deeper within my heart, I discover another reason for the attachment that leaves me vulnerable towards them. The relationships I had with my extended family were the closest I experienced with anyone for a very long time. The family I knew as a child was a tightly closed system. No outsiders were allowed in without permission. I was punished if I told outsiders what went on inside the family. We were expected to keep the family's secrets at all costs. There was hell to pay either overtly or covertly whenever one of us tried to buck the family system.

I experienced its power when Mom divorced Dad. I was seventeen. We lived halfway across the country. What the family thought and said shouldn't have mattered that much to me, anymore. But it did.

Furious at Mom for daring to divorce her son, Grandma retaliated by announcing that she'd disowned me and my brothers. For years, she totally shunned us. We were no longer her grandchildren. I cannot adequately describe how deep that hurt went inside me. It was as if she'd taken away a huge chunk of who I was, and held it hostage. The extended family that had been my foundation was pulled completely out from under me, leaving me with *no identity*. I didn't know who I was, if I wasn't a Shirk.

Decades later, after Dad's death, one of Dad's brothers (also a pedophile) reminded me by letter of my Shirk identity. The man indicated that no matter how hard I tried to break away from the family, I would always be a Shirk, first and foremost. I was thrown completely off-kilter by his letter. It had a profound effect on my mind. For a while, I forgot who I was and mindlessly agreed – he was right. I'd made a mistake by breaking away from the family, by trying to tell the authorities what some of them had done to me. I was wrong; he was right; I would always be a Shirk. Not an individual with my own mind and choices, just a cog in the family machine. Thank God for therapy; it helped me to break his insane spell over my mind.

Now, I'm weighing the possible consequences of going public about my past. What will I have to give up if I name my father as a perp, if I tell what my mother and others in the family did to me? What will telling the truth cost me? Will some of the perpetrators try to contact me and rattle me to the core again? And if they do, will they be successful? Who am I, if not a family member? Am I anybody outside of the closed family system–even though I've not had contact with it for years?

If I change my mind and decide to stay silent, if I realign with the family and its rigid rules, if I recant everything I have remembered and go back into the fold, what would *that* decision cost me?

If I stay true to the current course and don't recant–if I tell–can I bear the pain of losing every person in the family who has still been dear to me?

I wonder what that would feel like. I decide to test the waters within. I allow myself to feel the grief of losing them all, every one of them, in one fell swoop. I emotionally disinherit myself from them before they can do it to me.

Immediately, I'm slammed by new pain. Unfamiliar pain. It's a kind of pain that I've not yet acknowledged existing inside me. What's it about, I wonder? As I look inside, I make an amazing new discovery: it's the grief of losing my relationships with the family perpetrators!

This is a part of my personality that I became too jaded as an adult to recognize: that even when they had hurt me, even when they had done the worst to me, I had still loved them. Hated them, yes. Feared them, most certainly. But the pure child in me had found a way to love them, too.

And this is my final connection to them: the love-connection. I hadn't wanted to let go of it. It's my final tie to them, straight from my heart to theirs. And yet, to truly be free of them once and for all, I must cut the cord. It's time.

To my childhood family: goodbye. I love you. Goodbye. I wish you well. Goodbye.

Notes

1. I am not minimizing my relationship with my brothers; but they were both younger than I. Even if they had wanted to, they couldn't have done anything to protect me.
2. Anna C. Salter, Ph.D. wrote: "When you or I see someone in pain, we empathize, which is to say, we feel some of that pain ourselves. Sadists feel satisfied, high, happy instead." (pg. 108)
3. My Bobby persona was one of my primary alter-states. He'd compartmentalized a large amount of knowledge about my life and my past, and was one of the parts I could count on the most, to fill me in about the histories of other alter-states when they first emerged. Some therapists call this kind of alter-state an ISH (internal self-helper). Bobby had also compartmentalized a large number of traumas. His last confession, before becoming one with me, was that he'd "had to be a boy" because otherwise, he feared he'd become Mom in all her insanity.

Coming Home

One of the most difficult questions in my recovery has been, "Who am I?" In so many different ways in the past, I was hindered from developing a single core personality–a solid sense of self. I was severely traumatized for more than three decades. My right to live and to be loved was never affirmed by my primary caregivers, who modeled dissociation, and covert hatred and cruelty to me. I was repeatedly betrayed by those I needed to be trustworthy and safe. My mind was skillfully split and shattered into many hundreds of shards and pieces. All this, and more, contributed to my inability to have a centered self.[1]

Until I started remembering my hidden past, I didn't have a clue to who I really was, other than what was external. I answered to the name of Kathy as a child and as an adult, Kathleen; I was a mother and wife and daughter and sister and aunt; I was also a neighbor and church member and insurance clerk.

I had no cohesive internal self. This is why, when I came into consciousness to find myself in one strange place after another, I was easily able to shift and change with my surroundings. I was so good at adapting, some of my spook handlers called me a "chameleon."

These shifts and changes served a vital purpose in the past: I was able to survive extremely dangerous situations. And yet, when I began my recovery, "switching" into amnesic, altered states of consciousness quickly became a handicap.

Although I respect the right of trauma survivors who choose to maintain their multiplicity (if that's possible); for me, integration has been an important goal. I've desperately wanted to know what it feels like to be a "singleton" or "monomind." I've wanted to know what it's like to wake up every day, having full knowledge of what happened the day before. I've wanted to experience what it's like to not live in constant fear that I may "lose time" again and not know what I'd done in an altered state of consciousness.

I've wanted to be able to build a new life that isn't in a constant upheaval due to mental and emotional shifts and changes. I've wanted to be consistent in my behaviors so that my loved ones could feel secure in my presence and no longer worry that I might have a terrible abreaction or that a suicidal alter-state might emerge while alone in the house.

I've noticed the peace in the faces of some people who don't dissociate. They seem to relax as they appreciate the simplicities of their reasonably normal lives. I've wanted to experience that kind of peace, too.

Although I'd worked very hard to remember what I'd blocked out, to deprogram my mind, and to accept and blend with all of my emerging alter-states, I'd still felt separated from my deeper self. Sensing an ongoing chasm between my normal life and my more traumatic past, I didn't know how to bridge it. This worried me. Because my two lives had been so drastically different, was it impossible to ever blend them together?

Another worry came from a haunting, nearly indescribable feeling of homesickness that centered in my belly. The homesickness wasn't for my childhood home, nor was it for the family. It was a deep, bittersweet pang in my gut that just wouldn't go away. Something was still missing; something so fundamental that I wasn't whole without it.

What was causing this homesickness? And what was still keeping me separated inside myself? I especially felt it whenever I encountered a perpetrator from my past who tried to reaccess me. I mistakenly assumed that I'd been pining for that person. I didn't understand that such people, with whom I'd developed Stockholm Syndrome relationships, represented past *experiences* that I was still denying as part of the fabric of my overall personality.

I didn't understand that I was still homesick for my split-off past experiences because they'd been among the most basic building blocks of my sense of self. I didn't yet understand that until I allowed the blocks to be found and placed together, parts of my foundation were still missing.

In the spring of 2003, I learned that physical evidence exists that proves that some traumatic memories and experiences are split off or stored in separate parts of the brain, leaving amnesic gaps in-between.

In their 1998 journal article, "Cognitive Impact of Traumatic Events," Gordon H. Bower and Heidi Sivers of Stanford University described two separate memory systems. One holds regular, life narrative memory; the other stores traumatic memory. They wrote:

> . . . re-experiencing of sensory memories of the trauma triggered by external cues reflect the first, implicit/emotional system, whereas the coherent verbal narrative of the trauma

> that is gradually constructed during psychotherapy reflects the second, verbal system. (pg. 640)

What does this mean? As I and many other trauma survivors have experienced, our memories have often emerged in fragmented, visual flashbacks and emotional abreactions. Because these pieces of traumatic memory were not stored in the "normal experience" parts of our brains, we did not have the ability to regulate or control when or how the flashbacks and abreactions would occur.

Referring to a 1911 journal article, "Recognition and Selfhood," by Eduard Claparede, Bower and Sivers wrote:

> . . . the trauma victim's consciousness may be distorted (or attention narrowed?) during the traumatic event, so that traumatic memories are more likely to be stored in the situationally-accessible memory system rather than in association with the cognitive [normally conscious] self. This analysis may provide a useful account of why some trauma victims are at times unable to recall voluntarily the trauma, while at other times they suffer from spontaneous flashback memories of it. (pg. 640)

The authors explained that although survivors cannot voluntarily remember these traumas, they can be triggered by cues that are linked to the memories–as the sight of a dog's pink penis triggered flashbacks of bestiality porn shoots in my mind.

They cited a study that seems to verify that the two types of memory are indeed stored in different parts in the brain:

> Some evidence . . . comes from a neuroimaging study by Rauch, et al. (1996) When traumatic memories were provoked in PTSD patients (Vietnam veterans), the investigators observed decreased activation of Broca's area of the brain along with increased activation of right cerebral hemisphere areas. Broca's area is the area of the brain most centrally involved in transforming subjective experience into speech, whereas the right hemisphere has been implicated in processing intense emotions and visual images. (pg. 641)

This may also explain why I'd been able to use my left hand to access visual and emotional information that I'd not remembered when writing with my right, dominant hand. Using my left hand had accessed information that was stored in my brain's right hemisphere. Before then, my primary source of information about my past had been what scientists call Broca's area. Now I knew why my traumatic memories had been stored and had emerged quite differently from my cognitive or already-known memory; they'd been stored in a completely different part of my brain!

This new discovery raised another question: how had I been able to integrate those traumatic memories, thereby stopping them from generating more flashbacks, abreactions and nightmares?

In his remarkably honest 2001 journal article, "Threads from the Labyrinth: Therapy with Survivors of War and Political Oppression," Jeremy Woodcock of the Medical Foundation for Care of Victims of Torture, located in Great Britain, used simple terms to explain how traumatic memory can be transferred from the right hemisphere to Broca's area, where it can then integrate with and become part of the survivor's "normal life" experiences.

> First, let's look at his definition of a person's life narrative:
>
> Narrative is first of all a story, most often the stories of people's lives and therefore, in the context of survival, to be taken very seriously, but not so reverentially that we cannot tease out new meanings. Narrative implies that these stories have layers and therefore that there may be tensions and conflicts between them. These may exist within an individual's internal world or between family members who will naturally own different scripts about their life stories. Some of these layers will be fully elaborated and out in the open. Others will be hidden, repressed or denied. (pg. 137)

Woodcock explained why some traumatic memories are repressed (split-off) and later emerge as memory fragments such as flashbacks:

> What is not common, because it is astounding or horrifying or shameful, often gets lost to the memory or translated into metaphor [a wellspring of symbolic nightmares?] where its

> capacity to horrify is encapsulated and made more safe to comprehend . . . More compelling and less consciously available dimensions of denial are when memories of gross violations are so threatening to the psychological and physical integrity of the survivor that recollections are literally split off from consciousness . . . the shattering manner in which torture and atrocity violate the physical and psychological boundaries of survivors frequently causes their recall of events to emerge in ways that may be fragmentary, disconnected and bizarre. (pp. 141, 144)

If traumatic memory can split off and later emerge in fragmented form, how can a therapist help the survivor to integrate and accept the traumatic material stored in the right hemisphere by transferring it into the left hemisphere where the survivor's life narrative center is located? Woodcock explained that this is usually done by helping the survivor to speak–often for the first time–about the traumatic memories. As this is done, the material or information literally transfers from one side of the brain to the other, where it gradually blends with and becomes a permanent part of the survivor's life narrative. (pg. 147)

This is what a succession of mental health professionals have helped me to do, one tiny piece of memory at a time. As a result, I've been able to accept much of the past that I'd previously disowned. I can speak and write about many of my traumatic experiences without trancing out. I can communicate these memories as Kathleen, as one person.

So far, so good. I'm integrating. And yet, as of six months ago, the pang of homesickness still bothered me. What was causing it, and why wouldn't it go away?

According to Gordon and Sivers, Claparede wrote that a person can split off part of his/her existence, thereby making some experiences not part of the self. I found Claparede's article translated and published in a 1995 edition of *Consciousness and Cognition.* Claparede provided a practical explanation for the homesick feeling. He wrote:

> But what is this feeling of selfhood? . . . If I have experienced a thing I have the feeling that it is mine, belongs to my experience. This feeling manifests itself even after a few moments of observing a new object: As the object is considered and (ap)perceived, it becomes progressively familiar, appears more and more intimate, and finally attains the character of being

> "my object." It is not surprising then if on reappearing, after some time has elapsed, it again evokes that feeling. (pg. 373)

Claparede's words told me something I'd known deep inside: the sum of my experience–*all* of it–is who I really am as a person. If I continue to push *any* of it away, I'm still pushing *me* away. I can't think of anything I would feel more homesick for, or yearn more for, than my own self.

Although I'd worked very hard to find and integrate every alter-state, over the past thirteen years, I was still pushing away the *essence* of my past experiences; I was still avoiding accepting that my past was an important and essential part of my personality!

This presented a new challenge: it was time to relax and accept all of who I am and all of what I've experienced, without fighting against it.

My continuing struggle against the essence of my past had been similar to what I had experienced when I'd been put in a human-sized, upright, clear container that had been filled with what had probably been liquid oxygen.

As the liquid had risen to my chest, then my neck, then my bottom lip, I'd panicked. But because the container had pinned my arms against my sides, I hadn't been able to break free. Even as I'd prepared to die, my survival instinct had struggled to keep me from breathing the liquid–not understanding that it would not harm me. This same survival instinct now struggled against accepting the realness of my past–because I feared its emotional impact might kill me!

For thirteen years, I'd endured one extreme traumatic relive after another. I'd checked myself into psychiatric hospitals seven times because the memories were so torturous and painful, I'd had no strength left to endure them. Many times, I became ill, exhausted and depressed from their emotional impact. Gradually, without realizing it, I'd developed a phobia towards the very act of remembering! Because I'd feared and resisted remembering, I'd become increasingly dissociated. Eventually, I'd been unable to remember what was still repressed, without first switching entirely into another alter-state.

> Claparede explained this form of dissociation:
>
> Voluntary acts imply processes which we call "self." If for one reason or another some presentations [e.g., memories of traumatic events] are not associated with a feeling of "selfhood," the

> subject does not have the impression of possessing them and thus cannot recall them–as one cannot at will move one's ears unless the muscles have first revealed themselves through certain inner sensations. The first prerequisite of recalling a memory is the impression that we possess it. It is thus understandable that if the impression of "selfhood" is destroyed, the absence of recognition which follows is coupled with an absence of voluntary recall. (pg. 376)

In other words, I now needed to be willing to accept that who I was in the past is still part of me–regardless of who created the alter-states, or how much or little I was to blame for what the perpetrators had influenced me to do. This wasn't about blame; it was about acceptance. It was about addressing my past as part of my essence instead of calling it by another person's name. It was about relaxing in bed at night, allowing myself to feel total calm and peace instead of tensing with the fear about what was sure to come in my dreams. It was about opening my mind and my will and saying, "Whatever is there, I welcome you. I welcome you as part of me. I will not fear you any more."

Perhaps this act of surrender was what Claparede referred to when he wrote:

> The feeling of selfhood is, so to speak, the link between an imaged memory and ourself: The link by which we hold it and thanks to which we can retrieve it from the depths of the subconscious. (pg. 376)

Now, if I choose to remain at peace and don't try to fight or re-repress my emerging memories, if I'm willing to accept them as part of me instead of making them "not me," I don't automatically dissociate as they emerge. In general, I'm able to accept them more quickly as part of my past and my life. Although some of the memories are still emotionally devastating, and I must still give myself time now and then to process them in a private and uninterrupted way, I seem to be struggling less and relaxing more. These memories are, after all, a fundamental part of who I am. It seems that I'm finally finding my way home–to me.

Notes

1. By analyzing my current behaviors during minor crises, I've detected a pattern that may explain, in part, how I had developed some of my altered states of consciousness as a child, and then named them:

   First, whenever I felt overwhelmed by a sudden, troubling event, my automatic thoughts were usually either "I can't believe this is happening," or "This can't be happening to me!" I suspect that each time I said or thought this to myself, I conditioned my mind to store the memory of that particular event in another part of my brain, separated from where my normal life/"me" memories were stored.

   For this reason, whenever I encounter a new crisis now, I'm careful to stop myself as soon as I utter or think those words. Instead, I say aloud to myself: "Deal with it. It *is* happening, and it is happening to *you*. And if other people can get through this, you can, too." So far, this new technique has worked-I've stayed mentally present through each difficult event.

   In the past, whenever I'd said, "This can't be happening to me," I'd also generated a missing sense of self-a void that needed to be filled because, after all, the memory of the event was being stored in my brain as having happened to *someone*! To fill that void, I had unconsciously created other personas, giving them (if I were able to choose) names that were, at least, a bit different than the one I was commonly known by: Kathy. I created Little Kathy, Katherine, Catalina, and so on. In my mind at such times, a fundamental truth had been that each experience had indeed belonged to someone-but not necessarily to *me*!

New Life

Progress

Helen has often reminded me that as I continue to heal, I should "keep one foot in the past and the other in the present." In other words, I need to be careful to not become so immersed in the past that I don't enjoy my new life, while not running away from the past by focusing solely on the present. Both are important.

I still rarely know when the next unexpected memory will occur. Sometimes I can sense that something is emerging when I say or do something out of the ordinary. I might repeat a word that isn't part of my regular vocabulary, or I might have a recurring, vividly detailed dream that I've not had before. When this occurs, I relax my body and mind as much as possible, so that I won't fight what's surfacing.

I may retrieve bits and pieces of traumatic memories for the rest of my life. Remembering has become part of my daily routine. With each memory, I learn something new about my past and, more important, about who I am. Each time I blend with newly emerging alter-states and personality fragments, I gain their skills, strengths, and abilities. I am amazed by how much I can do now, that I couldn't do in the past.

I am no longer paralyzed with fear in the presence of sex addicts, control addicts, and sociopaths. The more I've learned about what motivated Dad and other abusers, both male and female, the more I've felt compassion for them–at a safe distance. (Helen reminded me to treat them as I would a rabid dog. The dog might be cute and I might feel sorry for its deteriorating condition, but I don't need to get so close that it can bite me and destroy me, too!)

I feel sad for them because I'm healing while most of them are mired in misery, denial, chaos, and destructive behaviors. Many of them are so used to being in pain and running from it every way they can, they don't even know they're hurting!

I don't tolerate abusive behaviors from others anymore, nor do I allow myself to be abusive. I've finally found a comfortable middle ground. I'm becoming more willing to connect with people instead of fearing what they might do to me. I had been immersed in the ugly underbelly of our society for so long, I hadn't known that normal, non-hurtful people comprise its majority. Now I know that criminals are a minority. What a relief!

Gifts to Myself

Like wonderful Christmas and birthday presents, I give myself new gifts that equip me to live a healthier life. Some of these gifts are everyday rights I'd never been allowed to own. Some are decisions to do or say something that I'd not been allowed to do or say in the past. Some are decisions to not do what I'd previously had no choice about doing. Some are permissions to think in new ways. And some are choices I wasn't allowed, before.

I give myself the choice to ask for help if I feel suicidal or if my emotional pain becomes unbearable. I can call my support network for emergency support. If needed, I can make arrangements to check into a psych hospital so the staff can monitor me until I work through the pain.

I give myself the gift of humor–not sarcastic and angry, but silly and childlike or from my belly. I wasn't encouraged to laugh as a child and frankly, there wasn't much to laugh about. Now, there is.[1] Together, Bill and I have used humor to weather many difficult crises. Our laughter has been the oil that smoothes out the roughest days. In the summer of 2002, he had a stroke. People probably thought we'd lost our minds when we laughed about how he tilted to the left when he tried to walk forward in his hospital room. It was a way of reminding ourselves, "This will get better." It did.

I choose to let go of small grievances. They sap too much of my time and energy.

I utilize the energy of my anger instead of letting it overwhelm me. Occasional spurts of anger are a gift because, for a while, they make me manic. Although I can expect to feel exhausted afterwards, I visualize myself riding the energy like a booster rocket. I think, "What can I do with this energy to make a positive change? How can I use it to accomplish something I normally don't have the energy to do?"

Much of my anger surfaced between 1996 and 2001. I used it to create the PARC-VRAMC Living Memorial Garden near Chattanooga. As I dug holes for trees to be planted, I often encountered rocks and thick roots. I used the roots as an opportunity to express my rage at the men in my past who had sexually assaulted me. And then, when I'd finished expelling the anger, I planted a tree or bush.

I've given myself the opportunity to study to become a better gardener. Gardening is a major part of my healing now–I call the PARC garden my "playground." Whenever I feel overly stressed, I pick up fallen tree limbs or pull weeds while enjoying the beauty all around. It's exciting to know that now, I have the chance to help living things grow and thrive!

I've given myself the right to live a long and healthy life. I'm still setting goals that I expect to reach by the time I'm eighty. After that, I'll consider retirement.

I'm working towards obtaining a bachelor's degree and then a master's degree in Social Work. Ironically, the US Government provided this opportunity. Because my husband was awarded 100% disability status from the Veterans Administration, I was automatically awarded four free years of college! In my Social Work studies, I've been humbled to learn that all kinds of injustices exist in our world–not just those I've experienced.

I give myself the right to be "good enough." If I earn less than an 'A' in a class, I relax and don't go into an anxiety-induced tailspin. I don't have to be perfect anymore. Having fun is a good goal!

I choose to use visualization, therapy, and memory building techniques to heal my brain. Every day, I "see" more of its damaged neuron paths reconnecting. I choose to believe that my brain has the power to heal itself.

I choose not to obsess about memories that I probably still repress. I don't have to remember every piece of every repressed memory to be able to heal and live a full life.[2]

I give myself the right to not forgive those who viciously and willingly hurt me. I give myself the right to feel anger towards those who battered me mentally, emotionally, and physically. I allow myself to feel glad when they fall ill or die, knowing the same can happen to me and my loved ones (after all, illness and death are not selective). I need to feel the anger to avoid being their victim again.

I balance out my anger by learning what I can about their childhoods. I try to understand them and to feel compassion for their woundedness, although not in a way that emotionally locks me into them again (remember: rabid dog).[3]

To protect my mind and life, I choose not to have any further contact with my childhood family. Although I miss those who did not harm me, they are too closely connected to those who did.[4]

To avoid feeling overwhelmed and depressed, I allow myself to relax on family holidays. Sometimes friends invite us to celebrate with them. Their kindness and caring are precious gifts.

I give myself the right to say, "My mother and other women sexually abused me." I choose not to let societal myths about sainted nurturers silence me anymore. Females sexually assault children, too.[5]

I choose to research the evidence of historical conspiracies. I will not accept the shame that continues to be indiscriminately dumped on intelligent people by our government and the mainstream media when we choose to question what we're told to believe. We are not conspiracy theorists or fanatics. Such labels are condescending and inaccurate. We are *realists*.

I give myself time to grieve old and new losses. The traumas that I endured hurt me in many ways. I still grieve the loss of not having had the ability to nurture, respect, and properly care for Emily. I accept that I may never fully recover from the murder of my precious baby Rose and other dear ones I lost along the way.

Never having had loving, protective parents has been a huge loss for me to grieve. Not having respectful, loving family members to go to when I feel upset or need advice is another.[6] I give myself permission and time to grieve each of these losses—as often and for as long as I need to.

I give myself permission to be just plain human. When I first discovered the hidden parts of my personality, I was terrified of making mistakes or doing something immoral. I was afraid I'd turn into a sociopathic abuser if I integrated with those parts (I didn't). Now, I choose to believe that life is a journey of discovery and growth. Even if I screw up royally, I can still learn from that mistake and make better choices in the future.

I give myself the right to feel and express gratitude. I do not feel grateful for having been betrayed and harmed in the past. I do, however, feel grateful for so many good things that have come into my life since I started to break free from my controllers. I received free schooling. I have good medical insurance coverage that has kept us from having to file for bankruptcy. I have two functioning legs, arms, and eyes, and a brain that still works well. I have a nice home. I have a husband who loves and cares about me. I can hear and talk and hug and type. Even if I lose some of those abilities, I'll still have the rest!

I especially feel grateful that I have today. I'm alive and have the opportunity to work towards my life goals. I have another day to cuddle with my husband and inhale his natural, soothing scent. To massage our elderly dog's arthritic shoulders as he groans with pleasure. To make new friends. To fall in love with humanity.

Because I'm alive, I can walk through the garden to see which plants are in bloom. I have another day to listen to the chorus of thousands of katydids that rhythmically buzz at night. To read entertaining magazines (I adore *Star, Cosmo,* and *GQ*). To watch a good movie that I didn't have the opportunity to enjoy in the past. To walk in the rain. To watch children at play and note that they are being watched and protected—how wonderful!—by their caregivers.

I give myself the right to change the meanings of those things in my life that Dad and other perpetrators had sadistically desecrated and perverted in my mind. Now, I can enjoy breathtakingly beautiful rainbows with the understanding that they are not magical and won't take me to another dimension. When I see storm clouds roiling in the distance, I know that a tornado isn't likely to appear. I can even tolerate the sound of an approaching military copter and know that I am still safe.

When I light fragrant candles in our home, I know that black-robed Satanists won't walk into our living room for a ritual. I even give myself permission to wear red and black clothes together, knowing they won't change the essence of who I am.

Butterflies are another symbol that I have disarmed. Many mind-control victims have been called "butterflies" by programmers. In the past, I felt agitated every time I heard a survivor talk about being transformed from a worm or caterpillar to a butterfly, or about leaving the cocoon, because such phrases were used as part of our programming.[7]

To counter its effects, I created a small butterfly garden, within the larger PARC-VRAMC garden, to honor those survivors. I installed butterfly bushes (some were donated by survivors) and a wooden butterfly box. Every spring, I plant lantana. On summer days, I watch individual butterflies flit and land on the flowers, knowing that I was not and never can be a butterfly. Now I'm able to enjoy them for what they are–beautiful, totally harmless, delicate creatures.

I've also reclaimed the real meaning of some of the spiritual elements in my life. About halfway through the intensive phase of my recovery, I stopped attending church altogether–too many elements of the services triggered horrific memories.

In December 2002, I decided to go to a Christmas Eve church service with Bill. I wondered if it would still be too much for me to bear.

Entering the small brick church, I chose a pew behind the rest of the congregation so that I had an easy avenue of escape. As the service started, I discovered something new. For the first time since the summer of 1989, I was able to hear and enjoy the Christmas carols and the pastor's words without trancing or flashbacking. The pastor talked about communion in a simple way, stating that the grape juice and bread were symbolic representations of Jesus' blood and body, "shed and broken for us." As I hesitantly took communion at the altar, I noticed that it didn't trigger any ritual flashbacks.

As I stood there, I received an unexpected gift. Looking straight into my eyes, the pastor said, "Your sins are forgiven." As I heard those words, icy pain threatened to flash through my body. In a split-second, I realized that I'd stayed away from church and fellow worshippers for one more reason I hadn't been willing to face: I'd still seen myself as unforgivable and unacceptable, undeserving of the right to be with them.

After I returned to the pew and prayed, I realized that because I'd been forgiven, I didn't need to isolate myself from my spiritual brothers and sisters anymore. Then another revelation unfolded: I'd been starving from a lack of spiritual sustenance. Every day, I'd been clinging to fraying strands of hope, fighting blindly to keep doing what I believed was right–all on my own. But the battle was simply too big for me. I desperately needed spiritual help and strength.

Feeling a deep connection with the fellow worshippers and with God, I realized that my own spirituality may be the greatest gift I can ever give to myself. It transcends all human evil, no matter how much that evil may yet amass around us. Those who secretly lust, conspire, and kill for power will rise and fall, but what is spirit will outlast them all.

In spite of the evil that will always exist to some degree in our society; in spite of the many cruelties I've endured and may yet suffer; in spite of the loss of important relationships; in spite of my mental, emotional and physical disabilities; and in spite what evil is yet to come; there is still much hope in the world. Not only do we have a God who truly loves and cares about us; we also have a world full of people who care about each other and want to do what's right. I believe if we give it a chance, goodness will always win–beginning in our own hearts and lives.

Notes

1. *Glamour Magazine's* August, 2002 edition stated: "The average child laughs 400 times a day. The typical adult? 15." (pg. 119) Because I didn't laugh much as a child, I'm making up for lost time now.
2. There may be events in my past that it's best I not remember. This doesn't make me weak; it just proves that I, like everyone else, have a limit to the amount of horror I can endure. "There was an exploration of the labyrinth of torture and atrocity, and the recollection that we are most vulnerable to destruction when alone and beyond the gaze or recall of ourselves and others. Perhaps ultimately the realization that nothing is seemingly beyond the wit of man's destructiveness: even the possibility that we will never know the worst that has befallen us." (Woodcock pg. 151)
3. I didn't know that developing empathy towards those who had brutally harmed and used me, while still feeling anger towards them, might actually be the most sincere form of forgiveness. Beverly Flanigan, MSSW, does an excellent job of explaining the forgiveness process in her book, *Forgiving the Unforgivable: Overcoming the Bitter Legacy of Intimate Wounds*.
4. Dr. Elizabeth Loftus, Pamela Freyd, and other outspoken members of the FMSF publicly attack the character of abuse survivors who choose to separate from their families to maintain their personal safety and mental health. One of the glaring flaws in these women's stance is that they make the cohesion and dysfunctional stability of "allegedly" destructive family systems more important than the constitutional rights (such as liberty), survival, and sanity of their individual members.
5. Rosencrans wrote: "I'm concerned that society will not take abuse between mothers and daughters seriously because both victim and perpetrator are women. In addition, people might resist this information because they want to continue to stereotype and view women as nurturers incapable of such abuse, as non-sexual protectors, and as somehow morally 'better than men.'" (pg. 238) Although I think the feminist movement has made important advances in bettering the lives of untold numbers of women (including my own), I think that we-as women-must be extremely careful not to overlook or minimize the potential of women to also be sexual predators of children.
6. Judith Viorst's *Necessary Losses* has helped me to understand that it's healthy and normal to grieve these and other personal losses.
7. I and many other survivors were mentally conditioned and programmed via trauma, hypnosis, NLP, and other nefarious methods to develop alter-states that truly believed they were fragile, controllable butterflies.

Bibliography

"20 parents charged with molesting their children, Internet porn ring." Associated Press, 8/10/02.

"American Ballistics: History." Website. http://www.amballistics.com/id17.htm.

"About Si Gung (Grandmaster) Jason Lau"- Website.
http://members.aol.com/_ht_a/sidaijoey/jason_lau.html?mtbrand=AOL_US

Banning, Peter, "Female Offenders: Child Molesters," *Men's Issues Forum,* Vol. 6, pg. 2.

Blank, Arthur S., "Trauma Disorders and a Psychology of External Experience," *Military Medicine*, Vol. 159, April 1994, pg. 4.

Bower, Gordon H. and Sivers, Heidi, "Cognitive Impact of Traumatic Events," *Development and Psychopathology*, Vol. 10, 1998, pp. 625–653.

"CIA Is Obstacle in Hunt for Nazis," *Parade Magazine*, 12/22/96.

Claparede, Eduard. "Recognition and Selfhood," *Consciousness and Cognition*, Vol. 4, 1995.

Constantine, Alex, *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.* Portland, OR: Feral House, 1995.

DeMause, Lloyd, Ed., "War as Righteous Rape and Purification," *The Journal of Psychohistory*, Vol. 27:4, Spring, 2000.

Deposition of William Thomas Shirk, November 8, 1989, Volume 1.

Donn, Jeff, "Memos Show FBI Knew About Scandal," Associated Press, 7/28/02.

Duenwald, Mary, "Feed a Cold, Starve a Fever," *Ladies' Home Journal*, February 2003.

Emery, Carla, "Secret, Don't Tell." *The Encyclopedia of Hypnosis*. Pickton, TX: Acorn Press, 1998.

Encyclopedia of World Crime. Wilmette, IL: CrimeBooks, 1990.

"Fahrenheit: Going Underground," *GQ* magazine, December, 2001.

Flanigan, Beverly MSSW, *Forgiving the Unforgivable: Overcoming the Bitter Legacy of Intimate Wounds*. New York: Collier Books, 1992.

The FMSF Scientific and Professional Advisory Board – Profiles. Website. http://www.fmsfonline.org/advboard.html.

Freyd, Jennifer J., *Betrayal Trauma: The Logic of Forgetting Childhood Abuse*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1996.

Freyd, Jennifer J. and DePrince, Anne P., "Perspectives on Memory for Trauma and Cognitive Processes Associated with Dissociative Tendencies," *Journal of Aggression, Maltreatment, and Trauma*, Vol. 4, 2001, pg. 2.

Gill, Mark Stuart, "The Woman Who Wouldn't Be Silenced," *Ladies' Home Journal*, March, 2001.

Goodrick-Clark, Nicholas, *The Occult Roots of Nazism: Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on Nazi Ideology*. New York, NY: NYU Press, 1992.

Graessner, Sepp, M.D., Ed., Gurris, Norbert, Ed., and Pross, Christian, M.D., Ed., *At the Side of Torture Survivors: Treating a Terrible Assault on Human Dignity*. Baltimore, Maryland: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2001.

Grohol, John, *Dissociative Identity Disorder*. Website. http:// psychcentral.com/ disorders/sx18.htm.

Groome, David, et al., *An Introduction to Cognitive Psychology Processes and Disorders*. East Sussex, UK: Psychology Press, Ltd., 1999.

Grossman, Dave, Lt. Col., *On Killing: The Psychological Cost of Learning to Kill in War and Society*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1995.

Gumbel, Andrew, "Dr Richard A. Gardner: Child Psychiatrist Who Developed the Theory of Parental Alienation Syndrome," 5/31/03. Website. http://news.independent.co.uk/people/obituaries/story.jsp?story=411000.

"Happiness Quickie," *Glamour* magazine, August 2002.

Harary, Keith, "Selling the Mind Short: Exposing the Myth of Psychic Privilege," *Omni* magazine (date unknown).

Hile, Jennifer, "Activists Denounce Thailand's Elephant "Crushing" Ritual," *National Geographic Today*, 10/16/02. Website. http://news.nationalgeographic.com/news/2002/10/1016_021016_phajaan.html.

Howe, Mark L., "Individual Differences in Factors That Modulate Storage and Retrieval of Traumatic Memories," *Development and Psychopathology*, Vol. 10, 1998.

Hunt, Linda, *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990*. New York, NY: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Marrs, Texe, *New Age Cults & Religions*. Austin, TX: Living Truth Publishers, 1990.

Moreno, Joseph. "Orpheus in Hell: Music and Therapy in the Holocaust," *The Arts in Psychotherapy*, Vol. 26:1, 1999, pp. 3–14.

Muhltohi. Laureldale, PA: Muhlenberg Township High School Class of 1948.

"Facts about Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder," National Institute for Mental Health. Website. http://www.nimh.nih.gov/anxiety/ptsdfacts.cfm.

"Stress and the Developing Brain," National Institute for Mental/Health. Website.http://www.mentalhealthmatters.com/articles/nimh001.php?artID=334.

The New York Review of Books: Short Reviews. 9/28/78. Website. http://www.nybooks.com/articles/8053.

O'Brien, Cathy and Phillips, Mark, *Trance Formation of America Through Mind Control: The True Life Story of a CIA Slave*. Nashville, TN: Global Trance Formation Info LTD., 1995. (Caution: trauma survivors are advised NOT to contact the authors for help.)

Pease, Lisa, "James Jesus Angleton & the Kennedy Assassination," *Probe* magazine, July-August, 2000.

Pezdek, Kathy, "A Cognitive Analysis of the Role of Suggestibility in Explaining Memories for Abuse," *Journal of Aggression, Maltreatment and Trauma,* Vol. 4, 2001.

Rhodes, Richard, *Why They Kill: The Discoveries of a Maverick Criminologist*. New York: Vintage Books, 1999.

Rosenbaum, Ron, "The Last Secrets of Skull and Bones," *Esquire* magazine, September 1976.

Rosencrans, Bobbie, M.S.W., *The Last Secret: Daughters Sexually Abused By Mothers*. Brandon, VT: Safer Society Press, 1997.

Ross, Colin A., M.D., *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists*. Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications, Inc., 2000.

Ross, Colin A., M.D., *The Osiris Complex: Case-Studies in Multiple Personality Disorder*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press Inc., 1994.

Rutz, Carol, *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People*. Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing, 2001.

Salter, Anna C. Ph.D., *Predators: Pedophiles, Rapists, and Other Sex Offenders – Who They Are, How They Operate, and How We Can Protect Ourselves and Our Children.* New York, NY: Basic Books, 2003.

Sarson, Jeanne, RN, BScN, MEd, and MacDonald, RN, BN, MEd., "Acts of Torture." Website. http://www.ritualabusetorture.org.

Sarson, Jeanne, RN, BScN, MEd, and MacDonald, Linda, RN, BN, MEd., "The MO: The Modus Operandi of Pedophiles: Insights about Pedophiles from the Victim's Perspective." Website. http://www.ritualabusetorture.org.

Sarson, Jeanne, RN, BScN, MEd, and MacDonald, Linda, RN, BN, MEd., "Seeing Inside the Ritual Abuse-Torture Co-Culture." Website. http://www.ritualabusetorture.org.

Schoener, Helen C., editor, *Cue*. Reading, PA: Albright College Senior Class, 1956.

Schwartz, Mark F., ScD., "Sexual Compulsivity as Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder: Treatment Perspectives," *Psychiatric Annals*, Vol. 22, June 1992.

Shalev, Arieh Y., Ed., Yehuda, Rachel, Ed., and McFarlane, Alexander C., Ed., *International Handbook of Human Response to Trauma*. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2000.

"Shoah Notes: The Bible and the Holocaust, Handout #1." Website. http://www.uiowa.edu/~c032150/shoah1.pdf.

Spinhoven, Philip, Ph.D., Nijenhuis, Ellert R.S., and Van Dyck, Richard, "Can Experimental Memory Research Adequately Explain Memory for Trauma?" *Psychotherapy*, Vol. 36(3), Fall 1999.

Stoppler, Melissa C., M.D., "Cortisol: The 'Stress Hormone,' 2001." Website. http://stress.about.com/library/weekly/aa012901a.htm.

Sutphen, Dick. "The Battle for Your Mind: Persuasion and Brainwash ing Techniques Being Used On The Public Today." Website. http://www.serendipity.li/sutphen/brainwsh.html

Thomas, Gordon, *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*. New York: Bantam, 1989.

Viorst, Judith, *Necessary Losses*. New York, NY: Simon and Schuster, 1998.

Whitfield, Charles L., M.D., *Memory and Abuse: Remembering and Healing the Effects of Trauma*. Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications, Inc., 1995.

Wolff, Hans, "New Jersey and the Nazis," 8/98. Website. http://www.afrocubaweb.com/assata4.htm

Woodcock, Jeremy, "Threads from the Labyrinth: Therapy with Survivors of War and Political Oppression," *Journal of Family Therapy*, 2001, Vol. 23.

Recommended Reading

Adams, Jeanne, BS, *Drawn Swords: My Victory over Childhood Ritual Abuse*. Available through the Internet at http://www.mrlight.org or from Genesis Bookstore, 248 East 3900 South, Salt Lake City, Utah 84107.

Adams, Stephen B. and Butler, Orville R. *Manufacturing the Future: A History of Western Electric*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1999.

Bashir, Kai, *Mind Control Within the United States*. Kai Bashir, PO Box 30366, Cincinnati, OH 45230.

Blood, Linda, *The New Satanists*. New York, NY: Warner Books, 1994.

Blume, E. Sue, CSW, DCSW, "Sympathy for the Devil: 'False Memories,' the Media, and the Mind Controllers," *Treating Abuse Today*, Vol. 9, No. 3.

Chase, Truddi, *When Rabbit Howls*. New York, NY: Jove Books, 1990.

Constantine, Alex, *Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America*. Venice, CA: Feral House, 1997.

DeCamp, John W., *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*. Lincoln, NE: AWT, Inc., 1996.

Helmut, Lammer and Marion. *MILABS: Military Mind Control and Alien Abduction*. Hidden Mysteries Books. Available through TGS Services, Frankston, TX.

Herman, Judith Lewis, M.D., *Trauma and Recovery: The Aftermath of Violence – From Domestic Abuse to Political Terror*. New York, NY: Basic Books, 1992.

Hersha, Cheryl; Hersha, Lynn; Schwartz, Ted; and Griffis, Dale, Ph.D., *Secret Weapons: 2 Sisters' Terrifying True Story of Sex, Spies and Sabotage*. Far Hills, NJ: New Horizon Press, 2001.

Hoffman, Michael A., II, *They Were White and They Were Slaves: The Untold History of the Enslavement of Whites in Early America*. Boring, OR: CPA Book Publisher, 1992.

Hougan, Jim, *Spooks: The Haunting of America–The Private Use of Secret Agents*. New York: William Morrow and Co., 1978.

Lee, Martin A., *The Beast Awakens*. New York: Little, Brown, 1997.

Lewis, H. Spencer, Ph.D., F.R.C. *Rosicrucian Questions and Answers with Complete History of the Rosicrucian Order*. San Jose, CA: Rosicrucian Press.

Lorena, Jeanne Marie, Ed. and Levy, Paula, Ed. *Breaking Ritual Silence: An Anthology of Ritual Abuse Survivors' Stories.* Gardnerville, NV: Trout and Sons, 1998.

Mackenzie, Angus, *Secrets: The CIA's War At Home*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1999.

Matsakis, Aphrodite, Ph.D., *I Can't Get Over It: A Handbook for Trauma Survivors*. Oakland, CA: New Harbinger Publications, Inc., 1996.

McClendon, Pat, MSSW, CSW., "Dissociation: Dissociative/Posttraumatic Stress Symptomatology." Website. http://www.clinicalsocialwork.com/dissociation.html.

Newton, Michael, *Raising Hell: The Encyclopedia of Devil Worship and Satanic Crime*. New York: Morrow/Avon, 1993.

Noblitt, James Randall and Perskin, Pamela Sue. *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology, and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America*. Westport, CT: Praeger Publishers, 2000.

Oksana, Chrystine, *Safe Passage to Healing: A Guide for Survivors of Ritual Abuse*. New York: HarperCollins, 2001.

Ostrander, Sheila and Lynn, Schroeder, *Psychic Discoveries behind the Iron Curtain*. New York, NY: Bantam Books, 1970.

Quan, James, "A Consolidation of SRA and False Memory Data," November 1996. Website. http://home.att.net/~mcra/consldra.htm.

Raschke, Carl A., *Painted Black*. New York, NY: HarperPaperbacks, 1990.

Reeves, Claire R., C.C.D.C., *Childhood: It Should Not Hurt!* Ms. Reeves is the founder and president of MASA (Mothers Against Sexual Abuse). Website. http://www.childhooditshouldnothurt.com.

Reid, Gregory, Ph.D., *Orphans In The Storm: Male Survivors of Sexual & Ritual Abuse*. YouthFire, Box 370006, El Paso, TX 79937. Website. http://www.gregoryreid.com.

Russell, Dick, *The Man Who Knew Too Much*, New York: Carroll & Graf, 1992.

Ryder, Daniel, C.C.D.C., L.S.W., *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse: Recognizing and Recovering from the Hidden Trauma*. Minneapolis, MN: CompCare Publishers, 1992.

Ryder, Daniel, *Cover-Up of the Century: Satanic Ritual Crime & World Conspiracy.* Noblesville, IN: Ryder Publishing, 1996.

Simpson, Christopher, *Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War*. New York, NY: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1988.

Smith, Margaret, *Ritual Abuse: What It Is, Why it Happens, How to Help*. New York, NY: Harper Collins, 1993.

Vachss, Alice, *Sex Crimes: Ten Years on the Front Lines Prosecuting Rapists and Confronting Their Collaborators*. New York, NY: Random House, 1993.

Supportive Organizations for Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Survivors

---

ACHES-MC (Advocacy Committee for Human Experimentation Survivors – Mind Control)

Website: http://www.aches-mc.org
US Contact, Research & Archives:
Patty Rehn
Fax # (541) 388-5068
E-mail: aches@bendnet.com
Canada Contact, Research:
Lynne Moss-Sharman
230 Miles St. E #3
Thunder Bay, ONT
P7C1J6 Canada
(807) 622-5407
E-mail: lsharman@shaw.ca
Prison Contact:
Vern Mulka
PO Box 5081
Biddeford MA 04007
USA
(207) 282-7225
E-mail: jeanne@lamere.net

Mr. Light & Associates, Inc.

Website: http://www.mrlight.org
Contact: Jeanne Adams
PO Box 12927
Ogden UT 84412-2927
USA
E-mail: mrlight@konnections.net

PARC-VRAMC

Website: http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com
Contact: Kathleen Sullivan
PARC-VRAMC, Inc.
PMB 129, 5251 Hwy. 153
Hixson TN 37343
USA
(Please note: PARC-VRAMC does not provide individualized support to survivors.)

Persons Against Ritual Abuse-Torture (RAT) and Other Acts of Non-Political Torture

Website: http://www.ritualabusetorture.org
Contact:
Jeanne Sarson, RN, BScN, MEd
Linda MacDonald, RN, BN MEd
361 Prince St.
Truro Nova Scotia
Canada B2N 1E4
(902) 895-2255
E-mail: flight@ns.sympatico.ca

SMART (Stop Mind Control and Ritual Abuse Today)

Website: http://members.aol.com/SMARTNEWS/index2.html
Contact: Neil Brick
SMART
PO Box 1295
Easthampton MA 01027-1295
USA
E-mail: SMARTNEWS@aol.com

Survivorship

Website: http://www.survivorship.org
Survivorship
PMB 139, 3181 Mission St.
San Francisco CA 94110
USA
E-mail: info@survivorship.org

Information about other supportive organizations and resources can be found by reviewing these organizations' websites and literature.

About the Author

Kathleen Sullivan lives near Chattanooga, Tennessee with her husband, Bill. She is the founder and president of a grassroots advocacy organization, PARC-VRAMC (pronounced "park") – Positive Activism, Remembrance and Commemoration for Survivors of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control. For more information, see http://parc-vramc.tierranet.com.

A master gardener and rock collector, Kathleen enjoys "playing in the dirt." She's currently helping to develop PARC-VRAMC's Chattanooga Living Memorial Garden. A Social Work student at the University of Tennessee, she is also the author of *MK*, a novel about mind control that is scheduled for publication in 2004. You can visit her personal website at http://www.kathleen-sullivan.com.

UNDER GROUND

Bases and Tunnels

What is the government trying to hide?

Richard Sauder, Ph.D.

There are more underground bases than you think, and there's more going on than just planning to keep the President alive in a nuclear war. Working from public documents and corporate records, this book digs below the surface of the government's super-secret underground!

Adventures Unlimited Press $15.95

50 Pages of Photos and Illustrations!
PLUS ADDITIONAL CHAPTERS ON UFO-LIKE TECHNOLOGY

"Dr. Sauder has done some superb research and has revealed something that needs to be addressed by the people at once. This is a significant book -- maybe vitally so -- and must be read by every concerned citizen."

-- WHITLEY STRIEBER, author of *Communion* and *Breakthrough*

UNDER GROUND

Bases and Tunnels

What is the government trying to hide?

Richard Sauder, Ph.D.

There are more underground bases than you think, and there's more going on than just planning to keep the President alive in a nuclear war. Working from public documents and corporate records, this book digs below the surface of the government's super-secret underground!

50 Pages of Photos and Illustrations!
PLUS ADDITIONAL CHAPTERS ON UFO-LIKE TECHNOLOGY

Adventures Unlimited Press $15.95

"Dr. Sauder has done some superb research and has revealed something that needs to be addressed by the people at once. This is a significant book -- maybe vitally so -- and must be read by every concerned citizen."

-- WHITLEY STRIEBER, author of *Communion* and *Breakthrough*

UNDERGROUND BASES & TUNNELS

What is the Government Trying to Hide?

by
Richard Sauder, PhD

Other books from Adventures Unlimited Press

The Mystery of the Olmecs
Technology of the Gods
Pirates & the Lost Templar Fleet
Lost Continents & the Hollow Earth
Lost Cities & Ancient Mysteries of the Southwest
Lost Cities of China, Central Asia & India
Lost Ciies & Ancient Mysteries of Africa & Arablia
Lost Ciies & Ancient Mysteries of South America
Lost Ciies of Ancient Lemuria & the Pacific
Lost Ciies of North and Central America
Lost Cities of Atlantis, Ancient Europe & the Mediterranean
Atlantis & the Power System of the Gods
Underwater Bases and Tunnels
Kundalinii Tales

UNDERGROUND BASES & TUNNELS

by
Richard Sauder, PhD

Underground Bases and Tunnels

ISBN 978-1-939149-26-8

Copyright 1995, 2014
by Richard Sauder, PhD

All Rights Reserved.

Published by Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

UNDERGROUND BASES & TUNNELS

What is the Government Trying to Hide?

UNDERGROUND BASES & TUNNELS

Table of Contents

Foreword: A Cautionary Note To UFO Buffs

1. Oh Yes, They're Real!
2. The Military Underground: Air Force, Army and Navy
3. The Ultimate War Rooms: Fighting the Big One From Deep Underground
4. More Underground Facilities: Military, Government, Nuclear and Business
5. The Mother of All Underground Tunnels?
6. Tunnelling Machines: The Conventional Types and the Science Fiction "Black" Models
7. Nuclear Testing, the EPA, Abductions, Animal Mutilations (and Aliens?)
8. Abductions, Needles and Implants: A Fresh Approach
9. Is the U.S. Military Involved in "Alien" Cattle Mutilations?

Afterword: Last Words On Underground Bases, Tunnels and Exotic Tunneling Machines

Illustrations
Footnotes
Index

THE NEW SCIENCE SERIES: • MAN-MADE UFOS: 1944—1994, 50 Years of Suppression • THE FREE ENERGY DEVICE HANDBOOK

- THE FANTASTIC INVENTIONS OF NIKOLA TESLA
- THE ANTI-GRAVITY HANDBOOK
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE WORLD GRID
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE UNIFIED FIELD
- VIMANA AIRCRAFT OF ANCIENT INDIA & ATLANTIS

THE LOST CITIES SERIES:

- LOST CITIES OF ATLANTIS, ANCIENT EUROPE & THE MEDITERRANEAN
- LOST CITIES OF NORTH & CENTRAL AMERICA • LOST CITIES & ANCIENT MYSTERIES OF SOUTH AMERICA • LOST CITIES OF ANCIENT LEMURIA & THE PACIFIC
- LOST CITIES & ANCIENT MYSTERIES OF AFRICA & ARABIA • LOST CITIES OF CHINA, CENTRAL ASIA & INDIA

THE MYSTIC TRAVELLER SERIES:

- IN SECRET TIBET by Theodore Illion (1937) • DARKNESS OVER TIBET by Theodore Illion (1938) • IN SECRET MONGOLIA by Henning Haslund (1934) • MEN AND GODS IN MONGOLIA by Henning Haslund (1935) • DANGER MY ALLY by Michell-Hedges

Foreword

A CAUTIONARY NOTE TO UFO BUFFS

Persistent rumors of secret underground bases and deep underground tunnel systems have swirled through the field of UFOlogy for some years now.

These underground installations are variously said to be constructed, staffed and operated by covert human agencies (either part of the military-industrial complex or various federal government agencies), or by extraterrestrial or alien beings (the so-called “Little Greys” often mentioned in the UFO literature), or by both covert human agencies *and* aliens working together in secret, underground installations.

I will say at the outset that my research has not revealed whether or not Little Greys even *exist*, much less whether or not they are living and working in underground installations. Perhaps the Little Greys really do exist; perhaps they do not. But since I cannot definitively answer the question one way or the other, I will not deal with it to any great degree in this report. Neither will I discuss reported cases where abductees have been taken into purported underground installations, where they have allegedly seen and experienced many strange things, including bizarre medical procedures and biological engineering experiments. Though I have both heard and read such stories I cannot testify as to the veracity of these reports, so I will not concentrate on them here. These anecdotal accounts are interesting, however, and I am keeping an open mind about them.

What I do know for certain is that there *are* many underground installations here in the United States.

I also know that the military-industrial complex and various federal government agencies have constructed, and are working in, many of these installations.

I also know that throughout virtually the entire post-WW II period (and perhaps before) the United States government has been actively planning and constructing underground facilities and installations, some of which are very deep underground, quite sophisticated and capable of accomodating large numbers of people. I have documented quite a number of these facilities and will describe them, to the extent that I am able, in this book. I have also been told of many other underground facilities that I am presently not able to document. For that reason, most of them will not be discussed here.

I have been able to find *considerably less* information about the much-rumored tunnel system said, by some reports, to crisscross the United States. This does not mean that it does not exist. It may simply be that its deep underground location (if it really exists) gives it a natural cover that is hard to break. Or maybe it really does not exist! I don’t know for sure one way or the other. Whatever the case, I will present what information I have uncovered about tunneling technology and tunnel systems – the kind of information that may well form the popular basis for the rumored underground tunnel system.

My approach to the tunneling and tunnel network issue is the same as to the underground base question: I will present for my readers reports, information and facts that I have discovered and leave them to draw their own conclusions. I trust that most of what follows will be as new and intriguing for others to read as it was for me to discover.

I understand that some readers may object to the publication of information about military facilities. However, it is my feeling that the aims and ideals of representative democracy are poorly served by secrecy in government, especially in the policies of the armed services.

History teaches us that when a country has an exceptionally powerful military, and when that military carries out secret policies and agendas like the U.S. military does (think of the illegal Iran-Contra affair, of super-secret nuclear bomb testing in Nevada, of the astronomical amounts of money given to the Pentagon every year for so-called “black projects”), then there is an ever present danger of that military taking control of the government. That control could be taken quickly – or gradually. Noisily or quietly. But dictatorships are born when power is usurped by the military. God forbid that a military dictatorship should ever march under the stars and stripes of the

United States of America. Protection against that ever happening begins with the exercise of our First Amendment right to speak freely.

So, in that spirit, and in the hope that some of what follows will help peel away the cover of excessive secrecy that shields too much of what the Pentagon does from public scrutiny, I offer solid documentation of underground military installations, as well as official plans and documents pertaining to the construction, operation and planning for such installations.

I would like to briefly relate an unpleasant incident involving the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers. In December 1992, while researching this book, I filed a Freedom of Information Act Request with the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers. My request sought information about the Corps' involvement in underground base and tunnel construction and maintenance. As it happens, I was at that time a PhD candidate in political science working on my doctoral dissertation. After getting no substantive response to my request, I called the Pentagon and was referred to the Army Corps' Freedom of Information Office. I subsequently called that office and complained about the Corps' noncompliance with my request. A few days later an attorney for the Army Corps of Engineers called my dissertation advisor to complain about me. He informed my dissertation advisor that if I wanted to get bureaucratic that he would show me what "bureaucratic" *was*!

Subsequently I received a letter from the Corps denying my request for a fee waiver and stating that I would have to pay all fees related to searching for and providing documentation on their subterranean construction and maintenance activities. Needless to say, this could easily have run to thousands of dollars.

As a result, that information is not in this report. However, I still found plenty of other information relating to the U.S. Army Corps' underground construction activities and it is all discussed in detail in the pages that follow. So the Army's attempt at suppressing my First Amendment rights was not entirely successful. The free press lives!

Chapters 7 and 9 of this book were first published in *UFO Magazine*, edited by Vicki Cooper.

Readers are welcome to forward information to me concerning underground installations or tunnels of any sort. The more specific and detailed the information is, the better. Clear photographs, with accompanying details about when and exactly where they were taken, as well as what they depict, are also welcome. Sending photographs or information to me constitutes permission for future publication or use by me, at my discretion, without further obligation or compensation to the sender. Please request anonymity if you want it. My address is:

Richard Sauder
c/o Adventures Unlimited
Box 74
Kempton, IL 60946 USA

Now, let’s go underground – and see what’s there!

RICHARD SAUDER, Ph.D.
January 1995

Chapter One

OH YES, THEY'RE REAL!

Do secret, underground government installations exist? The answer is absolutely, positively – yes. *They are real.*

In 1987, Lloyd A. Duscha, the Deputy Director of Engineering and Construction for the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, gave a speech entitled "Underground Facilities for Defense – Experience and Lessons." In the first paragraph of his talk he referred to the underground construction theme of the conference at which he was speaking and then stated: "I must deviate a little because several of the most interesting facilities that have been designed and constructed by the Corps are classified." Mr. Duscha subsequently launched into a discussion of the Corps' involvement, back in the 1960s, in the construction of the large NORAD underground base beneath Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado (See Chapter 3 for a more detailed discussion of the NORAD installation). And then he said: *"As stated earlier, there are other projects of similar scope, which I cannot identify, but which included multiple chambers up to 50 feet wide and 100 feet high using the same excavation procedures mentioned for the NORAD facility."*[1]

I submit that you will probably not find a more honest admission anywhere by a military officer that the Pentagon has, in fact, constructed secret underground installations.

Given such an explicit admission, within the context of the paper trail that the military has left over the last 35 years (set out in this book in considerable detail), and the stories that I have heard from other individuals, I consider it an absolute certainty that the military has constructed secret underground facilities in the United States, above and beyond the approximately one dozen "known" underground facilities listed elsewhere in this book.

Just a few of the many places where these underground facilities are alleged to be are: Ft. Belvoir, Virginia (home of the Army Corps of

Engineers); West Point, New York (site of the Army’s officer training academy); Twentynine Palms Marine Corps Base, in southern California; Groom Lake or Area S-4, on or near Nellis Air Force Base, in southern Nevada; White Sands Army Missile Range, New Mexico; under Table Mountain, just north of Boulder, Colorado; under Mount Blackmore in southwestern Montana and near Pipestone Pass, just south of Butte, Montana. I would be glad to hear from individuals with information about any of these alleged facilities.

But not all underground installations are secret military projects. Many underground tunnels and facilities have been built that are not covert in any way. There are numerous highway and railroad tunnels, and many major cities have extensive subway systems. There are also miles of utilities, such as water lines and sewer tunnels, with accompanying pumping stations.

Some of the most complex, non-covert underground facilities that have been built are for hydroelectric powerhouses. The rooms and halls in these kinds of plants can be hundreds of feet below the surface and quite huge in some cases. For example, the powerhouse at Portage Mountain Dam in British Columbia, Canada is 890 ft. long, 66.5 ft. wide and 152.5 ft. from top to bottom. Of special note is the method used to deliver concrete to the powerhouse chamber during construction. An 8-in diameter pipe was run 400 ft. from the ground surface down to the construction area, and the concrete was delivered through the pipe.[2]

But if such extraordinary human ingenuity and effort can bring into being the tunnels through which we freely drive our cars, and the power stations which deliver electrical power to our homes, it requires no great stretch of imagination to suppose that installations of similar, or even greater, size, complexity and depth could have been built underground, perhaps covertly, by agencies of the United States government and huge corporations. As this book reveals, our government – and the contractors with which it works – has the personnel, technical know-how, machinery and money to plan and complete mammoth underground construction projects.

Where are the bases?

In the pages that follow I will list, one by one, as many of the known underground facilities in the United States and Canada that are operated or maintained by United States government agencies and major corporations as I can presently document, reporting as much information about each one as possible. For some, I can report only that they exist; for others, I can say a good deal more. As it happens, there are many similar deep underground facilities in other countries. Sweden, Switzerland, France, Saudi Arabia, Israel and Russia are known to have sophisticated underground installations – and, presumably, yet other countries have them as well. In this book I will restrict my discussion only to North American facilities.

So there is no question that secret underground bases exist. *But how do they get there?* How is it possible to plan, build, and operate them, all in secrecy? As it happens, it is easier than the average person might suspect.

In 1985 the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers published a report entitled *Literature Survey of Underground Construction Methods for Application to Hardened Facilities.* The report concluded that, "Since adequate technology is available to construct hardened underground facilities under virtually any ground conditions, the main constraint in construction projects remains economic viability rather than technical feasibility." In other words, with enough money, underground facilities can be built almost anywhere. Given the huge buildup in military budgets under the administrations of Ronald Reagan and George Bush one cannot help but think that "economic viability" – money – may not have been a drawback at all, especially for projects done beginning in the early 1980s.

In very general terms the Army Corps report discusses a variety of types of underground facilities and construction techniques. Two of the types of underground facilities it discusses are (1) deep shaft structures and (2) tunneled structures in mountainsides.

Inspect Illustration 1.[3] Notice that tractor trailer trucks are depicted as entering both kinds of structures. In the mountainside facility the truck appears to drive in through a tunnel. In the deep shaft structure truck entry appears to be via an access building and some kind of vertical hoist or elevator that would seem to be implicit in the layout of the facility. The deep shaft structure is also shown with an accompanying ventilation shaft to the surface, which has its topside terminus in a "protective enclosure."

How To Hide An Underground Base

To illustrate just how well hidden such underground facilities – and the entrances that give access to them – can be, consider the examples of two actual, underground installations. One of them is in England, the other in Sweden. First, the Swedish installation:

> In central Sweden there is an underground factory excavated deep into a granite mountain which employs nearly 3,000 workers and manufactures diesel and gasoline engines, agricultural machinery, and various machine tools. As you approach this installation, the only man-made structure apparent to the unaccustomed eye is an innocent looking Swedish farm house, located at the foot of a hill. However, when the hinged walls of this house swing open, much like large garage doors, there is an opening of sufficient size to accomodate large trucks.[4]

Consider that these words were written in 1949, during the immediate post-war period. If in the 1940s the Swedes could disguise the entrance to a major, underground, industrial facility as an ordinary farm house, what might the Pentagon be capable of today? Clearly, the possibilities are extensive.

Now for the English example. Until 1989 the War Headquarters of the British Army's UK Land Forces Command was situated in an underground bunker 50 ft. below a field in Sopley, Hampshire. When it was active the sign in front of the installation identified the place as a "training area" for the "No. 2 Signals Brigade." (This is more than a little reminiscent of the two U.S. Army "Warrenton Training Center" stations mentioned later.) The English bunker has now been replaced by a newer facility elsewhere, but the interesting thing about the now abandoned Sopley facilities is how nondescript the entrance is.

> On the surface, only a guardhouse and two ventilator shafts now stand in an empty, but fenced-off field … A shaft concealed at the back of the innocuous looking guardhouse gives access to a stairwell and underground tunnel – at the end of which is a two-story bunker with about 50 rooms.[5]

I strongly suspect that the designers here in the United States have been at least as ingenious as their counterparts in Europe in disguising and concealing entrances to underground installations. Virtually any house anywhere, or any building, large or small, is capable of concealing an entrance to an underground facility. This is not the same, of course, as saying that every house and building that one sees *is*, in reality, a disguised underground base entrance. Still, as the above examples show, *some* houses and buildings certainly *can be* disguised entrances for such facilities. Since they don't have signs on them advertising the fact, the hard part is figuring out *which* ones they are. To say that this is not easy is an understatement.

Starting Construction: One Case History

So underground bases do exist and they can be hidden. But how do underground construction projects get underway in the first place, without being noticed?

Consider Kennesaw Mountain, just outside of Marietta, Georgia, in the late 1950s, and Green Mountain, on the outskirts of Huntsville, Alabama.

Two articles in 1957 reported that the Army was planning to build a huge underground rocket factory inside Green Mountain. The project was to have been undertaken jointly by the American Machine and Foundry Company, the Redstone Arsenal and the Army Ballistic Missile Agency. In addition to the missile plant, the facility was also slated to have a "sort of subterranean 'junior Pentagon' where elaborate headquarters would be installed to direct the defense of the southern U.S. from enemy attack." A local group bought 200 acres along the Tennessee River for docks from which a company called Chemstone would ship the limestone excavated during construction to market.[6] This same group, comprised of members of the Huntsville Industrial Expansion Committee, also engaged in a nearly two-year "series of obscure real estate transactions" in which they purchased, "in their own names or through proxies, various parcels of land scattered about … Green Mountain"[7] for the construction of the underground, military-industrial facility.

I don't know if this base was ever actually built (if you do, please contact me). But whether or not it actually moved to the construction phase is beside the point here. It is fascinating enough to see how a site is selected, bought and prepared for construction.

The preparation and preliminary work proceeded in a most interesting fashion, in that, even though it was to be a combination underground "junior Pentagon" and U.S. Army missile factory, the land for it was actually purchased not by the Department of Defense, but by private citizens, acting on their own or as proxies for others. The plan for the facility is also intriguing in that, as of 1957, it clearly showed the kind of military-private industry cooperation that has today become commonplace. In this case, it involved the U.S. Army and the American Machine & Foundry Co.

So already in 1957 the Pentagon – and local business interests – showed themselves capable of coming together to plan the construction of a major underground military facility, to be built inside of Green Mountain, in the southern Appalachians, just outside of Huntsville, Aalabama. That nexus of interests was comprised of (a) big business; (b) military agencies; and (c) private individuals who were in on the deal (and who very likely benefitted from insider speculation in the local real estate market). Underground base researchers would do well to look for this nexus of interests and pattern of activity elsewhere, as similar groups are likely to have played key roles in planning and constructing underground facilities in other places.

Here is the way I see the actual construction scenario playing out: military agencies desire to construct underground facilities as secretly as possible. The Army Corps of Engineers can supervise the actual construction and draw up the plans, but special expertise and equipment will often need to be supplied by private industry. And specific or highly technical industrial operations will likely need to be conducted by private companies as well. Although the Pentagon and other federal agencies (notably the U.S. Forest Service, National Park Service, Bureau of Indian Affairs, and the Bureau of Land Management) control huge tracts of land in the West, in other parts of the country most of the land is owned by private citizens. So if a military agency wishes to secretly construct a base on a piece of land that it does not own, in order to avoid drawing attention to its plans, it might covertly employ a sympathetic group of private citizens or businessmen to handle the real estate transaction(s) for it. In this way, the military gets its land, but without unwanted publicity and fanfare.

The *Air Force Times* announced in 1959 that the Air Force was on the verge of agreeing with the U.S. Department of the Interior to place an underground SAGE radar facility inside of Kennesaw Mountain (the mountain was, and is, a National Park owned by the Interior Department), on the outskirts of Marietta, Georgia. Construction was projected to last two years and to cost about $15 million (in 1959 dollars). The facility was to be a "semi-automatic Air Defense Center" for the surrounding 13 state region.[8] I do not know if this installation was ever built. The mountain is only a few miles from Dobbins Air Force Base, so it would have been possible to drive a tunnel the short distance from Dobbins AFB and excavate the inside of the mountain without disturbing the surface of the national park in the slightest. All of the heavy machinery required to build the facility could have entered and exited the underground construction site via Dobbins AFB.

Whether this was in fact done I do not know. But even if neither the Kennesaw Mountain nor the previously mentioned Green Mountain underground facilities were ever constructed the mere fact that plans to do so were announced demonstrates that the Pentagon, as of the late 1950s, was actively planning for underground bases in the southern Appalachian region. Not only that, but the plans were in an advanced stage of preparation. (Turn to Illustration 2 to see how military planners in the late 1950's were visualizing their underground bases.)

So even if these two particular facilities were not built (and I do not know one way or the other) my research leads me to believe it is likely that others were built in northern Alabama and Georgia, and in the Carolinas, and perhaps in Tennessee as well.

Of course, major underground projects would probably get underway in much the same way in any other state or region of the country.

Supplying Power to Underground Military Facilities

A primary consideration in the construction of deep-underground facilities is obtaining sufficient power for operation once the installation is built and functioning. By the early 1960s the U.S. military had decided that "…either of two prime power plant systems would provide suitable sources of electrical power for hardened, underground Command Centers. These two are the diesel power plant and the nuclear power plant."[9] While it may seem possible to plug into the commercial network that services most of the country for the electrical power needs of underground facilities, a 1963 Army report concluded that the power requirements of these installations can be sufficiently unique, due to "stringent voltage and frequency requirements which may be imposed by special electronic equipment," and due to the necessity of power self-sufficiency under emergency conditions, "that it is far more satisfactory, and in many cases more economical, to provide a generating plant within the installation itself to serve all the load and to eliminate any connection to a commercial power source."

The 1963 Army report concluded that "…nuclear power plants appear to be advantageous for use in underground installations." And it effectively endorsed their use in underground military installations: "…(N)uclear power is the only field tested, non-air-breathing system with sufficient electrical generating capacity to support an underground installation of the size and type envisioned." The report then proceeded to discuss the pros and cons of various power plants, most of them conventional, before concluding with a list of the various nuclear power plants already built, under construction or being designed for military use.[10] However, the report unfortunately did not specify for what size and type underground installation these power plants were intended, or where the facilities may be located. But the very existence of an Army Corps of Engineers manual entitled *Utilization of Nuclear Power Plants in Underground Installations* means it is entirely possible that underground military facilities may be powered by self-contained nuclear power plants.

In the case of diesel power plants, during emergency "button-up" periods when the installation would be sealed from the outside world, there would be a so-called "closed-cycle" system in operation. This system would utilize sodium hydroxide for disposal of carbon dioxide in the exhaust produced by the diesel engines; liquid oxygen stored in cryogenic tanks for combustion of the diesel fuel; and fuel oil to power the diesel engines, stored in an underground depot, and replenished as needed from tanks on the surface.[11]

Other proposals that have been advanced to generate independent power economically are detailed in Chapter 5.

The secret underground bases exist; they can be well hidden; and they can be independently powered.

In the next chapter I take the reader on a guided tour of underground bases throughout the United States. No doubt the locations of some of these bases will be a surprise to many!

Chapter Two

THE MILITARY UNDERGROUND: AIR FORCE, ARMY AND NAVY

It is important, first of all, to realize that the United States military has been heavily involved in underground construction for decades. I will set out for you as many of the locations where the various military agencies have actually constructed major underground facilities as I can presently document. I have been told of, and have read of, many others. While I think it highly probable that at least some of these other secret installations may exist I will not discuss most of them in this report, because I cannot presently document them.

I will also discuss at some length planning documents generated by various military agencies pertaining to construction and operation of underground bases and tunnel systems. These planning documents are real. They were written over a 25 year period beginning in the late 1950s and continuing up to the mid-1980s. The reader will have to be the judge of whether any of the underground facilities discussed in the planning reports have been constructed. I personally have not been in any underground military facilities and am not privy to classified information; however my hunch is that some of the facilities mentioned in these reports and studies probably *were* built.

The Air Force and Project RAND

One of the most prominent names in the early history of U.S. government planning for underground bases is Project RAND. The RAND Corporation became operational in November 1948. It actually grew out of U.S. Air Force Project RAND, which was established in 1946 to carry out long-range research projects of interest to the Air Force. The mission of the RAND Corporation was to work on cutting edge problems in the realms of engineering, economics, mathematics, physics and social science.

In the late 1950s, one of the problems that the RAND Corporation was working on was the question of underground base construction for the United States military. Accordingly, Air Force Project RAND and The RAND Corporation held a symposium on this topic, on 24-26 March 1959, to which they invited a wide variety of technical experts from the public and the private sector. According to the chairman, the purpose of the symposium was to discuss “the problems of protecting military installations located deep underground or under mountains” in the event of nuclear war.

He went on to say that for the two years previous (since 1957) The RAND Corporation had been “actively investigating the need for a small number of superhard deep underground centers” that could withstand the fury of a massive nuclear attack.[1] The two-volume report itself is made up of dozens of papers about tunneling, underground excavation, geology, engineering technology and the like. Most of the papers are quite general.

The major importance of this RAND Corporation sysposium, however, is that it reveals that already in the 1950s the U.S. government was actively planning for the construction of underground bases and installations. (In fact, as I shall show later, already in the 1950s the United States government had constructed a number of secret, deep underground installations.)

Also noteworthy is the way in which the groundwork for the move underground was prepared: The RAND Corporation called on experts from military and nonmilitary government agencies, from the corporate world and from major universities. Chairmen for the individual sessions were drawn from Princeton University; RAND Corporation; Colorado School of Mines; Army Corps of Engineers; University of Illinois; National Bureau of Standards; Ballistic Research Laboratories; Brown University; and an assortment of independent consultants and private firms. This pattern of collaboration on underground construction projects between university researchers and university engineering schools, private sector industry and the military and other government agencies is one that has continued right up through the 1980s.

In 1960 the RAND Corporation published a study under contract to the Air Force in which twelve specific locations across the country were selected as *possible* sites for deep underground installations. In this RAND Corporation report, all installations are assumed to be more than 1,000 ft. underground.[2]

One of these sites, on the Keweenaw Peninsula near Calumet, Michigan, was selected for its location under places where previous hard rock mining had occurred. The theory expressed in the report was that in the event of a nuclear attack, seismic waves from the detonation of nuclear weapons on the surface would be attenuated and deflected by the previously excavated shafts, tunnels, drifts, rooms and chambers of the copper mine workings, thereby shielding the underground installation from the full brunt of a nuclear explosion. In the cases where such mine workings did not already exist, so-called "umbrellas" could be excavated above the installation. These are open spaces in the rock that would serve the same purpose of protection as mine workings.[3]

Another site where a facility was proposed was under an abandoned iron mine near Cornwall, Pennsylvania.[4] Other sites proposed for deep underground military installations were Mohave and Coconino Counties, Arizona, under the Grand Wash and Vermilion Cliffs; a limestone mine near Barberton, Ohio, about 8 miles from Akron; The Book Cliffs near Rifle, Colorado, where the federal government already has excavated an oil shale experimental mine; the area near Morgantown, West Virgina; the area of McConnelsville, Ohio, between the towns of Marietta and Zanesville; the northwest corner of Logan County, Illinois, about 25 miles south of Peoria; an indeterminate location in southwestern Minnesota; the thick diatomite strata of Santa Barbara County, California; and lastly, and perhaps most interestingly, under the glacial ice and rock of the Kenai Peninsula in southern Alaska. In the last two cases, it was felt that the chalk-like diatomite and the glacial ice would help absorb the considerable force of a nuclear blast and thereby afford a greater measure of protection to the deeply buried facility.[5]

While I do not know if the Air Force has constructed underground installations at the 12 locations specified in the RAND report, there is no question that the Air Force *does* have underground installations that *can* be documented. One such facility, little known, is in operation near Albuquerque, New Mexico. The site is referred to as the Kirtland Munitions Storage Complex by the Air Force, which for years would not comment on what was there, though speculation was rampant that the complex was a nuclear weapons storage area.

In 1949 the Air Force dug into one of the ridges in the foothills of the Manzano mountains near Albuquerque and began to fill it with tunnels and caverns.

One of the miners who helped excavate the complex personally told me of blasting out large chambers underground, 40 ft. wide, 30 ft. high, and 100 ft. long. Security during construction was so tight that as soon as his crew completed a tunnel or chamber they were pulled out and sent away to excavate another portion of the mountain. This was compartmentalization of the most literal kind, intended to ensure that not even the miners who built this underground base would be familiar with its complete layout.

The miner further told me that this facility contains a covert, subterranean, nuclear weapons assembly plant. Another man I have spoken with who has been inside the facility told me that it seemed to him that the mountain contained miles of tunnels. This second man also said that there was a secret nuclear weapons assembly plant inside the mountain (See Illustration 3).

Security at the facility, which is clearly visible a couple of miles to the south of I-40 on the eastern outskirts of Albuquerque, is *extremely* tight. The 3,000 acre base, actually a separate base within the Kirtland AFB/Sandia National Laboratories complex, is ringed by a 9.5 mile concentric band of four, tall, chain-link security fences, the third of which carries a lethal electrical charge, and the fourth of which is topped by coils of razor-sharp concertina wire.[6] Entrance to the facility is via secure blast doors set into the mountain. Until recent years, armed police in jeeps patrolled the perimeter around the clock.

In 1989 the Air Force began construction of a second underground facility within sight of the Manzano Base. The new facility, completed in June of 1992, is also on land controlled by Kirtland Air Force Base. 95% of the new, 285,000 sq ft. bunker is below ground.

I was told by one of the Marine guards at the new facility that in addition to more prosaic security measures such as magnetically coded ID cards there are also devices that scan the palm print and retina of the eyes of each person seeking entry. But he would tell me no more about the facility than that.

According to the Air Force, whatever used to be in the Manzano complex has now been transferred to the new underground bunker. However, this sheds little light on what was transferred to the new bunker since Air Force officials have never in the first place discussed what used to be in the Manzano complex. And although the Air Force may have announced that it has vacated the mountain, it is hardly empty. A recent report indicates that the Department of Energy (DOE) now occupies 50% of the Manzano bunker complex. But like the Air Force before it, the DOE is not commenting either about what it is doing in the Manzano base. Nuclear arms experts speculate that nuclear weapons are being stored in both the new bunker and the old Manzano base.[7] And they may well be right.

On the other hand, even supposing that nuclear weapons are in either or both of these underground bunkers, it is still entirely possible that something more than weapons storage is happening below the surface at Kirtland. Indeed, if my two sources are correct there was in the past, and still may be, a secret nuclear weapons assembly plant underground, beneath the foothills at Kirtland Air Force Base.

Knowing from published newspaper accounts in the local *Albuquerque Journal* that the Department of Energy (DOE) had moved into 50% of the large underground facility on Kirtland Air Force Base, I filed a Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) request with the DOE's Washington, DC office. I asked for information about the underground facility at Kirtland. I also asked for information about other underground facilities rumored to be operated by the DOE at Los Alamos, New Mexico; the huge Pantex nuclear weapons factory near Amarillo, Texas; the Rocky Flats nuclear facility in Colorado; and an unusual electronics facility called "ICE STATION OTTO," located in a very rural area a few miles north of Moriarty, New Mexico on Highway 41.

My request was sent to the DOE's Albuquerque office at Sandia/Kirtland. (Sandia National Laboratories, run for decades for the Department of Energy by AT&T, are now administered by Martin Marietta. Sandia Labs are located on Kirtland Air Force Base.) In their initial response to me, DOE denied that they have any records of underground facilities at any of these sites. Or, in DOE jargon, "no responsive records to your request were located."

Well, that's an interesting response, because the local newspaper has reported actual underground facilities at Kirtland AFB that are fully 50% occupied by the DOE. Once again, a government agency has refused under the Freedom of Information Act even to release information that is readily available in the public domain.

I have been told that there *are* underground facilities and tunnels at Los Alamos National Labs as well. But the DOE response to my request said that there were *none*. When I received this response I called up the appropriate DOE personnel and informed them that the FOIA office at Los Alamos was not forthcoming. In reaction to my phone call the DOE again queried the Los Alamos FOIA office. Within a couple of days the DOE at Los Alamos provided a badly blurred photostatic copy of an article by Earl Zimmerman entitled "LASL'S Unusual Underground Lab," which describes an underground laboratory built in the late 1940s (See Illustration 4 for a photograph taken from inside this mysterious facility).[8] But the DOE included no information as to when, or in what magazine or journal the article appeared. At my request the Sandia office again called the Los Alamos DOE office for more information and was told they did not know the facts of publication of the article and that they had no other information about this underground facility.

Hmm.

Isn't it interesting that Los Alamos' first search found no records responsive to my request, but the second search did? As best as I can make out from the barely legible text in the photostat of the article about the LASL, the facility was constructed in 1948-49 by the huge fabrication company of Brown & Root, Inc., of Houston, Texas. The main tunnel was designed by a company called Black and Veatch, of Kansas City, Missouri. It was bored into the cliffside of Los Alamos Canyon, at a place called TA-ll or perhaps TA-41 (owing to the poor quality of the xerox the numbers are indistinct). Opening off of the main tunnel, which was quite large and could accomodate a large truck for nearly 250 feet of its length was a thick vault door, behind which was a high security room, containing five more, thick, vault doors containing multiple combination locks, of the sort that banks have for their vaults. Behind each of these doors was a walk-in vault. The whole complex was "lined with reinforced concrete, equipped with three sources of electric light and power, modern plumbing, forced ventilation and air conditioning." The climate control called for a "constant humidity of about 50 percent and a temperature that remained between 40° and 60°." A spur tunnel led to another room that contained an emergency diesel generator, to supply power in the event that outside sources were cut off. In an emergency batteries could also provide lighting. The complex was located beneath the Noncommisssioned Officers Club.

The complex was reportedly originally built to store nuclear materials, and later converted to a fall-out shelter, designated as Shelter 41-004 (here again the numbers are indistinct). In an emergency it contained supplies to take care of 219 people for two weeks. According to the article, construction details of the 6,000 sq ft. underground facility were declassified in 1959.

Interestingly, the article says that its vaults are "still used as vaults and security is just as strict as ever." And the article alludes to the facility's use as a "pure physics" laboratory. The article also mentions that the complex was associated with something called "W Division."

In subsequent communications with the DOE I received information indicating that this facility was in active use as recently as the mid-1980s.

The existence of this facility raises many questions. The most logical is: are there other tunnels and other high security suites of vaults and rooms deep under Los Alamos? And in light of persistent rumors of captive "EBEs"[9] held hostage at Los Alamos, was this high security, climate controlled, plumbing equipped suite of vaults *really* dug into the mesa as a storage site for nuclear materials – or was that just a cover story? Was this complex, instead, actually intended as a high security jail for alien prisoners held against their will, incommunicado behind thick steel doors, deep underground? Certainly the time frame of 1948-1949 is suggestive, since that is the approximate time when one, possibly more, UFOs were rumored to have crashed and to have been retrieved, along with some of their occupants, by the U.S. military.

But perhaps the only secrets being protected here really did revolve around the infant nuclear industry. After all, in the late 1940s the nuclear age was still in its infancy and Los Alamos was the place where the atom bomb was developed and first produced. So it would have made perfect sense to have a local, high security, underground facility for storing nuclear materials.

Something Old, Something New

Yet another provocative underground Air Force installation has recently been reported in the heart of California's wine country.

Within the last couple of years a secret underground installation has allegedly been covertly constructed near Oakville Grade, not far from Napa, California. Aerial photographs of the entrance to the supposed underground facility, located in rugged, mountainous terrain, show “large cement bunkers with large concrete doors, a new road, freshly graded.” There are also eight to ten microwave dishes pointing straight up into the sky, evidently providing satellite communications links. There has been heavy helicopter traffic to the facility, evidently to outfit and provision it. When asked about the flights the Air Force responded that they were a “classified operation.” According to a local newspaper the new facility is an “elaborate underground complex designed to hold government officials, scientists and other high echelon personnel in the event of an emergency.”[10]

U.S. Army Corps of Engineers

A big player in the underground installation business is the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers – and the “regular” Army itself.

Given the RAND Corporation symposium in 1959, it is no surprise that in the years 1959-1961 the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers published a five-part series of training manuals entitled *Design of Underground Installations in Rock.* I cannot possibly condense the entire contents of these documents here, nor will I cite them all. But suffice it to say that the tone of the series assumes that there already were underground military installations, as of the late 1950s. The manuals are clearly intended for use by military engineers training for the construction and maintenance of underground facilities. Judging from the manuals, the facilities in question were intended for use as command and control centers and survival bunkers for the military brass, in the event of nuclear warfare.

Citing the failure of the Germans and Japanese to recognize early enough in WW-II the strategic importance of placing crucial facilities underground, the Army Corps concluded that it was imperative for the United States to construct vital facilities deep underground. This decison was lent extra force by the destructive power of nuclear weapons which made previous installations obsolete. Significantly, one of the reports in this series, issued in 1961, says, “*Vital governmental installations have been placed underground, as exemplified by the Ritchie project.*”[11]

The Ritchie project is a large, underground, military facility on the Maryland-Pennsylvania border which is discussed in some detail later in this report. The interesting thing here is that already in 1961, in a publicly available document, explicit reference is made to governmental installations (plural) *already* having been placed underground.

Examples of the sorts of facilities the military was discussing placing underground were: communications centers, fortifications, air raid shelters, staff headquarters and offices, research facilities, shops and factories, and storage areas; and hospitals, kitchens, lavatories and sleeping areas for the use of the personnel stationed underground. According to the Army Corps, some facilities were to be relatively shallow, while other, "more important equipment and facilities essential to defense may be installed in deeper workings" that "are likely to be long and tunnel-like," occupying "one or several stories." According to the report, such deeper facilities may be several hundred feet underground. Several kinds of facilities are discussed: (a) a simple installation with a single shaft or tunnel; (b) a simple installation with two or more shafts; (c) a simple installation with tunnel and shaft; and (d) larger installations with multiple tunnels and shafts for access and ventilation.[12]

The documents provide several possible schematic layouts for underground installations (See Illustration 5 for one such schematic). In addition to the tunnels giving access to the facilities there are also shafts to the surface for ventilation, heating and cooling, and for exhaust of gases from power plant machinery. The documents also show possible designs and appearances of air-intake shafts for underground facilities (Illustration 6) and how an exhaust system for an underground power plant might look (Illustration 7). According to the report, sewage would be piped out of the facility and treated at a nearby plant. There would also be spray ponds, cooling towers, or other air conditioning equipment visible on the surface in the near vicinity of an underground installation, besides air-intake shafts or vents, and exhaust pipes for the power plant. Water would be supplied both from outside commercial sources and also from wells sunk near or from *within* the facility. Large reservoirs would be hollowed out underground to provide operational water reserves for emergencies. The facilities discussed in the report would also contain kitchens, snack bars, cold storage areas, dispensaries or first aid rooms, medical facilities, personnel lounges, barracks, auditoriums and conference rooms.[13]

Readers should keep in mind that these facilities could be almost anywhere and could be quite large. According to the report, they could be constructed inside “hills or plateaus” with *concealed shaft entrances* (my italics). There need not necessarily be any conspicuous hoist house for a vertical shaft since the “principal parts of a hoist plant may…be contained underground.” Tunnels could be as large as 50 ft. by 50 ft. in diameter and chambers as much as 100 ft. high. In some installations “truck or rail traffic might be important.” In such cases provision would have to be made for “narrow-gauge rail transportation” or “single-lane highway tunnels,” or perhaps even for “two-track railroad or two-lane highway tunnels” as much as “31 ft. wide by 22 ft. high.” And it is possible that quite large entrances to underground facilities could open directly off of major canals, lakes, rivers, bays and even the open sea, since the report says that “…an installation might require entrances for barges or ships.” The manual goes on to say that, “Landscape scars, roads, and portal structures (entrances) should be as inconspicuous as possible. Camouflage should be considered.” Actual underground layout of the chambers in the installation might be in a parallel configuration with connecting shafts and tunnels as necessary or desired for utilities, ventilation, passageways, etc.; or there might be either “radial chambers connected at center, ends, and at regular intervals to form a spider-web pattern,” or “chambers in concentric circles or tangents with radial connections,” after the manner of the Pentagon.[14]

Certainly, this series of official Army documents, which explicitly discusses constructing large underground installations, some set inside of hills and plateaus with concealed shafts and portals, and underground hoisting plants and water wells, perhaps with entrances for barges and ships, and maybe even with tunnels that can accomodate two lanes of truck traffic or two-track railways, ought to give considerable pause to reflect. At the very minimum, they mean that at least as early as the late 1950s the Army was training its engineers to design such facilities. In fact, it seems very likely that the Army has built underground facilities similar to the ones described in the five-report series. It also seems very possible that they may be camouflaged or concealed, and for that reason, hard to detect.

In a three-volume report issued in June and July of 1964 and entitled *Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities,* the Army Corps of Engineers sets out 12 sites across the country (See Illustration 8) where it calculated 600 ft. diameter cavities could be excavated, up to 4,000 ft. underground. The ostensible reason for constructing these huge underground caverns was to have been for conducting underground nuclear tests. The idea was to "decouple" the blast by situating the explosion in a huge, deeply buried cavity. In that way, seismic energy produced by a nuclear explosion could be muffled, rendering detection (presumably by the Russians) problematic. Let me emphasize that I do not know whether any of these twelve, huge, very deeply buried cavities were ever excavated. And if they were excavated, I do not know if they were used for nuclear testing or for something else.

If actual nuclear tests were carried out in large cavities, deep underground, which had the effect of greatly attenuating the explosion, making detection by the Russians difficult, then it is possible that detection was difficult for others as well. Conceivably, these others could have been local American citizens who may have merely heard what they thought was a muffled sonic boom, or felt what they perceived as an unexplained, perhaps unquestioned, short-lived rumbling underfoot. But that is speculation. Maybe the cavities were never excavated. Or perhaps they *were* excavated, but used for another purpose unrelated to nuclear testing.

In any event, *Volume I* begins by observing that if the surrounding rock is structurally sound "…construction of a spheroidal cavity at least 200 ft. and possibly as much as 600 ft. in diameter and located 3000 to 4000 ft. below the ground surface presents no unsolvable construction problems." It further concludes that, "…a number of sites are available within the continental United States in which large cavities up to the maximum size considered in this report can be constructed." The authors state that a 200 ft. cavity would require two years and $8.5 million dollars to construct. The relevant time and money for a 600 ft. cavity were calculated at 3½ years and $26.7 million. And all at 3000 to 4000 ft. underground. At the time this report was issued, all of the sites in the western part of the country were on federally owned land, some of them on or near military reservations. Most of the sites were also in regions of low population density.[15]

Interestingly, the first report estimates that construction of a 600 ft. diameter cavity would create about 4.2 million cubic yards of rock, not including the muck (excavated rock and soil) from the construction of the access tunnel.[16] The third report in the series estimates that construction of a 600 ft. diameter cavity and access tunnels would create about 7.0 million cubic yards of muck which could be disposed of in an *80 acre dump area* (my italics).[17] Both reports allude to concealing, camouflaging or blending the muck dumps into the terrain, so that construction of the tunnel and cavity would be harder to detect.

Volume I goes into lengthy geological discussions of the various sites. Interested readers should consult the document directly for more detail than can be provided here. I will simply list the 12 sites, giving directions to the planned locations of the underground facilities that are as precise as possible.

SITE 1- YUMA COUNTY, ARIZONA. Access via vertical or inclined shaft. The site is located either in the Gila, Copper or Cabeza Prieta Mountains, or conceivably in all three ranges. Yuma, Arizona lies 40 miles northwest of the central Gila Mts. Ajo is about 25 miles east of the boundary of the general area in question. U.S. Highway 80 and the Southern Pacific Railroad cross the northern part of the area. When the report was issued parts of the area were controlled, respectively, by the Yuma U.S. Marine Corps Air Station, the U.S. Air Force Gila Auxiliary Air Force Base and a wildlife refuge.

SITE 2- MOHAVE COUNTY, ARIZONA. Access via vertical shaft. The location is in the east-central Hualapai Mountains (Gila and Salt River Base Line and Meridian). The site is reached by a secondary road that heads south along the base of the range from Arizona Highway 93. Kingman is about 30 miles northwest.

SITE 3- INYO COUNTY, CALIFORNIA. Access via inclined shaft. The five potential sites are located in the Argus Mountains and near the town of Darwin. The report says the two most important locations, from the standpoint of geological conditions that are favorable for constructing a large, underground cavity, are sites D and E. Site D is 4 miles due west of Darwin; Site E is several miles northwest of Trona, directly under Argus Peak. This is a few miles inside the boundary of the China Lake Naval Weapons Center.

SITE 4- MESA AND MONTROSE COUNTIES, COLORADO. Access via vertical shaft. The areas lie in the Sinbad and Paradox Valleys; two sites, one approximately 30 miles east, and the other about 40 miles southeast, of Moab, Utah. The site in Paradox Valley can be reached from Nucla, Colorado by State Route 90; the one in Sinbad Valley can be reached by State Route 141, out of Grand Junction, Colorado, and an unimproved road along Salt Creek Canyon.

SITE 5- PERSHING COUNTY, NEVADA. Access via vertical or inclined shaft. The site is located in a U.S. Naval Gunnery Range in the Shawave and Nightingale Mountain Ranges. To reach the area take unimproved roads from State Highway 34. Lovelock, Nevada is 30 miles to the east and Fernley, Nevada is south 35 miles.

SITE 6- MESA COUNTY, COLORADO. Access via vertical, inclined or horizontal shafts or tunnels. The location is in Unaweep Canyon, approximately 30 miles southwest of Grand Junction, Colorado. State Highway 141 runs through the area. (See Illustration 9)

SITE 7- EMERY COUNTY, UTAH. Access by vertical shaft. The area is called Horse Bench and is 10 miles south of U.S. 50, and just to the southeast of State Highway 24. Green River, Utah, is about 10 miles to the northeast.

SITE 8- WINKLER AND NORTHERN WARD COUNTIES, TEXAS. Access by vertical shaft. Located near the small towns of Kermit and Wink, Texas. 50 miles west of Odessa, access is by U.S. Highway 80.

SITE 9- MOHAVE COUNTY, ARIZONA. Access by vertical or inclined shaft. Site is on the western edge of the Grand Wash Cliffs, at head of Grapevine Wash. The location is northwest of Kingman, accessible by secondary roads from U.S. Highway 93.

SITE 10- FRANKLIN COUNTY, ALABAMA. Access by vertical shaft. The site is about 10 miles southwest from Russelville, near the small community of Gravel Hill. U.S. Highway 5 is about 5 miles to the east.

SITE 11- KANSAS AND NEBRASKA GRANITIC BASEMENT AREAS. Access by vertical shaft. No specific site was chosen, as the region has many useful sites where the geology is favorable for deep underground construction. Red Willow County, Nebraska was chosen as an example.

SITE 12- OGLETHORPE AND PARTS OF GREENE, WILKES AND ELBERT COUNTIES, GEORGIA. Access by vertical shaft. One proposed site is near the community of Stephens, one mile due east of Highway 77 and the Georgia Railroad. There are a number of other potential sites for deep excavation in these counties in northeastern Georgia in a general area that lies about 20-30 miles from Athens.[18]

Any of these 12 potential sites would be fertile ground for research and investigation, even now. I would like to hear from readers who may have information about underground facilities at these locations.

Volume III of *Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities* is devoted to an analysis of the cost and constructability of a large cavity 4,000 feet underground, under Argus Peak, or the Southeast Peak, both located several miles to the northwest of Trona, California, within the boundary of the present-day China Lake Naval Weapons Center.

A variety of schemes for access were considered, including vertical and inclined shafts, and long horizontal tunnels, as much as three or four miles in length (See Illustration 10 for the vertical access scheme). The actual facility was planned to be hollowed out from top to bottom, with a spiraling perimeter tunnel and a large central shaft (Illustration 11). Method of excavation was to be by conventional hard rock mining techniques, using truck mounted mining drills, high explosives, front end loaders, caterpillar tractors, dumptors, etc. Muck (excavated rock) would be removed from underground by either conveyor belts, trolley trucks, mining rail cars, hoists or a combination of rail cars and hoists. Two tunnel sizes for access were considered: (a) 13 ft. in width by 15.5 ft. in height; and (b) 23 ft. wide by 19 ft. high.[19]

I would reemphasize at this juncture that I do not know whether or not any of the cavities discussed in this Army Corps of Engineers document, including the one near Trona, California, were ever excavated. Clearly, a great deal of care and time was invested in this planning study; whether that care and planning translated into actual construction I do not know. I would note, however, that the projected Trona, California site lies just inside the boundary of the China Lake Naval Weapons Center, which has long been rumored to be the site of a massive underground installation. While I cannot speak to the truth of the rumor, I nevertheless find it suggestive that in 1964 the Army Corps of Engineers published a document that sets out in some detail a plan to construct a large, deep underground cavity at that location.

I know from direct experience that at least one U.S. Army facility *does* exist.

The U.S. Army operates a facility in the northern Virginia town of Warrenton. A reported underground bunker known as the U.S. Army Warrenton Training Center, this very secretive installation is supposedly a Federal Relocation Center for an unknown agency.[20] In fact, when I visited the area in the summer of 1992 I decided that there may possibly be two such sites. There are two U.S. Army facilities there, one on Rt. 802 and the other on Bear Wallow Road, on Viewtree Mountain. One facility is “Station A” and the other is “Station B”. Both have signs out front saying “Warrenton Training Center.”

When asked about local, underground installations, the person who gave directions to these facilities said that Station B is believed to be a computing and communications facility (this may well be true, judging by the large antennae towering overhead and the AT&T microwave facility located in a field to the rear). He then added, “but no one knows what goes on at Station A.” Unfortunately, if the actions of the guard on duty at Station A when I visited are any indication the Army does not want anyone to find out, either.

As I attempted to snap a photo of the gate area from my car the guard sprang into action and bounded toward me waving his arms and angrily shouting, “No!”

Somewhat taken aback at his reaction, which seemed out of all proportion to an innocent snapshot of a government facility, I asked him, “Why not? I’m on a public right-of-way.”

He replied even more forcefully, “Because I *said* so!” As he spoke those words, three other security personnel standing just inside the gate began to move toward me. Suddenly feeling very much as if I had abruptly been stripped of citizenship in a democratic republic and had crossed over unaware into some grim netherworld ruled by military decree I gave up trying to take a picture and drove away.

Peering through the fence at the back of the installation I did notice that at Station A there are massively thick power cables that descend utility poles from large electrical transformers and disappear underground.

Navy Plans

If the Air Force and Army are going underground, can the Navy be far behind?

The Naval Facilities Engineering Command issued a report in 1972 that discussed placing several sorts of Navy installations underground.[21] The stated reasons for planning for subsurface naval installations revolved around concerns such as cost efficiency, environmental impact of new construction and the severe land pressures facing many Navy bases, which are hemmed in by surrounding cities and towns. The five sorts of facilities the report's authors recommended for underground construction were:

1) administration buildings
2) medical facilities
3) aircraft maintenance facilities
4) ammunition storage facilities
5) miscellaneous storage facilities

Interestingly, while the report is devoted to a discussion of the merits for the Navy of underground installations, there is also a brief, passing mention made of possible needs for "undersea ports" and emplacements that would service a future, submarine Navy. To be sure, I have heard stories and read rumors of undersea Navy ports at various places along both the Atlantic and Pacific coasts of the United States, as well as in the Great Lakes region. Have they been built? Does this 1972 document hint at what is now a military reality? If you know, please send me the relevant information.

The schematic illustration of the underground weapons storage area is interesting (Illustration 12). Notice that there can be more than one level, and that the complex may extend down several hundreds of feet. Presumably, the network of shafts and tunnels could also be adapted for other uses besides weapons storage. I consider it entirely possible that these sorts of facilities have been built by the Navy.

But the Navy isn't just interested in underground bomb 'n' submarine parking garages. They're also interested in *your* telephone calls.

The U.S. Navy runs a secret electronics facility near the isolated mountain community of Sugar Grove, West Virginia, on the Virgina-West Virginia line.

The purpose of the installation, which works out of a two-story underground operations center, is to spy on microwave communications traffic for the National Security Agency (NSA). This illegal and unconstitutional activity is a serious military violation of civil liberties as set forth in the Bill of Rights.[22]

But if the government doesn't very much care about *your* rights to privacy, it certainly cares a lot about its *own* right to secrecy.

Especially when it comes to fighting war.

In particular, the big one.

Chapter Three

THE ULTIMATE WAR ROOMS: FIGHTING THE BIG ONE FROM DEEP UNDERGROUND

A 1989 article in *U.S. News & World Report* stated that the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) and the Pentagon administer approximately 50 secret underground command posts around the country, where the president might flee in the event of a nuclear war. (Although FEMA is perceived as a "civilian" federal agency, in reality FEMA and the Pentagon work closely together.) Each of these underground bunkers is "equipped to function as an emergency White House." The article specifically cites the FEMA "Special Facility" at Mount Weather and the Pentagon back-up facility called Raven Rock, or Site R, located along the Pennsylvania-Maryland border, and operated by Fort Ritchie (see the next page for more on the Ritchie facility). Supposedly, in the event of a nuclear crisis, 1,000 civilian and military officials would be rushed to these secret bunkers. They would take refuge there while the rest of the country muddled through the ensuing radioactive holocaust as best it could.[1] In reality, given the number of secret bunkers cited (50), it seems that the number of personnel who would be evacuated would be considerably higher.

The logical question is: where are the underground command posts and bunkers? The answer is not an easy one, since by their very nature these facilities are hard to find. To begin with, they are all underground. Some of them are on military bases. Virtually all of them have been constructed behind a veil of secrecy and high security. And all of them continue to operate under considerable security.

Nevertheless, at least a partial answer can be provided, because the locations of some of the underground bunkers are known. And information is also available about the function of some of them and what they contain.

THE PENTAGON, NORTHERN VIRGINIA – As might be suspected, the Department of Defense has burrowed underneath the Pentagon, in Arlington, Virginia and established a sophisticated facility called the "National Military Command Center."

"SITE R", AKA "RAVEN ROCK" OR THE RITCHIE FACILITY – In the hills of southern Pennsylvania, near the small town of Blue Ridge Summit, is the home of the "Underground Pentagon." Run by nearby Fort Ritchie, since the 1950s the facility has been a major electronic nerve center for the U.S. military. This huge installation, known as "Raven Rock" or "Site R," was blasted out of the native granite known as greenstone and lies 650 ft. below the surface. The 265,000 sq. ft. facility which sprawls beneath 716 acres is comprised of five different buildings in specially excavated separate caverns. It normally is staffed by about 350 people. Access to Raven Rock is by way of portals set into the mountainside. Its corridors are lit by fluorescent lights and it contains a wide variety of amenities including a convenience store; barbershop; medical, dining and fitness facilities; a subterranean reservoir that contains millions of gallons of water; a chapel; 35 miles of telephone lines; and six 1,000 kilowatt generators. "Site R" has long functioned as a sort of second Pentagon and is equipped as a supercomputing and electronic command post linked with numerous military communications networks all over the globe. Local rumor has it that "Site R" is connected by tunnel to the presidential hideaway at Camp David, several miles away in northern Maryland, near the town of Thurmont. According to a recent press report, with the thawing of the Cold War "Site R" has gone to a standby status and will be staffed at a lower level than in the past.[2]

THE WHITE HOUSE, WASHINGTON, D.C. – There is a large, sophisticated bunker complex *under* the basement of the White House in Washington, D.C. Dating back at least to the Eisenhower administration, special forces were ready to tunnel down and extract the President from deep underground in the event a nuclear holocaust reduced everything above to rubble.

But just how extensive – and deep – is this complex? One source I have personally interviewed claims that there are many, many levels *below* the basement of the White House, that keep going down and down. On one occasion during the Lyndon Johnson administration (in the 1960s), this source was sent to deliver some papers from the Department of Housing and

Urban Development (HUD). Upon arrival, my source was escorted by two Secret Service agents to an elevator in an area of the White House that is not open to the public. They entered the elevator and went down for what the source remembers as 17 levels. When the elevator doors opened they stepped out into a corridor covered on the walls, ceiling and floor with beige, ceramic tiles. The corridor was very long, stretching away in the distance to the vanishing point. According to my source, other corridors and doors opened off the main corridor. The fluorescent lighting was recessed in the ceiling. There was a man sitting at a desk by the elevator doors. The papers were delivered to a man in a room that opened off of the corridor and then my source was escorted back to the elevator, back to the surface and out of the White House. All of the men appeared to be Secret Service agents and were dressed in dark, business suits. The person who related this story to me had the impression there were even more levels below the 17th level. Why papers from HUD had to be delivered to the subterranean bowels of the White House, my source did not know. Whatever the actual size of this underground installation may be, clearly there is far more to the White House than is apparent from driving by on Pennsylvania Avenue.

KANEOHE, HAWAII – There is also an underground installation at Kaneohe, in Hawaii, connected with U.S. Pacific Fleet operations.

CAMP DAVID, MARYLAND – At the presidential retreat in northern Maryland, there is “an ultrasensitive underground command post” for the use of the president in an emergency. During the Eisenhower administration this command post was run by a group of military officers known as the “Naval Administrative Unit.”[3]

OMAHA, NEBRASKA – And at Offutt Air Force Base, in Omaha, Nebraska, there is an underground command post for the Strategic Air Command.[4]

Unfortunately, I know little more about these installations than I have set forth here. And that’s just the point – I’m not supposed to know, and neither are you. In the event of nuclear war, we’ll be nuclear missile fodder while the President and the Joint Chiefs of Staff huddle underground figuring out how to bounce the rubble one more time. For that type of arrangement to work, you need secrecy, and lots of it.

In a time of nuclear war, or during some other crisis, when the politicians and military planners go underground, where will they get the information they need to make decisions? Some of the most important information will come from – you guessed it – other underground facilities, among them the NORAD facilities described below.

NORAD AT CHEYENNE MOUNTAIN, COLORADO – For subterranean privacy, try Colorado Springs, Colorado, where the North American Aerospace Defense Command (NORAD) operates perhaps the best known of the major underground bases.

This super-secret facility is located deep inside Cheyenne Mountain, outside of Colorado Springs, Colorado. Here's where the latest space, missile, and air-traffic information is gathered, using state-of-the-art equipment, and fed to military and civilian decision makers.

Planning for the subterranean, 4.5 acre, 15 building complex began in 1956. Construction was started in 1961. The Utah Mining and Engineering Company of San Francisco did the excavating, under the supervision of the Omaha District of the Army Corps of Engineers. The large engineering firm of Parsons, Brinckerhoff, Quade and Douglas was also involved on the project. In 1966 NORAD moved in and began underground operations.

Jointly staffed by United States and Canadian military personnel, the installation constantly monitors all space traffic in and around the earth, all missile launches worldwide, submarine movements and air defenses for North America. This NORAD base is also the National Warning Center for the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA). This is the place from which civil defense warnings for Canada and the U.S. are initiated.[5]

About 1,700 personnel operate the facility around the clock, including a night shift of 300 people. A 4,675 ft. tunnel bores straight through the mountain. The entrance tunnel is 22.5 ft. high and 29 ft. wide, while the central access tunnel, that branches off the entrance tunnel, is 25 ft. high and 45 ft. wide. Three hundred and fifty hardrock miners, working in three shifts, excavated almost 700,000 tons of granite to construct the facility. The NORAD base is stocked with 30 days of contingency supplies, including enough fuel to run its six diesel generators for 30 days. It also has underground reservoirs, hewn out of solid rock, that hold six million gallons of water for cooling purposes and for use by personnel for domestic purposes. Its 25 ton, hydraulic-operated blast doors, that open off of the access tunnel, well inside the mountain, can open or shut in just 45 seconds. Hardened microwave channels and coaxial cables provide essential communications links for the state-of-the-art electronic and computer systems inside the facility.[6] (See Illustration 50 for schematic diagrams of how these communication links might look.)

NORAD at North Bay, Ontario, Canada – This deep underground command center, which is located about 200 miles north of Toronto, is also jointly staffed by both Canadian and U.S. military personnel. The North Bay installation became operational in October 1963 and consists of two huge caverns, bored out of the solid rock, hundreds of feet under the Pre-Cambrian Shield. The two huge caverns, each 400 ft. long, by 60 to 70 ft. high and 45 ft. wide, are connected by three cross tunnels. Inside the caverns, just as at Colorado Springs, three-story buildings have been constructed to house personnel and equipment. There are two access tunnels, the one about 6,600 ft. long and 12 ft. by 12 ft., the other about 3,500 ft. in length and 16 ft. by 16 ft. Inside are 142,000 sq ft. of floor space, filled with offices, communications and computer equipment, and defense radars that cover the northern sectors of North American air space.

There are also kitchen and dining facilities that can accomodate 400 people, a hospital and infirmary, washrooms and showers, a “well equipped canteen,” and space for people to rest and sleep. Power is supplied by six generators that are normally fueled by natural gas piped down from the surface. Under emergency conditions the generators would run off of diesel fuel stored underground in the complex. During normal operations, water for equipment cooling and personnel use is obtained from nearby Trout Lake. But during emergency “button-up” conditions water would come from underground reservoirs specially excavated for use when the facility was sealed off from the outside. One reservoir holds 200,000 gallons for domestic use, and the other contains five million gallons for air conditioning and equipment cooling.[7]

Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA)

There are other secret underground government command facilities. Many of them are operated by FEMA, the Federal Emergency Management Agency. FEMA usually pops up in the news as the lead federal agency charged with hurricane or flood relief efforts. But FEMA has another side as well — a secret, underground side.

MOUNT WEATHER, BLUEMONT, VIRGINIA – The hub of the FEMA subterranean network is located inside Mount Weather, near the small town of Bluemont, in northern Virginia. This top-secret base was constructed in the 1950s to house the United States government in the event of a national crisis such as nuclear war. Funded by "black" money, Mount Weather remains nearly as inaccessible to scrutiny as it was when first built. Although it is the headquarters for FEMA's far-flung underground empire it does not even appear in the agency's published budget. Security is tight at the installation, which is surrounded by a 10-ft. perimeter fence patrolled by armed guards. There are a few buildings above ground, but most of the real work of Mt. Weather takes place deep below, in great secrecy. The mountain contains what amounts to a small town. The infrastructure includes: a small lake; a pair of 250,000 gallon water tanks, capable of supplying water for 200 people for over a month; a number of ponds 10 ft. deep and 200 ft. across, blasted out of solid rock; a sewage plant capable of treating 90,000 gallons per day; a hospital; a cafeteria; streets and sidewalks; a diesel powered electrical generating plant; private living quarters and dormitories able to accomodate hundreds of residents; a sophisticated, internal communications system using closed-circuit color TV consoles; a radio and TV studio; massive super-computing facilities; a "situation room" equipped with communications links to the White House and "Site R" in southern Pennsylvania; and a transit system of electric cars that transport personnel around the complex. According to published reports, some of the hundreds of people who work inside the mountain routinely stage practice drills for managing a wide variety of potential crises, ranging from civil disturbances and economic problems, to natural disasters and nuclear war.[8]

Speaking off the record, in the mid-1970s government officials stated that, in fact, Mt. Weather houses a resident, back-up government. Many federal departments and agencies are represented there, including the Departments of Agriculture, Commerce, HUD, Interior, Labor, State, Transportation and the Treasury; and agencies such as FEMA, the Office of the President, the U.S.

Postal Service, the Federal Communications Commission, the Federal Reserve, Selective Service, the Federal Power Commission, the Civil Service Commission and others. These highly placed government sources maintain that the administrators of the Federal departments at Mt. Weather hold cabinet-level rank and are referred to as "Mr. Secretary" by the personnel who work under them. These covert "Secretaries" are said to keep their positions over the course of more than one administration, their terms not being limited by the presidential election cycles that govern the terms of office of their Washington counterparts.[9] These are sensational allegations, but if they are true, then the political news we are fed in the mainstream media must be fictional to some, unknown degree and the system governing us is controlled to that same unknown degree by agencies and officials who work in great secrecy, literally underground and totally unaccountable to the citizenry of the United States.

Mount Weather serves as a hub for a system of other underground installations and bunkers, known as Federal Relocation Centers. These are located within a 300 mile radius of Washington, DC known as the "Federal Arc." Key government officials and personnel would be evacuated to these centers in the event of nuclear war as part of the Continuity of Government (COG) plan. Besides Mt. Weather, there are said to be an additional 96 of these centers in Pennsylvania, Maryland, West Virginia, Virginia and North Carolina.[10]

Presumably, at least some of the approximately 50 secret, underground command posts mentioned earlier in the discussion of military facilities would be among these 96 centers in the FEMA Continuity of Government system. Among other things, the centers are said to contain data files and computer systems maintained by a variety of Federal agencies, and are supervised by the facility at Mount Weather.[11]

A 1991 Jack Anderson column in *The Washington Post* reported that the COG system was created by the Reagan administration and consists of a "$5 billion network of bunkers filled with high-tech communications equipment at secret locations around the country."[12] Just how many of these secret centers were newly constructed during the 1980s, and how many are older facilities that the Reagan adminstration merely converted to its purposes (expanded, remodeled and modernized) is not known. My guess is that at least some of the dozens of secret COG facilities are mentioned in this book. Of course, that would leave dozens of others which are not.

MOUNT PONY, CULPEPER, VIRGINIA – There are several underground installations either known, or alleged, to exist in the five-state "Federal Arc" area. The best known is probably the large bunker complex that lies under Mount Pony, a couple of miles east of Culpeper, Virginia, just off of Rt. 3 in the northern part of the state. Although one published report identifies this underground facility as the emergency relocation center for the Treasury Department,[13] two other reports,[14] local rumor and the sign by the front gate identify the installation as a "Federal Reserve Center." Constructed in the late 1960s, the 140,000 sq ft. facility is said to be supplied with water, food, a generator, communications equipment and even cold-storage for corpses. One source who formerly worked in the Culpeper area told me it is believed that the Federal Reserve stockpiles very large supplies of United States currency there. Indeed, 5 billion dollars are reportedly stored under Mt. Pony.

But this is not a dormant facility, waiting for Armaggedon before springing to life. From its underground vantage point in Culpeper the Federal Reserve constantly monitors all major financial transactions in the United States. It does this by means of the "Fed Wire," a modern, electronic system that permits it to keep track of all major business and banking activity that occurs.[15] Why does the Federal Reserve need a secure, underground bunker to monitor the nation's economic life? I don't pretend to know, but clearly, judging by the intermittent traffic going in and out the front gate on the day I visited, the Mount Pony bunker is in active use and doing something.

As it happens, just six weeks after my mid-June 1992 visit to the Federal Reserve's Mount Pony bunker a cover story appeared in *Time Magazine* that dealt, in part, with that very installation. The story said that, as of July 1992 "the facility's mission will no longer be needed."[16] My opinion is that this may well be disinformation. I doubt very much that the Federal Reserve has really abandoned its bunker in Culpeper. And even if the bunker really were to be emptied out, my suspicion is that the contents would merely be transferred to another, more secure location, quite likely also underground.

For what it is worth, I had spoken on the phone with the *Time Magazine* article's author just a few days after visiting the Mount Pony bunker. He wanted to know where I found my information about underground bunkers and installations, and so I mentioned a few of the installations to him that I knew about at that time.

FEMA IN OLNEY, MARYLAND – Another, less well known, underground installation is located on Riggs Road, off of Rt. 108, between Olney and Laytonsville, MD. Although it has been reported that there are actually two such facilities, a Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) civil defense bunker in Olney and a bunker operated by an unknown government agency in Laytonsville,[17] a recent visit to the area turned up only one site, midway between the two towns. If there is another bunker in the vicinity it is sufficiently well concealed that it is hard to spot. While it is not clear to passers-by who operates the facility on Riggs Road, since there are only generic United States government "NO TRESPASSING" signs posted on the security fence that surrounds the complex, this site is reportedly the backup command center for FEMA's day-to-day operations.[18] When I arrived the gate was open and no one was in the guard house. However, a prominently placed sign did advise that the entrance area was under electronic surveillance. So presumably, any unauthorized intrusion would not go unchallenged.

The one building visible from outside the fence is in an advanced state of disrepair and gives every appearance of having been vacant for some years. However, the real work at this site takes place beneath the surface. One former Maryland resident who told me of the site spoke of seeing a long line of cars heading through the gate when shifts change and disappearing behind a slight rise in the near distance. I did speak with one man who had been inside the place many years ago on a school field trip. He remembers going down two or three levels and seeing an underground office complex and electronics facilities. This is not surprising given the large number and variety of aerials and antennae visible on the surface. Both this man and another local with whom I spoke said that the bunker is believed to extend as deep as ten levels underground.

THE GREENBRIAR HOTEL, WHITE SULPHUR SPRINGS, WEST VIRGINIA – Recent revelations about a large, secret bunker beneath the posh Greenbriar Hotel in White Sulphur Springs, West Virginia make clear that it is entirely possible to keep the existence of a large, underground installation out of the public eye for decades on end. Until the story broke in the last week of May

1992 only six members of Congress knew that between 1958 and 1961 a warren of living quarters, meeting rooms, and banks of computers and communications equipment had been installed underground beneath the hotel, located about 250 miles southwest of Washington, DC in the Allegheny mountains. Situated behind two giant blast doors, each weighing more than 20 tons, and supplied with water, electricity and sewage treatment, the complex is large enough to house eight hundred people. It contains a large dormitory; an infirmary; shower facilities; a television studio; radio and communications equipment; phone booths and code machines; a dining and kitchen area; a power plant; and even a crematorium for getting rid of the corpses of those who might die inside the sealed bunker. According to published reports, the bunker was constructed to shelter the United States Congress in the event of a nuclear attack.[19]

Of course, the obvious question is: in the certain chaos of an impending nuclear war how could the hundreds of members of Congress take shelter in a distant bunker that most of them did not even know existed? According to press reports, only a few local people, the hotel management and maintenance staff, a handful of government officials, and other government personnel with a "need-to-know" appear to have been aware of the installation. Could it be that the bunker has, or had, another purpose which is not being divulged? After all, if the bunker itself was kept secret for over 30 years isn't it conceivable that there is more to the story than has so far been publicly admitted?

FEDERAL REGIONAL CENTERS – In addition to the huge bunker at Mt. Weather and bunkers in the neighboring states, FEMA also operates underground installations at other sites around the country. Reported locations for these facilities, designated as Federal Regional Centers, are: Santa Rosa, California; Denver, Colorado; Thomasville, Georgia; Maynard, Massachusetts; Battle Creek, Michigan; Denton, Texas; and Bothell, Washington.[20] There are probably others; these are the ones that can be identified from the public record.

I did file a Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) request with FEMA asking where their underground facilities were located. Even though information about underground FEMA sites is readily available in the public domain, FEMA refused to name them, citing national security provisions of Executive

Order 12356, although they did list the following FEMA facilities in a letter to me:[21]

FEMA Headquarters	Washington, DC
FEMA Special Facility	Round Hill, VA
National Emergency Training Center	Emmitsburg, MD
Software Engineering Division	Charlottesville, VA
National Warning Center[*]	Cheyenne Mountain AFB, Colorado
FEMA Regional Offices (RO) Federal Regional Centers (FRC)	
Region I	Boston, MA (RO)
	Maynard, MA (FRC)
Region II	New York, NY (RO)
Region III	Philadelphia, PA (RO)
	Olney, MD (FRC)
Region IV	Atlanta, GA (RO)
	Thomasville, GA (FRC)
Region V	Chicago, IL (RO)
	Battle Creek, MI (FRC)
Region VI	Denton, TX (RO/FRC)
Region VII	Kansas City, MO (RO)
Region VIII	Denver, CO (RO/FRC)
Region IX	Presidio, CA (RO)
Region X	Bothell, WA (RO/FRC)
Communications Antenna Fields	Fort Custer, MI
	Santa Rosa, CA
Strategic Storage Centers (for Disaster Assistance)	
Blue Grass	Richmond, KY
Forest Park	Forest Park, GA
Dempsey	Palo Alto, TX

* This is a FEMA presence at a Dept. of Defense facility. Information about that facility would be kept by DOD.

The observant reader will note that I have already identified 10 of the facilities listed above as underground FEMA installations.

I do not know if any of the other facilities listed in the FEMA response to my request include an underground component. My guess is that some, or all of them, well may. I welcome information from readers who can tell me more.

The Defense Nuclear Agency

In 1975 the Defense Nuclear Agency published a detailed, geological study that discussed dozens of possible sites all over the country for very deeply based military installations – as much as 5,000 ft. underground.[22] Some of these prospective sites are relatively large in area, while others are fairly limited in geographic extent. Most of them are in the West; a few are located in the mid-West and on the Eastern Seaboard. The report delineated the sites as follows:

East

Adirondack Mountains, New York (in vicinity of Elizabethtown)

3 sites in Central New Hampshire

Area to northwest of Portland, Maine

Northeastern, Central and South Central Virginia

Mid-West

St. François Mountains, Missouri (between St. Louis and New Madrid)

Northern Wisconsin (general area between Chippewa Falls, Wausau and Florence)

Minnesota River Valley (generally 30-40 miles south of Benson and about 50 miles southwest of Minneapolis-St. Paul)

West

Southeastern Wyoming

Rio Grande River Valley, New Mexico (to west and north of Taos; area of special interest 20-30 miles north of Taos, near Colorado border)

Pedernal Hills, New Mexico (60-70 miles east-southeast of Albuquerque)

Zuñi Mountains, New Mexico (100 miles due west of Albuquerque, south of 1-40)

La Sal Mountains, Utah (20 miles southeast of Moab)

Sierra Nevada Mountains, California (large area 350 miles long by 50 miles wide)

Idaho Batholith (large area in central Idaho, north of Boise)

South Central Idaho (under Snake River lava flows between Twin Falls and Idaho Falls)

Holbrook, Arizona (general vicinity)

Northwestern Arizona (north of Seligman)

Ash Fork and Williams, Arizona (general vicinity)

Black Mesa Basin, Arizona (under Hopi and Navajo Reservations)

Book Cliffs-Uncompahgre Uplift. Area along Utah-Colorado border (in general vicinity of and to south of Grand Junction, Colorado)

Monument Uplift and Blanding Basin, Utah (southeastern part of state near towns of Blanding and Mexican Hat)

San Rafael Swell, Utah (west of town of Green River)

Extreme West Central Utah (area 30-40 miles west of towns of Delta and Minersville)

Southwestern Utah (area between towns of Cedar City and Panguitch)

Nuclear Test Site, southern Nevada

Central Nevada (50 mile radius of town of Tonopah)

Northwestern Nevada (50 to 100 miles east and northeast of Carson City)

Special Sites

Washington, D.C. (surrounding area in Virginia and Maryland)
Omaha, Nebraska (general vicinity)

Readers should bear in mind that any installations that may have been built in these areas are likely to be well hidden, and very deeply buried. In addition, since the areas are often rather large, the directions provided are of necessity only a general guide to the location of possible installations. After all, the geological formations of interest to the Pentagon for subterranean bases usually extend for miles. Also, entrances to underground facilities may be some distance away from the base itself. So finding these places is not necessarily an easy task.

My guess is that some of these sites have been used for underground base construction over the last 20 years. Readers who may have information about the presence of underground bases at any of these sites are urged to get in contact with me.

Deep “Black” Underground: The Oliver North Connection

In Oliver North’s autobiography, *Under Fire*, he briefly mentions an extremely secret government program called ’The Project.” According to North, for a year and a half during Reagan’s first term he was the “de facto administrator of The Project” and coordinated a group of expert advisors known as the “Wise Men.” The work of the Wise Men and The Project entailed providing for the survival of the United States government in the event of a nuclear war. North specifically says that he wrote policy directives pertaining to The Project which President Reagan signed, and that he also often briefed then Vice-President George Bush about The Project. While North does not say precisely how The Project was carried out he does mention that the Soviet Union had “a network of secret tunnels under Moscow” to which its leaders would flee in time of war, while the United States had nothing comparable.[23] By implication, then, The Project would seem to have provided a similar capability for the United States.

In fact, it seems that The Project did involve an extensive underground construction program. In April 1994 a front page story in the *New York Times* announced the existence of a previously undisclosed program known as “The Doomsday Project.” According to the story, the project was an “amalgam of more than 20 “black programs” during the Reagan administration, supervised by George Bush, with some involvement by Oliver North. It reportedly cost some $8 billion to build and took eleven years to complete. The Doomsday Project was concerned with the survival of the federal government in the event of nuclear war. The project involved many people, including “White House officials, Army generals, CIA officers and private companies.” Of direct interest for readers of this book is the fact that the Pentagon built “scores of secret bunkers” as part of something called the “Presidential Survivability Support System.”[24] It is my educated guess that many of these “secret bunkers” would be located in the areas and locations set forth in previously discussed documents generated by the Army Corps of Engineers, U.S. Air Force Project RAND and the Defense Nuclear Agency.

Last But Not Least: Underground Command Center For Sale

And finally, this throught-provoking footnote to our tour of underground strategic command centers: As of 1992 there was a decommissioned Strategic Air Command bunker for sale in Amherst, Massachusetts. The 44,000 sq ft. bunker is three stories high, buried under a mountain, blast-proof, climate-controlled, with a glassed-in command theater. It was for sale for just $250,000.[25] There are a couple of interesting things about this piece of information. First, the size and location of this bunker underscore the fact that underground facilities and installations can literally be almost anywhere. Second, the fact that SAC is getting rid of it on the open real estate market means that it must be obsolete. So obsolete that they don’t care who goes inside, and they don’t care who knows where it is.

One obvious conclusion would be that the Pentagon now has something better, somewhere else.

Chapter Four

MORE UNDERGROUND FACILITIES: MILITARY, GOVERNMENT, NUCLEAR AND BUSINESS

Although I’ve been told that the Pentagon operates many other underground facilities here in the United States, perhaps dozens more than I’ve discussed so far, in this chapter, as in the previous chapter, I will err on the conservative side and report only on those underground installations for which I can provide some form of tangible documentation.

Along with military installations I also report on facilities run by other branches of the government, and on some run by private business. Currently, I can positively verify just seven underground corporate facilities. I strongly suspect there are many more. I welcome information in that regard from readers who know of other underground corporate facilities.

But whether it’s the Navy or the Federal Reserve or private industry, they all seem to have one thing foremost in their minds: S-E-C-R-E-C-Y.

ATCHISON, KANSAS – At Atchison, Kansas the Pentagon operates (or used to operate) the Defense Industrial Plant Equipment Facility (DIPEF). This huge underground warehouse facility, with 987,000 total square ft. of space, is a converted and remodeled limestone mine. The facility is serviced by underground roadways that make it easy to move the thousands of items of machine tools and industrial equipment stockpiled there. Half of the underground area is paved with concrete and the entire facility is climate controlled. As of 1974 138 people were employed at the DIPEF.[1]

THE FEDERAL RESERVE – A 1981 Wall Street Journal article says that, “Nine of the 12 Federal Reserve Banks have underground emergency quarters, where records are updated daily.” I do not know where most of these underground emergency centers are, or how elaborate they are. Neither do I know exactly what kind of records are kept in them. However, since the Federal Reserve is the agency that controls national monetary policy I would speculate that the records it keeps in these underground centers might well have to do with the national money supply and the daily affairs of the world of high finance. Moreover, since we are living in a computerized, electronic era of instantaneous telecommunication I would speculate further that these underground centers might contain sophisticated computing and communications systems. But all this is speculation on my part, since I have never been in the Federal Reserve's underground facilities.[2]

NATIONAL SECURITY AGENCY, FT. MEADE, MARYLAND – Beneath the National Security Agency's headquarters at Fort Meade, Maryland are "cavernous subterranean expanses," said to be filled with more than ten acres of the most sophisticated supercomputers that money can buy.[3] The NSA operates in tremendous secrecy; however, it is a safe bet based on what is known about the agency that these computers are engaged in a massive surveillance of much of the world's telephone, telegraph, telex, fax, radio, TV and microwave communications, including surveillance of domestic, internal U.S. communications by ordinary citizens. In a word, Big Brother is already here, and his name is "NSA."

THE DEPARTMENT OF ENERGY'S NEVADA TUNNELS AND INSTALLATIONS – The DOE also has many underground tunnels and installations in Nevada. Most of the DOE activity appears to be conducted at the Nevada Test Site (NTS), where the Department of Defense (DOD) and the DOE have for decades been excavating tunnel complexes for underground testing of nuclear weapons (See Illustrations 13 and 14).

These tunnel networks can be quite elaborate (See Illustration 15). The DOE and DOD sometimes reuse the tunnels; other times they are apparently abandoned. Their usual practice is to pack the tunnels with all sorts of sophisticated, hi-tech equipment and machinery to monitor the blasts (See Illustrations 16 and 17). Much of the monitoring takes place within thousandths of a second, even millionths of a second after the nuclear device detonates.

I do not know the purpose of all of the hundreds of underground nuclear blasts (a number that seems excessively high) detonated by the DOD and the DOE; I only know that there have been many, many of them and that there are many tunnels under the nuclear test site. I do not know where all of the tunnels are, what they are all used for, or how extensive the interconnections between them are, providing such interconnections exist at all.

Like many students of UFOlogy I have heard rumors and read anecdotal accounts that allege there are extensive underground complexes for living and working under the Nevada Test Site. I am inclined to think some of these accounts may be true, but I cannot provide factual documentation that demonstrates that such facilities exist.

The DOE also operated a test facility at the NTS in the early 1980s, deep underground, for storing nuclear waste (See Illustration 18).

THE NUCLEAR WASTE DEPOSITORY AT YUCCA MOUNTAIN, NEVADA — Evidently the nuclear waste storage tests in the early 1980s were successful, or at least encouraging, because in 1991 and 1992 the DOE actively solicited companies for construction of a deep underground tunnel complex inside and beneath Yucca Mountain, about 100 miles northwest of Las Vegas, as another "test" depository for nuclear waste. The actual name of the facility is the 'Yucca Mountain Site Characterization Project, Exploratory Studies Facility (ESF)." The solicitations were for companies that can provide: tunnel boring machines (TBMs) capable of boring tunnels of 25 ft. to 30 ft. in diameter; mobile miners and other mining equipment for excavating tunnels; conveyors and muck removal systems; underground ventilation, water and power supply systems; and all requisite support facilities, buildings, roads and equipment for excavating and maintaining a major, underground complex. Construction was slated to begin in November 1992. Reynolds Electrical & Engineering Co., Inc., which is the Prime Management and Operations Contractor for the Nevada Operations Office of the Department of Energy, is the company that will supervise construction and carry out the actual testing at the facility when it is constructed.

The plans call for 14 miles of underground tunnels and ramps, ranging from 14 ft. to 25 ft. in diameter, with grades as steep as –16%. Since the facility also is slated to contain a 1,300 ft. vertical shaft, by implication the complex will be at least 1,300 ft. beneath the surface.

Here again, as with so much of what goes on underground, it is hard to say what the DOE is up to. Maybe they really *are* making a test facility for long-term storage (10,000 years) of nuclear waste. Or maybe the high-security curtain of the Nevada Test Site provides a convenient screen behind which the DOE can carry out other, more secret projects, under the public relations rubric of a nuclear waste "test" facility. The trail of lies at the DOE, and at its predecessor, the Atomic Energy Commission (AEC), is so long where things nuclear are concerned it is hard to know when to trust the public relations rhetoric and press releases. The more so, since no one without a security clearance (people like the author of this book, for instance) is usually allowed anywhere near these facilities, let alone permitted to actually go underground to poke around to see what is there.[4]

LOS ALAMOS, NEW MEXICO – At a June 1983 scientific conference in Lake Tahoe, the Los Alamos National Laboratory (which is located in northern New Mexico, but run by the University of California) put forward a proposal for a "National Underground Science Facility" to be constructed deep beneath the Nuclear Test Site in southern Nevada. The proposal called for the facility to be built 3,500 ft. underground, with the possibility of extending it as deep as 6,000 ft. Initially, Los Alamos envisioned two experimental test chambers for doing particle physics, gravity experiments and geophysical studies. The facility would also include machine and electronic shops, a small computer, and dormitory space.[5] Whether or not this installation was built I do not know. But, even if it wasn't, the fact that a government agency was actively planning to go as far down as 6,000 ft. to construct a manned scientific facility gives an idea of how deeply based these underground installations can be. Most of the underground facilities I identify in this book range anywhere from tens to hundreds of feet underground. However, it is quite possible that there are bases that are thousands of feet underground. *Researchers and students of this subject should be prepared to think of bases located as much as a mile or more beneath the surface.* That may seem implausibly deep, but I promise the reader that at the Pentagon there are planners who have commissioned studies calling for military bases to be built as deep underground as 8,000 feet below the surface of the earth – that's over a mile and a half down! Those plans are discussed later in this book.

STANDARD OIL CO. OF NEW JERSEY – As recently as 1970 Standard Oil Co. of New Jersey operated an emergency center 300 ft. underground in upstate New York, near Hudson. The facility was formerly known as Iron Mountain Atomic Storage. The site contained company records, "vaults, dining halls and more than 50 sleeping rooms for key company officials and their families."[6] More recent reports indicate this facility is now used for storage of corporate records.

NORTHROP – In the Antelope Valley of southern California, near the towns of Rosamond, Palmdale and Lancaster are three mysterious underground facilities, operated by Northrop, Lockheed and McDonnell Douglas. (See Illustration 19). The Northrop facility is located near the Tehachapi Mountains, 25 miles to the northwest of Lancaster. There are rumors that the installation there goes down as many as 42 levels, and that there are tunnels linking it with other underground facilities in the area. I do not know whether these rumors are true or not. There are also reports of many strange flying objects in the vicinity, of many shapes and sizes. Some are reportedly spherical, others are alleged to be triangular, elongated, boomerang or disk shaped. And they are said to range in size up to hundreds of feet in diameter. The facility itself is engaged in electronic or electromagnetic research of some sort. There are large radar or microwave dishes and strange looking pylons to which various objects can be affixed, ostensibly for the purpose of beaming electromagnetic radiation at them. These pylons rise up from underground out of diamond-shaped openings in the middle of long, paved surfaces that resemble aircraft runways, but which, in fact, are not used by aircraft.

MCDONNELL DOUGLAS – The McDonnell Douglas facility is located at the now closed Gray Butte airport, northeast of Llano, California. It too has "runways" that are not runways, with diamond-shaped openings through which huge pylons with strangely shaped objects mounted on them are raised to the surface. These objects sometimes resemble elongated disks or flying saucers and have been seen to glow and change colors. Glowing spheres have also been seen by people in the area at night. However, the nature and function of the spheres is not known.

LOCKHEED – The Lockheed installation is adjacent to what used to be the Hellendale auxiliary airport, six miles to the north of Hellendale, California. Just like the McDonnell Douglas and Northrop facilities it also has the runway-like features, with large, diamond-shaped doors through which huge pylons rise from underground with strange objects attached. This facility also has an obvious underground entrance. (See Illustrations 20 and 21.)

To compound the high strangeness of these California facilities, there are ominous reports of covert military activity associated with them, possible alien activity (and I emphasize possible), possible abductions and lost time episodes, and numerous sightings of extremely unconventional aircraft and flying objects, to which I have already alluded.[7]

AMERICAN TELEPHONE & TELEGRAPH – A 1981 report revealed that AT&T had seven "emergency centers" in separate regions of the country. At least three of these were underground complexes. Near Netcong, New Jersey, to the west of New York City, AT&T buried a three-story emergency center in the granite, 40 ft. below ground. In the center were "…executive living quarters, a control room and a computer (with) the data bank for AT&Ts entire system." Also in the center were a "kitchen, a month's supply of food for 100 people, sleeping quarters and emergency generators." Facilities like the one at Netcong were also located at Rockdale, Georgia and Fairview, Kansas.[8] And I have been told there are others all over the country, in isolated rural areas. One of these underground AT&T communications facilities is said to be located in Catron County, New Mexico.[9]

In the preceding pages I have set out dozens of known underground facilities, installations and bases. Some of these are quite complex and sophisticated installations, capable of supporting large numbers of people in some degree of comfort. Some are operated by the military, or other branches of government, and some are run by Fortune 500 companies in the military-industrial complex. I have also presented information on dozens of other possible sites where the military was contemplating building deep underground installations.

By now it should be clear that underground bases and installations could literally be just about anywhere: under a military base; under a major hotel; under a prominent government building; under old, abandoned mine workings; under virtually any mountain or hill; under a national park, or perhaps in a national forest; in a small town; or in the middle of a large city – maybe even deep under an Alaskan glacier. And as the Army Corps of Engineers documents spell out, these underground facilities could be – and in many cases probably are – well camouflaged and concealed, making detection by a casual observer difficult.

The purpose and function of many of these facilities appear to be related to either the waging or the surviving of nuclear war – or both. Of course, many other agendas and projects could conceivably be carried out in these underground installations as well. Let your mind run – secret scientific research? Super-secure prisons where people are secretly detained incommunicado? Extraterrestrial living areas?

I must confess that while I don't have many answers, at the least it does seem certain that the southern California Lockeed, Northrop and McDonnell Douglas facilities mentioned above are heavily engaged in nonconventional, hi-tech aerospace research. And while there are stories floating around in UFO circles about bizarre, Nazi-style genetic engineering programs being conducted in underground facilities by "Little Grey" aliens and the U.S. military I can offer no proof that such programs exist. They may exist; they equally may not.

As for the possibility of secret, underground prisons: 1 will simply observe that many people absolutely disappear in this country every year, never to be heard from again. No bodies are found, no trace of them ever surfaces. I don't know where these people go; I don't know what happens to them. I can offer no proof that any of them are held in secret underground prisons. I cannot even offer any proof that there *are* secret, underground prisons. However, it occurs to me that at the end of WW II many German citizens were surprised to find out that there were concentration camps, run by the Nazis, in which millions of their neighbors (Jews, Gentiles, Gypsies, mentally impaired, homosexuals, political prisoners) had been incarcerated, tortured, forced into slave labor – and killed.

Given the many underground facilities secretly operated by the U.S. government, could a similar, smaller-scale program be going on here? I have no proof of such a program, but considering the large numbers of disappeared people and the existence of dozens of underground installations operating behind a thick security veil it occurs to me that the possibility is at least conceivable.

As I have shown, there is every reason to think that the underground construction plans and activities of the military continued during the 1970s, 1980s and into the 1990s.

A 1974 report by Bechtel Corporation, a huge multinational company that derives significant revenues from government contract work, stated that, ’The demand for tunneling and underground excavation for national defense needs is believed to be large. Some examples of underground defense facilities include: hard-rock silos, command posts, communications systems, personnel shelters, storage and power generation facilities.”[10]

And a 1981 report issued by the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology made a similar point: “The demand for defense-related underground construction will be affected significantly by decisions made in the early 1980s. It could be for as much as 20 million cubic meters for missile sites and underground command posts, most of which would be constructed between 1985 and 1995. These projects do not include the civil construction routinely carried out by the (Army) Corps of Engineers.”[11]

In other words, there could easily be a lot of covert construction going on beneath our feet right now.

Chapter Five

THE MOTHER OF ALL UNDERGROUND TUNNELS?

In UFOlogy, stories of secret, deep-underground tunnel systems, and the hi-tech tunnel boring machines that make them, are often heard in connection with sensational stories of secret, underground bases that are jointly "manned" (is that the right word?) by those pesky aliens known as the "Little Greys" and covert elements of the military-industrial complex. I don't know whether the Little Greys are real or not. Nor do I know whether the alleged tunnel systems are real or not.

But, I do know that the United States military had extensive plans in the 1980s to construct a very deep, hundreds-of-miles-long, underground tunnel system somewhere in the western United States.

And in 1968 The Office of High Speed Ground Transportation of the United States Department of Transportation (DOT) drew up plans for a very deep underground tunnel system in the Northeast. This system was to have run between Washington, DC and Boston, Massachusetts. This chapter explores both the military and the DOT tunnel system plans.

Before presenting the documentation on these projects, I'd like to say that I don't reject out of hand the possibility of secret, underground tunnel systems. Far from it. In fact, based on much research and many conversations, I think there may very easily be secret tunnel systems, deep underground, that may be quite lengthy. But since I cannot rigorously document their existence, I will restrict the discussion to a presentation of what *can* be documented – U.S. government *plans* for deep underground, elaborate tunnel systems.

U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology – and Pentagon Plans for a Deeply Based Missile Tunnel System

In 1972 the Chairman of the Federal Council for Science and Technology asked the Presidents of the National Academy of Sciences and the National

Academy of Engineering to establish a U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology (USNC/TT). The committee was then formed by the Governing Board of the National Research Council.

The committee functions as the “United States focal agency in the field of tunneling technology, to assess and stimulate improvements in tunneling technology applications, and to coordinate U.S. tunneling technology activities with those of other nations.” Its members are drawn from a wide variety of federal, state and local government agencies; from academic departments in universities; and from private industry, labor organizations and consulting firms. In 1977 the USNC/TT had the following subcommittees:

a) Management of Major Underground Construction Projects
b) Deep Cavity and Tunnel Support Systems
c) On Site Investigation
d) Demand Forecasting
e) Education and Training
f) Contracting Practices[1]

Deep Underground Tunnel Plans

In 1981 and 1982 the USNC/TT sponsored a special project called “Workshop on Technology for the Design and Construction of Deep Underground Defense Facilities.”[2] The project was sponsored by the U.S. Bureau of Mines under contract no. JO 199025. Co-sponsoring agencies with the Bureau of Mines were the U.S. Geological Survey, Bureau of Reclamation, Defense Nuclear Agency, Department of the Air Force, Department of the Army, Department of the Navy, Department of Energy, National Science Foundation, Federal Highway Administration and the Urban Mass Transportation Administration. The workshop was called at the request of the Defense Nuclear Agency to plan for the construction of a deeply based nuclear missile system. The moderator of the workshop was Edward J. Cording, of the Department of Civil Engineering, University of Illinois at Urbana and then chairman of the USNC/TT. Work groups were formed for Siting; The Use of Existing Underground Space; Egress;

Mechanical Mining; Construction Planning; and Management, Contracting, Costing, and Personnel. The select roster of participants included dozens of professionals, including private consultants and consulting firms from many states; public utilities such as Pacific Gas & Electric Co.; universities such as Cornell, Stanford, Pennsylvania State and the Colorado School of Mines; and even a union (Local 147 of the Compressed Air and Free Air Tunnel Workers).

According to reports issued by the USNC/TT in 1982, the planners assumed that 400 miles of tunnels ranging from 2,500 to 3,500 ft. underground would need to be constructed to connect the deep bases that would house MX nuclear missiles. The tunnels would be 16 ft. in diameter, "with access shafts, interconnecting passageways, and adits for storage, living quarters and other needs." (An adit is either a horizontal passageway, an entrance, or an approach).

Electric power would be obtained from either fuel cells or nuclear reactors. Spare tunnel boring machines would also be stored in the tunnel sytem. The plan mentioned deep underground shops for the complete repair of tunnel boring machines. There were to be special tunnel boring machines for digging out from deep underground after a nuclear attack, so that reserve nuclear missiles stored thousands of feet underground could be fired in retaliation.

In the event of war, the base would be sealed off and power for the underground system of tunnels, tunnel boring machine repair shops, crew quarters and missile nests would need to be internally generated. Boeing Aerospace Company published the results of a study in 1984 that set forth plans for power generation in a sealed, deep ICBM base.

After examining several options, Boeing decided that iron-chlorine fuel cells would be the most efficient way to generate electricity. In this power-generation scheme huge, underground tanks store liquid chlorine that is combined with hydrogen to form hydrochloric acid (HCL). This chemical reaction generates electricity. The HCL is then pumped into huge tanks filled with small iron balls; the iron (Fe) and HCL react chemically to form ferrous chloride ($FeCl_2$) and release hydrogen gas, which is then pumped back to the fuel cell to react again with the liquid chlorine, starting the whole cycle over.

Iron-chlorine fuel cells are the preferred mode of power generation if the post-attack confinement of the base lasts for less than four years.

If the base were to be sealed for more than four years, however, financial cost-benefit analysis indicated that liquid-metal-cooled nuclear reactors would be recommended over iron-chlorine fuel cells. The report does not say, but based on other literature I have seen the liquid-metal used to cool the liquid-metal-cooled reactors would probably be lithium.[3]

The USNC/TT tunnel plan called for the system to be built in the late 1980s and early 1990s, with "mobilization" of manpower and resources beginning in the early 1980s. The probable tunnel boring machine (TBM) supplier for the project indicated that it could supply "two machines between January and June 1985, one machine per month between July and December 1985, two machines per month between January and June 1986, and three to four machines per month thereafter." That supply schedule was predicated on using a 16 ft. tunnel diameter. If 18 ft. were selected as the diameter, the manufacturer was able to make available 8 to 10 second-hand TBMs that could be reconditioned for immediate service.[4]

The report includes artists' conceptions of how portions of a deeply based missile tunnel system might look (See Illustrations 22-24). Where might this system be located, assuming it has already been built, or is now under construction?

The planners assumed it would be built somewhere in the western third of the country (See Illustration 27). Three specific sites mentioned in the text of the report are (a) Forty-Mile Canyon in Nevada; (b) Grand Mesa, Colorado; and (c) the basalt plain in the Columbia River Basin, near Fairchild Air Force Base in the State of Washington.

There are other federal documents and press reports which explicitly discuss this deep underground tunnel system. In August 1980, the Air Force released a detailed, two-volume study which was prepared by the School of Mines, in Golden, Colorado. The study is entitled, *"Tunnel Boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System."*[5] It calls for a 480 km long (about 300 miles), deep underground tunnel system that would connect "missile nests" 2400 ft. or more underground. In the event of nuclear war, the plans call for military crews to operate mechanical, tunnel boring machines that would bore up to the surface from bases half a mile or more underground, towing nuclear missiles behind them, which they would then fire at the enemy (See Illustrations 25 and 26 for schematic diagrams of the egress tunnel boring machine designs, and missile egress plans from deep underground). The tunnel boring machine companies mentioned in the report are The Robbins Company, of Kent, Washington and Jarva Inc., of Solon, Ohio. Morrison Knudsen, of Boise, Idaho (a huge company with subsidiaries in many states) is mentioned as a construction consultant.

There are many other documents and articles that detail these plans. In 1984 *The New York Times* ran a front page story that described the planned, underground missile base as something like a "400-mile network of subways that would be 2,500 to 3,500 feet below the surface, probably in a desert in the western United States."[6] In 1985 the *Asian Defence Journal* ran an almost identical story.[7]

A highly technical 1985 document from the Air Force Geophysics Laboratory discusses ground motion effects that a deep underground facility might experience were it to undergo nuclear attack. In particular, it refers to an "underground missile base within Generic Mountain B in the ICBM Basing Construction Planning Study."[8] Unfortunately, no specific location or layout for the missile base is mentioned.

A 1985 report from the Army Corps of Engineers Omaha District explicitly refers to an "ICBM deep basing construction planning study."[9] Another, 1988 report by the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology and the U.S. National Committee for Rock Mechanics discussed an underground missile system ranging between 3,000 ft. and 8,000 ft. underground.

That's right – *as much as 8,000 ft. underground.*

This 1988 report mentions having the base operational as soon as possible, "within a five-year construction schedule." Five years from 1988 is 1993. Is such a base now operational, far below some unknown location in the United States? Based on my research, I am not certain. However, given the rather substantial paper trail, it is certainly within the realm of possibility that something like it has been secretly built.

The 1988 report calls for a system with tunnels up to 20 miles long, branching off from access shafts. The report's conclusion states, 'The consensus of the working groups involved in preparing this report is that the basic technical capabilities to create complex underground facilities at the pace and depth envisioned are available in current practice."[10]

A series of federal contracts for development of the deep underground missile system were let in the mid-1980s by the Air Force's Ballistic Missile Office, at Norton Air Force Base, in California. The contracts that were let do not, in and of themselves, prove that the project has actually been carried out. At the least, though, they do demonstrate that this concept went well beyond a paper, planning stage and began to develop real, hard technology.

United Technologies, Hamilton Standard Division, of Windsor Locks, Connecticut was given a contract in November 1985 for "life support and chemical/biological agent mitigation systems on the Small Intercontinental Ballsistic Missile (ICBM) Deep Basing Program." The projected completion date for the work was February 1988. The Federal Contract No. was: F04704-85-C-0111.[11] This contract would probably have to do with supply of pure air and water for the crew(s) of an underground base.

In December 1985, BDM of McLean, Virginia was awarded a contract to conduct an "intercontinental ballistic missile (ICBM) deep basing communication study." The contract was to be completed by February 1988; the Federal Contract No. was: F04704-86-C-0045.[12]

In 1986 Bell Aerospace Textron was given a contract for an "ICBM deep basing gas propelled launcher feasibility demonstration." Plans called for completion of the contract by June 1988. The Federal Contract No. was: F04704-86-C-0100.[13] The wording of the contract announcement creates the image of a nuclear missile being ejected into flight from the mouth of a tunnel bored to the surface from deep underground.

In 1987 Earth Technology, of San Bernardino, California was awarded a multi-million dollar increase to a previously awarded contract, in order to carry out what the Department of Defense rather fuzzily referred to as "geotechnical and siting deep basing fine screening Phase I and II."[14] In ordinary language this would seem to mean that the Ballistic Missile Office paid this company millions of dollars to do a two-phase geological and technical study, to fine screen sites where a deep underground missile base would be located. The Federal Contract No. was: F04704-85-C-0084.

And finally, the Robbins Company, of Kent, Washington (the tunnel boring machine manufacturer mentioned in the Air Force Weapons Laboratory/Colorado School of Mines two-volume report mentioned above) was awarded a contract in 1985 for “egress/excavation development and testing.”[15] Presumably, this refers to excavation for egress of nuclear missiles from deep underground, since the contract was let by the Ballistic Missile Office at Norton Air Force Base. The Federal Contract No. was: F04704-85-C-0112.

So is there really a secret, military tunnel system? The short answer to this question is: I am not certain.

But the documents, articles and contracts referred to above suggest it is entirely possible that the military, working through the Ballistic Missile Office at Norton Air Force Base, with the probable assistance of the Army Corps of Engineers and private companies such as Robbins, Earth Technology, and others, has secretly built an extensive, very deeply buried tunnel system and nuclear missile complex, somewhere in the United States, perhaps somewhere in the West.

If it has been made, this system may be, in its totality, hundreds of miles long and thousands of feet underground. If it exists it is certainly very well hidden. And if it exists it may very well explain either partly or wholly the recurrent rumors in UFOlogy about a secret tunnel system in the southwestern United States. But even if it has not been built, the extensive plans, studies, and various contracts referred to above would be sufficient to fuel rumors about the existence of such a tunnel system.

From the standpoint of disinformation there is another possibility: that the military has really built a tunnel system of the sort described here, but has tried to hide its existence under a tabloid-style cover story of alien tunneling activities. According to this hypothetical scenario the military would count on the “alien” connection to be sufficiently ridiculous in the public eye that if word of the tunnels ever surfaced in the media they could be discounted as the fevered imaginings of daffy UFOlogists and other flaky characters, and nothing more. In that way, the Pentagon could carry out its underground agenda and prying eyes would be deflected by the threat of public humiliation and ridicule.

Access Building
Protective Enclosure
Access Shaft
Ventilation Shaft

ILLUSTRATION 1 - Even though hidden from public view behind layers of high security, entrances to underground bases nevertheless can be big enough to literally drive a truck into. Two means of approach are shown here. *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Literature Survey of Underground Construction Methods for Application to Hardened Facilities.*

- PLAN -
- PROFILE -
SEWERAGE TREATMENT
HIGHWAY
HELIPORT
STREAM
COMMUNITY
COMM. POWER
ROCK COVER
NOT DESIRABLE
REQUIREMENTS
*SPACE
Operational
Support
Utilities
Dining
Sleeping
Storage
Medical
Other
PROTECTION
*Cover
Blast
Fallout
Chemical
Biological
Warning
Recovery
*ACCESSIBILITY
Highway
Railroad
Airfield
Supplies
DISPERSAL
Industrial Centers
Prime Targets
POPULATION
Operating
Maintenance
Family
*SUPPORT
Existing Base
Community
New Facilities
UTILITIES
Power
*Water
Communications
FUNCTIONAL
Tactical Posts
Radio Transmission
Special Missions
Underground site plan and requirements

ILLUSTRATION 2 - Example of Army Corps of Engineers plan for an underground base, circa late 1950s. Notice the microwave towers for communication and planned proximity to a community, highway, railroad tracks and power lines. Note, too, that two entrances are preferred and that there is a vertical shaft to the surface as well, perhaps for air. *Source: M.D. Kirkpatrick, in* ***Protective Construction in a Nuclear Age: Proceedings of the 2nd Protective Construction Symposium, 24-26 March 1959, Vol. I****, ed. J.J. O'Sullivan (New York: The Macmillan Co., 1961).*

Illustration 3 - There is an underground facility beneath this ridge in the Manzano foothills on the outskirts of Albuquerque, New Mexico. This underground installation, begun in the late 1940s, is on Kirtland Air Force Base. *Photo by the author.*

ILLUSTRATION 4 - An underground chamber in the mysterious Los Alamos Lab facility, circa 1940s. After repeated requests, the Department of Energy released a badly blurred photostatic copy of a magazine article that included this photograph. See Pages 27-30 for the whole story. *Original publication unknown.*

Decontamination facility
Turn around
Blast door
Fresh air-intake and
blast-closure valves
Chemical Corps filter units
Primary AC equipment
Reservoir
Engine exhaust, only hole to surface
Engine generator
Reservoir
Fuel oil storage
Secondary AC equipment
Blast door

Example of underground plant arrangement

ILLUSTRATION 5 - Even in the 1950s, military planning for sizeable underground installations was in full swing. Note the decontamination room, the chemical filter units, the blast closure valves on the fresh air intake units, and the water reservoirs. *From U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Protective Features and Utilities.*

Intake tower
Sump
Drainpipe
Air-intake shaft

Example of air-intake shafts

ILLUSTRATION 6 - Two ways of protecting the fresh air intake from above ground, circa 1950s. *From U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Protective Features and Utilities.*

Muffler
Calyx hole engine exhaust
Combustion air-intake pipe
Blast-closure valve
Blast door
Combustion air-intake and exhaust system

ILLUSTRATION 7 - Machinery powered by internal-combustion engines underground would use up valuable breathing air, so the military planners in the 1950s devised a way to supply air to the machines, and exhaust the fumes. *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers,* *Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Protective Features and Utilities*.

GRANITE
DOLOMITE
GRANITE
DOLOMITIZED LIMESTONE
GRANITE
SALT ANTICLINE
SANDSTONE
GRANITE
GRANITE
GRANITE
GRANITE
DENVER
SALT LAKE CITY
LAS VEGAS
LOS ANGELES
PHOENIX
ALBUQUERQUE
DALLAS
SAN ANTONIO
RENO
OMAHA
WICHITA
SCALE IN MILES
1
2
3
4
5
6
8
9
10
11
12

ILLUSTRATION 8 - In 1964, the Army Corps of Engineers picked 12 sites suitable for the construction of 600-ft. diameter cavities 4,000 ft. underground, for the purpose of setting off nuclear bomb test explosions. *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. I.*

SCALE IN MILES
A
A'
SHALE AND SANDSTONE
GRANITIC ROCK
DISTANCE IN FT

SCHEMATIC GEOLOGIC SECTION SHOWING LOCATIONS OF VERTICAL SHAFT, HORIZONTAL, AND INCLINED ACCESS IN GRANITIC ROCK OVERLAIN BY SEDIMENTARY COVER

Site 6, granite with sedimentary cover, Mesa County, Colorado

ILLUSTRATION 9 - One of the sites selected by the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers in 1964, suitable for constructing a large cavity, deep underground, for testing nuclear bombs. Note that the horizontal option for access takes the form of a tunnel miles long. *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. I.*

ILLUSTRATION 10 - A 1964 plan from the Army Corps of Engineers to construct a large underground cavity 4,000 feet underneath Argus Peak, northwest of Trona, California. If built, this facility would today be within the boundaries of the China Lake Naval Weapons Center, which has long been rumored to be the site of a massive underground installation. *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. III.*

ILLUSTRATION 11 - A beautiful piece of drafting work from the Army Corps of Engineers, circa 1964. Was this facility, proposed for construction within the boundaries of present-day China Lake Naval Weapons Center, northwest of Trona, California, ever built? *Source: U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, __Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. III__.*

DEEP UNDERGROUND MAGAZINES
SHAFT
300ft
300ft
5-46
Underground Weapons Storage Concept

ILLUSTRATION 12 - You'd think the Navy would stick to the water, but no -- they have plans to dig underground, too. Here they're figuring out how to store and hide their weapons. *Source: R. Hibbard, et. al., Subsurface Deployment of Naval Facilities, 1972.*

ILLUSTRATION 13 - The Nevada Test Site, shown here in an official Department of Energy photo taken in 1980, at the time of a less than 20-kiloton nuclear bomb test that took place 1,280 feet beneath Rainier Mesa. The test, designed by the Los Alamos National Laboratory, was conducted for the U.S. Defense Nuclear Agency. There are three underground entrances visible; one is large enough to receive a train. The numerous parked trucks are reminders of the large numbers of people who work underground. They're not likely, though, to discuss their work with you: the secrecy oaths that they sign are very intimidating. *Department of Energy photo.*

ILLUSTRATION 14 - Miners at work in tunnels beneath Rainier Mesa at the Nevada Test Site. They're stabilizing the walls with rock bolts and epoxy so that when the nuclear explosions go off, the walls won't crumble. *Department of Energy photo.*

■ INSTRUMENT ALCOVES

ILLUSTRATION 15 - A partial map of "N" Tunnel, just one of the many tunnel complexes at the Nevada Test Site. Most of the black boxes are instrument alcoves. This labyrinth of passageways and tunnels -- and it's only a fragment of the whole -- reveals how much time and energy has been spent underground by just part of just one government agency at just one site. *Deparment of Energy photo.*

ILLUSTRATION 16 - A "line-of-sight" pipe under construction under Rainier Mesa at the Nevada Test Site. These pipes, which can be up to 27 ft. in diameter, serve as test chambers that house monitoring equipment. They are placed 900 to 2,000 ft. from the nuclear blast. *Defense Nuclear Agency photo.*

ILLUSTRATION 17 - Construction of nuclear test monitoring chambers in a tunnel under Rainier Mesa, at the Nevada Test Site. *Department of Energy photo.*

ILLUSTRATION 18 - The one problem -- and it's a big one -- that the nuclear industry has not yet solved is what to do with nuclear waste. This test, run from 1980-83 at the Nevada Test Site, evaluated the effects of storing spent reactor fuel in a granite formation, 1,400 ft. underground. The spent nuclear fuel elements are in steel-lined holes in the floor, capped by 5,000 lb. concrete plugs. *Department of Energy photo.*

Northrop Facility
Power Line
Edwards Air Force Base →
Cattle Gate
Best View
Dirt Roads
Hills
Dirt Road
Rosamond
Edwards AFB
Rosamond
Lancaster
Palmdale
Los Angeles
180th St.
170th St.
Highway 14
N
Highway 138 (Avenue D)
Air Force Plant 42
Ave. M
Ave. P
Lancaster
Palmdale Blvd.
240th St.
McDonnell Douglas Facility
Ave. R
Ave. R-8
Highway 14
Sierra Hwy.
Black Butte
235 St. E.
Best View
RR Tracks
165th St.
155th St.
Largo Vista Rd.
Palmdale
Three Sisters (Hills)
Ave. U
Black Butte Basin Rd.
Pearlblossom Hwy. (138)

ILLUSTRATION 19 - Local maps for finding the Northrop and McDonnell Douglas facilities in the Antelope Valley of Southern California. The Northrop facility is rumored to have as many as 42 underground levels. These plants feature strange installations not unlike the photographs from the Lockheed Plant in Hellendale, California (See Illustrations 20 and 21). This whole area is reported to be a great place to spot very unconventional aircraft. *This illustration reprinted with permission from the November 1992 HUFON Report, the newsletter of the Houston UFO Network, PO Box 942, Bellaire, TX 77402 (713)850-1352.*

ILLUSTRATION 20 - Lockheed's mysterious Hellendale, California facility. The underground entrance (shown in close-up in lower photo) is in foreground. Although the long paved surface would seem to be a landing strip, it is interrupted by two huge pylons, which serve to render this "landing strip" unusable for conventional fixed-wing aircraft. *Photos collection of the author.*

ILLUSTRATION 21 - Long shot and close-up view of unknown object on a test pylon at Lockheed's Hellendale, California facility. The pylon can be lowered into an underground chamber until it disappears from view (the white area around its base are doors which open and close). Some reports say that this is a radar testing facility, and the antenna dish bounces radar waves off test objects. *Photos collection of the author.*

DEEP BASED FSRF
External View - Deep Underground Base
Access Road
To Support Base
Access Tunnel Portal

ILLUSTRATION 22 - A 1982 report from the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology contained this picture of what a deep underground base for strategic missiles would look like -- from the outside. *Source*: *Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles, Vol. 2, Briefings on Systems Concepts and Requirements*, *Fed. Doc. No. NRC/CETS/TT-82-2.*

DEEP BASED FSRF
Cutaway View - Deep Underground Base
Tunnel System
Pre-Dug Exits
Access Tunnel
Access Road
To Support Base
Access Tunnel Portal

ILLUSTRATION 23 - Cutaway view of a deep underground base. Note the pre-dug exits for possible missile launchers. *Source: Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles, Vol. 2, Briefings on Systems Concepts and Requirements, Fed. Doc. No. NRC/CETS/TT-82-2.*

DEEP BASED FSRF
Internal Arrangement of Deep Underground Base - During Post-Attack Digout Operation
Missile Transporter - Launcher
Fuel-Cell Power Units (2)
Reactant Tanks for Fuel-Cell Power Units
Missile Transporter-Launcher
Environmental Control Unit (Provides Ventilation & Air-Conditioning)
Continuous Tunnel Parallel to Mountain Face
Maintenance Shop
5% Upslope from Main Tunnel
Crew Accomodations
Muck Cars
Predug Exit 20% Upslope Toward Surface
Tunnel Boring Machine

ILLUSTRATION 24 - The tunnel boring machine (TBM) inside the pre-dug exit goes into action and bores the rest of the way out from deep underground. In this representation, the missile transporter and launcher are in the background. *Source: Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles, Vol. 2, Briefings on Systems Concepts and Requirements, Fed. Doc. No. NRC/CETS/TT-82-2.*

Basalt Caprock
Relatively Uniform Formation of Very Low-Strength Rock, with Low Mass Permeability
Deep Base
Preconstructed Perimeter Tunnels
Partial Egress Paths
Preconstructed and Hardened
Ground Surface
Egress Excavation after Attack at Any Location Around Perimeter Tunnel
Groundwater Table
Crater Rubble and Fracture Zone
Crater
Desert Alluvium

Egress through very low-strength rock with crater in alluvium; preconstructed partial egress paths to perimeter tunnel.

ILLUSTRATION 25 - Here's a side view of the post-attack dig-out tunnel. *Source: Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles, Vol. 1, Evaluation of Technical Issues, Fed. Doc. No. NRC/CETS/TT-82-1.*

SMALL DIAMETER
USAF - DEEP BASING PROJECT
D16450

ILLUSTRATION 26 - Here's a detailed schematic from the Air Force for a combination tunnel-boring machine and nuclear missile launcher that would be used to dig out of a deep underground missile base and fire a missile. The deep base would be at least a half mile underground. *Source: Tunnel boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System, Vol. 1, Pt. 1, Application Feasibility, Fed. Tech. Doc. No. AFWL-TR-79-120 (August 1980).*

Potential Geologically Suitable Areas
A. COLUMBIA PLATEAU- NORTH
B COLUMBIA PLATEAU-SOUTH
C NORTH-CENTRAL MONTANA
D SAWTOOTH MOUNTAINS
E SNAKE RIVER PLAIN
F. DENVER BASIN
G WASATCH / TAVAPUTS PLATEAU
H. SAN JUAN RANGE
I. KIAPAROWITS PLATEAU
J PECOS
K NATANES PLATEAU
L. AQUARIUS MOUNTAINS
M MOUNTAIN HOME RANGE
N. SOUTH-CENTRAL NEVADA
O. WEST CENTRAL NEVADA
P PYRAMID LAKE / CARSON SINK
0 100 200 300 MILES

ILLUSTRATION 27 - The government identified these 16 spots as potential sites for deep underground basing facilities for strategic nuclear missiles. *Source:* *Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles, Vol. 2, Briefings on Systems Concepts and Requirements*, *Fed. Doc. No. NRC/CETS/TT-82-2.*

ILLUSTRATION 28 - Two tunnel boring machines (TBMs) sold by The Robbins Company. The top model was built for La Reunion irrigation project; the bottom one for Boston Outfall. The front ends of these TBMs chew away the rock; the structures that trail behind house the operators and carry away the muck. *Photos used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

BANVERKET
VÄSTKUSTBANAN
en länk i tiden
KRAFTBYGGARNA

ILLUSTRATION 29 - This Jarva MK27 model was used to build the Hallandsås rail tunnel in Sweden. *Photo used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

Shaft boring machine

ILLUSTRATION 30 - The Robbins Company manufactures huge shaft-boring machines for excavating large vertical shafts. *Photo used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

ILLUSTRATION 31 - This Mobile Miner, sold by The Robbins Company, cuts a large D-shaped tunnel. *Photo used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

ROOM-AND-PILLAR MINING

PANEL DEVELOPMENT
FOR SUB-LEVEL CAVING

ILLUSTRATION 32 - Depiction of a Robbins Company Mobile Miner in action. The sales literature promises "high advance rates ... " and "... high speed tunneling ..." The large area under excavation in the diagram is amazing; each of the grids in the lower figure is 1,000 ft. on a side. *Photo used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

DEVELOPMENT OF CUT-AND-FILL STOPE
STOPE
70°
5m
10m

ILLUSTRATION 33 - The Mobile Miner can cut this kind of access tunnel, which is over 15 feet wide. *Photo used with permission from The Robbins Company.*

FLAME-JET TUNNELER
30-FT DESIGN
BLOWING/SUCTION AIR SUPPLY
AIR DUCTS (2)
2-4 FT DIA.
CENTRIFUGAL COMPRESSOR
200 PSI
SUCTION
MUCKER BLADE
BLOWING
BURNER SECTOR
BREAKER ARM
CONVEYOR
CONTROL ROOM
TREAD HYDRAULIC
DRIVE

ILLUSTRATION 34 - A Flame Jet Tunneler, as pictured by the U.S. Dept. of Transportation, Office of High Speed Ground Transportation. *From Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Volume II - Systems Analysis and Experimental Investigations (May 1968), Fed. Doc. No. PB-178199.*

SKETCH OF TUNNELER LAYOUT FOR 10-FT DIAMETER TUNNEL

1 BURNER FLOW RATE - 12,500 CFM AT 140 PSIA

MACHINE CUTTING HEAD AS DEVELOPED IN FIGS. 11-15
A
A
SUCTION DUCT
BLOWING AIR
CRAWLER TREADS (AS IN FIGS. 9 & 10)
COMPRESSOR DRIVE MOTOR
1800 RPM
B
B
ALLIS-CHALMERS "CENTRI-STAK" COMPRESSORS
INTER-COOLER
COMPRESSOR DRIVE MOTOR
1800 RPM
C
C
LIFE SUPPORT CAB
TUNNELER ROTARY DRIVE
TREAD DRIVE
MAXIMUM BLOCK SIZE
SECTION A - A
BLOWING DUCT
COMPRESSOR
WATER DUCT
MUCK CONVEYOR
6-FT MAN
SUCTION DUCT
SECTION B - B
MAIN LONGITUDINAL MEMBER ENCLOSES MUCK CONVEYOR
SUCTION DUCT (FORMED WOODEN SECTION)
BLOWING DUCT
CAB
SECTION C-C

ILLUSTRATION 35 - A Flame Jet Tunneler, as pictured in cross-section by the U.S. Dept. of Transportation, Office of High Speed Ground Transportation. *From* *__Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Volume II - Systems Analysis and Experimental Investigations__* *(May 1968), Fed. Doc. No. PB-178199.*

AIR-CONDITIONED CAB
10 MAN DESIGN
AIR FLOW TO HEAT REJECTION SYSTEM
AIR FROM MAIN TUNNEL VENTILATION SYSTEM
AIR FLOW TO VENTILATION SYSTEM
AIR CONDITIONER
ICE STORAGE BIN
VENTILATION DUCTS
AIR LOCK PURGE DUCT
AIR LOCK

ILLUSTRATION 36 - The air-conditioned cab, capacity 10 men, in a Flame Jet Tunneler, as pictured in cross-section by the U.S. Dept. of Transportation, Office of High Speed Ground Transportation. The heat generated by the cutting head of this machine would be intense, judging by the huge ice storage bin, air conditioning, and air lock. *From Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Volume II - Systems Analysis and Experimental Investigations (May 1968), Fed. Doc. No. PB-178199.*

HIGH-TEMPERATURE PROTECTIVE-SUIT DESIGNS

FROM REF. 39

a) BACK PACK CONFIGURATION b) UMBILICAL CONFIGURATION

BETA CLOTH
GLASSWOOL
LIQUID TUBES
6 OZ YD² RESTRAINT CLOTH
LIQUID-COOLED GARMENT
TUNNEL ENVIRONMENT
BODY

c) COVERALL MATERIAL CROSS SECTION

ILLUSTRATION 37 - Protective suiting for the operators of the Flame Jet Tunnelers. The umbilical cords hook up to an elaborate cooling apparatus (not shown here). *From Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Volume II - Systems Analysis and Experimental Investigations (May 1968), Fed. Doc. No. PB-178199.*

UNIT 1
UNIT 2
UNIT 3
UNIT 4
UNIT 5
Conceptual example of a pulsed electron tunnel excavator.
UNIT 6
UNIT 7
UNIT 8
UNIT 9

ILLUSTRATION 38 - A conceptual drawing of a hard rock tunneling machine that uses pulsed electron beams to cut the rock. To fit this illustration on one page, the drawing was cut between Unit 5 and Unit 6; in the original, the whole machine forms one linked set of cars. *From Accelerator Division Annual Reports, 1 July 1972-31 December 1974, Fed. Doc. No. LBL-3835, UC-28 Particle Accelerators, TID-4500-R62.*

United States Patent

Armstrong et al.

[11] 3,693,731

[45] Sept. 26, 1972

[54] METHOD AND APPARATUS FOR TUNNELING BY MELTING

[72] Inventors: Dale E. Armstrong, Santa Fe; Berthus B. McInteer; Robert L. Mills; Robert M. Potter; Eugene S. Robinson; John C. Rowley; Morton C. Smith, all of Los Alamos, N. Mex.

[73] Assignee: The United States of America as represented by the United States Atomic Energy Commission

[22] Filed: Jan. 8, 1971

[21] Appl. No.: 104,872

[52] U.S. Cl. 175/11, 175/16, 175/19
[51] Int. Cl. E21c 21/00
[58] Field of Search 175/11–16

[56] References Cited

UNITED STATES PATENTS

3,396,806	8/1968	Benson	175/16 X
3,117,634	1/1964	Persson	175/94
1,993,641	3/1935	Aarts et al.	175/13
1,898,926	2/1933	Aarts et al.	175/16
3,115,194	12/1963	Adams	175/11
3,225,843	12/1965	Ortloff	175/94 X
3,357,505	12/1967	Armstrong et al.	175/16

Primary Examiner—Marvin A. Champion
Assistant Examiner—Richard E. Favreau
Attorney—Roland A. Anderson

[57] ABSTRACT

A machine and method for drilling bore holes and tunnels by melting in which a housing is provided for supporting a heat source and a heated end portion and in which the necessary melting heat is delivered to the walls of the end portion at a rate sufficient to melt rock and during operation of which the molten material may be disposed adjacent the boring zone in cracks in the rock and as a vitreous wall lining of the tunnel so formed. The heat source can be electrical or nuclear but for deep drilling is preferably a nuclear reactor.

[illegible] Claims, 7 Drawing Figures

ILLUSTRATION 39 - A nuclear-powered tunneling machine patented by the United States of America, represented by the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. This tunneler is designed to convert the rock that it excavates into a molten liquid, which fills cracks in the rock, bonds to the walls of the tunnel, and leaves behind a smooth, vitreous lining. The United States Patent Office issued the patent on 26 September 1972.

United States Patent [19]
Altseimer et al.

[11] **3,881,777**
[45] **May 6, 1975**

[54] **APPARATUS AND METHOD FOR LARGE TUNNEL EXCAVATION IN SOFT AND INCOMPETENT ROCK OR GROUND**

[75] Inventors: **John H. Altseimer; Robert J. Hanold**, both of Los Alamos, N. Mex.

[73] Assignee: **The United States of America as represented by the United States Energy Research and Development Administration**, Washington, D.C.

[22] Filed: **Jan. 25, 1974**

[21] Appl. No.: **436,402**

[52] **U.S. Cl.** **299/33**; 175/11; 176/DIG. 3; 299/14
[51] **Int. Cl.** **E21c 9/04**
[58] **Field of Search** .... 299/33, 14; 175/11, 16; 61/45 R

[56] **References Cited**
UNITED STATES PATENTS

3,334,945	8/1967	Bartlett	299/33
3,396,806	8/1968	Benson	175/11
3,667,808	6/1972	Tabor	299/33
3,693,731	9/1972	Armstrong et al.	175/11

Primary Examiner—Frank C. Abbott
Assistant Examiner—William F. Pate, III
Attorney, Agent, or Firm—John A. Horan; Henry Heyman

[57] **ABSTRACT**

A tunneling machine for producing large tunnels in soft rock or wet, clayey, unconsolidated or bouldery earth by simultaneously detaching the tunnel core by thermal melting a boundary kerf into the tunnel face and forming a supporting excavation wall liner by deflecting the molten materials against the excavation walls to provide, when solidified, a continuous wall supporting liner, and detaching the tunnel face circumscribed by the kerf with powered mechanical earth detachment means and in which the heat required for melting the kerf and liner material is provided by a compact nuclear reactor.

The invention described herein was made in the course of, [illegible] under a contract with the U. S. ATOMIC ENERGY COMMISSION.

3 Claims, 5 Drawing Figures

ILLUSTRATION 40 - Another nuclear-powered tunneling machine patented by the United States of America, this time represented by the U.S. Energy Research and Development Administration. The United States Patent Office issued the patent papers on 6 May 1975.

PATENTED MAY 6 1975
3,881,777
SHEET 1 OF 2
39
45
41
43
55
37
47
51
WATER
53
AIR
57
49
Fig. 5
11
69
67
65
63
37
13'
13
19
21
17
Fig. 1
LINER THICKENING
PENETRATION
COOLING
MOLTEN ROCK
SOLID ROCK
GLASS
Fig. 4
COOLING
13'
13
37
39
PENETRATION
CONSOLIDATION
Fig. 3

ILLUSTRATION 41 - Another page of drawings from the 6 May 1975 patent for a nuclear-powered tunneling machine, granted to Los Alamos, New Mexico inventors working for the U.S. Energy Research and Development Administration. This machine would leave behind neat, glass-lined tunnels.

Materials Removal Conveyor
Utilities
Structural Shell
Grip Pods
Nuclear Power System
Glass Forming Section
Kerf Melter
Gripping Rams
Thrust Ram
Mechanical Cutters
Utilities
Structural Shell
Nuclear Power System
Grip Pods
Glass Forming Section
Kerf Melter
Materials Removal Conveyor
Gripping Rams
Thrust Ram
Muck Auger and Removal Port
Thermal Stress Fracturing Penetrators

ILLUSTRATION 42 - Two different types of Nuclear Subterrene Tunnel Boring Machines. These machines are designed to melt their way through the rock and soil, leaving behind neat, glass lined tunnels. *Source: Large Subterrene Rock-Melting Tunnel Excavation Systems: A Preliminary Study, Fed. Doc. No. LA-5210-MS.*

LUNAR TUNNELER
COOLING SECTION
PROPULSION SYSTEM
(AND SUPPORT)
DUMP TRUCK
HEATING SECTION
CERAMIC SECTION
LASER CONTROL SYSTEM
MECHANICAL HEAD WITH CUTTERS
TUNNELER INTERIOR
BELT CONVEYOR
TURBINES
NUCLEAR REACTOR
HOLDING TANK SYSTEM
FIGURE 21: EXCAVATION CONCEPT

ILLUSTRATION 43 - A Lunar Tunneler, as proposed in a project funded by a grant from NASA/USRA. *Reprinted with permission from Proposal for a Lunar Tunnel-boring Machine, by Allen, Cooper, Davila, Mahendra and Tagaras, report presented to Prof. Stan Lowy, Dept. of Aerospace Engineering, Texas A&M University (5 May 1988).*

REAR VIEW
OF DUMP TRUCK
(SUSPENSION)
IN TUNNEL
ON FLAT LAND

FIGURE 25: DUMP TRUCK SUSPENSION

FIGURE 20: EXCAVATION SYSTEMS

ILLUSTRATION 44 - The dumping process from the Lunar Tunneler proposal. In the bottom drawing, excavated lunar soil is sprayed into a large pile by a movable car. *Reprinted with permission from Proposal for a Lunar Tunnel-boring Machine, by Allen, Cooper, Davila, Mahendra and Tagaras, report presented to Prof. Stan Lowy, Dept. of Aerospace Engineering, Texas A&M University (5 May 1988).*

Nevada
Salt Lake
Salt Lake City
Pyramid Lake
Austin
Ely
Utah
Round Mt.
Currant
Lund
Blue Jay
Blue Eagle Ranch
Tonopah
Nyala
Eagle Valley
Goldfield
Adaven
Cedar City
N
California
Nevada Test Site
Rachel
Elgin
Alamo
St. George
Beatty
Bunkerville
Arizona
Lathrop Wells
Indian Springs
Overton
Pahrump
Las Vegas
Shoshone
Offsite Family
Community Monitoring Sta. Family

ILLUSTRATION 45 - The Environmental Protection Agency tracks the migration of atomic particles from the Nevada Test Site into the animals and humans of the surrounding environment. This map, modified from an EPA map, shows the location of about 40 families who are brought into the EPA twice a year for whole-body analysis. Part of their examination takes place in the reclining chair pictured in the photograph. The machinery which hangs from the ceiling performs a whole-body scan of the subject. *Source: U.S. Congress, Office of Technology Assessment, The Containment of Underground Nuclear Explosions, OTA-ISC-414 (Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office, October 1989).*

Nevada
California
Utah
Nevada
Larsen Rn.
Young Rn.
Burdick Rn.
Harbecke Rn.
Round Mtn.
Berg Rn.
Manzonie Rn
Currant
Lund
McKenzie Dairy
Blue Eagle Rn.
Twin Spgs Rn.
Hyala
Sharp's Rn.
N
Lemon Rn.
Dyer
Frayne Res.
Goldfield
Penoyer
Farms
Darrel Hansen
Rn.
June Cox
Rn.
Lida
Livestock
Co.
Nellis AFB
Range Complex
I. Brown Rn.
Alamo
Whipple Rn.
Brent Jones
Dairy
Nevada
Test
Site
St. George
Cannon Farm
SF and K Dairy
Scale in Miles
0
50
100
0
50
100
150
Scale in Kilometers
John Deer
Decade Corp
Knudsen Corp
Logandale
LDS Dairy Farm
Cedarsage Farm
• Milk sampling locations
Nevada
California
Arizona
Bill Nelson Dairy
Hinkley

ILLUSTRATION 46 - Samples of raw milk are collected each month from about 25 farms surrounding the Nevada Test Site. *Source: U.S. Congress, Office of Technology Assessment, The Containment of Underground Nuclear Explosions, OTA-ISC-414 (Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office, October 1989).*

ILLUSTRATION 47 - Is the government more concerned about nuclear pollution of the environment than it lets on? Every year it collects milk samples for analysis from its standby milk surveillance network, which is made up of all of the major milksheds west of the Mississippi River. *Source: U.S. Congress, Office of Technology Assessment, The Containment of Underground Nuclear Explosions, OTA-ISC-414 (Washington, DC: US Government Printing Office, October 1989).*

US005166676A

United States Patent [19]
Milheiser

[11] **Patent Number: 5,166,676**
[45] **Date of Patent: Nov. 24, 1992**

[54] IDENTIFICATION SYSTEM

[75] Inventor: **Thomas A. Milheiser**, Littleton, Colo.

[73] Assignee: **Destron/IDI, Inc.**, Boulder, Colo.

[21] Appl. No.: **484,458**

[22] Filed: **Feb. 16, 1990**

Related U.S. Application Data

[60] Continuation of Ser. No. 388,761, Aug. 2, 1989, abandoned, which is a continuation of Ser. No. 165,330, Mar. 8, 1988, abandoned, which is a division of Ser. No. 814,492, Dec. 30, 1985, Pat. No. 4,730,188, which is a continuation of Ser. No. 580,401, Feb. 15, 1984, abandoned.

[51] **Int. Cl.^{5}** **H04Q 1/00**
[52] **U.S. Cl.** **340/825.540**; 340/825.34
[58] **Field of Search** 340/825.54, 825.55, 340/825.69, 825.72, 825.34, 825.94, 572; 455/118, 41; 375/45, 46, 62, 49; 370/53

[56] **References Cited**

U.S. PATENT DOCUMENTS

3,022,492	2/1962	Kleist et al.	340/825.34 X
3,137,847	6/1966	Kleist	340/825.69 X
3,689,885	9/1972	Kaplan et al.	455/41 X
3,890,581	6/1975	Stuart et al.	375/62 X
3,898,619	8/1975	Carsten et al.	340/572 X
4,114,151	9/1978	Denne et al.	
4,129,855	12/1978	Rodrian	340/825.54
4,287,596	9/1981	Chari	375/49
4,313,033	1/1982	Walker et al.	370/53
4,333,073	6/1982	Beigel	340/825.54
4,368,439	1/1983	Shibuya et al.	375/62 X
4,388,524	6/1983	Walton	340/825.72 X

OTHER PUBLICATIONS

Ray Ryan "Basic Digital Electronics", Tab Books, Blue Ridge Summit, Pa. pp. 52–55, 1975.

Primary Examiner—Ulysses Weldon
Attorney, Agent, or Firm—Earl C. Hancock; Francis A. Sirr

[57] **ABSTRACT**

A passive integrated transponder (PIT) is attached to or embedded in an item to be identified. It is excited via an inductive coupling from an interrogator. The PIT responds to the interrogator via the inductive coupling with a signal constituting a stream of data unique to the identified item. The signal is in the form of two different frequencies, a shift from one frequency to the second during a bit cell representing a data "one", and a shift from the second frequency to the first frequency representing a data "zero". The responsive signal is then detected and processed for utilization in a data storage or display device.

10 Claims, 7 Drawing Sheets

BACKGROUND AND OBJECTS OF THE INVENTION

The primary object of this invention is to provide a system for identifying an object, animal or person consisting essentially of two units, one being a passive integrated transponder (PIT) which is carried by or embedded in the thing or animal to be identified and which responds to interrogation with an identifying code, and the other unit being an interrogator-reader separate from the PIT.

Heretofore, in identification device systems, there is

ILLUSTRATION 48 - This U.S. patent describes the inner electronic workings of an injectable transponder. Note the detail from this patent, which says "The primary object of this invention is to provide a system for identifying an object, animal or person ..." More than one company in the U.S. now sells injectable electronic IDs. They are commonly used to identify livestock or companion animals.

Fact Sheet

United States Air Force
AIR FORCE MATERIEL COMMAND
Office of Public Affairs, Phillips Laboratory
3550 Aberdeen Ave SE, Kirtland AFB, NM 87117-5776
(505) 846-1911

LASER MEDICAL PAC

The Laser Medical Pac, being developed in-house by the USAF's Phillips Laboratory, is a very compact device that provides the field paramedic or physician a unique, portable, and battery-operated laser capability. The laser is able to cut like a scalpel, as well as coagulate bleeding, and close wounds.

The Laser Medical Pac has military applications for advanced trauma life support on the battlefield. It can be used by special operations personnel, pararescue jumpers, squadron medical elements, and flight surgeons. Civilian uses for the Pac are in stabilizing highway accident victims before they are transported to a hospital.

The laser component is now commercially available. The commercial variety, however, requires an electrical power hookup.

The Phillips Laboratory system consists of a completely self-contained laser package that fits inside a beltpack. Laser energy is delivered to the instrument by a fiber-optic cable, the fiber providing very intense power density at the tip of the instrument. The output wavelength, which ranges from visible red to the mid-infrared, can be designed to provide different tissue interactions.

The Pac is powered by two 2-volt batteries to operate the laser and one 9-volt battery to power the electronics. It features a unique phase change heat sink that allows 20 minutes of continuous operation. (Under normal usage the heat capacity should allow unlimited thermal capacity.) The laser is protected against over-temperature by a thermal switch. A battery recharger port is also provided, as is a key lock for safety and security reasons. The fiber-optic is pig-tailed into the laser array and "pipes" the laser light to the variable focus lens. The light at the tip of the fiber is very intense (one kilowatt per square centimeter).

-MORE-

ILLUSTRATION 49 - This medical laser is portable enough to be worn on a belt pack around the waist, and can be used to either make cuts or close wounds. According to the Air Force, "It can be used by special operations personnel ..." *Reprinted with permission from Phillips Laboratory, Office of Public Affairs, Kirtland Air Force Base, NM.*

Trailing wire antenna
ALCC or ABNCP
ELF
Dipole buried antenna
Deep base

ILLUSTRATION 50 - Communication from a deep underground base could transmit through conventional ground lines; through a satellite or microwave dish; or -- as this illustration shows -- in a way that would be invisible to a surface observer. Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) communications transmit through the earth itself, using a widely-spread underground antenna system. *Source:* *Decision Analysis Methodology Applied to Deep Base Communications, Subtask Progress Report for 1985 Prepared for the Headquarters, Ballistic Missile Office, USAF. Document ID Nos.: AF MIPR No. FY 7653-85-00305; UCID - 20848; and DE87 000945.*

In any event, the evidence I have presented above is the closest I can come to documenting an actual, covert, underground tunnel system in the western states. This system may or may not exist.

The Department of Transportation Tunnel Plans

I have found less documentation for the Department of Transportation’s planned tunnel system in the Northeast. I was able to find a few documents, however, including one lengthy report that spoke forthrightly about constructing what it referred to as a “High Speed Ground Transportation (HSGT) system in the Northeast Corridor.” Presumably the system would be for the use of commuters, although just who would use the tunnels was left somewhat ambiguous. Vague reference to “vehicles” that would use the system also left some doubt as to the mode of transportation that was to have been employed. In the following chapter on unconventional tunneling technologies I present documentation on a flame-jet tunneling system intended for constructing a deeply buried, high speed rail tunnel system in the Northeast. These two sets of documents would appear to be describing plans for one and the same system, the more so since they were both published in the same year (1968).

As set forth in the document, the tunnel system could have ranged as deeply as 3,500 ft. underground. It was to have been at least 500 ft. underground when cutting beneath major rivers, with the exception of the Hudson, under which it was to cross at a depth of not less than 750 ft. Diameters for tunnels in the system were not specified, though a range of excavated diameters (not to be confused with finished diameters, which would be somewhat less due to the tunnel lining and support) all the way from 8 ft. to 40 ft. was discussed. Specifically, diameters of 8 ft., 20 ft., 30 ft. and 40 ft. were mentioned.

An obvious question is: why would the DOT bother to construct an inter-city tunnel system that would be less than 8 ft. in diameter? It hardly makes sense, except as an auxiliary or utility tunnel for a larger diameter companion tunnel. The larger diameters, of course, could conceivably accomodate some sort of rapid rail, or magnetic levitation train.[16]

Terminals were to range in size between 10,000 and 1,000,000 sq ft. in area, and to have multiple levels. They were slated to be located at least 300 ft., and in some cases, 500 ft. or more underground. They were to have been as much as 2,000 ft. long.

The terminals were to have been situated under or near: Washington, DC; Baltimore, Maryland; Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; New York, New York; New Haven, Connecticut; Hartford, Connecticut; and Boston, Massachusetts. The plans also called for at least one deep shaft between each city to connect with the system. The shafts were to be vertical, and quite large and deep – extending as far down as 3,500 ft., if necessary, and having a cross-section of between 50 and 500 sq. ft.[17]

Plans vs. Real Tunnels

Once again, the question arises: has this system been built? The planning study is certainly very interesting. In fact, it is just the sort of obscure document you would expect to find if, indeed, a secret tunnel system were being planned and/or built by the U.S. government.

But the reader must be clear on the fact that plans are one thing, and actual tunnels quite another. Sometimes plans culminate in completed construction projects; at other times, plans are never concretely realized and are relegated instead to a dusty shelf in the government documents collection.

I simply do not know if the government (or some other organization) has secretly built a high speed transportation tunnel sytem in the northeastern corridor of the United States. If you do, please send me the relevant documentation.

Chapter Six

TUNNELLING MACHINES (THE CONVENTIONAL TYPES AND THE SCIENCE FICTION “BLACK” MODELS)

As strange as some of the information that I’ve presented so far may seem, some of the tunneling machine plans discussed in this chapter are stranger still.

The first thing to understand is that there are actual tunnelling machines that crawl through the ground like giant mechanical earthworms with huge appetites. These tunneling machines are used on construction projects all over the world to build perfectly ordinary sewers, subways, utility lines, highways, railroads, aquaducts, hydroelectric projects – as well as jazzy, high-profile projects like the “Chunnel”, the tunnel underneath the English Channel that now makes it possible to travel on dry ground between England and France.

As for other, more bizarre tunnel systems and tunnel boring machines that are rumored to exist, the best that I can do is to present for your consideration in this chapter new and fascinating information that most readers probably have never seen before. At the least, I think the evidence that is set out in the following pages is intriguing and suggestive.

The discussion begins with the “conventional” machinery – which you may, nevertheless, find surprising.

Conventional Tunnel Boring Machines (TBMs)

Conventional Tunnel Boring Machines (or TBMs, as they are known in the trade) are huge, cylindrical, mechanical boring machines that tunnel through the rock and soil, chewing out circular tunnels that may range in diameter up to 35 ft. or more (See Illustrations 28 and 29). Conventional rock tunnelling TBMs are powered by electrical motors and have a cutting head, equipped with various metal attachments made of superhard alloys that cut the rock as the head rotates. The head rotates and the cutting tools dig into the rock, ripping and gouging it away. The excavated rock ("muck") is then passed back by a conveyor assembly to the rear of the machine, where it can be hauled away by truck or train.

The tunneling machine braces itself against the walls of the tunnel section it has just bored by means of powerful, hydraulic gripper pads. Other hydraulic jacks thrust the cutter head forward, against the face of the tunnel. When the cutter head is extended as far forward as the thrust jacks permit, the gripper pads are retracted, the machine is advanced forward against the face of the tunnel, the side gripper pads are again extended to lock the body of the machine solidly in place in the tunnel, and the thrust jacks again apply pressure to the cutter head, as it once again begins to grind and tear away at the tunnel face, boring its way through the rock. In brief, that is how a conventional tunnel boring machine works.[1]

The entire assembly, including cutting head, motors, transformers, hydraulic systems, mucking system and conveyors can be up to one hundred feet long or more, as the illustrations show.

The machine may be shielded, to keep rock and debris from falling in on the crew or to prevent tunnel collapse, until a protective tunnel lining can be put in place. Such a tunnel lining is commonly made of concrete or steel bracing. If the rock is stable enough, however, it may not be necessary to install a lining. Oftentimes rock bolts are used to stabilize the tunnel walls and roof. These are simply long steel rods, threaded on the end, that are screwed or driven into the rock, and which anchor small, flat, steel plates against the wall or roof of the tunnel (See Illustration 14). In this way, the rock bolts lend structural support to weak rock and help prevent rock falls and the like.

Over the last 35 years many of these tunnel-making machines have been produced. They have been used to construct utility conduits, highways, railroads, aquaducts, hydroelectric projects, subways, and more. There is an enormous amount of tunneling activity going on around the world, and most of it is perfectly straightforward, for legitimate purposes. A few of the companies that have manufactured TBMs are: (a) The Robbins Company of Kent, Washington; (b) Jarva Incorporated; (c) The Lawrence Division of the

Ingersoll Rand Company; (d) The Hughes Tool Company; (e) Dresser Industries; (f) The Wirth Corporation (a German company); and (g) Atlas Copco.[2]

Many companies have built tunneling machines, but my research shows the Robbins Company to be far and away the leading manufacturer of tunnel boring equipment – and, in fact, the Robbins Company promotes itself in sales materials as the foremost tunneling firm in the world. Robbins has been in business since the 1950s and has made many of the conventional TBMs in use. In 1993, The Robbins Company merged with Atlas Copco Mechanical Rock Excavation; the new business is known as "The Robbins Company: A company in the Atlas Copco Group". Promotional literature from the new Robbins Company says, "The next TBM we build for you, whether Robbins or Jarva, will be the best you have ever bought." All of the TBMs in Illustrations 28 and 29 were built by Robbins. That is not to say that other companies are not involved with tunneling projects, because they are.

For projects requiring a huge shaft bored straight down into the earth (and some of the projects described in this book call for vertical shafts), the Robbins Company manufactures the appropriate machinery (See Illustration 30).

In the Arnold Schwarzennegger movie, *Total Recall*, about a futuristic, CIA-operated mining colony on Mars, tunneling and mining machines were depicted that somewhat resemble machines that are already in actual use right here on Earth. These machines are called roadheaders, and mobile miners.[3] See Illustrations 31-33 for a Robbins mobile miner, and the kind of tunnels that it is capable of excavating. Robbins prides itself on the rapidity with which these types of machines operate. The brochure from which these illustrations are taken boasts: "The high advance rates of tunnel boring machines are well documented.…the Mobile Miner can provide continuous, rapid advance of headings, and can create ideal cross-sections for the safe and rapid transportation of men and equipment underground. The flexibility and maneuverability of the Mobile Miner provide high speed tunneling…"

Consider the size of the field in which the mobile miner is depicted as operating in Illustration 32: each of the square grids is 1,000 feet wide; the whole area is over a mile wide. Look at the beautiful dowward-spiralling tunnel in Illustration 33; the width of the tunnel is about 15 feet. That’s wide enough for two average-size cars to pass one another.

This is what industry is capable of doing right now, and it is impressive.

Drill and Blast Method

Before moving on to discuss nonconventional tunnel boring technologies I want to mention one other conventional method of tunneling, the drill and blast method. It has been used for a couple of centuries or more (mostly in hard rock mining) and its very name describes the method well.

Holes are drilled in the tunnel face; explosives are placed in the holes; the explosives are detonated; the rock disintegrates under the force of the explosion; and the disintegrated rock (muck) is removed by front end loaders to trucks, or other conveyors, such as narrow gauge trains, which cart away the debris. This cycle is repeated over and over again to lengthen the tunnel until the job is completed. There is nothing magical about this process. Any miner will tell you that it simply entails a lot of difficult, dangerous work.

No doubt much of the underground construction for the facilities mentioned in this report has been accomplished using the drill and blast method. While not glamorous, underground drilling and blasting is a time-proven, sure-fire way to excavate underground tunnels and chambers. It is a known technology and it works. All of the myriad mining companies in the United States and around the world use this technique every day to mine everything from coal, to copper, iron, salt, uranium, tin, gold, silver and lead.

In other words, there is a huge pool of workers in the United States alone who have experience in the mining industry and who have tunneled or excavated underground using drill and blast techniques. This author, for instance, was once employed by Morton Salt and actually worked for a brief period on the powder crew in a salt mine 800 ft. underground, drilling and blasting out huge caverns in the rock salt.

I can assure you that there is a ready supply of experienced labor that could easily be tapped for covert mining, tunneling and excavation projects – especially the kinds that pay good government wages!

Nonconventional Tunneling Machines

Like many students of UFOlogy (and perhaps like some of the readers of this book) I have heard rumors in recent years of mythical TBMs that use lasers to bore their way through the rock.

As the stories run, these wondrous machines slice through the subterranean depths like a hot knife through butter, leaving neat, glass-walled tunnels in their wake. Although I have never seen one of these machines, or the glass-walled tunnels they allegedly make, I do not dismiss these stories out of hand.

As you are about to see, it is entirely conceivable that laser powered Tunnel Boring Machines, or equally exotic machines, have been developed and have been put to work on secret tunneling projects. I don't positively know that to be the case, but after reading what follows the serious student will have to admit that it is at least possible that a powerful new generation of nonconventional TBMs may have been developed and deployed – out of the public eye.

There Must Be 50 Ways To Dig a Tunnel

A 1974 RANN report from Bechtel[4] sets out a whole grocery list of technologies, techniques and apparatuses that could be used for underground tunneling or excavation. They are all presented as "novel ground disintegration techniques," in an exploratory, research or developmental stage. As you will shortly see, though, at least some of these techniques may be a good deal more advanced than Bechtel was prepared to admit. This was probably as true in 1974, when Bechtel issued the report, as it is today. The techniques Bechtel listed were:

High Pressure Continuous Water Jet
Low Pressure Percussive Water Jet
Mechanically Assisted Continuous Water Jet
High Frequency Electrical Drill
Thermal Mechanical Fragmentation

Conical Borer
Turbine Drill
Pellet Drill
Spark Drill
Electric Arc Drills
Induction Drilling
Plasma
Microwaves
Jet Piercing
Terra-Jetter
R.E.A.M.
Explosive Drill
Ultrasonic Drill
Hydraulic Rock Hammer
Subterrene
Water Cannon
Electrical Disintegration
Electron Beam Gun
Flame Forced Flame
Lasers

Some of this stuff is straight out of Buck Rogers. There’s no getting around the fact that the plain English translation of some of these entries is: *ray gun*. It does seem a bit far-fetched, but suppose there are actually machines that use these technologies tunneling away beneath our feet!

No matter whether it’s science fiction fantasy or hightech reality, this information comes straight out of an official government document. Here is a case where truth may yet prove to be as strange as any fiction!

The Already Strange Gets Even Stranger

Lest you think the 1974 Bechtel report to be beyond the pale, consider a 1971 article on tunnelling technology that contained the following entries:

- ITT Research Institute has just completed studies of the use of hyper-velocity fluid jets and pellet impact – design of a high-velocity water cannon is underway and a prototype is planned for testing in 1972.
- United Aircraft Research Labs is studying use of a high-power pulsed laser mounted on a boring machine to weaken rock structures ahead of the cutter blades. If the study is successful, a prototype will be designed this year and then built for field testing in 1972.[5]

Water cannon…laser…both of these techniques were mentioned in the 1974 Bechtel report. And this report, from three years earlier, strongly suggests that the techniques were considered more than theoretically interesting. Plans for construction of working prototypes are specifically mentioned. Might these machines actually have been built?

Certainly interest in these exotic mining and excavation methods continued, because an article in the 1982 edition of an industry handbook[6] listed many of the same technologies again:

MECHANICAL: Water Cannon, Vibration, Abrasion, Cavitation, Pellet Impact

THERMAL: High-Velocity Flame, Flame Jet Cutting, Electric Arc, Electron Beam, Plasma, Freezing, Laser, Atomic Fusion

CHEMICAL: Softeners, Dissolvers

Again, most of these techniques are mentioned in the 1974 Bechtel report cited above. The techniques mentioned in the 1971 article discussed above also appear in this 1982 article.

The author of the 1982 article singles out the water cannon and flame jets as showing particular promise for tunneling machines. The water cannon essentially grinds away the rock face by directing a high-pressure, pulsed, water jet against it. Calweld and Exotech, Inc. are two companies mentioned in connection with development of water jet-assisted tunneling.

Flame jet tunneling uses very high temperature jets of flame to cut through the rock. United Aircraft Laboratories, cited above in connection with a partially laser powered tunneling machine, has done developmental work on flame jet tunneling.

Flame-Jet Tunneling

In a three-volume 1968 report, United Aircraft Research Laboratories presented a study of the feasibility of flame-jet tunneling. The report seems to have been stimulated by the professed desire of the U.S. Department of Transportation to find a more efficient means of tunneling so that it could construct a high speed, underground rail corridor in the northeastern part of the country. This appears to refer to the same, deep underground tunnel system discussed earlier in this report, which was to have connected the northeastern urban corridor between Washington, DC and Boston, Massachusetts. To my knowledge, an underground project fitting that description has never been carried out.

The flame-jet tunneler, as described by United Aircraft Research Laboratories, travels on crawler treads. High temperature jets of flame are directed against the tunnel face, and as the cutting head rotates the flame-jets cut into the rock. Other attachments on the cutting head break off the rock and dump it onto a muck conveyor to be carried to the back of the machine (See Illustrations 34 and 35). There the muck is transferred to the cars of a muck train to be carried to the rear of the tunnel, and hoisted to the service for disposal.

Due to the combustion gases and high temperatures generated by the flames the tunneling crew would ride behind the tunneler in a climate controlled cab (See Illustration 36). When they ventured outside, into the tunnel environment, they would wear suits like those that astronauts wear, to protect them from the heat and poisonous gases in the tunnel (See Illustration 37). The actual size of the tunnel could be as much as 30 ft. in diameter. Power would be drawn from a high-voltage electrical supply.

Flame-jet tunneling would leave a smooth wall, as the flame seared and broke the rock. *Vol. I* of the report estimates the cost of flame-jet tunneling for a 20 ft. diameter tunnel, at anywhere from 44% to 28% of the cost of the drill and blast method. The authors of the report state that flame-jet tunneling is especially suited for very hard rock tunneling, where mechanical TBMs have a much slower rate of progress.[7]

The second volume of the report runs to more than 350 highly detailed pages of cost and efficiency analysis, engineering studies, and various other plans for using flame-jet tunnel machines to construct a tunnel system 1,000 ft. underground.[8] The third volume discusses dated, conventional tunneling techniques.

As with so much else in this report, the flame-jet tunneling *documents* are real. But have actual flame-jet tunneling *machines* been built? And are there really flame-jet tunneling crews in “moon suits” 1,000 ft. underground, boring through the bedrock, making secret tunnels for who-knows-what reason?

Pulsed Electron Tunnel Excavator

This exotic piece of equipment turned up in a single article.[9] Like the other nonconventional tunneling machines, it is presented as an interesting, but untried technology. The article speaks of a Pulsed Electron Tunnel Excavator that would in theory be “capable of tunneling approximately ten times faster than conventional drill/blast methods.” It would do this by wearing away the rock face with a very high voltage beam of electrons, something like an electronic sand blaster. Most of the resulting muck would be small particles of sand and dust that would flake off and be removed from the tunnel face by a slurry pipeline. Larger chunks of rock would be removed by a conveyor (See Illustration 38).

Has this machine really been built, or is it just another Buck Rogers scheme that never got past the conceptual design stage? I don’t know – but if *you* do, contact me with the relevant details.

Nuclear Subterrenes

The nuclear subterrene (rhymes with submarine) was designed at Los Alamos National Laboratory, in New Mexico. A number of patents were filed by scientists at Los Alamos, a few federal technical documents were written – and then the whole thing just sort of faded away.

Or did it?

Nuclear subterrenes work by melting their way through the rock and soil, actually vitrifying it as they go, and leaving a neat, solidly glass-lined tunnel behind them. The heat is supplied by a compact nuclear reactor that circulates liquid lithium from the reactor core to the tunnel face, where it melts the rock. In the process of melting the rock the lithium loses some of its heat. It is then circulated back along the exterior of the tunneling machine to help cool the vitrified rock as the tunneling machine forces its way forward. The cooled lithium then circulates back to the reactor where the whole cycle starts over. In this way the nuclear subterrene slices through the rock like a nuclear powered, 2,000 degree Fahrenheit earthworm, boring its way deep underground.

The United States Atomic Energy Commission and the United States Energy Research and Development Administration took out patents in the 1970s for nuclear subterrenes. The first patent, in 1972 (See Illustration 39) went to the U.S. Atomic Energy Commisssion.

The nuclear subterrene has an advantage over mechanical TBMs in that it produces no muck that must be disposed of by conveyors, trains, trucks, etc. This greatly simplifies tunneling. If nuclear subterrenes actually exist (and I do not know if they do) their presence, and the tunnels they make, could be very hard to detect, for the simple reason that there would not be the tell-tale muck piles or tailings dumps that are associated with conventional tunneling activities.

The 1972 patent makes this clear. It states:

> *…(D)ebris may be disposed of as melted rock both as a lining for the hole and as a dispersal in cracks produced in the surrounding rock* (italics mine). The rock-melting drill is of a shape and is propelled under

> sufficient pressure to produce and extend cracks in solid rock radially around the bore by means of hydrostatic pressure developed in the molten rock ahead of the advancing rock drill penetrator. All melt not used in glass-lining the bore is forced into the cracks where it freezes and remains…
>
> …Such a (vitreous) lining eliminates, in most cases, the expensive and cumbersome problem of debris elimination and at the same time achieves the advantage of a casing type of bore hole liner.[10]

There you have it: a tunneling machine that creates no muck, and leaves a smooth, vitreous (glassy) tunnel lining behind.

Another patent three years later (See Illustrations 40 and 41) was for:

> A tunneling machine for producing large tunnels in soft rock or wet, clayey, unconsolidated or bouldery earth by simultaneously detaching the tunnel core by thermal melting a boundary kerf into the tunnel face and forming a supporting excavation wall liner by deflecting the molten materials against the excavation walls to provide, when solidified, a continuous wall supporting liner, and detaching the tunnel face circumscribed by the kerf with powered mechanical earth detachment means and in which the heat required for melting the kerf and liner material is provided by a compact nuclear reactor.[11]

This 1975 patent further specifies that the machine is intended to excavate tunnels up to 12 meters in diameter or more. This means tunnels of 40 ft. or more in diameter. The kerf is the outside boundary of the tunnel wall that a boring machine gouges out as it bores through the ground or rock. So, in ordinary English, this machine will melt a circular boundary into the tunnel face. The melted rock will be forced to the outside of the tunnel by the tunnel machine, where it will form a hard, glassy tunnel lining (see the appropriate detail in the patent itself, as shown in Illustration 41). At the same time, mechanical tunnel boring equipment will grind up the rock and soil detached by the melted kerf and pass it to the rear of the machine for disposal by conveyor, slurry pipeline, etc. (See Illustrations.)

And yet a third patent was issued to the United States Energy Research and Development Administration just 21 days later, on 27 May 1975 for a machine remarkably similar to the machine patented on 6 May 1975. The abstract describes:

> A tunneling machine for producing large tunnels in rock by progressive detachment of the tunnel core by thermal melting a boundary kerf into the tunnel face and simultaneously forming an initial tunnel wall support by deflecting the molten materials against the tunnel walls to provide, when solidified, a continuous liner; and fragmenting the tunnel core circumscribed by the kerf by thermal stress fracturing and in which the heat required for such operations is supplied by a compact nuclear reactor.[12]

This machine also would be capable of making a glass-lined tunnel of 40 ft. in diameter or more.

Perhaps some of my readers have heard the same rumors that I have heard swirling in the UFO literature and on the UFO grapevine: stories of deep, secret, glass-walled tunnels excavated by laser powered tunneling machines. I do not know if these stories are true. If they are, however, it may be that the glass-walled tunnels are made by the nuclear subterrenes described in these patents. The careful reader will note that all of these patents were obtained by agencies of the United States government. Furthermore, all but one of the inventors are from Los Alamos, New Mexico. Of course, Los Alamos National Lab is itself the subject of considerable rumors about underground tunnels and chambers, Little Greys or “EBEs”, and various other covert goings-on.

A 1973 Los Alamos study entitled *Systems and Cost Analysis for a Nuclear Subterrene Tunneling Machine: A Preliminary Study*, concluded that nuclear subterrene tunneling machines (NSTMs) would be very cost effective, compared to conventional TBMs. It stated:

> Tunneling costs for NSTMs are very close to those for TBMs, if operating conditions for TBMs are favorable. However, for variable formations and unfavorable conditions such as soft, wet, bouldery

> ground or very hard rock, the NSTMs are far more effective. Estimates of cost and percentage use of NSTMs to satisfy U.S. transportation tunnel demands indicate a potential cost savings of 850 million dollars (1969 dollars) through 1990. An estimated NSTM prototype demonstration program cost of $100 million over an eight-year period results in a favorable benefit-to-cost ratio of 8.5.[13]

Turn to Illustration 42, which is reproduced from a second 1973 Los Alamos study, this one entitled *Large Subterrene Rock-Melting Tunnel Excavation Systems: A Preliminary Study* and compare it to Illustration 41, from the patent issued in 1975. Without belaboring the point, I would like to call attention to the almost exact duplication of shared elements in these two drawings. Was the 1973 feasibility study only idle speculation, and is the astonishingly similar patent two years later only a wild coincidence? As many a frustrated inventor will tell you, the U.S. Patent Office only issues the paperwork when it's satisfied that the thing in question actually works!

In 1975 the National Science Foundation commissioned another cost analysis of the nuclear subterrene. The A.A. Mathews Construction and Engineering Company of Rockville, Maryland produced a comprehensive report with two, separate, lengthy appendices, one 235 and the other 328 pages.

A.A. Mathews calculated costs for constructing three different sized tunnels in the Southern California area in 1974. The three tunnel diameters were: a) 3.05 meters (10 ft.); b) 4.73 meters (15.5 ft.); and c) 6.25 meters (20.5 ft.). Comparing the cost of using NSTMs to the cost of mechanical TBMs, A.A. Mathews determined:

> Savings of 12 percent for the 4.73 meter (15.5 ft.) tunnel and 6 percent for the 6.25 meter (20.5 foot) tunnel were found to be possible using the NSTM as compared to current methods. A penalty of 30 percent was found for the 3.05 meter (10 foot) tunnel using the NSTM. The cost advantage for the NSTM results from the combination of (a) a capital rather than labor intensive system, and (b) formation of both initial support and final lining in conjunction with the excavation process.[14]

This report has a number of interesting features. It is noteworthy in the first place that the government commissioned such a lengthy and detailed analysis of the cost of operating nuclear subterrenes. Just as intriguing is the fact that the study found that tunnels in the 15 ft. to 20 ft. diameter range can be more economically excavated by NSTMs than by conventional TBMs.

Finally, the southern California location that was chosen for tunneling cost analysis is thought provoking. This is precisely one of the regions of the West where there is rumored to be a secret tunnel system. Did the A.A. Mathews study represent part of the planning for an actual, covert tunneling project that was subsequently carried out, when it was determined that it was more cost effective to use NSTMs than mechanical TBMs?

Whether or not nuclear subterrene tunneling machines have been used, or are being used, for subterranean tunneling is a question I cannot presently answer. If you should happen to know, contact me with the relevant proof.

Nuclear Subselene Tunneling Machines On The Moon?

No discussion of government plans for secret tunneling projects would be complete without considering NASA’s plans for tunneling on the Moon.

1980s documents from Los Alamos National Laboratory and from Texas A&M University (under contract to NASA) indicate that there are plans to use “nuclear subselene tunneling machines” to melt tunnels under the Moon’s surface, to make living, working, mining and transportation facilities for a lunar colony.

A 1986 Los Alamos report[15] calls for using a fission powered, nuclear subselene to provide the heat to “melt rock and form a self-supporting, glass-lined tunnel suitable for Maglev or other high-speed transport modes.” The report recommends burrowing beneath the surface because of the harsh lunar environment. It further mentions that the tunnels would “need to be hundreds, or thousands of kilometers long…” The actual subselenes would be automatic devices, remotely operated. In 1986, Los Alamos estimated each subselene could be built for about $50 million and transported to the Moon for anywhere from $155 million to $2,323 million. The price tag may seem exorbitantly high, but rest assured that there is easily that much, and more, available in the military’s “black” budget for covert projects. It should be noted that the report did not specify how the nuclear subselenes and their crews would be transported to the Moon.

A 1988 Texas A&M study outlined plans for a slightly different model of lunar tunnel boring machine. The Texas A&M "Lunar Tunneler" would employ a "mechanical head to shear its way through the lunar material while creating a rigid ceramic-like lining" (See Illustration 43). Essentially, this kind of machine would be a hybrid, mechanical TBM that incorporates elements of the nuclear powered subselene. Although the machine would be nuclear powered it would have a mechanical cutter head that would bore through the lunar subsurface. Just behind the cutter head would be a "heating section" that would "melt a layer of lunar material within the excavated tunnel to a depth of only a few inches. This molten material could then be cooled to form a rigid ceramic material suitable for lining the interior of the tunnel."[16]

The Texas A&M designers considered a couple of different muck disposal schemes. The two variants of the first called for the muck to be transferred vertically to the surface and either dumped or "sprayed" into a tailings pile (See Illustration 44). The second concept called for the use of special, tunnel dump trucks that would carry the muck out of the tunnel and dump it on the lunar surface (See Illustration 44). The designers recommend use of an SP-100 fission reactor for power, using liquid lithium heat pipes of the sort developed by Los Alamos National Laboratory for the nuclear subterrene.[17]

A second Texas A&M study, released in May 1988, also recommended use of a lithium cooled nuclear reactor as the power source for a lunar tunneler. In the second tunneler design, there are no mechanical tunneling components. Instead, the cone-shaped, nuclear powered tunneler melts its way through the subsurface like a subterrene. Some of the melted rock and soil is plastered against the tunnel walls to form a glass-like ceramic tunnel lining. The rest of the melted muck (called regolith) is passed out of the back of the tunneler and then carried to the surface for disposal by the dump trucks that follow the tunneler through the tunnel.[18]

I don't know if there are nuclear tunneling machines secretly making permanent bases and tunnels on the moon. But the NASA plans certainly give cause to wonder.

Chapter Seven

NUCLEAR TESTING, THE EPA, ABDUCTIONS, ANIMAL MUTILATIONS (AND ALIENS?)

If you think the federal government's involvement in secret underground bases is thought-provoking, consider the evidence presented in this chapter of similarities between some aspects of UFO-type "abductions" and the activities of a couple of well-known government agencies.

The tenure of Hazel O'Leary as Secretary of the Department of Energy (DOE) has breathed fresh life into DOE's public relations strategy. O'Leary's commitment to the release of information on nuclear testing in decades past has triggered a slew of unsettling news reports of numerous government-sponsored radiation experiments performed on American citizens in the post-WW II period.

In some cases, it appears the subjects gave their informed consent. In others, it is clear that the subjects had no idea that they were being exposed to radioactive substances, or to radioactive fallout. For example, in one case, people were given plutonium injections without their knowledge or consent. In another case, citizens of northern New Mexico were exposed to radioactive clouds that wafted over the region subsequent to the vaporization of radioactive elements at Los Alamos National Labs by conventional explosives.

New information continues to be made public about the extent to which widely divergent sectors of the public have been exposed to the radioactive poisons released by the military, the former Atomic Energy Commission and its successor, the Department of Energy. Given what has been revealed so far, the scope of the public's exposure to potentially harmful radiation sources could be far greater than the federal government has led us to believe.

In fact, the existence of a little-known human surveillance and monitoring program run by the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA) suggests that it may well be. Interestingly, in conjunction with the human surveillance and monitoring program the EPA also conducts a milk sampling and animal monitoring program. All of these programs are designed to detect the presence of abnormal levels of radioactive isotopes in the body tissues of the human and animal subjects they monitor.

What does any of this have to do with the so-called “abductions” and “animal mutilations” that have been prevalent in the UFO literature in recent years? As it turns out, there is an uncomfortably close parallel or similarity between the EPA’s activities and some of the strange goings-on that many UFOlogists have attributed to supposed aliens, such as the infamous “Little Greys”.

To begin with, there is a coincidence in time. The government testing program is run by the EPA, which was established in 1970. As it happens, the human abduction and animal mutilation reports began to occur in large numbers over the last 20 years. During that period there has been a virtual deluge of reports in the UFO literature concerning purported abductions of unwilling humans by aliens. In many cases, those who have alleged themselves to have been abducted report that they were subjected to a variety of procedures that resemble, however darkly, some sort of medical examination. There are many reports of sperm and ova samples being taken. Various cuts, scars and scoop marks are said to be the result of alien probing of human bodies. And in many cases, people report being laid on some sort of examining table and having their bodies scanned with some sort of high-tech instrument that is used to examine them from head to toe, in somewhat the same manner that Magnetic Resonance Imagers (MRIs) are used today.

And there have been many reports of mutilations of animals. As with human abductions, these mutilations are also alleged to be the work of intrusive aliens. For the most part, the alleged mutilations have occurred with farm animals such as cattle and horses. Various body parts are reportedly taken, such as cow udders, anuses, sex organs, tongues, lips and the occasional internal organ. In addition, these mutilations are frequently said to involve the draining of the animal’s blood.

First reported in large numbers in the 1970s, mysterious animal mutilations are alleged to continue to the present day, with cases reported recently in Colorado, New Mexico and Alabama.

In broad outline, these are the facts as alleged by numerous personalities in the UFO field. I do not claim to be an expert in these matters or to know whether or not alien abduction and examination of humans and alien mutilation of animals are, or are not, occurring. I am willing to give a hearing to those who maintain that they are occurring. But I am not able personally either to rigorously prove or disprove the sensational claims that many have made in recent years. I have taken the attitude of a juror in a complex, confusing legal proceeding. I am biding my time, waiting for more and better evidence before deciding one way or the other with respect to these matters.

A real U.S. government surveillance program

Having said that, there is solid documentation for an ongoing, years-long U.S. government program of human surveillance, involving medical examinations and scanning of the entire body. There is equally strong documentation for an ongoing, years-long program in which animals, including horses and cattle, are killed and body parts and tissues, including the blood, are collected and analyzed. This program, detailed in a 1989 government report, is carried out by the EPA. It is the official United States government offsite monitoring project for detection of radioactive contamination from nuclear testing at the Department of Energy's Nevada Test Site.

As part of the program, 31 air monitoring stations are set up throughout the southern two-thirds of the state of Nevada, in western Utah, and in California near the border with Nevada. Air samples are collected three times a week. Air samples are also collected every three months and analyzed for radiation at 86 other air monitoring stations scattered throughout the states west of the Mississippi. Some 130 other locations throughout Nevada, Utah, northwestern Arizona and parts of California near the Nevada border are monitored with thermolumiscent dosimeters designed to record levels of absorbed radiation. These stations are checked every three months as well. Additionally, the water in 51 wells both on and off the test site is checked monthly for radioactive contamination.

Most interesting for UFOlogists, there is an ongoing human surveillance program in which about 40 families are closely monitored. These people live near the test site and are brought in by the Environmental Protection Agency twice a year to be scanned by a “whole body counter” (See Illustration 45). Notice the small room and padded, reclining chair on which persons being examined lie. Notice, too, the whole body counter which telescopes down from the ceiling to examine the subject. Oddly enough, the small room, the reclining chair and the examination instrument are very strongly reminiscent of the small chambers, examining tables and body scanners alleged to be used during purported alien abductions. The fact that families are examined is also interesting, in that the (supposed) alien abduction scenario also seems to sometimes involve abduction and examination of more than one individual in a family.

A variety of animals are also periodically examined. These include cattle purchased from herds near the test site, as well as bighorn sheep, mule deer, chukar and horses that are shot by hunters or killed in accidents. The tissues and organs are then analyzed for radioactivity. These include muscle, lung, liver, kidney, bone and blood (yes, blood is a tissue). Here again, there is a clear parallel strongly reminiscent of alleged animal mutilations by aliens, involving some of the same species, as well as some of the same tissues.

Finally, there is a milk sampling program. Every month the EPA analyzes raw milk from about 25 farms in Nevada and adjacent areas of Utah and California (See Illustration 46). Raw milk from 120 other farms in states west of the Mississippi is analyzed on an annual basis (See Illustration 47). This is done because grazing cows ingest radioactive particles that may be deposited on their pastures by air or rain. These particles then pass through their udders and into their milk. So analyzing cows’ milk is a convenient way of detecting radioactive contamination of the environment.

Here again, there may be a parallel with alleged alien animal mutilations, although in this case the connection (if it exists) may be more indirect. In many so-called cattle mutilations, the udder of the victimized animal is conspicuously cut out and removed. Of course, the udder contains the milk producing glands of the cow. Consequently, anything present in a cow’s milk would logically pass through and/or be present in its udder as well.

Presumably, then, analyzing udder tissues would reveal many of the same radioactive substances, if present, that an analysis of milk produced by those same udders would reveal. As it happens, milking a cow takes time. This might present a problem for busy aliens operating under rigid time constraints (assuming aliens are responsible for the mutilations). Might it be conceivable that under the circumstances it is simpler for “them” just to cut and run?

Who is behind the mutilations and “abductions”?

Whatever the truth of the matter, it is curious that the U.S. government has a testing program that monitors both animals and humans in ways that so strongly mimic the pattern of activity characteristic of alleged alien abduction of humans and alleged alien mutilation of animals, particularly cattle. Is there a connection between the official, albeit little known, government program and the numerous abduction and mutilation stories that have swirled through the UFO world? If so, what is the nature of the link? Are the alleged alien abductions and mutilations really part of a much wider, more pervasive program of covert monitoring of humans and animals by the government? Are alleged aliens and UFOs a convenient cover story that secret government agencies use to hide their tracks? Are the alleged abductors and mutilators really terrestrial humans, working undercover for the U.S. government or some other, non-governmental, covert agency? And if they are, what is the purpose of such an extensive monitoring program? One shudders to think. From the standpoint of violated civil liberties alone the implications would be sobering. And it may mean that the nuclear genie has let loose something unspeakably horrendous from its atomic bottle, the awful nature of which has yet to be divulged to us.

Or are real, live aliens to blame for the reported abductions and mutilations? Is it mere coincidence that their activities so closely resemble those of the U.S. government? Or are they running a testing program that is basically looking for the same things as the EPA? Do they share the same concerns? Are they operating independently of one another? Or are aliens and covert elements of the U.S. government perhaps working together? And if so, for what reason? Of course, this line of speculation assumes that there are aliens in the first place, and that if there are, that they are involved in abducting and examining humans and also in killing and mutilating animals.

Whatever the case may be, we are left with the reality of the reports of “alien abductions”, as well as carcasses of animals allegedly killed and mutilated by aliens. The precise reality behind the reports of abductions and the precise circumstances surrounding the deaths and mutilations of the animals are not known for certain. We must remember that not much is known about these incidents.

Debunkers have chalked up the dead animals and mutilations to normal disease, accidents and predator activity. Likewise, they decry the tales of abductees as dreams, flights of fancy and fevered imaginings. And maybe the debunkers are right.

On the other hand, the mounting weight of anecdotal evidence from numerous witnesses who attribute these incidents to alien activity cannot easily be ignored. It does seem possible that something highly strange, perhaps involving another sort of intelligent, and certainly very exotic, species is going on. But in the final analysis, it is virtually impossible to say for sure.

What can be said for certain is that in recent years the U.S. government has had an extensive human and animal surveillance and monitoring program which in several essential aspects closely resembles activities often attributed to supposedly alien beings.

Curious to know more about possible EPA activities in this regard, in late January 1994 I called the agency's office in Las Vegas, Nevada to find out the official government line on animal monitoring and human surveillance. After being passed around in the bureaucracy for a couple of hours I eventually received a call from a noticeably wary spokeswoman who doled out information to me by dribs and drabs. She sighed; she hemmed and hawed; she pled ignorance; she referred me to another office; she equivocated; she spoke indistinctly; she paused and hesitated in her answers.

But at my persistent urging she did admit the following: human surveillance around the Nevada Test Site began around 1957, and today includes about 100 people, many of them from local ranching families, both parents and children. These people are brought in to the Environmental Systems Monitoring Laboratory at the University of Nevada-Las Vegas, where their bodies are scanned for radioactive isotopes by a "whole-body counter". She said that some of these people have been continuously tracked since the late 1960s. The spokeswoman said she did not know if similar programs of human surveillance are conducted near the nation's other nuclear laboratories and test facilities, such as Savannah River, South Carolina;

Hanford, Washington; Pantex, Texas; Sandia and Los Alamos, New Mexico; and Oak Ridge, Tennessee.

Where animals are concerned, sampling began in Nevada before 1960. I was told the program consists of a man who is sent out in a truck and told the number and kind of animals to slaughter for testing. The spokeswoman said that there is no animal monitoring outside of Nevada. However, in response to my prodding she did say that Lovelace Medical Center, in Albuquerque, New Mexico, may have done some animal monitoring as a follow-up to dispersion of radioactive isotopes from nuclear testing at Los Alamos National Laboratories, in northern New Mexico. But she was not certain of this, and mentioned it only as a possibility.

But whether true or not, it is an intriguing thought. Lovelace has had a long relationship with the military-industrial complex that continues to the present day. And Lovelace currently operates a large, sophisticated, animal research facility on the grounds of the Sandia National Laboratories/Kirtland Air Force Base complex on the outskirts of Albuquerque (as well as medical facilities for humans, also in the Albuquerque area). Of course, this in no way proves that Lovelace is involved in animal mutilations (or human abductions). On the other hand, Albuquerque is awfully close to the areas of northern New Mexico and southern Colorado where so many cattle mutilations have been reported. And if the mutilations and abductions are being done by covert human operators, since the medical expertise at Lovelace and the helicopters and other equipment from Kirtland AFB and Sandia National Laboratories are as state-of-the-art as can be found anywhere, one could speculate there might be a connection.

On a final note, since unmarked, dark helicopters are sometimes reported in the vicinity of animal mutilations, I asked the EPA spokeswoman whether the EPA ever used helicopters to carry out its animal testing program. She denied that the EPA operates in this way.

And that was the end of the interview. As I hung up the phone I was struck by the spokeswoman’s reticence to divulge information. I had the distinct feeling she could have told me a great deal more than she did.

In the end, the same question remains: what is going on? We have numerous reports of human abductions, and medical-like testing by seemingly alien beings. There are also many reports of animal mutilations, under strange circumstances, with conspicuous removal of selected body parts. During the same period of time, there is solid evidence from the EPA of an ongoing nuclear contamination monitoring program involving prolonged human surveillance and animal testing that resembles, to a surprising degree, activities often attributed to aliens.

These are the facts as they have been presented by the government and by concerned individuals who allege to have seen and/or experienced animal mutilations and human abductions. To say more than that is to take liberties with the truth. The best I can do is to observe that past this point things become very murky indeed.

Chapter Eight

ABDUCTIONS, NEEDLES AND IMPLANTS: A FRESH APPROACH

The UFO literature is rife with reports where alleged aliens insert small implants into the bodies of abductees. On occasion the implants are said to be put in place with needle-like devices. Locations of particular choice seem to be behind the ear, and up the nose, in the top of the nasal cavity. The reasons for these abductions, as well as the nature of the implants themselves, remain perfectly obscure. To begin with, it is not clear who is perpetrating the abductions; and neither is it clear what function(s) the implants perform.

But given the constantly growing number of people who are reporting these sorts of incidents it seems to me that UFOlogists ought to look more closely at this aspect of the UFO phenomenon. The most simple questions about the abductors and implants beg to be asked: Who? How? Why?

Many abductees, perhaps most, identify their abductors as “aliens”. The assumption is often made, and sometimes forthrightly, that these “alien” abductors are extraterrestrial beings. Of course, this assumption may or may not be true. In fact, it may be the case that at least some of the “alien” abductors are actually terrestrial humans working covertly, under cover of artificially induced states of total or partial amnesia, fear and screen memories. There are a wide variety of techniques that can influence, even deeply alter, human perception and emotions. These can be as simple as the use of rubber masks and make-up (how about a reptilian face mask and body suit?). More sophisticated technologies can cause profoundly realistic hallucinations. Psycho-active drugs, certain microwave radiations, various hypnotic procedures, and flashing lights and rhythmic sounds are some of the ways in which this can be done.

To be sure, there are many, many reports of abductees being asked to drink strange potions and decoctions; smelling strange vapors and gases; seeing flashing lights; gazing deeply into hypnotic eyes; experiencing strange radiations; hearing whirring or humming sounds; and hearing voices in their heads.

I think we have to at least consider the possibility that some of these reported aspects of abductions may actually be earthly technologies used by terrestrial humans to radically alter a subject's perception of reality during an "alien abduction" experience.

There are any number of groups, governmental or private, that have, or could obtain, access to the money, personnel, equipment, materials and expertise to stage a convincing "alien abduction" episode. These organizations include (but are not by any means limited to): the police, intelligence and military agencies of major governments; major corporations and powerful financial institutions operating on a global scale; transnational organizations such as the United Nations, NATO, Tri-Lateral Trade Commission, and Inter-Pol; and other secretive, international organizations such as crime syndicates and fraternal orders.

Consider that some "alien abductees" do, in fact, report seeing other human beings during their abductions, human beings who appear to be involved in, or cooperating with the perpetrators of, the abduction. In some cases these other humans have reportedly been in military uniform. These curious reports certainly suggest the possibility of at least some degree of covert involvement by terrestrial humans in the "alien abduction" phenomenon.

Of course, just because "alien abductees" allege that "aliens" or "extraterrestrials" used needles or syringe-like devices to insert implants into their bodies, does not necessarily mean that aliens or extraterrestrials of any sort actually did it. It only means that "alien abductees" *say* that is what has happened. The report may be ever so heartfelt – and many of the accounts are extremely moving and sincere – but at one and the same time, the report may, or may not, accurately reflect what actually transpired.

Alternate Realities of the Terrestrial Kind

Here are some hard facts: there is now a technology in commercial use that almost precisely mirrors the needle-injected implants said to be inserted into abductees by aliens. There are several companies that now offer miniature, electronic, identification devices for sale, primarily for use in animal-related applications, so that farmers, ranchers and pet owners can keep track of their herds, flocks and pets.[1]

As will be made clear below, these electronic tracking devices are perfectly capable of being injected into humans, as well.

One United States firm, a leader in the field of electronic implants, holds a number of related patents. It manufactures miniature, electronic implants that are injected using a large syringe and needle.

Please note that I am not saying that this U.S. firm, or any other firm making similar products, is in any way involved with the alleged “alien abduction and implantation” phenomenon. But products are being marketed in the United States that are remarkably similar to the implant technology frequently reported in the “alien abductee” literature.

In recent years a series of U.S. Patents have been awarded for an electronic identification system based on syringe-implantable identification transponders (implants).[2] According to the patents the system involves inserting tiny implants “into animals for their identification, useful in monitoring migratory patterns and for other purposes.” The implants are “durable and reliable over a period of years.” Moreover, each of the implants are uniquely identifiable.

These “injectable transponders” are about four-tenths of an inch long and less than one-tenth of an inch in diameter.[3] They contain electronic micro-circuits that are activated and read by “a compatible radio-frequency ID reading system.” The tiny, “bio-compatible glass” implants contain “an electromagnetic coil, tuning capacitor, and microchip.” According to product literature from one of the U.S. makers of these injectable transponders, the chips can be programmed with up to “34 billion unique, unalterable identification codes.” The literature says that although the injectable transponders are “specifically designed for injecting in animals, (they) can be used for other applications requiring a micro-sized identification tag.”

The transponders are injected with a syringe-like device with a needle on the end. According to the relevant patent the injector needle is “adjustable for implant insertion depth.” The patent states that “needles…of various diameters and lengths may be interchanged in the injector.” It specifies that where needle dimensions are concerned "the invention may be adapted to a large range of dimensions." Furthermore, it says the "needle may also be rotated to a plurality of positions relative to the injector handle."[4]

In other words, the device described in this patent could be fitted with a needle that would permit an implant in a variety of locations in the human body, including many, if not all, of the locations reported by people who believe they have been subjected to an "alien abduction and implantation".

Interestingly, three of the patents granted for identification devices (transponders/implants) explicitly state, in identical language, that the devices are to be "carried by or embedded in the thing or animal to be identified." All three also explicitly state: "the primary object of this invention is to provide a system for identifying an object, animal *or person…*" [5] (my italics) (See Illustration 48).

Furthermore, when the implant is "read" at the appropriate radio frequency the output can be displayed on a computer terminal and transferred to an electronic data storage system.[6]

In plain language, what we have here is the type of technology that, if employed on a large scale, could theoretically electronically monitor, in real time, the whereabouts and movements of as many as 34 billion individual animals *or humans.* Of course, the possibilities and implications for potential political and social control are both obvious and enormous.

I would like to stress again that my research has not shown that any manufacturers or buyers of these injectable transponders are, in any way, either directly or indirectly, involved in either the so-called "alien abduction and implantation" phenomenon, or in monitoring the whereabouts and movements of human beings. I am only using these products as examples of the kind of off-the-shelf implantation and monitoring technology that is being manufactured and marketed today.

What's behind the "abduction" phenomenon?

If social or political control is the motive behind the abductions and implants (and I do not know that it is), then how would such control be carried out? One possible answer is: genetically.

Abductees frequently report that their abductors seem preoccupied with human sexuality and breeding. The abductee literature is full of reports of forced breeding; collection of human ova and sperm from unwilling abductees; stolen fetuses from pregnant abductees; and allegations of a human/alien crossbreeding or hybridization project.

To be sure, the accounts of “alien abuctions”, taken all together, make for a bizarre collection of literature. But suppose the stories contain an element of truth – at least in broad outline?

Let us assume, hypothetically, that there is some kind of covert human breeding program going on, for reasons known only to the abductors (whoever they might be). Those reasons need not necessarily be those given by the abductors, or inferred by the abductees.[7] For the sake of example, suppose the abductors for whatever reason want to mate a 40 year old woman in Des Moines with a 22 year old man in Bombay; or a 34 year old woman in London with a 65 year old man in Tokyo? Of course, these are people living in different countries, speaking different languages, immersed in different cultures and religions. The chances that they would pair up and mate if left to their own devices are minuscule.[8]

Enter our mystery abductors, to do their covert, “alien” match-making. Abductees might be physically mated (as is sometimes reported in the literature). Or, where this is not feasible, sperm and ova samples collected from unwilling donors could be stored, then mixed and matched later for the desired genetic combination. Fertilized eggs could be implanted; fetuses could be removed. In vitro fertilization and artificial wombs could be used to produce fetuses and bring them to term.[9]

Clearly, if any known organization openly went around in this way, forcing people to mate with one another against their will, the hue and cry would be enormous. Society would be in an uproar. So any large scale, forced-breeding program would have to be very secret to be successful. And the perpetrators would certainly have to carefully conceal both their identities and motives in order to avoid being caught out by their victims and the public at large. Obviously, they would have to be very stealthy in picking up and monitoring their “breeders.”

The fact that human reproductive capacities change also complicates matters. People reach puberty; they get pregnant; they reach menopause; they have their tubes tied; they have vasectomies; their ova/sperm become fertile/infertile. How to tell whether the person(s) of interest can produce viable offspring? And how, finally, to find the desired persons on any given day, at any given hour?

Enter the electronic monitoring and identification implant. Product literature from at least one U.S. manufacturer discusses how an animal breeder (farmer) can use their product to identify and monitor the breeding status of hogs and cows. The question naturally arises as to whether the same (or very similar) technology is being used by others who regard abductees as part of their "herd."[10] Are abductees perhaps implanted for the same reasons that a hog farmer monitors his pigs – to keep track of their breeding status?

It is an interesting line of speculation which may or may not be related to the "implant" aspect of the abduction phenomenon of recent years. And it may or may not have anything to do with purported "alien" activities on this planet. But I think the reader will agree that the very real implant technology discussed earlier in this chapter bears more than a little resemblance to the implant technology often attributed to alleged "alien" abductors.

Might we be dealing with a covert implantation/ monitoring program that is being carried out very stealthily and furtively by very real human agencies and operatives? Might they have a devious motive of political and social – or even physical – control? Are they carrying out a massive, secret, forced-breeding program? Might they use the UFO and "alien" abduction phenomenon as a convenient screen, a sort of otherworldly camouflage to conceal their true identity and purpose?

This whole affair is wonderfully bewildering. On the one hand, there does seem to be a genuine abduction phenomenon, with growing numbers of people who reportedly have been implanted by perpetrators who have so far proven to be impressively elusive and stealthy. They have also proven extraordinarily adept at passing themselves off as "aliens" or "extraterrestrials".

On the other hand there is now a commercially available, human manufactured, terrestrial technology that closely resembles the implant technology that has repeatedly been reported to be used by "aliens." It is true that the patents for this technology are of comparatively recent vintage; however the technology itself could well have been developed long before the patents were issued. After all, electronic micro-ciruits have been around for years now. In any event, the fact that the two technologies are so extraordinarily similar raises the question as to whether they might not actually be the same. And if they are the same, then we have to begin looking for a very human, home-grown connection to at least some of the reported abductions.

In the end we find ourselves stuck in a bizarre hall of mirrors full of constantly shifting, bizarre images, each one more improbable than the next. Are the images alien? Human? Are the perpetrators hiding behind disinformation or propaganda masks? Hypnotic masks? Electronically or chemically induced masks?[11]

To be sure, there may be even more troubling permutations of the abduction and implantation phenomena.

For example, entertain the following possibilities: Group “A” (the Army, CIA, NSA, “aliens”) abducts and implants human subject “X”. Meanwhile, Group “B” (select your favorite from the rogue’s gallery above) either strongly suspects or somehow knows that subject “X” has been abducted and/or implanted. However, “B” is not sure how, why or when subject “X” was abducted and implanted.

But “B” would very much like to know who has abducted and/or implanted “X” – as well as when and why. So “B” also abducts and implants subject “X.” In this way, “B” can keep close electronic tabs on “X” and if “A” again abducts subject “X”, “B” will be able to monitor the abduction. “B” may even be able to establish when it occurs and the location to which “X” is taken.

Group “B” may even be able to monitor the abduction in progress, thereby discovering the identity of Group “A.”

Obviously, this game would be a strange one. Kick back and let your imagination run with the possibilities. What if Group “A,” for instance, is the U.S. Army and “B” is the U.S. Air Force?

Now, try a variation on the theme. Let “A” be a joint U.S. Army-”alien” alliance, and let “B” be the U.S. Air Force. Liven things up by adding another “alien” group, and another military agency. Suppose that international organizations like the United Nations are also involved, perhaps with interests that are in direct conflict with those of Group “A” or Group “B” – or perhaps most importantly, with those of human subject “X”.

The point I am making is simply that the abduction and implantation phenomena may have interlocking layers of complexity that have not been sufficiently explored or appreciated by most UFO researchers.

Oh, yes. One final thing.

If the possibility of being implanted and electronically tracked and monitored (perhaps without your knowledge or consent) makes you feel a trifle uneasy, just try repeating the following words softly to yourself until you feel more relaxed: “New World Order…New World Order…New World Order…”

Chapter Nine

IS THE U.S. MILITARY INVOLVED IN "ALIEN" CATTLE MUTILATIONS?

For years investigators of the cattle mutilation phenomenon have reported that wounds and cuts on many of the mutilated carcasses seem to have been made by some sort of surgical laser device. The unnatural precision and cleanliness of incisions, as well as evidence of unnatural heating of the tissues near the wounds have all pointed to probable use of surgical laser scalpels in many cattle mutilations.

Though there is little doubt that the mutilations are occurring, it has not been clear who the mutilators are. There have been many allegations that the mutilators are "aliens" or extraterrestrials – but no hard proof.

For many years, the working assumption has been that human involvement in the mutilations was not possible because there is presumed to be no known "earthly" technology that could carry out these mysterious mutilations. Reasons given include such factors as the surgically precise, "laser-like" incisions and wounds (allegedly impossible with contemporary medical technology); lack of footprints; and absence of blood around mutilated carcasses.

But the presence of mysterious, unidentified helicopters in the vicinity of many cattle mutilations has long been noted. The fact that helicopters are a 20th century, terrestrial technology has led to speculation that the "alien" hypothesis for the cattle mutilations may not satisfactorily explain every facet of the phenomenon.

In fact, there may be very real, covert human involvement in the cattle mutilations. To begin with, it is simply not true that modern medical technology cannot and has not produced a portable, surgical laser that can be taken into the field (literally!).

The Phillips Laboratory at Kirtland Air Force Base, in Albuquerque, New Mexico recently announced that it has developed a “very compact device” called the “Laser Medical Pac” that provides the “field paramedic or physician a unique, portable, and battery-operated laser capability.” The portable laser is a “completely self-contained laser package that fits inside a beltpack.” (See Illustration 49). It requires “two 2-volt batteries to operate the laser and one 9-volt battery to power the electronics.” It measures 7” by 3” by 2.5”. It can operate continuously for 20 minutes at a time. The tip of the instrument is a “variable focus lens” at the tip of a flexible, fiber-optic cable that “provides very intense power density.”

The device is “able to cut like a scalpel, as well as coagulate bleeding, and close wounds.” It may be used by “special operations personnel” and others. According to the Office of Public Affairs at Kirtland AFB, “The output wavelength, which ranges from visible red to the mid-infrared, *can be designed to provide different tissue interactions*” (my emphasis).[1]

And all of this, mind you, is the size of a transistor radio, and is powered by batteries of the sort you can buy in line at the supermarket. So much for esoteric, “alien” medical technology.

How To Perform a “Typical” Cattle Mutilation

Permit me to present a hypothetical, “earthly” modus operandi for a cattle mutilation.

A dark, unmarked helicopter lifts off from Kirtland Air Force Base. Inside the helicopter is a “special operations” team outfitted with a tranquilizer dart gun and surgical laser beltpacks. They fly for a couple of hours to an isolated ranch somewhere in a sparsely populated rural area (there are many areas of the rural West where the population density is less than one person per square mile). They land and shoot a cow with the dart gun. The tranquilizer immobilizes the animal so it cannot flee. They capture the animal, kill it and hoist it aboard the helicopter. On board they cut up the animal with the surgical lasers, removing the body parts they want to keep. They may even drain the blood for analysis (see Chapter 7 for a discussion of the types of material that the EPA is interested in for its nuclear contamination tissue sampling program). Then they unobtrusively lower the carcass to the ground from the helicopter, without landing.

Later, the carcass is discovered. There are no footprints or signs of struggle because the cow was picked up at a different place from where its carcass was found; its carcass was subsequently lowered to the ground on a sling, or rolled out the door after being slaughtered, without the helicopter touching down, or the crew leaving the craft.

The wounds on the carcass appear to be made with some type of surgical laser because, in fact, they *were* made with surgical lasers – surgical lasers carried on the beltpacks of a United States military special operations team. There is no blood around the carcass because the surgical lasers can coagulate bleeding and close wounds. There is no blood inside the carcass because it has been drained out for a tissue sampling project.

Ranchers and others in the area report seeing mysterious helicopters in the vicinity of the cattle mutilation, because the military mutilation teams travel in dark, unmarked helicopters.

So there you have a hypothetical cattle mutilation with all the classic details asociated with an “alien” cattle mutilation – but plausibly explained as a covert human operation using technology available now. And it is entirely possible the military has had this portable, surgical laser for years, since the military “black budget” world of special operations routinely conceals its activities from the public as a matter of policy, usually on grounds of “national security”.

Why Do a Cattle Mutilation?

Now for the hypothetical “why” of it all.

One possibility is that there is some kind of covert environmental monitoring program going on, one like the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA) program discussed in Chapter 7. Cows are large mammals that are found everywhere that people are found, and they occupy a lower rung on the food chain than most humans, since bovines are herbivores. This means that they would more quickly absorb radioactive or chemical environmental contaminants than would most humans.

Perhaps the problems with our environment are far more serious than we have been told and a massive, covert monitoring program is under way. If this is the case, other government agencies could be involved, such as the EPA and the Department of Energy (See Chapter 7).

But why the emphasis on cattle? Is there some specific reason for singling them out? Must bovine tissues be obtained for some particular purpose, perhaps involving biological or genetic engineering? And if this is the case, what is the nature of the research and why and by whom is it being carried out?

Given the stealthy nature of the mutilations, these are tremendously difficult questions to answer. It may be, after all, that there is some sort of bizarre “alien” or extraterrestrial activity associated with the phenomenon.

But in light of the circumstantial evidence associated with many of the mutilations, such as unmarked helicopters and laser-like, surgical incisions, we would do well not to turn a totally blind eye to possible culprits closer to home. It is not lost on me, for example, that many of the cattle mutilations have been located in New Mexico and southern Colorado, not far at all by air from Kirtland Air Force Base.

And there are plenty of dark helicopters at Kirtland.

And we now know that laser scientists at Kirtland Air Force Base have developed portable, surgical lasers that can fit in a beltpack.

Coincidence?

I wonder.

Afterword

LAST WORDS ON UNDERGROUND BASES, TUNNELS AND EXOTIC TUNNELING MACHINES

Based on the evidence in this book, it is absolutely certain that there are underground bases that have been secretly constructed in the United States in recent decades.

Who would be most likely to build bases of this kind? Any of the major agencies of the Pentagon would be capable of constructing deep underground facilities. Indeed, I have presented documentation generated by or pertaining to the Departments of the Army, Air Force and Navy and the Defense Nuclear Agency that indicate their interest, or direct involvement, in underground facilities. In my view it is likely that other Pentagon agencies and departments have similar interests, capabilities, and involvement.

Any reader of this book ought to come away with at least this one, basic understanding: the Pentagon is definitely heavily involved in and interested in underground facilities. There is no doubt about that.

A number of other non-military agencies are involved as well. The Department of Energy (DOE), the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA), the National Security Agency (NSA), the Colorado School of Mines, and the Federal Reserve are some of the known underground players.

And there are the Fortune 500 companies that have underground facilities. AT&T has a number of sophisticated underground centers. Northrop, Lockheed and McDonnell Douglas have hi-tech underground centers in California. Standard Oil at one time had a command post deep underground in New York state. There may be others operated by other companies.

Where secret tunnel systems and exotic tunneling machines are concerned the evidence is less conclusive. There *are* extensive Pentagon plans for a hundreds-of-miles-long tunnel network, thousands of feet underground in the desert Southwest (or somewhere). There are even contracts with the Air

Force's Ballistic Missile Office that indirectly indicate that this tunnel system, or perhaps part of it, may have been built. But the evidence is fragmentary and circumstantial, and comes far from definitively proving that there is a secret military tunnel system. I have taken a wait-and-see attitude. The documentation is interesting, but in the final analysis plans, contracts and documents are not the same thing as real tunnels.

So, absent hard proof, the information presented in this book merely demonstrates a very strong military interest in building, even the intent to build, a huge, deep underground tunnel system. Were the tunnels built? Or are they being built right now? The short answer is: I do not know. If you *do* know, send me documentation, and if it's convincing, I'll publish it.

And then there are the plans for the Department of Transportation's deep underground tunnel system in the Northeast, linking major metro areas between Washington, DC and Boston, Massachusetts. Have miners in "moon suits" been operating flame-jet tunnelers to make a tunnel system there, or elsewhere? Planning documents for such a project do exist. But here again, as with the Pentagon plans, documents are one thing, and actual tunnels quite another.

Of course, for your garden variety secret tunnel system there is a choice of tunneling machines. There is always the dependable, conventional, electrically powered, mechanical TBM. And there are lots of these digging away around the world, making all sorts of tunnels for subways, highways and water works.

Then there are the plans for nuclear subterrenes, electron beam excavators, and flame-jet tunnelers. Do these exotic tunneling machines exist? They might; they might not. But *if* they do you can bet on one thing: they are being used covertly, in considerable secrecy, because I have examined thousands of pages of recent tunneling literature and there is no mention of their use anywhere. At the same time, I did uncover plans for these strange machines generated by the military-industrial complex. So, I do not summarily dismiss the possibility that these machines may be in secret use. There the matter rests for now.

Finally, there are out-of-this-world plans for "subselenean" or lunar tunnelers. In design these machines have many similarities to their earthly, nuclear subterrene or TBM counterparts. If I am at a loss to draw many firm conclusions about secret tunnels and exotic tunneling machines here on Earth, I am at even more of a loss when it comes to deciding about tunneling activity on the Moon.

There are rumors in some of the wilder corners of UFOlogy about a secret space program and covert, manned, lunar bases. Here again: I suppose anything is possible, but I have yet to see any kind of direct proof that this secret space program exists, or that there are secret bases on the Moon. Rumors are not the same thing as solid evidence, and researchers must be careful to remember that simple truth.

So there you have it.

This book constitutes just about as representative a treatment of the subject of underground bases and tunneling activity as is presently possible from reading information that is publicly available in a moderately good research library.

I have no contacts in the intelligence community; I have had no access to classified material. Almost all of the material in this book comes from the public record. Anyone who is willing to do methodical investigation in a good research library and dig hard can find much the same kind of information as that presented here.

Truth to tell, there is certainly interesting information yet to be discovered on all of these topics. To find that information, you have to creatively examine electronic databases, periodical and newspaper indexes, federal document and technical document indexes, patent indexes, card catalogues, and every other kind of index that you can think of. And then you track down the document and article citations that you find.

Serious research is tedious and time consuming. But it can yield results if you stick with it.

A Final Word

Our First Amendment right to freedom of speech and freedom of the press is only as strong as we make it. We have the constitutional right to go into libraries and databases, and to read and then to write about what the government and major corporations are doing. I am exercising this right. I hope that others who read this book will do the same.

I welcome information and plans, diagrams, photos, videos, and all forms of evidence from readers about any and all underground tunnels, tunneling machines and underground bases – or strange “UFO” or “extraterrestrial” technology. The more detailed and specific the information is, the more useful it will be. If you desire anonymity, either send me the material anonymously or make your desire for anonymity crystal clear when you communicate with me.

All materials and information become my property, to use or not as I see fit, without further obligation or compensation to the sender.

You may send information directly to me:

Richard Sauder
c/o Adventures Unlimited
Box 74
Kempton, IL 60946 USA

FOOTNOTES

Chapter One – Oh Yes, They're Real!

1. Lloyd A. Duscha, "Underground Facilities for Defense – Experience and Lessons," in Tunneling and Undergound Transport: Future Developments in Technology. Economics and Policy, ed. F.P. Davidson (New York: Elsevier Science Publishing Company, Inc., 1987), pp. 109-113.

2. Albert D. Parker, Planning and Estimating Underground Construction. (New York: McGraw Hill Book Company, 1970), pp. 140, 142.

3. U.S. Dept. of Defense, U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Construction Engineering Research Laboratory, Literature Survey of Underground Construction Methods for Application to Hardened Facilities. Report No. CERL TR M-85/11 (April 1985), pp. 2, 7, 34 and 36.

4. Lt. Col. J.A. Goshorn, "Should We Go Underground," Armed Forces Chemical Journal 3 (July 1949), p. 25.

5. Duncan Campbell, "War Games," New Statesman & Society 2 (26 May 1989), p. 11.

6. "Underground Missile Plant To Be Built Near Redstone," Missiles and Rockets. 2 (May 1957), p. 43.

7. "Underground Factory in the Works?," Missiles and Rockets, 2 (Sep 1957), pp. 52-53.

8. "SAGE Goes Undergound Near Dobbins," Air Force Times. 20 (7 Nov 1959), p. 24.

9. Paul R. Nyquist, PE and Andre M. Ranford, PE, "Diesel Power for Command and Control Centers," Air Force Civil Engineer 5 (February 1964), p. 30.

10. U.S. Department of Defense, Department of the Army, Office of the Chief of Engineers, Utilization of Nuclear Power Plants in Underground Installations. Engineer Manual No. EM 1110-345-950 (15 April 1963), pp. 1-2, 6 and 28-29.

11. Nyquist and Ranford, p. 33.

Chapter Two – The Military Underground: Air Force, Army and Navy

1. J.J. O'Sullivan, ed., Protective Construction in a Nuclear Age. Vol. 1. Proceedings of the Second Protective Construction Symposium. 24-26 March, 1959 (New York: The MacMillan Company, 1961), pp. vi, 1-3. There is also a second volume, with the same editor and title.

2. S.M. Genensky and R.L. Loofbourow, Geological Covering Materials for Deep Underground Installations. U.S. Air Force Project Rand Research Memorandum RM-2617. Research sponsored by the U.S. Air Force under contract AF 49(638)-700, (Santa Monica, CA: The RAND Corp., 4 August 1960), p. 4.

3. Ibid, pp. 20-30.

4. Ibid, pp. 33-37.

5. Ibid, various pages throughout the document. There appears to be a minor geographical error in this report. It places the Vermilion Cliffs in Mohave County; however, the Vermilion Cliffs actually are in Coconino County, near the Kaibab National Forest.

6. David H. Morrissey, "Underground Depot to Replace Manzano Nuclear Storage Site," Albuquerque Journal. 12 Sep 1989, pp. 1A and 3A

7. Ibid; and John Fleck, "Bombs Away," Albuquerque Journal. 2 August 1992, pp. 1A and 6A

8. Undated article, of uncertain origin, by Earl Zimmerman, entitled "LASL's Unusual Underground Lab," received from the Albuqerque Office of the Department of Energy, as an enclosure in a letter to the author.

9. EBE is an acronym used frequently in UFOlogy to refer to "Extraterrestrial Biological Entity". In plain English an EBE is an alien being, or an extraterrestrial being. The EBEs remored to be held at Los Alamos in the past

were allegedly of the “Little Grey” type. I am unable to verify this allegation of EBEs being held at Los Alamos.

10. Harry V. Martin, various articles in an information packet obtained from the Napa Sentinel. ©1992. The Napa Sentinel is a weekly newspaper. Interested readers may contact the Sentinel at 925 Lincoln Ave., Napa, CA 94558 (707)257-6272.

11. U.S. Department of Defense, Department of the Army, Army Corps of Engineers, Design of Underground Installations in Rock: General Planning Considerations. Manual No. EM 1110-345-431 (1 January 1961), Page 7. The one manual in this series which I do not quote from is entitled Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Penetration and Explosion Effects. Manual No. EM-1110345-434 (31 July 1961). It is also published by the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers.

12. ________, Heating and Air Conditioning of Underground Installations. Manual No. EM 1110-345-450 (30 Nov. 1959), pp. 5-7, and 83-85.

13. ________, Design of Underground Installations: Protective Features and Utilities, Manual No. EM 1110-345-435 (1 July 1961), pp. 5-6, 11-25, 62-74.

14. ________, Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Space Layouts and Excavation Methods. Manual No. EM 1110-345-433 (1 April 1961), pp. 5, 8 and 9-16.

15. U.S. Department of Defense, Department of the Army, U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Army Engineer Waterways Experiment Station, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities: Background. Site Selection, and Summary. Technical Report No. 3-648, Vol. 1, July 1964, Sponsored by Advanced Research Projects Agency, ARPA Order No. 260-62, Amendment No. 1, pp. vii-viii, 26 and 31. (The U.S. Army Engineer Waterways Experiment Station in Vicksburg, Mississippi contracted out the study to the Colorado School of Mines Research Foundation, in Golden, Colorado and to Jacobs Associates Construction Engineers of San Francisco, California.)

16. Ibid, p. 31.

17. ________, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities: Report On Cost and Constructability. Technical Report No. 3-648, Vol. Ill, June 1964, Sponsored by Advanced Research Projects Agency, ARPA Order No. 260-62, Amendment No. 1, p. 21.

18. ________, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities: Background, Site Selection, and Summary. Vol. 1, pp. 35-66.

19. ________, Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities: Report on Cost and Constructability. Vol. Ill, various pages.

20. William M. Arkin and Richard W. Fieldhouse, Nuclear Battlefields: Global Links in the Arms Race. (Cambridge, Mass.: Ballinger Publishing Co., 1985), p. 211.

21. R. Hibbard, L. Pietrzak and S. Rubens, Subsurface Deployment of Naval Facilities. Report sponsored by Naval Facilities Engineering Command, contract no. N00025-72-C-0009, Federal Document No. AD-762 838, and the following number of unknown significance CR-2-318, December 1972.

22. James Bamford, The Puzzle Palace: A Report on America’s Most Secret Agency (Houghton Mifflin Co., 1982; reprint ed., NY, NY: Penguin Books, 1983), p. 221.

Chapter Three — The Ultimate War Rooms

1. Steven Emerson, “America’s Doomsday Project,” U.S. News & World Report. 7 Aug 1989, pp. 26-31.

2. Douglas Heuck, “‘Underground Pentagon’ Quietly Awaits Armageddon,” The Albuquerque Tribune, 25 November 1991, pp. ID and 2D; Richard H.P. Sia, “As Cold War Wanes, Pentagon’s Pennsylvania Fortress Lifts Its Alert,” The Baltimore Sun, 20 April 1992, p. 1A and 10A; and William M. Arkin, Joshua M. Handler, Julia A. Morrissey and Jacquelyn M. Walsh, Encyclopedia of the U.S. Military, (New York: Harper and Row, Ballinger Division, 1990) p. 63.

3. Ted Gup, “The Doomsday Blueprints,” Time (10 Aug 1992), p. 37.

4. John Guthrie, “Underground Command Posts,” International Combat Arms. 5 (May 1987), p. 19.

5. Arkin and Fieldhouse, Nuclear Battlefields, p. 181; William R. Evinger, ed., Directory of Military Bases in the U.S., (Phoenix, AZ: Oryx Press, 1991), p. 33; and Arkin *et al*, Encyclopedia of the U.S. Military, pp. 482-483.

6. John M. Norvell, “‘The Rock’-NORAD COC,” The Military Engineer, No. 367 (Sep-Oct 1963), pp. 309-311; and Guthrie, “Underground Command

Posts," p. 19.

7. LB. Leonberger, "Under the Pre-Cambrian Shield," Airman, 14 (March 1970), pp. 11-12; K.G. Roberts, "Air Defence Goes Underground," The Roundel. 15 (Sep 1963), pp. 8-13; and "NORAD at North Bay: Underground Center a Joint Effort," Air Force Times, 29 (12 Feb 1969), p. 27.

8. Ted Gup, "Doomsday Hideaway," Time, 9 Dec 1991, pp. 26-29; and Richard P. Pollock, "The Mysterious Mountain," The Progressive. March 1976, pp. 12-16.

9. Richard P. Pollock, "The Mysterious Mountain, The Progressive, March 1976, pp. 12-16; and Ford Rowan, Technospies: The Secret Network That Spies on You – and You (New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1978), pp. 25-43.

10. Ibid; and Arkin, Handler, Morissey and Walsh, Encvclpedia of the U.S. Military, pp. 177-179, 270-272.

11. U.S. Congress, Senate, Committee on the Judiciary and Committee on Commerce, Surveillance Technology, Joint Hearings Before Subcommittees of the Senate Committees on the Judiciary and Commerce. 94th Cong., 1st Session, 1975, pp. 63-100.

12. Jack Anderson and Dale Van Atta, "Top Secret Hide-Outs Also Mask Flaws," The Washington Post. 29 August 1991, 23B.

13. Arkin and Fieldhouse, Nuclear Battlefields, p. 210.

14. Ted Gup, "The Ultimate Congressional Hideaway," The Washington Post Magazine, 31 May 1992, p. 15; and Rowan, Technospies, pp. 34-35.

15. Rowan, Technospies, p. 35.

16. Ted Gup, "The Doomsday Blueprints," Time (10 August 1992), p. 38.

17. Arkin and Fieldhouse, Nuclear Battlefields, p. 193.

18. Ibid; and Arkin, Handler, Morissey and Walsh, Encyclopedia of the US-Military, p. 273.

19. Robert D. Hershey, Jr., "A Bunker Just For Lawmakers Who Now May Run For Cover," The New York Times. 31 May 1992, pp. 1 and 20; Tom Webb, "The Last Resort," Albuquerque Journal, 30 May 1992, pp. 1A and 9A; and Ted Gup, "The Ultimate Congressional Hideaway," The Washington Post Magazine, 31 May 1992, pp. 10-15, 24-27.

20. Arkin, Handler, Morrisey and Walsh, Encyclopedia of the U.S. Military, p. 273.

21. Letter to the author, dated 2 March 1993, from William F.W. Jones, Deputy Associate Director, National Preparedness Directorate, Federal Emergency Management Agency.

22. H.R. Pratt and S.J. Green, A Geology Compendium of the Continental United States - With Application to Deep-Based Systems, Report prepared by Terra Tek, Inc., Salt Lake City, Utah for the Defense Nuclear Agency. Federal Document No. DNA 3874F, 15 November 1975.

23. Oliver North, Under Fire: An American Story (New York: Harper Collins, 1991), pp. 164-166.

24. Tim Weiner, “Pentagon Book For Doomsday Is to Be Closed,” New York Times. 18 April 1994.

25. “No Comment,” The Progressive, 56 (August 1992), p. 11.

Chapter Four – More Underground Facilities

1. “Logistics Goes Underground,” Army Logistician, 6 (July-Aug 1974), pp. 32-33.

2. Ray Vicker, “Going Underground,” The Wall Street Journal, 17 June 1981, p. 56.

3. Bamford, Puzzle Palace, p. 133.

4. The information on the plans for Yucca Mountain, Nevada comes from DIALOG FILE 194, an electronic database that catalogues announcements that appear in the Commerce Business Daily. Commerce Business Daily is a list of federal contract announcements and bid solicitations published every working day by the U.S. Department of Commerce. The announcements referenced here were published on 10 May 1991; 10 Feb 1992; 11 Sep 1992; and 22 Oct 1992. Responses were solicited by: Reynolds Electrical and Engineering Co. Inc., Yucca Mountain Project, PO Box 98521, Mail Stop 408, Las Vegas, NV 89193-8521.

5. Michael Martin Nieto, “Physics at the Proposed National Underground Science Facility,” in Proceedings of the XIV International Symposium on Multiparticle Dynamics, Granlibakken, Lake Tahoe, California, 22-27 June

1983, ed. P. Yager and J.F. Gunion, scientific secretary K. Sparks (Singapore: World Scientific Publishing Co Pte Ltd., 1984), 1107-1119.

6. Ted Gup, "The Doomsday Blueprints," Time, 140 (10 August 1992), p. 38.

7. The material on the Northrop, McDonnell Douglas and Lockheed facilities, and associated strange goings-on, can be found in articles in the Nov 1992 issue of HUFON REPORT: The Newsletter of the Houston UFO Network. Inc., from PO Box 942, Bellaire, TX 77402 (713)850-1352.

8. Ray Vicker, "Going Underground," The Wall Street Journal, 17 June 1981, p. 56.

9. Per author's personal conversation with former AT&T emplyee.

10. Research Program Plan for Meeting Tomorrow's Needs in Tunneling and Excavation: Final Report, Federal Document Nos. NSF-RA-T-74-087 or PB 242 777, Contract C-841. Study performed by Bechtel Corporation for the National Science Foundation, Research Applied to National Needs (RANN), March 1974, p. 53.

11. "Demand Forecast of Underground Construction and Mining in the United States," Subcommittee on Demand Forecasting, U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology, Assembly of Engineering, National Research Council, Federal Document number NRC/AE/TT-81-1 (Washington, D.C: National Academy Press, 1981), p. 20.

Chapter Five – The Mother of All Underground Tunnels?

1. U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology, U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology Report for 1977, NTIS, PB-300 527; also might be found under Federal Technical Document No. NSF/RA-780668. As of 1983 the address of the committee was: U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology, National Research Council, 2101 Constitution Avenue, NW, Washington, DC 20418.

2. U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology, Report for 1981 and 1982, U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology (Washington, D.C.: National Academy Press, 1983).

3. W.G. Harris and H. Oman, "Chlorine as an Oxidizer for Fuel Cells and Its Containment," Boeing Aerospace Company report, in 19th Intersociety

Energy Conversion Engineering Conference, Vol. 2. “Advanced Energy Systems – Their Role In Our Future,” (San Francisco, CA: American Nuclear Society, 19-24 August 1984), pp. 810-814.

4. Design and Construction of Deep Underground Basing Facilities for Strategic Missiles. Vol. 1, Evaluation of Technical Issues. Report of a Workshop Conducted by the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology, Commission on Engineering and Technical Systems, National Research Council, federal technical document no. NRC/CETS/TT-82-1 (Washington, D.C.: National Academy Press, 1982). This report is 68 pages long and worth reading in its entirety. I have only culled out some highlights.

5. George B. Clark, Levent Ozdemir and Fun-Den Wang, Tunnel Boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System, Volume II, State-of-the-Art Review, report prepared by Colorado School of Mines, Golden, Colorado 80401, for the Air Force Weapons Laboratory at Kirtland Air Force Base, New Mexico 87117, Federal Technical Document No. AFWL-TR-79-120, Vol. II, August 1980. Also, George B. Clark, Levent Ozdemir and Fun-Den Wang, Tunnel Boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System, Volume I, Part 1, Application Feasibility. Report prepared by Colorado School of Mines, Golden, Colorado, for the Air Force Weapons Laboratory at Kirtland Air Force Base, New Mexico 87117, Federal Technical Document No. AFWL-TR-79-120, Vol. 1, Part 1, August 1980.

6. Richard Halloran, “Air Force Seeks Missile Base Deep Underground for 1990s,” The New York Times, 3 Oct 1984, pp. Al and A23.

7. “A Subterranean Air Force?” Asian Defence Journal, April 1985, p. 97.

8. John J. Cipar, Explosion-Induced Ground Motion Within a Deep Base. Report prepared for Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Hanscom Air Force Base, Massachusetts 01731, Federal Technical Document No. AFGL-TR-85-0339. Environmental Research Papers No. 940, 8 Nov 1985.

9. “ICBM Deep Basing Construction Planning Study,” paper presented by Patrick D. Lindsey of the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, Omaha District, Nebraska, in 26th U.S. Symposium on Rock Mechanics/Rapid City, SD, 26-28 June 1985, pp. 1189-1196.

10. U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Technology and U.S. National Committee for Rock Mechanics, “Advances in Technology for the

Construction of Deep-Underground Facilities," Tunnelling and Underground Space Technology 3 (1988), pp. 25-44.

11. Department of Defense News Release, 7 November 1985, vol. 85, no. 652, p. 2. This reference was accessed through DIALOG FILE 80. DIALOG is a computer data base.

12. Department of Defense News Release, 6 December 1985, vol. 85, no. 700, p. 1. Reference accessed through DIALOG FILE 80.

13. Department of Defense News Release, 24 April 1986, vol. 86, no. 180, p. 2. Reference accessed through DIALOG FILE 80.

14. Department of Defense News Release, 19 August 1987, vol. 87, no. 416, p. 3. Reference accessed through DIALOG FILE 80.

15. Department of Defense News Release, 29 July 1985, vol. 85, no. 450, p. 2. Reference accessed through DIALOG FILE 80.

16. Though this makes little sense, since both the French and the Japanese have high speed, inter-city rail systems, and in both cases the systems are almost completely on the surface. In neither case have the designers created an extensive, underground tunnel network as set forth in the United States Department of Transportation (DOT) plans. Could the DOT plans really be for a secret tunnel system, published under the guise of an inter-city, mass transit project that actually never was intended for public use?

17. High Speed Ground Transportation Tunnel Design and Cost Data, Report prepared by HARZA Engineering Company, Chicago under subcontract W0356-SC, under prime contract C-353-66 (NEG), for the Office of High Speed Ground Transportation, United States Department of Transportation, Federal Document No. PB 178-201, (also carries following number of unknown significance on the title page: 06818-W454-R0-11), document dated March 1968.

Chapter Six – Tunnelling Machines

1. J. George Thon, "Tunnel-Boring Machines," in Tunnel Engineering Handbook, ed. John O. Bickel and T.R. Kuesel (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Co., 1982), pp. 235-278.

2. Ibid, pp. 244-247.

3. Underground Structures, Design and Construction, ed. R.S. Sinha (New York: Elsevier Science Publishing Co., Inc., 1991), 293-299.

4. Research Program Plan for Meeting Tomorrow’s Needs in Tunneling and Excavation – Final Report. Report prepared by Bechtel Corporation for the National Science Foundation, Research Applied to National Needs (RANN), federal technical document no. NSF-RA-T-74-087, or Federal No. PB 242 777, March 1974, p. 224.

5. “Research and Development,” Government Executive 3 (Jan 1971), pp. 22-23.

6. J. George Thon, “Tunnel-Boring Machines,” in Tunnel Engineering Handbook, pp. 275-276.

7. Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Vol. I – Summary Report. Report by United Aircraft Research Laboratories, United Aircraft Corporation, East Hartford, Connecticut, for U.S. Department of Transportation, Office of High Speed Ground Transportation, Federal Document No. G-910560-10, or PB-178198, May 1968.

8. Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Vol. II – Systems Analysis and Experimental Investigations, Report by United Aircraft Research Laboratories and Browning Engineering Corp., for U.S. Dept. of Transportation, Office of High Speed Ground Transportation, Federal Document No. G-910560-10, or PB-178199, May 1968.

9. R.T. Avery, D. Keefe, T.L. Brekke and I. Finnie, “Hard Rock Tunneling Using Pulsed Electron Beams,” in Accelerator Division Annual Reports. 1 July 1972 – 31 December 1974, LBL-3835, UC-28 Particle Accelerators, TID-4500-R62, Lawrence Berkeley Laboratory, University of California, Berkeley, CA PP-29-32.

10. U.S. Patent No. 3,693,731, 26 Sep 1972.

11. U.S. Patent No. 3,881,777, 6 May 1975.

12. U.S. Patent No. 3,885,832, 27 May 1975.

13. J.H. Altseimer, Systems and Cost Analysis for a Nuclear Subterrene Tunneling Machine: A Preliminary Study, Federal Technical Document No. LA-5354-MS, Informal Report UC-38, Sep 1973, p. 1.

14. John D. Bledsoe, J. Ernest Hill and Richard F. Coon, Cost Comparison Between Subterrene and Current Tunneling Methods. Appendix A, Baseline

Cost Analyses, prepared for National Science Foundation, by A.A. Mathews, Inc., Rockville, MD, Federal Document No. NSF-RA-T-75-001A, also No. PB 244 482, May 1975. Also John D. Bledsoe, J. Ernest Hill and Richard F. Coon, Cost Comparison Between Subterrene and Current Tunneling Methods, Appendix B, Subterrene Cost Analyses, prepared for National Science Foundation, by A.A. Mathews, Inc., Rockville, MD, Federal Document No. NSF-RA-T-75-001B, PB 244 483, May 1975; and John D. Bledsoe, J. Ernest Hill and Richard F. Coon, Cost Comparison Between Subterrene and Current Tunneling Methods, Final Report, prepared for National Science Foundation, by A.A. Mathews, Inc., Rockville, MD, Federal Document No. NSF-RA-T-75-001, May 1975.

15. Joseph W. Neudecker, Jr., James D. Blacic and John C. Rowley, Subselene: A Nuclear Powered Melt Tunneling Concept for High-Speed Lunar Subsurface Transportation Tunnels, submitted to Symposium ’86, Atlantic City, NJ, 22-24 Sep 1986, prepared by Los Alamos National Laboratory, Los Alamos, NM 87545, Federal Document No. LA-UR-86-2897, December 1986.

16. Christopher S. Allen, David W. Cooper, David Davila Jr., Christopher S. Mahendra and Michael A. Tagaras, Proposal for a Lunar Tunnel-Boring Machine, report presented to Prof. Stan Lowy, Dept. of Aerospace Engineering, Texas A&M Univ., research funded by NASA/USRA Grant, 5 May 1988, pp. ii and 15.

17. Ibid, p. 49.

18. Bill Engblom, Eric Graham, Jeevan Perera, Alan Strahan and Ted Ro, Subselenean Tunneler Melting Head Design: A Preliminary Study, by Texas A&M Aerospace Engineering, College Station, TX 77840, Federal Technical Document No. N89-17058, or NASA-CR-184750, May 1988.

Chapter Seven – Nuclear Testing, The EPA, Abductions

1. All information and illustrations cited or used in this article that pertain to the government program that monitors humans and animals are from the following document: U.S. Congress, Office of Technology Assessment, The Containment of Underground Nuclear Explosions, OTA-ISC-414

(Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, October, 1989), pp. 65-80.

Chapter Eight – Abductions, Needles and Implants

1. Texas Instruments, Inc. and the huge General Motors subsidiary, Hughes Aircraft Co., are two of the companies involved in this field. There are a number of others. “Texas Instruments Enters Automatic Identification Market,” Feedstuffs 63 (1 April 1991), p. 18; and “TI Sets Volume Transponder Production for IDs,” Electronic News 38 (21 September 1992), p. 16.

2. A General Motors subsidiary, Hughes Aircraft Co., is co-assignee for one of the patents (United States Patent 5,211,129, dated 18 May 1993). Hughes Aircraft subsequently formed its own electronic identification company, known as Hughes ID. “Hughes Enters ID Market,” Microwaves & RF 31 (January 1992), p. 21.

3. United States Patent 5,211,129, granted 18 May 1993.

4. United States Patent 5,250,026 granted 5 October 1993.

5. United States Patents: 4,730,188 granted 8 March 1988; 5,041,826 granted 20 August 1991; and 5,166,676 granted 24 November 1992.

6. United States Patent 5,041,826, granted 20 August 1991.

7. I do not claim to know the ultimate reason(s) for the abductions. Given the bizarre nature of the phenomenon, though, I am prepared to believe that the underlying motivations may appear, in the ordinary perceptual framework of humanity, to be highly strange.

8. The fact that young children and older people who may be infertile are also abducted need not invalidate this hypothesis. Children with desirable traits may be targeted early on, perhaps because of a genetic heritage that is of interest to the abductors. And whether young or old, it may be that other bodily tissues, all of which contain the genetic material (DNA) of the abductee, can be used in place of sperm or ova.

9. I have no proof that there are functional, artificial wombs for human fetuses. For the sake of the hypothesis I am postulating that they may exist.

But even if they don’t, contemporary medical technology still admits both of artificial insemination using donor sperm and in vitro fertilization.

10. I am reminded of Charles Fort, who questioned whether this planet and the human race might not be someone’s “property.”

11. The metaphor of the hall of mirrors, and the idea that very human terrestrials (including the military), operating behind an intricate, technologically sophisticated web of deception and disinformation, may well be at work in the UFO/abduction phenomenon are mentioned in Jacques Vallée’s excellent book Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception (New York: Ballantine Books, 1991). Martin Cannon, of Prevailing Winds Research has also advanced the idea of covert, human involvement in the abduction and implantation phenomena. More recently, Leah Haley has written of her experiences with joint military and “alien” abductions. Finally, I would ask readers to please note that my objective with the whole abduction/implant phenomenon is simply to present relevant facts, present a possible hypothesis that may shed some light on the subject, and thereby to stimulate a more informed discussion.

Chapter Nine – Is the U.S. Military Involved in “Alien” Cattle Mutilations?

1. “Laser Medical Pac,” Fact Sheet, Office of Public Affairs, Phillips Laboratory (505)-846-1911, 3550 Aberdeen Ave SE, Kirtland AFB, NM 87117-5776, January 1994.

INDEX

Illustration numbers are boldfaced

A.A. Mathews Company 99

Abductions, alien 68, 105–106, 108–109, 113, 116, 119–120

Air Force, U.S. 11, 17–18, 22–27, 30, 36, 41, 46, 61, 74, 76–80, 110, 122–123, 125–127

Air Force Ballistic Missile Office, U.S. 78–80, 127

Air Force Weapons Laboratory, U.S. 79

Alabama 15, 17–18, 38, 105

Alaska 24, 69

Albuquerque, New Mexico 24–27, 58, 110–111, 122

Aliens 5, 29, 68, 70, 72, 80, 103–109, 111–124

Area S4, Nevada 11

Arizona 24, 36–37, 58–59, 106

Army, U.S. 11, 14–16, 19, 33–34, 39–40, 61, 74, 126

Army Corps of Engineers, U.S. 7–8, 10–11, 13, 17, 20, 23, 30–32, 34, 39, 47, 61, 69, 77, 80

Atlas Copco Group 86

Atomic Energy Commission 66, 95, 103

AT&T (American Telephone & Telegraph) 27, 40, 68–69, 127

BDM 79

Bechtel Corporation 71, 89–92

Bell Aerospace Textron 79

Bill of Rights 42

Boeing Aerospace Company 75

British Columbia, Canada 11

Bureau of Indian Affairs 17

Bureau of Land Management 17
Bush, George 13, 60
California 11, 24, 30, 36, 38–39, 57–58, 66–68, 70, 78–79, 99, 106–107, 127
Calweld 92
Camp David, Maryland 45–46
Canada 11–12,47–48
Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado 10, 47, 56
China Lake Naval Weapons Center, California 36, 38–39 **10–11**
C.I.A. 61,87
Colorado 10–11, 23–24, 37, 47–48, 56–59, 74, 76–77, 79, 105, 111, 125
Colorado School of Mines 23, 74, 79, 126
Command centers 19, 61
Continuity of Government (COG) plan 51
Connecticut 78,82
Defense Industrial Plant Equipment Facility 62
Defense Nuclear Agency, U.S. 57, 61, 74, 126
Department of Defense, U.S. (DOD) 16, 44, 64, 79
Department of Energy, U.S. (DOE) 26–29, 64–66, 74, 103, 106, 124, 126
Department of Transportation, U.S. 72, 81–82, 92, 127
Dobbins Air Force Base 18
Doomsday Project, The 60
Dresser Industries 86
Earth Technology 79–80
EBE’s (Extraterrestrial Biological Entities) 29, 98
England 14, 84
Environmental Protection Agency, U.S. (EPA) 104, 106–109, 111, 123–124
Exotech, Inc. 92
Extraterrestrials, “Little Grey” 5, 70, 72, 98, 104

Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) 43, 47, 49–51, 53–57, 126
Federal Highway Administration 74
Federal Regional Centers 55–56
Federal Relocation Centers 51
Federal Reserve 50, 52–53, 62–63, 126
First Amendment 7–8, 129
Forest Service, U.S. 17
Fort Belvoir, Virginia 11
Fort Ritchie Underground Facility, Pennsylvania 31, 43,44
France 12, 84
Freedom of Information Act 7, 8, 26–27, 56
Georgia 15, 18, 38, 56–57, 69
Glass-walled tunnels, see Tunnels, glass-walled Greenbriar Hotel, West Virginia 54
Groom Lake, Nevada 11
Helicopters, unidentified “dark” 111, 121, 123, 125
High Speed Ground Transportation System 81
Hughes Tool Company 86
ICBM (Intercontinental Ballistic Missiles) 75, 77–79
Idaho 58, 77
Illinois 23–24, 56, 74
Implants 112, 114–116, 118–120
Ingersoll Rand Company 86
Iran-Contra 7
Iron Mountain, New York 67
Israel 12
ITT Research Institute 91
Jarva, Inc. 77, 86–87
Joint Chiefs of Staff 46

Kansas 38,62,69

Kentucky 57

Kirtland Air Force Base, New Mexico 24–27, 110–111, 122–123, 125, **3**

Kirtland Munitions Storage Complex, New Mexico 24

Laser tunneling machines 89–92, 97

Lasers, surgical 121–125, **49**

Lockheed 67–68, 127, **20–21**

Los Alamos National Laboratory, New Mexico 27, 66, 94, 98, 100–102, 110

Los Alamos, New Mexico 27–30, 66, 94, 97, 110

Lovelace Medical Center, New Mexico 110–111

Maine 58

Maryland 31, 43, 45–46, 51, 53–54, 56, 59, 63, 82, 99

Massachusetts 56, 61, 72, 82, 92, 127

McDonnell Douglas 67–68, 70, 127, **19**

Michigan 23, 56–57

Minnesota 24, 58

Missouri 28, 57–58

Monitoring, nuclear, of humans and animals 104, 106, 108–111, **45**

Monitoring, nuclear, of milk 104, 107, **46–47**

Montana 11

Moon, the 100–102, 128

Morrison-Knudsen 77

Mount Blackmore, Montana 11

Mount Pony, Virginia 52–53

Mount Weather, Virginia 43, 49–51, 55

Mutilations, cattle and/or animals 103–111, 121–125

MX nuclear missiles 74

NASA 100, 102

National Committee on Tunneling Technology, U.S. 71, 73–74, 76, 78

National Committee for Rock Mechanics, U.S. 78
National Park Service 17
National Science Foundation 74, 99
National Security Agency (NSA) 42, 63–64, 126
National Underground Science Facility 66
Navy, U.S. 41–42, 74, 126, **12**
Nebraska 38, 46, 59
Nellis Air Force Base, Nevada 11
Nevada 7, 11, 37, 59, 64–66, 76, 106–107, 109–110
Nevada Test Site 59, 64, 66, 106, 110, **13–17**
New Hampshire 58
New Jersey 69
New Mexico 11, 24, 27, 58, 66, 69, 94, 97, 103, 110–111, 122, 125
New York 11, 56, 58, 67, 82, 127
NORAD 10,47–48
North Carolina 51
North, Oliver 60
Northrop 67–68, 70, 127, **19**
Norton Air Force Base 78, 80
Nuclear power 19–20, 76, 95, 101–102
Nuclear war 22, 31, 43, 46, 49–51, 55, 60–61, 77
Nuclear waste 65–66, **18**
Nuclear Waste Depository, Nevada 65
Nuclear weapons 23–25, 27, 31, 64
Ohio 24, 77
Parsons, Brinckerhoff, Quade and Douglas 47
Pennsylvania 24, 31, 43–44, 50–51, 56, 82
Pentagon, the 7–8, 10, 14, 16–18, 33, 43–44, 59, 61–62, 73, 81, 126–127
Presidential Survivability Support System 61

“Project, The” 60
RAND Corporation 22–24, 30, 61
RANN (Research Applied to National Needs) 89
Raven Rock, Pennsylvania 43–44
Reagan, Ronald 13, 52, 60
Robbins Company, The 77, 79–80, 86–87
Sandia National Laboratories 25, 27–28, 110–111
Saudi Arabia 12
Site R, Pennsylvania 43–45, 50
South Carolina 110
Soviet Union 12, 60
Standard Oil Company 67, 127
Strategic Air Command 46, 61
Sweden 12, 14
Switzerland 12
Table Mountain, Colorado 11
Tennessee 18, 110
Texas 27–28, 37, 56, 100–101, 110
Transponders, injectible identification 115, **48**

Tunneling Machines
  flame-jet 81, 92–93, 127 **34–37**
  laser 89–92, 97
  lunar 100–101, 128, **43–44**
  mobile miner 87, **31–33**
  non-conventional 89
  nuclear subterrene 94–95, 97–101, 128, **39–42**
  pulsed-electron 94, **38**
  shaft boring machine 87, **30**
  TBMs (Tunnel Boring Machines) 65, 72 , 75–76, 85–87, 89, 93, 95, 98–101, 128, **28–32**
Tunnels, glass-walled or -lined 89, 94, 96–97, 100, 102
Twentynine Palms Marine Corps Base, California 11
UFO 29, 103–106, 108, 112, 118
United Aircraft Research Labs 91–92
United Technologies 78
University of Nevada-Las Vegas, Environmental Systems Monitoring Laboratory 110
Urban Mass Transportation Administration 74
Utah 37, 58–59, 106–107
Utah Mining and Engineering Company 47
Virginia 11, 39, 42, 44, 49, 51–52, 58–59, 79
Warrenton Training Center, Virginia 14,39–40
Washington, D.C. 26, 45, 59, 72, 82, 92, 127
Washington, state of 56–57, 76–77, 79, 86, 110
West Point, New York 11
West Virginia 42, 51, 54
White House, the 43, 45–46, 50, 61
White Sands Army Missile Range, New Mexico 11
Wirth Corporation 86

Wyoming 58
Yucca Mountain, Nevada 65

Transcripts of William Cooper's Mystery Babylon Series

The history, the dogma, and the identity of Mystery Babylon

v0.9.4.1

Read everything. Listen to everything. Don't trust anything unless you can prove it with your own research.

If you think you're on the right side I can assure you are on the wrong side no matter which side you are on. Each of us individually must begin to study, research and learn the truth.

Learn to think for yourself. Learn to find the truth for yourself because that is the only salvation.

Should I go on? I will. I will go on and on and on and on until you either wake up or I am dead, one or the other. And if you don't wake up, I would rather be dead than live in slavery in the New World Order with our Constitution destroyed, the family broken, the children taken from the homes to be raised by the state, Christians and patriots locked in prison camps, labor camps, until they are no longer useful, and then they will be executed. And the blood will run in the New World Order.

It is not a conspiracy, don’t call it a conspiracy. It is all out in the open and it stands on the ignorance, apathy and stupidity of the American people that is the foundation upon which the New World Order is built.

It amazes me how the public can continue to buy their bullshit year, after year, after year. After they went to high school they went to work or they went to college for four years where they were indoctrinated into what they are to believe and propound to the general public and then they went to work for someone else. Amazing! Absolutely pathetic! A nation of children . . . all dressed like sheep.

The sheeple of this world had sucked us dry . . . none of them were active in helping find the truth. No! They would take bits of information I gave them, bend them to fit their agenda and take off into another fantasy; flapping their wings over the horizon . . . because I’ve discovered people do not like the truth. They do not want to hear the truth especially if it pings on one of their agendas.

You know one of the biggest differences between me and most of you is when I’m wrong and when stupid I don’t let my ego get in the way. I can look in the mirror and say, “Bill you’re stupid and you better change your ways!” and I do because I don’t like to be stupid because I’ve done it several times in my life.

~William Milton Cooper

Almost all people are hypnotics. The proper authority saw to it that the proper belief should be induced, and the people believed properly.

~Charles Fort

Please visit the Hour of the Time @
http://www.hourofthetime.com/

Table of Contents

Table of Contents 3

William Milton Cooper's Biography..... 5

Hour 1: The Dawn of Man (aired February 11th, 1993)..... 7

Hour 2: The Sun of God (aired February 15th, 1993)..... 14

Hour 3: Antiquities (aired February 16th, 1993)..... 24

Hour 4: Osiris and Iris, Part I (aired February 17th, 1993)..... 32

Hour 5: Osiris and Isis, Part II (aired February 18th, 1993) 40

Hour 6: The New World Order and Freemasonry (aired February 18th, 1993)..... 48

Hour 7: Maitreya (aired February 19th, 1993)..... 60

Hour 8: Ecumenism (aired February 21st, 1993) 69

Hour 9: Initiation (aired February 24st, 1993)..... 79

Hour 10: Gnosticism (aired February 17th, 1993)..... 88

Hour 11: The Assassins (aired March 1st, 1993) 96

Hour 12: The Templars and the Assassins (aired March 2nd, 1993)..... 106

Hour 13: The End of the Templars (aired March 3rd, 1993) 115

Hour 14: Skull and Bones (aired March 8th, 1993) 125

Hour 15: The Roshaniya (aired March 9th, 1993) 134

Hour 16: Quotes by Freemasons (aired March 10th, 1993)..... 143

Hour 17: Sun Worship (aired March 30th, 1993) 151

Hour 18: Bibliography (aired March 31st, 1993) 161

Hour 19: Lucifer Worship (aired May 12th, 1993) 169

Hour 20: 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order (aired May 11th, 1993)..... 181

Hour 21: William Morgan Interview, Part I (aried May 14th, 1993) 189

Hour 22: William Morgan Interview, Part II (aried May 17th, 1993)..... 200

Hour 23: William Morgan Interview, Part III (aried May 18th, 1993) 208

Hour 24: Jordan Maxwell Interview (Note: JM is an infiltrator) 217

Hour 25: America's Assignment Part I 231

Hour 26: America's Assignment, Part II..... 241

Hour 27: America's Assignment, Part III 251

Hour 28: In the Coils of the Coming Conflict (aired August 17th, 1993)..... 261

Hour 29: Lucifer 2000 (Jordan Maxwell & Anthony Hilder) (aired August 18th, 1993) 270

Hour 30: The Godmakers and Bo Gritzaired (aired October 13th, 1993)..... 286

Hour 31: United Nations Meditation Room (aired October 22nd, 1993) 296

Hour 32: Mystery Expose (Tom Valentine exposed as Freemason) (aired December 3rd, 1993) 306
Hour 33: Aid and Abet Newsletter (aired January 3rd, 1994) 318
Hour 34: Secret Societies and Vatican II (aired January 12nd, 1994) 327
Hour 35: From Babylon to Christianity (aired February 8th, 1994) 336
Hour 36: Rose Cross College, Part I (aired February 22nd, 1994) 345
Hour 37: Rose Cross College, Part II (aired February 23rd, 1994) 356
Hour 38: Rose Cross College, Part III (aired February 24th, 1994) 366
Hour 39: The Occult and The Third Reich (The Enigma of the Swastika) (aired February 28th, 1994) 374
Hour 40: The Occult and the Third Reich (The SS - Blood and Soil) (aired March 1st, 1994) 382
Hour 41: The Occult and the Third Reich (Himmler the Mystic) (aired March 2nd, 1994) 391
Hour 42: Darkness (aired September 20th, 1996) 400
Acknowledgements 408

To do:
Proofread 1-6(17m) 9-14(0m), 21(50min)-42
Footnotes hour 25-27

William Milton Cooper's Biography

(May 6th, 1943—November 5th, 2001)

William Cooper was reared in an Air Force family. As a child he lived in many different countries, graduating from Yamato High School in Japan. Since he has traveled through or lived in many different foreign countries. Mr. Cooper has a world view much different than most Americans.

William served with the Strategic Air Command, United States Air Force. He held a secret clearance working on B-52 bombers, KC-135 refueling aircraft, and Minuteman missiles. William received his Honorable Discharge from the United States Air Force in 1965.

William joined the United States Navy, fulfilling a dream previously frustrated by chronic motion sickness. He served aboard the submarine USS Tiru (SS-416), USS Tombigbee (AOG-11), Naval Support Activity Danang RVN, Naval Security and Intelligence Camp Carter RVN, Danang Harbor Patrol RVN, Dong Ha River Security Group RVN, USS Charles Berry (DE-1035), Headquarters Commander in Chief Pacific Fleet, USS Oriskany (CVA-34).

Cooper was a member of the Office of Naval Security and Intelligence serving as a Harbor and River Patrol Boat Captain at Danang and the Dong Ha River Security Group, Cua Viet, Republic of Vietnam. William Cooper was awarded several medals for his leadership and heroism during combat, including two with "V" for Valor.

He served on the Intelligence Briefing Team for the Commander In Chief of the Pacific Fleet. William was the Petty Officer of the Watch and designated KL-47 SPECAT operator in the CINCPACFLT Command Center at Makalapa, Hawaii. There he held a Top Secret, Q, SI, security clearance.

William Cooper achieved the rank of First Class Petty Officer, QM1, E-6 after only 8 years of Naval service, a difficult task in any branch of the United States military. William Cooper received an Honorable Discharge from the United States Navy on December 11, 1975.

William attended Long Beach City College where he picked up an Associate of Science Degree in Photography. He founded the Absolute Image Studio and Gallery of Fine Art Photography in Long Beach, California.

William held the position of Executive Director of Adelphi Business College, Pacific Coast Technical Institute, and National Technical College. Mr. Cooper was the National Marketing Coordinator for National Education and Software.

He produced several documentaries covering subjects such as the Kennedy assassination and secret black projects that have built flying disk shaped craft. William is an internationally acclaimed radio personality broadcasting the Hour Of The Time on WBCQ worldwide short-wave 7.415 MHz from 10 PM until 11 PM Eastern Standard Time (0300 to 0400 UTC) Monday through Thursday nights.

William Cooper is the author of *Behold A Pale Horse*. The book has become the best selling underground book of all time. It is read and promoted by word of mouth by people of all races, religions, and nationalities.

Mr. Cooper is a world class lecturer, one of the few other than superstars, monarchs, and Popes who have appeared at Wembly in London. William Cooper has lectured for 10 years in every State.

William Cooper, Trustee, has founded for Harvest Trust, the CAJI News Service (Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence), VERITAS national full size newspaper, The Intelligence Service, Harvest Publications, and has helped over 700 low power FM affiliate stations get equipped and on the air... including the station he manages as Trustee for the Independence Foundation Trust, 101.1 FM Eagar, Arizona, broadcasting to 7,000 people.

Under his leadership Harvest Trust ventured into the publishing trade. The first book under the Harvest Trust imprint was Oklahoma City: Day One by Michele Marie Moore... the definitive classic on the Oklahoma City bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building on April 19, 1995.

Shortly after the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah federal building Rush Limbaugh read a White House memo on the air during his broadcast which named William Cooper, "...the most dangerous radio host in America". Mr. Cooper considers William Clinton's pronouncement the greatest compliment that he has ever received.

William Cooper's FBI file, promulgated by the investigation required by his security clearances while in military service, was one of those unlawfully in possession of the White House in what has become known as, "Filegate". Shortly after this discovery President Clinton ordered all federal agencies to begin investigation, persecution, and prosecution of Mr. Cooper to shut him up.

After years of filing FOIA requests and researching the IRS William Cooper brought suit against the IRS in Federal District Court in Phoenix Arizona to force the IRS to produce proof of jurisdiction and delegation of authority which the IRS was unable to do. To short circuit Mr. Cooper's attempt to reveal the true nature of the criminal IRS, and to carry out the orders of the White House, the agency lied to a Grand Jury, not allowing William Cooper to testify, and secured indictments against Mr. Cooper and his wife Annie. This ploy successfully stopped Mr. Cooper from continuing his suit against the criminal IRS for fear of being arrested.

In 1998 VERITAS and Harvest Publications was sold to Hallmark Creative Corporation along with the copyright and all rights to all written material produced or ever to be produced by William Cooper including *Behold A Pale Horse* and *Oklahoma City: Day one*. Hallmark Creative Corporation has contracted to insure this material is always available to the public.

William Cooper continued to champion the cause of Truth and Freedom for all Peoples of all races, religions, and places of ancestral origin. William is Native American, English, Scotch, and Irish. He lived in Arizona with his Chinese wife Annie, daughters, Dorothy (Pooh), little Allyson and their dogs, Sugarbear, and Crusher. In March of 1999 William sent his family out of the United States for their security. He lived and worked alone with his two dogs, one rooster, and one chicken.

On November 5th, 2001, Bill was killed by the Apache County Sherrifs Department during a raid on his home. He is now buried on a hill in Eagar, Arizona.

Hour 1: The Dawn of Man (aired February 11th, 1993)

Welcome to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: Also sprach Zarathustra)[1]

When I first saw the movie *2001,*[2] I was amazed, awed, to say the least. The entire scope of the movie was overpowering and, for most of the people of the world, was completely baffling. Most people who saw that movie did not understand from beginning to end what it was that they had experienced, but they knew, everyone who saw it, knew that they had experienced something profound. That something had been communicated to the dark, deep recesses of their mind which they did not understand and, indeed, which they were incapable of understanding. For you see, the movie was not meant for the "profane" as most of us are called by the Adepts, or the Initiates, or the priests of the Mystery Schools. For that movie was a message to those Initiates who were well versed in the symbology and the Mystery Religion of an ancient religion that is practiced to this day in secret. Now, I'm going to tell you the meaning of the symbology that you saw in the movie *2001*, and then each and every listener should go to their local video rental store and watch the movie again from beginning to end. For it is the story of the entire human race, according to the history of the Mystery Religion of ancient Babylon.

Now, I can assure you that you will not understand any of what you are going to hear without ample preparation, and without a basic understanding in the symbology of the ancient religion. And you're going to get that. And this is going to be a series of programs that will, in fact, take probably many hours to complete.

But let me just go over the symbology of the movie *2001* quickly with you, and then we will go back to the very beginning, to the first primitive human, probably sitting on his haunches, munching upon some vegetable, watching the sun rise in the east.

In the beginning of the movie *2001*, most people who sat in the theater were struck by the imagery which was presented to them, as they first saw a dark and grey and ugly world. And as that world begin [sic] to move down from the center of the screen, they saw behind it, a moon. And as the moon begin to come down with the world that was sinking to the lower part of the screen behind it you saw the emergence of the sun. What you are witnessing was an eclipse of the sun, partial eclipse, and as the light from the sun spilled across the edge of the moon, it took the shape of the boat of Isis[3] and the sun, of course, for anyone who has studied, the Osirian cycle became Osiris. And the symbology was Osiris riding across the heavens upon the boat of Isis. Now, this will all have much deeper meaning to you as we progress toward your education in the ancient Mystery Schools, which are today known by many different names, and we will get to some of those names as we go along. This signified, of course, the creation of the universe and of the world.

And what we saw next was a barren plain: nothing growing, barren rocks, barren desert. And then we saw the sun begin to rise in the east over the horizon, signifying the birth of the world. As the sun traveled across the heavens, you saw the wind begin to move across the face of the earth, signifying that something was happening. Then, as the sun began to reach its zenith on a prime longitude, we began to see shrubs. Small green plants began to emerge. Now, the sun traveling across the heavens did not, of course, signify a day. It signified an age. An age, dear listeners.

As the sun sank deeper into the afternoon, we saw the emergence of animal life: birds, and we could hear the birds singing, and we can see the animals. And then, we can see primitive, primitive man in the form of an ape, mingling amongst the animals, neither harming the other, living in a state of innocence. And you saw man only eating plants and roots. You saw that, even when the animals and man were in competition for food, no one was injured or hurt, but there was a display of waving of arms, and yelling and grunting until one or the other moved away. The significance of this was the age of innocence, when man lived in the Garden of Eden.[4] Innocent; with the animals, it was a vegetarian [sic]. And as the sun progressed farther toward the west, we saw man begin to retreat into the womb. For you see, the passage of the sun across the sky, from the time that it rose in the east, signifying the birth of the world, we saw that as it reached its zenith, its most powerful aspect in the heavens, life began to emerge, first in the form of plants, and then animal life, and that the animals and early man lived in harmony together in a state of innocence. This was the symbology of the movie.

---

[1] Richard Strauss, *Thus Spoke Zarathustra, Op. 30*, composed in 1896. Featured in *2001: A Space Odyssey*

[2] Stanley Kubrick, *2001: A Space Odyssey (film)*, 1968

[3] Interesting note: The Cathédrale de Notre Dame de Paris (Cathedral of Our Lady of Paris) is situated on the Île de la Cité (island of the city), an island in the Seine River, a river where the Isidis Navigatum was known to be celebrated during the Roman era. The Île de la Cité is the original birthplace of Paris, and from an aerial view, one can see that the island is boat shaped.

During this process, you saw a rock formation in the shape of the male organ, the penis. This was the symbol of the Mystery Schools, of the generative force of creation. When you watch the movie again, pay attention to the symbology of the movie.

Now, as the sun begins to sink even farther in the west, man and his little tribe goes to the water hole and confronts another group of primitive man, all in form of the ape. And there is a confrontation, but you notice that no one was injured or killed. There was a lot of waving of arms, jumping up and down, grunting and screaming and screeching, until the group that was at the watering hole and had already quenched their thirst moved away, and then the new group moved in. And then they scurried into the womb signified by the cave. And there was more symbology there, as they all sat in the darkness with their eyes open in fear, and one of the female apes held a child to her breast. And you were seeing man in the transformation from ape to human. Primitive man, evolving to the point where he could think. And then what happened in the movie, toward the dawn, you heard the humming of bees, millions of bees. And the beehive and bees were a prominent symbol in the Mystery Schools. It signifies societal cohesion; industry. Now, not industry as you may know it in the manufacture of cars, but industry in working together in a societal form. In this case, the very basic rudiments of society. And as the sun again begin, began to rise up in the east, signifying the dawn of the new man, the audience beheld an obelisk, a monolith in front of the cave, or the womb, from which the apes emerged. And it appeared that the humming of the bees was emanating from this block of stone.

Now, notice I said three words: monolith, obelisk and stone. All of these are significant symbols in the ancient Mystery Religions. And you saw that this was not God, because creation had already taken place. The world had been created, plants and animals had been created, and primitive man existed on the earth before this monolith, this obelisk, this stone ever made its appearance. It is also known as, the stone that you saw earlier, the generative force or the penis. Now, don't get all confused by this terminology. It will begin to make sense to you as we go along. It took me many years of study to understand what I am now imparting to you. You watched as the apes milled about in great excitement, and one encouraged by another, signifying Adam and Eve (the one encouraging was the symbol of Eve, the one being encouraged was Adam) until he actually reached out and touched the face of the stone and he was imparted intellect.

You can tell that something significant had happened because the tone and the general volume of the music changed at that point. And then the other apes began to touch and rub the statue. Now, most people that I knew attributed what happened to some extraterrestrial force, and they were receiving the exoteric interpretation, or that which is meant for the profane, those who were not illumined and cannot understand what it is they are seeing. But for the initiated, what they witnessed was the creation of the world by God and the impartation of knowledge to man, the forbidden knowledge, by Lucifer through his agent, Satan. For in the religion of the Mystery Schools, they believe that man was held prisoner in the Garden of Eden by an unjust and vindictive God, and that man was not told by this unjust and vindictive God that he could have the same powers. And man was set free from the bonds of ignorance by Lucifer through his agent, Satan. And many believe that the two are the same, and that's okay, because maybe they are. And that through the gift of intellect man himself will become God. Now, for those of you who understand what I am imparting to you now, you may not even have to listen any farther, for it explains everything that has ever happened in the history of man, and everything that is happening now, and all that is to happen in the future.

---

[4] Living as caretaker of the Garden of Eden (earth).

As it progressed, you saw the first primitive man form the first original thought with the use of the gift of intellect when he squatted in the dust, and picked up a bone, and flopped the bone over, and saw it hit a rib, and the rib flew up into the air and he looked at it. Then he flopped it to the other side and hit another piece of rib bone that flew up into the air, and you could see the wheels turning in the mind of this primitive individual, as he lifted the thigh bone and then struck down in front of him and watched bones fly. And then he struck again and again, and then he crushed the skull of the dead animal that was lying in front of him. And you notice that the portrayal of this was absolutely accurate, because the next thing that happened was that this new gift, this intellect and this original thought, led to the murder of another primitive human being. In this case, of the tribe that had not been given the gift of intellect, did not have the ability to use a bone as a weapon because they had not made the connection. And you watched, in the symbology of that movie, the murder of Abel by his brother Cain. And you watched as he threw the bone up into the air, and the progression of the use of the gift of intellect led you to a space station spinning around the earth. And then the story began of man's journey toward illumination.

And everything in that movie was a symbol for something else. Now, the audience sitting who are what the Adepts, or the Initiates, call “profane” did not understand what they saw. They thought that it was really about a journey into space by an astronaut, or a group of astronauts, and the bad things that happened to some of them and one survived. And none of them understood the significance of the obelisks, the monoliths: one on the moon, one in orbit around Jupiter, and the ultimate transformation of the astronaut into a giant fetus floating in space.

And to tell you the truth when I first saw the movie I didn’t really understand it either, but I knew that there was something of such import there that I needed to know. And I never stopped studying until I found out. And of course, one discovery leads to another. And every time I answered a question, a hundred more popped up until I reached a point, dear listeners, where I realized that if I studied for the entire rest of my life, there is not enough time in my life to learn what it is that I need to know. But I have learned enough along the way to impart some of my knowledge to you, and maybe you can help me find the ultimate truth that all of us, all of us, ultimately learn to look for, although not all of us ever realized that we are looking, and most of us never even understand what it is that we are looking for, but some of us do understand that we are looking. The Adepts, or the Initiates, the priesthood of the Mystery School, believe that they have found it and that they know all of these things. And I'm not really sure that they do. Because in my search in my ultimate illumination – (laughs) and yes, I have become, to a degree, illumined, illuminated – I have discovered that I am more illuminated then most of those who have gone through the process of initiation in the Mystery Schools and believe that they know more than I do and it's not true. I have surpassed them by so far, and they believe that they are so far ahead. That it has become difficult for me to place myself in any kind of logical progression along a path that I am following, and I know not where it will ultimately lead. But I know that many have been misled along this path, and are worshiping the fallen angel that we know as Lucifer. Many believe that Lucifer and Satan are the same; many people believe that they are totally different entities, and that Satan is evil and Lucifer is not. But Lucifer rebelled against God, according to the Bible, and was expelled from heaven and flung to the earth to be the master of the material world, the master of the earth.

Now, if Lucifer is indeed Satan, how this transformation took place, I am not wise enough to know. If they are different, then I have not yet discovered where Satan came from, if Lucifer is not Satan. Now, there are people who have professed to know the answers to these questions, and have sat down and we have talked for hours, and I still am not sure that they are right or that they are wrong. And I’m still looking for the answer to that question. But I do know this: ancient man witnessed something that he described in his oral history and in his writings.

And it could probably be called the first UFO sighting in the history of the world. "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning [star]!"[5] Now notice, Lucifer was called the "son of the morning star". He was also called the "morning star", and there is a great mystery here, because Christ also called himself the "morning star".

Now, how all that fits together, I do not know, but I have been told by those who have been initiated in the Mystery

---

[5] Isaiah 14:12.

Schools that Christ and Lucifer are one and the same being. However, I cannot bring myself to believe that. What you believe, of course, is your own business, and it is not my intention to make you believe anything, but rather to impart to you what I have learned over many, many years of study into the secrets of those who worship the ancient Mystery Religions in secret for thousands of years.

For you see, that monkey who sat there squatting on his haunches in the desert, striking the earth and the pile of bones with this great thigh bone, was the first priest of the Mystery Schools. And it was this first priest who then began to initiate others into the secrets. And they are the ones who have been responsible, according to my research, for most of the scientific developments and the forward movement, as far as material progress goes, of the human race, for they were the learners. They were the ones who developed science. They were the ones who hid their developments, and used their science and their knowledge and their secrets to govern others – usually not as kings, but as advisors and as priests, and in all actuality the powers behind the thrones in ancient times and even today. They have ruled from the shadows, you see. And they have call themselves the Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages. And their first, their first, religion was called astro-theology, or the worship of the heavens, and their first object of worship was the sun. The second object of worship was the moon. And everywhere you see this Mystery Schools, or the Mystery Religion, you will see the symbols of the sun and the moon, also known as Osiris and Isis, and the child Horus, which I will explain the meaning of later.

Right now, folks, we must take a break. Don't go away, I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(Interlude music: continuing Also sprach Zarathustra)[6]

Man's new found intellect set him upon a quest that, according to those who say that they know, has never ended, even unto this day. And the modern-day equivalent of this ancient Mystery Religion calls itself the Order of the Quest. And you will see it reflected in many of their outward, exoteric branches, where they disseminate information to the public, or manipulate the public, or deceive the public, as the profane to them are nothing more than cattle to be herded, and occasionally to be led to the slaughter. In the movie *2001*, the quest led them ultimately into space and to the moon, where they were further imparted knowledge, by Lucifer again, in the form of the obelisk, the monolith, the stone, the penis. And you will understand what that means later when we get into the Osirian cycle, or the legend of Isis, Osiris and the child, Horus.

When they were imparted knowledge again on the moon, it set them off on a further quest to the planet Jupiter, where they found a huge tremendous, again, another obelisk, monolith, stone, the generative force, the penis, floating in space, orbiting the planet Jupiter. Now, the journey from the moon to Jupiter is significant, for the astronauts on board this spaceship represented the entirety of the human race, and it represented that some will evolve, and those who cannot - will not be allowed into the future. You see, this was a message from those who rule to all of the Initiates of the world. It was a message that the new age is now dawning.

And you see that, at one point during this journey from the moon to Jupiter, man, represented on a microcosm by the astronauts making this voyage, came in conflict with their own technology. The technology of the human race was represented by the computer called HAL, and for those who were intelligent enough to experiment with the name HAL, and progressed the letters one forward in the alphabet from what they were in the movie, H became I, A became B, and L became M, and they were able to see that the symbol was of the largest at that time when the movie was made and the corporation that was on the cutting edge of computer technology, IBM [sic]. It was significant that man had built this technology, this computer, which had an artificial intelligence and was capable of communicating with the astronauts, and yet they had forgotten to put a switch in the machine which could be turned off at will.

Now, you have to understand that this is all symbology. HAL represented many things. He represented the atomic bomb, the hydrogen bomb, chemical warfare, bacteriological warfare. Represented the state of the art of technology, where it became so complicated that no one man could be an expert in it, and thus might unknowingly participate in the building of a technology which could destroy him, yet he only worked on a part or portion of it.[7]

---

[6] check

The knowledge of which did not indicate to him that the end product could be a danger, and we see that happening now, don't we? Where everybody has to specialize in one small portion of technology, because the overall picture is so complicated and so far beyond our understanding, that we see the prediction made in the movie *2001* actually becoming true before our very eyes. Just in my lifetime, I've seen automobiles that I can take apart and put together blindfolded myself as a teenager, to driving automobiles that I can lift the hood and not even recognize most of what I'm looking at, except that I know that it's an engine in there, and I know that it's got a fuel delivery system, and some kind of system that ignites the fuel, but the technology has surpassed my ability to take it apart and put it back together again without many months or years of specialized training. And this has occurred across the board in our technology, and as I told you before, I will tell you again tonight, dear listeners: in secret, whatever you perceive as the state of technology in the public eye, the very cutting edge, in secret, they are a minimum a 50 to 100 years ahead, to the point where science fiction is no longer fiction, and hasn't been for quite some time, but is, in all actuality, science fact.

You saw this battle play itself out on board this space ship, where ultimately there was only one astronaut left fighting the battle against HAL. And he was able to make this jump in his evolutionary consciousness, and he was able to fool HAL and turn off the computer. But when he did so he knew that he had relegated himself to permanent separation from his fellow human beings back on earth. And, folks, the message was not that he went into space to affect this separation. Space was just the vehicle through which it was conveyed in the movie.

The message was that the new man will go into the future and the rest of us will perish. We will not be allowed into the future. If we are, it will be as slave labor until we were no longer useful, and then we will simply be exterminated. The message to the vast army of Initiates, in the Mystery School, was we are on the threshold of the new age, and into this new age will march only one, one, man. It is the new man, it is the illumined man, it is the man that is able to make the evolutionary jump to no more war, to no more rape, no more pillage, to the level in the Mystery School known as 666. It is the number of a man. It is the illumined man to the Mystery Schools. To those of us who are Christians, it is the symbol, mark of the beast, the indication that the Antichrist has arrived, and the beginning of the time predicted in the Book of Revelation known as the Tribulation.

Now, all of this that I thought I knew so well and understood has become even more mysterious to me now, as I know that I am battling against something that is almost incomprehensible and I have had to do it alone, by myself, not trusting anyone else, not letting them in, for fear that they would corrupt my mind and I would be led down the wrong path. And I still do not know the answers, but I have an awful lot of clues, and a lot of facts, and I have learned an awful lot, and maybe I am more confused than I ever was in my entire life. But after you hear the results of what I have learned, and after I am, for the first time since I've learned all of this, communicated to other human beings to let you know how really confused I am, maybe all of us being confused together can put the pieces in the places, and patch this mystery together, and come up what we need as answers to formulate a future that we can all, all enjoy, without fear, without wars, without lies and deception and manipulation, without elitists and terrorists, and crooks and liars. For I am going to impart to you during all of this that the priests of the ancient Mystery Religion are the ones who have caused most of the misery in the history of man. And if they have not learned this knowledge, the Secrets of the Ages that they keep from the rest of us and use to manipulate us, maybe, maybe we would have reached peace in this world hundreds of years ago. I don't really know the answer to that, but I don't think much of what has happened in the history of the world that was miserable, terrible, would have happened without these people. But I may be wrong, and as always when you listen to this show, don't believe a word you hear unless you can substantiate it in your own research.

---

[7] Historian John Michell notes: ". . . it is their immediate concern, having eaten of the tree of knowledge, to apply all their newly acquired arts to constructing a facsimile of the Garden of Eden, a model paradise . . ." But there already was an architecture prior to man's imposition of his structures and intervention, this was the architecture of the natural landscape as shaped by God to claim that have left it as it was would have been backward is symptomatic of the diseased occult mind and its gigantic egotistical pathology. As long as it (earth) was left as God created it, it was paradise. Due to our blindness we feverishly cooperate with the imposition upon the earth of own version of "Eden" which always ends in the creation of Babylon, of hell on earth. Michael A. Hoffman II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* 1995

Now at the end of the movie, what you saw as the astronaut became older and aged, and this was the symbol of gaining knowledge and wisdom, and he looked at himself and he saw himself younger, and he looked back and saw himself older, and he looked back and he was older still, and he looked back and he was young again, and then old, and then he saw this unbelievably overpowering, stunning vision of a fetus, a human fetus, floating in the great vastness of the universe, signifying the birth of the new age, and the new man, that will go into the future.

Now in the sequel to *2001*, you saw that this astronaut, who had made the jump, came back and talked to some select few, signifying that he had then become a teacher to the rest of us, and when he was asked what happened to him, he said, and I quote, "something wonderful."[8] Now, that was supposed to tell the rest of the Initiates of the world, who really understood the symbology of the movie, that if they were able to make this transition, the future would be a utopia. Now, I don't know whether it will be or not, but I can tell you this: the priests of the ancient Mystery Religions are in charge right now, and we had better damn well find out, and we had better do it very quickly, for the new age is the Age of Aquarius, and the exact date of the dawning of the Age of Aquarius can be determined astrologically and I'm not going to tell you what that date is although I have it right here on a piece of paper in front of me. I want you all to help in this search. God knows I need help. I can't save us all alone, and there is always the possibility, because I am human, that I can make the wrong decision, or make the wrong interpretation, and that's why I formed CAJI, because many of us working together and digging and searching for information are much more likely not to make the mistakes then one man working alone.

Let's go back now to the beginning, when man was in his infancy on the evolutionary scale of development. Man was alone, alone in the sense that he did not have all of the help and the knowledge that we have today that enables us to survive. You see, man was then subject to the cold, to the wild beasts of prey. He didn't have a home, he didn't have air conditioning in the summer, didn't have heating in the winter, didn't have medical doctors. If he became ill or injured, he was most likely to die. So, it did not take ancient man very long to decide that, in this world, the single greatest enemy to be feared was the darkness of night, and all the unknown dangers that came with it. And simply stated, man's first enemy was darkness.

Now, understanding this one fact alone, one can readily see why the greatest and most trustworthy friend the human race could ever have at that time was, by far, heaven's greatest gift to the world: that glorious rising orb of day that we call the sun. And that was the beginning of the battle between light and darkness, and it was man's first understanding of the birth, the death, and the rebirth of a deity. For the sun rose (was born in the morning), traveled across the heavens, where it reached its most powerful point, the zenith (and that will explain why so many things occur at noon, or near noon), and then, signifying old age and the end of its life, sank into the west and then died. And man was subjected to the rigors, the dangers, and the cold of night until his god again was reborn the next morning.

Now, folks, I'm not making any of this up, and it took me many, many, years of study to figure this out.

Man noticed that the moon also rose, lived a different life than the sun, and then set and died, and was reborn again. The sun, because of its brilliance, became the master, or the greatest deity, and the moon took on the feminine aspect, because the moon reflected the light of her master.

And all of this will begin to make sense to you, eventually, as we go through this, because from now on, every program that I do is going to be devoted to this, to the explanation of the esoteric religion, the ancient Mystery Religion. And it's important that we all understand it, because these are the people in charge, and don't ask me to tell you the truth of religion, for I really believe in the Constitution, and that we all have a right to worship our own god in our own way, and no one has the right to tell anyone, unless asked, what they should believe. You all know by know that I am a Christian, but I'm not a

---

[8] Arthur C. Clarke, *2010: Odyssey Two (novel),* 1984

Christian in the sense that I follow the dogma of any church, or the preachings of any preacher, or necessarily, word for word, the Bible. I stick strictly and only to those words that are directly attributed to Jesus Christ, and I attempt to follow those words in my daily life. And it doesn't matter to me whether anyone proves that he never lived, or that he lived or not. I have found that those are the most profound teachings amongst all of the books and teachings that I have ever heard or read in my entire life. And until someone can prove to me that there is something better, that is what I will always adhere to.

I do not advise you what you should believe or not believe. But I do advise you that we all need to learn as much as we can about everything that we can, because one thing I have learned in my life is that most of what he have ever been taught has been a lie. And that whoever these people are – and I know who they are, and I will impart that knowledge to you – who are the priests, the Adepts and the Initiates of the Mystery Schools, they are in control and they are shaping the future, and that future will affect all of us. So we had better learn as much about them as much as we can. You cannot identify an enemy unless you know the enemy, and you cannot fight a battle if you know nothing about the battle tactics of your opponent. And when you understand that Lucifer is the son of the morning star, or the morning star itself then the creations of the members of the Mystery School begin to make much more sense.

Good night and God bless you all.

(Outro music: When You Wish Upon a Star)[9]

---

[9] Ned Washington and Leigh Harline, the song was introduced in the 1940 Walt Disney movie *Pinocchio*.

Hour 2: The Sun of God (aired February 15th, 1993)

You’re listening to the Hour of the Time. I’m your host, William Cooper.

Tonight, ladies and gentleman, we begin the origin, the history, the dogma, and the identity of the ancient Mystery Religions, which are now known as the Mystery Schools, the Order of the Quest, Freemasonry, the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross, The Knights Templar, the Sovereign and Military Order of the Knights of Malta, the Order of Saint John of Jerusalem, the Prieuré de Sion, the Thule Society, or sometimes known as the Thuley Society, the Order, the Skull and Bones, the Russell Trust, the Jason Society, the Scroll and Key, the Illuminati, and I could go on, and on, and on, and on.

But the most important thing to realize is that they all have been collectively known throughout the ages as the Mystery Schools. The Illuminati, which literally means, “illumined ones”. International Socialism, Communism, they are all one and the same as you will come to know, and you will understand perfectly how they've been able to infiltrate all of our society.

What you hear tonight does not necessarily reflect my views, or beliefs, or religion nor those of WWCR.

(Intro music: I Can See Clearly Now)[10]

That song will have a clearer meaning to you as we progress in your education into the Mystery Religion. But we have to begin in the beginning, with every story and every history. And we have to begin at the beginning of mankind. And the beginning is the beginning according to the Mystery Religion. And they believe, wholeheartedly, that man is a product of evolution, not of an extraterrestrial race, and not of the creation of some benevolent God.

[Reading from *The Future of Man*]:[11]

[They believe that] the tree-dwelling ancestors of man were among the most intelligent beings of their distant age.

[And] when these creatures finally abandoned the trees and walked fully upright, freeing their hands to serve as implements of their minds as well as their bodies, there began the most successful evolutionary drive toward higher intelligence ever witnessed in Nature.

As ground dwellers, these creatures were easy victims of the great predators, who hunted them down by day and surprised them at night as they huddled in clearings or in caves. They could not compete in strength, ferocity or speed with their attackers. Armed with little except their hands and what their complex brains enabled them to do with those hands, they had to think or die. For untold thousands of years most of them met early, violent deaths. Only a few in each generation had the good fortune and the ability to outwit their enemies. [And] these favored ones survived long enough to have and rear offspring. The unwary, maladroit or stupid died early. [And folks, I'm afraid that the stupid, who live today, are going to die early also. But back to the beginning.] Their offspring, if they had any, were left to starve or be eaten by predators.

Natural selection was operating on the earliest types of man with grimmest intensity. Perhaps no other extant creature has undergone so severe and protracted a period of selective elimination. Yet here and there small groups managed to survive because they had the intelligence to use sticks, stones and clubs to defend themselves. Crude and puny as these implements were, they were *weapons* and their possessors were the first creatures who could kill without having to come in direct contact with their antagonists.

---

[10] John Lester Nash Jr., *I Can See Clearly Now (album)*, 1972. Cover performed by Liza Minnelli.

[11] Robert Klark Graham, *The Future of Man*, 1970

“As the great beasts grew larger and either faster or more formidable, man became ever more watchful, ever more successful in pitting his wits against mass and power, more and more adept at slipping out of trouble, and as the challenge grew greater, so did his brain, for the laggards on both sides got left behind in the race for the future.”[12] [And we are still engaged in that race for the future.]

The steps in the development, of man's brain are revealed by the progressively larger braincases which appeared with the passage of centuries. Basing our judgment on the improvements in tools and weapons which took place as the intelligence of their inventors increased, we can construct some of the ways in which natural selection may have worked to bring about a doubling in size of the human brain.

Many edible nuts are too hard for even a caveman to crack between his teeth. Accordingly, they were useless to early man, until some genius of his day discovered that any nut could be opened if it were just placed up on one stone and stuck hard with another. Better fed, the family of this innovator proliferated while the others died off.

Perhaps centuries later, while a man sat cracking nuts between two stones, one stone broke and the broken edge cut his hand. Previously, men in the same situation had thrown the broken stone away and nursed their cuts. But this man, [this man] started thinking. [He possessed an *original* thought.] Since the edge had cut through his skin and drawn blood, it might also cut through the skin of the small animals he caught, making it easier to get at the meat. The first knife was invented! He and those close to him, and those intelligent enough to imitate him, increased in number [and the rest died off]. They had a cutting tool which made it possible for them to skin and eat meat in less time, so they had more time for hunting. Many of the descendants of this exceptional man became increasingly skillful at breaking and chipping hard stones into sharper tools and weapons. [And if you’ve been to a museum of natural history, and you’ve seen these fine, beautiful flint arrowheads and spearheads, then you know that it took patience and great skill, and this means a further development of the human mind.]

Natural selection, favoring better knife makers, went on for hundreds of thousands of years [according to those who guard the Secrets of the Ages, and even according to modern science].

A great many centuries later a young father foraging for his brood, may have come upon a long straight stick, splintered at one end. [Well] he pulled and chewed at the splinters until only one stout point was left [or at least that's how we can imagine that it was done]. It seemed to him a very useful stick, for it was sharper than the digging sticks, which the women used. He may have remembered a night during his boyhood, when a great cat had charged his family's campsite and dragged away a younger sister. Now that he had small children of his own, the memory of that attack was ever present. Lately, he had seen fresh panther tracks. Another family, not far away, had been attacked and the mother had been killed. His dawning intelligence told him his pointed stick might be a better weapon against big cats than the clubs which he and the other men carried. [So] for many days he kept the long stick near him, even when he was laughed at for having what was regarded as a woman’s tool. [Not only did he possess a greater intellect than his fellow man, but he possessed more courage to resist their laughter.]

Then one night, he heard a faint rustling. He whispered a quick warning to his family. Suddenly, a dim shape charged at him in the darkness. Kneeling, he raised the point of his long stick toward the beast. It sprang, clawed at him savagely, then fled! The creature had struck the point so hard that the blunt end of the stick was shoved deep, deep into the ground.

Next morning, following a trail of blood, the man found a panther dead from a punctured chest. The long, sharp stick had saved his life and the lives of his family members. In the same situation less perceptive men, armed only with clubs, would have been killed.

---

[12] Norman J. Bernill, *Man's Emerging Mind*, New York, Dodd, Mead, 1955, p. 109.

From that time he, his sons and their sons, carried impaling sticks whenever big predators were near. Foresight, genetically transmitted to their descendants, had given them a new weapon, which they used with devastating effect against their natural enemies.

Perhaps many generations later a bright descendant of the inventor of the impaling stick mated with the daughter of a man who had thought of throwing a club at fruits, nuts and small animals on the lower branches of trees. Now and then, this brought down an extra meal.

The man who knew how to defend his family from feline prowlers soon learned from his woman the new way to collect additional food. [And] their young family thrived and some of the children, with good mental inheritance from both sides of the family, showed an even higher order of intelligence than either of their parents.

With impaling sticks added to their clubs and cutting stones, men no longer had to be such furtive food gatherers. The hunted gradually evolved into hunters. And in times of famine when battles over food were fierce, those with impaling sticks threw them with deadly accuracy at members of other hunting bands. Sharper stone knives and spears gave a double survival advantage during times of crisis, but the most telling gains were the increasing *sharpness of minds*.

“However incomplete our knowledge of human ancestry, there [was] scarcely any doubt that the development of brain power, of intelligence, was the decisive force in the evolutionary process which culminated in the appearance of the species to which we belong. Natural selection [they believe] has brought about the evolutionary trends towards increasing brain power because brain power confers enormous adaptive advantages on its possessors. It is obviously brain power, not body power, which makes man, by far, the most successful, biological species which living matter has produced.”[13]

[Reading from *That Old-Time Religion*]:[14]

[Even with man's new weapons and tools] it did not take him very long to decide that in this world the single greatest enemy to be feared was the darkness of night, and all the unknown dangers that came with it. Simply stated, “man’s first enemy was darkness.”

Understanding this one fact alone, one can readily see why the greatest and most trustworthy friend the human race could ever have was, by far, heaven's greatest gift to the world . . . that glorious rising orb of day [the sun]. [And] with this simple truth understood, we can now begin to unravel [the most] ancient, [and still the most successful, religion upon the face of this earth. Its success lies in its ability to remain hidden from the rest of the people.] [But] first, [let me assure you, folks, that] no people of the ancient world believed that the Sun to be God. In point of fact, every ancient culture and nation on earth have all used the Sun as the most logically appropriate symbol to represent the glory of the unseen creator of the heavens. In the Old Testament, it says, “The heavens are declaring the glory of God.” That's in Psalms 19, verse 1. In the Old Testament, “The sun of righteousness will arise.” Malachi, chapter 4, verse 2.

The ancient peoples reasoned that no one on Earth could ever lay claim of ownership to the Great Orb of Day. It must belong to the unseen Creator of the Universe. It became, figuratively speaking, not man's, but “God’ Sun”. Truly, “God's Sun was . . . “the light of the world.”[15]

---

[13] Theodosius G. Dobzhansky, *Evolution, Genetics and Man*, New York, Wiley, 1955, p. 334.

[14] The text has been published under Jordan Maxwell, Paul Tice and Alan Snow in *That Old-Time Religion: The Story of Religious Foundations*, 2000. (The source is probably from CAJI and written by someone of the lodge then published under Jordan Maxwell.) Note: Jordan Maxwell is a theosophist.

[15] The Mystery Schools propagate the lie that the sun is Jesus.

As I stated before, [folks] in the dark cold of night man realized his utter vulnerability to the elements. Each night, mankind was forced to wait for the [rising of the sun] to chase away the physical and mental insecurity brought on by the darkness. Therefore, the morning Sun focused man's attention on heavenly dependence for his frail, short existence on Earth, and in doing so, it became the appropriate symbol of divine benevolence from heaven. [For without the sun, there was no light, there was no warmth, and nothing could grow or live upon the face of this earth.]

So, just as a small fire brought limited light into man's own little world of darkness, likewise, the great fire of day served the whole earth with its heavenly presence. For this reason, it was said that the God of the Bible was a consuming fire in heaven, and so he was.[16]

It was accepted by all that man was bound to a life on Earth, but the sky was the abode of God's Sun. He resided "up there", in "heaven". Ancient man saw in his male offspring his own image and likeness, and his own existence as a father was proved by the person of his son.[17] It was assumed that "God's Sun" was but a visible representative of the unseen Creator in heaven. So it was said, "When you have seen the Sun, you have seen the Father." Said another way, "The Father is glorified in his Sun." Ancient man [even with his limited intelligence at that time] had no problem understanding that all life on Earth depended directly on life-giving energy from the Sun. Consequently, all life was lost without the Sun. It followed that "God's Sun" was nothing less than [man's] savior. Since energy from the Sun gave life, and we sustained our very existence by taking energy in from our food—which came directly from God's Sun—the Sun must give up its life-supporting energy so that we may continue to live. "God's Sun must give his life for us to live."

[I know that if you are intelligent out there listening, you are making some connections here. You see, the Mystery Schools believe that Christianity is a *perversion* of the Mysteries.][18]

While it was plainly true that our life came from and was sustained each day by "Our Savior . . . God's Sun," it was and would be true only as long as the Sun would return each morning. [And] our hope of salvation would be secure only in a "risen savior." For if he did not rise from his grave of darkness, all would be lost. All the world waited for his "imminent return" . . . each morning. The . . . Father would never leave us at the mercy of this world of darkness. The Heavenly promise . . . was surely that . . . "He would come again" . . . to light our path, and save those lost in the darkness. Logically, even if man himself died, as long as the Sun comes up each day, life on Earth will continue forever. Therefore, it was said in the ancient texts that everlasting life was "the gift" . . . the Father gives through his Sun. For . . . "God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Sun that we may have life everlasting" . . . on Earth. [And the ancient text did not mean] for you personally—but on Earth . . . everlasting life. [That is the *interpretation* of the Mystery Schools.]

Since evil and harm lurked at every turn in the fearful dark of night, all evil or harmful deeds were naturally, the . . . "works of darkness." [And] with the return of the Sun each morning, man felt more secure in his world and therefore, was at peace. Therefore, "God's Sun" was with his warm rays of hope . . . the great "Prince of Peace." And of course the reverse was equally true. The evil of night was ruled over by none other than . . . "the Prince of Darkness" Hence, evil is of the dark or: the Devil. It was only a short step to see [that] "The Light of God's Sun" equated with righteousness and truth—and evil with darkness. From then on, it was simple to understand . . . light was good—dark was bad. [And the priests of the ancient Mystery Religion always followed the light. They always looked toward the East. They considered themselves to be illumined.] That being true, then the Great Orb of Day (God's Sun) could rightly say of itself that, "I am the light and the truth." We should all [in their words, not mine] “give thanks” to the Father for sending us His “Sun.” [Spelled: S-U-N, in case some of you are getting confused. In every instance where I have mentioned the word sun, it has been in reference to the sun, S-U-N.] For the peace and tranquility he brings to our life is even called “Solace” [solace is] from [the word] “Solar,” [which means] Sun. [Are you beginning to see the light? (laughs)]

---

[16] Deut 4:24 and Heb 12:29 (Note: The Mystery Schools have a skill for twisting the Bible)

[17] The concept of reincarnation. It is espoused in the 1972 film *Superman: The Movie,* "You will make my strength your own, and see my life through your own eyes, as your life will be seen through mine. The son becomes the father, and the father, the son."

[18] "Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!" Isaiah 5:20

We now have before us two cosmic brothers—one very good, and one very bad. One brings the “truth to light” with the “light of truth.” The other is the opposite, or in opposition to the light–“The Opposer” . . . [the] Prince of the World of Darkness. It is at this point we come to Egypt. More than 3,000 years before Christianity began, the early morning Sun, [the] Savior was pictured in Egypt as the “New Born Babe.” The infant savior's name was “Horus.” The early morning Sun, or “New Born Babe,” was pictured in two ways: the Dove—[known as the] Bringer of Peace. The Hawk—[the] God of War (who punishes the enemies of God). Today, in government, we still use these terms, doves and hawks. [And that’s how powerful this hidden religion is; is that we use the terms of this religion even today and know it not.]

At daybreak, this wonderful newborn child is of course “Born Again” (hallelujah). Horus is Risen. [That is what *hallelujah* means.] Even today, when the Sun comes up, we see it on the “Horus-Risen,” or "Horizon". His life was also divided into 12 parts or 12 “Horus = hours” [the twelve signs of the Zodiac]. But now, what about the evil brother of God's Sun, that old “Prince of Darkness” himself? In the Egyptian belief system he was called “Set” [or sometimes Typhon]. We are told in the Bible that when God's Sun died, the world was left in the hands of the Prince of Darkness at . . . Sun-Set. [Sun-Set, do you understand? God's Sun was killed by the Prince of Darkness, “Set,” at Sun-Set.]

It was generally observed that “God's Sun” could be depended upon to return in the same manner that he left—namely, “On a Cloud” . . . and “Every eye will see Him” . . . (unless, of course, you're blind or dead). Keeping in mind that “God's Sun” not only represented the light of truth, but was put to death by His enemies who could not endure the light of truth in their life, it was taught by the ancients that the very act of opposing or denying the light of truth to the point of killing it, happened in one's own mind. When we are confronted with harsh realities of life [the truth], the light of truth, which we do not wish to face, and which runs counter to our views, such truth is put to death by your mind, and in your head. Therefore, “God's Sun”–The Truth and The Light— is put to death at the “place of the skull,” or “skull place,” located somewhere between your ears. This putting to death of the light of hope in your mind is always accompanied by the two thieves: Regret for the past and Fear of the future.

[Don’t go away folks, we have to take a short break. I'll be back right after this pause.]

(Interlude music: The Four Seasons: Winter II)[19]

And of course “God's Sun” goes to his death wearing a “corona”—[which in] Latin [means] “crown of thorns”. Remember the Statue of liberty? [It was given to us by Masonic France.] To this day, kings still wear a round crown of thorns, symbolizing the [rays of the sun].

[Now] as far back as we can go into the ancient world [in our research], we find that all known cultures had a “three-in-one” [or] triune God. The very first trinity was simply the three stages of life of the sun: New Born at dawn; Mature or full grown [in its full power] at 12 noon; and old and dying, at the end of day (going back to The Father. All three were of course one divinity. The Trinity in no mystery [in the Mystery Schools]. The Egyptians knew that the Sun was at its highest point in the sky (or high noon) when no shadow was cast by the pyramid. At that point, all Egypt offered prayers to the “Most High” God. As stated before, to the ancients, the sky was the abode, or heavenly temple of the “Most High.” Therefore, “God's Sun” was doing his heavenly Father's work in the temple at noon.

---

[19] Antonio Vivaldi, *Concerto No. 4 in F minor, Op. 8, RV 297, "L'inverno" (Winter) Largo,* Composed in 1723.

The world of ancient man kept track of times and seasons by the movement of the Sun—daily, monthly and yearly. For this, the sundial was devised. Not only was the daily movement of the Sun tracked on the round dial, but the whole year was charted on a round calendar dial. Examples [are]: Ancient Mexican, Mayan, Inca, Aztec, Sumerian, Babylonian, Assyrian, Egyptian, Celtic [or Celtic as some pronounce it], Aryan, etc. [And] with this method, certain new concepts emerged in the mind of ancient man. Since the Earth experienced four different seasons, all the same and equal (in time) each year, the round calendar was divided into four equal parts. This represented the complete story of the life of "God's Sun." This is also why we have, in the Bible, only four gospels. Of this point there can be no doubt. [For] Tertullian[20] and many early church fathers stated this [exact fact] themselves [in their own writings]. [And] this [the Mystery School claims] is why the famous painting of the "Last Supper" pictures the 12 followers [or houses] of the Sun in four groups (of 3) . . . the seasons [with the Sun in the center alone].

On the round surface of the yearly calendar, you draw a straight line directly across the middle, cutting the circle in half - one end being the point of the winter solstice, the other end being the point of the summer solstice. Then draw another straight line (crossing the first one). One end of the new line being the spring equinox, the other end being the autumn equinox. You now have the starting points for each of the four seasons. This is referred to by all major encyclopedias and reference works, both ancient and modern, as "The Cross of the Zodiac." Thus, the life of God's "Sun" is on "the Cross." This is why we see the round circle of the Sun on the crosses of Christian churches. The next time you pass a Christian church, look for the circle (Sun) on the cross. On December 22nd, the Sun, going south, reaches its lowest point in the sky (our winter solstice). At that lowest point, the Sun stops moving on the sundial for three days, Dec 22nd, Dec 23rd, and Dec 24th in the Southern Constellation known as the Southern Cross. Hence our Savior (dead for three days) died on the Cross. The "Southern Cross Constellation," that is. This is the only time of the year [folks] that the Sun actually stops its movement in our sky [according to the Mystery Schools]. On the morning of Dec. 25th, the Sun begins its annual journey back to us in the northern hemisphere, bringing, of course, our spring. Therefore, on Dec 25th, the Sun is born again. And to this day, His worshipers celebrate His Birthday.

It is at this point that we should look at the significance of the recurring number 12 in the Bible. First, 13 is said to be unlucky for humans. It is a heavenly number and represents . . . the Sun + "the 12" = 13. [Or Christ plus the 12 disciples equals 13. It's unlucky for a different reason, folks, and I will explain that on another program. But it has to do with the persecution of the Mystery School, the Mystery Religion.][21] It would be well to get a Bible Concordance and look to see how many times the number 12 is used in the entire Bible.

[Remember, the Mystery Religion is a religion of the heavens. Also, in the Bible you will find many combinations of the number seven. In the Mystery Religion, that represents the seven stars of the Pleiades.[22] And you can see the emergence of the Mystery Religion in the UFO movement, when the Pleiadians[23] come to talk to Billy Myers in Switzerland.[24] (laughs) Oh my, how we are deceived by these people!]

[Here are a] few examples [of the use of the number 12 in the Bible]: the 12 Months of the Year, the 12 Apostles of the Sun, the 12 Tribes of Israel, the 12 Brothers of Joseph, the 12 Judges of Israel, the 12 Great Patriarchs, the 12 Old Testament Prophets, the 12 Kings of Israel, the 12 Princes of Israel, God's Sun in Temple at 12 [and there are many more.] All of these examples and countless more derived directly from the ancient world's fascination with the 12 Signs of the Zodiac.

---

[20] Quintus Septimius Florens Tertullianus, anglicised as Tertullian, (ca.160 – ca.220 AD) was a prolific and controversial early Christian Berber author, and the first to write Christian Latin literature. He also was a notable early Christian apologist and a polemicist against heresy.

[21] The Knights Templar were arrested on October the 13th 1307.

[22] The Pleiades in Greek mythology are the seven daughters of Atlas.

[23] Said to be a group of Nordic alien extraterrestrials and "multidimensional spirit beings" from the Pleiades star cluster. lso spelled Pleiadian or Plejaran.

[24] Billy Eduard Albert Meier, February 3, 1937, is a citizen of Switzerland who claims to be a UFO contactee.

[Now remember, folks, what I'm given you is the teachings of the Mystery Schools. This does not necessarily reflect any of my own beliefs, or my own religious beliefs, or those of WWCR. We cannot fight against these manipulators unless we know who they are and what *they believe*. Now, what you want to believe is your own business.]

As we noted before [folks], the year was divided into 12 equal parts, or months. And to each month was appointed a heavenly symbol or astrological "sign." [Each of these signs made up one season in the world of the heavens, thus divided into four separate seasons.] Each of the 12 monthly signs were called "houses" of the heavenly Zodiac. The astronomers of Babylon divided the sky into twelve "houses." [They did this to account for the fact that the planets were not always exactly in the ecliptic, but appeared to wander a certain number of degrees either side of it.] They [therefore had to assume that] each sign of the Zodiac extended its influence through a fixed [portion] of the sky, which they thought of as a house [to which a planet could return when it completed one of its journeys about the sun]. The great god of the day had its house in Leo [Leo, the Lion of Judah], where he ruled at the head of his splendor; the Moon ruled in Cancer, at the right hand of the Sun. The other planets were given two houses. One for day and one for night. And since the Zodiac divided the sky into twelve equal [portions], each of these houses was also equal, comprising 30°, [or] one-twelfth of the 360° circle.

[And] the houses/signs of the Zodiac were as follows: Aries was the Ram or Lamb of God; Taurus the bull/[the] Golden Calf; Gemini the Twins [which represented] Cain-Abel, Jacob-Esau [or] Jesus-Satan [for in Mystery Babylon, Jesus and Satan are brothers, and in some sects of the Mystery Religion, they are the same entity]; Cancer the Crab, Leo the Lion/of the tribe of Judah [that can be found in Revelations 5, verse 5]; Virgo the Virgin/spring birth of God's Sun [or Mary]. [Mary or] Marie means pure, [thus] Mary the virgin, the mother of God, when God is reborn or born in the spring. [And that is where the mother holding the child, Isis with the child, Horus, and all through the history of the world you will find a virgin holding a child in every culture, every language, in every continent, of this earth.] Libra the Scales; Scorpio the Scorpion, the back-biting traitor . . . Judas; Sagittarius the Archer; Capricorn the Sea-Goat [or the Goat of Mendes]; Aquarius, Man with the Water Pitcher; Pisces the Two Fishes.

[The age that we are leaving at this point in time, is the age of Pisces. And, according to the Mystery Religion, we are entering into the Age of Aquarius very soon in our future. And to them this has great meaning, for it means the dawn of the New Age, the age of the illumined man. The number of the man is 666 in the Mystery Religion.][25]

Today we have expressions when someone dies. We say things like, "They passed" or "They Passed On" or "They Passed Away." The ancients said "They Passed Over" (from one life to another). [Over what? Over the river.] And so it was with the coming of spring, as God's Sun is "Resurrected" from the Death of Winter to His New Life (in spring). This is why Christians celebrate "The Resurrection" with a Sun-Rise service at . . . "Easter" . . . and the Jews, who knew [this ancient religion from their time in captivity in Babylon] celebrate the same with their . . . "Passover."

With this knowledge, we now add the fact that the first decan of the astrological sign of Virgo is "Coma"—or the "desired one"—of the nations. This was pictured by the ancient astrologers as a virgin girl holding a new born babe. Hence, our "Madonna and Child" motif, so in the spring, or Virgo, God's Sun is "Born of a Virgin." Incidentally, the astrological symbol for Virgo is the letter 'M' [or] "Marie" [which] means "pure," hence "M"-ary . . . the pure virgin." [And all through every culture, you will sign . . . find other representations by other names of the virgin mother with the child. Isis with the child Horus, born of a magical intercourse, when Isis changes into a bird and flutters over the dead Osiris. Osiris representing the sun, Isis representing the moon. I will tell you the meaning of the child Horus, other than the Sun in the morning, probably on another episode of the Hour of the Time.]

---

[25] 666: (3 degrees in 6 acts). "And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six." Revelation 13:17-18

[Now,] we belong to one another, [according to the Mystery School.] We are part of God's creation. We are part of a great fraternity of man, [according to them.] We are creations voiced to sing praises to God as we gather in the morning, [(laughs) the morning, folks,] to pray. The very time of day recalls our creation and our new creation in Christ during the gathering time reflect on this mystery. Using the silence, the sounds of morning, the Psalms and other scriptures, be aware that the rising sun is the image of Christ, our sun and source of life, [and that is taken right out of a Protestant church's leaflet calling for the congregation to gather for the Easter sunrise service.]

Next, we read at I Peter [chapter 5 verse 4] that God's Sun is the "Chief" shepherd. This word "chief" is very important. For at I Peter [chapter 2 verse 6] and again at [Ephesians chapter 2 verse 20] God's Sun is called the "Chief Cornerstone." [Now in our research in the Mystery Schools we find that] the word in Greek for "Chief Cornerstone" simply meant the "Peak of a Pyramid". [The Peak of a Pyramid.] [The] corner foundation (stone) or, peak of the pyramid. The prefix akro-[26] ([or] topmost) was added by the Jews to the already existing Greek adjective, goniaios[27] ([or] at the corner). In that way the translators of Isaiah rendered the Hebrew word for 'corner' (pinna Isaiah 28:14), describing the stone which was a 'sure foundation' and which probably had reference to the future Messiah . . . well understood by the Christian writers, was that of an important Stone which was both akro- (a Peak) and a goniaios (a cornerstone). But there are four or more corners to a building, and a stone and a corner cannot be uniquely significant.

[Although you will find in Freemasonry the ceremony of laying a cornerstone for every building that is built, and you look at all the buildings in Washington, DC. You will see a cornerstone with the Masonic symbols and Masonic date of the Mystery Schools of the calendar of six thousand years.][28]

[Well, we found that we don't believe that it can be] significant unless the stone be at the apex [apex] of a pyramid where all corners meet and bond together. [And that is the secret of the truncated pyramid missing the cap stone, on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States. For we have found in our research, that in the Mystery Religion the Master Mason is the cornerstone, or the peak, of the pyramid. The illumined man who functions as the eye of Horus, or the spy for the Mystery Schools, wherever he is at.][29]

Just as the great pyramid near Mexico City is called . . . the "Pyramid of The Sun," so also The Great Pyramid of Egypt was [actually] dedicated to Horus, "The Sun." A picture of this you may see on the back of any one-dollar bill. Above the pyramid [folks] is The Eye, the Sun—The Eye of Horus, The Sun (of God). The New Testament tells us three different times that God's Sun was taught by and learned all things from the Father. He was the pupil.

We are told at Matthew [chapter 14 versus 17 and 19] that God's Sun tends to His people's needs with "Two Fishes." The two fishes being the astrological sign all astrologers know as Pisces. Thus, we have had for almost 2000 years God's Sun ruling in His "kingdom" or sign of Pisces/Two Fishes. As stated before, these signs are called houses. Therefore, Pisces is the "Lord's House" at this time. Truly, the Greatest "Fish" Story Ever Told.

According to astrology, sometime after the year 2010 . . . [Catch that date, folks: the year 2010 and remember when I told you about *2001*. Arthur C. Clark[30] is obviously a member of the Mystery Schools, and Stanley Kubrick, who's responsible for making the movie, is obviously a member also.] According to astrology, sometime after the year 2010 the Sun will enter into His new Sign, or His new Kingdom, as it was called by the ancients. This next coming Sign [or] Kingdom, soon to be upon us, will be, according to the Zodiac, the House or Sign of Aquarius. So when we read at Luke [chapter 22 verse 10], we now understand why God's Sun states that He and His followers, at the last Passover, are to go into "the house of the man with the water pitcher." So we see in the coming millennium, God's Sun will bring us into His new Kingdom or House of Aquarius (the man with the water pitcher).

---

[26] Ancient Greek ἄκρος (akros, "edge, extremity")

[27] Ancient Greek γωνία (gonía, "corner, angle")

[28] 0 C.E. + 4000 = year A.L. (Anno Lucious, "In the year of the light")

[29] "Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?" Matthew 21:42

[30] Clark wrote among others *2061: Odyssey Three (novel)*, 1987. *3001: The Final Odyssey (novel)*, 1997

Once we realize that in Astrology, each month is assigned one of the so-called "Houses" of the Zodiac and in heaven are 12 houses [or] (12 monthly signs), then the words we read of God's Sun saying "In my Father's house are many mansions," makes sense (when translated correctly). The proper translation is as follows: Father's House = Heavenly Abode, Mansions = Houses. So, correctly read in the original text, we read: "In my father's heavenly abode are many houses." Yes, 12 to be exact [according to the Mystery Religion of ancient Babylon].

[By careful intention and] study [of] the houses, you will be enable to interpret Horoscopes. [It is well to] remember [that] just as the influence of one Planet in one Sign may be affected for good or ill by another Planet in another Sign, so the influence of Planets in Signs in general may be [strengthened, weakened, enhanced, afflicted or otherwise altered] by the influence of Planets and houses [according to their beliefs]. [A rule of thumb to remember is that] signs measure your inherent qualities, the Planets influence those qualities, and the Houses indicate directions for them. In other words, the Houses indicate certain things, and a Planet in a House influences or activates the things indicated.

[Now, this is all according to their religion. If you want more explanation, please ask Nancy Reagan.][31]

Anyone familiar with modern-day Christianity must surely know we are said to be living in the "Last Days." This teaching is, in part, based on the idea expressed in Matthew [chapter 28, verse 20] of The King James Bible. Where God's Sun says, "I will be with you even to the End of the world." End of the world??!! [In] another simple mistranslation to clarify [and *there are many* in the Bible] with a proper understanding of the actual words used. This "end of the world" is translated differently in the various Bibles. Some say "End of Time," [some say] "End of the Days," and still others say "Conclusion of this system of things." So what does all this talk of the "End Times [or Last] Days" really mean?

[Well] here is the simple answer [folks, according to the Mystery Schools]. When the scripture speaks of "the end of the world," the actual word used is not, I repeat, is not end of the world. The actual word in Greek is "Aeon," which, when correctly translated, means "Age," that's spelled [folks] A-G-E. Any library will have Bible concordances. *Strong's Bible Concordance* is a good reference work to use here. Look up the word "age" in any secular dictionary or Bible Concordance. There you will find the word for "age" is from the Greek "Aeon" [or A-E-O-N]. Remembering that in Astrology each of the 12 houses (or signs) of the Zodiac corresponds to a 2000 year period of time, called an "age," we now know we are 1992 years into the House or Age of Pisces. Now, correctly understood, it can rightly be said that we today, in fact, are living in the "Last Days."

Yes, [according to the Mystery Schools] we are in the last days of the old "Age of Pisces." Soon, God's Sun will come again into His New Kingdom or "New Age", [and that is where all this *new age movement* and *new age* comes from] "New Age" of Aquarius (man with the water pitcher—Luke [chapter 22 verse 10]).

[That's right, folks, the new Aeon or the New Age. This, according to the Mystery Schools, is the perversion of Christianity. This is the theme of the Bible, God's Sun in his coming kingdom age, the new age of Aquarius. Now, what you choose to believe is your business. Remember, don't get mad at me. I am teaching you the Mystery Religion of ancient Babylon, and I am telling you right now many people practice this mystery religion in secret, and they hate Christians. They hate Christians because they believe that Christianity is a perversion of their religion, and thus is their enemy.]

---

[31] Time Magazine published an edition with Nancy Regan on the front cover entitled: *"Astrology in the White House".*

When viewing the shimmering rays of sunlight on a body of water at dawn or sunset, [according to the Mystery Schools] one can still see today, how God's Sun “walks on water.”

[No longer reading]

Good night, and God bless you all.

(Outro music: Walk on the Water)[32]

---

[32] Creedence Clearwater Revival, *Creedence Clearwater Revival (album)*, 1968

Hour 3: Antiquities (aired February 16th, 1993)

Good evening, folks, and welcome once again to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

We continue where we left off last Friday night, February the 12th, and I want to quickly reiterate that what you're going to hear does not necessarily reflect my beliefs or my religion or the beliefs of the staff or management of WWCR, Worldwide Christian Radio. What you are hearing, folks, is for the first time in history the public revelation of the origin, the history, the dogma and the identity of those who operate in secret to bring about a worldwide totalitarian socialist government. They are known to Christians as Mystery Babylon. It is an ancient religion.

Now, get a pencil and paper ready because if you did not tape last Friday night's broadcast, or if you did not hear it, you *must* order it. You must order it. You *have* to have this information and if you have any possible way to tape tonight's broadcast, either tape it or order this tape. You can order studio quality tapes from us, and I will give you that information later in this broadcast. Make sure, as always, that you have pencil and paper or pen and paper by your side at all times. You will want to write down important portions of this broadcast and you certainly will want to get our address and phone number and the price of the tapes. Those of you who are smart enough to know what is transpiring here know that these are historic broadcasts and by making these broadcasts I have sealed my fate.

(Intro music: unknown orchestral piece)[33]

[Reading from *That Old-Time Religion*]:

The Sun enters each heavenly Sign or House of the Zodiac in what is called the 30th degree and leaves at the 33rd degree. Thus, God's Sun is said by the ancients to begin his ministry at 30 and dies at 33. [A Freemason is not told the truth of the object of his worship until he attains the 30th degree, and] this is why the highest degree in Freemasonry is the 33rd [degree]—for no one can rise higher than the Sun.[34] When viewing the shimmering rays of sunlight on a body of water at dawn or sunset, one can still see today how God's Sun "walks on water."

It was well understood by ancient man that our weather was caused and controlled by the Sun. It was a simple fact that God's Sun had the power to control storms at will. The ancient Egyptians taught that He did this as He rested in His heavenly boat while crossing the sky. Thus, we read that God's Sun quieted the tempest, or great storm on the sea, while in His boat. [Which boat? The boat of Isis.] Ra, the sun-god, [also known as Osiris,] in the Barque of Millions of Years in which he transversed the heavens. He wears on his head, and accompanies, a vast sun-disk symbolizing his powers as lord of the heavens. The boat, formed of a serpent, bears his Eye; and the god is seated on a pedestal representing Mayet, the divine order. [Folks,] when we stop to realize that every single king, prince, lord, governor, dictator, despotic ruler, civil and social institution, national flag, coat of arms, educational institution, military medal, award, organizational insignia, medallion, badge, emblem, citation, trophy, banner, pendant, political standard or ensign, agency of government or religion, uses the Sun as a primary symbol, then it can truly be said [in the Mystery School] that God's Sun is . . . "King of Kings, and Lord of Lords."

Here we note another cleverly disguised part of the whole, [according to the Mystery School] misunderstood [and plagiarized] story. [For they believe that Christianity is a perversion of the Mysteries and that's why they hate Christians.] In the ancient world, months were counted according to the phases of the moon. They were called the "lunar months" on the "lunar calendar." [Now,] since Scorpio/the Scorpion is the astrological sign starting in late October, the first month of autumn, it follows that October/the Scorpion, with his deadly, back-biting "tale", betrays the Sun in autumn, leading directly to His death in winter. [And is known as Judas, and that's where the *October surprise* comes from, and I'm telling you right now that Barbara Honegger was a plant.][35] And the 30 pieces of silver were, as the North American Indians would say, 30 moons of silver needed for the month to "betray" the Sun and cause His unhappy death. In relation to this, another interesting point: Factually speaking, when a person is bitten by a deadly scorpion the wound appears to be, or looks like, two human lips. The ancients called this "The Kiss of Death." This is why we read that Judas ([or] October) gives God's Sun "the kiss"—leading to His death in winter. [And that is the original October surprise. There was an October surprise in France on Friday, October the 13th in the year 1307. Look it up, but in case you don't, I will cover it extensively later.]

---

[33]

[34] There are 32 paths on the Kabbalist's Tree of life

[35] Barbara Honegger is apparently a conspiracy researcher.

The next point to be made requires first, a little background. Christians have always referred to God as "The Father." But viewing God as a father didn't start here—it goes back far into the ancient world. The reason is [according to the Mystery Religion]: Our planet was always viewed as our "Mother Earth or Mother Nature." [And that's where all of this Mother Earth and Earth Goddess comes from in the New Age movement.][36] And since rain (the life-bringing fluid [or the semen]), falling from heaven, impregnated and brought life to Mother Earth, it was therefore believed that our Father was in Heaven. All this life-bringing intercourse between God the Father and Mother Earth would be after a proper marriage ceremony at a spring wedding. In the area today called Israel, anciently called "The Land of Canaan," the (sexual/fertility) rites of spring were celebrated each year in what was called. . . "The Marriage Feast of Canaan." And so the New Testament story was...Mother Earth asked God's Sun to draw water (from the sea) for the grapes to make fine wine for the wedding feast. [And] this marriage feast story is over 5000 years old—3000 years before the New Testament story . . . [And the Mystery Schools believe it is] just one more case of pious plagiarism.

[Now] it is at this point we need to go back to the ancient Egyptians to further understand [this story]. Though all of the essential pieces of the Christian story were long in existence before Egypt, [the only thing different, folks, is the names were changed to protect the innocent] it was with the coming of the Pharaohs that the story was finally codified and became religious dogma. Though the story varied in some details from place to place in Egypt, the essence was always the same: God's Sun [spelled S-U-N]/our risen Savior was the "Light of the World," who gave His life for us.

[Now remember, this is according to the belief of the Mystery Religion of Babylon.]

From the Egyptian records we learn that the new born Sun, Horus, was given the title "The Logos," which means "The Word." Egyptians further said "The Word" was made flesh and dwelt among us. And since we enjoy only one Sun in heaven, He was said to be "The Only Begotten" (of the Father). [The word was lost and that story is told in the Osirian cycle of Isis, Osiris and the child Horus, and you will learn that the symbol of the word today is the obelisk, the monolith, the stone. It is also called the Lost Word of Freemasonry, and I will explain the meaning of all of those things later.] Another interesting point not to be missed concerning Horus: Later in Egyptian history He was given a second name—Iesos, or Iesus, meaning "holder of the light." Still later, in Roman Latin, "I" became interchangeable with "J." So from Iesus, we get Jesus. All of this can be read by anyone in a public library. [If you so desire.]

In ancient Egypt it was said that if you wanted to follow the life of God's Sun and thereby "live in the light of God's Word" ([or] Logos), one would first have to leave his old ways of life to "Follow the Sun [face to the east]." But before beginning this new life in "The Word," one must die to the old way of life and be "Born Again." [George Bush, when asked at a press conference by a reporter if he was a Christian, Mr. Bush said this: "If you're asking if I have been born again, the answer is yes."] Your first birth was "out of the water" your mother formed you in. Because her water broke and your new life began, rebirth is symbolized by coming out of total immersion in water—[or] baptism—or being born again. These points here mentioned are just some of hundreds, if not thousands, of direct connections that can be made between the Judaic-Christian Bible Story and the far more ancient, original Story. [The] purpose for drawing your attention to this literary plagiarism [according to the Mystery School; this is what they believe] is best stated by Alfred North Whitehead who said, "No lie can live forever."

[They hate Christians; they hate Christianity, and the first object is to destroy the Christian church and Christians, to wipe them off the face of the earth. If you are a Christian, you are in the greatest danger that you can even imagine at this moment as the New World Order takes shape around you.] Egyptologist Gerald Massey [said], "They must find it difficult, those who have taken authority as the truth, rather than truth as the authority." [And now] for a few thoughts on the "Old Testament" Word of God. [According again to the Mystery Religion. Remember, I am revealing the secrets of the Mystery Religion of Babylon during this broadcast.] At Malachi 4:2 the God of Heaven is described as the "Sun of Righteousness with healing in His wings [and it is spelled S-U-N]. The Sun with healing in His wings?? [Then in] the New Testament at Matthew 23:37 and Luke 13:34 we see God's Sun wanting to gather all under "His wings." This is most appropriate for, in Egypt, the Sun was always pictured with His wings.

---

[36] Indoctrination of this sort can be found in the film *Avatar (2009)*

[And you see a disk with wings. Now, all these pitiful little twits running around calling themselves ufologists and Zecharia Sitchin, who has perverted the interpretation of the ancient writings, claims that this means that the Egyptians – whenever they drew these, or put these hieroglyphics in their writings—were indicating that UFOs came from other planets, and nothing could be farther from the truth. But this is part of the Mystery Babylon deception trying to convince the people of the earth that we are threatened by some other species from some other planet so that they can more quickly bring about their New World Order, their one-world totalitarian socialist government. Don't fall for it, folks. I have found that most of these people involved with the so-called "UFO research," who are trying to convince you of this, are Freemasons. Most of them, 32nd degree of the Scottish Rite. And evidently they are attempting to do their best toward the furtherance of the Great Work in order to attain the 33rd degree, which can only be attained by meritorious work to bring about the completion of the Great Work, which is the destruction of the church, the state and the enslavement of the mob, which is all of us. I hope you hear me out there.]

In the most ancient Egyptian understanding of things, mankind was called "the sheep of God." And the great Orb of Day, God's Sun, was the overseer or, in the exact words from the ancient Egyptian manuscript, "The Good Shepherd"—and we are His flock. All ancient kings thought of their people as sheep to be pastured, with themselves as "the shepherd." Sheep are ideal followers, you see, for they do not think for themselves but will blindly follow anyone without question [and that is why I call most people 'sheeple']. [It's truly] admirable behavior for animals, but [it is very, very] unwise for humans. Sheep were born to be fleeced, and have "'the wool pulled over their eyes."[And are eventually always led to the slaughter.] Lastly, they end up as a tasty meal, eaten by their masters [and their skin, or their hide or their wool, is worn as an apron around a Freemason's waist. (laughs) How about that?]

[Keep] all of the foregoing in mind [folks], we read again from the Old Testament Book of Psalms. At Psalms 23:4 we read that old, dog-eared, tired exhausted and equally misunderstood chestnut [according to the Mystery Schools], used by every "'man of the cloth" to put the sheep to sleep, we quote it here: "Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for thou art with me. Thy Rod and thy Staff, they comfort me." "Thy Rod and thy Staff"!!?? Here in the Book of Psalms the Old Testament God is pictured with His . . . Rod and Staff. The rod here mentioned is the king's "Rod of Discipline." And the staff is the "Shepherd's Staff," or crook. Now for the correct understanding of this old verse. Any good library book on the Egyptian religion will tell you that the ancient Pharaohs were said to be ruling for God's Sun [spelled S-U-N] on Earth. He was called "King of the Kingdom" and "The Great Shepherd of His Sheep." In the hands of the Pharaoh/God (who's arms form the "sign of the cross" on his chest), were placed the royal symbols of heavenly power . . . the Rod [which was a flail] and [the] Staff. [The rod was used to beat those who were disobedient and the staff, with the crook, was used to herd the sheep.] Incidentally, Jesus is pictured not only with His shepherd's staff but, at Revelation 12:5 & Revelation 19:15, is also said to . . . "rule with a rod of iron."[And I have pictures here of all of this. You can't see it, but you can go to the library and find this stuff. Our research has been thorough and we have managed to place members of CAJI within the Masonic lodges and we have verified everything that we are telling you now. We have infiltrated the lodge.]

In Jeremiah 18:2-6 and Isaiah 64:8 we see the God of the Old Testament portrayed in a different way. Here He is said to be The "Great Potter" who fashions man on a potter's wheel. All Mighty God . . . The Great Potter?? [In Jeremiah 18, let me read to you what it says:] The word which came to Jeremiah from the "Lord," saying, Arise, and go down to the potter's house, and there I will cause thee to hear my words. Then I went down to the potter's house, and, behold, he wrought a work on the wheels. And the vessel that he made of the clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it. Then the word of the "Lord" came to me, saying, O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel. [In Isaiah 64:] But now, O Lord, thou art our father; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy hand.

[The potter story was Egyptian, 1000 years before it was written by the writers of the Bible, and I have a picture here taken from Egyptian hieroglyphics, and you can find this in a book called, *The African Belief in God.*[37] It shows the hieroglyphics taken right of the Egyptian temples and it shows] the god Khnemu fashioning the body of one of Ptolemies on his "potter's wheel." [And here is another picture:] the god Khnemu fashioning a Man upon a "Potter's Table," [and] behind him stands Thoth marking his Span of Life [on a staff].

In Egypt, God's Risen Sun was Horus. At 12 noon he became the "Most High." In this exalted position, He became the mediator between God and man. His name was Amen-Ra. Ra = ray (of the sun). His shepherds on Earth were called "Priests of Amen." They would direct their prayers to the invisible God—The Father—through His mediator, Amen-Ra. [And] God's Sun was "The Great Amen" with His Rays. In the New Testament He—The Sun—is still called (at 2 Corinthians 1:20 & Revelation 1:7 & Revelations 3:14) "The Amen." At the end of prayers in the temples of Egypt they would say "Amen." [How does that grab you? Now look at the word Israel. I-S (Isis), R-A (Ra), EL (God).[38] It is the androgynous God, and it's been in front of your eyes all the time . . . all the time, folks. Anyone who goes to any library and does the research that we have done can reveal that the religion of Mystery Babylon is exactly as I have stated it last Friday night and during this broadcast, and will continue to state it because there is a lot more, folks. We have, in fact, not even yet begun, for this is only the ancient portion, the beginning of the ancient worship of Baal. Or Bael as some pronounce it. Ba was the sun, el means God.]

[No longer reading]

And that was the beginning of the end of our civilization as we know it if we do not wake up now. I firmly believe and I live my life according to this: that I owe my first allegiance to my God and Jesus Christ, my second allegiance I owe to the Constitution of the United States of America and my third allegiance to my family. And the reason my allegiance is in that order is because God endowed man with unalienable rights. The Constitution protects those rights, and the family is thus able to survive and be protected and thrive. And the family is the basic unit of civilization, period. And I further believe that any man or woman without principles that they are ready and willing to die for at any given moment that they are called upon to do it, are already dead and are of no use or consequence to anyone—not even themselves. Understand what I just said. I have to take a short break, folks. Don't go away. I'll be right back after this short pause.

(Interlude music: The Raiders March)[39]

[Reading from *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*]:[40]

Isis was the patroness of the magical arts among the Egyptians. The use to which magic should be put is revealed in the Osirian cycle where Isis applies the most potent of her charms and invocations to accomplish the resurrection of Osiris. In other words, the redemption of the human soul. That the gods of Egypt were elements of a profound magical system and possessed a significance far different from that advanced by modern Egyptologists is certain. The various deities of the Nile valley were elements of an elaborate magical metaphysical system, a kind of ceremonial Cabbala. This cannot be denied. But even when impressed with the reality of this fact, the modern Egyptologist still balks. "Supposing," he asks, "that the Egyptians did possess an elaborate metaphysical doctrine? Of what value is its rediscovery in an age when the natural has been demonstrated to be mediocre and the supernatural non-existent? Even if these extinct persons whose mummies clutter up our museums were the custodians of some mysterious lore, we have simply out grown it. Let the dead pass bury its dead [they say]. We prefer to live in an era of enlightenment, an enlightenment which you would blight by asking us to espouse the superstitions of our remote ancestors.

These so-called superstitions, however, it is interesting to note, die hard. In fact they do not die at all, but insinuate themselves as a discordant note in our matter-of-fact existences. *McCall's* magazine published some time ago an article by Edgar Wallace entitled *The Curse of Amen-Ra*, dealing with the phenomena attendant upon the opening of the tomb of the Pharaoh Tutankhamen. After vividly describing the curse of Amen-Ra the author sums up the effect of this curse upon those who came in contact with the tomb or its contents. His statements are in substance as follows: At the time the tomb was opened the party present at the excavations included the Earl of Carnarvon, Howard Carter and his secretary, Dick Bethel, M. Benedite the French archaeologist, and M. Pasanova. Of these, only one, Howard Carter, remains alive. [Now, that was at the time of the article.] Colonel Aubrey Herbert, Carnarvon's half-brother, and Evelyn-White who also entered the tomb were both dead within a year, one by suicide. Sir Archibald Douglas Reed, the radiologist who took an X-Ray of the mummy, was also dead within twelve months; and Professor Laffleur of McGill university, the first American scientist to examine the death chamber, did not leave Luxor alive. Woolf Joel visited the tomb and was dead within a year. Jay Gould was taken ill within the tomb and died. Attendants whose duty it was to look after the exhibit from the tomb in Cairo Museum also sickened and died. Seven French authors and journalists visited the tomb and six were dead within two years. When they unveiled Tutankhamen they found a mark upon his face, and by a strange coincidence (?) the mark left upon the face of Lord Carnarvon, which presumably caused his death, was in exactly the same spot and of similar appearance. Nor does this list include the numerous native workmen who perished from the curse. Only recently another name was added to the long list associated with the tragedy. Arthur Weigall, after a long and mysterious illness similar to that defined in the curse, is the most recent victim. The eminent authority on antiquities, Dr. Mardus, said, "The Egyptians for seven thousand years possessed the secret of surrounding their mummies with some dynamic force of which we have only the faintest idea."

---

[37] Ernest Alfred Thompson Wallis Budge, *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection Vol. 1*, P. L. Warner, 1911, p. 355.

[38] Check

[39] John Williams, *The Raiders March* a.k.a. *Indiana Jones Theme, Raiders of the Lost Ark (Soundtrack),* 1981

[40] Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, 1937

Over the entrance to the tomb of Tutankhamen was a magical tablet inscribed with strange hieroglyphics. Dr. Mardus named this tablet the "Stela of Malediction," for it pronounced a fearful curse upon any sacrilegious person who might violate the sanctuary of the deified head [and it was called the stele].[41] The words upon the stela were as follows: "Oh ye Beings from Above, Oh ye Beings from Below! Phantoms riding the breasts of men, ye of the crossroads and of the great highways, wanderers beneath the shade of night! And ye from the Abysses of the West, on the fringes of the Twilight, dwellers in the caverns of obscurity, who rouse terrors and shuddering: and ye, walkers by night whom I will not name, friends of the Moon; and ye intangible inhabitants of the world of night, Oh People, Oh Denizens of the Tombs, all of you approach and be my witnesses and my respondents! Let the hand raised against my form be withered! Let them be destroyed who attack my name, my foundation, my effigies, the images like unto me."

Can modern Egyptologists and scientists and all branches and departments view likely the culture of the Egyptians if their researches into the forces of nature gave them such strange power and enabled them to master natural laws of which modern learning has no knowledge or conception?

[Did you know that Lars Hansen was reared in The Stelle Group? Did you know that a very famous talk show host who covers for the Masons all the time was a member? Also was heavily involved with the Communist party? Did you know these things? Do you ever bother to check, you who listen to these people and believe them blindly, you, the sheeple of the world?]

Circumstances so extraordinary is the curse of King Tutankhamen simply overtax the theory of mere coincidence [folks]. Nor is this an isolated case as those will remember who read the accounts of the Cleopatra mummy curse many years ago. It will also be noted that in this age of moral certitudes the story of the Tutankhamen curse had no sooner been broadcast than several of our large museums were deluged by gifts of Egyptian antiquities from private individuals who no longer desired to own them. And these, persons most of them well educated (as modern education goes), were not superstitious—they were just careful.

The following article appeared in an English newspaper in 1923: "The death of Lord Carnarvon has been followed by a panic among collectors of Egyptian antiquities. All over the country people are sending their treasures to the British Museum, anxious to get rid of them because of the superstition that Lord Carnarvon was killed by the 'ka' or double of the soul of Tutankhamen. These fears are, it is hardly necessary to state, absolutely groundless."

---

[41] A stele is a stone or wooden slab, generally taller than it is wide, erected for funerals or commemorative purposes, most usually decorated with the names and titles of the deceased or living—inscribed, carved in relief (bas-relief, sunken-relief, high-relief, and so forth), or painted onto the slab.

It's also hardly necessary [folks] to add that the journalist fails to give his authority for the last sentence. The newspaper article continues:

"An avalanche of parcels containing mummies' shriveled hands and feet, porcelain and wooden statuettes and other relics of the ancient tombs descended this week on the British Museum. Fear inspires these gifts, brought by every post. The belief that a dead king's curse is potent for evil after thousands of years won thousands of adherents on the day when Lord Carnarvon became ill. *** Few of the parcels received at the museum bear the sender's name. The owners, in their eagerness to wash their hands of the accursed things, have tried to keep their identity secret. *** The British Museum is a godsend to the superstitious. It offers a means of shifting the liability to expert shoulders. The museum authorities are used to such liabilities, having harbored the coffin lid of the powerful priestess of Amen-Ra for years, but they are not at all grateful for the present flood of gifts. The museum weathered a similar storm some years ago when the story of the curse of the priestess of Amen-Ra became public. Sufficient scare gifts were received to fill a large showcase. A long chain of fatalities has been attributed to the curse of the priestess. Men who have made fun of the superstitious have died within the year. Another story is that a photographer took pictures of the priestess and placed the plates in his safe. When he went to look at them some weeks later, the glass had become a thin brown powder."

[Now,] let us consider the "rational" explanations, so-called, adduced by science in disposing of the superstition of the king's curse. Dr. Frederick H. Cowles, F.R.G.S., famous British scientist, declared in an interview . . . years ago that Lord Carnarvon and a number of workmen engaged in excavation met their deaths as the result of a poisonous and almost invisible dust placed there purposely by the wily priests to bring destruction upon the violators of the dead. "This poisonous dust," says Doctor Cowles, "analysis of which has baffled scientists, was scattered about the tomb. *** Lord Carnarvon was not the only to note its fatal property, as a number of workmen engaged in the excavation were likewise stricken. Most of these died a lingering death, but others, greatly impaired in health have recovered." There is nothing in the learned doctor's explanation, however, to account for the fact that Howard Carter did not chance to breathe any of the noxious vapors, although he was more steadily engaged in the work of excavation then even Lord Carnarvon. [It's] also [questioned] how much science actually knows about this mysterious dust which defies analysis, for if it cannot be analyzed how can it be either identified with certainty or even proved poisonous. The term "poisonous dust" is evidently the charitable term that covers a multitude of scientific shortcomings. [Several years later there was another revelation: that they were stricken with some virus that inhabits ancient tombs, and who knows what the real story is.]

Though sorcery has been accorded no official recognition by modern science, there is, nevertheless, a certain quasi-official acceptance of the reality of occult phenomena throughout the civilized world. In a newspaper interview Sir Arthur Conan-Doyle illustrates the wide-spread recognition of the idea that the Egyptians knew how to surround their dead with mysterious guardian agencies which throughout the centuries visited their vengeance upon grave-robbers, scientific or otherwise. In discussing with the correspondent of the *Daily Express* the death of a certain Mr. Fletcher who had felt the wrath of Egypt's dead, Conan-Doyle declared that the tragedy was caused by Egyptian "elementals" guarding a female mummy because another student of Egyptology, a Mr. Robinson, had begun an investigation of the stories of the mummy's malevolence. "I warned Mr. Robinson," he says, "against concerning himself with the mummy at the British Museum, he persisted, and his death followed."

[You may wonder where all this is going, but it becomes clear when you understand that the Egyptians inherited the religion of Babylon.]

[So] are we to presume . . . that the single phase of ceremonial magic constituted the entire repertoire of Egyptian thaumaturgists. [You see,] if they could manifest such surprising power, is it not probable that they possessed a knowledge of natural hidden forces—forces as yet unknown to the modern public world which is possibly of inestimable value? [Which may still be contained within what is called the Secrets of the Ages? Which is guarded by the modern Mystery School? Which is still the ancient Mystery School brought forward through the ages?] We are assured in the "authorized version" [and note, I say “authorized version”] of Holy Writ that the magicians of Egypt changed their staves or rods into serpents in the presence of Pharaoh. The modern scientist does not live who can duplicate that phenomenon, yet if he happens to be a good Christian he is in somewhat of a dilemma.

We [can] pass over all the desperate efforts to disprove the magical powers of the Egyptians as arising, not from a mature knowledge, but from a desperate prejudice. [You see,] magic is too ancient and too universal to be explained away by mirrors, wires and hinges. In Egypt we are dealing unquestionably with true manifestations of occult power. The learned author of *Art Magic* presents what may be accepted as a reasonable accurate estimation of the priest-magicians of the old Egyptian Mysteries. “They were highly educated, scientific men. They understood the nature of the lodestone, the virtues of mineral and animal magnetism, which, together with the force of psychological impression, constituted a large portion of their theurgic practices. They perfectly understood the art of reading the inner most secrets of the soul, of impressing the susceptible imagination by enchantment and fascination, of sending their own spirits forth from their body [which many modern metaphysical teachers claim that they can do], as clairvoyance, under the action of powerful will—in fact, they were masters of the art now known as mesmerism, clairvoyance, electro-biology, etc. They also realized the virtues of magnets, gums, herbs, drugs and fumigations, and employed music to admirable effect.”[42] [And no one since has been able to perfect and even come close to their art of embalming the dead.]

The highly gifted Egyptologist Lenormant acknowledges Egyptian magic as an essential part of their religious philosophy. James Bonwick, F.R.G.S., thus summarizes the powers possessed by Egyptian adepts: “Egyptian mystics could levitate, walk the air, handle fire, live under water, sustain great pressure, harmlessly suffer mutilation, read the past, foretell the future, make themselves invisible and cure disease.”

[Now, I have no idea whether to believe that or not, but that is what this expert says. Now, if you doubt the power of magic wielded by the priests of Mystery Babylon listen to this,] for we can compare [James Bonwick’s] account with some [other] news from Tibet, [another land long famous for magic.] Dr. Alexander Cannon, a distinguished scientist, a Doctor of Medicine, a celebrated psychiatrist, a Master of Arts, and a Fellow of the Royal Geographic Society, brought back a strange record from the land of the Lamas. He [claimed he] saw a tree withered by a pointed finger, a dead man raised to life, the Grand Lama surrounded by a blue aura three inches thick, and a human being lifted into the air by pure mental effort. The London County Council called upon Dr. Cannon to resign his post, as the head of a noted institution, for his remarks, but later, strangely enough, after further enquiry, withdrew the demand. It would seem [folks] that the age of miracles or at least magic is not dead.

[You know, Plato—I wrote this in my book—was an initiate of Mystery Babylon and was actually initiated in the Great Pyramid in Egypt where he lay in the sarcophagus for three days and three nights. He entered as a mortal man and, according to his writings, emerged as a god given, or imparted, knowledge which with he was to guard and keep. Remember, they called themselves the “Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages.”][43]

From the writings of Proclus and Iamblichus we can gain a considerable insight into the principles of Egyptian magic. To the old philosophers, even Pythagoras and Plato, magic was no mystery. According to Proclus the initiated priests so fully understood the mutual sympathy between the visible and invisible worlds that they were able to change the course of action and focus divine virtues upon inferior natures. And according to Plato the highest form of magic consisted in the divine worship of the gods [plural], and according to Iamblichus the priests, through sacerdotal theurgy, were able to ascend from a material state of [unconsciousness (*note: book says, 'consciousness')] to a realization of the universal essence, thus coming to an understanding of universal purpose by which the performance of high feats of magic became possible. [Thousands of years later Aleister Crowley claimed the same thing. Now this is significant.]

[It’s] proper at this point to establish a clear line of demarcation of magic and sorcery. [You see,] the term *magic* was not associated with occult jugglery by the Egyptians but arose from a profound understanding of natural law. “Magic,” [said] General Albert Pike, [and you will be hearing an awful lot of General Albert Pike during this series of shows,] “Magic,” says General Albert Pike, “is the exact and absolute science of nature and its laws.” From the knowledge of this absolute science arises occult science. [Occult merely means “hidden”, folks.] From experience in occult science in turn arises the theurgic art, for as surely as man has adapted his physical universe to his purposes so surely the adept of the Mystery School adapts the metaphysical universe to his purposes. To acknowledge that the Egyptians possessed the power of adapting mystical forces to physical ends is to bestow upon them proficiency in the most perfect and difficult of the arts [according to the Mystery Religion of Babylon]. Yet to deny this ability on the part of the Egyptian priests is to deny the evident, and we must resign ourselves to the undeniable fact that they possessed a form of learning which has not been conferred upon this present race. [At least publicly. Men like Aleister Crowley have proven that it has been passed down through the ages and is kept and practiced secretly by those who call themselves the “Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages.”]

---

[42] See *Egyptian Belief and Modern Thought*

[43] Magic is simply the art of illusion (deception).

[No longer reading]

[William Cooper asks for donations and advertises CAJI memberships]

Good night, folks, and God bless you, and remember this is what can happen if you just wake up.

(Outro music: Make It Big)[44]

---

[44] The Beach Boys, *Still Cruisin' (album),* 1989

Hour 4: Osiris and Iris, Part I (aired February 17th, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: Fur Elise)[45]

[Reading from *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*]:

The fable of Isis and Osiris, as it has descended to us in the account given by Plutarch has not been greatly amplified by any modern research. The Egyptian fragments which have been translated in recent years offer no complete account of the birth, life, death and resurrection of Osiris, nor has any new key been found to unlock this great drama which may well be termed "The Passion Play of Egypt." It is not our intention to perpetuate Plutarch's account merely for its outward appearance but rather, from the same motive that inspired Synesius, Platonic philosopher and Christian bishop, to compile his account of the same fabulous history. Synesius in his treatise *On Providence* [and you hear that word a lot in the Secret Societies, and especially in Freemasonry] thus introduces the Osirian myth:

"This fable is Egyptian. The Egyptians transcend in wisdom. Perhaps therefore this also been a fable, obscurely signifies something more than a fable, because it is Egyptian. If, however, it is not a fable, but a sacred discourse, it will deserve in a still greater degree to be told, and committed to writing."

In presenting a summary of Plutarch's account [I am omitting] nothing which could in anyway be regarded as relevant. [I am taking] the liberty, however, of somewhat expanding the fable by incorporating therein some small fragments derived from other Greek writers and occasionally a few words bearing upon the account from fragments from Egyptian religious literature. The story then is in substance as follows:

The goddess Nut, whom Plutarch identifies with Rhea, was the daughter of Shu and Tefnut. She is the wife of Seb [also known as Saturn] and the mother of Ra [or Helios, also known as the sun]. [Now] if we are to trust Plutarch, she afterwards becomes the wife of Ra, or the sun. Nut is unfaithful to Ra who, discovering that she is with child by Seb, pronounces a curse upon her that she should not be delivered of her progeny in *any month* or *year*. Thoth ([which is] Hermes or Mercury), who is also in love with Nut, comes to her assistance with a stratagem. He plays at tables with the moon-goddess (Selene) and wins from her the seventieth part of each of her illuminations, and joining these parts together he forms of them five days which he adds to the calendar; previous to that time the Egyptian year consisted of three hundred and sixty days [the exact number of degrees in a circle]. [Now] these five days, being not part of any month or year, Ra was outwitted. [You see, because] upon these days Nut brought forth her five children at different times and different places. Upon the first of these days she brought forth Osiris and the place of his birth, according to Diodorus was Mount Nissa, in Arabia the Happy. (Mount Nissa is now Mount Sinai [folks].) At the moment of the birth of Osiris a voice sounded throughout the world saying, "The Lord of all the earth is born." On the second day Nut gave birth to Aroueris, the elder Horus; on the third day, Typhon or Set; on the fourth day, Isis; and on the fifth and last day, Nephthys. The Egyptians, therefore, regard the five days which they termed the Epact or super-added, as the birthdays of the gods, especially venerating the fourth of them, upon which the benevolent goddess Isis came into being.

Plutarch further on announces that the five children of Nut were not all of the same father, thus contradicting his earlier statement. [For] he says that Osiris and the elder Horus were the children of Ra, that Isis was the daughter of Thoth, and only Typhon and Nephthys were actually the offspring of Seb. There is another and even more recondite legend regarding the elder Horus which denies him the fathership of Ra, declaring him to be the offspring of Osiris and Isis while they were still in the womb of Nut. [Now] these accounts we shall consider later.

Osiris was given to Pamyles to be educated, and having come to the years of majority, became the king of Egypt. In this high capacity Osiris applied himself to the civilizing of his nation, turning the Egyptians from their previously indigent and barbarous course of life to a happy and community existence. He taught them agriculture, compiled for them a body of laws for the regulation of conduct, instructed them in the reverencing in worship of the gods, thus establishing Egypt in all the essentials of truth [according to the legend]. [Now] having brought his own nation to prosperity and enlightenment, Osiris traveled over the rest of the world, converting peoples to his discipline, not by force but through persuasion of reason. Osiris was accompanied on this journey by a procession of nymphs and other superphysical beings who filled the air with music and song.

---

[45] Composed by Ludwig van Beethoven, 1810. Performed in techno.

In the meantime Typhon, brother or half-brother of Osiris, had ambition to usurp the throne, but the vigilant Isis, sister-wife of Osiris, was too watchful. Typhon, however, having persuaded seventy-two other persons to join him in his conspiracy, with the aid of a certain queen in Ethiopia named Aso, perfected a plot against Osiris. He fashioned a chest exactly to the [measurement] of the body of Osiris which chest he caused to be brought into the banquet hall where the princes of Egypt were feasting their king's return. Typhon, simulating jest, promised this elaborately ornamented box to the one whose body, upon trial, most nearly fitted it. [Now] each of the princes in turn lay down in the box, but each was too short or too tall, until last of all Osiris himself lay down in it. Immediately the seventy-two conspirators rushed to the box, clamped the cover up on it, fastened it with nails and poured melted lead over all the cracks and crevices. After this they carried the chest to the bank of the Nile and cast it into the river where it joins the sea. [Now] this evil deed was executed upon the seventeenth day of the Egyptian month of Athyr when the sun was in Scorpio. According to some it was in the twenty-eighth year of the reign of Osiris, and to others in the twenty-eight year of his life. [Now, try to remember these numbers if you can. Jot them down, but these numbers will prop up again and again and again. Scorpio crops up, seventeen crops up, twenty-eight crops up and many other numbers. And they all have significance in the Mystery Religion of Babylon, the Secret Societies and to the Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages.]

As soon as Isis received word of this crime she cut off one of the locks of her hair and put on the mourning apparel of widowhood, for which reason the spot, where she did this, was afterwards called Coptos [that's Coptos] or the city of mourning. After donning the widow's weeds, Isis set forth in search of her husband's body and wandered about all [Europe . . . (laughs) . . . Europe . . . wandered about all] Egypt, asking all with whom she came in contact. [You see, I may be back here in the United States but a lot of my thoughts, folks, are still in Europe.] Finally some children, who had been play, told [Isis] that they've seen the accomplices of Typhon carrying the chest to the Nile; for that reason Egyptians regard the words of children as oracular and pay great attention to them. While Isis was searching for her husband's body she learned that Nephthys, her sister, had by magic insinuated herself into the presence of Osiris before his death and in the guise of Isis had conceived a son from him. [Now] Isis sought out the child which Nephthys had deserted for fear of Typhon's anger, and adopting it, attached it to her person as a constant guard and attendant. This was Anubis, the dog-headed god who appears in the *Book of the Dead*[46] [and in many of the Egyptian hieroglyphics].

[After some time] Isis learned that the chest had been carried by the sea to the coast of Byblos [now, Byblos is also the name for *book* or *Bible*], where it had lodged in the branches of a bush of tamarisk which had grown up miraculously about the sacred receptacle and concealed it within its trunk. [Now remember this tamarisk, and remember that it is a tree.] The king of Byblos, amazed at the miracle, caused the tree to be cut down and from the trunk, containing the box, he made a pillar to support the roof of his palace. [Now] by magic Isis discovered this and, traveling immediately to Byblos, attached herself to the suite of the queen as a nurse to her children. At night, when all the palace was asleep, Isis transformed herself into a swallow and fluttered around the column, bemoaning her fate in strange, sad notes.[47] In due time Isis revealed her divine nature and asked that the pillar be cut down; taking therefrom the chest, she departed with it into a desert place where she performed certain magical rites by which the body of Osiris was temporarily animated and by this animation she received from Osiris a son who was called the younger Horus, the child who was conceived of the dead.

---

[46] *The Book of Coming Forth by Day*

[47] Jesus expressed himself only in parables; can we deny the truth which the parables teach? In present day conversation is it not the ambiguities, the approximation, the puns or the assonances which characterize spirited people, who are glad to escape the tyranny of the letter and thereby—unwittingly—show themselves cabalist in their own right. [Also] *argot* (cant) is one of the forms derived from the *Language of the Birds,* parent and doyen of all other knowledge of this language which Jesus revealed to his Apostles, by sending them his spirit, the Holy Ghost. This is the language which teaches the mystery of things and unveils the most hidden truths. The ancient Incas called it the *Court Language*, because it was used by *diplomats.* To them it was the key to the double science, sacred and profane. In the Middle Ages it was called the *Gay Science* and *Gay*

[Now] there is some confusion in the account at this point. Plutarch says that Isis left the body of Osiris temporarily to visit her son Horus, just mentioned, but the context of the fable would rather call for her departure to a secluded place where the child could be born without the knowledge of Typhon who certainly would have destroyed him. Isis hid the chest in a remote and unfrequented place but Typhon, hunting one night by the light of the moon, chanced upon it. Knowing its contents and realizing Isis to be proficient in magic, he resolved to thwart her purposes, and tearing the body into fourteen parts, he scattered them over Egypt. [Now, remember "fourteen parts," folks, don't forget that.]

From the inscriptions on the Metternich Stele it seems that Set must have imprisoned Isis and her son Horus. The goddess is made to say, "I am Isis, and I came forth from the house wherein my brother Set has placed me." Thoth, the "Prince of Law," again came to her assistance, and aided Isis to escape from the house ([was it really a] prison?) [Or was it really the House of Set?] Thoth, also, at this time, prophesied that Horus would set upon the throne of his father and rule the double empire of Egypt. Upon the advice of Thoth, Isis hides the child in a papyrus swamp, thus saving him from the wrath of Set.

Isis, returning, having left her son at Butos, and fashioning a magical boat out of papyrus, traversed the whole of the empire. As she met with the scattered parts of her husband, she buried each one separately, first, however, encasing it in a magical mummy composed of wax, incense, and grain seed. She finally recovered all of the parts of Osiris except the phallus [or the penis] which had been thrown into the river and devoured by three fishes. This organ Isis reproduced in gold [remember this also; remember the three fishes, for they represent ignorance, superstition, and fear. They also represent the church, the state, and the mob, and remember that Isis reproduced this member, this organ in gold] and having performed all of the ceremonies necessary to insure the life of Osiris in the underworld, she returned to her son Horus and by the theurgic arts, of she was mistress, saved him from death from the stings of scorpions.

Horus, having grown to man's estate, and having received from his mother the tradition of his father's murder, longed to avenge the evil deed. Osiris appeared to his son in a vision, instructing him in the means by which he could overcome the hosts of Typhon. [Now] we are lead to infer that Horus gathered about him an army which, meeting the hosts of Typhon, battled with them for many days, achieving victory. Typhon [according to the legend] was taken prisoner and turned over to the custody of Isis. [Now, Isis,] being his sister, could not [bring herself] to put him to death but set him at liberty which so incensed Horus that he laid hands upon his mother and removed from her head the insignia of royalty; thereupon Thoth gave her a new helmet made in the shape of an ox's head. Typhon next accused Horus of illegitimacy, but Thoth proves his royal descent. Typhon again goes into battle against Horus, in fact, two battles are mentioned in both of which Typhon is worsted, and Horus regains the kingdom of his father and is regarded, to at least a certain degree, as the actual reincarnation of Osiris. [So, here you have a death and a resurrection.]

After its resurrection in the underworld, the shade of Osiris visits Isis and in consequence thereof she gives birth to another son, as it were, by a Holy Ghost, for she knew no living man. This child is called Harpocrates and Plutarch says of him that he "came into the world before his time, and lame in his lower limbs." Harpocrates is usually depicted as a nude figure, his head adorned with a single curling lock of hair on the right side, this being with the Egyptians a symbol of youth or adolescence. He is sometimes depicted with an elaborate plumed headdress or wearing the double crown of the northern and southern empires. His finger is placed to his lips which Plutarch interprets as a gesture symbolic of his childish and helpless state. The Greeks and Romans, however, considered this gesture to be a symbol for silence [or secrecy] and from this has arisen the custom of placing the finger to the lips as a motion for quietness and secrecy [and we do it today]. Statues of the

---

Knowledge, the *Language of the Gods*, The Dive-Bouteille. Tradition assures us that men spoke it before the building of the *Tower of Babel*, which event caused this sacred language to be perverted and to be totally forgotten by the greater part of humanity. Today, apart from cant, we find its character in a few local dialects, such as Picard, Provençal, etc. and in the language of the gypsies. ~Fulcanelli, *Le Mystère des Cathédrales (The Mystery Of The Cathedrals*), 1926 god Harpocrates were placed at the entrances to temples and sacred retreats where the dramas of the Mysteries were performed as a sign that silence and secrecy should be observed in the holy places and that all Initiates were bound by vows of discretion. Harpocrates is [also] sometimes shown standing, and another times he is depicted seated on a blossom of a lotus [(laughs) just like Buddha]. Although he is usually figured with childish immaturity of body, the imperfection of his lower limbs, as described by Plutarch, is not apparent in any of the Egyptian drawings. It, therefore, seems that the statements concerning this deformity should be more carefully examined. Samuel Squire, whose translation of Plutarch's *Isis and Osiris*, made in 1744, is still the most often quoted by Egyptologists, [well it] states definitely, “lame in his lower limbs.” G.R.S. Mead translated the same essay much later and gives a slightly different rendering of Plutarch's words. Mr. Mead says: “weak in his limbs from below upwards.” This difference in wording, though slight, may have an unexpected significance.

[You see,] there is some general information contained in Synesius's treatise *On Providence* that should be included in this Osirian epic. Synesius is of the opinion that Osiris should be regarded as an historical king whose father transcending in wisdom, instructed his benevolent son in all the secrets of the divine science of government. Synesius is moved to this conclusion by a desire to keep all speculation within the sphere of the reasonable. The Platonist bishop seems to have derived much of his account from origins foreign to Plutarch’s treatise, or possibly he interpreted differently the restrictions imposed by his vows. Synesius a prudent and conscientious author, wary of myths and fables, and exhibiting a truly Platonic conservativeness in his handling of subject matter, yet Synesius was beyond question a deeply religious philosopher and an Initiate of pagan Mysteries prior to his conversion to the Christian faith [and therefore may have hidden the true meaning of the fable]. Thomas Taylor is of the mind that the treatise *On Providence* was written while Synesius was still a votary of pagan Mysteries. [Now] if so, the writing is unbiased and trustworthy and presents a fair picture on the mystical traditions of the Egyptians interpreted in terms of platonic metaphysics. [But only the exoteric would be allowed to be seen by the profane.]

Synesius inserts into his narrative a considerable description of the various [*note: book says virtuous] character of Osiris which he sharply contrasts with the vice-ridden nature of Typhon. He also explains in detail the process of election by which Osiris came to the throne of Egypt. The electional ceremony, as described by Synesius, is evidently itself a fragment from some secret ritual relating to the installation of a hierophant of the Mysteries. Next Osiris receives from his father an elaborate dissertation in the Platonic temper concerning the relative power of good and evil in which he is fully warned against the machinations of Typhon. Possibly the most important sentence in Synesius’s treatise occurs during this dissertation. The father of Osiris is made to say to his son: “You also have been initiated in those Mysteries in which there are two pair of eyes, and it is requisite that the pair which are beneath should be closed when the pair that are above them perceive, and when the pair above are closed, those which are beneath should be opened.”

[Now,] these words unquestionably have an arcane meaning and are incorporated into the narrative that the true significance of the whole Osirian cycle might not be entirely obscured. [And I can tell you that the meaning, folks, is that the eyes above are the *exoteric* meant for the outer world, for the profane, and the eyes below are the *esoteric*, meant for the initiate, the adept, the priests of the Mystery Schools only.] Synesius does not describe the death of Osiris, but merely reports his banishment and final restoration to the throne. In the latter part of the story there is also introduced “a certain philosopher, who was a stranger in Egypt.” This philosopher predicts the fall of Typhon and is an eyewitness to the recrowning of Osiris. Synesius says of this philosopher: “He, likewise, then learned some particulars about Osiris which would shortly happen, and others which would take place at some greater distance of time viz., when the boy Horus would choose as is his associate in battle a wolf instead of a lion. But who the wolf is, is a sacred narration, which it is not holy to divulge, even in a form of a fable.” [Well the lion, we know, has always been of the Tribe of Judah.]

Such is the amazing tradition of the good king Osiris, the first victim, the first mummy, and the first resurrection. He dies and is born again in three forms. First, as god of the underworld where he rules the justified dead; second, as the younger Horus in whose form he battles for his own honor; and third, as Harpocrates, the silent child. The latter two forms are regarded as incarnations or embodiments of his very self, yet he exists independent of them as the judge of shades and the lord of the resurrection. [Now, we know that Osiris was also known as the sun, and Horus was known as the child or the young Osiris, the young Horus, the baby Horus. So, after the sun set in the west, when it rose the next morning it had rose as the young Horus, and, as it went across the sky, it became Osiris, and then the elder. But in the legends, it’s differently, at different times, Osiris or Horus: Horus the younger, Horus at his peak strength at noon and Horus the elder. It is also Osiris.

So you see that these figures intermingle in the legend, but it all has meaning and it will all be clear to you in a later time.]

[Now, just because you don't understand some of this and you may be a little lost . . . don't worry, it will come together. *Don't*, don't miss one single word of this series of episodes of the Hour of the Time. If you do I can guarantee you, you will regret it for the rest of your life. We're going to stop right now, folks. We have to take a break. I will be back right after this very short pause.]

(Interlude music: dark, forbidding instrumental music)[48]

Nearly all writers attempting an interpretation on the Osirian Cycle have recourse to Plutarch. It has seemingly never occurred to Egyptologists that this imminent priest of Delphi might have purposely confused or distorted the fable, or, if not that, might certainly have misdirected the attention of the reader from relevant to irrelevant explanations. Two factors must certainly be taken into consideration when reading Plutarch. First, he was an initiated priest of the Mysteries; of this there can be no doubt for he himself says, "For the mystic symbols are well known to us who belong to the Brotherhood." [In those days it was known as the "*Brotherhood of the Snake,*" and those who possessed the knowledge of the Secrets of the Ages wore the symbol of the snake on their headdress. And in the Egyptian Hieroglyphics, you can see the members of the Mystery Religion of Babylon in the hieroglyphics as they wore the snake from the front of their forehead.]

It should be evident [to everybody] that, as an Initiate, Plutarch would not have unveiled the secret meaning of the Osirian myth [and I found that to be absolutely true]. No man of his priestly station or philosophic mind, who so greatly venerated the gods as to attach himself to their service, would have been guilty of the impiety of profaning their Mysteries [and he would not have violated his oath of secrecy]. Furthermore, had his treatise actually exposed any of the secrets of the rites, he would most probably have perished miserably or at least have been publicly disgraced. These evils, not descending upon him, we must suppose that his book was regarded as harmless and for our purpose, therefore, at least not directly informative.

The second factor, which gravitates against the likelihood of Plutarch's interpretations being correct, is the condition of Egyptian metaphysics in the first century after Christ. If, as Budge maintains, the Egyptians were unaware of the meaning of the word "Osiris" long prior to the Christian era, into what decay had the old rites fallen even prior to the Ptolemaic period? [Now] Plutarch based his accounts upon popular traditions, they were most certainly inaccurate and it is not impossible that even the priests themselves were for the most part ignorant of the origins of their doctrine. It should not be inferred [folks] from the general literature available concerning [this Osirian cycle and] the Mysteries that all of the priests were themselves initiates of a high order. Only a small part of them ever actually received the greater secrets of their order; for the rest, rite and ritual suffered [*note: book say sufficed] [and it's the same today].

Democritus spent a great part of his life in Egypt and from the priests of that nation he secured the foundation for his celebrated doctrine of atoms [that's right, folks, atoms, A-T-O-M-S], a doctrine which has survived as a scientific fact to this day. From all these different philosophers who visited Egypt we shall secure a better estimation of the profoundity of Egyptian learning than from even the Egyptian writings themselves. [Plato went to Egypt and was initiated into the Mysteries in the Great Pyramid, where he lay for three days and three nights in the sarcophagus during which he was imparted knowledge which he was to guard, protect. He describes his initiation in his writings. I suggest that you read it.] If we may assume the Pragmatic viewpoint that the substance of matter is to be determined from its consequences, [then] we must indeed highly reverence the wisdom of the Egyptians for it seems that first among the consequences of that wisdom is civilization itself [that cannot be doubted]. Civilization is no fable, nor is it a progeny of myths, but that which is real and substantial in it bears witness to a profound and superior wisdom which must have existed over a great period of time and have then communicated to at least a privileged few, since the very beginning of man's cultural impulse.

[Now,] we can also take the example of Pythagoras. This great philosopher while a youth, if we may credit Iamblichus, associated himself with Thales of Miletus from whom he gained a considerable knowledge of the Mysteries. Thales, being at that time of great age and infirm body, apologized for his incomplete understanding of the sacred doctrines and urged Pythagoras to visit Egypt the mother land of wisdom [as it was called in those days]. Iamblichus wrote that Thales confessed that his own reputation for wisdom was derived from the instruction of these priests; but that he was neither naturally, nor by exercise, induced with those excellent prerogatives which were so visibly displayed in the person of Pythagoras. Thales, therefore, gladly announced to Pythagoras, from all these circumstances, that he would become the wisest and the most divine of all men, if he associated with these Egyptian priests. Iamblichus then describes the journey which Pythagoras made to Egypt, how en route he was initiated into the Mysteries of several nations and at last arriving at his destination, was received by the Egyptian priests with respect and affection. He associated with the Egyptian philosophers for some time and after demonstrating by his sincerity and consecration that he was worthy to associate with the initiated, he was at last admitted into the secrets of their orders.

---

[48]

“He spent, therefore,” observes Iamblichus, “two and twenty years in Egypt and, in the adyta of temples, astronomizing and geometrizing, and was initiated, not in a superficial or casual manner, in all the Mysteries of the gods.”

Pythagoras must be acknowledged among the first of those divine men to whom the race is indebted for the principles of science, art and philosophy; and are we to presume that so noble an intellect could have twenty-two years pursuing fabulous shadows in Egyptian crypts? If, as some have asserted, Osiris signified merely the Nile, and Isis, the black earth rendered fertile by its inundation, could such a fable have so greatly stimulated the admiration of Pythagoras that he would have spent a score of years in the assimilation of the idea? [I don't think so.] Or, again, would he have spent this great length of time, the very best years of his life, in memorizing the myth-encrusted history of an ancient king who at some remote period have reigned in Egypt and whose memory seems sufficient to inspire a vast civilization for some 6,000 years? [By the way, that's the exact number of years in the calendar of the Mystery School and of the Freemasons.] Or, to approach the matter from another of these “explanations” would Pythagoras have pounded himself for a score of years against the walls of Memphis and find himself fully rewarded by being informed with bated breath by some archi-magus that Isis is the dog-star? [I think not.][49]

It is not impossible that in the course of its long and illustrious history [folks] Egypt devised many opinions relative to her sacred myths; but no such explanation has involved Egypt alone, her histories, her heroes, or her agricultural problems, could have caused illustrious men from all parts of the world to have visited her in quest of essential wisdom [the central core of which is the myth of Osiris, Isis and Horus, known as the Osirian cycle].

The Nile meant nothing to the Greeks who cared little whether it rose or fell. [The sneezing you hear in the background is my dog, Sugarbear, who always accompanies me into the studio to do these programs.] Not Egypt but the umbos of Delphi was the center of their universe [in Greece], and local fables derived from Egypt’s forty-two nomes could never have won for the double Empire its illustrious reputation as patron of all learning, human and divine. So, we must look deeper [and look deeper we did, folks, and what we found is amazing. For we found that Osiris and Isis and Horus were not ever have meant to be, nor were they ever, real people, or real gods, or spacemen who came from some other world. Not at all. As we have found in our research, and as I have found in my over twenty some odd years of research into the Mystery Schools, they're like all the other symbols of the Mystery Religion for the public, for the profane. They are the exoteric, and you may make of them what you wish. The Adepts, the Initiates, the priests—they don’t care what interpretation you give the exoteric meaning. And the esoteric is so entirely different from what you may suspect that the answer will surprise you.] [You see,] we [cannot] be deceived by the obvious [and you can never be deceived by the obvious or even consider the obvious when looking at any of the Mystery Religions or the secret doctrine.] [And we cannot] allow ourselves to be misdirected by the evident subterfuges

---

[49] In the Hermetic-masonic tradition the secret identity of Satan is the cosmic force represent in occult lore as emanating from the star Sirius, the so called dog star, *alpha Canis majoris*. In the secret tradition of the Freemasons, Sirius is overwhelmingly identified with a single primary attribute, the bringing of civilization to earth. Sirius is personified as the goddess Isis in ancient Egypt. Orion is personified as her consort, and sometime rival, Osiris. The annals emphasize Isis’ “great skill” in working magic with twilight (esoteric) language. According to the fable, Isis resurrected Osiris from the dead using “the words of power.” ~Michael A. Hoffman II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* 1995

[the deceptions] of these ancient priests who so carefully concealed their arcana from the uninitiated world that we at this late time may even doubt its existence. [Yet now, today, it is thriving to the point that it controls all levels of our society, military and government.] The ignorant [the sheeple], even among the Egyptians, might derive their inspirations from the processionals and rituals of the state religion, but [that's just for the sheeple.] [For] those great philosophers who came from afar were in search of the highest form of human knowledge [the ancient arts, the Secrets of the Ages], and could not be satisfied by such outer show. Had these fables been but hollow and unsubstantial forms, Egypt would have been the ridicule of the wise, who would speedily have exposed her sham and reduced her vain pretense to a humble state. But this did not occur. [You see,] the initiates of her Mysteries returning to their own countries not only felt themselves more than repaid for their hazardous journeys and long vigils, but furthermore, they became founders of distinguished systems of thinking, disseminators of useful knowledge and in all cases bore witness to a broad and deep learning. [And they always took with them a plan, a plan for the unfoldment of a world Utopian government, which plan exists still today, and is still being carried out in secret as the completion of the Great Work.]

Diodorus describes two famous columns erected near Nysa in Arabia, one to Isis and the other to Osiris. [Now, remember, Osiris and Isis never lived. They were not real people and they were never gods. They are symbols for something much deeper. So, when you listen to the interpretations of the inscriptions on the columns, remember that.] The column to Isis bears this inscription: "I am Isis, Queen of this country. I was instructed by Mercury. No one can destroy the laws which I have established. I am the eldest daughter of Saturn, the most ancient of gods. I am the wife and sister of Osiris the king. I first made known to mortals the use of wheat. I am the mother of Horus the king. In my honor was the city of Bubastis built. Rejoice, O Egypt, rejoice, land that gave me birth."

The column to Osiris bore these words: "I am Osiris the king, who led my armies into all parts of the world, to the most thickly inhabited countries of India, the north, the Danube, and the ocean. I am the eldest son of Saturn; I was born of a brilliant and magnificent egg, and my substance is of the same nature as that which composes light. There is no place in the Universe where I have not appeared, to bestow my benefit and make known my discoveries." [And] the rest of the inscription [of course] was destroyed. [Now, while the inscription on the pillar, or the obelisk, in honor of Isis may be veiled, the inscription on the obelisk dedicated to Osiris is certainly not. He "was born of a brilliant and magnificent egg and its substance is of the same nature of that which composes light. There is no place in the Universe where I have not appeared." Osiris, of course, was the sun.][50]

In examining Plutarch's treatise, the introductory remarks appear of special significance, yet [folks] these remarks are wholly ignored by Egyptologists who are contempt to confine themselves entirely to the fable which constitutes the larger part of the writing. If Plutarch, by any word or symbol, revealed even a small part of the sacred mystery, it is to be found in the following words: "For Isis, according to the Greek interpretation of the word, signifies *knowledge*; as does the name of her professed adversary Typhon, [signify] *insolence* and *pride*, a name therefore extremely well adapted to one, who, full of ignorance and error, tears in pieces and conceals that *holy doctrine*, which the Goddess collects, compiles and delivers to those, who aspire after the most perfect participation of the divine nature." [Now, if you have a keen intellect, you can all decipher everything else that I'm going tell you on this program and probably the next one in that short paragraph, and I let you ponder that as I continue.]

Osiris, the black god of the Nile, must be regarded as the personification of an order of learning, for Plutarch identifies him beyond question with the holy doctrine, or the Mystery tradition. [Now, remember, I told you Osiris is the symbol of the sun, but the sun was the symbol of the power of the all-encompassing god of the universe. And later you're going to learn that the light, or the sun, represents something even deeper. It represents, dear listeners, *primordial knowing*, the gift of intellect. And where people can read these myths and think that these people really worshiped the sun or some god somewhere, they are mistaken. For the true object of their worship is the intellect, and through the use of that intellect they believe that man will become god.] As Thoth personifies the whole sphere of knowledge and it was through his assistance that Osiris came into being, so Osiris embodies the secret and sacred wisdom reserved for those who were proficients in the ancient rites. Unquestionably Osiris was later confused with other members of that vast pantheon of divinities which developed in the decadent period of Egyptian religious culture, but to the elect, [the initiate, the adept, the priest] he represented to the end *primordial knowing*, that utter realization of truth undefiled by intellection, unlimited by any mortal procedure, uncircumscribed by the limitation of thinking. [You see,] he signified not only that divine at-one-ment with the Absolute which is the end of all illumination, but by his life, death and resurrection, revealed the means by which mortal consciousness could achieve that end. [Now remember, 'at-one-ment.'] Thus Osiris becomes a dual symbol, being in first place the *esoteric wisdom*, [esoteric folks means 'hidden', so he represented in the first place the esoteric wisdom] itself, and in the second place, the composite order of Initiates through whom that tradition was perpetuated [and now we begin to strip the veil from the Mysteries]. The personality of Osiris thus typifies the institution erected by the ancients to perpetuate the deathless truths of the soul. The living head was crowned with the plumes of wisdom and power, the hands bore the scepters of the three worlds, but the body was bound with the mummy wrappings of the dead. Here we find spirit, the living head bound incongruously to matter, the mummified body. The soul was imprisoned in the narrow bounds of flesh. One thing [in my research] is certain: Osiris represented the Secret Doctrine prior to that time when the omnific Word [or the Lost Word of Freemasonry] was lost.

---

[50] The official office of the President of the United States is called: The Oval Office.
In the Chinese creation myth heaven and earth were jumbled together in a cosmic egg from which Pan Gu is said to emerge and separate the two.

Osiris is the first of the five children of Nut [and here you begin to part some more veils behind which the mystery resides]; he therefore corresponds with the first of the five divine kings of China and the five exoterically known Dhyana-Buddhas of Lamaism. The five children of Nut are the five continents which have appeared upon the earth and the five races which have populated these continents. Osiris is the primitive revelation of the first race, but as Isis was born upon the fourth day, we find that this tradition coming into Egypt through the Atlantean Mystery School of which Isis is the symbol. [And you will find at the base of all these things: Atlantis. Francis Bacon wrote about Atlantis. Hitler believed in Atlantis. In this country the Freemasons established the city of Atlanta as the new Atlantis. And all of this will come together for you. It took me many, many, many years of study deep into the night and trying to discuss this with other people who had no idea what I was talking about. So most of it was put together in loneliness late at night, and then when I established my organization known as the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence (CAJI), many others began to help and furnish bits and pieces of information. And we have succeeded folks in infiltrating the Lodge. We have members in the Lodge who feed us information constantly; members whom we taught how to take an oath so that the oath of Freemasonry would not be binding upon them. You have to play sometimes by the rules of the enemy in order to beat the enemy and we are beating the enemy now.]

From the reign of Osiris we glean the following philosophical history. [They believe that] there was a time, the Golden Age, when truth and wisdom ruled the earth, and this aristocracy of wisdom was a benevolent despotism [and that's what they want to reestablish. Benevolent to who? (laughs) That's the question.] in which men were lad to a nobler state of being by the firm kindly hand of the enlightened sage. This was the divine dynasty of the mythological priest-kings who were qualified to govern humanity by virtue not only temporal but by divine attributes. Through his priests, Osiris, representative of the hidden tradition, ruled the entire world by virtue of the perfection resident in that tradition.

[No longer reading]

Don't miss tomorrow night, folks. You have not even begun your journey. Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(Outro music: unknown instrumental music)[51]

---

[51]

Hour 5: Osiris and Isis, Part II (aired February 18th, 1993)

Welcome once again, folks, to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper, and tonight we continue on our series on the origins, the history, the dogma and the identity of Mystery Babylon, the secret organization that has infiltrated every level of our society, military and government, and are bringing about a totalitarian world socialist government that they call the New World Order. Tonight, part four.

(Intro music: Also sprach Zarathustra)[52]

[William Cooper does commercial for the Pilot Connection]

Well, folks, we left off with a great revelation, for those of you who were listening last night. For those of you who weren't, you need to order the tapes, beginning with the tape of February the 11th, Thursday night, February the 11th. This was—the name of the tape was, "The Dawn of Man." And this series actually starts on Friday night, February the 12th, but you need the tape, "The Dawn of Man." Order all the tapes in this series, because if you really want to know what's going on, how it has been kept alive for thousands of years, and what the ultimate goal is: their origins, their histories, their dogma and their absolute identity, then you need this whole series.

[William Cooper gives contact information to order tapes]

Well, let me continue. And I think tonight is really going to open your eyes, and remember, we're nowhere near even begun. We've got a lot of shows to do on this, folks, and it's going to blow your mind if it hasn't already. I think some of you out there already know that.

[Reading from *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*]:

[Now,] if we concede that Osiris is the positive pole of the universal life agent [as the Mystery School does], then Isis becomes the receptive pole of that activity. He is the doctrine, she is the church. As in Christianity it is customary to refer the church as the bride of Christ, so in Egypt the institution of the Mysteries was the great Mother, the consort of heaven itself. From this interpretation we gain a deeper insight into the symbolism of the whole of Osirian cycle. Isis [you see] becomes the temporal order of the priesthood, the accumulative body of Initiates. She is personified as the temple; she is the mother of all good, the protectress of all right, and the patron of all improvement. [Now, remember, this is the belief of the Mystery Schools. I'm not telling you what I believe. What you're learning on this program is what the Mystery Religion really is: its origin, its history, its dogma, and its identity. So don't get confused, here—don't get confused.][According to the Mystery Schools] she insures nobility, inspires virtue and awakens the nobler passions of the soul. As Diana of Ephesus she is the multimammia who feeds all creatures from herself. [And many of you may have seen illustrations and books, or little statues or portraits or pictures on someone's wall of Isis in the role of the multimammia where she has many breasts all over her torso, and on her legs and her arms, all over her body. Well, that's what this represents.] As Diana of Ephesus she is the multimammia who feeds all creatures from herself. Like the moon she shines only with the light of her sovereign sun [spelled S-U-N] even as the temple can only be illumined by its indwelling truth. [So, Isis is the Moon. Osiris is the Sun. And remember, remember what this means folks. He is the doctrine. She is the church. You see, the Osirian legend, the Osirian cycle, was never about real people, was never about gods or goddesses, but it is the method by which the real object of worship and the real mystery of the Mystery Religion of Babylon has been concealed. And it is only one of the ways, as you will see.]

Typhon [according to the Mystery Schools] is the embodiment of every perversity. He is the negative creation, the Ahriman of Zoroasterism. [And remember, we talked last Thursday about the movie *2001*, and in the beginning of the movie, the musical score that you hear, the name of it is *Also sprach Zarathustra*, which is a tribute to Zoroaster, which is the androgynous god. The combination in one of the positive and negative; good, evil; male, female, etc., etc., etc. It is the concept that Christ is also Lucifer, or that they are twins, and that's what they teach in the Mormon church.] Typhon [according to Mystery Schools] is black magic and sorcery— the Black Brotherhood [also known as the Jesuit Order]. Nephthys, his wife, is the institution through which it manifests. He is neither a single evil nor even a sequence of ills, but an infinite diversity of them, indescribably insidious, empowered to infect the fabric of church and state. [The enemy of the Mystery Schools are three: the church, the state and the mob, and, of course, the mob is us.] Typhon lured Osiris in to the ark of destruction at the time when the sun enters the house of the Scorpion, hence, we know him to be the eternal betrayer [or Judas], that ageless Judas, who undoes all good things and inevitably presages ruin. He is the power of the physical universe which is constantly seeking to destroy the spiritual values locked within its substances. [You will see that they have a talent for turning things around.] He strikes in the eighth month, and now it is supposed that a child delivered in the eighth month of the prenatal epoch cannot live because of the curse of Typhon. Osiris was born in the seventh month and therefore it may be said of him that he was delivered prior to the rule of Typhon. [And that's why our forefathers, all Freemasons, established this country by the signing of the Declaration of Independence in the month of July. And this will all become clearer to you as we go along.] Of all good things Typhon is the opposer [according to the Mystery Schools], occupying the position of the eternal negative. This evil monster made well be generalized under the appellation of the Adversary. In the initiation rites he also the tester or the tryer, “the lord who is against us.” [According to the Mystery Religion,] he is the personification of ambition, and ambition is the patron of ruin. It was ambition that set Typhon plotting for the throne of Egypt, designing how he should destroy the power of his brother. A learned Jesuit father sees in Typhon, Cain, and his brother Osiris, Abel. If such a parallel actually exists, then the Biblical allegory is susceptible of the same interpretation. [But, you see, they have twisted everything around.]

---

[52] Performed in techno.

[Adam Weishaupt, the founder of the Illuminati, was a Jesuit priest and a professor at Ingolstadt University, which is a Jesuit university. The Jesuit Order was founded by Ignatius Loyola. He was the head of the Alumbrados in Spain, which is the order of Illuminati long before Adam Weishaupt even came along. He was arrested by the Dominican Monks under the Inquisition and used his power of association, of those who had influence and power, to beg an audience with the pope. Now, nobody knows what occurred during this audience. But he emerged as the head of a new order called the Jesuits. Now, the Jesuits was just another name for the Alumbrado, for he took his organization that he already controlled and made it into the brotherhood of the Jesuits. The Jesuits went on to foment rebellion everywhere that they went and the pope gave them incredible power and made Ignatius Loyola immune to any prosecution from any source. And it was they who trained Adam Weishaupt, and it was Adam Weishaupt who formed the branch of what we all know as the Illumined Ones, known as the Illuminati in Bavaria. For he sent out agents to infiltrate the lodges of the secret societies throughout Europe.]

[Now, you will begin to understand this even more, folks, as we go along. Right now I understand how shocking some of this may be to some of you out there. But just hang on, continue to listen because we have many, many more hours of this to go before it will all come together for you. But I would suggest that you begin study on your own. Doesn't matter if you get ahead of us, because you'll always need some of the information that I'm putting out here no matter how ahead you may get or what you already may know simply because I've done well over 23 years of research into this and I must know something that you don't know. And if you know something that I don't please send it to me immediately and if we can substantiate it, we will incorporate into this series. Now let me continue:]

[Typhus] lured Osiris into the ark of destruction at the time when the sun enters the house of the Scorpion. Hence, we know him to be the eternal betrayer or Judas, that ageless Judas who undoes all good things and inevitably presages ruin. [Now, this may sound to you that we're talking about Satan or the Devil, but you see, in the Mystery Schools, they consider their god Lucifer to be the true good god, and they consider the God of Christianity to be the evil god.]

[Now if you listened on the night of the 10th (you—er, excuse me, the 11th of February, Thursday), you already understand this concept. Because the Mystery Religion of Babylon believes that man was held prison, in the bonds of ignorance in the Garden of Eden by an unjust, vindictive God. Lucifer through his agent Satan, and many believe them to be the same entity and that's okay, Lucifer through his agent Satan released man from the bonds of ignorance with the gift of intellect and through use of that intellect, man himself will become God. And that's the heart and soul of the dogma of the Mystery Religion of Babylon.]

[Now, since I am taking the content of all these episodes directly from their own teachings in their own writings so that's you'll know that this is exactly what they believe. Sometimes it may sound you like these are the good guys. But remember, they are the ultimate perfection of deception, and they have intentionally made it this way so that they can get people to join them and stay with them until they are so deeply involved and committed that it's too late. And that is why the degrees of initiation. So stick it out and you'll find out with these guys are the greatest liars, deceivers, manipulators and scum that exist upon the face of the earth.]

Typhon [in their teachings] is the desire of the few pitted against the good of the many. [Now if you understand what I just said, you understand that these are communists, socialists.] [They believe Typhon] is the spirit of dissension and discord that breaks up unity of purpose by setting factions against each other so that great issues lose the name of action. The desire for riches, pomp, power, and [listen to this, folks] sovereignty by which this evil genius was obsessed, reveals the temptation by which humanity is deflected from its ultimate goal and led into the byways of sorrow and despair. Typhon, the Queen of Ethiopia, and the seventy-two conspirators represent the three destructive powers, preserved to modern Freemasonry as the murderers of the Master Builder [Hiram Abiff. You will see Hiram Abiff was never murdered. In fact, in the Bible you will see that, when the Temple of Solomon was completed, he went back home to Tyre, but in the Freemason Legend, Hiram Abiff, the Master Builder, was killed and the temple was never completed. So everybody is blaming all of this upon the Jews. It is not the Jews, folks, because all of this is a front. It's symbology for what they really, really mean. Hiram Abiff was really, folks, Jacques de Molay of the Knights Templar. And all of this will make much more sense to you several shows down the road because we have lots and lots of information to go through before you put it all together.] [Now these] three destructive powers preserved to the modern [Mystery School known as] Freemasonry as the murderers of the Master Builder [Hiram Abiff, who was really Jacques de Molay] are ignorance, superstition, and fear, [what they call] the destroyers of all good things. [When you get even deeper into their teachings, you find out that ignorance, superstition and fear stand for the state, the church and the mob. And those are the things that they have sworn to destroy and substitute themselves as the ruler of the world in a benevolent despotism. A totalitarian socialist state because from the very beginning, these people have been pure, true communists, socialists. They are the heart and soul and core of international socialism.][53]

[They believe] the advent of greed and perversion marked the end of the Golden Age—the Osirian Age [which the Osirian Cycle is just a symbology of this and the Golden Age, of course, golden (oro), always has stood for the sun. Osiris is representative of the sun and outwardly these people worship the sun, but the sun is just another symbol for their god Lucifer, the light, the intellect.]—and when the good prince Osiris, the deeper truth, returned to his own land, he became the victim of a hideous plot. [So,] what is this mysterious chest, so beautiful in its outer appearance but so fatal in its application? [Well, folks,] Plato, [who was] wise in the wisdom of the Egyptians [and who was an initiate of the Mystery School] would have answered that it was the body that lures the soul into the sorrows of generation. [Now] if this interpretation be projected into the social sphere, the chest becomes symbolic of material organization. Witness the application of this thought to Christianity where the pomp and glory of the outer show of a vast ecclesiastical mechanism has all but destroyed the simplicity and dignity of the primitive revelation [of the Mysteries].

[That is their exact words. See, I didn't make that up. Those aren't my words. Those are the words of the Mystery School and it is an indication, if you didn't think so yet, that Christianity is their enemy. They intend to destroy Christianity and all Christians. The blood will flow when the New World Order takes power in the world and if you sit back and say, “Well, I'm not worried because I'm going to be raptured,” I feel sorry for you because you are going to suffer tremendously. Because in my research I have found that most of the theologians in the Protestant religion of all denominations who were responsible for this doctrine of the rapture are Freemasons and they are in control of the World Council of Churches. They are responsible for the bringing together of the different religions in the World Council of Churches to attempt to merge them all into one and then change the doctrine to the New World Religion.]

[Now, if you don't believe that, you get off your little butts and go out there and start looking instead of just listening and accepting. For it is true, and their doctrine, folks, is Zionism. I can tell you right now, Jerry Falwell has admitted publicly that he is a Zionist, and we know that he is also a member of the Mystery Schools and many others that you follow blindly instead reading the words of Jesus Christ. You're all split up. You know the original teachings of Christ have been so perverted, that there are thousands of different sects of the Protestant religion and the Vatican is the original perversion of the Mysteries, established by a pagan Roman emperor, a worshiper of the sun.]

---

[53] Revenge on the mob because they were complicit and stood by during the persecution of the Knights Templar.

[I hope you're all beginning to open your mind. Now I know I'm going to get a lot of letters from a lot of fanatics who don't believe this and those are the people who will be hurt the most when they find out that it is all true. When they find out that it is all true.]

[Back to their doctrine:]The murderers rushed from the palace with the lead-sealed casket and cast it and its kingly contents into the dark waters of the Nile. Thus are the ideals, which lead men into the paths of truth and righteousness, obscured, and with truth no longer evident, [according to them] error [which is the Christian church] can rule supreme. Typhon [by now you should know that Typhon is their designation for Christianity. Typhon] ascended the throne as regent of the world, swinishly gloating over a dejected humanity he had led into dark and devious byways. By the Nile may we not understand the river of generation, in the current of which souls, imprisoned in mortal nature, move helplessly on the never ceasing current?[54]

[Now, they believe that truth is dead and according to their belief] with truth dead, or at least exiled to the invisible world, material facts were superseded by opinions; opinions bred hatreds, and men finally fought and died over notions both senseless and soulless. [And that is another deception and another lie, for in my research I found that in every instance of the most terrible things in wars that have ever happened on the face of the earth, these men are the ones who have brought it about—have brought it about.] Greed became the dominating impulse, [they say] gain the all-absorbing end, and ruthlessness the all-sufficient means. In the dark ages of uncertainty when reality hid its face and no man dared to know, the leering Typhon ruled his ill-gotten world, binding men to himself by breeding a thousand uncertainties to sap courage and weaken conviction. Men asked, “Why seek to know? Knowledge does not exist and life is a cruel jest, purposeless and of short duration.” Because the human mind demanded intellectual expression, Typhon sowed the seeds of intellectual confusion so that numerous orders of learning appeared which were convincingly plausible but untrue. These various order of thought survived by catering to the weaknesses and limitations of the flesh. Today our great industrial civilization is feeling the heavy hand of an outraged destiny; the evil genius of our ambitions has again undone us and made our follies crumbled about us. Typhon rules the world, for earth today is the arena of the ambitious. [Remember, Typhoon is their symbol for Christianity.]

[Don't go away, folks. I've got to take a short break. I'll be right back after this short pause. I want you to have a pencil and paper with you. I'm going to give you some information. I shall return.]

(Interlude music: none)

[Well, that didn't take long, did it?]

[William Cooper does commercial for the Pilot Connection and CAJI memberships]

[Well let's get back to where we left off, folks.] What then of Isis, the mother of the Mysteries? She who was so defiled and desecrated by the profane that her sages and prophets were forced to flee into the wilderness to escape the machinations of the evil one? Is she not the “woman clothed with the sun” of Revelation who flees with her man-child into the wilderness to escape the evil purposes of the great dragon?

[Well, folks, that's what the Mystery School believes, but I can tell you that's not true. You see, the Mystery School was the original college run by Nimrod in the city of Babylon, and the college was a college of priests who practice the religion of the sun. The college, the adepts, the initiates, the priests were scattered all over the world when Seth,[55] the son of Noah, came with an army and defeated Nimrod, and this is where the legend really comes from because Seth chopped Nimrod up into little pieces and scattered him all over the land. In the legend of the Osirian cycle, Osiris was chopped into fourteen pieces. Isis came to put him back together again and bring him to life. She could find all the pieces save one, the phallus, or the generative force. It is now known as the Lost Word Freemasonry, and the phallus is represented by the obelisk, the monolith. It is the penis of Osiris, the generative force. It represents Lost Word of Freemasonry. It represents the Luciferian philosophy. It represents the light, the sun, Lucifer the intellect.]

---

[54] This passage is pronounced in the song *The Rose.*

[55] Should be Shem; however, Seth and Shem are synonymous, both alike signifying “The appointed one.”

[In Dealey Plaza,[56] you will find an obelisk. In Washington D.C., you will find obelisk, known as the Washington Monument. In the courtyard of the Vatican, you will find an obelisk. Should I continue? The family in England, whose estates are called Syon House, has an obelisk on their lawns. Should I go on? I will. I will go on and on and on and on until you either wake up or I am dead, one or the other. And if you don't wake up, I would rather be dead than live in slavery in the New World Order with our Constitution destroyed, the family broken, the children taken from the homes to be raised by the state, Christians and patriots locked in prison camps, labor camps, until they are no longer useful, and then they will be executed. And the blood will run in the New World Order. If you don't believe me, look back at every single nation where international socialism has triumphed over Christianity. And you will see that tens of millions perished or destroyed. Socialism, folks, sucks, and I will not live under such a system and I hope you agree with me. If you don't like my language, that's tough. I'm fighting a battle against people with no morals, no decency, no heart, no soul—no soul. They do not even believe in God. They do not even believe in God.]

The glory of Egypt [according to these people] ceased with the death of Osiris. The mighty temples still stood but the god who illuminated them had gone. The priests bowed helplessly before the dead embers of their altars. [And] one by one the sanctuaries crumbled into ruin in the custodians of these ancient truths hid themselves in obscure corners of the earth lest they be hunted down and slain for the sin of dreaming and hoping for a better day. Isis, then, as the scattered but still consecrated body of Initiates, began the great search for the secret that was lost. [And this is all in reference to Seth's army scattering the college of priests in the ancient city of Babylon. And later, it refers to the Knights Templar who brought the Mysteries from the Middle East to Europe. In the beginning, folks, they were never a part of the Catholic Church, as you will learn. And they still exist today irregardless [sic] of what you've ever been taught, for they are the Mystery School today.] In all parts of the world [according to their teachings] the virtuous raised their hands to the heavens, pleading for the restoration of the reign of truth. This congregation of those who prayed who labored and who waited, the great congregation of a world in anguish—this is Isis in sackcloth and ashes, searching for the body of her lord.

Searching in all parts of the earth and throughout innumerable ages, inspired men and women, the congregation of the just, at last rediscovered the lost arcana and brought it back with rejoicing to the world over which it once ruled. Isis, by magic—for the initiated priests were all magicians [and they are magicians today]—resurrected the dead god and through union with him brought forth an order of priests under the collective title of Horus, the hawk, the all-seeing bird [whose eye is on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States of America]. These were the Herj Seshta or the companions of Horus, and the chief of these, called by Lewis Spence "the Chief of the Mysteries par excellence,"[57] appears to have worn the dog-headed mask of Anubis. Anubis was the son of Osiris by Nephthys, the material world, therefore represents the divine man or the mortal being who rose to enlightenment. [And those who rose to enlightenment were considered illumined. Collectively they are known as the Illuminati, and of all of you who have fallen in for the scam that Illuminati does not exist, they do, for the term Illuminati merely refers to the collective body of those who are illumined or enlightened. And they *are* the Illuminati.]

Ambition, however, personified by Typhon, knowing that temporal power must die if divine power, in the form of truth, be reestablished, put forth all its power again to scatter the doctrine, this time so thoroughly that it should never be rediscovered. If Typhon, as Plutarch has suggested, in one of his manifestations represents the sea, then it appears that this second destruction of Osiris may refer to the Atlantean deluge [there's Atlanta again. Atlantis, Atlanta, the same. Go to

---

[56] Where JFK was assassinated.

[57] James Lewis Thomas Chalmbers Spence, *The Mysteries of Egypt, or, The Secret Rites and Traditions of the Nile*, 1929

Atlanta, Georgia, folks. Drive around in that city. You will see pyramids everywhere. You will see 666 everywhere. You will see the symbols, the all-seeing eye.] Osiris may refer to the Atlantean deluge by which the doctrine was swallowed or lost and its fragments scattered among all of the existing civilizations of that time. [And] the story continues. The body of Osiris, the Secret Doctrine, is divided into fourteen parts. [And remember, Osiris was chopped into fourteen parts. They found all, save one: the phallus or the penis of Osiris. Well, the body of Osiris represents the Secret Doctrine.] [It's] divided into fourteen parts and divided among the parts of the world. [And the Lost Word of Freemasonry is the generative force, the lost part of Osiris, the lost part, the secret of the Secret Doctrine.][So,] we must therefore understand that it was scattered through the seven divine and seven infernal spheres, the lokas and talas of India, or by different symbolism, through the seven worlds which are without and the seven worlds which are within [the Cabbala of the Jews]. Bacchus was torn into seven pieces by the Titans and Osiris into fourteen pieces. To use the words of Faber, "Both these stories are in substance the same, for the second number is merely the reduplicate of the first. By a variation of much the same nature, the ancient mythologists added seven Titanides and seven Cabiri to the seven Titans."[58]

The parts of Osiris were now scattered so hopelessly that ambitious Typhon ([or] the Titans) felt his authority to be secure at last. But Wisdom is not thus easily to be cheated. [Listen to this carefully, folks. This is their own words.] In the dark retreats of Islam, the Sufi explored the depths of Nature; among the Jews the learned Rabbins unravelled the intricate skein of Cabbalism; among the Greeks, Initiates rose to life through the nocturnal rituals of Eleusis; in Indian neophytes were brought to the contemplation of the triple-headed Brahma at Elphanta and Ellora. Through the Middle Ages the alchemist in their retreats explored the infinite chemistry of existence, the Illuminati sought the pearl of great price, and Rosicrucian adepts sought to recast the molten sea.[59] All these together were but Isis, still searching for the members of her lord. At last, according to the tradition, all these parts were restored again but one; but this one could not be returned.

[Now you understand why I tell you it's not the Jews, folks. If you're persecuting the Jews, you're making a big mistake. It is some of the Jews, it is some of the Catholics, it is some of the atheists, it is some of all the people of all of the nations and races and religions of the world. And outwardly, if they attend a church in your neighborhood and profess to believe in that religion, it is a lie. It is how they gain influence and power in that community, for they worship one god and one god only in the temple without windows. The headquarters of which, in this country, is exactly thirteen blocks from the White House.]

The Egyptian allegory tells us that the phallus of Osiris was swallowed by a fish. [Now, folks,] this is most significant and we may even infer mankind itself is the fish. [But it even goes any further [sic], for this age has been known as the age of Pisces, the fish. The significant force and the power in the age Pisces was Christianity, and the fish actually referrers to Christianity.] The phallus being the symbol of the vital power of the Mystery School and so used in Egyptian hieroglyphics. The phallus, then, is the Lost Word [of Freemasonry] which is not discovered but for which a golden replica is substituted. In the Egyptian hieroglyphics the physical body, after the death of the soul or its departure therefrom, is called the *khat* [or K-H-A-T], and the hieroglyphic for this is a fish. Thus the physical body of man is definitely tied up in symbolism with the creature which conceived son, Horus, a term concealing the collective body of the perfected adepts who were born again out of the womb swallowed the triple phallus of Osiris—the threefold generative power. This golden phallus is the three-lettered word of Freemasonry concealed under the letters A-U-M. [And all of those of you in the New Age movement, or all of those of you who fell for all these gurus who came over here and taught you to sit and meditate, and while you were meditating, hum this: AUMMMM. A-U-M. (laughs) The golden phallus is the three-lettered word of Freemasonry concealed under the letters A-U-M. How do you feel sheeple? And why to do these things? Because somebody tells you to.]

---

[58] See George Stanley Faber, *A Dissertation On The Mysteries Of The Cabiri,* 1803

[59] In alchemy the "molten sea" represents the combining of the "philosophers of fire" with the "waters of faith" or union of State and Church in a theocracy as symbolized in the Disney movie *Beauty and the Beast (1991).*
The king (Philip IV) of France at the turn of the fourteenth century was known as an uncommonly handsome man. He was called Philip le Bel, the Beautiful . . . Pope Boniface VIII was a fat and dissolute pontiff. One contemporary described him as "nothing but eyes and tongue in a wholly putrefying body . . . a devil." The Beautiful himself openly referred to him as, "Your Fatuity." ~Jack Hitt, *Off the Road: A Modern-Day Walk Down the Pilgrim's Route Into Spain*, 1994

Isis, by thus modelling and reproducing the missing member of Osiris, gives the body of the god the appearance of completeness, but the life power [folks] is not there. Isis, the priesthood, with their initiatory process, had accomplished all that could be accomplished by natural philosophy. Therefore recourse is again had to magic. The golden phallus is rendered alive by the secret processes rescued from the lost *Book of Thoth*. Thus the divine power of Osiris is restored through the regeneration of the man himself and the processes of initiation. In the Greek system man was rendered divine because his composition contained the blood of Bacchus [they believe], and in Egypt, because it contained the seminal power of Osiris. The institutions raised in the world to perpetuate the deeper truths of life [according to them] labored on through the centuries seeking for the lost key (the living Crux Ansata) which, if rediscovered, would enliven and impregnate the whole world and restore the good king Osiris to the throne left empty by his cruel death.

The purpose of the Isiac Rite, is therefore, revealed as twofold. The first motive was the almost hopeless effort made by the bereaved Isis to restore her husband to life. She hovers above his corpse in the form of a bird, trying to restore his breath by the fluttering of her own wings. The ceremony is concealed in the *Book of the Respirations*.[60] The causing of Osiris to breathe again is the great abstract ideal. The second and more imminent motive which actuated Isis was to avenge herself upon Typhon [Christianity] and destroy his power over world. This she determined to accomplish through her immaculately conceived son, Horus, [which is] a term concealing the collective body of the perfected adepts who were born again out of the womb of the Mother—Isis, the Mystery School.

[Now,] we can apply this analogy to a great modern system of initiation, [called] Freemasonry, which has certainly perpetuated it at least the outer form of the ancient rites [to the profane or to the members on the lower rung of the initiatory ladder. To the adepts of the priesthood, the higher initiates, then it is clear.] [You see, for] Freemasonry as an institution is Isis, the Mother of Mysteries, form whose dark womb the Initiates are born in the mystery of the second or philosophic birth. Thus all adepts, by virtue of their participation in the rites, are figuratively, at least, the Sons of Isis. As Isis is the widow, seeking to restore her lord, and to avenge his cruel murder, it follows that all Master Masons or Master builders, are widow's sons. They are the offspring of the institution widowed by the loss of the living Word, and theirs is the eternal quest—they discover by becoming.

In the Egyptian rites Horus is the savior-avenger, son of Isis, conceived by magic ([or] the ritual) after the brutal murder of Osiris. Hence, he is the posthumous redeemer. Freemasons are Hori, they are the eye of Osiris, whose body therefore, is made up of eyes. Each Initiate is a Horus, each is a hawk of the sun[61] [spelled S-U-N], and for one reason is each raised and that is that he may join the army which is to avenge the destruction of wisdom, and restore the reign of the all-seeing lord [Lucifer]. Each one is dedicated to the over-throwing of the reign of [Christianity]. The great battle, in which the sons of the hawk rout out the hosts of darkness, is the mysterious Armageddon of Revelation [You see, they believe Lucifer is the god of light and Jehovah, or Yahweh, is the god of darkness.][They believe that the] Armageddon of Revelation is the Kurukshetra of the Mahabharata and the Ragnarok of the Eddas. In this battle the host of the Adversary shall be routed forever.

The great purposes of the Osirian rite are thus revealed in an unsuspected clarity. The Hershesti are philosophically opposed to the reign of ambition. It is their duty to reestablish that Golden Age when wisdom, personified as Osiris—and not selfishness, personified by Typhon—shall dictate the whole course of human procedure. The day must ultimately come when the Hori, by virtue of their royal purpose (laughs), accomplish the consummation of the Great Work. [The Great Work, folks, is the elevation of man to the illumined man, or 666, in the establishment of a one-world totalitarian socialist Utopia on earth.] The missing Word will be found and the golden substitute will be replaced as promised in the ancient rite. Osiris will rise in splendor from the dead and rule the world through those sages and philosophers with whom wisdom has been has become incarnate.

---

[60] Inspirations of the *Book of the Respirations* come from the *Book of the Dead.*

[61] The Hawk of the Sun is especially the Egyptian Bird of Soul, although the Dove or pigeon also was a type of the Soul that was derived from Hathor. In the Märchen the Duck takes the place of the Goose. But these are co-types in the Mythos. Gerald Massey, *Ancient Egypt: The Light of the World Vol.1*, 1907

It should be particularly noted that the Egyptians do not regard Osiris as wholly dead, but viewing him as continuing to live in the underworld where he superintends the ceremony of the psychostasia. The underworld is not the sphere of the dead alone; it is the world of the Mysteries. [Lucifer] is therefore god of the hidden fane, the temple which is beneath the earth, the house of the low ceiling, the crypts into which the Initiates go in search of truth. He is the Dweller who abides in the darkness of the innermost. His throne is not in the objective world but in that subjective sphere which is the inner life of man. [They believe that] thus is it arcanely intimated that while truth may perish from society, it cannot die from a heart which preserves the sacred tradition through that natural inspiration by which all men are gradually moved to truth.

In the meantime the widow Isis, the Mystery School, continues to produce out of herself the host of potential redeemers. Spiritual education continues from age to age [in secret], and though temporarily obscured in this generation or in that, its onward process [they believe] is inevitable. Out of the Hidden House, guarded by the silent god, must some day issue the glorious and illumined Horus [666 is the number of that man], the very incarnation of his own father [Osiris or Lucifer], the personification of the lord of Abydos, the avenger of all and the just god in whom there is no death.

[No longer reading]

[William Cooper does commercial for the Pilot Connection]

Good night, and God bless you all.

(Outro music: brief orchestral instrumental)[62]

---

[62]

Hour 6: The New World Order and Freemasonry (aired February 18th, 1993)

Good evening, and welcome to the Hour of The Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: Look At All Those Idiots)[63]

Ah, yes. A nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are steaks on the table and beasts of burden by choice and consent. Do you fit that description? I certainly hope not. If you do, then it's time to wake up and change it. And if you really want to know in a nutshell what's wrong with this country, go in your bathroom and look in the mirror.

[William Cooper does commercial for upcoming appearance (text below)]:

Everybody write this down. Write it down. Monday, March 15th— that's a Monday—March 15th, 8pm to 11, the Lafayette Hotel, 2223 El Cajon Boulevard, San Diego. That's Monday, March 15th, 8pm to 11, the Lafayette Hotel, 2223 El Cajon Boulevard in San Diego. I'm going to be giving a lecture that night, entitled "The Sacrificed King," and I will prove to you, beyond any shadow of any doubt, that John F. Kennedy was assassinated by the religion known as Mystery Babylon. Specifically, by the arm of Mystery Babylon that calls itself the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. I will prove it to you folks.

I want to see you. I want to meet you. I want to shake your hand. I want to see who my radio audience is. If you're a CAJI (Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence) member, I specifically, really, really look forward to meeting CAJI members. You are my heroes. You are the ones who do the dirty work, who are constantly digging out and sending in information. So if you're a CAJI member, I want to meet you, I want to see you, I want to shake your hand. If you're just a listener to this show, I still want to meet you. I want to shake your hand. I want to see you. And you're going to want to hear and see what I have to say and show you on Monday, March 15th at 8pm at the Lafayette Hotel, 2223 El Cajon Boulevard in San Diego, California. The price of admission is $40. If you're a CAJI member, it's $30. CAJI members get a 25% discount to this lecture. Sometimes CAJI members get a bigger discount, but this was all I was able to negotiate with the promoters of this event in San Diego. By the way, I will be there all weekend. I will be there the 13th, 14th and 15th. Actually, I will be there the 12th, 13th, 14th and 15th.

I'll have a room at the hotel. If you want to come earlier, I'd like to meet you. I'd like to sit down and talk to you. I plan on having some conferences with some good people, some patriots, in my room. And you'll get to meet my wife and my little daughter Pooh. They're both looking forward to meeting you also. So, please, put it on your calendar. Start saving your money. Make sure that you are there. It is important. Now at the same time in this hotel the "National New Age and Truth About UFOs" conference is going on, so if you are interested and into this nutty, loony tunes stuff, you might want to come down and go to some of that too. Now some of these speakers have something to say. Most of them, however, are as nutty as a fruitcake, and so is what they say. I know. I've been to many of these. I've talked to these people so many times it's pathetic. I've sat in and listened to them, and you talk about lies and deception and just plain old bullshit (laughs), you hear a lot of it at these conferences. But don't get me wrong folks, because sometimes it's a lot of fun. I mean, sometimes loony tunes is just fun. Escape from the real world a little while and listen to some of these people. Most of the lectures are free. If you want to go to the workshops, that'll cost you. But most of the lectures are free. I mean, you sit there all day and listen to these people, and some of them have something to say. Most of them . . . most of them belong in the loony bin, I'm telling you right now. My workshop is eight o'clock, Monday night.

[Reading from *The New World Order*]:[64]

Something's wrong [folks] in America! [Something's really wrong. Something is destroying everything that we've ever held dear in this country. What is it? Well, if you've been listening to this show, many of you already know what it is. If you've just been listening to this show for a little while, you may have some idea, but you're not quite really sure yet what's going on. Well, I'm going to tell you right now it's all about religion. Whether you're religious or not, doesn't make any difference. It's all about religion. Whether you believe in God or not, it doesn't make any difference. It's all about a big battle between good and evil. And most of it, I got to tell you, exists in the minds of men. Some of it's real. The question is, what's real, what's deception, what should we be paying any attention to? What is it that's driving us insane? Yes, something *is* wrong in America.]

---

[63] *Look at All Those Idiots* (composed by Jeff Martin, Sam Simon, Jai Winding), *The Simpsons Sing the Blues (album)*, 1990. Performed by J. Montgomery Burns and Smithers.

[64] A. Ralph Epperson, *The New World Order*, 1990

(Audio clip: Radio ad of La machera del demonio)[65]

Today's newspapers [folks] are full of stories about the rampant rise [of] divorce rates; the increasing abuse of children by some parents; increases in the incidence of rape; pornography being read by an increasing number of people; more crimes against property; demands for world government; urgings for national borders to fall; Christian churches being closed because they will not seek licensing by the state, etc. [etc., etc., and I could go on and on and on and on and on.]

But [why,] why are these things happening? Why are all of the legacies of the past, the family, national borders, the right to practice any chosen religion, the right to private property, amongst other things, under such an attack? Is it possible that there are actually people and organizations who really want to change the basic order of things? [Well, my regular listeners know the answer to that.]

Clues to the answers to these questions [folks] can be gleaned from some comments made by people and organizations that are talking about these wide-ranging changes in the nature of our lifestyle.

An Associated Press dispatch on July the 26th, 1968 reported [this]: "New York Governor Nelson A. Rockefeller says as President he would work toward international creation of 'a new world order' …." [And you thought George Bush coined that phrase? Surprise, surprise.]

On January the 30th, 1976, a new document called The Declaration of Interdependence was introduced to the American people. [And] it was signed by [124 traitors:] 32 Senators and 92 Representatives [altogether 124 traitors] in Washington D.C. and [it] read in part: "Two centuries ago our forefathers brought forth a new nation. Now we must join with others to bring forth a new world order." [And you thought George Bush coined that phrase? Surprise, surprise.]

Another individual who has commented is Henry Kissinger [probably the greatest traitor this nation has ever known], former Secretary of State. According to the *Seattle Post Intelligence* of April 18th, 1975, Mr. Kissinger said: "Our nation is uniquely endowed to play a creative and decisive role in the new order which is taking form around us."

George Bush gave the commencement address at Texas A&M University on May 12th, 1989, and he used similar words as well. His speech was on the subject of Soviet-American relations, and he was quoted as saying, in part: "Ultimately our objective is to welcome the Soviet Union back into the world order. Perhaps the world order of the future will truly be a family of nations."

Historian Walter Mills maintained that prior to World War I, Colonel Edward Mandell House, the major advisor to

---

[65] It was part of the original 1961 radio ad campaign by American International Pictures, when they distributed the 1960 Italian horror film *La machera del demonio* (a.k.a. *Black Sunday/Mask of Satan*) in the United States. AIP's low-budget films primary catered to teenagers. See: Mark Thomas McGee, *Fast and Furious: The Story of American International Pictures*, 1984.
The media puts us on intimate terms with the devil by immersing us in his spectacular, electronic "videodrome" kingdom. Was it by some sort of "tele-vision" that Satan tempted Christ? "The devil . . . showed him all the kingdoms of the world *in a moment of time* . . . All these will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me" (Luke 4:5; Matthew 4:8-9; emphasis supplied) . . . For, in this time-frame of ours we are initiated into their cult by means of our exposure to the electronic videodrome. ~Michael A. Hoffman II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* 1995

Woodrow Wilson, the President at the time, had a hidden motive for involving America in the war. The historian wrote [this]: "The Colonel's sole justification for preparing such a batch of blood for his countrymen was his hope of establishing a New World Order of peace and security." [You see how these people fool themselves? (laughs) They always say that the end is peace and security, a world Utopia. But to get it, they spill more blood than ever has been spilled in history. Each time they try to bring about their utopia, the blood runs in the streets. They're liars. They're hypocrites. They're manipulators, deceivers. They are the worshipers of Lucifer.]

Adolf Hitler, a Socialist, and the head of the German government prior to and during the nation's involvement in World War II, is quoted as saying [this]: "… National socialism will use its own revolution for the establishing of a new world order." [Adolf Hitler was a Socialist. "Nazi" means National Socialism.] [Hitler] confided to Hermann Rauschning, the President of the Danzig Senate, "National Socialism is more than a religion; it is the will to create superman." [And what is the number of the man? 666. You see, in the New World Order, only one man will be allowed to live—the new man, the illumined man, and the number of that man is 666. You will see that number increasingly all around you. You will also begin to see pyramids increasingly all around you, and the eye in the pyramid, and the eye alone. And you will see circles with the dot in the center. And you will see obelisks appearing all over the place. And these are not the only signs. There are many, many, many more. They are the signs of the religion Mystery Babylon.]

Hitler added this thought: "Well, yes! We are barbarians, and barbarians we wish to remain. It does us honor. It is we who will rejuvenate the world. The present world is near its end. Our only task is to sack it."

Another book on his background quoted his comments that his Nazi Party had a hidden purpose, one that was not perceived by the world at large. Mr. Hitler was quoted as saying [this]: "He who has seen in National Socialism only a political movement has seen nothing." [For it *is* a religion.]

The Humanist religion issued a manifesto in 1933 stating its beliefs about the world in general. It took the following position about the need for the wealthy governments to share their wealth with the less fortunate nations: "It is the moral obligation of the developed nations to provide -- through an international authority -- ... economic assistance ... to the developing portions of the globe." [Now that is a lie, folks. It means that it's okay for some of us to lay back and do nothing and reap the rewards of the labor of others. That's socialism! That's what it's all about. Communism, socialism . . . it's the same. And these people, the worshipers of Mystery Babylon, are the original Communists. They *are* international socialism. They invented it. It is their creation. It is their dream of a world Utopia—a one-world, totalitarian socialist government.]

The April, 1974 issue of *Foreign Affairs*, the quarterly periodical issued by the Council on Foreign Relations in New York, had an article in it by Richard N. Gardner, the former Deputy Assistant Secretary of State for International Organizations in the Lyndon Johnson and John Kennedy administrations. [And] he stated [this]: "We are likely to do better by building our 'house of world order' from bottom up rather than from the top down .... an end run around national sovereignty, eroding it piece by piece, is likely to get us to world order faster than the old-fashioned assault."[66]

Even the Communist Party is voicing similar thoughts. The *People's Daily World* for Thursday, March 9th, 1989, contained an article written by Angela Davis. [You remember her?] Those familiar with Ms. Davis will remember that she was the Vice Presidential candidate for the Communist Party a few years ago. She currently is a member of the National Committee of the Communist Party of the United States [and she] is quoted in the paper as saying: "One underlying effect of anti-communism in this respect is to encourage a certain hesitancy to embrace solutions which call for deep, structural, socio-economic transformation."

Another Communist, Alexei Kovylov, spoke at an evening meeting held at Windstar, Colorado in August 1985, and gave the participants in attendance a surprise presentation. He spoke about the 12th World Festival of Youth and Students held in Moscow a few months prior to his lecture. He said: "There were three programs. The first was political and dealt with the various issues of peace and disarmament. The second was dedicated to environmental [issues] and to the new international economic order."

---

[66] Pause 18:26

The alleged need for a change in the basic way things are done is consistent with the teachings of the 'Father of Communism,' Karl Marx.

[He's not really the father of Communism, but it's a name that's been tagged onto him. You see, he was just a hack writer hired by the Mystery Religion of Babylon to write the Communist Manifesto. It was not his idea, but he's reaped the benefits of it, if you can call them benefits.]

"[But] he co-authored the *Communist Manifesto* with Frederick Engels, another hack writer, in 1848. Mr. Marx wrote that the Communists: 'openly declare that their ends can be attained only by the forcible overthrow of all existing social conditions.'

"Nesta Webster, a writer on the subject of conspiratorial organizations in the past, wrote this in her book, entitled *Secret Societies*: 'The revolution desired by the leaders [of world revolution] is a moral and spiritual revolution, an anarchy of ideas by which all standards set up throughout nineteen centuries shall be reversed, all honored traditions trampled under foot, and above all [above all] the Christian ideal finally obliterated.'

"Some of the Catholic Popes in the past have commented on the major changes coming in the future. One such Pope was Pope Pius XI, who wrote the following in 1937: 'Communism has behind it occult forces for which a long time have been working for the overthrow of the Christian Social Order.'

"One of the Popes who preceded him, Pope Pius XI, oh excuse me, Pope Pius IX, wrote this in November, 1846 about the changes that he saw in the future: 'That infamous doctrine of so-called communism...is absolutely contrary to the natural law itself, and if once adopted, would utterly destroy the rights, property and possessions of all men, and even society itself.'"

[William Cooper]: Now, don't get all worked up about what the Pope says, because they have succeeded now, with this Pope, in putting one of their own upon the throne of the Vatican. It had long been their dream, and now it is true. And the bans have been lifted against Catholics joining secret societies. And many of the hierarchy of the Vatican belong to the secret societies: the Freemasons, Propaganda Due ['P2'], etc., etc., etc. You will find an obelisk (chuckles) -- the symbol of the phallus, the penis of Osiris -- in the Vatican courtyard. You don't believe me? Go look.

"Another individual who wrote about the future was Dr. José Argüelles of an organization known as the Planet Art Network. Dr. Argüelles wrote, 'Also implicit in all these events is a call for another way of life, another way of doing things...a redistribution of global wealth...in short, a New World Order.'

"[Now,] just what the future society was that these people are talking about was described, in a brief manner, by Marilyn Ferguson in her book, entitled *The Aquarian Conspiracy*. [And] she wrote [this]: 'The new world is the old ~ transformed.'

"Another clue about what is in store for the future world was offered by Dr. James H. Billington, who received his doctorate as a Rhodes..."

[William Cooper]: *Rhodes, Rhodes, Rhodes, Rhodes* Scholar. Where have you heard that before? You have a Rhodes Scholar sitting in the Oval Office right now!

"[He] received his doctorate as a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford University, and has taught at Harvard and Princeton Universities. He wrote this in his book, entitled *Fire in The Minds of Men*: 'This book seeks to trace the origins of a faith - perhaps *the* faith of our time. What is new is the belief that a perfect secular...order will emerge from the forcible overthrow of traditional authority.'"

[William Cooper]: You hear that? They believe a perfect, secular order will emerge. Nothing perfect will ever emerge from the minds of imperfect men, and no men will ever be ruled by other imperfect men in any kind of a perfect Utopian order, secular or otherwise. That is why we must be eternally vigilant...eternally vigilant.

"That these future changes would involve force and slavery was confirmed by B.F. Skinner, chairman of the Psychology Department at Harvard University, in his book, entitled *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*. Dr. Skinner has been called '...the most influential of living American psychologists' by *Time* magazine. So the world should listen to the professor when he speaks. The magazine told the reader what the message of Professor Skinner's book was: 'We can no longer afford freedom, and so it must be replaced with control over man, his conduct, and his culture.'

[William Cooper]: Not long ago in the *Los Angeles Times* there was an article called "Ten Forecasts for the Coming Decade," and one of these was chemical, or electronic, implants to control individual behavior on a twenty-four hour basis.

"Another student of these changes is Alvin Toffler, who wrote this in his book, entitled *The Third Wave* [William Cooper: and you should read everything he's written, by the way, because what he's writing is what is coming]: 'A new civilization is emerging in our lives...This new civilization brings with it new family styles, changed ways of working, loving and living; a new economy; new political conflicts; and beyond all this an altered consciousness as well. The dawn of this new civilization is the single most explosive fact of our lifetimes.'

"Another scientist involved in commenting upon the future changes was Dr. Carl Sagan [and he's] observed [this]: 'It's clear that sometime relatively soon in terms of the lifetime of the human species people will identify with the entire planet and the species...'

"[Now] the reason[, folks,] why these changes are necessary was explained by Manly P. Hall, perhaps the world's leading authority on esoteric words and language. [William Cooper: He was a 33rd degree Freemason.] He wrote in his book, entitled *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*: 'The time has not yet arrived when the average man is strong enough or wise enough to rule himself.'

"And he explained who he considered worthy enough to rule those on the world considered by the experts to be incapable of governing themselves. He wrote this: 'Never will peace reign upon the earth until we are ruled by the fit.'"

[William Cooper]: And who is the fit? (laughs) Why, them of course -- the illumined, the priests of the Mystery Religion of Babylon.

"Mr. Hall even indicated that these changes would occur soon. He wrote this comment in his book previously cited: 'One hundred years ago [meaning in 1884 [folks]] it was predicted that within a few centuries men would revert to the gods of Plato and Aristotle...We may all look forward with eager anticipation to that nobler day when the gods of philosophy once more shall rule the world...'

"Aldous Huxley in his book, called *Brave New World Revisited*, quotes a character called the Grand Inquisitor in one of Fyodor Mikhailovich Dostoevski's parables as saying [this]: 'In the end they [the people] will lay their freedom at our [the controllers'] feet and say to us, "Make us your slaves, but feed us."'

"The *Tucson Citizen* newspaper of November the 3rd, 1988 printed a photograph of a group of people involved in a 'march for literacy,' and it clearly demonstrated that at least some people in America are now asking their government to make them their slaves. The picture showed a demonstrator carrying a picket sign that read: 'Uncle Sam, we want you to support us.'

"Mr. Huxley gave us a date when we could expect these changes to occur. He wrote the following in his book, written in 1958: '...The twenty-first century...will be the era of World Controllers.'

"And then he told us why these controllers would not fail: 'The older dictators fell because they could never supply their subjects with enough bread, enough circuses, enough miracles and mysteries. Under a scientific dictatorship education will really work ~ with the result that most men and women will grow up to love their servitude and will never dream of revolution. There seems to be no good reason why a thoroughly scientific dictatorship should ever be overthrown.'

"Someone who might have given the world the date for the commencement of these predicted changes was Zbigniew Brzezinski, [a Marxist and] President Jimmy Carter's National Security Advisor during his four year administration. [And] he wrote the following in his book, entitled *Between Two Ages* [William Cooper: by the way, you should read every book that he's every written...you will be angered]: 'Either 1976 or 1989 -- the two hundredth anniversary of the Constitution -- could serve as a suitable target date for culminating a national dialogue on the relevance of existing arrangements, the workings of the representative process, and the desirability of imitating the various European regionalization reforms and of streamlining the administrative structure.' [William Cooper: And it did begin exactly when he said it would.]

"So, the people of the world can now determine what those changes are that those in the positions of implementing changes have in store for them. In summary, [folks,] these changes are:

"The old world is coming to an end. It will be replaced with a new way of doing things. The new world will be called the 'New World Order.' This new structuring will re-distribute property from the 'have' nations and will give it to the 'have not' nations. The New World Order will include changes in the family...the workplace...religion.

"The United States will play a major role in bringing it to the world. World wars have been fought to further its aims.

"Adolf Hitler, the Nazi Socialist, supported the goal of the planners. The majority of the people will not readily accept 'the new world order' but will be deceived into accepting it by two strategies:

"1. Those in favor of the changes will have become seated in the very thrones of power, generally without the public realizing that fact [William Cooper: and this has already occurred].

"2. The 'old world order' will be destroyed piece by piece by a series of planned 'nibbles' at the established format.

"The Communist Party is actively supporting the changes to the 'new world order.' The basic tenets of Christianity, which were the base for the 'old world order,' will have to be eliminated.

"If the slower, methodical techniques of change do not function, violence will be introduced and controlled by the planners [William Cooper: including, possibly, a World War III using atomic weapons]. The people of the world will give up their freedom to the 'controllers' because there will be a planned famine, or some other serious occurrence such as a depression or war.

"The change to the 'New World Order' is coming shortly[, folks, and it has already begun]. However, if that is not the [case], it will be introduced, one step at a time, so that the entire structure will be in place by the year 1999."

[William Cooper]: We've got to take a short break. Don't go away, folks. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(Audio clip: Trailer of The Mummy)[67]

"[Yes folks,] something is indeed wrong in America! And many sense that changes in this nation's lifestyle are occurring."

[William Cooper]: Most of us know full well that these changes are taking place.

---

[67] 1959 movie,

"The newspapers are saturated with articles reporting the activities of those advocating increased governmental spending for a variety of unconstitutional purposes; organizations supporting a globalism concept urge the world to adopt a one-world government; psychologists preaching the destruction of the family unit and recommending that the society rear the nation's children; governments closing private schools; and nations forming regional governments under which national borders are scheduled to disappear."

[William Cooper]: And, still, the sheeple think that all of this is happening by accident, and any concept that it is being brought about by a carefully orchestrated plan is the product of crazy conspiratorialists (mmm-hmm).

"Since these changes appear to be part of the new philosophy known as 'the new world order,' anyone desiring to know the future has to become familiar with this new phrase and what it portends for the world of tomorrow."

[William Cooper]: And you will quickly see that is the result of a well-thought out, well-conceived, and well-orchestrated plan. Indeed, it is called the "Great Work."

"As an indication that major changes are coming in tomorrow's world, one of the current trends mentioned is the call for a 'one-world government'. [And] one of those supporting this leap forward is Norman Cousins, President of the World Federalist Society. And he is on record as saying [this]: 'World government is coming. In fact, it is inevitable. No arguments for it or against it can change that fact.'"

[William Cooper]: And I say, that is a lie. Two hundred and forty million Americans standing up in concert with each other, holding a rifle in their hands, can stop it instantly in its tracks. And that's the truth of why we were given the 2nd article and amendment to the Constitution. It has nothing to do with hunting or preserving your private property. It has to do with preserving our freedom.

"The goal of a one-world government[, folks,] is not a new thought. One of the earliest formal organizations that supported the concept of that goal was the Illuminati, founded on May 1st, 1776, by Adam Weishaupt [William Cooper: a Jesuit priest, a professor at Ingolstadt University, a Jesuit university, a teacher of Canon Law]...Professor Weishaupt was quoted as saying [this]: 'It is necessary to establish a universal regime and empire over the whole world...'"

[William Cooper]: Now, let me tell you the truth about the Illuminati. Adam Weishaupt did not establish the Illuminati, nor did the Illuminati die with Adam Weishaupt. Make sure you understand that.

"A more modern organization that supports the coming changes is the Masonic Order called simply the Freemasons, or [for short] the Masons. [It has nothing to do with bricklayers, folks. The term originally comes from the French *frère-maçon*, which literally means, "the sons of light."] This worldwide fraternity has members in America, as will be discussed, and they, too, support a call for a one-world government. One who has written about this secret organization is Paul Fisher, and he says this about them in his book, entitled *Behind the Lodge Door*: 'Masonry will eventually rule the world.' (laughs) [William Cooper: Benevolent fraternal organization?]

"Albert Pike [William Cooper: and you're going to hear an awful lot about Albert Pike during this series] the Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry here in the United States from 1850 to 1891 [William Cooper: the man who founded the Ku Klux Klan and B'nai B'rith] wrote a book, entitled *Morals and Dogma*. [William Cooper: And when and if you can find that book, don't pass it up -- buy it and read it.] Mr. Pike has been praised by his fellow Masons as a member almost without parallel in the history of the Masonic Order. [William Cooper: He was a great friend of Giuseppe Mazzini, the ruler of the European branch of the Illuminati.] Carl Claudy, himself a Masonic writer of great esteem, wrote this about Pike: 'Albert Pike, one of the greatest geniuses Freemasonry has ever known. He was a mystic, a symbolist, a teacher of the hidden truths of Freemasonry.

"So the outsider can know that whenever Mr. Pike speaks he speaks with authority and knowledge. He is perhaps the greatest Masonic writer of all time [William Cooper: and I would add, next to Manly P. Hall].

"His book is given to each Scottish Rite Southern Jurisdiction Freemason, who is asked to read it. (There seems to be a difference of opinion as to whether or not this book is still required reading for each Scottish Rite Mason. [As we were] told that it was given to each Scottish Rite Mason in Tucson. Other Masons say that that is not true.)"

[William Cooper]: But you have to remember, they're sworn not to reveal the secrets of the lodge, and therefore you can never trust them to tell you the truth, no matter what they're telling you.

"[But in this book, *Morals and Dogma*, Pike] informs the new Mason about the moral teachings of the Masonic Lodge. He instructs the Masonic reader that the Order will eventually be asked to rule the entire globe. And he wrote [this]: 'The world will soon come to us for its Sovereigns...and Pontiffs...We shall constitute the equilibrium of the universe and be rulers over the masters of the world.'

"He wrote this supportive statement in a book, entitled *Legenda*: 'And thus the warfare against the powers of evil that crushed the Order of the Temple goes steadily on, and Freedom marches ever onward toward the conquest of the world.'

[William Cooper]: Reference to the Order of the Temple is reference to the Knights Templars, who were destroyed in concert by King Philip of France and Pope Clement V. And the "powers of evil," referred to in this paragraph, is the Christian Church -- the Christian religion, Christianity as a whole.

[William Cooper]: Let me read it to you again, just in case you weren't paying attention. "And thus the warfare against the powers of evil that crushed the Order of the Temple goes steadily on, and freedom marches ever onward toward the conquest of the world."

"The Order of the Temple Mr. Pike was writing about was the Knights Templar which was, according to him: 'devoted to the cause of opposition to the tiara [the Pope's triple crown] and the crowns of Kings.'

[William Cooper]: Well, then, is it any wonder that the King of France and the Pope crushed the Templars in France? For that is the only place that they were truly crushed.

"Mr. Pike said that the Catholic Church was a 'power of evil' because it had 'crushed' the Templars, even though he admitted that they were 'devoted' to opposition to the Church and its leader, the Pope.

"But the major point of that quote is that these forces of opposition, presumably meaning the Masons, are marching 'onward towards the conquest of the world.' Mr. Pike repeated his devotion to the conquest of the world with this comment at the end of his book, entitled *Morals and Dogma*: 'Such, my Brother, is the TRUE WORD of a Master Mason; such the true ROYAL SECRET, which makes possible, and shall at length make real, the HOLY EMPIRE of true Masonic Brotherhood.'

[William Cooper]: Now, all of you Master Masons out there who have been writing me letters, don't write to me anymore. You are my enemies, and if I can, I will destroy you. Don't write to me and profess your innocence, for your own have proclaimed your guilt. And if you are truly innocent, then you are just a foolish dupe, and you better get out while you can.

"...the major worldwide movement that champions a one world government[, folks,] under a religious leader, is a new phenomena occurring worldwide called, 'The New Age Movement.'"

[William Cooper]: a creation of Freemasonry. The newspaper put out by the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry is called *The New Age*.

"Texe Marrs, a researcher into this new religion, has written two books on the subject. Both of these books are excellent primers for those who wish to know more about the beliefs of this religion. The two books are entitled *Dark Secrets of the*

New Age and *Mystery Mark of the New Age*. He has written: 'The New Age movement has undeniably taken on the definite form of a religion, [William Cooper: Of course, because it is Mystery Babylon! He goes on to say] complete with an agreed-upon body of doctrine, printed scripture, a pattern of worship and ritual, a functioning group of ministers and lay leaders.'

"Another writer who has written two books on the New Age religion is Constance Cumbey. Her two books are called *The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow* and *A Planned Deception*. She has written this: 'The New Age movement is a religion complete with its own Bibles, prayers and mantras, Vatican City/Jerusalem equivalents, priests and gurus, born-again experiences (they call it 'rebirthing'), spiritual laws and commandments, psychics and prophets, and nearly every other indicia of a religion.'

"The new religion has a series of leaders. One is a woman named Alice Bailey, a prolific writer on the subject of the New Age. She was the founder of an organization called the Arcane School, one of the major Lucis Trust divisions. The Lucis Trust was a major publisher of books supporting the religion [William Cooper: and published a newsletter, or newspaper, called *Lucifer*]. In her book, entitled *The Externalization of the Hierarchy*, she told her readers who the organizations were that were going to bring the New Age religion to the world, and she identified them as being: 'the three main channels through which the preparation for the New Age is going on might be regarded as the Church, the Masonic Fraternity, and the educational field.'"

[William Cooper]: And, folks, that is exactly who is bringing it to realization.

"(The main thrust of this program is going to be to examine only one of the three organizations mentioned by Alice Bailey, that being the Masonic Fraternity. There are numerous works by other writers[, lecturers, researchers] exposing the involvement of the Church and the educational field in the New Age movement [and in the New World Order], so I'm not going to attempt to duplicate those efforts. However, only a few are aware of the involvement of the [Freemasons], and that is why I have chosen to concentrate on that organization[, Mystery Babylon].)

[William Cooper]: And the reason I'm concentrating on that organization is because it is their members who have infiltrated the Church and the educational field who control those other two organizations. So, really, there's only one organization that needs to be dealt with, and that is Freemasonry.

"Another major writer on the New Age movement is Benjamin Creme, and he admitted in his book, entitled *The Reappearance of the Christ and the Masters of Wisdom* that: 'The new religion will manifest, for instance, through organizations like Masonry. In Freemasonry is embedded the core of the secret of the occult Mysteries.'

"So Masonry conceals a great mystery inside its temples, one that is connected somehow to the New Age movement. The Masons admit in some of their writings that they too are anticipating a new age, a series of major changes. Henry Clausen, the past Sovereign Grand Commander (the equivalent of their President) of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, has been quoted as saying [this]: 'We look towards a transforming into a New Age using, however, the insight and wisdom of the ancient mystics.'

"The Masons claim that the things that they believe in are as old as the ancient civilizations. They also claim that these 'mystics,' the ancient philosophers, had the wisdom of all ages, and that somehow this knowledge has become lost through the centuries. Humanity today does not possess this knowledge, but it has become the task of the Masons and other 'truth' seekers [William Cooper: who turn out in every case of investigation to be liars, deceivers, and manipulators] to rediscover these principles for the benefit of all mankind. Those possessing this knowledge will correct the world's current problems. Some of the Masons also claim to have identified the cause of these problems.

"One of the most prolific writers on the subject of this 'lost' truth [as I have mentioned earlier] is Manly P. Hall, a 33rd degree Mason.

"(For those unfamiliar with the Masonic degrees, all Masons in America start through what is called the Blue Lodge, consisting of only three degrees...)"

[William Cooper]: A Master Mason is of the third degree, and really knows nothing even though he thinks that he has been illumined. And I get letters from them all the time: "I'm a Master Mason and I never heard of any of the stuff that you're talking about!" (laughs) Oh boy! I -- it amazes me, folks, it just absolutely amazes me that people are so stupid! Drives me wild.

"(...The initiate into the Blue Lodge goes through three separate and different initiation ceremonies, one for each degree. After completing these ceremonies, he may stay where he is or choose to affiliate himself with either the York Rite [William Cooper: which has thirteen degrees] or the Scottish Rite [which has thirty-two and then the meritorious 33rd]. The latter is divided into two separate jurisdictions, the Southern and the Northern. These are based primarily on state borders, and whether one joins one or the other depends on where the initiate lives. The two Scottish rites have an additional twenty-nine degrees, making for a total of thirty-two. There is one more degree, called the 33rd degree, which is honorary, and only a few are invited into that degree...)"

[William Cooper]: And to even be considered, they must perform some major work toward the completion of the great work, which is the plan to bring about the Utopia on earth -- the socialist dream.

"(...The York Rite has a total of nine degrees. However, since little has been revealed about this order, we will concentrate on only the Scottish Rite, and, in particular, the Southern Jurisdiction.)"

[William Cooper]: Well, I've since discovered that the York Rite has a total of thirteen degrees, folks, not just nine.

"Mr. Hall has written a book, entitled *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*, in which he talks a great deal about the Masonic fraternity. This is his comment about the coming changes: 'A new day is dawning for Freemasonry. From the insufficiency of theology and the hopelessness of materialism, men are turning to seek the god of philosophy.'

"Notice that Mr. Hall has said that current 'theology', obviously current 'religion', has proven insufficient. Also, he feels that 'materialism,' meaning the right to private property, is also a failure. But more importantly, he points out that this new 'God' of the Freemasons is somehow different from the God of the Jews and Christians. As will be illustrated later, some of the Masons believe that the God of the Bible is a God of evil.

"Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, perhaps the founder of the current New Age movement, has also determined that the Masons are somehow supportive of her religious views. She wrote this in her book, entitled *The Secret Doctrine*: '...at the end of the eighteenth and the beginning of the nineteenth centuries many Freemasons travelled to Tibet where they were initiated into the esoteric [defined as intended for or understood by only a chosen few, as an inner group of disciples or initiates] by an esoteric order of the Masters of wisdom.'

"It should be expected that she would support the Masonic fraternity. In 1875, she founded an organization called the Theosophical Society, basically dedicated to teaching the world about her new secret religion. One of the earliest members of that organization was Albert Pike, later to become the Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

"Albert Pike, who later became a 33rd degree Mason, the highest degree attainable, also saw that there were some significant changes coming, and that he was supportive of those changes. He wrote the following in his book, entitled *Morals and Dogma*: 'We can look on all the evils of the world and see that it is only the hour before sunrise, and that the light is coming.'

"[Now,] if Mr. Hall is right, the 'evils' that his fellow Mason Albert Pike saw are connected to current religion, and that which is coming is somehow different from these religious views. Mr. Hall, who as mentioned previously is another 33rd degree Mason, also wrote that a new day was coming, and that it was not too far into the future: 'A new light is breaking in the east [the significance of the location, 'the east', [I have already] pointed out [William Cooper: -- it is the point where the sun rises]] a more glorious day is at hand. The rule of the philosophic elect ~ the dream of the ages -- will yet be realized and is not too far distant.'

"So, Mr. Hall is also expecting that these changes are about to occur in the not too distant future.

"Someone who attempted to zero in on when these changes were expected to occur was Alice Bailey, previously mentioned. She wrote about when she thought the New Age would arrive: 'Eventually, there will appear the Church Universal, and its definite outlines will appear towards the close of the century.'

[William Cooper]: And you have already seen the emergence of the Universalist Church.

"Since she wrote early in the 20th century, we can see that she was predicting the eventual arrival of the New Age, sometime around the 1990s. This estimate of that date is not too far wrong, as will be demonstrated later [in this series of programs].

"Whatever is coming in the future, some New Agers have told us that they expect that it will last for a long time. One such writer is Ruth Montgomery, who wrote that she saw that the new religion would rule the earth for a thousand years. She wrote the following in her book, entitled *Herald For The New Age*: 'The New Age, the millennium [a millennium is a period of one thousand years], will see an end to that strife, at least for a thousand years.'

"[Now,] just what is the New Age religion that will last for at least one thousand years on the earth? [William Cooper: What is it?]

"One who attempted to answer that question was Constance Cumbey in her book, entitled *The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow*. She wrote that these were the basic tenets of the new religion [William Cooper: Listen closely]:

"1. 'The Plan' for the future includes the installation of a New World 'Messiah', the implementation of a new world government and new world religion under Maitreya (an individual who will be examined later in this [series of programs]).
"2. A universal credit card system will be implemented [as a cashless society].
"3. A world food authority will control all of the world's food supply.
"4. A universal tax.
"5. A universal draft [and]
"6. They intend on utterly rooting out people who believe the Bible and worship God and to completely stamp out Christianity [from the face of this earth].

"As was discussed prior to this summary, certain people have indicated that they see the Catholic Church as an enemy. Here, Mrs. Cumbey says that they see not only Catholicism as the enemy, they also see all of Christianity as an enemy.

"Whatever the New Agers believe in[, folks,] it appears to be growing in popularity. Bantam Books, one of this nation's leading publishing houses, has reported that the sales of their New Age titles has increased tenfold in the past decade. *Time* magazine reports that the number of New Age bookstores has doubled in the past five years to a total of about 2,500. According to an article in *Forbes* magazine: 'publishers estimate that total sales of New Age titles today are at least $100 million at retail.'

"So, whatever they believe in, many believe in it.

"But perhaps the most insightful comment about the nature of what the New Age religion believe in, and who they worshiped as their god, was written by Mrs. Cumbey in her book, entitled *The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow*. She wrote that they had: 'the intent of bringing about a New World Order -- an order that writes God out of the picture and deifies Lucifer.'

"So, if Mrs. Cumbey and the other writers on the subject are right, the New Age movement needs to be studied in some depth."

[William Cooper]: We know that the goal of Freemasonry, at least that which is stated, is to bring about the new man, the illumined man. And the number of the man is 666.

(plays audio of trailer from the 1957 movie, The Amazing Colossal Man)

[William Cooper advertises upcoming appearance once again]

Now, you know what we need to do folks? I want you to listen to this closing song. Good night, and God bless you all.

(Outro music: Werewolf)[68]

---

[68] by Five Man Electrical Band

Hour 7: Maitreya (aired February 19th, 1993)

I'm William Cooper and you're listening to the Hour of The Time.

(Intro music: School Days)[69]

[William Cooper advertises upcoming appearance in San Diego, asks for air time donations, and offers CAJI memberships]

Folks, something is wrong in America, no doubt about it. There's a new religion appearing.

[Reading from *The New World Order*]:

"[Many of you call it] the New Age religion [and it] appears to be the exact opposite of the Old Age religion, meaning the religion of the Jews and Christians."

[William Cooper]: It's not really that different. I've studied it; I've talked to people who practice it. They claim it's not a religion but it is. Christ has ceased to be to become a man, the son of God, the actual manifestation of God in the flesh on earth and has become the consciousness, the Christ consciousness. And anyone can be Christ if they have this Christ consciousness in the New Age religion.

"[Now,] these are the two religions [-- the Christian religion and the Jewish religion --] that set the United States on its course because these religions taught that mankind had some basic human rights. They held that the family was the basic unit in all of the world; they believed in the right to private property; they believed in the unalienable ([which is] defined as being incapable of being surrendered) right to life; they held that each person had the right to worship their god; and they held that all had the right to freedom of association. As shall be so [disclosed during this series], these positions...were deemed to be 'self-evident' by those who wrote the American Declaration of Independence and the Constitution, [and] became the cornerstones of the American civilization. (The term 'self-evident' [folks] means that these human rights were not worthy of debate because they stood on their own, simply because they were true. They could not be debated [William Cooper: because they were Creator endowed, endowed by God].)

"Yet, [folks,] today, these cornerstones of American life are no longer 'self-evident' [to many.] They are being publicly discussed: people and organizations are now debating whether an individual has the basic human rights to life, liberty and property. [William Cooper: There's a great danger in this.]

"Frederick Wilhelm Nietzsche, a German philosopher, and one of the teachers of many of the world's leading communist revolutionaries [William Cooper: in international socialists], put the argument quite succinctly, in this statement: 'I condemn Christianity. I raise against the Christian Church the most terrible of all accusations that any accuser uttered. [That] is to me the highest conceivable corruption.'"

[William Cooper]: Remember, the priests, the Initiates of the Mystery Schools believe that Christianity is a corruption of the Mysteries, the worship of Lucifer, represented by the sun, the light, Osiris.

"Texe Marrs, an author who has written in opposition to the New Age, wrote this about their hatred of the Christians: 'The New Age believers told, "You can be a god in the next instant if only those horrible Christians weren't around with their poisonous attitudes."'

"That thought was illustrated by another of the important New Agers, David Spangler, who wrote this in his book, entitled *Reflections on the Christ*: 'We can take all the scriptures and all the teachings and all the tablets and all the laws and all the marshmallows and have a jolly good bonfire and marshmallow roast, because that is all they are worth.'

---

[69] *School Days* (originally by Chuck Berry), *The Simpsons Sing the Blues (album)*, 1990. Performed by Bart Simpson, featuring Buster Poindexter (vocals) and Joe Walsh (slide guitar)

"So, the New Age, like the Masons, feel that Christianity is the enemy, a force to be countered, not by open debate, but by contempt and ridicule and, as shall be illustrated later, by even murder."

[William Cooper]: And, remember, the source of the New Age movement is the order of the Freemasons.

"Other parties wish to join the debate. In 1911, the Socialist Party of Great Britain published a pamphlet, entitled *Socialism and Religion*, in which they placed their position about religion into the arena: 'It is therefore a profound truth that Socialism is the natural enemy of religion. A Christian Socialist is in fact an anti-Socialist. Christianity...is the antithesis of Socialism.'

"So the Socialist, the New Ager, and the Mason have declared war on the Christians. And, as in every war, the enemy must be defeated, even by bloodshed, if necessary. This war has deep roots in history and I will cover those roots so that you will understand it perfectly where this came from. This war is no different. Bloodshed is anticipated by all parties in the battle.

"Lavedi Lafferty and Bud Hollowell, two New Agers, started the discussion about how their religion sanctions the use of violence against the Christian community. They wrote the following in their book, entitled *The Eternal Dance*: 'This is a time of opportunity for those who will take it [[apparently] meaning the New Agers [the Initiates of the Mystery Religions, Socialists].] For others [apparently the Christians] if the earth is unsuitable for them [if they will not accept the New Age religion] they will go on to other worlds.'"

[William Cooper]: Which simply means they will be exterminated. You better listen to me, folks, I am a messenger and my message is unmistakable and it had better not fall upon deaf ears. For those deaf ears will be rendered dead, in the coming New World Order.

"Another New Age spokesman, Maharishi Mahesh Yogi, the 'guru' sought out by the rock 'n roll group known as the Beatles [and others], has been quoted as saying: "There has not been and there will not be a place for the unfit...The fit will lead, and if the unfit are not coming along [if they will not accept the New Age religion] there is no place for them.

"'In the Age of Enlightenment, there is no place for ignorant people. Non-existence of the unfit has been the law of nature.'

"Another example of New Age thinking on this vital issue came from a pamphlet available in a book store selling New Age material. It was published by something called the Guardian Actions Publications of New Mexico and it was entitled *Cosmic Countdown*. [This pamphlet] alleged that it had received these thoughts from something called 'Higher Intelligence,' and it directed its attention to the hunger/disease problem in the third world. [And] the pamphlet simply stated: 'The world should be forewarned to be on a lookout for diseases which have been suppressed for years, suddenly rearing their ugly heads and decimating the populations already on the verge of starvation in the Third World Nations.

"'Although these peoples will eventually be replaced by the new root race about to make its appearance in a newly cleansed world; nevertheless, for the moment, this is a tragedy.'"

[William Cooper]: You see, they have made incredible admissions, but none of you are looking, none of you are reading, none of you are absorbing. In fact, most of you are so stupid that you think that the only thing you should read is what you personally believe in or agree with. How can you exist in this world ignorant of the opinions and the writings and the thoughts of everyone else, including your enemies?

"The words reveal an incredible scenario: [you see, these] people in the Third World nations are going to be entirely replaced by [what they call] a 'new root race.' That eventuality will not be a tragedy; the tragedy is that these people are dying now due to starvation and disease..."

[William Cooper: But when they die later, or they're all gone and they're replaced by the new root race, *that* won’t be a tragedy.

"The concept that a new race of people will inhabit the world in the New Age millennium has been expressed by other believers in the religion. Ruth Montgomery, previously mentioned, has written about that change: 'Those who survive the shift will be a different type of people from those in physical form today, freed from strife and hatred, longing to be of service to the whole of mankind...the souls who helped to bring on the chaos of the present century [apparently the Christians and the Jews] will have passed into spirit to rethink their attitudes.'

"To show that the New Agers are talking about the physical death of the 'enemy', one must only search the writings of other New Agers. Another believer to write on the subject of the destruction of those who will not accept the new religion was Ruth Montgomery. [And] she has been quoted as saying in a transcribed interview carried by a magazine called *Magical Blend*: 'Millions will survive and millions won’t. Those who won’t will go into the spirit state because there is truly no death.'

"Estimates of the number to perish have been made by some New Agers. One who has made such an estimate is John Randolph Price, who was quoted by Texe Marrs in his book about the New Age. [And] he said that: 'John Randolph Price was told by his spirit guide that up to two and one-half billion [2,500,000,000] might perish in the coming chaos.'"

[William Cooper]: And we already know that the goal of the plan called "Global 2000" is to deplete the population by two billion people by the year 2000.

"[Now] that estimate is about half of the current world population[: two and one-half billion].

"Another estimate of the number required to die because they will not accept the new religion was offered by the so-called 'Tibetan Master,' Djwhal Khul, who has said in one of his channeling experiences, that one-third of all humanity must die by the year 2000. That would be about two billion people [at least].

"Channeling is one of the strange activities occurring inside the New Age religion."

[William Cooper]: I have witnessed this and I could tell you most channelers are just fraudulent con artists who are taking the money of those who pay to hear this channeling from dead spirits or ancient teachers or other world spirits.

"Some of the believers claim that they have the ability to call forth the deceased spirit of someone who lived many years before. Quite often these spirits claim to be [the] 'ascended masters,' those who have gone on to discover the eternal truths of all creation. One such believer who claimed to be in touch with a 'master' was Alice Bailey, previously mentioned. Her spirit called himself Djwhal Khul, and she claimed he spoke through her, saying: 'Death is not a disaster to be feared; the work of the Destroyer is not cruel or undesirable...therefore, there is much destruction permitted by the Custodians of The Plan and much evil turned into good.'

"[Now] just what 'The Plan' constituted was told to the world by Benjamin Creme, another New Age leader. He placed an advertisement in about twenty newspapers all over the world on April the 25th, 1982, that defined the term. The ad read, in part: 'What is The Plan? It includes the installation of a new world government and new world religion under Maitreya.'

"But perhaps the most startling examples of the teachings of this new religion came from the pen of Barbara Marx Hubbard, one of their most articulate writers. [And] she wrote in her book, entitled *Happy Birthday Planet Earth*: 'The choice is: do you wish to become a natural Christ, a universal human, or do you wish to die? People will either change or die. That is the choice.'

"So the people of the world will be given a choice: they will choose to accept the new world religion, or they will choose to die! The battle lines are drawn! Choices will have to be made. [William Cooper: I have made my choice. What is yours?]

"Some of the leading Socialists of the past have shown that they too have chosen up sides. One such individual was Adolf Hitler, the head of the German Government during World War II, who held no conviction that the murder of over fifty million [50,000,000] people during that war was wrong. He considered himself to be an agent of this unseen god in reducing the population of the people that he held to be undesirable. He wrote: 'I have the right to exterminate millions of individuals of inferior races, which multiply like vermin.'

"And he did what he considered acceptable inside his religion. Those who did not believe in his new religion had no choice, and they perished. (The evidence that Adolf Hitler was a New Ager will be presented later in [this series].)

"Another of the leading spokesman for the Socialist position was George Bernard Shaw, a well-known writer [of] his day. He wrote a book, entitled *The Intelligent Woman's Guide to Socialism*, in which he stated: 'I also made it quite clear that socialism means equality of income or nothing, and under Socialism you would not be allowed to be poor. (Laughter) You would be forcibly fed, clothed, lodged, taught and employed whether you like it or not, whether you are useful or not. Even if it were discovered you had not the character and industry enough to be worth all this trouble, you might be executed in a kindly manner; but whilst you were permitted to live you would have to live well.'

Socialism is the greatest perversion, deception, and lie that has ever existed on the face of this earth and has brought nothing but misery, death, poverty, to people who have been subjected to its cruelties.

The Masonic writer, Albert Pike, placed the Masonic order into the discussion, when he wrote this in his book *Morals and Dogma*: 'It is not true to say that "one man, however little, must not be sacrificed to another, however great, to a majority, or to all men." That is not only a fallacy, but a most dangerous one. Often one man and many men must be sacrificed, [to] the ordinary sense of the term, to the interest of the many...the interest and even the life of one man must often be sacrificed to the interest and welfare of his country.'

"The religious view is that the 'sacrifice' of one life for the interest of the 'many' is murder, and those who believe in the God of the Bible are told not to commit this act. The commandment against this practice is contained in Exodus 20, verse 13 of the Old Testament, and in Matthew 5, verse 21 in the New, and is simply expressed in these simple words: 'Thou shalt not kill.' The principle is easy to understand: no person has the right to take the life of another. This understanding is nearly worldwide (there are, of course, cultures that have determined that human sacrifice, cannibalism and murder are acceptable forms of behavior, but these are rare in the history of man.) But, here we are being exposed to a whole new religious view, one growing daily in size and stature, that openly advocates the wholesale slaughter of entire races of people.

"Adam Weishaupt, the founder of the [Bavarian branch of the] Illuminati, has also endorsed this new conviction that murder was not improper by including it in the initiation ceremony into the Order. He has his initiator tell the initiate: 'Behold our secret...If in order to destroy all Christianity, all religion, we have pretended to have the sole true religion, remember that the end justifies the means, and that the wise ought to take all the means to do good, which the wicked take to do evil.'

"The initiate was told that he may use whatever means, murder included, to achieve the goals of the association that he was joining. And that the major goal of the Illuminati was the destruction of all religion, including Christianity. That meant that if Christians physically stood in the way, they would be removed by simply murdering them.

"Weishaupt even went so far as to say that anyone [anyone] not willing to take the life of another was unfit to join the Illuminati. He wrote the following in a letter to a fellow member in 1778: 'No man is fit for our Order who is not ready to go to every length...'

"Weishaupt wrote that again, this time using different words: 'This can be done in no other way but by secret associations, which will by degrees, and in silence, possess themselves of the government and of the States and make use of those means for this purpose, which the wicked use for attaining base ends.'

"[Now] Weishaupt [, folks,] was aware of the enormous power of government and he desired its power for his members. He committed his organization to its infiltration. Then, he committed it to unspeakable purposes: anything that would further the goal of the Illuminati.

"He even went on to grant permission to his members to distort the truth by lying if it would further their goals. He wrote [this]: 'There must not a single purpose ever come in sight...that may betray our aims against religion and the state. One must speak sometimes one way and sometimes another, but so as never to contradict ourselves, and so that, with respect to our true way of thinking, we may be impenetrable.'"

[William Cooper]: And you wonder why politicians continually lie? Continually break their promises? And no matter who you elect, Republican or Democrat, it doesn't make any difference?

"Perhaps a perfect example of an oath that these initiates take somewhere along the road to the pinnacle inside the secret society was given in a book written by George Orwell entitled *1984.* Mr. Orwell has an initiate into a secret society called The Brotherhood in his story asked these questions: 'Are you prepared to give your life? Are you prepared to commit murder? Are you prepared to commit acts of sabotage which may cause the death of hundreds of innocent people? Are you prepared to betray your country to foreign powers? Are you prepared to cheat, to forge, to blackmail, to corrupt the minds of children? To distribute habit-forming drugs? To encourage prostitution? To disseminate venereal diseases? To do anything which is likely to cause demoralization and weaken the power of the people? Are you prepared to commit suicide if and when we order you to do so?'

"This[, folks,] is an example of the philosophy that 'the ends justify the means.' The initiate should do as he was required, as long as the act benefited the Brotherhood. There is no morality under such an oath.

"So murder of the unfit, those unwilling to adopt the new religion, will be acceptable. And those who do the annihilating are to feel no remorse. In the view of the New Age religion, the murderers have served mankind well.

"But this callous disregard for the right to life of every human on the face of the earth has been predicted before. In the New Testament, John was moved to write in John, chapter 16, verse 2: 'Yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think he doeth God's service.'"

[William Cooper]: The New World Order, ladies and gentlemen, will sail in on a sea of blood. We have to take a short break, folks. Don't go away. I'll be right back after this short pause.

(Interlude music: God Bless the Child)[70]

[William Cooper advertises upcoming appearance in San Diego once again]

[William Cooper]: Well, let's continue here.

"The New Age religion[, folks,] is going to have a worldwide leader. A charismatic political and religious leader that they call, Lord Maitreya. [William Cooper: At least, so far that's who they call him, or that's *what* they call him.] This individual [as far as I know] has not made his public appearance yet, but the New Agers claim that he is on the earth, at the present time. They claim that he came to live with the Asian community in East London, England in July 1977, by 'descending' from his ancient retreat in the Himalaya Mountains along the border of India and Tibet. They further believe that 'his imminent reemergence into full public view is assured.'

---

[70] *God Bless the Child* (originally by Billie Holiday), *The Simpsons Sing the Blues (album),* 1990. Performed by Lisa Simpson, cameo by "Bleeding Gums" Murphy

"They also claim that this individual is the one that the Christians call Christ, the Jews call the Messiah, The Buddhists call the Fifth Buddha, The Hindus call the Krishna, and the Muslims call the Imam Mahdi. In other words, all of the major religions of the world are awaiting the arrival of this one individual. It is their claim that this one individual now [living] in London is the one expected by all of these religions."

[William Cooper]: However, when we search London with a fine toothed comb, we can find no trace of any living individual named Maitreya, or fitting this description, or recognized as this religious leader. Isn't that strange?

"And [they say] he is on the earth now, patiently waiting for the appointed time to reveal his existence to the peoples of the world. They say that he will apparently assume the leadership of all these religions, and when does he will create a one-world religion.

"The New Agers have written that in the esoteric tradition (previously defined as being intended for or understood by only a chosen few as an inner group of disciples or initiates) [William Cooper: In other words, the esoteric means 'hidden.' They claim that] the word 'Christ' is not the name of an individual, but the name of an office, or function, within the Spiritual Hierarchy of Masters. [They claim] the masters are a group of perfected men who have guided human evolution from behind the scenes for centuries. And they believe that this Lord Maitreya is that Christ.

"[Now,] Manly P. Hall has written of this individual, by identifying him as 'the way, the truth and the life, which coming to every life, redeems all who accept it.' Texe Marrs has quoted this individual as saying: 'My Army is ready for battle, My Masters of Wisdom and Myself at the head. That battle will be fought for the continuance of man on this earth. Rest assured that my Army shall triumph.'

"[Well,] it appears that the battle to be fought between the followers of Lord Maitreya and the rest of humanity is still in the future. But at least one of the participants has an army already prepared. [William Cooper: How about you?]

"One who claims to have seen the birth in a 'vision' of someone who seems to fulfill the requirements of this Maitreya was astrologer Jeane Dixon. Her major claim to being a 'prophet' is her prediction, reportedly made before the event, of the assassination of John Kennedy in 1963. However, her credentials were dealt a serious blow in 1968 when she also 'prophesied' that the Soviet Union would be the first to put a man on the moon. (Laughter) Another of her 'prophecies' was that the Republican party would be victorious in 1968 (and it was with the election of Richard Nixon, a Republican,) but she also predicted that 'within the following decade (1970-1979) the two-party system as we known it will vanish from the American scene.

"She further predicted that Richard M. Nixon had 'excellent vibrations for the good of America' and would 'serve [the] country well.'"

[William Cooper: (Laughter) [Sarcasm] So, you can see she is a very accurate person, from which to judge the course of the future. [End sarcasm] You want to know the truth folks, I am the most accurate prophet of future events in history...in history.

"Those that question her inability to correctly predict that America, not the Soviet Union, would become the first to place a man on the moon; and that the two-party system has not vanished from the scene; and that president Nixon apparently did not have 'good vibrations' for this nation and would later be removed from office by the event commonly referred to as 'Watergate,' can only presume that she must have been given 'inside' information about the assassination of President Kennedy. And that would account for her knowing, at least in that event, the true future.

"Secondly, one can only wonder why this 'non-prophet' should be listened to about anything after her appalling record on 'prophecies,' but there is reason to believe that she might have been asked to write an account of this 'vision' of the important birth by the New Age religion because they wanted the official imprimatur of someone commonly referred to as a 'prophet.'

In other words[, folks,] her 'prophecy' might have been written to legitimize his claim to be a man-god so that when this individual made his public appearance himself, the public would marvel at the fact that his birth had fulfilled a 'prophecy.' (Laughter)

"But in any event, Ruth Montgomery wrote a book about her, entitled *The Gift of Prophecy*, in which she wrote about the very revealing and intriguing vision that Jeane Dixon allegedly had: 'The vision which [Jeane] considers the most significant and soul-stirring of her life occurred on February the 5th, 1962. She saw the brightest sun she had ever seen. [William Cooper: Isn't it funny how that sun always pops into this stuff? Now, remember that reference to the sun, folks.]

"'Stepping out into the brightness were a pharaoh and Queen Nefetiti. [Remember here that these two individuals were Egyptians. [Now,] this will become significant later on. [William Cooper: In fact, its already significant if you've been listening to this show.] The couple...thrust forth a baby as if offering it to the entire world.'"

[William Cooper: Now another interpretation, because they sprang from the sun, could be Osiris and Isis and the child is Horus, and that is *exactly* is the esoteric real interpretation, although Jeanie Dixon never said this.

"Jeane looked at the baby and said, according to author: 'I knew here is the beginning of wisdom.'"

[William Cooper]: Remember what I told you? Osiris is the doctrine, Isis is the church, the child Horus is the body of illumined Initiates.

"So what Ruth Montgomery wrote can be summarized as follows: A sun deity gives the world a child from Egypt, who possess enormous 'wisdom'. And this event allegedly took place on February the 5th, 1962. The interpretation of these symbols [have already been discussed and will continue to be] discussed [during this series, and the significance will be plain to all.]

"[Jeane then says,] 'A child, born somewhere in the Middle East shortly after 7 a.m. (E.S.T.) on February [the 5th], 1962, will revolutionize the world. Before the close of the century, he will bring together all mankind in one all-embracing faith.

"'Mankind will begin to feel the great force of this man in the early 1980s, and during the subsequent ten years the world as we know it will be reshaped into one without wars and suffering. His power will grow greatly and until 1999, [[and then this] year is extremely significant as will also be [discussed]] at which time the peoples of this earth probably discover the full meaning of the vision.'

"So according to this 'vision', [this] child, born on February [the 5th], 1962, will grow up to bring a one-world religion onto the face of the earth and his efforts will be successful in 1999.

"The *New York Times* newspaper[, folks,] ran three consecutive articles on the conjunction of five planets, the sun the moon and an 'invisible body that astrologers call Khetu,' starting on February [the 4th], 1962. The first article stated that the various bodies moved into 'rough alignment in the constellation Capricorn at 7:05 a.m., New York time...'"

[William Cooper]: Now Capricorn, remember, is the goat. In history, the goat was the goat of Mendes, or the Ram.

"[And the newspaper article also says] that they would 'remain in that alignment until 7:17 a.m., New York time, Monday.'"

[William Cooper]: The goat of Mendes, the Ram, is also another word, or another name, for Lucifer, Satan.

"However, the article went on to say that most of the people in India became alarmed, because most astrologers were making 'predictions of disasters.' There were a few astrologers who were predicting good for the world as a result of this alignment, but 'few Indians appear[ed] to be paying them much heed.'

[William Cooper]: Now couple that with Jean Dixon's prediction that the child was born on February the 5th, 1962, midpoint in this alignment, and what do you get? (laughter) They are going to great pains to prepare the world for something.

"Astronomers did not consider the event to be rare, however, and the article went on to report that 'the same configuration [had] occurred several times in the past,' the last time being in April, 1821, and then it occurred twice. The article reported that Dr. Kenneth L. Franklin of the Museum of Natural History-Hayden Planetarium in New York, had commented that that year does not seem to be a year of any remembered disasters. He was then quoted as saying: 'And that year isn't famous for anything as far as I know.' (Laughter)

"Dr. Franklin also commented on the body the astrologers call Khetu. He 'speculated that it may be some sort of astrological addition used to make everything come out right.' He then added that he believed Khetu 'to be the invisible planet that is frequently taken into account in astrological reckonings, but that he had no idea how it was possible to keep track of something that no one could see [William Cooper: and, as far as he knew, didn't even exist].'

"The *Times* carried another article the next day, Monday, February [the 5th], 1962, [William Cooper: the date that the supposed child was born] and it repeated the concern of the Hindu astrologers. In fact, that headline read 'Hindu Astrologers Still Say It's Doomsday.' And the sub-headline read, 'Peaceful Beginning of Planetary Event Is Viewed Gravely.'

"[Now] the third article [in] the series ran on the Tuesday, February [the 6th], 1962, and carried the headline '"Doomsday" in India Uneventful.' (Laughter) The article reported that the Indian astrologers had 'predicted a variety of disasters, earthquakes, tidal waves, devastating fires, and warfare, to name but a few,' but that none of these events has occurred. Furthermore, the article reported that Hindu priests had claimed that the reason that nothing had happened was because their prayers to their god had been answered.

"But [folks,] none of these three articles mentioned the birth of anyone on these three days. Furthermore, none but a few astrologers had believed that something good was going to happen, and that only a few in India had even listened to them. Only Jeane Dixon, another 'astrologer,' had seen [a vision of] something beneficial, in this case a birth of a baby 'full of wisdom,' at about the midpoint of the three day affair.

"One can only wonder if, once again, she missed the mark and was involved in another error [William Cooper: or if she was intentionally made to set up the world to welcome someone named Lord Maitreya].

"In any event, these people claim that the Lord Maitreya will appear shortly to the entire world and start everyone off on a road to a one world religion. Helena Petrovna Blavatsky in her book, entitled *The Secret Doctrine* called him 'the dragon of wisdom.'"

[William Cooper]: So, it appears that the one call that Jeane Dixon made that appears to match other comments is her statement that the baby she saw in her vision was 'full of wisdom'. If the baby she claimed to have seen in her vision was Lord Maitreya, then she was right because others have claimed that Lord Maitreya is fill of wisdom.

"However, there is still reason to believe that she was given 'inside' information by some New Agers that wanted to have this 'Lord's [Maitreya] birth 'prophesied' so that when he did surface, the New Agers could claim that his birth had been 'a fulfilled prophecy.'

[William Cooper]: So the world awaits the visible appearance of Lord Maitreya.

Ladies and Gentlemen, dear listeners, so that you would realize that I'm not making any of this up, I took last night's program and tonight's program, verbatim, from the introduction all the way through Chapter 3, from a book entitled *The New World Order*, by my good friend A. Ralph Epperson. Again, the title of the book is *The New World Order*, by A. Ralph Epperson. And you can order that book in any good bookstore. If you can't find it in your area, contact us and we will make arrangements with Mr. Epperson to be able to furnish that book to you if you would like to purchase it. I also recommend you purchase my book, *Behold a Pale Horse*. It's a handbook for what is going to happen in the upcoming years. Especially in this country. And without it, you will be crippled.

[Instructions to order the book from the radio show; asks for money to pay for air time]

Folks, we are nearing the end of the road of civilization as we know it, unless we wake up. Unless we take control and make sure the future is what we want it to be, and one of the things we must do now, immediately, is to stop fighting amongst each other. Stop fighting the man who doesn't look like you, or the woman who doesn't look like you. The people who have a different skin color than you do. We must learn to live together and its nobody else's business what somebody else's religion is. It doesn't hurt us if they want to practice their religion as long as they are not hurting us in the process. So why go to war with them? We are all brothers and sisters in this world, no matter who we are. Let's learn to live together and love each other.

Good night, and God bless each and every one of you!

(Outro music: Sibling Rivalry)[71]

---

[71] Performed by Bart and Lisa Simpson of The Simpsons

Hour 8: Ecumenism (aired February 21st, 1993)

Good evening, folks, and once again, welcome to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

(Intro music: The Great Pretender)[72]

[William Cooper plugs an appearance and asks for donations to stay on the air]

Now folks, the *Dallas Morning News* on October 1st, 1989 published this story: "Anglican Leader Calls For Unity Under Pope." The byline is, "Associated Press - ROME: Anglican leader Archbishop Robert Runcie called Saturday for all Christians to accept the Roman Catholic Pope as a common leader, presiding in love. 'For the Universal Church, I renew the plea,' he said. 'Could not all Christians come to reconsider the kind of primacy the Bishop of Rome, the Pope, exercised within the early church?'" Again, folks, that was the *Dallas Morning News*, October 1st, 1989.

This story appeared in the *Bakersfield Californian*, August 27th, 1989: "Baptist and Catholic Theologians Find Common Ground. Associated Press - NEW YORK: Southern Baptists and Roman Catholics, the nation's two largest denominations, generally have been regarded as doctrinally far apart, but their scholars find they basically agree. The 163-page report is seen as the most full scale mutual examination of respective positions of the two traditions. Achieving it was an unprecedented experience for Southern Baptists, commonly averse to accumentical affairs. The talks, sponsored by the Catholic Bishop's Committee on Accumentical and Inter-religious Affairs and the Southern Baptists Department of Interfaith Witness, involved eighteen meetings between 1978 and 1988." Again, that appeared in the *Bakersfield Californian*, August 27th, 1989.

Now, I want you to listen to me very carefully during this broadcast, for the message tonight is extremely important, and understand that I am not attacking Catholics or anyone else. I am merely giving you the results of our research, and sometimes the results of this research is disturbing. It shows how we've been misled and deceived over hundreds, and sometimes thousands, of years. You see, folks, more wars have been fought and more blood has been shed in the name of religion than any other cause - perhaps *all* other causes. Countless millions have been slaughtered in the name of God, Allah, Buddha, Mohamed, Christ, for thousands of years. Christian killing Jew, Jew hating Muslim, the Muslim against the Hindu, Christian fighting Christian, Shiite versus Suni, Sikh against Hindu. Endless rivers of blood, supposedly shed to rid the world of evil men and make way for peace. And, of course, it never happens.

And that's what they say about this New World Order, that's it going to rid the world of evil men and make way for a thousand years of peace. Well, is it possible for people of varied faiths and cultures to live at peace in this world? When one considers the fragmentation and division, even among Christians, or the neverending conflict between Palestinian and Jew, prospects for peace seem very, very dim. Some, aware of the dark record of history, would abolish all religion. Some would *combine* all religion, as is the intent in the New World Order, and anyone who refused will simply be exterminated.

Today, something unmatched in history is taking place. Leading statesmen and religious leaders are proposing a New World Order, a plan that many sincerely believe can bring peace on earth. A unity is envisioned that will transcend instinctive barriers that have long separated cultures and religions.

Significant progress toward a New World Order is seen in the spirit of *ecumenism*, or togetherness, now being urged by prominent religious leaders, and being brought to reality, to fruition, by the World Council of Churches [WCC]. In the ecumenical plan, basic theological or ideological differences are set aside, while emphasis is instead placed upon those elements common to most religions. And I can tell you that the new world religion will be a religion that serves man, because man is to become god in the New World Order. And the religion will change with the needs of man. Could the long, desired universal peace be just around the corner? Could this succeed? Is it actually possible for man to forge a lasting peace on the anvil of compromise? Or could it be that we are naively forging not a New World Order, but rather the one-world order of apocalyptic prophecy? Or is it all an invention of the mind of man throughout the ages to manipulate large masses and populations of people?

---

[72] Performed by The Platters

I make no judgment, and I do not try to answer all of these questions. You must do that in your own mind, but I must ask those questions, for many of you have never even thought to ask them. While controversial, folks, it is not the purpose of this program, the Hour of the Time, to disparage or attack the honest convictions of any sincere persons, whatever their politic or faith, for am I true Constitutionist, and I believe that we each have the right to believe whatever we wish, no matter who likes it or dislikes it, and worship at the altar of whichever god we choose, no matter who likes it or who dislikes it. It happens to be one of the precepts of living in freedom. You must understand that. No one's right to believe what they want or practice the religion that they want can be hindered until the practice of that religion, or the activation of those beliefs, infringe upon the freedom of someone else. Now, I sincerely, in my heart and in my soul, believe this. Without this belief, man cannot live in freedom; it must be subjected to slavery, and any intelligent, free-thinking person can quickly make that connection. That is why, even if you do not like the ravings of the Nazi speaker standing on the street corner, he must be allowed to stand and rave. And if you wish to listen, that is your business. If you wish to close your ears and walk away, that also is your business. But when you shut him up, you shut yourself up, no matter who you are or what it is that you say. For what we do to one, we do to all. Therefore, understand that this is a program bringing you information and, we hope, education. It is not designed to attack anyone, but merely to shine some light in the dark corners of history, where light has not been found before.

You see, our purpose is bring out facts and principles, which have a bearing upon coming events. For those of you who may not realize it, this is *not* a religious show. This is *not* a religious show. This is a show that is designed to educate. Illuminate, if you will, and that's very ironic, because we are illuminating those who call themselves, "Illumined," who have been causing us misery for thousands of years. We're trying to reveal the hidden agenda behind the New World Order, and along with it the ecumenical movement that almost no one dares to discuss, which is a part of the bringing about of the New World Order.

But you see, folks, these issues must be freely discussed no matter who you are or what you believe, for those who know history know that history repeats. And those who ignore the lessons of history are doomed to repeat the history. As Winston Churchill once observed, folks, "The farther backward you can look, the farther forward you can see." And that is really the secret why my predictions have been so accurate, so accurate that, at this moment, I am the most successful and accurate prophet on the face of this earth. But I am not really a prophet, I am a messenger. And they're not prophecy that I give you, they're predictions based upon actual study, research, of history, and of the plan of those who call themselves the "Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages," the practicers of that religion called Mystery Babylon. And it is real, and it doesn't matter whether you believe in any of this or not. If the practitioners believe it, it will affect you, especially if they hold powerful positions in the world, and I can assure you that they do. So, this is not a religious program, folks, it just happens to be true that the New World Order is founded upon the religious history of the past. And it is *all* about religion, as you will soon see.

[Reading from *The Great Controversy*]:[73]

"When Jesus revealed to His disciples the fate of Jerusalem and the scenes of the second advent, He foretold also the experience of His people from the time when He should be taken from them, [until] His return in power and glory for their deliverance."

[William Cooper]: *This* is what the Bible says.

"In a few brief utterances of awful significance, Jesus foretold the portion which the rulers of this world would mete out to the church of God in Matthew chapter 24, verse 9, verse 21 and verse 22."

[William Cooper]: Now, the reason I am quoting this is because, if what is happening is being brought about by religious history, then we must understand the religious history, and the books, and the chapters, and the verses that this religious history is based upon. For whatever belief is driving the minds of the men that are bringing about the New World Order, and the minds of the men who are fighting the New World Order, it must be understood by all the rest of us who don't understand any of this, or we are surely lost.

---

[73] Ellen G. White, *The Great Controversy,* 1888

"The history of the early church testified to the fulfillment of Jesus' words...[As] the fires of persecution were kindled, Christians were stripped of their possessions and driven from their homes...Great numbers sealed with their testimony in blood. Noble and slave, rich or poor, [it didn't matter] learned and ignorant, were alike slain without mercy."

[William Cooper]: And unless what is coming is stopped, this will repeat itself.

"These persecutions, beginning under Nero[74] the emperor of Rome, A.D. 55 to 68, about the time of martyrdom of Paul, continued with greater or less fury for centuries. Christians were falsely accused of the most dreadful crimes, and declared to be the cause of all the calamities – famine, pestilence, and earthquake...They were condemned as rebels against the empire as enemies of religion and pests to society. Great numbers were thrown to wild beasts or burned alive in the amphitheaters. Some were crucified; others were covered with the skins of wild animals and thrust into the arena to be torn by dogs...Vast multitudes assembled to enjoy these sights and greeted their dying agonies with laughter and applause."

[William Cooper]: For, in that day, it was known as the great Roman Circus [Maximus] -- the football, the Super Bowl of that era.

"[Because they] were hunted like beasts of prey, [the early Christians were] forced to seek concealment in desolate and solitary places...Beneath the hills outside the city of Rome, long galleries were tunneled through earth and rock; the dark and intricate network of passages extended for miles beyond the city walls. In these underground retreats the followers of Christ buried their dead...When the Life-giver shall [return to] awaken those who fought the good fight, many a martyr for Christ's sake will come forth from those gloomy [catacombs].

[William Cooper]: In vain were Satan's, or Lucifer's efforts to destroy the church of Christ by violence. You see, God's workmen were slain, but his work went steadily forward. Said a Christian, "You may torment, afflict and vex us. The more we are mowed down, the more we spring up again. The blood of Christians is seed [Tertullian, in his Apology, paragraph 50]."

"Thousands were imprisoned and slained, but others sprang up to fill their place...[Now the] Great Adversary [who Christians believe is Satan, also known as Lucifer, but whom the Mystery Schools believe is Jehovah or Yahweh, through adversary] endeavored to gain by artifice what he had failed to secure by force. Persecution ceased, and in its [place] were substituted the dangerous allurements and temporal prosperity and worldly honor."

[William Cooper]: For if it they could not stamp out the Christians by violence, by killing them, by crucifying them, by throwing them to the lions and to the dogs and to the gladiators...if they could not get rid of them in that manner, and if the empire was threatened by them, then there had to be a way to save the Roman Empire, to save the emperor from that pestilence known as Christianity.

"Idolaters were led to receive a part of the Christian faith, while they rejected other essential truths. They professed to accept Jesus as the Son of God and to believe in His death and resurrection, but they had no conviction of sin and felt no need of repentance or of a change of heart. [And] with some concessions on their part, they proposed that Christians should make concessions, that all might unite on the platform of belief in Christ.

"Now, the church was in fearful peril. Prison, torture, fire and sword were blessings in comparison with this. Some of the Christians stood firm, declaring that they could make no compromise. Others were in favor of yielding or modifying some features of their faith and uniting with those who accepted a part of Christianity, urging that this might be the means of their full conversion...[And] that was a time of deep anguish [for] the faithful followers of Christ [William Cooper: according to the written history of the Christian religion]...

---

[74] Nero Claudius Caesar Augustus Germanicus

"...This compromise between Paganism and Christianity resulted in the development of 'the man of sin', foretold in prophecy as opposing and exalting himself above God...

"The apostle Paul, in his second letter to the Thessalonians, foretold the great apostasy which would result in the establishment of the papal power. He declared that the day of Christ should not come, 'except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.'"

[William Cooper]: 2 Thessalonians, chapter 2, verses 3 and 4, and that prophecy has come true. As man stands in the temple of the body today and declares himself to be God. And furthermore, the apostle warned his brethren, that the mystery of iniquity doth already worked. And what is the mystery of iniquity? It is the Mystery Religion of Babylon, the worship of the heavens, the Osirian cycle, of which the sun is the symbol of the intellect.

"Even at that early date he saw, creeping into the church, errors that would prepare the way for the development of...[that] gigantic system of false religion, a masterpiece of Satan's power – a monument of his efforts to seat himself upon the throne and rule the earth according to his will...

"...The nominal conversion of [the Roman emperor] Constantine, in the early part of the fourth century, caused great rejoicing; and the world, cloaked with a form of righteousness, walked into the church. Paganism, while appearing the be vanquished, became the conqueror...[Pagan doctrine], ceremonies, and superstitions were incorporated into the faith and worship of the professed followers of Christ."

[William Cooper]: And the ten commandments were changed to permit idols in the church, and other changes were made. You see, the day of rest was changed from the seventh day to the first day. Why? Because the first day was the date that the pagan religion worshiped the Sun: Osiris, the Light, Lucifer, the intellect. And so, the pure and simple teachings of Christ were corrupted beyond recognition.

[Reading from *The Present Truth*, written by Bishop Stephen D. Lewis]:[75]

"[As Christians] consented to lower their standards, a union was formed between Christianity and paganism. Though the worshipers of idols professed to be converted, [they] united with the church [still clinging] to their idolatry, only changing the objects of their worship to images of Jesus, and even of Mary and the saints."

[William Cooper]: But they still worshiped the same gods, and they always have. If you look at an aerial view of the Vatican, you will see that the outer courtyard is a round temple of the sun, exactly as the druids and the Celts built. And that in the center of this temple to the sun, to Osiris, stands the symbol of the Lost Word of Freemasonry: the phallus, the generative force, the penis of Osiris, the obelisk. You see, folks, the Roman Empire never fell. It just became the Catholic church. And the Roman emperor merely changed his name from "emperor" to "pope". Now, for those of you who may think that I'm crazy and that I have lost my mind, I'm going to read you verbatim from a book, entitled *Dungeon, Fire and Sword.*[76] It is the complete history of the Knights Templar and the Crusades, written by John J. Robinson, author of *Born in Blood.* And I'm going to start at the second -- third paragraph on page 414, in the chapter entitled, *Jesus Wept (1292-1305).* That's a date -- those are dates, folks.

"In London, Edward sent for the master of the Knights Templar in England, Brian De Jaye. He told the master of his plans to chastise the upstart William Wallace in Scotland and ask that the Templar Knights go with him to fight for England. The temple master saw no barrier to committing his knights to a totally secular war that had nothing to do with religion or the true cross. It had been years since the fighting men of the temple had had anyone to fight. The calls for men and money no longer came from the headquarters in the east. They had no need for them. No monarch they knew in Europe was going to go on a Crusade, even if the Pope should call it, which he wouldn't, because the Pope had something much more important on his mind. Boniface VIII had came up with a way to increase the papal treasury, a way that could only come up once in a hundred years. The following year of 1299 marked the turn of a century, and Boniface would turn the usual secular celebration into a jubilee of joy for all Christians. Now there would be new pathways to the total remission of sins, much easier than going off on Crusades. Full absolution was offered to any pilgrim who would come to Rome for fifteen days with his offering for the church, and thus he could fill his coffers.

---

[75] Check source

[76] John J. Robinson, *Dungeon, Fire and Sword: The Knights Templar in the Crusades,* 1991

"Even at his most optimistic, the Pope had not foreseen the flood of pilgrims that would bring new prosperity to Rome. The local merchants and innkeepers were delighted with the business generated by almost two million pilgrims. Two priests stood all day and night behind the altar at the church of St. Paul, using rakes to drag away the steady stream of gold and silver offerings placed there by pilgrims who pushed their way through the mob to leave their gifts.

"Boniface VIII was ecstatic He remembered the words said to him as the papal crown had been placed on his head: 'Take the tiara, and know that thou art the father of princes and kings, the ruler of the world, the vicar on earth of our savior, Jesus Christ.' Now, he indeed felt like the ruler of the world as he staged a regal pageant He put on the dress and the insignia of the ancient Roman emperors and went out into the streets with two swords, held high in front of him, indicating his supreme authority over both the secular and the spiritual worlds, with heralds crying out, 'Behold! I am Caesar!'"

[William Cooper]: And this is just one example, because all through history, the Popes have, on occasion, made public admittance of the fact that Rome just became the church. Displayed on the walls of the Vatican is the double-headed eagle, the insignia of only one man who has ever lived: the emperor of Rome. Now so I may not be accused of invention, folks, everything that I am giving you in this broadcast is coming right out of the writings of the historians of the Catholic church, of the Protestant church, of the Roman Empire, of the Knights Templar, and many others. You see, I'm not inventing any of this; it happens to be historical fact. And if you have eyes and can see, the emperor, now the Pope, to gain converts from heathenism, unsounded doctrine, superstitious rites, and the adoration of images and relics, were gradually introduced into Christendom worship.

[Reading from *The Great Controversy*]:

"The decree of a general council [the second council of Nice, A.D. 787][77] finally established this system of [Christian] idolatry. To complete the sacrilegious work, Rome presumed to [erase] the second commandment forbidding image worship [from the law of God], and to divide the tenth commandment...to preserve the number..."

"[According to Christian historians and the Protestant church] Satan...tampered with the fourth commandment also, and [purposed] to set aside the ancient Sabbath, the day which God had blessed and sanctified [in Genesis, chapter 2, verse 2 and 3], and in its stead to exalt the festival observed by the heathen as 'the venerable day of the sun.' This change was not at first attempted openly. In the first centuries the true Sabbath had been kept by all Christians. They were jealous for the honor of God, and...they zealously guarded the sacredness of its precepts. But with great subtlety Satan worked through his agents to bring about his object."

[William Cooper]: Now don't go away folks, we've got to take a short break. We'll be right back after this short pause.

---

[77] Nicea

(Interlude music: Ain't No Sunshine)[78]

"[Early in] the fourth century the emperor Constantine issued a decree making Sunday a public festival throughout the Roman Empire. The day of the sun was reverenced by his pagan subjects and was honored by Christians; it was the emperor's policy to unite the conflicting interests of heathenism and Christianity [to save the Roman Empire]. He was urged to do this by the bishops of the church, who...perceived that if the same day was observed by both Christians and [the] heathen, it would promote the nominal acceptance of Christianity by pagans and thus advance the power and glory of the church."

[Reading from Is the Virgin Mary Dead or Alive]:

"But while [most] Christians were gradually regard Sunday as possessing a degree of sacredness, [some] still held the true Sabbath...holy [and they continued to observe] it in obedience to the fourth commandment...

"[Now, they believe that] Satan had led the Jews, before the advent of Christ, to load down the Sabbath with the most rigorous exactions, making its observance a burden...[He casts] contempt upon it as a Jewish institution...[until finally the pagan Sunday came] to be honored as a divine institution...While the Bible [Sabbath] was pronounced as a relic of Judaism, and its observers were [at last] declared to be accursed."

[William Cooper]: And the outcome of this, is that the Jews had been persecuted throughout history. *They* had become the scapegoat that you learned about in an earlier broadcast.

"The spirit of concession to paganism opened the way for a still further disregard of Heaven's authority."

[Reading from The Great Controversy]:

"[The visible head of the church, the pope] came to be almost universally acknowledged as the [vicegerent] of God on earth, [and he was] endowed with authority over church and state...More than this, the pope [appropriated] the very titles of Deity. [He styled himself] 'Lord God the Pope,' [assumed infallibility, and demanded that all men pay him homage]...

"...Faith was transferred from Christ, the true foundation [of the Christian church], to the pope of Rome. Instead of trusting in [Christ] for forgiveness of sins and for eternal salvation, people looked to the pope, and to the priests and prelates to whom he delegated authority. They were taught that the pope was their earthly mediator and that none could approach God except through him; and, further, that he stood in the place of God to them and was therefore to be implicitly obeyed. A deviation from his requirements was [sufficient] cause for the severest punishment to be visited upon the bodies and souls of the offenders. [Through this error] the people were turned from God to fallible, erring...men."

[William Cooper]: Blasphemous titles claimed for the Pope had embellished and enlarged over the centuries, but a few of these boastful claims appear in an ecclesiastical Roman Catholic dictionary. I'm taking this right out of a Roman Catholic dictionary by Lucius Ferraris, entitled *Prompta Bibliothecca Canonica*,[79] volume 6, pages 438 and 442, article, Pope, the Catholic Encyclopedia, 1813 edition, volume 6, page 48, speaks of this book as "a veritable encyclopedia of religious knowledge and a precious mine of information." Those are the words of the Vatican. "The Pope is of so great dignity and so exalted that he is not a mere man, but as it were, God and the vicar of God." Remember, the Roman emperors were deified. "Hence, the pope is crowned with a triple crown as King of heaven and of earth and of the lower regions." That is an exact word-for-word description of Osiris. "So that if it were possible that the angels might err in the faith or think contrary to the faith, they could be judged and excommunicated by the pope."

---

[78] Ain't No Sunshine, written by Bill Withers

[79] Lucius Ferraris, *Prompta Bibliotheca canonica, juridica, moralis, theologica, necnon ascetica, polemica, rubricistica, historica*, 1746

[William Cooper]: "The pope is, as it were, God on earth, sole sovereign of the faithful of Christ, chief King of Kings, having plenitude of power to whom has been entrusted by the omnipotent God direction, not only of the earthly, but also of the heavenly kingdom." If that's not blasphemy, according to the definition, then I don't know what is, folks.

[William Cooper]: "The Pope can modify divine law, as since his power is not of man, but of God." The Pope can modify divine law? Well, you see that he did. He changed the day of rest dictated by God from the seventh day to the first day, and he changed the ten commandments to allow the worship of idols. But the doctrine of papal supremacy is directly opposed to the teachings of any scripture that I am able to find. "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God and Him only shalt thou serve." That's in Luke, chapter 4, verse 8. God has never given a hint in His word that He appointed any man but Christ to be the head of the church. The bible exalts God, and places finite man in their true position. The Pope has no power over Christ's church except by usurpation, and that's true only if you are a Christian. If you are Jew, if you are a Muslim, if you are a Buddhist, *none* of that is true, is it?

"[By the] sixth century [folks] the papacy [was] firmly established. Its seat of power was fixed in the imperial city, and the bishop of Rome was declared to be head over the entire church...[William Cooper: Pagan Rome had given place to the papal Rome]...The accession of the Roman church to power marked the beginning of the Dark Ages. As her power increased, the darkness of superstition and error deepened...

"Those were days of peril for the church of Christ. Faithful standard-bearers were few...at times it seemed that error and superstition would wholly prevail, and true religion would be banished from the earth. The gospel was lost sight of, but the forms of religion were multiplied...

"[People] were taught not only to look to the pope as their mediator, but to trust to works of their own for sin. Long pilgrimages, acts of penance, the worship of relics, the erection of churches, shrines, and altars, the payment of large sums to the church--these and many similar acts were enjoined to appease the wrath of God or to secure His favor; as if God were like men, to be angered at trifles, or pacified by gifts or acts of penance!"

[William Cooper]: And even then, the church still worshiped the old gods. For in dismantling churches for renovation throughout Europe, throughout Europe, without exception, and the older the church, the more likely it was to be true. Enshrined within the altar, out of sight of the priests and the worshipers, were found stone penises, symbols of the Lost Word of Freemasonry, the phallus of Osiris, the generative force of the pagan religion of the worship of the sun, the light, Lucifer, the intellect. This is historic fact. This is not invention, but fact.

"About the close of the 8th century, papists put forth the claim that in the first ages of the church the bishops of Rome had possessed the same spiritual power which they now assumed. To establish this claim...Ancient writings were forged by monks [William Cooper: and it has been proven they were forged]. Decrees of councils before unheard of were discovered, establishing the universal supremacy of the pope from the earliest times. And a church that had rejected the truth greedily accepted these deceptions...

"...Another step in papal assumption was taken, when, in the eleventh century, Pope Gregory VII proclaimed the perfection of the Roman church. Among the propositions which he put forth was one declaring that the church had never erred, nor would it ever err, according to the Scriptures."

[William Cooper]: But I wonder what they told Galileo when they imprisoned him for being right that the Earth revolved around the sun, and that the Earth was not the center of the universe, and that the universe did not revolve around the Earth. I wonder what they told Galileo. How did they justify being right, when they were obviously wrong? And not only with Galileo, but Giordano Bruno and many others. Many, many others as a matter of fact, many of whom were burned at the stake for daring to disagree with was then considered to be politically correct. For many of them had discovered scientific truths, and when they espouse these truths, were declared to be heretics, and were burned at the stake because the pope declared these truths to be falsehoods. And that, folks, was the birth of the doctrine known as "political correctness." And you see it reappearing now, where truths are again declared to be false, because they are not politically correct. What are you going to accept in this world?

[William Cooper]: Now, once again, I want to tell you: we're not attacking anyone. I care not what you believe. I care not what altar you worship at, for I am a true Constitutionist. It makes no difference to any of you what my religion is, although I will freely tell you that I attempt in my daily life to follow the true words of Christ, not the doctrine or the preachings of any church or any evangelist or any book, but those words attributed to Christ and only to Christ. And, as the rock upon which those words stand, the ten commandments as given to Moses by God. That is the sum total of my religion, of my beliefs, of what I practice in my daily life. I'm not asking you to do that at all, but I *am* asking everyone to quit accepting what they are told. To begin an honest, individual, personal search for the truth.

[William Cooper]: For we can no longer live in deception, we can no longer live the lies of the past. Great change lies ahead of us, folks. Change will come, whether we want it or not, for that is the way of the world and the way of the universe. And if we are still living in lies and deceptions and manipulations, then that change will be for the bad, just as it has as always been throughout the history of the world. And blood with flow and people will suffer all in the name, once again, of religion. And I, for one, am sick of it. Sick of it! We must discover the truth and we must lead our lives by the truth, and we must take the truth into the future, and we must determine the future from the truth, and nothing else. Nothing else. For if we do not, those who have decided that they are the only truly mature minds and, thus, the only ones capable of rule because the rest of us do not use our intelligence and, thus, are beasts of burden and steaks on the table by choice and consent -- no better than animals who do not have intelligence...they have determined that they are going to shackle us, once again, in slavery because we cannot control ourselves, or rule ourselves, or live by the truth. This is what they have determined, right or wrong, whether you believe them or whether you believe that they know what they claim that they know, or not. It is what they have determined and, I assure you, they are in control right now. Right now, right this moment. And in this country, their headquarters is in a temple without windows exactly thirteen blocks from the White House: the headquarters of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

"[Now, when the pope declared] that the church never erred, nor would it ever err according to the scriptures...the [Scriptural] proofs did not accompany the assertion. [Next, the] proud pontiff also claimed the power to depose emperors, and declared that no sentence which he pronounced could be reversed by anyone, but that it was his prerogative to reverse the decisions of all others...

"...The advancing centuries witnessed a constant increase of error in the doctrines put forth from Rome. Even before the establishment of the papacy the teachings of heathen philosophers had received attention and exerted an influence in the church...Prominent among these was the belief in man's natural immortality and his consciousness in death. This doctrine laid the foundation upon which Rome established the invocation of saints and the adoration of the Virgin Mary. From this sprang also the heresy of eternal torment for the finally impenitent, which was early incorporated into the papal faith."

[William Cooper]: And thus, once again, the worship of Osiris, and Mary, and the child, Horus, disguised under different names, emerged as a religion from the veil out into the open. The only thing that has changed is the names.

"Then the way was prepared for the introduction of still another invention of paganism, which Rome named purgatory, and employed to terrify the credulous and superstitious multitudes. By this heresy is affirmed the existence of a place of torment, in which the souls of such as have not merited eternal damnation are to suffer punishment for their sins, and from which, when freed from impurity, they are admitted to heaven...

"...The Scriptural ordinance of the Lord's Supper had been supplanted by the idolatrous sacrifice of the mass. Papal priests pretended, by their senseless mummery, to convert the simple bread and wine into the actual 'body and blood of Christ.' [William Cooper: And those are the exact words, 'body and blood of Christ,' written by Cardinal Wiseman], *The Real Presence of the Body and Blood of Our Lord Jesus Christ in the Blessed Eucharist, Proved From Scripture*, lecture 8, sec. 3, par. 26."

[William Cooper]: But no scripture is quoted.

"With blasphemous presumption, they openly claimed the power of creating God, the Creator of all things. [All] Christians were required, on pain of death, to avow their faith in this horrible, Heaven-insulting heresy. Multitudes who refused were given to the flames [were burned at the stake]..."

[William Cooper]: Is it any wonder that the invisible college, the, worshipers of Mystery Babylon, those who call themselves the "Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages," hate Christianity?

"...Still another fabrication was needed to enable Rome to profit by the fears and the vices of her adherents. This was supplied by the doctrine of indulgences. Full remission of sins, past, present, and future, and release from all the pains and penalties incurred, were promised to all who would enlist in the pontiff's wars to extend his temporal dominion, to punish his enemies, or to exterminate those who dared deny his spiritual supremacy. The people were also taught that by the payment of money to the church they might free themselves from sin, and [also] release the souls of their deceased friends who were confined in the tormenting flames. By such means [did] Rome fill her coffers and sustain the magnificence, luxury, and vice of the pretended representatives of Him who had not where to lay His head."

[William Cooper]: And the old Roman Empire flourished under the guise of the Vatican, the papacy, the Catholic church.

"...In the thirteenth century was established that most terrible of all the engines of the papacy--the Inquisition. The prince of darkness wrought with the leaders of the papal hierarchy. In their secret councils Satan and his angels controlled the minds of evil men [who invented tortures] too horrible to appear to human eyes. 'Babylon the great' was 'drunken with the blood of the saints.' The mangled forms of millions of martyrs cried to God for vengeance upon that apostate power."

[William Cooper]: This is word to word [sic] from history, folks.

"Popery had become the world's despot. Kings and emperors bowed to the decrees of the Roman pontiff. The destinies of men, both for time and for eternity, seemed under his control. For hundreds of years the doctrines of Rome had been extensively and implicitly received, its rites reverently performed, [and] its festivals generally observed. Its clergy were honored and liberally sustained...But 'the noon of the papacy was the midnight of the world.' [That was written by] J. A. Wylie, The History of Protestantism[, b. 1, ch. 4.]"

[William Cooper]: Now, Protestantism is not lily-white, either. I use that term, "lily-white," because throughout history it's been used to describe good, when in fact, in many instances, there's nothing good about it whatsoever. Protestantism, folks, began in the Reformation, when Martin Luther[80] rebelled against the Pope. But did you know that Martin Luther used, as his personal seal, the rose and the cross? Revealing that he, himself, he himself was an initiate of the Mystery School, the ancient religion of Babylon. You see, I'm not attacking anyone, and I'm not putting anyone on a pedestal I'm not tearing down the Vatican in order to build up the Protestant church, for they are equally guilty. Protestantism has fractured the teachings of Christ into thousands of sects and cults and little groups, all of them professing to know the truth. None of them really do.

"The Holy Scriptures were almost unknown, not only to the people, but to the priests...God's law, the standard of righteousness [in those days], having been removed, [papist leaders] exercised power without limit, and practiced vice without restraint. Fraud, avarice, and profligacy prevailed. Men shrank from no crime by which they could gain wealth or position. The palaces of popes and prelates were scenes of the vilest debauchery. Some of the reigning pontiffs were guilty of crimes so revolting that secular rulers endeavored to depose these dignitaries of the church as monsters too vile to be tolerated. For centuries Europe had made no progress in learning, arts, or civilization. A moral and intellectual paralysis had fallen upon [the world]."

[William Cooper]: "The noon of the papacy," according to history, "was the midnight of the world."

---

[80] Martin Luther, (1483–1546) was a German monk, a theologian, and the father of Protestantism.

"...Foremost among those who were called to lead the church from the darkness of popery into the light of a purer faith, stood Martin Luther."

[No longer reading]

[William Cooper]: And this is what people believe, but Martin Luther himself was an initiate of the Mystery Schools, a follower of the faith of Mystery Babylon, as was the Pope and the hierarchy of the Catholic church. You see, but they were vying for the rulership of the world, and up until not too long ago, have always had throughout history. For the Vatican practices the corrupted worship of Mystery Babylon, the combination of Christianity and the worship of Mystery Babylon, whereas the Mystery Schools retained the pure form of Mystery Babylon. And this is the only difference between the two, folks, and they have been vying throughout history for the rulership of the world: Mystery Babylon attempting to destroy the Pope and Christianity, and the Pope attempting to persecute and burn away the followers, the initiates of Mystery Babylon. And it has always been the goal of worshipers of Mystery Babylon to seat one of their own upon the throne of the Vatican, and they have succeeded. They have succeeded, folks, and now you are seeing the beginning of the combination of all religions into one-world religion. And while the world and the New Age movement may be waiting for the emergence of Maitreya, I tell you now here -- and remember that I have been the most accurate in making predictions about future world events then anyone in the history of the world -- based upon study and knowledge, not psychic ability, not any gift from God, although I am a messenger, I can assure you of that. I tell you that, in the New World Order, the one-world charismatic and religious leader will be seated upon the throne of Rome. Mark my words. And for those of you who do not understand yet, the Protestant religion was created by the Mystery Schools to bring down, bring down the authority of the Pope, just as this nation, the United States of America was created by the Mystery Schools to topple the monarchs, the kings and queens from their thrones.

[William Cooper]: You see, whatever you want to believe even, folks, is OK with me. Let's just believe from a position of knowing the truth.

Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

Outro music: That Old Black Magic[81]

---

[81] Composed by Harold Allen, lyrics by Johnny Mercer, 1942. Cover by unknown artist.

Hour 9: Initiation (aired February 24st, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

(Intro music: Stardust)[82]

From Tinkerbell to Artie Shaw to George Bush's *Thousand Points of Light,*[83] America has been mesmerized by stardust since its very inception. And now, America is beginning to learn what all these references to the star, the morning star, *Wish Upon a Star*, *Stardust*, really is all about.

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:[84]

There was something [very] strange about the classical mysteries; something which attracted people to them and having attracted them made their initiates with very few exceptions permanent devotees. In Egypt, Greece, India, Rome and a dozen other places and countries, sacred initiations took place in specially prepared sanctuaries [usually in a cave or underground]. Priests of the mysteries enjoyed the profound respect of the masses, as well as that of kings and counselors.

[And in those days there was nothing really secret about it except the initiations rites and the knowledge which they retained for themselves, giving only the exoteric to the people.]

What were the mysteries? Until relatively recently, and relying upon comparatively scattered fragments such as Apuleius' *Golden Ass,*[85] historians and religious writers had formed an opinion of them which has been shown to be extremely naïve [if not, outright false]. They knew that at the ceremonies symbolical teaching took place, and hence inferred that the mysteries were a relic of the times when academic knowledge was guarded by the very few and scientific truths (such as Pythagorean theorems) were given only [and only] to the elect. They knew [also] that orgiastic drumming and dancing formed a part of many of the rituals, and therefore told their readers this was a degenerate form of religion, or a mere excuse for licentiousness. They found that stories of ancient gods and heroes were recited: and were sure the mysteries constituted little more than an underground survival of prehistoric religion, magic or tribal initiation.

[Or maybe that's exactly what they wanted us to believe, knowing full well that it was false. And, of course, if those who did the writing were members of the Mysteries, they would never have allowed the secrets to be revealed to the profane.]

[But] times have changed [folks]. The study of 'brainwashing' [and mind control] and conditioning the mind within the past decade [or so] has helped to lay bare the essence of the mysteries, and has answered the riddles which surrounded them. [You see,] in this process, those who have tried to keep the celebration of the mysteries alive, who have tried to revive them, have been shown up as relying upon the symbolic interpretation alone. And this revelation has been in its own way has been on of the most startling developments of contemporary religion. [You see, for] almost anyone, for instance, can get away with telling anyone else that he was an Egyptian priest in a former incarnation, because there is so very little verifiable material available to prove the reverse. [It becomes obvious, though, when you attend a party populated by these nuts. When six people introduce themselves as having been Abraham Lincoln in a past life.] But let anyone attempt to celebrate any of the ancient mystery-cults' rituals, and unless he has a sound idea on how the human mind works, he is unlikely to escape the criticism of those physiologists who now see in the mysteries an almost open book.

---

[82] Composed by Hoagy Carmichael in 1927. Cover by Artie Shaw, 1941. *Stardust* is one of the songs performed by the fictional "Ramon Raquello and His Orchestra" during Orson Welles' October 1938 War of the Worlds broadcast. An announcer interrupts the song to announce that further incandescent gas explosions are occurring on the surface of Mars. They return to the song and interrupt it again for an interview at the Princeton observatory.

[83] *"Thousand Points of Light"* is a recurring phrase in speeches given by George H. W. Bush. The term was coined by speechwriter Peggy Noonan. In his 1989 State of the Union address, Bush said: "I have spoken of a thousand points of light, of all the community organizations that are spread like stars throughout the Nation, doing good. We will work hand in hand, encouraging, sometimes leading, sometimes being led, rewarding. We will work on this in the White House, in the Cabinet agencies. I will go to the people and the programs that are the brighter points of light, and I will ask every member of my government to become involved. The old ideas are new again because they are not old, they are timeless: duty, sacrifice, commitment, and a patriotism that finds its expression in taking part and pitching in."

[84] Arkon Daraul, *A History of Secret Societies,* 1961

[85] *The Metamorphoses of Apuleius* also known as *The Golden Ass* is the only Latin novel to survive in its entirety.

[So] let us return to a sketch of the conventional knowledge about the mysteries. In those of Eleusis, celebrated in Greece, the candidate had to undergo fasting or abstinence from certain foods. There were processions, with sacred statues carried from Athens to Eleusis. Those who were to be initiated waited for long periods of time outside the hall in the temple [where] the rites were to be held [building up a tremendous tension of suspense]. Eventually a torchbearer led them within the precincts [usually underground]. The ceremonies [usually] included a ritualistic meal; one or two dramas; the exhibition of sacred objects; the 'giving of the word'; (laughs) an address by the hierophant; and, oddly enough, closure with the *Sanskrit* words: “Cansha om pacsha.”

The elements included the clashing of cymbals, tension and a certain degree of debilitation, eating something, plus conditions which were all-inspiring, strange. The candidate was in the hands of, and guided by, the priesthood. Other factors: [were] drinking a soporific draught; symbolic sentence of death; whirling around a circle.

Initiation ceremonies of secret cults, the mystery-type invariably involve tests, sometimes most severe ones. The effect of certain experiences was a carefully worked programme of mind training which is familiar in modern times as that which is employed by certain totalitarian states to 'condition' or reshape the thinking of an individual. [William Cooper: Are you listening to me, all you Freemasons out there who think that you're so smart? Well, you're not.] This process produces a state in which the mind is pliant enough to have certain ideas implanted: ideas which resist a great deal of counter-influence. This was the secret of the mysteries, this and nothing else. Echoes of such training are to be seen in the rituals of certain secret societies without mystical pretensions which survive to this day: trials, terror, expectancy, drinking and the rest.

That this fact was known in the past [folks] is evidenced by the words of Aristotle, who was exiled because he was said to have revealed something about the mysteries; and he said [this]: “Those who are being initiated do not so much learn anything, as experience certain emotions, and are thrown into a special state of mind.”

[Well,] what was this special state of mind? [Folks,] it was a plasticity, in order that the conditioning might take permanent root. The psychologist William Sargant, the greatest authority on this subject, says in his classic *Battle for the Mind*: “It seems, therefore, that there are common final paths which all individual animals (though initial temperamental responses to imposed stresses vary greatly) must finally take -- if only stresses are continued long enough. This is probably the same in human beings. [And] if so [it] may help to explain why excitatory drumming, dancing and continued bodily movement are so much used in such a number of primitive religious groups. The efforts and the excitement of keeping the dance in progress for many hours on end should wear down and if need be finally subdue the strongest and most stubborn temperament, such as might be able to survive frightening and exciting talk alone for days or weeks.”[86]

[Now, understanding what I just read to you, this quote from *Battle for the Mind* by William Sargant. Can you still say that music plays no part of the conditioning of the mind? That the words in the music is not being entrapped by the subconscious of those young people who dance for hours listening to this music? If so, I think you'd better rethink that position. For it is a form of mind control, brainwashing.]

Dr. Sargant notes that Chinese experiments in mass-excitation, breaking down and reconditioning are based on same physiological principles as religious conversion and also individual and group psychotherapy treatments. [Folks,] these include the application of tension, fear, anxiety, conflict, to the point where subjects are uncertain. [And] in this state suggestibility is increased and the old pattern of behavior is disrupted.

---

[86] William Sargant, *Battle For The Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing*, 1957

The fact that the devotees of the mysteries were thoroughly conditioned to them, and felt they were important in their lives, is seen in much historical evidence. Even in the fourth century of the Christian era, the Greeks were insisting that they "would consider life unbearable if they were not allowed to celebrate those most sacred mysteries which unite the human race."

[Now] the work of those that pointed out the functions of mysteries as mind-training and conditioning has, of course, evoked no answer for those who still think that the rituals are mere symbolic representations of knowledge or facts. [And indeed they cannot admit this, simply because they would be admitting their own foolishness and stupidity in the process. So they will resist at all costs and continue to go to their meetings, for to do otherwise would be to confront their own fallibility, and in human nature that is one of the most difficult things for any individual to do. We all realize that.] It's interesting to note [folks] that the ecstasy which is produced by excitatory methods and is followed by manipulation of the mind is still sought by members of many secret cults who are aware of the scientific explanation. [You see, irregardless, even when they know this, they still seek it out. Because for them it fulfills some terrible need, way down deep inside their gut.]

There reaction is that the experience may well be induced by physical methods; but in spite of that [and this is what they say] "it is nothing less than actual spiritual communion with a supernatural power." This is the point at which scientists and mystics cannot agree. The mystic feels sure that he has experienced something sublime. [And who's to say that they haven't? Or, if you have not experienced it, you have no basis upon which to make a decision. But to experience it is to put yourself in a position to be controlled by others. So, we are in a quandary now. How do we explore this?] The scientist tells [the mystic] that it is an illusion. He [just simply] will not believe it. The situation just reminds one of the time when someone produced the soul of a departed relative to tell a spiritualist, that there was no life after death (laughs). Although this is alleged to have happened in Ireland, one can visualize it taking place easily enough in the mutually heated atmosphere of scientist versus mystic anywhere [in the world].

The orgiastic side of the mysteries [also] has a place in the sphere of psychology. The catharsis ([or the] cleansing of the mind) which the secret cult of the Cathari experienced after ecstasy is paralleled by the modern therapist's procedure in bringing his patient to a state of excitement and [then] collapse before an implanting what he considers more suitable ideas in the mind.

Christianity [of course] was not been behind in its use of the mystery-system for initiates. [For] it was not until A.D. 692 that the every believer was ordered to be admitted to the worship of the Christians, following the period when it was thought advisable to celebrate certain parts of worship in secret. [You see, Christianity in the beginning, was a secret society itself. And the correct name for it was the *Friendly Open Secret Society*,[87] although in the beginning there was nothing open about it.] Traces of this survive in such customs as that of the Greek Orthodox Church, where the priest celebrates divine worship behind a curtain, which is only taken away during the elevation of the Host, "since at that moment the worshipers prostrate themselves and are not supposed to see the holy sacrament."

The reason given for the secrecy of the practice of the Christian cult gives a clue in explaining that the celebrant must be prepared by expectation. St. Augustine laid down that secrecy was essential because: the mysteries of Christianity were incomprehensible to human intellect, and should not be derided by the uninitiated; secondly, because this secrecy produced greater veneration for the rites; thirdly, that the 'holy curiosity' of those to be initiated into the experience of Christianity should be increased, in order that they might attain to a perfect knowledge of the faith. [And to you all, quite frankly, folks, in my study of mind control, the Christian church would swell, well beyond any conception or imagination of what their numbers could be, if they had continued their (laughs) secrecy.] St. Basil (*De Spiritu Sancto*, cap [let me see, that's 17? *note: it's actually 27.] xxvii) [that's a writing, folks] tells how the Fathers of the Church "were well instructed to preserve the veneration of the Mysteries in silence. For how could it be proper publicly to proclaim in writing the doctrine of those things which no unbaptized person may so much as may look upon?"

---

[87]

[Now this all sounds silly to us today. But believe me, folks, there is nothing silly about it. And if it were practiced today as it was then, the Christian church would be more powerful then you can possibly conceive.]

[Now, remember, this is the results of our research. I myself consider myself to be a Christian. And that I follow the teachings, the words of Jesus Christ in my daily life. Not the dogma of any church, not the preaching of any minister or priest. But simply and only the words of Christ. Seated upon the foundation of that which God gave us in our history, the moral code called the Ten Commandments as they were originally given to Moses, and not as they were changed by man in the form of the Pope.]

The origin of mystery ceremonies seems to be India: or, at least, the place in time when the Brahmin priesthood started its initiations. The ceremonies were based upon the Hindu myths; but the procedure followed in training the aspirant as strikingly similar in Egypt. And Egypt profoundly influenced Greece.

[Now what's left out here, and the reason it’s usually left out, is because any mention or discussion of the Babylonian Mysteries or the Babylonian religion is usually met with much criticism and derision by those who believe that it was a terrible institution. The Mysteries definitely came from the East, and the East in the Mysteries still survives today. When one Freemason greets another and he is not sure if he is really a Freemason, he will ask if he is a "traveler", or if he is "traveling" or if he is a "fellow traveler". All, I might add, were the same code of identification used by the Communist party in this country, because Communism and the Mysteries are the same entity, as are Socialism and the Mysteries.]

[When they meet and this exchange takes place, the one being queried, if he is indeed a member of the Mystery Religion, will say, "Yes, I’m a traveler," to which the first, or the inquirer, will respond with, "Where are you going?" or "Where are you traveling, from where to where?" And the answer will be, "From west to east," for the east is the position of the rising sun, where the knowledge comes from. You see? For an early history, it certainly can be proven to have come from the east. And the sun was the symbol of the intellect. It began by being the symbol of the unseen god of the universe and slowly transformed into the symbol of the intellect, the light, Osiris, Ra, Lucifer.]

Prayer, fasting, and study were the first requirements, when the Indian candidate prepared himself for the trials which were before him, [All of this, folks, originated in Babylon at the dawn of civilization,] for the actual sight for the Great Gods, and the final 'word' ([or] teaching) which would be implanted in his mind when it had become sufficiently prepared to receive it. [And] if the weather was cold, he would have to sit in the snow or rain, naked. In the torrid heat, he sat in the full blaze of the sun with four fires built around him to give additional heat. [And] this was the first part of the undertaking; while he repeated prayers and repetitions which included the invocation for his complete conversion. This latter concentration [folks] upon the desires of the candidate is applied in more than one of the mysteries. [Some of the initiations ceremonies were cruel and painful.] Coupled with the 'word' which is given during the ceremonies, it means that the power of suggestion is being applied continuously, and should penetrate into the mind at every moment when it is able to receive it.

This period of dedication was succeeded by one in which he visited the underground cave of initiation. [And when it wasn’t in a cave, it was in a tomb or a crypt, such as the pyramids of Egypt, which were never tombs of pharaohs, but were, from the beginning until the end of their use, they were temples of initiation.] Passing through a tunnel of complete darkness, [the initiate] emerged into the cavern, where three priests, dressed as gods, awaited him in resplendent and intimidating array. After being addressed and partaking in the oration of prayers, [the initiate] walked rapidly around the temple several times [this called circumambulation][88] and was then carried through several subterranean and unlit caves. During this time there were wails [wails, screams] and shouts from every side, while illuminated specters and other horrors abounded. At the end of this terrible experience, the aspirant came to two doors which, when thrown open to the sound of the sacred conch trumpet [the conch, folks, is a shell], revealed a scene of brilliance and glory. This hall was full of every delight in the form of pictures, music, and perfume. [The initiate] walked to the altar in the room where he was again harangued, and presented with his sevenfold cord, which was marked his passing through the initiation.

---

[88] Circumambulation is the act of moving around a sacred object. The Circumambulation of temples or deity images is an integral part of Hindu ritual. It is also practiced in Buddhism. In Islam, circumambulation is performed around the Kaaba in Mecca, in a counter-clockwise direction.

[Now,] if we compare these proceedings with those that were said to be carried out among the Egyptians, the parallelism is startling [even today]. The candidate was taken to a well, which he had to descend until it came to a tunnel. Torch in hand, he passed through a door, which closed with a resounding noise [as if never to be opened again]. He was met by frightful figures, which offered him a last chance of going back. [Then] he passed through a fire, swam through a dangerous underground stream. [And] as soon as he reached a door and touched a ring to open it, a blast of air blew out the lamp which gave the only available light. [Some type of] machine swung him over a bottomless pit. [And] just as he was on the point of exhaustion, and ivory door opened, and he found himself on the threshold of a resplendent Temple of Isis. Here the priests received him into their company. After this series of tests, he had to undergo fasting and what would nowadays be called indoctrination, before he could be considered completely initiated into even the first degree. The foregoing experiences were followed by the higher degrees, those of Serapis and Osiris.

[And, in the process, the wives of the priests would tease him and cajole him and try to get him to make love to them. And if he had successfully resisted, then he could say that he had passed all the tests. But if he succumbed to their advances, he was not considered worthy.]

It is needless to outline the beliefs and methods used in the Chinese, Japanese, South American and other mysteries; because while the legends which are inculcated [may] vary [in some way - they are all essentially and basically the same], the training hardly varies at all. The real mystery of the mysteries [folks] is how and when man first discovered and the use certain procedures to condition other men [and thus rule them and control them], and whether the discovery was instantaneous or gradual, or simultaneous or at different times or places. But one cannot date doctrines as one can archaeological finds, by radioactive carbon [dating].

[And, so, you have reached another milestone in your education into the Mysteries. And this program has only half completed. And, again, I must remind you we have just begun, for we are essentially covering six thousand years of the history of a hidden religion, known simply as the Mysteries. To Christians, it is Mystery Babylon; to others, it is called the Invisible College. In all cases, it belongs to those who consider themselves in possession of the only truly mature minds, and thus the only ones capable of knowing certain advancements in technology, sociology and many, many other things. They call themselves of the *Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages*. And I can assure you, folks, they are in complete control of all elements of our society, military, and government at this time. So it is essential that you learn these facts about them and their organization, so that we can decide our future.]

[Don't go away, folks. We've got to take a short break. I'll be right back after this pause.]

(Interlude music: unknown, dramatic instrumental music)[89]

The cult of Mithra, the intercessor between man and the Persian divine power Ormuzd, was once an extremely widespread one [for it is the original cult of the sun]. From its origins in Persia, the faith spread to Babylononia, Greece and finally the Roman Empire, where it struggled against Christianity at the latter's inception. Christianity [believes that it] won, with the decline the material virtues of the Romans, but there are people who worship the solar deity [today], and even London has its Mithra temple.

Mithra was said to give his worshipers success in this world as well as security and happiness in the next. [Sound familiar, Freemasons?] He was originally a genie, the worldly representative of the invisible power which ruled the affairs of men.[90]

---

[89]

[90] The Hindu deity Krishna is recognized by some groups as the avatar (appearance, manifestation) of Vishnu (supreme being) is often depicted in murtis (images) as black, and is generally shown in paintings with a blue skin. The second protagonist in

Later (and the cult probably has a history of over six thousand years) he became thought of by his devotees as not being just one of the twenty-eight genii, but the only one which mattered, and the only one who could cater to the wishes and needs of the people. Thus it was that the ancient Aryan worship of Ahura-Mazda, the supreme being, was displaced by that of one of his representatives. [Now, one way, folks, you can tell who, or which corporations, or which businesses, or societies belong to these cults, is look at these names. Such as Saturn, Mazda, etc.] Ahura Mazda, the supreme being, was displaced by that of one of his representatives. Although archaeological research has produced little to give a clear picture of the rituals and beliefs of the Mithraists, a considerable amount of secret lore still survives in the east—from India to Syria—which gives one a good idea of exactly how the members of the cult thought, and [just exactly] what their magical ceremonies were.

Three ritualistic objects are used by Mithraists: the crown (equivalent to the sun, and power of the supernatural kind), the hammer or club (symbolizing creative activity of mankind) and the bull, which stands for nature, virility, increase. By the proper understanding of these objects and [just exactly] what they represent, Mithraists have it that the ordinary man can transcend his environment, can become great, or successful, or can achieve what he wants to do; and enters a delightful after-life. What must he give in exchange? Nothing but worship to the principle which presides over all destiny [and control to the priests of the religion].

[Now let's regress just a moment, and let me explain to you why the bull. Throughout the ancient world you see the symbology of the bull. Now you have to remember, this history goes back six thousand years. The first two thousand, of which, looking back, is the Christian era. Now, remember, this is the age of Pisces, or the two fish. The six thousand year period started in antiquity when the sun was in Taurus, or the Bull. That is the meaning of Baal or Bael, the Golden Calf was the representation of the House of the sun, or the age of the Bull, or Taurus. It was really the same old Mystery Religion, the worship of the unseen God of the universe, represented by the sun which, over the centuries and the millennia, has become the worship of the intellect, with the sun the representation of the light, or Lucifer, the one who gave man the gift of intellect.]

[Now after the age of Taurus came the Goat, or the Ram. And this was symbolized by the symbol of the goat, or the Goat of Mendes, for in Mendes there was a temple erected to the worship of the Mysteries, and since the sun was in the House of the Goat, or the Ram, the object of the exoteric worship by the masses was the goat.]

[When the sun passed into the house of Pisces, or the two fishes, the Christian era began. We are now on our way out of the age of Pisces into the age of Aquarius. Once you understand that the ancient religion was a religion of the worship of the heavens then everything begins to come together. And when you understand that they ceased believing in an all-powerful unseen God, or hidden God of the universe, and became essentially pantheist (believing everything is God), they call this nature or the natural way. Then you can understand how man became to worship the intellect. The intellect. And the symbol that used to represent the unseen God of the universe came to represent the intellect. The use of which will bring man to the state of Apotheosis, where man himself will become God. And then you begin to look at all the things that are happening today and you see their symbology everywhere. Nowhere will you see it more prominently than in the *Loony Tune* fringe element calling themselves, "Ufologists." You will see that everything to do with the so-called UFO phenomena, comes right out of the Mystery Schools.]

One reason [folks] for the loss of importance of the cult [of Mithras] undoubtedly is that admission was restricted to those who were thought worthy to receive the blessings which would come through the proper beliefs and use of the magical powers presided over by the Mithra priests. Christianity, for instance, was open to a far greater section of the population, even although the Christian mysteries were not accessible everywhere to all to until relatively late [in our history]. At the same time, some of the Mithraist ceremonials were of such obvious emotional appeal that scholars are agreed, that the purely ritualistic side of Christianity owes much to those of the sun-god of the Persians. [And if you have been listening to this program, you already know that: that Christianity was actually merged with the religion of the worship of the sun into what is now known as the Vatican.]

---

the Disney movie *Aladdin (1992)* is a blue genie.

The lowest degree of initiation was known as the Sacrament, and could be administered to anyone, theoretically, who could be relied upon to keep a secret, and would [eventually] develop into a regular and devout worshiper. This degree was called that of The Crow, and it symbolized, according to the present-day Mithras, the death of the new member, from which he would arise reborn as a new man [and today The Crow is known as a phoenix]. This death [or symbolic death] spelt the end of his life as an unbeliever and canceled his allegiance to former and unaccepted beliefs. The use of the word ‘crow’ probably derives from the ancient Persian practice of exposing their dead to be eaten by carrion birds—which is still carried on by the Parsi community in India, who follow parts of ancient Iranian religion as supposedly taught by Zoroaster. But if the crow symbolized death, it was also delegate privileged to take over the human body after death. [Of course] this meant that, in a sense, it was superior to humanity. Thus it was that the member of the cult was superior to the ordinary run of mortals. [They believed themselves to be a separate race of man and still do.]

The candidate descended seven steps into the temple, which was an underground one, fashioned in the shape of a cavern, and made to look as much as possible like a natural cave. Initiation tests now took place. The newcomer was pursued by 'wild beasts' (priests in animal skins), 'demons' and all sorts of terrors. He had to fast for three days. [And] in this debilitated, altered and plastic state, he was given a lecture by a priest on the responsibilities which were now his. Among these were the necessity to call brother only those who had been initiated. [In the words of a Freemason today, whose son I happen to know: “If you are not one of us, you are nothing.” Those words were spoken to his son when he asked his father why the Freemasons that he knew and his father were persecuting a local business man and trying to drive him out of business. Now, bear in mind that his son was not a Freemason. Let me say those words again for you, folks: “If you are not one of us, you are nothing.”] All family ties were severed; nothing mattered but doing one’s job well and carrying out the worship of Mithra. The final ceremony took place amid the clash of cymbals, the beating of drums and the unveiling of a statue of Mithra himself. This latter showed Mithra as a man, carrying a bull by the hind legs. Now the symbolism of this piece of sculpture was explained to him. The bull, in addition to symbolizing fecundity, was representative of animal passion [and it was also the House in which the sun dwelt in the first two thousand years of the religion]. It was through invocations to Mithra that mankind first discovered how to overcome this force, and how to discipline himself. Therefore the secret of religion was partly that the worshiper must restrain himself physically in order to obtain power over himself and over others. [And this is the mystery of the Sphinx that man has been trying to decipher since man discovered the Sphinx in the modern world. It is simply this: that man is nothing but an animal with a brain, with an intellect. It is to remind us, folks. It is to tell us that no matter what you think or how high you get, you are still nothing but an animal with an intellect. Period.] This graphic teaching of the diversion of sexual power into psychic channels shows that the Mithraists followed in essence the pattern of all [Mystery Schools] which believed in the production of power through discipline. In this they are clearly distinguished from the more primitive and the less important of the orgiastic schools, which merely practiced indiscriminate indulgence, mass immorality and so on.

The neophyte [in this initiation] then drank a little wine from the cymbal, to show that he realized that the cymbal is the means whereby ritual ecstasy comes, which puts him in touch with the 'higher powers'.

[Now] two long lines of initiates knelt on either side of the low stone benches which traversed the crypt [Remember, George Bush was initiated in the crypt, or the tomb, at Yale University, into what is known as the Skull and Bones, the Russell Trust, the Brotherhood of death.][Now, remember,] two lines of initiates knelt on either side of the low stone benches which traversed the crypt, [and] as the new member, accompanied by the priests who were initiating him, walked along the central isle for the Eating of the Bread. A number of pieces of dried bread were placed on a drum, similar to those which were being softly beaten by one of the priests. The candidate ate one morsel, signifying that he accepted Mithra as the source of his food. This bread, according to their beliefs, had been exposed to the rays of the sun to absorb some of its quality; and thus the worshiper was partaking of the nature of the sun itself in this ritual observance. [But it goes deeper than that that, folks, because the sun is what enables all life to exist on this planet. Being that the planet is at the perfect balance, where it is neither too hot, nor too cold. And that the planet is tilted upon its axis, creating the seasons, which enable food to be grown in the more northern latitudes, than if the earth was stable on an axis where only one portion of the globe always was in direct alignment with the sun. Then it would be too hot at the equator; there would be one narrow band in the northern, southern hemisphere where crops could be grown; and it would be too cold in the northern and southern hemispheres. So, this ritual observance has scientific fact behind it, in that the bread, indeed, did come from the sun.][And] now [the initiate] was taught the password of the cult, which was to identify him to other members, and which he was to repeat to himself frequently, in order to maintain the thought always in his mind: “I have eaten from the drum and drunk from the cymbal; and I have learned the secret of religion.”

This is the cryptic phrase an early Christian writer, Maternus, reports as being taught to the Mithraists “by a demon.”

The second degree of initiation was called The Secret, and during this the candidate was brought to a state of ecstasy in which he was somehow made to believe that he had actually seen the statue of the god actually endowed with life. [Folks,] it’s not likely that there was any mechanical method by which this was done, because no such apparatus has been found in Mithraic temples unearthed. The candidate was brought up to the idol, to which he offered a loaf of bread and a cup of water. [And] this was to signify that he was a servant of the god, and that “By what sustains my life I offer my entire life to your service.” The grade of Soldier may show that the military arts were responsible for a good deal of the power of Mithra worship in ancient Persia. Certain it is, in any case, that this degree greatly appealed to the Roman warriors who formed a very large part of the rank and file of the cult during its Western expansion. A sign similar to a cross, signifying the sun, was made on the forehead of the initiate, who was thus marked as being owned by the deity. A crown was placed before him, hanging from the point of a sword. This he took and placed it aside with the words: “Mithra alone is my crown.” [And this, folks, this takes place, in every, every mystery that there have ever been. Remember when Christ went into the desert for forty days and forty nights and was tempted by Satan? Satan offered Him the crowns of any, or all, of the nations of the earth, if He would just follow him. And Christ rejected it.[91] The same thing happens in the Mystery School: the initiate is always offered a crown, sometimes by the king or emperor himself. And if he accepts the crown, he is considered unworthy, and being as it would be interpreted as a threat to the real wearer of the crown probably would have been executed. He was considered only worthy if he rejected the crown symbolic of the ruler, the ruling of the nation, or people, or area.] The Persian crown, it will be remembered, from which pattern all present-day crowns are eventually derived, is a golden sun-disc with a hole in the centre for the head. It is jagged at the edges (representing the sun’s rays) [just like that worn by the Statue of Liberty], and these projections are turned up, to make what is still known in Western heraldry as the Oriental crown. [You can also see this representation as the halo in Christian art.]

Now the candidate has to prove himself in a mock combat with soldiers and animals in a number of caves. When the Emperor Commodus went through this degree of initiation, he actually killed one of the participants, although he was supposed to only make a symbolic slaying.

Passed through the Soldier degree, the Mithras was eligible, after a lapse of time, to be promoted to the rank of Lion. He was taken again to the cavern, and honey was smeared upon his brow, as opposed to water that had been used in his acceptance into the earlier degree—his 'baptism'. The degree of Lion was taken only by those who had decided to dedicate themselves completely to the cult, and who would henceforth have no truck with the ordinary world. The Lion was then, a sort of priest, but rather more of a monk. He was trained into the rites of the cult and told certain secrets.

The degree of Lion of Mithras could only be conferred only when the sun was occupying the Zodiacal sign of Leo ([and that is] about July 21st to August 20th) during the Persian month of Asad, The Lion. [Now,] there is a good deal of astrological lore in Mithraism, and also an admixture with cabbalistic numerology. The Greek branch of the Mithraists, for example, worked out that the numerical equivalent of the name (spelt by them Meitras) was 365, and thus corresponded to the days in the solar year. [Well, since the deity was the sun, then this is exactly what it should have been.] In the purely magical sense, Mithraism has it that both the name of the god and the rank which the individual holds in the cult have magical power. Thus, if a person wants to achieve anything, he has to concentrate upon the word 'Mithra', while preparing for himself the ceremonial repast and beating alternately a drum and cymbals.

That the effect of initiation was to produce someone of an upright character is amply evidenced by literature of Roman times, in which the Mithraists were generally considered to be thoroughly trustworthy and improved people. Even their enemies could reproach their own followers with the vitality of the Mithraist creed. Tertullian, in his *De Corona*[92] [which is Latin for, “The Crown”], which he composed in the third Christian Century, upbraids the Christians, inviting their attention to the Mithrists as examples: [*De Corona* actually means, “the Crown of Thorns.”]

---

[91] Matthew 4:1-11

“You, his fellow-warriors, should blush when exposed by any soldier of Mithra. When he is enrolled in the cave, he is offered the crown, which he spurns. And he takes his oath upon this moment, and is to be believed. Through the fidelity of his servants the devil puts us to shame,” [he said.]

[Now] there were seven degrees of initiation in all, although there are some branches of the ecstatic side of the lore which includes certain others, making the total twelve. After Lion came the Persian, then the Runner of the Sun, then Father, and finally, Father of Fathers. The twelfth degree, it is said, is King of Kings, [and where have we heard that before?][93] and properly, this can be held only by the supreme king, and preferably the Shahinshah (King of Kings) of Persia.

This very ancient cult, from which more than one present-day secret society [is] derived, is thus seen to contain many of the elements which underlie organizations of this sort. [You see folks,] it is a training system; it attempts to produce in its members a real or imagined experience of contact with some supreme power. The magical element is there too, shown in the belief in the power of certain names to achieve things which cannot be done by men. Mithraism was not an anti-social society, in the sense that it did not conflict in its aims with the objectives of the countries in which it flourished. And hence it did not threaten the established order. It was tolerant of other creeds. [Just like Freemasonry is now. You can belong to any religion and join at the lowest level. But I guarantee you that, when you reach the highest level, you will only belong to one religion.] [The tolerance] of other creeds meant that it did not intend to supplant them. Its greatest festival, the Birth of the Sun, on the 25th of December, became Christianized; and it is claimed by those that still believe in the mysteries and celebrate them, that Christianity did not so much supplant Mithraism as absorb it, accepting some of its externals and diverting to its own use [and that is exactly what has happened]. Perhaps incongruously, a present-day follower of Mithra in England recently likened this phenomenon to the eclipse of the Liberal Party, “because the two other Parties have taken over its objectives, and widened the basis. Only the actual initiates of Mithra know what has been lost in the process.” So the young man in the Phrygian bonnet, sometimes seen as the conqueror of the bull, or even as a man with a lion's head, still has his devotees. And [folks] the sun still shines.

[No longer reading]

So, what does all this got to do with stars and stardust? Many people believe that Venus is the morning star and, in the ancient days, they say that it was Sirius that rose before the sun with a red cast to it, and then turned a brilliant white as it rose up into the heavens. Well, folks, if you really think about it, the sun is the morning star.

Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(Outro music: continuation of Stardust?)[94]

---

[92] *De Corona Militis, Patrologia Latina Vol I-II.*

[93] Also Revelation 17:14 and 19:16

[94]

Hour 10: Gnosticism (aired February 17th, 1993)

Welcome once again, folks, to the Hour of the Time, and our ongoing series of the exposure, of the origins, the history, the doctrine, and the identity of Mystery Babylon. I'm William Cooper.

Many of you have written letters and asked, "How does one get into the Mystery Schools since no one ever hears anything about it? And there appears not to be a campaign of recruitment," and you're absolutely right. In our research, we have found the requirements to be simple: be of sound mind and body, have a sincere desire to be illumined, and simply knock up on the door.

(Audio clip: a woman knocks on a door and is attacked by a monster)[95]

(Intro music: Overture to the Phantom of the Opera)[96]

[William Cooper plugs an appearance, asks for donations to stay on the air and offers CAJI memberships]

Well, to continue . . . remember that the first religion in the world was the religion of the worship of the heavens. And man eventually came to recognize the sun as the representation of the power and the ability of the hidden god of the universe. The invisible god of the universe, the all-powerful creator of everything. But man, as he gained his intellectual ability, began to look toward himself, toward the intellect as that god. And the sun, the representation of what used to be the invisible god of the universe then because the representation of the intellect, the light, Lucifer. And man began to worship the Luciferian philosophy.

He believed—these people who call themselves the "Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages," and still believe—that man was held prisoner in the Garden of Eden by an unjust, vindictive and very cruel God, the God of the Bible. And that he was set free from the bonds of ignorance through the gift of intellect, given to him by Lucifer through his agent, Satan. Now, many people believe that Lucifer and Satan are the same individual entity, and they may be. I don't know the answer to that, I just know what the Mystery Schools believe, and I know what I personally believe and what I personally believe doesn't have any bearing on anything. Knowledge, the truth, is what counts, and that's what we're trying to get to the bottom of here. Now, eventually this philosophy of worshiping the intellect, or wisdom, or the mind became known as *Gnosticism*. And the followers of Gnosticism began to be known as the Gnostics.

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

An extraordinary number [folks] of exceedingly bizarre talismans and inscribed stones bear witness to the power of the secret Gnostic organizations which flourished in various forms during the few centuries immediately before and after the rise of Christianity in the Middle East. [You see,] one of the oddest emblems of these schools was the figure of Abraxas. [Now, that's] a human body clothed in a Roman soldier's garb wielding a battle-axe, as if threatening an enemy. [Now] in its left hand it carried an elliptical shield, upon which the words of power 'IAO' and 'SABOATH' were sometimes written. The head of this fearsome being was that of a cock with open beak. [Now, that symbolized the rising of the morning sun, because the cock crows with the sunrise.] For legs, it had twin serpents [the serpent throughout history has always been a symbol for wisdom, the gift of intellect], coiling to either side. Underneath the figure sometimes lay a conventionalized thunderbolt.

---

[95] Composed by Michael Bishop, Opening Sequence to Erich Kunzel's & Cincinnati Pops Orchestra *Chiller (album)*, 1989

[96] Composed by Andrew Lloyd Webber, the song is based on the French novel *Le Fantôme de l'Opéra* by Gaston Leroux. In the novel Erik the protagonist and son of a master mason is portrayed as a gifted architect and great illusionist. His reputation eventually leads him to become a political assassin employed under the Persian Shah-in-shah (supreme shah, or King of Kings). Erik refers to himself as "The Opera Ghost", "The Angel of Music." and attends a masquerade as the Red Death. The fallen angel Lucifer was also a musician: "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created." Ezekiel 28:13

[Now] who was Abraxas? His name, in accordance with cabalistic computation, is decoded to mean "three hundred and sixty-five"—[Isn't it absolutely incredible that every single time we investigate one of these, it leads directly to the sun. For three hundred and sixty-five days are] the number of days in the year. [Or the exact number of days that it takes for the earth to make one revolution around the sun. Amazing!] There was no god or idol belonging to the society [and this is where man made the transition from worshiping a god to worshiping the mind]: the Abraxas figure merely represented the aspects for power which went to make up the supreme intelligence, the all-power. The body was man himself; the bird stood for intelligence, and the hailing of light [illumination] which is the cock's habit at dawn. The tunic represented the need for struggle [or revolution, socialism], the arms the protection and power given by the dedication to the Gnosis—[or] knowledge. The shield was wisdom, the club or whip, power. The two snakes meant *nous*, insight, [or] *logos*, understanding. [Primordial knowing, which was the gift from Satan, the snake, the serpent.]

By means of this diagram Gnostic teachers inculcated the theory that man comes to his power by developing certain facets of his mind. He must struggle to arrive at *gnosis*; but this knowledge if of the mystical kind and it is not the mere collection of facts. [You see] great stress was laid upon personal mystical experience, to and through which the initiate was guided under conditions of great secrecy.

The Gnostics did not confine their studies, or their teachings, to anyone of religion, but borrowed illustrations from all that were accessible to them. This caused them to be considered Christian heretics, Jews, who were trying to undermine Christianity, remnants of the Persian sun-worshipers. They have been widely studied by early Christian sages, and it is upon the opinions of these latter that many conclusions have been formed. Little or no investigation of these 'People of Wisdom' has been done by research workers on the spot—in Asia and North Africa—where strong and interesting traces of their beliefs and practices still remain.

The main teaching states that there is a supreme being, or power which is invisible and has no perceptible form [it is *pantheism*]. This power is the one which can be contacted by mankind, and it is through it that man can control himself and work out his destiny. The various religious teachers through the ages, putting on their creeds in many different ways, were in contact with this power [they claim], and their religions all contain a more or less hidden kernel of initiation. [Now] this is the secret which the Knowers can communicate to their disciples. But the secret can be acquired only through exercising the mind and body until the terrestrial man is so refined as to able to become a vehicle for the use of this power [or, in their terms, 'illumined'] Eventually, the initiate becomes identified with the power, and in the end he obtains his true destiny as purified personality, infinitely superior to the rest of unenlightened mankind [to the state of *Apotheosis*, where he himself is god].

The symbolism in which this teaching is concealed, the methods by which the mystical power is attained, vary from one Gnostic society to another. But the constant factor is there: the attainment of that which humankind unconsciously needs. [You see] the Gnostic claims that within every man and woman there is an unfulfilled urge which cannot be given expression in the normal way because there is social means by which it can be fulfilled. This feeling has been put into man in order that he may seek the fulfillment which the Gnostics can give him. His search for completeness in love, trade, professions, theology is vain and unsuccessful.

The theories of the various schools [folks] of Gnosticism with which the Christian clerics came into contact are very much secondary to the rituals and practices which are used to produce the Gnosis, the enlightenment [the illumination]. This has not been fully understood by too many [people], who devote much space to trying to work out the beliefs of the Knowers by a perusal of their writings, or by reports which had been given them by others. [Simply, folks, because they do not understand the symbolism. It is not clear to them; it is veiled. It is the esoteric wisdom.]

What were—and are—the Gnostic practices? [Well] first, discipleship and the inculcated belief that the initiate must struggle, must devote himself as much as possible to the identification with the power which inspires all. Secondly, there are two kinds of men, those who are bound to the earth and matter, and those who can refine themselves. It is from the latter class that the aspirants are chosen [they claim. In every instance that we investigated, they may choose them from the latter class, but they all end up in the first]. Thirdly, the methods by which the divine illumination may come are many and varied; and it is the providence of the teacher to choose which path he will give to his disciple to follow. Some Gnostics believed that frenzy and excitement would produce the necessary liberation of the mind from the fetters of the body [Remember the sphinx?]; others [consider] that this could be done best by fasting and meditation. Present-day Gnostic practice in the East has it that different methods suit different temperaments: and this [could] be one cause for the historical confusion as to which branch of 'heretics' practiced what.

The Gnostics believed themselves to be intellectual aristocrats: their knowledge was only for the few who were ready to receive it. [And that's why they do not recruit. You must knock at the door. And you, and only you, know when you ready to receive it.] And this is what made them a secret cult, not the fear of persecution. They had their own passwords, in shaking hands they tickled the palm as an identification signal, and they helped one another in every conceivable way. [Just as Freemasons do today, for they are one and the same, as they have always been one and the same with all the different versions of the Mystery throughout the ages.]

[Now some say that] they could not be called pantheists because they considered that the doctrine was secondary to the experience of religion; and the theologians and ordinary priesthood of any religion did not approval of that. They were not, in fact, a religion like most others, because they stressed the importance of the individual before that of the community. Those who were more enlightened were more important in every possible way, because they were valuable, refined, aristocrats. At the same time they taught that providing the wellbeing of the Gnostics was assured, so was that of the community at large. [And] this meant that they could subscribe to the outward doctrines of any religion, and could continue to operate under many different politico-religious systems. Gnosticism profoundly influenced men's minds even in Europe up to and after the Middle Ages, and its basic way of thinking is probably an underlying factor in other secret societies whose members would be surprised to know it. [Because the pyramidal, organizational structure of membership of these organizations means that nobody below the top, the very top, really knows anything of the true religion and goals of the society to which they belong. And so these people could truly be said to be the greatest group of followers and fools in the history of the world. For they think that they are illumined, but, in fact, they were never given any real secrets, and only those at the top truly know what is really going on.]

Terrible obscenities and other crimes have been laid at the door of the Gnostics by the early ecclesiastical writers. Although there is little doubt that some of them did believe in mass ecstasy, it seems unlikely that their secrets were well enough known to enable the commentators to assess them. [And in most cases whenever the commentators try to assess them, they were trying to assess the exoteric, or the appearance, but not the esoteric, or the real truth of the object of the worship of the Gnostics.] The belief that certain special men could control their destiny and obtain extra powers thought dedication to Gnostic practices meant that, inevitably, there was a belief in magic. [Remember on previous shows we discussed that belief in magic? Magic is real, folks. I have seen it work, and it is not to be played with or laughed at or scoffed about. It is dangerous, extremely dangerous.] The myriad Gnostic 'gems' (inscribed stones) decorated with serpents, cabbalistic names and the rest, are more likely to be proofs of initiation and talismans than mere identification tokens presented to ensure admission to meetings, as some authors have thought. The reason for supposing this is that (1) the 'gems' are very similar in many respects to talismans in use by other communities [including the ancient Egyptians]; and (2) they can often be interpreted as containing magical messages or 'diagrammatical invocations'.

Ethically speaking, Gnostic belief is that there are two principles: that of good and that of evil. A balance must be struck between these forces; and the balance is in the hands of the Gnostic—the Knower—partly because nobody else can tell whether an action is for the eventual good of the individual or the community. [And] this secret knowledge comes through the mystical insight which the supermen-Gnostics attained. [There's that reference to a super-race or a “superman” again, which always crops up with these people, as it did with Hitler and many others.]

The rise of individuals who wrongly believed that they had attained to Gnosis—all knowledge—some of whom were leaders of Gnostic societies, produced notorious characters. Those who followed the way of the Ophite branch glorified the serpent who tempted Eve [and they still do that today]. They did this because this snake by his actions brought knowledge into the world. [Gave man the gift of intellect, the use of which will bring him to the state of *Apotheosis*, where man himself will be God.] Basilides was a leader who taught that Jesus did not die on the cross. [And you will see this crop up all through the history of the Mystery Schools, even in the Knights Templar.][97] Since matter and material things were considered to be a part of the inferior, non-spiritual world, the sect known as the Cainites called upon everyone to destroy those things which belonged to the world. [And they called themselves 'the destroyers,' and their god is the Destroyer.]

These deviations and aberrants have attracted the greatest attention—as is natural—and the quieter teachers of the creed have received less attention. The pious horror with which the less respectable Gnostics were viewed by the early Christian father has stamped itself for ever on Western literature and belief about the 'Enlightened Ones'. But, in more than one place in the Middle East, as well as in small groups in Western Europe, there are still followers of various schools of Gnosticism. They mainly follow the ideas held by Valentinus, with some variations. [And] this school teaches its initiates that matter is more evil than good; that man must be purified by mental concentration; that after death man will rejoin that from which he has been severed, and will be unified with those whom he loves [in the Great Intelligence]. They also believe that all matter will eventually be destroyed by fire. [And if they have their way, that could be absolutely true.]

The Mandaeans, a small but tenacious community which dwells in Iraq, follow an ancient form of Gnosticism, which practices initiation, ecstasy and some rituals which have been said to resemble those of the Freemasons. [And of course they do, because they are. (laughs) In every Masonic temple you will see somewhere up on the wall a big letter 'G'. And you will see it in their symbology, in their books. You will see this letter 'G'. And if you ask a Freemason, being bound by the oath never to tell you or reveal you the secrets to the profane—which is what they call those who are not initiates, or adepts in the Mysteries—he will tell you it's for God, but that is a lie. That does not stand for God, for I have researched it deeply, all the way up the ladder of the stages of initiation. And at the top, those adepts known as the Priesthood know this large letter 'G' to represent Gnosticism. And it is an admission that they are indeed the recipients of the ancient Gnostic. They are Gnostics, and they are looking to attain the *gnosis*, through which they will receive *Apotheosis*. And they believe that they are the only ones in the world who possess truly mature minds and, thus, the only ones in the world capable of ruling the rest of us, whom they refer to as cattle—cattle.]

[Well, it's time to take a break, folks. Don't go away, I'll be right back after this very short pause.]

(Interlude music: Overture to Sleuth)[98]

[That was *Overture to Sleuth*, conducted by Erich Kunzel, the Cincinnati Pops Orchestra. Cincinnati is the home of the order of Cincinnatus and the Knights of the Golden Circle. You see, everything that I do on this show has meaning—even the music, folks. Now, whether you like the music or not makes no difference. *Listen to the words*. Research the title. Try to find out what the music means before you condemn it. And remember that you're not the only one out there. Your age group is not the only age group listening. So, whether you like the music or not, it doesn't make any difference. It all has a message. All has a message, folks, and I hope you get the message, for it is extremely important that you do.]

A most detailed account on what was said to be the seven highest degrees of secret Egyptian initiation was first published in Germany in the eighteenth century. This strange and very exhaustive document combines many elements from the ancient mysteries . . . It seems to come from Greek sources, because many of the words used are Greek; and it [could] well be that we have here the modern beginnings of an attempted revival of ancient mysteries. Whatever [it is], it is not one of those fanciful and spurious ones which used to be printed merely to attract the credulous: because it is plausible in containing the sort of material which might well have formed the content of an initiation and mind-conditioning system. [And if you understand the secret religions as I do, and specifically the modern ones, you will quickly recognize this as authentic.]

---

[97] Indoctrination of this sort can be found in the Dan Brown's novel *The Da Vinci Code (2003)* and is the basis for the Disney movie *The Lion King (1994)*

[98] The Cincinnati Pop Orchestra was formed in 1977 out of the Cincinnati Symphony Orchestra.

The earliest version known is in the form of an anonymous pamphlet (probably not intended for public sale) or thirty-odd pages, which was printed in 1785. (laughs) [Right in that area of history is momentous occurrences [sic].] It was republished in a French translation thirty years later, purporting to be the ritual of the Master degree in Freemasonry. [And if you know anything about the Master degree in Freemasonry, you will soon see that it's certainly (laughs) is exact in its description.] The French editor claims that it is a composite ritual, derived from the works of some fifteen Greek and Roman writers.

This degree, we are told, was open to Egyptian kings and priests alone; and only those specially recommended by an initiate could enter it. The usual procedure was that the Pharaoh himself introduced the candidate to the priests. By them he sent from Heliopolis [the City of the Sun, and you will never escape from the sun when you're studying the Mysteries] to the Memphis priests; from there we went to Thebes. He was circumcised, forbidden to eat pulse or fish; and generally had to abstain from wine. He was put for several months in an underground cave, and asked to write down his reflections. When he had done this, he was led to a passage supported by the pillars of Hermes where he had to learn certain things which were inscribed thereon. As soon as he was word-perfect, the Themorphous (introducer) came to him with a strong whip, to keep the uninitiated at bay. He was blindfolded, and his hands bounds with cords.

Now follow the procedure from the first degree of this elect body. The candidate was led to the Gate of Men, where the introducer touched the shoulder of an apprentice (Portophorus) standing there on guard. He in turn knocked on the gate, which was opened. When the aspirant entered, he was questioned on various [manners] by the Hierophant, after which he was led around the Birantha in an artificial storm of wind, rain, thunder and lightning. If he showed no sign of fear, Menies the Expounder explained the laws of the Crata Repoa, to which he had to agree. He was then taken in front of the Hierophant, made to kneel, and vowed fidelity with a sword-point at this throat. As witnesses he called upon the sun, moon and stars. [And where have you heard that before?]

“His eyes were then unbandaged, and he was placed between two spare pillars, called Betilies, where lay a ladder of seven steps, behind which were with doors of different metals of gradually increasing purity. The Hierophant then addressing those present as *Mene Musae*, or children of the Work of Celestial Investigation, exhorted them to govern their passions and fix their thoughts upon God.”

[Now the sun, the moon and the stars, you should know by now, represent the doctrine, the church, and the initiates. The sun, of course, is the doctrine, the moon is the church, and the stars are the body of initiates, or the “thousand points of light.”][99]

The candidate was taught [folks] that the ladder symbolized the wanderings of the soul; he was told the causes of wind, thunder and lightning; and given other valuable information, such as medical lore. He was given the password of recognition of this degree, which was [and I spell it because I don't know the correct pronunciation . . . A-M-O-U-N], meaning secrecy. He was taught a grip, given a pyramidal cap and an apron called Xylon. Around his neck was a collar; and he wore no other clothes. His duty was to guard the Gate of Men in his turn.

The Portophorus was now able, after showing his devotion, to proceed to the Second Degree. Following a prolonged fast he was taken to a dark chamber called Endimion, the invitation grotto. He was now of the degree of Neocoris. “Handsome women brought him dainty food; they were the wives of the priests, who endeavored to excite his love.”

If he resisted these advances, he was further lectured by the Master of Ceremonies and led into an assembly, where the Stolista ([or] water-bearer) poured water over him. Then a living serpent was thrown at him. The whole room was full of snakes, to test his courage. He was then led to two high pillars between stood a griffin driving a wheel before him. The pillars symbolized East and West, the griffin the sun and the wheel of four spokes the four seasons. He was taught the use of the level and instructed in geometry and architecture. He received a rod, entwined by serpents [and that rod is still used today by the medical community. It's called the *caduceus*] and [he received] the password HEVE ([meaning] serpent), and was told the story of the fall of man. The sign consisted in crossing the arms over the chest [and] his duty was to wash the pillars.

---

[99] Stars in the firmament of heaven, Genesis 1:14-20

[Now when the initiate] was initiated into the Third Degree, the member was given the title of Melanophoris. He was led to an anteroom, over whose door was written 'Gate of Death'. The room was full of copies of embalmed bodies and coffins. Here too were a number of dissectors, embalmers and so on.

“In the centre stood the coffin of Osiris. The Melanophoris was asked if he had had a hand in the assassination of his master. On his denying the question, he was seized by two Tapixeites, or men who buried the dead, and led into a hall, where he found all the other Melanophores clothed in black. The King himself, who always was present on these occasions, addressed him in an apparently friendly way, begging him if he did not feel courage enough to undergo the test now to be applied to him, to accept the golden crown he was offering him.”

[Well] he had already been coached to refuse the crown and tread it underfoot. At this 'insult' the King called for revenge. Raising his sacrificial axe he touched the head the initiate. [And in one famous initiation, the King actually beheaded the man.] The two corpse-carriers threw him to the ground, and the embalmers wrapped him in bandages. All who were present wept. Now he was led to a gate over which was written *Sanctuary of the Spirits.* [Now, the initiate was not supposed to be beheaded in that one famous initiation. And I don't know what they chalked *that* up to.]

[Now, standing before the gate, the initiate waited.] “On its being opened, thunder and lightning struck the apparently dead man. Charon received him as a spirit into his boat and carried him to the judges of Hades. Pluto sat on his judgment seat, while Rhadamanthus and Minos as well as Aethon, Nycreus, Alaster and Orpheus stood beside him. Very severe questions were put to him as to his former life and finally he was sentenced to remain in these subterranean vaults.” [Now, remember, this was an initiation which sometimes lasts for months, and even years.]

The bandages were removed, and he was told never to desire blood, never to leave a corpse unburied; and to believe in the resurrection of the dead and the judgment to come. [Now remember, this was *long* . . . centuries before Christianity.] He was taught coffin-decoration and the peculiar hierogrammatical script. The sign was an embrace, to express the 'days of wrath'. He was kept in these underground chambers until thought fit to proceed to a higher degree.

These 'Days of Wrath' generally lasted for a year and a half, until the initiate was ready for promotion to the Fourth Degree: 'The Battle of the Shades'. He was handed a sword and a shield and taken though dark passages. He met “certain persons, presenting a frightful appearances, carrying torches and serpents”. He was attacked, with the cry of PANIS! He defended himself bravely, but was [always] taken prisoner, his eyes were bandaged and a cord placed around his neck. Dragging him into a hall, the specters disappeared. He was led into the assembly of initiates, and his eye unbandaged. Before him he saw a magnificent hall, decorated with beautiful paintings; the King and the highest dignitary—the Demiurgos—were present.

All were wearing their Alydei, and Egyptian Order composed of sapphires. Among those present were the Secretary, the Treasurer and the Master of Feats. The Orator made a speech, congratulating the new member on his fortitude. He was given a drink, called Cyce, which he drank to the dregs. This was probably the ritual drink of honey or milk, water, wine and gruel—and perhaps some hypnotic drug. He donned the boats of Anubis, took up the shield of Isis, put on the cloak and cap of Orcus. He was handed a sword and told that he must cut off the head of the next person he met in a cave and bring it back to the King.

This cave was pointed to him. Entering it, he saw that seemed to be a beautiful woman, but in reality was a model of one. [And notice it's a woman.] He seized this by the hair and severed the head. This he brought back to the monarch, who praised him, telling him that he had symbolically won the head of the Gorgon, wife of Typhon, who had caused the death of Osiris. He was not permitted always to wear the dress which had been given to him, and he was entered in a book as one of the judges of the land. [Notice that: one of the judges of the land.] He was able to communicate at any time with the King, and received an allowance from the court. He was invested with an Order (that of Isis in the shape of an owl) and it was revealed to him that the secret name of the lawgiver was [J-O-A] 'JOA', which was also the password of this Degree. But the password for the meetings of the Christophori (as the Fourth Degree initiates were called) was 'SASYCHIS'.

The Fifth Degree, that of Balahate, could not now be refused to the Christophorus. He was led to a hall to watch a play, at which he was the only onlooker. Other members of the degree went through the hall, as if looking for something. One drew this sword, and the terrible figure of Typhon appeared. [Of course] he was slain. [And] now the new Balahate was told that Typhon represented fire, a terrible element which was at the same time indispensable. The password was 'CHYMIA', and the teaching was in chemistry [or alchemy].

In order to become an 'Astronomer at the Gate of the Gods'—the Sixth Degree—the candidate was taken to the hall of assembly, bound, and led to the Gate of Death. He was shown corpses which had been cast into water, and warned that he might be similarly treated if he broke his oath. He was given some teaching in astronomy, and taken back to the Gate of the Gods, where he looked at the pictures of the gods while their histories were explained to him. A priestly dance took place, symbolizing the course of the heavenly bodies; he saw a list of members of the Order throughout the world, and learned the password: 'IBIS', for watchfulness.

The last and the highest degree was that of 'Propheta', in which all secrets were laid bare. It was conferred following public processions, and when the permission of the King and all the highest members had been obtained. The members secretly left the city by night, "and retired to some houses built in a square and surrounded by pillars by the sides of which were placed alternately a shield and a coffin, whose rooms were painted with representations of human life. [Now] these houses were called maneras, for the people believed them to be visited by the *manes* of departed men. On their arrival at these houses the new member, now called prophet or Saphennath Pancah (a man who knows the secrets), was given a drink called oimellas and told that now all trials were over. He received a cross of peculiar significance, which he was always to wear. He was clothed in a wide, white-striped dress, called etangi. The usual sign was crossing his arms in his wide sleeves. He could peruse all the sacred books written in the Ammonite language . . . his greatest privilege was having a vote in the election of a king [and] the password was 'ADON'."

[Reading from *Behold A Pale Horse*]:

[These mystical societies always continued, and one] of special interest is the powerful society of Afghanistan in ancient times called the Roshaniya—illuminated ones. The major tenets of this cult were: the abolition of private property; the elimination of religion; the elimination of nation states; the belief that illumination emanated from the Supreme Being who desired a class of perfect men and women to carry out the organization and direction of the world; belief in a plan to reshape the social system of the world by first taking control of individual countries one by one, and the belief that after reaching the fourth degree one could communicate directly with the unknown supervisors who had imparted knowledge to initiates throughout the ages.

The Roshaniya also called themselves the Order. Initiates took an oath that absolved them of all allegiance except to the Order and stated, "I bind myself to perpetual silence and unshaken loyalty and submission to the Order . . . All humanity which cannot identify itself by our secret sign is our lawful prey." The oath remains essentially the same to this day. The secret sign was to pass a hand over the forehead, palm inward; the counter-sign, to hold the ear with the fingers and support the elbow in the cupped other hand. Does that sound familiar?

[If you sit in a courtroom in just about any city in this land, you will see those signs exchanged between lawyers and defendants and judges. And you will see that whenever that . . . these signs are exchanged, whoever initiated the exchange will usually, in fact, most often does, win the court case.]

The Order [of course] is the Order of the Quest. [And] the cult preached [100]there was no heaven and no hell, only a spirit state completely different from life as we know it. The spirit could continue to be powerful on earth through a member of the Order, but only if the spirit had been itself a member of the Order before its death. Thus members of the Order gained power from the spirits of the dead members.

---

[100]

The Roshaniya took in travelers as initiates and then sent them on their way to found new chapters of the Order. [And they were called "fellow travelers." You see, this Order, as all before it, and all since, are Socialist, Communists.] It is believed by some that the Assassins were a branch of the Roshaniya. Branches of the Roshaniya or "the illuminated ones" or the Illuminati existed and still exist everywhere. One of the rules was not to use the same name and never mention "the Illuminati." That rule is still in effect today [and it's probably] the breaking of [that] rule that resulted in Adam Weishaupt's downfall.

[No longer reading]

Remember, folks, that we have really only just begun. And you are just beginning to understand, although some of you may think that you do already understand. I can assure you that may be only a very small minority of you really do. Most do not. We have a long way to go in this history and in your own particular, individual illumination. (laughs) Oh, I just love it! I just love it; exposing these people who claim that they are doing everything for the benefit of mankind, who really have all the guilt of everything bad that has ever happened to mankind squarely upon their shoulders.

Now, if you'd like a packet of information, if you would like to know how to join CAJI, if you'd like to purchase my book, or if you would like to donate...

[William Cooper asks for donations to stay on the air and offers CAJI memberships]

Next time, folks, we're going to talk about the Old Man of the Mountain. And we're going to continue the history of the order through the ages.

Good night, and may God bless you all.

(Outro music: La Damnation de Faust)[101]

---

[101] Composed by Hector Berlioz, *La damnation de Faust* (English: *The Damnation of Faust*), ("légende dramatique") H. 111 (Op. 24) Pandemonium (Scene 19). Based on Goethe's *Faust.*

Hour 11: The Assassins (aired March 1st, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time and I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: In the Hall of the Mountain King)[102]

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

Two men in the year 1092 stood on the ramparts of a medieval castle—the Eagle's Nest—perched high upon the crags of the Persian mountains: the personal representative of the Emperor and the veiled figure who claimed to be the incarnation of God on earth. Hasan, son of Sabah, Sheikh of the Mountains and leader of the Assassins, spoke: "You see that devotee standing guard on yonder turret-top? Watch!"

He made a signal. Instantly the white-robed figure threw up his hands in salutation, and cast himself two thousand feet into the foaming torrent which surrounded the fortress.

"I have seventy thousand men—and women—throughout Asia, [and] each one of them ready to do my bidding. Can your master, Malik Shah, say the same? And he asks me to surrender to his sovereignty! This is your answer. Go!"

[Now] such a scene may be worthy of the most exaggerated of horror films. And yet it took place in historical fact. The only quibble made by the chronicler of the time was that Hasan's devotees numbered "only about forty thousand." How this man Sabah came by his uncanny power, and how his devotees struck terror into the hearts of men from the Caspian to Egypt, is one of the most extraordinary of all tales of secret societies [the Mysteries]. Today, the sect of the Hashishin ([or] druggers) still exists in the form of the Ismailis ([or] Ishmaelites), whose undisputed chief, endowed by them with divine attributes, is the Aga Khan.

Like many another secret cult, the Assassin organization was based upon an earlier association. [And] in order to understand how they worked and what their objectives were, we must begin with these roots.

It must be remembered [dear listeners] that the followers of Islam in the seventh century A.D. split into two divisions: the orthodox, who regard Mohammed as the bringer of divine inspiration; and the Shiahs, who consider that Ali, his successor, the Fourth Imam ([or] leader), was more important. It is with the Shiahs that we are concerned here.

From the beginning of the split in the early days of Islam, the Shiahs relied for survival upon secrecy, organization and initiation. Although the minority party in Islam, they believed that they could overcome the majority (and eventually the whole world) by superior organization and power. To this end they started a number of societies which practiced secret rites in which the personality of Ali was worshipped, and whose rank and file were trained to struggle above all for the accomplishment of world dominion.

One of the most successful secret societies which the Shiahs founded was centered around the Abode of Learning in Cairo, which was the training-ground for fanatics who were conditioned by the most cunning methods to believe in a special divine mission. In order to do this, the original democratic Islamic ideas had to be overcome by skilled teachers, acting under the orders of the Caliph of the Fatimites, who ruled Egypt at that time.

Members were enrolled, on the understanding that they were to receive hidden power and timeless wisdom which would enable them to become as important in life as some of the teachers. [And you find that these same precepts in every branch, in every nationality, on every continent where the Mysteries prevail.] The Caliph saw to it that the instructors were no ordinary men. The supreme judge was one of them; another was the commander-in-chief of the army; a third the minister of the Court. There was no lack of applicants. In any country where the highest officials of the realm formed a body of teachers, one would find the same thing.

---

[102] Composed by Edvard Grieg in 1876.

Classes were divided into study groups, some composed of men, others of women, collectively termed Assemblies of Wisdom. All lessons were carefully prepared, written down and submitted to the Caliph for his seal. At the end of the lecture all present kissed the seal: for did the Caliph not claim direct descent from Mohammed, through his son-in-law Ali and thence from Ismail, the seventh Imam? He was the embodiment of divinity, far more than any Tibetan lama ever was.

The university, lavishly endowed and possessing the best manuscripts and scientific instruments available, received a grant of a quarter of a million gold pieces annually from the Caliph. Its external form was similar to the pattern of the ancient Arab universities, not much different from Oxford. But its real purpose was the complete transformation of the mind of the student.

Students had to pass through nine degrees of initiation [the same number that are claimed in the York Rite of Freemasonry]. In the first, the teachers threw their pupils into a state of doubt about all conventional ideas, religious and political. They used false analogy and every other device of argument to make the aspirant believe that what he had been taught by his previous mentors was prejudiced and capable of being challenged. The effect of this according to the Arab historian, Makrizi, was to cause him to lean upon the personality of the teachers, as the only possible source of the proper interpretation of facts. At the same time, the teachers hinted continually that formal knowledge was merely the cloak for hidden, inner and powerful truth, whose secret would be imparted when the youth was ready to receive it. [None ever questioned why no secret was ever put forth.] This 'confusion technique' was carried out until the student reached the stage where he was prepared to swear a vow of blind allegiance to one or other of his teachers.

This oath, together with certain secret signs, was administered in due course, and the candidate awarded the first degree of initiation. The second degree took the form of initiation into the fact that the Imams ([the] successors of Mohammed) were the true and only sources of secret knowledge and power. Imams inspired the teachers. Therefore the student was to acknowledge every saying and act of his appointed guides as blessed and divinely inspired. In the third degree, the esoteric names of the Seven Imams were revealed, and the secret words by which they could be conjured and by which the powers inherent in the very repetition of their names could be liberated and used for the individual especially in the service of the sect.

In the fourth degree, the succession of the Seven Mystical Law-givers and magical personalities was given to the learner. These were characterized as Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, Mohammed and Ismail. There were seven mystical 'helpers': Seth, Shem, Ishmael, Aaron, Simon, Ali, and Mohammed, the son of Ismail. This last was dead, but he had a mysterious deputy, who was the Lord of the Time: authorized to give his instructions to the People of Truth, as the Ismailis called themselves. This hidden figure gave the Caliph the power to pretend that he was acting under even higher instructions.

The fifth degree named twelve apostles under the seven prophets, whose names and functions and magical powers were described. In this degree the power to influence others by means of personal concentration was supposed to be taught. One writer claims that this was done merely by the repetition, for a period of three years to train the mind, of the magical word AK-ZABT-I.

To obtain the sixth degree involved instruction in the methods of analytical and destructive argument, in which the postulant had to pass a [very] stiff examination. The seventh degree brought [revelations] of the Great Secret: that all humanity and all creation were one and every single thing was part of the whole, which included the creative and destructive power [the androgynous god]. But, as an Ismaili, the individual could make use of the power which was ready to be awakened within him, and overcome those who knew nothing of the immense potential of the rest of humanity. This power came through the aid of the mysterious power called the Lord of the Time.

To qualify for the eighth degree, the aspirant had to believe that all religion, philosophy and the like were fraudulent. All that mattered was the individual, who could attain fulfillment only through servitude to the greatest developed power—the Imam. The ninth and last degree brought the revelation of the secret that there was no such thing as belief: all that mattered was action. And the only possessor of the reasons for carrying out any action was the chief of the sect.

As a secret society, the organization of the Ismailis as outlined above was undoubtedly powerful and seemed likely to produce a large number of devotees who would blindly obey the orders of whomever was in control of the edifice. But, as with [many] other bodies of this kind, there were severe limitations from the point of view of effectiveness.

Perhaps the phase of revolt or subversion planned by the society did not in the end get under way; perhaps it was not intended to work by any other means than training the individual. Be that as it may, its real success extended abroad only to Baghdad [in 1058], where a member gained temporary control of Baghdad and coined money in the Egyptian Caliph's name. [Now] this sultan was slain by the Turks, who now entered the picture, and the Cairo headquarters was also threatened. By 1123, the society was closed down by the Vizier Afdal. The rise of Turkish power seemed to have discouraged the expansionist Cairo sect so strongly that they almost faded out, and [very] little is heard of them after that date.

It was left to Hasan, son of Sabah, the Old Man of the Mountains, to perfect the system of the ailing secret society, and found an organization which has endured for nearly another thousand years.

Who was Hasan? [Well,] he was the son of a Shiah (Ali-worshipper) in Khorasam, a most bigoted man, who claimed that his ancestors were Arabs, from Kufa. [Now] this assumption was probably due to the fact that such a lineage bolstered up claims to religious importance, then as now, among Moslems. [You see,] the people of the neighborhood, many of them also Shiahs, stated very decisively that this Ali was a Persian, and so were his forebears. [So] it is generally thought that this is the truer version. As the Governor of the Province was an orthodox Moslem, Ali spared no efforts to assume the same guise. [Now] this is considered to be completely permissible—the Doctrine of Intelligent Dissimulation. As there was some doubt as to his reliability in the religious sense, he retired into a monastic retreat, and sent his son Hasan to an orthodox school. This school was no ordinary one. It was the circle of disciples presided over by the redoubtable Imam Muwafiq, about whom it was said that every individual who enrolled under him eventually rose to great power.

It was here that Hasan met Omar Khayyám, the tentmaker-poet and astronomer, later to be the poet laureate of Persia. Another of his schoolmates was Nizam-ul-Mulk, who rose from peasanthood to become prime minister. These three made a pact, according to Nizam's autobiography, whereby whichever rose to high office first would help the others. [And *that* tenet has survived to this day. It is how their own infiltrate all levels of society, military, and government, and then pull their brothers up into positions below them. It is the method of infiltrating and controlling large masses, populations, governments, military organizations, and society as a whole.]

Nizam, the courtier, became Vizier to Alp-Arslan the Turkish sultan of Persia, in a very relatively short time. He helped Omar, in accordance with his vow, and secured him a pension, which gave him a life of ease and indulgence in his beloved Nishapur, where many of his *Rubá'iyát* poems were written. Meanwhile Hasan remained in obscurity, wandering through the Middle East, waiting for his chance to attain the power of which he had dreamed. Arslan the Lion died, and was succeeded by Malik Shah. Suddenly, Hasan presented himself to Nizam, demanding to be given a place at court. Delighted to fulfill his childhood vow, the vizier obtained for him a favored place, and relates what transpired thus in his autobiography:

“I had him made a minister by my strong and extravagant recommendations. Like his father, however, he proved to be a fraud, hypocrite and a self-seeking villain. He was so clever at dissimulation that he appeared to be pious when he was not, and before long he had somehow completely captured the mind of the Shah.”

[Now] Malik Shah was young, and Hasan was trained in the Shiah art of winning people over by apparent honesty [which means it has the appearance, or the look, of honesty, but truly is not. Just as the notice of apparent violations sent by the FCC (laughs)]. But Nizam was still the most important man in the realm, with an impressive record of honest dealing and achievements. Hasan decided to eliminate him.

The king had asked in that year, 1078, for a complete accounting of the revenue and expenditure of the empire, and Nizam told him that this would take over a year. Hasan, on the other hand, claimed that the whole work could be done in forty days, and offered to prove it [and there's that forty days again]. The task was assigned to him. And the accounts were prepared in the specified time. Something went wrong at this point. The balance of historical opinion holds that Nizam struck back at the last moment, saying, “By Allah, this man will destroy us all unless he is rendered harmless, though I cannot kill my playmate.” [Now] whatever the truth may be, it seems that Nizam managed to have such disparities introduced into the final calligraphic version of the accounts that when Hasan started to read them they appeared so absurd that the Shah, in fury, ordered him to be exiled. As he had claimed to have written the accounts in his own hand, Hasan could not justify their incredible deficiencies [and could not sluff the blame off upon his friend].

Hasan had friends in Isfahan, where he immediately fled. There survives a record of what he said there, which sheds interesting light upon what was in his mind. One of these friends, Abu-al-Fazal, notes that Hasan, after reciting the bitter tale of his downfall, shouted these words, in a state of uncontrollable rage: “If I had two, just two, devotees who would stand by me, then I would cause the downfall of that Turk and that peasant.”

Fazal concluded that Hasan had taken leave of his senses, and tried to get him out of this ugly mood. Hasan took umbrage, and insisted that he was working on a plan, and that he would have his revenge. He set off for Egypt, there to mature his plans.

Fazal was himself later to become a devotee of the Assassin chief, and Hasan, two decades later, reminded him of that day in Isfahan: “Here I am at Alamut, Master of all I survey: and more. The Sultan and the peasant Vizier are dead. Have I not kept my vow? Was I the madman you thought me to be? I found my two devotees, who were necessary to my plans.”

Hasan himself takes up the story of how his fortunes fared after the flight from Persia. He had been brought up in the secret doctrines of Ismailism [the Arab branch of the Mysteries], and recognized the possibilities of power inherent in such a system. He knew that in Cairo there was a powerful nucleus of the society. And, if we are to believe the words of Fazal, he already had a plan whereby he could turn their followers into disciplined, devoted fanatics, willing to die for a leader. What was this plan? [Well,] he had decided that it was not enough to promise paradise, fulfillment, eternal joy to people. He would actually *show* it to them; show it in the form of an artificial paradise, where houris played and fountains gushed sweet-scented waters, where every sensual wish was granted amid beautiful flowers and gilded pavilions. And this [dear listeners] is what he eventually did.

Hasan chose a hidden valley for the site of his paradise, described by Marco Polo, who passed this way in 1271:

“In a beautiful valley, enclosed between two lofty mountains, he had formed a luxurious garden stored with every delicious fruit and every fragrant shrub that could be procured. Palaces of various sizes and forms were erected in different parts of the grounds, ornamented with works of gold, with paintings and with furniture of rich silks. By means of small conduits contained in these buildings, streams of wine, milk, honey and some of pure water were seen to flow in every direction. The inhabitants of these places were elegant and beautiful damsels, accomplished in the arts of singing, playing upon all sorts of musical instruments, dancing, and especially those of dalliance and amorous allurement. Clothed in rich dresses, they were seen continually sporting and amusing themselves in the garden and pavilions, their female guardians being confined within doors and never allowed to appear. The object which the chief had in view in forming a garden of this fascinating kind was [simply] this: that Mahomet having promised to those who should obey his will the enjoyments of Paradise, where every species of sensual gratification should be found, in the society of beautiful nymphs, he was desirous of it being understood by his followers that he also was a prophet and a compeer of Mahomet, and had the power of admitting to Paradise such as he should choose to favor. In order that none without his license should find their way into this delicious valley, he caused a strong and inexpugnable castle to be erected at the opening to it, through which the entry was by a secret passage.”

[And thus the legend of Shambala, or the paradise in the mountains, a valley of lush greenery, unending fruits, fair, beautiful maidens. Thus the legend began!]

Hasan began to attract young men from the surrounding countryside, between the ages of twelve and twenty: particularly those whom he marked out as possible material for the production of killers. Every day he held court, a reception at which he spoke of the delights of Paradise … "and at certain times he caused droughts of soporific nature to be administered to ten or a dozen youths, and when half dead with sleep [drugged out of their minds] he had them conveyed to the several palaces and apartments of the garden. Upon awakening from this state of lethargy, their senses were struck by all the delightful objects, and each perceiving himself surrounded by lovely damsels, singing, playing, and attracting his regards by the most fascinating caresses, serving him also with delicious viands and exquisite wines, until, intoxicated with excess and enjoyment, amidst actual [actual, real] rivers of milk and wine, he believed himself assuredly in Paradise, and felt an unwillingness to relinquish its delights. When four or five days had thus been passed, they were thrown once more into a state of somnolency [drugged], and carried out of the garden. Upon being carried to his presence, and questioned by him as to where they had been, their answer was, 'in Paradise, through the favor of your highness'; and then, before the whole court who listened to them with eager astonishment and curiosity, they gave a circumstantial account of the scenes to which they had been witnesses. The chief thereupon addressing them said: 'We have the assurance of our Prophet that he who defends his Lord shall inherit Paradise, and if you show yourselves [if you show yourselves] to be devoted to the obedience of my orders, that happy lot awaits you.' "

[Now] suicide was at first attempted by some [to be able to return to the Paradise that they had just left, not knowing that it was an illusion]; but the survivors were early told that only death in the obedience of Hasan's orders could give the Key to Paradise. In the eleventh century it was not only credulous Persian peasants who would have believed such things were true. Even among [the] more sophisticated people the reality of the gardens and houris of paradise were completely accepted. True, a good many Sufis preached that the garden was allegorical—but that still left more than a few people who believed that they could trust the evidence of their senses.

The ancient *Art of Imposture*, by Abdel-Rahman of Damascus, gives away another trick of Hasan's. [You see,] he had a deep, narrow pit sunk into the floor of his audience-chamber. One of his disciples stood in this, in such a way that his head and neck alone were visible above the floor. [And] around the neck was placed a circular dish in two pieces which fitted together, with a hole in the middle. This gave the impression that there was a severed head on a metal plate standing on the floor. [Now] in order to make the scene more plausible (if that is the word) Hasan had some fresh blood poured around the head, on the plate.

[Then the] recruits were brought in [the initiates]. "Tell them," commanded the chief, "what thou hast seen." [Then] the disciple [appearing as a head on the plate] described the delights of Paradise. "You have seen the head of a man who died, whom you all knew. I have reanimated him to speak with his own tongue." [And then, he would really sever, treacherously, the man's head] in real earnest, and stuck for some time somewhere that the faithful would see it. The effect of this conjuring trick plus murder increased the enthusiasm for martyrdom to the required degree [and gave him unbelievable control over his flock].

There are many documented instances of the recklessness of the fidayeen (devotees) of the Ismailis, one witness being a Westerner who was treated a century later to a similar spectacle to that which had appalled the envoy of Malik Shah.

[But we've got to take a break first, folks. Don't go away, I'll be right back after this very short pause.]

(Interlude music: Theme from The Twilight Zone)[103]

Henry, Count of Champagne, reports that he was traveling in 1194 through Ismaili territory. "The chief sent some persons to salute him and beg that, on his return he would stop at and partake of the hospitality of the castle. The Count accepted the invitation. As he returned, the Dai-el-Kebir ([or] Great Missionary) advanced to meet him, showed him every mark of honor, and let him view his castle and fortresses. Having passed through several, they came at length to one of the towers which rose to an exceeding height. On each tower stood two sentinels clad in white. 'These,' said the Chief, pointing to them, ‘obey me far better than the subjects of your Christians obey their lords;’ and at a given signal two of them flung themselves down, and were dashed to pieces. ‘If you wish,’ said he to the astonished Count, ‘all my white ones shall do the same.’ The benevolent Count shrank from the proposal, and candidly avowed that no Christian prince could presume to look for such obedience from his subjects. When he was departing, with many valuable presents, the Chief said to him meaningly, ‘By means of these trusty servants I get rid of the enemies of our society.’

---

[103] Composed by Marius Constant.

[Now] further details of the mentality of Hasan are given in what is supposed to be an autobiographical account of his early days: and it probably is in fact such, because the method of his conversion does seem to follow the pattern which has been observed in fanatics, of whatever religious or political persuasion.

He was, he says, reared in the belief of the divine right of the Imams, by his father. He early met an Ismaili missionary (Emir Dhareb) with whom he argued strenuously against the Emir's particular form of creed. Then, sometime later, he went through a bout of severe illness, in which he feared to die, and began to think that the Ismaili doctrine might really be the road to redemption and Paradise. If he died unconverted, he might be damned. Thus it was that as soon as he recovered he sought out another Ismaili propagandist, Abu Najam, and then others. Eventually he went to Egypt, to study the creed at its headquarters.

He was received with honor by the Caliph, due to his former position at the Court of Malik Shah. In order to increase their own importance, the high officials of the Court made a good deal of public play of the significance of the new convert; but this fact seemed in the end to help Hasan more than it did them. He entered into political intrigue and was arrested, then confined in a fortress. No sooner had he entered the prison than a minaret collapsed, and in some unexplained way this was interpreted as an omen that Hasan was in reality a divinely protected person. The Caliph, hurriedly making Hasan a number of valuable gifts, had him put aboard a ship sailing for north-west Africa. This gave him the funds which he was to use for setting up his 'paradise'—and also, through some quirk of fate, the disciples whom he sought.

A tremendous storm blew up, terrifying the captain, crew and passengers alike. Prayers were held, and Hasan was asked to join. He refused. “The storm is my doing; how can I pray that it abate?” he asked. [And then says this:] “I have indicated the displeasure of the Almighty. If we sink, I shall not die, for I am immortal. If you want to be saved, believe in me, and I shall subdue the winds.”

[Well] at first the offer was not accepted. Presently, however, when the ship seemed on the point of capsizing, the desperate passengers came to him and swore eternal allegiance. Hasan was still [very] calm; and continued so until the storm abated. The ship was then driven on to the sea-coast of Syria, where Hasan disembarked, together with two of the merchant passengers, who became his first real disciples.

Hasan was not yet ready for the fulfillment of his destiny as he saw it. For the time being, he was traveling under the guise of a missionary of the Caliph in Cairo. From Aleppo he went to Baghdad, seeking a headquarters where he should be safe from interference and where he yet could become powerful enough to expand. Into Persia the road led him, traveling through the country, making converts to his ideas, which were still apparently strongly based upon the secret doctrines of the Egyptian Ismailis. Everywhere he created a really devoted disciple ([or] fidayi) he bade him stay and try to enlarge the circle of his followers. These circles became hatching-grounds for the production of 'self-sacrificers', the initiates who were drawn from the ranks of the most promising ordinary converts. Thus it was that miniature training centers, modeled upon the Abode of Learning, were in being within a very few months of his return to his homeland.

During his travels, a trusted lieutenant—one Hussein Kahini—reported that the Iraki district where the fortress of Alamut was situated seemed to be an ideal place for proselytism. Most of the ordinary people of that place, in fact, had been persuaded into the Ismaili way of thinking. The only obstacle was the Governor, Ali Mahdi, who looked upon the Caliph of Baghdad as his spiritual and temporal lord. The first converts were expelled from the country. [But] before many months, however, there were so many Ismailis among the populace that the Governor was compelled to allow them to return. Hasan, though, he would not brook [would not allow him]. The prospective owner of Alamut decided to try a trick. He offered the Governor three thousand pieces of gold for “the amount of land which could be encompassed by the hide of an ox”. When

Mahdi agreed to such a sale, Hasan produced a skin, cut it into the thinnest possible thongs, and joined them together to form a string which encompassed the castle of Alamut. Although the Governor refused to honor any such bargain, Hasan produced an order from a very highly placed official of the Seljuk rulers, ordering that the fortress be handed over to Hasan for three thousand gold pieces. [Well] it turned out that this official was himself a secret follower of the Sheikh of the Mountain.

The year was A.D. 1090. Hasan was now ready for the next part of his plan. He attacked and routed the troops of the Emir who had been placed in the governorship of the Province, and welded the people of the surrounding districts into a firm band of diligent and trustworthy workers and soldiers, answerable to him [and him] alone. Within two years the Vizier Nizam-ul-Mulk had been stabbed to the heart by an assassin sent by Hasan, and the Emperor Malik Shah, who dared to send troops against him, died in grave suspicion of poison. Hasan's revenge upon his class-fellow was to make him the very first target of his reign of terror. [You see,] with the king's death, the whole realm was split up into warring factions. For long the Assassins alone retained their cohesion. In under a decade they had made themselves masters of all Persian Irak, and of many forts throughout the empire. This they did by forays, direct attack, the poisoned dagger, and in any other manner which seemed expedient [indeed, the ends always justified the means]. The orthodox religious leaders pronounced one interdict after another against their doctrines; all to no effect.

By now the entire loyalty of the Ismailis under him had been transferred from the Caliph to the personality of the Sheikh of the Mountain, who became the terror of every prince in that part of Asia, the Crusader chiefs included. “Despite and despising fatigues, dangers and tortures, the Assassins joyfully gave their lives whenever it pleased the great master, who required them either to protect himself or to carry out his mandates of death. The victim having been pointed out, the faithful, clothed in a white tunic with a red sash, the colors of innocence and blood, went on their mission without being deterred by distance or danger. Having found the person they sought, they awaited the favorable moment for slaying him, and their daggers seldom missed their aim.”

Richard the Lionheart was at one time accused of having asked the 'Lord of the Mountain' to have Conrad of Montferrat killed; a plot which was carried out thus: “Two assassins allowed themselves to be baptized and placing themselves beside him, seemed intent only on praying. But the favorable opportunity presented itself; they stabbed him and one took refuge in the church. But hearing that the prince had been carried off still alive, he again forced himself into Montferrat's presence, and stabbed him a second time; and then expired, without a complaint, amidst refined tortures.”[You see, the method of controlling men's minds that Hasan had perfected was extremely effective and powerful. And not one, not even one, incidence of one of his followers failing to carry out his orders exactly can be found.] The Order of the Assassins had perfected their method of securing the loyalty of human beings to an extent and on a scale which has seldom been paralleled.

The Assassins carried on the battle on two fronts. [You see,] they fought whichever side in the Crusades served their purposes [they fought *with* the Knights Templar and fought *against* the Knights Templars]. At the same time they continued the struggle against the Persians. The son and successor of Nizam-ul-Mulk was laid low by an Assassin dagger. The Sultan, who had succeeded his father Malik Shah and gained power over most of his territories was marching against them. One morning, however, he awoke with an Assassin weapon stuck neatly into the ground near his head. Within it was a note, warning him to call off the proposed siege of Alamut. [Well,] he came to terms with the Assassins [after that], powerful ruler though he undoubtedly was. [You see, the Assassins eventually] had what amounted to a free hand, in exchange for a pact by which they promised to reduce their military power. [It was during their pacts, their treaties, their battles with the Knights Templars that many, some say most, some few even say all, of the Knights Templars were initiated into the Mysteries.]

Hasan lived for thirty-four years after his acquisition of Alamut. On only two occasions since then had he even left his room; yet he ruled an invisible empire as great and as fearsome as any man before—or since. [They say, but his empire may still exist today, changed and melded with other sects of the Mysteries.] [Hasan] seemed to realize that death was almost upon him, and calmly began to make plans for the perpetual continuance [folks] of the Order of the Assassins.

[And we now begin the latter days of the Assassins which we will not finish in this hour but will finish in the next.] The ruler of one the most terrifying organizations the world has ever known was without a lineal successor. [In fact,] he had had both of his sons killed: one for carrying out an unauthorized murder, [and] the other for drinking wine; certainly a case of “do as I say, not as I do". He called his two most trusted lieutenants from the strongholds which they maintained on his behalf: Kia Buzurg-Umid (Kia of Great Promise) and Abu-Ali of Qaswin. Kia was to inherit the spiritual and mystical aspect, while Abu-Ali attended to the military and administrative affairs of the Order. It is said that Hasan bin Sabah died almost immediately afterwards, in 1124, at ninety years of age; having given the world a new word; assassin. 'Assasseen' in Arabic signifies 'guardians', and some commentators have considered this to be the true origin of the word: "guardians of the secrets" [which the Knight Templar took to Europe].

The Organization of the Order, under Hasan, called for Missionaries, Friends who were disciples, and Fidavis, devotees. The last group had been added by Hasan to the Ismaili original, and these were the trained killers. Fidavis wore white, with a girdle, cap or boots of red. In addition to careful coaching in where and when to place the dagger in the victim's bosom, they were trained in such things as languages, the dress and manners of monks, merchants and soldiers, any of whom they were ready to impersonate in carrying out their missions. The chief was known as Sayedna ([which means] Our Prince, [or] Leader), and popularly (because of the mountain stronghold of Alamut), as the Sheikh of the Mountain. [Now, Alamut, or the stronghold of the mountain, was also known as "The Eagle's Nest," and this is what Hitler named *his* mountain retreat, and there's also an Eagle's Nest near Santa Barbara, California, which very few people know anything about . . . yet.][Now, the Sheikh of the Mountain] is the figure referred to in Crusaders' writings as 'Sydney', or 'Senex de Monte', the first word being a literal translation of the word 'Pir': Persian for Ancient, or Sage. There were three Great Missionaries, who ruled three territories. After the Friends and Fidavis came the Laziks, aspirants who were being trained for membership of the society, but were as yet uninitiated.

Hasan reduced the original number of degrees of initiation from nine to the mystical number of seven. A similar number of regulations formed the rules of the Order. This, in fact, comprised the working plan of the spreading of the Faith. The First Rule was that the Missionary must know human psychology in such a way as to be able to select suitable people for admission to the cult; and was summed up in the mnemonic: '*Cast no seeds upon rocks*.' The second rule of procedure was the application of flattery and gaining the confidence of the prospective member.[104] Third came the casting of doubt into the mind, by superior knowledge. Fourthly, the teacher must apply an oath to the student never to betray any of the 'truths' which were to be revealed to him. Now he was told, as the fifth stage, that Ismailism was a powerful secret organization, supported by some of the most important figures of the time. After this, the aspirant was questioned and studied, to discover whether he had absorbed the opinions of the teacher and attached himself sufficiently into a position of dependence upon his ideas. [And] at this stage he was asked to meditate upon the meaning of the reported saying of the prophet that "Paradise lies in the shadow of swords." In the final degree, many difficult passages of the Koran were explained in terms of allegory.

How is it that the rules of this extraordinarily successful Order are known in such detail? [Well,] it so happened that when the Mongols eventually overthrew Alamut by force of arms, their chief Halaku ([meaning] 'Destruction') Khan, asked his chief minister to examine their library. This most learned man, 'Father of Kings' Jawani, later wrote a careful book in which he detailed the organization of the Assassins, whose name he attributed to the use of the drug Hashish, which they were said to use in stupefying candidates for the ephemeral visit to 'paradise'.

It is possible that recruits were made in another way than by selecting gullible, fully grown youths. Legend has it that Hasan, once master of Alamut, used to buy unwanted children from their parents, and train them in implicit obedience and with the sole desire to die in his service.

Buzurg-Umid ([meaning] 'Great Promise'), the second Grand Master ['Grand Master' is still used today, folks], maintained the power of the Assassins on much the same pattern: building new forts, gaining fresh converts, terrorizing those whom he did not want to have killed and using them to further his design of world conquest. Sultan Sanjar of Persia, in spite of several expeditions against the Viper's Nest, as Alamut was now being called, could do little about him. [“Viper's Nest” was the term given by the Assassins' enemies. The Assassins themselves call it the “Eagle's Nest.”] Ambassadors on each side were slain; a notable religious leader was captured by the Assassins, given a mock trial and flung into a furnace. The Grand Master at this time seldom put on the field more than two thousand men at a time: but it must be remembered that they were killers acting under an iron discipline, and more than a match for any organized army that they might ever have to face. Now the Order began to spread in Syria, where the continued contact with the Crusaders was established.

---

[104] Flattery: This is the first secret of mass mind control and can be observed as the foundation stone of virtually every false religion, party, cult, philosophy, system and training. How can modern man free himself when . . . arrogant hypnopatsies have been told by their masters they are "Demi-gods" and demi-gods are never deceived or distracted. They are too smart! ~Michael A. Hoffman II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare,* 1995

The warriors of the Cross were in fairly effective control of an area extending from the Egyptian border to Armenia in the north. Bahram, a Persian leader of the Assassin cult from Astrabad, gained control of a mighty fortress in Syria, in the region known as the Valley of Demons (Wadi-el-Jan), and from there spread out from one fort to another. The Grand Prior Bahram now moved to an even more substantial fortified place, Massyat. Bahram's successor, Ismail the Lash-Bearer, planted a trained devotee on the saintly Vizier of Baghdad, into whose confidence he worked his way to such an extent that this Assassin, now called (laughs) the 'Father of Trust', was actually made Grand Judge of Baghdad.

The Crusaders had by now been about thirty years in the Holy Land, and the Assassins decided that they could usefully form an alliance with them aimed against Baghdad. A secret treaty was therefore made between the Grand Master and Baldwin II, King of Jerusalem, whereby the Ismaili Grand Judge would have opened the gates of Baghdad treacherously to the Crusaders, if the fortified city of Tyre were handed over to the Assassins for their part in the transaction.

[Well, (laughs) as with most plans,] something went wrong. The judge had ordered an underling to open the city's gates. This servant had told the military commander of Damascus, who lost no time in killing the man, the Vizier and six thousand people believed to be secret Assassins within the city. The Damascus garrison fell upon the Crusaders and beat them back in a thunderstorm which the Christian warriors attributed to divine anger at their unworthy pact, and the Assassins as an attempt by the powers of Nature to allow the Crusaders into the city under its cover.

Meanwhile the Grand Master was indulging in an orgy of destruction of individual rulers who opposed his creed; the list is interminable, but this is a fair example: “The celebrated Aksunkur, Prince of Mosul, was a warrior equally dreaded by the Christians and the Assassins. As this Prince, on his return from Ma'ara Masrin, where the Moslem and Christian hosts had parted without venturing to engage, entered the Mosque at Mosul to perform his devotions, he was attacked at the moment when he was about to take his usual seat by [not one, but] eight Assassins, disguised as dervishes. Three of them fell below the blows of the valiant Emir; but ere his people could come to his aid, he had received his death-wound and expired.”

The fanaticism which inspired the killers was shared, it seems, by other members of their families, who had been thoroughly trained in the bloody creed: for the historian Kamal-ed-Din relates, “On this occasion when the mother of one of the youths who attempted Aksunkur's life heard that he had been slain, she painted her face and donned the gayest raiment and ornaments, rejoicing that her son had been found worthy to die the glorious death of a martyr in the cause of the Imam. But when she saw him return alive and unscathed, she cut off her hair and blackened her countenance, and would not be comforted.”

Things thus continued for the fourteen years and a quarter of the Second Grand Master's rule. When he died he nominated his son Kia Mohammed as his successor. Under Mohammed the killings continued, a part of the sea-coast of Palestine came into Assassin hands, and the cult leaders reaffirmed their overt belief in orthodox Islam. In public, Ismailis were ordinary Moslems; the secret doctrine of the divinely guided leader was not to be discussed with the uninitiated.

[No longer reading]

Don't miss tomorrow night's show. Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(Outro music: Night on Bald Mountain)[105]

---

[105] Composed by Modest Mussorgsky. It is played during the final segment of the Disney film *Fantasia (1940).* During the segment a demon called Chernabog is portrayed with a power and intensity rarely seen in Disney films. Chernabog is first seen when he awakes on top of Bald Mountain. It is Walpurgis Night and, using the powers of darkness, he raises ghosts, skeletons, demons, witches, harpies, goblins, and zombies from a nearby town and cemetery. He then summons fire and lava and makes the damned and the other creatures in his control dance and fly around, much to his delight, before he destroys them. In one part he picks up a patch of fire and transforms it into naked women, then into demonic animals, a fleet of imps and finally into fiery, blue satyrs. Ultimately, he drops them into the lava which seals their fiery doom.

Hour 12: The Templars and the Assassins (aired March 2nd, 1993)

No matter what country you're in, or what language you speak: welcome, around the world, to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: Long As I Can See The Light)[106]

Tonight folks, I come to you with a heavy heart. For another one, actually two, of my predictions...one has come true, one is about to come true. The one that has come true involve the loss of life and the injury of over five hundred people. And of course, I'm talking about the bombing of the World Trade Center in New York City. As far back as 1989, and ever since, I've been predicting major terrorist attacks upon the United States. The primary number one target: New York City. I have said it so many times, and so many people attending my lectures, listening to my broadcasts, and who have read my book, are familiar with it. I never, *never* enjoy being right when it involves the loss of life and human injury.

Nevertheless, it is another chalk mark on the board, and I remain the most accurate predictor of future world events in the history of the world. But the one that is about to come true, and has not yet, is the prediction that I made that the United States would send troops to Yugoslavia, and it appears that that is going to happen in the very near future. Anyway, we will see, won't we, as we move into the New World Order, and all of these events are planned to take us directly into one-world totalitarian socialist government. To all those people in New York who lost relatives, or who had friends or relatives that were injured, I offer you my deepest compassion, sympathy, and I wish that I could tell you that that was the end of it, but I can tell you that it is only the beginning. Unless people wake up, it will escalate and there will be more.

Don't forget, folks, Monday, March 15th, 8pm, LaFayette Hotel, 2223 El Cajon Boulevard in San Diego. I'll be there, I'll be giving a three-hour presentation, entitled *The Sacrificed King: On the Assassination of John F. Kennedy*. In it, I will directly connect to the occult worship of Mystery Babylon, the secret societies, and specifically to the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, which really is just the outward form of the old Knights Templar. And I also believe, have reason to believe, that the sovereign and military order of the Knights of Malta was involved, which is just another branch of the old Templar order. So make sure that you're there. Forty dollars is the admission fee unless you're a CAJI member, then the admission fee if thirty dollars. I managed to negotiate a 25% discount with the people who are putting this on and who have invited me to speak. If you're not a CAJI member, you can purchase advance tickets at the Controversial Bookstore in San Diego. If you are a CAJI member, you must buy your tickets at the event. That's the only way, uh, that we can get you the discount. If you would like information on this whole conference that lasts the whole weekend, there's a whole lot of Looney Tunes stuff going on there. There are some good speakers. Uh, my workshop is, uh, Monday night, the last one of the whole conference, and it's not a workshop ticket, so it's a separate event altogether. But you can call and find out about the whole thing in case you want to spend the whole weekend. Call (619)492-8588, that's (619)492-8588, and we still donations to pay for this airtime, folks. C'mon, get out your checkbooks and money orders and help us out here. Send your donation to Stan and make your checks and money orders to WWCR, not to me, I don't want your money. It goes to pay for airtime, that's it, period. Send them to Stan, P.O. Box 889, Camp Verde, Arizona, 86322. That's Stan, P.O. Box 889, Camp Verde, Arizona, 86322. Tell him Bill sent you (laughs), and while you're at it, and even if you don't send a donation, write to Stan or call him and tell him you'd like to receive a packet of information. He'd be glad to send it to you. If you'd like to call him, his number is (602)567-6109. That's (602)567-6109. Please call him during normal waking hours. Stan's getting up there and he likes his sleep, and I don't blame him, so please don't call him, uh, late in the evening or late at night. Let him have some, some of his own time. Call him during the day, during waking hours or early evening, please. Thank you very much for those of you who are doing that. Those of you who are not, please start.

Well, let's continue where we left off and, uh, this is about the society in the Middle East known as the Assassins, and we've covered quite a bit of their history already:

---

[106] Creedence Clearwater Revival, *Cosmo's Factory (album),* 1970

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

But this secret society, [the] most successful of secret societies showed that its strength ultimately depended upon a powerful leader. [Well,] Kia Mohammed was no such [leader]. [And] little by little it became obvious that his son, Hasan the Hated, was the stronger personality. [Now remember, Kia Mohammed was the Old Man of the Mountain, and the mountain lair was called: *The Eagle's Nest.*] Now Hasan, through some magnetic power, was able to capture the imagination of the Assassins, soon having it believed that he himself was none other than the Power of All Powers, the Hidden Imam, who had been mentioned by the first Grand Master; an incarnation of all greatness. So important was [Hasan] that he was the fountain of power, and others only held a [very small] measure of authority because he allowed them to have it [and for no other reason].

This final absurdity was lapped up by members who had been conditioned to believe in things which were not, shall we say, exactly self-evident to the ordinary man. The doctrine of the all-powerful Invisible Imam was a part of Ismailism; and Hasan was ready even during his early manhood to assume the role. But, since his father was able to assert himself by having some two hundred and fifty of Hasan' followers murdered, he thought it wiser to hold his hand. In 1163 his chance came. Mohammed died, and Hasan II issued an order to all Ismailis to collect below the castle of Alamut.

Never before had such an assembly of killers, fanatics and dedicated perverters of the truth been seen. Hasan, probably in a state of megalomania, assured them that he had received a message from the Almighty that as from now, all the bond of religion were loosed: everyone might do as he liked. [Later, in the modern age, we would hear that again as: "*The whole of the Law shall be: do as thou wilt.*"] It was not necessary [he said] to keep up pretences. And, furthermore, he, Hasan, was none other than the Hidden Imam. His word was law; and he was a form of the divinity, not merely relaying instructions from above [but *the* divinity].

[Now] there was one further obstacle [folks]. According to Ismaili doctrine, the Hidden Imam was to be of the Family of Hashim, the blood of Mohammed the Prophet. Such descendants were known and revered: and it was common knowledge that Hasan II was not one of them. He overcame this difficulty by stating that he was not in fact the true son of Kia Mohammed the Persian, but an adopted child of the Caliphial family of Egypt. This pretence was carried on for four years, during which the crazed Hasan showed that he was not as mad as he might have been, by consolidating quite efficiently the power of the cult. Eventually, he was assassinated by his brother-in-law, Namwar ('The Famous'). Now the father-to-son succession seemed to be established. Mohammed II, son of Hasan II, began the cultivation of letters and sciences which was to distinguish successive Grand Masters of the Order. It was a conceit of his, in the time of the greatest flowering of Persian literature, that he [*he*] was supreme among poets and philosophers. He used his assassins [also] to drive this point well home. The Imam Razi, one of the greatest thinkers of the time, refused to acknowledge the Assassins as the most advanced theologians: so Mohammed II sent an envoy to him, promising either a swift death by dagger or a pension of several thousand gold pieces a year. Suddenly [oh yes, suddenly!] the learned Imam's discourses seemed to lose their bite. One day, soon afterwards, he was asked why he did not attack the Assassins as of old. "Because," said the old man, with a nervous glance around the assembly where a murderer might lurk, "their arguments are so sharp, and pointed [and indeed, they were]."

For thirty-five years Mohammed II ruled the Ismailis with a rod of iron; the only law was that of obedience to the Assassin will. The observances of ritual Islam were abolished. A new star had arisen [Remember that star?]: a power to stiffen resistance to Crusader penetration; Saladin, who was to become an implacable foe of the Assassins.

The Syrian branch of the cult grew in power, while the activities of the Eastern Assassins were carried out much more quietly, with missionaries being sent to India, Afghanistan, even the remote Pamir Mountains which straddle China and Russia, where even today adherents of the sect are to be found. Saladin had overcome the other Ismaili branch and original home of Assassinism—Egypt—and restored the true faith to the people of the Nile. He now had enough booty for ten years' war against the Crusaders in Palestine, and troops to spare. His first task was to unify the forces of Islam; and this he determined to do by force if necessary. Sinan, Ancient of the Assassin cult in Syria, decided to oppose this terrible enemy of the Fatimites. Three assassins fell upon Saladin and nearly killed him. This made the sect a priority target for the Saracen chief. The Old Man of the Mountain, for his part [who was now Mohammed II], now unleashed a succession of fanatics, in every kind of disguise, upon Saladin. By 1176, Saladin decided that an end must be put to the cult. He invaded their territory and started to lay it waste, when the Assassin chief offered him freedom of action to fight the Crusaders, and no [*no*] further attempt upon his life, if the cult were spared. [Now] these terms were agreed to, and henceforth no Assassin ever again attempted to molest Sultan Saladin.

This period introduces Sinan as yet another strange and terrible Assassin leader. [For] he had decided that he was the incarnation of all power and deity, and that he would live the part. Sinan was never seen to eat or drink, sleep, or even to spit. [Now can you imagine this? A living, human being never seen to eat or drink, sleep, or even to spit.] Between sunrise and sunset he stood on a pinnacle of rock, dressed in a hair-shirt, and preached his own power and glory to delighted Assassins. [Have you ever worn a hair shirt? Have you ever stood on a pinnacle of rock between sunrise and sunset? I mean, every sunrise and sunset, and wearing a hair shirt every sunrise and sunset? Well, folks, this is historic fact. This is not something that someone made up.] Thus, at one and the same time, there were two chiefs of the Order, each busily telling his own followers that he, and he alone, was God [was God!]. Hasan in Persia, Sinan in Syria, each commanded legions of devoted killers, all committed by oath to follow his path.

When Mohammed II died, he was succeeded by his son Jalaludin, who completely reversed the orders that the Assassins were to have no outward religious observances. [You see] he felt that he could do a great deal by adopting the cloak of orthodox piety, and sent ambassadors far and wide to announce his maintenance of the true faith. He went so far as to curse his predecessors publicly, in order to convince the incredulous that such a people as the Assassins could turn over a new leaf. As a result of what would today be called a long-term and comprehensive propaganda plan, he was acknowledged as a religious leader by half the orthodox monarchs of Islam, and (the first Assassin to be so styled) came to be termed Prince Jalaludin.

Jalaludin died in 1203, after twelve years of leadership of the cult, handing over to Alaeddin ([or] Aladdin) [And you guys thought that it was just a storybook tale, didn't you? Aladdin], a child of nine years of age. Weak, inefficient, stupid, Alaeddin made little mark upon history. [Except in the classic tales of Arabia, the *1001 Arabbian Nights*, for Aladdin in the *1001 Arabbian Nights* is Aladdin, the leader of the Assassins.] It is said that his main activity was tending sheep, to which he was passionately attached, and he even had a small hut built in a sheepfold, where he spent most of his time. [Aladdin] was extraordinarily cruel, in spite of the contact with the sheep, and continued to terrorize in time-honored fashion any person, great or small, who did not pay tribute or otherwise co-operate with the organization.

[And even today, those in power who are in contact with sheep most of the time (laughs) ultimately turn out to be same. And we all know who the sheeple are, don't we?]

The Assassins' hands, ears and eyes were everywhere. Once fully initiated, a man might be sent to a place a thousand miles away, to take up residence and live: waiting for the moment when orders came to him from Alamut to fulfill his fatal destiny [and all the while in-between, furnishing intelligence to the central headquarters of the Assassins]. A story is told of the court of the Shah of Khwarism, thus: “The Ismaili ambassador spent some time with the Vizier. One day, after a splendid banquet when the wine which they had been drinking in violation of the law had mounted into their heads, the ambassador told the Vizier by way of confidence that there were several Ismailis among the pages, grooms, guards and other persons who were immediately about the Sultan. The Vizier, dismayed and at the same time curious to know who these dangerous attendants were, besought the ambassador to point them out to him, giving him his napkin as a pledge that nothing evil should happen to them. Instantly, at a sign from the envoy, five of the persons who were attendants in the chamber stepped forth, avowing themselves to be concealed Assassins, ‘On such a day and at such an hour,’ said one of them, an Indian, to the Vizier, ‘I might have slain thee without being seen or punished; and if I did not do so it was only because I had no orders from my superiors.’ ”

The Vizier [of course] begged for his life. But word got the Sultan, who ordered the Assassins to be apprehended and burned alive, and “the five chamberlains were cast on the flaming pyre, where they died exulting at being found worthy to suffer in the service of the great Sheikh of the Mountain [so powerful was their devotion to the cult].” The Assassins had the last laugh, for an order arrived immediately afterwards from Alamut, that the Shah must pay ten thousand pieces of gold as compensation for each man killed—which he did [or be killed himself].

Another subsidiary activity which the Assassins delighted in was holding captive in Alamut of useful, rare and distinguished personages who could be of value to them in educational, military or other spheres. [And] one was a physician, another a famous astronomer, a third the greatest painter in Persia, who worked to the order of the chief alone.

The end of a chapter was near, for the Mongol hordes under Halaku, lieutenant of Chinghiz, were steadily destroying all the civilization of Islam which lay in their inexorable path westwards. Rukneddin, son of Alaeddin, succeeded him and tried at first to turn the Mongol tide. After a series of encounters, pitched battles, intrigues and counter-intrigues, Rukneddin was taken. He played for time as long as he could, but was eventually murdered in his own turn by the victorious Mongol chief's men. Assassin power in Persia was broken, and what remained of the members were ordered—none knows by whom—to conceal their faith and await a signal that the cult was in full operation again. Alamut was silenced, and the Syrian headquarters alone remained.

[And if it had not been for the refusal of the Christian kings in Europe to send ambassadors to make a treaty, or a new Crusade, with the Mongol horde, then all of Islam would have been decimated. But it was not, for the Christian kings, even though they would have liked to regain their foothold in the Middle East, had problems of their own and ignored the Mongol emissaries.]

It was a long time until the Mamluk Sultan of Egypt was able to overcome the Mongol thrust. In 1260, however, he carried the banners of Islam victoriously against them, and restored the fortress of Alamut and other properties to the Assassins, who were strongly surviving underground. They soon found that they had exchanged one master for another, for the Egyptians were now employing them for their own purposes [and required them to undergo a new initiation, that of the ancient Egyptian Mysteries of Babylon]. Ibn Batuta, the great traveler of the fourteenth century, found them well entrenched in their former strong places, being used as the “arrows of the Sultan of Egypt with which he reaches his enemies.”

The supposed suppression of the creed which followed the Mongol destruction did not in fact take place. Copying each other, historians (laughs) have asserted that Assassinism died six hundred years ago [nothing could be further from the truth]. Now and again, however, fresh facts of their continued existence still come to light. In the eighteenth century an Englishman, the British Consul at Aleppo in Syria, was at pains to make this better known: “Some authors assert,” he writes, “that these people were entirely extirpated in the thirteenth century by the Tartars . . . but I, who have lived so long in this infernal place, will venture to affirm that some of their spawn still exists in the mountains that surround us; for nothing is so cruel, barbarous and execrable that is not acted, and even gloried in, by these cursed [Assassins].”

The Assassins were widely dispersed throughout Asia. The rise of the Thugs, the secret society of assassination of India, followed the Mongol invasion of Persia. Indeed, at least one of the Thug recognition-signals (Ali bhai Salam!) indicates salutations to Ali, the descendant of the Prophet most greatly revered by the Assassins. Ismailis, not all of them recognizing the one chief, reside in places as far apart as Malaya, East Africa and Ceylon (Sri Lanka). They would not necessarily feel that they are Assassins in the same sense as the extremists who followed the old Sheikhs of the Mountains; but at least some of them revere the descendants of the Lords of Alamut to the extent of deification.

The modern phase of Ismailism dates from 1810, when the French consul at Aleppo found that the Assassins in Persia recognized as their divinely-inspired chief a reputed descendant of the Fourth Grand Master of Alamut, who then lived at Kehk, a small village between Isfahan and Tehran. This Shah Khalilullah “was revered almost like a god and credited with the power of working miracles . . . the followers of Khalilullah would, when he pared his nails, fight for the clippings; the water in which he washed became holy water.”

The sect next appear to the public gaze through an odd happening. In 1866, a law case was decided in Bombay. There is in that city a large community of commercial men known as Khojas: “A Persian,” the record tells us, “Aga Khan Mehalati (i.e., a native of Mehelat, a place situated near Khek) had sent an agent to Bombay to claim from the Khojas the annual tribute due from them to him, and amounting to about £ 10,000. The claim was resisted, and the British court was appealed to by Aga Khan. Sir Joseph Arnold investigated his claim. The Aga proves his pedigree, showing that he descended in a direct line from the fourth Grand Master of Alamut, and Sir Joseph declared it proved; and it was further demonstrated by the trial that the Khojas were members of the ancient sect of the Assassins, to which sect they had been converted four hundred years before by an Ishmaelite missionary, who composed a work which has remained the sacred book of the Khojas."

In the First Afghan War, the then Aga Khan contributed a force of light cavalry to the British forces. For this he was awarded a pension. Hitti, in his *History of the Arabs*, notes (p. 448, 1951 edition) that the Assassin sect, known as Khojas and Malwas, gave over a tenth of their revenues to the Aga Khan, who "spends most of his time as a sportsman between Paris and London."

The influence of the new form of organization and training, as well as initiatory techniques, of the Assassins upon later societies has been remarked by a number of students [and I have found in my research that it's absolutely true]. That the Crusaders knew a good deal about the Ismailis is shown from the detailed descriptions of them which survive. S. Ameer Ali, an Orientalist of considerable repute, goes further in his assessment: "From the Ismailis the Crusaders borrowed the conception which led to the formation of all the secret societies, religious and secular, of Europe. The institutions of Templars and Hospitallers; the Society of Jesus, founded by Ignatius Loyola, composed by a body of men whose devotion to their cause can hardly be surpassed in our time; the ferocious Dominicans, the milder Franciscans—may all be traced either to Cairo or to Alamut. The Knights Templar especially, with their system of grand masters, grand priors and religious devotees, and their degrees of initiation, bear the strongest analogy to the Eastern Ismailis."

[We've got to take a break, folks. I'll be right back, right after this short pause.]

(Interlude music: Moonglow)[107]

[In the year 1110, a mysterious order called the Prieuré de Sion appeared upon the Temple Mount in Jerusalem. This mysterious secret order, the Prieuré de Sion, was eventually to crown the first king, the first Christian king of Jerusalem. When they appeared in the Temple Mount in 1110, they recruited nine knights to comb, to scour the Temple Mount, the passages and caverns and tunnels beneath for the ancient remains of the relics of their religion.]

Later in A.D. 1118, nine knights, [supposedly] concerned for the welfare of pilgrims to the Holy Land, bound themselves together in the creation of a knightly Order. [This order, again existing of nine knights, just like the original nine knights, were commissioned by the Prieuré de Sion.] In under two hundred years [folks] this organization had become one of the most powerful single entities—if not the greatest—[power ever to exist] in Europe. [They were the first international bankers. The first that ever existed in the world.] A few years later it was utterly destroyed. [They say, however, as you're going to find out, they were not destroyed at all, but merely driven underground.] The zeal of religion, the conditioning which made men support a dedicated cause with all of their might, was likewise the instrument of their destruction. Nothing less than religious fervor could have smashed the Order: as nothing less could have created it.

[And folks, you're going to find it difficult to believe, but the rise of this order and destruction, at least publically, of this order has such a great bearing on events today that you could say that everything that has happened since has been brought about by this one series of acts.]

Were the Knights Templar devil-worshippers, secret Saracens indulging in obscene orgies? Did they adore a head, spit on the Cross, use the word, 'Yallah' [which means literally in Arabic,] (O Allah!) in their rituals? Did they learn their ways from the terrible sect of the Assassins?

---

[107] Composed by Will Hudson and Irving Mills, words by Eddie De Lange, made famous by Benny Goodman, 1934

[Well, yes folks, they did. And they are the link—at least, in that day, would have been considered the modern link—between the ancient Mystery Religion of Babylon and Europe. For the religion had come to Europe long, long before the Templars ever emerged, and made their appearance in the ancient worship of the sun by the Druids and the Celts, and the tribes, the Germanic tribes who had made their way thousands of years ago from the Middle East up through Asia, and across Russia and into Europe. They brought Mystery Babylon with them, and practiced it as what we now know of today as the pagan religion. And Stonehenge is actually an ancient Babylonian temple of the sun. And you will find how all this connects later.]

[But the origin of this was lost, and the ability to control large numbers of people, by the use of the hidden knowledge of the ages, was lost. It wasn't until the Knights Templar bought [sic] and brought the Mystery Religion of Babylon to Europe, that the ancient, ancient worship of the sun again took hold. Amongst the Christian countries, in the guise of Christianity, which was itself at that time—I'm not talking about the teachings of Christ now, I'm talking about the perversion of the teachings of Christ—the melding of the teachings of Christ with the ancient worship of the sun, the Mystery Religion of Babylon which became the Catholic church was indeed another branch of the ancient Mystery Religion of Babylon. And some of you out there may be confused from all of this.]

[If you've been listening from the beginning of this series, then you're right on target; you're not confused, you know exactly what I'm talking about. If you picked up this series somewhere in the middle, then you need to call Stan and order the studio quality tapes. They're in stereo, they're on TDK tapes, first-quality tapes and crystal clear. You need to order this series from the first tape, the very first, and that was broadcast on February the 12th, I believe, a Friday. But anyway, Stan will know. Give him a call at (602) 567-6109. That's (602) 567-6109 or write to Stan and ask him for an information packet at P.O. Box 889, Camp Verde, Arizona, 86322. That's P.O. Box 889, Camp Verde, Arizona, 86322.]

[Now, folks,] the original objective of the Order [of the Temple—Knights Templar], which immediately because the subject of applause throughout Christendom, was to combine the two functions of monk and knight, to live chastely and fight the Saracents with the sword and spirit. The Sweet Mother of God [at least outwardly they say] was chosen as their patroness; and they bound themselves to live in accordance with the rules of St. Augustine, electing as the their first leader Hugh de Payens. [Now] King Baldwin II granted him a part of his palace to live in and gave them a grant toward its upkeep. [Now the part of the palace they lived in was an ancient mosque, which was built upon the actual location of the old Temple of Solomon, on the Temple Mount in Jerusalem.]

[The Knights Templar] vowed to consecrate their swords, arms, strength and lives to the defense of the mysteries of the Christian faith; to pay complete and utter obedience to the orders of the Grand Master; to fight whenever commanded, regardless of perils, for the faith of Christ as they understood it. Among the vows taken which were forbade their yielding even a foot of land to the enemy [whoever the enemy was] and not to retreat, even if attacked in the proportion of three to one. They choose the name *militia temple*—Soldiers of the Temple—after the temple supposedly built by Solomon in Jerusalem, near which they had been assigned quarters by the King. [But in reality had nothing to do with the Temple of Solomon.]

Some say that the Templars derived their idea of their Order from that of the Hospitallars, who looked after Catholic pilgrims to Palestine; for there was little hospitality to be had from the native Orthodox Christians of those parts. Others hold that there was an even older Order from which they received their inspiration. No reliable evidence is, at this point however, available. [According to the "establishment" historians, although for those who really, really research the true history of the secret orders, and specifically the Knights Templars, there's a direct connection to the Assassins and the Roshaniya.]

Although the Templars were so poor than two men had to share a horse [they say, but that is not true at all] (and their Seal commemorated this decades after they became one of the richest communities of their time), they soon attracted favorable notice and support. [Now, the two knights riding a horse was a symbol of sacrifice. It denoted their vows of poverty. In truth, each knight now only had a horse, but he had what they called a yeoman. He had a spare horse, he had a pack horse, and he had several horses in reserve, and a whole train of servants. But the Knights Templar were the first true—as we know it in modern times, in modern times there were others before, but they were the first true in modern times—and by modern, I'd say, from the time that Europe escaped from the old tribal of paganism. In other words in 1110, I consider that to be beginning of the modern age. Although historians may disagree with me, it's the beginning of everything that has happened since, and everything that's happening today can be traced right to the door of the Knights Templar, and that's why I say that. They were the first modern order to practice what we now know as true Communism. They were the ones who brought international Socialism into Europe, which has always been the tenet and the creed of the Mystery Religion of Babylon.] Only one year after their establishment, Fulk, Count of Anjou, who had come to Jerusalem on a pilgrimage, joined as a married member and gave them an annual grant of thirty pounds of silver. This example was soon followed by other devout Western princes.

For the first nine years of their existence, the knights continued to live a life of chastity and poverty in accordance with their vows. They adopted a striped black and white banner, called the *Beauséant*, after their original piebald horse; and this word also became their battle-cry. Special raiment they had none, and they wore whatever clothes were given to them by the pious. But little by little, as one writer puts it, they were to become "haughty and insolent".

[And the black and white banner, the translation of the meaning of which was for the, again, exoteric, for the real meaning of the black and white banner was the meaning of the androgynous god, the positive and the negative, the black and the white, the yin and the yang, the male and the female combined into one, and that was the real meaning of the black and white banner. And it's carried forth today on the floor of many of the temples of Freemasonry where the black and white checkered pattern exists, and in one famous cathedral in Europe built by the Knights Templar. They disguised their esoteric religion in an exoteric manner that would be accepted by Christianity.]

Baldwin of Jerusalem, who had been a prisoner in the hands of the Saracens and knew of their disunity, realized at about this time that Islam must eventually unite against the Christian invasion, and the decided that the Templars who prove ideal allies in the battles which were to come. In 1127, therefore, he sent two Templars with his strong recommendation to the Pope, applying for official recognition of the Order by the Holy See.

[And this is the first time that the Templars even were considered to be close to the center of religion, the Christian religion in that day, the Catholic church, the Pope. For they were not commissioned as a Christian order; they were not commissioned by the Pope or by the church, and this is a big myth that the Knights Templar started out to protect the church and to protect the pilgrims on their way to Jerusalem. They were established first, primarily, and foremost as a branch of the ancient order of the Religion of Mystery Babylon. And it's indicative of the strategies that they've used since to endear themselves to whatever the established power, or the beliefs of the majority of the people might be.]

[When they went to see the Pope,] they had an introduction to St. Bernard himself, the Abbot of Clairvaux, who was known to be admirer of theirs, and who was a nephew of one of their envoys. Then the Grand Master himself arrived in Europe, and received the eulogistic opinion of the Abbot: "They go not headlong into battle, but with care and foresight, peacefully, as true children of Israel. But as soon as the fight had begun, they rush without delay upon the foe . . . and know no fear . . . one has often put to flight a thousand; two, ten thousand . . . gentler than lambs and grimmer than lions; theirs is the mildness of monks and the valor of the knight." [Now folks, this was a strong recommendation, and this testimonial was part of the campaign of the Templars in their efforts at recognition of the Pope. All of you who have thought that they began as a religious order in the first place are so way off base that it's pathetic. And neither were the Jesuits a religious order in the first place, but we'll get that together in another broadcast.] [But] on the 31st [of] January [in the year] 1128, the Master appeared before the Council of Troyes. This formidable body consisted of the Archbishops of Rheims and Sens, ten bishops and a number of abbots—including St. Bernard himself - presided over by the Cardinal of Albano, the Papal legate. They were approved; and Pope Honorius chose for them a white mantle, completely plain. The red cross was added by order of Pope Eugenius III in 1146. [And see, you thought the Templars thought of this. Nope not at all. This was mandated by two Popes: first, the white mantle, completely plain; and then later the red cross was added by Pope Eugenius III in 1146.]

Hugh de Payens now took his delegation through France and England, and collected a number of recruits. Gifts and grants were showered upon the Order; lands, rents and arms were forthcoming from all quarters. Richard I of England was enthusiastic about them. By 1133, King Alfonso of Aragon and Naverre, who had fought the Spanish Moors in twenty-nine battles, had willed his country to them; although when the Moors finally laid him low his nobles prevented the Templars from claiming their rights. [Nevertheless, this was of great honor. In fact, to my knowledge and to our research into history, it never had before been done.]

In 1129 the Master, accompanied by three hundred knights, recruited from the noblest houses of Europe, led a huge train of pilgrims to the Holy Land. It was at this time that the Templars formed part of the Christian contingent which, allied with the Assassins, tried to take Damascus. [And it wasn't the first time nor the last that the Christian Knights Templar, or supposedly Christian Knights Templar (they really weren't Christian at all) were allied with the Assassins.] Were they (as the Orientalist von Hammer alleges)[108] connected in some secret way with the Assassins? [Yes, our research shows that it is a historical fact. And it is also a historical fact that the Assassins were prepared to adopt Christianity if they could gain greater power thereby (Christianity, that is, on the surface, just as the Knights Templar had done)]. Hammer points to the similarities of the two organizations. The followers of Hasan Ibn Sabah were in contact with the Templars, and had a similar method of organization. They were in existence before the Templars were formed: “The Ismailians ([or] Assassins) was the original, and [folks] the Order of the Templars, [was] the copy.”

The balance of Western opinion is against this contention; more particularly because, one feels from wide reading of historians, great sympathy is felt for the cruelly treated and a arbitrarily dispossessed Templars. Thus Keightley, who made a close study of the Order those who would claim that the Templars were an Assassin branch [but, when you do research into the (laughs) associations and memberships of Keightley, you'll find that Keightley was himself a Knight Templar. And he said:]

“When, nearly thirty years after their institution, the Pope gave them permission to wear a cross on their mantle, like the rival Hospitaller Order, no color could present itself to well suited to those who daily and hourly exposed themselves to martyrdom as that of blood, in which there was so much of what was symbolical. With respect to internal organization it will, we apprehend, be always found that this is for the most part of the growth of time and the product of circumstances; and it always nearly the same where these last are similar.”[109]

[And you find this kind of rhetoric, semantics, all throughout the writings of those who wish to cover the true origin and the true meaning of Mystery Babylon.]

The famous question of the three thousand gold pieces paid by the Syrian branch of the Assassins to the Templars is another matter which has [of course] never been settled. One opinion holds that this money was given as a tribute to the Christians; the other, that it was a secret allowance from the larger to the small organization. [Which it really was as the Assassins wished to expand their control and remember their original goal was to take over the entire world by the systematic infiltration and control of each individual country.] Those who think that the Assassins were fanatical Moslems, and therefore would not form any alliance with those who to them were infidels, should be reminded that to the followers of the Old Man of the Mountains only he was right, and the Saracens who were fighting the Holy War for Allah against the Crusaders were as bad as anyone else who did not accept the Assassin doctrine.

[And it is true today: “If you are not one of us, you are nothing.” “The ends justify the means.” “The strength of our Order exists in the fact that we manifest ourselves under many different names and many different occupations, and sometimes even seem to oppose ourselves. But at the highest level, we are of one mind.” And I could go on, and on (laughs), and on, and you all know that I could go on and on and on. For I have studied this for so many years that I eat, drink and sleep it. Oh yes.]

[Well, eventually] grave charges against the Templars during the Crusades included the allegation that they were fighting for themselves alone. More than one historical incident bears this out. The Christians had besieged the town of Ascalon in 1153, and were engaged upon burning down the walls with large piles of inflammable materials. Part of the wall fell after a whole night of this burning. The Christian army was about to enter, when the Master of the Temple (Bernard de Tremelai) claimed the right to take the town himself. This was because the first contingent into a conquered town had the whole spoils. As it happened, the garrison rallied and killed the Templars, closing the breach. There seem good grounds for believing that the power which they had gained caused the Templars to devote their efforts as much to their own Order's welfare as to the cause of the Cross, in spite of their tremendous sacrifices for that cause. Having no loyalty to any territorial chief, they obeyed their Master alone, and hence no softening political pressure could be put upon them. [Well,] this might well have led to an idea that they were an invisible super-state [and that is exactly the fact]; and this does show some similarity with the invisible empire of the Assassins. If none can deny their bravery, their high-handedness and exclusivity, in less than a hundred and fifty years after their founding gave them the reputation of considering themselves almost a law unto themselves.

---

[108] Chevalier Joseph von Hammer, *The History of the Assassins: Derived from Oriental sources*, 1835

[109] Thomas Keightley, *Secret Societies of the Middle Ages*, 1837

[No longer reading]

And now, dear listeners, we get into the meat, the direct connection between the historical events and the events that are happening today. Don't miss even one episode of this series.

Good night, and may God bless each and every one of you.

(Outro music: Stardust)[110]

---

[110] Performed by unknown artist

Hour 13: The End of the Templars (aired March 3rd, 1993)

I'm William Cooper, and you're listening to the Hour or the Time.

Well, folks, we've been getting calls from all over the nation, and even in some foreign countries. They have been worried. They've called Stan; his phone has been ringing off the hook. It seems some rather spurious and ambitious individuals have been spreading a rumor by word-of-mouth, by the written word, and even on talk radio all across this country that I am dead.

Well, folks, here's my answer to that:

(Intro music: Still Crusin')[111]

To all of my regular listeners and all the ships at sea around the world: it’s me, William Cooper, speaking to you from the dead where I have, indeed, seen the light and I turned it off.

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

“One of the most disgraceful acts which stain the annals of the Templars,” says even one of their ardent admirers, “occurred in the year 1155, when Bertrand de Blancford (whom William of Tyre calls a 'pious and God-fearing man') was Master of the Order. In a contest for the supreme power in Egypt, which the viziers, bearing the proud title of Sultan, exercised under the phantom-caliphs, Sultan Abbas who had put to death the Caliph his master found himself obliged to fly from before the vengeance of the incensed people. With his harem and his own and a great part of the royal treasures, he took his way through the desert. [Well,] a body of Christians, chiefly Templars, lay in wait for the fugitives near Ascalon. The resistance offered by the Moslems was slight and very ineffectual; Abbas himself was either slain or he fled, and his son Nasiredin professed his desire to become a Christian. The far larger part of the booty of course fell to the Templars; but this did not satisfy their avarice. They sold Nasiredin to his father's enemies for 60,000 pieces of gold. [Now, if you think that's a lot of money in this day and age, it was a veritable king’s ransom in that.] And [they] stood by to see him bound hand and foot, and placed in a sort of cage or iron-latticed sedan, on a camel to be conducted to Egypt, where a death by protracted torture awaited him.”

It was not the Templars alone [folks] who were guilty of arrogance and worse. The Hospitallers had deteriorated from their first fine beginnings; and the annals of both Orders are not innocent of unpleasantness, though they are indeed well filled with tales of glory. The Hospitallers, for instance, refused to pay tithes to the Patriarch of Jerusalem, even going so far as to erect immense buildings in front of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, as a practical demonstration of their own importance. [Now] when the Patriarch entered his church, they rang their bells so loudly that he cannot make himself heard. There is an occasion recorded when “the congregation was assembled in church, the Hospitallers rushed into it in arms, and shot arrows among them as if they were robbers or infidels. These arrows were collected and hung up on Mount Calvary, where Christ had been crucified, to the scandal of these recreant knights. On applying to Pope Adrian IV for redress, the Syrian clergy found him and his cardinals so prepossessed in favor of his enemies—(laughs) bribed by them in fact, [it] was said— that they had no chance of relief.”

This, then, [folks] was the background of the rise of the Templars, and the flavor of their environment. [Now] if one adds to these elements the fact that various very heterodox sects—gnostic, Manichae and the rest—still lurked in the Holy Land, together with a great deal of magic and superstition of every kind, [then] there is a possibility, to say the least, that the Templars were infected by it. [The facts, indeed, show that they were not only infected, but taken by it, and were initiated into not only by the branch known as the Assassins, but veritably arose from the secret sects in Syria.] The contention which has been made, that such heresies and archaic religions and practices do not survive until the Templar period, is demonstrably false, although much play has been made of it by those who defend the Order; for do such sects not endure there until this [very] day? [Hmm? Well,] this is not to say that the Templars were guilty of the practices which formed the substance of the confessions later to be wrung from them by barbaric torture, which we will examine in due course. But a secret tradition and magical rites may well have played a part in their hidden lore and practices. It should also be remembered [folks] that towards the end there were Templars who were of actual Palestinian birth, who would have every opportunity of absorbing the unorthodox beliefs of the many schools of a magico-religious nature which existed in the area. The Grand Master Philip of Nablus ([in] 1167), for instance, was a Syrian, and many Crusaders were Levantine lords, whatever their original blood, speaking Arabic with perfection.

---

[111] The Beach Boys, *Still Cruisin' (album),* 1989

It was 1162 that the Magna Carta of the Order was obtained by the Templars: the Bull *Omne Datum Optimum*, often described as the keystone of their power. [And] through this instrument they were able to consolidate their authority and preserve their secrets against intrusion. They were to find, too, that it did much to excite the envy of their opponents.

Pope Adrian IV had died; [the] two rival popes were elected: Alexander III by the Sicilian group, and Victor III by the imperial party. At first the Templars acknowledged Victor; but in 1161 they switch their allegiance to Alexander. There was probably some sort of secret arrangement behind this, for by January 7th of the following year the famous Bull was issued. By the terms of this document, the Templars were released from all spiritual ties except to the Holy See [itself]; they were permitted to have special burial-grounds in their own houses; they could have chaplains of their own; they had no tithes to pay; [which in that day and age was miraculous] and were allowed to receive tithes [which was absolutely incredible]. Nobody who had once entered the Order could leave it, except to join one with a stricter discipline. The stage [dear listeners] was set for clerical hatred of the Templars and Hospitallers (who had similar privileges) [and in fact were one and the same and still are today], although the advantages to the Pope from the combined support of these two Orders could hardly be overestimated.

In 1184 an incident occurred which inspired a great deal of distrust of the Order, although the rarity of its occurrence should have underlined the fact that it was nothing of much consequence. [You see,] the English knight, Robert of St. Albans left the Templars, became a Moslem, and led an army for Saladin against Jerusalem, then in the hands of the Franks. The charge against the Templars that they were secret Mussulmans or allies with the Saracens does not seem borne out by the fact that Saladin accused them of treacherous truce-breaking and other crimes and—unlike his usual chivalrous self—took a solemn oath that he would execute such Templar captives as he could obtain, as “beyond the limits of Islam and infidelity alike.” Nor did they make any [attempts] to invoke any religious bond with Saladin when they were captured, as we know from the Arabic *Life of Saladin* written contemporaneously by his secretary, Qadi Yusuf. Strong evidence of this is given in the events which followed the terrible Battle of Hittin. Two years before, Saladin had made a pact with the Assassins that they would give him a free hand to continue his Holy War against the Franks [which we discussed on an earlier program]. On July 1st, 1187, he captured Tiberias. He attacked nearby Hittin at dawn on Friday, July 3rd. Thirty thousand [Christians; 30,000 Christians!] were captured, including the King of Jerusalem. No Templar [not one] is mentioned in the detailed Arab account as asking for mercy on religious or other grounds, although all knew that Saladin had issued a war-cry: “Come to death, Templars!” The Grand Master, Gerard of Ridefort, and several other knights were among those taken. Saladin offered them their lives if they would see the light of the True Faith. [Well, according to history,] none accepted, and all these knights were beheaded except, admittedly, the Templar Grand Master. [Could it be that he did accept the true faith, or the “light of the true faith,” as Saladin had put it?] A non-Templar, Reginald of Chatillon, tried to invoke the sacred code of Arab hospitality, and other Crusaders claimed that they were Moslems, and were spared: none of them were Templars or Hospitallers. Reginald and the Templars collectively were sentenced to death for breaking the truce and the “war crime” of killing unarmed pilgrims to Mecca. Arab accounts include only a few references which could be construed as indicating any collusion with the Christian army. One says that on the Friday at midday ([and] the battle lasted for two days), Sultan Saladin issued the attack cry to be passed along the Sarasin host, “On for Islam!”, at which the striped banner of the Templars was raised, “and the Emir Lion-of-the-Faith said, ‘Are those Sultan (Saladin) Yusef’s allies, of whom I have heard from the Reconnaisance men?’” [Well,] this cannot be regarded as anything at all conclusive. The only other reference is to a body of Templars who went over to the Saracen side, and whose supposed descendants survive to this day as the Salibiyya ([which means] Crusader) tribe in north Arabia.

This engagement [folks] spelt the end of real Western power in Palestine for over seven hundred years, although it did stimulate the unsuccessful Third Crusade. Although the Templars—and some other Crusaders—were still in the Holy Land, they had lost almost all of their possessions there. But in the West lay the real seat of their power. At this time their European possessions numbered over seven thousand estates and foundations. Although principally concentrated in France and England, they had extensive properties in Portugal, Castile, Leon, Scotland and Ireland, Germany, Italy, and Sicily. When Jerusalem was lost, their headquarters were transferred to Paris. This building, like all their branch churches, was known as the Temple. It was here that the French King Philip the Fair took refuge in 1306, to escape a civil commotion.[112] It is said that this visit gave him his first insight into the real wealth of the order: [Now, remember, the wealth was not for the members, for they practiced the first true Socialism—international Socialism, or Communism.] the fabulous treasures which his host showed him giving the bankrupt monarch the idea to plunder the knights on the pretext that they were dominated by heresies.

Phillip the Fair was not entirely without some grounds for attacking the Templars. [For] in 1208 we find Pope Innocent III, a great friend of the Order, censuring them publicly for "Causing their churches to be thrown open for Mass to be said every day with loud ringing of bells, bearing the cross of Christ on their breasts but not caring to follow his doctrines which forbid to giving offense to any of the little ones who believe in him. Following the doctrines of demons, they affix their cross of their Order upon the breast of every kind of scoundrel, asserting that whoever by paying two or three pence a year became one of their fraternity could not, even if interdicted, be deprived of Christian burial . . . and thus they themselves, being captive to the devil, cease not to make captive the souls of the faithful, seeking to make alive those whom they knew to be dead . . ."

The first sign of an attempt to bring some sort of physical restraint upon the Templars came from Henry III of England. [For] in 1252 he hinted that he might try to seize some of the property of the Order: "You prelates and religious," he said, "especially you Templars and Hospitallers, have so many liberties and charters that your enormous possessions make you rave with pride and haughtiness. What was imprudently given must therefore be prudently revoked; and what was inconsiderately bestowed must be considerately recalled." [Those were the words of the King.]

The Master of the Templars immediately replied: "What sayest thou, O King? Far be it that thy mouth should utter so disagreeable and silly a word. So long as thou dost exercise justice thou wilt reign; but if thou infringe it, thou wilt cease to be King!"

[Now remember that the Knights Templar at that time were the very first international bankers. They were the wealthiest Order, wealthiest group, then known in the world—even surpassing the kings of the different countries that existed. And even though the Hospitallers were created before the Knights Templar, eventually the two became the same Order, though to the public and to the rulers of Europe, they were different orders with different names.]

The haughty Templars of the fourteenth century owned land and revenues, gained steadily in honor and importance. They might have thrones had they wanted them; for such was their power towards the end that, banded together (as one historian points out), they could have overcome more than one of the smaller countries of Europe. Perhaps, though, they aimed even higher than that. If their eventual aim was world hegemony, they could not have organized themselves better, or planned their aristocratic hierarchy more thoroughly. [And you will see that that's been carried over even onto the modern-day.] The pride, arrogance, and complete confidence and self-sufficiency of the Order is something which shows through even the least inspired pages of the chroniclers. Their power was legendary:

"Everywhere they had churches, chapels, tithes, farms, villages, mills, rights of pasturage, of fishing, of venery, of wood. They had also in many places the right of holding annual fairs which were managed and the tolls received by some of the brethren of the nearest houses or by their donates or servants. The number of their preceptories is, by the most moderate computation, rated at nine thousand; the annual income of the Order put at about six million [pounds] sterling: an [unbelievable, unimaginable] sum for those times! Masters of such a revenue, descended from the noblest houses in

---

[112] Just the year before, Philip had fled from a bloodthirsty mob, angry at the king for debasing the national currency. *Dungeon, Fire and Sword*, p.430

Christendom, uniting in their purses the most esteemed secular and religious characters, regarded as the chosen champions of Christ and the flower of Christian knights, it was not possible for the Templars, in such lax times as the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, to escape falling into the vices of extravagant luxury and overweening pride."

The Order, [folks] when fully developed, was composed of several classes: chiefly knights, chaplains and serving-brothers. Affiliated were those who were attached to the Order in worked for and received its protection, without taking its vows. [And] this affiliation was said to be derived from the Arab 'clientship' association, analogous to blood-brotherhood in tribal associations.

A candidate for knighthood should prove that he was of a knightly family and entitled [yes, entitled] to the distinction. His father must have been a knight or eligible to become one. He had to prove beyond any doubt that he was born in wedlock. The reason for this last requirement was said to be not only religious: there was the possibility that a political head such as a king or prince might influence the Order by managing to have one of his bastard sons enter it, later perhaps to rise to high rank therein, and finally attaching it to the service of his dominion.

The candidate [for initiation] had to be unmarried and free from all obligations. He should have made no vow, nor entered any other Order; and he was not to be in debt. Eventually the competition for admission was so great from eligible people that a very high fee was exacted from those who were to be monk-warriors of the Temple.

All candidates were to be knighted before entry into the Order. But the period of probation which was originally demanded was before very long entirely abolished. No young man could be admitted until he was twenty-one years of age, because he was to be a soldier as well as a monk, and this was the minimum age at which he could bear arms.

When a new knight was admitted to the Order, the ceremony was held in secret. This fact, and persistent rumors, caused the belief that certain ceremonies and tenets were put into practice which deviated more than a little from the rituals of the Church. The ceremony was held in one of the Order's chapels, in the presence of the assembled chapter alone.

The Master (or the Prior, who took his place in chapels other than those at which he was present) opened the proceedings: "Beloved brethren, ye see that the majority are agreed to receive this man as a brother. If there be any among you who knows anything of him, on account of which he cannot lawfully become a brother, let him say it; for it is better that this should be signified beforehand than after he is brought before us."

[And] if no objection was lodged, the aspirant was sent to a small room with two or three experienced knights, to coach him in what he had to know: "Brother, are you desirous of being associated with the Order?" If he agreed, they would dwell upon the trials and rigors of being a Templar. [They would prepare him for initiation.] He had to reply that for the sake of God he was willing to undergo anything in remain in the Order for life; they asked him if he had a wife or was betrothed; had he made vows to any other Order; did he owe money more than he could pay; was he of sound mind and body; was he the servant of any person?

[Well,] after satisfactory answers, the result was passed to the Master. The assembled company was then asked again if they knew anything that might disqualify him. [And] if none objected, they were asked: "Are you willing that he should be brought in, in God's name?" The knights answered, "Let him be brought in, in God's name."

He was now again asked by his sponsors if he still desired to enter the Order. Receiving an affirmative reply they led him to the chapter, where he folded his hands and flung himself upon his knees: "Sir, I am come before God and before you for the sake of God and our dear Lady, to admit me into your Society, and the good deeds of the Order, as one who will be all his life long servant and *slave* of the Order."

"Beloved brother," answered the receptor, "you are desirous of a great matter, for you see nothing but the outward shell of our Order." [Now let me repeat that again in case you weren't listening, folks.] "Beloved brother," answered the receptor, "you are desirous of a great matter for you see nothing but the outward shell of our Order. It is only the outward shell when you see that we have fine horses and rich caparisons, that we eat and drink well and are splendidly clothed. From this you conclude that you will be well off with us. But you know not rigorous maxims which are in our interior. For it is a hard matter for you, who are your own master, to become the servant of another. You will hardly be able to perform, in future, what you wish yourself. For when you may wish to be on this side of the sea, you will be sent to the other side; when you will wish to be in Acre, you will be sent to the district of Antioch, to Tripolis, or to Armenia; or you will be sent to Apulia, to Sicily, or to Lombardy, or to Burgundy, France, England, or any other country where we have houses and possessions. [Where we wish you to do our will.]

[Further he says:] "When you will wish to sleep, you will be ordered to watch; when you will wish to watch, then you will be ordered to go to bed; when you will wish to eat, then you will be ordered to do something else. And as both we and you might suffer great inconvenience from what you have mayhap concealed from us, look here on the holy evangelists and the word of God and answer the truth to the questions which we shall put to you; for if you lie you will be perjured, and may be expelled the Order, from which God keep you!"

Now all the former questions were asked on Holy Writ. If the answers proved acceptable, the receptor continued:

"Beloved brother, take good care that you have spoken the truth to us: for should you have spoken false in any one point, you might be put out of the Order—from which God keep you! Now, beloved brother, attend strictly to what we shall say unto you. Do you promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary to be, all your life long, obedient to the Master of the Temple, and to the Prior who shall be set over you?"

[And initiate answers with:] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[Again, he is asked,] "Do you promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary, to live chaste of your body all your life long?"

[And he answers,] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[And he's again asked,] "Do you promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary, to observe all your life long, the laudable manners and customs of our Order, both those which are already in use and those which the Master and Knights may add?"

[And he answers,] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[And then he's asked,] "Do you promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary, that you will, with the strength and powers which God has bestowed on you, help as long as you live to conquer the Holy Land of Jerusalem; and that you will, with all your strength, aid to keep and guard that which the Christians possess?"

[And he answers,] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[And he's asked,] "Do you promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary, never to hold (leave) this Order for stronger or weaker, for better or worse, than with permission of the Master, or of the chapter which has the authority?"

[And he answers,] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[And then he's asked,] "Do you finally promise to God, and our dear Lady Mary, never to be present when a Christian is unjustly and unlawfully despoiled of his heritage, and that you will never, by counsel or by act, take part therein?"

[And he answers,] "Yea, Sir, with the help of God!"

[And then:] "In the name, then, of God, and our dear Lady Mary, and in the name of St. Peter of Rome, and of our father the Pope, and in the name of all the brethren of the Temple, we receive to all the good works of the Order which have been performed from the beginning, and shall be performed to the end, you, your father, your mother, and all of your family whom you will let have share therein. In like manner do you receive us to all the good work which you have performed and shall perform. We assure you of bread and water and the poor clothing of the order, and labor and toil enow."

Then the candidate was admitted.

[Don't go away, folks. I'll be right back after this very short pause.]

(Interlude music: unknown orchestral music)[113]

(Speaking over music)

[You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper—I am still alive, I am still kicking and I'm going to be around for a long, long time, *much* to the dismay of the Mystery Schools and international Socialism. Don't go away, folks. We'll begin again in just a few moments.]

(Interlude music continues)

[With a joyous celebration] the candidate was admitted. The white mantle with its red cross was placed by the Master over the neck of the candidate, and clasped firmly by him. The Chaplain recited the 132nd psalm and the prayer of the Holy Ghost, and each brother repeated a paternoster.

Then the Master and the Chaplain kissed the new entrant on the mouth. As he sat down before the Master, the latter delivered him a sermon on his duties.

Knights were equipped more lightly than other Crusaders, and were issued with shields, sword, lance and mace. They were allocated three horses each, [not one with two knights riding, but three horses each] plus an esquire, who was either a serving-brother or a layman, perhaps a youth from a noble family anxious to become a knight in his own turn.

Retired knights were looked after by the Order, became counselors at meetings, and were eventually buried in coffins in their Templar habit, with the legs crossed. Many Templar gravestones show the Knight with his feet up on a dog. [But most show the crossed thighbones and the skull known as the Skull and Bones—the same Skull and Bones as the Russell trust, the Brotherhood of Death at Yale, and the same Skull and Bones displayed upon the flag of the Pirates.]

It was Philip the Fair of France, bankrupt and fearful of the growing power of the warriors of the Temple, who laid the conspiracy for the suppression of the Order for all time. It has been hinted that Philip had some forewarning that a plot against the throne was afoot; that the Templars, frustrated in their attempts to win back the Holy Land, were about to turn upon Pope and King alike and try to overcome all Christendom. [And, believe it or not, that's closer to the truth than anything that you ever heard about the Templars.] In 1305, Pope Clement had been crowned through the assistance of the French King [and was actually under the control of the French King]; and Philip was ready to bring all the power of Church and State against the Knights of the Temple.

There had been continued rivalry between the Templars and the Hospitallers [on the surface, underneath, they were one and the same]; and Clement, six months after his enthronement, wrote asking them to visit him for a conference, ostensibly for the purpose of making plans for aiding the kings of Armenia and Cyprus. The Pope was, however, hoping that he could effect a reconciliation between the two Orders, which would in turn strengthen his own position as their only ultimate head. William de Villaret, Master of the Hospital, was fully engaged in an attack upon the Saracens of Rhodes when the invitation arrived, and could not obey it; but Jacques de Molay, Grand Master of the Temple, decided to accept. He handed over the defense of Limassol in Cyprus to the Order's Marshall, collected sixty knights, packed 150,000 gold florins plus much other treasure, and set sail for France.

---

[113]

At Paris, de Molay was received with honors by the King who was plotting his downfall. In Poitiers, he met Clement, and discussed the possibilities of a fresh Crusade. De Molay opined that only a complete alliance of all Christendom could be of any avail against the Moslems, and that the amalgamation of the two Orders was not a good idea. The Grand Master returned to Paris; and almost at once rumors began to circulate about certain serious charges to be preferred against the Order. Troubled at this campaign, the Master (together with Rimbaud de Caron, Preceptor of Outremer; Jeffrey de Goneville, Preceptor of Aquitane, and Hugh de Peraudo, Preceptor of France) returned to Poitiers to justify the Order before the Pope.

An audience took place, about April of 1307, in which the Pope mentioned the charges which have been made. The commission understood that their answers satisfied Clement, and returned to the capital in good heart. But this [dear listeners] was only the beginning.

The method by which the charges were originally said to have been made was through a former Templar who had been expelled from the Order for heresy and other offenses. This Squin de Flexian found himself in prison, together with another man (a Florentine named Noffo Dei), and they thought (or were told) that they could obtain their release and a pardon for the crime of which they were currently accused if only they would testify against the Order. One account has it that de Flexian called for the governor of the prison, saying that he had a disclosure to make which he could tell the King personally; and which would be more to him than the conquest of [an entire] kingdom. Another chronicle has it that both men were degraded Templars, and had been actively engaged in the revolt against the King during which Philip had been forced to take refuge with the Templars. It is further stated that Cardinal Cantilupo, the Chamberlain to the Pope, who had been in an association with the Templars since he was eleven years old, had confessed some of their doings to his master.

Ten main charges were made by de Flexian against the Order:

1. Each Templar on his admission swore never to quit the Order, and to further its interests by right or wrong.

2. The heads of the Order are in secret alliance with the Saracens, and they have more of Mohammedan infidelity than Christian faith. [And] proof of the latter includes that they make every novice spit upon the cross and trample upon it, and blaspheme the faith of Christ in various ways.

3. The heads of the Order are heretical, cruel and sacrilegious men. Whenever any novice, on discovering the iniquity of the Order, tries to leave it, they kill him and bury the body secretly by night. They teach women who are pregnant by them how to procure abortion, and secretly murder such newborn children.

4. They are infected with the errors of the Fratecelli; they despise the Pope and the authority of the Church; they scorn the sacraments, especially those of penance and confession. They pretend to comply with the rites of the Church simply to avoid detection.

5. The superiors are addicted to the most infamous excesses of debauchery. If anyone expresses his repugnance to this, he is punished by perpetual captivity.

6. The Temple-houses are the receptacle of every crime and abomination that can be committed.

7. The Order works to put the Holy Land into the hands of the Saracens, and favors them more than the Christians.

8. The Master is installed in secret and few of the younger brethren are present at this ceremony. It is strongly suspected that on this occasion he repudiates the Christian faith, or does something contrary to right.

9. Many statutes of the Order are unlawful, profane and contrary to Christianity. [In fact, some of them are stone penises.] The members are therefore forbidden under pain of perpetual confinement to reveal them to anyone.

10. No vice or crime committed for the honor or benefit of the Order is held to be a sin.

[Now] these charges were later augmented by others which were collected through testimony from other enemies of the Order, and included such assertions as the use of the phrase *Ya Allah* ([which means] O, Allah!) and the adoration of an idol called the Head of Baphomet. [In fact, the Head of Baphomet was not an idol that they worshiped but represented the receptacle of the intelligence, or the seat of the intelligence: the brain, the light, Lucifer, the gift of intellect, primordial knowing—and that is what *really* the object of veneration was.]

Philip and his advisers prepared a great secrecy for the descent upon this powerful organization [the Knights Templar]. [And] on the 12th of September, 1307, sealed letters were sent to all the governors and Royal officers throughout France, instructing them to arm themselves on the twelfth of the next month and open the sealed orders—and to act upon them forthwith. By the morning of Friday, October 13, [and on that day] almost every Templar in France was in the hands of the King's men. [And thus was born the legend that Friday the 13th is an unlucky day. And notice that it was *October*, Friday the 13th, the very first October surprise.][114] Hardly one seems to have had any warning. [But they did because, before the king acted, the Templars had moved their wealth, their treasure, and their holdings out of the country of France.] On the day before his arrest, the Grand Master had actually been chosen by the King to be a pall-bearer at a state funeral.[115]

The secret orders had it that all Templars were to be seized, tortured and interrogated. Confessions were to be obtained from them; pardon might be promised only if they confessed. And all their goods were to be expropriated. [But the only thing that they really got was the actual real estate property held by the Templars in France and nowhere else. None of the gold, none of their wealth, none of their jewels, none of their treasures, none of the relics that have recovered from the Holy Land were ever found.]

The King himself took possession of the Temple at Paris as soon as the Grand Master and his knights were arrested. The next day the University of Paris assembled, together with canons and other functionaries and ministers; and the Chancellor declared that the knights had been proceeded against for heresy. Two days later the University met in the Temple and some heads of the Order, including the Grand Master, were interrogated. They are said to have confessed to 'forty years' guilt' [whatever that means].

[Now] whether de Molay and others confessed on that occasion or not, the King was emboldened to publish an accusation, in which he called the knights "polluters of the error and devouring wolves." A public meeting was called in the Royal Gardens and addressed by monks and representatives on this subject.

Edward II was the son-in-law of the French Philip, and to him was sent a priest who invited the English monarch to act at once against the Order in Britain. [Well,] Edward almost at once wrote to say that the charges seemed to him to be incredible. But Pope Clement wrote on November 22nd to London, assuring Edward that the Master of the Temple had confessed of his own free will that knights on their admission to the Order had denied Christ. Others had admitted idolatry and other crimes. He therefore called upon the King of England to arrest all Templars within his domains, and to place their lands and goods in custody until their guilt or innocence should be ascertained. [He condemned them to torture by the Dominican monks under the Inquisition until they confessed their guilt or were dead.]

[Now notice the date folks: *November the 22nd in the year 1307*. That's a significant date in our history and has direct bearing, as you will see, many hours down the line.]

[William Cooper does an advertisement for an upcoming lecture]

---

[114] October Surprise (American political jargon) is an unexpected, but popular, political act made just prior to a November election, in an attempt to win votes

[115] On October 12, 1307, the grand master was among the highest nobility of Europe who acted as pallbearers at the funeral of Princess Catherine, the deceased wife of King Philip's brother, Charles of Valois. *Born in blood*, p.131

Before [the King of England] received this missive, [he] seems to have been sorely troubled by the allegations. He wrote, on November [the] 26th, to the Seneschal of Agen, asking about the charges. On the 4th of December he wrote to the kings of Portugal, Castile, Aragon and Sicily, asking "what they had heard, and adding that he had given no credit to it". He wrote to the Pope himself on December [the] 10th, expressing disbelief of what the French King said, and begging His Holiness to institute an enquiry [Well folks,] by December [the] 15th, when the Papal Bull arrived, Edward felt that he must act upon it without question. On December [the] 26th he wrote to the Pope that his orders would be obeyed. [But] in the interim, Edward had sent word to Wales, Scotland and Ireland that the Templars were all to be seized, as in England; but they were to be treated with kindness.

On October [the] 19th, less than a week after they had been arrested [in France], 140 prisoners were being tortured by the Dominican Imbert, in the Paris Temple. Promises and the rack produced many confessions. Thirty-six of the examinees died during these proceedings. Throughout France the racks worked overtime, and the confessions poured forth. [Many good men were crippled for the rest of their lives.] Many of these were contradictory and confused; [and] perhaps there is little wonder of that. [How many of you could resist, even for five minutes, the tortures of the medieval Inquisition?]

The Pope now seemed a little uneasy at the arbitrary methods which were being employed. Philip wrote sharply to him saying that he, the King, was doing God's work, and rendered accounts to God alone. He offered to turn over all the goods of the Templars to the service of the Holy Land, Clement, still a weakling, merely stipulated that the inquisitions of each Bishop should be confirmed by a Provincial Council, and that the examination of the heads of the Order should be reserved to himself. Now we hear a constant succession of confessions and retractions, allegations that the heads of the Order confessed completely and spontaneously to the Pope himself. The Pope himself, for some unexplained reason [folks], tried to escape to Bordeaux, but was stopped by the King. Now he was the monarch's captive as well as his creation.

Detailed confessions of individual Templars have been kept on record, many of them undoubtedly obtained by extreme racking and other tortures. The Templars who were prepared to defend the Order in court were brought to Paris, to the number of five hundred and forty-six. Deprived of their knightly habits, and the sacraments of the Church, they had no means to acquire defense counsel. Their numbers rose to nine hundred, and now they clamored for the presence of the Grand Master, who was held elsewhere. An Act of Accusation in the name of the Pope was drawn up, and seventy-five Templars drew up the Defense.

The accusation had it now that "At the time of their reception they were made to deny God, Christ, the Virgin, etc., and in particular to declare that Christ was not the true God, but a false prophet, who had been crucified for his own crimes and not for the redemption of the world. They spat and trampled upon the cross, especially on Good Friday. They worshiped a cat, which sometimes appeared in their chapters. Their priests, when celebrating Mass, did not pronounce the words of consecration. They believed that their Master could absolve them from their sins. They were told at their reception that they might abandon themselves to all kinds of licentiousness. They have idols in all their provinces, some with three faces, some with one. They worshiped these idols in their chapters, believed that they could save them, regarded them as the givers of wealth to the order and of the fertility to the earth; they touched them with cords which they afterwards tied around their own bodies [underneath their robes—and that is still practiced today by Freemasons *and* by the Mormon Church]. Those who at the time of their reception would not comply with these practices were put to death or imprisoned."

The reply of the Templars denied every charge and stated that they had been subjected to every kind of illegality since their arrest. Fifty-four of the knights who had volunteered to defend the Order were committed to the flames, having been declared relapsed heretics, before the trials had even started. [And you'll see this number fifty-four crop up later, and even in the modern-day, and sometimes it's fifty-four plus one—the Grand Master, who later was burned at the stake.]

Four years to the day after the first arrests, the Pope led a convocation of one hundred and fourteen bishops to come to a final decision about the Templar Order. [Well, folks,] the prelates of Spain, England, Germany, Denmark, Ireland and Scotland called for the Templars to be allowed to defend themselves. The Pope reported by closing the Session almost at once. [He would not hear of it.] Out of fifteen hundred to two thousand Templars who were in hiding in the vicinity, nine knights came forward to testify for the Order. The Pope doubled his guard and sent a message to the King to do the same, as there was still danger from the hidden knights. They were not heard. Only one Italian prelate and three French ones voted to prevent the Order from putting in its defense.

Now Philip, deciding that something should be done to hasten affairs, sent off for Venice and the conference. His arrival had an electric effect. On his sole authority the Pope almost immediately abolished the Order of a secret consistory. [And] this was on March 22nd, [in the year] 1313.[116] [And 1313 plays a significant number later on as that was a famous address in New Orleans, as some of you may remember.] On May 2nd, when the Bull was published, the Order ceased officially to exist. The Grand Master, assumed but not proved to be guilty, was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment. Most of the other knights were released and many of these past their remaining days in poverty. De Molay and one of his chiefs, Guy of Auvergne, [pronounced or] proclaimed their innocence on the public stage to which they had been taken to have sentence announced. The King, upon hearing [them recant their confession], immediately had them committed to the flames.

[No longer reading]

And some say that, while he was being burned at the stake, that de Molay cursed both the Pope and the King of France, stating that within a certain short period of time, he would meet them . . . he would meet them in another life, in front of God, who would judge them for their crimes. And, believe it or not, folks, well within the period of time, which was not very long, both the Pope and the King of France were dead, and I'm sure joined Jacques de Molay in front of God for their final judgment.

We are in no way finished with the story of the Knights Templar. But until tomorrow night, good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(Outro music: unknown orchestral music)[117]

---

[116] Vox in excelso was actually issued in 1312. The king of France made for Vienne on 20 March (1312), and after two days Clement V delivered to the commission of cardinals for approval the bull by which the order of Templars was suppressed (the bull Vox in excelso). In the second session of the council, which took place on 3 April 1312, this bull was approved and the pope announced a future crusade (that never started). Norman P. Tanner, *Decrees of the Ecumenical Councils*, 1990

[117]

Hour 14: Skull and Bones (aired March 8th, 1993)

Get comfortable, ladies and gentlemen, open your ears, sit back and relax. And get set for an unbelievable revelation tonight. You're going to want copies of this tape . . . this tape of the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

(Intro music: The Rose)[118]

Ah, yes, the seed that lies beneath the snow, in the springtime becomes the rose. I'm going to begin tonight's broadcast, ladies and gentlemen, by reading a portion of the introduction of a book, entitled *Born in Blood*, by John J. Robinson, *The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*. Now, you should seek out this book, purchase it and read it. It is a wonderful edition to your own library, and I begin now:

[Reading from *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*]:[119]

The research behind this book is not originally intended to reveal anything about Freemasonry or the Knights Templar. Its objective had been to satisfy my own curiosity about certain unexplained aspects of the Peasants' Revolt in England in 1381, a savage uprising that saw upwards of a hundred thousand Englishmen march on London. They moved in uncontrolled rage, burning down manor houses, breaking open prisons, and cutting down any who stood in their way.

"One unsolved mystery of that revolt was the organization behind it. For several years, a group of disgruntled priests of the lower clergy had traveled the towns, preaching against the riches and corruption of the church. During the months before the uprising, secret meetings had been held throughout central England by men weaving a network of communication. After the revolt was put down, rebel leaders confessed to being agents of a 'Great Society,' said to be based in London. So very little is known of that alleged organization that several scholars have solved the mystery simply by deciding that no such secret society ever existed.

"Another mystery was the concentrated and especially vicious attacks on the religious order of the Knights Hospitaller of St. John, now known as the Knights of Malta. Not only did the rebels seek out their properties for vandalism and fire, but their prior was dragged from the Tower of London to have his head struck off and placed on London Bridge, to the delight of the cheering mob.

"There was no question that the ferocity that was unleashed on the crusading Hospitallers had a purpose behind it. One captured rebel leader, when asked for the reasons for the revolt, said, 'First, and above all...the destruction of the Hospitallers.' What kind of secret society could have that special hatred as one of its primary purposes?

"A desire for vengeance against the Hospitallers was easy to identify in the rival crusading order of the Knights of the Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem. The problem was that those Knights Templar have been completely suppressed almost seventy years before the Peasants' Revolt, following several years during which the Templars had been imprisoned, tortured and burned at the stake. After issuing the decree that put an end to the Templar order, Pope Clement V had directed that all of the extensive properties of the Templars should be given to the Hospitallers. Could a Templar desire for revenge actually survive underground for three generations?

"There was no incontrovertible truth, yet the only evidence suggest the existence of just one secret society in fourteenth-century England [just one], the society that was, or would become, the order of Free and Accepted Masons. There appeared to be no connection, however, between the revolt and Freemasonry, except for the name or title of its leader. He occupied the center stage of English history for just eight days and nothing is known of him except that he was the supreme commander of the rebellion. He was called Walter the Tyler, and it seemed at first to be mere coincidence that he bore the title of the enforcement officer of the Masonic lodge. In Freemasonry the Tyler, who must be a Master Mason, is the sentry, the sergeant-at-arms, and the officer who screens the credentials of visitors who seek entrance to the lodge. In remembrance of an earlier, more dangerous time, his post is just outside the door of the Lodge room, where he stands with a drawn sword in his hand [William Cooper: even to this day].

---

[118] Bette Midler, *The Rose,* performed by unknown artist

[119] John J. Robinson, *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*, 1991

"I was aware that there had been many attempts in the past to link the Freemasons with the Knights Templar, but never with success. The fragile evidence advanced by proponents of that connection had never held up, sometimes because it was based on wild speculation, and at least once because it had been based on a deliberate forgery. But despite the failures to establish that link, it just will not go away, and the time-shrouded belief in some relationship between in two orders remains as one of the more durable legends of Freemasonry. That is entirely appropriate, because all of the various theories of the origin of Freemasonry are legendary. Not one of them is supported by any universally accepted evidence."

[William Cooper]: Ah, here I break from reading from the introduction of the book and interject a comment here. There was *never* any universally accepted evidence until you hear what you're going to hear tonight, produced by John Galt, an agent of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence [CAJI]. The connection, dear listeners, is in the genealogy of the families of the elite. You are going to be amazed, and now I continue from the introduction to *Born in Blood*:

"I was not about to travel down that time-worn trail, and decided to concentrate my efforts on digging deeper into the history of the Knights Templar to see if there was any link between the suppressed Knights and the secret society behind the Peasants' Revolt. In doing so, I thought that I would be leaving Freemasonry far behind. [And] I couldn't have been more mistaken.

"Like anyone curious about medieval history, I had developed an interest in the Crusades, and perhaps more than just an interest. Those holy wars hold an appeal that is frequently as romantic as it is historical, and in my travels I had tried to drink in the atmosphere of the narrow defiles in the mountains of Lebanon through which Crusader armies had passed, and had sat staring into the castle ruins Sidon and Tyre, trying to hear the clashing sounds of attack and defense. I had marveled at the walls of Constantinople and had strolled the Arsenal of Venice, where Crusader fleets were assembled. I had sat in the round church of the Knights Templar in London, trying to imagine the ceremony of its consecration [by] the Patriarch of Jerusalem in 1185, more than three hundred years before Columbus set sail west to the Indies.

"The Templar order was founded in Jerusalem in 1118, in the aftermath of the First Crusade. Its name came from the location of its first headquarters on the site of the ancient Temple of Solomon, helping to fulfill a desperate need for a standing army in the Holy Land, the Knights of the Temple soon grew in numbers, in wealth, and in political power. They also grew in arrogance, and their Grand Master de Ridfort was a key figure in the mistakes that led to the fall of Jerusalem in 1187. The Latin Christians managed to hold on to a narrow strip of territory along the coast, where the Templars were among the largest owners of the land and [the] fortifications.

"Finally, the enthusiasm for sending men and money to the Holy Land waned among the European kingdoms, which were preoccupied with their wars against each other. By 1296 the Egyptian sultan was able to push the resident Crusaders, along with the military orders, into the sea. The Holy Land was lost, and the defeated Knights Templar moved their base to the island of Cyprus, dreaming of yet one more Crusade to restore their past glory.

"As the Templars planned to go on a new Crusade against the infidel, King Philip IV of France was planning his own private crusade against the Templars. He longed to be rid of his massive debts to the Templar order, which had used its wealth to establish a major [international] banking operation. Philip wanted the Templar treasure to finance his continental wars against Edward I of England.

"After two decades of fighting England on one side and the Holy Roman Church on the other, two unrelated events gave Philip of France the opportunity he needed. Edward I died, and his deplorably weak son took the throne of England as Edward II. On the other front, Philip was able to get his own man on the Throne of Peter as Pope Clement V.

"When word arrived on Cyprus that the new pope would mount a Crusade, the Knights Templar thought that their time of restoration to glory was at hand. Summoned to France, their aging Grand Master, Jacques de Molay, went armed with elaborate plans for the rescue of Jerusalem. In Paris, he was humored and honored until the fatal day. At dawn on Friday, the thirteenth of October, in the year 1307, every Templar in France was arrested and put in chains on Philip's orders. Their hideous tortures for confessions of heresy began immediately.

"When the pope's order to arrest the Templars arrived at the English court, young Edward II had took no action at all. He protested to the pontiff that the Templars were innocent. Only after the pope issued a formal Bull [William Cooper: on November the twenty-second in the year 1307] was the English king forced to act. In January [William Cooper: in the year], 1308, Edward finally issued orders for the arrest of the Knights Templar in England, but the three months of warning had been put to good use. Many of the Templars had gone underground, while some of those arrested managed to escape. Their treasure, their jeweled reliquaries, even the bulk of their records, had [totally] disappeared. In Scotland, the papal order was not even published. Under those conditions England, and especially Scotland, became targeted havens for fugitive Templars from continental Europe, and the efficiency of their concealment spoke to some assistance from outside, or from each other.

"The English throne passed from Edward II to Edward III, who bequeathed the crown to his ten-year-old grandson who, as Richard II, watched from the Tower as the Peasants' Revolt exploded throughout the city of London.

"Much had happened to the English people along the way. Incessant wars had drained the king's treasury and corruption had taken the rest. A third of the population had perished in the Black Death, and famine exacted further tolls. The reduced labor force of farmers and craftsmen found that they could earn more for their labor, but their increased income came at the expense of land-owning barons and bishops, who were not prepared to tolerate such a state of affairs. Laws were passed to reduce wages, and prices to preplague levels in genealogies were search to reimpose the bondage of serfdom and villeinage on men who thought themselves free. The king's need for money to fight the French wars inspired new and ingenious taxes. The oppression was coming from all sides, and the pot of rebellion was brought to the boil.

"Religion didn't help, either. The landowning church was as merciless a master as the landowning nobility. Religion would have been a source of confusion for the fugitive Templars as well. They were a religious body of warrior monks who owed allegiance to no man on earth except the Holy Father [William Cooper: according to the Holy Father. But according to the Templars, in secret, their allegiance was only to themselves]. When their pope turned on them, chained them, beat them, he broke their link with God. In fourteenth-century Europe there was no pathway to God except through the vicar of Christ on earth. If the pope rejected the Templars and the Templars rejected the Pope, they had to find a new way to worship their God, at a time when any variation from the teachings of the established church was blasted as heresy.

"That dilemma called to mind a central tenet of Freemasonry, which requires only that a man believe in a Supreme Being, with no requirements as to how he worships the deity of his choice. In Catholic Britain such a belief would have been a crime, but it would have accommodated the fugitive Templars who had been cut off from the universal church. In consideration of the extreme punishment for heresy, such an independent belief also...made sense of one of the more mysterious...of Freemasonry's Old Charges."

[William Cooper]: The ancient rules that still govern the conduct of the fraternity. The charge says that no Mason should reveal the secrets of a brother that may deprive him of his life and property. That connection caused me to take a different look at the Masonic Old Charges.

"They took on new direction and meaning when viewed as a set of instructions for a secret society created to assist and protect fraternal brothers on the run and in hiding from the church. That characterization made no sense in the context of a medieval guild of stonemasons, the usual claim for the roots of Freemasonry. It did make a great deal of sense, however, for men such as the fugitive Templars, whose very lives depended upon their concealment. Nor would there have been any problem finding new recruits over the years ahead: There were to be plenty of protesters and dissidents against the church among future generations. The rebels of the Peasants' Revolt proved that when they attacked abbeys and monasteries, and when they cut off the head off of Archbishop of Canterbury, the leading Catholic prelate in England.

"The fugitive Templars would have needed a code such as the Old Charges of Masonry, but the working stonemasons clearly did not. It had become obvious that I needed to know about the Ancient Order of Free and Accepted Masons. The extent of the Masonic material available at large in public libraries surprised me, as did the fact that it was housed in the department of education and religion. Not content with just what was readily available to the public, I asked to use the library in the Masonic Temple in Cincinnati, Ohio."

[William Cooper]: By the way, folks, Cincinnati, Ohio is an extremely important location in this country, the United States.

"I told the gentlemen there that I was not a Freemason, but wanted to use the library as part of my research for a book that would probably include a new examination of the Masonic order. His only question to me was, 'Will it be fair?' I assured him that I had no desire or intention to be anything other than fair, to which he replied, 'Good enough.' I was left alone with the catalog and the hundreds of Masonic books that lined the walls. I also took advantage of the publications of the Masonic Service Association in Silver Springs, Maryland.

"Later, as my growing knowledge of Masonry enabled me to sustain a conversation of the subject, I began to talk to Freemasons. At first, I wondered how I would go about meeting fifteen or twenty Masons and, if I could meet them, would they be willing to talk with me? The first problem was solved as soon as I started asking friends and associates if they were Masons. There were four in one group I had known for about five years, and many more among men I had known for twenty years and more, without ever realized that they had any connection with Freemasonry. As for the second part of my concern, I found them quite willing to talk, not about the secret passwords and hand grips (by then, I had already knew them), but about what they have been taught concerning the origins of Freemasonry and its ancient Old Charges.

"They were as intrigued as I about the possibilities of discovering the lost meanings of words, symbols, and ritual for which no logical explanation was available, such as why a Master Mason is told in his initiation rights that 'this degree will make you a brother to pirates and corsairs.'"

[William Cooper]: And folks, *I'll* explain that to you (laughs) a little later.

"We agreed that unlocking the secrets of those Masonic mysteries would contribute most to unearthing the past, because the loss of their true meanings had caused the ancient terms and symbols to be preserved intact, lest subject to change over the centuries, or by adaptations to new conditions.

"Among those lost secrets were the meanings of words used in the Masonic rituals, words like *tyler*, *cowan*, *due-guard*, and *Juwes*. Masonic writers have struggled for centuries, without success, to make those words fit with their preconceived convictions that Masonry was born in the English-speaking guilds of medieval stonemasons.

"Now I would test the possibility that there was indeed a connection between Freemasonry and the French-speaking Templar order. By looking for the lost meanings of those terms, not in English, but in medieval French. The answers began to flow, and soon a sensible meaning for every one of the mysterious Masonic terms was established in the French language. It even provided the first credible meaning for the name of Hiram Abiff, the murdered architect of the Temple of Solomon, who is the central figure of Masonic ritual. The examination established something else as well. It is well known that in 1362 the English courts officially changed the language used for court proceedings from French to English. So the French roots of all [of] the mysterious terms of Freemasonry confirmed the existence of that secret society in the fourteenth century, the century of the Templar suppression and the Peasants' Revolt.

"With that encouragement I addressed other lost secrets of Masonry: the circle and mosaic pavement on the lodge room floor, gloves and lambskin aprons, the symbol of the compass and the square, even the mysterious legend of the murder of Hiram Abiff. The Rule, customs and traditions of the Templars provided answers to all of those mysteries. Next, came a deeper analysis of the Old Charges of ancient Masonry that define a secret society of mutual protection. What the 'lodge' was doing was assistance brothers in hiding from the wrath of church and state, providing them with money, vouching for them with the authorities, even providing the 'lodging' that gave Freemasonry the unique term for its chapters and its meeting rooms. There remained no reasonable doubt in my mind that the original concept of the secret society that came to call itself Freemasonry had been born as a society of mutual protection among fugitive Templars and their associates in Britain, men who had gone underground to escape the imprisonment and torture that had been ordered for them by Pope Clement V. Their antagonism toward the Church was rendered more powerful by its total secrecy. The suppression of the Templar order appeared to be one of the biggest mistakes the Holy See [has] ever made.

"In return, Freemasonry has been the target of more angry papal bulls and encyclicals than any other secular organization in Christian history. Those condemnations began just a few years after Masonry revealed itself in 1717 and grew in intensity, culminating in the bull Humanum Genus, promulgated by Pope Leo XIII in 1884. In it, the Masons are accused of espousing religious freedom, the separation of church and state, the education of children by laymen, and the extraordinary crime of believing that people have the right to make their own laws and to elect their own government, 'according to the new principles of liberty.'"

[William Cooper]: You see, folks, and this is an aside, *all* of our forefathers who have established this country were Freemasons, and their intent is spelled out in Latin on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States of America, where it plainly says, *Novus Ordo Seclorum*: the New World Order. And I will interpret all of the meaning of the symbols on that Great Seal according to their *true meaning*, and not the meaning the you read in certain disinformation books written by Freemasons to steer you down the wrong road.

"Such concepts are identified, along with the Masons, as part of the kingdom of Satan. The document not only defines the concerns of the Catholic Church about Freemasonry at that time, but, in the negative, so clearly defines what Freemasons believe that I have included the complete text of that papal bull as an appendix to this book."

[William Cooper]: ...and I urge you all to get this book and read it.

"Finally, it should be added that the events described here were part of a great watershed of Western history. The feudal age was coming to a close. Land, and the peasant labor on it, had lost its role as the sole source of wealth. Merchant families banded into guilds, and took over whole towns with charters as municipal corporations. Commerce led to banking and investment, and towns became power centers to rival the nobility in wealth and influence.

"The universal church, which had fought for a position of supremacy in a feudal context, was slow to accept changes that might affect that supremacy. Any material disagreement with the church was called heresy, the most heinous crime under heaven. The heretic not only deserved death, but the most painful death imaginable.

"Some dissidents run for the woods and hide, while others organize. In the case of the fugitive Knights Templar, the organization already existed. They possessed a rich tradition of secret operations that had been raised to the highest level through their association with the intricacies of Byzantine politics, the secret ritual of the Assassins [and the Roshaniya], and the intrigues of the Moslem courts which they met alternately on the battlefield or at the conference table. The church, in its bloody rejection of protest and change, provided them with a river of recruits that flowed for centuries.

"More than six hundred years have passed since the suppression of the Knights Templar, but their heritage lives on in the largest fraternal organization ever known. And so the story of those tortured crusading knights, of the savagery of the Peasants' Revolt, and of the lost secrets of Freemasonry becomes the story of the most successful secret society in the history of the world.

[William Cooper]: I've got to take a break, folks. Don't go away. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(Interlude music: When You Wish Upon A Star)[120]

[No longer reading]

Spurned by God in the form of the vicar of Christ on earth, the Pope, and spurning God in their turn, the Knights Templars banded together in secret and formed what was to become known as Freemasonry. Now, the legend goes that Freemasonry sprang up from ancient stonecutters, guilds, and the men who built the stone buildings of the age. But "Freemason" actually comes from the French: *frère-maçon*, which literally means, "The Sons of Light." Which light will certainly, in researching the problem, that it is not the light of Christ. It is the light of the fallen angel of light, for when they were forsaken by the church, by Christ vicar on earth, the Pope, they spurned God and turned to Lucifer. They held to the Luciferian philosophy that the gift of intellect by Lucifer, through his agent Satan, would in its turn make man god. These men were always on the run. They took the hidden Templar wealth and built a financial empire that stands to this day is the most powerful on the earth [sic]. Jews, who had traditionally been persecuted throughout Europe, flocked to the hidden Temple, for there they could believe as they wished and worshiped whatever god they wished, for all were welcome. Many of the Templars running [to ground] flocked to England and to Scotland, where they fought for Robert the Bruce, who was engaged in an intense battle with the King of England.

Now, let me regress just a little bit. King William the Lion, who was born in 1165 and died in 1214, had a daughter, Isabel of Scotland. Well, Isabel married a certain Robert Rose [Roos]. Robert Rose [Roos] was a Knights Templar who was heavily involved in the first efforts -- and was very successful -- at international banking. Plus, he established the first overt and covert international intelligence gathering organization which all, all subsequent intelligence organizations had been based upon since. His son, Sir William Roos, and his daughter, Lucy Roos, figure prominently in the story to follow. Lucy married Sir Robert Plumpton. They sired two children: Sir William Plumpton and Alice Plumpton. During this period of time, this family, this family, as the Knights Templar were going to ground, in the male progeny of this family always followed in their father's footsteps and entered into the order. They established, in secret, the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, and may have had a significant role in the establishment, for intelligence reasons, of the order known as the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross.

Now, Alice Plumpton married Sir John Boteler. They gave birth to a daughter, Alice Boteler, who then married John Gerard, who had a child, Constance, who married Sir Alex Standish. The following children issued from that marriage: Ralph Standish, Sir Alex Standish, Roger Standish, and Alice Standish, who then married James Prescott. The children of this marriage were Roger Prescott, Ralph Prescott, John Prescott, and Captain Jonathan Prescott. Jonathan Prescott married Rebecca Buckley. They had two children, Abel Prescott and Lucy Prescott, and Lucy married Jonathan Fay. They sired three children: Samuel Prescott Phillips Fay, Samuel Howard Fay, and Harriet Eleanor Fay. Harriet married Reverend James Smith Bush, son of merchant Obidiah [Newcomb] Bush. Their son, Samuel Prescott Bush, became the president of Buckeye Steel Castings Company of Ohio. A pioneer family of Franklin, Ohio between Dayton and Cincinnati, and was one of the members of the Golden Circle and Order of the Quest, also known as the JASON Society, which gave issue to most of the political elite of the United States of America, who are, by the way, all (and I mean *all without exception*) related to each other.

Now, Samuel Prescott Bush married, and his son Prescott Bush became a U.S. Senator from Connecticut, the director of Prudential Insurance, the director of CBS, a partner in Brown Brothers Harriman, chairman, National Republican Finance Committee, funds placed in Merrill Lynch accounts in Switzerland under the guidance of Donald Reagan. When he married, that marriage gave issue to the following:

Prescott Bush II: an investment banker indicted for fraudulent banking practices.

George Bush: Chairman of Zapata Oil from 1963-64; Chairman of Republican Party, Harris County, Texas, when J.F. Kennedy was killed; delegate to the GOP National Convention (1964); 1968 member of the 90th and 91st Congress from Texas; from 1965-66, Nixon appointed Bush as ambassador to the United Nations to deal with China; he was the director for the Central Intelligence Agency; Chairman of the GOP party; Vice President of the United States of America; and President of the United States of America.

---

[120] Performed by unknown artist

Four other children were William H. Bush, James Bush, Jonathan Bush, and Nancy, who married Alex Ellis.

The issue of George and Barbara Bush was: Dorothy, who married William LeBlond; John Ellis Bush; Neil Bush, son of the director of CIA, becomes director of Silverado Savings and Loan and launders CIA drug money. Silverado loses over $100 million dollars and Neil goes unpunished.

And the two other children? Marvin Pierce Bush and George Bush II.

Folks, this intelligence was gathered by one of our agents, code named "John Galt," who spent literally years in dusty libraries and books of genealogy. And I'm not going to tell you which libraries or how he arrived at this information. But it has been checked, it is absolutely accurate and this is just one portion of the pedigree of George Bush, who's literally related to most of the royal families of Europe.

Now, you can have a copy of this chart if you want it. I'll tell you how to get it later, so have your pencils and paper ready. I'm going to tell you exactly where the money goes. One half of the money goes to help pay for the airtime here; the other half goes to our agent, John Galt, to pay for the years of toil and dusty library books that nobody ever looks in, tracing genealogy. And folks, this is only one of the charts that he has furnished to us, along with others, other agents of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence [CAJI], who are engaged in the exact same research. And we have found that our most productive connections of the secret societies, the royal families, and what's happening in the world today, is through genealogy.

We have found a direct connection between the Peasants' Rebellion [Revolt] in England, the French Revolution, the Ronald Reagan and George Bush political campaign, and the George Bush political campaign. As far as the Peasants' Rebellion goes, the Encyclopedia Britannica calls it a "curiously spontaneous rebellion." Barbara Tuchman, in her fourteenth century history, a distant mirror, said the rebellions spread "with some evidence of planning."

Winston Churchill went even further. In his work, *The Birth of Britain*, he wrote: "Throughout the summer of 1381, there was a general ferment. Beneath it all lay organization. Agents moved round the villages of central England, in touch with a 'Great Society' which was said to meet in London...the spark of rebellion was being fanned vigorously, and finally the signal was given. Even though he had been arrested, excommunicated, and even now was a prisoner in the Ecclesiastic prison at Maidstone in Kent, letters went out from priests John Ball and from other priests who followed him. Clerics were then the only literate class, so letters must have been received by local priests who were obviously intended to be shared with or read aloud to others. They all contained a signal to act now, which could put to rest the concept that the rebellion was simply a spontaneous convulsion of frustration that just happened to affect the hundred thousand Englishmen all at the same time."

This, from a letter from John Ball. In it he says, "John Ball greeteth you well all, and doth you to understand that he hath rongen your bell. Now right and might, will and skill. Now God speed [haste you in] every dele [William Cooper: which means 'ideal'], [now is time]."

From priest Jake Carter: "You have great need to take God with you in all of your deeds, for now is time to be war."

From priest Jake Trewman: "Jake Trewman doth you to understand that falseness and gile reigned too long and truth hath been set under a lock, and falseness reignth in evervil flock. God do bote, for now is time."

Now, you'll notice that in every one of those quotes, there was one phrase that stands out and that phrase is "now is time." One letter from John Ball, "Saint Mary Priest," is worth quoting in its entirety. Even with the medieval English spelling, the meaning will be clear. Lechery and gluttony were frequent points in his accusations of high church leaders:

"John Ball, Saint Mary's Priest, greets well all manner [of] men [and] bids 'em in the name of the Trinity, Father, Son, and

Holy Ghost, stand manly together in truth, and helpeth truth, and truth shall help you. Now reigneth pride in price, and covetousness is held wise, and lechery without shame, and gluttony without blame. Envy reigneth with treason, and sloth is taken in great season. God do bote, for now is time. Amen."

Now, folks, if you research the history of the French Revolution, you will hear that the spark, the word that spread through the country like wildfire that ignited the rebellion in France was "now is the time." Literally, the same phrase. Some say that in the American Revolution the same phrase was heard and we find mention of it in several texts, but *not* like it was heard in the Peasants' Revolt in England, and *not* like it was heard in the French Revolution. But it was heard again in modern times. It was the campaign slogan of the Bush/Reagan campaign, and was used again in the Bush campaign: "Now is the time." *Now is the time.*

One famous photograph staged by George Bush [Sr.] and selected by George Bush for publication in *Life Magazine* shows him lying in bed, holding the pyramid with the capstone in place, signaling to Masons, Freemasons, and members, the priests of the Mystery Schools around the world, that *he* is the one who will bring into fruition their ages-, centuries-, millennia-old dream of the New World Order. In our search for the Templars, we have followed them right to their gravestones, and on some of their gravestones it shows the knight, leaning back, reclining with his feet resting up on a dog, denoting that he is the master. On most of the tombstones, however, we have found something unexpected: the skull and crossbones. Now, when the Knights Templars were persecuted, the fleet -- they have vast fleets, an entire navy -- disappeared. And no one, at least no one in the establishment historian group, claims to know where they went. But we have found them folks. They became the pirates and hoisted their symbol of the skull and bones to the yardarm. They became the vast fleet of pirates who roamed the seas of the world and terrorized nations, navies and merchantmen. And thus arose, from the initiation rights of the Templars, the initiatory rights of crossing the equator, the International Date Line and others; and accounts for the brotherhood amongst the pirates of the world. Even to establishing seaports that they owned and operated, and where they could always find safety. Those on the land established what they called the "Brotherhood of Death." Chapters were formed throughout the world.

George Bush was initiated in the crypt, or what is known as the tomb at Yale into the Brotherhood of Death, also known as the Russell Trust, also known as the Skull and Bones. The research of many people have revealed what the interior of the crypt, or what is known as the tomb at Yale, the fraternity house of the Bonesmen, contains. And Anthony C. Sutton, in his monumental work, *America's Secret Establishment*, all about the Skull and Bones, and one other who wrote a magazine article and published it, revealed the initiation ceremony, revealed that swastikas were found inside the tomb, revealed that the altar is a pile of bones and that the secret ceremony that George Bush underwent during his initiation was thus:

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

"On the day of his initiation, [George Bush] was conducted through a long dark passage into an immense hall draped with black. He was able to see, by the faint light of sepulchral lamps, corpses [William Cooper repeats: *corpses*] in their shrouds. The altar, built of human skeletons, stood in the center. Ghostly forms moved through the hall, leaving behind them a foul odor. At length two men, dressed as spectres, appeared and tied a pink band or ribbon smeared with blood around his forehead. Upon this was an image of the Lady of Loretto. A crucifix was placed in his hand, and an amulet hung around his neck. His clothes were removed and laid upon a funeral pyre [William Cooper: in a fireplace], while upon his body crosses were smeared in blood. Then his pudenda were tied with string [William Cooper: that's his genitals].

"Now five horrid and frightening figures, bloodstained and mumbling, approached him and threw themselves down in prayer. After an hour, sounds of weeping were heard, the funeral pyre started to burn, and his clothes were consumed. From the flames of this fire a huge and almost transparent form arose, while the five prostrate figures went into terrible convulsions. Now came the voice of an invisible hierophant, booming from somewhere below [as George Bush lay in a coffin naked]. The words were those of these oaths, which the candidate had to repeat:

"'In the name of the crucified one, I swear to sever all bonds which unite me with mother, brothers, sisters, wife, relatives, friends, mistress, kings, superiors, benefactors, or any other man to whom I have promised faith, service, or obedience;

"'I name the place in which I was born. Henceforth I live in another dimension, which I will not reach until I have renounced the evil globe which has been cursed by Heaven;

"'For now onwards I shall reveal to my new chief all that I have heard or found out; and I shall also seek out and observe things which might have otherwise have escaped me;

"'I honor the *aqua toffana*; it is a quick and essential medium of removing from the earth, through death or robbing them of their wits, of those who oppose truth, and those who try to take it from our hands;

"'I shall avoid Spain, Naples, and all other accursed lands, and I shall avoid the temptation to betray what I have now of heard;

"'Lightning will not strike as rapidly as the dagger, which will reach me, wherever I may be, should I betray my initiation.'

"Now a candelabrum, bearing seven black candles, is placed before the candidate, and also a bowl containing [what is supposed to be] human blood. He washes himself in the blood, and drinks a quantity of it. The string around his [genitalia] is removed, he is placed in a bath to undergo complete ablution. After this, he eats a meal composed of root vegetables."

[William Cooper]: At this time, he is given his new name by which he will be known to all of the others in the order, the Brotherhood of Death. And with the completion of his initiation, George Bush joined all of the male members of his family in a long line of ancestry, traced from Robert Roos to the modern day. He took his place in the order, the Knights Templar, Freemasonry, and has worked diligently to fulfill his role in the completion of the plan, The Great Work is the formation of the New World Order, the one-world totalitarian socialist state, the destruction of all existing nation states, all existing religions, and enslavement of the mob.

"The very highest degrees of the order show that the rationalism and materialism of the thinkers who developed it were determined to stamp out belief in religion. God and any faith in a deity, the initiate were told, were human inventions, and no real meaning. Subsequently this was developed further, and the member who arrived at the highest position (that of Rex, or King) learned that he is now equal to a king, and that all men were capable of equal advancement: hence, the need for kings over ordinary mortals was an illusion."

[William Cooper]: And that at the highest rank, the title of Rex Mundi, or King of the World, is assumed.

If you would like to get this genealogy folks, if you're a CAJI member, it's five dollars, send it in to the address that you'll hear at the end of this broadcast. For everybody else, it's ten dollars. Good night, and God bless each and every single one of you.

(closing music: Amazing Grace)[121]

---

[121] sung by unknown artist

Hour 15: The Roshaniya (aired March 9th, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

(Intro music: Main theme from Raiders of the Lost Ark)[122]

[Reading from *A History of Secret Societies*]:

"The sixteenth century saw the rise of a very powerful society based upon a secret cult, in the mountains of Afghanistan -- the Roshaniya, [or the] illuminated ones. References to the existence of this mystical fraternity exist from the time of the House of Wisdom at Cairo, several hundred years before."

[William Cooper]: In fact, the Roshaniya are just a later emergence of the old cult of the Assassins.

"It seems likely the small branches were founded in various parts of the near and Middle East; which would account for the special usage of the names of the eight degrees of initiation among them.

"The earliest figure named in the history of the cult is one Bayezid Ansari, of Afghanistan, whose family claimed descent from the Ansar -- the 'Helpers', who assisted Mohammed after his flight from Mecca nearly fourteen hundred years ago. As a reward for this service, he stated, his ancestors had been granted initiation into the mysteries of the Ishmaelite religion: the secret, inner training [which] dated from Abraham's rebuilding of the Temple at Mecca, the mystical Harem."

[William Cooper]: To the Assassins, through the Roshaniya and into Europe via the Knights Templar.

"Bayezid's own father, however, was known to be as narrowly conventional as anyone in the country, and one account of the rapid rise of the sect has it that Bayezid, after a period of preparation for the normal priesthood, was converted to his strange doctrine by a missionary from the Ismailis, the sectarians holding a secret doctrine supposedly handed down in the family of the Prophet, who maintained hidden lodges throughout the world of Islam and also claimed (after the Crusades) to have penetrated with their ideas even Spain, Germany, France and parts of Britain.

"However this may be, the Illuminated Ones soon became more than a headache for the governors of Afghanistan, the Mogul rulers of India, and their Persian neighbors. Not far from Peshawar, which is now in the north-west of Pakistan, Bayezid set up a small school, where he carefully coached those who had been initiated by him in the knowledge of the supernatural that he claimed. A period of probation was expected from each candidate, during which [he] would go into periods of concealment or meditation, known as *khilwat* -- [or] silence. During this time he was to receive the illumination which was emanated from the supreme being, who desired a class of perfect men -- and women -- to carry out the organization and direction of the world.

"Bayezid collected in this way, over a period of three years, about fifty staunch disciples, whom he had trained in obedience and to whom -- so we are told -- he had shown a way whereby they could liberate their 'inner powers'. [Well,] this meant that they were ready to follow his further instructions. These orders, according to what his opponents say, were that the whole sect would now become bandits, to prey upon the rest of the world."

[William Cooper]: And all those who could not identify themselves by their secret signs were their legal and lawful prey.

"Little information is available from the other side, but three letters said to have been written from one branch to another contain in outline a plan to reshape the [entire] social system of the world: first, taking control of individual countries, one by one."

---

[122] John Williams, Main theme from Raiders of the Lost Ark

[William Cooper]: And where have we heard that before? We've heard it from every one of the histories of all of these different sects of Mystery Babylon, which on the outward appearance seem to be different from each other. On the esoteric level are one and the same religion with one and the same same plan, with one and the same same goal, all working toward that end. And the end always, always, justifies the means.

"[Now,] something does survive the degrees of initiation. The first was *Salik* (seeker); followed by *Murid* (disciple); *Fakir* (humble devotee); *Arif* (enlightened one); *Khwaja* (master); *Emir* (commander); *Imam* (priest), and *Malik* (chief or king). This succession does not follow the usual pattern of promotion in the Moslem mystical secret societies, the tarikas; and seems to have been especially devised for this one. In the first three degrees, the candidate perfected himself by repetitions of certain phrases which were believed to carry power. Examples are these: *rabba; aferinaa; hayya; hafida; quwwaya.*

"Of these words (all Arabic or Persian) the first stands for the concept of lordship, the second for creation, the third for life, the fourth for protection, and the last for absolute power. If they were repeated, with deep meditation upon various forms of their manifestations in human life, it was believed, the appropriate power would come into the devotee. [Now,] no special deity was worshiped; but it was believed that there was a supreme overall power, which was known by the sum of its individual powers (lordship, protection, and so on)..."

[William Cooper]: A type of pantheism which works its way into the modern mystical societies of today.

"...and that when one had meditated upon them all, and they had become the 'property' of the invocant, he would thenceforward be a man of complete power. [Now, folks,] this kind of idea underlies a good deal of religious and magical thinking in many faiths; though it is seldom put in this as concise a manner. The Enlightened One of the fourth degree was he who could attain, during the rituals, complete identification with this overall power, and was guided by it in all that he did."

[William Cooper]: It was said that he could communicate directly with the unknown or hidden supervisors.

"[Now,] this meant that, apart from the guidance of the chief, he was free to seek his own pleasure in life. No theological or social bonds limited him.

"It is at this stage, said the Illuminated, that the Arif could perform acts of wonder and magic; influence the physical world, and know the secrets of others. He attained this degree through the acceptance of him by the master, to whom he had confided his dreams and mystical ecstasies. The master alone really knew whether these were true or false experiences, and promoted him accordingly. Some people proceeded to the higher degrees without going through all the lower ones; because they were helped by the spirits of former Illuminates who had died.

"The Master, Emir, Imam and Malik degrees were reserved for the very highest men and women initiates. After the fifth degree the segregation of the sexes in rituals was no longer practiced. Anyone of the degree of Imam and higher could start his own lodge and make his own disciples.

"Bayezid decided to move his headquarters into the most inaccessible mountains of Afghanistan, where he set up a large and luxurious castle; and from which he directed his military and bandit operations, designed to overcome the rest of the East. His missionaries were sent far and wide, but received little official support. The cult did, however, spread among merchants and soldiers who thought that this gave way to mystical experiences was something to enter. They contributed lavishly to the chief's upkeep and his most expensive military, political and espionage system.

"The heady wine of this success seems to have affected the prudence of the head illuminate more strongly than it should; for his claims became more and more extreme and public [William Cooper: as most usually do]. There was, he now preached, no after-life of the kind currently believed in: no reward or punishment, only a spirit's stake which was completely different from earthly life. The spirits, if they belonged to the Order, could continue to enjoy themselves in the earthly powers, acting through living members. But that was all. The preaching of this spiritual vampirism seemed to delight his followers as much as it infuriated his enemies, because Bayezid now gave out more and more of the new doctrine based upon his no after-life creed. Eat, drink, be merry. Gain power, look after yourself. You have no allegiance except to the Order, he told them: and all humanity which cannot identify by our secret sign is our lawful prey. The secret signal was to pass a hand over the forehead, palm inwards; the countersign, to hold the ear with the fingers and support the elbow in the cup of their hand."

[William Cooper]: And you can see that sign being exchanged even today in the courts of law all over the United States of America between lawyers and judges, defendants and judges, prosecutors and judges, prosecutors and defending lawyers, etc, etc, etc.

"Bayezid took to himself the style of *Pir-i-Roshan* (Sage of Illumination), and founded a city at Hashtnagar, which was to be the center from which Illuminism was to spread all over the world.

"[Now,] each member of his following was given a new name upon entry [William Cooper: Does that sound familiar?]; and this name depended upon the guild to which he in theory belonged. According to Bayezid, all of humanity was divided into professions; his were lamp-makers. Some members were the makers, others sold lamps. Some were known as this kind of lamp, some another. 'Lamp of the Darkness' was the typical example. Among the other guilds noted was those of the Builders [William Cooper: Does that sound familiar?]...soldiers, merchants of various kinds and scribes."

[William Cooper]: They can be found today in organizations such as the American Medical Association or the American Bar Association, etc., etc.

"Writing in the nineteenth century, an Afghan scholar who was by no means fond of the society of the Roshaniya, claimed that they were in fact an organization devoted to fighting against the tyranny of the Moguls, and that the banditry and strange doctrines attributed to them were untrue allegations by interested parties. He bases this upon two manuscript copies of the objectives of the Order, which seem to have stated that it was dedicated to influencing people of importance throughout the East and West towards greater justice and self-training into the immense capacities of the human mind, whereby wonders can be caused, and through which the harmony of the world will be established. '[Now,] these ideas taken from those enshrined in our ancient literature and practices, as well as those of those of the Persians, many of whom have followed the True Illuminated Path before the New Message was revealed[, they stated].'

"In the end, the Imperial Mogul decided that something must be done about the widespread power of the the militant mystics of the Hindu Kush mountains. The Governor of Kabul arrested Bayezid, clapped him in irons, and paraded him in the streets, to show that here was no supernatural being. To give further point to the proceedings, his hair and beard were half-shaved. But this Governor, Moshin Khan, was under the ascendancy of his religious guide, one Sheik Hatari -- who may even have been a secret adherent of the Illuminated One. For the cult was spreading with rapidity. In any case, he told the governor that Bayezid was undoubtedly a man of great and holy attainments, and that considerable suffering would inevitably attend anyone who treated this man harshly. Bayezid was allowed to escape.

"The indignities to which he had been subjected candled his Illuminism still higher. Calling his numerous companions, he retired to tribal Tirah, where he set up a military and court atmosphere which is still remembered for its glamor, fervor, and mystery.

"India and Persia were to be overcome by force of arms, he announced. To that end, many more were to be enrolled into the ranks of the Illuminated. Enthusiastic scenes throughout Afghanistan resulted from the proclamation, which was carried far and wide, to the accompaniment of kettle-drums, wild sword-dances. [And] when he was ready Bayezid attended by his *halka*, or circle of dervishes, led the campaign into the lush land of India. Intercepted by the Moshin Khan whom he had earlier escaped, he was wounded, put to flight, and [he] eventually died as a result of this encounter.

"His son, Omar Ansari, proclaimed himself leader, and immediately ordered an attack upon the Pathan tribe of the Yusufzai who had allied themselves with the Moghul. He was killed by the hillmen, and his own son, 'The Servant of the One', took over the leadership. [And] by the middle of the seventeenth century this youth had been killed defending his castle against a Moghul expeditionary force. His infant son escaped with some of his followers, into Afghanistan proper, where the cult was restarted. The descendants of this Abdul-Qadir (Servant of the Powerful) continued to rule the fanatics, and to send their teachers far and wide. The creed eventually split into two divisions: the military and the religious, and nowadays it is only the followers of the latter [Way] who survived, still a secret cult, which might, given the right conditions, have touched off a movement as important as that of the Assassins.

"[Now,] forty years after the last religio-military leader of the Afghan Illuminated Ones died, a society of the same name (the Illuminati) came into being in Germany, formed, it is said, by Adam Weishaupt, the [young Jesuit priest, a] professor of Canon Law at [the Jesuit] Ingolstadt University. Coincidences of date and beliefs connect these Bavarian Illuminati with the Afghan ones, and also with the other cults which called themselves 'Illuminated'. [William Cooper: In actual fact, they are all the same.] [In] the beginning of the seventeenth century saw the foundation of the Illuminated Ones of Spain -- the Alumbrados, condemned in an edict of the Grand Inquisition of 1623."

[William Cooper]: Out of which the condemned Ignatius Loyola emerged as a man, as a man immune to prosecution, arrest, or accusation from any king, prince, or prelate, as the head of one of the most powerful secret societies ever organized, the Society of Jesus, now known as the Jesuits. Ignatius Loyola had been the leader of the Alumbrados in Spain. And it was *his* sect, the illuminated ones, or the Alumbrados, which became the Society of Jesus.

"In 1654, the 'Illuminated' Guerinets came into public notice in France.

"[Now,] documents still extant show several points of resemblance between the German and Central Asian Illuminists: points which are hard to account for on the grounds of pure coincidence, and yet which still might, one supposes, be nothing more than that. The Prophet Mohammed, for example, is claimed as an initiate by the Western Illuminati. Their calendar is the very same which survived in current usage in the former Iranian territories among the Afghans of the time. New Year's Day with them was the same day as the Persian (and Afghan) Nev Roz festival. Further the degrees of initiation, although seemingly artificial ones coupled with some of the degrees of Freemasonry, were also eight, and there are parallels in the naming of the individual degrees. Like the Roshaniya, the Illuminati stated that they had the objective of gaining important converts for the purpose of improving the state of the world. A comparison of the degrees shows the similarity:

"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Seeker; and in the *Illuminati*, the Apprentice.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Disciple and in the *Illuminati*, the Fellow-craft.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Devotee and in the *Illuminati*, the Master.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Enlightened One and in the *Illuminati*, the Illuminatus major.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Master and in the *Illuminati*, the Illuminatus dirigens.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, the Commander or Emir and in the [*Illuminati*, Prince.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, Priest and in the *Illuminati*, Priest.]
"[In the *Roshaniya*, King or Chief and in the *Illuminati*, King.]

"[Now,] the early stages of initiation were designed to admit people into the brotherhood to test them for reliability, and possibly to train them for responsible tasks connected with the greater diffusion of knowledge. Even in higher degrees it seems that tests are also applied. Those who were to become priests, for example, were taken to a secret place, where a throne stood, with before it the choice of priestly or royal regalia. The aspirant had to make his choice. Those who opted for the symbols of worldly power were dismissed [promptly]; but candidates taking up the sacred vestments were saluted with the phrase: 'Hail, O Holy One!' The members of this degree were considered teachers, in whose hands was the training of disciples.

"Priests identified themselves with a secret sign: both hands, crossed, were placed flat upon the head. In shaking hands, the priest extended his palm, with the thumb held vertically upwards. The countersign was the fist, with the thumb enclosed within it.

"Princes were those who can influence events at a very high level, either in academic or political affairs. The room in which the initiation to this high and secret degree was celebrated was hung with red; the garments which the prince was to wear were red and white. [Now,] these are, of course, the colors of the Ishmailis as well. In the ritual the candidate is presented as a slave, and states that he wants to liberate society from tyranny. The sign of the degree was the extending of both arms. As the countersign, before taking the hand of another, the prince gripped both his elbows.

"In 1786 a raid upon the house of an influential lawyer, Zwack, reveals secret papers connected with the Order, and it is through these that many of the inner workings of the organization became known. Men were to be influenced through their women folk and a large-scale plan for initiating women members was at an advanced stage of development...

"...It has been widely claimed and touted that many of the charges which were made against the German illuminati were false; and that the possession of instructions, for instance, on forging seals was due to the fact that the lawyer Zwack had a collection devoted to that subject, as a matter of legal interest to him. It is also said that the project of enrolling women and young girls had in actual fact been taken from the aims of a very different society, the Mopses. While this matter still remains open, however, one may as well examine some of the documents which are stated to have belonged to the Society.

"Zwack had written, in his own hand, a document describing the manufacture of a strong-box which would blow up if it were tampered with. He also had a collection of impressions of the seals of several hundred important persons; and the already mentioned data on how to forge or substitute them. These, he stated in a letter of protest, were a part of the [exhibits] of his criminological collection. (laughs)

"The famous memorandum detailing the plan to win over women for the cause comes from papers seized at the home of Baron Bassus, one of the members. The document states that women are the best means of influencing men. They should be enrolled, and into their minds put a hope that they might themselves in time be released from the 'tyranny of public opinion'. Another letter asked how young women can be influenced, since their mothers would not consent to their being placed under the Illuminati for instruction. Five women were suggested by one member, as a start. They were four step-daughters of one of the Illuminati, who were to be placed in the care of the wife of yet another Illuminated One. They, in their turn would, enlarge the society through their friends. It was further mentioned that women are not considered to be really suitable for such an undertaking, because they are 'fickle and impatient'. But the Order was most sorely hit by the fact that something quite discreditable to the character of the founder was discovered; and it was thought that he might be trying to use the organization for personal reasons.

"[Now, the establishment version goes something like this:] Weishaupt, upon the suppression of the Order, refused a pension which he was offered after he had been dismissed from his professorial chair. He attributed his downfall to the machinations of the Jesuits, whom be hated and who had opposed him that as he was not of their number, whereas they considered the university post which he held a long-standing prerogative of their own."

[William Cooper]: And nothing could be farther from the truth, for Adam Weishaupt was himself a Jesuit priest, holding a professorial chair at a Jesuit university.

"[Now,] he and Zwack were both banished, and little is heard of them thereafter, although there are rumors that they carried on the Society respectably in Saxe-Coburg and the Netherlands."

[William Cooper]: Another incident that you will not hear in establishment accounts is the story of the messenger writing from one Bavarian illuminati lodge to another, who was literally struck by lightning -- divine intervention, if you will. Struck dead from his horse, in his pouch carrying the papers of a secret plan to take over individual nations, and ultimately the world, were put into the hands of the Bavarian government and many of the portions of these papers are almost word for word what later became known as the Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion.

[William Cooper]: We've got to take a short break, folks. Don't go away. We'll be right back after this short pause.

(Interlude music: Unknown harpsichord music, then unknown pipe organ music)[123]

"Illuminism had spread to France, however, some years before its suppression in Germany. Influential personages were members, many drawn from the ranks of the important Masons of Paris. As in the case of the German branch, it was soon alleged that they pursued terrible aims and practiced frightful orgies. An extract from a French book (almost certainly grossly exaggerated) of the seventeen-nineties -- *La Secte des Illuminés* -- will give a fair idea of this:

"'The huge château of Ermenonville near Paris was one of the chief lodges of the Illuminated. It belonged to the Marquis of Gerardin, who protected Rousseau and later gave him a tomb on his estate. St. Germain, the notable impostor, presided over it. He claims to be a thousand years old, and to be able to make gold. He was said to be immortal, but [(laughs) strangely] died in 1784."

[William Cooper]: And even today, some Looney Tunes wackos claim that they converse with St. Germaine, who still alive walking around in a modern-day suit and tie.

"[Well,] on the day of his initiation [at the Château of Ermenonville], the candidate was conducted through a long, dark passage into an immense hall draped with black. [There were]...faint...lamps [sat around the room]...[There were men dressed as] corpses in...shrouds. [There was an] altar...of human skeletons, [which] stood in the center [of the large hall. And, in the flickering, low lamplight, the priest conducting the initiation resembled] ghostly forms [moving] through the hall[. And everywhere there was the stench of some terrible] odor. [Two men], dressed as specters, [always] appeared and tied a pink band or ribbon [which was] smeared with blood around [the] forehead [of the candidate]. Upon this was an image of the lady of Loretto. [William Cooper: Does this sound familiar, ladies and gentlemen?] A crucifix was placed in his hand, and an amulet hung around his neck."

[William Cooper]: He was asked to remove his clothes; and if he showed any hesitancy, his clothes were removed for him.

"...and laid upon a funeral pyre[. Crosses of blood] were smeared [upon his body and his genitalia] were tied in [a ribbon] or [with] string.

"[Then,]...frightening figures, [covered with blood] and mumbling [strange incantations], approached and threw themselves down in prayer. After [a long period of time,]...weeping[, crying, wailing broke out as if a herd, a plethora of mourners were bereaved upon the death of their closest and deepest love]...the funeral pyre [burned brighter and brighter. All the] clothes [of the initiate] were consumed. [And] from[, behind or near this] fire, [one of the priests emerged almost as if he had taken form from the smoke of the pyre itself. And] the five...figures went into...convulsions [and loud wailing and screaming took place. And then] came the voice of [someone concealed behind a curtain]...these oaths, which the candidate had to repeat:

"'In the name of the crucified one, I swear to sever all bonds which unite me with mother, brothers, sisters, wife, relatives, friends, mistress, kings, superiors, benefactors or any other man to whom I have promised faith, service, or obedience;

"'I name the place in which I was born. Henceforth I live in another dimension, which I will not reach until I have renounced the evil globe which has been cursed by Heaven;

"'From now onwards I shall reveal to my new chief all that I have heard or found out; and I shall also seek out and observe things which might otherwise have escaped me;

"'I honor the *aqua toffana*; it is a quick and essential medium of removing from the earth, through death or robbing them of their wits, of those who oppose truth, and those who try to take it from our hands;

---

[123]

"'I shall avoid Spain, Naples, and all other accursed lands, and I shall avoid the temptation to betray what I have now heard;

"'Lightning will not strike as rapidly as the dagger, which will reach me, wherever I may be, should I betray my initiation."

"[Then, a seven-branched]candelabrum, bearing seven black candles, [was] placed before the candidate, and [a large] bowl containing human blood. [The candidate washed] himself in the blood, and [drank] a quantity of it. The string around his [genitalia was] removed, [and then he was carried to] a bath to undergo complete ablution. After this, he [was given] a meal composed of root vegetables.'

"[Now, folks, (laughs)] while it is possible that such ceremonies as this have actually taken place..."

[William Cooper]: And we know that they have, because it is exact...the exact ceremony that George Bush underwent in the crypt, or what is known as the tomb, or the skull and bones at Yale University...

"...[that] it will be recalled that such items as 'human blood' are generally not of the genuine variety in any society other than those reputed to be dedicated to criminal or perverted ends."

[William Cooper]: Well, I have this to say: no one knows but those who actually take part in the ceremony, whether it's chicken blood or human blood or pig blood or cow's blood.

"[And, as it is] with the initiations of other societies, there is no doubt that the candidate may have been made to believe that he was actually going through an initiation which involved horrible things of this nature [such as human blood]. Initiation into the ancient mysteries was often accompanied by the exposure of the candidate to fear [another] emotions, in order to make [him] receptive to the oath or message which was to be made manifest.

"It has been said[, folks] that the European version of the Order of the Illuminati contributed in no small measure to the development of revolutionary doctrines which eventually culminated in the Russian and other Communist machines."

[William Cooper]: And in fact, those of serious study, who have perused the depths of the available material as I and others have, have no doubt, have no doubt whatsoever that Communism -- international Socialism -- is the direct product of the Mystery Schools of the Illuminati, as was the formation of this nation which was guaranteed to lead us in to what is known as the New World Order -- Novus Ordo Seclorum: the formation of a one world totalitarian state ruled by benevolent "despotism," is the way that they put it.

"[And] there is little doubt that the Order was dedicated to the overcoming of princely power as it was then known, and to the diffusion of anti-religious ideas. [And] this can best be seen by examining the development of the teaching of the member, as he progressed from one degree of initiation into the next.

"[Now, folks,] many young enthusiasts with a taste for mystery and a desire to fight oppression in any form were drawn, through a deliberate plan, from the ranks of [all of the colleges and universities and from all of the other supposedly benevolent fraternital organizations]. After an oath of obedience and silence [had] been extracted from the candidate, he was then handed over to a Director [or Teacher, or, if you will, Hierophant], to be taught that the Order was one of the discipline and effort, and that the final objectives were to do good through leaving aside all preconceived notions and upon the basis of free thought to lead mankind to salvation."

[William Cooper]: But salvation granted by who, and salvation from what? That is the question that intelligent men should be asking. However, it's been my experience that most men and most women don't ask any questions whatsoever -- or very few, anyway.

"Those who managed to show that they were likely to accept the next stage in teaching, were advanced to the rank in which he was made to swear that he would work under the orders of his masters without doubt or question. He would not use his critical faculties in any way in any matter connected with such instructions.

"[Now,] in the lower ranks -- [or] (laughs) the 'nursery'..."

[William Cooper]: For all of you Blue Lodge Master Masons out there who think you know so much, that are nothing more than the greatest group of followers that ever conceived and let loose upon humanity.

"[Yes, in the 'nursery'] -- the member was very much in the dark as to the way in which the Order was run, and how it should accomplish its design of freeing the world. As he progressed, however, he found that part of his service to the Society was to gain financial and social power, and to place them at the disposal of the group. [Indeed,] he was expected to be a diligent Mason, and to try to gain control over [Freemason] funds. It was not until the tenth rite of promotion had been completed that the member [was] given -- with the grade of Priest -- certain definite knowledge."

[William Cooper]: And now, today, in the order known as the Scottish Rite, this information is not given until the candidate actually reaches the 30th degree, according to the actual writings of the man who was the Grand Commander of all of Freemasonry of the world and of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry in the United States, Mr. Pike. General Pike.

"[Well, this knowledge] included the fact that the Illuminati were proposing to destroy princes and prelates throughout the world, and were to remove forever the feeling of local nationality from the minds of men. [William Cooper: Another goal was to destroy all existing religions.] The ways in which this was to be done involved infiltrating high positions in education, administration[, of government, the military and, of course,] the Press.

"The very highest degrees showed that the rationalism and materialism of the thinkers who developed it were determined to stamp out all belief in religion. God and any faith in a deity, the initiate was told, were human inventions, and [they] had no real meaning [whatsoever]. [Now,] this was developed further, and the member who arrived at the highest position [in the Order, or (that [designated as] Rex [or] King) learned that he was now the same as any king, [on the same level, with the same rights and the same divine right of rule,] and that all men were capable of equal advancement [but all men were not equal]: hence the need for kings over [man] was an illusion [perpetrated by those in power, and this perpetration was to be broken at all costs].

[No longer reading]

And the highest, for the men who sat at the head of the Council, the Council of hidden supervisors made up of nine members was designated as Rex Mundi, or literally translated, "Kings of the World." In their machinations to overthrow, topple the Kings and Queens of all the countries of the world from their thrones, they established the United States of America and the English colonies in the New World. And its ultimate goal -- its secret destiny -- was to be the catalyst to bring into the world what they called the Great Society or the New World Order. And it certainly worked, dear listeners. As you can look back through history, the granting of the common man of liberty, fraternity, equality, freedom that he had never tasted or known before in history, lit the spark that then ignited the French Revolution -- of course, with the leadership and the manipulation of the people of the Illuminati, the lodges of Freemasonry, the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross and others -- the highest level were all the same with the same goals. And this spark of revolution spread throughout the world. And, until we all grow up and learn how to stop this, it will continue.

As the secret societies propel us, manipulate us, deceive us, lie, operating in secret, infiltrating everything decent and good that man has ever built, destroying it from within, bringing closer and closer their goal of what they believe will be a Utopia on earth: a one-world, totalitarian, Socialist order. They hope to create the world where they will rule as being the ones who possess the only truly mature minds; they will establish a council of advisors to a world, charismatic, political and religious leader who will be the outward rule, but he will really take his orders from this "benevolent despotism," this Council of Learned Elders; and everyone on the face of this earth will be in total control for every 24-hour period of their lives. There will be one-world religion catering to the needs of man -- not men obeying the laws of any God. The general rule will be, as has been touted many, many times by these people: "Do as thou wilt shall be the whole of the law." And even murder will be considered to be a learning experience provided that the perpetrator actually learns something. People who exhibit violent tendencies as a matter of normal behavior on their part will simply be eliminated.

Ladies and gentlemen, I hope this is beginning to come together and make sense to you, if it doesn't as yet. We have a long, long, way to go as you have probably already begun to understand.

[William Cooper asks for air-time donations]

Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(closing music: I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For)[124]

---

[124] U2, *I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For*, , performed live

Hour 16: Quotes by Freemasons (aired March 10th, 1993)

I'm William Cooper, and you're listening to the Hour of the Time.

(opening music: Stars Fell On Alabama)[125]

Oh, what a great lady! Anyone, anyone who ever, ever comes to me and tells me that music doesn't penetrate directly to the soul, doesn't have a soul. I mean, that's the only interpretation I could ever make to any statement like that made by anyone.

Tonight, folks, we've got to get you back into the stream. Now, the way I do that is I quit telling you about my research and I quote exactly from the horse's mouth, so you'll know that what you're hearing on this program, the Hour of the Time, is not being made up by me or anyone else. And it's there for anyone to find if you'll just get off your butts and go to the libraries, start digging and looking and searching and reading. And quit listening to what you're told, including what you're told on this show. Remember, my admonition is not to ever believe anything you hear from the mouth of anyone, or that you read from the book written by anyone, or from Dan Rather and the six o'clock news, or the President of the United States, Archer Carter, Tom Valentine, Rush Limbaugh (the man who's sitting on half of his brain) or indeed, from even your own mother. For, folks, the deception in this world right now that's being promulgated in order to bring about a one-world, totalitarian, Socialist government is so deep that you better be standing on a stump or you might drown.

Alice Bailey, folks, one of the key members of the New Age religion, wrote this: "There is no question, therefore, that the work to be done in familiarizing the general public with the nature of the Mysteries is of paramount importance at this time. These Mysteries will be restored to outer expression through the medium of the Church and the Masonic Fraternity." And she's absolutely, one hundred percent, correct.

The question of just what the ancient mysteries were, folks, was answered in part by Albert G. Mackey, another 33rd degree Mason. He wrote a two-volume work, entitled *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, and wrote this under the subject of the Ancient Mysteries: "Each of the pagan gods had (besides the public and open) a secret worship paid [to] him, to which none were admitted but those who had been selected by preparatory ceremonies, called initiation. This secret worship was termed the Mysteries."

The student of the Masonic order can know that, when Mr. Mackey writes, his writings can be relied upon. He is considered to be one of the premiere Masonic authors of all-time. These are the comments from the biographical information presented on Mr. Mackey in front of his encyclopedia: "His writings are universally esteemed for their sincerity, honest records and common sense. He was a leader in research who valued accuracy."

Carl Claudy, another Mason who writes on the subject of the Lodge, also has words of praise for Mr. Mackey: "He was one of the greatest students and most widely followed authorities the Masonic world has ever known." And in his book, entitled *Introduction to Freemasonry*, he praised Mr. Mackey with these words: "Albert Gallatin Mackey: one of the greatest students and most widely followed authorities the Masonic world has known...He is the great master of Freemasonry." So, Mr. Mackey certainly can be believed when he tells his readers that the worship of pagan gods had a secret, non-visible worship beside the public one. The reader can believe him when he identifies the name of this secret worship. He told his readers, "This secret worship was termed, 'The Mysteries'."

Another who was written on the subject on the ancient Mysteries was Manly P. Hall, another 33rd degree Mason whom I have quoted extensively before in this series. He has written in his book, entitled *What the Ancient Wisdom Expects of Its Disciples*: "In the remote past the gods walked with men and they chose from among the sons of men the wisest and the truest. With these specially ordained and illumined sons they left the keys of their great wisdom, which was the knowledge of good and evil...These illumined ones founded what we know as the Ancient Mysteries."

---

[125] Music by Frank Perkins, lyrics by Mitchell Parish, sung by Billie Holiday

Now, in case you weren't listening there, this is a dead giveaway and an admission that the gods that walked with men were known (at least in the Bible) as Satan. For he says here -- and I'm going to read this again for you, folks, because I know some of you just didn't pick it up, because I know the minds of the sheeple operate. And there's a lot of sheeple listening. There's also a lot of people listening who aren't sheeple, and they know that I'm not talking to them. If the word 'sheeple' apply to you makes you angry [sic], then folks, it is an indication that it fits you like a shoe, like a glove, that you are indeed one of the sheeple. Let me read it again: "With these specially ordained and illumined sons they left the keys of their great wisdom, which was the knowledge of good and evil." According to the Bible, the knowledge of good and evil was imparted to Adam when Satan enticed Eve to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge and she, in turn, enticed Adam. And what was the fruit of the tree of knowledge? It was the knowledge of good and evil. It was forbidden for man to know that.

Now, I'm not making judgment on any of this, I'm just telling you what my research says. Remember, this is not a religious program. And while I, myself, personally, have my own idea of what my own religion is, I am in no means trying to foist it off on anyone else. Let me continue. He wrote -- and we're talking about Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree Freemason -- he wrote additional comments about these Mysteries in another of the books he was written, called *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*. And I would urge you, if you can afford it, to buy that book. It's a very expensive book. I have a copy of it in my library. It cost me one hundred and fifty dollars, and it was worth every single penny of it, I can assure you. "The arcana [William Cooper: defined as being a secret or hidden knowledge] of the ancient Mysteries were never revealed to the profane [William Cooper: defined as those not initiated into the inner Mysteries] except through the media of symbols." You're going to find, folks, that symbols mean more than you will *ever* begin to understand, unless you waded deep into the end of the stream that is Mystery Babylon, as I have.

"Symbolism fulfilled the dual office of concealing the sacred truths from the uninitiated and revealing to those qualified to understand the symbols." Mr. Hall dedicated the latter book to "the proposition that, concealed within the emblematic figures, allegories and rituals of the ancients is a secret doctrine concerning the inner Mysteries of life, which doctrine has been preserved in toto [which means, 'in the whole'] among a small band of initiated minds since the [very] beginning of the world."

He went on to mention that the Mysteries "were secret societies, binding their initiates to inviolable secrecy, and avenging with death the betrayal of their sacred trusts." And to this day they take blood oaths. Mr. Hall told the reader that no one is to know the identity of those who have received the secrets. In fact, he wrote: "The true Adept and initiate shall reveal his identity to no man unless that one is worthy to receive it." He further explained where some of these initiates lived when he wrote: "No reasonable doubt can exist that the initiates of Greece, Egypt, and other ancient countries possessed the correct solutions to those great cultural, intellectual, moral and social problems which, in an unsolved state, confront the humanity of the 20th century."

He further amplified that thought he had with this: "Neo-Platonism [defined by Mr. Hall as a school founded by Plotinus around 240 A.D. concerning itself with the problems of metaphysics which he calls 'the study of knowledge'] recognized the existence of a secret and all-important doctrine which from the time of the earliest civilizations had been concealed within the rituals, symbols, and allegories of religions and philosophies."

So, in summary, it is possible, folks, to understand what these ancient Mysteries were. And there appears to be at least four truths gleaned from the information provided in the comments made previously and these truths appears to be:

1. The ancient Mysteries had two forms of worshiping the same god.

2. The knowledge of the true god was reserved for those who had been entrusted with the secrets, and not for those whom they call the 'profane'.

3. Those who understood those secrets were sworn to the strictest secrecy, and

4. Those who have knowledge of the secrets claimed to possess all of the answers to all of the problems of mankind.

Now, there was an additional secret for the secret-bearers. They had to be initiated in a private initiation ceremony. Albert Pike, General Albert Pike, a southern Confederate General during the Civil War, wrote this: "Initiation was considered to be a mystical death, and the perfect *Epopt* was [then] said to be *regenerated, new-born*, restored to a *renovated* existence of *life, light*, and *purity*."

In fact, folks, this "new-born" experience is similar to the experience the "born-again" Christians go through. The Christians call their experience a second-birth, just as the Masons do. In fact, Albert Pike calls a similar ceremony a "born-again" experience, and he wrote this: "In the Indian Mysteries, the third degree, the Initiate is said to be born-again."

The ceremony in the ancient Mysteries has been described by the Masonic writer Manly P. Hall: "In the ancient system of initiation, the truth seeker must pass through a second birth, and those who attained this exalted state were known thereafter as 'the twice born'. This new birth must be personally earned through a complete regeneration of character and conduct." This new-birth ceremony involves a symbolic death according to the Mason Kenneth MacKenzie. And he wrote this: "In the ancient Mysteries, the aspirant could not participate in the highest secrets until he had been placed in the coffin. In this, he was symbolically said to die and his resurrection was to the light."

Now, remember I told you about the initiation that George Bush underwent in the crypt, also known as the tomb, the Skull and Bones, the Brotherhood of Death at Yale University? This is what they're talking about. During a press conference, a reporter asked George Bush if he was a Christian and he replied thusly: "If you're asking if I have been born-again, the answer is yes." And indeed, he has.

Modern-day Masons participate in an almost similar ceremony to the one described by these Masonic writers. In the third degree called the Master Mason degree, inside the blue lodge the candidate is actually knocked off of his feet by several of the Masons in attendance. He is wrapped up in a blanket and moved to the western end of the temple. There, after further ceremony, he is raised up by a grip called "the Master's Grip" or the "Grip of the Lion's Paw". Those who learned the Mysteries also learned that they had a secret project, one that was described by Albert Pike in his book, entitled *Morals and Dogma*. Mr. Pike wrote this, "Behold [our] object, the end, the result of the great speculations...of antiquity; the ultimate annihilation of evil, and restoration of Man to his first estate, by a Redeemer, a Masayah, a Christos, the incarnate Word, Reason, or Power of Deity." I urge you all, if you could find a copy of *Morals and Dogma* by Albert Pike, to purchase it, take it home and read it.

Mr. Hall told his readers that those who had been initiated into the Mysteries were the secret power behind the governments of the past. He wrote this about these ancient initiates in his book, entitled *What the Ancient Wisdom Expects of Its Disciples*: "They are the invisible powers behind the thrones of earth, and men are but marionettes, dancing while the invisible ones pull the strings. We see the dancer, but the master mind that does the work remains concealed by the cloak of silence."

Now remember, I told you, folks, that if you don't open your mind, and if you don't quit believing dogma, if you don't quit believing what people tell you, if you don't stop believing what Dan Rather tells you on the six o'clock news, or your local minister down at your church, or your mother or the President of the United States, and if you don't start digging to find the truth yourself, you, you, the sheeple, are the marionettes, dancing while the invisible ones pull the strings. And until you change that pattern of your life, you will always be the puppet on the end of someone else's string. And I know that that's not what you want to be, is it? Well, if it's not, change your life now. Stop believing what you are told, including what you hear on this show unless it checks out in your own research, your own experience, your own digging. Each of us must find our own truth, and if we are really looking and digging, we're ultimately going to come to something near the same truth for all of us. And I can tell you now that most of us have been living in fantasyland for all of our lives. We don't even know anything near what the truth of any matter is. And we must begin an honest search, starting from the beginning, wiping the slate clean, cleansing our mind, and looking at the world, beginning again as though through the eyes of a new-born child. And you will find that most of what you ever been taught in your entire life is a lie...is a lie.

Other writers, folks, have confirmed the thoughts of Mr. Hall. A Masonic scholar named George Steinmetz also acknowledged that these Mysteries exist, and that some of the members inside the Masonic lodges are custodians of the secrets. He has written this in his book, entitled *Freemasonry: Its Hidden Meaning*: "Ancient secret doctrine, which is concealed in Masonic allegory and symbolism...it was but to preserve these truths for future generation that Masonry itself was perpetuated." And if that is true, why is it a secret? Why not tell us all what this secret doctrine is, for modern man is not like ancient man when he didn't know how to read or reason or understand? Modern man has the capability to understand anything that is put before him and accept it if it is the truth, and reject it if it is a lie.

So why the secrecy? The secrecy is because, folks, the *real secret* of Mystery Babylon is how to control everyone else. And if they reveal these secrets, they won't have the control, for it will be in the hands of everyone. That is the greatest secret of the secret societies. Another writing of Manly P. Hall was this: "Much of the ritualism of Freemasonry is based upon the trials to which candidates were subjected to by the ancient hierophants [William Cooper: 'hierophant' is defined as the high priest of the Mysteries] before the keys of wisdom were [enthroned] to them."

The ancient Mysteries had a beginning. According to Mr. Mackey, he wrote about where they started: "The first of which are those of Isis and Osiris in Egypt, the most important of these Mysteries were the Osiric in Egypt." Another writer, Edmond Ronayne, an ex-Mason, confirmed that the Masons were involved in the worship of Osiris when he wrote this in his book, entitled *The Master's Carpet*: "Masonry's ceremonies, symbols and the celebrated legend of Hiram in the Master Mason's degree, were directly borrowed from the 'Ancient Mysteries,' or the secret worship of Baal, Osiris or Tammuz." This is a direct admission that Freemasonry stems directly out of Mystery Babylon, the ancient Mystery Religion, the worship of Baal, the golden calf representative of the house during which that two thousand-year period the Sun resided. The Sun, the symbol of the Light, Lucifer, the intellect, the gift, primordial knowing.

Albert Pike then detailed where the Mysteries went after their beginnings in Egypt. He wrote this in *Morals and Dogma*: "From Egypt, the Mysteries went to Phoenicia, and were celebrated at Tyre. Osiris changed his name, and become Adoni or Dionusos, still the representative of the Sun... In Greece and Sicily, Osiris took the name of Bacchus." So the ancient Mysteries concealed an important Mystery, kept secret from the average person. The mystics claim that this Mystery has been concealed from the world for centuries. Even though they had taken the Mystery to other continents, those who believed in this religion were yet to take it to America. That was yet to come, and we will get to that, I promise you. And it will, I also promise you, amaze you.

[Gilbert] Lafayette, who was a very famous and noted pirate and a member of Freemasonry and the Knights Templar, said this: "An invisible hand is guiding the populace." Arthur Edward Waite, a prolific writer on secret societies has written this: "Beneath the broad tide of human history, there flow the stealthy undercurrents of the secret societies, which frequently determine in the depths the changes that take place upon the surface." Another who wrote about the power just underneath the surface was President Woodrow Wilson, the President of the United States of America, who made this startling statement. He made this statement, yet it was ignored, but it should never go ignored from this point forward. "There is a power so organized, so subtle, so complete, so pervasive, that they had better not speak above their breath when they speak in condemnation of it." So, these two writers have warned America that secret societies had been arranging the major events of the past, and President Wilson warned those who were quick to condemn these organizations that they had better be cautious.

Albert Pike had also connected the secret societies with a secret belief in his book, entitled *Morals and Dogma*. He wrote that all secret orders and associations, quote--now remember, he said, all...all secret orders and associations "had two doctrines, one concealed and reserved for the masters, the other, public." Now, one such secret society with two doctrines was the Illuminati, and Professor [Adam] Weishaupt, its founder, boasted of his organization's secrecy. He realized that this secrecy would enable them to decide the fate of nations, and because their deliberations were secret, no outsider could interfere. He wrote this: "The great strength of our Order lies in its concealment; let it never appear...in its own name, but always [covered] by another name, and another occupation." Weishaupt later wrote about that secrecy in a letter to a fellow member of the Illuminati, "Nothing can bring this about but hidden societies. Hidden schools of wisdom are the means which will one day free men from their bonds...Princes and nations shall vanish from the earth."

Folks, don't go away. We've got to stop for a break. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(break music: When You Wish Upon A Star)[126]

Don't forget, folks, this Monday night, March 15th, 8pm to 11, I'll be at the Lafayette Hotel, 2223 El Cajon Blvd in San Diego, California. That's this coming Monday night, March 15th at 8pm 'til 11. I'll be at the Lafayette Hotel at 2223 El Cajon Blvd in San Diego, California. I'll be giving a three-hour presentation, entitled *The Sacrificed King*. This is on the Kennedy assassination and I'm going to footage there that you've never seen before. I'm going to show you the direct, I mean direct, absolute occult connection to the Kennedy assassination, I'm going to tell what group killed our president, murdered our president if you will. I'm going to show you the footage of what Dealey Plaza really is so you'll see that this is not just an innocent park in the city of Dallas. I'm going to show you where Dallas really is, and what the occult significance of its location means. And when you leave there, folks, you're going to understand more about the workings of the world, and who assassinated our president and why then you'll ever have before. You're also going to see that, uh, Oliver Stone knew all of this and chose to deceive the American people, because he is one of those who are bringing about the New World Order. And his movie, *JFK*, was designed to convince all of us that our government doesn't work. The Constitutional government can't work, that it's turned against us, and it's not true, folks. Our Constitutionally instituted and established government had absolutely nothing to do with the Kennedy assassination, as all of those who show up on Monday night, March 15th, 8pm will find out.

[William Cooper further plugs the appearance and offers CAJI memberships]

Well, folks, you've heard all through this series of broadcasts about a group of men supposedly with the only truly mature minds in this world, who are going to setup a Utopia on earth, a heaven of earth if you will. And that there's the ones who are going to rule through a benevolent despotism. And they call this Utopia the Great Society, the New World Order, the Utopian philosophy, all of these things. Now, Lyndon Johnson, Lyndon Baines Johnson, was a member of this secret society. He was, in fact, a 33rd degree Freemason, and his Great Society that he envisioned was exactly what we're talking about here. And you can see that Johnson, a great Socialist, a Marxist secretly, set us on the road to Socialism by setting up this great welfare state, which he called the Great Society. It's one and the same, folks. It's the same. George Bush's New World Order is the same. The New World Order that our forefathers envisioned was the same. The Great Society talked about during the Peasants' Revolt in England was the same. The same that is coming, unless we wake up to stop it. And you can see, by the welfare state, how well it really works. (laughs) It doesn't work at all, it never will work, it can't work! These people are Looney Tunes.

If you believe the exoteric version of what they intend to bring about -- you see, they have no intention of bring about a Utopia, a heaven on earth, a Great Society, not at all. That's to lure the unwary, the foolish, the great mass of followers that make up the lower degrees of this secret society so that they will support the completion of the Great Work, the plan. They really intend us to be something along the lines of what Hitler attempted to establish. They talk about in terms of a great cleansing, where certain religions, certain people, certain races, will literally be eliminated from this earth. And they are convicted through their own words, ladies and gentlemen, as you hearing tonight and you've heard in other broadcasts. For when I feel that you are getting to the point where you're not understanding what's happening, I go back as I'm doing tonight and quote these people directly from their own mouths. I'm going to do that again tomorrow night, folks, so be ready.

Let me continue. The secret societies were created to bring the world to the new society known as the New World Order. The members of these organizations obviously feel that their goals are so noble that they may perform whatever tasks are required to bring them to that goal, and that goal to fruition. This means, folks, that murder, plunder and lying all become acceptable as long as these methods assist its members in obtaining their goal.

But the Freemasons, or *frère-maçon*, as the true term began, want to world to know that they are not one of the societies involved in changing the world's civilization, and they're quick to rush to their own defense. However, when you go back and read their own history and their own words, you can see that they have literally no defense, for they are convicted by the words of their leaders. By the words of their leaders. And folks, by their deeds. For it was General Albert Pike who created, through the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, the Knights of the Ku Klux Klan. It was the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry that created the branch known as B'nai B'rith, which then created the ADL, or the Anti-Defamation League, which is nothing but an organization of criminals who have murdered, who have bombed, who have lied, and just recently, one of their crimes was spying. Putting spies within police organizations in the United States of America, and spiriting out files and records. And all of Jews in the United States support this criminal organization to their great shame, and those of you who feel that the Jews are responsible for all of this, you are wrong. Most Jews don't know any more about this then you did, and they are being used, just as you are being used. Just as I have been used in my life.

---

[126] Performed by Wynton Marsalis from the album, Hot House Flowers

"In all time, truth has been hidden under symbols," wrote Albert Pike. And he also wrote this, "[Symbols] are nevertheless, ingenious veils that cover the Truth." Now, Albert Pike was the Sovereign Grand Commander of the Southern Jurisdiction of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. The Scottish Rite now controls world Freemasonry. There certainly seems, folks, to be a power in knowing something that you can't tell your family, friends, children, or business acquaintances. And Adam Weishaupt said it best with this selection from his writings: "Of all the means I know to lead men, the most effectual is a concealed mystery." And that is true, I've found in my research, that the vast fools, the followers flock to the Mysteries and the promise of learning some secret during their climb up the ladder of degrees of initiation. The truth is that only a very few ever learn anything, and what they learn is how to control the rest.

The power of hidden symbols was alluded to by another writer, this time Foster Bailey in his book, entitled *The Spirit of Freemasonry*: "A symbol veils or hides a secret, and it is that which veils certain mysterious forces. These energies when released can have a potent effect." And indeed they can, as we are all feeling now the [pinch?] of the power.

There are many who can attest to that simple truth. Organizations with concealed or secret initiation ceremonies abound in America and, indeed, around the world. College fraternities and sororities teach the college student to accept secret initiation ceremonies and hidden knowledge at a young age. The Masons, intended for adult males, have similar organizations for their young sons and daughters, and other secret organizations for their wives. And all of these organizations tend to prepare their male members for further service in the master secret organization, the Masons. However, the Masons are quick to point out that they conceal their truths from the general public. Manly P. Hall, for instance, wrote this: "It is for the Adepts," and 'adept' is defined by the dictionary as one who is an expert, but there is an esoteric definition that shall be discussed later. "It is for the Adepts, one to understand the meaning of the symbols." He further instructed his readers that understanding the symbols can make one wise "and understanding these symbols is the beginning of wisdom."

Max Toth, a writer about the Great Pyramid of Giza in Egypt, also wrote about the purpose of symbols, and he said, "The knowledge of the ancient mysteries was never revealed to the laymen except through the media of symbols. Symbolism fulfilled both the need to conceal sacred truths from the uninitiated and to offer a language for those qualified to understand it." Now, whatever these secrets are, folks, one writer on the subject feels it's time to make them public. Alice Bailey, one of the key writers supporting the New Age movement, wrote this: "The hour for the ancient mysteries has arrived. These Ancient Mysteries were hidden in numbers, in ritual, in words, and in symbology; these veil the secret."

Another writer who writes of the order, Carl H. Claudy, told anyone who read the Masonic literature that he had best understand the language or they would miss the true meaning of the words. He wrote, "He who hears but the words of Freemasonry misses their meaning entirely."

Rex Hutchins, a 32rd degree Mason who has written a book for the Masons, one so important that it was used to replace one written by Henry Clausen, a former Sovereign Commander, also informed his readers that his writings also concealed a secret. "The word 'reveal' means to re-veil, that is, to give one explanation and yet to continue to maintain the mystery of the symbol by not explaining it in a full and complete manner."

So, the language code must be broken if one is to learn the truth about the Masonic order. The reason that is so is because the Masons have admitted that they have concealed the true meaning of some of their language. However, it is possible, folks, to know the true meanings of at least some of the hidden language, and the listener can be certain that the discovered interpretations are correct, because the Masons themselves have revealed the hidden meanings of some of their symbols in some of their own literature. The secret societies, folks, that have concealed their purposes and hidden meanings, concealed writings, and private initiation ceremonies are, admittedly, very powerful.

One who recognized that power was Benjamin Disraeli, the prime minister of England in the late 1880s, who said this in the House of Commons on July 14th in 1856: "There is in Italy a power which we seldom mention in this House...I mean the secret societies...It is useless to deny, because it is impossible to conceal, that a great part of Europe -- the whole of Italy and France and a great portion of Germany, to say nothing of other countries -- is covered with a network of these secret societies." What are their objects [sic]? "They do not want Constitutional government; they want to change the tenure of the land, to drive out the present owners of the soil and to put an end to ecclesiastical establishments [meaning religion]."

The Masons know about concealing secrets from the rest of the world. Carl Claudy, a Masonic writer, told his readers that secrets are inside secrets, which are inside other secrets, and he wrote this: "[Cut] through the outer shell and find a meaning; cut through that meaning and find another; under it if you dig [deep] enough you may find a third, a fourth - who shall say how many teachings?" And even the Communists used concealment, for the Communists were created by the Mysteries. The cell system of the Communist party was created by the Mystery Schools, which have used the same system for millennia.

Nikolai Lenin, the Marxist Communist who communized the Russian nation in the years following the Russian revolution of 1917 wrote this: "We have to use any ruse, dodge, trick, cunning, unlawful method, concealment and veiling of the truth." Many of the signs for identifying a Communist, or a member of the Communist party, are exactly the same as those symbols and signs used by Freemasons to identify each other. The use of secrecy to conceal thoughts from certain of the members [sic] of an organization or from the public is the device of those who have something to hide. That something is so horrible, so terrible, that knowledge of that secret must be kept from those who would have the most to lose by knowledge of that secret.

In the case of the secret societies, it is a belief in Lucifer, also known as Satan, or the devil. In the case of Communism, it is the truth that the people living in a Communist nation *know* that the system does not work. But those in a non-Communist nation, targeted for a Communist government, are not to learn that simple truth. They're to be told that the system is the culmination of man's upward search for a perfect society. A Great Society, if you will, a Utopia on earth, and they must be deluded into believe that there is no cost in the change from their current form of government to the communist form.

One of the things that I find so incredible is that they trap the intellectuals so easily. The intellectuals, the ones who are supposedly so good at using their brain, cannot even use their brain so much as to look into history to see that the *first* people that the Communists, the international Socialists, destroyed, killed, sentenced to the labor camps, the gulag if you will, are always the intellectuals. And history has recorded the brutality of the Communists, and the fact that millions of people have had to die as the Communists installed that form of government. The evidence to support that convention will be discussed later in some other program.

Now, secrecy is certainly not a part of the Christian religion today, although the Christian religion began in secret and was, in fact, a secret society. It is possible to know that nothing Jesus has said has been hidden from the Christians of today. He told the high priest in [the book of] John, chapter 18, verse 20: "And in secret have I said nothing."

The intentional concealing of an organization beliefs and purposes through the use of hidden language and concealed symbols is reserved primarily to the secret societies, and the nationwide Masonic lodges are indeed a secret society. And in the beginning, Christians had their secret symbols also. One of the most prominent was the symbol of the fish. The secret is simply the fact that certain of their members [sic] worshiped Lucifer, and that they keep that secret from the overwhelming majority of their own members, and certainly the public is never to know this fact if they can help it. And the evidence to support that conclusion is ample, but only to one who cares enough to look for it. The problem with most people is that they don't care enough to look for *anything* except *Wheel of Fortune* on the television set.

[Reading from *The New World Order*, written by A. Ralph Epperson]:

"So, the student of history has to discover the hidden meanings behind the symbols and the Masonic literature and in the secret initiation ceremonies to understand the Masonic Order.

"One of the first symbols that needs to be examined is the symbol of the serpent, also called a snake or dragon.

"Manly P. Hall wrote that the use of this symbol is as old as early man when he wrote this in his book, entitled *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*: 'Among nearly all these ancient peoples the serpent was accepted as a symbol of wisdom...'"

[William Cooper]: For from the serpent has man received the gift of intellect.

"Here Mr. Hall states that the serpent is the symbol of 'wisdom.' It will be remembered that Lord Maitreya, the future New Age leader, also oclaimed to possess 'wisdom.' Mr. Hall continued:

"'Serpent worship in some form has permeated nearly all parts of the earth. The serpent is the symbol and prototype of the Universal Savior, who redeems the world by giving creation the knowledge of itself and the realization of good and evil.'"

[William Cooper]: An admission that the serpent, at least from the point of view of the Christian Bible, is Satan.

"And then Mr. Hall links the serpent with the Ancient Mysteries previously discussed. He continues with the comment that the serpent was worshiped by the priests of that religion:

"'The priests of the Mysteries were symbolized as a serpent, sometimes called Hydra.'

"[And then he] pointed out that the Ancient Mysteries had been passed on to various other cultures, and that they have been brought forward to the present-day."

Folks, we'll continue this tomorrow night. If you can, reach into your pockets, make out a check or money order...

[William Cooper asks for donations]

Until tomorrow night, good night and God bless each and every single one of you.

(closing music: continuation of When You Wish Upon A Star, performed by Wynton Marsalis)

Hour 17: Sun Worship (aired March 30th, 1993)

Well, it's hard to believe, folks, but this is the sixteenth hour of broadcasting in our series on Mystery Babylon.

You're listening to the Hour of the Time, and I'm William Cooper.

(opening music: sound effects -- a bugle playing Reveille, followed by two types of warning alarms, followed by various types of gunfire and explosions, followed by a bugle playing Taps)

Ladies and gentlemen, what you have just listened to is a warning...is a warning. For there is a war being conducted right at this moment -- a war against the American people. It is now a shooting war, and the second battle is being fought. The first was fought in the state of Idaho against the family of Randy Weaver. The second battle is being fought by a brave group of men and women and children in a church, known as Branch Davidian, in Waco, Texas. They are fighting for their Creator-endowed rights. They have committed no crimes. They know what the sound of battle is. They know what it's like to see their friends or relatives die in their arms or at their feet. They know what it's like to have wounded and be refused medicine and medical treatment.

Oh, yes, we are at war. Make no mistake about it. And if you don't believe that, you keep your eyes and ears open in the next weeks, months, and years. You will see it escalate across this country like a wild forest fire, out of control. And unless the sheeple wake up and listen and learn and act, I predict that there will be civil war in the United States of America. Because there are many of us who will not ever give up our Creator-endowed rights, our right to keep and bear arms, the Constitution of the United States, and the Bill of Rights, without one hell of a fight.

And what you heard at the beginning of this program, folks, for those of you who have never experienced war, was the *real* sounds of war. What you heard were real bullets being fired, real bombs being dropped, real machine guns killing real people. And *Taps*, at the end, of what was a *real* bugle blowing *real Taps* over *real* graves of *real* fallen men who were buried in Arlington National Cemetery. You see, many people have already died protecting what many of you are giving up. I, for one, will not.

When they come for me, there will be another battle. I will not give up. And I don't care who wins or loses, because at the end of my battle it would be just the beginning of yours.

Do you understand what I'm telling you? You see, my whole purpose is to wake enough people so that no battles ever have to be fought. But we're already behind because two have already been fought, and more, I guarantee you, are on the way. Guaranteed, folks. Guaranteed. Because the more we allow them to get away with, the more they will attempt. I don't want a civil war in this country. I want to stop it before it even has a chance to start, and the only way to do that is wake up America.

You see, if two hundred million people stand up with their right under the second article and amendment to the Constitution, holding a weapon in their hand, and say, "Enough! We will not put up with this anymore! Stop it now! Get out of our government! Get out of our cities! Get out of our military! And stay out!" that will be the end of it and no shot will have to be fired. I guarantee that. But what do you think the odds are of that happening?

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

Now, this is the sixteenth hour of our series on Mystery Babylon. Many of you have already made the necessary connections. You know what's happening, and you know who's bringing it about, and you know why. Some of you still do not, so we will continue.

[Reading from *The New World Order*, written by A. Ralph Epperson]:

"[Manly P. Hall wrote this:] 'The Serpent Kings [-- and notice that Mr. Hall capitalized the two words, as one would do for a deity or for royalty when he wrote this --] reigned over the earth.'"

[William Cooper]: The Serpent Kings reigned over the earth.

"'It was these Serpent Kings who founded the Mystery Schools which later appeared as the Egyptian and Brahmin Mysteries...The serpent was their symbol...They were the true Sons of Light, and from them have descended a long line of adepts and initiates duly tried and proven according to the law.'"

[William Cooper]: And the proper term is not Freemason, it's *frère-maçon*. It comes from the French, from the Knights of Templar, and it literally means “the Sons of Light”.

"Another writer, Wilfred Gregson, informed his readers why Mr. Hall capitalized the two words "Serpent Kings" when he wrote:

"'One symbol of great prominence throughout all ancient civilizations is the snake, or serpent, where it has symbolized "Divine Wisdom."'

"So, Mr. Hall had reason to capitalize the words, because he had discovered that the serpent represented divinity. Notice also[, folks,] that Mr. Gregson, even though he chose not to capitalize the word 'serpent,' confirmed that Mr. Hall's use of the capital letter was correct when he stated that there was a connection between 'Divine Wisdom' and the serpent.

"Mr. Hall[, a 33rd degree Mason,] made the same connection in these comments:

"'The serpent is true to the principles of wisdom, for it tempts man to the knowledge of himself.'

"A serpent is 'often used by the ancients to symbolize wisdom.'

"The symbol of the serpent has another concealed truth, according to Kenneth McKenzie. [For] he identified that truth in this quote when he described a Brazen Serpent:

"'It was a type of Mediator, and a promise of redemption.'

"The word Brazen[, folks,] is defined as 'bold, or impudent.' And Impudent is defined as 'shamelessly bold or disrespectful.' [Now, you will remember] that Lucifer was an anointed cherub in heaven, who fell because he sought godly power. The story is covered in Isaiah [chapter 14, verses 12-14 of the Old Testament [Look it up. It says this]:

"'How are thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground...For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God...I will be like the Most High.'

"Therefore, it can be safely said that Lucifer would be considered to be 'shamelessly bold' and[, of course,] 'disrespectful.' It appears that the Brazen Serpent could be Lucifer!

"Another author, John Anthony West, wrote a book entitled *Serpent In The Sky*, in which he also connected the serpent with 'wisdom.' [And] he wrote [this]:

"'...the serpent represents intellect, the faculty by which man discriminates. There is a higher and a lower intellect. Thus, symbolically, there is a serpent that crawls and the higher intellect, that which allows man to know God -- the heavenly serpent, the serpent in the sky.'

"The somewhat veiled worship of this serpent in the sky inside the Masonic lodges was alluded to by another Masonic writer, Kenneth MacKenzie[. For] in his book entitled *The Royal Masonic Encyclopedia*, he wrote this:

"'Among the charges preferred against the Order of the Knights of Templar, for which Jacques de Molay suffered martyrdom, was that of worshiping an idol or image called Baphomet. It has been suggested that Baphomet is none other than the Ancient of Days, or Creator. More cannot be said here without improperly revealing what we [meaning [the] Masons] are bound to hele, conceal and never reveal.'

"So, according to this Mason, the snake or serpent is somehow a symbol of the [subject of the] Masonic worship, and apparently this fact is the secret [that] the Masons cannot reveal to the rest of the world.

"A Christian minister, Reverend Alexander Hislop, wrote a book that included some discussion on the subject of serpent worship. [And] in that book, entitled *Two Babylons*, he explained that serpent worship was not something that is recent in time. It was an ancient practice.

"'Along with the sun [this symbol will be discussed later,] as the great fire-god, and, in due time, identified with him, was the serpent worshiped In the mythology of the primitive world, the serpent is universally the symbol of the sun...as the sun [was] the great enlightener of the physical world, so the serpent was held to have been the great enlightener of the spiritual, by giving mankind the 'knowledge of good and evil.'"

[William Cooper]: And, according to the Bible, you know who gave man the knowledge of good and evil: Satan, Lucifer.

"He then discussed a coin minted in Tyre, the center of the ancient Phoenician culture. (This coin was also the subject of an article in the September, 1986 issue of *The Good News* magazine.) It depicted a serpent entwined around a tree stump. To the left of the stump stood an empty cornucopia, and to the right a flourishing palm tree. The snake on the coin is the symbol of the powerful god whom the Romans called Aesculapius. The name means 'the man-instructing snake,' or 'the snake that instructs man.' And the article then reported:

"'In mythology, Aesculapius was believed to be the child of the Sun, and thus the "enlightener" of mankind. As the legend goes, Aesculapius was ultimately struck down by a thunderbolt thrown by an angry Zeus, king of the gods, and cast into the underworld.'

"The tree stump[, folks,] represented the fallen 'god' and his ruined kingdom. In the mythologies of many ancient civilizations, the image of a fallen tree was used to symbolize the cutting off of a great god or hero, someone cut of in the midst of their power. [You see,] the snake on the coin was shown twisting itself around the dead stump, exerting its power in an attempt to restore his fallen kingdom.

"The cornucopia is an ancient symbol of plenty, but it was empty on the coin. This has been interpreted as meaning that the abundance had been cut off because the great 'god' has been cut off. However, [folks,] the implication is that the horn of plenty will return when the fallen 'god' is restored to his 'rightful' position. The palm tree shown on the coin is a well know symbol of victory. So it appears that the coin was minted to depict the anticipated return of the fallen snake-god to the world.

"[And] the Bible talks about a fallen serpent in the book of Revelation, chapter 12, verse 9. However, in this case, [folks,] the snake is connected to another symbol of the serpent: 'a great dragon.'

"'And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan...'

"Is the serpent worshiped in the Ancient Mysteries and a symbol [in the] Masonic ceremonies a symbol of Satan, the devil? As has already been discussed, there is indeed evidence[, folks,] that this is the case."

[William Cooper]: And once you have confronted the evidence and studied as much as I have studied, you will know that they are one and the same.

"Another symbol that needs to be analyzed is the star. On the page opposite page 124 in Mackey's *Encyclopaedia* is a drawing illustrating the 'symbols of Freemasonry.' Included in the twenty or so Masonic symbols is a drawing of a shooting star.

"[Now,] it can be fairly claimed that a blazing or shooting star would be one that was on the move inside the universe. One of the directions it could move would be, of course, towards the earth. If it was moving towards the earth, it could be called a 'falling star.'"

[William Cooper]: But we know that most falling stars are actually meteors and not stars at all.

"Lucifer[, however,] is a 'fallen angel,' according to Isaiah, an Old Testament prophet, who wrote this in Isaiah [chapter 14, verse 12]: 'How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer...'

"[Now, folks,] notice that Isaiah also said that Lucifer fell from heaven. And other parts of the Bible report that he fell to the earth. So, it is conceivable that the symbol of the 'falling' or 'blazing' star could be a symbol of Lucifer.

"A variety of authors have used their writings to discuss the star as a symbol. Professor Adam Weishaupt, the founder of the [Bavarian] Illuminati, was one who explained what he considered the star to be a symbol of [listen closely]:

"'...the Flaming Star is the Torch of Reason.'

"Mr. Mackey wrote that the star: 'was a symbol of God.' He then connected the blazing star to another symbol when he wrote: 'The Blazing Star...refers us to the sun...' And then he connected it with the secret initiation [ceremonies] inside the Masonic lodge: 'In the Fourth Degree of the same Rite [the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry] the [Blazing Star] is again said to be a symbol of the light of Divine Providence pointing out the way of truth.'

"And Mr. Hutchens, the Masonic writer who has authored the recent book on Masonry, further interpreted the symbol of the star [thusly]: 'The star as a type of the myriad suns that light other countless systems of worlds is an emblem of that Masonic Light in search of which every Mason travels -- the correct knowledge of the Deity, and of His laws that control the universe.'

"[Now] closely allied [with the] symbol of the star is the symbol of the sun. Albert Pike identified it with the worship of the past in this collection of quotes from his writings [and pay close attention]:

"'The worship of the sun became the basis of all the religions of antiquity.'

"'...thousands of years ago, men worshiped the Sun...Originally, they looked beyond the orb to the invisible God...They personified him as Brahma, Amun, Osiris, Bel, Adonis, Malkarth, Mithras, and Apollo. Krishna is the Hindu Sun-God.'

"'the Gauls worshiped the Sun under the name of Belin or Belinis.'

"'The sun is the ancient symbol of the life-giving and generative power of the Deity. The Sun was His manifestation and visible image.'

"'The Sun is the hieroglyphical sign of Truth, because it is the source of Light.'

"So, Mr. Pike identified the sun as a symbol of a deity that should be worshiped He chose to capitalize the first letter of the word, the 's', as one would in recognizing the name of a deity."

[William Cooper]: And if you've been listening to this series, you already know that, of course, it was.

"Albert Mackey repeated Mr. Pike's contentions with comments like these about 'sun worship':

"'...[it was] the oldest and by far the most prevalent of all the ancient religions. Eusebius says that the Phoenicians and the Egyptians were the first who ascribed divinity to the sun.'

"'Hardly any of the symbols of Masonry are more important in their signification or more extensive in their application than the sun as the source of material light, it minds the Mason of that intellectual light of which he is in constant search.

"'The sun is then presented to us in Masonry first as a symbol of light, but then more emphatically as a symbol of sovereign authority.'

"So, [folks,] the sun was a symbol of something that only the believers in the religion known as the Ancient Mysteries understood. These believers, called adepts, certainly knew that the people would not accept their mystery religion, so they had to conceal it from them."

[William Cooper]: Don't go away, folks. We've got to take a short break. I'll be right back after this pause.

(break music: none)

[continuing reading from *The New World Order*, written by A. Ralph Epperson]:

"So the task became one of creating a religion around a belief that they knew people would accept, because it would make some sense, at least as far as the adepts would explain it. But their basic purpose was to create a popular religion as a cover for their secret worship.

"The secret religion would be built around a belief in the sun.

"The sun would be a perfect thing to build a religion around because of its basic nature. It is very visible, and has a very important role in man's life. It rises in the morning (it appears to be born) and [then] sets in the evening, (it appears to die) and then appears to be 'born again' the next morning. It also appears to wander in the sky, setting further north (or south) each night. It then returns back to any given position twice each year.

"So the sun appears to have a major birth or death twice each day and twice each year. It would[, of course,] be very easy for the adepts to explain to the people that only something bigger than mankind, a god, had the ability to die and come back to life. So, the adepts would teach the people that they had to pray to the god or it would chose not to return. They encouraged a worship of the sun so that it would return to mankind again, either once a day, or once every six months.

"Albert Pike confirmed this view with this explanation of why early man worshiped the sun: 'To them [meaning early man]...the journeyings of the Sun, were voluntary and not mechanical...'

"So early man considered the sun to be something that moved voluntarily. In other words, the sun did not have to return each morning. Man must have quickly determined that since the sun did not have to return, man should start asking it to return. For man certainly depended upon the sun for his life. Man certainly must have figured out just how important the sun was to his life and well-being and certainly must have determined that if the sun chose not to return, all of mankind would certainly perish. So it was an easy jump from the belief that the necessary sun was an entity that chose to move across the daytime sky, to a belief that it would return only if man prayed to it to return.

(William Cooper does another commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation)

"But[, folks,] there is something even more interesting to be considered that Pike didn't explain with that comment.

"Obviously, to make the new religion work, the believers would have to be able to predict the movements of the sun. It wouldn't be too long before some of the common people would start noticing that the sun was neither an actual being nor a god to be worshiped, but something that moved according to precise laws. [Now,] if the common people figured that out, they would not need the adepts who had computed the sun's periodic cycles. So, to keep their power intact, they would teach the people that if they did not accommodate their wishes, they would make certain that the sun did not return. They could even predict, as their measurements became more sophisticated, the exact time and date when the moon would go between the sun and the earth, causing the sun to 'disappear.' They could then fool the people into believing that they were the cause of the disappearance. They could then[, of course,] explain to the people that if they did not continue to pay them sort of tribute, they would not intercede on their behalf, and the sun would not reappear.

"To keep the minds of the common people[, the sheeple,] away from figuring out that the whole religion was a scam, the adepts would conduct beautiful and ornate ceremonies around the worship of the sun. And they would expect the people to pay them for the elaborate rituals. And to make their rituals valid, the adepts would always claim that the sun obeyed their prayers, thereby convincing the people of their need to keep the adepts around. The people[, I mean the sheeple,] would continue to pay tribute to these adepts as long as they appeared to be successful.

"Now, [folks,] if the adepts knew that the sun was a symbol of something that the people would not support, such as a belief that Lucifer, the devil, was the god that they worshiped, they would have to continue with [their] charade, so that the people would not decide to stop worshiping. Because if the [sheeple] figured it out, they would no longer support their activities. They would have to keep their beliefs from the people, and conceal their secret worship in hidden symbols. So sun worship as a religion prospered.

"Mr. Hutchens discussed that position in his book..."

[William Cooper]: And I also discussed it in mine, *Behold A Pale Horse.*

"Mr. Hutchens [said this]: 'In the Tabernacle the brethren clothed in black, mourn Osiris, who is representative of the sun, of light, of life, of good and beauty. They reflect upon the way the earth may again be gladdened by his presence.'

"Mr. Pike connected the sun to Osiris, mentioned by Mr. Hutchens as worthy of being mourned: 'The three lights that the Altar [inside the Masonic Temple] represent Osiris, Isis and Horus. Osiris was represented by the Sun.'

"Mr. Mackey went a little further and informed his readers that: 'Osiris was the sun.'

"In his book entitled *Introduction To Freemasonry,* Carl H. Claudy, the author, himself a Mason, connected the sun worship with ceremonies inside the Masonic Lodge: 'The lodge...sets him [meaning the initiate] upon the path that leads to Light but it is for him to...travel the winding path to the symbolic East.'

"The physical sun rises in the east, and the Masons explain that their search for light begins in the east. And notice that Mr. Claudy capitalizes the word 'East,' apparently in reverence to the spot where they believe that this god resides. The Masons tell the world that they circumambulate (defined as walking around) the Temple floor during their initiation ceremonies. Mr. Claudy explains why this rite is performed:

"'When the candidate first circles the lodge room about the altar, he walks step by step with a thousand shades of men who have thus worshiped the Most High by humble imitation. Thus thought of circumambulation is no longer a mere parade but a ceremony of significance, linking all who take part in it with the spiritual aspirations of a dim and distant past.'"

[William Cooper]: And it is a historical fact that the Knights Templar also performed the circumambulation of their temples.

"[And] he further instructs his readers as to why this ceremony is part of their ceremony: 'Early man circled altars on which burned the fire which was his God, from east to west by way of the south [notice that the north is not included in the ceremony. The significance of that omission will be discussed later.] [But,] circumambulation became a part of all religious observances.'

"In another part of his book, entitled *Introduction To Freemasonry*, Mr. Claudy reported that this style of walking was traceable to the ancient religions of the past [when] he wrote [this]: 'Circumambulation...was in the ceremonies of ancient Egypt.'

"So, this practice of the modern Masons is based upon the ancient [pagan] religious practices of the Ancients. So the Masons are telling us that early man walked around in a circle because he was worshiping the sun. Then they tell us they are doing it for the same reasons.

"There are reasons that the north as a location to be visited in their walk around the temple floor is not included in their initiation rites, and six of the great Masonic writers have told us why this is so.

"Captain William Morgan offered his readers this explanation with this comment from his book [William Cooper: the writing of which he was murdered for]: '...we, therefore, Masonically, turn the north a place of darkness.'

"Mr. Mackey confirmed that statement in his book: 'The north is Masonically called the place of darkness.' And Mr. Pike confirmed the comments made by the other two Masons with this declaration: 'To all Masons, the North has immediately been the place of darkness, and of the great lights of the Lodge, none is in the North.'

"And Kenneth McKenzie added his confirming thoughts: 'The North was always esteemed a place of darkness.' Mr. Hutchens became the fifth Masonic writer to confirm this detail [as he said this]:

"'As in other degrees, the closing ritual provides a summary of the lessons taught in the degree. We hear in the West the eagles gather and the doom of tyranny is near. In the South, truth struggles against error and oppression. In the North, fanaticism and intolerance wane. In the East, the people begin to know their rights and to be conscious of their dignity and that the sun's rays will soon smite the summits of the mountains.'

"Mr. Hutchens informed his readers that the North was where 'fanaticism and tolerance' resided. What he meant by this and what the symbol of the North represents will be explored...later...

"And the sixth Masonic writer who confirmed that the North was a place of darkness was Carl Claudy, who wrote in his book entitled *Introduction To Freemasonry*: '...the place of darkness, the North.'

"And the reason the Masons do not include the North in their rites is found in the Bible...[in the Bible]...[repeats: The reason] the Masons do not include the North in their rites is found in the Bible in Isaiah, chapter 14, verse 13: 'I [meaning Lucifer] will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation in the sides of the North.'

"The God of the Bible sits in the North, and Lucifer hopes one day to acquire the throne of God for his throne. But, until then, the 'North is a place of darkness.' But, while the north is an excluded territory, the east is the 'place of light,' and is to be revered. Mr. Hutchens tells his readers why that is so: '...the East -- the source of light, and thus knowledge.'

"Albert Mackey quotes Etienne Francois Bazot, a French Masonic writer in his *Encyclopedia*: 'The veneration which the Masons have for the East...bears a relations to the primitive religion whose first degeneration was sun-worship.'

"Rex Hutchens then tells his readers that the masons deploy lights around the Lodge room during the initiation ceremony for the 25th degree called the Knight of the Sun. [And] he writes: 'The ceiling should be decorated to represent the heavens with the moon, the principle planets and the constellations Taurus and Orion. A single powerful light, a great globe of glass representing the sun, is in the South. In a typical sense the greater light comes from the sun and the transparencies provide lesser light...symbolically, the sun or great light is the Truth and the lesser lights are man's symbolic representation of Truth.'

"Mr. Mackey further discusses this Rite of Circumambulation, as he calls it, in his *Encyclopedia*. He says that the rite: 'exists in Freemasonry...the people always walked three times round the altar while singing a sacred hymn. In making this procession, great care was taken to move an imitation of the course of the sun.'

"He then assisted the reader with understanding this practice in the Masonic temples: 'This Rite of Circumambulation undoubtedly refers to the doctrine of sun-worship...'

"However, in another of the books that he wrote, Mr. Mackey directly states that the rite is connected to sun worship. This is what he wrote in a book entitled *Manual Of The Lodge*: 'The circumambulation among the pagan nations referred to the great doctrines of Sabaism or sun worship.'

"Sabaism is defined by Mr. Mackey in his encyclopedia as: 'Sabaism; The worship of the sun, moon and stars, 'the host of heaven.' It was practiced in Persia, Chaldea, India, and other Oriental countries, at an early period in the world's history.' He then added this rather cryptic comment: '...and although the dogma of sun-worship does not of course exist in Freemasonry, we find an allusion to it in the Rite of circumambulation which it preserves...'

"[Now,] one can understand what Mr. Mackey meant by that comment: the Masons do not worship the sun, they worship the Sun!"

[William Cooper]: (laughs) With a capitol 'S'. So he was telling the truth, but concealing it in a symbolic language, for he wrote 'sun' with a small 's'. You have to understand the symbology of the Mystery Schools or you will never understand anything, dear listeners.

"Mr. Hutchens then volunteered the information that in the 12th of the 32 degrees the Rite of Circumambulation is preserved. [And] he writes: 'In all the Scottish Rite Degrees thus far, the candidate has made twenty-one prescribed circuits around the altar; this degree adds seven, for a total of twenty-eight.

"'[And] this practice, called circumambulation, is derived from the ancients and existed among the Romans, Semites, Hindus, and others. It is thought to have been a rite of purification. The sun was believed to travel around the earth; the initiates imitated the movement of the sun when they made circuits around the altar.'

"Furthermore, [dear listeners,] in the ninth degree, other symbols of the sun are involved in the ceremony. [And] Mr. Hutchens tells his readers: 'After the obligation is taken, the nine candles of yellow wax are lit. Yellow is representative of the sun, hence light and knowledge.'

"In the tenth degree, further symbols representing the sun are utilized, according to this author: 'There are three sets of five lights: the wax is yellow, meaning knowledge and also, as the color of the sun, represents the Deity.'"

[William Cooper]: A blatant admission that the sun represents the deity that they worship.

"Other clues that the sun and the serpent are both known symbols of the Masonic Lodge are given by the titles of two of the 32 degrees inside the Masonic Lodge. The 25th degree initiate is called a Knight of the Brazen Serpent, and the 28th degree initiate is called a Knight of the Sun [William Cooper: with a capitol 'S'].

"There's another symbol of the sun inside the Masonic Lodge. The Worshipful Master, the equivalent of the President of the Lodge, sits in the east side of the temple. [And] we are told why that is: 'The Worshipful Master represents the sun at its rising, the Senior Warden [another officer of the Lodge] represents the sun at its setting, and the Junior Warden [still another officer of the Lodge] represents the sun at meridian [the half-way point.] [William Cooper: The Most High.]

"Other individuals and organizations besides the Masonic Lodges are also involved, [folks,] in [various...]varying degrees, with sun worship, or with an acknowledgment that the sun plays a central role in their understanding of the nature of the world.

"Elizabeth Clare Prophet has been described as being a leader in the New Age Movement, as she has written this in a newsletter she publishes called *The Coming Revolution*: 'the healing of the nations begins with the healing of ourselves. We must draw forth from the Great Central Sun -- that eternal Light with which we were anointed from the beginning.'

Adolf Hitler, [William Cooper: I'm sure you've heard of him,] the head of the German government prior to and during World War II, and who was directly responsible for the murder of over 50 million people, was also a sun worshiper Very early in his life, he joined a secret organization called the Thule Society. And forty years after the war, some historians are finally delving into its strange beliefs. Two of these writers, Michel Bertrand and Jean Angelini, have produced a book entitled *The Occult And The Third Reich*, and one of their conclusions is: 'In the Nazi cosmology the sun played a prime role...as a sacred symbol of the Aryans, in contrast to the feminine and magical symbolism of the moon, revered by the Semitic peoples.

"'The Nazi Party was the name of the National Socialist German Worker's Party, the party that Mr. Hitler joined. It became [the] controlling party of the German government prior to and during war.

"'...the Fuhrer [German for leader, in this case meaning Mr. Hitler] saw in the Jewish people, with their black hair and swarthy complexion, the dark side of the human species, while the blond and blue-eyed Aryans constituted the light side of humanity. Hitler undertook to extirpate [meaning to eliminate] from the material world its impure elements...to lead it back to glory.'

"But sun worship, as the Masons point out, is not new. The Bible talks about is as well.

"[Folks,] Ezekiel was an Old [World] Testament prophet writing sometime during the period of 571 to 592 B.C. [And] he tells about how he was taken by God to see a practice occurring near the Temple. [And] this is what he wrote in Ezekiel, chapter 8, verses 15 and 16:

"'And He [the Lord God] brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and they worshiped the sun toward the east.'

"And Ezekiel points out that the Lord God considered this practice 'an abomination.'

"There is another reference to sun worship from the Old Testament, this time in Deuteronomy, [chapter 17, verses 2 through 4 and then verse 7]. [And] that reference reads as follows: 'If there be found among you,...man or woman...that...hath gone and served other gods, and worshiped them, either the sun, or moon, or any of the host of heaven...and it be true...that such an abomination is wrought in Israel...so thou shalt put the evil away from among you.'

"So[, folks,] the God of the Bible has made it [perfectly] clear that sun worship is something that He does not want[, He does not want] His creatures practicing [this]. The Bible even went so far as to say, in both instances, that He considered the practice to be an 'abomination' or an 'evil.'

"But to show just how far this practice has invaded the Christian community, the following 'prayer' was offered up at a recent funeral in a local Christian church: 'Now you will feel no rain, for your Mother, the earth, will fold her arms around you. Now you will feel no cold, for your Father, the Sun, will always warm you.'

"Sun worship continues. Because some Christian churches pray to the Sun god in their church services. And don't understand who they are praying to. Simply stated[, simply stated, dear listeners,] the Sun god that they were praying to is Lucifer!"

[William Cooper]: Lucifer, also known as Satan, or the devil. Wakes you up, doesn't it? See, all the time you thought religion was something stupid and didn't have anything to do with overall world events, but you're wrong. It has everything to do with everything, whether you believe it or not, whether I believe it or not, it doesn't make any difference. If the people who have the power and are in control believe it, it will affect us all. Understand that, because that's true.

(William Cooper does another commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation)

Good night, and God bless each and every one of you.

(closing music: none)

Hour 18: Bibliography (aired March 31st, 1993)

Good evening, folks, at home and around the world, and welcome to another edition of The Hour Of The Time. I'm William Cooper, and I strongly suggest that you have pen and paper by your side all during this episode of the Hour Of The Time, for I am going to be giving you a complete bibliography. You see, folks, I own a library that is better than most city libraries in this country. And I am going to give you the names, authors and publishing companies of the books that will start you off to bring you up to speed where I am at. And you're just going to get what you need to get to a beginning level tonight.

I suggest, if you can, that you tape record this episode of the Hour of the Time so that you can play the tape back and refer to it. If you do not have the facilities to do this, you may order a studio quality stereo tape done on a digital mixer from Stan Barrington.

[William Cooper gives info for ordering tapes and memberships]

(Intro music: children reciting The Pledge of Allegiance)[127]

Folks, if you've been listening to the Hour of the Time for some period now, then you know that we've only really had two sponsors. And the rest of the air time has been paid for by myself, Stan Barrington and many people who have sent in donations, some of them quite substantial. And I take this moment now to thank every single one of you, who have pulled your share of the load to make this show possible. Because I'm going to tell you right now, my family and Stan Barrington could not have ever come up with all the money that is needed to keep this show on the air.

And the only two sponsors we've had have been *Backwoods Home* magazine, which sponsored one program, and, also, the Pilot Connection, which, I believe, sponsored four programs. So, the rest of the air time was paid for personally out of my pocket and out of Stan Barrington's pocket, and all of you wonderful people who sent in donations to keep this show on the air. From the bottom of our hearts and from the heartfelt thanks of all the people out there who really depend on this show to come into their homes five nights a week, we thank you sincerely. We appreciate your efforts and we know that some of you did without some things in your own lives to make those donations possible.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

OK, folks, the first thing in the bibliography that you need to get started...I'm going to recommend to you is a book. This is a thick book. The title of it is *Our Ageless Constitution. Our Ageless Constitution.* Now, I'm not gonna say these things slow. I'm going to repeat everything twice, but I'm gonna keep on going because I have a lot of information to give you. Either make a tape of this broadcast or order the tape or, if you can, write fast and get the information down. But get it, because you need to read these books. You need them for your personal library, you need them to know what's going on in the world, and who's bringing it about.

Our Ageless Constitution, edited by W. David Stedman (S-T-E-D-M-A-N) and Lavaughn G. Lewis. It's part of the Stedman Liberty Library, published by W. David Stedman Associates. Now, I don't know where you can order this book from, folks. I got it as I always get my books: used book stores, from people who find something and send it to me, from scrounging in thrift shops, from new book stores. I have a library that is unbelievable. Most of you would be awed by the books that I have. Most of my income throughout the years have gone toward stocking this library, simply because I learned a long time ago that the sum total of all man's knowledge is contained in books. But you have to root it out. Not all books are true, not all books tell the truth, not all books are all lies. It's sort of a mixture, but you have to have the information available to do the research and come up with the answers.

OK, and once you have that book, you have everything you need to know about the history, the ideals, the purpose, everything behind the founding of this country, and if you don't know that, you don't know anything about this country, so you need it.

---

[127] followed by a musical version of The Pledge of Allegiance, performed by Lee Greenwood

The next book that I'm going to recommend, because you need to know the symbology and the history and who these people really are, is a book that was originally printed in the 1700's. In fact, the beginning...it's called the...the Templar's chart -- *the Masonic Chart*, the Templar chart -- and the beginning has a letter to the editors of the New York Express, and its signed by Benjamin Franklin. It's a very old book. It has the complete history, according to Freemasonry, of Freemasonry. It's entitled -- and this is the title of the book -- *The True Masonic Chart or Hieroglyphic Monitor; Containing All the Emblems Explained in the Degrees of Entered Apprentice, Fellow Craft, Master Mason, Mark Master, Past Master, Most Excellent Master, Royal Arch, Royal Master, and Select Master: Designed and Duly Arranged Agreeably to the Lectures*, by R.W. Jeremy L. Cross, G.L., to which are added illustrations, charges, songs, etc., with additions and emendations. Also, a complete history of Freemasonry by a brother. This copy that I have is the twelfth and stereotyped edition, printed in New York, published by A.S. Barnes and Company, 51 Johns St. in 1854.

You can find treasures like this if you look. Most people though sit back and say, "(nasally voice: Oh, I don't know where to find that. I don't know anything about doing research. Why don't you tell me?" (laughs) That's not the way to do it, folks...not the way to do it.

Second book I'm going to recommend here that you get is a book by Joseph Campbell, probably the world's foremost authority on myth and mythology. This book is entitled *Primitive Mythology, the Masks of God*. Again, it's by Joseph Campbell, *Primitive Mythology, the Masks of God*, and I believe it's printed by Penguin...Penguin Books.

OK, next one is also by Joseph Campbell, *Occidental Mythology, the Masks of God*, by Joseph Campbell. Entitled *Occidental Mythology, The Masks of God*. Also published by Penguin...Penguin Books.

Now I've got all these books stacked up around here, so if you hear a moment of silence, it's because I'm reaching for something. I literally have surrounded myself with stacks of books. I'm going to give you the title, author, and publisher of as many as I can, starting with the most important for you to use to get started with and working on that. [sic]

Next one is by Joseph Campbell again. The title is *Creative Mythology, The Masks of God. Creative Mythology, The Masks of God*, also by Joseph Campbell and published by Penguin Books.

The next one, folks, is *The Sacred and the Profane*. The title is *The Sacred and the Profane*. The subtitle is, *The Nature of Religion, the Significance of Religious Myths, Symbolism and Ritual Within Life and Culture*, and it's by Mircea Eliade. Mircea Eliade -- it's actually translated from a foreign language. It's printed by Harcourt Brace Jovanovich. Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.

Next one is an important book once you get to...Once you get into the symbology of the Mystery Schools and the occult, you learn that geometry and Hermetic science become very important. Now, this book is entitled *Occult Geometry and Hermetic Science of Motion and Number. Occult Geometry and Hermetic Science of Motion and Number*, a combined edition by A.S. Raleigh. A.S. Raleigh, and this is published by Devorss...Devorss Publications. That's spelled D-E-V (as in Victor)-O-R-S-S. And there's some treasures in these books.

Now, these are books that most people pass by. They look at them and say, "Ah, this is...this is boring," or, "I would never learn anything from that." And most people would never even pick up one of these books. But, I'm telling you folks, you better start.

Next one is entitled *Celestial Symbols. Celestial Symbols: Symbolism in Doctrine, Religious Traditions and Temple Architecture*, by Allen H. Barber. Allen H. Barber, and this is published by Horizon Publishers. Sometimes you get to understand that even the names of the publishers, and, sometimes, the name of the authors, are symbolic. Horizon, as you already learned, means "Horus rising." Horizon Publishers and Distributors, Incorporated, PO Box 490, Bountiful, Utah. And that book contains some revelations.

Another one is entitled *Many Moons. Many Moons: The Myth and Magic, Fact and Fantasy of Our Nearest Heavenly Body*, by Diana Brueton, introduction by Col. James Irwin of the Apollo 11 mission. (laughs) Oh, yes, it gets very interesting...very interesting. And this is published by Prentice Hall Press, New York, London, Toronto, Sydney, Tokyo, Singapore. So I know you can find this book.

Now, we're going to get into some other areas now, and I'm going to attempt to, sort of, explain to you some of the things that are in these books. And you need to start with some history. The first book that I want to recommend to you is entitled *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, by Baigent, Lincoln and Leigh. Baigent, Lincoln and Leigh. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail.* The next one is *The Messianic Legacy. The Messianic Legacy*, by the same authors: Baigent, Lincoln and Leigh.

And then there's another one called, *The Temple and the Lodge. The Temple and the Lodge*, by the same authors. And then the fourth one by these authors, also, is called *The Dead Sea Scrolls Deception. The Dead Sea Scrolls Deception*, by the same authors. Now, read those books. Read them in that order. The last one just came out. I just ordered it myself, have not read it, but I know, because I have read the other three, that I need to read it, and it's going to be just as revealing as the first three.

Now, none of these books put together the whole picture...*I've* done that. But they all have pieces to the puzzle that you need to find for yourself, so that you'll know that I'm not leading you down the garden path. That's important.

Now, in that series of books, folks, it outlines the history -- as they have discovered it -- of a secret society whose sole purpose is to protect the bloodline of the family which, traditionally, throughout history has claimed the divine right to rule the rest of us. It's important that you know about that family, because the same people (laughs) also rule this country, folks. They're all related, if you haven't figured that out yet. And if you want to find out how related they are, start looking into an organization, organized in [Cincinnati], called the Knights of the Golden Circle. The Knights of the Golden Circle.

The next book that I want you to pick up and read is entitled *Julius Caesar*. *Julius Caesar*, a biography by Michael Grant. Now, in this book, it outlines the...a lot of things about ancient Rome: their political machinery; the way that Rome was really ruled by families, which is going to be the same way in the New World Order -- I can guarantee you that. And it talks a lot about the ancient religions in this book. It's very revealing. It’s a biography, it’s factual; it's not fiction at all, and you need to read it.

The next book is an extremely important book and puts a lot of pieces of the puzzle together. And the person who wrote this book didn’t actually set out to even write about this subject. What he was doing was trying to research the Peasants' Revolt in England, and ended up writing a book about Freemasonry, because of what he found out in his investigation into the Peasants' Revolt in England. And that man is John J. Robinson. John J. Robinson. The title of the book is *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry. Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*. I'm just going to read to you a little bit from the dust jacket here:

"Its mysterious symbols and rituals had been used in secret for centuries before Freemasonry revealed itself in London in 1717. Once known, Freemasonry spread throughout the world and attracted kings, emperors and statesmen to take its sacred oaths. It also attracted great revolutionaries such as George Washington and Sam Houston in America, Juárez in Mexico, Garibaldi in Italy, and Bolívar in South America. It was outlawed over the centuries by Hitler, Mussolini and the Ayatollah Khomeini. But where had this powerful organization come from? What was it doing in those secret centuries before it arose from underground more than 270 years ago? And why was Freemasonry attacked with such intense hatred by the Roman Catholic Church?

"This amazing detective story answers these questions and proves that the Knights Templar in Britain, fleeing arrest and torture by pope and King, formed a secret society of mutual protection that came to be called Freemasonry. Based on years of meticulous research, this book solves the last remaining mysteries of the Masons -- their secret words, symbols and allegories whose true meanings have been lost in antiquity. With a richly drawn background of the bloody battles, the opportunistic kings and scheming popes, the tortures and religious persecution that were the Middle Ages, it is an important book that may require that we to take a new look at the history of events leading to the Protestant Reformation."

And you've already heard (laughs) about that on this show. But you need this book, *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*. Get it.

The next book is by the same author, John J. Robinson. After he wrote *Born in Blood*, he was intrigued, and so...He wrote *Born in Blood* about Freemasonry, and then he had to go back and research the history of the Knights Templar. And he wrote this book, entitled *Dungeon, Fire and Sword. Dungeon, Fire and Sword: The Knights Templar in the Crusades*, by John J. Robinson, author of *Born in Blood*. And I'm going to read to you from this fly leaf. But...yeah, I will.

"Over the past thousand years, the bloodiest game of king-of-the-hill has been for supremacy on the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, the site of the ancient Temple of Solomon. This book recounts the stirring saga of the Knights Templar, the Christian warrior-monks who occupied the sacred Mount in the aftermath of the butchery of the First Crusade. Recruited to a life of poverty, chastity and obedience intended to lead only to martyrdom on the battlefield, they were totally dedicated to the pious paradox that the wholesale slaughter of non-believers would earn the eternal gratitude of the Prince of Peace.

"The Templars amassed great wealth, which they used to finance their two hundred years of war against the Muslims on the desert, in the mountains, and up the broad sweep of the Nile valley. The Templars' reward for those two centuries of military martyrdom was to be arrested by pope and king, tortured by the Inquisition, and finally decreed out of existence. But their legend and legacy just would not die.

"In telling the incredible story of the Knights Templar, the author's clear explanation of the cultural and religious differences among the Templars' enemies and friends in the Middle East gives fresh understanding of the people who populate this restless region. Here are the Sunnis and the Shiites, the Kurds and Armenians, the Arabs and Turks, who figure so prominently in today's headlines. The similarity of their antagonisms today and those of eight hundred years ago are often so striking as to be eerie.

"*Dungeon, Fire & Sword* is a brilliant work of narrative history that can be read as an adventure story, a morality play, or a lesson in the politics of warfare."

But, folks, be careful when you read these books that you do not believe them blindly, for sometimes the authors are taken in by exoteric. But you still need to read them.

Don't go away folks, we got to take our break. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(break music: This Land is Your Land, performed by Lee Greenwood?)

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation, asks for air time donations]

And now, folks, we continue with our bibliography. I hope you've all got pen and paper and you're writing just as fast as you can. Don't worry if you don't get them all; if you just get some of them and start reading, that's what counts. You can always order this tape and play it back, and copy them down at your leisure. At some future date we will print a bibliography, but right now, to tell you the truth, folks, we just don't have time to do that. We're so much engaged in producing this radio show and researching, and I'm writing a second book and traveling and speaking. And, I'll tell ya something, right now I barely have time to talk to my wife, and she doesn't appreciate to much, so (laughs) were going away this weekend.

The next book, *The Future of Man. The Future of Man*. Once again, *The Future of Man*, by Robert Klark Graham. Robert Klark Graham. You can order this book for seven dollars from S.C. Books, P.O. Box 1562, that P.O. Box 1562, Friendswood, Texas. Friendswood, Texas, 77546. Once again, seven dollars for this book from S.C. Books, P.O. Box 1562, Friendswood Texas, 77546.

Boy, I'm really going to have to hurry to get (laughs) a substantial amount of these books in. I hear somebody out there screaming and pulling their hair out, "I can't possibly read all these books!" Yes, you can. I've done it. I've read every book in my library, folks, and my library is bigger than most city libraries. If I can do it, you can do it. The only thing that will stop you is because you don't want to do it. And if you learn how to do productive research, some of them you don't have to read the whole books, believe me. [sic] You just have to learn how to do that. But you have to understand what the context of the book is before you take anything out of context. You can get in big trouble by doing that, believe me.

Next book is *A History of Mathematics. A History of Mathematics*, second edition, by Carl B. Boyer. That's *A History of Mathematics*, second edition, by Carl B. Boyer, B-O-Y-E-R. And the forward is by Isaac Asimov, and this is published by Wiley (W-I-L-E-Y). Should be able...in fact, you should find that in most good book stores. It should be on the shelf.

Next one is the Dead Sea Scrolls. Be very careful about the Dead Sea Scrolls, folks, because everybody who's had their hands on them has been in the pay of the Rockefeller family, and the people who are translating them now are in the pay of the Rockefeller family. And they say that some of them have leaked out and that you're getting the real version...you don't know that. This could have been intentional leaks and nobody, none of us, know how to really translate these things. So, the Rockefellers, basically, are telling us what the Dead Sea Scrolls say, and I can just about tell you what they're gonna tell us right off the bat: That Jesus didn't die, and all kinds of things, and, well, just wait and see. Just wait and see. This is called *Understanding the Dead Sea Scrolls. Understanding the Dead Sea Scrolls*, a reader from the Biblical Archeology Review, edited by Hershel Shanks. Hershel Shanks, and this is published by Random House.

Now, I'm gonna go a little speedy here because I haven't much time left, folks. And I want you to get as many of these as you can. Next one is *Pagans and Christians. Pagans and Christians*. This book is worth its weight in gold. If you want to understand the early history of the church, and the antagonism between the early church, the early Christian church, and the pagan religions. *Pagans and Christians*, by Robin Lane Fox. Robin Lane Fox. Published by Knopf (K-N-O-P-F). Get it, read it. You won't regret it.

The next one is...that alarm you just heard going off, that is the bread maker. (laughs) The loaf of bread is done and I'm fixing to have a hot slice of bread with fresh butter on it as soon as I finish this broadcast, folks. *Preparing for the Twenty-first Century, Preparing for the Twenty-First Century*, by Paul Kennedy, published by Random House. Now, that's a modern book about modern things -- you still need to read it.

Next one is a very important book, printed in 1798. It has been reprinted by the Americanist Classics. The Americanist Classics, published by Western Islands, Boston & Los Angeles. You can find this book easily. It's called *Proofs of a Conspiracy*, by John Robinson A.M., 1798. *Proofs of a Conspiracy*, by John Robinson A.M., 1798. The Americanist Classics, published by Western Islands, Boston & Los Angeles. If you didn't get anything else I have ever told you, get that book and read it.

Another one that's very important is called *Time Bomb. Time Bomb*. It will give you the roots of the Liberty Lobby and the spotlight and America Free Radio [sic], and will open your eyes on the Nazi influence in this country. *Time Bomb*, by Piller, published by Arco. Arco. And this is (laughs) very revealing.

Another one is...well, I don't have it in front of me so I'm not gonna risk misquoting it. This one is *The New World Order. The New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies.* This is called *The New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*, by William T. Still, William T. Still. And who published this book? Let me see here, Huntington House Publishers. Published by Huntington House Publishers' Pick it up, read it. Remember, there are a lot of books called the *The New World Order*. That's just one, and I'm going to give you another one with the same title here in a few minutes.

The next one is *En Route to Global Occupation. En Route to Global Occupation: A High-Ranking Government Liaison Exposes the Secret Agenda of World Unification*, by Gary H. Kah. Gary H. Kah, and this, also, is Huntington House Publishers.

The next one is pretty good, called *Dark Majesty*. Now this author, Texe Marrs, has published a plethora of books about the coming New World Order. Unfortunately, he really laces it with his own religious view points, and that's OK because he has a lot of hard facts in here. But it tends to turn some people off and they don't want to read the books because of that. If you're a Christian, you will have no problem reading this book; if you're not, you may have some problem with the religious beliefs of Texe Marrs. But if you can struggle with that and get through it, it will open your eyes and you will get a lot of good facts from this book. Its called *Dark Majesty* by Texe Marrs, *The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of a Thousand Points of Light.* You see, he understands this quite a bit, like I do, only I don't try to hoist my religion off on the rest of you. I'm a Christian, but I'm a different kind of Christian. I'm a Christian only in that I believe in the Ten Commandments as given to Moses by God, and the actual words attributed to Christ, whether he lived or died, or was the son of God or was just a man walking on this Earth. I believe that what he said is the most profound utterances ever spoken on this earth, whether they were ever spoken or not, folks. And I try to live my life by the Ten Commandments and by those words that Christ is credited with having spoken.

The next work is *Satanic Voices: Ancient and Modern. Satanic Voices: Ancient and Modern*, compiled by David Musa Pidcock. David Musa Pidcock. Now, this author is the head of the Islamic Party in Great Britain. So, again, you have his fundamental religious beliefs mixed in this book with a lot of cold, hard facts, which I have checked and double-checked and they're absolutely true. So if you, again, like with the other book, if you can get past the religious viewpoint of the author and look at what the history of this thing is, from his viewpoint and the facts that he delivers in this book, then (laughs) believe me, you'll be way ahead of the game. It's published by Mustaqim which, I believe, is the Islamic Party in Great Britain. And Mustaqim publishes Islamic art and literature.

Now, remember what I told you a long time ago. If you don't want to read opposing viewpoints or books written by people who believe in different religious...or different gods than you do; if you don't want to read something that was written by a blatant Communist, then I'm telling ya right now, you're going to be whipped in this war. You're gonna be beat down and enslaved in this war, because you won't know anything about your enemy, you won't really know what the truth is, because you'll be stuck, held prisoner, in the dogma of your own beliefs. And I mean that, folks. A lot of us have been believing a lot of things for all of our lives that are absolute, total lies. And once you start your own research you'll find that out. And you're gonna be probably as angry as I have been at times in my life. And you may do some stupid things like I have done at times in my life. Which is one reason why none of you should ever, ever put me up on a pedestal. Because I'm just like you. (laughs) I'm just like you. I'm not any different. And I may be a lot more human than most, because I've gotten in touch with something inside that lets me feel and express my anger and my emotions and things that most people aren't in touch with. So when I'm angry, I scream and yell, but five minutes later it's all over with. (laughs) Don't put me on a pedestal. I'll fall off immediately, and you will all be disappointed. So, if you don't do it, nobody will be disappointed.

The next book is called, *The Unseen Hand. The Unseen Hand: An Introduction to the Conspiratorial View of History*, by A. Ralph Epperson, my good friend who lives in Tucson, who's going to be a guest on this program here in about a week or two. And were going to try to do, maybe three or four episodes of the Hour of the Time with A. Ralph Epperson. This book, *The Unseen Hand*, is an incredible piece of work and I highly recommend it.

The next book is also by A. Ralph Epperson, and I've used this book extensively during our revelation of the Mystery Schools and Mystery Babylon in our series, our ongoing series. It's called *The New World Order. The New World Order*, by A. Ralph Epperson. Get these books, read them. If you cant find them, just wait. He'll be on this show pretty soon, and we'll give you a phone number and an address and a price, and you can send off and get them directly from him.

This next book is extremely revealing. In fact, *anything* that this author has ever written you should read. In fact there's a center, a study center set up in Los Angeles called the Philosophical Society which was founded by Manly P. Hall. The name of the author, Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree Freemason. Anything that he's ever written, get it and read it. This particular book is called *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians. Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians.* Another good one to read that he wrote is called, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*, and anything else that you can find that has been written by Manly P. Hall, get it and read it. Make sure you understand the symbology don't get caught up in the exoteric bullshit, because that's the way they hide the real meaning.

Another one, because a lot of the Mystery traditions is wrapped up in what they call the Kaballah, which is the ancient the Jewish version of the Mystery Schools. And don’t get me wrong, folks. Not all Jews are involved in this, not all Catholics are involved in it, not all Protestants are involved in it, not all blacks, not all Arabs, not all whites, but some of every one of them are deeply involved in this. And they are the people who worship Lucifer. If you worship Lucifer, you can be a member, too. This book is called *Judaica*. *Judaica: The Blackwell Dictionary of Judaica*. This is *The Blackwell Dictionary of Judaica*, by Dan Cohn-Sherbok. Dan Cohn-Sherbok, and it's published by Blackwell, Blackwell Reference, printed in Great Britain by TJ Press, Pat Stone limited, Pat Stone, Cornwall, but you can still order this from any bookstore. *The Blackwell Dictionary of Judaica*, by Dan Cohn-Sherbok. Make sure you get it, because a lot of the Kabalistic words needs definitions, and you can find them in this book.

Next one is *A Dictionary of Freemasonry*. *A Dictionary of Freemasonry: A Compendium of Masonic History, Symbolism, Rituals, Literature, and Myth*. *A Dictionary of Freemasonry*, by Robert Macoy. Robert Macoy. This book is worth its weight in gold if you know how to, again, interpret the symbolism of the exoteric meaning [inaudible] the exoteric writing. Some of you already know what I'm talking about, some of you have no idea what I'm referring to, but you will find out once you get into this.

Another book that’s worth its weight in gold is called *The Mystery Religions*. *The Mystery Religions and Christianity*. *The Mystery Religions and Christianity*, by Samuel Angus. Samuel Angus. Published by University Books. Published by University Books, The *Mystery Religions and Christianity*, by Samuel Angus. And we want to thank our member, Spencer. Thank you very much. Spencer supplied us with this volume.

Next one's been around for a long time, but, again, it's worth its weight in gold. But you have to understand, again, the symbolism to read these books. A lot of these books were not meant for us to read and understand. They are meant for an adept, an initiate, to understand. This is *A History of Secret Societies*, published by Citadel. *A History of Secret Societies*, published by Citadel, by Arkon Daraul. Arkon Daraul (D-A-R-A-U-L). Arkon (A-R-K-O-N D-A-R-A-U-L), Citadel Press New York. *A History of Secret Societies*. Again, worth its weight in gold.

The next one is *The Occult Conspiracy*. *The Occult Conspiracy*. Now, this book was written by someone who is in sympathy with the Secret Societies and may be a member, although I doubt, from reading this...it doesn’t sound like he is. But he is defiantly in sympathy with them. So be careful when you read this that you don’t get the wrong message, *The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies, Their Influence and Power in World History*, by Michael Howard. That’s Michael Howard, and this is published by Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont. And the logo of Destiny Books is the Sun and the Moon. (laughs) That should tell you something.

Next one is *America's Secret Assignment*...excuse me, I'm wrong. *America's Assignment with Destiny*. There’s two books, and I had this confused with another one. The other one's called *Americas Secret Destiny*. Throw that one out. That’s total crap. (laughs) That is exoteric from the word "go," all the way to the end. This one, though, you need to read, *America's Assignment with Destiny*, by Manly P. Hall, and you will not believe what your eyes are telling you that your brain is reading. For this is an incredible book. It has incredible admissions, and you will begin to understand certain things that happened in history that you could never understand before. *America's Assignment with Destiny*, by Manly P. Hall, and this is published by PRS, whatever that is...let me look in here and find out, so that you will know. Philosophical -- I should have known this...man, I feel stupid now -- illustrated, second printing, Philosophical Research Society Inc. This is Manly P. Hall's organization. *America's Assignment with Destiny*, by Manly P. Hall. Get it and read it.

Another one that's extremely important that you read this book. Many people pass it by, snub their nose at it. Don’t ever do that, folks. You're making a big mistake. This is *The New Age Bible*. *The New Age Bible*, by Dr. John Rodgers, *The Hidden Truth Revealed*. Just the symbology on the cover will send you reeling after you've listened to the episodes of the Mystery Religion of Babylon that we've already revealed on this show. This is published by Inner Light Publications. Inner Light Publications. *The New Age Bible* by Dr. John Rodgers, *The Hidden Truth Revealed*. Get it and read it, folks.

Another one you need to read, which will connect someone else with all of this, if you can understand the symbology, again, is called *The Mormon Murders*. *The Mormon Murders*, by Steven Naifeh, and Gregory White Smith. *A True Story of Greed, Forgery, Deceit, and Death*. Read this book.

Now, here's a catalogue you need to get, because you can get a lot of books that you need from this organization:

It's catalogue 2A. Catalogue 2A. Send six dollars to HELP RESEARCH, mailing address is P.O. Box 70. That's P.O. Box 70, 8349 Lafayette Street. 8349 Lafayette Street, Mokelumne Hill, California. M-O-K-E-L-U-M-N-E. That's M-O-K-E-L-U-M-N-E, Mokelumne Hill, California, 95245. That's HELP RESEARCH, P.O. Box 70, 8349 Lafayette Street, Mokelumne Hill, California, 95245.

Good night, folks. I hope you get these books. I hope you start your own library, and I hope you wake up. God bless each and every single one of you.

(closing music: *America, the Dream Goes On*, performed by John Williams and the Boston Pops)

Hour 19: Lucifer Worship (aired May 12th, 1993)

Welcome once again, folks, to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper. We'll start off tonight's show with the Socialist national anthem.

(Intro music: Born Under A Bad Sign)[128]

(laughing) Oh, I love it! The Socialist national anthem: *Born Under A Bad Sign*.

Folks, tonight's episode of Mystery Babylon, the 18th hour. I'm going to take directly verbatim from chapter nine of A. Ralph Epperson's book, called *The New World Order*. He's going to be a guest on the show soon, and you'll know why once you hear what...what we got to say tonight. So pay attention, and remember, as always, as always, just because I'm giving you this series of Mystery Babylon doesn't mean that you're supposed to believe what I'm telling you blindly. That's why I gave you the bibliography last night. You've got to go out and find the truth from your own research, and I'm the only one who ever tells you that. Everybody else wants you to believe verbatim what they say because they're saying it and who they are. And I'm tell you not to believe anybody, not even me -- not even your own mother -- unless you can verify it in your own work, your own research. Make sure that you do it, too.

[Reading from *The New World Order*]:

"[Now] the Bible[, folks,] discusses of a being called Lucifer in both the Old and New Testaments..."

[William Cooper]: And we're going to be talking a lot about the Bible tonight because we have to look at this from every point of view. We've looked at it from the Mystery Schools. We've looked at it logically, we've looked at it historically. Now we're going to look at it from the Bible's point of view, but not strictly from the Bible's point of view. But you need to know this.

"The Bible discusses a being called Lucifer in both the Old and New Testaments. Other names for this creature are Satan, and the Devil.

"One of the first explanations of just who this being known as Lucifer is, is found in the Old Testament in a book written by the prophet Isaiah, who wrote around 740 B.C. He wrote that Lucifer was created 'full of wisdom,' and was 'perfect.' He was created the 'anointed cherub that covereth the throne of God,' and that he actually was 'upon the holy mountain of God.' He later 'corrupted [his] wisdom by reason of [his] brightness.' The Bible then records that God 'cast [him] to the ground.'

"Isaiah wrote this in Isaiah [chapter 14, verse 12]: 'How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground which didst weaken the nations!'"

[William Cooper]: And, folks, this was the very first, very first recorded UFO sighting. If, indeed, it was a sighting at all.

"'For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven. I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will sit also up on the mount of the congregation in the sides of the north. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like The Most High.'

"Luke, a writer in the New Testament, records in Luke [chapter 10, verse 18], that Jesus said that he beheld 'Satan...as lightning fall from heaven.' Peter records in II Peter [chapter 2, verse 4] that God has 'spared not the angels...that sinned, but cast them down' as well.

---

[128] *Born Under a Bad Sign* (originally by Albert King), *The Simpsons Sing the Blues (album)*, 1990. Performed by Homer Simpson, featuring B. B. King (guitar) and the horn section from Tower of Power (horns).

"Paul, another New Testament writer, wrote this about Lucifer in II Corinthians [chapter 11, verse 14], in about 57 A.D.: 'And no marvel, for Satan [has] transformed into an angel of light.' And in II Thessalonians [chapter 2, verse 9], Paul wrote that Satan was capable of working 'lying wonders.'

"[At] around 90 A.D., John, the author of the book known as Revelation, wrote in Revelation [chapter 12, verse 9], that Satan was a 'dragon.'

"Lucifer shows up in the original site of human habitation on earth, called the Garden of Eden. The creator God placed Adam, the first man (and later Eve, the first woman) in this garden, but told them that there were certain rules that they had to abide by. [And] these are spelled out in Genesis [chapter 2, verses 16 and 17]: 'And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree in the garden thou mayst freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shall surely die.'

"Later, Lucifer spoke through a serpent to Eve, but in reality to both men and women: 'Yea, hath God said: Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent: We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden [the tree of the knowledge of good and evil] God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, lest ye die.

"'And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die. For God doth know that the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.'

"So, from the above information, it's possible to glean a little knowledge about the nature of Lucifer:

"1. He was cast down from heaven, because he desired to ascend directly into the seat of heavenly power, the throne of God.

"2. He is referred to as the 'son of the morning.' This appears to be a reference to Lucifer being similar to the sun, which also rises every morning.

"[3.] His desire [number three, his desire] is to sit on the north side of the mountain of God.

"[4.] Lucifer can deceive the world, [this is number four. Lucifer can deceive the world,] because he has been transformed into an 'angel of light.'

"[5.] [And five,] Lucifer can work 'lying wonders.'

"Now, with those basic understandings[, folks,] of Lucifer in place, it will be possible to examine the views of others about this fallen entity. However, not all agree with the picture of Lucifer being evil. [For] Albert Pike wrote [this]: '...there is no rebellious demon of Evil, or Principle of Darkness and in eternal controversy with God.'

"In fact, Mr. Pike believes that Lucifer was not a force of evil, but could be a force for good [and] he wrote this in *Morals and Dogma*:"

[William Cooper]: Which I forgot to give you yesterday in the bibliography. That's another one folks, write it down: *Morals and Dogma*, by Albert Pike. *Morals and Dogma*, by Albert Pike. He wrote this in *Morals and Dogma*:

"'For the Initiates [those initiated into the true secrets of Masonry] this is not a person, but a force, created for good, but which may serve for evil.'

"To further amplify that belief of Mr. Pike's, it becomes important to quote a letter that he wrote on July the 14th, 1889 to the 23 Supreme Councils of the world. Judging from the contents of this letter, it appears that Mr. Pike was attempting to tell the leaders of the various Supreme Councils all over the world that they were to know that Lucifer was the secret god of the Masons. This letter clearly indicates that he believed the position that Lucifer was a god who had come to earth for the good of mankind. [And] he wrote this:

"'That which we must say to the crowd is [presumably, Mr. Pike meant that the 'crowd' was all of the non-Masons, [and] the public at large...[William Cooper: that which we must say to the crowd is]] We worship a God, but it is the God that one adores without superstition.'

"[So] it appears that on the purposes of this letter was to advise all of the top ranking Masons that they were to concoct a story that the Masons worshiped the 'traditional' God, so that none could ever accuse them of worshiping a cherub, a non-god, by the name of Lucifer. In other words, they were to deny that Lucifer was their god whenever an outsider was smart enough to break through all of the secrets and figure it out."

[William Cooper]: Well, of course, folks, they were sworn to secrecy! They would have to deny anything about the true secrets of their order. I mean, what kind of logic is this? That's plain as the nose on your face. You must understand that when you ask a Mason a question about Freemasonry, he's going to tell you a lie because he is sworn to secrecy. And he is sworn by blood oaths. And I know that, by the time they reach the 32nd degree, they taken at least 32 different oaths swearing them to secrecy. Minimum. So, you should know this already.

[William Cooper]: Now, let's continue, but I'm going to go back and read that part over.

"It appears that one of the purposes of this letter was to advise all of the top ranking Masons that they were to concoct a story that the Masons worshiped the 'traditional' God, so that none could ever accuse them of worshiping a cherub, a non-God' by the name of Lucifer. [William Cooper: It's very important.] In other words, they were to deny that Lucifer was their god whenever an outsider was smart enough to break through all of the secrets and figure it out."

[William Cooper]: As I, and many others, have done. As A. Ralph Epperson has done.

"So the secret inside the Masonic order is that Lucifer is their secret god. Any non-Mason today who attempts to explain any of their Masonic friends or relatives that this is the secret inside the Lodge, will be met with an instantaneous denial. Every Mason, whether they know the secret of the Lodge or not, will obviously deny the accusation [because they must].

"Mr. Pike continued: 'You may repeat it to the 32nd, 31st and 30th degrees -- The Masonic religion should be, by all of us initiates of the high degrees, maintained in the purity of the Luciferian doctrine.'"

[William Cooper]: You see, Albert Pike at that time was at the head of all the lodges of Freemasonry of the world, and at the head of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry in the United States of America.

"Here, Mr. Pike seems to indicate that it is the 30th, 31st and 32nd degrees that are to be taught the 'Luciferian doctrine.' The direct evidence that the honorary 33rd degree is formally taught that Lucifer is the Great Architect of the Universe will be presented later. But, here Pike seems to say that that lesson is to be taught at an earlier degree. 'If Lucifer were not God, would Adonay [the God of the Christians and the Jews] and his priests calumniate [which is] [defined as spreading false and harmful statements about or to slander] him?'"

[William Cooper]: Would they calumniate him?

"Pike makes two incredible statements about Lucifer:

"1. He is considered to be a god! and

"2. The priests, and the rabbis, have it all backwards, and are all slandering his name.

"As has been illustrated, the Bible states that Lucifer is nothing more than a fallen cherub. He's not a god. Yet Mr. Pike clearly states that Lucifer is a god! [William Cooper: Now, how can that be?]

"And secondly, those who claim that he is the 'wicked one' are 'slandering' him. Those individuals have it all wrong!

"Mr. Pike continued: '...the true and pure philosophical religion is the belief in Lucifer, the equal of Adonay;'

"Adonay, also spelled [William Cooper: well, in the first place here, it's spelled A-D-O-N-A-Y, then he says 'Adonai,' also spelled A-D-O-N-A-I], is the Hebrew word for God. To show that Pike was referring to the God of the Bible, he wrote this in his book entitled *Morals and Dogma*: '...Adonai, the rival of Bal and Osiris.'

[William Cooper]: In other words, Adonay is Typhon. That's an aside from me, folks, that's not written in this book. But as you been listening to this series I've given you, you know that Adonay, if this is true, if he's the rival of Baal and Osiris, then he is Typhon.

"As has been illustrated, Osiris is the sun-god, as the sun has been shown as a symbol of Lucifer. Adonai is the 'rival' of Lucifer, both in the Bible, and in the writings of Albert Pike. 'But Lucifer, God of Light and God of Good, is struggling for humanity against Adonay, the God of Darkness and Evil.'

"[And] here once again Mr. Pike writes that Lucifer and Adonay are rivals, and that the religious world has it all backwards: Lucifer is the 'good [guy],' and Adonay is the God of 'evil and darkness.'

"(The author would like to interrupt the narrative to make an observation...)"

[William Cooper]: And this observation is being made by A. Ralph Epperson, not me. He wrote this book.

"(That authenticity of that letter by Albert Pike that was just quoted has been questioned by a variety of writers. It has been reported that Mr. Pike made these comments in an 'encyclical' hand carried to a meeting of [the] 23 Supreme Councils of the world on July 14th, 1889 in Paris, France.

"This author [meaning A. Ralph Epperson] is willing to concede that the only evidence for the contents of this 'encyclical' consists of it being quoted in a book written by Frenchman named A. C. de la Rive entitled *La Femme et l' Enfant dans la Ranc-Maconnerie Universelle*.)"

[William Cooper]: I'm not a French speaker, folks, so that's the best I could do. My tongue doesn't do those things, or at least I haven't practiced to make my tongue do those things.

"(That title, translated from French to English means 'The Woman and Child in Universal French Masonry.' A copy of that page that contains that quote, and the cover of the book has been supplied to this author [meaning A. Ralph Epperson] by a concerned researcher who had someone locate the book in France for him and make copies of the pertinent pages.

"The author has read another book that contains the English translation of that 'encyclical.' That book is entitled *Occult Theocracy* and was written in 1933 by Edith Starr Miller. She cites the book by Mr. De La Rive as her source.

"She obviously believed that the letter was true and contained the actual thoughts of Mr. Albert Pike.)"

[William Cooper]: He said it in so many other places, including his own book, *Morals and Dogma*, that I also believe that the letter is true. And now I'm speaking as myself, William Cooper.

"(In other words, [going back to A. Ralph Epperson's words, in other words,] the only source of the letter is a Frenchman who quotes it in his book and not Mr. Albert Pike himself. It must be assumed that Mr. Pike, if we were alive today and was asked whether the letter was his, would deny that he ever wrote such an 'encyclical,' whether or not he not he had written it [William Cooper: because he must be sworn to maintain the secrets]. But, the reader is admonished to remember that if he did indeed worship Lucifer, and wrote the 'encyclical,' he would certainly have to deny it.' So that answer would tell the researcher nothing.

"It is the contention of this writer, [A. Ralph Epperson,] and others who are attempting to decipher the secret symbols of the Masonic Order, that a small percentage of the Masons know that all of the symbols inside the Lodge refer to Lucifer.)"

[William Cooper]: And I am one of those who believe this, folks. My research has shown it to be absolutely true, and I can prove it. And I've already, I've already, given you direct quotes from many Freemasons that already prove it.

"(And it must remembered that these Masons must of necessity do all that they can to deny any [any revelation of any of the secrets of the Lodge].

"And certainly anyone today who believes that the contents of the letter are a fraud would do all that they could to discredit anyone who said that the thoughts were the actual thoughts of Pike.

"However, this writer [meaning A. Ralph Epperson] is of the opinion that Mr. Pike did indeed worship Lucifer, and is not basing that conclusion on just this one letter. Notice that Mr. Pike has written elsewhere that he considered Lucifer to be the secret god of the Masonic Lodge.)"

[William Cooper]: And I, William Cooper, also found that to be true. Not only in one or two letters, but in many instances.

"(So, it is not essential to this writer [A. Ralph Epperson's position] that this 'encyclical' be proven to be valid. It is the author's contention that there is ample evidence from other sources, including from Masons other than Mr. Pike, that the secret god inside the Masonic lodges is Lucifer [William Cooper: and I wholeheartedly concur with Mr. Epperson]. That evidence is available to anyone who cares to locate it.)

"But there is another Mason who knows that Lucifer is the 'good god' of a particular segment of the Masons. Pike's fellow 33rd degree Mason, Manly P. Hall, also felt that this 'god' was a 'god of good.' He wrote in his book entitled *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*:

"'Sun worship played an important part in nearly all the early pagan Mysteries. The Solar Deity...was slain by wicked ruffians, who personified the evil principle of the universe. By means of certain rituals and ceremonies, symbolic of purification and regeneration, this wonderful *god of good* was brought back to life and became the savior of His people.' [(emphasis by Epperson)]

"This 'god' who came back to life is not the Jesus of the Bible, because Mr. Hall refers to him as 'The Solar Deity.' He is referring to the death and resurrection of Osiris, covered in detail in the Masonic rituals."

[William Cooper]: And I've already, I've already relayed to you who Osiris really is. In fact, in this series of the Mystery Religion, I've proven it time and time and time again.

"[But] Manly P. Hall has further identified Lucifer as the god of some of his fellow Masons. He has written this in his book entitled *The Lost of Keys of Freemasonry* [It's one of the books that I gave you last night, folks]:

"'When the Mason learns the key to the warrior of the block is the proper application of the dynamo of the living power, he has learned the mystery of his Craft. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply energy.'

"Mikhail Bakunin, the Russian anarchist, also addressed this question of evil and good gods. He wrote: 'The Evil One is the satanic revolt against divine authority, revolt in which we see the fecund [defined as being fertile] germ of all human emancipations, the revolution.

"'Socialists recognize each other by the words "In the name of the one to whom the great wrong has been done."

"'Satan[, folks, is] the eternal rebel, the first freethinker and the emancipator of worlds. He makes men ashamed of his bestial ignorance and obedience; he emancipates him, stamps upon his brow the seal of liberty and humanity, in urging him to disobey and eat of the fruit of knowledge.'

[William Cooper]: You see, I've been telling you all along that Socialists and the Mystery Religion of Babylon are the same, the same, the same, and now in his book A. Ralph Epperson has proven it.

"That thought that Lucifer was a 'good spirit, to whom a great wrong' has been done, is the basic thought that holds the New Age together, according to Texe Marrs, the author of two major books on the subject. [And] he has written: 'Many New Agers commend Lucifer because by tempting Eve he enabled man to evolve toward enlightened knowledge and godhood.'"

[William Cooper]: Remember, I told you that, with the gift of intellect, man will develop technology that will make him God? They're working feverishly in laboratories now to uncover the secret of immortal life.

"Mr. Marrs discusses the thoughts of a leader in a mystical organization called the Stelle Group [William Cooper: How many times have I mentioned that? The Stelle Group.], named Eklal Kueshana. He writes...this New Age leader says that:

"'Lucifer is the head of a secret Brotherhood of Spirits...the Brotherhood is named after Lucifer because the great Angel Lucifer has been responsible for the abolishment of Eden in order that men could begin on the road to spiritual advancement.'"

[William Cooper]: Lars Hanson was reared in The Stelle Group. Lars Hanson was reared in The Stelle Group. Tom Valentine was a member of The Stelle Group. Tom Valentine wrote a book called *The Life and Death of Planet Earth*. Get it, read it, folks.

[William Cooper]: Tom Valentine was associated with the Communist party. Now he's a member of the Liberty Lobby, which came right out of the old German Nazi Bund. They used to sing the Horst Wessel song at the beginning of their meetings. Wake up! Wake up! Wake up! Why do you think every time somebody calls Tom Valentine to ask him about Freemasonry and their complicity in the conspiracy? He covers it up and hangs up on the person as quickly as possible and denies that there's any complicity of Freemasonry.

[William Cooper]: Now, this makes me a little hot under the collar. I've got to cool down a little bit, so we're going to take a break. Folks, don't go away, I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(break music: none)

Well, folks, I needed that little break. I will tell you right now, Tom Valentine has been attacking me for years because he knows that I know who he is and what he's about, that I know the origins of the Liberty Lobby, that I know their message is that our government is no good. It doesn't work, that it's turned against us and it's all lies. Where it's the people who are in these secret societies who have turned against us who are delivering that message to us to get us to voluntarily overthrow or get rid of our own government, the only government in the history of the world that is ever set man free! And I'm the only one who let's you know this. It's not our government, it's not the Constitution, it's not the Bill of Rights, it's not the structure. It's the secret societies. It's the Tom Valentines. It's the Bo Gritzes. It's all of these people who belong to Freemasonry and the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross, and the Knights Templar, and the sovereign and military Order of the Knights of Malta, and the order of St. John of Jerusalem and many more. Many more. Socialists, international socialism under many, many different names. You see, folks, you see? (laughs)

The senator was right. Senator McCarthy was absolutely right, he was correct. He just didn't know the proper name. He thought he was ferreting out Communism...he wasn't. You see, if he understood that what I understand, then he would have survived the attacks of the very people he was trying to ferret out, who owned the media that turned against him and destroyed him. Hollywood, who turned against him, destroyed him through manipulating the opinion of the public. See, Communism, folks, is just a word. It's another bugaboo enemy. (laughs) The real enemy, folks, is Mystery Babylon. I could never say what I said tonight before, because if I had, it would have been misinterpreted. I had to have independent verification that The Stelle Group worshiped Lucifer before I could reply legitimately to attacks upon me by Tom Valentine. Because if I had told you what I know without independent verification, all of you would have turned against me as being a poor sport or some other bullshit. It's a real load off my chest to be able to deliver that message to you. I can tell you that right now. Real load off my chest.

Let me continue, and remember, this is chapter nine of A. Ralph Epperson's book, The New World Order.

[Continuing from *The New World Order*]:

"So there's a basic disagreement about the nature of Lucifer, also known as Satan or the devil. The Bible depicts him as a force for evil, and Mr. Pike, and others, picture him as a force for good.

"But the connection between Lucifer and the Ancient Mysteries needs to be further amplified. The Mysteries had a purpose: to create a super man..."

[William Cooper]: Where have you heard that before? Hitler said it, and they're working in secret laboratories right now toward the same goal.

"The Mysteries had a purpose: to create a super man, one capable of understanding the true nature of the universe, and to worship the 'true' god. W. L. Wilmshurst, a Mason, wrote these thoughts in his book entitled *The Meaning of Masonry*:

"'This -- the evolution of man into supermen -- was always the purpose of the ancient Mysteries, and the real purpose of modern Masonry is, not the social and charitable purposes to which so much attention is paid, but the evolution of those who aspire to perfect their own nature, and transform it into more god-like quality.'"

[William Cooper]: Indeed, I say as an aside here what a Freemason said to a friend of mine who was his son. He said, “Son, if you are not one of us, you are nothing.” And, of course, the son was not one of them, and to his great credit, has never become one of them.

"[W. L. Wilmshurst] amplified this thought a little later in his book: 'Man who has sprung from the earth [meaning that he was not created by a creator God] and developed through the lower kingdoms of nature to his present rational state, has yet to complete his evolution by becoming a god-like being and unifying his consciousness with the Omniscient ~ to promote which is and always has been the sole aim and purpose of all Initiation.'

"[And he goes on:] 'No higher level of attainment is possible than that in which the human merges in the Divine consciousness and know as God knows.'"

[William Cooper]: (laughs) What have I been telling you all this time, folks?

"So, just as Satan tempted mankind with the ability to know good and evil themselves just like God, without His assistance, now the Masons are teaching that they too could become a god through an initiation into the Ancient Mysteries.

"John Anthony West, in his book *Serpent in the Sky*, wrote this in support of Mr. Wilmshurst's statement:

"'Egypt started with the concept of divine attributes within man. The gods are not brought down to earth; rather man is raised to the gods.'

"Others besides the above mentioned Masons, like Louis Feuerbach, have joined the discussion with similar thoughts. He was a nineteenth century philosopher and a hero of the Communists like Karl Marx. In fact, Frederick Engels, the co-worker with Karl Marx during the time Marx wrote *The Communist Manifesto* [William Cooper: as a hired writer hack], wrote this about his friend:

"'All the Communists of 1845 were followers of [Louis] Feuerbach...'

"The reason the Communists supported the ideas of Feuerbach is apparent when the student reads his writings. [For] he wrote: 'Man alone is our God, our father, our judge, our redeemer, our true home, our law and our rule, the Alpha and the Omega of our life and our political, moral, public and domestic activity. There is no salvation, save through the medium of man.'

"John Denver, the well known popular singer, has adopted this same philosophy about his divinity. He has been quoted as saying this after his new conversion: 'It's the single, most important experience of my life -- I can do anything. One of these days, I'll be so complete I won't be human; I'll be a god.'"

[William Cooper]: It's the same thing that's taught in the Mormon church. If a married couple produced many children and conformed to the teachings of the church, then when they die, they will be gods and they will be given a planet of their own, and they will continue their reproduction, only they will be souls and they will populate the planet and will be the gods of the planet.

[William Cooper]: What crap! What absolute crap! Where do these people get their egos? "I'll be a god!" Yeah, sure you will. (laughs) If you guys are all gods, then how come you still got to pay your bills? How come you get sick? And how come you got to go to the doctor? And if you go to the doctor, what does that make the doctor if you're god? Huh?

[William Cooper]: You're a bunch of fools. You're blithering idiots. You've lost your mind, your egos have run away with the rest of you and you're going to die like everyone else. And you're going to find, like everyone else, what really happens when people die. And as far as I know, no one on this Earth really knows, or is likely to know, 'til it happens to them. Put that in your pipe and smoke it.

"Mr. Hall, the Mason, stated a similar thought when he wrote this in his book entitled *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*:

"'We may study the star intellectually, but we have never attained consciousness until we are the star.'

"But this idea that man could become a god is not new. The Bible anticipated it, and Isaiah wrote about it back in 741 B.C. This is what he wrote in Isaiah [chapter 43, verse 10]: 'Thus saith the Lord...understand that I am He: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.'

"And once again, in Isaiah [chapter 45, verse 5]: 'I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me...'

[William Cooper]: And remember, all the Roman emperors declared themselves god, and they all died like every other man, and died (some of them) by the assassin's sword or knife. God, yeah, mm-hmm. Boy, you guys just take the cake, I'll tell you. How you can meet and throw that bologna around at each other and swallow it and pump each other up. To believe that you're gods or going to be gods is beyond my understanding.

"The Bible teaches that there is but one God, and that mankind has no possibility of sharing His godhead.

"One who apparently has not believed those statements in the Bible is Shirley MacLaine, who has become a spokesman for the position that man can become a god. She has written several books on the subject of her support of the New Age. (Newsweek magazine described her as 'The New Age evangelist.') [And] she wrote the following statement in her book entitled *Dancing in the Light*: '...we are part of God...' and this elsewhere in the same book: '...if one says audibly I am God, the sound vibrations literally align the energies of the body to a higher attunement.'"

[William Cooper]: Yeah, I bet it does. Yep, yep, I bet the insanity molecules take over every portion of the body, and you really all feel great until you have to go pay your rent, or you catch the flu, or somebody just knocks the crap out of you to bring you back to reality. Which is exactly what should happen when you do those kinds of things. What's wrong with just living life peacefully with other people and enjoying what we have? What's the big thing that you have to become God? And I'll tell ya right now, you never will. You might as well just....well, never mind. If you want to be God, go ahead. Go ahead. Go ahead. You're deceiving yourself, and that's OK as long as you don't hurt anyone else.

"If each man is a god, mankind is capable of making decisions for their own welfare. Each man has complete control of his decision-making, according to Miss MacLaine. In fact, man's control is extended into areas few have ever claimed for mankind. [And] these are the thoughts of Miss MacLaine:

"'I think we choose to be together...We choose our parents, and I think the parents choose the children they want to have before they ever come into an incarnation.'"

[William Cooper]: Tell that to an abused child. Tell that to a child who's raised by drunken, miserable, stinking parents who don't give a damn about the child. Tell that to all those people who know that that's total false, irresponsible, ramblings of an insane maniac. And you know what they say when they're confronted with this? They say you agreed to it in a previous life, and that you're, you're paying off your karmic debt. You see, they have a rationalization for everything, and it's just more bullshit. More lies, more crap.

"She went further to record another strange thought, when she wrote this: '...there is no such thing as reality, only perception.'"

[William Cooper]: Well, Shirley, let me tap you on the jaw with my fist, and then you tell me that there's no reality. Of course, I don't really want to do that, folks, but that's just a way to bring her to her senses. If it were legal, I might try it. Might try it. Might wake her up. Might show her that her perception is only reality. (laughs)

"One can only wonder where Miss MacLaine got these bizarre thoughts from. Several clues that can assist the student in understanding her have been given by either her own revelations or some articles that have appeared about her in the media.

"In her book entitled *Out on a Limb*, she wrote about her meetings with her married lover in her apartment."

[William Cooper]: (laughs) This god is breaking up somebody's marriage, and she's meeting with her married lover in her apartment.

"She commented that he looked at her shelf of books on, amongst other subjects: 'Marxists theory,' including a 'biography of Karl Marx.'"

[William Cooper]: It was wrong with that [sic], I have those books in my library and many more. Many more. But knowing, knowing Shirley MacLaine, and folks, I do, knowing this scatterbrained twit, when she has books on Marxists theory, including a barred biography on Karl Marx, you can bet that she's a Socialist. And of course, she is.

"*Parade* magazine of December 18th, 1988 had an article on Miss MacLaine which it revealed that her den had 'lots of framed pictures: Shirley with...Fidel Castro, and with [Communist] Nikita Khrushchev [amongst others.]' The magazine reported how Shirley and her lover: 'talked about Democratic-Socialist principles and how it was possible to have them both at the same time if the rich would only share their wealth more.'

"Elsewhere in her book, she wrote about how much of a hypocrite she was when she added this contradictory statement [and they all do]: '...wanted to talk to him...about how I had made a lot of money and that it made me feel elite in a world that was broke to know I could buy just about anything I wished for.'"

[William Cooper]: Just like Jane Fonda, who's been pushing for gun control for years, who was stopped by law enforcement officers on the freeway and her car was found to contain many pistols and weapons, firearms. Hypocrites and liars.

"However, nowhere in her book did she say that she had freely donated any of her own wealth to the relief of the poor. Apparently she believes that the Communist ideas about wealth sharing are acceptable only [if] she does not have to share her wealth like she wants the other rich to do."

[William Cooper]: You see, most rich purport to be Socialist but, in actual practice, none of them really are. None of them would give away their wealth to the poor, ever. Yet, they pretend to be liberal, Socialist, Marxist. In reality, they demonstrate exactly the opposite. They're liars and hypocrites. For the whole Communist, Socialist idea is for the little people, you and I, who are to be their slaves in the New World Order.

"Miss MacLaine has since gone on a nationwide tour promoting her newfound religious views to the public. *Newsweek* magazine reported in 1987 that she had made a great deal of money explaining her new thoughts to others: 'Since MacLaine began her tour in...[1987,] more than 10,000 people in 15 cities have paid $300 admission fee.'"

[William Cooper]: Well, you know me, folks. I have absolutely nothing against that. If she could have got $1000 a head admission fee, that would be OK with me.

"[Now,] 10,000 times $300 equals 3 million dollars."

[William Cooper]: I still have no complaint with that. This is the United States of America. If somebody wants it, give it to them. If they want to pay it, if they're that stupid, that's fine with me. I believe that people should be giving somebody something though, but I also believe that if they're stupid enough to pay it, then they should be taken. That's how you learn. And a lot of people would disagree with me, but I'm sorry folks, I'm sorry. That's what I believe.

"Obviously, Shirley's tours have proven to be both popular and lucrative. The *Newsweek* article on her seminar mentioned a little of what she teaches in them. The following are a few of her comments:

"'The Earth is moving off its axis,' she says, and only the 'collective consciousness' of mankind can right it. For the spiritually inclined, 'a window of light' will appear on those days [August 16th and 17th, 1987] that MacLaine says will 'allow us to rise to a higher plain of cosmic understanding.'"

[William Cooper]: Pure bullshit. Pure crap. Pure New Age mesmerism, if you will, for nothing happened on those dates.

"'Evangelist' MacLaine became 'Doctor' MacLaine when she reported some of her new cures for two of the world's most serious problems: AIDS and cancer of the abdomen. According to the *Newsweek* article, she told her audience:

"'They [or] [those who paid to hear her in the 15 cities of the tour] all got to hear MacLaine's pronouncements on such subjects as AIDS (she thinks sufferers are sick because they have been "bereft of love necessary to sustain the balance" of health); and cancer (for cancer of the abdomen, she advises "putting patients in a yellow room because yellow is the color 'frequency' of that part of the body.")'"

[William Cooper]: More New Age mesmerism bullshit crap.

"And to think her 'patients' only have to pay $300 for such wisdom!

"But 'Doctor' MacLaine is not as dumb as one might think. The *Newsweek* article reported: '...everyone who attended had to sign waivers absolving the seminar's organizers from responsibility [from] psychological injury.' [William Cooper: How clever! How clever of Ms. MacLaine!]

"So someone in charge of arranging her seminars is aware that her ideas might cause psychological damage to those attending, and they have moved to protect her from malpractice lawsuits.

"Not not only was this 'New Age evangelist' making money on her personal lecture tours, she was also making money on her best selling books."

[William Cooper]: Now, I don't know what's wrong with A. Ralph Epperson. I don't know why he's saying this because he purports to believe in the Constitution and the principles and ideals upon which this country was based. And there is nothing wrong with making money on anyone's personal lecture tours or on their books. And I can tell you right now, that A. Ralph Epperson makes money on his lecture tours and on his books and that's how he makes his living. So as far as I'm concerned, that is a partial discreditation of A. Ralph Epperson.

"As of July, 1987, her book entitled *Out on a Limb*, had sold 3 million copies, and her other major seller, *Dancing in the Light*, had sold 2.2 million."

[William Cooper]: Could he be jealous? Is it possible that A. Ralph Epperson is jealous of Shirley MacLaine's ability to sell books?

"*Time* magazine reported that her 'five books on self-exploration and self-promotion have run to more than 8 million copies.'"

[William Cooper]: Now, to me that's admirable. If someone can write something that is so desirable by 8 million people that it sells 8 million copies, I don't care what they're writing about. That's admirable. She's providing an income for herself, her family and people are obviously buying her books because they want them. Therefore, she's supplying them with a service, whether it's bullshit or not, it doesn't matter. That's the American way, folks. That's what it's all about. There was a lot of people back in the early part of the century who hated automobiles, and therefore, Henry Ford was the devil. But he sold an awful lot of them, and when [sic] he came under the criticism of a lot of people for doing it.

[William Cooper]: Sorry folks, that's the American way. As far as I'm concerned, what A. Ralph Epperson is spouting in these few sentences here is Socialism. And I admire him for his research and what he's done, and I know that he makes his living selling books and lecturing. And for him to spout the Socialist attitude when he is doing the same thing is not acceptable. And he is a friend of mine and I will certainly bring this to his attention. You know, I read this book a long time ago and I had forgotten that he had said these things, but I will certainly bring this to his attention. In fact, we may talk about it on the air when he's a guest of the show, and he will be a guest of the show very shortly. So, you can look forward to some kind of explanation of this.

"[He says] it appears that selling the New Age religion can be very profitable!"

[William Cooper]: Well, Barnum and Bailey was very profitable and it was all an illusion, just like the New Age religion.

"But, in summary, perhaps the most cogent comment on the battle between the New [Agers] and the Christians was made by Nesta Webster in her book entitled *Secret Societies*:

"'The war now begins between the two contending principles: the Christian conception of man reaching up to God, and the secret society...conception of man as God, needing no revelation from on high, and no guidance but the law of his own nature.

"'And since that nature is in itself divine, all that springs from it is praiseworthy, and those acts usually regarded as sins are not to be condemned.'

[William Cooper]: You heard me say before that in the New World Order the law will be: Do as thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law. And it will.

"The battle lines are drawn between those who believe in a creator God, and those who believe than man can become god. These are the two opposing positions. And the battle between them[, dear listeners,] has [most certainly] begun."

[William Cooper]: Now, don't get too upset for my criticism of the few paragraphs that A. Ralph Epperson wrote condemning Shirley MacLaine's ability to write books and lecture and bring in a lot of money. For I am sure that in his zeal, which many of us get carried away with, in his zeal to condemn the worship of Lucifer and the secret societies, he carried it a little too far. We'll bring it up when he's a guest on the show, for I am a little curious about it myself. But I haven't jumped off the edge...let's put it that way.

Good night, and may God bless you all.

(closing music: Walk on the Water, performed by Credence Clearwater Revival)

Hour 20: 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order (aired May 11th, 1993)

Across America and around the world, you're listening to the Hour of the Time. The only hour that ever was, or ever will be, for during this time you will decide your future and, thus, our collective futures. I'm your host, William Cooper.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

If you are one of those who have been engrossed and have been following our series on the Mystery Schools -- the religion, the ancient religion of Mystery Babylon -- you are going to love tonight's program. And, once again, it's going to be proof that I have been right all along. So, stay tuned, folks. Don't go away.

(opening music: The Rose, performed by unknown artist)

Everybody look back, in that corner at the far side of the room, where it's real dark, behind that chair. I'm going to turn on a very, very bright light, and I want you all to watch the cockroaches scatter. For tonight, I'm going to read, verbatim, to you from a book that we found on a dusty shelf, far back in the rear of a used bookstore, that proves beyond any shadow of a doubt that what I've been revealing to you in the segment -- the many segments -- of the series, entitled the Mystery Schools, on this program the Hour of The Time has been not only true, but right on target, and the first time that this information has ever been exposed in its entirety to the people of the world.

Now, had you better go to the used bookstores in your cities and you'd better get there before the cockroaches get there, because I tell you now, they know we are searching for proof and that we are digging for the evidence that we will use in the future to hang them by their own rope. You need to get there first and buy any and every book that is concerned with any and every secret society, mystery religion or cult that you can find. If you don't understand them and if you don't want to use them to help us expose these people, then send those books to us, because we will put them to the best use.

I'm holding in my hand an old faded...what use to be red, hard-backed, covered book -- it's almost orange now because it's faded with age -- entitled *Fundamental Laws: 68th Convocation*. On the front of the cover is some of the symbology of the Mystery Schools. There is a rope representing the snake eating its own tail, also known as the Magic Circle. Within this Magic Circle, there is a triangle, actually three triangles, one within the other. Within the triangles, there's the symbol of the skull and bones; there is the symbol of wings around the world; there's the symbol of the ark, the anchor and the three letters T-R-Y beneath the three triangles. This is the verbatim written report, published 1916, ladies and gentlemen, that I'm going to read to you from:

"*Fundamental Laws: A Report of the 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order*. Giving a *resume* of the proceedings of the Convocation, together with most of the lectures that were delivered during this time of the Convocation, by the several delegates present. Also a report of the work of Ancient Initiation in the Grove of Osiris as especially prepared for the occasion."

Below that is the symbol of a triangle with three stone steps, representing the three degrees of initiation. Up on the top step is a cross, in the center of which is a rose. And beneath the triangle, again, the three letters, T-R-Y. This is copyrighted, 1916, published by The Philosophical Publishing Company. Allentown, Pennsylvania, for the Members of the Rose Cross Order.

On the next page is a roll of honor. One of the names on here stands out and almost knocked me over when I saw it, for the name is Lars Hansen. Now it is not *the* Lars Hansen that we've discussed on this show, and we're going to look it to find out if this was his father, or grandfather, or great-grandfather -- could have been either one of the three -- but we *will* find out, believe me. We know Lars Hansen's parents were members of the Mystery School and, in particular, the Metternich Stelle Group, where Lars Hansen was reared.

[Reading from *Fundamental Laws: A Report of the 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order*]:

"In explanation of the contents of this book [and I'm reading verbatim from the introduction, 'In Explanation': In explanation of the contents of this book], it is to be stated that these articles do not give the INNER work of the Rose Cross Order but simply the outer, the public teachings.

[William Cooper]: Now, you'll remember in the Mystery School series I taught you about the exoteric and the esoteric. What you're going to get in this book -- because they never publish the esoteric anywhere, it's always hidden in symbology, but there are incredible admissions in this book that you will hear in the exoteric. Reading again, verbatim:

"The Illuminati and its Soul Science work may be called the child of the Rose Cross Order. Years ago it was found that where there was one person who desired to follow the work with heart and soul, in other words, who was willing to LIVE the life as taught by the Order, there were an hundred others who desired teachings from the Order but who were not willing to dedicate their lives to the Sublime Work."

[William Cooper]: Now, I break from this for a moment to remind you that...I have previously stated that the fraternity of Freemasons, The Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross, The Sovereign and Military Order of the Knights of Malta, The Knights Templars, the Mormon Church, all of these...the Illuminati, the Order, the Skull and Bones, are all the same organization. And what you have just heard is the first admission of that fact. And you are going to hear more as I progress. And remember, I am reading this right out of their own publication, a hardbound book, published by The Philosophical Publishing Company in Allentown, Pennsylvania, specifically for the Rose Cross Order. Continuing:

"These thousands had to be taken care of, and as a result, the Illuminati and its Soul Science work was born.

"When, in April, [now, that's April of 1916, folks, April of 1916. Remember that. When, in April,] the order went forth to the brethren, that Sacred Convocation was to be held, all delegates were requested to prepare articles on Soul Science so that regular lecture sessions could be held. The lectures that follow are the result. All these lectures were given in open session and are to considered as Soul Science work, though in entire harmony with the teachings of the Rose Cross Order.

"The work of the Rose Cross Order as given to its students can never be published. It is a secret, sacred work between teacher and student."

[William Cooper]: Let me read that again for you: "It is a secret, sacred work between teacher and student."

"It is a Soul Training, an *inner* Initiation, and such work continues until the student has reached Initiation, after which he is called upon to attend a Convocation, and at which time the degree work is conferred upon him, but the *inner* work *always* precedes the outer work, as the outer work is only a bond, binding together the Brotherhood.

"Thus a word in explanation. Many, having heard of the Great Order and its work, and actually knowing nothing of its inner work, have, ignorantly or with fraudulent intent, established so-called Rose Cross bodies, and these bodies, knowing nothing of the true work of the Rose Cross, have nothing but a Ritualistic initiatory rite or degree work.

"We would refer all seekers to authorities on the Rose Cross and on Initiation, and they will then find that the TRUE Rose Cross is actually a School of Spirituality, with a degree ceremonial Initiation as the climax."

[William Cooper]: And this is signed by the Hierophant of the Order. In the preface:

"Early in the summer, instructions were received from the Hierarchies to call the Inner Circle of the Rose Cross Order into session, and thus to fitly celebrate the 68th year of the Rose Cross Order in America.

"Orders were immediately issued to those who have the privilege of attending this Convocation, and on June the 1st [1916] the Convocation was called to order, and the preliminary lectures were started.

"At this Convocation all delegates were instructed to prepare and to deliver articles which should have a bearing on the conditions of the present day and which should be the means of helping humanity.

"However, because of the limited amount of time at the disposal of those who could attend, only a few were enabled to prepare such lectures, with the result that there were not as many lectures delivered as might have been had the delegates had more time at their disposal.

"But even so, there were from two to three lectures each day, and most of these lectures will be found in this present volume, though many of the lectures cannot be given in book form, as they were only delivered as from teacher to those of the Inner Circle.

"From the beginning of the month until the day of the thirteenth there were lectures in the Assembly Hall which had been built in 1910 for the express purpose of holding these yearly Convocations, but on the thirteenth, there were no lectures, as all of the day was required for making the preparations necessary in order that the Ancient Mysteries might be given to the delegates in a form of Symbolism, consisting of three degrees.

"I can do no better than to give the article prepared by Grace K. Morey, of Buffalo, N. Y., the Secretary of the Rose Cross Sacred College, for the Buffalo, N. Y., papers, and which appeared in the 'Buffalo Express' July 16th, 1916."

[William Cooper]: This is entitled *Ancient Mysteries of Egypt Given in an Initiation of Three Degrees.* Pay close attention, folks, for what you are going to hear now confirms much of what I have been revealing to you in the series on the Hour of the Time, known as the Mystery Schools. Quoting from the book once again:

"Under the authority of the Rose Cross Order founded in America in 1858 prominent delegates of the Order were gathered in the most remarkable conclave held during the last 5000 years, the publication of whose records now opens to the world, the connection of Egypt in her ages of true religion, power and glory, with the Mystic Seal of the United States, whose Heraldric symbolism declaring the mighty destiny of America, has, until now only been known to a limited number."

[William Cooper]: Not anymore.

"At 'Beverly Hall' in the beautiful Tohickon valley about four miles from the town of Quakertown, men and women of all ranks of life, and from all parts of the world, high Masons, and members of the Eastern Star, physicians, teachers, authors, and members of all denominations inclusive of the Hebrew, all these assembled at the call of the Grand Master of the Rose Cross Order for the sixty-eighth Convocation."

[William Cooper]: And that should silence the cockroaches, who are now scurrying from the light, who say that they are not all one order. They are known as the Brotherhood, the Order, the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross, the fraternity of Freemasons and, of course, those of you have been listening know the rest. Reading again from the book:

"Some years ago R. Swinburne Clymer, author of the Philosophy of Fire, Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry, The Rosicrucians; Their Teachings, Mysteries of Osiris, Soul Science and Immortality, and over thirty other works, bought a mountainous tract of land, and on this was built 'Beverly Hall,' an Assembly Hall, press rooms and libraries, and chemical laboratory which, surrounded by orchards, vineyards and rose gardens, set in terraced lawns, presents with its Collie kennels and poultry plants, a splendid combination of the beautiful and the practical.

"To this has been added the Mystic, for in a secluded and wooded tract of fifty acres of this land, an artificial lake was made from a mountain stream, a throne room erected and other improvements made which would be needed for the Initiation of Neophytes in the Egyptian Mysteries.

"The Convocation was called to order on June first in the Assembly Hall, built over five years ago for that purpose, and the delivery of a series of lectures upon practical as well as Mystical subjects began and continued until the close of the

Convocation. The delegates and teachers presented the lectures, which were followed by discussions upon the subjects of Eugenics, Scientific Motherhood, Code of Ethics for the Schools and home, Spiritual Christianity [that's a joke], Personal Hygiene, Diet and Health, Sin, Authority and Individuality, Jacob's Ladder, Initiation, Reincarnation, Soul Development, The Second Coming of the Christ, and the Mystic Significance of the seal of the United States.

"In the time of Solomon as in the time of the Egyptian Priesthood, no ceremony was ever held, unless the circle of Solomon, commonly called the Sacred Seal of Solomon, had been previously prepared, but since the fall of Egypt and of the Temple of Solomon, this seal has been practically unknown, except to a limited number of students of ancient religions and mysteries."

[William Cooper]: Folks, the Seal of Solomon is not the six-pointed star, which is on the flag of Israel. It is not the Seal of David or the Star of David. It is not the Seal of Solomon, as you will soon discover.

"During the first week in June, in the grove especially prepared for the dramatization of the Ancient Mysteries of Osiris, the Seal of Solomon, often called the Magic Circle, was especially built, and on June 11 the dedication of the Magic Circle took place in the presence of the delegates of the Rose Cross Order, sonic of whom were natives of Germany, England and Russia. This was in accordance with the system as practiced by the ancient Priests of Egypt and the Sanhedrin of the Temple of Solomon.

"On the night of June 13th the first section of the class, including those of the Order taking part in the Initiation, Assembled in the grove of Osiris, which was illuminated by electricity from a central power house especially prepared for the purpose, and the Initiation of the Ancient Mysteries of Egypt in three Degrees and six scenes.

"All students of the Ancient Mysteries and religions know that in the Temple of Solomon there were three Courts, the outer Court for the people being composed of seven hundred selected teachers and leaders. These were members of the First Degree, Illuminati, called also, seekers, travelers or soldiers. The middle Court, or members of the second Degree were seventy in number, and were supposed to be in the Hall of Meditation, and acted as mediators between the people and the inner Sanctuary. Above all was the Inner Court, or circle of the Seven Priests and the Master or High Priest, who were the teachers between God and man, mediators between the seen and Unseen.

"In the Egyptian Mysteries, the first Court was made up of the Royal youth of Egypt, and such students from foreign countries as desired to enter the Temple and Priesthood, and these, during probation, were often known as the 'Soldiers of the Priesthood,' as it was their duty while undergoing the preliminary training and tests to guard the Priesthood and its work even to the death.

"The second class corresponding to a Second Degree were those who had passed this test and who were in the Hall of Meditation, and purification, in preparation for the first vows, and the dedication of the body, mind, soul and spirit to God and the service of mankind.

"The third class called The Third Degree were those who had passed with credit the tests of the first degree, the purification of the second, as well as the various stages of development required of all students in the Halls of Meditation.

"In the Royal Third Degree, which took place in the Temple the Neophyte received the final instruction. After this came the final test in the beautiful ceremony of the death of the old life, the giving up of the body and its temptations and the raising of the slain Osiris or Spiritual body, by his faithful spouse Isis, the Soul, with the final Illumination.

"On the fifteenth of June, the first section of the representatives left 'Beverly Hall,' for their respective homes and the second section began to arrive for the preparatory lectures, and on the nineteenth of June the ceremonies were repeated so that all might witness the Initiation and take part in it so as to become members.

"So far as can be learned either through travel or history never before since the fall of Egypt and its Priesthood and the fall of the Temple of Solomon, has there ever been a grove, a lake to represent the Nile, a Magic Circle, or a Temple prepared, nor is it believed that anywhere in the world does there today exist such a Circle.

"Nearest to this, however, is Stone-henge of the Druids of Britain, to which their descendants travel each year at a certain time to greet the Sun, and renew their vows.

"This is the first time, therefore, in 5000 years that any Order has attempted to build up this Sacred emblem under the stately oak, so that people of modern civilization might witness the beauties of the life and religion of the ancient people, whose teachings of individual soul development, made the glory of Egypt, the lost dreams of all Israel, the teachings of the Magi of Persia, all that was true in India, the splendid philosophy of Greece, the magnificence of the early Romans, the basis of pre-Christian Ireland's great schools, as well as the familiar Holy Grail legends of Briton, Celt and Gaul. In this light of Brotherhood of man and Fatherhood of God was founded this great Republic foretold by Virgil, upon whose seal is set the Egyptian Pyramid, completed by the White stone of Spiritual Purification as the crown of the ages."

[William Cooper]: It's time for our break, folks. Don't go away, for I'll be right back after this very short pause.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

(break music: The Rose, performed by unknown artist)

[William Cooper]: In the winter, far beneath the bitter snow, lies the seed that, with the sun's love, becomes the rose. Only those of you who have listened to the full series of broadcasts on the Hour of the Time of the Mystery Schools will understand exactly what that means. And you will know and have a entirely different understanding of that song, which is beautiful, to say the least, but does not convey the message that many of you always thought you heard.

[William Cooper]: You see, the Mystery Schools speak to each other is symbology, in a symbolic language that they have learned to use over the millennium to hide their real secrets, their real intent, their real work, which has always been from the beginning to re-establish on this earth an ancient government ruled by a council of wise men, a benevolent despotism, a one-world, totalitarian, Socialist government. Don't ever forget that, folks. If you love being free, the New World Order Utopia is not for you and it certainly is not for me.

[William Cooper]: Continuing now from the book, entitled *Fundamental Laws:*, the publication of *A Report of the 68th Convocation Of the Rose Cross Order*, during which they admit the existence of the Illuminati; they admit the existence of the Order; they admit the existence of the Brotherhood; they admit that all these secret organizations, including Freemasonry, are all the same organization, all working towards the same goal. An incredible admission printed in their own publication, a hardbound book found up on a dusty shelf, way back in the rear corner of an old used bookstore. Such is the work of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence, CAJI.

[William Cooper offers CAJI memberships]

"[Quoting again from the book:] The American Constellation of thirteen stars set in the form of a double triangle was foretold by Merlin of King Arthur's Court, and the Philosophy of the Holy Grail and of Egypt's glory and Solomon's Temple, has been the Day star of every great American Statesman from Washington to Abraham Lincoln.

[William Cooper]: Now, if you've been listing to this program, you know the Day star is a reference to Lucifer, the light bringer, the angel of light, the morning star...also known as the sun of the morning.

"After the ceremonies in the grove, there was given in the dining room of 'Beverly Hall' at midnight a 'Feast of the Gods' at which neither meat nor spices formed part of the menu, but only fruits, nuts and other products of sun kissed foods."

[William Cooper]: And that should tell you something about Sunkist oranges. (laughs)

"The conclusion of the rites was held at sunrise in the grove with a musical communion service, in which Nectar of roses, distilled from the thirty thousand roses blooming each June upon the lawns at 'Beverly Hall,' was served as emblematic of the wine of the Soul, and for this service the rose bushes were planted several years ago. [William Cooper: This is also from the book, folks.]

"I wish that all the readers of this book might have been present at the preparation, at the building, and at the Dedication of this Ancient Magic Circle. Or, I wish that I might be able to give a detailed description of these sublime ceremonies in this book. However, I cannot do this here, though I hope that in some future work I will be able to do so. Sufficient be it to say, that when the stone, made out of cement by one of the Brothers, was nearly finished, the Dedication took place, and the emblems placed in the stone itself before it was completed, were:

"The American Beauty Rose in full bloom. This as a representation, or symbol of the Soul that has reached full Illumination.

"The Mystic ring. This was a solid gold ring, belonging to one of the members present, upon which had been engraved the Cross and Pentagram. All members of the Magi will know what this symbol stands for. The ring itself, as is known to the Magi, is a protecting agent against all evil or malignant influences when worn during any ceremonial or developing work.

"[And] The True Magic Mirror. This is an emblem of the Soul, which when fully developed will act as a mirror to the universe wherein may be wisdom and truth.

"Lastly, a complete copy of the private text book, 'Ritualistic Occultism,' which contains the ceremonies as made use of by the Magi, and four of these ceremonials were made use of by four of the Magi, in the dedication of the Magic Circle.

"When all of this had taken place, the stone was completed and then later in the day the characters were engraved upon the stone by the Brother who had completed the stone.

"Of the midnight 'Feast to the Gods' and of the morning services which took place in the grove it is not lawful for me to speak at this time, but it is my sincere prayer that all who are enrolled in the Sacred Schools may some day be present with us and witness these sublime ceremonies, especially as they are conferred in the Spring of the year. [William Cooper: In the spring of the year.]

"Arrangements were made by the delegates present, through voluntary contributions, to either buy another large grove, or if that is found impracticable, to build a much larger Hall in the 'Grove of Osiris' so that advanced ceremonies may be held the coming Spring at the 69th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order."

[William Cooper]: Now, I'm going to reveal something to you that I've never told you before on this program. I've been working up to it, and now is the time to tell you before I read from the next section of this book. For then you will understand what has been happening in the last fifty years, and what is happening now.

[William Cooper]: It was Harry Truman, a 33rd degree Freemason, who signed the United Nations treaty, who pushed through and signed the United Nations Participation Act. It was also Harry Truman, a 33rd degree Freemason, operating in concert with Wild Bill Donovan, the head of the OSS, a member of the Sovereign and Military Order of the Knights of Malta and of the Order of the Knights Templar, who created the National Security Act -- pushed it through congress. Harry Truman signed it. It created the umbrella of national security, a curtain of secrecy.

[William Cooper]: It created the Central Intelligence Agency. And behind this curtain of secrecy, the secret societies have been working to destroy the sovereignty of all nations and bring about a one-world, totalitarian, Socialist government. And, folks, all of the bugaboo enemies that you've been afraid of all your life were never enemies at all. For these were deceptions, manipulations. The only enemy, folks, that the people of the world have ever had is right here. Right here in this country, down at the corner in your town in the temple that has no windows.

[William Cooper]: And, now, reading again from the book: *The Report from the 68th Convocation Of the Rose Cross Order, Introduction to the Great Seal*:

"It is rather a strange and an unknown thing for one to write an introduction to a single chapter appearing in a book, but the conditions are so unusual as to warrant it.

"More than a year ago, Grace K. Morey, the author of the article, 'The Great Seal of the United States and Its Mystic Significance,' prepared a sketch for a short primer of the Illuminati teachings, and in this sketch, as will be shown by the drawings, it was brought out that man is not only a threefold being, but that he is actually a four-fold being as well. In short, that when he has succeeded in reaching Soul Illumination, he is the completed Pyramid or true Triangle.

"If the student will give serious study to the article on the Seal of the United States, he will find that on the reverse side of the seal which is as yet uncut, there is to be found the Pyramid, but with the capstone as yet not placed, and thus he will see that the Philosophy of the Illuminati is the absolute and undeniable Philosophy upon which these United States are founded as is clearly indicated by our four-fold philosophy, by the drawings representing our Philosophy, and by the drawings of the reverse side of the United States seal.

"And thus it would appear that the Unseen Hierarchies which shaped the foundation of the great Republic which must some day rule the world, are the same Hierarchies which gave us the Soul Science Philosophy as taught by the Illuminati."

[William Cooper]: And, now, you know why what has happened in this country has happened, and you know why what is happening today is happening. And you now know why, on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States, are the words *Novus Ordo Seclorum*, which, literally translated, means "The New Order of the Ages" (also known as "The New World Order), but I won't let you rest with that shock.

[William Cooper]: Listen to this, dear listeners. Hold on to your chairs, because the incredible admission that is coming to you right out of the pages of this book is going to knock you flat. Reading again from the book:

"And thus it would appear that the Unseen Hierarchies which shaped the foundation of the great Republic which must some day rule the world, are the same Hierarchies which gave us the Soul Science Philosophy as taught by the Illuminati.

"And now let us look into the future, not far, but just beyond the line. We find that scholars condemn the design of the reverse side of the United States Seal, that it has never been cut but has remained hidden as though it were something to be ashamed of.

"However, though this appears the truth, it is not the truth. The reason why it has never been cut is because the time is not yet as the cap-stone has not yet been set.

"And what is this cap-stone? My reader, prepare for a shock.

"When Atlantis ruled the word, that which is now America was connected with Egypt by what is now Mexico, and in Mexico, in the territory of Yucatan, there is a Pyramid in which the Fire Philosophers worshiped God as Divine Fire and Life in like manner as did the Initiates of Egypt, for the two *were then one*.

"America is not complete, and will not be complete, cannot be complete, until Mexico is *again* part of America as she was in the long ago, and when Mexico is once again a part of the United States, then will the cap-stone have been set on the

Pyramid and the reverse side of the United States seal will be cut.

"Thus you will see that the Soul Science Primer with its drawings, is but the beginning of the article concerning the Seal of the United States, while the article on 'Body, Mind, Spirit and Soul' is the finale thereof.

"May it not be long until the Holy Pyramid shall be completed and may it be completed without the shedding of blood.

"Lovingly given, R. Swinburne Clymer. 'Beverly Hall,' Quakertown, Pennsylvania, July 6th, 1916."

[William Cooper]: And, now, you know the final truth, ladies and gentlemen. Now you know the purpose of the free trade agreements. Now you know the purpose of GATT and NAFTA. Now you know where we're headed. Now you know the middle class in this country is doomed. Now you know that the New World Order is being brought about by the intelligence community and the secret societies, whose headquarters are in the United States of America, just thirteen blocks from the White House. Now you know, in the incredible admissions, in their own writing, in this book, published by the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross. Now you know that the Illuminati is real; that Freemasonry is a part of the Illuminati; that the Rose and Cross is a part of the Illuminati; that they are also called the Order, the Brotherhood; that they also consist of the Knights Templars; they also consist of the Knights of Malta and all of the other secret societies whose organizational structure is in the shape of the pyramid, with a few at the top who really know what the Great Work and the Great Plan is. And a whole bunch of slathering idiots thirsting after the secrets on the bottom, who will never, ever, know anything.

[William Cooper]: Are the cockroaches scattering? If this broadcast doesn't do it nothing will. If this doesn't wake you up, nothing will. If you don't understand now, the eighteen hours of the series that I've aired on the Mystery Schools, you will never understand it, now or in the future. If you don't know where we are headed now, then you never will.

[William Cooper]: If you are not concerned now, then you have already placed the chains upon your ankles and you have already watched freedom fly. If this broadcast does not do it, nothing will. This is the last voice of freedom. This is the only revelatory media source in the world today. The Hour of the Time is the only outlet for truth left upon this earth.

[William Cooper]: Ladies and gentlemen, what you have heard tonight is the final parting of the curtain. It is the opening of the last door that was to be opened. It is the final understanding of where we have been, where we are at and where we are going. It is the light. It is the Illumination in the darkest corners. You are looking at the forbidden fruit. You have heard tonight what you were never to hear, what has been forbidden for thousands of years. You now know what the Great Work is. You know who is bringing it about.

[William Cooper]: You, too, can find this book if you search hard enough. And the incredible admissions that are contained within it will give you the ammunition and the armor to march out here on the battlefield with me, and many others, who are trying to stop what is coming.

[William Cooper]: Remember what Mr Swinburne said at the end of his article and I'll read that too you again: "May it not be long until the Holy Pyramid shall be completed and may it be completed without the shedding of blood. Lovingly given, R. Swinburne Clymer. 'Beverly Hall,' Quakertown, Pennsylvania, July 6th, 1916." And I am telling you now, their goal is to destroy all other religions save theirs, destroy all existing nation states save theirs, and shackle the mob, and that is you.

Good night, dear listeners, and God bless you all.

(closing music: Amazing Grace)

Hour 21: William Morgan Interview, Part I (aried May 14th, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: Mr. Clean)[129]

[William Cooper advertises for Swiss America Trading]

(Continuing commercial):

Now, I'm going to put a little humor in here. I just talked to Craig Smith at Swiss America trading, and he told me they're issuing three new bonds: the Bush bond with 0% interest, the Quayle bond with, of course, no maturity, and the Clinton bond with no principle. Now, that's funny, and we can appreciate a little joke, but at the same time, there's a lot of truth in what I just told you. There is no confidence in this administration. No world leader has emerged and in Bill Clinton. The United States of America may be the only superpower left on this earth to those who want to believe that, but as we're disarming, as we have taken our B-52 bombers off alert and are now scrapping them, as we are dismantling our Minutemen missiles, as we are paring down our military forces, no such...no such equivalent is taking place in Russia or any of the satellites that used to make up the Soviet Union. So folks, you may buy all of this baloney about the United States being the last great superpower, but I'm telling you right now, we are not. And if we continue on the road that we are on, not only are we going have a financial collapse, but we are going to find ourselves a third-rate, third-world country very quickly. All you have to do is look around. Stop buying the propaganda, use your own brain, your own eyes and ears and take a hard look at what's happening. And you don't have to be very smart at all to understand that we're going in the wrong direction.

Now, what this means for you personally is everything that you worked for, you're going to lose. You're going to lose unless you take action now. Those who already taken action are already realizing an appreciation of their investments. Now, you'll have to understand that it's not a real appreciation, because as the price of gold and silver and coins have gone up, the value of the dollar has gone down and will continue to go down. What you're doing when you make these investments is you're protecting your assets and believe me, in what is coming that is the best that you can hope for at this time on your level.

Call Swiss America trading right now: 1-800-289-2646. That's 1-800-289-2646. Talk to the experts there and let them show you how to protect yourself. While you're at it, mention my name, William Cooper, and they'll send you a free newsletter chock-full of information that you need to know. It doesn't cost you anything to call and talk to them. They have many different investments; many that I have recommended, some that I have not, some that I do not recommend, some that I don't know anything about. Call now; the time to act is now. Don't wait until it's too late. Don't wait until you lose everything. Call 1-800-289-2646. That's 1-800-289-2646. In the process of saving yourself and protecting your assets, you will be saving this show, and freedom will for the world. Call now, 1-800-289-2646. You'll be glad that you did.

(Interlude music: Fanfare for the Common Man)[130]

(Speaking over music)

Ladies and gentleman, you are living in the last days of freedom for the common man. So many people tell me that they are just one person and there is nothing that they can do. That everything is lost, and all they can do is wait and see what happens. This program tonight is designed specifically to let you know that that is not true. There is a virtual army of people, individuals, acting independently on their own. CAJI members across this nation and around the world, who are affecting great change, and who are providing a flow of information that we, through this program and through our newsletter and organization, feed to the world. These men and women are unknown, and prefer to stay that way. They are my heroes.

---

[129] Mr. Clean's theme song, or jingle, has been around since the product's introduction, initially sung as a popular-music style duet between a man (Don Cherry) and a woman (Betty Bryan). Thomas Scott Cadden wrote the jingle in 1957 for use with the product's introduction in 1958. It is the longest running advertising jingle used in television history.

[130] *Fanfare for the Common Man* is a 20th-century American classical music work by American composer Aaron Copland. The piece was written in 1942 for the Cincinnati Symphony Orchestra under conductor Eugene Goossens.

(Music ends)

Ladies and gentlemen, I am proud to have as my special guest today William Morgan, who is one of the members of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence and has been for some time. Now, that's all that we can tell you about his identity. You will hear from him his own story, what he's been doing, how he's been doing it, what kind of information he has collected for our organization for the citizens of this country and of the world. And we're going to talk about...well, I guess you just have to call it "undercover operations". This man has been undercover for the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence, and I remember several episodes of the show before, sometime during the series that we call the Mystery Schools, which we've done, I believe, nineteen hours of broadcasting covering that subject. I told you that we had infiltrated the Lodge, the Mystery Schools, Mystery Babylon. In fact, we have not only infiltrated it once, but many times in this country and in lodges around the world. So, the information that we're giving you on the Mystery Schools is not conjecture. It does not come from a bunch of people sitting around making up information. It comes from the books printed by the Ministry Schools themselves. It comes from our members who are actually in the lodge, and we check, double-check everything that they bring to us. Please welcome to the Hour of the Time, William Morgan.

[William Morgan (WM)]: Thank you, Bill. You can call me Will, and I really appreciate that gracious and honorable introduction.

[William Cooper (WC)]: Well, we're certainly appreciative of everything that you've done. Tell us, Will, how long have you been associated with the Mystery Schools?

[WM]: For over two years now. I became a Mason in June of 1991.

[WC]: And what happened? How did you ever even know about Freemasonry?

[WM]: Um, at first before I was, uh, exposed to your information, I was under the impression, as most people are, that they were a philanthropic organization, dealing mostly with charity, or possibly even some way associated with unions. And, uh, as most CAJI members have come to know, that is entirely not the case.

[WC]: Did you have friends who were Freemasons?

[WM]: Yes, I worked with somebody who was a Freemason, and I've come to find out that that is usually the most common way that a person is exposed to the craft. “The Craft,” as they call it.

[WC]: So, they call it "The Craft" amongst themselves. This is not something that the public is not normally aware [sic]. What does "The Craft" mean? What does that term mean?

[WM]: Well, they consider themselves *Craftsmen* because they are building something and, there have been many organizations throughout history with the incredible similarities to the present, modern cult of Freemasonry that have called themselves *Builders*, *Comacine.*[131] They have associated with themselves always with the erection of the structure, or the building of something that people just do not understand. We have come to understand that what they are erecting is the New World Order, and they've been working on it for thousands and thousands of years.

---

[131] The early medieval Lombard Comacine masters (*magistri comacini*) were stone masons working in a region of excellent building stone who gave to Lombardy its preeminence in the stone architecture that preceded Romanesque style. Their masons' marks have suggested arcane meanings for some enthusiasts. The name *comacini* Romantic historians of the nineteenth century traced to the location where they supposedly had their headquarters,the minute Isola Comacina in Lake Como, alleged to have been a safe haven during the Lombard invasion; a more inventive etymology derives from a supposed Latin expression *cum machinis*, referring to their tools.

[WC]: That's, uh, correct. Now, did your friend, or friends, try to proselytize you or talked you into joining the Lodge?

[WM]: No, not at all. I must admit, I did go to them, and I was not entirely aware of the nature of their organization, or of what was in store for me when I became a member, or *brother* as they call it.

[WC]: Now, if you had not joined CAJI, would you still be sort of in the dark about the true meaning of Freemasonry, or do the members really learn the truth about the organization during their period of time?

[WM]: Had I joined CAJI, I would be as empty-headed and as trusting as sheeple, as most of the Freemasons in America and across the world are today. They are not taught what The Craft is about. They do not question authority at all. They, as a rule, and from my personal experience and observation, they obey the rules without question and to the letter.

[WC]: Now, a lot of people out there are going to wonder, and I know that Freemasons are going to bring this up, that if you didn't learn what you now believe that you know about the Mystery Schools in the lodge, how do you know that what you've learned while you've became a CAJI member...how do you know that that is true?

[WM]: Well, because I can verify for myself. I can get up and check the facts, and look and look again to verify what is going on about the Mystery Schools. But for what the Masons claim to be, they have absolutely no proof or evidence, or even works of their own hand, to prove that they are actually involved in charity work.

[WC]: Now, when you began to study, you were studying actually from two sources. You were studying the Mystery Religion in the lodge, actually, and you were studying what you were learning from the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence in trying to rectify the two, or bring the two together and make it fit. When did you finally decide that what you were learning in the lodge was really a deception?

[WM]: The absolute clincher for me, what absolutely decided for me to become without a shadow of a doubt, and yes, I had my suspicions since I had very first become a member...You don't take blood oaths kneeling before an altar swearing yourself to secrecy for all time without being...without the group you're becoming a member of being suspect.

[WC]: But, you did take these blood oaths?

[WM]: Yes sir, I took all of them and there were many.

[WC]: And so by the time you reach the degree level that you are at now, you've taken approximately how many oaths?

[WM]: I don't even recollect. I know that there were over two dozen oaths before you could even become a Master Mason in a blue lodge of Freemasonry, which is a bit like primary school for Freemasons. The blue lodge is where they are brought in as new members from off the street, and most men who are involved in Masonry, for their lifetimes consider the blue lodge to be the heart and soul of Masonry because that is where it all begins, and that is where it all grows from.

[WC]: But isn't it true that many Masons never advance beyond the third degree and remain in the blue lodge forever?

[WM]: That is absolutely true, whether or not as they...they do not choose to go forth, or whether of not they're...whether they're totally unaware there is anywhere to go, is up to personally the Mason that's involved, but many of them stay right where they're at, and seem to be content with what they have.

[WC]: So these Master Masons, who claim that they know everything about Freemasonry, and that they've been a Master Mason for twenty years...do they really know anything?

[WM]: They know absolutely nothing. They have been completely deceived from the very first day they entered the lodge. They have been lied to regularly about the nature of The Craft, the work of The Craft, and the charity of The Craft. My own lodge, that I'm a member of, considers its charity work for the entire last year to be a donation of $100, which is a little more than the dues yearly for three members. They gave $100 to a needy family and through these very, very shallow, superficial acts, they consider themselves to be the greatest charity...charity and brotherhood organizations that is ever to walk on the face of the earth.

[WC]: A recent thorough investigation of the Shriners,[132] who have literally made their reputation upon the fact that they contribute tremendous amounts of money to charity, but the investigation disclosed that of all the money they take in, less than 3% actually goes to any charity. Were you aware of that?

[WM]: (laughs) No, actually I was not. I'm not a member of the Shrine, but I have been exposed to some of their numbers. I was hoping that it would at least a little bit higher than that, because (laughs) that says bad things about the Masons who are members of the Shrine. And as most people know, the Shrine is probably one of the largest "charity organizations" that there is...

[WC]: And one of the richest. But most of the money seems to go back into the lodge, or to the members, or to their retirement funds, or to the payment of the lodge officers. And this is something people don't realize, that the lodge officers are paid and they have a retirement fund set aside for them. Is that true?

[WM]: Yes, that is true. Now, this doesn't apply directly to all officers in the lodge. I, myself, am an officer of the lodge that I was indoctrinated into...duly elected member. They operate in that kind of manner with elected officials that serve one-year terms. But there is an exception to this rule, and that is the Secretary and the Treasurer. And the Secretary keeps the books and the Treasurer keeps the money, and (laughs) that points, that points a very big finger as to where the true power in every lodge lies. Because, these, these two gentlemen who held these gentlemen who held these offices, usually hold them for years and years and years.

[WC]: And they're not elected, and they're not accountable, is that correct?

[WM]: They are totally unaccountable. They...the Treasurer will give one budget report at a certain time during the year, and I listen to this report not two months ago, and if an account in the business world attempted to give such a superfluous report to his boss, he would be fired on the spot.

[WC]: (laughs) Now, just so our listening audience realizes that you're not just some yahoo who walked in off the street and went through the first degree, and are now on a radio program trying to tell them you know something about Freemasonry. What is the level of your status, or your degree or how high have you have progressed through the initiatory levels?

[WM]: It's not exactly something that any thinking individual would like to brag about, but I have shot like a rocket up the ranks of Freemasonry. Much like in America today, the Masons like to keep their members busy, busy, busy. They don't want to give them time to think about what they're doing, and they don't want to give them time to think about where they're going. They do this by ritual. All of Freemasonry is tied up in ritual, and you must memorize this ritual, and it is very, very extensive. Each office has its own, whole...whole slew of ritual to remember. But I worked hard, I've got a good memory, I rose through the ranks and am now a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, Southern Jurisdiction, United States of America.

[WC]: And this is the same branch of Freemasonry that Albert Pike belonged to that created the Ku Klux Klan, the B'nai

---

[132] The Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine, commonly known as Shriners and abbreviated A.A.O.N.M.S., established in 1870 is an appendant body to Freemasonry, based in the United States. The organization is best-known for the Shriners Hospitals for Children (this is a network of pediatric non-profit hospitals across North America that provide specialty care at no charge to the patients and their families) they administer and the red fezzes that members wear.

B'rith and the branch off the B'nai B'rith, called the ADL or Anti-Defamation League.[133] Is that correct?

[WM]: Absolutely true. Albert Pike is considered to be a demigod among Freemasons, and actually a source of light all on his own. He took the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, which did exist for some time before him. He took it after the civil war and turned it into what is today. He incorporated much of the pagan symbology into the degrees that are still used in practice today. He...his name is revered. I've seen a bigger than life-sized bust of complete bronze of Albert Pike that was created for $25,000. Some of that money was mine, by the way. They treat him next to Godhood in the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

[WC]: Were you aware that Albert Pike was in constant communication and in concert with Giuseppe Mazzini in creating--not only creating, but Albert Pike at one time was the Sovereign Grand Commander of all Freemasonry in the world, and operated in concert with Giuseppe Mazzini in control of what we now know is...the world body known as the Illuminati?

[WM]: The name Mazzini is familiar to me, and I have come across a connection to the Illuminati in my research, but no, I was not personally aware, and this comes as no surprise. Because, with the exception of my own personal research, most of my information comes from the archives of the lodges I have participated and visited, or from Freemasons themselves. And all information is questionable at best. I never once, with the exception of one word, have I heard any reference to the Illuminati, yet my own research points exactly in their direction for the true source of the Mason's power and the reason for their concealment. But no, I did not know about Mazzini

[WC]: Do the members of the lodge consider themselves to be illumined?

[WM]: All of them do, without even knowing the definition of the term, the true definition of the term, they consider themselves illuminated. They go around...they have that secret little smile and they generally talk--no, not generally, they *always* talk down about most of the other people in the world. I've even heard grown men refer to other fellow Americans, brothers, as "profane," simply because they have advanced through the ritual of Freemasonry.

[WC]: I remember a friend of mine who was a young man, who was not a member of the Lodge but his father was. And he had a friend who belonged to another family who was not a member of the lodge, but owned a small business in town. And his small business was being destroyed by the members of the lodge, simply because he was not a Freemason. And the business was going to members, or lodge brothers. And he asked his father why his friend's family was literally being destroyed by his father and others who profess to be members of a fraternal organization, existing for the “benefit” of the community, and his father told him--and I'll never forget this because it literally crushed my friend--his father told him this: “If you are not one of us, you are nothing”. Is this generally true? Is this the way Freemasons generally think about people who do not belong to their organization?

[WM]: I have personally seen Masonry interfere with family ties before. And yes, this is just how they look at the world. They consider the world to be profane, unilluminated, and this just goes hand in hand with the general attitude that is conveyed by all Masons; that they are on the road to their own form of godhood, and this manifests itself in severe racism. For all the people out there that may not be too familiar with Masons or Masonry and this especially goes for members of minority groups who have often and usually continue to be excluded from Freemasonry, and especially for women, I'm here to tell you that you are not welcome in the lodge. You never will be and you have never have been welcome in the lodge. This especially goes for blacks, in spite of the Prince Hall Masonry, which is the biggest joke and the biggest scam and the biggest insult to any single race I've ever seen. And especially for women; they just...they do not want you and they consider you totally ineligible to unable to understand what they do.

[WC]: You told me something the other night that I found just incredible. You said that you could go to any Prince Hall lodge in any black community and be...the doors would be open to you and you would be welcome, but if they tried to...if one of those members or brothers of the lodge of the Prince Hall lodge came to your lodge and tried to come in and participate in these ceremonies, or whatever you call them...what would happen?

---

[133] See The Ugly Truth about the ADL

[WM]: (laughs) It wouldn't happen. It just simply wouldn't happen. I, as a Caucasian Freemasonry, can visit any Prince Hall lodge in the country and as far as I know in the world. I can also visit any lodge, period, across the world. I have been told through my initiation that I am welcome in any lodge, but this just does not apply to blacks, no matter that--even if the ritual they go through, and I do not know this for certain but I know it's similar, but even if the ritual were exact, even if the same form of "illumination" that they underwent was exact, they could not ever, and I sit in a lodge with Caucasian Freemasons. I have never seen a black Freemason sit in a lodge among Caucasians, and I don't think I will. Equal opportunity and affirmative action laws are just completely ignored, and considered frivolous and a joke by all Freemasons.

[WC]: So, the New World Order that they are bringing into being is going to be racist?

[WM]: Entirely. It has an Aryan background, and that is where it comes from.

[WC]: And that's been borne out by our research. Why then would the black community form their own lodges and support the bringing about a New World Order that is going to relegate them back into slavery? And I might add along with the rest of us who don't belong to this religion, and it is a religion. Why would they participate in something like that?

[WM]: Well, as you've told me yourself, and most people will understand this, the world loves a mystery. And you can control the masses by dangling a secret like a carrot in front of their nose, and promising them the answer to that secret if they just merely do what they say and work for you. This, together with man's own fallible, entirely fallible human nature, and the selfishness of man, and the ego of man, they want to be something. They want to be better than, than the people around them that they see. And since they have been told straight out that they will never advance to the ranks of Caucasian Freemasons, they have settled for just being better than their own people, and excluding other Blacks from joining their own lodge.

[WC]: So, one of the holds that Freemasonry has over people is that ordinary people whether they be Black, White, Oriental, Hispanic doesn't matter, they want to be part of the elect. Is that true?

[WM]: Exactly, that they want to join the elite. They like to look down on their fellow man.

[WC]: Okay, now, if nobody coerced you, if nobody proselytized you, how did you get into the lodge?

[WM]: I went to the door and I knocked on it.

(Audio clip: a woman knocks on a door and is attacked by a monster)

It's time for our break, folks. Don't go away, I'll be right back after this very short pause.

[William Cooper advertises for Swiss America Trading]

(Interlude music: The Great Pretender)[134]

[WC]: We're back in the studio, folks, with William Morgan, a CAJI member who has infiltrated the lodge. Now, this man is no dummy. You have to understand, within two years he is risen from Entered Apprentice to 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite of the Southern Jurisdiction. Now, that's quite a distinction in the lodge isn't it?

---

[134] Performed by The Platters and released as a single on November 3, 1955.

[WM]: Well, yeah it can be considered as such. It does get a measure of respect from those who never advance past the 3rd degree of Master Mason.

[WC]: And what is the next step?

[WM]: After the 32nd degree there is publicly known only one more degree of Freemasonry and that is the 33rd degree.

[WC]: And you said "publicly known", does that mean that there's more?

[WM]: I suspect that there is... that there really is more.

[WC]: Do you know that for sure?

[WM]: No, I do not. I do not know it for sure. I've heard...there's a man by the name of Reverend Jim Shaw who was a 33rd--well, he actually still is by a Masonic law--who still is a 33rd degree Freemason, and when he became a 33rd degree he knew another Mason who was going through the same ritual who said he was going to be even further because he had professed a support for the Luciferian doctrine that they preach.

[WC]: So what you have just said, this is coming from your mouth, a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite, you have just said...I didn't prompt you, I didn't ask you the question, in fact you just surprised me because I was going to lead up to this. But you just said the Luciferian doctrine. Can you explain that?

[WM]: I can explain that, absolutely. Masons believe in light. It is a priority part of their entire ritual. Now, light to a Mason symbolizes knowledge and also intellect. And if you've paid attention to the Mystery School broadcasts, you know who the patron god of intellect is: it is Lucifer, and in fact his very name means the ferre or the Bearer of Light. "luc-" is Latin for light, and "-fer" for ferre. This is the true god of Freemasonry and this is also, to my great shame, the god that I knelt at the altar before and swore my blood oath to.

[WC]: But when you did this, were you aware you were swearing your blood oath to Lucifer and not to the God of the Christian Bible?

[WM]: Absolutely not. Everything about Masonry says and publicly said that their god is the same god as any god, the god of Hindus, the god of Arab [sic], the God of Christians, but it's just not so. It's a lie and it's a scam, and all you do is study paganism, nature worship and the Mystery Religion of Babylon to see who that real god is.

[WC]: So, you have done this study on your own, and you've checked out the publications and the doctrines and the symbology within your own lodge and you have arrived at the conclusion that the god of Freemasonry is who?

[WM]: The god of Freemasonry is Lucifer, who is actually Satan, cast from Heaven for one specific reason and that is because he, like many other Masons, sought to attain godhood in his own time.

[WC]: And isn't that really the goal of Freemasonry; by their works, they will become god?

[WM]: Exactly, it is a matter of works; salvation has nothing to do with it. There is no repentance of sin and in their minds, mankind was never separated from God, but is able to be an equal to or superior to God.

[WC]: Now mind you folks, I sincerely believe in the Constitution of the United States of America. This is not a religious program, irregardless [sic] of what you may think you are hearing, and I'm not making judgment on any of this whatsoever. I believe that anyone has the right under our Constitution to worship at any altar that they wish to worship at. I do not agree with this Luciferian doctrine. I do not worship at that altar. The only thing that bothers me in the performance of their religion is that they are attempting to control and manipulate the rest of us into a one-world totalitarian socialist government with a one-world religion that we will all have to bow down to, with Lucifer or Satan as the head of the religion--actually, incarnated in a human body, they intend to install Lucifer upon the throne of the world. Have you found any credence for this?

[WM]: I found great credence for this, and the best place to go to confirm this is just pick up the book, *Morals*...pick up the book *Morals and Dogma* by Albert Pike. He, himself, will state: number one, that Masonry is a religion, and number two, that Lucifer is involved. That is all I needed to confirm my suspicions, and it should be all that is needed to confirm the suspicions of all the other Masons that are out there wandering in darkness, thinking that they are living in illumination.

[WC]: So most Freemasons, do they really believe that Freemasonry is a Christian organization?

[WM]: No, no, they really don't. They may themselves be Christians and most in America are, but it is a strict rule and law of the lodge, written their own constitutions, that no discussions or debates concerning religion or politics ever be brought into the lodge. They do not want your Christianity broadcast, they do not want it mentioned at all. In fact I had a personal friend of mine, who was a police officer in the lodge of which I'm a member, and when he was asked in whom he put his trust, he said, "The Lord Jesus Christ," and from that day forward, even though he's a law enforcement officer and vitally important to the New World Order, he has been ostracized, and he has been left out of many of the activities that got me to where I am in the Craft today. And I do not think that he will even be allowed to progress any farther because of that.

[WC]: In fact, I think you told me the other night, that that was the first time that you ever heard the name of Jesus Christ mentioned in that lodge ever and is that true?

[WM]: (laughs) Absolutely, or any other Lodge or any Masonic publication, or any writing, or even any words out of another Freemason's mouth. It is just not part of their vocabulary. In fact, I have very firm beliefs that the name itself brings actual pain to their ears.

[WC]: Now, we know that the lodge will welcome anyone who attends any church, synagogue, temple, cathedral, that belongs to any religion whatsoever, but we know that Freemasonry is a religion because we've studied it and we have people like you who are a Freemason at a very high degree and have confirmed it, and their own writing confirms it. Albert Pike has stated in writing in his book, *Morals and Dogma*, and in others of his writings, I might add. And Manly P. Hall has confirmed that. So, if Freemasonry is a religion, yet they accept members, people who go to other churches in the community and many different religions that have doctrines that don't agree at all, how can they rectify – I mean, how can you explain this? How can this be?

[WM]: It just is, and any Mason that holds that his religious convictions dear and becomes a member of the lodge, is in direct conflict with his own beliefs and his own, his own faith. The two cannot go together, have never been able to go together, and I don't think they ever will be. And I like to ask *all* of my...well, I'd like to tell all my brothers in the Lodges out there: how can you possibly believe that Freemasonry is not a religion? You meet in a Masonic temple, you knelt at a Masonic altar with the Holy Bible, or in outer countries a different holy book, Qur'an or many other texts, you knelt there and swore your blood oaths in the name of a deity, and quiet respect is demanded in any and all lodges all over the world, just like in any temple. You have been living a lie and if you don't wake up pretty soon, the New World Order will turn around at eat your lunch for you.

[WC]: Isn't it a fact that they believe they are going to be an integral part of this New World Order, however, most of them will not be?

[WM]: This is the great joke. This is the punchline to the whole affair. They believe and see themselves as the priests and the priesthood of the New World Order. They think that when all things start falling apart, that they are going to be the ones that rise up Phoenix-like out of the ashes, bring the world together and deliver them into the hands of Lucifer. Like I said, they consider themselves builders, and what they're building is the New World Order, and it's being erected like a prison around us even as we speak. And the capstone, and you ought to look at the great seal of the United States to get a feel for this, the capstone of the New World Order of the building that they are creating is actually Lucifer himself.

[WC]: And isn't that the symbol of Lucifer, the all-seeing Eye above the pyramid, the symbol of light? It actually began as the symbol of the sun, which was the symbol of the light, which was the symbol for Lucifer, and over the years it evolved into an eye. Christians are told that is the eye of God, but nobody ever bothers to ask, “Which god, or who?”

[WM]: (laughs) Right.

[WC]: What's the name of this god? And, you know, if a Muslim were to ask in the Middle East, they would say it's the eye of God, and they would think it's the eye of Allah. And in the Far East, somebody might think it was the eye of Buddha, but this is never explained. In effect, it really began representing the sun, it became the eye; the sun has always been the representation of wisdom or the intellect, or knowledge, which is all the Luciferian doctrine. It is the symbol for the light, Lucifer the fallen angel, the Luciferian philosophy.

[WM]: These are, these are facts. This is just the way it is. I'm holding in my hand at this very moment, an official Masonic medallion that is handed out to many Masons as a gift, especially at Entered Apprentice. At the very top, and taking up the main position in this medallion, is the all-seeing eye, and this eye is, just as Bill Cooper has said, a combination of the eye of “god” and I stress that quote-unquote more than the other. And also it is the sun, it is a symbol of sun worship. The eye that I'm seeing, the lashes on the eye, on this medallion that I am holding, are actually the rays of the sun coming down to illuminate the fellow Masons. It is, it is more than just a religion, and as Albert Pike has professed, it is the oldest known religion. It is a pagan religion of sun worship, it is nature worship. And it is incredible dangerous to free loving people everywhere.

[WC]: You wanted to read something from a book that you have there. This is a book that I highly recommend--that everybody in the listening audience must read this book. You *must* read this book. You can find it at most religious bookstores, Christian or otherwise, they usually stock it. It's called *The Godmakers*. *The Godmakers*, by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt, and let me see who the publishers are...Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon 97402. That's Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon 97402. Again, the name of the book is *The Godmakers*, by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt. This book will truly open your eyes. You wanted to read something from that book?

[WM]: Yes, sir, I was reading this last night and it just stopped me in my tracks. I'm on page 60 of *The Godmakers* and the chapter, entitled *The Mormon Dilemma*, and this book is about the Mormons and, once you begin reading, you'll see through the Mystery Schools just how close Freemasonry and Mormonism actually is. The subtitle of this part is called, *The Pagan Connection*, and again, I'll read it quickly:

“As C.S. Lewis and a number of other experts have concluded, there are only two religions in the world: Christianity and Hinduism (paganism). One teaches that we are separated from the one true God by sin, and that God became a man to die for our sins. The other declared that men are not separated from God, but that each person has within himself the power to overcome evil and thus to become God [or at least a god with a small 'g']. Hinduism (paganism) embraces and absorbs everything except biblical Christianity, which is its own genuine rival. Though it uses Christian language to disguise its paganism [just as many Masonic lodges do], Mormonism is less Christian than it is Hindu. The basic dilemma faced by every Mormon is the direct result of its Hindu roots. In the *Bhagwad Gita*, Krishna declares that he comes forth to save the righteous and to condemn the sinner. This is exactly the opposite for the biblical Christ, who saves sinners. The great complaint of paganism and all occult secret societies [of which I am presently a member] is that where as one must be worthy to join them, Christianity deliberately embraces the unworthy." And to prove my worthiness to join the lodge, I had to ask them to become a member. At the time that I joined, it was against the constitution's bylaw--the constitution of Freemasonry, I must stress--for any Mason to come to me, a profane, and ask me to join.”

[WC]: And, in effect, actually, isn't the Mormon church just another branch of the old Mystery Religion of Babylon?

[WM]: It can be nothing else. They have three degrees. They have ritual they adhere to. They're sworn to secrecy with blood oaths inside of a temple. They have a structural hierarchy that is in the structure of pyramid, and all those that are initiated into this temple ritual seek nothing else but to climb the pyramid. The reward, the carrot that is dangled in front of their nose to keep them working hard, hard, hard, is that they will experience and attain godhood for themselves.

[WC]: And many of the rituals that are practiced in the temple are the exact same rituals that are practiced in the Masonic temple.

[WM]: I cannot personally confirm this, but the research that I am involved in at this time supports this – and also the research of experts who are far better and far more along in their work than I am – totally supports this claim. And you should verify it for yourself.

[WC]: Absolutely. You know, the warning we always give them on this show...don't believe anything you hear on this show, or any other show, or from the President, Dan Rather, anyone until you check it out for yourself. One thing that I also wanted to mention is that we have nothing against anyone. We have nothing against people who want to worship in the Mormon religion, or the Catholic religion, or go to a temple and worship Buddha We believe in the Constitution, but we also believe that everyone should know what they're getting into. We also believe that, if these people are involved in subverting the freedoms of others and bringing about a one-world totalitarian socialist government, which we have confirmed that they are, then it is our business and our duty to stop them.

[WM]: Bingo, Bill, and hit upon something that is a catch-22 for all Masons. Part of the blood oath says that you can never—and you must swear this on penalty of very painful and bloody death—that you will never, ever release any of the secrets of Masonry to a member of the profane, to somebody out there in the big world. But, when you become a Mason, and as I did, I always ask questions wherever I go. I ask some hard questions and I got nothing. There were no answers forthcoming. They looked me straight in the eye and I said, “I can't tell you.”

[WC]: How do you rectify what you're doing on this show, with the oaths that you took saying that you can't do this?

[WM]: Well, we've discussed this, and I have had some personal dilemmas that I had to face, but I genuinely believe that when they do not tell me the whole truth about what I'm getting into...in fact, when they deliberately mislead me and deceive me about what I'm getting into, that that must totally invalidate the contract, or the oath, which I have swore. It just cannot be any other way. They have lied, and I have been honest and I have been forthcoming to them, but they have not returned it as such.

[WC]: And I found myself in the same position, folks, because when I was in the military, and specifically with the Office of Naval Intelligence, I had to sign security oaths, saying that I would never talk about anything that I was involved with. But later, when I began to realize that I was going to have to, I also understood that the only things that I would talk about were those things that the intelligence community, the military, those in government, were doing, were doing to destroy the sovereignty of the United States of America, the Constitution, the Bill of Rights, and to bring about, really, a traitorous new government, the New World Order, and that I was not going to be involved in any traitorous activity, and my first and only loyalty was to the Constitution and the Bill of Rights of the United States, and not to some phony manipulation called a "security oath," which many people are trapped under, thinking that they cannot talk about many of the things they participated in that are actually destroying this nation, destroying the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. These people are traitors, and I could not be a traitor, nor will I ever be. What do you feel about this New World Order that's coming?

[WM]: It makes me want to vomit. You're absolutely right; they are traitors. They have turned their backs on their people, they have turned their backs on their country, they have turned their backs on their family. They're living a lie, and it's not going to turn out exactly how they think. They are like the cops. The police officers in America that are deliberately destroying the Constitution and treating their own people as an enemy. They can't be a cop forever, neither can you be a practicing Mason forever. One day that protection that you cherish so much must end. And when it does, it will turn around and it will gobble you up, like it's gobbling up so many people right now.

[WC]: Well, not only that, but many Americans are waking up. The patriots in this country, the people who really understand and love the Constitution and the Bill of Rights are going to have an awful lot to say about what's happening, and of course there are other people like me, like you. We have the largest civilian intelligence gathering organization in the world operating full-time, breaking this secrecy down, bringing together the truth.

And now, we're running out of time for another episode of Hour of the Time, folks [sic]. I want you to remember: we love you and we care about you or we wouldn't be doing this. Good night, God bless you, and remember this:

(Outro music: Only You (And You Alone))[135]

---

[135] Performed by The Platters and composed by Buck Ram and Ande Rand in 1955.

Hour 22: William Morgan Interview, Part II (aried May 17th, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

[William Cooper begins commercial for Swiss America Trading]

(Commercial continues): You know, you people out there don't realize what kind of controversy this program stirs up. You don't hear the attempts to discredit this program and try to get our sponsors to abandon us. People have called Craig Smith at Swiss America Trading. They have tried to get them to abandon this program because of the information that we have disclosed, and some of the names of those people would amaze you. Would absolutely amaze you and maybe, at some later date, we might decide to disclose that. But right now, we're not going to. The radio stations that broadcast this program also received phone calls and letters, usually anonymous, with the end of trying to make them drop us. Swiss America Trading has stuck by us this whole time. So has WWCR and WRNO, because all of these people understand the meaning of the information that this program puts out to the world. And they know how important it is that you receive this information.

Now, I've got to tell ya, we received requests to be sponsored by many other people, products, companies, and we turned them all down. One reason is because some of them wanted to sponsor us with the intention of restricting what we say. Others, we didn't believe in those products or those people or those companies, and could not (laughs) in good conscience recommend them to anyone. But Swiss America Trading is different...

(Commercial finishes)

Tonight's episode: part two of the interview with William Morgan, CAJI member. We have infiltrated the lodge, folks. Hear it yourself from the lips of a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite of the Southern Jurisdiction.

(opening music: I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For, live performance by U2, taken from the film Rattle and Hum?)[136]

Well, as you probably already know, folks, we only use the very best music on this program, the Hour of the Time. That was U2 and *I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For.* You know, many of you write and ask why I let the music go on through the whole selection instead of fading it out and then bringing in the program. And I do that, folks, out of sincere admiration and respect for the talent and the performance of the writer of the music, the lyrics, and, of course, those who perform. I love music, if you haven't guessed that already.

Tonight is part two of our interview with William Morgan, and many of you are wondering if that's his real name. No, it is not. We protect CAJI members. We never tell anyone how many CAJI members we have, we're they're at, what their names are, anything. None of that information is given out, not even to other CAJI members. Now, we use the code name, or the pseudonym, of William Morgan, simply because the name William Morgan is significant in the past of the (laughs) secret society called Freemasonry. William Morgan was murdered by Freemasons after having revealed, printed in a book, some of the secrets of the lodge, and this was done back in the 1800s. Of course, the fraternity of Freemasons denies they murdered William Morgan. However, their version differs significantly from the official version and from the proof and the evidence that we have spent many, many hundreds of man-hours digging up, and one of these nights we're going to do a program just entirely on the murder of William Morgan.

[William Cooper (WC)]: Will, welcome back to the Hour of the Time.

[William Morgan (WM)]: Thank you, Bill. It's a pleasure to be here, and I'm really proud and happy to be here, and doing what I'm doing.

[WC]: You know, I don't think a lot of people realize that you're risking your life by doing this. The oaths that you have taken, albeit, because they were fraudulent. You thought that you were making an oath to the God of the Bible and, in fact, you were making an oath to Lucifer, which nullifies those oaths. But they still, the Brotherhood, the Order, the Illuminati, the Freemasons, could still carry out the threat of those oaths, which is murder, is that not correct?

---

[136]

[WM]: Absolutely correct. No matter what I may personally feel about it, or what common law or the actual law may view about those oaths [I've] taken, the Masons that are involved consider them to be absolutely applicable to any transgression. And they have been enforced, and the bloody punishments that are part of the oaths have happened to Masons before, and they will happen again, I'm sure.

[WC]: Now, you are what degree? Let's get that out to the people in case we have some new listeners tonight. What degree are you?

[WM]: I am a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite of the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States.

[WC]: And what is the official title of that degree?

[WM]: The official title is "The Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret," and that is not only the title of the degree, it's also the title of the ritual that the degree is conferred to. And just to show you how important that is, after going through the ritual and getting the degree conferred upon me, I could not remember anything sublime or, even remember what the secret was that they told me. (laughs)

[WC]: Why is it that you couldn't remember the secrets of the degree?

[WM]: Well, um, that's a bit of a long story and I won't go entirely into it, but it started off the day I was conferred began at six o'clock in the morning, and they just rush through it. There's no memory work to do as in the Blue Lodge, where a person has to memorize the ritual and then give it back. You just sit there and received, in an audience-like capacity. And when it came to swearing the oath, you merely held up your hand and said, "I do." You also did take that oath on kneeling on one knee, as you did in the blue lodge.

[WC]: Now, we talked yesterday after we aired the…after we recorded the last program that aired, I believe Friday on WRNO. And this will air Monday on WRNO. It will air at a different date on WWCR. So, if you're listening on WWCR, don't let these dates confuse you. But we talked and I asked you specifically if there was a part of Freemasonry where you raised your arm to the square, and what was your reply?

[WM]: Yes, there is a part where you raise your arm to the square. The first time I remember doing that action was in the second degree when it was conferred upon me. You raise your right hand as if you're swearing in...actually, it's exactly the same position as if you were swearing in a court of law. Your left hand is placed flatly upon the Holy Bible, or whatever holy text that depend [sic] on the lodge you're in, and your right hand is held at a right angle with the arm extended. And they...an actual square, like an engineer square, is held around the elbow of the arm. That's...you're swearing in a square within a square, so to speak, as the ritual says.

[WC]: Now, if a Freemason were speaking in front of a group of what Masons call "the profane," would it be fair to state that, if the speaker stated something about when he raised his arm to the square, that this could be a recognition signal to notify other Freemasons in the audience that was indeed a Freemason?

[WM]: Knowing what I know, I could hardly see it as anything else. There's no square involved in any other oath swearing ceremony that I ever heard of, ever...not in a court of law, only a square is involved in Masonry. It's one of the, uh, it's one of the primary tools that are symbolically referred to in all the ritual of the Blue Lodge.

[WC]: Now, many of you heard this, this statement made by someone that you all listened to, and I want you to make that connection for yourselves. If you can't make that connection for yourself, then there's no need telling you any more about it anyway. Let's get into some of the ceremonies. How does this start? It begins in the Blue Lodge with the first degree of Entered Apprentice, and it goes up, and you've actually traversed thirty-two degrees of initiation. Are there side roads off of this?

[WM]: Um, yeah...well, it's a bit difficult. The Blue Lodge is where everything begins, and the Blue Lodge where a Mason is initiated at is called the mother lodge from that time after in specific reference to him personally. Now, once you get passed the third degree and become a Master Mason in your Blue Lodge, you are able to hold an officer, or hold a chair as an officer inside the lodge, and you can spend up to ten years going through the chairs and become an officer. But after that, you can either go to the Scottish Rite or the Yorkish Rite. There's a fork in the road of Freemasonry, and the Scottish Rite is by far the most popular and, undoubtedly, the most powerful.

[WC]: Now, the York Rite is...has seven degrees, is that true?

[WM]: True, the highest of which being the Knight Templar degree. For all those people out there who think that the Knights Templar is no way associated with Masons, you're dead wrong and you haven't done your homework.

[WC]: In fact, the Knights Templar, when they first began as an organization on the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, were not an order commissioned or ordained or approved or even recognized by any church, much less the Catholic church, but were, in fact, an order of the Mysteries. They began with seven degrees, and the seventh degree was the highest degree. And later, as they added degrees, when the Knights Templar were persecuted and, in fact, many of them were put to death, others were driven into hiding in other countries, and, in some other countries, they just changed their names and continued the order. And they eventually reached a number of degrees which was thirty-three. And I took that right out of a very old textbook on the secret societies, which we'll talk about in a later program, and we'll get into that. But what is the significance that you've been told of the system of degrees? Why do you have to go through this?

[WM]: It's considered a road, it's considered a road to "illumination." I really believe that it's more a system of control and self-government. Lodges are pretty unique in America, in that they are self-sustaining and self-governing, even with their own bit of enforcement. All lodges have been granted a charter from a Grand Lodge, and every Grand Lodge in this country has been granted a charter from the United States government to operate on its own and enforce its own laws and constitutions. If a police officer or any law enforcement officer walks into a lodge while in session, not only does he not have arrest power, but that lodge immediately closes.

[WC]: Now, this is something the American people don't know about. Now, if these are lodges, they're in states, they have nothing to do with the federal government, how can they receive a charter from the federal government saying that they're under their own laws, and how it could be the law enforcement officer would not have the authority to arrest, or any of his other authorized duties, in a Freemasonic lodge?

[WM]: It beats the hell out of me, Bill. It's really a bit of a contradiction in terms. You have a government that is actually gone out and given government-type status to a completely and secret [sic], and I think subversive, organization right under its own nose. A similar thing can be seen in the Mormon church and in other secret societies that are not nearly so famous as Freemasonry itself. The government has, by granting this charter, I believe undermined its own stability as a functioning organization.

[WC]: Well, tell us about this charter. Tell us again what you said before. I don't want anyone to miss this because it's very important. It shows how a secret government can be formed, it tell us that these members of these secret societies literally have diplomatic immunity and can get away with whatever they want to get away with. Not only that, but they have their members sitting in the most powerful posts, both within society on local levels and local cities, local counties and state governments, in the higher echelons of the military, and they permeate all the positions of control within the bureaucracy of the federal government. So tell us what this charter is for?

[WM]: OK, it is a...it's a document, put out by the federal government, and it can be any government in the world. To my knowledge, every government in the world that [granted?] has lodges in it, has granted a sovereign charter to the Grand Lodges under its jurisdiction. I really haven't done enough research to speak at length on the nature of the charter, or what it exactly implies universally for Freemasonry, but I do know for a fact that a law enforcement officer--and we have many law enforcement officers in our lodge, from state troopers to policemen to military policemen--that they're not cops when they walked into a lodge. They leave their power, their badges and their guns outside, and they do so willingly. That's a pretty good example, but I think the best example comes from the Knights of Malta, and here's another one for you guys out there that haven't done your homework. I'm reading from the glossary of a book, entitled *Freemasonry: A Celebration of the Craft*, which is put out by the Craft itself, and it defines Knights of Malta as a Christian, Masonic degree, based upon the medieval Knights Hospitallers, emphasizing the Christian values, the Christian virtues. (laughs) You can leave the Christian out of it if you'd like, but what's interesting about the Knights of Malta is they actually do have diplomatic immunity as an organization. They can bring goods in and out of this country without going through customs, and they cannot be arrested or they cannot be detained or charged with any crime by any law enforcement officer in the country. They are...they're above sovereign. As far as I know, they're above most government officials in the land.

[WC]: That's a fact, and they actually carry diplomatic passports. I know several people personally who are members of the Knights, the Sovereign Order of the Military Knights of Malta, and they carry diplomatic passports and are...they began as citizens of the United States of America. Now, what happens when a police officer, and most police officers, we have discovered, or at least the ones who make law enforcement a career, and most, if not all, judges sitting upon benches in this country are Freemasons. What happens when you're speeding down a highway and you're stopped by a law enforcement officer...what happens when he sees the Masonic emblem on your windshield?

[WM]: Usually what you have is a direct turnaround in attitude. I, myself, am a young man. I get hassled by cops a little bit. It seems like they always cop an attitude when they pulled me over. But when they see the Masonic square and compass on my car, and most importantly, when I flip out my dues paying card, a card that all dues paying Masons carry, the police officer...well, let me just put it this way, I've never once got a speeding ticket or a traffic ticket or have even been harassed in any way when they have known that I am a Mason. It just has not happened. That is my personal experience.

[WC]: So the justice system in this country doesn't really work, and Freemasons are, in effect, exempt from the laws that the rest of us are supposed to follow, is that true?

[WM]: (laughs) Yeah, that could be probably construed as accurate, Bill, although I disagree...it does work, it just doesn't work the way most people think it works (laughs). It works for them and with them and around them, and it works on the rest of you.

[WC]: That's right. Now, what happens when a Freemason goes into court against someone who is not a Freemason, and the judge is a Freemason?

[WM]: OK, well, you have a very subtle interaction that goes on. All Masons are taught secret signs and secret words and secret phrases by...and this is some of the most...this is what they don't want revealed more than anything else. You can stand in a particular position, you can hold your arms in a particular position, you can speak certain words, the "widow's son", "traveling man", key phrases to let this judge know that you are a Mason. And you can almost guarantee the Mason are else he wouldn't be able to lock down a lasting career in the judiciary.

[WC]: That's correct, and that would explain why some people just don't seem to ever get prosecuted for anything, and others, who may commit the same crime or a much lesser offense seem to be inordinately punished, given such a heavy burden of punishment, while others who have done the same thing receive either nothing or a pat of the wrist.

[WM]: Well, brothers look out for each other. It's just the way the system works. It's a buddy system, it's a "you scratch my back, I scratch yours"...as a matter of fact, in the oath that a Mason swears, he swears that he will uphold and defend a Mason, a fellow Mason in any problem that he may encounter; treason and murder alone excepted, but they [left at their] election, which means even if a fellow Mason is a traitor to his country--we know that could never happen--(laughs) he's a traitor to his country, his brother Mason has his own choice whether he wants to turn him in or not. He is not obligated to do so and, obeying the laws of Masonry above the laws of the land, he's probably not going to even consider it.

[WC]: So, in other words, one way of infiltrated and controlling our society and our government, both on a local, state and national level, and the military, is for one of the Freemasons to get into a position where he can then appoint or hire Freemasons below him. When people come to apply for that job, who gets the job?

[WM]: That's self-explanatory, the Mason'll get the job every time. Another part of the oath is that you will look out for the interest of your brother Masons in whatever capacity they may be in. In fact, it could probably be construed that not giving the job to a Mason would bring serious repercussions if discovered inside the lodge. It may even be a violation of the oath.

[WC]: There you go, folks. All of you who have been telling me that I'm full of crap, and that I don't know what I'm talking about and that they haven't infiltrated and appointed their members below them and literally taken over all [levels] of society, both local, state, and federal and the military...you just heard it from the lips of a 32nd degree Freemason. That is exactly how they do it and that is exactly what has been done. You have to understand that, since this country was conceived and brought into reality, Freemasons have controlled it. And their goal, always, from the beginning, was to bring about a one-world totalitarian Socialist government. Our forefathers knew full well the foibles of human nature, and this country was described, in their own words, as the Great Experiment. And the experiment, folks, was to find out if we truly could be responsible, could rule ourselves, would not give in to the foibles of human nature and give our country and our individual freedoms and rights away. But they knew when they did it that that's exactly what would happen, because they were, they were probably the best at understanding human nature of anyone that I've ever read, and I have read all of their writings, letters and works, and the Federalist papers and everything else that they've done. And they knew full well that this people would give away what they built. And they knew that if we could be responsible, if we would not be apathetic, if we would not cave in to the desires of Socialism, to the weaknesses of human nature, that this would have been the New World Order. *We* have failed, not them. They gave us every chance, folks, so don't get mad at our forefathers. Is this...would you concur with what I just said?

[WM]: I couldn't argue with you and I wouldn't want to start an argument with you, Bill. I have heard high level Masons refer to the United States, in their writings and in person, as a "Mason nation," [that] is erected by them, if you look at the signers of the Declaration of Independence, if you look at the forefathers, you'll see who was involved at the very beginning of this thing. And I'm not saying that all our forefathers were bad or evil, they certainly are not. They created the greatest nation ever known to man. But some of them were Illuminati, and there's just no denying that. The course that they set us upon was, in the end, self-defeating for us.

[WC]: OK, folks, don't go away. We've got to take our break. I'm be right back with William Morgan after this very short pause.

[William Cooper begins commercial for Swiss America Trading]

(break music: Before You Accuse Me, written by Bo Diddley, performed by Creedence Clearwater Revival)

[WC]: Creedence Clearwater Revival. Before you accuse me, you better look at yourself. (laughs) Oh boy, does that apply to this program, you Freemasons out there. All members of all the secret societies that is subverting the Constitution of the United States, the Bill of Rights...I call them cockroaches, I don't know what the rest of you call them, but that's what they are. They claim to be looking for the light, but every time you turn the light on them, they scurry under the sink...run for cover. You know, it occurs to me that I need to tell you folks out there something. This young man on this program is a member of the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence, and there are literally hundreds of brave men and women all over this country and the world who are gathering information, bringing the truth out into the open. We are all working for freedom. It's the largest and most successful civilian intelligence gathering organization in the world. And our goal is freedom, to preserve freedom in this country, the United States, preserve the Constitution and the Bill of Rights because it's the last bastion, the last wall between us and freedom, and try to institute freedom in all of the rest of the world. That's our only purpose, our only purpose. We are in support of freedom for all peoples, all peoples everywhere. This young man on this show has risked his life to tell you what he's telling you tonight, and if his identity were ever to be discovered, he could be murdered by the secret societies that he is revealing. He is one of my heroes. Most of the people in CAJI who are helping us to do this, most of them are working in intense, secret and dangerous situations. We have people who have infiltrated Satanic organizations and are feeding us the information on their rituals and who they are and what they're all about. And the instant that they were to be discovered, they would be murdered. You don't seem to understand that this organization that I built, the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence, is vital, is vital to the freedom of the United States of America and to the world. The governmental intelligence agencies are in the control of the secret societies and are not working on our behalf and never have been, folks. I hope you understand that. Let's go back to Will. You've got something in front of you, and I believe it's a list of Freemasons throughout history that people would recognize their names, and if they don't readily recognize their names, they could go to any reference book and find these names and their biographies in any library. Would you like to tell our listening audience who some of these people are?

[WM]: Yeah, there's some names you'll really recognize, here. But before I do, let me thank you, Bill Cooper, for reminding me that my *brothers* might murder me just for telling the truth. Um, here's one: Colonel Buzz Aldrin, Simon Bonner(?), Omar Bradley, Edmund Burke, Richard Byrd, Kit Carson, Walter Chrysler, "Buffalo Bill" Cody, Ty Cobb, Winston Churchill, the list just goes on and on...Gordon Cooper, Edwin Drake, Jack Dempsey, Cecil B. DeMille...

[WC]: You know, you mention Winston Churchill, and one of the things that the listening audience does not know is that not only was Winston Churchill was a Freemason, but so was Harry Truman, and so was Mr. [Joseph] Stalin. So, when they had their meeting at Yalta, here was [sic] three 33rd degree Freemasons deciding the fate of the world. And for all of you who couldn't figure out why they made the decisions that they made at Yalta that so screwed up the world, now you know. Please continue.

[WM]: (laughs) Thanks, Bill. Yeah, they should have just held that Yalta meeting in a lodge and been open about it. OK, here's some more for us: Duke Ellington, Henry Ford, Benjamin Franklin, Clark Gable, John Glenn, [inaudible], Richard Gatling, inventor of the Gatling gun, Samuel Gompers, Prince Hall, Manly Palmer [Hall]...oh yeah, Joseph Guillotine, who invented the Guillotine, who we'll be seeing that more later [sic]. Oh boy, (laughs) there's just simply not time...Edgar Hoover, Sam Houston...

[WC]: For those of you who did not understand his reference to "we'll be seeing more of the Guillotine later," when the New World Order actually succeeds in taking control of the world, executions will be public, and the secret societies believe in blood atonement. In other words, you can only atone for your wrongdoing by your works, or by the shedding of your blood, blood atonement. So, in these public executions, there will have to be the maximum amount of blood, public executions will be held as a object lesson to the rest of the population not to oppose the New World Order, for it is the most terrible, terrifying experience to see someone literally beheaded. It is intended to cow everyone else, and is, in fact, will be, in fact, a ritualistic sacrifice to the god of the secret societies who, we all now know, is Lucifer, also known as Satan.

[WM]: Yeah, you know, Bill, it just dawned on me just what a fun guy you really are! (laughs) Here's a short list of presidents of the United States who have been Masons: George Washington, James Monroe, Andrew Jackson, James Polk, James Buchanan, Andrew Johnson, James Garfield, William McKinley, Teddy Roosevelt, William Taft, Warren Harding, Franklin Roosevelt, Harry Truman, Lyndon Johnson, Gerald Ford, and I also know for a fact that George Bush is a Mason and that Ronald Reagan was made a Mason on sight. (laughs) Like I said, the list goes on and on, and these are not even a partial, partial, fraction of a percent of the famous Masons that have existed throughout history.

[WC]: Well, John Wayne was Mason, wasn't he?

[WM]: "The Duke." "The Duke" was a Freemason, absolutely true.

[WC]: And, you know, we're not in any way belittling the accomplishments or the contributions to society of any of these people. We just wanted to let you know that his covers all areas of society, all levels of society, all occupations, and that many famous people whom you all recognize have been...are members of these secret societies. Now, many of them are taken in as window-dressing; in other words, they don't really know what they are a part of. They're told that it's a fraternal organization existing for the good of the community, and of course, in any organization, if you can get famous celebrities to belong, it's a feather in your cap because the public, for some reason, thinks that if a celebrity belongs to something, than there could be nothing wrong with it. What sheeple! What, what total crap! But that's the way people believe.

[WM]: That's absolutely true. Most of the celebrity names that I mentioned in this list are there just simply as window-dressing, to give a good appearance to the Craft. But some of them absolutely are not, and I'm reading from this book, published by a Mason publishing company, and it states that Joseph Smith, founder of the Mormon church, was absolutely and undeniably a Freemason.

[WC]: Did you find Giuseppe Mazzini in there?

[WM]: Yeah, I sure did, I did my homework. Giuseppe Mazzini, 1805-1872, Italian patriot.

[WC]: He was also one of the best friends and corespondents of Albert Pike, who was the head of world Freemasonry for a while, and the head of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry in this country. He established, with others, the Ku Klux Klan, the branch of Freemasonry known as B'nai B'rith, which the ADL operates out of, and the ADL, folks, for those of you who don't know it, are under intense investigation now for spying upon agencies and departments of the United States government and police departments, and actually stealing records and passing them on to the secret societies and to the state of Israel. So, you really better wake up out there, and don't give me this stuff that it's the Jews, that it's the blacks, it's this, it's that. It's not. It's not. Ordinary people like you and me, I don't care what their skin color is, I don't care what their religion is, are just like you and me and all they want to do is live in peace. There are elements in organizations and people belonging to all the different ethnic groups, all of the different religions, all of the different organizations, corporations, governments, anything that you want to name, belong to these secret societies. The Jews have been used as scapegoats throughout history. The Freemasonic organization, and the secret societies in general, are racist. They believe that the races, the white Caucasian races in Europe and Germany, England, are the superior race, or the real Israelites. They are the ones who have orchestrated and brought about the state of Israel. They are the ones who maintain the force of Zionism, active in the world. The Mormon church is a great part of this. I mean, if you just give down and dirty on this, you'll find that what I'm telling you is absolutely true. And one of their main weapons that they use against us to divide us against each other, so that while we're running around stabbing each other in the back, they are putting the chains on all of us. And when you are people going to realize that and understand it? All during the Cold War, there were no Russian families sitting around their table plotting on how to do away with Americans, and they're weren't any Americans doing that, either. All of us were concerned with our children, with putting food on the table, with educating our children, with trying to build some kind of good life. That's all that ordinary people care about. It doesn't matter what race they belong to, what religion they belong to...

[WM]: Bravo, Bill. If there's a lesson that the listeners can go home with, that is...it's that, stop this racist divisionism, come together and see the enemy for who it is. I should...like I said on your program, you cannot be...you cannot enjoy the protection of the secret societies forever. With a little bit of homework, you can find out how financed Hitler in World War II. And, anybody that had knows [sic] history knows that as soon as Hitler got to where he was at in power [sic], who did he initiate a [power grab] against? It wasn't just Jews. He got rid of all the Freemasons who were the window-dressing in German and in Austria, who put him in where he was at and protected his interests...he zapped them. He nuked them. They were gone, they joined the Jews and gypsies in the concentration camps and they were never heard from again. And to this day, many German Freemasons wear a small flower on their lapel in remembrance of that tragic event. You cannot enjoy that protection forever. You are doomed to fail if you depend on these people for your life.

[WC]: That's correct. Now remember, the primary method they use is this: conflict creates change. They create the conflict that they know will bring about the solution that they want. They get it to appear as if the people are screaming for the solution, and then they give it to them. Something that the people would never accept it in the first place. But remember, conflict creates change. They believe in the Hegelian principle of conflict resolution. You have a thesis, an antithesis, and these...the clash of these two creates the solution to the problem, which they've been aiming for all along. Now, you also have to understand that *controlled* conflict creates desired results, or change. So, the method bringing about controlled conflict is to have your people leading both sides of the conflict. So, when you talk about Republican or Democrat, forget it! At the highest level, they're both the same. When you talk about Populist versus Communist, or whatever it is, forget it! At the highest level, they all belong to the same organization. When you look around in the Patriot movement, remember, most of the leaders in the Patriot movement are on the same side, and belong to the same organizations, as the leaders of the secret societies that are trying to destroy this country. The conflict between the two, which are trying to create now, will ensure the destruction of the Constitution, the Bill of Rights, and then they will step forward with the answer: a thousand-years of peace under the United Nations. But you're going to have to make concessions to get it. You're going to have to give up your freedoms, your individual rights, but they will protect you. If you buy that, folks, you are indeed a fool. Does this confirm what you've discovered in your quest for the truth?

[WM]: It certainly does, it is history repeating itself with empty promises of a Nirvana and Utopia on earth that has never come true, and they always have to be the one to pay for it. Always. These people do not believe in a fair fight. They do not join a race that they have not fixed. They don't take those kinds of risks.

[WC]: You've got about ten seconds. If you had the ability to say something to the American people, and to the world, what would it be?

[WM]: It would be to wake up, folks. Look, you've got an enemy out there that are coming together. There's a convention of Southern Baptists that have come against the Freemasons, meeting in Houston in 15th, 16th, 17th June of this year [sic]. I suggest that you look into that.

[WC]: That's right, folks, and good night. Thank you, Will, for being our special guest, for putting yourself in danger for all of the rest of our freedoms, for freedom of the world. I, for one, appreciate that. You are my hero.

Good night, and may God bless you all.

(closing music: Walk on the Water, performed by Creedence Clearwater Revival)

Hour 23: William Morgan Interview, Part III (aried May 18th, 1993)

I'm William Cooper and you're listening to the Hour of the Time....

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading]

Tonight, episode number 21 in our series of Mystery Babylon, and the third hour of interview with William Morgan.

(opening music: I Can See Clearly Now, performed live by Liza Minnelli)

[WC]: Welcome, Will, once again to the Hour of the Time.

[WM]: Thanks, Bill, it's a pleasure to be here.

[WC]: Tonight, we decided that we're going to talk about some of the symbology connected with the rites of Freemasonry, the secret symbols of identification and things of that nature...wherever you want to start, go right ahead.

[WM]: OK, well, all of the important symbols and passwords are incorporated into the first three degrees. The handshake, I think, is the most widely used Masonic symbol. It consists of [an] ordinary handshake, except the thumb of the person who is a Mason goes onto the third knuckle of the right hand of the person he's shaking hands with. If you ever shaken hands with somebody and they seem to have a funny grip, or possibly even - I always thought it seemed kind of feminine to me because the hand just wasn't strongly wrapped around your hand when you're shaking hands with somebody. You can have a pretty good idea that they're trying to feel you out and see if you're a Mason like they are. The first two degrees--that was the handshake of the third degree. The first two degrees are the same, except first degree [sic], the thumb goes on the first knuckle and the second degree, the thumb goes on the second knuckle. But those are very, very rarely used.

[WC]: And in the Master Mason, or the third degree, the thumb is on the third knuckle. That's correct?

[WM]: Yes sir, and, uh...

[WC]: And how would you reply to that if you were, in fact, a Freemason?

[WM]: You do the exact same. It becomes a combined grip, and your thumb is on *his* third knuckle and his thumb will be on *your* third knuckle, and, uh...(laughs) you can't miss it when somebody tries to slip you this handshake.

[WC]: So, it's not really a true handshake in the sense of the word that most people have learned to shake hands. You don't have a full grip of the other person's hand, but, rather, you just have a sort of a loose grip on their fingers, and your thumb is either on the first, second or third knuckle, and you're sort of digging with that thumb to try to get a reaction to see if the other person is, indeed, a Freemason, and at what level.

[WM]: That's true, that's true, and if they do not respond as such, that person will withdraw his hand quickly. But if he's not sure, he'll seems to kind of extend his grip just a little bit to give you a chance to, to return the sign...they call it a "sign".

[WC]: Now, besides the handshake, what other signs or signals are used to identify one Freemason to another?

[WM]: The most subtle one, and the one that you often have to look out for in public places, is how a man stands. The position of his feet will be a dead giveaway. Most people stand in just a leisurely position with their feet pointing outward, just a slight...just slightly. But a Freemason will stand with his feet in an exact square, at a right-angle, heel-to-heel. This is the "step"...they call the "step of a Master Mason". The step of an Entered Apprentice, a first degree Mason, is where the feet form a sort of 'T' with the heel going to the cup of the other foot, and the second degree is an inverse of the third degree, with the...another square being formed.

[WC]: So, if you see someone standing in a room with their two heels joined together and their feet forming a perfect right angle, or 90° angle, you can pretty much bet that that's such an unnatural stance, that that is a dead giveaway that that person is a Master Mason.

[WM]: Unnatural *and* uncomfortable, I might add, too (laughs) to anybody who stood...you're forced to stand like this when you become initiated, you...and also when you return the ritual, you have to do memory work and memorize the ritual, and then give it back before you are raised to the sublime degree of a Master Mason. Yeah, it's a dead giveaway because nobody stands like that naturally, it's just not a comfortable position to stand.

[WC]: And why would someone stand like that? Would they do that in a room full of strangers to let other Freemasons who might be in the room know that it's OK to come and have some kind of a fellowship with them because they're a Freemason?

[WM]: I, myself, have had stood just like that for that very purpose, because it's just noticeable. It's a way of broadcasting who you are and talking to the rest of the world, without the rest of the world being able to interpret what, exactly, you are saying.

[WC]: In other words, if you're not a Mason, you might look over and say, "Boy, (laughs) that guy is kind of a nut! Look at the way he's standing." Whereas a Freemason would say, "That's a brother of the Craft. I'm going to go and meet this fellow."

[WM]: Absolutely, that's generally the way it works. Most people just aren't aware of all these signs and symbols incorporated into the Craft, but a Mason lives and breathes these things. Every time he goes to Lodge, he takes on this position, he does the hand signals, he gives the ...he usually gives the handshake to his fellow brothers just to keep in practice. These things are so much a part of Masonry and of Masons, that they spot them wherever they go.

[WC]: OK, so, we know the handshake, we know the heel-to-heel and the right-angle. We talked in the last broadcast about "I raise my hand to the square," or "I raise my arm to the square." What are some of the others?

[WM]: Well, the others are the hand signals, and these are also used in every single Lodge, and these are...to Masons, these are what are most easily and most commonly used to communicate between Masons their identity. Of the first degree, you...the hand signal is you take your left hand, palm upward, and put it near your waist, and then your right hand, palm downward just above your left hand, forming a bit of a "Q". Then you hold your hands like such, and that's the hand signal of the first degree. Now, the penal sign, as they call it, is taking your right-hand and drawing it in a slashing motion across the neck, and this refers to the penalty of the first-degree, which is having your throat slit from ear to ear.

[WC]: Now, if this were truly a benevolent, fraternal organization, why in the world would they have an oath and a penal sign to tell (laughs) other members that they could have their throat slit? And there are many others, depending upon what degree and what oath we're talking about. Why would they do that if they were really and truly a fraternal organization, bearing in my mind that grown men take their oaths very seriously if they understand the oaths and they're not being defrauded or lied to when they take the oath, and fully intended to carry out whatever oaths that they take? This is not a joke, they're not children, this is not play on the playground.

[WM]: The question answers itself. You're absolutely right, this is not a joke. In fact, it's *deadly* serious. These are the heart secrets of the majority of the Craft, even though they're not illuminated brethren, they don't really know what's going on around them or what they're doing. They've sworn to keep these secrets above all else, because this...if a non-Mason or a member of the profane knows these secrets, he can just walk right into a Lodge and sit down and be exposed to everything within.

[WC]: Hmm, I hope you're listening, folks. Now, just for the benefit of our listeners, or someone who may have just turned in...or tuned in (turned in!)...or any of our fellow brother Mason out there who may be listening. Now, you took the oath but you're revealing the secrets. Why are you revealing the secrets if you took the oath?

[WM]: Because I took the oath under a fraudulent contract, as such. I was told that it was a benevolent organization, that it dealt with charity, that it was arranged around God. All three of those things are bold-faced lies and I can prove their falsehood. In fact, anybody can prove their falsehood with just a moment's bit of research. There are many more reliable sources than I for information that you can go to to find out the true nature of this Craft, and many religions of the world, including the Baptists and the Mormons, have condemned Freemasonry as being exactly what it purports not to be. It's not benevolent, it's not charity organized, and it's not centered around God.

[WC]: Well, it's funny that you mention that the Mormons have condemned Freemasonry when they carry out the exact same rituals that are carried out in a Masonic Lodge in their temple ceremonies, and most Mormons are indeed, as was Joseph Smith, members of the Masonic Lodge. Our research shows that the public statements of the Mormon Church are often, and I mean often, contradictory to their beliefs in what they truly practice in their daily lives and within the temple. They are, in fact, a secret society, a secret organization that practices the same rights as the Masonic Lodge within their temple and have the same goal, and that is that the practitioners of the religion of the Mormon Church will, in fact, become god. That is, of course, what the other secret societies, and we're talking right now the Freemasons. They're really all are the same organization. They're working toward becoming god.

[WM]: It is, it's a quest after godhood and all I can say about the Mormons--and they're many, many similarities to Masons--is that a pagan is a pagan is a pagan. It's nature worship, they believe in the laws of the universe as being what they have to answer to, and if you know these laws, you can manipulate the populace. It's elitism at its very best.

[WC]: Now, let me ask you this for the benefit of our listeners also. Many people write me letters and say hey, my dad or my uncle or my cousin or my friend is a Freemason and I ask them about these things and they've told me that it's not true, that it's all a lie. Will Freemasons lie to hide the truth?

[WM]: Every single time, if the truth will give away what they don't want to give away. And in fact, I've been lied to by brothers in the Craft, that are allegedly, or supposedly teaching me and instructing me in what goes on. They...if they told the truth, it would scare away their members and it would end up in universal condemnation of what they're doing. No reasonable and moral person could possibly subject themselves to such bloody oaths and to such total secrecy.

[WC]: Not only that, but the oaths themselves...they're sworn to secrecy. So, if you were to ask them to tell you the secrets of the truth about the practices, the rituals, the true religion of the Masonic Lodge, they are sworn not to tell you, so therefore they would, they would have to lie. And the only reason that you are telling is because you discovered that the oaths that you have taken and the purposes for which you thought the Masonic fraternity was organized, it just is not true at all. So, therefore, everything that you've participated in, you participated under fraudulent conditions.

[WM]: Yeah, that is exactly true, and as such, I don't consider myself to be bound by those oaths because I was lied to before I entered into those oaths. This is common law, this is the law of many lands, and it's also just makes ...it makes perfect common sense that both parties have to know what is going on in all terms of the contract before they can be held accountable for their deeds within that contract.

[WC]: That's correct. And the oath, the oaths that you took, you thought were for a different purpose and to a different god then the god that you discovered, and the purpose that you finally discovered. So, folks out there, when you go and ask your relatives or your friends for your cousins or your business associates questions about the lodge, about freemasonry, about any secret society, no matter what name it is: the Rose and Cross, the Knights Templars, the Knights of Malta, the Order of St. John in Jerusalem, any of these people, they cannot and will not tell you the truth because it is forbidden to them and, in fact, if they do, they could find themselves suffering from the consequences of the very oaths they took not to reveal these secrets. Now, what are some of the other signs that we have not discussed?

[WM]: OK, I covered the first degree. The second degree we've also partially covered. The sign of the second degree is to hold your right arm, extended outward with the elbow at a right-angle and the hand facing up, palm forward. And the penal sign of that is to draw you right hand across your chest, from left to right in a claw-like motion; [it] refers to the penalty of the second degree, which is to have your breast torn open and your heart and biles taken [inaudible] and given to the birds..."the birds of the air and beasts of the field." That's an exact quote from the ritual, by the way. And the third degree consists of both hands, palm down, extended outward at the waist, and then to draw the hand across the waist, from left to right, which refer to have your body torn in *twain*, which is the penalty for revealing the secrets of the third degree is to have to your body torn in twain, and the parts carried north and south. That is, again, a direct quote from the ritual.

[WC]: So, the first one is the recognition signal and the second is what you call the penal sign.

[WM]: Yes, yes, that's true.

[WC]: And are there other signs and signals connected with Freemasonry?

[WM]: There are many others. There is a recognition signal and a penal sign for every single degree in Freemasonry, and I have been through the 32nd degree and have experienced all these recognition signals and penal signs. But the...all the signs after the third degree are not nearly as important as the first three, and the reason for this is because Masons, in general, are just not invited to know all the secrets of the Order. It is not uncommon to know a Mason, as you stated before, who never ever advances beyond the third degree. And I should state now that a Mason who is in the third degree, he can be the Master of his Lodge, the Worshipful Master, as they call it, of his Lodge, which is a bit like an elected...it *is* an elected office, a bit like President, but lasts for one year. Not all Masons are in the Scottish Rite or the Shrine or the Yorkish Rite, but all Masons do know the signs of the first three degrees and the penal signs.

[WC]: And, in fact, most Masons are really only guilty of joining an organization they know nothing about and for giving it protection and favor and helping it along. But they really don't know what it's all about, do they?

[WM]: True, true, they don't. They're as ignorant as I was, and if they're out there listening, I'd like to say that you can follow the exact same path I have followed. Now that you know the truth about the Craft – whether you believe me or not – you should go out and verify for yourself. And once you do verify for yourself, you are no longer bound by those oaths, either. They are fraudulent and they are ridiculous, unreasonable and brutal in many ways.

[WC]: Not only that, but once you do know about it, you are no longer innocent, but you are...if you don't do something about it, or leave the Lodge, or do as this young gentleman is doing, help us to relieve ourselves from the yolk of these secret societies who are planning on stripping us of our freedoms and our rights. If you don't, then you are...then you are a fellow conspirator and are just as guilty as those who have always known, and you better understand that, because I'm telling you right now, patriots in this country are getting fed up. And the purpose of this show is to prevent bloodshed. We want to wake people up and do something about this while we can, legally and lawfully. Because, folks, there will come a day when people will not take it anymore, and they will take weapons in hand, unfortunately. Uh, we can see it coming. Anybody with half a brain can look around and talk to people, and see that that day is going to come. Because nothing is getting better, it's only getting worse, and we don't want that to happen. That's why we're doing this. That's why I've dedicated my life, and that's why I've suffered so much in my life, to try and wake people up, is to prevent that kind of thing. And they are dead set on seeing their dream come true, aren't they, Will?

[WM]: They have dedicated their lives, their labors and, indeed, their entire faith to this, and you have not exaggerated or overrated the problem at all. This is dangerous, people. These men mean business. The Scottish Rite themselves have taken a public stance totally in support of public education by the government. Now, all you need to do is look at how screwed up your schools are, and then turn around and look at how screwed up your kids are, and you've got a big, *big*, rich organization out there with incredible political power and widespread influence that is supporting this current failed system. This is just one, isolated example. If you are not part of the solution and you have even been, just [a tiny bit] exposed to the truth, then you are part of the problem.

[WC]: That's correct, and we know that public education, conducted and supervised and organized and funded by the government, is one of the planks of the *Communist Manifesto*, written by Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. Now, why would Americans ever support such a thing? The strength of our educational system, before it began to self-destruct, was that is always handled, funded, and governed, and maintained, and approved, and anything else on a local level. In other words, the school system in my town might be different from the school system in someone else's town a hundred miles away, but it would controlled, governed, decided, textbooks would be chosen, everything, on a local level. Our schools did not begin to self-destruct until the state got into the school system, and then the federal government began to poke into it and, specifically, when teachers' colleges by the Carnegie, the Ford and the Rockefeller Institutes began to change what they taught teachers to teach children. And when that happened, when it became an organized, funded, dictated to, type thing [sic], then it began to fall apart. And the less control on the local level, the less our children are educated.

[WM]: You've hit the nail right on the head. As you've stated in your own book, *Behold a Pale Horse*, the true enemy is not Communism, but Illuminism. When the Berlin Wall fell and Eastern Europe was opened up, it wasn't all the American companies that beat a path to their door to go open up these markets to make money. There were two groups, and they were both religious in nature. One were the evangelists who went over there to try to spread the Word of their religion, and the other were Freemasons who stepped in just the very moment the Communists stepped out. Already, lodges have been consecrated in St. Petersburg, in Moscow, and in several other major cities, and they're just popping up all over. You've got people, very old men, who actually remember when the Lodges were around before Stalin wiped them out, and they're bringing them back to replace the Communist masters that they just got rid of.

[WC]: And the only reason that Stalin did away with the Lodges in the Soviet Union was because Stalin was a 33rd degree Freemason. He knew how he had risen to power, he knew what the organization was and he didn't want them turning against him, so he got rid of them.

[WM]: Absolutely, they're subversive. They got him – just like Hitler – they got him to where he wanted to be, and he's not going to let anybody put him out of place with the same tools that he rose to power with.

[WC]: OK, well, this...(laughs)...we're making a lot of progress, here. If you were to walk into a room and see two grown men hugging, what would you look for as identifying traits that would tell you that these two men hugging were Freemasons?

[WM]: There is a certain pattern ritual that goes...that has something to do with that. It deals with the interchange of the...one of the most secret passwords of Freemasonry, and you must go...you must stand foot-to-foot with another Mason, knee-to-knee, hand-to-back, and mouth-to-ear, and then whisper the secret word in a very low voice. And I'm not going to do any of those things, I'm just going to tell you: the word is *Marhaba*, and I don't even know what it means, but I do know where it comes from, and it comes from the ancient Hindu religion, which is the original pagan religion. And many of the other secret words in Freemasonry are of an exact same source.

[WC]: And they call this the "five points of fellowship," do they not?

[WM]: They do, you (laughs), you've done your homework, Bill! (laughs)

[WC]: Well, I, I know more about Freemasonry and the secret societies than most members of Freemasonry and the secret societies ever will. And I was, as I've told my listeners, and as I've published in my book, a member of *DeMolay* when I was a teenager. I went to exactly three meetings. And DeMolay, folks, is a branch of Freemasonry for children, for teenagers, actually. And I attended three meetings, and my father was transferred to Japan, and I never attended another meeting, ever. But I do believe that that's what got me – in fact, I *know* it is – that's what opened the door for me to enter as a member of the Office of Naval Intelligence many years later. When I filled out my forms for security clearance, there was nothing on there for the order of DeMolay, but I knew that it was a branch of Freemasonry. So, I checked Freemasonry, and by golly, all of a sudden, things began to open for me that had never opened for me before, and in which most people who are not Freemasons find impossible to enter into. And I was surprised for a while and a little mystified until I discovered the real reason. But every member of Naval Intelligence that I ever met was a Freemason, and most of them wore their rings. What are these rings? How can someone identify the ring of a Freemason?

[WM]: It sticks out like a sore thumb. It looks a bit like a fraternity ring, or a football ring, or any other signet ring, and on the very top of the ring will be a square and compass, set in what looks like a large "A" shape, with the square at the bottom and the compass on the top, forming what looks a bit like an "A", but it's not. You can tell how seriously one takes their position in the Craft. The Masons who are really there for genuine reasons, philanthropic or charity work, they have their square and compass facing *to* them, and those that are trying to impress and enforce the buddy system that got you in Naval Intelligence and the back scratch and whole thing [sic], they wear theirs facing the outside to tell everybody else in the world who they are.

[WC]: But, really, the only ones who really know, unless you were to ask them what that ring meant, are fellow Craft Masons.

[WM]: Absolutely

[WC]: I shouldn't say fellow Craft, that's the second degree. (laughs) Are fellow brothers of the Lodge.

[WC]: OK, folks, we've got to take our break. Don't go away, we'll be right back after this very short pause.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading]

(break music: We Are The People, performed by John Mellencamp)

[WC]: Welcome back to the Hour of the Time. Will, you got something there that you want to say, I think.

[WM]: Uh, yeah, I just...I'd like to give a little message to my brother Masons out there. I know that all those who are listening are thinking some pretty hard thoughts about me. You're thinking things like I'm a traitor to the Craft. Well, I'm thinking that you're a traitor to your country. And if you think I've betrayed my brothers, I feel that you have betrayed me with your deception. If you believe that I have broken my oaths – and even if those oaths are valid, something I do not believe; I think they're null and void – well, then I just have to say that so what? We all got to go, and my brothers can go quietly into slavery, living a lie and burying their heads in the sand, or you can go like a man, squarely facing the truth, and fighting for freedom. I honestly believe this and I honestly believe that the whole nature of the craft is sinister.

[WC]: Wow, that's...that's quite a statement there, and I certainly admire you for saying that. I had no idea that you were going to do that, in fact. You showed me the piece of paper just as the music was beginning to fade out, and indicated to me that you wanted to say something, so...yeah, wow, that's pretty good. Um, OK, let's get on into the rest of the program. What are some of the...are there other signs and symbols that the secret societies, Freemasons in general, use to identify themselves to each other?

[WM]: I have never been a member of any other secret society besides Freemasonry, and (laughs) much to my joy and to your good fortune out there, I have already told you most of the secrets that are protected by the Craft, as far as the common laymen of the Craft will know, with the exception of one, and that is concerning Hiram Abiff, who is a bit of a patron saint, I guess, of Freemasonry, somebody they pulled from the Bible and turned into a character to give meaning to their ritual. When two Masons come together, one of the easiest ways that they'll come to know each other, without having to shake hands, hug in the middle of the street, or do a little foot dance or whatever kind of nonsense that they're doing out there. They'll just come up and say, "Well hi, Hiram, how're you doing?", or "Hello, Mr. Abiff." Or if you want to catch a Mason on the phone, you just tell them H. Abiff is calling and believe me, you'll get service right away!

[WC]: Well, that's good to know. We can certainly use information like that. But we know that some of the signals...symbols, signals and signs used in the Masonic order were also used by the Knights Templars and others. So, this didn't come strictly from this one society, but literally they are all one. What are some of the vocal signals out there - the speech, what words besides Hiram Abiff? What else would you say to someone to illicit whether or not they were, in fact,

Freemasons?

[WM]: One of them that I've also come across--and I've seen this in writing, and it was a bit of a mystery to me until I sought some advice about it. They'll ask each other if they're a, if they're a traveling man, and what they mean by--and this comes directly from the old Templar ritual, and it stands as a positive factual link of the continuity between ancient secret societies and modern Freemasonry, is they'll ask if they're a traveling man, and the meaning behind that is one traveling from west to east, east being the source of knowledge.

[WC]: Or illumination. It's also the point where the sun rises, which goes back to the first religion which was cosmology, where all of these religions and secret societies sprang from, which was the worship of the sun, the source of illumination, the source of warmth, the source of all life, the source of everything, rises in the east [sic] every morning. And is, in fact, (laughs) for those who really understand, the morning star. Is that not correct?

[WM]: Absolutely, and that's gives a great illumination (laughs), if I may say so, as to why the Worshipful Master sits in the east of the lodge. And also, why during the ritual, when a young unknowing Freemason like myself is brought in and has a degree conferred upon him, he circumnavigates--that is, he walks around in a circle--from all the points of the Lodge, going from the Worshipful Master in the east to the Junior Ward in the south to the Senior Ward in the west and then back to Master in the east. He is traveling as the earth travels around the sun, in a circle of worship, and it might even be a direct reference to Solomon's circle, and [as] you've told me yourself, Bill, about the traveling man, that too [is] been used by Communists, hadn't it?

[WC]: Yes, in fact, if anyone who knows anything about the Internationale, or the secret society known as The International, the Internationale Communist party, the international Socialists, Socialism, if you've study them, the same passwords are used by them. All of these organizations are one. Socialism stems from the Mystery Schools. That's where it comes from. You'll find that most of the Mystery Schools preach the tenets of the *Communist Manifesto*, written by Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels whom, by the way, didn't just wrote it [sic], they were the hacks who fronted for it. They did not make it up. It came out of ancient documents and an ancient philosophy. And the password is the same: "Are you a traveling man?" And that's how Communists identify themselves to each other from cell to cell and country to country and kept their business secret. And I got that straight out of the files of the Federal Bureau of Investigation in their investigations of the Internationale, The International, the Communist party, international Socialism. They're all the same: Freemasonry, the Knights of Malta, the Rose and Cross, they're all the same organization, folks. And remember, one of their tenets is...and, in fact, Adam Weishaupt said this, "The strength of our Order lies in its concealment," in its many different names, appearing under many different names and many different occupations, sometimes even appearing to oppose ourselves. But at the highest levels, they are all the same because they use the system to coerce the people to go along what they want [sic]. If they want to change something in a certain direction, they'll look at the population, the society, the problems that exist, and they will intentionally create, foment a problem in order to get the people to cry for an answer to that problem which will be the direction they want to take that society into. They will create two opposing groups. At the top of these two opposing groups will be their people so that it's a controlled conflict bringing about a controlled resolution, or a controlled, a desired end. And (laughs) you guys better wake up to this, I am telling you, you better wake up to it, you better pay attention to what you're hearing here. You better realize that this young man sitting next to me is a hero. He's risking his life to bring you this information, as are many other people operating out of the public eye. You may never, ever in your life know who they are. They're working to save your freedoms for you. And sometimes I have to sit back and [inaudible] why are we all doing this, why am I doing this, why is he doing this, why are all these people doing this when most of you out there sit back and do nothing? I have people write me letters and say, "I don't want to be in your mailing list because somebody might get your mailing list and they might know who I am." I've had other people write and say, "What is that symbol that's over your name when you sign your name on your documents? That's the sign of something evil and I don't want to be a part of your organization." That's fine with me, folks. To tell you what that this, for those who are interested, that's a chop. It was given to me as a gift by the head of the accounting department of the last college where I was the executive director. She was Chinese, went home to Hong Kong for Christmas, and brought that back for me. That's the way the Chinese people sign their name. It literally means, "the director," the boss. And I've used it ever since because, it's...I like it, and I liked her and it was a gift. And it personalizes my signature, it's means nothing more or less than that. But you are right in asking, but you are wrong in assuming and making assumptions. You're also wrong in hiding. I want you to read my lips: New World Order. There's no place you can hide unless you can get off this planet. And forget about aliens bringing all this stuff about. The only people you have to fear are humans (laughs). And being afraid is not going to solve our problems, because fear itself is a weapon that they use against us. So...I mean, why, if the majority of people are sheeple and aren't going to help save their own butts, why should you be doing this to save them, Will? Why are you doing this?

[WM]: I have a very, very easy answer for your question, and you already know the answer. It's obvious that you're doing this for the sake of your audience. Whenever you look at your daughter...whenever I look at my family, whenever I slap my dog upside the head, that's why I doing it. Because I love people in this world, and I love my people, and my people are not going to be safe until I can make this world safe. I see them in direct danger, and I'd like to say, Bill, you have a wonderful way of cutting right to the heart of many matters. You're right about the continuity of the secret societies. They are all one, and I'm here to tell you...he did not just flip through a few books and see a couple of things and say, "OK, they're all one, they're all evil." It's not that easy, folks. You have to read and research, and research, and *research* and investigate every single corner [of this], and believe me, if it *looks* like a snake, and it *slithers* like snake, and it *hisses* like snake...well, hell, go ahead and step on its head, because it's a snake!

[WC]: And, uh...(laughs), well, it *is* a snake! (laughs) And if we go right to the philosophy of all of these secret societies, is that man was held prisoner in the Garden of Eden by an unjust, vindictive God; that he was denied his own chance to become a god, and that Lucifer, through his agent, Satan, set man free with the gift of intellect, the gift of knowledge. And with that knowledge, man himself can become god. Remember, the promise that Satan made to Eve was that God was lying to them. That if they did indeed eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge, they would become gods. Don't ever forget that. Those who say they are god, those who say they're going to become god, the members of the secret societies, the Mormon church, others who profess this belief, are practicing the Luciferian philosophy. They deserted the real true God, and they are following the fallen angel of light, Lucifer, Satan – who's not a god at all. They have all been deceived. If you are one of them, remember: we don't hate you, we are not trying to hurt you. If you want to continue to practice your religion, that is OK with me, and any true person who is an American and [who believes] in the Constitution. It is only when you practice your religion with the aim of taking away *my* freedoms and forcing *me* to practice your religion under a new world totalitarian Socialist government, which you intend to bring about, that it becomes not only becomes my business, but my duty to stop you. Understand that. I want to read to you from a book here, so that you'll understand where I'm getting to, and I want you to listen very closely to the closing music at the end of our program tonight. This is taken from *The Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries*. It's in two volumes. It's...the author is [Charles William] Heckethorn. This particular set of two volumes was published, I believe, in 1965 by University Books Incorporated. The Library of Congress number is 65-22572. So, I urge you to get this set of books because these books were written back when it was still easy to get a lot of information on the existing secret societies, much easier than it is today. I want to read to you from page 14 of volume two, under *Secret Societies, Freemasonry, Rites and Customs*, paragraph 391, entitled *Masonic Customs*:

[WC]: "Some Masonic peculiarities may conveniently be mentioned here. Freemasons frequently attend in great state at the laying the foundation stones of public buildings; they follow a master to the grave clothed with all the paraphernalia [of] their respective degrees; they date from the year of light. The Knights of the Sun, the 28th degree of the Scotch rite, acknowledge no era, but always write their date with seven naughts [or] 0,000,000. No one can be admitted into the Masonic order before the age of twenty-one, but an exception is made in this country and in France in favor of the sons of Masons, who may be initiated at the age of eighteen. Such a person is called a *Lewis* in England [William Cooper: and that's the source of that name], and a *Louveteau* in France. This latter word signifies a young wolf; and the reader will remember that in the mysteries of Isis the candidate was made to wear the mask of a wolf's head. Hence a wolf and a candidate in these mysteries were [and are] synonymous. Macrobius, in his 'Saturnalia', says that the ancients perceived a relationship between the sun, the great symbol of these mysteries, and a wolf; for as the flocks of sheep and cattle disperse at the sight of the wolf, so the flocks of sheep and cattle disperse at the sight of the wolf, so the flocks of stars disappear at the approach of the sun's light. We have seen in the account of the French Workmen's Unions that the sons of Solomon still call themselves wolves. The adoption of the *louveteau* into the lodge takes place with a ceremony resembling that of baptism. The temple is covered with flowers, incense is burnt, and the godfather is enjoined not only to provide for the bodily wants of the new-born member, but also to bring him up in the school of truth and justice. The child receives a new name, generally that of a virtue, such as Veracity, Devotion, Beneficence; the godfather pronounces for him the oath of apprentice, in which degree he is received into the Order, which, in case he should become an orphan, supports and establishes him in life."

[WC]: Now, the key words here, folks, that I want you to remember and pay very close attention to when you hear the closing theme, or the music, that closes this program tonight, is this. I'm going to quote directly from it: "Macrobius, in his 'Saturnalia', says that the ancients perceived a relationship between the sun, the great symbol of these mysteries, and a wolf; for as the flocks of sheep and cattle disperse at the sight of the wolf, so the flocks of sheep and cattle disperse at the sight of the wolf, so the flocks of stars disappear at the approach of the sun's light." Now remember, in chapter one of my book, *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars*, there is a quote of these people who have declared a silent, quiet war upon the American people using silent weapons that goes like this: "A nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are beasts of burden and steaks on the table by choice and consent." In other words, cattle. I prefer to call them sheeple, the sheeple of the world. And, of course, if they are the wolves, if they are the wolves, then you are the steaks on the table if you are, indeed, one of the sheeple.

[WC]: Well, that takes us almost up to the mark. Will, I want to thank you once again, and since this is the last program that we're going to be doing together for quite a while, I'm going to give you the next thirty seconds to tell the people out there, the sheeple, would they should hear.

[WM]: Thank you, Bill. (laughs) There's only one message for the sheeple of America, and that is (makes bleating noise), and as my family [sic], I love you.

[WC]: And we're out of time once again. For all of you who have been helping in this great fight, God bless you. For the rest of you, God bless you, too, but God help you to wake up in time and I hope you listen to this closing number. Good night.

(closing music: Werewolf)[137]

---

[137] , by Five Man Electrical Band

Hour 24: Jordan Maxwell Interview (Note: JM is an infiltrator)

Across America and around the world, once again, you're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper...

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss American Trading]

[William Cooper (WC)]: Tonight, folks, you'll notice the absence of our normal lead-in music. You'll also notice that we're not going into any type of a musical selection to introduce the subject matter of this program as we usually do, simply because I want to devote the maximum amount of time to our special guest tonight, Mr. Jordan Maxwell. Now, I never met Jordan Maxwell in my life until today. I don't really know him personally. I have been introduced to him circuitously through a bevy of my own personal friends whom, after listening to my lectures, after reading my book, realize that Mr. Jordan Maxwell and I have quite a bit in common. And they prompted me, pushed me, (laughs) you might say, to meet with this gentleman, and I guess that you had the same treatment on your end, didn't you, Jordan?

[Jordan Maxwell (JM)]: I certainly did, yes.

[WC]: Jordan has a fascinating background. He has paralleled my research in many avenues, in many areas, and has come up with the same conclusions, the same results, the same answers to the questions that I have asked all my life. And tonight, we're going to be talking about the answers that *he* has come up. But first, I'm going to ask him to introduce himself to our listening audience. Jordan?

[JM]: Well, thank you very much for asking me to be here. My name is Jordan Maxwell, as we've said. As of 1959, I became very interested in this subject of secret societies and subversive movements. I came about it because of my family. When I was very small, my mother's uncle worked in the Vatican's Secretary of State's office as a civilian, and on occasions when he would come back home to visit, back to this country, he would sit and talk for hours about the intrigue going on throughout the world, behind the scenes of religion and politics, and all the nefarious plans that are being fomented by governments and religion, and I became fascinated with this subject. Since then, I have...as I said, since 1959, I have really delved into subject myself, and I find the more that you know about this subject, the more you know how much you don't know, because it is an enormous subject that takes in not only the fraternal orders, the secret societies of Freemasonry, the occult societies going on back into the most ancient world, going back to pre-Sumerian, and those symbols and emblems which were used in the ancient world are now even being used in our world, our modern-day world and we don't even realize it. As a matter of fact, things like the oil companies, the automotive companies, the cigarette companies, use symbols and emblems. And, of course, in government, national institutions, educational institutions...our world is filled with symbols, and symbols are like the letters of the alphabet. If you put enough of them together they spell a word, and you put a lot of them together, and they tell you a story. The story I am talking about is the secret societies and occult orders that go all the way back into the ancient world, and I believe, and is my opinion, that they are still in operation today behind our major religions and major governmental agencies. The symbols and emblems you can see with your own eyes and do some research and you'll find they back into the ancient world. Now, we like to talk about...that there's a separation of church and state in America. The fact of the matter is, no such separation exists. There is a very direct connection between the religious establishment in this country and the political establishment. And, as you probably well know, has always been the case, all the way back to the pre-Sumerians there. The king was always the mediator between God and man, as well as being head of the temple state. The Pharaohs, of course, of Egypt perfected this so that they were both gods and mortals who were ruling the state. The Caesars picked up on this, of course, and it's come down through the ages, and even in our country of America today, we have a direct connection between church and state. And let me draw your attention to this and make you an example, here. Churches, when you go into most churches you will find that they are, like, three tiers high and then the altar sits on the top tier. The same is true in a courtroom. You go into a courthouse and you'll see that the bench sits on three tiers high, and the three tiers high [sic] has been traced in the reference works of Freemasonry to the first three degrees of Freemasonry.

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: Yes, and...so then you have the priest who comes out, the clergy who comes out with a long robe and, incidentally, the reason why clergy always wear long robes is because it's a female garment, and it represents the feminine connection with God, and that's why clergy wear a long robe. It also has to do with...when the clergy wear the long robe, the judge...when the judge comes out, *he* wears the same long black robe. It's the same black robe that you wear when you graduate from university or high school. The black robe is a very important symbol. It has to with a very ancient culture called the Saturnalian cult going back into the ancient Sumeric world, the worship of Saturn. Black was a color attributed to Saturn and even today, in Islam, in Mecca, in Saudi Arabia, you have this square of Mecca within the magic circle, within the Masonic circle, and Mecca is black and it's draped in a black robe, and so this is a world fraternity of secret societies that use the same symbols. But let me get back to the government, the courtroom and the church. When you're sitting in a church or, of course, looking up to the altar, and you're looking...the priest is looking down on you [sic]. There was always a fence in the church and then there's a gate, and only the priest could go through the gate to enter the altar. The same thing is true in a court. There is the fence and there's the gate, and only the attorneys can go through, and they're called the *Logas* (sp?) and they go through and talk to the judge for you and, of course, the judge is sitting three tiers high so he can look down on you, and you look up to him. The same symbols which are used in religion are used in political circles, and I am saying...is my opinion that what we have in America is a religio-political scheme based on a very ancient secret societies [sic] and fraternal orders, and until such time as we understand that concept that things just don't happen...I mean, what was it, Franklin Roosevelt even said, "Anything that happens in politics, it was planned that way." And until such time as you understand that things are planned in politics and that there is a rhyme and a reason to things, you know, we're never going to get to the bottom of this. A classic example of what I'm talking about is, we here in this country, we hear politicians, the President, and the local leaders saying...they just can't seem to get a handle on the crime problem, the drug problem, all of the different problems that are facing us a people, and they just can't seem to get a handle on these things. However, if you don't...if you put a wrong comma on your income tax, they can get a hold on you. (laughs) Yeah, and if you go into the Amazon jungles, they'll follow you and they will find you. And it may take a while, but they'll spend millions and they will find you, and they will bring you back here and they will deal with you in public to show the rest of the people that you can mess around with other people but you don't mess with the money and the government, OK? So, the point I'm making is that they cannot seem to get a hold on crime, but they can get a hold on you. The question should be asked: How is it that a country fifty years ago, which was a lot less sophisticated, got a hold on Adolf Hitler (and he had a standing army all over the world); they can get a hold on the Soviet national economy and destroy peoples and nations all around the world. They can get a hold on anybody they want except for the drug trade, except for the crime, and I'm saying that the crime and the drug trade in this country are purposely allowed to exist and, in certain cases, even promoted. Because, according to the ancient cults of the ancient world, there was a term that has come down to us--and many Freemasons in the audience will readily remember this--according to the ancient cults, there was something called *Ordo Ab Chao*, in Latin which meant, "Order out of Chaos." Right, so the idea was that if you can create enough chaos, that people will be sufficiently frightened and give to you the power and the political power to bring back law and order. Now, there was a television comedy program many years ago called, *Get Smart*. Now, when people tell you to get smart, it's implying that you're missing something here, alright? Get smart. Remember...you'll remember that on one side in the TV show, *Get Smart*, on one side was chaos, and the other side was control. Now I'm saying, that's exactly how you get control, by causing chaos. The idea is that, if you're going to...if you're going to pull a scam on somebody, you're going to pick somebody's pocket or something, you always have a diversion. You do something to draw the person's attention while you're picking his pocket. If you're going to break out of a prison, you'll always have the gang fight down at the far end while the guys are crawling out the hole on the other end. The idea is, you set up a diversion; you cause chaos, and out of that you can get control, because people will sufficiently frighten people will give you the power to put down these problems [sic]. Now, Adolf Hitler did this, and he worked it perfectly, and it works. A lot of people are wondering, why is it that the German people would have ever allowed Hitler to do what he did? Hitler was elected to office because of the chaos that he was doing. He was causing the chaos, the people came sufficiently frightened [sic], and so they give him the political power to put down the trouble, because they knew he was the only guy that *could* put down the problems, because he was the one who was causing it. So, I'm saying that the same kind of scam is being worked in this country today. We're seeing nothing but chaos and nothing but trouble, and I'm saying that it's all orchestrated. That...that you cannot, you couldn't possibly imagine people like the President of the United States making mistakes. I mean, you hear every day...what senator so-and-so made a terrible mistake, or the United States government made a terrible mistake in Vietnam, or they made a horrible mistake on this or that. This country don't [sic] make mistakes. If they do something, they have a reason for doing it. They don't pay these people, these doctors and professional psychologists and this whole army of brains at the Vatican, I mean at, well--that's a Freudian slip. Probably (laughs) at the Vatican, too. But at the, at the, what is it? The Pentagon.

[WC]: Pentagon.

[JM]: Yeah. They don't pay these people big money to make mistakes. The President, when he does something, or this government does something, they know what they're doing. Now, it may not make any sense to you, but according to other plans, if you understand what's going on behind the scenes, it makes a lot of sense. And, ...

[WC]: Well, let me interject something in here before you...Jordan, so that you'll understand. My listening audience as had twenty-two hours already. Their education is far beyond anybody that you normally talk to.

[JM]: Right, right.

[WC]: They understand what we're talking about. They understand the involvement of the Vatican, they understand the symbology of the Mystery Schools.

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: Now, we may some listening audience out there [sic] who just tuned into the show, or just found it a couple of shows ago, but most of my listening audience worldwide have been listening since the 4th of May, 1992, and have an extensive education into all of this. So, if you want to cut to the meat of the matter, these people will understand. You don't have to build up to it.

[JM]: (laughs) Well, I mean, I talk to audiences so often and I'm aware that, when I'm talking to an audience of people, generally, I have not been initiated into this kind of thinking, and so that's why I try and lay out a foundation for [sic]. There are a lot of occult symbols and emblems in government and religion and I want to get into one in particular. The Nazis, the Communists, the fascists and all of the ancient world powers that have ever existed have used one common symbol continually, and that's the sun. Now, if you understand that the earliest history, the pre-history of the human race goes back into the most ancient times, and God knows how far back that would be, ten, twenty thousand, maybe fifty thousand years, I don't know. But if you go back to the earliest times of the human race, you can appreciate that the world was a very different place than what we live in today. OK? And so, if you understand that it was a very cold and very fearful world at night, OK? And if you'll understand also that in that cold and fearful world, when the sun went down, there was a lot of fear for your life, there were a lot of predatory animals, and so the coming of the sun the next morning was always something to look forward to, that brought warmth, that brought light, and brought security. And around that concept grew a whole religio-political philosophy of the coming of the sun, "God's Sun," the light of the world, and has been used by the ancient Egyptians, all the Mystery Schools and, of course, you probably will know it was referred to as Baal worship at one time. Baal was the son, "God's Sun", the light of the world, and...you know, the whole concept in the ancient world was that he had twelve helpers, which were the twelve signs of the Zodiac or the twelve months of the year. And, of course, he died, of course, with a crown of thorns, like the Statue of Liberty has a crown of thorns. It's the corona or the sun rays. And when we begin to see all of these connections...and, of course, in the spring of the year, the sun, which had died in winter, had passed over from the death of winter into the new life of spring, so in the old Semitic world, they celebrated the Passover. And we even say that today when someone dies--they passed on, or they passed away, or they passed over.

[WC]: Right.

[JM]: And so we get the old symbolism out of Egypt of the sun dying in the winter and passing over to the new life of spring. And so, the beginning of spring we have the Passover. Uh, it's an interesting thing, too, about the Sun, is that the ancient world realized that on...the December 22nd, which was the winter solstice, they noticed something interesting on the sundials and, of course, the sundials being round, they could each degree for each date [sic], they noticed that on the 22nd, the sun did not move on the 22nd; it stayed on the sundial on the same degree. On the 23rd, it stayed on the same degree; it didn't move any further south and it didn't start back north. On the 24th, it was still on the same degree on the sundial; it didn't move. So they said--the ancient Egyptians said--anything that was moving and is now not moving is dead. So, therefore, they say that God's Sun died and was in his tomb, or dead, for three days. Then on December 25th, anything that was dead and in his grave and not moving for three days, and now begins to move back to the northern hemisphere, it moved its first degree, so on December 25th, they said God's Sun is born on December 25th.

[WC]: Now, in the real world, this clarifies something for a lot of people that are listening out there. You're not talking anything about Christmas, you're not talking about what Christians traditionally recognize as...

[JM]: No, I'm getting into symbolism...

[WC]: ...the birth of Christ, you're getting into the symbolism...

[JM]: ...the symbolism...

[WC]: ...of the ancient religion of the sun...

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: ...which was later perverted in Christianity to reflect this, in order to capture the pagan worshipers into the Christian church.

[JM]: Absolutely, right. Now, what I'm saying is that...

[WC]: Yeah, December the 25th is not Christ's birthday.

[JM]: No, not at all, no. It's the birthday of the Sun. (laughs)

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: And then...but then when you understand that this symbolism began to be a...the ancient peoples understood that the sun was revolved and it was a symbol of revolution [sic]. And today in America we have...or at least the western part of the United States, we have an oil company called Union Oil. Union Oil has as its symbol a ray or orange globe with a 76 and, of course, the commercial says, "Get the spirit, the spirit of 76." The orange globe is the sun, because the Communists have always used the rising sun, you know...if you'll recall, on the Soviet national coat of arms is a rising sun that's bringing the dawn of a new day.

[WC]: And the symbology of 76 plugs into what's called the...

[JM]: ...union, 76, and the 13, 7 [plus] 6 is 13.

[WC]: ...and the order of the trapezoid and if you figure out the formula of the ancient religion which says, "As above, so below..."

[JM]: Yes.

[WC]: The creation of this country in 1776 was guaranteed to bring into the world the new man, the illumined man...

[JM]: Exactly.

[WC]: Three degrees of six [inaudible], or 666.

[JM]: Right. And 8 is the number in the old Kabbalistic Freemasonry, and [your] 8 was the number of new beginnings, and the new beginnings was 17, that's 7 and 1, 8, and 13 was, of course, the old mystic number of God and his 12 helpers of God, and his months make 13. And so...

[WC]: It's also the number of death and rebirth...

[JM]: Absolutely...

[WC]: ...and resurrection or reincarnation, depending upon how you look at that, but...

[JM]: So, once you get into all of the symbolism, you see that there's a rhyme and a reason to all these emblems and symbols. And something else in relation to word symbols, and God knows we're inundated by innuendos and catchphrases in this country especially. We've been hearing, since George Bush [Sr.] made it publicly known, something called the New World Order. I want to clarify something for your audience; they probably might already know this, but Europe has been referred to as the Old World, and anything coming out of Europe is Old World, alright? The Vatican has dominated Europe for about 1500, 1600 years, the Vatican has dominated Europe, Europe has dominated the world. There was a religio-political economic scheme of things. That was the order of the day; the old banking houses of the Roman Empire, the old, uh, what was some of the families, Arius (sp?), Calpurnius [Piso], the Piso's family, who were a very powerful banking family who were the main brains behind...they were the Rockefellers of the Roman empire...

[WC]: The Medici's?

[JM]: The Medici's, absolutely. And so, when you understand that there was a banking, fraternal, religio-political order that operated throughout the world, and the Vatican sat on top of that, and that was an Old World Order. Now, with the coming of America--of course, America is referred to as the New World--and so, what we have now is a New World Order. And that New World Order implies that there is a fraternal order operating throughout the world, operating out of America that seeks to take the place of the Old World Order and bring a new order of the world, but you must understand that you cannot have a new order, or a new building, on the same site as an old building. So, you gotta get rid of the old order first, and bring in the new order. When you get into that, and I'm sorry, I got a frog in my throat.

[WC]: That's OK.

[JM]: When you get into that, you get into the symbolism of Steve Spielberg and Lucas, George Lucas bring up about *Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade* and, of course, you can't understand the last crusade if you don't understand the first crusade, right?

[WC]: (laughs) Or the next crusade.

[JM]: Or the next crusade, which is the real crusade, right. And then from there you get the trilogy of *Star Wars*, and then *The Empire Strikes Back* and, of course, New York is referred to as the Empire State.

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: Alright? And so, you get *The Empire Strikes Back* and then, of course, you might know this...that, in Freemasonry, there is a little ideologue, or a little genie-like mystical character supposedly in Freemasonry that they said was their mediator between the gods and the Freemasons of the Knights Templars. And that little saint, or that little...what I say [sic]...mediator in the old Knights Templar tradition was a little, short, little monster with pointed ears and his name was Yoda, and you go into the old Masonic literature and pictured...you'll see pictures of Yoda, because he was a Jedi Knight, and if you understand that, the Jedi Knights was connected [sic] to the old order of the knightshood [sic] of the Knights Templars. So, what we're talking about here is the "star wars", we're talking about a spiritual war in the heavens, so to speak.

[WC]: This was a cosmology, a celestial religion, so to speak.

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: They talk about moving on to the celestial sphere...

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: ...when they discuss passing...

[JM]: The sun was...the ancient Egyptians said that the sun walked across the sky, so, therefore, we have Luke Skywalker, you know...

[WC]: ...and from this comes "a thousand points of light", and many other things...

[JM]: A thousand points of light, or a thousand-year reign of the Nazi empire, or whatever. And what we're talking about here is secret societies and their use of symbols and emblems in religion and politics and philosophy and...incidentally, when you go to...when you graduate from university – [I meant] to bring this out – when you graduate from university you wear a long black robe. The black robe is, or course, the same black robe that the priests wear. It's the same black robe that the judge wears, alright? Because the black robe symbolize...it goes back to the old Saturnalian cult, which was pre-Egyptian, the worship of Saturn. And according to that ancient Semitic cult, when you got married, you wear the ring. The ring was a ring of Saturn. The women would show their submission to that god by wearing the earring. That's where we get the idea of the king being crowned; he wears a crown, or the round circle of the god of Saturn. Saturn, as I said, was assigned the color black and, therefore, the black robe is a worship of Saturn, the Saturnalian god. What was I going to say about...oh yes, and when you graduate, you graduate with a, uh, square mortar board. The square mortarboard is always the symbol of the brick masons used to mark a board. And then, of course, when you graduate, you are referred to as an alumni, which comes from the world *allumini*; you have been illuminated, which basically means you now know what to kiss and when, and how to think and what to think and how to act and you have been properly educated...

[WC]: Belong to the priesthood.

[JM]: That's right, you belong to the priesthood, and if you go along to get along, and don't cause any problems, then you...

[WC]: ...don't go along to get along, you get a little, right?

[JM]: That's right, exactly. (laughs)

[WC]: Nobody else gets any [of it].

[JM]: My point is, and I've said this to so many audiences, that there is...this country, the United States, as no real enemies in the world. After the second world war, especially is that true.

[WC]: Every enemy, even before the second world war, were enemies that we've had, and a creation of this country.

[JM]: We created them, absolutely. But there is one, there is one legitimate, believable enemy that faces America that the powers behind the throne in this country in America are truly afraid of. And this is legitimate They are totally frightened to death of us, the people, because they realize if the people ever wake up – I mean, something Joe Kennedy was quoted as saying, something to the effect of, "Beware the American conscience, because if they ever wake up and find out what we're doing, it's going to be [hell to pay]." And so, I believe there is a legitimate enemy that this country perceives, and that's us: people who think too much, people who read too much, and people who talk too much.

[WC]: But that's always the case though, Jordan, because we know that what's coming is going to be a Socialist state.

[JM]: Oh, totally.

[WC]: Every time Socialism has won anywhere, the first thing that they've done is that they have literally perverted the Intelligencia, which has brought them to power, and then the first thing that they did was to kill...

[JM]: ...to kill, get rid...

[WC]: ...the Intelligencia, they killed them.

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: I mean the Intelligencia aren't that intelligent. They haven't learned this yet because they're still doing it.

[JM]: The more we change, the more we stay the same.

[WC]: That's right, we'll come back to that in just a few minutes. Folks, I hope you're paying attention to this show, because Jordan has an awful lot to say, and you can hear that he's right in tune with what we've covered before. Don't go away. It's time to take to our break. We'll be right back, after this very short pause.

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss American Trading]

[WC]: And now, let's get back to our regular program and our very special guest tonight, Mr. Jordan Maxwell. Jordan, can we talk about some of the symbols, the symbology that people are going to run into in their everyday life as they go about their business, and maybe haven't even understood what these things mean?

[JM]: Yes, as a matter of fact, as we were saying before that the world around us is filled with emblems and symbols. And if you know how to read the symbols, you can tell what people are coming from. You can tell what organizations are coming from. For instance, in Washington, D.C., which is a very interesting place, you have the Washington Monument which is, of course, the Egyptian obelisk. Now, the Egyptian obelisk is pointing...is, of course, the male phallic symbol, OK? And the male, phallic on the Washington Monument [sic] is connected to something in the White House called the Oval Office. And when you understand the male phallic with the female Oval Office, you're talking about the coming of life, and that's the life of the nation. You have the Pentagon; the United States Pentagon comes from the word...from the five-pointed pentagram. If you take the arms off of a five-pointed star, which has been used in devil worship and Satanic worship for thousands of years, if you understand, you take the arms off of a five-pointed star, the interior of the star is called a pentagon. And so, we have the United States Pentagon and, of course, the pentagon is used by the Chrysler Corporation as their symbol, the pentagon. Why? Because Chrysler was the company that was chosen to make the military hardware for the United States and they had the contract, so that's why they still use the pentagon as their symbol. And on the back of the dollar bill, of course, we don't want to forget that, because the dollar bill is cram filled [sic] with symbols. And Roosevelt, Franklin Delanor Roosevelt, said that the reason why it was all these symbols [sic] were put on a one dollar bill is because you figured that, all over the world, people...any...no matter how poor you were, you would have in your hand the almighty dollar. And if have in your hand the one dollar bill, then you have in your hand all of the symbolism of the secret societies and the occult orders. Of course, one the left-hand side of the back of the dollar bill, you have the pyramid. Now you got to ask yourself, why would you have an Egyptian pyramid on an American dollar bill? And then, you will see the letters, *Annuit Cœptis*, over the top of the pyramid. *Annuit Cœptis*, in Latin, means, "Our enterprise is now a success," or "God has favored our enterprise." The enterprise, of course, is on the banner beneath the pyramid, which is *Novus Ordo Seclorum*, which is the new order of the world. New order, of Seclorum [sic] is where we get the word "secular," anything that's worldly. So, now we're talking about a New World Order on the bottom of the pyramid. You will find that the pyramid has thirteen layers, and there are thirteen letters in Annuit Cœptis, and then if you go to the right-side, you'll see the seal of America with the eagle, and above the eagle you have thirteen stars, which stand for the thirteen colonies originally. But the thirteen colonies and the thirteen stars go back to Jesus and the twelve [disciples], because they are moving in on and using – the ancient societies – moving in on the teachings of Christianity and posing themselves under the thirteen, being Jesus and the chosen twelve. Then you've got the thirteen, let's see...on the right-hand side, you've got the...on one side of the eagle, you have the thirteen leaves and the thirteen berries in the thirteen leaves, and then on the other side, you have the thirteen arrows. Everything is done is sequence of thirteen. Of course, on the...something else I wanted to bring up while I'm thinking about it, is that so much of what we have seen in movies and television are symbols. Are you aware that I have been talking to some doctors in Los Angeles who have been doing some research on this, and I find it to be absolutely fascinating, that many of the gangs, the Latino and the black gangs in the major cities across America, their graffiti that they are spraying on buildings, their graffiti are actually Masonic emblems and Masonic seals and symbols, and I have seen a whole collection that these doctors have. These are medical doctors, but they are interested in this subject, and they have been collecting hundreds of pictures of graffiti and showing the research into the ancient secret societies, and there's no way that these black and Latino gangs could know these symbols. There's definitely a connection between the gangs and some sort of a higher, orchestrated mind behind the warfare going on between gangs. I don't think those gangs are by chance. I think they have been nurtured, and orchestrated, and promoted, and even financed. I mean, if you think about it, how those gangs have money to travel all around, they can buy guns, they can roam around, they don't have to work...where are they getting their money from?

[WC]: Well, not only that, but their main occupation is...

[JM]: ...is chaos!

[WC]: ...the narcotics business...

[JM]: Of course!

[WC]: ...and fomenting chaos, confusion and fear.

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: And they haven't got the background of understanding, learning to put together the kind of logistics network that it would take to supply this kind of an enterprise.

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: So, someone with an awful lot of money, an awful lot of organization, an absolute ability to provide 100% protection is supplying these city gangs. It's not the mafia.

[JM]: You can bet on it.

[WC]: (laughs)

[JM]: You can bet on it.

[WC]: This is a very sophisticated, totally protected organization.

[JM]: Absolutely. As a matter of fact, the *San Francisco Chronicle* had a two full pages [sic] in one of their newspapers I still have [sic], where they were talking about how this federal government was bringing in narcotics from Asia during the Vietnam War in the bodies of American serviceman that were being killed in Vietnam and they were bringing in bags of pure heroin and pure narcotics from Asia in the bodies of American serviceman. And what were they doing with it? They were giving it directly to the mafia, because the mafia is doing a little tricks [sic] for the government...it takes care of business for the government, and so they have to be paid.

[WC]: Well, let's clarify one thing here. It's not the government...

[JM]: Well, it's...

[WC]: ...it is the secret societies...

[JM]: ...operating behind our government.

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: Exactly, yes.

[WC]: Behind the veil of national security...

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: And I might remind you that, back in history when Albert Pike and Giuseppe Mazzini were corresponding and were setting up the core foundation of the Illuminati within Freemasonry, both in their respective countries, and at that time, of course, Albert Pike was the Grand Commander of Freemasonry and throughout the world, and Giuseppe Mazzini was his counterpart in Europe [inaudible]. It was Giuseppe Mazzini who created and fostered and gave the charter to the...what is now known as the mafia.

[JM]: That's right. La Costa Nostra was Mazzini.

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: A Masonic order, no doubt about it.

[WC]: And this explains the close cooperation between...

[JM]: ...between government and the mafia.

[WC]: That is right.

[JM]: Absolutely. And when we also understand that the old magic practicing priests, that the old Celtic druid priests of ancient England in the person of Merlin the Magician [sic]. When you understand that the old priests, the magicians work their magic on people with their magic wands, and their magic wands were always made out of holly wood. And they're still working their magic today with Hollywood. If you understand how we are being manipulated, we're being programmed...Hollywood is nothing more than an instrument in the hands of the secret societies. And then, Los Angeles...anyone who knows anything about the motion picture industry knows that the real bosses are in New York and back east. Nobody makes any decisions here in Los Angeles. Those decisions are made by some very powerful people behind the scenes in New York and upstate New York.

[WC]: And we're not talking about just Hollywood. We're talking about the media overall in general, including print, television, radio...

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: The whole works and, specifically, what we're looking at is a very sophisticated method of...

[JM]: Manipulation.

[WC]: ...manipulation and brainwashing.

[JM]: And exploitation.

[WC]: Correct.

[JM]: Absolute exploitation of people's ignorance. Somewhere along the line, and as I said to you before a few minutes ago, the greatest enemy this country will ever face--the people who are behind the scenes of government in this country--their greatest enemy is you. You who think too much...as a matter of fact, there was a movie, there was a motion picture called...oh, what was it, a few years back called *Network*, and in the movie, *Network*, at the end of the movie the star, that was a newsman, and he said something to the effect that you don't have to worry about America being destroyed, America's not going anywhere because we feed everybody. So if we go, the whole world goes because we're feeding everybody. But there is something that is lost forever. There is something that has gone, and is legitimately lost, and that is your freedom as an individual human being to be free, to do your own thinking, to be your own person. That is lost. You have been taken over and you don't even know it. And he said the reason why is because you don't read, you don't think, you want to be entertained by Bugs Bunny and *Big Top Pee-wee*, all you want is your recappable tires (laughs) like he says, and all of your creature comforts, and you don't want to put yourself out and so, consequently...[commas?] the law of [comma?] of cause and effect. You have not defended your freedoms, and if you don't defend your freedoms and your rights, then you don't have any.

[WC]: That's correct. Now, let's go back to the symbology and we're talking about the back, the reverse seal of the United States of America.

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: We see at the top of this pyramid--which, by the way, does not have a capstone--we see an eye surrounded by rays, and this eye signifies, really in the beginning, signified the sun.

[JM]: Yeah, of course. Of course, the god of the sun.

[WC]: That's correct, and we see that same symbol as the insignia for CBS.

[JM]: Mmm-hmm, CBS eye, that's right.

[WC]: (laughs) And we also see, in the NBC peacock, a tail and each feather of the tail is an eye on it. And we also see the symbol of one of the information computer networks, America Online is the pyramid with the, again, all-seeing eye.

[JM]: Oh yes, it's everywhere.

[WC]: We see the symbol of Prodigy, which is another computer information service...

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: ...which has as its symbol the pentagram.

[JM]: Of course.

[WC]: And by the way, folks, there's been a lawsuit brought against Prodigy because it has been discovered that, as you sign on to the Prodigy computer bulletin board database system, built into the program that they send you so you can sign on to this system and use it, is a method whereby they actually read the information on your personal hard drive on your personal computer. And I don't know where they go...where that goes or what they do with it, but there has been a lawsuit that's been brought against Prodigy for...they've been caught in the act is what I'm trying to tell you.

[JM]: Yes, right.

[WC]: And it's in court right now. We'll let you know how that's resolved and what happens, but I will tell you, if you're signing on to some of these national computer information database systems, there's a good chance that...

[JM]: You're the one that's being...(laughs)

[WC]: You're the one that is begin...

[JM]: ...computerized.

[WC]: ...probed for information while you think that you're probing them for information. It's actually the other way around, and it's setup intentionally that way.

[JM]:I had an interesting conversation with a very high ranking rabbi in America about three or four years ago. And he had written a book, and I was very interested in it, about symbolism, or occult symbolism in America. Some of the interesting things he brought out was the movie, *Frankenstein*. If you break the word down, "Frank-en-stein," and it goes back to Jacob Frank, and Jacob Frank in Europe was among the leading members of the Illuminati in Europe. And the idea was is that, in the old movie, Boris Karloff comes out and tells you, in the old original 1933 movie of *Frankenstein*, he comes out and says that this is a story about a old [sic] mad scientist at Bavarian University of Ingolstadt, and he has put together all of these nefarious pieces and created a monster, and that's what "Frank-en-stein" meant. And the rabbi was bringing out that all this...this story of Frankenstein was is that Bavarian professor, Adam Weishaupt, had put together a Frankenstein monster to frighten the world, and what he did is he used different people and put them together, the different pieces, into a monster. And so, Hollywood has known these stories. Hollywood is totally aware of all of these symbolism [sic] that's, you know, that's behind these stories. And so, I'm saying there is no way we are going to remain a free people without facing the facts that it's an educated electorate. We love to go around talking about how we have to right to elect. Boy, in America, we have to right to elect, but we don't have the right to *SEE*-lect. That's what the problem is. So, without education, without knowledge and understanding, which comes from many hours of study and listening and understanding and researching on your own, we're not going to remain a free people.

[WC]: And that's really the key, is not to believe anything that you hear from anyone, including me, including you...

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: ...including your own mother. People have got to learn to start digging up and researching and studying...

[JM]: All of this on their own.

[WC]: Absolutely.

[JM]: And then you make it your own. Then you will finally see how we have been had as a people. And believe me, we are in serious trouble, because...the secret societies, the Masonic orders today, when I have asked these Freemasons who is it that is actually running your organization, they will tell you that they have a name for them. They're called the "hidden masters".

[WC]: The hidden supervisors, the...

[JM]: The hidden supervisors, the hidden masters...

[WC]: ...and it's always nine...

[JM]: Right, right.

[WC]: ...and that goes back to the legend of the beginning of the Order of the Rose and Cross...

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: ...and Hiram Abiff, and the whole works, all the way back into history, that there is a round table of nine somewhere who's guiding all the machinations of the secret societies, leading to a one-world government. Now, I don't know if these nine people really exist.

[JM]: It doesn't matter. What we do know...

[WC]: That's exactly right. It doesn't matter. (laughs)

[JM]: It doesn't matter. But what we do know is that it is organized, it is orchestrated and there is a method to the madness.

[WC]: That's correct.

[JM]: And it may not make any sense to you, because you don't know what's going on. But if you were on the inner sanctums [sic] of these criminals, as they are planning their criminology throughout the world and their bloodshed [sic], if you were a fly on the wall meeting with these criminals, then you would see that the things which are happening in the world make sense.

[WC]: That's correct. And also, one of the methods that they manipulate us is to turn us against each other.

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: Racism is a form of this.

[JM]: Yes.

[WC]: Getting different religions to fight against each other is a form of this.

[JM]: But that's a protection to them. As long as you're out fighting somebody else, you're not joining forces to uncover them.

[WC]: It's part of the...

[JM]: Plan.

[WC]: ...detraction..

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: ...the illusion, so that we're not looking in the right corner to see the cockroaches doing the real damage...

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: ...when they crawl out from under the sink at midnight.

[JM]: And that's a very good analogy, because that's just what they are. They're cockroaches.

[WC]: (laughs)

[JM]: One of the most...and, as a matter of fact, they have symbolism in words, as I said, and I want to throw this one at you. In California, we have something called a criminal justice system. Think about it, it's a *criminal* justice system. And they know what they're doing, I mean, they have this thing back in Georgia called the...what is it? The Center of Disease Control. It's not the Center for Disease Eradication, it's the Center of Disease Control. The whole...the way that we have grown up in this country, accepting symbols, emblems, words, institutions, government symbols, we need to educate yourselves that there's a whole world of knowledge there that we have not been privy to know.

[WC]: Well, their concept of us, meaning the normal, everyday guy, and I consider myself to be in that category.

[JM]: Right.

[WC]: I'm just like everybody else out there. Probably, if I never had been a member of the Office of Naval Intelligence, I would never have caught on to any of this and would not be doing what I'm doing right now. So, I'm no different than the average listener out there. It's just that one day I woke up, looked myself in the mirror and said, "Bill, you've been stupid for all of your life." I'm not going to be stupid anymore. Now I've got to do something smart. I've got to wise up, and that's really the only thing that separates me from most other people. So...but, their concept of us is that we're like animals, like cattle. That we don't have any intelligence.

[JM]: Precisely, that's why that say that our offspring are "kids". We have kids.

[WC]: And they rub it in our face.

[JM]: Absolutely.

[WC]: They rub our nose in the...

[JM]: And we go around saying that we have kids. Now, kids are baby goats. That's what they think of us. We're a bunch of goats, a bunch of animals...

[WC]: Cattle.

[JM]: Cattle, and that we deserve...they figure we're going to get taken anyway, because we're so stupid, their idea is that, since we're going to get taken anyway...

[WC]: They might as well do...

[JM]: ...they might as well just go on and do it, because...

[WC]: Somebody's going to do it anyway.

[JM]: Absolutely. So, I'm saying I'm tired of being taken.

[WC]: Me too.

[JM]: And I want to wake the people up around the world to the fact that there's a method to the madness. It is orchestrated, organized, directed and financed by criminals, and until such time as you understand that, you're never going to see this world getting any better. And somebody has to take up the reins, somebody has to do this. And we're putting our lives on the line by doing this, but at this point, I don't care anymore. All I want is to see this master conspiracy uncovered. I'd like to see all of this stuff uncovered for the first time, and that's exactly what this...the people behind our government do not want. They don't want the people to wake up. That's why they give you plenty of liquor stores, to make sure you got plenty of booze and plenty of alcohol and plenty of entertainment...

[WC]: And plenty of dope and plenty of football games...

[JM]: Right, anything!

[WC]: ...and this is all the concept of the old Roman circus.

[JM]: That's it.

[WC]: When the emperor didn't want you to see what he was doing, he would give you...

[JM]: [Bread and] circuses. Entertainment.

[WC]: That's right. Wine...

[JM]: ...on your way out.

[WC]: Folks, I'm going to quote from chapter one of my book, *Behold a Pale Horse*, and I want you to remember this, because this is their philosophy: "A nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence and such people are beasts of burden and steaks on the table, by choice and consent." Now, if you'd like to write to Jordan Maxwell and ask him for further information, or just send him your thoughts and ideas on this program, you can do so in care of Jordan Maxwell, Post Office Box 7442, Burbank, California, 91510. Once again, now write this down. If you don't have a pen and paper, you better get one quick. You know you should never listen to this program, the Hour of the Time, without pen and paper, because you're going to get caught with your pants down every time. The name, once again, is Jordan Maxwell, Post Office Box 7442, Burbank, California, 91510. One more time for the slowpokes: Jordan Maxwell, Post Office Box 7442, Burbank, California, 91510. If you'd like to write to me and ask for a packet of information or give me your comments on this program, write to Post Office Box 1420, Show Low, Arizona, 85901. That's Post Office Box 1420, Show Low, Arizona, 85901. You know, we've done...I guess tonight makes the 23rd hour of programming on the Mystery Schools. This is the only, only media outlet in the world where any of this information has ever been aired in the entirety, in the complexity, and the depth that we have aired it. We've turned over the rocks, we've watched the bugs scurry, we've shined a bright light on them. They consider themselves to be illumined, but I'm going to tell you folks right now: those of you who've been listening to this program regularly are the only illumined, truly illumined people in this world. And where these members of these secret societies pretend to be working for the illumination, the furtherance of the human race and for a thousand years of true peace, they are liars, deceivers, manipulators and criminals. And the only people who are ever going to bring peace into this world will be you and I, the people like Jordan Maxwell, people who really care about peace and security, and about our children and about our future. Remember that, folks, as you go to bed tonight. Remember, we love you here, we're thinking of you. Good night, and God bless you all.

Outro music: none

Hour 25: America's Assignment Part I

Once again, you're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(Intro music: theme music from the movie Blade Runner[138]

Are you one of the people who believe that everything that’s happened through history is an accident? And that, while one or two things that have been planned, that most of history had no intelligent direction forming it, driving it? Well, listen to this folks and listen very carefully.

[Reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:[139]

Those desiring substantial evidence of the unfoldment of the Great Plan should follow the suggestion inscribed upon the monument to Christopher Wren in Saint Paul's Cathedral, and gaze about them. The rapid advancement in the social and political states of man, the increasing richness of human living, and the broadening vision toward individual and collective responsibility herald, with auroral colors, the rising [of the] sun of truth. There is much yet to be accomplished, but already the achievement is impressive. Even the most devout humanist cannot survey the orderly progress of the race and at the same time deny the existence of a well-integrated program.

The light of the ancient Vedas is slowly but surely illuminating the whole world. The vision of man's noble destiny and the sacred sciences which made possible the realization of that vision have been guarded and served by "the Silent Ones of the earth." The priesthoods of the sacerdotal colleges, the hierophants of the Mystery Schools, and the adept-masters of the Secret Societies have been the guardians of man's noblest purpose -- the perfection of his own kind. It is the inalienable right of every honorable person to be grateful for the opportunities which progress bestows. With this appreciation comes also an appropriate measure of resolution. The past proves the future, which is but the extension of good works toward their fullness.

The Mystery Schools neither restrained nor limited the unfoldment of human institutions. Man fashioned his civilization according to his natural instincts and convictions. [And] this process must continue, for growth is not hastened by the interference of authority. Man substantiates with his mind and heart that which he fashions with his hands. The esoteric tradition ensouls "the ordinary works," revealing the larger purposes through the smaller ones. Not so long ago, ninety percent of the population of the earth was in physical slavery. Having liberated his body, the audacious creature must now free his heart and mind. Thus, pressed on by a sovereign necessity, the world conqueror becomes the self-conqueror.

Under a democratic concept of living, the responsibilities for progress pass to the keeping of the people. The powers vested in the governing body functioning with the consent of the governed include not only provisions for collective security, but also the advancement of such religions, philosophers, arts, and sciences as contribute to the essential growth of human character. An administrative system which ignores ethics, culture, and morality cannot survive as a dominant political organism. Democratic institutions must accept the task for which they were fashioned and become the conscious custodians of the democratic destiny.

Progress demands the most from those with the largest spheres of influence. Vast organizations, industrial, political, social, and educational, have been made possible by the modern life-way. These have become the molders of public opinion, feared or respected according to the measure of integrity revealed in their management. The future of human society is intimately associated with the destinies of these vast enterprises which have inherited, along with physical success, the duty or, more correctly, the privilege of world guardianship. Even the continuance of the economic theory now demands the strengthening of ethical convictions. Prominence of any kind, whether bestowed by wealth or authority, carries with it priestly obligations. The leader, whatever be his field, is looked upon for intelligent guidance. His convictions inspire his followers, his words influence their lives, and his policies dominate their activities.

---

[138] theme music from the movie *Blade Runner,* written by Vangelis

[139] Manly P. Hall, *America's Assignment with Destiny*, 1951

There is every indication that the esoteric tradition will next function through that complex of vast interrelated organisms of production and distribution which now dominates human imagination. While this structure may appear to the superficial-minded as heartless and soulless, it is also the largest and most powerful potential instrument for the advancement of mankind ever yet devised. Education, science, and economics are today indivisible. They have already formed a partnership for their mutual advancement. Equipped with knowledge, skill, and the necessary physical resources, this huge combine awaits the destiny for which it was intended.

There is no virtue in burdening the future with the conclusions of today. To prophecy is to restrict, not the will of heaven, but the mind of man. Old principles, as they reveal more of themselves, will be given new names; and progress is always an adjustment of concepts, each of which is in a constant state of change. Assuming, however, that the term democracy, with its numerous imponderable overtones, conveys a conviction of natural unfoldment, it is reasonable to infer that the democratic motion will continue until all of its potentials have become potencies.

Progress is not bound inevitably to any nation or people. Social and political structures are instruments for the advancement of the Great Work only to the degree that they keep the faith. If ambition or selfishness breaks the bond, the privilege of guardianship is forfeited. This does not mean that the project fails; rather, that which fails the project loses the privilege of leadership. The Plan then passes to the keeping of other groups and other ages. Man cannot destroy or pervert the works of destiny. He can only divide himself from those works, and by so doing cease to share in the essential vitality of progress. Thus it is that unreasonable doubts and fears concerning providence are philosophically unsound. Failure is always regrettable, but principles do not fail, and that which is foreordained perfects itself.

Although empires may collapse, great teachers be martyred, schools and systems perish, and enlightened leaders remain unhonored, the substance of the Great Work remains unchanged and unchangeable. New vehicles appear, even as the older ones are betrayed by human selfishness. The Eternal Commonwealth is an assignment of destiny, and spiritual progress, symbolized by the fabled phoenix, rises victoriously from the ashes of the human ruin. The adept tradition has always available social instruments waiting to be ensouled with the larger vision. All things created by men are mortal and destructible, but the way destined by heaven is immortal and indestructible. Universal enlightenment and universal fraternity are the natural ends which reward the social struggle. The world and all that inhabits it are moving triumphantly toward peace and security. At any given time the vision may be obscured, but in the larger dimensions of time, all things work together for the fulfillment of the greater good.

[Stops reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

Is that a piece of excellent, retrospective writing, looking back on history? No, ladies and gentlemen it is not, for this was written by Manly P. Hall in Los Angeles, California in April of 1951. What he predicted is what is happening. A wedding, a marriage between the corporate world and the state, which is coming. He's talking, here, about Socialism under a democratic concept of living; the responsibilities for progress passed to the keeping of the people. The powers vested in the governing body functioning with the consent of the governed include not only provisions for collective security, but also the advancement of such religions, philosophies, arts, and science as contribute to the essential growth of human character.

Humanism: the concept that man will become god, and the new religion will change with the needs of man -- not man conforming to the laws of God. Democratic institutions must accept the task for which they were fashioned and become the conscious custodians of the democratic destiny, and so on and so forth. Manly P. Hall was an adept, a highly degreed -- in fact, he was a 33rd degree Freemason...may of held many, many other degrees in the Secret Societies of Mystery Babylon. He was a priest of the Order.

Now, get comfortable. Make sure that you have everything that you need, folks, because I'm going to take you with me on a journey back to the beginning of all that is. And we are going to come forward from that point to the present, so that you will finally have an understanding of *America's Assignment with Destiny*.

(Music playing: theme music from the movie Blade Runner, written by Vangelis)

[Continuing from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

Three great culture heroes were associated with the origin of Mayan civilization: Votan, who founded the Votanic Empire seated at Palanque; Itzama (Zamna), the Yucatecan hero; and Kulkulkan, whose worship extended throughout the Central American area. All three came from a remote region lying eastward, introduced arts and sciences, and founded religious cults or Mysteries. From the legendary histories of these persons, they should be included as adepts or initiates of ancient Secret Schools, possibly Atlantean.

In a book written in the Quichean language and attributed to Votan, the great one declared himself "a snake," a descendent of Imos of the line of Chan. He came to America, by the command of God, from a distant place. He ultimately founded Palanque, and built a temple with many subterranean chambers, which was called the House of Darkness. Here he deposited the records of his nation in the keeping of certain aged men called guardians. There is a legend[, folks,] that this Votan was the grandson of Noah. The original book containing this report was in the possession of Nunex de la Vega, Bishop of Chiapas, but he destroyed it with the other native manuscripts which he was able to accumulate. Fortunately, however, it had been copied by Aguilar.

Itzamna, according to Cogullodo, was a priest who came with the migrations from the east. He was the son of the supreme deity, Hunab-Ku ([or] the holy one). Itzamna is pictured as an ancient man with a very prominent and strangely shaped nose, either toothless or with one crooked fang. Likenesses of him have been found indicating his birth from a plant growing from the earth. He is also shown rising from the mouth of a serpent or a turtle, to symbolize that he came from the sea. He healed the sick and restored the dead to life. He lived, according to the records, to a great age, and was said to have been buried at Izamal ([or] Itzamal), where his tombs became places of pilgrimages. Itzamna was sometimes called "the Skillful Hand." [And] after his death, his body was divided. His skillful hand was placed in one temple, his heart in another, and the rest of his remains in a third. One of the best known of his emblems was a Tau or T cross.

It is now generally admitted that the Quetzalcoatl of the Nahuatlan people the Gucumatz of the Quiches, and the Kulkulkan of the more southern Mayas were one person. In each language, the word signifies *feathered, plumed, or winged serpent.* This title may have resulted from Quetzalcoatl casting his lot among, or gathering his first followers from, the descendants of Votan. This tribal group had the serpent as its heraldic device. At a remote time this semi-mystical, semi-divine priest-initiate Quetzalcoatl came from the fabled land of the "seven colors" and established his rite at Tulla and Cholula.

Quetzalcoatl was the initiate-philosopher and teacher of the Nahuatlan tribes of Central Mexico. Among the appelations of this priest-prophet-king are "he who was born of the virgin," "Lord of the Winds," and "the Divine Incarnation." Quetzalcoatl was the son of the universal creator-god and the virgin Sochiquetzal, and his conception was made known by an ambassador from the god of the Milky Way.

Torquemada, in his *Indian Monarchies*, described a band of people who came from the north dressed in long black robes. Arriving at Tulla, these strangers were well received; but finding the region already thickly Populated, they continued to Cholula. These wanderers were great artists, and skilled in working metals. Quetzalcoatl was their leader. Mendieta, in his *Ecclesiastical History*, described Quetzalcoatl as a white man with a strong formation of body, broad forehead, large eyes, and a flowing beard. He wore a miter on his head, and was dressed in a long white robe reaching to his feet, and covered with a design of red crosses. In his hand he held a sickle. His habits were ascetic; he never married, and was most chaste and pure in his life, and is said to have endured penance in a neighboring mountain, not for its effect upon himself, mid you, but as an example to others. He condemned sacrifices, except of fruit or flowers, and was known as the god of peace; for when addressed on the subject of war, he is reported to have stopped his ears with his fingers.

Fray Bernardino de Sahagun described Quetzalcoatl as very homely, with a long head and a very long beard. There was a recumbent statue of him in the temple at Tulla which was always covered with blankets. "His vassals," writes the good Fray, "were all workmen in the mechanic arts and skillful in cutting the green stones called Chalchivites, also in the art of smelting silver and making other objects. All these arts had their origin and commencement with Quetzalcoatl, who had houses made with these precious green stones called Chalchivites and others made of silver, still others made of red and white shells, others all made of boards, and again others of turquoises, and some all made of rich plumes...

"Quetzalcoatl also owned all the wealth of the world in gold, silver, and the green stones called Chalchivites, and other precious things; and had a great abundance of cocoa-trees of different colors, which are called xochicacatlao. The said vassals of Quetzalcoatl were also very wealthy, and did not lack anything at all; they never suffered famine or lack of corn; [in fact] they never ate even the small ears of corn, but rather heated their baths with them, using them instead of firewood. They also say that the said Quetzalcoatl did penance by pricking his limbs and drawing blood, with which he stained the maguey points; that he bathed at midnight in a spring called xicapaya."

The interpreter of the *Codex Telleriano-Remensis* said that Quetzalcoatl was created by the breath of Tonacatecotli. Quetzalcoatl was born on the day of Seven Canes, and disappeared or died on the day of One Cane. He was identified with the planet Venus. The *Codex Vaticanus A.* says that the hero founded four temples: the first for the princes; the second for the people; the third, the House of Fear or Serpents; and the fourth, the Temple of Shame. The *Codex Chimalpopca* says that Quetzalcoatl was born as a nine-year-old child. When he resolved to leave Mexico, he reached the seashore, and, removing his clothing and his snake mask of turquoise, destroyed himself by fire. His ashes changed into birds, and his heart became the morning star. He remained four days in the underworld and four days as a corpse. After that he ascended to heaven as a god.

It is specifically mentioned by Sahagun that Quetzalcoatl created and built houses under the earth. [Now] traces of subterranean grottoes and rooms have been discovered in the vicinity of most of the architectural monuments of the Nahuas. There is a vast complex of such apartments near the Pyramid of the Sun at San Juan Teotihuacan. The Amerindians believed the serpent to be an earth dweller, and it is quite possible that the accounts implied these subterranean and secret places to be chambers of initiation into the mysteries of the cult. According to de Bourbourg, the Mexican demigod Votan made a journey through a subterranean passage which, running under ground, terminated at the root of heaven. This passage was "a snake's hole," and Votan was admitted because he was himself "a son of the snake."

Quetzalcoatl appeared as the great sorcerer, magician, or necromancer. He performed miracles, and upon his departure his secrets were entrusted to an Order of priests governed by a hierophant or Master. This priesthood practiced the arts and sciences, treated the sick, administered sacraments, and were diviners and prophets. Landa gives some consideration to the activities of these religious Orders.

Lucien Biart summarizes the available data [thusly]: "The most contradictory ideas have been current in regard to this divinity, who, now considered of celestial origin, and now regarded as a man who had acqu...He certainly belonged to a race other than the one he civilized; of that there can be no doubt, but what was his country? He died, announcing that he would return at the head of white-faced men; and we have seen that the Indians believed his prophecy fulfilled when the Spaniards landed on their shores [and of course we have seen the consequences of that action.] According to Sahagun, the most usual ornaments of the images of Quetzalcoatl were a miter spotted like the skin of a tiger, a short embroidered tunic, turquoise earrings, and a golden collar supporting fine shells. The legs of these images were encased in gaiters of tiger-skins, and on their feet were black sandals. A shield hung from the left arm, and in the right hand was a scepter ornamented with precious stones, an emblem which terminated in a crook like a bishop's crosier."

Quetzalcoatl is credited with the invention of the pictorial or hieroglyphical method of writing, and especially is his name associated with the *Tonalamatl*, or *Book of Fate*. This was more than a civil calendar and was reserved for the calculation of human destiny and prophecies concerning the future of the State. It was used by "master magicians," the chief of whom was an astrological adept credited with extraordinary occult powers. While it is likely that Quetzalcoatl brought the *Tonalamatl* back to Mexico after his journey among the Mayas, a people already advanced in such matters, the Aztecan legend has been summarized by Mendieta. The gods had created a man, Oxomoco, and a woman, Cipactonatl, as the progenitors of the human race. They [according to the legend] dwelt in a cave at Cuernavaca, and in order to regulate their lives these two resolved to devise a calendar. Cipactonatl felt that her descendant, Quetzalcoatl, should be invited to participate in the project. Because she was the mother of all the living and a great prophetess, Cipactonatl was privileged to select and write the first sign or day-symbol of the calendar. The others followed until the thirteen signs were completed.

Sahagun, in his *General History*, gave a number of details of the struggle between Quetzalcoatl, the civilizer, and Tezcatlipoca, who apparently signified the primitive and sanguine religious cult of Mexico. The old priesthood, which practiced human sacrifice and adhered to a policy of war and destruction, resented the peaceful and gentle faith brought by Quetzalcoatl. In the end, Tezcatlipoca, the personification of the sorcerers, contrived to poison the god-king, which implies that his doctrines were corrupted by false teachings and interpretations.

The poison worked slowly and insidiously, until Quetzalcoatl, realizing that he could not combat successfully the old perverted priesthood, left Tulla, ordering his palaces of gold and silver, turquoise and precious stones to be set afire. Accompanied by a procession of musicians, youths, and maidens bearing flowers, and flocks of singing birds, the old adept journeyed to Cholula, where the great pyramid was built in his honor.

It was written that the Cholulans deeply admired the great priest because of the purity of his life, the kindliness of his manner, and his doctrines of peace and brotherhood. He remained with them for nearly twenty years, slowly sickening from the poison which was destroying his body. At last he realized that his ministry was coming to an end, so he continued his long journey toward the mysterious city of Tlapallan from which he had come. He turned toward the east and proceeded to the sea, which he reached at a point a few miles south of Veracruz. Here he blessed the four young men who had accompanied him and bade them return to their homes, with his promise that one day in the future he would return and restore his kingdom among them.

[Stops reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

It's time for our break, folks. Don't go away. I'll be right back, after this very short pause.

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

(break music: possibly theme music from the movie Blade Runner, written by Vangelis)[140]

Ladies and gentlemen, I would like to introduce to you a young man who has come to be my right-hand, my assistant, who has come to learn as much as he can. And, of course, I am going to learn as much I can from him. His official title around here is Research Assistant. Mr. Tom Swift will continue with the rest of tonight's program.

[Tom Swift]: Where we left off:

[Tom Swift reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

[Quetzalcoatl had just promised] the four young men...that one day in the future he would return and restore his kingdom among them.

Then the old and weary man called to the sea, and out of the waters came a raft of serpents. He stepped upon this strange craft and was carried away into the land of the sun's beginning. He left behind him a priesthood that perpetuated with esoteric rites the Mysteries of the Feathered Serpent. There is every indication that the cult of Quetzalcoatl was kept secret, a precaution necessary in the face of the opposition of the primitive indigenous sects.

There are several accounts of the death or departure of Quetzalcoatl. The conflict is due in part to the legends being derived from different tribes, and in part to the Spanish methods of gathering the reports. These invaders took slight interest in the native traditions, until they had destroyed most of the available sources of information. Later, even the converted Indians were uncertain of their tribal history. There is reason to believe, however, that some sacred records were intentionally suppressed and were never available to the missionaries. The people of Mexico claim to have sacred accounts of the mysteries of their religion and the origin of their race. There is mention of the *Divine Book* written by Tezcucan, a wise man or wizard, whose name means Lord of the Great Hand. This was supposed to contain the account of the migration of the Aztecs from Asia. Baron de Waldeck claimed that the book had once been in his possession. De Bourbourg thought it was the *Dresden Codex*, and Bustamante wrote that native historians had a copy in their possession at the time of the fall of Mexico. There is good probability that manuscripts of great value survived the Spanish colonial period and are still available to certain qualified persons.

---

[140]

Augustus LePlongeon, known to the Yucatecans as Great Black Beard, was one of the few Americanists to be accepted into the confidence of the ever-reticent Indians. They told him enough to convince a thoughtful man of the existence of Esoteric Schools in the Mayan area. "That sacred mysteries," writes LePlongeon, "have existed in America from times immemorial, there can be no doubt." Even setting aside the proofs of their existence, that we gather from the monuments of Uxmal, and the descriptions of the trials of initiation related in the sacred book of the Quiches, we find vestiges of them in various other countries of the Western Continent.

"The rites and ceremonies of initiation were imported to Peru by the ancestors of Manco Capac, the founder of the Inca dynasty, who were colonists from Central America, as we learn from an unpublished Manuscript, written by a Jesuit father, Rev. Anello Oliva, at the beginning of the year 1631, in Lima; and now in the library of the British Museum in London."

A number of authors have tried to prove that Quetzalcoatl was a foreigner who, reaching the shores of the New World at an early time, attempted the civilization of the aboriginal tribes. Lord Kingsborough favored the possibility that this wanderer was the Apostle Thomas, and that the ancient Central American Indians came under Christian or Jewish influence.

Always deeply concerned with the possibilities of linking the worship in the Americas with the religions of the Near East, his lordship writes: "The Messiah is shadowed in the Old Testament under many types; such as those of a lion, a lamb, a rose, the morning star (or the planet Venus, otherwise called Lucifer), the sun, light, a rock, a stone, the branch, the vine, wine, bread, water, life, the way, and he is recognized in the triple character of a king, a priest, and a prophet. It is very extraordinary that Quetzalcoatl, whom the Mexicans believed equally to have been a king, a prophet, and a pontiff, should also have been named by them Seyacatl, or the morning star; Tlavizcalpantecutli, or light; Mexitli, or the vine (for Torquemada said that the core of the aloe, from which the Mexicans obtained wine, was so called); Votan, or the heart, metaphorically signifying life; and Toyliatlaquatl, '*manjar de nuestra veda,*' bread (for his body made of dough was eaten by the Mexicans)."

Las Casas, quoting Padre Francisco Hernandez, says that an old Yucatecan described the ancient religion of his people thus: "That they recognized and believed in God who dwells in heaven, and that this God was Father and Son and Holy Spirit, and that the Father was called Icona, who had created men and all things, that the Son was called Bacab, and that he was born of a virgin called Chibirias, who is in heaven with God; the Holy Spirit they termed Echuac." The son Bacab was scourged and crowned with thorns, was tied upon a cross with extended arms, where he died; but after three days he arose and ascended into heaven to be with his father. Dr. Alexander, who reports this story in his book, is inclined that it is confused and probably distorted by the Spanish recorder. On the other hand, the universal distribution of this basic theme may be explained another way.

Among the Lacandones, Quetzalcoatl is still represented as a snake with many heads. There is an account that this snake was killed and eaten at times of great national peril, especially at eclipses, which were regarded as portents of disaster. It was believed by the Mayas that Kulkulkan descended invisibly from the sky and personally received the offerings during certain great feasts held in his honor.

Daniel Brinton, in his *Essays of an Americanist*, devoted some thought to the magical powers attributed to the priests of Central America. He mentioned Father Baeza and an English priest, Thomas Gage, who reported cases of sorcerers transforming themselves into animals, and performing miracles. De Bourbourg was not entirely convinced that ventriloquism, animal magnetism, or the tricks familiarly employed by conjurers explained the mysteries of nagualism, as the black art of these Indians is called. Brinton quotes from the *Popul Vuh*: "Truly this Gucumatz Quetzalcoatl became a wonderful king. Every seven days he ascended to the sky, and every seven days he followed the path to the abode of the dead; every seven days he put on the nature of a serpent and he became truly a serpent; every seven days he put on the nature of an eagle and again of a tiger, and he became truly an eagle and a tiger;..." It is evident from available authorities that the Mayas and Aztecs had an extensive body of legendary and lore, which originated in the mysteries of their religions and proves the existence of an elaborate system of secret rites and ceremonies.

In the form of a feathered snake, Quetzalcoatl overshadowed a dynasty of rulers and priests, some of whom later assumed his name and even his mask-symbol. These later Quetzalcoatls have been confused, like the several Zoroasters of Persia, into one person, with the resulting conflict in dates. Recent excavations would indicate that the cult of the feathered serpent was established before the beginning of the Christian Era and did not arise in the tenth or eleventh century A.D. as held by some modern archaeologists. It is more likely that the ancient hero was said to have been reborn or to have overshadowed a later leader of the nation.

All the accounts imply that the religious Order which served the Mysteries of Quetzalcoatl was long established. Those who followed in the way which he had prescribed lived most severe lives. Children were consecrated to his temples from their birth and were marked by a special collar. At the end of the second year the child was scarified in the breast. When it was seven years old it entered a seminary where it took vows covering personal conduct and public duties, including prayers for the preservation of its family and its nation. There were many of these priestly Brotherhoods, and the Spanish missionaries, in spite of their theological prejudices and intolerances, were forced to admit that the Aztecan priests were excellent scholars and lived austere and pure lives. It was said of these missionaries that "in Quetzalcoatl, who taught charity, gentleness, and peace, they thought they saw a disciple of Jesus Christ."

The kings of the Mexican nations, like those of ancient Egypt, were also initiates of the State Mysteries. Torquemada described the attainments of Nazahualpilli, the king of Texcuco. This learned man gathered about him masters of the sciences and arts, and gained a wide reputation as an astrologer and seer. When Montezuma was elected to rule over the complex of Nahuatlan nations, King Nazahualpilli stood before the young man and congratulated the entire nation for having selected such a ruler: "Whose deep knowledge of heavenly things insured to his subjects his comprehension of those of an earthly nature." The interpreter of the *Collection of Mendoza* described Montezuma as: "By nature wise, an astrologer and philosopher, and skilled and generally versed in all of the arts, both in those of the military, as well as those of a civil nature, and from his extreme gravity and state, the monarchy under his sway began to verge towards empire."

The great serpent clothed in quetzal plumes certainly belonged to another race and came from an unknown country. Lucien Biart says: "It is an incontestable fact that Quetzalcoatl created a new religion, based upon fasting, penitence, and virtue." In skillful trades and in metalworking, this Amerindian savior reminds one of the craftsman of Tyre who cast the ornaments for Solomon's Temple. As a benefactor of his people, as a liberator of men's minds and hearts, this Nahuatlan demigod certainly revealed the attributes of the "Master Builder."

Scattered through the jungle of Yucatan and extending northward into Chiapas and southward into Honduras and Guatemala are the remains of ancient cities and the ruins of old cultural centers, religious or educational, dedicated to scientific research and the investigation of the spiritual mysteries of human life. These shrines and temples are adorned with numerous religious emblems and figures, and closely resemble the temples and schools of the esoteric tradition which were scattered through the Mediterranean countries, North Africa, and the Near East.

The Aztecs inhabiting the valley of Mexico certainly derived much of their cultural impetus from the more highly civilized Mayas. These Nahuas practiced elaborate rites and ceremonies, and recognized a large pantheon of divinities. It seems unlikely that the Aztecs patterned their religious concepts from some inferior cultural tradition. There are positive indications that the tribes of Central Mexico had received an important intellectual stimulus from the Mayas, and even found it expedient to acknowledge this indebtedness.

The physical remains of the Mayan civilization are sufficiently impressive to indicate a highly advanced people, whose religious institutions and rites had reached a considerable degree of refinement. Most early writers, in an attempt to estimate the cultural attainments of these nations, have been over influenced by the early theologians and scientific enthusiasts who invaded the field with a variety of concepts and preconceptions.

The empires of the Mayas and Aztecs were resplendent with edifices dedicated to their faiths. There were magnificent shrines, temples, and altars, some to sanguinary deities, and others to benign and kindly gods. The State Mysteries, however, were seldom performed in the sanctuaries of popular worship. Neophytes traveled to remote places, and if they went uninvited, seldom returned. Throughout the jungles are the ruins of extraordinary buildings constructed for unknown purposes. The Mysteries of Xibalba, as recorded in the *Popul Vuh*, and traditionally associated with the culture-hero Votan, were given in such an architectural complex, which served as an entrance to a mysterious world beyond the dimensions of the material mind.

Such "gateways" existed in all the old countries where the Mystery religion originally flourished. Obviously, archaeologists cannot discover the secret rites merely by grubbing among the overturned and broken stones. As the priesthoods were not considerate enough to label their monuments, there is little left today even to excite curiosity. Fortunately, however, the esoteric tradition survives in the racial subconscious, and its violated schools and colleges need not be physically restored. When such restoration is attempted, the buildings usually reveal that they were designed as symbols of the cosmos.

If the Mystery system actually existed in the Western Hemisphere, as the landmarks seem to indicate, it must have produced by its initiates and by its adepts. These, in turn, became the leaders and saviors of their peoples. The wonder-working hero, whose deeds enriched all tribal traditions, always and everywhere performed the exact same miracles, possessed the exact same powers, and made the exact same personal sacrifices. The Mystery School required not only a hierarchy for its maintenance and perpetuation, but also appropriate places of initiation partly underground or adjacent to grottoes and caverns. It required also a body of lore peculiarly significant, participation in which conferred special rights and privileges. A people which had reached this mental platform of the Mayas would not have accepted a philosophy of life that was without profound and significant values. Pagan priesthoods did not initiate those of feeble mind, but selected for spiritual advancement persons of high attainment and mature judgment.

Albert Reville, in the *Hibbard Lectures*, 1894, notes of the religion of the plumed serpent: "There was something mysterious and occult about the priesthood of this deity, as though it were possessed of divine secrets or promises, the importance of which it would be dangerous to undervalue."

It is fortunate, indeed, that at least one manuscript relating to the religious Mysteries formerly practiced in the Mayan area has been recovered. The *Popul Vuh*, or *The Senate Book of the Quiches*, the Record of the Community, has survived the numerous vicissitudes which have conspired to prevent the perpetuation of the literary monuments of Central America. It was tolerated by the early missionaries who, observing certain similarities to their own Scriptures, preserved the work as a means of persuading the Indians to a more speedy baptism. In the seventeenth century, it was rescued from a fate worse than oblivion by the Dominican monk, Don Ramon de Ordonez y Aguiar, dean and chancellor of the archbishopric of Ciudad Real. This work was deposited in the library of the convent at Chichicastenango by its scholiast, Ximenes, where it remained until they year 1830.

[Stops reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

[William Cooper]: Thank you, Tom. Ladies and gentlemen, that was his first time ever speaking over radio around the world. Of course, he's called into talk shows before, but this is different when you're sitting at the microphone and it's your thing. When you know that one slip could cause a flood of letters and protest. Tom sat here and performed admirably while we were experiencing a terrible wind storm. You may have heard strange noises in the background. Those were pieces of trees, and wood, and lawn furniture, and just about everything that you could think of flying through the air hitting the house. So he had an awful lot of competition vying for his attention and it took a great effort, along with his natural nervousness, in doing this for the first time, took a great effort to maintain, keep his attention on what he was doing, and complete that half of the Hour of the Time.

[William Cooper talks about mailing letters.]

Tonight's broadcast, ladies and gentlemen, came from a book entitled *America's Assignment with Destiny* by Manly P. Hall. Some of you may be able to find this in your library or any used book store. It has been out of print for may years. It was copyrighted in 1951, printed by the Philosophical Research Society, which was headed by Manly P. Hall at that time. Now, you may not realize this, but Manly P. Hall has died in the last several years and, bit by bit, the unbelievably huge library that he had accumulated over his years that made up the bulk of the Philosophical Research Society has disappeared.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(Outro music: possibly theme music from the movie Blade Runner, written by Vangelis)[141]

[Additional recording after outro music - Tom Swift reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

...the wings of a bat.

Naturally, the account is clothed in the culture symbolism of the Mayas, but it is certainly to be compared with such productions as the Finnish *Kalavala* and the Icelandic *Eddas*. Guthrie presents a number of important parallelisms to the Mysteries of the Egyptians, the Chaldeans, and the Greeks. According to him, the twelve trials, or tests through which the neophytes pass are analogous with the signs of the zoidac. It goes so far as to hazard the speculation that the twelve princes of Xibalba were the rulers of the Atlantean empire, and their final destruction referred to the tragic end of Atlantis.

The *Popul Vuh* follows the traditional form by involving its principle characters in a series of superhuman and supernatural adventures. The work is certainly an account of the "perilous journey," which is the usual means employed to veil thinly the story of initiation. By comparison with the oral traditions of the Northern Amerindian tribes, the legend unfolds what Dr. Paul Radin beautifully calls "the road of light." Medicine priests have freely acknowledged that in dreams and trances they could leave their bodies and travel to the abodes of the gods and of the dead. To make this journey while still living is initiation, for it is conscious participation in the fact of immortality.

In some cults the neophyte was given sacred drugs to intensify his psychic faculties, as in the case of the notorious Peyote sect, or was subjected to hypnotic influence, like the followers of the ghost-shirt religion. By some means a condition of death was simulated and the consciousness or superior self passed through certain internal experiences, of which at least a partial memory was preserved.

[Stops reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*]:

[William Cooper]: Thank you, Tom. Ladies and Gentlemen, this was Tom's first experience at speaking on radio, and especially on a show that's listened to as this one is, all over the world, with several million people nightly. And, of course, he was nervous. We also experienced a windstorm during his portion of the broadcast there were boards and pieces of wood hitting the house. Lawn furniture hitting the house and the patio furniture blew away down the mountain somewhere...going to have to go get it. Under these adverse circumstances, and with all of this competing for his attention, I think Tom performed admirably. And I think over time, he is going to get much, much better. I certainly appreciate his coming to help me. And the work that he has done already has been an absolutely wonderful, he is very good at everything he attempts to do. And you are going to be hearing a lot more from Tom Swift.

---

[141]

Now, tonight’s program, folks, was taken from a book entitled *America's Assignment with Destiny* by Manly P. Hall. It was copyrighted in 1951. And it’s difficult to find in many areas of the country, and that’s why we are going to bring you the entire text of that book on these programs over the next few nights. So if you can get a copy, that's fine. Get it and read it because then you can study it, underline it and pay close attention to what you're doing. If you can’t find the book, then stay tuned to the Hour Of The Time, and we are going to bring it to you in its entirety.

As you can already begin to discern, there is a tremendous parallel, and in some cases, exact duplication, of what happened in the early history in the Middle East and in Europe. Specifically, with the ancient religions, the Mystery Schools, the priesthood and the teachings of these ancient religions. As we go along, you are going to find that it becomes even more similar and there was probably a direct connection between the ancient Mystery Schools and the Indians of both continents of North and South America.

Folks, I hope you enjoyed tonight’s broadcast. Good night, and God Bless you all.

(closing music: unknown instrumental music)

Hour 26: America's Assignment, Part II

You're listening to the only hour that ever was, or ever will be. You're listening to the Hour of the Time, during which you will decide your future and, thus, our collective futures. I'm your host William Cooper.

(opening music: theme music from the movie Blade Runner, written by Vangelis)

Tonight's program, ladies and gentlemen, comes from a book by Manly P. Hall, named *America's Assignment with Destiny*. And last night, we had our young research assistant do the last half of the program. We understand that some of his narrative could not understood, as it was his first try at radio broadcasting. And we're going to continue to work with him. And he's going to get better and he's going to do some more programs on the Hour of the Time, because we like to share everything around here and give everybody a chance to be the best that they can be.

So, I'm going to continue tonight where I left off at the halfway point in the program to make sure that nobody misses any portion of any of this series. And we continue now.

[Reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*, written by Manly P. Hall]:

(start of quote)
===

It was written that the Cholulans deeply admired [Quetzalcoatl] the great priest because of the purity of his life, the kindliness of his manner, and his doctrines of peace and brotherhood. He remained with them for nearly twenty years, slowly sickening from the poison which was destroying his body. At last he realized that his ministry was coming to an end, so he continued his long journey toward the mysterious city of Tlapallan from which he had come. He turned toward the east and proceeded to the sea, which he reached at a point a few miles south of Veracruz. Here he blessed the four young men who had accompanied him and bade them return to their homes, with his promise that one day in the future he would return and restore his kingdom among them.

Then the old and weary man called to the sea, and out of the waters came a raft of serpents. He stepped upon this strange craft and was carried away into the land of the sun's beginning. He left behind him a priesthood that perpetuated with esoteric rites the Mysteries of the Feathered Serpent. There is every indication[, folks] that the cult of Quetzalcoatl was kept secret, a precaution necessary in the face of the opposition of the primitive indigenous sects.

There are several accounts of the death or departure of Quetzalcoatl. The conflict is due in part to the legends being derived from different tribes, and in part to the Spanish methods of gathering the reports. [Now,] these invaders took slight interest in the native traditions, until they had destroyed most of the available sources of information. Later, even the converted Indians were uncertain of their tribal history. There is reason to believe, however, that some sacred records were intentionally suppressed and were never available to the missionaries. The people of Mexico claim to have sacred accounts of the mysteries of their religion and the origin of their race. There is mention of the *Divine Book* written by Tezcucan, a wise man or wizard, whose name means Lord of the Great Hand. This was supposed to contain the account of the migration of the Aztecs from Asia. Baron de Waldeck claimed that the book had once been in his possession. De Bourbourg thought it was the *Dresden Codex*, and Bustamante wrote that native historians had a copy in their possession at the time of the fall of Mexico. [Now,] there is good probability that manuscripts of great value survived the Spanish colonial period and are still available to certain qualified persons.

Augustus LePlongeon, known to the Yucatecans as Great Black Beard, was one of the few Americanists to be accepted into the confidence of the ever-reticent Indians. They told him enough to convince a thoughtful man of the existence of Esoteric Schools in the Mayan area. "That sacred mysteries," writes LePlongeon, "have existed in America from times immemorial, there can be no doubt. Even setting aside the proofs of their existence, that we gather from the monuments of

Uxmal, and the descriptions of the trials of initiation related in the sacred book of the Quiches, we find vestiges of them in various other countries of the Western Continent.

"The rites and ceremonies of initiation were imported in Peru by the ancestors of Manco Capac, the founder of the Inca dynasty, who were colonists from Central America, as we learn from an unpublished [manuscript], written by a jesuit father, Red. Anello Oliva, at the beginning of the year 1631, in Lima; and now [it resides] in the library of the British Museum in London."

A number of authors have tried to prove that Quetzalcoatl was a foreigner who, reaching the shores of the New World at an early time, attempted the civilization of the aboriginal tribes. Lord Kingsborough favored the possibility that this wanderer was the Apostle Thomas, and that the ancient Central American Indians came under Christian or Jewish influence.

Always deeply concerned with the possibilities of linking the worship in the Americas with the religions of the Near East, his lordship writes: "The Messiah is shadowed in the Old Testament under many types; such as those of a lion, a lamb, a roe, the morning star (or the planet Venus, otherwise called Lucifer), the sun, light, a rock, a stone, the branch, the vine, wine, bread, water, life, the way, and he is there recognized in the triple character of a king, a priest, and a prophet. It is very extraordinary that Quetzalcoatl, whom the Mexicans believed equally to have been a king, a prophet, and a pontiff, should also have been named by them Ceyacatl, or the morning star; Tlavizcalpantecutli, or light; Mexitli, or the vine (for Torquemada said that the core of the aloe, from which the Mexicans obtained wine, was so called); Votan, or the heart, metaphorically signifying life; and Toyliatlaquatl, '*manjar de nuestra veda*,' bread (for his body made of dough was eaten by the Mexicans)."

Las Casas, quoting Padre Francisco Hernandez, says that an old Yucatecan described the ancient religion of his people thus: "That [they] recognized and believed in God who dwells in heaven, and that this God was Father and Son and Holy Spirit, and that the Father was called Icona, who had created men and all things, that the Son was called Bacab, and that he was born of a virgin called Chibirias, who is in heaven with God; the Holy Spirit they termed Echuac." The son Bacab was scourged and crowned with thorns, was tied upon a cross with extended arms, where he died; but after three days he arose and ascended into heaven to be with his father. Dr. Alexander, who reports this story in his book, is inclined to feel that it is confused and probably distorted by the Spanish recorder. On the other hand, the universal distribution of the basic theme may be explained another way.

Among the Lacandones, Quetzalcoatl is still represented as a snake with many heads. There is an account that this snake was killed and eaten at times of great national peril, especially at eclipses, which were regarded as portents of disaster. It was believed by the Mayas that Kulkulkan descended invisibly from the sky and personally received the offerings during certain great feasts held in his honor. (For details [of this,] consult *The Mythology of All Ages, Vol. XI, Latin American*, by Hartley Burr Alexander.)

[Now,] Daniel Brinton, in his *Essays of an Americanist*, devoted some thought to the magical powers attributed to the priests of Central America. He mentioned Father Baeza and an English priest, Thomas Gage, who reported cases of sorcerers transforming themselves into animals, and performing [other] miracles. De Bourbourg was not entirely convinced that ventriloquism, animal magnetism, or the tricks familiarly employed by conjurers explained the mysteries of nagualism, as the black art of these Indians is called. Brinton quotes from the *Popul Vuh*: "Truly this Gucumatz [Quetzalcoatl] became a wonderful king. Every seven days he ascended to the sky, and every seven days he followed the path to the abode of the dead; every seven days he put on the nature of a serpent and he became truly a serpent; every seven days he put on the nature of an eagle and again of a tiger, and he became truly an eagle and a tiger;..." It is evident from available authorities that the Mayas and Aztecs had an extensive body of legendary and lore, which originated in the mysteries of their religions and proves the existence of an elaborate system of secret rites and ceremonies.

In the form of a feathered snake, Quetzalcoatl overshadowed a dynasty of rulers and priests, some of whom later assumed his name and even his mask-symbol. These later Quetzalcoatls have been confused, like the several Zoroasters of Persia, into one person, with the resulting conflict in dates. Recent excavations would indicate that the cult of the feathered serpent was established before the beginning of the Christian Era and did not arise in the tenth or eleventh century A.D. as held by some modern archaeologists. [In fact,] it is more likely that the ancient hero was said to have been reborn or to have overshadowed a later leader of the nation.

All the accounts imply that the religious Order which served the Mysteries of Quetzalcoatl was long established. Those who followed in the way which he had prescribed lived most severe lives. Children were consecrated to his temples from their birth and were marked by a special collar. At the end of the second year the child was scarified in the breast. When it was seven years old it entered a seminary where it took vows covering personal conduct and public duties, including prayers for the preservation of its family and its nation. There were many of these priestly Brotherhoods, and the Spanish missionaries, in spite of their theological prejudices and intolerances, were forced to admit that the Aztecan priests were excellent scholars and lived austere and pure lives. It was said of these missionaries that "in Quetzalcoatl, who taught charity, gentleness, and peace, they thought they saw a disciple of Jesus Christ."

The kings of the Mexican nations, like those of ancient Egypt, were also initiates of the State Mysteries. Torquemada described the attainments of Nazahualpilli, the king of Texcuco. This learned man gathered about him masters of the sciences and arts, and gained a wide reputation as an astrologer and seer. When Montezuma was elected to rule over the complex of Nahuatlan nations, King Nazahualpilli stood before the young man and congratulated the entire nation for having selected such a ruler: "Whose deep knowledge of heavenly things insured to his subjects his comprehension of those of an earthly nature." The interpreter of the *Collection of Mendoza* described Montezuma as: "By nature wise, an astrologer and philosopher, and skilled and generally versed in all the arts, both in those of the military, as well as those of a civil nature, and from his extreme gravity and state, the monarchy under his sway began to verge towards empire."

The great serpent clothed in quetzal plumes certainly belonged to another race and came from an unknown country. Lucien Biart says: "It is an incontestable fact that Quetzalcoatl created a new religion, based upon fasting, penitence, and virtue." In skillful trades and in metalworking, this Amerindian savior reminds one of the craftsman of Tyre who cast the ornaments for Solomon's Temple. As a benefactor of his people, as a liberator of men's minds and hearts, this Nahuatlan demigod certainly revealed the attributes of the "Master Builder."

[William Cooper: Folks, are you beginning to hear the implications that this may be connected to the Ancient Mysteries and directly to Freemasonry? For that is exactly what Manly Hall is putting across.]

Scattered through the jungle of Yucatan and extending northward into Chiapas and southward into Honduras and Guatemala are the remains of ancient cities and the ruins of old cultural centers, religious or educational, dedicated to scientific research and the investigation of the spiritual mysteries of human life. These shrines and temples are adorned with numerous religious emblems and figures, and closely resemble the temples and schools of the esoteric tradition which were scattered through the Mediterranean countries, North Africa, and the Near East.

The Aztecs inhabiting the valley of Mexico certainly derived much of their cultural impetus from the more highly civilized Mayas. These Nahuas practiced elaborate rites and ceremonies, and recognized a large pantheon of divinities. It seems unlikely that the Aztecs patterned their religious concepts from some inferior cultural tradition. There are positive indications that the tribes of Central Mexico had received an important intellectual stimulus from the Mayas, and even found it expedient to acknowledge this indebtedness.

The physical remains of the Mayan civilization are sufficiently impressive to indicate a highly advanced people, whose religious institutions and rites had reached a considerable degree of refinement. Most early writers, in an attempt to estimate the cultural attainments of these nations, have been overinfluenced [sic] by the early theologians and scientific enthusiasts who invaded the field with a variety of concepts and [of course] preconceptions.

The empires of the Mayas and Aztecs were resplendent with edifices dedicated to their faiths. There were magnificent shrines, temples, and altars, some to sanguinary deities, and others to benign and kindly gods. The State Mysteries, however, were seldom performed in the sanctuaries of popular worship. Neophytes traveled to remote places, and if they went uninvited, seldom[, if ever,] returned. Throughout the jungles are the ruins of extraordinary buildings constructed for unknown purposes. The Mysteries of Xibalba, as recorded in the *Popul Vuh*, and traditionally associated with the culture-hero Votan, were given in such an architectural complex, which served as an entrance to a mysterious world beyond the dimensions of the material mind.

Such "gateways" existed in all the old countries where the Mystery religion originally flourished. Obviously, archaeologists cannot discover the secret rites merely by grubbing among the overturned and broken stones. As the priesthoods were not considerate enough to label their monuments, there is little left today even to excite curiosity. Fortunately, however, the esoteric tradition survives in the racial subconscious [whatever that is], and its violated schools and colleges need not be physically restored. When such restoration is attempted, the buildings usually reveal that they were designed as symbols of the cosmos.

If the Mystery system existed in the Western Hemisphere, as the landmarks indicate, it must have produced its initiates and adepts. These, in turn, became the leaders and saviors of their peoples. The wonder-working hero, whose deeds enriched all tribal traditions, always and everywhere performed the same miracles, possessed the same powers, and made the same personal sacrifices.

The Mystery School required not only a hierarchy for its maintenance and perpetuation, but also appropriate places of initiation partly underground or adjacent to grottoes and caverns. It required also a body of lore peculiarly significant, participation in which conferred special rights and privileges. A people which had reached the mental platform of the Mayas would not have accepted a philosophy of life that was without profound and significant values. Pagan priesthoods did not initiate those of feeble mind, but selected for spiritual advancement persons of high attainment and mature judgment.

Albert Reville, in the *Hibbard Lectures*, 1894, notes of the religion of the plumed serpent: "There was something mysterious and occult about the priesthood of this deity, as though it were possessed of divine secrets or promises, the importance of which it would be dangerous to undervalue."

It is fortunate, indeed, that at least one manuscript relating to the religious Mysteries formerly practiced in the Mayan area has been recovered. The *Popul Vuh*, or *The Senate Book of the Quiches*, the Record of the Community, has survived the numerous vicissitudes which have conspired to prevent the perpetuation of the literary monuments of Central America. It was tolerated by the early missionaries who, observing certain similarities to their own Scriptures, preserved the work as a means of persuading the Indians to a more speedy baptism. In the seventeenth century, it was rescued from a fate worse than oblivion by the Dominican monk, Don Ramon de Ordonez y Aguiar, dean and chancellor of the archbishopric of Ciudad Real. The work was deposited in the library of the convent at Chichicastenango by its scholiast, Ximenes, where it remained until 1830.

The manuscript of the *Popul Vuh* was rediscovered about 1855 by Dr. Scherzer in the library of the University of San Carlos, Guatemala City. Through the industry and scholarship of that ardent antiquarian, the Abbe Brasseur de Bourbourg, this mysterious book of the Quiches came at last to the French language, where it lingered for years awaiting English translation. Dr. Scherzer was responsible for a Spanish version published in Vienna in 1856. The first English translation has remained practically unknown to students of Central American archeology, as it appeared serially in *The Word*, a magazine devoted to Theosophical and related subjects. The translation was made by Kenneth S. Guthrie, M.A., Ph.D., M.D., and was based upon the French text. A new English translation from the Spanish of Adrian Recinos has just been issued by the University of Oklahoma Press [and, folks, that was in 1951]. This version is by Delia Goetz and Sylvanus G. Morley, and includes important introductory and commentary material.

Writing under the pseudonym Aretas, James Pryse issued part of the *Popul Vuh* with learned commentaries under the title *The Book of the Azure Veil*. This ran in *Lucifer*, a theosophical magazine, between September 1894 and February 1895. It concluded with a note that circumstances made it impossible for the translator to finish the work.

Pryse suggests that the god Quetzalcoatl was known in Peru under the name of Amaru. He writes: "From the latter name comes our word America. *Amaruca* is, literally translated, 'Land of the Plumed Serpent.' The priests of this God of Peace, from their chief centre in the Cordilleras, once ruled both Americas. All the Red men who have remained true to the ancient religion are still under their sway. One of their strong centres was in Guatemala, and of their Order was the author of the book called *Popul Vuh*."

Although Dr. Scherzer published his copy under the title *Las Historias del origen de los Indios de Guatemala, par el R. P. F. Francisco Ximenes*, this is misleading. Ximenes was not the author, but acted in the capacity of scribe, translator, and commentator. The work is said to have been compiled originally in the seventeenth century by a Guatemalan who had been converted to Christianity. Most American Indians are unsatisfactory converts, for they accept new beliefs without discarding old convictions. This is a most fortunate state of affairs, as there is little indication that the indigenous mythology has been compromised. The source of the material compiled by this convert is completely unknown, but it could well have been derived from a secret book or from oral tradition guarded in the sanctuaries of the Mysteries. [Now,] to have secured it, the compiler must himself have been a priest or initiate. Certainly, the *Popul Vuh* is by far the outstanding available text on pre-Columbian mythology and cosmogony [existing].

The Quichean scribe, in his introduction to the *Popul Vuh*, writes: "The following is what we shall write, and we place it in writing because, since the 'Word of God' has been promulgated, and hereafter during the cycle of Christianity, the Book of the Azure-green-veil is no longer to be seen, in which it could be clearly perceived that it had come from the further shore of the Sea; which Book has been called 'The Record of our existence in the Overshadowing World, and how we there beheld Light and Life.'" ([Now] note [that] this translation by Pryse is somewhat fuller than that given by Guthrie, and seems to be more in the spirit of the Quiche tradition.) [And] the implication[, folks] is that the work originated behind the Azure Veil. This can have two meanings: either the veil which divides the spiritual universe from the material world, or the veil in the temple of initiation, behind which are the Seven Lords of the Great Heart.

The *Popul Vuh* consists of a mythology gradually mingling in its descent with the beginnings of history. The early part deals almost entirely with superhuman beings, and the latter part with the heroic deeds of authentic personages. It opens with a description of the creation. All was calm and silent, and the face of the earth was not yet to be seen. In the eternal darkness and quietude was the Creator -- the Lord and Maker -- and Gucumatz, the plumed serpent. They were surrounded with green and azure, and they were those who engendered. Then "The Word" came and spake with them, and they joined their counsels. Those who engender then said: "Let it be done. Let the waters retire and cease to obstruct, to the end that it be sown, and that the light of day shine in the heavens and upon the earth; for we shall receive neither glory nor honor from all that we have created and formed until human beings exist, endowed with sentience." Thus the Creator said: "Earth," and immediately it was formed.

The book proceeds much in the spirit of the Scriptures of other nations. It is divided generally into four parts: cosmogony, theogony, anthropology, and regeneration through initiation. It is presented in semihistorical form and includes the initiation of its heroes into the Mysteries of Xibalba.

The heroes of the *Popul Vuh* are subjected to several ordeals or tests of courage, fortitude, and skill. The seventh test took place in the House of the Bat. This was a subterranean labyrinth inhabited by weird monsters and ruled over by Camazotz, a fearful creature with the body of a man and the wings and head of a bat.

Naturally, the account is clothed in the culture symbolism of the Mayas, but it is certainly to be compared with such productions as the Finnish *Kalavala* and the Icelandic *Eddas*. Guthrie presents a number of important parallelisms to the Mysteries of the Egyptians, Chaldeans, and Greeks. According to him, the twelve trials or tests through which the neophytes pass are analogous with the signs of the zodiac. He goes so far as to hazard the speculation that the twelve princes of Xibalba were the rulers of the Atlantean empire, and their final destruction referred to the tragic end of Atlantis.

==

(end of quote)

Well, folks, it's time to take our break. Don't go away. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

(break music: theme music from the movie Blade Runner, written by Vangelis)

[Reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*, written by Manly P. Hall]:

(start of quote)
===

The *Popul Vuh* follows the traditional form by involving its principle characters in a series of superhuman and supernatural adventures. The work is certainly an account of the "perilous journey," which is the usual means employed to veil thinly the story of initiation. By comparison with the oral traditions of the Northern Amerindian tribes, the legend unfolds what Dr. Paul Radin beautifully calls "the road of light." Medicine priests have freely acknowledged that in dreams and trances they could leave their bodies and travel to the abodes of the gods and the dead. To make this journey while still living is initiation, for it is conscious participation in the fact of immortality.

In some cults the neophyte was given sacred drugs to intensify his psychic faculties, as in the case of the notorious Peyote sect, or was subjected to hypnotic influence, like the followers of the ghost-shirt religion. By some means a condition of death was simulated and the consciousness or superior self passed through certain internal experiences, of which at least a partial memory was preserved.

The entire process of creation took place within the green and azure coils of the plumed serpent. On several continents the serpent was among the important symbols of the initiate-priest. Sometimes the serpent stands erect and is crowned, as in Egypt, or it may be winged as among the Mongolians, or feathered and plumed as throughout the Americas. Obviously, the natives did not intend to imply that they believed in the actual existence of winged snakes, for no such creatures ever existed among them. The serpent was a wisdom symbol, and when plumed it meant that wisdom had been given wings and had become spirit-wisdom, or illumination.

Pryse suggests that Matthew 10:16 explains the symbolism of the snake-bird: "Behold, I send you as sheep...into the midst of wolves...: be ye therefore wise as serpents..., guileless as doves...."

[William Cooper: Now, let me read the same passage from Matthew 10:16 again with the Mystery Religion meaning:]

"Behold, I send you as...[neophytes] into the midst of...[the profane]: be ye therefore wise as...[magicians], guileless as...[mystics]." Mr. Pryse was a Greek scholar and his translation differed slightly from the King James Version [(laughs) as you can see]. He felt that the quetzal had the same meaning as dove, and that the creature combining the serpent-wisdom and the bird-intuition or -inspiration represented the adept, in whom the mind and heart doctrine were completely reconciled.

The conflict between the initiate and the adversary, or the paths of white and black magic, is always present. In the story of Deganawida, the power of evil was personified by Atotarho, an old war chieftain, who had a cluster of venomous serpents on his head in place of hair. The Mexican Quetzalcoatl was attacked by the red god of war. The adversary personified either older cults which opposed the establishment of the benevolent Mysteries or later cults responsible for the destruction of these institutions. In either case an inferior state of spiritual enlightenment was implied. The Mysteries were institutions of liberation and were naturally opposed by groups seeking to keep their people in bondage through ignorance. The struggle was, therefore, between religion as temporal authority and the Mystery faith-the internal "road of light." The ruins of the past explain why it was the common belief that the men of good spirit, the initiates, were sacrificed to the material ambitions of temporal rulers.

[William Cooper: Now, folks, you can apply this same logic to the Mystery Religion of today, where they refer to the adversary. They are talking about the same religious institutions, governments and groups of people that Mr. Hall refers to in discussing the ancient Mystery Religions of the Aztecs and Mayans. Only in their modern writings, they will never disclose that.]

All the aboriginal tribes of North America practiced mystical and magical rites, and vestiges of an esoteric tradition, served by a priestly class distinguished for sagacity and personal integrity, are still to be found among surviving groups. Scattered over a vast area and divided further by lack of a common language, these nomadic bands were approaching the horizon of national existence when the European colonists conquered their lands, decimated their tribes, and destroyed their cultural patterns. So diversified were the traditions of these peoples that it is difficult to summarize their beliefs and doctrines, especially after their legends, histories, and religious institutions were corrupted by outside influences.

The European colonists were of no mind to search for the mystical secrets of the Indian "life-way." These settlers brought their own religious beliefs, which they were resolved to force upon the natives. There were no ethnologists or anthropologists among the Puritans, and many important landmarks of Indian philosophy were destroyed before the had been honestly investigated or appraised. Most of the tribal lore was in the keeping of priests and elders, and if these were killed or died without finding suitable successors the traditions ended. Even today older Indians find it difficult to select younger men to perpetuate the sacred institutions. Thus it is unwise to assume that from available fragments a complete picture of Indian mysticism can [ever] be reconstructed.

The Indian has always been an individualist, and neither circumstance nor inclination induced him to form extensive intertribal organizations. His way of life and the vast silences of his homeland caused him to turn within himself for courage, wisdom, and faith. He could not visit distant shrines of learning or sit at the feet of famous teachers. There were no books to ponder and no ancient sages to guide his religious convictions. Few strangers visited his camp with news or opinions from places. He was part of a small family, and the tribal life, with its simple lore, was his only source of cultural tradition.

A thoughtful observer of Nature about him, the Indian lived constantly in the presence of mysteries, with no reference frame other than his own imagination. Though stoical in appearance, he was highly emotional, as indicated by his songs, dances, and festivals. His sensory perceptions were acute, and his legends indicate strong dramatic instincts.

Among advanced tribes, according to Dr. Franz Boas: "...an elaborate series of esoteric doctrines and practices exists, which are known to only a small portion of the tribe, while the mass of the people are familiar only with part of the ritual and with its exoteric features. For this reason we often find the religious beliefs and practices of the mass of a tribe rather heterogeneous as compared with the beliefs held by the priests.

Among many of the tribes in which priests are found, we find distinct esoteric societies, and it is not by any means rare that the doctrines of one society are not in accord with those of another...Esoteric forms of religion in charge of priests are found among the tribes of the arid region of the Southwest, the tribes of the southern Mississippi basin, and to a less extent among the more northerly tribes on the Plains. It would seem that, on the whole, the import of the esoteric teachings decreases among the more northerly and northeasterly tribes of the continent."

The medicine priests were trained by their predecessors or were called to their life work by some miraculous incident. The little Indian boy who early in life showed a tendency to dreams and visions was encouraged to select this career. In a highly organized tribal system, he was initiated into the religious institutions of his nation, receiving the lore of the old priests and fragments of tribal history. If he belonged to some small, wandering band, his entire spiritual education had come from within and was induced by fasting and vigil. The vigil was the most widely practiced religious discipline of the Amerinds. In all matters of emergency or great decision the Indian sought solitude. He went alone to some high place, built a small campfire, planted about him a circle of prayer plumes, smoked the ceremonial pipe, and waited through the long hours of the night for the "voices."

The "voices" instructed him in the herbs of healing, taught him the songs and dances, and brought him news of what was transpiring in distant places. There are many stories about medicine priests learning to leave their bodies at will and journeying into the shadowland to guide the dying to the home of ghosts. Many of these grand old mystics were wise in the ways of the spirit, and should be regarded as duly initiated members of Esoteric Orders.

The miraculous powers of the medicine priests extended over a wide variety of phenomena. They healed the sick, protected their tribes, [they] directed the migrations of their peoples, and sought by extrasensory means the location of food, water, and other necessities. They predicted the future, [they] induced rain and storms, projected themselves to distant places, and read the hearts and minds of their fellow men. It was in their power to induce visions and trances, and to receive the impressions of the star-spirits. They also gained considerable proficiency in the mesmeric and hypnotic arts.

[One] Charles F. Lummis, who spent many years among the Southwest Indians of the United States, described the miracles performed by the medicine priests. Although naturally skeptical, his experiences among the Navajo and Pueblo Indians impressed him deeply. Mr. Lummis mentioned how Indians seated in their medicine lodge created miniature thunderstorms within the room, accompanied by flashes of forked lightning, while the outside sky was entirely clear. He says: "How the effects are produced I am utterly unable to explain, but they are startlingly real." He was also impressed by the ability of the priests to change themselves into animals in the presence of spectators. Some priests could create an artificial sun inside the lodge. This miniature luminary rose in the eastern side of the room, crossed overhead, and set in the west during the performance of the sacred chants.

[Now,] Amerindian priests grow the sacred corn in exactly the same way that the East Indian mendicant grows his mango tree. The magician plants the seed which grows immediately, and about three hours later the stalk is laden with fully developed ears of corn.

Other writers have reported that in some of the medicine lodges the Indians are able to levitate large stones and to cause their own bodies to float in the air. Unprejudiced observers have been forced to conclude that among most tribes of Amerinds magical rituals are performed involving the use of natural forces beyond the normal experience of human beings.

The Amerindic concept of cosmogony paralleled, in a general way, that of the Chaldeans and other peoples who dwelt in the valley of the Euphrates. The world consisted of three regions, with human beings inhabiting the surface of the central zone. Above this middle land was an airy expanse extending to the abode of the Sky-Father. Below the surface were subterranean levels extending downward to the place of the earth-mother. This cavernous region was like the dark and shadowy underworld of the pre-Homeric Greeks.

In the Southwest legends, human beings originated beneath the earth in a kind of paradisaical land. There, also, were mountains, valleys, and beautiful plains, and a sun and moon that lighted the region. In the beginning everyone was happy, but later an evil deed brought upon them the wrath of the gods. In most accounts this lovely shadowland was destroyed by a flood. In some miraculous manner a few righteous persons were preserved and took refuge on a tall plant, which, growing rapidly, finally broke through the surface of the middle land, bringing the survivors to safety.

The secrets of healing, prophecy, and magic came to the Indian from an order of beings called *manitos*. This Algonquian word is now applied to the concept of powerful governing spirits. The *manitos* were not actually gods, but superhuman manlike creatures, possessing extraordinary attributes and frequently considered as giants. The size factor, however, is figurative rather than literal. The *manitos* were a divine invisible tribe -- masters of magic -- to whom human beings could turn for help and guidance whenever necessity arose.

The effort to explain the term *manitos* as only signifying a "wonderful power" and synonymous with the Iroquois *orenda* is not sufficient to meet the requirements of the Indian religious philosophy. Orenda conveys more precisely a power or energy universally present in animate and inanimate creatures, and manifesting through the vital processes which cause things to exist, to function, and to affect other existing and functioning things. It might be safer[, folks,] to assume that the *manitos* represented the intelligence controlling and directing the "wonderful power." The Indian, therefore, was confronted with the same basic question which disturbs even the most advanced physicist, namely: Is there a supreme intelligence governing universal procedure?

"The religious concepts of the Indians," writes Dr. Boas, "may be described in two groups -- those that concern the individual, and those that concern the social group, such as tribe and clan. The fundamental concept bearing on the religious life of the individual is the belief in the existence of magic power, which may influence the life of man, and which in turn may be influenced by human activity. In this sense magic power must be understood as the wonderful qualities which are believed to exist in objects, animals, men, spirits, or deities, and which are superior to the natural qualities of man."

Most religions and metaphysical philosophies include hierarchies of divine creatures, or tutelary spirits, as mediators between the Supreme Being and mortals. The *manitos* acted as wise distributors of the *orenda*. The Indian fashioned these demigods in his own likeness, but bestowed upon them superior powers. The *manitos* were aware of the most secret human thoughts and the most pressing human needs, and were capable of responding immediately to the rituals of the priests and elders. When the medicine man journeyed to the spirit land, he might be invited to attend a council of *manitos*. When he came to the Great Lodge in the sky, it resembled an earthly council place, except that it was larger, more elegant, and usually filled with a strange light. The *manitos* were venerable sachems, usually handsome old men, their faces full of kindness. There was a council fire, the smoking of the calumet, and the usual speeches and discussions. The Lodge was a kind of superphysical senate where all matters of grave import were decided. When the session was concluded, the priest returned to his people along the "sky road" and reported the decisions of the Great Lodge.

Between the *manitos* and mankind were the souls of the illustrious dead. These were the Olds and the Trues, the sages of long ago, the great chieftains, warriors, and statesmen. They had led their people in life, so they continued to guard them from the other land, speaking through the medicine men. It seemed natural to the Amerinds that the heroes who had gone before should continue to serve the tribes they had guided in the long ago.

Totemism was a kind of heraldry among the Indians. The totem was the clan symbol; but [even] more than that, it was a channel for the distribution of *orenda* through the social and political structure of the clan. The totemic animal or bird was a spirit guardian, helpful because the creature possessed attributes superior in some particular to those of man. The attribute might be swiftness, strength, cunningness, or resourcefulness, and these qualities the totem creature shared with those under its guardianship. Each Indian also had his own totem, and while it took a familiar form it was identical in principle with the guardian daemon described in works on the Egyptian and Chaldean Mysteries. It was considered a good omen to see one's totem while practicing vigil, or in dreams or trances. It proved the proximity of a protecting power.

The Abbé Phavenet, a missionary to the Algonquians, identifies the totem (from *ote*, the *ototeman* of the Chippewas) with the *manito* concept in these words: "It is to be presumed that in uniting into a tribe, each clan preserves its *manitou*, the animal which in the country whence the clan came was the most beautiful or the most friendly to man, or the most feared, or the most common; the animal which was ordinarily hunted there and which was the ordinary subsistence of the clan, etc.; and this animal became the symbol of each family and that each family transmitted it to its posterity to be the perpetual symbol of each tribe [[or] clan]." Modern ethnologists have emphasized that the popular usage of the term *totem* is incorrect. The symbol is not strictly religious, but involves a social and family concept with emphasis upon the importance of kinship.

==

(end of quote)

(William Coopers offers an information packet)

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: One More Kiss, Dear, written by Vangelis, from the movie Blade Runner)

Hour 27: America's Assignment, Part III

Welcome, across America and around the world, to the most unusual hour you will ever hear. This is the only hour that ever was, or ever will be. This is the most important hour in your entire life, for, during this hour, you will decide your future and, thus, our collective futures. I'm William Cooper, and this is the Hour of the Time.

(opening music: unknown orchestral waltz)

Tonight, ladies and gentlemen, we continue with *America's Assignment with Destiny*.

You remember, we talked about the history of the religion in the Mystery School of the ancient Aztecs, the Mayans and the other American Indians of the old Americas, before Europeans supposedly set foot upon the shores. As you will hear, it's entirely possible and, indeed, highly probable that, not only Europeans, but people from the Middle East and from the continent of Africa, set foot upon these shores long, long before Columbus ever dreamed...*ever dreamed* of reaching India by sailing toward the west. In fact, if you've been listening closely to the previous episodes of *America's Assignment with Destiny*, you may have already understood that the Indians were practicing almost exactly the same Mystery Religion that was present in the Middle East and in Egypt long, long before the birth of Christ.

[Reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*, written by Manly P. Hall]:

(start of quote)
==

Many tribes, especially the Plains Indians, believed that thunder and lightning were caused by enormous birds -- the rumbling sounds in the sky accompanying storms were due to the flapping of their wings, and the flashes of light were caused by the opening and closing of their eyes. In some groups, only one thunderbird was recognized; in other tribes, there were several of various colors or a family of them. The appearance of the bird, or birds, is not definitely given; it might be similar to a large hawk, an eagle, or even a grouse. The thunderbird could use its wings as a bow to shoot arrows, and small meteors were believed to be the heads of these arrows. On the Plains, thunderstorms were said to result from a contest between a thunderbird and a huge rattlesnake, or dragonlike monster. Persons struck by lightning, if they recovered, were accepted as sages or holy men, having received a very strong medicine from [this] experience.

In some areas the thunderbird was closely associated with the religious Mysteries or Societies. Those who saw this creature in their vigils usually considered themselves as intended for a religious life. The myths and legends of the thunderbird are similar to the European and Asiatic accounts of the fabled phoenix, which [you're hearing an awful lot about it, even today. The phoenix] nested in flames and symbolized initiation and adeptship. [And today, it symbolizes the New World Order, rising from the ashes of the Old -- death and rebirth, resurrection, reincarnation. All of these are the symbols, or symbolized by the phoenix.] Early drawings of the Great Seal of the United States indicate that the bird represented thereon was a phoenix rather than an eagle [that you see today]. Like the Mexican coat of arms, which shows an eagle with a serpent in its claws, the American device is strongly reminiscent of a thunderbird. These creatures were also said to inhabit a sky-world above the clouds, and served as messengers between mortals and the heavenly beings.

Farther south the thunderbird symbol merged with the quetzal and the serpent feathered with quetzal plumes. The quetzal was identical in meaning with the phoenix of Asia, North Africa, and the Near East. The feathered-serpent symbolism can be traced back to the hooded Nagas, or serpent gods of India, and to the winged serpents which occur in the writings and sculpturings of the [ancient] Egyptians.

The serpent was the messenger and servant of the earth-mother because it dwelt below ground. For this reason rattlesnakes were released during the snake dances, in order that they might carry the petitions of the tribe to the mother who dwelt below. Birds were also carriers of tidings, and as they flew upward they bore with them prayers to the Great Father who lived in the Sky-Lodge. The thunderbird was the most powerful and was the lord of flying things. and the feathered snake was symbolic of the mysteries of the upper and lower regions. Priestly Orders served this twofold cult, the secrets of which were revealed only by an internal mystical experience.

[William Cooper: Now, remember, the ancient Egyptian religion? They had the mysteries of the upper and lower regions, and the "Priestly Orders served this twofold cult," also, the androgynous god.]

...Brinton, describing various devices used by the Amerindian tribes to conserve their religious secrets, says: "All these stratagems were intended to shroud with impenetrable secrecy the mysteries of the brotherhood. With the same motive, the priests formed societies of different grades of illumination, only to be entered by those willing to undergo trying ordeals whose secrets were not to be revealed under the severest penalties."

[William Cooper: Now, anyone who's listened to our 26 episodes of the series on Mystery Babylon, the Mystery Schools, will recognize the exact same religious philosophy that permeated first, the old Mediterranean world and northern Africa, and then through the episodes of the Crusades and the Templars was brought into Europe, and persist to this day, all over the world.]

"The Algonkins had three such grades...[Remember, the three degrees of initiation? Three degrees in six acts, or eighteen...6-6-6? The three grades of the Algonkins were] the *waubeno*, the *meda*, and the *jossakeed*, the last[, of course] being the highest. To this no white man was ever admitted. All tribes appear to have been controlled by these secret societies."

[William Cooper: Just as our modern society is controlled by the Mysteries today.]

Among the Amerindians, Secret Societies existed for the perpetuation and enlargement of the choicest knowledge of the tribe.

[William Cooper: Remember, the heart and soul of the Mysteries is illumination, the light, Lucifer. Lucifer, of course, is represented by the sun, which is the wisdom of the world. (laughs) It represents the intellect. Remember, the Garden of Eden, the story that Lucifer, through his agent, Satan, enticed Eve, and thus, man, to eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge and told them that they would not surely die, and that they would be as gods? Well, this is the promise. And with that gift of intellect that man received from Satan, indirectly from Lucifer, man himself will become god. This is the heart and soul of the Mystery Schools.]

There were war associations, healing cults, and Fraternities concerned with the religious Mysteries, the keeping of records, and the dramatization of myths. There were ethical societies, orders of mirth-makers, fire-walkers, and hunters, presided over by elders who had distinguishing regalia. Women frequently became leaders of these groups. Among the Pueblo Indians there were often a dozen or more Societies in one village. While their objectives were not always parallel, there was no friction [among] the memberships and they united in all common responsibilities The Indian was always a tolerant man on the subject of spiritual convictions. He never inquired as to the faith of his guest, but expected that every true believer would conduct himself in an honorable way. He respected the rites of strangers, and if he did not share in them or did not understand their meanings, he kept a respectful silence.

The reference to the dramatization of myths suggests that a member of Indian tribes were practicing the same methods of presenting religious Mysteries that were employed by the Greeks and [the] Egyptians. Most Indian festivals emphasized songs and dances, but the songs were used principally to establish rhythms and the words were of slight importance. Chants were a vital element in most healing ceremonies.

Either the Western Hemisphere received a vital religious stimulus from early voyagers and travelers from distance parts or else the Indian himself by mystical experiences shared a common inspiration with the priestly castes of other nations. The psychologists would probably assume that the esoteric tradition originated in the spiritual needs of the human being, regardless of his race or place of habitation.

[William Cooper: But that does not fit any test of common sense. In fact, it's ludicrous.]

The search for reality gradually brought into being specialized groups of intensive truth seekers. [And] these groups produced their own leaders, and such wise men and women were acknowledged as divinely inspired, received spontaneous admiration and devotion, were obeyed for their superior endowments, and gradually became a priestly caste. [Now,] civilization enlarged the temporal state of the tribe, the religious Societies grew to become powerful institutions, as in Central America. While the tribes remained nomadic, the medicine men were less resplendent and impressive, but their functions were no less significant.

These holy persons seldom took part in war, and frequently were distinguished by a costume combining elements of male and female attire.

[William Cooper: And, remember, the god is an androgynous god: bi-polar, male/female, positive/negative, bad/good, divine and evil, all within the same. [sic] And this is the truth; this is the reality in all of the Mysteries.]

This practice [of wearing male and female attire] has been common throughout the religious world and has influenced the dress of pagan priests and Christian clergy alike. [For example, the Catholic priest...the Catholic bishop.] The androgynous human being, in whom there is a spiritual union of male and female attributes, has been widely accepted as personifying a superior type capable of a greater understanding of the Father-wisdom and Mother-love potencies of Divinity. Such symbolism [ladies and gentlemen] existed in all [of] the great Esoteric Orders of the past.

While ethnologists may be reluctant to admit that the Indians had any formal concept of an esoteric religion, examination into the secret beliefs of the priests of the various tribes shows that they were verging toward the adept tradition, even if it had not matured among them. The Midewiwin, or Great Medicine Society of the Ojibways, initiated both men and women into the secrets of the art of healing and the control of the vital current coursing through the nerve centers of the human body. The Society of the Mides, or shamans, had birchbark rolls which depicted the arrangements of the lodges and included many strange pictographs. Of these, W.J. Hoffman writes: "To persons acquainted with secret societies, a good comparison for the Midewiwin charts would be what is called a trestle board of a Masonic order, which is printed and published and publicly exposed without exhibiting any secrets of the order; yet it is not only significant, but useful to the esoteric in assistance to their memory as to the details of the ceremony."

The secrets of the Midewiwin were originally communicated to mankind by an initiate-priest, Manabozho, or Great Rabbit, who was a servant of the Good Spirit. The cross was an important symbol in the Midewiwin Rites, and it is interesting that the Mides steadfastly refused to give up their religion and be converted to Christianity.

The controversy as to the possible Masonic significance of the Midewiwin Rites may be noted, but has slight bearing upon the essential facts. Although the birchbark rolls have bestowed prominence upon the activities of this Society, other tribes practiced equally significant rituals and ceremonies. Candidates advanced through four degrees, traveling toward the east, [and where have you heard that before, steady listeners?] and the lodge rooms were enclosures open to the sky and connecting with each other through doors and passageways [so that they could look upon the celestial sphere]. The neophyte was tested and subjected to trials and hazards and also was presented with a sequence of visual arrangements of symbols and other esoteric paraphernalia. The purpose of the Great Medicine Society was to enlighten the human mind and soul and to bind the initiates to the service of their people. It included a method for stimulating extrasensory perceptions and personal investigation into the secrets of Nature.

In 1919, Arthur C. Parker was invited into a secret lodge of the Senecas to witness their ceremonies. Here he heard the legend of Red Hand, a culture hero, who could hold conversation with the Great Mystery. From the Great Mystery he learned to love all the creatures of the earth, and he spoke the language of the birds and animals. Red Hand was slain by a poisoned arrow because he would not reveal to his assassin the secret of his spiritual power. The animals, discovering by the power of scent that their brother-friend had been killed, gathered in council about his body to find a means of bringing him back to life.

Each of the creatures gave part of himself to restore Red Hand to the living. At last the bear came forward, and grasping the hand of the martyred hero raised him by the strong grip of his paw. Those acquainted with the ritual of the Third Degree of the Blue Lodge of Freemasonry will realize that this story must have originated among the rituals of the esoteric schools.

[William Cooper: Because it is the exact same ceremony of the raising of the Master Mason at the end of the initiation of the Third Degree by the grip of the Lion's paw.]

Mr. Parker, himself a 32° [Freemason], sums up the account of his experience in the rites of the Senecas, [thusly]: "Little has been told; the door has only been held ajar the slightest space and no[, no] secrets have been revealed. There were feather wands and deerskins, but no purple robes or crowns. Yet, who shall say that the Senecas have not the thread of the legend of Osiris or that they have not an inherent Freemasonry?" [And, indeed, who *can* say?]

In the area centering in what is now New York State and extending north and south a considerable distance, the five, later six, nations compromising the Iroquois League attained a high state of social and political integrity. The two great leaders of these Amerinds were Deganawida and Hiawatha. It is impossible to study the life of Deganawida, whose coming was announced by a mysterious visitor from the heaven-world, without realizing that he fulfilled all the requirements of the adept tradition. Deganawida was born of an immaculate conception...

[William Cooper: Let me say that again for you, folks:]

Deganawida was born of an immaculate conception, possessed the power to work miracles, prayed and fasted, practiced the vigils, was confirmed in his mission by the Great Father, and passed through numerous trials and persecutions. Hiawatha became his first and most distinguished disciple, and these two working together sought to establish everlasting peace among their peoples.

The founder of the Inca dynasty of Peru was the initiate-statesman, Manco Capac, who flourished in the eleventh century A.D. He reformed the social and religious life of the tribes of the Aymara Quichua race. In the capital city of Cuzco which he built, Manco Capac established the religion of the sun. He was a statesman of ability, and claimed to be a direct descendant of the sun god. The empire of the Incas which he founded is remembered especially for its experiments in socialized living. Peru has the distinction of having cradled the first successful Utopia.

[William Cooper: And, folks, I would argue with that. If it was so successful, where is it today? Manly P. Hall probably would disagree with that, saying that for its time it was a successful Utopia. Utopia means "perfect," folks, it means the best. It means the fulfillment of all (laughs) the ideals, and could never pass away, if it was, in fact, a successful Utopia. And that's the problem with these priests of the Mystery Religion and their dream of a world Utopia made up of *imperfect* men, ruled by imperfect men, who have other agendas; who have selfishness; who covet; who steal and lie. We all struggle with those things every day, and anyone who stands before me and tells me that they do *not* struggle with these imperfections of man and with the temptations of the material world and of the flesh, then I see before me a liar.]

Manco Capac emerges as one of the world's outstanding social reformers, with a vision thousands of years ahead of his time. He is said to have brought with him to Peru a divine bird in a sacred wicker hamper. This golden falcon is a form of the phoenix, and testifies to the presence of the adept doctrine. Manco Capac combines in his own person the offices of priest and king, like the Melchizedeks of Christian mysticism.

[William Cooper: Christian mysticism? Oh, yes, ladies and gentlemen. You didn't know this, but Christianity started out as a secret society and later, later was even named the "Friendly Open Secret Society". Wasn't open at all. [sic] And it had degrees of initiation, which exist in the priesthood, even today.]

Although some historians may be a trifle impulsive when they suggest that Manco Capac was a Buddhist priest, there can be no doubt that the Peruvian culture was heavily influenced by symbols, rituals, and philosophical elements usually associated with the trans-Himalayan area of Central Asia.

[William Cooper: Now, if Manco Capac was not a Buddhist priest from the Far East, how did he bring these teachings to the Indian people, who had never seen or heard of him before, and knew not from whence he came?]

In Deganawida, with his Great League, Quetzalcoatl-Kukulcan and his splendid socialized empires in Mexico and Central America, and Manco Capac and the communal system which he set up in Peru, we have three clear and definite accounts of initiates-leaders establishing schools of esoteric doctrines in the Western Hemisphere. From a consideration of their attainments and the systems which they inaugurated, we can come to but one conclusion[, ladies and gentlemen]: The Mystery Schools of antiquity were represented in the Americas by institutions identical in principle and in purpose with those of Asia and the Mediterranean countries.

===

(end of quote)

How could this be? How, indeed. Is it true that at one time, according to the theory of plate tectonics, that all of the continents were together in one? And that there was free interchange and activity conducted between all of the peoples of the earth? Were they, indeed, at one time ruled by one great ruler in one great city? And was there at one time, one great continent in the whole world known as Atlantis? And was the scattering of the peoples and the mixing of the languages -- and the tangling of the tongues described in the Bible -- was this merely the breakup of that one continent as the plate tectonics began to move away from each other? As the Earth's crust shrank and molten magma compressed below began to push up and separate...separate the piece of land from each other? Was this is the scattering of the peoples? Was this the destruction of the Tower of Babel? Was this...was this the real truth of what happened in history?

It doesn't say that here. This is what has come to mind in my own research, and may account for many of the legends of all the peoples of the earth. We have much more studying to do; much more putting together of the pieces of the puzzle. But, folks, of all the studies that have ever been made, we believe that our conclusions are probably closer to the truth than anyone else has ever, ever come. In any case, we hope we are, and if we're not, we certainly will pick up the thread the truth, wherever it leads us. And if we turn out to be wrong, you will be the first to hear it.

But it appears to us that at one time...at one time, all of the peoples of the world had a common source of religion and knowledge, and that, somehow, these people were scattered over the earth, and lost their contact with each other, and lost their contact with the source of their religion and their knowledge. And even though *some...some* of the portions of their society and some of their religions may differ slightly, at the heart and core of *all* of them, they are the same. And *that* is what is important: that you understand that, somehow, the great Mystery Religions and the great societies that existed in ancient Egypt, and Mesopotamia, and Greece and eventually in Europe were nothing new to the peoples who lived in South America, and North America, and on the Asian continent. And the Mysteries were even known to the Aboriginals in the continent of Australia, in the islands of New Guinea, in the rainforests of the Amazon jungle.

So you see, folks, what we are talking about here is not the story...not the story of one sacrificed king; but the story existed amongst all peoples, in all areas, of all the islands, and continents, and lands of the world, to all peoples, there appeared a man who taught the same teachings, who experienced the same persecutions, and ultimately the same death. The sacrificed king that we, in the western world, have always known as Jesus Christ. Was it the same man who appeared to all peoples? Or were they different men, sent by God, who appeared to all peoples? Or were they merely men who pulled off, in their different cultures and societies, the greatest hoax in the world?

I don't know the answer to these questions at all. What I believe in Jesus Christ, I believe through faith alone. For, indeed, no one has ever been even able to even prove that the man really lived and walked upon the face of this earth in the Middle East -- and I am speaking of the man we know as Jesus Christ -- and not all of the other people who appeared to various cultures and various societies in the world who fulfilled the same role to those people. And maybe...maybe that's why it was so difficult to convert some peoples to Christianity. Maybe they already were, in their own way, Christians.

It's time for our break, folks. Don't go away. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(break music: none)

Folks, I hope you're enjoying tonight's program. This will the 27th broadcast in the series on the Mystery Religions, the Mystery Schools, the Ancient Mystery Religions of Babylon.

Now, I don't know if you've made the connection yet -- and if you've just started listening to this program, then I would not even expect you to understand what all this means. But for those of you who've been with us for a long, long time, and have listened to that series on the Mystery Religions from the beginning, I certainly expect you to understand the connect between what you are hearing and what is happening in the world today. And if you understand that connection, then you understand this signifies tremendous change, which is going to appear and confront us in the immediate future, then you understand that you must take steps now to protect what you have...

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation]

(break music: unknown orchestral music)

[Reading from *America's Assignment with Destiny*, written by Manly P. Hall]:

(start of quote)
===

Prevailing historical accounts which deal with the discovery and colonization of the Western Hemisphere must someday be completely revised. Modern scholars have accepted, without proper reflection, a fabrication of lies fashioned to deceive and to prevent the recognition of facts [which are] detrimental, even dangerous, to the ulterior motives of [very, very] powerful interests. Time[, ladies and gentlemen,] will reveal that the continent now known as America was actually discovered and, to a considerable degree, explored more than a thousand years before the beginning of the Christian Era. The true story was in the keeping of the Mystery Schools, and passed from them to the Secret Societies of the medieval world. The Esoteric Orders of Europe, Asia, and the Near East were in at least irregular communication with the priesthoods of the more advanced Amerindian nations. Plans for the development of the Western Hemisphere were formulated in Alexandria, Mecca, Delhi, and Lhasa long before most European statesmen were aware of the great Utopian program.

[William Cooper: For reference to that, see *The Mystery of Columbus*, by Jennings C. Wise.]

The explorers who open the New World operated from a master plan [the same plan that is in operation today] and [they] were agents of rediscovery rather than discoverers. Very little is "known"[, folks,] about the origin, lives, characters, and policies of these intrepid adventurers. Although they lived in a century amply provided with historians and biographers, these saw fit either to remain silent or to invent plausible accounts without substance. Does it not seem remarkable that no one is certain whether Christopher Columbus was actually an English prince, a Greek nobleman, or a Genoses sea captain? Was he granted arms without any examination into his ancestry[, something that was unheard of in that day]? Why is it so difficult to ascertain the real name of the man known as Amerigo Vespucci? Who was John Cabot, whose life and exploits are but fragments rather than the sober records of a distinguished citizen? If these men were what they seemed to be, there could have been no advantage gained by such elaborate concealment. If there [was] a mystery, that which was hidden must have been regarded as valuable.

Plato described the vast continent of Atlantis, which sank beneath the oceans as the result of a seismic cataclysm. [Now,]there are several possible interpretations of Plato's account. The lost Atlantis could represent a submerged body of knowledge drowned in a sea of forgetfulness. This would explain and justify Bacon's restoration of the fable, which was nothing more than bringing into the light matters long hidden. According to the *Critias*, the oceans became so agitated and laden with mud and slime that navigation to the west ceased. Sailors feared to go beyond the Pillars of Hercules toward those Hesperic Isles sacred to the Mysteries.

Even had Christian nations dared to violate the edicts of the Secret Schools, such audacity would have been held in check by the power of Islam, seated in the Holy House at Cairo, and the edicts of Lhasa, backed by the armed strength of the Mongol Empire. The East agreed to preserve the boundaries of Europe, if the European states would bind themselves in a solemn alliance to refrain from exploiting the resources of the Western Hemisphere.

[William Cooper: Now why would they insist upon that agreement, when no one knew anything about the Western Hemisphere? At least, to the public, [aye]?]

Fear of a terrible retribution from beyond the walls of Gog and Magog prevented the Popes from violating their agreement. And without the leadership of the Church, the great families dared not engage in private projects. When the appointed hour came, the Secret Societies selected their own agents to initiate the program of exploration.

[William Cooper: And thus began America's secret assignment with destiny.]

"Was Columbus then working," asks Grace A. Fendler, "either as an individual or as a chosen representative of Secret Societies, to bring into expression the old Utopian ideals and to directionalize them across the Seas? Certainly this would go far to explain the charges of 'traitor'; the seizure of all his books and papers; the destruction of all portraiture and likenesses even to the usual mortuary 'busts and arms'; and the complete disappearance of many of his literary works, including the *Journal of the First Voyage* and the *Book of the Second Voyage*. All this[, ladies and gentlemen,] would then have been mere inquisitional routine, with the rewriting of his biography more or less both of political necessity and[, of course,] a Holy Duty."

[William Cooper: See the book for more on this: *New Truths About Columbus*.]

Campanella, in his *Civitas Solis*, causes a Genoese sea captain to be the guest of the Grand Master of the Knights Hospitalers. When Columbus, on the occasion of his first landfall, raised the standard of Castile, he also planted a banner of his own, consisting of a green cross on a white field. Was this a device of the Knights [Templars]?

[William Cooper: You bet your booties it was.]

The formal education of the man who called himself Christopher Columbus has been the subject of much speculation. The navigator wrote, in 1501, that during his many voyages to all parts of the world he had met learned men of various races and sects and had "endeavored to see all books of cosmography, history, and philosophy and of other sciences." [Now,] if the admiral had seriously endeavored to examine early works on navigation, he undoubtedly had noted the references, brief but significant, by Homer, Solon, Aristotle, Pliny, and other ancient authors to "distant lands beyond the great oceans." Plutarch's voyagers must have explored vast areas, and Verplanck Colvin summarizes the old accounts thus: "In the days of Homer, or rather before his time, navigators traveled thousands of miles out into the Atlantic, and back across it...they were guided in their voyages by the stars."

[William Cooper: For reference to that, see *Geographical and Mathematical Discussions of Plutarch's Accounts of Ancient Voyages to the New World*. Remember, folks, remember my admonition. Don't believe everything you hear on this program unless you go research it for yourself, and verify that it is, indeed, true. This is one of the greatest secrets that have been held by the Mysteries for thousands of years. This needs to be brought to light, for I believe wholeheartedly that this is the truth of the matter. In my research, as has indicated to me, that is it nothing *but* the truth.]

One group of "authorities" considers it probable that Columbus was little better than an illiterate sailor, and that his rudiments of learning were derived from a guild school supposed to have been established by the weavers of the city of Genoa. The opposing faction of historians insists that Columbus possessed considerable scholarship even before his celebrated journey. According to Henry Harisse, an outstanding writer on the Columbus mystery, the navigator left ninety-seven manuscripts and over twenty-five thousand marginalia, which may be considered a remarkable achievement for an illiterate.

[William Cooper: How many illiterates do you know who have ever written *anything*, much less ninety-seven manuscripts and over twenty-five thousand marginalia.]

The truth is that the admiral cannot be explained without reference to the Secret Societies, which were the peculiar custodians of the exact information which he required.

[William Cooper: They were, they were, and are, and always will be, unless the sheeple of the world wake up to the fact, the Guardians of the Secrets of the Ages.]

The religious and mystical inclinations of the great discoverer are mentioned by most of his biographers. At times Columbus dressed in a plain robe and girdle similar to the costume of the Franciscan Order. It was reported by his son that Columbus died wearing a Franciscan frock. It is not known however, that he was directly associated with this Order, even as a lay Brother. Several religious groups of the times, including Fraternities known to be connected with the esoteric tradition, favored this kind of habit. Perhaps the peculiarities of his costume were overlooked or conveniently forgotten.

The admiral regarded himself as chosen by heaven to fulfill a great mission, and was strengthened by the conviction that he was guarded and guided by the divine providence.

[William Cooper: Where have you heard that before? Divine providence was spoken of by Columbus and by all of our forefathers, whom also, by the way, belonged to the same Mystery Religion.]

Such contemporary reports[, folks,] could imply far more than modern writers would like to acknowledge [William Cooper: And far more than you probably even want to hear.] In [these] troublous times, it was customary for the members of Secret Societies to conceal the true source of their instructions by some general statement about heavenly guidance. The mystical instincts of the admiral, his belief in miracles, prophecies, and the doctrine of preordination have been advanced by some critics as proofs of his mental instability [a la David Koresh].

Referring to what he calls the "colossal, mystical self-confidence" of Columbus. John Bartlet Brebner writes that it was so integral a part of the navigator that "he could believe on one occasion in his voyaging that God had led him to the New Heaven and New Earth of Revelation, and in his darkest hour he knew that God spoke to him in encouragement." On his Third Voyage, the navigator believed that he heard the voice of God speaking words of strength and comfort. On his Fourth Voyage, when great emergencies threatened the entire enterprise, the admiral fell into a trance and a voice spoke to him [and said]: "O fool, and slow to believe and to serve thy God, the God of all! What did He do more for Moses, or for David His servant, than He has done for thee?"

[William Cooper: For reference to that, see the book called *The Explorers of North America*.]

Columbus[, folks,] may have been a disciple or student of the illuminated Raymond Lully. There is a persistent rumor to this effect. He was also involved with the group perpetuating the political convictions of Dante. The following tribute to the Italian poet is indicative and stimulating: "Dante himself was a member of the Albigensian church, and, it is said, for a number a years officiated as pastor of that powerful organization in various European cities. He was a friend of Roger Bacon, and an associate and advisor of powerful leaders in the ancient Order of the Temple, which was at the date of his death, while apparently at the summit of its power, actually nearing its disastrous end. Dante is said to have been an initiate of the esoteric doctrines of the Templars."

Columbus made use of ciphers and cryptic allegorical expressions and figures of speech. While such ciphers are known to exist in his manuscripts, no systematic effort to decode them has come to public attention. Cecil Jane conjectured that Columbus in his cryptic signatures made use of something resembling a Baconian cipher intended to convey information which could not be directly communicated and to supply the clue to a secret otherwise carefully concealed.

[William Cooper: See the book, entitled *Contemporary Historical Review, Vol. 1:37.*

Incidentally[, folks,] the Columbus signature-ciphers are extremely reminiscent of the Albigensian papermakers' marks [which you can look up]. Seraphim G. Canoutas, J.D., of the University of Athens, in his work *Christopher Columbus, a Greek Nobleman*, attempted to restore the early life of the great discoverer. His findings, calculated to sustain the title of his book, are most illuminating. The secret preparations for the colonizing of the Fortunate Isles, or "the Blessed Isles of the West," were in the keeping of the Albigenses, the Troubadours, and the chivalric Orders of Knighthood.

[William Cooper: Which are in control today. You see, when you started listening to my series on the Mystery Religions of Babylon, I know that some of you thought that I was stark-raving mad. But if you persisted and listened to each episode, you can see the connecting links throughout history and you can see that I am the only one (laughs) who is telling you the truth, the real truth about the hidden powers that control our destinies and, indeed, the destiny of America.]

The final phase of the exploration project was left largely to the erudition of Lorenzo the Magnificent and the skill of Leonardo da Vinci. Lorenzo de' Medici was a distinguished Platonist, a patron of Secret Societies, the founder of an important philosophical school, and a subtle adversary of the Borgias. Leonardo was a faithful agent of the great Florentine prince, and one of those men possessed by the spirit of "towardness." Although Lorenzo did not live to see the fulfillment of the Great Plan [William Cooper: quote, unquote], he spoke the magic word which opened for Columbus the most exclusive institutions in Europe and invested him with the temporal means for acquiring a measure of consideration from liberal princes and scholars. [You see,] it was the invisible hand of the Medici that balanced on end the celebrated egg.

The conclusions of Columbus concerning the shape of the earth indicate that he was acquainted with the esoteric traditions of Asia and the Near East. He partly revealed the source of his own instructions when he declared the planet to be shaped like a pear, the upper end of which projected toward the sky, like the boss in the center of a shield.

[William Cooper: And it was not until we put satellites in the sky that the modern man discovered that the earth is shaped like a pear. And this discovery, ladies and gentlemen, came only recently...only recently. So we know that Columbus did have some source of esoteric truths that was not known by the common man, and was way beyond the ability of those at that time to even perceive, or to know, unless they were the remnant of some great society that had gone before and was destroyed.]

[William Cooper: Now, I'm not telling you that's the truth, for no one really knows, but that's what all the evidence seems to point to. And who are these people, the survivors? Well, I would not even want to venture a guess at this point, but I certainly want to continue my research, and I want you to continue yours, and together we will find out.]

[Now, what he knew about the earth is at the] top of this protuberance [of the pear-shaped earth] was the terrestrial paradise, where none could go except by the grace of God. The admiral noted that this shape coincided with the opinions of certain holy and wise theologians, but he failed to mention the sects of religions to which they belonged. The earth-mountain was certainly the Meru of the Brahmans and the sacred hill of the Egyptians Mysteries, Mount Meru, like Chang Shambhala, Olympus, and the peak described in The Revelation are all veiled allusions to the Invisible Government of the earth.

[William Cooper: In case you didn't hear that, I'm going to repeat it.]

The earth-mountain was certainly the Meru of the Brahmans and the sacred hill of the Egyptians Mysteries, Mount Meru, like Chang Shambhala, Olympus, and the peak described in The Revelation are all veiled allusions to the Invisible Government of the earth.

Nor should it be assumed[, ladies and gentlemen,] that all historical uncertainties centered around Christopher Colon, the dove of Genoa. The case of John Cabot is equally curious. There may be more than passing interest in the [observation] of one research student: "When Columbus, in the interim between voyages disappears from public view, John Cabot appears and permanently disappears when Columbus reappears."

[William Cooper: See the book, entitled *New Truths About Columbus*, by Grace A. Fendler, for reference to that.]

[You see, it's] easy to forget that John Cabot was really Giovanni Caboto, born in Genoa and a naturalized citizen of Venice. It was especially mentioned that in one of his journeys Cabot visited Mecca, and, like Columbus, was acquainted with the wise men of the Near East. It has even been suggested that he had contacted the religious and political convictions of the secret Christian sect of the Johannites, which played so large a part in the esoteric doctrines of the Templars.

Cabot conveniently found the ear of the English king, and was immediately entrusted with a delicate diplomatic mission to Denmark to arbitrate disputes over the fisheries of Iceland. Grace Fendler also notes that the records of the English Privy Purse shows a pension paid to one Antonio Cabot for several years after John Cabot was historically dead. The pension passed through the hands of an English merchant named Rici D'Americke. The voyages of Cabot were important inasmuch as they resulted in a division which gave most of North America to the English group which was free from the theological and mercenary pressures of the Spanish program.

[You see,] the Great Plan reached the Western Hemisphere through a series of incidents. Many early explorers and colonizers are known to have been associated with Secret Societies. There is no historical way of determining the secret spiritual convictions of so-called conquistadors, adventurers, and founders of plantations. It is a well-established fact[, folks,] that arts, sciences, philosophies, and political convictions accompany less valuable merchandise along trade routes and caravan trails. Some of the colonizers were probably unaware of the parts they were playing and the settlements which they founded remained for generations without the strength or security to advance ideological programs. The work, then as always, was in the hands and keeping of a [very] few initiated leaders. They were responsible for the results, and they built slowly and wisely, thinking not of their own days or of their own reputation, but of the future in which the Great Plan would be fulfilled.

=======================================

(end of quote)

You all...all of you out there listening all around the world have such unlimited potential, if only your own personal handsome prince or princess could deliver to your lips that magic kiss that would wake you from your profound sleep.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: unknown orchestral waltz)

Hour 28: In the Coils of the Coming Conflict (aired August 17th, 1993)

All around the world, once again, you are listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(opening music: The Triumphal March, written by Edvard Grieg)

[Announcement of radio station broadcast]:

What you just heard, ladies and gentlemen, was *The Triumphal March* from *Sigurd Jorsalfar* [translation: Sigurd the Crusader], conducted by [Ed] Grieg. And I played it because I got some wonderful news. It is a triumph, in a way, at least I believe it is. I think you're all going to be happy, especially those of you who live in the state of Florida, because you're not going to have to pick through all the static on shortwave to hear the Hour of the Time anymore. In fact, we're going to be on a new radio station there, and it's sort of making history in a way, because it's the first radio station in the United States, and maybe even in the world, that's broadcast on the S-A-P, or *SAP* channel, the S-A-P channel. It's radio 27, WSAP, Fort Lauderdale, Florida. UHF TV 27, SAP, Separate Audio Program, the executive offices are Skinner Broadcasting Incorporated, 600 West Hillsboro Boulevard, Suite 27, Deerfield Beach, Florida, 33441-1609. You can phone them, just in case you don't get this all written down in which you know, if you listen to this program, is a sin. You're not supposed to listen to this program without a pad of paper and a pen or pencil. You're supposed to write everything down. But here's the number: (305) 480-2727. All of you folks in Florida, you're going to want to call that number and found out, make sure that you can get this program. (305) 480-2727. We'll be broadcast in stereo, folks, in crystal clear stereo. You will love it, especially if you're used to hear it in shortwave radio through all the static and the [inaudible] and the jamming and the teletype stuff and everything else that they tell me is out there interfering. For release, August 16th, 1993, you're hearing this broadcast on Tuesday, our first broadcast on 27 was actually last night, folks, last night. Some of you may have had your TV accidentally set on the SAP channel and you may have heard it. If you did, that's fine. If you didn't, you can hear it from now on. I think it's too late when you hear this in Florida to get our broadcast tonight, but you'll be able to listen to it tomorrow night in primetime. You don't even have to stay up late anymore, folks. Isn't it wonderful? A new radio station, WSAP, signed on the air Monday, August 16th, 1993. The first of its kind in the nation. America's first radio station on television. "What," you say, "a radio station on television?" That's right, folks, you heard it correctly. Home of the all-American talk show team, 24-hours a day, WSAP broadcast with 70,000 watts on the SAP, or separate audio program, channel over UHF TV 27, Fort Lauderdale.

Listeners may tune to the station in one of either two ways, so listen very carefully. Write this down. If you live in Florida, you may hear your cable system read to you right now. Here's how you can get the Hour of the Time on WSAP all over the state of Florida. Number one, by tuning in to channel six on the following cable systems: Continental Cable, Coral Springs Cable, Jones InterCable, TCI Cable of Hollywood, TCI Cable of North Dade, Gulf Pacific Cable of Weston, Bonn Adventure and Gold Coast Cable, Miami Beach. Did you hear that, folks? We're going to be at all the major hotels. After tuning to channel six on cable, then press the SAP button on your TV or remote control to hear radio WSAP, the Hour of the Time.

Now, the second method by which you can receive WSAP is by connecting a UHF loop antenna, which you can go down and get at Radio Shack, any Radio Shack, just tell them you want a UHF loop antenna, or an outside UHF antenna to the UHF antenna terminals on your television set, tuned to channel TV, or UHF TV channel 27, then press the SAP button on your TV or remote control, and you will hear WSAP.

Skinner Broadcasting Incorporated, owner of TV 27, CBS broadcasting channel 26, UCIX TV, over its main video and audio channel, and this will not change, folks. WSAP will air informative and entertaining talk show host from around the nation, 24 hours a day. Hosts include William Cooper, the Hour of the Time, 8pm Monday through Friday night and more than a dozen hard-hitting programs dealing with subjects like what really happened in Waco, how the North American Free Trade Agreement will ruin America, and the truth about the Federal Reserve System. These broadcasts are not currently heard in south Florida, and according to Roger Skinner, station manager, we expect a lot of people will soon be talking about what they heard on WSAP. Boy, that's an understatement, the Hour of the Time is libel to get them thrown out of Florida! (laughs) But this is great, folks. All of you people living in Florida now, you don't have to stay up 'til midnight and tune in to staticky shortwave. If you have one of these cable services, or if you're in the Fort Lauderdale area, or near Fort Lauderdale where you can receive their 70,000 watt SAP transmission, you can just go down to Radio Shack and hook up a UHF loop antennae on the outside of your TV set and pick us up loud and clear.

And folks, this is just the beginning, because I have something else to tell you. Beginning next week, we're going to be live on satellite and we'll be live on WWCR from that point on. Now, on WSAP in Florida, those will be taped shows. We will not be live, but we will be live on satellite and WWCR will be picking us up off satellite live and rebroadcasting Monday through Friday night at our regular time. So that also is great news. The satellite is SpaceNet-3, for those with a satellite dish, you can receive us in brilliant digital sound off of SpaceNet 3, channel 21, I believe it's 5.8 audio. But you can get that out of ...just look for Let's Talk Radio Network. That's Let's Talk Radio Network. It will be the same time you've been listening to us on WWCR shortwave, and we will still be on WWCR shortwave. The only difference is we'll be live; we'll be taped in Florida. So, even though you'll be listening to the program in Florida, a program that takes in live calls, in Florida, you will not be able to call because you will actually be listening to a taped program of a previous program, or whatever. So that's great news, folks. Remember, we're starting on WSAP last night [sic] in Florida, last night! We're already on the air there, and we're starting next week on satellite, Space Net 3, channel 21, and I believe it's 5.8 audio. If we're not on 5.8, just go up and down the audio scale until you find us or you can just look it up on SatMagazine.

So that's all the great news, folks, and I hope you're just as happy as I am because I'm tickled pink. I'm so happy, I don't know what to do with myself, and it's going to keep me very busy. Of course, expenses are going way up. Our sponsors are picking up the cost of the satellite and the air time, but we're having to purchase an awful lot of expensive equipment so we'll be able to take your calls on the air, live. Now, we're not going to do it all the time, but we are going to do it, and we need your help, folks. We need donations to pay for all this equipment. We need a thousand dollars to pay for what's called a compressor. Now, I really don't know what that means but, in order to take phone calls, in order to send this broadcast live to the satellite uplink station, we need something that's called a compressor, and that costs a thousand dollars. It's nine hundred and something dollars is the actual price. So, we need donations, we need to purchase that piece of equipment. We need to purchase another...well, we need to purchase a whole bunch of stuff. Altogether, it's going to cost us right around five thousand...a little over five thousand dollars. We will appreciate your contributions. All your contributions will go to pay for equipment only. So please, folks, sit down and write out a check or send us a money order...

[William Cooper continues request for contributions and talks about *Backwoods Home Magazine*]

OK, let me read this article to you. This article is...(laughs)...is really funny. It's called, "No Ideology, No Agenda," and it's kind of a spoof. And Dave Duffy has written up here: "We're delighted to give this issue's editorial space over to P.J. O'Rourke, who delivered these comments to a gathering of the Cato Institute, a free-market think tank. O'Rourke has authored several books, including *Parliament of Whores*, a best-seller about the United States government." Congress, in particular...and this article is reprinted with permission from the July 1993 *American Spectator*:

[Reading from “No Ideology, No Agenda”]

The Cato Institute has an unusual political cause -- which is no political cause whatsoever. We are here tonight to dedicate ourselves to that cause, to dedicate ourselves, in other words, to...nothing.

We have no ideology, no agenda, no catechism, no dialectic, no plan for humanity. We have no "vision thing," as our ex-president would say, or, as our current president would say, we have no Hillary.

All we have is the belief that people should do what people want to do, unless it causes harm to other people. And that had better be clear and provable harm. No nonsense about second-hand smoke or hurtful, insensitive language, please.

I don't know what's good for you. You don't know what's good for me. We don't know what's good for mankind. And it sometimes seems as though we're the only people who don't. It may well be that, gathered right here in this room tonight,are all the people in the world who don't want to tell all the people in the world what to do.

This is because we believe in freedom. Freedom -- what this country was established upon, what the Constitution was written to defend, what the Civil War was fought to perfect.

Freedom is not empowerment. Empowerment is what the Serbs have in Bosnia. Anybody can grab a gun and be empowered. It's not entitlement. An entitlement is what people on welfare get, and how free are they? It's not an endlessly expanding list of rights -- the "right" to education, the "right" to health care, the "right" to food and housing. That's not freedom, that's dependency.[William Cooper: And most people never learn that!] Those aren't rights, those are the rations of slavery -- hay and a barn for human cattle.

There is only one basic human right, the right to do as you damn well please. And with it comes the only basic human duty, the duty to take the consequences.

So we are here tonight in a kind of anti-matter protest -- an unpolitical undemonstration by deeply uncommitted inactivists. We are part of a huge invisible picket line that circles the White House twenty-four hours a day. We are participants in an enormous non-march on Washington -- millions and millions of Americans not descending upon the nation's capital in order to demand nothing from the United States government. To demand nothing, that is, except the one thing which no government in history has been able to do -- [and that is] leave us alone.

There are just two rules of governance in a free society:

[One,] Mind your own business.
[And two,] Keep your hands to yourself.

Bill [Clinton], keep your hands to yourself. Hillary, mind your own business.

We have a group of incredibly silly people in the White House right now, people who think government works. Or that government would work, if you got some real bright young kids from Yale to run it.

We're being governed by dorm room bull session. The Clinton administration is over there right now pulling an all-nighter in the West Wing. They think that, if they can just stay up late enough, they can create a healthy economy and bring peace to former Yugoslavia.

The Clinton administration is going to decrease government spending by increasing the amount of money we give to the government to spend. [Makes sense, doesn't it?]

Health care is too expensive, so the Clinton administration is putting a high-powered corporate lawyer in charge of making it cheaper. (This is what I always do when I want to spend less money -- hire a lawyer from Yale.) If you think health care is expensive now, wait until you see what it costs when it's free.

The Clinton administration is putting together a program so that college graduates can work to pay off their school tuition. As if this were some genius idea. It's called getting a job. Most folks do that when they get out of college, unless, of course, they happen to become governor of Arkansas.

And the Clinton administration launched an attack on people in Texas because those people were religious nuts with guns. Hell, this country was founded by religious nuts with guns. Who does Bill Clinton think stepped ashore on Plymouth Rock? Peace Corps volunteers? Or maybe the people in Texas were attacked because of child abuse. But, if child abuse was the issue, why didn't Janet Reno tear-gas Woody Allen?

You know, if government were a product, selling it would be illegal.

Government is a health hazard. Governments have killed many more people than cigarettes or unbuckled seat belts ever have.

Government contains impure ingredients -- as anybody who's looked at Congress can tell you.

On the basis of Bill Clinton's 1992 campaign promises, I think we can say government practices deceptive advertising.

And the merest glance at the federal budget is enough to convict the government of perjury, extortion, and fraud.

There, ladies and gentlemen, you have the Cato Institute's program in a nutshell: government should be against the law.

Term limits aren't enough. We need jail.

William Cooper: [Again, that was written by P.J. O'Rourke.]

[William Cooper continues to talk about *Backwoods Home Magazine*]

Oh boy, you know, I'm just so happy about going up on satellite and about going into 500,000 new homes in Florida, and we began that last night. This is...it's just incredible, I don't know what to do with myself. I'm going to have to take a deep breath and settle down here and just sort of get everything together or I'm probably going to screw something up...

Now, remember, when we're on satellite, we're going to be doing some live shows where you'll be able to call in and talk to me on the air. Let me give you that number right now. This is a number where, twenty-three hours out of every day, you can fax me anything you want to fax me. That's twenty-three out of every twenty-four hours, you can fax me anything you want to fax me. So now you have a conduit to deliver information directly to the Hour of the Time with a fax machine...

(Gives information about faxing)

It's time to take our break, folks. Don't go away, I'll be right back after this very brief pause.

(few seconds of silence)

I'm back, and I'm happy. Boy, am I happy, and I want you to be happy, too, folks...

(William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading)

(break music: unknown classical piece - continuation of The Triumphal March?)

Well, folks, I'm going to take you one step further in your education tonight. I am holding in my hands, dear listeners, an old, very old book, published in 1883 in Philadelphia by Collins & McDill. The name of this book is *In the Coils; or, The Coming Conflict*. Again, the book was published in 1883 in Philadelphia by Collins & McDill. The title is *In the Coils; or, The Coming Conflict*, by E.B.G. This is the second edition, which means there was an edition before this. And there is a quote here by Wendell Philips, who says, "This is the next great question the nation must take up and decide." And this book, ladies and gentlemen, is priceless, for it describes...it was originally copyrighted in 1882 -- actually, not copyrighted, but entered, according to an Act of Congress, in 1882 by A.P. McDill in the office of the librarian of Congress at Washington, D.C. So if you can't find this anywhere else, it is in the Library of Congress.

This is about one man's battle with Freemasonry, and I'm going to read to you a letter, which begins on page 237. This letter is written by Dr. Groves and sent to a Mr. Dover:

(start of quote)

==

BRANDON, May 18th, 18--.

My Dear Friend: -- I have delayed a reply to your note in order that I might be able to answer both your questions fully and with some degree of certainty.

I am glad to be able to say that I am personally acquainted with your nephew, and that I highly esteem him. I have consulted several influential men in our village, and we all agree in our opinion of Bates and his prospects in this precinct. So I can answer both of your questions together and use the plural "we" and "our," instead of showing you mine opinion alone.

We believe Bates to be the best candidate in the field as yet, and it is possible that he will have our hearty support.

We are not altogether satisfied with any of our candidates; but we do not expect to find one that will suit us in every particular. We may consistently support a person and yet have some objection to him. So in regard to Bates. We have on serious objection to him, but whether that will be in our way of supporting him depends on circumstances. I suppose you want a plain statement of the whole matter rather than any uncertain and flattering promises, and I will not be kept back by fear of offending you, or by a desire for office or popularity, from stating clearly our objection to Bates, and the circumstances in which he may probably expect our support.

We do not object to his abilities, moral character, republicanism, relatives or general fitness for the place. We appreciate him for all these. Our only objection to him is, that by certain and numerous oaths which he considers binding, (we do not, however,) he has pledged his support to a monopoly which is more powerful and dangerous than those which he professes to oppose, and has sworn his allegiance to a government which claims supremacy over all other authority whether of church or state. In a word, as we are informed, Mr. Bates is a Freemason.

Now we know that everyone who enters the lodge swears "to support the constitution of the Grand Lodge of the state, and to conform to the laws of any lodge of which he shall be a member, and also to obey all regular signs, summons or tokens from any Mason or body of Masons." Now whatever he may be told before taking this oath, after he does so he is taught that the authority of the lodge is absolute, the covenant is irrevocable, and its obligations are supreme.

In *General Ahiman Rezon; or, [The] Freemason's Guide* we read: "The candidate, entering the lodge, is on the point of binding himself voluntarily, *absolutely and without reservation forever*."

Webb's *Monitor* says: "The covenant is irrevocable. Even though a Mason may be suspended or expelled, though he may withdraw from the lodge, journey into countries where Masons cannot be found, or become a subject of despotic governments that persecute, or a communicant of bigoted churches that denounce Masonry, he cannot cast off or nullify his Masonic covenant. No law of the land can affect it; no anathema of the church can weaken it. It is irrevocable."

Again, this same Masonic author says: "The first duty of the reader of this synopsis is to obey the edicts of this Grand Lodge. Right or wrong, his very existence as a Mason hangs upon obedience to the power immediately set above him. Failure in this must infallibly bring down *expulsion*, which as a Masonic death, ends all. The one unpardonable crime in a Mason is *contumacy*, or disobedience."

Although it takes much space in my letter, let me give you more testimony, with the names of the witnesses, who are all eminent members of the order and high in authority and some of whose works are in nearly every lodge, and necessarily have some effect on the members:

"That this surrender of free will to Masonic authority is *absolute*, (within the scope of the landmarks of the order), and *perpetual*, may be inferred from an examination of the emblem (the Shoe or Sandal) which is used to enforce this lesson of resignation." [That's from the] Morris *Dictionary of Freemasonry*.

"Disobedience is so subversive of the ground work of Masonry, in which obedience is so strongly inculcated, that the Mason who disobeys subjects himself to severe penalties." -- Ibid.

"A Grand Lodge is invested with power and authority over all the craft within its jurisdiction. It is the Supreme Court of Appeals in all Masonic cases, and to its decrees unlimited obedience must be paid by every lodge *and every Mason* situated within its control. The government of Grand Lodges is, therefore, completely despotic. While a Grand Lodge exists, its edicts must be respected and obeyed *without examination* by its subordinated lodges." [That's from] Mackey, *Lexicon of Freemasonry, page 183.*

"For ourselves, we deny as Masons that any civil government on earth has the right to divide or curtail Masonic jurisdiction when once established. It can only be done by competent Masonic authority and in accordance with Masonic usage." -- [From the] *Grand Lodge Report.*

"A 'due summons' from the lodge or Grand Lodge is obligatory upon him, and should he refuse obedience he will be disgracefully expelled from the society with public marks of ignominy that can never be erased." -- [That's from the] Morris *Dictionary of Freemasonry, page [number] 29.*

"Disobedience and want of respect to Masonic superiors is an offense for which the transgressor subjects himself to punishment." -- [That's from] Mackey, *Masonic Jurisprudence, page 511.*

"Hence we find that the Master's authority in the lodge is as despotic as the sun in the firmament which was placed there by the Creator, never to deviate from its accustomed course, till the declaration is promulgated that time shall be no more." -- [That's from Oliver's] *Signs and Symbols of Freemasonry, page 142.*

"Treason and rebellion also, because they are altogether political offences, cannot be inquired into by a lodge; and although a Mason may be convicted of either of these acts in the courts of his country, he cannot be masonically punished; and notwithstanding his treason or rebellion his relation to the lodge, to use the language of the old charges, remains indefeasible." -- [That's from Mackey's] *Masonic Jurisprudence, page 510.*

[William Cooper]: Now, I'm going to read that again and I want you to pay close attention.

"Treason and rebellion also, because they are altogether political offences, cannot be inquired into by a lodge; and although a Mason may be convicted of either of these acts in the courts of his country, he cannot be masonically punished; and notwithstanding his treason or rebellion his relation to the lodge, to use the language of the old charges, remains indefeasible." -- [That's from Mackey's] *Masonic Jurisprudence, page 510.*

"There is no duty more forcibly enjoined in Masonry than that of warning a brother or danger impending to his person or interests. To neglect this is a positive violation of obligation, and destroys any person's claim to be entitled a Mason." -- [That's from Morris'] *Dictionary of Freemasonry, page [number] 325.*

"The powers and privileges of the Master of a lodge are by no means *limited* in extent." -- [That's from Chase's] *Digest of Masonic Law, page 380.*

"As a presiding officer the Master is possessed of extraordinary powers, which belong to the presiding officer of no other association." -- [That's from] Mackey, *Masonic Jurisprudence, page 344.*

"The system of Masonic law has little of the republican or democratic spirit about it." [That's from] Morris, *Webb's Freemason's Monitor, revised edition, page 195.*

"'Once a Mason, always a Mason -- once a Mason everywhere a Mason. However independent wither as individuals or as lodges, whether grand or subordinate -- and we are each and all truly free and uncontrolled by anything save our ancient laws and constitution -- yet no Mason can be a foreigner to another Mason. We are all equal citizens of one common government, having equal rights, equal privileges and equal duties; and in which government, thank God, the majority does not govern. For our order in its very constitution strikes at the root of that which is the very basis of popular government. It proclaims and practices, not that the will of the masses is wise and good, and as such to be obeyed; not that the majority shall govern, but that the law [*i.e.*, above mentioned ancient law] shall govern. Our tenet is not only that no single man but that no body of men (however wise of numerous), can change in any degree one single landmark of our ancient institution. Our law is strictly organic; it cannot be changed without being destroyed. You may take a man to pieces, and you may take a watch to pieces; but you cannot alter his organs and put him together again as you do the time keeper. Masonry is the living man, and all other forms of government mere convenient machines, made by clever mechanics, for regulating the affairs of state. Not only do we know no North, no South, no East and no West, *but we know no government save our own. To every government save that of Masonry, and to each and all alike, we are foreigners*; and this form of government is neither pontifical, autocratic, monarchial, republican, democratic nor despotic; it is a government *per se*, and that government is Masonic. We have nothing to do with forms of government, forms of religion, or forms of social life. We are a nation of men only bound to each other by Masonic ties, as citizens of the world, and that world the world of Masonry; brethren to each other all the world over, foreigners to all the world beside.'

"The above is a Masonic address in a nut-shell; it is the compressed essence of Masonic life." -- [It's taken from the] *Missouri Grand Lodge Report for 1867.*

What a remarkable array of Masonic testimony! And yet the half has not been told. I might go on almost indefinitely showing its foul, treasonable and anti-republican nature, as legibly portrayed under these extracts from standard Masonic publications. The above sentences are complete quotations and not garbled. They are concise and plain. The language is authoritative. Masonic superiors never argue with subordinates. They dictate.

No wonder a most prominent member admits the following: "There is no charge more frequently made against Freemasonry that that of its tendency to revolution and conspiracy, and to political organizations which may affect the peace of society or interfere with the rights of government." [Taken from] Mackey, *Mystic Tie of Freemasonry, page 43.*

Remember, my friend Dover, that I am not speaking of your nephew's personal views of the supremacy of the lodge, nor saying what he would do if he should find that some of the laws, summons or orders of the lodge should conflict with his duties to the government, but merely showing you what the lodge, according to its standard authors, claims, and what every Mason has sworn to perform. If Mr. Bates should go to congress and then find in some cases that he must violate either his official oath or Masonic Obligation, I do not say which he would consider binding; but I do say, for I know, that the lodge by its writers, its lecturers and its decrees declares that its obligations are supreme, its authority above all civil authority, and obedience to his superiors the first duty of every Mason. If eminent members know and tell the truth about their own order, if Grand Lodge reports can be believed, there can be no doubt on this point. Please read again carefully what these have said, yes, dared to print, and you will see our objection to sending Bates to congress, or electing him or any Mason to any office until he renounces his allegiance to the lodge. Do you think that we demand too much? Every other foreigner, before he is allowed even to vote, must renounce his allegiance to the government under which he was born, and to which perhaps he has never sworn or acknowledged obedience. We require of him, and properly, the following obligation:

"I do declare an oath that it is *bona fide* my intention to become a citizen of the United States, and to renounce and abjure forever all allegiance and fidelity to all and every foreign prince, potentate, state and sovereign, and particularly [William Cooper: blank, fill in whatever country he came from], of whom I am a subject."

Is it then right for free citizens of this country to vote into any office a person who has sworn and still lives under and acknowledges allegiance to another -- a monarchial and a despotic government? Has not the Grand Lodge of one state, in consistency with the general teaching of Masonry declared that all its members are foreigners to our government? Let us then consider them as such; and our government also should consider them as such, and forbid them to hold office, sit on the jury, or even to vote until they take the oath prescribed for other foreigners.

When I tell you that the "Most Puissant Sovereign Grand Commander of the United States," of whom every Mason in the country is a sworn subject, is an ex-confederate general, whose rebel hands are deeply dyed by the crimson blood of loyal citizens, and who at one battle of the late war led a brigade of Indians against the boys in blue, who, by these cruel savages, were murdered, scalped and mutilated in a manner too barbarous for description, you will see more force in this argument. And why was not the arch traitor, the leader of the rebellion, hung when captured? He and the president of the United States and many congressmen and judges were Royal Arch Masons, and had sworn each to the following:

"Furthermore, do I promise and swear, that I will aid and assist a companion Royal Arch Mason when engaged in any difficulty; and espouse his cause so far as to extricate him from the same, if in my power, whether he be right or wrong."

Is it not reasonable then to suppose that these men, who had sworn to fulfill their duties as civil officers, chose rather to obey Masonic obligations and extricate a rebel from his difficulty? This is the only explanation of this strange event which is worthy of any consideration. And it is made more certain when we remember that, according to Mackey's *Jurisprudence*, "Treason and rebellion also, because they are altogether political offenses, cannot be inquired into by the lodge."

These facts concerning the oaths and teachings of the lodge will explain many other strange things in the history of our country. They will often explain why some improper person is nominated and elected to some office, or the illegal contestant is given the seat, or a criminal is acquitted or pardoned, and perhaps promoted. Why was our present representative, who you say has not brains enough to be a pettifogging lawyer, and who is notoriously dishonest, sent to congress? Why was he nominated by our party? In answer to this question *The Wasp*, whose editor is an anti-monopolist, but also inconsistently a Mason, says: "Because, as the superintendent of our main railway told a prominent man before the convention which nominated him, the present incumbent was this company's most available candidate because he was high up in Masonry." Thus he admits that the lodge is used for the purpose of securing improper nominations and electing to office unworthy men, and certainly implies that it is used to control them while in office. So you see our objection to any Mason going to congress, and our only objection to the nomination of Mr. Bates. The one condition on which we will give him our united and hearty support is that he goes before the clerk of the United States Court and takes the oath required of all foreigners, inserting the word Freemasonry in the blank.

I have given you freely and honestly a lengthy statement of this case; but if there is anything further you desire to know I would be glad to answer your inquires. I should be glad to receive a visit from you at any time.

Yours,

Warren Groves.

N.R. Dover, Princeton.

(end of quote)
==

Ladies and gentlemen, I hope you understand the import of what I have just read to you, and I hope that you understand that many of the leaders in the patriot community are Freemasons. They are sworn to the order, to their one-world government of which they only are citizens. And they have no allegiance to any other government, organization, oath, creed or religion...by their own writings, their own word. Everything that I have quoted that was written in this letter was written or published prior to 1882. The farther back you go in history, the more truth you can read in their words, for they have learned that some of us are smarter than they think. And now, they conveniently delete some of this from their modern writing, but even in their modern writing you can find enough to incriminate and hang them all. The confederate general discussed in this letter by Dr. Groves is none other than Albert Pike.

And to show you that they are everywhere controlling everything and that you are being brainwashed, when is the last time that you really listened to *Star Trek*? When is the last time you really listened to the message of *Star Trek*? When is the last time that you understood the people portrayed in *Star Trek* owned no private property? (laughs) And that everything in that series is Marxism? Pure Socialism, pure and simple. And what is the message of *Star Trek*? Go rent the movies and the series and watch them, one by one, starting with the *Star Trek* movie and ending with the last one that was made, and you very quickly come to your senses. Especially when you realize that Captain James T. Kirk, when he came upon the scene, relieved one Captain Albert Pike. The initials of James T. Kirk backwards are K.T.J., the Knights of the Temple of Jerusalem. Lt. Colonel James "Bo" Gritz is a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite.

Get your heads out of your collective asses. Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: Unknown classical piece - continuation of *The Triumphal March*?)

Hour 29: Lucifer 2000 (Jordan Maxwell & Anthony Hilder) (aired August 18th, 1993)

Across America and around the world, you're listening once again to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper.

(audio playback begins)

[Dwayne Walker (DW)]: Is there a group of men and women out there who are secretly controlling our finances, our media communications and every aspects of our lives? Well, my two guests think that they very well might be. Uh, we have Jordan Maxwell, who has made an appearance in *Ancient Mysteries of the Bible* on CBS with William Devane hosting it, and he's agreed to come back and do the sequel, and we have Anthony J. Hilder, of Radio Free World. Uh, Jordan Maxwell's name, there's a quote that I'd like to bring to your attention and I'd like to start off with, uh, Jordan answering this. "It is probable that most of the public figures and military men involved in the secret scheme are unaware of the real goals or who is really behind it." Jordan, I gotta ask, what's...what's going on here?

[Jordan Maxwell (JM)]: (laughs) Well let's, let's start with a term that we're hearing quite a bit about in the last couple of years: The New World Order. Our president is going all around the world proclaiming a New World Order. Incidentally, all the presidents, living presidents, along with many of the heads of states throughout the world are going to meet, according to the L.A. Times, are going to meet in the year 2000 at the pyramid in Egypt to bring in what is called the New World Order. There is something going on here on an international worldwide scale right before our eyes, but that so many of us are unaware and, consequently, we're not really seeing what is happening. There is, in fact, a conspiracy or a planned world domination coming by this thing that George Bush calls, a "New World Order." On the back of the one dollar bill, there are a lot of important occult symbolism on the back of the one dollar bill [sic]. On the left-hand side, you'll see the pyramid, and the pyramid of Egypt. It's an Egyptian pyramid on an American dollar bill. The significance is very important. Above the pyramid, you will see the words, *Annuit Cœptis*, which basically means in Latin, "Our enterprise is a success," or "Our project has been crowned with success." And the project, which is the success, is on the banner beneath the pyramid: *Novus Ordo Seclorum*, being Latin for "New Order of the World," or the "New World Order." On the bottom of the pyramid you will see the Roman numerals for 1776. This exact, identical emblem of the pyramid within the circle, the *Novus Ordo Seclorum*, it was not original in America [sic]. It was first found on writings that are today in museums in Europe in the year 1774, 1775, by a man named Adam Weishoff, who founded the Bavarian Order of the Illuminati, a secret society of Freemasons operating in Europe that had designs on the entire world to bring about what they called a New World Order. So that emblem on the back of the dollar bill, on the left-hand side, with the pyramid is not an American symbol. It is a very old symbol coming from...

[Anthony Hilder (AH)]: Jordan, you should bring up the fact that this is the Order of the Illuminati...

[JM]: Yes.

[AH]: ...and the May 1st, 1776 did not signify the creation of the United States of America...

[JM]: No, no.

[AH]: ...but the Order of the Illuminati, or the Enlightened Ones, or the Luciferians.

[JM]: Yes.

[AH]: And this is a Satanic symbol. It is on the cover of the Illuminati documents from May 1st, 1776, which obviously precedes the birth of this nation on July 4th, 1776. On the very top of the pyramid, there is the Apu, the all-seeing eye, which was the name of the Soviet secret police during the Stalin era.

[DW]: Alright, now Anthony, you've done, you've spent most of your life studying these secret societies and the Illuminati and you, uh, put out a record sometime ago, called the Illuminati CFR...

[AH]: CFR, Council on Foreign Relations, right.

[DW]: Right. This is, you know, I've heard various charlatans coming out talking about the Illuminati, but I was wondering if you could get into a little more detail about the history of this organization and some of the more -- uh, you were talking about, uh, the eagle, for instance, and the pyramids, that sort of thing...and talk a little bit more about the Freemason origins of the Illuminati.

[JM]: Well, let me just make this one comment first, and then Anthony can go on with it. The -- at the top of the pyramid, you'll see the little triangle with the eye in it, the eye was the eye of Horus. Horus was the eye of God, the sun. And so, the sun represented the pupil, or the eye of God in the ancient Egyptian philosophy, and that's why you'll see the light emanating from around the eye. So, it's the worship of light, Luciferianism is the worship of coming forth of light into the world and, therefore, our masters, these manipulating masters behind the scenes of world government, who are manipulating all peoples, uh, consider themselves to be enlightened, enlightened despots, enlightened people. And, of course, when you go to university [sic], you graduate from a university, you wear the Masonic square of Freemasonry on your head to symbolize that you are an alumni. Alumni comes from the word, "illumini," [sp?] you have been illuminated into the enlightened power structure of the New World Order. That's the actual basis for these symbols, and to go on with the rest of the symbolism...

[AH]: Well, I think it's important to bring up the fact that George Bush did not write the New World Order. In fact, if you want to know who wrote the New World Order, you simply go back to Adolf Hitler. It wasn't his first book, that was *Mein Kampf*. The second book, *The New World Order*. And Rudolph Hess went out and said, in introduction of Hitler, he said, "Ein Volk, ein Reich, ein Fuhrer." One world, one race, one ruler. That's what this whole United Nations is all about. I'm for a free world that's in total opposition to the New World Order.

[DW]: Well, Bush's New World Order may have come from Adolf Hitler, but Bill Clinton's new covenant really comes from the Old Testament.

[JM]: Alright, the "new covenant," that is a catchphrase, that is a term which has been used for, uh, at least five hundred years by a secret society of Freemasons in Europe called the British Israel World Federation. British Israel World Federation, you can see, uh, topics in movies based on this subject like, there's a motion picture that just came out, called *The Handmaiden's Pail*, based on British Israel philosophy for America. A secret society of Freemasons promoting something that is called as far back as five hundred years ago, "British Israel philosophy," "Anglo-Israel philosophy," which is tying in the Old Testament governmental system to be the basis for a New World Order in the coming future. And that's why, uh, this symbol is...

[DW]: Well, Clinton went to Oxford...

[JM]: Yeah.

[DW]: ...and [you would have to be] a Rhodes scholar.

[JM]: Right. The Rhodes Scholarship Foundation, and this whole thing of a "new covenant" comes directly from British Israel Freemasonry. Rhodes scholar, the Rhodes scholarship of England. So, we can get into that, it gets -- we can get into all of these. There's a significance of the Democratic party, uh, his term of the covenant, the "new covenant."

[AH]: And Cecil Rhodes is the founder of Rhodesia, that's where Rhodesia got its name. And we had a little thing called the Round Table, and...some of these Luciferian groups, and I say Luciferian, I mean it, like George Bush is a member of the Skull and Bones. Now, in the Skull and Bones fraternity -- this is a fraternity, a Faustian financial fraternity that started up in Yale University in 1832, came over here as a bounce off the Jacobin Society, who was involved in the French Revolution in the reign of terror. At Yale University, they have a structure, and you can go there, anybody can go there and see this structure they call a tomb. Inside the tomb they have, uh, their initiation and the fellas, they lay down in a coffin, and George Bush was one of them. They laid down in a coffin, nude, and they're born again in to this Satanic order. It's the ritual, it's been there. William Buckley, Jr., the Herrimans, yeah...conservatives, no. George Bush isn't a conservative...

[JM]: Never have...

[AH]: ...Ronald Reagan was never a conservative. In fact, uh, Ronald Reagan is so far left, let me -- can I say this? -- Ronald Reagan is not a conservative. He never was a conservative, he is not a conservative, he never will be a conservative. In the early days they used to call him, "Red Ronnie." It's as simple as that. (laughs) He was in the United World Federalists for thirteen years. He was in the L.A. Committee for a Democratic far-eastern policy, which was associated with the Institute of Pacific Relations, which was listed as an instrument of the Soviet Union. This guy is so far-left, he makes Fidel Castro look like a member of the John Burke's Society. All you've ever heard about Ronald Reagan was simply rhetoric. We have a one-party system controlled by this oligarchy.

[DW]: Alright, that's George Bush, that's, uh, the Skull and Bones society and I -- OK, I guess I can see this -- but Bill Clinton, though, um...he was not a member of the Skull and Bones society.

[AH]: No, I believe you – is Bill Clinton a member of the Council of Foreign Relations?

[JM]: Oh yes, he certainly is, the CFR...

[AH]: And is George Bush a member of the Council of Foreign Relations?

[JM]: Yeah, of course, I...

[DW]: Bill Clinton wasn't lying naked in a coffin trying to get born again...

[AH]: No, no, no, that -- but let me go back to an election, 1980. We had Jimmy Carter from the Trilateral Commission, we had George Bush from the Trilateral Commission, and John Anderson from the Trilateral Commission as the Independent ticket. So, it wouldn't make any difference which way the coined flipped: heads they win, tails we lose. Or tails we win, heads they...

[JM]: The Rockefellers never lost an election in the last sixty years.

[AH]: Well, no, we lose, even if the coin landed on its side. They had all bases covered.

[DW]: Aren't you -- you know, you mentioned the Trilateral Commission, and you mentioned the Rockefeller's. I've heard many fringe groups, ranging from the fundamentalists up to the neo-Nazis or whatever, taking bits and pieces of this thing and constructing it to their own agenda. Aren't you worried about being misinterpreted, and...

[AH]: They all have their own spin...

[JM]: Everybody has their own spin on it, right. Their own agenda, but what we're talking about is things that can be proven from accepted referenced works, and how you use that information to promote your own philosophy, your own agenda is -- that's their problem.

[DW]: And there is -- you're saying there is proof that, from May 1st, 1776, that the organization, the Illuminati can...

[JM]: Oh yes, you can look that up...

[DW]: ...and to this very day, the Illuminati is still around ..[inaudible]

[JM]: Of course.

[AH]: ...the cover of their document is the left-hand side, the reversal of the dollar bill. It was put on there early on, but it was the reverse Seal early on. But it. wasn't until the corncob mystic, vice-President George, uh -- no, not George Wallace, but Henry Wallace...

[JM]: Henry C. Wallace.

[AH]: ...who talked to Roosevelt and said, "Hey, this thing has got to go on there." Now, he had in the White House a little shrine for Madame [Helena P.] Blavatsky. I mean, Blavatsky wrote, uh...

[JM]: *Isis Unveiled* and *The Secret Doctrine.*

[AH]: Yeah, but she had a manifesto going. She also had a publication of a book -- uh, well, I've seen the book. It's the combined works of Lucifer. She had *Lucifer Magazine*, and I've held those copies of *Lucifer* in my hand...leather-bound. Uh, she was the, uh, publisher and co-editor with Annie Basant, and from this Lucifer organization came theosophy, and there's only -- and from theosophy came unity, came, what is, uh...

[JM]: Yes, the other...

[AH]: This one-world religion, philosophy...and if you go the United Nations, they've got a meditation room and you'll find out that the high religion is the only one that is accepted in the United Nations. And in the mediation room, you're going to find a little Illuminati pyramid. So, they -- it's loaded with symbology and Jordan Maxwell is *the* expert on it...

[JM]: ...and what I was going to say, too, was that the United Nations uses a particular publishing firm for all of their documents [in public] and books and materials,and its called Lucis Publishing. [And] the United Nations uses Lucis Publishing. Lucis Publishing was at one time Helena Blavatsky's Lucifer Publishing. So, uh, to date...

[AH]: Funded by the Lucifer Trust.

[JM]: The Lucifer Trust, the United Nations, that's why it's in New York, because New York is referred to as, "The Empire State," because it's the new state of the new empire that is coming. That's why Steven Spielberg and George Lucas, with their *Indiana Jones* and *The Empire Strikes Back*, it has to do with occultism, it has to do with numerology, it has to do with a lot of mysticism coming out of theosophy. Uh, the point being is that we are involved in some very powerful occult, uh, manipulation of the world by some very astute occultists. And we are not even beginning to be aware of how far gone we are...

[AH]: And it's crazy to have a united world government. I don't want to do away with our individuality. Some people are white, some people are black, tall, short, fat, thin, Muslims, Buddhists, Christians, Jews. I like the diversity. I don't want to see a world with two hundred and twenty nations, I want to see a world with maybe three thousand nations. I believe in the right to integrate, to segregate, to separate, to have linguistic tribal nation states emerge where there are these people. Like in Africa -- and I've lived there for a while -- where the Matabeles have been fighting the Mashonas. Let them have their own nation states. Let that division take place. Let there be a free world alliance. Let there be a Croatia, let there be a Serbia. Let all individuals separate and find a place that is comfortable. Let them do their own thing in their own time in their own way. If somebody wants to be a racist, let them be a racist. Let them have a racist state. Let Israel exist; it is a religious state. It has a racist philosophy, fine. But let there be a Palestine, let there be an independent Gaza. I would like to see the secession of Alaska. I worked there in Radio Free America for three-and-a-half years. I called for the independence of Alaska. It should be an independent nation.

[DW]: Well, you know, when you -- you're mentioning all this conspiracy stuff. Now, I'm thinking that, you know, when various things happen like when the [L.A.] riots happened, um, about six months ago.

[AH]: April 29th and May 1st [sic]...

[DW]: Right, but when it happened and when just about everything bad in our society has happened, not just the riots -- I mean, it's almost tempting to want to believe that there are people behind there pulling the strings and all that, because it causes the false sense of security that, if we can just stop these people, we can have a better life, and that sort of thing...

[AH]: But we can have a better life if we stop these people...

[DW]: You don't think there's people today -- people just making mistakes, and that maybe you're just reading thing -- these things...

[AH]: How can everything happen just accidentally? I mean, uh, everything goes wrong and it happens to go wrong every time, everywhere, and we've been getting worse off and worse off and worse off. Ronald Reagan and George Bush, who are supposed to be conservatives, quote conservatives, tripled the national debt. I mean, all of the, the debt that was acquired from George Washington through Jimmy Carter, they tripled the national debt and then reporters get out there and say, "Hey, I'm thinking that these guys are conservative." They're not conservative.

[DW]: But can't you just write it up to a bad economic plan instead of saying there are people behind this (inaudible)...

[AH]: By design...

[JM]: Let me explain something to you...

[AH]: ...not a bad economic plan!

[JM]: ...you do not get to the President of the United States and you do not have hundreds of advisors, highly educated proficient advisors in every field of human activity and human endeavor, getting C2 reports every day from the CIA, you getting [sic] USIA, DIA documentation every hour on the hour for the economy of the world, all things happening in the earth being directed to the President's table. You don't make mistakes when you have become President. You have the finest minds in the world working for you, the finest intellects that the western world can produce. That's why you - that's why in a dog-eat-dog world, our country is the most powerful economic society on earth, because we are a very powerfully intellectual society. We don't make mistakes.

[AH]: Well, Roosevelt put this way: In politics, in politics, nothing happens by accident. If it happens...

[JM]: It was meant to be.

[AH]: ...it was planned that way.

[JM]: Right.

[DW]: So they planned on George Bush and Dan Quayle?

[JM]: Oh yeah.

[AH]: Oh yeah!

[DW]: (inaudible) George Bush and Dan Quayle are some of our most intelligent people working for -

[AH]: Oh, hell no, they're not the most intelligent people!

[JM]: (laughs) No, no...they are...

[AH]: ...but they are conspiratorial.

[JM]: They're fakes.

[AH]: When you get somebody from the Skull and Bones and the Trilateral Commission, and the guy who says, uh, everything I am today I owe to David Rockefeller, founder of the Trilateral Commission. Why is it that we don't, uh, talk about this organization? If they were members of the Nazi party, if they were members of the Boy Scouts, or, uh, some drag queen over in West Hollywood, we would be talking about them! There would be front-page headlines, but the Trilateral Commission, seventy-eight, ninety [sic] people who controls all three candidates for the President of the United States in 1980?

[JM]: We, we have a, we have a, we, we like to say in this country that we have the ability as Americans to elect, but the problem is we do not have to ability to *SEE-lect*. We can only *E-lect*, which means that we can only vote for those candidates which were put before us by our masters, our hidden masters behind the scenes. And when you understand that the Democratic and the Republican party are financed, and believe me, in this world, money is the bottom line, if you have it or you don't [sic]. And the Democratic and the, uh, Republican party are financed and organized and directed by the same banking families: the same people who finance your banks are the same people who finance your institutions of government. Uh, as a matter of fact, the word for "bench," in relationship to a judge sitting on the bench, comes from "bankol(sp?)," which is in Latin, meaning "the bank." The judge sits on the bench, which is a Latin word for "the bank." He officiates for the system. So when you go into the court, you're sitting before a court of order, which is actually being financed by government. So what we're talking about here is the system...

[AH]: How many people -- yeah, how many people today know that the Federal Reserve is not federal...

[JM]: It has nothing to do with the [inaudible]...

[AH]: ...it is not a reserve...

[JM]: No.

[AH]: They create that fiat funny money that you use. It's judt like Monopoly money. For less than a penny a note, they lend it to the U.S. Treasury in exchange for interest-bearing bonds. They print this stuff for less than a penny a note, they lend it in exchange for interest-bearing bonds, they issue this into circulation as debt-bearing currency. We cannot exist as a free and independent nation when this evilarchy controls the strings. We have to abolish the privately-owned Federal Reserve system.

[JM]: And that's why, on the dollar bill, it says up in the left-hand corner, uh, on the dollar bill, "tis note is legal tender for all debts, public and private." The reason it was put on there is because it was a piece of paper, and you have to tell the people that it's legal. You don't have to tell anyone.

[AH]: It used to say, "and is redeemable and lawful money..."

[JM]: Yes.

[AH]: ...in lawful - redeemable and lawful money. That meant it wasn't - it's not lawful money. It's not a dollar. If you have a piece of toilet paper, it can be used and tossed away, but as soon as you print, "Federal Reserve note," it becomes an obligation of the public to pay.

[JM]: So, what we're saying is that the Federal Reserve system has nothing whatsoever to do with the federal government. Just like "Federal Vacuum Cleaners" and "Federated Department Stores" has [sic] nothing to do with - it's a word, it is a play on words. A Federal Reserve system is a private banking institution, with most of its holders, um, ...

[AH]: The Class A stockholders have never been revealed to the United States public. It's never been in audit [sic].

[JM]: Never been in audit...

[AH]: ...independent audit.

[DW]: This organization, OK, that you say is pulling strings here, um, who - how many people are controlling this? Is this at the helm of one man, or is this...

[JM]: Oh no...

[AH]: It's an oligarchy...I call it an "evilarchy," because they want to bring about a Luciferian New World Order.

[DW]: And by Luciferian, uh...

[JM]: We're talking about...

[DW]: ...do you mean...

[AH]: I'm talking about a Satanic, a Satanic order. Now, if you take a look at the layout of Washington, D.C., and Jordan Maxwell is the expert on this...

[JM]: Yeah, I've got...

[AH]: You will find out that the entire city was laid out in, uh, in symbols, uh, if you take a look at the obelisk and the Illuminati pyramid at the top of the, uh...

[JM]: Yes, as a matter of fact, the two, the two main...

[AH]: ...Washington Monument.

[JM]: ...streets going toward the Capitol building, if you take - which I have pictures over the city looking down on Washington, D.C., you'll see there are two main boulevards, uh, culminating in a pyramid, and just at the very top of the pyramid is a street cutting it off, and then within the triangle at the top, where the eye on the dollar bill is, is the Capitol. And the Capitol Building sits there - it's a pyramid, then it has the, uh, Cleopatra's needle, which is the Washington Monument, and the, and the river - the long river way, the long water way is called the river Styx, which is where Pharaoh went into Heaven, on the river Styx. It is all laid out in Masonic symbolism and the five-pointed star, which is the pentagram, has always been used, Satan worship, Satanic worship the five-pointed pentagram. And if you take the arms off of the pentagram, you have a pentagon, and the United States Pentagon is sitting exactly due north, aiming due north at the North Star, Thuban, which is drawing power, according to the ancient Egyptians, for the god of war.

[AH]: It's the same pentagram on...

[JM]: All of the Satanic symbols.

[AH]: ... the Night Stalker's hand, and you know it is Satanic ritual killings.

[DW]: Right, now I'm trying to get an angle, I'm trying to get an angle, though, on what exactly you mean by Satanism. Are you referring - or Satanic - do you mean the elevation of human reason, or do - the, uh, strong survive - or do you mean a group of people who are actually worshiping a bonafide, spiritual, uh...

[AH]: We're talking about the warlocks of Washington, here. We're talking about people who have Satanic rituals. We're talking about people who believe in a Lucifer 2000. We're talking about, uh, the creation of a New World Order in a millennium, when George Bush talks about a thousand points of light. What do you think he's talking about, a thousand points of light? Could it be a thousand-year millennium under Lucifer? What do you think, Jordan?

[JM]: Yes, there's no doubt in my mind at all; the terminology is the same. When you go back through the speeches that Adolf Hitler made, and the top Nazi speech writers, and then listen to what Ronald Reagan had to say, and George Bush, and now our new incoming president...

[AH]: Well, Hilter talked about a thousand points of, uh - he's talked about a thousand-year Reich, and Bush is talking about a thousand points of light. And, you - I don't think it's just a coincidence...

[JM]: And not points of light...

[AH]: ...and after Hitler's second book is...

[DW]: ...not points of light?

[JM]: And he - his term, Bush is...

[AH]: New World Order and a religious new order...

[JM]: ...talking about thousand points of light, thousand points of light. Light is very important to Luciferians. It has to do with Lucifer, and it has to do with Satanic societies, and what, what we're saying here is that the government of the United States is in the hands of some very powerful, sinister people who are manipulating not only us, but the rest of the world.

[AH]: If you can take a look at - just take a road map of Washington, D.C. Just take a look at it from the air, and you'll see what appears to be the Goat of Mendes, and the Goat of Mendes...

[JM]: Which is a symbol in Freemasonry. It's a symbol, it's a demonic symbol within the (inaudible)

[AH]: ...you see the goat and the horns and the whole thing. The whole city is laid out like that. It's all over.

[JM]: So, what we're basically saying here is that there is nothing happening by chance. Uh, as I brought out before, the George Lucas and Steven Spielberg, with their *Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade*, and the last Crusade is for the Holy Grail, the cup of Christ. It's not by chance that we have movies like that, because they're in - why is Adolf Hitler always involved with Indiana Jones? Uh, the last Crusade you can't understand unless you understand the first Crusade. The first Crusade was, was developed by what we call the Knights Templars Masonic Lodge. The Knight Templars are the ones that gave us what we call the Columbian faction of the Illuminati, which comes to America and founds itself in the state of New York, which comes from the old York Rite in England, from the Duke of York to Old York, England, to New York, the Empire State. Then, if you understand that, uh, Europe was dominating - Europe has dominated the world for almost sixteen hundred years, and we refer to Europe as the Old World. Therefore, the power structure of Europe is the Old World Order, that's the power structure of the Old World.

[DW]: We're going to be doing more of this.

(brief instrumental music)[142]

(audio playback stops)

[William Cooper]: Well, folks, it's time to take our break. Don't go away, we'll be right back after this very short pause.

Well, folks, you'll never guess what happened. Somebody just called me and said: Please, Bill, enough is enough. Enough! I believe, I understand! I know, I've gone, I've looked, I've verified! (laughs) And I -- you know what I did? I asked him, "Well, if you know and understand all this, have you called Swiss America Trading yet?" And he said, "What?" And I said, "Have you called Swiss America Trading yet?"

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss America Trading]

(audio playback begins)

(brief instrumental music)[143]

[DW]: [Audio cuts in suddenly] ...talk about the difference between the Old World Order and the New World Order?

[JM]: We're hearing this term, "New World Order," and our troops are in the Middle East because of something called a "New World Order." I just wanted to bring, uh, to your attention the reason for that term. Europe is referred to as the Old World, and the power structure of the Old World was referred to as the "Old World Order". I mean, the old Roman dynasties, the Rothschild's of England, the banking dynasties throughout Europe, and the whole power structure of what we call Europe was the European Old World Order, and it dominated the world for almost sixteen hundred years, Europe has dominated the world [sic]. But with the coming of America, or Christo-Columbia (?), uh, the founding of America, we now are in what we called New World. Consequently, there is a new world power structure in Western civilization, and, uh, centered in America, and so that's what George Bush is talking about, a New World Order is a new world fraternal order, because the world in the dictionary means a fraternal, or knightly order, uh, like the Masonic Order or Lodge. And so, what we're talking about the Old World Order is a power structure centered in the New World. And we're seeing terminologies in movies and motion pictures like we said, Steven Spielberg and George Lucas with *The Empire Strikes Back*. It has to do with New York being the Empire State, the state of the new empire, connecting New York with the old York dynasty in England, and, uh, America strikes back at the Old Order, which is the first and second World War, and if you understand the connections between the Vatican and the European banking families, and Europe being the Old World Order, as opposed to America being, uh, a New World Order. And the empire strikes back, and of course the head of the - all Freemasons will recognize that Yota is little Yuda, or Yota is the ideologue of the Knights Templars Freemasonic Order, giving us what we call the York Rite, or New York. And, so all of these things are mystical symbols and emblems, and from that, we can open up a can of words, and all kinds of...

[AH]: But it gets down to the bottom line, the bottom line of this whole thing is one world government.

[JM]: Right.

[AH]: "Ein volk, ein Reich, ein Fuhrer." They want one world, one currency, one race, one religion, and, if you ever read anything from *Global 2000*, you'll find out that they plan to reduce the population of this planet by twenty-five percent by the year 2000. And how are they going to do that? Designer diseases. It's my thesis, it's Dr. Robert Strecker's thesis, that they have created AIDS, and disseminated AIDS through the Hepatitis B vaccinate shots to the homosexual community in the United States with the Public Health Service, and to the blacks in Senegal, Uganda, Zaire, the central African republic Haiti and Brazil, for the purpose of reducing the population of the planet by this twenty-five percent by the year 2000 through the smallpox vaccine shots over there.

---

[142]

[143]

[DW]: Yeah, what I have a, a difficult un-, trying to get by here as a lot of people do too, is you're naming a lot of things: I mane, the Empire State Building with the empire, Yoda with the Knights Templar, now we're talking about AIDS. I'm just wondering -- and Christopher Columbus -- isn't there any part of human history where things are just -- the result of incompetence where things just happen?

[AH]: There's a conspiracy...

[DW]: Everything is a conspiracy...

[AH]: ...of this oligarchy to bring about this global government upon the ashes of the United States government of America. And all of you will be enslaved, or slaughtered if you don't go along with their gig...

[JM]: ...the new plan.

[AH]: ...the plan of New World Order, *Novus Ordo Seclorum*. It's on the dollar bill. Adolf Hitler wrote it, George Bush is implementing it.

[DW]: Well, a lot of people are concerned about AIDS...

[AH]: ...it is a man-made disease, created at Fort Detrick, there's no question in my mind about that. The World Health Organization went out to give these smallpox vaccine shots to the innocent blacks, and AIDS is vector born. AIDS is a cancer. They don't want to come up with a cure until the population of Africa has been diminished substantially. I think that black people in Africa are an endangered species. In south central Los Angeles, not far from where we are right now, at one high school with kids giving blood to the blood bank, it was discovered that there was 90% that were HIV positive. These are teenage black kids. I'm saying that AIDS is not simply epidemic, or pandemic. It's mega-pandemic, and AIDS is murder. This is a designer disease, and it is a program to mass murder people upon the planet to reduce the population.

[DW]: Talking about south central, uh, the Illuminati, uh, began, if I'm to understand you right, on May the 1st, 1776, and you were ascribing some sort of significance of the fact that the riot recently happened on...

[AH]: May the 1st.

[DW]: April 29th to May 1st.

[JM]: That's right. May 1st was the founding date of the Bavarian Illuminati in Germany in the year 1776. This you can find in any encyclopedia in any library. Look up the word, "Illuminati." Illuminati comes from "illumined" or "illuminate," meaning the worship of light. The Enlightened Ones, those who are the masters who manipulate the world finance and manipulate world government. The Illuminati was founded May 1st, 1776, and that's why in Soviet Union and all Communist countries, you have a great celebration on May Day. May Day was a symbol for – May Day was the celebration of the founding of the world revolution conspiracy in Germany, and then later on goes into France and to, uh...

[AH]: ...and I hope they don't have to burn the city before the people see the real light...

[JM]: ...and so, that's why our riot that happened here in Los Angeles happened on May 1st. It was all prearranged, pre-setup by this government, had nothing to do with the people in the area. I have talked to many of the black community of the area...

[DW]: Wait, wait...you say, "this government," you're talking about those who control this government...

[JM]: Yeah, I'm talking about those who control this government, not the government itself, but those who are behind the scenes, who control this government and decide what it will and will not do.

[AH]: And control the black projects, the Central Intelligence Agency.

[DW]: Are you able to zero in on exactly who these people are who are the government, the government calling themselves...?

[AH]: The invisible government, talking about the invisible government.

[DW]: Yeah.

[AH]: I talk about it as an evilarchy.

[DW]: Well, are you able to tear -- zero in on who these people are in this evilarchy?

[AH]: As a group, the members of the Council on Foreign Relations. I'm not saying all members of the Council on Foreign Relations are Illumnists. Members of the Trilateral Commission, members of the Club of Rome, the Skull and Bones fraternity, the Bohemian society -- here's a group of presidents up there with black robes, like Klansmen, sitting around this huge bonfire at the Bohemian Grove, uh, worshiping this giant owl.

[JM]: Yeah, we have color pictures of this, we have color pictures of the presidents of the United States, all living presidents today, uh, dressed in large black robes with pointed headdresses like the Ku Klux Klan in front of a large open fire pit, a pit of fire, uh, in the article appeared said that it was after twelve midnight, all the American presidents line up on this altar, and worship the owl. And they said the reason why the owl was used in their worship is because it is wise, because it is able to see things in the dark. There's a message there. The owl is wise because it sees things in the dark, and that's why the presidents and the heads of state and the heads of the government that we live under, all meet at one o'clock, at twelve o'clock at night, uh, to worship the owl.

[AH]: Yeah, but if you don't believe it, if you don't believe it, we will come back and do another show and Jordan will pull out pictures...

[DW]: Yes, I want to see those pictures.

[AH]: ...and you can zero in on Gerald Ford, who has some sort of Satanic shrine at his home, as I understand it from inside sources. Uh, I had talked to one fellow at a -- this is in Anaheim years ago, at Knott's Berry Farm after a Billy James Hargis meeting, who claimed to be a member of some witches coven. He mentioned two congressmen which were involved in Satanic cults, and they were, I guess, warlocks. And, uh, I only remembered one, because he was the number one congressman for the Republican party, the House minority leader, Gerald Ford, then later the selected, non-elected President, who then selected the non-elected vice-President, Nelson Rockefeller. So, we had a President and vice-President of the United States that were not elected by us, but selected by them. And if you take a look at the administrations of Ronald Reagan, who said that Jimmy Carter should be criticized, or criticize Carter for having had eighteen members of the Council on Foreign Relations and Trilateral Commission appointed to key positions in his administration. Ronald Reagan had an excess of two hundred. He's as phony as a three-dollar bill. Ronald Reagan is not a right-winger, folks. He is a phony, he is a phony, he is a phony.

[JM]: He was known in Hollywood as, "Red Ronnie."

[AH]: "Red Ronnie," yeah. "Red Ronnie."

[DW]: You've indicated that this conspiracy, uh, has some goal, uh, that they want to accomplish by the year 2000. I was wondering if you can spell that out for me.

[AH]: Now, I've done an article, called *Global 2000*. There's a thing out there, and you've read it in *Life Magazine*. You've seen the front cover of the NASA SETI program. You've seen the big, big, uh, picture from outer space and, uh, they talked about a hundred million dollar investment. A hundred million dollars to invest, to find out whether there is extraterrestrial intelligence. Well, there's, there's – they got something going, here. You remembered *War of the Worlds*?

[DW]: The radio broadcast?

[AH]: Yes, by Orson Welles in 1939?

[DW]: Mmhmm, yes.

[AH]: Well, we've got something else coming in. They're going to make the announcement that they have discovered extraterrestrial intelligence! And this will frighten the people of the world, saying, "Oh my God! How can we deal with this as a nation? Well, we can only deal with it as the United Nations, yes! We're going to have a United Nations, a one-world government, yeah. It's necessary," they're going to say. " It's absolutely necessary." Why?

[DW]: Tell me.

[AH]: To defend ourselves from those little green men, from the aliens that are out there. They will make that announcement, and the whole program is phony. It stinks, it's setup and you're going to be the patsy, unless you understand what's going down and who's doing what to whom.

[JM]: And if you -- and if you think that's, uh, far, far-fetched, just remember that the Soviet Union was put before us in our media and our television and our radio and our newspapers as being an evil empire; a frightening, powerful, evil, militaristic empire...

[AH]: Who can't even feed its own people.

[JM]: ...and now today, we find out that it's like the Wizard of Oz. He comes out from behind the curtain and we find out they've been stared all their life. They can't even grow enough potatoes to make vodka, they have to import the potatoes, they haven't even got a railroad track across their country; they're starving, they have always been starving, they're broke, and the only military materials that had was the stuff that we sent to them that we aren't even using anymore, shelves of rockets, shelves of planes, and it's just an evil empire on paper. They're starving.

[AH]: You asked about this Luciferian thing by the year 2000. I was concerned when they sent up the Galileo mission, because they sent up the Galileo mission to explore the planet Jupiter. That went up in 19 -- what is -- 87 or so?

[JM]: I don't even know...

[AH]: Something like that. It's already gone. It's on its way, folks. It's going to Jupiter. It's going to reach the planet by 1995, it's going to circle the planet...

[JM]: Mmhmm.

[AH]: ...and then by 1999, it's going to be drawn into the planet, where it will simply explode. What does it have on it? It's got 49 ¼ pounds of plutonium, even for...well, let's say, ten hydrogen bombs. What is the atmosphere of Jupiter made up of? Hydrogen. Now this, if it could -- if it were to be ignited, it would give us a second sun.

[JM]: Right.

[AH]: And I thought, my God...year 2000, a second sun. Where have I read that before? Something struck me -- I said, wait a minute,..Arthur C. Clark, *2010: Odyssey 2*. I went back to the last chapter. Guess what the last chapter is called? "Lucifer Rising." And he talks about the ignition of the planet Jupiter by the year 2010. And, he said at the very end of the book – and you can read it, go to the library, pick it up, look at it – he said that the NASA space program was interested, a Dr. Robert Jathro, I think it was, or Jethro, was interested in this particular thesis for the Galileo mission. So we're talking about a space exploration program, that not only is going to go, it already went up. That was in 1982. This was sent up five years later. It's already on its way. If that thing ignites, it would give us a dual solar system...

[JM]: So what we're talking about is two sides...

[AH]: ...and they rename the planet from Jupiter to Lucifer.

[JM]: Right.

[AH]: That's exactly what Arthur C. Clark talks about in 2010, so we're talking about Lucifer 2000.

[JM]: There'll be no more nighttime, so there'll be more no opportunity for crime at night. There'll be more sun now, because you will have two suns now in our solar system, so that you can increasing (growing system)...

[AH]: ...and the increase of the growing system like the Matamosca Valley, just north of Anchorage, Alaska.

[JM]: And this might sound pretty far-fetched, but you had better look at the facts. The fact is, is that this thing is carrying plutonium, it's going to Jupiter and they know what it's going to do when it does crash. So...

[AH]: And as NASA said in their space program, could be used as a vehicle to frighten the people of the planet into surrendering their sovereignty into accepting a one-world government. And they've talked about a thing out here called the Federal Emergency Management Association, which came, *en masse*, when the riots took place. They create chaos, and they create control.

[JM]: Over the world headquarters in Switzerland of the world Masonic headquarters for world Freemasonry, over the door is *Ordo Ab Chao*, which is Latin for "Order out of Chaos." And all Freemasons know that term, *Ordo Ab Chao*. Order out of chaos; the concept is to create chaos, to create the problems, then while the people are frightened to death of all the crime and everything that seems to be out of control, a riotous situation, the government then moves in with justification. In order to put down this terrible chaos, they must have full power of the military, full obedience of the people to give the government full power to do whatever they want. That's why we have, in all over the world, wars, riots, bloodshed, famines, all kinds of things happening around the world, is being manipulated. It's being orchestrated, not just for Los Angeles, but...

[AH]: It's conflict control.

[JM]: Conflict control.

[AH]: There's been more wars since the creation of the United Nations then before the creation of the United Nations. More wars since 1945 to 1992 then from the beginning of time through 1945.

[JM]: Let me explain this for...

[AH]: And the people who created the United Nations were from the Council on Foreign Relations. One of the [first secretary general of the United Nations organization, or CFR]...

[DW]: When fundamentalists kind of talk about their ideas kind of parallel to this, uh, they at least have what they consider to be some ray of hope that Christ will come down and save us all or something like that. Do you, do the two of you [individual, whatever] have any kind of hope or anything you can give us?

[AH]: Yes, a creation of a free world alliance.

[DW]: A free world alliance?

[AH]: A free world alliance, that's the creation of many, many, many different nations where individual rights and sovereignty is respected, so that we can do our own thing on our own time. I'm talking about *laissez-faire*. I'm talking about free enterprise, not [part of] Socialism that we have right now.

[DW]: Would it be fair to call you a Libertarian or not?

[AH]: I'm an anarchical capitalist libertarian, uh, quasi-conservative.

[DW]: Uh-huh.

[AH]: I believe in conserving not the status quo, but conserving freedom, and these freedoms that we have are drifting away. They're going through our fingers like water or sand. We've got to grasp hold of the Constitution. We have to use that document or we're going to lose it.

[JM]: And the problem is education, that's where the real power is, is in that of educating people. Uh, I have no, I myself am not looking to have anyone come back, no Messiah to come back to help. I'm not looking to any of this. I, my belief is, is that knowledge is the thing that's needed. People need to wake up and discover who is running their government, what the symbols of government mean, what these emblems mean when they see the national coat of arms, the flags, the emblems, the seals, the symbols. All of these things mean something. Educate yourself. Find out where it came from. That's the only hope I see for the human race is the human race itself waking up to find out we've been had.

[AH]: You know, the oligarchy has a Messiah: Lord Maitreya. I can him, "Lord Betraya," who's wrapped in with theosophical society, wrapped in with all these Luciferian crap. You go up to [little Satan place], in Ojai Valley, I was raised up there in Ojai Valley, you're gonna find the Blavatskites, and you're gonna find the, uh, Krishnamurti group right next door in the Meditation Mountain, and I believe that they're going to try and introduce this Lord Maitreya as the Jesus, the Buddha of the, uh, as the new Mohamed, uh, he's going to be all things to all people, and they're going to be talking about a global government, and we have to unify, we have to [bridge] -- dissolve all our differences, and sort of come into one amalgamated, homogenized group.

[JM]: Let me, let me also bring out that Adam Weishoff in his writings that talked about -- if a group wanted to take over the world, and this would totally be an impossible mission, but if they -- and incidentally, that's what where we get Mission Impossible from, Impossible Mission Force, which is , if you'll remember in the movie, Impossible Mission Force was the IMF, which is the International Monetary Fund, and the Impossible Mission Force was always working for the government, uh, overthrowing kings, rulers and princes. But, of course, the government has nothing to do with it, and they were...

[AH]: They were the bad guys...

[JM]: Yeah.

[AH]: And the one-world oligarchy is the good guys.

[JM]: Of course. Television has been doing this for years, and they movies like *Get Smart*. *Get Smart*. And in *Get Smart*, what did you have? You have the two sides: chaos and control. And again, we have Ordo Ab Chao. Chaos and control, that's the way you get control is by causing chaos.

[AH]: It's Hegelian politics.

[JM]: The Hegelian dialectic, yes.

[AH]: The illusionary right, the Nazi Nationalist Socialists, and the Communists. Now, the Nazis believed in total government. The Communists believed in total government. You say, well, gee, I'm not over there, I'm sort of down the middle, and you're half-Nazi and half-Communist. Adolf Hitler said basically that National Socialism and Marxism are the same. He said that on February 5th, 1941. So they're the same.

[JM]: They're identical, absolutely. So, what I'm saying is that, uh, when you get back to the original symbols and emblems of the secret societies and you understand, as Adam Weishoff wrote, which is what I was going to bring out -- Adam Weishoff wrote that the one thing that bring all nations together, all peoples together, because there's so much differences between races and individuals, but the one thing all individuals will come together for is to save their own hide. So, if you can create enough bloodshed, enough violence, enough anarchy; if you can finance, organize and direct it correctly to cause enough civil unrest, civil right, uh, or law -- unrest...

[AH]: How [creating] a New World Order by creating what? The illusion that there are men from outer space. There won't simply be a war of the world, this is a war that is declared against the world and that's what they're trying to bring out. If you take a look at the background of George Bush, take a look at the background of Adolf Hitler. Where did he get his money? Senator Prescott Bush was involved as the chief man at Brown Brothers Harriman. Brown Brothers Harriman was involved in the financing of Adolf Hitler. Adolf Hitler came...

[JM]: So was General Motors, General Electric, uh...

[AH]: Standard Oil.

[JM]: Standard Oil. All of these corporations got to be large corporations because they were financing both sides during the second World War. And that's...

[AH]: That's conflict control.

[JM]: It's conflict...yeah, it's called conflict control.

[AH]: World War II was engineered. Wars, like bridges are engineered. They're created.

[JM]: You don't think the people that own...

[AH]: It doesn't happen by accident.

[JM]: You don't think that people who run the Ford Motor Company or General Electric could get up in the morning and have their meeting, and decide what they're going to do today? They don't plan what they're going to do today. People -- they have highly trained people who know what the company is going to be doing ten years from today. They have an agenda. They know how many -- how much oil is going to be needed ten years from today, how much rubber, how much glass; they have to know these things. You have to plan for the international corporations, ten, twenty years ahead of time. And if you think they do it, you have to know that this government does it. And the...

[AH]: When the true...

[JM]: ...when you understand that things are planned for the future.

[AH]: When the tomb at Yale University was violated, when they broke in, they went into one room and here was all this Nazi paraphernalia. This is the fraternity...

[JM]: At Yale University.

[AH]: …where George Bush laid nude in the coffin, was born again into the Satanic order, they go into the one room...here's all the Nazi paraphernalia.

[JM]: Jimmy Carter, Jimmy Carter used to talk about how he was thrice born, and all Christians said, oh, that means he was born again. No, he said *thrice* born. Freemasons know what that means. If you are an occultist or into Freemasonry, you know what the term "thrice born" means, and it hasn't got a thing to do with Christianity. It means that you have been initiated into the secret society.

[DW]: Ane we're running out of time, uh, quickly here, and, uh, ...

[AH]: We're running out of time as a nation.

[JM]: Yeah.

[DW]: Well, this is certainly a tall order...I mean, I used to think that Campus Crusades...

(audio playback fades out)

[William Cooper]: Well, ladies and gentlemen, if you think you've had enough, don't you ever, ever tune into this program again, because in my estimation there's no such thing as enough. And I'm going to continue to shove this thing down your throats until you understand it. For those of you who want more, listen to the Hour of the Time every Monday through Friday night.

(closing audio clip -- movie?): And this is a...this is evidence of double-mindedness. This is evidence of the fact that we don't really understand how we the people are being manipulated by the powers that be, the high cabal, the forces of evil. If you want to try to put a definite label on it, you're going to play into the hands of the organism itself. You -- (audio is cutoff)

Hour 30: The Godmakers and Bo Gritzaired (aired October 13th, 1993)

Good evening, I'm William Cooper, and you're listening to the Hour of the Time.

(opening music: Also sprach Zarathustra (theme song of 2001: A Space Odyssey) by Richard Strauss)

Ladies and gentlemen, Lt. Colonel James "Bo" Gritz:

(audio clip of Lt. Col. Gritz): "We're gonna have perfect government, but (applause) perfect government is coming soon, and I'm looking forward to it."

What you have just heard, ladies and gentlemen, is the age-old dream of Mystery Babylon, the Secret Societies, Freemasonry, the Knights Templar, the Knights of Malta, the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross. The age-old dream of a perfect government, permanent Utopia upon this Earth. What is Lt. Colonel James "Bo" Gritz talking about, this 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite and member of the branch of Mystery Babylon known as the Mormon Church? What is he talking about? Ladies and gentlemen, that's the subject of tonight's broadcast. It is known as the Secret Kingdom.

[Reading from *The Godmakers*, written by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt]:

(start of quote)
===

Investigative reporter Jeffrey Kaye concluded, "The Mormon Church, this American Zion, wields more economic power more effectively than the state of Israel or the Pope in Rome." Actually, [dear listeners,] the word *church* is misleading when applied to Mormondom, for the power structure controlling its staggering resources is organized for the kind of absolute authoritarianism that one usually associates with a cult and not with a responsible church. Nor are the ultimate goals of The Brethren compatible with the normal aims of Christian leaders.

[William Cooper: In fact, in no way, shape or form can the Mormon church be called, "Christian."]

They are essentially the same as those of cults in general and especially those of secret revolutionary groups working toward a takeover of the world. As one former teacher of Brigham Young University has said: "The Mormons do intend to take over the world...There is no secret about that -- it's in the writings of Joseph Smith right on down. The Constitution of the United States will 'hang by a thread' and the church will save it by establishing a theocracy."

Any who think the Mormon kingdom is a democracy are under a delusion. In fact it is a dictatorship ruled by its inner elite circle[, a council of elders]. As the front page of *The Wall Street Journal* recently said, "Today, from their 28th story marble-and-glass Church headquarters building in Salt Lake City, Mormon Church leaders oversee a vast and growing world-wide financial empire." From these offices, their dictatorial control reaches out to every Church level and into every facet of Mormon life. Whatever "vote" there seems to be at the Ward, Stake, and individual levels is part of a cleverly contrived illusion that continues to deceive millions of Mormons into imagining that they actually have some say in Church affairs. Although they do have the "freedom" to disagree with their leaders, to do so means excommunication and damnation. Excommunicated for openly disagreeing with The Brethren's position on ERA, Sonia Johnson has said [this]: "The Mormon church has become more powerful than we dare believe. It's downright terrifying, especially when you see how rich and influential it is...I really think if we could ever get an investigation, it would uncover something so like Watergate, it would blow everything wide open."

Totalitarian, Theocratic Communism [seems to be the goal.] Saints Alive was [recently] involved in some litigation arising out a physical attack upon one of its missionaries by an LDS [or Latter-day Saints] tour guide on the street just outside Salt Lake City's Temple Square. In an interrogatory exchange, the surprising response by the Mormon church revealed that it was an unincorporated association *without assets*! [William Cooper: Let me repeat that...*without assets*!] All wealth and power is owned and controlled by the closely held *Corporation of the President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day*

Saints, Inc.. [You see, folks,] church members who have faithfully and sacrificially contributed their tithes, time, and energy are [absolutely] powerless to demand an accounting or to change a single action by the First Presidency, even if all [5.2] million of them stood up in unison and "voted" unanimously for it.

The startling fact[, folks,] is that Mormon Church members have no vote or participation of any kind in the corporate entity that controls Mormondom. They can sincerely perform their functions as Bishops, Elders, High Priests and Sunday school superintendents all they wish, but in the real world[, the real world] of legal ownership and raw power they are only [5.2 million] pawns[. Pawns, fools if you will,] subject to manipulation from the top. All of this is part of a secret kingdom that Jeffrey Kaye has called the "Invisible Empire" and about which most Mormons have only the vaguest notions[, if they have any notions at all]. This theocracy was alluded to by late Apostle Bruce R. McConkie: "Through this church and kingdom a framework has been built through which the full government of God will eventually operate."

That "full government of God" involves what is known as the "United Order." "Revelations" that came through Joseph Smith described it as a theocratic communistic society. All property and income was to be given over to the control of the Church and then distributed to everyone according to his need as The Brethren find it, so that "the poor shall be exalted, in that the rich are made low." Those who transgressed were to be put out of the Church, in which case the property they had given into the treasury would not be returned to them.

Serious problems prevented full implementation of the "United Order." [You see, until now,] it never really worked. However, the Mormon Church still looks forward to the day when these "revelations" of God through the "Prophet" will be fulfilled and Mormon theocratic communism firmly established worldwide. [And] that can only happen when the Church has taken full political power. When that time comes, woe to all who transgress the "laws" of the Mormon gospel. Excommunication with loss of earthly property will be supplemented[, ladies and gentlemen,] with the death penalty.

[William Cooper: The United Order is, in reality, the total makeup of the full body of the Illuminati. All of the different organizations will come together to rule the world. There is a doctrine, an ancient pagan doctrine of blood atonement connected to the Mormon church.]

[And] since the early days of the church, it has always been Mormon doctrine that "...under certain circumstances, there are some serious sins for which the cleansing of Christ does not operate, and the law of God is that men must then have their own blood shed to atone for their sins." It is generally thought that these "serious sins" are in the category of murder and adultery. However, this is not clearly defined in Mormonism. Brigham Young[, a 33rd degree Freemason,] said that "any man or woman, who violates the covenants made with their God will be required to pay the debt. The blood of Christ will never wipe that out, your own blood must atone for it." In the same general vein, President J.M. Grant declared: "...If they are covenant breakers we need a place designated where we can shed their blood."

[William Cooper: You see, folks, my prophecy on the Hour of the Time that human sacrifice would return to the world will be fulfilled unless we are smart enough to stop it.]

Besides murder and adultery, blood atonement was also advocated for stealing and taking the name of the Lord in vain. Likewise, the penalty for marrying an African "under the Law of God is death on the spot. This will also be so."

[William Cooper: The Mormon church is now, and has always been, a white Aryan racist organization, and until recently when threatened with lawsuits, they never allowed any other race then white Caucasians to belong. That's right, folks, and if you are a black American who belongs to the Mormon church, you have really been fooled. All of the secret organizations of Mystery Babylon are racist organizations.]

(The 1978 decision opening the priesthood to blacks didn't change that law.) Blood atonement was also required for lying or "damning old Joe Smith or his religion..."

[William Cooper: I guess that tells you what's going to happen to me. But what about other liars, like Bobo [sic] Gritz?

Does it apply to him, or is he excused if he is working in the furtherance of the Great Work or the Great Plan?]

That most serious of all crimes, apostasy, bears the death penalty, and those who kill an apostate are saving his soul. This is a real concern of ex-Mormons. Many have received death threats and some have even been shot at [recently]. Brigham Young was very firm on this subject, as the following excerpt from one of his sermons as reported in *Journal of Discourses* indicates: "I say, rather than that apostates should flourish here, I will unsheath my Bowie knife and conquer or die. (Great commotion erupted in the congregation, and a simultaneous burst of feeling, assenting to the declaration.)" [And he continues:] "Now, you nasty apostates, clear out, or judgment will be put to the line, and righteousness to the plummet. [And you could hear] voices, generally [saying], 'go it, go it.'" [And he continues:] "If you say it is right, raise your hands." [All hands in the congregation were raised. Then he continues:] "Let us call upon the Lord to assist us in this, and every good work."

[You see, folks, the] doctrine of "blood atonement" was practiced in Utah prior to statehood, until the Mormon leadership realized that they must obey federal laws or have them enforced by the United States Army.

[William Cooper: And that's the only thing that stopped it from being practiced in the open. It was, for many years, continued in secret, and there are many who swear today that it is still being carried out.]

There are rumors that this doctrine is still practiced secretly in Utah today. It would be strange if it were not, for Mormons boast that they of all people "practice what they believe"; and as Joseph Fielding Smith said, blood atonement "is scriptural doctrine and is taught in all the standard works of the Church." Certainly, Church leaders would openly carry this out today if they could. In fact, the Utah State Legislature with its Mormon majority has succeeded in legalizing one method of practicing blood atonement. Utah is the only state where the condemned may elect to be executed by a firing squad, which causes his own blood to be shed, and thus why Mormon beliefs atones for his sins. The execution...by a firing squad of condemned murderer Gary Gilmore, who was a Mormon, was a recent example. Brigham Young made blood atonement sound like a generous provision that the guilty would willingly embrace and the executioners gladly perform "in love"[; Brigham Young said this]: "Now, take a person...[who] knows that by having his blood shed he will atone for that sin...is there a man or woman is this house but what would say, 'shed my blood that I may be saved and exalted with the Gods'? He would be glad to have his blood shed...I could refer to plenty of instances where men have been righteously slain in order to atone for their sins...This is loving our neighbors as ourselves...If he wants salvation and it is necessary to spill his blood on the earth in order that he may be saved, spill it...That is the way to love mankind."

Regardless of the understanding of the average Mormon, The Brethren look forward to the day when they will once again be able to practice openly not only polygamy but blood atonement. When will that day come? In answer to that question, Bruce R. McConkie has written: "This doctrine can only be practiced in its fullness in a day when its civil and ecclesiastical laws are administered in the same kinds." If the Mormon church should ever succeed in taking over the world, Mormonism, in its most fanatical and bizarre practices will become the rule enforced, unbendingly upon everyone. Dare anyone call this a conspiracy? Thinking he was denying it, one Mormon recently told us, 'This isn't a *conspiracy*, it's our *destiny*!" As with polygamy in the past, the obsessive ambition of world domination is openly denied today, but secretly plotted. Though less blatantly proclaimed, that ultimate goal hasn't changed since the early days when Mormon leaders brazenly boasted, as First Presidency member Heber C. Kimball declared in 1859: "...The nations will bow to this kingdom, sooner or later, and all hell cannot help it."

[William Cooper: The global goal, ladies and gentlemen, is a one-world government, as it is with all the branches of the Illuminati.]

Of course, Mormon leaders call their empire the "kingdom of God." However, their "God" is an extraterrestrial from Kolob, definitely *not* the God of the Bible; and the "Zion" to which their spirit-brother-of-Lucifer Jesus Christ will return to reign is Independence, Missouri. Most Christians believe, as the Bible declares, that Christ will return to Jerusalem, Israel to establish His millennial kingdom, whereas Mormons believe that *they* must establish a worldwide Mormon kingdom dictated from their Missouri base in order to make it possible for Christ to return. Therein lies a great difference, which is why the Mormon hierarchy, beginning with Joseph Smith himself, has always had worldwide and absolute *political power* as its goal.

Mormon historian Klaus J. Hansen has written, "The idea of a political kingdom of God, promulgated by a secret Council of Fifty, is by far the most important key to an understanding of the Mormon past." Mormon writer John J. Stewart has said: "The Prophet established a confidential Council of Fifty, or 'Ytfif,' (Fifty spelled backwards), comprised of both Mormons and non-Mormons, to help attend to temporal matters, including the eventual development of a one-world government, in harmony with preparatory plans for the second advent of the Saviour."

The close relationship between Masonry, the Mormon Priesthood and Joseph Smith's growing ambition to rule the world (in order to bring Christ back) has been pointed out by a number of Mormon writers. Like the Temple ceremonies, the secret Council of Fifty grew out of [Freemasonry]. The Prophet's divine "revelation about the political kingdom of God" came just three weeks after the Nauvoo Masonic Lodge was installed and Smith became a Master Mason. These men were all members of the Priesthood, they all wore special robes, and the records of their meetings were often burned (those that remain in the possession of the Church today are not available even for Church historians to peruse). In 1884 Mormon spokesman Elder Lunt said, "We look forward with perfect confidence to the day when we will hold the reigns of the [United States] government...After that we expect to control the continent." This secret organization was referred to in a "writ issued for the arrest of prominent citizens of Nauvoo for 'treasonable designs against the state.'"

Numerous sources report that shortly before his death Joseph Smith was crowned by the secret council as king over the Mormon kingdom that he believed was destined to control the world. Not only was Joseph Smith crowned "king on the earth," but so were Brigham Young and John Taylor. The authority claimed even today for Mormondom's "living Prophet" is still that of an absolute monarch or dictator. One of the greatest authorities on the Mormon doctrine, the late Apostle Bruce R. McConkie has said:

"The church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints as it is now constituted is the kingdom of God on earth...The Church is not a democracy...[but] a kingdom...and the President of the Church, the mouthpiece of God on earth, is the earthly king."

[William Cooper: I wonder what the Pope has to say about that. And yes, ladies and gentlemen, there is a secret government.]

The current importance of all of this ambition to rule the world is evident in the secret oaths still taken by each Mormon going through the Temple ceremonies. [William Cooper: A ceremony, through which Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz has publicly exalted.] In one such oath, the patron "consecrates" all he owns, earns and is "to the church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for the building up of the kingdom of God on earth and for the establishment of Zion." In the "Law of Sacrifice," Template patrons swear even to sacrifice their lives to this cause. This is not what Christians think of as the kingdom of God to be established by Christ Himself, but, as Mormon writer J.D. Williams has pointed out, it involves "a secret government, responsible not to the governed, but to the ecclesiastical authority, which will provide benign rule for all people, without election." That most Mormons are aware of the real purpose behind Mormonism doesn't change the facts. Mormon researcher Klaus Hansen's comments are of interest:

"Even among the Mormons, few were themselves aware of the revolutionary implications inherent in the concept of a political kingdom of God as taught by their prophet Joseph Smith to a small group of faithful followers, after he had initiated them in to a secret Council of Fifty in the spring of 1844...Indeed, if few Mormons, in 1844, knew what kind of kingdom their prophet had organized that year, fewer know today."

The fact that so few Mormons themselves, to say nothing of non-Mormons, know the truth about Mormonism today reflects the secrecy involved and the apparent intention of its leaders. Is so much of Mormonism plotted and practiced in secret because The Brethren know it can only be "sold" under false labels? Can Mormons reasonably expect the world to convert to a religion that is so dishonestly and secretly presented and much of it held back in secret because it is so "sacred"? If Mormons are indeed "the only true Christians," then let them emulate the founder of Christianity who said, "I spake openly to the world...and in secret have I said nothing."

[The] corruption [is, of course, as always] rooted in power. History confirms common sense and bearing witness that whenever the absolute control which The Brethren wield has rested for very long in human hands, the results have been tragic. The Bible declares that the heart of every human is "deceitful above all things, and [is] desperately wicked..." This applies to The Brethren as well as to everyone else. The worst despots in history have been those who claimed to be divine. [And] this is because humans were never intended to exercise godlike power and control either over themselves or over others.

[William Cooper: Man is inherently flawed. The concept that imperfect man can rule imperfect man in a thousand years of Utopian peace on this earth is ludicrous.]

When they attempt it, disaster results as surely as night follows day.

Much of the dishonest unwillingness to face facts unfavorable to their religion and the gullible willingness to believe the most outrageous lies that Mormons themselves admit is endemic among them can be traced to their belief that they are in the processes of becoming "gods."

[William Cooper: You see, they are just another branch of Mystery Babylon.]

How can a "god" ever be wrong? Surely, the temptation to live by the adage "The end justifies the means" would be overpowering for anyone who really believes that his "end" will be the "exaltation" to "godhood."

Under the grandiose dream that they are the God Makers, Mormonism's leaders have developed an utter contempt for truth when it conflicts with their goal of extending the Mormon kingdom, in the name of Jesus Christ, to encompass the entire world. As the absolute leaders of Mormonism, The Brethren have rewritten [the book of] "revelations," suppressed facts, promoted fraud, honored false prophets, misrepresented their true beliefs and practices, and pretended to [possess] a divine authority, which they obviously do not have, in order to control those under them and ensnare fresh millions in Mormonism. Though their religious zeal may be genuine, they have divorced their faith from truth and built an earthly empire upon the insistence that their followers dare not think for themselves or examine facts, but must blindly obey whatever The Brethren decree.

[And this brings up] some extremely grave questions. Mormonism seems as American as apple pie, and Mormons seem to be the perfect citizens with their close families, high morals, patriotism, Boy Scout programs, Tabernacle Choir, and conservative politics. A *Los Angeles Times* article implied that Mormons have recently gained the image of "super-Americans...[who] appear to many to be 'more American than the average American.'"

[William Cooper: Make no mind that the L.A. Times is mostly owned by the Mormon church.]

This may explain why such a high proportion of Mormons find their way into government. Returned LDS missionaries have "the three qualities the [Central Intelligence Agency] wants: foreign language ability, training in a foreign country and former residence in a foreign country." Utah (and particularly [Brigham Young University]) is one of the prime recruiting areas for the [Central Intelligence Agency]. According to [Brigham Young University's] spokesman Dr. Gary Williams, "We've never had any trouble placing anyone who has applied to the [Central Intelligence Agency]. Every year they take almost anybody who applies." He also admitted that this has created problems with a number of foreign countries, who have complained about the "pretty good dose of [Mormon] missionaries who have gone back to the countries they were in as Central Intelligence agents."

This may at least partially explain the reported close tie between the Mormon church and the CIA. A disproportionate number of Mormons arrive at the higher levels of the CIA, FBI, military intelligence, armed forces and all levels of city, state and federal governments, including the Senate, Congress, Cabinet and White House Staff. Sincere and loyal citizens, most of them may be unaware of the secret ambition of The Brethren. What could be better than having such patriots as these serving in strategic areas of government and national security? Unfortunately, [dear listeners,] as we have noticed in every other area of Mormonism, the real truth lies hidden beneath the seemingly ideal image of patriotism presented by Mormons in public service. Take, for instance, Bobo [sic] Gritz. In fact, their very presence in responsible government positions, particularly in agencies dealing with national security, raises some extremely grave questions that were expressed by Ed Decker in the following letter mailed to the addressees:

An open letter to:

The President, First Presidency and members of the General
Authorities of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints

August 21, 1980

Gentlemen:

I was recently reflecting that although the actual blood oaths and the oath of vengeance were removed from the Temple ceremonies sometime after 1930, you gentlemen [listing ten of the above] are of an age to have received your own endowments prior to their removal, and therefore, are still under these oaths.

I am particularly interested in your personal position on your oath of vengeance against the United States of America. As you recall, the oath was basically as follows:

> *"You and each of you do solemnly promise and vow that you will pray and never cease to importune high heaven to AVENGE THE BLOOD OF THE PROPHETS (Joseph and Hiram Smith) ON THIS NATION, and that you will teach this to your children and your children's children unto the third and fourth generation."*

Have you officially renounced this oath? Or are you still bound by it?

If you have not renounced it, how can you presume to lead four-and-one-half [now over six and a half million Americans] million people [US citizens] under item 12 of your Articles of Faith and still be bound to call upon heaven to heap curses upon our nation? ("We believe in being subject to Kings, Presidents, Rulers and Magistrates, in obeying, honoring, and sustaining the law.") [William Cooper: And that's a quote directly from item 12 of the Articles of Faith.]

If you have renounced it, how can you justify having sworn such an oath in the most holy of holy places on this earth, before the sacred altar of your omnipotent God, and then renounce it? Gentlemen, I call upon you to repent of this abomination and proclaim to both the Mormon people and to the people of the United States of America that you renounce that oath and all it represents.

*I also call upon all members of the Mormon Church who hold office in our government, serve in the Armed Services, work for the FBI and CIA who have gone through the Mormon Temple and sworn oaths of obedience and sacrifice to the church and its leaders (above), to repent of these oaths in the light of the obvious conflict [*Note: Here, the audio is cut-off, but the rest of*

the letter is as follows:] of interest between their pledge of allegiance
*to the USA and their higher loyalty to a [*Note: audio is now resumed:]*
group of men who are sworn to seek vengeance against this great nation.

Sincerely,

(Signed) J. Edward Decker

[William Cooper: He sent a copy to President Jimmy Carter and Mr. Ronald Reagan.]

No response[, ladies and gentlemen, no response] was [ever] received to this letter. The Brethren are so powerful that they are immune to criticism and feel no need to explain themselves or account to anyone for their actions.

[William Cooper: And this seems to be the same, the same feeling of Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz, who attacked me physically in Salt Lake City at the Salt Dome and yelled at the top of his voice, "You will not criticize me, Cooper!" And I say, Bobo Gritz, you can stick it where the sun doesn't shine.]

The Mormon church already packs a political punch far out of proportion to its size. [Recently,] *The Wall Street Journal* explained how, in spite of the Constitutional separation between Church and State, public schools in Utah are used to instill Mormonism in young minds. [William Cooper: You see, in the state of Utah, it is already a theocracy.] It mentioned political reapportionment, airline deregulation, the basing of the MX missile, and the ERA as [recent] political issues affected by the power of the Church. For example, when the Church opposed the MX missile for Utah, those plans were immediately dropped by the federal government. The same *Wall Street Journal* article quoted the following statement from J.D. Williams, a University of Utah political science professor:

"There is a disquieting statement in Mormonism. 'When the leaders have spoken, the thinking has been done.' To me, democracy cannot thrive in that climate. They don't have to be called to Church headquarters for political instruction. They know what they're supposed to do. That's why non-Mormons can only look toward the Mormon church and wonder: 'What is Big Brother doing to me today?'"

[William Cooper: But, ladies and gentlemen, there is a more disturbing possibility.]

While the election of a Mormon...President seems unlikely, it is highly probable under the present swing toward conventional morality and conservatism that a Mormon could one day become a Republican Vice-Presidential nominee. This is especially true when one considers the growing cooperation between Mormons and the Moral Majority. With the power, wealth, wide influence, numerous highly placed Mormons, and large voting block under their virtual control, The Brethren have a great deal to offer a Republican Presidential candidate. Let's assume that a Mormon Vice-Presidential candidate is on the winning ticket, and thereafter the President dies in office or is assassinated, causing the Mormon to succeed him as President of the United States.

[William Cooper: And we know that The Order assassinated John F. Kennedy in the outdoor Temple of the Sun known as Dealey Plaza. We also know that the clamor for a savior in the United States of America is reaching unprecedented proportions and many are looking, many are looking to H. Ross Perot, who will cast around and maybe, maybe choose someone like Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz as his vice presidential running mate. Or is it possible that Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz could himself be elected to the presidency of the United States of America in this climate of absolute chaos, which The Order, the Illuminati has created with the help of people like Tom Valentine and organizations like the Liberty Lobby? Is this a possibility? Are you listening to me, sheeple?]

There is every reason to believe that the new President would immediately begin to gather around him increasing numbers of zealous Temple Mormons in strategic places at the highest levels of government. A crisis similar to the one which Mormon prophecies "foretold" occurs, in which millions of Mormons with their year's supply of food, guns, and ammunition play a key role. It would be a time of excitement and zealous effort by the "Saints" to fulfill Joseph Smith's and Brigham Young's "prophecy":

"The time will come when the destiny of the nation will hang upon a single thread. At that critical juncture, this people will step forth and save it from the threatened destruction."

Not only does Mormonism predict the "saving" of America, but the precedent for an attempted takeover by force of subterfuge through political means has been set by the founding "Prophet" himself. In 1834 Joseph Smith organized an army and marched toward Independence, Missouri to "redeem Zion." In spite of a humiliating surrender to the Missouri militia that proved his bold "prophecies" false, [and therefore, that he could not possibly be a real prophet as the Mormon church proclaims, ignoring that a "Prophet" cannot possibly be wrong,] the "Prophet" later formed the "Nauvoo Legion" and commissioned himself a lieutenant-general to command it. Lyman L. Woods stated: "I have seen him on a white horse wearing the uniform of a general...He was leading a parade of the Legion and looked like a god."

Joseph Smith was not only ordained king on earth, but he ran for President of the United States just before his death, at which time Mormon missionaries across the country became "a vast force of political [power]." Today's Church leaders are urging Mormons to prepare themselves for the coming crisis in order to succeed where past "Saints" have failed. A recent major article in *Ensign* about being prepared included this oft-repeated warning reminder:

"The commandment to re-establish Zion became for the saints of Joseph Smith's day the central goal of the Church. But it was a goal the Church did not realize because its people were not fully prepared."

[Going back, ladies and gentlemen,] going back to our hypothetical crisis, what Mormons [attempted] unsuccessfully...against impossible odds in the past they might very well have accomplished with much better odds in this future scenario.

[William Cooper: They are building a hero, a demagogue, someone who can well become a vice president and will, in fact, be a presidential candidate, Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz.]

[And] under cover of the national and international crisis, the Mormon President of the United States acts boldly and decisively to assume dictatorial powers. With the help of The Brethren and Mormons everywhere, he appears to save America and becomes a national hero. At this time, he is made Prophet and president of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and the Mormon kingdom of God, while still President of the United States. [Ladies and gentlemen,] there is no provision in the Constitution to prevent this.

With the government largely in the hands of increasing numbers of Mormon appointees at all levels throughout the United States, the Constitutional prohibition against the establishment of a state church would no longer be enforceable. Mormon prophecies and the curse upon which the United States government in revenge for the blood of Joseph and Hyram Smith would seemingly have been fulfilled. In effect, the United States would have become a theocracy exactly as planned by the Brethren, completing the first step in the Mormon takeover of the world. President John Taylor boasted of it 100 years ago[. He said]:

"Let us now notice our political position in the world. What are we going to do? We are going to possess the earth...and reign over it forever and ever."

[William Cooper: Of course, he was speaking for the collective secret brotherhood known as the Illuminati.]

"Now, ye Kings and Emperors help yourselves if you can. This is the truth and it may as well be told at this time as at any other. There's a good time coming, Saints, a good time coming!"

[William Cooper: But there is a more likely scenario.]

While the [beginning and meat of this program presents a] disturbing possibility, it may seem highly speculative and improbable. There is another scenario, however, which is equally disturbing[, but is] much more likely.

[William Cooper: And if you've been listening to our series on the Mysteries, you will understand it immediately.]

It arises from the fact that Mormonism is actually part of something [much,] much larger. We have already noted that the "revelations" that Joseph Smith received, far from being unique, were in fact very similar[, if not identical,] to the basic philosophy underlying many occult groups and secret revolutionary societies. Thus far in history, these numerous occult/revolutionary organizations have remained largely separate and in competition with one another.

If something should happen to unite them, [dear listeners,] and at the same time their beliefs should gain worldwide acceptance, [as in the New Age movement,] a new and unimaginably powerful force for world revolution would have come into existence. There is[, in fact,] increasing evidence of a new and growing secular/religious ecumenicism [pervasive and] persuasive enough to accomplish this unprecedented and incalculable powerful coalition. It could be the means of creating the one-world government that has not only been the long-standing hope and plan of The Brethren and many other occult/revolutionary leaders in [Freemasonry and other secret organizations, supposedly existing for the good of the community], but is increasingly gaining a wide acceptance through New Age networks as the only viable option to a nuclear holocaust and our ecological collapse.

Improbable? Perhaps[, dear listeners]. But certainly it can no longer be summarily dismissed as impossible.

===
(end of quote)

After listening to this broadcast, you should have a much clearer understanding of the world, of the Mormon church, of what's happening in the United States, of the many different organizations, veiled, where behind this veil those who consider themselves to be illumined continue to work toward their great dream of an earthly Utopia which they call The Plan, The Great Society, The Great Work. It has been their dream for millennia. It is nothing new as those of you who have listened to the entire series that we have done on the Hour of the Time, known as the Mystery Schools, or Mystery Babylon have discovered.

Now, please understand that we are discussing the hierarchy of the Mormon Church, not Mormons. I know many Mormons who are good, upstanding patriot citizens of this country. They have no knowledge of this. In fact, as the members of every other church of every other religion practiced on this earth, they believe mostly through blind faith and never question. They do not know the basic facts of the truth or falsity of their dogma, nor do they generally care. And even if they knew, which many of them do know and understand, they would not renounce it and walk away for they would be become a pariah in their own society. And in the state of Utah, to renounce the Mormon church, it could be a death sentence.

Now, should you think this absolutely absurd, I recently took a trip through the state of Utah. Through the long valley, there is a small city called Orderville. Now, if you know what I know and if you've been listening to this program, you know some of what I know. You know that I would have had to stop to find out why that city was called Orderville. I did, and I was amazed...for it was no secret there that it was the first Communist settlement established in the United States by the Mormon Church. These facts are freely admitted in the city, and in fact they take great pride in the history of their little town. It was the first Communist government, community established by the Mormon Church in their search, in their search for their promised land, which eventually became Salt Lake City. It was established and named after a secret organization known as The Order, to which the elders of the community belonged. You can even see it, the history, the same history that I have just given to you, on the signs at the rest stops entering and leaving the town. You can get more of the history by visiting the small historical society in Orderville. It is a fact.

And now, ladies and gentlemen, remember this. This program did not just come from my research, or the research of CAJI, although our research follows what you have heard tonight, letter for letter and word for word. But so that you would understand that I am not crazy, tonight's program was taken from chapter sixteen of a book which you can purchase yourself or order from your bookstore. The name of this book is *The Godmakers*. *The Godmakers*, written by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt. It is called The Godmakers, it is written by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt. Tonight's program came from chapter sixteen. It's published by Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 97402. That's *The Godmakers*, written by Ed Decker and Dave Hunt, published by Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon, 97402.

I recommend that you get this book and read it cover to cover, and understand that the Citizens Agency for Joint Intelligence, and me personally in my own research, have confirmed every single word in this book. It is fact. As for Bobo Gritz, we here at CAJI and the Hour of the Time have already proven to you, in his own words, that he is a liar. And we have many tapes that we have not played and we will continue to do so until you, the sheeple, wake up.

In the symbology of the temples of Freemasonry, the Mormon church and all along the highways in the state of Utah, you can see one of the most common symbols of that secret organization which we know, collectively, as the Illuminati. Ladies and gentleman, that is the beehive.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: Also sprach Zarathustra (theme song of 2001: A Space Odyssey) by Richard Strauss)

Hour 31: United Nations Meditation Room (aired October 22nd, 1993)

Welcome. Once again, you're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[William Cooper announces an upcoming appearance in San Francisco]

Well, folks, tonight is going to be illuminating, I can tell you that for sure. Let me tell you first, right off the bat, before we get into the subject of tonight's broadcast.

(William Cooper talks about a plan to purchase large quantities of voting stock for GCI (Gannett Co., Inc.))

OK, folks, make sure that you're in a chair, you're comfortable; that you got your mind open, you got a pad of paper and a pencil by your side, because we're going to spread some light in some dark corners.

(opening music: Amazing Grace, sung by Aaron Neville)

Visitors to New York City who venture into the large building known as the United Nations are amazed to find that there is a Meditation Room.

[Reading from *The Cult of the All-Seeing Eye*, written by Robert Spenser]

(start of quote)
==

The Meditation Room[, ladies and gentlemen,] is thirty feet long, eighteen feet wide at the entrance (which faces north north-east), and nine feet wide at the other end. It is therefore wedge-shaped. Its only entrance is through two tinted glass-paned doors outside of which stands a United Nations guard. Inside the room is another guard. Once through the doors, the visitor finds himself in a darkened corridor which leads to the left. The sharp transition from the world of light to one of extreme darkness forces a feeling of abrupt withdraw from the outside world upon the senses of the visitor who walks along the corridor, reaches the inner arched entrance, turns right, and then looks into the room.

The room is very dimly lit. The only source of light, at first glance, is that which is reflected squarely from the gleaming upper surface of the brooding, somber altar in the center of the room. A special lens recessed in the ceiling focuses a beam of light on the altar from a point above and just beyond its far edge. Thin lines of bluish light lap the edges of the shadow cast by the altar.

The acoustical properties of the room are unique. The edges of padding material behind the paneling on the walls can be detected at the ceiling level. This absorbs sound as does the Swedish-woven blue rug which covers the floor of the corridor in the back of the room. The room is as quiet as an underground tomb. Its floors paved with blue-grey slate slabs laid in a haphazard pattern. At the edge of the rug are two very low railings extending out from the east and west walls of the room. The center space between the railings is some six feet in width. To the right of the inner entrance are ten low wicker benches arranged in two rows of three and one back row of four against the corridor wall. Attempts by visitors to pass the railings are discouraged by the guard.

The mural is a fresco which was painted originally on wet plaster one section at a time by the artist with the aid of an expert in this work brought from Europe. It is set into a steel-framed narrow panel projected from the wall, behind which is an enclosed area some six inches deep which has its own light source. A small, square projector set close against the front base of the altar throws a diffused beam of light from a recessed aperture upon the surface of the mural. There are also ten hidden lights, five on each side of the room, behind the upper edges of a thin suspended ceiling which extends out over the room from the top of the mural. The eighteen-inch space between the two ceilings contains the light control apparatuses. The lower ceiling is wedge-shaped and separated from three walls of the inner room by a foot-wide space. Thus the room appears[, appears,] to be much longer than it really is because of the many converging lines leading into the narrow end, the corners of which are rounded off on either side of the mural.

The altar is four feet high, and rests on two narrow cross pieces. It is a dark gray block of crystalline iron ore from a Swedish mine and weighs six and one-half tons. The Swedish government presented this block of iron ore -- the largest of its kind ever mined -- to the [United Nations] in early 1957. "The chunk rests on a concrete pillar that goes straight down to bed-rock." The area and passageway beneath the room are closed to the public.

The chunk of ore has been described as a lodestone, or magnetite, which is strongly magnetic and which posses polarity. "In northern Sweden are what may be the largest magnetite deposits in the world, believed to have been formed by segregation in the magma." Magma is the term for molten material held in solution under the pressure of the earth's crust.

The fresco mural was described in the *[United Nations] Review* of January 1958 as having been designed "to conform with the purity of line and color sought, for what Secretary General Dag Hammarskjöld has called 'a room of stillness'." It was painted predominantly in shades of grays and blues, but includes yellow and white patterns and a black half-sphere. Light pure colors intersect to form deeper shades. The *New York Times* described the fresco as being eight feet eight inches in height and six feet eight inches in width; more brightly illuminated at the top than at the bottom.

Bo Beskow, an old friend of Dag Hammarskjöld, painted the mural. "Dag had me start sketches on this last summer," he said. "He wanted me to do the actual work right here in the room, so I have been here since October [6th, 1957]." The mural was seen for the first time[, ladies and gentlemen,] on November [the 11th], 1957. During the period of the remodeling the guards were on hand during the day to keep out the curious and at night the room was locked up with a chain and padlock. The artist has said of his work: "It has no title, and you can make what you wish of it."

He explained that the geometric patterns in the mural repeated the proportions of the room and those of the focal point of the room, the piece of iron ore. He also said that he intended to give a feeling of space with the picture. The *[United Nations] Review* story stated that "he sought to open up the room so that the eye can travel in the distance when it strikes the wall. To give a slight upward movement, he said he designed winding circles and a spiraling diagonal line which might be compared to a vibrating musical chord. As a 'resting spot' for the viewer's eyes, he provided one spot of black amid the light colors, a half circle at which all lines of the fresco and the room converge."

In the *New Yorker* story cited earlier, Beskow was quoted as saying: "My fresco contained no intentional symbols, though I've heard people say that the black-and-pale-blue circle on the upper middle section of the panel stands for the cosmos. All that I seriously sought to do was to open up the wall, in order to allow the eye to travel farther, and to open up the mind, provoking meditation but not directing it."

The mystic, P. D. Ouspensky, has written that in "real art nothing is accidental. It is mathematics. Everything in it can be calculated, everything can be known beforehand. The artist knows and understands what he wants to convey and his work cannot produce one impression on one man and another impression on another, presuming, of course, [they are] people on one level...At the same time the same work of art will produce different impressions on people of different levels. And people from lower levels will never receive from it what people of higher levels receive. This is real objective art...An objective work of art...affects the emotional and not only the intellectual side of man."

Mr. Beskow's picture is described as nonobjective, yet its composition admittedly reflects the dimensions of the room and the chunk of iron ore -- this[, ladies and gentlemen,] involves mathematics. He said of his mural, "you can make as you wish of it," yet he admittedly sought to create a specific subjective effect in the mind of the spectator. Consequently, Mr. Beskow's remarks create confusion rather than understanding.

The leaflet made available to those who visit the Meditation Room was written under the direction of Dag Hammarskjöld [himself]. Its description of the room is deliberately couched in abstruse language. It contains terms which have meaning to the esoterically inclined but not to the uninitiated [William Cooper: or those called the "profane"].

These terms will be explained...

[William Cooper: ...and have, in fact, been explained during the Mystery Babylon segments of the Hour of the Time, but for those who may be just beginning to listen to this program, esoteric means, "that which is hidden," and is kept only for the initiated, those who have studied the Mysteries. The profane, ladies and gentlemen, is you. I leave myself out because, during the process of studying the Mysteries, I...I, with great irony, have become illumined. And if you continue to listen to the Hour of the Time, so shall you.]

The leaflet reads: "We all have within us a center of stillness surrounded by silence...People of many faiths will meet here, and for that reason none of the symbols to which we are accustomed to in our meditation could be used.

"However, there are simple things which speak to us all with the same language. We have sought for such things and we believe we have found them in the shaft of light striking the shimmering surface of solid rock.

"So, in the middle of the room we see a symbol of how, daily, the light of the skies gives [light]...life to the earth on which we stand, a symbol to many of us of how the life of the spirit gives life to matter.

"But the stone in the middle of the room has more to tell us. We may see it as an altar, empty not because there is no God, not because it is an altar to an unknown god, but because it is dedicated to the God whom man worships under many names and in many forms.

"The stone in the middle of the room reminds us also of the firm and permanent in a world of movement and change. The block of iron ore has the weight and solidity of the everlasting. It is a reminder of that cornerstone of endurance and faith on which all human Endeavor must be based.

"The material of the stone leads our thoughts to the necessity for choice between destruction and peace. Of iron man has forged his swords, of iron he has also made his ploughshares...

"The shaft of light strikes the stone in a room of utter simplicity...When our eyes travel from these symbols to the front wall, they meet a simple pattern opening up the room to the harmony, freedom and balance of space.

"There is an ancient [Chinese] saying that the sense of a vessel is not in its shell but in the void. So it is with this room. It is for those who come here to fill the void with what they find in their center of stillness."

The *World Goodwill Bulletin* is published by Lucis Press, Ltd. (owned by Lucis Trust) at 88 Edgeware Rd., Marble Arch, London W-2, England. The New York branch, The Lucis Publishing Company (11 W. 42nd St., 32nd floor), issues materials on its Arcane School, three-member Triangles, and World Service Fund, and publishes the *Beacon Magazine*. This company[, ladies and gentlemen,] was originally established as the Lucifer Publishing Co., but changed its name on November [the 11th], 1924, to the less startling one it bears today. A third branch of the Lucis Trust is located at 1 Rue de Varembe (3E), Geneva, Switzerland. Alice A. Bailey, the now deceased High Priestess of the occult Arcane School, established and headed the Trust and its self-identified society of Illumined Minds. This powerful group has intimate connections with the United Nations.

[The Goodwill...] *The World Goodwill Bulletin* issued a special edition on the United Nations in July, 1957, which contained an article entitled "Lodestone." We quote from its description of the Meditation Room: "The visitor will be totally unprepared for what he will see as he steps in the door for a moment of quiet...Because of the converging walls and the dim light, he will experience a peculiar spatial disorientation, and dimension and perspective will seem difficult to establish. In the center of the room, he will see, illuminated by a single point of light from the ceiling, a rectangular mass...

"The ore piece...is many millions of years old...one feels...as though one is in a repository for some natural talisman of significant and noble importance, rather than in a chapel in an ordinary sense...Those who are wedded to seeking communion in traditional settings may be somewhat ill at ease here. This is a sudden break with prior experience. One is thrown violently upon his [own] resources.

"The room and the concept do not seem indicative of the supplications or the dualistic concept of the mystic in which illumination is sought and is a boon granted by Deity. Rather, seemingly inherent in the decoration of the room, in the pinpoint of light playing on the ore, is the concept of a personal concentration of forces, creating a focus that illumines the field of attention...

"The pinpoint of light, the void of space, the illuminated crystalline ore -- one feels projected into a setting of cosmological symbolism rather than one of planetary or even solar intent.

"It is interesting to speculate on what the long-term influence of this 'new departure' will be on current religious thinking. Ensconced here in the highest Hall of Man, it cannot be inconsiderable. Whatever interpretations one may attribute to the United Nations Meditation Room, it can be said with certainty that the words and the repercussions have only just begun."

[Folks,] the 'new departure' in religion referred to did not occur by chance. "Tremendous pressure was brought to bear on Trygve Lie and Dag Hammarskjöld to install such a room at the [United Nations] by such organizations as the World Council of Churches." Trygve Lie announced on April [18th], 1949 that such a room would be established. The 5th General Assembly opened with one minute of silence as a 'religious' observance. Shortly thereafter a temporary meditation room was provided at Lake Success, New York. On February [9th], 1951, a meditation room was opened for one day at the [United Nations] Secretariat building. [Then,] on October [14th] 1952, the opening day of the 7th General Assembly, a permanent Meditation Room was made available to the public. Since then each Assembly has opened with one minute of silence.

In 1955 the Meditation Room contained a 300-year-old, 800-pound, 37-inch wide upright section of an agba ([or] mahogany) tree from French Equatorial Africa. It was the idea of Wallace Harrison, director of the international board of architects which planned the [United Nations]; co-architect and director of Rockefeller Center; and member of the board of directors of the socialist New School of Social Research in New York City. (See *Who's Who in America* [for 1959 for reference.]) The room contained a philodendron plant on the altar, to symbolize some unknown person killed in a war; an olive green rug, twenty-five russet colored chairs; and a blue and white [United Nations] banner set in front of a ceiling-to-floor white drape.

On February 16th, 1953, a group known as the Friends of the Meditation Room, numbering 1500 members, presented through its officers a set of guest books to the [United Nations] wherein visitors to the room could inscribe their names, addresses and religious affiliations. [Since then, many, many millions] have been estimated by the [United Nations to have entered the room...of these visitors...[of these visitors, millions] have signed...these books, each containing seven thousand names.

What purpose[, ladies and gentlemen,] is served by the accumulation of these thousands of names of individuals, with their religious affiliations, who visit the room and who -- by the act of signing their names -- indicate that they do not object to the existence of this pagan temple?

The Friends are the product of the "non-sectarian" Laymen's Movement for a Christian World, Inc., the international headquarters of which is located at Wainwright House, Milton Point, Rye, New York. Warren R. Austin, a past permanent [United States] delegate to the [United Nations], headed a Friend's committee which presented $12,600 to [Dag] Hammarskjöld on April [24th], 1957, as first payment on $25,000 needed to remodel and enlarge the room.

The Movement has issued "[United Nations Mediation Room Identification Cards [to] 300 men and women who go periodically to this room for prayer." It once issued Prayer Cards to visitors containing prayers from the "World's Great Living Religions," namely, Hinduism, Buddhism, Judaism, Islamism, Sikhism, Christianity and Saint Francis of Assisi.

[William Cooper: I was not aware that Saint Francis of Assisi was one of the world's great religions, were you?]

The Friends held Vigils of Prayer in the room in 1953 and 1954. Back in 1946 the Movement had sent Dr. Frank Laubach, Union Theological Seminary graduate and author of *"Letters of a Modern Mystic,"* to the Paris Peace Conference to lobby for the establishment of the Meditation Room.

Speakers for the Movement's meetings have included Norman Cousins, Ralph Bunche, and Frank P. Graham of the [United Nations], and William Ernest Hocking and Kirtley F. Mather of Harvard, all of whom have communist-front records (see the May-June and July-August 1959 and July-August 1962 issues of *The Laymen's Movement Review*.)

The Movement has included among its members Dwight David Eisenhower...The most important Friend of the Movement from its inception, however, has been John D. Rockefeller, Jr. A Methodist missionary, Weyman C. Huckabee, secured and received grants from John D. Rockefeller, Jr.'s Davison Fund and from his (New York City) Riverside Church funds for five consecutive years (1937-41), for a health center in Hiroshima, Japan...Huckabee then became the secretary of the Movement in New York in 1941 and secured two grants a year for the organization from the Davidson Fund until it was liquidated.

[William Cooper: It is not coincidence, ladies and gentlemen, that the funds...]

(audio break – silence)

...John D. Rockefeller, Jr.'s Davison Fund from his (New York City) Riverside Church funds for...[the] years (1937-41) [were for the] health center in Hiroshima, Japan [-- a city which we ultimately dropped an atomic weapon.]

Rockefeller, ladies and gentlemen, continued his yearly grants without fail from his own personal funds. During the twenty-two years Huckabee remained with the Movement a million dollars was raised for its work.

When the Movement first sought to secure Wainwright House for its headquarters in 1951, John D. Rockefeller, Jr. gave $5,000 of the [$25,000] needed. Since 1951, ten thousand individuals have signed the guest book of Wainwright House; five thousand have attended its public meetings; its members have been addressed by the President of the National Council of Churches...its conference rooms have been used by the Episcopal, Presbyterian, Methodist, Baptist, Congregationalists and Quaker churches.

When the Friends of the Meditation Room agreed to raise $15,000 to pay for the redecoration of the room, John D. Rockefeller, Jr. gave $5,000 of the amount sought...Dag Hammarskjöld personally raised another $10,000 from the Marshall Field family for the cost of the fresco in the Room...The United Steel Workers, CIO-AFL, gave $500.

The Movement was formed [ladies and gentlemen] in 1940. The man who started it was Dr. Arthur Compton, the scientist who first brought the identified Communist and accused [espionage agent] [*note, WC incorrectly says "agent espionage"] Professor J. Robert Oppenheimer, into the Atomic Energy Project in 1942.

Wainwright House has its own Meditation Room, on its second floor. The room contains the agba wood altar first used in the U.N. Meditation Room, and the cherry wood chairs and drapes from that room, presented to the Friends by the [United Nations] in 1957. The House also contains a large library centered around the Thomas Sugrue Memorial Library, a sixteen hundred dollar collection of books on religion and occultism -- where one may read up on spiritualism, Zen, Taoism, Yoga, Judaism, etc. Every book in the library has a bookplate therein designed by the artist, Fritz Eichenberg.

His bookplate "depicts the ancient cross in the shape of a T, surrounded by a serpent symbolizing wisdom and healing, and forming the letter S. The T and S, Thomas Sugrue's initials, are crowned by the lotus, Vedantic representation of all being. In the background lies the city of Jerusalem, over which shine two stars, the star of the East of Christianity and six-pointed star of Judaism. A flame spreads an arc of light above, proclaiming the continuity of life and the immortality of the soul."

M. Oldfield Howey tells us in *The Encircled Serpent* that in the symbolism of Egypt the "serpent is constantly represented as surmounting a cross...the Brazen Serpent...was a palladium, or talisman, in the form of a serpent coiled around the mystic Tau, or T. The serpent set up by Moses was originally the Egyptian...Sun-God, who was now known to his people as Jehovah." Joseph Von Hammer, in *The History of the Assassins*, explains the tau as the figure of the phallus.

"Among the Egyptians, the lotus was the symbol of Osiris and Isis. It was esteemed a sacred ornament by the priests." The six-pointed star is the great Oriental talisman known as the Seal of Solomon. Its meaning[, its meaning, ladies and gentlemen,] and the identity of Osiris and Isis has already been explained in [past episodes of the Hour of the Time. It will also be explained on a later edition of the Hour of the Time when we discuss the Great seal of the United States of America.] The arc of light on the bookplate is the En Soph, from the Cabalistic writings ([or] mystical theosophy) which teach that it created the world by virtue of ten emanations from the Infinite One. The emanations, or Sephiroth, or are arranged into a form called the Tree of Life, which in turn is vertically composed of three pillars. C.W. King, in his *Gnostics*, states that the two outer pillars "figure largely amongst all the secret societies of modern times, and naturally so; for these illuminati have borrowed, without understanding it, the phraseology of the Cabalists.

Dag Hammarskjöld called the altar a reminder of that "cornerstone...on which all human endeavor must be based." The Meditation Room faces north north-east. To enter the room one must proceed from darkness to light[...from darkness to light]. With these facts in mind note the cabalistic symbolism of the following description of the cornerstone by an authority: "In its situation, it lies between the north, the place of darkness, and the east, the place of light; and hence this position symbolizes...progress from darkness to light, and from ignorance to knowledge. The permanence and durability of the corner-stone...is intended [to remind us that long after our death we have within ourselves] a sure foundation of eternal life -- a corner-stone of immortality -- an emanation...which pervades all nature, and which, therefore, must [must] survive the tomb."

On a "higher" level of "esoteric knowledge" the metal altar or stone can be likened to the ancient Stone of Foundation, which, according to the same authority cited above, was supposed "to have been...placed at one time within the foundations of the Temple of Solomon, and afterwards, during the building of the second Temple, transported to the Holy of Holies. It was in the form of a perfect cube, [or, as the Freemasons call it, Ashlar,] and had inscribed upon its upper face, within a delta or triangle, the sacred Tetragrammaton or ineffable name of God."

In a "scurrilous book of the Middle Ages...the Life of Jesus" there was another account of the stone: "At that time there was in the Temple the ineffable name of God inscribed upon the Stone of Foundation." This scandalous book preceded to state that Our Saviour "cunningly obtained a knowledge of the Tetragrammaton from the Stone of Foundation, and by its mystical influence was enabled to perform his miracles...there was a very general prevalence among the early nations of antiquity of the worship of stones as the representative of Deity..."

[William Cooper: ...and in England the Queen sits upon a throne, under which is a stone. This happens in almost every ancient temple, and...]

"...in every ancient temple there was a legend of a sacred or mystical stone...the mystical stone there has received the name of the 'Stone of Foundation.'" ("'And the scribes who had come down out of Jerusalem said, "He has Beelzebub," and, "By the prince of devils he casts out devils."'")

Alfred Edward Waite, in his study of the Zohar (the cabalistic textbook of the 14th century), entitled *The Secret Doctrine of Israel*...wrote ([on page] 62) of "a mysterious stone called Schethiya" which was cast by Jehovah "into the abyss, so to form the basis of the world and give birth thereto. One might say otherwise that it was like a cubical stone or altar, for its extremity was concealed in the depth, while its surface or summit arose above the chaos. It was the central point in the immensity of the world, the cornerstone, the tried stone, the sure foundation, but also that stone which the builders rejected."

[William Cooper: And where have we heard that before? Well, folks, nowhere else but in the teachings of Freemasonry.]

But what, really, in the Christian meaning is the cornerstone? Isaiah said: "Therefore thus saith the Lord God: Behold I will lay a stone in the foundations of Sion, a tried stone, a corner stone, a precious stone, founded in the foundation. He that believeth, let him not hasten." The corner stone is Jesus Christ, "the stone that the builders rejected."

One need go no further than the inner entrance of the Meditation Room to see concrete evidence of the Godlessness of the [United Nations]. [That word sticks in my throat: "Godlessness."] The "stone," the metal altar, in its stark setting in that Room is in itself a symbol of idolatry. "Stone worship was perhaps the earliest form of Fetishism...Eusebius cites Porphyry as saying the ancients represented the Deity by a black stone, because his nature is obscure and inscrutable. The reader here will be reminded of the black stone, Hadjar el Aswad, based in the southwest corner of the Kaaba at Mecca, which was worshiped by the ancient Arabians...The Druids, it is well known, had no other images of their gods but cubicle or sometimes columnar stones...to use the language of Dudley, the pillar or stone 'was adapted as a symbol of strength and firmness -- a symbol, also, of the divine power, and, by ready inference, a symbol or idol of the Deity himself'...the god Hermes [Mercury] was represented without hands or feet, being a cubicle stone, because the cubicle figure betokened his solidity and stability."

Hammarskjöld, in the speech quoted earlier, said: "In this case we wanted this massive 'altar' to give the impression of something more than temporary...We had another idea...we thought we could bless by our thoughts the very material from which arms are made." The description of the altar as a "natural talisman" by the World Goodwill group also is significant. Talisman is a term which means a stone, or other object, engraven with figures or characters to which is attributed the occult powers of the planetary influences and celestial configurations under which it was made.

Altars, "among the ancients, were generally made of turf or stone...usually in a cubical form. Altars were erected long before temples." The shaft of light upon the altar in the Meditation Room casts a shadow to the north. "The use of the north as a symbol of darkness (is)...a portion of the old sun worship, of which we find so many relics in Gnosticism, in Hermetic philosophy..."

[William Cooper: In Freemasonry, in the temples of all the secret societies which exist in a membership in the shape of a pyramid with a whole bunch of slathering idiots, thirsting after the secrets which they will never know, and a few at the top who really understand that the only secret is how to control those on the bottom.]

"The east was the place of the sun's daily birth, and hence highly revered; the north the place of his annual death."

Finally, it must be emphasized that above all the altar in the Meditation Room is unsanctified and unhallowed. It has no sacred meaning, can inspire no reverence, and is not inviolable. This altar cannot be used for sacrifice in any other than an unholy sense.

[Ladies and gentlemen,] one clue to the mural's symbolism is given in Hammarskjöld's and Beskow's descriptions of its purpose. It was to "open up the wall, to give a feeling of space, of the void -- in effect, to extend the room further out, into another dimension as it were." The Friends' leaflet, *A Call to Prayer*, states the theme of the mural is "infinity."

[Now] let us look at this mural squarely form the viewpoint of the esoterically inclined, the occultist[, the adept, the initiate]. There is an asymmetrical arrangement of the entire mural into what is called a "Magic Square," which is a square arranged in an equal number of cells -- in this case nine -- three rows up and three rows down. The game tic-tac-toe is based on this kind of square. The talismanic magic square has a series of numbers in the cells, "the enumeration of all of whose columns, vertically, horizontally, and diagonally, will give the same sum." The following nine digits so arranged as to add up to 15 in any direction were regarded as sacred, because 15 is the numerical value of the Hebrew word for God, JAH [spelled J-A-H], which is one of the forms of the Tetragrammaton.

[4 9 2]
[3 5 7]
[8 1 6]

[William Cooper: And in the rows going across, from left to right, and in each row: the first row, the numbers are 4, 9 and 2, and in the second row, the numbers are 3, 5 and 7, and in the third row, the numbers are 8, 1 and 6. Whether you add them up diagonally, vertically or horizontally, no matter in which direction you go, it always adds up to the number 15.]

The predominantly dark blue rectangle which occupies most of the middle tier of the mural, the upper side which passes through the exact middle of the small bisected sphere, represents the altar. The yellow rectangle set at an angle into the lower and middle tiers so that one corner touches the bottom of the mural is a second representation of the altar. They indicate[, ladies and gentlemen,] duality: [William Cooper: Remember the yin and the yang? Positive/Negative? Male/Female? The androgynous god?] the yellow figure -- light ([the] sun); the blue figure -- earth ([the] altar). Both rectangular figures are overlaid in part by other patterns in other colors.

The all-important sphere in the left upper middle section symbolizes, among other things, the sun. Sun worship was "the oldest and by far the most prevalent of all the ancient religions." The sphere is bisected and quartered. "The phenomena of nature that made the deepest religious impression on archaic man [were] the outstretched heavens above him, and the outspread earth beneath; both of which he naturally divided into four quarters...this four-fold heaven and earth he signified by a circle, or a square, divided cross-ways." The circle[, ladies and gentlemen,] is met within every form of sorcery. The circle and quadrants is called the Magic Circle.

The objects in the Meditation Room are intended to be evocative, in the religious sense. Of what? [Well,] the mural and altar are admittedly symbols. "By symbolism the simplest, the commonest objects are transformed, idealized, and acquire a new and, so to say, illimitable value."

An expert on these subjects have written: "Under occult dominion Art, Music and Politics all tend to the same end: confusion, a calculated and inducted confusion: [chaos] for minds that are confused will obey and bow to the hidden masters!"

[William Cooper: And out of chaos...out of chaos comes order. And isn’t that...isn’t that the motto of the 33rd degree of Freemasonry: Ordo Ad Chao?]

"The rule of the Triangle and the Ellipse, together with a crude Geometry in modern art, is the rule...in esthetics.

"Standing before a meaningless Cubist canvas at an art exhibition one day, a puzzled amateur asked "But what does it mean?" To which the painter replied, 'It's not a question of what it means, it’s a question of what is its effect on the observer.'

"Consciously or unconsciously the artist spoke the truth. Psychiatrists tell us that this school of insidious humbug is simply an elaboration of the policy of the interruption of ideas leading to total incoherence and madness. 'Cubist' art in effort to produce certain psychic effects obtainable by optical illusion. Beauty has nothing [nothing] to do with it. The cubist school is not the realm of art at all. It belongs to that of medicine and psychic science. Those who forget that this devastating fad of 'The Interrupted Idea' can be extended to music, literature and every other phase of human effort, do so at their own peril. [William Cooper: For instance, listen closely to the beat of the rap musician.]

"A mind that is positive cannot be controlled. For the purpose of occult dominion minds must therefore be rendered passive and negative in order that control can be conceived. Minds consciously working to a definite end are a power, and power can oppose power for good or for evil. The scheme for world dominion might be doomed by recognition of this principle alone, but, as it is unfortunately recognized, it remains unchallenged."

[William Cooper: Until we decided to purchase a media corporation, and thus now, now we have minds consciously working to a definite end, and we are now a power...a very great power.]

A striking feature of the mural is the white half-crescent in its upper right quadrant. The inner curve of the crescent -- closest to the bisected black, pale blue and yellow sphere -- is equidistant at all points from the exact center of the bisected figure. Therefore[, ladies and gentlemen,] if the curve of the crescent is continued full-circle, the figure which results is a hidden point with in a circle, the symbol which was adopted by the astronomers as their sign of the sun.

[William Cooper: And, of course, you know that the crescent is the sign of the moon, Isis and Osiris.]

In the Ancient Mysteries the point in the circle denoted the principle of fecundity and has been carried down through the ages as a sign of various secret societies, including the Illuminati of Adam Weishaupt in 1776.

[William Cooper: And you will find the dot in a circle in the temples of Freemasonry. It is the symbol of the phallus. We always come back to the generative force.]

The female principle is also emphasized in the crescent moon or lunette figure [of Isis].

There are 72 geometrical figures (and shadings) in the mural. The two crescent shapes and the four long triangles -- white, yellow, blue and black -- which are located in the two upper tiers of the mural, are each counted as one figure. The number 72 denoted from the earliest days the Divine Name of 72 words[, 72 words]. This number is derived from a permutation of the values assigned to the four letters of the Tetragrammaton ([or] JHVH: Jehovah), the Ineffable, Unpronounceable Name of God. This Name, in its multitude of forms, can be used to work miracles or magic, so say the Cabalists. It was derived from Exodus[, chapter 14, verses 19, 20 and 21], which each consist of 72 letters. "Now, if these three verses be written at length one above another, first from right to left, second from left to right, and the third from right to left (or, as the Greeks would say, boustrophedon), they will give 72 columns of three letters each. Then each column will be a word of three letters, and as there are 72 columns, there will be 72 words of three letters, each of which will be the 72 names of the Deity alluded to in the text. And these are called the Shemhamforesh." Seventy-two is also the number of the Quinaries or sets of five degrees in the three hundred and sixty degrees of the Zodiac.

The number of triangles in the mural are difficult to count. There are 22 -- isosceles, equilateral, scalene, right-angled -- triangles. There are also 22 numbered letters in the ancient Hebrew alphabet, with values of one to four hundred. The triangle is an ancient emblem of Deity; it is also the sign of the female element. However, if the apex of the triangle is pointed down it becomes the male element; thus inverted it may also represent Lucifer, particularly if it is black in color.

The [sphere figure...or the] spiral figure intertwined with the mural-length diagonal line symbolizes the Caduceus of Hermes ([or] Mercury), which mythologically is represented as two serpents twined around the winged wand of Mercury. Nine arcs are formed by the intersections of the spiral line with the diagonal; the ninth Hebrew letter, Teth, with the value of nine, has the signification of "serpent." The number of the Beast of Revelation is 666, which cabalistically is nine, the number of generation. The twin serpents of the caduceus are negative and positive (representing polarity) and twine around the spinal column. They are the Kundalini or Sex Force. In *The Encircled Serpent*, the chapter on the Caduceus contains references ([on] page 72) to the ancient use of the symbol without wings, as seen in the mural. The caduceus is also the symbol of peace, the propaganda term associated with the [United Nations]. The serpents are male and female; the sun-god and the moon-god; and are symbols of generation [or the phallus]. Buddha was symbolized by the serpent and in mythology is identical with Mercury.

The center sphere and outer circles around it form the ALL-SEEING EYE. This bisected sphere overlays an isosceles triangle bounded on one side by the diagonal line. According to Manly Palmer Hall, in his occult treatise on *The Secret Destiny of America*, the ALL-SEEING EYE is that of the Great Architect of the Universe (whenever it appears as a symbol of God). His explanation is that which is generally accepted. It is, however, erroneous. A full commentary of the meaning of this all-important symbol [has already been dealt with in previous episodes of the Hour of the Time].

[William Cooper: The mural, if viewed from the top, or the roof, overhead of the Meditation Room, is...is the truncated top of a pyramid. Behind the mural is a small...smaller pyramid, which is that...which contains the eye, the all-seeing eye of Lucifer.]

Good night, and God bless each and every single one of you.

(closing music: bagpipe version of Amazing Grace)

Hour 32: Mystery Expose (Tom Valentine exposed as Freemason) (aired December 3rd, 1993)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time, I'm William Cooper.

Good evening, folks. Tonight's episode is a rerun. Due to the great mass of bullshit poured out on Radio Freemasonry just prior to this program, we will expose this wolf in sheep's clothing in his own words. Tonight, we're going to play a portion of a program that originally aired on June the 23rd, 1993. If, after hearing tonight's program, you wish to order that original broadcast, it is tape number 123 in our catalog. That's tape number 123 in our catalog. We discussed this rerun a little bit last night, so you all know the subject. But you all need to hear it again, even those of you who heard it the first time that it was broadcast, and those of you, of course, who have never heard it and are struggling, attempting to understand the purpose of the Hour of the Time. We hope that this rebroadcast will bring some things into the forefront that have lurking into the shadows, and will make some of the conversation you've heard on the Hour of the Time much clearer. We encourage you to order the original tape from the original broadcast on June 23rd, 1993, so that you may study its content in your home. Now, without further ado, we go into the rebroadcast of the mystery exposé. At the end of this rerun, ladies and gentlemen, we will open the phones for your comments and questions.

[rebroadcast starts here]

Now, folks, I'm going to take you into the mind of someone who has been an Initiate, an Adept, a Priest of the Mystery School for many, many years. I'm not going to identify this person until the end of the program. I want you to see if you can guess who this person is and what this is all about. If you can, then you'll know instantly what this program is for, the reason behind it, and you'll be to understand a little bit better how you've been manipulated for many, many years by the priests of the hidden religion called Mystery Babylon. And if you can't guess, then at the end of the show you're going to be told and you better be holding on to your chair, because it just might knock you right out. Just might knock you right out.

I'm going to quote from a book that this person wrote. This person verified something I wrote in my book, *Behold a Pale Horse*, and that is the calendar of the hidden religion of Mystery Babylon. It's 6000 years and it started in 4000 B.C. and ends in the year 2000. "The Great Pyramid system of passages and chambers is a chronological graph that begins in 4000 B.C. and continues for 6000 years." Now, let's go to an interview that was conducted with this person by someone else, not by me. But I'm going to be reading to you, word for word, this entire interview and this is going to take up most of the program. But this is going to give you a glimpse into the personality, the religious beliefs of the priests of the Mystery Religion, and you'll see sort of how they try to disguise what they really believe behind this aura of wanting to further the evolution of mankind and create some kind of a world Utopia, which they know in their heart is a lie to begin with. So, I'm going to call these "Number 1" and "Number 2." Number 1 is the interviewer, Number 2 is the interviewee.

[Reading from *5/5/2000 Ice: The Ultimate Disaster*, written by Richard Noone]:

(start of quote)
===

Number 1: How did you become interested in the Great Pyramid?

Number 2: Well, like everyone else, for most of my life I accepted the idea that the Great Pyramid was just a great big pile of stones made by thousands and thousands of slaves. But I read a book in 1967 called *The Ultimate Frontier*. That book profoundly affected my life. In it, they made statements about the Great Pyramid being much more than a tomb. Point in fact, it never was a tomb for a pharaoh. It is a monument to mankind and human perfection. It is the oldest artifact of an ancient system of religious belief. Then I thought, that's something I could check out. I can see if the information in *The Ultimate Frontier* is true or not. I started investigating. I then learned a great number of things about the Great Pyramid. First of all, the ancient Greeks were quite right in calling it the "first wonder of the world." When one considers the thought, preparation, and choice of site, one will see that the solid bedrock of the Giza plateau -- the only tableland within miles capable of supporting the weight of the structure -- was the most intelligent choice. There is a fantastic amount of literature about the Great Pyramid. Therefore, it is not unusual that we also find a great deal of controversy surrounding it. The British in the 1860's were the first to study the ancient building in a serious manner. By re-examining the theories of the British, which were discarded by the "experts" of that time, the crux of my book began to take shape.

Number 1: Does the crux of your book include the fact that the Great Pyramid may *not* have been built by the ancient Egyptians?

Number 2: Yes. The British did not discuss that possibility. That possibility is my own bit of research. However, most people who study the Great Pyramid realize [that] the civilization we know as "ancient Egyptian" could not have built the Great Pyramid the way we know today it would have had to have been built. You see, the building is built geometrically perfect, and according to our present conception of ancient history the Egyptians didn't understand highly theoretical mathematics -- obviously from the way the other 89 major pyramids in Egypt were constructed. The manner in which the other pyramids were constructed was a very haphazard way of building. They are copies of the Great Pyramid. The Great Pyramid itself is, however, absolute perfection in stone both to the *"pi"* relationship, the relationship of a diameter to the circumference of a circle, and the Golden Mean or *"phi"* relationship, with which we can divide a straight line so that $A^2 + B^2 = C^2$. The reason why it was structured is embodied in the word itself, "pyramid," -- [which means] "lights and measures" -- that there are revelation types of lights. The word for pyramid used by the ancient Egyptians was "glorious light," and the word has meaning that there are revelations in the measurements. If you pursue this hint, so to speak, you find out that the builders of the Great Pyramid are the same people that wrote the original text of the Old Testament, and they laid out their plan in the Great Pyramid as well as in the Scriptures.

[William Cooper: I hope, folks, you understand the significance of that one statement, and there's much, much more to come.]

Number 1: Who are these people?

Number 2: My opinion is they were what we call Hyksos (heck-sos or hike-sos), and we find traces of them throughout Meso-America, India, and the Middle East in the earliest of times. The Egyptians had two or three different waves of Hyksos rulers come in. The word "hyksos" for many years was translated "shepherd kings," which is a paradox, you see -- looking at life the way he look at it today. How can a group who were non-warlike come into a land and take over and run things without any fighting? Yet they obviously did, and these ancient builders had a profound influence wherever they went. The years of research I have done tell me that the Hyksos were a group of people who had in their culture information stemming from a previous civilization. I think that our view of history, saying that it started in the "cradle of civilization," in Egypt and Mesopotamia, is *wrong.* The surviving evidence indicates both Egypt and Mesopotamia are actually later civilizations -- remnants of a far, far greater early empire.

[William Cooper: And here, folks, we see, in this person's philosophy, the same philosophy that Hitler pursued. The myth of ancient Atlantis, or Mu, if you will. An ancient civilization which, when it was destroyed, left behind a remnant, a surviving element of that race which is a super-race: more intelligent, smarter, more worthy than any other race on this earth. If you will, the master race. And if you understand the esoteric meaning of what you're hearing, you are hearing Nazi philosophy, National Socialism, Hitler's vision of world history. And when you find out who this person is and what he's doing now, it will all come together. We continue:]

Number 1: Do you think the Hyksos race was a race chosen by some greater intelligence to impart a superior ideology to the rest of the human race?

Number 2: Not so much chose, but actually chose themselves. All genius is self-appointed. I would say these people were a remnant from a previous culture and they had something they wanted to do, and they embodied their thinking in their work and the influence to people by their works.

[William Cooper: Folks, that's the Luciferian philosophy. Continuing:]

Number 2: They came into the land, and there were already humans in the Nile Valley, but they came into the land in an unobtrusive and dexterous maneuver so as not to alarm the existing culture. They came in without fighting. They took the worst land. They didn't try to impress their knowledge on the others. They just did things in a better way. Soon the people in that area were paying attention to them. Once they gained the attention of the people, it didn't take very long before they were running everything, because they did everything with better methodology, which is the way life ought to be -- you ought to show by example.

Number 1: What happened then?

Number 2: Fairly soon after arriving, they suggested to the people that as life was *now* so peaceful and harmonious, it would be a happy challenge to build a monument to the future, to the future of mankind. In my opinion the Hyksos philosophy and the philosophy of many modern people is identical, in that human beings CAN BE PERFECT IF THEY WORK TOWARD THAT END [emphasis added by Mr. Cooper].

[William Cooper: … and that is the heart and soul philosophy of Mystery Babylon, the Mystery Schools. That man, himself, will become God. Wait until you find out who this is.]

Number 1: What happened to the ancient tribe, the Hyksos?

Number 2: I think they are still in existence today and have not died out but have gone underground many thousands of years ago. What we call Masonry, Freemasonry is an offshoot of the group that started out. The Hyksos group became what *The Ultimate Frontier* calls, "The Brotherhoods." These are a group of people who have knowledge about what it really means to be human...

[William Cooper: And folks, that implies that the rest of us are not, and that also is in direct line and in direct concert with the philosophy of the Mystery Religion of Babylon. You see, to them we are all cattle...animals. We have no intelligence. Continuing:]

Number 2: These are a group of people who have knowledge about what it really means to be human, to be a human becoming, to grow toward human perfection -- it's a philosophical thing. These people still exist. They still band together in groups here and there, and they show by doing. Again, their lifestyle shows that they really have a handle on life is all about. They don't try to impress others with numbers or with what they know, they just live doing something they want to accomplish while they are here. We know in Egypt these people have formed secret societies and that Pharaoh Akhnaton came up "under the rose" out of one of these secret societies and took over the land of Egypt in a manner that forbids disclosure, at a time in which the superficial popular theology left a want unsatisfied, which religion in a wider sense alone could supply.

[William Cooper: And there, he has admitted that he knows, he knows the esoteric teachings of the Mystery Schools, their origin and their purpose. And if you've been listening from the beginning, now you know that this person is a priest of the Mystery Religion, himself. Continuing:]

Number 2: We know Alexander the Great wanted to get the knowledge of one of these ancient secret societies, because he writes about it a great deal. Pythagoras consented to be circumcised in order to become one of the initiates of these secret societies -- which are the Hyksos population carrying their knowledge of science and the universe and cosmology with them and keeping the truth secret so they wouldn't be persecuted and wiped out. You can imagine what society today would do to a group of people like this, were they to perform certain "ancient rituals" in public. Look what they did to Akhnaton -- as soon as he was dead they destroyed the city he built.

Number 1: That's right, they tried to --

Number 2: Wipe his name out.

Number 1: Yes, because he taught there was only one God.

Number 2: The human tendency in the mass populace...

Number 1: When you use the term "mass populace," are you referring to a group of people who have become undeveloped on account of a too pleasant or a too severe climate, or even from physiological or psychological causes?

Number 2: The phrase "mass populace" was a term used by the ancient ones which usually refers to those in a populace, any populace, in any country, who sit back waiting for some savior to raise them up out of their misery.

[William Cooper: Recognize the venom directed at Christianity, folks?]

Number 1: Then you *are* referring to people who are merely living a conditioned response to their environment?

Number 2: Yes, the human tendency in the mass populace is to tear things down rather than reach up to the excellent, which brings everything down to mediocrity. We're doing that in this country today with our so-called standards from the federal government -- everything's got to be brought down. This is just another social indication of this tendency in human beings to bring things down to a lower level so it's easier -- instead of striving for excellence. The Hyksos people went after pleasing results who worked hard in this manner. They strove for excellence and, therefore they had to go underground to keep from being persecuted. In almost every case that we can trace, anyone that tried to bring the truth to man has been crucified, or killed in some cruel or barbarous human ritual.

[William Cooper: And folks, for many years, that was exactly true. But this is not the true intent of these people, for if you also go back through history, you'll find that these are the people who have been behind every religious war, have been behind every revolution, have been behind, and at literally are, the heart and soul of Socialism and Communism. And everywhere they go, death follows, and a stench.]

Number 1: Do you how the Great Pyramid was constructed?

Number 2: I leave that puzzle to the engineers, architects and professors of physics who have researched and studied the building. No one at the present really knows. There are several suppositions, but since no one really knows, that mystery remains to be answered in the next 24 years. And since no one really knows, in my opinion, there's no such thing as an "expert."

Number 1: In that case, how do you believe the Great Pyramid may have been constructed?

Number 2: My information, from people who seem very knowledgeable, says that they built in with water blocks and floated the blocks into place. That's pretty hard to conceive of, because they would have had to have been tremendous locks, because the Great Pyramid is up on a plateau at least six miles from the banks of the Nile river. Water with a series of basins and pipes that match the corridor and the chamber system of the Great Pyramid's interior system embodies all the laws of hydraulic engineering. For example, the Great Pyramid's Grand Gallery is a perfect "vacuum bottle" in this pumping system, which I explain in my book as I explore the research work of Edward J. Kunkel, author of the book, *Pharaoh's Pump*.

==

(end of quote)

[William Cooper: Well, folks, it's time to take our break. Don't go away. We'll be right back and continue with this revelation after this very short pause.]

[break: *Old radio commercial for Rice Krispies cereal*]

[William Cooper: And we continue, folks:]

(start of quote)
==

Number 1: If this tribe of people, the Hyksos, caused the Great Pyramid to be constructed, did they know their message wouldn't be understood for thousands of years, or did they think that humans would grasp its meaning a little before that?

Number 2: I think it's quite apparent that they knew it would be grasped in the 20th century. I think that they laid it out so the core of their meaning would be picked up by those who really have the mathematical knowhow. It wasn't until 1905 that we had the real understanding of gravitational astronomy, the astronomy involving the solar system and the movement of the earth around the sun, down so pat that we had all the answers the builders of the Great Pyramid had. They knew as much or more about today's system of gravitational astronomy as we know.

Number 1: Do you think this falls in line with a number of other theories that humans were at one time visited by supremely intelligent beings from other worlds?

Number 2: I don't accept that thesis. However, I believe that there is life probably on every little planetoid in the entire universe, life that is similar to ours in [having] a spiritual nature, but somewhat different in physical nature. No other beings from outer space ever came down here and cohabited with the apes, as Mr. von Daniken would say. I would reject that thesis but, on the other hand, I *would* say we are indeed created by another intelligence far greater than this planet or even the solar system. You know, it's a funny thing. I was once an atheist. I went through most of my college days as an atheist. I went through most of my college days as an anthropologist, and didn't believe in a created theory at all, but after studying for many years I was forced to accept the fact that I had obviously had been created -- because it just didn't happen by chance. There's no way. I would say that this theory that something in outer space came down and interfered is quite accurate, in that respect. We are in the image of a creator of some kind that we can't even conceive. Therefore we have the ability to all kinds of fantastic things. I think there was a civilization 50,000 years ago in the Pacific, now underwater, that had in it achievements that we only think of today.

Number 1: OK, just a minute -- let me backtrack here. At the beginning of the interview you mentioned that you began your investigation of the Great Pyramid after you read *The Ultimate Frontier*. What's it all about?

Number 2: Oh, that's a big topic! *The Ultimate Frontier* ties together a history of this planet, the idea and purpose for mankind being a part of it, and a philosophy of growth towards human perfection -- and how this philosophy is what life is really all about. The truth of this was lost when the great civilization on the Pacific continent of Mu was destroyed by a sudden cataclysmic change on the crust of the earth 50,000 years ago. There are a group of individuals who call themselves the "Brotherhoods," unobtrusively working to uplift mankind back to this ancient wisdom belief, and the Great Pyramid is indeed a monument to this particular Brotherhood.

Number 1: Perhaps the truth is never lost. Perhaps as we evolve towards a true understanding of essentials, we suddenly find ourselves faced with a question where we discover we have really understood nothing at all, and consequently we have to begin learning all over again on a new and higher level. Perhaps the memory of the destruction of Mu and other catastrophic events is contained in the collective unconsciousness of man. Perhaps some humans -- direct genetic descendants of the survivors of these cataclysmic events -- carry in their bloodline a genetic mutation.

[William Cooper: Let me read that portion again, folks: "Perhaps some humans -- direct genetic descendants of the survivors of these cataclysmic events -- carry in their bloodline a genetic mutation."]

Number 1: Perhaps this genetic mutation was deeply imprinted into the central nervous system...of some of our forbearers, who actually experienced and survived a sudden slippage in the earth's tectonic plates or a supernova explosion. Such a genetic mutation, passed in genetic structures ([or] DNA) from generation to generation, may explain why some of us today are more acutely sensitive to subtle Earth tremors than our neighbors. In any case...this book, *The Ultimate Frontier*, started your mental processes working along these lines.

Number 2: Ah -- they were already working along this line, just like many people's are without knowing about it. I had started into an investigation the phenomena and mysticism on my own, because of my religious convictions couldn't answer my questions. Going to different churches and checking them out I found didn't answer my questions as to *why* I am. I've always wanted to know *why*. The human physiology is a remarkable thing. Why should it be? Why should we be different than the animals? Why should we have these philosophies when no other animals has philosophy? I studied many of the standard religions, but they couldn't answer my question to my satisfaction. I didn't like the idea of blind faith. [repeats: I didn't like the idea of blind faith.] To me blind faith is irresponsible and unreasonable. Then I got into science and became an atheist. I was working on a masters degree in anthropology and found that, just like the churches, the information from the scientific side fell short. They can't answer all the questions. In fact, the more we learn, the more anomalies we have, and we realize how little we know. Then my son -- who at the time was four-and-a-half years old -- nearly drowned. In fact, he *did* drown. He was full of saltwater and unconscious for 45 minutes. He should by all rights have died. The year was 1960. I was eating at a restaurant on the beach when I saw him floating face down in the water. I ran across the beach, jumped into the water, handed him to my brother, who handed him to a strange old man who appeared to be a derelict. When this old man pumped out the water -- I was in shock -- out of my son [for] the next 45 minutes. He refused to give my son to the ambulance crew and the doctor who had arrived had pronounced him dead. The old man looked into my eyes and said, "This boy isn't dead. I'm going to bring him back." I told the doctor, "Let him keep trying," and the old man kept working. Forty-five minutes is a long period of time to remain unconscious without breathing. However, my son not only recovered without brain damage from that episode, but he told us in the hospital exactly all the events that took place -- from me running out of that restaurant, jumping across the breakwater, diving into the water and getting him, handing him up to my brother -- he recalled all of this as if he had been watching it as a spectator, and yet he was unconscious. I mean, he wasn't Jean Dixon or anything. That personal experience was positive proof in my mind that the human mind is a lot greater than that body.

Number 1: Did it reinforce a previous belief, or did it really serve to allow you to see for the first time that there are other realities?

Number 2: It made me relook at some of my own experiences. It made me stop and think about a lot of things. For instance, the first thing it made me think of was when I was studying anthropology, I was studying the theory of evolution, chance evolution, chemistry just providing a scenario for itself to keep procreating and surviving and improving and so on. If we accept evolution as the ultimate answer, we have to accept a ludicrous notion that atoms -- all matter is made up of the atomic elements -- can so arrange themselves as to be able to give themselves abstract qualities, such as memory, desire, will, curiosity, consciousness, conscience, creativity, intuition, emotion and reason. How can you get that chemically? You can't. It has to be something else that is endowed, and man is the only one that has it -- a goat doesn't see the stars or know what's over the mountain or know anything about life and death, you see. But we do. These ideas were in my head, and intuitively I knew there was much more, but when that happened to my son then I realized that I too am a discrete bundle of mental energy -- only I didn't have that phraseology for it. I didn't know about what life was all about as I feel I do now.

Number 1: Were you able to determine the capability of the human being to deal with all these diverse areas of knowledge?

Number 2: Certainly, I am doing it and [I am] nothing extraordinary. I am dealing with all of these areas of knowledge in a relaxed and causal and fun way, and I feel that I am growing. I am not impatient about my growth, because I know that someday, if I continue to try to improve myself, if I continue to use those qualities of mind that I have, then I will become as perfect as humanly possible. Now according to our basic beliefs in this country, human beings are created in the image of their creator. To me that means we have the same qualities of mind. We're certainly not the physical image, but the mental image. We have will, memory, desire, curiosity, consciousness, creativity, conscience -- [I have] gone through those before -- intuition, emotion, reason -- those ten qualities of mind are the same qualities as the creator [has]. Perhaps we can never become absolute perfection as the creator, whatever it is, must have been. I cannot conceive of the creative force, not enough to verbalize it and makes sense to everyone, but I think we can obtain relative perfection and become one with the creator by improving ourselves based upon what we have to work with. There's no limit to human abilities, to what humans can do. We limit ourselves by our own conditioning.

Number 1: Do you think that most people are really trying to find out about all these things?

Number 2: Many humans are. I would say there are millions of people who have an inner urging towards something better, especially in this day and age, because now there are more of them here. Out of the great majority, roughly 220,000,000 people today in the United States, only about two or three million are really interested in what makes them tick, what is involved in life, the purpose of it all, and in really growing and building on their character. The other two hundred and something million are merely living a conditioned response from their environment, and they don't think about it at all. Look, here we are in the city of Atlanta, a huge city. Look at the people walking back and forth. They're positive in many ways, and yet they never really give any thought as to *why* they are, *why* they're capable of building these tremendous buildings and driving those tremendous vehicles they drive and --

[**Note: audio is cut off here for a few seconds, actual text is as follows:*

-- where they got this great gift of mind and how really little they're using it -- they don't give it a single thought.

Number 1: Fundamental religion has been undergoing so may changes in the past few years.]

[*audio resumes*]: Catholicism has been losing quite a few members because those members say that their religion is not in tune with the times, and this is the case in many other religious bodies. Do you believe that formal religion is just not keeping in tune with the times, or has it ever been in tune with them?

Number 2: Oh, considerably in tune. Essentially, it's this: the church for the last two thousand years has done a remarkable job with what it's had to work with. Remember, they're dealing with part of the truth. [William Coops: Part of the truth.] I've just finished this week a new book, called *The Life and Death of Planet Earth*. Now, what it points out is that the absolute truth is what we're all trying to find out, and we prove this subjectively. [As] we know it and nobody can change our minds, because we know it just like I know that fire burns my fingers because I've stuck them in there. You can tell me all you want, but I won't believe it until I do it. Knowledge is what we're seeking. The churches started off with a paradigm -- a framework of understanding -- and they had to work within that framework, and their framework was quite narrow. Then Jesus came along and broadened it tremendously. He *resurrected* the ideas of love and brotherhood, and working *you-too*-can-do-as-I-do. He was showing by his lifestyle that you can be perfect, you can know yourself, you can know your creator, you can know what it's all about. All you have to do is get off the dime and stop being so lazy and pay attention. That's what he was saying. Human beings have a tendency to want to put frameworks around things so they can be comfortable with them. So the early church put a framework around the truth. Theologians have translated and interpreted what has been said by all the great teachers until it's been quite distorted. However, even with all of the translations and misinterpretations of what was really said in the ancient times, they've done a remarkable job. They've done some bad things as well as good things in the eye of history, but the information is here. All you have to do is want it and dig for it. I found it. I found it for myself. There's more than one path. The reason I follow the path of the Great Pyramid is because I'm a doubter, [or] a skeptic, and [there is] something made of stone, the world's largest stone structure. It can be checked and rechecked and measured and remeasured.

It's been around for a very, very long time and there's no doubt it's there. However, [in] the metaphysical idea -- somebody going into a trance and some voice talking through him telling me he's Jesus -- that doesn't prove anything to me. It could be, but I could never prove it. I can prove that the Great Pyramid does, and that turned me on. There are answers to everyone's questions. We each have progressed. You see, I accept we have lived many thousands of lifetimes.

[William Cooper: Let me repeat that: "I accept we have lived many thousands of lifetimes."]

Number 2: People say, "Oh, reincarnation, I can't believe that." Well, they probably didn't believe it in their last lifetime either. I probably didn't either. However, each time we live a life we learn something more towards this perfection [William Cooper:, this perfection]. We're supposed to be [growing] until finally, we reach a point where we choose our incarnation with such great care that we incarnate to two very sharp parents -- at which point we grow with a tremendous rate of speed. *That's* the purpose of it all. Civilization's purpose is to provide the playground, the background, the environment that enhances soul growth, character growth. An environment which enhances the ability of humans to practice the virtues. By practicing these virtues (love, brotherhood, and working you-too-can-do-as-I-do) which are part of universal law -- what you put out comes back to you[, karma] -- you set an example for others. By practicing patience, tolerance, forbearance, kindness, and charity in your everyday life, you grow. By your example you set off a multitude of self-sustaining series of events, a chain reaction which strengthens the truth. I found this for myself. This is the message in *all* of the esoteric teachings in all seven of the great religions. I think the key, the key thing that the present human civilization is missing, is that the idea has been lost, that we're all responsible. Individual responsibility has been lost. We want some wizard to come along and do it for us. We want the preacher on Sunday to save us from our sins. We want the man in the confessional booth to cleanse us. We don't want to do it for ourselves. Well, there are no wizards. Every single ego, every single created individual or discreet bundle of mental energy, must do it for himself. This is part of the message of the Great Pyramid, and as soon as humans realize this and take responsibility for their actions, the problems of the planet earth will be diminished a thousand fold.

Number 1: I found it most fascinating, the fact you mentioned a moment ago, that the individual ego has a hand in the choice of his or her own incarnated person.

Number 2: This is esoteric information. I use the term "esoteric" information, "esoteric" meaning "inside," inside information, and it's only information that has been given to me. I've not proven it yet. Even if I did prove it, it will still be only information to you. So, the difference between information and knowledge is clear. We need to make that clear. Now, my information is that each of us chooses our parents and our situation, even our race.

[William Cooper: Listen to this, folks, listen to this crap! Beginning again:]

Number 2: One of the individuals that I have been told about in this esoteric information was George Washington Carver, who deliberately incarnated into a race that was downtrodden to work on the idea of bringing them up. He was an ego of tremendous advancement, and when he did incarnate into that environment, which was a terrible environment, I understand he may have lost a few points because he became embittered near the end. Had he remained without bitterness, he would have gained. This is the story I have. We all take a chance incarnating into a civilization that can drag us down, because when you get inside of a physical body you become the subject of the nuisances of that animal body and the conditioning and the responses, and it's up to *you* with those ten qualities of mind to overcome those. That's why being well disciplined is vitally important, and permissiveness is not wise.

[William Cooper: Well, folks, there's no way I'm able to read to you all of this interview because it's just too long. So, I'm going to pick out some pertinent points. This is Number 2 talking and this is an excerpt from a paragraph: "However, don't *permit* it. Don't say, 'Laziness is good for everybody, because you won't get uptight if you're lazy.' We have so many errors on the idea of human potential and what to do with it. I believe in being well disciplined, but not cruelly. I believe in responsibility. In the organization I belong to, the Stelle Group..."]

[William Cooper: The Stelle Group, the group in which Lars Hansen was reared. Now I want to quote to you from a book, called *The New World Order* by A. Ralph Epperson, which you can order from Publius Press in Tucson, Arizona. On page 67 in *The New World Order*, Mr. A Ralph Epperson has a direct quote from Eklal Kueshana. He was the leader of the Stelle Group. Mr. Texe Marrs also has the same quote in one or two of his books, but I'm taking this from *The New World Order* by A Ralph Epperson: "Lucifer is the head of a secret Brotherhood of Spirits...the Brotherhood is named after Lucifer because the great Angel Lucifer has been responsible for the abolishment of Eden in order that men could begin on the road to a spiritual advancement." That is the teachings of the leader of the Stelle Group, the group that this man belongs to. So folks, pay attention. This again is Number 2 speaking:]

Number 2: This is a part of the message a band of men at the dawning of the Age of Taurus, a more civilized age, embodied in the Great Pyramid's mathematical code to transmit to a generation of humans living in the Age of Aquarius, something they felt was vitally important. The Age of Aquarius began 23 August 1953, and this is a new-age idea: the idea that we can perceive and try to improve. Of course there's still a larger majority of humans, even in the Age of Aquarius, that want to drag people down and lower the standards. However, every single ego, every single human, has the capabilities of bringing himself up to the equal of his creator. It's just a matter of effort and patience and practicing the virtues.

Number 1: As Jesus stood between the two columns Jachin and Boaz on the outer porch of King Solomon's temple (John 10[, verse 23]) on [25th] December -- the celebration of the winter solstice [William Cooper: which is what that date is really for] -- a large majority of the people did not understand him when he said, "Ye are gods" (John 10[, verse 34]). Some people in the crowd took up stones to kill him as the money-changer in the temple cocked his head away from his table to see what some in the crowd were yelling about. He heard Jesus say, "Is it not written in your law, I said ye are gods," as he saw a law-giver of the temple sit bolt upright to listen to this man speaking to the crowd. The money-changer wondered why such an important law-giver of the temple sat up to listen, as rigid as a rod of iron, remembering the law and his responsibility. As the lawgiver remembered Psalm 82:6, he remembered a song of Asaph, in which God said, "Ye are gods." The man speaking to the crowd said, "The Father is in me, and I in Him," and what he meant could not have been other than what he said. As the crowd screamed, "Blasphemy!" and moved forward to kill Jesus, he simply disappeared. So when you say humans have the capability to bring themselves up to the equal of their creator, it would seem to me that this "new-age idea" is in reality a very, very ancient idea. However, you did say that that this is part of the message of the Great Pyramid -- but what about these ancient brotherhoods, these people who are responsible for all these secret type of teaching, which seems to be such a mystical type of notion -- are they still around today?

Number 2: I think so, very much. In fact, I can say I know it -- you can say it's information now. The "brothers" are those individuals who have obtained a degree in advancement over other humans.

[William Cooper: This, also, is Number 2.]

Number 2: ...if you meet a Brother, and you get him alone and you say, "I've noticed about you certain things, and...want to ask you if you are familiar with the Rosicrucians or the Masons or the Stelle Group or the book *The Ultimate Frontier* or some of these metaphysical philosophies" -- you, when you ask, are allowing him to interfere in your environment. This is the teacher appearing when the student is ready. But unless you ask, the Brothers won't help.

[William Cooper]: And here's the crux, folks.

Number 2: ...Yes. The fifth level of intelligence is responsible for the direct work with the planet, and they can make mistakes. The story of Lucifer and Jehovah is a tale of the mistake made by the angelic intelligence. The argument between the angelic forces on the fifth level of existence is that Jehovah, according to my philosophy, believed that humans could advance with a perfect environment, so at first, humans were given the Edenic State. All they had to do was eat bananas, sleep, chase the girls, make love, swim, sun and sleep. But they didn't grow in that Edenic state. All they wanted to do was eat, drink, make love, and sleep some more. They didn't want to grow, so Lucifer said, "We should help mankind grow -- and you know the rules, we can't go down and do it for them, so we'll give them problems to overcome." And ZAP -- like the thunderbolt of Zeus, Eden was gone and we now have winters in Chicago. And man has to overcome.

===

(end of quote)

[William Cooper]: Now, folks, I don't care if this man worships Lucifer. I don't care if he believes what he believes or belongs to the Mystery Schools. You all know me, I believe in the Constitution, and that we all have a right. But when he deceives and manipulates all of us, and when on June 8th, 1993 on Radio Free America, he said to the world that I am a CIA disinformation agent, then it's time that you knew who this man really is. I want you to track down and read these books that he wrote:

The Great Pyramid: Man's Monument to Man, New York, Pinnacle Books, 1975.
The Life and Death of Planet Earth, New York, Pinnacle Books, 1977.
Psychic Surgery, 1973 (reprint edition), Chicago, Pocket Books, 1975.

The entire text of the interview you heard tonight can be found in a book called *5/5/2000 Ice: The Ultimate Disaster*, by Richard W. Noone, spelled N-O-O-N-E, and he was the interviewer, Number 1.

Folks, research the history of Willis Carto. Research the history of the Liberty Lobby, and specifically Radio Free America. Tom Valentine has been a member of the Stelle Group for most of his life. He has also been closely connected to the Communist party by his own admission. Wake up! The members, the high priests of the Mystery Schools are enacting Ordo Ab Chaos [sic], create enough chaos and then they can step up and take control and establish order, The New World Order. Now you know why, on Radio Free America, Tom Valentine gets so angry when someone questions Freemasonry. Now you know why he covers for the secret societies and for Freemasonry, and now you why he's attacked me, because I am the enemy of Mystery Babylon. And there you have it, folks.

[rebroadcast stops here]

And yes, there you do have it, ladies and gentlemen. I want to read to you a letter that I received today. Talk about synchronicity! From my good friend in Tucson, Arizona, A. Ralph Epperson, he says, and I quote: "You might enjoy letting your listeners know about a quote I just found in a book, entitled *Legenda of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States*, written by Albert Pike. This book was written by Mr. Pike in 1888, three years before he died, and was published by the 33rd degree Council when they were in Charleston, South Carolina. This quote should settle the question once and for all as to who the god is that the Masons worship in their lodges. Here, in Tucson, one of their lodges is called a 'cathedral,' and another is called a 'temple,' two words describing places of worship. This quote will prove concretely that the god they worship is not the God of the Bible. I have been looking for this book by Pike for many years, and presumed that it was out-of-print because I couldn't locate a copy. However, I knew it was not forgotten, because Rex Hutchins, then a 32nd degree Mason, but who later became a 33rd degree Mason, quoted from it in his Masonic book, entitled *A Bridge to Light*. So I considered it fortunate when I found that a publisher of out-of-print and rare books called Kessinger Publishing Company in Kila, Montana had reprinted it. It is their claim that *Legenda* is a series of monographs intended to supplement the ritualistic instruction of the book written by Mr. Pike, called *Morals and Dogma*. As you know, the first ten words of the Bible are found in Genesis, chapter 1, verse 1 and are: 'In the beginning, God created the heaven and the earth.' That means that in the time before there was something, there had to be nothing. So, God created something out of nothing when he created the universe, or there would not have been a need for a beginning. But Mr. Pike does not agree. This is what he says on page 109 of *Legenda* in his explanation of the 28th degree: 'Nothing is produced from nothing, because existence can no more cease to be than nothing can cease not to be. To say that the world came forth from nothing is to propose a monstrous absurdity. Everything that Is, proceeds from that which was, and consequently nothing of that which Is can ever not be.' The letter 'I' in the word 'Is' was capitalized by Mr. Pike. It is customary to capitalize the first letter in the name of a deity, or a noun that refers to a deity. Does this mean that he is making a deity out of matter?"

Well, folks, Lucifer is the god of the material world, so Mr. Pike says that those of us who believe in a God who created the universe out of nothing believe in a "monstrous absurdity." The Christians and the Jews who believe in the God of the Old and New Testaments believe in a "monstrous absurdity" when they profess that their God made the universe out of nothing. Let there be no doubt: Pike told his readers that he and the Masons do not worship the Creator, God. They worship a secret and concealed god in their cathedrals and temples, who cannot create anything. In fact, Mr. Pike agreed with that statement. He wrote this about their "sun god" on pages 253 and 254 of *Morals and Dogma*. I might remind you that Radio Free America is carried by the Sun Radio Network. "Ammon, at first, the god of lower Egypt, was the sun god. He created nothing." And to show that this is true, he repeated the idea on page 281, "The supreme being of the Egyptians was Ammon, a secret and concealed god, the original light. He creates nothing." Yet he calls this god the "supreme being". If the universe had two gods, one who created everything from nothing and one who created nothing, I would presume the first god who made everything, including the second god, would be superior to the second god, who created nothing. So the only way you can resolve this problem if you believe in this second god who created nothing is to claim that there's no Creator, God. Then your god can then be become the supreme being, and that is what Mr. Pike did.

Make no mistake about it, the Masons do not worship the Creator, God, the God who made the world out of nothing, and that is why they have chosen to call their god, "The Great Architect of the Universe," and that is why the Brotherhood in the ancient times was called, "The Builders" and today are called, "Freemasons," or "franc-maçon" in the French. It is known that architects do not draw plans to create a structure out of nothing. They design structures that must be built from existing materials, or, if you will, out of materials that must be changed from one form to another before they can be integrated into a structure. The Masons worship some other being, one that they know can create nothing, and that includes the Stelle Group. That includes the Ancient Order of the Rose and Cross, the Knights Templars, the sovereign and military Order of the Knights of Malta and all of the rest of these skunks. The number one Mason of all time has said, ladies and gentlemen, in his own writings. I have never claimed that Tom Valentine was a Freemason; I have only claimed what you have heard in this broadcast tonight, and I am sick of his stinking lies, and I am sick and tired of you stupid sheeple out there who cannot study or listen or repeat exactly what you hear, but have to make up some strange tale in order to cover your pathetic ignorance.

Ladies and gentleman, I do not attack people, I reveal them. I wish nobody ill will. I don't care what alter anyone worships upon. You are listening to a true Constitutionalist who believes 100% in our right to protect us, the religion of our choice. I would fight for any one of you if that right were threatened to be taken away. Where I draw the line is when you lie, when you deceive and when you manipulate the rest of us to pit us against each other so that you could bring about your silly, stupid Utopia, your dream of a thousand years of peace on this earth. You will never do it because you are mankind, just like me and everyone else, who you claim are nothing but cattle. And because you are man, just like me and everyone else, you suffer for the same inherent failings that I, and everybody else who lives upon this earth, suffers [sic] from. You have the same temptations and the same greed and you fight every day against these things. And to say that you, you are the only truly mature minds in this world, and that you are going to control the rest of us because we do not have the capability or the power to think for ourselves is not only ludicrous, but is what eventually will bring you to your knees as we round you up and throw you in the jails and the prisons where you belong, and stop your wrecking of all the good than man has built upon the face of this earth. Don't pervert my words, because I'm the only one you'll ever hear on the radio who uses fact, who uses [their own] words of the people that I talk about, and I have no ulterior motive of trying to hurt anyone. The only reason for this broadcast and for me sitting here, ladies and gentlemen, is to wake the sheeple, empower the people and try like hell to save freedom, for not only for this country but for the entire world.

Now, if you cannot understand what you heard tonight, then you are one of the most stupid ones out there. Those of you who are sheeple, who think you understood but aren't quite sure, but you believe that you are getting some meaning in what you heard tonight, you have a chance. And, of course, the rest of you, the people who have listened to the over thirty-two hours of the Mystery series that we've aired on this program, you already know the truth, and you are the hope for the future in this nation. Ladies and gentlemen, I have said it before and I'll say it again: these people practice the Hegelian conflict, political resolution, and they control both sides of each conflict. Tom Valentine never said a word on his program about Freemasonry until I forced him to by my broadcast, and if you don't believe that, you go back and listen to all the tapes. Remember, a nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are beasts of burden and steaks on the table, by choice and consent.

Shortly after I originally ran this program, Tom Valentine came on with the master of the Stelle Group and claimed that he became a Christian in 1968 and left the Stelle Group forever. And that is a lie, because in the interview that you just heard, he claimed that he was loyal to the group to which he belonged, the Stelle Group. That interview was conducted in 1976, and that book was published in 1982. I've said it before, I will say it again: Tom Valentine, you are a liar and if you are not, sue me. We'll let a court of law determine it. I have all the evidence I need, mister.

All of you out there listening, good night, and whether you believe it or not, I mean this from my heart: God bless you all.

(closing music: The Rose, written by Bette Midler, performed by an unknown artist)

Hour 33: Aid and Abet Newsletter (aired January 3rd, 1994)

Across the Americas and around the world, once again, you're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm your host, William Cooper, and in studio...

[voice of Carolyn Nelson]: Carolyn Nelson.

Folks, I'm going to be on a little investigative trip here for the next week. And while I'm gone, you are you going to hear re-runs on both time slots. Those of you listening now have probably never heard these episodes of the Hour of the Time, and you should always listen to this broadcast with a pad of paper and a pencil or pen by your side. Never, ever, make the mistake of sitting down without a pad of paper and a pen or pencil to listen to the Hour of the Time. We have very short patience around here for people who do not follow directions, so if you call up and want us to recount the show for you because you didn't have your pad of paper and your pencil, I'm sorry, we don't have time to do that. We're very, very busy here. So, make sure you get it the first time. If you miss a telephone number because I only say it once, that's OK.

(William Cooper continues to talk about his different time slots)

Tonight's show is important, for it verifies everything that I've been telling you in the Mystery Babylon series, which we have done 31 episodes of. And we have included, "The Dawn of Man," which ran prior to the production of the Mystery Babylon series and any orders for this series. So, that actually makes 32 tapes. But tonight's episode will be episode number 32 of the series known as Mystery Babylon.

Don't go away, folks. You need to know what you're going to hear tonight.

(opening music: God Part II, performed by U2)

For those of you who don't believe that those who call themselves illumined, the only truly mature minds in this world and thus, are the only ones capable of deciding the future, or of ruling the rest of us...those of you who don't believe these people have infiltrated all levels of our society -- our government, our military, our law enforcement -- I want you to listen carefully to what I'm going to read you. I'm going to quote, verbatim, an article which appeared in the newsletter called *Aid and Abet Police Newsletter, volume 2, Constitutional Issues for Lawmen, number 1*...volume 2, number 1. That's *Aid and Abet Police Newsletter*.

Now, this letter, according to the editor of this newsletter, was written by a police chief. Here, he uses a pseudonym, so he says, so that the police chief's identity is not revealed. However, as you will find out, if you have listened to our series on Mystery Babylon, this is not just a police chief. This is a highly degreed member of the Masonic Lodge, and he gives himself away with his symbology. For the end of his article, he signs it, "So mote it be."

Aid and Abet is put out by officer Jack McLamb, who has been written up as one of the best police officers ever produced by the state of Arizona. We neither endorse him, nor do we condemn him. As far as CAJI is concerned, our vote is not in yet on this organization. We know that in order to bring about the New World Order, they need to identify everyone who will uphold the real law, the Constitution, the supreme law of the land. They need to identify those people and get them out of positions of authority and, if necessary, take them out of society completely. There are organizations which exist solely for the purpose of identifying those people in government, those people in the patriot community, those police officers serving in police organizations, who would ultimately support the Constitution and the Bill of Rights against any effort to destroy it. *Aid and Abet* may be one of these means. We do not know that for certain. But if you listen to this letter...this letter, because it's signed with a pseudonym, may not be from a police chief at all, but may be from those who control *Aid and Abet* to tell the police officers what is expected of them in the New World Order.

Again, we do not know this to be true. But we have discovered, ladies and gentlemen, that in our investigations, that those who oppose us -- who would destroy us -- used the Hegelian dialectic of political conflict resolution. They control both sides of every issue. They set in motion methods and means to identify their enemy, and destroy their enemy, before their enemy can hurt them. And that's why we have been on the losing end for literally thousands of years with these people.

I now quote from this newsletter:

[Reading from *Aid and Abet*:]

(start of quote)
===

To the question of, "Do some judges, prosecutors and police officers today commit dishonest acts to put criminals away?" I answer an unequivocal, Yes! But, it is hoped that it is not done without just cause. True immorality exists only when the cause is not just.

[William Cooper: Notice how they turn the definition of morality around. He goes on:]

After more than 20 years of service to my fellow Americans I realize what reality is. The truth is that today many judges, attorneys, police officials and officers are devotees of the religion of Secular Humanism (S.H.), myself included.

Some of our members (mainly out of fear) will not admit that S.H. is a religion [William Cooper: that's Secular Humanism is a religion]. They are apprehensive that we might be treated as the so-called "Christians" have been treated under the doctrine of Separation of Church and State. Such fear might be well founded if this were 15 to 20 years ago. Not so today. Reason being, colleagues of our faith are, for the most part, in control of the agencies and organizations, such as the ACLU, ABA, Justice Dept. etc., that would normally protest such cases. Although this may at first seem unfair, it is not. But allow me to proceed, and I believe you will come to full understanding of this and many other important facts.

My feelings are that it is time we shepherds open the eyes of our flock and further sort out those we cannot take with us into the 21st century.

[William Cooper: I'm going to pause here. In case you don't understand exactly what this man just said, I'm going to read this paragraph again to you. Remember, this is purported to be a police chief writing under a pseudonym to the police newsletter called *Aid and Abet*. Listen very carefully, ladies and gentlemen, and you'll see when I've labeled you sheeple, I have not been...I have not been incorrect.]

[repeats:] My feelings are that it is time we shepherds open the eyes of our flock and further sort out those we cannot take with us into the 21st. Century.

[William Cooper: Now, those of you who thought that I was insane when I told you that, if you don't go along with the New World Order -- if you can't renounce your old religion and your old societal ways and your old morals and conform to the new age -- you will be exterminated. They make no secret of this. I continue:]

Any that would deny that our religion of [Secular Humanism] is not a valid religion should do their homework. The Supreme Court decided that it is a religion some years ago in the Torcaso vs Abington, Abington vs Schempp, and in Torcaso vs Watkins cases. According to the High Court, it is "...belief, not body, creed, or cult which appears to be the essence of religion." It further explains that, "...'belief' refers to some sort of universal view of life, of the world of mankind - a belief that is held to be true about mankind." In essence the Supreme Court said that one's religion can be "...any world view with or without reference to GOD, theistic or non-theistic in nature". I hope this helps others to understand our Faith, however, this of course is not the main point of my speech.

I wish to address the abuse of Police Officers who ascribe, knowingly or unknowingly, to the moral tenants of our religion in regards to ethics and morals. Nationwide our devotees are enduring horrible discrimination at the hands of a very hypocritical faction of society, the Christians. This discrimination comes as we Humanists exercise our own religious beliefs and apply our morals "on the job," so to speak. Yet, other officers may apply their own individual belief systems (morals and ethics) at will, without any condemnation. This is undeniable discrimination!

Fortunately, our religion is the fastest growing of any in all of history and many of the younger generation within the criminal justice system, including police officers, who ascribe to sound Secular Humanist principals are now in management which is of benefit to all. This does give us sway power, and is a plus for our side. Still, there is far too much discrimination against those who would apply a most important principle of our religion -- "Situation Ethics".

The principal of Situation Ethics allows the individual to focus correctly on only the goal to be accomplished. Morally speaking, little if any consideration need be given to the method or means, as nothing else supersedes its importance. Of course concern is given to finding a means of accomplishing a task or goal, so as to have the least negative impact on the least amount of our people.

[William Cooper: Notice he says, "our people."]

In my youth I recall hearing the great Green Bay Packers coach Vince Lombardi describe it this way: "Winning is not everything; it is the only thing." Much of our society lives by this principal today. Yes, even many of those who "profess other faiths" and occupy pulpits throughout America. Personally, I think the principle of Situation Ethics is best described by examining the legal definition of ethics and morals given by our now compatriots, the Communists. The Communist definition is: "EVERYTHING is ethical and moral as long as it promotes World Communism." This is pure Secular Humanism. We can learn much, incidentally, about total commitment from the Communists. The Marxists have, out of pragmatic necessity, expurgated a minimum of 90 million people in the pursuit of man's noblest mission -- world peace. What intelligent person could call "immoral" any means used to accomplish this all important goal?

[William Cooper: (laughs) Do you...do you think this guy is playing with a full load of bricks, here? I don't. And he continues:]

In our great Humanist Manifesto signed in 1933 and 1973, we explain our moral creed which is very much the same as the Marxist creed, yet set forth in much more palatable and tactful terms. Here is a brief summation of our beliefs regarding Ethics and Truth:

"Moral values derive their source from human experience. Ethics is autonomous and situational, needing no theological or ideological sanction. Ethics stems from human need and interest. To deny this distorts the whole basis of life...We strive for the good life, here and now." -- [William Cooper: and that's from the] Humanist Manifesto II, [written and signed in] 1973.

AUTHORITY AND TRUTH

"We reject those features of traditional religious morality that deny humans a full appreciation of their own potentialities and responsibilities. Traditional religions often offer solace to humans, but, as often, they inhibit humans from helping themselves or experiencing their full potentialities...We can discover no divine purpose or providence for the human species...Humans are responsible for what we are or will become.

[William Cooper: Remember, folks, I educated you in the part of the Masonic religion, and the religion of the Rose and Cross, and the Knights Templar, and the Knights of Malta, the Red Cross of Constantine? All of these believe that man is in a state of becoming. Becoming what? Becoming gods. I continue:]

Humans are responsible for what we are or will become. No deity will save us: we must save ourselves." -- [That's from the] Humanist Manifesto II, 1973.

After 20 plus years of conditioning, our society now largely subscribes to this philosophy. Some of you who practice "selective" Christianity are closer to our faith than to the superstitions of the Bible Thumpers of old. (In selective Christianity, of course, you choose [certain portions of the so-called Word of God] to believe in, and discard the parts that are not convenient.) Don't you see that in this we are just alike? Your "faith" is actually based on what is right under man's desire. We Humanists are in fact more honest. We admit that there is no God -- that it is only Man's desires that are important. You leaders of these "selective Christians" preach that your faith is based on some parts of "God's Law" but, in actuality the majority is based on what feels good or is convenient.

[William Cooper: Now I must break here for just a second, folks, to tell anyone who may have just tuned in that these are not my words. If you're sitting there with your lower jaw on your chest, looking aghast at your radio, you are not listening to the thoughts of William Cooper or the Hour of the Time. I am quoting verbatim from a letter attributed to a police chief, and this letter can be found in *Aid and Abet*, a police newsletter, volume 2, number 1, in case you want to pursue this.]

Quite obviously [I'm continuing now. Quite obviously], America's government now operates under the guiding principles of Humanism. Deception, lying, cheating, stealing, killing is all moral if it promotes the attainment of our essential goals. This is true righteousness.

[William Cooper: Folks, I gotta stop right here and tell you: this is true bullshit. This is deception at its worst, for these people are actually believing that wrong is right and right is wrong. And that is exactly what we were warned about in these days. And that is what I warned you about in my book, *Behold A Pale Horse*. And I told you years ago that the belief of these people is that the ends justify the means, whatever they might be. If they must kill two billion people to make their dream come true, they will do it. Mark my words: they will do it.]

A prime example [I'm continue now. A prime example] can be seen in the recent war against Iraq. Over 250,000 have lost their lives so far, and more are dying every day -- all for the attainment of a higher good, the goal of our great Humanist leaders: WORLD PEACE through World Government.

[William Cooper: You see, the writer of this letter understood what I understood about the Gulf War. It wasn't about Iraq taking Kuwait. It was in fact about the New World Order. George Bush even stated that. He said in our speech -- his speech I should say: "Our fifth goal in the Middle East is a New World Order," though I would venture to say that he stated it as his fifth goal in order not to give it too much attention in the public eye. It was actually the first goal, ladies and gentlemen. I continue:]

This New Age teaching is the reason why, for example, a police officer (one of Secular Humanist persuasion) is likely to risk his very life to save a member of society one moment and the very next moment take the witness stand and lie in order to win an important case. This is not to be considered immoral, given the particular standard of ethics upon which such an officer bases his morality -- namely, that the end justifies any means. (In other words again, the "Higher Good" principle!) Many people still do not understand this. They don't understand that this is why our presidents and their staffs, members of Congress and hosts of others with leadership roles in America -- lawyers, judges, etc. -- lie and cheat right alongside our dedicated humanist Law Enforcers. To repeat, all for the greater good of society, [or, in effect,] the system.

[William Cooper: And I add outside the letter written by the chief -- if it is really a chief, ladies and gentlemen -- that all of these people belong to the secret societies. The ones who lie and cheat and murder. And I continue:]

What the Masses must be made to understand, and never be allowed to forget, is that this is for their own good. They should know by now that those who are actually in control of our government (as Col. Oliver North explained) truly know what is best for the people. They must also know that under the New World Order, the Justice System's primary mission will be to protect the system from the masses. It is precisely in view of this that we on the inside have been obligated all along to use the system to suppress dissenters as quickly as possible -- before any radical Anti-World Government, Anti-Humanist group can gain the upper hand.

[William Cooper: I must read that again, folks, for those of you who may be a little bit slow in understanding. And some of us are, especially with something that you can't quite grasp and never heard before. That's excusable. Again:]

What the Masses must be made to understand, and never be allowed to forget, is that this is for their own good. They should know by now that those who are actually in control of our government (as Col. Oliver North explained) truly know what is best for the people. They must also know that under the New World Order, the Justice System's primary mission will be to protect the system from the masses. It is precisely in view of this that we on the inside have been obligated all along to use the system to suppress dissenters as quickly as possible -- before any radical Anti-World Government, Anti-Humanist group can gain the upper hand.

You're aware of course, that the vast majority of Americans seek only peace and security. They hardly even realize that they have virtually made government their new god, to which they turn for the fulfillment of every need. Our New Age leaders (and we soldiers as their "arms and legs") stand ready to give the Masses all for which they pray.

[William Cooper: And, ladies and gentlemen, I, William Cooper, and the Hour of the Time have warned you that if you don't wake up, if you don't change the course of the future, that you would get exactly what you want, and that you would be slaves in a New World Order. You see, to revert to the state of childhood means you must have a daddy. Some daddies aren't too nice, and even the nice ones restrict your personal freedoms until you reach the age of maturity. In this case, there will be no age of maturity, I can assure you. I continue with the letter:]

Let me repeat: Our job within the Criminal Justice system today is to protect the PLAN, the SYSTEM, and punish those that our leaders decide are enemies of that System.

[William Cooper: You doubted me when I said there was a plan, ladies and gentlemen? There is the verification that there is, in fact, a plan…an ancient plan. I continue:]

Of course now, as with our Soviet colleagues, under New Age Humanist Situation Ethics, we are not limited in the methods we may apply to win. We can therefore proceed with unobstructed haste to make the masses safe and peaceful.

[William Cooper: (laughs)]

Let's look again at our example of that police officer who routinely risks his life for others and yet will lie on the witness stand to help his government win some case in court. If some of you are still surprised at this then perhaps you haven't understood what I have been trying to convey. Nor have you understood what your children have learned so well over the last 20 years within the government school system.

It is that we are living in a new age where man has wisely placed his trust in government instead of some superstition called the divine or God. It is the old religious morals that have caused all of our problems. A new age calls for a new belief system, a new moral code, a new religion. It is exciting to see most all of the religions of the world coming nicely together, united in preparation to serve the New World Order.

[William Cooper: Remember, I told you that your religious leaders are not really on your side, and all the churches that belong to the World Council of Churches are all bring you closer to one religion, which will not resemble anything that Christ taught. I continue:]

We must all dedicate ourselves to obeying our leaders without question and to the instruction of succeeding generations toward our Utopian goals of World Peace.

I would like to introduce you to one present-day scholar Dr. Sidney Simon, who has been very effective, and deserving of much credit [repeats: deserving of much credit] for his efforts in this work of re-educating humanity. He speaks plainly and his meaning is unmistakable, as when he says:

"We do not need any more preaching about right and wrong. The old 'thou shalt nots' simply are not relevant." He goes on to explain to the child educators he is addressing that "values clarification" is a method for teachers to change the values of children 'without getting caught'. (Values Clarification is another term for Situation Ethics).

A book in use by our educators called, *Weep for Our Children*, spells out "values clarification" as part of the new morality.

[William Cooper: Listen to this carefully. This is a book in use by teachers, teaching your children, right this moment. It's called *Weep for Our Children*:]

"It's OK to lie. It's OK to steal. It's OK to have premarital sex. It's OK to cheat or to kill if these things are part of your value system, and you have clarified these values for yourself. The important thing is not what values you choose, but that you have chosen them yourself freely and without coercion of parents, spouse, priest, friends, ministers or social pressure of any kind."

===

(end of quote)

And that makes me very, very angry. That's one of the reasons my daughter is not in school and never will be in school. She already knows more now than most children twice her age from the home schooling that she gets. This is incredible.

Don't go away. I have to take a breath. It makes me angry just to read this crap.

(break music: I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For, performed by U2)

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss American Trading Corporation]

(break music: continuation of I Still Haven't Found What I'm Looking For, performed by U2)

Ladies and gentlemen, I'm going to read the last paragraph again. I want you to hear this. Remember, this is a book in use by teachers -- educators -- called *Weep for Our Children* and it spells out values clarification as part of the new morality:

[Continuing from *Aid and Abet*:]

(start of quote)

===

"It's OK to lie. It's OK to steal. It's OK to have premarital sex. It's OK to cheat or to kill if these things are part of your value system, and you have clarified these values for yourself. The important thing is not what values you choose, but that you have chosen them yourself freely and without coercion of parents, spouse, priest, friends, ministers or social pressure of any kind."

It is such [Secular Humanism] proponents in the government schools (the teachers) whom we can thank for re-molding the values of these next generations.

When the government national Child Care bill is passed it will be a great day for Humanists and proponents of World Peace. What wonders we can achieve once we have the attention of the nation's pre-schoolers for 6 to 9 hours a day! Look what we have already accomplished with the older age groups of America's youth.

As I hinted earlier, this new society, based on the deity of Man, will demand a new kind of Law Enforcer.

[William Cooper: Remember I told you: they believe that man is in a state of becoming. Becoming what? A god.]

[repeats:] As I hinted earlier, this new society, based on the deity of Man, will demand a new kind of Law Enforcer.

One of our educators said to me some weeks ago, "America's religious zealots of the past would be shocked at the changes the people have allowed." She was correct, for after all, it was James Madison that said, "We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from it. We have staked the future...upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to sustain ourselves, according to the Ten Commandments of God."

Ah, but it is a new day, and we are fast proceeding into the 21st Century. Americans no longer wish to assume the responsibilities of governing themselves. Happily, for them, there is a whole new generation of very dedicated leaders and enforcers in government to see that they are cared for.

[ENFORCEMENT MANPOWER]

Let me address for a moment the question of Police manpower. As the citizens relinquish, out of fear, more of their rights, more Enforcers are required to regulate and supervise the people's activities so that they remain safe and peaceful. Who would have thought 100 years ago that the integration of fear of literally everything would have been the answer to establishing the New World Order? Credit for this innovation goes to the Free Thinkers of the last generation.

[William Cooper: Now, folks, if you think he's wrong, just look at yourselves; look at what you put up with; look what you've allowed to happen; look at the state our nation is in; look at the fact that we've already lost most of the Bill of Rights and a portion of the Constitution known as the first ten amendments. You all file and pay income taxes but you are not required to file or pay. You do everything out of fear, and that's why you're known as "the sheeple." Most of you; not all, but most, without any doubt. Most of you...that title fits like a hand-made pair of Italian shoes. It's very comfortable, isn't it? Isn't it?]

Now the older generation known as "Peace Officers", "Servants of the People", might not so readily have adopted, nor fit into, this new order of things. Fortunately, this has not posed too great a problem, due to the fact that they are rapidly being replaced through natural attrition, [in effect] death or retirement.

[William Cooper: And now Hilary is running around the country, folks…wants to open a dialogue on euthanasia. Timely, isn't it? I continue:]

The next seven or eight years will see the last of them removed.

At the same time, police agencies are of necessity attempting more and more to screen out before hiring those prospective officers who believe in the old religious superstitions. This is wise because these zealots will not do the things that will be required of them under the new system. Those remaining police officers who openly profess a belief system steeped in old world Religious Fundamentalism, can be and are being phased out on any number of charges, such as can be substantiated over time or with the help of a little innovation on the part of new management.

[William Cooper: And we believe that this organization, *Aid and Abet*, may be the organ [sic] used to identify those police officers. I continue...before I continue, folks, we believe that and have good grounds to believe. However, we cannot prove it. You must make up your own mind yourselves. I continue:]

Some of the "old time" officers complain that this type of job discrimination is "unconstitutional and immoral," but we know they are wrong. Under Situation Ethics all things are moral as long as they promote the goal. Therefore they are not being removed for any evil cause; they are incompatible and simply non-functional for the duties that will be required of them.

[William Cooper: You might ask yourself, ladies and gentlemen: what are the duties that will be required of them? I think you've already seen some examples at Ruby Ridge and Waco, Texas and many other places. And I go on with the letter:]

[SUPERVISING A HYPOCRITICAL PUBLIC]

I feel I need to say again that if a professional police officer must lie against those who violate the Law, then it is moral. The same is true when government judges and attorneys withhold evidence and witnesses from the jury to win their cases. When a politician lies to win an office, or makes deals that promote the New Order, it is moral.

Let me tell you what is truly immoral. I will use the issuance of traffic violations as only one example. True immorality is when 5 out of 10 "good upstanding citizens" take the witness stand, swear an oath to their God, and then proceed to fabricate lies to get out of their tickets. This our Enforcement Officers witness daily in court. To them this is not only immoral but highly hypocritical.

The Enforcer's dishonesty helps society as a whole. If a government agent lied for personal reasons [then] it would be immoral; if done for the betterment of mankind, it is not. And that is the most important lesson I bring you today. It is one thing when a leader or agent of government has to lie or otherwise deceives his subjects. It is quite another when an ordinary individual from among the masses, "bites the hand that feeds him" by lying to those who are bringing salvation in this brave new world. Do we see this important difference?

The Old World understood that it was the greatest of sins to lie to or deceive God. The generations of devotees that wish to enter the New World must likewise be brought to the understanding that it is the greatest of sins to lie to or deceive their new God, Government. Any such disloyalty would surely hamper the progress of those engaged in ushering in the glorious New World Order.

[RESISTANCE TO THE NEW ORDER]

We are not concerned with the few who may resist this New Order, for out of pragmatic necessity their fate has been amply allowed for in the Master Plan. What we are most concerned about at present is that the obedient masses be made to understand that it is detrimental to progress for them to suggest that their Supervisors wallow under the pressure and futility of the antiquated superstitions, morals and dogma of the past. There will be some difficult changes facing the person entering this New Society. On these issues, however, we can assure the people there will be no compromise.

Thank you for listening. May the blessing of the New Order come swiftly upon us.

So Mote It Be.

===
(end of quote)

"So Mote It Be" is taken directly from the initiation ceremonies of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, and you will hear it nowhere else, ladies and gentlemen. Whoever wrote this was a highly degreed Freemason of the Scottish Rite. And he is under a pseudonym explaining the true purpose, the true religion and the true plan for the religion that those who frequent the lodge actually adhere to.

So you see, in *Aid and Abet*, a police newsletter, volume 2, number 1, all of the police officers who subscribe to this newsletter are the good guys. The good guys. They have been delivered a warning from a police chief under a pseudonym which makes it very plain what will happen to any police officer who does not go along with the New World Order. And I say that it was intentionally that way. And that there is no police Chief Rupert Orpheus, pseudonym or not. But this is the policy that needed to be explained to all of these officers at once to hasten their decision. You see, ladies and gentlemen, when it comes right down to it, most people will do what they're told, when they're told if they're told, and they have been told.

I hope that you are intelligent enough to understand what you have just heard, and exactly what it means. If you are not...if you are not, dear sheeple, God have mercy upon your soul. You're going to need it.

Those long time listeners to the Hour of the Time; those who have been awake for quite some time; those who were never asleep, understand that there is a plan in the world that the members of the secret societies, by whatever name they call themselves to you, the profane, in their exoteric language, are using to bring about the ages-old dream of a New World Order. For the masses are totally and completely controlled for each and every second of every moment of every hour of every day of their lives. And where the priests of the Mysteries govern in what they call a "Council of Wise Men."

The public at large will not know much about this Council of Wise Men, for there will be at the head of this Council a charismatic, religious, and political leader. This is necessary for the public needs somewhere to vent their emotions, their elations, their angers. And it makes no difference if they topple this leader from his throne. The real leaders will remain untouched as they have remained untouched throughout the history of the world.

Those of you who really believe this hick, William Clinton, is leading this nation and making the decisions...you probably, at some point within the last 24 hours, thought you were Rush Limbaugh and sat on half your brain. And those of you who believe that you really have a choice at election time, when the choice has already been made, and it's especially damaging if you believe that your vote really counts, when it is the Electoral College that elects the president. And in fact, that's really not necessary, unless some ringer slips into the choice, like Gary Hart. Didn't you wonder why Gary Hart was completely and totally destroyed forever because someone photographed him on a boat with one woman, not doing anything wrong? And Bill Clinton is not even tarnished.

Don't you understand? Bill Clinton is just a messenger boy. And if he gets impeached, it will not solve anything. And those of you running around signing petitions to impeach William Clinton had better read the Constitution of the United States of America. You see, you cannot impeach a president because somebody signed a petition. I don't care if 200,000,000 Americans sign that petition, you cannot impeach William Clinton, you fools! You must prove that he has committed high crimes and misdemeanors, and you must have solid evidence. And you must have witnesses that don't die overnight, and documentation that doesn't disappear by the time next week comes along.

Do you understand? Once again they have you whirling around in circles at the end of a cul-de-sac.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: The Rose performed by Bette Midler)

Hour 34: Secret Societies and Vatican II (aired January 12nd, 1994)

Welcome, once again, to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper...

[Carolyn Nelson]...and I'm Carolyn Nelson.

[William Cooper]: Last night during this time slot I neglected to do what I said I would do at the beginning of the program, and people have been calling all day -- both my house and here -- wanting to know how to get hold [sic] of the Luxor tape and what the price is and all of that kind of thing. A lot of people are interested in that and they should be. You all should be interested in this video tape. I'm very proud of it and it's gonna...it will be about two weeks in production, and then it'll be ready to send out. If you want to get it in advance, order in so that you can get one of the first copies, and they are always the best, by the way, because they come off of the clean master. As the master is used, as more and more copies are reproduced off the master, the quality gets poorer and poorer until finally you have to make another master or stop producing the tape, one of the two.

So, if you would like a copy of *The Source of Light*, which is the name of the tape, *The Source of Light*...

[William Cooper gives details about obtaining a copy of the video tape]

Don't go away. We got a good, good show for you tonight, but first we're going to get your blood roaring through your veins.

(opening music: Shake, Rattle and Roll, performed by Bill Haley & His Comets)

Well, ladies and gentlemen, I'm going to read to you an article from *La Traviata*...*La Traviata* , the December 1993 issue. And I'm going to read this to you so that you'll know that I'm not the only one out here who's stark raving mad as some of you tend to think. I want you to hear that, not only...not only have I reached the conclusions that I have reached through years and years of diligent and very, very deep research, but many others have reached the same -- and I mean the very same -- conclusions. This is entitled, "Secrets in the Vatican II: The Church and the Secret Societies, A Brief History." Pay close attention and, as always, ladies and gentlemen, make sure that you have a tablet and a pen or pencil by your side at all times when you listen to the Hour of the Time.

(start of quote)
===

At a recent Church of England Synod, a report on Freemasonry was presented to the assembled clerics and laypeople for debate. Several speakers denounced Masonry as contrary to the teachings of Christianity and condemned Christians, especially clerics, who might be members. One speaker even went so far as to attack Masonry as blasphemous because he claimed its central initiation ritual, which involves a symbolic death and rebirth enactment, was a travesty of the Christian belief of the crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth. Since its inception, Freemasonry has been a target of Christian wrath. In the inner circle of Masonry among those who have obtained higher degrees of initiation there are Masons who understand that they are the inheritors of an ancient and pre-Christian tradition handed down from pagan times. The medieval Masons inherited this secret tradition in the form of symbolic teachings which expressed spiritual truths. These teachings originated in the pagan mysteries which were followed [wildly]...widely [and wildly] in the ancient world. These medieval Masons inherited esoteric knowledge from their pagan forebearers and this knowledge was incorporated into the sacred architecture of the cathedrals.

[William Cooper: Now, I want you to pay real close attention because during my series in the Mysteries, when I found out what was concealed within most of the altars that were built during those times -- and I related it to you over the air -- many people called me a liar. And you're going to hear verification of this -- what was found -- not only within the altars, but throughout these cathedrals. So pay close attention, folks. This is very important.]

When the lodges of speculative, as opposed to operative, Freemasonry were founded in the 17th and 18th centuries, this knowledge was transformed into the symbolism which today forms the basis of Masonic ritual. With the persecution of alternative spiritual beliefs in medieval Christian Europe, the guardians of this ancient wisdom went underground, forming secret societies to preserve their pagan ideals, and these societies became the "mysteries". The two major secret societies which were formed in this period -- although they only revealed themselves in public form in the 16th and 17th centuries -- were Freemasonry and the Order of the Rosy and Cross. While the Order of the Rosy Cross, or the Rosicrucians, is still a secret society which has received little publicity in the modern times, considerable public attention has been drawn to Freemasonry recently.

[William Cooper: (laughs) Oh, my.]

The Masons regard geometry as the most important of the arts and sciences, according to their beliefs. Geometry has been taught by a pre-flood patriarch called Lamech, who had three sons: one invented geometry, another was the first Mason, and the third was a blacksmith who was the first human to work with precious metals. In common with Noah, Lamech was warned of an impending flood caused by the wickedness of humanity and the interference of the fallen angels in world affairs. Lamech and his sons decided to preserve their knowledge in two stone pillars, so that future generations would discover it. The Masons believe that one of these pillars was discovered by the Greek god Hermes, also known to the Greeks as Hermes Trismegistus (or Thrice Greatest) and to the ancient Egyptians as the Ibis-headed scribe of the gods Thoth -- pronounced Tehuti. The so-called "emerald tablet of Hermes" is said to contain the essence of the lost wisdom from before the days of the biblical flood.

According to occult sources, this tablet was discovered in a cave by the mystic Apollonius of Tyana, who was regarded by the early church as a rival to Jesus. The first published version of the Emerald Tablet dates from an Arabic source of the 8th century, A.D., and it was not translated into Latin in Europe until the 13th century. However, the myth of the Hermetic wisdom had a profound effect on the Gnostics who were heretical Christians in direct conflict with the early church for attempting to fuse paganism with the new Christian faith. They also claimed to possess the secret teachings of Jesus, divulged to only his inner circle of disciples. Masons claim these teachings were censored from the authorized version of the New Testament, which was approved by the Church councils, who met to decide the structure and dogma of early Christianity.

In medieval Europe, gnostic philosophy emerged in the rise of the heretical Christian sect -- the Cathars -- and the rise of the Chivalric Order of the Knights Templar. The Hermetic traditions provided the spiritual inspiration for many secret societies in the Middle Ages, and its influence can be discerned in both speculative Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism. In the Masonic tradition, it is said that Masons were first organized into a corporate body during the building of the tower of Babel. The concept of this tower was to reach up to heaven and contact God. According to Genesis 11:4-6, the fall of the Tower of Babel destroyed the common language spoken by humanity and ended the Second Golden Age, which followed the flood. The architecture of the tower was King Nimrod of Babylon, who was a Mason. According to popular belief, the Hebrews received their knowledge of Masonry from the Babylonians and introduced it to Egypt when they were taken into slavery. In Egypt, this knowledge was influenced by the Mysteries and the occult traditions of the pyramid builders, who were versed in the techniques of sacred geometry. The key to the pagan origins of Freemasonry relies on the semi-mythical story of the construction of King Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem. This building was regarded as the repository of ancient occult wisdom and symbolism by both the Freemasons and the Knights Templar.

To build the temple, Solomon imported Masons, artists and craftsman from neighboring countries. Specifically, he sent a message to the king of Tyre, asking if he could hire the services of the king's master builder, Hiram Abiff, who was killed in geometry -- who was skilled (laughs) -- who was skilled in geometry. (laughs) Solomon appointed Hiram as the chief architect and master Mason of the temple. Hiram completed the temple in seven years [the number is especially significant in the occult tradition and Freemasonry, folks]. But this achievement was overshadowed by his violent, mysterious death. Hiram was approached by three fellow Masons who demanded the secret of the master Mason's word. He refused, and was beaten to death. They buried him in a shallow grave. They mark the grave was an acacia tree. His corpse was discovered 15 days later. Solomon ordered that his body to be exhumed and be buried with a full religious ceremony and honors due a craftsman of his rank.

Early Masons historians regarded Hiram Habit as a symbolic representative of Osiris, the Egyptian god of death and rebirth. In the third degree of Freemasonry, the candidate representing Hiram Abiff is raised from the death by a special Masonic handshake known as "The grip of the lion's paw," of the lion's grip.

In both Masonic and Egyptian Mysteries, the resurrected god is buried on a hill in a tomb, marked by a tree. In Royal Arch Masonry, the candidate for initiation is informed that the sacred name of god is really Jahbulon. This name has been deciphered as a coded reference to the two major gods of the Middle Eastern fertility cults, Osiris and Baal, combined with the Hebrew tribal God, Jehovah. In Masonry, God is also signified as the Great Architect of the Universe, signifying the importance of sacred geometry and also indicating that he creates nothing, but designs and builds from that which has already been created.

The political aspirations of Freemasonry, revealed in their influence on the revolutionary movements and protosocialism of 18th- and 19th-century Europe can be traced back to the myth of the Golden Age, during the reign of Osiris and Isis, and before the flood to the Babylonians and Hebrew myths of creation. Occult tradition alleges that Hiram Abiff was secretly member of an ancient society known as the Dionysian Artificers, who first appeared about 1000 B.C. when the temple at Jerusalem was being erected. They took their name from the Greek god and possessed secret signs and passwords by which they recognized each other; were divided in chapters (or lodges) ruled by a Master and were dedicated to helping the poor. They established lodges in all the Mediterranean lands and their influence spread as far east as India. With the rise of the Roman Empire, lodges were found in Central and Western Europe and in the British Isles. The Artificers were connected with another secret society known as the Ionians. Members of this society had settled in Asia Minor and were dedicated to the spreading of civilization, especially in its Greek form, to what they regarded as the barbarian world. Allegedly, the Ionians were responsible for the famous temple of the goddess Diana at Ephesus. Architects from this society, together with the Dionysian Artificers, traveled from Tyre to work on Solomon's temple. Later, the Artificers called themselves the "Sons of Solomon" and used his magical seal -- two interlaced triangles representing the union of the male and female energies -- as their trademark. The Artificers who settled in Israel founded the Cassidens, who were a guild of craftsmen skilled in the repair of religious buildings.

[Now] this new sect was instrumental in the foundation of the mystical Jewish group called the Essenes. The Essenes became famous through the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls. In occult tradition, Jesus of Nazareth was an Essene, and there are connections between this group and the medieval Knights Templar. The Dionysian Artificers believed that the temples they built had to be reconstructed according to the principles of sacred geometry, which reflected the divine plan of God. They constructed religious buildings to represent the human body as a symbol of the universe. They also promoted the political idea of Utopia on earth, which was expressed in symbolic form. The hammer and the chisel of the Mason became the cosmic forces which shaped the spiritual destiny of mankind. The Roman architect and master builder Vitruvius, born in the first century, A.D., was influenced by the Dionysian Artificers. His theories formed the basis for the architecture of the Roman Empire, and with the rediscovery of the classical knowledge in the 16th century, also had an impact on the greatest architects of the Renaissance. Vitruvius' concept of the magical theater representing the microcosmos of the world, as a symbol of the macrocosmos of the universe, was repeated in William Shakespeare's famous phrase, "All the world's a stage, and all the men and women merely players." And in the naming of his famous theater, The Globe, it is claimed that Shakespeare was a Rosicrucian initiate who was probably familiar with these ideas. Others take it further and believe that the Shakespearian plays were really written by Sir Francis Bacon. In the Masonic tradition, Cesar Augustus is the patron of the Masons in ancient Rome, and is said to have been Grand Master of the Roman College of Architects. This society was organized into guilds with symbols based on the tools of their trade, such as the plumb line, the square, compasses, and the level. The college had initiation rituals involving the pagan myth of death and rebirth, which are familiar from the Egyptian Mysteries.

A temple built and used by the college was unearthed at Pompeii, the city destroyed by the volcanic eruption of Mount Vesuvius in 71, A.D. Among the symbols discovered in the temple were the double triangle of Solomon, the black and white tracing board first used by the Dionysian Artificers, the skull, the plum line, the pilgrim's staff and the ragged robe.

The black-and-white tracing board were later seen on the battle flag of the Knights Templars, and then again on the floor of the cathedral at Sharps, built by the Knights Templar. These symbols later emerge in medieval Masonry and also speculative Freemasonry.

The traditions of the Roman College seem to have been passed on to the Order of Comacine masters, who flourished during the reign of the emperors Constantine and Theodosius in the 4th century, A.D., when Christianity was emerging as the dominant religion of the Roman Empire. According to legend, the Order was founded by ex-members of the Roman College, who were forced to flee from the Barbarians. They set up their headquarters on the island of Comacine in Lake Como, and in 643 were placed under the patronage of the king of Lombardi, who gave the Order control over all the Masons and architects in Italy.

The Comacine Order was divided into lodges ruled by Grand Masters, wore white aprons and gloves, and recognized each other by secret signs and passwords. The Order was responsible for the Lombardi and Romanesque styles of architecture, and can be seen as the link between architects and Masons who built the pagan temples and the master builders who erected the Gothic cathedrals of Western Europe in the Christian Middle Ages. There is evidence that the Comacine Masons traveled all over Europe, and according to the historian Beadie, even reached the Anglo-Saxon England, where they built a church in Northumbria.

Although the Masons who built the medieval churches and cathedrals were nominally Christian, the proliferation of pagan symbols and images in these ancient buildings indicates many of them were still pagans at heart.

[William Cooper: And, folks, this is what I explained to you about the pyramidal structure of organization in these secret society [sic]. Those at the bottom may go to a Christian church and really believe that they are Christian, or attend other religions. But as they progress through the degrees of initiation, they are indoctrinated into the old pagan religions, and the old gods come back to them with vengeance until they reach the top. They are no longer Christian, they no longer worship Allah, or Buddha, or any of the gods or religious beliefs that they had before. They're all gone by that time, and that's the purpose. You see, those at the bottom were exposed all at once to what they would eventually learn through going up the degrees of initiation. None of them would stay long enough to get to the top. It is a process of slow, slow but sure, brainwashing, and it works very, very good.]

Pagan symbols found include Sheela na Gig. These are crude representations of the naked female form in the shape of a woman with spread eagle legs displaying their genitals. They have been identified as images of the pagan goddess of fertility, worshiped in Celtic times. Other carvings found in medieval churches depict monks and priests in sexual poses with wanton young girls, performing homosexual acts, or wearing the heads of animals. Even stranger examples of pagan Masonry can be found. Professor Gregory Webb of Cambridge University, England, in 1946, Secretary of the Royal Commission of Historical Monuments, and an authority on medieval architecture, at the end of the war was appointed by the British government to survey ancient churches in Southern England which had been damaged by the German bombing. In one of the churches he discovered that a Nazi bomb had dislodged the top of the altar, revealing the interior for the first time since the 14th century. Inside the damaged altar, Webb and his team discovered a stone image of a phallus [phallus, the phallus,in fact, of Osiris] which had been carefully concealed within the hollowed interior. At first Webb [at first]...

[audio is cut off for a few seconds]

...they thought this discovery was unique, until he began to examine other churches. He found that virtually all [virtually all, ladies and gentlemen] of the pre-Reformation churches built before the outbreak of the bubonic plague at the end of the 14th century, when church buildings ceased for a long period, had altars which hid fertility symbols, phalluses, which dedicated the Christian churches to the old pagan religion.

[William Cooper: The phallus, for the religion of Osiris, which came from the ancient religion of Babylon, were the phallus representative, the generative force -- Baal, who was also known as Nimrod. So you always learn something listening to the Hour of the Time.]

The public image of protective associations, using their powers to promote fair trade and business ethics, concealed the fact that the medieval society of Freemasons was a secret society with pagan origins. Clandestinely promoting radical political opinions (socialism), the occult initiates who were the real power behind the secret societies knew that to achieve their aim they had to use the political system, and in the 12th century they began to put their plan into operation.

[William Cooper: It is known as "The Great Plan" or "The Great work". It is what is bringing the New World Order to fruition into the world.]

The relationship between the Pope and the Grand Masters of the secret societies[, ladies and gentlemen,] was an explosive one. The Church regarded the members of the secret societies as spiritual anarchists, who were agents of Satanic conspiracy against organized religion. The Church saw them as competitors for their flock, the sheep. The Freemasons and Rosicrucians styled themselves as wolves and believed that the sheep belonged to them and were their legal and lawful prey. The Freemasons and Rosicrucians, on the other hand, also accused the Church of suppressing the true teachings of Jesus of Nazareth, and many secret societies were fervently anticlerical. They plotted the overthrow of the Catholic Church because it opposed the old pagan religions and the Manichean heresy, from which these groups drew their spiritual inspiration.

[William Cooper: Ah, if they only knew that the Catholic Church had already done it long ago, and that's why they feared the secret societies as competitors.]

At first, secret societies were supported by the Church. When the Vatican perceived the secret societies to be a political and ideological threat to the Church, the climate of suspicious tolerance began to change, culminating with King Philip of France wiping out the Order of the Knights Templar in the 14th century. In the lodges of Freemasonry, in the actual orders of the Templars, they attribute the date of the execution of Jacque DeMolay by burning at the stake to the year 1313. Other references give the year 1314.

The Council of Nicaea, convened by the emperor Constantine in the 4th century, rejected pagan beliefs [at least that's what they said] such as reincarnation, which were held by early Christians and presented Jesus as God incarnate rather than a human spiritual teacher. Our contemporary knowledge of the gospel of Mark dates back to 1958 when an American professor of theology, Dr. Morton Smith, discovered references to it in a letter by Clement, preserved in a desert monastery.

According to Smith, the inner teachings of Jesus were passed by him to his disciples during the initiation rite, which resembled those of the pagan mysteries. Smith interprets the ritual communion meal practiced by early Christians as a pagan rite descended from the mysteries of Isis and Osiris. It was this esoteric interpretation of Christianity, which was accepted by the medieval secret societies, rather than the version offered by the Church. After a brief lapse to pagan worship during the reign of Julian, the Christian religion quickly reestablished itself in Rome. And under the emperor Theodosius (378-395 A.D.) the worship of the old pagan gods was finally prohibited.

The ideological battle between the Popes and the Roman emperors they created raged for several hundred years. The point where we can discern the beginning of these secret societies influence this power struggle was in the reign of Frederick II, crowned as Holy Roman Emperor in 1215. With his death in 1250, the Holy Roman Empire collapsed. The Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, in the first lodge in Carolina in the United States received its charter from Frederick of Prussia.

For 20 years Europe was devastated by war until, in 1273, the concept of the old empire was revived with the crowning of a new Holy Roman Emperor, Count Rudolf Von Habsburg (meaning "castle of hawks") in Austria. For the next 300 years, under the patronage of the Vatican, the Habsburgs extended their empire throughout Europe based on their temporal power and the spiritual power of the Roman Catholic.

===

(end of quote)

[audio is cut off and music cuts in]

(break music: *Let's Twist Again*, performed by Chubby Checker)

Well, I just know you're all up there twisting all around the living room, aren't ya? How of many of you can still do it? Well, before we went on the air, Sugarbear, Carolyn and I were doing it. And the reason why I'm playing this music tonight is...just that I kind of take everybody back to when times were really good in this country. They're trying to convince us that times were no good during the 50's and the early 60's, and that's a lie. And those of us who lived during that period know that it was the best time in the history of this country for the common man. Everyone had work if they wanted it. The American dream was becoming realized by more people than ever before in the history of this country. And what's happening now? The American dream, just since that time, has disappeared, folks, for most young people. Unless they really strike it rich, or get into a profession that really jerks the money out of people's pockets, they have no hope of owning their own home for many, many, many years, if ever. Most people in every family now have to work, and the children are regulated...regulated to government-controlled daycare centers. They are, in fact, occupationally orphaned as you struggle just to keep food on the table, and a roof over your heads, and be able to have a little bit left over for some recreation once in a while.

(William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading Corporation)

(break music continues: *I Thank You*, performed by unknown artists)

[talking over music]: Boy, I don't know what you're doing in your living room but we're rockin' here. You ought to see Carolyn dance. Even Sugarbear can get on his two hind legs and dance. C'mon, folks, get up, give it a try. Put a little spice in your life.

...and I'm continuing with the article:

(start of quote)
==

The successful alliance between the Habsburgs and the Vatican was seriously weakened by the actions of one man, a crusading reformer who used the symbol of the rose and cross on his personal seal. He was the German monk Martin Luther.

[William Cooper: When I reveal that Martin Luther was a member of the Rosy Cross, the Order of the Rosy Cross, and that his personal seal was the rose and cross, you should see the piles of letters I got from Protestants who blindly revere this man, without knowing anything about him, chastising me for revealing to them the truth. But, folks, you can write all the letters you want, you will always get the truth on the Hour of the Time. We may make some mistakes now and then and if we do, as we have always done in the past, I will come on the air, and correct those mistakes. But we never, ever intentionally give you anything that is untrue. Remember that. Martin Luther's personal seal was the rose and the cross. And he was, in fact, a member of the Order of the Rose Cross. Martin Luther, the man who many revere, was the founder of the Protestant (or protest-ant) movement.]

The reformation, allegedly, supported by the Rosicrucians and other secret societies who opposed the Catholic Church, swept through Europe. This period of the reformation represents a key time in history, during which the relationship between the Church and the secret societies changed[...changed, folks]. With the Reformation, [you see,] the Church was faced with an enemy within, which it could not destroy without bringing down its own edifice. With the Reformation, the whole concept of organized religion in Europe was revolutionized overnight. And where there had been one church, now today there are literally tens of thousands -- all with different dogma, different interpretations -- all professing to be the only true church with the only truth and with the only claim to heaven. Ah, but if you only knew.

Many think that the secret societies were instrumental in this revolution -- I can tell you absolutely for a fact that they were. Support from the Grand Masters was offered to the reformers because the Reformation was recognized as a means to weaken the influence of the Catholic Church in European affairs. In America, sad to say, much of the Catholic hierarchy has taken on this role in modern times. The Reformation, effectively, emasculated the political power of the Church. It laid the foundation for the Puritan movement, whose members fled religious persecution in Europe to found [sic] a new nation in the Americas, based on spiritual principles drawn from Rosicrucian sources. And all of our founding fathers were members of these secret societies.

[William Cooper: And many people have also chastised me for making that claim, but it is easily proved...easily! The problem with most of you people is that you believe blindly what you are told and you never check anything. Many of you still believe that George Washington chopped down a cherry tree, and when his father asked him who did it, he told the truth. Well, that's all a lie, folks. There was no cherry tree. He never chopped one down. His father never asked him if he did, and I really don't know if he would have told the truth or not. Most politicians don't...most politicians do not.]

It also provided an atmosphere of open-mindedness which allowed the seeds of the Renaissance to flower, based on the best ideas of the pagan classical world. Although the Habsburgs would rule for another 300 hundred years until 1806, the Reformation destroyed any hope of a united Europe controlled by the Roman Catholic Church [until today]. Above everything else, the religious reforms of the 16th century marked the beginning of the period when the Church became determined to exterminate the secret societies which had weakened its power base.

[William Cooper: I'm not aware that the Vatican has changed its policy one iota from this. In fact, its determination has doubled over the past 150 years, even though today the secret societies flourish in America, with only a wink from the American Catholic Church bishops. In fact, the Jesuit Society was formed to combat this from another secret order of the Illuminati, or the Alumbrados, in Spain. The head of this group was Ignatius Loyola who was, in fact, arrested by the Inquisition. He used his influence with powerful people to gain an audience with the Pope. He went in on his knees and walked out on his two legs with a papal Bull, granting him immunity from prosecution, from the Inquisition, from any king, queen, country or law, save one, the Pope, and he was to found a new order, the Society of Jesus, now known as the Jesuits. See, the oath of the secret society, which makes up a chapter in my book -- and you will see that they are sworn to destroy the Protestant movement and Protestants, wherever they could find them.]

[repeats]: Above everything else, the religious reforms of the 16th century marked the beginning of the period when the Church became determined to exterminate the secret societies which had weakened its power base.

The secret societies, though they claimed to follow the precepts of Jesus Christ, actually provide an alternative version of spirituality to their followers. They denied the divinity of Jesus Christ, they deny that he was the son of God, or was in actuality the incarnated God upon this Earth; that he died, or that he was resurrected, or that he sits upon the right hand of the throne of God. Instead, he has become an Ascended Master -- a Teacher -- and Christ has become an office, which anyone can attain.

[William Cooper: You too, can become a Christ in the New World Order. They actually provide this alternative version of spirituality, and it is the foundation of what you know today as the New Age movement.]

They allege that the Church had deliberately subverted the teachings of Jesus and teach that there are other sources of spiritual knowledge which are as valid as Christian belief and predated it by thousands of years. In 1738, the first papal Bull to combat Freemasonry was issued by Pope Clement the XII. This Bull threatened any Catholic who became a Mason with excommunication -- at that time, an extremely[, extremely] serious punishment. In fact, nothing worse could be imagined.

In the 1870s, claims that secret societies such as the Illuminati were using Freemasonry as a cover for radicalism and revolution gave the Church fresh charges to level against the Masonic lodges. The climax of the Church's crusade to destroy the influence of Freemasonry came in the 19th century. In 1864, Pope Pius X condemned socialism and the secret societies in his *Syllabus of Errors*, which he published following an investigation of revolutionary activities in Italy. Every investigation has found that socialism emanates from the secret societies.

Twelve months after the publication of the *Syllabus*, the Pope again condemned the secret societies, specifically attacking Freemasonry as anti-Christian, Satanic and pagan in origin. In 1884, Pope Leo the XIII issued a proclamation identifying Masonry as one of the secret societies working to establish Satan's kingdom on Earth. He also claimed that Masonry was attempting to revive the manners and customs of the pagans.

[William Cooper: They have succeeded, and a visit to the Luxor hotel in Las Vegas will convince you of that. It has often been claimed that the ultimate objective of the secret societies was to infiltrate the Vatican and place their own man on the throne -- see my book for the outcome.]

Some modern critics of the Roman Catholic Church, especially those with ultra-traditionalists views, who have seen in the liberalization of the Church in the recent years proof that its hierarchy has been penetrated at the highest levels by agents of the secret societies who are working for its eventual downfall. At the celebrations in honor of Saint Francis of Assisi in 1986, which stressed the unity of all religions, the Pope participated in a multi-religious prayer for world peace. Traditionalists were horrified to see the pontiff happily share a platform with a Tibetan lama, a Hindu Swami, a Native-American medicine man, a Jewish rabbi, and a Mouri(?) high priest.

It was noted that the unity of all the world's religions and the recognition that they all derived from the same ancient ancient source as the central philosophy of the secret societies. It is the goal of the World Council of Religions. It was the message of Pope John Paul the II in Denver, Colorado, dear listeners, and he replaced the last Pope who tried [-- who tried --] to be a good Pope. He was murdered after exactly 33 days in office.

==

(end of quote)

Now, I read this from *La Traviata...La Traviata*, the December 1993 issue, I believe -- is it the December? Yeah, last December, 1993 issue -- to show you that I'm not the only insane person out here who has discovered the truth amongst all the lies. Anyone can do it -- I don't know who wrote that. I never saw that paper before. It was sent to me by a CAJI member. The author's name, I don't believe, is listed there. And even if it was, I still don't know him. Anyone who wants to look for the truth and find it *will* find it. It's not hidden, ladies and gentlemen.

In fact, today -- even though it began as a conspiracy hundreds and thousands of years ago -- today, it is all being done in the open. They believe that all of us are so stupid, actually, that they even write books about it, disclosing their whole intentions -- all of their plans, knowing that none of you will ever read those books. And if you did, you wouldn't believe it.

I said none of you, that's not really true. There's some of you out there who are learning, who are awake, who are struggling, who are fighting this battle with me, and with Carolyn, with many others, to try to save the ultimate achievement of all of mankind throughout the history of the world -- that's the Constitution, the Bill of Rights of the United States of America.

When I make a statement like that I always get letters, or people call if I open the phones and say, "How can you make that statement, Bill, when you just told us that our founding fathers were members of the secret societies?" Very simple, folks: read the writings of the founding fathers -- they will tell you themselves. This was a "great experiment" to see if man was capable of ruling himself, and if he was, this would be the culmination of the Great Work. But you will also find in their writings that they understood human nature better than any of us do, or probably ever will, for they knew...they knew that, with the keys built into the Constitution, we would give up our creator-endowed rights and trade them for benefits from the State, thus relegating ourselves back into the old -- the old position of owned property. We would become indentured to the State for accepting these privileges. But they knew, that people did then as they do today -- except for a very few people who really understand and appreciate freedom and understand the responsibilities and the consequences that go along with it -- they understood that most people spend the first 20 years of their lives struggling to become responsible and to be accepted as a man or a woman in their own right, able to be responsible, strike out on their own, build a business, sign contracts. And once they discover the responsibilities and requirements that freedom demands, they spend the rest of their life trying to crawl back into the womb searching for a daddy...a daddy to take care of them.

That's why socialism is so attractive to most people, ladies and gentlemen. It tells them they no longer have to be responsible, and in exchange for their freedoms, daddy the State will take care of them. Daddy the State will give them a job, Daddy the state will pretend to pay them if they pretend to work. Daddy the State will provide them with some sort of a hovel in which they can live, so they don't have to worry about paying the rent. Yes, Daddy will even change their diapers and give them clothes to wear. Daddy will tell them what time in the morning they can go out on the street, and what time in the evening they must be inside their hovel. Daddy will discipline them. Daddy will make sure that there's no crime to threaten them.

Oh, yes, many, many people will love the New World Order, and the new world religion, and the new world of entertainment that will be erected in place of the old Roman circus in order to keep the populace entertained and diverted -- mindless. Libraries will be filled with the new history books, and the new politically correct dogma of the the new politically correct world and the new politically correct religion. And everywhere you look, you will see the symbols of the generative force, the phallus of Osiris, the representation of the old god of Babylon -- Baal, Nimrod, Isis -- will be everywhere. You see, for Osiris is the doctrine, Isis is the Church, Horus is the great body of initiates that will rule you. They call themselves "wolves," and of course...of course, dear listeners, you are the sheep -- the legal and lawful prey of the wolves.

A nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Such people are beasts of burden and, yes, steaks on the table by choice and consent. If we didn't love you here, we would not say these things to you.

Please wake up. Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: Oh, What a Night, performed by The Dells)

Hour 35: From Babylon to Christianity (aired February 8th, 1994)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. Well, folks, I'm here, relaxed. My tonsils, my larynx, are completely laid back. And we're supposed to have a guest tonight, but so far he hasn't called. Carolyn is in studio with me, and I don't know what we're going to do because he was supposed to call at about three minutes 'til, and the phone has not rung yet. So, I don't know if we're going to have a guest or not. So, we'll go right in to a little pre-warm-up here, and see if we can just sort of wait a few minutes to find out what in the world is going on. Notice how calm, cool, and absolutely collected I am tonight? Isn't it wonderful?

(Opening music - unknown orchestral piece)

Well I don't know what happened, ladies and gentlemen, but we have no guest. So we go to plan B. You should always have a plan B, and sometimes a plan C, and D and E, and sometimes even plan F. But tonight, we only have plan B.

[Reading from *Babylon Mystery Religion*, written by Ralph Woodrow]:

The Mystery Religion of Babylon [ladies and gentlemen] has been symbolically described in the last book of the Bible as a "woman arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication." [The phone is...was...is not now. This is insanity -- absolute insanity.] "And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH" [and that's from Revelations, Chapter 17, verses 1 through 6].

When the Bible[, ladies and gentlemen,] uses symbolic language, a "woman" can often symbolize a church. The true church, for example, is likened to a bride, a chaste virgin, a woman without spot or blemish ([check Ephesians, Chapter 5, verse 27, and Revelations, Chapter 19, verses 7 and 8]). But in striking contrast to the *true* church, the woman of the text is spoken of as an unclean woman, a defiled woman, a harlot. If it is correct to apply this symbolism to a church system, [ladies and gentlemen, then] it [becomes] clear that only a defiled and *fallen* church could be meant. In big capital letters, the Bible calls her "MYSTERY BABYLON."

[Now,] when John wrote the Book of Revelation, Babylon -- as a city -- had already been destroyed and left in ruins, as the Old Testament prophets had foretold ([and you can find that in Isaiah, Chapter 13, verses 19 through 22, and Jeremiah, Chapter 51, verse 52]). But though the city of Babylon was destroyed, [folks,] religious concepts and customs that originated in Babylon continued on and were well represented in many nations of the world [William Cooper: and exist in secret right up to this very day]. [Now,] just what was the religion of ancient Babylon? How did it all begin, and what significance does it hold in modern times? How does it all tie in with what John wrote in the Book of Revelation...

[William Cooper: ...if at all? How many of you were aware that the Iraqis have been busy for many years rebuilding the city of Babylon?]

Turning the pages of time back to the period shortly after the flood, men began to migrate from the east, "and it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there" (Genesis[, Chapter 11, verse 2]). It was in this land of Shinar that the city of Babylon was built and this land became known as Babylonia [and] later as Mesopotamia.

[William Cooper: Originally, it was a part of the Syrian -- the Assyrian, the Assyrian -- nation.]

[Now here, here, ladies and gentlemen, is where] the Euphrates and Tigris rivers had built up rich deposits of earth that could produce crops in [great] abundance. But there were certain problems[, you see,] the people faced. For one thing, the land was overrun with *wild animals* which were a constant threat to the safety and peace of the inhabitants ([and you can check for reference Exodus, Chapter 23, verses 29 and 30]). Obviously anyone who could successfully provide protection from these wild beasts would receive great acclaim from the people [William Cooper: for all people in all times seek security].

It was at this point that a large, powerfully built man by the name of Nimrod[, Nimrod,] appeared on the scene. He became famous as a mighty hunter against the wild animals. [And] the Bible tells us: "And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. He was a mighty HUNTER before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord" ([Genesis, Chapter 10, verses 8 and 9]).

[Now,] apparently Nimrod's success as a mighty hunter caused him to become famous among those primitive people. He became "a mighty one" in the earth -- a famous leader in worldly affairs. [In] gaining this prestige, he devised a better means of protection. Instead of constantly fighting the wild beasts, why not organize the people into cities and surround them with walls for protection? Then, then why not organize these cities into a *kingdom*? [William Cooper: What a great idea.] Evidently this was the thinking of Nimrod, for the Bible tells us that he organized just such a kingdom. "And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Caleh, in the land of Shinar" ([Genesis, Chapter 10, verse 10]). The kingdom of Nimrod is the very first [government] mentioned in the Bible.

Whatever advances may have been made by Nimrod would have been well and good, but Nimrod[, you see,] was an ungodly ruler. The name Nimrod[, ladies and gentlemen,] comes from *marad* and means, "he rebelled."

[William Cooper: Sound familiar? Wasn't Lucifer an angel of light, with tremendous knowledge who rebelled against God, and was thrown down to the Earth to be the ruler of the material world? Well, the word Nimrod means "he rebelled."]

The expression that he was a mighty one "*before* the Lord" can carry a hostile meaning -- [you see,] the word "before" being sometimes used as meaning "against" the Lord. *The Jewish encyclopedia* says that Nimrod was "he who made all the people rebellious against God."

[William Cooper: That's taken directly out of the Jewish encyclopedia. Let me say it again for you, "he who made all the people rebellious against God."]

The noted historian Josephus wrote: "Now it was Nimrod who excited them to such an affront and contempt of God...He also gradually changed the government into tyranny, seeing no other way of turning men from the fear of God....the multitudes were very ready to follow the determination of Nimrod...and they built a tower, neither sparing any pains, nor being in any degree negligent about the work: and, by reason of the multitude of hands employed in it, it grew very high...The place wherein they built the tower is now called Babylon."

[William Cooper: And those who built it were called "The Builders." And they still exist, ladies and gentlemen, today.]

Basing his conclusions on information that has come down to us [throughout] history, legend, and [in] mythology, [a man by the name of] Alexander Hislop has written in detail of how Babylonian religion developed around traditions concerning Nimrod, his wife Semiramis, and her child Tammuz.

[William Cooper: Now, Alexander Hislop wrote this -- the results of his research -- in a book called *The Two Babylons*. And I suggest strongly that you make every attempt to get that book and read it. It will open your eyes if you have an understanding of the symbology of the esoteric religion of Mystery Babylon and the secret societies today, which I have revealed to you through the Mystery Babylon series on this radio broadcast. It is important that we understand who these people are, and what they believe. It makes no difference whatsoever whether you believe it or disbelieve it. If they hold the powerful positions of the world, if they are pulling the strings that make you dance, then whatever they believe affects you. Make no mistake about that.]

[Now,] when Nimrod died, according to the old stories, his body was cut into pieces, burned, and sent to various areas.

[William Cooper: Sound familiar? We've discussed this same story before. You see, the first religion is also the last religion, and it has been every religion in between in various aspects and various forms. It has never changed.]

His body was cut into pieces, burned, and sent to various areas. Similar practices are mentioned even in the Bible ([Judges, Chapter 19, verse 29; 1st Samuel, Chapter 11, verse 7]). [And] following his death, which was greatly mourned by the people of Babylon, his wife Semiramis claimed he was now the sun-god [S-U-N, sun-god]. Later, when she gave birth to a son, she claimed that her son, [spelled S-O-N,] Tammuz by name, was their hero Nimrod reborn.

[William Cooper: And this again has been played out throughout the mysteries, and throughout every religion throughout the history of the world. Now don't misunderstand me, ladies and gentlemen. I'm in by no means casting any slander or dispersion on any religion that any of you may be practicing. I'm making no suggestions that you should not be a part of whatever religion you belong to. I'm merely delivering a message of the truth to you all.]

The mother of Tammuz had probably heard the prophecy of the coming Messiah to be born of a woman, for this truth was known from the earliest times ([and you can check Genesis, Chapter 3, verse 15]). She claimed her son was supernaturally conceived, and that he was the promised seed, the "savior."

[William Cooper: And she gave the first recorded virgin birth to her son, who was Nimrod reborn from his wife/lover/mother. Tammuz was the child's name, and he was called the promised seed or the "savior."]

In the religion that developed, however, not only was the child worshiped, but the *mother* was worshiped also!

Much of the Babylonian worship was carried on through mysterious *symbols* -- [you see,] it was a "mystery" religion. The golden calf, for example, was a symbol of Tammuz, son of the sun-god [Nimrod].

[William Cooper: The calf, or the bull, was actually the symbol during that age of the astrological house through which the sun was moving. It was called, and still is called, Taurus the bull. Later, when the sun moved out of the house of Taurus and into the house of Capricorn, then the golden calf became the ram, or the goat, and was worshiped in the temple of Mendes, and to this day it is known as the goat of Mendes.]

[William Cooper: Now, every once in a while I slow down for you to make sure that this sinks in, that you really understand what I am telling you. For it is important, ladies and gentlemen, that we stop being deceived and led by our nose. Those who are the puppet masters rely upon us to remain puppets. It is my intention to bring you out of the toy box and into the real world.]

Since Nimrod was believed to be the sun-god or Ba'al, fire was considered as his earthly representation. [William Cooper: Fire was considered as his earthly representation.] Thus, as you shall see, [folks,] candles and ritual fires were lighted in his honor.

[William Cooper: And the priesthood was known as "the Philosophers of Fire." They had a habit of burning their enemies, and they still do that today.]

In other forms, Nimrod was symbolized by sun images, [by] fish, [by] trees, [by] pillars [or obelisks], and animals.

[William Cooper: For you see, if he was the sun-god, he was the source of all life on this Earth. He was the source of all warmth. He was the source of all energy. He was the generative force, and his symbol was the phallus, or the obelisk. One was erected by our forefathers in Washington, D.C.]

Centuries later, Paul gave you a description which perfectly fits the course that the people of Babylon followed: "When they knew God, they glorified him not as God...but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an IMAGE made like to corruptible man, and to birds and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things...they changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the CREATURE more than the CREATOR...for this cause God gave them up into vile affections" ([Romans, Chapter 1, verses 21 through 26]).

[Ladies and gentlemen,] this system of idolatry spread from Babylon to the *nations*...

[William Cooper: Do you know what "nations" translates to in the original Hebrew and Greek? It is the word we know as "gentiles." You see, the nations are the gentiles. Does that surprise you? So, the gentiles were not corrupted until the system of idolatry spread from Babylon to the nations—to the gentiles.

...for it was from this location that men were scattered over the face of the earth ([and you can find that in Genesis, Chapter 11, verse 9]). And as they went from Babylon, they took their worship of the mother and child, and the various mystery symbols with them.

[William Cooper: And the mother was known as the "Goddess of the Sea" at a later time. The sea was called the "Mare", and the goddess was called "Mary."]

Herodotus, the world traveler and historian of antiquity, witnessed the mystery religion and its rites in numerous countries and mentions how Babylon was the primeval source from which *all* systems of idolatry flowed. Bunsen says that the religious system of Egypt was derived from Asia and "the primitive empire in Babel." In his noted work[, folks,] *Nineveh and its Remains*, Layard declares that we have the united testimony of sacred and profane history that idolatry originated in the area of Babylonia -- the *most ancient* of religious systems. And all of these historians were quoted by Hislop [in his book, *The Two Babylons*] .

When Rome became a world empire, it is a known fact that she assimilated into her system the gods and religions from the various pagan countries over which she ruled. Since Babylon was the source of the paganism of these countries, we can see how the early religion of pagan Rome was but the Babylonish worship that had developed into various forms and under different names in the countries to which it had gone.

[Now,] bearing this in mind, [folks,] we notice that it was during this time -- when Rome ruled the world -- that the *true* savior, Jesus Christ, was born, lived among men, died, and rose again. He ascended into heaven, sent back the Holy Spirit, and the New Testament church was established in the earth.

[William Cooper: Now, looking at those early days of the Christian Church, all of the members were saints. They were all equal unto each other — all of them. It must have been glorious to be a part of that, and break away from the old to something that gave a promise, a promise of a better life. You see, in those days life was terrible. It was uncertain at best. No one knew when they woke up in the morning if they would live to see the nightfall. And it was that uncertain every single day. And all of a sudden, there was a promise. There was a promise.]

[You] only have to read the Book of Acts to see how much God blessed his people in those days. Multitudes[, ladies and gentlemen,] were added to the church -- the true church.

[William Cooper: It doesn't exist anywhere today except in small pockets of individuals who meet with each other in Christ's name. All of these organized religions have bastardized the teachings of Christ -- have corrupted the teachings of Jesus. And most of them are helping to lead you into slavery in the New World Order.]

[In those days,] great signs and wonders were performed as God confirmed his word with signs following. True Christianity, [ladies and gentlemen,] anointed by the Holy Spirit, swept the world like a prairie fire.

[William Cooper: Nothing could stop it; no matter how many Christians the emperor crucified, no matter how many Christians were thrown to the animals in the Roman circus, one hundred fold sprang up to take their place.]

[This movement] encircled the mountains and crossed the oceans. It made kings...tremble and tyrants [fearful]. It was said of those early Christians that they had turned the world [literally] upside down! -- so powerful was their message and spirit.

[William Cooper: Now, I'm talking about the true Christian teachings of Jesus Christ, in the way that it was followed in the early days of Christ's Church -- not Rome's church, not Baptist's church, not Lutheran's church, not Orthodox's church, but Christ's Church.]

Before too many years had passed...men began to set themselves up as "lords" over God's people and places of the Holy Spirit. Instead of conquering by spiritual means and by truth --

[William Cooper: By truth! Not too many people in the world understand what truth even means today.]

...as in the early days -- men began to substitute *their* ideas and *their* methods...

[William Cooper: ...in place of the teachings that Christ gave us. The Inquisition came from these people, not from Jesus Christ. The Crusades came from these people, not from Jesus Christ.]

Attempts to merge paganism into Christianity were being made even in the days when our New Testament was being written, [folks,] for Paul mentioned that the "*mystery* of iniquity" was already at work [...already at work], [and he] warned that there would come a "falling away" and some would "depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils" -- the counterfeit doctrines of the pagans ([2nd Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verses 3 through 7; 1st Timothy, Chapter 4, verse 2]). [And] by the time that Jude wrote the book that bears his name, it was necessary for him to exhort the people to "earnestly contend for *the* faith that was ONCE delivered unto the saints," for certain men had crept in who were attempting to substitute things that were no part of the original faith ([check Jude, Chapter 1, verses 3 and 4]).

Christianity[, folks,] came face to face with the Babylonian paganism in its various forms that had been established in the Roman Empire. The early Christians refused to have anything to do with its customs and beliefs[, and we all know what happened]. Much persecution resulted. Many[, many] Christians were falsely accused, thrown to the lions, burned at the stake, and in other ways tortured and martyred.

[William Cooper: And for their own safety, they went underground in the catacombs, and in the caves, and they formed their own secret society which was known then as the "Friendly Open Secret Society," and their symbol to mark their way was a fish.]

Then, great changes began to be made. The Emperor of Rome professed conversion to Christianity...

===

(end of quote)

He had to, for Rome...Rome would have fallen just as sure, just as sure, as a tree in the forest falls to the axe, if he had not made that move.

Don't go away, ladies and gentlemen. I'll be back right after this very short pause.

(break music: unknown orchestral piece)

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading]:

Ladies and gentlemen, the Hour of the Time is brought to you by Swiss America Trading. This is one program that we've had many applications from people in companies and corporations wanting to sponsor us. Now these people are usually in what's called the "Patriot Community" because mainstream, mainstream companies, corporations, organizations and people wouldn't touch this broadcast with a forty foot pole, I can assure you. We chose Swiss America Trading because we checked them out. We found out that they're good people—real good people. They're honest, they back up their guarantees, (and) they back up what they say. We have an agreement. If I think they didn't do somebody right, they make it right instantly, or they don't sponsor this program anymore. That's about the best guarantee that anybody on radio could ever give you. You see, I don't do anything halfway, folks. Whoever sponsored this program was going to invariably become attached to me. My name and theirs would be linked. Whether we wanted it to happen or not, they would be linked. Therefore, I had to have a sponsor that I could believe in, and that would offer our listening audience something that they needed, really needed badly. And you all need the services of Swiss America Trading to protect what you've worked all of your life to gain, against what is coming in our future.

The New World Order, the actual legal aspect of it in the law, was established a long, long time ago. The only people who don't understand that the world government is already in place are the "sheeple" of the world. So as not to precipitate an armed uprising against them, they are acclimatizing you gradually to the fact that world government exists, that when there is a conflict between the Constitution and the United Nations charter, the United Nations charter shall prevail! You're being taught these things through television, through the movies. Children are being taught in school. In a way, where everybody knows something's wrong and everybody suspects what's going on, nobody really knows except the listening audience of this broadcast.

Now, whether or not you ever purchase anything form Swiss America Trading, if you value what you hear on the Hour of the Time, you need to call them at least to thank them for sponsoring this program. If you do that, and mention my name, they'll send you several free newsletters and some other written material that you need to read. I would advise you strongly, very strongly ladies and gentlemen, to talk to them about making an investment in nonconfiscatable, nonreportable hard assets in the form of gold or silver or platinum. And I strongly suggest you do this as soon as possible, and set up a program where you can continue over the coming weeks and months, and hopefully a few more years, build up a reserve that you can use in time of great need. Call them. Do it now. 1-800-289-2646. That's 1-800-289-2646. You'll be glad. You'll be very, very glad, ladies and gentlemen, that you did.

(continuation of break music: unknown orchestral piece)

In those early days of the real Church -- the real Church, Christ's Church, who practiced exactly what he taught them -- great, great changes began to take place that have affected us right up to this very day. What a shock it must have been when Constantine professed a conversion to Christianity after stating that he'd seen the vision of a cross in the sky. And some accounts say that he didn't see it in the sky during daylight, that he saw it in a dream. And ladies and gentlemen, because he never accepted Christ during his entire life, and in fact was a pagan sun worshiper, I question whether he ever saw a cross at all. You see, because history says and records very clearly, that Constantine never accepted Christ as his savior. He never really followed the teachings of Christ. He was, in fact, a sun worshiper He practiced the Mystery Religion of Babylon. But he was, in fact, the Emperor of Rome. Rome very quickly became, ladies and gentlemen, the Catholic Church, and the Roman Emperor became the Pope. He had to do this to save the Empire.

The symbol of the Roman Empire, and the Emperor, was the double-headed eagle. It signified that he ruled over both the east and the west -- that the sun did not set on the Roman Empire. This symbol still is displayed upon the walls of the Vatican. And just recently, Russia adopted this symbol as its national symbol. It is the symbol of the 33rd degree of Freemasonry. And I could go on and on and on and on and on and on and on, but hopefully you get the point.

[continuing reading from *Babylon Mystery Religion*, written by Ralph Woodrow]:

(start of quote)
==

Imperial orders, ladies and gentlemen, went forth throughout the [Roman Empire] that persecutions should cease[...simply and quickly cease]. Bishops were [created and] given high honors. The church began to receive worldly recognition and power. But for all of this, a great[, great] price had to be paid! Many[, many] compromises were made[, ladies and gentlemen,] with paganism. Instead of the church being separate from the world, it became a part of this world system. The emperor showing favor, demanded a place of leadership in the church; for in paganism, emperors were believed to be gods. [So] from here on, wholesale mixtures of paganism into Christianity were made, especially at Rome.

===

(end of quote)

We believe that the information that you're going to receive, and have received in fact over this broadcast, will convince you that what is known today as the Roman Catholic Church is nothing less than the old Roman Empire transformed. And the old Roman pantheon of gods became the pantheon of saints. And the Christian, who began as a Saint, equal with all of his brothers and sisters, became a lowly peon once again. The title "Saint" was stripped from him, and from her. And someone began to pass a plate, and put up collection boxes, and demand that at festivals the wealth of the people be transferred into the coffers of the church.

[quoting from the book]: "[Now, I don't] doubt that there are many fine [and] sincere and devout Catholics."

In fact, I know there are. I know there are many devout, sincere, courageous, wonderful members of the Mormon Church, and the Baptist church, and the Lutheran church, and the Orthodox church, and even the Buddhist religion...and Hinduism. I've met these people all over the world. We have all, ladies and gentlemen, been deceived throughout our lives by the secular and the religious priesthood. And in many cases, they are the same. They're now engaged in a grand plan to bring about a New World Order.

The Mystery schools -- they try to keep the mysteries pure -- want to rule the world through a council of elders, with a puppet, charismatic, religious, and political leader upon the throne of the world. And the Vatican wants the Pope to sit upon the throne of the world, and rule without the council of elders. You see, they all united in the efforts to bring about world government. The only point of contention is -- who is going to rule?

And we're the odd card, the joker in the deck. For if we want to, we could decide that neither one of them will rule, and we could determine the outcome of this battle. And we could reinstitute the real Church again upon this Earth as it was when Jesus taught it. He did not teach us to war against our neighbor. He did not teach us to condemn or judge our neighbor. In fact, the commandment was "judge not lest ye shall be judged." When Jesus spoke to a crowd and someone walked away from the crowd, he did not chase them down the road and try to stuff his teachings down their throat, ladies and gentlemen. He did not do that. Neither did he build great, wealthy cathedrals built of shining glass, with great pageants on the holidays, and big-named stars to come and sing and perform in these pageants where a homeless person or a poor, unemployed man with dirty clothes would be turned away from the door. Jesus Christ would have been the first one that welcomed that person into the Church. And if you will look at the people that he habitually associated with, whose homes he slept in, who became his disciples, you will understand that those today who call themselves Christians do not even know the meaning of the word...do not even know the meaning of the word. Many, many of the ministers, pastors, who stand at our pulpits across this nation and preach the word of God on Sunday, attend the rituals of the Masonic lodge on the following Saturday and pay homage to Lucifer. How can this be? How can this be?

[quoting from book]: "[Now folks, it's not my] intention to treat lightly or ridicule anyone whose beliefs we may here disagree with."

I will be the first one to stand by your side and protect your right to worship at the altar of your choice any time anyone threatens to take that away from you, whether I agree with your method of worship, or your church, or your altar. For I believe sincerely that only by protecting your right to worship at the altar of your choice is my right to worship at the altar of my choice protected. Only by allowing you to speak what you wish to speak is my right to speak what I must speak protected. And everywhere I go, I see Christians who do not practice that at all, yet they claim to be Americans and support the Constitution and the Bill of Rights and claim to be following the teachings of Jesus Christ, and they are not. They are false Christians. And I think that someday when they go to knock on that door that they're all looking forward to passing through, they will find that it is shut and barred and locked against them.

I hope that this program tonight inspires people, regardless of their church affiliation, to forsake all the stupid dogma and silly interpretations and the fractures that have created thousands of different divisions of what is supposed to be one Church across this nation. Forsake the Babylonish doctrines and concepts and seek a return to the faith that was once delivered unto the Saints -- the real Saints, not, ladies and gentlemen, the Roman pantheon of gods.

I hope tomorrow night to be able to bring the guest who was supposed to be on tonight. He may have called later, because the phone was ringing. But once I get into something, I carry it through to the finish. I cannot start something and leave it in the middle. I think tonight's message was important. It was important to me to be able to deliver it.

This is not a religious program, folks. It's about lies and deception. It's about the truth. And the truth is very few people know the truth, or practice the truth. Most so-called Christians spend most of their life calling Jesus Christ a liar. They've so twisted his teachings, his simple teachings. They've so turned around everything that is said. They so reach out to find verses in the Bible to promote their own agenda, whatever it may be. And all through the work they steal from their neighbors, and piously attend church on Sunday. And this must stop. It must stop. All of the lies must stop. All of the deceptions must stop. All of the manipulations must stop. We must begin to use our brains, tempered with our hearts, for cold reason is cruel and intrepid. Those who believe that there is no place in this world, or within humanity, for emotion are the despots of the world. Conversely, those who believe that the heart should dictate everything are the fools of the world. Man after all, as the ancients left us the symbol of the Sphinx to remind us, is nothing but an animal with a brain. And we spend most of our time in conflict between the animal instinct and the brain; between the emotions and desires and temptations and what we know to be right; between the forces of good, and the forces of evil. Too few of us are winning these battles, ladies and gentlemen. Too few of us really care. Too few of us really understand the golden rule -- do unto others as you would have them do unto you. Too many of us are fat, and lazy, and apathetic, and ignorant, pampered, spoiled, rotten.

America must change. The change must occur in the people. The people must once again understand what is important and what is not. They must be willing to sacrifice. They must be willing to do whatever is necessary to make sure that the freedom that man has gained throughout his history, culminating in the greatest nation upon the face of this earth, does not disappear from the face of this earth in the name of some promised world Utopian government. For anything, ladies and gentlemen, that is created from a mountain of lies to sit up on top of a mountain of lies, is nothing but another mountain of lies. And as soon as the truth upon which this mountain is sitting is exposed, the entire thing will come tumbling down.

A world brought about by liars through deceit and manipulation cannot be a good thing -- will not be a good thing. And those who are behind it, who profess to be doing what's best for man, who profess to be acting with the best intentions for the future of mankind, belie that statement when it comes out of the same mouth that promotes the lies that creates the deceptions that manipulates the people into it. For if it were going to be so good, no lies would be required, no deceptions would be required, no manipulations would have to take place.

Now, all of you who are waiting for Jesus to come into His Kingdom, I tell you He is in His Kingdom now. The problems with this world lie with man, have always been with man, and will be with man no matter what he tries to create, no matter how he tries to create it. If it is built by man, it is flawed. The concept that we're going to have a perfect Utopian world government, where imperfect men are ruled by imperfect men, is ludicrous...absolutely, 100% ludicrous.

I want to thank you all for putting up with my demented ravings tonight. I'm kind of glad that our guest didn't show up, because this is something that's been burning within me for quite some time. For reference, read Alexander Hislop's *The Two*

Babylons and *Babylon Mystery Religion: Ancient and Modern* by Woodrow. Refer to the 33 tapes of our Mystery Babylon series that were aired on this broadcast over the last two years.

Good luck. Good night. And God bless you.

(Closing music: unknown orchestral piece)

Hour 36: Rose Cross College, Part I (aired February 22nd, 1994)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson]: And I'm Carolyn Nelson.

Tonight, folks, we're going to take you directly to Phoenix for tonight's metal report with Gene Miller. Good evening, Gene.

[William Cooper does a commercial for Swiss America Trading]

Now I'm going to let you on a few little secrets that you need to know [sic]. Delta. Delta, the name of the fourth letter of the Greek alphabet. In form, it is a triangle, and was considered by the ancient Egyptians a symbol of fire and also of God. And the Scottish and French systems, and also that of the Knights Templar are delta is the unspeakable name. INRI -- in effect, Jesus Nazarenus, Rex Iudaeorum, which means, "Jesus of Nazareth, King of the Jews," the inscription which was placed upon the cross of the savior. In the Philosophical Lodge, they represent fire, salt, sulfur and mercury. In the system of the Rosicrucians, they have a similar use: IGNE NATURA RENOVATUR INTERGRA, which literally transfer [sic] means, "By fire, nature is perfectly renewed." This idea is also found in the degree of Knights, Adepts of the Eagle or the Sun. Don't go away.

(Intro music: The Rose, by Bette Midler

[Reading from *A Rose Cross College*]:

(start quote here):
================================

From the *Rose Cross College*, [which is] a resume of the teachings and proceedings of the Rose Cross College during its session held in the month of October, 1916, on the Four Hundredth Anniversary of the founding of the Order. The Imperialistic Council and Venerable Order of the Magi, its instructions and the Official Degree 'Priests of Melchizadek.' The 'Knights of Chivalry and Order of the Holy Grail', edited by R. Swinburne Clymer, October and copyrighted 1917, published at Beverly Hall, Quakertown, Pennsylvania:

At the close of the June Convocation of the Rose Cross Order and Sacred College, it became evident that a Convocation of the Sacred College and Order of the Magi would be necessary in October in order to continue the work and commemorate the foundation of the Rose Cross Order, dating from the year 1516.

On the second day of June, special letters of invitation were mailed to all members privileged to be present at the October Convocation, and arrangements started so that not only might lectures be given every day during the entire month of October while the College was in session, but that Ancient Degrees "Sons of Osiris" might be conferred as they had been during the month of June upon the delegates then present.

Information had been received at headquarters from different sources that men, without any authority whatever, were using the name of the Magi; men who were not, and never had been, on the rolls of the Order. Acting upon this information it was considered best that special effort should be made to convene the Order during the Sacred College session and when convened the official degree "Priests of Melchizadek" should be conferred upon all who were eligible.

During July it became evident that if the work, in several large cities, were to go forward, leaders should be officially ordained. With this in view, the following notices were mailed to the
members [of] the Royal Fraternity Association, Incorporated.

[Headquarters, August 2nd, 1916.]

My Dear Brother,

In accordance with the power vested in me as President of the Royal Fraternity Association, Inc., and at the request of the Order of the Illuminati, Degree "Knights of the Rose Cross," I herewith invite you to be present at a special sessions of the Association to begin October 1st and end October 30th, 1916.

At this special session of the Association, a convening of the Sacred Rose Cross College shall be called, and besides the regular work of the College when in session, the special work of ordaining two members of the Fraternity, namely, Mr. Charles C. Brown, Buffalo, N.Y., and Mr. A. W. Witt, Kansas City, Mo., in accordance with the provision in the By-Laws of the Corporation, to wit:

"This Incorporation shall have the power to call a Convocation at any time, and when so convened, shall have the power to select teachers, and to ordain such teachers to the ministry, as shall in their opinion, be fitted for the position. And such ordained men shall have the power and the right, to officiate at weddings and at funerals, and possess all such other powers as ministers of God usually possess."

In accordance with the laws, made and provided for in our Corporation, we issue this invitation that you may be present.

God be with you.

Fraternally yours,
(Signed) R. Swinburne Clymer, President.

All arrangements having been completed during the months of July, August and September, the delegates began arriving on the last day of September, and on the first day of October nearly all had arrived who were to be present during the first session.

On October the second, the Sacred College was called to order and lectures being given in the forenoon, afternoon and evening of each day, by those who had prepared papers.

Before the morning lecture a private session was held, presided over by Charles C. Brown of the Buffalo College, and conducted in the manner of the private classes at College in Buffalo, N.Y.

On the evening of October 11th, all the delegates repaired to the 'Grove of Osiris' where the three degrees "Ancient Mysteries of Osiris" were conferred upon those delegates not previously initiated. The music, especially prepared for the entire ritual, being furnished by Miss Daisy T. Grove of Buffalo, N.Y.

After these ceremonies all repaired to the Hall where a dinner was served to all.

On the night of the twelfth of October, the delegates met in the Rose Cross Chapel, and after the Imperialistic Council and Venerable Order of the Magi had opened in due form and finished its official business, the official degree "Priests of Melchizadek" was conferred upon all those present.

Following the conferring of this degree, the Council closed, and a special official session of the Royal Fraternity Association, Incorporated, was called to order.

After the opening of the business session of the Association, the official letter, mailed to members, was read by the acting Secretary, Miss Vera H. Barr, and approved by officers and members present. It was then moved and seconded that Mr. A. W. Witt of Kansas City, Mo., should be ordained to the Ministry, in harmony with the Corporate powers.

Mr. Witt was called upon to make his confession of faith and allegiance to the Church of Illumination, and to read the thesis prepared for that purpose. The ordination in due form followed.

After the ordination of Mr. Witt, the following resolutions, passed by the officers of the Corporation in special session on March 10th, 1916, were officially approved by all members present:

"First. Because certain people without authority from this Corporation, or from the true Rose Cross Order long established in America, [(x)] have started organizations, calling themselves Rosicrucian, but without any Rosicrucian teachings and directly in conflict with Rosicrucian laws and usages, it has become urgent that the Royal Fraternity Association shall issue a certificate of membership, good for one year, to every student who enrolls with any one, or other, of such Orders or Fraternities.

"The fee for such membership certificate shall be twenty-five cents, to cover cost of issue and clerk hire.

"At the expiration of one year the holder thereof shall make application for a new certificate. All such certificates shall be on record in the office of the President of the Corporation.

"Any student, expelled from the Order, makes void his certificate, unless re-instated.

"Any member of anybody in fraternal relation with the Royal Fraternity Association, may (on the payment of a fee of twenty-five cents) have a certificate issued to him, recognized by the fraternities affiliated with this corporation.

"These rules are to go into effect immediately."

It is regrettable that such rules and regulations are necessary. Not less than six different associations have sprung in existence, calling themselves Rosicrucian, without a shred of Rosicrucian teachings, and three other associations, calling themselves Magi or Melchizadek, without any authority of any Magi, and all of them years *after* the institution of the legitimate bodies. Furthermore, when six members of the Black Brotherhoods have enrolled in the true Fraternities within a year, to gain secrets to be used by the Black Brotherhoods, we realize the importance of *strict* rules. For this reason the Royal Fraternity Association, as a protecting body, became a necessity.

Following the session of the Imperialistic Council of the Magi and the session of the Royal Fraternity Association, a midnight dinner, the October "Feast of the Gods," was partaken of by those present.

On the night of October 13th, after the opening of the official session of the Corporation, the following resolution, voiced by the Chairman, and seconded by Rev. A. W. Witt, was passed:

"Under the Royal Fraternity Association, during the Convocation of the Sacred College, that the order of the Knighthood, known as 'Knights of Chivalry, Order of the Holy Grail' be reinstituted. That at this meeting on Sir Knight should be created by the Grand Sir Knight, and that this Sir Knight should select his Lady for the coming year, and that during the year following this Sir Knight should select men either within or without the Order; that at the next June Convocation of the Sacred College such men, selected by him, and not more than nine, attend the Sacred College Convocation and be created Knights, those in turn to select their ladies, wither from within or without the Order, but from within if possible. Only men of the highest standing to be selected; men of the highest moral character, men chivalric towards womanhood. Each man must study, and be familiar with, the 'labors of Chivalry' legends of the Holy Grail, or Holy Grail, and the Golden Fleece.

"After the first year that a certain number of men, worthy of the honor, be selected, also ladies to the same number, the total of men Knights not be to exceed one hundred and ninety-nine during the first seven years.

"That the first one to be selected and created a Sir Knight be August Rhu [William Cooper: spelled R-H-U], M.D., of Marion, Ohio, because of high attainments in his profession and the favorable aspects of the Heavens to his nativity, and of the Prophecy made by those *who know*.

"Biography: August Rhu, [(Roux)] Marion Ohio. Specialty, Surgery and Gynecology. Born in Seneca County, Ohio. Graduated from Western Reserve University, Medical Department, Cleveland, Ohio, 1885. Fellow American College of Surgeons, 1914. Yearly Special Course in Surgery and Medicine since 1885. [He's also an] Author."

Immediately upon the passing of these articles, Dr. Rhu was created a Sir Knight, and selected as his Lady in waiting for the year, M. Alice Reese, of Kansas City, Mo., who was then knighted as a lady.

R. Swinburne Clymer as Grand Sir Knight was ordered to prepare Rules and Regulations for the Sir Knights after Ancient usages.

On the fifteenth day of October, the first session of the Sacred College came to a close and the delegates returned to their homes. The officers remained for the second session.

The second session of the Sacred College was called to order on the sixteenth of October, at which time the delegates had arrived for the second session. Lectures at once began and continued the rest of the month.

On the evening of the seventeenth of October, those present repaired to the 'Grove of Osiris' and had conferred upon them the "Ancient Degrees of Osiris" in like manner as that conferred upon the delegates of the first session.

The midnight dinner, "Feast of the Gods," followed the conferring of the degrees, followed by the usual social session.

On the night of the eighteenth of October, the delegates and officers repaired to the Rose Cross Temple, and after the Imperialistic Council of the Magi had come to order, the Ancient Degree 'Priests of Melchizadek' was conferred upon them.

After closing the Temple in due form, and official session of the Royal Fraternity Association, Incorporated, was called to order. Charles C. Brown of Buffalo, N. Y., was brought before the session and requested to make his confession of faith and allegiance to the Church of Illumination and read his thesis. He was then ordained to the ministry in due form.

After Mr. Brown had been ordained and the business of the Corporation brought to a close, a dinner was served to those present.

Lectures continued thrice daily, which a special session each forenoon led by Rev. C. C. Brown, until the night of October 24th, when word was received that Joseph A. Walter 32 degree of the Buffalo, N. Y., Consistory A. A. Scottish Rite, a Brother of the Order "Fraternity Sons of Osiris," would arrive that day.

On his arrival the Imperialistic Council and Venerable Order of the Magi convened and Ancient Degree "Priest of Melchizadek" was conferred upon Mr. Walter, followed by the official dinner in his honor.

Of the lectures give during the month of October, only a limited number can be given in this book.

The dedication service to the used in all ceremonies of ordination to the ministry in the Church of Illumination, was prepared by the writer some years ago, and symbolic of the Path taken by the Neophyte desiring to reach Illumination.

The article concerning the Magi and the work on the Order of Knighthood, with exceptions as noted, are from the same pen.

With the exception of "The Church of Illumination" the thesis prepared by Rev. Charles C. Brown, no other lectures were given by him as he conducted the private classes during the time of the Convocation.

"Our Work" as prepared by Rev. A. W. Witt as his thesis for ordination. The "All Seeing Eye" is by the same writer.

The lecture "Origin of Symbolism" and "Eugenics as taught by the "Sacred College" are by Grace Kincaid Morey, a graduate of Oberlin College, Secretary of the Royal Fraternity Association, Incorporated.

"The All Seeing Eye" is by Wayne E. Cake, who has given the subject consideration from the standpoint of a Mason.

"Eugenics" a lecture by Clara Witt, the acting Secretary of the Rose Cross College of Kansas City, Mo., a writer on Eugenics and the Sacredness of Motherhood in the various Masonic magazines of the middle West.

"Obedience," a lecture by M. Alice Reese, who was knighted as Lady to August Rhu, before mentioned.

"The Christ Birth" is a lecture delivered by Vera H. Barr on the teachers of the Kansas City College and assistant to Rev. A. W. Witt.

"The Power of Thought" by Mrs. John W. Cook, should have careful consideration by all students as we recognize that thought is the base of all action

These are by very few of the many lectures delivered during the sessions of the Sacred College and are given because they are fundamental and show the practical scope of the Great Work.

The next Convocation of the Sacred College is called for May 15th, 1917, to be held in three sessions.

Besides the regular lecture course, all the Ancient Degrees will be conferred and in addition the Temple of Philition Degrees.

Fraternally given,

R. Swinburne Clymer.

"Beverly Hall," Nov. 25, 1916.

=================================
(end quote here)

Ladies and gentlemen, what you're going to hear tonight is going to be just the beginning of the revelation that those who believe in a master race, those who believe in the theory of white supremacy, those who believe that the Anglo-Aryan race, or the true Israelites, will discover that they have been conned. They have been scammed and they are part of an attempt to destroy the United States of America and bring the world, once again, under the rule of Great Britain. So you had better pay attention.

The doctrine...the doctrine of Christian identity, ladies and gentlemen, and of the British Israelite stem directly from the mysteries. It is one of the biggest scams that have ever been put across to the American people and all you who are taking part in it. All you who are taking part in it are, for all intents and purposes, calling Jesus Christ a liar. You are also helping in a great plan to destroy this great nation and bring about a one-world totalitarian socialist government upon the face of this earth. And if you listen carefully and take notes, and if you go to the sources that we give you, you will discover this on your own.

And if you study your own history if you are of Aryan or Anglo descent, you will discover there is no Hebrew root in your language. You will discover that your ancestors were primitive, fierce, terrible tribesmen, who indulged in human sacrifice and worshiped the sun in temples such as Stonehenge. And if you're smart...if you're smart you will join with all those people in the world who want freedom, irregardless [sic] of their race, color or creed. You will stop buying in to the Hegelian dialect of divide and conquer, in which they separate us, feed us lies and send us off to kill each other while they place the chains about our ankles.

Don't go away, ladies and gentlemen. I'll be right back after this very short pause.

(break music: partial audio - live recording of a female speaking)

Well, if you think that's not important or has any bearing on what you're hearing, ladies and gentlemen, continue to listen. Take the doctrine out of your head that you don't want to hear the facts, because you already know what you believe. Take the pin labeled, "Archie Bunker," off of the front of your shirt and throw it in the trash can, and pay attention and get smart and wise up. Stop being sheeple.

The Order of the Holy Grail.

[Continuing from *A Rose Cross College*]:

(start quote here):
=================================

Few people are acquainted with the fact that the flower of manhood in France and England belong to knighthood founded ages ago, their object being the recognition of, and the homage due, womanhood. These Orders bear the names of "Knights of the Garter," in England, whose insignia is the Garter, and "Knights of France," represented by the *Fleur-de-lis*.

Both these Orders were founded [ladies and gentlemen] by men belonging to an older and nobler Order, "Knights of the Holy Grail," who took advantage of a trivial circumstance to establish these Orders for the protection of womanhood. Though the Knights were in search of the Holy Grail, (their own soul) they were ever ready to fight for their country, for womanhood, and the sacred Mysteries. Other Orders, dating back many periods of time, under different names and emblems, entertained the same high-minded, chivalric motives.

The motto of the "Knights of the Garter," "*Honi soi qui mal y pense,*" translated reads, "Evil to him who evil thinks." This phrase fell from the lips of Edward III, as he pinned the garter (guard-her) to his arm. To the initiated, this motto takes on a deeper meaning. In its most exalted purity, it was used by Knights centuries before the Christian Era.

The garter is a feminine emblem, supposedly unseen, unless by accident. A mishap to a noted Countess caused the garter to become the insignia of one of the great Orders in history. The greatest movements of an age often appear accidental. The *Fleur-de-lis* is also an emblem of woman, and most of the symbols of the present, and earlier ages, are characteristic of the "eternal feminine."

Centuries before Jesus walked the earth, members of sacred and honorable Orders held the lignum sacred. In time the lignum worship became degraded, not by the members of these Orders, but by the people who came to understand something of the outer mysteries, and degraded them. The faith of both Christian and Catholic devotees is symbolized by emblems of sex. The Christian cross indicates the male, and the heart, that of the opposite sex. Both cross and heart are creative, or Phallic, emblems.

There is nothing greater or higher in the Universe of God than creative power. The power that can create can also recreate and regenerate. If we honor the Creator, why not the created, creation?

All the wisdom-philosophy underlying the Knights of the different Orders, and the mythologies, was based upon creative power.

Probably the most beautiful and purest of mythological stores, is that of Eros and Psyche, the story of the Soul and its earth career. As all Sir Knights are expected to read mythology, it is not necessary to give details, but simply call attention to the esoteric meaning of this supposed myth.

Aphrodite, (Venus), they fairest queen in the Greek Heaven of the Immortal Gods, was subject to pride and jealousy, and demanded homage because of her sex and beauty.

Psyche, (the Soul) untainted by sin, was possessed of a beauty far more attractive and compelling than the mere physical beauty of Aphrodite. The inference is plain. They were rivals.

In her innocence, Psyche worshipped Artemis, (purity) the deity of virgins. She had no desire to attend the festivals of Aphrodite, the goddess of love and beauty, because she knew not of love and beauty. This gave offence, not only to the priestess, but to her parents as well.

The parents, called by us temptation, which is the beginning of all knowledge, induced her to appear before the goddess in all her purity and innocence. The worshippers fell down before her. Such obeisance to another beauty roused the anger and jealousy of Aphrodite, who vowed vengeance on the radiant Psyche. Not having sinned, only listened to temptation, Psyche was really not subject to punishment. The Soul that listens to the voice of the flesh, is not necessarily punished for that which follows but, because of passive resistance, it permits itself further temptation.

Aphrodite, symbol of earth-mother and procreation, resented the adulation bestowed upon innocence. If the worship of men turned from the priestess of love and passion to that which was chaste and immaculate, how could she people the earth and there-by obtain new worshippers.

Brooding over this condition, she called her son Eros, (Cupid), the God of Love, that beautiful emotion which enters into the heart of all created things, and bade him seek Psyche and arouse in her the desire of love and passion. She commanded him to keep himself inviolate, not taking into consideration the great law of the universe which demands a just return for all things given or received. Eros, God of Love, the Law of Love itself, retired to do his mother's bidding.

Meanwhile, Psyche was lamenting the fate of her loneliness. The maidens about here were being taken in marriage, which she, the fairest, was left uncourted. Like the soul that listens to temptation, she had become an inhabitant of the realm of unrest and longing. No longer single-minded in her worship of Artemis, she was not yet possessed with the desire of love and passion, that state of feeling that would transform the worship of the gods into a longing to possess her. Eros was commissioned to bring this about.

The temptations not resisted in the life of the soul, bring about the unhappiness to which it is subjected. But, at the same time, it is the fate of temptation to bequeath knowledge to the soul. Obedience to the tempter results in wrong-doing and sorrow, but it opens the way to wisdom and light.

Before the edict of Aphrodite could be carried out, she decreed that Psyche should leave the abode of the gods. When the soul, in its untried purity, listens to temptation, it closes the doors of heaven against itself and must then prepare for its journey earthward. Death is its portion or, as Psyche was told, she would espouse a monster.

When the soul first comes within the influence of the earth-life, it is not conscious of the restrictions of matter, nor the laws that confine it there. Psyche awoke to a new existence. To her surprise she found herself surrounded by a realm of beauty, with the promised monster nowhere in sight. But her happiness, her content was of a passive nature, for though banished from the heaven of innocence, she was not awakened to the power and thralldom of passion. Not having actually sinned she was not in possession of the knowledge of self. She heard the call of love, but saw no form. In answer to her question, Eros answered that it was Love, her husband.

The perplexed Psyche could not be satisfied with mere assurances of love. The insistent call of the imprisoned soul of knowledge, though all the senses, demanded recognition. She must *see love*. Love without passion does not satisfy mankind. It is a state of feeling, undemonstrated. The urge in man must know, see, feel and possess.

Eros informed Psyche that, because of an unalterable decree, she would never behold his face. Only in darkness could he come to her, only in secrecy could she know his embrace.

To accept love as it is offered, to live surrounded by love, with thoughts unmixed with doubt or suspicion, would life the soul to the heaven of happiness and immortality. Man, in his attempt to dissect and analyze, opens the way of grief and pain, worry and fear, doubt and misfortune.

As darkness falls, or as the soul sinks deeper into the realm of matter, it feels the presence of unseen shapes about it. Fear contends with Love, which passion awaits nearby. But Eros, Love, makes himself heard through the veil of flesh, and whispers:

"Fear not, though the darkness of night surround thee, (flesh covering the soul), I am with thee. My love shall sustain and protect thee. No matter where thou goest, to heaven or hell, thou art mine, my beloved, as I am thine, for I am Love, the delight of the world, the giver of life."

With love in the soul there is nothing to fear. When the soul is supported by love, evil is powerless. Love not only gives life, not only bequeaths youth, health and strength, but moulds and perfects mankind.

As Psyche received Eros, Love, a thrill of joy passed through her. She opened her arms to the tender form of the lovely youth, and cried: "Who art thou that takest pity on one doomed to be a sacrifice to the most terrible monster of the demons of hell?"

Eros answered: "Fear not the monster of whom the oracle spoke. I am thy husband. I am he before whom both gods and fiends have reason to tremble."

Love, supreme, is the husband of the Soul. It may lead its spouse to the innermost shrine of heaven; its shadow, lust, may lead to the lowest round of hell. So often mistaken for love, lust roams the earth, seducing, betraying, destroying womanhood. This unspeakable evil was the demon, the dragon, the monster for which the Knights of the Grail were banded together to slay.

Psyche, still fearful, replies: "Why, it thou art death, that fearful ruler of the land of shades, whom even the mighty Zeus dreads, why comest thou in so pleasing a disguise? Thy voice is music, thy breath the perfume of roses, and the touch of thy lips enraptures me. What shall I call thee?"

The answer of Eros, "Call me Love," is a light set in the midst of darkness. Love diddipates the blackness and unreality of death, disintegrates carnal, sensual desires. The love-encircled soul is able to resist destroying passions. It slays the dragon in its sacrifice to gain that which is real. Interpreted in another way, Death, in the pleasing disguise of reward and release, kisses the lips of the weary, bids the Soul fear not, and liberates it from the thralldom of earth.

Love presides at birth, for through it the Soul descends to earth and its consequent experiences and lessons. Love presides at death, for through it the Soul ascends to freedom, peace, joy.

"O Love and Death, O Death and Love,
How wondrous kin ye are!
The Planet Venus thus at once
Is evening and morning star.

"O Love and Death, O Death and Love,
Life ended, Life begun.
The sun may rise, the sun may set,
'Tis still the self-same sun.

"Life's problem here at last is solved.
Step in: the door's ajar.
"O Love and Death, O Death and Love,
How wondrous kin ye are."

Psyche and Eros lived happily together, even tho the strangeness of life caused her momentary fear. The Soul, surrounded by the darkness, the unreality of earth, seems bound to question the promises of Love. Still, unless haunted by the phantoms of doubt and suspicion, the Soul retains a general state of peace and happiness.

But as time passed, the variety and newness of love waned. Doubt and suspicion became easy to entertain. Eros granted Psyche entire freedom in the selection of her guests, stipulating only that he be not questioned. The generosity and goodness of Eros roused the phantoms to a more spirited action. They urged her to insist upon knowing whom her husband really was. Surrounded by secrecy, how did she know that he was wholly hers. Could she depend upon him to supply her every need? With these questions and inferences, they opened the door to the most deadly of the phantom sisterhood, jealousy.

The carnal mind, insisting upon proofs that can be seen and felt, refuses "unseen verities." Mind, immersed in materiality, prefers a chaos of fact and objectivity, to a cosmos of harmony and beauty.

Eros, noting the perplexity, uncertainty, and unrest of Psyche following the visits of the fiends disguised as friends, warned her. "I beseech thee to be on thy guard, not only for the sake of our happiness, but because of the child, Immortality, thou shall bear me. If thy guests importune, torment and worry thee to discover my identity, and thou succumb, I shall leave thee. It is beyond my power to oppose the will of the gods."

Psyche replied that with him near, happiness enveloped her; his touch filled her with aspiration and trust, his voice, as wings of faith, lifted her to the realms of peace and security. But often she felt alone, and the group of sisters, tho ugly, entertained her.

It came about that inquisitiveness and fear were added to the brood that daily haunted the heart Psyche. Surrounded by their influence, Eros has helpless. Tho possessed of the power of the gods, Love cannot dwell in the heart of suspicion.

At last, unable to resist the combined influence of the demons, Psyche was persuaded to take her lamp, steal quietly into the chamber of Eros and gaze upon the face of her beloved. As it lay revealed, a drop of oil caused him to awaken.

At the instant of revelation, beholding a being of wondrous youth and beauty, she knew her fears, doubts and suspicions to be groundless. At the moment of realization that she had possessed all that heart and life could desire, because of a broken law, it was taken from her. The fiend of disobedience had completed her undoing.

"Psyche, Psyche, thou hast betrayed me. Now must I leave thee. Alone shalt thou suffer from the intrigues of thine enemies."

Eros and Psyche parted. Love and Soul were divided. In other words, Soul because of questionings, unbeliefs, doubts, unrest, severed itself from the heaven of faith, peace and happiness. This is the story, (and the reason) of the pilgrimage of the Soul on the earth-plane. How often is this story repeated in the homes of thousands today. Faith, security, happiness, bartered for doubts, suspicions, jealousies.

Psyche, adrift, despairing, was bereft of all things but hope. Having discovered the destructive power of evil thought she turned about to win back the love, the heaven, she had forfeited.

To human justice, it would seem that now Aphrodite, (Divine Law), would relent, having witnessed the undoing of Psyche. Not so. The pain and suffering and longing of Psyche could in no wise mitigate her punishment. "Thou shalt *by no means* come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing." To have reinstated Psyche among the gods would presuppose a power greater than Law which could nullify, or soften, its own edicts. Law is not annulled when all is lost through disobedience. Through pain and travail does one gradually win back their lost estate.

Psyche called upon all the gods to aid her in recovering Love. Her prayers and supplications failed to reach that high heaven, for a broken law becomes an impenetrable wall between an entreaty and its fulfillment.

Hera, wife of Zeus, Queen of Heaven, and knowing all things; that goddess who dwelt near earth and presided over married life, pitied Psyche, saying: "Would that I could present thy petition unto Zeus, mighty ruler of all men. That cannot be, for the word of Aphrodite is powerful, and her decrees inviolable. Thou hast brought about this, thy fate. Endure the trials that shall come upon thee. Believe thou shalt dwell again in heaven. Work out thine own salvation."

Psyche, whose one desire was to recover the delight and happiness of the past endured the trials, accepted the punishments, passed the tests imposed upon her. As the reality of the statement became apparent to her, that "To the Soul without love, all is empty and hopeless," she turned, as to a friend, to the god of death, that monster whom she had most dreaded, and begged him to take her to the realm of Hades. The performance of that journey was the extreme penance for disobedience. In the willingness to suffer death; in the willingness to be purged of all sin, she brought about her release. She had paid the uttermost farthing.

Hearing of the voluntary journey of Psyche that she might regain Love, Eros flew to her assistance, liberating her from the Stygian slumber, awaking her to life, and love, and youth.

"Ah Psyche, thou almost perished to atone for my fault. Knowest thou not that only the gods can pass and repass the River Styx? To them it is a fountain of youth, but if mortals drink of it, it binds them to the wheel of birth and death. The gods recognize they expiation and bid thee drink of this cup of Immortality."

Had Psyche reproached Eros for her unhappiness; had she refused to place the cause of her sin and suffering upon herself; had she given up the search for lost Love, the usual fate of mankind would have been hers. Unhappiness, poverty, worry, sickness, stagnation, death are the result of ceasing to search, to struggle, to conquer.

The Soul forfeits Love and Immortality though disobedience. It achieves Love and Immortality though faith and trust and loyalty.

"Death is the problem of life, but Love is its solution."

The search of the incarnate Soul for Immortality through the instrumentality of Love is typified in the search of Knights for the Golden Fleece, of the Holy Grail.

The legend of Eros and Psyche may be interpreted as the Soul in search of love and immortality enduring anguish and suffering caused by the sins of fear, doubt, suspicion and disobedience. Other legends, as unfolded in this series, will outline and reveal those inner meanings, the significations of which are of importance to the students of knighthood and chivalry.

=================================

(end quote here)

This branch of the Illuminati, which originates in the Anglo-Aryan race. In the myths, ladies and gentlemen, surrounding King Arthur and the Round Table and of those Knights of the Holy Grail who were the forerunners of the Order of the Garter and other knighthoods, and in particular of the group known as the Round Table. One particularly, is worth of interpretation, demonstrating as is does the use and abuse of power. And in the second hour tonight, we will tell you the story of Merlin. The story, ladies and gentlemen, of Merlin. And we continue of our revelation where the doctrine of Christian identity British Israelites, the master race, the people who want to rule everybody else. For in the all of the lodges, there is a prime, prime rule. The Anglo-Aryan race is supreme, and you will find no one of color in the Lodge.

Ladies and gentlemen, this scenario has been played throughout the history of man. It is never changed; there is always someone who believes that they are the master race. That they're the only ones fit to rule, and they intend to enslave everyone else -- even of their own race, for their motto is: If you are not one of us, you are nothing.

Ladies and gentlemen, in the material passed out by James "Bo" Gritz -- "Grits" here, we call him "Bobo Grits" -- Lieutenant Colonel James "Bo" Gritz, in his spiked training advertisement literature, in his spiked video, you will see that spiked is spelled -- and I left it up to many of you to learn what it is on your own; some of you did, most of you did not -- S-P-(penis of Osiris)-K-E. S-P-(obelisk)-K-E. S-P-(phallus)-K-E. S-P-(stupid sheeple)-K-E. You had better wake up out there, and you had better do it really quick.

I'll be back, folks, 9 P.M. Pacific, 10 Mountain, 11 Central, and midnight Eastern Standard Time. Don't miss it, and if you do, tape it, and if you can't tape it, order the tapes from us.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: The Rose, by unknown artist)

Hour 37: Rose Cross College, Part II (aired February 23rd, 1994)

[William Cooper]: You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson]: (faint) And I'm Carolyn Nelson...(louder) and I'm Carolyn Nelson.

[William Cooper]: And we'll get it together sooner or later here, folks. Well, we were supposed to have a metal report from Gene Miller, but he hasn't called, so we're going to get right into the program, and I'll guess he'll have to do it in this hour tomorrow night.

Right off the bat I want to read a letter here from a listener named John, who sent the reply from the office of Arlen Specter, United States Senator for Pennsylvania:

"Dear Mr. John:

Thank you for contacting my office regarding your request for Public Law 87-297. In an effort to be helpful as possible, I have *contacted the Senate document room who informs me that Public Law 87-297 is currently out of stock with no authority to reprint.*

Again, thank you for contacting me. Please let me know if I can be of further assistance on this or any other matter of concern.

Sincerely,

Arlen Specter"

And John enclosed a little note at the bottom:

"Dear Bill,

This is the reply I received from the Specter staff to my request for Public Law 87-297 and State Department Paper 7277. I called Washington and told them at 87-297 can be found on page 652, volume 9 of title 22, United States Code, 1998 edition. I thank you for providing this information.

I went on to inform the Specter staff that, as a citizen, I am entitled to be allowed to learn the law and requested that they make a photocopy of the page specified and to send that photocopy of 87-297 to my location. I have received a copy of the booklet State Department Paper 7277 from the John Burkes Society. It is exactly what you said it was: a written plan to disarm America. You have my permission to quote these letters.

God bless you,

John"

So folks, don't let them get away with it. You see, since we ran the treason series, they have been telling you that the Public Laws are out of print and no longer available and that is a blatant lie. Not only are they in print and available to all

Senators and Congressmen in Washington, D.C., the Justice Department, the President of the United States, the Library of Congress and every library in this country [sic]. So don't let these scumbag creep-o treasonous traitors get away with it. Call them on it, just like John did, and make sure that you force their hand every single time; otherwise, they will ride right over you.

In the earlier hour of the Hour of the Time, we began a new series on the Rose Cross College and I quoted, verbatim, from a book, entitled *A Rose Cross College:*, edited by R. Swinburne Clymer, copyrighted 1917, *A Resume of the Teachings and Proceedings of the Rose Cross College During its Session Held in the Month of October, 1916, on the Four Hundredth Anniversary of the Founding of the Order. The Imperialistic Council and Venerable Order of the Magi, its instructions and the Official Degree 'Priests of Melchizadek.' The 'Knights of Chivalry and Order of the Holy Grail.'* So folks, if you missed that hour, make sure that you order the tape. For non-CAJI members, tapes are eight dollars postpaid; for CAJI members, they're six dollars postpaid. You may order tapes by sending your money to William Cooper, P.O. Box 1420, Show Low (spelled S-H-O-W L-O-W), Arizona, 85901. That's P.O. Box 1420, Show Low, Arizona, 85901.

In the beginning of this book, it described the initiation (laughs) in the Grove of Osiris and, uh, many other things, ladies and gentlemen, that you need to know. The ancient degrees of Osiris were conferred upon the delegates during that period of time in 1916. And, you know, I put out some hints for you people to be examining the Gritz SPIKE training tape, that there was symbolism there. Some of you did, most of you, as usual, stayed on your butts and didn't do anything. Many of you have been sucked in by Mr. Trojan Horse himself, Lt. Col. James ["Bobo"] Gritz. If you look real closely at his SPIKE training literature and his SPIKE training video, you will see that SPIKE is spelled S-P-(Obelisk)-K-E. S-P-(Obelisk)-K-E. Now, for those of you who don't know what that means: S-P-(Penis of Osiris)-K-E. He's playing you for a fool and again, just like all the others, he is laughing at you. A day-and-a-half SPIKE training, (sarcasm:) uh-huh. And he teaches you how to fight with a double-edged blade and tells you that you are now a member of Delta Force.

Let me read to you from a dictionary of Freemasonry exactly what "delta" means. And during a later program, ladies and gentlemen, we will play a tape, a briefing tape, for high-ranking officers in the United States Army on the First Earth Battalion which describes, again, what task force Delta is really all about. "Delta, the name of the fourth letter of the Greek alphabet. In form, it is a triangle, and was considered by the ancient Egyptians a symbol of fire and also of God. And the Scottish and French systems, and also that of the Knights Templar are delta is the unspeakable name."

And we go back a little farther, ladies and gentlemen: "INRI -- in effect, *Jesus Nazarenus, Rex Iudaeorum*, which means, "Jesus of Nazareth, King of the Jews," the inscription, which was placed upon the cross of the savior. In the philosophical lodge, they represent fire, salt, sulfur and mercury. In the system of the Rosicrucians, they have a similar use: *IGNE NATURA RENOVATUR INTERGRA*, meaning literally, "By fire, nature is perfectly renewed." This idea is also found in the degree of Knights, Adepts of the Eagle or of the Sun. Remember, fire is connected to Delta; remember that they burn their enemies to purify the soul so that the enemies will not come back after them.

Don't go away. You, you my dear sheeple, have an awful lot to learn.

(opening music: The Rose, by Bette Midler)

Governments are controlled and operated by a few, not with the thought of producing the most good for the greatest number of people, but to obtain power and riches for the few at the expense of the many. The few are wading in streams of gold while the many are growing under hard burdens.

[Reading from *A Rose Cross College*]:

(start quote here):
=================================

In the myths surrounding King Arthur and the Round Table and of those Knights of the Holy Grail who are the forerunners of the Order of the Garter and other knighthoods, one particularly is worthy of interpretation, demonstrating as it does, the use and abuse of power.

The story of Merlin is soon told:

"Merlin was the son of no mortal father, but of an Incubus, one of a class of beings not absolutely wicked, but far from good, who inhabited regions of the air. Merlin's mother was a virtuous young woman, who, on the birth of her son, entrusted him to a priest, who hurried him to the baptismal fount, and so saved him from sharing the lot of his father, though he retained many marks of his unearthly origin.

"At this time Vortigern reigned in Britain. He was a usurper, who had caused the death of this sovereign, Monies, and driven the two brothers of the late king, whose names were Uther and Pendragon, into banishment. Vortigern, who lived in constant fear of the return of the rightful heirs of the kingdom, began to erect a strong tower for defense. The edifice, when brought by the workmen to a certain height, three times fell to the ground, without any apparent cause. The king consulted his astrologers on this wonderful event and learned from them that it would be necessary to bathe the corner-stone of the foundation with the blood of a child born without a mortal father.

"In search for such an infant, Vortigern sent his messengers all over the kingdom, and they, by accident discovered Merlin, whose lineage seemed to point him out as the individual wanted. They took him to the king; but Merlin, young as he was, explained to the king the absurdity of attempting to rescue the fabric by such means, for he told him the true cause of the instability of the tower was its being placed over the den of two immense dragons whose combats shook the earth above them. The king ordered his workmen to dig beneath the tower, and when they had done so they discovered two enormous serpents, the one white as milk, the other red as fire. The multitude looked on with amazement, till the serpents, slowly risen from their den, and expanding their enormous folds, began the combat, when everyone fled in terror, except Merlin who stood by clapping his hands and cheering on the conflict. The red dragon was slain, and the white one, gliding through a cleft in the rock, disappeared.

"These animals typified, as Merlin afterwards explained, the invasion of Utherand Pendragon, the rightful princes, who soon after landed with a great army. Vortigren was defeated, and afterwards burned alive in the castle he had taken such pains to construct. On the death of Vortigren, Pendragon ascended the throne. Merlin became his chief adviser, and often assisted the king by his magical arts.

"Merlin, who knew the range of all their arts,
Had built the King his havens, ships and halls." -- Vivian.

"Merlin continued to be a favorite counselor through the reigns of Pendragon, Uther, and Arthur, and at last disappeared from view, and was no more found among men, through the treachery of his mistress, Viviane, the Fairy, which happened in this wise.

"Merlin, having become enamored of the fair Viviane, the Lady of the Lake, was weak enough to impart to her various important secrets of his art, being impelled by fatal destiny, of which he was at the same time fully aware. The lady, however, was not content with his devotion, unbounded as it seem to have been, but 'cast about,' the Romance tell us, how she might 'detain him for evermore,' and one day addressed him in these terms: 'Sir, I would that we should make a fair place and a suitable, so contrived by art and by cunning that it might ever be undone, and that you and I should be there in joy and solace.' 'My lady,' said Merlin, 'I will do all this.' 'Sir,' and she, 'I would not have you do it, but you shall teach me, and I will do it, and then it will be more to my mind.' 'I grant you this,' said Merlin. Then he began to devise, and the damsel put it all in writing. And when he had devised the whole, then had the damsel full great joy, and showed him greater semblance of love then she had ever before made, and they sojourned together a long while. At length it fell out that, as they were going one day hand in hand through the forest of Breceliande, they found a bush of white-thorn, which was laden with flowers; and they seated themselves under the shade of this white-thorn, upon the green grass, and Merlin laid his head upon the damsel's lap, and fell asleep. Then the damsel rose, and made a ring with her wimple round the bush, and round Merlin, and began her enchantments, such as he himself had taught her; and nine times she made the ring, and nine times she made the enchantment, and then she went and sat down by him, and placed his head again upon her lap.

"And when he awoke and looked round him, it seemed to him that he was enclosed in the strongest tower in the world, and laid upon a fair bed. Then said he to the dame: 'My lady, you have deceived me, unless you abide with me, for no on hath power to unmake this tower but you alone.' She then promised she would be often there and in this she held her covenant with him. And Merlin never went out of that tower where his Mistress Viviane had enclosed him; but she entered and went out again when she listed.

"After this event Merlin was never more know to hold converse with any mortal but Viviane, except on one occasion. Arthur, having for some time missed him from his court, sent several of his knights in search of him, and, among the number, Sir Gawain, who met with a very unpleasant adventure while engaged in this quest. Happening to pass a damsel on his road, and neglecting to salute her, (as all *true* Knights should) she revenged herself for his incivility by transforming him into a hideous dwarf. He was bewailing aloud his evil fortune as he went through the forest of Breceliande, when suddenly he heard the voice of one groaning on his right hand; and looking that way, he could see nothing save a kind of smoke, which seemed like air, and through which he could not pass. Merlin then addressed him from out of the smoke, and told him by what misadventure he was imprisoned there. 'Ah sir,' he added, 'you will never see me more, and that grieves me, but I cannot remedy it; I shall never more speak to you, nor to any other person, save only my mistress. But do thou hasten to King Arthur, and charge him for me to undertake, without delay, the quest of the Sacred Grail. The knight is already born, and has received knighthood at his hands, who is destined to accomplish the quest.' And after this he comforted Gawain under his transformation, assuring him that he should speedily be dischanted; and he predicted to him that he should find the King at Carduel, in Wales, on his return, and that all the other knights who had been on like quest would arrive there the same day as himself. And all this came to pass as Merlin had said."

[William Cooper]: Now the interpretation of this story, ladies and gentlemen, goes something like this:

=================================
(end quote here)

And remember in the earlier hour, ladies and gentlemen, we learned that, to the Mysteries, the Holy Grail represents the soul. The soul. That's right, ladies and gentlemen, and they don't even believe that most people have a soul until they prepare the body to receive it. (laughs) So, you are learning...you are learning much faster than you ever could on your own. Skipping ahead:

"In this respect, the Pyramid is a perfect symbol of man when he has reached the state called Illumination of Soul, or Soul Consciousness, or in other words, 'has found the Center, or located the All-Seeing Eye.'"

Skipping ahead again:

"[Dr. Clymer asking:] 'May we look to Masonry in completing the great work, or will it continue to be purely materialistic? Let this be the mission of Masonry, to perfect the work for which its outer symbology stands. Shall it be so?'"

This is an admission that they are purely materialistic at this point and *have* been throughout their history.

"While this is truly a Masonic work, the work for which the Mason has made a good foundation when he has completed his three degrees, yet it is also a work for every man, and especially a work for those who have taken up, or who have opportunity and inclination to take up, the special training offered freely today by the representatives of the Ancient Schools, through the Illuminati, Sons of Osiris, Magi, and other Fraternities.

Skipping ahead again, several pages...:

"The 'Fire Philosophy' is the basis of all Religious Mysteries and all the secret philosophies of the Universe. It is also the underlying principal on which All Secret Occult Brotherhoods are founded. It was taught in the Ancient Mysteries, and, although the knowledge of it has long been lost to the world, it has always been preserved in the Occult Fraternities.

"'The aim of all true initiation, no matter what the name of the Fraternity may be is to know the nature of the Secret Fire that regenerates the world and which renders him who comes into its possession immortal...'

"...The mystic has always held that Masonry was one of the basis upon which religion was founded, that the Mysteries of Masonry when fully understood, are the same as the Ancient Mysteries, and therefore the Mysteries of religion itself.

"...[section header:]THE WAY TO GODHOOD[?] Be thou a man and thou mayst be a god."

Be a man and thou mayst be a god -- this is the divine command of the New Age. The new commandment teaches how to live that man shall be the first great stage of growth and that God could, may follow manhood. Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz is a 32nd degree Freemason of the Scottish Rite, he is a member of the Mormon church and has been initiated in the temple ceremony in which it is revealed to him that Lucifer is the god he follows; that Christ had his chance on earth and failed, and that it is Lucifer's turn. This can be found and referenced and confirmed fully in a book entitled, *The Godmakers*, and in the video tape by the same name.

Don't go away, folks. We'll be right back.

(break music: *Day by Day*, from the musical, *Godspell*)

And now, ladies and gentlemen, we move to another book, entitled *The Teachings of the Masters, the Wisdom of the Ages*:

[reading from *The Teachings of the Masters, the Wisdom of the Ages*]:

"An Exposition of the Ever-Active and Constantly Operating *Spiritual* Laws, Applicable not only to the Regeneration of Man, changing Mortality into Immortality, Transmuting the 'son of man into a Son of God, ' but equally potent in helping Man to achieve Success and Economic Independence; Health, Strength of Body, [and the] Peace of Mind and Heart called 'Heaven.'"

[William Cooper]: Below that is a symbol of a Christian cross, upon which is the caduceus: two serpents intertwined about the winged staff.

"Enlarged and Completely Revised, Together with many Additions, by Reverend R. Swinburne Clymer, *Director [General]*, Church of Illumination, *Supreme Grand Master* of the International Confederation of Initiates, *Supreme Grand Master* of the Merged Occult Fraternities comprising: The Priesthood of AEth, The Rosicrucian Order, The Secret Schools, The Hermetic Brotherhood, Fraternitas Rosae Crucis, Temple of the Rosy Cross, The Order of the Magi, Sons of Isis and Osiris, Illuminatae Americanae [which, translated, means, 'The American Illuminati']. Published by the Philosophical

Publishing Company, Beverly Hall, Quakertown, Pennsylvania, copyright 1952 by Beverly Hall Corporation, all rights reserved.

"PROLOGUE. Early in the year 1916, instructions were received from the *Count M. de St Vincent*, Supreme Hierarch of the *Fraternitas Rosae Crucis*, to make preparations for a sacred Convocation on the 68th Anniversary of the establishment of the Supreme Grand *Dome of the Fraternitas* and Associate organizations as established in America by Dr. Paschal Beverly Randolph.

"At this Convocation, which was to convene on June first, 1916, the Neophyte body was to be informed of a crisis that would be the beginning of the enslavement of the people of America in a manner so insidious that they would not be aware of it. America was to become engaged in a war that would only be the beginning of greater wars.

"It was prophesied that an effort would be made to destroy the Christian religion, so secretly and silently, that only the alert and elect would be aware of this activity.

"This effort is in full bloom today and is making atheists out of millions, even before their churches are destroyed; the reverse of what has happened, and [what] is happening, in other countries.

"At this Convocation we were instructed to hold daily lectures on subjects vitally important to all…in fact, to all the world, and more especially so to Neophytes of the August Fraternity. These instructions were to be after the manner of Plato and the Round Table of King Arthur.

"In addition, we were to prepare for the exemplification of the entire ritual of the Fraternity, Sons of Osiris, up to, and including, the Royal Purple Degree -- the ultimate of Ancient Ritualistic Initiation, symbolizing the Neophyte's travels and efforts, beginning with the first step, and including the final step, which is the second, or spiritual birth."

[William Cooper]: So, ladies and gentlemen, you are now beginning to learn some things that you thought was absolutely impossible, and I told you on many episodes of the *Hour of the Time* that none of this is hidden; anyone can find it. *Anyone*, that is, except sheeple, who are too lazy to get up and look. Those who will, may.

[William Cooper]: I am a messenger. Do not doubt that, ever. And the message that I am bringing to you is clear. It is concise, and there can be no mistake in its interpretation. You must wake up now or be enslaved. The war has begun many years ago. The war was declared by our enemies upon us. We are absolutely within our rights to restore our nation using any method or any manner that is required in so doing. You had better listen.

[Continuing from *The Teachings of the Masters, the Wisdom of the Ages*]:

"Some years ago, R. Swinburne Clymer, following his graduation as a physician, and author of many books; among them *The Mysticism of Masonry*, *The Rosicrucians, Their Teachings*; *The Mysteries of Osiris*, a book for members only; *The Philosophy of Fire*; *Soul Science and Immortality*, and over thirty other works, bought a mountainous tract of land, and on this was built 'Beverly Hall,' an Assembly Hall; press [rooms]; chemical laboratories which [were] surrounded by orchards, vineyards…rose gardens...set amongst terraced lawns, presents a splendid combination of the beautiful and practical."

[William Cooper]: And upon the front lawns are perfect duplicates of the three pyramids of Giza.

"[And to] this was added the Mystic, or *Arcane*[, for, folks,] in a secluded wooded tract of fifty acres of this land, an artificial lake was built from a mountain stream, a Throne Room erected for the explication of the Royal Third Degree of Osiris and the [secret] Seal of Solomon built under the protection of a mighty oak."

[William Cooper]: The Temple of the Sun, an exact duplicate of that of the outer courtyard of the Vatican, and exact duplicate of the separate four sections of that which can be found in Dealey Plaza. The obelisk, the phallus of Osiris, which can be found in New York, in London, in the Vatican and in Dealey Plaza. The Grove of Osiris, represented in Dealey Plaza by Elm Street. Wake up.

"During the period of the Convocation, the teachers and delegates delivered many lectures on the subjects of Eugenics, Scientific Motherhood, Code of Ethics, Spiritual Christianity [William Cooper: That's a laugh when you discover what it is.], Initiation, Reincarnation, Soul Development, the Four-Square man, Mystic Significance of the Seal of the United States, and other important subjects; all interpreted in their *Arcane* significance by the Masters of the *See* [spelled S-E-E].

"Moses was well versed in all the Mysteries of Egypt, while Joseph took the *Nazarene* to Egypt where he was educated.

[William Cooper]: The Nazarene, ladies and gentlemen, was Jesus Christ. This is what they claim.

"[They claim that] no ceremony of the Greater Mysteries was ever permitted unless the circle or Seal of Solomon, also known as the Sacred Seal of *Equilibrium*, had been previously prepared. Since the fall of Egypt and the Temple of Solomon, the seal has received little or no attention, except by a limited few students and Neophytes of Ancient religion and the *Mysteries*.

"During the first week in June, in the grove so carefully prepared for the dramatization of the Ancient Initiation into the Mysteries of Osiris, the ritual in its entirety was re-enacted by those present.

"The Seal of Solomon which had been especially built for the purpose, was dedicated on June the 11th, 1916, in the presence of the members and delegates of the Rosy Cross; some of whom were natives of Germany, England and (white) Russia. This was in accordance with, and after the manner of, the system [as] practiced by the ancient Initiate Priests of Egypt, and the Altar in the Temple of Solomon.

"On the night of June [13th], the first section of the delegation, including those of the Order taking part in the Initiation, assembled in the grove of Osiris [under the majestic Oak, the whole illuminated by a central power house prepared for the Initiation ceremonies of the Ancient Mysteries of Egypt in three degrees and six scenes."

[William Cooper]: Three degrees and six scenes, represented by the number 18, or 666. It is the number of a man, that man is the illumined man who has passed the travails of the three degrees in six acts. It is the man, it is the Anti-Christ, it is the rulers of the New World Order. I'm going to skip ahead, ladies and gentlemen, for we must go to that portion that is relevant to what you need to learn tonight. And we will continue; if we do not finish tonight, and I guarantee we will not, we will finish sometime in the future. We will continue on consecutive nights until we do.

"Few Americans at the present day have the slightest idea of how fortunate they are and that they are living in the greatest, freest nation that ever existed, despite its many shortcomings. [William Cooper: Now, remember, I'm reading this from the book, *Teachings of the Masters*.] Neither are they aware that America, "the land overshadowed with wings," is at the crossroads, one leading to…freedom, both individual and universal, and the other to the most abject and degrading serfdom, as a result of failing to accept the full responsibility for the management of their personal and Governmental affairs so that these may harmonize with the ancient prophecies."

[William Cooper]: Remember, I warned you and I told you that is exactly what is happening. This was the Great Experiment. If you had been proven worthy, this could have been the New World Order, sheeple.

"A still lesser number are aware that the history of America, from its very beginning to the end of its days, whether from good or ill, is told in its Seal [William Cooper: exactly as I have told you on past programs]; while *only the very few know that their own destiny is irrevocably interwoven with the destiny of* AMERICA; *America*, the last trying chamber for human Souls, and that when this trial is over, either heaven or hell will reign supreme. Few care because they selfishly think only of themselves; they forget the future welfare of their sons and daughters."

[William Cooper]: And, of course, we saw that when you all padded your sons and daughters on the butt and sent them off to die in a war in a desert in the Middle East, all the while claiming that they were going off to fight for their country, you fools! "Desert Scam."

"An old saying has it that 'familiarity breeds contempt.' As a corollary to this, there should be another maxim: 'We are blind to that which we see so frequently.' Most Americans, even though the *spirit* of America dwells within them, are actually only dimly aware that the great Seal of the first actually free country in the world shows an eagle, a constellation of stars, an olive branch and a set of thirteen arrows. This is the seal we all know. Symbolically, the eagle *'overshadows'* the land by its protective wings, BUT ONLY AS LONG AS MAN PROVES WORTHY OF SUCH OVERSHADOWING or *protection.* Man has the power to destroy the 'Eagle' that overshadows or protects him.

"The constellation of stars indicates that the founders of America *accepted the absolute law that is governed the 'Drama of Heaven' since the beginning of the world and must be accepted and obeyed in this new world.* The olive branch is the symbol of peace and friendship held out to all who are *willing to forget and completely root out from their consciousness, the degeneration of old worlds and elect to live in the spirit of the New World* [or the New Age].

"The thirteen arrows are symbolic of the wars which are part of THE DRAMA IN THE HEAVENS AND THE WARS THAT MUST BE WAGED AGAINST ALL EVILS, AS WELL AS ALL EVIL INDIVIDUALS; THAT MAN'S FREEDOM IS TO BE MAINTAINED. IT IS EACH AND EVERY CITIZEN'S PERSONAL RESPONSIBILITY TO ETERNALLY FIGHT AGAINST THESE INDIVIDUAL AND UNIVERSAL EVILS.

"There is the prophetic reverse side of the seal; uncut, because the time is not ready for the prophetic fulfillment, which was known to few others than the *Philosophic Initiates*, prior to its profane and premature use on the American one-dollar certificate.

"Several attempts have been made to cut this reverse side of [this] seal, but in each instance, *an invisible hand or force*, restrained the effort. At the time of the Chicago World's Fair, this reverse side was ordered cut together with the familiar reverse side as an object of display, but those in charge, WHOLLY IGNORANT OF ITS MEANING, AND (also ignorant) OF THE SPIRIT OF TRUE AMERICA, questioned: 'What a peculiar design! Why are we given this *inartistic* design?' And this WHITE STONE, symbolic of the nation's destiny, as of the nation's true Souls, was once again rejected.

"THE SOUL OF AMERICA *is betrayed and is in travail.* Foreign inimical hordes in almost unrestrained access into the country without a thought as to whether or not they are ready to throw off the gross, degrading, destructive evils of the old world and INVEST THEMSELVES WITH THE SPIRIT OF THE NEW WITH A WHOLEHEARTED WILLINGNESS TO OBEY AMERICA'S FUNDAMENTAL LAWS.

"Nor is that all! [They're] given high places; usurping the rights and privileges of those MORE CAPABLE, BORN AMERICANS WHOLLY IMBUED WITH THE TRUE AMERICAN SPIRIT."

[William Cooper]: If you have ears and you can hear and eyes and you can see, you will begin to understand what the author is saying within a few more paragraphs. And you will be shocked.

"This helps bring about the gradual degradation of all that is TRULY AMERICAN; so much so that the 'eagle whose wings overshadow America,' is GRADUALLY FOLDING HER WINGS AND WITHDRAWING Heaven's protection. The time is come when a full knowledge of the two-fold seal and all it stands for shall be known to the people, so they MAY ACCEPT AND BE PROTECTED ([or] saved); OR IGNORED AND BE DAMNED ([and be] swept into the sea of oblivion) -- as have been other nations before America -- because they permitted foreign invasion and the adoption of destructive ideas to take the place of the constructive ideas which had made them great.

"America must awaken! *She must be awakened by one means or another. Her own safety and the welfare of our own people must be protected against all foreign spawned ideologies born as the result of selfishness and defiance of God Himself and all* *his Laws; Laws which, throughout the eons, have preserved the world and the Drama of Heaven, through the peoples of nations unnumbered have perished as a result of their own disobedience and degradation.*

"America, its people individually and collectively, must become valiant and now henceforth stand before the world as EXEMPLARS. They must be leaders and promulgators of a new and equitable system of ethics, religious inculcations based on sound material and spiritual truths, and a citizenship that is honorable and noble; a justice and generosity to other nations that is unquestioned (but WITHOUT THE WEAKNESS OF COWARDLY COMPROMISE *lacking all honor and fairness to her own people*), and emphasize the *possibility* of brotherhood based on individuality, personal freedom and obedience to laws that apply universally.

"[Now,] to digress, but vital to our thesis: Late in the afternoon of July 14th, 1776, the New Continental Congress 'Resolved, that Dr. Franklin, Mr. J. Adams and Mr. Jefferson, be a committee to prepare a device for a Seal of the United States of America [-- all of these men, members of the Mystery Religion].'

"The committee was identical with the one that had drawn up the Declaration of Independence, except for the omission of Robert Livingston and Roger Sherman. The Declaration itself had been signed at about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, and Congress desired to at once complete the evidence of the independence of the United States *and [of] its people*, by formally adopting an official sign of sovereignty and National Coat of Arms.

"The coat of arms of England, the mother country, illustrated the union of Judas' lion, with the unicorn of 'Lost Israel' in accordance with the science governing Heraldry. The young republic, *born out of the throes of religious persecution more than as a result of the sufferings of unjust taxation*, was through, finished, with thrones and crowns. It was ready to blaze a new path, UNDER THE SHADOW OF THE EAGLE'S WINGS, through the forest of the new world in the cause of liberty, which should express her dissent from the SPIRIT OF THE CHRISTIAN PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS and open a door for all who sought help and shelter upon her shores. "

[William Cooper]: *She rejected*, she rejected British Israelism, she rejected the Lion of Judah.

"In the early colonel days, a knowledge of Heraldry was considered an important part of education, just as throughout the ages, it was necessary to have an understanding of symbolism which indicated a knowledge of the *governing* Law of the Universe and the DRAMA OF THE AGES AND THEIR EFFECT ON HUMANITY, individually and collectively. It was through William Barton, son of the rector of St. James Episcopal Church of Philadelphia, learned in Heraldry and Baron Prestwich, of England, that the designs expressive of America's destiny were developed and drawn."

[William Cooper]: First, you must understand that the lion represents the tribe of Judah. Judah was not a part of the state of Israel. That is a historical fact, ladies and gentlemen. Israel was separate from the tribe of Judah and Benjamin. Our forefathers knew this. The British, apparently, do not and neither, apparently, do identity Christians.

"The two sides of America's seal express in Heraldry the countless ages of the evolution of man. This evolution had its beginning even before the time of the so-called or misinterpreted 'fall' of man. The seal symbolizes man's progress in Egypt (*eagleland --* America's *actual* fatherland) where, for a time, a wondrous race incarnated to build an unexplainable and inconceivable monument as a symbol of, and memorial to, the knowledge imparted to her by the more ancient Atlantis."

[William Cooper]: And this is confirmation of everything that I have been telling you about the beliefs of the Mystery Religion.

"The ancient memorial or altar, the Great Pyramid, unites in a blaze of glory with the later building of King Solomon's temple, as a prophecy of the coming of a master-teacher, the *Nazarene*. He should be trained, taught and Initiated in the 'eagleland' and *bring into manifestation* the human-spiritual temple, PERFECTING THE SON OF MAN INTO THE SON OF GOD, as a fulfillment of ancient prophecy; that in this same Egypt, there should remain an altar where *Light* should shine in the land of darkness. Another prophecy by *Isaiah*, in symbolism, connected the land of Egypt ([or] eagleland) with the land 'overshadowed by the wings of the Eagle' (America), where there is an altar (statue of Liberty) upon which is burning the light of freedom for all who accept the law and are *worthy* of their freedom.

This great Pyramid, an altar at the center of the earth (symbolic of man's *spiritual* or Soul center), recognized as a temple of the highest initiation, was emblematic of the perfect man; four-square, of body, mind, spirit and Soul.

[William Cooper]: Where have you heard: "As I raise my hand to the square," or "As I raise my arm to the square?"

"Its white copestone symbolizes the *attainment* of Immortality or Cosmic Consciousness [William Cooper: and you hear that throughout the New Age movement]. It represents the measure of the earth as well as that of the Universe, as also the evolution of physical man through those countless ages of reincarnation, now drawing to a restricted time.

[William Cooper]: A time in which man will revert in his evolutionary path, or will become gods.

"'The last Cumaen Song now comes,' wrote *Virgil*, and prophesied that a race should arise which would be the offspring of all races, except those who isolated themselves, and bring about the end of the ages of iron ([or] war); ushering in the Golden Age; an age of *honor, personal responsibility*, and *obedience to the Divine Law*.

"It was therefore fitting that the mottoes upon the reverse side of our seal, above and below the pyramid, should be taken from *Virgil,* ANNUIS CŒPTIS – [means] 'Prosper us in our daring, ' and NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM – [means] 'A New World Order.' [*note: book says, 'a new and *select* order'] It is well to constantly keep in mind the term SELECT, because it is only the obedient, hence the 'select' that may, or can, reap the benefit of the REacting Law."

What unadulterated bullshit. Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: The Rose, by unknown artist)

Hour 38: Rose Cross College, Part III (aired February 24th, 1994)

[William Cooper]: You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson]: And I'm Carolyn Nelson.

[William Cooper]: And right off the back, folks, we've spoken to our supplier and we are back in the food storage business, and this time I hope you can take advantage of it. Only, unfortunately, you don't hurry, you're going to pay a lot more, and that's the truth...

[WC does commercial for food storage]

Tonight, we're going to get further into the exposé of the root of racial tension in this country and elsewhere in the world; how they keep us divided and conquered and what it really stems from. And most of you who believe in this Aryan master race crap and most of you who call yourselves identity Christians: I don't care if you worship in that church, I don't care if you believe that. The only people I care about are people who are racist who want to kill other people who don't look like them, or hurt other people who don't look like them, or get rid of them or something. Those people I will oppose forever. I will protect your right to worship at whatever altar you wish to worship at, as long as you want to worship there forever...I don't care. That's your, your business, and your right in this country. We believe in that right; that's the only way that it can be. Otherwise, you're going to have a state that has a state church, and we're all going to have to confirm to that, and that's exactly what the New World Order is going to be.

But you're all going to find out that you're the *victims*, victims of people who have a hidden agenda. And most of your preachers and ministers who are teaching you this crap and feeding it to you are members of these secret societies and they are promoting *Zionism*. Zionism. For behind Zionism is not Jewish, folks, it's not the Jewish people. They're being used. They're going to be sorry for allowing themselves to be used. For behind the Zionist movement are the British Israelis, the people who believe they are the master race, that they are the lost 13th tribe of Israel, that they are the people who are going to inherit the world and the rest of us are going to be their slaves. And if you don't believe that, you just listen.

Don't go away. I'll be right back.

(opening music: The Rose, by Bette Midler)

Ladies and gentlemen, if you'll check your history you'll find in the accounts left by the Romans, as they sent their legions up into Europe to conquer the Celts, the Picts, the Galls, and the Germanic tribes, they describe very clearly what they found there. And what they found, ladies and gentlemen, was nothing that even remotely could ever be misinterpreted as any remnant of any of the tribes of Israel. It is clear what they found were primitive tribesmen. Some of them were gentle and not war-like, and were easily conquered by the Romans. They had no root of Hebrew in their language, period, none of them, anywhere. Most of them, however, were fierce tribesmen, many of whom went into battle naked, covered with mud, screaming like banshees and had no mercy for anything. Their women would come along behind them and pick whatever was worth anything off of the bodies of the dead. And there are accounts that they would even eat parts of the bodies of their slain enemies. The Germanic tribes were so fierce and so primitive and so pagan that the Roman legions were constantly in battle at that frontier, and never did completely conquer the Germanic tribes.

The Celts, what were known as the Galls, what were known as the Picts, most of them were conquered by the Romans. Some of them were incorporated into the Roman Empire, and paid taxes to the Romans. All of this is on record. Of course, the Romans brought their religion into those regions and, coupled with pagan religions of those peoples, new legends and new myths, new metaphors began to evolve. And eventually, as the Roman Empire became the Catholic Church, and the Roman emperor became the pope, the Catholic religion was introduced and mixed with many of these legends and fables and metaphors. And in many of these places, strange tales and legends grew up. As they struggled to interpret the new religion from the new bible, they began to create legends, stories that never happened, and were never recorded before that time in their history, nor in the history of the Romans in their interaction with them.

Now, these legends did not become prominent. Nobody paid any attention to them and you will find any record of them until the Normans gained power in England. When the Normans gained power in England, the secret societies began to front for the Norman cause. And a whole legend was created, and scriptures were found to back it up, that the Anglo-Aryan race was the lost 13th tribe of Israel. None of it stands up under any scrutiny, either historically or scripturally. But, I hear on the radio, and I see and read in pamphlets and books, all of the bent and warped scriptures and references, and the out and out lies of the history, tried to back this up. Because this will carry you into the New World Order, and whether you realize it or not, any of you who cling to this or promote it are promoting the New World Order. You are helping to destroy the United States of America, the Constitution and the Bill of Rights, and freedom for all of us. And you had better get your head on straight and quit *listening* to those who are misleading you. It is a heady wine to think that you are somehow better than others; that you are a master race destined to rule the world, and when Christ comes, you will be the chosen people, and everyone else will bow to you.

It is a lie, ladies and gentlemen, and when you front those ideas and when you espouse those beliefs, you are, in effect, you are a Christian calling Jesus Christ a liar. And I suggest you go back and read his words, for he never made any distinction between classes of people, he never rejected anyone nor did he run after anyone who passed his teaching on the road and passing his teaching down their throat. It never happened...never, not once. He accepted anyone who came to him no matter their race, their color or their creed. No matter their station in life, whether they were a prostitute or a noblemen, it made no difference to Jesus Christ. And his...his formula for acceptance into the kingdom of heaven was simply this: "Whomsoever beliveth in me shall have everlasting life." He did not say, "Whomsoever is a British Israelite shall have everlasting life." He did not say, "Whomsoever is black shall have everlasting life." He did not say, ""Whomsoever is a Jew shall have everlasting life." He did not say, ""Whomsoever is an Anglo-Aryan shall have everlasting life." And you had better understand that those who are manipulating you and teaching you these lies are heading you for a fall. There is no master race, there never was and never will be. Of course, if you're not a Christian, then this doesn't make much difference to you.

But it is a manipulation; it comes out of the heart of the Mysteries that came from ancient Babylon and were twisted on the continent and in England to promote a hidden agenda. And I quote, ladies and gentlemen, from the book, entitled *The Teachings of the Masters*, written by Reverend R. Swinburne Clymer, who was the Director General of the Church of Illumination, the Supreme Grand Master of the International Confederation of Initiates, of the O.T.O., of the Golden Dawn, of Freemasonry, of the Knights of Malta and the Knights Templar, the Supreme Grand Master of the merged occult fraternities comprising the Priesthood of Eyeth(sp?), the Rosicrucian Order, the Secret Schools, the Hermetic Brotherhood, *Fraternitas Rosae Crucis*, Temple of the Rose and Cross, the Order of the Magi, Sons of Isis and Osiris, *Illuminatae Americanae*, which translated means, "The American Illuminati." And this book was published by the Philosophical Publishing Company of Beverly Hall, Quakertown, Pennsylvania in 1952. The source of this information is from *The 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order*, to which all of the high-ranking members of nefarious orders and fraternities of what is known by the brotherhood as the "Illuminatae", or "Brotherhood of Man", internationally as "The Internationale," in 1916 at Beverly Hall. And I quote verbatim and you had better listen, because this is the source of your teachings and it will be the hardcore of the New World religion; it is already pervasive in the New Age movement, and it is very easily checked. I quote:

[reading from *The 68th Convocation of the Rose Cross Order*]:

"[The source of the mystical teachings of the New Testament can offer no other interpretation of the] symbolism [of] the young republic, than that of the ancient Pyramid, it's cope stone and glory, significant of the descent of the New Jerusalem, for the one side, and the eagle, and the ever repeating thirteen of Manasseh, thirteenth [or lost, torn away] tribe of Israel and the son of Joseph (the Britons) who was separated from his brethren in Egypt, in the parting asunder of northern Israel from southern Judah..."

[William Cooper]: Now, historically, Judah was never a part of Israel and that's why they say here, "northern Israel from souther Judah," because Judah was never a part of Israel. And they made it sounds as if Judah, a part of Israel, separated itself from the whole, then they can be found historically correct so they tell the truth.

"...the parting asunder of northern Israel from southern Judah [never again to be part of Judah], and [the] first to cross Europe in search of the [legendary] "isles afar off," to re-establish the ancient [Gentile] throne of Israel at Tava in Ireland."

[William Cooper]: Now, it is significant that they separate the name Israel into three syllables: IS-RA-EL, with dashes. It stands for "Isis," "RA," who is represented as Osiris, and "EL," "EL" means "God."

"...the hitherto rejected reverse side of our [great] seal [is now in full view] of these United States, [it is to] remind [the people that, from the beginning,] they were called to a Great Work as offspring of...a might Manasseh, whose history began in Genesis and [will culminate] in America, and by whose stripes the...world must be healed [and will healed, despite the many and inglorious betrayals of those who set themselves up as the leaders of the peculiar people of the eagle. The legend tells us that] Joseph [betrayed, as we have often been, and cast off by his own people,] married [the] daughter of [the] priest of the Temple of On, in Egypt."

[William Cooper]: Now, remember, if you listened to this program, you know that On is another name for the Sun, or Osiris, or the Light, or Lucifer. They're saying that Joseph, as the legend tells, and it *is* a legend; it is not historical fact -- never was and never can be, for it is a lie.

"[The legend tells us that] Joseph [betrayed, as we have often been, and cast off by his own people,] married [the] daughter of [the] priest of the Temple of On, in Egypt. Today [as an eternal symbol until the time of the placing of the cope stone upon the pyramid] one pillar of that ancient Temple stands in London, while its mate stands in New York."

[William Cooper]: It is the phallus of Osiris, the obelisk. There is also in the outer courtyard of the Vatican and one stands in Dealey Plaza. One also stands on the estate grounds of the *Prieuré de Sion*, of the House of Sion in England.

"These are [vivid and should be] constant reminders [to us of our unbreakable connections] with [ancient] Egypt, and with...Europe, and our father Joseph as an Anglo Saxon culmination as a result of this union [and] between [these two] pillars must all the world [in biblical language] pass into Ephraim, or Shiloh."

[William Cooper]: Professor Totten, an imminent symbologist understood these ancient Mysteries fully and indicated this in his statement: "The whole Bible is written in the stars, both the law and the gospel, while esoterically the entire story of man is set forth upon the sea of Manasseh. The obverse side is Israel [under the old covenant]...as the hope and [victory] of Christianity. The two sides reflect each other and cannot be separated," and that is the meaning of the New Covenant that Clinton espouses, for he also is a member.

[William Cooper]: This was...this played dramatically in the photography published worldwide, where he stood in the Oval Office holding up a single red rose. Castro has been photographed holding up the same single red rose, as has been Gorbachev, the leader of France, and the Queen of England.

[William Cooper]: There is a possibility of England's betrayal and by forces within which meant America would be compelled to stand alone. This possibility or probability was indicated in the poem ascribed to Merlin to King Arthur's court of our constellation of thirteen stars. And we'll get into that right after this break, ladies and gentlemen. You see, this country has been betrayed by the Tories, who never wanted to separate from England in the first place. The body of the Illuminati around the world are working toward one-world government and if this Anglo-Saxon faction has its way, they will rule the world through a council of elders. If the Vatican has its way, the Pope will sit on the throne of the world.

(break music: *From a Distance*, written by Julie Gold, performed by Nanci Griffith?)

Backing up one paragraph, I quote again:

"[There is a possibility of England's betrayal and by forces within, in which event America would be compelled to stand alone. This is possibility (aye, probability) was clearly indicated in the poem ascribed to] Merlin of King Arthur's court [on the] constellation of the thirteen stars..."

[William Cooper]: Here, they attribute truth to legend. Supposedly, Merlin said:

"When the cock (France) shall woo the Dove (America)
Mother and child shall cease to love (Rebellion of colonies)
When the cock (France) shall guard the eagle's nest (France's aid)
The stars (our constellation of 13) shall rise all in the west
Then seven and six shall make but one (E Pluribus Unum)
The Lion's might shall be undone."

[William Cooper]: Here they attribute to a mythical figure, Merlin, a prophecy which, they say, is being fulfilled in the world. "When the cock [or France] shall woo the Dove [which they say is America]; Mother and child shall cease to love [in other words, rebellion of her colonies against England]; When the cock shall guard [in other words, France's aid] to the eagle's nest [which is the United States, or America]; The stars [which, they say, are our constellation of 13] shall rise all in the west; Then seven and six shall make but one [E Pluribus Unum, as their interpretation]; [and] The Lion's might shall be undone."

[William Cooper]: This prophecy has been rapidly coming to pass since the Second World War, the English, the Anglo-Saxons, have permitted enemies within her borders, many of her own race, to gain control of her finances and institutions and replace what might be correctly termed, "Druidic Christianity," and that's exactly what it is: it's a perversion of true Christianity. In fact, when you hear what it really consists of, you will discover, ladies and gentlemen, it is not Christianity at all, but the remnant of the old pagan, druidic and Germanic gall picked religion, mixed with a little mixture of Christianity. Using this lie, this legend of Joseph, to [make?] them into a master race. These are the same people who, just prior to World War II, *attempted*, attempted to turn England into an ally with Hitler. You see, druidic Christianity is a godless atheism really. They say, unless the English wake up, the Lion's might will certainly be undone, and the old saying, "There always will be an England," will be proven unfounded.

[continuing reading]:

"The stars upon our seal are set in the form of a six pointed star of [the] double triangle [symbolic of the perfectly balanced man. After the downfall of Egypt, this was called] Solomon's Seal..."

[William Cooper]: And that is a lie. It was never called Solomon's Seal until it was adopted by the Jewish people as their symbol sometime in the 16th century, ladies and gentlemen. They say [that?] the ages before that it had its place in the temples of the greater Mysteries, and that is true. That's exactly where it comes from. Indicating that the physical man and the spiritual man had attained equilibrium, and that the Son of Man had indeed become the Son of God. Now, bear in mind that that is *not* a reference to Jesus Christ.

"At each point of the star was placed the symbol of an Order which [symbolized] Arcane wisdom [and because of the presence of the altar within], no man might pass into the Holy of Holies [or innermost chamber]...with safety to himself [save he who attained to philosophic initiation]."

[William Cooper]: And that is the true definition of Solomon's Temple within the Masonic lodges and the lodges of all of these other liars and deceivers. For the Temple of Solomon that they discuss has nothing to do with the Christian religion or the Jewish religion, but lies within each of them according to their own definitions. I continue:

"[The special or spiritual] symbol of America, aside from the pyramid or eagle, is the white rose, identical in [its] meaning

[to] the white stone [of legend and primitive Masonry, for the meaning and the history of the white rose." [sic]

[William Cooper]: Study the War of the Roses and you will find your eyes opened as to who is really behind this and what it really means. I continue:

"The constellation of thirteen stars was in early drawings set in a wreath of white roses, showing that the early designers knew [fully aware] the future of American individual spiritual development."

[William Cooper]: And that is a lie. Our forefathers were not a part of this. They are the ones who broke away from England, ladies and gentlemen. This is a perversion of their beliefs. They certainly were members of the secret societies and the Illuminati, and they were working toward the Great Work of one-world government. But not under Anglo-Aryan rule. You see, our forefathers truly believed, in their day, of the Brotherhood of Man, meaning all man at some point in the future standing upon an equal keel at birth, and making for themselves what they will through individual responsibility. They really wanted this nation to succeed but they knew in their hearts, because they knew human nature very well, that we would abdicate our responsibilities and our freedoms and would become slaves. And they would have to institute some kind of government to control the mob. Their aim was to topple the churches and states that existed in their world and bring about a true freedom of mankind, hoping that this would be it. Giving us all the tools to make the experiment succeed or fail, for man should -- they believed, and I believe also -- get what he deserves.

"[The design] is now drawn set in white clouds [showing that the true nature of America is clouded, or under a cloud at the moment. These clouds are shadows symbolizing the confusion of the present era, will gradually be replaced by bright sunshine, symbol of light, enlightenment, sheer perception and understanding].

"Solomon's Temple was the [design] of [the] perfect man [perfection is the ultimate of every man, unless he chooses an ignoble defeat]...the Bible [like the Arcane teachings of the greater Mysteries] tells us of [the] three cornered cope stone which was [prepared to finish the pyramid of the Temple, but was] rejected, [and] later became the headstone of the corner....Genesis [tells us] of [one] Joseph, the keeper of the 'stone of Israel'..."

[William Cooper]: And I might remind you, Isis was also called, 'the Stone.'

"It was because of the Magian or Holy Grail teachings that the Britons crossed Europe to Arsareth, Land of Betrothal..."

[William Cooper]: They quote Esdras 11-13. Folks, can you find the book of Esdras in the Bible? Of course not. They will quote anything that furthers their perversion and their lie.

"[They say they] crossed Europe to Arsareth, Land of Betrothal...in search of a land where they might keep God's worship pure and undefiled. Hence through Joseph, who was separated [cast out or sold by] his brethren, we inherit[ed] the white stone of all Israel, [the] cope stone of the pyramid, and of Solomon's Temple, that rock upon which [the initiate Nazarene] reminded Pater, he should build [God's] church..."

[William Cooper]: (laughs) Oh my, oh my.

"...the rock [or foundation] of spiritual unfoldment within each individual, [and against which, in the ultimate,] the gates of hell...should not prevail. [What this true church really is is made plain in:] My little children of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you."

[William Cooper]: Now they call Christ the *Christos*. "Be formed" means, "awakened," in their language and they reference Galatians, chapter 4, verse 19. The one single word offers us the key to the entire mystery of the church and of man's ultimate goal. To "travail" is to suffer in giving birth. This birth is in or within us. Is is the: "Unless ye are born of the spirit as ye had been of your mother's womb," you shall in no wise be able to enter the kingdom of Heaven, a biblical and mystical lore.

"[This being the law which governs the universe as it governs the drama of heaven, which is the old cosmology worshiped at places like Stonehenge,] it was in keeping that an Englishman, a Master of Heraldry, should give to the young republic [during] its struggles to separate from the mother country [as does the child from its mortal mother], the design for [not only the work of the true *Christic*, or *Christos* church -- I refer you to the Christic Institute, which just is another branch of these perversions -- also] the design for the Great Seal, which would express the whole future of [the new country's] work as a world teacher and exponent of the...teachings [of the new church and] of the Holy Grail.

"The All Seeing Eye, [looking] down upon the ancient pyramid...symbolizes America [the eaglet of 'Eagle Land'] and all she must mean to the world. [If she does not permit herself to be betrayed by the degrading and destructive ideologies of decadent European and Asiatic countries, an utterly selfish traitorous leadership in our own country.] This emblem, the eye is as [ancient] as man's appearance upon [the] earth, being found upon [the Egyptian, Greek and Chaldean monuments]..."

[William Cooper]: And I'm sure, ladies and gentlemen, they knew that it meant America back in those days. (sarcasm): Mm-hmm, yeah, you just keep thinking that, fools. This is beyond understanding how intelligent people can fall for these scams and be so manipulated by someone who comes along, flashes some kind of certificate that we went to some kind of a school that taught him how to understand the Bible, and he preaches this perversion, and people fall right into line and believe it as fact, simply because this person told them to. If you follow them around long enough, you will follow them to the doors of the lodge of one of these secret societies, I can assure you.

"This emblem, the eye is as [ancient] as man's appearance upon [the] earth, being found upon [the Egyptian, Greek and Chaldean monuments], while the Arabians [looked] upon it and named the Highest and Holiest name of God [and] with hushed voices...whispered, 'I am that I am.'"

[William Cooper]: And that is what Elizabeth Claire Prophet preaches in Montana.

"The triangle about the eye, stood from the most [ancient days] as the emblem of the Trinity..."

[William Cooper]: Now, get this, folks, because this is what their Trinity really refers to!

"The triangle about the eye, stood from the most [ancient days] as the emblem of the Trinity...Osiris, Isis and Horus [progenitors of humanity], Father, [Mother - the Mother they call the] Holy Ghost and [the] Son...[it is the seal of the eternal law of the] three of the universe and [the watchful guide to those who awaken and walk in the light. 'I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way, which thou shall go.]. 'I will guide thee with mine eye.' -- Psalms 32:8.

"[The legend symbolized by the Pyramid] is esoteric, [given] in numbers, measures, and weights, and [these] may be read the [history of] ages [already] completed, and the prophecy of those yet to come."

[William Cooper]: I refer you to *Ice: The Ultimate Disaster, 5/5/2000*; that's the name of the book: *5/5/2000 - Ice : The Ultimate Disaster,* by Richard Noone. I refer you in that book, specifically to the interview with Tom Valentine, where he parrots this exactly same philosophy! I also refer you to his book about the pyramids, I forget the name of it, and his other book, *The Late, Great...*I'm sorry, *The Life and Death of Planet Earth.* I was thinking of a book written by Hal Lindsey. But Valentine's book is *The Life and Death of Planet Earth.* You'll find this same philosophy espoused throughout, and you find him on Radio Freemasonry, running you around in circles chasing your tails, even now.

"[Throughout the past ages each with its leader runs the legend of] the 'Stone Kingdom cut out without hands'..."

[William Cooper]: Now, remember, throughout all past ages, this legend, this story, this perversion has been repeated throughout the pagan religion and since the beginning of time when man first looked up and equated the sun with the power of God. The inner kingdom of heaven, the last and greatest of all was the Master [Nazarene, had he not been betrayed by his own people as in England, the land of Joseph, and the Grail being betrayed today. Notice, when it comes to the Nazarene who was of Israel being betrayed, all of a sudden he's been betrayed by his own people, but his own people are no longer *these* people, you see. That's blamed on the Jews, but yet they claim to be of the tribe of Israel. What hypocrites, what liars, what deceivers, what perverters, what manipulators.

[William Cooper]: Unless Americans in rapidly increasing numbers become imbued with the spirit of America awaken to the Christic church -- again, I refer you to the Christic Institute, run by another secret society, the Jesuits -- a similar fate may also befall America. Ancient architecture, heraldry and the drama of heaven are all telling the people of America of their possible destiny -- material and spiritual -- and no less responsibility [sic]. They're claiming that the Bible is recorded in the constellations of the heavens. The opposite is true, folks. The cosmology of the heavens in the ancient pagan religions existed long before the Bible was even written. The Bible is a conglomeration of all of the metaphors and myths and religions of history, passed down by word of mouth and written -- particular, the ones adhered to -- by the Hebrew race.

"As the head, body and limbs of the great image, made of different metals represented each Messianic age, a new [interpretation of] truth, and an empire directly relating to some manifestation of that truth, so must America represent the white stone, [and be] a nation fashioning itself [according to the divine pattern] until it shall have obtained the *Messiahship*..."

[William Cooper]: In other words, they're saying America is the Messiah, spiritual leadership. According to them, Christ is coming back to the earth, but not in a physical body, and he never was a divine human being, God incarnate, in the flesh on this earth. Instead, it's an office that can be held by anyone, and in the new age, it shall be held by the new [root?] race.

"[In other words, they say that] America represents the white stone, [and it should be] a nation fashioning itself [according to the divine pattern] until it shall obtained [to the] *Messiahship* [spiritual leadership] over all nations, overshadowing all that has preceded it. This cannot be accomplished until each citizen shall throw aside the veil [of ignorance and superstition and see] no longer [as through a] glass darkly, but face to face, when Judah shall no [more be permitted to] vex Israel nor Israel envy Judah, but [labor in harmony that the Lord's law be fulfilled If this be not done, both may be destroyed as have been many nations before them]."

[William Cooper]: Remember, the symbol of royalty in England and of England itself is the lion. It was also the symbol of the tribe of Judah, and it was the symbol of ancient Babylon -- in particular, Nimrod the hunter. I continue:

"The time...spoken of by Isaiah, the prophet, [has come]...[it is a time] when...the learned [intellectual] cannot read the book because it is sealed [as Greek to them], nor the unlearned because he is unlettered, yet shall the book be unsealed [because] the ancient [arcane] wisdom applies to the individual [who is willing to work in obedience to the Christic law] in his [personal] quest of the Holy Grail, in...drinking of the cup of unselfishness, [in] his love for his neighbor and the stranger withing [its] gates [in his loyalty to his family and his country, and his stubborn and wholly insistence that destiny's prophecy shall not be set aside]."

[William Cooper]: So, on the one hand they talked about the Brotherhood of Man, about equal rights for all, about love for his neighbor, and the stranger within his gates. The loyalty to his family and his country, and the same time these lying, deceiving manipulators are destroying the country. They're destroying the family. Oh yes, ladies and gentlemen, this comes out of the Mysteries and nowhere else. And they believe that they are the master race, and will ultimately destroy all other races and prevail as the rulers of the world. And yet they read this...they write this and see no contradictions, which makes most of them fools in my estimation. In any case, they're liars, deceivers, manipulators -- the scum of the earth. They are the destroyers.

"Each [and every one may be] fortunate heir of this glorious inheritance [but] must seek the white stone which crowns the pyramid, within himself, [by the full development of his] body, mind[, spirit] and soul, the Holy Trinity of each Son of [Man, who has become the Son of God]."

[William Cooper]: And there is the clue to what they intend: man will become God. Man, himself, will become "Christed," and that is what they mean by the return of Christ to this earth. Not a physical man of divine origin, God incarnate, in the flesh coming on the clouds as the Bible describes, but man himself will become "Christed." And as humankind becomes Christed, and the chaff is weeded out from the wheat, which is them, and destroyed from the earth, all other races, they will prevail and Christ will be upon the earth within them.

"[It is in this manner that] America will realize her destiny as [the] city set upon a hill, a star that shall never [set, but become the light that shall light the world because the true church of the eternal Christos, the Christ within man, for whom there is travail in birth until Christ be formed in you, man shall have become established and be the sanctuary for all her people...]"

[William Cooper]: This is what the Mormon Church teaches. It is just another branch of Mystery Babylon, perverted...perverted by this hidden agenda of the master race, the Anglo-Aryan master race, incarnate in British Israelism, world Zionism, and if you're Jewish, you had better reject it. It's not about saving or preserving the state of Israel, it's about creating a one-world government, and orthodox Jews along with fundamentalist Christians, or any Christian for that matter, who will not renounce Christ as divine, incarnate of God, in flesh upon this earth. Any follower for the prophet Mohamed, anyone who will not bow down to this new religion will be destroyed…will be destroyed.

[William Cooper]: [quoting?] The state is the edifice, the church be the spirit. This is the old Nazism coming back to us. This is National Socialism on a world scale, with the state as the edifice, the church must be the spirit. The rise and fall of nations and people has been an exact ratio to their acceptance of the laws as interpreted by their great spiritual leaders, or their efforts to think, desire and act in attempted defiance of them. This is the combination of British Israelism, it is what brought Hitler to power. It is the same occult philosophy that Hitler worshiped the master Aryan race. We used the word "attempted" for a reason. That though uncountable millions made every effort to live outside of the law, none thus far have succeeded, and all have passed into the limbo of things forgotten. This illustrates the trite known old saying, "The mills of the gods grind slowly, but they grind exceedingly fine." Nearly two thousand years ago the world as a whole has come to a sorry pass. Selfishness was rampant, God was all but forgotten, men lived by greed and at the expense of one another. The few were the masters, spiritual and material of the many. Only a few were able to recognize the light of God. It was a time, very much like our own today when selfishness and desire for conquest were the ruling passions. Some of you old enough may recognize the ravings of father Kauflin. Then as always happens, an exemplification of the eternal order came to one who was to walk upon the shores of Galilee; a just and honorable *man*, for they attribute no divinity to Christ. One without selfish motive, one who did not seek to establish an earthly kingdom, but in stood a heavenly kingdom in which all who so desired were willing to make the effort and enjoy the good things of earth.

[William Cooper]: Do you hear that? He talked of God as none other had before him. He proclaimed God to be the father of all creation, the supreme being of the universe, the maker of heaven and earth, of man in his own image. This young man, this native of Galilee, the Nazarene, preaching the fatherhood of God and the possibility -- not the certainty -- of the brotherhood of man and the immortalization of the soul of man. This master teacher manifested greater love, more wisdom and courage than had ever before been found embodied in the body of any man. He possessed the desire to serve mankind as had none other before him. He taught the simplest, grandest and most sublime doctrine, or concept of life, that ever fell from human lips. Yet despite the services, he was ready and willing to render to his fellow man, and his soul-inspiring doctrine he taught, the people to this day, except for a very few, misconstrued his teachings, ridiculed his concepts and finally crucified him. The great Galilean was wise. His wisdom and understanding was beyond the comprehension of men of his day because, then as now, simplicity had no power to excite or incite all the complex hole men enthralled, for seeing the things that were to come he prepared the way so that, should his ministry and teachings be rejected, it would be preserved and passed on to an exceeding age. The age is now upon us -- the new age, when man shall become the Son of God.

Good night, and God bless you all, and may God have mercy upon your soul.

(closing music: continuation of From a Distance)

Hour 39: The Occult and The Third Reich (The Enigma of the Swastika) (aired February 28th, 1994)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson]: And I'm Carolyn Nelson.

We go right straight down to Phoenix to Gene Miller for the Monday night metal report.

[William Cooper does commercial for Swiss American Trading]

Tonight, we begin a three-part series, ladies and gentlemen, on the occult history of the Third Reich. The occult history of the Third Reich. Make sure that you do not miss one single episode of it, and all of you people who have been scammed and caught up in this Aryan, uh, master race bullshit -- and that's exactly what it is. Listen very closely and find out how you've been conned and you'll find out that everything that happened back in Germany during the '20s and '30s is happening again in the United States today, and all of you are going to make the connections between the New Age -- and it really isn't the New Age, it's the Old Age, because it all took place a long time before, and it's just surfaced again [sic], brought to you by the same people. You're going to see the connections between the Third Reich, the Knights Templars, the Thule Society, Freemasonry, the British Israel movement. You're going to see that (laughs), up until Helena Petrovna Blavatsky came along, there was no super race called Aryans and you're going to find out all of these things link together is [sic] going to bring you the most incredible sense of *Déjà vu* that you've ever experienced in your life. And I hope, I *hope*, you're man enough or woman enough to look yourself in the mirror and say, honestly, "I've been had."

Straighten your act up, find the truth and stop being led by the nose by these people who would divide us just to put the chains around our ankles. Make sure you have pen and paper by your side and, folks, listen carefully.

(opening music: The Ride of the Valkyries (Walkürenritt), by Richard Wagner)

[Playing audio from the documentary *The Occult History of the Third Reich, Part One: The Enigma of the Swastika*, narrated by Patrick Allen]:

==

Nazi Germany, 1936. A state which will sterilize, enslave and systematically murder millions of men, women and children. Entire peoples are to be swept from the face of the planet. Whole populations are to be scientifically reduced; those who remain persevered only for their value as slaves. The world is to be subject to a new order.

[sound of music and marching]

To foreign observers of 1930s Germany, National Socialism is an enigma. No conventional political explanation seems sufficient to account for such an alien phenomenon. A whole world of strange rituals and beliefs seems to have risen from nowhere to mesmerize millions of Germans. Over the whole extraordinary spectacle of pageantry and military might presides the Messianic figure of Adolf Hitler, and everywhere there is a mysterious and ever-present symbol: the emblem of the swastika.

[dramatic music]

The great rallies of Nuremberg consummate the mystical unity of the party, the people and their leader. The climax of the Nuremberg rally is a mass display of up to 32,000 swastikas. A foreign reporter [American journalist William Shirer] finds himself overawed by the force of the spectacle he is witnessing. "Hitler," he writes, "is restoring pageantry and mysticism to the drab lives of the 20th century...The rally has the mystical and religious fervor of an Easter mass in a great Gothic cathedral."

[noise, then crowd chanting, "Heil!"]

The ranks of the Hitler youth sing of their newfound faith: "No evil priest can prevent us from feeling that we are the children of Hitler. Away with incense and holy water. The swastika brings salvation on earth." [Taken from a song sung by the Hitler youth at the 1934 Nuremberg Rally] The symbol of the swastika will win the devotion of millions. Its rise will chart the growth of a strange and terrifying [creed]: the doctrine of National Socialism, a doctrine born in the world of the occult.

[music playing]

The mission of Aryan man. The mystery of the blood. The soul of the race. These dogmas, fundamental to the Nazi vision, will lead Europe into the realms of [nightmare]. Their symbol is the swastika.

The swastika was adopted by the Nazi party in 1920, but it was neither the party's invention nor its discovery. Since the end of the 19th century, the swastika had been spreading amongst the peoples of Europe, and everywhere it was a sign of a new and powerful force -- a deepening fascination with the arcane, the esoteric and the occult.

[music playing]

The revival of the occult in Europe has its roots deep in the trauma of the Industrial Revolution. By the dawn of the 20th century, the lives of millions had been changed out of all recognition. Cities, the traditional centers of commerce and fashionable life, have been transformed into sprawling industrial slums. Yet, everywhere, the catchphrase is "progress." There is a widespread belief that a new world is coming, a world in which the ills of the past will be cured by science, by technology and by democracy.

Many, far from welcoming the dawn of a new age, are deeply disturbed. With the Industrial Revolution had come a decline in the power of traditional authority. The political power of the landowner is [waning] in favor of a new class of industrialists and financiers. Hierarchy is being threatened by democracy. It appears to many as if the world of beauty and order is disintegrating before their very eyes. Worst of all, religion itself seems in mortal danger. Cherished beliefs, accepted as true for all time, are being questioned by science.

The ancient Himalayan kingdom of Tibet. From the late 19th century Tibet is the mysterious and forbidding destination of a steady stream of travelers from the industrialized world. Many, disillusioned with the certainties of science, come in search of another deeper knowledge. One such traveler is a Russian adventuress and self-proclaimed telepath, Madame Helena Petrovna Blavatsky.

In 1888, Madame Blavatsky publishes a book, *The Secret Doctrine*, in which she claims that, deep in an underground Himalayan monastery, she has been shown an ancient occult text. In it will reveal the mystical secrets of the universe and the future course of human history. In *The Secret Doctrine*, Madame Blavatsky describes the universe as having fallen from pure spirit into base matter, darkness and chaos, but soon it will rise once more to reach the pinnacle of spirituality. Madame Blavatsky claims that this knowledge, and more, she has learned through initiation into the Mysteries of seven esoteric symbols. Of these seven symbols, one she believed to be more potent than any other: the symbol is the swastika.

In Tibetan mythology, the swastika is the sign of Agni, the god of the sun, of fire and of creation. And always, with a clockwise or anti-clockwise, with a curved or straight arm, it is the symbol of good fortune. For Madame Blavatsky, each cycle of creation has associated with it seven stages of human evolution. Stages she calls "root races." The race which will begin once more, the ascent from darkness to the light of the spirit, she names, "Aryan." In the occult teachings of Madame Blavatsky, the sign of the Aryan is the swastika. The Nuremberg rally of 1934 has as its theme a mystical concept: the triumph of the will, homages paid to a fundamental dogma in the Nazi creed of the swastika. Pure will, the expression of the soul of the race, will overcome the forces of darkness and of chaos.

In the world of National Socialism, the race of light, of order and of the spirit, is the Aryan race. Decades before the swastika was adopted by the Nazi party, a periodical published in Germany by an American occult society [the Theosophical Society] became the first German publication to carry the swastika on its cover. The society's founder was Madame Helena Blavatsky. It would be the followers of Madame Blavatsky who would introduce to the peoples of Germany and Austria the occult doctrine of the Aryan.

[music playing (man singing in German)]

The Prussian-Austrian war of 1866 had left German-speaking Austrians an isolated minority and a predominantly Slavic Austria Hungary. By the early 20th century an intense longing has grown for unification with Germany. Hundreds of German-Austrian societies are founded, committed to the romantic revival of ancient Germanic mythology. A [folk] federation, with a membership of over 100,000 calling themselves the Germanen Bund, holds festivals bound to Germanic calendar, revives ancient rituals and appeals for unity in a new, spiritual German nationhood. The Germanen Bund was inspired by the writings of an Austrian mystic.

Guido Von List, born in Vienna in 1848, claimed to have psychic visions of the past in which he was initiated into the secrets of the ancient Teutonic tribes. List's visions told him of a Germanic religion, the worship of the god, Wotan. His dream is to rediscover the occult heritage of its long banished priesthood. According to Norse legend the god-magician Wotan, leader of the dead heroes of Valhalla, had won by suffering a priceless store of esoteric knowledge. He had discovered the secret of the runes. List knew that the runes were the alphabet of a primitive system of writing, but to Germanic peoples from the 2nd century to the middle ages they were also magical symbols. Symbols which List believed possessed a deep esoteric meaning. Feoh, the rune of wealth, wandering in destruction. Ur, the rune of wild oxen, regeneration and sacrifice. North [Nied?], the compulsion of fate. Sieg [Sigil or Sowilo?], the rune of the sun and of victory.

To Guido Von List, runes were the key to the occult knowledge of the ancient Germanic peoples. Within a decade of his death in 1919, the runes would had become elements in a new language: the language of national socialism. The Sieg victory rune, emblem of the Hitler youth. The double Sieg, emblem of the *Schutzstaffel*, the SS. The Epel rune, symbol of Richard Walther Darré's ministry of agriculture, the rune of inheritance, the rune of German soil. The man [eolh?] rune, the rune of death which, in time, will replace the cross in the graveyards of the SS. Study of the runes is required of all SS officers.

Of the many strange and mystical symbols which have found a place in the new order of National Socialism, one dominates all others.

[dramatic music]

Guido Von List called the swastika, "The twice high holy secret of constant generation." He recounts a Nordic tale in which the god Mundelfori whisks the cosmos into being. The swastika is the fire-whisk, the very act of creation.

[dramatic music]

A Nazi hymn proclaims, "The time of the cross is gone now, the sun-whisk shall arise and so with God we shall be free at last and give to our people back their honor."

[dramatic music]

By nineteen hundred and nine, the occult visions of Guido Von List have made him famous throughout the German speaking lands. To List every stream, hill and forest in Austria was associated with a Germanic god or spirit. In the devices of heraldic shields, in the beams of Austrian houses, in folk customs and rituals, List claimed to see evidence that Austria was and always had been a part of the German homeland. For two generations, German speaking Austrians had looked to Germany for reassurance and a sense of identity. But events were about to occur which would place in doubt the very future of the fatherland itself.

[sounds of gunfire and explosions]

1914: The Great War. For the first time in history, the might of industry is unleashed on the battlefield. Nothing could have prepared the peoples of Europe for slaughter on such an unimaginable scale. As the war grinds on and casualties mount, front line soldiers on both sides of no-man's land take to the wearing of charms and amulets. In the ranks of Germans and Austrians, the most popular of all magic talismans is the swastika. The swastika medallions and amulets worn in the trenches of the Great War are based on the researches of Guido Von List.

By now an influential and wealthy society devoted to the teachings of the master has already been formed in Vienna. It is the List Society, which supplies designs to the manufacturers of swastika talismans. The swastika, now spreading amongst the German armies, is fast becoming the emblem of militant German nationalism. But since 1908 it has acquired another even more ominous meaning.

Shortly before the outbreak of the Great War, List had incorporated the occult teachings of Madame Helena Blavatsky into this own German mythology. Now he no longer refers to ancient Germans or Teutons. Instead the tribes who populate his visions he names, "Aryans."

In Madame Blavatsky's writings, the Aryans are the race of upward spiritual evolution, the race whose sign is the swastika. In Hitler's *Mein Kampf* the meaning of the swastika to the Nazi *part*y is made clear. "In the swastika," he writes, "we see the mission for the struggle of the victory of Aryan man."

[voice of Adolf Hitler]: "We cannot give up what makes life worth living. It is worthwhile because ours in a great mission. The mission was not given to us by a worldly superior but by the God who created our nation."

By the 1930s in the great Nazi rallies in Nuremberg, the concept of the Aryan has become a cornerstone of the party's mystical ideology. The grand design for the Aryan state has already existed for over twenty years. Its author was Guido Von List. In the slaughter and misery of the Great War, the writings of Guido Von List assumed greater and greater significance for the soldiers of the German and Austrian armies. To List, the Great War is the conflict which will purge the world of evil and herald a new age. Democracy and materialism will be destroyed on the battlefields of Europe. Victory will usher in an [Ario-German] empire.

By 1911, List had already described in detail his vision of the future Germanic state. It will be a strict hierarchy in which leaders will be obeyed without question. It will be patriotic with full rights only for the male heads of family. Only Aryans will be entitled to citizenship. There will be strict laws to ensure the purity of the race. Every family will keep a record of its ancestry as proof of its Aryan blood.

By 1918 the conflict which List calls, "the holiest war," had cost the lives of two million Germans. That same year the German armies had won a series of military victories. The Russian enemy had collapsed and yet Germany had [sued] for peace.

For men who had suffered so much, it seems like a colossal betrayal. Then comes the greatest shock of all: the Kaiser is forced into exile. The terms imposed on Germany by the Treaty of Versailles are harsh and punitive. Key industrial regions must be handed over to the victors. The German army is to be reduced to a fraction of its former strength. Heavy reparations must be paid when war has already left the German economy on the verge of collapse.

(break music: *The Blue Danube Waltz*, by Johann Strauss II)

[documentary resumes, narrator continues]:

The Versailles Treaty will fatally undermine the authority of the new Vimar Republic. The ministers who signed its terms will become known as the "November Criminals." As food supplies dwindle, and the once proud nation is reduced to dependence and misery, Germany threatens to descend into anarchy. The infant Vimar republic quickly becomes a battleground of warring factions.

In the major cities revolutionary, socialist republics are declared by councils of workers and soldiers. Nationalists and monarchist groups muster private armies and mobilize the counter-revolution. Behind the factions on both sides is the hidden hand of conspiracy. Among the many shadowy groups organizing nationalist counter-revolution is the wealthy and powerful Thule Society. Thule is the Munich lodge of the nationalists and anti-Semitic German order. The German order is dedicated to the occult teachings of Guido Von List.

On November the 9th, 1918, Rudolph von Sebottendorff, master of Thule, addresses a hastily convened meeting of the lodge. Socialist republics had been declared in both Munich and Berlin. "Yesterday we experienced the collapse of everything which is familiar, dear and valuable to us. I am determined to pledge Thule to this struggle. Our god is Walvater. His rune is the Ar-rune. The Ar-rune signifies 'Aryan' primal fire, the sun and the eagle. Thule will fight until the swastika rises victoriously out of the icy darkness."

In the following months, along with other nationalist groups, Thule stockpiles weapons and trains volunteers. On April the 30th, 1919, twenty thousand men, including strong detachments armed and led by Thule, storm Munich in a bloody counter-revolution. On the helmets of many nationalist volunteers is the emblem of the swastika. The success of Thule in the 1919 Munich counter-revolution would have far reaching consequences for the Germany of the 1920s. A shadowy organization devoted to arcane rituals and the creation of an Aryan empire would attract support from the highest levels of German society.

[music playing]

The secret German order, parent order of Thule, was funded in 1912. It was and would remain virilely anti-Semitic and anti-Democratic. The membership of the Thule and of all the lodges of the German order is drawn from the ranks of aristocrats, industrialists, lawyers, judges and medical men. All are required to prove that they and their spouses are of pure Aryan blood. Applicants must submit details of hair, eye and skin color. Hair must be blond to dark-blond Eyes must be blue or light-brown. The skin must be fair. For membership of the Berlin lodge, even the shape of the skull is taken into account.

By the autumn of 1918 Rudolph von Sebottendorff, master of the Thule Lodge, had attempted to extend the influence of Thule ideas by secretly sponsoring the formation of a workers' discussion group. Unknown to most members of the group, its chairman, Karl Harrer, would belong to Thule. The most active member of the workers' group is a locksmith, Anton Drexler. By the end of 1918 Drexler had proposed that the workers' circle be formed into a new political party. The Thule chairman agreed. On January the 5th, 1919, the new party is formally founded in a Munich tavern, *Der Fürstenfelder Hof.* It is to be called the German Workers' Party.

On September the 12th, 1919, ten months after the foundation of the party, an army spy is sent by his superiors to attend one of the meetings. The spy is a thirty year old Austrian war veteran. His name is Adolf Hitler. Within weeks, Hitler has joined the party, become a regular speaker at their hall political meetings, and has been appointed to the party's steering committee. Within four months, the party has changed its name. It has become the National Socialists German Workers' Party [NSDAP].

[dramatic music playing]

On May the 20th, 1920, the swastika was formally adopted as the symbol of the new Nazi party. The form chosen, straight-armed and anti-clockwise, was chosen by Adolf Hitler himself. Until now, the nationalist swastika had no set direction. The swastika talismans of the Great War were vertical and tilted, clockwise and anti-clockwise. Hermann Goering, future chief of the German Air Force, as a nationalist volunteer in 1919 wore a vertical, anti-clockwise swastika. In the ranks of the nationalist counter-revolutionaries, both clockwise and anti-clockwise forms were commonplace.

The curved swastika of Thule, chosen from the many popularized by Guido Von List, would not to be forgotten by the party to which Thule gave birth. It will live on on the belt buckles of the brown-shirted stormtroopers. The ceremonial swords of the Luftwaffe will bear the Thule swastika. Decorations for anti-partisan warfare on the eastern front will display the Thule dagger and the curved swastika. Whatever the form in which the swastika would appear in the banners and regalia of National Socialism, its meaning will remain the same. It is the meaning claimed for it by Madame Blavatsky and Guido Von List. It is the sign of creation, the sign of the mystical destiny of Aryan man.

By the 1920s, the spread of Charles Darwin's theories of evolution has had a profound impact on nationalist consciousness. A new explanation for the differences between cultures and for the rise and fall of civilizations is now possible. Increasingly, laws of inheritance are believed to be the key to history. The artistic achievements of a nation, its courage in war, its temperament -- even its spiritual life -- are all believed to be the legacy of race. It is a belief that will culminate in the official Nazi doctrine, that each race has its soul, and each soul its race.

[music playing]

The myth of the Aryan, developed in the occult teachings of Madame Blavatsky and Guido Von List, has by the late 1920s spread throughout Europe, the United States and Britain, and with it fascination with the swastika. The stories of India by the British author Rudyard Kipling appeared emblazoned with the seal of the swastika. In Scotland, the discovery of swastika markings in the Pictish cave inspired the creation of the swastika [kilt-pin]. In the United States, costly earrings and broaches appear in the form of the swastika. During the Great War, the British War Savings Drive has a swastika as its official emblem. Its administrators are awarded swastika lapel badges in recognition of their services to the nation. By 1930, members of the British druidic cults display swastikas on their ceremonial robes.

In 1932, an English periodical appears with the title, "The Superman." It is devoted to physical culture and on its cover is a border of swastikas. "The Superman," as well as features on sport and health, carries articles by respected British scientists warning of the racial contamination of Saxon Britain

[Adolph Hitler giving a speech]: "I know this cannot be otherwise because you are flesh from our flesh and blood from our blood. The same spirit that dominates us burns in your young minds. As the columns of our movement sweep through Germany today then I know you will join with them. And we know around us is Germany -- in us Germany marches and behind us Germany follows!"

[sounds of a large crowd cheering]

The Nuremberg rally of 1934. The Fuhrer addressing the mass ranks of the Hitler youth speaks of Germany, of the blood and of continuity of the race. In the coming year, a series of new German laws will be signed into existence by Adolf Hitler. The first Reich Law of Citizenship will divide the people of Germany into two classes: Those of pure Aryan blood will be full citizens of the Reich; non-Aryans will be reduced to mere subjects of the state. A second law, the Law for the Protection of German Blood and German Honor, will forbid pure-blooded Aryans from marrying people of Jewish descent. Soon after, the measure will be extended to forbid intermarriage between Aryans and *all* non-Aryans. The Germanic vision of Guido Von List is becoming a reality.

[people singing]

In 1935, a foundation is established in what is now, "National Socialist Germany." The Ahnenerbe is the ancestral heritage society of the study of German pre-history. Its official task is to investigate the territorial extent and spirit of the Nordic Indo-

Germanic race. The Ahnenerbe will grow to over fifty departments controlling all archeology in the Third Reich. By 1937, it will be the research branch of the SS.

Ahnenerbe researchers, dispatched to Tibet, South America, Greece, and Rome, conclude that all were once populated by great Aryan civilizations. The work of the Ahnenerbe will reinforce what are already deeply held beliefs. Civilization and everything that is valuable are products of the Aryan soul.

The way is open for Adolf Hitler to claim: "If we divide the human race into three categories: founders, maintainers and destroyers of culture, the Aryan stock alone can be considered to represent the first category."

[music playing]

Munich, 1937. National Socialism celebrates the history of the Aryans of the sacred mystery of the swastika. The solemn ritual has been organized by Alfred Rosenberg, official ideologist of the Party, and one-time associate of the Thule society. Today, Rosenberg proclaims: "A new mythos is dawning: the mythos of the blood, the belief that the godly essence of man himself is to be defended through the blood. The Nordic race represents the mysterium which has overthrown and replaced the old sacraments."

Already in the rituals of the Hitler Youth, the Christian gospels have been replaced by readings from *Mein Kampf.*

[crowd chanting]

In the League of German Maidens, the compulsory youth organization for girls, the religious rights of a mythical Aryan past are reenacted. The sun-whisk swastika is carried in procession. The loom of fate and destiny of Nordic legend is woven once more. By 1939, the very word "Christmas" has been banned from official use. In children's books, there are no references to Christ, to angels, or to shepherds. Instead there are emissaries of nature and the power of the sun. Concerted efforts are being made to convert Christmas into a festival of light. In the National Socialist calendar, the summer solstice has become a national holiday. The swastika is revered as the sign of the sun and of creation. Ceremonial fires are lit all over the Reich. In nocturnal rituals, fire incantations are recited by the assembled worshipers of the new Nordic faith.

[sounds of fire burning, music playing]

The consecration of the Blood Flag [Blutfahne]. On the 9th of November, 1923, the fledgling National Socialist Workers' Party, led by Hitler, attempted to overthrow the government of Bavaria. In a Munich street their advancing ranks were met by a volley of police gunfire. Sixteen are killed, including the stormtrooper marching beside Hitler. In the chaos, the swastika flag, carried in the front rank of marchers, is knocked to the ground and drenched in blood. The Blood Flag, entrusted to the guardian of the SS, becomes the most sacred relic of the Nazi party. All new Nazi banners must be consecrated by contact with the original Blood Flag.

"We do not want to have any other god, only Germany," proclaims Adolph Hitler, "and in the doctrine of National Socialism, Germany is the race. Already the priesthood of the Aryan empire of the future is in the process of creation. It is to come the mystical brotherhood of the SS." [full quote?]

The SS, first created as the bodyguard of the Fuhrer, will become a state within a state. Its members are chosen as the most perfect living examples of Aryan man. Even a single filled tooth will bar a candidate from entry to the racial elite of the Reich. Each applicant for SS membership must prove his German ancestry to 1750. He must undergo thorough instruction in racial biology. He must study the mystical destiny of Aryan man. He must be obedient without question and loyal to the death.

In the Aryan empire of the future, the SS are to be the incorruptible guardians of the purity of the race. It is from their ranks that a new breed will come. It is they who will pave the way for the next phase in human evolution. For the followers of the creed of the swastika, the Fuhrer Adolf Hitler has been sent by providence. It is his mission to lay the foundations for the coming Aryan [millennium]

During the Great War, Guido Von List revived an ancient Nordic prophecy. "The strong one from above ends the faction. He settles everything with fair decisions. Whatever he ordains shall live forever." In reality, the thousand-year Reich will live for twelve years. In those twelve years, Adolf Hitler will preside over a nightmare of mass murder, world war and the destruction of Germany itself. And yet, long before the rise of Hitler, or even the foundation of the National Socialist's Party, the seeds have been sown. Germany had inherited a legacy which will pave the way to the most horrifying chapter in human history.

The occult teachings of Madame Blavatsky, Guido Von List and their disciples, the Aryan fantasies of secret societies, the racial myths of militant nationalism. A legacy already inextricably bound to a symbol.

[sounds of explosions, dramatic music playing - end of documentary]

==

Well, folks, I've been trying to tell you for a long, long time. And, to put it bluntly...and, as an understatement, you ain't heard nothing yet. Don't you dare miss tomorrow night or Wednesday night's episode of the Hour of the Time.

If you listened closely tonight and if you listen closely again tomorrow night you will know why the chairman Joint Chiefs of Staff, the new chairman appointed by Clinton, lied about his father, whom he said he's not really a member of the SS, he was conscripted. There's no such thing as a conscripted member of the SS, ladies and gentlemen. The man is a liar. He's covering up his father's Nazi past and his willing, willing enlistment in the SS and therefore, must be, probably is, one of the ones who have received the heritage passed down from his father. And I don't believe he would be the chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff if he were not a National Socialist.

Remember what you're learning is that really is nothing new under the sun. (laughs)

(closing music: continuation of the dramatic music used in the documentary)

Hour 40: The Occult and the Third Reich (The SS - Blood and Soil) (aired March 1st, 1994)

(Opening music:)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson]: And hello from Carolyn Nelson.

I want to welcome our listening audience on satellite -- North and South America and the western side of Europe and a lot of the islands and territories in the Pacific, also New Zealand and Australia.

Welcome to the Hour of the Time. We are now worldwide by shortwave radio and one-half of the Earth's hemisphere on Satellite Galaxy 3, Channel 17 5.8 Audio. That's Galaxy 3, Channel 17 5.8 Audio. We are striking at the heart and soul of the enemy with the Hour of the Time, and it was reflected today when they paid us the greatest compliment that we can ever, ever hope to possess. We were attacked by Radio for Peace International, a broadcast of the United Nations, repeatedly today on 4 frequencies worldwide.

Ladies and gentlemen, I am so happy and so proud that we have hurt them so badly that they chose to win credibility to this broadcast by publicly attacking us on a United Nations broadcast, Radio for Peace International, worldwide. The Socialist bloodsuckers are hurting badly.

Before we get into tonight broadcast, I want to read you a definition from Mackey's *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, revised edition*, Volume 1, A-L. This is personally signed by Albert Mackey and was published in 1924 by the Masonic History Company, Chicago, New York and London, ladies and gentlemen. Now, I also have Mackey's 1893 edition of his *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* in which the word Aryan is mentioned for the first time, taken out of the teachings of Helena Petrovna Blavatsky. And in that series of volumes of Mackey's *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* there is a section on crosses, and there is only one Cross mentioned...only one -- it is the swastika. Now from the 1924 volume, Aryan: -- and I quote -- "One of the three historical divisions of religion -- the other two being the Turanian and the Shemitic. It produced Brahmanism, Buddhism and the Code of Zoroaster." (laughs) I bet you Aryans didn't know that you were all Buddhists. And if you go to India, *those* are the Aryans that she was talking about, and none of you look anything like them. And if you go to Tibet, that's where it all originated, and you don't look like them either.

Oh, sheeple! What am I gonna do with you? P.T. Barnum said, "There's a sucker born every minute," and he was right. Folks, there is absolutely *nothing* new under the sun.

We continue tonight with part two of the *Occult History of the Third Reich.* If you have ears and you can hear, and if you have a brain [and] you can think, you can make all the connections you ever need to make as we go into the next to the last episode in the completion of our Mystery Babylon series.

[audio of documentary begins to play]

[sounds of a clarinet, playing dramatically]

The Berghoff mountain retreat of Adolf Hitler. Here, senior party members and their families relax, away from the frantic activity of the camp. Yet, even in the peaceful setting of the Bavarian Alps amongst the tranquil scenes of domestic life there is an unsettling presence: the racial elite of the New Order, the SS.

[dramatic music playing, sounds of marching]

"How can we arrest racial decay?" asks Adolf Hitler. "Shall we form a select company of the truly initiated? An Order, the Brotherhood of Templars around the Holy Grail of pure blood." By 1934, almost ten years after its creation, the SS is in the process of becoming Hitler's Brotherhood of Templars. The handpicked, disciplined and fiercely loyal bodyguard of the Fuhrer is being transformed into an Aryan elite. A mystical order, dedicated to the creation of an empire.

In the strange and terrifying doctrines of National Socialism, the Aryan is the race of the future. Providence has decreed that the Aryans will subjugate all other peoples.

[dramatic music playing]

In the vanguard of the Nazi mission would be the black-clad ranks of the SS. This carefully selected elite is intended to be the stock from which will come a new and superior breed of human -- the superman -- a caste of men born to rule. It is Heinrich Himmler who will forge Hitler's guard into a racial aristocracy. Under Himmler's leadership, the SS will become a state within a state. Obsessed with secrecy and bound by solemn ritual, the SS will become a force of unprecedented power and authority.

[sounds of crowd cheering]

The origins of this, the most sinister of all Nazi's creations, do not lie in the personal visions of Heinrich Himmler or his Fuhrer. The roots of the SS go deeper -- even the National Socialism itself.

By 1900, the cities of Germany and Austria have changed beyond all recognition. Millions have abandoned the poverty of peasant life, the slave in the mills and foundries of the Industrial Revolution. As their population swell with the influx of labor, elegant centers of commercial and aristocratic life become teeming industrial slums. It is in the cities that the values of the old order are challenged. Calls for democracy and Socialism threaten the traditional power of the ruling elites. Established religious beliefs are undermined by science and a rising tide of materialism. To many, the new world seems fractured and chaotic.

Amongst the aristocratic and educated classes in the first decade of the 20th century, the overriding mood is one of nostalgia. There is a powerful yearning for a vanished past, a past believed to have been more harmonious, orderly, and spiritual.

All over industrialized Europe new movements arise, devoted to the search for simplicity. In Germany, the movement calls itself, *Lebensreform* -- life reform. It is pledged to the restoration of a more natural way of living. Tens of thousands of German youth join the *Wandervögel* -- the birds of passage. Its members share a mystical love of the German countryside and revere German folklore and ritual.

While science and medicine are rejected as products of the Industrial Revolution, vegetarianism, herbal healing, nudism, communal living, and meditation become fashionable pursuits. In every major city, cults devoted to spiritualism, astrology, magic, and the occult flourish among the disciples of life reform. Of all the doctrines favored by the movement, none will be more influential than those preached by the Russian evangelist and telepath Madame Helena Blavatsky.

In 1888 Madam Blavatsky claimed to have traveled to Tibet, and there to have been initiated into the secrets of spiritual masters she calls the "Hidden Elect." In the doctrines of occultists, the Hidden Elect, or the Great White Brotherhood, are believed to be humans who, by initiation and self denial, have risen become Adepts. They have gained powers and knowledge beyond those of ordinary mortals. In Britain, Aleister Crowley, a magician of the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, claimed in 1909 to have crossed the abyss and to have returned as an Adept. Madame Blavatsky did not claim to be an Adept in her own right, but she did claim constant telepathic communication with her hidden masters. They had revealed to her, their chosen one, the occult history of the human race.

According to Madame Blavatsky, each round of the cosmic cycle has associated with it seven root races. The first root race to evolve on earth, she calls the Astral race. It was a race of pure spirit, the highest form of existence. The second race she calls the Hyperborean race. Its home was a now vanished continent in the northern ocean. The third race was the Lemurians. Blavatsky is clear about the reason for the fall of the Lemurian race: it had interbred with animals. The fourth race in the history revealed to Madam Blavatsky is the race of Atlantis. The Atlanteans had possessed psychic powers and had constructed giant cities using an energy source of mysterious origins. The Atlanteans were destroyed in a great flood. The fifth root race Madam Blavatsky sees as the race of hope -- the race that has once founded the culture of ancient Greece, and soon would return man to the pinnacle of spirituality. That race she named, the Aryan. By 1914, Blavatsky's mystical doctrine of the destiny of the Aryan man has spread throughout Germany and Austria.

[music playing]

The opening days of the Great War. There is little sense of the impending cataclysm. All over Europe, news of war is greeted with unqualified enthusiasm. In all the warring nations, the emotions of militant nationalism are given free reign. In the ranks of the Austrian and German armies, there is a widespread belief that the aspirations of a generation may be satisfied at last: the unification of German speaking peoples and the creation of a Germanic empire.

[sounds of explosions]

To the frontline soldiers of the Imperial armies, the teachings of the Austrian clairvoyant Guido von List are an inspiration. List believes that in the Germans, more than in any other people, runs the blood of the mythical race called by Madam Blavatsky, the Aryans. To List, the Great War is proof that the modern world, with its materialism and its Democracy, is destroying itself. But out of war and destruction will come the victory of the German cause and the beginning of an Aryan millennium. List revives the prayer of the 16th century philosopher and heretic Giordano Bruno: "O Jove! That the Germans realize their own strength, and they shall not be men, but gods."

[music playing]

Like Aleister Crowley and Madame Blavatsky, List's psychic researches have led him to believe in the existence of a hidden elect. His visions of the ancient German tribes have revealed to him an elite class of priest-rulers. List calls it the *Armanenschaft*. The role of the Armanenschaft was to preserve the occult knowledge of the German's Aryan ancestors.

List claims that the imposition of Christianity on the Teutonic tribes and the persecution of the followers of the old religion forced the Armanenschaft to continue its traditions in secret. Their law had lived on in the rituals and symbols of a network of secret societies. The store of occult knowledge had been preserved down the centuries by Freemasons, Rosicrucians, and chivalrous orders, such as the Knights Templar. So great is List's influence among German and German-Austrian nationalists, that many army officers have joined the secret occultist organization inspired by his teachings. The German Order, founded in May 1912, has lodges in ten German cities. The government of the order is by a secret twelve man council of initiates, calling itself the Arminius Assembly. The future Aryan empire will according to List be governed by a similar council of initiates, a new Armanenschaft. In the design of the future SS, List's Arminius Assembly will not be forgotten.

[sounds of explosions]

List's prediction that the Great War would see the victory of Imperial Germany over its democratic and degenerent enemies will not be fulfilled. By 1918, the German economy is in ruins and the Kaiser's armies are crumbling. To the men at the front, the failure of the Imperial war machine is inexplicable. In 1918, Germany had won several major battles. The Russian enemy had already collapsed. Theories of a conspiracy abound. Many believe that Germany has been betrayed from within. The blame is placed squarely on the shoulders of the traditional targets of the German nationalist movements: Capitalists, Democrats, and Jews.

To the followers of Guido von List, all that is valuable seems irretrievably lost. A government of unknown politicians has accepted the humiliating terms of the Versailles Treaty. Worst of all, the Kaiser and the German princess have abdicated. Germany has become a Democratic Republic.

The abdication of the Kaiser is a stunning blow to the occultist of the German Order. Guido von List had taught that the aristocracy of Germany had been founded in ancient times by the Armanenschaft itself. In the aristocracy was to be found the purest of Aryan blood -- and with it, the strongest remaining traces of the Aryan psychic powers.

In the aftermath of the Great War, faced with the twin threat of Democracy and Socialism, traditionalists eagerly embraced List's mystical belief in the German nobility. But, by now, a new concept of aristocracy is in a process of development. Side by side with the teachings of List, it will become the cornerstone of Nazi ideology and the future SS.

Since the mid 19th century, the evolutionary theories of Charles Darwin had challenged religious beliefs held sacred for centuries. But, by the end of the Great War, many physicians, scientists, and politicians have come to see in Darwinism a formula for social and political action. Belief in the equality of man is seen as simply unscientific. The new slogan is, "The survival of the fittest."

In Darwin's *The Descent of Man*, published in 1871, he speculates on the effect of modern medicine on the future course of human evolution: "With savages, the weak in body or mind are soon eliminated. We civilized men, on the other hand, do our best to check the process of elimination. Thus, the weak members of civilized society propagate their kind. This," argues Darwin, "must be highly injurious to the race of man...excepting in the case of man himself, hardly anyone is so ignorant as to allow his worst animals to breed."

In Britain, the family planning movement, led by the scientist Marie Stopes, is preoccupied with the supposed threat to the health of the race posed by uncontrolled breeding. Marie Stopes work on birth control, *Wise Parenthood*, first published in 1918, is dedicated "to all those who wish to see our race grow in strength and beauty." Stopes is concerned with the tendency revealed by the national census for the lower classes to produce more children than the upper classes. "The numbers of our population," she states, "increasingly tend to be made up from the less thrifty and the less conscientious."

In America, the compulsory sterilization of the mentally handicapped, of alcoholics, and the persistent criminals has been legal in certain states since 1907. Marie Stopes advocates similar policies for Britain, including the sterilization of male children with an epileptic or mentally handicapped parent, uncle or aunt. The family planning movement is part of a broader movement aimed at directing and accelerating the evolution of the human race by selective breeding. This new science calls itself Eugenics.

By 1918, Eugenics has become so influential that the *British Medical Journal* publishes an article in which a noted physician can write: "There is no equality in nature among children nor among adults, and if there is to be a much needed improvement in the race we must breed from the physically, morally, and intellectually fit."

From Britain, Eugenics spreads to Germany, acquiring the new name "racial hygiene." University departments and institutes are founded devoted to the new science. By the 1920s, Eugenics has won widespread support amongst the German medical establishment. It has also had a profound effect on the doctrines of the German occultists.

In 1919, Guido von List, a prophet of the Aryan millennium, dies in Berlin at the age of 70. His place as Germany's leading mystic and Aryan visionary has been taken by Jörg Lanz. Lanz, an ex-Cistercian monk and respected biblical scholar, will have a profound impact on the development of Nazi ideology and on the structure and ritual of the future SS. Lanz has blended the Aryan occultism of Guido von List and the principles of the science of Eugenics. He calls his new doctrine "theozoology." Theozoology is an occult religion of race.

Inspired by Madam Blavatsky's mystical history of racial evolution, Lanz claims that the decline of the Aryans occurred because they had committed bestiality with the subhuman species. The result was the creation of many mixed races -- races whose very existence threatens the rightful dominance of the Aryans.

Like List, Lanz believed that the early Aryans possessed the power of telepathy. Interbreeding with racial inferiors had led to the loss of their paranormal abilities. "Why do you seek a hell in the next world?" Lanz asks. "Is not the hell in which we live and which burns inside us sufficiently dreadful?" To Lanz, the hell which burns inside is the impure blood in the veins of even the purest Bavarians.

The teachings of Jörg Lanz are propagated throughout Germany and Austria by his own journal, *Ostara*, founded in 1905. Lanz claims that over 100,000 copies of *Ostara* a year are sold. He even claims that amongst his eminent subscribers is the British General Kitching. In the pages of *Ostara*, and in a series of widely read essays, Lanz develops a terrifying prescription for the purification of the race. He proposes polygamy to increase the birth rate of the racially purists. Eugenic convents are to be established, in which chosen women he calls "root mothers" will produce children for pure-blooded Aryan males. While the racially impure, and the physically or mentally unfit are to be sterilized, other races deemed inferior are to be deported to Madagascar, or used as slave labor.

In the future Nazi state, all of Lanz's proposals will be given the most serious consideration. Some will be put into practice. A massive compulsory sterilization campaign will be directed at those judged physically, mentally or racially inferior. The deportation of German Jews to Madagascar will be discussed in the upper echelons of the Party. The SS will plan for the official introduction of polygamy and will fund its own SS breeding program.

To Jörg Lanz, the legends of the Knights of the Holy Grail are more than the products of the medieval imagination. Lanz believed that they were the Knights Templar, founded in the 12th century and famed for their part in the Christian Crusades. Lanz believed that the Crusades were an attempt to hold back the inferior races of the East. The Holy Grail was an electrical force, representing the psychic powers of the pure-blooded Aryans. The search for the Grail was the search for racial purity. In 1907, Lanz formed an occult society dedicated to a new Crusade. He called it the Order of the New Templars. In the castle of Burg Werfenstein in upper Austria, Lanz founded the Order's first headquarters. Other order priories soon followed. The occult rituals of the New Templars are based on Lanz's monastic experience, and his own especially composed psalms, prayers, and readings. A constant theme is an appeal to the Aryan Christ, Frauja, for salvation from racial impurity and for the extermination of inferior races.

The aims of the Order are explicit: to harmonize science, art and ethics into an occult religion devoted to the purification of the Aryan race in all countries of the world. In anticipation of the practices of the SS, prospective members and their marriages are racially vetted. For Lanz, the New Templars are the beginning of a new order. "No longer will parliaments determine the fate of the people," Lanz proclaims. "In their place will rule wise priest-kings and leaders of chivalrous and spiritual secret orders." In reality, it would not be the occultists of the New Templars who will create the Aryan aristocracy of the future. The mystical doctrines preached by Lanz will be put into practice by others -- above all by a man who, since the age of 20, has been an avid collector of *Ostara*.

In the closing months of 1918, Corporal Adolf Hitler, holder of the Iron Cross First Class, will come to the attention of his superior officers, and their mutiny at the demobilization camp, at which Hitler is stationed, is brought under control by his powerful oratory. In September 1919, Hitler, now a civilian, is called upon once more by the army command, this time to spy on an insignificant nationalist group calling itself the German Workers Party. Within months, Hitler has joined the party and has begun to speak at meetings. By January in 1920, he has been elected head of propaganda and has drawn up a new party constitution. The army intelligence Captain who had first recruited Hitler as a spy has been retired. His replacement as Hitler's army sponsor is the 32-year-old Captain Ernst Röhm.

(break music: The Blue Danube Waltz, by Johann Strauss II)

Röhm is held in high regard as a courageous frontline officer and an outstanding organizer. The Bavarian army command has given Röhm the task of circumventing the arms restrictions imposed by the Treaty of Versailles. He is to establish secret arms dumps and organize the many nationalist paramilitary groups in Bavaria into an unofficial army of reserves. One such group of the irregulars is the Powerful Force, commanded by ex-naval Captain Hermann Ehrhardt. The Ehrhardt Brigade has played a major role in combating Socialist revolution in Bavaria. It is Ernst Röhm who brings together Ehrhardt and Adolf Hitler.

Public meetings of the early Nazi party are defended by stewards known as the Athletics and Sports Detachment. In the summer of 1921, Ernst Röhm arranges that officers of the Ehrhardt Brigade should become the Commanders of a new party defense force, the SA (Storm Detachment).

To Adolf Hitler and the Nazi party, the function of the SA is to protect party speakers and make an impressive show of force when the occasion demands. But the SA has another role -- it is an unofficial part of the German army. It is trained by army officers, numbered in army mobilization plans and controlled by Hermann Ehrhardt.

Hitler is well aware that the allegiance of the SA does not lie with him or with the party. He knows that, as party leader, he needs a force upon which he can rely utterly. The Stosstrupp Hitler is the prototype for the SS.

November 1923: Adolf Hitler is jailed for his part in an attempt to overthrow the government of Bavaria. The Nazi party and the SA are banned. Hitler's Stosstrupp bodyguard is scattered. During his imprisonment, Hitler writes his political testament *Mein Kampf*, and ponders the future of the party and of the SA. It is clear that eventually he must revive the SA -- that he must also reform and strengthen his own personal guard. Hitler's requirements for his new force are clear: "I told myself then that I needed a bodyguard, even a very restricted one, but made up of men ready to march against their own brothers."

On December the 20th, 1924, Hitler is released from prison. He has served only 9 months of a 5 year sentence, but his trial and imprisonment have made him a national figure. Two months after his release, Hitler formally reconstitutes the Nazi party and reforms the SA under a new command. Röhm and Hitler have argued and parted company. In April 1925, Hitler orders his chauffeur and ex-bodyguard, Julius Schreck, to form a new force for the defense of the Fuhrer and the protection of party headquarters. It is the Schutzstaffel, or "Protection Squad" -- the SS.

To set themselves apart from the SA, the SS wear black caps bearing a silver Death's Head insignia. To the intense irritation of the SA, the SS is soon behaving as an elite. SS entry requirements are far stricter than those of the SA. SS discipline is more severe. The SS attend all party meetings but never speak. Already its unofficial motto is: "The aristocracy keeps its mouth shut."

On July the 4th 1926, Hitler confirms the SS as his elite organization. At the second party rally at Weimar, he gives the SS guardianship of the party's most sacred relic, the flag drenched in the blood of the party fighters killed in the coup of 1923. As custodians of the Blood Banner, the SS are entrusted with the Nazi symbol of martyrdom in the struggle for Aryan supremacy. The transformation of the SS from the elite guard of the Fuhrer into the mystical order it will eventually become will be the work of one man: he is Heinrich Himmler, the most enigmatic of all Nazi leaders.

Himmler is a devoted follower of the Aryan occultism of Guido von List and Jörg Lanz. He, too, dreams of a Germanic empire ruled by a mystical order of the Aryan elite. He is determined that this elite should be drawn from the ranks of the SS. The superman -- the new breed of Germanic ruler -- is to be created from the stock which he will select.

Himmler is appointed head of the SS in January 1929. For almost a year, he and his wife had been [small holders] and poultry farmers. Since early youth, Himmler has been an eager convert to the teachings of the movement for life reform. The land he believes is the origin of all that is good. Cities are the source of all that is unhealthy, corrupt and immoral.

"The yeoman on his own acre," writes Himmler, "is the background of the German people's strength and character." Himmler has long been associated with the Artamanen League, a nationalist and anti-Slavic movement of city youth, committed to life on the land and the expansion of German farming to the East. The oath of the Artamanen League is sworn: "by blood and soil."

In the Artamanen League, Himmler has met the man who will transform the oath, "by blood and soil," into a central doctrine of the SS. To Walther Darre, an ex-official in the Prussian Ministry of Agriculture, the relationship between German blood and German soil is a source of mystical power. [quote?] "Questions of agriculture are not questions of economics, but of race and destiny."

In 1930, Himmler's fantasies of an Aryan future are the least of Hitler's concerns. The unity of the party and Hitler's own future as its leader are under threat. With the economic depression at its height, Germany's unemployed flood into the ranks of the SA. The Stormtroopers now number 100,000 men. To the radicals of the SA, National Socialism promises the destruction of the traditional German ruling classes. In the eyes of the Stormtroopers, the industrialists, army officers, and aristocrats who are the Nazi party's most influential supporters are no more than contemptible parasites. In protest of the political alliances which Hitler has formed, many SA Commanders withdraw their men from the party service.

Goebbels, the Nazi propaganda chief, warns Hitler that a split within the SA and within the party is imminent. Hitler's solution is to recall the only man he believes capable of reuniting the SA: Ernst Röhm. Röhm will succeed in the task Hitler has set for him. He will pay for success with his life.

As Röhm sets about the unification and expansion of the SA, Himmler takes a different road. His strategy is not one of rapid expansion. Instead, he concentrates on careful and systematic selection. In 1930, Himmler had won a valuable concession from Hitler: the SS would be allowed to recruit from the ranks of the SA. Himmler proceeds to put into practice his theories of breeding. "We went about it like a nursery gardener, trying to reproduce a good old strain which has been adulterated and debased...I started with a minimum height requirement. I knew that men of a certain height must, somewhere, possess the blood I desire."

On December the 31st 1931, Himmler establishes the SS Race and Resettlement Bureau. It is to be headed by his old friend, Walther Darre. Darre is awarded the rank of honorary SS General.

The task of the Race and Resettlement Bureau is to prepare for the future colonization of the East by pure-blooded Germans. It is also instructed to conduct research into racial ancestry, biological selection, and the history of the Aryans. Its staff of leading academics and medical men are ordered by Himmler to develop stricter requirements for SS entry.

Bureau physicians assess the degree of racial purity of each applicant by physical examination. Only those considered pure or predominantly Nordic are acceptable. The applicant's physique is also judged on a 9-point scale. The examiners are instructed to take into account the attitude and bearing of the candidate. Himmler has decreed, "In his attitude to discipline, the man should not behave like an underling. His gait, his hands, everything, should correspond to the ideal which we have set ourselves."

To Himmler, selection is only the first step in his plan to reclaim the Aryan blood, latent in the German people. The second stage is the control of SS breeding. The Race and Resettlement Bureau is charged with the task of racially vetting SS marriages. Prospective brides of SS men are required to prove the purity of their Aryan blood back to the year 1750. By 1933, the Bureau will be examining almost 2000 SS marriage applications a month. It is the beginning of the largest and most terrifying Eugenics experiment in human history. From 1935, the Race and Resettlement Bureau will be empowered to vet the marriages of the entire civilian population of Germany. Heinrich Himmler is so confident of success that he predicts that in a hundred and twenty years the entire German people should once more be pure-blooded Aryans.

Himmler knows that the realization of his Aryan vision depends above all on the SS becoming the most powerful organization in the Nazi party and in the German state. Already, Hitler has given the SS the role of carrying out police and intelligence duties within the party. Himmler is quick to seize the opportunity to expand his power.

In 1931, Himmler recruits a 33-year-old ex-Naval officer, Reinhard Heydrich, to found an SS security service. The establishment of the SD will be the first stage in Himmler's creation of an SS state within a state.

[dramatic music]

In 1932, two elections for the presidency of Germany deliver to Hitler 30 percent of the national vote. In the July parliamentary elections, Hitler campaigns in 50 cities in the space of two weeks. His efforts are amply rewarded. The party wins over 13 million votes and 230 seats in the Reichstag. Hitler demands the post of Chancellor. Parliament refuses.

Yet another election on November the 6th sees the Nazi vote fall by 2 million. The Communists increase their vote by almost 1 million and win 100 seats. With no party having an overall majority, the conservatives in parliament choose an alliance with the Nazis. Hitler's price for cooperation is the Chancellorship. This time he is not refused.

In spite of his growing power within the party, Heinrich Himmler is not awarded a ministerial post in the new government. But the man Hitler calls, "My loyal Heinrich," does not complain to his Fuhrer. Himmler's ambition extends far beyond the control of a mere government department.

During his youth, Himmler had spent 3 years as a student of agriculture. In the college fencing fraternity, to which Himmler belonged, Jörg Lanz's occultist periodical, *Ostara*, was widely read. Of all the prophecies made by Lanz, one would become Himmler's obsession.

On astrological grounds, Lanz foretold the invasion of Europe from the East. Himmler comes to believe that it is the destiny of the SS to repel the coming assault. The great battles he foresees will be a prelude to the final victory of the Aryans. Already, Himmler has identified the figure of German history who will become his idol and his inspiration.

King Heinrich I, German King of the Saxons, had in the 10th century fought and conquered the Slavic tribes of the East. So great will Himmler's devotion to the king become, that he will make an annual pilgrimage to Heinrich's tomb. He will believe himself the reincarnation of the king and the recipient of psychic messages from the spirit of the dead ruler.

Himmler believes that his divine mission is to complete the work of King Heinrich. He will create from the SS, a knightly order which will rule the coming Aryan empire. But for a time, at least, Himmler's visions of the future must take second place to practical politics.

From 1933, Himmler's objective is to win control of Germany's many state police forces. The major obstacle to his ambition is Hermann Goering. Goering is now minister president of Prussia and chief of the Prussian secret police, the Gestapo. Goering sees himself as prime candidate for the job of chief of a new unified German police force.

In Goering's campaign to eliminate Prussian Communists and all others opponents of National Socialism, he employs the SA as auxiliaries to the police and the Gestapo. The Berlin SA are the most brutal and the most feared storm troop detachments in Germany. Their hatred of the middle classes almost equals their hatred of Jews and Communists. But Goering is unconcerned. "It is not my business to do justice," he proclaims. "It is my business to annihilate and exterminate. That is all."

In the capital and throughout Prussia, Goering unleashes a reign of terror in which thousands are interned in SA concentration camps. The situation is fast becoming a national scandal. The party supporters amongst the middle and upper classes are outraged. Hitler is persuaded that command of a unified German police force cannot be entrusted to Goering. Himmler has won a major victory. One by one, the state police forces will fall under his control. In April 1934, Himmler wins the greatest prize of all. He succeeds in forcing Goering to hand over the control of the Gestapo. Now only one force stands between Himmler and the power he seeks.

[dramatic music playing]

Spring 1934: Ernst Röhm, leader of the SA, conducts his own version of Hitler's flag consecration ritual. It is the sign to the 4 million strong SA of Röhm's power and independence. Röhm's intention is to create from the SA a new National

Socialist German army, with himself as its Commander-in-Chief. The regular army command is becoming increasingly anxious.

Undercover of inspecting a naval exercise, Hitler holds a secret meeting with the army Generals. He gives them his assurance that, in exchange for their support, the army will continue to be Germany's only military force. Hitler promises that Röhm will be dealt with. The agent of his destruction is to be Himmler's SS.

Himmler and his deputy Heydrich contrived evidence that Röhm and the SA are planning a coup against Hitler. A list of the supposed conspirators is drawn up. It includes not only the leadership of the SA but all those who have opposed the growing power of the SS.

The bloodbath that Himmler unleashes on June the 30th, 1934, will become known as the Night of the Long Knives. Up to 500 will be murdered by SS executions. The murder of the SA leadership is greeted with relief by the German army. On the death of President Hindenburg, on the 2nd of August, 1934, and the confirmation of Hitler as President of Germany, the army willingly changes its oath of allegiance. Loyalty is now sworn, not to the German state or to the constitution, but to Adolf Hitler himself.

[German soldiers chanting the oath of allegiance]

The true victor of the Night of the Long Knives is not the German army -- it is the SS. On July the 20th, 1934, a grateful Fuhrer decrees that the SS is to be an independent organization within the party. What is more, ignoring his pledge that the army is to be the Reich's only military force, he gives permission to the SS to form its own military unit. In time the Waffen, or armed, SS will number almost one million men.

By the summer of 1934, Himmler has won total independence for his SS elite. His Eugenics program is established. He has begun the process of winning control of all German police and security services. With Hitler's blessing, he has created the nucleus of an SS army. Heinrich Himmler is now free to put into effect the next phase of his plan for the SS: the creation of a mystical order of Teutonic Knights, an order which will dominate the coming Aryan millennium.

[End of documentary]

Ein Volk, ein Reich, ein Fuhrer: one race, one government, one religion.

You'd better wake up out there, or the adepts have you by the neck, and they're holding you over a tub of sheep dip, dummies. Don't miss tomorrow night's episode of the Hour of the Time.

Good night, and God bless you all.

(closing music: continuation of the dramatic music used in the documentary)

Hour 41: The Occult and the Third Reich (Himmler the Mystic) (aired March 2nd, 1994)

You're listening to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

[Carolyn Nelson] And I'm Carolyn Nelson.

And that last hour is going to be a hard one to follow, folks.

Say, did you hear the one about Hilary? She wanted this dude killed, so she hired these three Israelis who dressed up like Elizabeth Taylor, Richard Burton, and Michael Jackson. And the Secret Service just waved them right on in the gate into the White House. Never mind that the Secret Service don't guard the gate -- it's the White House police. Of course, nobody escorted them into the White House. They didn't have any security passes. Nobody checked their credentials. No, they just waved them right on in. And these three Israelis -- all decked out in all this make-up and stuff, looking like Tammy Faye Baker -- just walked right in and shot this dude named Foster, and he just dropped dead right there on the ground floor of the White House. And nobody heard anything. Nobody knew nothin'.

This happened early in the morning. And then, not 'til one o'clock, they found this guy sitting at his desk, dead. Yup! And Clinton, he just had a fit, you know. He just flew right off the handle, and had the Secret Service -- ordered them to take this dude out, this dead body, ferret him out to this park, this strange park that nobody knows about, you see, and propped him up there until somebody found him (laughs). And he had a trigger print on his thumb that just wouldn't go away (laughs).

Folks, Hilary Rodham Clinton didn't get to the White House by being so absolutely stupid. You see, you're the sheeple, not her. You see, if she was the sheeple, she'd be sitting in your living room and you'd be in the White House. Don't you guys understand that?

Welcome to the last episode of Mystery Babylon!

[playing audio from the 1991 History Channel documentary *The Occult History of the Third Reich, Part Four: Himmler The Mystic*, narrated by Patrick Allen]

==

Nazi Germany, a state in which children have become a national obsession. Hitler has proclaimed: "...it must be considered reprehensible to withhold healthy children from the nation. If the fertility of the healthiest bearers of the nationality is consciously and systematically promoted, the result will be a race which has eliminated the germs of our present physical and hence spiritual decay." In the doctrines of National Socialism, this spiritual decay has but one cause: the dilution of the Aryan race by the blood of inferior peoples. Only by breeding from the racially purest can the greatness of the Aryans be restored.

In the vanguard of the Nazi racial mission is Hitler's "Praetorian Guard," the SS. Before he can enter the SS elite, a candidate must have his German ancestry proved back to the year 1750. Before marriage, the prospective bride of an SS man is subject to rigorous racial investigation. From the offspring of Hitler's guard, many generations in the future is intended to come the racially purest of German stock, a superior breed of human born to rule. The origins of this terrifying vision are strange and contradictory, an unlikely union between the teachings of a modern scientific movement and the esoteric doctrines of the occult.

By the late 1920s, the German scientific and medical world had wholeheartedly embraced a new movement: the science of eugenics. The founder of eugenics is an Englishman -- Sir Francis Galton, the cousin of Charles Darwin. The aim of eugenics, Galton had written, is "to breed out feeble constitutions and petty and ignoble instincts, and to breed in those which are vigorous, noble and social."

To the disciples of eugenics -- the intelligent and the industrious -- the mentally ill, the criminal and the alcoholic are so because they carry within them the traits of their parents. The fear is that inferior types, by breeding faster than those of more valuable stock, will produce a catastrophic decline in the quality of the human race. Only by the most drastic measures, it is believed, can disaster be averted.

The solution favored by the eugenics movement is the legal control of human breeding. Laws must be passed for the compulsory sterilization of the feeble-minded, the alcoholic, the insane, and the pauper. At the same time, valuable members of society are to be encouraged to have the largest possible number of children.

In the 1920s, while eugenics in Europe is still in the realms of scientific theory, in the United States of America it has long since been put into practice. The state of North Dakota had banned marriage for alcoholics, the insane, and those suffering from tuberculosis, as early as the turn of the century. In 1907, the state of Indiana had passed the world's first law allowing sterilization of the mentally ill and criminally insane. By 1930, twenty-eight American states had passed similar laws, and fifteen thousand people in mental hospitals and prisons had been compulsory sterilized. By 1939, the figure will have reached thirty thousand.

The health office of the government of the German Weimar Republic makes a detailed study of American eugenic laws. It is deeply impressed by America's sterilization campaign, and leading German eugenicists praise U.S. restrictions on the immigration of foreigners and the laws passed in some southern states banning intermarriage between the races.

There is a growing concern in German medical circles that Germany is being left behind in the struggle for racial improvement. By 1927, eugenics, now with a new name, "racial hygiene," is rapidly gaining respectability in Germany. More and more university medical faculties offer courses in the subject. An institute specializing in racial hygiene is founded by the German health office. The task of the Kaiser-Wilhelm Institute is to study means of halting what an influential reporter called "the physical and mental degeneration of the German people." Racial hygiene has also become a central pillar in the strange ideology of a rising political party.

Adolf Hitler had spent much of the year 1924 in prison for his part in an attempted coup against the Bavarian government. While in prison, he'd read a recently published and widely praised textbook on human heredity and racial hygiene. He'd also written his political testament, *Mein Kampf*. In *Mein Kampf*, Hitler's commitment to the doctrines of racial hygiene is made clear. "The state," he writes, "must set race at the center of all life. It must see to it that there is only one disgrace: to bring children into the world despite one's own sickness and deficiencies. Here, the state must act as guardian of a millennial future in the face of which the wishes and selfishness of the individual appear as nothing." To Hitler, the millennial future which the state must defend is the coming triumph of Aryan man.

The Nazi faith in the destiny of the Aryan race is not the creation of Adolf Hitler, nor does it spring from the movement for racial hygiene. Its origins lie in the teachings of mystics, clairvoyants and secret societies dedicated to the occult.

In the violent aftermath of the first World War, an increasing fascination with the mystical and the esoteric had swept the German aristocratic and educated classes. So widespread is the influence of mystical doctrines that even one of German's most powerful generals believes that national salvation lies in reviving the worship of the Norse god, Wotan.

General Erich Ludendorff, hero of the Great War and former chief of the German general staff, freely admits that he believes he is in psychic communion with the Nordic race soul. In 1923, Ludendorff had led an abortive coup in Bavaria. His ally was the little known political agitator Adolf Hitler.

Many of the members of Ludendorff's circle, including his future wife, are closely associated with an influential occultist group calling itself the Edda Society. The Edda Society is founded in December 1925 by Rudolf John Gorsleben. Some years earlier, Gorsleben had been active in extreme nationalist politics. He had been a speaker at meetings of the occultist Thule Society, and had founded a political movement with the anti-Semite Julius Streicher. Streicher would later become a key figure in the infant Nazi party.

Gorsleben then abandons politics. He immerses himself in the task of deciphering the ancient Nordic script of the runes and penetrating the secrets of the Icelandic verses known as the Edda. In these, Gorsleben believes can be rediscovered the priceless, magical heritage of the vanished Aryan god-men. In widely-read periodicals, Gorsleben and the Edda occultists teach the traces of the blood of the Aryans are present in the German people. Warning against racial dilution, Gorsleben writes: "Remember, God dwells within you." It is a creed which will become a life-long conviction of Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer of the SS.

As a youth, Himmler had avidly consumed the writings of the German occultists. He'd grown obsessed with astrology, spiritualism, and herbalism. Above all, he had adopted as his own the mystical doctrine of the Aryan. If, as Himmler had come to believe, the blood of the Aryans runs most strongly in the veins of Germanic peoples then, by breeding from the purest individuals, a race of super-humans could be produced, a race in which the Aryan's psychic powers would grow ever stronger. Himmler, trained as an agriculturist and devoted to the occult, is embarking on the strangest eugenics experiment in history.

By 1934, a year after the Nazis seize Euro(?) power in Germany, Himmler has firmly established the entry requirements for membership of his SS. The SS Race and Resettlement Bureau investigates the racial ancestry of every applicant. Candidates for membership of Himmler's elite must also submit to a rigorous physical examination. Only those of strongly Nordic appearance who are free from bodily defects and of good proportion and stature are accepted. Then begins a year-long process of transformation.

Central to the SS man's training is immersion in the cult of the Aryan and the ideology of National Socialism. He must also master the extraordinary set of doctrines enshrined in the SS catechism. It is a catechism in which God is the race. "Why do we believe in Germany and the Führer? Because we believe in God, we believe in Germany, which He created, and in the Führer Adolf Hitler whom He has sent us. Why do you obey? From inner conviction, from belief in Germany, in the Führer, in the movement, in the SS, and from loyalty."

On November the 9th, the anniversary of the coup of 1923, the day symbolized by the Rune of Remembrance, the SS candidate swears the 'Kith and Kin' oath. In it, he binds himself and his future family to obey the SS marriage law. None will marry unless the union is approved by the SS Race and Resettlement Bureau. Henceforth, the SS man's family are entitled to wear the coveted badge of SS clan membership, a sunflower bearing the rune of fertility.

The strict racial qualifications for SS marriages are widely praised by the scientists and medical men of Germany's racial hygiene movement. Inspired by the example of the SS, measures are already underway to control the breeding of Germany's civilian population. Within months of Hitler's becoming Chancellor of Germany, the first in a series of eugenic laws is passed. The law for the prevention of genetically-diseased offspring establishes a vast network of genetic health courts. These have the power to order that individuals suffering from any of a range of mental or physical ailments be sterilized. The campaign is organized on a massive scale. One thousand seven hundred genetic health courts will, in 1934 alone, order over fifty-six thousand sterilizations. Within ten years, almost four hundred thousand Germans will have been sterilized.

In support of the German sterilization campaign, the Reich Health Office in German medical journals published graphic illustrations of the cost to the public of maintaining the mentally and physically handicapped. One poster insists, "We do not stand alone." While a German mother holds her baby, a man holds a shield inscribed with the 1933 sterilization law. Around them are arrayed the flags of nations that have already legalized compulsory sterilization.

The second major eugenics law is designed to control the breeding of the population at large. The law for the protection of the genetic health of the German people requires that all those who wish to marry submit to a medical examination. Marriage is totally forbidden to those suffering from diseases believed to be hereditary.

The third eugenic measure is passed in the autumn of 1935. Physicians of the racial hygiene movement had long argued that intermarriage between the races is genetically harmful, producing degenerate offspring. The law for the protection of German blood and German honor forbids marriage between Jews and non-Jews. Following this new measure, racial hygienists devise complex formulae for calculating the proportions of Jewish blood which each partner can possess if marriage is to be allowed. The massive task of racially investigating all those wishing to marry is entrusted to the SS Race and Resettlement Bureau.

Heinrich Himmler's vision of the SS has from the beginning extended far beyond his eugenic project to breed a race of pure-blooded Aryans. His intention was to create a military-religious order, an order steeped in Aryan mysticism. Himmler has pronounced: "We assemble and march according to unalterable laws as a National Socialist order of Nordic men, and as a sworn community on our way to a far future."

In devising rituals and practices for his Nordic order, Himmler has looked for inspiration to the Teutonic tribes of Germany's distant past. On Himmler's instructions, SS archaeologists from the Race and Resettlement Bureau are intensely researching the history of races they believe to be of Aryan descent. To advise him in his search for the religion of the ancient Teutonic tribes, Himmler has recruited into the SS a renowned Germanic occultist, a man whose claim is to be the last in a long line of Aryan priest-kings.

Karl Maria Wiligut was born in Vienna in 1866. During the Great War, he'd risen to the rank of colonel in the Austrian army. Wiligut claims to possess ancestral clairvoyant memory, the power to recall the history and experiences of the Germans over thousands of years. He believes that in himself is an unusually pure strain of the normally latent psychic powers of the Aryans. Wiligut's clairvoyant visions have told him that German blood, culture, and history are far more ancient than historians and scientists can know. According to Wiligut, the history of the Aryans had begun in 228,000 B.C., an era in which there were three suns in the sky and the world was populated by giants and other fantastic creatures. Wiligut's own royal line he claims to have originated in union between the gods of the air and water in the very earliest days of the earth. Wiligut claims that amongst his ancestors are many of the greatest of Germanic heroes. All of Wiligut's line through the ages has remained faithful to the occult traditions of the Aryan Germans.

Impressed by Wiligut's clairvoyant powers, Himmler accepts Willigut into his SS and appoints him head of the Race and Resettlement Bureau's Department of Prehistory. In a remarkably short time, Wiligut will rise to the rank of SS brigadier on Himmler's personal staff.

By 1934, Himmler's SS is becoming one of the most powerful organizations in the Reich. Germany's state police forces are one by one falling under Himmler's control. The SS is responsible for all intelligence and security duties in the Nazi party. The SS Race and Resettlement Bureau is dramatically expanding as it polices the national eugenics program. The SS is rapidly becoming a state within the Nazi state.

Now Heinrich Himmler, with the help of Karl Wiligut, plans the strangest of all his creations -- an SS spiritual center, an order castle for his Germanic brotherhood. The castle of Wewelsburg had been built in the early 1600s on the site of a 10th century Saxon fort. Set in the romantic surroundings of Paderborn in Westphalia, Wewelsburg had made a deep impression on Heinrich Himmler. "We had been looking for a castle for our SS for a long time," Himmler confides. "I have found a suitable ruined castle dating back to Germanic prehistory." In late 1934, the SS purchases the sacred site and begins the massive task of reconstruction.

Karl Wiligut had accompanied Himmler on his earliest visits to the castle. His researches had revealed an ancient prophecy. "Here in writing," reports Wiligut, "is the prophecy concerning the great determining battle of which we spoke." Wiligut has unearthed a Westphalian legend in which Wewelsburg is destined to become a magical German stronghold in a future conflict between Europe and Asia. The prophecy coincides exactly with Himmler's belief that the SS is to be the bastion of Europe against a massive onslaught from Asia. Already, Himmler's order is preparing for the millennial conflict to come. The SS is to become the most formidable military force in Europe.

On December the 14th, 1934, Himmler orders the formation of an SS military detachment, the SS-VT. Almost from the outset, the military training of the SS-VT is revolutionary. The emphasis is less on the barrack square drill favored by the regular army, and on the creation of a new breed of military athlete. In the words of an SS-VT commander: "Training is designed to produce a subtle and adaptable type of soldier: athletic and bearing, capable of more than ordinary endurance." Unlike the regular army, the SS-VT is organized into highly mobile battle groups. It is also the first German military formation to adopt camouflage uniforms, and to the astonishment of army commanders, to maneuver with live ammunition. To the SS, casualties in training are simply to be expected.

While the SS-VT is to become an elite force in the service of the Führer and the Aryan mission, another arm of the SS is already at war. The SS [Death's Head] Formation is commanded by Theodor Eicke. It accepts without question the Nazi slogan: National Socialism, the expression of our biological knowledge. The task of the Death's Head is to isolate and, if necessary, destroy those it believes (are) infectious germs in the body of the German people: Jews, homosexuals, political dissidents, and social misfits. The means of quarantine is the concentration camp.

As the SS empire spreads its roots deep into the fabric of the Nazi state, Heinrich Himmler, advised by Karl Wiligut, continues to develop and refine the rituals of his order. The officer class envisaged by Himmler, as the priests and high priests of the SS, are to be distinguished by the award of special symbols of their place in the hierarchy. At Himmler's personal discretion, members of the SS core of leaders can be awarded the SS dagger. The dagger is the visible sign of SS nobility and of the favor of the all-powerful Himmler.

Irrespective of rank, proven SS men are presented with a silver Death's Head signet ring. The ring is based on a design created for Himmler by Karl Wiligut. Its symbols are of deep mystical significance: the Sig rune -- emblem of victory; the Hagal rune -- the rune of hail, destruction, and enclosing. Included is the personal rune group of the Wiligut ancestral tradition, and the swastika, symbol of the destiny of Aryan man. In 1937, Himmler decrees the rings of all dead SS men are to be returned to him for safekeeping in a locked chest deep in the castle of Wewelsburg. The return of the ring is a symbol of the dead man's eternal community with the SS order.

The transformation of Himmler's SS castle is, by now, gaining momentum. Under the architect Hermann Bartels, the west and south wings have been fully renovated. The moat and gardens have been restored and a bridge built leading to the imposing main gates.

[audio of documentary abruptly ends for a few seconds and William Cooper's voice suddenly cuts in]

[WC]: [nothing like that] don't look for the Secret Service to give you justice. They're not the justice department. They're not a police force, folks. They're assigned to the President for one purpose: to protect the President, folks. You're not going to see 'em in Chicago hanging the President. That's not their job. Their job is to protect the President, and they will. If the President commits murder in front them, they will protect the President. You know what, I think Radio Freemasonry is turning in to *The Red Skeleton Show*. What do you think?

[CN]: It makes me wonder what's going on next week, because usually there's something like this three or four days before a big item like NAFTA or something...

[WC]: Yeah. Once again, once again old Tommy baby's got you guys out there chasing your tails. When are you going to wise up, folks? Or maybe we ought to do that, Carolyn. I mean, that's a hell of a comedy routine. I mean I was laughing for a whole solid hour. I couldn't stop laughing.

[CN]: You really were. You really were. (WC laughs) I never saw you cut up like that. (CN laughs)

[WC]: Well I never thought I'd hear anything like that in my whole life, much less hear those callers calling in who were swallowing it hook, line and sinker. Did you hear the last guy?

[CN]: Yeah.

[WC]: He was trying to connect a plane crash in Arkansas with everything that Skolnick was saying. And Skolnick said, "Uh, I don't know anything about that." (WC laughs) Ah, don't go away sheeple. I just love it.

[documentary resumes, narrator continues]:

By 1938, the east wing, too, has been completely renovated. True to the deeply secretive nature of the SS, Himmler has banned all but the most trustworthy from visiting Wewelsburg. Bartels has virtually excluded local companies and labor from the project. Instead, contingents of the Pioneer Core have been drafted to the region from all over Germany.

In the renovation of the castle interior, Himmler spares no expense. Paneling and furnishings, doors and balustrades are all of solid oak. An elaborately carved spiral staircase is built in workshops on the site. Everywhere there is the finest of decorative wrought iron work. The chambers of SS leaders, each room named after a Germanic hero, are to be filled with appropriate relics. Arms and armor are collected from all over Germany. Himmler has pronounced, "May the spirit of the most distant past be the future in this castle."

By the late 1930s, the National Socialist aim of increasing the population of racially desirable Germans has been given the highest national priority. The means is to remove German women from paid employment and return them to the home. Their task will be to produce the greatest possible number of children. Soon after the foundation of the Nazi state, government loans worth a year's salary are rewarded to men whose wives leave their jobs. The amount, which must be repaid, is reduced for every child the family produces. By 1940, 1,700,000 loans will have been granted.

In 1938, a decree is issued requiring that all public officials marry or resign. All couples married for five years who are still childless incur a tax penalty. Grounds for divorce are broadened to include the inability of a wife to bear children. Abortion is illegal for those classed as Aryans, but encouraged for non-Aryans. At the instigation of Heinrich Himmler, laws are passed removing all legal obstacles to Aryan women bearing children outside marriage. Himmler has decreed, "Sacred to us is every mother of good blood." Of the greatest value of all are the offspring of his SS elite.

In December 1935, Himmler had founded the project which would remain his obsession for almost ten years. He calls it the "Lebensborn" -- the spring of life. It is a chain of maternity homes and breeding centers for his SS racial elite. In Himmler's words, "A nursery garden for pure Germanic blood." In Germany, there will be ten such homes, each veiled in secrecy and under heavy SS guard. "I fostered rumors," Himmler admits, "to the effect that every single woman desiring a child could turn to Lebensborn in the strictest confidence. We only recommend genuinely valuable men as procreation helpers."

In spite of the stringent racial qualifications required, there is no shortage of prospective mothers. The Nazi league of German maidens has officially stated, "Although not every German girl can hope to find a husband, you can all become mothers." An SS Race and Resettlement resolution of 1937 notes: "The Lebensborn will bring them together with a man, not casually, but in full awareness that they are fulfilling a noble duty towards the nation. At a naming ceremony, the children of the Lebensborn project are immediately immersed in the Germanic ritual of the SS clan. Males are touched on the forehead with an SS dagger, symbolizing their first initiation into Himmler's mystical order. Mothers of SS children are told, "Remember that you are but a link in the clan's endless chain."

For years, Himmler has pondered the question of how his SS order is to be governed. Taking his inspiration from the Knights of the Round Table, Himmler has appointed a shadowy inner council of twelve chosen SS leaders. The ritual setting for their deliberations is the castle of Wewelsburg.

In the massive north tower of the castle is an inner sanctum. A vast circular hall, its walls twelve feet thick. Around the chamber stand twelve columns. On the floor is a mosaic of swastikas forming a sun wheel of twelve radiating spokes. In this strange chamber, Himmler and his chosen twelve commune with the Aryan race soul and the spirits of the Germanic ancestors. Deep below the inner sanctum cut into the solid bedrock is the crypt, Valhalla. Here are performed ceremonies of the dead. In the center, the wooden coats of arms of a dead SS knight are to be ceremonially burned. Twelve stoned plinths around the walls will hold twelve urns, each of which will one day hold the armorial ashes of a departed knight. In the crypt burns an eternal flame, symbol of the continuity of the order and its eternal mission in the service of the race.

In 1937, Heinrich Himmler, speaking to senior German army officers, proclaims, "The next ten years will see a war of annihilation conducted by the subhuman enemies of the entire world against Germany, the colonel of the Teutonic race and guardian of the culture of the human race. It will mean," warns Himmler, "the existence or non-existence of that white race of which we are the leading nation." In reality, the war of racial annihilation foreseen by Himmler will be the war about to be waged by Germany.

For Adolf Hitler, the first step in the creation of a greater Germanic empire has been to order in March 1936 the reoccupation of the demilitarized Rheinland. It is a blatant contravention of the Treaty of Versailles. In the wake of the occupation, the SS becomes deeply involved in the first sterilization campaign to be waged on grounds of race. In a joint operation mounted by the Gestapo and Genetic Health Courts, five hundred children of mixed race, the offspring of black French soldiers, are seized and sterilized. It is a grim warning of horrors to come.

By now, the racial doctrines of National Socialism have found ardent support far beyond the frontiers of the German Reich. In the United States of America, the German American Bund, led by Fritz Kuhn, is secretly supported by the German Foreign Office. In Belgium, the ultra-nationalist Rexist party is founded by Leon DeGrelle. In Britain, Oswald Mosley and the British Fascists ardently support Hitler's new Germany.

In Austria, Seyss-Inquart, leader of the Austrian National Socialists, is appointed Minister of the Interior in response to German pressure. It is he who, after violence orchestrated by the Austrian SS, invites German forces to enter Austria and restore order. Austria is to become a province of Germany. In the wake of the occupation, SS troops of the Gestapo and SD Security Service arrest seventy-six thousand Austrians and commit them to concentration camps.

Next on Hitler's agenda is Czechoslovakia. The leader of the National Socialists in the German populated region of Czechoslovakia is Konrad Henlein. In the months following the German occupation of Austria, Henlein provokes a crisis in the Sudeten. His followers, armed by Germany and supported by detachments of the SS, begin an uprising that will culminate in Hitler's occupation of Czechoslovakia. As the German army consolidates its hold on Czechoslovakia, Himmler dispatches an SS brigadier to Prague. His mission is to organize the deportation of six million Czechs and the resettlement of Czech agricultural lands by racial Germans. In Himmler's plan, the settlers would be selected on grounds of racial purity by his own Race and Resettlement Bureau. Even though Hitler has already spoken favorably of the mass deportation of Czechs, Himmler's plan comes to nothing. The German armaments industry covets Czech factories and labor, and will tolerate no disruption.

In Poland, Himmler's Aryan vision will encounter no such obstacle. In *Mein Kampf*, Hitler had written, "We begin where we left off six hundred years ago. We put an end to the perpetual Germanic march to the south and west of Europe, and turn our eyes towards the lands of the east." In the summer of 1939, Hitler summons Heinrich Himmler to his Bavarian mountain retreat. In the coming invasion of Poland, the SS is to play a key role. It is to ruthlessly eliminate from the Polish population all those who might carry the seeds of a future class of leaders. Under Himmler's head of security, Reinhard Heydrich, five SS Einsatzgruppen extermination squads are to follow close behind the invading German armies. In Poland, Himmler will embark on the first stage of his long cherished dream. The SS is to be the vanguard of a great Germanic migration.

In the invasion of Poland on September the 1st 1939, the SS-VT and Death's Head formations are for the first time thrown into battle. In spite of a lack of experienced leaders, Himmler's hand-picked fighters prove fanatical in the attack, undeterred by heavy casualties. Unlike their army comrades, the SS have been instilled with the knowledge that they are in the service of a great mission -- a conquest and enslavement of an inferior race and the foundation of an Aryan empire.

While the SS military formations bask in the success of their Polish campaign, Reinhard Heydrich's Einsatzgruppen unleash a reign of terror. Tens of thousands of Poles are seized and shot. The victims are teachers, doctors, officials, aristocrats, Catholic priests and Jews. Hitler had ordered, "Whatever we find in the shape of an upper class in Poland is to be liquidated." To the horror of regular army commanders, the SS is reveling in its murderous task. By September the 27th, less than a month after the invasion, Heydrich estimates of the Polish upper classes in the occupied territories, only three percent are still present.

For his services in the cause of racial conquest, Heinrich Himmler is rewarded by a grateful Führer. On September the 29th, Hitler informs him that he is to be appointed Reich's Commissioner for the strengthening of Germanism. The resettlement of occupied territories is to be Himmler's exclusive province. The east is to belong to the SS.

The war into which Europe has been plunged is eagerly embraced by a rapidly expanding armed SS. By June 1940, Heinrich Himmler's army, now renamed the Waffen-SS, is a formidable motorized force of a hundred thousand men. In the Low Countries in France, the new divisions hunger for glory. While the exploits of his military athletes win the grudging respect of the regular army and, in Hitler's words, "pay the butcher's bill," Himmler's thoughts are elsewhere. To him, the war in Western Europe is merely a distraction. Only in the east can the destiny of the SS be truly fulfilled.

Since early 1939, an SS plan had been in preparation for the repatriation of up to thirty million racial Germans resident in foreign countries. An agreement had been struck with the Soviet Union and the Baltic states for the transfer of their German populations to the Reich. Their actual destination will be Poland. The SS Race and Resettlement Bureau carefully investigates the ancestry of the first wave of migrants, in all, almost half a million people. They are presented with Reich citizenship and dispatched to SS transit camps. Their fate, according to Himmler's blueprint for the east, is to become a new Germanic peasantry. Their guardians and rulers are to be the aristocracy of the SS.

By mid 1941, one million Poles and Polish Jews have been driven from their homes and deported to the area of Poland known as the Government-General. The Jewish people of the conquered territories have been forced into ghettos to await a fate as yet unknown.

Two hundred thousand repatriated Germans have been settled on the seized lands. Yet, resettlement is only the first phase in Himmler's grand design. The second is the repossession of whatever Aryan blood can be found in the Polish population. On Himmler's orders, Poles are to be subject to a massive program of racial screening. Tens of thousands of Polish children are examined by the SS Race and Resettlement Bureau. The shape of the face, eye and hair color, even x-rays of the skull, are used by SS physicians to detect traces of Nordic blood. Of those rejected as racially undesirable, many are sterilized. Those deemed of racial value are forcibly taken west. After a period of what the SS term "regermanization" in the Lebensborn home, they are to be adopted by SS families. For Himmler, the seizure of children of Aryan stock is a long-term project. Of more pressing importance is the rapid expansion of the Waffen-SS.

In Himmler's eyes, traditional ideas of nationality are meaningless. All that matters is race. His aim is the creation of a Pan-European brotherhood of the racially pure, an international SS ready for the coming crusade against the Slavs and Bolshevism. The National Socialist movements of the Nordic countries will prove fertile grounds for recruitment. The Viking Division, composed of Norwegian, Danish, Dutch, and Flemish, is the first of thirteen SS divisions to be raised from Nordic or Germanic foreigners. All are formations entirely composed of volunteers. To the members of Himmler's foreign legions in the racial vision of the SS lies the future of Europe.

With the seeds of a Pan-European SS army sewn in the conquered west, and the battles for the east which Himmler foresees drawing ever closer, the castle of Wewelsburg takes on an even more powerful significance. Wewelsburg, spiritual center of the SS order, is to become a city. The north tower, with its sacred hall and underground vault, is to be the center point of vast circular grounds. Surrounding them is to be built an enormous complex of administrative centers, libraries, and research institutes for astrology, astronomy, and Teutonic history. Ringing the city will be walls over forty feet high. Even the ground plan of this, the SS Vatican, is of mystical significance. It represents the head of the spear, its tip pointing to the north. The cost of realizing Himmler's vision is to be three hundred million marks, an extraordinary sum. The entire project is to be completed sometime in the 1960s. By then, the SS will possess its own independent state, a state carved from the heartland of the Soviet Union.

To Heinrich Himmler, Operation Barbarossa, the invasion of the Soviet Union, promises the fulfillment of all his dreams. With victory will come the foundation of an SS kingdom with Heinrich Himmler, Grand Master of the SS order in supreme authority, with SS nobles ruling as the feudal overlords of Germanic settlers, the order will return to its millennial mission. From the SS peasant warrior, conqueror of the Slavs, will be bred over many generations the next phase in human evolution.

[end of documentary]

==

And of course, you all know the rest of the story. That was the last episode in our series on Mystery Babylon. There are forty-one tapes, folks, and that includes number thirty-three, which is the Luxor video. Send us a self-addressed, stamped envelope with one dollar, we'll send you a list of all available materials.

Also, don't forget, tomorrow is the last day that you can have your order postmarked for the family food storage unit -- one-year food supply for four people or two-year food supply for two adults. Remember, this is all adults -- four adults, two adults. Thirty-seven cases shipping weight is one thousand and seventy-eight pounds. The retail price $2,768. For listeners, $2,268 -- $500 discount. For CAJI members, a $768 discount -- CAJI members get it for $2,000. If it's not postmarked by tomorrow, no matter when we receive it, it will be sent back to you. This offer expires tomorrow, folks. Shipping costs are payable COD when the food is delivered, on everything offered on this food storage plan.

Hey, did you guys hear the story about the three Israelis? (laughs) Good night, folks, and God bless you all.

(closing music: The Ride Of The Valkyries by Richard Wagner from the opera Die Walküre)

Hour 42: Darkness (aired September 20th, 1996)

Welcome, once again, to the Hour of the Time. I'm William Cooper.

Ladies and gentlemen, make sure that you stay glued to your radio tonight as we bring you another in the never-ending series that we call Mystery Babylon.

(opening music: unknown orchestral music)

Tonight's episode, ladies and gentlemen, is entitled "Darkness."

[Reading from *The Veil of Isis*]:

There is no study so [intriguing and yet so mysterious then] that of the early religions of mankind. To trace back the worship of God to its simple origin, and to mark the gradual process of those degrading superstitions, and unhallowed rites which darkened, and finally extinguished His presence in the ancient world.

At first men enjoyed the blessings of nature as children do [in an age of innocence], without inquiring into causes. It was[, in fact,] sufficient for them that the earth gave them herbs, that the trees bore them fruit, that the stream quenched their thirst. They were happy, and every moment though unconsciously they offered a prayer of gratitude to Him whom as yet they did not know.

And then a system of theology arose amongst them vague and indefinite, as the waters of the boundless sea. They taught each other that the sun, the earth, the moon, and the stars were moved and illumined by a Great Soul which was the source of all life, which caused the birds to sing, the brooks to murmur, and the sea to heave. It was a sacred Fire which shone in the firmament, and in mighty flames. It was a strange Being which animated the souls of men, [and] which when the bodies died, returned to itself again.

[Ancient man] silently adored this Great Soul in the beginning, and spoke of Him with reverence, and sometimes [they] raised their eyes timidly to His glittering dwelling-place on high.

And soon they learned to pray. When those whom they loved lay dying, they uttered wild lamentations, and flung their arms despairingly towards the mysterious Soul; for in times of trouble the human mind so imbecile, so helpless, [always] clings [back] to something that is [much] stronger than itself.

As yet [in that time] they worshiped only the sun, the moon, and the stars -- and not as [God] but as visions of that Divine Essence, which alone ruled and pervaded the earth, the sky, and the sea.

They adored Him kneeling, with their hands clasped, and their eyes raised. They offered Him no sacrifices, they built Him no temples; [you see,] they were content to offer Him their hearts which were full of awe, in His own temple which was full of [the] grandeur [of nature]. [William Cooper: For the God they worshiped was, indeed, nature's God.] And it is said [by some] that there are yet some barbarous islands where men have no churches nor ceremonies, and where they [still] worship God, reflected in the work of His [uncountable] hands [William Cooper: in the mystery and the balance and the perfection of nature].

But[, you see,] they were not long content with this simple service.

[William Cooper: There were those amongst them who learned how to subvert and twist so that they could control the others around them.]

Prayer which had first been an inspiration fell into a system, and men already grown wicked prayed the Deity to give them abundance [with] wild beast's skins, and to destroy their enemies.

They ascended eminences, [mountaintops, and they built towers] as if hoping that thus [they're] being nearer God, He would prefer their prayers to those of their rivals. [And those who control those eminences became powerful. And] such is the origin of that superstitious reverence for high places which was universal throughout the whole [entire] heathen world.

[William Cooper: And then, it is clear in the ancient annals, someone came forth.]

...Orpheus was born. And he invented instruments which to his touch and to his lips, gave forth notes of surpassing sweetness, and with these melodies he enticed the wondering [innocent] savages into the recesses of the forest, and there[, there Orpheus] taught them precepts of obedience to the great Soul, and of loving-kindness towards each other in harmonious words[, and he became the high priest].

[And] so they devoted groves and forests to the worship of the Deity.

There were men who had watched Orpheus, and who had seen and envied his power over the herd who surrounded him[, for even then there were sheeple]. They resolved to imitate him, and having studied these barbarians, they banded together, and called themselves their priests. Religion -- is divine, but its ministers[, after all,] are men.

[William Cooper: And the idea, from the beginning, that imperfect men can rule imperfect men is flawed.]

[For] alas! sometimes they are demons with the faces and wings of angels.

[You see,] the simplicity of men, and the cunning of their priests has destroyed or corrupted all the religions of the world[, bar none].

[For] these priests[, ladies and gentlemen,] taught the people to sacrifice the choicest herbs and flowers. They taught them formulas of prayer, and bade them make so many obeisances to the sun, and to worship those flowers which opened their leaves when he rose, and which closed them as he set.

[William Cooper: For the great ball of fire that makes its way from dawn to dusk across the sky was seen as the savior to those who huddled in the cold darkness, surrounded by wild beasts of prey, and it was to that sun that they directed their worship. And the great symbol in the heaven of the power of God and the source of life on this earth. [sic] For remember, theirs were the worship of nature's God.]

They composed a language of symbols which was perhaps necessary, [and as time] since letters had not been invented, but which perplexed the people and perverted them from the worship of the one God.

[William Cooper: Those symbols are still used upon the sheeple of the world today...the great herd.]

[Thus, the sun represented the great doctrine of this religion and the moon represented the church, reflecting the pure light of the sun. And] the sun and moon were worshiped as emblems of God, and fire[, by the philosophers of fire,] as an emblem of the sun, water as an emblem of the moon [which, by faith, reflected the pure light of its master].

The serpent [represented the full body of the priesthood, the initiates,] was to be worshiped..as an emblem of wisdom and eternal youth, since it renews its skin every year, and thus [and] periodically casts off all symptoms of old age [and begins anew -- reborn, if you will].

And the bull, [the] most vigorous of animals, and whose horns resemble those of the crescent moon [was also worshiped].

The priests observed the avidity with which the barbarians adored these symbols, and increased them.

[William Cooper: It was a time of great mystery and little understanding of any that was seen around them. To ancient man, the sun was seen to die and darkness descended around them, to the time of great danger and cold. And then, as if by magic, the sun was reborn each morning and made its way across the sky, were it became old and then died again. And they began to measure their world by the seasons of the sun, and their religion reflected all of this. And religions today, even though denying any connection with this ancient paganism, still reflects this exact religion in ceremonies and its holy days...even to the layout of its churches.]

To worship the visible is a disease of the soul inherent to all mankind, and the disease which these men could have healed [instead] they pandered to.

It is true that the first generation of men might have looked upon these merely as the empty symbols of a Divine Being, but it is also certain that in time the vulgar forgot the God in the emblem, and worshiped that which their fathers had only honored [and, therefore, the symbol became the god]. Egypt was the fountain-head of these idolatries, and it was in Egypt that the priests first applied real attributes to the sun, and to the moon whom they called his wife[, and sister, and mother. And the sun became Osiris, the moon became Isis, brother and sister, mother and son, husband and wife].

It may[, it may] perhaps[, for those of you who have not heard it, and maybe have not been listening to this broadcast for a great period of time...it may perhaps] interest you to listen to the first[, very first,] fable of the world.

From the midst of chaos was born [Nimrod (*note, the text reads Osiris)], and at his birth a voice was heard proclaiming -- "The ruler of all the earth is born."

[And] from the same dark and troubled womb were born [Semiramis (*note: the text reads, "Isis")] the Queen of Light, and...(*note: the text reads, "Typhon") the Spirit of Darkness.

This [Nimrod] traveled over the whole world, and civilized its inhabitants, and taught them the art of agriculture. [And his wife, Semiramis, built the first fortified cities and walls.] But on his return...the jealous [darkness (*note: text reads, "Typhon")] laid a stratagem for him, and in the midst of a banquet had him [slain (*note: text reads, "shut up in a chest which exactly fitted his body"]. He was nailed down in his prison, which cast into the [river (*note, text reads, "Nile")] floated down to the sea...which even in [that ancient] time...was never mentioned...but with marks of detestation.

[And] when [Semiramis] learnt these sad news she cut off a lock of her hair, and put on her mourning robes, and wandered through the whole country in search of the...dead body of her husband.

[William Cooper: Eventually, she found it. By casting a magic spell, a magical intercourse was obtained between Semiramis and the dead Nimrod from which a child emerged. The child was Tammuz. And Semiramis fed the infant with her finger instead of with her breast and put in every night into fire to render him immortal. And now, let me read you a later story of the same myth, only with different names. And [I have to depart] from my narration here and read this to you:]

[repeats text using the original names]: From the midst of chaos was born Osiris, and at his birth a voice was heard proclaiming -- "The ruler of all the earth is born."

[And] from the same dark and troubled womb were born Isis the Queen of Light, and Typhon the Spirit of Darkness.

This Osiris [moved] over the whole world, and civilized its inhabitants, and taught them the art of agriculture[, brought them together in societies for the mutual benefit and protection]. But on his return to Egypt the jealous Typhon laid a stratagem for him, and in the midst of a banquet had him shut up in a chest which exactly fitted his body. He was nailed down in his prison, which cast into the Nile floated down to the sea by the Taitic mouth, which even in the time of Plutarch was never mentioned by an Egyptian [expect with disdain and loathing].

When Isis [heard the news] she cut off a lock of her hair, and put on her mourning robes, and wandered through the whole country in search of the chest which contained the dead body of her husband.

At length she learnt that the chest had been carried by the waves to the shore of Byblos, and had there lodged in the branches of a tamarisk bush, which quickly shot up and became a large and beautiful tree, growing round the chest so that it could not be seen.

The king of the country amazed at the vast size the tree had so speedily acquired, ordered it to be cut down to be hewn into a pillar to support the roof of his palace -- the chest being still concealed in the trunk.

The voice which had spoken from Heaven at the birth of Osiris made known these things to poor Isis, who [then] went to the shore of Byblos and sat down silently by a fountain to weep. The damsels of the queen met her and accosted her, and the queen appointed her to be nurse to her child. And Isis fed the infant with her finger instead of with her breast, and put him every night into fire to render him immortal, while transforming herself into a swallow she hovered round the pillar which was her husband's tomb, and bemoaned her unhappy fate.

It happened that the queen thus discovered her, and shrieked when she saw her child surrounded by flames. By that cry she broke the charm and deprived him of immortality.

By that cry Isis was summoned back to her goddess-form, and stood before the awe-struck queen shining with light and diffusing sweet fragrances around.

She cut open the pillar, and took the coffin with her, and opened it in a desert. [And] there she embraced the cold corpse of Osiris, and wept bitterly.

(break music: dark, dramatic instrumental)

[Isis] returned to Egypt and hid the coffin in a remote place: but Typhon, hunting by moonlight, chanced to find it, and divided the corpse into fourteen pieces. Again Isis set out on her weary search throughout the whole land, sailing over the fenny parts in a boat made of papyrus. She recovered all the fragments except one which had been thrown into the sea. Each of these she buried in the place where she found it, which explains why in Egypt there are so many tombs of Osiris.

And instead of the limb which was lost, she gave the phallus to the Egyptians -- the disgusting worship of which was thence carried into Italy, into Greece, and into all the countries of the East.

[William Cooper: And today, people pay obeisance to this phallus when they stand in awe of the Washington Monument, or when they attend SPIKE training. For truly (laughs)...for truly, it is the shaft.]

When Isis died, she was buried in a grove near Memphis. Over her grave was raised a statue covered from head to foot with a black veil. And underneath was engraved these divine words: "I am all that has been, that is, that shall be, and none among mortals has yet dared to raise my veil."

Beneath this veil[, ladies and gentlemen,] are concealed all the mysteries and learning of the past. A young scholar, his fingers covered with the dust of venerable folios, his eyes weary and reddened by nightly toil will now attempt to lift a corner of this mysterious and sacred covering.

[William Cooper: The folios are the old books that I have discovered in the used bookstores across the country and around the world. And truly, in some of those dark and dim corners and shelves which have never been touched, I have literally been covered with the dust of years that have settled upon these ancient volumes. Those I could afford found their way into my library, where they still serve today.]

[You see,] these two Deities, Isis and Osiris were the parents of all the Gods and Goddesses of the Heathens, or were indeed those Gods themselves worshiped under [many] different names[: Nimrod, Semiramis, Isis, Osiris, Diana, Dionysus]. The fable itself was received into the mythologies of the Hindus and the Romans. Sira is said to have mutilated Brahma as Typhon did Osiris, and Venus to have lamented her slain Adonis, as Isis wept for her husband-god[, brother, son].

[And] as yet the sun and moon alone were worshiped under these two names. And as we have seen, besides these twin beneficial spirits, men who had begun to recognize sin in their hearts had created an Evil One who struggled with the power of light, and fought with them for the souls of men.

[I must tell you that in my studies I find that it has been natural, through all history,] for man to fabricate something that is worse than himself[, rather than take the responsibility upon his own shoulders]. [And] even in the theology of the American Indians which is the purest of the modern world, there is found a Mahitou or dark Spirit.

Osiris or the sun was now worshiped throughout the whole world, though under different names. He was the Mithra of the Persians, the Brahma of India, the Baal or Adonis of the Phoenicians[; he was] the Apollo of the Greeks, the Odin Of Scandinavia, the Hu of the Britons, and the Baiwe of the Laplanders.

Isis[, ladies and gentlemen,] also received the [name] of Islene, Ceres, Rhea, Venus, Vesta, Cybele, Niobe, Melissa -- Nehalennia in the North; Isi with the Indians; Puzza among the Chinese; and Ceridwen among the ancient Britons.

[In] the Egyptians were sublime philosophers who had dictated theology to the world. And in Chaldea arose the first astrologers who watched the heavenly bodies with curiosity as well as with awe, and who made divine discoveries, and who called themselves The Interpreters of God.

[And] to each star they gave a name, and to each day in the year they gave a star.

And the Greeks and Romans who were poets, wreathed these names into legends. Each name was a person, [and] each person was a god.

From these stories of the stars originated the angels of the Jews, the genii of the Arabs, the heroes of the Greeks, and the saints of the Romish Church.

[And then] corruption grew upon corruption, and superstition flung...black and hideous veil over the doctrines of religion. [You see,] a religion[, ladies and gentlemen,] is lost [-- utterly lost --] as soon as it loses its simplicity: truth has no mysteries: it is deceit alone that lurks in obscurity.

[William Cooper: It is only the lie that is hidden behind a door!]

Men multiplied God into a thousand names, and created Him always in their own image. Him, too, whom they had once deemed unworthy of any temple less noble than the floor of the earth and the vast dome of the sky [which He had created], they worshiped in caves, and then in temples which were made of the trunks of trees rudely sculptured, and ranged in rows to imitate groves [of trees], and with other trunks placed upon them transversely [William Cooper: to form the cross that is seen when you hold up your son behind some obstacle. [sic] They streak across the sky.]

[These] were the first buildings of worship erected by man from no reverence for the Deity, [or God,] but [only] to display that which they...conceived to be a stupendous effort in art [William Cooper: and to display their knowledge and power, so as to more adequately rule and subjugate the herd, the sheeple, the profane, humanity, that had not a clue -- and still doesn't, by the way.]

It may...be [necessary] to remind some of [you] that a superior being [-- God, if you will -- must view the elegant temples of the Romans, the gorgeous pagodas of India, and [the] Gothic cathedrals [of the Western world] with feelings similar to those with which we [might] contemplate the rude efforts of the early heathens [or a hill of ants], who deemed God unworthy of the fruits and flowers which he himself had made, and offered to him the entrails of beasts, and the hearts of human beings.

[William Cooper: Can you imagine the audacity, the arrogance of such a thing?]

We [can] compare[, ladies and gentlemen,] an ancient and fallen religion to the ship of the Argonauts, which the Greeks desiring to preserve to posterity, repairing in so many different ways, that at length there did not remain a fragment of [the original] vessel which had born to Colchis the conqueror of the Golden Fleece.

[So let's] pass over a lapse of [many, many] years [-- centuries, if you will --] and then contemplate the condition of [the] nations in whom religion had been first born. We find the Egyptians adoring the most common of plants, the most contemptible of beasts, the most hideous of reptiles. The solemnity and pomp of their absurd ceremonies held them up to the ridicule of the whole world.

Clemens of Alexandria describes one of their temples[, thusly quote]: "The walls shine with gold and silver, and with amber, and sparkle with the gems of India and Ethiopia: and the recesses are concealed by splendid curtains. But if you enter the penetralia, and inquire for the image of God for whose sake the fane was built; one of the Pastophori, or some other attendant on the temple approaches with a solemn and mysterious face, and putting aside the veil suffers you to obtain a glimpse of the divinity. [And] there[, upon an altar,] you behold a snake, [or] a crocodile, or a cat, or some other beast, a fitter inhabitant of a cavern, or a bog than of a temple."

[William Cooper: Or a giant penis, the phallus of Osiris, which Isis had substituted upon the altar of Egypt.]

The priests of Egypt [were] always impostors, but once so celebrated, had...degenerated into a race of jugglers [or circus, if you will].

Also the Chaldœans lived upon the fame of their fathers, and upon their own base trickeries.

[William Cooper: No one was honest anymore. No one could point to God. No one understood that all the symbols of the universe and in nature represented the power of an unseen God that the first men worshiped.]

The Brachmans or Brahmins, [whose] priests of India, once so virtuous and [celebrated as being] so wise...they too had fallen. Once they had forbidden the shedding of so much as an insect's blood: one day in the year alone, at the feast of Jagam, they were authorized to sacrifice the flesh of a beast, and from this many had refrained from attending, unable to conquer their feelings of abhorrence.

But now they had learnt from the fierce Scythians and from the Phoenicians who traded on their coasts to sacrifice the wife upon her husband’s pyre -- to appease the gentle Brahmah with the blood of men.

[William Cooper: And that ceremony continues to this day.]

Now the angels who had presided over them became savage demons, who scourged them on to cruel penances, [even] to life-times of suffering and famine.

[And] in the sacred groves where once the Brachman Fathers had taught their precepts of love, men emaciated, careworn, [even] dying, wandered sadly, waiting for death as tortured prisoners wait for their liberty.

But worse still, these wicked priests sought through the land for the most beautiful young women, and trained them to dance in the temples, and to entice the devotees to their arms with lustful attitudes and languishing looks, and with their voices which mingled harmoniously with the golden bells suspended on their feet. [William Cooper: They became prostitutes for the priesthood.] They sang hymns to the gods in public, and in private enriched the treasuries of the pagoda with their infamous earnings. [And] thus a pure and simple religion was debased by the avarice and lewdness of its priests: till the temples became a den of thieves: till prostitution sat enthroned upon the altars of the Gods.

[William Cooper: And today it continues, although prostitution in a different way. Most religious meetings today are spiritual consumerism. It begins with a problem, and when the hour is over the problem has been solved, and the coffers of the priests, the minister, have been filled in the process.]

Greece and Rome buried in sloth and luxury did not escape the general contamination. The emblem of generation [-- the phallus --] which Isis had bestowed upon the Egyptians, and which they had held in abstract reverence, had now obtained a prominent place in the festivals of these nations as did the Lingam [and] those of the Hindus [And] it was openly paraded in processions [-- before guests in the home -- in processions] in the streets: it was worn by Roman nations in bracelets upon their arms.

[William Cooper: It adorned our nation's capital as the Washington Monument and stands, mocking us, in Dealey Plaza in Dallas, Texas.]

The sacred festivals and mysteries which they had received from the Egyptians, and for which the women had been wont to prepare themselves by continence, and the men by fasting, were now mere vehicles for [all the] depravities [and deceptions] of the [very] lowest kind. Men were permitted to join the women in their worship of Bacchus, [or] Adonis, of the Bona Dea, and even of Priapus, and so dissolute did the Dionusia become, [ladies and gentlemen,] that the civil powers were compelled[, ye, forced,] to interfere with those of religion, and the Bacchanalia were abolished by a decree of the Roman senate.

[William Cooper: But it was too late, for Rome's fate had been sealed.]

And the Jews, the chosen people of God, had not their religion changed? Had not God, weary with their sins, yielded them to captivity, scourged them with sorrow, menaced them with curses?

[William Cooper: And isn't the state of Israel more a secular state than a religious state today, despite the claims of Zionism?]

They worshiped Baal-Peor, the Priapus of Assyria, they sacrificed their children to Moloch: they had dancing-girls in the holy temple.

[William Cooper: And this corruption spared no race, no people, no religion, and no one can point to any other and say, truthfully, that they're more guilty than they. For all are guilty -- all people, all religions, all nations all over this world have destroyed the simple precepts of all the different religions of the world, and none resemble even slightly what they began to be.]

[And I'm] not [going to] go deeper into particulars [that are] so degrading to human nature. [William Cooper: I can see you squirming in your seats as it is, so I will have mercy.] I will[, instead,] invite you to follow me [by steadily listening to the Hour of the Time into] a corner...where [you may begin to more readily understand where we are at, and where we are going, for there are many who have traveled this route before in the history of the world. It is enacted in cycles, and those who ignore history are doomed to repeat it. There is a place in the world where], at least for many ages religion was preserved in its pristine purity, and whose priests, through a barbarous soldiery, were received as martyrs [they claim] in heaven before they had [even] learned to be knaves upon [this] earth.

It was an isolated spot unknown to the world in the earlier ages of vice. It is now a kingdom renowned for its [once great] power [that encircled the grove] and for its luxuries from hemisphere to hemisphere[, and for its civilizing influence and also its abject cruelty].

It was encircled by the blue waters of the German and Atlantic Seas, and abounded in the choicest gifts of nature.

It was called The White Island from those cliffs which still frown so coldly upon Gaul, and The Land of Green Hills from its verdant mountains.

[William Cooper: There's a song during World War II called, *White Cliffs of Dover*. In subsequent broadcasts, and they may not be coming soon, I will take you to that land...]

...and I will show you its priests in their white robes and its warriors in the blue paint of war, and its virgins with their long and glossy yellow hair.

[William Cooper: And I will tell you the truth of the ancient religion of Britain, and it has absolutely nothing to do with any lost tribe of Israel. We will begin that journey some...some propitious evening, where...]

...I will lead you back into the past, and relate to you why this land was called Albion, and why Britain.

==

(end of quote)

Good night, ladies and gentlemen, and God bless each and every single one of you.

(closing music: unknown dramatic instrumental)

Acknowledgements

To William Cooper: Thank you for your relentless pursuit in exposing that which was hidden. We will miss you always. May this document be an homage to your work and help others to actively seek out the truth on their own.

Thanks to all those who have participated in helping this document come about:

frishizzle, Dok, jgalt, luckee1, wakingup72, Urpwneddude, Devotional Soul, msn81

Special thanks to waking72

TRANCE

FORMATION of AMERICA

NINTH PRINTING

Since the first printing of TRANCE was released in September 1995, many of the hard-to-comprehend details have been verified and miraculously managed to surface through our controlled medias. Please help us any way you can to provide this book to anyone who will further research its contents and thus shine the light of truth on the psychological warfare plan that is being silently waged against humanity.

Please remember, for as long as your thoughts remain free, and consider the psychological annoyance power of a single mosquito in a room with no light.

This book will remain in a print until justice prevails, the technological antidote for Kelly is provided, and unbiased, uncensored mass news media attention is given to the contents of this book. Thank you for your support.

FOREWORD

by Mark Phillips

"... with liberty and justice for all"

Preamble to the United States Constitution

My name is Marquart (Mark) Ewing Phillips, born May 17, 1943 in Nashville, Tennessee, I have no criminal record and I have never been adjudged insane, I am not a scholar, professional writer, or mental health physician. While I lack the official published academic credentials, I am recognized internationally by mental health and law enforcement professionals as an authority on the secret science concerning external control of the mind.

The purpose of Part I of this book is to document how this reputation was gained. This brief and highly condensed contribution is intended to provide an understanding of why, when, and where I embarked on a study of the most secret technology known to man: Trauma-based mind control. Through the publication of declassified United States Government documents, our U.S. Department of Defense (DOD) admits that this ancient wizard's mechanism for control is so dangerous that most information pertaining to it must remain Classified as TOP SECRET. As tbe employee of a DOD subcontractor with exposure to mind-control research, I was required to sign an oath of secrecy. To this day I am restricted by law from revealing certain specific information that directly pertained to my employment as, among other "sensitive" exposures, a U.S. DOD subcontractor in mind-control research.

This super secret technology is an evolved system of remote human physical find psychological manipulation that has only recently been officially recognized by accredited mental health physicians for what it is, absolute mind control.

My first encounter with mind-control research began in the late 1960s in Atlanta, Georgia on the Emory University campus at the Yerkes Primate Center, It was there that I learned about primate behavior modification-the basis for human mind control. Part I of this book is my attempt to impart an understanding of how this and other exposures would prepare me for the Challenge of a lifetime.

What I witnessed, in terms of technology, at the Yerkes Primate Center and Other government sponsored research facilities, combined with years of personal research into this science of mind manipulation, did not adequately prepare me for what I would be exposed to in 1988 through an unexpected chain of events. This exposure came in the form of personal acquaintance with the human results officially entitled by DOD as, among other cryptic file titles, MK-Ultra.[1]

1 have outlined this noxious introduction in hopes that the material provided by one MK-Ultra survivor, Cathy O'Brien, will incite a legitimate federal investigation of her claims.

I was able to liberate MK-Ultra victims, Cathy O'Brien and her daughter, Kelly, from the invisible grip of this U.S. Government secret weapon of control. In the process, I also helped Cathy recover her mental and physical health. However, I have not been successful in enlisting the cooperation of my government to pursue the justice issue. There is a reason for this failure to obtain justice that you, the reader, NEED TO KNOW. I have been told repeatedly, "Justice is not obtainable, For Reasons Of National Security."

This book is primarily the autobiography of Cathy O'Brien, who did not volunteer for service to her country, but was used her entire life against her innate, voluntary will for perpetuating criminal activity by many so-called leaders within the U.S. Government. These "treasonous leaders" did volunteer for political "service" to our country. They must be held accountable for their actions.

Together, Cathy and I have dedicated our lives to the pursuit of justice and rehabilitation for her and Kelly. All avenues for justice and rehabilitative relief have been blocked For Reasons Of National Security. The question arises, whose security? Cathy O'Brien provides the logical answer. Perhaps after reading this work, you will inspire others to read it. Collectively, as patriots, we can make a positive difference for Cathy and Kelly, our government, and humanity, by having our voices heard. In my opinion, our great United Stales Constitution does not need to be amended it needs to be enforced.

The grim reality we must all embrace is that there is, in human terms, no justice, and no revenge adequate to equal what these two, and many other victims of this U.S. Government secret weapon experienced. The only remaining remnant of opportunity for justice for these survivors would be derived from a public forum expose of what they experienced. What these survivors need to witness is the mass dissemination of their story and a radical, positive change in their government's management of secrets. This would be an acceptable, though belated, substitute for justice. Their hope lies in the belief that-

"Truth lives a wretched life,
but always survives a lie,"

---

[1] Weinstein, Harvey M., M.D., Psychiatry And The Cia: Victims Of Mind Control American Psychiatric Press, 1990.

CHAPTER 1

Sometimes words, or groups of words, found in the English language have many definitions or meanings. Within each meaning there may be different logical and Literal perceptions of the application of a given word. However, the words mind control usually conjure up a single response. This is most unfortunate due to the vast differences of perception contained within the reference.

For example, if you have access to a late 1980s Random House or later Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary and reference mind control, you will notice there is a conspicuous absence of a listing. Should you go one step further and secure a college professor's teaching copy of Oxford's Companion To The Mind (Oxford Press 1987), you can reference practically anything concerning research of the mind without a reference to mind control. Perhaps you may now realize that through Random House, Webster and Oxford Press omissions, you are a victim of information control.

Mind control is sometimes loosely defined as information control. This being one of many accepted ways to define the term should immediately rase questions of distrust towards your information sources. Since what we think is based on what we learn, manipulation of a mind, or a nation of minds, can be accomplished through control of information. With thought control being a result of information control, many avid researchers of mind sciences simply label it "soft" mind control.

These days, we live in a world in which the continued existence of multinational businesses and governments depends upon instant communications. However, with consideration to the so-called problem of. information overload, it would appear to most people that we hear and see enough to make rational decisions concerning our individual lives. Unfortunately, this is not true. What we don't know, as evidenced by mind-control atrocities, is quickly destroying society as we have known it

The answer to this problem is glaringly apparent. We, as citizens of a supposedly free country, should not permit our government to restrict any information that protects criminal activity under the guise of National Security.

Secret knowledge equals power, with the end result being control. Therefore, despite the deliberate efforts of those persons in control of national media information management (who are not media employees), results of secret mind-control projects gone awry have been leaking out for years through the media. People are literally waking up to the mind-control reality because there is an obvious lack of logical explanation for certain sensational news events. What really happened at Jim Jones' Jonestown and with Sirhan Sirhan, John Hinkley, and Lee Harvey Oswald? And, more importantly, why did it happen? The simple common denominator existing among these persons has been publicly slated by the media, based on research of their medical histories, is mind control.

In reality, information control is but one component of mind control. Whereas "brain washing," a term coined by an investigative journalist writing about Korean War P.O.W.s around 1951, described the results of what the Chinese regarded as thought reform.

The term brainwashing denotes to most people the destruction of a person's memory. This slang term continues to be used by the news media in place of the all encompassing term, mind control. In reality, applied brainwashing techniques are similar to those used in trauma-based behavior modification.

During the past three decades, a significant number of religious groups worldwide has been cited by the mainstream news media as destructive cults. An emphasis on the word destructive is necessary in defining these groups as cults. Random House Dictionary defines cult as "a particular system of religious worship". By this definition, the word cult would encompass all religions. These so-called destructive cults have been publicly denounced by the news media for using brainwashing, thought reform, and mind manipulation tactics on their believers. However, there is an obvious lack of expressed concern by these same media as they fail to address the underlying issues of mind control, the power basis for abuse.

Perhaps the reporting news media can not, for some reason, publicly open the proverbial Pandora's Box. Is it plausible then to consider that closer scrutiny, by the media and the public, of these destructive cults' leadership could reveal a solid connection to government sponsored mind-control research? These arc questions that, in themselves properly addressed, would provide important answers to this social epidemic involving physical and psychological abuse. The answers that an in-depth professional investigation would provide could be the first step in resolving the rash of problems that destructive cults, serial killers, and sexual child abusers, thrust upon society.

As consumers of national news media supplied information, we continue to invent half-truths which, in this case scenario, is seeing and hearing only what results from mass mind manipulation.

Historians provide us a glimpse into the future through recorded events of the past. It appears that throughout recorded history, man has, towards the end of each millennium, returned to a focus on certain types of bizarre human behavior. For example, there has been in the past 150 years a resurgence of wide spread interest in the occult "black arts" which include satanism or Luciferian religions. These constitutionally protected "religions" use trauma to control the minds of their followers.

Mind-control practices within the occult groups (according to survivors adjudged credible and law enforcement officials) have been accredited with bridging the gap between applied science and Shamanism. Occultism as a manner of religious expression has been around for thousands of years. Only in the last 150 years has science aggressively pursued the truths regarding mind manipulation hidden within the occult belief systems themselves.

According Lo the Random House Dictionary, occultism "is the practice of alleged sciences claiming knowledge of supernatural agencies which are beyond the range of ordinary knowledge." Once again, it is a reminder that secret knowledge equals power.

In 1971, the New York Times reported a story on the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) and occult research, the basis of which was gained through a collection of documents released by the U.S. Government Printing Office under the Freedom of Information Act. This was a report to Congress and clearly showed that the CIA was interested in the cause and effect clinical findings that occult religious practices have on the Black Arts practitioner's and/or the observer's mind. Of particular interest to the CIA were the heightened levels of suggestibility that certain occult rituals produced in the minds of the practitioners. Cannibalism and blood rituals were ranked highest in the order of importance to their research.

Behavioral psychology teaches us that control of human suggestibility is recognized as the fundamental building block for external control of the mind. This suggestibility factor alone potentially creates a human rights legal issue when we consider constructing laws to protect people from overt or covert mind-control practices. Consideration to the human suggestibility factor could result in all forms of consumer oriented service and/or product advertising becoming illegal. Advertising and the marketing of services and/or products through communications can be justifiably defined as a type of psychological manipulation, (nought reform and/or mind manipulation which results in a form of behavior modification, A patriot friend, Steven Jacobson, published his book entitled Mind control in America[2] in 1985, eloquently exposing the science of mind manipulation through advertising. The basis for successfully modifying human behavior requires mind manipulation techniques that, when expertly applied through advertising media, become a form of "soft" mind control. Factoring in suggestibility through the tactile senses as the "Achilles' heel" of the human race renders everyone vulnerable to becoming, on some level, a victim of soft mind control.

The controversy of what is and what is not mind control rages on among scholars in the schools of law, human rights, and mental health. All lhe while the confusion of issues provides a form of legal protection for practitioners of trauma-based mind control, the only known form of remote human control that is absolute. All other forms of mind control, including chemical and electronic manipulations, are considered by mind-control experts as temporary.

There are laws protecting U.S. citizens' rights to practice their religious beliefs and freedom of speech. There are no laws which specifically protect leaders of destructive cults and/or practitioners of trauma-based mind control. However, because of the U.S. Government's use of mind control and the broad diversity of legal opinion concerning the accepted limits of free speech and religious practices, the legal loop holes for criminals employing mind-control techniques on their "flocks" for personal gain remain open.

For every problem there exists a solution.. The formula for problem solving, rests firmly on the quality of the supporting research information concerning the nature of the problem. Legislating laws specifically to protect people from mind-control abuses would be futile. Practically every civilized society in-existence has some law and/or group of laws which would protect the people and punish the practitioners of mind control. Laws are enforced according to lawmakers' interpretations of the specific legal language. The lack of enforcement of laws already on the books that could protect us from mind-control abuses stems from applied legal interpretations and cover-ups of survivor testimony by the CIA and National Security Agency (NSA) For Reasons Of National Security.

Mind-control atrocities, if committed by anyone who could be linked to government sponsored projects, are typically ignored and covered up. Access to the courts by these hapless survivors is thus stonewalled by government paid so-called legal experts who receive their orders from the National Security Agency.

Defining the term "mind control" is akin to defining the limits of the 1947 National Security Act. The basis for the solution to the National Security controversy is simple. It is known as: Truth logically applied.

It is an obvious truth that the National Security Act has been interpreted, not to guard the integrity of military secrets, but instead to protect criminal activity of the highest order.

Repeal of this Act and replacement with the established rules of military conduct concerning National Security that do not infringe upon the constitutional rights of America's citizenry or the rights of its allies would result in compliance with the Constitution.

[2] ISBN # 0-911485-00-7

CHAPTER 2

SALESMAN, AD MAN, MIND MAN, PATRIOT
MY PERSONAL EVOLUTION

"Every revolution, bloody or bloodless, has two phases. The first is the struggle for Freedom; the second the struggle for power. The phase of the struggle for Freedom is divine. He who has participated in it invariably feels, physically, that his best and most precious-inner self has come to the surface. We know that being faithful to the TRUTH stands higher than our own participation in governing the country—and that is why we must not have a suciety that would reject ethical norms in the name of political mirages."[3]

As I was saying to my grandmother, Mamaleen Johnson, "My life has turned into a nightmare and I'm wide awake," tears were streaming down my face, dripping off my chin onto her patent leather shoes. She affectionately patted my shoulder as she listened.

The words we exchanged, the room's wallpaper and furnishings, my beloved grandmother, Mamaleen. even the taste of my tears combined with a feeling of overwhelming grief-it is ail there etched into my memory.

This was the summer before I was to enter my second year of school in 1950. The first year remains a blur with cause.

Life for me and my family had changed dramatically over the previous year. So radical a change that it had taken almost a year for me to realize life was not becoming any easier to live. My stuttering was getting worse. The rare moments I could speak coherently were limited to short sentences devoid of the word "you", and then only to my mother and grandmother. Occasionally when angry I could speak clearly, or when alone in the woods while talking or singing to trees. Apparently my frustration with oral communication due to stuttering had been intensified by a trauma I experienced the previous year. Little did I know then that this trauma would positively and negatively influence my future and the lives of others I would know for the rest of my life.

On a hot and sticky Tennessee July day in 1949, my father helped boost first my mother, then me, into the saddle astride our four-year-old high-spirited "gift horse" Wojac. This was to be my first ride on the back of an animal. The excitement of the moment combined with stuttering rendered me, literally, speechless. As I recall and from photographs taken at the time, I was wearing a sweat-soaked, pale yellow cotton shirt, dark tan shorts, brown socks, and dirty tennis shoes. At six years old, I was very thin and did not take up the remaining saddle space behind my mother.

With the reins in my mother's hands, the horse responded to her polite command of "Come on, Wojac. Giddyup." He began slowly walking down our driveway to the narrow crushed limestone road beside our property. Upon reaching the gravel road, the horse turned or was guided left, momentarily disappointing me as I knew we were only going for a short ride. It was only about a quarter of a mile to the busy paved intersection that would be dangerous to cross. (Had my mother decided to go in the opposite direction, we could have ridden for a couple of miles before reaching any automobile traffic.)

As quickly as the horse made the turn from our driveway onto the country road, my mother nudged his flanks with her heels. With another command of "let's go," the horse responded with a mild jerk of motion and he began a fast trot down the middle of the road.

The horse's speed, in retrospect, was too fast for safe travel on gravel. Not knowing this then, I was not scared until I saw the crossroads looming closer, I can hear myself half shouting "BBBBBetter slow down. MMMight BBBBe a CCar CCComming." Before I could enunciate the last words, my mother began a slow sideways slide off the saddle. I could not see her face as she disappeared under the horse, and the reins disappeared with her. The horse bolted full speed ahead. In the blink of an eye, my realization of being alone in the saddle with no way to control the horse washed over me. Quickly, I tugged on his mane to no avail. It was in this instant I determined that the runaway horse was not going to stop for the crossroads. I jumped. As I recall, the fall was swift and my abrupt landing in the sharp rocks was not painful, though it seemed that my body would never stop rolling. Panicked and with the dust beginning to settle, 1 sat up, blinked the dust and sticky blood from my eyes, and looked about for my mother. She lay in a disorganized heap beside the road. I ran to hen

The first mental impression 1 experienced was that she was just wide-eyed dazed from her fall. Then I noticed her eyes weren't blinking and around her head was a thick puddle of blood. Not wanting to leave her in the road for fear she would be run over, and not strong enough to pick her up, I began screaming in the direction of our home in hopes that my father could hear me. Almost immediately he responded by sprinting to us", all the while shouting, "What happened? What happened?"

For the "life remaining in me" I could not answer for, as usual, I was speechless. As he knelt down to speak to my mother, he stopped mid sentence when he apparently saw her eyes in a fixed gaze and that the back of her skull was crushed inward. Instantly he picked her up. and as we were running back to the house, he commanded my eleven-year-old sister to call an ambulance. To this day I cannot recall how we got to the hospital.

The grisly scenes of this tragedy were not my nightmare. It did not play over and over again in my mind, for 1 had dissociated from it. I had voluntarily and autogenically created a memory barrier of this trauma. This is a normal human response. Had I been tortured after the trauma, I would not have been able to voluntarily recall either the accident or the torture. Hence the basis of this book.

The nightmare began during the subsequent recovery year when we realized my mother would never be herself again. She had lost over a quarter of her brain when the horse stepped into her skull. Permanently gone was her ability to smell, taste, and hear in one ear. These were the physical handicaps she developed. Her resultant emotional condition would become evident to me many years later. As a child, this new awareness of my mother's condition had minimal impact on me compared to the fear I lived with, moment to moment, due to my father's chronic alcoholism. Years later my sister would follow his lead into a losing battle with the bottle. I was safe, as alcohol made me stutter.

After being told so many times during my developmental years that my mother's condition was attributable to her brain damage, and that my stuttering was because my brain was not working correctly, it occurred to me at some point to learn about the brain. For years after the accident, 1 overheard adult conversations about my mother's brain. My curiosity peaked about the brain and the resultant invisible mind and had set the course for my life's interest.

Somewhere in this time period, I fantasized I would learn enough about the mind and brain to help my mother and myself.

As a child, my attention span was regarded as abnormal. I was considered very bright, yet my grades in school reflected something different. Although not properly diagnosed, I was most likely suffering from what is now termed Attention Deficit Disorder (ADD). The handicaps of stuttering and ADD were to become my first personal improvement challenges once I was out in the world on my own.

This "on my own" objective came at an early age. I was barely sixteen-years-old when I left home to begin my pursuit of happiness. My first efforts resulted in total failure. However, I could not return to my parents' home because they were now divorced.

Young, broke and rejected, I was able to determine two things. First, I must learn how to communicate if 1 were to enjoy any success in life, I went about this task methodically, first by enrolling myself into a local night college. In the classroom I studied speech, business law and psychology. At the library; I studied brain functions and their effect on the mind. I was not degree oriented because I could not earn enough at two jobs to attend the required classes to graduate, but my studies were slowly providing me a usable skill. Secondly, somewhere during this period of learning 1 began to realize I possessed a natural ability to sell. Perhaps this ability to persuade others resulted from my childhood experience of having to "read people" through their body language rather than talking with them.

My first real job in sales was so successful that my client base was reduced by my employer. I responded to this action by moving on.

The Vietnam War was heating up and I was eligible for the draft. No longer in school, 1 knew that my number would be drawn soon. And it was. Little did 1 know that my prayers for a deferment would be answered and would afford me an exemption from military duty. I would soon be working for the Ampex Corporation and with the U.S. Department of Defense in a civilian capacity. The defense work closely associated me with top research scientists working in the area of primate and human behavior modification. Ironically, I learned more about the mind from my casual relationships with these scientists than I did working at the various research sites. The sites included teaching hospitals, state mental institutions, military bases, National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) facilities, and the Yerkes Primate Center.

The following years of my corporate employment in national and international sales evolved into sales and marketing management positions in an executive capacity. My personal life, in terms of loving relationships, was again in shambles but my career and ongoing mind, brain, human behavior

research was rewarding enough to compensate for my lack of emotional expression. The secrets I had learned so well concerning powers of persuasion, both conscious and subliminal, had long since become a functioning part of my mind's arsenal of defensive and offensive tools of control. I resolved then and there to become a "control freak". Instead, my fantasy was not to learn what I could control but what was controlling me.

Then, around 1986, a peer friend of mine observed that I had arrived in the perverbial "comfon zone" in terms of presenting profitable ideas for others to set upon, and advised me to go into business for myself. Shortly thereafter he provided me an excellent example by resigning his six-figure executive marketing directorship and nominated me as a candidate for his replacement.

Ironically, for the first time in my life, the nomination was rejected because I did not possess at least a master's degree in business management or communications. His assistant was given the position, and I was subsequently offered the assistant's vacated position with no hope of promotion, which of course I refused. Soon thereafter, my friend, free of his corporate golden handcuffs, established his own firm which became a very successful business.

Around this same time a childhood acquaintance, long since socially separated from my life, reappeared long enough to introduce me to his country music entertainment friend, Alex Houston. From this introduction I learned this acquaintance, Ray Myers and his wife, Regina, are alleged pedophiles who reportedly sexually molested Cathy's daughter and their own children. It seemed that Houston was looking for someone with international business negotiating skills who could assist him in putting together a large enough sales deal to finance a manufacturing operation. After spending a few days of complimentary consulting time with him, I had made some rather interesting and intriguing observations about the man and his ideas. First of all, Houston did have a legitimate, potentially profitable idea concerning the manufacture of an electrical capacitor device that could increase energy efficiency for large industrial consumers. Secondly, Houston favorably impressed me as a calculated risk-taker. Thirdly, Houston agreed to finance my production of a marketing plan for presentation to potential foreign buyers. And finally, Houston agreed that I would run the company as President, if and when I sold that plan, I thought. "No problem!"

The intriguing part of this "budding" relationship was my awareness of Houston's propensity for dishonesty. I felt an urgent need for legal advice on how to insure contractual protection from Houston. Within days, Houston and I had conceptually and contractually agreed to start up the business. I designed a logo and assigned the name UniPhayse. The contracts we entered bound both of us to our respective areas of commitment and was iron clad. Houston's willingness to participate in my legal protection maneuver further perplexed me, because of the obvious "honesty type" clauses contained in the agreement. At the time, in my mind, I had determined that if Houston could "keep it clean" and perform his role, we would be able lo make this company successful. If not, I owned the company lock, stock, and barrel and could still make it work.

Months later, with business and marketing plans in ray briefcase and a demonstration model of the proposed product in hand, Houston and I boarded an airplane to Hong Kong. We were met upon arrival by a tall, well-dressed, Korean gentleman who introduced himself as William Yoon. He owned an international shipping company. His ships carried practically everything from scrap metal to Chinese silkworm missiles all over the world,

Mr. Yoon, as he preferred to be called, in keeping with Far Eastern protocol, was interested in negotiating a joint venture company with his friends in the most populated nation on Earth, The People's Republic of China. All arrangements had been made by Mr. Yoon's staff for Houston, myself, and him to fly to Beijing the following day to begin negotiations with the Mining Ministry. After several days of exhausting discussions through an interpreter almost entirely between myself and the deputy director of the Chinese Mining Ministry, it appeared as though we had a workable deal.

An elegant banquet was ordered by our gracious Chinese hosts, and it was there I learned that the Mining Ministry was a part of the Chinese Ministry of Defense. Feelings of patriotism welled up in me for the first time in my life. I was aware that China was engaged in supplying missiles to Libya, a Middle Eastern country with whom the U.S. was in conflict. The Chinese were swapping missiles and other weapons for cheap Libyan light crude oil. The Chinese were about the only country in the world who dared defy the Reagan Administration's trade embargo. These fleeting thoughts of being involved with the Chinese military felt treasonous to me. Although uncomfortable with the idea of a business venture with such potential for political disaster, I reminded myself that hundreds of other U.S. companies were already in China. Houston refused to discuss the subject.

During the return flight from Beijing to Hong Kong, I confided my patriotic concerns to Mr. Yoon knowing that he would soon become my business partner. He eloquently relieved my fears of potential disaster with a complicated explanation that made sense at the time. This man politely informed me that we could not lose money as he and I would have interim control over all product sales revenue generated outside of China, By Chinese law for joint venture companies, 60% of all manufactured product must go outside China.

Houston and I returned to Tennessee and I briefly met his wife, Cathy, for the first time when she greeted us at the gate. She appeared to me to be young, beautiful, very dumb, and dressed like a prostitute. I paced my walk to be several steps away from her as we headed to the baggage claim area. Within a few weeks of this visit, a delegation of Chinese electrical engineers and finance experts were flown to our Tennessee office for more negotiations and to collect technical production data (we held) for future manufacturing purposes.

Soon after the delegation departed for China, I received a mysterious phone call from someone at the U.S. Department of State, aka the State Department. It seems someone in my Chinese delegation had earlier been refused entry into this country due to his being identified as an international weapons supplier for terrorists. This telephone voice assured me that there were no problems that would arise and that this information was not to be publicized. I thanked him and assured him the information was secure.

A couple of months later, my new Hong Kong partner, Mr. Yoon, invited me, my wife, Houston and his wife, Cathy, to come to China for the official signing of the Chinese joint venture agreement. When I asked Houston if he and his wife would attend, he flatly replied, "No". He had already booked his "act" and could not cancel. I then offered to escort his wife and mine to China. He responded "no" again, that it was too far and too expensive for a pleasure trip. I was relieved because I had already learned enough of the Chinese language to know our partners did not like or respect him, and Cathy's demeanor embarrassed me. I later learned that Houston's "gig" was to "trance-sport"/transport Cathy and little Kelly to the infamous Bohemian Grove for prostitution.

My trip to China with all the pomp and circumstance went well as expected, even though my wife and I were in the process of separating for a divorce. However, just before I was prepared to return to the U.S., I received some extraordinary information from a man who showed me Chinese Ministry of Defense credentials that gained my full and complete attention. This man was in possession of a file on me that could have only been gained through a thorough investigation of my past professional associations. His English skills were only strong enough to roughly, nervously translate some of the file's content. This man had photographic proof of a U.S. Department of Defense security clearance I once held. He acknowledged that the "Chinese knew all about me". Thoughts of blackmail raced across my mind. These thoughts instantly disappeared when he began to voice his government's true concerns. Their concerns were about Alex Houston and his involvement with the CIA, drugs, money laundering, child prostitution, and the big one he saved for last, slavery. No mention of mind control was offered, although he did comment that Houston was a "very bad man" and his crimes were "of the White House". Disbelief was in order but not possible, due to the wide array of "Eyes Only" stamped and initialed (official) CIA letterhead and U.S. Government documents he slowly flashed before my eyes.

My first response to this "officer" was that Houston was too stupid and crooked to be connected to U.S. "intelligence". This comment was quickly countered with a gut wrenching photograph of Houston. He was smiling a demonic grin while apparently having anal sex with a small, very young, frightened Black boy. Later he was identified to me as being Haitian.

When confronted with this horrific information and the apparent validity of it, I asked, "What do you (your government) want me to do?"

He replied, "Get rid of him, distance yourself from him and all of his associates".

I responded by asking him how he thought I could accomplish this task. He stated, "Any way you choose". I told him that regardless of what he had seen of American television concerning violence, the only way I knew was to force him out by purchasing his company stock, and I needed money to do it. He said, "Give us the figure and make the arrangements. It is done."

I had returned to Tennessee with a Chinese government contract for products valued at thirty-one million dollars. Stapled to it was a telex letter of credit made out to me and the company from Houston's bank connection the New York branch of the now infamous Bank of Credit and Commerce International (B.C.C.I.). The amount was one million dollars in U.S. funds. The contract was worth approximately ten million dollars in gross profit for Mr. Yoon and me.

Given the charge by the Chinese to immediately discharge Houston of his duties, I knew exactly what my plan of action would have to be. Any other approach to resolving this problem could backfire and all would be lost. And since a former, indirect employer of mine (when I worked for Capital International Airways), the CIA, was implicated, I knew one mistake and it could cost me my life. A comforting thought prevailed and I reminded myself Houston was not only corrupt, but stupid. The CIA must not have respected him either. Otherwise why would he have had to go outside his circle of powerful perverts to recruit me for an international business deal.

I drove to my office to begin the process of discovering something Houston "must have done" that would breach the performance contract he and I had signed when we started the company. Houston was out of town supposedly doing one of his entertainment gigs, so I had complete, unobstructed access to all files, his included. As I had mentally predicted during the long flight from Hong Kong, the entire ferreting process took about fifteen minutes. It seemed that Houston and the old acquaintance who had introduced him to me were, as they say, "selling out the back door". I collected the shipping bills and, ironically enough, the bank deposit slip Houston had retained when he cashed and deposited the customer's check. There was even a letter copy where

Houston had specifically instructed the customer not to discuss his account with anyone at our company other than Houston himself or bis pervert friend, Ray Myers. Upon this discovery, I phoned the local Korean lawyer (whose business card I had been given by Mr. Yoon while in Hong Kong) to begin the stock transfer process. With pleasure, 1 wrote Houston's letter of resignation.

With this problem in the process of being resolved, I left the office to visit an old, dear friend (now deceased) who had maintained powerful U.S. and foreign intelligence connections. I needed answers 1 could trust with my life. This "retired" Air Force General from the Intelligence division would be my source.

The word "slavery" delivered in broken English by the Chinese Intelligence officer shouted in my ears during the short drive to a local hotel lobby, a comfortable place my "spook" pal selected for us to talk in private. In the few short minutes of the drive, I had my questions (for him) mentally noted. I wanted so much to gain the most from our meeting. The slavery word had triggered a dark question in my mind, blocking other constructive thought, as I was not comfortable with introducing the term mind control into my presentation. I knew 1 could speak freely about anything to this trusted friend. I wanted desperately to avoid the words mind control, not for reasons of comdemnation, but because they represented a secret I had patriotically maintained for twenty years.

After my arrival and the light chit chat of social niceties had been exchanged between us, the air changed to one of seriousness. I briefed him on my business involvement, and began a methodical line of questions concerning the file the Chinese Intelligence officer had presented on me and, especially, on Houston: shortly, my friend interrupted me in mid-sentence, smiled a toothy grin, and said, "Flash, you're still the same, and you know damn well what I mean." "Yes", I replied.

The spook was referring to a '70s rock ballad titled "Still the Same" by singer Bob Segar that was assigned to me years earlier by mutual poker-playing buddies who identified with my passion for successful risk-taking. I despised gambling. My passion was "risk management" and poker gave me a recreational outlet for it. Although my friends each paid dearly, they soon learned my poker strategy was not so much "card counting" as it was my ability to read their body language. This included the micromuscle spasm responses

around their eyes, Houston also lost to me at cards. The message the General was implying, roughly translated, was that I was once again "lucky as hell" to have survived my brief business relationship with Alex Houston.

The discussion went down hill from that point directly into the dreaded arena of mind control. After several minutes of listening to details concerning a huge, invisible CIA slave trade going on world wide, the talk became more regionalized to Tennessee. I learned that Cathy and her little girl were victims of trauma-based mind control. They were slaves and the "soul" property of my Uncle Sam. I learned that everything 1 knew in theory and application about

external control of the mind was fully operational and encroaching on the private sector of society.

I was growing numb. The first words out of my dry mouth were, "How would you spring these people out of it?"

He smiled and said, "I wouldn't! What are you going to do with them if

you did get them out?" Before I could answer, he interrupted and said, "Look, you're still the same, but nothing else is with Uncle. Now most of the CIA, FBI, and the MOB (Mafia) are the same, and they're making their moves on the military."

I responded, "I already know that, but how do I save these two people?"

He said, "OK. Get the mother on the phone while her handler is gone. Use the usual hang up code of dial and ring twice, hang up call back, ring once, hang up and call back. Tell her you're God, Give her a biblical passage. They're all Christian based programmed around here."

Understanding that this procedure would gain Cathy's full attention, the General continued, "She'll do anything, and I mean anything—except toast Houston—that you command her to do. Remember, God commands. Find yourself a preacher who knows the Bible and get a double-bind verse. You know what to do—for God's sake. And, listen, if you do this, you're on your own."

"Mark, this is nuts," he pleaded. Go to China and take them with you, Forget about this Red, While and Blue cesspool. It'll clean up. There's lots of good guys in the inside busting their asses to stop this mess, but you're not going to save the world."

I injected, "No, just my ass and a couple of people who Uncle considers something other than human," Then we briefly chatted about some fine points of the rescue and how to legally stop Houston from taking her back. I never saw this friend again.

Walking back to my car, I listened again in my mind to his haunting words. and my own life suddenly seemed like a scratched phonograph record with the needle following the same groove over and over again. The thoughts in my head were suddenly very unpatriotic - a far cry from the feelings I had expressed in China concerning Mr. Yoon's involvement in shipping Chinese missiles to Libya.

Now I felt pure rage for what my country had become during the years after I had bowed out of doing defense work. For once my own mind seemed to be my worst enemy. Hatred for everything consumed me,

I loved what my country had once represented to me, but now I was ashamed to be an American. And unbeknownst to me at the moment, soon I would be ashamed of being a male, based on Cathy and Kelly's memories.

During the long, usually boring drive to my secluded house in the wilderness southwest of Nashville, I distinctly recall considering the inherent risks in the formula I was given for "stealing" two slaves from under the coke-filled noses of the CIA. My concerns were not of whether I could do it, but related to my friend's question of, "What are you going to do with them?"

My thoughts went blank as I muttered to myself, "Life is getting complicated again", I then consoled myself with the old adage of "first things first".

Within a few days, I had played God and coordinated the move of Cathy and her 8-year-old daughter, Kelly, out of Houston's house into a nearby apartment. All of this was totally unbeknownst to Houston. As instructed, I had deliberately placed the powerful coded suggestions into Cathy's mind. These commands partially bridged her own amnestic true perceptions that Alex was going to kill her. Little did I know that the message I was provided to block Houston's former control of her was true.

Cathy and Kelly seemed to me to be very disoriented and somewhat disconnected from reality. In their new, sparsely furnished kitchen, I listened quietly to Caihy excitedly explain that "God had sent me" to her. She "knew" this was true because her hands seemed to automatically open her King James version of the Holy Bible to Psalm, Chapter 37, verse 37, which proclaims for the literal minded, "Mark, the perfect man".

Not only had I placed this biblical reference by a covert suggestion in her mind while playing God on the phone, but just now in her home moments earlier, I had broken the spine on her Bible so that it would "magically" open to that page. She said, "See, God did it again for you to see".

Using a deprogrammer's language trick, I replied in a "reversed" response, "Well, I'll be damned. You are right. That's the only explanation left—that could explain all this", I was anxious to change the subject so as not to risk alerting any one of her observant personalities to my well contained laughter. I had been warned that programmed slaves were hyper-observant.

In retrospect, I could not have had thoughts of being sacrilegious. I was and remain deeply spiritual, but my earlier years of researching religions for life's answers had turned me cynical and cold of man's interpretation of the Bible, Koran and Buddha's teachings. This attitude 1 privately harbored towards organized religions did nothing to squelch the dread I felt wash over me for that moment.

In my attempt to change the subject from religion, I had remembered the Nazi mind-control research performed under Himmler's command on the families of northern European multi-generational Satanists. Christianity, particularly Catholicism, was Himmler's pick of the religions' litter for targeting "Chosen Ones" for his hideous mind-control experiments. These Chosen Ones were to be the robotic leaders of Hitler's New World Order. 1 then asked Cathy what religion she was before she met Houston. She replied, "Mormon, but I was a good Catholic before then".

My mind swirled from that shocking revelation. 1 again quickly changed the subject and suggested we go out to dinner and discuss her new job as my assistant starting the following the day. But tonight we would discuss her divorce plans.

Later that evening, I began my search for a secure phone to find someone from past associations I knew were CIA connected on an officer's level. I needed a get-well-quick formula or a clean mental health referral who could help these two wide-eyed unfortunates. I was informed there were none and that I knew more about "that mind stuff" than anyone who would talk.

I returned home to find my phone ringing with an anxious Alex Houston, who had returned from a "vacation" at Boys Town in Nebraska, on the other end exclaiming that he was looking for his wife. She had " disappeared".

I faked not knowing anything and suggested he come to my house the next afternoon to go over some urgent business. The next morning, I located a lawyer, for Cathy, and she had the divorce papers drawn up.

That afternoon I had Granville Ratclift, a local Sheriff's deputy 1 partially trusted, who occasionally watched my house when I was out of town, waiting inside my house to witness and legally serve Houston with the divorce papers and his termination notice from the company. My last words to Houston which I recorded on tape were, "You could get hurt if you mess with me or them. Alex, get out!" (Now, I hope Houston lives to be a hundred years of age.)

Getting the legal jump on Houston to project Cathy reminded me that I needed to attend to my own divorce needs. My wife mutually agreed her life could be more emotionally rewarding without me. She moved to Florida and set up house with her mother. We filed for a noncontested divorce. I agreed to sell the house and what remained of our joint possessions.

Still unable to secure expert help for Cathy and Kelly, I maintained their safety by moving them into my house until it was sold. It was during this time that I was approached by a neighbor who said he had seen someone through his binoculars wearing a gun and taking pictures of my house. Other such intrusive visits by unknown persons followed suit. I was getting real nervous.

I again called on a CIA operative I knew who worked within Nashville's corrupt law enforcement elite who, days later, informed me to "get my ass out of there now-someone wanted me dead!" When I asked why, he said, "You know damn good and well why!"

The house sold quickly and I had already decided to walk away from my company, my contracts, and the one million dollars on deposit as a letter of credit at B.C.C.I. in New York. Mr. Yoon came to Nashville, He purchased Houston's stock. I returned Mr. Yoon to the airport. My last words to him were, "Farewell, friend". He knew nothing of what was going on and I have never seen or spoken with him again. That afternoon I cleaned out my office, handed the keys to the landlord, closed out my personal and company bank accounts.

I had become angry beyond anything I had ever experienced. In retrospect, this was the birthing process of evolution from man to patriot.

I now only wanted answers to what was going on in my government. We needed to be safe while I searched for these answers. My next stop in this pursuit would be Las Vegas, Nevada, Once there, I met with some powerful, underworld characters I had befriended back in my aviation days at Capital International Airways while "packaging" gambling junkets for these characters. I felt confident that these guys would protect me at least until I could find out what and who Cathy knew. I was reminded by these men that they were a part of the CIA's new funding operations. One of them flippantly remarked while chomping his Cuban cigar, "You can't hide an egg in a hen house, fella".

My contact then coldly informed me that I had become involved in something that affected our National Security. I lied to this "wise guy" and cryptically responded, "Oh, well. I'll take them (Cathy and Kelly) to Alaska and play like a voiceless chameleon". In retrospect, this spontaneous lie must have worked to protect me from "red shining" myself to become the recipient of a CIA/MOB hit.

Cathy and I continued to stay "parked" in Las Vegas for a few more days waiting to retrieve Kelly from a last minute (suspected CIA) court ordered visit with her biological father, Wayne Cox. Later, I would learn from Kelly's medical reports that she had spent Christmas vacation "in hell."

I was now alone in my mind, scared, and going broke fast. Once again I felt totally alienated from everything and everybody in my life. At this moment, 1 began constantly reminding myself that I was doing the only thing I knew for sure was right. Realistically, I was astride the proverbial tiger and I could not get off its back and survive.

---

[3] 1991 Roman Catholic Weekly

CHAPTER 3

THE RECLAMATION OF CATHY'S MIND

"The greatest gift anyone can give
another is a good memory."[4]

It was now the week after Christmas 1988. I was fulfilling half of my pledge to the Vegas mob. With all of our remaining personal belongings containerized and secretly in transit on a different ship, I, my "new family" and pets were ferry-bound for Anchorage, Alaska. The sixteen hundred mile trip through ice and snow would take about three days to complete. Unfortunately, it gave me time to think.

Due to our negative cash flow situation, realistically I knew there was no place to run or hide from the CIA. Cathy and Kelly seemed happy and believed they were safe. This was my number one priority! For me, I had to trust that my escape plan would convince interested CIA personnel that we no longer represented a threat to their security. The plan was based on an ancient psychological warfare formula developed by the Romans, I wanted to portray myself as akin to a character in a bad Reagan (western) movie and ride into the sunset never to be heard from again. Thinking to myself that where we were headed geographically, there was no sun to set, at least until spring. Late one night about mid way into our voyage, 1 sought the solitude that the outside forward deck would afford me. I was thankful for the wind-driven sleet and snow that stung and closed my eyes and opened my mind for focused thought. At the time, 1 was psychologically "strung out" from a combination of rage and unbearable emotional headache.

To safeguard my precious teenage son, Mason, from being hurt and/or unwittingly used as a pawn to force me to remain silent, I had virtually destroyed our father/son bond. I loved and missed him very much, and still do. The resultant emotional pain from the deception and separation seemed to be compounding within me and was consuming-my being.

I had, in the course of rescuing Cathy and Kelly, shunned and insulted my son, collapsed my company, simultaneously orchestrated two divorces and sold all personal treasures. I worried I would never see my elderly mother again. Her health was deteriorating. The tailored clothes I wore no longer fit me, as I had lost over forty pounds and looked skeletal. Chronic insomnia, a symptom of the severe depression I secretly fell, was slowly driving me mad. My own short-term memory was beginning to fail. I had noticed for the first time in over thirty years that I was stuttering when enunciating certain words. I knew this was just the beginning of a long and dangerous expedition in search of answers.

As I stood alone, with eyes closed, on the ship's ice-covered steel deck, a strange feeling of relief washed over me. I had somehow managed to remember from where I could draw "emergency strength." I began silently praying for inner strength and guidance through a meditation technique I'd learned years ago. Immediately, I experienced a feeling of peaceful self-assurance that we would survive to tell our story.

Suddenly I became aware that the icy wind was freezing my face and hands. I was elated that I could feel again. Apparently I had repressed my tactile senses along with my emotions. For the first time since I learned of Cathy's and Kelly's mind-control existence, I felt functionally alive.

I opened my eyes to discover I wasn't alone any more. A voice was coming from somewhere. I looked around and saw, crouched down and wrapped in a dark green blanket almost beside me, the source of the voice. Again I heard, "Hey man, you OK?" This good man whom I later came to know and respect was Mark Demont. He was a classic example of what Alaskans term a "sour dough". Roughly defined, a sour dough was anybody from the "lower 48" (states) who was disenchanted with their home and low on money. We were both sour doughs and refugees from a sick society gone mad from CIA drugs, media violence, and uncontrolled greed.

I offered him a cigarette and my hand in friendship, something I had not done voluntarily in almost a year. We agreed to stay in contact after our arrival.

About two days later, we landed safely at the Juneau docks. We were told by the ferry's Captain that it was the coldest day of the decade. The ship's thermometer read a minus forty degrees fahrenheit. For me, this was an anticipated weather condition, and for Cathy and Kelly, a physical challenge.

I had spent about two years in Alaska around 1980. It was then that I helped my former boss from Capital International Airways, George Kamats put a new carrier on line known briefly as Great Northern Airlines. I left Alaska back then, not because of the environment, which I loved, but due to my inability to cope with Kamats' daily tirades. This rigid fellow had a long, colorful history working for other CIA controlled airlines. Among other jobs, he had held top executive positions of authority with the infamous air support section of the U.S, Forestry Service, Air America, and Evergreen (CIA) carriers.

Now I was back in Alaska, unemployed, and knowing I was being tracked like an animal by the same organization I had previously indirectly worked for, the Central Intelligence Agency. Having slept the past couple of nights, I was feeling much better and the thoughts of being tracked did not concern me. I recall having more productive things on my mind. I could not allow raw fear to become any part of my daily diet of thought process.

Cathy and 1 dedicated every possible moment to locate a house we could call home. We finally found a fourplex apartment that was inexpensive, with two bedrooms and a heated garage. We had to have a heated garage for my three beloved pet raccoons and two dogs. Our new home would never have furniture beyond a TV, two beds, and a table and chairs. This inconvenience never was discussed. We were comfortable.

After settling into "our place" in the remote rural town of Chugiak, we immediately began doing normal things. We enrolled Kelly in a great public school, met our new neighbors, and played in the snow. All of this was being enjoyed in a traditional family way-something Cathy and Kelly had never before known.

Our remaining meager resources were disappearing before my eyes. The cost of asthma medication that Kelly now required to keep her alive was over $400 per month. I strongly suspected that much of the reason for her declining health resulted from the two weeks "in hell" she had recently spent with alleged serial killer, Wayne Cox, She told me so, by detailing the hideous satanic rituals she and her four-year-old step brother, Jacob, had been subjected to, Fortunately, I had held onto my expensive Niton camera, guns, and personal jewelry items. These were the last real assets I had remaining to sell. I sold them and the proceeds paid our living expenses for five more months until Kelly's health needs and circumstances forced us on welfare.

During this five-month period, with Kelly in school and no telephone to distract us, I began intensifying my deprogramming efforts with Cathy, Most stays, our work started the moment we returned home from taking Kelly to school. As soon as Kelly was in bed at night, after dinner and homework, we resumed our "session". We worked like this day and night, seven days a week, focused intensely on the deprogramming process, until I would pass out from exhaustion around three o'clock in the morning.

The deprogramming formula for pulling Cathy's fragmented mind back together was inherently free of problems. The small problems I did experience with the formula stemmed from having to "expertly" apply it based on my educated memory of almost twenty years previous. I had no communication with any recognized authority other than Cory Hammond to guide the initial therapy. My single greatest challenge was to learn how to control Cathy's constant state of trance as she journaled her memories.

In spite of reporting to the FBI that I was a hypnotist, I knew that if the FBI and CIA could prove through my admissions 1 was using hypnosis on Cathy, her testimony in court would be worthless. Therefore, the threat of reprisal from the CIA was averted. In fact, through my own intensive research of hypnotherapy I learned how to control Cathy's trance states. T regarded it as unhypnotizing her. Eventually I would be regarded by mental health physicians as an "expert" in the application of this little-used clinical tool for recovering memory.

Aside from my learned deprogramming skill, the balance of the formula I used consisted of elements which are actually rules of ethical therapy conduct. Those therapy rules were strictly enforced, Cathy understood and agreed that, in order for her to have absolute control of her mind, she must place total trust in me and the therapy regime.

1. I maintained a constant vigil to ensure Cathy's physical and psychological safety from all outside influences.

2. No memories could be verbalized by Cathy until after they were written by her. The only questions I could ask were history oriented and directed to Cathy's presenting personality that was recovering the memory. Those questions could only address the who, what, when, how, and where of the memory. Even if I could have known the answers in advance, 1 could not inject. Our perceptions would have differed radically and could have created more memory barriers between personality fragments.

3. I fundamentally explained mind control to Cathy and she then understood that what happened to her was not her fault. However, she understood she was becoming responsible for her actions here and now. Through therapy, she was asserting control over her own mind.

4. We devoted many hours to "intellectual discussions" of Cathy's learned religious beliefs and they were "logically" debunked, just as if 1 were explaining how the illusions of a magician's tricks worked lo confuse reality.

5. No expression of emotion by Cathy would be permitted during the memory recovery and journaling process. I never asked her "how does that make you feel?" This is as important as the safety issue for the rapid recovery of memories.

6. I provided Cathy adequate food, vitamins, water, and sleep to restore her failing physical health.

7. I taught Cathy how to view her memories on a "mind movie screen" rather than re-experience them through the mind's "virtual reality" mechanism.

8. I instructed Cathy how to trance herself and control the depth of her trance state through a self-hypnosis technique (some regard as meditation). This was put in place to avoid possible contamination and/or confusion of her memories, which might have happened had I used a hypnotic induction technique known as guided imagery.

9. Cathy was not allowed to read books, newspapers, or magazines, to watch TV, or to discuss with Kelly anything she recalled. Cathy had experienced a lifetime of information control and therefore had minimal contamination of memory to sort through. This rule was also understood and respected by Kelly, whose memories were beginning to surface.

10. All behavior patterns and social habits Cathy exhibited were re-examined through logical discussion between us. All pre-established behavior patterns, including daily routines, were re-scheduled or stopped completely.

11. I required her to wear a wrist watch twenty-four hours a day, to alert me of any "lost time" she felt she was experiencing. Losing time, without trauma, is a strong indication that personality switching is occurring. Whereas being able to account for time is an indicator that recovery is occurring.

The memories Cathy was recovering were horrible beyond anything I had ever heard anyone speak about, I often wondered if I had fallen in love with Cathy as a result of my developing the psychological malady known as the Stockholm Syndrome. Those thoughts never bothered me for I knew I had grown to love Cathy. I had heard enough horror from Cathy and Kelly to know I was now suffering from Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). The symptoms of this disorder went unnoticed by Cathy and Kelly because they too were PTSDed, and had been all their lives.

My own health began to deteriorate rapidly. My regained body weight began to melt away once again. I was experiencing incredible stomach pain, vomiting, and diarrhea. I was literally living on a patent medicine known to ulcer sufferers as Maalox. A "secure" phone call to a doctor friend in the "lower 48" produced the name of a local internal medicine specialist I could trust. Aware of my predicament, my physician friend made the appointment on my behalf for this doctor to prepare certain in-office tests. One of the tests, using a fiberoptic stomach tube, showed that as a result of a water borne parasite, there were holes in the walls of my stomach. He recommended emergency surgery. I replied, "No. How much longer can I live with this before surgery?"

He said, "It depends on how well you can follow my instructions"*

"No problem," I said. Within a few days of feeding myself intravenously and taking the prescribed medications, I began to recover.

It was during this recovery period that I began my telephone search for answers to speed Cathy's recovery process. Again I was told by my former "well connected" associates that I knew it all. I was not convinced. However, my persistence soon paid off as one particular phone call resulted in my striking proverbial "pay dirt".

The medical books on clandestine experimental research for treating dissociative disorders mysteriously appeared "on hold" for me at the Eagle

River branch of the Anchorage Public Library. I was covertly alerted to pick them up on a certain day at an exact time. I complied.

As I was leaving the library, a middle-aged woman with a grocery sack in her arms approached me. She asked if the library was open. I thought this odd since I was walking out the opened library entrance. My curiosity was short lived when she asked, "Have you read any good books by Dr. Milton Erickson lately?"

I replied, "No, but I am checking one out by (psychiatrist) Dr. William S. Kroger entitled Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis,"

"Oh, yes," she said. "I'm a real fan of Dr. Kroger and he is a real fan of Dr. Erickson who you know is considered the father of subliminal mind-control (theory) research. She began walking away and turned, smiled and said, "Enjoy your books and use the book, Mark."

I assumed she was addressing me by name while referring to the book itself. I also concluded from this comment that she was obviously the person responsible for delivering the books to the library. Soon I learned she was referring to a bookmark placed inside one of the books which provided me a desperately needed communications vehicle. Recorded on the book-mark" was a toll free 800# with a time and date to use it. I used this 800# and many others similarly provided me for a communications vehicle to covertly access the spooks' (spies) subway to information. For two more years, this method provided me with telephonic guidance through a maze of mind work with Cathy.

When 1 called the bookmark "800" number, it was answered by an electronic voice which said, in part, "Please enter your employee number now". I complied, using a series of numbers that I had been previously "assigned" by someone who must remain anonymous because I do not know their identity. The next sound 1 heard was that of a phone being rung. After exactly eight rings, my call was answered by someone I did not know. He asked, "What's the problem?" I fell like a vacuum cleaner salesman with his foot in the door, delivering a canned sales presentation. I began nervously emphasizing my desperate need for a quicker therapy regime for Cathy.

The voice asked, "Have you read the books?"

"Yes," I replied. "But many of the clinical terms were foreign to me."

The voice then instructed me to go back to the library and "pick up a psych reference book on term definitions". I then interrupted his instruction to ask if I could speak with somebody who could make this deprogramming process go faster. He said, "Well, there are only two deprogrammers in this country-one in Boston (Massachusetts) and the other in Phoenix (Arizona) and neither one could be of much help or be trusted with the kind of information you are getting (from Cathy)." He hesitated, then said, "You're going to need a referral, which I can't provide. But you know how to do it"

I asked, "A referral for what?"

"To have the chance to speak with a doctor who knows about this and might be of some value," he told me,

"OK," 1 said. "Who's the doctor?"

"Cory Hammond, out of Salt Lake City (Utah)."

"Gees," 1 said. "That's Mormon headquarters, and that was the last religious trauma base for Cathy."

'Yes!- the voice continued. "But you can trust this doctor if you're careful and don't give up too much (information) on yourself. He's paranoid like all the rest (who know about mind-control atrocities) but he could be of some help.

Oh, be alert. Everybody's watching this guy so anything you say, they (the bad guys) will know."

"Thank you very much," I replied.

Somewhere in the process of finding a referral professionally acquainted with Dr. Hammond, I telephoned dissociative disorders specialist, Dr. Bennett Braun, a well-known and published psychiatrist in Chicago, Illinois. I learned from our conversation that he had an entire hospital unit dedicated to therapy for people like Cathy and Kelly. I wondered at the time why his name wasn't previously provided to me for a consultation. As a result of this brief telephone encounter, I learned that Dr. Braun had a number of patients on a long waiting list for a "bed" within this facility. The doctor then provided me the name and telephone number of a "friend" he confided in, People Magazine senior investigative reporter Civia Tamarkin,

Contacting this People/Time Life magazine reporter was to be my biggest single judgement error in the pursuit of helpful information. I would soon learn she was indirectly responsible for nearly costing me my life, and did indirectly cost Kelly her chance for "expert" therapy- which is another book in itself.

When I first spoke with Civia, she dropped important names like a maple tree drops leaves after a frost. I audio tape recorded practically all conversations with this seemingly well informed source, then and in the years to follow, Civia first provided me the name and phone number of the Boston "deprogrammer," an ex-Moonie programmer by the name of Steve Hassen. Next, she provided the name and phone number to contact Jolyn "Jolly" West at UCLA. Reluctantly, she gave me the referral I needed to communicate with Dr. Cory Hammond. "The later contact being the only "briefly helpful" one with whom I would speak.

Maximizing my PTSD impaired judgement, I telephoned programmer Steve Hassen, for advice on how to help Kelly (only), which resulted in his coming to our home in Alaska, Apparently, his agenda was to traumatize Cathy by using a well-known code to trigger her to run for her life—from me. The method he employed could have been effective, but fortunately for Cathy and Kelly, his robotic delivery like his moral ethics was very poor. I learned that Hassen's voiced and recorded professional respect for his UCLA psychiatrist friends, Dr, West and Dr. Margaret Singer, derived from sinister reasons. Little did I know that Dr. West had worked for the CIA in Project MK-Ultra mind-control research for decades, it seems some of Dr. West's CIA supported research had been exposed by a Congressional investigator of the MK-Ultra Project in the 1970s. However he survived the public scrutiny because the U.S. Government had, in essence, halted further investigation of him and his work under the National Security guise. His only reported crime was for killing an elephant with an overdose of LSD in the presence of school children. These facts I would learn after Cathy and I spoke with him by phone and subsequent disaster struck us, This too is another story in itself

The phone calls between Dr. Cory Hammond and myself were informative and supportive. He proved himself to be the single, most valuable live information asset I would know in my quest for expert therapy advice. Later Dr. Hammond delivered to the mental health community through a symposium presentation in 1991, the whole truth as he knew it on the topic of mind control. His advisory instruction to me on a particular Erickson technique for painless, non abreactive memory recovery, called "revivification", literally saved my predious Cathy from reliving the horrors as she remembered them. This man is my personal hero.

Spring in Alaska was a very different experience from what I was accustomed to in Tennessee. The Alaskans just refer to it as "break-up". In place of hearing the sounds of chirping birds, I listened to the drip noises from the ice melting off everything. The streets had become an ugly brown mush. For spring as normally a welcomed seasonal change, it was depressing to say the least. The only good news was that the days had slowly changed from darkness to warm sunlight. With this seasonal change, a time bomb I did not know existed began its countdown. Kelly's asthma and behavior were radically deteriorating for no apparent reason.

One Friday morning in May, Cathy received a call from Kelly's school principal requesting we pick her up as soon as possible and have her examined by a doctor. The school nurse said Kelly was having a severe asthmatic attack that did not respond to the medication she had with her. We picked her up only to find that her condition seemed to improve miraculously at the sight of us. But this improvement would be short lived,

The following Sunday, Kelly's coughing became almost constant. She had exhausted our supply of an important asthma medication which she regularly used in her respirator pump, I covertly substituted distilled water and sat with her while she struggled for her breath. Using an Erickson technique of guided imagery, I began telling her a story about a little girl who huffed and puffed and climbed a mountain. The story I told ended with the little girl reaching the top of the mountain only to be so tired that she fell asleep in a bed of wild flowers, Kelly responded by breathing normally and actually falling into a sound asleep for a few hours, only to awaken and repeat her coughing spell. I returned to her bedside and 1 asked why she coughed.

Kelly, somewhat agitated, responded, "I have asthma". I repeated the water substitution trick and she responded favorably and said, "Dad, Wayne (the father and alleged serial killer Satanist) told me I was gonna' die."

I said, "Well, he's not a doctor".

Kelly continued, "He really did say that over and over and over again."

I then asked, "When did he say this?"

"When school's out," she replied.

I asked, "What do you mean?"

She robotically repeated, "When school's out."

"Do you remember when Wayne said this to you?" I asked.

"In bed," she continued. "He thought I was asleep and he was talking on the phone to Alex (Houston) and then to me," I knew then Wayne Cox had programmed her to die using a clinical technique known as hypnosleep. Alex Houston was guiding Cox through the program.

I interrupted her (as I saw she was entering a deep state of trance) and responded, "Well, school's not out and tomorrow you will be well enough to go back to school."

As I suggested, Kelly did feel good the next morning and returned to school. This day would be her last day in Birchwood Elementary.

Only a few hours passed before Cathy and I again were called, this time by the nurse who became agitated when Cathy truthfully answered her question, "Didn't you take her to the doctor?"

Cathy said. "No. but we will."

Later that evening, Cathy, Kelly and I would make the last of our emergency drives to seek medical help for Kelly.

At Anchorage's Humana Hospital, Cathy and I met with the young, very bright and beautiful physician, Dr. Lorrie Shepherd, who seemed perplexed and, perhaps, frightened as to Kelly's unexplainable deteriorating condition. I requested a private meeting and she complied.

After about thirty minutes of my explaining what Cathy and Kelly had been rescued from, I defined mind control for her. Learning this, Dr. Shepherd then consulted with a local female psychiatrist, Dr. Pat Patrick to evaluate Kelly,

The evaluation was completed and Dr. Patrick invited Cathy, and eventually me, to her office for a consultation. This was to be Kelly's first official evaluation that indicated she suffered from Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD),[5] a serious psychological disorder resulting from severe and repeated trauma.

I then asked Dr. Patrick if she could arrange for a sexual abuse specialist to verify if Kelly had been abused. She complied. The results were positive. Dr. Patrick and Cathy seemed almost relieved at this validation. The result sickened me.

Kelly's asthma stabilized at Humana and she was transferred to Charter North Psychiatric Hospital for in-hospital care. Dr. Patrick apparently provided the best care she knew. Unfortunately it was inadequate. Months passed and the State of Alaska welfare authorities began to realise Kelly was not improving and her ineffective care costs were mounting by thousands of dollars weekly.

Dr. Patrick, Cathy, and I, with the cooperation of the Tennessee Violent Crimes Claims Commission, began searching for a hospital that would accept Medicaid insurance. Finally, one was located in Owensboro, Kentucky which advertised a specialty in working with ritually abused children. Kelly was transferred to this facility and the State of Alaska paid all the bills for her move there. Later we would learn that this elegant hospital facility was nothing more than a human warehouse that collected whatever fees the federal and state governments would pay them per child resident. A pretty place to see, but the care for Kelly would prove to be "less than nothing".

During the summer before Kelly was transferred to this Kentucky hospital, and Cathy was recovering satisfactorily, I felt it was safe to leave their side so that I could find work. We desperately needed money to travel, to live, and to return to the "lower 48" with Kelly in the winter.

I quickly secured a job at Alaska Business College as an interviewer of prospective students. My sales "performance" resulted in my being promoted in two weeks from an admissions representative to Director of Admissions. I banked as much money as possible from my earnings over the next five months to provide for our move, to be closer to Kelly. The thought of the separation agony that would exist between Cathy and Kelly served as a reminder of my ongoing separation from my son, whom 1 had not heard from in almost a year.

Cathy, on ill advice from me, called her father and begged for some financial help for Kelly's sake. Her father wired $500 to confirm our location and commented, "This is America. Unless you come back to Michigan alone, no more money!" It was this statement that triggered Cathy's repressed memories of her own tortured childhood by this alleged pervert and slave salesman, Earl O'Brien.

Soon the FBI telephoned Cathy and told her that she needed to "voluntarily" conic to the Anchorage FBI office for questioning. Upon arrival, Cathy was informed that she was under federal investigation for attempting to extort money from her father.

Cathy looked strangely relieved when she heard these charges. Later I would learn that she felt better knowing for sure she was not "crazy" or delusional and that her father did in fact do those things to her and her brothers and sisters.

The FBI Agent was openly sympathetic and reportedly the DOJ "inspired" investigation was subsequently dropped upon his recommendation. This agent went on to secure a cash donation through his Mormon church that enabled us to leave his jurisdiction.

It is noteworthy that during this same time; through another special agent at the Anchorage FBI office, 1 was interrogated for "what I knew" regarding an unrelated crime involving my ex-wife and her lawyer boss in Florida. I knew nothing, I now know that the FBI was, in effect, attempting to destroy my credibility as advocate for Cathy and Kelly through their investigation efforts of me. Their case against my ex-wife and her lawyer was solved, and her lawyer accomplice was convicted of first degree murder. My ex-wife became a state's witness and was acquitted.

However, days later I would "see" my ex-wife being arrested and processed on the popular national television show "Unsolved Mysteries". That unfortunate case involved only one homicide and made the national news for weeks to come. In contrast, Calhy's testimony, with proofs provided FBI officia1s, was filed and deliberately covered up—For Reasons of National Security.

The fall season in Alaska was now quickly giving in to winter and the "termination dust" (snow) was re-coating the surrounding mountains. The air was definitely becoming nippy. The change of seasons signaled another change within my new family. Kelly was going to be transferred soon to the Kentucky Valley Institute of Psychiatry (V.I.P.).

Cathy and I had been saving every dollar I could earn during my brief tenure at Alaska Business College in preparation for our move back to the "lower 48".

I realized now that Cathy had gone into a state of recovery known as "fusion". She had long since stopped switching personalities and had become a beautiful, intelligent, and logical lady. She was no longer susceptible to anyone triggering her to go against or away from me. She continued to journal her traumatic memories and was professionally adjudged stable.

The passage on ships and ferries out of Anchorage to Seattle was booked solid for months ahead. They would only accept freight and/or vehicles. 1 purchased two, one-way tickets on Alaska Airlines and brought our family car, a 1976 AMC Pacer, and remaining belongings to the Anchorage docks for shipment.

Suddenly, as we packed our bags and were ready to board our flight, a nearby volcano erupted and halted all air traffic in or out of Anchorage for the following two weeks. We waited anxiously for the airport to reopen. We would leave first and Kelly and her nurse would soon follow. This would be the first step of what would be an endless journey in our pursuit of justice.

---

[4] Mark Phillips' motto

[5] The term Multiple personality Disorder (MPD) Is now clinically referred to by mental health professionals as Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID).

CHAPTER 4

TRUTH AND CONSEQUENCES
JUST US PURSUED AND JUSTICE DENIED

Our much anticipated arrival into the Seattle (Washington) International Airport terminal heralded a new beginning. Cathy appeared to be openly optimistic that perhaps, at long last, Kelly would soon have her chance for recovery. Privately, I felt much less hopeful, I knew from past personal experiences and through my "insider sources" that mental health physicians from the private sector of society had little acquaintance with secret U.S. Government mind-control research. The only mind-control informauon these doctors had access to for the most part was from the hysterical comments supplied them by their troubled patients. Hysteria, in this case, as a symptom of misinformation is highly contagious, and therefore spread throughout the mental health profession. Many practitioners displayed symptoms of the "ostrich syndrome" to me, their peers, and patients through fear and chronic denial.

It was 1990, the beginning of the last decade of this century and the millennium, and most mental health physicians remained in a state of denial concerning the existence of mind control. Mental health as a science is barely one-hundred years of age. Truly an industry in its infancy in relation to the other recognized healing arts.

Due to mental health's infancy and the fact that it is rooted in the archaic, mystical theories of Jung and Freud, combined with the non-availability of government controlled research information, the term "mental health" is viewed by patients and doctors alike as an oxymoron. Patients I have interviewed who suffer from dissociative disorders frequently refer to the profession as "mental hell," and their well-intentioned provider as "the rapist". Unfortunately for all parties concerned, in many reported instances these cruel labels are consistent with the quality of the care provided. Whereas I strongly support, in concept, the healing arts existing in the fields of mental health that could be applied in the treatment of mind-control patients, I cannot foresee their application in meeting the needs of these patients without some radical changes in our National Security Act. Afound 1970, I recall witnessing a "mild" case in point. 1 was overseeing the video taping of a TOP SECRET psychiatric experiment involving a young man who had suffered brain damage resulting from some type of severe head trauma. This patient was ambulatory. He could not remember anything, express himself, or for that matter, think. He was not brain dead. He was mind dead. Through the application of a combination of experimental drugs and hi-tech electronic technology involving harmonics, his brain was being "retrained" to permit constructed thought processes to commence. The brain scar tissue that was inhibiting his ability to think was being chemically and electronically by-passed. I equated this experimental procedure to the "hot wiring" of an ignition switch of an automobile to preclude the use of a key. The extraordinary procedure and subsequent results of this experimental therapy was meticulously recorded. The record, tape, and doctor notes were dropped into a security envelope and were taken by courier to Fort George Meade, Maryland.

What made this case so memorable was the event that immediately followed. I overheard the experiment's attending physician complaining bitterly to his nurse colleague that "his" patient in an adjoining ward, who was not a "DOD guinea pig," through application of this method, could "probably recover". The doctor's complaint addressed his being prohibited from applying state-of-the-art treatment for his patient by virtue of his DOD oath of secrecy. This doctor was frustrated at being forced to serve two masters. The DOD being one master held control over his career through his medical license, liability insurance, and the secrecy oath he had signed. The second master was the doctor's own moral and ethical standards, supported by the Hippocratic Oath he had signed upon becoming a physician.

Thus without benefit of the voluminous DOD research findings and technology developments, the medical field of mental health is in its learning curve for establishing models to provide patients state-of-the-art care. In other words, mental health providers themselves are quickly becoming the second group of mind/information control victims.

The mental health profession is in a sate of crisis and his arrived at the proverbial crossroads of failure and success. The road to success through the application of available technologies appears to be blocked FOR REASONS OF NATIONAL SECURITY.

As a direct result of DOD management of mind research secrets and the resulting federal information containment practices, mental health providers are on the defensive with their patients, the courts, and more recently with certain special interest action groups. These groups are attacking the mental health professional as a target for destruction. Well-funded organizations with very questionable agendas, such as the False Memory Foundation (FMF) and the Church of Scientology, have publicly denounced mental health as a profession.

The Church of Scientology has emerged as the apparent leader in publicly denouncing the mental health profession. Through the church's Washington, D.C. based "human rights" lobby group, it has launched a massive negative propaganda campaign accompanied by numerous lawsuits against ethical drug companies and mental health providers.

Scientologists believe their church's ffounder, L. Ron Hubbard, has discovered a cure-all for mental illness through behavior modification. Hubbard, a successful science fiction writer, allegedly acquired knowledge of subliminal mind control through his military service with U.S. Navy Intelligence. He named his behavioral modification program Dianetics after his first wife, Diane.

The False Memory Foundation is a lobby group which is primarily utilized by persons charged with sexual abuse. The FMF is desperately attempting to develop legislation that restricts therapy for persons suffering from dissociative disorders as a result of trauma. This organization's stated beliefs include that repressed memory is a myth. FMF has found the mental health profession's Achilles' heel.

To date, the model for developing an effective therapy regime for dissociative disorders (which are as a result of repeated trauma) has not been published by either the American Psychiatric Association or the American Psychological Association. The difficulty in developing a model is due to a number of factors. The primary factor involves national security secrets concerning classified mind-control research.

In the present climate, referring mind-control victims to mental health professionals for treatment would be tantamount to subjecting a patient needing delicate surgery to a surgeon who was blind-folded and hand-cuffed. The knowledge of these conditions produced the private opinion I withheld from Cathy when she professed optimism for Kelly's latest recovery opportunity. Nevertheless, Cathy was nearing complete recovery and we both recognized we were doing all we could a(the moment to provide for Kelly's needs.

Perhaps identifying "who" within our government is interested in withholding vital medical research findings and technologies information from the mental health profession could provide a foundation of understanding. From my personal experiences while working for Capital International Airways. I formed a strong opinion that addresses this question. However, the answer that mirrors my perception was later eloquently provided by a Washington. D.C. news correspondent and journalist, Linda Hunt, in her book Secret Agenda. The historical basis for this book are the declassified DOD documents identifying Project Paperclip as being the secret importation/relocation of Nazr and Fascist scientist into the United States over a forty-year period.

These brilliant criminal scientists were primarily focused on two areas of research, rockets and the mind. They were placed in positions of authority in, among others, prestigious universities, colleges, industries, and NASA. Over the years, these imported criminals have directly influenced our society with advanced rocket technologies and mind-control applications through U.S. Government sponsored research. According to Secret Agenda, Nazism, as a philosophy and form of government, is alive and destroying our country, in part, as a result of Project Paperclip.

I can attest to this statement from personal knowledge gained during my employment at Capital international Airways, which is named as one of the primary transporters for Project Paperclip.

These were background facts for some of the thoughts that rushed through my mind on our Jong drive from Seattle to the Southeastern U.S. I was anxious to discover the end results of my telephone campaign in the pursuit of justice I had waged while in Alaska.

Our first destination would be Huntsville, Alabama. This southern U.S. city is famous for its tourism centerpiece, the NASA owned U.S. Space and Rocket Center. The town also boasts of being home to more Pentagon, black-budget, U.S. dollars per capita than anyplace in America. Cathy harbors a very different opinion of this town, its police force, and the NASA research facility. For Cathy and Kelly, Huntsville had been a place they were regularly taken to by Alex Houston for hi-tech torture and the production of child and adult pornography films.

This trip to Huntsville would be different for Cathy, except for one aspect of her previous experiences. Both she and I would receive our first threat to our lives in our pursuit of justice from law enforcement. This was surprising to me and "normal" for Cathy.

The lead-up to this threat began with my phone call to a Huntsville based legal aid group known as the National Association of Child Advocates. This organization publicized that it was formed through the leadership efforts of the local district attorney 'Bud' Crammer, who is known to his constituents as "Gun Ban Bud". After supplying this advocacy center with Cathy's recollections of her past experiences in Huntsville, we were contacted by two Huntsville City

Police Department "vice" detectives. Their names were Jeff Bennet and Chuck Crabtree.

Upon our arrival into Huntsville, these two vice cops escorted us and our trailer to a local apartment used for staging drug buys. The place was furnished, complete with audio and video bugs throughout every room. When I asked Bennet if the "place was bugged," he flatly denied it. From this lie I knew with certainty that Cathy and I were there to be specimens for whomever to study, I knew "who," and we gave them our best performance to mislead them. This action probably saved our lives.

After weeks of "delays," the two vice cops sat down with Cathy and me for discussion. She supplied them a myriad of testimony including detailed physical descriptions of two particular perpetrators, their names, and location maps of where they lived and allegedly produced child and adult pornography. The two perpetrators, themselves Huntsville policemen, were also helpful assets in the campaign for electing District Attorney Bud Crammer. Their names were Audie Majors and Sergeant Frank Crowell.

After Cathy had exhausted all of her recollections, Crabtree and Bennet ordered us to "leave Huntsville now while we were still alive, and shut up if we intended to stay that way!"

Later, Cathy and I would learn that Crabtree and Bennct had notified every law enforcement officer in over five states to whom we had provided information, They reported that we were a pair of "professional con artist criminals". Perhaps they were able to accomplish this discrediting tactic as a result of police reports we filed in other states, which included a reference to our "bud experience" with the Huntsville Police Department. In addition, the Nashville office of the FBI was responsible for perpetrating Crabtree's and Bennet's discrediting lies. This FBI action ceased after resident-agent-in-charge Ben Purser was told by a friendly district attorney that I now could prove the identity and prosecute those responsible for the character assassination. The harassmet stopped,

It is interesting to note that 'Bud' Crammer would in less than a year, be elected to Congress. Within months after his election, Bud was rewarded for years of alleged containment practices. Allegedly Bud has been covering up investigations for the intelligence community, DOD, and of course his number one financial supporter, NASA.

The wife of an Atlanta, Georgia physician, Ms. Faye Yeager, did however survive Bud's wrath in court. Her "crime" was advocating for and protecting a child who had been horribly abused. This courageous lady had her day in court and won. Now she has filed a counter-suit in Federal court. Reeling from Bud's "second hand" threats to our lives, we returned to Nashville, Here we learned that the Kentucky V.I.P. hospital administration had suddenly declared Kelly's State of Alaska medical records "to be in error". V.I.P. said she was "fine!" This statement was supplemented by "you best come here now and pick her up or we'll give her to Kentucky Child Services and they will find adoptive parents."

This was a terrifying development since Kelly could not function outside a restrictive environment. She had been declared suicidal and homicidal by three attending physicians and/or therapists. Cathy and I were homeless. We brought Kelly back to Tennessee where she, Cathy and I stayed in my mother's tiny two-bedroom home. This living arrangement would not last. Kelly's asthma (program), destined to separate her from her mother, returned within 48 hours. We rushed her, gasping for breath, to Vanderbilt Hospital in Nashville for emergency treatment. Again Kelly's condition worsened to the extremely critical point, then returned to normal. Her attending doctor thought he had seen a real miracle until he learned about mind control.

Vanderbilt Hospital physicians who reviewed Kelly's past medical and psychiatric records recommended that she be moved to the worst child warehouse we've seen so far, Crocket/Cumberland House, the "home for broken butterflies" (see photo). Because Cathy and I were both unemployed and Kelly only had Medicaid insurance, the State of Tennessee demanded temporary custody. Their demands for custody were legally legitimate and morally equated to extortion for they had no intentions of seeking expert therapy for Kelly.

Through a lengthy two-year court proceeding, with five lawyers opposing Cathy, we had a partial victory, Kelly was transferred to Charter Hospital in Memphis, Tennessee where again she did not receive MPD/DID therapy, but for the first time did receive genuine empathy from a social worker, Abbott Jordan.

During this period, my life and liberty was threatened by the Nashville Metro Police Department. This verbal death threat was delivered by Metro Homicide Captain Mickey Miller and echoed by his friend and subordinate Lt. Tommy Jacobs. Miller said, "You best forget this woman; walk away from all this now before your health changes." Jacobs said, "There's nothing wrong with that kid that her father (Cox) can't fix. She just has allergies. You'd best forget you ever heard of either one of them." I have all this conversation on audio tape.

Within a few months of these threats came others threatening both our lives and liberty from every branch of law enforcement within the State of Tennessee. This included the Nashville office of the FBI. The latter was in the form of a "clerical mistake" on the part of the FBI that was to be a "frame up" for my supposedly threatening the President of the United States, George Bush. This charge was totally groundless and was subsequently dropped, but only after I secured a lawyer

It was now 1991, and Cathy and I had determined that we must proceed with "phase two" of our pursuit of justice through a well organized information dissemination campaign. The funding for this project would indirectly come from the assistance of Bill Ross who also provided constant moral support,

Cathy and I have always fell uncomfortable exposing gentle persons like Bill Ross to such horrific information as pertains to trauma-based mind control. However, we have learned over the years through our public speaking engagements and consultations with physicians and others that, generally speaking, people appreciate knowing WHY they are no longer "at the top of the food chain," Bill Ross like hundreds of others never gave up hope that we would live to tell our story.

Five years have passed since we returned from Alaska. The lessons learned through this trail-blazing effort in our pursuit of justice should never be taught to anyone. No person should have to experience the heartache, desperation, and grinding poverty that Cathy, Kelly, and I have had to live with-

During the winding down portion of our information dissemination campaign, Cathy approached me with an idea she thought could help us win public support. She had repeatedly commented that she wanted to rescue Seidina 'Dina' Reed, daughter of actor/singer Jerry Reed of Smokey And The

Bandit fame. According to Cathy, she had been used repeatedly in pornography productions with Seidina over the years and had bonded with this once beautiful woman.

Seidina's husband, David Rorick, aka Dave Roe, was then her alleged sadistic handler. It is noteworthy that Roe allegedly received his training on how to maintain a slave, using specific tortures, from Alex Houston. Roe lived and reportedly loved, with Houston before he met Seidina. Cathy and I naively believed at the time that Jerry Reed was not involved in his daughter's enslavement as was Cathy's father. Furthermore, we were convinced that Jerry Reed, with his numerous connections into politics and the entertainment industry could be a powerful ally. This was not to be.

I rescued Seidina and in minutes after the rescue, she began talking, but not until I had discussed my plan in person with her famous father and his agent at a Brentwood, Tennessee restaurant. Reed had more Chan enough time to warn Roe that I was armed and on my way to his house. All evidences disappeared.

Years later a U.S. Customs Enforcement officer informed me that I had "somedoby" connected to Reed, possibly Reed himself, suggesting "I might be blackmailing him." This "clean" customs officer knew I had rescued Seidina from Roe's enslavement and that I had audio taped all meetings with Seidina, Jerry Keed, and his wife, Prissy. He was openly concerned for my safety and that Reed was lying so as to frighten me away.

Within two months after the rescue, Seidina and her mother filed criminal charges, including sexual child abuse (of Seidina's four-year-old son) against Roe. A "spook informant" working within the Nashville District Attorney's office alerted me to these charges and the anticipated outcome. No action was taken FOR REASONS OF NATIONAL SECURITY.

Seidina had been prostituted to, among many others, heads of state, and to the Arabian Ambassador to the U.S., Prince Bandar Bin Sultan. According to an involved witnesses of one of her encounters with Bandar (a friend of George Bush) she was one of his favorite slaves. We've never heard from Seidina or any member of her family since the rescue. This trek through hell in our pursuit of justice taught nothing to Cathy that she had not already been told by her abusers. For me, I learned the hard way that our Constitution was only a beautiful plan that had been stolen, plundered, and replaced FOR REASONS OF NATIONAL SECURITY.

Today, Cathy, Kelly, I and all true patriots stand at the proverbial crossroads of revolution or evolution. Through armed revolution, we patriots will perish and the emergence of a totally government controlled society will herald in another period of "dark ages". As a proud gun owner, armed with inside knowledge, I know we are technologically out-gunned. Whereas if we choose to evolve through the challenges to our psyche that developed communication technologies present we can reinstate our Constitution and set our people free. Revolution or Evolution-change in life as we know it is inevitable.

Each of us must now take a stand to commit a portion of our individual time and diminishing resources to support the action groups and individuals who are not afraid to work at taking back our government through mass exposure of its crimes. We must seek new leaders who will be committed to doing the most with the least. These leaders share the battle cry that SILENCE DOES (indeed) EQUAL DEATH.

[6] Hund, Linda, Secret Agenda, St. Martin's Press 1991

INSERTS: VARIOUS SUPPORTIVE DOCUMENTS AND PICTURES

ALEX HOUSTON

NEWS

ADVANTAGE MAGAZINE DECEMBER 1987

The power of saving energy

Nashville-based Uni-Phayse Inc. has landed a $31 million purchase contract with the People's Republic of China for capacitors, which operate as electronic power factor correction systems.

Founded approximately a year ago, the company will supply the energy managing systems to the Chinese government over the next 15 years, according to Mark Phillips, president.

"Initial applications will be directed toward that country's mining industry," says Phillips. "The Chinese have had to shut factories down on an alternating-day schedule because of power shortages. This device will enable them, in essence, to save enough energy to keep their factories going."

Ranging in size from a computer chip to a small office, the devices primarily affect the energy losses that occur with the use of electric motors, according to Phillips. "There are two types of electrical power," he explains, "and the power factor is the type used to turn a motor on." Although it is not used once the motor is running, it keeps running through the lines, Phillips says. Typically, it is then shot back to the power company and no one benefits.

"However, capacitors, which are installed near the equipment, store the energy almost instantaneously and then release it back to the motor when the motor demands it," Phillips says. Companies can realize a 15-17 percent savings in their energy bills, Phillips claims, in addition to eradicating the "power factor" penalties charged by the utility companies.

Although the technology has been available in this country for 50 years, according to Phillips, very few efforts have been made to manufacture and market the systems.

"Frankly speaking," he says, "because energy costs have been so low in this country until the last decade, there hasn't been any real interest in conserving energy. Of course, that is changing."

The company is working with TVA to identify industries that are experiencing "power factor" penalties. For now, says Phillips, there are several industries and institutions, such as schools, which can benefit from the technology.

While working with the local market, Phillips is also negotiating with other Pacific Rim and Third World countries, which he says are keenly aware of their need to manage energy.

"The bottom line of what we're doing is developing an educational program on the benefits of energy management for these countries, and we will also be manufacturing other energy-saving devices in the future," the executive says.

Currently manufacturing the systems at full capacity in the company's Florida plant, Uni-Phayse plans to open a second manufacturing operation in Nashville early next year. Phillips is in the process of locating and purchasing equipment for the plant, which he says will employ approximately 30 people.

— *by Bonnie Arnett*

February 5, 1988

Uni-Phayse, Inc.
107 Music City Circle, Suite 310
Nashville, TN 37214

Re: Resignation

Gentlemen:

I hereby tender my resignation as an officer and director of Uni-Phayse, Inc., effective immediately.

W. Alex Houston

YING ZHAN International Trading (
YING HAI Enterprises Ltd.

C. Y. Chiu
President

Rm. 1904-1906 Hua Qin International Bldg.,
340, Queen's Road Central, Hong Kong
Tel: 8150655 (4 Lines)
Telex: 73035 YZHAN HX
Cable: YZHANITCO
Fax: 5-432095

Rm. 221 No. 24 B
MU XU DI, BEIJIN
Tel: 367995

JOINT VENTURE CONTRACT

For Establishing

SHENZHEN UNI-PHAYSE CO. LTD.

Party A: Metallurgical Import & Export Corp. Shenzhen Industry & Trade Co.

Representative: 1987.10-2

Party B: Metallurgical Equipment Corp of the Ministry of Metallurgical Industry of China

Representative: 郑[illegible]森 1987.10.2

Party C. Ying Hai Enterprises Ltd. of Hong Kong

Representative: Oct 2 '87

Party D: Uni-Phayse Inc. of USA

Representative:

MEC Ministry of Metallurgical Industry
Metallurgical Equipment Corp.

ZHAI XINTING
President

10 Dongsixi Dajie
Beijing China

Tel: 55.7031—4384
Cable: 3131 Beijing
Telex: 222355 YJMEC CN

Section of Economic Information
Economic Information Center
Ministry of Ordnance Industry

868561-
853

LU JUNDA
Bureau Chief

San Li-He
Beijing, China
P.O. Box 24 Beijing

Tel: 86.8441-
21
Cable: 1105

William S. W. YOON
Managing Director

Tel.: 5-299677 (5 Lines) Telex: 74889 OCLIN HX
65793 OCLIN HX (A.O.B.)

Oceanlink Limited
Oceanlink Maritime Ltd.
Yinghai Enterprises Ltd.

Rm. 606, Asian House, 1 Hennessy Rd., Wanchai, H.K.
G. P. O. Box 3312 HKG FAX: 5-8613413

---

uni phayse

Tel. (615) 885-9
Fax. (615) 885-9
Tel. 5-299677 (5 Li
Fax: 5-8613

An International Company

Mark E. Phillips
President

Corporate Headquarters
107 Music City Circle
Suite 310
Nashville, TN 37214

Asian Sales O
Rm. 606, Asian Ho
1 Hennessy
Wanchai, Hong K

L S E

LASER SYSTEMS
& ELECTRONICS inc.

MARK E. PHILLIPS
NATIONAL SALES MANAGER
MEDICAL DIVISION

P. O. BOX 450
TULLAHOMA, TENN. 37388
TEL. (615) 455-0929

OUTDOOR
RESORTS
OF AMERICA, INC

Mark E. Phillips
Marketing Operations
Manager

Alaska
Business
College

907-349-1905
800-478-1905
FAX 907-349-9802

MARK E. PHILLIPS
Director of Admissions

800 East Dimond Blvd.
Suite 3-350
Anchorage, Alaska 99515

MARK E. PHILLIPS
DIRECTOR OF PASSENGER SALES & SERVIC

GREAT NORTHERN AIRLINI

3400 INTL. AIRPORT RD.
(907) 243-1414

ANCHORAGE 995
TELEX 25

Mark Phillips
President

A PROFESSIONAL ALLIANCE DEDICATED TO VIGILANTLY PROTECTING HUMANITY'S LAST FREEDOM — THOUGHT

P.O. Box 158352 • Nashville, TN 37215

uni-phause inc

Tel. (615) 885-9
Fax. (615) 885-9
Tel.: 5-299877 (5 Li
Fax. 5-861

An International Company

Mark E. Phillips
President

Corporate Headquarters
107 Music City Circle
Suite 310
Nashville, TN 37214

Asian Sales O
Rm. 806, Asian Ho
1 Hennessy
Wanchai, Hong K

BY APPOINTMENT ONLY
Telephone [redacted]

P.O. Box 158352
Nashville, TN 37215

The Affordable / Pleasurable Drug Alternative

MARK E. PHILLIPS, C. HT.

Clinical-Sports Hypnotherapist

Specialty	**Purposes**
Neuro-Linguistic Programming	Sports/Athletics Conditioning
Self Hypnosis Instruction	Pain Relief/Injury Rehab

U. S. Department of Justice

United States Attorney

Middle District of Tennessee

---

110 9th Avenue South, Suite A-961
Nashville, Tennessee 37203-3870

615/736-5151
FTS/852-5151

September 9, 1991

Mr. Mark Phillips

Dear Mr. Phillips:

This letter will advise you of the following matters pertaining to testimony before the Federal Grand Jury for which you have been subpoenaed.

1. You are a possible subject of an investigation by the Federal Grand Jury. This means that the United States Attorney's Office or the Grand Jury has substantial evidence linking you to the commission of a crime and you are, in the judgment of the United States Attorney's Office, a possible defendant.

2. The Grand Jury is conducting an investigation of possible violations of federal laws including Title 18, U.S.C. Section 871, mailing threatening communications.

3. You may refuse to answer any questions if a truthful answer to the questions would tend to incriminate you.

4. Anything you do say may be used against you by the Grand Jury or in a subsequent legal proceeding.

5. You are entitled to consult with counsel about this matter. If you cannot afford to hire an attorney, one will be appointed for you upon your request to the court.

6. If you have retained counsel, or have been appointed counsel, the Grand Jury will permit you a reasonable opportunity to step outside the grand jury room to consult with counsel before answering questions, if you so desire.

Sincerely,

Van S Vincent

VAN S. VINCENT
Assistant United States Attorney

/tp

AO 110 (Rev. 12/89) Subpoena to Testify Before Grand Jury

United States District Court

MIDDLE DISTRICT OF TENNESSEE

TO:

MARK PHILLIPS

SUBPOENA TO TESTIFY BEFORE GRAND JURY

SUBPOENA FOR:
☐ PERSON ☑ DOCUMENT(S) OR OBJECT(S)

YOU ARE HEREBY COMMANDED to appear and testify before the Grand Jury of the United States District Court at the place, date, and time specified below.

PLACE U.S. Courthouse 8th & Broad Nashville, TN 37203	COURTROOM A-825 Grand Jury Room
	DATE AND TIME Sept. 19, 1991 ~~1:00 p.m.~~ 3:30 PM

YOU ARE ALSO COMMANDED to bring with you the following document(s) or object(s):*

You will be asked to provide fingerprints, palmprints, handwriting exemplar and testimony.

☐ Please see additional information on reverse

This subpoena shall remain in effect until you are granted leave to depart by the court or by an officer acting on behalf of the court.

CLERK Juliet Griffin	DATE Sept. 9, 1991
(BY) DEPUTY CLERK Carolyn Morris	
This subpoena is issued on application of the United States of America	NAME, ADDRESS AND PHONE NUMBER OF ASSISTANT U.S. ATTORNEY VAN VINCENT, AUSA A-961 U.S. Courthouse Nashville, TN 37203 615/736-5151

Mark with pet raccoons 1988

1988 Family photo of Mark, Cathy, Kelly

Cathy and Mark, 1988
Las Vegas, Nevada

Cathy and Mark, 1995

Kelly 1984

Cathy in Cozumel, Mexico
prior to prostitution to
President de la Madrid, 1986

1987, Cathy and Kelly
drug run in Key West

Cathy durine CIA cocaine
operations with Jeff Merritt
St. Thomas, US Virgin Islands

Cathy on NCL's Stirrup Cay
near CIA communications

Please Note: Cheney's
"Oz" hour glass used
on Cathy

BELOW—Prince Bandar bin Sultan, Saudi Arabian ambassador to the United States, with Secretary of Defense Cheney in Cheney's Pentagon office.

CROCKETT ACADEMY
3411 BELMONT
ESTABLISHED 1975
CUMBERLAND
HOUSE

State-of-Tennessee-run "warehouse," the "home of broken butterflies," where Kelly's on-going political prisoner status began

Kids
Sold
FBI
Why Does the FBI Protect Aquino?

Francisco protest of U.S. Army . Aquino's federal protection board position on Childcare Council

Kelly with biological father, occult serial killer Wayne Cox By court order 1988

Kelly with pedophile Boxcar Willie
Rutland, Vermont 1985

FIRST DAY OF SCHOOL 1965

Cathy when
Gerald Ford knew her

Cathy, May 7, 1966
First Communion

Earl O'Brien
Cathy's pedophile father

The O'Brien Family in 1980
Carol, Mike, Bill, Cathy, Earl
Tom, Kelli Jo, Kim, Tim

TIGERS
DETROIT
SPARKY ANDERSON MGR

Sparky Anderson, who
Kelly named as abuser
and who abused Cathy
as a child

Cathy's brother Tom
front of 1966 Ford
used to drive VanderJagt
and Ford in local parades

THE NASHVILLE DERMATOLOGY
AND SKIN CANCER CLINIC, P.C.

HOWARD L. SALYER, M.D., F.A.C.P.

1900 PATTERSON STREET- SUITE 808
NASHVILLE, TENN. 37203

SURGICALLY REMOVED CATHY'S
HIGH VOLTAGE STUN GUN PROD
MOLES FROM FACE

2⁰⁰ Monday
10-28-91

Samuel J. McKenna, D.D.S., M.D.
Practice Limited
to
Oral and Maxillofacial Surgery
Vanderbilt University Medical Center

1st floor
Purple Line

1823 The Vanderbilt Clinic
Nashville, TN 37232

Appointments: 322-2377
Office: 343-9402
Home: 665-0087

TREATED CATHY'S JAW WHICH
WAS PERMANENTLY DAMAGED
THROUGH TORTURE

Patricia C. Patrick, M.D.
Child, Adolescent & Adult
Psychiatry

E COUNSELING CENTER
1 W. Fireweed, Suite 107
chorage, Alaska 99503

279-5441

FIRST PSYCHIATRIST TO
DIAGNOSE KELLY MPDed WITH
MIND CONTROL PROGRAMMING

ROBERT ALBERTS, M.D., M.P.H.

ALASKA PSYCHIATRIC SERVICES

3340 PROVIDENCE DRIVE, SUITE 401
ANCHORAGE, ALASKA 99508

TELEPHONE
(907)561-6600

FIRST PSYCHIATRIST TO
EVALUATE CATHY AND KELLY
IN 1989

. . . .

JUDITH B. KOHLER, M.S.

PSYCHOLOGICAL
EXAMINER

. . . .

PROFESSIONAL COUNSELOR
CHILD & ADULT THERAPY
FAMILY THERAPY
MARITAL COUNSELING

. . . .

2814 DOGWOOD PLACE
POST OFFICE BOX 40981
NASHVILLE, TN 37204-0981
615/292-2115

WENT AGAINST C.I.A. AND
STATE OF TENNESSEE TO
DECLARE CATHY LEGALLY SANE
AND COMPETENT AS MOTHER.

Barry Nurcombe, M.D.
Professor of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry
Department of Psychiatry

Vanderbilt Child & Adolescent Psychiatric Hospital
1601 Twenty Third Avenue, South
Nashville, TN 37212
(615) 327-7019 • (615) 327-7122

DAY Tues. DATE Oct. 13 TIME 10:00 AM

IS YOUR NEXT APPOINTMENT WITH

FRANK B. NEISWENDER, M.S.W., L.C.S.W.
LICENSED CLINICAL SOCIAL WORKER
132 POSTWOOD PLACE
NASHVILLE, TENN. 37205
PHONE 615-356-6040

A CHARGE WILL BE MADE IF APPOINTMENT IS NOT KEPT OR
CANCELLED IN ADVANCE.

KELLY'S (ALLEGED C.I.A.
SPONSORED) VANDERBILT
PSYCHIATRIST AND
THERAPIST.

PEDIATRIC CONSULTANTS OF ALASKA, INC.
Clinton B. Lillibridge, M.D. F.A.A.P.

June 22, 1989

Investigator Jack Chapman
Anchorage Police Dept.
4501 S Bragaw
Anchorage, Alaska 99507

RE: KELLY O'BRIEN

Dear Mr. Chapman:

Kelly O'Brien appeared in my office in the company of her mother, Cathy O'Brien, on 06/12/89. Mother requested evaluation for possible sexual abuse.

Child appeared somewhat ill at ease but was fully cooperative and had a good sense of humor - joking during the examination.

PHYSICAL EXAMINATION: HEENT: She was a rather round face child with prominent cheeks. Otherwise negative. BREASTS: Breasts are Tanner Stage 0 development. CHEST: Fine musical wheezes throughout. GU: The genital exam is Tanner Stage 0 development. The introitus is intensely red with a moderate white discharge. Culture for sexually transmitted diseases was negative. The hymen has a smooth thick edge with a 6 X 8 mm opening. The vaginal mucosa appeared normal. RECTAL: Anus has no tears, no fissures, and no scars. EXTREM: Extremities are rather stocky in the proximal portion.

DIAGNOSIS: Large opening in the hymen indicative of sexual penetration. Nonspecific vaginitis of childhood. Chronic asthma.

COMMENT: Vaginitis causes some swelling of the hymen tissue. If the swelling were not present, the opening through the hymen may appear considerably larger. The size of the opening itself is typical for a child who has been sexually penetrated with an object the size of an adult finger. This could not have been caused by an accident because the hymen is recessed back into the introitus far enough to protect it from damage occurring from falls, splits, etc.

CLINTON B. LILLIBRIDGE, M.D.
Pediatrician

CBL/bw
cc: Dr. Bruno Kappes

JUN 23 1989

PEDIATRIC CONSULTANTS OF ALASKA, INC.
Clinton B. Lillibridge, M.D., F.A.A.P.

September 11, 1989

Dion Roberts, M.D.
4001 Dale St.
Suite 210
Anchorage, Alaska 99508

Dear Dion:

Kelly Cox is a 9 and 1/2-year-old chronic asthmatic that was involved with her parent in a cult which did mind programming. Mother and Kelly are now in rather intensive treatment for this with salutary effect.

She had physical findings of chronic asthma. They have applied for Social Security Disability which requires evaluation and expertise beyond mine. A copy of the paperwork is enclosed.

CLINTON B. LILLIBRIDGE, M.D.
Pediatric Gastroenterologist

CBL/bw
enclosure

SEP 15 1989

1200 Airport Heights Drive, Suite 230 • Anchorage, Alaska 99508
Telephone (907) 276-5517

CHARTER NORTH HOSPITAL
2530 DE BARR ROAD
ANCHORAGE, ALASKA 99508
(907)-258-7575

COX (O'BRIEN), KELLY
DR. PATRICK
M.R.#: 00-32-75
ADMISSION DATE: 09-19-89
DISCHARGE DATE: 10-16-89
D.O.B.: 02-19-80

DISCHARGE SUMMARY

DISCHARGE DIAGNOSES:
AXIS I: Dissociative Disorder

AXIS II: Post Traumatic Stress Disorder

AXIS III: Bronchial asthma

AXIS IV: Precipitating stress: Severe

AXIS V: Highest level of function: Fair

The patient is a 9½ year old girl who was admitted to the hospital on transfer from Humana Hospital where she has been a patient for approximately two weeks. She was admitted there because of an acute asthmatic episode in which she had deteriorated from a previous time. Additionally, the patient is a victim of sexual abuse and ritualized abuse involving hypnosis, mind control, and psychological programming. The patient had been under the hypnotic control of her step-father from the age of two and a half until approximately six months prior to admission. During this time the patient had been sexually abused and had participated in ritual abuse and had been programmed to die. Last June, at the end of the school year, the patient had an acute asthmatic episode requiring intensive treatment at Humana Hospital. During that time she was on steroids and has been recently on a course of steroids. The patient is admitted to Charter North Hospital because of suicidal/homicidal ideation. The ideation appears to be mostly directed towards herself, her mother and her step-father.

The patient's mental status examination at the time of admission indicates an attractive blonde-haired girl with a slightly moon shaped faces consistent with the use of steroids. She relates easily to the examiner whom she knows through her outpatient treatment. She is animated and engaging. She is quite resistant to exploration of her problems but can fairly easily refer to the sexual abuse she has experienced. There are no bizarre or unusual behaviors noted in this examination tonight. She does seem somewhat agitated and admits that she is apprehensive. She appears to be intellectually bright.

ADMITTING DIAGNOSIS: Dissociative Disorder OS, Post Traumatic Stress Syndrome and Bronchial Asthma.

Social history was obtained by the unit social worker. It is his assessment that she is an engaging and verbal youngster on a superficial social level. The writer was able to "trigger" the patient's defenses which consisted of a horse personna and withdrawal. Activity level was good and eye contact appropriate.

200 Professional
West Monroe, La.

STATE OF LOUISIANA

CERTIFICATE OF LIVE BIRTH

Birth No. 119 80 15 856

1a. LAST NAME Cox	1b. FIRST NAME Kelly	1c. SECOND NAME Lynn	2a. DATE OF BIRTH MONTH DAY YEAR Feb. 19, 1980
3. GIRL OR BOY Girl	4. THIS BIRTH Single ☒ Twin ☐ Triplet ☐	5. IF TWIN OR TRIPLET, WAS CHILD BORN 1st ☐ 2d ☐ 3d ☐	2b. HOUR OF BIRTH 1:15 p.m.
6b. CITY, TOWN, OR LOCATION OF BIRTH West Monroe			6a. PARISH OF BIRTH Ouachita
6d. NAME OF HOSPITAL OR INSTITUTION (IF NOT IN HOSPITAL OR INSTITUTION, GIVE STREET ADDRESS OR LOCATION) Glenwood Hospital			6c. IS PLACE OF BIRTH INSIDE CITY LIMITS? Yes ☒ No ☐
7a. RESIDENCE OF MOTHER (CITY, TOWN OR LOCATION) Chatham		7b. PARISH Jackson	7c. STATE Louisiana
7d. STREET ADDRESS—(IF RURAL INDICATE LOCATION) Route 1, Box 84			7e. IS RESIDENCE INSIDE CITY LIMITS? Yes ☐ No ☒
8a. FULL NAME OF FATHER Edward Wayne Cox	8b. CITY AND STATE OF BIRTH (IF NOT IN U.S.A. NAME COUNTRY) Hodge, La.	8c. AGE (AT TIME OF THIS BIRTH) 31	8d. COLOR OR RACE OF FATHER White
9a. FULL MAIDEN NAME OF MOTHER Cathleen Ann O'Brien	9b. CITY AND STATE OF BIRTH (IF NOT IN U.S.A. NAME COUNTRY) Muskegon, Michigan	9c. AGE (AT TIME OF THIS BIRTH) 22	9d. COLOR OR RACE OF MOTHER White
I certify that the above stated information is true and correct to the best of my knowledge.	10. SIGNATURE OF PARENT OR OTHER INFORMANT ✓ Cathleen Cox	Parent ☒ Other ☐	11. DATE OF SIGNATURE February 21, 1980
12. INFORMANT'S MAILING ADDRESS Route 1, Box 84, Chatham, La. 71226			
I certify that I attended this birth and that the child was born alive on the date stated above.	13. SIGNATURE OF ATTENDANT M.D.	M.D. ☒ Midwife ☐ Other ☐	14. DATE OF SIGNATURE 2-21-80
15. DATE ACCEPTED BY LOCAL REGISTRAR MAR 1 8 1980	16. SIGNATURE OF LOCAL REGISTRAR Katie L. Stewart		17. DATE FILED BY STATE REGISTRAR MAR 2 0 1980

CONFIDENTIAL INFORMATION FOR MEDICAL AND HEALTH USE ONLY

(This Section MUST Be Filled Out For Each Birth)

FEB 17 1981

I CERTIFY THAT THE ABOVE IS A TRUE AND CORRECT COPY OF A CERTIFICATE OR DOCUMENT REGISTERED WITH THE DIVISION OF VITAL RECORDS OF THE STATE OF LOUISIANA, PURSUANT TO LSA—R.S. 40:32, ET SEQ.

STATE HEALTH OFFICER

STATE REGISTRAR

NAME Cathy O'Brien DATE 11/26/90

WEIGHT ____ AGE 32 B/P ____

ALLERGIES NKA MENARCH ____ DAYS ____ [illegible]

DYSMENORRHEA mild LMP 11/14/90

as above — see SUI —

PH [illegible]

OB — [illegible]

FH- neg. Dr [illegible] colon [illegible]

SOC neg. MEDS Tri Nor 2yrs.

PE ____

BREASTS ____

ABD [illegible]

PELVIC CX [illegible] ? [illegible]

UT [illegible]

ADN [illegible]

IMP ? [illegible]

PLAN Oral [illegible]

Tri Nor [illegible]

RICHARD E. PRESLEY, M.D
STEPHEN M. STAGGS, M.D

Name ____

Address ____ Date 4-15-91

℞ From seeing photographs & reading her history & physical for mother, it is my opinion that Kelly Cox has been sexually abused.

R E Presley

☐ Label

Refill ____ times PRN NR

____ M.D. Substitution Allowed ____ M.D. Dispense As Written

4/15/91 Look at vagina again
for [illegible]
Pt. has been abused.

Certificate of Birth

This Certifies that Cathleen Ann O'Brian

was born to Mr. and Mrs. Earl M. O'Brian

in Mercy Hospital Muskegon, Michigan

at 6 47 p.m. this 4th day of December 1952

In Witness Whereof the said Hospital has caused this Certificate to be signed by its duly authorized officers and its Corporate Seal to be hereunto affixed.

Sister M. Theodona, R.N. Adm

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

November 20, 1990

Dear Congressman Clement:

Thank you for your recent letter enclosing correspondence you received from Mark Phillips of Nashville, Tennessee.

We appreciate your interest in sharing Mr. Phillips' letter with us. I have taken the liberty of forwarding a copy of your correspondence to the appropriate officials for further attention.

Thank you again for your interest in writing.

With best regards,

Sincerely,

Fred McClure

Frederick D. McClure
Assistant to the President
for Legislative Affairs

The Honorable Bob Clement
House of Representatives
Washington, D.C. 20515

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

December 14, 1990

Dear Mr. Phillips:

Congressman Bob Clement has sent us the copies he received of your November 15, 1990 letters to President Bush and Attorney General Thornburg. While we have not received your original letter, we are forwarding these copies to officials at the Department of Justice for appropriate consideration.

With best wishes,

Sincerely,

Shirley M. Green

Shirley M. Green
Special Assistant to the President
for Presidential Messages
and Correspondence

Mr. Mark E. Phillips
Post Office Box 158352
Nashville, TN 37215

BOB CLEMENT
6TH DISTRICT, TENNESSEE

COMMITTEE ON
PUBLIC WORKS AND TRANSPORTATION

COMMITTEE ON
MERCHANT MARINE AND FISHERIES

CONGRESSIONAL TRAVEL AND
TOURISM CAUCUS
STEERING COMMITTEE

DEMOCRATIC STEERING AND
POLICY COMMITTEE

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, DC 20515–4205

DISTRICT OFFICES:
552 U.S. COURTHOUSE
NASHVILLE, TN 37203
615-736-5295

510 MAIN STREET
SPRINGFIELD, TN 37172
615-384-6600

2701 JEFFERSON STREET
SUITE 103
NASHVILLE, TN 37208
615-320-1363

WASHINGTON OFFICE
ROOM 325
CANNON HOUSE OFFICE BUIL
202-225-4311

November 15, 1990

Mr. Mark Phillips
P.O. Box 158352
Nashville, Tennessee 37215

Dear Mr. Phillips:

As you requested, I have forwarded to the President and Attorney General Thornburgh the packages you delivered to my office.

Should I receive a response, I will be pleased to share it with you. In the meantime, please feel free to call on me if I can be of further assistance.

Thank you, again, for bringing this matter to my attention.

Sincerely,

Bob Clement
Member of Congress

BC/df

THIS STATIONERY PRINTED ON PAPER MADE WITH RECYCLED FIBERS

BOB DOLE
KANSAS
[illegible] HART BUILDING
(202) 224-6521

[illegible]

United States Senate
WASHINGTON DC 20510-1601

March 13,1991

Mr. Mark Phillips
P.O. Box 158352
Nashville, Tennessee 37215

Dear Mr. Phillips:

Thank you for contacting me concerning the Monarch Program.

The tradition of Congressional courtesy provides that we allow our colleagues the opportunity to assist their own constituents. Accordingly, I have referred your letter to Senator Al Gore. He is in the best position to review the matter, and I am confident that he will offer all appropriate suggestions and assistance.

I appreciate the confidence you have shown by contacting me.

Sincerely,

BOB DOLE
United States Senate

BD/er

cc: The Honorable Al Gore

Central Intelligence Agency

Washington, D.C. 20505

17 JUL 1991

Ms. Cathy O'Brien
P.O. Box 158352
Nashville, Tennessee 37215

Reference: P91-0739

Dear Ms. O'Brien:

This is a final response to your Privacy Act request for information on yourself. We have searched those Agency systems that might contain information regarding you and find that we were unable to identify any information or record filed under the name or names you have provided.

We appreciate your patience and understanding during the period required to process your request.

Sincerely,

John H. Wright

John H. Wright
Information and Privacy Coordinator

BOB CLEMENT
5TH DISTRICT, TENNESSEE

COMMITTEE ON
PUBLIC WORKS AND TRANSPORTATION

COMMITTEE ON
VETERANS' AFFAIRS

CONGRESSIONAL TRAVEL AND
TOURISM CAUCUS
STEERING COMMITTEE

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, DC 20515-4205

DISTRICT OFFICES:
552 U.S. COURTHOUSE
NASHVILLE, TN 37203
615-736-5295

101 5TH AVENUE EAST
SUITE 201
SPRINGFIELD, TN 37172
615-384-6600

2701 JEFFERSON STREET
SUITE 103
NASHVILLE, TN 37208
615-320-1363

WASHINGTON OFFICE:
ROOM 325
CANNON HOUSE OFFICE BUILDING
WASHINGTON, DC 20515-4205
202-225-4311

July 11, 1992

Ms. Cathy O'Brien
P.O. Box 158352
Nashville, Tennessee 37215

Dear Ms. O'Brien:

Thank you for sharing with me the additional information about your daughter.

I hope the future looks brighter for you and Kelly. Please keep me informed of any additional progress in this case.

Sincerely,

Bob Clement
Member of Congress

BC/df

A WELL KNOWN ALLEGED MIND
CONTROLLED TOP "MOONIE" THAT
THE CIA SENT IN ON MARK AND
CATHY IN 1989 BY U.C.L.A.'S
(C.I.A.) DR. JOLYN WEST, M.D.
AND CULT AWARENESS NETWORK
FOUNDER MARGARET SINGER, M.D.

Steven Hassan M.Ed.

CULT AND MIND CONTROL SPECIALIST
STRATEGIC INTERVENTION THERAPIST

P.O. BOX 686
BOSTON, MA. 02258

(617) 964-6977

"NULLI VENDEMUS. NULLI NEGABIMUS RECTUM AUT JUSTITIAM

MARK'S ATTORNEY FOR 9-9-'91
FEDERAL SUBPOENA TITLE 18
U.S. CODE SECTION 871

HENRY A. MARTIN

ATTORNEY AT LAW
FEDERAL PUBLIC DEFENDER

808 BROADWAY
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37203

736
615-~~264~~-5
FTS 852-5

CATHY'S ATTORNEY FOR MARK'S
FEDERAL SUBPOENA TITLE 18
U.S. CODE SECTION 871

MICHAEL E. TERRY

LAWYER
150 SECOND AVENUE N., SUITE 315
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37201
(615) 256-5555

1-800-527-4529

FAX (615) 256-56

DICK THORNBURGH'S CHICAGO
CUB-SCOUT FRIEND FROM 1986
N.C.L. CARIBBEAN CRUISE

CUBS

JAMES ZERILLA

SCOUT

2115 KING CROSSING S.W.
WINTER HAVEN, FLORIDA 33880

(813) 299-7665

CASA

Court Appointed Special Advocate
Metropolitan Juvenile Court
802 Second Avenue, South
Nashville, Tennessee 37210

Laura Frisbie
Assistant Program Director
(615) 256-5009 Office

JUVENILE COURT APPOINTED "SPECIAL ADVOCATE" FOR THE STATE OF TENNESSEE--NOT KELLY

STATE OF TENNESSEE
OF MENTAL HEALTH AND MENTAL RETARDATION

MARSHA WILLIS, M.S.W.
CHILDREN'S PROGRAM SPECIALIST
DIVISION OF MENTAL HEALTH SERVICES

DOCTOR'S BLDG 706 CHURCH ST
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37219

TELEPHONE
(615) 741-3570

COMMISSIONER TAYLOR'S WORKER APPOINTED TO KELLY'S CASE

JEAN N. CROWE
ATTORNEY

SERVICES OF MIDDLE TENNESSEE, INC.
800 STAHLMAN BUILDING
211 UNION STREET
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37201
(615) 244-6610

JUVENILE COURT APPOINTED ATTORNEY FOR CATHY WHO ALSO REPRESENTS THE STATE OF TENNESSEE

STATE OF TENNESSEE
DEPARTMENT OF MENTAL HEALTH AND MENTAL RETARDATION

ERIC B. TAYLOR, M.S.H.A.
COMMISSIONER

DOCTORS' BLDG. 706 CHURCH ST.
SUITE 600
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37219

TELEPHONE
(615) 741-3107

COMMISSIONER OF MENTAL
TH WHO'S POOR LEGAL ADVICE
T KELLY INTO COVER-UP
HER CURRENT POLITICAL
ONER STATUS

SSEE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH AND ENVIRONMENT
MEDICAID DIVISION
OFFICE OF PROGRAM SERVICES

VICKY AUSTIN
PROVIDER/RECIPIENT INQUIRY
SUPERVISOR

741-0058

729 CHURCH STREET
NASHVILLE, TN 37219-5408

COMMISSIONER TAYLOR'S MEDICAID WORKER APPOINTED TO KELLY'S CASE

301-279-6700
FAX 301-279-2609

SE HABLA ESPAÑOL

PRUDENTIAL ASSOCIATES, INC.
INVESTIGATIVE AND CONSULTING SERVICES
LICENSED • BONDED • INSURED

HERBERT QUINDE

812 NORTH ADAMS ST
ROCKVILLE, MD 20

THEN-PRESIDENT OF MEXICO
DE LA MADRID'S SPY SENT IN
ON MARK AND CATHY IN 1992

CONTINENTAL SHIPPING, INC.

JOSE OCTAVIO BUSTO
PRESIDENT

P.O. BOX S-2467
400 COMERCIO ST.
SAN JUAN, P.R. 00903

Cable: CONSHIP
Telex RCA (325) 2770
Tel. (809) 725-2632

IMPERSONATOR OF U.S.
CUSTOMS AND IMMIGRATIONS
OFFICERS WHO WORKED FOR
D.E.A. TO PROTECT C.I.A.
CARIBBEAN DRUG OPERATIONS

Tango Bravo International
Investigations, Photographic and Aviation
Services, Militaria Sales

Terry Barnes - Owner
909 Rivergate Meadows
Goodlettsville, Tenn. 37072
(615) 865-5932

C.I.A. AERIAL HARASSMENT
PILOT HIRED BY ALEX HOUSTON
IN 1988

Metropolitan Health Department
Davidson County Community Health Agency
Caring For Children Program

Alicia Lewis
Case Manager

Nashville House, Building A
One Vantage Way
Nashville, Tennessee 37228

Phone 615-862-7950
FAX 615-862-7975

JUVENILE COURT APPOINTED
AGENCY WHO ALSO PROTECTS
AND REPRESENTS THE STATE
OF TENNESSEE

ATE AGENCIES TO WHOM MARK AND CATHY PROVIDED DETAILED
STIMONY, DOCUMENTATION, AND INFORMATION IN 1991

OMNI VISIONS, INC
Breaking the Traditional Boundaries of Care

Kathy Joyner, M.A.
Resource Coordinator

1451 Elm Hill Pike • Suite 250-A
Nashville, TN 37210
367-1622 • Fax 367-1890

JUVENILE COURT APPOINTED
AGENCY WHO IMPLEMENTED
CIVIL RIGHTS VIOLATIONS

ANDREW EARL
SPECIAL AGENT
TENNESSEE BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

P.O. BOX 100940
NASHVILLE TN 37210-0940
741-0430

STATE OF TENNESSEE
23RD JUDICIAL DISTRICT

DAN M. ALSOBROOKS
DISTRICT ATTORNEY GENERAL

P.O. BOX 580
CHARLOTTE, TN 37036
(615) 789-5021

NETWORK: 840-2512
ASHLAND CITY: (615) 792-4835
WAVERLY: (615) 296-9159

STATE VICTIM'S ADVOCACY
ORGANIZATION THAT WAS
BARRED FROM JUVENILE
COURT PROCEEDINGS

"Equal Justice For Victims"

ORGANIZED VICTIMS OF VIOLENT CRIME
P.O. Box 1221
Madison, TN 37115-1221

Hot Line (615) 865-4385

EDITH S. HAMMONS
President

19TH SENATORIAL DISTRICT

THELMA M. HARPER
SENATOR

SUITE 6
LEGISLATIVE PLAZA
NASHVILLE, TN 37243-0219

(615) 741-2453

TENNESSEE STATE SENATOR TO
WHOM CATHY SUBMITTED DETAILS
OF KELLY'S POLITICAL PRISONER
STATUS AFTER SPEAKING TO THE
STATE LEGISLATURE ABOUT THE BILL
IN KELLY'S NAME 902 (SENATE)
1462 (HOUSE) AND HER RIGHT TO
QUALIFIED REHABILITATION.

A FEW OF MANY FEDERAL AGENTS AND/OR AGENCIES TO WHOM MARK AND CATHY PROVIDED DETAILED TESTIMONY AND INFORMATION FROM 1989 THROUGH 1991

RAYMOND E. EGANEY, JR.
SPECIAL AGENT FBI

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

FEDERAL BUILDING
8TH & BROADWAY
NASHVILLE TN 37201

TEL (615) 255-3676

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE
OFFICE OF INTERNAL AFFAIRS

KENNETH J. McMILLIN
ASSISTANT REGIONAL DIRECTOR (SECURITY)

UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE
423 CANAL STREET, ROOM 312
NEW ORLEANS, LOUISIANA 70130

FTS: 682-2187

(504) 589-2187

KEN MARISCHEN
SPECIAL AGENT

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

701 "C" STREET
P.O. BOX 100560
ANCHORAGE, ALASKA 99510

TEL (907) 276-4441

James Max Kitchens
Resident Agent In Charge

907-271-4036

U.S. Customs Service
Office of Enforcement

620 East 10th Ave., Suite 105
Anchorage, AK 99501

A FEW OF MANY FEDERAL AGENTS
AND/OR AGENCIES TO WHOM
MARK AND CATHY PROVIDED DETAILED
TESTIMONY AND INFORMATION
FROM 1989 THROUGH 1991

Patrick M. McGlennon
SPECIAL AGENT

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
SUITE 1553, FEDERAL BUILDING
100 WEST CAPITOL STREET
JACKSON, MISSISSIPPI 39269

601/948-5000

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASUR
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVIC
OFFICE OF INVESTIGATIONS

JACK DEVANEY
SPECIAL AGENT

x356-7;

RESIDENT AGENT IN CHARGE
299 EAST BROWARD BLVD.
SUITE 405
FORT LAUDERDALE, FLORIDA 33301

DAY: (305) [redacted]
FTS: 820-73
24 HR: (305) 536-5

FBI / NASHVille, TN.
Richard Knudsen
615 292-5159
Fax 736-1187 DP

DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION DIVISION
UNITED STATES ARMY CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION COMMAND

JAMES R. DIBBLE
SPECIAL AGENT

(502) 798-6127
PHONE

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATK

LOUIS E. GREVER
SPECIAL AGENT

100 W. CAPITOL ST.
JACKSON, MS 39269

(601) 948-50

NICHOLASVILLE POLICE DEPARTMENT

Melvin Price
Detective
Criminal Investigations

P.O. Box 450
510 N. Main Street, Nicholasville, KY 40340-0450
Office: 885-9468 Mobile: 221-3417 Fax: (606) 885-1766

A FEW OF VARIOUS COUNTY LAW ENFORCEMENT AGENTS AND AGENCIES TO WHOM MARK AND CATHY PROVIDED DETAILED TESTIMONY AND INFORMATIO

Criminal Investigator

JEFF PUCCINI
Sumner County
Sheriff's Department

Gallatin: 452-2616
Westmoreland: 644-3535
Res:____________

White House: 672-470
Nashville: 244-354
C.I.D.: 451-349

NEW ORLEANS POLICE DEPARTMENT

To Protect and to Serve

SGT. JOSEPH E. HEBERT, JR.
Criminal Investigation Bureau
Rape Section

715 S. Broad Street
New Orleans, LA 70119

(504)826-1523

MONTGOMERY COUNTY SHERIFF'S DEPARTMENT

JOE CORLEY
SHERIFF

#1 CRIMINAL JUSTICE DR.
CONROE, TEXAS 77301

NOEL STANLEY
SERGEANT
IDENTIFICATION DIVISION

Conroe: (409) 760-5878
Houston: (713) 354-5881
(713) 443-0888

FORMER MUSICIAN FOR JACK GREENE WHO WORKED WITH COX

BILLY COLSON
CONSTABLE, MONTGOMERY COUNTY
PRECINCT NO. 2
125 N. Main • Conroe, Texas 77301

Conroe: (409) 756-0571, Ext. 7439
Straight Line - Conroe: (409) 539-7854
Houston: (713) 353-9791, Ext. 7439
Residence: (409) [redacted]
264-2053

LT. JOHN J. McPHILLIPS JR.
WITCHCRAFT - SANTERIA
RITUALISTIC CRIME CONSULTANT

A FEW OF VARIOUS COUNTY LAW
ENFORCEMENT AGENTS AND AGENCIES
TO WHOM MARK AND CATHY PROVIDED.
DETAILED TESTIMONY AND INFORMATION.

RONALD J. MILLER
Lieutenant

White House Police
Department

P.O Box 69
White House, TN 37188

Phone
(615) 672-4903

Fred W. Schott
Chief of Police

POLICE DEPARTMENT

Goodlettsville

105 So. Main St. • Goodlettsville, TN 37072 • (615) 859-3405

P.O. Box 2505
Ft. Lauderdale, FL 33303

Area Code 305
Office 492-1810
Pager 821-3787
1-800-833-0282

DETECTIVE HOWARD RUDOLPH
Organized Crime Division

NICK NAVARRO - Sheriff of Broward County

Nashville Metropolitan Police Department
INTELLIGENCE DIVISION

DETECTIVE
SGT. JAMES A. HICKSON

ffice (615) 862-7367
ispatcher (615) 862-8600

200 James Robertson Pkwy.
Nashville, Tenn. 37201

PROJECT MKULTRA, THE CIA'S PROGRAM OF RESEARCH IN BEHAVIORAL MODIFICATION

JOINT HEARING

BEFORE THE

SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE

AND THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON
HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

AUGUST 3, 1977

Printed for the use of the Select Committee on Intelligence
and Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] WASHINGTON : 1977

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C., 20402
Stock No. 052-070-04357-1

J
85

BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION PROGRAMS
FEDERAL BUREAU OF PRISONS

Y4. J
J89/1:
93-26

HEARING

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON COURTS, CIVIL LIBERTIES, AND THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY
HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

NINETY-THIRD CONGRESS

SECOND SESSION

ON

OVERSIGHT HEARING
BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION PROGRAMS IN THE
FEDERAL BUREAU OF PRISONS

FEBRUARY 27, 1974

Serial No. 26

DEPOSITORY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
RECEIVED
APR 17 1974
STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW YORK
AT ALBANY

Printed for the use of the Committee on the Judiciary

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] O WASHINGTON : 1974

.Y.4/
H88:
B52/3/
977
.1043

BIOLOGICAL TESTING INVOLVING HUMAN SUBJECTS BY THE DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE, 1977

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

ON

EXAMINATION OF SERIOUS DEFICIENCIES IN THE DEFENSE DEPARTMENT'S EFFORTS TO PROTECT THE HUMAN SUBJECTS, OF DRUG RESEARCH

MARCH 8 AND MAY 23, 1977

DEPOSITORY

GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
RECEIVED
NOV8 1977
STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW YORK
AT ALBANY

SUNY-ALBANY
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

Printed for the use of the Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
87-837 O WASHINGTON : 1977

BASIC ISSUES IN BIOMEDICAL AND BEHAVIORAL RESEARCH, 1976

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON HEALTH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON
LABOR AND PUBLIC WELFARE
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FOURTH CONGRESS

SECOND SESSION

ON

EXAMINATION OF PUBLIC POLICY IN THE AREA OF BIOMEDICAL AND BEHAVIORAL RESEARCH

JUNE 16 AND 17, 1976

Printed for the use of the Committee on Labor and Public Welfare

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
76–836 O WASHINGTON : 1976

Y4.
H88:
D84

HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA, 1977

.1043

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON
HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

ON

S. 1893

TO AMEND THE PUBLIC HEALTH SERVICE ACT TO ESTABLISH THE PRESIDENT'S COMMISSION FOR THE PROTECTION OF HUMAN SUBJECTS OF BIOMEDICAL AND BEHAVIORAL RESEARCH, AND FOR OTHER PURPOSES

SEPTEMBER 20 AND 21, 1977

DEPOSITORY

SUNY-ALBANY
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
RECEIVED
FEB 16 1978
STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW YORK
AT ALBANY

Printed for the use of the Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] O WASHINGTON : 1977

-/19:C-56 1009

THE USE OF CLASSIFIED INFORMATION IN LITIGATION

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON SECRECY AND DISCLOSURE

OF THE

SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE

OF THE

UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

SECOND SESSION

MARCH 1, 2, 6, 1978

Printed for the use of the Select Committee on Intelligence

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] WASHINGTON : 1978

LEGISLATION TO MODIFY THE APPLICATION OF THE FREEDOM OF INFORMATION ACT TO THE CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY

HEARING

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON LEGISLATION

OF THE

PERMANENT SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

NINETY-EIGHTH CONGRESS

SECOND SESSION

FEBRUARY 8, 1984

SCHAFFER LI
MAY 25 19
UNION COL

Printed for the use of the Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
32-722 O WASHINGTON : 1984

Y4.In8/19.F96

WHETHER DISCLOSURE OF FUNDS AUTHORIZED FOR INTELLIGENCE ACTIVITIES IS IN THE PUBLIC INTEREST

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE

OF THE

UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

APRIL 27 AND 28, 1977

Printed for the use of the Select Committee on Intelligence

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] WASHINGTON : 1977

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C. 20402

ABUSE OF PSYCHIATRY FOR POLITICAL REPRESSION IN THE SOVIET UNION

VOLUME II

HEARING

TESTIMONY OF DR. NORMAN B. HIRT

SUBMITTED
TO THE

SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY ACT AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FOURTH CONGRESS
FIRST SESSION

STAFF INTERVIEW OF OCTOBER 27, 1972,
COVERED BY JURAT OF MARCH 12, 1974

Printed for the use of the Committee on the Judiciary

LLER LIBRARY
MAR 17 1975
UNION

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
65-220 WASHINGTON : 1975

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C. 20402 - Price $1.25
Stock Number 052-070-02750

The Huntsville Times

Local/State

Sunday March 13 1994

Cramer on 'top-secret' panel

By BRETT DAVIS
Times Washington Correspondent

WASHINGTON — Rep. Bud Cramer, D-Huntsville, has been on the Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence for a little over a year now, but there's not much he can say about it.

Or rather, to use the old joke, he could tell you about it but then he'd have to kill you.

It's a remarkable committee, Cramer said in an interview with *The Huntsville Times*. "There's a lot I can't tell you.

The committee has oversight on the intelligence budgets and activities of the CIA, the National Security Agency (which used to describe itself as "No Such Agency.") and the Defense Intelligence Agency, which includes Redstone Arsenal's Missile and Space Intelligence Command. It also has oversight of the Pentagon's "black" budget of secret programs.

The panel also has oversight of the Pentagon's "black" budget of secret programs.

It's the only committee that both writes budget authorizations and approves actual spending for the programs it oversees, two functions that are usually kept separate in Congress.

Cramer is one of 19 members on the committee and is one of the youngest in terms of congressional seniority. Freshman members can't get on the panel at all, and Cramer made it a lot sooner than most.

"I think I've done some things to get the attention of the Speaker, including *taking him down to my district, and I'm* a regional whip," Cramer said.

He was appointed to the committee by Speaker of the House Tom Foley, D-Wash., at the beginning of his second term in Congress. Cramer said he had started lobbying for the spot shortly after being re-elected.

"To me, it's one of the most invigorating committees that I'm on," Cramer said.

He didn't have to undergo a background security check or take any special oaths or learn any secret handshakes, but he does learn top-secret information.

He has visited intelligence offices in the Pentagon, the CIA, the DIA and others, has "got to see some hardware and

See CRAMER, page B3

DEFEAT
GUN BAN BUD
CRAMER

POPULAR LOCAL
BUMPER STICKER

PART II

by Cathy O'Brien

AN OPEN LETTER

Mind control is absolute. Under MK-Ultra Project Monarch trauma-based mind control, I lost control over my own free will thoughts - I could not think to question, reason, or consciously comprehend - I could only do exactly what I was driven to do. Those who controlled my mind, and ultimately my actions, claimed to be "aliens," "demons," and "gods". But it was my experience that these perpe-TRAITORS of New World Order controls were/are bound by fully, human confines, despite their terror-tactic claims and illusions. The true laws of nature, and the same laws of man do, indeed, apply to them.

While they manipulated me by my religion, my maternal instincts, and my genuine concern for humanity - they never "possessed" my innate being. They could make me one of them. They never took into consideration the strength of the human spirit. They did not even know it existed. Ask why.

DEDICATION

This book is for Kelly, in order that she is understood and granted her right to qualified rehabilitation for the MK-Ultra Project Monarch Mind-Control abuses she endured at the hands of our country's so-called leaders.

This book is dedicated, as am I, to Mark Phillips for rescuing Kelly and me from our mind-controlled existence, and clearing the way to recovery for Kelly by lovingly assisting me in the restoration of my mind, memory, and ultimately my free will.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

A special thanks to those unseen, whose presence have been evident. And a special thanks to those unsung - you know who you are.

TRANCE-FORMATION OF AMERICA

My name is Cathleen (Cathy) Ann O'Brien, born 12/4/57 in Muskegon, Michigan. I have prepared this book for your review and edification concerning a little known tool that "our" United States Government is covertly, illegally, and un-constitutionally using to implement the New World Order (One World Government). This well documented tool is a sophisticated and advanced form of behavior modification (brainwashing) most commonly known as MIND CONTROL. My first hand knowledge of this TOF SECRET U.S. Government Psychological Warfare technique is drawn from my personal experience as a White House "Presidential Model" mind-control slave.

Much of the information enclosed herein has been corroborated and validated through brave and courageous "clean" members of the law enforcement, scientific, and Intelligence communities familiar with this case These individuals' efforts helped me to understand and corroborate what happened after a lifetime of systematic physical and psychological torture orchestrated to modify my behavior through totally controlling my mind. Some of these courageous individuals are employed by the very system that controlled me and live in fear of losing their jobs, their families, or their lives. They have gone as far as they dare towards publicly exposing this tool of the engineers of the New World Order-to no avail. This book is a grassroots effort to solicit and enlist the public and private support of Human Rights advocates, the recognized, respected doers in America to expose this invisible personal and social menace. This can be done by well organised, cooperative citizens with a passion for justice, who have expressed interest in restoring our Constitution and taking back America. This copy you hold is for your edification and action.

While these pages have been condensed for your quick perusal, there ane literally thousands of files of documentation that support much of what I am reporting. Thanks to those dedicated individuals who found a means of manipulating the system more cleverly than the perpetrators, the documents referred to were declassified for release right at the source!

It is my patriotic respect for the principles of truth, justice, and ultimately that freedom on which America was founded that compels me to expose the world domination motivations of those in control of our government, commonly referred to as the Shadow Government. By taking back America NOW, we can maintain the integrity of our country's history and future by detaining its destined course of being recognized world wide for the mind-control atrocities unleashed on humanity that literally begin where Adolph Hitler left off. Hitler's version of world domination that he termed in 1939 the "New World Order" is currently being implemented through advanced technologies in, among others, genetic mind-control engineering by those in control of America. Senator Daniel Inouye, (D. HI) commented about the operations of this secret government before a Senate Subcommittee and described it well as "...a shadowy government with its own Air Force, its own Navy, its own fund raising mechanism, and the ability to pursue its own ideas of 'national interest', free from all checks and balances and free from the law itself."

The expertise of my primary advocate and skilled deprogrammer, Mark Phillips, developed through his U.S. Defense Department knowledge of "Top Secret" mind-control research and researchers, was responsible for the restoration of my mind to normal functioning. As a result, I have recovered the memories related in this text, and having survived the ordeal, have reached this point of enormous frustration. In 1988, through a series of brilliantly orchestrated events, Mark Phillips rescued me and my 8-year-old daughter, Kelly, from our mind-controlled existence and took us to the safety of Alaska for rehabilitation. It was there that we began the tedious process of untangling my amnesic mind to consciously recall what I was supposed to forget, Many U,S. and foreign government secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed and rehabilitated to accurately reveal the criminal covert activities and perversions in which Kelly and I were forced to participate, particularly during the Reagan/Bush Administrations. Now that I have gained control of my own mind, I view it as my duty as a mother and American patriot to exercise my gained free will to expose the mind-control atrocities that my daughter and I endured at the hands of those in control of our government. This personal view of inside Pandora's Box includes a keen perception of how mind control is being used to apparently implement the New World Order, and a personal knowledge of WHO some of the so-called "masterminds" are behind this world and mind dominance effort.

Most Americans old enough to remember recall exactly where they were and what they were doing when President John F. Kennedy was shot. His assassination traumatized the nation and provides an example of how the human mind photographically records events surrounding trauma. The traumas I routinely endured during my mind-controlled victimization provided me the latitude to recover my memory in the photographic detail in which it was recorded. The direct quotes 1 have included in the following pages depicting carefully selected events, are verbatim. I apologize for any obscenities quoted, but this was necessary to maintain the integrity of the statements and accurately reflect the character of the speaker(s).

While I am free to speak my mind, Kelly, now 17, is not so fortunate. Kelly has yet to receive rehabilitation for her shattered personality and programmed young mind. The high tech sophistication of the Project Monarch trauma-based mind-control procedures she endured, literally since birth, reportedly requires highly specialized, qualified care to aid her in eventually gaining control of her mind and life. Due to the political power of our abusers, all efforts to obtain her inalienable right to rehabilitation and seek justice have been blocked under the guise of so-called "National Security". As a result, Kelly remains untreated in the custody of the State of Tennessee-a victim of the system—a system controlled and manipulated by our abusive government "leaders" - a system where State Forms make no allowances to report military TOP SECRET abuses - a system which exists due to federal funding directed by our perverse, corrupt abusers in Washington, D.C. She remains a political prisoner in the custody of the State of Tennessee to this moment, waiting and hurting!

Violations of laws and rights, Psychological Warfare intimidation tactics, threats to our lives, and various other forms of CIA Damage Containment practices thus far have remained unhindered and unchecked due to the National Security Act of 1947 AND the 1986 Reagan Amendment to same which allows those in control of our government to censor and/or cover-up anything they choose. Now, with our country free from outside threats as a result of the fall of the Soviet Union, our "free press" is reportedly no longer encumbered by censorship. This fact alone should free us to pursue justice, but it has not. Please ask why.

Hence the purpose of releasing this book at this time. After seven long years of being unjustly and painfully seperated from my daughter, while our abusers have had full access to her through a corrupt and manipulated system, it is my fervent hope and intent to solicit help from you in the form of advice, expertise, and public outcry concerning this very solvable problem.

I could not prevent the traumatic mind-control abuses Kelly endured due to my own victimization, yet she is depending on me now to expose the truth and enlist the help that the Juvenile Court has restrained her from seeking. I dedicate this book to Kelly, and all others like her, and to every American unaware of the mind-control atrocities prevailing in this country. What Americans don't know is destroying them from the inside out. Knowledge is our only defense against mind control. It is time to WAKE UP and arm ourselves with the truth, restore the constitutional values of freedom and justice for all, to retroactively enforce the 13th Amendment, and take back America!

CHAPTER 1

MY INTRODUCTION TO HUMANITY

My pedophile father, Earl O'Brien, brags that he began substituting his penis for my mother's nipple soon after I was born. My multgenerational incest-abused mother, Carol Tanis, did not protest his perverse actions due to (reportedly) having similar abuse as a child which caused her to acquire Multiple Personality Disorder.[1] My earliest recovered memory was that I could not breathe with my father's penis jammed into my little throat. Yet I could not discern his semen from my mother's milk. I do not recall thinking, but I am aware through education that this early sexual abuse distorted my primitive concepts of feeding, breathing, sexuality, and parental perceptions.

I recall as a toddler being unable to run (I could barely walk) to my mother for help as my instincts demanded. Through my gulping sobs, my terror rose as I tried to clear my throat of my father's semen and draw a breath of air. My mother finally arrived at my side. Rather than comfort me, she accused me of throwing a temper tantrum and "holding my breath". She responded only by throwing a glass of cold water in my face. 1 was shocked! As the water splashed my face, I knew she would not help and it was up to me to save myself. I automatically Multiple Personality Disordered. I was, of course, too young to logically understand that what my father was doing to me was wrong. I accepted his strangling sexual abuse as a normal and natural part of my home life, and split off a personality to deal with the pain and suffocation to satisfy his perversions. Therefore as a child, I was dissociative of my father's abuse. I was totally unable to recall his sexual abuse, even in his presence, until 1 saw and felt his penis. Then the terror, which was my conditioned response, triggered access to that part of my brain that previously endured the trauma, I was remembering the abuse and how to deal with it. This part of my brain developed into a personality of its own-which belonged to my father-which he rented out and later sold to the U.S. Government as will be explained and detailed in the following pages.

Other parts of my conditioned mind dealt with other abusers, abuses and circumstances. My father was (as revealed by my own investigations) apparently a multigenerational incest child from a large, poor, and horribly dysfunctional family. His mother earned a living as a prostitute for local lumbermen after his father died when he was two years old. My father's brothers and sister were all sexually and (occult) ritually abused just as he was. They grew up to be drug addicts, prostitutes, street derelicts, and pedophiles who also sexually abused me and my brothers and sisters. I developed more personality splits to deal with the traumas of these torturous relationships.

My mother's dysfunctional family also appears to be multigenerational, but of a slightly higher socio-economic class. Her father owned the building occupied by a Masonic Blue Lodge he led, and managed a local beer distribution business with her mother after completing his military career. Together they sexually abused my mother and her three brothers, who in turn sexually abused me.

My family often went camping on the vast wilderness acreage surrounding my grandfather's Masonic Lodge in Newaygo, Michigan. Large bluffs referred to as "The High Banks' overlooked the White River flowing through his property, which is where we pitched our tents. My mother's brothers, Uncle Ted and Uncle Arthur "Bomber" Tanis, often accompanied us and sexually abused my brother and me.

It was deer hunting season in or around November, 1961, when my father took the family camping on The High Banks to hunt with my uncles. That night, as my brother and I were being sexually passed around the campfire to satisfy pedophile perversions, a lost hunter stumbled into our camp. My father shot him when he attempted to run; the rifle's blasts piercing my brain and further fragmenting my mind. I sat dazed in a dissociative trance while my mother methodically picked up the campsite and my father and uncles disposed of the body.

As my father drove us away from the crime scene, we were stopped by several hunters who had the road blocked in a desperate attempt to locate their missing companion. They described the man I saw my father kill, and said they heard gunshots. Reality intruded on my dissociative trance, and I screamed and cried hysterically until I no longer knew why I was crying.

My Uncle Ted[2] soon became a street derelict. Uncle Bomber died a few years later from alcoholism in his early forties. And my father became more financially and politically connected.

My mother's oldest brother, Uncle Bob, was a pilot in Air Force Intelligence and often boasted that he worked for the Vatican. Uncle Bob was also a commercial pornographer, producing kiddie porn for the local Michigan Mafia, which looped back to Mafia porn king and U.S. Representative Jerry Ford. I split off more personalities just to deal with my Uncle Bob, his "friends," and the perverse business he shared with my father.

My father's sixth grade education had earned him a job as a worm digger for local sport fishermen. By the time I was six years old, however, his pornographic exploitation of my older brother, Bill, and me had provided enough income to move us into a bigger house nestled in the Michigan sand dunes. My father was right at home there. The tourists and drug dealers who littered the eastern shore of Lake Michigan further supplemented his income by paying for perverse sex with us children. My father also became involved in illicit drug sales.

Soon after we moved, my father was reportedly caught sending kiddie porn through the U.S. mail. It was a bestiality film of me with my Uncle Sam O'Brien's Boxer dog, Buster. My Uncle Bob, also implicated in manufacturing the porn, out of apparent desperation informed my father of a U.S. Government Defense Intelligence Agency TOP SECRET Project to which he was privy. This was Project Monarch. Project Monarch was a mind-control operation which was "recruiting" multigenerational incest abused children with Multiple Personality Disorder for its genetic mind-control studies. I was a prime "candidate," a "chosen one". My father seized the opportunity as it would provide him immunity from prosecution. In the midst of the pandemonium that ensued, Jerry Ford arrived at our house with the evidence in hand for a meeting with my father.

"Is Earl home?" he called to my mother, who nervously stood behind the screen door, hesitating to let him in.

"Not yet," my mother replied, her voice shaking. "He should have been home from work by now-I know he's expecting you."

"That's OK". Ford turned his attention to me. I was standing outside on the front porch, and he crouched down to my level. Patting the large, brown envelope containing the confiscated porn tucked under his arm he said, "You like doggies, huh?"

"Buster is a nice doggy," I replied. "He's funny." Not understanding why the dog had been whisked away when the porn was confiscated, I complained, "Buster's gone."

"Buster's gone?" Ford asked.

"Yeah. My Uncle Sam took him away," I told him.

Ford laughed loudly at the irony of my statement. In my limited view, I thought he found it humorous that Buster was gone. My father pulled into the driveway, honking the horn of his new, tan convertible. Ford stood up. With his fly eye level to me, I noticed his penis was erect and reached for it as conditioned.

"Not now, honey," he said. "I have business to tend..." Ford went inside with my parents to officially seal my fate.

Not long after that my father was flown to Boston for a two-week course at Harvard on how to raise me for this off-shoot of MK-Ultra Project Monarch, When he returned from Boston, my father was smiling and pleased with his new knowledge of what he termed "reverse psychology".

This equates to "satanic reversals," and involves such play-on-words as puns and phrases that stuck in my mind like, "You earn your keep, and I'll keep what you earn." He presented me with a commemorative charm bracelet of dogs, and my mother with the news that they "would be having more children" to raise in the project. (I now have two sisters and four brothers ranging from age 16 to 37 who are still under mind control.) My mother complied with my father's suggestions, mastering the art of language manipulation. For example, when I could not snap my own pajama top to the bottoms in a childish effort to keep my father out of them, I asked my mother, "please snap me". She did. she would snap her forefingers against my skin in a stinging manner. The pain I felt was psychological as this proved to me once again that she had no intention of protecting me from my father's sexual abuse.

Also in keeping with his government-provided instructions, my father began working me like the legendary Cinderella. I shoveled fireplace ashes, hauled stacked firewood, raked leaves, shoveled snow, chopped ice, and swept—"because," my father said, "your little hands fit so nicely around the rake, mop, shovel, and broom handles."

By this time, my father's sexual exploitation of me included prostitution to his friends, local mobsters and Masons, relatives, Satanists, strangers, and police officers. When I wasn't being worked to physical exhaustion, filmed pornographically, prostituted, or engaged in incest abuse, 1 dissociated into books. I had learned to read at the young age of four due to my photographic memory which was a natural result of MPD/DID.

Government researchers involved in MK-Ultra Project Monarch knew about the photographic memory aspect of MPD/DID, of course, as well as other resultant "super human" characteristics. Visual acuity of an MPD/DID is 44 times greater than that of the average person. My developed unusually high pain threshold, plus compartmentalization of memory were "necessary" for military and covert operations applications. Additionally, my sexuality was primitively twisted from infancy. This programming was appealing and useful to perverse politicians who believed they could hide their actions deep within my memory compartments, which clinicians refer to as personalities.

Immediately after my father's return from Boston, I was routinely prostituted to then Michigan State Senator Guy VanderJagt. VanderJagt later became a U.S. Congressman and eventually chairman of the Republican National Congressional Committee that put George Bush in the office of President. I was prostituted to VanderJagt after numerous local parades which he always participated in, at the Mackinac Island Political Retreat, and in my home state of Michigan, among other places.

My Uncle Bob helped my father decorate my bedroom in red, white, and blue paneling and American flags. He provided assistance in scrambling my mind according to Project Monarch methodologies. Fairy tale themes were used to confuse fantasy with reality, particularly Disney stories and the Wizard of Oz, which provided the base for future programming.

I had personalities for pornography, a personality for bestiality, a personality for incest, a personality for withstanding the horrendous psychological abuse of my mother, a personality for prostitution, and the rest of "me" functioned somewhat "normaily" at school. My "normal" personality provided a cover for the abuse I was enduring, but best of all it had hope-hope that there was somewhere in the world where people did not hurt each other This same personality also attended Catechism, a weekly class at our Catholic church, St. Francis de Sales in Muskegon, Michigan.

My Catechism teacher was a Nun, or "Sister." Although I could not consciously think to protect myself from abuse, I had decided that becoming a Nun would provide me with the kind of life I sought. I could not rely upon my family, the police, or politicians to protect me. The church appeared to be my answer, and I listened diligently in class and prayed religiously. I learned all about the political structure of the church, and was prepared for my first Confession,

The Catholic beliefs I was taught include the idea that man is not fit to talk to God (the Father) directly, but must have a priest intercede instead. This is the purpose of going to Confession. I was instructed to tell my sins to the priest (also referred to as Father), who would relay the message to God. He would then supposedly tell me how many "Hail Marys" and "Our Father" prayers to say as my penance, or punishment. My Catechism teacher gave the class several examples of "sins," which included "sex outside of marriage." When the Priest, Father James Thaylen, slid open the little screened partition in the closet sized confessional, I began as 1 had been instructed, "Forgive me Father, for I have sinned...." I then proceeded to tell him that I had sex with my father and brother, to which he responded that I should "say three Hail Marys and one Our Father and 1 would be forgiven?!"

I knew then that I had to either believe that this Confession thing was a hoax, or that God condoned sexual child abuse. That night, my father had a talk with me. Apparently he was the "Father" that the priest had interceded to. My father instructed me that "from now on," I was to simply say "I disobeyed my parents" when I went to Confession and nothing more!

The next time I went to Confession, I did exactly as I was told. The veiled screen came off the Confessional partition between me and the priest, and a penis was stuck through the window, "God said that your penance is to treat me as you would your father. And remember, 'whatsoever you do to the least of your brothers, that you do unto me'." After performing oral sex on Father Thaylen, I emerged from the Confessional where all the other kids were waiting very impatiently for their turn. My teacher scolded me for taking so long and told me to add a few extra "Our Fathers" to my penence. When I told her 1 already did my penence, she told me again the "order of things" to the Confessional ritual—which did not fit anything I had just experienced! Without ever consciously knowing why, I abandoned the idea of becoming a Nun as that part of me, too, split off from what was left of my "normal" base personality.

I continued to maintain an illusion of normalcy for school,[5] excelling in my studies due to my photographic memory and in spite of my chronic "day-dreaming". I had plenty of friends and played enthusiastically at recess, expending large amounts of energy in my subconcious effort to escape my own mind. And I lost myself in the books my father suggested I read: the Wizard Of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, Island of the Blue Dolphins, Disney Classics, and Cinderella—all of which were used in conditioning my mind for what soon would become mind-control programming."

My television viewing was restricted and monitored in keeping with my father's gained knowledge. I was, however permitted to watch the "best" of movies: The Wizard Of Oz, Disney Classics, Alice In Wonderland, and Cinderella—over and over and over again.

When I was in second grade, my Brownie Troop marched in the Memorial Day Parade in which then Michigan State Senator VanderJaut also participated. At the end of the parade, he took me into a nearby motel and had me perform oral sex on him before sending me back to where my Brownie Troop was waiting. My Brownie leader and peers thought it commendable that VanderJagt took me with him. They gathered around to hear all about it. I noticed a white splash of semen on my sash, and hurriedly explained that he had "taken me for a milkshake" as 1 wiped it. away. Having to cover for his perversion to my Brownie Troop infringed on my school personality, and the "normal" remainder became even smaller.

With the memory of this incident compartmentalized in my mind. I made so conscious association to VanderJagt when my third grade teacher announced that we were taking a field trip to the State Capital in Lansing, Michigan where he was in session. Once at the Capital, I was ushered away from my classmates and taken to an office where he was waiting with his friend and mentor (soon to be President) Gerald Ford. VanderJagt lifted my skirt, pulled down my panties, and placed me on his desk for sex with him and Ford. Afterward they laughed as VanderJagd placed a small American flag in my rectum and instructed me to wave it. He then presented me with a Kennedy pen inscribed with the motto that would lead me for the rest of my mind-controlled existence, "Ask not what your country can do for you. Ask what you can do for your country."

VanderJagt then escorted me back to the balcony of the Legislature where my classmates were gathered. He put his arm around me in front of all my classmates and presented me with the American Flag he had just had me wave for him and Ford with my rectum. My school personality split off again, but I still maintained the hope that somewhere, someday, 1 would find a place where people didn't...what? 1 could not remember what 1 was seeking to escape.

[1] Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD), now known among mental health professionals as Dissociative Identity Disorder (DTD) is the mind's sane defense to an insane situation. It is a way of dealing with trauma that is literally too horrible to comprehend. Incestuous rape violates primitive instinct and surpasses pain tolerance. By compartmentalizing the memory of such horrendous abuse, the rest of the mind can function "normally" as though nothing had happened. This compartmentalization is created by the brain actually shutting down neuron pathways to a specific part of the brain. These neuron pathways are triggered open again when the abuse recurs. The same part of the brain that is already conditioned to the trauma deals with it again and again as needed.

[2] Uncle Ted had also cried hysterically the night of the murder. Several years later, he almost killed himself when he drove his car into the White River near the place of the murder.

[3] Gerald Ford, aka Leslie Lynch King, Jr., served on the appropriations subcommittee for the CIA and was appointed to the Warren Commission to investigate the assassination of President John F. Kennedy while I knew him only as a pom boss!

[4] My mother often voiced complaints that she "could not see faces," which personal experience has taught me indicated that she was suffering from on going physical and psychological traumas, and therefore was not in control of her senses.

[5] Had my teachers been educated in the obvious signs of child abuse, my "illusion of normalcy" would have been interpreted as a cry for help. Dissociative trance daydreaming, tones of helplessness and sexuality in drawings, and the electric prod marks on my face should have been recognized.

[6] These same themes were routinely used in creating Project Monarch slaves. This fact emerged through years of networking with mental health professionals.

CHAPTER 2

THE RITE TO REMAIN SILENT

On May 7, 1966, I was dressed in white from my Catholic veil to my white patent leather shoes as was mandatory for making my first holy communion. I was standing outside the newly built, twisted concrete structure of Muskegon's St. Francis of Assisi Church waiting for the ceremony to commence when Guy VanderJagt, who was affiliated with the church, strode across the lawn towards me.

Crouching down on one knee, VanderJagt said, "You look beautiful today. You are as beautiful as your name. Cathleen is Gaelic for "the pure," and it is clear to me that you are flawless in your purity. Ann means "grace". It is by the grace of God, not your actions, that you are pure. Pure at heart. You are covered by the blood of our Lord and Savior, just like the cross on which he hung. This is for you." He opened a black velvet box, revealing a rosy cross necklace. Like the Kennedy inscribed pen he had presented me with at the state capical, the meaning behind the rosy cross necklace would lead me through the rest of my mind-con trolled existence.

VanderJagds pedophile comrade in Project Monarch, Father Don, joined us, reaching deep into the pocket of his robes to present me with a delicate blue charm of the Holy Mother. It was to be worn in conjunction with the rosy cross "to symbolize your service to the holy Catholic church," Father Don told me, which I would "promise to serve and obey".

As VanderJagt fastened the rosy cross and blue virgin around ray neck, he told me I was now dressed appropriately for the ceremony in red, white, and blue. I could feel his breath on my neck as he fastened the necklace and instructed, "When Father says 'Body of Christ' and you say 'Ahhh men'... you acknowledge that Christ is God made man, and that you know what men are for. When Father gives you the host, it will stick to the roof of your mouth unless you suck it off his thumb."

I hurried to line up with my Catechism classmates for the procession into the church for our holy communion mass.

"Body of Christ," Father Don said, holding up the host.

"Ahhh... men," I responded as instructed, sucking the wafer off his thumb. After services, VanderJagt and Father Don talked with me briefly while my parents congregated with other parishioners. Father was telling me, "...God has chosen you for work within his holy church. You are a Chosen One,[1] my child..."

Later that evening, VanderJagt attended the reception that my parents were holding for me at our house. He talked with my father awhile, but spent most of his time talking with my Uncle Bob, who had recently flown in from "a mission over seas". My Uncle Bob and VanderJagt were friends, and remained so throughout the years. As the party dispersed, VanderJagt drove me back to church for a "special evening service with Father Don."

VanderJagt unlocked the rectory door of the old church across the street from the new St. Francis structure, explaining that we had to "have a very important talk now that I had eaten the body of Christ." The talk, blood trauma, and sexual abuse that ensued conditioned my mind to readily accept prgramming throughout the years that deliberately merged both U.S. Government and Jesuit mind-control efforts for New World Order controls.

"I work for the Vatican, and now, so do you," VanderJagt told me. "You have just entered into a covenant with the holy Catholic church. You must never break that covenant."

Still capable of questioning at that time, I asked, "What is a covenant?"

VanderJagt answered, "A covenant is a promise to keep secrets, the secret that the church knew all along. The Pope has all the secrets locked away at the Vatican. Your Uncle Bob and I have been to the Vatican. It is time you entered into the holy covenant and learned the secrets of the church that were written long before Christ even came into being. The Dominican monks kept the covenant that Noah carried into the new world. They kept the secret with them. It was written on parchment and kept in a secret place in the Vatican. They took a Vow of Silence to never reveal its location, or its content. You must enter into the covenant. You must carry the secret to your grave. Keep it secret from your mom, dad, everybody."

VanderJagt proceeded to fill my suggestible young mind with biblical interpretation that laid the groundwork for future "inter/inner dimensional" programming themes utilized by Project Monarch programmers to control the compartmentalization of memory synonymous with MPD/DID.

"Christ saw them all," VanderJagt was telling me, "They are dimensions, places you can see on your way to death.- That's why they're called die-mentions. You must remember that Christ died and came back to tell us everything he saw while he was on his way to heaven. He was gone three days, but it was much longer than that where he was because time isn't the same in other dimensions. Purgatory is one other dimension. Hell is one. And there are lots of others in between. Oz is another dimension. The sky is not the limit to all the worlds out there wailing to be explored. You can travel in and out of ail these dimensions, learning the secrets of the universe. You have been chosen to explore these oilier worlds for the church. Listen in the stillness and you will hear his voice guiding you[3] on your missions. The rosy cross is like Dorothy's ruby slippers. Never take your rosy cross off, Cathy, when traveling other dimensions and you will always be able to return home."

Father Don joined VanderJagt in a ritual which bathed me in the blood of a slaughtered lamb, and subsequently, through this hideous blood trauma, locked their stated perceptions and a basis for mind-control programming deep in my mind. This basis for programming was anchored in the Vow of Silence which the Jesuit monks take "not only to keep secrets, but so they can still their mind and hear their inner guidance." Certain that the "Rite to Remain Silent" which they had performed would ensure that I keep their secret Father Don and Guy VanderJagt subjected me to their pedophile perversions. The two joked that I had become "a good Cathy-lick".

After the Rite to Remain Silent was installed, the voices of my multiple personalities that I had previously heard in my head ceased. In the silence of deliberately created memory compartments, I could only hear the voices of my abusers who created them... commanding my silence.

Silence for who and what I knew was involved in Project Monarch Mind Control.

My family routinely vacationed at Mackinac Island, Michigan which is a small island positioned in the Great Lakes close to the Canadian border Mackinac Island, with the Governor's Mansion and historical Grand Hotel, was a political playground where I was prostituted by my father to, among others,. pedophiles Jerry Ford, Guy VanderJagt, and later U.S. Senator Robert C. Byrd. The mind-controlled part of me that was prostituted there perceived Mackinac as another dimension, the timelessness of which was enhanced by the island's antiquated styling. Automobiles were forbidden on the tiny island, which relied on horse drawn buggies or bicycles for transportation. Once when Lee Iaccoca was attending a cocktail party at then Governor Romney's Mansion, I overheard him comment, "What better place for auto execs to get away from it all than on an island with no cars?"

Mackinac Island, due to its geographic location, provided an air of friendliness between the U.S. and Canada that formed my childish perception that our countries knew no boundaries. This political view was further enhanced by my father always taking the family to Niagra Falls where my mind was to be symbolically "washed of all memory" or what had occurred in Mackinac. Niagara Falls' numerous, powerful waterfalls were in reasonably close proximity to Mackinac Island, and shared the border between the U.S. and Canada.

When Pierre Trudeau was elected Prime Minister of Canada in 1968, I often heard it said, "Pierre Trudeau is one of Ours, you know." I first heard this phrase cryptically referring to Trudeau's loyalty to the Vatican when Father Don was discussing him with my famer one Sunday after mass. This fact circulated quickly among those I knew who were involved in the Catholic/Jesuit aspect of Project Monarch.

The summer after Trudeau was elected, my father took the family to Mackinac Island as usual. Climbing on a large statue on the grounds of the Governor's Mansion, I could see across the field to the Grand Hotel. I noticed Canadian flags flying amongst the American flags that lined the front of the old hotel. As I slid down off the statue, Guy VanderJagt approached with a drink and a cigarette in his hand. Palling my hair into place he said, "Straighten your shirt, I've got someone important for you to meet,"

"I knew someone important was here because of those flags," I said, tucking my shirt in my pink shorts.

"When I was at the Vatican," VanderJagt began, "I was told that Prime Minister Trudeau is a friend of the Pope. He thinks like one of us. A true Catholic. He likes Cathy-licks."

VanderJagt led me upstairs in the mansion, where Pierre Trudeau was lowering the window shades in a dimly lit bedroom crowded with antiques. VanderJagt closed the door behind me. Trudeau's tuxedo coat was neatly draped over a chair, which left him in his formal pants, while shirt, and a bright red cummerbund which caught my eye. "I like your sash," I said. "Hasn't anyone taught you Silence yet?" His somber, gruff attitude was softened by his smooth, silky voice.

Triggered into the part of me that endured the Rite to Remain Silent, 1 assumed Trudeau knew all about interdimensions according to my deliberately formed perceptions. I could not/did not understand that interdimensions actually equated to the inner-dimensions of my own compartmentalized mind. Likewise, I did not understand that "Keys to the Kingdom" referred to knowing the codes, keys, and triggers to my controlled mind. "Guy said you like Cathy-licks," I said, repeating what VanderJagt had told me. "Are you the Keeper of the Keys?"

Trudeau seemingly bore his cold, dark eyes right through me. "You can learn more from the school of thought than you can by asking precocious questions. Haven't you learned that children are to be seen and not heard?"

"Is that a precocious question?" I asked. "What is a precocious question?"

Trudeau sighed with impatience. "That is irrelevant. What matters is that you shut your mouth, still your mind, and enter the school of thought. Silence is a virtue. Listen to the silence in the stillness of your mind. Go deep inside your mind," he slowly led. "Deeper and deeper where it's quiet and still..."

Trudeau expertly manipulated my mind with sophisticated hypnotic language. Not only did he enlist my Silence for the pedophile perversions he indulged in, but he instructed my "school of thought" in a manner that equated to programming. He laid a foundation for Air-Water programs that is a mirror-dimensional theme often used by NASA and others involved in Project Monarch. Playing off his own name "Pee-Air," he added a perverse twist to the theme that he accessed each time 1 was prostituted to him.

Had I been capable of fear, I would have been afraid of Pierre Trudeau. Trudeau's slow, deliberate movements masked the brutal power of his body much the way his smooth, soft voice pierced my mind and intruded on my thoughts. The icey cold touch of his effeminate, manicured long fingers contrasted with the heat of his perversion... a perversion for which he blamed me and my "temptuous, contemptuous ways".

In my childish ignorance, I believed Trudeau's demeanor and forward combed hair were characteristic of his French descent. "I know all about the French," I had bragged to my new "Grandpa" Van while visiting his home in Milwaukee, Wisconsin,

My mother's father had died shortly before Kennedy was assassinated, and my Grandmother quickly latched onto a wealthy, highly political businessman from Milwaukee. She met Grandpa Van Vandenburg on the passenger/cargo ship that traveled the waters of the Great Lakes, the Milwaukee Clipper. The Clipper transported cargo including Cadillacs from Vandenburg Motors to Canada, as well as the drugs sanctioned by the local Coast Guard via the U.S. Government that my father distributed. Sometimes 1 accompanied my father to the docks in Muskegon to pick up the drag shipment, which usually involved prostitution. Jerry Ford and Guy VanderJagt combined business with pleasure in the ship's casinos on occasion, which is where the connection between my Grandma and Grandpa Van was reportedly made. Grandpa Van knew Jerry Ford, and subsequently was acquainted with Pierre Trudeau.

"What do you know about the French?" Grandpa Van asked me as I sat on his living room floor petting the dog he just brought home. Improperly cued and dumfounded by his question I remained silent. "I know you've met Pierre Trudeau," he prompted. "I also know you love doggies. So I bought this dog for your grandma now, so you could enjoy him, too. His name is Pepe. He's a French Poodle,"

"I know all about the French." I said, mentally comparing the large French Poodle in front of me to Trudeau. "They have pretty nails..." I stroked Pepe's painted toenails. "They have funny hair..." I petted Pepe's clipped fur. "And they pee a lot," I giggled.

"You'd better take him outside, then," Grandpa Van told me, attaching Pepe's leash. After walking the dog past what felt like every tree in the neighborhood, I announced that 1 would call him "Pee-pee".

Uncle Bob filmed Pepe and I pornographically on numerous occasions, producing bestiality films that I would later learn Pierre Trudeau was privy to. Pepe remained a part of my experience long after Grandpa Van divorced himself from my Grandma, and long after I developed beyond Trudeau's perversion for little children.

1 was slow to grow into adolescence. By the time I was thirteen years old, my breasts were tender and beginning to swell, which made me "too old" for VanderJagt's pedophile perversions. When my father brought me to Mackinac Island for routine prostitution at the Political Retreat, VanderJagt introduced me to a new friend he had made now that he was in Washington, D.C. as a U.S. Congressman-U.S. Senator Robert C. Byrd, Democrat from West Virginia. Byrd had been a U.S. Senator as long as I had been alive, serving as Senate Whip and later as President Pro Tempore of the Senate and as the all powerful Senate Appropriations leader. Byrd commanded attention and respect from all who came in contact with him, particularly from my father. When we were left alone in his room, he loomed over me in a threatening stance. His cold, blue slitty eyes locked onto mine. I undressed and climbed into his bed as ordered. I was momentarily relieved to find that his penis was abnormally tiny—so small it didn't even hurt! And I could breathe with it in my mouth! Then he began to indulge himself in his brutal perversions, talking on and on about how I was "made just for him" due to the vast amounts of pain I could withstand. The spankings and police handcuffs I had previously endured were child's play compared to Senator Byrd's near death tortures. The hundreds of scars on my body still show today. With VanderJagt, sex was a matter of "how much I could give," whereas with Byrd it was "how much I could take". And I was forced to take mote pain than any human could logically withstand. I was dedicated to Byrd at age thirteen which meant he would be directing my future in Project Monarch, and my father would raise me according to his specifications.

My MPD/DID existence became more regimented from that point on. I was kept physically worn down to the point of exhaustion in order that I be sufficiently receptive to my father's limited hypnotic programming capabilities to condition my mind for mind control. The pornography I was forced to anticipate in became much more violent immediately after Byrd, switching me from predominantly pedophile and bestiality themes to torturous versions of sadomasochism (S&M). My father and mother worked in tandem daily to "break my spirit," destroying any remnants left of my self-confidence, tearing down my self-esteem, and thus annihilating my free will urges. They conditioned/taught me my dreams were reality and my reality were dreams, that black is white and up is down. "Good night, sleep tight, dream about your mommy and daddy" is what I heard every night. This was intended to confuse my mind to believe incest in the middle of the night was "just a bad dream".

My television, books, and music became even more strictly controlled and monitored that before. This was not only to infringe on my last minuscule freedom of choice, but for total mind-control conditioning purposes.
For example, the annual televising of Judy Garland's Wizard Of Oz was celebrated as a grand holiday around my house. This was to prepare my mind for future base programming on the theme that I, like Dorothy, could "spin" into another dimension "Over the Rainbow". After all, "Birds (Byrds) fly over the Rainbow..." was a theme that became a part of my life.

My father insisted I watch the Walt Disney movie Cinderella with him, paralleling my existence to Cinderella's—"magically trance-forming from a dirty little slave to a beautiful Princess". In typical "reverse psychology" humor, he referred to pornographic photos when singing "Someday my Prince (prints) will come," or by placing literal sexual emphasis on "will come".

My brother, Bill, who was often featured in kiddie porn with me, was not a "chosen one" for Project Monarch (beyond supplying more children to be dedicated in later years). Yet my father figured that "what was good for me would be good for my brother". He took us to see Walt Disney's Pinocchio, explaining that my brother and I were his puppets still in the carving stage. The distortions of reality that these and other Disney theme movies provided when coupled with my father's government trained conscious and subconscious controlling influence, began to further erode our ability to discern fantasy from reality. My brother, now 37, remains psychologically locked into those traumatic childhood years and is obsessed with Disney themes and productions to this day. His house is decorated in Disney memorabilia, he wears Disney clothes, listens to my father's instructions on his Disney telephone, and maintains "When You Wish Upon a Star" as his favorite song, which has locked his children into the same theme.

My father also instructed me to watch Alfred Hitchcock's horrifying movie The Birds with him. This reinforced in my mind the movie's theme that there is "no place to hide from the birds/Byrd".

I was quickly beginning to lose all ability to question anything but my own judgment. It was easy to believe that there was indeed "no place to run, no place to hide," which is a necessary and primary psychological basis for government/military mind control. In later years, "who ya' gonna call?" and Ronald Reagan's quip "you can run, but you can't hide" echoed deep within my mind. After all, even if I could think to seek help, who would help me? The police? The church? My parents? Relative? Politicians? School? There was no one left that would help me, I sensed.

My television programming was then expanded to include the shows that every Project Monarch Mind-Control slave I knew had to watch: I Dream Of Jeannie, The Brady Bunch, Gumby And Pokey, and Bewitched. I could relate to the Genie pleasing her master, who was a Major for the Air Force in I Dream Of Jeannie. This served to confuse the reality of my own experiences with the fantasy of television production. I told all outsiders that my family was "just like the Bradys". Through Gumby And Pokey I was led to believe that I was as flexible as these animated clay performers. Therefore, I was capable of being physically maneuvered into any sexual position. The mirrors depicted a doorways to other dimensions and adventures interlocked with my Catholic conditioning and Alice In Wonderland and Wizard Of Oz theme programming. In Bewitched, it is the normal new door neighbor that is considered crazy rather than the witches. This is another reversal that was applied to my bizarre existence. I was one of the only kids in my school that listened to country music. But then, Senator Byrd fancied himself a country music fiddler and it was "my duty to love what he did", I was ordered to listen to country music or no music at all. Music was my psychological avenue for escape, a dissociative tool. But this, too, was used in setting the stage for my future as a Project Monarch "Presidential Model" mind-controlled slave.

As suggested, I read the Boxcar Children Series over and over again, I empathized with the trials, traumas, and tribulations the children endured while they fended for themselves from their boxcar home along the railroad tracks. My father often made train sounds at me in passing to subconsciously remind me that I was currently "in Train-ing" on the undeterable track of the "Freedom Train."[4] This term, taken from Harriet Tubman's underground railroad for slaves, reversed the meaning of the word "freedom" to confuse one's "one track mind" and instill the belief "I am free to be a slave". This also reinforced my training to stay on track-the plan (track) laid our for me. My father would often quip, "When God passed out brains, you thought he said 'trains' and got in the wrong line". Convicted (capital crime) career criminal, country music entertainer, and CIA operative Merle Haggard often used well documented cryptic language in his songs pertaining to government mind-control slave operations. He released songs including "Freedom Train" and "Over the-Rainbow". My father told me repeatedly that Merle Haggard was my "favorite" singer, and his songs reinforced my programming.

Of course, Senator Byrd remained my "favorite" fiddler as ordered. He played train songs like "Orange Blossom Special" while making train sounds on his fiddle. Sometimes I was his captive audience, bound and gagged, while he played his fiddle. Other times he instructed me to spin round and round like a music box dancer in order to add "new dimensions to our sex".. These new dimensions included more and more physical pain through "kinky" torture.

My father took advantage of his new political connections and advanced himself occupationally, manufacturing camshaft auto parts at a local factory. Soon he was promoted to a sales management position due to his connections within the Pentagon Procurement Office and General Services Administration, coupled with what he had learned about double bind hypnotic persuasion. He continued to supplement his income by sexually exploiting us children. This[1] now included brazenly prostituting me to Muskegon Coast Guard officials while on cocaine runs to and from the base. Meanwhile, my father took us all to church every Sunday, and my mother stayed busy having babies to raise in the Project. In true pedophile fashion, he surrounded himself with children by coaching little league sports, chaperoning school and Catechism activities, and becoming involved with the Boy Scouts. All of this made him appear to be a model citizen and "pillar of the community". The illusion was fonned. The parts of me that knew otherwise had no choice but to remain Silent.

---

[1] Project Monarch slaves were referred to as "Chosen Ones".

[2] Torture to the point just before death, such as with Death's Door programming, was jointly used by the Catholic Jesuits and the CIA in Project Monarch.

[3] It was the voices of my mind-control programmers and handlers that I later heard guiding me.

[4] "Freedom Train" is the internationally recognized cryptic code term for Project Monarch slave operations that I heard repeatedly throughout my victimization.

CHAPTER 3

MY FIRST PRESIDENT

Muskegon, Michigan is a coastal tourist attraction, and home of the annual Seaway and Coast Guard festivals which bring people to the town from all over Michigan. VanderJagt remained publicly visible through opportunities such as these. My father often could be seen with Vanderjagt and was photographed at his side white judging festival events like the kiddie parades, sand sculpturing contests, and so on—all of which I entered and won. In later years, my father polished and shined the red paint of his 1966 Ford convertible to chauffeur VanderJagt through the local parades. This only served to reinforce the illusion that my father was a "pillar of the community".

In 1973, Senator Byrd instructed my father to send me to Muskegon Catholic Central High School which was overseen by the director of St. Francis of Assisi Church, Father Lepre. The Catholic church, of course, has its own political structure, with the Pope presiding over all. The strong political ties between the Catholic church and the U.S. Government was overtly evidenced by the much publicized relationship between the President and the Pope during the Reagan Administration. Of course, I had been privy to this political relationship ever since my First Communion-a relationship that the Rite to Remain Silent was intended to cover. My experience with Catholic Central's direct involvement in Project Monarch's physical and psychological conditioning further confirmed the union between the U.S. Government and the Catholic church.

When Senator Byrd changed my school from public to Parochial, he also destroyed through dissociation my school personality. I no longer viewed school as my haven from abuse, as it was controlled by the church and, as I later learned, monitored by a corrupt segment of the C.I.A.

By the time I enrolled in Catholic Central, the cliques and groups had already been formed. 1 had a personality to fit in with the "good" kids and one that interfaced with the "bad". It did not take long for the "good" kids to notice 1 also got along with the "bad". I soon found the only kids that could relate to me were the other known Project victims. We clung together in a close knit group, herded around like the proverbial sheep by those in the school who knew we were MPD/DIDed and under mind control. We each switched personalities as circumstance demanded, most often in unison. We were ritually traumatized, constantly tranced, and then programmed during school hours. Since 1 no longer had my singular "school personality" and was constantly switching instead, the compartment of my brain that held school memory was no longer consciously retrievable. Therefore, I had no basis for continued learning aside from what I could photographically memorize from class. My grades appeared erratic, ranging from A's to failing. And some A's received I did not earn academically.

In my required religion class, Sister Ann Marie bad been leading us in study on the topic of Confession, This was to prepare us for the kind of Confessions we were to be giving Father Vesbit, who was also our school principal. The day Sister ordered us to Confession, I refused to go. I unconsciously feared 1 would be sexually assaulted again in the Confessional, this time while my teenage peers waited impatiently outside the door. Sister made an example out of me to the class, saying I was a "Satanist" and that I was "going to hell".

With seemingly no escape from the occultism that proliferated at the school, I could no longer differentiate between Catholicism and Satanism.

Whatever Senator Byrd's purposes in sending me to Catholic school, no one seemed to notice that I had no reason to religiously adhere to Catholic principles. Therefore, the applied reversal of Satanism held no "spiritual magic" to it either. The wedge of anti-superstition that the Catholic school was inadvertently driving into me only served to discount the occult principles and superstitious traumas that they were attempting to use to control me,

Satanism is often used as an extreme pain/violence trauma base in Project Monarch Mind Control, reportedly due to the previous German Nazi Himmler Research. I did not adhere to the desired helplessness attitude that this was "spiritual warfare" and out of the realm of mankind's ability to stop. Regardless of my religious beliefs or disbeliefs, I experienced the "results" just the same. Being subjected to and witnessing trauma so horrible, while my body was raped, tortured, and ravaged by men literally drove me out of my mind.

Catholic Central did increase my endurance capabilities as planned, however. I signed up for the two-mile run in the girls' track team as ordered. Muskegon Catholic Central led the state of Michigan in high school athletics, using mind-control technique to "modify" their star athletes and cause them to excel beyond pre-established records. The school gained national recognition for its contribution to professional leagues with their manufactured programmed athletes. But, like Tommy LaSorda's Dodgers, Catholic Central's consistent victories began to raise suspicions and questions. This created a public scandal for the school that threatened to close its doors in 1975.

The girls' and guys' track teams converged after school for practice. I was among the few females singled out for coaching by Coach Cheverini and his hypnotic mind-control methodisms due to my Project Monarch victimization. I was instructed to run 13 miles per day (another corny satanic ploy) to get in shape for my two-mile race. I often ran with a male friend who was the record holder for the two-mile in guys' track. He and I were friends, sharing much due to our similar Project Monarch victimizations. Together we learned how to shut out pain and fatigue when we ran. We tranced into a fast pace set in our minds by Coach Cheverini with no comprehension of time or distance. We perceived the track as our "Yellow Brick Road" in accordance with the Oz theme programming. Senator Byrd's plan for building my physical endurance through Catholic Central's coaching methods proved successful for allowing me to survive his intensely torturous sexual perversions.

In addition to routine trips to Mackinac Island and Niagara Falls, my family often took camping trips to "get away from it all". In reality, I was taken to key places for ritual abuse, prostitution, and pornography. In the fall of 1974, my father announced we were going to go camping "back in time" to an old fashioned festival in the small remote town of Cedar Springs, Michigan for their annual Red Flannel Days celebration. My mother told me to pack my jeans and sweaters and my Catholic school uniform which she had washed and pressed for the occasion.

Cedar Springs was quiet, with the festival events including dilapidated amusement rides set up in a small parking lot, and contests where local farmers pitted their mules and horses against each other to see whose could pull the most weight. The main (and only) street of town was lined with the few local businesses, including the town's red flannel underwear "long Johns" factory. In the center of town, a mock, single, jail cell had been erected to hold any and all parade participants who failed to wear the required red flannel underwear. The jail was guarded by quasi Keystone Cops. I was amused when the townsfolk began lining up to march in the parade, with very few remaining to watch it, A mentally retarded man carried the baton to lead the parade, followed by kids on bicycles, hay-wagons of old folks, a grade school band and people walking-all in their red flannel underwear. The grand finale' of the parade, the town firetruck, was approaching, surrounded by numerous motorcycle police. I heard folks whispering "the President is coming". I assumed they meant the President of the underwear factory. I was wrong. I watched in horror as the firetruck rolled to a stop, and Secret Service helped then President Gerald Ford as he stepped down to the pavement.

My father was excitedly tugging on my arm, half dragging me through the wall of Secret Service agents, to talk with President Ford. I looked around nervously as my father made the necessary arrangements with Ford to prostitute me to him later that evening. VanderJagt, who never missed a parade it seemed, was signing autographs. As he smiled at me, someone roughly grabbed my arm. Nervous and startled, I screamed. The crowd laughed as a Keystone Cop threw me in the jail, scolding me for not wearing my red flannel underwear when I was talking to the President. I was trying to be inconspicuous in hopes no one would see me with the likes of Ford, but then, they did not know him as I did. The Keystone Cop rattled on and on about "how lucky" I was until my father paid my bail and I was released from the cell.

That night, I wore my Catholic uniform as instructed and went into a dissociative trance as my father drove me to the local National Guard Armory where I was prostituted to Ford. Ford took me into an empty room, pushed me down on the wooden floor as he unzipped his pants and said, "Pray on this". Then he brutally, sexually assaulted me. Afterward, my memory was compartmentalized through use of high voltage. I was then carried out to the car where I lay in the back seat, muscles contracted, stunned, in pain, and unable to move.

When we got back to Muskegon, my father sent me to the beach as always, to let the repetition of crashing waves against the beach "wash my mind free of memory" while I watched the sun set. I was totally locked into the belief that truly there was "no place to run," not even to the President of the United States.

I remember that the "sane" part of "me"-my innate personality-seemed to die after seeing Ford as President. I recall walking up the steps of Catholic Central High School one morning, reaching for the door, and crying uncontrollably. I cried myself into a heap at the top of the stairs. I did not even know why I was crying. As an MPD, I rarely cried at all. But I was still sobbing hours later when school let out. Someone found me, but I do not recall to this day ever leaving the school steps. I never really experienced "emotion" after that day until I was rescued, deprogrammed and reintegrated in 1988. Now all of my brain was functioning through a wide variety of memory compartments, also known as multiple personalities, with no part of me left "free" of abuse. Now it was as though I had "no place to run," not even in my brain. This drove me out of my mind which is exactly what my abusers needed for total control.

CHAPTER4

THE MOST DANGEROUS GAME

When I learned of a pending rendezvous with Senator Byrd in Traverse City, Michigan (VanderJagt's headquarters), I stole some candy at a local convenience market hoping to go to jail and escape my encounter with Byrd. I was caught, and the police were even called. But, of course, my poetically powerful abusers would not allow for me to have a police record. The entire matter was not-so-mysteriously and suddenly dropped. My only "punishment" was to have a conference with the school principal, Father Vesbit.

Father Vesbit knew I was part of Project Monarch, and handled the matter accordingly. He raped me in the school's private chapel after school while holding a Satanic ritual involving several of my project friends. Kids often attached nicknames to their teachers, and there were only a few of us who knew the reason why Father Vesbit was called Father "Fuzzbutt". His backside was covered with thick black hair. He "counseled" me on several occasions, once remarking, "I thought kids in your situation were all part of the Exchange Student program."

My Uncle Bob Tanis was visiting our house soon after that. He had flown in from what he claimed was a "black ops" Air Force Intelligence operation. I know now that in typical CIA mode of operations, he was relating a story of lies salted with some truth. His point was to inform me that the Catholic Church is "justified" in its involvement with our government due to the Priests' "hearing confessions from mobsters and spies". He also explained that Exchange Students were "spies in the making" that Priests found, through Confession, were problems. Thus they were considered expendable and transferred out of the country. He then suggested to my father that I see the school guidance counselor, CIA Operative Dennis DeLaney, immediately. My father enthusiastically told me that DeLaney was a long time friend of his from St. Francis who "knew how to handle kids like me". Arrangements were made for me to see him after school.

DeLaney began by informing me that he was "aware of everything" and that he knew just what I needed "to put me back on track". He said that my family needed to lake a trip to the Teton Mountains of Wyoming. He even provided maps and information in an envelope for my father. He turned off the lights in his office, and turned on a slide projector. He showed me scenes of the numerous waterfalls of the Tetons, all of which were to "wash my brain" of the reality that I was performing oral sex on him as ordered while the slides ran. Then he scheduled a follow up appointment for further "counseling".

This trip to the Tetons would provide a change of scenery tram the usual Mackinac/Niagara Falls trip, but I could no longer hope for a change in the direction life was leading me. I was told my life was "predestined," and all I had to do was follow the road stretched out before me, i.e., the "Yellow Brick Road". I was destined for Wyoming, but would not know why until I arrived.

I confirmed the family trip to the Tetons when 1 saw DeLaney for my follow up "counseling". He informed me that he had already talked to my father about the trip, as well as our upcoming trip to Disney World in Florida. I was not surprised to learn of an additional trip. Nor did I have the capacity to become excited, suspicious, or apprehensive. I was aware that DeLaney was heavily involved in Project Monarch, not only because he was accessing my sexual personalities again, but because he was helping to pave the way toward my destiny of total mind control.

During Christmas vacation of 1974, my father flew us all to Disney World by route of Tampa, Florida. Ignorant of geography, it did not occur to me that Tampa was out of the way to Disney World until my father drove the rented van to the gates of MacDill Air Force Base. Military personnel met me there and escorted me into the base TOP SECRET high tech mind-control conditioning facility for "behavioral modification" programming. This was the first in what became a routine series of mind-control testing and/or programming sessions on government installations that I would endure throughout my Project Monarch victimization.

Whether I was in a military, NASA, or government building, the procedure for maintaining me under total mind control remained consistent with Project Monarch requirements. This included prior physical and/or psychological trauma; sleep, food, and water deprivation; high voltage electric shock; and hypnotic and/or harmonic programming of specific memory compartments/ personalities. The high tech equipment and methodisms I endured from that time on gave the U.S. government absolute control of my mind and life. I had been literally driven out of my conscious mind and existed only through my programmed subconscious. I lost my free will, ability to reason, and could not think to question anything that was happening to me. I could only do as I was told.

After the MacDill Air Force Base experience, my home life worsened. The controls and conditioning that my father and mother executed on me tightened even more. I was no longer permitted to have any contact with my own brothers and sister (I only had one younger sister at that time). This stopped me in my subconscious efforts to protect them from my father's abuse, and left me with a desperate, empty aching for the loving relationships I previously shared with them. Of course, I never was able to protect them any more than I could defend myself or later protect my own daughter. However, until government programming began, 1 had routinely "baby sat" them every evening and took them for long walks that lasted for hours in my feeble attempt to keep them out of my parents' range. Subconsciously I believed I was making a difference. The day my youngest brother told my mother he much preferred my company over hers was the day I could no longer be near him or my other brothers and sister. Apparently I was making enough of a difference that my parents were compelled to separate me from them. I was ordered to my closet-sized bedroom in the garage as soon as I got home from school or work. I could not speak to, look at, or hug my brothers and sister. I was not permitted to eat dinner with my family, although they let me out of my room to set the table, wash dishes, and do other chores. If I ventured from my bedroom to use the bathroom and was caught by my mother, she said, "nobody rattled your cage" and ordered me back to my room in the garage.

In the summer of 1975, my family drove all the way from Michigan to the Teton Mountains of Wyoming. I was ordered to ride in the back storage area of the family Chevy Suburban since 1 was forbidden to associate or communicate with my brothers and sister. So I dissociated into books, or into the metaphorical, hypnotic suggestions from my father and tranced deeper as I watched the prairies seemingly endless sea of "amber waves of grain" streak past my window. Once when we stopped at a gas station, my father took me inside to show me a stuffed "jackalope" mounted on the wall. Due to my tranced, dissociative state and high suggestibility level, I believed it was indeed a cross between a jack rabbit and antelope. It was 100+ degrees in the Badlands when it cooled down at night. The intense heat of the day accentuated my ever increasing thirst. My father was physically preparing me though water deprivation for the intense tortures and programming I would endure in Wyoming,

Dick Cheney, then White House Chief of Staff to president Ford, later Secretary of Defense to President George Bush, documented member of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), and Presidential hopeful for 1996, was originally Wyoming's only Congressman. Dick Cheney was the reason my family had traveled to Wyoming where I endured yet another form of brutality—his version of "A Most Dangerous Game," or human hunting.

It is my understanding now that A Most Dangerous Game was devised to condition military personnel in survival and combat maneuvers. Yet it was used on me and other slaves known to me as a means of further conditioning the mind to the realization there was "no place to hide," as well as traumatize the victim for ensuing programming. It was my experience over the years that A Most Dangerous Game had numerous variations on the primary theme of being stripped naked and turned loose in the wilderness while being hunted by men and dogs. In reality, all "wilderness" areas were enclosed in secure military fencing whereby it was only a matter of time until I was caught, repeatedly raped, and tortured.

Dick Cheney had an apparent addiction to the "thrill of the sport". He appeared obsessed with playing A Most Dangerous Game as a means of traumatizing mind-control victims, as well as to satisfy his own perverse sexual kinks. My introduction to the game occurred upon arrival at the hunting lodge near Greybull, Wyoming, and it physically and psychologically devastated me. I was sufficiently traumatized for Cheney's programming as I stood naked in his hunting lodge office after being hunted down and caught. Cheney was talking as he paced around me, "I could stuff you and mount you like a jackalope and call you a two legged dear. Or I could stuff you with this (he unzipped his pants to reveal his oversized penis) right down your throat, and then mount you. Which do you prefer?

Blood and sweat became mixed with the dirt on my body and slid like mud down my legs and shoulder. I throbbed with exhaustion and pain as I stood unable to think to answer such a question. "Make up your mind," Cheney coaxed. Unable to speak, I remained silent. "You don't get a choice, anyway, I make up your mind for you. That's why you're here. For me to make you a' mind, and make you mine/mind. You lost your mind a long time ago. Now I'm going to give you one. Just like the Wizard (of Oz) gave Scarecrow a brain, the Yellow Brick Road led you here to me. You've 'come such a long, long way' for your brain, and I will give you one,"

The blood reached my shoes and caught my attention. Had I been further along in my programming, 1 perhaps would never have noticed such a thing or had the capability to think to wipe it away. But so far, I had only been to MacDill and Disney World for government/military programming. At last, when I could speak, I begged, "If you don't mind, can I please use your bathroom?"

Cheney's face turned red with rage. He was on me in an instant, slamming my back into the wall with one arm across my chest and his hand on my throat, choking me while applying pressure to the carotid artery in my neck with his thumb. His eyes bulged and he spit as he growled, "If you don't mind me, I will kill you. I could kill you—Kill you—with my bare hands. You're not the first and you won't be the last. I'll kill you any time I goddamn well please," He flung me on the cot-type bed that was behind me. There he finished taking his rage out on me sexually.

On the Long trip back to Michigan, I lay in a heap behind the scats of the Suburban, nauseated and hurting from Cheney's brutality and high voltage tortures, plus the whole Wyoming experience. My father stopped by the waterfalls flowing through the Tetons to "wash my brain" of the memory of Cheney, I could barely walk through the woods to the falls for the process as instructed, despite having learned my lessons well from Cheney on following orders.

The next year when our "annual" trip to Disney World rolled around, my father drove, pulling his new Holiday Rambler Royale International trailer. (I slept outside in a tent because I was not permitted inside it since "I wasn't family".) My father dropped me off en route at the Kennedy Space Center in Titusville, Florida where I was subjected to my first NASA programming. From then on, I was "obsessed" with following the "Yellow Brick Road" to Nashville, Tennessee. Moving to Nashville was all I could talk about. If anyone asked me the question I could not think to ask myself "Why?", I would respond by reiterating it was something "I had to do".

I had gone through the motions of my senior year in a dissociative trance. I became further distanced from religious values by my religion class teacher. Brother Emmett. This was due to his promotion of cannibalism via Pier Paul Reed's book Alive, and by his teachings at a religious 'corseal' retreat I attended that included occult ritual at ST. Francis Church. I graduated from Muskegon Catholic Central High School in our bicentennial year of 1976. I was led by Senator Byrd to revise my plan to attend Hope College like I had promised VanderJagt as a child. This new plan was for me to temporarily attend Muskegon Community College, because my "real education" was to come through mind-control programming-not school. In order to be exhausted, as was necessary for my "real education," I worked three menial jobs in addition to attending college.

During my first semester of college in 1976, I made plans to take a trip to Nashville with my Project Monarch friend from Catholic Central. (She remains an expendable victim to date, and therefore her identity must be protected from public release for her safety.) My father explained that I was to stay at the Fiddler's Inn in Nashville, see the World Famous Printer's Alley row of sleazy country music nightclubs, and attend the Grand Ole Opry on Friday night, as ticket arrangements had been made through a "friend," in spite of their scarcity during the Thanksgiving holiday.

I never thought to associate Fiddler's Inn with Senator Byrd's fiddle playing when my friend and I arrived in Music City, U.S.A. Nor did 1 find it odd when a country music "star" entertaining at the Black Poodle nightclub in Printer's Alley began directing my activities. My friend and 1 were provided with free passes to the Black Poodle to encourage us to return each night where entertainer and CIA operative Jack Greene and his Desperado band were playing. During breaks between sets, Greene and his band would sit with my friend and me to manipulate our suggestible minds. I was told it was "my destiny" to have met band member, Wayne Cox, who had been trained for paramilitary mercenary operations under Louisiana's U.S. Senator J, Bennett Johnston, I soon learned that everyone associated with Greene was involved in his CIA "Freedom Train" operations. When I told Greene that my friend and I would not be returning on Friday night due to attending the Grand Ole Opry, he told us that he would be working the Opry that night. He made arrangements for us to come back stage and see him immediately following his segment. He explained that the "security" guard at the Opry, Nashville Metro Police Lt. Bob Ezell, was a good friend of his and would let us in.

At the Opry, my friend and I sat in the audience watching as Jack Greene introduced his "special guest," U.S. Senator Robert C. Byrd. At the sight of Byrd, I went into a pre-conditioned deep trance and robotically went through the motions of following Greene's instructions. Once backstage, Greene pointed out his dressing room, which he was sharing with Senator Byrd, and ordered me in. The personality that had been sitting in the audience had perceived Byrd as an entertainer and could not, or would not, think further. But as I walked into the dressing room and saw Byrd perched on the edge of the mirrored vanity in his boxer shorts, I switched into the child personality that had known him as a U.S. Senator on Mackinac Island since age 13, and responded sexually. Afterward, Byrd was claiming me as "his," excitedly telling me that he had "always wanted his own little witch". I soon learned the enormity of this statement.

Jack Greene's band member, Wayne Cox, later told me that playing music behind Senator Byrd at the Opry was not the only way he "backed him". He also backed him politically and in Freedom Train operations. Cox then made arrangements for my friend and me to stay the remainder of our trip at his trailer in Hendersonville, Tennessee. There was no choice but to comply. The following night, after Jack Greene completed his show at the Black Poodle, he drove my friend and me to a nearby participating after-hours club, the Demon's Den. There, Cox was to pick us up and take us to Hendersonville. Instead, we were slipped a drug and taken "on a tour" of Union Station, Nashville's then abandoned train station, where supposedly the only train still running through there was the Freedom Train.

Senator Byrd's attempted cultivation of superstition through my Catholic schooling should have maximized the impact of the occult ritual I was subjected to in the tower of the old stone and slate turn-of-the-century train depot. But the pain and horror was sufficiently effective in itself—even without my adhering to superstition-to produce the intended mind shattering results. Cox took my friend and me on a "flashlight tour" through the rubble of Union Station, until we came to a homeless man sleeping on the ground. Cox ordered me to "kiss the railroad bum good-bye," then shot him between the eyes while I was still only inches away[1]. He then used a machete to chop off the man's hands, which he put in a zip-lock bag. He then led us up the rickety stairs into the lower of the old depot. There Jack Greene, his band members, and others dressed in black robes were gathered around a black leather alter in a room lit by candles and draped in red velvet. In total shock, I was laid on the alter and subjected to rape and torture while the participants indulged in sex, blood, and cannibalism ritual.

The next day I woke up on Cox's couch, vaguely aware that I had suffered a "bad nightmare". When I stood up, I passed out from blood loss. I was bleeding profusely from the vagina. It was all I could do to prepare to drive back to Michigan, and my friend was certainly not in a stable frame of mind to help. I did not know what happened to me, nor was I able to question it. I had a new "obsession" on my mind. I had been programmed at the ritual to move to Nashville and marry Cox, as ordered by Senator Byrd.

Back in Michigan, I made the announcement to my parents that I was moving to Nashville to marry Cox, as it was "predestination". What they would not tell me was that my father had just literally SOLD me to Senator Byrd in exchange for lucrative military contracts that made him a millionaire overnight—a millionaire on a sixth grade education—a perverse, child exploiting criminal, immune from prosecution, working as a CIA operative for the U.S, government! That mind shattering occult ritual I endured in Nashville marked a new life of wealth and prestige for my father white thrusting me into a new phase of my torturous existence-and I had no choice in any of it!

---

[1] Nashville Metropolitan Police Lieutenant Bob Ezell, who also acted in the capacity of Grand Ol' Opry security guard, covered up the murder.

CHAPTER 5

TINKERING WITH THE MIND

It was 1977. I was a 19-year-old mind-controlled programmed slave in the CIA/DIA Project Monarch Freedom Train operation, literally owned by U.S. Senate Majority Leader Robert C. Byrd, who was then a 20-year incumbent and on the Senate Appropriations Committee, As Byrd's "own little witch" (sex slave), I would also become involved in covert government operations. I now understand that this required more memory compartments/personalities than I had developed. Hence one more reason for the mind shattering occult ritual, and my "predestined" marriage to Cox. In typical Project Monarch structure, Byrd was my "owner" and in control of my life, while Cox became my primary "handler" and followed Byrd's orders to ensure that 1 was at key locations and events at appointed times and to maintain me under mind control. Cox reportedly was not paid cash for his role like my father was. Instead, he either followed orders or would be prosecuted for distributing drugs and being the occult serial killer that he was and is to date. Cox's primary role was to shatter my mind further through repealed occult trauma as well as father my daughter, Kelly, to be raised in the genetic mind-control studies of Project Monarch.

I moved to Nashville, as ordered, to marry Cox, who took me to the backwoods of his hometown swamp in Chatham, Louisiana for months at a time for occult traumatization. Cox had been brought up in witchcraft by his mother, and admittedly longed for her sexually and ritually. Together they subjected me to their beliefs, which included what equates to a weakened version of mind control used by witches for centuries, anchored in superstition rather than scientific fact. These superstitious beliefs seemingly conflicted with Cox's mercenary training to the point that his killing raged out of control. For example, Cox would murder a human through repeated stabbing with a knife, believing that the "departing spirit" and splattered blood gave him power to control my mind. In truth, it was my aversion and subsequent traumatization by the event that caused me to dissociate and trance, leaving my subconscious open to his suggestions and those of others. During the three years I was with Cox, he ritually impregnated and aborted me six times, consuming several of his own offspring and preserving the others shaped in ceramic for sale in his interstate occult body parts business. Cox's M.O. for murdering always included removing the hands with a machete, as the "Hands of Glory" he kiln-dried in the ceramic shop of his and his mother's house were in demand and thus distributed throughout the occult underground supply network. Cox's protected cocaine and body parts distribution routes included Texas, Arkansas, Mississippi, Tennessee, and Florida.

Cox and I traveled to Florida on several occasions as his mother's parents lived in Mims, which is only minutes away from the NASA Kennedy Space Center in Titusville. Cox, like my father, made sure I was there for mind-control testing and programming as ordered. Cox perceived me as a "Chosen One," and often used this CIA Project Monarch term when referring to me and for proudly "justifying" his leaving me at the NASA installation.

Cox had a variety of belief systems that he applied to various situations, all of which were superstition based. He believed in spirit communication or "divine guidance" through nature spirits and demons, that Satan must be appeased, that Jesus is an alien, that the Bermuda Triangle is a door to another dimension, and that the end of the world is near. He 'religiously' carried a Bible with him everywhere-including to occult rituals-quoting scripture like a theologian. He justified "eating the body and drinking the blood," "being washed in the blood," and even "murdering children" according to the story of God testing Abraham by ordering him to murder his son, Isaac, by knife on an alter. Jim Jones was one of Cox's idols, as was Charlie Manson, and he touted the Jonestown massacre as a prime example of the "power of (CIA) mind control".

Cox demanded I become a Mormon in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. This was to "prove" that Satan was everywhere-particularly in the Monroe, Louisiana Mormon church where he led occult ritual, and in the Hendersonville, Tennessee church that the so-called Freedom Train rolled through.[1]

Cox's determination to instill his religious superstitious beliefs in me was side-tracked by J. Bennett Johnston in his Shreveport, Louisiana office early in the summer of 1978.

Cox's mother, Mary, had driven us to Johnston's office near Barksdale Air Force Base as ordered. As she knocked boldly on the obscure metal door, 1 read the attached metal sign: "General Dynamics Research and Development". A smaller sign near the doorknob read; "Unlawful to enter premises without prior authorization. All violators will be prosecuted under penalty of federal law."

Johnston, wearing a light blue, leisure suit and smelling strongly of body odor, opened the door. "Well, hey Senator," Mary drawled in her backwoods Louisiana dialect, "I brought the children to see you like you said."

Johnston looked at her with annoyed disgust. "I see that," he said matter-of-factly. He then proceeded to instruct Mary to wait outside a moment while he talked with Cox, then to take him on to her home in Monroe where I could be picked up at the Airport a few days later.

Cox and I were ushered into Johnston's barren military-style furnished office. Several Presidential and military photographs hung on the wall and served as the only decor. Johnston sat on the front of his military issue desk and talked to Cox's subconscious mind using cryptic, hypnotic Disney Peter Pan theme language,[3] as he apparently had done in the past when Cox had a mind left to control.

"As long as your ticker's running, chat crock-a-dial you've been feeding over the years will be running right behind you. (Peter) Pan knew how to stay a step ahead of the game and stop the inevitable process of becoming gator bait himself by offering to give him a hand now and then."

Cox dismembered his murdered victims and distributed the "Hands of Glory" to fellow Satanists and occult traumatized/ Peter Pan theme programmed mercenaries, while feeding "left over" body parts to an alligator that lived in the Swamp behind his house. This was indicative of Cox's twisted, murderous response to Johnston's traumatic Peter Pan theme programming... a programming that I was about to experience "first hand". Cryptically instructing Cox on Senator Byrd's orders, Johnston continued, "I've got to hand it to that Pan. His livelihood of creating hookers for the Captain (Hook) was indeed lucrative. And speaking of creating hookers, a little Byrd told me that a shift from routine hand-ling to a theme that is alien could prove lucrative to you." Revealing his intent to ensure my military mind-control programming, Johnston told him, "I'll lay a little groundwork and set the patten for countdown. Then I'll send her out to launch for you, and it's your job to man the craft from there..."

Cox was ordered out of Johnston's office, and he turned his full attention to me. When alone with the Senator, Johnston manipulated my mind, and ultimately my beliefs and perceptions, for future programming. He referred to a picture of himself shaking hands with unknown Navy brass as he dramatically told me, "I was there that fateful day in 1943 when a hole was ripped in the fabric of time through what later became known as the Philadelphia Experiment. All those fine boys vanished along with their ship in a bizarre twist of events that parallels the Atlantis disappearances. A vortex was created in an effort to slip dimensions and become invisible to the enemy. It was a success beyond the highest expectations and launched us all into universal travel. It is no wonder at all that we have had a man on the moon. Traveling to distant planets and galaxies is Mickey Mouse stuff in comparison to the high tech wizardry of trans-dimensional travel. Trans-dimensional travel circumvents all measures of time, including distance and speed. When the fabric of time was torn, we opened ourselves up to intergalactic travel—both in and out of this dimension - and in and out of the future, as well as the past. We can alter the course of history by traveling back in time to alter events, or we can blast off into the future and gain wisdom and knowledge of events yet to come. We can control the future by controlling the past. At present, this is a relatively easy task according to the theory of relativity and abilities gained through the Philadelphia Experiment. I came back an ET (extraterrestrial) myself. And our ship relumed to this Earth as a spaceship.[3] I gained the keys to the universe on that fateful day, and I carry them with me now, sharing only a Key or two at a time with those who are Chosen. You are a Chosen One (Johnston was deliberately interfacing with Rite to Remain Silent conditioning), and therefore must learn the ins and outs of interplanetary travel. Your mission is trans-dimensional. You can span infinite dimensions by learning from me. Take it from me, you're going places, kid. And I'll teach you to get there by riding the light. I'll teach you the groundwork, and you do the light work. The key to the universe lies in the speed of light. The only way to travel is by beam of light. You will learn to go to the light... Your mission is to learn how to Tinker with time. I'm going to take you on that journey myself. Come with me now. It's time we were leaving this plane and boarding another."

Johnston took me the short distance from his General Dynamics Corporation provided office to the Barksdale Air Force Base airfield. He was apparently well known at Barksdale, and a small cargo plane was ready to lake us to our destination-Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma.

Once we were airborne, Johnston accessed my sex programmed personalities for his own aggressive perversion. His use of cocaine further accentuated his hyperactive demeanor as he brutally slung me around the back of the small plane while he had sex with me. At one point the pilot hollered from the cockpit "Hey, you're creating turbulence. Knock it off, will you."

Johnston laughed and responded, "What the fuck do you think I'm doing?" By the time we arrived at Tinker A.F.B., my arm was beginning to show a dark bruise that extended from my shoulder to my elbow. A uniformed man greeted us as we walked across the airfield. Johnston apparently knew him quite well, and referred to him as "Cap'n" (which tied in with the Peter Pan theme programming I was about to endure). When he noticed my arm, Cap'n reminded him, "Hey, that's not necessary, you know."

"Yeah, I know. Take care of it for me. Here..." Johnston took the straps of my tank top and pulled them down around my forearms (which still could not cover the bruise.) "There, that just about covers it." He smiled and continued, "You look like a Southern belle that way rather than a damned ol' Yankee anyway,"

Cap'n said, "She'll be a Tinker-belle by the time we're through here today." Then, referring to Johnston's primary purpose in actually escorting me to Tinker he asked, "How are your South American operations progressing?"

"I've got to talk to you about that," Johnston answered. The two talked as though they had worked in tandem on given mercenary operations/assignments in the past. "I may need a few of your boys to back me on something."

"Back you, or cover you?" the Cap'n retorted.

Johnston laughed, "Both if you'll front the operation."

Johnston had previously "justified" his use of Tinker (Peter Pan theme) programmed mind-controlled mercenaries to me by saying, "Mercenaries are missionaries who follow their inner guidance system rather than their old Uncle Sam. Politics hinder the route to freedom, and these boys slip under international laws, undetected, to carry out the work the military boys only dream of doing.."

I was escorted away from the two by a nurse, who purported to be tending to my injured arm. In fact, she was preparing me for the "Tinker-belle cage"[4]—an electrified metal cage with an electrified grid bottom. Locked inside, I was subjected to high, direct current voltage to compartmentalize the Peter Pan theme mind-control programming that I endured. Like Peter Pan's Tinkerbelle, I learned to "ride the light" as a means of travel.[5] Additionally, my instilled Tinker-belle theme mind manipulation included a sense of Never-Never-land timelessness that was rooted to my "natural" inability to comprehend time due to my MPD/D1D.

Back in Louisiana, Cox and I shared a subconscious understanding of Peter Pan themes and "riding the light". The difference between us was that Cox consciously activated Tinker Air Force Base programming within Johnston's band of mercenaries, while my trance was perpetual whereby I could "Never-Never-Land."[6]

I was with Cox on numerous occasions when he was running guns and/or cocaine, and activating specified mercenaries for operations as instructed by Johnston, In the course of these travels I saw numerous underground arsenals and stockpiled weapons that were known to Senator Johnston, but were not on. military installations. I was also privy to government sanctioned cocaine operations.

On one such cocaine run in 1979, I traveled with Cox to a remote area in the Ouachita National Forest near Hot Springs, Arkansas to "watch for fairies like Tinker-belle" and "ride the light".

We sat in the brush near a railroad track until we saw a light approaching from the Eastern sky. At the time I thought I would be "riding the light" as I was led to believe, but in retrospect I recall my personalities being deliberately switched and a helicopter landing in a nearby clearing. Cox and I unloaded approximately 200-400 pounds of cocaine from the van he had driven, and stacked it in the helicopter. We were then flown to a small airport that appeared to be no more than a dark, fenced-in clearing where I saw a row of metal buildings that looked like mini-warehouses. While the cocaine was unloaded into a warehouse, Cox and I were taken by car to a nearby grey stone hold. The driver led us upstairs, and knocked on the Penthouse door.

"Yeah," a voice answered,

"I got a Tinker-belle and a Peter Pan here to see you, Sir," the driver called.

"Send 'em in." Cox and I walked into the suite where then Governor of Arkansas Bill Clint cm was shuffling through a briefcase. Clinton and Johnston were cohorts in illegal covert operations that emanated from Tinker Air Force Base.

Cox spoke up. "Senator Johnston said a little (Senator) Byrd told him that you are one of Ours.'"

"So what does that make you?" Clinton asked impatiently.

"A Chosen One," Cox nodded his head toward me.

Clinton asked me, "Chosen by whose order?"

I cryptically delivered the proper coded response, which cued Clinton to proceed. "What brings you here?" he demanded.

Interpreting his question literally as is "natural" for programmed MPD/DID slaves, I answered, "I rode the light, Sir."

Clinton rolled his eyes, and looked back over at Cox who was nervously rocking back and forth as he so often did. "State your business," Clinton ordered.

"Uh," Cox cleared his throat, habitually picked his nose as he rocked back and forth and said, "Well, uh..." Clinton looked disgusted.

"Get him the fuck out of here!" he ordered the driver. Cox was immediately escorted out,

"That's better," Clinton said. Using standard Jesuit hand signals and cryptic language, he triggered/switched me and accessed a previously programmed message.

"Senator Johnston sent me to give this to you." I handed Clinton a thin, large brown envelope, "And I have some fairy dust guaranteed to make you fly high." I took the personal stash of cocaine that Johnston was sharing with Clinton from my pocket.

Clinton snorted two lines of the coke immediately. He smiled. "Tell Ben I'm impressed." He showed me to the door.

The severe torture and mind-control programming that I was enduring at Tinker Air Force Base had prepared me for this simple "mission" and many others. Although Cox's out-of-control occult serial killings polyfragmented my multiple personalities as intended by Byrd, it was Johnston's alien theme mind conditioning that locked me into absolute robotic helplessness. After all, had I been capable of rationalizing, I would nave found that the thought of interdimensional travel and aliens was no more bizarre to me that Cox's murderous actions or having found out pornography king Jerry Ford held the office of President.

When my daughter, Kelly, was born in February of 1980, Cox's former employer. Jack Greene, traveled to Louisiana to meet with me in keeping with his role as Nashville's CIA Freedom Train "conductor". He took me aside and explained that since Cox had fulfilled his (genetic) role in producing Kelly, Senator Byrd had ordered me back to Nashville. Greene talked at length, hypnotically reviving my original programmed "obsession" to move to Nashville. He told me that Cox had proven too insane to follow orders anymore as was evidenced by my extremely poor health (much of my hair bad fallen out) and by the stench of decaying human flesh that permeated the area surrounding his remote Chatham, Louisiana swamp house.

If I had had a mind of my own, I know in retrospect I would have felt as though 1 had been released from a prison dungeon. But I could only respond by telling Cox matter-of-factly that I had received "divine guidance" to move to Nashville at once to a home that awaited me. Cox had no choice but to comply with Byrd's orders. Kelly and I moved to Tennessee when she was only three months old, and Cox temporarily moved with us in order to apprise our new handler of the latest details of our victimization. Within weeks, Cox moved back to Chatham, Louisiana to live with his mother (even to this date). Now he reportedly raises goats for sacrifice and carries on his occult serial killing activities unhindered due to his immunity from prosecution because of whom and what he and his mother know.

---

[1] Substantial information regarding the saturation of occultism in the Mormon church is a published fact, circulated among the Bishopric, then released by Bishop Pace in on effort to restore morality and freedom of thought to church members.

[2] Senator Johnston's dual and triple cryptic language perplexed me at the time. In retrospect, I understand how this component of mind control allowed for undetected proliferation of criminal covert activity, even when overheard by strangers, to the extent that I believed it must be occurring in "another dimension" as I was told.

[3] Johnston "validated" his ploy in my mind by arranging for me to see his "space-ship"-a then TOP SECRET experimental aircraft which would eventually be known as a Stealth fighter-at a military installation near Baton Rouge. The classified triangular Stealth was so alien to me at the time that it looked more like a spaceship than the U.S. fighter plane it actually is. This, in combination with his inhumane demeanor and my previously instilled belief in trans-dimensional travel, convinced me he was the "ET" he purported to be.

[4] I understand this is referred to as a Woodpecker grid.

[5] "Riding the Light" scrambled my future experience of being transported by military helicopter or airplane to robotically carry out some program for the government. This "trance-dimeasional" travel caused my earthly experiences to be perceived as having occurred in another dimension.

[6] I remained in a Post Traumatic Stress Disordered (PTSD) trance.

[7] Same Jesuit reference used to describe Pierre Trudeau.

CHAPTER 6

UNITED STATES MILITARY & NASA MIND-CONTROL TRAINING

Soon after moving to Tennessee, I learned that Senator Byrd had simply exchanged one living hell for another for me. My new mind-control handler, CIA operative and country music ventriloquist/ stage hypnotist Alex Houston, seemed only to pick up where Cox had left off. As "destined," Kelly and I moved into a run-down old trailer on Houston's property, which adjoined Jack Greene's farm in Goodletsville, Tennessee. I was subjected to further occult ritual on Greene's farm, and was ritually impregnated and aborted again, this time by Houston. A difference between Cox and Houston was the superstition factor; Houston knew exactly what he was doing and why he was doing it, in accordance with tried and proven scientific U.S. Government mind-control research and development. I gleaned this knowledge from conversations I overheard between him and "those in the know".

Alex Houston was 26 years older than I, and claimed to have gained his knowledge of stage hypnosis and government mind-control methods from the military while entertaining overseas in Bob Hope's USO tours. After the tour, Houston reportedly moved to Washington, D.C. where he and his alter-ego dummy, Elemer, were regulars on the Jimmy Dean television show in the '60s.[1] According to Houston, he was regularly booked to entertain in officers" clubs on military bases due to his involvement in covert government operations. During the brief interim period that Cox resided on Houston's farm with us, he played music behind government mind-controlled slave Louise Mandrell and her husband/handler, R.C. Bannon. Cox had previously worked with Louise's sister, Barbara Mandrell, at the onset of her government sponsored career in the 1960s, traveling overseas with her in the same U.S,O. tours that launched Houston's career. Irby Mandrell, the Mandrells' father and manager, reportedly sexually abused all three of his daughters and eagerly thrust them into their mind-controlled existence much the same way my father had sold me. His daughters, too, were owned by U.S. Senator Robert C. Byrd.

Cox was soon fired from his position with Louise due to his insanity. Once when Houston was traveling with the Mandrells as he so often did throughout the years, Irby Mandrell relayed the events that prompted his firing of Cox. He told Houston and I that Cox had become an embarrassment to him while traveling.

"I knew he was weird," Irby Mandrell said. "That's OK. I can live with that. But when he pitched a tent behind the hotel so he could hear the trumpets sound, signaling him to march to Missouri,[2] I said, 'Start marching, son. You're done. You're through in Nashville. Don't ever come back.' That's it, he was done."

Houston reminisced with Mandrell about the U.S.O. days, and inquired as to how he had tolerated Cox back when he played music behind Barbara.

"Oh, yeah. I remember he (Cox) had somewhat of a brain back then." Irby Mandrell continued, "Barbara was just a kid back then with the talent of a full blown star. I thought she had what it takes to make it in the industry. Then the Byrd came along and introduced us to the latest in technology."

Houston interrupted, "Are you talking about (music) equipment or the kind they've got in Huntsviile (Alabama's NASA mind-control training center)?"

"Both," Mandrell replied. "But it was Huntsville that launched her to the stars. The doors opened wide after that. Byrd took a lot of pride in Barbara, and the doors just kept opening. With my baby's talent and the Byrd's influence on her mind and career, there was no way we could lose."

When Houston became my appointed mind-control handler in 1980, Byrd's influence on my mind boosted Houston's "entertainment" career. His travels had expanded to accommodate covert drug and money laundering operations across the U.S., in Mexico, in Canada, and throughout the Caribbean.

Houston had, and has, a great deal of "no show" money, but I was never permitted access to it. Poverty was one more means of control I endured, as slaves like myself were not afforded the freedoms that having money allows. When I was working three menial jobs during college, all of my money was taken from me by my parents. All money earned by Cox's cocaine and body parts enterprises was reinvested in the coven and drugs, leaving us dependent on charities for our basic necessities. With Houston, 1 had to "earn" every penny I spent on groceries and necessities over and over again, which made "earning my keep" a deliberately impossible cycle. This kept me financially dependent and further hindered my ability to escape, even if I had known enough to attempt it.

My innate protective maternal instincts as a mother may have been accentuated due to my past unsuccessful attempts to protect my brothers and sisters (I now had two sisters). It was my desperate need to keep Kelly safe that drove me to the point of "fight or flight" when I was transferred to Houston. I had long ago lost my ability to "fight," but my new maternal instincts compelled me to "flight". I did all I could to save Kelly and myself from Houston and her fate in Project Monarch. Since I had no ability to reason and was amnesic, I "fled" to my parents' new house in affluent Grand Haven, Michigan, I had no concept of what I was running from or to. I arrived with my baby daughter in my arms, the tattered clothes on our backs, and what few donated belongings I had acquired for Kelly. Within a few days, my parents received and followed Senator Byrd's instructions, and turned me back over to Houston—who, in turn, sent me back to Louisiana for further conditioning.

After three more months of intense, nonstop tortures by Cox, 1 could not think to follow maternal instincts and barely knew my own name. I had no idea how old I was, where I was, how long I had been there, and what had happened to Kelly during that time, Kelly's own testimony and current programmed poly fragmented Multiple Personality/Dissociative Identity Disorder reflects the high tech, sophisticated conditioning and torturous trauma she endured during this and numerous ensuing times that we were separated. When 1 was returned to Houston as orchestrated by Byrd, my brain contained a series of new compartments ready to be programmed and led.

Intensive mind-control behavior programming began at once, and Houston ensured that I was taken to my appointed destinations under the guise of his travels in the country music industry. In the early 1980s, my base programming was instilled at Fort Campbell, Kentucky by U.S. Army Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino. Aquino holds a TOP SECRET clearance in the Defense Intelligence Agency's Psychological Warfare Division (Psy Ops). He is a professed Neo-Nazi, the founder of the Himmler inspired satanic Temple of Set, and has been charged with child ritual and sexual abuse at the Presidio Day Care in San Francisco, California. But like my father and Cox, Aquino remains "above the law" while he continues to traumatize and program CIA destined young minds in a quest to reportedly create the "superior race" of Project Monarch Mind-Controlled slaves. I quickly teamed that Aquino did not adhere to his profoundly professed occult superstition any more than I did. His "satanic power" was in the form of numerous variations of high voltage stun guns,[5] which he used on me regularly. Although Aquino used occultism (blood trauma) as a trauma base, his programming was high tech and "clean"—not muddled in a proverbial witches' brew of ignorance. He quickly dispelled the Cox influence, and began programming me according to Byrd's specifications as his "own little witch" for sadistic sex, covert CIA drug muling, black mail, and prostitution operations.

During the three months I was back with Cox, a muscle in my upper vaginal wall was cut and dropped in preparation for Houston to flesh carve a hideous witch's face[4] for Senator Byrd's perversion. Aquino provided the ancient instructions on how to mutilate me, and Houston used silver nitrate and hot exacto knives to carve the details of the face without any form of anesthesia. By flexing the muscle downward, the face protruded out of my vagina. Not only did this surgery give Byrd a vagina suited to his minute, underdeveloped penis, it also provided an equitable "curiosity" to be displayed over and over again in both commercial and non-commercial pornography and prostitution.

On the 1981 anniversary of John F. Kennedy's assassination, I was forced to "marry" Alex Houston for appearance sake. Earlier that month when I had been taken to Washington, D.C for prostitution purposes, Byrd informed me that I would actually be "marrying" him when I "pledged my vows" to Houston.

"It is a covenant between the two of us," Byrd had said, "It is me that you will honor and obey 'til death do us part," Byrd then instructed me to pick up my wedding dress from a nearby D.C. store. Throughout the years, Houston often joked about the significance of my Washington, D.C. wedding dress—which was depicted in pornographic photos and a commercial video to "commemorate our wedding night",

Alex Houston's "best man," Jimmy Walker, was also a photographer for Larry Flynt's sexually graphic commercial pornography magazine, Hustler. When I met Byrd after the ceremony at Nashville's Opryland Hotel as ordered, he presented me with a "wedding gift"—a rose patterned crystal crucifix deliberately designed to anchor "our wedding" in my Catholic/Vatican instilled beliefs. The Larry Flynt photos depicting me in my wedding dress with the crystal crucifix to "commemorate our wedding night," was standard lock-in procedure for all mind-controlled slaves I knew who were forced to "marry" their handlers/owners.

Houston's booking agent, Reggie Mac (MacLaughlin), of United Talent and later of MacFadden Agency in Nashville, Tennessee, had been booking CIA involved country music acts into key locations to aid the execution of covert government operations. For example, Houston's ventriloquist act "Alex and Elemer" would be scheduled to perform at a county or state fair near Washington, D.C., where I would be picked up by car or helicopter and escorted to the White House or the Pentagon. The ensuing activities would be compartmentalized in my memory in a manner that caused me to believe 1 had simply been traveling in the country music industry, and no one "back home" would be suspect of my absence. Another example would be that Houston "entertained" at Byrd's West Virginia State Fair every year, which gave a legitimate appearance to my presence there, when in fact I was being prostituted to the Senator I had "married."

During the early '80s, Reggie MacLaughlin primarily booked Houston into areas that were conducive to my mind-control programming with Aquino. I was first subjected to Aquino's tortures and programming in Fort Campbell, Kentucky; Fort McClellen in Anniston, Alabama; and most frequently, at Redstone Arsenal and Marshall Space Flight Center in Huntsville, Alabama. Military mind-control was fast, effective, and highly technological, but it was the NASA programming that launched me as a "Presidential Model", Even though Aquino instilled my programming on both military and NASA installations, he had access to the latest technological advancements and techniques through NASA. These included mind foolers such as sensory deprivation tanks, virtual reality, flight simulators, and harmonics. By the age of two, Kelly had already been subjected to Aquino and his programming through these latest technological advancements, which shattered her fragile young mind before her base personality had a chance to form. Rather than use occultism on Kelly, Aquino traumatized her through sexual assault and high voltage tortures of the mind and body. She, like I, to this day carries numerous scars from this "non satanic" abuse base. I know, from years of research, NASA technology and Aquino's programming, combined with the Project Monarch standard sleep, food, and water deprivation and high voltage, made Kelly a subject of state of the art genetically multigenerational MPD/D1D psychological mind-control engineering.

In 1981, Byrd personally joined Aquino in Huntsville, Alabama during one of our programming sessions. NASA cooperated fully with Byrd on any and everything, since it was Byrd's Senate Appropriations Committee that determined how much and/or whether NASA received government funding. I lay naked on the cold metal table, tranced and photographically recording every word and detail of my programming and every word that Byrd and Aquino not so privately discussed. Byrd was providing Aquino with specific details of certain perversions he wanted me equipped to fulfill or perform. Additionally, they talked about scrambling my immediate memory with two private porn films they were arranging to have produced locally. These were titled How To Divide a Personality and How To Create a Sex Slave. These films are the kind NASA became involved in producing for the dual purpose of "scrambling" memory and documenting their mind-controJ procedures. The resident Huntsville, Alabama pornographers were two local cops, one of which was (and is) a Sergeant.[5] This served NASA and the CIA well when cover-up was necessary.

The How To Create a Sex Slave film depicts the common "spin" programming, which in essence is the combination to unlocking or accessing a specific programmed act. For example, the compartment of the mind that holds memory of incest is stimulated to open when the original abuse is eminent. Seeing my father's penis would "trigger" a specific response, supposedly opening the neuron pathways of my brain to allow the part of my brain that dealt with his actions before to deal with them again. With "spin" programming, the trigger of seeing my father's penis is replaced with a combination of specific verbal commands and a specific number of physical spins so that anyone with tbe "combination" could access that particular part of my brain. The part of my mind containing "knowledge" of the original abuse by my father learned to "like" painful, sadistic sex. Senator Byrd wanted me programmed in such a way that he could decide if he wanted me to scream and cry when he whipped me, or if he wanted me to become sexually aroused and "beg" for more. After programming, when I met with Byrd, I would "dance" like a music box dancer, twirling round and round until Byrd's fiddle music stopped. My mind precisely calculated how many revolutions I had made whether I was capable of conscious counting or not (much like a normal person wakes up at a particular time without an alarm clock), and the desired results were produced as accessed.

This is but one simplified example of sex programming, and I was programmed for more than sex. But this particular incident of programming at the U.S. Army Redstone Arsenal would change my existence entirely and set the stage for my role in covert government black, budget-type operations as a "Presidential Model".

Seeing and/or knowing that Kelly was being tortured and programmed proved to be a detriment to my own mind-control programming, such that the common "cross-programming" of mother and daughter was rarely viable. In the fall of 1982, Houston was scheduled to perform at the State Fair in Senator Byrd's home state of West Virginia, Byrd arrived at our hotel with LT. COL. Aquino, who took Kelly with him, supposedly for programming purposes, I was left alone in the hotel room with Byrd, whose KKK affiliation fueled his rage over my having been recently prostituted to black entertainer and CIA operative Charlie Pride. Although I had had no control over the situation to begin with, Byrd expended his fury on me rather than on Houston who was ultimately responsible for the incident. He took out his whip and began beating me as he had so many times before. Only this time it seemed to last forever,

Byrd was still whipping me when Aquino returned with my tranced and traumatized daughter. I regained consciousness enough to pull myself up off the floor when 1 heard Kelly's hysterical cries. Byrd ordered me to the bathroom for a cold shower to stop the bleeding. My body could not carry out his orders, and I collapsed again in the bathroom, smearing blood all over the floor. Kelly's cries again revived me, and I crawled to the door to find Byrd sexually assaulting her and Aquino disrobing to join them. One small window in the bathroom appeared to be a possible means of escape to obtain help, but Byrd caught me and knocked me to the floor. The whole bathroom was smeared in blood by the time he threw me into the shower and turned the cold water on to slow the bleeding.

Later that afternoon, Kelly and I stood hand in hand in the afternoon sun at the State Fair where Senator Byrd was about to make a speech to his. constituents. My blouse stuck to my freshly whipped skin as Byrd walked onto the stage, and the crowd cheered. Although Byrd periodically sexually abused Kelly throughout her Project Monarch victimization, the horrific incident in-West Virginia was the last time 1 was able to instinctively think to respond at all. Aquino's mind-control programming further insured it, as did Byrd's access to high tech mind-control equipment via West Virginia's Jesuit College, where he claimed the role of "Head Friar".[6]

Kelly has reported enduring much sexual abuse by both Byrd and Aquino. Aquino apparently incorporated sexual abuse with his mind-control programming and sex training of her, and shared more such events with Byrd. It was also my experience that Byrd's sexual perversions were heightened when Aquino shared in the assault. Traumatic events such as this one in West Virginia reinforced my own programming through conditioning, and further locked me in to Byrd's seemingly inescapable control.

The majority of my programming, as well as a large part of Kelly's, was again Oz theme based. This means the combination of codes, keys and triggers to access me were related to L. Frank Baum's story, The Wizard Of Oz. Whether or not it was Baum's intention (or for that matter Walt Disney's, Lewis Carroll's, etc.), it is evident that his psychologically intense story was used for manipulating minds. Much of The Wizard Of Oz lends itself to themes commonly used by perpetrators. For example, nearly all MPD/DIDs have suffered the loss of pets during ritualized torture. And all of Baum's primary character Dorothy's nightmarish experiences "over the rainbow in Oz" stemmed from her desire to risk her own life to protect her threatened pet. Abusers use this lesson to condition the victim to drop all resistance and cooperate or "I'll get you, my pretty, and your little dog (or child) too." The "over the rainbow" scramble of dreams vs. reality provides abusers a theme by which to manipulate an MPD's subconscious perception of switching personalities. Oftentimes this theme is transdimensional as is Oz, or that which was just experienced was "just a bad dream" like Dorothy was told upon her awakening in her own bed back in Kansas.

CIA cryptic language is manipulation of the English language such that words have a double meaning (aka 'double binds' in mental health terminology.) It works much the way as communication through "inside jokes", among people familiar with each other. Perhaps this is a reason for the government's use of professional comedians as slave handlers. Since mind-controlled slaves' minds function consciously through their subconscious, which has no way of discerning fantasy from reality or intended meaning from literal meaning, cryptic dual level language is especially effective. Many CIA covert operations I was involved in occurred in public. Anyone who overheard the conversation would have discerned something very different from what actually "trance-spired". For example, one of my Washington, D.C. Secret Service escorts linked arms with me like Dorothy did wiih her companions when walking the Yellow Brick Road. This would have appeared to be normal behavior, or even romantic, to outsiders. But to me it was a signal to "stay the course" (Bush's quote) and follow directions. Arm in arm we walked through the crowded Air and Space Museum of the Smithsonian to the nearby NASA headquarters. There he read the "Service Entrance" sign on the door accentuating syllables ever so slightly so that I heard him cryptically command, "Serve-us, En-Trance".

[1] Jimmy Dean is knowledgeable of, and a willing participant in criminal covert activity including the use of mind-controlled slaves.

[2] "Marching to Missouri" is a Mormon based belief that interfaced with the CIA'S FACTION OF THE COUNTRY MUSIC industry being transferred to Branson, Missouri in the mid 1980s.

[3] 120,000-volt stun guns leave two indented prod marks or moles two inches apart, while the cylindrical stun gun USED primarily in the vagina and rectum leaves prod marks/moles 3/4 of an inch apart.. A look into trash-magazine publisher Larry Flint's Hustler will show prod marks on the mind-controlled slaves he photographs, particularly on the throat, near the lips. and on the back.

[4] The "witch's face" has also been referred to as that of a baphomet and Jesuit monk.

[5] I photo identified the Sergeant and his (jailer) officer in 1990, and Mark's and my lives were threatened through then-District Attorney, now U.S. Representative, Bud Cramer (D. Huntsville, Alabama) of the Congressional Permanent Intelligence Committee as a result of this revelation!

[6] To a literal mind-controlled MPD/DID slave, the term "Head Priar" equates to "head frier", meaning high voltage to the brain.

CHAPTER 7

CHARM SCHOOL

After Aquino instilled my base sex programming, I was often taken by Houston to Youngstown, Ohio to attend the sex slave training camp hell hole referred to as "Charm School". Houston often performed in the Youngstown area at county fairs, Fraternal Order of Police shows, or any little country music entertainment gigs that would bring us in the proximity of the dreaded Charm School. On occasion, Kelly would go through the torture process with me. But usually Houston delivered me to the door for training with other CIA and Mafia slaves my age, and then left taking Kelly with him. When Charm School was in session, there were several girls being tortured and trained at once. 1 have seen and known numerous girls to go through Charm School, but, understandably, few are reported to have survived or recovered their minds enough to talk about it.

Charm School was reportedly operated by an identified member of the. Mellon Banking family (Byrd's Endowment for the Arts' largest contributor). The operator took the name and role of "Governor" from the movie My Fair Lady, in an attempt to confuse my torturous reality with movie fantasy. In the movie, Governor is the cockney title given the professor who transformed a female street urchin into a functioning high society lady. Additionally, Mellon's use of the title, Governor, was intended to create scramble for the real Governor who frequented the school as though it were only a whore house. I am referring to then Governor of Pennsylvania (and later U.S. Attorney General, now secretary for the United Nations) Dick Thornburgh.[1] Aquino provided some of the programming at Charm School and everyone I knew in government operations was at least aware of it. Then Youngstown Sheriff, now U.S. Representative Jim Traficant, was usually present. He capitalized on his ability to portray himself as "Lurch" by slowly opening the door and saying, "Walk this way - To a literal slave in training, this means walk like he is walking-like Lurch, Egor, a street whore, Scarecrow, and so on.

Once the door closed behind me. Charm School meant I would be charmed, mesmerized (hypnotized), and programmed to be a high class prostitute for select politicians. I did learn their way to walk, I learned when to talk, how to dress, how to sit, stand, and all the rest. Table manners were not taught as they were not needed since slaves endured food and water deprivation when working. Above all, we were taught how to gratify any sexual perversion. Just as Traficant opened the door to Charm School for slaves, he oftentimes was the one to "test" their newly learned sexual skills to determine when or if slaves could leave.

A typical three-day course at Charm School included the usual factors of, sleep, food, and water deprivation; trauma; high voltage; and programming. Often times experimental or tried and proven CIA manufactured "designer" drugs were administered which produced specific brain wave activity to maximize and/or compartmentalize programs. I usually spent the first day hanging in the dungeon. Charm School is housed in an identified stone historical railroad barren's former residence, and the basement was in fact a wine cellar dungeon. It was dark, damp, and musty and was decorated in classic torture chamber fashion. It was complete with various hanging chains, a stretching rack, whips, and altars including one specially designed for bestiality sex. As I hung by my wrists, I could hear and smell the animals in the next cells—a black Nubian goat called Satan, a small donkey named Nester, sometimes a small white pony referred to as Trigger, and various dogs, cats, snakes, and others. All Charm School animals were trained to sexually respond to the smell of urine. When someone, such as Dick Thornburgh who particularly enjoyed this kind of kink, entered my cell and urinated on me, I knew I would soon be released from my chains and led to the animal altar for bestiality lessons, pornography, or to please a perverse onlooker. I was hung by my ankles, stretched on a rack, burned, and tortured repeatedly. My feet and hands were chained to a wall for what was termed "off the wall sex." I was taught "Silence" in Oz fashion since screaming did not produce results anyway unless they wanted it for pornography. This was implemented with an electronic canine bark collar normally used to train a dog not to bark.

I was repeatedly filmed pornographically, and always taken upstairs to the "Master's Chambers" for prostitution to participants, including the real "Governor" of Charm School, then Pennsylvania Governor Dick Thomburgh, Congressman Jim Traficant,[2] Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, and others. When Kelly was with me, she endured the same and we were forced to see each other physically tortured as further psychological trauma. This was to ensure I could never remember the who, what, when, or where of our bizarre enslavement. This is what is sometimes referred to as cross-programming.

In spite of the deliberately created amnesic blocks, I developed a sub-conscious sympathetic understanding for other Charm School slaves that extended outside the walls of this man-made hell. This understanding emanated from the depths of my being, creating a compassion for other mind-control victims that compels me to give voice to their silent pleas for help to this day.

I became close friends with one such victim, who must remain anonymous in order to survive to eventually recover. This beautiful blonde and I had numerous opportunities to be together throughout the years, as Houston's government sponsored travels routinely took him into her home state of Pennsylvania while Dick Thomburgh was Governor.

My friend and I were photographed together for Larry Flynt's commercial pornography publications, and featured in the illicit films that contributed to funding CIA covert operations. In addition to this, she and I were able to spend two weeks together when her husband/handler traveled to Houston's farm in Tennessee for instructions on handling his new "bride".

I was "made of honor" for my friend's "wedding," which was no more a marriage than mine to Houston. As was customary with Project Monarch slaves, her marriage to her handler equated to marriage to her mind-control owner, U.S. Senator Arlen Spector.

The "wedding" I was forced to participate in was for pornography purposes only, and it took place in Arlen Spector's Conneaut Lake house in Pennsylvania.

Spector's stone house was located in a wooded, remote setting and was masculine in decor. Side rooms were either designated for perverse sex or were furnished with antiquated NASA virtual reality and programming equipment. The musty smell of Spector's playhouse was overpowered by the scent of roses, which he symbolically presented to his slave on their "wedding" day.

My friend's "wedding" photos included Catholic themes, and the crucifix featured was rose cut crystal similar to the one I received from Byrd, Regardless of how this girl was depicted, her innate morality was apparent to me. She and I were referred to as "minor/mere cats," due to the similarity of our victimizations. Like me, she was controlled through manipulation of her religious beliefs and maternal instincts. The delicate rose tattooed on her left wrist signifying her role in government operations did not detract from her high class projection any more than Spector's immorality could mar her innate goodness. Once Arlen Spector officially became this slave's owner, her Charm School status rose to "Presidential Model".

In addition to Charm School, 1 endured extensive programming to prepare me for future operations. Houston was often booked into Oklahoma fairs, Masonic Lodges, F.O.P. Conventions, and so on, in order that 1 be back in the vicinity of Tinker Air Force Base for further programming. My Tinker-Belle conditioning further enhanced my photographic memory through direct control for receiving and delivering government messages which amounted to a computerized compartmentalization of my brain, so to speak. I was also trained in covert criminal operations, such as international drug mule transactions for funding the Pentagon's and CIA's Black Ops Budgets,

Houston's CIA orchestrated travels in the country music industry led me to a TOP SECRET military/NASA installation at Offit Air Force Base in Nebraska. The "you can run, but you can't hide"[3] conditioning was deeply ingrained in my mind there through a technique that was later used on Kelly, as well as on other mind-control slaves, I was taken underground to a so-called 'secret' circular room where the walls were covered with numerous screens showing satellite pictures from around the world. These satellites are referred to as the "Eye in the Sky". An Air Force official explained to me that my every move "could be monitored via satellite". On a separate four-screen viewer, he demonstrated what in retrospect was a contrived pre-recorded slide show, with the scenes changing as rapidly as he spoke and typed it into the computer.

"Where will you run?" he asked me. "To the Arctic? The Antarctic? Brazil? The mountains? The desert? The prairies? The hills of Afghanistan? The city of Kabul? Devil's Tower (Wyoming)? Would you try to run to Cuba and live among our enemies? We can find you there. There is truly no place to run and no place to hide. The U.S. Senate (the picture was of Byrd)? The White House? Or to your own backyard? (My father was depicted waving from his front door, cupping his hands over his mouth saying, "come back" just like Aunt Em in The Wizard Of Oz.) "The moon? We got you covered. You can run, but you can't hide." This had been sufficient to convince me in my suggestible stale that my every move could be monitored.

During the course of my training/conditioning, I was routinely prostituted to Senator Byrd in Washington, D.C., at the West Virginia State Fair, NASA in Huntsville, Alabama, and at the Opryland Hotel in Nashville, Tennessee. One such night when 1 was to be prostituted to Byrd at Opryland Hotel, Lt. Colonel Aquino was scheduled to join him in perversely assaulting me. Much to my horror, Aquino arrived early, in full army dress uniform, backstage at the Grand Ol' Opry. When I saw Aquino talking with the Vatican based Project Monarch slave runner, Kris Kristopherson,[4] whom I had known since 1979, my personality programmed for Opry events "short circuited". Under circumstances such as this, a multiple without programming would have switched personalities autogenically, whereas I could only switch upon command, I backed away, dazed, right into a soft drink machine. Kristopherson saw me as 1 backed further between the wall and the machine.

"What are you doing in there, little lady?" Kristopherson asked. The Colonel wants to see you,"

Aquino had walked over and sarcastically asked, "What are you doing in those machine wires? That could very well be a shocking experience for you." All experiences with Aquino or Kristopherson resulted in high voltage electric shock torture, and apparently neither had any regard for human life.[5] Aquino used the opportunity to reinforce his belief that I "had no where to run, no where to hide" from his "power"- his stun gun.

While I untangled myself from the wires, Kristopherson and Aquino continued their banter at my expense, Kristopherson held up his key ring and jingled it, catching my undivided attention as conditioned, while he told Aquino, "You're gonna need the Keys to the Kingdom to work with this one right here."

"Keys to the Kingdom," of course, referred to my previously instilled (Enter/Inter)"Inner-dimensional" Catholic programmed personalities. Since Aquino was my primary mind-control programmer at the time, Kristopherson was informing Aquino of programs previously instilled in childhood via the "Rite to Remain Silent". By jingling the keys, he was demonstrating his control over me and his momentary edge on Aquino.

"I got 'em," Kristopherson was saying as he jingled the keys. "She's mine unless you wanna play ball. Besides, you have to. The Byrd sent me."

"I've been expecting you," Aquino said with a smile. Events later that night proved that Aquino had been supplied the keys to my previously established Jesuit based programming, which he and Byrd used and altered to suit their own perversions.

Byrd monitored all of my programming "progress," and often tortured me with his whip and pocketknife. He picked up where my mother left off, to destroy any self-esteem I might have inadvertently developed. He said, "There is no place for you to turn because if you could think to talk no one would ever believe I would have anything to do with the likes of you." He often threatened me that I was considered "disposable" because, after all, "The first Presidential Model, Marilyn Monroe, was killed right in front of the public eye and no one knew what happened."

Byrd's threats and cruelty were unnecessary as I could no longer think to seek help anyway, but he loved to hear himself talk and would often drone on and on and on in his infamous long-winded recitations, while I was photographically recording every word he said. He detailed the inner operational structure of the world domination effort, including psychological warfare strategies, and explained how he had and would utilize his "expert" knowledge of the Constitution to manipulate it and the so-called U.S. Justice System, and more. His loose lips provided me yet another means of surviving and staying a step ahead of "the game" once Kelly and I were rescued from our mind-con trolled existence.

Senator Byrd revealed his "justifications" for criminal activity to me as well. He used me as a sounding board even though he knew 1 was incapable of input or response. He rehearsed in keeping with his motto "The only way we can fail, is to fail to think of an excuse."

Byrd "justified" mind-control atrocities as a means of thrusting mankind into accelerated evolution, according to the Neo-Nazi principles to which he adhered. He "justified" manipulating mankind's religion to bring about the prophesied biblical "world peace" through the "only means available"—total mind control in the New World Order "After all," he proclaimed, "even the Pope and Mormon Prophet know this is the only way to peace and they cooperate fully with The Project."

Byrd also "justified" my victimization by saying, "You lost your mind anyway, and at least you have destiny and purpose now that it's mine." Our country's involvement in drug distribution, pornography, and white slavery was justified" as a means of "gaining control of all illegal activities world wide" to fund Black Budget covert activity that would "bring about world peace through world dominance and total control". He adhered to the belief that "95% of the (world's) people WANT to be led by the 5%", and claimed this can be proven because "the 95% DO NOT WANT TO KNOW what really goes on in government". Byrd believed that in order for this world to survive, mankind must take a "giant step in evolution through creating a superior race". To create this "superior race," Byrd believed in the Nazi and KKK principles of "annihilation of underprivileged races and cultures" through genocide, to alter genetics and breed "the more gifted-the blondes of this world".

As Byrd's captive audience (literally), I absorbed information that the other so-called masterminds behind the New World Order would never have revealed for security reasons. But Byrd regarded me as "his" object, a game-piece that he could strategically move through life as though he were playing a chess game. He perceived me as totally under his control with no possibility of my ever being rescued, surviving, and recovering my mind and memory. Byrd likely would have talked to a post, and I filled the role as his silent sounding board.

My CIA Operative mind-control handler, Alex Houston was often scheduled to perform at the Swiss Villa Amphitheatre in Lampe, Missouri, which is yet another installation where 1 was programmed. Swiss Villa was a cover for a CIA Near Death Trauma Center of which there are several across the country. It is a remote, high security resort, enclosed with military barbed wire fences, that swings its guarded gate open to the local public for country music concerts. The small Amphitheatre covers the covert activities occurring inside, which includes U.S. Government CIA cocaine and heroin distribution operations and mind-control projects.

Swiss Villa, like the Mount Shasta, California compound, was also used as a training and operations camp for the Shadow Government's paramilitary projects referred to by Senator Tnouye (D. HI). I learned that this not-so-secret military buildup, sanctioned by corrupt members of our government, consisted of special forces trained robotic soldiers, numerous black unmarked helicopters, and the highest technological advancements in TOP SECRET weaponry and "Star Wars" electro magnetic mind-control equipment. These paramilitary compounds were intended for global policing of the New World Order through the Multi-Jurisdictional Police Force.

"A Most Dangerous Game" was often played at Swiss Villa and involved CIA agents, politicians, and others who would attend the resort just for the sport of hunting humans. Kelly and I both were hunted at Swiss Villa. The tortures and rape after being caught were extensive and sufficiently traumatized our minds for ensuing programming, as well as for creating memory compartmentalization for the high level operations we witnessed behind the villa's patrolled fences. It was at Swiss Villa that I was taught "THE Most Dangerous Game" was one where a slave tried to escape and reveal what he or she had learned. If the hunters could not catch and stop the slave, then the black helicopters patrolling the area would. And if all else failed, the "Eye in the Sky" would locate him or her, and a torturous death was supposedly imminent.

According to my abusers, my deprograminer and primary advocate Mark Phillips and I have embarked on "THE Most Dangerous Game" through efforts such as releasing this book and turning a spotlight on the Shadow Government to reveal its members' identities and their crimes against humanity, Mark Phillips and I are determined to beat them at their own "game" by arming the "95%" with the truth that perpetrators "don't want them to know!"

---

[1] Dick Thomburgh is listed in Houston's CIA memo book which is now in my (and others') possession.

[2] Please note that, while still Sheriff of Youngstown, Ohio, Traficant wis investigated and subsequently indicted for federal racketeering, drug distribution, and Mafia connections. However, he was acquitted through careful CIA jury manipulation and he went on to become the U.S. Representative he is to this date.

[3] Once gaining "eyes to see and ears to hear," this "you can run, but you can't hide" theme is so widely used it is visible from Hallmark greeting cards to Interstate overpasses to the lock-in song by the rock group, Police's "I'll Be Watching You".

[4] A good friend of mine who remains a victim to date was "married" to Kristopherson on the night she wed her mind-control handler-much the way I had "married" Byrd when I wed Houston. The crucifix used to her Larry Flynt "wedding night" porn photos was mirrored rather than crystal.

[5] Kristopherson nearly strangled me to death with his penis, which had further sexually excited him, late in the summer of 1987 during another incident related to Byrd.

CHAPTER 8

CIA'S WAR ON DRUGS OPERATION: ELIMINATING COMPETITION

I no longer had any mind of my own. I was absolutely void of free will and was now totally robotic. So was Kelly, We wore our Charm School smile at all times, and did exactly what we were told to do. The only characteristic noticeably out of place was Kelly's age-inappropriate programmed vocabulary and mannerisms. Outsiders attributed this to her traveling within the country music industry. My public image was a programmed personality that always smiled, looked and talked like the proverbial "air-head" blonde that kept outsiders away by socializing only within my controlled environment. This lifestyle appeared quite normal for my role as Houston's much younger "wife" in the country music industry.

When we were not traveling, I began each day at 4:00 A.M. with a minimum of 2 hours aerobic exercise. Afterward, I tended farm animals and did other chores, then cooked Houston a large country breakfast which neither Kelly or I were permitted to share. Houston would then order me to work to exhaustion on his 100-acre farm while he watched. These chores included hauling, stacking, and feeding out hundreds of bales of hay to our livestock each year; maintaining miles of electric fencing; cutting acres of grass with a push mower an average of twice weekly; busting concrete with a sledge hammer and mixing and pouring new cement; digging by hand and maintaining a two acre vegetable garden for canning; cutting, hauling, and slacking firewood for Houston, his neighbors, and friends; shoveling pick-up truck loads of creek gravel to fill in enormous potholes in the gravel road leading to 11 rural residences including Jack Greene's; and anything else Houston could think of that would wear me down. Houston's exhaustive, slave-driving work orders made my father's seem benevolent in comparison. The "best" of days were rough.

I ate "like a bird (Byrd)," following Byrd's orders of 300 calories per day-with no sugar or caffeine. My metabolism was low. I was trained to compute calories like a machine, eating more like a rabbit than a "bird", I had to count every calorie, from a simple taste of what I had to cook for Houston to semen. Houston ensured thai Kelly and I never got more than two consecutive hours of deep per night. He accomplished this through automatic mental "alarm clocks" that woke us up at two- hour intervals-Kelly with asthma, and me with panic. These tactics contributed to Kelly's and my total inability to resist mind control. Traveling in the country music industry was no easier than existing on Houston's farm in Tennessee. It certainly lacked the glamour that outsiders usually associate with entertainment industries. CIA covert drug operations had permeated the industry. Entertainers were used to buy, sell, and distribute cocaine brought into this country by the U.S. government for the purpose of funding the Pentagon's and CIA's Black Budgets. Nashville's local government, from my perspective, was totally corrupted by these criminal covert operations. Cover-up, murder, drugs, and white slavery prevailed. Entertainers usually made n big only when they participated in CIA operations and/or were slaves themselves. I know of numerous entertainers in need of rescue and deprogramming from their mind-controlled existence, because it was discovered that voices could be harmonically tuned through mind control to captivate audiences. To quote my father, "Spies, like singers and actors, are made, not born". These entertainers have endured much of the same programming as I to permit them to carry out government operations in the course of their travels.

Norwegian Caribbean Lines (NCL) cruise ships depart regularly from Miami, Florida and travel throughout the Caribbean and Mexico. NCL provides pleasure cruises to the public complete with "entertainment" like that of Alex Houston while carrying out CIA operations. Sue Carper, former director of entertainment procurement for all NCL cruise ships, would ensure that government covert activities staging were properly orchestrated. She rotated entertainers like Houston from ship to ship in order to avoid the scrutiny of clean U.S. Customs and Immigrations inspectors. I routinely took cruises with Houston, muling cocaine and/or heroin out of Haiti, the Bahamas, Mexico, the Virgin Islands, and Puerto Rico to fund covert operations. While I was robotically carrying out transactions as ordered, I was also prostituted to South and Central American drug lords and politicians, as well as filmed pornographically. Houston made sure I was in the right place at the right time and switched me into the proper mode for each activity I was forced to carry out. In the early 1980s, this included passing messages to and from Senator Byrd, Baby Doc Duvalier, my Cuban contact, Puerto Rican drug lord Jose Busto, and others.

In keeping with NCL's Caribbean operations, Byrd adjusted his use of programming themes to include the mirror-reversal, interdimensional, Air-Water mind-control theme used on me by NASA and the Jesuits. I often saw dolphins playing in the ocean while being transported from port to port via the Cruise ships, but the popular "whales and dolphins" mind-control theme was avoided in favor of a theme more suitable to my experience-that of the Sea-Bird-Robert C. (Sea) Byrd. He told me, "Atlantis[1] has long been the epicenter of alien activity. The path is so well warn that there are holes in the fabric of time and space whereby airplanes and ships, even people, timelessly seemingly disappear, transformed into another dimension alien to this world. Likewise, we (aliens) came in, entering through the mirror reflection of the hole in the fabric of space, the deep blue sea. Some of us entered Earth's plane as whales and dolphins. And when we emerged from the sea, some of us came flying out. Or is that in? At any rate, we are here. Watch for the flying fish when you are out to see/sea. When you see one, you will know it is kin to me. A flying fish by any other name is a C. Byrd. A sea bird. Robert C. Byrd."

The drug business was booming for the CIA, and the only "War on Drugs" I witnessed was that launched by the CIA against its competition. As quickly as 1 brought the NCL suitcases of drugs into the Port of Miami, they were usually transferred to Houston's factory custom-built Holiday Rambler motor home. Concealed compartments were built into the walls for hiding the illegal drugs. If I drove the drug-filled motor home on to Nashville rather than deposit the drugs en route at Warner-Robbins Air Force Base in Macon, Georgia, the bulk was stored in the Hendersonvilie Mormon "food storage" Bishop's Warehouse. Some cocaine was delivered to a music distributor in Nashville, Tennessee, where it was carefully packaged in participating entertainers' cassettes, for delivery along their carefully scheduled travel routes. Houston always kept a large amount of the cocaine for his own use and distribution. Oftentimes he ordered that I deliver the drugs to specific entertainers at the Grand Ole Opry and/or at the local shopping mail when we were not traveling. Most often, however, the larger loads of drugs remained concealed in the motor home for distribution to CIA drug drops while we traveled the country music industry. These CIA drug drops included an abandoned amusement park near Youngstown, Ohio; Diamond Caverns[2] campground in Park City, Kentucky; and Swiss Villa Amphitheatre in Lampe, Missouri. I was aware that tons of drugs were being handled via our military, but the hundreds of pounds I muled were targeted for exclusive private distribution.

An example of a typical Caribbean drug operation centered around the NCL port of call. Key West, Florida. Houston took Kelly and me to a nearby tennis court under the guise of playing tennis. In reality, I was to meet with CIA Operative Jimmy Buffett, who devoted more time to the proliferation of CIA criminal covert activity than he did to his music career cover. Buffett was playing tennis. Referring to him as though he were to be my tennis instructor, Houston said, "There's your instructor. As soon as he gathers the balls, he should be over here to meet you."

Noticing us, Buffett strode over and shook hands with Houston. "Hi, Jimmy/ Houston said as though they were old buddies.

"Hi, Alex and Elemer," Buffett responded, sarcastically using Houston's stage name.

"Oh," Houston said. Never one to know an insult when he heard it, he continued, "What do your friends call you?"

"What does it malter to you?" Buffett asked. "Uncle calls me Jim. I take it you're not the contact,"

Houston pointed to me, "She is".

"That's more like it," Buffett smiled. "A little Byrd told me I'd be meeting with a Diamond in the Rough."[3]

"I prefer a Diamond in the Buff," he said, "I've got a studio across the street."

As we walked toward his studio, I was oblivious to the meaning behind his conversation. with Houston and commented, "I understand you're an instructor. I wish I had brought my racquet."

"I'm not that kind of an instructor," Buffett explained, "I'm a point man for Uncle. And you've got an appointment with me. I have some instructions to give you." As we entered his studio, he said, "Welcome to paradise," and gestured me in. We went into the small living quarters, which may have appeared even smaller due to the electronic equipment, acoustic guitars, and furniture that filled the room. A black mirrored coffee table, atypical of cocaine users I'd known, was the clearest spot in the room, A gold razor blade, cocaine residue, an ashtray full of marijuana roaches, and a fanned deck of card with the queen of hearts on top lay on the table. Tropical plants further cluttered the room. Standing between a perched, stuffed parrot and a banana tree, Buffett was saying, "Key West is a key place to be. It's the key to the Caribbean - Cuba, Panama - anyplace that means anything to Uncle these days, I hold the keys. I'm keeper of the keys and I hold a few of yours." Looking at his parrot, he continued, "The bird/Byrd says you respond to pair-o-dice, look deep into the parrot eyes."

I did as instructed, and Buffett popped out the bird's ruby red eyes, which actually were dice, into his hand. "Roll your eyes high while I roll my pair-o-dice," he ordered as he rolled the dice across the table. Stopping at the deck of cards, he picked up the jack of diamonds. "I am a jack of all trades," he cryptically continued. "And I trade in whatever Uncle orders. An order has been placed. You must follow orders and go to that place. Go to the White House Inn at the pier. Carry your laundry bag (full of cash) with you, and see the man in black. (My Cuban contact almost always wore a conspicuous black trench coat.) There is a launderman on the dock itself. They do all my laundering for me, and will be expecting you. Watch for the sea-man with the duffel bag. When you see the military green duffel bag, approach the desk. When he says, "I need this laundered, but I do not have the time," you say, "Welcome to Paradise. I will make sure it is cleaned and delivered on time." Then give him your duffel bag of 'laundry' and say, "This has been properly laundered for you". Take the duffel bag. It will be light as a feather. Return to the Inn and enjoy the buffet."

Changing modes, Buffett unzipped his shorts as he asked, "Do you like a buffet? I have a Buffett buffet for you now. And if is Paradise!"

I carried out the drug transaction as ordered, the whole ordeal lasting a matter of minutes. A buffet was spread in the courtyard of the White House Inn at 4:00 PM just as Buffett said it would be. But due to the food and water deprivation necessary to maintaining my mind-controlled trance, Houston forbid me from carrying out this last part of Buffett's instructions,

Alex Houston Enterprises was another side business that Houston used to cover for his CIA criminal covert activities. It included the relabelling of G.E, capacitors for the "energy savings" companies, Queen Electric and Phase Liner, he shared with his former wife and first CIA mind-controlled slave. She was a Catholic processed Puerto Rican blonde beauty. These G.E. capacitor banks were sold internationally as energy saving devices, when in fact they provided one more means of transporting drugs from the U.S. around the world.

It was Houston's G.E. capacitor scam that provided me insight into the elaborate Long Island docks drug network run by U.S. Congressman Gary Ackerman (D. NY).[4] I first met Ackerman in 1981 when Houston was booked into the Woodberry Music Festival with known CIA mind-control victim Loretta Lynn.[5] Lorctta's road manager, Neo-Nazi pedophile Ken Riley, who was also Alex Houston's best friend, often assisted Houston in handling me. Riley in turn handed my Charm School programmed keys, codes, and triggers to Congressman Ackerman, who skillfully accessed my Alice In Wonderland mirror theme programming. After snorting a couple of lines of coke, he stepped into the center of a three way mirror where he positioned me and proceeded to sexually gratify himself in my throat. Ken Riley, and other involved members of Loretta's band, all laughed as Ackerman stumbled around the room while pulling his pants up from around his ankles and complaining that he "couldn't stand for sex like that". The term "Ackerman syndrome" was coined after that in reference to sex that drained a man of his energy, and circulated among "those who know" for years.

[1] NCL cruise ships routinely pass through the so-called "Bermuda Triangle," and Byrd did not miss this opportunity to tap into old programming base installed by Senator L. Bennet Johnston.

[2] When Mark and 1 turned in detailed information on this drug drop to law enforcement, our lives were endangered to the point that a foreign Intelligence officer intervened and subsequently saved our lives through a timely tip-off.

[3] "Diamond in the Rough" was a term used to describe an MPD/DID slave actively engaged in programming via torture conditioning.

[4] Congressman Ackerman's Caribbean cocaine and Asian heroin operations have not hindered his position on the Congressional Post Office and Civil Service Committees, nor the Asian and Pacific Affairs Committee. It is important to note that, as a matter of Congressional record, Ackerman openly opposed compulsory drug tests for all federal employees.

[5] Senator Byrd proudly claimed Loretta as his mind-controlled slave and told me, "I literally made Loretta what she is today, and she is maid to order". Loretta's son and secondary mind-control handler, Ernest Ray, told me, "I know what the Byrd did to my mother. I can get away with murder... All I gotta do is call him and I'm free as a bird/Byrd."

CHAPTER 9

RONALD REAGAN'S AMERICAN DREAM: A PANDORA'S BOX OF NIGHTMARES

My mind-controlled existence became more complicated after Senator Byrd introduced me to then President Ronald Reagan in the fall of 1982[1] at a White House political party. Byrd told me, "When you meet the Chief, imagine him with his pants down. He's most comfortable knowing you are imagining him with his pants down. He doesn't want formality." Former president Ford had conditioned me to dread the Office of President, and I mechanically went through the motions of meeting Reagan,

Reagan admittedly had seen the How To Divide a Personality and How so Create a Sex Slave videos made in Huntsville, Alabama. He acted very pleased with me as though I had participated in them willingly. Within the first few minutes of meeting Reagan, he was giving me acting tips to utilize in government operations and pornography!! "When you become your part, your performance increases, which in turn increases your ability to do your part—for your country. 'Ask not what your country can do for you. Ask what you can do for your country'-your part," he instructed. Somehow, Reagan's reminder of Ford's and VanderJagt's conditioning to Kennedy's quote seemed more patriotically significant than "simply" sexually entertaining politicians by waving a flag in my bottom. After gazing deep into his self-professed "kaleidoscope eyes," each metaphorical phrase he spoke became life and breath to me.

Reagan explained to me that the illegal CIA covert activities I was forced to participate in were "justified" as they funded covert activities in Afghanistan and Nicaragua. He explained, "America's Freedom Train is spanning the globe and sex is but a sidetrack to the ultimate course of freedom. Our job of procuring and transporting arms is the most difficult part of all. But it can and must be done. How can a man with no arms fight? These operations are necessary as American people raise too much hell about violence already, and it is better they're not informed of our supporting wars they cannot understand the significance of."

I realize now that Reagan twisted reality to fit his personal perceptions rather than to adhere to Byrd's philosophy of providing "excuses" for what he deemed "the order of things". In typical Reagan fashion, he did not perceive mind control as slavery, but as "an opportunity for those who otherwise would have nothing in life". He claimed that multigenerational incestuously abused children like myself, or "previously impoverished baseball players from third world countries and slums, are provided an opportunity to 'be all they can be' through making a 'contra-bution' to society, our nation, and the world, by utilizing their talents to maximum potential." With this altitude, Reagan displayed pride in the sick role he played as The Wizard Of Oz, directing Project Monarch slaves like myself.

That night. Senator Byrd acted in the capacity of a pimp and prostituted me to Reagan. Referring to me as though I were a machine, Reagan asked Byrd, "Does she run on chemicals?" meaning specific CIA drugs.

Byrd answered, "She takes it in spurts". 1 noticed that Reagan's eyes lit up with perversion and understanding of Byrd's statement, which meant that I "shared" whatever drugs were in his system through his urine. Reagan later told me he preferred sex slaves equipped for this task since he, as President, should not have to get up in the night to urinate,

"Well," Reagan said, holding up his glass, "All I've had to fuel her with is alcohol. That's not much of a jolt from a "whiz of a Wiz(ard)." Byrd chuckled at Reagan's Oz cryptic joke and removed his gold cocaine vial from the inner pocket of his suit. He and Reagan discretely turned their backs to the party while Byrd "spoon fed" Reagan the drug up his nose.

Before I left with Reagan, Byrd informed me that "Uncle Ronnie doesn't sleep with his mommy (Nancy)," and that he preferred snuggling into his LL Bean, light blue flannel sheets in his nightshirt and ridiculous nightcap because "they're warmer, softer, more comfortable, and don't snore".

Later, in his bedroom, Reagan accessed my sexual programming, and I became "my part" as a prostitute to "Uncle Ronnie". Reagan did not move during sex. After all, that was "my duty". And my duty was to please him, whatever it took, and it took more time than anything. Reagan never hurt me (he always made sure someone else did that) and used this as a "bond" to the little child ("Kitten") personality he always accessed for sex. Reagan's most apparent personality kink was his love for bestiality pornography.[2] According to my handlers, his passion for pornography escalated its manufacture and distribution during his Administration. He wholeheartedly approved and encouraged the porn industry for funding covert activity.

Many commercial and instructional (private) pornography films I and others participated in, referred to as "Uncle Ronnie's Bedtime Stories," were manufactured solely for his pleasure-oftentimes according to his instruction, using Freedom Train slaves. After my initial meeting with Reagan, I was used in numerous films that were produced predominantly at Youngstown Charm School and/or by his "Chief Pornographer"[3] Michael Dante, specifically to satisfy his perversions. These included a wide range of cryptic themes, but were mostly bestiality. Reagan often watched the videos while I was prostituted to him, requiring me to re-enact the porn however possible.

I first met Reagan's Chief Pornographer Michael Dante, AKA Michael Viti, at an elite Nashville hotel where he was attending "charity" Golf Tournament festivities. Like CIA Operative Charlie Pride's Pro-Am Golf Tournamenl in Albuquerque, New Mexico, this "charity" tournament provided a cover for the cocaine and white slavery operations that dominated the event. Houston and I often attended such "charity" events, as did Dante, but it was only after having met Reagan that Dante's and my paths crossed as arranged.

Dante took me to his hotel room after our initial introduction. He snorted a few lines of coke, looked me over as though 1 were merchandise, and accessed my sex programming. He then arrogantly asked me if I knew who he was. He told me he lived in Beverly Hills, California and made movies. I thought he was referring to his box office flop, Winterhawk, until he said, "Uncle Ronnie sent me. He wants me to make movies with you as your 'contra-bution.' We're gonna have a good time, then he's gonna have a good time, and everybody's happy. You'll like that, won't you Baby? Get dressed. We're going back downstairs and make arrangements."

Dante telephoned me often, professing "our love" through command reinforcements and making arrangements to meet me in specific places for producing Uncle Ronnie's Bedtime Stories and commercial porn. These locations included, among others, Tennessee, Florida, the Caribbean, and

California. He often talked of owning me in the future, painting a picture of what life would be like living with him. His attitude toward women was atypical of slave owners and handlers, and he often quoted scripture to justify his dominance. "No arguments," "speak only when spoken to," "take a good beating now and then just to keep you in line," "see to all my comforts and housework," and "be on call 24 hours a day when I need a good whore". He gave me a slave bracelet—a trademark of his porn—and said, "A woman needs a chain. It's a public reminder of total commitment and devotion. A reminder of the chain-of-command. A woman is tied to her man. No man should be tied to a woman."

Dante's Connecticut Italian roots are in the Mafia, and it was a well-established fact that organized crime and government had a close working relationship where criminal covert activities were concerned, I met many of Dante's associates, and we already shared a few common contacts who were conduits between the Mafia and CIA. These included Congressman Guy VanderJagt, former President Gerald Ford, then Governor of Pennsylvania Dick Thornburgh, Congressman Jim Traficant, Congressman Gary Ackerman, and Ronald Reagan.

Dame related to me, "When Reagan was Governor (of California), we went to Dodger (baseball) games together and sat in the Press Box. I got to know him real well and we got along. So, he and Tommy (LaSorda, Dodger manager and their mutual friend) and I would continue partying after the game. I brought him a few girls (slaves) and we did business. Really. Tommy LaSorda brought us together-you'll like him. I'll take you to meet him. We'll go to games together all the time, every chance we get. You'll love that, won't you, Baby? You like a Press Box, Baby? Dick says you do." I wasn't surprised that Dick Thornburgh had talked about his previous, perverse sexual activity with me at a baseball game back East any more than I was surprised to learn that Dante knew Thornburgh through their mutual political and baseball ties.

Dick Thomburgh was Governor of Pennsylvania during my tenure as a Presidential Model mind-controlled slave. He used his influence to bring Houston into Pennsylvania state and county fairs year after year for the purposes of cocaine and pornography distribution, as well as for prostitution of me to him on a regular basis. Thornburgh was a heavy cocaine user, and was deeply involved in CIA covert activities-particularly Project Monarch. He was a firm believer in mind control, not only for sex training and government operations, but for sports. An avid baseball fan, Thornburgh had much to share with Reagan, Dante and LaSorda,

I had been giving Handwriting Analysis lectures on NCL's Norway cruise ship (my cover for covert operation) in 1987, and Thornburgh and his friend Chicago Cubs Baseball Scout Jim Zerilla were in attendance. Afterward, Zerilla offered me a job with the Baseball Commission analyzing handwriting of their "million dollar babies" baseball players before they were signed up. Thomburgh explained that the job may not fit into my schedule. Nevertheless, we met on several occasions during the course of the cruise, always for sex, but business was discussed as well.

My programmed mind contained a "baseball computer" that was created for Reagan, and used by many including Thornburgh. LaSorda, Dante", and Zerilla. It was packed with the binds of statistics in which they were interested; the codes, keys, triggers and hand signals of certain mind-controlled baseball players. Zerilla and Thomburgh were cruising en route to the Dominican

Republic to the CIA baseball mind-control farm to scout out new slaves. They talked excitedly about the prospect of winning large sums of money through gambling on rigged games. I had been aware for years that many pro players, particularly LaSorda's Dodgers, were mind-controlled and triggered to win or lose according to their owners' bets and favors. The Dodgers, Reagan's "favorite American pastime" ball team continuously won, including the World Series during his Administration. The Mafia was in on the bet rigging, and information was passed to certain ones through Thornburgh and others as gleaned from my "baseball computer" programming.[4]

To this day I am not certain who instigated the plastic surgery to which I was forcibly subjected, but soon after meeting Reagan and Dante I was scheduled for breast implants. Perhaps it was done for pornography. Perhaps it was Reagan's preference. I tend to believe it was a combination of the two and ordered since my breasts were no longer lactating. In the first commercial porn film Reagan had directed Dante to produce in St. Thomas, U.S. Virgin Islands my breasts were still tender and swollen from silicone implant surgery.

My appearance was not the only "make over" I endured after meeting Reagan. Aquino and I were called to Washington, D.C. to revise my base core programming to override Senator Byrd's control for security reasons. Since Reagan had been shot, he took extra precautions to ensure his safety which included directing Aquino as to how he wanted rne programmed. Much to Aquino's dismay and embarrassment, Reagan admired the occult role that this Army Lt. Colonel played for mind-control traumatization purposes, as it fit in with the public promotion of religion Reagan had launched. Reagan claimed to believe that the masses were easiest to manipulate through their religion, as were mind-controlled slaves like myself.

While Reagan had Aquino in D.C., he demanded that he wear his black ritual robes to a White House party to reinforce the controlling superstitions of a few South/Central American diplomats. Aquino appeared foolish in the eyes of his peers. They knew Aquino's image was only a guise for Psychological Warfare, but his appearance at the White House in costume made Aquino look like he believed his own facade. Aquino got even with Reagan. Minutes before I was prostituted to Reagan that evening, Aquino ordered me into a closed side room where he very quickly had intercourse with me. When he finished ejaculating, he slapped me on the behind and disrespectfully said, "Take that to the Chief.

Earlier that day, Reagan instructed Aquino how to program me in keeping with "spin" programming depicted in the "How to" videos. "Program it," Reagan said, referring to me as though I were an object, "under number one. I like the number one. It's the first, the best, and it promotes confidence—like 'I've won'," I observed Aquino giving him the intellectually disgusted look he reserved for anyone with the fortitude to make a suggestion to him, but tempered his reaction by giving some thought to the request. Since the "How to" videos showed the 6th revolution to "ignite the heat of hell" for sex, no one would suspect I had sex programming under the first revolution. It would take some modification of my initial programming, but Aquino was sold on the idea. By programming me according to Reagan's instruction, Aquino would be able to provide added protection for Reagan whereby any program I was under at the time would immediately become replaced by Reagan's number one as quickly as I saw him. This effective safety measure infuriated Byrd the first time he saw me instantaneously switch out of his control in Reagan's presence.

Additionally, Reagan discussed how Aquino could use me on various military and government installations to provide "Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations" of the "latest advancements in training" by displaying the diversity of my "Presidential Model" programming. Reagan said the Hands On Demonstrations could "educate our boys in the military to the wonders of the mind-control phenomena." "Hands On" meant my sex programming would be used to "peak their interests and lock (bond) them in." After all, "entertaining the troops is a long time American tradition." Aquino did the programming, and Reagan began making arrangements for the demonstrations—which brought me back around to Dick Cheney. Cheney would be acting in the capacity of my "Commander" for the Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations and other covert operations from then on.

---

[1] Since I had no concept of time under mind control, the '80s seemed like one long day to me, whereby discerning exact dates is extremely difficult. Furthermore, I was programmed to believe that every encounter with certain individuals was "the first time". I do know that I had been conditioned and programmed in preparation for Reagan since 1978 ai NASA's Cape Canavaral in Titusville, Florida.

[2] Reagan preferred illicit pornography videos such as bestiality, while his favorite pornographic magazine was Larry Flynt's Hustler.

[3] Although Hollywood's Dante rivaled Larry Flynt for the title of "Chief Pornographer" producing video versions of Hustler's stills, Flynt was unequivocally the official White House Pornographer. Dante's covert filming of political perversion for blackmail purposes failed to gain him the international notoriety Flynt maintained through his New World Order collogues such as Presidents Reagan, Bush, and Ford; CIA Director Bill Casey; U.N. Amhossador Madeleine Albright; Senators Byrd and Specter; Congressmen Trafficant and VanderJagt; Governors Thornburgh, Blanchard and Alexander; and various World Leaders such as Prime Minister of Canada Mulroney, President of Mexico de la Madrid, and Saudi Arabian King Fahd...to name a few...

[4] Having been out of circulation since my rescue did not preclude my ability to "predict" winners according to political favors: from George Bush, Jr'S Texas Rangers to the Toronto Blue Jays' victory during the Canadian political heal of NAFTA.

CHAPTER 10

"COMMANDER" DICK CHENEY & REAGAN'S "HANDS ON MIND-CONTROL DEMONSTRATIONS"

Please note: In order to maintain the integrity of documenting my experiences using precise and photographic detail, I have recorded events and quotes as they occurred in reality. Please excuse any offensive and foul language, but this is the way Cheney presented himself,

1 was attending another White House cocktail party where, as usual, I was taken aside for a meeting and escorted to a large office. There, Reagan and Cheney were having their "before cocktail party" cognacs, and Reagan's cheeks were already flushed. He was in a hurry and quickly explained the purpose of the meeting,

"You're the kind of girl who could hold a man in line. (He was cryptically referring to the lines of military personnel I was forced to have sex with.) That's why I've selected you to tour a few Air Force Bases with the Colonel (Aquino) and demonstrate for our boys in the service what a Presidential Model is trained for, a kind of 'hands on' demonstration. But you'll have to audition for the role." Reagan drained his glass and gestured toward Cheney as he strode for the door, adding, "Do what he says. He's your commander."

It had been eight years since I had been hunted and brutalized by Cheney in Wyoming, and apparently he wanted to see how my programming had progressed before agreeing to use me in Reagan's "Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations". He grabbed me roughly by the hair and slung me onto a black leather chair, tipping my head backwards over the high studded arm. "Audition here," he snarled. Since I last saw him, 1 had undergone Wizard Of Oz Tin Man programming, which he accessed to accommodate his large, thick penis. He placed his hands on my jaw while he said, "Soon we'll have you purring like a wetl oiled machine. All of your moving parts are pivotal and gliding with ease. Melt into my hands. I'll hold your jaw to keep it from slipping while you slip through a window in lime." He then jerked my jaw out of joint, and roughly gratified himself in my throat.[1]

As he lit his cigarette, I slowly regained focus enough to realize I was in pain. The back of my head hurt from being thrust into the studs on the chair, and I slowly lifted my head. My owner, Senator Byrd, had just walked in and realized Cheney had already completed the "audition". Referring to compartmentalizing my memory via stun gun high voltage, Byrd asked, "Did you fry her?"

Cheney, 'cocksure' of himself as always, answered. "She can't have fucked all of Washington" (indicating that no one would believe me anyway, even if I did reach this point and talk). Cheney put out his cigarette and said as he went out the door, "She'll work. Tell Ronnie she'll work."

When Byrd saw that my lips were bleeding, he called Cheney a "son of a bitch" under his breath, as this damage would prevent my fulfilling other assignments that were planned for me. Byrd touched his finger to my swollen lips and tasted the blood (and Cheney) several times. Then he slapped me hard across the face, which re-aligned my jaw but caused more blood to flow down my chin. He took a box of tissues from the desk and threw it at me, the corner hitting me in the forehead. "Wipe yourself up. You're just getting started. I'll see to it you get what you've got coming to you."

Fortunately for me, Byrd had cause to return to the formal cocktail party and did not have time to brutalize me further. My face was battered, mouth torn, and my throat felt torn and stretched. I had difficulty swallowing for some time, and could not speak. I certainly was in no condition to return to the cocktail party, and was escorted out by agents/guards.

Before I could leave Washington, Byrd made good on his threat and arranged for me to meet with Cheney in a blue bedroom in a part of the White House so remote that "no one could hear my screams and moans". But Cheney implemented Oz theme "Silence" conditioning anyway as he proceeded to brutally sexually assault me.

"Byrd tells me you need a good whipping. But I'm not certain which instrument you prefer, so I brought them all." Cheney had a riding crop, a whip, and a cat-o-nine-tails laid out on the bed. He beat me quick and hard as though he were releasing his tensions rather than savoring my pain like Byrd did. I regained consciousness when Cheney slid a pillow under my neck, steered me by the hair, and bent my head back. Survival instinct kicked in when he positioned himself above my head, I hoped to satisfy him before he became deadly brutal again. But he quickly pulled out his liquid cocaine sprayer, sprayed my throat, then proceeded to get rough. At one point he yanked my head aside and asked, "Was that a tooth?" and grinned. It was imperative that 1 kept my teeth off him because, according to Aquino's programming instruction, I was subject to death if a tooth was ever felt by anyone. Cheney knew this was my programming and manipulated me with it often. I resumed "satisfying him as though my life depended upon it, because, of course, it did." This is another Aquino programming line Cheney knew and used. When he was gratified, he flopped over and slept. I had been instructed to leave immediately because Cheney absolutely did not want me near him when he slept (some insiders say he is paranoid), and I began dressing. I was escorted out.

In preparation for "running bases" for Reagan's Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations, I underwent a great deal of programming by both Aquino and Cheney. Cheney laid the ground rules while Aquino carried out Uie programming derail and performed the demonstration with me on various military and NASA installations.

Reagan wanted the demonstrations to include all programming depicted in the "How to" films, additional programming instilled since the videos were made, delivery of drugs when applicable, and sex according to Aquino's instruction with whomever/however many were present at the lecture. Cheney's personal "touch" to the demonstrations was to have me programmed to vaginally internally electric prod myself with a high voltage cylindrical cattle prod-truly an example of total mind control.

I was routinely escorted arm-in-arm "Oz style" by two agents to Cheney's downstairs office in the Pentagon. Sometimes Byrd took me in. Other times Cheney walked me through the building, particularly if we were going to his "Bunkhouse" personal quarters. Cheney's office was equipped with black leather furniture, a huge messy brown desk, massive book shelves, and an hour glass that he always used in keeping with Oz programming, to assure me that my life was on the line under his command. As a programmed MPD, I had no concept of time. The hour glass was a visible way for me to see "my time. runing out" and actually grasp the concept.

The first time I reported in, Cheney shuffled through the clutter on his desk, picked up a paper and began reading:

"Number one. I am NOT your friend, and I don't want to see you unless I order you to report in. Number two. Follow the Colonel's (Aquino) orders, as it is the chain of command. What he orders you to do, is a command from me, follow it to the letter, as though your life depends upon it, because (he looked up and grinned wickedly) of course, it does." His cold eyes bore into mine as he walked around to the front of his desk, "Any questions?"

I knew he "was NOT my friend," but he already "saw me" sexually on other occasions. I was perplexed and hesitated. Even though I remained silent, Cheney sensed my hesitation and became enraged. He got up in my face, poked my breast bone with his finger and roared, "Don't even THINK to question anything I say! There is no question as to what I do, what I think, or what I say, because 1 am absolutely above questions-especially YOURS!! Your orders are clear. Now get out of here! I have work to do!"

Throughout the next three years, U.S. Army Lt. Colonel Aquino used me in the Hands On Demonstrations on numerous Army, Navy, Air Force, and NASA installations across the U.S. according to Reagan's plan and Cheney's orders. The Top Brass privy to the demonstrations ranged from three at a time to roughly twenty. In closing, Aquino always "persuaded" them to line up while I was forced to perform sexually on command with each one. The larger groups were physically painful, while the smaller groups often involved unapproved variance from the routine, such as revealing Reagan's bestiality perversions. The wide array of "switching" my personalities that Aquino incorporated into the demonstrations, and the vast amount of high voltage and torture to which I was subjected, left me exhausted and physically devastated for days after each one of Reagan's Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations.

[1] My jaw is permanently damaged From Cheney. I have chronic TMJ.

CHAPTER 11

"POPPA" PHTLIP HABIB

My (CIA operative) handler, Alex Houston was scheduled to perform with country music entertainer Loretta Lynn at the Playboy Club in Atlantic City, New Jersey in the spring of 1985, and he admittedly did not want me there for the performance. He explained that after his show, he intended to "dress up like a carrot as lunch for the Bunnies" and I would only be in his way. But 1 had White House business to attend with a different land of "rabbit". Reagan had arranged for me to meet with his personal attache", Philip Habib (now deceased), who always played the cryptic rote of the Alice In Wonderland White Rabbit to mind-controlled slaves. Houston had no choice but to take me along once the orders came down.

CIA operative Ken Riley, the Neo-Nazi pedophile who functioned in the capacity of Loretta Lynn's road manager and Project Monarch Mind-Control handler, was Alex Houston's closest friend. Riley often made arrangements through Loretta's and Houston's shared talent agent, Reggie Maclaughlin, for all of us to travel together—particularly when it involved government covert operations such as this Playboy Club gig did. Loretta's singing career and political ties into CIA covert operations have always been synonymous. Riley escorted her in and out of the White House on numerous occasions during the Reagan Administration, By natural attrition, this put Riley in a secondary role as a "backup" handler for me as he often returned from D.C. with orders for and/or concerning me. Houston and Riley shared much: CIA covert operations, country music interests, Neo-Nazi and U.S. Government mind control, Project Monarch methodologies, slave running[1], pornography, cocaine, and pedophile activities. Kelly and Riley's young daughter were often filmed pornographically together, and endured the sexual assaults of Houston and Riley[2] together on numerous occasions.

This trip to Atlantic City provided me an opportunity to talk with Loretta while her husband, Mooney, Riley and Houston met for business. Loretta and I had so much in common that our time together had been restricted from the time we met in Minneapolis, Minnesota in 1981 and discussed our victimizations.[3] While alone in Loretta's dressing room at the Playboy Club, we discussed a wide range of topics from motherhood to the White House. We talked about Reagan in terms of his role as The Wizard Of Oz, but mostly we recited the general praises we were trained to say. We talked about Reagan's "favorite" music by Air Supply, which he had supplied to us both via Riley. Air Supply's cryptic NASA/Project Monarch theme recordings became "life and breath" to us both according to Reagan's intention, which locked in our programmed devotion for him. We discussed the recent Inauguration party Loretta had attended at the White House. (I was aware she had entertained there as Houston relayed information to Riley pertaining to his recent trip to Panama to meet with Panamanian Dictator and CIA operative Manuel Noriega in order that Riley deliver the information to Reagan during the Inauguration party.)

Loretta and I switched personalities spontaneously as we inadvertently triggered each other with the shared cryptic language to which we were accustomed. We discussed forbidden subjects including Noriega and Byrd until

Riley and Houston caught us and separated us as though we were a couple of naughty kids. I learned more than I was supposed to about Loretta while in Atlantic City, but was never permitted another opportunity to speak with her so freely.

This trip to Atlantic City was multi-purpose, which was not unusual for government operations in which I was forced to participate. I had a major cocaine transaction involving Noriega to attend at the airport; a message to deliver to Philip Habib pertaining to the Contras, and another programmed in by Habib in answer to Reagan; country music "entertainment" aspects; and prostitution to Habib according to Reagan's instruction.[4]

As the sun was setting over Atlantic City, Houston activated the Project Monarch Oz programming that was used for high level covert operations, and had me dress accordingly. I wore real and faux diamonds to signify my "Presidential Model" business role, rubies to signify my Oz programmed prostitution personality, and emeralds to signify my Oz programmed drug business. This physically indicated to my contact(s) which mode of operation 1 was under at the rime. Rarely did I wear all three indicators at once, but they certainly applied in this operation with Habib. Houston led me down the waterfront boardwalk toward the hotel casino where I was to meet Habib, walking like the Oz Scarecrow and singing, "Follow the Yellow Brick Road",

Houston led me up the elaborate escalators of the hotel to a high stakes gambling area where Habib was playing cards. The guard at the door did not let Houston through, and I was sent to Habib's table on my own. When I approached, Habib leaned back in his chair to hear while I quietly recited in Oz cryptic, "I've come such a long, long way to see you, Uncle Ronnie sent you something."

"What would that be?" he asked loudly as he leered at me and chuckled. I could not respond because 1 was under heavy program. He handed me his room key and pulled me close as he hypnotically whispered, "Use the key. Put it in the lock. Turn. Open the door, and step through a window in time." The other gamblers at Habib's table were getting impatient, and I quickly exited the gambling room.

When I arrived in Habib's room, two of his bodyguards accessed my programming. "Chiefly speaking," I began reciting Reagan's message. Arrangements were made for the two guards to pick up a fair sized shipment of cocaine the next morning that was arriving on a small military "brass" airplane. Houston and I would then board the plane and fly to D.C. where 1 would complete my part of this operation;

When Habib arrived, he ushered me into the bedroom part of the suite and began disrobing, down to his boxer shorts and gartered socks. Referring to a recent Dante porn film I was used in, he said, "1 liked your ruffled tennis panties..." then threw me a pink teddy and ruffled panties resembling the tennis outfit commanding, "Put it on." I complied. He threw me a stuffed toy cat on the pillows and explained, "That kitten is going to keep this Kitten (pointing to me) from screaming. We're going to play Tweedle Dee and Tweedle Dum." (S&M games) Habib physically resembled the violent Alice In Wonderland characters, especially in his boxer shorts. The hysterical controlled laughter that rose in my throat would only have intensified his abuse and was (fortunately) choked back by terror as he begun attaching heavy rope ties to the four posters of the bed. On command, I crawled onto the bed and lay on my stomach while he tied me so tightly I was stretched. He shoved the stuffed cat under my mouth, then entered me roughly from behind and said, "Come to Poppa". The intense pain as he brutally sodomized me was outweighed by a high voltage stun gun as he jolted me repeatedly to create the perverse jerking movements and rectal muscle constrictions he desired. I soon passed out from the blinding high voltage of his stun gun. It was nearly 3:00 AM when I stumbled out the door with the stuffed cat in my hands, nauseated, disoriented, and in extreme pain. The cool, ocean breeze helped revive me as Houston marched me back to the Playboy Club.

Houston knew I had been programmed with a message for Reagan that I would deliver the next morning in D.C. As usual, he began to access it immediately. His quick timing somehow permitted him to penetrate the electricity and programmed codes (designed to keep the information repressed) and accessed the information. Houston kept a written record of any messages he was able to access (along with photos and ledgers) for his personal profit and future blackmailing purposes, should he need to protect himself. In this case, I surmise from Houston's Panama activities, conversations I overheard between him and Riley, and my recollection of the messages he accessed, that his purpose in extracting this information was for his personal profit in backdoor dealings with Noriega. I understood it was these kinds of dealings that eventually contributed to Noriega's downfall with the CIA.

Morning arrived before I was allowed to sleep, and I felt exhausted and "spacey" as I waited by the curb for Habib's bodyguards to pick Houston and me up and take us to the airport, A small military airplane was parked in a restricted fenced in area as we arrived at the airport. The two bodyguards conducted their business and quickly loaded the trunk with the bundles of cocaine as planned. Houston and I boarded the airplane and flew to Washington, D.C. where I delivered Habib's message to Reagan. The bank transaction numbers later checked out to be a Cayman Island account number.

Philip Habib was directly involved in various DIA/CIA Operations I was forced to participate in throughout the Reagan/Bush Administrations, Although Dick Cheney maintained his role as my Commander for these Operations, Habib directed my actions where International "Diplomatic Relations" were concerned, Cheney orchestrated events from behind his desk, whereas Habib was active in the field as Reagan's attache'.

The following Operations, documented in their entirety from my experience perspective only, most likely involve other aspects to which I am not privy. In typical DIA/CIA manner, scam "need to know' information resulted in the "left hand not knowing what the right hand was doing." Nevertheless, the overall criminal purpose of Operation Carrier Pigeon and Operation Shell Game, documented herein, does not change.

[1] Riley, over time, owned several slaves.

[2] Riley, like my father, Wayne Cox, and other, remains apparently immune from prosecution for his crimes against children and humanity, as it is considered a matter of '"National Security" under the 1984 Reagan Amendment to the National Security Act.

[3] I still have the handwritten note from Loretta that prompted out forbidden conversation and I hope that someday Loretta will gain the piece/peace-of-mind that comes with rehabilitation.

[4] In the course of deprogramming, I found retrieval of this information much quicker than it would have been had Houston not accessed it previously, against government policy, and for his own personal gain.

CHAPTER 12

OPERATION CARRIER PIGEON

The term "Pigeon" is one with which I have been familiar since the early 1980s when I first began delivering messages between my "owner" Senator Byrd and Puerto Rican drug lord and CIA operative, Jose Busto. Houston had simply explained to me then, as we fed the flock of pigeons roosting at the Old San Juan Cathedral, that Pigeons were used as messengers. The DIA's U.S. Army Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino often activated my Pigeon programming during the Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations.

Dick Cheney further defined the term "Pigeon" when I learned of Operation Carrier Pigeon in the mid '80s. He said, "You have been selected from the flock (of programmed slaves) for the Carrier Pigeon Operation for the purpose of carrying messages from point A to point B as ordered. Pigeons, once they fly the coop, find no freedom in flight, but carry out their task of delivering their message from point A to point B by the shortest possible route—a direct route. I will direct your route and you will deliver messages as ordered."

But no one defined my role as a Pigeon more eloquently that President Reagan during the course of Operation Carrier Pigeon.

The cryptic "pigeon language" utilized by all participants in the operation was intermixed with The Wizard Of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, and "Genie in the Bottle" cryptic programming themes. While Pigeon meant messenger, "Carrier Pigeon" referred to the U.S. Air Force aircraft that actually transported the arms and drugs. "Pigeon Droppings" included the sometimes multi-national dispersal of the arms and drugs after they reached their destination. "Pigeon Holing" meant covering up the criminal activity. These definitions, as I understood them then and understand them now, may well include deeper, more diverse meanings than I have perceived.

Habib's favorite programming theme was Alice In Wonderland, Through The Looking Glass due to its international recognition and relation to the ultra-effective NASA mirror, time, and infinity space programs for instantly dissociating programmed participants. He habitually spoke in Alice In Wonderland cryptic language, and even used it for sex as was evidenced by his Tweedle Dee and Tweedle Dum brutal games of perversion. Due to Habib's orchestration of Operation Carrier Pigeon, this CIA covert operation was littered with Wonderland mirror themes from beginning to end.

My CIA handler, Alex Houston had just returned from a brief solo trip "to Florida" with an elaborately wrapped box. "it's from a friend of yours," he told me as he handed me the box. "Let's go into the bedroom so you can unwrap it and see it through the "Looking Class'." Cryptically triggered, I mechanically walked to the bedroom as ordered.

I removed the silver metallic bow and wrappings from the box and Found an expensive, elegant dress made of an unusual shimmery silver fabric. A sheet of plain white stationary written in Philip Habib's recognizable shaded blue script lay on top of the dress. It read:

The heat you radiated when we last met
melted my mirror.
I had it made into a dress just for you,
cut to accentuate your figure

so that when you melt into it,
You lose yourself into
the pool of liquid mirror.
Step into the Looking Glass
Sink deep within its pool
and straddle dimensions in time.
I'll see you there...
along with my friends.

It was signed: "Passionately, Phil Habib," with his name written upside down under a line as though it were a mirror reflection.

Houston knew there would be a note, and ordered "Let me see your note," snatching it from my hands. He gestured toward the dress. "Go ahead and try it on while I read this note. Now let's see, what does it say? 'Come to Poppa'?"

I took the dress from the box. It did not feel like anything I'd ever felt before. It was cold like satin, but thin like silk. I started crying quietly, afraid that Habib would somehow show up if I had it on.

"Put it on and I'll zip you in," Houston said as he took another note from his wallet and read it as I undressed:

There's a pair of magic shoes to wear with your dress,
Something in-lightening,
to transport you faster than the ol' ruby slippers (Oz)
The shoes, like the dress, are made just for you,
and when you wear them you'll be fit for a King,
I'll send them for you at the appropriate lime.

Houston tucked the note back in his wallet, "See. You're not going anywhere now. You'll meet him at the White House when you have shoes to wear with it. Just slip it on."

I did. Houston accessed Habib's Wonderland brutal sex programming for his own gratification. Afterwards I hung the dress in Kelly's closet with my other trigger-significant clothes; out of sight, out of mind. Until the shoes arrived...

Habib "sent the shoes for me" soon afterward. They were shiny black with what appeared to be silver lightening bolts down the high heels and sides. In place of dinner thai night, Houston gave me a "Wonderland Wafer" (MDHMA-XTC CIA designer drug "Ecstasy"). The wafer, like all those supplied by Habib, bore his trademark that read "Eat me". I began to prepare for the night out as instructed. Houston zipped me into the dress, and turned me to face the mirror. As I slipped into the shoes, Houston took another note from Habib out of his pocket and read:

Something in-lightening to tranceport you faster
than the ol' ruby slippers.
Click your heels together (I obeyed) and be there in a snap.
Electrifying-with the rumble of thunder.
Boiling through time
So you won't be late for a very important date.

Houston hit me with his stun gun and I passed out. He then drove me to the Nashville airport where I boarded a small plane to Washington, D.C.

I found myself at the White House with Byrd, attending another small cocktail party of about 20-30 people. After we spoke with Reagan, Byrd pointed me in the direction of Philip Habib and sent me over to him. My eyes were locked on Habib's as he hypnotically said:

Melt into your melted mirror
for an electrifying ride.
Look deep into the black
of my melting mirror eyes,
See you reflecting me, reflecting you,
reflecting me--you-me--you-me
until we melt together and sink deep
into the other side.

Habib took me to a quieter spot in an adjoining room and held up another wonderland Wafer as he said in Alice In Wonderland cryptic, "Welcome to Wonderland, Kitten. This is a very important date. I haven't time to explain.? He gave me the wafer and continued, "Eat it, and I'll take you through the door."

Habib took me by the hand and led me to the doorway of another room. It was a dining room of sorts where an informal array of guests was gathered. As soon as Habib appeared in the doorway, King Fahd of Saudi Arabia quickly excused himself from the table and approached. He was wearing a multicolored robe and headwear with a black-brown rope band. I was instantly repulsed by his "wicked" lecherous gaze, I stepped back into the other room in fear. Habib introduced him. "This is one of 'my friends' I mentioned in my letter." I robotically responded, "It's a pleasure to meet you" and extended my hand as taught in Charm School. Fahd bent over to kiss my hand. As he did, his evil black eyes bore into mine as he softly said, "Your beauty warms my embers. See them glowing deep within the darkness of my eyes-igniting into flame-black flame." He laughed wickedly at the effect of his use of NASA hypnotic conditioning,

Habib slapped him on the shoulder as though they knew each other well and there were no formalities between them and asked, "Am I right? Is that fit for a King?'"

The three of us went into another room that appeared to be a guest bedroom that Habib was occupying. He closed the door and told me, "Diplomatic relations are very important. You know the old saying 'when in Rome do as Romans do'. Well, he's a King. Get on your knees. His wish is your command. Satisfy his deepest wishes. It's your turn for a magic carpet ride, so turn your Genie free."

Fahd was sitting in a chair by a coffee table. As I knelt on the carpel in front off him, his piercing black eyes seemed to stab into my brain like swords. I could not turn away. He stroked my neck with his index finger, activating oral sex programming. "I have heard about you and am in-tent on having you." Somehow he found the slit in his robes and parted it as he continued, "Come into my tent- A feast has been spread for you." He spread his legs and exposed his penis—one of the nastiest I had ever seen—like a black nightcrawler worm that smelled and tasted strongly of spice. Habib watched as I carried out my orders, much to the pleasure of Fahd,

Then Habib went to the chest of drawers and began pulling out his electric prod and bondage equipment as he explained. "Now let me introduce you to my other 'friend'. I need to bottle up a message with your Genie and send it out to sea. You know what to do. Begin undressing now."

I did as I was told and lay on my stomach on the bed while Habib sodomized me. He used his electric prod equipment and programmed me with a message to deliver to General Manuel Noriega while on an upcoming NCL cruise.

I was at sea on board an NCL cruise ship bound for their private island in the Bahamas, Stirrup Cay, which was to be my rendezvous point with Noriega, "Bottled up" in my mind through the recent 'Genie in the Bottle' programming, was a cryptic message from King Fahd to Noriega. It was a moonless night whereby the Caribbean waters appeared as black as the night. I could not distinguish the sky from the sea in accordance with NASA hypnotic conditioning. T gazed, totally entranced, from the rear of the cruise ship. Houston used the opportunity to hypnotically enhance Habib's previous programming, while traumatizing me with the threat of being thrown overboard. The thought of "treacling water in the inky blackness while the lights of the ship fade further-and further--away-until all is black and I sink-to the depths of the sea" did not seem so horrible in tight of the fact that I was to be the bearer of bad news to Noriega in the morning.

Upon arrival to NCL's Stirrup Cay, Houston and I began our usual walking trek to the farthest end of the island where the CIA operations radio station and equipment were located. In a hidden cove on the island's back side was a smaller island of sufficient size to conceal Noriega's personal yacht, anchored behind it. As Houston and I made our way along the cove's beach, we came upon an old wooden boat half buried in the sand and a man sitting beside it. Because I was in a different personality, I did not recognize the man as my contact who ran the Stirrup Cay control lower for drug trafficking and covert activity. 1 asked him how he got there. He began his charade, which, due to the depths of my trance, I believed in its literal text, while Houston heard quite a different story:

"I shipwrecked." John (the name I called him) pointed to the boat half buried in the sand, "That's all that is left of my boat."

I asked, "Why haven't you been rescued?"

He cryptically replied, "I sent a message in a bottle and I expect a response real soon. Good thing I had these coconuts (he was carving one) and all that 'sugar' in the hull to sustain me."

Houston laughed, immediately realizing that 'sugar' meant cocaine and said, surprised, "In the hull?" as he bent down to look inside the wreck. I looked, too. There was more white cocaine and (dark) cocaine paste than I could mule (carry) in one walking haul, even wilh both of my tote bags full. But I could not comprehend reality in the midst of this charade, and therefore commented that he was fortunate that both the "white and brown sugar" had made it through. the wreck.

Houston said, "So, they cast you away, huh?"

My contact laughed and sniffed, "Yeah, cast me away with all that 'sugar'— that's nothing to sniff at." He looked up as Houston informed him a speedboat was approaching, 1 looked out across the cove beyond the little island and finally noticed Noriega's yacht. A "black mirror" finish speed boat, which matched the upper smoke glass windows of Noriega's yacht, was approaching. John told me, "Probably has something to do wilh that message I sent. Help me wave him in." I did. He handed me a coconut and, using it as a scramble and excuse for me to join him on Noriega's yacht, persuaded me to board the speed boat with him. Houston stayed behind to guard the cocaine that had obviously already been delivered from Noriega's yacht.

When we pulled up to the rear of the yacht, I was helped on board by Noriega's armed guards. I noticed there did not seem to be any big parties going on as was customary, and Noriega seemed unusually abrupt and businesslike. He was not drunk this time. Upon command from John, I delivered Fahd's message:

"1 am under command to deliver a message from King Fahd. The Caribbean is becoming volatile. Trouble in Jamaica, Trouble in Cuba, Even trouble in Panama. Dominican Republic must be launching point for missiles and artillery that are being channeled though Cuba. Concluding arms deal, Carrier Pigeon must be detained until all transactions are cleared. Banco de Panama to receive Contra Aid after all steps leading to me have been swept away by the shifting sands (of Lime), and all pigeon droppings pigeon holed. Our business is concluded. Let us part on friendly terms,"

My personal perceptions of history as it happened in reality remains somewhat distorted, as I had no access to "news" outside of my mind-comrolled environment. In order to keep my memory retrieval free of contamination, I completed the deprogramming process before "educating" myself through books And news. I have since learned that what was reported as news was often distorted propaganda, and many events were never reported at all. Therefore, I do not know of the "troubles in Jamaica and Cuba" to which King Fahd referred. I was aware, however, that due to outside scrutiny, Houston had recently met with Jamaican officials in Kingston pertaining to ceasing the long standing criminal covert operations. As for Cuba, 1 only knew that I was no longer meeting with my Cuban contact. In Panama, I knew Noriega himself was the object of controversy. The "arms deal" was the final stage of Operation Carrier Pigeon where the planes were to wait in Saudi Arabia until all bank transactions were cleared and the load was ready for disbursement. Saudi Arabian King Fahd would then fund the Contras via Noriega for Reagan after all evidences had been properly covered up—just as he had done in Afghanistan. After the shipment, there would be no further deals through Noriega involving Fahd, because Noriega could no longer be trusted. Besides, Fahd had increased diplomatic relations with Mexico for covert operations, and Iran-Contra was just beginning to heat up.

Noriega did not seem to be upset by the news of losing Saudi Arabian business, although he was somber and took some time to respond. His translator was working over some complex computer equipment after I delivered the message. I left Noriega's yacht with John and a brief message for Dick Cheney at the Pentagon.

Back on Stirrup Cay, Houston was anxiously waiting to begin transporting the cocaine back to the party area of the island. There, NCL workers were cleaning up from the cruise ship's beach party cookout, which was NCL's excuse to stop the ship. After I muled the first heavy load of cocaine in my tote sacks, Houston approached one worker familiar with the drug operation and informed him we had a heavier load than usual and needed to make another trip. The worker directed us to a huge empty food container used for transporting cook out supplies from the ship, and gave us the key. We locked the first load in the container, and I took my empty tote sacks, plus another straw bag back. for another haul. With the second load, Houston even carried some cocaine: himself. We had to run quite a distance through the island woods in an attempt to make it back to the ship's shuttle before scheduled departure time. When we arrived, the beach was nearly deserted, as all the passengers had been taken back to the ship. All that remained was the food container and the NCL worker who was hurrying us onto the shuttle and on board the ship, which was waiting for us.

When the cruise ship docked at the Port of Miami, Puerto Rican drug lord and CIA operative Jose Busto was acting as a U.S. Immigrations officer (commissioned by the Drug Enforcement Agency through the CIA), which he often did for NCL. Busto helped us clear ship undetected with the large load of cocaine. The drugs were packed into suitcases, then loaded into Houston's specially made motor home which was parked in NCL's guarded, restricted parking lot. Most of the cocaine was dropped off as usual at Warner Robbins Air Force Base in Macon, Georgia, to be distributed to destinations unknown to me. The money generated by the sale of cocaine was supposedly used to fund a major arms shipment into Saudi Arabia. These weapons were reportedly distributed among several neighboring countries. The profits were then relayed into Reagan's Contra Cause.

A large quantity of cocaine was retained by Houston for his own use and delivery for personal profit through his country music industry contacts. Some of the cocaine would be delivered by me to Saudi Arabian Ambassador, Prince Bandar Bin Sultan, Fahd's own "Homing Pigeon".

I carried a message from Warner Robbins Air Force Base in addition to the message from Noriega agreeing to Fahd's terms back to Dick Cheney at the Pentagon. Cheney then prepared me for the final phase of the operation. This was a meeting with Prince Bandar (who Cheney, Houston, and others referred to as Sultan) in Nashville, Tennessee where he often visited corrupt friends. There, I would relay a message of agreement to Fahd's terms between Noriega and the U.S., as well as confirm all Air Force flights (Carrier Pigeons) and bank transactions. In turn, Fahd's "Homing Pigeon" would relay the messages to Fahd so that the seemingly long running drugs for arms deals would draw to a successful conclusion.

Dick Cheney cautioned me, "Sultan will be in Nashville having dinner with friends at the Stockyard." (The Stockyard was a popular country music dinner club known for its CIA criminal covert activity involvement.) Cheney glanced at the list on his desk and continued, "Among others, those friends would be (Mayor) Fulton[1] and (Sheriff) Thomas.[2] They are considered a threat to the operation. They're not discrete. Thomas in particular is not to be trusted--he's an ass and too crooked. So, Sultan must leave the table before the message is delivered. Any questions? Good."

I certainly had no questions this time. I did not need him to caution me about Nashville's Mayor Richard Fulton whom Houston had prostituted me to, and Sheriff Fate Thomas. I had known the pair for years, had been cautioned about them before, and had no respect for them at all. Together Thomas and Fulton had indiscreetly perpetuated the total corruption that had permeated Nashville's $2.8 billion country music industry, which ran the city of Nashville. They ran the city's business from a bar—the Stockyard-while they drank and openly used cocaine. If I had had the capacity to wonder, I would have wondered what a "Homing Pigeon" so critical to the conclusion of this international criminal covert operation was doing with such low level sleaze. As it was, I could only sense relief at not having to deal with them, too.

Prince Bandar Bin Sultan's reputation for sex and drugs was widely known in Nashville. But much of my information pertaining to his activities came from one of my closest Project Monarch friends. She is an entertainer's daughter who was prostituted regularly to Sultan when he was in town, which was often.

When Cheney was through with me, Byrd escorted me to the White House to see Reagan, who also cautioned me about the Prince. Reagan was aware of Habib's having activated me sexually with King Fahd, and made it clear that my scheduled rendezvous with Prince Bandar would not include the usual sex.

Reagan joked in Byrd's presence, "Birds (Byrds) may well be eaten by a Kitten. (Reagan's pet name for me), but not Homing Pigeons. Homing Pigeons taste foul." Byrd laughed. Reagan continued, "Homing Pigeons have one purpose. Passing messages. Throughout history world leaders have passed messages to and from each other by way of pigeons. Messages that have set the course of events that have altered the course of history. Homing Pigeons are loyal and dedicated to their task, flying over seas, yet never pausing long enough to even quench their thirst-giving no thought to their own needs. When a pigeon is released, he takes a direct course to his destination. Dedicated to delivering the very messages on which history was founded. Why, even Noah relied on a pigeon to traverse the seas to bring back a message of hope. It is your duty to attach an added message to the Horning Pigeon-one of peace, from our homeland lo his: One from the President of the United States to King Fahd of Saudi Arabia, ... (Omitted due to international ramification.)"

Byrd was visibly inspired by the speech. I was literally saved by the bell from another boring, long winded recitation that Reagan had just inspired in Byrd when Cheney telephoned me back to his office. It was still morning and Cheney had appeared very busy, hurried, and irritable when I had seen him just a short time earlier. My heart was heavy in expectant anticipation of the physical and sexual brutality Cheney's moods normally incited. Yet I was relieved to escape the torturous "picture painting" competition that experience had taught me Byrd and Reagan were about to embark on. My heart lightened when my escort left me at Cheney's office and I noticed his foul mood had changed dramatically.

"I understand you ordered me to report in, Sir." Cheney looked up from his desk where he was shuffling through papers and tying up loose ends before leaving his office.

"Sit down." he ordered, "I just got word that the Genie in the Bottle 'Cast-away' Operation is complete and I intend to pop a cork or two of my own in celebration of its successful conclusion. I have time on my hands and want you to join me. The bunkhouse is being prepared..." Cheney apparently thought of something, went to the door and told the guy who had escorted me, "Make sure there's some Wonderland Wafers in the bunkhouse," He walked to his desk, picked up the phone and said, "I'm outta here" into it and slammed it down. I followed Cheney out the door, and we turned to the right rather than the left outside his office and walked to his personal quarters referred to as the bunkhouse. It was decorated in Cheney's western style in browns and tans, with leather furniture. There was no food (maybe some nuts stashed somewhere), but plenty of bottles of alcohol.

I was swollen and bleeding vaginally, the bottom of my shirt was soaked in blood, and my belly hurt deep inside when my escort finally came for me early the next morning. Staying around Cheney while he slept was as deadly a mistake as removing his clothes or questioning him-it was forbidden. This time he broke his own rule, and did not even punish me for it when morning arrived. He had spent so many hours drinking alcohol and using his enormous penis as an assault weapon that he passed out shortly before my escort arrived. As I walked into the hall, I doubled over from pain. My escort turned to Cheney and remarked, "Christ, Cheney".

Cheney lifted his head and proudly slurred, "Now you know why they call it 'Dick'".

Back in Tennessee, my CIA-paid gynecologist, who knew I was under mind control, covered for my abusers as usual and wrote me a prescription for swelling and pain, I was still in pain and ill from my exposure to Dick Cheney and his high voltage torture and brutal sex when Houston drove me to Nashville's Stockyard Nightclub for my rendezvous with Prince Bandar Bin Sultan.

A waitress led me to the Saudi Arabian Ambassador's table where he was drinking with Mayor Fulton, Sheriff Thomas, and Metro Police Chief Joe Casey.[3] I approached him and said, "If you please, Sir (Oz), I am under command to deliver a message to you from the Pentagon. There is to be no horse play (sex games). We must get down to business." There was laughter from everyone at the table. I continued. "My message is brief and I only need a moment of your time away from your dinner."

The Prince's face grew more serious and we left the table. He touched the waitress" arm and she pointed to a door across the hall that ted to an empty room. We stood just inside the room, and I quickly delivered ray Pigeon cryptic message:

"The Carrier Pigeon (Air Force airplane) will take flight... and will keep its promise (the agreed load) while all transactions (both bank and distribution) are procured through the designated diplomatic channels (Habib.) Your bonus, one crystal, three cuts await you. The President of the United States gives his word to King Fahd: ..."

He told me his driver would meet me out from of the Stockyard and instructed me to put the cocaine in the back, I left the building to rejoin Houston at the car in order that the cocaine could be delivered. A white stretch limousine was pulled up in front of the Stockyard; Chief Casey's assigned Metro Police Officers guarded the area, and the cocaine was transferred into the back seat of the Prince's limo. Houston and I immediately left the area. My part in Operation Carrier Pigeon was concluded.

---

[1] Richard Fulton and his bank were under Federal investigation as of 1991.

[2] Fate Thomas is currently serving time in a Federal penitentiary for bribery and extortion.

[3] Recently under Federal investigation for corruption.

CHAPTER 13

OPERATION SHELL GAME

Sometime prior to the death of CIA Chief William Casey, I was in Washington, D.C. for a briefing on Operation Shell Game. Iran-Contra was politically explosive at this time, and U.S. Senator Allen Simpson (R.Wyoming) had a plan to set Panamanian General Manuel Noriega up to take the fall for cocaine aspects of the investigation. Noriega had become yet another source of embarrassment to the Reagan-Bush Administration. The need to convince him to he discrete about his involvement in U.S. criminal covert activities had reached alarming proportions. Noriega had been an intricate part of arming the Nicaraguan Contras for Reagan, as well as an international hub in the cocaine operations that funded the black budgets for ultra secret projects such as Project Monarch. My CIA operative handler, Alex Houston's shadowy back door drug dealings with Panama further exemplified the kind of "honor among thieves" rules that Noriega routinely and openly violated. My role, my "Contra-bution," was but a small part of the over all picture. Nevertheless, Operation Shell Game was one of the more significant and informative covert operations in which J had been forced lo participate.

My role began one cold, rainy day when Houston dropped me off at the Washington Monument where I was met by two agents, who triggered me to go with them by flashing their IDs. They escorted me 10 the large White House uffice where T had first met Cheney to "audition" for the Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations some years before. As usual, Cheney and Reagan were drinking, this time to excess for so early in the day. Reagan's cheeks were flushed and his voice slurred as he greeted me, "Well, hello, Kitten. Dick and I were just discussing the plight of the Contras since this Ollie North thing broke out." Cheney's alcoholic foul mood was immediately apparent. He was agitated as usual at Reagan's informality in my presence. Apparently I had come in during a serious discussion about tran-Contra as Reagan's mood was more somber than I had ever seen it. He took a drink and looked out the window. "Americans believe in their country-baseball, hot dogs, and Ollie North." Cheney snorted a laugh at what seemed to be an ongoing joke between them about "hot dogs and Ollie North". Reagan continued, "And I believe in the Contra cause and all that we have accomplished. And I'm damn proud of it! It's not 'Law and Order'. No, it's Order and then Law. Order must come first because without it, law would be ineffective. Sometimes we must rise above and beyond the law to establish that order (he glanced seriously at Cheney)—or a new (world) order. As President, that is my responsibility. Establish order through democracy by spreading democracy throughout the world. With order, there is peace. Right now in Nicaragua the people are crying out for democracy, for peace, and I cannot turn a deaf ear to them. Not even in view of Ollie North's troubles. True Americans know he is a hero. That's why we must rise above the law to establish order by fulfilling the wishes, the hopes, the dreams of those brave men fighting for freedom by doing our part in spreading democracy." Reagan was gesturing into the air, apparently lost in the poetry of his own ranting.

Cheney lost patience and jumped from his chair to sneer at me and poke his finger in my chest while he said, "Order is all that matters, and you're going to follow mine."

Reagan turned back to us. "I'm glad you brought that up, pick. Kitten, you have a role in establishing this order With the same patriotic passion that burned in your bosom for the freedom fighters of Afghanistan, you will carry out your orders for the Contras. Dick will define your role and provide you with all you need and all you need to know from the ol' Wizard's bag in the basement (Oz programming in Cheney's Pentagon office). So, you run along now and do as he commands."

Senator Allen Simpson was in Cheney's office when we arrived. Cheney flipped over the hour glass to let me know my life was on the line according to Oz programming. Cheney gestured to Simpson and began, "Operation Shell Game is Simpson's brain child, so he's master of the game and he's going to teach you the rules. The objective of the game is to see 'who's left holding the goods". Pointing to Simpson, he commanded, "Listen to 'im",

Simpson stood up and began cryptically talking. "You are going on a 'Princes' Cruise' (Noriega's Yacht). The Baby's Ear Shell is your pass key. I will provide you with yours at the appropriate time." He took the "shell" out of his wallet. It was approximately 1 1/2 inches long and was translucent pink, shaped and detailed exactly like a baby's car. Simpson noticed the relief cross my face as I realized it was not a real baby's ear. He smiled. "These are but empty shells of the life they once possessed. Like you are-empty and void of life. A shell. In one ear and out the other. I have your ear now LISTEN, If they hold the pass key, you listen. When you hold the pass key, you speak. In one ear and out the other-never again to be retrieved,"

He returned the shell to his wallet and continued, "Listen. Follow orders. The Colonel (Aquino) will be there and you will follow his orders and provide a demonstration Hands On style for the General (Noriega). It will be different, yet the same, so follow the Colonel's orders closely."

Cheney roughly grabbed my hair and pulled my head back, got right in my face and said, "Or, I'll get her, my pretty, your little girl. Follow orders as though her life depends upon it because it does. Or the next baby's ear will be taken from Kelly. So listen. When you see the baby's ear, you will listen," He spun my head in the direction of the hourglass as he released my hair. He was sneering and Simpson looked as though he thought Cheney overdid it. I was relieved it would not be my job to "soothe Cheney's savage beast" sexually that day.

Cheney look me back to the White Rouse office where we had started. He and Reagan shared another drink. Reagan patted my hair back in place where Cheney had pulled it, which made me feel safe somehow since I could not comprehend that he was behind my ordeal with Cheney. Reagan switched my personality to where I no longer regarded him as "Chief," but instead as "Uncle Ronnie", He did this by reaching into his Jelly Belly jar and giving me one. Certain colors and flavors triggered certain programmed responses. Uncle Ronnie must have had other "Kittens" conditioned to the military green watermelon ones because he kept an excess amount of these in his numerous jars.

Cheney said, "How in the hell you drink cognac and eat those goddamn jelly beans is beyond me.

Reagan responded, "Well, Dick, you don't have to have a Jelly Belly if you don't want to. I was just giving one to Kitten, here."

"Damn right I don't have to have a Jelly Belly, but you're going to have a jelly belly if you keep that shit up." Cheney finished his drink.

Reagan chuckled, "Now, you know I watch my figure.."

"Figure this," Cheney interrupted. "What are you going to do with the Contras?" Cheney slammed down his drink and headed for the door,

"Exactly what I've been doing." Reagan turned to me, "C'mon, Kitten, Let's take a walk, I need my evening constitutional,"

Reagan was in no mood for sex, and it was a relief to be away from Cheney, He took me outside for a walk in his "Secret Garden," where he said he goes to "think and solve the world's problems". We walked down a cement path he referred to as a "Yellow Brick Road". After sitting quietly on a cement bench for awhile, he said, "If you follow the Yellow Brick Road, it leads right to the Wizard's lair-the Oval Office, How would you like to see where Uncle Ronnie really solves the world's problems?" I felt like a little girl with her daddy going to see where he works with no real concept of the experience. The guard at the Oval Office door ensured I was returned to my escorts when Reagan was through "sneaking me in" to his office. I was then taken back to Washington Monument where Houston was waiting in the car as though T had never been gone at all.

Operation Shell Game brought me back in touch with former President Herald Ford early one misty fall morning. Ford's continued relationships with my abusers had given me cause to remain in touch with him throughout the years; particularly since he and my father were still jointly active in the Michigan organized crime drugs and pornography operation that had launched me into Project Monarch so many years before.

Ford was about to embark on a game of golf with my father on the otherwise "Closed for the Season" golf course next to my father's expensive house in affluent Grand Haven, Michigan. My brother, Mike, was with my father and me as we rendezvoused at the Club House with Ford and the Secret Service personnel assigned to him. Ford told my father he would "catch up with him and Mike at the third hole" and to "leave us to our business". I was maintained in "Silence" until Ford and I were out of range of the Secret Service men, and I recited a message from Reagan instilled prior to the Shell Game,

"If you please, Sir," I began in Oz cryptic, "I have a message for you from Uncle Ronnie. It's a 'humming telegram' (oral sex game) to see if you agree that our National Anthem should be changed to America the Beautiful," (Reagan was actually serious about changing our National Anthem.)

Ford responded, "We may have to see about that later. First, we've got some other 'holes' to attend before the sun gets up any higher,"

As he teed up his golf ball I asked, "Do you still golf a lot now that you're no longer President?"

Re said very seriously, "I golfed a lot when I was President. But now, I just keep up with events from the golf course. I've earned the privilege of monitoring the progress of America's Freedom Train at my leisure." He turned to face me, "Do you play golf yet?"

"Very well, Sir, when permitted." (Houston always ensured he won.) Ford was openly amused by my answer and handed me his club. "Give it your best shot." I outshot him the first stroke and his amusement vanished. I gave him back his golf club as ordered.

At the end of the second hole, Ford said, "I'd like to have a word with you," He took me over to some trees off the fairway and turned to me with his arms crossed over his bulging chest, raised himself up taller, and bore his shark-like eyes into mine. "Lend me your ear", I had the Baby's Ear Shell with me as ordered, took it out of my back pocket and handed it to Ford. He began talking as though I were a machine and he was dictating a message. "Take this message to Dick Cheney, Pentagon. The Mob has agreed to transfer the $2.3 million (porn profits) to the Bank of Credit and Commerce International. Let's pool our money now and we'll be swimming in it. This operation has been an enterprising success. Let's keep it that way. Cease agreement with Panama. All Mexican channels are implemented (cocaine and heroin). Hail to the Chief." He took a step away and added, "And you (he poked my chest like Cheney) lake care of my friend, Dick. Here..." he handed me the Baby's Ear. For meanness he added "over and out," and did the sign of the (satanic) horns at my eyes which deepened my trance significantly since 1 had been conditioned so heavily to this by Byrd.

After he hit the golf ball, he asked, "How's my friend, Allen Simpson, these days?"

"Very well, Sir." I noticed he bristled as be missed another shot. His temper was rising. When he wanted to add more to his message, he took out his frustration on me,

"Gimme that fucking shell." He wiggled his fingers at me. That wasn't the pass phrase and I did not trigger. He grew louder and more agitated, "Where's that Baby's Ear." I still could not respond. "Lend me your goddamn ear!!" he roared at me. Close enough.

"Yes, Sir," I responded meekly as I dropped it in his hand.

He proceeded. "Tell Simpson to take care of my friend Dick Thomburgh. Get back to me on it." He returned the ear. We could see my father waiting at the next hole and Ford said he might "bean him one" with his next stroke. He swung, but missed my father.

When we met up with my father at the third hole. Ford set up his ball first, of course, and waving his club at me said, "Get out of here before I get teed off," My father pointed the way with a thumb over his shoulder and let out a shrill whistle. My brother, Mike, walked me through the bushes and back to my father's house.

My sister, Kelli Jo, was waiting tearfully for my return. She was MPDed and horrified of Ford. She and my little sister, Kimmy, and I had all been forced to sexually gratify Ford just prior to a special ordered porn film titled Three Little Kittens whereby his semen was filmed "anonymously". I was aware that Ford had initiated both of my sisters the way he had me in Cedar Springs, and they, too, dreaded his brutal and degrading sexuality. I hurried past my sister to make sure my daughter, Kelly, was OK. Cheney's threat to her life was ringing loud in my ear.

I did not see the Baby's Ear shell spirt until Kelly and I arrived in Bradenton Beach, Florida. I drove the motor home into Florida with Houston and Kelly along, and dropped Houston off at the Tampa airport, since he did not have a role in Operation Shell Game. He "had business at Boys Town in Omaha, Nebraska" where the wayward boys were being traumatized and sexually abused in accordance with the Catholic involvement in Project Monarch. Survivor Paul Bonacci of the infamous Franklin Cover-up case has named Alex Houston as one of his abusers there in Boys Town. Houston often went to Boys Town or other similar "vacation resorts" while I was on covert government business. Kelly and I drove on to Bradenton, where we checked into a participating campground on the bay across from "MacDill Air Force Base. It, too, was "Closed for the Season".

The recreation room of the campground was actually a harmonics programming operation, and the offices were filled with elaborate computers consistent with high-level CIA operations. The day Kelly and I met with Senator Simpson, I had been instructed by campground workers to drive to nearby Santa Maria Island where we were to collect unusual shells. Kelly and I were on the "wild side" of the island hunting sand dollars because they had "BIRDS" in them. As we walked through the shallow water, Kelly scared up a Stingray, which sent us screaming for the shore. Simpson was on the beach laughing, looking out of place in his cagney hat and grey suit with legs rolled up and polished shoes in hand. He seemed familiar with the beach. When we reached the shore, he struck up a conversation about shells. It wasn't until he told us about the Baby's Ear Shell and opened his wallet to retrieve it that I triggered and knew who he was. As he look it out, he also flashed his ID signalling us to go with him. Considering Kelly, he had slipped a shell into the sand for her to find that looked like an eye in a spiral, He used this as a hypnotic induction to control her, comparing it to Bush's Eye in the- Sky.

Simpson showed me the shell in his hand and began, "You. You alone will take the shuttle boat to your Princes' cruise. It will leave the dock from your own backyard (Oz) at 7:30 pm. Dress appropriately (Houston had ensured the proper attire had been packed). You will be escorted to the conference room and on into the lop deck. You will see as you approach the ship (Noriega's yacht) the top deck is surrounded in black mirrors. Look deep into the mirrors; that is where you will be. And where I will be when next we meet," We walked a little further up the beach to where the motor home was parked and, referring to the Baby's Ear, Simpson said, "They're very rare indeed. This one is the right ear. You must go to the other side of the island, out Long Boat Key, to find its match. The Colonel (Aquino) has the baby's left ear and will meet you at the Pier at 4 pm. Stop at the little market on the corner and call. Then it's just down the street a little ways."

I followed instructions robotically. Kelly and I watched from the pier as four big, armed (with machine guns) emotionless (programmed?) guards scanned the area as Aquino emerged from a car. Kelly said, "Mom, let's go". I remembered Cheney's threat and assured her I would protect her, though I could not comprehend from what.

When Aquino approached with two Dobermans on leashes, I told him Simpson had sent me there looking for the left baby's ear. He opened his hand to reveal "all that was left-the baby's ear-the dogs had devoured and consumed the rest of the baby." It was bloody, ragged, and bluish rather than pink. Whether or not this was an actual baby's ear, the impact was the same. I put Kelly further behind me away from the dogs. I stood traumatized and entranced, ready for command. Aquino instructed me in full detail on the night's activities, and that I was to leave Kelly with campground personnel until my return.

That evening I was taken lo Noriega's yacht in the bay via a small motorboat. I triggered and tranced further as I approached the familiar "black mirrored" yacht according to plan. I was helped onto the back of the yacht by Panamanian "palace" guards who kept me there at gunpoint until 1 was cleared and my Baby's Ear pass key accepted. I was escorted past the Air Force Base officials, their wives, drug people, and the vast amounts of cocaine laid out for them. I recognized several of the guests, including Oliver North and Puerto Rican drug lord Jose Busto. I was led up the stairs to the conference room where Aquino, Noriega, and Simpson were waiting. Simpson! I realized I must "be on the other side of the black mirror" and I gazed out into the darkness.

Simpson spoke softly, "You're on the other side of the black mirror now (NASA programming), peering though the blackness out to sea. Sea of black. Riding on a sea of black, drifting, drifting from the winds. Deep into the blackness. Drifting through the sands of time. Black sands, yielding shells—such as this Baby's Ear." He pressed it into my hand signaling it was time for me to speak, I addressed Noriega,

"If you please, Sir, I have a message from the President of the United Stales of America: The successes we have enjoyed in our shared endeavors are now history in the making, whose course cannot be altered-regardless of the imminent lifting of the veil by well intentioned do-gooders. As this veil is lifted, it may shed light on you. So you must have your house in order, as does Ollie North, and cease any and all detectable activity I will do my best to keep you under shield and out of view if you comply with these orders and cease all detectable activity at once."

Noriega reacted as anticipated, obviously insulted by me message. In the ensuing moment of chaos, Aquino hypnotically waved his hands in front of Noriega and dramatically spread out his satanic black cape (worn for impact on Noriega's superstitions) which appeared to fill the room. Noriega all but bowed to him as Aquino's control over him was complete.

Aquino's manner was side-show-style rather than the usual somber tones used on Military bases for the Hands On demonstrations. "General, for vour entertainment and in respect and appreciation of your successful enterprising 'Contra-bution', the Chief has sent his Presidential Model to demonstrate the latest technology in mind-control advancements. With the flip of a switch, this Pigeon becomes a Kitten (I began undressing). Quite a different animal."

Because of Noriega's superstitious beliefs, the whole idea of switching personalities apparently frightened him. I know Noriega believed whole heartedly in mind control, but could not grasp the concept of multiple personalities (which I now believe he perceived as demonic possession). Therefore, he did not adhere to the idea of one slave being trained for both business and pleasure. Aquino, whom Noriega already perceived as a "devil" working for Reagan, was manipulating his beliefs masterfully. The impact of this demonstration and Operation would prove to be Psychological Warfare of the highest order.

Aquino ordered me to lie on the bed and invited Noriega to look closer at what the "Wizard"-"his Chief (Reagan) - could create. Noriega stepped closer to see what Aquino was pointing out to him between my breasts. A large, carved baphomet appeared. Aquino had hypnotically regressed me to the time of its making which caused it to seemingly "suddenly appear" right before Noriega's eyes. Noriega jumped back, ignorantly terrified of this scientific phenomena. I believe Noriega stayed in the room for the rest of the demonstration simply because he was frozen in fear. Aquino hit me with a cat-o-nine-tails and I shrieked in pain. Noriega jumped, Aquino hit me with it again, this time activating me to respond sexually as though pain were pleasure-a mind-control concept that Noriega more readily grasped. Then Aquino pointed out that the baphomet had disappeared. While Noriega looked, Aquino used Byrd's

Hypnotic induction as he cut me "between the breasts with a knife saying, "In like a knife sharp and clean, I'll carve out what I want." My trance had been deepened to the extert that my circulatory system was slowed. Therefore I did not bleed until Aquino hypnotically changed my trance level. He then told Noriega that the baphomet carving had "retreated to the depths of my body and soul, possessing me and inciting the heal of hell." He commanded me to show any "face", the vaginal mutilation carving of the baphomet face. As I did, Aquino offered Noriega my sex. As predicted, Noriega's eyes bulged in terror and revulsion. While Aquino told him his "rejection of me had killed me," I ceased breathing and moving as conditioned. Noriega was dumfounded as Aquino laughed wickedly and threatened, "Even death will not permit her-or you-escape from the Wizard's power." He explained that I was the "Wizard's own" and "under his spell" and could therefore "re-energize myself and come back to life." He put a vaginal prod in my hand and ordered me to masturbate myself with it, pushing the button to electrically jolt myself internally upon command. Noriega's eyes were enormous. He paled to a sickly grey, his mouth fell open and he ran out the door while Aquino assured him that he had "NO where to run, no where to hide from Reagan's powers."

Noriega predictably interpreted the demonstration as a threat from the depths of HELL, which should have been enough to heed Reagan's commands to break the drug trafficking ties immediately. (Apparently this is not the case as is evidenced by Noriega's continued Florida incarceration.) Aquino and Simpson doubled over with laughter as they congratulated themselves on a job well done. Simpson finally ordered me to dress and escorted me to the back of the yacht to ensure the guards put me on the shuttle boat rather than kill me because of Noriega's horror.

As I approached the dock of the campground, the boat driver told me I would find Kelly asleep in the 'recreation' room. 1 ran to her, and, fearful of Cheney's threat, made sure her ears were still intact. I was immensely relieved to find them still there and to know she was "OK" (I could not think to wonder what she had endured in my absence.) I illogically felt like a "good mom" for "doing my part right so Kelly could live." Never before had I experienced such a sense of danger to us both and my relief was proportionate. I lovingly held her in my arms the rest of the night.

CHAPTER 14

CLINTON COKE LINES

I met up with Bill Clinton again in 1982 at a county fair in Berryville, Arkansas. Alex Houston was "entertaining" there due to the close proximity of the CIA Near Death Trauma Center (aka slave conditioning and programming camp) and drug distribution point at Swiss Villa in Lampe. Missouri. I had just endured intense physical and psychological trauma and programming, Clinlon was campaigning for Governor and was backstage with Hillary and Chelsea while waiting to make a speech. Clinton stook in the afternoon sun with his arms crossed, talking to Houston about him and "his people" (CIA Operatives) being looked into specific areas for the dual purpose of entertaining and carrying our specific covert drug operations.

From my perspective, those who were actively laying the groundwork for implementing the New World Order through mind conditioning of the masses made no distinction between Democratic and Republican Parties. Their aspirations were international in proportion, not American. Members were often drawn from, among other elitist groups, the Council on Foreign Relations. Like George Bush, Bill Clinton was an active member of the CFR, Bilderbergers, and Tri-Lateral Commission. Based on numerous conversations I overheard. Clinlon was being groomed and prepared to fill the role of President under the guise of Democrat in the event that the American people became discouraged with Republican leaders. This was further evidenced by the extent of Clinton's New World Order knowledge and professed loyalties.

Clinlon understood that I had just been through "hell" in Lampe, and took it all in stride as he focused on his speech. He not only was well aware of the mfnd-control tortures and criminal covert activities proliferating in Arkansas and the neighboring state of Missouri, but he condoned them! Just as there are no partisan preferences in this world dominance effort, neither are there any strong individual state considerations or boundaries, either. I knew from experience that Clinton's Arkansas criminal covert operations meshed with the Lampe. Missouri center where he routinely tended business and claimed to "vacation." staying in the compound's resort villas.

In 1983, Houston took me to Lampe for routine trauma and programming while he was scheduled to "entertain" at the amphitheatre. Also scheduled to perform were Bill Clinton's and George Bush's friends Lee Greenwood and CIA operative, slave runner, and country music singer Tommy Overstreet Greenwood and Overstreet were active in both the Lampe, Missouri and Lake/Mount Shasta, California CIA compounds. Clinton was flown in from Berryville, Arkansas by helicopter for the shows as well as for a business meeting.

Before Clinton arrived. Greenwood and Houston were in the backstage dressing rooms snorting fine after fine of cocaine, Houston, always eager to make an extra penny to pinch, attempted to prostitute me to Greenwood, "She's the real performer," Houston said. "She performs all kinds of sex acts upon command. For a small price, she's yours."

Greenwood laughed, and referring to my Huntsville. Alabama NASA programming said, "I've spent more time in Huntsville than she has, and I know full well who and what she is-a 'space cadet' programmed for sex. She's a modified version of Marilyn Monroe."

Tommy Overstreet had waited in and heard what Greenwood said. "How much time have you spent in Shasta?"

"Shasta?" Greenwood looked arrogantly at Overstreet and smiled knowingly as he said, "You don't 'spend time' in Shasta, you maintain the concept if you can. I haven't lost any time there, either, if that's your next question. I go there quite a bit Enough really to override Houston's suggestion with ease and take what I want, when I want, and how 1 want it."

Greenwood began expertly accessing my sex programming and told the others in the room, "You all can come and go as you please, but I've been made an offer that I am going to use." He ordered me to undress and bend over the desk where he roughly sodomized me as he said, "You're going to think it's daddy all over again".

When Greenwood was through with me, I was ordered out into the amphitheatre concert area. During intermission, I met up with Swiss Villa manager Hal Meadows, Tommy Overstreet, and Governor Clinton in the hall. Clinton was wearing a cap that read "Diesel Trainer" which I was told to equate literally as "these-will-train-her". Puzzled, 1 looked at his cap and asked, "Are you a conductor?"

Clinton smiled and said, "Of electricity". Overstreet laughed as he continued, "Actually it means I check cabooses. How's yours?" I squirmed. Apparently Greenwood had bragged about sodomizing me. They laughed even harder as Clinton said, "Still running, I'm sure".

Houston stepped out of the dressing room to greet Clinton, "Hi, bud." Houston extended his hand. "I hear you made Governor."

"I hear you deliver a hell of a one liner," Clinton replied, cryptically referring to cocaine and NOT Houston's so-called comedy routine. "I'm always aspiring to achieve new heights."

"Well, come on in," Houston invited. "I have enough (cocaine) to put us all into orbit." I walked into the dressing room with them as Houston was saying to Clinton, "I suppose there are no limits for you since you're across the (stale) line."

"What line?" Clinton feigned surprise and ignorance. He looked at Hal Meadows as he continued, "You mean I've left that state of mine? In the state of mind I'm in, there are no boundaries anyway." He walked over to the table and snorted a line of cocaine. "I come here to get away from it all. This kind of business is pleasure."

"So where's that young wife of yours?" Houston asked, referring to Hillary.

"She's with friends." Clinton sniffed the coke further up his nose. "She's minding her own business. I'm just here to unwind, see the show, maybe do a little hunting (referring to A Most Dangerous Game). I've got a bird (helicopter) ready to fly me back when I'm through. Hey, speaking of 'Byrd' (he gestured my way) I hear she's moved up to the big house (White House)." Referring to his friend and mentor Senator Byrd he asked, "So what's his position now?"

"The same." Houston answered. "Probably like this..." Houston pantomimed a lewd sodomy pose while everyone laughed. "He still runs the show."

Clinton kept his eyes fixed on Houston's "caboose" and said, "Why don't you show her (referring to me) me way out and show me that again?" If 1 could have thought at that moment, I would have realized Bill Clinton was/is bisexual. My personal sexual experience with Clinton was limited, but I had witnessed him engaged in homosexual activity during an orgy at Swiss Villa.

Immediately following the Swiss Villa incident, Houston was scheduled as usual to perform at the county fair in Benyville, Arkansas. There, Houston and I had been visiting with long time Clinton Mend and supporter, H.B. Gibson, when we parted company to attend a private meeting at the mansion of Clinton's bisexual friend and supporter Bill Hall, Hall had reportedly made his fortune in the pre-fabricated log home business, and the Clintons were slaying in a guest villa patterned after those at Swiss Villa. Hillary had taken toddler Chelsea to the villa while Clinton and his aide/bodyguard attended the meeting. Tommy Overstreet was also in attendance as this directly coincided with the recent Lampe meeting. We all sat in Hall's sunken living room on two couches facing each other with a black mirror coffee table between us. Hall had cut numerous lines of cocaine on the table, and everyone present—including Bill Clinton—was inhaling it through $50 bills rolled into straws. The conversation ranged from CIA, drugs, and politics to the Swiss Villa Amphitheatre and country music. At that time, a major effort was underway to move Nashville, Tennessee's country music industry to the Lampe area (it has since literally moved to nearby Branson), in closer proximity to the CIA cocaine operations that leached the industry.

Tommy Overstreet was attempting to convince Hall, who was obviously no stranger to the drug (cocaine) business, to join the high level CIA cocaine operation that was funding covert activity. They discussed the possibility of Hall transporting cocaine from Berryville, Arkansas to Nashville, Tennessee to be in on the ground level of what would soon be one of the largest and most prolific CIA cocaine operations—the Branson, Missouri country music industry. By enlisting now, the contacts and customers that Hall would procure could "politically and financially bolster him for life". Additionally, Overstreet discussed the viability of using Hall's own company trucks to transport the drug throughout Atlanta, Georgia; Louisville, Kentucky; and Jacksonville, Florida as well as Nashville, Tennessee and Lampe, Missouri. These key CIA cocaine routes coincided with Hall's established truck routes, according to the insiders present at the meeting. Hall was being offered the "opportunity of a lifetime" as his role would also include laundering money through his business to fund the black budget covert operations. Hall appeared nervous and skeptical, and Clinton and Overstreet attempted to maintain a "light" atmosphere by joking that Hall could change the name of his trucking line to "CLINTON COKE LINES".

Hall was not convinced and began to raise questions as to the longevity of the operation and how he was going to protect himself. Although Hall was very adept at the cocaine business, he voiced concern that he found it easier to trust those who were not with the CIA operations lhan he did U.S. government protected participants. Clinton reassured him that it was "Reagan's operation," but Hall was concerned that some faction of the government would "shut it down like a sting operation" without warning and leave him literally holding the bag, Houston laughed and explained that "no one was going to cut it (the drug business) off." He assured them it was far too lucrative and that there would "always be a market" for drugs-a market controlled by those criminals implementing their New World Order.

Clinton added to what Houston "said, talking in local colloquialisms. "Bottom line is, we've got control of the (drug) industry, therefore we've got control of them (suppliers and buyers). You control the guy underneath ya' and Uncle (Sam) has ya' covered. What have ya' got to lose? No risk. No one's gonna hang ya' out to dry. And whatever spills off the truck as it passes through (he laughed and snorted another line of coke) you get to clean up."

Hall smiled at his friend, which was apparently interpreted as consent. Clinton motioned for his aide to get his ledger. Overstreet began pulling out his paperwork, and Hall neatly cleared the table of the remaining coke lines.

Clinton gestured to me and told Houston, "Get her out of here".

Houston didn't move and laughed. "She's a Presidential Model. She's kept secrets bigger than yours."

Clinton responded, "I don't care. Get her the fuck out of here,"

Hall's wife led me away and locked me in a back bedroom. After an indeterminate period of time, I heard her telephone Hillary at the guest villa. She then drove me up the mountain through the dark to meet with Hillary. Although I had previously met Hillary we had very little to say to each other-particulariy since I was still dazed and tranced from the tortures I had endured at the CIA Near Death Trauma Center in Lampe. Hillary knew I was a mind-controlled slave, and, like Bill Clinton, just took it in stride as a "normal" part of life in politics,

Hillary was fully clothed and stretched out on the bed sleeping when Hall's wife and I arrived. "Hillary, I brought you something you'll really enjoy. Kind of an unexpected surprise. Bill ordered her out of the meeting and I look her to my bedroom and made an interesting discovery. She is literally a two-faced (referring to my vaginal mutilation carving) bitch,"

"Hmm?" Hillary opened her eyes and sleepily roused herself "Show me." Hall's wife ordered me to take my clothes off while Hillary watched. "Is she clean?" Hillary asked, meaning disease free.

"Of course, she's Byrd's," she responded, continuing the conversation as though I were not there, "Plus, I heard Houston say something about her being a Presidential Model, whatever the hell that's supposed to mean."

"It means she's clean," Hillary said matter-of-factly as she stood up. I was not capable of giving thought to such things back then, but I am aware in retrospect that all Presidential Model slaves I knew seemed to have an immunity to social diseases. It was a well known fact in the circles I was sexually passed around in that government level mind-controlled sex slaves were "clean" to the degree that none of my abusers took precautions such as wearing condoms.

Hall's wife patted the bed and instructed me to display the mutilation. Hillary exclaimed, "God!" and immediately began performing oral sex on me. Apparently aroused by the carving in my vagina,[2] Hillary stood up and quickly peeled out of her matronly nylon panties and pantyhose. Uninhibited despite a long day in the hot sun, she gasped, "Eat me, oh, god, eat me now". I had no choice but to comply with her orders, and Bill Hall's wife made no move to join me in my distasteful task. Hillary had resumed examining my hideous mutilation and performing oral sex on me when Bill Clinton walked in. Hillary lifted her head to ask, "How'd it go?"

Clinton appeared totally unaffected by what he walked into, tossed his jacket on a chair and said, "It's official. I'm exhausted. I'm going to bed."

I put my clothes on as ordered, and Hall's wife drove me back down to the mansion where Houston was waiting for me. The meeting apparently had been a success. I heard discussions throughout the remaining years between Houston, his agent Reggie MacLaughlin, and Loretta Lynn's handler, Ken Riley pertaining to Hall's successful branch of the CIA cocaine operation emanating from Arkansas, No discussions were as poignant and revealing as those between Alex Houston and CIA operative country music entertainer Boxcar Willie.

Boxcar Willie burst onto the country music scene after an ad campaign of high tech hypnotically persuasive produced television commercials that strategically made him an overnight, sensation and "star". The country music industry's Freedom Train needed a conductor to lead the industry and fans to Branson, Missouri, and Boxcar Willie was placed in the driver's seat. Like the Pied Piper of Hamlin, Boxcar Willie succeeded in his role of trance-ferring the industry in close proximity to the Lampe CIA cocaine operations.

Boxcar Willie was one of the primary ground level contacts that Bill Hall made after Clinton convinced him to cash in on the cocaine benefits of the country music industry transfer. Houston and Boxcar Willie discussed Hall's lucrative dealings throughout the years in my presence while traveling the country together, billed on the same shows, including performances at the Swiss Villa Amphitheatre, I had much contact with Boxcar Willie personally since my government sponsored cocaine runs often coincided and intermeshed with his. But 1 never knew Boxcar Willie as well as my daughter, Kelly, knew him. Kelly has named Boxcar Willie as one of her primary sexual abusers in three different mental institutions, and has voiced frustration at the lack of justice. "Why am I the one locked up while my abusers remain free?" she constantly pleads. I assure her I am doing all I can to blow the whistle on Boxcar Willie for hex, and expose his role in transferring the country music industry to close proximity of the Lampe, Missouri CIA cocaine operation as outlined by Bill Clinton.

---

[1] Loyalty to the sovereign of our country is non existent under New World Orders. "President" Clinton poses no more leadership or loyalty to our country than Ronald Reagan did since both follow(ed) New World Order directives from former U.N. Ambassador and CIA DIRECTor George Bush,

[2] Hillary Clinton is the only female to become sexually aroused at the sight of my mutilated vagina.

CHAPTER 15

NO MORE BEATING AROUND THE BUSH

It was a sunny, fall day in 1983 when U.S. Congressman Guy VanderJagt met with my CIA operative mind-control handler, Alex Houston, my then 3 1/2 year old daughter, Kelly, and me on the steps of the U.S. Senate in Washington, D.C. Kelly appeared familiar with Vanderjagt, although I had never previously remembered seeing her in his company. Even so, I could not think to realize he was, in fact, sexually abusing her just as he had me when I was a child. VanderJagt knelt on one knee in front of her to talk with her, assuring her that "today was a special day" because she would "see Uncle George (Bush) while mommy sees Uncle Ronnie (Reagan)". He stood up and took her by the hand, saying in Alice In Wonderland cryptic language, "Let's go on an Adventure together" and led her quietly and robotically away.

I met up with Kelly again that afternoon at the White House, both of us literally "on our toes" and standing at attention in Reagan's office. In retrospect, I wonder at the measures of control inflicted on my 3 1/2-year old child to cause her to perform so robotically and behave "so well" as she silently stood with the plastic smile and unblinking eyes, in the presence of President Reagan, Vice President Bush, and (later Defense Secretary) Dick Cheney. Reagan appeared to gaze at Kelly, with her long blonde hair cascading down the back of her blue pinafore dress, completing her Alice In Wonderland Appearance. Reagan seemed to pose no direct threat to her sexually as he said, "She is adorable, a model child",

Reagan then gestured towards Bush and said, "This is my Vice President George Bush. People don't usually know what the role of the Vice President is because he's always behind the scenes making sure everything that the President wants done happens the way it's supposed to." He looked at me and said matter-of-factly, "I catch the public's attention (he made a gesture in the air that was eye catching) while the Vice President carries out orders."

Bush's close friend, Dick Cheney, said, "And gives them".

"Right," Reagan said. "An order from him is like an order from me."

Bush was wearing canvas boat shoes and a cardigan sweater as he knelt on one knee in front of Kelly in order to talk to her on her level. Bush used the children's television program Mr. Rogers' Neighborhood to scramble/confuse young victims' (like Kelly's) memory of contact with him and his sexual abuse. His physical resemblance to TV's Fred Rogers was deliberately exaggerated by his choice of clothes and mannerisms, and is further compounded by his developed vocal impersonation. Using his best Mr. Rogers voice he said, "Come here, Little One. I want to ask you something. Do you watch Mr, Rogers' Neighborhood?"

"Yes, Sir," Kelly responded.

Bush told Kelly, "Well, I'm kind of like Mr. Rogers when he makes his puppets move and talk—like your daddy (Houston, ventriloquist) does with Elemer (his dummy). Only I'm like Mr. Rogers because I have lots of puppets--only mine are people. I even have a King (Fahd) just like Mr. Rogers.[1] I pull the strings (he pantomimed marionette hand movements) and I talk through them. They say my words and we create all kinds of exciting Adventures. Right now I'm building a new Neighborhood (the New World Order). The stage is set, and I have hold of everyone's strings. I need you to help me—together we can pull your mother's strings. She's in my Neighborhood. That means you're in my Neighborhood, too."

It seems obvious to me now that Bush was referring to those actively engaged in implementing the New World Order through chaos and mass mind control (aka media conditioning) as "The Neighborhood". Of course I was unable to consider disputing Bush's statement, and Kelly was certainly not of a mind to see beyond Bush's twist on her favorite television program. Kelly's big blue eyes grew even wider as she responded, "I am?"

Bush stood up and took her hand, "C'mon. Let me show you my Neighborhood," He led her out the door.

Kelly became violently physically ill after her induction into George Bush's "Neighborhood." and from every sexual encounter she had with him thereafter. She ran 104-6 degree temperatures, vomited and endured immobilizing headaches for an average of three days (as is consistent with high voltage trauma). These were the only tell-tale evidences aside from the scarring burns left on her skin. Houston forbade me to call a doctor, and Kelly forbade me to comfort her, pitifully complaining that her head "hurt too bad to even move". And she did not move for hours on end. Kelly often complained of severe kidney pain, and her rectum usually bled for a day or two after Bush sexually abused her. My own mind-control victimization rendered me unable to help or protect her. Seeing my child in such horrible condition drove my own wedge of insanity in deeper, perpetuating my total inability to affect her needs until our rescue by Mark Phillips in 1988.

Kelly's bleeding rectum was but one of many physical indicators of George Bosh's pedophile perversions, I have overheard him speak blatantly of his sexual abuse of her on many occasions. He used this and threats to her life to "pull my strings" and control me. The psychological ramifications of being raped by a pedophile President arc mind-shattering enough, but reportedly Bush further reinforced his traumas to Kelly's mind with sophisticated NASA electronic and drug mind-control devices. Bush also instilled the "Who ya gonna call?" and "I'll be watching you" binds on Kelly, further reinforcing her sense of helplessness. The systematic tonures and traumas I endured as a child now seem trite in comparison to the brutal physical and psychological devastation that George Bush inflicted on my daughter.

As soon as the door closed behind Bush and Kelly, Dick Cheney reached over to Reagan's desk from his seat and flipped over the hourglass. (Oz) "Her (Kelly's) time is running out. You'd better pay attention and follow orders as though her life depends on it, because from now on (heh heh) it always does! If you make one mistake—one—then I'll get her, my pretty."

Reagan said, "George is like a director. He makes sure the stage is set to implement the New World Order as I envision it. Then he makes sure everyone has a script and knows their pan. He tells them how to speak and when to speak it. How to dress and (patting my head) how to wear their hair. He gets everything and everyone in place and hollers, 'Action!'" Reagan shouted through his hand as though it were a megaphone and rambled on, "All the world's a stage. I'm the Wizard. But he is directing the show so you better pay attention and learn your part well from him."

Cheney interrupted, "George and I will be working closely on a few projects together, and when you see him, you'll see me. When you're given orders from him, you're given orders from me."

"She knows the chain of command, Dick," Reagan injected, referring to his perception of who was in charge, and in what order. President, Vice President, Habib, Cheney, Byrd, etc. may have been the chain of command in Reagan's mind, but Cheney's definition was necessary to my understanding. From my perspective, the chain of command was clearly Bush, Cheney, Habib, Reagan, Aquino and lastly, on a par with my handler, Houston, Byrd, all of which was subjet to change at any given moment. Cheney just rolled his eyes at Reagan's comment and never slowed down as he continued, "Right now a stage is being set and you will be directed by the Vice President on just how he wants you to do your part in setting the stage for Mexico's role in the New World Order."

Reagan jumped in again, "With the world in order, there will be world peace. By strategically placing an American Patriot dedicated to the cause of spreading democracy in all parts of the world, we can influence the thinking of every nation's leader and paint for them a picture of freedom and American values that they'll never forget. They'll spread it to the people and the whole planet will be of one mind—one purpose-one cause. Freedom. You'll be talking with some of these friends and leaders from time to lime on my behalf."

Bush slipped back into the meeting, without Kelly. Cheney continued, "Taking orders from me and your new director-the Vice President. Lesson number one. You know what Miami Vice is. Undercover drug agents taking control of the drug industry. A Vice President is just that-an undercover drug agent taking control of the drug industry-for the President."

Bush spoke up. "Mexico is a problem. They've got lots of drugs, but not the brains nor lhe means to sell it outside their own country. So how can we take control of their (growing) drug industry when we can't even get our hands on it? It's your duty as an American citizen to open the routes and initiate freedom from poverty throughout their nation by offering them cash as a means of enticing their drug industry right into our grasp by bringing it right up to our doorsteps."

"Operation Greenbacks for Wetbacks," Cheney said, laughing. Bush laughed with him.

Bush regained his composure to conclude, "Your assignment begins in Miami with NCL (Norwegian Caribbean Lines) and ends when you return from Mexico with word of success."

Cheney caught my eye with a hand gesture that directed my gaze from Bush to the hourglass, which was running out fast. By then I was deeply tranced and lost touch with my surroundings all together while my trance was timelessly deepened for further programming, I left the White House with a message for the Vice President of Mexico, Carlos Salinas de Gortari, from the Vice President of the U.S., and with one very sick child.

---

[1] Mr Roger projects through puppets on his show, and one of his key characters from the Land of Make-Believe is King Friday the 13th.

CHAPTER 16

OPERATION GREENBACKS FOR WETBACKS

My CIA mind-control handler, Alex Houston and I boarded the Norwegian Caribbean Lines ship bound for Cozumel, Mexico, with a large, black, soft side suitcase packed full of cash and a proposal of "prosperity" from the U.S. This proposal, programmed in me by Vice President Bush, was supposedly initial diplomatic groundwork for the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA).

It was my understanding then that the North American Free Trade Agreement was considered a significant step in implementing the New World Order through mind manipulation of the masses. According to Byrd, propaganda disguising the true purpose of NAFTA included the concept of "free trade" which the U.S. and Mexican governments had long since shared. "Free trade" of child and adult mind-controlled slaves, cocaine, heroin and businesses has been not-so-secretly proliferating for years. My own father joined the "run for the border" via U.S. State Department and Mexican subsidized business incentives and opened yet another branch of his U.S. Department of Defense-given-business in Mexico. This was part of the "free trade" agreement that I know personally has been operating smoothly from at least 1984. In an effort to maintain the illusion that the agreement would not create a negative economic imbalance between Mexico and the U.S., tourist areas of Mexico were deliberately built up, enhanced and Americanized with U.S. dollars. These funds were provided through CIA covert Black Budget operations of drug and slave trading, as well as directly through the Senate Appropriations Committee of which Senator Robert C. Byrd is chairman as of this writing.

I certainly do not purport to understand international business, nor have I attempted to "educate" myself through what 1 know to be propaganda slanted and filtered periodicals. How money interfaces in world markets has been well documented. For example, who supports whom in which financial endeavors is apparently far too complex for even BCCI attorneys and investigators to sort through. My personal perspective on Mexican, U.S., and Saudi Arabian buildup of Mexico's economy is limited to my own experiences. My understanding is further affected by deliberate misinformation from the criminal perspectives of those who were in control of my mind's knowledge base and actions. From time to time, Senator Byrd used me as a robotic sounding board. He told me what he wanted me to hear, and this was structured more toward stroking his own enormous, warped ego than it was to educate me in world finance.

Senator Byrd claimed "the money game is simply a game of control," and lives by his adopted Golden Rule of "He who holds the gold makes the rules," He told me in so many words that "by appropriating funds to all (viable) projects ushering in the free trade agreement, and allocating lesser amounts to U.S. social systems such as our 'criminal' justice system, I control our country and our place in world markets. All the world is a stage, and I own the theater!...you can bank on it!"

Senator Byrd's twisted reality echoed in my mind when America was bought (stolen) and sold by Presidents Bush and Clinton in the recent passage of NAFTA. "I would never run for President—Oh, I'd win if I did," Byrd bragged. "But why should I run for an office that is beneath me? I can make a President look good, or I can make him look bad by strategically appropriating funds." Byrd and others I knew boasted that he was one of those (corrupt power brokers) responsible for Bill Clinton's being "chosen" and elected to the office of Presidency. And the last minute bids and dealings with those Congressmen holding NAFTA's deciding votes proved "strategic appropriations" indeed made Clinton "look good" in his NAFTA "victory".

At the La Celiba Hotel in Cozumel, Houston maintained my food and water depravation for mind-control purposes, even during our dinner meeting in the hotel's restaurant later that evening. Although the restaurant was "officially" closed due to the late hour, a mariachi band, one waiter, four stationed armed guards, my Mexican dignitary contact, his two assistants, and handler, Houston and I were present. During the meeting, arrangements were made to meet with Mexico's then Vice President Salinas the next afternoon at a nearby military installation. I would also deliver a message as usual from Senator Byrd at the nearby Consulate's office pertaining to U.S. financial support for creating propaganda to insure the illusion of economic equality in Mexican tourist areas. These funds were simply to further the ongoing shared goal of easing into New World Order domination through carefully contrived smoke and mirror tactics.

The next afternoon, Houston escorted me to the high security fenced government installation for my meeting with Salinas. According to Bush, Salinas was regarded by the Reagan-Bush Administration as superior in power to Miguel de la Madrid who was officially President of Mexico at that time. The upcoming Mexican "election," which was no more an election than Reagan's second term, was to place Salinas in the office of President to coincide with Bush's destined Presidency. To insure that this "strategically placed American Patriot" would be voted into position, Reagan informed me that the U.S. would "guard the integrity" of "elections" by covertly "overseeing" them, among other strategies. Salinas was to be President at all costs.

Although President de la Madrid was considered by Bush to be the stepping stone to the ultimate reign of Salinas/Bush's (already established) diplomatic relations, he was regarded with all due respect in a manner conducive to "no margins for error". His full cooperation was tantamount to establishing Bush's and Salinas[1] goals via free flowing drug markets and Mexico's cooperation in subversively funding and supplying Reagan's Nicaraguan Contras. De la Madrid worked in close association with Salinas so that a smooth transition of power would maintain U.S.-Mexican relations and efforts already in place.

"A message to Salinas is a message to the President," Cheney had explained. Not only would the message be relayed to de Ja Madrid, but for the most part Salinas was the one responsible for working with George Bush since they would both come into power during the most critical point in the promotion of NAFTA—passing it by the American people and into law. President Reagan, Mexican President de la Madrid, Vice President Bush, and Mexican Vice President Salinas were all "of one mind—one effort" toward economic expansion and growth for our southern "neighbors in the New World Order" through what I experienced was based on "free trade" of drugs, children, and pornography. Vice President Bush told me that this (criminal) activity was regarded as Mexico's "only means of rapid economic advancement and freedom from poverty since the people were slaves to their own inability to advance in world markets."

When I arrived at the military installation with the aforementioned suitcase of cash in hand, I was taken to Salinas' "office" through a series of electronic gates guarded by officers in white uniforms. Salinas sal at his desk, which was small and functional (i.e., military issue), set on a highly polished wooden floor in a vast room virtually void of decor and personal effects. This created an air of military practicality. I set the suitcase in front of Salinas and began relaying the message I had been programmed to deliver

"I have a message from the Vice President of the United State of America to our neighbors in Mexico. America is willing to share its wealth through a trade agreement with Mexico. We'll trade our cash for control over Mexico's cocaine and heroin production. By controlling your drug industry, we can open the border between our countries to allow a free flow of cocaine and heroin into the U.S., bought and paid for in American dollars to build Mexico, Eventually this could dissolve the border between our countries altogether as Mexico's economy grows to match ours. If we begin today, this dream could be realized by the turn of the century-sharing the same continent, sharing the same wealth. Why? The drug industry already dictates what the Mexican government can or cannot do. By giving the U.S. control of your drug industry, Mexico regains control over her government. Re-established power backed by U.S. dollars will bring Mexico on an economic par with America. We can begin by spreading the word through the (drug) cartels that the U.S. is covertly willing to open the borders to free drug trade by making agents available to show you the passage and routes through which the drugs are to be delivered. Only U.S. agents can bring Mexican heroin and (South American) cocaine across the border, and likewise they will bring the cash in. Explain to those select few who control the drug empires that the cruise line (NCL) agreement is going into mass expansion, tearing down the border between our countries enough to allow for as many drugs to come in as Mexico can deal out. When do we begin? Immediately. The cash is at hand. (I gestured toward the suitcase which Salinas unzipped to find full of cash.) Deliver whatever amount of brown heroin you have at hand as a means of confirmation to the agreement. Keep the change as a token of the change and good fortune that has befallen Mexico from its neighboring nation."

As I finished Bush's message, Salinas immediately took a note pad from the desk and scrawled a quick note. He passed it to a guard who was stationed at the door. He stood up, smiled, and leaned over his desk as he extended his hand in a warm handshake. I was escorted out. Houston found me on the front steps of the installation and together we were escorted through the barbed wire fences and back onto the streets of Cancun,

I waited in a small clearing nearby for an indeterminate length of time, playing with a large iguana. Finally, a taxi cab driver pulled up and honked his horn three times, signaling me to pick up a fist-sized ball of Mexican brown heroin. The heroin was crudely wrapped in brown paper, tied with twine, and measured approximately the size of a baseball. As quickly as the cab driver left, Houston, who was standing some distance away with two uniformed men, signaled me to join him. We were then driven to the airport where we boarded a U.S. Air Force aircraft to Washington, D.C.

Immediately upon arrival at Andrews Air Force Base just outside of Washington, D.C, I was taken to Senator Byrd who then escorted me to Dick Cheney's Pentagon office for a meeting with Vice President Bush, 1 was ill and vomiting from the high voltage administered in Mexico to compartmentalize my memory. I was allowed to use Byrd's magnetic pass key card to unlock the maze of doors that led to the Ladies' Room. I was still wearing my inappropriate-for-D.C. cruise clothes and carrying the heroin in my tote bag when I met with Bush to confirm Mexico's agreement to his proposal. Bush took the heroin for himself, obviously pleased with the quality of the product. Cheney laughed and told Bush he needed to "confiscate the Contra-band".

Bush replied, "Over my dead body" as he laughed at Cheney's Contra joke.

"If you don't share some of it, that could be the case," Cheney said. "Pitch it here."

Bush struck a pitch pose, wound up, made a fake out pitch, and joked in baseball banter, "It's a 'high fly' ball. You're going to have to steal." He tossed the heroin in the air, caught it, and strode for the door, Cheney got out of his chair, pointed to the door, and ordered me "Out".

Houston and I were flown in to Montego Bay, Jamaica and transported to Ocho Rios to board our next NCL cruise ship.

CHAPTER 17

ABOUT FACES

Soon after Kelly was inducted into George Bush's "Neighborhood" through horrific sexual abuse, Bush enforced his controls on me. Our mind-control handler, Alex Houston, had taken Kelly and me to Washington, D.C. for separately scheduled meetings with Bush. Kelly had already been escorted by agents to her rendezvous with him that morning, during which Lime I had been ordered to one of U.S, Senator Robert C. Byrd's offices located in the nearby FBI Hoover Building. There, Byrd reinforced his holds on me by claiming control of the Justice Department and "proving" once again that I had "no where to run and no where to hide". My horror reaction was compounded when Byrd looked at his pocket watch and notified me in Alice in Wonderland cryptic language, "You're late, you're late for a very important date," referring to my meeting with Bush.

I sprinted from the Hoover Building, encountering Houston who waited just outside. Houston hurried me to the Smithsonian where I waited for my escorts as instructed at the "Face Changing" exhibit. This computerized exhibit illustrates how an individual's face can take on a radically different appearance by slightly altering any single feature.

The exhibit fascinated me as a programmed MPD since multiples often experience the unnerving phenomena of routinely not recognizing themselves in a mirror due to switching personalities. A multiple's face often changes slightly with each switch, which "validates" the religious communities' perceptions of so-called "demonic possession" in occultism. Logic quickly dispels this belief when it is realized that everyone's expression changes according to emotion, by skin color and tones, blood pressure, and by tightening or relaxing specific micro muscles. An MPD's face changes are more exaggerated when these natural conditions are combined with the results of sophisticated programming/ "Charm School" teaches subconscious control over these natural phenomena as a ready-made disguise on government slaves such as myself, as welt as to enhance sex slaves' "beauty" to their maximum potential. I was incapable of thinking or logically understanding my fascination with the display, as I stood totally enthralled, waiting for my escorts as ordered.

As the escorts approached, I was relieved to see Kelly with them. Though she was visibly tranced and traumatized, the fact that she was alive was all I was capable of grasping. When she saw the "Face Changing" exhibit, she excitedly exclaimed, "Uncle George just read me a book about this!" Before I could hear anymore, I was led away, leaving Kelly with our handler, Houston.

I was then quickly taken to Bush's Residence Office, which here-to-fore was unfamiliar to me. Although it had slate blue, plush carpets and fine furnishings like the White House office, lattice work and smaller rooms provided a different air. I sat in a hard-back wooden chair as ordered, while Bush carefully positioned himself in front of me on a little wooden footstool. This allowed me clear visibility of the large book that he held in his lap. All illustrations faced me, while all text except the last page was printed in the holder's direction. This book was a unique, high tech piece of art specifically designed to enforce Bush's favorite method of programming, "You Are What You Read". The juvenile face depicted on the front of this hardcover book gave it the appearance of a children's storybook. It was entitled About Faces.

Bush explained the dynamics of "changing faces" and "becoming what I read". Although I had been conditioned to this idea all of my life through Disney stories, The Wizard Of Oz, Alice In Wonderland, etc., I was not prepared for Bush's version of "You Are What You Read" programming explanations. The illustrations themselves were elaborate, consisting of mirrors and hypnotic depictions. He seemingly made the book come alive in my mind as he read page after poetic page of hypnotic, metaphorical language, all the while creating powerful illusions. His impersonations of the characters further enhanced the desired affect of fantasy becoming reality. This extraordinary effort to scramble reality would have worked-perfectly-had it not been for another victim and myself discussing it only a few days later. The purpose of Bush's book was dearly explained within the first few pages, which included the following passage:

1 am the Vice President when circumstance demands,
And I am your Commander, you'll follow my commands.
The first command's important - It is one you will heed,
When I send you a book, you are what you read.

Throughout my tenure as a Presidential Model mind-controlled slave, I was provided specific books according to Bush's program. These books, delivered through pre-established channels such as Ken Riley, Alex Houston, and even Ronald Reagan, came complete with specific commands on how they were to be interpreted and used. Some books were used to instruct me on operations; some were an attempt to scramble my memory with fantasy; others were used to load my mind with pertinent data such as bank account passbook numbers, and so on.

I was provided a paperback book entitled Afghanistan, from which I absorbed history, current political events, and the strength of the Afghany Freedom Fighters. I have since learned that the book I read was never publicly released in the text it was provided me. According to instruction, the book was delivered back to Bush as quickly as I finished memorizing it, I wonder in retrospect if any part of it contained fact beyond how I was supposed to perceive it.

I read stories of espionage, including Robert Ludlum's Bourne Identity, and William Diehl's Chameleon. Mostly I was provided steamy sex novels for further training as well as scrambles. Kelly was conditioned to fairy tales, Steven Speilberg's ET, NASA NSA operative George Lucas' Star Wars, and the nightmarish Never Ending Story. Steinbeck's classic Of Mice and Men caused Kelly constantly to quote the dependant character of Lenny for years saying, "Tell me what to do, George". She still does this each and every time I am allowed to visit with her in the mental institution. The attending therapist overseeing the visit has yet to pick up on this programming cue, and I am forbidden by Juvenile Court order not to discuss Kelly's past or therapy.

Bush's most effective example of "You Are What You Read" in his book About Faces occurred during his reading of the page depicting lizard-like "aliens" from a "far-off, deep space place", Claiming to me to be an alien himself, Bush apparently activated a hologram of the lizard-like "alien" which provided the illusion of Bush transforming like a chameleon before my eyes. In retrospect, I understand that Bush had been painstakingly careful in positioning our seats in order that the hologram's effectiveness be maximized.

U.S. Army Lt. Col. Aquino's occultism provided trauma sufficient to maintain my Project Monarch Mind-Controlled existence despite his inability to affect my core spirituality. Therefore, I was not routinely subjected to the other favorite "trauma of choice"-alien themes-lite many slaves (including Kelly) I knew had been. The effect of Bush's illusion hologram on such victims is binding and strong. Even Aquino envied the mind shattering effects of Bush's alien theme visual traumas to the extent that he wrote and published his own comic book sequel to Lucas' Star Wars. While occultism is easily dispelled with reason and fact, Bush's alien theme continues to be reinforced through NASA's involvement in mind-control atrocities. Additionally, California's 24-year incumbent Senator Alan Cranston of the Select Committee on Intelligence has perpetuated this trauma base for decades, as have others. Despite my having escaped routine "alien" theme traumas, Bush's "You Are What You Read" hologram proved devastatingly sufficient for him to gain total control of my robotic mind from that moment on untii my rescue in 1988.

By the time Bush reached the last page of his About Faces book, I was so traumatized I instantly "became what I read" when I read the last verse aloud as ordered:

I am a True Patriot living an American Dream,
I will become my role when you pull my string.
I will become my part, so I can 'be all I can be'
'Cause just like the Vice President, I am what I read.

CHAPTER 18

IN THE MEANTIME

My life seemed to lead me at an accelerated pace after being subjected to Reagan and Bush. My handler, Alex Houston egotistically claimed it was his and Elemer's (his alter-ego dummy) popularity that kept us traveling so extensively within the country music circuit. When we weren't traveling the Caribbean and Mexico via NCL ships, or driving his cocaine loaded motor home to strategically booked shows across the U.S., we were routinely moving in and out of Washington, D.C. All along the way, my daughter and I were either prostituted, used in commercial pornography, or filmed in Michael Dante's "Chief" bestiality pornography as ordered by Uncle Ronnie Reagan.

Occasionally our travels would take us to Michigan, where Houston made certain we stayed with my family. Trips to my father's house were devastating but informative. My mother had developed deep, psychological scars above and beyond her own MPD condition and became an insomniac. My father by this time was routinely traveling to London, Germany, and Mexico, and taking the family to Florida's Disney World and Washington, D.C. My older brother, Hill, still worked for and with my father, traveled with him annually to "hunt" In Cheney's Greybull, Wyoming lodge, and maintained his wife and three children under trauma-base mind control according to my father's instructions. My brother, Mike, ran a video store to front some of my father's and Uncle Bob Tanis' lucrative porn video business. My sister, Kelli Jo, became a belly dancing contortionist excelling in "gymnastics" since she became "as flexible as Gumby" according to her prostitution programming. She worked her way through school in children's day-care centers, admittedly spotting, for my father, abused children for potential "chosen ones" candidates. In 1990 she graduated to open a licensed day-care, "Little Learners" in Grand Haven, Michigan for my father. My brother, Tom (Beaver), is a Compu-Kids (CIA Project) programmed computer genius. My brother Tim broke his leg (in the same place my mother had broken his leg years before) due to following my father's sports programming above and beyond human capability. And my youngest sister, Kimmy, became hysterically obsessed with "Mr. Rogers," expressed immense fear of her huge "electric" doll house that lit up at night to look like the White House, and was under a doctor's care for anorexia by age seven, I look forward to the day I can help them all, and justice is served on my father.

Since I was using parts of my brain I would not have used under normal circumstances, I developed the ability to read backwards as naturally as I could red forwards. Houston tapped into this typically occult-based phenomenon as a means of "scrambling" road signs to promote amnesia of where we were traveling. He further compounded his effort by conditioning me to read phonetically and literally, and alternated his "scrambling" methods. "Zoo" became "ooz" and "ooz" translated to "oz". Arkansas read "Our Kansas", and Missouri became (and was!) "Misery". East became West, and highway 66 became 99. When 1 traveled, I "literally" did not consciously know if I were coming or going. If an outsider happened to ask me about where I'd traveled, I mechanically replied, "The towns all run together and look alike after awhile."

Commands delivered in the same language twisting manner were natural for me to follow. "Role with it" was easier for me to become according to Reagan's acting definition than it was to go with the flow by "rolling with it". Phrases like Wyoming Senator Alan Simpson's "In a switch of an "I" (personality)/ "eye"(hypnotic blink)/ "i"(the letter), complaint becomes compliant. The parts of my brain I was forced to function with were not conducive to "normal" thinking.

Nor could 1 have appeared "normal" to outsiders had they cared to see beyond my superficial programmed cover personality, I did have occasion to mix with "outsiders" at the local library where I took Kelly for her books on days when we were not traveling. By age 6, she tested at the 7th grade reading level. I also emerged from my closed environment to tend to Kelly's schooling. She maintained straight As, but her poor attendance record threatened to violate state requirements. Once when the librarian asked where Kelly would be traveling to waive library book due dates, or the teacher inquired as to Kelly's absences, I gave the usual response of, "the towns all run together and look alike after awhile." If they pressed for specifics, I ran through a series of religious phrases such as "praise the Lord", to compensate for my lack of answers. People tended to overlook and accept "religious fanaticism" personality peculiarities, which combined with my "role" traveling the country music industry, kept outsiders at a distance for years.

My "religious fanatic" cover personality was cultivated at the Brentwood, Tennessee Lord's Chapel "nondenominational" (Pentecostal) church, through the CIA Operative preacher -Reverend" Billy Roy Moore (who has since fled to Arkansas due to a local murder scandal),

Moore transported cocaine from the Caribbean for the CIA, at least during the Reagan Administration, under the guise of so-called "missions,"[1] i.e., Christian ministries. It most likely was not the intent of the Christians dedicated to their Caribbean ministries to be used by the CIA and Moore to inadvertently mule drugs into our country. Even CIA agents operating under "need to know" partial information were denied the full scope of what they were actually participating in. Many seemingly willing participants were manipulated, provided "justification," and deliberately misled to believe they were serving their country, rather than destroying it from the inside out.

"Pastor" Moore combined his knowledge of Kelly's and my programming keys, codes, and triggers with his use of metaphorical language to maintain and/or direct our mode of operation. Moore's "following" consisted primarily of government mind-controlled slaves and handlers, including the Mandrells. Jack Greene and his slave, the Oak Ridge Boys, and others. He instructed us on how to vote, which political issues lo support, and to follow other "religious" political leaders such as his and Manuel Noriega's friend, evangelist Jimmy Swaggart. "Religious counseling" from Moore equaled to maintaining mind-control programming through "God's Orders", And "God's Orders" often came by telephone,

Houston constantly prostituted Kelly to anyone "in the loop" who was willing to pay. When she wasn't being prostituted, she was being filmed pornographically. By 1984, Michael Dante routinely filmed Kelly in pornography, since kiddie porn was as lucrative as bestiality. He filmed Kelly and me in Las Vegas, Nevada and various other locations throughout the Caribbean, California, Florida, Tennessee, and in my home state of Michigan.

This created professional conflict with long lime kiddie pornographers formerly associated with Houston. Houston's close friend in Waycross, Georgia, pedophile Jimmy Walker, managed the Okefenokee Swamp Park and had participated in black budget funding operations for years on both the cocaine and pornography levels. His counterpart, Dick Flood, refused to participate to any more pornography after Dante came on the scene. Even the Huntsville, Alabama NASA/DIA/CIA-appointed "law enforcement" officers could rarely succeed in their bidding for Kelly's video taped performances unless directly ordered by Senator Byrd. Dante considered himself her future owner as well as mine, and maintained control of our porn "business" ventures through serious U.S. Government and international Mafia methodisms/ connections.

Jimmy Walker, the same photographer who had taken pornographic "wedding night" pictures for Larry Flynt, recently had other photographs of me published in Hustler. When Dante found out, he was furious. Larry Flynt and Dante both worked for the CIA, had Vatican and Mafia connections, and deliberately appealed to Reagan's perversions using project Monarch Mind-Controlled slaves. What Flynt could not "legally" publish, Dante ran through the underground. Flynt and Dante lived on oposite coasts, which, despite their similarities, still was not far enough apart to sooth their differences. Waving his hands in dramatic Italian gestures. Dante furiously spouted a string of obscenities over Flynt's publishing photos of what he deemed "his property", Accusing Flynt of going to extremes to gain favor/protection from the government, Dante shouted, "He's a bigger whore than the girls he promotes!"

Michael Dante's pornographic filming abilities served several purposes. Aside from producing porn according to Reagan's own (well known) perversions and instructions, Dante was present during many key international government "gatherings". Oftentimes when I and others were prostituted to various government (New World Order) leaders, Dante had hidden cameras filming perverse sexual acts apparently for future blackmail leverage. These videos were scandalous in proportion and were usually ordered by Reagan. Dante turned the videos over to Reagan, and covertly kept copies to protect himself. Dante converted a small room of his Beverly Hills mansion into a security vault, where he kept his personal copies of the international blackmail porn tapes there.

Among these internationally scandalous tapes are numerous videos covertly produced at the supposedly secure political sex playground in northern California, Bohemian Grove. According to Houston, Dante's high tech undetectable cameras used fiber optics, and fish-eye lens were in each of the elite club's numerous sexual perversion theme rooms. My knowledge of these cameras was due to the strategically compromising positions of the political perpetrators I was prostituted to in the various kinky theme rooms.

I was programmed and equipped to function in all rooms at Bohemian Grove in order to compromise specific government targets according to their personal perversions. "Anything, anytime, anywhere with anyone" was my mode of operation at the Grove. I do not purport to understand the full function of this political cesspool playground as my perception was limited to my own realm of experience. My perception is that Bohemian Grove serves those ushering in the New World Order through mind control, and consists primarily of the highest Mafia and U.S. Government officials. I do not use the term "highest" loosely, as copious quantities of drugs were consumed there. Project Monarch Mind-

Control slaves were routinely abused there to fulfill the primary purpose of the club: purveying perversion.

Bohemian Grove is reportedly intended to be used recreationally, providing a supposedly secure environment for politically affluent individuals to "party" without restraint. The only business conducted there pertained to implementing the New World Order, through the proliferation of mind-control atrocities, giving the place an air of "Masonic Secrecy". The only room where business discussions were permitted was the small, dark lounge affectionately and appropriately referred to as the Underground.[2]

Sex slaves were not routinely permitted in the Underground for security reasons, leaving the lounge's small stage as the only source of "entertainment". This entertainment ranged from would-be talents such as Lee Atwater, Bill Clinton, and George Bush to CIA Operative entertainers such as Boxcar Willie and Lee Greenwood, On one occasion I was instructed to meet with former President Gerald Ford in the Underground where Lee Atwater was picking and singing. As I waited through the smoke-filled room to Ford's table, Atwater interrupted his song to cryptically acknowledge my unwelcome presence by singing choruses of "Over the Rainbow" and Byrd's song for me "Country Roads" while emphasizing the lines of "Almost heaven, West Virginia".

My purpose at the Grove was sexual in nature, and therefore my perceptions were limited to a sex slave's viewpoint. As an effective means of control to ensure undetected proliferation of their perverse indulgences, slaves such as myself were subjected to ritualistic trauma. I knew each breath I took could be my last, as the threat of death lurked in every shadow. Slaves of advancing age or with failing programming were sacrificially murdered "at random" in the wooded grounds of Bohemian Grave, and I fell it was "simply a matter of time until it would be me". Rituals were held at a giant, concrete owl monument on the banks of, ironically enough, the Russian (rushin') River. These occultish sex rituals stemmed from the scientific belief that mind-controlled slaves required severe trauma to ensure compartmentalization of the memory, and not from any spiritual motivation.

My own threat of death was instilled when I witnessed the sacrificial death of a young, dark-haired victim at which time I was instructed to perform sexually "as though my life depended upon it". I was told, "...the next sacrifice victim could be you. Anytime when you least expect it, the owl will consume you. Prepare yourself, and stay prepared." Being "prepared" equated to being totally suggestible, i.e., "on my toes" awaiting their command.

After returning to Tennessee, Houston attempted to distort my Bohemian Grove experience by instructing me to "prepare myself for imminent death". He ordered me into a bathtub of cold water, placed ice cubes in my vagina, then transferred me to his bed. There he tied a coroner's type tag on my toe, and hypnotically deepened my trance to the point where my heart and breathing were nearly stopped. Then he gratified himself on my cold, still body through faux necrophilia—reportedly one of his favorite perversions. Houston had "perfected" his perversion to the extent that he handed the keys to my death-state programming to Lt. Col. Michael Aquino for use in Reagan's Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstrations. My death-state also further equipped me in my role of "anything, anytime, anywhere with anyone" to be accessed at Bohemian Grove.

The club offered a "Necrophilia" theme room to its members. I was so heavily drugged and programmed when used in the "necrophilia" room, that the threat of actually "slipping through death's door" and being sacrificed "before I knew it" did not affect me. My whole existence was balanced precariously on the edge of death as a matter of routine anyway. My robotic state did not permit me the "luxury" of self-preservation, and I could only do exactly what I was told to do. My necrophilia room experience was only for the purpose of providing Dante a compromising film of a targeted member anyway.

Other perversion theme rooms at the Bohemian Club included what I heard Ford refer to as the "Dark Room". When he not so cleverly said, "Let's go to the Dark Room and see what develops," I understood from experience that he was interested in indulging in his perverse obsession for pornography. In the Dark Room, members had sex with the same mind-controlled slave they were viewing in porn on a big screen television.

There was a triangular glass display centered in a main through way where I was locked in with various trained animals, including snakes. Members walking by watched elicit sex acts of bestiality, women with women, mothers with daughters, kids with kids, or any other unlimited perverse visual display.

I was once brutally assaulted by Dick Cheney in the Leather Room, which was designed tike a dark, black leather-lined train berth. As 1 crawled through the leather flaps covering the narrow entrance, 1 heard Cheney play on the word "berth/birth" as the soft blackness engulfed me. With the small opening covered, the blinding darkness enhanced the sense of touch and provided an option of anonymity. Cheney jokingly claimed that I "blew his cover" when I recognized his all-too-familiar voice and abnormally large penis size.

There was a room of shackles and tortures, black lights and strobes, an opium den, ritualistic sex altars, a chapel, group orgy rooms including poster beds, water beds, and "kitten" houses. I was used as a "rag doll" in the "toy store," and as a urinal in the "golden arches" room.

From the owl's roost to the necrophilia room, no memory of sexual abuse is as horrifying as the conversations overheard in the Underground pertaining to implementing the New World Order. I learned that perpetrators believed that controlling the masses through propaganda mind manipulation did not guarantee there would be a world left to dominate due to environmental and overpopulation problems. The solution being debated was not pollution/population control, but mass genocide of "selected undesirables."

[1] Moore often operated under the cloak of World Vision.

[2] The wooden sign was carved to read: U.N.DERGROUND

CHAPTER 19

E.T. PHONE ROME

Anyone attending the Bohemian Grove on a regular basis was referred to by those in the know as a "Grover". One such Grover was Ronald Reagan's then-Secretary of Education, Bill Bennett, Bill Bennett, who later became "Drug Czar" during the Bush Administration, wrote the so-called Book of Virtues and was/is? vying for the office of President. Bennett is apparently very close to his brother and fellow Grover, Bob Bennett. Although Bob Bennett holds the position of Legal Counsel to President Clinton, it is apparent that the brothers recognize no party lines.

It was clear to me that there were no partisan differences amongst those ushering in the New World Order, any more than there was loyalty to our Constitution. The close relationship I witnessed between the Bennett brothers, like the marriage between Clinton's and Bush's 1992 campaign managers James Carville and Mary Matlin, should raise questions as to their agenda,

When Bill and Bob Bennett together sexually assaulted my daughter, Kelly, and me at the Bohemian Grove in 1986, I had already known Bill Bennett as a mind-control programmer for some time. Bennett anchored his Jesuit/Vatican based programming of me in my Catholic conditioning initially instilled via the Rite to Remain Silent. Through further manipulation of my "inner-dimensional" perceptions, Bennett believed he had forever compartmentalized his personal secrets of perverse sex with his brother, Bob, and my then six-year-old daughter. Bennett also had manipulated my mind in accordance with Vatican "Orders" via Byrd's Jesuit College programming center in West Virginia. He used his role as Jesuit programmer for the purposes of carrying out his efforts as Education Secretary to implement Education 2000.[1]

In order to program my mind for my role in bringing Education 2000 into the "Volunteer State" of Tennessee's school system, Bennett used sophisticated mind manipulation to set the stage—the same kind of mind manipulation propaganda executed on national and international scale, Bennett's penchant for manipulating minds is apparently rooted in his knowledge of Catholic/Jesuit mind-control techniques.

When I met Bennett at a White House cocktail party in 1984, I was wearing the rosy cross necklace that Guy VanderJagt and Father Don had presented to me during my first communion, to signify the mode of program I was operating under at the time. Byrd had ordered that I wear it for the occasion.

Byrd was already talking with Bennett when a White House butler led me in to see Byrd.[2] Byrd was saying, "I was just talking about you with my friend, Secretary of Education[3] William Bennett."

"Bill," Bennett corrected, sweeping his lecherous gaze over me as though I were merchandise. "How do you do?"

"'As I am told, thank you," I said as I extended my hand as trained.

Bennett clumsily fingered the rosy cross necklace, blowing his alcoholic breath in my face as he said, "Your necklace is as beautiful as you are, and no doubt, as significant in purpose. Where did this come from and what does it mean to you?"

"From my first communion," I responded. "Guy (Byrd interrupted to clarify 'VanderJagt') gave it to me to consummate my holy communion."

Byrd corrected me, "Commemorate your holy communion." "She doesn't need a translator, Bobby," Bennett laughed, "I'm hearing her loud and clear."

Byrd left me with Bennett, who went into a long winded recitation on an interpretation of the Bible deliberately intended to further distort my Catholic instilled perceptions. "Christ was an alien in this land," he was saying in accordance with his learned Jesuit mind manipulation techniques. "Once he landed in Earth's plane, it was plain to see he was a leader in interdimensional travel, We (Jesuits/aliens) followed his lead since he was the first to slip into Earth's dimension. In Christ's transformation from porpoise[4] to purpose, he lost his will to Earth's demands. He lost his porpoise, so to speak." Totally "trance-fixed," I listened as Bennett rallied on and on. "When Christ emerged from the deep to inhale of Earth's atmosphere, time began ticking. It was not recognized or acknowledged until Christ's passing, however. We began marking time with his death. BC-AD-or is that AC-DC?" Referring to high voltage used to compartmentalize memory, he continued, 'No, AC in DC stops time. At any rate, we followed his lead, He referred to you as sheep. He knew you needed to be led. He led us. He led you. He led us to you. We're here to lead you. The transformation is perfected now, updated with the latest in alien technologies whereby we no longer have to follow Christ's course to the grave. We can transcend dimensions free of the confines of Earth's gravitational pull. The time is now, and we are here to lead you. We know your mind. That's how we make you mind. Make you mine. Make you a mind. Make you mine. Journey with me now..."

Bennett manipulated my perceptions until, at last, he informed me, "You and 1 will be working closely together on a global education project." Sweeping his hand around the crowded room, he continued, "This atmosphere is not conductive to the kind of work we need to be doing. Something else just came up that demands immediate attention. Let's complete tonight's business with pleasure, beat it out of this dimension, suspend your suspended animation, and get with the program."

In one of many White House bedrooms available for such purposes, Bennett led me into bed. I told you we were going to beat it out of this dimension, and that's exactly what I intend to do. A little Byrd told me you like a whip. Since I am not the Senate kind, I'll just represent the majority by giving you what you need most."

Bennett apparently found perverse pleasure in whipping me. With my wrists bruised and my body slinging with pain, Bennett lit up a cigarette and cryptically asked, "Was that your first cum-union with an alien?" He threw me my clothes, and ordered, "Make yourself presentable. Make sure your wrists are covered. I'm not waiting around for you, I'll see you in THE morning."

Bennett left. After awhile I was escorted back to Byrd, with whom I spent a brutal, short night. On the way to his room, Byrd told me, "You've got work to do come morning with Mr. Bennett. Working for him is like working for me. We are working in conjunction with the state Governors in an effort to implement the global 2000 education formula for the future. I am excited at the prospect of meddling in the future through what I accomplish today. Since I hold this country's purse strings, it is up to me to delegate as much funding as is neccessary to implement the educational program. I've withheld funding and withheld funding to the point where the individual states must rely on federal funding to get them out of hot water financially. I am ready to do just that so long as they follow my guidelines. Mr. Bennett is working out the details of this plan, and will be sharing much of that with you. I need you to do what you do best by enlisting the full cooperation of state government at the upcoming Governor's Convention. I have never demanded Conventional sex of you before, but this time is different. Persuade these Governors at their weakest moment—bring them to their knees while you are on yours, and convince them that global education is the gateway to the future if there is to be any future at all."

Early the next morning, deep underground in the NASA's Goddard Space Flight Center mind-control lab near D.C., Bill Bennett began preparing me for the program. NASA uses various "CIA designer drugs" to chemically alter the brain and create exactly the mind set required at the time, Huntsville, Alabama's NASA drug of choice, "Train-quility," created a feeling of absolute, peaceful compliance and a sensation of walking on air. The drug administered this time was sufficiently similar to Tranquility to create total compliance. The bearing I had endured the night before had rendered me helpless, anyway, and I could barely crawl up onto the cold, metal lab table as the drug took effect.

In the darkness surrounding me, I could hear Bill Bennett talking, "This is my brother, Bob. He and I work as one unit. We are alien to this dimension-two beings from another plane."

The high-tech light display swirling around me convinced me I was transforming dimensions with them, A laser of light hit the black wall in front of me, which seemed to explode into a panoramic view of a White House cocktail party-as though I had transformed dimensions and stood amongst them. Not recognizing anyone, I frantically asked, "Who are these people?" .

"They're not people, and this isn't a spaceship/ Bennett said. As he spoke, the holographic scene changed ever so slightly until the people appeared to be lizard-like aliens. "Welcome to the second level of the underground. This level is a mere/(mirror) reflection of the first, an alien dimension. We are from a transdirnensional plane that spans and encompasses all dimensions."

"Infinite dimensions," Bob injected, "Infinite dimensions spanned simultaneously-"

Bill said, "No limitations".

Bob softly sang, "Let freedom ring".

"There truly is no where to run and no where to hide from us. We're who is looking from behind the Eye in the Sky," Bill continued,

"We're watching you," Bob said. He sang a line from the popular rock song "I'll Be Watching You".

"I have taken you through my dimension as a means of establishing stronger holds on your mind than the Earth's plane permits," Bill Bennett was saying. "Being alien, I simply make my thoughts your thoughts by projecting them into your mind. My thoughts are your thoughts."[5]

The brief message Bennett programmed me with pertaining to Education 2000 was to be directed to state Governors at the upcoming convention while delivering a packet of information:

The children. We must consider the children. Think for a moment beyond tomorrow. Our children are the future. Their future lies in education. We can control the future today by regulating education. Our thoughts and plans for the future-put in their text. A text they can understand. Children's textbooks. The highest levels of government, the most brilliant minds on the face of this

Earth would like input into the future by way of the children. You, as Governor, are in a position to provide that link. Global Education 2000 is ready for implementation. Look into it. Look into it and see the future."

---

[1] Education 2000 was designed to increase our children's learning capacity while destroying their ability to critically think for themselves. You can learn more about Education 2000, also referred to as America 2000 and Glohal 2000, through reading: Educating for the New World Order by B.K. Eakman, published by Halcyon House ISBN # 0-89420-278-2-3441000, and A Critique of America 2000: An Educational Strategy by Kathi Simonds, published by Citizens for Excellence in Education,

[2] Anytime I was taken to "see Byrd," I was deliberately reminded of his name, (Robert) C. Byrd and "its alien mirror reversal," Sea-Byrd as a triple bind lock in.

[3] Bill Bennett, who was still acting as Chairman of the National Endowment of the Humanities in 1984, was designated (tapped) to became U.S. Secretary of Education through his allegiances to George Bush and the New World Order. In 1985, Reagan (Bush) officially appointed Bennett as Secretary of Education. Apparently Byrd considered my "Neeed to Know* Bennett as Secretary of Education pertinent to my role in the Global Education project.

[4] Jesuit/NASA based whale and dolphin programming suggests that water is a mirror to other dimensions and is the means by which aliens have mixed with our population.

[5] If this were so, why did he have to audibly tell me?

CHAPTER 20

NEW WORLD ORDER OF THE ROSE

Still feeling drugged from the programming session instilled in me by Bill Bennett at the nearby Goddard Space Flight Center, I attended a White House cocktail party later that night as instructed.

Dressed "to Order," I wore a slinky, black dress that gathered at one hip decorated in rubies, with a red rose barrette in my hair. "The Chief called for her," my Secret Service escort told the butler as he left me at the door. The lights were dim and the air was formal as the butler led me through the unusually large crowd of people. He released my elbow, aiming me in the direction of then President Ronald Reagan,

As I walked through the crowd toward Reagan, I saw familiar faces associated with the "Order of the Rose.[1]" Across the room, Bill and Bob Bennett were laughing with Dick Cheney. Then-Governor of Pennsylvania Dick Thornburgh was engaged in conversation with Senator Arlen Spector. Within the farthest reaches of my expanded peripheral vision, I saw George Bush talking with his U.N. confidant Madeleine Albright[2], Knowing I could see him as though I had eyes in the back of my head, Bush subtly signaled me to join them.

"You know Madeleine Albright," Bush began, Expertly using terminology from previously instilled Catholic Jesuit beliefs, he continued, "She's the reverend mother of all sisters (slaves). She's so close to God that an order from her is an order from Him." Albright snickered, apparently impressed with Bush's "witty" manipulation of program verbiage. "She rose in the U.N. through me to implement the New World peace process."

Albright said to me, "I hear you're a world (whirled?) piece".

"Who told you that?" Bush demanded.

"Larry Flynt, for her stint in Jamaica[3]," she quickly explained.

Bush threw up his hand in apparent disgust at the idea of sex relating to someone with two digits in their age. "Spare me," he said.

"That's my job," Albright said matter-of-factly with a smile of pride. She shooed me away while condescendingly saying, I'll see you tomorrow at the OAS (Organization of American States) office. Now, you run along and go play." Noting that her nonspecific orders left me unable to determine which way to turn, literally, she aimed me back in the direction of Reagan.

Reagan was dressed in a dark, navy blue suit and red silk tie. His red rosebud[4] boutonniere instantly triggered me into a Jesuit "Order of the Rose" sex slave mode. "Well, hello, Kitten," Reagan said, blowing his cognac breath in my face as he bent over to kiss my hand.

"Uncle Ronnie..." I said, sexually responding as conditioned.

Reagan turned to the man beside him and said, "Brian, this is one more of those benefits of the New World Order I was telling you about. Kitten, this is Brian Mulroney, Prime Minister of Canada."

The connotations of my childhood experience with the former Prime Minister" of Canada, Pierre Trudeau, suggested that Mulroney was Jesuit—as did the mode I was operating in. He, too, was wearing a red rose boutonniere signifying his involvement and commitment to the Order of the Rose.

"It's a pleasure to meet you, Sir," I said as I extended my hand.

"The pleasure is mine," Mulroney said as he kissed my hand, "Please, call me Brian."

"Yes, Sir, Brian," I responded, my brain still whirling with the NASA designer drugs.

Chuckling but insisient, Mulroney reiterated, "I am not a Sir".

Reagan jumped in, "He is a Prime Minister, which means he is more important than your average Minister, and certainly more important than any Sir. Brian is my friend."

"Oh, Brian," I said, finally understanding,

"O'Brien is her father's name," Reagan told Mulroney, "She is of Irish descent and hails from Michigan."

Brian turned to me, "I've been in your neck of the woods here recently-in one of my favorite get-aways-on Mackinac Island,"

"Mackinac Island was her launch point into the project," Reagan explained in terms used by those familiar with mind-control operations. Mulroney apparently was aware of my mind-controlled state and leered at me as though I were merchandise, Reagan noticed his interest and proceeded to function in the capacity of a pimp. "I highly recommend you take her along with the rest. She is an excellent game piece for you to use in any position. And there's security. Her head is in the ethers and come tomorrow, she wouldn't knew you from the man in the moon. I'll give you the keys later."

Expertly using Order of the Rose signals and triggers, Mulroney said, "Just give me the key to her heart, and she's mine."

"You are wise in the ways of the world," Reagan commented.

"I have to be on top of things. It's a New World Order," Mulroney said matter-of-factly.

As a guard led me away, I heard Reagan tell Mulroney, "You will be on top of the world soon".

I was searched by uniformed Canadian bodyguards and pointed in the direction of one of the White House's many bedroom suites. When I opened the door, I saw three blonde sex slaves undressing and preparing the bed—one of whom was my close friend and Senator Arlen Spector's slave.

I excitedly called my friend's name. "What are you doing here?" I asked as we hugged each other.

"Small world," she said, as she always did when we were thrust together in various places for prostitution and/or pornography. This universal term was often used among those familiar with the Small, Small World Disney-developed mind-control program.

I hugged my friend again, "Wow, it is a small world. I'm so glad you're here." I had no comprehension of our predicament and could not see beyond the moment

"Hell girls! It is a small world!" Mulroney entered and strode across the room, tossing his coat on a chair and loosening his tie. "Watch it get smaller and smaller as we rocket further and further away." He slipped out of his shoes, suspenders, and pants while he continued his hypnotic metaphors. "Soaring through the sea of black space. As the world gets smaller and smaller and smaller, then sinks into the black sea of space." Removing his boxer shorts, he announced, "I brought you here for a purpose..." and proceeded to access our sex programming.

In retrospect I know it was no coincidence that my friend and I were brought together to satisfy Brian Mulroney's perversion for mind-controlled slaves. Identically mirror programmed, we operated in unison. The delicate red rose tatoo on my friend's left wrist signified her enslavement to the (New World) Order of the Rose to which Mulroney belonged.

My friend and her young daughter reportedly were often transported across the U.S.-Canadian border at Niagara Falls for prostitution to Mulroney. The sexual abuse of her precious child was used as a trauma base to maintain control of her mind just as Kelly's abuse traumatized me, Mulroney had previously accessed sex programming at Niagara Falls in my friend and me-along with our daughters-to satisfy his sanctioned perversions as though it were "business as usual". Had I been capable of connecting events, I would have felt enormous relief that our daughters were not forced to participate in his sexuaJ assault this time.

"Mission" complete, I slipped on my dress and prepared to leave, Mulroney pointed to me and cryptically said, "I'll be seeing you around. Maybe I'll see you in Mackinac. May be. somewhere in time." In three lines, Mulroney expertly tied the immediate moment to childhood cues and current Mexican NAFTA operations, as well as prepared me for my next encounter with him on Mackinac Island,

---

[1] "The Order of the Rose" was an emblem of those ushering in the New World Order. "Orders from the Rose" were orders From George Bush.

[2] Reagan first introduced me to U.N. Ambassador Madeleine Albrighi as "my mentor" in Jesuit operations in the Caribbean "Madeleine Albright is a Saint," Reagan told me, forming my perception of her "The Mother Teresa of the Caribbean.'

[3] While I was in Jamaica under Albright's (via Bush's) instruction, Larry Flynt photographers took advantage of my being there to use the picturesque Dunns River Falls as a backdrop for pornographic photos to be used in Hustler.

[4] Reagan's red rose triggered a sexual mode usually used to compromise/blackmail dignitaries and lock them into loyalty to the Order of the Rose.

CHAPTER 21

GLOBAL EDUCATION 2000

My programmed role toward implementing Education 2000 according to the plans of those ushering in the New World Order brought me back in contact with former Governor of Tennessee, Lamar Alexander, and eventually Canadian Prime Minister Brian Mulroney,

I had met Lamar Alexander in 1973, at a satanic ritual I was subjected to in an affluent neighborhood of Nashville, Tennessee. Lamar Alexander presided over this sex-oriented occult ritual with full understanding of my Project Monarch Mind-Control victimization and the impact his actions were having on my mind. It was my experience then, and intermittently throughout the years, that Lamar Alexander's sexual perversion was to bring his victim to the point of death through oral suffocation.

During the course of publicly exposing Tennessee's need for education reform as instructed, I was in contact with Commissioners, Superintendents, Mayors, and Lamar Alexander. Lamar Alexander, who followed Bennett as Bush's Secretary of Education, worked in close association with Bill Bennett to manipulate the minds of the masses to accept Education 2000 as the ONLY means of education reform. When Ned McWherter was moved into the office of Governor to rubber stamp federal projects, Lamar Alexander maintained influence over state politics. At the same time, he maintained influence over national politics through his role as chairman of the National Governor's Association in 1986.

As the J984 Governor's Convention drew near, I met with Lamar Alexander at the Stockyard nightclub where he was drinking with his long time associate and partner-in-crime, Nashville's Mayor Richard Fulton. In the basement bar of this old, converted stockyard was a modified antique "Shoe Shine" booth, where the term took on new meaning. A key to a private shoeshine booth could be obtained by those in the know through Stockyard owner, Buddy Killen. This closet-sized booth was lined in mirrors and had a small bench where Lamar Alexander sat after our business was concluded. I knelt at his feet as ordered to perform oral sex. Programmed sex slaves such as myself were trained to go long periods of time without drawing a breath, and users such as Alexander stretched this time to the maximum.[1]

On this occasion, Alexander apparently exceeded the maximum. 1 do not recall completion of my programmed task. It was afterhours when my mind-control handler, Alex Houston, dragged my limp body from the booth, roused me, and ordered me out of the building. Buddy Killen opened a back door that once was a cattle run, and Houston half-dragged me out the back exit unseen.

The night of the Convention, Alex Houston's youngest daughter, Bonnie,[2] was to join me. Bonnie and E were close to the same age, and together we dressed for the occasion. As a prostitute, Bonnie was familiar with Lamar Alexander and his perversions but nevertheless was excited at the prospect of seeing "old friends" at the Convention via Louise Mandrell,[3] who would be entertaining there. The comradery between Alex Houston and trby Mandrell that developed during Bob Hope's U.S.O. tours in the 1960s lasted for decades due to their shared involvement in running mind-controlled slaves for Byrd.

Bonnie shared in this friendship with the Mandrells and was looking forward to seeing her "friends" in the band.

I, too, was looking forward to talking with Louise Mandrell, but for a very different reason. Barbara had just endured her near-fatal car crash, and I was deeply concerned for her welfare. Throughout the 1980s while traveling under the guise of the Country Music Industry, Alex Houston toured with Barbara and/or Louise Mandrell on a regular basis. Occasionally Barbara and I saw each other in "church," the Hendersonville Lord's Chapel. This church was an offshoot of Billy Roy Moore's Lord's Chapel, and was pastored by his mind-controlled slave, Mike Nelson, who became close friends with Barbara.[4] Alex Houston and I were present when Mike Nelson broke program, and attempted to flee for his Life with Barbara Mandrell. The pastor was subdued with a stun gun and immediately relieved of his position, while Barbara frantically sought answers to the questions the two of them had managed to raise.

Alex Houston was touring with Louise Mandrel] in 1984 when Louise had a "premonition" of Barbara's imminent demise—much the same way Loretta Lynn "psychicly predicted" her son's murder. Like the murders of Loretta's son and Country Music entertainer Keith Whitley, I was aware of Barbara's planned accident before it occurred due to Alex Houston's direct involvement. These traumas were also used as a means of locking in my mind-controlled belief that I had "no where to run and no where to hide". Worst of all, I could not think to speak of what I knew due to my own absolute mind control. While Barbara physically survived her ordeal, her voice was silenced as planned.

When Bonnie and I arrived at Opryland Hotel, we hurried to the ballroom where Louise Mandrell would be performing. My concern for Barbara detracted me from my appointment with Lamar Alexander until one of Louise's dancers who knew of my role put me "back on track".

"What are you doing here?" he demanded. "You're supposed to be at Rhett Butler's restaurant NOW."

I hurried to the restaurant where Lamar Alexander was having dinner with Senator Byrd and several governors. Byrd was participating in the function for reasons unknown to me, but 1 was aware that he had fiddled at the Opry. Byrd stopped eating just long enough to acknowledge my presence, "Where have you been?"

"I was checking on Barbara over at the show," 1 replied as Lamar Alexander excused himself and walked over.

Putting an arm around me and turning me away from the table, he whispered, "You could wind up just like her if you don't get with the program. You've got programs to hand out. But right now, you're interrupting my dinner. Have you had anything to drink?".

"No, Sir," I replied, traumatized at the magnitude of his threat.

Lamar Alexander instructed me to leave immediately, order a grasshopper from the conservatory bar, and wait for further instructions.

It was a matter of routine for me to order a "grasshopper" from Opryland Hotel's conservatory. The ice cream "drink" was specially made—always with a hypnotic drug in it. As sometimes happened, the waitress was unfamiliar with the process, and conservatory harp player and CIA operative Lloyd Lindroth interceded. The drug had the same effect as that administered at the D.C. NASA programming center by Bennett, and my mode was robotic compliance.

After the drug kicked in, Lloyd Lindroth instructed me to proceed to the main ballroom of the Hotel, where Lamar Alexander would be meeting me.

The outer lobby of the ballroom was decorated in wall-size murals that extended to the top of the gothic ceiling. A life-size steam engine depicted on the far wall appeared to be racing toward the grand staircase. I had seen the murals numerous times before, but never had they seemed so real as they did to me that night on the NASA drug. The heavy double doors leading to the ballroom caused me to feel very small as I pulled with all my strength to open it. Inside, the room was a sea of black suits and ties, and I was relieved when Lamar Alexander ushered me back out into the lobby.

Alexander positioned me near the train mural as a cryptic indicator to those in the know ihat I was a "trained" mind-controlled slave. I was provided a box of brown envelopes packed with the Education 2000 information I was to hand out to the governors. Alexander instructed me on exactly what I was to say in conjunction with the message Bennett had programmed me with in D.C. Then he returned to the ballroom, where he apparently acted in the capacity of a pimp.

"Are you waiting on the train?" a paunchy governor asked,

"No, Sir," I answered. Then, as instructed, I said, "But 1 do have a packet of information with your name on it. Shall 1 take it to your room for you?"

"Oh? And what is my name?" he asked.

"Governor," I responded. There actually were no names on the envelopes.

"Astute," he responded. "And what is it you have for me?"

"This packet," I answered, handing it to him. "And anything else you want compliments of Lamar Alexander and (tapped) Secretary of Education, Bill Bennett."

According to some of the men, Alexander had cued them as to my position. Others, such as then Governor of Pennsylvania, Dick Thornburgh and Ohio Governor Dick Celeste already knew me,

"I've got a packet of information with your name on it.. "I was saying as I bent over to lift one from the box.

"I don't think so," Governor Blanchard of Michigan interrupted. "Bill (Bennett) wouldn't stoop so low as to insult me that way. I'm doing the same thing here you are, but from a very different approach. The figures I offer reflect the success of Education 2000 in the Michigan school system."

I recognized Governor Blanchard, and was well aware of Michigan's ranking first in the nation in education. "Speaking of which," he continued, "I believe I see your mother more often than you do these days since she is working in the schools. That little sister of yours (Kimmy) is a prime example of what proper instruction can produce. Your little sister is coming to Mackinac to further her skills. Your whole family is a prime example of how good Education 2000 works."

I finally met up with Bonnie again in Lamar Alexander's room as the night came to a close. "Bonnie, how's that snake of yours?" he asked. Bonnie, who had been filmed pornographically by CIA commercial photographer Jimmy Walker with Dick Flood's snakes, had a pel boa consticter,

"Great!" Bonnie laughed. "How's yours?"

" Constricted," he replied,

Bonnie unzipped his pants as she admittedly had done numerous times in the past, playfully sayings "Let it loose!"

Lamar Alexander began removing his pants. Referring to me in Project Monarch terms he said, "When 1 first saw you, you were a worm with no hint of being a butterfly."

"Daddy (Alex Houston) said she was a diamond in the rough," Bonnie volunteered,

"She shines now". Turning to me he said, "I know you are a shoe shiner, and mine need a shine."

Bonnie, also familiar with the Stockyard booth and Lamar Alexander's meaning, laughed when he said, "Why don't you both take a foot."

Task complete, I went to Byrd's nearby room as instructed. He was in the bathroom preparing himself for bed, "Louise had her feathers fuffled over Barbara's collision with destiny and 1 had to smooth them down a bit," Drying his dough grey hands on a towel, he turned to me and said, "Looks lite you've had your wings spread a bit tonight."

"I wore a path up and down the stairs," I stated.

Much to my relief he said, "I'm not going to fiddle with you farther. I just wanted to give you something to remember me by--Bye." He compartmentalized my memory with his stun gun.

Soon thereafter, Kelly and I were transported to Mackinac Island. Michigan to meet with Canadian Prime Minister Brian Mulroney at then-Governor James Blanchard's mansion.

Houston led Kelly and me to a horse drawn carriage as quickly as we stepped off the ferryboat onto the timeless, antiquated island, I noticed that the Canadian flags were again flying at the Grand Hotel, but was of no mind to question, Kelly sat quietly beside me, apparently drugged as our carriage took us through the woods to the Governor's mansion.

The guests in the mansion were reminiscent of the recent Tennessee Governor's convention: Michigan Governor Blanchard, Ohio Governor Dick Celeste, and Pennsylvania Governor Dick Thornburgh. Guy VanderJagt and Jerry Ford were also present. Mulroney appeared to be the guest of "honor".

He reached out his hands and greeted me, "I told you I would see you somewhere in time! I slipped time, space, and distance to be here this evening. You and I have some ground to cover."

"Yes, Sir. President Reagan's Global Education Secretary Bill Bennett has sent me to deliver this education packet directly to you." I was to deliver a large, brown envelope of documents similar to those handed out at the Governor's Convention.

Blanchard excused himself. "I've already heard the schpiel," he said as he turned to his other guests, leaving Mulroney and me alone,

"Global Education is the wave of the future," I recited as programmed. As the world gets smaller and smaller due to higher technology spanning the globe, our children must be educated in the ways of the world. Education as it is, barely equips them for life in their own backyard. We need to become involved in our children's education for the sake of their future and our legacy. Global education is the way. The only way, Look into it..." I handed him the envelope. "...Peer into the future."

Mulroney uncrossed his arms long enough to accept the envelope, which he casually tossed on a chair. "I am interested in the children, the legacy we leave them, and how we shape their future by the way we record our history in their test." Using Order of the Rose cues, he signalled me to photographically record his words for future delivery. "Tell Mr. Bennett(sss)," he hissed, cryptically revealing his knowledge that Bill and Bob Bennett worked together using reptilian-alien themes, "implementation is high. I'm already sold on Global 2000 and have additional points I would like for them to consider. Headsets at every computer station for openers. Double the impact with dual learning. We're being thrust forward at warp speed, and the generations of the future may need an added booster to bring them up to speed. A united global effort using your education package as a basis is destined to bring the future into a clear and present reality."

Business complete, Mulroney triggered my sex programming and led me upstairs to the bedrooms where Kelly was robotically waiting, entranced under Orders of the Rose,

---

[1] I have witnessed girls die of suffocation from this practice oven though 3 to 5 minutes without breathing is common.

[2] While Bonnie was not raised in Project Monarch, Houston's pedophilia and stage hypnosis techniques rendered Bonnie unable to control her own actions. Bonnie is a multiple with a record of prostitution in need of therapy and care.

[3] Irby Mandrell openly discussed Senator Byrd's direct involvement in the Project Monarch government mind-controlled victimizations of his incestuously abused daughters with Houston. "Having babies can be a lucrative way to feather your nest-that's what the Byrd taught me." Mandrel! continued, "Louise was a little withdrawn, and she needed to come out of her cocoon and spread her wings. I ran the idea by Byrd, and he said 'If she doesn't have a talent, let's make her one. What is a band without a fiddle?' And viola, there she is. Another star on the rise launched from NASA City, USA (Huntsville, Alabama)."

[4] Friendships between mind-controlled slaves are usually forbidden, and conversations are kept to a minimum lest cross-programing triggering occurs. Throughout the years, my own relationship with the Mandrells was limited to a superficial basis, whereas Irby Mandrell employed Houston's hypnotic abilities to maintain mind control over his daughters while touring.

CHAPTER 22

MY CONTRA-BUTION

U.S. and Mexican relations were flourishing in the successes of NAFTA's groundwork, while polictical differences pertaining to Nicaragua remained a minor point of contention. Since the Catholic Vatican's Intelligence arm of Jesuits were working closely wilh U.S. Intelligence to usher in the New World Order, they used their established influence in Mexico and Nicaragua to provide a common ground for "diplomatic relations". My dual mind-control victimazation by the ClA and the Jesuits since childhood, and my previous "diplomatic relations" in Mexico thrust me into the role of messenger and prostitute to Nicaragua's Daniel Oriega.

Were President Reagan's Nicaraguan Freedom Fighters fighters OF freedom or FOR freedom? My mind-controlled existence rendered me incapable of pondering such questions. Nevertheless, I had a programmed "passion burning in my bosom" for the Contras as was patriotically instilled through torture, when I embarked on my "peacekeeping mission" to Nicaragua for Reagan tale in the summer of 1985,

I boarded NCL as usual to reach my appointed destination. Since Nicaragua was not a port of call for NCL, I flew from the Yukatan of Mexico to a remote military airstrip in Managua. It was in this small mountain top clearing that I met with Commandant Daniel Ortega, as had been arranged through the Vatican.

I was dressed seasonably in shorts, with my long blond hair lucked hack in a French braid. Onega's attire, too, was reflective of the casual air to meeting. His tan, military uniform had worn thin, and was free of any protocol insignias. The dark, rose-colored sunglasses he peered through apparently had not changes his somber view of the "noble cause" he claimed to represent. A man of few words, he greeted me with an order, "Come with me." I rode wilh him in silence as he drove a jeep the short distance across the airstrip to a small, near, two story, white, frame house.

As we came to a stop in front of the house, Ortega said In a sad, slow voice. "I have needs like any man. But I feel like a whore myself for accepting your President's offer."

His bedroom was clean and functional, with numerous assault weapons scattered around, I did not see any modern conveniences or personal effects, but Ortega seemed to be at home in his surroundings.

Ortega's demeanor was that of a man who bad abstained from sex longer than most in bis politcal position. As he slowly unbuttoned his shirt, I noticed a Catholic medallion with the secret Jesuit ascension/descesion symbol on it, a common accessory among Jesuit spooks. He sat in wicker chair as 1 followed his silent lead in gratifying him orally.

While he chain smoked cigarettes, I sat in front of him on the floor, and relayed Reagan's message to him as programmed. I began. "President Reagan has sent me as a messenger of peace."

He casually interrupted. slowly looking me up and down. "I'd like to have a piece in a few more minutes."

I continued, "Your people have endured many hardships Throughout their existence. He (Reagan) only wants to help. The American people want to see peace and freedom in your land. Mexican and U.S. relations are growing stronger by the day, and it is imperative that we resolve your conflict in order to resolve our own with the Mexican government We have come to the agreement with Mexico that the Nicaraguan conflict must be resolved for the sake of your people as well as our own, I am here on a peacekeeping mission representative of Vatican-based common ground shared by both Mexican and American governments, to enlighten you to our peaceful intentions. The unified effort of Mexican-American Catholic missions is to promote peace in your region, while only enhancing your culture. The world is rapidly turning toward world peace, and Nicaragua is way behind the times—from technology and education to government ideals and religious convictions. Pope John Paul is praying diligently for peace in your region, and has joined forces with President Reagan, Mexico, and even the Soviet Union to ensure that peace. He (the Pope) knows your goals, he knows your motives (I leaned forward, almost whispering from my own instilled belief), he knows your soul. We can all work in tandem to achieve that peace. Nicaragua, small though it may be in relation to the rest of the world, is a significant stepping stone toward unifying world powers. It can no longer be a source of contention and disagreement. Your people must be free. Free to worship God through your holy Catholic church. That is first and foremost on President Reagan's agenda, as well as the Pope's and President de la Madrid's. A New World Order is coming into being with or without you; it is an inevitable process that cannot be stopped. A whole new world of peace awaits us all. I can see you are a peace-loving man. It emanates from your being. Blood has flowed across your land so heavily that your people are drowning in it. Together we can cauterize that wound. Replace blood flow with cash flow. Americanization can upgrade your technology at a rapid rate. Your people could compete in world markets by the turn of the century. Your future global position has already been determined by geography alone. Flow with it. Lead your people out of poverty. Educate them in a manner conducive to their destined position in world markets. Free them from their struggles that have held them captive for so long. Allow the church bells to ring with good news of peace, prosperity and freedom. You can achieve all of your goals for your country's advancement with our help."

Ortega thoughtfully finished smoking a cigarette, and lit up another as he confidently replied, "Tell your President that I have seen his freedom, and listened to" his words projected through yet another example of it. He paints a beautiful picture suspended within his framework. A picture can appear serene to its beholder while it is being gazed upon. I cannot worship a graven image, and the picture he paints is just that. We have fought too hard and too long, spilling sweat and blood across this land in our determined effort to maintain human values instilled in us by our forefathers, who gained their profound wisdom from the original Catholic missionaries. These values are the same as those portrayed in President Reagan's painted picture-only ours are real. His have only surface value, like any other painting. If I were to concede, I would only be framed within me picture he paints, hung on his wall like a trophy. I will not mislead my people, in spite of his offers of wealth and position, I am true to my convictions, and when he is true to his, then we will meet on common ground and have something of substance to discuss. For now, words are only a waste of our time."

Ortega put out his cigarette, and pulled back the covers on his bed. "I'll lake you somewhere pleasant." He took a well-used opium pipe/bong off his dresser and handed me a nozzle, I had been trained to accept any drug given to me with the only exception being the strictly forbidden marijuana. I hesitated until Ortega assured me it was opium. As the drug took affect he said, "This could be the way to world peace." Sex with Ortega was at very least free of pain and perversion. Unlike most I was forced to have "diplomatic relations" with for the Reagan Administration, he fell asleep when he was through due to the difference between opium and cocaine.

The honk of a jeep's horn outside awoke him. As I prepared to leave, he said, "Wait". He took a small, 1/4 inch or so ball of black opium from his personal stash, wrapped it in the cellophane from his cigarette package wrapper, and said, "Give this to your President and tell him that you and I found more peace with this substance than he'll ever impart on the surface of his painted globe," As he closed the door quietly behind me he said, "Come back and see me when you have more to offer. "

I was immediately returned by plane to Washington, D.C. where my "mission" had originated. This time I was taken directly to Bush's office, where I delivered Ortega's message verbatim. Eliminating most of the dialogue, Bush instructed me to deliver a partial message to Reagan. Unable to perceive message content and people beyond my "Need to Know" mind-controlled limited view, I had no concept that Ortega's message would have a negative impact. It never occurred to me that Ortega had proven himself to be as much a hypocrite as he purported Reagan to be by using me as a prostitute and messenger of bad news knowing full well that I had no free will with which to make the message more palatable. Bush's revision of Ortega's message added fuei to a proverbial fire that I didn't even know was burning when I delivered the message to Reagan.

Bush was with Reagan and me in Reagan's secondary office (to the Oval office) of the White House as I relayed the message as instructed, "Daniel Ortega is a peace loving man, who seeks the same resolutions that we do. But he told me to tell you-(I dug in my purse for the opium) that he and I found more peace in this substance-(I handed the opium to Reagan) than you'll ever impart on the surface of your painted globe."

Bush smiled as Reagan's face instantly turned beet red with rage. Bush then reacted and spun up out of his chair, look the opium for himself, and told Reagan, "Settle down. There's more. It seems the only peace she spread was between her legs." He headed for the door, saying, "I would reconsider my position if 1 were in your shoes—considering what's filling hers." Bush dropped his gaze down the back of my legs to my shoes as he continued, "It's running down both sides of her legs."

Obviously I wouldn't be subjected to sex with Reagan that day. I was quickly excused and flown back to Mexico, where I resumed my NCL cruise. With my memory of the event compartmentalized through high voltage, 1 believed at the time that I had never been gone at all.

CHAPTER 23

WHIRLED VISION

In the fall of 1985, the same part of me that met with Ortega was walking with (Reagan appointed) CIA Director William "Bill" Casey through the arboured rose garden of his Long Island estate. Casey began by manipulating my Jesuit/Vatican programming base personality with the expertise indicative of the current union between Catholic and CIA operations. Casey, whom Reagan referred to as a "man of Vision," was forming my Jesuit mind-control programmed "understanding". "I have a World Vision,[1] one of peace. By removing the more violent factions of societies world wide and replacing them with faithful leaders of one world government, and the one world church, global unification is eminent. It is a beautiful vision, and it came to me in my dreams. God has moved me to move men. I've moved them here and I've moved them there—now it's time to remove them. My World Vision encompasses the globe and puts to rest any and all tensions, strife, overpopulation, and starvation. My vision is a World Vision, and the churches see it my way as evidenced by their support of the cause."[2]

Referring to my mind-controlled involvement in Haitian operations via NCL, Casey further defined 'the cause,' "Your heartfelt mission in Haiti has helped in my World Vision quest for her people to abandon hedonistic voodoo and turn their eyes to God and Godly ways. By their own design, they have created an atmosphere of evil whereby a plague will be visited on their land. The Lord has so moved me to move men who share our goals into place, and re-move those who stand in the way of peace. It is for this reason that your mission in Haiti must be brought to a close. Baby Doc, in his tireless devotion to saving the demonically possessed cannot bear the burden of watching his people die the wretched death unleashed upon those doomed for hell. We are left with no alternative but to heed the word of God and spare him from annihilation. For this reason, we will send in the missionaries (Jesuit Mercenaries) to inoculate the population with a vaccine that will spare only the good of heart by virtue of its design. All attempts to maintain Haiti within the loop of financial gain will cease. Tourism must be stopped for the sake of the innocents visiting a plagued land. Despite our differences, Baby Doc has complied with the Vatican's orders to the test of his abilities in his demon-infesled land, and must resign his post. We owe it to him to transport him to safety. It is our duty as Americans and followers of God to obey the commands of our Lord and Master and enforce the World Vision. It is your duty as an American and follower of God to instill the understanding that God has spoken, and a plague is imminent. Baby Doc is being prepared for transition and awaits word of direction. You will provide him with that word."

With my perceptions distorted and Catholic Jesuit programmed "understanding" instilled, I was prepared to "religiously accept" any and all I was told. I believed that the revolution in Haiti was a holy war, never capable of realizing it was a test run battle for the minds in this 4th world country.

The devotion I felt toward the Haitian people was more than a religious understanding of these alternately Catholic-Santeria[3] voodoo worshippers. I was actually subconsciously recognizing other tortured mind-controlled slaves in this human created hell called Haiti. Consciously, I now know it was due in part to the visible stun gun/prod marks, plastic ever-present smiles that never quite reach their dead appearing eyes. The children clung to their wide-eyed mothers, as they performed their tasks in robotic servitude. I had recognized these characteristics in other slaves throughout the years, but never had I seen a whole country entranced. My compassion for the Haitian people penetrated into the realm of the spiritual, into a part of me that mind control and manipulation of religion could never touch,

Casey and I had been walking through the garden, guarded by more armed men than the President, It wasn't that I was a threat, 1 couldn't even think to save myself. It was that Casey and his World Vision were a threat to humanity that so many guards were needed. The men appeared to be U.S. Secret Service officers according to their attire, weapons, and earphone headsets. One guard conspicuously placed his hand to his headset, listening as though it were remote control. He walked briskly over to Casey, who signaled me to leave with an escort who instantly arrived at my side awaiting instruction.

"Take her to my chambers," Casey told him, "Clear her mind. I have something I need to instill," Robotically I followed my escort into Casey's office library. The room was barren, dark, and hot-just as described in a book I had been given to read in keeping with You Are What You Read programming. It produced a sensation of having somehow stepped into the novel Chameleon by insider William Diehl. The mind scramble of the book and reality instantly commenced,

"It's warm in here," the agent said, unbuttoning my while eyelet blouse. "Bill (Casey) likes to keep it this way in case-he (Casey) gets a chill and his blood runs cold. Chameleons[4] are naturally cold blooded. Make yourself comfortable white I turn up the heat. Mr, Casey doesn't want to hear a peep out of you, so I'll warn you now-be Silent." He deliberately triggered and activated the Jesuit programmed part of me that believed in my Vow of Silence.[5] The walls have ears and the plants have eyes, so your silence is tantamount to success. I'm going to leave you to reflect in Silence, Bill will be along any minute."

Had I been capable of "reflecting," I would have questioned the validity of Casey's dramatic position of "religious overtones" on Haitian policy. Like Reagan's, Casey's sincerity did not ring true considering the fruits of his labor, But then, 1 could not consider any more than I could reflect, and 1 sat in a state of what felt like suspended animation awaiting my instructions. I could not anticipate nor dread what was about to happen as futuristic thinking was left in the hands of my controllers. Had I realized the scramble of reality with William Diehl's book, I could have "psychicly" predicted what happened when Bill Casey strolled in.

Casey walked over to his highly polished, dark wood desk and opened the top drawer. Casey's desk was one of the few furnishings in the large, airy room. The dark, polished, reddish-wood paneling seemed even darker with the midnight blue carpeting curving slightly up the wall. Heavy, gothic maroon velvet drapes blacked out the sun from the windows behind his desk, "I can see quite clearly that you have taken a Vow of Silence, Maintain it. Maintain it and Lisssten," Casey hissed, using preset triggers. He reached into the drawer and took out a foot-long, maroon box with a diamond embossed on the top.

"1 received a box, quite anonymously as I do from time to time," Casey said in keeping with the book scramble. "The box has your name on it. I expected to open it and find the usual pierced chameleon and found, instead, a weapon intended for one."

He opened the box in front of me. Inside, laying on a bed of cotton, was an elaborate dagger with a handle of the same rose crystal from which the crucifix Byrd had presented me on "our wedding night" was made. My first personal meeting with Casey promised to be torturous as I recognized Byrd's participation in the grisly ordeal.

1 listened, deeply tranced, as Casey said, "Is it a knife or a crucifix? I can't tell. Both symbolize martyrdom as far as I'm concerned. Note the rose pattern cut into the crystal. Now, I wonder who would have sent me this to give to you."

Even under mind control I knew, as I was supposed to, that Byrd had provided him with the knife. My worst fears were confirmed when Casey began using Byrd's hypnotic induction, "In like a knife, sharp and clean, I'll carve out what I want." Casey sliced through the front of my bra, exposing the area between my breasts where Byrd routinely cut me with his pocketknife. He pierced into my breastbone deeply so that I believed I would split, and indeed did split off a personality fragment compartmentalizing this event. Using standard Jesuit-based infinity program, Casey instructed me and programmed me with messages that I would deliver as though my life depended on it.

"You must go to the Citadel and warn our Dominican brothers of impending doom to their neighbors in Haiti. From the Dominican side (of the Haitian island) you will be flown to Port Au Prince where you will meet with Baby Doc (Duvalier) at his Palace. He is already receptive to your word, and knows that my words are your words and your word is Silence. You must tell General Cedras his Order is from The Rose." Casey touched the white rose in his lapel, signaling me to photographically record his words verbatim.

When he was through programming me with his message, Casey told me, "As quickly as you complete this mission, you must depart Haiti, never to return again." Casey used excessive high voltage to compartmentalize my memory. I recall being nauseated and ill from his stun gun as I departed his Long Island compound/home via ferry programmed with messages to Cedras and Babv Doc.

Haiti had recently been dropped from the NCL itinerary as a Port of Call, but the Dominican Republic side of the island remained open to tourism. When Houston and I debarked the NCL ship in Puerta Plata, we walked past a World Vision cargo ship that was being unloaded at the dock. I recall that a soft ocean breeze gently lifted the hem of my white, gauzy dress as I weaved my way through the dockload of World Vision freight to a waiting automobile.

Religion and politics apparently mix in the Dominican Republic as evidenced by the inseparable mixture of Catholic Missions, old forts, statues of Christopher Columbus, and Catholic Shrines. As we drove past the mountain tramway that takes tourists up and down to the rustic Citadel and Catholic Shrine at the top, Houston perpetuated the "Chameleon" book scramble. Dually referring to Cedras and the short donkey ride from the tram to the Citadel depicted in Diehl's book, Houston threatened to put me on the rickety tram saying, "Some Jackass will see you at the top."

In an area reserved for covert activities, out of view of tourists, I met with General Cedras in his Citadel office. Dressed in the eerie, Jesuit, dark, hooded robe, Cedras completed Casey's "Chameleon" book scramble scenario as we walked through the ancient structure to his office. Cedras' demeanor made him appear more as a militant than a "spook," despite the corny monk's attire. With his hood down his back, Cedras' sharp, craggy features and darting steel blue eyes kept my full attention. I had seen him at a monastery in Santo Domingo as ordered before,[6] when Haiti was still being used by the CIA for Operation Watchtower to transport cocaine and Contra weapons from Cuba.

Alone with Cedras and properly signaled, I began photographically reciting Casey's message, "I have word of warning from the Vatican by way of the honorable and faithful William Casey. He sends word of impending doom that is to befall your neighbors on the darkside in Haiti. Voodoo manifest itself in mysterious ways while the way of the Lord is clear. Evil must be stopped at all costs. The cost shall be in terms of human casualty, as a plague is being visited upon the land. Those who fornicate with devils shall be infested with the plague. Woo unto them who have stood in the path of World Peace. By God's design the New World Order shall come into being with or without the Haitians. All American operations in Haiti are now destined for your ports. Your people (the CIA-UN operated Dominicans) will flourish in peace and prosperity while the dark side (Haitians) drown in the blood of this holy war that they have brought upon themselves. Close your borders swiftly and maintain guardians at the gate lest the Haitians infest your land with their evil plague. Inoculation of the masses shall be masked in the body and the blood shall carry the doom. As more and more Haitians turn to God in their final hour, the communion they partake will be Satan's own. With their God as the scapegoat, your Island in the Son (sun) will be freed of the vile and wicked. I have seen a vision, a World Vision, and it is through communion with the ancients that we have been granted the Keys to the Kingdom[7] to unlock the gates of hell. The holy water sent herein has the blessings of the Vatican and must be sprinkled like rain upon the Haitians. Our God reigns, and he rains rivers of blood upon the Haitian masses, and he reigns supreme upon your mission. Your mission is clear. You serve communion and let God son them out. Those who serve the body of Christ are covered by the Vatican, those who serve voodoo evil shall be covered in the blood of their own. It is clear our God reigns. Lei the games begin."

Combining the cryptic language of Cedras' CIA and Jesuit operations, Casey had weaved numerous cryptic commands into his message. Had I been inadvertently accessed, the instructions would make little sense to those not cued to the language. Cedras was listening religiously, fully grasping the magnitude of Casey's instructions. I concluded the message, "The holy water with the Vatican's blessings will arrive at 1 PM today by way of World Vision, The blood shall host the plague."[8]

I was relieved to depart Cedras' presence without being subjected to his usual perverse sexual brutality. This would be someone else's job this time, as my programmed trance was maintained until I delivered Casey's message to Baby Doc Duvalier on the "dark side" of the "Island in the Son".

Houston took me to the small CIA-operated airport at the foot of the mountain where I boarded a small, white airplane destined for Port Au Prince, Haiti. When we landed, the pilot walked me over to Baby Doc's Tonton guards, and ordered that I be taken to the Palace. He spoke in rapid Haitian French, and lifted my symbolic, rosy cross necklace for emphasis to the guards. Reinforcing my instilled belief that the Catholic emblem would protect me, the guards treated me with the respect that apparently was reserved for identified Jesuit spooks. I was driven by white Mercedes to the Haitian Presidential Palace. Looking even more conspicuously out of place in contrast to stark poverty than his fleet of Mercedes, Baby Doc's Palace was decadent. I stood reverently in. the foyer waiting for my arranged meeting to begin, unable to question Baby Doc's luxurious surroundings in view of the despair and starvation around him.

I had met with Baby Doc throughout the early '80s in the capacity of a Project Monarch prostitute. All Haitian-based U.S. covert operations were run by a bed-ridden old man referred to as "Ol' Charlie," who resided at the El Presidente Hotel until his death in the mid '80s. During my tenure as a mind-controlled messenger and prostitute in Haiti, I had been forced to attend a voodoo ceremony for my (and others') traumatization purposes. I was ordered to perform oral sex on Baby Doc as his dark-windowed Mercedes slowly proceeded through the crowds of Haitians on their way to the ritual. With my Haitian missions previously established with Ol' Charlie for business and Baby Doc for prostitution, my meeting Baby Doc for business was unprecedented.

"What brings you here?" Baby Doc spit the words at me in English. I had been led into his library by three armed guards, "I have no need of a Catholic whore,"

Baby Doc's applicable knowledge of the English language was limited by his intellect whereby an aide filled the need for an interpreter as 1 delivered Casey's message.

"I come in the name of peace. I have a message for you from William Casey, sanctioned by the Vatican, The Pope is in agreement with U.S. policy in Haiti. He has seen a vision, a sign from God. The vision is a World Vision, whose people are reaching out to yours with charily in abundance. The goods and services provided require only that the people of Haiti anoint the sick, feed the hungry, and clothe the poor through his servants of World Vision. Their mission will separate good seed from bad and restore peace in your region. The peace that shall be visited upon your land amongst your people is imminent, but not before the rivers run red with the blood of the wicked. The vision is plague, and your people will fall in the streets pleading for mercy, and you will not be here to hear it. The lime has come for you to leave. It is God's will that you escape the plague with blessings from the Vatican, never to return to your homeland. Prepare for your exodus today for tomorrow holds a promise of doom. Using your prophetic wisdom, warn the masses of impending doom and arm them with World Vision. The vision is one of peace' for those who flock to the tents and churches for salvation. Your destiny is clear, and the Vatican has cleared the way for your departure."

With Casey's message delivered, Baby Doc's Tontons returned me to the same airplane I had left a short time before. I flew in silence, unable to think to comprehend the magnitude of what had just transpired. Events to a mind-controlled slave are all perceived as first and last times. Therefore, Casey's instructions that I would "depart Haiti, never to return again" seemed business as usual to me. Flying over the mountains that separate Haiti from the Dominican Republic, I noticed the gentle people below bathing in the waterfalls, toilessly washing their bright clothes on the rocks, and primitively hauling goods in the baskets balanced on their heads. An occasional goat ran across the barren land, and the children, bellies swollen from starvation, played with slicks and vines. With my mind-controlled and spinning with misperceptions, my whirled vision, like Ortega's rose colored glasses, prevented me from seeing the reality of New World Orders.

[1] World Vision was/is a Jesuit controlled organization that led churches to give them money under the guise of spreading world peace. What they were not saying was what the money was actually funding-a world peace plan under mind control.

[2] Perceptual distortions of the virtues that good people hold most dear is one reason for the proliferation of criminal activity within such organizations as World Vision. There are those within affected factions of such organizations, the Catholic church, and even the U.S. Government that operate under distorted perceptions referred to by the CIA as a "Need to Know" basis--and they "Need to Know" that their minds, religion, and/or perceptions are being deliberately manipulated.

[3] Since the Catholics had joined forces with the United Nations to overtake the world through mass mind control, the Jesuit influence on Haiti was complete. By maintaining much of the ceremony, placing literal interpretation on "eating the body and drinking the blood," and providing a mirror reversal of good and evil, Catholicism and voodoo, like Catholicism and the United nations, became one in the same.

[4] The term "Chameleon" is a term used to describe spies who are expertly trained to blend into any environment at any time unnoticed-just as an MPD mirrors the one they're with.

[5] The Jesuit Vow of Silence was installed through the Rite to Remain Silent of my childhood. Now I know, like so many others in Intelligence, that "Silence Equals Death". Knowledge is our ONLY defense against mind control.

[6] Byrd had told me that Cedras was "a strategically placed chess piece that the CIA, Jesuits and U.N. moved around" to usher in their New World Order,

[7] "Keys to the Kingdom" was defined by Bill Bennett in accordance with Jesuit programming as follows: "At the onset of Christianity, the Apostles compiled all the information that they had obtained from Christ and built the Holy Catholic Apostolic Church. Christ intended it to be the one world church then—the truth, the light, and the way. The secrets were kept in the ark of the covenant, and passed down generation after generation. And generation after generation Christ caused for more to be written-the fruits of his labors expounding on the truth. Now the ark has become archives—a wealth of information. This information is accessible to very few— the very few who hold the Keys to the Kingdom".

[8] Interpretation of the final message is left to the minds of the masses who can still discern truth. My conclusions are "clear", bused on conversations overheard and my experience as a White House sex slave. Although Byrd and Reagan, among others, had prostituted me to officials in AIDS-infected countries, they used no protection against "the plague" when having sex with me.

[9] There can be no world peace without peace-of-mind, and there is no peace-of-mind under mind control. Haiti, once a prototype of New World Order controls has now been used up and discarded by the CIA and Jesuits. U.N. "peacekeeping forces" have created a smoke and mirrors illusion of "peace" by keeping it FROM the Haitian people.

CHAPTER 24

A-HUNTING WE WILL GO

On December 4, 1986, I turned 29 years old. Usually mind-controlled slaves were discarded, "thrown from the Freedom train," at 30; but I argued with Houston when he told me my government abusers only had one year left to "use me up". I had had no conscious awareness of the passing of time, and believed I was still only 24. Regardless of what I believed, my abusers did their best to "use me up" physically and psychologically before even a month had passed.

I was in Washington, D.C. on a routine trip, which included being prostituted to President Reagan. "Uncle Ronnie's" cheeks were flushed from excitement and cognac as he told me, "I always take two weeks off for Christmas to go back to California." Reagan interrupted himself to break into an old Hollywood style song and dance, "California here 1 come..." The While House, he claimed, had always been confining to him, and he appeared genuinely excited about his upcoming trip. "I look forward lo this trip every year because I get to see old friends. Oh, I still work while I'm there-the President's work is never done-but at least I'm there. It's about time you see where I call home." Then, quoting the Wizard of Oz, he said, "'There's no place like home.' And you're about to see why. Say it with me, "There's no place like home. There's no place like home'." Then he instructed me in Oz cryptic, "Click your heels. There's no place like home."

Blue-white light seemingly exploded in my brain, like being hit with deadly low voltage AC electrical current. Reagan was "setting the stage" for an attempted mind scrambling time slip, to be reactivated at an upcoming meeting I would have with him in Bel Air, California.

The motor home was packed to the walls, and the walls were packed with cocaine as Houston, Kelly, and I departed on our long drive to California. Houston had planned several "tourist stops" along the way that proved as" nightmarish as the California ordeal itself.

In Las Vegas, Nevada, Houston kept Kelly and me busy prostituting us to everyone he knew "in the know" and in attendance at the Country Music Association's annual convention. Weary of being sent from room to room, 1 was back in the lobby literally trying to catch my breath when I saw Michael Dante. He was dressed in an expensive, light grey silk suit and dark glasses, looking more like a Fed than a mobster, leaning on a post, waiting for met "Our love" he professed over the phone for mind conditioning purposes was certainly not apparent now. "You're late," he growled as he looked at his watch. He ordered me into the Ladies' Room to activate programming by having me "lose myself in the infinity mirrors that lined the walls. With my mind set like he wanted, he then used and directed me in commercial pornography. Later, he did the same with Kelly.

At the Grand Canyon, Houston traumatized Kelly and me in preparation for. the upcoming events in California. While hiking down the canyon, Houston attempted to anchor hypnotically all of the trip's events behind the death and insanity programming to which he was subjecting us. When we stopped for a late afternoon lunch in the Canyon, Kelly collapsed in a state of shock, unable to eat. Houston was pleased because he "got to eat it all himself". I was, as usual, undergoing the food and water deprivation. I was so thirsty, I could not think to eat. Kelly's condition magnified my own terrified state, and I did all I could to keep Houston from supposedly pushing her over the edge. I carried her for hours all the way out of the canyon, without pausing to rest. In my own mind I wanted to believe I was actually able to protect her. The fact was, Houston was wearing me down physically to ensure that I could not protect her at our next destination: Lake/Mount Shasta, California.

George Bush was highly active in both the Lampe, Missouri and Shasta, California retreat compounds. Just like Lampe, Shasta's cover was country music. According to everyone 1 knew, singer and songwriter Merle Haggard supposedly ran the show at Lake Shasta, diverting any and all attention from the nearby Mount Shasta compound. Shasta was the largest, covert mind-control slave camp of which I am aware. Hidden in the wooded hills, military fencing corrals an enormous fleet of unmarked, black helicopters and more mind-controlled, military robots than I saw in all of Haiti. This covert military operation served its own agenda, not America's. I was told and overheard that it was a base for the future Multi-Jurisdictional Police Force; for enforcing order and law in the New World Order. In the center of the high security compound, was another well-guarded military-fenced area that was regarded as a "Camp David" of sorts for those running our country. George Bush and Dick Cheney shared an office there, and claimed the outer perimeter woods as their own hunting ground where they played "A Most Dangerous Game". Predicated on conversations I overheard between the two, it was this world police military background that earned Dick Cheney his cabinet appointment as Secretary of Defense[1] with the Bush Administration.

Houston stayed at Haggard's Lake Shasta resort while Kelly and 1 were helicoptered to Mount Shasta for our scheduled meeting with Bush and Cheney. The helicopter pilot directed our attention to the military fencing surrounding the outer perimeter of the compound. Rarely did pilots ever speak to either of us, but this one smiled wickedly as he told us we would need to know the outer limits for A Most Dangerous Game.

As soon as we arrived at Bush and Cheney's inner sanctum, I noticed George Bush, Jr. was with them. It was my experience that Jr. stood by his father and covered his backside whenever Bush would become incapacitated from drugs or required criminal backup. It appeared that Jr. was there to serve both purposes while his father and Cheney enjoyed their work-vacation.

Hyper from drugs, Cheney and Bush were eager to hunt their human prey in "A Most Dangerous Game". They greeted me with the rules of the game, ordered me to strip naked despite the cold December winds, and told me in Oz cryptic to "beware of the lions and tigers and bears". Kelly's life became the stakes, as usual, which resurrected my natural and exaggerated programmed maternal instincts. Tears silently ran down my cheeks as Bush told me, "If we catch you, Kelly's mine. So run, run as fast as you can. I'll get you and your little girl, too, because I can, I can, I can. And I will."

Cheney, daring me to respond, asked, "Any questions?"

I said, "There's no place to run because there's a fence—the kind I can't get over. I saw it"

Rather than physically assault me. Cheney laughed at my sense of "no where to run, no where to hide and explained that a bear had torn a hole in the fence somewhere, and all I had to do is find it. He lowered his rifle to my head and said, "Let the games begin. Go."

Wearing only my tennis shoes, I ran through the trees as fast and as far as I could, which wasn't very far at all. Bush was using his bird dog to track me, the same one that had recently been used with me in bestiality filming as a "Byrd-dog" joke on my owner, Robert C. Byrd. When caught, Cheney held his gun to my head again as he stood over me, looking warm in his sheepskin coat. Bush ordered me to take his dog sexually while they watched, then he and Cheney ushered me back to their cabin.

I pulled on my clothes and sat in the office part of the cabin awaiting instructions. I had no idea where Kelly was, nor do I in retrospect. Bush and Cheney were still in their hunting clothes when the programming session began. Bush said, "You and I are about to embark on A Most Dangerous Game of diplomatic relations. This is my game. You will follow my rules. 1 will have the distinct advantage of hunting you with my Eye in the Sky (satellite). I'll watch every move you make. As long as you play the game by my rules and make no mistakes, you live. One mistake and I'll get you, my pretty, and your little girl, too. You die, and Kelly will have to play with me. I prefer it that way. Then it will be her Most Dangerous Game. The cards are stacked in my favor because, well, it is my game! Are you game?"

There was no choice. I responded as conditioned, "Yes, Sir! I'm game." The parallels to The Most Dangerous Game that had just occurred in the woods were deliberate and intended to make retrieval of memory "impossible" due to cryptoamnesia scrambling.

"Good. Then let the games begin. Listen carefully to your instructions. You have no room for error." Cheney flipped his "game timer"—an hourglass. Bush continued, "This game is called the King and Eye, and here's the deal. You will be establishing stronger diplomatic relations according to order between Mexico, the U.S., and the Middle East. Your role will require a change of face at each new place. I'll chart your course, define your role, and pull your strings. You'll speak my words when I pull your strings. There is no room for error,"

Cheney was half lying across the plain, military issue style desk in an apparent drug stupor as Bush talked. Still wearing his hunting coat and hat, Cheney aimed his rifle at me from the desk and threatened, "Or a-hunting we will go." Bush finished Cheney's threat by singing, "We'll catch a fox and put her in a box and lower her in a hole."

Bush looked at Cheney and burst out laughing. The sight of him dressed in his hunting clothes with a huge bore, double-barreled shotgun to his shoulder inspired Bush to tell him he "looked tike Elmer Fudd".

Cheney, imitating the cartoon character, said, "Where is that waskily wabbit?"

Operation The King and Eye would involve Reagan's #1 envoy Philip Habib (who cryptically played the Alice In Wonderland role of the White Rabbit with slaves such as myself) and Saudi Arabian King Fahd. So when Bush referred to the two as "Elmer Fahd and the Waskily Wabbit," he and Cheney laughed until they cried. Since both were already high from drugs anyway, they had a great deal of difficulty maintaining composure long enough to complete my programming.

---

[1] Dick Cheney has no official U.S. military history to justify his position as our nation's former Defense Secretary under President George Bush.

CHAPTER 25

BUSH BABY

It was late evening when Bush and Cheney finished programming me with numerous messages pertaining to the immediate opening of the Juarez, Mexican border to free (drug and slave) trade. They then took me downstairs to the living quarters of the western cedar and redwood structure where Kelly soon joined us. George Bush, Jr. deposited my obviously traumatized and withdrawn child at the door. Referring to The Most Dangerous Game she told me in a quiet, defeated and sad voice, "I was caught same as you".

In retrospect, I do not know if she was actually hunted (I can only hope she was not). Regardless, this reinforced the fact that 1 had been caught and therefore was "responsible" (when in fact I was not) for everything that happened to Kelly from that point on.

The decor of the residence area reflected Cheney's primitive, rustic, western preference. Like his "ultra secret" Pentagon Bunkhouse, use of leather was in abundance. The main room was small, but appeared larger due to an infinity mirror on one wall. The room was decorated in mirror fashion with one side looking like the other. Centered between two facing black leather sofas was a coffee table littered with drugs and paraphernalia. Bush and Cheney were sitting in matching black leather recliners angled towards the large stone fireplace where a fire was blazing, illuminating and heating the room.

Heroin, Bush's drug of choice, was in abundance and Cheney joined him in using it. The smorgasbord of drugs laid out supposedly included opium, cocaine, and Wonderland Wafers (MDMHA-XTC aka ecstasy), which indicated to me they intended to celebrate their vacation with abandon. 1 had seen Cheney stumbling drunk before, but this was the only time I saw him use heroin and give it to me. Kelly, too, was subjected to the drugs.

Bush attempted to sell Cheney on the idea of pedophilia through graphic descriptions of having sex with Kelly. Both were already sexually aroused from drugs and anticipation. Cheney demonstrated to Bush why he did not have sex with kids by exposing himself to Kelly and saying, "Come here". Upon seeing Cheney's unusually large penis, Kelly reeled back in horror and cried, "No!" which made them both laugh. Bush asked Cheney for his liquid cocaine atomizer as he got up to take Kelly to the bedroom. When Cheney remarked how benevolent it was of Bush to numb her with it before sex, Bush replied, "The hell it is. It's for me." He described his excited state in typical vulgar terms and explained that he wanted it to spray cocaine on his penis to last longer.

Cheney said, "I thought it was for the kid."

Bush explained, "Half the fun is having them squirm." He took Kelly's hand and led her off to the bedroom.

Cheney told me that since I was "responsible" for Bush's assault on my daughter by being caught in A Most Dangerous Game, I would "burn" (in hell). He burned my inner thigh with the fireplace poker, and threatened to throw Kelly in the fire. He hypnotically enhanced his description of her burning to traumatize me deeply. As he sexually brutalized me, I heard Kelly's whimpers coming from the bedroom. As her cries grew louder, Cheney turned on classical music to drown out her cries for help.

At 4:00 am, as ordered, Bush Jr. (and his helicopter pilot) came to retrieve Kelly and me. We were flown (by helicopter) back to the Lake Shasta area where Houston and the motor home awaited us. Bush's assault of Kelly proved to be a mind shattering experience for me, and physically devastating to Kelly. She was in dire need of medical attention and was unable even to move. Houston threatened to stop the motor home in the Yosemite area and throw me from a steep cliff if I didn't settle down. His threats and commands could not control my hysteria, as much of his control programming had inadvertently shattered. Fearful he would lose both his "money-makers," Houston permitted me to telephone Kelly's doctor and begin administering medicines. As for me, he arranged for assistance in picking up the pieces in order that I complete my primary purpose in traveling to California, i.e., meet with Mexican President Miguel de Ja Madrid and finalize plans Co open the Juarez border.

CHAPTER 26

NEW WORLD ORDERS

There was "no time to lose" in bringing me back around to a functioning level. I knew I had work to do. Although I was to be "used up" by my 30th birthday, I do not believe it was Bush and Cheney's intention to expedite the process so quickly. Apparently it was their incompetence due to over-indulgence of drugs and subsequent abuse of Kelly in my presence that destroyed parts of my maternal-based programming. Regardless of their "excuse," Houston drove us to San Francisco, California where Temple of Set (Satan) founder U.S. Army Lt. Col. Aquino made some emergency "repairs".

I was not taken to a hospital or a mental institution, but to a brain/mind research and development lab on the U.S. Army Reservation at Presidio. There are many facilities such as this one across the country at various CIA, military, and NASA compounds where hyper-advanced government knowledge is put to the test, developed and modified. Those I met who had expertly learned the scientific mechanics of the brain in conjunction with the ins and outs of the mind used their gained secret knowledge to manipulate and/or control others. The only thing Mark Phillips, Byrd, and Aquino had in common was the belief that "secret knowledge equals power".[1] Byrd explained to me that New World Order "powers were strengthened" by allowing the mental health community only partial and/or deliberate misinformation through their organization lobby, The American Psychiatric Association (APA), concerning treatment modalities for severe dissociative disorders being created through mind control! Perpetrators believed that withholding knowledge and the proliferation of deliberate misinformation allowed them control over their secrets, and subsequently over humanity. They may be correct if no one can or will react to the information presented in this book.

Intended or not, I overheard a conversation pertaining to death and the mind between Aquino and a lab assistant as I lay on a cold, metal table in a deep hypnotic state, Aquino was saying that 1 had come close to death numerous limes which "increased my ability to enter other (mind) dimensions en route to death". I had listened to Aquino talk at length about such concepts before, as though he were trying to convince himself of some interdimensional time travel theory. "Whether in principle or in theory, the results are the same," he claimed. "The concept of time is abstract in itself." Hypnotic talk of past-present-future set my mind in a spin that, when combined with Alice In Wonderland/NASA mirror world concepts, created an illusion of timeless dimensions. I now know that the only "dimensions' I experienced were elaborate memory compartmentalizations of real, earthly events by real, earthly criminals, and certainly not by aliens, Satan, or demons.

After moving me from the table to an elaborate box, Aquino then shifted my mind to another area of my brain, claiming to have taken me into another dimension by way of "death's door". This was accomplished while I was subjected to sensory deprivation combined with hypnotic and harmonic re-programming. The seemingly coffin-like structure was transformed in my mind to a crematorium, where 1 endured the sense of increasing heat while "I slowly burned" through hypnotic suggestion. Aquino then "pulled me through death's door" and into another dimension, "void of time". Parts of my programming were "recreated for the recreation of world leaders," i.e., U.S. President Reagan, Mexican President de la Madrid, and Saudi Arabian King Fahd.

In my next recollection of awareness, Houston, Kelly, and I were in Hollywood, where Houston claimed the motor home "broke down"—an over used attempted memory scramble. He sent me down the street to telephone Michael Dante, who lived nearby in Beverly Hills. Dante was expecting Kelly and me to join him in his Beverly Hills mansion for several days as bad been previously arranged by our handler, Alex Houston. Kelly and I waited at the phone booth as instructed until Dante arrived to pick us up in his midnight blue Ferrari. As soon as I sat down, Dante said, "I got something for you, Baby, Give me your arm." Heroin was a common "vice" he shared with Bush, and he shot me up with the drug right in front of Kelly.

Later that evening at his house, Dante told me that he refused to "handle damaged goods," and that he would not be my next handler as previously planned. Not only was I "not fit to live with" him, but I was not "fit to live" at all. I am not certain what he meant to accomplish by these threats, but I know in retrospect that this was not his decision to make. Besides, 1 never perceived existence with him and his professed "love" as a "future" anyway- Instead, he said he would go along with the original plan long enough to acquire Kelly".

The next day, hours before I was to meet with de la Madrid, L.A, Dodgers baseball team manager Tommy LaSorda, George Bush, Jr., and star pitcher of Jr.'s Texas Rangers, Nolan Ryan (who was also a banker) were at Dante's house working out the details of money laundering and bank transactions for the imminent opening of the Juarez border cocaine, heroin, and white slavery route. The common bond of covert criminal activity overrode any professional baseball conflicts between them. All three were in town to be in attendance at various gatherings and parties of Reagan's, who would be arriving in a matter of days. And all three appeared to have an understanding of my function as Reagan's "Presidential Model" mind-control sex slave.

Dante was gathering the necessary clothes and props for the evening rendezvous with de la Madrid. LaSorda, Nolan Ryan, and Jr. were standing in the entrance way of Dante's house attempting to activate my "Baseball Mind Computer" programmed personality fragment that had inadvertently been shattered by Bush and Cheney's traumas at Shasta. Dante told them, "She knows more about baseball than you and Tommy (LaSorda) put together. Go ahead and ask her something. Anything."

Much to LaSorda's amusement, Nolan Ryan asked, "How many times does Fernando Valenzuela (Dodger pitcher) touch his hat if he's going to throw a srewgy (screw ball)?" I could not respond, although I had once known more statistical data than would ever be in print,

Jr. hollered, "Hey, Dante". What's with your baseball computer here, huh? Are we supposed to say a magic word?"

"I don't know," Dante responded. "Could be drugs. Her sex is working fine, though. Give it a whirl."

Jr. declined, saying, "No thanks. The Baseball Computer sucks enough. Listen, we'll see you later." Jr. had never shown any interest in me sexually. Like his father, he had only shown sexual interest in Kelly, who had been away with him most of the day. As he turned to leave, he stroked me under the chin and cryptically said, "Have a Ball tonight".

LaSorda, who had not been on his Ultra Slim Fast-sponsored diet yet, said, "Speaking of balls, mine could use a little attention here." He unzipped his pants.

Dante told me, "We gotta get dressed. Three minutes." Three minutes was a trigger for me to perform a specific, oral sex act. I knelt on the floor and pushed up LaSorda's enormous belly, resting it on my head as I groped for his penis as ordered. Dante's two Great Danes came in as Jr. and Nolan Ryan left I had been forced to participate in a bestiality film with these sex-trained dogs earlier that day, and I had to fight them off as I sexually gratified LaSorda before getting ready for "the Ball".

---

[1] Mark Phillips explained to me that, by revealing their "secrets" their power would diminish. "Good always prevails through positive application, whereas the bad guys are hindered and slowed in their criminal endeavors through having to cover-up their negative actions with lies to support lies. This inevitably allows the truth to emerge," Mark said.

CHAPTER 27

HOTEL CALIFORNIA

Dante threw me a short, red, slinky dress with rhinestone straps and a pair of "glass slippers" to wear to "Cinderella's Ball", The shoes, like Oz ruby, slippers and Philip Habib's "magic lightening boll" shoes, were to trance-form me into the personality fragmenl ihat had been pre-programmed for the event, Dante escorted me to the party/"Ball" where I was to meet with Mexican President de la Madrid. Dante had been bragging about his "second home in Malibu" ever since I first met him, and the place was opulence personified. I do not know who actually owned "his" second home in Malibu, California, but Reagan's influence was evident in the decor. From the front, the white stucco house gave the illusion of being two-story. The view overlooked a secluded Pacific bay, and revealed three levels built into a cliff. Through the smoked glass wall panels that spanned the back, the three stories, lavishly carpeted in red, white, and blue provided a patriotic view. All levels had a beige-white interior decorated in gold and crystal. An enormous chandelier hung from the "cathedral ceiling, illuminating all three levels at once from the greatroom which overlooked the bay.

I was told that Uncle Ronnie (Reagan) would be arriving the next day. It was my "patriotic duty" to attend de la Madrid's welcome party and "wear down any resistance he may have" in order that Reagan's business meeting with him would "go smoothly". This was not the first time I heard this excuse for being politically prostituted, nor would it be the last. In reality, I was to do the initial dirty work, delivering messages, and encourage de la Madrid lo use drugs and party with abandon. The diplomatic relations between the U.S. and Mexico were already strong, but this phase of the operation requited total commitment from de la Madrid.

Dante and I waited at the top of the staircase as de la Madrid, accompanied by two bodyguards, climbed to the red level of the house. I greeted de la Madrid, "Welcome to the U.S. and (seductively) welcome to the Hotel California." His deep-throated laugh indicated he had been cued to the ramifications of my cryptic statement. "Hotel California," taken from a popular song by the Eagles, stated "you can check out anytime you like, but you can never leave." To de la Madrid this confirmed the permanency of his involvement in the criminal, covert operations in which he was conspiring. Blackmail was openly initiated to ensure that each criminal participant understood that if one fell, they all fell. Maintaining "dirt" on each other through this Mafia-style method was seemingly the only way these criminals implementing the New World Order kept each other "honest."

De la Madrid and I went into a nearby bedroom, followed by Dante and the bodyguards. Dante then activated the programmed message instilled at the Shasta resort from Bush to de la Madrid. I recited, "If you please, Sir, I have a message to deliver to you from the Vice President of the United States. Welcome to our Neighborhood. As you know, Salinas and 1 have worked out the details towards implementing our plan to open the Juarez border tomorrow. In preparation and celebration of this accomplishment, this little party tonight will bring you face to face with a trusted few who are integral parts of this endeavor, and give you the latitude to see firsthand the friendship and honor among the (government-involved Mafioso) family members, I regret that I could not be here in person to greet you, but Ron (Reagan) can show you the ins and outs of the organization better than I. The transaction numbers have been recorded, and are available to you for cross reference purposes and to uphold the integrity of the players involved on your end of the Juarez border. Your commitment today ensures you of a higher economic standard of living for your people, increased relations with the U.S., an influx of American industry, and a position of high esteem in the New World Order, With your 'Seal of Approval' we can dissolve the Juarez border and make way for a future of prosperity for Mexico. For now, relax and enjoy your stay."

One of de la Madrid's guards was shuffling through some papers from a briefcase, and he told Dante he would like the bank transaction numbers. Dante switched me to "You Are What You Read" Passbook programming, and I delivered the numbers intended for the border guards to de la Madrid as ordered. A computer of sorts was used to calculate and confirm the numbers. Aware that the meeting was being filmed by one of Dante's high tech "hidden" cameras, de la Madrid held up a paper-wrapped ball of Mexican heroin. Speaking directly at the camera, he cleverly said, "A token of appreciation, Mr. Bush, Something for your private stock. The finest heroin available. Enjoy."

Dante strode across the room and said, "I'll take that and see to it that he gets it myself."

"I'm sure you will," de la Madrid laughed. He then put all but one paper back in the briefcase. I was instructed to present the elaborately embossed Mexican Presidential Seal (of Approval) to pre-appointed Juarez border guards as proof of de la Madrid's commitment, then deliver it directly to Bush for his file on the future NAFTA agreement.

Prepared to present a modified Hands-On Mind-Control Demonstration to de la Madrid, Dante said, "You've heard from a Carrier Pigeon (messenger). You've seen her in a mode to accept program. And now I will demonstrate some of her sexual modes."

"That will not be necessary," de la Madrid told him. "I have been given a handful of keys that I would like to use on my own, including the one to destroy all memory. Not that it matters when we are monitored (he gestured toward the camera), but nevertheless I was instructed to do it." Dante did not seem to know this was not the first time I was sexually prostituted to the Mexican President.

"She rides a horse well," Dante said, referring to both the rare practice of heroin to supposedly block my memory of this event, and a Reagan-inspired sex act. Dante stuck a needle in my arm. "May I recommend a ride for you?"

"I am on one now that I would like to maintain," de la Madrid answered, referring to cocaine use and his running nose. Dante laid out several generous lines of the white drug on a black mirror. He stroked me under my chin triggering Reagan's sex Kitten personality, picked up Bush's heroin, and ushered the two guards out the door.

De la Madrid, fully aware of my pornography exposure, said, "You like cameras? Let's give them something to watch." He snorted two more lines of coke, undressed, and further activated my sex programming with the verbal and physical keys and triggers Reagan had previously provided him. At one point he enthusiastically commented that "if I have my way, the Free Trade Agreement will include a few top of the tine (he snorted another line of coke for emphasis) "models" (vaginally) carved and trained like you." De la Madrid had long been obsessively fascinated with my vaginal mutilation carving. He was perversely excited at the prospect of the Juarez border joint venture drug deal including protected "free trade" of mind-controlled slaves. He reiterated his desire the next day during a meeting with Reagan.

CHAPTER 28

"FREE TRADE" OF DRUGS AND SLAVES AT THE JUAREZ BORDER

The next day. Dante drove me to a Bel Aire mansion high on a hill where another party was underway. As I joined those who had gathered on the manicured lawn, I recognized many of the same Mafia people who had been at the Malibu retreat aka "Hotel California". This was a welcome party for President Reagan who had just arrived. He was walking across the yard toward me with his friend. Jack Valenti, who was the president of the powerful Motion Picture Association of America. Reagan looked his role amongst his mobster friends, his beige coal with fur collar draped over his shoulders revealing a dark grey, pinstripe suit underneath. In retrospect I remember him as dressed like the one mobster I did not have to meet, John Gotti. As soon as my eyes met his, 1 was knocked to the ground by a familiar blue-white blast (high voltage) like the one I had recently experienced in D.C.

When I came back around and my eyes refocused, Dante was holding me up. Reagan said, "Well, hello Kitten".

"Uncle Ronnie, how'd you get here?" I asked in child-like innocence.

"The rainbow, Kitten, the rainbow," he answered in Oz cryptic, "I told you I was coming home. There's no place like home, and you said it with me. So, here we are. I keep a little piece of the rainbow in my pocket so I can get back over it (to D.C.) anytime I want to. I make a wish, and click my heels, and I'm gone."

For the moment, Reagan succeeded in confusing my mind with Oz cryptic metaphors, reconfirming to my child personality that he was indeed the powerful Wizard. As we went inside for a brief meeting, my personality was deliberately switched to the one that had dealt with de la Madrid the night before.

The grey-white stucco house was decorated in plush Presidential blue carpeting and deep, cherry wood tones. The "office" was small and further crowded by those of us present for the meeting. De la Madrid was comfortably seated, as was Jack Valenti. I was not privy to Valenti's exact role in opening the Juarez border, I only know that he was well educated lo the particulars of this meeting. Dante and I remained standing since we would be leaving as quickly as I heard what Reagan, who was shuttling papers and pacing the room, had to say.

"Well, Kitten," Reagan said to me, "this is your death sentence: You'll go out ia a blaze of glory." I was not surprised to receive confirmation of my imminent death by Reagan. I had heard about death by fire from seemingly everyone involved in establishing "free trade," through Mexico, of our nation's children for drags. Reagan's use of patriotic metaphors and puns while matter-of-factly informing me he ordered my death was reflective of his often displayed lack of respect for human life. What reflected his character even more were the crimes he was involved in that prompted him to cover-up through "sentencing- me to death. I had witnessed the criminal foundations of NAFTA, which in turn could threaten the successful implementation of the New World Order should these secrets ever be revealed. Initial "Free Trade" including drugs and white slavery extended beyond the U.S./Mexican border. It routed U.S. traumatized, robotic, mind-controlled children into Saudi Arabia, while building up weapon stockpiles in Nicaragua and Iraq. Although I was considered to be no threat, predicated on the (erroneous) belief that I could not be deprogrammed to regain my memory of these events, my death would provide extra insurance to those involved. I was nearly "used up" anyway, and recording my death via "Snuff Film" was agreed upon as proof to De la Madrid and other leaders at risk, that I had indeed been silenced through death,

I could not think to respond to Reagan's "death sentence". Dante wanted to make sure I grasped the point as he graphically expounded, "The next time I ignite your (sexual) flame. Baby, it will consume you, body and soul. And you will burn, Baby, burn. And I'll take your ashes and scatter them to the wind. I'm going to blow you away. On film."

Upon hearing something cryptic to which he could relate. Valenti laughed at Dante's twist of words. Referring to the old, porn, blue pencil editing term "Blue movies," he added, "Blue blazes".

Dante laughed with him. "We'll call it 'Who In Blue Blazes Was That?' Or, how 'bout 'Cream-Ate'?"

De la Madrid noticed Reagan was not laughing and said, "That's like erasing a Mercedes to film a stunt," He leaned forward in his chair closer to Reagan, lowered his voice and said, "It is my desire to have seven just like her roll off the assembly Line and shipped to me prior to the agreement's completion."

Reagan agreed, responding, "Those (blonde-haired, blue-eyed) fine kids on the relay to Saudi Arabia are top of the line, but they don't have what she's got."

"Two faced Ones are hard to come by," de la Madrid quipped, referring to my vaginal mutilation and Presidential programming code. He cut his eyes over to me, touched himself and cryptically continued, "—from one perspective, anyway. And I like having 'One' I can 'count on."

Reagan chuckled while Dante shifted his feet and unfolded his arms long enough to cough-laugh. Valenti seemed to be bored of cliches or was missing many of the cryptic double meanings, but judging from the tone of the meeting, that was just as well. "I'll mention it to Bobby (Byrd) and delegate your order to him," Reagan told his Mexican counterpart. "It should be relatively simple to slip one in for you every few shipments or so once the Juarez border is open to such free trade activities as planned." Reagan spoke as though he were distracted and thinking of something else, even when he looked my direction.

"If you please, Sir," I began, "I have the Presidential Seal of Approval and am prepared to fulfill my role." Dante looked at his watch, aware that 1 was scheduled to be at the Juarez border by the "stroke of midnight". Reagan walked over to see the paper I had received from de la Madrid the night before.

"OK. Well, farewell. Kitten," Reagan said, as he kissed my cheek. He added in Oz cryptic, "I'll see you on the other side (of the rainbow in D.C.). Click your heels..."

My world spun black. Someone had hit me with a powerful stun gun and I was down, feeling as though Dante was half dragging me as he led me to his car, which was already idling in the circular drive. We soon pulled up to the motor home at the gas station on Hollywood Boulevard, where he had picked Kelly and me up several days before, Kelly was already in the motor home, vomiting sick and horribly traumatized. She had been convinced by someone that I had been killed. Houston attempted to create a hypnotically induced "time slip," acting as though I had only been gone a few minutes. We drove quickly, stopping only for fuel in order that I be in Juarez at the appointed time.

There 1 robotically presented the Presidential Seal of Approval to the proper officials as programmed, officially opening the border to "Free Trade" of crimes against humanity. Houston and I had hurried across the Juarez border where we were met by the Mexican official in charge. The guard looked to be in his late 40s, with classic, rugged, Mexican features. He stood approximately 5'11", had black hair, an unkempt moustache, black beady eyes and a paunchy belly protruding over his short, squat legs. He spoke excitedly in Spanish, with a harsh, cold lone to his voice as he spit out the necessary words in English, "Give me the Seal", He snapped his fingers, impatiently hurrying me. He took the Presidential seal and knocked me face down on top of a small, barren metal desk while he closely inspected the document. Even Houston was unusually quiet while this particular uniformed guard paced the small tower room, sweating profusely while he talked on his walkie talkie. Finally, he accessed and verified the bank transaction codes provided through whom he said was George Bush, Jr. He concluded the encounter by taking a stun gun from his belt and jolting me with it, supposedly to erase my memory.

I was nauseated and weak from high voltage and the ordeal as Houston and I made our way back across the border. My empty stomach rolled, prompting Houston to lie, "I told you not to drink the water". In reality, I had had nothing to drink since the champagne at the Hotel California, and 1 hadn't eaten in days. I was thoroughly exhausted when we reached the motor home in El Paso, but Houston was sexually aroused from cocaine and the criminal events that merged Mexico with the U.S. at the Juarez border.

CHAPTER 29

THE LIZARD OF AHS

After the opening of the Juarez border, I was kept actively busy according to the plan to "use me up" before my 30th birthday death sentence. I was subjected to a brutal (near death gang rape) "celebration benefit" at an identified Masonic Lodge in Warren, Ohio to "celebrate the free trade benefits" gained by involved East Coast politicos. Centers such as the nearby Youngstown "Charm School" went into mass production of slaves to mule drugs or be part of the mind-controlled sex slave "trance-sport operations". Mexico was not the only country reaping the economic benefits of criminal free trade.

After Kelly's ordeal in California, Dante and Houston were criminally exploiting her for literally "all she was worth". Subsequently, she missed an extraordinary amount of schooling. When she was in school, she was experiencing difficulty with her peers. These factors prompted plans to send her to a local Catholic school the next year, where her unusual behavior would be overlooked and covered up,

Soon thereafter, Senator Byrd came to Nashville to fiddle at the Grand Ole Opry and, as my handler. Houston, remarked, "fiddle around with me" at the Opryland Hotel. Byrd explained that close association with me had become volatile due to my roles in Iran-Contra and NAFTA, and therefore he would be distancing himself from me. He spent most of "our last night together" working on his memoirs for a voluminous book on the U.S. Constitution he was writing (now published at taxpayers' expense), which focuses on his long-winded Senate (filibuster) speeches.

Byrd attempted to strengthen my programmed "loyalty bond" to him to keep me quiet "until death do us part". He told me, "If it was up to me, I would let you live". He talked at length about how our time together had been infringed upon by both de la Madrid and Reagan, Bitterness over their stronger controls on me was evident as he mocked their self appointed roles as the Wizard and Lizard of Oz. De la Madrid's fascination with U.S. mind-controlled slaves reportedly inspired him to combine Bush's lizard-like alien themes and his reputed Mayan roots/lizard man theories with Reagan's Oz themes to claim the role of Lizard of Ahs. From Byrd's ramblings, it appeared that his mockery of their roles was due to their having decided how "his" slave would die, and had nothing to do with caring that I would be killed. Byrd maintained his "bonding" programming charade all night. He played his fiddle and sang "to me" in place of his usual torturous whipping and brutality. Sex was, for the first and last time, painless.

Byrd had not distanced himself too far from me, though, where government operations were concerned. When I was "over the rainbow" in D.C. during the summer of '87, it was business as usual with Byrd. I was escorted to Goddard Space Flight Center where Byrd was waiting for me in a sterile hallway near the brass-trimmed, mirrored elevators. He was loaded down with items, which he deposited on a small table as he greeted me. He picked up a NASA ID badge and clipped it on my nipple, the metal teeth biting me with their serrated edges. When I (softly) cried out, he said, "Oh OK. Ill wear it," removed it, and clipped it on his white lab coat. He handed me a NASA lab coat like his and a white hard bat. His hard hat suggestively and "humorously" said HARD in bold red letters. My hat said NASA, in a mirror reversal of the standard bold red lettering. When I read it in a mirror, it appeared as though I were on the wrong side of the mirror and needed to step through (according to Alice In Wonderland/NASA programming). It also clearly indicared to those-in-the-know that I was under mind control. Byrd looked at his pocket watch prompting a wave of terror in me, and said in Wonderland cryptic, "We're late. As the elevator drops down the rabbit hole, we'll reverse time in order to get there a few minutes early."

Bvrd spun me around to face the elevator's mirrored doors saying, "Look deep into the mirror and be all that you can be by becoming infinitely lost in all that you see." Byrd timed his hypnotic induction so that wben he ordered. "Step through the mirror," the doors opened and we stepped through.

As the elevator supposedly went "down 99 (taken from Aquino's corny reversal of 66) levels to the depths of hell," Byrd told me the Earth "spins faster and faster at the core, causing us to spiral downward in a tornado effect." I dropped deeper in my hypnotic trance. The elevator doors opened to what appeared to me as an exact replica of the floor we just left. However, this floor's hallway led to a computer room and sanitized-looking lab area. Several of the scientists working there were amused by our hats, prompting Byrd to ham up his comedic act, Byrd ignored the fact that these NASA workers, like many others, may have deliberately stroked his entertainer's ego because they relied on his appropriations for funding,

Byrd made me robotically announce to the workers, "He's taking me to your leader."

"I'm the Commander, here," the apparent director of the underground lab said. The workers again busied themselves as he stood, arms folded defensively across his chest, while his bespectacled intelligent eyes darted the room surveying the situation. The Commander had a few, grey strands salting his short, dark hair, yet his build was surprisingly youthful and trim for his age. He and Byrd apparently knew each other quite well. Byrd strode over to him, dragging me along. "Tom," Byrd called to his 50ish 6'1" friend. "This is your specimen of the day that I promised I would deliver. I will be most interested to see what you can deliver since diplomatic relations with Mexico depends on it. Not that I want to increase any pressure you may feel, but we need seven more just like her to stuff in the mouth of his royal Lizardry (de la Madrid) to keep him from spilling his guts on the project."

"It's just as well, my friend," the Commander said, stroking his chin without uncrossing his arms. "That way he can't talk without implicating himself."

"That's the way the Chief feels about it," Byrd agreed. "He's already in deep anyway, but this order (for slaves) hits him closer to home since they'll be serving him personally."

We walked to a clinical, sanitized area that had a maze of small rooms where I was undressed and prepped for the lab. A nurse of sorts injected me with the NASA "Tranquility" drug and instructed me to put my lab coat back on. "Walk this way," she ordered as she led me down the hall, swinging her hips in an exaggerated manner. I immediately complied. The Tranquility drug had no recreational affects, but produced an attitude of peaceful compliance to all orders given. As we approached the theater-type lab, a small group of men who would be in attendance were talking with Byrd and the so-called

Commander. They looked at us and laughed at my literal compliance to walk like the nurse.

1 was then led by the Commander to a "backstage" entrance which was actually a glass-encased lab surrounded by seats in ascending rows. Scientists in NASA lab coats looked down on the lab table where I lay as the Commander wired me up to a computerized machine. A camera was positioned high in one comer of the room, filming all that transpired. I was aware through conversations between Byrd and the Commander that de la Madrid had requested a video of the latest advancements in mind-control technique being used to create his seven slaves. In reality, the camera was filming scientific methodisms salted with "comic" misinformation as a humorous "no" to his request.

Since I was considered "used up" and my death was imminent, the Commander told the scientists to "feel free to fuck the lab specimen", "But first," he said, "before you satisfy your mental and physical curiosities sampling the President's (Reagan's) wares, we must satisfy El President's (de la Madrid's) perverse intellect with a little space humor." He turned to one of the technical workers and said, "You're going to have to edit this tape for de la Madrid's benefit and take this part out while we prepare her for an 'off color' chameleon joke."

A live lizard encased in a glass test tube of sorts was inserted in my vagina, The camera was focused on the area while my legs were spread in a birthing position. Acting as though I had conceived while having sex with de la Madrid, the Commander said, "Now for the finished product, which in layman's terms equates to the reproductive offspring of a Lizard breeding machine." He dramatically snapped on a rubber glove and probed me as though he were giving me a gynecological exam. In fact, he was opening the trap door of the Lizard's tube to turn him out. Very slowly, the sluggish lizard poked his head out of my vagina and crawled out onto the metal table, "This concludes all of the experimentation demonstration of the cloning of a Presidential model," the Commander said,

I apparently had been selected as the prototype for the seven programmed slaves de La Madrid had requested. De la Madrid was interested in NASA programmed staves that would be vaginally mutilated like I was. He was sexually obsessed with the hideous carving. 1 have no way of knowing what, if any, technological advancements were actually provided to de la Madrid via the film. I only know that deliberate misinformation tainted the methodologies depicted, and that I had never experienced programming or testing before or at the time by any such methods.

This video created for "his Royal Lizardry" was one of many cryptic lizard themes that NASA used in its Mexican operations. All of my programmed roles in Mexico involved the prolific, local, iguana lizards. De la Madrid had relayed the "legend of the Iguana" to me, explaining that lizard-like Aliens had descended upon the Mayans. The Mayan pyramids, their advanced astronomical technology, including the sacrifice of virgins, was supposedly inspired by the lizard aliens. He told me that when the aliens interbred with the Mayans to produce a form of life they could inhabit, they fluctuated between a-human and Iguana appearance through chameleon-like abilities. "A perfect vehicle for transforming into world leaders." De la Madrid claimed to have Mayan/alien ancestry in his blood, whereby he transformed "back into an Iguana at will." De la Madrid produced a hologram similar to the one Bush did.

in his You Are What You Read initiation. His hologram of lizard-like tongue and eyes produced the illusion that he was transforming into an Iguana. While in Mexico, I was always ordered to wait by rocks where the abundant Iguanas sunned before being "trance-ported" to my scheduled meetings with "his Royal Lizardry," the Lizard of Ahs.

CHATTER 30

IN THE INTEREST OF TIME AND SPACE

Senator Patrick Leahy (D-Vermont), who served as vice chairman on the U.S. Senate Intelligence Committee in 1985-86, was a "friend" of Senator Byrd. Leahy's position on Byrd's Senate Appropriations Committee, coupled with his former position in Intelligence, afforded him an inordinate amount of power and influence. While 1 had cause to have contact with Senator Leahy on numerous occasions, Kelly was apparently more familiar with him than I. This was evidenced by our meeting with him in Vermont in the late summer of 1985.

Alex Houston was booked to "entertain" at the State Fair in Rutland, Vermont. The entire trip proved to be a whirlwind of covert activity for me, during which time 1 obtained a packet of papers from an unidentified operative with orders to hand deliver them to Senator Leahy. Kelly had been kept as busy as I, since Boxcar Willie and other CIA operative pedophiles were in abundance at the fair in Leahy's home state.

President Reagan had given me specific orders to carry out while in Vermont, which included delivering a message to "Patrick" for him. He also told me, "When you go to Vermont, be sure and go by ("buy") LL Bean."

Literally interpreting what he suggested, I asked, "The whole store?"

"No," Reagan laughed. "I meant stop by there. 1 didn't mean buy the whole store. I already own it. Just buy a few things, like an LL Bean Swiss Army Knife."[1]

When Reagan said he "already owned" LL Bean, I thought he was referring to the amount of shopping he did there." He wore LL Bean shirts, sweaters, and slippers; slept on LL Bean flannel sheets in his LL Bean pajamas; and carried his "Presidential" black, LL Bean, Swiss Army Knife, with which he cleaned his fingernails. But I learned the real significance of Reagan's statement when I "stopped by" the Vermont LL Bean outlet on the final day of Houston's lengthy Vermont State Fair engagement.

The LL Bean outlet, located near the fop of supposedly the highest mountain in the pristine forest, appeared to be a store front for CIA covert activity. When I asked the 'clerk' assigned to Kelly and me for a black, Swiss Army Knife, his response was indicative of familiarity with government covert operations. Using the old familiar statement (trigger), he ordered Kelly and me to "Walk this way," as he led us through a storage area and out the back door. There, a black, unmarked helicopter was waiting on a pad for us.

The pilot flew us a short distance to the top of a mountain, where we landed in a clearing next to a house that appeared to have no other access. The place was run like a fortress, and two guards in suits met us as Kelly and I emerged from the helicopter. The guards escorted us into the house, keeping Kelly while I met with Senator Leahy.

I walked into an office-type room that had a panoramic view of the wilderness, where Leahy was leaning against a highly polished, wooden desk. He was wearing an orange flannel shirt that lost its purpose in crispness. It was my experience that Leahy's surroundings, like his appearance, were as sanitized as possible.

I delivered the documents and message as ordered. Leahy then proceeded to explain that he was aware that my death was imminent due to my groundwork participation in NAFTA, and that subsequently Kelly would be traded to the West Coast pornography operation. Not only did he obviously want to join in on "using me up" before my 30th birthday, but he had "tracks" to cover-up where Kelly was concerned.

Most of my traumatic encounters with Leahy were alien-themed, but be often relied on my Catholic upbringing to drive his points into my mind. From my perspective, Leahy was unquestionably one of the most intelligent criminals of this entire Shadow Government. His carefully contrived chameleon-like characteristics provided him the latitude of appearing to share the principals and beliefs of whomever he was masterfully manipulating on both a national and international level. He won Reagan's respect through their shared diplomatic ties to the Vatican, and his Irish-Catholic heritage. While he appeared publicly to oppose Byrd on Senate Appropriations issues, they actually worked together behind the scenes in their shared world dominance efforts. Again from my perspective, Leahy was a loner who had his own agenda and answered to no one I knew. Leahy's intelligence was often manifested to me by triple depth meaning to his words and actions. Everything he did was for a deeper purpose, and this trip to Vermont proved to be no different,

Kelly and I had been given what felt like a sophisticated variation of Lhe NASA CIA-designer drug, Tranquility, which turned us into the robotic mind-controlled slaves that Senator Leahy preferred. As the drug was overtaking me, I attentively listened to what Leahy was saying.

"God condones that one," Leahy said, referring to both my role in NAFTA and his pedophile abuse of my daughter. "Of course, God is not the one you need to be concerned with. He is a passive God, One who's passed on and lives only in a Bible. The God you need to be concerning yourself with is the all-seeing, all-knowing God. That great, big, Eye in the Sky. It sees all, records all, and transmits the information right where it's needed. Let me give you some sound advice-Keep your mouth shut and none of this need be known anywhere. Only your Vice President (Bush) will know for sure, and he's been keeping secrets all his life. I'm not suggesting George Bush is God. Oh no, he is much more than that. He is a semi-God, which means he is straddling the heavenly and earthly planes in order that he take action on what he sees with his ever watchful Eye In The Sky." Content with his metaphorical manipulation of my literal mind, he finished, "Now, that's enough fore-play. Go get the kid."

Kelly was standing quietly and robotically just outside the door with the two guards. They ushered us down the hall, through an ornately carved door, and into Leahy's bedroom. The room was highly effeminate for a man, decorated in pastels, white eyelet, and huge billowy pillows. When the Senator walked in, Kelly groaned, "Noooo, not you again", Leahy signalled Kelly with his hand, thus switching her into total silence and submission. Then, accessing specific personality fragments that previously recompartmentalized in my mind from Bush's and Byrd's sexual abuse of Kelly, Leahy began undressing. His pale skin looked even whiter against the white eyelet sheets, which seemed to accentuate the perversity of his pedophile actions with my daughter that I was forced to watch. His torturous abuse complete, Leahy ordered Kelly and me to follow him downstairs to his "torture lab",

I had seen and experienced basement "spy conditioning" torture chambers before both in the U.S. and Mexico, and Leahy's "torture lab" looked more like a NASA lab. His access to the latest advancements in electronic/drug mind-control technology was consistent with his ability to use it. I was immediately strapped to a cold, chrome and stainless steel table by the two guards. Leahy began reciting, "Cross your heart and hope to die, Stick a needle in your eye". A wirey "needle" was pushed slowly into my right eye while Kelly was forced to watch. This entire ordeal was directed for trauma purposes primarily at Kelly since Leahy figured I would be dead soon anyway. "If you holler, if you cry, Kelly will be the first to die. Pray to God and Bush will hear, because his Eye now has an ear." Leahy interrupted his poem to explain that 1 was now a "computer-eyesd" link-up to Bush's Eye in the Sky, with the needle-like "antenna" transmitting every word Kelly spoke. He continued wilh me, "Each word you speak, each breath you sigh,'Your eye trance-mits to the Eye in the Sky". Kelly believed it, which locked her into silence. Leahy's secret was safe-for the moment.

While I was literally out of my mind from intense pain, Leahy utilized the opportunity to program me with what he said was financial information to deliver to Byrd. This required no "personality", therefore the shattered fragments Leahy had deliberately shifted me into when raping Kelly would be ideal to "computer-eyes" his message. He told me that my body was a conduit to link him up to the Eye in the Sky, where he was transmitting the information for storage until such time as Byrd accessed it. "Only the tiniest little prick can access the compuLer-eyesd' storage bank," Leahy said, laughing at his own double meaning mockery of Byrd's penis size.

This was not the first time Leahy transferred apparently sensitive U.S. Government intelligence information to Byrd through me. I had photographically recorded numbers in my mind's "computer banks" ever since Leahy prepared me for the task some months before at White Sands Missile Base in New Mexico. It was there in the TOP SECRET mind-control area of the base that Leahy subjected me to extreme tortures and high-tech programming. Combining purposes as usual, Leahy was saying, "Funding will continue to be approved as long as (mind-control) Projects such as this continue to receive your full attention". I was treated like a lab animal with no apparent regard for whether I lived or died. I was put in an electrified metal walled and floored cell, referred to by some as the woodpecker grid, which provided inescapable physical torture.

In spite of his tortures, intelligence, high-tech methodism, and sophisticated mind manipulations. Senator Leahy failed to cover his "secrets"—including his sexual abuse of Kelly. He did succeed, however, in causing Kelly and me to be hospitalized from his torturous abuses upon our return to Tennessee. I had suffered excruciating pain and irreparable damage to my right eye, while Kelly psychosomatically suffered respiratory failure due to his extreme traumas. The physical manifestations of the psychological devastation wreaked on us by Senator Leahy failed to raise questions from outsiders as to the cause.

Equally worthy of mention, are numerous other high profile perpetrators that Kelly and I had exposure to over the years. These individuals, in spite of the CIA's "need-to-know" M.O. of maintaining "the left hand does not know what the right hand is doing," were in positions to be knowledgeable of Kelly's and my victimizations. All of them accessed our programming either for drug distribution, banking/message delivery, mind-control demonstrations, or, most often, for their perverse sexual gratification.

These too numerous individuals and events are significant chapters in my life who, in the interest of time and space, will be fully exposed in a forthcoming book. Rather than point a finger at these individuals for reasons of "vengeance" (there is none comparable), they must be publicly identified for all our sakes and, above all, for our children's sakes. Therefore, a list of perpe-Traitors has been compiled and strategically distributed for posterity, as well as to prevent these individuals from interfering in any Congressional hearings[2] that should be forthcoming as a result of this exposure.

---

[1] Black LL Bean Swiss Army Knives were a coded indicator of White House-level operations. Red LL Bean Swiss Army Knives, and regular Swiss Army Knives were a standard CIA indicator with which I was also familiar.

[2] Please support us in this effort by writing your Congressmen.

CHAPTER 31

THE KING AND EYE

Saudi Arabia threaded in and out of most operations in which I was involved, primarily due to their purchase and routing of weapons, drugs, and blond-haired, blue-eyed programmed children. According to George Bush's claims, Saudi Arabia was in essence a controlled financial arm of the United States. Saudi Arabian King Fahd and his Ambassador to the U.S., Prince Bandar, provided a front for the unconstitutional and criminal covert operations of the U.S. This included the arming of Iraq and the Nicaraguan Contras; U.S. involvement in the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (B.C.C.I.) scandal; and funding of the Black Budget through purchase of our nation's children to be used as sex slaves and camel jockeys. Since the U.S. "won" control of the drug industries through the so-called Drug Wars, Saudi Arabia played an integral role in distribution. It was my experience that Bush's claim of having Saudi Arabian King Fahd as his puppet was, in fact, reality. It was only natural that criminal diplomatic relations with Mexico interface with Saudi Arabia under the circumstances. After all, King Fahd and Mexican President. Miguel de la Madrid were active members of George Bush's elite "Neighborhood" in the New World Order. Before I left Washington, D.C., it, was "my duty as a (programmed) American Patriot" to participate in initiating the King and Eye branch of Operation Greenbacks for Wetbacks.

While plans were being finalized for a clandestine 3:00 A.M. meeting at L'Enfante Hotel which I would be attending, 1 was rushed around D.C. gathering last minute messages and information. I had no choice in leaving. Kelly at Bush's Residence Office where Houston had dropped us off earlier in the day for my initial briefing. Congressman Guy VanderJagt was in Bush's office along with Dick Cheney when we arrived. Before taking Kelly upstairs to the residence area, VanderJagt told Bush his story about taking my virginity when I was a small child. He recommended Bush do the same to Kelly before someone else "beat him to it". Bush laughed and replied, "What makes you think I haven't?""

VanderJagt look Kelly by the hand and led her upstairs while Bush and Cheney began giving me my instructions. Bush joked about working "grave yard" in the "shadows" for "the White House night shift" of the King and Eye operation. Cheney began my instructions with the usual threat to Kelly's life, and was interrupted by a phone call ordering me over to the White House, The whole time 1 was gone, I experienced a sensation of panic and dread at having had to leave Kelly at Bush's. Although I could not think to reason, the Shasta experience had left me with an incomprehensible subconscious fear for Kelly's life that was compounded by Cheney's most recent threats. I was apprehensive when I was returned to Bush's house late that evening for completion of my instructions. A party was underway, and I was dismayed to see the place so crowded yet void of children.

As I made my way through the crowd, Cheney saw me and started across the room towards me, I spotted VanderJagt nearby, who had been drinking excessively, and anxiously asked him where Kelly was. He said, "Upstairs sleeping, George is expecting you". I wanted desperately to go to Kelly, but Cheney, who was drunk as usual, had reached me by that time.

"Walk this way," Cheney slurred. He imitated the Oz Scarecrow's walk as he led me through the middle of the crowd to Bush's office. Bush was busy behind his desk, and his tension was apparent. He said, "Phil Habib is doing a number on his highness' (Fahd's) head, I want you to do a number on his 'dick'".

"Please," Dick Cheney groaned at the term. "That means give him a Royal fucking. Wear him out. You're going on a magic carpet ride tonight, little Genie, down through the rabbit hole, through the minor and we'll meet you on the other side."

"Good. He'd better have a smile on his face when we walk in (to the 3:00 A.M. meeting)," Bush told me as I went out the door. "If you do your part right, he will."

I was escorted to L'Enfante Hotel where I was to be prostituted to King Fahd. I had been exposed to him sexually before, but this was my first time with him and his five young girls. Physical likeness characteristics strongly suggested that these Saudi Arabian girls were his own children. Their ages ranged from approximately ten to twenty years old. Indicating Genie-in-the-Bottle programming, of which Fahd was familiar, 1 bowed and said, "Your wish is my command", Fahd's first wish was for information, which I told him I would deliver later at the meeting. Fahd "disrobed" as his girls removed my dress. Then they "prepared" me as ordered by "washing me" with their tongues, while the youngest briefly performed oral sex on him. The girls were ordered aside while I proceeded to sexually gratify Fahd according to his instruction and those I had received earlier from Cheney and Bush. When I finished doing "my part" in the name of "Diplomatic Relations," Habib was at the door to escort me out. I was to meet with Fahd again at 3:00 A.M. in Habib's suite.

As I stepped out the door, Habib was impatiently hopping up and down like be was energized from cocaine. Using his role as White Rabbit, he said in Wonderland cryptic, "We're late! We're late! For a very important date!" He led me downstairs to the entrance of the hotel, where Bush and Cheney had just walked in looking ridiculously conspicuous in their trenchcoats.

Bush immediately ordered Habib, "Call in" and gestured to the phone across 'the lobby. Habib turned and hurried for the phone. Cheney dashed up the stairs, leaving me alone with Bush. Bush said, referring to Habib, "Don't you love to see the wabbit hop?"

When Cheney returned a moment later, my (identified) Secret Service escort led me to the boutique area of the hotel to wait while the meeting in Habib's suite got under way. 1 had endured water deprivation for some time, which my escort noted as we sat near a fountain. He told me his orders were, "You can lead a whore to water, but you can't let her drink," He teased me further, stating that he knew I could "suck the humps of a thousand camels dry." At last, he took me on to the meeting in Habib's room, where Bush, Cheney, Fahd, and Habib were in the midst of discussion.

Bush accessed the messages and bank transaction details I was programmed with at Shasta, and ordered me to relay an account of my meeting with de la Madrid and subsequent opening of the Juarez border. The complexities of this meeting, compounded by my being privy only to certain parts, should not be documented here out of context. I do know that Bush was setting the stage for implementing the New World Order, using Mexico and Saudi Arabia's roles for cover and for further expansion of U.S. covert criminal activity. This included the arming of Iraq with weapons and chemical warfare capabilities. The message Reagan had me programmed with earlier that day was further evidence of this. I delivered Reagan's message to King Fahd as ordered:

"Greetings to King Fahd from President Reagan. The negotiations you are about to embark on are not only critical to the world peace process, but may solidify U.S.-Saudi relations beyond your wildest expectations. You have my word that what appears to be the building up of forces in Iraq is but a mirage in the whirlwind. And when this operation is completed and the dust finally settles, you will see that the sands have shifted in time, running out on our adversaries and shifting all power and control to our unified effort. United we stand to conquer all in the name of world peace and world order, and I am confident that together we can not fail. The more Saddam destroys is that much less for us to do and deal with when we implement the Order. In the meantime, we all have much to gain and not a moment to lose."

It was raining by the time I was escorted back to Bush's residence where Houston was waiting to take Kelly and me back to Tennessee.

[1] The Alaska state-appointed child sexual abuse physician's exam and photos corroborate that, for once, Bush may have told the truth.

CHAPTER 32

A PLACE TO RUN, NO NEED TO HIDE

Alex Houston had maintained his capacitor distributing business cover throughout the years, routinely changing company names and customers. By summer's end in 1987, Houston had stumbled onto a legitimate sales inquiry from the Peoples Republic of China, Unable to profitably manage a legal business, he look on a partner whom he said checked out to have a curious but inconclusive association in U.S. Intelligence. This partner was Mark Phillips. Houston had forbid me from meeting Mark until his background check was completed and his allegiances understood. As much as he was intrigued with Mark's past, Houston was enthralled with his propensity for conducting international business. In exchange for Mark's cooperation, Houston and he formed a legal corporation. Mark Phillips became President and CEO of Uniphayse. It wasn't long thereafter that he won Houston's confidence through repeated professional successes, and Houston permitted me to meet him.

I sensed right away that Mark was very different from the other men I encountered routinely. He treated me as though I were a person, and his eyes revealed no sexual interest in me at all. Instead of discussing world domination, slavery, pornography, drugs, and genocide like the other men 1 knew, he introduced me to the raccoons he had years ago rescued from certain death and then tamed. I was deeply impressed with how his "wild" pets loved and trusted him. 1 could not think to trust, ask for help, or even question at the time what it was that made Mark different.

In the fall of 1987, Kelly was enrolled in Nashville, Tennessee's St. Pius Catholic School. Her unusual behaviors were addressed in school counseling, but their causes and/or origins were never addressed. Kelly still laughs at the absurdity of being counseled to vent her "anger" by scribbling the source of her anger on a piece of paper and then jumping on it. With her "anger" being caused by extreme physical and psychological tortures and sexual abuse, it could not be so simplistically relieved. Houston had forbidden Kelly to display emotion, and had so conditioned her. Once, when he savagely beat her for laughing, I huddled in a corner holding her for hours. That did not positively affect her enormous nurturing needs any more than jumping on a piece of paper. With tears streaming down her face, she opened her bedroom curtains and cried out to what she believed was "Bush's Eye in the Sky". "Why do you hate me? Why do you hate me so much, world, when I love you? 1 want to die now. 1 can't take it any more."

That, as evidenced by the near death asthma attack she endured, further proved that Houston's tortures were too much for a seven-year-old child to co-exist with. In retrospect, that remaining part of her mind that could question why her existence was too horrible to comprehend was locked away- And so it goes in the "life" of a mind-controlled slave.

In December 1987, my 30th birthday launched the final countdown to my death. Houston was in regular contact with Michael Dante (as telephone receipts prove), and arrangements were finalized for Kelly and me to be transferred to California. There, I was supposed to be burned alive in a snuff pornography film and Kelly would become the property of Dante. But first, I had orders to conclude my part in Operation Greenbacks for Wetbacks by meeting with de la Madrid. Houston had booked a New Year's NCL cruise to Mexico for all three of us.

Kelly and I were walking among the Mexican pyramid ruins in Tulum, when Houston pointed out an iguana lizard sunning itself on a rock near the parking lot. As Kelly and I approached the iguana, two Mexican Secret Servicemen emerged from a dark blue Mercedes. They used the keys, codes, and triggers to our programming that had been provided them to hypnotically create the illusion that the iguana was trance-forming into de la Madrid. This control technique was to build an amnesic block to ensure against memory recall.

In reality, we were transported by automobile to de ta Madrid's tacky museum-style house nearby. There, Kelly and I were taken into his all too familiar bedroom by a uniformed matronly woman. De la Madrid's bed was a king-size waterbed set in a darkwood canopy frame. This time the bedspread was a plush black-blood red, which de la Madrid pointed out to Kelly as he set her on the bed. It was my experience that de la Madrid's bed was in itself a NASA technology adventure.

Mounted inside of the canopy was a movie screen where de la Madrid viewed porn videos and/or NASA-provided films. From his bed I saw replicas of the NASA Goldstar multiscreen monitors that were routinely used in "experimental" mind-control conditioning. By filming the actual NASA multiscreen grouped monitors, the resultant video provided the illusion of seeing a Goldstar multiscreen when shown on a (single) screen such as was built into de la Madrid's bed canopy. For example, once when I was in his bed, the same light blue sky with moving clouds was depicted on the monitor screens that NASA had used to lock-in my programming "Somewhere in Time," de la Madrid showed on his canopy movie screen. He further enhanced the effect by having me hypnotically "float/drift" on his waterbed which he had covered with a spread of similar light blue sky with clouds print. My previous NASA programming was easily accessed "Somewhere in Time" through this simple, but nevertheless complex visual triggering method. The pornography shown was of me from previous taping, alternating with a built-in video camera projecting our sex acts onto the screen as they occurred.

This time de la Madrid said, "Let us end where we began...," referring to my witnessing the rape of my daughter in Shasta. He ordered me to undress and recline against the headboard of his bed. At the foot of the bed, he began pulling Kelly's jeans off as he said, "You gave birth to her, just as you gave birth to the border agreement, and now your role is through on both counts. The tears she will shed as you burn cannot extinguish the flames of passion you have passed on to her. Your intense sexuality has been regenerated in her, and this hormonal experiment in genetics will successfully evolve for generations to come. Your role is complete. And thanks to my friends in Washington, NASA has perfected the formula and given birth to the technology of mirrored procreation using recreated bloodlines. The only detectable difference makes the blood run cold. Reptilian. See for yourself"

De la Madrid gestured up toward the canopy screen, where the NASA created video of my "giving birth" to the lizard was depicted. By this time, the NASA provided designer drug for mind control, "Tranquility," had been administered and was kicking in full force. My eyes were hypnotically fixed on the video as he began performing oral sex on my daughter. She, too, was rendered helplessly defenseless by the drug and quietly complied with his every demand. Using specific commands, de la Madrid ordered me to spread my legs and display the vaginal mutilation carving. He positioned himself over Kelly's face, smothering her with his penis while he performed oral sex on my carving.

When at last we were returned to the NCL cruise ship, Kelly and I were vomiting sick from de la Madrid's abuse and the high voltage trauma that followed. An unusually large shipment of cocaine and heroin had been loaded, which was transferred into the walls of our custom built motor home once we docked at Key Biscayne, Florida. Houston supposedly stayed aboard ship for the next week of his engagement, while I drove the motor home full of drugs and my sick daughter to Houston's farm where we resided in Tennessee.

By the time Houston returned to Tennessee from his NCL cruise, Ken Riley had already emptied the motor home and dispersed the drugs as previously planned. The only business Houston had to attend was implementing the final phase of trance-ferring Kelly and me to Dante and being updated on Mark Phillips' latest successes.

Houston immediately began programming me to not take anything but Kelly's and my clothes when sent to Dante At the same lime, Mark Phillips and I had reached a level of communication that was new to me. Although I had no conscious understanding of what he was saying, the truths he spoke resounded throughout the depths of my being. For instance, when he showed me his "Back to the Future" Delorean sports car, he wisely cryptically stated, "Sometimes you have to know where you've been in order to know where you're going."

Just before Kelly and I were to leave for California, Mark asked me to help him force Houston out of business by providing him with the files on suspected (corporate) criminal activity that Houston kept hidden at our house. Not only did 1 gladly do so, but "somehow" I was able to ask for Help in return. I asked him to help Kelly and me get away from Houston before I was killed and Kelly was sentenced to a fate worse than death. Mark assured me that he would help.

The day Houston intended for Kelly and me to be transferred to Dante, I felt a strange compulsion to telephone Mark and notify him. That morning, Houston drove to Mark's office believing he was going to meet with him later that day. But Mark had brought a team of movers to the house, and rescued Kelly and me. He had brilliantly intercepted us as we were being passed to our intended destination! Mark even understood Kelly's and my need to rescue our farm pets from Houston's abuse. He not only found good homes for our livestock, but he had arranged for them to be loaded and transferred during our frantic rush to move out of Houston's house. Within two hours, Mark safely moved Kelly, me, our pets and livestock to freedom. Despite brilliant orchestration, pandemonium broke out when it was discovered that Kelly and I had been intercepted and detoured from our intended demise.

"Wake up, sleeping beauty," Mark said as he gently roused me with a cup of fresh coffee. "Welcome to a new day."

My eyes opened. I had never experienced such kindness before, and it seemed like a whole new world to me. Mark presented me with a beautiful watch, which he strapped on my wrist. Noting my wonder and surprise, he explained, "Now you will always know that 1 gave you the time of day."

The time of day? No one had ever given me their time before. They only took mine. And I never wore a watch before. I did not even know what month or year it was, let alone the tune of day. I had no concept of time, which Mark explained I must always monitor from that moment on.

"You say someone is trying to kill you. Why?" Mark asked. I could not think to answer. I was totally amnesic. All three of us were now in grave jeopardy, literally dodging bullets while I desperately sought the answers. How could I have requested help when I did not even know who and/or what I was running from? Somewhere inside were the answers, and I intended to uncover them all. Fast. Now there were three lives on the line.

Mark understood that safety was tantamount to memory recovery. At the same time, none of us could be safe until I could recall who and what we were up against. Mark quickly sold everything he owned, including his DeLorean, retaining only basic necessities. He also sold the motor home which had been awarded me in my divorce from Alex Houston. Using these funds, Mark took Kelly and me to the peaceful wilderness of Alaska.

February 4, 1988 marked the beginning of life for Kelly and me, free from our mind-controlled existence. It also marked the beginning of a new kind of survival as we embarked on "The Most Dangerous Game" of international proportions. Despite death threats and attempts, intimidation and cover-ups, we have survived these past seven years by refusing to keep secrets-which is in itself "another story."

---

[1] As quickly as the accuracy of my deprogramming notes were corroborated and/or verified, abstracts of various experiences and identification of abusers were vastly disseminated. Those who read these abstracts over the years, literally watched me gain piece/peace-of-mind (reintegrate.)

~ PUBLIC NOTICE ~

This book contains sexually explicit quotes and irrefutable anatomical details of perpetrators and is therefore recommended for mature readers only.

TRANCE
FORMATION OF AMERICA

TRANCE Formation of America is the documented autobiography of a victim of government mind control Cathy O'Brien is the only vocal and recovered survivor of the Central Intelligence Agency's MK-Ultra Project Monarch mind control operation. Chiseled deep into the white stone of the CIA's Langley, Virginia headquarters is a partial verse lifted from the Holy Bible and writings of Saint John..." ami the truth shall make you free." This statement, like the agency, is total reality. The building that it is engraved upon houses the world's most successful manufacturer of lies to facilitate psychological warfare.

The "Company" uses truth and technology as their raw materials to produce "pure" lies for control of you and America's allies. Within the pages of TRANCE Formation of America you'll find the truth.

US. GOVERNMENT MIND CONTROL

On August 3rd, 1977 the 95th U.S. Congress opened hearings into the reported abuses concerning the CIA's TOP SECRET mind control research program code named MK Ultra. On February 8th 1988, an MK Ultra victim, Cathy O'Bnen, was covertly rescued from her mind control enslavement by Intelligence insider Mark Phillips. Their seven year pursuit of Justice was stopped FOR REASONS OF NATIONAL SECURITY. TRANCE Formation of America exposes the truth behind this criminal abuse of the Unconstitutional 1947 National Security Act

Chapter 2

My Birth

"Before I formed you in the womb I knew you." Jeremiah 1:5

I was always suicidal from the earliest time I can remember. I hated being alive. I was filled with dread, fear, and constant torment of what would happen to me next. The people who programmed me made extremes so that if I ever told people what was going on, people would think I was crazy and say that I had a mental disorder. I had to create a false façade every day, every second, especially when we were around people. I acted like the programmers were perfect and we were a perfect family. If I ever let on that they were anything but perfect, they told me that I would never be allowed outside again. I was baffled as to why if I had the perfect family, why was I so horribly depressed, and why did I think I was the devil's child? Why did I constantly feel like there was something hideously evil inside of me that I could never get rid of?

It wasn't until I began falling apart and having flashbacks that Papa God began to show me the truth about my life. My mind had been deliberately programmed to forget all of my past and for me to live in a false reality to cover up what these people were doing to me. If you looked at us from the outside, we looked like the all-American family. This was a well-thought-out plan to cover up their evil actions, but most of all, the much bigger plan of the Illuminati in this country.

The lady who carried me in her womb was what the cult refers to as a "breeder" or "carrier." She was only existing to bring babies that had been dedicated to Satan and the Illuminati into this country. The people who brought me here were German. They have a German accent and speak German when they are not around people who could expose them. The lady programmer looked a lot like the lady who was carrying me. This was done on purpose to trick me and try to make me feel guilty about her death continually throughout my life when they were torturing me.

The Lord showed me clearly during my healing journey that I was put together in a petri dish, mixed with many different Illuminati bloodlines —specifically mixed with DNA from my programmers so that I would blend in with society by looking like them. According to human terms, I was put together specifically by evil men whose agenda was to have only one bloodline that they considered "the pure bloodline." *But Papa God!* He is ultimately the Creator of my blood and of my genetics! No matter how powerful the Illuminati is, they are no match for Papa God. I went through a time of intense sadness when Papa God revealed how they had mixed my DNA. The need to be a part of something, to be in a family, is a basic need of a human being. The programmers knew this, and they used this need against me every day. The lady who carried me in her womb was a victim. She was tortured and raped too. Papa God revealed this to me because I didn't understand why I had genuine love for her. He said that she loved me, and as an infant, I could feel the love that she had for me. Even in the womb, I was electrocuted by electric prods by the programmers. They would speak

Chapter 1

Why I Share the Truth

"Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." John 8:32

This book was very difficult to write even though I lived it, so I know, without a doubt, it is difficult to hear and comprehend. But did you know that there are people in sex slavery, being tortured daily, government-funded mind control Illuminati victims? In this country, in your neighborhood, in your church? I'm sharing my story in great detail. Why am I sharing the truth in such depth? Because Jesus told me to tell the truth, and leave no detail out. Although it is difficult to fathom, it is essential to understanding the evil that is at work. There are millions of people who are slaves here in the United States, the land of the free. We have to stop looking at the outward appearance of a person, and walk by the Spirit. Walking by the Spirit would mean listening to the Spirit when we feel that something is just not right with a person. The disciples walked like this, the Spirit led them to call out people who were doing evil and pretending to be good. The disciples exposed these evil men and their true intentions. Jesus calls us to hate everything that God hates. Every disciple stood up against evil and many even lost their lives for speaking against it. Isaiah 5:20 says, "Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter."

As the Church of Jesus, we need to allow people the freedom to tell the truth, and to expose the truth even if it's difficult to hear. People who talk about difficult things are labeled as negative, when they need to be encouraged to share the truth without fear of rejection. The Bible states that "The truth will set you free" (John 8:32).

Why tell people about the horrendous things that happened in my life? Because people are trying to distort, denigrate, defile, and pervert who Jesus is. The people who do these things pretend to be Christians, and they are getting away with it. They will ultimately be exposed at the end, because that is Papa God's promise in His Word. I believe He has called me to expose them now so that other people can be set free like me. These sons of Belial count on the Church, not being discerning enough to know they are in the midst of them. "For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. No wonder for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light" (2 Corinthians 11:13–15). Jesus warned people of the false apostles and sons of Belial. If it was important enough for us to be warned about this in the Bible by Jesus, then why do we shy away from and act as though there is no need to see the truth of the evil and the slavery that is going on in the Church? Our highest calling is that we are supposed to be loving, if we are followers of Jesus, part of love is truth. Every darkness needs to be brought into the light. According to the Bible, in the end times, even the elect will be deceived. If we acknowledge the truth now and look into the light and the truth, we will not be deceived. William Wilberforce, an abolitionist, shared explicitly all of the details of the slavery that was going on in the world. He left no detail out, in his description of the horrors they were facing. He shared the putrid smell of evil, the abusive conditions that the slaves were kept in, and the horrors that they endured. “If to be feelingly alive to the sufferings of my fellow-creatures is to be a fanatic, I am one of the most incurable fanatics ever permitted to be at large” (William Wilberforce).

The truth was revealed by Wilberforce many years before people were willing to do anything about it. He continued on in the battle against slavery year after year, warring and battling with Papa God on his side, until finally the slaves were set free! Truth needs to be seen, in order to heal. It is imperative. Truth sets people free! For example, medicine tastes awful while its going down, but the end result of taking the medicine is healing. Just like Gianna Jensen, a survivor of a failed abortion, stated, “I didn’t survive to make things comfortable. I survived to stir things up!” Jesus didn’t tell people, “Sit back. I want everybody to be comfortable.” He stirred things up! He didn’t sit back and allow evil to prevail!

As we journey through my story, I pray that, as a wonderful lady I know once said, you will see “Papa God’s story” in my story. That is my desire, and my prayer. There are a lot of things in my story that will not be easy to hear and will be hard to believe. That is understandable. We all wish that there wasn’t evil in this world. But the reality is, we live in a fallen world, with a very real devil, that has no limit to the evil he is willing to do. For those that have chosen to follow Satan, they also have no limit to the evil that they are capable of. They have given themselves over to evil: body, mind, and spirit. They have made their choice to stand against Papa God, and they were not coerced to do so. By their own free will, they chose to serve Satan and do what he does.

I will share very candidly about my past. This is directly because the Lord asked me to do so. He told me not to hold anything back, to tell the truth in its entirety. This story needs to be told, and people need to hear. We are drawing to the end. We are being called to go speak truth and prepare the body of Christ so that we won’t be caught off guard, with no idea of what is really going on in this world. Here is Papa God’s cry to each of us: “Behold, I send My messenger before your face. Who will prepare Your Way before You. The voice of one crying in the wilderness; ‘Prepare the way of the Lord; Make His paths straight’” (Mark 1:2).

Each of us, in our own individual unique way, prepare the way of the Lord. Papa God showed me that this is a “journey” for us. Journeys aren’t meant to be fast. They are slow and detailed. Each minute, each moment means something. The journey is just as important as the finish. He gave me the analogy of a person getting in their car and stepping on the gas, going at top speed. They are full of anxiety and frustration that they aren’t “there yet.” But they are missing the lessons from the journey. In this fast-food culture, we really have to stand against that mind-set of the world. It causes us to miss out on so much that Papa God wants to show us. The devil tries to get us to think we won’t be happy, we won’t be good enough, we won’t fulfill our destiny until we arrive at our destination—finally when one day our promises from Papa God are complete. But what if the journey is the purpose, and we miss the genuine message and joy He is trying to share with us now?

Let this book sink in page by page, chapter by chapter, until you get the full picture of what Papa God is trying to reveal. I will be sharing bits and pieces of what He is teaching me daily along the way while writing this book, as well as sharing the graphic details of my story and how I live each day now. After hearing about the hell that I survived, my life truly will be an expression of the power of Papa God to rescue anybody from anything! He is standing with His hand outstretched, waiting to walk through this with you, and I promise you will never be the same over me, “Die,” “You are evil,” “You are Satan’s child.” Scientifically, people would say that this is not possible to remember things from the womb, but Papa God can reveal anything He wants to bring healing. They killed this lady who carried me as I was being born and told me that it was my fault that she died. They said that if I ever got close to anyone, the same thing would happen to them.

The people who did this were German soldiers, and treated me like a prisoner of war. They hated anybody who was elderly, handicapped, Christians, Jews, anybody who was not in their elite group. The infants that they chose to bring here were not in the elite group. We were told if we did what they said and helped them take down the Christians, then we were promised that we could live. We could be like them and be truly good, the perfect race. They told us that they were originally good, that they were the chosen people. The Illuminati would refer to themselves as the God in the garden and “we,” the victims, were the ones who sinned. Therefore, we were evil, with an impure bloodline. In their narrative, Satan was trying to get us to be accepted by God, but God did not want to accept us as we were. Since we were the cause of all evil and were not perfect, God gave us to people who would torture us to be perfect like them. It was a horrible deception and hideous plan from Satan that the programmers deceived all victims to believe.

The Illuminati brought many infants into this country to train as German soldiers, who were planted into this society to accomplish a mission to take down America. The last time that was attempted. Hitler did it against the Jews. “On November 3, 1943, some forty-three thousand Jews were gathered, shot, and killed from various camps in Poland. This concluded Operation *Reinhard*, which had virtually exterminated Polish Jewry. The SS called this final action “Harvest Festival.” While countless historians, commentators, and books have often emphasized the industrial nature of the holocaust, SS Nazis understood the concluding action of Operation *Reinhard* to be a special day on the farm comparable to an annual harvest celebration. In the twisted Nazi mind, Jewish weeds had to be eradicated from the blood and soil of Germany’s *lebensraum*. Operation “Harvest Festival” was the single largest Nazi Jewish massacre conducted throughout the entire war. That is exactly what they are planning for Christians here in the United States, and for all of the victims ultimately. They used torture and mind control to make us believe we would be saved if we did what they told us to do.

This entire plan of the Illuminati is the attempt to destroy Christians. We were continually trained to fit into the Christian environment and tortured to take down the real Church slowly without them even knowing it. How is your biggest enemy defeated, they would say, “Catch them off guard, get them complacent, contented, believing all is well—so that when we attack there will be no retaliation, because it will be too late.”

I remember being in a little cage as an infant. I was connected to a monitor that showed if my heart was beating or not. The rest of my body was covered with electrodes; wires were going everywhere. The programmers told me they were keeping me alive. When they showed me that my heart was beating on the monitor, they locked the cage. When they showed me that my heart wasn’t beating on the monitor, they unlocked the cage. They would say over and over, “We determine if you live or die.” If I moved, I was electrocuted. So they trained my every move to be only directed by them. I learned to stay still and only move when I was told to. When I would cry, I would be shocked, so I learned not to cry. I was then told over and over that I wasn’t really hurting when I was in pain, that I shouldn’t cry. And since I wasn’t crying, they said, “You’re not hurting.” There was a constant state of confusion. The programmers would give me worms to eat and pretend like they were food. I had sores all over me from sitting in my feces and urine. When they would clean me up and put a diaper on me, they would be shocking my head at the same time. They would say over and over during the pain that I deserved the pain and that all of the pain was from God.

No matter what I did, they said I was wrong. I was put in a constant state of turmoil at all times. They would put a black cover over the cage that I was in and then tell me that I had died, and that I was alone. "God created you to torture you. He wants you here. He doesn't trust you. We have to torture you to be good enough." I was constantly thinking if I breathed right, moved right, maybe then they would let me out of this hell. They would say, "Be perfect as I am perfect. This is what God expects." No matter what, I couldn't be perfect enough. The programmers said they were born perfect, but I had to work for perfection. The programmers constantly said that God created me to never be good enough. The Illuminati say they are a divine race, that they are "perfect", and "gods." They would hook me up to a machine to reinforce what they were saying. This machine would shock me, and no matter how hard I worked, the pain never went away. So I worked harder and harder, and things never got better. I thought God hated me and wanted me to be in eternal pain.

In the hospital, I was put in a room with lots of other children. They were in cages too. Then I was put in a room by myself. I have no idea where I was; the room was white, sterile, and cold. I wasn't given food. I was given semen for food, to train me that having sex was my only way of survival. They were treating me like an animal. Actually, animals are treated better in this country than what I was treated.

At the same time, they were training me to attack like a soldier and training me to look perfect on the outside. The movie *Point of No Return* is the truth of what is done to many of the victims, except for those of us who have been brought there since birth. People see all of these movies today like *Conspiracy Theory*, and they think it is just fiction. It is real! I wish that people would ask themselves, "Where did they get the ideas for these movies?" The ideas are from rituals; it is in movies, because these things really do happen. The reason they have brought these movies out is they are trying to desensitize this country to the evil that is being perpetrated here. They are trying to make people in this country believe that nothing like that would ever happen. They told us that nobody would ever believe us and that they would think that we were crazy if we ever told. Another movie that shows the demonic foundation and territorial foundation of the Illuminati is the series of *Pirates of the Caribbean*. The octopus is a representation in rituals of all of the world leaders of Illuminati and their demonic power. The heart that is shown in the box in this movie represents the victims' heart in the ritual and how in the end times their heart will be exposed as evil. In the Satanic rituals, they cut out a human's heart and put it in a box. As victims, we are told if we choose to bury the truth about the Illuminati, they will not expose our heart as evil. This type of mind control and programming is foundational and is repeated over and over.

If you look at some of the people who go forward and share what happened to them, they are labeled as schizophrenic or paranoid. That's why the evil people did everything they could to try and make us feel like we were crazy. One of the biggest threats they made were that people would send us to a psychiatric hospital. What we knew of a hospital was the hell in the first five years of our life. We were brought up there, in seclusion, in torture. This ensured that we never told anybody, because we were too terrified to have to return to the hospital where we were programmed.

The programmers would poke my eyes with needles to cause my eyes to be red. Then they shaved my head and made me sit naked by myself in a room. They took pictures of me, and when I was forced to look at the pictures, they said, "See you even look like a demon." They made sure that I looked like a demon—with ribs sticking out, crouching on the floor, naked, deep red eyes, and a bald head—from all of the torture and deprivation. So when I saw myself in the mirror, I believed them when they said I was a hideous creature that deserved to be tortured.

What was their purpose in all this? To get me to believe at the core of who I was there was an evil monster who could not be trusted to be alone. An evil monster that deserved to be tortured. A demon that had been abandoned by God because of the wickedness of my heart. I knew nothing else other than what the programmers told me, so I believed their lies. That is how they controlled me. They programmed my mind to believe I needed them to control me. Without them, I thought that I was capable of no limit of evil.

As a child, I would fall asleep, and there would be a dead animal or dead person in the room with me when I woke up. They told me that I killed it while I was sleeping. I was terrified of myself. I hated being alone for terror that something evil within me would get out and do something horrible. They said God had given them the horrible task of keeping me from doing evil. I was tormented every moment, and there was no break from the torment. I lived with horrible guilt, shame, and terror of myself. I was glad that I was being tortured by them, because I was getting what I deserved. I wanted them to hurt me. I thought somehow it would make up for the evil things they said I had done.

As a child, I wasn't allowed to cry unless they said so. If I cried, they electrocuted me, and if I did cry, they would hurt someone and say it was my fault. I wasn't allowed to yawn, sneeze, go to the bathroom, eat, breathe without their say-so. When I was about three years old, they choked me until I was not able to breathe. I was gasping for breath. They said they gave me life and breath; without them, I wouldn't be able to live. They hooked me up to a heart monitor and told me that I had flatlined, that I had no heartbeat. Every person they brought in the room where I was at acted like I was dead. They began preparing me for the morgue. I was terrified as they were talking to each other. They talked like I wasn't there and said, "God hated her. He wanted her dead." Then the machine that they had me hooked up to started showing a heartbeat. They told me that they had brought me back, and God said that I could live if I let them hurt me and keep me under control. This was all before the age of five years old. They were laying a foundation of thinking that would keep me under their dominion.

A couple of days ago, I was sitting on our balcony with my husband, and there was a raccoon that was lying on the ground below us. I thought the raccoon was taking a nap, but Daniel said, "Hope, he will still be there at the end of the day." I felt intensely sad and responsible. So I started looking for a wildlife rescue in the area. I looked everywhere, and I couldn't find anybody. It was intense sadness that I was feeling. I couldn't help this poor raccoon. Then my mind went back to when I couldn't help the people who were dying in my arms. The many times that the people I tried to protect and wasn't allowed to protect. I couldn't save them. No matter what I did, I couldn't rescue them. Every single time, the evil people said it was my fault. The raccoon struggled to stand up and walk and then fell back down again. He was hurting, and it was tearing me up inside. I had watched so many people and animals suffer in my life I couldn't stand it. "What is going on, Lord? Why are You allowing this to happen?" I asked Papa God. He said, "To show you your heart. If your heart was evil, why would you care about that raccoon?" This was a profound moment that genuinely helped me see that I was not evil. Papa God can use even the smallest things in life to minister to us.

In a small amount of time, a buzzard began to try to get to the raccoon. I kept trying to scare it off, but it kept coming back. This brought back the hell I had lived through, of continually trying to protect people from getting devoured by buzzards. The people were killed by my programmers. They then told me their soul and spirit would be tormented forever if I let them be eaten by the birds or let the birds touch their body at all. I, once again, could not protect them. This is what I go through each day; there are triggers constantly. Triggers are programmed responses from sounds, smells, words, phrases, songs, hand gestures, and things throughout a normal day that would cause a response. These are established through horrific rituals and torture. I smell the smell of bubblegum, and I have flashbacks of the local doctor that was involved, raping me. I have the smell of vomit and have flashbacks of them allowing people to throw up on me and letting me sit in that horrid smell. Or the times, I would be left for days alone, with no food. Then they told me the only way I would survive was for me to eat the vomit.

There was a specific programmer who had a sign that he gave as a trigger. He didn't have a finger, so he would cut off a person's finger and shove it inside of my female parts. Then he said that he would always be a part of me and the other victims. So every time he showed the hand signal, it would remind me and the other victims what he had done to us, and start the terror all over again. A lot of Christian songs are used as triggers. For example, "Jesus, lover of my soul." The evil people raped me as they were singing that song. They dressed up like Jesus and held me down. "I will never let you go." "You have taken me from the miry clay, set my feet upon a rock, and now I know." The programmers put me in a dark hole by myself, and if I promised to pretend like they were perfect, I got to get out of the hole. But when I got out of the hole, I had to be raped. This abuse was done as the song was playing. So, when I was taken to church, I would hear the song and think that all Christians did those things. I thought everybody knew what I was going through, and they wanted me to get tortured, just like Jesus wanted me to be tortured. Every day, things were used as triggers to reinforce the programming. Coughing is another everyday thing that happens, but I was programmed about it. I was told that anybody who was coughing was trying to get people sick. Then when people got sick, the person was going to blame the sickness on me. They set this scenario up, and then they would torture me afterward. So they knew from then on that I would have extreme feelings of fear when someone coughed, and I would not trust them. In reality, every person that I would ever encounter would eventually cough, sneeze, or any of the tons of things they programmed me around; so this kept me chained to the evil people.

The evil people drugged me and told me that my hands and feet were like demons. They put fake claws on my hands and feet; then when I woke up from the drugs, I saw people who had been slashed up horribly, people who were completely torn apart. I was terrified because they told me I had been the person who killed them; I just didn't remember doing it. Since they showed me what I thought were my hands and feet that looked like claws, I was convinced I was an evil demonic monster. So from then on, I curled up my hands and place them under my armpits and curled up my toes too to keep people from seeing them and seeing who I really was. The programmers would curl up their arms or toes, and it was a sign to me that would trigger my mind to forget. An example of a smell trigger is the strong smell of egg. The male programmer was a college chemistry teacher. He had access to many different strong chemicals. He would use sulfur to burn people alive. This would melt their skin. Sulfur can even burn through rock. It also smells like eggs. I saw him burn people alive, with them screaming and crying for him to stop. The sulfur would be burning them, and the egg smell was there. Then, later to reinforce their torture, when they would make an egg sandwich, they would say they were going to burn me alive. This smell brings back horrible fear and pictures that are too excruciating to fathom. There are so many triggers that were created by the evil people I could write an entire book just about the triggers.

Chapter 3

The "Hospital"

"For there is nothing hidden that will not be disclosed, and nothing concealed that will not be known or brought out into the open." Luke 8:17

As I transition back to my story, I will share in detail the torture that was done in the hospital that I was put in during the foundational years of zero to five. I was kept in a hospital setting with many other children. I was tortured every moment of every day unless they allowed me periodically to sleep. Even sleep was used as a means to program me. They were constructing the foundational thinking of my life that they wanted me to have so they could get away with all of the torture, rape, and killing. They trained me like in the Pavlov experiments, with the dog salivating at the sound of a bell. They controlled me with shock torture, forcing me to have the behaviors that they wanted. They employed specific programming to control my every move, even training my brain to react the way they wanted it to as well. Another type of Pavlov experiment that the programmers used on me was where they made me act like a dog. They made me get on my hands and knees like a dog. Then they stimulated my vagina, only when there were animals, children, or handicapped people brought into the room. So this made me feel sexual feelings at the most horrible times when those people were present. I hated myself because I didn't want to feel sexual feelings when I saw them, but they had stimulated me so that my body would react how they wanted it to. Then they said I was evil and disgusting because I had those sexual feelings.

The programmers would starve me and then make me fight for food like an animal. They used the scripture Mark 7:27, which says, "But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not good to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs." Then they would say since I was a mixed breed that I had to sit under their table and only eat the crumbs that fell from their table. Repeating over and over, they would say, "Jesus said you are a dog, so we are just treating you like He treats you." I genuinely thought, if Jesus says I'm a dog, then that must be what I will always be.

The programmers' objective was to control my every move and to make me think that I needed them to control me. A way they did this was by the process of pairing sexual feelings with unsexual things, then saying that I was evil for having sexual feelings. With causing sexual feelings continuously, they made me think I was evil and needed their control over me. This was used as just another way to trick me into thinking I was evil. They wanted me to hate myself so much that I would welcome the torture and the pain they were doing to me. In my mind, there was no other choice. I had to let them control me, or I would feel like an evil perverse monster.

Russian and German experiments that were "psychological" studies were actual rituals of torture, and they were used as torture techniques by the evil people. These type of "studies" started all of the basic triggers that would keep me under their control. There were thousands of code words that meant something different to victims than it would in the outside world. For example, when they said "God," I immediately thought of my "master" programmer. The male programmer also called himself my master, and he said he was my god. When the programmers said the name "Jesus," they were referring to the person they assigned to have sex with me. The person who was assigned the "Jesus" role was the only way I would get freedom, according to my programmers. Freedom meant to me that they would assign me a man to marry me that would control me every second, but I wouldn't have to be tortured. I will discuss this in more detail later in the book.

When the programmers said, "I'm praying for you," that meant that they were killing people for me. To pray meant "to prey," to do horrible things to people. The programmers would get down on their knees and say they were "preying." I knew that meant someone was going to get hurt horribly or killed. They said they were killing people for me because I was evil. I needed a sacrifice to be good enough since the Jesus of the church didn't choose me.

I was tortured as a child around each main color. I was programmed that when I saw that color or I wore that color, I was to allow a different part of my mind or alter to be out. Red meant sex parts were out. These were the parts or alters that were trained to have sex. The sex parts would have to be present and have sex with whomever the programmers said whenever they said. White meant the "God and Jesus" parts had to be out. The "God and Jesus" parts had to be perfect and were forced to be judge and determine who lived or died. The programmers made these parts think that they had a choice, but there was never a choice. For example, "You can allow one of these two people to live or die." There was never a good choice offered; my heart was ripped to shreds. Black meant the evil and death parts had to be present. Everywhere those parts of my mind went, something evil happened, and someone died, and the programmers manipulated these parts such that I'd be tricked into believing it was always my fault. Navy meant royalty parts were forced to perform. The royalty parts had been given false kingdoms and titles to cause a false pride. If you are completely deprived of all self-worth, you will do anything for purpose and meaning—anything to make you feel important somewhere, somehow. These titles and kingdoms were only given if I took on the demons that were over them. Purple meant Illuminati parts were to perform. This color meant that the Illuminati ruled and reigned over me, and I was their product. Anytime a programmer wears purple, that means that they are showing off their merchandise and product that day, and I knew I would be sold in an auction that day. Purple was a reminder that I was not free and that they owned me. This was reinforced in rituals by the Scripture "I am not my own, I have been bought with a price" (1 Corinthians 6:19–20). Pink meant princess pretend alters were out. The denial parts of my mind were forced to pretend that the programmers were perfect parents. This was normally when we were out in public. The color gold meant number one in the Illuminati. The right side of the brain and body was in charge when the alters were out, and that part of my brain and body had to take control. The color silver, number two, meant the left side of the brain and body alters were out. So in summary, the left side was the evil side, and the right side was the good side in my programming. This was also reinforced through Scripture: Jesus was always at the right hand of the Father. And the right hand was seen as holy, while the left hand was seen as defiled. They programmed me to believe that I had to be number one at all times out in public in order to earn my husband, who was going to control me. This programming was done in such great detail that whatever underwear I wore meant what part was out, and what outfit meant what I had to do that day. These colors are used in rituals and are programmed down to even how they choose the car you drive. There was an underlying reason for every single thing that they did. The main reason they go to such great detail in their programming is that ensures that no person will even suspect that they are doing evil;

it is a devious setup against the victims. All of their communication is hidden, appearing even "Christian," but underneath there is a much different meaning to what they are doing.

The programmers put *Wizard of Oz* programming in place in the first five years of my life. If you look around you on a daily basis, there are so many phrases from that movie that are spoken in everyday life. If you research the *Wizard of Oz*, you will see its Satanic roots. They would set up rituals where God was the mayor of Oz; and he decided who got a heart, a brain, courage, etc. If we didn't get these "gifts," we were supposed to play the role of someone who was lacking in those areas. The entire goal was that we played a character like Dorothy was in the dream. We had to pretend we were dreaming all of the bad things that were happening. The evil people said that the yellow brick road was the road to heaven, so if I pretended well enough, I would get to go to heaven. But I never was good enough. They continually tried to cause competition between the victims, and if we weren't chosen, then the wedding feast meant our death. They tried to create a denial world in my mind and in every situation so that as we got into the society, no one would suspect that we were being hurt.

After the first five years of my life, it was time to move me into society. They chose a small town in Kentucky that was of German decent. It was the name of a German city in the Third Reich. They would blend me into the society there and cause the people to never think that they could ever hurt "their child." They enrolled me into the local school. The male programmer was a teacher, a coach, and a counselor in the school. So he was able to be there to control my every move. He made sure that he put me where there were other victims or programmers. And if someone spoke to me outside of the people who were allowed to speak to me, then he tried to discredit them by saying to me that they were part of why I was there. My programmers would go on to say the person knew how evil I was, and they were just playing the game too.

The programmers put me in the doghouse behind their house a lot. He built a doghouse that had a pen and a back shed that had a bolt on it. It was covered over with a piece of wood, and they kept me in it with the dog. They had a heat lamp they said was for the dog to stay warm. I didn't deserve to be warm, they said. The reality was that I had to sleep with the dog, which was my only interaction in life for long periods of time. I would grow to love the dog and to cling to it. When they saw that I loved the dog, they would kill it and say it was my fault. I had no one. I was completely alone.

I don't share all of this for the shock and awe value. I share this because Papa God has told me to share these details. Luke 8:17 says, "For there is nothing hidden that will not be disclosed and nothing concealed that will not be known or brought out into the open." Papa God wants all of the evil things done by evil people to be exposed. Bringing things into the light brings healing. First John 1:15 says, "God is the Light; in Him there is no darkness at all." He doesn't just ask us to be honest about the highlights of our life but also the darkness so that people can be made aware. How can a person be rescued if no one knows they are enslaved? I was treated like an animal, led around like a dog with a leash. They would blow a whistle, and that meant all of the dogs (mixed breed victims) had to gather together. My programmers said that *God* was *dog* spelled backward, so since I wasn't God or His chosen child, then I was a dog, the very opposite of God. They forced me to get on my hands and knees and repent to them for being so evil.

Chapter 4

Sharing the Truth

“You who are full of all deceit and fraud, you son of the devil, you enemy of all righteousness, will you not cease to make crooked the straight ways of the Lord?” Acts 13:10

The other day on the way to the gym, I was behind a garbage truck. I was annoyed because the truck was slowing me down. Papa God told me to look at that garbage truck. Repenting is like that garbage truck. Repenting is not saying you’re evil or a piece of trash. Repenting is to allow us to take all of the trash, the sin, that keep us from seeing who we really are—completely away. Repenting is actually revealing we’re beautiful children of God. Papa God never meant for us to believe that we are trash because we made a mistake. We tell Papa God about the sin that needs to be taken away, and He gathers it up and takes it away. So we are left with a clean house, free to be free!

Jesus warns us about evil people throughout Scripture. He speaks in Romans about giving them over to a debased mind, filled with all unrighteousness, vile passions, murder, evil-mindedness, and the list goes on. Romans 1:28–30 says, “Furthermore, just as they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, so God gave them over to a depraved mind, so that they do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil.”

Papa God also shares that they know who God is but choose to do these things. They pretend to detest the people who are doing the very evil things they do. This is the reason Papa God warns us not to look at the surface of a person, to discern with the Holy Spirit. All things that look good are not always good. I was very confused many times because Christians would shame me and say I needed to pray for them. As I began to ask Papa God about praying for the programmers, the very next day, He revealed in Scripture my answer that confirmed that I should not pray for them. Jeremiah 7:16 says, “So do not pray for this people nor offer any plea or petition for them; do not plead with me, for I will not listen to you.” Only because of the evil people’s willful choice to give their entire creation over to Satan. They didn’t choose what they chose because of wounds or pain. They chose Satan while being fully aware of who Papa God is and about Jesus’s death and resurrection. They actually know more about Scripture than most Christians do, because they twist and pervert every Scripture.

The people who hurt me were schoolteachers, a deacon, and a women’s leader in the local Baptist church. This is where the Illuminati and sex traffickers hide. They hide so they can divide and conquer. The enemy has tricked us into judging by what we see on the outside, instead of judging by the Spirit. The Spirit leads us into true judgment. Jesus warned us over and over again that there would be people who would appear good and would be evil.

Second Corinthians 11:13–15 says, “For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore, it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds.” The definition of *disguise* is to give (someone or oneself) a different appearance in order to conceal one’s identity, pass oneself off as impersonate. They do all of this willfully without any form of remorse.

The place where the evil people kept the victims had a morgue; at the time, of course, I didn’t know what it was. They would put us in the drawers and not let us out. The dead people were already decomposing; sometimes they would put us in the drawers with parts of the bodies. This was horrifying. They told us that God had sent us to hell—that if we didn’t do what God told us to do, we would have to stay there. The only way out of hell was to kill someone. If we killed them, they told us that we would get to live and the person who was dead would come back to life and not have to stay there. This was to reinforce in us that Jesus did not die for us, that we were too bad, and that we had to have another sacrifice for us to not go to hell. I never ever chose to hurt anybody, not once. I was forced physically, mentally, and emotionally. That was the worst part of all of the torture because that went against who I was as a child of Papa God.

The people were already dead in the cold chambers in the morgue, but to a three-year-old, there was no difference. So each of us had to stab a person. They took the knife in our hand and made us do it. Then stood back and said, “You are so evil. God hates you. Look what you did. You killed this person.” I asked when the person was going to wake up, like they promised us would happen; but the person never woke up.

So all of the other victims and I were programmed that we were evil and we kill people. Then the evil people used this and would reinforce that we needed them because they would keep us from doing evil. We believed them. There is no greater hell than to think that no matter what you do you will never be good, never be able to trust yourself, and there is a deep torment and torture to your soul and spirit. This is the deepest core lie that the Illuminati built on over and over again. They called me the “master executioner,” “*me*.”

This torture still affects me to this day. I always second-guess myself. Even if I genuinely know I haven’t done anything wrong, I look for an evil motive inside as to why I do something. I don’t trust that I deserve to be treated in a kind way. Someone I love walked in the door last night, and I sensed something was wrong, and I asked them if there was something wrong. They got offended and began to get angry and yell at me. Instead of taking up for myself, I just took the yelling. I didn’t require them to treat me differently. They trained me to be a doormat, to never stand up for myself. Why should I ask to be treated kindly? The programmers said I was evil; I had no rights.

The other day, I was listening to the radio about Christian writers. They said that beauty and truth are the two main reasons for writing. They went on to say that the truth is not what people flock to because it’s difficult to hear, but it’s just as important. I choose to write the truth even if no one chooses to hear, even if no one listens. There are millions of slaves out there in this country that I write this book for—for those that have no voice and no way out. Wait, I promise there is Someone that is on His *way* to rescue you, and He is bringing all of His children who say *yes* with Him! I care, and I will stand for you!

Each of you are called for such a time as this, to rescue those that Papa God is calling you to rescue. You are taking a huge first step, arming yourself with the truth you need to be aware of, the reality of what you are facing. I was so angry that I had to wait thirty years to be set free. I cried out and asked Papa God why He didn't rescue me sooner. He said, "I asked thousands of people, Hope, to reach out to you, to listen and see the truth, but they did not." You could be the person whom someone has been waiting for their entire lives, someone who will see the truth, and be a way out for them! As I transition back to my story, ask Papa God if there is any way you can help. What is your piece to the puzzle of freedom for somebody? There is no piece too small or too insignificant.

A common way they reinforced the thinking that I was evil is taking pictures with me doing things they had forced me to do, but in the picture, it did not look forced. They would use the pictures as leverage. "Don't ever tell anybody, or we will take these pictures to the police." All of the victims hated the thought of jail because they had told us that it was just like the hell we started out in. They said we would be tortured there and never get out.

It's Halloween as I'm writing this. The night of the 30th after midnight is the worst time of sacrifice and rituals. The programmers say they determine who gets to go to heaven and who gets to go to hell. There is a huge corporate ritual with powerful people from all walks of life—doctors, lawyers, teachers, pastors, judges. As a victim, you get evaluated and tested for the whole year by the Illuminati on how well you did to accomplish their plans. The two options that were given were to go to hell and realize how evil you really are, to be the evil person that God created you to be forever; or go to heaven. In heaven, the torture is all the same, but you pretend like it isn't. If you pretend well enough, you get another year to try and be good enough.

A lot of this is based on programming from the *Wizard of Oz*. You go to the emerald city and get a new brain, heart, etc.; and you go out and pretend that things are perfect. If you do this well enough, the evil people say that you never will have to go to hell. Of course, all of this is a lie. The same torture and terror continues everywhere with the evil people. They are continually building a denial system to cover up what they do to us.

The corporate rituals continue until November 5, election day. They chose election day because it's their way of reinforcing to victims that they are not in the "elect class." The evil people say that they are the elite, the elect, that are chosen by god, but their god is Satan. The Illuminati's plan and destiny, according to them, is to destroy those that are not "elect." They have been for decades and currently are making an army of trained tortured slaves that are set in place in every city throughout the world—people who are like me, who were born into the Illuminati with the programming and torture. We are told if we do our job, then we can become the "elect," and we will be set free. At that time, we won't be evil anymore. Every single aspect of a victim's life is a double bind. Every time you try to cause the least damage or pain, it is turned and used against you.

The school shootings and the random shootings you have seen are in majority people who have been programmed to do that job. I have seen maps of the United States, and the targets of each state, and their ultimate goal for that state. They continually said, "We are going to take over the US, and our trained army and terrorists are going to help us do that." Just like Hitler tried to take over the world, that is how they are going about destroying us within, bit by bit taking down the United States.

A way that this plan is slightly different than Hitler's plan is that the Illuminati is hiding their every move and waiting until the day all of the steps have been carried out. That way, they will catch the United States off guard and unaware that there even was a plan to take over. Satan works as an angel of light, deceiving people into believing he is good and then trapping them. The best prey is the prey that has no idea that they are even being attacked.

The list of the ways that the evil people have tried to destroy my life are endless. I get up this morning, and I feel anger and rage. The programmers continually would not let me sleep. I would sleep maybe two hours after the rituals. Then they would say, "You have to get up and spend time with god." This meant that I had to get up and get on my knees and get raped by god to make me better.

The person who raped me was a person who had the god title. The programmers would say they were sent to be god for me on earth. They were sent to keep me in line. "In line" had a hidden meaning; it meant that I died, "flatlined," and they took over. They would hook me up to a heart monitor to reinforce this ritual. The monitor would show a heartbeat, and the evil people would say, "You better let us take control of your heart, or something bad will happen." If I did what they told me to, then my heart would be under their control. Like an animal, they gave me commands, and I had to do them. Sit, speak, roll over (get raped), go to the bathroom (I couldn't go unless they said I could).

I would be on display like a science project when they would have their corporate rituals. All of the programmers would display their "work." There were times when I would wake up, and the evil people would say, "What did you do!" There would be someone whom they killed in their ritual that night, and they would say, "You did this during the night. Your heart wasn't under our control!" So I believed that I was wicked and evil, and that I could not trust myself. I wanted to be controlled because I was afraid of myself. The reality was that I never killed anybody, but I didn't know any different about myself.

I never thought I would ever get any justice on this earth due to the fact that they cover their tracks so well. They have people watching out for them continuously to make sure that there is no one following them or anyone close to where they are who could hear, see, or find out anything. They also dispatch demons to cover their tracks and to cause confusion in the spirit realm so that people will not be able to discern anything about them. They summon demons to cause a trancelike state in people as they talk to them. This causes a wall of denial and numbness to fall on the person. The demonics block the Holy Spirit from exposing their true identity. People need to be aware so that they can combat these demonics and walk in the freedom that is theirs. Powerful Illuminati leaders request for corporate demonic powers to come over the minds of people when listening to them speak on TV or at conferences. If the person listens to these top Illuminati leaders who are positioned throughout our culture, in media, entertainment, politics, sports, etc. Eventually, the person will no longer see anything other than what the Illuminati leader is wanting them to see; all of the evil will be disguised by demonic trances. They will no longer think that that person can do any wrong and begin to idolize them. At the rituals, the more innocent blood is shed, the more power the Illuminati receives. These sacrifices also give the programmers more power so that they can be taken over by the demons to be able to embody what they are trying to get people to see them as.

At the corporate rituals, each controller is showing off his programming and trying to find new ways to control their victims. The Illuminati study the way the brain works with experiments being carried out on the brain every day. They try to continually come up with ways to gain more control of the victims and over the people in this country.

Our spirits cannot be controlled, though! They could not make me choose Satan! They could not make me be evil! The spirit is the strongest area of our being. The Lord showed me that He protected my spirit. I chose Papa God, and there was not a thing the evil people could do about it.

Chapter 5

This is Real

"You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies." John 8:44

Papa God had me read John 9 today. When Jesus spat on the ground, He was prophesying that His life was going to the ground in death. He would heal us and bring us out of the curse. His life brings complete healing. The pool of Siloam means "sent." Jesus was sent to wash away all of our wounds and to heal us completely, to bring us spiritual sight. "I once was blind, but now I see!" He washes us with the *truth*. The truth is imperative. In John 9:6, it states, "When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva." Jesus spoke the truth that the blind man was not blind because of any sin of his or his parents. Papa God is showing that His DNA is what is causing the healing. His DNA brings life; He brings life. The flesh and sickness were cancelled. The life of Jesus (saliva) brought healing and truth to the blind man. Then Jesus had the man go and wash in the pool of Siloam (sent). This represents Jesus being sent to wash away our sins, the fall of man from the perfect creation that we were made to be by Papa God. Also, this represents the way that Jesus heals us and sends us out to share with others how He has healed us.

As I shared earlier, the evil people say that there are two types of humans, the perfect humans and the imperfect. The imperfect were made out of dirt by God, and the perfect humans are written about in a different book that says that they are the chosen people. They were not created. They are gods with Satan; he is their leader. According to them, God is trying to take them down because He knows that they are more powerful than He is. I was told that the "real god," Satan, doesn't make dirt like God does. Since we are made from dirt, God made an inferior creature on purpose to control. The programmers said that is why they controlled me. They said over and over that God said we needed to be controlled.

The Illuminati says that they are equal to God and Satan. They believe they will rule together as soon as they get rid of the inferior race. So that is why they have put together an army all over the world that is programmed to exterminate all those that are not Illuminati; this army is in place to dominate and control the world and destroy those who do not comply.

The majority of their trained soldiers are innocent victims who have been programmed to complete a mission so that they can be good enough to go to heaven (be the chosen few who are a perfect race). Just like Muslims teach, you can be grafted in if they take out enough of the inferior race, the Christians.

There is a very strong connection with the Muslim jihad and the Illuminati. They both are wanting the same outcome. The Illuminati and the Muslim jihad are partnered together to help each other destroy Christians. The Illuminati funds the ISIS and the jihad. I have seen many jihad at the rituals, celebrating that they massacred Christians. They celebrate because Satan gives them more power to complete their missions. They use witchcraft and sorcery to cover their tracks, to sneak onto planes and into places where they are planning attacks.

Many of the jihadists are being trained by some of our military: tactics of war and mind control. How do I know this? Because I was a victim of their tactics. There were many Muslim jihad members who came to the Illuminati to learn the secrets they have, to destroy Christians. There is a very big picture here, a picture that is unfolding right before our eyes; and the majority of people have no idea what is happening. My programmers said that there would be an Aryan man who would be raised up. He would pretend like he was Christian, but like Hitler, his ultimate goal would be to annihilate those who aren't of the Aryan race.

Despite all of this, I do not fear, because I know the end of the story: Jesus wins! We win! I do think that the Lord has called us to be aware of the enemies' strategies so we can be successful in rescuing innocent victims and be the type of people who are on the offense, not the defense. We are God's children; Satan's powers are nonexistent compared to God's. Unfortunately, if we are not aware of Satan's tactics, we run the risk of being caught off guard and end up on the defensive. For example, the quarterback is the man in charge in football. He has the ability to win the game with help from his teammates. In order to be successful and keep from being beat up in the process, they have a strategy.

Another way the Illuminati completes their purpose is to blend into the culture. The people who tortured, raped, and programmed me were teachers in the local school they sent me to. He was a teacher, a counselor, basketball coach, softball coach, and track coach. He was involved in every detail of my life, every second. He did not allow me to be alone with anyone other than whom he said I could be around. If someone happened to speak to me who was not someone he allowed, he would tell me later, "They know how evil you are. They are just testing you to see if you will mess up. They were checking you out so they could buy you." So I never trusted any person, and I thought this was normal life. I just thought every person knew what was happening to me, and they agreed that it should happen.

My female programmer was a head start teacher. The person she called her sister worked at the board of education. She made sure all of my files were taken care of and no one found out about them. Both of the programmers were very involved in the Baptist Church there to keep their cover and make them look like the "perfect family." He was a deacon, and she was over the kids' church. They hid the "hell" I lived in, very well. They called in demons to cover them daily. The demons gave them the power to be the embodiment of what they are trying to represent. They also, cloak themselves in demons so that people will never discern that they are not what they present themselves to be.

Large rituals are done corporately to call in demons into the church or wherever they are trying to infiltrate to cause confusion and division. So if you feel confusion constantly when you're around someone, ask Papa God, "Why do I feel confusion?" I think the enemy has tried to get the church to a place where they do not question their feelings or spirit. When they see something that looks good, they take that at face value.

The culture teaches people to be polite, to be nice, to not question things. There were many times that Jesus and the disciples were not "nice" in our culture's meaning of the word *nice*. Jesus and the disciples discerned and called out evil. They exposed a person when they were inwardly something different from what they were presenting outwardly. They had to rely on what the Holy Spirit was telling them, not what they were seeing. Matthew 3:7 says, "But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to where he was baptizing, he said to them: 'You brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath?'" I cry out for a spirit of discernment for the church.

Ephesians 3:10 says, "His intent was that now, through the church, the manifold wisdom of God should be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms." We need discernment and wisdom in the church! The concentration camps and the people who are building them and funding them need to be exposed. The atrocities that are happening to innocent people who are living in a continual hell that is not a choice of their own needs to be exposed! I pray the church will be awake to all that is happening around them and within their walls.

The effect of the horrendous torture and programming I went through still affects me daily, all throughout the day. When I least expect it, a trigger happens, and I have to deal with flashbacks and the pain of the horror I went through. Where I live currently, lately, there have been tons of buzzards, at least fifty or more, around my apartment. There is a waterfall close to where we live, and many trees. The buzzards are everywhere! This gives me a very uneasy feeling. Anytime there were buzzards around in my life, it meant somebody had been killed, and it meant that as the lowest level of humanity (that's what the evil people called me), I would have to see the people ripped apart by buzzards, and they would make me eat the remains. I would throw up over and over, but no matter what, I had to finish whatever they said to finish. They said that I had killed the person during the night, and I had to get rid of the evidence. They were "just protecting me," they said. I begged to die. I begged to be killed; but they said if I died, I would be completely out of control, and a lot more people would die. So even suicide was not an option. I didn't want anybody to die, and I didn't want to be completely evil. So there was no way out for me. I was forced to do what they said every second of every day. I have asked many, many times, "Why, Papa God? Why haven't You exposed the evil people? Why haven't You made them pay for what they did and are continuing to do?" His response has always been, "I do not want to take down the innocent people with the evil people, I will not hurt my children." This is reflected in Scripture, Romans 9:22–24. "What if God, wanting to show His wrath and to make His power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath prepared for destruction, that He might make known the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy, which He had prepared beforehand for glory."

During all of the programming, they had paired me with another female victim. We were supposed to be best friends, as far as anybody knew in our day-to-day life. But in reality, they tortured us against each other. They tortured me to hate her, and tortured her to hate me. We had to compete with each other, constantly. We were around five or six years old, and we began to go to gymnastics together. They had a programmer that was our "coach." They dressed us alike and did our hair the same so we would constantly see who looked and acted the best. If she won, I was tortured, and if I won, she was tortured. We were trained to blame each other. They bonded us through pain and torture. They trained her to be the dominant one, and me to be the underdog. That was our programmed roles in the cult. The dominant one had to torture the underdog into submission. In the rituals, the dominant one put a leash on the underdog and told them what to do. If the underdog did not do everything right, they would get tortured. The cult gives the dominant victim a false sense of control. They feel guilt and shame for torturing their "friend," but they are also told that the underdog will turn on people and do horrible things, so it's their job to make sure that doesn't happen. The underdogs have a leash put on us, and we are tortured in submission. We are told not to not make a move unless we are told. So we feel an extreme need to be controlled because we have been told that we are an evil animal that needs to be stopped. Our programmers dressed us up just alike and said we were sisters.

I feel dread and pain as I begin to write, even as I think about writing. There are so many emotions that I have bottled up from trying to survive over the years. I have not wanted to feel a lot of the emotions of today, because I needed to stay focused on healing of my past. The truth is that

I was hideously tortured and raped my entire life. There are countless ways this continues to affect my life. My marriage is affected because I was controlled and never given the option of making my own choices. So today when my husband asks me what I would like to do or where I would like to eat, etc., I have difficulty expressing myself and giving any input. My physical body was always worn down and tired, and this still affects me today.

I have been healed so much in my mind, spirit, and body throughout this journey. Papa God began to show me that I have power within me; it's not true that I can't do things. I can do anything I want because I have the power of Papa God and the entire kingdom of heaven within me. I began to sing, "I have power in the name of Jesus. I have power in the name of Jesus. I have power in the name of Jesus to break every chain!" While singing this one day, Jesus showed me a vision of all of heaven rejoicing when I sang that and saying, "Finally, she sees the truth." I think Papa God rejoices when we see the power we have been given. The church, unfortunately, sometimes teaches that we can get prideful easily and that we should focus on the thought that we can't do anything and that we are useless. The reality is we can do anything with Jesus! He doesn't want us to sit around and say, "Well, I will wait till Papa God does this." He already has, and He has already empowered us. He already gave us the power of heaven! I went to work the same day that Jesus revealed this to me, and had the attitude of "I can do this. I'm powerful!" Throughout the day, I resolved issues and engaged in a way that I had never experienced. I was excelling. Later in the day, my heart was hurting horribly. I have had this happen before, but I wasn't sure the reason behind the intense pain. Papa God revealed to me the root cause of why I was having the chest pain. The programmers had told me that my heart would explode if I made any of my own choices, that it would blow up because of the evil inside of me. They said I wouldn't be able to go to heaven, because I wouldn't have a heart that could be saved. The evil people had tortured me and tortured other people in front of me to believe this lie. They said that if I ever made my own choices, I would cause them to die. It would be my fault for choosing something on my own, without being under their control. Papa God showed me that the reality is, I can make my own choices now. I can choose anything anytime I want. It's not bad to make my own choices. I can be trusted. I'm not evil. I see each day the truth that I can genuinely make my own choices. This is what abundant life is all about! I have talked to many people who wonder why Papa God gave us free will because we end up making so many bad choices. The deepest unconditional love is to allow a person the freedom to choose! Without choice, this is not living. We are just robots that do what our master controls us to do! After being a slave for thirty years, I see the absolute love that Papa God has for us in that He gave us the freedom to choose the life we want, the freedom to choose Him. He will not force us to choose Him, He will show us in every possible way who He is and His love for us, but the final choice is ours. We can choose God and heaven, or Satan and hell. Abundant life or death—it's our choice. We are not robots and slaves who are forced to be what He wants us to be or do what He wants us to do. Please take it from someone who was a slave for thirty years. There is no love in that, in any way, shape, or form, captivity is hell continuously!

In Matthew 10:39, it says, "Whoever finds their life will lose it, and whoever loses their life for my sake will find it." This scripture was used to torture me and control my mind. Along with many other scriptures, the evil people twisted them to mean what they wanted them to mean. The evil people said that I had to lose my life. This meant that I had to do everything that they told me to. If I found my life, if I made my own choices, then I would lose my life. Losing my life meant that God showed up and took everything away from me. So I was constantly in fear of making any choices of my own. I refused to make choices, and I was tortured to never make choices. They would say, "Find your life!" At that time, they would torture someone or something that they had briefly allowed me to get close to. Then they would say, "God made you lose your life because you are evil and make people suffer." So I was afraid of having a life and choices because that meant something very bad would happen. Even today, this still affects my life. If I want to get up in the morning early and get something done that I have as a goal for my life, I feel afraid and tormented because that might mean I lose something. That might mean someone gets hurt. That might mean that God is tricking me to take something away from me.

Throughout my entire healing journey, I have had excruciating pain in my heart. This is a physical pain in my body. This pain is greatest when things are going well. As I write, I have pain in my physical heart. This pain was put as foundation programming to remind me that I have an evil heart. I have been healed layer after layer, but there are still other layers to this programming. The most recent area that Papa God has been healing has had to do with NASA. In the programming, I was put on a gravity machine for training astronauts. This machine spins on an axis. They take your hands and feet and stretch them as far as they can and then strap you into the cage. There are electrodes that are placed on your hands, heart, sexual part, and feet. There is a halo that is placed on your head to cause electric shock. As you're spinning, you are electrocuted in these areas to cause extreme pain. This is performed as a test to see how much pain you can endure before submitting to do what they ask you to do. I tried and tried to endure the pain, but it was too great. My programmers told me they were superhuman and that I could be like them. They had asked the demons to take their body and shape it into whatever they wanted. They willfully gave their entire body to be used by Satan. I can't explain the terror a person feels when they see another human being shift into another being. I can say that the movies about werewolves, vampires, and zombies are not just movies that have been made up. There are actual people who have chosen for their blood, their body, their spirit, every single bit of who they are to be changed into a demonic form. I was terrified of them, and I didn't want to be like them. They knew how terrified I was, so they hooked me up to a blood transfusion and said that the same blood that went through my veins went through their veins. They said if I did what they told me to do, I would be able to save the boys, "my brothers," from being that way. So at that point, I did the hideous things they said to do. There was no way out, no other alternative. After I was forced to do what they said, the programmers said that God had rejected me and sent me away. To make me feel like I had been sent away, I was put into the cabin that had no gravity and left there by myself. I thought I had been sent into space and would never be found. To take this even further and make them look like my rescuers, they showed up again and said that my heart had been found to be black. So they stated that I was sent to the black hole "hell" by God. According to them, the black hole was a place where the rejects and failed experiments went. If I did good enough there, competed, and won, then I could get another chance at real life. The constant hell of trying to be good enough and to save people continued nonstop. I was taken to NASA and programmed many times. This programming has taken the longest to surface because of the depth of the involvement of the government in this type of programming. They buried this programming very deep so that it would never be exposed. There are members of the Illuminati in every walk of life who try to infiltrate and pollute governments, businesses, and churches; and the list goes on.

Chapter 6

Infancy to Five Years Old

"Who will rise up for me against the wicked? Who will stand for me against those who practice iniquity?" Psalms 94:16

Yesterday, my husband and I went to church. The pastor began to sing old hymns the evil people used in rituals. They would play the hymns while they did hideous things. Every aspect of church was perverted and desecrated for me. As I was singing, the Lord said He was restoring these hymns to me to show me what they really meant. As I was praying, I felt a strong sense of denial. Anytime there is strong denial, Papa God is exposing beliefs that are programming in my mind. The programmers layered denial in continually to bury their involvement. Only Jesus could destroy all of the layers of denial and bring out the truth so I could be free!

I had an intense sense of grief today. When I was in slavery, I had two other people who were supposedly my brothers. Whether they were my biological brothers or not, I do not know for sure. They are still in slavery. Their minds have continued to block out the torture and pain in order to survive. Recently, my younger brother showed up here. He is being used to try and get me to go back by the Illuminati. The evil people sent him here to manipulate me to try and protect him; that was my role in his life. I can remember from the time I first saw him, I was placed in the role of his mother. If I did not act and perform perfectly, he would not get to eat. If I didn't do what they told me to do, he would get tortured and raped. The truth was that they tortured, starved, and raped him no matter how perfectly I behaved for them. I tried to be his savior. They did rituals just to make me take ownership of him and remind me that I was evil. The goal of them sending him was to try to access the parts that had to take care of him. The reason they sent him, just like they have many times previously, was to trigger the deepest pain I have. The pain that I was unable to rescue him was hideous. I tried with every breath in my being to rescue him, and I could not do it. When Papa God rescued me, He told me the very best way I could help him was to live in genuine freedom. As the time passes, he will see that he also can be free. My prayers are that the walls of denial are destroyed and the memories are released. I pray that he gets free from their mind control. It's a hideous feeling to know that someone that you love is being tortured, and there is nothing at all you can do about it. So I push on to be healed more and more and to expose the evil of what they do so that he can get free also. I pray and trust that Papa God will rescue my brothers like He has promised. If I was there still, neither of us would ever be free. If I went back, I would be doing the worst most selfish thing I could possibly do. It's difficult because people don't understand this; they don't see past the natural into what is under the surface. The things that I have seen. They don't know the depth of the mind control my brothers are under. The programmers used us against each other throughout our entire life. They used the love of Jesus within us against us and the fact that we are not evil like them. We were tortured the most when they made us hurt each other. The evil people know that the worst thing they can do to Papa God is to hurt His children that is the Illuminati's goal.

The programmers specifically play a movie showing what Jesus did on the cross for us early in our programming. As the movie is being played, they do a ritual to make us believe the opposite of what the Jesus film says. They torture us to believe lies about Jesus. They say that He hates us and they dress up like Jesus, then rape and torture us. The power of what Jesus did for us, even after all of the torture is still imprinted on our minds and hearts. That shows you the power of the Holy Spirit and what Honest Jesus did for us. After the rape and torture and the movie is over, the programmers tell us we can choose or not choose Jesus. I cried out to Jesus in my mind, even though they tortured me, because the Holy Spirit was working despite the torture. His love is more powerful than every single day of being tortured, tormented, and raped. Even after the specific mind control programming to convince me that Honest Jesus hates me, I knew there had to be a God that was different from what they showed me.

Along with the twisting of the truth about who Honest Jesus is, each Scripture has been twisted to make Jesus look evil. The programmers would chain me down and force me to listen to the scriptures that talked about judgment. Each verse that spoke of judgment and evil, I was told it was specifically speaking of me. "Perfect practice makes perfect" is a phrase that they would say to me over and over. I was filled with anger because no matter how hard I tried, it was never good enough. In normal situations, when you are practicing something, there is no life or death results. But in the rituals, if you didn't do something perfectly, someone died. In today's society, if someone expects perfection, it usually causes lies to form in the person about their self-worth. They may have a tendency to work for love. In my situation, the result of requiring perfection always had an end result of torture, rape, and death. The truth that I know now is that no matter how perfect I was, the same results would have happened. The programmers had no intention of stopping the torture. For example, if I made a specific phone call for them (every phone call had an agenda), if I did not speak exactly as they had trained me to speak and say exactly what they wanted me to say, the threat was that I would have to torture the person on the other side of the phone. Even if I had performed perfectly, they would torture me and say I was evil. There was no way out, no way to be free, and no way to make my own choices.

Every time I would take a call in private, they would send a shock to my ear. If I did not say what they wanted me to say, then they would shock me. No matter how much I tried, I could never say exactly what they wanted me to say. There was always something I got wrong, even if I said exactly what they told me to say. The phone call was scored, and my entire day was scored. If the score was low, someone, including myself, got hurt. After getting free, I have worked for a customer service company that scored my performance on every detail of my phone call. It brought back memories; and I would feel intense fear, that no matter what I said, I did something wrong or I could have done better. During most of the customer-service types of jobs, I feel like I'm going to a ritual every single day. Even though the reality is that I'm not being tortured, the feelings are just as intense as if I was still being tortured. On the phone, I feel the same way when I was getting tortured and graded for each call in the rituals. Even though there is no torture now and there is just occasional verbal abuse on the phone by people who are upset about their issues, the feelings still feel like the hell I was in, just without torture. This is how my life is still being affected even today by the hell that the programmers put me through. Torture, rape, and abuse not only affect you then; they affect you for the rest of your life. These feelings continue until Papa God heals those lies and wounds. Then you can move on in freedom. Since the torture I went through was all day every day for thirty years, it is an ongoing journey of healing throughout each day. But there is not anything too big for Papa God! He is untangling the lies of the evil people one day at a time and bringing truth!

This book is dedicated and written for every person who is in slavery, for every person who is being controlled, and for every person who believes there is no way out. There is a way out, and Papa God is the way out! He will move heaven and earth to rescue you! There is truly no pit too deep that Papa God can't pull you from. This is also written for every person who is called by Papa God to set the captive free, and that is all of us! He has called us to be a light in the darkness. "Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven" (Matthew 5:16). This may seem like a task that is impossible in the current pain you're enduring. Or there maybe people you feel are just too broken and wounded that they couldn't possibly be healed and shine for Jesus. I can testify that there is a Papa God that is big enough and wise enough that He can bring healing to all wounds caused by the enemy—and cause us to shine, as we were created to shine!

Papa God has called us to set the captive free. "The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, Because He has anointed Me. To preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty those who are oppressed" (Luke 4:18). There is something you can do! You can set the captive free. You have the power of Papa God within you. This will be a challenging task but will be worth every second. At the end, you will have no doubts that you helped give someone freedom, and their life will never be the same! Isn't that worth being uncomfortable? The Holy Spirit in you is saying, "Yes, it's worth it!"

Evil in this culture can sometimes be difficult to recognize. It hides in normal things, like people you think you know. Unfortunately, recognizing evil isn't the hardest part. It's the task of standing up to evil even though nobody else will; that is the hardest. We are living beneath a dam that's holding years and years of evil. You can say that that dam is not going to break all you want; but when the rains come and that dam bursts, all that bad comes out. You won't have time to run for high ground! Now is the time! Now is the time to arm yourself with truth. Now is the time to get the strategies of heaven and knowledge of the enemy's plots and schemes! First Peter 5:8 says, "Stay alert! Watch out for your enemy, the devil. He prowls around like a roaring lion, looking for someone to devour."

As I write, there is a dove that landed on my balcony, and I feel like it is looking directly at me. I feel like it is a beautiful reminder of peace from heaven, that Papa God's got this! He will rescue the captive, and He will raise up people to fight for freedom for those who don't have the strength to fight. It will not be an easy battle, but it will be worth every second. So what do you say? Are you willing to take this journey? He will be beside you every step of the way.

I'm now going to unfold my story in a detailed chronological order, a step at a time, to make sure that no detail is missed. I want each person to grasp the magnitude and depth of the Illuminati's and satanic cults' hold over our society and over thousands of innocent people. There are people out there who need someone to believe them. They need people to believe that they experienced this torture too. There are people out there who have been called "crazy" for sharing the truth of their experience. Unfortunately, a lot of the people who are in disbelief are from the church. The church, the very place we should be welcomed and accepted no matter what. The "unknown" causes fear in people. Fear causes people to shrink away and find ways to dismiss things that are uncomfortable. Scientifically, it is proven that the brain continually tries to stay in homeostasis. Our brain enters into homeostasis; it tries to stay stable, on an equilibrium. So even our brain tries to push away a truth that is too big for us to understand or fathom, it takes a deliberate choice to acknowledge and see the truth. I can guarantee you that there is an evil much bigger than what we can imagine, but that does not diminish the greatness of God. The acknowledgment of the fact that there is great evil in this world only gives us the ability and knowledge to stand against it and fight it strategically. If you go into war, don't you want a plan? God always gave His people a plan when they went into war, even if the plan didn't make sense to them. How can you fight what you're not even aware of? My goal is to make you aware so you will be prepared for the battle.

During the process of writing this book, the sadness was overwhelming at times. I have dealt with the pain of my conception with the Lord, but, obviously, there was another layer that needed to be surfaced. The truth that I know now after a decade of healing is that Papa God formed me, and He knew me before I was born. The reality of what happened is that I was put in a petri dish and mixed with all the Illuminati bloodlines. The DNA of the people who were my programmers were also mixed in so that I would look like them. I will go into much more detail about programmers in this book so you will be aware of what and who they are. A very basic description of the programmer is the person who is a member of the Illuminati or cult who continually tortures, abuses, and rapes a person to control what they think and do. Their goal is to make the person do and think exactly what they want them to.

The Illuminati believe that there is only one chosen race—a pure race that is perfect. They believe all other races need to be exterminated. People with handicaps, the elderly, the Jews, the Christians, anybody who is not in the Illuminati bloodline should be done away with. The Illuminati DNA is linked to every mountain of influence in this culture. For example, in media and entertainment, there are Illuminati at the top of these mountains. Specifically, this is done so that what people watch and what people hear is what the Illuminati chooses for people to watch and hear. Therefore, all of people's thoughts and actions are controlled by what the Illuminati wants.

At the root of my conception, I was designated a "mixed breed." As a "mixed breed," I was to carry on the chosen Illuminati races. I had to take the role of "Mary" and breed with whom the programmers said to breed with. The people I bred with were my chosen "Jesus." This was done to create the perfect generational line, according to my programmers. In the programming, we were told that the real Jesus rejected us because we were a mixed breed. We did not carry the perfect unified bloodline. So the real Jesus would only accept us if we could achieve perfection. They would recite in the ritual, "Be perfect as I am perfect" (Matthew 5:48). This is the scripture that the programmers used to substantiate that they were perfect and I was not. The mixed breeds were not perfect, and were not chosen for salvation.

The programmers inserted me from the petri dish into a lady they called my mother. I had very specific memories of this happening. Papa God surfaced these memories to give me insight to all that I went through. The memories about my DNA were the most difficult memories to handle. They took the longest for Papa God to bring to the surface. I believe that, partly, this had to do with the fact that every human being wants to belong. Belonging and acceptance is a basic human need. The lady who carried me in her womb was a victim. Papa God has shown me since then that He considers her my real mom. She had pure love for me, and she was Papa God's child. Spiritual family is much stronger than biological family. This is because, as Christians, we live by the spirit! I will meet my mom someday in heaven. I got a vision from the Lord of my mom in heaven. This vision from Papa God brought great healing; that's how I know it was from Papa God. I'm still healing from the lies about my mixed-breed bloodline. Papa

God has shown me that I have His blood in my veins, and ultimately all blood is from Papa God. This has had power over my thinking because of their programming. I was programmed to think blood is the only thing that matters.

As I was in the womb, the programmers would chant over and over that I was the seed of Satan. They inserted the EVOL machine (electrocution) into the lady's womb that carried me. This was a device that they used over and over again throughout my life to use shock to torture me. So while I was in her womb, I was experiencing electric shock. Also, when I was in the womb, they inserted a vibrator to stimulate my genitals and played music of a heartbeat at the same time. This was to program me that sex was the only way I would be alive and stay alive. They wanted me to bond to sex. They said over and over that sex was the only reason God would allow me to be born. As I was being born, the programmers pushed me back into the womb over and over again. They said I had to work harder to get out. They spoke over me that no one wanted me, not even God. This caused rage and anger toward myself that I could not do what they were telling me to do. Also, they wanted to break my spirit so that I would not fight against them and give up.

It's difficult for people to believe that I can remember these things that happened before I was even born, and I understand that. As I have been on this healing journey, Papa God has brought me back to those places. I would literally sound like a crying infant when I would be reliving the flashbacks, with all of the same emotions that a baby would have. This remembering and allowing Papa God to speak to me brought great healing to my life, so that is my proof that it is real. As my mom carried me in her womb, I bonded with her. She was an innocent victim, a "breeder." The breeder was someone who was chosen to carry children in their womb, and breed with whomever they told them to. When they are done with the breeding, the breeders are killed. She was a victim. She was also tortured to breed and carry babies that were put inside of her, whether they were conceived by her or inserted into her. Even as a baby in a mother's womb, I felt her love. I would never feel love again from a human being until I was almost thirty years old. According to scientific studies, during their time in the womb, babies hear, feel, and even smell their mothers. ("How Your Baby Learns to Love" by Sheryl Berk from *American Baby*.)

While I was in the womb, the programmers put a clamp on my head and pulled me out of the womb. They said that the clamp was my crown and that I was evil because I wanted the crown. They did this to cause me to believe that I was evil at the core of my being. Then when I was born, they killed my mom. The programmers spoke over and over that her death was my fault. They chanted that I was so evil I made my mom die. Anytime they chanted words over people, they played music that took the person into another spiritual realm and another conscious state. This made the words go deep into the unconscious realm where they were buried. The evil the programmers do are specifically hidden in the unconscious mind.

The programmers then wrapped the umbilical cord around my neck until I turned blue. They put me on the operating table and took a knife and slit my mom's belly. They spoke out torture levels to my mind. Then the music and chanting activated a serpent spirit to enter me. They said that I strangled my mom and that God was strangling me with her umbilical cord because I was so evil. The programmer said my heart killed my mom. At the same time, they stimulated my genitals. They said they gave me the sex feelings, because that was the only way Jesus would save me. All of this made me believe even as an infant that I was so evil that God wanted to get rid of me. Also, the programmers wanted me to believe the lie that I was so evil I caused everybody I cared about to die. At that point, the programmers put me in a body bag with my mom and told me if I was good enough I could bring her back. Of course, I couldn't bring her back, but as an infant, I didn't know that. So I learned to hate myself and see myself as completely evil. The next phase in the torture was to get me to bond with my programmers and to think that in order for me to survive I needed them to torture me.

I remember being in a little glass cage as an infant. I was connected to a monitor that showed me if my heart was beating or not. The rest of my body was covered with electrodes; wires were going everywhere. The evil people said they were keeping me alive. When they showed me that my heart was beating, they locked the cage. When they showed me that my heart wasn't beating, they unlocked the cage. As an infant, I didn't know what they were doing, but as they continued to do things, I learned that they controlled my every move.

"We determine if you live or die," they said over and over to me. If I moved, I was electrocuted. They trained my mind through torture. In every move I made on my own, they shocked me. I learned to stay still and only move when I was told to move. When I would cry, I would be electrocuted, so I learned not to cry. I was then told over and over that I wasn't really hurting, because I wasn't crying. "You're not even hurting. You are not crying!" They said over and over I was faking the pain. So there was a constant state of confusion.

The programmers made me intentionally bond with people. Then they would rip the person away from me or kill them. I would be put in isolation, completely alone, for long periods of time. The reason the programmers did this was to get my mind to bond to them, and no one else. They said they were doing me a favor. They said they would never leave me because I needed to be tortured. Even though they tortured me, I thought that having somebody control me was the only way I would stop hurting people. My mind bonded to the evil people because they were there, even if it was to torture and rape me. This caused a division in my mind due to the torture of human deprivation. The worst torture is complete isolation and seclusion. This causes a human being to have such a human deficit and feelings of rejection that they will do anything to have people with them, even if the people cause hideous pain.

The programmers intentionally created a part of my mind they called the *master executioner*. This part was created during the torture that was done in the underground military compounds used for Monarch MK Ultra Programming. The agenda for this programming is to create soldiers for the end-time agenda of the Illuminati. There are tunnels underground, built specifically for travel and torture, within all large cities. The victims are forced to watch while people are skinned alive. The victims are told that the people who are skinned were not obedient. They have to stay a caterpillar because they didn't do their job as a soldier. Their skins would be hanging upside down all over the room to remind the other victims that they stayed a caterpillar instead of becoming a butterfly.

Chapter 7

Details to Expose

“Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them.” Ephesians 5:11-12

Hitler and Mengele were demonically connected to each of the victims. The reason the Illuminati does this is they want to cause as much demonic bondage as they can to the victims. The stronger the generational demonic hold is, the better, the easier it is for the Illuminati to enslave people.

> Dr. Josef Mengele, nicknamed the Angel of Death, and the other Nazi doctors at the death camps tortured men, women, and children and did medical experiments of unspeakable horror during the Holocaust. Victims were put into pressure chambers, tested with drugs, castrated, frozen to death. Children were exposed to experimental surgeries performed without anesthesia, transfusions of blood from one to another, isolation endurance, reaction to various stimuli. The doctors made injections with lethal germs, sex change operations, removal of organs and limbs. At Auschwitz Josef Mengele did a number of medical experiments, using twins. These twins as young as five years of age were usually murdered after the experiment was over and their bodies dissected. Mengele injected chemicals into the eyes of the children in an attempt to change their eye color. He carried out twin-to-twin transfusions, stitched twins together, castrated or sterilized twins. Many twins had limbs and organs removed in macabre surgical procedures, performed without using an anesthetic. (Louis Bulow, the Holocaust.)

The type of experiments and torture I went through were based partly on Mengele’s experiments on torture and the mind.

The Illuminati labels the victims number 1 or number 2. The number 2s were the dogs, and the number 1s were gods. I was called a number 2. The number 2s were put alone in a room, and all of the people in the ritual would use the bathroom on them. The feces were smeared all over us. We were left for weeks in a room by ourselves with the feces still on us. The gods were told that they could cause the parts of their physical body to be able to be joined together and have power. In this ritual, they would torture us by forcing our hands to cut a baby into five parts using a knife. We were told that the different body parts could be put back together and the baby could go to heaven if we chose to be god. As the god part, if we saved the baby that was cut up, there would be a savior for the mixed breeds. In order to have the savior, we were forced to be god, the judge at the end. This was a hideous position. They made us think that, as gods, we were in control of who would live or die. The worst possible feeling was to have to decide who lived or died.

During the first five years of my life, I was in a hospital-like setting. My surroundings were sterile white, and people were dressed in all white. There was no furniture in the rooms, just machines for torture. There were many empty white rooms with other infants like me in cages. The programmers said that I was in heaven and that god had put me there. I was programmed to believe that, since I wasn't the chosen race, I was put there to torture continuously, to make me perfect. I could not see anyone's face, because they had surgical masks on. They would electrocute the right side of my body until I was numb and poke me with needles. At the same time, the programmers showed me normal pictures of themselves, and they said they were perfect. They put a black cover over the left side of my body and said the left side was evil. To make me believe I was evil, they shaved the left side of my head. They put skin irritants on my body to cause whelps all over the left side of my body. They chanted over an over that the left side was evil. I literally thought I was two different people. The Mengele twin programming. The programmers would tell the left side of my body to hold the pain. Then they covered the right side of my body with a pink blanket and forced my left hand to stab people with a knife. The middle part of my mind and body was called the "flat line." This was the sex part that they trained to have sex. They fed me sugar or injected me with sugar in the right side to cause disassociation. The evil people said the "flat line" was where the Illuminati and seed of Satan was planted. They would hold my left eye open and shine light in that eye. This was to cause the brain to store information where they wanted it to. There was an oath they forced me to take as the Illuminati queen. I was forced to swear to stay on the right side and not see any of the evil that was being done to me. The programmers said I could rule instead of being tortured if I chose to forget. If I chose to forget the truth, then I would be allowed to get clothes and food. The torture and programming was done to get my mind in a war within itself. Each part of my brain was deliberately programmed to hate the other. This further insured the evil people that the truth would not surface, because of the torture to the brain. My brain would not allow the truth to surface. The programmers were experts at how the brain functioned. They forced a right-and-left-brain disconnect on purpose.

The programmers used sex and sugar to numb my emotions. They used addiction to control me, whether it was sugar, sex, drugs, or whatever they chose to get me addicted to. Sex and sugar was used in experiments with me, much like the Pavlov studies. When sugar or sex was given to me, they would kill someone at the same time. So every time I got sugar or sex, I immediately felt guilty and fearful because I knew someone was going to get killed or hurt. This produced hatred toward myself because I was feeling good feelings from the addictive substances as someone was being killed. When the programmers took sugar and sex away, they would put me in a room alone with dead bodies and body parts. They said that I had killed and cut up the people in the room because I didn't have sex and sugar. So even though I was afraid of someone dying when I had the sugar and sex, I was much more terrified of not having sex and sugar, because I thought I would be left alone to be out of control and kill people. Sugar was also used over and over because of the influence on the brain. It is eight times more addictive than cocaine. As well, it's an acceptable drug in our culture. Sugar is killing and controlling us, but unfortunately people don't know the true reason it was introduced into society. It was introduced specifically to control people and get them sick. This was a very strategic plan of the Illuminati, and they are very prideful that they got away with it. Their goal was to bring something into our culture that would make people sick and control them, and that which no one would question. I will go into that in more detail later.

Throughout my infancy and as a toddler, I lived in deprivation. As an infant, they gave me semen in a bottle. They said semen was all I deserved because I was a whore. They said over and over that I was born for sex, and that sex was the only gift God gave me. They tortured me to believe God gave people sex but He condemned every person who had sex outside of marriage. Then He laughed at me because He knew I wasn't good enough to be married. According to the programmers, it was a trick planned out by God. The programmers told me that God really gave me no gifts and condemned me completely. I was told from the beginning He only put up with me. The programmers made me think that God said I was a whore and that sex was the only thing that controlled me from being a killer, so He paid them to rape me and sell me. Of course, they took pictures of me as an infant sucking on a penis. And other sexual photos that were positioned as though I had chosen to have sex. They said the pictures proved I was a whore.

The spiritual and bloodline ties are established at infancy intentionally. This is done so that the Illuminati has a foundation for all of the programming. The spiritual and bloodline ties are formed in many ways. The computer is used to cause a foundation of demonic roots. There is a computer that is powered on during rituals, and different electronic sensors are placed on the victim and the computer. This is to cause a magnetic and electronic frequency between the person and the computer, which the demons can be channeled through. They also scan the eye with an electronic sensor since the eye is the window to the soul. The programmers then assign a number to each victim, a computer programming number. Then they do a ritual where there is blood spilled and put on each part of the body where the computer sensors are. They call in the demons and territorial spirits to travel through the sensors and into other dimensions to cause a soul tie with the territorial spirits over regions of the world. The leaders of that region astral project and summon demons to cause an overlay or demonic force field around victims. This is what demonically keeps ministers or counselors from getting through to the core person or the hard drive when doing ministry with Illuminati victims.

The computer and the person are joined demonically. This allows people to remotely access victims through chips placed in the body through electrical frequencies. The Illuminati want everything about who they are and what they do to be so hidden that no one would have physical proof of what has been done. The frequencies are a way that they get away with their schemes in most of the communication they have with other world powers. If they meet and communicate on a different radio wave frequency that people are not aware of, then the purposes and plans that they have for this country cannot be exposed.

Another way the programmers establish a demonic foundation is through grid systems. The Illuminati plot each move that they are going to make on a grid system, physically and spiritually. The reason they do this is so they know where the portals are, for example, where high corporate rituals are done. Then they demonically connect the primary hubs and portals to each town and city and state. The victims are assigned to different grids physically and spiritually, and they are given assignments based on the grid system. There are concentration camps and corporate ritual sites set up for their end-time agenda based on where the demonic portals and territorial powers are set up. The victims are linked like a chain, and if any victim gets free, that causes a loss of power because it weakens the grid system.

The programmers and the Illuminati put cameras everywhere. They told me that they taped everything all the time. When I was put to sleep, by giving me drugs, the programmers would set up a situation where a person would be killing somebody, and they would take a video of them from the back. The person would have the same kind of hair as mine and the same clothes on; then they would say, “That was you killing people.” I believed that if they didn’t torture me, I would always be killing and hurting people. I was told over and over that if I wasn’t being tortured, my real heart would be exposed, the heart that was caught on camera doing the evil things. To me, the worst hell was not knowing what I had done and waking up after they had given me the drugs. The programmers told me over and over that I lived in a camera. So I had intense confusion. I thought every single thing about me wasn’t real, that I was an actress all the time. The programmers set me up time after time. They tried to force my mind to believe that

I wasn't capable of knowing what was real and what wasn't, so I had to rely on them (programmers) to tell me what was real. They buried me and a baby with a camera and then covered us with dirt. I was forced to say out loud, "I take the demons so the baby can live." The baby stopped crying, and I kept taking the demons to try and get her to live. Their goal was to trick me to allow the demons in. The baby never came back to life. She didn't survive.

The depth of denial and programming of the Illuminati is shown clearly in the movie *The Truman Show*. The man in the movie had been living a life controlled by everybody around him. They were filming him all the time. He was the only person (denial part) who wasn't aware that his life wasn't real. In the movie, the people were inside a control room deciding what he saw and what he did every day. This is an actual ritual; that is what the evil people do to victims. It is not a movie; it is reality for millions of people in this world. The movie was just a way to desensitize people to the truth. The producer in the movie Christof is a good depiction of a real-life programmer that is molding his experiment (victim) to be exactly who he says to be.

So many movies today are based on actual rituals. There are more evil movies than there are good ones. The entertainment industry is controlled by the Illuminati. This is a way to keep victims updated on their programming. What I mean by that is when they see the movie, it reinforces their programming. Another reason for the infiltration of the entertainment industry is to cause people to be desensitized from seeing the truth. When people see a movie that is based on a ritual and then a victim shares their story, people are more prone to say that the victim got their memories from a movie. The reality and the truth is the movie was copied from the ritual. An example of a movie that people think is very pure and that is filled with programming is the current movie *Wonder Woman*. Wonder Woman is named Diana. Diana is a "god." She is a Greek god of hunting and childbirth. The Greek gods are used in Illuminati programming. They named a part of my mind Diana. The reason they did this was to force me to believe that I hunted people to kill them. The Diana part was forced to kill and have sex with many people. They programmed that part to think she wanted the sex and the killing. I was forced to be an aggressor in sex, or they would kill people. The programmers take the different regions of the universe and the Greek gods they are associated with; then they claim that area with a demonic throne. There is a ritual with a human sacrifice that is done to create a portal and power source for the demons.

Chapter 8

Triggers

"Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter." Isaiah 5:20

Foundational triggers are programmed into the victim at zero to five years of age. The reason they program in triggers is so that when the victim hears a noise, sees a picture, hears a song, or looks at a picture, and thousands of other triggers; it reinforces their control over the mind. For example, the programmers tied me up and let water drip on my forehead over and over again; at the same time, they would stimulate my genitals. This caused me to have sexual feelings every time I heard the water drip. The same out-of-control crazy feeling that happened when they tortured me would start again when I heard the sound of water dripping. Another example is the ticking of a clock. I was put in a room with only a clock that ticked loudly. Then my genitals were stimulated on purpose so that when I heard the clock, I would have sexual feelings. This created an out-of-control feeling; that was the Illuminati's goal, because then I would need them to control me. Other examples are chewing gum, tapping your foot, clearing your throat, coughing, sneezing, and sniffling just to name a few. The programmers chose these things because they would happen every day all day.

The programmers used phrases and words to be trigger words. The word *come* was said over and over. At the same time, they would use equipment that stimulated my genitals. This torture was done so that in normal conversation when a person said *come* in a sentence, I would automatically have sexual feelings. I would immediately feel shame and fear. The word *know* was also used as a trigger word. Since *know* is in the Bible as a sexual encounter, they would read the Bible and stimulate my genitals. Every time I heard the word *know* in daily life, I thought it meant sex. When people read the Bible, I would have sexual feelings because my body had been trained to respond to those words. My thoughts were, *I must surely be disgusting and need someone to control me if I have sexual feelings while someone is reading the Bible.* They told me over and over that I was sick and that I thought about sex all the time. Since *know* was used as a sexual reference in the Bible, it was also very confusing. The programmers would dress up like Jesus and rape me, to get to "know" me. I never wanted anybody to "know" me. This made me shut down any feelings I had, because I was afraid to feel.

Another goal of the programmers, as we discussed, was to get me so terrified of myself that I believed that I needed the torture and control. When I was in the hospital, they starved me, poked my eyes with needles to make them look red, and shaved my head. They wanted me to look like a demon. They told me I was a demon, and they called me a demon. My name at that time sounded like the word *demon*. So they said, "We gave you that name, because we know who you really are." Then they would put me in front of a mirror and say, "This is who you really are." I looked like a demon; therefore, I was a demon.

There were many other infants and children there in the hospital setting where I was put. The programmers intentionally tried to turn all of us victims against each other so we wouldn't trust or bond with each other. They knew that there is power in numbers, and if we bonded together, we would be stronger. I was separated from all the others with a glass wall in between us. The only time they allowed us to be together was when they were torturing us. When it was time for the rituals, the programmers would bring the other infants and children food, clothing, blankets, and basic needs. Then they would bring in people to pick them up, like they were taking them out of the hospital. As I saw this happening, they would say, "Those children are the chosen race, and you are not." "If you become perfect, we will give you what you need." They told me to be perfect meant to have sex, breed, kill, pretend, and anything else they said to do to be "perfect." The truth has been revealed through my healing, as Papa God has shown me, that the other children never got anything either. The programmers set up that situation to trick each of us. The reality, Papa God revealed to me is that the evil people took back everything from the victims or paired the good things with sex and killing so that there would be intense guilt. No child or infant ever got anything good there; even basic needs were not met in that hideous hospital.

As I said earlier, I was told that I was the race that they called the "mixed breed" or dog. The programmers put a dog leash on me and walked me around like a dog. They forced me to complete commands like sit, stand, speak, and lay down. The word *god* is *dog* backward. The programmers said I was the exact opposite of god because of my DNA, so I was a dog. They would put a bowl of dog food in front of me and make me eat like a dog. I was forced to growl at anybody that tried to take away my dog food. This is another programmed way they pit victims against each other. The programmers would sometimes put only one dog food bowl in front of us, and everybody had to try and eat. This created division and competition between all of us in order to get even our basic needs met. There were programs to get us to have confusion and guilt over our survival instinct. If we ate, then that meant that some other person didn't eat and might die. This torture was used as a foundation to be able to control what we would eat daily, so we would be thin and easier to sell. Along with getting us deliberately addicted to sugar, they were creating a "damned if you do, damned if you don't" situation. Their goal was to create intense guilt when eating so they could keep us thin. They wanted to be able to control our weight at all times.

Drugs were another way that the programmers controlled me. They forced different drug needles into my arms and made me get addicted. The drugs would make me foggy and disoriented. The programmers said that if I took the drugs I would forget the evil that was going on. After they got me addicted, they would take away the drugs. This would cause hideous withdrawal symptoms. They wanted me to get to a place that I would do whatever they asked me to do, because of the intense pain of the withdrawal from the drugs. As a child, drug withdrawals are brutal and traumatizing to say the least.

The programmers core lie was that I was born evil. They said if I didn't pretend they were good and have sex, they would put me back in the hole. This was a hole beside the house they lived in; they called it Satan's womb. It meant utter darkness forever. Coke was also used in denial programming, consistently. I was given Coca-Cola (Coke) from birth, and it contained cocaine and many other addictive ingredients. In the rituals, the Illuminati members stand in a circle and put the Coke bottle in the middle and chant repeatedly*: Cum Over Killing Every day, Cum Over Killing Everybody*, an acrostic for the word *coke*. Then Coke is given to the victim to drink. The victim is told the Coke makes them want to have sex. Then the victim is raped. After that, they ejaculate on the victim. The Illuminati chant over the victim and call in demonic powers to "burn the evil out of the victim." So on a daily basis, I thought that if I drank the Coke, the evil within me would not be seen. To reinforce this thinking, the programmers kill someone in the ritual circle. Then they pour the Coke on the dead person and the victim. The Coke takes off the blood, so they believe that the Coke will remove the evil. There is an addictive demonic force at the root of the Coke industry. This exists on purpose to kill and control Americans without them being aware of what is happening.

The programmers would set food in front of me, but I wouldn't be allowed to eat any of the food. They would allow other people to eat while I was watching. The programmers said the people were allowed to eat because the other people were good and I was not good. I was tortured to hate fat intensely and hate myself if I had any fat on me. No matter how big I was, they told me that I was fat. If they said that I was fat, I wasn't allowed to eat until they said so.

While in the hospital, the programmers put me in a room that they called "hell." There were body parts and dismembered people in the room. They said I had killed and dismembered the people. They made me stay alone in hell with the body parts. This was excruciatingly painful. They told me that this was hell because I had to eternally live with the fact that I was a killer. I felt terror when I thought that I didn't have anybody to control me. The worst part was that I couldn't remember doing any of what they said I did. So I thought I was crazy. Exactly what the programmers wanted. I was terrified to not get tortured by them. In my mind, the torture and control was what kept people safe from me and how evil I was. For example, they had a fish in a fish tank, and they said it was fine before I was in the room. They left the room, and they said the fish died because I came in there and killed it. I said, "I don't remember doing that." They said I did remember and that I was lying. I constantly thought I was doing evil and I just didn't remember it.

There were rooms in the hospital that they used for gas chambers. They would take children into the rooms and tell me the only way the children could get to heaven is if I turn the gas on. The alternative for the children they presented was hell. Hell meant I would have to kill them and dismember them. I had been tortured to believe, as I shared before, that I killed and dismembered people in hell. I had no other choice. Constantly, they put me in a double bind. Everything they said was a "choice" was bad. I was always trying to find the least evil choice. Reality is that I never had a choice. I never got to choose anything. After thinking I had saved the children, the programmers showed me the children were dead. I was tormented and full of excruciating sadness. The programmers would then say, "Why did you do that? You're evil. We didn't tell you to do that!"

Some of the programming resembled the Nazi concentration camps. There were rituals where someone was dressed as Hitler, and he was telling all of us what to do. I had to stand in a military uniform as a child and say, "Heil Hitler." I had to pledge allegiance to Hitler and Mengele, and the mission they had for us to do in the world. The Illuminati's goal is to exterminate every person not like them. Their plan is to place the victims as soldiers in each city, in each region, and in each state. Then program us to do what that want us to do in that specific area. Therefore, they have super soldiers hidden within the US. They are trained to be ready, to be in place when the Illuminati decides to put people in concentration camps, which have already been set up. Their prideful view is that if every area is controlled by them without anybody being aware of it, then they can succeed in taking over the world. For example, global warming is an issue being pushed by actors and congressmen. The Illuminati want to eventually say that we need to get rid of the other races because they are draining our environment and natural resources. But the people in control of the money continue to be the producers of the things that are killing our environment. This is another part of their agenda.

The Illuminati brought many infants into this country to be trained as German soldiers. They are planted into this society to accomplish a mission to take down America. The last time that was attempted was when Hitler tried to get rid of the Jews. On November 3, 1943, some forty-three thousand Jews were gathered, shot, and killed from various camps in Poland. This concluded Operation *Reinhard*, which had virtually exterminated Polish Jewry. The SS called this final action "Harvest Festival." While countless historians, commentators, and books have often emphasized the industrial nature of the Holocaust, SS Nazis understood the concluding action of Operation *Reinhard* to be a special day on the farm comparable to an annual harvest celebration. In the twisted Nazi mind, Jewish weeds had to be eradicated from the blood and soil of Germany's *lebensraum*. Operation "Harvest Festival" was the single largest Nazi Jewish massacre conducted throughout the entire war. That is exactly what they were planning for Christians.

I have explained previously how they created a foundation of hatred toward myself and how that bonded me to them. The terror and hatred of myself was specifically caused to keep me with them. I believed in every fiber of my being that I was killing and raping people if I wasn't being tortured. The programmers, at the same time, were creating a foundation of denial. Every time they raped or tortured me or made me think I was evil, they said the only way out was for me to see them as a perfect family. They would hold up a picture of themselves and say, "We are perfect. If you always say we are perfect, then all of what you did will go away." I was tortured to push all of the pain, terror, and guilt down by pretending the programmers were good. For example, when they forced me to look at a picture of Jesus, they would say over and over "prey" for us, not *pray* for us. This meant if I didn't kill somebody for them, then their sins would be held against them. They said that my sins would kill them, and I had to make up for that by killing somebody to take their place. Literally as a sacrifice for my sins, since we were tortured to believe Jesus didn't die for us. Then they put a picture of themselves up on the wall for me to continually look at. If I looked at the picture of them and said they were perfect, my mind could numb out and not feel the hideous pain of having to kill someone. The truth is I didn't want to kill anybody, and I did everything to keep from having to do that! But according to them, I had to honor my father and mother (that's what they called themselves) and do what they said to do. To not honor them as parents meant a worse evil, and they used the scripture of honoring your father and mother to reinforce that lie. So now when I look at a picture of Jesus, I start to see a picture of the programmers and see them as perfect. When I look behind that denial picture and genuinely feel the pain of what was done, I see the killing that I was forced to do to honor them. That truth wrenches my being because I never had a choice.

The evil people tortured me deliberately to create as many parts of my mind as possible. The reason they do this is to get a specific part of my mind to do a job or function. Also, if the programmers divided my mind purposely, then the truth was buried deeper, and they wouldn't be found out. For example, there was a Pain part that carried the pain. This part was told that they created me to be in pain and that I was born to be in pain. There was a part they named Demon. I was forced to make sounds like a demon and look like a demon. If I did what they said, I would be able to keep people from dying, and when I got older, I could keep my child from dying. The programmers said they were keeping me from hurting people, and even from hurting my children. There was a part they named Stupid. They often used acrostics, STUPID meant, Satan Trained Under Person in Denial. The evil people made me act stupid, and they said if I didn't act stupid, they would tell everybody that I was evil. The stupid part had to deny the truth continually and pretend everything was perfect. There was a part they named the Breeder. There were generational, bloodline, and DNA rites to this part. The reason they said that they had to create many parts was I was evil at the core. There were millions of different parts of my mind created deliberately by the evil people.

The evil people twisted the meaning of the weapons of warfare in the Bible. They called the sword of the spirit, the penis. When I was raped, I was told it was the sword of the spirit trying to make me good. The evil people used electric shock at the same time. They trained me that the shock was always their way to get the evil out of me. They told me that evil resided in my belly and my heart. I was hooked up to an ultrasound machine, and they put an image on the screen that looked like a monster. So I thought I was an evil monster. Another way they caused fracturing of my mind into different parts was a military type of torture. They would strap me down and let a drip of water drip over and over onto my forehead. This caused anger and my mind to split off. It's a military tactic. There were thousands of denial parts. When I reference denial parts of my mind, I'm talking about parts of my mind that were forced to block every memory and every feeling of the torture and rape. "Fake it till you make it" is a well-known phrase in our culture that tries to make stuffing emotions something that is a good thing, but it is not! It causes destruction to your mind, body, and spirit. The worst result of faking is that it keeps us from having connection with people and Papa God!

I was continually forced to focus on the fake pictures of a perfect family, and I was told if I didn't focus on their perfection, I would have to see the truth of the evil I had been forced to do. This created a great division in my mind. The reality of the hideous memories of the hell I endured were under the pictures of us posing like we were a normal family. There were seed of Satan parts, pretty pink princess parts, Shirley Temple parts, just to name a few. Shirley Temple was said to be an Illuminati-trained child. She was tortured to sing and dance to the degree that she did on TV. They used Shirley Temple movies during the rituals to get me to focus on trying to be perfect. The programmers made me drink Shirley Temples, a drink that they said made me forget. The evil people made an intentional division in my mind between the denial parts and evil parts. They backed this up with specific brain torture to intentionally divide the left and the right brain. Their goal was to make the parts hate each other.

Another major denial program was sugar programming. In the ritual, I would be placed on a food pyramid, a demonic triangle. The leaders would call in principalities from all over the world to cover me with a sugar fog (coma). The sugar was supposed to cover my sins. I would then be forced to eat large amounts of sugar, and they injected sugar into my veins. The foundation of the food pyramid is essentially sugar, carbohydrates that turn into sugar. The Food and Drug Administration are controlled and have a foundation of Illuminati control. As victims, we were forced to chant, "Sugar controls us." At the same time, we had to make a vow and covenant to the Illuminati to stay in coma. This, in turn, would give the programmers more demonic control, and a denial sugar coma would be put on us. The sugar coma was induced to get us to never remember the things that they did to us.

Sugar is everywhere in our culture. Every celebration and social activity includes food. When you look at the different celebrations such as birthdays and weddings in the United States, cake is always present. Ball games have hotdogs, chicken wings, and beer. This could go on and on. It does not mean food is evil or an indulgence is evil. It does mean that we should be cautious and protective of our bodies and minds. There is an enemy who wants to destroy us, and there are people who follow that enemy that want to destroy us. The sugar program was a foundational program, because every time a victim would see people eating sugar we thought they were involved with the torture. If you talk to someone who has changed their eating habits and cut out sugar and processed food, there is a mental clarity that is regained with that choice, so the reality is that we are being drugged as a culture in general.

Along with the sugar programming, the programmers said that God created the heavens, earth, and humans in seven days. On the eighth day, the Illuminati created the “perfect” genes, the genes that God didn’t want to create. This included myself since I was put together in a petri dish, the foods we (the genetically modified) were supposed to eat, and genetically modified animals. The evil people said that God didn’t care about us, so He didn’t create us. Also, the programmers said that God didn’t give us food. This is where genetically modified food started, and cloning as well. The Illuminati is creating their own new world order. They want people to be sick. They want people to be tired and die before their time. This is why they have changed all of the food into GMO food. Food that has been processed with chemicals that they have created, that kill us. Plant-based food is from Papa God, and studies show consistently that plant-based foods heal our bodies. But the people who control the food and drug industry have gotten us addicted to sugar and processed foods, and our everyday experience is connected to those genetically modified foods. These foods cause cancer and every other type of disease in the body. The culture has bought the lies, and these genetically modified foods are killing us.

Another way the Illuminati is trying to take over the world is by getting people into a different state of consciousness. When evil people can get the minds of people into a passive state of consciousness, then they have more power over their thinking and actions. This is their biggest weapon of war, because people are unaware of what things are causing their mind to go into a submissive trancelike state. I’m aware of this because of the torture and rituals that I endured. The programmers would hypnotize me by making me breathe a certain way for me to go into an altered state of consciousness. Electrocution was another way they got me to go to another level of consciousness. Sugar coma and other drugs injected into my body altered my consciousness. Stimulating my genitals over and over without any release took me to another state of consciousness. This type of torture would cause so much pain, torment, changes in my body, and confusion that they caused divisions in my mind. The evil people know if they can get a person into a trance state, they can insert thoughts and ideas without them being aware. For example, in the video games, music, phones, and movies that people watch and use today, there are electrical frequencies inserted to get people to an altered trance state of consciousness. In that state, they accept all of what is transmitted into their mind. Arrival is a recent movie where I have seen this programming technique played out. In this sci-fi movie, there were aliens that arrived on earth. They had a language that looked like different variations of the letter O. This is a common symbol of the Illuminati. The language of the aliens was being measured by the sound waves and frequencies. The woman in the movie went into a trancelike state to receive a gift from them. The gift was to be able to see the past, present, and future. She was in a trance. At that point, there is a sound wave language that is not understood by our conscious mind but is understood by our unconscious mind. So the subliminal messages are sent electronically to other parts of the consciousness. Have you ever seen a child who has played video games for so long they don’t hear, see, or notice anything around them? Have you ever seen a person so engrossed into a movie that they go somewhere else? Or have you gotten on a phone call and lost all track of time? Have you been on Facebook or some form of social media and realize hours have gone by? This is the same type of thing but a milder form. There are deliberately placed messages sent through sound frequencies. The mind has gone into a vulnerable trance state, so it is open to receiving these messages. I only share this so that God’s children can all begin to be defensive about what we allow our minds to be open to. Also, so that we will pray that our minds will be so in tune with Papa God, that we will discern when messages that we do not want are trying to get through. This is the Illuminati's main way of communication. What if the Church could hear what the Illuminati is saying and know their next move? What if we could with the power of Papa God be able to shut down their frequencies and communication and cause an end to their plans? In the end, we win, but what about now? Shouldn't we, "the body of Christ," be as powerful as we can be? What if we could shut down evil at an unprecedented level, giving millions the opportunity to be free!

A scripture that describes how Papa God exposes evil is Ezekiel 8. I know this scripture is long, but I believe it's very important in learning how we can combat the evil people. Ezekiel 8:1–18 says,

> And it came to pass in the sixth year, in the sixth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I sat in mine house, and the elders of Judah sat before me, that the hand of the Lord God fell there upon me. Then I beheld, and lo a likeness as the appearance of fire: from the appearance of his loins even downward, fire; and from his loins even upward, as the appearance of brightness, as the color of amber. And He put forth the form of an hand, and took me by a lock of mine head; and the spirit lifted me up between the earth and the heaven, and brought me in the visions of God to Jerusalem, to the door of the inner gate that looketh toward the north; where was the seat of the image of jealousy, which provoketh to jealousy. And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel was there, according to the vision that I saw in the plain. Then said He unto me, Son of man, lift up thine eyes now the way toward the north. So I lifted up mine eyes the way toward the north, and behold northward at the gate of the altar this image of jealousy in the entry. He said furthermore unto me, Son of man, seest thou what they do? even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here, that I should go far off from my sanctuary? but turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations. And He brought me to the door of the court; and when I looked, behold a hole in the wall. Then said He unto me, Son of man, dig now in the wall: and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. And He said unto me, Go in, and behold the wicked abominations that they do here. So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, portrayed upon the wall round about. And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up. Then said He unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say, the LORD seeth us not; the LORD hath forsaken the earth. He said also unto me, Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations that they do. Then He brought me to the door of the gate of the LORD's house which was toward the north; and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz. Then said He unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations than these. And He brought me into the inner court of the LORD's house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the LORD, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the LORD, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east. Then He said unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, lo, they put the branch to their nose. Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them.

I'm wondering if the doors and walls that Papa God was talking about to Ezekiel were realms and portals in the spirit. I pray that as the powerful church of Jesus, we allow Papa God to help us see the evil and expose it—that we take back the spirit realm that is ours through the inheritance we received from Jesus!

In order to track me, there were microscopic electronic sensors that were implanted throughout my body so that they could input information through frequencies anywhere in the world. Also, these sensors tracked me everywhere I went and what I did. Rituals were done to place DNA on each of the sensors and send out signals demonically to make soul ties with each part of my body with other people throughout the world. The soul ties with other victims allowed the demons to stay. The soul ties gave them power to scramble and cover the electronic signals and communication that was happening throughout the world by the Illuminati. This is a way of communication a language that can't be detected by people. Unfortunately, the church has been targeted to get them to walk in the natural more than the spirit, so they are not aware of the electronic language. The soul ties create a powerful demonic chain between victims throughout the world. I was tortured and told that if I was not "faithful" to keep the chains, then the rest of the victims would die, and it would be my fault. The physical implants were reminders that it was our job to keep the secrets. Rituals were done where the people would die when the implants were taken out. So we were tortured to believe by seeing people die, that the implants had to stay in us. We had to keep the implants and sensors a secret.

The programmers forced us travel in the spirit realm through astral projection by taping our eyes open and making us look at strobe lights and multicolored lights. Another way they forced us to travel in the spirit is by spinning us around and around. This induces a dream state just like in *Wizard of Oz.* While they are doing this torture, at the same time, they would make different sound waves. The sound of a heartbeat, triangle music instrument, and demonic tongues were used like a Morse code unlocking the portal or lock in the spirit to the Illuminati eye. The Illuminati eye gets the person through the portal to go into another realm. The evil people use the victim's heart against them. The victim is told if they choose to go through the portal, they will have an opportunity to rescue people in the other realm. I found that this exact ritual is shown in the movie *Interstellar*. I love my husband, and he likes science fiction movies, so sometimes I endure them to bless him. I know I will end up getting healing from Papa God if anything surfaced during the movie. So in this movie, the daughter gets messages through Morse code, and she thinks it is a ghost. Her father travels in space to try and save the world by finding another place for people to live other than earth. During his travel, he is unable to complete his mission. So he is sent into a trancelike state. There are frequencies and sound waves that serve as the barrier between him and his daughter. He speaks to her in Morse code; it was him the entire time who was talking to her from the future. There are rituals set up exactly like that by the programmers. The father says the answer to communicating is *love*. The evil people said the exact same thing. To an Illuminati survivor, *love* is *evol* spelled backward. *Evol* was the word the evil people used to refer to the electric shock. This was used as torture specifically in the gravity machine as NASA. There have been many victims tortured in NASA with EVOL. This does not mean that everyone in NASA or anywhere is evil; it just states the truth that there are evil people in every area, government, entertainment, schools, and churches; and the list goes on.

The evil people programmed me with most of the scriptures, also with stories, words, and songs that had to do with Christianity. This was done so that when we heard anything at church, it would always be paired with some form of ritual and torture. The evil people know that the Bible is real and powerful. They just think they are more powerful. The word *covenant* meant sex in every situation with the Illuminati. To make a covenant, I had to have sex with someone, and then I was bound to them for life. I couldn't make the rape and torture end if I had a covenant, unless I died or they died. *Covenant* is a hideous terrorizing word for victims. I was told that God would not make a covenant with me, because I was too evil. So I had to have sex with Satan. I had to make a covenant with Satan to make me good enough. The covenant was formed through torture and rape. The meaning of the word *prayer* was also twisted. The evil people said "prey" was the true meaning of *prayer*. This meant that I had to kill someone or hunt them down to have the ability to talk to God. The programmers did this specifically so that when people say in church, "Let's pray," or "You need to pray," it is a major trigger. The evil people said that the church was trying to trick us to do evil things because it was a commandment to prey! The evil people set all of this up strategically so that none of what pastors or Christians say would be trusted, and the victims would think that the Christians were evil too. Prayer meant I had to find other victims as "prey," or they would find them and kill them. All I ever did was try every second of every day to find a way in the midst of all of the hell that people would suffer and hurt the very least. There was never a good choice. No matter what, I would choose the option that had the least amount of people getting hurt. In reality, I never had any options. They made me think I had options, but I never ever had a choice at all.

Fasting was used as a torture tactic. So when it was mentioned in church, I thought that God wanted us to be starved to torture us. They would stimulate my genitals over and over and say that I was out of control, and not give me food for weeks at a time. They said that without sex and food, I would kill people. When they would starve me, they said it was God making me fast. God was taking food away from me to starve me to get the evil out of me. Communion was also used to torture victims. There were demons that were summoned in and communed with while drinking human blood and eating human flesh. The evil people said that it was God's plan to try and make us good enough when He said, "Drink His blood, and eat His flesh." According to them, since Jesus didn't die for us, we had to have another sacrifice.

The Lord's Prayer was used to torture me and the other victims. I will walk through the entire prayer to show what they do with each phrase of the prayer. "Our Father," I was told we had no father, so we weren't included in this prayer unless I did the things God told me to do in the prayer. Our "father" was my programmer. That was the case with all the victims. They made me get on my knees and say, "Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come." This meant I had to do oral sex on the person who was "father," and he had an orgasm in my mouth. "Thy will be done" meant he tortured me "on earth as in heaven." My programmers sent out the parts of my mind that were named after the physical parts of my body as they electrocuted each organ and astral projected them into the demonic realm. "Give us this day our daily bread" meant I had to eat human flesh, as they placed it before me. If I didn't eat the flesh, they told me that I would cause other people to die. "And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors" meant that I had to have sex with people to be forgiven. So when people in the church say, "You have to forgive," victims think they are saying we have to have sex with them. They always told me my debt was never paid. That is why they had to put me in a cage. They said that Jesus wouldn't pay my debt. So they had to turn me over to the torturers and tormenters. They tortured me to believe I couldn't pay the ultimate debt and that there wasn't anybody who would pay the debt for me. "Lead us not into temptation" meant we were the whores and sluts who were tempting people with sex. "Deliver us from evil" meant if they put us in a cage, then they were rescuing other people from temptation, because we were evil. "For Yours is the kingdom, the power, the glory forever. Amen." The last sentence the evil people told me meant that they could masturbate us, and if we had an orgasm, we were saying we were God. So I thought I needed to be destroyed because I was so prideful and evil. At the end of the ritual, we had to bow down to our programmer and worship them because they kept us from being evil by torturing and raping us. We were told we had so much evil sexual feelings inside us that we had to go through all of that torture for us not to be evil. They showed us the Lord's Prayer and read it over and over, so we did not question it. It was what God said should happen to us, the only communication He had with us.

Also, John 3:16, which says, "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son that whosoever believeth in Him will not perish but have everlasting life," was used in rituals to cause horrible isolation and fear. Since I was told that I was not a part of the world that God was talking about in this scripture, I was put in a room alone for a long period of time. They said that I was too evil to be loved by God and that He didn't even include me in His love. There were programmers who said they were God and Satan. Then they would have sex. After the people who said they were God and Satan had sex, during the ritual, they had a lady give birth to a baby. I was told it was God and Satan's child, because "begotten" meant they had sex. They forced me to touch the infant sexually, and they said that I would have eternal life because the baby's DNA would help me be chosen. I was just three or four years old at this time. After they made me do that, they said, "You're evil. You touched a baby sexually. We have to control you so you won't do that again." "You can't have eternal life, but if you try harder, you might be able to." Then they put me back in the cage and said I had to stimulate my sex parts to try to be better. I hated myself. I thought there was no other way for me.

Forgiveness was a trigger word for all victims. Forgiveness meant we had to pretend that the evil people were not evil, and we had to forget what they did to us. So every time a Christian says, "Forgive them," that means to us that we should pretend that they didn't torture us. So as you can see, the Christian words had opposite meanings for victims. That is why it is so hard to get free, and imperative that Christians are aware of what is going on. Without dealing with the truth, this just keeps the evil hidden and people in slavery.

Every time I had a Bible near me, they would say, "Open that GD Bible." I would open the Bible, and then I was forced to masturbate and read the Bible to get perfect. That was the only way I would be allowed to read the Bible. Every time I opened the Bible, I had sexual feelings. They said this was because I was so evil and perverted. The programmers would go on and would say, "Open the Bible wider, or you're never going to get there." They meant my legs and I would never get an orgasm. The orgasm meant I was perfect enough to be allowed to read the Bible. But when I had an orgasm, they said I was too evil to read the Bible and that I had made that up. Constant confusion and torment was what I faced every day. I didn't even have God to turn to, because I thought He despised and hated me. Since I would have to read the Bible while I was masturbating, then this made the Bible seem all about sex and very dirty. To "know" God or for God to "know" me meant I had to have sex. They would take me into a white room that was completely empty. Then a man that was named "God" walked in, all dressed in white. He wouldn't talk to me. He just raped me. Then I would hear a voice through a loud speaker that said, "You are banished. You are evil, and we have decided you deserve to die." The man whom I thought was God left, and I was there on the floor after being raped by whom I thought was God. They spoke on the loud speaker to make me believe it was God's voice that was talking to me. "Forget the past, and press on to the high calling of God." "You are called and chosen." At that time, other men were brought in, and they raped me. "This is your calling. Forget the past, and press on to the high calling of God." My calling from God was to forget and have sex with whomever they said. I tried and tried to do the best I could, because if not God said I should be dead. I had no idea that things could be different. If this was what God was like, then I was doomed. I was torn within. Why would God do this to me? Was I evil because I didn't like this? I thought I was.

The Scripture 1 Corinthians 9:24, which says, "Do you not know that in a race all the runners run, but only one gets the prize? Run in such a way as to get the prize," was used to get the victims to think that we were all in competition with each other constantly. The goal was to be the "one," and the person who ended up with "Jesus" was the "one." Their prize was that they would be controlled by their husband, who was chosen for them. Their chosen husband would be Jesus to them. This allowed them to win the prize of heaven. Every single thing I did was to strive to be good enough. Even the cars that passed as I was driving were in competition with me, they said. So there was no middle ground: either you stayed on the right side of the road and went very slow to make sure you were last, or you had to speed to get to first place. But we never were the first or the last. We were always in the "middle," those who did not get to go to heaven. In the rituals, the evil people would kill a person at the finish line and say it was my fault because I didn't go fast enough.

The evil people would recite Philippians 4:8 (NIV): "Finally, brothers, *whatever* is true, *whatever* is noble, *whatever* is right, *whatever* is *pure*, *whatever* is *lovely*, *whatever* is admirable—if anything is excellent or praiseworthy—think about such things." The programmers said they loved me while they raped me. Every evil they did, they paired it with something that was supposed to be good. This caused great confusion. I was tortured and forced to focus on the pretend things and forget the bad, because if I didn't, that meant I was evil. Papa God had to show me very clearly in my healing journey that I had to look at the evil they did to me. I had to see the lies that they told me to know the truth and be healed. How can you be healed if you don't even know what you're healed from? This is an extreme example, but it is true for every person. If you have feelings and emotions but you don't have any idea where they are coming from, Papa God wants to show you and then show you the truth where there are lies you believe. It brings supernatural peace and healing when Papa God speaks truth!

The evil people started in Genesis to pervert and twist my mind about God and creation. They said the expanse was the penis and the water was our body. The earth was formed through sex between Satan and God. The vibrations on the earth was to cause us to have sexual feelings. So God was forcing us to have sex with Him. They would put vibrations to my sexual part to make me have sexual feelings and tell me that God was having sex with me. All of what I saw that was made by God, I was programmed to believe, was sexual. Even the stars, they said, were made to remind me that God made the earth through sex. They said God separated the day and night in order to separate the good and evil people. When the sun rises, that is supposed to be God being stimulated to have sex with us.

The seasons of the year were for evil people to bring out different parts of my mind to torture. There are always corporate rituals at each season change. The programmers would spin me around over and over to cause my mind to disassociate, and they would say over an over that God spins the earth around to cause us to forget. Papa God has had to take every single lie and show the truth that He made the earth to show us that He loves us. Now Papa God is always showing me His genuine love through His creation. I was always forced to bond with animals, and then they would kill them. I wasn't as afraid of animals as I was of humans. It always seemed like animals liked me until the evil people tortured the animals to turn on me. That rejection by the animals, even though the animals were being tortured to do things to me, was a horrible feeling.

I seem to always feel close to Papa God when I see sunsets, animals, birds, and beautiful scenery. These are Papa God's signs to me each day that I'm free! For example, I was getting some healing from a memory one day, and I was sitting in my car. There was a tree nearby, and a leaf fell off the tree. He said, "You are not connected to the evil people anymore." So every time I see a leaf floating to the ground, that reminds me that I'm free!

In the first five years of my life, I had been in this “hospital” setting and had no outside influence at all. During that time, they set up pictures where we looked like a happy family. The reality was they were programmers posing as parents. When I walked out of the hospital and went outside for the first time, I saw a yellow flower and a yellow butterfly. I remember genuinely thinking that there must be something better something else other than the torture I was enduring. I had a tiny grain of hope planted that maybe God was not evil and that He didn’t hate me. The programmers looked at me and the change in my expression when I saw the yellow flower, and they said, “God didn’t make any of this for you. This is not even real for you. This is only real for the people that are perfect.” Even after telling me that, the truth is that that was a life-changing moment for me, the very first moment that I saw of glimpse of God, that made a lasting impact on my life. The Word says, “I tell you, if they keep quiet, He replied. Even the rocks will cry out” (Luke 19:40). So if Papa God can use rocks or a small flower to speak, He can use your life powerfully!

Chapter 9

Their "Product"

"Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are from God, for many false prophets have gone out into the world." John 4:1

By age five, the foundational programming was complete. Scientifically, it is proven that our belief system is primarily fully formed by the age seven. Now it was time to reveal their "product." That is what they called the victims they program. Their next plan was to get me to believe that the United States was the best place in the world and that there truly was an "American dream." They put me on a private plane, and I had no idea where I was going. I was in a cage. If I was taken out the of the cage, I was on a dog leash. As horrible as that was, I was glad to be some person's property because I was terrified of myself. All of the programming had made me wonder every second what I would do if I wasn't somebody's property.

The programmers gave the denial parts of my mind names like Perfect Princess, Sugar Queen, and Stupid. They made sure that my legal name sounded like a devil and demon, so anytime they said my name, I knew that my real name was devil and demon. All of the children's names in the house where we were started with the letter *D*. So with these legal names, we could each play the role and program of devil, demon, and denial. The main programmers' names started with *R*s. *R* and *R*. They would say, "The only rest and relaxation you get is through us. We keep you from doing evil. You can only rest when we are in control or torturing you." The lies would continue. "You have to work every second to be good when we are not around. God created you to work every second. God says you have to read the Bible to see how evil you are. We just want you to rest, and the only rest God says you get is to forget, to have sex, and torture." They reinforced these lies by making me clean up after every ritual. I had to clean up all of the blood and body parts and anything else they said to clean. If there was a speck or spot or even if there wasn't, they would make it look like there was. I couldn't ever clean well enough. Then they would trash every single thing I did and make me start over. This would go on for hours and hours. There was never ever rest for me. I was working 24/7. Even in the few hours that I did sleep, I was in torment because I was afraid I would kill someone in my sleep.

Flatliners is a movie that is a ritual-based movie. In the movie, they deliberately get their heart to flatline. Just like the movie, the programmers hooked me up to an electrocardiogram. They would shock me until I would pass out, and before I passed out, they would show me that my heart was flatlining. As they showed me that my heart had flatlined, they would say, "We have control of whether you live or die." They would take me to places in the spirit realm while I was flatlining, a place they called heaven and hell, and do programming in those places. Then when they revived me, they said that they kept me from doing evil. I was terrified not to have them. This fear brought an influx of demons that formed a demonic bond with the programmers.

When they flew me to India, I had no idea where I was. I was put in a room by myself. I was not given clothes, my head was shaved, and they poked my eyes with needles to make them look red. There were rats and insects everywhere. I was in torment as the rats and the insects crawled all over me. There was no relief from the torture. As I sat there in excruciating pain, there were Indian men who were dressed in military uniforms, and they would come into the room. They screamed at me and raped me over and over. There was no one to help me. I had no hope; I believed I was going to die. The fear of death was intense because of the programming that they had done about death. For me, death was a much worse fate than living. there was no rest in death. There was just killing to do because I had no person to control me. At that point in the torture in India, the people who programmed me from conception walked in. The programmers had already put layers and layers of denial and false bonding to make me cling to them. For example, since they had killed the lady who was my mom and said it was my fault, they said, "You don't have to be your mom's killer if you just pretend like I'm your mom. The pain will go away, and you will have a pretend mom. That is better than having no mom." My programmers said that I could have the "American dream." If I pretended that none of the torture ever happened, they would take me to America and I could have a life there. I soon found out that there is no such thing as the "American dream."

The deepest level of denial was the torture where the programmers made my sexual parts programmed to be aroused at the most hideous things. They would stimulate my genitals and then bring an infant into the room. They would do this over and over until sexual arousal at the presence of the infant was an automatic response. This was used as another layer of denial. It was programmed into my mind that if I said clearly that the programmers are good, then they would not tell people I was a child molester. I thought because they had trained my sexual parts to be aroused when an infant was brought into the room that that meant I was evil and a child molester. There were double binds constantly being put in place to cause my mind to give up and choose the lesser evil between the two options. The definition of a *double bind* is only having two horrible options. This was always the constant state in my life. Another example of a double bind was when the programmers would say, "If you molest them, you don't have to kill them. Wouldn't you rather them go to heaven and not hell?" The programmers said that if I killed the children, they would go to hell and be evil all their days because my spirit would take them over. If I molested them, they would go to heaven, and the programmers would make sure that my spirit didn't take them over. Either way I looked at it, I was evil, and I was going to have to do something bad, but I always tried to choose the lesser evil. The reality is that I never chose anything. I was forced to do things—physically, mentally, spiritually, and emotionally forced! I never had a choice! This locked the denial into my mind. Of course, I never ever would want anybody to know those evil things about me. And my programmers said they would keep it a secret if I choose to never turn on them and say that they were evil. The programmers had to be "the perfect family" in my mind, or they would tell the truth about who I was to everybody. They would send me back to India or to the hospital, and I didn't ever want that to happen. There was terror constantly!

Another country they sent me to was Africa. The goal of sending me to Africa was to seal a foundation of false importance, false gifts, and false power. They had me play the role of the queen of the Africans. This meant that every man "wanted" me and wanted to have sex with me. As the African programmers were raping me, I felt like I was to blame because they kept saying, "You want this. You want this power." The confusion was that somewhere inside, I did want the power to have someone want me, because no one had ever wanted me or chosen me. I hated myself. The programmers said I was completely evil because I wanted them to be my sex slaves. I just believed what they told me. I was treated like an animal, not adored for who I was; I was used for sex. The Illuminati said that because I was a mixed breed, I could save the Africans and give them some blood other than dog blood. And then when they raped me, my programmers said I was less than a dog. So no matter what I did, I was always treated as less than human.

The objective of the Illuminati was to make me hate all other nationalities other than those in the Illuminati bloodline. The Illuminati wanted me to see that all people who were not Illuminati were trying to make me look bad and destroy me. The programmers wanted me to hate all nationalities by convincing all of the parts of my mind that I was hated by everyone who is of different nationality. If the programmers could do that, then they could keep a foundation of denial in my mind about America—the foundation of denial that says, “America is perfect, and I live in America, so I’m perfect, and my family is perfect.” One of the ways the programmers did this was by lining up Jewish people in front of me and saying that they had to be a sacrifice. If they were not a sacrifice for all of the other people, I would have to strap a bomb to my chest where my heart was and blow up thousands of people. So I had to choose between blowing up thousands of people and killing a few people and saving thousands. The only way that I would not be a killer for eternity was to do what they said. So I was physically forced to do what the evil people said. I was trying to find the lesser evil choice. The programmers said that the Jewish people who were lined up in front of me would go to heaven because they were a sacrifice. They told me that God was planning on sending them to hell, but by doing this, I would be saving them from hell. I was torn by grief in my core like the ripping of flesh from a person’s body. I believe that the physical pain would have been easier than the torment I had to endure emotionally.

They took the symbols of the crescent moon, the sun, and the tree; and put them together to form a symbol that they used in rituals. If you look at the archdiocese logo, you will know they use the same symbols. The archdiocese is linked specifically to the Illuminati and Islam. In the rituals, the goddess Isis and the sun god Rah were used to create a demonic stronghold. The programmers took the blood of the people whom they beheaded and poured their blood all over me. I wanted to die because of the torment and pain this caused me. But I was more afraid of death. I was afraid of the evil that the programmers said I would do after death. This “programmed fear” executed by the Illuminati was to keep me from killing myself. They planned it that way so they would not lose the time and money that they had invested in my programming. If I killed myself, that would be a loss to their rank in the Illuminati, meaning their programming had failed. During the Isis rituals, the programmers also brought a child into the room, and they told me that it was my child. I never knew if the children were mine or not, because they always killed or took my children from me. When they brought in the child they said was mine, they told me that my child had to be a sacrifice too. The programmers said there had to be an adult sacrifice and a child sacrifice. The sacrifice was needed because Jesus didn’t die for us. I had to have a sacrifice that was not Jesus. The evil people took the sword they used to behead a person and forced my hands onto the sword and forced the sword into the child’s heart. I was way beyond the capability to handle this pain and devastation, so my mind divided into thousands of pieces. I was told that if I was a “faithful one,” my child would rise again. They said that my sacrifice at the end would cause him to have life instead of death. All of the soldiers, the programmers called the “faithful ones.” We were told that we would be joined together at the end. Since I had a sacrifice, I had earned the right to only have to kill a few people at the end. I would have a bomb strapped to me at the end and blow myself up, instead of having to blow up thousands or millions of people. At the end, I would have a sacrifice and end up being a virgin. Therefore, my eternal fate of being evil and killing people, like the programmers said, would be over finally. The evil people continually tried to use the conscience and love that Papa God put within me to torment me and use it against me.

After the different foundational programming throughout the world was complete, the programmers were ready to begin the infiltration of their "product" into society. I was taken to a very small town in Kentucky. The town had a German name. My role had been programmed into me since I was born. I was the "Kentucky girl." There was another boy that was brought to the same house that I was taken to, and when we were around people, the programmers said he was my brother. When we were alone, the programmers said he was "my Jesus." They tortured me and forced both of us to mate. The programmers tortured him to believe that he had to control me, so I wouldn't be evil. Our programmers forced us to believe that they gave us to each other because we were so evil that we needed each other to get the evil out of us. By having sex all the time, we were told we were purifying our blood. So they intentionally created a strong bond between us. Then they brought in other people whom we would have to have sex with in front of each other. They would tell each of us individually that we were evil and disgusting for having sex with our siblings. The programmers warned us that people couldn't ever know about it, or they would put us back into the hospital that we were born in. They also would pit us against each other. They told me that he said I was fat and ugly. They told him that I was disgusted with him. When they did this programming against each other, they put us in a glass room so we could see what was happening to each other. They had speakers in the room that broadcast what they wanted us to hear. They said that this was the voice of God. So we had no one to trust. They never allowed us to get too close to each other or anyone, because we might get free.

Chapter 10

School

"To the pure, all things are pure, but to the defiled and unbelieving, nothing is pure; but both their minds and their consciences are defiled. They profess to know God, but they deny him by their works. They are detestable, disobedient, unfit for any good work." Titus 1:15-16

The school I was put in was a programming site. It had a German origin and roots. The programmers had keys to the school. The male programmer was a teacher, a coach, and a counselor at the school. The Illuminati set up specific corporate sites in towns, cities, and states. These sites were for programming and experiments. Eventually, they said that those sites would be used for concentration camps for those who did not have the "perfect" Aryan bloodline. When the rituals were done in the school, it created a demonic grid for the Illuminati to channel in demons. This location was strategically chosen to maximize the amount of demons and power that could be brought through the portal that they had established. Portals are established on a global scale to control people's minds in that area. This portal is established by torturing a person through electric shock till they ask for the demons. The reason the victims ask for the demons is there is no other way to get them to stop the torture. There are no other options. The programmers electrocuted my head, and the pain was so intense that I sometimes would faint. This type of torture causes divisions in the mind of the person, and they specifically create parts to hold the demons. I was told the demons were my friends and that they would take the pain away. There is a legal right created for the demons to be there, because the evil people had gotten my will through torture to submit to the demons to allow them in. Another way the programmers get victims to accept the demons is by threatening to kill someone if they do not accept the demons. We are promised that the demons will protect the person who has been threatened. When the demons have more power, more torture is done. When there is human sacrifice and rape, the demons strengthen, and the programmer gets more power.

I went to a school that had kindergarten through twelfth grade in the same building. They were doing experiments concerning torture and how the brain works there. The experiments were to see how the brain functioned and how they could control my brain and other victims' brains more. For example, they would tell me that my brain was responding like the brain of a pedophile, and then they would show me a screen with a brain that lit up when showed a picture of a child, and then they paired that with sexual stimulation. They said that my brain lighting up was proof that I was sexually stimulated by a child, and, therefore, I was a pedophile. I was terrified of myself because I thought I was an evil pedophile. They said that they would torture and rape me to keep me from doing evil to children. I thought I needed them to control me and that I had to have them so I would not be a pedophile.

The Illuminati uses the *Wizard of Oz* programming as a foundational program. The Illuminati represents the wizard, the New World Order. Every detail of the *Wizard of Oz* was used for torture. The rainbow was the denial overlay of the demonic realm. The evil people said the rainbow was a sign that God hated the mixed breeds and would destroy us if we did not perform perfectly. During one of the rituals, they poured bubblegum-smelling pink liquid on me, and I had to click my heels to get "over the rainbow." There was a machine that was used to stimulate my genitals over and over. I was told that if I achieve an orgasm, I would be allowed in Oz. Dorothy was in a dream state in the movie, and they would tell me over and over that all of the evil they did to me was a dream. I was tortured to believe that none of the torture, rape, and hell I went through was actually happening. They would give me drugs to make me feel disconnected and feel like I was in an altered state. This made me feel like I was going crazy. They said I would go crazy if I didn't stop thinking about what they did to me and just think about how perfect they were. They would stimulate my sex parts and say over and over that they were perfect. They said that I needed a new heart, mind, and courage. They would dissect a human in front of me and say it was my fault that they died. The organs were taken out of the person and planted within other people to form a blood tie with the people who died. They said that there was always Oz behind the curtain, watching to see what I did, and they would expose me if I tell anybody what was happening to me. The monkeys were represented as demons. The victims were told that we are monkeys with no genetic purity and who are completely evil. A part of my mind that was divided was named Monkey. I was forced to pick at people's skin and head like a monkey does. Oz was a specific language they had in the spirit realm. They communicated in different frequencies so they would not be heard or found out in the natural realm. This entire book is about evil. To follow the yellow brick road meant to follow the denial to the end until the New World Order takes over and gives the mixed breeds a new heart, mind, and courage to carry out the plans of the Illuminati.

There were German "Grand Mother" and "Grand Father" positions. I was supposed to take over the Grand Mother position as an elite if I married who they set up for me to marry. The programmers said that was the only way I would be pure enough. They looked like normal grandparents in society, but the torture with them was hideous. They dressed in military uniforms when not in public. They had a basement that had an old furnace in it, and they would burn people alive in it. They lived beside a railroad track, and he worked on the railroad. They said they would send me back to India to the train if I was not perfect enough. There was complete isolation in India, and they had created a whole system in my mind of denial about America. The Grand Mother would give me sugar bread for the sugar programming to take over, and then they would take me in the back room with body parts lying around all over the room and rape and torture me. I was terrified of that room. She said I could have a pure descent if I performed well enough. She would buy the specific clothes and makeup that the buyers wanted me to wear and then sell me "to make her money back," she said. I was prepped by bringing up the parts that had the ability to act the way she wanted me to act. Then they would sell me to the German programmers whom they were working with. The town that they were in were also concentration campsites, and there were many German programmers there.

The other programmers posing as grandparents also did a lot of military programming on me, as well as Native American rituals. They would scalp people and filet their bodies. As they did this evil, they called in demons to cover the evil they were doing. When you see people in places of influence speak to people, they are calling in demons and asking the demons for trances to fall upon the people so they will not detect the evil words that are being said to them under the surface. The demons cover their evildoing, making it all possible. The demons are channeled in, and people see a veil, instead of who they really are. They had a garage where people were worked on like cars, dissected and put back together. The male programmer's cover was a mechanic. It's important to know that these people hide in every area of life; they are doctors, lawyers, teachers, pastors. They choose to do this anywhere they can cover up what they do. The demons influence the minds of people during the trances to introduce the evil people's thoughts and ideas into their minds. The trance causes the people to go into denial, and they do not perceive anything about the evil that is going on. It numbs the people so that they are constantly in a fog of denial.

There were two people who posed as my aunt and uncle. They lived on a farm that had racehorses. This was in the wealthy racehorse section of Kentucky. They had gated land, with a large farm and fake bed-and-breakfast that was used for programming. They took me to the horse races and sold me to the buyers who were looking for Southern programmed victims. There would be people who flew in from all over the world to buy people, not horses. They were also there to test the "Kentucky programming." They were looking for girls who were able to be the southern sickening sweet denial role that the men would want to purchase. The people who posed as my aunt and uncle were very involved in the political system and drug cartel in Kentucky. There were police officers who were involved in covering up all of what was going on at the horse races, because they were paid a high price. They created a false pride within the victims through the high price they were sold at. In reality, we were treated like animals. They gave us dog commands, and we wore dog collars. We walked on a stage naked and were auctioned off. They rated us with numbers. If we did not do well in the auction, they put us in coffins and said that we were better off dead, that is, if we couldn't earn money for them. When I got a high price, they said I was prideful and showing off, and tortured the other girls because they said I was prideful. I hated myself for liking that I was sold at a high price; I just wanted some person any person to genuinely love me. Unfortunately, that would never happen until I was in my late twenties. The bed-and-breakfast that the programmers ran had a code name and was where programmers and traffickers could test out their product.

The other programmers who posed as my aunt and uncle were evil too, and they had other victims in their houses. There was another girl my age and a boy a couple of years younger, and they were supposed to be my cousins. I was pit against the girl. She had blonde hair and blue-green eyes, and they said she was a pure breed. So in the denial world, the everyday world, the programmers were pretending to be a normal family. In this pretend life that people saw daily, the programmers told me that I could be better than my cousin if I pretended well enough. They made sure I knew that she was always better in the Illuminati world, the world where bloodline was of upmost importance. She was better with the torture, rape, and programming. We were always in competition with each other. They said she was smart and I was stupid. If I acted stupid enough, they promised me that I wouldn't have to do the torture on other people that they forced me to do. They never kept that promise, of course. They said that I didn't have to do the torture if I would just try to make the other girl angry with me. I was told that if I faked being stupid she would live. She thought I was acting stupid, so she would have to do the torture.

Every single victim is programmed against each other. They don't want to take the chance that we would feel genuine love from each other. They were aware that genuine love would destroy their programming. They knew the truth. They knew the Word in detail and rejected it, because they wanted to be God. There was a boy whom we had to compete to get as a "Jesus" sacrifice for us. This person, they told us, was the one who would cover our sins. They called me "precious," and that meant that the core of my being was like Gollum, the evil creature in *The Lord of the Rings* who was taken over by the ring. The ring was the goal, and this meant sex. The other programmers who were the last posing aunt and uncle were in charge of getting me sexually where I was supposed to be. She would say she was a victim, and then they would act like they were raping her. I felt sorry for her. She said, "If you feel sorry for me and I'm the victim, then I will show you how to be the best at sex." I thought she was sincere, but she would laugh at me when I had sex and say, "I'm the victim because you're so evil." She told me that if I said she was the victim, I was allowed to stay looking young, like she was. They called demons in to slow my aging, and I was told I would be left alone if I cease to be salable, so I received the demons.

The evil people had already set up programming to cause division in my mind and for me to think I had a twin. This was done to cause complete division between the left and right side of my brain and body. I was tortured to believe the left side was evil and the right side was the perfect princess (denial). They told me that I was a twin—that there was a good twin and an evil twin, and I was the evil twin. There was a girl who was posed as my best friend by the evil people. The programmers dressed us alike and made us look alike. She was a victim from birth also. She was supposed to be the good twin. We were constantly made to be in competition with each other. If she was better at something, then I was tortured and put in a room by myself until "I got better." Every second, they would say she's prettier, smarter, better than I was. This caused a love-hate relationship because I thought she was my sister. They told me that I was always labeled the evil person. She was tortured to believe the same way. Her programmer was the secretary at the school we went to, and she was the gatekeeper. The reason her programmer was called the gatekeeper was she scheduled the reprogramming and watched to see how the programming was holding up in school.

When they established a specific programming, we were turned over to another programmer. This programmer was a gymnastics coach. There were many victims he was programming under the disguise of a gymnastics instructor. There were victims who had to compete in gymnastics and get specific ranking from their performance. We were pit against each other on purpose; the instructor had a large sex trafficking business with the gymnastics as a cover. We were taken to competitions and shown as animals doing tricks to see if people wanted to buy us. He took us to a corporate gymnastics camp that had German coaches that were involved with the programming. He was one of my main programmers since age five and continued to be so until my twenties. Since my programming was based on the lie that I was evil, they never allowed me to get too good at anything, including gymnastics. They said I would be too prideful and begin to think I didn't need them anymore to keep me from being evil.

At age five, they took me to a small Baptist church in that town and began to pretend to be active members of the church. The female programmer was disguised as a children's minister, and the male programmer managed the church's cemetery that was at the end of the road where their house was. To people, they looked like normal parents, and no person ever questioned that. There were other people in the church who were programmers that were doing the same thing to me and other victims. The programmers in the church passed the victims back and forth between them, trying out their techniques. I was made to sing in front of the church; this terrified me. Because during the rituals, I had to sing for all of the evil people, and they would score me. If I didn't sing well enough, they would hurt people. I would shake because I was so afraid, and my voice would tremble. They always said I wasn't good enough, and people got hurt. The pastor at that church started getting to close to me, so they focused on taking him and his wife down. They began to slander him within the church. The female programmer had the key to the parsonage under the disguise that she was taking care of the parsonage for the church. She would do rituals with torture and rape when the pastor and his wife weren't there. They would put the pastor's picture up in front of me while they were torturing me, and they would say that he was really the person that was torturing me. They said over and over that he had told them to do what they were doing. They also told me the pastor and his wife had a mentally handicapped daughter whom they had put in the mental hospital because they didn't want her. They said that I was the mentally handicapped daughter they were referring to. The programmers in the church started telling everybody that's the pastor's wife was a whore, and that she was trying to have sex with all of the people in the church. They were setting a foundation to destroy the pastor. They made sure they had a backup plan, that if my programming ever started breaking down, they would have a "fall guy."

The evil people showed me the Jesus video. Each detail of Jesus's life was perverted for me. The programmers said when Jesus came to earth, He had sex with Satan and expected all of us to do the same. The evil people said Jesus was not raised from the dead for me. So I had to try and get the men who were dressed like Jesus sexually excited so that they would be "raised" from the dead. The "Holy Spirit coming" was a sexual experience according to the programmers. This was when the Holy Spirit would ejaculate in your mouth, and then you had to speak false tongues of demons. They would hang us up on crosses and say we had to stay there until we were good enough for Jesus to die for us, and we never were. They did rituals in the pastor's office, because they had the key to the church. During these rituals, they put pictures of the pastor in front of me. They said that when I went to see the pastor, I had done evil things. They did the rituals with the cross in the church, and they would hold me under the water in the baptismal and say that they could only let me up when I was saved, "perfect." So since I couldn't be perfect enough, they pretended like they gave me an alternative. They did sexual things under the water to make me have an orgasm; that meant I was perfect and saved. My programmer was the overseer of the cemetery for the church. They would put the remains of people in the holes for burial without anyone ever knowing. They also had a tombstone for a child that was supposed to be my brother, whom they said I killed. The programmers said that I shouldn't have been born. He should have been born. They couldn't get their way and be in control at the church, so the evil people ended up getting the pastor fired, and they replaced him with someone from the cult.

There was another child who was brought into the house as well. They told me I was his mom, even though I wasn't old enough to be his mom. I took care of him and was like his mom. I bonded with him because I took care of him daily, and then they forced me to have sex with him. He had blonde hair and blue eyes; they said he was of pure descent. They forced me to be his handler. That meant that I had to hurt him, and if I didn't, they would hurt him much worse. This was the most hideous type of torture because they used my heart that chose Papa God against me. I would rather have been tortured myself, then be forced to hurt him. I was given no choice. He was forced to be very quiet. It made me angry because they told me that he was being quiet because he feared me because I was so evil. They said he was always trying to tell me I was evil by being silent. I was only allowed to sleep in the doghouse behind the house, even though they had a room "for show" in the house that was supposed to be mine. I was treated worse than an animal. If I performed sexually, I was allowed out of the doghouse. I was kept in isolation there, with no food and with bugs and mice crawling on me. If I didn't act perfectly, they would threaten to put me back in the doghouse. The threats would be that they would kill the kids at school and the other victims if I didn't pretend like things were perfect. Also, there was a place under the stairs in the garage that I would have to stay sometimes. When they allowed me to be in the house, I had to be doing something like cleaning or having sex or whatever they told me I had to do. I would sleep in the baby bed of the little boy who was supposed to be my child but only if I had sex with him. He was used as leverage against me constantly, and I would do what they wanted if they would not hurt him.

The programmers put me in pretty, pink princess pageants and forced me to pretend that all was perfect. They bleached my hair in the sun and made me look blonde, and said if I acted perfect enough, I would earn my way to heaven. I won a beauty pageant, and there was another victim who was chosen to be in the pageant with me, and she lost. The other boys who were in her house were forced to rape me; that is what they said I got for winning. The girl who lost the pageant ended up getting the boy I couldn't have, because she was a pure breed. This was a boy who was blonde and had blue eyes, and they called him "the divine." He bred with me and the girl they called my twin, and we had to compete for him. He never liked or chose me they said, because I was too evil. He only used me for sex. My programmer would have sex with him in front of me and say that I was too evil, fat, and ugly for him to ever want me.

The evil people channeled in demons and asked for the power to shape-shift into werewolves during rituals. They would call for the demons to take over them and shift them into the form of a werewolf. They would search for prey. They would kill and eat what they killed. This is shown clearly in the ritual movie *Wolf*, where the man is chained down to keep him from shape-shifting during the night, and doing evil things in the night. He always gets loose and is able to go kill. They would make me wear a werewolf mask, and they told me that I was evil. They said I would get free so they had to shape-shift to keep me from doing evil. The terror that I felt when I saw the demons possess them and their entire being shift into a werewolf was unspeakable. I was terrified of myself most of all, though, because I thought I was a werewolf. I thought that was my core, and I thought I was uncontrollable. I didn't want to be evil. I wanted to genuinely love people and be kind to people. They made sure I was petrified of myself. Since I had already chosen Papa God at my core, I belonged to Papa God. The demons didn't take over me and make me shape-shift into that being, but I didn't know that truth. I also saw them shape-shift into a creature that looked like Gollum in *The Lord of the Rings*. They would crawl around like an animal. They said that was the core of who I was, and when they weren't around to keep me under control, that was what I looked like. They continually said they were only doing what they were doing to show me how evil I was. They said my evil nature made them do what they did. They said that the evil within me possessed them and caused them to shape-shift into zombies and vampires that ate people and drank their blood. I never questioned what they said, because ever since I was born, I had been shown dead people that they said I killed while I was asleep. I would wake up, and there would be dead people all around me, and then they showed me videos of someone who looked like me doing evil things. This was how they kept me under their control for so long. The movies and TV shows today are just desensitizing people to the fact that there are really people who do these things daily in this country. Where do you think the entertainment industry gets the ideas for the movies? This really happens; it's not a movie.

The evil people have knowledge of the way the brain and body works, since some of them are chemists, biologists, neurologists, doctors, and scientists. The body has nerves that send electrical impulses to the brain, heart, and major organs that communicate what to do in the body. The evil people have had scientists for years studying how to control the nerves of a human being. They use the process of sending electrical impulses to try and control the entire nervous system. They have control over the person's body remotely. The Illuminati programmers use electricity for torture and control; rituals are done over the nerves and major organs to cause them to be under their control. There are demons that are assigned to the nerves to cause them to flex and react the way that the programmers want them to. This is also used as a major trigger, because they have convinced us as victims to believe that they are able to get us to do whatever they want us to do physically. When the mind believes a lie, the body is affected in how the body reacts. The evil people plant tiny electrodes in all of the nerves to send electrical impulses throughout the body creating migraines, pain in the victim's heart, and other physical pain. With being physically controlled remotely, they convince the victims to another degree that there is no way out.

At school, I had to act perfect, to play the role of the perfect princess. There were some teachers who were programmers, and the principal and assistant principal were programmers. This was a small elementary and high school (from kindergarten to twelfth grade). I was in the same building for twelve years. Each teacher I had each year was planned ahead of time so that every move I made was controlled. I had only denial friends (friends who were chosen for me), who were victims themselves. To anybody looking at us, they would have said, “That is a perfect family,” but it was hell. I was trained to act the way they wanted me to act. I had to sit and watch hours and hours of TV and then act out what I saw. If I didn’t perfect what I saw done by the actress on TV, I was tortured. Watching the TV was work. I had to memorize every move that was made and every word that was said. I had to be an actress in my life every second of every day. I was depressed and suicidal all the time, but nobody ever asked any questions the entire time. They saw a “family” involved in school, church, and normal activities that looked “good” on the outside. People would tell me that my depression was the result of my selfishness and spoiled nature. I was forced to be very active within the school as a cover for what they were doing to me. I was a cheerleader in band color guard, and I was voted band and basketball queen. I was never allowed to be the homecoming queen, because they said I was too evil. The word *home* meant sex, and if you had a “homecoming,” you had an orgasm. They would stimulate my genitals over and over and over to cause a division in my mind and make me feel tormented, and never allow an orgasm. I was terrified of orgasms, because they would kill someone or electrocute them every time they allowed an orgasm. They would say, “You’re evil,” “You liked that,” “You wanted that.” I blamed myself for the person dying, and I hated feeling sexual. The sexual feeling meant death and torture and orgasms meant I was 100 percent completely evil.

The house they lived in was in front of cornfields where rituals were performed, just like in the movie *Children of the Corn*. The exact rituals from the movie took place. There was furniture in the house, but I was not allowed to sit on the furniture unless I had sex or if they were videoing me. At the end of the road was the church cemetery, and the *Texas Chainsaw Massacre* was another ritual that they would carry out. They would cut up the people from the rituals and freeze them in the huge deep freezer in the garage. Then they would cook them into meals and force us to eat them. They made meals with a lot of sugar and fried foods, food that would taste good and cause a denial reaction. This caused confusion because of what they used in the meals. Then after I ate what they gave me, they would say, “You just ate ___,” and it was a dog that I had had to care for and bond with or a person that I had bonded with. They did that on purpose to convince me that I was evil and rip my mind into many different pieces because the pain and torment was so severe. Another movie that has rituals throughout is *Nightmare on Elm Street*. They would give me drugs to make me go to sleep, and then they would bring someone dressed like Freddy Kruger into the room, and I would be disoriented. The person would chase me in a building, and I could never get free. Finally, I would stop running because I couldn’t run anymore due to the drugs. Then I would pass out. They would move me into the room that they set up to look like my room. I would wake up, and they would say I was crazy and that I dreamed all of what happened. I thought I was crazy. They would say over and over, “You’re crazy. You don’t even know what’s real.” They would lock me in a cage until I told them that I made all of that up and that I was crazy. Most horror shows are taken from rituals. Another movie with rituals used by the Illuminati is *Chucky*. They had dolls and stuffed animals that they would display in my fake room on shelves. There was witchcraft spells and voodoo that was spoken over each of the dolls, and they used them to hurt Christians. They named each of them after the people they were praying against. They would tell me that all of the Christians were trying to destroy me, and how much Christians hated me. They told me if I didn’t do the voodoo over the

Christians, they would tell everybody how evil I was. Then when they would force me to do the voodoo and curses, they would say that I wanted to curse the Christians and that I was evil to curse them. They said that I was like Chucky, and that no matter what I did, I wouldn't die; I would always be killing people. I have had many people say, "Why didn't you just kill yourself?" The reason I didn't kill myself is they told me that I would go to a place where I would kill people constantly and not have anybody to control me. I was more afraid of that than of staying alive and being tortured continuously.

Chapter 11

Reprogramming

"Everyone who does evil hates the light, and will not come into the light for fear that their deeds will be exposed." John 3:20

I was taken to Florida many times, and I had to walk the beach like normal vacationers do. Unfortunately for me, programmers and traffickers would watch me from the motel balconies. They would watch to see how well I performed and if they wanted to buy me. When they did purchase me, a ritual would take place, and they would "test" me out. This was a way that programmers showed off their project. If their programming stood up to the testing, then the programmers would get more power and prestige in the Illuminati. If we did not do well, our specific programmers would go into a room with the other programmers and act like they were being tortured because of us. A part would be split off intentionally to think that it was our responsibility to keep the programmers from being tortured. They would torture me with electrocution, at the same time, to reinforce that I was at fault. Then, afterward, I felt great guilt and shame for my programmers being punished for my behavior. I would be buried in the sand and left there overnight with only an opening for my mouth so I could breathe. There were marks all over my body from insects that bit me, and I was gasping for breath the entire night. I was petrified; then my programmers would come back to where I was and say, "will you be faithful?" That was a question that meant would we fight in the end? I said yes. My programmers just laughed and said, "You're crazy! We don't get tortured by anyone. We are not a mixed breed like you." I thought I was protecting them and they were just tricking me again. While at the beach, they also had remote locations where they took me to. I was always blindfolded while being taken to corporate rituals. This was so I wouldn't be able to tell anyone exactly where we were. There were cages that they put in the water with the victims in them. They picked locations where there were sharks swimming in that area. They opened the cages and told us to swim as fast as we could to the surface. I was in complete terror. I couldn't swim fast. They told us that if we ever told anybody about anything that happened to us, they would bring us back and let the sharks eat us.

On my sixteenth birthday, I was taken out of town to a hotel where there were corporate rituals done. There were many other victims that were taken there also. There were boys who were paired with us, and they said that if I didn't perform well enough in the ritual, I wouldn't get to have a Jesus who would rescue me. They dressed me up like a witch and forced me to cast spells and curse people on this night. If I didn't do what they told me to do, they said they would kill the other kids who were there. They said the witchcraft powers would give me control over myself from being evil, so I followed through and said what they told me to say. That night, they burned down the large garage that was behind their house, and they said that I did it. They said I wanted to be a witch and to curse people and that I was trying to cover up how bad I was. They were trying to give me a false sense of power like the witch in the *Wizard of Oz*. The witch had power over all of the "monkeys," demons, to do what she said, and see in the spirit what needed to be seen. If I stayed like Dorothy and forgot the truth about what the evil people were doing to me, I wouldn't have to die, and I could have power over the evil that I thought was within me. The truth was they were trying to get rid of evidence of the killings they did, with starting the fire in the garage. They said that there had to be a sacrifice at every birthday so that I would be allowed to keep on living.

The evil people would impregnate me purposely and cause me to bond with the baby. They would tell me I would get to keep the baby. Before the baby was fully formed, they would induce me and make me go through labor. There was a time where the baby boy's head was being born, and they cut his head off as he was going out of my body. They said that I was evil and I was Satan because of what happened to him. As I have gotten healing for this from Papa God, He has shown me He is holding my baby boy. And there will be a day when I will get to hold him! Over and over, they tricked me to accept the demons and spirits so they could have more power. The Illuminati witchcraft is what they use to cause me to have to go through tunnel after tunnel of consciousness to get to the Illuminati conversations that happen on different frequency levels.

The level of torture that I was put through to make me submit to the demonic was beyond what the mind can comprehend. I had to take the electrical power and demons, or they would kill children and slit them open and let their body parts fall out on me. Just writing that is hideous, but I experienced it. I do not tell this for shock value or to get attention. I tell the extent and details of the programming and torture because Papa God told me to. It may not be politically correct or something that gives me more creditability, but I'm not seeking those things. I want the darkness to be exposed and for every single victim to have an opportunity to be free from the terror of torture and slavery. I just want people to be free. If I didn't take all of the demonic, then I wouldn't be able to get the people put back together, the evil people told me. As I was allowing Papa God to heal this, He showed me all of the children dancing and laughing with Him in heaven completely free from pain. That gave me great comfort!

The programmers chose men who were victims for me to be paired with in high school. There was always an agenda behind this. One of the men was put there to bring competition between the girl victims. If we performed well enough, we were allowed to be his chosen one. There were always two worlds that we had to live in, the denial world and the Illuminati world. In the denial world, I was always paired with a man who controlled me. This was done so that the programmers would reinforce the denial "perfect family, perfect life." I genuinely wanted to be accepted and wanted by someone. They knew this, so they said if I pretended well enough, I would always be allowed to have the man to control me. In the ritual, Illuminati world, the man was always with another girl. I was never chosen. This caused jealousy and competition with all of the victims.

One of the men whom I was paired had an older brother who was the designated "fall" for a crime that was done by the police. The police in that small town were very involved in the rituals. There was a police officer who lived next to us so that he could be a "watcher," making sure that no one got close to the ritual site. He was involved with the hell I was going through. He made sure there were no calls to the police for any noise and alerted the programmers if there was anything and anybody that came near the house. The police in this town were benefiting financially for being involved with the Illuminati.

Another girl that they set me up against in high school was a girl who was blonde, and they told me she was pure breed. She always was put in competition with me to get the guy in the denial world. My programmers would say over and over I was losing my power in the denial world, that she was going to take over. So each guy they paired me with, they paired her with as well; there was constant turmoil. She was allowed to be with them for a long time, and I was only allowed to be with them for a few months. They said that was because I was too crazy and out of control.

I was taken to the Nashville airport the majority of the time, to fly to the rituals and to be trafficked. They would dress me up specifically to what the programmer and trafficker asked for, and I would walk up to the sidewalk of where people were dropped off for flights. The programmers and traffickers would see me and contact my programmers to let them know if they wanted to purchase me. Then I would be put on a plane. Nashville is a hub for traffickers. There were a lot of pictures taken of each victim who was brought to the airport, and the secret network decided who got which victim.

There are a lot of victims who are sent to Christian camps to be programmed. Christian camps are targeted by the cult because it is easy to blend in there. The programmers know who the victims from birth are, and they also target kids or teenagers who have been abused severely previously to the extent that their mind has split. The programmers have an opening in their mind through that division; then they can continue the abuse. They always bring in the victims from birth and force us to abuse the ones who are disassociated so that if they ever remember, they will remember about the victims, not the perpetrators. This is done as leverage—another way to get the victims to do what they are forced to do. They paired me with another girl at camp. She was blonde and was pure breed, they said. We were put together to control each other and compete so we would be good enough in college. She lived in Tennessee, and they sent me there to be programmed before college. I was taken to a college there for a cheerleading college camp and ritualized there. They took me to restaurants in downtown Nashville to sell me. I was trafficked, ritualized, and sold on different Tennessee and Kentucky college campuses' to other programmers.

After high school, they sent me to a college with programmers in that area, taking over as my handlers. This college was a large university in Kentucky. All of my classes were chosen for me, with programmers that were posing as professors in them. Psychology was chosen as my major. So that I could see how the psychiatrists and psychologists label the things happening to me as symptomatic of paranoid schizophrenia. This was done to reinforce the fear that they would tell people that I was crazy if I ever told what was happening to me. There was a professor who was a programmer on that campus who used the Kegel exercises and theory in a human sexuality class. He was programming and torturing me and other victims. His programming was based on the programming of Kegel that they had already done to me as a child. They forced my body to feel sexually stimulated and forced me to do the Kegel exercises over and over. This was done to get me to feel crazy when sexual feelings were forced onto me. The main programmers told me, along with the professor, that it was my fault; I wanted to be raped. So I thought that it was my fault he raped me. I was forced to join a sorority at this university. The sorority was connected to the masons and Illuminati. The girl whom I was programmed with and posed as my best friend was also a member of this sorority. We had to compete to see who would be the best in the sorority rituals. There were many victims within this sorority. A well-known jewelry and clothing distributor was the symbol that was used for the sorority. The mascot was the lion. "Satan" was the focus and leader of the sorority.

The girl whom the programmers used to pose as my cousin lived with me in the dorm. There was a war constantly between us. We had a demonic competitive program set up ahead of time. So we had to constantly be working to get better than the other. If we did not, we were told they would kill people until we improved. In every situation, I was constantly threatened that they would torture and kill my younger brother, to whom I had had to play the role of a mother. For most of the victims, we had to take care of boys who had to play the "Jesus" role for us.

My main program was the perfect princess programming. I had to make sure everybody thought my life was perfect and that I had the perfect family. I tried out for college cheerleader, and the director was a programmer. He said I needed to lose weight to be a cheerleader. Then the starvation began. They told me what I could eat and could not eat. I was allowed to eat apples to remind me of how evil I was. I was called Eve and judged for choosing to eat the apple. Also, I was allowed to eat pretzels. Pretzels represented the body of Christ and that I had to have sex with Jesus and every person in order for them to live. I was forced to drink Diet Coke because they said it was laced with cocaine and would control me to keep me from doing evil. Pizza was a big ritual symbol. Pizza meant a sexual act had to be performed on a child. You see, this symbol recently has been exposed through what most people say is a conspiracy theory called Pizzagate. It is very real, and there is an enormous Illuminati pedophile ring at the top of government.

The programmers picked a man for me to be with; he was my controller at college. His job was to have sex with me and make sure I didn't do evil things. He was a cheerleader also, so he was with me all the time. By this time, I weighed about ninety pounds. My programming was starting to break down. I was not able to keep the perfect princess programming going. The starvation was done to get all of the parts of my mind to remember being in the hospital. Then I would choose to continue to run the perfect programming. If I didn't keep the program running, they would send me back to the hospital where I was tortured in from birth. At this time, some of the memories began flooding back of the rape I endured. I couldn't see the faces, but my programming was starting to crumble a tiny bit.

The Grand Mother would have me write poems by different parts of my mind to see what I would remember. When I finished the poems, she would take me to her basement with the furnace and burn people alive. She said if I ever told anybody anything, I would be the reason people burned alive. My mind was forced to create new parts to push down what I had witnessed. The horror of seeing and smelling a human being burned alive is incomprehensible. The worst torture was seeing the pain they were enduring and not being able to do anything to save them. I blamed myself for writing the poems. I thought I had caused them to be in torment. She kept saying over and over that it was my fault. I was so confused because she told me to write the poems. She tricked me over and over; she said I wanted to write the poems and that I was lying that she did not ask me to write them. I thought I was going crazy. I never knew what was true even about my own thoughts and feelings, because of the programming. I was forced to write; then I was tortured about what I had written. It was a double bind, just like my entire life had been.

The evil people would say, "I'm going to kill ____. I'm going to hurt ____. It's your responsibility to protect them." Then I would be sent out into the woods to try to protect them from being killed. They would always find the person and kill them before I found them. Then they would say, "Didn't you hear me? I said I was going to kill them. You should have protected them. It was your fault that they were killed. I knew you were evil." I questioned my motives continuously. I asked myself all the time. I always thought I had an ulterior motive, that I had some evil core planning ways to manipulate and deceive people. Since I was an infant, this is what I have always been told about who I am.

The programming was reiterated daily. I was told I had to do "more." I had to have sex "more." I was a mixed breed, so no matter how much "more" I did, I always had to do "more." This meant rape every day all day. I had to be tortured and raped "more" because I could never be "more" for anybody. I was just always not enough. They would tie me up and chant "more" over and over and stimulate my genitals with a machine. They would stop the machine and start it over and over and over.

There was a new pastor who was brought into the Baptist Church; he was a programmer during my high school years and after. They did many rituals in the parsonage and behind the house. My programmers were working with them to do rituals to put the face of the pastor they got fired, in my memories. If I didn't see the pastor's face, I would be put back in the hospital where they put me when I was little. They assigned me a psychiatrist, who tortured me and took me to the children's psychiatric hospital in the same town of the college I went to. He did rituals in the back rooms of the psychiatric hospital. He would put smelling salts to my nose and hold me down, and he raped me over and over. He said that if I continued the princess programming and forgot all the things that were starting to surface, he would marry me and be my controller. They bonded me to the psychiatrist in terror by forcing me to have sex and be held by him. He took pictures with me and the children being forced to have sex at the children's psychiatric hospital and said that I wanted it. He said he would show people the pictures and put me in jail if I ever told the truth of what was going on. He gave me a lot of different medications to make me not remember things. I couldn't function any longer. The functioning parts of my mind were beginning to see memories and break down. I wasn't able to continue with cheerleading, sorority, and college. They scrambled to begin to reprogram and cover all of the memories I was starting to have. The girl from my childhood that was my "twin" and I were put in jobs at a children's psychiatric hospital. We were tortured with the children there. Our programmers also took pictures of us being forced to do sexual things to the children, but they said we did it because we liked it. They called us pedophiles. The pastor whom my programmers took down and that the evil people were programming me around had a sister that worked at this same hospital. They told us that the pastor and his wife had decided they wanted the "good twin." They arranged a marriage with one of their family members to infiltrate the pastor's family with the Illuminati. They said since I wasn't able to keep things together, I was the "bad twin" who was left in the hospital.

The first hospital they started to reprogram me in was in Kentucky, and I was paired with a Jewish victim. The reason they did this was to remind me of what they forced me to do to Jewish people. If I didn't stop the memories, they would tell everybody what I did. Then everybody would see that I was evil and make me stay in the hospital. I looked like I had an eating disorder. I was starving, binging, and purging. This was what the programmers were using to control me. The torture and reprogramming in this hospital slowed down the memories for a short time.

There were many Christian ministries that they took me to. They took me to programmers who were specifically targeting Neil Anderson and the Freedom in Christ model of deliverance. The Illuminati look for and study different ministries that are making a difference in setting people free. They begin to discredit and program victims around those ministries so that the ministry will not be able to have any power. The "I am" statements in Freedom in Christ were used specifically. I was strapped down and told that if the "I am" statements were true for me, then I had to take the God position. Being God meant I would be physically forced to make the decisions on who lived or died. They said that God kills people who don't perform well, and if I wanted to be like God, I would have to do the same things God did. So instead, they would read over me the opposite of the "I am" statements. If I believed that I was evil and opposite of God, then I didn't have to be forced to kill anybody or hurt anybody. They programmed me every second to believe that if I ever had any power or thought good things about myself, that meant that I would be out of control.

After reprogramming me in the hospital, they sent me to a different college. This college was infiltrated as well with Illuminati professors and board members; the man posing as my uncle was part of the board at this college. He had a network that he was selling me to in this town in Kentucky where the small college was. I was still getting drugged and programmed by the psychiatrist from the other college town at the same time.

The psychiatrist was setting up different places for me to go to get reprogrammed. There was another male victim who was brought to pair me with at this college. He was a football player, and I was a cheerleader, so we looked like the perfect pair. He had to be Jesus for me and have sex with me all the time to make me good enough. They made our child alters bond to keep us together. This made us choose the demons and whatever they told us we had to choose, in order to keep each other from getting hurt. We always had to be in competition with other victims to be able to keep each other. They brought other girls to have sex with him and would say I was too ugly, fat, and evil for him to choose me. I kept falling apart, and the programming kept breaking down. New memories started surfacing. They continually reprogrammed me with the childhood pastor's face, voice, and pictures over the real memories so they could slander him and bring him down.

They took me to a large Christian hospital in Texas to reprogram me. They had planted a programmer in that hospital who tortured me. The Illuminati always targets Christian hospitals, camps, churches, especially spirit-filled praying churches. This programmer said that he was able to commit me to a mental hospital by saying I was paranoid schizophrenic. He said if I didn't stop remembering, I was going to be put back in the hospital that I was born in. They did rituals to bury those parts that were remembering. I was forced to take a lot of pills and try to kill the parts of my mind that were remembering the truth. The evil people said that I was taken to a hospital to pump my stomach to get the evil parts out and to stop them. The entire reason this was done was so they could call in more demons, because I had chosen to try and kill myself, they said. There were more demons assigned as "friends" to push the memories down. The evil people said the demons would hide the "truth" about me, that I was an evil monster.

Another hospital that they took me to was a well-known hospital in Louisiana. This hospital is supposed to be for sexual abuse victims and perpetrators. They told me that they were sending me there posing as a sexual abuse victim, but they told me the truth was I was there because I was a perpetrator. There were other Illuminati victims there. A victim whose father was a judge was there because all of her memories were starting to surface. All of the parts of her mind were talking and sharing what had happened to her. They said if I continued to allow all of the memories to surface, I would go crazy and look like her. They were trying to destroy the rebellious parts so that I wouldn't start thinking I was able to be on my own. The psychiatrist I was assigned to at this hospital filmed me and forced me to do sexual things to other people. She said if I ever told anybody what was going on, she would show the videos to people and put me in jail where I belonged. She said that molesters were raped every day in jail, and there wouldn't be any end to the torture that I would endure. I was terrified every second of myself, and of them. I had to pretend like the psychiatrist was not evil or face those consequences. I let them bury my alters, and I vowed to them I would forget.

I was also sent to Houston, Texas, to another well-known Christian hospital. There was a programmer assigned specifically to me there. The programmer was physically handicapped and in a wheelchair. They said that I deserved all of the torture and pain because I was the person who caused this man not to be able to walk. I was having detailed memories of all of the satanic rituals beginning to surface. The pastor's face was all I saw. This was because they continued to do all rituals with pictures of his face posted in front of me. The constant threats were that if he wasn't who I saw that was doing the abuse, then they would leave me all alone. As I have said, this was my biggest fear, because of being tortured since infancy to think that I was evil.

The psychiatrist assigned to me flew out to Colorado to reprogram my core. There was a "pseudo" counseling called rebirthing or holding therapy in Colorado where they wrapped you in a blanket, held you down, and supposedly rebonded with you. This had been used in rituals, and they were experimenting with denial programming to use this to reattach with my programmers through torture. This caused the core to submit to their control and to push the anger of what they did to me down. They wrapped me tightly in blankets and repeatedly kissed me on the cheek. This meant that I was a Judas. I was a betrayer if I told anybody the truth about what happened. They said that I had sexual feelings while they were kissing me on the cheek, so this proved that they needed to control me. Being held down, kissed over and over, letting water drip on my face while they cuss and threaten me caused intense rage. They said that I was evil because at the core of my being was a raging evil monster. I was afraid of myself, so I pushed all of that rage down and accepted the demons of denial, that they were good loving parents.

There were corporate rituals done while I was in Colorado, as well. They have many underground military ritual sites in the Colorado mountains. A billionaire, Illuminati leader that is in the news a lot recently and is an ANTIFA funder; funds testing on cloning and artificial intelligence in these areas. He is connected to many previous American presidents. The money of the elite goes to buying the presidency and their agenda in this country. This Illuminati leader has set up cloning research labs that are connected to NASA and the military. This council of the elite have set up Facebook as a ploy to set up this nation. Facebook is used to track billions of people, what they do, where they go, who they talk to, every tiny detail of their life. Facebook has been used for sharing the truth of the gospel, praying for people, funding worthy causes, and much more; so it's not at all the root of the evil. The people who control Facebook are the problem. They are trying to take away our freedoms and liberties without us being aware. It is being used as an avenue to track people and know their exact location at all times. The people who control and monitor Facebook have the ability to send electrical waves to affect the communication in the spirit realm. Demonic forces are sent through the air waves and affect our minds. As I sit here trying to write, I'm in a battle. The devil does not want me to get the truth out to people. I refuse to submit to the fear that the evil people are throwing at me daily. They track my e-mail, my phone, and everywhere I go. I have been harassed continually by them since I got free. They have investigators who know where I'm at 24/7, and they send demonic attacks against me continually. I refuse to back down, though. I have been repeatedly given a mandate from Papa God to share the truth of what happened to me so that other people will be set free. Also, so that people will be aware of how the evil people attack and how to fight them. You may not see the effect of their work now, but they are planning and plotting behind the scenes to bring you down and to take away all of your freedom.

Chapter 12

Their Threats

"For those who are evil will be destroyed, but those who hope in the LORD will inherit the land." Psalms 37:9

I was used as a human shield from conception to protect the evil people from being exposed. They worked continually to put in place lie after lie to make me responsible for them. A particular ritual that was detailed and extensive was meant to remind me continually that if I ever exposed the Illuminati, they would torture my brothers. They hooked up my brothers to electrodes and began to electrocute them. As they were doing this, my brothers were screaming nonstop for me to rescue them. I was ripped inside with despair because I couldn't help them. There were loud speakers in the room, and the evil people said that God was speaking through the loud speakers. He said that I was going to hell because I wasn't rescuing my brothers. God said that I was evil and that my programmers couldn't rescue them, because He wasn't going to rescue them. God wanted to expose me as evil. The programmers were in a room, and they had electrodes on them. They began to flop around and act like they were being tortured, because they told me to flip the switch to save my brothers. Then they began to laugh and say they tricked me. I genuinely thought that they were being tortured and that I was saving my brothers, but they said, "See, you're always trying to destroy us." "Honor your father and mother, and you shall have long life." They would quote this over and over. They said since I didn't honor them, I wouldn't have long life, and I would go to hell. Then they brought a man dressed up like Jesus into the room. They made me put electrodes on him and flip the switch. He pretended to be shocked; then he laughed. I heard what I thought was God over the loud speaker continually telling me that I was evil and that I was going to hell. I told the programmer who was pretending to be Jesus that I hated him and I didn't want him because he was torturing me and my brothers. During my ministry time after being set free, Honest Jesus showed me that He hadn't rejected me, and that He was not mad at me. He understood why I didn't want that man and that He wasn't like the evil people. Papa God understood my anger toward Him because I had been so tortured around Him. As the ritual went on, they brought in a man dressed as the devil. He took my programmers into another room. Then I heard horrible excruciating screams that I thought were my programmers. I thought it was my fault that they went to hell and were being tortured, because I had not been good enough it forced God to judge them. At that time, they took me and put me on the "council." They said if I "honored my father and mother," I would always be good. I sat on a council that condemned all people to death; they were burned alive in front of me. I had no way out. I thought I was getting to stop doing evil by sitting on the council and "honoring my father and mother," but it was just another trick.

There is a demonic baton that is passed from the Illuminati leader I was speaking about earlier to each of the programmers. The baton is passed through the electrical system, through TV, phones, radios, and computers. There are grid systems in place with each survivor, electrical implants put in their skin. This allows them to be tracked continually and electrical impulses pushed through their bodies to trigger what they are programmed to do. The grid systems are also connected to all financial systems of wealth. This grid system allows the evil people to send demonic spirits to steal all financial provision from Christians who don't take their authority over what Papa God has given them. When the programmers implant the electrodes into the victim's skin, they take DNA from each of the victims at the same time. They do a ritual where they call in territorial spirits of the past and present and insert the DNA within a robot. Then all victims are told they are a robot. So from our movement to our speech, we believe we are a robot, and we are trained to act like a robot. Then during corporate rituals, the robots that Illuminati are building are called to life with the demonic DNA. The demons wrap around the DNA, and cause a counterfeit of humanity. This is showing up in our culture today, in the life-like sex robots, just do a quick google search. Another example is the robot Sophia that has just been given citizenship by Saudi Arabia. These type of clones and robots have been around for a while. The Illuminati has just been in the process of desensitizing people so that they can bring them into our everyday life. Satan and his children try to pervert and twist all of Papa God's pure creations. There are biologists, chemists, scientists working around the clock to pervert Papa God's creations. Literally, taking the faces off human beings and trying to get them to adhere to the robot. Victims are tormented deliberately to be constantly afraid that there will be a robot out there that looks like them that ends up doing evil things. Then they will be blamed for the evil that happens. Artificial intelligence has been around a long time. They are now just beginning to share some of what they are doing behind the scenes. The reason they are now starting to share some of their evil is they have so desensitized people through TV, movies, and video games to believe that all of this is harmless and pretend. There is insidious evil behind all artificial intelligence and cloning. The military has been infiltrated with the Illuminati elite who have poured billions of dollars into creating robots that are programmed to destroy at the time the evil people activate them. This is called the black awakening.

The man who was forced to pose as my older brother was sent to North Carolina. I began to remember things that they made him do to me. It wasn't his fault. He was being forced to have sex with me and hurt me. The programmers told him that I hated and blamed him. They did not want anything else to surface, so they sent him away. I was distraught that they were going to kill him because of me. The programmers said, "That's what happens when you tell. You're going to end up alone. You're evil." North Carolina was supposed to be the state you went to when you got "perfect enough." There is a *Wizard of Oz* park. They took me to North Carolina and showed me what would happen if I ever told people about them. They gruesomely tortured a person by removing a person's face and placing it on another person, and they forced me to watch the movie *Face Off* to pretend like it didn't happen. They created intense fear and confusion by saying repeatedly, "How did I know who anybody was?" They said that they had switched everybody's face. So I could say someone had done bad things to me, and really they didn't. I would never know who they really are. They told me that they would replace my face with someone else's, and then no person would know where I was and what I was doing. I would be alone and would go crazy. Then they would put me back in the hospital. I was terrified every moment of every day. We stayed in a hotel in North Carolina, and the programming was continually breaking down. I screamed when they were hurting me. A police officer went to our room and asked if there was anybody screaming. They said no, and the police officer left. The police officer assumed that things were fine because we looked like a normal family.

I was forced to start giving a fake "testimony" by speaking at different events that were infiltrated by programmers. Some of the events were at churches that had Illuminati posing as pastors, and the Gideon's. I was forced to say that the pastor they were framing ritualized and raped me. I was made to use the scripture Psalm 18 and Psalm 40. Psalm 40:2 says, "He lifted me out of the slimy pit, out of the mud and mire." My programmers used to keep me in a deep water well beside the house, and they said I should be grateful to them because they got me out of there. If I refused to say that the pastor abused me, they would put me back in the well by myself. I hated being alone in that well. There were rats that I knew could eat people, because I had seen that happen. There were insects that crawled all over me. I was living a horror story, and I didn't see any way out. So I told people that the pastor had abused me, not them. I was not consciously doing this. All the different parts of my mind had blocked things completely out of my memory. The other scripture they made me quote was Psalm 18, which says, "The Lord is my rock, my fortress and my deliverer; my God is my rock, in whom I take refuge, my shield, and the horn of my salvation, my stronghold. I called to the Lord, who is worthy of praise, and I have been saved from my enemies. The cords of death entangled me; the torrents of destruction overwhelmed me. The cords of the grave coiled around me; the snares of death confronted me. In my distress I called to the Lord; I cried to my God for help. From his temple, he heard my voice." The evil people took ropes and tied them around my neck and said that since he (the male programmer) was God, I had to cry out to him to rescue me. I was told that if I ever told anybody about what they had done to me, they would send me back to the hospital. They would remind me over and over they were protecting people from me, so I should be grateful to them.

I was truly gifted from Papa God with the gift of speaking. The programmers used this genuine gift from Papa God as leverage to keep me bound with them. I was in too deep they said, and nobody would ever believe me after I gave the testimony that the pastor had done the abuse. There were programmers at each place I spoke to intimidate me. They were there to see the programming in action. They were also there to program me more so that I would never expose them. This was so confusing, because I genuinely loved my speaking ability. I thought that I really must like being evil, and I hated myself more for having a gift in speaking. Down at the core of my being in the unconscious mind, I knew that the pastor was innocent and my programmers were getting away with hideous evil. I had no idea how to get free; I was trapped. I had been told over an over that I was stupid, dumb, and that I wasn't good at anything except sex. According to everything I had been told, I was only good at sex, because God had made me to have sex and didn't give me anything else as a gift. My mind was so confused; I felt guilty and evil every second of every day.

The evil people see all the gifts that are spiritually given to the victims by Papa God, and they pervert those on purpose. The reason they do this is the gift is powerful in showing victims their identity in Papa God. The enemy fights hard to destroy and pervert all gifts and talent given to us by Papa God. For example, I was able to put clothes together fashionably in a very artistic way. The programmers took a victim and cut them up in pieces. They said that that's why I had that gift; then I had to put all of the pieces of the people back together. So every time that I had to put an outfit together for the people I was sold to, I thought of that, and I felt evil for having that gift. I thought all gifts were evil. I was told over and over, "You can only be good at what we say you can be good at, because you use everything for evil." After my rescue, during my healing, Papa God showed me as I was getting dressed one day how He put a beautiful outfit together for me to wear, down to every detail. He was showing me that He created that gift, and it was not evil. He shared that He is creative, and, therefore, we are creative. He has a beautiful detailed woven plan for each of us, even if we can't see the plan.

Around this time, I was taken to a Benny Hinn conference in New York by the female programmer. New York is considered the final destination for victims. It is where the biggest corporate Illuminati rituals are done. They gather all of the victims together to get them linked corporately. New York stands for slavery for victims. The Illuminati torture and train us to believe it stands for the freedom for victims. New York is where we are forced to start Illuminati war on the US and take down the Christians. Each of us has been trained as mind-controlled soldiers, and do a job that we have been programmed to do at the end. The battle is really for our minds. If they can control our minds, they will be in control of all of what we do. These jobs are the only way we are told we can earn freedom. Killing a Christian for us means our bloodline will be transformed to a pure bloodline. This destroys the curse that God put on us and gives us the ability to be pure. The poem that represents the Statue of Liberty was used in the rituals. *"Give me your tired, your poor. Your huddled masses yearning to breathe free. The wretched refuse of your teeming shore. Send these, the homeless, tempest-tossed to me, I lift my lamp beside the golden door!"* If we allowed the Illuminati to own us, then we could earn our freedom. They told us that in the end there will be bombings at all of the landmarks in New York, and there will be concentration camps set up. There were programmers at the conference; they recorded all of the preaching and used them in the rituals. They dressed up to look like the speakers and tortured me and many other victims to keep us from believing what the preachers were saying.

The Illuminati is constantly targeting ministries. They had a list of ministries that minister to Satanic ritual abuse survivors that they wanted to bring down. They send victims to these ministries to discredit them and destroy the ministry against their wills. They take at least a year and begin to program us to destroy the ministry. My programmers targeted a ministry that was working with SRA victims and getting some results. They got all of the Christian ministry's music, teaching materials, pictures, and all their friends and ministry partners names, and sent demons to scan them. This means that the demons find out about all of their weaknesses, wounds, and issues, and relay them back to the Illuminati. I began being tortured and programmed around them a year before they sent me there. They also sent three other victims at the same time so they could pit us against each other. They ritualized all of us together to make sure that we were programmed against each other sufficiently. Also, to make sure we didn't trust each other. Each of us were sent with the agenda to take down the ministry. We did not go there consciously knowing why were sent there; we were completely disassociated. I was told that the ministry couple was going to be taking over as my programmers. So even though they were loving and kind to me, I just thought that was an act. The evil people sent me under the disguise that they were a perfect loving family trying to get their daughter the healing she needed. After twenty-five years of torture and rape, never having anything else, I thought that this was all that would ever happen to me. They told me if I went there and worked for seven years, I would be allowed to get married. If I got married, I could genuinely be free, because the man who was my husband would be my controller, and I wouldn't have to keep being tortured. This was all a lie, of course. But I believed that this was my only way out and the only way I would be chosen.

Chapter 13

A Setup

> "In his arrogance the wicked man hunts down the weak, who are caught in the schemes he devises. He boasts about the cravings of his heart; he blesses the greedy and reviles the LORD. In his pride the wicked man does not seek him; in all his thoughts there is no room for God. His ways are always prosperous; your laws are rejected by him; he sneers at all his enemies. He says to himself, "Nothing will ever shake me." He swears, "No one will ever do me harm." His mouth is full of lies and threats; trouble and evil are under his tongue. He lies in wait near the villages; from ambush he murders the innocent. His eyes watch in secret for his victims; like a lion in cover he lies in wait. He lies in wait to catch the helpless; he catches the helpless and drags them off in his net." Psalms 10:2-10

As I began to get ministry from this couple, I began to remember specific details of what happened to me. They never asked me any questions about the abuse or told me what they thought happened. They just asked Papa God to heal me and show me the truth. I didn't remember the programmers' faces, but the genuine Holy Spirit kept revealing memories, and each time I got healing, I started to see the faces clearer. There were parts that were seeing the truth and parts that were still in denial, so I kept getting tortured and raped by the programmers during this time. It's difficult for people to understand why I kept going back. The reality is that after twenty-five years of the type of torture I went through, I didn't have any idea that there was anything different. I had been deliberately divided in my mind by the programmers. I had thousands of parts within my mind that were still trying to get free and see the truth. So day by day, I would get truth from Papa God, and I would continue to be ritualized by the evil people. I had no idea that I could actually be free, or *that* anybody would want me to be free. I dearly loved this couple and their children, but I didn't trust them. I had been tortured and programmed about every detail of their life. I was being lied to about every single thing about them and what they did. They had set up people around this couple who were programmers as well. There was a church that was led by a victim, and there was a covenant and pact made to keep all of the victims quiet about what was planned. There were victims on the worship team, and there was a programmer on the worship team. He would stare at us while we sang. He was involved in all of the military programming and the Jewish programming. He would do all of the torture to cover up and distort the core as much as possible the core knew who he was. When I mention the core, I'm talking about the part of my being that knew everything—all of the torture, rape, and abuse I went through. The main objective of the programmer was to bury the core. This included the monarch programming that was done in underground tunnels, and it was the deepest level of programming. They never wanted this information to be recovered. They tried to bury the core by making us so terrified of ourselves that we would never allow those memories to surface. There was a Judas program to keep us from ever telling the truth about what we were going through; if we did, we would be Judas. This meant that we would be responsible for the death and torture of the other victims. The programmer in the church raped us and would take us out to eat after church. The food we ate were used in the rituals. The cheese sauce was used as a representative of the ejaculation. And this reminded us that we were whores. He had cameras all over his house. His wife was a victim. He was connected to all of the German military programmers. He had a daughter who was tortured with me and that they put a competition between us. They switched our children and made us earn them back. If I pretended like the programmer wasn't evil, I would get my children back.

There was a corporate ritual done on the day we were all sent to Kentucky to take down the ministry. It was done on the night of the conference that the Christian couple was leading. The programmers for all the women were sent there and were involved in the ritual. My programmer was at the conference, and she stayed there when I was getting ministry from the couple. Programmers who were posing as ministers from Neil Anderson's Freedom in Christ were also there to destroy this ministry. Every time I got ministry from the innocent Christian couple, I was tortured around them and around the way that they did ministry. I was told that the couple was trying to get to the core of who I was, to expose how evil I was. The evil people told me that their ministry was to reveal all of the evil I did so that people would know about it. Reality was that they were asking the genuine Holy Spirit to reveal the lies I believed and to bring truth. I was told lies about every aspect of the ministry that was just trying to help me.

The programmers' main strategy was to force me to say they were perfect, and if I did not say they were perfect I would be exposed as evil. They were continually playing games with my mind. The Christian couple innocently watched a movie called *The Game*, and recommended I watch it. They did not know that I had been tortured to believe that my life was a game. In this movie, just like the movie *The Truman Show*, everybody knew what was going on but the main character. The main objective like the programming I went through was to manipulate and confuse to the point they would not be able to discern between reality and the game.

There was another lady who was doing the same type of ministry that was genuinely trying to help me. She was friends with the Christian couple. My programmer took me to many ministry sessions with her, and then I ended up living with her and her family. My programmers targeted her and her family. I loved this family very much, but I was tortured to believe they were setting me up too. They sent jealousy demons to cause conflict in the house between her daughters and me. I thought I was the "evil one." The programmers told me that I was the mixed breed in their house. They put poison in the dog's food, and he got really sick. The female programmer brought brownies that had metal in them, and they made the Christian lady get sick. I was too terrified to allow the truth to start to surface, because my programmers said that they would kill these people and then say I did it. I was still getting tortured and raped by my programmers while I stayed at this family's house. I would go for walks on their large property and have to meet the programmers. I would get raped to remind me that I was not allowed to talk about anything other than what they told me I could. There were denial parts of my mind that were functioning for me. I had no memory of what was going on in the present. I had many religious programs working. I would read the Bible all the time, because if I read the Bible, it would remind me of how evil I was. The programmers told me the "sons of Belial" in the Bible refers to me. I ended up moving out of their house because I was still in major denial about my programmers and ended up in an apartment. There was a victim, a man who was assigned to me with a name that resembled "demon," and he had been friends with that family for many years. He was with me all the time, and the evil people ritualized us together to bury the truth about my programmers.

I kept getting ministry, and Papa God kept bringing deeper memories. My memories were never coerced or implied by anyone; all of my memories were brought out by the Holy Spirit. Finally, the denial wall broke in some of my parts, and I was able to see all of the memories and who they were linked to, and some of my parts began seeing who my programmers really were. I was put in a job as a gymnastics instructor with another victim. We were tortured in the gymnastics building. It was a large old building with an upstairs, so there was a lot of room, and noise could not be heard easily. Papa God began bringing back memories of what happened in the gymnastics job, so I quit that. I then moved in with the Christian couple. They gave me a place to live, a job, a car, and food. They prayed for me and ministered to me on a regular basis. Other programmers were put in place all around this couple to bring them down. They had no idea what was going on. The other victims that were sent to take down the ministry were there too. There was still great torment and confusion in my mind unconsciously of whether the Christian couple were evil like my programmers had tortured me to believe. I continued to get ritualized at night by coded messages or through the programmers they set up in that town. I would get a phone call or a sign or symbol in front of me to make me go to the rituals. I still was unconscious of the rituals that were going on and of the fact that I was still under my programmers control.

I moved into a house with a girl who was sent with me to destroy the ministry. This was planned, because the Illuminati had programmed us against each other severely. She was very harsh, angry, and mean on the outside. And I was the person who was kind, quiet, and timid on the outside. In the rituals, she was timid and quiet, and I was the angry, mean person. My part that was trained to be an animal was out in the rituals. I had to growl and intimidate, or people would be killed. She had to be quiet and timid. They told each of us that it was our fault the other person got tortured. So we didn't trust each other in any way. We kept the programs and systems going to protect ourselves and other people. When we looked at each other, we saw what we hated about ourselves. It was a constant reminder. Then our programmers brought a man whom we had to share to this town. I was going to be allowed to marry the man in the natural, and she was allowed to marry him in the ritual life. This made our hate and competition even greater. He was our "Jacob," and we took turns being Leah and Rachel. If we followed through with the plan against the Christian couple, we would get the man; that would give us freedom all the time, and he would be our husband. This meant to us that we would not do evil ever again, and we would be controlled. And it also meant that we wouldn't have to be tortured and tormented for the rest of our life.

The Illuminati targeted the children of the people who were ministering to us and sent victims to be married to their children. This way, they could control their ability to expose the truth about them. There were victims and programmers who were placed around the Christian couple within their church so that I would go to their homes and be ritualized, but the Christian couple wouldn't have any idea. I just thought this was normal and that everybody was involved in torturing me. I thought that the Christian couple were my new programmers and that they had set up for me to go to be programmed somewhere else. But the reality was that they had no idea what was really going on.

I was put in a job as a case manager at a company, and the girl I was living with was put in a job as a support specialist who took the kids to outings at the same company. This was another setup by the Illuminati. We had to go into homes and spend time with children. Specific child victims were chosen; the evil people took pictures raping us and forcing us to have to do sexual things with the children. We had no choice, but the programmers said it was our fault, and they said that they would take the pictures to police and put us away forever if we told anybody. There were already police who were involved with the rituals. There was also a judge who was a programmer. We were terrified to tell anybody. They would make us bond with the children and teenagers and then force us to hurt them, and we had no way out. In the job I was put in, I had to put children into hospitals if the judge (programmer) ordered it. Then I would have to visit the hospital and get ritualized with the children. There was a hospital in Kentucky that had a whole room just dedicated to *Wizard of Oz* programming.

No matter how much the Christian couple gave me, I still couldn't see that I was loved. They gave me Christmas presents, birthday presents, and holidays; took us on trips; and took me out to eat. They shared their family time with me and spent countless hours of ministry with me. Their children were so kind to me and gave me kind notes and played like little kids with me. I had been trained that if people didn't say they were my father and mother, then that meant they were against me, and wanted me to be a mixed breed. This meant to me that they were not willing to share their pure bloodline. The evil people used this to cause me to never let the unconscious into the conscious—for the parts of my mind that knew the truth to stay hidden.

The "Jacob" victim whom the programmers sent for the final plan against this ministry had just recently gotten out of jail (where he was being tortured). He was sent to where I was to be my new handler and cult chosen husband. I was given a ring that was a "princess" cut for the perfect princess programming. He asked me to marry him by the river next to the bridge. This meant that he was the bridge to freedom for me. He and his sister were victims, and their father had married a victim twice. Their dad had no idea that his children were victims. He was involved in doing Christian ministry also, and he ministered to me some. This was confusing, because the evil people had tortured me around him. The evil people said that he was working to expose that I wasn't good enough for his son. They would electrocute me over and over and say, "What did you do?" So when I would be in a ministry session and he would ask, "What did you do?" I thought he was saying that I was evil. I would shut down and not allow healing to happen.

Chapter 14

Journey to Freedom

"I believe that in the end the truth will conquer." John Wycliffe

At this point in my story, I'm going to walk you through step by step on how I got free—starting with the time I faced the people who set me up and who had tried to make me to destroy the Christian couple.

While walking into the police department, meeting face-to-face with people who wanted to destroy me and the people I cared about, I felt terror—terror for what they might do to me, and even more for what they might make me do.

I was afraid of going into the denial programming, with all of the past thirty-one years of being brainwashed, afraid that the mind control would be too strong and I would be tricked again. The unconscious was flooding through into the conscious, and it was excruciating, but it was freeing at the same time. I see the kindness of Papa God in giving us the ability to block out certain things that are too traumatic for our minds. Unfortunately, the evil people had deliberately used that defense mechanism intended to shield us from traumatic events, as a curse that was used against me to keep me in bondage to them. They deliberately forced my mind to forget and break off into pieces to endure the pain that they inflicted.

Every day since I had escaped and ran to get away from the evil people till today, I had spent day after day screaming, crying, and praying in my car for Papa God to show me the truth and rescue my mind from the hold that they had on me. Memory after memory had been flooding back, and with it was intense emotion.

On the way to the police department, I was searching my mind of anything that would be triggered and cause me to be under their control. I was afraid they would access some part of my mind that was not yet free from their control. I had gotten so much freedom in my mind over the seven years of ministry I had received from the Christian couple, and then God gave me a window of opportunity to get physically free.

Standing in the presence of my enemies, I was afraid, but most of all, I felt peace knowing that I was doing the most loving thing I could do. I was laying down my life to protect my friends. "Greater love has no one than this: to lay down one's life for one's friends" (John 15:13).

Papa God had it all planned in a way that this day is my last day in the *40 Days of Purpose* book I was reading. Just like when the Israelites walked out of Egypt, in the midst of the Egyptians, I was walking out of slavery in the midst of my abusers and captors. It reminded me of the scripture "And Elisha prayed, 'Open his eyes, LORD, so that he may see.' Then the LORD opened the servant's eyes, and he looked and saw the hills full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha" (2 Kings 6:17). The minister and friend I was now laying my life down for reminded me that with God my adversaries are nothing before me. Papa God and I outnumbered them!

The detective who had participated in the satanic rituals and abuse was there, and he took my phone from me. He was checking to see if there was any recording device on me. He had a lot to lose, so he couldn't have me taping anything that could incriminate him.

I went into a room with two people, a detective, and a police officer, each who had raped, tortured, and abused me. Even the judge in this town was one of my abusers. They were doing everything they could do to trick, control, manipulate, and cause me to break. They kept questioning me, trying to get me to go into the satanic ritual part of the abuse so they could discredit me and try to make me to look crazy. Papa God gave me insight, so I would not fall for their tricks.

The cards were stacked completely against me, but something reverberated inside my being: with Papa God, I was the majority. I didn't care if I was going to get into trouble or if I was going to be hurt, I just knew I had to tell the truth. I had determined in my heart that I would tell the truth no matter the consequences. So I testified to the truth of what my programmers had done to me—that he had raped me, as he had every day of my life. I told this to the police officer and detective who were involved in the entire setup. This was the last thing they expected me to say; they thought I was going to follow the plan. The hold they once had on my mind wasn't there anymore. Without the mind control, they could not do anything to me.

They were trying to torment me to make me terrified that I would be put in jail for not saying what they wanted me to say. Jail represented hell to me, I had been put in many cages, and I knew what could happen if they put me there. I had already had the rape kit completed on me, with the same police officer in the room who was interrogating me. I said the same thing the day when the rape testing had been done—that the evil people raped me. The police officer was pretending like I had never stated that truth, that the programmer had raped me. I plainly stated that he had raped me, and I did not waver in anyway.

There was false evidence as well. There was DNA that pointed to the Christian minister who had rescued me as the criminal. That was the part of the plan that I did follow through with. I got the DNA from the Christian couple's house, and I took it to the evil people. I couldn't bear the thought of what they had told me would happen if I didn't follow through with their plan. I would be alone, and all of the evil in me would be available for everyone to see. I would kill people and torture people all the time, for all eternity. And there would be no one there to control me, no one there to keep me from being evil.

I had been trained all my life that I would get a husband who would be with me every second and would keep me from being evil. That was my only way out of all of this. If I didn't follow through with their plan, I wouldn't get to marry him, and I would lose what I thought was the only way out. If I didn't follow through with getting the evidence, I would have to hurt the Christian couple's children. I could not bear the thought of that. Even death was not an option they said. Death for me was not an option, because I never would die. I had been programmed over and over that I would just keep doing the evil things they trained me to do, so that is why I never got around to killing myself.

People ask me why I didn't kill myself during all of this; the cult ensures that we do not kill ourselves. They make death seem like an option that is even worse than living. They set up rooms that they torture us in and called it hell, and told us what happens to people who kill themselves.

The plan for seven years had been that I was sent to this ministry by the evil people to destroy and take down the ministry and people who ran the ministry. They prepared me long before I was sent there. When the seven years of work was over that the evil people sent us there for. They got the book the couple had written, their training manual, and did rituals around the material in the book. They took the couple's picture, forced me to look at it, and raped me while saying that the couple had told them to do it. They played their music while they were torturing me. They demanded that we say the man who genuinely ministered to us and had done so much for us had raped us. Still at this point, we were still in denial, and not consciously aware of what we were doing. I had no idea in the conscious realm that I was trying to set up a man. After being tortured beyond what is humanly imaginable and threatened to be forced to molest his children in order for them to stay alive, I went to the Christian couple's house and got a pair of underwear to get DNA from the man. I gave the underwear to the Illuminati, and was in the fight of my life. I was put in a room with the detective, my programmers, the judge, and the police who were involved. They brought out every picture that they had taken of me and said that I would be sent to jail where I would have no person to control me. I would be forced to kill, torture, and molest children, including their children, for the rest of my life. I was still under the programmers' mind control. I told the Christian couple's family member I was raped by the programmer, and then the police who was involved showed up to do a rape kit. They did a rape kit. I told them specifically that my programmer raped me. But they did not allow that to be written down. I had finally gotten a revelation of what genuine love is. I wasn't rejected by the Christian couple after all I had been forced to do. They genuinely accepted me still. That did something huge in my system. I had never in my life been accepted, and especially if I had made a mistake. I had to be perfect every second; and even when I performed perfectly, I was tortured, raped, and rejected. This couple did not reject me even after the horrible mistake I made. That broke a huge denial wound in my life, and all of the memories started flooding in. I got by myself and screamed and cried and let all of the memories flood in. I chose to tell the truth. The programmers had raped me every day of my life, and the Christian man never raped me, not ever! At this point, I knew I had to get away from all of the evil that had been set up to destroy me in that town. The girl I lived with was still going to rituals, and she was with the programmers. So I had to get out of there. I asked Papa God where to go, and He showed me a place. I moved by myself without telling anybody where I was going. I didn't speak to anybody, because I was so afraid of being tricked. I spent all of my time in my car screaming and looking at all of the memories that kept surfacing. I was tormented that maybe I was doing evil or that maybe I wasn't conscious that I was still going back to my programmers. I was in terror constantly. This is what the evil people controlled me with—fear and terror—constantly. I had no idea how to do things, like go grocery shopping. When I went anywhere, I was always looking around wondering who was watching me and when they would show up and destroy me. The truth now was that I was not controlled anymore in my mind, so they had no way to get to me any longer. It was so horribly difficult to believe that I was free. I had always believed there was no way out of the horror that I endured. Another way they tortured me for decades was to make me think I was never aware of anything that I did from minute to minute. So this fear was a huge mountain to climb. But day by day, memory by memory, I stepped further into healing. A song that meant so much to me while I was going through all of that was "Voice of Truth," by Casting Crowns. He was the Voice of Truth, after all of the lies I had been told every second, of every day, for all of my life. His Voice of Truth was winning, and I was getting free in my mind! Another thing I held onto at that time was a poem given to me by the Christian couple who helped me get free. It was by Roy Lessin: "Just think you're here not by chance, but by God's choosing. His Hand formed you and made you the person you are. He compares you to no one else-you are one of a kind. You lack nothing that His grace can't give you. He has allowed you to be here, at this time in history, to fulfill His special purpose for this generation."

The evil people told me that the Christian couple were going to take over programming and controlling me. They had used the movie *Truman Show* as a torture ritual movie, saying that the couple they were sending me to were going to be the people who were in the control tower in the movie.

They would be controlling every detail of my life now according to my programmers. If you watch this movie, it is a mind-control movie. He lives a fake life, and everybody around him are in on it, except he is unaware of what is really going on. I just thought that these were my new "controllers," the new people who would train me to be good enough. This had happened many times before, so I didn't think this would be any different.

The evil people targeted this ministry because the ministry was making significant headway with rescuing people from satanic ritual abuse. The people who ran that ministry had only been loving and kind to me; they never hurt me. They had ministered to me, given me a place to live, a car, a job, and food to eat. I had never been loved or cared for by anyone in my life, so they were gradually bit by bit crumbling the wall that the evil people had put up inside my mind.

The Illuminati officials said they had already talked to the other victims, making me think they had given them information about the Christian couple. The police officer knew where I lived now. She knew I had just gotten a job. They had been watching me. I had been so scared that I had not gone out of the house or been around people unless I absolutely had to because of work.

They were trying to intimidate me. But I knew the setup, and I showed them I would not be their slave any longer. I told them the truth that I had gotten the DNA from the couple's house, and I had planted it so that he would be made responsible for the rape. They were pushing me to talk to reveal something that would give them something to destroy me with, so they could try and make me sound crazy in case I tried to expose them.

Just like Psalms 57:6 says, "They spread a net for my feet—I was bowed down in distress. They dug a pit in my path—but they have fallen into it themselves." They could not trap me this time. I would not go there with them. I would not fall for their traps. Papa God was with me, and He was giving me insight and strength.

I told the police officer and the detective I was afraid of the real person who had raped me, the programmer. He raped me, and he was the person, as well as the female programmer, who had abused and tortured me all these years. Even today, I want to deny the truth that I could go through with something so heinous and hurtful. That I would be willing to take a person's DNA and destroy them with it is unconscionable, especially a person who had only given me love and the possibility of genuine life.

I have no excuses that are valid. I only have the reality of the thirty years of the fear, torture, and torment of the evil people that drove me to it. I only wanted to be a decent person, and the irony was that when I finally admitted to the most hideous thing I had ever done, is when I finally saw that I wasn't evil at all. I was free and capable of standing up for truth even in the face of a death sentence.

I was not a hero. I am a flawed human being in need of a Savior. He rescued me. The same Savior still rescues me every day from my horrible memories. As I write this, many emotions, pain, and hurt surfaces; but I choose to focus on how Papa God is going to use this book to rescue many people, and raise up an army of people who will fight to set the captives free.

Each of us are born with a gift of choice, which God gave. On a daily basis, we can decide whether to choose Jesus or not. Millions of people are robbed of choice. They are enslaved and are given no choices. I was thirty-one years old when finally, for the first time ever, I was given a choice, and I had finally experienced genuine unconditional love. I was free. The ministry couple did not reject me, even after knowing all of the plans of the evil people that I had gone there with to destroy them. They chose to love me and see that I was doing the very best I could at that time. When they forgave me, I was changed. I made a decision to tell the truth no matter what.

I could be free. Jesus wanted me free. Even after all I had done, this couple wanted me to be free. So I told the truth. I told the truth even though I was petrified of myself and of what they would do to me. When Jesus "passes by," we can let him pass by. Or we can reach out and take the healing He has to offer us. Sometimes, this will be excruciatingly painful, but the pain will be worth it. Because if we don't reach out, we will live in a world of denial, lies, and continual pain for the rest of our lives. At the end of John 8, it is written that the Jews rejected the truth about Jesus being the Son of God. As the Jews took up stones to throw at Jesus, "Jesus hid Himself and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so 'passed by.'" The Jews missed out on getting to know Jesus in a special way. He was their opportunity for freedom. He is still holding out His hand to and bringing the Jews to Himself, His chosen people. His promises will be fulfilled to them.

Chapter 15

Set Free

"Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom." 2 Corinthians 3:17

Jesus passed by the evil people at a point in their life. They knew the Bible. They knew who Jesus was. Yet they willfully chose to reject Jesus. They chose power, money, pride, and evil instead. They gave their entire beings over to Satan, and there was no limit to the evil they were capable of. They had asked the demons to indwell and live within them and for Satan to take their body and use it however he wanted to.

In John 9, Jesus "passed by" a man who was blind since birth. The man chose to allow Jesus to heal him, and he had a personal experience of healing and freedom with Jesus. The Pharisees chose not to believe in Jesus. Papa God showed me that He was and still is all about choices. He would never force anybody to follow Him. Even salvation is a choice. He will not force anybody to go to heaven. He is not an evil God who sends people to hell. He is a kind God who gives every single person a choice on whether they want to go to heaven or not. He is the Way, the Truth, and the Life.

I continue to get more and more insights from John 8 and 9. I thought I was through with all of the revelation I could get from this, but then Papa God said, "Go back there." This shows me the immense amount of treasures in the Word. I always was tortured to read the Bible, because they said it was written to make me remember how evil I was. The Bible for victims is like the electric chair, because of the torture we endured every time when it was read. The scriptures were read at the rituals and twisted to mean whatever they wanted them to mean. It was just like when Satan used the scripture to tempt and torment Jesus in the wilderness. If condemnation and shame are felt and a wrong image of Jesus is given by the Scripture, it is not the Spirit of God that is unfolding before for us.

If you look at John 9, for example, and you put all of the emphasis on us to make right choices to "see" Jesus as He passes by, we miss the reality that it says, "He saw us first." He did not only see us in the physical realm; He also saw our pain, our hurt, our deepest feelings. He has felt what we felt, because He was there, and He saw all that we experienced and experienced it with us. Jesus experienced the pain and the shame that the blind man felt when people judged him. The people said that the blind man did something to cause the blindness that he was born with. Jesus sincerely wanted to take the blindness away. Jesus wanted to take the sting of the rejection the blind man felt as people judged and labeled him. Jesus cares, and He wants to heal us. Today, as I listened to the pastor speak at church, he was talking about Jesus "passing by" the woman with the issue of blood. Luke 8:40–48 says, "Jesus was on His way to heal Jairus daughter. When the crowd 'pressed in' to get to Jesus." Jesus is a gentleman. He will not force anybody to have a relationship with Him, but He gives us opportunity after opportunity to press in and see His face and His healing. The reason He wants us to press in is not so that He will get something. He always genuinely wants to give us something. He is always available to us. He passes by to remind us of that. The lady with the issue of blood knew that she could touch Him and be healed. He didn't even have to touch her. "Then the woman, seeing that she could not go unnoticed, came trembling and fell at his feet. In the presence of all the people, she told why she had touched him and how she had been instantly healed. Then he said to her, 'Daughter, your faith has healed you. Go in peace.'" She testified of her wounds and how Jesus had healed her in the presence of people. Our testimony of what Jesus has done in our life as we partner with him is powerful!

I found a church that the Christian couple knew of and moved there. I genuinely needed a church in this new town. I went to church with terror filling my mind, and I left without speaking to anybody. I ended up going to a Sunday school class with people who were so kind, but I was still so afraid. I was about one hundred pounds. Because I was so afraid all the time, I couldn't eat. I chose to genuinely trust Papa God, and I went to eat with a couple from that church. I took a few bites of food; then I got in my car to go, and I threw up all over the car because of the stress and fear.

I kept making tiny steps to believe that I was free. This battle was for my mind. One layer at a time, I began to get the truth that I needed. I ended up being friends with that couple who took me to lunch and her sister. They were very kind. They provided food through our Sunday school class and helped me find a job. There were so many times that Papa God took care of me! I became so close to the Christian couple and their children, and I missed them so much! I had lost my genuine family, the only thing close to a family that I had ever had. Papa God began bringing people who weren't evil to replace all that I lost. There were so many times I was so lonely, and I cried to Papa God, and then a person would ask me to go eat with them. Then I would keep asking God if the person could be trusted or not. I was terrified of trusting anybody, and I didn't even trust Papa God. Many times, a person at church or Sunday school would give me exactly what I needed to buy my groceries. I had a check show up in the mail that covered my rent. I would not have anything to eat for lunch, and someone at work who didn't know that I was hungry would bring lunch in for me.

Another couple in Sunday school class, asked me to spend time with them. I was so scared of the possibility of the people who tried to approach me, might be evil. That day, the pastor of the church I went attended, spoke about geese and how they fly in a V formation, which is to allow for some other goose to take over when the leader gets tired. Geese can fly 71% percent farther with each other. I genuinely felt this was the Holy Spirit telling me that I needed people. I went over to the couple's house that day, and geese flew over the house just as I was about to go in. I cried. This was Papa God's sign that I didn't have to be afraid. They took me in as family, and I lived with them for a while. They included me like family. I spent holidays with them and their relatives. She and her sister were big influences in my healing, and we all were growing together in spiritual things. Her little girl asked me one day, "Do you have a mama?" I said no. She had a little battery-powered pink VW Beetle. She said, "Well, I would have picked you up in my VW Beetle, and you could be my family." Amazing how children can say just what Papa God needs us to hear. Children are safe, and they are pure, so He ministers through them often.

This family fed me, prayed for me, and just provided a secure place for me to be. During this time, I was working through memories daily by myself, and a man at work told me about someone who did ministry and moved there from Florida. I remember Papa God showing me a vision of Honest Jesus (I began calling Jesus "Honest Jesus" because He doesn't lie), and Honest Jesus was saying this was the person I had prayed for to minister to me. I prayed for somebody to minister to me because I was dealing with all of this trauma and mind control by myself. When I first met with him and his wife, I saw his face like a demon. The devil and Illuminati did not want me to meet this man. He was doing great work of healing for Papa God. He began to minister to me, and I began to have genuine peace a step at a time. Lie after lie was being destroyed, and truth was being brought. Papa God spoke to this man to be my spiritual papa. I had never had a man who took the role of papa in my life. He was a great example of what having a papa does for your life. There were so many revelations I got from Papa God by having a spiritual papa! Papa God showed me how my papa knew my voice and cry, and could pick me out of a crowd of people. Papa God is like that a million times over! My spiritual papa told me how proud he was of me; that ministered to me greatly!

I got an opportunity to go to India on a mission trip through Truth in Love ministry. I was scared, but I genuinely felt like Papa God was telling me to go. My spiritual papa and a team were going, so I felt secure. The finances for the trip poured in! I even had an elderly man pay for my haircut one day after hearing I was going on a mission trip. There was a two-week intensive all-day deliverance class that I would have an opportunity to go through. Before I went, I visited my spiritual papa's mentor and spiritual dad. He didn't speak and was in a nursing home. While I was there, he spoke! He said, "Meet them, greet them, and pray for them." That was my mission in India! Papa God provided all of the money for the trip. On the flight to India, memory after memory of the torture and rape on the flights that the Illuminati put me on started flooding back. When the plane started getting bumpy, I was terrified, because I remembered the things that happened on those flights. When I was little, they told me we were going to crash on the flights. They said this so I would vow to follow the Antichrist so I could raise the people from the dead that were on the plane when we crashed. They tricked me to do this so the Antichrist demons would have a legal right to be there.

When I got to India for our mission trip, I began to cry. I was terrified, and I didn't know why. I began having body memories, and the sights and smells of India began to bring back memory after memory of being taken there and tortured. When we were there, I began to feel movement like coils of a snake inside my stomach, intestines, jaw, hands, and feet. These were serpent spirits that were attacking me. They would coil up in my eyes and look like spirals going around and around, and they would try and take me demonically to different dimensions. Praying in tongues breaks the Morse code of the demons that are attacking people. I prayed a deliverance prayer, and Papa God made the demons go away. We took a train to get to our motel after getting off the plane. I was trafficked and ritualized on the train when I was a kid. They chained all of the children together on the train when I was taken to India as a child. They didn't let us eat, and we had to use the bathroom on ourselves. So I was in severe anxiety and terror as I was reliving this on my mission trip. It was an overnight train, so everyone went to sleep that was on my team. I was so scared I didn't sleep at all. I was miserable. The warfare of the territory was causing intense stomach and body pains. I got an eye infection that made my eyes turn completely blood red. This caused the memories about how I was tortured in India flood back. I was poked in my eyes with needles, and I was starved there. I had insects and rats that crawled all over me. There was a commander who was part of the police force there, and he tortured me and took over my programming. I had lice and scabies, and was treated like a dog.

When I was a child, the main programmers showed up and would dress me up, feed me, and sell me there in India. I was sold in all the different caste systems in India. If I made the programmers money, they would let me take a shower. There was always a price tag on every single basic human need I had. There was a white witch whom they worshiped in India, and she would kill the children and eat them if I didn't do what she said. I just wanted to rescue the children, but I couldn't. They said if I just pretended and got the attention of men, I would be allowed to have clothes. I didn't think I was going to survive this mission trip because of the flooding of memories every day. The love of Papa God was so kind. He brought little children to sit by me in India, and that healed my heart. We were outside during our deliverance and inner healing ministry time while in India. I took stickers and candy for the kids. Most of them had never had those things before. I was able to pray over all of the children. I will never forget that!

While the teaching and deliverance was happening in India, there were bugs everywhere, because the classes were outside at night. I was so angry, and upset because it reminded me of the bugs that the evil people would allow to crawl all over me. They would say, “Don’t move. Don’t blink. Stand still,” while the bugs were crawling all over me and biting me. If I moved, I got in trouble.

During the mission trip, I got major deliverance over all of the territorial demons in India. Papa God cut off the Illuminati serpents’ heads and shut the mouth of the lion, the devil. Papa God showed me that this deliverance broke chains off all the other victims as well. Before a deliverance time, there was a beautiful butterfly that flew over top all of the people. The class name was Transformations. Papa God was really transforming lives! By the end of the trip, I had genuinely fallen in love with the people of India. They were so honoring and loving. They sat our team at the front and gave us flowers. I met a lady from India who treated me like a daughter and loved me unconditionally. After my deliverance, she would wash my face from all of the crying, fix my hair, and pat my back. I had never had that before. I ended up going back to India two more times. I was asked to give my testimony in India about how Papa God rescued me. At the end of the deliverance, when we were sharing how we were healed. Honest Jesus showed me He was taking His sword and destroying the evil people and Satan. My spiritual papa was seeing me with a sword doing the same thing with Honest Jesus! It was so healing to share my testimony in a place where I had been tortured and raped as a child.

When I got back from India the last time I went, I gave my testimony at the church I attended here in America. Papa God knew how difficult this was for me because there was a programmer who went to the same church. I was not being accessed any longer, but she and her husband were constantly trying to intimidate me and cause me to be afraid. I had made the pastor aware of the situation, and he listened. Unfortunately, he was not aware of the depth of evil they were capable of. That is one of the reasons I have been called by the Lord to write this book. People, especially pastors, need to be aware of the evil people who hide in their congregations. They need to know their plans and strategies against the church. If they are aware of the strategies, they can combat them effectively and give the church insight and wisdom on how to fight. I stood on the platform at church and looked directly at the programmers. I said, “There are evil people in every church with agendas against the church, but Papa God will expose them!” At that point, they got up and left the church. That was a great step against the enemy!

Chapter 16

Healing

"Then your light shall break forth like the morning, Your healing shall spring forth speedily, And your righteousness shall go before you; The glory of the LORD shall be your rear guard." Isaiah 58:8

There was a powerful group of people who started helping my spiritual papa with his prayer and deliverance ministry. We all were getting ministry, as well, to get the most healing possible. Wounded people, wound people, so it's very important for all of us to seek healing. There was a lady in particular who showed me Papa God's love in a powerful way. She sat in my ministry time and prayed while I was getting ministry. She gave me the first furniture of my own, a chair that was cushy and comfy. I would sit in that chair and talk with Papa God a lot. I even slept in the chair. This was a huge step for me, because I had never been allowed to actually sit on furniture. I always had to sit on the floor. It was so liberating for me! I didn't have to earn her acceptance. I called her "Amma," *mama* in the Indian culture.

All of us decided to go to the revival that was happening at the House of Prayer in Kansas City. The devil was trying to keep me from going. I got really sick before I went, but I knew I was supposed to go. When we got there, there was a great outpouring of joy at the revival. People were dancing, worshipping, and laughing. I was the only person on our team who wasn't able to feel joy at all. I couldn't figure out why everybody was joyful and I wasn't. I began to ask Papa God why I was so sad and unable to be joyful. He said that I felt guilty. The evil people named my daughter Joy. They gave me medicine that made me laugh, and then they began to hurt and kill her at the same time. They told me that I was evil because I was laughing at my daughter being hurt and killed. I couldn't stop laughing because the medication was forcing me to act in this way. I hated myself and wanted to die. They said to think about how evil I was when I saw joy (people laughing and happy). So every time I saw people laughing, worshipping, and looking happy, I thought of my little girl. I felt hideous and evil. At that moment there in the revival, Papa God gave me a vision of my little girl. She put my face in her hands and said, "It's okay to be happy, Momma. You don't have to be sad." I began to sob uncontrollably and was healed in that moment. For the rest of the revival, I laughed, worshipped, and danced! Papa God said, "All of heaven stops and watches me dance." There was another time that Papa God showed me a picture of Him with my little girl and my mom, who had been killed. I asked them, "Why can't I go be with you?" Papa God said it was because there were people that He would rescue through my story. If my testimony rescued one person, it is worth not giving up.

There were many times that Papa God would bring a memory to the surface where they told me I was evil, and then He would show me who I really was compared to who the evil people said I was. For example, they would say that I hated handicapped people and different races. Then the programmers would make something bad happen to them and say it was my fault. During my healing journey, Papa God has brought different races, last name was changed to Beryl legally. Hope was a name given to me by the Christian couple who had rescued me. I changed that legally as well. The entire name was a way of Papa God saying I was on an evil path that was chosen for me before, and now I was on Papa God's path. He also shared the verse about heaven with me: "The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper, the second sapphire, the third agate, the fourth emerald, the fifth onyx, the sixth ruby, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth turquoise, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst." Eight means new beginning.

My elderly friend kept me from being lonely, and I helped ease the pain of the loss of her sister. She believed in me, and all she saw was somebody who had been kind and loving to her. She didn't see all of the rituals, rape, and torture. I went and visited with her every other week. We sang hymns (she played the piano) and talked about Papa God. She gave me a card that I still have. It's a picture of an old school house. She was a teacher when the school was a one room schoolhouse. The scripture on the card was 1 John 4:16. This is now my favorite verse. "And so we know and believe the love God has for us. God is love." I wrote her a poem about our time together, and when she passed away, I felt an intense loss.

At this point in my life, all of my support system in Kentucky was gone, and Papa God brought an opportunity for me to go to a ministry school in Tennessee. I spoke with the overseer of the supernatural school of ministry, and he said, "Sometimes God just wants us to make a choice to do something because we would like to do it." That advice sounded very liberating because I never thought Papa God would give me the ability to do something I wanted to do. So I told Papa God if he wanted me to go to the ministry school, then He would have to provide. So in a bittersweet gift, my friend who passed away left me just the amount of money I needed to go to the school. I quit my job, packed up, and moved to Tennessee on the day before my birthday six years ago. I was thirty-nine years old. I still talk to my spiritual papa a lot and other people I met there, but I haven't gone back to Kentucky. Kentucky is where most of the torture was done, so it brings many horrible memories. I miss my spiritual papa horribly, but he and his wife are doing very well.

There was intense warfare that happened with me leaving the state of Kentucky. A lot of territorial demons tormented me. I had the most intense pain in my head as I arrived in Tennessee, and we were trying to get our furniture unloaded. Then the warfare intensified as I began school! I began to learn more about the supernatural in a pure sense, not in the demonic realm. The devil was not happy that his territory was being destroyed. I genuinely felt the anointing flowing in all of the speakers that were brought in to teach our classes and conferences that were held there. I became great friends and family with the director of the school's wife, Wendy. She was kind and trustworthy, and she believed in me. He was the man I had talked with on the phone before I moved there, the main reason I ended up in Tennessee. They truly showed me what genuine family really is. Things don't have to be perfect in a family, but you're always there for each other. Papa God showed me that they didn't just say they were family; they really meant it. She and her husband provided an alternative that I needed to where I was living, so I moved in with them. I had a beautiful bed with a white fluffy cover and soft pillow. They provided food that was actually good for my body, not fast food. She really taught me how to start taking care of my body and not feeding myself horrible food that destroyed my body. Even to this day, I have no doubts that if I needed somewhere to go, I would always be welcome at their house no matter what.

Every time we had worship before our ministry time and teaching in the ministry school, Papa God would bring up new memories and bring healing. Papa God showed me as we see our identity in who He says we are, the chains fall off, and we walk in our Kingdom Authority! I genuinely saw for me. This was an awesome treasure to hear that they prayed for me. Papa God had also given me the name Beryl, from this beautiful lady who went to be with the Lord. It was her middle name. I will explain in detail about this a little later. This was another treasure that I would never forget. In my loss, He gave me a beautiful gift. During this time of loss, my amma (*mama* in Indian) gave me a necklace with an inscription that said, "I will carry you." Papa God knew that that was exactly what I needed to hear.

A couple of months later, my cat got sick for the third time with cancer. The first time she got sick, I had noticed she had a knot on her belly. My friend from church was a veterinarian. He said to bring her in. I found out she had cancer, and I had no money. I was so close to my cat; she was my family. She had been through a lot. I had her when I was still getting programmed. They had used her to get to me. They tortured her, and the pain of having to watch that was more hideous than anything they could do to me. She was free now, but she had scars from the torture. Now after all that she had already been through, she was sick with cancer. The veterinarian and his wife from my church were so kind and loving. They did the surgery for free. She was so much better for a while, but then she got sick again, and another surgery had to be done. Again, they did the surgery for free! Papa God was really taking care of us. During the third time she got cancer, the veterinarian said she couldn't handle another surgery. I just couldn't let her go. I didn't want her to suffer, but I was afraid to give her up. I was praying and praying to have an idea when she was suffering and needed to be with Honest Jesus. She got so bad she wasn't even being able to walk and eat. She had a hole in her side from the cancer. I knew I had to stop the suffering. I just couldn't fathom seeing her die, though! Papa God showed me that I wasn't killing her by letting her go and ending her suffering. I took her to the vet, and I was sobbing the whole way there. I took her and held her, and Honest Jesus showed me that He walked into the room and put her in His arms. There was no pain for her any longer! She is running in heaven having so much fun!

Papa God gave me the verse in Habakkuk 2:2–3: "Then the Lord replied: 'Write down the revelation and make it plain on tablets so that a herald may run with it. For the revelation awaits an appointed time; it speaks of the end and will not prove false. Though it linger, wait for it; it will certainly come and will not delay.'" He gave me this verse over and over during my healing journey. I believe that His plan is to expose the evil people and bring millions out of darkness. I cling to this truth each day! I also believe that His Church will be awakened to the horrible evil that is happening in this country, and stand against it together in unity!

I still went to see the remaining sister after her other sister passed away. She needed me now more than ever. We were great friends and would talk for hours. I was terrified because when I visited her, I had to go back to the town that I had left when I became free. Every time I visited her, it was an ordeal. But I knew that Papa God was calling me to minister to her, so I went, choosing to trust that Papa God would take care of me.

I ended up getting my name legally changed because Papa God told me to. The name I had previously was a cult Illuminati name that I was tortured around. I had been praying for quite some time about what I should change my name to. I asked my elderly friend what her and her sisters' full names were. She told me that "Beryl" is a middle name of one of the ladies. It stood out to me, for some reason I didn't know. The next day, as I was reading the Bible, I opened my Bible to Song of Solomon 5:14: "His Hands are rods of gold set with beryl." Papa God said very clearly to me, "You are a precious gem. I have always had your spirit in My hand. This is your new name." Beryl is a precious gemstone. And Papa God had always had my spirit in His hand. This was a direct answer to the question I had asked Papa God, "Why didn't You protect me?" He said, "I wasn't able to protect your body because of the choices of evil people, but I always protected your spirit." No matter what they did to me, they could not destroy my spirit. So my last name was changed to Beryl legally. Hope was a name given to me by the Christian couple who had rescued me. I changed that legally as well. The entire name was a way of Papa God saying I was on an evil path that was chosen for me before, and now I was on Papa God's path. He also shared the verse about heaven with me: "The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper, the second sapphire, the third agate, the fourth emerald, the fifth onyx, the sixth ruby, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth turquoise, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst." Eight means new beginning.

My elderly friend kept me from being lonely, and I helped ease the pain of the loss of her sister. She believed in me, and all she saw was somebody who had been kind and loving to her. She didn't see all of the rituals, rape, and torture. I went and visited with her every other week. We sang hymns (she played the piano) and talked about Papa God. She gave me a card that I still have. It's a picture of an old school house. She was a teacher when the school was a one room schoolhouse. The scripture on the card was 1 John 4:16. This is now my favorite verse. "And so we know and believe the love God has for us. God is love." I wrote her a poem about our time together, and when she passed away, I felt an intense loss.

At this point in my life, all of my support system in Kentucky was gone, and Papa God brought an opportunity for me to go to a ministry school in Tennessee. I spoke with the overseer of the supernatural school of ministry, and he said, "Sometimes God just wants us to make a choice to do something because we would like to do it." That advice sounded very liberating because I never thought Papa God would give me the ability to do something I wanted to do. So I told Papa God if he wanted me to go to the ministry school, then He would have to provide. So in a bittersweet gift, my friend who passed away left me just the amount of money I needed to go to the school. I quit my job, packed up, and moved to Tennessee on the day before my birthday six years ago. I was thirty-nine years old. I still talk to my spiritual papa a lot and other people I met there, but I haven't gone back to Kentucky. Kentucky is where most of the torture was done, so it brings many horrible memories. I miss my spiritual papa horribly, but he and his wife are doing very well.

There was intense warfare that happened with me leaving the state of Kentucky. A lot of territorial demons tormented me. I had the most intense pain in my head as I arrived in Tennessee, and we were trying to get our furniture unloaded. Then the warfare intensified as I began school! I began to learn more about the supernatural in a pure sense, not in the demonic realm. The devil was not happy that his territory was being destroyed. I genuinely felt the anointing flowing in all of the speakers that were brought in to teach our classes and conferences that were held there. I became great friends and family with the director of the school's wife, Wendy. She was kind and trustworthy, and she believed in me. He was the man I had talked with on the phone before I moved there, the main reason I ended up in Tennessee. They truly showed me what genuine family really is. Things don't have to be perfect in a family, but you're always there for each other. Papa God showed me that they didn't just say they were family; they really meant it. She and her husband provided an alternative that I needed to where I was living, so I moved in with them. I had a beautiful bed with a white fluffy cover and soft pillow. They provided food that was actually good for my body, not fast food. She really taught me how to start taking care of my body and not feeding myself horrible food that destroyed my body. Even to this day, I have no doubts that if I needed somewhere to go, I would always be welcome at their house no matter what.

Every time we had worship before our ministry time and teaching in the ministry school, Papa God would bring up new memories and bring healing. Papa God showed me as we see our identity in who He says we are, the chains fall off, and we walk in our Kingdom Authority! I genuinely saw ethnicity, and handicapped people into my life to love and show me who I really was. Every time something evil was happening, the programmers would say, "Be positive." That meant I had to forget. When Christians said, "Be positive," or "Think about what is good," I thought that meant someone was getting raped or tortured. Papa God began to heal me and show me the difference between being positive and denial. Being positive meant being honest about what Papa God is doing or what Papa God can do. Being positive did not mean you're supposed to pretend or deny the truth. This was also difficult when dealing with the faith confessions too. When I was sick, the programmers would say that I was faking it. They would say over and over that I wasn't sick, I was faking it. When I was crying, they would say I wasn't sad or in pain. Papa God is still healing me to understand how to be completely honest, and also how to genuinely believe at the same time. This was very confusing because of the programming.

The evil people showed up in the new town I was living in to intimidate and terrify me. Papa God caused me to be like the servant of Elisha in the scripture I shared previously. This has become one of my favorite scriptures. It shows the power of Papa God against our enemies! Second Kings 6:15–18 says, "When the servant of the man of God got up and went out early the next morning, an army with horses and chariots had surrounded the city. "Oh no, my lord! What shall we do?" the servant asked. 'Don't be afraid,' the prophet answered. 'Those who are with us are more than those who are with them.' And Elisha prayed, 'Open his eyes, Lord, so that he may see.' Then the Lord opened the servant's eyes, and he looked and saw the hills full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha. As the enemy came down toward him, Elisha prayed to the Lord, 'Strike this army with blindness.' So he struck them with blindness, as Elisha had asked." Papa God made them blind and unable to find me while they were there. They literally almost walked right past me while they were there, without even seeing me. He caused me to see that they weren't able to do anything to me because my mind wasn't under their control anymore.

When I initially got free, I was completely alone. I had no one. I was trying to protect the Christian couple and their family from the evil people. I didn't want them to get hurt any more than I had already hurt them. So I asked Papa God, "Who do You genuinely want me to love?" He brought to my mind the elderly ladies who were the Christian couple's adopted spiritual moms. These two ladies were sisters; their husbands had already passed away. I started going out to their house, spending time with them, and listening to their stories. I was doing whatever I could to show them love. This brought great healing for me because they didn't know anything about my past. They didn't know anything about my mistakes, so it was a clean slate for me. They just loved me, and I focused on them and loved them. This was also a way I could give back to the Christian couple for all of the things they had done for me. I had a lot of pain, guilt, and torment for all the pain I had caused them. I wasn't able to let my sins go. I kept beating myself up. I remember Papa God told me one day that being miserable wasn't doing anything for the Christian couple who rescued me. Genuinely living was the best way I could bless them for all that they had done for me. So I chose to let go of the condemnation that I had toward myself. The man had given me the scripture, "Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ." I began to focus, think, and pray about this scripture. It says there is no condemnation *now*, *not* after you beat yourself up enough.

One of the ladies got sick, and they put her in a nursing home. I would go pick up her sister and take her to the nursing home. This was a great joy! I began to see that maybe I wasn't evil and that I was capable of genuine love. Her sister ended up passing away; that was a great loss! I had for the first time really allowed my mind and spirit to love somebody without putting a wall up. I cried and sobbed when I lost her. When I was at the funeral, I saw the Christian couple who had given their life to genuinely give me freedom. They both told me that they forgive me. She told me that they pray for me. This was an awesome treasure to hear that they prayed for me. Papa God had also given me the name Beryl, from this beautiful lady who went to be with the Lord. It was her middle name. I will explain in detail about this a little later. This was another treasure that I would never forget. In my loss, He gave me a beautiful gift. During this time of loss, my amma (*mama* in Indian) gave me a necklace with an inscription that said, "I will carry you." Papa God knew that that was exactly what I needed to hear.

A couple of months later, my cat got sick for the third time with cancer. The first time she got sick, I had noticed she had a knot on her belly. My friend from church was a veterinarian. He said to bring her in. I found out she had cancer, and I had no money. I was so close to my cat; she was my family. She had been through a lot. I had her when I was still getting programmed. They had used her to get to me. They tortured her, and the pain of having to watch that was more hideous than anything they could do to me. She was free now, but she had scars from the torture. Now after all that she had already been through, she was sick with cancer. The veterinarian and his wife from my church were so kind and loving. They did the surgery for free. She was so much better for a while, but then she got sick again, and another surgery had to be done. Again, they did the surgery for free! Papa God was really taking care of us. During the third time she got cancer, the veterinarian said she couldn't handle another surgery. I just couldn't let her go. I didn't want her to suffer, but I was afraid to give her up. I was praying and praying to have an idea when she was suffering and needed to be with Honest Jesus. She got so bad she wasn't even being able to walk and eat. She had a hole in her side from the cancer. I knew I had to stop the suffering. I just couldn't fathom seeing her die, though! Papa God showed me that I wasn't killing her by letting her go and ending her suffering. I took her to the vet, and I was sobbing the whole way there. I took her and held her, and Honest Jesus showed me that He walked into the room and put her in His arms. There was no pain for her any longer! She is running in heaven having so much fun!

Papa God gave me the verse in Habakkuk 2:2–3: "Then the Lord replied: 'Write down the revelation and make it plain on tablets so that a herald may run with it. For the revelation awaits an appointed time; it speaks of the end and will not prove false. Though it linger, wait for it; it will certainly come and will not delay.'" He gave me this verse over and over during my healing journey. I believe that His plan is to expose the evil people and bring millions out of darkness. I cling to this truth each day! I also believe that His Church will be awakened to the horrible evil that is happening in this country, and stand against it together in unity!

I still went to see the remaining sister after her other sister passed away. She needed me now more than ever. We were great friends and would talk for hours. I was terrified because when I visited her, I had to go back to the town that I had left when I became free. Every time I visited her, it was an ordeal. But I knew that Papa God was calling me to minister to her, so I went, choosing to trust that Papa God would take care of me.

I ended up getting my name legally changed because Papa God told me to. The name I had previously was a cult Illuminati name that I was tortured around. I had been praying for quite some time about what I should change my name to. I asked my elderly friend what her and her sisters' full names were. She told me that "Beryl" is a middle name of one of the ladies. It stood out to me, for some reason I didn't know. The next day, as I was reading the Bible, I opened my Bible to Song of Solomon 5:14: "His Hands are rods of gold set with beryl." Papa God said very clearly to me, "You are a precious gem. I have always had your spirit in My hand. This is your new name." Beryl is a precious gemstone. And Papa God had always had my spirit in His hand. This was a direct answer to the question I had asked Papa God, "Why didn't You protect me?" He said, "I wasn't able to protect your body because of the choices of evil people, but I always protected your spirit." No matter what they did to me, they could not destroy my spirit. So my how His Presence brought healing. I used to hate worship and praise, because I was forced to have sexual feelings as the evil people played worship music. My programmers would say, "Just praise the Lord to get free." That meant that they would stimulate my genitals till I had an orgasm, and then they would tell me that I was an evil whore. I was so confused. I hated myself for having sexual feelings. I felt so out of control that I allowed my programmers to continue to torture me because I was terrified of myself and the sexual feelings. I was starting to get free from the fear of Papa God's presence through the ministry school in Tennessee, and He was bringing truth to root lies that kept me from genuine worship. There were many times when Papa God was showing me the memories of all the horror I went through. He showed me so many times that He was weeping and weeping over me for the pain I had to endure. There was one time in particular that I remember being in my car and screaming out from the pain of the things that I was seeing. I was seeing detail after detail of all that I had lived through. During this time, I saw a vision of Honest Jesus standing up for me, just like when He stood up for Steven, when he was being stoned. I will never forget that! There were many times where I screamed and cussed at Papa God because I was so angry about what they had done to me. He always allowed me to get those emotions out and then brought truth.

I began to see the gifts that Papa God put within my life, like prophecy, teaching, and preaching. Before I left for India, Papa God had told me that I was called to preach, and I never told anyone what He had shared with me. Then when we got to India, an Indian pastor who didn't even speak English spoke through a translator that I would be a mighty preacher. That was a great confirmation of Papa God's word!

Throughout my stay in ministry school, I received healing from the programming of perfection, coping with the habit of always trying to be good enough. I was asked to be the secretary of the church and school. The pastor and his wife were very kind and knew about some of the things I had endured. The programmers began to harass the pastor and his wife by sending letters saying they were loving parents who just wanted to see their daughter. They were trying to make me look crazy. They had always told me that they would make me look crazy if I ever tell anybody about what they did to me. The letters, phone calls, and packages were sent frequently. I was sad that my friends had to deal with this. I found out that there wasn't any way I could get a restraining order, since they had not physically harmed me recently. They showed up at church, and just like Papa God had promised. I was surrounded by His fire. I didn't even see them. My pastor's wife told them they had to leave, and they couldn't touch me! I was continually intimidated by letters and packages sent to me and all the people I was close to—no matter what I tried, even when I contacted a retired Navy SEAL who was investigating sex trafficking to stop the harassment. He was unable to do anything, as well as the police, because of the statute of limitations.

Papa God always reminds me that he will bring justice. That is His promise to me. Luke 8:17 says, "For all that is secret will eventually be brought into the open, and everything that is concealed will be brought into the light and made known to all." When I was in India the last time, when I was praying about exposing the evil people and the horror they did to me, our car drove by a sign at that exact moment that said, "Truth can't be hidden forever!" This was another assurance from Papa God that they will be exposed no matter what things look like. He has showed me over and over the scripture Psalm 23:5: "You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies." Papa God is blessing my life even as the evil people fight me constantly.

When I took the position of administrative assistant for the church, I met a lot of big-name Christian leaders. I felt like I had to try to impress them and like I was lesser in worth than all of them. I felt like I was the slave and everybody was important and I wasn't. There had been so much programming about the church. I thought that every Christian hated me and they wanted me dead. It was a long journey toward healing—to see the truth that we are all just people who are loved by Papa God. I'm still learning that each day. He has shown me that it's not my job to judge who is sincere and who isn't. He has gifted people in many different ways. If people are ministering on a stage, that doesn't mean they are prideful. They may be the most humble people and are just following Papa God in their calling. I had to go to the memories where the evil people made me feel like a dog and less than everybody else and allow Papa God to show me that being in ministry and being in the limelight does not make you important. The person who is cleaning the toilets is just as important as the person who is speaking on the stage. Through all of this healing time, I was distraught a lot, and the enemy was always trying to cause division with the people around me. I remember during Sunday school when a lady said something, and I thought she was mad at me. I left and went out to my car and cried. I called out to Papa God to get rid of all of the intense rejection I felt. He spoke clearly to me. "How can anybody say who you are? They didn't create you." So since He made me, only He can say who I truly am. That gave me a lot of comfort.

When I took the job with the church, I had a lot of difficulty with working at the church by myself during the day. This was a result of all the rituals that were done to me in churches, baptismal, altars, and sanctuaries. I would try to make myself focus on the job I was doing, but I would feel the anxiety and fear of what might happen to me there. Churches had never been a safe place for me. During the rituals, the programmers would put dead people on the altar and say that I have to save them and cover their sins. They would force me to do sexual things to them to bring them to life. Churches had always been torture chambers for me. To be saved meant that I had to have sex with Jesus, whomever they chose him to be. I was told that all of us were slaves to God, so we're chained up. They twisted the scripture Romans 6:22, "You have become slaves of God," and told me that God said I was His slave for life. Papa God showed me during my healing journey, the beauty of the real church. His real Church is His people.

I met a genuine example of the Church while I was going to missionary school to be ordained. I met the genuine family I wish I had always had since birth. There was a Christian couple who took me in as an adopted daughter. She was the mama I never had. She spoiled me and took me shopping. She was always in my corner. She helped me get my book published. Papa God used her in a mighty way! You never know how you are impacting a person's life when you step out and obey. I choose to trust Papa God. He will always give us back more than what we give!

Chapter 17

Walking in Freedom

"It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery." Galatians 5:1

It's so difficult to explain how paralyzing it is to have these intense memories surfacing all day long. I have chosen to live my life, though, no matter how difficult it is! The alternative is to just not get up each morning, but the evil people have already stolen too much of my life already. I choose to deal with all of the triggers and memories of thirty years of torture. I choose to live the life I was given by Papa God! At least this way, Papa God can rescue other people through my willingness to tell my story. The opportunity to plan conferences for this Christian ministry in Tennessee was healing for me because I got to see people being healed by Papa God in church instead of being tortured. It was such a powerful testimony of Papa God's genuine love.

While going to this church, I met a man named Daniel. He had moved to Tennessee the same year I did. He was given a prophetic word to leave Florida and move to Tennessee to pursue a music career. He gave up his six-figure income to follow Papa God to Tennessee. He was a hairstylist in Florida, and he was playing guitar in a worship band. Papa God gave him guitar as a child to connect with him through music. Daniel is an amazingly gifted musician. All the people who were close to me mentioned that he would be a good guy to be friends with and possibly date. He was in an extremely difficult situation in his life because he gave away everything he owned and left his flourishing business to move to Tennessee. He didn't have food to eat at times, and he was sleeping on the floor, in an apartment that was infested with mold. He was trying to do what he thought Papa God was telling him to do. I started praying about Daniel, and I saw a tree outside my window. Papa God said Daniel was like the tree. His roots went deep, but the fruit hadn't shown up yet. Papa God showed me you're only as strong as your foundation. Just like the roots of a tree, a skyscraper's foundation is laid below the ground to create the most stability. To get to the bedrock, it normally requires deep excavation of soils overlaying the bedrock. However, building the foundation on bedrock (Papa God) is necessary, given the extremely large loads of skyscrapers. When the bedrock (Papa God) is exposed, the massive foundation could be placed.

While I was getting ministry one day, I wasn't even thinking about Daniel, and Papa God gave me a vision. In my vision, Daniel was a little boy, and he was being told he wasn't good enough and that he was a loser. He was afraid and rejected, and he decided he never wanted to be close to people. He told himself that he wanted to be alone. Then I saw myself as a little girl. I was being hurt, and they were saying, "We don't want you. You're a loser." I was afraid of myself, and I was forced to be fearful if I didn't have people to keep me from being bad. We both were carrying fear and rejection. Then I saw Papa God, and He was riding in a new convertible with me. I was a little girl. Then I saw Daniel and myself in the car as little children with Jesus.

From there, I saw us on a motorcycle with Honest Jesus. This ended up happening in the natural not long after that. I got a convertible with which Daniel and I went on lots of rides in the country, and we felt Papa God's presence. Daniel got a motorcycle, and we went riding, and I talked to Papa God the entire time. A little later, Daniel traded in that motorcycle, and he bought a Harley Davidson Road Glide. The motorcycle was too expensive, and we wanted to begin to save for a wedding. So he asked for Papa God to take the motorcycle from him because he couldn't afford it. That same week, someone stole the motorcycle, and his gap insurance paid for all of it except the down payment. This was testimony that Papa God is always working on our behalf.

At this point, it was the end of 2014, and Papa God showed me that He was going to establish a ministry specifically for exposing the truth of what I had been through. Papa God rescued me out of that hell, and He wanted to encourage others that He can rescue anybody from anything. I was living proof that He is big enough to heal the deepest pain, and not only heal it, but provide an abundant life afterward! Papa God shared that this was the time to move on from the church I had been at. There was something new He wanted to do! He shared with me He wanted me to have the freedom to share all of my story, and not be connected with any ministry so that I could share all of the things that He had asked. So I stepped away and got a job waitressing. This was a difficult time due to financial reasons, and I was unable to find a job. I kept asking Papa God to intervene, and He always provided for my needs. I made many mistakes as I learned how to live for the first time, but Papa God was always there!

Daniel had been praying about an engagement ring to give me. He went into place that had an antique store and different businesses, and there was a church there. He went to look at guitars, and while he was looking, he heard an angelic sound. It was from the worship music playing. He decided to go into the church service, and they were talking about marriage. He stopped by the antique store on the way out, and the ring he had been asking Papa God for was there. He had worked out all of the details. On Christmas day, Daniel gave me my presents, and I was disappointed that I didn't get a ring. Then he said, "Look in that stocking." The stocking was the one the Christian couple made for me. It was very special to me. I looked into the stocking, and there was my ring. Papa God gave me the gift of Jesus on Christmas, and He gave me my husband as well! The journey in our relationship has not been easy. There have been intense attacks on our marriage from the evil people, but we have had great healing along the way. The couple we met at church and who adopted me threw us a beautiful wedding. I walked down the aisle to "You Raised Me Up." This was the favorite song of the man who had the most to do with rescuing me from slavery. So I played it as a tribute to him and my freedom.

I had been unable to find someone to minister to me when I moved to Tennessee. It is extremely difficult to find Christians who minister to SRA and mind-control survivors. That is another reason why Papa God had me write this book. Papa God is calling His children to minister and pray for people who are trying to get out of what I went through. Unfortunately, it is difficult to even find Christians who believe that this type of mind control exists. It's hard for people to comprehend that there is that level of evil. There is a very real devil, and there are people who follow him.

I was referred to a man who had a Christian counseling ministry. I began going to ministry weekly. Papa God brought healing and truth during this time. The minister ended up getting cancer and passing away. He was an amazing man. During the programming, I had been told over and over that I was the cause of every person's death. When the minister died, I thought this was another case where I was the reason for bad things that happen to people. Even after getting free, I had Christians say they couldn't be around me because there was too much of a demonic battle. So I had a lot of rejection. Papa God showed me it was not my fault for the evil that was done by the Illuminati and the programmers, and even the warfare was their fault not mine. Little by little, I don't blame myself for things anymore. Papa God said "just like a sunrise doesn't have to try to be beautiful, it just is, that's the way His creation is. We are His creation! Jeremiah 33:3 [3]'Call to me and I will answer you and tell you great and unsearchable things you do not know.'

Throughout my healing journey for the last thirteen years, I have been through the training and ministry of Sozo, Freedom Encounters, Transformation Ministries, In His Steps, School of the Supernatural, Rapha Christian Ministries, and Daniel Duval Ministries. I have completed twenty-four plus Beth Moore studies; Priscilla Shirer, Shannon Ethridge, and other woman's ministries; numerous conferences; and three years of ministry school with Christian leaders and speakers. All of this just to get healing and deliverance and to be able to live my life without torment and terror. I don't say this to say that I'm responsible for my healing in anyway or to be prideful. I only say this to motivate people to see that we have to partner with Papa God to allow His healing to take place in our lives. He will not force His Way into my life or force me to allow Him to heal me. My only job is to make the choice to allow healing. I have a Papa God-given fight to not allow the evil people to take my life from me any longer, I will partner with Papa God to take down the enemy no matter what. To rescue the weak and enslaved till the last breath in my body. Ephesians 5:11 says, "Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them." Are you willing to join the fight? I pray that you are, because survivors need you. We need you to see the truth and step up to allow Papa God to use your life to believe us, expose the evil, and fight against it. Prayer is one way that you can change things. If you can't gather enough compassion for me, think if this was your daughter, son, brother, sister, husband, wife… What would you be willing to do for them?

Papa God has genuinely promised me that millions will be set free. The genuine promises of Papa God are ours. Even if we don't see them, we have to trust that Papa God is working. It's what we focus on. When we lasso and the rope goes over the horse's neck, that horse is ours. So whatever we focus and pull to us is ours from Papa God. During my healing, I would look up and see a person parachuting, and Papa God said that genuinely trusting Him is like parachuting. You stand at the edge of the cliff and jump. A big area of healing that needed to take place was dealing with self-hatred. This healing happened day after day. I was learning that continual self-rejection is an open invitation to Satan. It was important for me to see this and stand against it. In what I said and how I treated myself, I began to learn to be kind to myself. I'm still healing daily. First Peter 5:8 says, "Be alert and of sober mind. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour."

During my healing journey, sometimes, I would push and push to see the memories out of works. I had been programmed to always see the evil in myself, and if I wasn't seeing the evil within myself, I must be doing something horrible. The evil people used this programming against the ministry in Kentucky with the Christian couple. They had already gotten their manual of ministry and studied it and found a way to twist the ministry so it would not be effective. The evil people said instead of the ministry revealing the truth that I was a pure child of Papa God that the ministry was just there to trick me and show me the evil within me over and over. So every time I would get ministry, I would think I was getting tricked into exposing how evil I was. It was excruciating. They used this to program me against the Christian couple and the ministry that they were doing. To this day, I still get terror and fear before I get ministry. I do experience tremendous pain during my ministry, but it's pain that has been within me for decades. The ministry is allowing the pain to surface and be destroyed, while Papa God brings truth to replace the lies I was told. The momentary pain of this healing is a million times better than having pain for the rest of my life. Once the memory is healed and truth is brought from Papa God to the lies, I never have to see those things again. It is 100 percent finished. Also, as I get free, I'm able to have an abundant life that had been stolen from me before.

For the past ten years, Papa God has been asking me to write this book. He said to not to leave anything out. The evil people still try to intimidate, manipulate, and control me by showing up at my jobs. By showing up at my husband's work, by sending mail and pictures. But I refuse to back down, and I chose to tell the entire truth of what they did to me. Now is the time. Esther revealed who she was, even though she was in danger. "For such a time as this" (Esther 4:14). Just as Haman planned her destruction, Papa God reversed Haman's plan and reversed all of Satan's plan, for Esther's destiny to be brought forth. "Whoever digs a hole and scoops it out falls into the pit they have made. The trouble they cause recoils on them; their violence comes down on their own heads" (Psalm 7:15–16).

There is scripture after scripture that shows what Papa God says about evil men. Psalm 34:16 says, "The face of the LORD is against evildoers, to cut off the memory of them from the earth." Isaiah 31:2 says, "Yet He also is wise and will bring disaster and does not retract His words, but will arise against the house of evildoers, and against the help of the workers of iniquity." In Isaiah 42:13, it says, "The Lord shall go forth like a mighty man; He shall stir up His zeal like a man of war. He shall cry out, yes shout aloud; He shall prevail against His enemies."

As I write this, there are racial wars, political wars, and terrorist attacks all over the world. There are Illuminati elites who are orchestrating these attacks to cause a war so that they can bring martial law into place. If they can get the country divided, then they can bring it down. I believe Papa God has raised up President Trump as a *trump card* to destroy the Illuminati's plans and unite this country for Papa God. I call all Christians to pray together for the truth to be exposed about the Illuminati. "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves" (Matthew **10:16**). That we would pray for each other and the destruction of the New World Order. Also, that President Trump will be aware of their tactics and will be backed in prayer to expose them.

Lance Wallnau has been criticized extensively, but he has been a major force in exposing how Papa God brought Trump into office and the battle that he is fighting against the elite. The recent candidate and her husband have been a force behind childhood pedophilia for decades, and they are gathering her victims from all countries, especially the United States. When she chose her election day venue at the glass-enclosed auditorium, she was saying to the victims that her evil was shielded by all the people she is paying off to keep her secrets, the invisible shield of protection by those elites close to her. There will be a day in eternity that she will not be able to hide her evildoing. Everything will be exposed for all to see.

Another area that Papa God has been sharing truth about is the direct correlation between electrical waves and demons. All demons ride on electrical waves. With the current electronic age, this means that every time we use our phones, watch TV, etc., we are opening ourselves up and submitting ourselves to the electronic waves of these devices. This does not mean that watching TV or talking on the phone is wrong, in any way. It just means that we have to be wise and cover ourselves in prayer before submitting to what is going on in our environment. Take Facebook for example, it is the motherboard of our electronic system in this country, gathering information 24/7. The government and elite can track what you like, dislike, what time you get up, go to sleep, go to eat, on and on…How do you take down your enemy? You study every detail about them. Every weakness is picked apart to strategically bring them to ruin without them ever being aware that they are fighting against anyone. That is what Hitler did. His reign was planned for years and years before he took over Germany. Daily, he desensitized them to what he was doing bit by bit, and before they knew it, they were no longer free. Even dreams are manipulated through electronic impulses. The evil people do rituals and act out the dream, then scan a picture of the person they want to turn you against, apply the picture of the person's face on top of their face, then summon the demons to transmit the dream to the electrical waves during REM sleep cycle. If the person has already been opened up to demonic spirits, then an access point and portal is open for them to transmit the dream. Ever since I became free, I have had nightmare night after night—dreams so specific I knew that they were sent by the Illuminati. Papa God showed me that there were portals and access points opened up by the Illuminati during my sleep. I pray specifically for Papa God to stand guard over those portals and access points. And I pray against any electronic messages being sent while I sleep.

As a child, I was hooked up to a telephone with sensors. They scanned my female programmer and downloaded electrical impulses into the left part of my body. They placed an electrode in my temple and jaw. This was planted within my body to make a connection electronically to their computer systems. The electrode in my temple was the receiver, so I could receive the electrical impulses and messages by Morse code that they wanted me to get. The electrode in my jaw was the transmitter. It was used to send message back to them about my location and what I was doing every second. The left side of my body was planted with DNA from my female programmer to cause a soul tie and legal right for the demons to bond to those electrodes. The evil people told me that I was a cyborg taken from her and that I was a replica of her. This is terrifying because I was told that I was no more than a robot made from her DNA. So this set up a double bind of denial in my mind. I wanted to be like her because then I was told I would be real. But I didn't want to be like her because she was hideously evil. So in order to be real and to connect to people they tortured me to believe I had to be evil. This was a double bind because as a human being one of our basic needs is to connect and bond with others. This was used as another method to cause me to cling to my torturer and programmer.

The right side of my body, they called the denial side. I was told that DNA of my programmer was injected in my bloodstream to cause me to be a clone of her. So if I viewed my programmer as evil, that meant I had to view myself as evil. This was done to ensure that I never told anybody the truth about what they were doing to me. If I told anybody, then I would actually be telling people about myself being evil. They would twist this even further by telling me that I wasn't even real and that I was programmed as a robot and clone to kill whomever they forced me to kill. They said they tried to rescue me, but they couldn't so they injected me with their DNA to try and save me. They said I was the root of all evil. I was terrified when I wasn't being tortured and manipulated, and I begged to not be left alone. My fear was that I would be a robot that killed people all the time. During my ministry time, Papa God showed me that my emotions were evidence that I was not a robot or clone. A clone or robot would not have emotions; tears were able to be replicated but not the true emotions that Papa God created. If you do any google search on cloning and artificial intelligence, there are more signs of the truth that is hidden by the elite and the military starting to surface. The reason for this is that they have desensitized the American people into believing this is normal, and nothing to be concerned about. This has been going on for decades, all under the surface and disguise of a free nation. There are more slaves than ever before in our nation.

A specific actor is at the top of the mountain of entertainment in the Illuminati. His movies have been used to program all victims of Illuminati mind control. Starting with *The Truman Show*, Truman was in the Illuminati, and an Illuminati programmer. This movie shows how they program victims to be under their control every second of every day with an outside presenter part that has no idea they are being controlled. It also shows a control room, which controls the winds and airwaves in Truman's world. Then the movie *Bruce Almighty*, where a person is God. In all of the rituals, he is God, and he controls what clones and artificial programming is inserted within the victims. He is at the top of the experiments of mind control and how the brain works, creating actors out of victims. In another movie, he talks about part of the rituals, telling them they will be victims of the claw if they do not act and pretend. The claw is the connector to the real world through electrocution and electrical implants, through which they control victims with daily. The Mask is the denial world they created by making each victim wear a mask that electrocutes them if they do not pretend and act like their programmers are good. These movies are used to bury all memories of who this actor is and what he is really doing.

Chapter 18

Exposing the Darkness

"Behold, I will make those of the synagogue of Satan who say that they are Jews and are not, but lie—behold, I will make them come and bow down before your feet and they will learn that I have loved you." Revelation 3:9

Now I go and speak at every opportunity to share about the truth of sex trafficking. This is a great passion of mine to set the captive free. Sex trafficking is a small piece of what the Illuminati does, but if I can't get people to believe that there are sex trafficking victims here in the southern part of the United States, how will I ever get them to believe and fight with me against the evil Illuminati mind control? During one of my ministry times, I was weeping loudly at the depth of my being because of the sadness I felt that people did not believe the truth about what millions of people are enduring here in the US. Jesus showed me that He was weeping too and that He is very sad that people do not believe, especially His people. He said that they do not know. They have been deceived and have been clouded in their vision. Throw off the clouds and deception of denial brought by the enemy, and chose to see the truth of what is happening in this nation. The freedom of millions of people depends upon it! The freedom of your children depends upon it. Your freedom depends upon it.

There were so many times that Papa God brought an avalanche of healing through a word or a small thing that I never would have thought He would use to heal me. I was at a women's conference called the Ball in the Fall. I went to the restroom, and I couldn't get the toilet paper off of the roll, I was annoyed, and I finally tore a jagged piece of toilet paper off. Papa God said, "This is like healing. It's not perfect. It's a little at a time, jagged and torn, but I will heal all of you a little at a time. Papa God can use the smallest things and normal everyday things to speak to us. Papa God went on to say this is how you are qualified to speak to other people. You are not perfect. You are in process just like every other person." This showed me that He will bring up every lie and memory in His Timing in His way, and He will flush all of those lies down the toilet, never to return. After that, there was a little girl about three or four years old with a pretty dress and tiara on, sitting in front of me; and she turned around, smiled, and showed me her tiara. At that moment, Papa God said, "Those parts of yourself that you were told are monsters, werewolves, vampires, and pure evil, I see them just like I see this little girl." My view of myself changed in that moment, and I began to cry. I was just a little girl with a beautiful dress and tiara, the royalty of Papa God, even at the deepest darkest part of my being. Papa said, "If that little girl asked for something to eat, would you give her things that you knew would kill her, or would you give her things that were going to strengthen her and bring her life?" At that moment, I knew that I had been feeding my body things that I knew would kill me, and that I had been doing that because I wanted to kill those parts of myself. Feeding your body well is loving yourself and being kind to yourself.

Another revelation Papa God brought about my identity happened when I was working through a memory with some amazing friends that I have. They minister to many SRA survivors. During that ministry, Papa God showed me He was digging a jewel out of the sand on a beautiful beach. When He got to the jewel, the jewel shone so bright I was blinded. The stone was green like beryl. He said that the jewel was me. I was shining brightly just because that is who I was created to be, not because I did anything. A jewel just shines! Then He showed me the evil people taking the jewel and sanding it, throwing it, stomping it, and burying it. That is what the evil people were doing to me. They were trying to bury and destroy who I genuinely was created to be. This brought great healing! At that point, He showed me paintings on the wall that a friend of mine had painted, and He said that that was true beauty. The paintings would not be especially spectacular to people who looked at the surface for beauty, but for people who choose to look deep to see the genuine beauty. They were extraordinarily beautiful. He sees the genuine beauty within us. He sees the colors and creativity and passions. He sees who we really are. My friends have the gift of seeing the beauty that Papa God sees that other people do not. When looking at survivors and victims of satanic ritual abuse and government-sponsored mind control, you have to look past the outside programming and see who Papa God truly formed them to be. This will get you through the depth of the programming, anger, rage, hate, and demonic activity that has been programmed into them to cover up the genuine person created by Papa God!

As I write this book, I'm learning what rest genuinely is meant to be. The evil people programmed me to believe that I would only have rest when I watched TV. I was told this was because they could connect to my mind through the electrical waves and control me. So my entire life, I have been addicted to watching TV. Even though I wanted to do other things, I was driven to watch TV so that I would be controlled. This was the only fake rest that I had. I always felt drained and depressed after watching TV, but I didn't know how to stop. My healing has been layer by layer. So I would get freedom, and then another area would be exposed; then I would fall into watching TV constantly again. This was driven by intense fear and terror. The terror carried electrical currents too. And until I began to address all of the sources of energy attacking me, I was fighting a losing battle. The lady who ministers to me wrote a prayer that Papa God gave her, called the energy-blocking prayer. Since praying that prayer for the first time in my life, I have not had any compulsion to watch TV!

The encouraging part of healing is that once an area is healed by Papa God, that area never again has to be visited. It is over! When we settle with keeping our pain and woundedness, we keep the wounds for a lifetime, and the pain continues. That's why I encourage every single person to seek healing; healing brings abundant life from the hand of Papa God. I don't want to settle for anything other than an authentic life.

Another area of false rest that was programmed into me was eating fast food and sugary foods. If I wanted to make sure I didn't sin, I was tortured to believe that I had to feed myself things that hurt my body. These types of things exist in every person's life, just not to this degree of being programmed to make those choices. The enemy programs people to believe that certain things—whether it's drugs, Facebook, food, or whatever—are the answer for finding rest and peace from our pain. The only rest from pain is a true genuine connection with Papa God. No counterfeit will do what the presence of Papa God will do to bring rest. As I was writing this, I heard Papa God say, now genuinely rest, so automatically my mind went to going to my house and watching TV. Then I thought, you know, I feel at rest now. I was at a place of connection and communion with Papa God. He always teaches us something new every second of every day if we listen.

Another way the evil people connect remotely to victims are through sensors that are put in the body, close to the heart, brain, or other essential organs. The working of the organs creates algorithms that transmit to sensors, and the sensors communicate with the receptors that they have in their satellite system and computers. This is already being done with organ transplants. Hospitals use algorithms to locate the organs of people who need a transplant the most. This has been done for many years, but now people are desensitized to the moral and ethical issues this brings. The evil people use the sensors to scramble the signals so that it makes it feel almost impossible to connect to anybody because of the static and confusion in the atmosphere. There is a literal matrix that is put in place to cause confusion. Then demons are funneled through the rabbit hole or portal. This is what is shown in the movie the *Matrix*. Most sci-fi movies are based on some form of programming. This causes the American people to be desensitized to the truth that there are people who are being tortured, manipulated, and controlled every day. The evil people use encryption keys to keep the mind from going to specific information that is held in the unconscious. This is demonically set up through ritual sacrifice.

There is so much interference with the spirit realm through the electrical wavelengths that the evil people send; it is very difficult to communicate with Papa God. When I take a bath or shower, the static is reduced significantly, because tap water is not conductive. I can talk with Papa God during this time and feel like I'm not warring the entire time. During the times of war, the promise of Psalms 1 is what I cling to.

> Blessed is the one who does not walk in step with the wicked or stand in the way that sinners take or sit in the company of mockers, but whose delight is in the law of the LORD, and who meditates on his law day and night. That person is like a tree planted by streams of water, which yields its fruit in season and whose leaf does not wither—whatever they do prospers. Not so the wicked! They are like chaff that the wind blows away. Therefore the wicked will not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the assembly of the righteous. For the LORD watches over the way of the righteous, but the way of the wicked leads to destruction.

Even as we speak, I'm getting e-mails from the programmers. The e-mails contain hidden messages to me such that when a Christian looked at it, they look as though they are loving kind parents. I have been told by Christians, "Why don't you just sit down with them and work things out?" This infuriates me, because they have no idea about the level of evil that these people are operating in; they are taken over by evil completely. Not only do they choose Satan willingly with knowledge of the Word and who Papa God is. They gave their entire creation over to Satan to be used for whatever, whenever, and however. There is no limit to the evil that can be done through a person who has given up their created body of the Almighty Papa God over to Satan. They have made their choice.

The most recent e-mail I received from the programmers was about Yom Kippur, the day of atonement. To Christians and other people looking with their natural eyes, this is just an innocent e-mail. But to a victim who has been tortured around Yom Kippur and forced to be used as an atonement for other people's sins, this is a message of terror. Also, the day of atonement was used to make us turn against Papa God, and they would say that he required "us," the people with mixed breed status, to find another way of atonement. He refused to die or atone for our sins. Papa God in my healing process showed me that His blood flows through my veins; ultimately, He is the source of all DNA and bloodlines. People have a difficult time accepting this because they put such emphasis on genetic and biological family, and that is important, but spiritual family is the most important and the source of all real family that is above all other family. If we could as the body of Christ begin to see things in this light, we would have much more compassion and unity in the church. Instead of fighting against each other, we would see that we are all brothers and sisters in Christ. We are a family that will be together for eternity. Why shouldn't we have each other's backs? Why shouldn't we encourage each other and support each other?

Currently, the last form of harassment has been a threat to sue me. I did an online interview, and the programmers contacted the lady who interviewed me. They intimidated and threatened to sue. They continue to send e-mails and use other victims to try and manipulate me to be quiet. They had a victim donate to my ministry with a specific amount that was donated that triggered deep memories. For example, five dollars was donated, and they had told me that if I ever told anybody about what they were doing, they would eliminate me. The number five was the number of people in the house where I was enslaved. There were two programmers, and two other victims, plus myself. The five would be brought to four, when they killed me. In rituals, they would torture me and say that they had removed me from the five. Then they would put me in a cage and act like they didn't see me. I didn't exist. So now they are trying to silence me because they know I'm talking. If I don't say something, who will? If I don't stand up, who will? I refuse to sit around and play things safe when other people are dying and being tortured every day. That is not who Papa God created me to be.

How about you? Are you going to live a comfortable life, or the life that Papa God intended for you to live? Because that life will bring peace but not comfort. He is always pushing us out of our comfort zones to grow and to soar higher. He has great things for us if we step out of our comfort and choose to listen to His voice and follow His plan. He may be saying to you, "This is real. Believe this," and your mind is saying there is no way this could have really happened. Ask Papa God to show You what voice to listen to. Satan will always try to use our logical mind against us, but our logical mind is a gift from Papa God. It's the lies that the enemy uses against us that try to distort our logical mind. That is why it takes genuine faith to walk with Papa God, to see past the natural into the spiritual. I pray that every Christian will begin to walk in the Spirit and listen to Papa God's voice. He is crying out for us to be free. Will you hear Him please?

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

The Two Kinds of Amnesia

The two kinds of amnesia

The two kinds of amnesia

When a survivor does not remember a particular event or experience, there are two basic possibilities. One is that the part of that person, who participated in that event or experience, vowed to forget what transpired. The other possibility is that a different part of that person participated in that event or that experience, and there are "barriers" between the different parts that prevent communication, mutual awareness, or permits awareness in only one direction (e.g.: part A always know what part B does, but part B does not even realize that part A exists).

Amnesia due to agreements to forget what happened

In the first case, where the parts of the survivor who participated in the event or experience vowed to forget it, it is important to explore why that part of the survivor agreed to forget. Was it to protect a loved one? (E.g.: The person was told "If you remember, your mother will die." Was it to protect that part's own sanity or sense of goodness? (E.g.: The person was told, "If you remember, you will go crazy," or, "If you forget, God will also forget your sin.") Was it to display loyalty? (E.g.: The person was told, "If you forget, that protects the group because you will then never divulge our secrets).

This type of amnesia is very common for the "day time" or "normal" parts of the person who have no memory of any cult activity. Often, these parts make up the "person" who first comes to therapy and believes that it is the other parts who have participated in cult activity and are programmed. In fact, the "day time" or "normal" parts of a survivor are also programmed and also participate in cult activity – but they are under vows to forget and be completely amnesic.

These reasons will need to be addressed with truth, support and love. For instance, some important truths to share with parts to challenge their agreement to forget can be "remembering does not mean you are betraying the group", "remembering will not drive you crazy", "remembering does not mean that you are evil", "when you were little and you remembered then people died and there was a big earthquake – that was a set up in a programming studio – that does not really happen in real life". Prayer is critical – ask God what it is that the survivor needs to

see about being afraid to remember. Often, it is difficult for the survivor (or the therapist!) to know precisely what truth that the traumatized parts need to hear the most – but G
exactly what the survivor needs. As part of addressing this type of amnesia, the following can be part of the healing process:

- Renouncing the agreements/vows/covenants to forget; asking God for the truth
- Repenting for all sins involved in the making of the agreements/vows/covenants – rituals, sacrifices, sexual acts, etc.
- Breaking all unholy ties with the others involved in the agreements/vows/covenants
- Renouncing agreements for any sort of punishment or retaliation to fall on self or loved ones in the event that the survivor remembers; asking God to provide protection for self and loved ones, for blessing
- Renouncing the belief that remembering leads to horrible consequences and the program to not remember must not be broken; affirming that knowing the truth brings freedom and healing – being mind-controlled to forget brings harm
- Repenting for all sins involved in whatever events that the amnesia was meant to cover
- Asking God to heal all traumas involved

Amnesia due to different parts participating in the event or experience

The second type of amnesia is when a different part of the person participated in that event or that experience, and there are “barriers” between the different parts that prevent communication, mutual awareness, or permits awareness in only one direction (e.g.: part A always know what part B does, but part B does not even realize that part A exists). For instance, if an assassin part has done a hit the night before, typically the “normal”/ “daytime” part of the person who is a kindergarten teacher will have absolutely no idea what happened, due to the barriers between these two different parts. She might feel a little tired from having less sleep than usual, maybe even slightly depressed (or not at all), but she will not have any memory of the event.

In this type of amnesia, the “barriers” are installed very early in the person’s childhood and are reinforced throughout the person’s lifetime. The “barrier” is most fundamentally a refusal between parts to communicate. Barriers are installed in a few basic ways:

- “Cult parts” are put through various set-ups to make them refuse to let the “normal/daytime” parts know what they do. E.g.: When a child the very young, the two different sets of parts are allowed to be “out” in the body at the same time. The emotions of the day time parts prevent the cult parts from doing their duties. The day time parts are cued back in and only the cult parts get punished by the programmer. The cult parts are then told that they should never let the day parts know what is going on or the cult parts would become “weak” and incompetent.
- “Day/ normal” parts are taught to fear knowing anything that the cult parts do. E.g.: When the child is very young, the cult parts are cued out then told to kill. The “day /normal” parts are then cued out and are horrified by the murder. The programmer then tells the child they can “make it all go away” by building a wall between them and the “bad parts” inside. The programmer then helps the child to build a wall in front of corpse and tells the child that that takes all the badness away.
- Both “cult parts” and “day/normal parts” are taught to believe that being in the body at the same time and sharing information will lead to great pain and destruction. E.g. When the child is very young, the programmers cue both set of parts out, then tortures then child or a

loved one in front of the child. The torture stops when one set of parts go back in deeper. The programmer than warns the child that the two sets of parts must never be out at the same time or share information.

- Some parts are programmed to be memory "buffers" i.e. they stand between different groups of parts to block any communication or sharing of memories. E.g.: When the child is very young, she or he is placed in a large room. On one side of the room are people engaged in "normal" activities. In the other side of the room, people are engaged in "cult activities". If people from one of the room engage with the other side, both are "killed" (the child is typically too young to recognize the staged deaths). The child tries to stop the communication and is praised when she does so. The programmer tells these parts of the child that their job is to prevent disaster by preventing different sets of people from communicating.

Healing this kind of amnesia involved addressing the reasons that parts have for maintaining any "barriers" to communication, for not telling and not knowing. The survivor is put through multiple traumatic experiences from a very young age; the examples above list only a small sample of the "programming set-ups" used to convince different parts to remain isolated from one another and under control of the group. As with the first type of amnesia, prayer for truth, exposure of the lies involved in the belief system running the programming and healing of traumas involved is critical. As part of the healing process for this type of amnesia, the process can include:

- Renouncing the agreements/vows/covenants for parts to never communicate, never be aware of each other, and/or to despise or fear each other
- Repenting for all sins involved in the making of the agreements/vows/covenants – rituals, sacrifices, sexual acts, etc.
- Breaking all unholy ties with the others involved in the agreements/vows/covenants
- Renouncing agreements for any sort of punishment or retaliation to fall on self or loved ones in the event that the parts communicate; asking God to provide protection for self and loved ones, for blessing
- Renouncing the belief that parts communicating leads to horrible consequences and the program to not communicate must not be broken; affirming that knowing the truth and getting to know each other inside brings freedom and healing – being mind-controlled to stay separate brings harm
- Repenting for all sins involved in whatever events that the lack of communication is meant to hide
- Asking God to heal all traumas involved

Share this:

Twitter
Facebook

Loading...

Blog at WordPress.com.

richm
Your address

Your phone number
Your e-mail address

(Your agent's name)
(Your agent's address)

77,000 words

The Thread

by

Contents

Foreword

"My father," Jeanne blinked, struggling to gain some composure, "was Adolf Hitler."

"You're lying," I said, but I knew that she couldn't be. "The drug - you have to tell the truth." She nodded. Suddenly, everything made sense. I knew that she had been involved in the German American Bund and its predecessor group and that my family had some connection to the CIA. I even suspected that the organization was a front for Nazis living in America, but this was the key to everything. As the evening went on I took every opportunity to ask every question I could think of. I learned things that many people had been killed to protect.

We're not there yet, though. I'm writing this manuscript, manifesto, testament - call it what you will - to shed as much light on the secrets and lies that have kept the Reich in power and the world in a state of constant conflict. Everything I've done, learned, failed at and triumphed in will be covered as best I can in the medium. Where possible I will include footnotes and references to evidence but in some cases I only have my words and memories.

Treating the Reich and its members like other people is a mistake. They are people that have chosen inhumanity - cannibalism, cruelty, and rape are du jeur for them. It is possible for people to come back from that, but it requires a choice on their part. They cannot be approached with the benefit of the doubt.

They view Americans as a subjugated people, whose only duty is to be supplicant to their rulers. They see us as livestock in the truest sense of the word. It will never be known exactly how many people they have devoured in their barbecues and orgies and rituals but the number must be at least in the thousands.

To say that this endeavor is my life's work is an understatement. My earliest memories are formed around my experiences with my family and the CIA has followed me my entire life. It was only when I started to pry deeper into the things that I took for granted that the walls around me began to crumble and I saw my prison for what it was. My testimony will form the basis of this book, but I will do my best to illuminate and comment where I feel like further understanding would be valuable. I started this manuscript on August 5th, 2020 because I knew that when the time came, getting it out there to the public as soon as possible would help in the understanding of how we got here and how we might even begin to heal from this.

There are some elements of this that seem fantastical - the prophecy from Aliester Crowley and the summoning of the Moonchild in particular. I started out 2019 as an ardent atheist but that is no longer a tenable position for me to hold. For this to all be random would require for coincidences that would otherwise be astronomically unlikely to occur to fall neatly into place. I don't make any claim of divinity but someone out there is watching my back. Maybe it's God, aliens, time travelers or some force unimaginable by humankind - but there is something out there and it wanted this to come to light.

The world now has something it didn't have before - knowledge of the groups and individuals who shaped much of the last century to their horrible designs. It isn't going to be easy to move forward and re-imagine what our world can be but we must.

We need a doctor, a mending, a promise. A hope that tomorrow will be better than today. I hope that you see me for what I am - a man doing his best in a world where that isn't good enough. Many of you feel the same way, even if you're afraid to admit it. Admitting that you're wrong about something is painful, in a way, but it opens your heart to the possibility of healing from that pain. As we step into the future, I hope to be your guide.

If you want the juicy bits, skip to the end and know that key elements of this testimony were provided to Senator Bernie Sanders on July 15th 2019 at Hahnemann Hospital in Philadelphia and were entered into a timestamped Congressional lockbox as soon as possible afterwards.

Chapter One

1987

I was brought to a gathering at a house out on Long Island. There was a pond in the backyard and a small wooded area near the driveway. There were multiple stories of the house and I remember that the kitchen was a dark stained wood with an exit to the backyard and a room above it with a window looking out.

When we first arrived, there was a small area where the children met each other. Eventually, we were all told to gather, so I went with my family. There was a speaker - an older, wrinkled man with short brilliant white hair and a tiny, wiry frame. I was instructed to heil to him and shown what that meant. He was someone from Hitler's inner circle - I believe that it was Himmler.

He went on a long rant about how we were hiding in the shadows and should be open and proud that the Nazis conquered America. He said that where he lived, he wore his medals and uniform in public. He also said that he had done so at a local grocery store on the way there and the group had admonished him. I believe it was a Piggly Wiggly and that the story made it to the regional news.

Tom and Rick were angered by this and one of them shouted that this wasn't their country that it was Hitler's wish that they remain in the shadows. The man replied that maybe that was so, but he didn't want to have to interact with subhuman filth in his day to day.

I was introduced to him as the heir to the Reich and he sized me up. I don't remember what he said to me, but shortly after, they brought out another child. I pointed and exclaimed to Rick that there was another child who hadn't been with the others and he quieted me, telling me that child was food. They sacrificed him and roasted the body over a fire.

Afterwards I cried and asked Rick if they were going to do that to me and he said no. I asked why had the boy looked so much like me? They drugged me and told me that only a few were sacrificed like that and I would never be.

Later that evening, Tom approached Rick and suggested that they kill the Nazi. He felt like what he said to the crowd was too judgmental and that he felt that they had done good work with the Fourth Reich. Rick agreed, but said that is mother wouldn't be too happy if they killed him. So, Tom suggested that I do it. They were building me up to be their heir and savior and were recording my actions with a scribe, so they would tell him that I chose to kill him.

To that end, they brought me up to the room above the kitchen area. Tom set up a rifle and had it aimed to where the Nazi would be siting. He made me pull the trigger, which fired the gun and hit him in the upper body. It didn't kill him but it knocked him down and he was writhing in pain. Tom and Rick rushed me down to finish the job.

Tom turned him over and covered his mouth as he cursed at them. As we gathered around him, a man carrying a gun approached from the driveway and asked who they were. Tom and Rick identified as Reich and the man identified as with another group. He seemed like Mossad, but it was dark and I didn't spot any insignia. He had orders to kill the Nazi but as it appeared they had that in hand, he left. I don't recall if Tom later reported him or let him go.

Tom and Rick then instructed me to hold my foot down against the side of his neck. I asked them why and they said that it would kill him. I asked why they wanted to kill him and they reminded me it was because of before. I remembered that he was racist and asked if that was the reason. Tom laughed, saying that racism was kind of their whole deal. He clarified that, no, it was because he was a threat to the Reich.

I did what I was told. I don't remember if that was what killed the man or if he lost too much blood from the gunshot wound or if Tom or Rick finished the job. I know that he died and then, right after he died, Tom suggested for extra effect that I almost drown but miraculously survive. He pointed at the pond, which was frozen over.

Rick wasn't so sure about that idea, but Tom insisted. They brought me to the water and I hung on for dear life as they tried to drown me. Once they got me into the water, Tom told me that when people drown, water goes in their nose and lungs and that they would only let me out once I let that happen. I took a big gulp and let the water in and I felt burning and began to sink.

They immediately pulled me out and carried me to the kitchen. I hadn't lost consciousness but I felt dull and cold and could barely move. I coughed up the water in my lungs pretty much immediately, but I was starting to get hypothermia.

They got my cold clothes off and started a hot shower, but I was close to losing consciousness. The Reich believed in magic, so Tom suggested they look up a "spell". Really, in hindsight, he had me pick a German language book off the shelf and since Rick didn't read German, he told Rick that the "spell" was for him to rape me in a hot shower.

They took off my winter jacket and stripped me down. Rick brought me into the shower and did what Tom told him. He kept me in the hot water long enough for me to gain enough body temperature back to be awake and aware. I don't know if I was actually raped or not, but I believed I had been.

The next morning they called in the scribe - a middle-aged man with a dark gray and white beard. He was Catholic - I don't recall if he was assigned by the Vatican or part of the Reich or both. He was later killed at his office by the same organization that the soldier from the night before was from. He listened to Tom and Rick's account, then turned to me.

He asked me what happened in my own words and was surprised that they had convinced me to kill or at least attempt to kill the man. I insisted that was what happened and he included it in his notes but insisted on noting that it was done through the direct guidance and instruction of my father and my uncle.

#

When Jean had discovered what Tom and Rick had me do, she was furious and insisted that I speak with his widow. She flew me down to a country in Central or South America - I remember that there was a large mansion that was mostly empty - it may have been Hitler's former vacation home.

She had me meet with his wife in a large wood-floored room with tall windows on the wall. Jean had me explain what had happened and she became angry. She ranted about how her husband was a great and powerful man and I was telling her that he died in an accident - killed by some child?

At this point, Jean interjected and told her that I wasn't just any child and told me to tell her my full name. I did - Ernest Adolph Marin. She was surprised. She took my face in her hands to examine my features. "Oh," she exclaimed, "then the Reich truly has its future!" She insisted to Jean that I was Adolf Hitler reincarnated. Jean humored her and allowed her to give me several gifts.

She gave me a flat wooden music box that played Eidel Weiss as well as a collection of photos of Hitler, her husband, and their inner circle. She insisted that I look at the pictures every day and try to remember them. The items were packed into a small suitcase (speckled tan) and we brought them with us when we left.

The plane took off from a small runway in a very rural area. Federal authorities in the nation we were leaving knew of the Reich's presence there. After that flight, Jean brought me back to my parents.

Rick sealed up all of the items in the suitcase except for the music box, which my mother kept in their bedroom. The suitcase was put in the attic at the time, though it may have since been moved to my childhood bedroom closet. They may also have moved the items to somewhere else or discarded them completely.

#

After a play session at the local YMCA, my mother brought me home and Jean was there. She asked me if I wanted to see how TV was made. I said yes and so did my mother but Jean said that she couldn't come on the plane because she was pregnant. Even if she wasn't it was really something intended just for me. My mother was upset but let her take me anyway.

We drove to an airport and boarded a small private jet. I took a nap during the trip there and when we landed I was surprised at how hot and sunny it was. We were driven by private car to a studio and before we entered she said that I would probably recognize the set and I did - it was the Cheers bar set. There was a studio audience and a large crowd in the set itself. It was made up to look like a wedding. The street portion outside the door was put away - only the stairs were there.

She waved towards two men, Glen and Les Charles and said that she was from Central and wanted to show her grandson how TV was made. They said that they were about to shoot and she suggested that I be put in the crowd scene, selecting two prominent "guests" a woman in a blue jacket seated next to a man and telling me to sit between them. The show runners didn't really seem to be able to protest. The director started the scene and I asked the people if this was a wedding. I was confused because that wasn't really what the show was about in my mind.

I kept asking questions and then Ted Danson said that he couldn't concentrate with me talking. Shelley Long said something about going back to one and Ted said that he would miss having her as a scene partner. George Wendt said, "Sorry everybody, that's why we don't usually let kids in the bar."

The director put me in the pool room set and asked George and Rhea to watch me while they took some tight shots because they wouldn't be in that part of the scene. I had gone in my diaper and asked them if they were able to change it. They said no and that my grandmother should be able to, but I said that she didn't have the bag that my mother kept changing supplies in.

They got called out to finish their scenes and I waited. The wedding was completed with a yes and everyone cheered. Jean came into get me and Glen and Les told her not to feel too bad, that they weren't going to use it since Shelley's contract negotiations had fallen through. She rejected the 250k offer and instead took a lower deal with a movie studio that would let her take more time to be with her daughter.

Jean said that there needed to be a new actress to take on a similar role - a brunette who wanted to be involved in things more. The implication that I understood was that Diane and later Rebecca were both intended to be ciphers for my mother and Sam, apparently, my father.

We left and on the flight home Jean made me wait in the plane bathroom with my dirty diaper. When I saw the airing of the episode I recognized the extras.

#

After I first started to walk and talk in complete sentences, my mother walked with me around the neighborhood and told me to introduce myself. She said that I should say my nick name Ernie and that my full name was Ernest Adolph Marin and that if someone said something about my middle name to tell them it was spelled differently.

I introduced myself to a couple of neighbors - if they thought there was anything odd they didn't say anything. As we walked down 202 towards the downtown area, I introduced myself to a woman who teared up when I said my middle name. She looked at my mother and asked "How could you?" My mother told her that they were trying to honor my German heritage. We walked back to the house and my mother told my father what had happened.

He called Jean and said that they had a problem. He said that he didn't want the whole neighborhood to know that they were Nazis. She told him that the couple blocks we lived on were safe territory and that most of the people living there were involved in the agency in some capacity so they could handle that internally. He said that it wasn't and she said it was probably fine, but they would need to change my name. She said that she appreciated what they tried to do, but my middle name would have always been an issue. She said that she would be by later in the evening and for them to think about a new name in the meantime.

My parents asked for ideas and she suggested family names, like before, but honoring different members of the family. My parents settled on Richard Anthony.

When Jean arrived, she said that getting it changed federally was no problem since they controlled that. Changing it with the state would probably involve paying a fee or bribe, she wasn't clear. She said that the big thing to worry about was private companies like insurers who would purchase lists for solicitation. She suggested that my parents name my sister, who my mother was pregnant with, something that used the same initials to throw them off.

#

I was just barely starting to walk - my mother still mostly carried me around. I must have been around a year old. We had visited my grandparents and in the days leading up to the trip I overheard my father talking to Jean on a phone about how it was time to do something specific. When we left, we were accompanied by a man named Chris.

I don't remember if we went to their house first, but we did pick up my Aunt Emma's boyfriend for a game of golf. Emma was not in attendance, I think she had gone shopping with my grandmother. When they reached a certain point in the game, Chris scouted behind and confirmed that no one was close enough to see. My father pulled out a gun and told Emma's boyfriend to kneel down on the ground in front of them. My mother was holding me.

He was immediately scared and did as he was told and asked why Rick had a gun and what was going on. He assumed that it was related to organized crime and said he was paid up on books as far as he knew. He also asked my mother if it was because of the pass he made at her during the Christmas party. My father said that it wasn't about that. He said that his mother was a queen and she said that he had to die. The boyfriend asked how Rick admired his mother had anything to do with having a gun pointed at him. Rick clarified that she was a literal queen and that he was to die by royal decree.

He asked to see the decree and Rick said it wasn't on paper - her word was law. Margie chimed in and clarified that Jean had told her that she had to kill someone in order for her to be a part of the royal family and he was selected as the person that would make the least impact. He asked what Jean was queen of and Rick said all of this, gesturing outwards. America. There was a coup involving the Nazis and men wearing hoods but it was too complicated to get into.

He handed Margie the gun and she set me down to her left, holding my hand. He begged for his life and said that Emma would be devastated. Margie started crying and turned to Rick and said she couldn't do it but he said that she had to, that was why Chris was there to confirm it was her who pulled the trigger.

He said that he had an engagement ring in a box in his dresser. Margie asked him where exactly. He admitted that he didn't, but would get one if that was what it would take to save his life. Margie only asked so that if there was one, she could get rid of it before Emma found it to lessen the blow. At that point, I panicked and realized that someone was about to be killed. I broke free from her grasp and ran.

Chris went after me and caught up quickly. I was stumbling as I wasn't used to walking, let alone running. I looked up at him and said what might have been one of my first full sentences, "They're killing someone back there." He looked at me and said that my family were the ones killing someone and he had to bring me back to them.

Instead of going to them, he brought me to an SUV while my mother shot the man in the chest. My mother came over and Chris and my father brought the body in and put it in the back, covered with a sheet. Chris dialed a number on a large, old-style cell phone and gave it to my mother - it was Emma on the other end.

Margie told Emma that her boyfriend had a heart attack and Emma asked if they were at the hospital and how he was doing. Margie struggled with the words and choked out, "He's dead."

Emma explained, "How do you know he's dead? Did the paramedics take a look at him?"

Chris offered, "Say he turned blue, that's something that happens with a really bad heart attack." Margie said that and Emma broke down crying. We returned to my grandparents house and Chris dropped off my parents and me.

Emma was devastated, but started talking about how she would need to make arrangements for the funeral. She was also unsure of where she would live since he paid most of the rent on their apartment. My father took me home to gather clothes and for toys for an extended stay for the funeral.

The next couple of days were a bit of a blur but I remember at the funeral my mother commenting that it didn't look like he had been shot and my father saying that the holes were usually small on the chest. The next big event I recalled was sleeping in one of the guest bedrooms and hearing Margie talking about how guilty she felt. Rick said that sometimes, his mother told him it helps to drug the person you want to admit something to with the hyocine and confess to them, so your guilt would be unburdened and they wouldn't remember.

She said that she wanted to do that, so they got out of bed and brought me with them. Emma was downstairs and they injected her in the arm with the needle. My mother told her that she was responsible for this and Emma asked her if she made him have a heart attack. My mother said no, but she caused him to die and she was sorry. At that point, my Grandpa Tony came in. He asked what was going on and Emma explained what my mother had said. He told my parents to go up to his study and he would talk to Emma.

They did and we waited for a few minutes. When he entered the room, he shut the door, sat behind his desk, and asked what this was about. Margie told him and he immediately recognized it as an initiation killing. He had been required to do one, too. He said that it was important to view it as the cost of protection and to use that protection to be better equipped to take down the Reich.

My mother told him that part of the condition of her initiation was that she woulld never try to do that. Tony said that maybe that was the case, but she should never accept this as the status quo. This is a dark time for America and that darkness persists, but it will come into light some day.

#

Shortly after Margie's initiation killing, Allison was watching me at my parent's house in Suffern. Unknown to my parents, she invited a journalist she was working with to uncover and expose the Reich. I don't remember his name, but he wanted to get me away from my parents, especially after I told him that they killed someone in front of me. My parents discovered that Allison had invited him over and banned her from looking after me. They told Jean about what happened and she formulated a plan. She invited me over to Astoria and showed me that someone had spliced her phone line with a listening device. She got on the phone to confirm a hotel reservation for that weekend at the Ritz Carlton. On the line she said that it was for Sunday but in person she had made it for Saturday.

That weekend, she brought me to the room and there were around five other children there who were around my age - some a bit older. She had us play and watch a movie, but as we talked, we realized that a couple of the parents had treated them as if they were never going to see them again after they were dropped off or picked up by agents. One was given a bracelet as a going away gift.

We asked Jean about this and she sighed expressing that she wished she could keep up the ruse longer. We were drugged and compliant, so she told us to watch a movie, then began to eat the other children. She was on stimulants which increased digestive transit time so that she could eat as much as she wanted. She made comments about which child she was defecating the flesh of.

She bit me on the right forearm as I got too close to her while she was devouring another child. She took a picture of us before the slaughter - I don't know how many other photos she took. It was terrifying. We tried to stay clustered together, but she pulled off each child one by one and after killing each and eating some of their raw flesh, she stowed their bodies in plastic bags in the closet.

Eventually, there was just two of us left. As Jean approached me and the last surviving child, a girl, we clung together and I shouted "One boy and one girl" at her. This stopped her in her tracks and she demanded to know who had told me that. I said no one, it just sounded right. She said that there was a prophecy that ended with the Reich revealing themselves with their own words, but she believed that it meant they would win.

She told me that the life she would lead would be hard and make her wish she had died then and there. The girl said it wouldn't matter as long as she was able to live. She later thanked me for saving her and tried to tell me that she was living somewhere where it got colder sooner in winter. I didn't realize that she was someone who I already knew - Jordan, who used to live around the corner from me. Even though we were young, prior to her move, we were best friends.

After she was taken away, a manager of the Ritz Carlton came in to see if everything was okay because there had been complaints. He was drugged, but he saw the stains of blood and excrement on the carpet from Jean's feeding. He said something along the lines of "This won't do at all, someone will have to clean this up." Jean said she would have someone do that, but later had him killed because he had seen too much.

When we left, it was morning. Outside, Allison and the reporter intercepted her thinking she was on the way to kill the children. They were crestfallen when they realized that she had already done so.

Jean had both of them drugged and Allison was sent to my parents. Jean took the reporter into her car and sent him with agents who she would later follow to a second location - a frozen lake in upstate New York. She came to my parents' after and told Allison that she had cut out his tongue and drowned him in the water.

As a "consolation" she promised to put out a post-humus collection of his work, edited to ensure that nothing incriminating was included. I don't know if this was ever released.

Chapter Two

1988

When I was about 2 1/2, my parents received an invitation to a wedding in upstate New York. My father said that he knew the groom from selling "records" out of the back of cars around a decade prior. In 2018, during a later incident recorded here, he told me that "records" was code for heroin and other drugs distributed specifically in black and Puerto Rican neighborhoods. His friend was promoted to station chief at some point in the intervening period between the 70's and the wedding.

The invitation for the wedding specifically said "No Children" but my father wanted me to be able to come anyway. He told my mother that a lot of military and security brass would be there and that he wanted to introduce me around. He said that if I was going to end up in the role I was being groomed for, that it would be good for me to meet these people.

Jean bought me a blue suit similar to a military uniform. She and Richie babysat Emily, who was just around a year old at that point. We drove to the venue for the reception in my father's blue hatchback - he referred to it as the Bozo car because it looked tiny but could fit the whole family. I don't recall if we went to the wedding, but I recall security guards with machine guns checking the car and the trunk before the valet took it at the reception.

The reception venue was in the woods, with a window behind the head table overlooking the area below. It might have been a view of the Hudson, we were sitting at the back so I did not get a good look.

Windows
Bride
Groom
Alan Cambey
Susan & Husband
Dinne & Husband
Mom Me Dad
Doors
Shooter
Guard
Hall
Driveway
&
Parking
area
Men's room
Front
Entrance

My father introduced me to a few of the people there. He told them that I was Jean's grandson and they seemed to know what that meant. An older man, who I later recognized as Alan Cambey, said that I looked like a roo which I was confused by until it was explained to be a baby kangaroo.

After appetizers and other food was served, my mother told me that I should go to the bathroom because the speeches were going to start soon. I did and, when I returned, the guard to the left looked at me in shock.

He said that there weren't supposed to be any kids there and I apologized. His partner looked at him and asked why it was a problem if kids were there. He said it wasn't, he just didn't like kids. The guard asked me where I was sitting - I told him that I was sitting in the back left with my mom and dad. He said okay, go straight in and turn left. His partner grew more suspicious and, as I ran in to my parents, I heard him shoot his friend. The next few moments felt like they happened slowly but it must have only been a couple minutes.

Everyone started screaming and ducking and running as the shooter came in. He shot Alan in the shoulder as well as a couple of other guests. My mother held me close but my father ran out behind the shooter, following some of the guests. The shooter pointed his gun at the head table towards the groom.

He shouted to the bride that this was all for her, that he knew that they were in love so he had a friend waiting in a car outside and a plane fueled up and ready to take them out of the country. She looked confused, like she wasn't sure what was happening. She told him that he looked familiar, but she didn't remember their relationship. He exclaimed that it was "those damn drugs" and asked her to try to remember.

He addressed the groom next, yelling at him for manipulating her and trying to get him to admit what he had done. He also shouted at Alan about having sex with his own daughters but Alan didn't respond - he was playing dead. The groom refused to engage and, in a moment, suddenly pulled the bride in front of him as he tried to escape behind her. The shooter was startled and let out a volley of bullets that hit the bride in the chest. She convulsed for a few seconds and then went still. There were deep red spots on her dress.

The shooter let out an anguished cry, "You killed her!"

The groom replied, "Well actually, you'll find that you k..." and he was interrupted by the shooter advancing and firing two rounds directly into the groom's head. The glass behind him was splattered with blood, bone, and brain matter. It looked like strawberry jam.

The shooter looked up at the ceiling and cried out, "Oh God, what have I done?" then asked the bride to forgive him before shooting himself upwards through the mouth, splattering on the ceiling.

My mother kept telling me to not look, that they were just sleeping. I didn't understand why their eyes were open. The only other people left in the room were the other victims and people sheltering in place. After around what felt like ten minutes, more guards came in along with a woman who was there to assess what had gone wrong and how to prevent something similar from happening in the future.

She took me aside and someone gave my mother a glass of water with drugs in it to make her forget. She asked me what had happened and I described what I remembered to the best of my ability. She told me that my mother was trying to sugarcoat it, but yes, people had died. I asked her if the shooters friend waiting for him would die too and she said that they would give him drugs and question why he did it, but yes, for something this serious, they would execute him.

She told me that my mother would forget but my father would remember but have to not act like he forgot. She said that I was too young to administer the drugs so I would have to act like I forgot, too. When they brought my father back in, my mother yelled at him for abandoning us. He claimed that he had made a strategic exit hoping that the shooter wouldn't want to hurt a woman with her child. As we left to drive home, I saw the shooter's friend being questioned by the woman - he looked dazed.

Around one or two weeks later, my mother received a call informing her that the bride and groom had died in a large car accident on their way back from the wedding. I asked her why we were just finding out now and she said that something like that takes time to sort out. I asked her if other people died or got hurt, too. She said yes. I asked her more questions not understanding what had happened. She didn't remember.

I went to my father, remembering what the woman had told me. I asked him about the crash. He said that if that's what they said happened, that's what I should act like happened. He said that cover-ups like that happened all the time.

#

When I was younger, my grandfather Tony Taurisano used to come over to my parents' house frequently. One day, he came over and convinced my mother to let him take me out for the day. We drove to a location that I believed was a listening post - it would later become the site of Cambey & West. He convinced the guard on duty to give him a tour because, as he claimed, he was former army and he wanted me to see what it was like.

The guard allowed him in under close supervision, but as soon as we were in, my grandfather stole the guard's side-arm and shot him in the leg. He rushed us into an office at the right side of the hall and had me hide behind the desk. I asked if the guard was hurt and he said that it was nothing a few weeks in the hospital wouldn't heal. I asked him if he shot someone, wouldn't he go to jail? He was working on unlocking a computer behind a locked wall cage. He said that they wouldn't want people to know that he had shot him so they wouldn't report it to the police.

At that point, he shouted out that that he had me there and that they shouldn't try anything. The guards stayed at the end of the hall, waiting for someone higher up to come in. My grandfather turned to me once he had the lock open and said that this was the part he needed me for. He picked me up and showed me the computer. I was familiar with how to use computers from using my father's, so I helped him turn it on and then it prompted him for the password. I told him that my dad normally knew the password. He looked upset, but I mentioned that sometimes I saw my dad write it down, so he started looking around the desk when the man who's office it was, Alan Cambey came in.

He told my grandfather that he wasn't dumb enough to leave his password written down and that, besides, the orders had already been transmitted. Those people are already dead, he said. My grandfather set the gun on the desk and let them take him into custody. They put him in handcuffs and set the both of us in the backseat of his Mercedes-Benz. One of the soldiers drove us back to my parent's house and let my grandfather out of the handcuffs. They told my mother that he could only see me under supervision going forward.

My mother was furious at him. She asked him what he was thinking, bringing me into it? She told him that she thought he was done with all of that. He said that they were going to kill civilians, it's not like they had anything to do with the conflict. He told her what the Alan said and she agreed - those people were already dead.

She pulled out a vial of the drug and my grandfather said that he didn't need it, he wouldn't do that again. She said that it was for me. He said that it was too dangerous - that I was too young. I agreed, I told her that the lady at the wedding said that. She was confused and asked me what I meant. My grandfather said that something must have happened at the wedding we went to a couple months prior. He said it's different when it's your brain being messed around with. She said that it didn't matter and that it was probably for a good reason.

She measured out an eighth of a vial and put it in my cup. I drank it and immediately felt strange and floaty. After acting strange for a bit, I got tired and took a nap. When I woke up, he had gone home.

In the following weeks, we visited him on Long Island at least once. I remember that he was watching TV and there was coverage of George HW Bush talking about how he would never apologize for America in the wake of the Iran Air shoot down. Tony yelled that the TV that he should because they did, or at least part of their government did.

Chapter Three

1989

I was visiting my family in Astoria and mostly spending time with my Aunt Allison. At one point, Jean called me up as she had a visitor - Lucille Ball. I didn't recognize her and said as much. I asked her if she was my grandma, as at that point Jean was being somewhat open about the fact that she was my biological mother. She said no, but she was someone's grandma. I told her that I didn't believe she was Lucy and she said they shot those episodes over 40 years ago. She then said that she didn't like me because I was being rude to her.

At that point, she told Jean that she really needed to talk to her. Jean asked if it was about business. She said that it sort of was but not about new business. She wanted to talk to her about her legacy. They went towards the far part of the living room and Jean set me in front of the TV near the kitchen. An agent waited in the hall.

Lucy told Jean, calling her Jeannie, that she could feel that the end was near. Jean asked her if it was related to her recent surgery - telling her that she had inserted the line "flurry of well wishers" to the article covering that. Lucy said no, they had fixed it up well but she could feel another burst coming on and she was sure that it was only a matter of time. She said that she felt dizzy and they sat down.

She specifically told Jean that she didn't want anything about "Your father" or the cannibalism to come out. Jean assured her that it was part of the CIA and if all went well, none of that would ever come out. Lucy said that was good and sort of trailed off and Jean started shaking her and calling her name. She was staring blankly at Jean and not blinking. After a moment of trying to revive her, she called back the male agent from the hall.

She told him that "she passed" and he said shit. She asked him how she had come there and he said that she took a commercial plane. She said that people probably didn't recognize her and it didn't seem like she would have wanted to be recognized. She said that they would need to make sure that no one knew that she had traveled to New York because then there would be questions about who she was visiting on such urgent business.

She told him to get a death certificate locally and to tell one of their doctors to put the information they wanted on it. She said to be sure to put whatever time it was in California instead of New York but to otherwise keep the details as accurate as possible in case there was an autopsy. Then, he would need to be put on one of their planes and put her back in her home.

The male agent picked up Lucy from the couch and wasn't sure if he could carry her. Jean told him to put her feet on his feet and walk her out. He did so, but returned after getting her to the stairs, saying that she still had a heartbeat. Jean told him to continue - getting her medical care at this point would open them up to risk and she might blurt out something when she woke up.

He left and Jean turned to me and said that one of the greats had just past. I didn't understand what that meant and pointed to the TV, which was playing I Love Lucy and said that she was right there.

#

There was a family around the block from my parents named the Sinclairs with a son, Eric, around my age. My parents allowed me to walk over and play with him pretty much unsupervised. For the most part we would play with action figures, climb a tree in their backyard - normal kid stuff. One day, Mr Sinclair asked me if I wanted to do something fun.

Eric's older sister, I believe her name was Ariel, was about 16 and she protested. She said that I was a kid and she doubted that my parents would be okay with "it". She also said that she had been asking around with her peers and it wasn't normal for families to do what they were doing - having sex with each other.

I didn't understand what any of that meant and when offered a cup of iced tea (likely drugged), I drank it. He had me go on top of him while his wife filmed and cheered me on. Afterwards, I went home and told my parents what he told me to tell them - that I needed a diaper change and that if they had questions to come to him. He intended to drug them as well.

Instead, they called Jean and told her what had happened. The CIA put him under house arrest and they logged the VHS tape of my abuse in a federal database. Jean watched it to identify me as the victim. They told him that I was off limits but wouldn't do anything further related to his activities.

A few days later, I visited the Sinclairs again, unsupervised. His wife said that they had him just where they wanted him. I asked if Eric and I could play action figures in the basement and she said that we couldn't, because Ariel was down there until she could "learn to appreciate what she had"

- because she had a crush on a boy at school.

I went home and told my parents and they called Jean again. This time, they sent a couple people with machine guns and got her out. She had been tied up on a mattress for days. As "punishment", they put Eric and his parents in a gated community across from Suffern Middle School, forced them to sell their house and legally emancipated Ariel. They also gave her the money from the sale of the house.

A few days later, I went around the block, forgetting what had happened, and asked a neighbor where the Sinclairs were. They said that no one lived at that house, but there was a girl picking up the mail. She left the house around the time I reached the sidewalk and I talked to her.

I was still confused about what had happened. She said that she would be moving far away and changing her name. She said that most of the people in the neighborhood would be drugged and not remember that they ever lived there. She assumed that I hadn't been drugged, but I had.

#

#

My parents drove me to my grandmother's apartment building in Astoria and told me that it was for something important. They said that it might be scary and that's okay and that we would do something nice afterwards. When we arrived, there was a white cloth laid out across the floor in the room to the right of the door. It was where they normally put the Christmas tree.

#

room
Door
truck
Cars

#

When we entered the front hallway, Jean took my parents aside and told my mother that for this my father would have to have sex with the woman inside. She was Asian and my father said that he preferred Asian women. My mother said that it was okay as long as it was required. I could see the woman and several men through the door. My father went into the room and they closed the door.

I waited a few minutes with my mother until they were done. Afterwards, five of the men left the room and were guided out the front door and behind the truck. Two men with silenced machine guns shot them. All but one fell backward into the truck - the other fell onto the pavement behind it. The men hoisted him into the back and the truck drove away. My father left the room and my mother told me to forget what I saw and ushered me in.

I asked Jean what happened to the men and the man left in the room asked the same thing. She smiled and said that they left. He looked out the window and said that their cars were still there. She said that the men gave them a ride to a local bar and they were just having a drink. He said that one of them was an alcoholic and that they would never willingly just go to a bar. I asked if it was because he was an alcoholic that he fell down. At this, he asked me to elaborate and he realized that by my description she had them shot.

"They were my circle!" he shouted.

"Well," she said, "more money for you then."

"It's not about the money, they were my friends! We went bowling together, I know their families..."

"Well I guess you'll just have to make new friends, then," Jean chortled. The woman who my father had sex with, the Scarlet Woman, didn't seem to speak English but she started to realize that something was wrong. Jean told him to finish the ritual. He gathered himself and came towards me with a knife.

He told my mother to hold out my hand flat, then sliced open my palm. I screamed out in pain and my mother held onto my arm and followed his instruction to place my palm on the woman's forehead for a moment. She then removed it and it left a mark like a star. He told Jean that the ritual was done. He then told Jean that the ritual was done.

"That's it?" she asked him. "When my father told me about it, he said that the smell of blood was overpowering and that so many were sacrificed for the future of Germany." The Magician said that the blood was supposed to represent a sacrifice, especially coming from a young intelligent male child. She shook her head and said that it wasn't good enough. She demanded his knife and told me to come to her. He was shocked.

"He's your grandson."

"I know that he's my grandson," she said as she pulled me away from the woman. She took the knife and slashed open the woman's throat, spilling blood down the front of her dress. "That's better," Jean said, approvingly.

"She was my Scarlet Woman," he cried out.

"Well she's certainly scarlet now," Jean quipped. He shot her an angry look as he cradled the woman in his arms.

"At least let me comfort her in her last moments."

"Okay, I'll grant you that," Jean agreed.

He cried and apologized to her for bringing her into this. She choked on her blood and took a few moments to die, but she did. He asked what she was going to do with the body. She said the same thing she would do to his friends, dump them in the East River. He said that she had a family that ran a restaurant in Chinatown and that they should know what happened to her. Jean said that they would have someone tell them something.

She asked him if he would tell the others in his order that the ritual had been done. He said don't worry, that he would tell them exactly what had happened and that part of it involved papers and not to expect them. She said that she didn't care about any papers, not seeming to know what that meant. She told him to forget where they lived and he said not to worry, they would never come back there again.

My parents drove me back to our house and Jean followed. They celebrated with drinks. Jean wondered if the papers were Martha Kuntzel's papers, which in that case would be very valuable. She dismissed that notion, saying that the last time they had been seen was in Europe right before the location turned into a warzone. They were likely burned to ashes years ago, sshe said. I asked her why they killed his friends but let him go. She said that she couldn't have too many people knowing where she lived and that she needed to make sure that he told them that the ritual was done so that they would believe it. She said that she would let him live "for now".

#

The Magician and Jean had a conversation before the ritual started. She asked him if he could perform the ritual and he said yes, any magician his rank could. He said that normally it would be done at a lodge or temple in order to better channel the intent. He said that the prophecy said that someone of the bloodline would seek them out for the ritual but it wasn't supposed to happen for another 30 years.

Jean also gave my father a copy of Aleister Crowley's Magick before the ritual. He didn't read it but he still has it on his downstairs bookshelf.

#

I was in the downstairs hall with Jean when someone rang the bell. She answered it - it was a young man - around 16-20 - with a pistol. Jean put on a confused old woman act and asked if she was being robbed. He said that he was there for the woman who had his father killed. She asked if he knew what she looked like. He said that she was middle-aged and she said that there really wasn't anyone here like that and that she was just an old woman. She asked him to wait a minute with me so she could ask someone upstairs.

I was scared but she said that he wouldn't hurt a child. He agreed and she went upstairs to her apartment and I asked him why he wanted to hurt me or my family. He said that they were evil and I asked him if I was too. He said that no, I was younger and a blank slate. At that point Jean returned with a handgun and a small cup of the drug. His gun was down as she returned so she had the advantage.

She told him to drink it and kept the gun trained on him as he did. After a few seconds he went slack and she began to ask him questions. He said that the circle had planned to raid the apartment building and kill her on the winter Solstice but he wanted to get to her first. She asked him if they knew he knew and he said that he was supposed to be part of it.

She let him go and told him that he wouldn't remember this and to go along with the raid as planned. She said that this building had served them well but it was time to expedite their move to Florida to before Christmas. They moved in to the new house just before Christmas and we drove down to stay with them for a week.

#

At some point before Jean and Richie moved to Florida, they brought over a pair of tan chairs as well as three Oriental rugs. One was put in the dining room, one in my father's office, and one in the living room. My mother was not a fan of the chairs and got into an argument with Jean about them.

My mother said that she was happy to put up the Heidi decorative plants and stein and Hummel figures, but the chairs didn't match the decor that she was going for. Jean insisted that the dining room should be representative of all of the family and that she wanted myself and my sister to grow up in an environment similar to the one she grew up on.

She said that the dining set was from the same location and that even though they were from different rooms they still matched a unified theme. My mother relented and allowed her to place them in the corners of the room near the two heads of the table. After placing them, Jean called over myself and Emily.

Jean told us that it was an old chair but it was strong and stuffed with horse hair. We got excited and started picking at lose threads in the seat and she got upset, exclaiming "What are you doing!?"

We said that we wanted to see the horse hair. She said that it was inside and that doing that would break it it and mean that it had to be repaired. We told her that it looked ratty and worn-down and we were confused that she would care about that. She was usually not very sentimental when it came to things.

She said that it was worn down with love and that something very important had happened in that chair and she started to cry.

Chapter Four

1990

Jean brought me to meet the British Royal family on their yacht at a port in, I believe, New Jersey. I remember asking her why not New York and she said that she didn't want media attention. She told me that there would be children there, but different from the children at my school. They were being raised to run a country, like me. Though, I was being raised to rule the entire world.

We arrived and were greeted by family members. I don't recall for sure if Dianna and Charles were there, but Princes Harry and William as well as the Queen were. I was told to spend time with the boys while Jean spoke with the Queen.

I introduced myself to them and said that Jean had told me that I was like them. Prince William replied that they were nothing like me and I confusedly asked what he meant. He told me that my family killed people. I told him that I thought all families like ours killed people and gestured at a painting showing an ancestor of theirs in battle.

He replied that those were soldiers, people who consented to battle. Some may have been conscripts but they mostly chose to be involved in conflicts. My family had killed millions of civilians. I was shocked to hear this and went to ask Jean. I approached them from the inside of the ship and waited for a break in their conversation.

Jean was talking with the Queen about the future, the next 20 to 30 years. I noticed that the Queen was cautious around Jean, like she was talking with a snake. Reserved, polite, but studying her. Jean asked her what she thought and the Queen replied that the impression they had gotten from media was that the future would be one of exploration and diplomacy. Jean replied that unfortunately, no, there were still enough people examining history that they still had to focus efforts inwards.

I interrupted around that point, apologizing and telling Jean what William had told me - that we had killed people. Jean was incensed and asked the Queen what she had been telling them. She responded slowly and deliberately, as it seemed clear to me that Jean wouldn't like any answer. "Well," she replied in a gentle facsimile of a reminder, "there was the genocide."

Jean was furious and defensive. She said that all nations take actions that favor one group of people over another. Just because they had been more efficient at it shouldn't mean that they should be viewed as monsters. I interjected, asking her which country we had ruled because I had never heard of a genocide in America and Jean had mostly just talked about the CIA and IRA.

At this, it was the Queen's turn to be incensed, righteously so. She demanded to know what Jean's involvement with the IRA was. I answered that she had said that she was a leader of it, months earlier. The Queen said that it was a violation of Britain's sovereignty and the agreement that they had signed with the Reich.

Jean took a step back and told the Queen to think about what she was saying. If the agreement was void, that would mean that the Reich could then do anything they wanted. She countered by saying that the IRA hadn't really done the job and were unlikely to. So, rather than tear the agreement to shreds, they can make sure that the next administration would broker a peace deal. We left shortly after.

Chapter Five

1991

Jean brought Emily and myself aside and informed us that people were coming over for a meeting and that it was a special event. She said that it usually only happened once every five years. They brought together the East, Central, and Western Architects for a meeting to shape the future. This was the first time that she told me that if America had royalty, I was the heir to it. She clarified that America had government agencies, but that we were part of the CIA which was ruled by royalty.

Emily asked if that meant that she was a princess if I was a prince and Jean said no, just me. Emily asked if it was because she was a girl, Jean said that it was that she had "more of her grandfather" in her than me and that the genes were important. We were both confused about what she meant - Emily asked me if that meant Pop Pop was her father. I didn't understand how that could be a possibility - that he was - and insisted that our father must be both of our fathers. After that aside, the guests began to arrive.

Jean introduces us both to the guests. The Eastern Architect was the older brother of Lorenzo Music, husband of Carla Lalli-Music - I believe his name is Daniel. The Central architect was the head of the Sosland family who are involved in publishing and food production. The Western architect was Merv Griffin.

When she introduced us to Music, she told us that his brother was the voice of Garfield. He teared up and said not anymore, that he was too sick. Jean expressed dismay and said that she thought he was getting treatment. He said that he was but he had already lost his voice and wasn't expected to make it to Christmas. He said that the family was planning to hold an early Christmas in September, since it was always such an important holiday for them. He then brought out a gift for both my sister and I. It was stationary in a yellow gift bag.

The meeting took place on the lanai behind the house. Jean had Emily and I set the table and hand out snacks. At the start of the meeting, Jean asked Merv about the recent trouble he'd had and if they needed to worry about it. He said no, they settled it out of court, that, "it was a woman giving him a massage while naked, what else did she expect would happen?". Carla, who had been introduced as Music's new bride and therefore part of the meeting, spoke up and said that she used to work in the brothels and that they would set out strict ground rules before any encounter. Merv looked indignant and demanded that Music silence his woman. She was mortified, Jean asked her to maybe come in and help the kids with the snacks.

She was guided in to the kitchen by Jean, who also called for Emily and I to help. Carla was crying and said that she was just trying to be a part of the conversation. Jean comforted her and said that was just how men were used to talking and that they would have a larger role in the future as women, hopefully. She gave her a bowl of chips and told her to bring it to the table when she was ready. My sister and I talked to her for a bit and I think we cheered her up. She went out again with the chips and we followed, sitting on the pool chairs on the other side of the lanai. We were within listening distance still.

A chef, Wolfgang Puck, was brought in along with human flesh that he had prepared with their instructions. Carla and others complained about the fattiness of the meat and Jean commented on the person that it came from. The chef did not seem to want to be there and indicated that he had only prepared the meat and hadn't chosen to taste it during.

The main reason that they had brought them all there today, outside of their regular meeting schedule of once every five years, was the publication of the book The Medusa's Head by John Symonds. Apparently it had gotten so many details historically correct about secret events that they believed that someone had told the author. Their concern was what to do about it. They said that there was already a review in the Times about an art piece with the same name that they hoped would stick in people's mind if they heard mention of it. They weren't concerned with the limited numbered print run coming out as they had already bought up all the copies. They were worried about any unnumbered copies that were given to Symonds' friends or any acquaintances.

They resolved to use their resources to track down all of those copies, assuming there were only the 50 unnumbered editions. The numbered run, they decided, would be used as a trap. Jean learned from my use of the internet that information about pretty much anything could be found online. If they put up a listing for the book on sites listing rare books with a summary that gave just enough detail, they could draw people in. The meeting itself was only around a half hour in length, most of the time was spent socializing prior.

They discussed Symonds' role as a biographer of Crowley and how he was less than flattering in his depictions of him. They had someone drug his wife, she said that he burnt the original written draft because he was upset about how it was received.

They mentioned Martha Kuntzel being next to a pregnant woman as a potential cipher for her involvement with the planned births that led to Jean and her sister Helen, among many others, being born.

Jean also made reference to Carla being the daughter of One of Tony's sons. I said that I knew a Tony and she hurriedly said "A different one". Music later asked me who I meant and I clarified that it was my grandfather, as he expected. He did not realize that Carla was part of the royal family.

#

One evening Jean told my sister and I that they would be having a dinner guest and that we were to be on our best behavior. He came fairly late in the evening. It was Alan Cambey, passing through on what he called his "travels".

My sister and I were sitting at the table and Alan explained to Jean what he had done as she reheated dinner. He said that the Saudis would supply 20-30 people for the operation but did not want direct involvement. They did not want to get tangled up in whatever conflict would result from it. He said that it would be planned for the 27th anniversary of her father's death and she expressed delight at that.

They would take aim at the Twin Towers and other high value targets. She commented that she always hated them and that they should look at the White House and other government targets too if it was to have the desired effect. He seemed to think that would put their assets at risk but she said that they would pull the important ones the day of.

She commented that they should keep the men close and he said probably not too close because this was meant to be off the radar. She said that they would keep them nearby in Florida, so they could check in on them. He agreed and gestured at my sister and I and asked if we were drugged already. She said that she wasn't going to drug her grandchildren.

He became indignant and insisted that she do it - she had us move to a couch facing the living room while they talked. She insisted that we were kids and wouldn't remember anything important. He said that she would be surprised at what his daughters remembered. She said that they were grown and he clarified that it was when they were children. She told him that she would put us in the room we were staying in and after he left she would give us a narrative using key words from the conversation. If we didn't accept the narrative, then she would drug us.

We went to the room and after he left, she came in and told us a story about how he was an architect and the reason that they wanted to demolish the Twin Towers was to replace them. He was also afraid of competitors making a similar proposal and it might not even happen, so we shouldn't talk to anyone about it.

Chapter Six

1992

Jean brought me on a short plane ride to Palm Beach to meet with people who had just inherited an operation to give them advice on how to run it. We were driven by a private car a short distance to a large house. I remember that we entered near a dining room.

She introduced me as her grandson to two people - Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell. They as a couple, had inherited the operation from Ghislaine's father and Jeff was the person who would be heading it. Jean asked G to watch me while she gave Jeff advice on how to run the operation.

She didn't really know how to watch a kid and gave me a mat from a restaurant they had ordered from that had a maze on the back. I asked her if it was something that was inherited because of her why she wasn't getting advice too. She thought for a moment and said that she did want to make sure she learned some of it and left me at the table to go into the other room with Jean and Jeff.

I did overhear parts of the conversation between Jeff, G, and Jean. Jean told Jeff that most of the girls they would be recruiting would be teenagers - most of whom probably hadn't had sex before. To keep them in his sway, he would need to have sex with them and make them feel like what they had was special. G objected to that, I got the impression that they were a couple at the time. Jean insisted that it was the most effective way for them to keep them under control.

I waited probably 20 minutes for the conversation to finish - I remember being very bored. When we left and got back to the parking lot we had come from, I asked Jean why they were asking her for advice. She said that she was someone well known in the field that they were going to be operating in.

#

Jeanne brought my sister Emily and I to a local video game rental store in Florida. She told us that they were trying to make inroads into the video game industry, but she didn't have the familiarity with it that we would.

She asked us to take a look at the back of the boxes on the wall display and try to find a company name that appeared on a lot of the boxes. She specified that it couldn't be Nintendo or Sega or even any of the biggest international companies like Konami or Midway, but around the 5th most common. It also had to be a US company.

The company that cropped up the most and what she went with was Bethesda Softworks, publishers of Home Alone, Where's Waldo, Wayne Gretzkey Hockey, etc. When we told her, she said that Bethesda was near Washington DC and that it sounded like a perfect fit.

She identified Todd through the company he had previously applied to Bethesda through. He had applied to them multiple times in the past, unsuccessfully. He was also of average intelligence but had ability. That showed them that wanted to work there so badly and might be willing to do anything to do so.

On our drive back home from Florida to New York at the end of that summer, we stopped in Virginia for a few nights. We went around to Colonial Williamsburg and other locations, including a tour that she requested at the College of William and Mary. She specifically requested Todd and was willing to wait several weeks until he returned from summer break. The other tour guide was a young woman with shoulder-length brown hair. Jeanne told them that the tour was for my sister and I.

There were other members of the tour group – mostly prospective students. Though we were young, Jeanne claimed it was to show us the history of the place so that we might want to go there some day.

When we reached the chapel, the other tour members broke off and Jeanne took Todd and the girl aside to the pews in the back. My sister, Richie and I were also with them. Jeanne told them that they were really here to speak to them. She told them that she was with the CIA and looking into recruiting them. The girl was confused as it was clear that they were waiting specifically for Todd but she was randomly assigned earlier that day just because she was there.

Jeanne said that they were looking for a man and a woman and that while they had scouted Todd specifically, she was suitable just by the virtue of being a woman successful at such a prestigious school. She invited them both for dinner at the home of William Barr, who they recognized as the new Attorney General who had just been sworn in a few weeks ago. She told them not to tell anyone and that they would send cars to pick them up,

#

After the tour, we drove around to look at antique stores for antique coins and keys. I had a coin collection, but I was fascinated with old style skeleton keys. They had a locksmith at Colonial Williamsburg and some intricate examples of locks from the period. We visited several businesses listed in the phonebook that seemed like they might sell antique keys, the last one being named the Key Hut in the local mall. She said it was probably a key cutter but it was close so we decided to go anyway. Emily and Richie stayed in the car.

When I asked the girl that worked there about the type of key I was looking for, she showed me a large gold-colored skeleton key that she was using as a keychain. I told her excitedly that was exactly the type of key I was looking for and asked her how much it was. She gently explained that it wasn't for sale and that it was a gift her boyfriend had given her because she worked with keys.

"Everything has its price," Jeanne interrupted, then asked her how much it would cost for her to part with it.

The girl thought for a moment and said, "Two hundred dollars." Jeanne scoffed.

"A novelty key like that couldn't be worth more than $20 or $30."

"You asked how much. I'm including how much it means to me as a gift in that value. It's a symbol of my boyfriend's love." I told her that I understood and it was okay, but Jeanne pushed further.

"Your boyfriend can get you other gifts. It would mean a lot to my grandson if he had that one." I tried to indicate to Jeanne again that it was okay and that I understood, but she wasn't listening.

"Two hundred dollars," the girl reiterated. "You asked the price and that's what it would be."

Jeanne gave a look of disgust and stormed off with me in tow. As soon as we got to the car, she told Richie to find a pay phone so she could make a call. He circled the lot and found one against a wall and Jeanne got out, pulling me along with her. She rummaged through her bag for a slip of paper, picked up the receiver, and jabbed the numbers on the keypad. The receiver was loud enough that I could hear both sides of the conversation.

"I'm calling in a target for high priority extraction and termination. But hold her at the termination site, I want to talk to the target before its done." The man on the other end asked for the name of the target. Jeanne said that she didn't know her name but described her physical attributes and said that she worked at the key cutter at the mall she was calling from. I chimed in that it was called the Key Hut.

The man on the other end paused and started to say, "That doesn't sound like a high priority.." before Jeanne cut him off.

"Are you disobeying a direct order?" He froze.

"No, no, that's not it, I was just told that they're trying to keep track of resource expenditures and I was just asking to determine the reason..."

"That sort of thing is supposed to secret, I'm going to have to have a talk with those bean counters. Do you want a reason? She pissed me off," shouting into the receiver, "There's your reason."

#

After dinner, Jeanne told Emily and I that they would be showing us how the CIA operated, but to do that she would need for us to take a drug, which she put in the child size cups that we had gotten at a restaurant with our dinner. We ate prior to the meeting and were drugged on the way.

When we entered the house, we came in through the front door. It was up a flight of stairs from the driveway. We sat in the living room, to the right of the entrance. There was a TV but it wasn't on. The drugs made my sister and I tired and we asked Barr's wife if we could take a nap. Jeanne said that there wasn't enough time and the car with Todd and his friend arrived shortly after.

We were led through a dining room and kitchen around to a door that led down to what was historically slaves' quarters. The dining room had a large backless shelf filled with porcelain and Americana trinkets. The food was prepared in the upstairs kitchen and was brought down shortly after we were all seated. William Barr's wife did not join us for the meal.

Over dinner, Jeanne asked them what their goals were if they were going to join the CIA. They had specifically targeted Todd as he was someone that they felt would be a good fit to infiltrate the game industry, but they had asked the girl about her potential plans. She said that she wanted to help people. We mostly talked about video games and Jeanne asked me my opinion of what the perfect video game. I described it as something where you could interact with anything and it was 3D like Doom but in a fantasy setting. Todd lit up and said that he was interested in a company that was making a game just like that called Arena. It wasn't released yet but he had seen a demo of it at a computer show.

Jeanne then turned the conversation towards the CIA and the nature of what they would be doing. She asked them both if they ever saw themselves being able to kill someone. The girl said that it didn't sound like something she would be able to do. Jeanne said that it was the nature of the agency that people would be killed as a matter of course. If she was interested in helping people, there were non-governmental organizations and other ways to do that. The CIA probably wasn't going to be a good fit for her.

At that, Jeanne took a cigarette from Richie and gave it to her. She told her to go outside and have a smoke. The girl was a bit out of it as both her and Todd had seemingly been drugged. She took it and stepped outside, closing the door behind her.

"I don't need to be here for this," Barr said, pushing his chair out from the table and walking upstairs, shutting the door behind him.

Jeanne turned to Todd and asked, "What about you, could you kill someone?" He was taken aback and thought about it for a moment. He said that he might be able to kill someone if it was in a military context, but his brother had come back from the army and it had left him shaken. Richie took out a gun and slid it towards Todd past Jeanne over the table.

"I've got a gun here," he said.

"What if we asked you to kill someone right now?" Jeanne purred, nodding towards the door leading out to the driveway. Todd was shaken.

"Well she didn't do anything wrong," he replied incredulously.

"If you were to join the CIA, you might have to kill people that didn't do anything wrong." She shifted tactics. "It's not that she did anything wrong, but she has seen something she shouldn't have and she clearly won't be joining the Agency."

"What do you mean?" Todd asked.

"We're in the basement of the Attorney General of the USA, the head of the Justice Department. It's illegal to have this sort of coordination between agencies. What if word of this clandestine meeting reached the public? They would lose faith in their entire system of government."

"I'm sure that if we asked her not to say anything she would understand," Todd countered, but it was clear that he was nervous.

"This is how we handle things," Jeanne grew more excited as she nudged the gun towards him. "If you want to join the CIA and be a part of the video game industry, this is what you need to do. I am giving you an order to go out there and kill her." He slowly took the gun.

"Won't people hear the gunshots?"

"We're on the top of a hill," Jeanne dismissed. "The sound will echo across the city, no one will ever be able to track it down."

"When she goes missing won't there be an investigation? I was the last person to be seen with her over at her dorm. I couldn't lie about that if they asked me. They wouldn't believe me."

"There won't be any investigation. If they ask you if you know anything, just say you don't. We'll handle it from there. She'll just be a statistic, another college girl gone missing."

Richie opened the door first to make sure that she was still there. She apologized for not smoking the cigarette as it wasn't really her thing. She said that she had called her mother to talk over their offer. He was confused, asking her if she had gone up into the house to use their phone. She pointed to a fanny pack on her belt - it was the battery for an early cellular phone. Richie relayed that to Jeanne, but she told him to proceed.

Richie guided Todd out and told the girl that he had something he wanted to talk to her about. He went back inside and left the door open a crack. I could hear the interaction from inside the room. Todd was apologetic and told her that he was told that he had to kill her to join the CIA and that he had already asked them if he could just talk to her but they said he had to kill her. He shot her in the chest to or three times. The gun was silenced, so the gunshots barely made a sound. A few seconds passed and Todd rushed back in, short of breath.

"She's not dead," he blurted out. "I shot her in the chest and she's on the ground but she's still breathing. We still have time to get her to a hospital."

"You're not listening," Jeanne snapped. "She dies. Get out there and finish the job. Shoot her in the head if you have to." He deflated and tried to protest but thought better of it. He slowly walked back outside, leaving the door open behind him so that we could see everything.

"I'm sorry," he said crying, as he slowly angled the gun for a head shot and pulled the trigger. The bullet struck her in the forehead and blew the back of her skull off.

He came back in, there were flecks of blood on his jacket and face. "It's done," he said, handing the gun back to Jeanne.

"You did well," she said, congratulating him. "Now we're just going to send you off to training, its going to be around ten days.."

"When I visited Bethesda they told me that I had to finish school," Todd interrupted, panicked.

"Don't worry, call it a family emergency. They're not going to kick you out of school for something like that. If we have to, we'll talk to the registrar." He nodded, still dazed.

An agent led him back to the car he had come in to go to his dorm and pack for training. Jeanne told another agent to pick up the body. As we were getting up to leave, I asked Jeanne if the girl was really dead. She said no, that it was all a trick - smoke and mirrors - an illusion. I asked her why she referred to her as the body and Jeanne said that's just show business slang for actors. She said the girl had played her part well and would be properly compensated.

As we walked past to the car we had come in, I noticed the back of her skull on the ground. I told Jeanne that they shouldn't forget that if it was part of the act, but as I did I realized that she had to be lying about that. She barked at one of the other agents to pick it up in disgust that they had let me see it.

#

We got into the car and Jeanne told us that we had one more stop. She directed Richie to drive to a specific location that he seemed to have been to before. It was near a mile marker and under a billboard off the side of a major highway. There was a tall set of concrete stairs that descended into a grassy area with a large shack to the right, around 50 feet away. Richie and Emily waited in the car while we descended.

Jeanne told me to stay there and walked over, knocking loudly on the door and telling the person inside to bring the target out. She walked back to me and in her wake a tall man, Chris, dragged the girl behind him. She was bound at her wrists and gagged. Jeanne told him to remove the gag as he reached her.

The girl started screaming for mercy, for her life, for anyone who might here her. Chris indicated to Jeanne that was why he had gagged her as he was getting ready.

"No one is going to be able to hear you," Jean intoned at the girl. She gestured up at the embankment behind us. "Your screams are just going to be muffled by that and the cars. There's no point in it."

"What is this?" the girl cried out, looking around frantically. "You had better let me go. My boyfriend is a big biker and he and his friends have got to be looking everywhere for me "

"You've only been gone for an hour or two," Jeanne chided. "Unless you were going to be meeting up with him he couldn't know something was wrong."

The girl nodded frantically, "I was going to meet up with him and he knows I wouldn't just disappear like that. You had better let me go or he's going to come down here and beat the hell out of you." Jeanne didn't believe her.

"It's about time that you learn a lesson about being rude to customers. Never in my life have I encountered someone so unhelpful and stubborn, not without doing something about it at least. Now you'll know for next time," Jeanne paused, relishing the moment, "Oh, I guess there won't be a next time for you." Jeanne guided me back towards the stairs and I was ahead of her before the girl shouted out.

"I'm pregnant!" Jeanne turned back at her for a moment, looking at her like she had found a toy to play with. She practically did a jig in excitement.

"She's not really," she told me in a hushed but excited voice, "but we're going to play along. Watch this." She took a step back towards the girl, facing her with me behind her. "Well then I guess we're doing society a favor, then."

"You'd kill a pregnant woman?" she started crying. "That was why I was so attached to the key, it's my boyfriend's."

"So," Jeanne stepped closer, "if we call your boyfriend and ask him, he'll confirm this?" The girl faltered.

"I haven't told him yet but he wouldn't be too surprised."

"If we can confirm that," Jeanne said slowly, "We'll let you go. Is there a phone in there?" She asked Chris. He nodded. She took a few steps towards the shack and then turned on a heel.

"Pull down your skirt and underwear," she ordered her. The girl cried and refused so she had Chris do it. She was wearing a pad and there was a red spot on it. "I'm an old woman, but I know a period when I see one."

"He did it to me," she sobbed, gesturing with her head towards Chris. He took a step backwards and raised his hands.

"Whoa whoa, I didn't touch her. I'm a professional."

"A professional who kills people?" the girl snapped at him.

"All of us play different parts," he said.

"Put the gag back on," Jeanne ordered him. He did and began dragging her towards the shed. I asked Jeanne about the key. While the girl was still in earshot, she replied. "She's not going to need it anymore where she's going, but its too distinctive to take."

I asked her if she was going to heaven. She spoke loudly, so the girl could here her. "Heaven's too good for her. She's going in the ground. Well, first he's going to cut off all the good parts and we're going to eat her and then what remains will go into the ground." At that she gestured at the field between the embankment and the shack.

#

Chapter Seven

1993

During one of the summers my sister Emily and I stayed in Florida, Jean had over several guests. She told Emily and I that they were part of her family, her brothers and her sister. We were confused because we knew our great aunt Helen was her sister. She said that while yes, her and Helen were raised in the same home, these people were just as much her family as Helen and should be treated with respect. We agreed and she introduces us to them.

The two I remember best were the two currently most prominent on the global stage. She first introduced us to Angela Merkel, noting the correct pronunciation of her first name had a hard G like angle, but was spelled the same as the anglicized version of the name. My sister and I were excited that we had an aunt Angela like on Golden Girls. Jean was frustrated that we were mispronouncing it because it was meant to be shortened to the nickname Geli. Angela said that it was her nickname (Geli Raubel's) not hers. She said Aunt Angela could be hers because she liked Golden Girls, but she didn't want to be a villain. I insisted that Aunt Angela wasn't a villain, she loved her sister but they just disagreed sometimes. She laughed and said that it was just like in real families.

I believe we were introduced to a German man as well, but the next person didn't speak any English and had a young female translator. He introduced himself in Russian and she translated that his name was Vladimir Putin. I was also introduced to Boris Johnson, the third brother to arrive. Everyone else went out to the back to socialize on the lanai except for Emily and I, who had to finish writing in our journals.

When we came out, Vladimir had just come out of the pool and sat at the chair at the end of the table with his back to the water. Apparently, one of their male sibling had died recently from a heart attack, which was why they had gathered to memorialize him. From what they knew, he had been in fairly good health. The translator seemed surprised that Vladimir had a family like that, as he was well-known at the time.

They talked about how it was just them left to complete their father's work and made a toast to their brother. The toast concluded with a Heil Hitler at which the translator seemed to understand and, claiming she was going in to use the restroom, she ran to the next door neighbor's house. The neighbor returned with her as she seemed to be raving about Hitler and on drugs. They gladly took her back, then drugged the neighbor for his trouble.

Vladimir was the first to leave, the rest of us went into the living room to watch TV. Golden Girls was on and I fell asleep on the couch while we were watching it. I was woken up by the sound of gunfire - Jean said that it was probably just a car backfiring.

I mentioned it to my parents at the end of summer when we returned home and they said it sounded like something we probably shouldn't talk about at school.

#

I was at the Florida house alone one summer and went for a walk down the block into the area behind the house and the entrance. There were three teenagers, two boys and a girl. I asked them if they lived here and one of the boys said that they were on vacation.

I asked them if they wanted to be friends and I said that I was staying with my grandma and the boy asked if she had a pool. I said yes but I didn't think she would want people using it. He said that if she had a pool and we were friends she would probably be fine with it. I agreed and led them to the lanai.

The boys raided the liquor cabinet and the girl went in the pool. I said that I liked her sunglasses - cheap yellow plastic ones - and she gave them to me. Jean came back after around a half hour and asked what was going on. The boy who had been doing the talking before took charge. He told me to say "Fuck you, grandma". I hesitated and said that I didn't want to. Jean said it was okay and so I did. I explained to her that they were my friends and had asked to use the pool.

She put on a feeble old woman act and pretended that she couldn't really do anything to get rid of them. The lead boy offered to go but she pretended that she wanted the company. She offered to get them drinks - the boys wanted alcohol but the girl just wanted something with strawberry in it. Jean returned a few minutes later with three cups which they promptly drank.

"How do you feel," she asked, grinning.

"I can't move!" the girl moaned from a recliner pool chair.

Jean told me to go inside and get cleaned up while she decided what to do with them. I was to go to my room after and wait.

Around an hour or two later, close to dusk, she came for me and told me it was time for me to say goodbye to my friends. She had me get in the car and we drove a short distance to a construction site for one of the houses in development. She led me to an open hole where Richie was standing next to a large plastic looking cover and a shovel. In the hole, laying side-by-side like sardines were the three teenagers.

"This is a septic tank," Jean said, which is appropriate because you're pieces of shit." She smiled. "It's time for you to say goodbye, Richard."

I peered over the edge of the hole. "What are you doing with them?" I asked.

"I'm going to have Pop Pop close them up in here and cover it with dirt until they've learned their lesson or run out of air, whichever happens first."

"We'll die in here," the boy who had first approached me shouted, "We won't have enough air." I turned to Jean.

"Is that true?" I asked. She gave me a thin smile and spoke softly.

"Well, if that were true," she posited, "wouldn't they try to get out? It's just a few feet to freedom - all they need to do is get up." I thought through the logic of what she had said. It made sense to me but I didn't understand the full context of the situation. I waved goodbye to them and Jean brought me back to the house. Richie sealed them in and buried them alive.

#

A couple days later, there was a story on the front page of the newspaper with a picture of the three teens stating that they were missing. They were dressed in the same clothes and the girl was even wearing the sunglasses that she gave me. The picture was in black and white.

"We have a problem," Richie said. If the police were looking for them, there was a chance someone had seen something. Jean read the paper and noted that the parents of one of the boys was high up in a company that the CIA had "ownership" in. She decided that they would tell him that the teens had stumbled into an "active operation" and were killed during the course of it.

#

I later recounted this story to a teacher who said that it sounded like she had killed the kids. I was confused but she told me to bring it to the principal - Dr Blaise.

He said that it sounded like she did kill them but if she had access to the drug she was probably high enough in the CIA to get away with it. The teacher was confused and Blaise clarified that a number of the faculty were CIA and that they had something on most of them. For example, he had a weakness for children at which the teacher was shocked. She said that he shouldn't be around kids then. He was later outed as a pedophile and fired but they never took any action over my story.

Chapter Nine

1995

One evening, Jean came over to my parents' house and told us that she had some very special guests. Shortly after she arrived so did the Olsens - or at least, Mary Kate, Ashley, and their mother. I don't remember if anyone else from their family came.

Jean introduced us and then began her pitch to their mother. Basically, she told her, she was enormously impressed by the impact their career had on TV and advertising. Every catalog and commercial wanted their own "Olsen Twins" which created enormous demand for white twins and even white siblings of similar ages. Their mother was put off by that, saying that she hoped it wasn't just white children. Jean dismissed her, saying that other people were doing commercials like that, but her concern was white people.

Jean used magic to age up the Olsen's - she asked her mother what type of animal they were. Her mother was confused and terrified, asking that she "put them back". She did, and explained that while the human form was the common form, most people had animal blood in their ancestry. Usually the older generations knew more about this - their mother recalled that her mother or grandmother had referred to them as beautiful ibex's (or a similar animal to a gazelle native to Northern Europe). Jean said that must be it.

She explained that since America was majority white, that was the demographic she was most concerned with. She moved on to her offer. She told her that because of her contributions to white culture, she wanted to extend an invitation to join the Reich. She explained that the Nazis and America had done a deal and that her father was Adolf Hitler. Their mother immediately froze up and replied that the math didn't seem to add up.

Jean replied that she was born in the early 30's, so before his real rise to power, but he had died in 1974. Their mother recoiled, saying that she didn't want to be involved in anything political like a coup, to which Jean told her the coup had already happened. She then told her that her father's legacy was seen through the lens of American propaganda and she would be happy to tell her more about him. She suggested that the kids spend some time talking while she discussed that further.

Mary Kate and my sisters wen upstairs to play, while Ashley and I talked in the dining room. I jokingly asked if she was jealous that her sister had two first names while she just had the one. She said that it was said like a single name, like when their mom calls one of them at the mall. I was surprised that they went out to the mall without being recognized. She said that they would usually wear sunglasses or something.

I asked her if she would say her character's catchphrase - "How rude" - but she declined. I asked her why not and she said that it was part of her character, not her. She then suggested I pump my fist in the air and say "Oh yeah". I did, to which she asked me how I would feel if people asked me to do that same thing, on demand, all the time. I said that I probably wouldn't mind, but I saw her point. We joined the others upstairs for a bit and then we were called down to the living room.

Jean told their mother that if they agreed to the deal, they would be made wealthier than they could ever imagine. The girls would have to have sex with members of the Reich, CIA, allies, etc during their teenage years but would have access to a drug that would make them forget. That is, unless one of them chose to eventually marry me, which would make them exempt.

Their mother chose to think it over and Jean drugged her before she left. They were driven back to the airfield that they had come from. Several months later, Jean brought us a copy of a Full House Michelle book and told me it had elements of what they recalled about meeting us. It was titled My Best Friend is a Movie Star.

#

Months later after Melissa Atkinson was killed, my family visited Jean in Florida. I had asked her why my other side of the family would always eat Italian food but we never ate German food when we visited her. She offered to show me how to cook a stew at that visit.

After we got settled in, she had me help cut onions, potatoes and carrots and then said it was time to add the meat. She had most of it thawing in the fridge - it looked like a pork loin except with a bone in it. She took a smaller package from the freezer and told me that we would add it to the onions and carrots to stew for a long time. She said that it was something like a a ham hock or foot with lots of collagen. She unwrapped it and dropped it into the stew and I immediately recoiled when I saw it. It was a human hand wearing a wedding band.

I turned to her in shock and stammered out that it was a hand - she immediately denied it. She told me to imagine an animal that had appendages like a human but that wasn't one. I asked her if it was an ape or monkey and she said like one, but that they would get pork from. I believed that for a second and then asked her about the ring - I said that it looked like a wedding ring. She said that it was like the tags farmers would put on their livestock. I still didn't quite believe her but I resolved not to eat it as no one else seemed to have seen that part of it.

After it had cooked for an hour, she opened it and commented that they must have used lots of product on the skin. I asked again what she meant by that and she "clarified" that the farmer must have used it on their livestock. She sent me away and finished cooking.

Before dinner was served, she made my entire family take the drug that would suppress the memory of the evening. She gave my parents wine and gave me grape juice. She then explained that it was something called Victory Stew and it was something her family would make whenever they triumphed over an enemy. Since my parents had triumphed over their enemy, that was why she had asked for the butcher to save a piece of her.

My father didn't really seem enthusiastic but my mother took relish in tasting the meat. I did what I was told and ate as much as I could stomach. Jean then got the idea to have me hold up the bone of what I presumed was the arm in "victory". She said that I now had a part of Mrs. Atkinson in me and that I should feel smug about it whenever I saw her children.

Later that summer, near Labor Day, I ran into Jessica Atkinson at the local pool and remembered part of what happened with the hand. I told her and she said that it sounded like I had eaten her mother and began to cry. I only remembered fragments so I thought that had to be wrong and flagged down my mother to confirm.

My mother told her to wait with me and then walked up to the house, returning with two vials of the drug. She had both of us drink it and told us that none of it happened. Jessica asked my mother why she was crying then and my mother said she had heard a sad poem or something but the sadness was fleeting. She immediately stopped crying - it was eerie.

#

A male agent brought a girl to Jean's room who she told me that I was related to. Genetically, she would have been a niece, but she seemed a bit older than me. She said that she was there for Jean to do whatever she wanted with

The same agent that brought the girl helped strap a metal brace to Jean's head that pulled back the corners of her lips to resemble a wolf's. She told me that her father had a pair of metal wolf teeth dentures created that he used to tear at the throats of his enemies. She used them for other purposes.

She inserted the dentures in her mouth and brought the girl onto her lap. She bit her shoulder between her head and collarbone. The "teeth" tore her flesh to shreds and there were bits flying everywhere. Blood poured down one side of her body. I was crying and Jean told me to come to her.

She forced me to chew on the girl's neck in the same area she had been chewing. I choked and sobbed and tried to let as little flesh into my mouth as possible. Jean insisted on chewing some and dropping int into my mouth like a bird when she saw that I couldn't or wouldn't eat on my own. She moved the girl's neck in a way that made the vertebrae snap and commented that it was pretty gruesome and I had taken part in enough. She let me leave and Richie found me crying and covered in blood in the hall.

He was surprised and disgusted that she would involve me in her "feeding". He helped me clean up and vomit what I had been forced to eat. He told me that he was loyal to her, but that was one of the things he felt was too far even for her.

I asked him why he didn't confront her about it and he said that wouldn't work the way I thought it would. I convinced him to say something anyway and when he did, she told him that even though he was loyal to her for most of his life, she would have him killed if he questioned her again.

Chapter Ten

1996

After Todd Howard finally got a job with Bethesda, Jean had him invite me to the Compuserve beta testing forums. My username was marIQ and I was one of the only people there not actually beta testing. When questioned why they allowed a ten year old in, they said that I was a sample of their future demographic. The person closest to my age was Aleira, Akatosh's daughter.

I was part of several conversations that I can recall. There was a discussion about flowers that I responded to saying the more the better and that my family told me that different flowers have different meanings. I accidentally outed Todd as CIA in a thread that was later deleted. When the "God" names were announced, the character of Ma'iq was named after me even though he wouldn't show up until Morrowind.

Towards the end of development, Jean asked me if anyone in the beta forum seemed like a good potential recruit. I said that Akatosh seemed to be a genius, which put a target on him. Jean had his wife killed in a "car accident" order to put him in a situation where his only choice was to be recruited.

For the recruitment, she brought me with her to speak with them. I also met his daughter. She told him that he would have to kill someone at some point for recruitment. He was drugged but agreed to it in order to ensure that he had the means to support his daughter.

#

During the spring of sixth grade, all of my classmates were brought into the gym which had seats out for an assembly. They had us line up and each take a small paper cup with liquid dispensed from a cooler to drink. In line, before I got my cup, I overheard one of the younger male teachers say to a colleague that this was messed up, having us take drugs. His colleague told him that it came down from the state and that it was probably meant to help make us stronger if we encountered it. The one who had spoken up seemed doubtful, but stopped talking.

When I approached the cooler, I took a cup of the liquid, pressed it against my lips and then threw it in the trash without drinking it. The school had a DARE program and taking drugs on purpose seemed wrong, especially after I heard the one teacher's doubts. Part of me thought that by refusing to drink it, I was passing a test. All of the students sat down in their seats and a short, balding man with glasses went up on stage and introduced himself - I believe that he said his name was Carl Nicolay.

Once he introduced himself, he immediately began giving the students commands. He said that it would be like Simon Says - the first thing we needed to do was stand up and make a movement with their arms. He demonstrated and at first it just felt like a game, so I followed the commands. Then, he started to tell us to do embarrassing things like picking our nose - he even told the female students to touch their breasts. I stopped because it started to scare me. A teacher came up to me and brought me to a classroom in the far back of the room - Mrs Marina's sixth grade classroom.

There were around five or six other students in the room. They asked us why we didn't follow the instructions. Some of the others weren't sure, but I told them it was because I overheard the male teacher say that there were drugs in the water. The bald man asked which teacher and they brought him in.

The bald man asked him why he had said something, why did he question the plan? He said that he didn't mean to prevent me from taking it, he understood that it was to make us stronger, to protect us. The bald man asked, "So you want to protect these children?"

The teacher nodded. The bald man asked my name and input it on a hand held device - he frowned. He looked at the other children and asked the name of one of them that had a thin build. His name checked out. At that, the bald man ordered one of the other teachers to hold up the boy. The bald man walked over and twisted the boy's wrist, breaking it. He told the teacher that the best way to protect these children would be to follow orders without question.

The man gave me a double doze of the liquid prior to the above, with the intent that a higher dose would make us forget. I still remembered the events of the previous day when I came in to school the next day and sought out the male teacher. I asked him what had happened. He quietly said that what I remembered was accurate, but that I couldn't tell anyone. He said that it was good that I remembered and that maybe that skill could come in use for me in the future.

#

There was a plaster painting shop that we frequently visited in Spring Hill called The Plaster Place. Normally, Robbie, the owner, was at the front register but on this visit her younger sister was.

After bringing up our items to pay, her sister pulled out a "cheat sheet" of credit card numbers and told Jean that she liked us, so she would take care of it. Jean got angry and said it was illegal and credit card fraud. She did it anyway and Jean told her, "You're going to regret pulling that shit."

The next day, the police officers came by looking for Jean. They came to the front door and Richie asked if he should let them in or tell them to leave. Jean told him to let them in and immediately offered them "something to drink". They declined and said that they were there to question Jean about the disappearance of Robbie's sister. Apparently, she had told Robbie what Jean said after closing the shop but before going missing.

They questioned Jean in front of me and when they asked her about Robbie's sister, she dismissively said, "she was white trash". They questioned her use of the past tense "was" and she hastily reworded her statement as the impression she had of her was white trash. They asked her a few other questions and then questioned me separately.

They said that their theory was that she had gotten Richie to kill her, put her in the back of a truck and dump the body somewhere. I told them that he didn't have a truck. I also confirmed that Jean had made a threat. They didn't have enough to arrest her on at that point, but she was clearly the main suspect.

As soon as they left, Richie asked Jean if they should be worried - if the police dug around enough, they would find everything. She said no, that she had seen how the Reich ended and it wasn't like this. He went pale and stammered, "You saw how it ends?" she said hurriedly, "Yes, that's what I'm trying to prevent."

They strategized as to how they would handle it. They controlled the police at the higher levels - the commissioner had been to their parties so they had blackmail dirt on him. Otherwise they would use the tools at their disposal through the CIA to deal with it. The case was dropped shortly after.

#

A few days later, Jean took me to the Plaster Place and told Robbie she would explain everything if she drank something. She did and Jean apologized and told her that she would buy the business from her for around $200,000, far more than it was worth.

A CIA agent later opened a similar store in the same location, but none of the regulars went to it and it failed relatively shortly after opening.

Chapter Eleven

1997

I initially became aware of Deep Space Nine when Jean visited my parent's house in Suffern. She told me that they had cast Avery Brooks, who had seen great acclaim for his portrayal of Othello, as the lead of a new Star Trek series. They chose to push him towards science fiction to keep his career effectively side-tracked from mainstream media.

The casting backfired in a way they couldn't predict - I immediately saw him as a father figure after the first episode. I admired his relationship with his on screen son and from the behind the scenes interviews, he seemed like a kind person. My parents tried to tell me that he was angry and brutish because he was black, but I didn't believe them.

Jean later told me that the character design for Odo was based off an altered photograph of me as a toddler. The fact that he was based off a picture of a child was reported in an article but later redacted. Even though she refused to let me watch Deep Space Nine when visiting her, she was heavily involved in using it to put out propaganda and messaging.

At one point, shortly after the airing of the episode where she guest-starred, Jean brought the actress Gina Phillips to meet me. I asked her about what it was like being an actress and she said that it was mostly fine. She did mostly small parts. The only part that she didn't like too much was having to sleep with people. I asked her if she had to do that with any of the people on the show and she said no, that they were as old as her father. It was mostly younger people involved in the production side.

When Voyager entered development, Jean told them to make it as much like Gilligan's Island as possible and make sure that I could watch it without keeping track of Deep Space Nine. She didn't want me looking up to Avery Brooks or Sisko. I still watched the show, but only with my parents. I also tried to keep up with it by reading plot summaries during and after its airings.

I eventually found an online community on a Star Trek message board, the name escapes me. I started posting on it around 1996 or so and Jean became aware of it around then. She asked if I also had somewhere to talk to people about Frasier, another show she was behind. When I said no, she mused that both had the same company behind them, so she had an idea.

She reached out to the owners of the forum and gave them an offer that they couldn't refuse. In exchange for creating a subforum for CBS's other shows, including Frasier, she would give them unparalleled access to the production team of Deep Space Nine, including the writers. The private subforum for admins and mods on the site was named after the Klingon Hall of Honor.

I spent a lot of time on the Frasier and Star Trek forums, though I ended up parroting a lot of hateful speech from the resident racist. He was eventually banned, but the mod team commented that it was something that they needed to keep an eye on.

In Fall of 1997, Jean Asked me how I liked the forum and I said that I wished that I was a mod. She said that could be arranged and drugged the aunt of one of the administrators and had her convince her niece to give me the role as an opportunity. She told me to keep an eye out for the kind of stuff that I had used to post and welcomed me to the mod team.

Around that time, possibly just before, she had us visit in Florida and we met a couple people involved in the show. Ronald D Moore and Barry Jenner. Barry was nice, I kept asking him what it was like to be an Admiral and he kept correcting me that he was just playing one.

My father mostly bothered Ron, insisting that they drop Molly in a vortex somewhere, leading to the episode Time's Orphan. Ron questioned how racist my father was and Jean interceded, saying that it wasn't indicative of how she wanted to be seen. Rene Auberjonois was also there with his wife for dinner.

Later that Fall, a thread in the Star Trek main forum caught my attention. One of the members had noticed some startling similarities between the episode You Are Cordially Invited and an old Western novel that she had read. Certain lines were almost exact and the story beats followed the same structure. The community took it as evidence of plagiarism.

I mentioned this to Jean and she said that it was true. That the book was an "approved story". She asked to see the thread and I showed her. She took note of the name of the member. Days later, one of the moderators said that she hadn't heard from the member in several days so she had gone by her house and she could see boxes in the window. She was worried about her because she hadn't mentioned a move.

The woman who had noticed the plagiarism had also been in touch with a local newspaper about it prior to what happened, so an article was already in the works. They had contacted the writer who had credit on the episode and she had corroborated the story but with additional details. She said that she was given the book and was told to copy it as closely as possible using the DS9 characters instead. She had faxed this statement to the paper. I don't believe the article ever made it to a print edition.

Days later, the writer's credit was removed and her name stripped from future airings of the episode. A piece was put out in Variety or a similar trade publication explaining it as her being only involved in the outline stage and inappropriately credited.

The moderator subforum speculated as to what had happened. One of the posters astutely suggested that what we had witnessed was the arm of the state reaching out to silence people who knew too much. I told them that I had mentioned the thread to my grandmother but I didn't expect anything like this to happen. We mourned the absence of the woman who had initially brought up the plagiarism, but little did we know that Ron and the writers had heard about what had happened and did something about it.

In the meantime, Jean mined me for ideas of possible episodes. I suggested what would become the episode One Little Ship and other minor character beats. She even let me help her outline a full episode, Profit and Lace. I convinced her to have the studio add additional episodes to the end of Season Six in order to fit in the ideas. My father's contribution was to ask for more TOS actors.

Out of an incorrect assumption on my part that two network shows would be too taxing on Terry Farrell, I convinced Jean to drop her from DS9. Much to my future regret, she did it. She had her exit written as incredibly dark with a ton of pathos in an effort to pay tribute to the character.

Then, Inquisition aired. It was followed by a letter from Ron to the Hall of Honor. He expressed sadness and frustration at the death of our friend and the episode was written as an expose of the CIA and their tactics. The entire scene in the holosuite was filmed in secret and William Sadler was cast for his resemblance to Jean.

The move prompted the studio to rescind final script approval, which had been granted a few months prior. They considered that a victory because it wouldn't have much of an effect on their final season as much of it had been plotted out and approved.

Unfortunately, Jean took the move as a sign that the forum was too dangerous to allow to continue. She planned to have the entire private subforum murdered. I told her that the posts about the plagiarism were in the public, so anyone could have seen them. She then decided to just kill the administrator of the forum and their second and had the forum shut down with the excuse that it was too difficult to manage the racist posters.

Chapter Twelve

1999

I was at my grandparent's house in Smithtown, NY with my father, my grandfather Tony Taurisano, my aunt Marietta Benson, uncle Tom Benson and cousin Katie. My grandfather was sitting in the kitchen, I was on the landing of the front interior steps and my uncle and father were in the foyer. My cousin was on the front porch. My aunt was in the den.

My uncle, aunt and cousin had just arrived and I was packing up from staying there. My uncle approached my father as I was coming down the stairs and said to him - you have a daughter, right? Daughters, my father said. Tom then asked him if he was having sex with the older one yet. My father said, "That's sick." Emily, the older of my two sisters was just twelve at the time. Tom noticed that I was there and told me that I would be a man eventually and that I should hear this, too. He said that he had been having sex with Katie and that it was "the greatest gift a father could give to his daughter."My father said that it seemed wrong and that she was barely in high school. Tom said that he had slept with his wife to make her and that she was half him so that, in his mind, meant that it was half an act of love and half masturbation.

Katie
Den
Uncle
Father
Garage →
Me
Marietta
Dining room
kitchen
Marietta
~~Living room~~
Den
Tony
Glass sliding doors

He called Katie in from the front. He told her to tell him how the things they did in the bedroom made her feel. She was embarrassed, she said that he had told her to never talk about it to anyone, that people wouldn't understand. He said that it was fine this one time. She didn't want to, she asked - in front of uncle Rick and Richard? He told her to say it the way she said it to him. "Oh daddy it makes me so wet," and she gestured down at her crotch.

At that, my grandfather stormed in from the kitchen. "Okay, I've heard enough." He called for my aunt Marietta, Katie's mother and Tom's wife, to come in from the den. He called Tom sick for what he was talking about doing with his own daughter. Tom claimed that he had heard it out of context. My grandfather said that it all sounded pretty clear to him. Tom said that he had something in the car that would help him explain and told Katie to wait in the car. He asked us to all wait for him in the kitchen. My grandfather sat in the seat with his back to the glass sliding doors, my aunt opposite to him at the other end of the table. I sat to her right, my father to her left. Tom exited through the garage to go to his car. We waited a few minutes - my grandfather commented that he couldn't imagine anything that could explain that. At that moment, Tom slid open the glass door and quickly jabbed my grandfather in the right arm with a needle and injected a vial of clear liquid. He told my father to hold my aunt down and my father told me to stay still. I was paralyzed with fear.

My aunt told my father, "You're my brother-in-law, you're hurting me." He said that it wasn't personal and to just cooperate. My grandfather went still and quiet, staring straight ahead. She asked Tom, "What did you stick in my Father's arm?" He fit another vial into the syringe.

"Same thing I'm going to stick in you, bitch," Tom said as he injected her in the left arm. She also went slack. He told her to talk to her father about something.

"Like what," she asked.

"There are a lot of good sales at the outlets that you were talking about, talk about that," Tom said. She began talking with my grandfather about the sales and they carried on a conversation as if nothing had happened.

As they talked, Tom began to prep a third vial for me. I begged my father to not let him do it. My father said that it wasn't a bad drug, it was a conversation starter. He asked my uncle if he really had to drug me. He said yes, I looked terrified, I would definitely say something. My father said that I was mostly terrified because of the needle and asked him if I could drink it instead. Tom said that it doesn't usually work as well that way. My father insisted and had me get a cup and some juice from the kitchen. I did and I drank it.

My father then led me out to the car and Tom entered his with Katie waiting. She looked upset. He told her that they would come back in an hour or two. I sat in the backseat and my father drove me back to Suffern. On the way he asked me if I thought he should do what Tom told him to do. The drugs had taken effect at that point and I thought that what Tom said was good because he said it was good - I didn't have the context to fully understand what he was suggesting even though at that age I should have. I said that it sounded good from what Tom said. When we arrived back, I remembered only fragments and my father was concerned but I agreed not to say anything.

#

I was downstairs in the basement of my parents' house taking a nap on the couch. I woke up to the sound of my sister Emily screaming and rushed upstairs. I pushed open the door to her bedroom and saw her at the edge of her bed with my father behind her. Both of their pants were off and she was crying and bleeding.

I started throwing anything I could find at him, mostly plastic and wooden toys, screaming at him to get away from her. He was in shock and didn't really move until I picked up a cast iron bank I had gotten for Christmas several years earlier. It was as heavy as a brick and seeing that, he let her go. I grabbed her a towel and told her to lock herself in the upstairs bathroom, the only door that she could easily lock from the inside. I told her to wait there while I got help.

I ran downstairs and tried the front door and the back door but both were locked. My father came downstairs after putting his pants back on and trying to get my sister to come out of the bathroom. I had just tried to open the back door and screamed at him that he was sick and asked him why the door was locked. He said that my mother and him had agreed that whatever happened in this house stayed in this house and I retorted that I doubted that she meant this.

He had me cornered in the mud room, so I grabbed a baseball bat that he had gotten at a Yankees game for me when I was young. I started swinging it at him in wide arcs to keep him away. I backed him into the kitchen and turned and ran up the stairs to my room.

I opened the window and started climbing out onto the roof. He tried to stop me and pull the bat away from me. I must have lost my footing in the struggle because the next thing I remembered, I was on my back on the grass in the backyard.

Our neighbor, Dawn Trusewicz, came rushing over at about the same time that my father made it out the back door. Said "Oh my god, what happened?" and I said that I wasn't sure and that I thought that my father had pushed me out the window. He said that he was trying to stop me from jumping out the window. I wasn't sure what had happened at that point so I let him explain to the neighbor and bring me inside.

He told me to tell my sister that it was safe to come out and she did after some convincing. I believe that I may have had a concussion from hitting the ground so hard because I didn't remember what had happened other than my father being sick and the screaming. She was scared and he had told her that I told him he should do that (when I was drugged by Tom) so she believed that I was a part of her abuse.

He told me to go down to the basement where I was before and unlocked the doors. He called Jean and Richie and told them what had happened. I listened in from the downstairs line. He said that he would need two or three vials for me, Emily, and maybe the neighbor. They both expressed disappointment in him that he let this happen in his house. They said that the drug could take away the memories, but we would always look at him with fear even if we didn't know where that came from. They told him that they could have the vials there within one or two hours and to keep them updated.

After he got off the phone I came back upstairs and confronted him. I asked how they could send something up from Florida so quickly. He said that they were asking a friend locally to bring it over. I asked him what the drugs were for - he said that they were to help me and Emily.

I told him that we learned about people like him in school and that he needed help, because he was sick, not me. He said that he was concerned about my violent outbursts. I told him that it was righteous anger, that I was trying to protect my sister.

I asked him if he was going to get treatment. He said that they would put people like him in jail and I told him that maybe that was where he needed to be. I eventually agreed to take the drug when he claimed that he would do something about his problems.

#

In the weeks after being drugged earlier that summer, I began acting odd. I would quote sitcoms and act inappropriately, moreso than I normally did at that age. At one point, an older boy named Eric convinced me to try giving him a blowjob, which I did for a few seconds before getting grossed out. He insisted that because I loved the Golden Girls and acted somewhat flamboyant when mimicking sitcom actors, that I was probably gay. He told me that he would have an older friend come talk to me.

A few days later, I was back at the park and noticed a youngish looking teenager sitting on the bench. He was smiling and waved at me. He came over and said that his friend sent him to talk to me. He started talking about how I was special and didn't know anything about it and that he wanted to show me and tell me about it. He asked me how old I was and I told him 14. He said that he knew about himself at 16 and wished that he had known sooner. He said that most people his age would think it was wrong of him to do this with someone so young but as long as I was okay with it, he would consider it doing me a favor.

I didn't know what it was and asked - he said that it had to do with sex. I had a nebulous at best understanding of sex. The most I knew beyond the differences between men and women was that it felt good and had to do with genitals. He said that he should talk if we were going to do things and he asked which Golden Girls character was my favorite. I said Blanche, because she always seemed to get the biggest laughs and she looked the most like me. He smiled and said that Blanche had lots of sex and I felt uncomfortable. I asked him what exactly this was - was it a quest or something?

He said that it was something like that; that I would see the whole world differently afterwards. At that point, the park was empty and it was dusk. I agreed and he had me go over to the swings and told me that I should take off my pants. I paused and asked why? He said that it had to do with my butt and I recoiled, saying that it was dirty. He said that anything involving sex was a bit dirty and asked if I found him handsome. I said that I didn't know, but if he was handsome I guess that it was okay. The aftermath of being drugged led me to being susceptible to bad logic and it sounded like something that would make sense in a sitcom. I bent over and lay my stomach on the seat of one of the swings.

He took a moment to get ready and what followed felt like he had shoved a broken glass bottle in my anus. I screamed and tried to push him away. After a few confused seconds, he withdrew and I looked around the ground behind me in a panic.

"What did you do to me!?" I screamed at him. He looked confused as to why that didn't feel good to me. I told him that it hurt a lot and he said that maybe it was because he didn't have lube. I told him that I was going to tell my parents that he hurt me. He said that I shouldn't, that he would talk to his parents but my parents probably wouldn't understand. I asked why and he said that he was older and it was already a mistake to do what he did and he had helped that his father might be able to help him figure out what to do about it.

I agreed to not say anything and we both left the park. As I walked back, I realized how much pain that I was in and resolved to tell my parents anyway. With a knot in my stomach, I called for my parents as soon as I got home. My mother was watching TV in the living room and my father was in the dining room. I explained what had happened the best I could. He immediately turned cold and said that it sounded like I wanted it. I insisted that I didn't and that the boy had said that it would feel good and that this didn't feel good, it was the worst pain I could imagine. My mother insisted that if I said that I didn't want it, that this was an assault and that they should call the police. He relented and agreed to let her do that.

Around fifteen minutes later, a female detective came and questioned me about what had happened. She examined me with gloves in the kitchen and told me that it was stretching without blood so it would likely heal in a few days. She then sat down with my parents and myself in the living room.

She said it sounded like it was probably a boy 16-22 with confusion about his own sexuality. My father asked why they couldn't get everyone down at the station to canvas the neighborhood. She said that they didn't really have the resources for that and even if they did it would disrupt the privacy of the whole town. He asked what would happen if he got a posse together with baseball bats to do the same? She said that they take the safety of all the residents very seriously and that if there was anything that even looked like vigilante justice, he would be the first person they would call on.

I was scared to go out and leave the house for weeks. My parents set up a session with a therapist, Felicia Polcardi. My father refused to pay for multiple sessions due to the price and the fact that it wasn't covered by insurance. In the single session, she attempted to address the way I had acted like it was a quest or sitcom by telling me to avoid narrative thinking. My body was my own and I shouldn't let anyone do anything to it unless I was comfortable with it. It helped a bit but not as much as multiple therapy sessions over time would.

#

#

Several weeks later, my father woke me up in the middle of the night, around 2 or 3 AM, and told me that I didn't have to worry about running into the boy anymore when I went out. I asked what he meant. He said not to tell my mother because she wouldn't understand. He said that he was driving earlier in the evening around dusk and spotted a boy who matched the description I gave the police walking from the park on Memorial Drive. He stopped the car and asked the boy his name. He told him that it was James and my father told him to get in and he did.

He explained to him that I was so scared to leave the house and that I felt horrible. He stopped at an overpass over the New York State Thruway and gave him a choice. Either he would drive James to the Ramapo Police Station four blocks away, or James could jump. James jumped. I later learned that

Rick had drugged him with datura so I question his recollection of the events leading up to the death.

My father was excited as he told me this. I was horrified to hear it and told him as much. How could I believe him that he jumped, I asked. He said that he wouldn't lie about that. I told him that I didn't feel safe around him, that he was basically a murderer. He said that some people have done things so bad that there's no place in society for them anymore. He asked me to try to understand that and keep the secret. I told him that I would try.

The next morning, my mother said that someone had jumped from the bridge. I asked her how did she know that he jumped. She said because it was in the paper, right there. My father stepped in and gave me a look that meant "stop talking" I did and went to school for the day.

When I got home, he approached me and said that there was a special skill our family had to forget. He said that he had once done something so horrible when he was younger that his father had beaten him up but he forgot what it was. He gave me a cup with liquid and said that it would help. I drank it.

He walked me up to my room and told me to imagine that we were in an alternate universe, that everything that happened before the death happened and everything in my future after today would happen but that this event and the repercussions of it did not. I was drugged at this point, so by the end of that evening I felt better but still partially remembered that something bad had occurred.

The next day, the police detective from before came back and told my father that she suspected him in the boy's death and that they were treating it as a potential homicide. She mentioned that it could even involve kidnapping charges. He said that the paper had reported it as a suicide. She said that yes, the paper did, but their case was still open.

She had approached as my father and I were in the garage and he told me not to say anything before coming out to talk to her. After she dropped the fact that he was their prime suspect, he went inside and quickly called his brother, John. He said that he was checking with his brother who is a police officer for legal advice, which she allowed. He came back out and said that he didn't consent to a search of the house because it was a mess but he would answer any questions she had.

She said that James was last seen walking towards his parents house on Memorial Drive, but less than ten minutes later, he was over a mile away jumping off an overpass onto the Thruway. My father suggested that maybe he ran really fast. The detective said that from the people she had talked to it didn't seem like he was suicidal. She looked at his car and said that he had a car, maybe he saw James, roughed him up, and pushed him off the bridge. My father got indignant and said, "That's the best you've got, that I have a car? To accuse me of second degree murder?" He walked over to the car and opened the trunk.

"Does it look like there was a bloody body in there," he asked. "It's not like he would have just gotten in if I asked him." The detective took it in and said no, I suppose not. She left and told him that she would be back if they had more questions.

As soon as she left and we went back inside, I told him that I couldn't keep it a secret anymore. The police were involved and they were talking about murder and kidnapping and he had to confess. He said that he couldn't do that because then he would have to tell my mother what he had done and it would destroy the family. I insisted that I wouldn't be able to keep the secret, that it was too much. He thought for a moment and said that he would tell my mother, that he believed that he could explain it in a way that she would understand.

When she returned with my sisters, he took her and me aside and upstairs and explained it. She was furious at him, the boy was apparently the older brother of one of Emily's friends. She had gone to the funeral, even. She said that he was always doing things without consulting her when they had agreed when getting married that they would be equal partners. She laid out terms for him - this was his problem to deal with. Going forward, he would talk with her about any major decisions.

The police filed charges against my father - I believe that the formal charge was induced manslaughter. I know that he was upset because IBM had a policy that if he was convicted of a felony, that he would be fired. The charge would have also included jail time.

We went to court in either Sloatsburg or Tuxedo, I don't recall. When our case came up, it was a bench trial and the judge dismissed the charges. He said that my father didn't actually kill the boy and that he almost agreed with how he handled it. They boy's father was surpried and furious. He said that my father had robbed him of his son's life, that he could have eventually been rehabilitated but he would never have that chance now.

The judge said that the prisons in New York were focused much more on punishment than rehabilitation, and that it was almost better that his son had died now rather than having him slowly deteriorate in prison.

#

QUACKENBUSH, JAMES ALLEN

James Allen Quackenbush lll, a resident of Suffern. Died October 7, 1999. He was 18. Born September 3, 1981 in Suffern to James and Victoria Adragna Quackenbush Jr. He attended Rockland Community College, loved music, art and photography.

He is survived by his parents James and Victoria at home, his brother Dennis and sister Kiersten of Suffern, grandparents Norma & Rosario Adragna of Suffern and Margaret Quackenbush of Suffern.

Visiting will be Sunday and Monday from 2-4 and 7-9 pm at the Wanamaker & Carlough Funeral Home. A Mass of Christian Burial will take place Tuesday 10 am at Sacred Heart Church in Suffern. Interment to follow at Brick Church Cemetery in New Hempstead.

The family request any donations be sent to Project Rainbow in Valley Cottage, and Suffern DARE.

WANAMAKER & CARLOUGH
FUNERAL DIRECTORS
Rt. 59, Suffern
(914) 357-0423

#

Jean arranged to have the girl who had survived the Ritz, Becca Nusbaum, due to my plea come to my parents' house for dinner. She had braided hair and sat down at the table and ate with us. Jean told me that she was going to live in a brothel and would be forced to have sex with people for the next several years. I was to give her a choice between that and death.

After dinner, we went into my sister's bedroom to talk. I told her what Jean said and asked her if she wanted to die instead. She said no, that it was good to know what kind of situation she would be going into, but she would rather keep living. I asked her if she blamed me and she said no, I wasn't the one with the power - it was the adults doing this to her.

We were given a condom and instructed to have sex if she was to survive - it would be her first assignment as part of her new life. We had sex and I quickly came. She suggested that we have sex again, which we did sans condom. I didn't know it at the time, but that was when we conceived our daughter, Alice.

She was taken away after that and we were both screamed at for taking more than what was given. Months later I was asked for a sample of semen. I was confused as to why it was taken and when I asked I was told because of what I had taken, children would be conceived using my sperm and her eggs. I was told that the number would be 144,000 and that they would all be sacrificed for the Reich's rituals.

Chapter Thirteen

2000

At a point in Fall 2000, before the remainder of this testimony, my mother came downstairs while I was using the computer and gave me something to drink. She said that Jean had asked her to ask me about the buddy list feature on AOL. I gave her a brief explanation of what it was, then she asked me who I had on mine. I explained each person who was on and where I had met them and then, when I got to Seth, clarified that I didn't really consider him a friend and told her that he was a psychopath.

She took an interest in that and asked me more details about him. I told her that he was planning to kill me when I first met him and that he had said that he had killed several small animals including cats. I told her that the only reason

I had kept him on the list was to try to dissuade him from doing things like that. She said that was all that she needed.

A few weeks later, she told me to talk to him. I did and he said that he had been recruited by the Reich to hunt humans for them to eat. He was initiated in a ritual where he ate flesh which he found gross, but he was happy at being given the opportunity to kill. I was sickened by that and told Margie and she drugged me again.

Shortly after, during Homecoming, my classmates were told that a girl had died in a car accident. She was the cousin of a friend, Melissa Peckins. The truth was that Seth had killed her as a sacrifice for the Reich. During the school day, I was taken aside by my freshman year history teacher to talk to Melissa about what had happened to her cousin. We were both drugged and I was told to console her as she had found out that her cousin hadn't died in a car crash but was slaughtered by the Reich in a ritual killing. Being drugged, I was able to recall what Seth had said and tried to console her the best I could. I held that memory and confronted him online when I got home.

He said that he had mistakenly chosen the daughter of a member of the Reich or one of his its allies as his prey. They were upset but kept him on, having him instead hunt in predominantly minority communities. I came to Margie with this and again was drugged.

Years later, after expressing to Margie that I was feeling bad about what had happened with Stacey Herbison and that I needed to settle it by turning myself in for the assault, she drugged me and told me to message Seth for him to take care of it. I didn't intentionally message him to "take care of it" but the thought of messaging must have been incepted in that moment leading me to contact him which led directly to her death.

Chapter Fourteen

2001

My family was visiting Washington, DC to give my grandfather a chance to see the White House, Senate, and other major buildings and monuments as he had never previously been there for a vacation like that - a grand tour. I was told that someone on the extended maternal side of the family had set it up for us.

We were walking down the street and a bald man flagged us down. He had noticed that I was using a Palm Pilot, which was unusual for someone my age to be doing at the time. He said that his company was looking into e-readers, so he wanted to ask my advice as a consumer what I was looking for in a reader. My parents said that it was okay to talk with him, so I answered his questions.

I said that the monochrome screen was just fine, the files in simple text were small and I could fit hundreds of books in it. I basically described how I was using it as an e-reader and he seemed enthusiastic about that.

He gave me his business card and it said Jeff Bezos - Amazon. I had heard of Amazon when it first started as an order by check/bank transfer online book store. I had showed it to Jean at the time. I said about as much and he said that they sold much more than books now. I said that I would sign up for an account and try it out.

When I told my parents, my mother told me that I should ask him for a job. I called the number on his card that he gave me and he said maybe when I was 27, which is when the Saudis decide if a prince will become more than that or not. I was confused by the way he referred to me in relation to royalty and he said never mind.

#

I was attending a show on my own in Brooklyn for the first time. It was for a band called Leftover Crack. As I was walking and trying to locate the venue, I ran into an attractive girl with wet, curly, hair. She said that I was cute and asked if I was going to the show, too. I said that I was and she asked me if I wanted to hook up. I agreed and we made out briefly before she asked me if I wanted to come upstairs. I was a bit nervous around sex and declined, but offered my AIM username to maybe talk some time later.

She said that she didn't have internet, so I offered to let her use my sister Laura's AOL account since she never used it. She took the information from me and we parted. I don't remember if I saw her at the show or not, but after the show I went to hang out with some of the people I had just met. I stayed over until close to two in the morning. When I left, I encountered Tom Hanks as detailed in my further testimony. What is relevant is that I was drugged after that encounter, and so I didn't remember giving her the password.

A few weeks later, Laura logged into her AOL account and people started messaging her. She looked at her profile and it had been changed to include Leftover Crack lyrics and the name and details of the girl, which I didn't recognize. My parents asked me if I knew anything about it and I said that I didn't. They called the CIA and told them about it and they said to change the password and they would watch for any login attempts.

They got a hit a day or two later and tracked down the girl and had an agent kidnap her. He brought her to an abandoned construction site and tied her to a chair. When they questioned her, she told them that we made out and I had given her the password. My parents put me on the phone with her and while I didn't completely remember, I believed her and told my parents as much so they would let her go. They didn't.

They asked the agent for details about her - any next of kin. He said that she had family around an hour away. My father said that he didn't feel right just dumping her body in the river so that no one would ever know what happened. He exhibited no remorse in having her killed, though. The agent offered to slit her throat and leave her in an alley to be found. I protested, saying that even if she had hacked the account, this wasn't justice. They had no right to be judge, jury, and executioner.

They said they would give Laura the choice. They presented it to her as that they had found the person that scared her and, if she agreed, they would take her out of the world forever and she would never scare her again. Laura nodded and I shouted at them to the point where they drugged me to stop from doing anything about it. They told the agent to kill the girl and he did.

Years later, when I got to college, there was a poetry reading on the front stoop by another resident, Justin Woo. It was about a friend of his who had her throat slashed in New York City and her body dumped in an alley. I later told him about the details I could remember and he said that it did sound like his friend. If my parents had done it, he said, they would have been very well-connected. There was no coverage in the papers and any effort to investigate the death or otherwise get justice was quashed.

#

I was walking south from a friend's apartment in Carroll Gardens towards Red Hook looking for a subway station around 2:30 am. I spent time at their apartment after a show at The Hook in Brooklyn. I was walking down Columbia St and at the corner where it intersects with Commerce St, a black SUV pulled up right before I crossed. The light in the back was on and I could see a driver, two men with machine guns, one black and one white, and the actor Tom Hanks sitting between them.

I didn't know what to think other than the men were probably bodyguards. I figured that New York was a big city and if some random sixteen year old would be coming back from an event at that hour, it stood to reason that a celebrity might, too.

He called out to me, "Hey, what's your name?"

I replied, "Rich - Rich Marin... you're Tom Hanks, right?"

He smiled, talking to the man on his left, "He recognizes me - check the map." The driver had what looked like a GPS device mounted on the dashboard and pressed some buttons on it.

"Are you coming back from some sort of event or something," I asked, confused at the direction the conversation seemed to be heading.

"Sort of," he said, "but really I'm here on safari hunting black and brown people." He said without a hint of irony. Even though, I thought he was making a bad joke.

"He's black," I pointed to the guard on his left.

"Well, Dave is a professional, isn't that right Dave?"

"Yes sir," apparently Dave said.

"How could you be a part of that," I interrogated.

"Well, people die all the time," Dave said, "and these aren't my people."

As we talked, the driver whispered something to Tom, who then interrupted us.

"Well Rich, I've got good news and I've got bad news."

"What's that?" I asked him.

"The bad news is that you're in the red zone, which means that you're fair game, so I'm going to hunt you. The good news is that you remind me of my son, so I'm going to give you a ten second head start." I froze.

"Are you serious?" Then he started counting.

"Ten, yes, this is serious. Run, Rich, run!" I started to run.

"Nine" I tripped on a rough piece of the road and quickly jumped back up.

"Eight" There was a van parked in front of the building on the corner and I briefly considered hiding under it.

"Seven"

"Six"

I heard a voice coming from above and to the right - in the building on the corner. "Come in," the whisper said, "come in!" urgently.

There was a loosely chained door opposite the van. It was just open enough that I could slip through sideways if I turned my head and took off my backpack. I knew from his more recent roles that he had put on some weight and probably couldn't follow me. "Come up, up, up" the voice said, panicking. I didn't see it at first, but there was a rickety stairway that led up to a loft that was basically a piece of plywood scaffolding. A woman with dark curly hair and light brown skin was on the left with a sleeping bag and ushered me over urgently but silently.

We quietly listened for a few seconds and could hear him trying to push through the door. I whispered to her "What's this?" She eyed my suspiciously.

"Are you part of this?"

"No, I was just walking down the street and suddenly Tom

Hanks was chasing me with a gun. Are you part of this?"

"How do you know who he is?" she asked me again, pointedly, as if my knowledge of his identity meant we were co-conspirators.

I replied that he was one of the biggest movie stars in Hollywood. She said that she didn't watch many white movies and I tried to think of something she might have seen.

As we talked, I could hear tom conversing with the men, asking if they had any chaincutters in their SUV. They said that they didn't, but they could get anything within around twenty minutes, they just had to wait for the ferry. We were close to the ferry for Governor's Island so I assumed that was what they were referring to. He sent one of them on their way to get them, then leaned against the door, poking the barrel of the gun through. "I can hear you, you know," he said.

"Why did you have to come hide in here?" he asked tauntingly.

"Would you rather I ran down the open street where you could just gun me down from the car?"

"Well yeah," he replied, "that's sort of the point."

"Sorry, but if you're going to kill me, I'm not going to make it easy for you. Why are you doing this, anyway? You're probably the most famous person in the world. You could do anything," I figured that the longer I kept him distracted, the less likely he would be to kill us or anyone else.

"It's precisely because I am so famous that I'm doing this," he said. "But if you have to know, I developed a taste for it when we were shooting Saving Private Ryan." I looked at the woman, who was pressed against the wall furthest from the edge. That was one of the movies she was aware of.

"What, like you wanted to see what it felt like?" I asked.

"No, that was all real, and when you experience the thrill of watching the life drain from someone's eyes, you can't top that," he reveled. I edged away from his line of sight and laid flat.

"Well in that case, I hope that you understand that I'm going to get out of your line of sight. But wait, what do you mean it's all real? Say I buy that the most famous actor in Hollywood is basically a serial killer, didn't Stephen Spielberg direct that? Weren't there production crew? Extras?"

"Steven's just happy with the accolades and a paycheck," he laughed. "No, that whole sequence at the start was filmed separately on a beach in Europe. The cinematographer was this experimental Polish director named Janusz Kaminski. They picked him because he had a plan to make it look as real as possible. The people that wanted us to make it saw that America had lost its taste for war, and they wanted to show them something so visceral that it would convince people to sign up."

"So it was just a recruitment tool and you killed real people? That's sick."

He then described in detail how they did it. The production recruited 2-3000 poor and homeless men from all over Europe. Just a few from each city but it added up. They recruited more as needed during production. At the beach where they filmed, they constructed barracks and only gave the extras water that was drugged. So, after each day of production, most of them would just have a ghost of a memory of the day before. Since they all spoke different languages and didn't really socialize much with each other, it made it easier for them to exit people as needed.

After each day of production, anyone who died or were too injured to continue were loaded onto the back of a truck and cremated in an industrial incinerator. The extras weren't given live ammunition but the Irish army and others playing German soldiers were. It didn't matter that the men were drugged and scared because that was how they expected them to look.

I asked him if any of the other actors had a problem with it. He said that one of them did, so they made sure to spin his PTSD from it as a drug addiction even though the only drugs he had taken were the memory drugs to deal with what he had seen.

I asked him why he wanted to kill me if I looked so much like his son. He said that as a parent, sometimes he gets frustrated and it's not like he could just kill his son. He pushed against the door further and complained that even if he could get in there, he would be afraid that he would get tetanus and complained to the guy waiting that the structure shouldn't be there and someone should have it knocked down. The man reminded him that they had a narrow window for the hunt and Tom told me that I was lucky and left.

The woman I was with made a comment about how rich people would get squeamish about something like tetanus but not killing people. She said that this had been going on since the 80's. She didn't realize it was literally celebrities and wealthy people paying to go on safari, but people knew not to stay out too late at night. I asked her if she wanted to have sex - which was stupid and I'm not sure why I asked. At this she said absolutely not, that she still wasn't sure if I was part of it. We heard a burst of automatic fire - it sounded like he did get one person.

She gathered up her things and climbed out through a hole in the roof of the building. She told me not to follow her. I told her good luck and she stayed in the corner.

I waited for at least an hour until it started to get light again. An ambulance pulled up outside around 4:30 am and an EMT got out. He called out to me to come out. I didn't at first because I was afraid that he had a gun and said as much. He said that he didn't, but if I didn't come out, he would get one of the people who did. At that, I cautiously grabbed my backpack and climbed down, pushing through the door.

He held up a canister with a mask attached and told me to inhale, that it would calm me down. Once I did, he started asking me questions, He said that he had a report of two people holed up there, he asked me where the other person went. I told him that she left and I didn't know where she went other than the general direction. I asked him what this was, did the entire police force and FDNY know about this? He said no, an operation like this only involved around 20 people. The city was divided into zones and if 911 was called, the people assigned to that zone would be sent out.

He then asked me what I was doing before this and I told him that I was walking towards a subway station. He directed me towards one and told me to keep walking as if none of this had happened. He told me that I would forget it, but by the time I got home, I still remembered. I tried telling my father about it, but he dismissed it.

Chapter Fifteen

2002

After the initial encounter in Brooklyn, I spent the next few months mostly keeping local and staying away from the city. As bizarre as the experience was, I was unable to just write it off as a dream or something that didn't happen. My parents noticed my isolation and convinced me that it would be safe to visit Hayden Planetarium. We had gone to its opening, I was told that it was due to my father having a connection through IBM. They were premiering a new iMax film narrated by Harrison Ford - I thought that maybe there was a chance that he was going to be there.

We parked in the garage under the building and once we entered, I separated from my family to look at some of the exhibits. I was on the floor near the exterior of the iMax theater - we had just gotten the tickets for the show. When I turned a corner, I came face to face with Tom Hanks, Rita Wilson, and his two sons. He immediately recognized me and said, "He, you look familiar, do I..." I cut him off.

"You gave me a ten second head start." He froze and his family looked confused. A bodyguard came up from his left flank and asked him if he needed assistance. He held out his hand and said, "No, I'll handle it." The guard guided me to a side room and zip-tied my wrists to the chair that he told me to sit down on. He told me to wait and I did.

After the guard left, Tom's younger son, Colin, came in through the same door we had entered through. The guard left through a door on the other side of the room.

"What was that you said to my dad about ten seconds?"

I told him that he didn't want to know and that he probably shouldn't be back there. He said it was fine, that the staff had set it up for them as a green room and he would just tell them he was getting a bottle of water. He told me that he did want to know.

I took a breath and told him that my memory of the event was a bit hazy, but a couple things had stuck. I told him that his father was hunting me and other people for fun and that I remember him saying that I resembled his son, which I guess meant him.

"I don't believe you," he said. I reminded him that his father had recognized me, not the other way around. Also, whatever it was was so serious that he would have a guard stick me in a room and tie me up. He said that he had assumed it was some sort of sex thing.

He asked me when it happened and I told him it was a few months prior. I recalled that it was a Thursday or Friday and he said that he did remember his father coming home late one Saturday when it was raining and tell them he was getting back from a hunting trip. He remembered it because it was an unusual interaction.

I remembered that he had told me that he got a taste for it during filming Saving Private Ryan. He shook his head and said that his father's manager had asked him to keep an eye on him and let him know if he was acting erratic or strange. He apologized to me that I had been through that and left to call the manager.

After a few more minutes, Tom came back in with a memory drug kit he had borrowed from the guard. He attached one of the bottles to the syringe and injected it into my upper arm. I asked him if he was going to kill me.

He said that no, he didn't want me to kill me. I told him that it sure seemed like he did when he was hunting me. He said that was different and that even if he could kill me with all the press around, he wouldn't because he compartmentalizes those urges and killing was the furthest thing from his mind in that moment.

He explained that he was something like a diplomat and that if I was to go public with what had happened the tens of millions of people that look up to him would have that taken away from them. He was almost like a president and presidents get to kill people.

"That's different," I said, "and not up close like that." He said sometimes, then backed up, "I don't want to share personal information," he said, but explained that from the leaders he had known, some of them did feel that way when people were killed. He then asked me if I thought all the good he did in the world outweighed his taking of life. At that point the drugs had kicked in and his perspective was starting to make sense. I agreed to keep the secret and asked him for a hug.

He said that was the most common thing people he encountered would ask him for and he didn't usually do it, but he would make an exception. He asked me what I was doing and I mentioned that I had tickets to see the new iMax film with my family. He said that's good and that family was very important to him. That reminded me about his son coming in.

I told him and he asked which son. He didn't mention his name, I said, but it was the younger looking one. He asked me who he was going to talk to and I told him his manager and he seemed relieved. He said that it would be handled within the family, then, and he let me go.

My parents asked me where I had been - the show had already started. I told them that they wouldn't believe me if I told them. My father said try me and when I told him that Tom Hanks had put me in a room and drugged me, scowled and told me to stop making things up.

#

My parents had requested for me to go to what I was told was a ceremony that required representatives from several groups. Because I was brought to the event by the father of one of the Boy Scouts in my troop, Andrew Diaz, I assumed that it was related to the Boy Scouts. I was drugged for it, so I wasn't completely logical in my train of thought.

He drove me to a wooded area where there was a portable stage set up. There were around 50-100 people seated at outdoor tables. Most of them were dressed up and having drinks. There were a couple speakers - I asked Diaz's father and he told me that they were drugged and wouldn't remember being there. I asked if everyone was drugged and he said that most of the people weren't. But any of their guests who weren't authorized would have been drugged by their hosts.

There was a bonfire to the left. There were people in robes moving - I asked if they were doing some sort of interpretive dance. I asked him why he wasn't drugged and he said that he had done many great things for the country. At that point, a man - Alan Cambey - came onto the stage with a woman. They had sex on the stage and some members of the audience murmured that she was his daughter and they sure liked to put on a show.

After they finished, a young boy entered from the right side of the stage and the woman left. It was a young child, probably around nine or ten, dressed in a plain white garment. A hush came over the crowd.

The man said that this was the main reason that they were here and asked the boy to say his name into the microphone. He seemed confused and like he had been crying. He said that they told him not to talk. The man said that for this it was okay to say his name. The boy said it. I asked Diaz's father where the boy had come from and he told me there was a house somewhere that the kids were taken from as the speaker continued.

He said that the boy, repeating his name, was to be their sacrifice for this year. To bring prosperity and safety to their people in the Hudson Valley. He said that it was a great honor for him and that they were very grateful. The audience applauded and the man came up behind the child and slit his throat, letting him fall back into his arms and the blood fell onto his shirt He then stuffed the boy into a blue and white Igloo cooler.

I was terrified and confused. I asked why they had done that. My assumption that it was a Boy Scout event led me to ask if he was one of the scouts and how killing him was counter to that ethos. Diaz's father said that the most that the boy would have ever accomplished was to be a clerk at a grocery store and that they had given him purpose through his death. He then had me get in line near what looked like a grill and table.

I didn't have a strong sense of how long it had been since the sacrifice or even that there was one, so when the line reached a "pig" roasting on a spit, with someone carving off pieces, I did not consider the fact that it was actually the child. They cut off the lower legs and forearms so that it more resembled a pig or lamb. It convinced me enough to the point that I believed it was an animal and so I ate what I was given. I was confused why it was such a small serving for a barbecue and Diaz's father told me that most of the people had eaten previously.

We left shortly after and he stopped at a grocery store to get me food. I said something about being a clerk at a grocery store not being so bad, which led him to believe that the memory drugs had not fully done their job. He shared this concern with my parents when he dropped me off. They said that they were aware of it and he expressed concern that they would still send me. They said that I had to see it and I remembered the boy being sacrificed.

Diaz's father left and I got angry at them. I asked if this is where they would go all dressed up when they said that they were seeing friends. They said that they had been to them oncer twice because it was necessary for "protection". I remembered that the boy had been killed and realized that we had been fed his remains. I was so angry and sick that they drugged me again and put me to bed.

I told them as I went that I was done with the Boy Scouts, going back to my assumption that this was related to it. My father asked if it was because of this and my parents assumed I would forget it and associate it with my dislike of scouting. They were right, until I eventually remembered.

#

My parents drove me to Long Island for a party at Tony's house. I don't recall if either of my sisters came with us, but I remember them telling me that it wasn't going to be a regular party. When we go there, there were a lot of guests in the backyard, but we were told to stay in the house. I remember that there were at least a few other kids and teenagers there. We all hid in the small bedroom outside of Tony's room. We were drugged.

The oldest of the boys, Dan Levy, told me that he was hiding from his father who would rape him at these parties. I was astounded and angry and my response was to go outside and confront the man. I wasn't very familiar with him but had seen him in American Pie. When I confronted him outside, he seemed in good spirits and explained to me that these parties were a place where he was given the opportunity to do literally anything he felt compelled to do.

He was eating a plate of meat which looked like pork. I asked if he was Jewish and he said yes, but that there was nothing in the scriptures about human flesh not being kosher and it was, to him, a loophole. I asked if he felt bad about eating a person and he said no, especially since the "son of a bitch" was trying to destroy their community.

At that point, I told him to stop raping his son, so he decided that he would rape me instead. I tried to get Tony to stop him, but he said that was why he had tried to hide us in the house. He didn't have any authority over any of the people at the party. Eugene took me inside and asked what room to go in and I said the den.

I asked him if he was worried that I could see his face and know who he was, but he said that I wouldn't remember and my parents wouldn't let me pursue charges. Only an act of Congress can get rid of the CIA and that would never happen because they "keep us safe".

He anally raped me and then sat on Tony's chair and forced me to go down on him. I insisted that he wash himself which he initially refused to do. He said that I should be doing everything that I was told to do. I begged him to at least rinse off his genitals and he did. After a few moments of oral sex, Tony came in and rescued me.

He told him that this was his den, which apparently had significance in the Reich because Eugene apologized. He shouted him away and helped me up to the bathroom that used to be Emma's and helped me into the tub to clean off.

I was sobbing about how because I had anal sex that made me gay and that I didn't want to be. He told me that wasn't the case and did his best to calm me down. I stayed away from the party for the rest of the night.

Chapter Sixteen

2003

In early Spring 2003, he told me almost everything afterwards. He was in the den and I said that I looked up to him and that he had helped liberated Europe from the Nazis and he replied that they didn't do as complete of a job as they thought, but he didn't learn that until later. I asked what he meant by that and he said that if I wanted to learn more, that I should call my father's mother. I did, and when I asked her about what he was talking about, she replied, "Uh oh, sounds like it's time for Grandpa Tony to die."

I asked her what she meant by that and she hurriedly said oh, never mind, I just meant that he's old and had a good life and seen all his children grow to adulthood. She tried to say that she had been drinking and thinking about mortality. I didn't quite buy that bewcause she didn't sound drunk. I said goodbye and hung up.

He asked me what she said and I told him and he went pale. I was angry that she would threaten something like that when I called her and asked - he hadn't actually told me anything. He said that they had done much more than that and if they were going to kill him, he had more than earned it. Given that, he would tell me everything he could at the time.

He said that in WWII, it turned out that the Germans had actually won. They had infiltrated the propaganda department and massively trumped up the resources and abilities of the US government. They had run such a strong propaganda campaign that when they "revealed" to the heads of other government departments that Germany had taken control of the full government, they risked the public turning on them. It was a trick, though. The Germans at that time had only infiltrated the propaganda department. I later leaned from Jean that this tactic was used to make the surrender, which occurred in 1945, be accepted by the rest of the federal government. Michael Dobbs refers to it in his book Six Months In 1945 as a "separate peace".

From his perspective, though, he only learned of the fact of Germany's victory when he was approached by representatives of the Reich after he scored extraordinarily well on one of their early IQ tests. It was originally scaled around Hitler's IQ but they had to adjust for him being such an outlier. Even with the new scaling he scored around 220. Because of that, they wanted him to assist them. My grandfather did not elaborate on what that meant at the time.

What it meant for him was constantly being around the upper level Nazis in the New York City area. They had helped him gain a high position in the New York Public Works department. Even so, being around them week to week and hearing them talk about Jews and the people in the city led him, as he told me, to a breaking point.

He got a tattoo like the ones in the concentration camps and designed and alternate persona named Mister Meyer. He had always read comics as a kid well into adulthood and created him as sort of a Yiddish Professor X. He bought an apartment in New York City and wore a Star of David pendant and yarmulke to complete the look. He modeled the voice after a neighbor he had growing up, who would quote aphorisms he would attribute to the Talmud, whether or not they were actually from it. His favorite was "As the Talmud says, revenge is a dish best served cold," which was a quote from The Godfather.

He recruited several people into his team. He saw Carol Kane give a talk about how the play or film she had done recently was important to her because of her family being affected by the Holocaust. He recruited an Irish nun who was involved in intelligence work. He recruited a young man who had gotten fired for getting into a fight at his work. He recruited a young black woman who had been caught forging documents at a check cashing business. The final recruit was a young man who had lost his grandmother who had been a survivor of the camps.

He taught them almost everything he learned from being around the Nazis and they would use the information to hunt them down and take them out. They disrupted many operations and, if the trophies he kept were an indication, took out at least 20 Nazis. However, even though they had made progress, the Nazis still had plans.

He learned one dinner that they had purchased a sugar refinery in Montezuma, NY and were planning to use it to refine poisoned corn supplied via train from a Reich controlled corn farm in Ohio, the Reich's heartland. They would then distribute the corn syrup for use in icing, snack cakes, donuts - anything that would kill the poor or people in minority majority communities - especially Jewish, Black, and Hispanic neighborhoods. The Hunters stopped the truck carrying it and then took out the architect of the plan - the Architect of the Eastern Gau.

Unfortunately, when they executed the plan, the young man was seriously injured. They asked Tony to perform a Yiddish prayer that he didn't know. They had already suspected that his persona was an act but that had sealed the deal. Between that and how bloodthirsty he had started acting, the group had broken up.

He said that there were other things too , and I recalled his attempt to stop the shootdown of the Iran Air flight. After that, Tom and my father had to supervise most visits. He said that at least he was able to help liberate Italy, which was why he had signed up in the first place. I promised him that I would try to finish the job liberating America. He said that he hoped I did. He said that there was a coded message for me in his stamp collection, but I haven't had the opportunity to decode it as I have not been given access to it.

I asked him if he would be okay and he said that his house had a security system and that they didn't control the police. Within two months, though, he was in the hospital with a blood clot in his leg. He died within a month or two from an induced heart attack around 2 am in the morning. When he got the blood clot, he said he was waiting up for news about my Grandmother who had been sent to the hospital that night. For a broken hip and must have fallen asleep in his chair.

Years later, my grandmother had dementia and my mother related to me a panic attack she had about Nazis being in their house. I believe that they were ambushed and drugged with my grandmother falling in the struggle. Then, my grandfather was injected with a drug that induced blood-clotting.

After his death, at the funeral, I remembered what Jean had told me. I was with my father and Uncles Tony and Carl. I told them and my father said, "Uh oh" and went to his car. My uncles immediately became uncomfortable and shifted on their seats. They knew what was coming. My father came back with a pair of vials and gave tehm each 3/4 of one and me the remaining half vial in our drinks.

I asked him if that meant what I had recalled was true, because from what I know, when people took that drug out it meant that someone had said something true that they didn't want people to know. He said that it was probably true, but that they probably gave him a clotting drug and let nature take its course.

At the wake, Alan Cambey came to me and complained that Tony had "spoiled the meat" by having his body embalmed so quickly after his death.

Chapter Seventeen

2005

During the summer after my freshman year of college, Lexi invited me out to spend the evening with her in fancy dress. We were seat fillers at the James Beard awards in New York City. I left our table to go get a drink at the bar, where I was picked up by Carla Lalli-Music. I didn't recognize her and I don't believe that she recognized me, but I saw her on stage earlier at the event as an award nominee for a piece she had written.

As I got my drink, I chatted with her briefly and she invited me up to her room. I didn't realize that Lexi had intended for this to be a date, so I agreed. When we got up there, she introduced me to her infant son, Cosmo, which I thought was odd for a one night stand, so I jokingly asked if he was mine (I may have been drugged at the bar or by Lexi, not sure). She got serious and said that she didn't see how that was possible because we had just met.

I apologized and told her that I probably had a bit too much to drink. She asked if I was okay and I said probably not. So she called someone at the front desk to have me brought down. As we waited, I asked her who her son's father was and she said her husband in Brooklyn who was an architect. I asked if they were separated and she said that no, he was just very distant lately. I said that Brooklyn didn't sound very distant to me which I meant earnestly, but she took a deeper meaning than I intended. We exchanged phone numbers and the service that brought us in kicked me and Lexi out.

Lexi was furious at me and explained that this was meant to be a big date. She had been dating my friend Mike through most of high school and I told her it felt weird to date her. I felt bad, though, because she was my friend and it wasn't like I didn't find her attractive. When we got back to her father's apartment, we ended up hooking up and having sex. I felt a bit bad afterwards, since I was going to see Mike soon and told her as much. She said that she had something that could help.

She opened a cabinet that was full of vials. I didn't recognize them at the time, but they were the drug. She told me that she found them and that taking them would make me feel drunk but also forget what happened. I said that I didn't mean to say it wasn't nice, but maybe it would be better if I forgot. She said that it was fine, she drank them for fun sometimes. I took one and mostly forgot the next day.

For the next few weeks before my college semester started up, we went out to parties in New York City and would take the drug recreationally. We hooked up a couple more times, but she broke it off right before school started back up for me.

#

I received a phone call from Carla around September 10th inviting me to a party at her house in Brooklyn on or about September 17th. I told Lexi about it on the 11th and she was impressed that I was being invited as I told her that people from Vogue at Conde Nast were going to be there. When I arrived there, it was clear that it was a much larger gathering than that. There were several cars and SUVs parked outside. I walked there from, I believe, the Morgan Ave subway station.

Carla greeted me and introduced me to her husband, Daniel, who recognized my name and asked about my grandmother. He said he recalled coming down for a barbecue at one point. She introduced me to several of the other guests as hors d'oeuvres were put out. The other guests, as I could best recall were:

#

Brad Leone and his wife

Alton Brown

Eric Ripert

Anthony Bourdain

Ina Garten

Claire Saffitz

Adam Rapoport

An unnamed CIA recruiter who I would later interact with multiple times

#

There were also guards at the event towards the front of the house. There may have been other guests as well. Before the main discussion occurred, Daniel Music showed me around the house. I asked him if he had any relation to Lorenzo Music, remembering part of the barbecue even if I didn't have the full context. He said that he was his younger brother, which I thought since he looked too young to be older than Lorenzo Music. He showed me a shrine of sorts with some of his recorded performances and comedy albums.

I said that Carla had mentioned that he was an architect, so I asked him what he had built. He said it was more about putting together ideas than actual things. He said most of the things he had built were secret so he couldn't tell me. I said that he didn't sound like much of an architect if he didn't build things, half-jokingly. He said that he would show me something he built. He brought me into the living room and slid open a display. There was a hand-built scale model of the Amistad, with a display plaque at the bottom right.

I asked him, wasn't that like, a slave ship? Didn't that bother him? He said that was the reason he usually kept it hidden, because it tended to bother people who saw black people as people. I told him how could they not? I worked alongside people who weren't white and went to school with them. He said that they used to have laws to prevent that. At that point, the first stage of the meeting started.

Carla introduced everyone to each other and started talking about how they had been getting good results with mimetic work patterns in their video content and had plans to continue along that path. At that, Anthony Bourdain bellowed out, "Why don't we just let people think for themselves?

"We all know your opinion, Tony," Alton Brown interjected, "Why is he even invited to these things?" he asked Carla. She said that anyone with above a 5% market penetration was guaranteed a seat at the table. He said that maybe they should rethink these numbers.

She asked me what I thought. I said that it was interesting that they were teaching patterns of working in that way, but what did people do before this? I sort of agreed with Tony that people should be able to think for themselves. Carla said that was a minority opinion there. They broke the meeting for a short break and I had a horrible realization. I didn't fully remember where and when I first met Carla, but I did have a very faint memory of having sex that night. In that memory I had fragments of the conversation with Carla about her husband being distant and I felt immediately guilty.

I asked if I could talk to Music and told him that I think I had slept with his wife and that was why she had invited me. He laughed and said that he found that hard to believe. I asked him to think back a few weeks or months to a time where maybe they weren't as open with each other and he said yes, then he told me that I'd better wait inside.

Carla came over and asked me what I had said to her husband as he'd become immediately distant. I told her what I told him and she said, "But we didn't." I told her that I didn't remember clearly and I could have sworn I did. Her husband said that he would get to the bottom of it and I really wanted to remember. I was asked to sit on the couch and her husband ended the party early due to a "personal matter".

I was sitting on the couch and he had Carla go to the fridge and get the drug. He told her to get two vials and she became upset. She said that he had promised that he would never make her take it again. He said that for something like this, he had to be sure.

I asked them what it was - he said that it would help me remember and then forget. I said that I wouldn't mind remembering but Carla said that it had other effects, too. She split a vial between us and I took it in a mug.

I started feeling the effects of it almost immediately. He asked me where we met and I said that I was with my friend Lexi and that we were seat fillers. I said that I met Carla at the bar and don't remember much after that, but I know that I had sex that night. He asked me if I had seen Carla maybe sneak something into my drink and I said no, I got the wine before even seeing her and before she saw me.

He cursed and said that he never should have brought her out of the brothels, seeing her having sex with other people, how could he think she'd ever be faithful. He told her to strip and went into his study and got a letter opener. He told me to pull down my pants and go towards her to have sex with her. I didn't want to because she was his wife and I told him so. He sat on the couch and told me to try. I couldn't and both of us were crying.

He said fine, in disgust, and it seemed like he was mostly satisfied. Carla put back on her clothes and he let me pull back up my pants. I said that I still couldn't remember who I had sex with - Carla said that it must have been my friend Lexi. I mentioned her last name Lampel and Music said that one of their station chiefs was named Lampel and had a daughter. I pulled out my cell phone to show the entry for her and he got angry that I would pull out my phone. I was just trying to prove to him that I knew Lexi and Carla hadn't just told me a cover story.

Then he went into his office and I passed out on the couch. Carla told me the next morning that he was just having fun and saw me out.

#

I was at a party with Lexi for just a couple of minutes before being approached by a CIA recruiter. We had dressed up in fancy dress, so I was wearing a suit. He asked me if I was a patriot and I said sort of. I recalled being asked that at Music's and my reply came with much less conviction. He mentioned that he was a CIA recruiter and I told him that I probably could never kill anyone so I probably wouldn't be very well suited for that.

He told me that he was actually involved in recruiting for the entertainment side of things and that their assets would just be asked to act or produce or do whatever they were recruited for. I asked him what kind of work there was and he said that it was mostly in TV and movies. He claimed that they hadn't really infiltrated the music industry much because it was hard to use to push specific messages as effectively. I made a comment about bands like Against Me! And the World/ Inferno Friendship society - he seemed to recognize the latter.

I said that it sounded interesting and maybe I would want to do that some day. He asked me what about right now? I was taken by surprise and said that my parents were expecting me home for the long weekend and I was here with a friend and didn't want to abandon her. Lexi quickly said that it was okay and the recruiter told me to just text my parents and say that it was a big opportunity He asked my name and recalled that my father had done good work for them in the 70's.

He called over a car and said that they had someone to put through the entertainment track. I went downstairs and immediately stepped into a black car. I was driven to La Guardia and put on a private plane. On the plane, they took a picture of me, took measurements and gave me two vials of hyocine to drink. I did and then fell asleep for the flight. They didn't tell me where they were going.

When I woke up, we had landed and three or four women were lined up for me to pick as my guide. One was Paige

Pinckney - I don't don't remember the others for sure, but she was the one I picked. I asked where they were sent and he said "where they were before" which he implied was a brothel. Paige guided me through the airports which I realized from the signage was New Orleans, and to a waiting car.

I can't recall the first location we went to exactly, but I believe it was a tailor who put me in nicer clothes. My other suit was stashed in a bag. I was kept drugged and on more than just hyocine the whole time and did not have much sleep from the night before. We got lunch after.

We then met with a comedy improv group and I was told to basically direct them to see how I worked with others. They improvised something and the recruiter asked me what should happen next. I suggested that the characters over-escalate - one of the characters should "shoot" the other, which was direction they disagreed with. He told them to perform it as instructed and the group said I probably wouldn't be a good fit.

The recruiter then had Paige bring me to a bar, where she got me a gin and tonic at my request and I tried to talk to her. I don't remember what we discussed, but shortly after, she brought me to a room at a party with a balcony overlooking a parade. She took off her shirt and put on Mardi Gras beads. After a few minutes, she left and I became panicked and confused.

Between the drugs and the alcohol, I wasn't sure how long I had been there and how long she had been gone. I thought it was a half hour, but it was a couple of minutes. I was upset and scared that she had abandoned me. I accused her of abandoning me and broke down when she returned. She asked me how long I thought we had been there and I said a couple of days. She reminded me that I had just arrived that morning. She told me that she had just given the recruiter a status update and she would stick with it the rest of the night.

She led me to another room in what I think was the same building. It seemed much larger and there was a king-sized bed and a circular, low, couch. She asked me what I wanted to do and she said that there were no wrong answers. I was very nervous about having sex, so I suggested maybe making out. We did briefly, but it didn't really seem like she was into it, so I suggested that we watch TV instead.

I told her that when I was a kid, my grandparents would drive me up from Florida to New York and we would stay at a motel on the way. She said that she never really traveled growing up. I said that I didn't really either, other than those trips. One of the best things about it was watching HBO, especially the movies they always had in rotation, like Serial Mom. I turned on the TV and, coincidentally, that was what was on HBO. We watched it for a bit and then went to sleep.

The next morning, I was given my clothes to change back into. Prior to changing we made out again briefly, but I still felt uncomfortable about sex. I changed back into my suit. Paige got a call from the recruiter and told me that it was over and that they wouldn't be moving forward with me. I asked her why and she said that in her limited experience, they preferred people that could b e manipulated with sex, and since we didn't go that far, they didn't feel like they could use me. I had assumed it was because I wasn't very funny. I told her that I could go for sex if that was what they wanted, but she said that it was too late and that it was over.

I became scared and asked her what they were going to do with me. She told me to just do what they said and I would probably be fine. I did and I remember being drugged again, losing consciousness and waking up in a van on 202 driving towards my parents house. They asked me what the opportunity was and I told them it was for a comedy scout but that I wasn't funny enough, I guess.

#

During the period during which I was being courted by the entertainment wing, they asked me which female celebrity I would like to meet. I didn't realize it at the time, b ut when they said meet, they really meant "have sex with". I named Amy Sedaris, who I was a big fan of. I received a call a few days later for me to come to Brooklyn to a specific address.

There were two or three CIA agents there and we were welcomed by Amy Sedaris, who had prepared dinner. Her apartment was below ground level with a large living/dining area and a full window door between it and the patio. They had set up the meeting under the pretense of catching up with her about her career.

She said that she was planning to write a book, basically "At Home With Amy Sedaris" and they told her that they would help her get it published. She politely declined but they told her that it wasn't really a choice. They also told her that when they recruited her, it was mostly to be on TV, so they expected her to use the book as the basis of a television show, which would later be called At Home With Amy Sedaris.

After food, they told her that in exchange for their "help" they expected her to have sex with me. I didn't really want that, but I felt compelled to do as they said because I was drugged. They made a crack about how weird it was that out of all the actresses they had access to, I picked her and I reiterated how big of a fan I was. They then left me alone with her at the apartment.

I asked her if we were going to have sex and she replied that I was a bit young for her. I asked what would happen if she just ignored them and she said that she would never be able to work in America again. They would destroy her personal life and career. I asked her how she came in contact with them and she said that they recruited her when she was younger. I asked if it was for the sketch comedy show she did on Comedy Central. She said that it was earlier than that and I asked if it was before with her brother and she confirmed, surprised that I was that familiar with her career. She then asked if I wanted to "do this".

I said maybe but it didn't seem like it was something that we were both into. I think that we may have kissed but I really can't remember. I know that we talked more and discussed her career. She mentioned that she had been brought to a CIA brothel once, but she didn't really take advantage of the things that they offered her.

She did introduce me to Huckleberry, her model monkey which she jokingly considered her child. She said that she had made it from a kit that a friend had given her which involved baking it in an oven. I slightly indented his "skin" with a fingernail which upset her. I didn't intend to damage him but I was trying to figure out how he was made. I apologized.

When it was clear that no sex would happen, she let me sleep in her bed while she took the couch. The bedspread was a multi-colored crosshatch of different fabrics - it looked handmade. The next morning I jokingly asked if I could live there but she said no and I left.

#

I received an email from the agent who had put me through the entertainment recruiting to meet someone at Qdoba in downtown New Brunswick. I did, and it was Paige. I asked her if we had met before and she told me that we had never met before, presumably because she expected that the drugs would have taken that memory.

She gave me a soda, presumably drugged, and told me to walk down the block to the Jamba Juice and ask out a girl there. She gave me a pair of tickets to a Rutgers football game and told me to invite her to that. I questioned why and she said that I was just the girl's type.

I followed the instructions and she said yes. I don't remember the fake name she was using at the time but it was Anastasia. I didn't recognize and I don't think she recognized me, but she agreed to the date.

We first went to King Neptune Night at the Cook/Douglas dining hall. I noticed that she looked tired and she said that it was due to some medicine she was on, but she still wanted to come out with me. We ate dinner and then took a bus over to the game.

I was visibly bored and tried to make conversation, but I could tell that she wasn't really too into the game either. She got us a couple beers, which helped a bit, but after around a half hour, she asked me if I wanted to get out of there. I agreed.

She brought me to a dorm room that was mostly empty except for the furniture. I noticed that the name on the door wasn't her's and mentioned that. She said that I was perceptive and that she was borrowing it from a friend. At that point, we hooked up and I stayed the night.

The next morning she missed an exam and we slept in. She said that she would rather just spend the time with me. I agreed and we spent most of the morning together.

The agent who put me on this asked for an update and I told him about the dorm room. He told me to ask her out again and I did, but she didn't reply. He said that she probably got nervous and ran.

#

I was visiting my grandparents in Florida for ten days over winter break from school. The first night we were there, Jean said that I should visit her friend Jeff because she had to discuss business with my parents. She would have to call to discuss business with my parents. She would have to call him first to make sure he was at his Palm Beach house that night.

She said he usually was on Tuesdays, but wanted to make sure.

When she confirmed that he was there, she took out a black clamshell case and said that I would have to drink a vial before I went. I did and I remember a car picking me up but nothing else between them and getting dropped off in from of his house. I was welcomed by a girl who said that her name was Anastasia. I could feel that I was on drugs and asked her if she was on drugs, too. She nodded, but clarified that she was on different drugs.

The entrance to the house led into a kitchen. She led me down a hall through a room with a statue to the right and into the back room that had full windows with slatted shades open in front of them. There were several teenage girls in various states of undress and Jeff, getting a back massage on the floor. He stood up to introduce himself and offer me cocaine and/or other drugs. I was shocked and disgusted. He was much older than the girls and from what Jean said I expected him to be closer to college age.

I told him that I didn't think my grandmother would want me to do drugs. He said that if she sent me there, she expected me to partake in whatever he was offering. She had told me that he helped put on parties for her. I told him that I had never seen any underaged girls at any of her parties and he clarified that it was usually for things like galas. I was confused and said that I had known she was involved in local politics and he laughed at that. I told him that he looked way too old to be hooking up with girls who were sixteen or seventeen and he said that he had been sleeping with underage girls for at least the past 20-25 years.

I told him that I didn't want anything to do with it and that I wanted to go. He said that I would have to wait for a car and called Jean to have her send another one of her planes so that I didn't show up on the flight logs. I got the impression then that logs were being written up as future blackmail material. I said that I would walk, not realizing how far away I was. When I realized it would be a four hour drive, I agreed to wait. Anastasia waited there with me.

I asked her if I could call my girlfriend, Krystal, and she said that it was fine. I did and I told her that I was scared and didn't know where I was. She asked me if I was with anyone and I said yes. She told me to ask them who they were and Anastasia replied that she was a whore. I repeated that and Krystal exclaimed that she was a person, with hopes and dreams and I told her that I agreed but that was what she had called herself. She said that she had to go and hung up. I began to ask Anastasia about herself when we were approached by a woman who identified herself as a detective investigating Jeffrey Epstein.

Anastasia's first reaction was to tell him that he was being investigated. The woman said that interfering with a federal investigation was a crime that could involve up to fifteen years in prison. She said that besides, he already knew that he was under investigation. Anastasia wondered why he would come back there then and the detective said arrogance, a characterization Anastasia agreed with. She gave us both business cards and said that she had approached us because it didn't look like we were okay with what was going on in the house. I said that I wasn't and that my grandmother had sent me there. She asked me who my grandmother was and I told her Jean Marin. She checked something on a computer in the van she had come out of and asked if her middle initial was a C. I confirmed, but she said that she wasn't approved to investigate her. She told Anastasia that if she ever wanted to come forward, she should call her. She left and we started talking about what had happened.

Anastasia said that Jeff had done so much for her. I asked her what she meant by that and she said that he had bought her hundreds in clothes and I commented that wasn't worth fifteen years in prison, so she shouldn't tell him and she should hang onto the card. I asked her what her hopes and dreams were and she said that she didn't really have much and considered her existence as better than most.

I asked her what she planned for her future and she said that she was probably going to do this for her whole life. I said that, no offense, but the life she described didn't sound sustainable forever, especially in light of the investigation around him. I asked her what she wanted to do with her life after. She thought about it for a moment and she said that her teachers in school seemed to be mostly happy and satisfied in their lives, so probably something like teaching.

I said that I had friends who were going to school to be teachers and the certification process was five years long. I asked her when she would want to be a teacher and she said around her thirties. I told her that she should probably start relatively soon if that was her goal. She agreed. She said that she had started doing this when she was seventeeen and had sort of dismissed the possibility of continuing school. Around that time, the car arrived to pick me up. I gave her a hug and wished her luck.

When I returned to my grandmother's she asked me what I thought. I told him to tell her friend that he should stop sleeping with underage girls. She said okay, she'll tell him clearly lying. I also realized I had the card and gave it to her, telling her that he was investigation. She said that he had done a lot of good work for them and he would be supported.

Chapter Eighteen

2006

I forgot everything about Jeffrey Epstein within a day or so, but I had earlier expressed to Krystal that I felt like I was being followed by the CIA because of a mix of vague recollections of being hunted by Tom Hanks, tortured by Music, and bits and pieces of our family links. It wasn't a mostly full set of sequential memories like I have now, but it was enough that Krystal suggested I ask my grandparents about it.

I started by asking my grandfather if he had ever dealt with the CIA. He expressed surprise and asked me what made me ask that. He called in Jean who he told that I had asked about the CIA. She left for a moment and returned with a cup with a vial of hyocine. I drank it as I told them about it feeling like I was being followed or hunted by them. The entire time

Jean was silent, watching me as Richie talked to me.

I told him about being hunted, confusing the timeline and thinking it had happened after Music had interrogated me. I told them about what he said about Saving Private Ryan and began to recall that they said that they were CIA royalty. Around that point Richie asserted that it sounded like whatever had happened, it sounded like it was done. When he was in the Navy and encountered military intelligence officers, they tended to only be around for the duration of the operation and that was it.

He said that he would put in a word with his army contacts and that would probably be the end of it. That apparently satisfied me and I don't recall continuing the conversation.

#

I was approached by Al Stankard about what he framed as a political opportunity. Al was, by most accounts, pretty creepy and not someone I liked talking to, but he made it sound fairly interesting. I told a friend, Frankie Huang about it and she tried to discourage me from the meeting, but I figured that talking to him couldn't hurt. There were four other people than me in the meeting Al Stankard, Michael Puzio, Stephen Miller and one other person whose name I can't recall. Stephen took a particular interest in me - apparently he had sought me out specifically and the others were there just to hear the main part of his pitch.

He asked me if I was related to Helen Handwerker - I confirmed that she was my great-grandmother, which he got excited about. He asked me if I was popular in high school and if people seemed to listen to me more than usual. I thought that was odd but somewhat accurate - I nodded.

I asked him about how he knew my great-grandmother's name and he said it was in a book. He tracked me down through public records, but he had seen her name in a book with people of potentially magical lineage. I laughed at that and asked where this book was.

He told me that he had seen it when he was training at a Thelemic lodge in the Bay Area. He explained that Aleister Crowley's religion was about people unlocking their true will and letting that guide them. His true will, as he explained, was to do everything he could to prevent people from immigrating to America. He acknowledged that wasn't exactly in line with their teachings, but it worked for him.

The conversation turned to what he was planning. To him, he believed that he could use his true will and the will of maybe 30 or so co-conspirators, to effectively commit a "perfectly legal" coup and transform the United States into a white ethnostate. By putting people in the roles of aides and staffers to political leaders, they would be situated to directly affect policy and platforms.

His logic was that most people working on a campaign or in an agency is mostly just going about their day and most candidates are just interested in running and winning. With enough people spread across campaigns passionate about a certain goal, they would be able to achieve that, given time.

He believed that the only reason that the Holocaust failed was due to bad PR. A genocide could easily be performed quietly and out in the open when framed as "managing immigration". People, he said, were already turned against "illegal immigrants". All it would take was something like the Iraq war to create refugees who would be framed as migrants and stuck into camps. In Europe, they would be left out to sea.

He commented on the effectiveness of concentration camps during the Boer War. Disease ran through the camps killing people effectively and cleanly without the nasty PR of ovens and smoke. America already had facilities used by ICE that could be turned into camps and it would easily be explained as "controlling immigration", something widely supported.

The other two people, especially Michael Puzio, who identified as a Polish nationalist, were very on board with his plan. I questioned every bit of it. I told him that if I had a true will, it was more aligned with helping people than helping to orchestrate a coup and a genocide. I think that I called him a Nazi, but he came back with the fact that he was Jewish. He believed that certain groups of people just had higher intelligence and that his plan would weed out those who didn't.

I told him that I had gotten into some trouble with how I had treated women and he said that the Right was more forgiving about that sort of thing. I asked him if the whole genocide thing was negotiable, but he was intent on making America a white ethnostate. At that point, I walked out and told Frankie that I felt stupid for even considering meeting with them.

#

After the attempted recruitment by Stephen Miller, I decided to do some research into Thelema and located a number for a lodge in New York City. I left a voicemail saying that my great grandmother's name was listed in a book they had and received a call back requesting a meeting at a show. I believe that it was at the Bowery Ballroom or Knitting Factory.

I met up with a man whose name I can't recall - I don't think he gave it. He guided me to a table and gestured at a cup with liquid in it. He said that he was going to ask me a question and, if I answered incorrectly, I would have to drink it and I would forget the meeting. I hesitated, recognizing the drug as hyocine, but agreed.

He asked me, "Are you an angel of light or an angel of darkness?" I replied that I liked to think of myself as an angel of light, but I'm just a person. At that, he slid the cup towards me and told me to drink. I sighed and did and was about to leave but he stopped me. He said that some people do remember and I was the sort of person that they wanted. He told me that the correct answer was, "If I were an angel of light, you wouldn't want to know me." It was a quote from page 155 of The Medusa's Head by John Symonds.

I asked him if he was CIA since the liquid drug he gave me was used by them and he replied that he was, but he learned that they were the single greatest threat to people finding their true will in the world. He had learned that as an agent when they took him out by boat to an island to tell him about a pact America made with the Nazis.

I asked him about the book and he said that what Miller was probably referring to was the birth charts. He said that if he remembered correctly, I was either descended from Hitler or Goebbels. I replied that I didn't resemble them as far as I knew and he said that I wouldn't, necessarily.

He told me that Aleister Crowley had helped the Nazis and performed spells that involved human sacrifice. When he learned of the Holocaust and the full scope of their brutality, he spent the last years of his life pouring everything into finding a way to get them out of power. Eventually he had a vision of how to do so and founded the OTO to hold that knowledge.

He told me a bit about sex magic, but said that my real potential was in my bloodline. He told me that if I ever had a son, to bring him to one of the lodges and there was a ritual that would be performed that would involve taking a small amount of his blood. I dismissed it at the time but did share that part about my heritage and the ritual with Vanessa, commenting at the time that I would be a shitty dad if I did that.

The meeting ended around that point and I did recall most of it afterward. I even contacted and met with Aleister Crowley's last living daughter, but my questioning didn't really get anywhere.

#

While my time involved in the pilot script writing was short, Tina and Robert brought me back on to work in a reduced capacity on the pilot shoot. This was a bad idea, as I was put on the hyocine basically as soon as I got there. As soon as I remembered that there were child sacrifices, I sought out the person on the production team that was responsible for them and made an attempt to reveal it to everyone present in the building for the shoot.

It just so happened that the girl from the Black Sun was there with the sacrifice and I insisted that she bring the child out so they could all see what was really happening. I asked her what would happen to us if we refused the sacrifice - she said that would be a bad idea. She postulated that the Reich would kill us and her for letting that happen and the child anyway. I saw the child that we were supposed to sacrifice and I really saw the girl that they had brought in with her. The child was ours. The girl was Jordan, the girl who survived the Ritz and was sent to the brothels. My memories flooded back.

I asked the girl's name - it was Alice. I asked if Jordan, who was by now going as Rebecca, remembered - she said that she did and she cried, realizing that our daughter was taken from her when they took her eggs. This was the girl that was conceived when we were brought together, though. It seemed that her fate was to be the same as the other 144,000.

At this point, we realized that there was Biblical significance to that number and that the human sacrifices were meant to be magic for the Reich and sacrifices to the Bull God Moloch. We didn't believe in the magic but we knew that the Reich did.

By this point the people around us knew that something was going on. I asked Rebecca what they would do if we refused to make the sacrifice and tried to take our daughter and she said that would be bad - that they would kill us and her for allowing it to happen.

So we resigned ourselves to allowing our daughter to be sacrificed, but we weren't going to let it end there. I knew that the 30 Rock list of episodes was something that was online still, along with lists of episode names for other shows like The Good Place, Schitt's Creek, Brooklyn 99 as remnants from a Rosicrucian group that decoded them from Shakespeare's work where they were encoded. At the very least they were on the internet years before the episodes were written or even filmed, along with the names of the writers of each episode. Tina Fey and all of the writers who were present - of which there were many, including Dan Levy, or at least the actor who replaced him. All of the present writers signed the document and it was sealed away somewhere and timestamped.

I summoned up what knowledge I remembered about what I was told about Lucifer and using sacrifices to create stories. My mother told me as a child that Aesop's Fables were written and a life was sacrificed for each of those, so I told them that we would need to use the sacrifices to undo the harm, magically speaking, to subvert Aesop's Fables by making each sacrifice a direct subversion of a specific fable. As all of these people would be making sacrifices for their shows at some point in the future, we asked the people making the sacrifices to tell the children as much as possible so that heaven would know the sins being committed be the Reich on Earth.

As I did this, Rebecca hugged Alice and told her that she loved her and talked with her, taking some last moments knowing that she was her mother and that she was our daughter.

#

The Good Place was to be as close as possible to our version of scripture. We explained to them how the afterlife really worked and they based it as close as possible to it while still keeping it in the realm of fiction. The concept of the tetramorphs - four individuals embodying different archetypes - was a major factor in the story. Rebecca added the name Jeremy Bearimy which was a nickname for a friend she had.

We held our daughter together between us with me on her right and Rebecca to her left. Tina used a razor to slit her throat and she cried at what she had been forced to do. She left the room and the others watched on.

We desperately committed our child to heaven knowing that the act of killing her would turn her into an angel, someone who could never be a child again. We were both visited by her afterwards. Jordan shot her out of fear and dumped her body in a frozen lake. When she visited me, I recognized her and explained what the Reich had done to both of us - our minds were not our own and she would have never hurt her had she known that she was her daughter.

#

I was walking around Asbury Park with Rob Santucci, a housemate of mine at the time, after a World/Inferno Friendship Society show. We ran into Franz after the show and asked him what he was up to. He said that he was going to grab a couple of drinks and that he didn't think we would want to come along, but thought about it for a moment and said that it would probably be fine. We followed him and entered Asbury Lanes.

There, we sat down at a table near one of the lanes and Franz got me a drink. Rob was straight edge so he didn't have one. There was a man wearing a leather jacket there who seemed happy to see Franz. I asked him how he knew him and the man said that he had dirt on him and that Franz would do anything for him. I asked Franz what he meant and Franz told the man to tell us - we wouldn't remember it anyway. I said that I wasn't that drunk but I promised that I wouldn't use whatever it was against him.

The man shrugged and pulled out a copy of the book They Too Were AMERICANS and flipped it to page 49, showing me the below photo.

#

Willy Luedtke,
DKV.-Direktor in der Bundesleitung.

Carl Nicolay,
Gau-Org.-Leiter u.
Bundesfrauenschafts-Referent

Max Rapp.
DKV.-Direktor in der Bundesleitung

Department leaders of the German-American Bund. (From the *"1938 Yearbook of the German-American Bund,"* author's collection)

- Bund Treasurer
- Bund Secretary
- Bund Organizational Leader
- Bund Propaganda Leader
- Bund Intelligence Leader
- Bund Commercial Leader
- Bund Publicity Leader
- Bund Educational Leader
- Bund Political Leader
- National Youth Leader
- National Women's Leader
- National OD Leader

What then were the goals and vision for the future that the Bund

#

"Turn's out, Franz's grandpa was a Nazi." I asked him where he got the book and he said that it was on sale somewhere and he bought it for a couple hundred dollars. It was worth the investment because Franz was paying him $500 a month to keep it quiet but he was going to start getting much more out of it.

At that, Franz interjected and said that wasn't going to be happening. The man was confused. He asked Franz if he wanted it to get out that his grandfather was a Nazi and Franz said no, but that's not going to happen. He had tried to play along and make it look like he was paying him off, but he never stopped to think that there were still "more of us" around to help him out. At that, he shouted into a microphone hidden on his chest and one or two people came in with guns firing. They entered from behind me, so I couldn't see if they had shot anyone else, but I dropped to the ground as soon as I heard shots. Franz pointed at the man who had jumped up in shock and said that he was the target. They put several bullets in him - at least two or three in his chest.

The shooting stopped suddenly and I was disoriented and not sure what was going on. I think that the drink Franz gave me was drugged. I asked him if he had a grudge on the guy, not remembering what he had told us about blackmailing Franz. My memory caught up and I asked Franz if he was a Nazi. He looked at me and asked what I meant. I said that he told the man that there were more off us, meaning Nazis, around. He replied that he had just come up with that as something cool to say and that he wasn't a Nazi. I took him for his word and checked on Rob. He was also okay but confused. We got up and walked to the door.

We asked the man at the door if we were allowed to leave or if they were going to kill us too. He said that depended on whether or not we allowed him to inject us, pulling out a syringe with the hyocine attached to it. I said fine and stuck out my arm, but Rob hesitated. He said that he didn't feel comfortable putting drugs in his system. I told him that it was literally a life and death choice and that they had already killed people. He let out a sigh of frustration and said fine, sticking out his arm to be injected after I was. We walked away from the venue, past a police car with its lights on. The drug apparently worked quickly on Rob because he asked me what that was.

I told him that it was a cover-up - that my father had told me things like that happened all the time. They would probably say that anyone who died was in a car crash. He shook his head at that in disbelief. I told him that whoever was behind it had the police in their pocket if the car was any indication.

We walked parallel to the beach towards Rob's car, when I asked him if he wanted me to prove to him that the man who told me to walk in the water the previous summer was actually able to manipulate me into almost killing myself, since he hadn't believed me. He said sure and we walked onto the beach.

I told him that the second he felt like he couldn't stay above water to call me in and I would pull him out. He walked into the water and was quickly overtaken, quicker than I was prepared for. The drugs also made my reaction time sluggish, but I was able to push myself to go in after him and pull him out. He was okay after a couple of minutes.

#

#

Jean had the entire family brought to California for a Reich Rally at the Los Angeles Convention center. Emily, Margie and Rick were all there, I don't recall if Laura came. Jean tasked me with finding someone to marry within the Reich. Emily and I were both drugged but Rick wasn't. I don't recall if Margie was. There were many celebrities and politicians there.

Jean told me to ask anyone who I was attracted to if they were interested in having sex with me for the rest of their lives. I did meet someone, but before that, I walked around the location and watched speeches and tried to take in what was going on around me. Someone had pulled Emily aside and was planning to have sex with her. I let Rick and Margie know and Rick intervened but by claiming her and telling them that *he* was having sex with her. I was disgusted but couldn't do anything but walk around.

To my horror, I found a square bit of carpet with a couch, a naked man with a naked child, and a cage with two more clothed children around 3-5 years old. The man was eating the child on his lap. I collapsed in front of the cage and tried to see how it could be opened and called to Rick and Margie for help. They told me that these children were already dead and that I lived at home, so I would have nowhere to bring them if I took them with me. Even if I tried, there was a whole room of people who would rather kill me than let me take them.

They told me to move on and I did. I had trouble remembering the things that I saw because I was drugged. I was met a boy around my age, Anthony Burch. He said that his father was part of the group that ran this. I told him about the children and he said that was why he tried to not look around at what was going on around him. He seemed to be in a similar position as me, knowledgeable but powerless. He did not seem to be drugged.

He led me outside to where several other people around our age were milling about and introduced me to Ashly, his sister. I was immediately smitten and asked her what Jean had told me. She seemed interested and, since it was the start of a weekend, we discussed spending some of that time together to see if it was a good match.

She said that she was seeing someone and I said that was fine, we didn't have to then, but she said that she wanted to. I asked that she be honest with him about what hanging out for the weekend might entail. She did and she brought me to the apartment she shared with her brother.

Once we were there, she told me that she was actually bringing me to a friend of hers and mine, apparently - Becca, who I used to know as Jordan. I didn't remember her at the time but apparently she had just turned 18 and wanted us to have a legal marriage certificate on file as soon as possible. She reached out to me through Ashly and Anthony, but me not remembering her led me to think that it was Ashly who really wanted to marry me.

She spoke with Becca on the phone for a couple minutes to confirm that she had me and that I would be ready for the wedding tomorrow. I was confused - I asked Ashly if she didn't want to sleep with me, then. Becca was on the other line and gave it her blessing, with a hint of sadness that I didn't remember her and that I would be with someone else on what was the eve of our wedding.

I recall going to a party in California the evening before the wedding. I slept at the apartment and was brought to a location the next day in Palm Springs where there was a tent on a hill where we were married in a small private ceremony. Maria was there, after Lucifer had immolated her but prior to visiting me afterwards. I was transformed into my true self for the ceremony and the sex afterwards, but my full memory has yet to be written.

At the end of the weekend, I approached Jean with Ashly, forgetting that I had been married just a day earlier to someone else, asking her to confirm a pairing between Ashly and myself. She denied it because she was biracial and my bride was to be "the purest white" because of my heritage. A few weeks later, Ashly messaged me on Facebook, but I had no memory of her and they wiped the conversation.

#

I received a text a few weeks later from Anastasia, using the same alias I went out with her under, asking me to meet her at 1:00 PM at Edo, a high-end Asian fusion restaurant. I figured that it was for lunch, so I checked their menu prior to going.

When I arrived, the restaurant didn't seem to be open, but I told them who I was meeting and they let me in. She was sitting at a table close to the center-right of the room waiting for me. I asked her if we were having lunch and she said that wasn't why she had called me, but had water brought to the table.

At that point, we were interrupted by a "young professional" man who said something along the lines of "Whatever he's paying you, I'll double it if you spend your time with me instead". She was flustered and I was confused. I replied that I wasn't paying to spend time with her. She took him aside and talked to him for a moment, telling him that isn't how this works.

When she returned, she apologized for that. I asked her what this was and she explained that she was an escort. I nodded - it was pretty clear from the conversation. I asked her why she asked me to meet her there. She said that she really liked me and wanted to see if I wanted to date her in an open relationship. I asked her if there was a chance that she would stop being an escort and she said no, so I thought about it.

I replied that I liked her a lot, too, so I was willing to give it a shot. I then said in the interest of full disclosure that I believed that I had committed rape, unintentionally, but it was something that was part of why I'd tried to avoid relationships. I said that the worst feeling in the world was being with someone where both parties weren't on the same page. She agreed with that and said that redemption and taking accountability for wrongs committed was important to her. She told me to come over to her apartment in Rockoff Hall on Saturday night. I commented that I thought it wasn't open yet and she said that it was for some people.

#

That Saturday, I came over after dinner and Anastasia greeted me. She introduced me to her friend/roommate and we went into her room to hook up and talk. She explained that she was hired to work for the people who owned Edo and in turn provide services to the college, providing the "college girl experience" to visiting men willing to pay. She told me that her name she had given me wasn't her real name, which was also why the other dorm room had a different name listed on the door.

She whispered her real name to me, but told me to use the fake one whenever I talked to her. We talked about some other things and then she offered me half of a pill, some opiod. We each took half a pill together and she said that she hadn't had any in a while since she left the place she was staying. I asked her about it.

She got serious and said that I couldn't tell anyone about it. I agreed. She asked me what I would think if she told me that there was a secret island where pretty much every famous person went to have sex with underage girls. I replied that there was a black market for pretty much everything else, so unfortunately, it made sense. She was relieved and a bit excited that I believed her and we talked about it for a while.

She asked me if we had met before and I said no, because I didn't remember meeting her at the house in Florida. She said that she remembered a Rich that looked like me and he (I) was the one who convinced her to pursue her teaching certification.

She described the island and told me about G, whose name none of them could pronounce properly. When it was clear that Jeffrey Epstein, the man who owned the island, was under investigation, G had gathered up a group of around 5 girls and told them that they had a choice. All of them could take $30,000 each and leave together or none of them would. The alternative was an implication that they would be killed if they didn't take the money.

By taking the money, G explained, they would be complicit in the operation. However, it was more money than most people would have been able to save in a lifetime and it would assist them in whatever they wanted to do after. She recalled having friends at school that watched each other's backs, even when their fathers would have sex with them. They made it through that by keeping tight relationships with each other.

They took the money and were dropped off via helicopter in Florida. As most of them were from New York or the surrounding area, they came to the northeast. Anastasia chose to continue doing sex work and struck the deal to work at Rutgers. She didn't elaborate on the specifics of the deal so I don't know who it was made with.

She did tell me some specifics about the island. She said that among the guests she had seen there were Bill Clinton, Bill Gates, Will Smith, and photos of several of the cast members from Cheers on the wall. Jeff had a wall with photos of him and many celebrities to tell the girls exactly how well-connected he was. She specifically said that a lot of people assumed that Donald Trump was a visitor, but he wasn't. He knew what was going on but had refused a girl Jeff had sent him - Anastasia had overheard the phone call from Jeff's side.

She also said that Tom Hanks was the worst of them and the most brutal. He had shoved a girl's face in the mud while having sex with her and told her that she was dirt so she should eat dirt. She also said that on one visit, he had come with an older, small woman and several children dressed in white and when they left, the children were gone. I speculated that the woman was Jean, later learning that I was correct. I shared my memory of being hunted by him and she said that sounded like him.

I asked her if anyone in the Bush administration was involved and she said that she had never seen George W Bush and didn't recognize any of the other names I mentioned. She did say that his father's Attorney General was instrumental in setting up the operation.

Our relationship continued for several weeks. At one visit, I told her that it seemed like there was an active investigation that looked like it had the potential to put him away for good. She said that it seemed possible and she would consider calling the number she was given.

During one of our evenings together, we had used heroin and I nearly died. I woke up to her pounding on my chest and I thought she was mad at me for vomiting on her pillow. My left lung had filled with vomit and apparently I hadn't been breathing. She had administered narcan or a similar drug to revive me.

The next weekend, she asked me to come over on Sunday instead of Saturday. She asked if I wanted to have sex and we did, then she went into the bathroom for close to 10-15 minutes. When she came out, it was clear to me that she was crying, but she had wiped it away. She told me that after what had happened, she talked with her friend and she told her that if we kept seeing each other, one or both of us would probably end up dead. I was upset but saw the logic of it. I asked her if she really wanted it to end and if so why she had just slept with me and she said yes but was clearly lying. She said that she wasn't going to be in a relationship for a while and wanted a last taste of intimacy for a while.

I left and, as I rode the elevator down, I thought about how the relationship had ended and tried to accept it. By the time I had walked back to the house on Delavan I was living in, I was visibly heartbroken to the degree that when I saw Molly and Rob, they could tell something was wrong. I explained to them what had happened and Molly briefly excused herself and returned with a glass of orange juice and a vial of hyocine. I asked her what it was and she insisted that it was a vitamin supplement.

I looked her in the eye and told her that I knew that it wasn't and she confirmed. I told her that we were going to have a conversation about where she had gotten it but, lucky for her, I wanted to dull the memory of the relationship, so I drank it. After laying down in my room for a few minutes, Molly came in to check on me.

I asked her where she got the vial, not recalling her deal with the CIA. She claimed that a bald man knocked on the front door a few weeks prior, saying that he was from my family. He gave her a kit with a request to administer it to me if I ever came back acting out of character or upset. I told her that he was CIA - not my family - not cognizant that the two were one and the same. I bought her story and left it alone. I started dating Heather shortly after.

A few days later, I was walking around New Brunswick and recalled that the restaurant at Rockoff Hall was open. I remembered wanting to try it out, but forgot that I had wanted to go there with Anastasia. I walked over and ordered, while I was sitting down and facing the stairs, Anastasia walked down them and froze when she saw me.

"You aren't supposed to be here," she said and I was confused. I thought she meant that the restaurant wasn't supposed to be serving customers yet. She clarified that our relationship was over and that this wouldn't work. I replied that I had never seen her before in my life and was dating someone anyway. She said that it was good that I was seeing someone but asked me if I really didn't remember her. I said that I didn't and she teared up.

She pulled out her phone and recited my phone number. I felt uncomfortable but still couldn't remember. She said that I was clearly in crisis and I remembered that she was going to school for something related to helping people. She made me promise to go straight home to Suffern and tell my parents that I needed psychiatric care because of my missing memory. I was skeptical, but agreed.

I went home that evening and told my mother what had happened. She drugged me and I forgot again until the chemistry test and then forgot again until my meeting with Jeffrey Epstein at his New York residence. The next time I would speak with her would be after that meeting, I called one of the investigators looking into him and gave them her number. I received an angry call from her a few moments later.

I apologized and said that I had just remembered and wasn't even sure if those memories were real. She said that they were and that she was going to have to burn that entire identity and phone number and that she said that she understood that my socio-economic background played a factor in my actions. She asked me if I had told anyone else.

I replied that someone from the CIA had drugged me and I told them that I remembered her. She was more understanding about that as she knew that the CIA had drugs that forced people to tell the truth. I also told her that I remembered meeting Epstein and telling him to fuck off and that I loved her. She replied, surprised, asking if it was true that I loved her.

I replied that yes, I did love her. We had a short relationship but every second I was with her felt electric. I hadn't said it because I didn't want to scare her off, but it was true. She replied that the fact made her feel much better about a decision she had made. I paused for a moment in realization, then asked her if she was pregnant. She confirmed.

I was shocked but happy at the news. I thought that it changed everything but she disagreed. There were still people after her. I suggested that maybe if we were married, they would leave her be, but she replied that if my family was sending me to Epstein for a job interview she wouldn't want to be involved with them. Besides, she said, she felt like this was something she needed to do on her own.

We said goodbye and I shared the news with my mother and asked her about our family. She drugged me and said that there was nothing different about our family. I asked her if it bothered her if she had a grandchild out there that she would never know. She said that she wouldn't consider that child family.

#

I got a call from Carla inviting me to a a meeting at a restaurant near the Conde Naste building. I was cautious and asked if I was going to be in any danger, but she said that it would be fine. I agreed to go and also had a meeting set for around 8:00 PM with the recruiter who I had met at her party.

When I arrived, there were several people at the table. Carla, Chris Morocco with his wife Molly, Gaby Melián and Claire Saffitz. Chris was introduced as a friend of Carla's from school and Gaby as someone who worked at the test kitchen. Claire and I were brought in to test our dynamic with the group and each other. Carla brought us both non-alcohol drinks because we were both underage. She clarified later that they were drugged.

She had us talk about what we were interested in when it came to food and what we would want to do if we were in the industry. I talked about how I was surrounded by food growing up and that my uncle was a professional chef. Claire talked about wanting to study from the masters in France and learn about cuisine and pastry. There was a brief break.

I approached Gaby at the bar and asked her why she was helping the CIA because they were, from my experience, white supremacists. She said that I shouldn't know about the CIA, which I shrugged off, saying that I did. She sad that she had helped them with an attempted coup in Argentina which failed, so they brought her up here. I asked why work with them if they failed and she said that they were the only game in town. We returned to the table.

I asked Chris if he was gay, which came out very much the wrong way. He reminded me that he was there with his wife. I was embarrassed at the way I had asked and failed to cover for it by saying sometimes people got married for convenience. It was around that time that he and his wife left. I apologized and Carla pulled me aside.

She told me that I wasn't going to be a good fit for this and that some of the words that were coming out of my mouth were just crazy. I apologized again and suggested that maybe Brad from her party might be a good fit for this and she said that he was under consideration. Recalling Todd's recruitment, I asked if she was going to have Claire shoot me. She balked at that and said no, but that we wouldn't be moving forward with this. I was relieved and, as everyone else was leaving, left as well.

I started walking away and felt someone tap on my shoulder - it was Claire. "It's a good thing for you that you didn't make the cut."

"Oh, how's that?" I asked.

"Well, I don't usually date people I work with. So, like I said, lucky for you." I stopped walking, realizing that she was coming onto me. I blushed and let out a nervous laugh.

"I'm kind of seeing someone," I replied. I had gone out with Heather a couple of times but we hadn't had sex.

"When you say kind of, what does that mean?" I answered and she replied. "It doesn't sound that serious yet. Besides, this is like a vacation for me. I'm here for three weeks and after that you might not even see me again." I thought about it for a moment and agreed. I was on the fence on the relationship to start with and I was attracted to her and how straightforward and self-possessed she was.

We made a brief stop for soup dumplings before going to the hostel room she was staying in. We talked for around an hour about various things including her plan for what would eventually be Gourmet Makes. I told her that I felt that we had been drugged and that I wanted to wait before doing anything intimate. After talking for a while, we had sex and she gave me her phone number and contact info before I left. I told her that I would be meeting with the CIA agent from Carla's party.

I walked to the meeting with the agent and waited at a table as he talked to someone else. After a few minutes, he beckoned me over and ordered me a Diet Coke. He began by asking me straightforward questions about what I might know that would be of use to him.

I told him first about Carla's party and how the food personalities were all controlling people through videos and he reminded me that was where he had given me his card. That was the first sign to me that my memory wasn't all there.

I then recalled the meeting that Al Stankard had arranged with Stephen Miller and told him that there was a white supremacist who attempted to recruit me into what he described as a legal coup. He was very interested in that. I was surprised, I told him that the impression that I got of the CIA was that they used people of all backgrounds. He said that they used them, yes, but it always for the benefit of white people. There were always people in the background that would prefer a white supremacist system and they would always be there, behind the scenes. He asked about Stephen Miller, Al

Stankard, and their associates. I didn't remember Stephen's last name but I remembered that he lived in the Bay Area.

He asked me if I knew anything else, and I told him that I knew someone that survived Epstein's island. He was surprised at that - he noted that it was a high level operation. He paused and said that a lot of the girls from this area and chances are that some of them would talk and reason stood that they had friends and relationships with people in the area, too.

I suddenly remembered that I had promised Anastasia to never tell anyone about that and asked him why I had said that. He gestured towards my drink. I asked if I had been poisoned, loudly enough to catch the attention of the table behind me. He said that I should keep my voice down - that it would give people a bad impression of the restaurant. I told him that if the waiter drugged me, I would want to give them a bad impression of the restaurant.

At that, the person behind me stepped over and asked me if there was something wrong. I said yes and the recruiter told the man to mind his own business. He said that we were practicing lines for a play. I said that I wasn't and he tried to help get someone to call the police. The recruiter summoned the waiter and told them that he would take care of their bill and to get them out of there. The waiter complied.

I asked the recruiter if people actually practiced lines like that and he said that he just thought of the first thing that came to mind. I asked him why he had drugged me when I had come to him willingly and he replied that I was like a sponge that heard things that I maybe shouldn't and he was going to squeeze every bit of information from me. I was what they called in the spy business a useful idiot.

He said that he thought he had gotten all he would get from me and that it was time for him to get information about me. I asked why and he said that it was to destroy me, to separate me from my closest friends and drive me, if not to suicide, a situation where no one would ever believe me.

He asked me who my closest friend was. I told him that it was Vanessa Beuschel and that she was engaged so I didn't think he would be able to through her life out of balance. He told me that I would be surprised.

I asked him if he was going to go after my family, too. He said that my parents were protected, but I wasn't. I asked him what that meant - protected. He seemed to catch himself and said that usually older people were protected.

He then asked me the worst thing I ever did. I couldn't think of something immediately so he told me to stare at the ceiling fan and let it transfix me and shake my memory loose. I told him that I had raped Stacey Herbison. I hadn't intended to and I didn't realize that she was too scared of me to say no and that I had only understood that afterwards. He said that he was sure her mother would like to know that and wrote it down. I also said that Seth Model had told me that he killed her, but I was also told that she had committed suicide and that I wasn't sure which was true.

At that, he told me that we were done. He said that he had put enough drugs in my drink that it would be unlikely that I would survive the walk back to the train station. If I died, they would just chalk it up as another random drunk stumbling into death. His duty of care was ended and that was what I got for fucking around with an architect's wife. I told him to tell Music that I didn't and that I remembered that it was Lexi that I slept with but he said that it didn't matter.

I left the restaurant and looked up and down the street. I was completely lost even though I had known where I was when I had entered. I though for a moment and then hailed a cab, asking to be brought to Penn Station. I moderated my breath and tried to center myself. I got there in one piece and by the time I used the bathroom, I was steady enough that I was sure that I would be able to make it home. My parents picked me up from the train station and I immediately went to sleep. I wrote on the paper with Claire's number that I was drugged by a CIA agent.

I woke up about an hour later feeling very out of it and not remembering what had happened. I found the paper with my sloppy note and Claire's information, so I called her. I said that I found her number and asked her if she was Claire Saffitz, mispronouncing her last name. She said yes, correcting me on the pronunciation and saying she was just with me. I asked her if she would believe me if I said that I had been drugged by a CIA agent.

She said, "Oh my God, Rich," and I could hear her tear up. She asked me what they did to me and I told her that all I knew was that I had been drugged. She said that she wanted nothing to do with Carla if she was associated with people who would do something like that. She said that when I had left her I told her that was who I was meeting with. I said that maybe she should think it through. If she was going to want to be at the top of her field, whether that be the culinary arts or something else, she would seemingly have to deal with these people sooner or later. I suggested that she talk about this to one person she completely trusts and no one else. It was a decision she would have to make. I also said that I wasn't sure if this was the norm or if it was just because Carla's husband had it out for me. She agreed and we hung up. A few minutes later, I received an angry call from Carla asking me what I had done.

I told her that I hadn't intended to scare Claire away and that I had her number written down and it was the first thing I had seen when I woke up. She told me that I shouldn't have even hooked up with her, that we had been drugged. I told her that I had figured that out and insisted that we wait for the effects to clear before doing anything.

I told her what I had told Claire and said that I wasn't trying to interfere and that I only called her in a panic because of what her husband's agent had done. She seemed annoyed at him and told me she would get in touch if there was anything else.

#

I was walking in New York City, likely to a show on my own, when I spotted Claire talking with Carla at a table outside of a restaurant. I recognized Claire's voice but couldn't place it. They were discovering how to a approach a restaurant's menu when writing a review of it when I interrupted them.

"Sorry, do I know you?" I asked Claire. She was surprised, as was Carla. She said that I did but Carla said that I wouldn't remember her. I told her that I did but that I couldn't exactly place her. I asked her if we used to date.

She said that no, not exactly, but we had hooked up. I turned to Carla and said that she looked familiar, too. She said that she knew me, too, but there was no way I should be able to remember. I reiterated that, again, I remembered, even if it wasn't everything.

She insisted on drugging me by putting a vial into my drink, an iced tea that I had purchased at a nearby Starbucks. Claire watched on and I walked away.

#

After being rejected for the CIA backed BA Kitchen gig, I had a vague recollection that I wanted to work for Conde Nast. My mother encouraged me to formally apply to a position there, so I did.

I met with Molly Baz for the interview and she said that my resume looked good for the program I was applying to. I told her that I knew this place was a CIA front and she immediately responded with a pre-rehearsed speech about how Conde Nast took pride in preparing their employees with a wide range of skills and had no direct connection to what they did in their future careers. I said that just confirmed it, having a speech like that. She asked if I knew anyone who worked there and I said Carla, who she went to get.

When Carla came down, she asked me why I was there and told me that I didn't have the temperament for the position. I told her that I thought if I applied and worked my way up I might develop the skills. She told me that wasn't how it worked. I left of my own accord - I don't think they drugged me this time.

#

I was given a phone number to share for the CIA's comedy recruiter even though they had decided against recruiting me. I gave it to a co-worker at Au Bon Pain - Chelsea Peretti - who signed on along with her friend, who had already seen some success with his group Lonely Island, Andrew Samberg.

She was recruited because they were looking to put someone with Jordan Peele, who she was a fan of from his time on Mad TV. After she left the job, she introduced me to Andy along with a couple other people including Rob Delaney.

#

In 2006, Carla contacted me several times to try to find a position within the "organization" that would be a good fit for me. This was after the incident with the walk-in with Claire but before the 2010 recruitment attempt. The recollections below may be out of order.

One of the times she called me in during this period was a request to come over to my Uncle Tony's house. I thought that it was just him inviting me over, but when I got there, Carla was there along with several people. She explained that all of us were rougher around the edges but still people who would be recruited into the food entertainment sector of the

CIA. We would just have to come up with something on our own, put it up on YouTube, and the CIA would support it.

I asked why it was at Tony's house and if she knew him from school or something. He said that, apparently, she was his daughter and so after introductions they left the main portion of the house to talk in the attached apartment. The other people that I recall being there were Sean Evans, Matty Matheson, Andrew Rea, and Alvin Cailan. They were all smoking pot and I was also given a dose of hyocine to drink. We were encouraged to brainstorm and discuss what we would do.

Sean started first, as he had already been working with Carla on a channel called First We Feast. He also had a plan for a game show that would be called Hot Ones, where contestants would have to answer questions while eating progressively spicier wings. I mentioned that there was a porn series or something like that already and he said that Carla was already using CIA resources to scrub it from the internet.

Matty mentioned that he wanted to do something with comfort food and Alvin wanted to do something similar with burgers. They had a lot of tattoos and I asked them what kind of stuff they did with the CIA. They said that they mostly did stuff around drugs, killing who they were told to kill, etc. I became a bit nervous at that - I asked them if they had all killed people. Andrew said that all of them had killed at least one person, as part of recruitment and I said that I hadn't.

He was curious about that - he said that he hadn't known of anyone brought into a CIA operation without having killed someone. I said that maybe it was because of who my family was. He speculated that maybe if it was an architect I was related to, which I replied that I didn't think I was.

I mostly talked with him about what would eventually become Binging With Babish. He had already created a backstory and had plans for the YouTube channel. He planned on making food from movies and TV shows. I didn't really have any idea of what I would want to do given the opportunity to be backed by the CIA.

When Carla came back up, I told her that I didn't really have anything and it sounded like they wanted it more because they were willing to kill for it. I told her that I didn't want to be involved.

#

At a separate meeting, she had me meet with Bari Weiss, who was a CIA asset whose entire goal was to be a nominally liberal pundit who was extremely pro-Israel. She was dating another female CIA asset, Kate MacKinnon. She said that she would eventually marry a man to push the narrative that being gay was a fling.

The same day, she had me wait on some Saudi businessmen to try to listen in on their meeting. Her thought was that if the drugs didn't completely work on me, I might make a good spy. I didn't.

#

For this meeting, Carla told me that I would have to wear a suit because I would otherwise look out of place. She said that the operation wasn't exactly on the books but they really wanted to find a "place for me in the organization".

I took public transportation to the location and was invited inside. I was seated on a large leather armchair with an ottoman and presented with a cup of hyocine to drink by a teenage girl in a bikini. I drank it, but then she attempted to sexually stimulate me. I recalled what Anastasia had told me about how Epstein had the girls do that and refused. She tried again and I laid down with my crotch facing the back of the chair so that she couldn't get to me. She looked up, presumably at a camera and said that I wasn't letting her do anything.

At that, the door behind the chair opened and Jeffrey Epstein came out ranting that he was just trying to do something "nice" for me and told me to get my pants back on as the girl had undone the buckle. I asked if he wanted me to leave but he didn't, he had me come inside his office.

There was a fireplace to the right, but we met at his desk on the side of the room. There was an office style full glass window behind him. I asked him if he was Jeffrey Epstein and he said that he was. I told him that I had told Carla that I didn't want anything to do with him because of how he had stolen Anastasia's youth from her. I told him that I loved her and to go fuck himself.

He got mean and said that if I was anyone else he would have the shit beaten out of me. I asked him what that meant and he seemed surprised. He made a comment about being part of one of the most powerful families in the entire world and not even knowing it. I asked him if he meant the Marins and he said whatever they told you, and pulled back from that line of discussion.

He told me that what I felt as love was just a chemical reaction and that he loved all the girls he had slept with and started rattling off a list that started at A. He said he would prove it to me and then had me leave.

As I walked towards the subway, I was pulled aside by a middle-aged woman with short shoulder-length hair. She told me that she wanted to have sex with me and I asked her if Epstein sent her. She pretended like he hadn't for a moment but then dropped the act and said that he was nice to the girls but if she didn't do what he wanted, he would beat her. I didn't want that to happen so I agreed.

We had sex briefly and a few moments in, she said "I love you", assuming that I would say something like it back. I replied that I didn't but I liked her well enough at which point it stopped and she let me go.

Chapter Nineteen

2007

I was at a bar with a friend, Bill Cashman, and I recalled part of what happened with Seth. I told Bill that someone I knew who was a "troop" had killed someone in his hometown just before he shipped out and told me. I didn't recall all of the facts at this point, just that. I wrote it off as I recalled it as how in our society at that point, people who were enlisted were basically untouchable.

We were interrupted by someone who said that he was in the military and he strongly disagreed with that statement and it was people like the person I was talking about that gave the troops a bad name. He said that his quartermaster would have a record of the replaced bag and that they would absolutely prosecute him. He gave me a card, but after that evening, I forgot again.

Chapter Twenty

2008

I got a call from Carla asking me if I was willing to help convince Claire to continue working with them as she was having second thoughts about going abroad to France. I said that I was dating someone so I wasn't willing to do anything sexual and she clarified that it was nothing like that.

I went to the Conde Nast building where I met with Carla and Brad. They were somewhat quiet and I asked when Claire would be there. They said that she would be coming soon. They led me to the back of a walk-in freezer that was off. I commented that it was warm and they said that they were still setting up things for the kitchen.

They told me to strip down to my boxers and I reiterated that I had a girlfriend and they said that it was just for the visual effect. I wouldn't have to do anything. I asked if I was meant to be eye candy, which was met with silence. I did as I was told and then they began wrapping me up in plastic wrap. I was confused but went along with it. After I was wrapped, they brought in Claire and told me to talk to her.

It took her a moment to recognize me. I asked her what this was about and she said that she didn't want to leave her friends and family to go off to France. I said that I understood that and turned to Carla and asked her if she really had to go to France. She said that they had invested a lot in Claire and the reason they had wrapped me up was to remind her. If I didn't go, they would dismember me with the meat cutters there and scatter me in the East River. To drive the point home, Brad stuck the point of a kitchen knife through the plastic and into the top of my right breast. The blood spread under the plastic and I let out a shriek of pain.

Claire was shocked and crying and said that no, they wouldn't need to do that. I told her that I thought they were bluffing, that they wouldn't use equipment they ate off of to do that. She said that they didn't care about that - that Carla and her husband were cannibals and that Brad had cooked them "special" meat at a barbecue that they made clear to the other guests was for them alone. Brad shrugged and said that once it's off the person, it's just meat. Claire agreed as long as they would let me go.

Claire left to go to Paris and Brad left as well. Carla unwrapped me and bandaged my wound. I told her that the next time she called, I would not hep her. She said that was fine and that I shouldn't, that these people wouldn't hesitate to hurt me.

After I left, I met Heather in Elizabeth and we ate at the Tropicana Diner. I told her in broad strokes what had happened and showed her the wound but she didn't believe me.

Chapter Twenty-One

2009

I had been friends with Ralph Attanasia since at least 2006. He was mutual friends with one of my housemates and they were also in a band together. I was surprised to see, after losing touch with him for a while, that he was on the TV show Cake Boss as a regular. I reached out to him and congratulated him on his stardom and asked if he wanted to hang out to catch up.

He invited me to a dinner party in New Jersey at a banquet hall. I greeted him and we made some small talk and I jokingly told him that the last time I met a bunch of food personalities, they were all involved with the CIA. He went pale. The man next to him told him that he knows what he has to do and that if Ralph didn't, he would and Ralph would not like the way that he'd handle it.

I was confused. I knew that my mother had mentioned that Ina Garten had been involved in the CIA and had assumed incorrectly that it was common knowledge. My memory of the encounters with Carla were missing most of the negative parts. I just recalled that they were involved with the CIA. I said that the way they were talking, it sounded like they were involved in organized crime. Ralph said that it was basically what it was.

He told me to follow him to the men's room and told me to wait while he got his kit from his car. I begged Ralph not to inject me with it and told him that I could act drugged and his handlers would never know that I wasn't. He said that they would know. He gave me a beer to drink while he prepared the needle to inject me. When he put the needle near my arm, he instead emptied it on the floor and told me that he was my friend and he wouldn't do that to me.

We exited the men's room and I confirmed to his handler that he had drugged me, then Ralph clarified that he had put it in a drink. I looked at him shocked and angry. He told his handler that he would drive me home because I was his responsibility. He said he would tell me that I had too much to drink.

As soon as Ralph put me in his back seat he apologized, saying that he was such a terrible friend for drugging me. I agreed with him and asked him how he got mixed up with the CIA. He said that his grandmother had gotten sick and he had mentioned it at work. One of the producers on the show offered him a deal. He would commit to doing something that would be a suicide mission in about a decade and the CIA could provide his grandma with an experimental treatment that could extend her life by up to seven years.

He said that he saw it as a deal similar to Roald Dahl's The Witches, where the grandson was transformed into a mouse with a shortened lifespan and would live for about as long as his grandmother. He would also be an agent in the meantime, but would have to murder someone he knew for initiation. I asked him who it was and he said that it was a friend from LARPing and the CIA had covered up the death and he had to dump the body in a river.

I asked him if his grandmother would agree with what he was doing and he said that he hadn't told her. I had figured that, but I asked him if he thought that she would be okay with that. He said that she told him that she would do anything to avoid dying and he figured that his actions were in line with her wishes. I told him that I thought he should ask her, indirectly and maybe reconsider his actions.

I told him that he wasn't a terrible friend; that by drugging me he saved me from what his handler had planned for me. He dropped me off at my parents house and we resolved to meet up again, but he said that we couldn't discuss what had happened.

I texted him the next day and asked if there was some safe space we could discuss it and he said there was nowhere safe.

#

A few weeks after finding out that Ralph was CIA, he invited me over to his apartment to hang out. I arrived late afternoon and he introduced me to his girlfriend, Paige. I did not recognize her at the time but she recognized me as her charge from a CIA recruitment trip I was sent on in New Orleans in 2006. She just said Hi and afterwards, I turned to Ralph and asked him if we could talk about the CIA.

Paige turned to him and angrily accused him of not drugging me when he was supposed to. He said that he had, but it didn't take. I backed up his side of the story as it was the truth. She told him that if it didn't work he should have done it again or told someone. I told her that I assumed that he had invited me over to drug me again.

She told him that if he did it incorrectly, maybe she should. She then threatened him that she would have sex with me as a punishment to him. He sullenly retorted, "Do what you have to do," and I insisted that I had a girlfriend. He gestured at me and said that I didn't want to and she said that it didn't matter.

She gave me a full vial or two in a cup of diet soda and had me drink it. Then, she told me to go into the bedroom and she took off her top. She got close to me and shut the door and told me to make noises like I was having sex. She made noises and I didn't know what kind of sound I made but she told me to stop because it didn't sound anything like sex.

She had me sit down and I asked her why she was going along with whatever the CIA had planned if it meant Ralph would die. I said that if she was his girlfriend she must have some attachment to him. She agreed that she liked Ralph but the Agency had big plans for him. I asked her what big plans entailed. She said that if this didn't work, she would have Ralph wrap me in a rug and dump me in a river, so she would discuss some of it. I told her that Ralph wouldn't want to do that and she replied that he's already done things he hasn't wanted to.

She began by telling me that being in intelligence is less about spying and more about killing people that could potentially be a problem. The mission of the agency was to keep the racial breakdown of America relatively the same, which generally meant sabotaging minority communities to prevent them from growing or becoming more influential. She said that she was involved to fight for what she saw as the real America, the one with no economic opportunities and crumbling infrastructure compared to the relatively well off urban areas on the coasts. I replied that just because the buildings looked nicer didn't mean that people were much more well off. She doubted that, but went on.

She said that this was all surrounding the 2020 election and that the ultimate goal of the plans was to institute open fascism. I questioned why fascism and she said that she didn't know, that the architects had possibly determined that was the ideal form of government to preserve the most number of lives. She then went on to say that there would be a lot coming that would mean hard decisions would have to be made.

First, she said that in 2016, two candidates would run against each other - both very unlikeable. The Democrats would likely run Hillary Clinton and the CIA had a very unlikeable candidate lined up. After a long and vitriolic election cycle, their unlikeable candidate would win, with the appearance of being helped by outside foreign actors. In reality, it would be the CIA influencing the election.

He would be used to implement some of the worst policies imaginable. It would be a trial balloon for the upcoming fascist state. He would use the excuse of a caravan of migrants to institute concentration camps and use it as motivation for being a terrible, unlikeable president. Eventually, she said, he would be impeached but not removed from office.

Parallel to that, she and Ralph would get engaged and he would make efforts to become an actor. The engagement would run long and they would never marry and his attempts at becoming an actor would fail. This would serve as a narrative for why he would then assassinate the president during the Easter Egg Roll at the White House. This would serve to have his Vice President be the candidate in 2016 and continue with more or less the same administration.

There would be other factors involved in pushing America towards fascism. In late 2019 an agency would release a virus that Paige was told was a weapon of war in China from a lab in the Wuhan province. It would prevent China from taking a larger role on the world stage but she was told that it wasn't really going to spread here. It would be used as an excuse to institute a quarantine, which would be in place during the big event - a 4 km asteroid that would hit near Venezuela on April 29th 2020. It was large enough that it would wipe out part of South America, Cuba, and Haiti. She was not clear on the exact date, I guessed based off the context - I believed it to be 1998OR2 which clearly did not hit.

With all of that happening, the idea was that the only viable way forward for America would be a fascist state. Eight years of a far-right government would lock up the Supreme Court for the next half-century and it would be impossible to pull society to the left once such a government was entrenched.

I questioned this as she told me about it. I asked why fascism and why not socialism or communism? She offered Venezuela as an example of a failed socialist state, at which I replied by saying that the CIA had a long history of sabotaging socialist and communist nations. There wasn't a good example of the system working because the CIA always intervened.

I said that it sounded like she would be in the public eye. How did she know that they wouldn't have Ralph or whoever would actually be the trigger man kill her, too? She replied that she was loyal and that part of the plan involved her going on TV and pushing the narrative that the CIA had set up. They would give her money in a one-time payment to live off of.

I asked her if there was a way for all of this to happen without Ralph dying. She said that if he didn't do it, some other patriot would. I asked her how she could do that to someone who she cared about. She said that she liked Ralph, but her mission came first. She said that the reason she agreed to be with him was because he reminded her of me and how kind I was when she escorted me through the program in New Orleans. I told her that I didn't remember and she said that I wouldn't. She told me a bit about what happened, but nothing too specific. I would remember it on my own, later.

I then offered to help plan a takeover of the architect's house. I remember being there and the layout. She listened but didn't really take me seriously. I think she was listening to determine what I knew.

At that point she said that it was time to stop talking and told me to lay down next to a rolled up rug and watch TV. I fell asleep at that point and was awoken shortly after by Ralph telling Paige that he had looked me up on her handheld and that I was on a protected list. He told me to get up and I apologized, saying that I must have had too much to drink.

I feigned not remembering anything and Ralph drove me back to the train station. I told him on the way some of Paige's mission but I specifically told him that she did seem to really care for him. If there was another option, she might take it. He dropped me off at the platform and told me that his life was too dangerous for us to keep hanging out. I agreed.

She also mentioned that Pete Buttigieg would run and that he and Chasten were both CIA groomed for the role. They would also push Bernie Sanders to run and lose - "discrediting socialism".

#

On the train ride back from Ralph's, I felt the memory of what I had learned slipping away, so I began repeating it to myself in my head. I might have made a note in my phone but I found it difficult to operate.

As soon as I got in, I rushed home and told both of my parents that "Cake Boss Ralph was going to kill the next President." I had no memory of their previous association with the CIA so I had no reason to distrust them at the time. I mentioned the flu-like disease and the asteroid, but my mind was fixated on that one phrase. I couldn't stop repeating it, so they called a neurologist. I don't recall his name but I selected it from the phone book.

He made a house call and diagnosed it as a benzo loop. He said that it was due to a thought getting stuck in my head while being under the influence of hyocine which he was aware of being used by the CIA. My parents asked him how he could know that and he said that he had come across it once or twice before. He said that the solution would be to give me another dose and do my best to clear my head while under the influence. I didn't want to forget, but it was so persistent that I didn't really think I had a choice. After I took it, he told me that I would have to be held for a mandatory observation period at the local hospital. I didn't have a choice, so I went with him. After around an hour or two, a CIA station chief came and drugged me again. He said that they were government secrets, not my secrets and to let them go. If I didn't forget them they would have to kill me.

I was released after an overnight stay and told my father that I still remembered everything. I insisted on doing something, so he made an appointment at the New York State Federal building a couple days later. The person we met with there said that if it had to do with the CIA, it was outside of his jurisdiction and that they knew more about the structure of America than anyone. He drugged me but not my father. I promised my father that I would leave it alone as long as he told Nan and Pop Pop to get out of Florida before the asteroid hit. He agreed.

After that, I wrote down the things other than the asteroid, which I knew I couldn't do anything about on my own. Wuhan, the 2020 election and planned assassination, and contacting Senator Sanders would be the things I could try to affect. I decided that I had to do something, so I thought about what I could possibly do to set something in motion ten years in advance.

I decided on two things - I would send an e-mail or letter to Senator Sanders, who Paige had confirmed was not part of the CIA. I would also meet with my friend Frankie Huang, who was an aspiring journalist. I would tell her what I knew about the coronavirus and the hopes that it could be prevented. I texted Frankie and asked if she would be able to meet in person about something related to being a journalist. She agreed to meet with me at the outside food court at Penn Station.

After confirming that, I created a burner AOL account and wrote an email to Bernie Sanders. I told him that the CIA was planning something around the 2020 election and he would be pushed into entering the race. They did not think he would be able to win but I thought he could. I said that if he was able to push the youth turnout and run a strong issues based campaign, he had a chance. He would have a lot of opponents but he would have the strongest message. He would also need to be aware of the labyrinthine caucus rules. If he made it to the general election, his opponent on election day would not be the same one he was initially running against. I sent the message and nearly immediately received a reply saying that he was aware of rumblings around 2020 and that he was shown my email. I deleted the account after that.

A few days later, I met with Frankie at Penn Station.

However, as soon as I got there, I was ambushed by Paige and a taller male CIA agent. She asked me why I had contacted Frankie and she was interested in what I was planning to tell her. I stammered that it was nothing, but she insisted on putting a wire on me and told me that if I said anything, they would kill me.

I met with Frankie, who had a bowl of miso soup. I tried to think of how I could communicate in any way. The best I could do was write the word "Wuhan" on a piece of paper and ask her if she knew what it was. She said that it was a province in China and asked why I wrote it. I said that something was going to happen there in 10 years, but I couldn't say. She became frustrated and left.

Paige and the other agent returned and said that Frankie was drugged via the soup and wouldn't remember, then drugged me too. She said that I hadn't revealed any state secrets but they would be keeping a close eye on me.

#

I had taken the train in to Manhattan for a show. I was dressed in a suit, so it was probably a World/Inferno show. As I walked past the entrance to the Conde Nast building, I locked eyes with Brad Leone, just barely recognizing him, but shrugged it off. He recognized me too, and caught up with me, handing off his drink to a friend.

"Do I know you," he asked. I said maybe and introduced myself. I asked him if maybe he had played with my band and he said that wasn't it. He asked me if I had ever been in the test kitchen and I said no, not to my recollection. He said that he thought I had and I told him that I felt like knew him but really couldn't place it. He then said he remembered and described tying me up in a metal container to threaten someone - black ops shit.

I replied that I hadn't been involved to my recollection but if that's what it was. He said that he needed me to come inside and file a report. He sat me down at the front desk and went inside. He returned a few minutes later with a cup and a soda. He said, "Here's the deal - there's a termination order out on you and they want me to kill you, but I'm not going to do that. They put me in charge of this station and I don't think that it's a good idea to go killing people all the time."

"Thank you for not killing me, I guess," I replied, shocked.

He set the cup down between us. "No problem. So here's what's going to happen. I'll pour you a nice sodee with something to help you forget all this." He poured it in to the soda. "Now just take a nice drinkee drink and I'll wait here with you until you're done." I shook my head at his casual demeanor but did as I was told. He suggested that I drink alcohol later to help with the forgetting, which I did at the show. I recall it was at Irving Plaza and I told Kevin Rankin what had happened, but he didn't believe me.

Chapter Twenty-Two

2010

I had just ended a temp assignment from Leapforce and was having anxiety about where I would be able to find a new job. Rick said to wait before I did anything and then called Jean from his home office. He told her that it might be time and Jean replied that "He'll never go for it". Rick said that he knows me and that if I saw what was being offered, that I would take it. She agreed to set it up.

My parents came to me and told me that I was a prince of the Reich. They explained that it was mostly an American organization with some Germans still involved. If I agreed to it and passed a test, I would be in charge of it. I agreed to try it, it certainly sounded better than navigating the post-Great Recession job market.

About an hour later, a man arrived driving a cargo van. I was told to go in the back with a blond woman. She drugged me and gave me a new smart phone. It was a live line and on the other end was Aubrey Plaza. I asked her if it was really her and she sent a photo of her to prove it. It was her in the dark looking at the phone.

I was confused as to why they had her call me. She said that if I took the job that she was one of the people I'd be hanging out with. Without a filter due to the drug, I asked her if she was interested in having sex with me, to which she laughed and said that maybe if we hung out and "vibed". Then she had to leave to go back to set.

After the call, the blond woman had undressed and went to have sex with me. I recoiled because it was unexpected and sudden. I asked her what she was doing and she said that she had just wanted to do what they told them in training and "take what she wanted". After my reaction, she withdrew and clothed herself again.

The first stop in the city was Takeshi Sushi. I met with a man who had me sign documents from One Irving Plaza Corp to become a part-owner of the company. It would have provided me with around 10k per month. The money was laundered through restaurant to me. I signed and then ordered food at the restaurant which I paid for with my debit card.

I was told that most of the people I would be meeting with were either authorized to know what was going on or, if not, under the same drug. I was encouraged to ask the ones who were drugged their deepest secrets for future use as blackmail.

My next location was a meeting with one of the two brothers who made up the duo Wicked Kitchen. I became aware of their YouTube channel much later - at the time they were were working with Tesco. He had out a sampling of grilled vegetables covered in different sauces. I commented that there was a lot of sugar in that and he replied that it wasn't more than you would find at a restaurant.

I asked him why he didn't have any tofu or seitan out and he said that he did have recipes for that but this was the kind of stuff he ate normally. I asked him how long he spend in the gym and he said around an hour every day. I said that he must in order for him to be able to build those kind of muscles without that much protein.

I told him that I wasn't a vegetarian but the one plant substitute I would like is a replacement for canned tuna. I used to eat it as a child until I started getting allergic reactions to it. He mentioned that Lorma Linda had most of the market for vegetarian seafood alternatives covered. I replied that I wasn't familiar with them and would try them out. He then mentioned that their food lines were mostly high end to which I suggested the bagged seasoned tuna packages.

My next and final stop was a brothel/club disguised as a storefront in Manhattan. I was greeted by a man named John who brought me up in a freight elevator at the back of the "store". He brought me first to what was basically a dimly lit area that was sparse - sort of like a back stage green room. He left me there with some people while he got everything ready for me upstairs.

There were three people in the room. Ninja, who was a pro gamer and had recently started streaming on his own, his bodyguard, and a naked girl who was sitting on Ninja's lap. He introduced himself and we discussed what kind of video games he played. I said that sounded fun and I asked if I could stream with him sometime and he said that he had an image of a young rock star. I mentioned that I used to be in a band but mostly did office work now.

While we were talking he was doing cocaine and having sex with the girl. I asked her how old she was and she said that she was 16. I said that was fucked up and Ninja replied that he was only 19 so the age difference wasn't that big. I replied that I guess not but it didn't seem like she was there only having sex with people within a legal range.

I turned to his bodyguard who was on his phone to ask him what he thought of it. He replied that it was a free show and went back to what he was doing. At that point, John returned and asked me to come up in the elevator with him. He said that everything was ready. For me to get everything, I would have to kill someone.

As I entered the elevator, I recognized him in the different lighting. He was the actor John Krasinski from The Office. I stammered out recognition and pronounced his last name with "s" pronounced as in snake. He quickly corrected me by informing me that pronunciation was more frequently used by Jewish immigrants while he pronounced it "Krachinski" because he wasn't Jewish. I was taken about how quickly he was to defend how his name was pronounced and how he chose to phrase it.

We reached the destination a couple floors up. The area looked like a nightclub. For some reason I recall a basketball court - it may have been on a poster or the "club" may have been a VIP area at a basketball stadium. All I know for sure is that it was in Manhattan.

Leaving the elevator, I reminded him that I was supposed to be dosed at each location. He expressed surprise that I was being drugged considering that I was the heir. He got a drink for me and when I drank it, I replied that I was surprised that I was designated heir over someone like him but I guessed that it was due to genetics.

He introduced me to Steve Carell and his wife Nancy, Seth Meyers, and called over Ed Helms. Then, talking to one or all of them, I'm not sure who exactly he was addressing at this point, but he said that when he was growing up, he would tell friends on the drug to do anything and they would do it. He had even convinced one of them to jump off a roof.

Looking around for ideas of what he would instruct me to do, he settled on a nude woman to my right. He told me to have sex with her. I said okay and turned towards her but then stopped and asked him wouldn't she mind? He seemed frustrated that I hadn't acted immediately and explained that was what she was there for - why else would she be walking around naked?

The logic made sense to me in that state, I did what he had told me to and the woman pulled away in shock. I didn't penetrate her but I came close enough that she realized what I was trying to do. I was confused. For some reason I thought she had heard him and that it was expected - I looked at him in confusion and then back at her.

I tried to explain what he had said and apologized saying that I wasn't trying to hurt her. John, in a commanding voice told both of us, that was what she was there for. I told her that I didn't want to if she didn't but she quickly covered her emotions and said that it was fine. She turned back to dismiss the couple she had been talking to and then turned back to me. We then had sex in front of everyone. I think Ed Helms gave me a high five.

Afterwards, I thanked her and realized that she had been talking with the couple to plan an encounter in one of the rooms. It was at that point that I realized that there were rooms. I apologized and said that she could go with them now, but she replied that she had to get cleaned up. I turned around as she left and my memory of what had just happened went away.

John had left to check on something, presumably the person who I was supposed to kill. I turned to Steve Carell and said that I had to shake his hand. He said that he didn't really want to do that because I had just raped someone. At that I was in order - confused then horrified. I said that after what had happened in college, I had done everything I could to not do something like that ever again. I was confused and didn't even remember what had happened minutes ago.

He realized that I was serious and offered me a ride out of there. I agreed and quickly used the bathroom then took the elevator down. I threw out the smartphone they had given me on the way out. He guided me to a waiting car and I sat in the limo on the passenger side facing him and Nancy. She was terrified of me, she had seen the sex after I had spoken with the woman as a brutal rape. I tried to explain how I couldn't remember exactly what had happened but only Steve was really interested in talking with me.

He asked me where I lived and I told him Suffern and that I usually took a train from Penn Station home. He had hoped to drop me off at a location within the city. I was clearly in a vulnerable state and he didn't want me to do anything or for anything bad to happen to me. I replied that the drug was only really effective when the person who gave it to me told me to do something. I should be able to retain control. I told him that I would get a jelly and a strawberry donut at Dunkin Donuts in Secaucus, but would otherwise go directly home. This satisfied Steve.

I told him about how John was specific about how his name was pronounced and told him that I was pretty sure that the CIA were Nazis. He didn't seem to think that was true, so I asked him about how they recruited him. He said that they had found him when he was hosting a radio station in college. They had arranged their marriage and told them to have kids together to strengthen their bond.

He said that they mostly called them up for movies that had messages about having kids. They had the drug at home in case people overheard that they were off doing a CIA film. I suggested that if they had any doubts about how powerful that drug was that if they ever drug their son to tell him to do jumping jacks. Steve was taken aback and said that he would never just drug his son and I couldn't articulate that what I had meant was in the case that he had to for one of the reasons he had the drug, but I dropped it.

He said that part of the reason Nancy had referred to the sex as brutal was because he was a timid lover, something that John had heard him talking about and inserted into the show. It was more John's show now - he had convinced the CIA to use it as a platform for up and coming new assets. He had a plan to leave the show as his contract was coming up in the next few weeks. He was going to suggest that it might be his last season and see what the CIA would say.

Recalling Shelly Long's exit from Cheers, I suggested maybe implying that he would like to do more movies. I had forgotten that was what drew Jean's ire - I just gave advice based off the association. It did seem like a different situation, though, as he was established and a CIA asset rather than someone they were just trying to control.

As we reached Penn Station, I told him to keep his eyes and ears open. I really thought that there was something wrong with the CIA. I thanked him and Nancy and took the first train out.

At Secaucus, a CIA agent stopped me to make sure that I was making it back safe. When I got hom, I told my parents that I wanted nothing to do with Nan's friends ever again.

#

I was left in a funk after the attempted recruitment and didn't want to leave the house. I was encouraged to put my name in to the staffing agency R J Staffing and did a short stint at a non-profit that helped with people who didn't have full mobility. I recall that the earthquake in Haiti occurred at the end of that assignment.

A few days later, I received a call saying that another assignment had become available and they wanted me. I was dubious of that, but they had Anna, the office manager, call me and tell me about the job. It was temp to hire and they wanted someone familiar with comic books as DC Comics was one of their clients. I agreed to come in and my first day was around President's Day.

I was introduced to everyone. I recognized Yesenia Velez from a small gathering at a house with my friends but I don't think she recognized me. I also met Alan Cambey, who I didn't recognize but had met many times before. Most of the people were busy with post-holiday work, so I was initially trained on data entry for qualification cards.

A few days into working there, Anna pulled me aside, gave me something to drink, and brought me into the handicap bathroom to have sex. Alan returned from "lunch" and knocked on the door insisting that we stop. He told Anna that I wasn't part of the group of people that knew about this and that my family had sent me there to be "safe". I was surprised, then drugged further.

In my time there, initially up to the point where I got engaged, I was pulled aside by various female employees in upper management to have sex. I was always drugged and outside of the encounters, they treated it like it never happened.

I was once asked to "perform" with a female co-worker in the main conference room where several people watched. I was also invited, with that same employee, to act as "paragons" - naked statues at the entrance of an orgy at Alan's house. I allowed a guest to perform oral sex on me, which led to Alan kicking me out, not paying me, and pulling in the caterer to take my place.

One time, my sister Laura dropped me off and Alan drugged me and asked me if he could eat her as he had planned to 15 years prior. I waited in the vestibule in front and Karen G was aware of what he was saying and doing. Alan also told me that Tony killed his friend in the 70's.

After I was engaged, the sex stopped, mostly. Alan raped and then forced me to rape a fellow employee after we had made a mistake on a large order. He would also take female employees, including both of his daughters out to "lunch" where he would drug and have sex with them.

In June, I was sent to Folio, a trade show in New York City. I ran into Carla Lalli Music at the bar outside of a panel she was on and she commented that it was a familiar scene. I was confused and asked her if I knew her to which she said yes, but that I wouldn't remember and shouldn't try to. After returning to the office, Diane took me aside and told me that Cambey & West was CIA and most of the people who worked there had been involved with it directly or indirectly.

#

I was gathered with Heather's friends Kat, Jason, Rita and Doug for a moving to Texas "party" for Heather in New York City. We went to various locations: the Nintendo Store, a tropical zoo, a park, and an Italian family style restaurant in Manhattan. I don't remember the specific itinerary. Close to the park, though, I wandered off for a bit as heather was buying something at Duane Reade. The others were waiting for us at the park.

I noticed a bookstore with some type of event going on inside. As I tried to get a closer look, a man approached me and asked if I had a death wish. I took a step back and said that I didn't mean to violate a security boundary, I was just trying to see what was going on. He said something to the effect of nice try and that there was a termination order out on me.

I asked him what that meant and told him that it had to be a mistake. He pulled out his device and said that it doesn't make mistakes. I asked him to doublec check and he did and showed me - it was a picture of me on an old monochrome lcd screen. It said terminate - to kill on sight. He pulled me in through a metal door and zip-tied me, barefoot, to a metal chair.

He stepped over to the right and started looking through several blunt metal tools. I was drugged and I asked him to please check with a person first. I didn't think it was possible for me to have such an order out on me. I told him that I was with people and that they would be looking for me - he said that he was going to cut me up into so many pieces that they would never find a trace of me.

Selecting his implement, he walked over to me. I shouted for help at a young man who I could see through a crack in the door. He ran, I don't know if he ever reported it. The man asked me which one of my fingers I used the most. He said that he would alternate between fingers and toes and then teeth. He had a pair of dull wire cutters up against the sides of my right index finger and moved to squeeze when there was a knock on the door.

He set down his tool and opened the door slightly - it was Carla Lalli-Music. She said that she had gotten an alert that there was a security situation and wanted to check on it. She recognized me in the chair and pulled the man outside. I could overhear their words.

She said that her husband was trying to start a war that he couldn't win. She said that she had me placed in Cambey & West and that I seemed to be doing well with the program. She told him that those were the people who signed his checks and let him do what he did and that if he killed me they would retaliate.

He recognized who she was talking about and recalled that he had interacted with me several times as a child. They let me go and I tried to tell Heather's friends, but they didn't believe me.

Chapter Twenty-Three

2011

I made the decision in spring 2011 that I was going to go to E3 and to try to meet people in the industry. I scheduled most of the week prior to the show off from work and booked a room at Level Furnished living. The time off was right after a visit to Heather in Texas, who I did not tell about the trip. I didn't have tickets to E3 proper, but I knew that there were a lot of pre-show events that I might be able to get into on my good looks and charm alone.

After settling in at the room and buying sheets and groceries at a local store, I walked over to the convention center to get my bearings. Outside of the center, I spotted three men who I walked up to.

I told them that I was out of college and looking to break in to the video game industry and asked them if they knew of any events going on. The tallest said that they had just finished setting up their booth and were about to get drinks and invited me along. They introduced themselves as Pete Hines, Todd Howard, and one other person whose name escapes me.

We walked a couple blocks to a restaurant and were seated at a table near the window. I had my back to the front of the restaurant, Todd was directly across the table from me and Pete was to my left. I told them that I was familiar with their games but hadn't really played them because I didn't really have a PC. I told him that it was pretty much a choice for me between Morrowind and Ocarina of Time and picked the latter.

Pete said that Morrowind was optimized to run on pretty much anything, but Skyrim, their newest game would be pretty demanding on PC. I asked them about Fallout: New Vegas which turned out to be a big sore spot. They felt like upper management didn't trust them with the IP and didn't give them much of a choice. I was confused as the game looked like it shared a lot of assets. I had also commented that most of the popular mods for their games seemed to be adding visual effects like godrays and bokeh effects.

They clarified that they built the engine and a lot of the assets but another studio made the game and they just published it. I made an analogy to Majora's Mask, though they reminded me that was still first party Nintendo. I mentioned that Nintendo did let Capcom use the Zelda IP and Link's Awakening assets for the Oracle games, which Pete seemed interested in.

The discussion turned to a potential "side-quel" game for the next Fallout, which I was surprised was already in development. Pete mentioned that they had been experimenting with online and that it could be a good fit. He mentioned a recent trip to West Virginia and I chimed in with my own trip there.

There was mention of how quest content would work and I asked if their players were likely to roleplay between each other. They agreed and I suggested that they look to something like Space Station 13 as inspiration. They have crafting systems for everything including chems - which Pete said fit well with the Fallout IP. There was also discussion of several smaller cities and West Virginia's proximity to DC, the setting of Fallout 3.

I asked them why they didn't re-release Morrowind for newer consoles, and they said that there were a lot of problematic themes like rape and slavery prominent in their older games, even in Fallout 3. There was brief discussion about the Elder Scrolls Online, which they were also a bit irked at having to allow another studio to make. I said that it seemed for them to learn about how to run an online game and potentially serve as a platform to revisit the provinces people miss from their earlier games.

The conversation turned to mobile games, which was something I had a lot of interest in as a concept. I believed that mobile games would follow a similar trajectory to PC games as the hardware improved. Other than touch controls, the architecture was more or less the same, so a game could start its development cycle on significantly more advanced hardware than what was out at the time and by the end of its development cycle be higher quality than games developed on contemporary hardware.

There was a game, I believe that it was Infinity Blade, that was developed in Unity that I used as an example. It was pretty basic combat but it looked pretty. If that was something that fit their IP, a similar model could work. Todd mentioned plans for a management sim, which became Fallout Shelter. Pete mentioned also adding a town and quests to the game that ended up being Blades.

Around that point, I said that I had run into CIA people in the past in large cities and asked them if they had ever run into anyone like that. They said no, but then Todd got up and said he was going to get another round. He returned with drinks and I picked the one closest to him. As I drank it, I immediately felt the effects of hyocine and said so. Pete again said that he didn't know anything about that and, at that point, the others left and it was just me and Todd.

So I said to him that I guessed he was CIA. I asked him how he knew that I'd drink the one with the drugs in it and he clarified that he drugged all of them. I asked if the others would be okay. He said that they would be fine and all had drivers to get them home. He said that they would be better off than me.

He asked me where I was staying and I told him. I said that most of the time when I was drugged like that, I would just be left to leave, but he said that he liked to see it through. I wanted to stay to get another drink, but Todd didn't want to be recognized. He insisted that we walk back to my hotel.

On the way, he gestured for me to come look at the LA river basin. He said that a lot of films shot there and that I should go down to check it out. I realized that it was far too steep and that he was trying to get me to kill or injure myself. I sat down against the barrier and refused to look. He gave that up and told me to get up to go to my hotel. He tried to get me to cross the street into traffic, which I also resisted by hanging on to the crosswalk post.

When we got to the hotel, he asked my room number and said that he would be back. I went to my room and emailed myself the contents of my iPod Touch's notes, which included my flight number and terminal number as a reminder that this happened. I then laid down to try to combat the effects of the drug by centering myself. A few minutes later, Todd returned.

He had a bag from a pharmacy with razor blades. He started filling the bathtub with water and tried to convince me to slit my wrists. He said that the narrative of me meeting my favorite developers and then killing myself made sense. I reminded him that I hadn't really heard of any of them until tonight, which at the time I didn't realize was a lie.

I told him that it wasn't going to happen and to stop trying. I sat up on my bed and talked to him. I asked if he wanted to make out, to which he replied that he was married with two kids. I replied that I had a girlfriend and that I didn't know why I had asked him that. He said that he had heard that it was a side effect of the drug.

I told him that I'd survived being hunted in the streets of Brooklyn. He said that he'd done a hunt like that. I was furious at hearing this. I asked him if he loved his children. He said yes, that he read stories to them, tucked them in, and tried to be a good parent. I told him that every single person that he killed had people who loved them just as much, if not more. He said that he was starting to feel bad about that and I told him that he should.

Then, looking at him in his track suit, I realized who he was. I asked him slowly, if he had been a tour guide at William and Mary. He said yes, when he was there. I then asked him what he remembered about his recruitment. He said that he didn't remember much, but that they told him that he was ruthless. I let out a hollow laugh and told him that was a lie. He looked confused and I told him that I was there.

He had a vague recollection of there being children at the dinner. I told him that he was drugged and that the last thing he wanted to do was to kill his friend. He said her name and that she was the only girl allowed into chess club. I realized that he had loved her, at least as a friend and possibly more. He agreed.

I told him that every step of the "recruitment" he had tried to save her, up until the point where Jean directly ordered him to. Even then, he was crying and apologized. I asked him what they told him about why he was being recruited and he said that it was because he was the best at what he did. I told him that Jean said that it was because of he was of average intelligence and he wanted it enough so he was easy to manipulate. He was insulted, but I reminded him that was what *they* said. Intelligence wasn't a scale from 1-100; people are intelligent in different ways. I told him that his presence here was an indicator that he was at the top of his field.

He seemed conflicted. He asked me if I knew about the Reich. I tried to remember and recalled one time when Rick told me about it in high school then drugged me when I started freaking out. I told Todd that it sounded familiar. I asked him about it and he told me that they took him out to an island on a lake in Ohio and told him about how the Germans had won World War II and secretly invaded. I asked him if that meant he was a Nazi and didn't think that Jewish people were people.

He said that they believed that some people were more prone to be intelligent than others. He then mentioned his friend and coworker Adam Adamowicz as someone he knew who was Jewish and brilliant. He then mentioned that he had terminal lung cancer. I said that I was sorry to hear that, then asked him if he thought that the Reich had anything to do with him getting sick.

He didn't think so, but I said that it seemed like the kind of thing they would do. Artistic control over what they considered "their" projects seemed like a big deal to them. He did say that they had helped find two promising artists, one of which was already working with them. I asked him if Adam had family who died in the Holocaust. He said that he didn't know for sure, but probably. He said that he didn't know for sure, but probably. So I said, go against the Reich for him.

Todd initially balked at the idea, saying that he had killed people after his initiation. Competition for jobs and people eaten by the Reich. I told him that I think I might have eaten human flesh, too, and I think that I have caused people to be killed, but letting the Reich continue to run things wasn't the future for America.

He seemed to be on the fence, so I asked him if he thought that the Reich could remain a secret forever. If he thought it could then there really wasn't anything I could say about going against it that would sway him further. If he though that it would go public, then his choice was to either sink with it or have some semblance of a life after by helping to bring it down. That seemed to give him the resolve. He agreed.

We started talking about how the CIA had infiltrated the gaming industry and how it could be exposed or dismantled. He initially had the impression that this would be immediate but I told him that it was likely that it would take around ten years to gather enough evidence on something so complex and that we would need at least several politicians in both houses of congress to have enough momentum.

He asked me about a demo they were doing the next day, if he should get someone else to present it. I told him that he would still have to work there and keep up appearances to the CIA and Reich. He said that he might have trouble doing it, but I told him to look at this as a new mission.

One thing he suggested was bringing back the Wolfenstein franchise, which they had acquired with id software. He told me that the Reich specifically disliked it due to the nature of the IP.

He also agreed that it would be good to minimize harm to Bethesda and at the same time humble his cultivated rock star image by taking steps to show that other people worked there. He would do this by showing off more concept art, more of the people involved in the design process and putting other members of the studio out on stage.

We discussed in what ways the CIA had infiltrated the gaming industry and he said that he had a counterpart at Rockstar Games. One of the team members at BGS was CIA but not Reich. He also explained that the XBox architecture was built in a way that sent more data than was disclosed to the companies for analysis.

For example, Todd said, there was one quest in Skyrim that's design was inspired by an old spy recruitment test. The player was presented with three people, all of whom they're told deserve to die. The player is supposed to select one and kill them. If the player kills just one without interrogating any of them, that player is flagged as a recruitment prospect as they've indicated a willingness to kill but also follow orders. Their earlier games Morrowind and Fallout 3 had explicit psychographic tests as part of character creation.

I asked him if any of the mods that were built for their games were analyzed in this way. He said that none of them really matched the quality of their content in a way that would be useful for that. That sentence stuck with me after the wipe and inspired me to involve myself with the Skyrim modding community.

Todd said that he had some recollection of me being on the Daggerfall beta test forum on Compuserve. I was there as marIQ and accidentally outed him as a CIA agent at one point, which prompted a meeting where some of the BGS staff were spoken to and the thread that I posted in deleted. Ma'iq the Liar was named after me.

We discussed the overall trajectory of the game industry and how the CIA and Reich was encouraging crunch, erasure of individual achievements except for the few chosen, and it being a boy's club. Todd had ideas about how to expose some of that, specifically through a journalist at Kotaku.

As a test of their integrity, he would leak the setting of Fallout 4 to them. He figured that worst case, they don't respect anonymity of him as a source and he can justify it to management as a misguided viral advertising attempt. Best case, he now had a journalist to leak to.

He also shared that the Reich insisted that they use Jeremy Soule, a serial rapist who used his "encounters" as inspiration for the soundtrack for their games. He had already assaulted a woman who they worked with and swept it under the rug. I asked him if he thought he was likely to re-offend and he said yes.I suggested at that time they say that enough is enough and they tell the CIA that they're trying to run a business. That was the type of justification I'd seen work against Jean.

We discussed how he would keep notes about his other dealings with the Reich. He originally planned to keep records on his computer, but I convinced him to keep journals instead. Even if he was high up in the Reich, I didn't think that a digital record would be safe. He was concerned about his wife and kids finding a journal, but he determined that a hidden panel in his safe was the best place to keep them.

I also asked him if he planned to tell the other higher ups at BGS about the truth of the CIA and his role in it. He said that he might try to. He probably would drug them to be sure of their reaction before telling them everything.

The discussion then turned to the possibility that, after bringing everything to light, he may not be able to work in the game industry ever again. In that case, now would be the best time for him to make his dream game. He had one in mind - Starfield. He described it as Star Trek meets Star Wars. You start out in a Federation type organization, but once you get out there in space running maintenance missions in your shuttle, you find yourself in the midst of a Star Wars style galactic civil war where you are the chosen one.

I asked him how long the development cycle of the game would take - he said about ten years. I commented on the perfect timing of that. He said that it was more or less depending on what other games they made in the meantime. He said that the others seemed to like the idea of the online Fallout game so that would probably get made. The mobile Elder Scrolls game also seemed likely. He was concerned about ESO killing the franchise or at least overshadowing the possibility of an Elder Scrolls 6.

I told him that from a fan's perspective, the worst thing a franchise can do is disavow a work based on it as not up to par. He seemed to agree that they might need to set aside their personal feelings about ESO and maybe give them more resources than they would otherwise. It would also help to let fans know that this is more or less where the franchise will live for the next decade and that there will be an Elder Scrolls 6.

He mentioned that they would likely skunkworks it and also a Special Edition for Skyrim. We also discussed letting fans know an extended timeline of their future games to ensure that they know that Starfield and TES6 are coming eventually.

Towards the end of te conversation, he said that he would have to send me back to New York because he couldn't afford for me to remember and maybe run into him again. He set up a plane ticket for me at 10 am the next day. I was to check out around 9, then go to the terminal and say that the reservation is under CIA.

He also asked me for my passwords to clear out any emails and financial transactions related to my flight and trip I gave them to him, neglecting to mention the email in limbo that had my flight number. When he left, I told him to try not to kill anyone if he could avoid it, which I regret as it came out unintentionally glib.

I was upset that I would miss the presentations but he told me that they would be livestreaming them as well. I made a mental note of that and went to sleep. I woke up the next morning and took a car to the airport as instructed. I told the woman at the kiosk that my flight was under CIA, which confused her at first. She entered it in and the software took over her screen and brought up my flight info to her surprise. She asked me if I was an agent. I said no, that I was someone affected by them and that thy weren't as "cool" as they were made out to be. I flew back to NYC and watched the Skyrim demo on livestream. Todd seemed to be wearing the same red track suit as he had the night before.

In the following weeks I became engrossed in the Elder Scrolls and Fallout games, eventually becoming an influenctial figure in the modding community.

Chapter Twenty-Four

2012

Some time after Heather and I moved into the larger apartment, but before our wedding, I woke up in a haze. I realized that I was drugged and couldn't move. I believe that Heather had questioned me about how I felt about Becca and didn't like my answer. I could hear her talking to Margie in the living room over the phone through the door.

Heather was telling Margie that she could feel me slipping away from her. Margie suggested that she could put in a termination order for her but Heather would have to be the one to carry it out. Heather said that she had been having panic attacks from her initiation murder and had hopes that Becca would become a friend. Margie then suggested that she invite Becca over and drug her and tell her to have sex with me. In her experience (attempting to rape me after finding Super Taboo in my internet history when I was 14) the fantasy is always more appealing than reality.

Heather called Becca over and she arrived just a few minutes later. I was able to hear pretty much everything through the door. Heather gave her a glass of datura. She asked what it was and Heather cagily told her that she had to drink it before she told her. After she did, Heather told her that she wanted her to have sex with me. Becca responded that she didn't need anything to make that happen, she thought that I was hot.

At that point, Becca came in and closed the door behind her and started stripping off her clothes. I told her to wait and tried to explain to her what was going on, but she said that she was going to take full advantage of the permission she had been given. I convinced her to slow down and so she came over and sat next to me in the bed. I explained to her that she had been drugged and that it was affecting her judgment and memory. She told me that she wasn't feeling anything out of the ordinary when aroused and that she just wanted to make me feel good. She confirmed that she was attracted to me prior to being drugged.

I believed that she was in control of her actions, but told her that I still didn't feel comfortable having sex like this. She offered to fulfill a fantasy of something sexual that wasn't necessarily intercourse, to which I shared a fantasy of waking up to oral sex. She agreed and we played the fantasy out. Afterwards, she washed her face in the bathroom and left.

I went back to sleep briefly, but was woken up by Becca calling Heather on her cell phone. She asked if what had happened really happened. Heather denied it initially, but Becca said that she distinctly remembered putting on makeup earlier. Heather moved rooms so I couldn't hear the rest of the conversation. When I woke up, Heather asked me if I had remembered anything happening and if I was okay and my response was why shouldn't I be?

#

Heather and I went to a party at a house on the east side of the island. It was hosted by a middle-aged woman who I had not met before. There was a keg set up near the garage, but most of the people were in the main area of the ranch style house.

After around an hour, we were given cups of punch. I talked to some people for a bit, then the woman announced that there was a bedroom open if anyone wanted to have sex. A few people went in, including Becca, who I noticed left a few minutes after. I told Heather that I wanted to go in after I saw Becca go in but wouldn't without permission - Heather said that she had a headache which seemed to be a no, so I didn't. She was sitting with the woman, who I believe was a station chief or at least someone higher up than a regular agent.

Instead, I sat down to talk to people. I overhead Michael Wetzel tell another student that he should let him dissect his father's brain. He said that he had done it before and I asked if he worked with cadavers. He said that no, that he had taken someone who was talking to him at the grocery store and cut open their skull while they were still alive. I decided to take the opportunity to question him further.

I asked him how he got the person to come with him. He said that his family had a drug that he used that made them do whatever he told them to do. I asked if he had killed others and he said yes, he had a lot of different charts on brain structure and he was encouraged by his family to study them. I asked what he did with the bodies and he said that he buried them in the woods by his house. At that point, he stopped himself and asked me why he was telling me this; that it could get him in a lot of trouble.

I painted at his cup and told him that he was drinking the same drug he had access to. He got mad at me and I quickly replied that I hadn't drugged him, pointing at the woman who did. He went up to talk to her and returned, saying that she told him that no one would remember, so it was okay.

The next day, I asked the other person Michael Wetzel had been talking to if he remembered the conversation. He didn't, so I dismissed my vague recollection as a dream.

#

Heather was on her way back from her lab around the same time I was putting away laundry. When I put away her underwear, I noticed a black CIA memory wipe kit with two vials of scopolamine and a needle. At first I considered leaving it, but instead decided to confront her. I set it on the coffee table and waited a couple minutes for her to arrive home.

I asked her as she walked in where the fuck she had gotten a CIA memory wipe kit. She accused me of going through her things - I reminded her that she had asked me to put away laundry. I told her that this was a big deal and that the CIA had been following me my entire life and I would never be able to trust her unless she told me everything.

She claimed that she was first approached by a male agent at a conference or her school orientation. I asked what happened and she claimed that he looked up her name and told her that she was dating someone that they wanted to keep an eye on. She agreed when they offered to send her parents $500 monthly.

I asked if anyone else was recruited then, she said that she wasn't sure but named two others - Matt and Christie. I don't know if she was being truthful as she seemed to be lying about her recruitment. I told her that I would never marry her if she was still watching me, so she called her contact and told them that it was off. I told her that she had to drug me so that I wouldn't remember but she thought I just wanted the drugs. She was under the impression I was involved with heroin after I stumbled back drugged to a meetup in NYC. I told her that it was the same drug and they were going to kill me at that point but I talked my way out of it.

She let me take a vial of the drug and threw out the rest. A few days later, we went to a party at Tierra Farris's apartment where she drugged both Heather and I via drinks.

Chapter Twenty-Five

2013

Chapter Twenty-Six

2014

Chapter Twenty-Seven

2015

A few weeks after moving to New Jersey and beginning to work at Cambey & West again, Diane took me aside and told me that I needed to come into the office on Saturday. I initially thought that it was for work and told her I didn't expect to be working on Saturdays. She clarified that it wasn't optional and that it wasn't for work - it was for something CIA related.

I came in and sat at my computer, but was told to come outside. I was drugged and shoved in the back of an SUV. I woke up in a dark woodshed with a workbench, tools, and another person. He was dressed in a tight, formfitting workout outfit. I asked him where we were and he seemed confused.

I rephrased my question and he said New York City. I said it didn't seem like we were but I could tell that we had both been drugged. I asked his name and I replied that we would gt out of there, not exactly believing it myself. I asked him where they picked him up from and he said that he was exercising in his neighborhood.

At that point, an agent opened the door to the shed and told me that it was over and to follow him. They closed the door and left the other man in the shed. I was led into the house via a small back stairwell and into a main room. It was Alan Cambey's house and he, his wife Margo, and Music were waiting for me.

Alan said that he had brought me here to ensure that I wouldn't cause anymore trouble for his friend, gesturing at Music. I told him that I just wanted to work and I didn't want to cause trouble. At that point, dishes of food were brought out. He waited for me to see what was on my plate, then told me that it was the man from the shed and that the next time I cause a problem for them it would be me.

I didn't believe him because of the drug. I asked which part of the person it was because it didn't look like human flesh to me, not that I recalled what human flesh looked like. I also requested a beer in an attempt to play it cool. He had one brought out and said for the details about the meat, I would need to ask the chef. At that, Carla came out.

I said that I recognized her and she confirmed that she knew me as well. She said that the meat was from the man's shoulder. I tasted it and felt relieved for a moment - it didn't remind me of pork shoulder, they had to be lying, which I said. She said that she had ground it up and cooked it with some asparagus and shaoxing wine. I believed her then and set it aside.

I asked her if she was still having relationship problems and she sat down on Music's lap, said that they had worked it out and started making out with him and grabbed at Alan's crotch. I asked if Margo was okay with that and she said that he had far too much energy for her alone, and implied that he also had sex with their daughters and that she was okay with that.

I asked how they knew each other and Music said that they had met around 35 years ago and were safari buddies. I asked what they hunted and he gestured at my plate. I told them again that I just wanted to work. At that point, they let me go to my car that was parked outside to leave.

Instead of driving straight home, I found a police station and stopped there. The officer I spoke with was sympathetic, but told me that if they were CIA and he reported it, they would be notified first. The policy was that anything involving cannibalism or Nazis went to the CIA. I asked him why Nazis and he speculated that the CIA were experts on Nazis.

When I returned home, Heather asked me how the work thing was. I told her that no one from work was there, which she found odd.

Chapter Twenty-Eight

2016

Chapter Twenty-Nine

2017

I drove in to Brooklyn and parked on the East side of Bogart Street a couple of blocks from the venue. I attended the show and had one or two drinks at the bar over the course of the night. No one I knew well had attended, so I mostly kept to myself and used my phone.

At the end of the show, I was standing next to the tables between the bar and stairway down to the street. I noticed a man and woman on a date and overheard the man telling the woman how great the band was and she was clearly not interested. I thought it was a bit funny at first, until the man offered to get her a drink from the bar - practically insisting. She said that she didn't want anything, but agreed to a water when he insisted. This raised a red flag for me, so I kept him in the periphery of my eyesight.

When he got the water at the bar, he had his back to me for a moment and it looked like he was pouring something in it. His date eyed the glass when she got it and drank it. Her behavior immediately changed and he asked her if she wanted to get out of there and she agreed. I wasn't sure if she was drugged at first - they could have been acting differently towards each other for other reasons, but as the show was letting out, I followed them down the stairs.

At the sidewalk I worked up the nerve to ask her if something was wrong and the man immediately jabbed me in the arm with a needle of hyocine and told me to "Mind your own business." With that, I was positive that she had been drugged and much of my memory surrounding the CIA started to come back to me and I immediately sprang into action. I told him in as authoritative of a tone as I could muster that I was making it my business and demanded to know who his station chief was. He told me at first that he didn't know what I was talking about but he was clearly lying and confused as to why his drugs didn't work on me. I called bullshit when he denied it.

I asked him again who his station chief was and offered up the name Lampel. Who at the time was the only person in that role I could remember. At that he dropped the act and nodded and asked what he did wrong. I gestured to the woman and said that he drugged her and was clearly going to rape her. She was watching on but not talking. He told me that he was only doing as he was told to do in training.

I asked him what they told him in training and he said that they were told that because they were protecting America that they could take what they wanted. They just had to give whoever they desired the drug first so that they would "understand" and not remember the moment afterwards. I made up a lie that there were other schools of thought on this in the CIA and I was part of a faction that didn't see it the same way. I gave him my name and told him to call his station chief if he didn't believe me or had any questions.

I turned to the woman and asked her if I could call her a cab or something. She slowly said, "Maybe, I'm feeling out of it." The thought struck me that she was in too vulnerable of a state to put in a car or with a stranger and offered my hand, telling her I was parked nearby and could drive her home. She took it and I rushed her to my car, looking back to see if we were being followed. We didn't seem to be.

When we got in my car, I told her that she should shut off her phone because that was how the CIA could track us. She did and I asked her for her address to input into my GPS. I asked her if he knew where she lived and she said that she had him pick her up from a friend's address for safety. I asked her if there was someone home at her apartment and she said yes, her roommate.

I drove carefully to the apartment building in Astoria and when we go there, I told her to go inside, tell her roommate what had happened and that if she had any questions that I would wait. I asked her to tell her to come out and confirm to me that she had gotten in safely. She left and a couple minutes later, her roommate came out and angrily asked what I had done to her friend.

My first instinct was to be defensive but I took a second and thought about how what the woman explained to her would have sounded. I backtracked and explained that I had witnessed her date slip something in her drink. That I had seen the drug before being used by the CIA and that I had interceded and wanted to make sure that she got back safely and did not go out on another date with that man again. She didn't quite believe me and asked if she should be calling the police on me. I said that if she talked to her friend that she could confirm everything and that I would wait and not leave. I asked her just to not leave my car door open so a rat wouldn't jump in as my car was enough of a mess already.

She went back insite and came out shortly after entering. Her roommate had already gone to bed, but she said that based off what she said, how I was responding, and how her friend was wearing several layers that didn't look to be messed with that she at least believed that I didn't do anything to her. She said that she wasn't sure about the CIA part, but thanked me for getting her friend back safely. She asked if I twas okay to drive and talked with me until I was.

I insisted that the CIA weren't what people thought they were and that people in government really needed to get them under control. She mentioned that she had actually just been nominated by her brother to run for congress against an incumbent. I told her that I'm sure she would be a good candidate and she replied that I couldn't know that because I didn't know her views. I laughed and said that was a fair point. I always assume that younger politicians are generally on the left even though I know that's not always the case.

I asked her what her political beliefs were and she said that they were coming at her opponent from the left. She said that she would be running against Representative Joe Crowley, a Democrat. I asked what group was running against a Democrat and she clarified that it was a primary challenge coming from the Democratic Socialists. She said that she had worked for Bernie Sanders. I expressed that I supported him in 2016 and felt that he would have won against Trump in the general election. She said that she wasn't as sure - but it did start a movement of challengers from the left.

She mentioned that she was in the process of figuring out how she would campaign and said that she usually goes by Sandy Ocasio-Cortez. I commented that she had three names so she could abbreviate to initials and she clarified that she had a middle name - her last name was just hyphenated. I asked her what her first name was and she clarified that it was Alexandria. I made a comment that AOC sounded better than SOC and we discussed a bit of how she planned to campaign. I asked her if she did make it into Congress to do what she could about looking into the CIA.

She offered to let me use the restroom before I left. I briefly came in and met her boyfriend before using the facilities and driving home. I stopped at State Line Diner on the way home, as well.

#

I had driven in to the city to see World/Inferno Friendship Society open for a Slackers Christmas show. After World/Inferno's set, I left early and dropped off Kevin Rankin in Astoria. I drove back to Suffern and parked in a lot downtown to walk around and play Pokemon Go, when a man with a pickup truck waved me over. I cautiously approached and he asked me if I had gone to high school with Vanessa Beuschel.

I said that I had and he asked my name, which he seemed to already know. He entered it into a handheld device that I recognized as being used by the CIA. He said that I was on a protected list but that shouldn't be an issue because he wasn't planning to hurt me. He asked me if I was willing to help her. I asked if she was in trouble and he assured me that she was fine. He asked if I would do her a favor and I said that I'd do anything for her. He said that he was glad to hear that and gestured me to his truck. I went towards the back to go around to the passenger side and felt a needle jab me in the neck. My legs gave out and he scooped me into the back of the truck and pulled over the bed cover.

I gained consciousness when the car was going over a gravel road. It felt instantaneous but it must have been a half hour or so. The car stopped and he came around to get me out. I was able to walk and he guided me into a house and sat me down on the couch in the living room. He explained that he and Vanessa were together and she wanted to have a kid and he did too, but could not bring himself to have a child that was biologically his in case he, as a station chief, had to make a decision that might put that child at risk.

I told him that I didn't really feel comfortable with that and that if it was something that would put the child at risk, it would be something that would put Vanessa at risk and I didn't want that either. He then explained that it was his job to make those sorts of calls and that he hoped that he never needed to but couldn't allow himself to potentially have a conflict of interest. I asked him what job he had that was so important. He said that he would only tell me because I would forget and said that he was a station chief.

Knowing that I would likely remember at some point, I used the opportunity to ask him about the structure of the CIA. I already knew about the role of architect so I asked him about how many station chiefs there were and how they operated. He said that there were around 70 spread out over the US and they used agents and assets to monitor local businesses for potential threats. I asked him what would be so big that he would have to risk their lives and he vaguely referred to a potential natural disaster or disease.

I then asked him how he met Vanessa and if he had been ordered to hook up with her by Music or someone else higher up. He said no, that he had met her at a bar. I then asked him why it was me specifically that he had picked up and he said that he had asked Vanessa if there was anyone else other than him that she had wanted to potentially have a child with and she told him about me. I said that didn't really sound like information that she would readily offer up and he confirmed that he had drugged her.

I said that it sounded like he was trying to give her as close as possible to what she wanted and he nodded. I told him that Vanessa knew me for a very long time and that she would recognize the child as mine, which he dismissed by saying that we had similar enough features. I asked him if I could talk to her and ask her what she thought about it and he said only if I agree, so I agreed.

He brought her down the steps through the kitchen and said that I was here for her. He set a kettle on the stove and set a timer, as he put it, to evoke a dreamlike quality to the encounter. He seated her on the couch next to me and I asked her if she knew what he was asking me to do. She said that she did. I said that as long as she knew this was real and not a dream, I would do it for her and she agreed.

We had sex on the couch and after it was done, Steven took her back upstairs and turned off the stove. He then drugged me again and put me in the back of his truck and drove me back to my car. I didn't feel safe going back to my apartment via car because I wasn't as familiar with the roads, so I asked him to instead drop me off at my parents' house. I slept in my old bedroom after taking a shower.

Chapter Thirty

2018

Some time after the holidays, my memory of the events of December 23rd resurfaced. As I tried to reconstruct the events of the night in my head, I realized that I had to have my cell phone location history on the night I was kidnapped because I was playing Pokemon Go. I realized that it was on the night that I was kidnapped. I pulled it up in my web browser and found the closest address on Maps. I drove to the area which was only about a half hour away and found the house. I parked nearby and went up to ring the doorbell and Vanessa answered the door.

She was surprised to see me and I told her that I had been there before. She said that I hadn't and I described the layout of the building and that I had sat on the couch. She looked a bit confused but said that she would make some lemonade and we could figure it out. In the meantime, she called one of the workers on the farm to give me a tour.

He said that he was just about to fix something to the left of the house and told me to walk ahead of him. I did so, and ass soon as we were out of site from the porch, he knocked me to the ground from behind and pulled a gun on me. He asked me who I was and what I was doing here. I asked him if he was going to shoot me and he said that he didn't have authorization to. I told him that I was a friend of Vanessa's and her reaction should have proved that.

He said that I wasn't authorized to be there and that he was going to drug me and Vanessa and told me to never come back. He asked me how I found the place and he deleted my Google Maps history.

#

I texted Vanessa at some point earlier in the year about Saturday Night Live; the January 27th episode with Will Ferrell. Growing up, we had used to talk online every Saturday and watch it together from our respective homes. We continued to exchange texts throughout the year, though I had no recollection at that point of my two visits to the farm. She said that she would be visiting her family for Easter and she would have some time to meet up. She mentioned at that point that she was pregnant, which I congratulated her on.

We met at the Airmont Diner and had lunch. Afterwards, in the parking lot, I noticed that she was planning to walk back to the Howard Johnson she was staying at with Steven. She invited me in and I sat on one of the beds while she used the restroom.

As I waited, I casually looked around and noticed a CIA memory wipe kit on top of a "tool kit" which I know from first-hand experience is meant to be used to dismember people piece by piece or, if they're lucky, torture them. I froze up and as soon as she came back in the room I pointed it out to her and explained how and where I'd seen that sort of stuff before. She said that it was just something Steven had for his job and before I could prevent her, she called for him from the other room. When he came in and saw me and heard her explanation of what I had said, he sighed and said that he must have underestimated our pre-existing relationship.

We were both confused at what he meant by this and he explained that the child Vanessa was carrying was mine, unless she had any flings in the meantime. She started to cry and I asked her if she knew about this. She shook her head and said that she had no idea.

Steven took out the memory kit and injected me first. I asked him if it would hurt the baby if he used it on Vanessa and he said that it wouldn't. She allowed him to inject her too. He then said that he would give us a half hour to say goodbye and that I wasn't to contact her again because she would be busy raising a child. We talked while drugged briefly, then I left.

#

At most WIFS shows in the city, I usually met with my friend Kevin Rankin and this show wasn't much different. At the venue, I was hungry, so I ordered a meal at the bar with a beer. I talked to Kevin about a few things, then brought up that I had been kidnapped and forced to impregnate Vanessa. I don't think I recalled the full event, but as soon as I mentioned that something like that had happened, he produced a vial of hyocine from his cargo pants pocket.

I was shocked and asked him where he had gotten it. He said that a few months prior, he had been approached by someone at his apartment. He was offered $500 a month to become a CIA agent. He had to kill someone "he barely knew" and was given the opportunity to kill people, something you normally had to be in the army to do. I was appalled and told him that wasn't legal. He said that the person who recruited him said that it was and that they made the laws.

He then told me that they said if I ever mentioned a child to drug me. He offered to let me orally injest it because I was a friend. He handed it to me and I sighed and poured it into my beer, but the bartender noticed. He called out to Kevin and I, then Kevin went over and drugged him via needle with his second vial. He told him to go home sick and he did.

The rest of the show was uneventful, save for Kevin following up to see if I remembered anything, which I didn't.

#

During the summer, I saw an event that some mutual friends were going to for a baby shower for Vanessa. I was confused as to why I hadn't heard about it and after thinking it over, I was able to recall that it was my child. I only had a vague recollection of Steven's involvement, but I knew that he was CIA and that I would be watched if I came close to her, so I devised a plan.

I purchased a gift for the baby - a plush Star Trek Enterprise-D with Worf and Picard - and wrapped it up. I had my sister Laura drive me up to Wendy's and take my cell phone with her so I couldn't be tracked. I walked the rest of the way to Vanessa's parents' house and hid in the woods behind it to get an idea of who was home. They had large, woods facing windows, which made that task easy.

When I was fairly sure that her parents were the only people there, I walked into the open and signaled her father who was on the computer downstairs. He called her mother on the phone intercom and they both came out.

I explained to them that I wasn't sure how, but I knew that the baby was mine. I told them that Steven had something to do with it and that they shouldn't trust him. They rebuffed me and said that Steven seemed like a fine young man and that whatever thing that happened when we were drinking didn't matter and that the child would never know that I was his father.

I begged them and explained that it wasn't while we were drinking and told them that I genuinely couldn't remember what had happened. I was someone they knew forever and I thought they would believe me. I realized that I wasn't getting through to them and was going to leave, but they insisted that I come inside. They had a memory kit waiting for me and told me that I would stay, say congratulations to Vanessa, shake Steven's hand, and leave. I was terrified - I didn't want him to know that I had come. He was the whole reason I didn't bring my phone with me.

They brought me inside and took out a memory kit. I told them that drug was involved in whatever happened but they ignored me and made me take a dose. They threw out the gift, telling me that I would have no influence on the child's life. They made me wait for Vanessa to arrive and I hugged her, said congratulations, and shook Steven's hand then left.

#

I was at my apartment when I received a text message from my mother telling me that Vanessa was there with a baby. I didn't recall anything at that point but some part of me wondered if I was the father. I told Heather that I had to go to my parents for a family emergency.

When I got to my parents, it was dusk. I came in through the back entrance and was greeted by my parents who told me that Vanessa was there. She was on the front porch in hospital clothes holding a newborn baby. She told me that he was my son.

At first I asked her how that was possible but realized pretty much immediately that she had no reason to lie to me and she had clearly gone through an ordeal to get to my parents' house. I told her that I didn't remember how it had happened but if she said he was my son, then he was my son.

She said that one of the drugs they gave her during the birth had triggered recall of the memory of everything that had happened. Because she remembered and wanted to leave him, Steven was going to send her somewhere, to in effect, keep her a prisoner through the CIA while she raised the boy. She didn't want to go and she didn't even want to be with him anymore because of what he had done. She came to me because she trusted me and as the father I might be able to do something.

My parents didn't seem to indicate that they knew anything about the CIA other than as a government agency. I knew that once they did come, they would have drugs to make them talk that I could somewhat resist. I told Vanessa that they likely tracked her here by her phone, so we would have to get her and our son somewhere safe that they wouldn't think to check. I figured that it was unlikely that they would check in all the houses in the neighborhood, so I walked with her up the block to the house of John and Jean Chambers, the parents of one of my childhood best friends.

I explained to them that she was running from a bad situation and that if they could keep her safe for a couple of days, I would come for her and our son and get her further away. They were surprised but welcomed her in and helped get her warm. I walked back to my parents and the CIA arrived shortly after.

They drugged me and I bluffed that I had no idea where Vanessa was and that she left her phone with us and got in a white car and left. They said that they picked up the friend with the car at the on-ramp for the New York State Thruway and I told them that meant that she could be anywhere between there and here and they'd have to check everywhere. As they questioned me, one of them got a radio message that they had found them. I deflated, feeling that I had failed them.

Sitting up on the front steps of my parents' porch, I was approached by a woman with short hair. I recognized her as the same woman who I had spoken with in the aftermath of the Cambey Wedding shooting. She introduced herself as a person who was there to analyze what had gone wrong. I told her that the boy wasn't even Steven's son - that he was my son and that Vanessa had remembered and was going to be locked away for it. The woman said that information was useful and while he wouldn't be demoted, the CIA would likely give Vanessa the farm and give them couples counseling and a divorce, if that was what she wanted. I wouldn't be allowed to see my son, but Vanessa would at least be closer to freedom.

They checked their devices and determined that my mother and I would both be drugged, but not my father. After they drugged me, I asked him why. He said that he sold heroin in Black and Puerto Rican neighborhoods in the 70's for the CIA. He didn't elaborate on his role within the organization or our family's connection at that time.

Around two months later, on October 28th, they made a post on social media about the birth of the child, and because I didn't remember any previous interactions I took that date as the actual birthday.

Chapter Thirty-One

2019

I went to a World Inferno show and was surprised to see Ralph there as he hadn't RSVP'd on the Facebook event like I had seen him do for the recent Jersey City show at White Eagle Hall. I didn't recognize Paige, so I introduced myself to her. She said that we had met before and that she had given me something to drink. She asked me what it was.

I initially cracked a joke about it being something that affected my memory but she didn't visibly react. I then said that if it wasn't alcoholic, it would have been either diet soda or water. She seemed satisfied by my answer to which I replied that was good. I didn't ant her to dump my body in a river or something.

She looked concerned when I said that and asked me why I would phrase it in that way. I said that there was a river nearby but I remembered that she had said that to me nearly a decade ago. Ralph offered me a drink and said that they wanted to ask me questions about something. The drug should work in a way that past uses would also be erased from my mind.

I drank it and Ralph took me aside. He wanted to know if I had any insights into Claire Saffitz, who had recently started dating Harris. Apparently, she had been at one of her favorite restaurants and pretty much took him home after his shift in the kitchen one night. I wasn't clear as to why he was asking me. He reminded me that I had hooked up with Claire around a decade prior.

I told him from what I remembered it seemed like Claire wanted to have something for herself. If the CIA was as overbearing on her as they had been, her taking home Harris was an act of rebellion against them. She knew what she wanted and so she took it. Ralph said that the CIA's concern was that he wasn't an asset they controlled and they weren't sure if he was being influenced by foreign powers. I told him that I doubted he was being influenced and their best bet was to keep her happy by letting her do what she wanted.

He shared with me that Claire had asked for guarantees that I was alive after the walk-in freezer incident. It had been tough for the CI to provide proof of life since I rarely posted photos on Facebook.

Ralph also mentioned that he was engaged now and that I knew what that meant. I pretended to not and that I knew what that meant. I pretended to not and replied with something about his whole life being stretched out ahead of him. He seemed disappointed, but didn't push the conversation. They left shortly after.

#

I had a brief conversation with Diane Cuellar about this the following workday. She said that it was probably nothing to worry about and that agents like to check in from time to time. She mentioned that they had access to a safe house if I ever needed protection as part of my employment there.

#

I received a text message late at night with a picture of my son from Vanessa. She then called me shortly after to confirm that he was mine. I took some time to talk with her and process the information. The call was relatively short, I don't recall if it was prematurely ended.

Around a half hour later, there was a knock at the door. It was Kevin Meyer, who was there to drug me because both people on the call were supposed to be drugged. This was my first time meeting him - he mentioned that he was a therapist and asked to talk to me for a bit as the drug took effect. He came inside and I opened a beer to have with the drug.

Vanessa and I had discussed a gift of Star Trek pez dispensers on the phone. I think that I said that they were Star Wars ones as a test to see if she remembered what she had really gotten me or as a warning that the line wasn't secure. Kevin asked me about that and I told him. When I told him that it would be hard for me to forget that I was a father he told me to appreciate what I had.

#

Shortly after the visit at the WIFS show, I was at the Doylestown apartment setting up furniture when I head the doorbell. It was Paige, who I didn't recognize at first but eventually did. I asked if Ralph was with her and she said that he wasn't. I said that I didn't want to meet with a friend's girlfriend alone, but she said that it was fine. She was on her way to take care of some things in Washington DC and wanted to talk with me, so I relented and invited her in.

She asked for a tour and so I showed her around. When we got upstairs, I said that was where I would be working remotely. At that point I recalled that Cambey & West was for people affected by the CIA and mentioned that and she seemed satisfied and said, "So you do remember."

I said yes, that I remembered bits and pieces but that I really didn't want to remember anything that I wasn't supposed to. I tried to assure her that I wouldn't be telling anyone. I don't know if she believed me, but she left.

A few days later, she returned with a male agent and a form. At first I only let Paige in but they said that both would need to enter to have the conversation. The form was a contract stating that all of my assets would be seized if I ever disclosed anything about the CIA to anyone. I asked if this was enforceable and then immediately replied of course it was. After signing it, I was given a vial to split with Heather so that I wouldn't remember.

In the conversation held prior to taking the vial, I also asked if they were interested in recruiting for the game industry and she said that I would have to kill someone if I did. I replied that I couldn't do that. I did offer to react to Ralph killing Trump on social media, but that wasn't part of their planned narrative. I told her I'd rather he not but if he did, he did.

A few days later, Paige returned. I was surprised to see her again so recently since I had signed the form. She said that I wasn't in danger but that she wanted to talk to me about Ralph because she was having trouble. She asked for a restaurant suggestion and I suggested either Panera or Bacco Bistro. She invited me to her car and as soon as I sat down, she jabbed me in the left thigh with a needle. I told her that she was like a cat but she said that she saw herself as more of a scorpion. She drove us to Bacco and we took a table near the back. I ordered an eggplant parm, she ate the fried dough appetizer - she said that they reminded her of zeppolis.

She said that she was having trouble convincing Ralph to undertake his assignment. The Last Jedi line about winning by saving what you love had resonated with him. I told her that, full disclosure, I felt the same way about it. We were approached by a waiter asking if there was something shady about what we were discussing and I replied that it was about boyfriend trouble. Paige quickly "clarified" that it was about my boyfriend. When he left us alone, she said that she was going to be all over the news in a few months and didn't want him to remember her face.

I asked her what would happen if she and him ran and she seemed to consider this before dismissing the notion. I told her that Diane had access to safe houses, but that they were probably not usable by her and Ralph. I then mentioned that I had a friend who had been in hiding from the CIA and who had moved to Brooklyn when Paige stopped me and said that sounded familiar. She told me to try to remember where she was originally and I said New Brunswick and the friend was Anastasia. She recalled that she had put me on that assignment. She then dismissed the possibility, she couldn't live like that even if it was possible.

She mentioned that Ralph had made a lot of his thoughts about the potential assassination about his niece and not wanting to make the world worse for her. I asked her if she thought about using that relationship in some way, not hurting her but using her or his feelings for her as leverage. She was shocked that I would suggest that - it was clear that she saw something of herself in the child. I apologized, but she said that it did give her an idea as to how to approach the issue.

At that point, the conversation turned to me remembered about being hunted by Tom Hanks and other aspects of my previous interactions with the CIA. I told her that Music, the Eastern Architect, was allowing those kind of activities to happen and he even had a scale model of the Amistad - showing that he really didn't consider black people to be people. I told her that the people who had run the hunt used hyocine and she said that a lot of groups did.

I tried a different tack - telling her that from what I knew about the structure of the CIA it was divided into three districts - or gaus - and there were around 70 listening stations - the same number of divisions as the German American Bund. She said that lots of groups had structures like that. She also mentioned that she was aware of other "countries" within the US, so it's likely that some knowledge of the

Reich's existence is part of training.

I then had the revelation that I had a son with Vanessa. I recalled the helicopters searching the area on the night she had made her escape from the hospital and that it was a station chief that had me impregnate her. She asked me if the agency knew and I said that they had to know, since they used their resources to track her down. I hadn't heard from Vanessa since then. She said that she would look into it.

At that point, she suggested that I go to the grocery store for a bit and I did. I forgot pretty much everything that had happened until the waiter, who had asked if we were criminals stopped me near the entrance of Acme. He said that Paige had made everyone except for some of the back of house staff drink from a pitcher she had drugged. He asked what it was and I said that it would make him forget what had happened. He said that he had made a voice memo which I suggested that he delete. He also gave me his number.

When I got back, it was over an hour and a half later. Diane called me about something and I mentioned that an agent had visited me, so she told me to take the rest of the day off.

#

On a Saturday while Heather was at work, a woman came to my door and told me it was about my son. She told me to tell

Heather that there was a family emergency and to leave my phone there. I left with her and asked her for some proof that I wasn't about to die. She let me call Rick and Margie who had been told to say that I was with them. She then said to not push my cover too hard or it would break.

It was around an hour drive, maybe less. Vanessa was waiting for me on the porch. I was surprised that she remembered everything as I had been told that she was going to be drugged. She said that she hadn't really been wiped yet but she was currently drugged. We spent the rest of the day spending time with each other and I tried to get to know our son but he was a bit shy and she told me to say that I was a friend of hers because he wasn't allowed to know me as his father.

One thing that I learned there was that Jean had visited. There was a picture of Vanessa along with Jean and Steven's mother. I froze when I saw it and asked her about it. She said that she said that she was Steven's grandmother and that her name was Jean, but she didn't think it was possible that she was the same Jean.

We went to her bedroom and had sex and talked for the rest of the evening. I remembered that she was amazing at remembering directions, so I gave her public transportation instructions to my apartment and wrote the apartment number on a scrap of paper that I hid behind the photo. If she ever needed to escape, she had directions.

She said that she was mostly happy there so far. The CIA had forced her parents to sell their house and move in with her after her escape attempt after our son's birth. She was responsible for planning the crops and determining what to grow where.

I spent the night and the next morning made a failed attempt at scrambled eggs. The same woman brought me back to the Doylestown apartment after. She confiscated any paper I had written things down on and privately told me that I should keep some sort of journal.

#

After meeting with Paige at Bacco's and my visit to Vanessa seeing the picture of Jean, I knew that I had to confront her. I called her early in the week and suggested that I come down for a visit and cook them a nice vegetarian meal with a "meat" sauce based off Malvina's recipe. They agreed and I booked my flight for later that week.

I don't recall which airline I flew down with, but when I got to the terminal, I was greeted by a driver. I asked when I went with him if he was a limo service and he gave me a noncommittal answer. After I arrived at their house, I put my bag in the center room and walked over to a grocery store for the ingredients I needed. When I came back and started cooking, they were gone for a bit of time which gave me an opportunity to case the joint.

I checked the refrigerator and cabinets, not finding anything. Then, I went to Jean's room and checked the TV stand. There were rows and rows of vials. My stomach tightened. I knew what I needed to do. I grabbed four of them and made my way to the kitchen. I pulled out the blender, ice, and campari and made a mixed drink along the lines of a Negroni with the drug and a couple of splashes of gin for flavor. I left it in the pitcher and put the empty vials in the empty bags from the Gardein meatballs I had used. I shoved it down into the garbage.

I suddenly remembered that Richie slept with his Navy side-arm under his pillow, so I rushed to his room and carefully lifted it by the bottom and kept it pointed at the ground. I slid it under the liquor cabinet just as Jean and Richie returned.

The table was set and I served the food. Then, and I was careful to do this in full sight of Jean, I poured the contents of the blender into three glasses equally. When we sat down. I made a big show of drinking mine. I ate and made small talk and waited for them to drink, and they did. I knew more or less how the drug affected me, so I was able to retain control.

I asked them how they felt and Jean replied that she was light-headed and asked me if I put anything in the food. I replied no, but I did put something in the drinks. She was shocked, stating that I drank it too. I nodded, then took another swig. I replied that I liked to party and I assumed that came from her side of the family, recalling the man from the OTO who said that I was either descended from Goebbels or Hitler. I remembered Stephen Miller and the book.

I told her that the CIA had been following me around my whole life and I needed answers as to why. I had remembered asking them in 2005 and how they drugged me then. Jean asked me what I expected to get and I said that I would question them both, then leave and let them forget. Jean said that I hadn't considered the fact that the place was wired up, gesturing to the intercom system on the wall behind me.

I asked her how long I had and she replied a half hour, immediately after which she questioned why she answered me, as that was her only leverage. I asked her if she had ever been on the drug and she said no. I replied that she would have to tell the truth and it was very effective at getting to that.

Richie said that he needed to go to the bathroom and I replied that there was a garbage can in the corner. He then said that he could hold it. I told him that it sounded like he didn't really need to go. He replied that he was an old man and he didn't want to be put through the indignity of that at which I allowed him to use the bathroom in the hall. He did, while I waited. I turned back to the dining room.

A couple minutes later, he came back from the hall asking what I did with it. I asked if he meant his gun and he said yes and I replied that it was somewhere safe. He insisted on knowing where it was and told me that I didn't know how to handle a gun. I humored him and told him exactly where it was and he seemed somewhat satisfied.

I told both of them that I didn't want anyone to get hurt and Jean said that she couldn't guarantee that. I told her that my heart sank when I found the drugs and that I loved them and just needed answers. Jean said fine, that I would have to learn about it eventually but I should have just asked. She struggled to compose herself and began to speak.

"My father," she paused, "was Adolf Hitler." My immediate reply was that it wasn't possible. Then I realized that she couldn't knowingly lie. It was her first time being drugged and she hadn't been able to resist it before. I had assumed that he died in 1945 as history books recorded but she said no, that was American propaganda. I asked if he was still alive and she replied that he died in the 70's. I processed this information for a moment.

I asked her how the CIA came into this. She said that the UK had been defeated after the blitz and a surrender had been negotiated. Around the same time, FDR's doctor had poisoned him and, after his death, the Reich called Harry Truman and had Dwight Eisenhower negotiate the full and unconditional surrender of the United States of America. In the years following the war, the CIA was established as the agency through which the Reich would act through. The other post-war departments were also part of the Reich's design.

As she spoke, I used my cell phone to look up the things that she was talking about. I also tried to remember things I had frogotten so that I could directly or indirectly question her. My recall of historical events was somewhat disjointed. I forgot the year in which World War 2 had ended. My recollections that follow are roughly in the same order in which the events occurred

As it sunk in that this was real, I began to ask direct questions.

"Are there aliens?"

"If there are, they haven't reached out to us."

I pressed her for more information and she claimed that they had seen signs of things in the upper atmosphere but they had never been able to launch something close enough to see it. I don't recall if I asked about Roswell but I remembered that when I was a child she confirmed that was a crashed Soviet flight using genetically engineered children as the pilots. The genetic engineering dimension was why the crash was covered up - they didn't want people to realize what could be done with such methods.

I asked if Heather's new job had anything to do with her, as it was sudden and higher paying that anything she had been offered in the past. She dismissively said that Heather's job wasn't "real". I asked if that meant that Heather was drugged at work or in on it but she clarified that it was mostly work that was mostly clerical in nature. She said that Heather was fired from her previous job because she was a klutz. I asked if she would have opportunities there and she said of course, she wanted to see her succeed because she was her blood. She said that the founder was someone who helped them develop genetic testing.

I asked her if by blood she meant because she and I were married. She said no. I asked if she meant because she lived in America and was white. Again, no. She then clarified that Heather was one of thousands of children created in a lab using her eggs and Tony's sperm and I was, too. She told me that when Hitler was crowned king or emperor or whatever, the Reich used various means to spread their genetic material in an assertion of victory. The people would be their genetic descendants and would, in their hopes, think similarly to them.

I asked if Heather knew about any of this. She said that she was my handler at one point but stopped - I recalled the phone call after I found her memory wipe kit. She was wiped and didn't seem to have any recollection. I asked her if they had done something similar with Hitler's sperm but she said that unfortunately, they hadn't collected any genetic material from him before his death. I asked her if she had any brothers or sisters and she confirmed that I met them.

I recalled Aunt Angela watching Golden Girls on the couch and realized in shock that she was Angela Merkel - widely seen as the most steady and progressive politician in the Western world. I asked her the others and she said Vladimir Putin, Boris Johnson, and a name I can't recall. The last one she said is in Germany in the medical wing of the government. I had met them at a memorial for their brother who had died of a heart attack in the 90's.

I questioned why Merkel was seen as progressive and Jean dismissed that as just an act. She was just a better politician than her. I asked her why she wasn't running things here, then and Jean said that she wasn't a citizen. She said that they were all born to people who supported their ideology. She also said that there were many others but the recognized Six were part of an "organ" called the Seven Headed Dragon, along with their father. Their goal was to destroy all the nations of the Earth and replace them with an eternal Reich.

I asked about Putin, if that meant that the whole Cold War was a hoax. She said no, that was real and he helped them win it. I asked about Boris Johnson, who I had the impression wasn't in a position to help anyone win anything - she said that they were helping him and expected him to be the next Prime Minister.

I asked about an article I found on my phone about a bank account in Switzerland that could be claimed by an heir to Hitler. She said that it was a trap set to draw in any children that they didn't know about. I asked her if there were other leaks, after seeing that Merkel was speculated online to be Hitler's daughter. She said that there had been a few recently. She mentioned that Eva Braun's underwear had ended up in a thrift shop in Ohio. A video had also leaked of CERN sacrificing a child that they had given them. She also said that one of the house staff at his home had leaked a photo of his corpse in 1974.

#

gettyimages
Kurt Hutton
3301370

#

I asked when he died and what happened to Eva Braun. She said that he died overnight between September 8th and 9th in 1974. The Reich held a day of mourning on September 11th. Many of the men, including Ernest Handwerker, joined the Elk's Clubs and there was mourning in the Reich. She said that she hated Eva Braun because she always insisted on being called mother and made her do chores, so when her father died, she drugged her and dropped her off in a city with nothing but the clothes on her back. She said that she was wearing a sweater.

I asked about the Reich and its locations. She said that Hitler had lived in Centerville on an island in the middle of town. When they were choosing a location for the Reich's capital, he wanted something in the middle of America. There was also a nearby historical site that the Reich associated with a snake cult that they believed was ancient and global.

On the smaller island in Centerville, there was a statue of Hitler surrounded by German children. She said that there were Reich towns all across America, mostly in the Midwest and mostly in the shadow of larger cities. She referenced an incident where I found on Encarta Atlas that Rhine was one of the most common street names in America by saying there were as many Reich towns as there were streets by that name.

I pulled up the items sh mentioned on my phone as we talked. The CERN video was clearly real - she explained that they said that it was a prank and, importantly, referred to the sacrifice as a woman even though it was clearly a child. They covered it up by claiming it was a prank and only firing the man who took the video. The picture of dead Hitler was easy enough to find and Vice had an article about Eva Braun's panties.

I asked about the cannibalism, not recalling my previous exposure to it. She said that they started to eat human flesh after their victory in the war. They had sacrificed hundreds or thousands of children in the 30's in an attempt to summon the Moonchild - her - and continued to do so for each of their spells. She said that they sacrificed 5 or 6 per year - one for each of the members of the dragon. They would also eat adults - usually enemies but sometimes just for fun. I knew that she killed more than that but didn't recall just how many.

I asked her if I was the Messiah - something one of the Thelema adherents I had spoken to suggested. She said that it was up to her, that there were many candidates but she had the authority to name which one would be presented as such. I asked her if the children were considered as well and she said not really. So far, I was the only one of them to show any sign of potential divine powers. She claimed that she had them as well because she was the Moonchild.

She admonished me, saying that I hadn't been an angel either, bringing up the accused rape and later murder of Stacey Herbison. I protested, telling her that it wasn't intentional, that Seth had taken my words incorrectly, not recalling my mother's involvement. I recalled the judge and my parents' interference and recalled that he was the same judge that dismissed the charges against Rick. She also said that they had interfered with the investigation and had it quickly ruled a suicide.

She said that the judge had been in the Navy, so Richie had approached him for a favor. She said that they used people in the military to cover for things like that. Eva Braun's panties were another case where they brought in someone to cover for them.

I told her that I had found out about my youngest son. She said that they couldn't have found a better heir if they had tried - he had strong Bavarian genes from Vanessa. I asked her if she engineered the conception. She said no, that was all Steven's doing. I asked her if that meant that I could finally be a part of his life and she said no, I was never going to be a part of his life.

She then said that I was such a disappointment and asked me where she went wrong. I told her that having been raped didn't help. She said that there was nothing she could have done about that. I told her that I thought I turned out okay considering, but she dismissed me as someone voting for a "Socialist Jew".

I almost laughed at how she phrased it - she sounded more and more like a Nazi as the conversation went on. I asked her about the Nazis - why did they call themselves socialists, then? She said that it was only about consolidating power and ramping up production of military hardware to become powerful enough to invade their enemies.

I brought up Ralph and Paige and asked her to not have Ralph kill Trump. If she had to, she had an asteroid that she could put him in front of. She could achieve her ends without him dying. I considered him a friend and he had only signed up with the CIA to help his grandmother. I really tried to play up that angle. I said that it was a bit derivative to have a failed actor kill a President and she laughed at that and told me that was what she said when she first heard of the plan.

She said that she would consider that, or having him infected with coronavirus. I froze, then slowly asked her if that was going to be coming here. When Paige had told me about it, I was under the impression that it would only be in China and mostly a distraction rather than something that would kill a lot of people. She said no, it was going to be everywhere and the intent was to mostly kill people here. I asked how many - she said that worldwide they were aiming for around 10-11 million. She offered to infect Tom Hanks for me as a bit of revenge for him hunting me.

I asked her how, if it was basically the flu. She said that it was much nastier than that and they selected it because of how virulent and deadly it was. She said that it was airborne and they would use the mail and specifically Amazon to spread it. The workers wouldn't be allowed to take sufficient health precautions. I told her I doubted Bezos would agree with that and she said that he would do anything they tell him to do, he has his yacht and his billions.

I asked why people couldn't just go to the hospital with a bad case - she said that they would, but hospitals would be quickly overwhelmed. The biggest bottleneck based off of their projections was a lack of ventilators. Most hospitals only have a few, but not even the biggest hospitals would have enough to keep up with demand.

She said that the first wave would kill hundreds of thousands before the government would act. She said that at first, they would tell people that the economy had to remain open because it was the nation's lifeblood. I expressed disbelief that people would buy that excuse. She said that they expected people to protest and with Congress unlikely to provide assistance, people would start getting evicted.

Then, she went on, they would spread a video of a black man being killed to stoke racial tension and spark further protests. I asked her if they were going to kill someone and she said no, they would just amplify a video they would have otherwise suppressed. I asked what they would do if people were staying inside and not interacting with cops and she said that they would let Derek Chauvin - she actually named him - kill a man named Floyd who he worked with. I asked if Floyd was a first or last name and she indicated that she didn't know or care. She also mentioned spreading videos of Elijah McClain.

I asked her what would happen if they couldn't stop the protests. She said that they would crack down on them heavily but she expected them to end when Chadwick Boseman died. I asked if they were going to kill him too, but she said that he had cancer and was projected to die in the Summer.

I suggested that I might be able to take on the role she had planned for me. She said that it was too late, I would have to kill someone and when she set me up to kill Mike, I refused to. She then said that if I killed someone I know, she would be willing to let me be a part of my son's life. I agreed, even though I knew that I wouldn't be able to go through with it. I wanted to see what they would do.

She asked me for a name and I initially said my father, but she obviously refused that. She told me to think of a friend, maybe one who was trans, and the first name that came to mind was Sheena Riotta, who she made a call to have kidnapped and brought to Florida.

There was also an earlier section of the conversation where we discussed the children. She said that her own children all had different fathers, with Rick's being Anthony Hopkins. She said that they were sixteen and on a date at a movie theater, he was in the army at the time.

I also recall being disgusted that she forced Margie to have a miscarriage and tricked her into using the IVF company that created the cuckoos.

I asked her how the asteroid tied in to this as Paige described the lockdowns as intended to keep people safe from the fallout of that. She said that it was perfect and came close to her father's birthday. She told me that their scientists had told her that while the orbit didn't look dangerous, it would hit something called a keyhole which would bring it into a potential collision course. I looked up the concept of the keyhole on my phone.

She said that she had a vision around the late 90's of an asteroid causing a tsunami. She then called the scientist and had them check. They said that they didn't have anything on their logs that could potentially hit so she had them check again. That was when they came back to her with the keyhole story. I told her that the keyhole of an orbit was impossible predict and that it sounded like they told her what she wanted to hear. She said that they wouldn't do that. I asked if Deep Impact or Armageddon were CIA films and she said no. I speculated that she just saw the trailer for Deep Impact in passing and her vision was just a dream.

She said that if the asteroid didn't hit, they had an explanation ready for agents aware of it. Johns Hopkins University was working with them and the CIA would float a rumor that they had deflected the asteroid. They would then tell them that they projected that it would do too much harm and that was why they had deflected it rather than allowing it to hit.

I asked about how this would affect the election. She said that the reaction would be split and they had narratives planned around that. For the left, they came up with the slogan "Boomer Remover" which they predicted would gain traction and make them look bad. For the night, they would dismiss it as "just the flu" and treat it as such. They expected the deaths to mostly be older, skewing conservative. I asked why they would kill off their voters and she said that they were Republican voters, not Reich. They expected vote turnout to be low because of the virus, which would cement a Republican win due to the extreme gerrymandering and voter suppression efforts. She said that whatever happened, they would do their best to pressure states into calling races early and sowing as much disinformation as possible. She said that their preference would be a Republican, but they would let a Democrat win if that ended up being the most believable result based off the votes.

The discussion turned to other questions I had about the coup that put Hitler in power and how the CIA functioned. She said that he was invited by JP Morgan and several other prominent Americans to run the country in the same matter he did Germany. The plot was uncovered by Smedley Butler and John Spivak but suppressed by the Dickstein Comittee, later the House Unamerican Affairs Committee. Spivak leaked the uncensored minutes in his paper The New Masses but no one believed him. The HUAC was later used to fight the enemies of the Reich in a bastardization of its original purpose of fighting fascist groups.

Aleister Crowley had separately spoken with Hitler at the behest of Martha Kuntzel as he was convinced that he was "the coming man". Though their hidden history characterizes Crowley as a collaborator, it was likely Kuntzel who later stole Crowley's papers on the summoning of the Moonchild from the cave where he he kept them. Kuntzel used rituals based off of Crowley's sex magick, using live children in place of the symbolic bud sacrifices. Though both played a part in founding the religion of Thelema, it was Kuntzel who dictated Will above Love while Crowley believed in Love above Will.

Her parents were both involved in the Friends of New Germany and later the German American Bund. They visited Germany in the early 30's and took part in sex rituals to "summon" the Moonchild. They were also ardent Nazis.

#

Der Stürmer
Der Stürmer

#

They believed that the Moonchild would be born in Cancer as an en cal birth. While Jean was born early - just prior to the cusp - she was an en cal birth. Though such a birth is easily induced with certain teas and drugs, they took it as a win and named her Jeanne Claire, giving her the initials JC - a mark of their hopes upon her to be their messiah.

She claimed that Crowley orchestrated the sacrifices and rituals at the Nazis behest. Between that and the Germany he saw rise from his efforts, he fled, stole Martha Kuntzel's papers and spend the rest of his life trying to fix his mistake.

The Reich continued to work with another group that adhered to Kuntzel's brand of Thelema and that church is still active in Europe and South America. The Vatican is also aware of the Reich - Jean told me that she could make me a Cardinal or a Bishop if I wanted to be. She claimed that the Reich is also in control of a large portion of Hollywood and the media landscape, especially acting through the CIA.

One example of that total control over messaging she recounted was the death of Naya Rivera. She had died of an overdose in Fall 2018, but rather than allow that narrative to be reported on, they suppressed the news of her death and concocted a convoluted narrative based off earlier photos of a lake trip with her son. They also took photos of actors "mourning" her from a distance to pass off as her co-stars from Glee. Her son has lived with her mother since the death. To keep up appearances, the CIA sent donuts and coffee to a rehab group in her name to make it look like she got clean.

She also said that most of what ended up in tabloids were stories that they failed to suppress in time. An example she gave was Patton Oswalt murdering his wife. She said there was a process for him to "request" a new wife, but he wanted to "give her a murder to solve" a sick reference to her work attempting to track down the Golden Gate Killer.

She also gave Cobra Kai as an example of a CIA production. When I was a kid I liked the Karate Kid movies and she had at least one produced specifically at my request. She said that Ralph Macchio was already in is 20's and no longer a kid, but if they ever brought the character back, she wanted him to be a car salesman. The character of Kreese was brought back to portray how agents were trained - there was a scene where the dojo was split in two and told to fight in the woods until only one team remained. In the CIA exercise it was literally a battle to the death.

We discussed other TV shows and movies and what kind of messaging they had. She said that they hated It's A Wonderful Life because it was produced prior to their "deal" with the US government and contained messaging that they disagreed with. They tried to suppress it, but when it came into the public domain that became impossible.

She told me that every year, around Hitler's birthday, April 20th, they attempted some action in honor of him. I looked up several on my phone and quizzed her on them. She denied any involvement in Columbine, but claimed her father would have loved that. She did confirm that a Reich agent had caused Chernobyl and that Waco, while not planned, came close enough that they moved the forces in to escalate. I questioned her about other events and she also confirmed that the CIA had been behind the Boston Marathon bombing, telling the older brother that they backed their country and that this was a sanctioned act. She also said that they were behind Charles

Manson and the Tate murder - it was an attempt to start a race war.

I didn't ask her directly about her involvement with 9/11 because I remembered Alan's visit and I didn't want to tip her off that I already knew the CIA was behind it. I asked if they were involved in the Sandy Hook shooting since it fell on my birthday, but she denied any involvement. As we were sitting and waiting, however, I thought about coronavirus and how it was supposed to "jump" to humans and had a terrible realization.

I chose my words carefully, asking as casually as possible if, based off how the crossover occurred, if they had anything to do with HIV/AIDS. She said that it was because "they" were always walking around like they owned the place. I replied that I wasn't aware of a large gay population in the 60's or 70's that was open, assuming that was who she was referring to. She corrected me - the disease was targeted at the population of Haiti.

It was one of her father's last major "gifts" to the world. They had sent multiple infectees out into the population but hadn't projected a spread outside of Haiti. She went on to say that many of the Reich's attacks took the form of diseases and blights. They primarily infected crops and livestock, which they used to manipulate markets and inflict damage on enemies.

Eventually, they brought in Sheena, who had been abducted from Brooklyn and flown down directly. I was given a gun and told to kill her, which would allow for me to be a part of my son's life as I had already abdicated my role as heir to the Reich. I shot the pillow, setting aside the gun and asking for her life to be spared. It was and she was sent back to her home. I was drugged and sent back to my parents' house.

The discussion lasted for around two hours total and I asked her questions about everything I could think of. The answers escape me at the moment.

Chapter Thirty-Two

2020

Chapter Thirty-Three

2021

THE SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL

THE NAZIS' INCREDIBLE SECRET TECHNOLOGY

Joseph P. Farrell

SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL

NASA'S NAZIS, JFK AND MAJIC-12

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

SS BROTHERHOOD
OF THE BELL

Adventures Unlimited Press

SS Brotherhood of the Bell

Copyright 2006
by Joseph P. Farrell

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL

NASA'S NAZIS, JFK AND MAJIC-12

Joseph P. Farrell

Acknowledgements

Many people have made this book possible. I would like to thank first my friend Richard E Wood, BSC, for assistance and research he undertook at my request on the internet for certain items that appear here and, hopefully, will appear in a subsequent book. I am also profoundly grateful to Mr. Igor Witkowski for such quick and timely answers to my inquiries, and for allowing me to use some of the many photos that appear in his excellent book, The Truth About the Wunderwaffe. I would also like to thank him for first breaking the story of the Bell, which may be the most important story of suppressed science and technology in the 20th century. I hope that my own book will stimulate interest in Mr. Witkowski's superb research in his The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.

I'd also like to thank Mr. Henry Stevens of the German Research Project and author of Hitler's Flying Saucers, for loaning me a copy of the story recounted on pages 181 and 182 here. I believe that this story may be the first account of the Bell's operation and test environs, and I am very grateful to Mr. Stevens for bringing it to my attention. Stevens, like Witkowski, has been a tireless researcher into the realm of exotic Nazi technology and more importantly has kept alive the Nazi origin of some UFOs through his voluminous research.

And as always, thanks to my publisher David Childress, especially for being there when it counted.

Finally and most importantly, thanks to my mother, who put up with me in her basement while I was writing this, during a difficult transition period in my life.

Table of Contents

Acknowledgements – x -
Preface – xi -

Part One: The "Background":
The "Race" to the Moon

Chapter 1: "In the Nick of Time" – 1 -

A. "We Can Still Lose This War" -3-
B. German Potential in Late 1944 Early 1945 -10-
  1. Papers for Paperclip: Project Lusty -10-
  2. Death Beneath the Seas: The Extraordinary Capabilities of the Type XXI U-Boat -13-
  3. Death in the Air: The Sound Barrier Too? -15-
  4. Death on the Ground: Weapons of Mass Destruction in Use by the German Army on the Eastern Front in 1941 -23-
  5. Beyond Nuclear and Thermonuclear Bombs: Indications of a New Physics -27-

Chapter 2: "The Peenemünde Problem" – 29 –

A. The U.S.A. Gets the Crème de la Crème – 30 –
B. The U.S.S.R.'s Early Space Achievements – 32 –
  1. Booster and Lift Capabilities – 33 –
  2. The First ICBMs and the Characteristic Russian "Bundle" Rocket – 36 –
C. What's Wrong with This Picture? – 37 –
D. The Real Origin of the Bundle Rocket: "Projekt Zossen" – 37 –

E. SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's "Evacuation" of Peenemünde and the Russian Arrival – 39 –
    1. Strange Events at an "Empty" Site – 39 –
    2. The "Urals Incident" – 42 –
F. Over-The-Horizon Radars and the Amerikaraket – 44 –
    1. The German "Proto-Transistor" and Television Miniaturization – 45 –
    2. The Problem of the Miniature German Klystron Tube: Roswell, the E.T. Myth and the Nazi Legend Revisited – 48 –
    3. Over the Horizon Radars – 50 –

Chapter 3: "From Russia with Love": The Two Space Programs Hypothesis – 54 –

A. The Two Space Program Hypothesis – 56 –
    1. The Torbitt Document Version – 56 –
    2. The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climate, and Archaeology Versions: – 67 –
        a. The Absurdist Versions – 67 –
        b. A Scientifically and Politically Plausible Version: The Hoagland Version – 68 –
    3. The "Alternative Three" Version – 69 –
    4. Fantasia in the Desert: The William Lyne Version – 81 –
        a. Public Consumption versus Occulted Aether Physics – 86 –
            (1) Lyne's History of Aether Physics – 89 –
            (2) Lyne's Version of Tesla Physics – 92 –
        b. The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression– 100–
            (1) Strange Nazi Parallels – 101 –
        c. The Nazi Role in Occulted Aether Physics – 101–
            (1) Roswell, MJ-12, and Disinformation – 101 -

            (2) Von Braun's Alleged Pre-War "P2" Project in New Mexico – 103 –
        5. *Both* Feet in Atlantis: The "Jan Van Helsing" Version – 104 –
        6. The *Dark Moon* Version – 115 –
- B. Conclusions and Speculations - 128 –
    1. The Torbitt Version – 129 –
    2. The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climatology and Archaeology Version – 129 –
    3. Jim Keith's *Casebook on Alternative Three* Version – 130 –
    4. The William Lyne Version – 131 –
    5. The "Jan Van Helsing" Version – 132 –
    6. The *Dark Moon* Version – 132 –
    7. Combining the Versions – 133 –
    8. Possible Entities and Requisites for Coordination – 135 –

Part Two: The "Bell": Nazis and Occulted Physics

Chapter 4: "Das Laternenträgerprojekt": The Bell and Igor Witkowski – 141 -

- A. Igor Witkowski on the Bell – 141 –
    1. The Significance of the Story of the Bell – 142 –
    2. An Obvious Question and a Not So Obvious Answer – 142 –
    3. The Personnel and a New SS Player on the Scene: The Forschugen, Entwicklungen, Patente – 144 –
        - a. SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw – 145 –
        - b. Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach – 148 –
        - c. The Mysterious Dr Elizabeth Adler – 152 –

        - d. Otto Ambros of Auschwitz "Buna" Factory Fame – 153 –
        - e. Dr. Kurt Debus – 155 –
            - (1) "*Kriegsentscheidend*" – 157 –
    - 4. Dr. Hermann Oberth Takes a Trip with some Friends – 159 –
- B. The Operation of the Bell and Its Effects: Witkowski's Reconstruction of the Bell – 162 –
    - 1. Where It All Happened – 162 –
    - 2. The History and Code-Names of the Project – 166 –
    - 3. The Last Flight of the Ju 390 – 167 –
    - 4. The Design of the Bell and its Effects in Operation – 171 –
    - 5. Witkowski's Reconstruction of its Possible Physics – 179 –
    - 6. A Story from the Neo-Nazi Fringe – 185 –
    - 7. Mercury Vortex Engines… Again – 188 –

Chapter 5: "Working in Fields of Physics that were Monstrous on a Daily Basis" – 192 –

- A. Strange Claims and Quotations: Indicators of Wartime German Research in "Scalar" Weapons – 192 –
    - 1. The "Artificial Rubies" Passage from the Farm Hall Transcripts – 193 –
    - 2. The Farm Hall Transcripts' Indications of a German Photochemical Process of Isotope Separation and Enrichment – 195 –
    - 3. Back to Roswell and the Majestic 12 Documents: Another Odd Corroboration of Possible Nazi Knowledge of Cold Fusion – 199 –
    - 4. A British Intelligence Agent's Statement on the Monstrous Areas of Physics being Developed by the Kammlerstab – 201 –

- B. Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics – 203 –
  - 1. Bearden on the State of Electromagnetic, or Electrodynamic, Theory, and the Elements of Scalar, or Quantum Potential, Physics – 207 –
    - a. Classical Electrodynamic Theory as a Perpetual Motion Machine – 207 –
    - b. What the Soviets (And Nazis) Found on Their Scavenger Hunt: E.T. Whittaker's Decomposition of Scalar Potentials into Bi-Directional Longitudinal Waves – 211 –
  - 2. Bearden's Claims for "Scalar" Physics and its Weaponization – 219 –
    - a. The Dangers of Scalar Resonance: Planet-Busting "Doomsday" Implications – 219 –
    - b. The Scalar Template and Weapons Applications – 221 –
  - 3. The Implications of Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics – 222 –
    - a. Back to "Freya" and "See-Elefant": The German Over-The-Horizon Radars – 229 –
    - b. An Odd Allied Intelligence Report Indicating the Nazi Operation of Scalar Weapons – 232 –
  - 4. Conclusions and a Post-War Scalar Postscript: the "Scalar Weapons" Nations and Germany – 236 –

Chapter 6: "For Whom the Bell Tolls": Scalar Physics, Zero Point Energy, and the Vorticular Aether: A Speculative Reconstruction of the Physics of the Bell – 242 –

- A. U.S. Declassified Patents from the Cold War and SDI – 242 –
  - 1. Enter the Mossbauer Effect – 245 –

B. Plasmas, Rotation, Pulses, and Zero Point Energy – 248 –
  1. Plasmas and Transmutation – 248 –
  2. Four Mysteries and Ion Oscillation – 250 –
  3. Paul Brown's Glow Plasma Oscillator – 250 –
  4. Non-Equilibrium Thermodynamics and Self-Organization – 252 –
  5. Oscillation of Plasmas and ZPE Coherence – 253 –
  6. Gray's Scalar Compression Tube – 254 –
  7. Counter-Rotating Electromagnetic Fields, ZPE Coherence, and Kontrabary – 255 –

C. The Vorticular Mechanics of the Aether: The Theories of O.C. Hilgenberg and Carl F. Krafft – 257 –

D. Back to Mercury Vortex Engines – 266 –

E. Speculations: The Bell as a Scalar Physics Device – 269 –

Chapter 7: "Gerlach's New Alchemy:" The Mysterious Serum 525 – 272 –

A. An Article in the Evening Newspaper – 272 -

B. Mercury Pyro-Antimonate, or Red Mercury (Mercury Antimony Oxide) – 278-
  1. Code-name DOVE - 278 –
  2. The .01 Kiloton Yield Pure Fusion Bomb: The Logic of Fusion Weapons Development – 283 –
    a. First Generation Weapons – 283 –
      (1) Radiological Weapons ("Dirty Bombs") – 283-
      (2) The Semi-Fission, or "Atomic Fizzle" Bomb – 283 –
      (3) The Pure Fission, or Atomic Bomb – 284 –
    b. Second Generation Weapons – 284 –
      (1) Boosted Fission Weapons – 284 –
      (2) Fission-Fsusion (-Fission) or Full Hydrogen Bombs – 285 –

            (3) The Neutron Bomb – 285 –
            (4) The “Salted” or “Doomsday” Bomb - 285 –
        c. Third Generation Weapons: The Pure Fusion, or Pure Hydrogen Bomb – 287 –
    3. The Red Mercury Legend, Recipe, and “Xerum 525” – 288 –
        a. The Red Mercury Legend – 288 –
        b. The Recipe and “Xerum 525” – 292 –
        c. Nuclear Isomers, Spin, GRASERS, and Gerlach – 294 –
C. Back to the Nazi Atom Bomb: The Implications of the Ohrdruf Test Reconsidered – 296 –
    1. The Claims for the Ohrdruf Test – 297 –
    2. The Implied Existence of a Reactor Technology: Hartek and Houtermann’s “Cold” Reactors and the “Recipe” – 302 –
D. Briefly Back to Roswell and MAJIC-12: General Nathan Twining’s “White Hot Intelligence Estimate” Reconsidered – 303 –
E. A Summary and Conclusions – 304 –

Part Three: The “Brotherhood”:
Nasa’s Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12

Chapter 8: “The Day After Corso”: More MAJIC 12 Documents in the Light of Nazi Technology – 311 –

A. MAJIC-12 Documentary Analysis – 315 –
    1. Document 1: Air Materials Command Secret Memo to Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, Sept 1947. – 318 –
        Analysis – 321 –
    2. Document 2: Analytical Report of Research and Development Laboratory of 2 September 1947 – 326 –
        Analysis – 329 –

3. Document 3: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper – 332 –
   Analysis – 333 –
4. Document 4: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper Concerning Privitization of MJ-12 – 334 –
   Analysis – 339 –
5. Document 5: Top Secret/Jehovah NSA Intercept: - 343 -
   Analysis – 345 –
6. Document 6: Annex C Fragment – 346 –
   Analysis – 347 –
7. Documents 7 and 8: Top Secret Memo of President Roosevelt to General Marshal, 27 February 1942; Double Top Secret Letter of FDR to General Marshall Feb 22/24, 1944 – 348 –
   Analysis – 350 –
8. Document 9: Recovered, Reconstructed, and Test-Flown "S" Aircraft and Paperclip Personnel Assistance – 351 –
   Analysis – 353 –
9. Document 10: Dr. Edward Teller's Pitch to President Reagan for the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI) – 354 –
   Analysis – 358 –
   Preliminary Scenario Assessment – 358 –
10. Document 12: The MAJIC-12 Bowen "Encyclopedia of Flying Saucers;" The Kammlerstab, and Nazi Saucers – 361 –
    Analysis – 370 –

B. The Day After Corso: An Examination of Corso's *The Day After Roswell* in the Light of the Cooper-Cantwheel Documents and German Wartime Technology – 374 –
   1. Corso on the Integrated Circuit and Transistor – 377 –

2. Lasers – 380 –
3. Fiber Optics – 381 –

Chapter 9: "Mae Brussellsprouts": Nazi Survival and JFK

– 385–

A. J.F.K's Policies – 386 –
B. Mae Brussel on Nazis and JFK – 389 –
  1. Her Thesis – 389 –
  2. Germans and Atsugi AFB, Japan: An Oswald Nazi Link – 390 –
  3. Gehlen and the Russian Orthodox Diaspora – 391 –
    a. Implication: The Infiltration of US Intelligence and Defense – 392 –
    b. Nazis and "the Rogue Element" In US Intelligence – 393 –
  4. Schacht-Onassis – 394 –
  5. Dulles-McCloy on the Warren Commission – 394 –
  6. A Review – 395 –
  7. South American Death Squads: The "Kinder, Gentler Gestapo" for Hire - 396 –
  8. George De Mohrenschildt – 398 –
  9. The Paines, The Oswalds, and General Dornberger – 399 –
  10. Martin Bormann and JFK - 399 –
  11. The "Octopus" Before the "Octopus": the Bunge Corporation Beats Danny Casolaro by Two Decades – 403 –
  12. More Odd Behavior and Connections: West German Chancellor Kurt Georg Kiesinger and Nixon – 411 –
D. The JFK Connection in Early MAJIC-12 Documents – 412 –

        1. Guy Bannister, UFOs, and JFK – 414 -
    E. The Magus of Ingolstadt – 415 –
        1. Bormann and Ingolstadt: A Connection to the Illuminati? – 416 –
            i. Bormann's Manipulation of Hitler – 417 –
            ii. Bormann's Surrender of the A-Bomb to the USA: The Hydrick Thesis – 419 –
            iii. Bormann's "Special Evacuation Command" and Kammler's Bell: the Nick Cook Thesis – 422 –
            iv. Continuation of Ultra-Black Projects and German "Independence" at White Sands and NASA – 423 –
    F. Skull and Bones and "Secret Germany" – 425 –
        1. 2004: Bonesman Bush versus Bonesman Kerry – 426 –
        2. Daddy and Dubya Bush: The RNC and the Eastern European Émigré Community – 426 –
        3. Secret Germany – 427 –
            d. The Hohenzollerns Become Grand Masters of the Order - 432 –
            b. Hitler's Only Known Initiation – 434 –
        E. Final Thoughts – 435 –

Chapter 10: "What is the Brotherhood of the Bell?" the Brotherhood of the Bell in History and Practice – 438 –
    A. Nick Redfern's FBI Documents on Nazis and UFOs – 443 –

Bibliography – 456 –

Preface

In the preface to my previous book on wartime German secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*, I mentioned my youthful reaction to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, and my perplexity with the subsequent findings of the Warren Commission and its "lone nut magic bullet" theory. I then proceeded to mention another curious anomaly of the history I had learned in school, namely, the fact that the U.S. military had not tested the uranium "shot-gun" atom bomb it had dropped on Hiroshima. The mention of those two odd events in that Preface was not accidental nor merely a whim, for the two events are not unrelated. Indeed, they are not even *loosely* unrelated, as there are direct threads – and in some cases whole cables – connecting both.

I am not the first author to draw attention to the pervasive Nazi connections lurking in the background of the JFK assassination, nor, I imagine, will I be the last. The well-known conspiracy theorist and JFK assassination researcher Mae Brussell was perhaps the first major "alternative researcher" to speak out about this aspect of the assassination. Others followed in her wake, adding a detail here or a story there, but it was Brussell who first courageously unearthed the most sensational details. Notwithstanding her ability to ferret out the detailed connections of conspiracy, however, even she managed to miss perhaps the most important lynch-pin connecting Nazis, the Roswell episode, and one possible motivation for the JFK assassination: Nazi *technology*.

However, to the average reader, even one predisposed to believe in some sort of conspiracy involved with the cold-blooded murder of President Kennedy, the idea that there is a Nazi connection must seem to stretch credulity. Even Brussell urged that to draw such connections would have been beyond the wildest yarn of Robert Ludlum, popular and well-known writer of espionage thrillers throughout the 1970s and 1980s. But to maintain a connection between all *that* and to Roswell, the establishment of the MAJIC-12 group, and indeed, the establishment of the whole "national security" intelligence apparatus of the U.S. government, would seem to stretch credulity to the snapping point. But that, indeed, is what I believe in part to be the case. And that case is what this book is, in part, about.

But here, as in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the focus is not only on the implications of Nazi survival and the possibility that its secret weapons projects were continued independently of any of the governments of the post-war world. We shall also continue the detailed comparison of the wartime development of exotic physics and technologies by the Nazis, with the technologies of "recovered craft" outlined in the MAJIC-12 documents that was begun in *Reich of the Black Sun,* for new documentary evidence has come to my attention since its publication, and this in turn compels further investigation, an investigation that was begun in chapters 16 and 17 of the previous book. As will be seen in the main body of this work, these documents almost nowhere evidence the type of contradictory data-sets encountered in the MAJIC-12 documents examined in *Reich of the Black Sun*, but rather, speak more directly to a terrestrial, though unknown, origin for the recovered craft. And in at least one instance, a MAJIC-12 document clearly points the finger to Nazi Germany, and even casts an aura of suspicion on the all-too-convenient death of General Patton. When these details are compared with the known developments of Nazi secret weapons research, the picture is quite disturbing. Even more disturbing is why such documents and their *terrestrial origin implications* continue to be ignored by the North American UFOlogy community.

As such, this book is, like the previous one, a book about the exotic weapons the Nazis were developing, but unlike the previous one, it is more about the underlying, and quite monstrous, physics they were developing as a basis for these weapons. Likewise, this book is also about *the implications of that physics and those weapons for recent politics and history*. As we shall see, this physics has strong ties with the "scalar" non-linear "electro-acoustic" waves and thinking developed first by Tesla, and subsequently elaborated by Nazi and Soviet physicists, and also to the type of physics I have posited was the basis underlying my three books on the Great Pyramid and the weapon hypothesis, *The Giza Death Star, The Giza Death Star Deployed,* and *The Giza*

Death Star Destroyed. The scientists and mathematicians in Nazi Germany that began the groundbreaking and revolutionary work in this type of physics were in the uttermost lofty reaches of the classification system of the SS. The group of scientists and engineers investigating this monstrous new physics and its implied technologies were an elite band, a "brotherhood" within the black brotherhood of the SS that I call simply "the SS Brotherhood of the Bell." Their credo, forced on some by the Nazi ideology and readily embraced by others, was the development of a whole new paradigm of physics, free of the constraints of relativity and "Jewish physics." And develop it they did.

It is therefore in the complex interface of history and technology that this book, like the previous one, lives. Therefore some may contrive to dismiss this work as even more speculative than its predecessor. In this respect, while always believing the Kennedy assassination to have been the work of a conspiracy, I myself came to entertain a possible Nazi involvement rather late, preferring, like most, to see a network of "coalescing interests" comprising the Mafia, disenchanted CIA and possibly FBI elements, and high-level business and banking interests as being behind it, united for a brief moment, to achieve a common and horrible goal. Certainly such elements, particularly in the murky connection between government and "big business" and, most importantly, "banking," would have the necessary clout and influence to maintain a cover-up down to our day. But the motivation for such an ongoing cover-up remains unclear.

Until one adds in Nazis and advanced technology that, in its benign aspect, promises an end to current energy technologies and the geopolitical order that they impose and threatens the complete upheaval of the global economic "order", and that, in its malevolent aspect, is black with the dark promise of truly planet-busting weapons utterly beyond the wildest thermonuclear fantasies of an Edward Teller or Andrei Sakharov. Add to this mix elements within the federal government running on the fumes of fear and in thrall to globalist corporate oligarchies intent on public suppression and secret development of alternative physics and energy systems, and one has a coalescence of interests that would have strong motivations for murdering a President who gave repeated signals that he was prepared to dismantle all of it, or at least bring significant parts of it out into the open.

Some may therefore dismiss this work as an exercise in paranoia, and perhaps it is. But given the history of *governments* in modern times, one can never be too paranoid. After all, *they* are. And as a lesson of paranoia with global ambitions, the Nazi regime of the Third Reich is without peer. It takes genuine crazed paranoia to lead a nation the size of the state of Texas to conquer Europe and wage war with most of the rest of the world for six years, and *then* to plan, in the midst of it all and with customary German thoroughness and organization, for a continuance of Nazism after the war. But it took likewise a paranoia without peer to dream of a physics with so much flexibility, not only with a potential planet-busting capability but also with an endless promise in the fields of energy and propulsion, and then to proceed to begin the theoretical and experimental spade work to bring that physics to practical and realizable weapons and propulsion systems. As this book avers, by the time of the German surrender, they had made sufficient progress in their work that it was continued by them after the war in a number of "host" countries, including the Soviet Union, South Africa, Japan, Brazil, and, yes, (West) Germany.

But there are other reasons that have made this sequel necessary. The first of these was my acquisition of some of the wartime papers of physicists mentioned in *Reich of the Black Sun.* Acquisition of these papers has caused me to correct certain inaccuracies in the previous book and has raised new questions. Secondly, the excellent series on Hitler's "victory weapons," German author Friedrich Georg's *Hitlers Siegeswaffen* series, has continued with the recent appearance, just last year, of his research into German long-range rocketry, guidance systems, and nascent space program. This research, placed in the wider context of SS projects in radical physics, raises new questions about the "Allied Legend" that were first raised in *Reich of the Black Sun*. Georg's research, as we shall see, also raises important questions not only regarding what was going on at Peenemünde in the final weeks of the war, but also important questions directly calling into question Lt. Col. Corso's account of the Roswell affair in his famous book *The Day After Roswell.*

Equally important, Polish military researcher Igor Witkowski's superb research into all aspects of German secret weapons has finally been published in a single volume in English entitled *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Needless to say, the material in Witkowski's book on the SS's most secret project, The Bell, greatly expands the amount of information available in English. The emergence of Witkowski's research in English would, in and of itself, require a sequel to *Reich of the Black Sun.* I therefore rely heavily on Witkowski's magisterial research in this work. Witkowski's research likewise also raises serious questions and doubts about Col. Corso's assertion that "ET" technology was gradually seeded into American industry after the Roswell incident. And of course, Witkowski's research forms the *essential foundation* for any examination of the Bell and the exotic physics it may represent.

As will be apparent in the main body of this work, however, I have cast the Bell and the physics it may represent in a very different interpretive and admittedly much more radical and speculative a context than does Witkowski. It seems to me that this was necessary both because of the type of *signature effects* it seemed to have, but also because of the indications that the Germans were investigating a type of physics called by various names, but which, following the suggestion of Tom Bearden's research into this subject, I have called "scalar" physics.

Such physics represents not only a new and efficient energy source, but also perhaps the ultimate power for destruction. Therefore, its continued and perhaps independent development by various criminal conspiracies and syndicates may indeed have been one of the penultimate factors and motivations in the assassination of President John F Kennedy.

Finally, Carter Plymton Hydrick's excellent research has finally been published in book form, *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb.* Since there are slight revisions in this work from the internet version I first relied on in *Reich of the Black Sun*, revisions that themselves compel new speculations – many from Hydrick himself – it seemed appropriate that this work was the best place to address some of these issues. In any case, Hydrick's work remains a standard in this alternative history of World War Two secret weapons that, like Witkowski's or Meyer and Mehner's research, simply cannot and must not be ignored by the serious inquirer into this suppressed and hidden history and science.

Finally, a word must be said about my own personal attitude towards and "philosophy" of UFOs, lest the contents of this book be taken to represent it *in toto*. First, I wish to make it abundantly clear that I am not philosophically opposed to the idea of extra-terrestrial life, nor, for that matter, to the idea of life-forms that inhabit "higher dimensions" or "planes of existence." That being said, I am similarly not opposed to the idea that such life forms may have visited, and may be visiting, the Earth. However, I am convinced, by a reading of various "contactee" and "abduction" reports, that much of this phenomenon is of a profoundly spiritual, and – dare I say it – evil nature.

With these broad remarks in mind, then what of actual UFOs? That is, what do I make of those reports that clearly indicate actual *advanced "craft"* themselves? While I am also convinced that there are many genuine reports, and even some even more stunning NASA space shuttle footage, by the same token, in but few cases do I personally detect a physics and performance signature that *compels* to any "extra-terrestrial", that is to say, extra-*solar* system origin for the phenomenon. I do not deny the extreme performance characteristics, only that in *most* cases the characteristics reported still fall short of anything practical for interstellar travel. Moreover, I fully realize that to connect *some* of the phenomena and documentary evidence to *Nazis* is a decidedly unpopular view in the UFOlogy community, over-populated as it is by any number of well-known names that push the ET hypothesis no matter what, and even when they should know better. They produce their documents, and argue quite persuasively for their authenticity, and then go on to argue on the basis of their contents that the ET hypothesis is the most plausible explanation for the "government UFO cover-up." And I do not deny the strength nor the cogency of their arguments. However, as I shall show, there are *other* documents that argue against that hypothesis, equally persuasively, that will never be mentioned by those well-known names at their conferences, for they clearly imply a "Nazi angle" to the story, even if "ET" is left in the picture.

By the same token, my use of the "Nazi Legend" to reinterpret the MAJIC-12 story and Colonel Corso's *The Day After Roswell* may be misunderstood as well. Accordingly, I do *not* believe the "Nazi Legend" explains all UFO sightings for the simple reason that there are far too many of them for this source to be the origin of all of them. It explains only a limited number of cases, during a limited time frame in selected locations. Likewise, it explains some of the motivations of those who suppress "the truth about UFOs" but certainly not *all* the motivations.

But however I attempt to limit misunderstandings, I nonetheless do not expect this book will have me invited to any UFO conferences any time in the near future, nor, for that matter, will it endear me to many practiced in the "esoteric sciences" for reasons that will become obvious in the main body of the work.

It thus only remains for the reader to judge if a solid *prima facie* case has been made for the largely speculative reconstruction that now follows.

Joseph P. Farrell
2005

Part One
"The Background":
The "Race" to the Moon

- *"The foundations for the grand space project were laid down during WWII.*
- *"This project was conceived and designed as a collaboration between two superpowers.*
- *"The Cold War was a convenient cover under which aspects of this project could be implemented and hidden."*

Mary Bennett and David S Percy,
Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers, p. 200.

1.

"In the Nick of Time"

"The methods and philosophies that the Nazi scientists brought with them resulted in serious breaches of U.S. security and the unthinkable horror of American soldiers being used as research guinea pigs in the same way that concentration camp prisoners had been used during the war."
Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990*[1]

"James Webb, NASA's second administrator, complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center. Rocco Petrone, who became the Marshall director in 1973, said that Webb felt the group needed to be more tightly controlled."[2]

On January 4th, 1945, U.S. General George S. Patton wrote a remarkable thing in his war diary: "We can still lose this war." It was a remarkable statement, especially since the last large German offensive of World War Two, the Battle of the Bulge, was all but finished, and the victorious Allied armies, like their Soviet counterparts in the East, were then poised to deal the final death blows to Hitler's crumbling Third Reich. Optimism prevailed at the Supreme Headquarters, Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF). For some reason, however, General "Blood and Guts" Patton, despite his well known public image of bravado and optimism, had serious private fears and reservations. The question is:

Why?

Why indeed, since on any conventional military appraisal, the German Reich was finished. It was only a matter of… time.

But even with the ill-fated German Ardennes offensive – the Battle of the Bulge – there is more than meets the eye when one adds in the thesis of my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun,* that the Nazis may have won the race for the atom bomb well ahead of the Manhattan Project. The objective of the German offensive was, according to the standard explanation, to break through thinly held American lines in the Ardennes, drive behind the Allied lines in

---

[1] Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), pp. 8-9.

[2] Ibid., p. 219.

Holland, seize the port of Antwerp, and thus not only drive a wedge between American and British forces, but also to cut the supply lines to British Field Marshal Sir Bernard Law Montgomery's armies in the Netherlands. But the standard explanation fails simply for the reason that the Allies would have been capable of using Dutch ports to supply the "trapped" armies. Thus, the end of the war presents, behind the "obvious" and "well known 'facts,'" yet another mystery. What *really* was the Nazi leadership trying to do, and why would it have caused such concern to General Patton to cause him to remark about it in his diary? British author Geoffrey Brooks pinpoints the hidden military and political reasoning that lay behind the Nazi offensive by raising precisely this question:

> Hitler's Luftwaffe ADC von Below remarked in his 1982 memoirs that even he could not understand why Hitler wanted to go to Antwerp – "a place that led nowhere."[3]

But the answer may lie in a curious order placed in German shipyards in the period leading up to the surprise German offensive, for an order for twenty-four "500-ton submersible barges able to transport and launch V-2 rockets" was placed at yards in Stettin and Elbing.[4] And London was just within range of the V-2 from Antwerp.

But the mystery does not yet end, for an offensive merely to resume the V-2 bombardment of England does not yet make sense. According to Brooks, one only *begins* to see the logic behind the German offensive by seeing it connected to a resumption of V-2 attacks, for "the V-2 campaign had been a failure. Hitler knew that. There had to be something extra to make all this worthwhile."[5] What that "something extra" was, was hinted at by none other than the Deputy Commanding General for the US Army Air Force's Intelligence, Lieutenant General Donal Putt, shortly after the war in 1946. Brooks' comments are worth citing extensively:

---

[3] Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana* (Pen and Sword Books: Barnsley, South Korshire, 2002), p. 103. (ISBN 0850528968)

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

> (Lt. General Putt) told the Society of Aeronautical Engineers: "The Germans were preparing rocket surprises for the whole world in general and England in particular which would have, it is believed, changed the course of the war if the invasion had been postponed for so short a time as half a year." Putt was also quoted in an aside as having stated that "the Germans had V-2s with atomic explosive warheads." A surprise is a surprise and hitherto ordinary rocket warfare had proved unproductive. The range of the V-2 was 200 miles. The crucial success of the Allied progress by December 1944 had therefore been to drive the German forces in Europe beyond this limit. The objective of the Ardennes campaign was the Belgian port of Antwerp, 200 miles from London.[6]

In other words, once again, the Nazi atom bomb is the hidden logic at work in the operational plans of both sides late in the war, and is very likely the hidden operational logic behind the otherwise militarily indefensible German offensive in the Ardennes. Small wonder then, that Patton would remark "We can still lose this war," even at such a late date. Similarly, if this scenario is the basis of his remarks, then it also serves to indicate that America's most celebrated field commander was also privy to some very sensitive information.

As was seen in my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun,* a number of articles appeared in the post-war Western press to corroborate the notion that the war was won, not against a tottering Reich, but just in the nick of time. The articles usually accompanied these evaluations with revelations of Nazi secret weapons, most of them on the "fantastic" end of the spectrum. Perhaps this was a ploy to convince the Western public that the Nazi leaders were quite insane – as if any convincing needed to be done by that point – and that their hopes were so wildly bizarre and unrealistic that indeed the Third Reich's military state in late 1944 and early 1945 was all but hopeless.

A. "We Can Still Lose This War"

But psychological operations or not, even the American aerospace firm Convair (Consolidated Vultee) got in on the act, with a two page advertisement in *Life* magazine in its August 27, 1945 edition with an "article" entitled "…by the Skin of our Teeth."

---

[6] Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 19.

> SEVERAL TIMES **during the European phase of this war, victory was almost within Germany's grasp…**on land, on the sea, or in the air.
>
> Above all, knowing the vital importance of air supremacy, the Nazis tried time and again to wrest it back from the Allies.
>
> **And they almost succeeded.**
>
> ### Time Ran Out
>
> Especially in the last months of the war, our margin of safety was slimmer than most of us suspected.
>
> Just how slim it was is known best to certain American military experts **who have since inspected some of Germany's underground research laboratories and war plants.**
>
> Here they saw secret weapons in various stages of development…**weapons which might conceivably have turned the trick for the Nazis if they could have used them boldly in a last desperate gamble.**
>
> **Some of these things can be revealed. Others cannot – yet.**
>
> In one plant, the U.S. Army officers found partially assembled jet fighter planes of radical new design. There were planes potentially better than anything the Allies had in combat at that time.
>
> IF time hadn't run out on the Germans, **quantities of these jet planes might have changed the balance of air power in their favor.**
>
> In a V rocket plant, burrowed 800 feet deep in limestone rock, our technicians found blueprints for a fearful V bomb with an estimated range of 3000 miles.
>
> "We planned to destroy New York and other American cities starting in November," said a German rocket engineer.
>
> ### Target: U.S.A.
>
> In a converted salt mine, our ordnance officers examined nearly completed jet-propelled heavy bombers… **bombers claimed by the Germans to be capable of crashing high explosives into the industrial cities of the eastern United States and flying back again across the Atlantic.**
>
> Goering himself said the planes had been successfully test-flown and would have been in operation if Germany could have held out three months longer.

But those catastrophes, and others, never quite came to pass on the German timetable of war. **We managed, right to the end, to maintain the air supremacy we had achieved…sometimes *just by the skin of our teeth!*[7]**

…by the Skin of our Teeth

SEVERAL TIMES during the European phase of this war, victory was almost within Germany's grasp . . . on land, on the sea, or in the air.

Above all, knowing the vital importance of air supremacy, the Nazis tried time and again to wrest it back from the Allies.

And they almost succeeded.

Time ran out

Especially in the last months of the war, our margin of safety was slimmer than most of us suspected.

Just how slim it was is known best to certain American military experts **who have since inspected some of Germany's underground research laboratories and war plants.**

Here they saw secret weapons in various stages of development . . . **weapons which might conceivably have turned the trick for the Nazis if they could have used them boldly in a last desperate gamble.**

Some of these things can now be revealed. Others cannot—yet.

In one plant, the U. S. Army officers found partially assembled jet fighter planes of radical new design. There were planes potentially better than anything the Allies had in combat at that time.

If time hadn't run out on the Germans, **quantities of these jet planes might have changed the balance of air power in their favor.**

In a V rocket plant, burrowed 800 feet deep in limestone rock, our technicians found blueprints for a fearful V bomb with an estimated range of 3000 miles.

"We planned to destroy New York and other American cities starting in November," said a German rocket engineer.

Target: U. S. A.

In a converted salt mine, our ordnance officers examined nearly completed jet-propelled heavy bombers . . . **bombers claimed by the Germans to be capable of crashing high explosives into the industrial cities of the eastern United States and flying back again across the Atlantic.**

Goering himself said the planes had been successfully test-flown and would have been in operation if Germany could have held out 3 months longer.

But those catastrophes, and others, never quite came to pass on the German timetable of war. **We managed, right**

Consolidated Vultee Article

---

[7] Cited in Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* pp. 25-26, all emphases in the original.

the end, to maintain the air supremacy we had achieved . . . sometimes *just by the skin of our teeth.*

How about Japan?

What's happening in those war plants the Japs have built underground? We wish we knew! We, for one, are not selling this enemy short—**not on scientific ingenuity born of desperation.**

Every now and then—close on the heels of dispatches telling how our heroic flyers are knocking Japs out of the sky at a ratio of 10 to 1—comes a disturbing rumor of an entirely new Jap weapon.

This is why it would be one of the costliest mistakes this country could possibly make, if we were to permit ourselves to be lulled into a sense of security because of our *present-day* air superiority.

The race we must win

We are woefully stupid if we assume that Japan isn't working desperately to develop new planes and air-borne weapons that will whittle down our air superiority.

Air supremacy, alone, of course, will not win this war or guarantee a lasting peace in the years to come.

But if we maintain air supremacy in the Pacific, Japan *can't* win.

And as long as we maintain our air superiority after victory, no aggressor nation is apt to be foolhardy enough to dream of attacking us.

That is why *constant* and *continuing* research in the field of aeronautics is a MUST for America—today and always!

But experimental research is only the first step in winning the race that will insure America from attack in the future . . .

The best planes periodically resulting from this research must be put in production in sufficient quantities to develop *manufacturing techniques and tools* and to keep the nucleus of a manufacturing organization which can be quickly expanded if ever needed.

We must also have enough planes for our Armed Services to train the Flight and Ground Crews in their use. *One or two experimental planes are not enough* to keep our Air Force and manufacturing organizations ready for any emergency.

Only when the design and production "bugs" always present in a new plane are revealed and eliminated by use—can our ever-improving aircraft be considered *proven* military weapons.

LET'S KEEP AMERICA STRONG
IN THE AIR!

CONSOLIDATED VULTEE AIRCRAFT CORPORATION

San Diego, Calif. · Vultee Field, Calif. · Fairfield, Calif. · Tucson, Ariz. · Fort Worth, Texas · New Orleans, La. · Nashville, Tenn. · Louisville, Ky. · Wayne, Mich. · Dearborn, Mich. · Allentown, Pa. · Elizabeth City, N. C. · Miami, Fla.
Member, Aircraft War Production Council

Consolidated Vultee Article

This disquieting state of affairs suggests that there was more to German rocketry at the end of the war than merely lobbing short-ranged V-1s and V-2s on London and other western European cities. Indeed, if blueprints for a rocket with a 3,000 mile range were found in an underground factory at the end of the war, this strongly suggests that the rumored intercontinental *Amerikaraket* was nearing *production*, and that implies that some long range prototype may have already been *tested.*

Moreover, this "we won in the nick of time" attitude is corroborated by two very unlikely sources. Project Mercury and Gemini astronaut Gorden Cooper revealed that at the war's end

America was only one week from catastrophe.[8] But even more sensational corroboration of General Patton's gloomy assessment comes from President Franklin Delano Roosevelt himself. After receiving information via Turkey that the Germans were working on a "V-3" that could strike the east coast of the U.S., President Roosevelt revealed in a letter to his cousin Daisy on December 6, 1944, the real reason for his concern: not the rocket itself, but the fact that the Germans possessed "a weapon named V-3, that could destroy anything within a circumference of a kilometer with a single blow."[9] The dating here is significant, for it would place Roosevelt's letter *after* both the German fuel-air bomb tests and, more importantly, after the alleged a-bomb test on the island of Rügen ca. Oct 10-11, 1944.[10]

President Roosevelt and General Patton were not the only senior Allied officials to express private reservations about the future course of the war at that late date. Indeed, behind the Allied superiority in all conventional arms, there lurked a disquieting fact, a fact made clear by the following secret memorandum:

---

[8] Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 15. See also pp. 182-183.

[9] Ibid., p. 199, my translation.

[10] As I note in my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 80, Italian eyewitness Luigi Romersa, who described the test in detail, leaves out of his description any observation of the fusing of the soil at the test site into the glassy silicate covering associated with above ground low altitude nuclear tests. This fact weighs strongly *against* the test having been of a nuclear device though other signatures of the device tested there resemble a nuclear bomb. Background radiation on Rügen appears too small for a nuclear device. Romersa might thus be obfuscating his testimony; perhaps the test was elsewhere in the Baltic, or perhaps the test was of a large fuel-air bomb?

SECRET

HEADQUARTERS
UNITED STATES STRATEGIC AIR FORCES IN EUROPE (REAR)
Office of the Director of Intelligence

AAF Sta 390
APO 633, U.S. Army
5 January 1945

MEMORANDUM:

To: Brigadier General George C. McDonald, D. of I., Hq., USSTAF.

1. You will recollect that the SHAEF forecast, arrived at after D-day in 1944, placed the capitulation of Germany at the end of December of that year. It is believed that this SHAEF forecast strongly influenced the planning in Washington and in this theater. Predicated upon this date, questions of type U.S. Air Force equipment, weapons, tactics, training and supplies were decided.

2. Hitler's Germany did not place the termination date of this war at the end of 1944. Hitler's Germany has indicated with determination and virility that it expects this war to continue for a long and indefinite period of time, and that it is struggling to gain supremacy in weapons as well as generalship.

3. With the exception of a few modifications and improvements in the U.S. Air Forces in this theater are fighting with substantially the same weapons as they used in 1942. From 1942 through 1944 the aircraft and equipment of the U.S. Army Air Forces were superior in practically every detail to anything the enemy had in this theater. Indeed, weapons and equipment in general, whether belonging to the Ground Troops or to the Air, enjoyed for the U.S. superiority during this first period. This period ended December 31, 1944 with Germany still fighting, but Germany is not fighting with the weapons of 1942. She is leading the world in tested jet propelled airplanes, long range missiles, new type submarines and, in certain classes, better tanks. A large part of her manufacturing facilities have gone underground and she is bending every sinew for the last stand on the Vaterland frontiers.

4. Our Ground Armies, despite superiority in manpower and quantity of equipment, are presently engaged more in defensive than offensive fighting and, unless this state of affairs is quickly changed or the Russians actually drive through to Berlin and victory, we must face the grim expectation of fighting Germany and her new capabilities through greater 1945.

> 5. The new submarine threat is mounting and we may expect that the Admiralty and our Navy will soon bring pressure to bear on the United States Strategic Air Forces to go after submarine yards, pens and components manufacture. The tank and armored vehicle industry is proving a fresh and considerable menace in the present Western campaigns, so pressure might be expected from the Ground Armies to devote a part of our bombardment weight to these production centers. A special report had been prepared by Lt. Col. Haines dealing with the growing menace of jet aircraft…

If this somber assessment did not succeed in warning General McDonald of the true nature of the situation, it was spelled out in no uncertain terms in the conclusions at the end of the document:

> 6. CONCLUSION:
>
> a. The war has not terminated in accordance with SHAEF plans.
>
> b. SHAEF timing has dominated the development of equipment, training programs and establishment of manpower and supply for this theater.
>
> c. The first cycle and period of the war has ended without the capitulation of Germany and with Germany leading in the development of principal new weapons and methods, which will be included in her capabilities during 1945.[11]

In other words, the Germans simply were not complying with SHAEF's desires for them to roll over and surrender in the face of overwhelming Allied numerical superiority. Indeed, as the document indicates, that very numerical superiority was threatened with immanent obsolescence, if not being totally obsolete, in 1945. Germany, which had invented modern combined-arms maneuver warfare as a means of offsetting her potential opponents' numerical superiority, was about to change the nature of warfare yet again, and catch the Allies flatfooted, unprepared, and off balance.

But was the reality of German potential in fact in line with these gloomy Allied intelligence prognostications?

---

[11] Cited in Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teliband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogramm* (Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2004), pp. 194-195.

B. German Potential in Late 1944 Early 1945

1. Papers for Paperclip: Project Lusty

Late war German war-making potential is perhaps best summarized by a series of recently declassified documents – first uncovered by British researcher Nick Cook – called "Project Lusty." This, as Polish researcher Igor Witkowski observes, was a "parallel operation in relation to 'Paperclip.'"[12] Its contents are "such an absolute revelation that it gives the impression of being a story from another planet."[13] The Project Lusty documents

> consist of a descriptive section as well as a list of intelligence facilities/ "targets" in the occupied Reich. In the descriptive section, at the very beginning, mention is made for example… of seized German evacuation transports – U-boats. This concerns facts that not only shed a completely new light on the end of World War II and the issue of the Third Reich's scientific and technical achievements, but above all are shocking with the awareness that they are still clouded in a curtain of secrecy![14]

Under the aegis of this program alone, and by its own admission, some 110,000 *tons* of scientific papers were transferred over three months to a center in the United States, where they were then processed and disseminated to the interested agencies of the US government.[15]

---

[12] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans. from the Polish by Bruce Wenham (Farnborough, England: Books International (European History Press, 2003), p. 224. Witkowski's research in *The Truth about the Wunderwaffe*, like Carter Hydrick's in *Critical Mass*, is first class and simply put, *cannot* and *must* not be ignored by any serious inquirer into the alternative and secret history of World War Two secret weapons and technology. I state this simply to put the record straight, since a number of stupid and utterly silly remarks have been made about Mr. Witkowski in various reviews of Nick Cook's *The Hunt for Zero Point.* These reviews have tried to impeach Cook's story by, in some cases, implying that Mr. Witkowski's work was somehow slip shod or second rate. The persons making such comments have obviously never bothered to *read* Mr. Witkowski's work nor considered its profound implications. So, once again, to set the record straight, Mr. Witkowski's work is *superb and magisterial.* The reviewers implying that Mr. Witkowski is an "unknown" or a second-rate author might possibly be in the covert employment of somebody's (Hot) Air Force.

[13] Witkowski, op. cit., p. 224.

[14] Ibid.

As if that were not enough,

> The records of the German Patent Office, for instance, were found buried 1,500 feet underground in a potash mine near Bacha. *There were approximately 225,000 volumes, which included secret files.(...)* Eventually, the files were evacuated and studied.(…)[16]

This is a crucial revelation, for it brings us back to the context of the *Kammlerstab* SS secret weapons "think tank" for the simple reason that all patents in the Third Reich were secretly scrutinized by a highly classified SS entity called *Forschung, Entwicklung, Patente*, which answered to an SS *Obergruppen-führer* Emil Mazuw, about whom more will be said in chapter four.

Project Lusty's revelation accordingly prompts a very serious question: did the American intelligence teams simply "blindly stumble onto" this treasure trove? Or were they led there? The last possibility seems more likely, as it is known that Kammler returned to Prague and the Skoda Works at Pilsen – headquarters of his "think tank" – in the last days of the war. As Nick Cook hypothesizes, Kammler did so to put the finishing touches on gathering up all his files and gathering them together to barter for his life.[17] Thus, if the Americans knew where to look, this information could only have come to them from some source inside the *Kammlerstab*.

It is well known that SS General Wolff undertook secret surrender negotiations with OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, in the closing days of the war. What is little known, however, is that this process was taking place with the tacit blessing of none other than Adolf Hitler and Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann, by then the real master of Nazi Germany. As Carter Hydrick has argued, the classic signature of

---

[15] Project Lusty, Frame 601, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226.

[16] Project Lusty, Frame 597, § 9, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226, emphasis Witkowski's.

[17] Q.v. Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp.

Bormann in all these late-war negotiations with the Americans was the exchange of technology for the lives of leading Nazis.[18] This permits one to speculate on a secret history that possibly underlies the strange constellation of events in southern and south central Germany, and Bohemian Czechoslovakia, at the end of the war. Among those events one must highlight the following:

(1) U.S. General Patton's rapid drive across southern Germany toward the Skoda Works at Pilsen in Czechoslovakia and similar Allied thrusts toward the Harz Mountain SS installations in Thuringia;
(2) The secret negotiations between OSS station chief Allen Dulles[19] and SS General Wolff;
(3) The disappearance of SS General Hans Kammler;
(4) The disappearance of Kammler's most highly classified research project, "the Bell," along with all its project documentation; and finally,
(5) The ironic – and some would say extremely suspicious – death of General George Patton shortly after the war's end.

A speculative pattern emerges, for if Wolff was secretly negotiating with Dulles with the tacit approval of Bormann – and Bormann's approval meant Hitler's as well – then it is likely that the collateral was the treasure trove of the *Kammlerstab's* documents, which would have included the secret patents of the Third Reich, seized and classified by the *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente.* The unerring *precision* with which late war American thrusts – largely by Patton's Third Army - toward the most secret centers and installations of Kammler's black projects empire were guided can only indicate that at some very high level the Americans were receiving "inside information" that came from an equally high level within the Third Reich: Kammler and Bormann. Patton may either have been the point man in some of these operations, or, as is more likely, was simply privy to a vast amount of first hand field intelligence reports that allowed him to piece together a thorough and nearly complete overview of the extent of Nazi black projects. One may speculate that Patton's field reports at this time constituted a kind of "Kammler Index" of the Third Reich's secret weapons projects. In either case, he would have been in a position to disclose a vast and hidden intelligence operation, not the least of which included a Faustian bargain for exotic technology and post-war cooperation between the Nazis and the western Allies, particularly with the United States.

---

[18] For the escape and role of Bormann in negotiating these high technology transfers, see Carter Plymtom Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 157-247.

[19] Dulles later became CIA chief, was dismissed by President Kennedy after the Bay of Pigs fiasco, and then later appointed by Lyndon Johnson to head the Warren Commission "investigating" the President's murder!

And what of the treasure trove itself? A glance at more unusual German secret weapons will demonstrate why General Patton in early 1945 – perhaps already "in the loop" on the secret negotiations taking place, and the "technological potential" the Allies faced if those negotiations were not successful – expressed serious private reservations about the Allies "still being able to lose this war."

2. Death Beneath the Seas: The Extraordinary Capabilities of the Type XXI U-boat

While Project Lusty concerned itself exclusively with Nazi aero-space technology, it is worth mentioning one of the deadliest potentials that was already coming into production as the war approached its end: the very new, and very lethal, German Type XXI U-boat. The Type XXI thus represented no mere prototype waiting to see production; it was not mere potential. It was a very real and present danger that would have presented the Allies with no end of difficulties at sea had the war continued even just a few weeks longer. And as I averred in *Reich of the Black Sun*, it is likely that the British had the misfortune of encountering a few Type XXIs before the end of hostilities.[20]

The Type XXIs possessed a novel propulsion system, the Walther turbine utilizing hydrogen peroxide, that allowed a speed of some 17.2 knots submerged, and according to the first trials information of the *Kriegsmarine*, were capable of a truly astonishing submerged depth of 330 meters![21] Some statements placed its submerged speed closer to 21 or 22 knots.[22] Moreover, the Type XXI could *continue* at this phenomenal underwater speed for some 340 miles before having to slow to recharge its accumulators.[23] Thus, the Type XXI, unlike the subs of every other navy or even its predecessors in the *Kriegsmarine*, was not merely a submersible; it was, in fact, the first truly modern submarine vessel, a vessel *designed* to do most of its traveling *under* water, not merely a vessel that could submerge when necessary. With its special "radar absorbent material" coating its newer streamlined schnorkel device, and its tremendous maximum possible submerged depth, the submarine managed to be undetectable to American surface vessels at a mere 200 meters away when the U.S. Navy conducted tests on one specimen in 1946![24] As Polish researcher Igor Witkowski puts it, the submarine "was a jump from the level of the 1940s into the 1960s."[25]

---

[20] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 243-244.

But even this recitation does not even begin to exhaust its truly deadly potential in naval warfare. If an Allied aircraft somehow managed to elude its on board radar and four 20 millimeter turreted anti-aircraft guns on either side of the boat's streamlined conning tower, the submarine could be completely under water in a mere 18 seconds.[26] But that is not all, for unlike any other submarine in any other navy, the Type XXI's captain would not even have to *see* his target to fire torpedos at it:

> The submarine possessed a completely revolutionary system of torpedo fire control, enabling it to carry out effective attacks even at complete submersion, *the target positions being determined by creating three-dimensional co-ordinates of the noise's source through recalculating of delays received by various microphones placed on the submarine's hull.* After an attack the Type XXI escaped at maximum speed, at which the enemy's sonar was totally ineffective (it maintained effectiveness up to approx. 12 knots).[27]

---

[21] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 126.

[22] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 242-245.

[23] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p.126.

[24] Ibid., p. 127.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid.

The potential of the Type XXI was thus not a mere "potential." It was a deadly reality.

One can only imagine what a Type XXI equipped with the new wire-guided or acoustic-homing torpedoes would have done to Allied shipping had it entered service in sufficient numbers. After all, a Type XXI with *conventional* torpedos was bad enough…

3. Death in the Air: The Sound Barrier Too?

The Project Lusty documentation referred to previously indicates that the Type XXI's deadly performance characteristics were matched, if not surpassed, by similar German developments in aerial warfare.

With the Allied and Soviet Air Forces' increasing dominance of the skies over Germany, it became increasingly vital for the Luftwaffe to pursue the unconventional avenue toward recovering mastery of the air over Germany. One such solution, the Focke Wulfe *Triebflügel*, is well-known to researchers. This "vertical take-off and landing" or VTOL fighter was a viable solution, since there was no need to try to take off or land on bombed and cratered airfield runways. Consisting of three rotating *wings* around a central fuselage, each wing was tipped with a ramjet engine. The wings could in turn be rotated to increase or decrease the angle of attack. With rockets to assist the ramjets to get started, the *Triebflügel* was in effect a vertical take-off and landing jet-airplane combined with a helicopter. Witkowski describes it as follows:

> (The) name could be translated as "propulsive wing", reflecting its unusual principle of operation. During take-off and landing the lifting surfaces performed the function of a helicopter's rotor, whereas during flight at high speed they "transformed" into wings…. Three ramjet engines were mounted on the wing tips, each with a maximum thrust of 840 KG. During take-off they were boosted by three Walter rocket engines, accelerating the wings to a speed enabling the ramjet engines to be started. [28]

---

[28] Witkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 204.

Prior to the publication in English of Witkowski's research, however, little was known about the performance capabilities of this unconventional aircraft, and it remained a curiosity.

Witkowski, however, managed to procure a post-war Polish report on the actual test results the craft managed to achieve:

> The maximum vertical speed did not exceed 124 km/h. After climbing to a sufficient altitude, the aircraft commenced horizontal flight with the adjustment of control surfaces and ailerons.(…) In horizontal flight the aircraft reached a speed of 1,000 km/h. The rotor operated at 520 rpm, which after conversion gave a rotational speed of the tips of 1,500 km/h.
>
> The initial rate of climb amounted to 7.5 km/min. Rotor working time -42 min., range 640 km. *At an altitude of 11 km horizontal speed amounted to 800 km/h.*[29]

Note that the speed of the craft at normal altitudes was 1,000 kilometers per hour, or approximately 600 miles per hour. Note also that the craft was apparently capable of reaching altitudes of some 11 kilometers, or about six and a half miles above the surface, far above the normal operational altitudes of most Allied and Soviet aircraft of the war.

The performance characteristics cited are made even more remarkable by the fact that the *Triebflügel* and similar craft were apparently brought to the United States as part of Project Lusty:

> A report reached Lt Col. O'Brien's party that a "strange aircraft" had been seen in a mountainous retreat near Salzburg. Investigation quickly determined that this "strange aircraft: was a jet-propelled helicopter, the only one of its kind in the world. The inventor and his entire staff, who had laboriously worked ten years to perfect it, were present, guarding his invention as one would a precious jewel. The helicopter was examined, and a preliminary superficial interrogation of the staff was sufficient to reveal its tremendous importance. It was carefully loaded in a large truck and taken to Munich. From there it was sent across Europe to France, placed on a boat and shipped to Wright Field,

---

[29] Ibid., p. 205, citing W. Kozakiewicz et. al. „Bron rakietowa" (Głowny Instytut Mechaniki, 1951).

> together with the confiscated notes, drawings, and meticulous records of experiments conducted by the scientist and his assistants.[30]

The *Triebflügel* and similar other projects were thus for the American military no mere curiosities. They represented significant technological advances over then existent American aerospace technology.

But now a question occurs: if the machine – and there was only one such of its kind in the world – was brought to Wright Patterson Airfield[31] and its scientists interred and papers confiscated, how did the post-war Polish Communist government know so much about its performance within six years of the war's end? The standard answer is, of course, that there were Soviet spies within the program, and that is the most likely explanation. But there is another possible answer that will loom ever larger as we proceed, and that is that it is possible that all these programs were continued after the war in a variety of host countries including Russia, and yet were independently coordinated from some hidden center, passing information back and forth between the cells in various host countries via a continuing "Nazi International".

The *Triebflügel* also points to another direction wartime German research pursued, and pursued with a vengeance: high performance ramjet-propelled aircraft. Indeed, when entering *this* area of inquiry, one is again entering one of those areas where the reality of wartime German accomplishments in secret weapons research was in diametric contradiction to the post-war Allied Legend, only in this case, the legend is not about the Allies having acquired the a-bomb while the Nazis remained incompetent nuclear bunglers, but about the fact that an American, Chuck Yeager, was the first human to pilot an aircraft through the sound barrier, an event that occurred after the war's end and the beginning of America's own black projects in exotic aircraft and space-based weapons.

---

[30] Project Lusty, frame 590, cited in Witkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 225.

[31] Thus, if one is to believe *all* the reports about Wright Patterson, it is home to a *very* odd collection of aliens – both extra- and sub-terrestrial – and Nazis!

The story begins with the acknowledged expert on ramjets, Prof. Dr. Alexander Lippisch, and his designs for a delta-winged P-13b ramjet aircraft. The goal of the project was to produce a super-sonic aircraft with a cheap, reliable propulsion system. Lippisch produced a number of designs, beginning with the P-12.

P12
LI-P12
FIN
ADJUSTABLE FLAPS
END SPAR (STEEL).
CENTER RIB
END PLATE
TANK
BURNER
SKID
DIFFUSOR
LORIN PROPULSED LI P12/13 MODEL (MAI 1944)

Lippisch's P-12 Design

Work on this aircraft was interrupted in May 1944, and Lippisch produced the design for the cleaner lines of the P13b.

1470
6900
7200
LI- P13 b.

Lippisch's P13b Design

The large air intakes for the ramjets and the disk-shaped combustion chamber are clearly evident. Wind tunnel trials soon showed the advantages of the pure delta shape for supersonic flight, however, and Lippisch produced his final design for the

P13b, the final design for which is described in a U.S. intelligence summary for April, 1945:

2
1
3
4
5
6
7
8
12
11
10
9

"**Delta**" **Aircraft** design is shown in this plan of the glider type, from prisoner's description, and clearly illustrates the radical triangular shape of these aircraft. The following components are annotated :

1. Cables to control surfaces.
2. Cabin.
3. Forward landing wheel.
4. Fuselage.
5. Spar to which wings are bolted.
6. Wing.
7. Main landing wheels.
8. Trimming rudder.
9. Elevator.
10. Aileron.
11. Landing flaps.
12. Rudder.

The Final Version of the Lippisch P13b According to a US Intelligence Summary of April 1945

The remarkable thing about the P13b development is that according to one version, the pure delta version, i.e., the final version seen immediately above, was the version that went through comprehensive trials in 1945. The design in fact, was completed by January 7, 1945.[32]

But did this fantastic supersonic fighter ever progress beyond the planning and wind-tunnel test stages? Enter Project Lusty once again. Frame 599 of the documentation lists the various actual aircraft that were brought to the Wright Airfield in the United States for "extended study and development."[33] As the documents state, "at least one, in some cases as many as ten, of the following, which represent only a fraction of the types (of aircraft), were located, some only after extensive searching throughout Germany."[34] The report then lists the types of *aircraft*, not just documents, that were seized:

> The Messerschmitt aircraft series 1101, 1106, 1110, 1111 and 1112, a series particularly interesting in that it illustrates a phase of co-ordinated aircraft design into which American aircraft are only now entering; seven rocket-propelled piloted aircraft specifically designed for anti-bomber interception work; a jet-propelled helicopter; Flettner-282 helicopter; Horton-9, a flying winged glider; Ju-188, a radar equipped twin-engine night fighter; Ju-290, four-engine long range transport; seven Me-163s, rocket-propelled interceptor fighters; ten Me-262s, twin jet-propelled fighter-interceptors; He-162, single place fighter powered by jet engines; flying bombs, type V-1 single and dual piloted; *Lippisch P-13 Jager*(sic)[35]*, a tailless twin rocket-propelled wing for supersonic speeds…*[36]

The report clearly indicates that an actual aircraft, and not just a model, was brought to the United States, though it clearly has misidentified the fighter's rocket engines as the main propulsion unit. They were necessary only to reach sufficient speed to start the ramjets.

But the truly sensational bit of information concerning the P13b that emerges from the Project Lusty documents occurs in frame 601, where the top recorded speed for the P13b is stated as

---

[32] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 200-201.

[33] Ibid., p. 226.

[34] Ibid.

[35] "Jäger": fighter airplane.

[36] Project Lusty, frame 599, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226.

Mach 1.85, "about 2100 km/h" or approximately *1200 miles per hour.*[37] UFO researches will recognize that figure, because it appears often in newspaper accounts of UFO performance characteristics from the post-war period on into the 1950s. In any case, Polish military files indicate that the craft was prepared for, and successfully undertook, comprehensive trials ca. January-February 1945, and that indeed, the sound barrier had been broken by the Germans during that time, though no mention is made of the test pilot's name.[38]

The fact of the P13b's incredible speed and the uniqueness and simplicity of its combustion chamber, would have meant nothing less than an aerial warfare revolution had the war lasted a little longer and the aircraft had seen production. The reason is quite simple: it was cheap, *impervious to Allied radar,* and *utterly beyond* the performance capabilities of the proto-type British and American jet fighters only just beginning to be tested. Indeed, the performance characteristics of the P13b would only be matched by the "X planes" of the early American space program some years later.

As for Lippisch himself, he became something of a celebrity at Wright Airfield in Dayton, Ohio, since he was recognized as the leading authority on supersonic flight. Lippisch conducted seminars and lectures for his new American bosses.[39] More importantly, Lippisch had also completed designs for an orbiting space station capable of dropping nuclear bombs on any target on earth.[40]

---

[37] Project Lusty, Frame 601, cited, Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226.

[38] Ibid., pp. 203-24. It seems worth mentioning that some sources indicate that Chuck Yeager was the first *American* to break the sound barrier, suggesting that someone, somewhere, *knew* something that the general public did not.

[39] Ibid., p. 222.

[40] Ibid.

4. Death on the Ground: Weapons of Mass Destruction in Use by the German Army on the Eastern Front in 1941

Beyond these deadly aerial and submarine developments of the late war, there were already indicators that something had long been afoot on the ground as well, as persistent rumors came from the Eastern Front that the German Army, on more than one occasion, had used some weapon of enormous destructive power on Russian military targets. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I indicated that this was most likely some early version of a fuel-air bomb, a device that the Germans had brought, by the end of the war, to enormous capability.[41] The sources for these strange allegations were none other than a secret Japanese communiqué from its embassy in Stockholm, Sweden, to an equally secret communication from the Soviets to the Nazis that if they did not "cease and desist" the Russians would resort to the use of poison gas.

Further corroboration of this is found in none other than celebrated SS commando Otto Skorzeny's memoirs. However, he recounts that their first use occurred not in the siege of Sevastopol in the Crimea in 1942, nor indeed with the prologue to the Battle of Kursk in 1943, but in the fierce Battle for Moscow during late November and early December of 1941!

> To our left is situated Khmiki, Moscow's port. From here it is only 8 kilometers to Moscow. On 30 November, without a single shot, the 62nd reconnaissance regiment belonging to Hoepner's Armoured Corps moves in here. It is not known why this opportunity was not exploited. Our motorcyclists retreated.
>
> Here begins the next mysterious episode in the battle for Moscow, which has escaped the attention of many historians. In order to oppose the horrifying rockets of "Stalin's organs" we applied a new type of rocket missile filled with liquid air. These were similar to enormous bombs and as far as my competence allows me to estimate – their effectiveness had no equal. Their use immediately had an impact on the enemy's defensive forces. The enemy used huge loudspeakers for propaganda purposes… By means of them several days after first using our missiles the Russians threatened to respond with gas attacks if we continued to use rockets filled with liquid air. From that moment, at

---

[41] Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 191-192.

> least in our sector, they were never used again. I don't think they were used on other stretches of the front as well.[42]

Witkowski confirms the assertion first broached by Renato Vesco that the research for these weapons of mass destruction – a large fuel air bomb has the same destructive effect as a small atom bomb – was undertaken by Prof. Dr. Zippermayer under the apt code name *Hexenkessel* or "Witches' Cauldron."[43]

SECRET

INFORMATION OBTAINED FROM TARGETS OF
OPPORTUNITY IN THE SONTHOFEN AREA

Reported by

F/Lt H.H.G. Daniels
and
F/Lt R.L. Bickerdike
MAP, RAE

BIOS Target Numbers
C 28/8.211, C 25/549, C 6/137, C 30/338,
C 4/268, C 22/2182, C 21/601

BRITISH INTELLIGENCE OBJECTIVES SUB-COMMITTEE
32 Bryanston Square, London, W.1.

---

[42] Otto Skorzeny, *La Guerre Inconnue*(Paris, Albin Michel: 1975), cited in Witkowski, p. 95.

[43] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 96.

4.

account of Allied bombing, although they were successful. The Ikonoscope was also going to be used in anti-submarine weapons, but this development had not yet started. Infra red rays collected from the target focussed on to a sensitive plate which caused an electrical mechanism to operate the steering mechanism of the projectile. Speer had ordered that Rambauschke should keep the details of this to himself, and should construct this part of the equipment personally.

(e) Artificial horizon

A self regulating artificial horizon for use in aircraft was invented by Dr. Knappstein, who had a factory in Berlin-Schoneberg. He worked in collaboration with Henschel, Berlin-Königswusterhausen. The horizon was not affected by any aerobatic manoeuvres.

(f) *Microfilmed documents*

An agency had been set up in Berlin for the microfilming of important technical and political papers under the control of Oberst Sauer who had his office at 88 Potsdamerstrasse. He came under the control of Speer's ministry, but also copied all the important papers of the S.S. Hauptamt. After the first heavy attacks on Berlin in 1943 it was decided to conceal three or more sets of the film copies at various dispersal points, probably in southern Germany. Gen.Ing. Herrmann and Oberst Diesing of the R.L.M. were thought to be responsible for the evacuation order. Manfred von Brauchitsch was charged with the transport of the films. Obersts Kneemeier and Diesing of the R.L.M., Oberst Geist who worked with Sauer and the head of the Beschaffungs and Rüstungslieferungsamt of the army should know the location of one or more of the hiding places. This information has been passed to Air Intelligence and they are dealing with the matter.

(g) Liquid air bomb

As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40%.

British Intelligence Report on Fuel Air Bomb

liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Döberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 metres trees etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained if the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenführer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km. radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km. away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km. away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.

A Dr. Hahnenkamp was also concerned in this work with Dr. Zippelmeier, and both scientists were working for the R.L.M. in the laboratories of a research institute near Vienna. About the end of September 1944 Zippelmeier was moved to the Horn Gyroscopic compass factory in Plauen, Vogtland (Saxony), but was probably evacuated before the Russians occupied the area. The materials of the explosive were made by the specialists of the Nobel company.

C. Interrogation of Josef Ernst

In the course of interrogation it became clear, that

British Intelligence Report on German Fuel Air Bomb

Skorzeny also indicates the method of delivery was apparently through rocket artillery systems. In point of fact, SS panzer and panzer grenadier divisions often had a complement of so-called *Nebelwerfer* artillery units. These units were six-barreled rocket artillery pieces, ranging in caliber from 150mm (about six inches) to 280 mm (about eleven inches). The six barrels of a typical *Nebelwerfer* were arranged in a hexagonal pattern on an otherwise conventional split-trail artillery carriage. The 280mm *Nebelwerfer* units would have been the ideal delivery system for fuel air bombs.[44]

One can only guess what the effect of a battery of these weapons firing fuel air bombs on rockets, with their sirens screaming down on their targets, all synchronized to detonate simultaneously, would have had on a Russian unit. The phrase "carpet bombing" together with "tactical nukes" might, however, come close.

But in any case, it is clear why the Russians resorted to the threat of poison gas. And perhaps it is also clear why only recently the Russian government has revealed that its casualties during the war were far higher than anyone had previously imagined. Operationally competent as the German Army was during World War Two, the fantastic "kill ratios" it achieved on the Eastern Front could only have been due to the assistance of unconventional weaponry, and weaponry of mass destruction at that.

5. Beyond the Nuclear and Thermonuclear Bombs: Indications of a New Physics

Project Lusty also corroborates another sensational allegation that we shall encounter much later, namely, that the Nazis were engaged in research on various types of "death rays" or "anti-aircraft rays." This research apparently was undertaken in Vienna at number 87 Weimarstrasse.[45] But these were no ordinary lasers.

According to Polish researcher Igor Witkowski, the German government's archives indicate that

> In 1944 a special Luftwaffe research establishment received the task to develop such a weapon, situated in the town of Gross Ostheim. Materials relating to this work are currently located in a civilian

---

[44] These bombs would not have been of the same colossal size as I reported on pp. 191-192 of *Reich of the Black Sun*, since the range of these rocket launchers was relatively short.

[45] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 227.

> establishment – the Karlsruhe research centre (Forschungszentrum Karlsruhe) and were disclosed several years ago.[46]

As was seen in *Reich of the Black Sun,* research was also conducted into exotic "Tesla" technology at the University of Heidelberg, where an underground bunker was discovered that housed a large artificial quartz parabolic dish which was used to fire high voltage pulses at targets some meters away to disintegrate them.[47] In this light it is perhaps worth mentioning that the giant German electronics firm, Siemens A.G., took out one of the first patents for an X-ray laser in the U.S.A. in *1955*,[48] roughly half a decade before the first masers and lasers were "discovered." Did the Siemens patent in fact reflect work already undertaken by the Third Reich?

While this cannot be determined with certainty, it is perhaps significant that the Siemens firm seldom reveals the exact nature and extent of its research undertaken during the Nazi era. And it is perhaps also significant that Siemens might be trying to *protect* a patent or device previously filed during the Nazi era and subsequently confiscated as booty by taking out a patent for an X-ray laser in the United States.

Taken together, all these secret weapons projects – and they are only the tip of a very large, very deadly iceberg – indicate that Nazi Germany was aiming for supremacy on the ground, sea, and air. But it would be misleading to assume that this was the limit of their ambitions…

---

[46] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 92.

[47] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 221-222, 351.

[48] See chapter six for more discussion of X-ray lasers.

2.
"The Peenemünde Problem"

"...Germany's 'Amerika-Raket' was to be armed with a nuclear warhead. The report sounds utterly fantastic. But was the danger real?"
Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen[1]

In August 1946, a highly placed department of the English War Office disclosed that "Hitler wanted the Moon."[2] In the race of "disclosure" after the war's end and before the iron vaults of "national security" slammed shut and the Allied Legend of atomic engineering superiority was born, such extraordinary revelations were commonplace. Indeed, one must wonder if there was not a psychological or disinformation operation being run behind these early post-war disclosures, to direct attention, particularly *Soviet* attention, away from areas of Nazi accomplishments that were not merely paper studies and fantasies. Even here, however, one must pause, for if Nazi Germany was successful, or even perilously close, in obtaining atom bombs prior to the war's end, as argued in the previous book on this subject, *The Reich of the Black Sun,*[3] then the comment cannot be brushed aside so easily. The War Office comment, and Consolidated Vultee's two page *Life* magazine advertisement disclosing the possible existence blueprints a 3,000 mile range rocket in an underground factory implies the existence at least of a rocket technology – and hence the delivery systems for a nuclear warhead – considerably more advanced than the puny V-2 with its limited lift and range. As German researcher Friedrich Georg notes, the comment points to the existence of Von Braun's A-14 moon rocket, a design for a five stage rocket to lift three astronauts to the moon and return them to the earth where they would then land in a version of Eric Sänger's "rocket plane."[4] And additionally, Consolidated Vultee's disclosure also prompts a question: how did they know there were *blueprints* for such a rocket? Blueprints imply something either ready to go into production or something already being built. Where did Consolidated Vultee get its information? The answer, as we shall see, is rather surprising.

---

[1] Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Intercontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogram* (Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2004), p. 11, my translation.

[2] Ibid., p. 223.

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004, pp. 1-158.

And if five-staged moon rockets to carry three astronauts to the moon and back, and orbital "space planes" sound uncomfortably familiar, they should, for it would seem that Von Braun's later Saturn V booster – the actual three stage booster of the three-manned Apollo moon missions – and the space shuttle itself, are but later developments of some prototypical Nazi design concepts for manned space missions.

A. The U.S.A. Gets the Crème de la Crème

Such disconcerting disclosures raise the other components of the Allied Legend, namely:

(1) that in the race to acquire Nazi secret weapons, scientists, and engineers and the associated technologies, the Western Allies in general and America in particular made off with the lion's share of the loot, the crème da la crème of the Third Reich's scientists and technology, enabling its successful Apollo moon program and likewise its early ICBM development;

(2) that the German "secret weapons" projects consisted mostly of the V-1 "buzz bomb", the V-2 rocket, and half-hearted and failed attempts at atom bomb research, and that after 1942, the Peenemünde scientists developed little else of practical value to realize the fantasies of the Nazi leadership.[5] No progress was made by the Nazis in long-range rocket bombardment beyond the V-2 besides paper projects that never were practically realized;

---

[4] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, p. 223.

[5] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* pp. 15-16.

(3) the Germans were incompetent bunglers when it came to nuclear bomb physics and nowhere *close* to obtaining the atom bomb, much less enough weapons grade uranium (and plutonium?) to make one work.

As my previous book *The Reich of the Black Sun* demonstrated, the Allied Legend as regards number (3) is in serious trouble given recent declassifications and research based upon them.[6] Indeed, one may say that the Allied Legend is in need of serious revision, if not of being disposed of completely.

We now turn to examine the first two components of the Allied Legend. However, this step may seem an odd place to begin a book whose principal subjects are not rockets and atom bombs, but (1) even more destructive and fantastic weapons and the technologies and science they imply, (2) their continued and possibly independent development, and (3) the possible implications of that development in the most famous political assassination in modern history, the cold-blooded murder of President John F. Kennedy. Even here, however, the actual state of affairs in German accomplishments in long-range rocketry are completely at variance with the Allied Legend. However, they also afford the best entry into a discussion of the physics and technologies associated with their most highly classified wartime secret weapons project, “The Bell.”

A moment’s reflection demonstrates why components (1) and (2) of the Allied Legend should be questioned, for if the U.S.A. got the crème de la crème of German rocket scientists – Von Braun, General Walter Dornberger, Hermann Oberth, Arthur Rudolph, et al. – then how does one account for the very early, and *consistent*, Soviet Russian lead in space achievements during the Cold War, right up to the Apollo moon landings? Soviet achievements indicate, as nothing else does, yet another very large hole in the Allied Legend.

---

[6] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 1-158.

B. The U.S.S.R.'s Early Space Achievements

Sergei Korolëv, the brilliant engineering genius and mastermind of Russia's early ICBM and space exploration development, like his counterpart Wernher Von Braun in the U.S.A., laid a firm and lasting foundation for Russian space achievement. His influence persists to this day, if one considers that Russia's (and by implication, China's) Proton boosters are still the largest conventional chemical rockets in service, boosters that rely heavily on the basic concepts Korolëv pioneered. On the basis of his principles and accomplishments, Soviet Russia maintained an early lead over America, racking up the following impressive list of "firsts":

(1) It was the first to launch and orbit an artificial satellite, the famous Sputnik;
(2) It was the first to launch an animal – the little dog Laika – into space;
(3) It was the first to orbit and successfully return a man into space, Colonel Yuri Gagarin;
(4) It was the first to orbit and successfully return a woman into space;
(5) It was the first to land unmanned probes successfully on the Moon;
(6) It was the first to conduct successfully "extra-vehicular activity," i.e., a space walk, by humans in orbit; and last but not least,
(7) It was the first to place nuclear and thermonuclear warheads on an ICBM, the SS-6 and SS-7 "Sapwood."

Then, suddenly and quite inexplicably, the Soviet Union seemed to have "lost its drive" when the Apollo 8 mission successfully orbited, and the Apollo 11 mission successfully landed, humans on the Moon and returned them safely to the Earth. Inexplicably, the Soviet Union seemed to "just give up" and, as far as we know, never launched its own manned Moon mission, even though it was well within Russian capabilities. And perhaps equally inexplicably, the U.S.A., sighting "budget cuts" and public disinterest, discontinued its own Moon program, abandoning the scheduled Apollo 18 through 21 missions, and breaking up its remaining Saturn V boosters. The U.S.A. would not return to the Moon until the 1990s, with the Pentagon's unmanned "Clementine" orbiter. Then suddenly China orbited a human, and declared its intention to go to the Moon. Suddenly American interest seemed to change again, and the Bush Administration decided it would be a good idea for America to go back while on our ultimate way to Mars.

From World War Two to the present, space represents a strange cast of characters and a strange plot indeed: Hitler, the Soviets led by Korolëv and his team of German engineers, the Americans and *their* team of German engineers, the French-dominated European space agency and *their* team of German engineers, the Japanese, the Indians, and now the Chinese. China is significant for it underscores the actual Soviet achievement, for China's space technology is but re-worked Soviet technology updated with the latest American..

1. Booster and Lift Capabilities

All this implies that the Soviet Union developed very early on boosters with enormous thrust and lift capabilities, as the following comparative chart of American and Russian rockets from the 1950s and 1960s illustrates:

American Boosters:

Russian Boosters

As even a simple physical comparison demonstrates, in terms of raw boosting power, the Russians were consistently ahead of America throughout the earliest years of the Cold War, right down to the Apollo landings themselves.

Of course this is in part explained by the fact that the Russians *had* to develop rockets with greater thrust than America for two important reasons. First, they were less successful in miniaturizing components than the Americans, and consequently, pound for functional pound, their rockets tended to be heavier. But there is a much more important and obvious reason. Given its relatively more northern latitude, the Russians could not take advantage of the greater angular velocity of the earth as could the Americans, situated as they were at more southern latitudes. At the latitude of Cape Canaveral, the angular velocity of the earth is greater than at the Soviet Baikonur Kosmodrome, and hence, American rockets were not required to generate as much thrust to lift similar payloads.

But all this really only serves to underscore the Russian achievement all the more. Working under more restrictive conditions, they overcame them. How then was Korolëv and his design team able to achieve such early and stunning success with their boosters, especially since the U.S.A. was supposed to have gained the “crème de la crème” of German rocket scientists and engineers?

G-6 . R-15
"Cluster of G-4's"
3000 kg fission warhead
R-7 Initial Design
RD-105/106 Engines
3000 kg fission warhead
R-7 Final Design
RD-107/108 Engines
5500 kg thermonuclear warhead
R-7 / Sputnik 1
RD-107/108 Engines

The First ICBM: The Russian "Sapwood";
The Same Booster was used to Launch Mankind's First Artificial Satellite, the Sputnik

2. The First ICBMs and the Characteristic Russian "Bundle" Rocket

A closer glance at the first Russian ICBM, the same rocket used to launch and orbit Sputnik, with their typical "shape" distinctive of Russian boosters all the way up to the massive Proton booster, shows how. As the close-ups of the "Sapwood" show, the typical Russian booster is not so much a *single* rocket but a "bundle" of rockets fastened around a central shaft which is itself another engine.

C. What's Wrong with This Picture?

Clearly, something is wrong with this picture. The U.S.A. *did* get the best and brightest of Nazi rocket scientists and technology, yet, the Russians made away with scores of "middle" echelon scientists and engineers. How then did Korolëv hit upon the brilliant and simple expedient of the "bundle" rocket?

The standard explanation is that Korolëv while on a walk in the woods around his dacha in Moscow was inspired by the root systems of enormous trees. They suggested to him the distinctive shape and concept of the Soviet "bundle rocket" boosters.[7] In the light of the now known state of German wartime rocketry, however, this cannot be anything other than an attempt to deflect attention away from the real origin of the concept, for as a simple expedient to achieve quick heavy lift capability, it is a characteristic more of a nation at war – and in a hurry – straining to achieve a swift entry to space and long-range rocket bombardment capabilities. It is an expedient that – like the Nazi decision to pursue only a uranium-fueled atom bomb – *fits* the practical requirements of Nazi Germany.

D. The Real Origin of the Bundle Rocket: "Projekt Zossen"

Not surprisingly, then, the real origin of the "bundle rocket" booster concept was in wartime Nazi Germany, where the idea was born – in 1942! – to "bundle together" five V-2 rocket engines, and fire them simultaneously, to achieve greater lift and range capability. The plan was called "Project Zossen," a clue, perhaps, that the origin of the idea came from within the OKW's super secret underground communications and command bunker in

---

[7] David Percy and Mary Bennett note in *Dark Moon,* p. 192, that the names chosen for America's rockets might reflect a hidden occult agenda: " It is our contention that the codenames given to projects by the Americans reveal through word association (either intentionally or unintentionally) much about their function. The names of the rockets designed by (Werner Von Braun) at this times were the Redstone and Jupiter. Although the old arsenal in which he worked at Huntsville was called Redstone, it is an interesting coincidence that Mars is also the red plant. Jupiter, associated with war and victory, is the Roman name for the god that the Greeks called Zeus, who was the father of Apollo."

Zossen, a suburb of Berlin. In any case, the project was more than just a "paper project" for two designs were actually modeled and wind tunnel tests were performed on them, as indicated by the following pictures of German wind tunnel test models:

The Bundle Rocket Design Test Model:
The Rocket Model is in Front of a Larger Rocket inside the circle

Close-up of the German "Bundle Rocket"

This expedient had the advantage over designing, testing and building an entirely new rocket in that the V-2’s components and performance capabilities were known quantities, already tested, and in production. And clearly Korolëv’s boosters are but a streamlined second generation version of the earlier Nazi prototype. But was a full scale version of the rocket, or for that matter, any of the other intercontinental rocket designs the Nazis had proposed, ever tested? To answer that question, we return to Peenemünde, at the end of the war, and notice yet another “problem.”

E. SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammlers “Evacuation” of Peenemünde and the Russian Arrival

Is there any indication that these early German ICBM “bundle rockets” or any other long-range strategic rockets went to actual construction and testing? If so, then the logical choice was Peenemünde, for in spite of the heavy attention of Allied bombers, it was the only place presumably with facilities large enough to achieve the task.

1. Strange Events at an “Empty” Site

General Walter Dornberger made it clear that as early as 1939 the ultimate goal of the Peenemünde center was to create a long range rocket capable of striking New York City and other targets on the east coast of the United States. Of course, this implies a capability to strike all of European Russia as well.[8] By July 29, 1940, at Peenemünde the engineer Graupe had already produced the first designs for a trans-Atlantic 2 stage rocket. Hermann Oberth began his own formal studies for the fuel and lift requirements for such a rocket in October of 1941,[9] as the Wehrmacht continued to liquidate the Red Army in Operation Barbarossa.

But more to the point is a letter from the Reich’s emerging “plenipotentiary for secret weapons development,” SS

---

[8] Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 29.

[9] Ibid.

Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler, dated October 1943, and stating that the development of the *Amerikaraket* continued apace.[10] Moreover, there exist estimates for cost, labor, and material for the "America Rocket" that strongly suggest that it had become more than a mere "paper project." As with anything else in Kammler's black empire of black projects, anything suggesting "labor" meant the slave labor of concentration camps, and to suggest that the project was merely a "paper project" is to diminish the human suffering that was involved in its very real flesh and blood actualization.

Another factor must be weighed. As indicated in my previous book on German secret weapons, *The Reich of the Black Sun*, there is a circumstantial case that the Nazis successfully tested an atom bomb ca. Oct. 10th, 1944, on the island of Rügen, or possibly some other island, standing along the German Baltic coast in the sea lanes running from Königsburg to Kiel.[11] This would imply that some time earlier in the summer of that year, the SS achieved some sort of breakthrough in its bomb program, perhaps finally acquiring enough critical mass to test in a bomb. In any case, the alleged Rügen test was successful, and as German researcher Friedrich Georg observes, the call then went out for "secure delivery systems."[12] It stands to reason then, that the *Amerikaraket*, given this alleged atomic bomb success and *actual* fuel air bomb success,[13] was much more than a "paper rocket." By the time of its successful testing in 1944, the paper studies and wind tunnel tests were already two years old! The rocket was, in other words, on the track to actual testing and production.

---

[10] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[11] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 70-80.

[12] Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* p. 36, my translation. This illustrates another facet of the German secret programs, one overlooked by most authors, namely, that unlike other countries, it appears that the Nazis gave the formal order for the development of these weapons *after* a test had been successfully completed. Thus, the order to "develop" such weapons should not be taken as an order to establish the research necessary to bring them to *realization*, but rather as the order to bring them to *production.* It is thus noteworthy that Hitler signs the order to "develop" the atomic bomb *after* the alleged test in Rügen occurs. The same, in fact, could be said of the V-2, for it is only after Hitler sees films of the rocket being successfully launched that he gives the order to develop it.

[13] See *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 191-193.

All this leads us to General Kammler's January 31, 1945 order to evacuate Peenemünde. According to the standard line, the explanation for this curious order is that the Red Army was expected to arrive at any moment. But the Red Army would not arrive at Peenemünde until May 4th![14] This poses a significant question: Was Peenemünde, as Friedrich Georg puts it, merely a "ghost town" for the three months from the evacuation order to the Russian arrival?[15] The order is even more curious given the fact that, since the massive British Royal Air Force raid in 1943 that all but destroyed the facility, the process had already begun of moving as much of the V-2 production to underground sites as possible. True, the process was slow and still continuing when Kammler's 1945 order came down, but nonetheless, it was already well under way. By early 1945 most of the V-2 production was at the massive underground factory of the notorious Mittelwerk at Nordhausen. Thus the problem: Why give an order for something already taking place?

One late war incident suggests, and suggests quite strongly, that this was *not* the case, for on March 9, 1945, a British twin-engine photo-reconnaissance Mosquito fighter-bomber was chased from Peenemünde by no less than *three* German Messerschmitt 262 jet fighters.[16] Of course, one possible explanation for the British presence at the site was that they were simply trying to confirm what their intelligence had probably already told them, namely, that Peenemünde had been evacuated.

But while that may explain the presence of the RAF Mosquito, it is *not* a good explanation for the – by that late date – relatively heavy presence of the Luftwaffe in the form of no less than three of its rare and valuable Messerschmitt 262 jet fighters. *Three* jets just to chase an unarmed British photo-reconnaissance plane from a "ghost town"? Clearly this makes no sense, and implies that something was still taking place at Peenemünde, something very secret and very important, something requiring all the protection the crumbling Luftwaffe could muster.

---

[14] Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* p. 75.

[15] Ibid., p. 76.

[16] Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* pp. 76-77.

Seen in this way Kammler's "evacuation" order of January 31, 1945 thus appears to be a clever ploy by the security-obsessed SS general, designed to throw Allied and Soviet intelligence off the trail of whatever was still going on there. Since most of the V-1 and V-2 teams were long gone from Peenemünde to their new underground facilities, something *else* must have been going on that merited such heavy protection.

But what was it?

Fortunately, there do exist reports that during the period from March to April (and perhaps as late as May) 1945 that there were at least *four* tests of a large rocket named "Thor's Hammer" or the *Amerikaraket*. These reports moreover name both Peenemünde and Ohrdruf – site of the second alleged German a-bomb test on March 4, 1945[17] - as the possible sites of these tests. It is unlikely that Ohrdruf functioned as a test site for such a large rocket, since there was present there none of the necessary facilities to assemble and launch such a vehicle. So one is left with Peenemünde, the most likely place. In any case, three of these tests were allegedly shots of the *Amerikaraket* into the Atlantic, and a fourth test was allegedly to see if orbit could be achieved![18]

But there is even further corroboration of mysterious goings-on at Peenemünde at the war's end.

2. The "Urals Incident"

Oddly, while Peenemünde was visited only lightly by the British RAF after its massive 1943 air raid, it was visited often, and heavily, by the Soviet Red Air Force right up to the war's end, suggesting that, if the British had fallen for Kammler's ruse, the

---

[17] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 80-88.

[18] Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* p. 79. Geoffrey Brooks corroborates the test launch of some longer-ranged version of the V-2 from the Ohrdruf region in the Harz: The A-9 'winged V-2' project was resurrected in 1944/45. German testimonies allege that at least one successful test launch was made from the Harz in March 1945 and in mass production this rocket could have hit London from central Germany." (Brook, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 19).

Soviets had not. It is an indication that they knew something that the Allies did not.

Late-war German long-range rocket activity is corroborated, in fact, by the Russians themselves. In the Spanish language edition of the Soviet Russian science magazine *Sputnik* there is a report of the destruction in 1945 – during the war – of a Russian munitions factory in the Ural Mountains near the river Tobol. Notably, the article ascribed the destruction to a "terror attack" of "fascist perfidy" much like "the later attacks of American B-52 bombers against the port city of Haiphong in Vietnam."[19] If the Russian report is accurate and not merely a typical Communist exercise in disinformation or blame-shifting for their own bureaucratic incompetence, then this most probably was a rocket attack, since by that late date in the war the Luftwaffe had little left by way of long range heavy bombers able to make the trip,[20] a trip that in any case had little prospect of success given the Red Air Force's mastery of the skies over eastern Europe. Only a rocket attack could guarantee success for such an operation.

Given all the foregoing, it is reasonable to conclude that the Nazis may actually have been successful in testing the first strategic ballistic missiles toward the end of the war, while falling just short of getting them into production.

….or is that too, yet another dangerous myth?

We shall answer that question in a subsequent chapter.

For now, we address another question. If the Nazis had indeed tested such long-range rockets, much less successfully fired one on Soviet Russia, then this implies that yet another phase of the *Amerikaraket* went beyond merely being a "paper study." The Nazis could have tested all the long range rockets they wished, but they would have been utterly useless without a means to guide them to target.

Thus, the existence of a credible long range and secure guidance system is also corroborative evidence that the *Amerikaraket* was not just a paper project. The question is, did the

---

[19] Ibid., p. 80.

[20] Most of the Luftwaffe's bombers capable of making the trip were being husbanded in Norway for an eminent operation against New York City. See *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 97-98.

Nazis have such means of guidance? The answer is yes, and they did not just exist on paper.

F. Over-the-Horizon Radars and the Amerikaraket

Successful German tests of long range rockets, much less an actual German rocket attack on Russian sites in the Urals, implies the existence of associated technologies and methods to guide such missiles accurately to their targets. Indeed, from the scientific and engineering point of view in the early 1940s, accurate guidance of such rockets was the principal problem that the Germans faced, not the actual rocket itself. A number of methods were therefore proposed to make the *Amerikaraket* accurate, some technological, others less so.

Given that the *Amerikaraket* was intended to carry "small atom bombs"[21] and "other weapons of mass destruction,"[22] and since the inertial guidance system of the V-2 would have been inadequate and inaccurate for attacking targets on the American east coast, the Nazis had to consider a variety of alternative modes for guidance. In other words, if the *Amerikaraket* was *not* a paper project, then one should expect the Germans to be working in each of the following areas:

(1) technological and secure means of guiding a rocket to targets at long range; or, failing that,
(2) alternative methods of guiding a rocket accurately to a target at long range; and,
(3) technologies of *miniaturizing* enough rocket and/or A-bomb (or H-bomb or fuel-air bomb)[23] components to enable a long range rocket to be able to carry such heavy payloads.

---

[21] Georg, *Star Wars 1947,* pp. 28-32, especially p. 31.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 190-193.

Viewed in this way, the *Amerikaraket* was anything *but* a paper project, since the Nazis considered any number of methods, from "back-pack" piloted rockets, to enable a pilot to guide the rocket to target visually before bailing out at the last minute, to actually planting a radio transponder inside the Empire State Building for a rocket to home in on,[24] to much more sophisticated and ultimately much more secure technological means of guidance based on beam riding and *radar interference.* It is this last category that is of most interest to our purposes in this book, for it is this last area of development that points very clearly to Nazi interest in, and development of, areas of physics ultimately very *different* than those pursued by their Allied counterparts.

1. The German Proto-Transistor And Television Minaturization

Before examining German accomplishments in the technology of long-range rocket guidance, it is necessary to examine their success in the equally important area of miniaturization of components. Such a step was absolutely necessary if the Third Reich was ever to be successful in wedding its atom bomb – a notoriously heavy device in those days – to a rocket. Indeed, as I pointed out in *Reich of the Black Sun*, any and every method appears to have been pursued by Kammler's SS *Sonderkommando*, including techniques of boosting nuclear fission of atomic nuclei to lower the weight of the critical mass of a nuclear warhead.[25] But there were other successes in miniaturization.

It is well known that Nazi Germany, during the infamous 1936 Berlin Olympics, successfully created the first live television broadcast of a sports event for a general public. The following is a picture of one of the large and cumbersome television cameras – then "state of the art" – that were stationed at crucial locations around the Olympic stadium at Tempelhof Field in Berlin.

---

[24] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 175.

[25] *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 83-85.

1936 German Television Camera at the Berlin Olympics

Television sets were placed at various locations in the Olympic village and the environs of Greater Berlin to allow the visiting athletes, tourists and German citizens to watch the games as they occurred. Needless to say, for Dr. Josef Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry it was a propaganda coup of the first order, and a clear demonstration to the world of German technological prowess.

During the war, however, television quickly suggested itself to the Germans as a means of visually guiding a short-range missile to target by placing a television camera in the nose of a missile. Transmitting a picture back to an operator on the ground or in an airplane, the rocket could then be unerringly guided to target. And by war's end, they had successfully tested the first such "smart bomb."[26]

Obviously, placing a television camera of the size of those used in the 1936 Olympic Games inside a missile was impractical, and so the camera had to be considerably miniaturized.

By the war's end, the Germans had been hugely successful in this task, accomplishing an *almost tenfold reduction in size*, as this photo of a small television camera and receiver set, about the size of a large shoebox, attests:

---

[26] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 184.

Miniature German Television Camera for Missile Guidance

Moreover, this miniaturization implies something enormously important, and its importance will become more and more apparent as we proceed in part two of this work, for such a tremendous reduction in size implies some sort of breakthrough in vacuum tube technology, if not in semi-conductor research itself.

The mention of semi-conductors is intentional, for they may have accomplished much more, as the following picture demonstrates:

Telefunken

German "Proto-Transistor" from 1940

The pictured klystron tube is the same approximate size as the last knuckle and fingertip of the reader's little finger!

In short, the Germans came exceedingly close, very early in the war, by virtue of competent research in semi-conductors, to achieving the transistor, for the *Allied equivalent of this little tube at the* ***end*** *of the war is ten times as large!* This little "proto-transistor", dating from 1940 (!), was used in 1941 in small radios that actually entered production for the German military, radios that were "as small as the later transistor radios of the 1950s and that also functioned with batteries."[27]

The mere existence of this little tube is the first glimpse of a *very* significant problematic that will preoccupy us in part three of this book, and that was mentioned in the last two chapters of my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun.* The problematic may be glimpsed here as a kind of preview to part three, and it is best stated in conjunction with Lt. Col. Philip J. Corso's book, *The Day After Roswell.*

2. The Problem of the Miniature German Klystron Tube: Roswell, The E.T. Myth and the Nazi Legend Revisited

Lt. Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, Ret.) was perhaps something of a Godsend to UFO enthusiasts, for he corroborated – at least on the surface – the whole Roswell UFO-and-ET-crash and recovery scenario in his well-known book, *The Day After Roswell.* Corso's thesis is familiar to most people who have investigated the UFO literature.

In his post as a top national security military officer, Corso maintains in his book that he was entrusted with some of the "recovered technology" from the "alien craft" that crashed at Roswell. His assignment was gradually to "seed" those aspects of "recovered ET technology" into American industry. Corso further maintains that among some of this "recovered and gradually seeded" technology were lasers, computers, fiber optics, and *transistors.*[28] Of course, after the book's appearance and Corso's own appearance on a popular overnight radio talk show, critical and historical analysis was all but suspended, and there was a further boost to the "ET" interpretation of the Roswell incident, all as a result of his book.

---

[27] Georg, *Star Wars, p. 91.*

[28] Philip J. Corso, (Lt. Col, US Army, Ret), *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 167-168.

Crucial to Corso's case was the transistor, and he spends a great deal of time in his book demonstrating that his thesis of its "ET-Roswell" origin has to be true by pointing out that the history of the discovery of the transistor by Bell Laboratories is obscure at best.[29] The reason? Very simple. The transistor *had* no prior "discovery history" because it was "ET" in origin.

But given what has now been demonstrated, we propose that, like the ambiguity in the MAJIC-12 documents themselves – vacillating between technologies clearly exotic though terrestrial and an "ET" cover story – there is *another* possible explanation for the origin of the transistor, one which, as we saw in *Reich of the Black Sun,*[30] it would appear that the highest authorities, including the military, wish to keep covered up. That other possible source for the transistor, one that would *much more satisfactorily explain* its obscure discovery history than the ET hypothesis, is wartime Nazi research and accomplishment in semiconductor research.

Simply put, Corso's work is, in this respect at least, pure obfuscation and disinformation, since one can only assume that a man of Corso's obvious intelligence could not have been unaware of German wartime scientific achievements, as plausibly demonstrated by the above miniature tube, fully *seven* years before the Roswell incident and its recovery of "advanced ET technology."

But there are other aspects of Corso's work that must also be called into question vis-à-vis the state of Nazi secret weapons research. It is well known that the Germans undertook and developed a wide range of infrared sites to enhance the night-fighting ability of their tanks and infantry. What is *not* generally known is the apparently high state of development of second and third generation technologies these infrared sites may have represented, for Polish researcher Igor Witkowski uncovered a certain amount of evidence in a recently declassified Alsos report that indicates preliminary work was undertaken in *liquid crystals* and something the Germans called "optical telephony."[31] This is an extremely intriguing discovery, because fiber optics is yet another technology that Col. Corso maintained was recovered from "ET" at Roswell and "gradually seeded" into American industry.

---

[29] Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 167-168. See also chapter seven for more details.

[30] *Reich of the Black Sun,* Chapter 16, "Roswell: The ET Myth vs. The Nazi Legend," pp. 274-330.

3. Over the Horizon Radars

One little known aspect of German wartime research is the area of over-the-horizon radars. While the Nazis were pursuing a number of options for the guidance of their intercontinental *Amerikaraket,* including a piloted version from which the pilot would eject at the last moment, the most preferred method was "beam riding," a method that would allow the rocket to be guided to target by a beam. One project consisted of placing a secret radio transmitter inside the Empire State building for the purpose![32]

But by far the most serious and promising – and technologically involved – methods were the various Over-the-Horizon Radars that the Germans were developing for the purpose, the sets *Elefant, See-Elefant,* and the mobile *Freya* unit. The *Elefant* set was developed by the Research Department of the *Deutsche Reischspost*, and was the world's first genuine over-the-horizon radar based on temperature inversions in the ionosphere.[33] The *See-Elefant* was a further development of this equipment, and was built in western Denmark and consisted of a sending antenna, approximately 100 meters high, placed between two permanent receiving antennae some distance to either side. It was a broadband antenna system, operating in the 23-29 MHz, 24-30MHz, and 30-38 MHz range.[34]

But the most advanced of these early over-the-horizon radars was the *Freya* unit, a "revolutionary system" that was "fully mobile."[35] The *Freya* unit's basic principle of operation is visible from this German schematic from 1945:

---

[31] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 158.

[32] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 175.

[33] Ibid., p. 95.

[34] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars,* pp. 95, 97.

[35] Ibid., p. 98.

Bordgerät
Erstling
Abstand z. Leitebene
Lenkverfahren mit Freya-Erstling
Leitebene
Abb. 4
Empfangs-Antenne I
Sende-Antenne
Freya
Sende-u. Empfangs-Anlage
Empfangs-Antenne II
30m
30m
B 29/45

German Schematic of Freya's Basic Operating Principle

The basic idea is evident from an artist's sketch dated March 30, 1945, of the *Freya* unit emplaced and ready to transmit. The diagram labels each of these antennae the *Sende und Empfangs-*

Antennae, the *Sende Antenna I* and *Send Antenna II.*[36] Thus, the *Freya* unit represents a considerably newer and different principle than the *Elefant* or *See-Elefant,* with their single sending and two receiving antennae. The central sending and receiving antenna sends out a pulse, which is also sent as secondary pulses *slightly later* by the antennae to either side. This is a true *phased array* radar, able to shape and bend its signals around the curvature of the earth, or "over the horizon."

Freya Anlage
in Feuerstellung
① Freya-Sende-u.Empfangs-Anlage
② Stromversorgungswagen
③ Sende-Antenne II
④ Sende-u.Empfangs-Antenne
⑤ Sende-Antenne I
Abb.8

Artist's Sketch of Freya

Consequently, the Germans, in spite of some technical shortcomings of their radar operations during the war, were experimenting in areas that were quite advanced for the day:

(a) Broadband radar systems based on
(b) Phased array "signal shaping" for
(c) Over-the-horizon, or "action at a distance" operation.

As will be subsequently argued in chapter five, they were combining all these ideas with that of sending pulses of bursts of energy. All of this was, of course, for the long-range guidance of their projected intercontinental rockets.

---

[36] Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 97. See also chapter five of the current work for the diagram and its importance for the type of physics the Nazis may have been developing.

In any case, the accuracy of these types of systems had been brought to a high state by the Germans by October of 1943. By that time, the accuracy was such that it was able to guide aircraft at a distance of 105 kilometers, during a bombing run, to release their bombs within 600 meters of their target, even though it was not visible to them.[37]

However, as will be seen in a later chapter, the Germans may have discovered something while operating these sophisticated radar units that indicated they were a door beckoning to a whole new type of physics, one with a far greater promise than mere long-range rockets carrying atomic bombs.

The real question, the one that will now preoccupy us for the remainder of this book, remains: *why would the military-industrial-national security complex be so concerned to deflect attention away from Nazi scientific achievements – an effort represented by Colonel Corso's* The Day After Roswell - *even at this late date, unless there is something it still wishes to hide?* The answer is twofold. The most important part of the answer lies in what the Germans may have discovered with these radar sets, a part with which we shall have much to do when we finally turn to examine the exotic type of physics the Nazis may have been developing in part two.

For now we will turn to a less important reason, the reason that, if one pulled on the thread long enough and hard enough, would inevitably lead one to ask questions about the "public consumption" history of the race to the moon, the most visible aspect of the survival of Nazi research projects and their "creative financing" in the post-war world.

---

[37] Ibid., p. 99.

3.

"From Russia with Love:"

The Two Space Programs Hypothesis

"The Second World War was an air war; the Third World War will be a space war."
Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring, shortly before his suicide, from a letter of October 1946 to Sir Winston Churchill[1]

"Control of space means control of the world…. There is something more important than the ultimate weapon. That is the ultimate position – the position of total control over Earth that lies somewhere in outer space…"
President (then U.S. Senate Majority Leader) Lyndon Baines Johnson, Speech before the Senate Democratic Caucus, January 7, 1958.[2]

What do celebrated Face-on-Mars expert Richard C. Hoagland, conspiriologist Jim Keith, Apollo program "whistleblowers" David Percy and Mary Bennett, an anonymous Texas lawyer, famous New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison, "occult" author "Jan Van Helsing," and even Werner Von Braun himself all have in common? All of them believe, in some fashion, that there have been, for quite some time, *two* space programs, one for public consumption, and another deeply covert one with its own agenda.

And the idea is not confined to books or non-fiction. In the classic James Bond film *Diamonds Are Forever*, a young Sean Connery tracks down a plot for world domination by the sinister "independent villain" Ernst Stavro Blohfeld to a kidnapped eccentric multi-billionaire – played by country singer Jimmy Dean - who lives in a Las Vegas penthouse, and to his secret corporate headquarters somewhere in the Nevada desert. If all this sounds vaguely familiar, hang on.

Once having infiltrated the secret Nevada installation, Connery-Bond then exchanges brief remarks with a German scientist – Pr. Dr. Metz is the name of the character in the film – who is working with diamonds for use in a super-laser to be orbited in a satellite in space as the ultimate missile-destroying weapon, thus rendering America's nuclear arsenal useless. While on this world-saving mission, Bond manages to escape the compound through a television sound stage, a set which depicts a lunar landscape, complete with suited "astronauts" going through the slow-motions of a well-scripted lunar landing. These film facts have long led those who believe that the Apollo lunar landings were hoaxed to maintain that Ian Fleming, creator of the famous British spy character and himself an intelligence agent during the war, was leaking "inside information."

---

[1] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 9.

[2] Cited in Mary Bennett, David S. Percy, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistle-Blowers* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 165, 518.

Apparently Ian Fleming was not the only one involved in such "leaks," for another famous movie, *Seven Days in May*, this time by Rod Serling, celebrated creator of the famous *Twilight Zone* television series, told the story of an attempted right-wing military coup against a weak and apparently "liberal" President. The coup was centered on a secret military base somewhere in the desert of the American southwest. So real was Serling's screenplay that the release of the movie was actually delayed after the assassination of President Kennedy for fears that it might raise too many questions. And that may not have been entirely coincidental, for President Kennedy had indeed given actual assistance to Serling when he was writing his screenplay. Did Kennedy let Serling know, in so many terms, about Area 51?

And, to round out the picture, another famous movie contributed significantly in conspiracy circles to the view of "movies-as-deliberate-leaks". The movie was *Capricorn One.* In the movie, three astronauts are placed into a space capsule bound for Mars on mankind's first manned flight to the Red Planet. But, at the last minute, they are secretly taken off the rocket and flown to – you guessed it – a secret desert base in the American southwest where, before television cameras and a full sound lot movie mock-up set of the Martian surface, the three astronauts then act out their carefully scripted parts of the voyage to and landing on Mars. To round out the picture of conspiracy, the three astronauts, having pangs of conscience, decide to expose the whole farce, and orders are given to hunt them down and ensure the project's secrecy. Meanwhile, a curious ground member of the mission control crew, who has spotted anomalies in the data that do not square with a mission to Mars, is eliminated.

A. The Two Space Program Hypothesis

If anything emerges from these three famous "cult film" classics, it is a theme one encounters quite frequently in some "conspiracy" literature, aspects of which are as follows:

1. The Apollo Moon missions, or at least *some aspects* of them, were a hoax, and the Apollo missions did not happen in exactly the way we were told they happened;
2. As a corollary to this idea, there is the notion that there are *two* space programs, one for public consumption, and another hidden one, being controlled or coordinated by the military-industrial complex;
3. People have been murdered, or at least died under mysterious circumstances, who have attempted to expose this secret program and public hoax; and finally, if one adds Serling's plot into this mix,
4. There is some element or aspect of a *coup d'etat* hovering in the background.

We shall call these four elements the "Two Space Programs" Hypothesis. And as will be seen below as the main *non*-fictional versions of it are examined, there are indeed unusually cogent arguments that at least some version of the hypothesis may in fact be true.

1.The Torbitt Document Version

Perhaps the most famous and yet paradoxically least known version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is that of the so-called "Torbitt" document on the assassination of President Kennedy. Well-known to JFK assassination researchers since its first appearance in photocopied "samizdat" form in the 1970s, the document is hardly known at all to the general public, even amongst those inclined to believe that some sort of conspiracy was involved in the assassination.

Such a response, however, hardly captures the document's singular importance. Indeed, as well-known "conspiriologist" Kenn Thomas notes, it is arguably "the pivotal document of JFK assassination research,"[3] if for no other reason than the sensational contents it contains, for its contents were in turn *summarized from New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's famous (or infamous) investigation of the case*. Its truly remarkable contents are even more explosive considering the fact that in almost *no* version of the JFK assassination conspiracy that make their rounds every few years when a new book is published on the subject, are the Torbitt Document's main characters ever mentioned. Indeed, not even Garrison dwelt too long on this particular aspect that his own investigators discovered, and Oliver Stone ignored this aspect of the story completely in his celebrated movie on the Garrison investigation, *JFK*. Nonetheless, the Committee on Assassinations in the 1970s took it seriously enough to *entirely prohibit discussion* or even mention of any possible Nazi connection with the assassination.

But what could have been so sensational about a single pseudonymously authored "samizdat" manuscript privately circulated in assassination conspiracy circles? Kenn Thomas once again summarizes some of its highly unusual contents:

> It makes connections to such then-unknown governmental spy agencies as Defense Industrial Security Command and Division Five of the FBI; it suggests that a former prime minister of Hungary was the infamous "umbrella man" seen in the Zapruder film; it introduces to the assassination lore such personalities as Fred Crisman (spelled Chrismon" by Torbitt) as one of the railroad tramps behind the grassy knoll.[4]

Just in case the reader does not know who these individuals are, nor why they should be significant, a brief word is necessary. The former Prime Minister of Hungary referred to is Ferenc Nagy, a man who was nothing less than a puppet of the Nazis during World War Two. What he should be doing on the grassy knoll clearly signaling someone by closing his umbrella just as President Kennedy’s limousine is driving by, no one knows. And as if that were not strange enough, the Crisman referred to is none other than Fred Chrisman, well known for his involvement in the infamous Maury Island UFO affair in 1947 in Seattle-Tacoma, Washington.[5]

---

[3] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination ,* with Introduction by Kenn Thomas and Foreword by David Hatcher Childress(Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996), p. 6.

[4] Ibid..

Just what this oddball cast of characters should have to do with the Kennedy assassination not even the Torbitt document pretends to know, as no explanations or possible motivations are offered. But one can imagine the perplexity of District Attorney Garrison when he learned of Chrisman’s odd background prior to serving a subpoena on him!

In any case, a clue to it all is perhaps afforded by the reference to the “Defense Industrial Security Command”. What was this entity? Here, it is best to cite the Torbitt document itself, rather than Thomas’ introduction:

> The killing of President Kennedy was planned and supervised by Division Five of the Federal Bureau of Investigation, a relatively small department within the FBI whose usual duties are espionage and counter-espionage activities.
>
> Actually, Division Five acted dually with the Defense Intelligence Agency which was acting on behalf of the Joints Chiefs of Staff (sic) in the Pentagon. Directly under the two-pronged leadership of Division Five and the DIA was the Control Group, their highly secret police agency – the Defense Industrial Security Command. The Defense Industrial Security Command has always been kept secret because it acts, in addition to its two *official* control organizations, on behalf of NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, U.S. Information Agency, and the arms, equipment, ammunition, munitions and related miscellaneous supply manufacturing corporations contracting with NASA, the AEC, USIA, and the Pentagon….

---

[5] The Maury Island affair is one of the more unusual UFO-debris retrieval cases, long regarded by most UFOlogists as a complete hoax. Chrisman claimed to have recovered slag-like debris from a “malfunctioning” UFO while on a boat in Puget Sound. The debris was later examined and allegedly placed in a cereal box to be flown to an Air Force base. But the debris never made it to the base, as the twin engine bomber flying it inexplicably crashed.

> The Defense Industrial Security Command had its beginnings when J. Edgar Hoover in the early 1930's organized the police force of the Tennessee Valley Authority at the request of David Lilienthal. The police force covered the entire TVA from Knoxville, Tennessee through Huntsville and Florence, Alabama and into Kentucky and back through the eastern portion of Tennessee into southern Kentucky. This was one of the first federal agencies with a separate police force. This force grew and Lilienthal took it forward to cover the Atomic Energy Commission, thus tying it into the army intelligence service.
>
> ….A Swiss corporation, Permindex, was used to head five front organizations responsible for furnishing personnel and supervisors to carry out assigned duties (in the assassination).
>
> The five groups under Permindex and their supervisors were:
>
> 1. The Czarist Russian, eastern European and Middle East exile organization called SOLIDARISTS, (sic) headed by Ferenc Nagy, ex-Hungarian premier, and John DeMenil, Russian exile from Houston, Texas, a close friend and supporter of Lyndon Johnson for over thirty years.
> 2. A section of the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF CHRISTIAN CHURCHES headed by H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Texas.
> 3. A Cuban exile group called FREE CUBA COMMITTEE headed by Carlos Prio Socarras, ex-Cuban president.
> 4. An organization of United States, Caribbean, and Havana, Cuba gamblers called the Syndicate…. This group worked closely with a Mafia family headed by Joe Bonanno.
> 5. The SECURITY DIVISION of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) headed by Werner Von Braun, head of the German Nazi rocket program from 1932 through 1945.[6] Headquarters for this group was the DEFENSE INDUSTRIAL SECURITY COMMAND at Muscle Shoals Redstone Arsenal in Alabama and on East Broad Street in Columbus, Ohio.[7]

These are sensational allegations, indeed, so much so that one might be tempted to dismiss the document entirely, were it not for the fact that it is but a summary of the more unusual aspects of the Garrison investigation.

---

[6] This is an inaccuracy, since the Nazi government was not formed until President Hindenburg appointed Hitler Reich Chancellor and asked him to form a government on January 30, 1933.

[7] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 24-27.

However, it would be a mistake to dismiss the document out of hand, for careful examination of the components of the conspiracy – in *its* version of the event – reveal that with but one or two exceptions, it is the standard intelligence-military industrial complex-in-cahoots-with-the-Mafia scenario that are common themes among more popular versions of the conspiracy.[8]

But added to this there are a number of new players:

1. H.L. Hunt and an organization that is basically connected to fundamentalist-evangelical revivalist "Protestantism," in other words, *big oil* masking behind a missionary organization;[9]
2. A group of Eastern European exiles of right-wing political complexion, "headed by Ferenc Nagy."

Let us pause a moment to consider these new players on the scene.

Most JFK conspiracy literature *does* mention Lee Harvey Oswald's and Marina Oswald's connection to the Russian and White Russian émigré community in Dallas, and in turn the connections of that community to big oil. Nonetheless, not much is made of this connection. It is as if researchers do not really know what to make of it. About all that one typically encounters is the fact that the Oswalds' landlord, Ruth Paine, was involved in this community, and that her husband, Michael, worked for Bell Aerospace, the same Bell Aerospace that employed General Walter Dornberger, military head of Hitler's V-2 project in conjunction with Werner Von Braun. But here most assassination researchers stop, not really noticing that the Nazi connections would multiply like rabbits, if one cared to look for them, for the fact of the matter is, the various societies, organizations, and groups of this Eastern

---

[8] I should make it clear that I do *not* believe the Warren Commission version of the assassination, and *do* believe that a conspiracy was involved, one that most likely was composed of at least the elements outlined here.

[9] The American Council of Christian Churches did publish literature against theological liberalism as well as funded missionaries in Central and South America. However, it is known that some of its members used it as a front to train death squads and conduct assassinations in those areas. Some have alleged that the organization was actually established by the "intelligence community" for precisely this purpose, and to launder money into this country.

European émigré community were but the North American connections – the leftovers, so to speak – of the vast network of German military intelligence that operated on and behind the Russian front throughout World War Two.

This military intelligence group was called *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East) and was headed by General Reinhard Gehlen. We shall have much more to say both about this intelligence network and its commanding general later. For now, however, it is to be noted that the Torbitt document, by naming Ferenc Nagy as "head" of this émigré community, is perhaps speaking symbolically, pointing the finger to a very hidden Nazi presence in the assassination. We are now in a position to examine the last new player in the assassination that the document mentions:

3. NASA security, headed by Von Braun, working inside the Defense Industrial Security Command (D.I.S.C.!) at Redstone Arsenal in Alabama.

In other words, the third new player in the assassination is the space program, and the Torbitt Document further implies that it is an aspect of the space program that is not only relatively hidden from the general public, but also which is under the direct control of Werner Von Braun, yet another Nazi connection.

But what of the "Permindex Corporation" in Switzerland, the entity allegedly coordinating all this malfeasance for the FBI and DIA? Who was involved with it? What were its purposes? A glance at its Board of Directors indicates why it attracted the attention of District Attorney Garrison, for among those on its board were, of course, Clay Shaw, the man Garrison actually indicted for conspiracy to murder the president. But others included an Italian Fascist who had married into the family of Hjalmar Schacht,[10] Hitler's president of the Reichsbank and finance minister, and interestingly enough, also father-in-law to Hitler's favorite SS commando, Otto Skorzeny. But these men hardly exhaust the unusual characters. There was an uncle to

---

[10] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK*, p. 47.

Egyptian King Farouk,[11] the Italian minister of agriculture under Mussolini's government, and yet another Hungarian ex-Nazi besides Ferenc Nagy, H. Simonfay.[12]

As if that were not enough, the Torbitt Document then goes on to provide a rather thorough list of Permindex's principal financial backing, a list that reads like a veritable who's who of conspiracies and scandals that had *not yet even happened:*

> The principal financiers of Permindex were a number of U.S. oil companies, H. L. Hunt of Dallas, Clint Murchison of Dallas, John DeMenil, Solidarist director of Houston, John Connally as executor of the Sid Richardson estate, Haliburton Oil Co., Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, Troy Post of Dallas, Lloyd Cobb of New Orleans, Dr. Oechner of New Orleans, George and Herman Brown of Brown and Root, Houston, Attorney Roy M. Cohn, Chairman of the Board for Lionel Corporation, New York City, Schlemley Industries of New York City, Walter Dornberger, ex-Nazi general and his company, Bell Aerospace, Pan American World Airways and its subsidiary, Intercontinental Hotel Corporation…

and last but by no means least

> …NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command.[13]

In reading this bizarre list, one cannot help but think of the scandals-to-come, the Hunts and their attempt to corner the silver market and create a silver-backed currency for Texas(H. L. Hunt), the numerous allegations of conspiracy involved in the death of Karen Silkwood and her exposure of Kerr-McGee(Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma), current allegations that the real motivation for war with Iraq was oil (Haliburton).

And that's not all. Even Senator Joseph McCarthy's ghost hovers over the list of Permindex characters in the form of his legal council Roy Cohn. As if that were not enough, one of the banks through which Permindex often allegedly worked or channeled funds was the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro of Italy, a bank linked to many other shady scandals, including that of the notorious Bank of Credit and Commerce International, or BCCI scandal. And, at the end of this list, as if to highlight its importance, is NASA and its contractors, who, notes the Torbitt Document, "are directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command," which is headed by Werner Von Braun.

---

[11] Ibid.

[12] Ibid., p. 48. The Torbitt Document is actually citing the well-known Garrison-based JFK conspiracy book, *The Kennedy Conspiracy*, by the flamboyant Paris Flammonde.

[13] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document*, pp. 49-50, emphasis added.

But directed to do what? Why would Werner Von Braun possibly be involved in such an affair?

The answer, perhaps, lies in the Torbitt Document's stated purposes of the Permindex Corporation:

> 1. To fund and direct assassinations of European, Mid-East and world leaders considered threats to the Western World and to petroleum interests of the backers.
> 2. To furnish couriers, agents, and management in transporting, depositing and re-channeling funds through Swiss banks for Las Vegas, Miami, Havana and international gambling syndicate.
> 3. To co-ordinate the espionage activities of the Solidarists and Division Five of the FBI with groups in sympathy with their objectives and to receive and channel funds and arms from the financiers to the action groups.
> 4. To build, acquire and operate hotels and gambling casinos in the Caribbean, Italy and at other tourist areas.[14]

Permindex, in other words, *was* the "Murder Incorporated" referred to by subsequent American Presidents.

But what does all this mean? What do these "purposes" indicate about the real nature of Permindex and its "backers"? Note first of all the purpose of eliminating, by assassination, any threat to the "petroleum interests of the backers." In other words, big oil once again. Note also, that *any alternative technology such as those represented by cold fusion, or "zero point energy" devices, would represent precisely such a threat.* So one may safely assume that one is to take "the protection of the oil interests" in the widest possible sense, as not only eliminating foreign governments or parties that would threaten these interests' overseas investments, but also the elimination of anyone presuming to a develop a technology *not* dependent on oil for energy.

---

[14] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document,* pp 48-49.

Points two and three, however, point to something even deeper, and that is not only a hidden intelligence connection – a group operating *within* or only *in conjunction with* established and official agencies of the U.S. Federal government – but also a means for the independent financing of such groups and means of laundering the money to do it: casinos, ideal vehicles for laundering vast amounts of money quickly. This would explain the Mafia connection and involvement: it was at a "low" level of the conspiracy, the level necessary only for ensuring easy access and flow of dirty money to finance these projects.

All this makes a very strange context in which to view the last component of Permindex's backers, "NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command." What possible connection could NASA's DISC under the direction of Von Braun have to do with this? One answer, perhaps, lies in the implied suggestion that Permindex may have conducted assassinations to protect more than just the oil industry.

The Torbitt Document later provides an indicator of just who might have really been pulling the strings in the "corporation" when it stated "Permindex in Switzerland, basically a NATO intelligence front using the remnants of Adolph Hitler's intelligence units in West Germany and also, the intelligence unit of the Solidarists headquarters in Munich, Germany."[15] Munich was, of course, also General Reinhard Gehlen's personal headquarters for his Gehlenorg,[16] the network of spies and "Solidarists" he continued to run both behind the Iron Curtain and elsewhere, ostensibly for the Central Intelligence Agency and the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst.* The Gehlenorg and its many connections were even implicated in the Generals' Plot, the assassination attempt on French President Charles DeGaulle, an attempt DeGaulle's *Sureté* quickly and efficiently traced and eliminated.[17]

---

[15] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document,* p. 75.

[16] Gehlen's headquarters was actually outside Munich, in the town of Pullach.

[17] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: the Torbitt Document,* pp. 74-78.

But why, again, would Von Braun be involved in such a conspiracy? While the Torbitt Document ultimately does not provide much of an answer to this question, it does hint at an answer that, shorn of its Nazi associations, will become a standard theme in some conspiracy views on the assassination, most notably that of Oliver Stone in his famous movie on the Garrison investigation, *JFK.* The Torbitt Document raises the prospect of the immense profits to be made from war, namely, the war in Vietnam:

> The Nazi scientists are on management level also in the munitions and aerospace industry. Walter Dornberger, the Nazi general, left the space agency in the 1950's to become a high official in Bell Aerospace Corporation and he was followed by over thirty of the Nazi scientists to control level in the corporations manufacturing munitions and aerospace material. This still left well over sixty of the scientists at command level in NASA.[18]

Of course, in the 1950s the war in Vietnam was ending its French phase and only entering the American one, but in any case, the motive is clearly implied: there were big profits to be made in war.

Moreover, the positioning of these Paperclip Project Nazis in key American defense industries may be an indicator of something far different taking place: *the extension of influence by means of interlocking personnel in many management positions.* This may easily be understood by recalling a method noted by many other writers on conspiracy, namely, that the method whereby power was concentrated in fewer and fewer hands by such financial dynasties as Rockefeller, Morgan, Warburg, or Rothschild, was simply to insist, as part of a condition of receiving a loan or grant from their institutions, that those institutions themselves were allowed to seat a representative on the loan recipient's governing board. This was usually done by collateralizing the loan with stock in the company receiving the loan.

Here, a similar pattern is at least implied: these Nazi scientists may have been acting to extend their own independent network of power and influence throughout the American military-industrial complex by being seated in senior management positions in return for their expertise. We shall present evidence later that will corroborate this. In any case, viewed against the backdrop of General Gehlen's effective preservation of his spy network and its grafting and penetration into post-war American intelligence, the picture that now emerges from the Torbitt document is chilling in its potentialities.

---

[18] Ibid., p. 85.

Each of the Nazi connections alluded to in the Torbitt document indicate influential Nazi presence not only in America's space program, but moreover, strongly hint of Nazi influence *in the awarding of contracts* for the space program, Nazi influence in control of the *security* of the space program, Nazi influence in the *intelligence organs* of America and the West, Nazi influence in the *defense and aerospace industries*, and Nazi influence lurking in the background of Permindex, "Murder Incorporated." Indeed, Von Braun himself may be viewed as the best exemplar of the type of smiling, glad-handing "networking" that make such influence possible, for shortly after arriving in the United States, he made a point of befriending none other than J. Edgar Hoover, and the then Senator Lyndon Johnson.[19] And who was one of the individuals who helped expedite Von Braun's and Dornberger's repatriation to the United States? None other than Clay Shaw, the man Garrison would ultimately indict for conspiracy to murder President Kennedy.[20] The transfer of the Nazi Project Paperclip scientists was also aided by none other than General Gehlen.[21]

All we know about the pseudonymous William Torbitt was that he was a prominent attorney in South Texas politics in the 1960s and 1970s.[22] This makes the Torbitt Document's revelations all the more sensational. While some might be inclined to dismiss its many claims out of hand, a picture does emerge of quietly exercised Nazi influence behind the scenes, an influence working in conjunction with other interests – big oil, technology suppression, Mafia, gambling and money laundering, aerospace and defense – and working effectively at that.

---

[19] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document*, p. 141.

[20] Ibid., pp. 142-143, citing New Orleans District Attorney Files: General Staff Files, U.S. Army European Command, OUISE Section.

[21] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document,* p. 143.

[22] Ibid., p. i, from the Introduction, "NASA, Nazis, and JFK" by David Hatcher Childress.

Moreover, the Torbitt Document suggests, albeit only slightly and only on very careful reading, that there is some *hidden* aspect to America's space program, a hidden aspect represented by the mysterious Defense Industrial Security Command and its head, Werner Von Braun. It suggests that this was one of the many motivations represented by the various groups that whose interests coalesced in the murder of the President. But beyond that, it does not go. And this leaves a very disturbing question hovering in the air:

If there *was* some hidden aspect to the space program, and if its principals had some motivation for participating in the murder of the President, what was it? What did this hidden aspect of the space program have to gain? Or, alternatively, what about President Kennedy threatened it; what did it have to protect? Or was it some combination of both? To answer these questions requires an examination of some of the other versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, even, as we shall see, the absurd ones.

2. The False Planetary Geology, Climate, and Archaeology Versions:

a. The Absurdist Versions

One may summarize the "absurdist" versions of the Two Space Programs very easily:

The Moon has an atmosphere and water, and even vegetation.

Venus, beneath its canopy of clouds, is not the carbon dioxide pressure-cooker and barren desert greenhouse we've been told, but rather, a temperate planet of rich vegetation, a veritable paradise. And, if one believes Adamski – and this author most decidedly does *not* – it is home to a wonderful race of peaceful, blonde-haired, blue-eyed, human space brothers who come in peace to bring earth-bound humanity a message of hope.

And Mars really *does* have canals, and, thankfully, isn't planning an invasion of Earth anytime soon.

But what has this to do with a hidden and public space program?

Very simple: according to the absurdist version the governments of the world that *have* space programs have hidden the truth about the planets of our solar system, carefully doctoring pictures to edit out any evidence that shows any of the above!

b. A Scientifically and Politically Plausible Version: The Hoagland Model

A much more serious model, and much more plausible one, has been argued in various ways over the years by Richard C Hoagland, best known for his association with the ongoing investigations of the anomalous Martian surface features in the Cydonia region of Mars, features he believes strongly suggest an artificial origin.

While an extended presentation of Hoagland’s views is not possible here – after all they have evolved over many years of continual research, requiring a scholarly study in their own right – there are certain stable features that one may point to as summarizing some aspects of his version:

1. *The Brookings Report*: Immediately after its formation, NASA commissioned a study of the possible impact of human contact with an extraterrestrial civilization in its explorations of the solar system, or alternatively, with human discovery of any *artifacts* of such a civilization. As Hoagland has pointed out on more than one occasion, the Brookings report indicated that there might be severe cultural implications and repercussions of such discoveries or events. Thus, Hoagland argues, the government may have adopted the policy, based on the Brookings recommendations, of *concealing* such discoveries.
2. In this context, one way of concealment is the alteration of photographic or other scientific data that indicates the presence of such contact or civilization artifact. Another method is the outright dismissal of evidence after-the-fact, such as NASA’s post-Viking dismissal of the Face on Mars as nothing but a “trick of light and shadow.” These and other tactics were subsequently employed by NASA down

to the present whenever anomalous findings are returned by space probes.

3. A third component of Hoagland's view is that there is a "hidden space program", or better, group within NASA, exercising influence in an esoteric or occult direction over the scheduling, naming, and symbolism attached to missions. In support of this allegation, Hoagland has noted the high predominance of Masons in the astronaut corps, particularly in the formative days of NASA during the Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo programs. Additionally, Hoagland has also maintained that many missions are designed to align with significant celestial (astrological) correlations, as if space missions were deliberate acts in a vast system of ritual magic being done on a planetary scale via the space program itself.
4. The final and most important component in Hoagland's model is that the surface features of Cydonia on Mars encode a lost "hyperdimensional physics," a physics Hoagland sees in evidence in the planetary upwellings of energy at the "tetrahedral latitude" of 19.5 north or south degrees on every celestial body in the solar system.

While such assertions may sound fantastic, the fact that they are made by someone of Hoagland's stature is significant, and, as we shall see below, the more one digs beneath the surface of various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, and the more details one uncovers, Hoagland's version seems to pale into mundane normalcy by comparison.

3. The "Alternative Three" Version

Among the many versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, none is more bizarre nor more famous than the *Alternative 3* version.

Alternative 3 was a "documentary" produced for the British science series *Science Report*, which aired on Anglia television in the 1970s. Originally scheduled to air on April 1, 1977, the broadcast was delayed and did not air until June, though in the production credits April 1 is listed as the date. The "documentary" was one hour long, and makes interesting viewing.[23] Ostensibly the "documentary" begins by investigating the so-called "brain drain" that was affecting Great Britain during the 1970s, as many of her top scientists and engineers left the country for more prosperous and promising positions overseas, most notably in Canada and the United States, and to a lesser extent Australia and New Zealand. Moving quickly, the documentary "uncovers" the cases of three scientists who simply were never heard from again, despite attempts of their "families" to contact them. Finally, one scientist died in a mysterious automobile accident, allegedly after placing a telephone call from a remote country phone booth to a journalist friend of his, to whom he had sent a computer memory tape.

On the tape, when it was finally "decoded" by the indefatigable investigative journalists of Anglia Television, was a video recording of an alleged joint Russian-American Mars landing in 1962, complete with video recording of sub-surface life burrowing a furrow on the ground to the wild and thrilled cheers of the Russian and American ground control crews in the background!

With missing scientists and engineers, a mysteriously dead scientist, and a computer tape of an alleged Mars landing, the journalists learn of a hidden, secret joint space program being conducted by the Americans and Russians, a component of which was to persuade the best and brightest of the world's scientists to participate in the gradual, and very secret, colonization of the Moon and Mars. The purpose of this colonization? The world's elite had concluded that the planet was being destroyed by humanity, and that overpopulation had passed the point of no return, and that life on Earth was doomed. Three alternatives were discussed to save the situation. The first was to explode nuclear warheads in the atmosphere, in an attempt to create a "hole" which would bleed off the pollution. The second was to build vast underground installations in which humanity could survive when the surface became unviable. And the third, *Alternative 3,* was to seek new planetary homes on the Moon and Mars.

---

[23] The author has actually watched the "documentary" many times.

The secret space program was thus a modern-day Noah's Ark, and the most heinous crimes were being perpetrated to ensure the success of *Alternative 3.* There, more or less, is where the "documentary" ended.

But the *story* did not end. In fact, the network was flooded with calls from thousands of people who professed their belief in the whole wild scenario, and who in some cases added their own stories of encounters with the "hidden masters" of the project.

The problem was, the whole program was a complete hoax, an elaborate April Fools' Day joke, intended as such by the producers and authors of the teleplay, David Ambrose and Christopher Miles,[24] a fact that would have been evident from careful examination of the closing credits, with its very clearly stated date, and long list of cast which included professional actors.[25] The story would not die, however, and was soon followed by a badly-written book of the same title, about which more in a moment.

To one Canadian inquiring about the truth of the "documentary," co-author and producer Christopher Miles stated:

> "The idea for the film and subsequently the book, was something that David (Ambrose) and I dreamed up over a lunch together in London, as I was getting rather tired of the docu-drama on television and wanted to prove how easy it is to lead the general public up the proverbial garden path! I am sorry that you were one of them and if you look at the film or read the book, you will realize that there are hints of its unauthenticity all the way down the line.
>
> Of course it has a sprinkling of fact in it, but the basic show is a complete hoax and if you think a bit more yourself, you would realize this was the case."
>
> In an interview, however, Miles commented in a somewhat more mysterious fashion, saying, "Let's say that all the facts in the show were true and all the lies untrue."[26]

The documentary's inconsistent acting is mirrored in the book's incongruous slurry of wildly unconnected "data" all served up as “corroboration” of the secret space program and its nefarious activities:

---

[24] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), p. 11.

[25] It would likewise have been evident from the less-than-convincing performances of some of the same!

[26] Jim Keith, *Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 14.

> The death of fifteen wild ponies in Dartmoor, England, is mentioned, an episode reminiscent of the cattle mutilations prevalent in the U.S. beginning in the mid-60s. Factual CIA MKULTRA mind control atrocities are also mulled over, but not in particular detail, and with no credible link to *Alternative 3*. Along the way instances of Russian-American cooperation in space are described, and we are offered accounts of the plights of several amnesia victims, but none of this has much to do with the core of the *Alternative 3* thesis.[27]

At the end of it all – a book and a “documentary” – what does one make of *Alternative 3?* Jim Keith summarizes the whole episode this way:

> In summary, *Alternative 3* is a teleplay and a book which utterly lack substantiation, and the book in particular is written in a style identical to the *Weekly World News* of “Two-Headed Space Alien Gives Birth to Elvis’ Lovechild” fame. What propels *Alternative 3* along in the manner of a 1940s *Amazing Stories* extravaganza set in the vicinity of Fleet Street are the “secret documents,” the interviews with persons who do not exist and, more than that, the word of the authors who, while repeatedly maintaining “We are only interested in facts,” write a television show and book loaded with as many questionable conclusions as the latest Brad Steiger UFO masterpiece…..
>
> All the references to flights to Mars, “batch consignments” and so forth are found in the poorly rendered and unbelievable “secret transcripts” or created from thin Martian air by the authors.[28]

But, as Keith himself notes, one comes away from viewing the “documentary” and/or reading the book with an uneasy feeling, notwithstanding their clear and evident nature as hoaxes, and that uneasy feeling is that *Alternative 3* and its various themes are quite close to the truth, that something *like* the odd goings on in the “documentary” actually *are* occurring.

In fact, Leslie Watkins, who co-authored the book version with the “documentary’s” producers for Penguin Books, wrote a researcher who had contacted the Penguin editor, that the book was

---

[27] Ibid., p. 17.

[28] Ibid., pp. 19-20.

"based on fact, but uses that fact as a launchpad for a high dive into fiction." And a little later in his letter, Watkins recounts the unusual events that befell him after the book version was published and in circulation: "For some time after *Alternative 3* was originally published, I have reason to suppose that my home telephone was being tapped and my contacts who were experienced in such matters were convinced that certain intelligence agencies considered that I probably knew too much. So, summing up, the book is fiction based on fact. But I now feel that I inadvertently *got very close to a secret truth.*"[29] But if Watkins, Miles, and Ambrose had come too close to "a secret truth" that would call forth electronic wiretapping in response, what exactly in the crazy quilt-work of the *Alternative 3* universe was it?

The universe of *Alternative 3* is clear enough: there is a secret space program involving both Russians and Americans in cooperation, being controlled by some entity that transcends their governments and uses them for its own ends, which is the secret colonization of the Moon and Mars. To this end, it persuades or kidnaps scientists, and "commoners" for manual labor. Those it cannot "persuade" or who threaten to expose the project, are murdered. So one has the following elements:

1. Several missing scientists, in great numbers;
2. Murdered scientists;
3. Several missing "common" people;
4. A secret space program existing inside of, or parallel to, the public programs in Russia and America;
5. Colonies on the Moon and/or Mars; and finally,
6. Some entity coordinating all the above.

Conspiracy researcher Jim Keith investigated these aspects of the case, and came to a rather provocative conclusion, a conclusion so provocative, in fact, that he seldom states it directly, though much of his book, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, implies this conclusion simply by virtue of the amount of time he spends exploring it.

---

[29] Jim Keith, *Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 22, emphasis original.

We begin with point number 2 above: the deaths of scientists. Keith, like many other authors, noted the very strange fact that many European scientists, physicists, and engineers who were involved with, or otherwise *might* have something to contribute to President Ronald Reagan's Strategic Defense Initiative, seemed to have unusually high suicide or "death-by-mysterious-circumstances" rates. And oddly, *most* of these scientists were from Western Europe. Proportionally fewer Americans, Canadians or Australians were involved in the unusual deaths.

Among those that Keith lists were: Keith Bowden, supercomputer expert; Roger Hill, a designer for Marconi Defense Systems (who allegedly killed himself by shotgun blast); Jonathan Walsh, digital communications expert for Marconi's parent firm, GEC; Karl-Heinz Beckurts, director of research for Germany's Siemens Company and his driver; and, notes Keith, "an SDI contractor allegedly linked to activities of Otto Skorzeny's Nazi International;" Vimal Dajibhai, an expert in computer guidance systems; Gerrold von Braunmuhl, a high advisor to West Germany's Defense Minister Hans-Dietrich Genscher; Ashad Shariff, another Marconi employee; a Swedish professor, Svante Oden; an Italian electronics executive, Lando Conti; Aytar Singh-Gida, an SDI technology expert; Richard Pugh, British Defense Ministry contracts worker; John Brittan, computer expert; Swedish arms inspector Cal Frederik Algernon…and on and on Keith's list goes.[30]

Like the "mysterious deaths" of key witnesses and personnel that followed the assassination of President Kennedy, rather *too many* scientists and engineers were dying in too many suspicious ways for the whole episode to be entirely coincidental. Keith observes that:

> In July of 1986, Kurt Rebmann, Germany's Federal Prosecutor, told the New York Times that he believed the attacks were part of a "coordinated offensive" against the West and the SDI program.

---

[30] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* pp. 80-83.

> So, who killed the Star Wars scientists? In at least two of the cases, those of Beckurts and von Braunmuhl, the Marxist Red Army Faction (RAF) claimed responsibility. In Italy a note was found at the location of Griogieri's murder, stating that he "was struck down exclusively for his responsibility exercised following the Italian adhesion to the Star Wars project." And attributing the murder to the Italian Red Brigades. Of course, notes can easily be faked, and the fact that responsibility was claimed in only three cases is odd if two groups performed all the murders.[31]

One explanation, the obvious one, is that "it was apparent to the Kremlin that SDI, far from bring the defensive program that it was touted as by Ronald Reagan, had an awesome offensive capability."[32] This much is true, as we shall see in part two.[33] But in any case, Keith's conclusion is rational: the most obvious perpetrators of the strange deaths were the Soviets, who hoped to dissuade the West from deploying SDI.

But according to Keith, there was likewise another possibility: "It has also occurred to me that if there is in fact a secret flying disk technology on this planet, withheld for its surprise strike capability from some unknown quarter, then SDI might have been seen as a technology capable of pinpointing and shooting down such craft."[34] That is, if there was an "independent group" perfecting such advanced craft, then that group, too, would view SDI as a threat and seek to derail it, or, conversely, seek to acquire and deploy its technologies while denying them to its enemies.

It is this possibility that informs the bulk of Keith's book. Tracing the possibilities to a pre-war network of American and Nazi business contacts, he quickly comes to one locus of possibilities: the "surrender" of Germany's Foreign Armies East (*Fremde Heere Ost*) section of military intelligence to the OSS, a deal that was negotiated between General Reinhard Gehlen and OSS station chief in Zürich, Allen Dulles, later chief of the CIA and a member of the Warren Commission. But the "surrender" was only apparent, as many have pointed out. Keith's summary is apt:

---

[31] Ibid., p. 83

[32] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 84.

[33] See chapters 4-6.

[34] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 84.

> For reasons that will hopefully become apparent, I begin the search for *Alternative 3* at what might appear to be an arbitrary moment in history: with men, most of whom died a long time ago. As we trace the actions and connections of these men, the conspiratorial web will radiate outward, and perhaps begin to take on a definite and ominous pattern.
>
> The study is taken up shortly after the collapse of the Third Reich, when General Reinhard Gehlen, Nazi spymaster and Knight of Malta-to-be began negotiations with Allen Dulles and the American OSS (Office of Strategic Services). Using Nazi intelligence networks as a hole card to provide for his own survival and the survival of his huge spy network, Gehlen made a separate peace with Dulles, resulting in the clean grafting of Nazi spy apparatus to the American clandestine services. This was the birth of the CIA and part of a nexus of betrayal that continues to this day.[35]

Indeed, as many others have pointed out, at the inception of the CIA, the agency's "Soviet desk" for all intents and purposes consisted almost entirely and exclusively of this Nazi spy network.[36] Gehlen's own words recalling this bargain are clinically chilling:

> I remember the terms of the agreement well…
>
> 1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.
> 2. *This German organization was to work not "for" or "under" the Americans, but "jointly" with the Americans.*
> 3. *The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments*

---

[35] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 28.

[36] Q.v. also Christopher Simpson's *Blowback.* Simpson and other commentators have often pointed out that one effect of this "Nazification" of American intelligence in the immediate post-war world was the over-estimation of Soviet military power and intentions. Another effect was the corresponding American military build-up and, to a lesser extent, the Marshal Plan itself. Yet another effect was the covert policy of "rollback", a policy designed to make use of Gehlen's fifth columns in Eastern Europe – and in North America! – of émigré White Russians, Ukrainians, Letts, Lithanians, and so on.

> *from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.*
>
> 4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds which were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.
> 5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, the government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as "the trusteeship") of the organization would remain in American hands.
> 6. *Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first.*[37]

In other words, one whole department of the American Federal government – indeed, one of its most *sensitive* departments – was being run by agents of the Third Reich in a classic Trojan Horse operation![38] With the thousands of agents in Gehlen's "Organization," and its extensive network of "émigré exile" groups and fronts, historian Carl Oglseby noted that the Gehlenorg "substantially pre-empted the CIA's civilian character before it was ever born…Thus, whatever the CIA was from the standpoint of law, it remained from the standpoint of *practical intelligence collection a front for a house of Nazi spies."*[39]

The importance of these observations cannot be pondered too long, for as many other researchers and commentators have noted, there appears to be a "rogue element" operating somewhere inside the U.S. Federal government and inside its intelligence community. Keith's observations, and similar ones made by others who have researched the incredible bargain struck between Allen Dulles and General Gehlen, give a historical background and foundation to these fears: There not only *is* a rogue element within the American intelligence community, but it has been there since the end of World War Two. And it was *Nazi* in its personnel, aims, and methods.

---

[37] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, pp. 46-47, emphasis added.

[38] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 43.

[39] Ibid., p. 47, emphasis added.

Moreover, as Keith also points out, the Dulles family itself had long business associations with Germany.[40] And there was an ideological connection:

> With man, as with every other form of life, there is this same tendency for the birth rate to far exceed the death rate, with the inevitable result of an overcrowded population in which some must be eliminated. Who those eliminated are depends upon who are weakest and who are strongest in the competition which necessarily ensues.[41]

If that sounds vaguely like an anti-Jewish rant of Hitler at a Nuremburg party rally, think again. The words are those of Allen Dulles' brother, John Foster Dulles, who would later become the American Secretary of State under President Dwight Eisenhower.

In any case, Gehlen's bargain with Dulles was but one aspect of the creation of a vast post-war "Nazi International," an organization with massive amounts of money, and, as has been seen, its own intelligence network.

> Maintaining close ties to each other and other escaped Nazis, this network evolved into what has been termed the Nazi International, run by Otto Skorzeny and headquartered in Madrid. The Nazi International would be key in the establishment of worldwide arms, terrorist, and drug trafficking networks, although these crimes pale in comparison with the subversion of American intelligence, in collaboration with Allen Dulles, the result of which may be said to have been the creation of the Cold War and the continuing destruction of democracy in America.[42]

Skorzeny most likely was a front man for other more high-ranking Nazis, since he was the son-in-law to former Reichsbank president Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht.

But if Nazi penetration of America's post-war intelligence and national security apparatus was a Trojan Horse operation under the banner of a "united front against Communism", what of the dispersal of Nazi scientists and technology? Could the notorious Operation Paperclip - America's secret post-war program to recruit top Nazi scientists and engineers - have also been viewed, at least on the *German* side, as a similar operation?

---

[40] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 28.

[41] Ibid., p. 29.

[42] Ibid., pp. 45-46.

While the evidence is scanty, it is nonetheless provocative. It begins with America's High Commissioner in Germany in the immediate post-war period: John J. McCloy. When Werner Von Braun refused to work for the American space program without his former army boss, General Walter Dornberger – who had in the meantime been sentenced by the war crimes tribunals to be hung – it was McCloy who stepped in and granted Dornberger a full pardon.[43] In fact, McCloy pardoned over seventy *thousand* Nazis accused of war crimes.[44] Perhaps this is not surprising, since McCloy was a "lawyer in the employ of I.G. Farben" after World War One, and had shared a box with Hitler himself during the 1936 Berlin Olympic games.[45] And last, but not least, McCloy, like Allen Dulles, also served on the Warren Commission.

Once in the U.S., the Nazi scientists were, of course, watched closely….but *not*, it seems, *too* closely. As Keith notes, "Walter Jessel, an interrogator of the German rocket scientists for the army, claimed that there was a conspiracy between von Braun, Dornberger, and Dornberger's chief of staff to withhold information from U.S. officers."[46] Given the fact that Von Braun's rockets successfully became the backbone of America's space program, up to and including the Apollo moon rockets, as well as became the backbone for America's intercontinental ballistic missiles, an important question thus occurs: *what possibly could Von Braun and Dornberger have been withholding?*

They may have been withholding technical information, since this was not an isolated instance. As the following incident indicates, three other German scientists brought to the USA

> were found to have illegal mail drops in El Paso, Texas, where they received money and coded messages from foreign sources. Other instances of Nazi scientists receiving money from unknown sources were not investigated by the military, including an instance when one third of the German Paperclip group simultaneously bought expensive

---

[43] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 50.

[44] Ibid.

[45] Ibid., pp. 50-51.

[46] Ibid., p. 51.

> cars that they were reportedly unable to afford on their salaries. There were also repeated suspicions that rockets were being sabotaged, and that components were missing from recovered missiles.[47]

If so, then the Gehlenorg offered the perfect means to spirit any developed technology out of America and into “the right hands”.

Keith concludes his scenario with the following observations:

> The controlling reins of German technologies such as rockets, advanced aircraft, and atomics were never fully surrendered; inner circle control, through knowledge obtainable only in the inner circle, was retained by Nazis and their sympathizers.
>
> ….It is in this environment of extensive collaboration and infiltration by Nazis and fascists, a collaboration that involves a long-term continuance of Nazi goals separated from earlier German territorial goals, and an overall shepherding and betrayal by international monied interests, government and intelligence agencies, that America’s descent into totalitarianism, genocide and mind control becomes understandable, and the *Alternative 3* template first becomes visible.[48]

Keith’s scenario is clear enough, and it is the same one – in broad outline – adopted here, namely:

(1) That with the dispersal of Nazi technology, scientists and engineers into post-war Allied, Soviet, and possibly into *covert and independent* research programs more directly under Nazi control, and

(2) That with the grafting of Gehlen’s *Fremde Heere Ost* with its extensive espionage network inside the Iron Curtain into American intelligence, a powerful clandestine organization was created, an organization with international reach, ambitions, and finance behind it.

Only such an organization could attempt to maintain two space programs, one for public consumption, and another, entirely off the books, to further the interests, agenda, and power of the elite that controlled it. Only such an organization could attempt to coordinate the otherwise independent "public" space programs of the two superpowers.

---

[47] Ibid.

[48] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* pp. 58-59.

Seen in this light, it is easier to see why there was such a heavy Nazi presence in the web of relationships involved in the assassination of President Kennedy, for with his threat to "smash the CIA into a thousand pieces," he was taking deliberate aim at one of the power structures for this international rogue element. To ensure its continued survival and the survival of its projects and agenda, Kennedy had to go.

4. The William Lyne Version

Also at the bizarre end of the spectrum of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is the version of New Mexico author and conspiriologist William Lyne, who outlines his version in three books, *Pentagon Aliens* (formerly entitled *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*), *Occult Ether Physics,* and *Occult Science Dictatorship.* Many dismiss his work, simply because of an abundance of very bizarre and oftentimes outlandish assertions, while overlooking some significant insights and hints that also characterize his works, oftentimes sandwiched between assertions that either repeat the standard "Nazi Legend" of the UFO or of "Hitler Survival" while liberally adding new elements.

For example, Lyne asserts – without any substantiation – that Adolf and Eva Hitler not only survived the war, but were flown out of Germany in a flying saucer piloted by the famous German pilot Hanna Reitsch and German Luftwaffe ace Hans Ulrich Rudel![49] As if *that* were not enough, he adds that they lived happily ever after in Kassel, Germany, protected by a secret NATO agreement,[50] and that on the invitation of President Lyndon Johnson, visited the San Antonio World's Fair in Texas,[51] where later, apparently, Adolf, exercising as ever his attraction to art, and lovely wife Eva visited a west Texas art show where Lyne happened to be sitting sketching pictures! And Lyne leaves no detail to chance, for he even describes the visit by burly security personnel, combing through the art show booths, prior to the arrival of the Führer! If one can imagine an elderly and sweltering Hitler hobbling along in his ever-present double-breasted suit(sans swastika, of course) and porkpie hat with wife Eva dutifully in tow and perhaps filming the whole visit for her famous home movies, one has an appreciation for why many dismiss out of hand the entirety of Lyne's other assertions and claims.

---

[49] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens* (Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 1999), p. 49.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Ibid.

For example, Lyne also asserts that

> During the war, German scientists bypassed development of the "atom bomb", and built and tested the neutron bomb. German field Marshall (sic) Erwin Rommel and the *Afrika Korps* were originally sent to North Africa to test the neutron bomb, as well as Tesla's "death ray" (which *freezes* whole armies); this technology was acquired by American corporations, held chiefly by David Rockefeller, and was later sold in part back to the U.S. government and tested in the '60s, and the same technology was again sold to the U.S. government in the '70s and '80s as "Star Wars"("SDI" or "Strategic Defense Initiative Technology."[52]

While the assertion sounds wild and fantastic, and indeed, your author does not believe any neutron bomb was ever tested by the Nazis in Africa or elsewhere, in fairness to Lyne it should be recalled that the alleged Ohrdruf test of a nuclear device that took place on March 4, 1945,[53] was of a device with a small critical mass, an event that – if it indeed happened – could only have occurred via the process of "boosted fission," whereby a neutron-emitting source is added to the critical mass assembly, allowing more neutrons into the initial chain reaction and accordingly a lower critical mass. This is one step away, in a certain sense, from the neutron bomb. Likewise it should be pointed out that when Lyne's assertion was first made in July 1993 in the first printing of *Pentagon Aliens* (under its former title *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*) the allegations of the Ohrduf test and other German nuclear tests during the war were just beginning to surface, making it unlikely that Lyne based his assertion on these German sources.

---

[52] Ibid., pp. 48-49, emphasis added.

[53] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 80-88.

Lyne's assertions do not end there, however. He adds even more anecdotal detail to the mix:

> (When) prisoners from Rommel's Afrika Korps were brought to Roswell, New Mexico (!) they carried some rather strange post cards apparently printed by Rommel's field lithographers, showing New York City being destroyed by a mushroom cloud. The camp commandant, Dave Dunn, who later became an engineer with Union Oil Company of California in their Midland, Texas Office, and who prepared the U.S.G.S. for President John F. Kennedy in 1962, thought these were humorous, and showed me one he had saved as a souvenir. The fact was, however, that Rommel's main mission in the Libyan desert, was testing the neutron bomb. The post cards carried by his troops were a 'morale builder', which superimposed the photolithograph of the mushroom cloud of the bomb they had actually tested and photographed, over a photolithograph of New York City, in a composite. The claims by Manhattan Project members, that they built the first ATOM bomb – from German plans – was true. Einstein had brought the stolen plans to us with the firm belief that we would use the A-bomb on Germany. Since the Allies had already succeeded in obtaining the German plans for he A-bomb, Werner Heisenberg merely sidestepped the A-bomb, and built the N-bomb. The question to me was not "if", but "how" (did the Germans make their neutron bomb)?[54]

This passage is classic Lyne, interlarding details and insinuations that, in the light of the research of German authors Meyer, Mehner, and others, make sense, along with details and insinuations that make no sense. For example, Lyne claims that David Dunn found the postcard of New York City being a-bombed (or n-bombed), "humorous." One has difficulty imagining how any rational human, much less an American, could find such a postcard humorous. This detail casts a pall of dubiousness once again over the whole passage, as does the assertion that any a-bomb plans existed at the time Einstein emigrated from Germany to the USA, much less that Einstein actually managed to *steal* them from the security- and Jew-obsessed Nazis. Yet, in these bizarre assertions, Lyne is also clearly insinuating a connection between Nazi science, its *actual* accomplishments, and the Manhattan Project, and all that again in a book published *prior* to that of Meyer, Mehner, or Friedrich Georg in Germany, or Carter Hydrick in the USA, works which *are* heavily referenced and researched, and by no means the merely “anecdotal” character of Lyne’s *Pentagon Aliens*.

---

[54] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* p. 99.

To round out the picture even more, Lyne also points out the mysterious substance “red mercury”, or mercury antimony oxide, which, like Lyne’s work itself, is a substance with its own ambiguous and dubious legend:

> Dr. Sam Cohen, inventor of the American neutron bomb, traces the production and sale of a mysterious substance called “red mercury” to Russia. Red mercury is mercury antimony oxide, specially prepared by irradiation and pressured into a gel to increase its density to create the necessary precondition for a neutron explosion. A small quantity of it can then be used as a nuclear trigger/igniter to detonate a small amount of heavy hydrogen producing the deadly neutrons for a ‘clean bomb.’[55] In February, 1992, Russian president Boris Yeltsin signed Directive No 75-RPS, authorizing Preomekologia, a Russian company headed by Yeltsin’s ecological advisor, to “manufacture, purchase, store, transport, deliver, and sell for rubles and foreign currency” ‘red mercury’ in amounts up to ten tons per year. The order was rescinded a year later because of criticism within Russia of export of such a “valuable raw material”. In a spring, 2004 documentary on Britain’s Channel Four (“British PBS”), a Russian nuclear chemist confirmed he had worked with red mercury since 1965, that it is currently produced in a factory in the central Russian town of Ekaterinburg, and that fusion weapons have been made in Russia from it. Cohen believes red mercury represents one of the greatest threats for potential terrorists to produce ‘baseball bombs’ from it….If the Germans indeed tested a neutron bomb in North Africa, I would bet that is was produced with red mercury, since the Russians employed German metallurgists and nuclear chemists in their nuclear program, and it was they who produced Germany’s WWII supply of plutonium purer that any ever produced….[56]

---

[55] It should be pointed out that part of the legend of “red mercury” is that it can be used as a detonator for a fully-fledged thermonuclear fusion, or hydrogen, bomb, replacing the need for an atomic bomb as a detonator to create the necessary heat to get heavy hydrogen (deuterium and tritium) atoms to fuse. The Russians allegedly developed it as a means of detonating hydrogen bombs without the need for an a-bomb, thus creating a “clean” hydrogen bomb, still capable of taking out large cities in an enormous explosion, but leaving a much smaller radiation fallout signature.

[56] Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* pp. 99-100.

Again, one encounters Lyne's typical mixture of the seemingly outlandish and bizarre with actual fact, for indeed, Dr. Sam Cohen, the inventor of the neutron bomb, *did* express such fears and reservations concerning red mercury, while other scientists loudly dismissed the substance and its reputed ability to initiate thermonuclear fusion as a complete hoax. And the substance does resemble a mysterious substance also used in The Bell.[57]

As was seen, Lyne ends his "red mercury" foray with another fantastic claim, that during World War Two the Germans managed to manufacture plutonium of great purity, an assertion that calls into question the Allied Legend in a very direct way, since to manufacture plutonium of *any* purity one must first possess a functioning nuclear reactor, which the Germans were *not* supposed to have achieved during the war.

But again, one cannot be too hasty in *dismissing* his assertion, for as was detailed in my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun*, the alleged Nazi test of an a-bomb in 1945 at Ohrdruf was of a high yield device of a critical mass of no more than 100 grams, *a fact which, if true, is only possible with very pure plutonium and boosted fission.* That is to say, Lyne once again has made a claim that, oddly, has been paralleled by similar and *subsequent* allegations originating from post-reunification Germany, and the much more substantial research of German researchers who, in addition to citing anecdotal stories from elderly witnesses or relatives of witnesses, also seek to corroborate their stories by documentation or other means.

Lyne's tail of a neutron bomb test thus also begins to pry open the door to his version of the Two Space Program Hypothesis, for it clearly indicates that one primary element is what the Nazis *actually* accomplished versus what we have been *told* that they accomplished. Yet another primary aspect of Lyne's version of the Hypothesis also emerges from this strange account, and that is the secret development of a science and technology otherwise suppressed. And this brings us, at last, to Lyne's version of the Hypothesis itself. There are three aspects to his version: (1) Public Consumption Relativistic Physics Versus Occulted Aether Physics,

---

[57] See chapter four of the present book, as well as *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 335.

(2) The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression, and (3) The Role of Nazis in the above.

a. Public Consumption Versus Occulted Aether Physics

Lyne outlines his case for an occulted physics and technology in a series of clearly stated and provocative questions, and then an equally clear and provocative answer:

> Is it possible that an entire area of physics has been declared virtually “occult” and “off-limits” to the public or to private individuals, by a powerful group, so that all science education or data generally available to the public has been “screened” to eliminate references to it? Is it possible that the actual science involved in “electro-propulsion”, has been replaced with a “bogus science”, which has been promoted and promulgated to the extent that no one except the ‘esoteric elite’ knows the truth? And if so, has the “occult” science become the exclusive province of a very few specially selected corporate/government “priests”?
>
> …..The high priests of this occult knowledge are the elite owners of the coercive monopolist corporate banking, industrial, mineral and related interests, who in turn allow the initiation of certain scientists, military and government officials into their secret teaching only insofar as it is necessary, to execute and maintain a conspiracy of giant proportions, so that the technology can be classified as a “state secret” which can be controlled and enforced by means of unconstitutional “national security laws”, military and civilian legal authority, and police. These measures are intended to protect the archaic technology and resources controlled by the elite, from the competition of a truly free market society.[58]

Note the insinuation that the national security apparatus of any nation is involved in this conspiracy. We shall return to this aspect of Lyne’s version of the Hypothesis in a moment.

For Lyne, the suppression of “occulted aether physics” requires a program consisting of two central elements: (1) the suppression of exotic physics that at one time or another entered the public record, regardless of how obscure the record or how limited the public may have been. As will be seen in a moment, this includes various tactics to make it difficult to reconstruct the suppressed physics. (2) The second element is the creation of an alternative version of physics for "public consumption" or as Lyne puts it – also clearly delineating where he thinks the blame lies for the dead end of physics in the 20the century – giving the public "relativistic bromides" packed with exotic phrases like "the 'fabric' of 'space-time'" and "frame-dragging," all of which, he says, suggest the idea of what "they" wish to suppress, namely "the existence of an ether (sic, et passim),[59]" even though that aether is an erroneously conceived "relativistic" aether.[60] The reason is deceptively simple: "'Ether Physics', by its very nature and name, is subatomic physics."[61] Relativistic physics, on the other hand, is the physics of the very large. And as numerous physics texts and popularizations have reiterated countless times, the quest of physics since relativity and the advent of quantum mechanics has been to somehow squeeze the two theories together. So much for the second element; it is clear that Lyne believes Einstein's relativity theories to be a crucial component of the creation of a "public consumption physics," a physics guaranteed to dead-end.

---

[58] William Lyne, *Occult Ether Phsyics: Tesla’s Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It*(Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 2003), pp. 1-2.

But what of the *first* element? How does one suppress things that are already part of the public record, even if that record is for a relatively small public, such as the professional community of scientists or scientific historians?

Lyne's answer to this question is hidden in his – for once – well-documented though brief history of the aether, and it is worth citing his remarks at length:

> After some difficulty, I accessed a copy of the classic, *A History of the Theories of the Aether and Electricity,* by Sir Edmund Whittaker (1951 revised and enlarged second edition, Vols. I and II). The 1910 first edition of this book was probably the most comprehensive book ever published on ether theory as it existed in 1910, but the 1951 revision merely clarified "acceptable" ether physics. The first edition was printed in Scotland, under the title *A History of the Theories of the*

---

[59] Over the next few pages the spelling of "aether" varies. I prefer "aether" but I have preserved the source's preference for "ether" in the spelling.

[60] Ibid., p. 3.

[61] Ibid., p. 10.

> *Ether and Electricity, from the age of Descartes to the close of the nineteenth century.* The second edition incorporated "new material" related to quantum mechanics. Classical theory was in Vol. I, while Vols. II and II gave the origins of relativity and quantum theory up to 1926. Neither the 1910 first edition nor the 1951 revision mentioned Tesla, but *the chronological sequence appeared to be "skewered" in the revised edition, with little or no attempt to point out what the scientists were actually aiming at….*[62]

That is, two effective tactics in suppression of the public record are simply to scramble the chronological sequence of, and delete the *practical motivations* behind, the theory in question.

A third tactic is evident in a later remark:

> Though it was said by Whittaker that the Hall Effect, like the magnetic rotation of light, occurs only in ponderable bodies and not in the "free ether", this statement was patently false, since the effect actually depends on the conductivity of a medium. *This was a definite lie on Whittaker's part, probably "required" under the 1951 revision.* The fact that the effect occurs in "ponderable bodies" and "conductive media" however, is all-important for electropulsion, since it shows the reaction between such bodies and media and the underlying "etheric framework" which is accessed in the process.[63]

In other words, when all else fails, simply lie, or leave out part of the truth. Note also that Lyne is clearly implying that Whittaker was "required" to do so, i.e., that some pressure was exerted on him. This fact will become much more significant, since one of Whittaker's early 1903 papers was one of the founding papers of "scalar" physics, a non-linear form of aether physics, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter. Whittaker and the two editions of his classic history of the aether is thus a pivotal though (to the general public) still largely unknown figure in the story.

At any rate, Lyne concludes that "Whittaker's 1951 edition intentionally skewered important facts concerning electropulsion….By reorganizing Whittaker's material into more proper order, *I discovered much 'new' ('old') documentation, that 19th century scientists were in pursuit of electropropulsion.*"[64]

---

[62] William Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 29, emphasis added.

[63] Ibid., pp. 56-57, emphasis added.

(1) Lyne's History of Aether Physics

In order to appreciate Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis fully, it is necessary to see its centerpiece – the work of Nikola Tesla and its alleged continuation under the Nazis – within the wider context of the reconstruction of "aether physics" that Lyne undertakes. Accordingly, this section will perhaps seem somewhat long and perhaps a bit technical. Nevertheless, it is essential to Lyne's argumentation that Tesla was an aether physicist par excellence.[65] As Lyne puts it, "It was my intent to examine known theory leading up to Tesla, to see what he contributed to their discoveries, and to determine what happened since that time to obscure, misinterpret and ultimately conceal it."[66]

Central to this reconstruction is the work of 19th century physicist J.J. Thomson, discoverer of the electron.

> Thomson had theorized, based on Maxwell's earlier theory – that a charged spherical conductor moving in a straight line must produce displacement current in the medium (*Phil. Mag.* Xi (1881), p. 229). In 1893, twelve years later, he claimed to have discovered "electromagnetic momentum", saying "… in an electromagnetic field there is stored in every unit volume an amount of mechanical momentum, proportional to the vector product of the electric and magnetic vectors." (J.J. Thomson, *Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism* [1893], p. 13.) Thomson also was said to have developed the theory of moving tubes of forces – which harked back to Faraday's earlier work – saying in 1891 that molecular structure is closely connected with tubes of electrostatic forces, with magnetism regarded as a secondary force. He stated that "…the aether itself is the vehicle of

---

[64] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 30, emphasis added. "Electropulsion" is Lyne's aptly coined term for propulsion methods relying on electrical charge differentials.

[65] This much is certainly true, as any examination of Tesla's writings will demonstrate. What is unique in Lyne's interpretation is the driving and unifying motivation that he claims to detect in Tesla's work. As we shall see, Lyne argues his case well.

[66] Lyne, op. cit., p. 30.

> mechanical momentum, of amount (1/4 π C) [D-B] per unit volume." (*Phil. Mag.*xxxi [1981], p. 149; *Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism* [1893], chap. 1).[67]

Note that the basic motivation for the experiment, and the basic discovery or theory, is that of electro-propulsion or momentum. And this, claims Lyne, is the single unifying factor of much 19th and early 20th century experimentation.[68]

But chronologically and empirically, this makes no sense, as Lyne points out, and with this next observation, the central figure of his version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis arrives on the scene: Nicola Tesla:

> J.J. Thomson's theory, which linked electromagnetism with momentum in a mathematical and unified way, **on paper**, somewhat repeated Tesla's earlier lecture of 1891, proven by his earlier experiments, but Tesla's theory was different from Thomson's whose theory was incorrect. Thomson's electromagnetic momentum could be created instantaneously only with Tesla's contrivances, which existed *before* Thomson's "discovery", only in Tesla's laboratory, so there is no way that Thomson could have reduced "his" theory to practice or experimentally verified it.[69]

Equally important to Lyne's argument that electrical momentum and propulsion was a central unifying motivation to the scientific pursuits of the 19th century, was the work of another Thomson, this time William Thomson (Lord Kelvin).[70]

---

[67] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 31.

[68] See Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* pp. 48-66. See especially the important remark Lyne makes on p. 58, in the context of the discussion of Tom Bearden's views on "scalar" or "quantum potential" physics in chapter five. Lyne states "There was already a sort of battle brewing between the proponents of classical electrodynamics, and the proponents led by Maxwell of an electromagnetic theory of light. To the former, conductivity occurred in metal wires, etc., *while with Maxwell, it occurred in the surrounding dielectrics and ether-filled space, with the conductors serving only to 'guide' the action."* (Emphasis added). This is to say that electrical circuits are not *closed* systems but *open* systems, and act as local "structurers" and transducers of the medium and its energy, a view well in keeping with Bearden's insights.

[69] Ibid.., pp. 31-32, bold emphasis Lyne's, italicized emphasis added.

[70] For the sake of clarity, I will refer to William Thomson as Lord Kelvin, so as not to confuse him in the reader's mind with J.J. Thomson.

Lord Kelvin asserted in 1856 in the prestigious *Proceedings of the Royal Society*[71] that magnetism possessed rotational characteristics that were bound up with the heat and thermal motions of a body. Kelvin's work is significant precisely because Tesla "made many references…to his work as a prelude to his own discoveries and applications."[72] By 1870, Kelvin had performed some experiments that, as Lyne summarizes them, "seemed to indicate that 'gravitation action' could be induced by spheroidal bodies oscillated by electrical currents or mechanical pulses."[73]

Then came a more provocative discovery.

> (Kelvin) found that ponderomotive forces act between two solid bodies immersed in an incompressible fluid, when one of the bodies is immobilized and made to oscillate with a force which acts along a line between its center and that of a much larger sphere which is free. The free sphere was attracted to the small (immobilized) sphere, if its density was greater than the fluid, while a sphere of less density than the fluid was repelled or attracted, according to the ratio of its distance to the vibrator in relation to a certain quantity.[74]

Lord Kelvin's experiments were expanded upon by C.A. Bjerknes between the years 1877 and 1910.

> Bjerknes showed that when two spheres immersed in an incompressible fluid were pulsated, they exerted a mutual attraction which obeyed Newton's inverse square law if the pulsations were in phase, while if the phases differed by a half wave, the spheres repelled. At one quarter wave difference, there was no action. Where pulses were non-instantaneous at distances greater than a quarter wavelength, attractions and repulsions were reversed.[75]

---

[71] *Proceedings of the Royal Society,* viii [1856], p. 150, cited in Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 54.

[72] Lyne, op. cit., p. 54.

[73] Ibid., citing F. Guthrie, *Phil. Mag.* xli [1871], p. 405.

[74] Ibid., citing *Phil Mag* xli [1871], p. 405, letter of Lord Kelvin to F. Guthrie, p. 427. Lyne also makes the trenchant observation that Lord Kelvin's experiments were "analogical ones," being designed to "use mechanical and electrical wave methods to construct a model to probe the gravitational, inertial and momentive reactions of solid bodies in the ether." (pp. 54-55).

[75] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 55, citing *Repertorium d. Mathematik* I [Leipzig, 1877], p. 268 and *Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society*, iii [1879], p. 276; iv [1880], p. 29.

Note again that the motivation of the experiment is the investigation of the inertial and gravitational properties of the aether via an analogical experiment of spheres in an incompressible fluid. Likewise note an even more important fact, one whose importance, again, will become apparent in the chapter examining “scalar physics,”[76] *the behavior of the spheres is due to the fact of longitudinal waves in the medium, in this case, the incompressible fluid.*[77]

(2) Lyne’s Version of Tesla Physics

It is in this wider context that we now come to the centerpiece of Lyne’s reconstruction of physics and his version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis: the work of Nicola Tesla, and what Lyne believes was its hidden and ultimate motivation all along. As Lyne points out, the articles he cites in *Occult Ether Physics* were available to Tesla “during his student days at the Polytechnic Institute in Graz, Austria.”[78] Moreover, Tesla’s admiration for and use of Lord Kelvin’s work in his own experiments is well known.

Nikola Tesla is almost the raison d’etre of suppressed physics. No other single scientist or engineer has contributed so much to modern society and culture and yet, no other scientist or engineer has been subject to such a “long and thorough eradication of (his) name from encyclopedias and books on science, invention and technology” to the extent of Tesla.[79] So thorough has this been that he is almost “the ‘invisible man’ of science history.”[80]

> The conspicuous vacuum created where the mention of Tesla should have been, as one who made such important contributions to science,

---

[76] I.e., chapters five and six.

[77] The selection of such fluids for these experiments is due to the fact that many physicists of that era viewed the aether itself as an ultra-fine version of such incompressible fluids.

[78] Lyne, op. cit., p. 55.

[79] William Lyne, *Occult Science Dictatorship: The Official State Science Religion and How to Get Excommunicated* (Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 2001), p. 24.

[80] Ibid.

> technology, and the quality of our lives, raises ominous questions as to why his memory became virtually stricken from history almost the day after his death. What did Tesla discover which threatened the powers that be? Since we already know about the many patented inventions, my assumption has always been that the unknown, still classified works were far in advance of the published ones, and were in realization of projects which Tesla had previously announced or had already tested and developed, but had not yet "…given to the world."[81]

These inventions and ideas, "the very existence of which is categorically denied by establishment and corporate scientists,"[82] were, according to Lyne, centered on five things:

1. exotic flying machines based on electrodynamic propulsion methods;
2. discoveries implying that that energy could be extracted from the medium, or environment;
3. transmutation of the chemical elements;
4. an "alternative 'ether' physics and science";
5. Tesla's "Dynamic Theory of Gravity."[83]

Lyne believes that the first of these elements was the real unifying motivation to much of Tesla's lifelong research, particularly in his later years, and the other four elements were made in aid of the first.

Citing an article in the September 22, 1940 edition of the *New York Times* by William L. Laurence, Lyne notes that Tesla claimed to have discovered a new force which he called the "teleforce." Expanding on his famous Colorado Springs experiments, Tesla explored this force in discoveries and experiments between 1900 and 1940, claiming to have found a new way to create waves in the atmosphere, a "'new' way to create a 'very great electrical force,'" as well as a new way to magnify that force, and a new means of electrical propulsion.[84] Indeed, Tesla had maintained this vision of an electrical flying machine since the 1870s, when it first occurred to him as a student. Lyne observes that it was to realize this machine that was the reason Tesla “said he originally entered the field of electrical science in 1875 in the first place.”[85] In other words, Lyne believes that the creation of an electrical flying machine is the unifying theme and ultimate motivation of all of Tesla’s life’s work.

---

[81] Ibid.
[82] Ibid., p. 25.
[83] Ibid.
[84] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 27.

In a lecture in 1938, Tesla stated that the central theory of all the above five elements – his “dynamic theory of gravity” – had been worked out by 1893.[86] In that lecture, Tesla referred to two significant discoveries that he planned to “give to the world” when he had completed “his secret developments.”[87] Those two discoveries, according to Lyne, were the Dynamic Theory of Gravity and idea of “environmental energy,” i.e., the idea that “there is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.”[88]

Lest Tesla’s assertions be thought to be merely quirky restatements of relativity, it must be remembered that

> Tesla considered his theory wholly inconsistent with the theory of relativity, and with the modern theory concerning the structure of the atom and the mutual interconversion of matter and energy. Tesla continuously attacked the validity of Einstein’s work; and until two or three years before his death he ridiculed the belief that energy could be obtained from matter.[89]

In a certain sense this is due to Tesla’s habit of thinking in terms of *nineteenth century* aether physics, but in another, it is due to the nature of the discoveries he was making since his Colorado Springs experiments, discoveries that took him into the most avante garde areas.

While clearly derived from his Colorado Springs experiments, Tesla’s Dynamic Theory of Gravity did not get any public airing until that 1938 lecture, given to the Institute of Immigrant Welfare on May 12, 1938. This, in Tesla's own words, is all that is publicly known of that theory:

---

[85] Ibid., p. 4.

[86] Ibid., p. 61. 1893 is significant because that was the year Tesla began his experiments in Colorado Springs that led to his discovery of electrical standing waves and wireless broadcast of power.

[87] Ibid., p. 67.

[88] Ibid.

[89] John J. O’Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Bortherhood of Life , Inc., 1994), p. 249.

> During the succeeding two years (1893 and 1894) of intense concentration I was fortunate enough to make two far reaching discoveries. The first was a dynamic theory of gravity, which I have worked out in all details and hope to give to the world very soon. It explains the causes of this force and the motions of heavenly bodies under its influence so satisfactorily that it will put an end to idle speculation and false conceptions, as that of curved space….
>
> Only the existence of a field of force can account for the motions of the bodies as observed, and its assumption dispenses with space curvature. All literature on this subject is futile and destined to oblivion. So are all attempts to explain the workings of the universe without recognizing the existence of the ether and the indispensable function it plays in the phenomena.
>
> My second discovery was of a physical truth of the greatest importance. As I have searched the entire scientific records in more than a half dozen languages for a long time without finding the least anticipation, I consider myself the original discoverer of this truth, which can be expressed by the statement: There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.
>
> …. It applies rigorously to molecules and atoms as well as to the largest heavenly bodies, and to all matter in the universe in any phase of its existence from its very formation to its ultimate disintegration.[90]

The idea of "environmental energy" may seem obscure, but the radical nature of Tesla's assertion may be appreciated if one considers his lifetime's preoccupation: electricity. What Tesla is in effect saying through his (always) carefully chosen language is that in any electrical circuit or conductor, it is not so much the power "source" that produces the power, but rather that such a source, along with the parameters of the circuit itself, is an *open* system transducing power from the medium. This is a revolutionary statement to make, especially in 1938.

But there is a hint of Tesla's advanced views on the aether and what his "dynamic theory" of gravity may have entailed, if his 1938 statements are viewed in the wider context of previous developments in general and especially the experiments of Lord

---

[90] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* p. 250.

Kelvin in particular. This is his clear allusion to the motion of heavenly bodies and to the fact that his twin observations are *scale invariant*, i.e., applicable to all sizes of matter from atomic to planetary scales. Thus it would seem that Tesla appears to be viewing the aether in not only a dynamic sense, but as a structure of *rotation,* of *vortices.*[91] These are significant indicators that Tesla was already thinking in terms of higher order topologies than relativity theory.[92]

To see Tesla as a conventional 19th century aether physicist in his late life is, however, to massively distort the picture. Tesla wrote an unpublished article toward the end of his life called "Man's Greatest Achievement," in which he states some very unusual, very new, and, as it turns out, very old,[93] views of the aether:

> Long ago (man) recognized that all perceptible matter comes from a primary substance, or a tenuity beyond conception, filling all space, the *Akasa* or lumeniferous ether, which is acted upon by the life-giving *Prana* or creative force, calling into existence, in never ending cycles, all things and phenomena. The primary substance, thrown into infinitesimal whirls of prodigious velocity, becomes gross matter; the force subsiding, the motion ceases and matter disappears, reverting to the primary substance.
>
> Can Man control this grandest, most awe-inspiring of all process in nature? …
>
> If he could do this, he would have powers almost unlimited and supernatural….He could alter the size of this planet, control its seasons, guide it along any path he might choose… He could cause planets to collide and produce suns and stars…
>
> To create and to annihilate material substance… would be the supreme manifestation of the power of Man's mind, his most complete triumph over the physical world, his crowning achievement, which would place him beside his Creator, make him fulfill his ultimate destiny.[94]

---

[91] Lyne also observes that in Tesla's view "the ether is thrown into 'infinitesimal whirls'" or "'micro helices'" at velocities near the speed of light. (*Occult Ether Physics,* p. 68).

[92] It may indicate that Tesla was thinking ahead of the five and six dimensional theories of Kaluza-Klein or Vaclav Hlavaty.

[93] See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), chapters five and nine.

[94] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* pp. 253-254.

As will be seen in chapter five, Tesla's views eerily echo those of "scalar" physicist Tom Bearden.[95] Tesla's view of the aether shows his thinking to be far from the inert and static aether of nineteenth century physicists, or even the kind of aether envisioned by Max Planck and other physicists, who envisioned a quasi-hydro dynamic aether that was "drug along" with planets. As this passage makes clear, Tesla envisioned it as a transmutative aether analogous to electrical carriers "immersed in an insulating fluid" whose properties varied according to the local environment.[96]

But what does all this mean?

Here, it is best to cite Lyne's catalogue of Tesla's own statements, followed by Lyne's own summary of their implications. Lyne assembles a series of quotations by Tesla to demonstrate eight points:

1. "The most probable medium filling space is one consisting of **independent carriers immersed in an insulating fluid.**"
2. "In his experiments he dwells first on some phenomena produced by **electrostatic force, which he considers in the light of modern theories to be the most important force in nature for us to investigate."**
3. **"He illustrates how mechanical motions are produced by a varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous medium,"**
4. "One of the **most interesting results** arrived at in pursuing these experiments, is **the demonstration of the fact that a gaseous medium upon which vibration is impressed by rapid changes of electrostatic potential, is rigid."**
5. "If through this medium enormous electrostatic stresses are assumed to act, which vary rapidly in intensity, it would allow the motion of a body through it, yet it would be rigid and elastic, although the fluid itself might be devoid of these properties."
6. "…on the assumption that the independent carriers are of any configuration such that the fluid resistance to motion in one direction is greater than in another, a stress of that nature would cause the carriers to arrange themselves in groups, since they

---

[95] Tesla also shows himself quite familiar in this quotation with ancient metaphysical and esoteric doctrines of the *materia prima* with his reference to Akasa, or the Akashic field, a kind of eternal ephemeral "Hall of Records."

[96] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 69. For the significance, and *ancientness*, of this view of the aether, see my *Giza Death Star*, chapter three;; and *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* chapters five and nine.

would **turn to each other their sides of the greatest electrical density,** in which position the **fluid resistance to approach would be smaller than to receding."**

7. "If in a medium of the above characteristics a brush would be formed by a steady potential, an exchange of the carriers would go on continuously, and there would be less carriers per unit volume in the brush than in the space at some distance from the electrode, this corresponding to rarefaction."
8. "If the potentials were rapidly changing, the result would be very different; *the higher the frequency of the pulses, the slower would be the exchange of carriers; finally, the motion of translation through measurable space would cease and, with a sufficiently high frequency and intensity of the stress, the carriers would be drawn towards the electrode, and compression would result.*"[97]

Lyne summarizes the practical nature of these insights as follows:

1. Mechanical motions can be produced by varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous (ether) medium, which thereby becomes rigidified, yet allows solid bodies to pass through.
2. Under influence of stress in one direction… the carriers may group together, forming tubes of force, creating greater ease of movement in that direction.
3. When a (direct current) brush is created by a steady potential, a continuous exchange of carriers is created corresponding to ether rarefaction, as the tubes of force are drawn into the conductor.
4. *With a sufficiently high frequency and stress intensity in the opposite direction, carrier exchange is blocked by ether compression, forcing the tubes of force to dissolve in the conductors of the ship, imparting electromagnetic momentum. The system, using the two kinds of potentials (direct current and alternating current), is known as "p2".*[98]

The last point assumes a particular significance in the light not only of Tesla's quest for an electrically propelled flying machine, but also, as we shall see, in the light of the known design and operating principles of the Bell.

Lyne, summarizing Tesla's views on the aether and electrical circuits as *open* systems, notes that electrical motive force is not due merely to "varying currents" but to "rarefaction and compression of the ether" brought about by rapidly varying and different *kinds* of currents.[99] The implication was that, while as early as 1884 Tesla had done calculations for his flying machine when he first immigrated to the United States,[100] he later claimed that his "dirigible torpedo" could achieve speeds of 300 miles per second, or an incredible 1,080,000 miles per hour![101]

---

[97] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 70, bold face emphasis Lyne's, italicized emphasis added.

[98] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 71, emphasis added.

The idea of the compression and rarefaction of the aether via electrical stress caused by two types of electrical potential, coupled with the idea of the *structure* of matter being nothing but vorticular motion in that aether, makes Tesla's views far ahead of their time. Indeed, by discovering the twin characteristics of the aether as longitudinal compression and rarefaction, as well as vorticular motion, Tesla laid the foundations of "scalar physics" as we shall see when we examine the work of Tom Bearden. Tesla actually went so far as to discover the "endothermic explosion" (cold explosion) uses of such wave phenomena:

> Tesla discovered that by using a low frequency beam-directed pulse, he could cause, at the quarter wavelength, the eruption of a large electromagnetic pulse which could, by carrying a much higher exciting wave, excite the atmospheric gases in a region, to explosively expand them, followed by a tremendous implosion and the absorption of a great amount of heat in the area, causing immediate freezing. This process would create an initial explosive shock wave followed by the implosive return wave, similar to nuclear detonation. For example, by using a low frequency of 60 (cycles per second), with a wavelength of 3,100 miles, directed by carrier-beam, a pulse could be made to erupt at one-quarter wavelength – 775 miles, corrected to 751 miles by velocity factor. *By superimposing an exciting frequency* of say 50 megahertz or so, *the atmospheric gases could be excited to cause a "cold implosion" which absorbs heat. By altering the wavelength and the direction of propagation, the results could be delivered to any terrestrial point.*[102]

---

[99] Ibid., p. 71.

[100] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* p. 66.

[101] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 72.

[102] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 25, emphasis added. Lyne also notes that the *frequency* characteristics of the aether in Tesla's view are that the aether is of an *"ultra-hyper-high* frequency" nature, if I may be permitted that clumsy expression for the sake of emphasis. Tesla himself stated that he viewed the basic wave structure of the aether as longitudinal and acoustic in nature, with the "sound" waves traveling at the velocity of light. Moreover, Tesla also viewed

Keep in mind this “cold explosion” and “explosive atmospheric heating” at a distance, for these will be seen to be significant signatures of scalar weapons deployment. Indeed, Tesla chose his name for his new force – “teleforce” – very carefully, for that very name designated the application of “force *at a distance.”*[103] And as will be seen in the next chapter, the electrical stress of the medium via two types of potential, in addition to high frequency pulsation, and vorticular motion, appears to be the very principles in operation in the Bell.

From what has been stated, it is obvious that Lyne views Tesla’s theoretical and practical work as a prototypical “unified physics” that can develop a technology with a variety of applications, from propulsion to weaponry of planet-busting potential.

b. The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression

Tesla’s post-Colorado Springs discoveries were deemed “not fit for public consumption.” And this required, of course, an entity to coordinate and monitor the suppression of such physics and to coordinate any further secret development of it, to promulgate a “public” version of physics destined to proffer untestable theories publicly while privately developing entirely different paradigms, and to coordinate the secret development of exotic physics and associated technologies. That entity Lyne believes was created, or perhaps better put, was *sanctioned* by the National Security Act of 1947.

To corroborate this, Lyne observes that Tesla’s contemporary, friend, and biographer, John J. O’Niell, who wrote the classic biography *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla*, attempted no less than three times to publish the book, all in the same month! Lyne quips:

---

radioactivity as *environmental* and hence a *dynamic* phenomenon, and not as an “inherent” property of certain types of unstable matter. (Lyne, op. cit., p. 74.)

[103] Ibid., p. 28.

> In case you are wondering, the three publishings in the same month were not due to landslide sales at the bookstores, but rather to O'Niell's having been threatened and censored by the FBI, and forced to republish several times because of their deletion and censoring of material which to this day is still classified.[104]

Tesla, contrary to government disinformation, was a careful note taker. As Lyne puts it, "the notes on his Colorado Springs experiments alone were enough for a large-format book of 433 pages."[105] And over his entire lifetime, Tesla managed to produce more than a railroad boxcar full of material, most of which was confiscated by the FBI on his death, as only 150,000 documents were released to his Serbian relations in Yugoslavia.[106]

(1) Strange Nazi Parallels

At this juncture Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis begins to take its final shape. Lyne states that after the arrival of Von Braun and other Project Paperclip scientists in the US after the world war, the military-intelligence community from Air Technical Command at "Wright-Patterson Air Force Base hurried up to the warehouses of the Custodian of Alien Properties, and took possession of all the Tesla materials. They removed them to Wright-Patterson, and every bit of them have been classified at the highest level ever since, the government having declassified NONE of them."[107] In other words, the Air Force had discovered something in the Nazi research that was based upon and a further elaboration of some aspect of Tesla's work.

c. The Nazi Role in Occulted Aether Physics

(1) Roswell, MJ-12, and Disinformation

Lyne believes that the answer to that question is very specific, and that part of the answer lies not only in the creation of the National Security apparatus of the United States in 1947, but in the undue influence that the Paperclip Nazis continued to exercise within that community. For example, Lyne quite openly states that the entire Roswell incident was "an SS hoax", perpetrated by the Paperclip Nazis in New Mexico who were, in fact, SS officers.[108] As a result of the American confiscation of the most sensitive Nazi scientific documents, Lyne believes unhesitatingly that not only is most UFOlogy manipulated by the CIA or other intelligence agencies, but also that the MAJIC-12 documents are an elaborate disinformation campaign hatched within the bowels of the intelligence community,[109] possessing partial truth, and partial falsehood. Similarly, and for our purposes, more importantly, Lyne points out the obvious fact that since such Nazi documentation as concerned itself with such exotic physics, weapons and propulsion systems was confiscated by America (or, equally plausible, remained under German control or at least influence), then the so-called "plans" and "documents" of the SS supposedly detailing Nazi flying saucers are also fakes, part of an elaborate disinformation campaign.[110]

---

[104] Lyne, *Occult Science Dictatorship,* p. 25.
[105] Ibid., p. 27.
[106] Ibid., p. 26.
[107] Ibid., p. 27.

But oddly, and most chillingly, Lyne points out that the two largest and most notorious agencies established by the National Security Act, The Central Intelligence Agency and The National Security Agency, are but direct English translations or metaphrases of *Reichsicherheithauptamt,* the infamous R.S.H.A, which may be literally translated as "National Security Agency" and loosely also connotes a central, or main, clearing office, or "central intelligence" or "security" agency.[111]

---

[108] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* p. vii. This should be kept in mind when the Carol Rosin affidavit is considered later, since it concerns direct statements allegedly made by Von Braun himself that imply a vast "extraterrestrial" hoax being played out on mankind in order to weaponize space with the next generation of post-thermonuclear strategic offensive weapons.

[109] Ibid., p. 118.

[110] Ibid., pp 2-3. Lyne also believes the Schauberger component of the Nazi UFO Legend to be a component of this disinformation.

[111] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 8.

(2) Von Braun's Alleged Pre-War "P2" Project in New Mexico

Given all that Lyne alleges concerning Tesla's views and his "p2" lecture in London demonstrating electromotive properties of two plates with different types of potential (alternating and direct current), it is a short and, one must admit, believable step for Lyne to maintain that this work quickly came to the attention of the Nazis, who like the Soviets a generation later, were searching for areas of anomalous or exotic physics to exploit, elaborate, and develop. Thus, Lyne maintains that *before* the war, Werner Von Braun and a small and select team of German scientists went to New Mexico and there performed preliminary experiments on Tesla's ideas, a project Lyne calls the "p2" project, after Tesla's two different potentials.[112]

Having assured themselves of the viability of Tesla's science, Lyne asserts that Von Braun and company returned to Germany where the work was continued in great secrecy and behind a number of "camouflage" black projects, such as rockets and "aerodynamic saucers." The cover-up continued after the war under the aegis of the National Security Act and the Nazi-influenced CIA, which had taken over the whole of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East). These combined government, military, corporate, and Nazi entities conspired to conceal the aether physics behind Relativity. This Teslian "aether physics", according to Lyne, is the "'classified science' that the government conceals pursuant to the National Security Act."[113]

What is one to make of Lyne's version?

First, while certainly possessing its outlandish and fantastic elements, it is clear that many aspects of it resonate with other researchers' more recent inquiries. In fact, it was Lyne who first *connected* Tesla, exotic Nazi technology, the Nazi influence in the post-war American military-industrial complex, and the notion of hoaxes and disinformation in the UFOlogy community.

---

[112] Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* pp. 6-7, 48-49, 102.

[113] Lune, *Occult Science Dictatorship,* p. 8.

Second, Lyne clearly believes that there is a suppressed, or occulted, physics, developed in secret, but *recoverable if one carefully sifts the published physics papers and views them in a certain way, along the lines of the aether paradigm.* This, as will be seen in chapter five, is quite similar to Tom Bearden's belief in a similar such repressed – but reconstructable – physics.

Third, Lyne has indicated certain signatures of the application of that physics when weaponized: atmospheric heating or, alternatively, "cold explosions." Moreover, Lyne has clearly indicated the planet-busting potential of such weapons.

While most of Lyne's version of the Hypothesis sounds like the sheerest fantasy, this aspect, at least, is also shared by Bearden, a highly credentialed and widely published scientist.

*5. **Both** Feet In Atlantis: the "Jan Van Helsing" Version*

On the decidedly bizarre end of the Two Space Programs spectrum are the curious allegations of the pseudonymous "Jan Van Helsing," a researcher into the occult basis of exotic Nazi technology. Like the other pseudonymous source "William Torbitt" examined previously, Van Helsing outlines a scenario of a coordinated "private" group of secret societies behind the Nazis pursuing exotic weapons technologies. Unlike Torbitt, however, Van Helsing also displays evident sympathy for some of these societies and by implication for the Nazis themselves. Nonetheless, Van Helsing's allegations are too important to be ignored.

Van Helsing published his views in a work entitled *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, a work not easily available except in an excerpted version on the internet.[114]

Van Helsing repeats many of the themes of the Nazi UFO Legend, including those that place the beginning of Nazi secret weapons research in very secret pre-war projects of these secret societies, namely, the so-called "Vril *Gesellschaft*," named after the "vril" or aetheric energy of Sir Edward Bullwer-Lytton's famous novels of a long-lost subterranean civilization that had preserved the secrets of this mysterious energy, and the more famous or infamous *Thule Gesellschaft*, the secret society that actually helped to midwife the Nazi Party into existence. These ideas are nothing new in the lore of the Nazi UFO legend. What is new with Van Helsing are the odd details that he adds to the mix.

---

[114] Q.v. www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril1.html.

For example, Van Helsing states that the Vril Society "was *mainly* occupied with the building of UFOs. They had, next to Viktor Schauberger and Dr. W. O. Schumann, also Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe, Epp and Belluzo working for them."[115] In other words, Van Helsing makes the astonishing claim that all of the alleged "flying saucer experts" that were associated with the development of these exotic technologies since Rudolf Lusar first broke the story in the 1950s were members initially of a secret society whose primary purpose was the building of such craft. All the Nazis did, apparently, was to continue the project under their own occult-inspired jurisdiction: the SS.

But beyond this, Van Helsing also makes two other assertions with this remarkable statement, one very blatant, and the other only implied. In the first case, he baldly asserts that world-renowned scientist and physicist W.O. Schumann, discoverer of the so-called "Schumann Resonance" of the earth, was himself an initiate into this society, and was cooperating on these projects. In the second case, Van Helsing is clearly implying by his unsubstantiated allegation that some group inside Germany was involved in the secret development of an "off-the-books" physics and technology long before the Nazis came to power. In this, his allegations are similar to those who believe that the 1890s "airship" flaps in the USA were brought about by a secret group that had covertly designed, perfected, tested, and flown the first "airships".

Were these the only allegations that Van Helsing makes, it would be fairly easy to simply dismiss them with a smile and a chuckle, and move on. However, Van Helsing also couples his allegations to the known occult doctrines of these secret societies as *the primary motivation* behind the Nazi projects, and in so doing, proposes his own "Nazi" version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. The importance of his allegations lies, therefore, in its odd corroboration of Richard Hoagland’s belief that many NASA launches and mission “logos” were coordinated in reference to occult doctrine and practice, particularly to celestial alignments.

---

[115] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril1.html, p. 1.

This strange history begins, according to Van Helsing, in 1917, during World War One, when

> The occultist BARON RUDOLF VON SEBOTTENDORFF, the Gurdjeff (sic) disciple KARL HAUSHOFER, the ace pilot LOTHAR WAIZ, PRELATE GERNOT of the secret “Societas Templi Marcioni” (The Inheritors of the Knights Templar) and MARIA ORSIC, a transcendental medium from Zagreb met in Vienna. They all had extensively studied the “Golden Dawn”, its teachings, rituals and especially its knowledge about Asian secret lodges. Sebottendorff and Haushofer were experienced travelers of India and Tibet and much influenced by the teachings and myths of those places. During the First World War Karl Haushofer had made contacts with one of the most influential secret societies of Asia, the Tibetan Yellow Hats (dGe-lugs-pa). This sect was formed in 1409 by the Buddhist reformer Tsong-kha-pa. Haushofer was initiated and swore to commit suicide should his *mission* fail. The contacts between Haushofer and the Yellow Hats led in the Twenties to the formation of Tibetan colonies in Germany.
>
> The four young people hoped that during these meetings in Vienna they would learn something about the secret revolutionary texts of the **Knights Templar** and also about the secret fraternity DIE HERREN VOM SCHWARZEN STEIN (“The Lords of the Black Stone”).[116]

Again, there is, on the surface, nothing new about Van Helsing’s allegations; one encounters the familiar names – Von Sebottendorff and General Haushofer, Hitler’s “geopolitics” guru – in connection with familiar themes: the fascination for the Orient and for its “secret wisdom”.

But, again, Van Helsing imparts new information – again without the slightest substantiation – that is unique to him, namely, that the Vienna meeting was for a twofold purpose: (1) to acquire knowledge about some apparently (very) secret Templar texts, and (2) to acquire knowledge about an even more secret fraternity, the Lords of the Black Stone. And of course, lest it be forgotten, the words Black Stone, in German, are *schwarzen Stein*, abbreviated as

---

[116] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* p. 1, www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril3.html.

"SS". It is not long, therefore, before Van Helsing couples this new twist to another ancient occult doctrine, the "Black Sun" (*schwarze Sonne)* of illumination, also abbreviated "SS."[117]

Then in September of 1917, Baron Von Sebottendorff allegedly *met* with leaders and members of this mysterious "Lords of the Black Stone" fraternity in "Untersberg to receive the power of the 'Black-Purple Stone' after which the secret society was named."[118] Again, no substantiation or evidence of this assertion is offered. However, perhaps a very indirect corroboration exists in the form of the famous traveler-explorer-occultist Nicholas Roerich, an advisor to President Franklin D. Roosevelt. Roerich, of course, had a similar preoccupation with "magic stones", namely, the celebrated chintimanti stone of Mongolia.

In any case, whatever happened in September 1917 appeared to have been successful, for in 1918 a group formed around Von Sebottendorff in Bad Aibling, which would become the notorious Thule Society. It is here that "scientific magic, astrology, occultism and Templar knowledge as well as 'Golden Dawn' practices like Tantra, Yoga and Eastern meditation" were all combined."[119] And among this potent mix was also a tincture of messianism, for the *Thule Gesellschaft* also "believed, following the Revelation of Isis, in a Coming Saviour (German: Heiland = the Holy One), the 'Third Sargon' who would bring to Germany glory and a new Aryan culture."[120] In other words, the program was a total one: the goal of the secret society not only continued to be to (re-)discover and (re-)construct a lost and exotic technology of hegemony, but it also sought to place its ideas and agendas into power. Once in power, it would maintain itself in authority by the very technological means it was seeking to (re-) discover. Thus, by implication Van Helsing is saying that one of the *hidden* or "occulted" agendas of the Nazi Party since its inception was always technological and occult in nature; it was *committed* to the (re-) discovery of a lost and buried technology of hegemony, in short, to the creation of exotic and massively destructive weapons. It was, so to speak, the one political party in the world with an occult-weapons agenda that could be called "Atlantean." It was the one political party in the world with *both* feet planted firmly in Atlantis.

---

[117] Ibid., p. 2.

[118] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twnetieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril3.html, p. 3.

[119] Ibid., p. 6.

[120] Ibid.

To drive home this point, Van Helsing cites the famous work of Dietrich Bronder, *Befor Hitler Kamm* (*Before Hitler Came*), which lists the following people as members of the *Thule Gesellschaft:*

1. Baron Rudolf von Sebottendorff, Grand Master
2. Guido Von List, Master
3. Jorg Lanz Von Liebenfels, Master
4. Adolf Hitler, later Reichschancellor, and "SS Superior"
5. Rudolf Hess, later Deputy Führer and SS Obergruppenführer
6. Hermann Göring, Reichsmarschall and SS Obergruppenführer
7. Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer SS and Reichsminister
8. Alfred Rosenberg, Reichsminister and NSDAP Reichsleiter
9. Hans Franck, NSDAP Reichsleiter and later Governor General of occupied Poland
10. Juilius Streicher, SA Obergruppenführer
11. Major General Prof Dr. Karl Haushofer, occultist and geopolitician, considered to be the architect of Hitler's *Lebensraum* doctrine
12. Prof Dr Gottfried Feder
13. Dietrich Eckart, poet, occultist, and Editor in Chief of the *Völkischer Beobachter* newspaper
14. Bernhard Stempfle, confidant of Hitler
15. Dr. Theo Morell, Hitler's personal physician
16. Franz Gurtner, Munich police president
17. Rudolf Steiner, founder of the Anthroposophic society
18. Prof Dr W.O. Schumann of the Munich Technical University
19. Trebisch-Lincoln, occultist and Tibetan traveler

20. Countess Westrap.[121]

This list is illuminating in a number of respects.

First, it provides a general context from which to view the possible occult influences at work behind the Nazi Antarctic expedition in 1938-1939, for that expedition was under the patronage of *Reichsmarschall* Göring. Second, it provides a similar context from which to view the allegations of some that Hess was privy to whatever secrets that expedition found, and that these were the ultimate motivation for the Allied Powers keeping him – or his imposter – imprisoned for so long after the war. Finally, it provides an interesting context from which to view the Third Reich and its secret weapons black projects themselves, projects which included a heavy admixture of occult doctrine and experimentation. From a glance at the list, it is apparent that the SS itself is the visible extension of the *Thule Gesellschaft* into the Third Reich. Or, to put it differently, via the National Socialist Party, an occult secret society had seized the reigns of authority in one of the world's great powers, and could thus direct the entire energies of that state into the overt and covert pursuit of its agendas.

Among the doctrines held by the *Thule Gesellschaft* that lay behind the Nazi ideology were an "Ayro-Germanic construction of religion…by the philosopher Guido Von List… a leaning towards the anti-Old Testament" views of an early Christian heresy known as Marcionism.[122] This was augmented by the "esoteric history" of the Aryans believed by the *Thule Gesellschaft*, a history reconstructed from ancient German and Scandinavian myths. Chief among these was the belief in "Hyperborea," the continent populated by the "ancient Aryans," with its capital city of "Ultima Thule," both of which were located in "the highest north". Moreover, these "ancient Aryans" were space travelers from a planet in the star system of Aldebaran, the main star in the constellation of Taurus.[123]

---

[121] Jan Van Helsing, *Secrfet Societies: Their power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril3.html, pp. 6-7.

[122] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril3.html, pp. 7-8.

According to this myth, the continent sank during the last ice age, whereupon, with customary Teutonic preparation, the ancient Ayrans were supposed to have burrowed into the earth and "settled under the Himalaya region" in huge subterranean cities bored out with huge machines.[124] This in turn forms the rationale for the "two large expeditions" that were "sent by the SS to the Himalayas to find those entrances. Further expeditions searched in the Andes, the Matto Grosso mountains in the North and the Santa Catarina mountains in the South of Brazil, in Czechoslovakia and parts of England."[125]

As Van Helsing also mentions, Hitler's geopolitician, General Karl Haushofer, had his own personal dualistic twist to this doctrine, claiming that

> Thule was actually Atlantis and – contrary to all other researchers of Tibet and India – he said that the surviving Thule-Atlanteans were separated into two groups, a good one and an evil one. Those who called themselves after their oracle *Agharti* – were the good and settled in the Himalaya region, the evil ones were the *Shamballah* – who wanted to subjugate humanity and they went West. He maintained that the fight between the people of Agharta and Shamballah had been going on for thousands of years and that in the Third Reich, the Thule Gesellschaft as Agartha's representative – continued it against the representatives of Shamballah, the Freemasons and the Zionists. This perhaps was his mission.[126]

Haushofer allegedly then went on to found in 1919 "a second order, the '*Brüder des Lichts*' (sic)(Brothers of the Light)," the society that later became the *Vril Gesellschaft*.[127] According to Van Helsing this new secret society united the society known as *Die Herren vom Schwarzen Stein* (The Lords of the Black Stone), which allegedly emerged from the old Teutonic Order, and the *Schwarze Ritter* (Black Knights) of the Thule Society and the SS elite of the *Schwarze Sonne*, or Black Sun.[128]

---

[123] Ibid., p. 8.

[124] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril3.html, pp.7-8.

[125] Ibid., p. 10.

[126] Ibid., p. 9.

[127] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p. 2.

The occasion of this founding was apparently a meeting in which members of these various secret orders met in a rented forester's lodge near what would later become Hitler's lair, in Berchtesgaden. The meeting was also attended by two mediums, who had "mediumistically received transmissions in a secret Templar script – a language unknown to her – with the technical data for the construction of a flying machine. According to Vril documents these telepathic messages came from the solar system Aldebaran which is sixty-eight light-years away in the constellation Taurus."[129]

As part of this message, the mediums were "informed" that the non-white races were in "lower (stages) of spiritual development," and that "the more the races intermixed, the lower the spiritual development of these people sank."[130] They were also "told" that the "divine" people of "Aldebaran" had colonized "the planet *Mallona* (also called Maldek, Marduk or – by the Russians – Phaeton) which existed in the area of today's asteroid belt, then between Mars and Jupiter."[131] Of course, the idea of the asteroid belt having been a former planet that had exploded is an old hypothesis, first entertained in the early nineteenth century by astronomers after the discovery of the second asteroid, and as they sought to explain why Bode's Law predicted a planet should be in the orbit of the asteroid belt.[132]

What is crucial to notice, however, is that Van Helsing's allegation makes it clear that someone inside of Germany had connected the astronomical theory of an exploded planet to certain ancient Sumerian myths, most likely that of the *Enuma Elish*, an ancient war epic that describes the destruction of the now missing planet by means of an ancient weapon of mass destruction.[133]

---

[128] Ibid.

[129] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p. 3.

[130] Ibid.

[131] Ibid.

[132] See the last two books of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 12-20, and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 31-37.

But Van Helsing does not stop there, for he also connects these occult practices, secret societies, astronomical theories, with the secret development of a new science and new technology:

> We cannot know whether these statements about Aldebaran were based on facts, but the construction plans and the technical details that the Vril telepaths received – wherever they came from – were so accurate that they led to the most fantastic idea men ever begot: the construction of a *Jenseitsflugmaschine*, a "flying machine for the other side."[134]

Let us pause to consider exactly what these statements mean.

First, Van Helsing supplies considerably *more* detail in what is otherwise the old story that the Vril Society receives UFO plans from mediums, namely, he supplies the secret societies that came together, and names the mediums involved,[135] the time,[136] and the place, a forester's lodge near Berchtesgaden! But secondly, as the remarks immediately above make clear, his interest is not so much these allegations, but rather that they led to the development of an entirely different technology and science *by a secret society founded for the purpose* by the very man later to be Hitler's geopolitician!

As if that were not enough, Van Helsing then goes on to make the following statement:

> During this early phase of "alternative science" Dr. W. O. Schumann of the Technical University in Munich, both a Thule and a Vril member, held a speech a section of which is reproduced here:
>
> "In everything we recognize two principles that determine the events: light and darkness, good and evil, creation and destruction – as in electricity we know plus and minus. It is always: either – or…..The coming new age will be an age of a new, positive, divine technology!"[137]

---

[133] See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 12-23.

[134] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p.4.

[135] Ibid., p. 3, the mediums were allegedly Maria Orsic and another one "only known as Sigrun."

[136] Ibid., p. 2: December 1919.

[137] Ibid., 5.

Van Helsing then notes that these remarks – one of the few that he "substantiates" - are drawn from "the German SS secret archives."[138]

According to Van Helsing, the first "saucer" was secretly built by the Vril Society in 1922.[139] He follows this up with even more specific information. For example, he alleges that this machine was tested for two years before it was "dismantled and probably stored in the Augsburg works of Messerschmitt."[140] Moreover, there were entries in the financial records of German aviation companies "under the codename 'JFM' (for *Jenseitsflugmaschine*)" that showed "payments towards financing this work." [141]

But it is when Van Helsing arrives at World War Two and the continuation of these projects under the Nazis that his fantasia knows no bounds. For example, he alleges that "at the beginning of 1943 it was planned to build in the Zeppelin works a cigar-shaped mother ship," a machine called the "Andromeda Device", with a length of around 150 yards, capable of storing "several saucer-shaped craft in its body for flights of long duration,"[142] or perhaps better stated, flights of Adamski-esque imagination.

But immediately after these sensational and highly questionable allegations, Van Helsing again comes up with more unsubstantiated specifics:

> By Christmas 1943 an important meeting of the *Vril Gesellschaft* took place at the seaside port of Kolberg. The two mediums Maria Orsic and Sigrun attended. The main item on the agenda was the Aldebaran Project. The mediums had received precise information about habitable planets around the sun Aldebaran and one began to plan a trip there. At a January 22, 1944 meeting between Hitler, Himmler, Kunkel (of the Vril Society) and Dr. Schumann this project was discussed. It was planned to send the Vril 7 large-capacity craft *through a dimension channel independent of the speed of light* to Aldebaran. According

---

[138] Ibid. I have been unable, as of this writing, to track down the *exact* reference.

[139] Ibid., p. 6.

[140] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p. 6.

[141] Ibid.

[142] Ibid., p. 13.

> Ratthofer a first test flight in the dimension channel took place in the winter of 1944. It barely missed disaster…[143]

In addition to all this, Van Helsing also states that these exotic craft "should create an extremely strong field around itself extending somewhat into its surroundings which would render the space thus enclosed including the machine *a microcosm absolutely independent of the earthbound space."*[144]

All of this exotic research was conducted under the Nazis, according to Van Helsing, by a group "within the SS" that was "studying alternative energy, the SS-E-IV," or *SS Entwicklungstelle IV* (SS Development Group IV). Here Van Helsing is on more solid ground, for there was indeed such a group in the SS, whose top secret brief was precisely to research "alternative energy." But Van Helsing adds his customary occult twist, for he calls this group "Development Group IV of the Black Sun," or *Schwarze Sonne*, abbreviated "SS". The doctrine of the Black Sun (*Schwarze Sonne*) or Black Stone (*Schwarze Stein*) was the secret doctrine of the SS known only to Himmler's highest SS generals.[145] The purpose of this group was "to render Germany independent of foreign oil."[146]

What emerges from all this is that there were two space programs already in existence in Nazi Germany, a "public" space program, that was in fact the "*secret"* rocket program of Von Braun and the Peenemünde scientists, and a *much more secret*, and much earlier, one, that begun by the secret societies and later continued by the SS, a program with a completely different physics and technology.

While most of Van Helsing's fantasia inevitably strikes one as absurd, certain aspects of it fit the broad outlines one has come to expect with Nazi secret weapons development: an undercurrent of occult inspiration, development in utter secrecy, the search for a new physics and new technology, the evident reliance upon and knowledge of ancient myths in the reconstruction of that science and technology, and the fusion of these with other occult doctrines – "root races", extraterrestrial human origins, and so on – and a genocidal political agenda.

---

[143] Ibid., pp. 13-14, emphasis added.

[144] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p. 8, emphasis added.

[145] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 161-180.

[146] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century,* www.galactic-server.net/rune/vril4.html, p. 11.

If, as Van Helsing suggests, this dual track program was in fact begun by pre-war secret societies, then one method of *testing* his allegations might be to see if there is any indication that after the war the same or similar groups continued the lines of exotic and esoteric research the SS was pursuing during the war.

In any case, Van Helsing's is not the last word in the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. Indeed, if David S. Percy and Mary Bennett are correct, then not only were the Two Space Programs that were begun by the Nazis during the war continued *after* the war both by the Soviet Union and the United States, they moreover exhibited much more coordination between them than the space programs of alleged rivals should really exhibit, especially at the height of the Cold War where the ultimate prize – the Moon – promised rich benefits in prestige and military position to whomever got there first.

6. *The* Dark Moon *Version*

British authors David S. Percy and Mary Bennett are the latest in a long line of researchers who question the historical record of the Apollo manned Moon missions. This is not to say that they are of the typical "Apollo-was-entirely-hoaxed" genre. Quite the contrary. As they put their own case, the purpose of their book, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers,* is "to question the entire validity of the official record of mankind's exploration of the Moon especially the Apollo lunar landings. We are *not* however claiming that astronauts from Earth have never walked on the Moon."[147] That is to say, they believe mankind went to the Moon, but that it did not happen in the way we have been told it happened.

---

[147] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers,* p. 1.

Like many researchers who question the official explanation of the Apollo program and its celebrated Moon landings, Bennett and Percy offer a compelling case that many of the Moon photographs allegedly taken by the astronauts while on the Moon were in fact photographs that were taken on a set. Like many others, they cite the usual discrepancies in lighting, varying angles of shadows within single frames, light sources from areas supposedly in shadow, and so on. *Unlike* many others, they do not cite these anomalies as proof that we never went, but only to raise questions about the official version of the *way* we went. And the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is crucial to their reconstruction of what they believe *actually* happened.

On their view, the Two Space Program Hypothesis takes on the following outline:

> - The foundations for the grand space project were laid down during WWII.
> - The project was conceived and designed as a collaboration between two superpowers.
> - The Cold War was a convenient cover under which aspects of this project could be implemented and hidden.
> - All these machinations were orchestrated at the very highest level, with only a select *and hidden* few ever knowing *the overall objectives* of the project.
> - These objectives have not yet been achieved in full. We are referring to a project that has been around at least since 1947 – and it divides into several sections.
> - Put another way, NASA’s Apollo phase, seen by the public to be the end result of a decision made in the 1960s by President Kennedy was in fact only a small (but significant) part of a greater plan.
> - Whatever humanity has experienced concerning the rivalries between the super powers of this world, today, at some very high but invisible level, our attitudes are being molded to suit an agenda which does not necessarily have all our interests at heart.[148]

What is of interest here is the clear connection of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis to the famous events of 1947 – Kenneth Arnold’s first “UFO” sighting in Washington state and the later even more famous “Roswell incident” with all its attendant corollaries – but more importantly, to the events of World War Two. In this respect, Bennett and Percy are unique.

---

[148] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 201.

Moreover, they repeatedly hint at a Nazi connection, or at least, *implication* to their approach, for "without the remnants of Hitler's war machine, our first steps into space would probably have occurred decades later."[149] According to Bennett and Percy, the deceptions that became so much a part of the public policy of NASA – deceptions already noted in this chapter in connections with other versions of the hypothesis – were already in place well before the agency had even been established. The policy decisions leading to these deceptions began, as they point out, in the "pre- and post-war period in Germany."[150] The deceptions originate, in fact, with a deliberately muddied picture of Operation Paperclip. As Bennett and Percy quip:

> Now follows some interesting arithmetic. We are told by (David) Baker that the German scientists began arriving at Fort Bliss in October 1945 (that is the advance guard of Von Braun and his small team of five) and by March 1946 their numbers had peaked – at the grant total of thirty nine.
>
> (Paperclip scientists) Stuhlinger and Ordway inform us that there were three shipments and *a total of 118 men* arriving in America between November 1945 and February 1946. So by 1946 the American Army have already lost 85 scientists. Were they declared AWOL or were they housed elsewhere, and not at Fort Bliss? Were some of them at Almogordo perhaps? From 127 total German rocket scientists allowed into America under Operation Paperclip we have a total of 6 + 118 = 4.[151]

But their suspicions predate even Operation Paperclip and the inability of the historical record to come up with anything like a consistent number of German scientists and technicians actually brought to the USA.

The Two Space Programs may have actually begun, at least on the Allied side of things, during the war itself. In evidence of this allegation, Percy and Bennett proffer the R.A.F's massive 600 bomber raid against the Peenemünde facility in 1943.

---

[149] Ibid., p. 165.

[150] Ibid.

[151] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* pp. 181-182.

> Thanks to information from Germany supplied by Paul Rosbaud, codenamed ‘Griffin’, the British put Operation Hydra into action, designed to eliminate 1) the engineer’s residential quarters 2) the missile pre-production facility and 3) the R&D laboratories/offices. From nine minutes past midnight on August 18 and over forty seven minutes, 600, yes *six hundred*, Royal Air Force aircraft marked targets and then dropped 1,593 tons of high explosives and 281 tons of incendiary bombs onto Peenemünde. However, from the beginning the start point of the bombing run was altogether mis-identified – the northern peninsular (sic) of Peenemünde being lit by the target indicators rather than the designated Ruden Island situated two miles further north. As a result of this initial ‘blunder’, the air raid failed in two-thirds of its avowed objectives…. Instructions from the highest level, it seems, had been to target personnel and certainly *not the V-2 rocket production facilities.*[152]

Indeed, even in targeting personnel the raid was not much of a success, since “of the eight hundred personnel on the ground who did die about half were from the prisoner labor force (mostly Soviets) and the other half were technicians and their families.”[153] The important scientists – Kurt Debus, Werner von Braun, Hermann Oberth et al – survived.

So this raises the specter of a last minute change in the operational plan of the raid, a change effected at the highest level. The RAF, not noted for inaccuracy or incompetence on its bombing raids over Nazi Germany, received faulty information on the coordinates for the starting point for the bombing run itself. Such an alteration “would have ensured that the advance pathfinders placed the marker flares ‘too short’ and/or ‘too long’, thus ensuring the safety of the individuals and rocket technology desperately needed by those that knew – the ‘masters of infinity’.”[154] Simply put, Bennett and Percy believe, on the basis of this singular and unique failure of the RAF to deliver its customary knockout punch to a target, that crucial areas of Peenemünde were deliberately spared in order to capture its technology and scientists after the war.

---

[152] Ibid., p. 173.

[153] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 173.

[154] Ibid.

But immediately after the war, things became even stranger. After careful consideration of the various accounts, Bennett and Percy concluded that both the Soviets and Americans arrived at the notorious Mittelwerk – the underground factory for building V-2s using concentration camp slave labor, constructed by SS General Kammler- *at the same time* and moreover cooperated in divvying up the booty![155] Such glaring discrepancies

> Most certainly uphold our theory that this entire period was being organized as a cohesive whole and was not just a 'race' against time to see who could bag the bigger haul of documents, materials and men. This plan was surely a precursor to the 'space race' story, which was also designed to look like one thing but actually to function in a completely different way.[156]

While the USA was shipping a few hundreds of German scientists to the USA, along with Von Braun and the precious documents he brought with him, the Soviet Union rounded up over three *thousand* technicians who had worked on the rockets, and whose new job for their new Soviet masters "was to re-establish the documentation taken by von Braun."[157] It was a convenient division of the spoils.

And perhaps a bit *too* convenient.

Bennett and Percy point out that in 1958 a British publisher, Robert Maxwell, attended symposia in Moscow for the international geophysical year. While there, Maxwell returned to his hotel room one day with a sixty three page manuscript containing what were supposedly "book titles" and asked his wife to photograph the pages quickly, as the papers absolutely had to be returned before lunch. His wife recounts how

> by page thirty two she noticed that they were not book titles at all, but were "Die deutschen Firma, deren Einrichtung demontiert und zur Ausführ nach der Sowjetunion bestimmt sind." Which translates as: "German firms whose equipment is to be dismantled and transported to the Soviet Union." …It is significant that this Soviet shopping list was written in *German*.

---

[155] Ibid., p. 177.

[156] Ibid., pp. 177-178.

[157] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 178.

> Why was is not in Russian?[158]

One answer to this disturbing question is, of course, that the divvying up of the "booty" had been decided before the end of the war, and by the Nazis themselves. We shall see in a moment how this idea actually – and most curiously – is able to explain and unite the various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis.

Bennett and Percy's version of the Hypothesis now reaches its final and full development. Noting that the Soviet Union began to return these German technicians in three drafts, beginning in 1952, and ending in 1954 when the last of the technicians were repatriated to Germany, they make clear one crucial difference between the Soviet Union's use of Nazi scientists, and the American one. In the Soviet Union these technicians were principally employed *teaching Russian university students*, which students in turn *gained practical hands-on experience by working in the Russian space program while they were still students.*[159] In this one may detect the steady hand of Sergei Korolëv, as well as appreciate the reason for the early Soviet successes in space achievement. The Soviets at least appeared to be serious about freeing their program from undue Nazi influence as quickly as possible.

And this brings us, finally, to Bennett's and Percy's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis:

> Most conveniently, at the end of WWII the political globe had been divided into two – one 'public sector' in the West and one private sector in the East. What could be more simple than to exploit this division and lower the iron curtain in exactly the same way as the safety curtain comes down in the theatre. This ruse enabled the organizers of the space project to go to work in relative obscurity.
>
> In the sense that two teams were targeting the Moon there was always a space race. In reality the objectives were not those of competition. These two teams, while wearing different colours, were in truth on the same side. And even if many of the key players were unaware of the real script, it is likely (in our view) that at least both Korolëv and von Braun were aware of the true situation.[160]

---

[158] Ibid.

[159] Ibid., p. 194.

[160] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 198.

Thus, in the Bennett and Percy version of the Hypothesis, the two space programs are precisely that of the US and NASA, the program for "public consumption", and that of the USSR, the covert program which carried on the secret agenda of its hidden masters. Indeed, as they point out, control of these two programs was vested in no more than "a few score men" who also "controlled the services of some of civilization's most highly trained specialists" and "the large funds appropriated for armaments."[161]

But to assert that the two superpowers' space programs were carefully contrived along "public" and "private" lines is to suggest a degree of coordination between them that hitherto was hardly ever seriously suggested. However, this, Bennett and Percy urge, is precisely what the record seems to indicate. "The American/Soviet space timetable demonstrates how carefully progress in space had been shared between them, with alternating monthly flights in some cases. This can only have been the result of close planning and continuous liaison at the very highest levels."[162] In support of this suggestion, they produce the following launch schedules of the respective programs:

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	Jan 2, 1959	Luna 1
USSR	Sept 12, 1959	Luna 2
USSR	Oct 4, 1959	Luna 3
USA	*Aug 23, 1961*	*Ranger 1*
USA	*Nov 18, 1961*	*Ranger 2*
USA	*Jan 26, 1962*	*Ranger 3*
USA	*Apr 23, 1962*	*Ranger 4*
USA	*Oct 1962*	*Ranger 5*
USSR	Apr 2, 1963	Luna 4
USA	*Jan 30, 1964*	*Ranger 6*
USA	*Jul 31, 1964*	*Ranger 7*
USA	*Feb 20, 1965*	*Ranger 8*
USA	*Mar 24, 1965*	*Ranger 9*

---

[161] Ibid., p. 197.

[162] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 162.

„From Russia with Love“

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	May 9, 1965	Luna 5
USSR	June 8, 1965	Luna 6
USSR	July 18, 1965	Zond 3
USSR	Oct 24, 1965	Luna 7
USSR	Dec 3, 1965	Luna 8
USSR	Jan 31, 1966	Luna 9
USSR	Mar 31, 1966	Luna 10
USA	*June 2, 1966*	*Surveyor 1*
USSR	Aug 24, 1966	Luna 11
USA	*Sept 20, 1966*	*Surveyor 2*
USSR	Oct 22, 1966	Luna 12
USSR	Dec 21, 1966	Luna 13
USA	*Apr 20, 1967*	*Surveyor 3*
USA	*July 14, 1967*	*Surveyor 4*
USA	*Sept 11, 1967*	*Surveyor 5*
USA	*Nov 10, 1967*	*Surveyor 6*
USA	*Jan 10, 1968*	*Surveyor 7*
USSR	Apr 7, 1968	Luna 14
USSR	Sept 14, 1968	Zond 5
USSR	Nov 10, 1968	Zond 6
USA	*Dec 21, 19681*	*Apollo 8*
USA	*May 18, 1969*	*Apollo 10*
USSR	July 13, 1969	Luna 15
USA	*July 16, 1969*	*Apollo 11*
USSR	Aug 7, 1969	Zond 7
USA	*Nov 14, 1969*	*Apollo 12*
USA	*Apr 11, 1970*	*Apollo 13*
USSR	Sept 12, 1970	Luna 16
USSR	Oct 20, 1970	Zond 8
USSR	Nov 10, 1970	Luna 17/Lunikhod
USA	*Jan 31, 1971*	*Apollo 14*
USA	*July 26, 1971*	*Apollo 15*
USSR	Sept 2, 1971	Luna 18
USSR	Sept 28, 1971	Luna 19
USSR	Feb 14, 1972	Luna 20
USA	*Apr 16, 1972*	*Apollo 16*
USA	*Dec 7, 1972*	*Apollo 17*

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	Jan 8, 1973	Luna 21/Lunikhod 2
USSR	May 29, 1974	Luna 22
USSR	Oct 1974	Luna 23
USSR	Aug 9, 1976	Luna 24[163]

But why the secrecy? And why the apparent coordination between the two programs? Bennett and Percy pull no punches: "We propose that the secret and subtle aspect…was the certain awareness by the authorities of the existence of *extraterrestrial intelligence."*[164]

Moreover, "this awareness of ET was the driving force behind their mission to land on the Moon. However, the Moon was only a staging post to their avowed destination – a manned mission to a location on the plains of Cydonia, Mars."[165] While Bennett and Percy do not offer much to elaborate why they believe these things, what should be noted is the clear implication of their remarks, namely, that this "ET awareness" was the real hidden agenda driving both space programs *since the end of World War Two*, and the real hidden goal of both was a manned flight to Mars, again, *since the end of World War Two.*

While not offering much to substantiate this astounding assertion, they do offer a couple of clues, namely, that in addition to a public and private consumption space program, there was also a public and private consumption *physics* that accompanied the two programs. First, they note that during the era when both superpowers were still conducting atmospheric tests of hydrogen bombs, these tests curiously produced auroral displays in the *opposite* hemisphere from that in which the detonation took place. That is, hydrogen bombs are partially harmonic devices.[166] Very little is ever publicly discussed in physics texts about this phenomenon. The question is: why?

---

[163] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 543.

[164] Ibid., p. 201, emphasis in the original.

[165] Ibid.

[166] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* pp. 240-241. Also see my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 157.

The second phenomenon, and one which *clearly* indicates an attempt by NASA to suppress serious and extended public discussion, is a much more serious one.

> There is a significant phenomenon concerning the alleged outward journey to the Moon during 'Apollo 11' which has to our knowledge never been elaborated upon, explained, or indeed mentioned in relation to any of the subsequent Apollo 'trips' – a phenomenon which may have assumed gigantic proportions for NASA and the space scientific community. So much so that (as far as we can tell) it has been 'locked down' in an attempt to sweep any discussion or knowledge of it under the carpet.
>
> To what are we referring?
>
> It is the neutral point, which is also called the equigravisphere. This location is just what it says it is:
>
> - The point between two planetary bodies where the gravitational 'pulls' between the two bodies *cancel each other out.*
> - Once this point is space is passed, a craft is no longer affected by the gravity of the planetary body which it (is) leaving but is now progressively under the influence of the planetary body towards which it (is) moving.[167]

The "Neutral Point Discrepancy" is one of the glaring features of the Apollo programs and their published data, and it raises a number of very important questions.

It was Sir Isaac Newton who had first calculated the Earth-Moon neutral point using his theory of gravitation. That theory gave him an average Earth-Moon distance of 238,900 miles, and the neutral point thus occurred at approximately 23,900 miles from the Moon.[168] This of course gave the now familiar figure that the Moon's gravitational attraction was about 1/6th that of the Earth.

But then came a 1969 edition of *Time* magazine, an interview with Werner Von Braun himself, and the beginning of a persisting mathematical mystery concerning the Earth-Moon dual planetary system. Time reported that "43,495 miles from the Moon lunar gravity exerted a force equal to the gravity of the Earth, then some 200,000 miles distant." And that, note Percy and Bennett, "gave a total distance to the Moon of 243,495 miles."[169] And it means something more, which Bennett and Percy *do not mention,* namely, if this neutral point figure is correct, then the Moon is much more massive than any standard view of celestial mechanics will allow. The difficulties that this poses – which Bennett and Percy never adequately address – will be seen in a moment.

---

[167] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 390.

[168] Ibid., p. 392.

In any case, Bennett and Percy note that a mere two weeks after the *Time* magazine article, Werner Von Braun quite suddenly resigned all his NASA posts and took a position as Vice President of Engineering for Fairchild Industries, leading them to ask a question many other researchers have asked in regard to the Neutral point Discrepancy: "Could that *Time* magazine article…have anything to do with Wernher von Braun's somewhat hasty departure for pastures new?"[170] It is my opinion that it definitely did, and the possible reasons – once again – will be seen in a moment.

Whatever else the *Time* article may have done for the space science community, at the minimum it began, according to Bennett and Percy, a process of "arithmetical obfuscation" that can only be seen as deliberate, since to view what happened next as *not* being deliberate would be akin to charging NASA with gross mathematical incompetence. For example, in the 1981 edition of Baker's *Space Technology* the Apollo 11 distance to the Moon is given as 253,475 miles. But in 1989 the book *Apollo 11 Moon Landing* gave the distance as just under 250,400 miles. Then in 1996, Baker's *Spaceflight and Rocketry* gave the neutral point as 38,925 miles from the Moon and 214,550 miles from Earth, giving a total distance to the Moon of 253,475 miles. Then, to *really* complicate matters, George Pinter assured authors Bennett and Percy that the neutral point really *was* exactly what Von Braun told *Time* magazine, namely, 43,495 miles.[171] Yet, prior to the *Time* article, and according "to the majority of references" the old Newtonian figure was still being used to calculate the neutral point.[172]

---

[169] Ibid., p. 393.

[170] Ibid., p. 394.

[171] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 393.

[172] Ibid., p. 392.

The question is of prime importance, since either figure for the neutral point gives very different *gravities* for the Moon, and consequently, very different *trajectories* for any craft going there, and, more importantly, very different *fuel and thrust requirements* for any rocket-powered craft lifting off from the lunar surface, such as the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module). Obviously, this also raises a significant set of questions. "Is it not interesting," Bennett and Percy ask, "that no sources agree on the exact distance of the Moon's orbital path?"[173] Moreover, in order to trajectory any craft to the Moon, both NASA and the Soviets would have had to know this average distance "to the last inch,'. So why is it so difficult for NASA to confirm some set figure? "Why is the Earth/Moon centre-to-centre distance missing from the published Apollo information? Where one can find the craft's trajectory, the Earth/Moon distance is often missing or vague. Where one can locate the Earth/Moon distance, the craft's trajectory is often missing or vague."[174] To confound matters even further, "space experts at NASA or elsewhere, do not state whether they are using planetary surface-to-surface or centre-to-centre measurements. Nor do they always state whether they are using nautical miles or statute miles. Nor do they stick to any one system."[175] In short, "*the only consistency in the Earth/Moon measurement scenario is the inconsistency of the data emanating from official sources.*"[176]

Percy and Bennett's way out of this impasse is to posit that the 23,900 mile figure – the Newtonian figure – is correct, and that the figure revealed by Von Braun to *Time* magazine is the "experienced" neutral point. Their reasons for doing so are plain:

> NASA and the Soviets used the Moon's 1/6G as part of the calculations for their successful slingshot manoeuvres around the Moon and also for the calculations relating to energy requirements for their crash lander and soft lander probes, including those that actually returned samples to the then Soviet Union. If the evaluation of the lunar gravity had been

---

[173] Ibid., p. 391.

[174] Ibid.

[175] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 391.

[176] Ibid., emphasis added.

> incorrect, then surely none of these manoeuvres would have been successful.[177]

But what if the reverse was true?

It hardly stands to reason that Von Braun was "resigned" from NASA for having made a whopping mistake in his interview to *Time.* Nor does it stand to reason that he was "resigned" from NASA for having deliberately lied to *Time.* The only scenario that makes sense is that he was forced to resign because he *revealed* something that he should not have.

If one assumes that the 43,495 mile neutral point *was accurate* and not merely an "experienced" neutral point as Bennett and Percy would have it, then this raises a number of significant points:

1. This neutral point calculation was clearly made much *earlier* in both the Soviet and American space programs than it was publicly revealed by Von Braun. If, as Bennett and Percy state, the Newtonian figure had been used for early probes, these would have either crashed into the Moon or careened off into space. Telemetry data would have eventually given scientists a correct neutral point calculation.
2. But this raises a new question. For the above scenario to have occurred, then probes would have had to have been launched to the Moon *much earlier* than the public record shows. The question thus is, when was the 43,495 mile neutral point figure actually known, and who discovered it?
3. The *Time* magazine neutral point also raises another signal difficulty, and that is that with a neutral point of 43,495 miles, the gravity of the Moon would be a whopping 60% that of the Earth![178] As Bennett and Percy rightly point out, this dramatically increases the energy, and hence the fuel, requirements for any craft landing on the Moon's surface and subsequently taking off again from it.

---

[177] Ibid., p. 395.

[178] This neutral point figure raises another difficulty, one to which I averred in my book *The Giza Death Star*, pp. 219-220.

4. This in turn raises a significant question regarding the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module) of the Apollo missions, the craft that actually landed on and then blasted off from the surface of the Moon. Many researchers have pointed out that the LEM has little *blast signature* from a rocket when it is taking off from the Moon to return the astronauts to the command module. This, so many say, is evidence of a hoaxed Moon shot. I do not believe this explanation to be plausible or credible. For one thing, a rocket exhaust in a vacuum leaves little visible plume. But what the lack of blast signature *may also* indicate, I believe, is that the *rocket* was not the primary lift component of the LEM. In other words, *if* – and it is a *very considerable* if - the gravity of the Moon is considerably higher than the public has been told, then this would account not only for the unusually "heavy" movements of the astronauts while on the Moon, but also would tend to indicate that the primary lift component of the LEM was not a chemical rocket at all, *but another form of technology altogether.* And that means a *secret* technology, and a significant aspect of the space program that is also secret,

In other words, Von Braun had let something slip, something whose significance, if followed through to its logical conclusion, pointed not so much to the Apollo missions as having been hoaxed, but as having occurred *by means of a science and technology vastly different from the public version.*

Von Braun's remark plus the lack of much of a rocket blast from the LEMs when lifting off from the Moon may indicate the existence of an *off the books* planetary science – the Moon's actual versus its publicly-stated gravity – and an off the books technology.

B. Conclusions and Speculations

A glance at the basic features of the several versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is now in order:

1. *The Torbitt Version* has the following features:

   (a) A worldwide network of dummy corporations exists to further and protect big oil interests. These entities are a literal "Murder Incorporated" since they are not above using assassination and other illegal methods to protect their interests;
   (b) This network is intertwined with a network of Eastern European émigré communities, which are in turn mostly the creatures of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front during World War Two, and were thus directly answerable to General Reinhard Gehlen and possibly his successors;
   (c) These business and émigré networks are intertwined with the American intelligence community via the FBI, CIA, and NASA security via the organization known as the Defense Industrial Security Command (DISC) under the direction of Werner Von Braun;
   (d) By implicating Von Braun, the Torbitt Document implicates the wider Nazi connections associated with the Gehlenorg and with Operation Paperclip, though the motivations for Nazi involvement in the Kennedy assassination are never clearly spelled out. One is left to surmise that at some level the policies of the Kennedy Administration threatened some hidden technological and/or policy agenda of the space program.

2. *The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climatology, and Archaeology Version:*

   (a) In any version – the "absurdist" or the more plausible models of Hoagland and others – the common feature is that NASA (and by implication the Soviets) know of artifacts on the Moon and Mars, relics of a long-lost technologically sophisticated civilization;
   (b) NASA and associated agencies have suppressed this information, or, when it is already available to the public, has attempted to sway public opinion to the view that such

photographic evidence is either a “trick of light and shadow” or artifacts of faulty computer image enhancement and processing;

(c) At the same time, NASA has released deliberately tampered photographs and other data to mask possible artifacts on the Moon and Mars and any evidence that might indicate *contemporary* life forms on Mars;

(d) NASA further shows repeated evidence of having scheduled launches for significant missions on dates and times that possess astrological and occult significance, and moreover has consistently employed Masonic and other esoteric symbolism in its mission logos. This in turn suggests a hidden space program or agenda is being manipulated and planned around occult lines. It should be stressed that all of the above points are stated only with regard to the American space program, and are not made of the Soviet space program.[179]

3. *Jim Keith’s Casebook on Alternative Three Version* has the following characteristics:

(a) The actual television “documentary” and the book by the same name, *Alternative 3*, are elaborate pranks and hoaxes;

(b) Nonetheless, the broad outlines of the scenario probably contain some truths;

(c) The USA and USSR have conducted a highly secret joint space program coordinated by some unknown entity;

(d) The USA’s intelligence community was deeply penetrated in a classic “Trojan Horse” operation by General Gehlen’s *Fremde Heere Ost*, subsequently known as the Gehlenorg, under the guise of “fighting Communism”; the Gehlenorg maintained extensive human intelligence networks in

---

[179] To my knowledge, no such “occult” or “esoteric” analysis of Soviet launches, such as what Hoagland has undertaken for NASA, has ever been made. If this were found to be true of the Soviet program as well as the American then this would constitute evidence of secret coordination of both programs along the same ideological inspiration, whatever that inspiration may be.

Eastern Europe, and its analyses became the basis for America's postwar assessments of Soviet military strength, doctrines, and intentions;

(e) Similarly, the American space program was deeply penetrated by Nazi scientists brought into it under the aegis of Operation Paperclip;

(f) Finally, a number of mysterious deaths and disappearances of physicists, computer scientists, and other technicians of benefit to the American SDI program began to occur, which Keith clearly attributes to one of two sources: the Russians, anxious to prevent the obsolescence of their nuclear arsenal, or to an unknown independent entity whose technology and interests would be threatened by SDI. In the context of the overall argument of his book, it seems clear that Keith had in mind that this entity had some ties to the postwar "Nazi International."

4. The William Lyne Version:

For our purposes, Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is significant for three reasons:

(a) Lyne deliberately connects the covert suppression of alternative physics and its secret development to Nikola Tesla whose ideas, he maintains, were subsequently taken up by the Nazis, expanded upon, and developed. In Lyne's view, the secret suppression and development of this technology is directly linked to facets of Nazi ideology that favor "corporate fascism";

(b) In Lyne's view, this covert development of "Tesla technology" concerns mostly the development of new energy and propulsion sources and technologies that make the "public consumption" technology of space exploration by chemical rockets entirely obsolete;

(c) This covert "corporate-fascist" development of alternative technology was begun by the Nazis before the war and continued by them – under various corporate and U.S. Government agency sponsors – after the war.

5. The Jan Van Helsing Version contains perhaps the most interesting – if unsubstantiated – features:

(a) German research into exotic physics and propulsion systems began long before World War Two under the direct inspiration and auspices of various secret societies;
(b) These societies in turn held doctrines that were later to become part of the ideology and belief system of the Nazi Party, among them the doctrine of racial purity, and the extra-terrestrial origin of the “Aryan” race;
(c) Similarly, these societies maintained that this race and its high culture had “sunk” or disappeared beneath the earth in vast subterranean cities under the poles and the Himalayas;
(d) These societies in turn helped midwife the Nazi Party into existence, and their most hidden doctrines – The “Black Stone” and the “Black Sun” – became the hidden doctrines of the upper echelon of the SS, which also continued their research into exotic physics.

6. The Dark Moon Version:

The *Dark Moon* version is in many ways the most subtle of the versions, with the exception of Richard Hoagland’s, for authors Mary Bennet and David Percy are far from maintaining that there were no Apollo moon landings. They question, rather, the *details* of the record and the technological and political implications that those details seem to suggest:

(a) Central to one of their arguments is the Neutral Point Discrepancy between the Earth and the Moon. As has been seen, Bennett and Percy use this discrepancy to argue – in my opinion erroneously – for an “alternative physics”. While the Neutral Point Discrepancy *does* point in that direction, I believe that it may be taken as a significant indicator that what Von Braun let slip in his *Time* magazine interview was in fact a piece of information that implied the existence of a very advanced technology of propulsion in the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module) in addition to – or perhaps in place of – its conventional rockets. The existence of such a technology points to the existence of a covert space program;

(b) In Bennett and Percy's version, the two space programs of the USA and USSR in fact represent the public and covert aspects, respectively, of *one* program being coordinated and manipulated behind the "public consumption events" of the Cold War. This of course implies some entity or agency of coordination existing both within the Soviet Union and the United States;

(c) In their version this coordination was planned during World War Two, implying that the Nazis and their space scientists were somehow linked to, or were identical to, the hidden agency coordinating the Two Space Programs after World War Two and during the Cold War.

7. Combining The Versions:

If one now *combines* the common features of these various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis a rather interesting picture begins to emerge.

(a) Two of the versions – Lyne's and "van Helsing's" – maintain that the origin of the Two Space Programs occurred *before* the war, and that both of them occurred in conjunction with independent entities conducting exotic research;

(b) Two of the versions – Hoagland's and "Van Helsing's" (!) – maintain that some aspect of the *hidden* program and agenda is dominated by occult and esoteric themes;

(c) Two of the versions – Jim Keith's and "William Torbitt's" – connect this hidden space program to a carefully hidden and extensive Nazi network of intelligence agents and scientists, and imply a "Trojan Horse" deep penetration of the post-war American intelligence, military-industrial, and aerospace communities;

(d) *All* of the versions either explicitly or implicitly imply the existence of an off-the-books development of a new technology and an underlying framework in a theoretical physics that is very different from that found in texts “for public consumption;”
(e) One version – Lyne’s – *explicitly* offers a “hidden history” of physics to buttress its claims, offering an interpretation of some of Tesla’s late work;
(f) One version – Hoagland’s – also *explicitly* states that there is a new type of “hyperdimensional physics” connected with the discovery of artifacts on Mars;
(g) One version – Bennett and Percy’s – explicitly states that there was a covert element of cooperation between the USA and USSR in early space exploration, though it does not clearly name the entity for coordinating such cooperation;
(h) One version - again Bennett and Percy’s – also suggests an element of suppressed physics and planetary mechanics by exploring the problems surrounding the Earth/Moon system’s Neutral Point Discrepancy, and this implies the *possibility* that an alternative and secret propulsion technology may have existed in the L.E.M.(Lunar Excursion Module).

Viewed in this way it is clear that no matter how one approaches the data, there does appear to be a solid case that much more was and is afoot in the American and Russian space programs than has been publicly revealed.

Additionally, it seems clear that at least *some* of this hidden component involves the planetary physics that has been carefully hidden from the public, or, when that fails, the data so hopelessly obfuscated that any mathematical or physical calculation becomes problematic, since it is dependent on the already obfuscated data released by the space agencies.

This also implies the prospect that at some level there may exist a hidden technology at work. The television footage of the LEM takeoffs from the Moon, which this author believes to be genuine and *not* hoaxed, suggest one of two things: first, the standard explanation: a rocket lift-off from a low gravity surface, with a barely visible flame plume because of the vacuum. Or it may represent the possibility of the existence of an exotic propulsion technology. The relative lack of an exhaust plume, plus the almost steady rate of ascent *might* point to the existence of a very different means of getting off the moon than we have been told.

8. Possible Entities and Requisites for Coordination

This picture raises yet another significant question: *What entity or entities would be capable of coordinating* such a massive venture and such an equally massive "public relations" campaign, including the suppression of alternative science and technologies and their covert development? If one excluded a high-level and very top secret diplomatic collusion between the United States and the Soviet Union at least in the version of Bennett and Percy, then that still would *not* explain the other versions of the Hypothesis, those of Hoagland, Lyne, or those who maintain NASA has suppressed significant facts about planetary geography.

So, if one views these various versions as somehow *related*, as disparate glimpses of the *same* two-track space program, again, what entity could possibly coordinate it all?

To answer that question, one must assume that such an entity have certain features:

1. Adequate financial power and backing;
2. An international base and extension both inside the West and the Soviet bloc;
3. Adequate penetration at various decision-making levels in the USA's and USSR's space programs (and anyone else's that might come along);
4. An ideological and heavy financial commitment to the development of off-the-books technologies;
5. A thorough knowledge of the occult, ceremonial magic, and astrology, and the demonstrated willingness to schedule space missions according to those occult parameters;

6. An ideological commitment to the exploration and military exploitation of space; and finally,
7. A willingness to resort to and the ability to use “active measures” to coerce compliance to its goals when necessary.

Seen in this way, there really are only four possible entities in the world that posses various combinations of the above, and only one of them possesses *all* of them:

1. *International banking and finance*; this group lacks only a clear and consistent connection with number 5 above. That is, a consistent, demonstrable, and significant correlation to occult activity and practice;[180]
2. *International fraternities*, such as the Masons; this group lacks only numbers 2 and 3 above, since the extent of its activities behind the Iron Curtain during the Cold War is largely unknown;
3. *The Vatican*; certainly not lacking in international extent, financial power or knowledge of esoteric doctrines, this entity obviously lacks only numbers 6 and 7 above;
4. *The Nazi International*; this is the only entity that exhibits significant measures of possession of all the above characteristics, though it should be pointed out that the Soviets repatriated most German scientists by 1954, and that the KGB was – as far as is known – relatively successful in infiltrating the Gehlenorg’s Eastern European networks and shutting many of them down.[181] Nonetheless, the heavy reliance of the Soviet program initially does raise the remote prospect that recruiting may have been done by

---

[180] It does *not* lack a clear connection to Nazism either before, during, or *after* the war, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter.

[181] It goes without saying that *not much at all* is known of Germany’s *Bundesnachrichtendienst.* It alone, of all the major intelligence agencies of the world, unlike the Israeli Mossad, the Soviet KGB, the British MI-6, the French *Surete* or even Chinese intelligence, has had next to *nothing* written about its successes and/or failures, other than General Gehlen’s own memoirs.

> the expatriate Germans while working inside the Soviet Union.

Seen in this way, it becomes a remote possibility that one of the key assignments of the post-war "Nazi International" was precisely the hidden coordination of that part of the space programs of the USSR and USA visible to the public. A means of corroborating this hypothesis will be to see if there is any indication that wartime research begun by the Nazis was continued by them for a period after the war, and to see if this research was carried out in apparent conjunction either with the US or with USSR's space programs, or in conjunction with both.

But if there are two space programs and if there is a suppressed physics and technology, all of which dating from the Second World War and in some sense stemming from it, then what might that physics and technology be? Would it be worth killing – even a president – in order to protect it?

Part Two:
"The Bell":
Nazis and Occulted Physics

"'What I believe,' Stanford said, is that the Canadian and American governments, quietly backed by the British, have been working jointly since the end of World War II on the development of supersonic flying saucers, that they now have a limited number of such machines hidden away in the wilds of Canada or in the White Sands Proving ground, and that those saucers are based on aeronautical projects that originated in Nazi Germany – but aren't related to the vast majority of UFO sightings. What I also believe is that the U. S. Government knows the origin of the more extraordinary saucers, that it is frightened of what the capability of those saucers might represent in military and political terms, and that its building of its own saucers is a race against time and its secrecy a means of avoiding national panic.'

"'The Canadian government has flying saucers. The U.S. government has flying saucers. But someone, ***somewhere****, has flying saucers so advanced we can't touch them. Those saucers don't come from space. They aren't figments of imagination. They are real and they are right here on earth and their source is a mystery.'"*

The character Stanford,
from W. A. Harbinson's novel, *Genesis*, pp. 398-399.

"The irritating evidence of French success in the American zone was compounded by intelligence reports that the Germans already in France were working independently of their French controllers and maintaining secret contact with other scientists in Germany."

Tom Bower,
The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists, p. 181.

4.

"Das Laternenträgerprojekt":

The Bell and Igor Witkowski

"...how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics.... What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds...? ...The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books...It may prove that an explanation of all the technical questions related to work from the time of the war, will reveal a far greater mystery..."
Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*[1]

A. Igor Witkowski on the Bell

It is due to the research efforts of Polish military journalist Igor Witkowski, and the best-selling book by British author Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* that anything at all is known of the Bell. And until the publication of Witkowski's *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, Nick Cook's book was the only book in the English language that contained any information at all on the Bell, summarizing Witkowski's years' of investigation.[2] With the publication of Witkowski's research in English, however, one is in a position to see why the Bell was given the Third Reich's highest classification. Indeed, one can see why some may have resorted to a program of murder to protect its secrets.

To appreciate this object's true significance, however, it is necessary to understand what it was, what it did, what the physics behind it may have been, and, thereby, what the Germans were possibly hoping to achieve with it. We will begin with a survey of

---

[1] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* translated from the Polish by Bruce Wenham, (Farnborough, England: Books International and European History Press, 2003) p. 284.

[2] It should be pointed out that Geoffrey Brooks' book, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* also contains information about the Bell. Though little of it adds to the data from which to interpret its possible physics, Brooks' book does add to the speculation concerning its whereabouts, and SS General Kammler, after the war, as we shall see.

Witkowski's research and his own speculative reconstruction of the Bell's operating principles in this chapter, and on the basis of his and other evidence, offer our own reconstruction and speculations of its possible significance and theoretical basis.

1. The Significance of the Story of the Bell

Before proceeding to summarize Witkowski's lengthy and weighty research in his chapter on the Bell from his book on German secret weapons, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, a word is necessary about its significance.

As is well known to UFOlogists, the "Nazi Legend" of UFO origins has been around since the end of the Second World War and the publication afterward of Major Rudolf Lusar's book on German secret weapons, where the first brief mention is made of the subject, accompanied by the first "schematic" of an alleged "suction-type" German saucer. As many have pointed out, the story rests on few sources, which, when traced back, seem to lead nowhere, except to those sources' own questionable connections, associations, and agendas.

With Witkowski's research on the Bell, however, one has something entirely different. The story is significantly different from the stories surrounding the "Nazi legend" and its familiar names of Habermol, Miethe, Schriever, Epp, Schauberger and so on. With the Bell story, one has, as will be seen, clear descriptions of its *design, mode of operation, and effects,* as well as clear indications of known personnel involved with the project and clear corroborative evidence in the form of installations and residual physical signatures.

To put it succinctly, the story of the Bell is the actual probable basis of the Nazi UFO legend.

2. An Obvious Question and a Not So Obvious Answer

For Witkowski, the investigation all began in August of 1997, when he was asked a very obvious question, a question that in fact hovers over *every* author who has ever investigated the mystery of wartime Nazi secret weapons research: Just exactly *what was* the so-called "Wonder Weapon", or *Wunderwaffe?* For Witkowski, the journey began when a Polish intelligence officer, who had access to Polish government documents regarding Nazi secret weapons, first made him aware of the Bell.

> Among other things he asked me if I had ever come into contact with a device developed by the Germans, which was code-named "the Bell", and made a sketch of it. On a circular base was some kind of bell jar, cylindrical in shape with a semicircular cap and hook, or some other clamping device at the top. The Bell jar was supposed to be made of a ceramic material, resembling a high voltage insulator. Two metal cylinders or drums were located inside.[3]

Nothing about the description of the object aroused any interest in Witkowski, but he could not let the subject drop, since the individual who had approached him impressed him with his knowledge. "This was no amateur living in a dream world. Of that I was sure."[4]

But what had really piqued Witkowski's interest were the individual's descriptions of the Bell's "quite simply unearthly effects" when it was in operation, effects that conjured in Witkowski's mind the final scene from Steven Spielberg's *Raiders of the Lost Ark*, effects that were "absolutely shocking."[5] This description, plus the man's evident sincerity and expertise, made the question he asked Witkowski even more significant:

> (He) asked me the outright disarming yet seemingly trivial question: if I was able to state with full responsibility that the "Wunderwaffe" – that "wonder weapon", was the V-1 or V-2, as was often mentioned. If in any German documents or in any original sources in general, I had come across information unraveling what the "Wunderwaffe" was. He stated that after all it could not have referred to the V-1 or V-2, since firstly these weapons had been from a military point of view not very effective (and therefore not "wonder") and *secondly that the term "Wunderwaffe" had begun to appear in earnest already after the "V" Weapons had been deployed in combat*. This was indeed intriguing. Later from the point of view of this, I looked over various volumes

---

[3] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 231.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

> from my library and in actual fact it appeared that some kind of unusual weapon had existed, practically unknown till this day.[6]

In other words, Witkowski had come across one component of the Allied Legend – that the *Wunderwaffe* referred to the V-1, V-2 and various other rocket projects of Nazi Germany – and to nothing more.

But the historical record suggested otherwise, as Witkowski notes; the term *Wunderwaffe* clearly began to be applied by the Nazis to *something* that was *not* any kind of rocket, even if that something was only a figment of Dr. Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry. But the uniqueness of the Bell and the revelations of the intelligence man continued to preoccupy Witkowski:

> My aforementioned informer strongly emphasized that what was involved was *a uniquely classified project, the most secret research project ever realized in the Third Reich!* Therefore it is surely clear that regardless of the scale of difficulty it was worth verifying such a statement.[7]

In other words, beyond atom bombs, hydrogen bombs, fuel air bombs, advanced rockets, stealth materials, guided missiles, sound cannon, wind and vortex cannon, electromagnetic railguns, laser beams, nuclear powered aircraft, and all the other exotic weapons technology the Nazis were developing, there was *one* project so important in its scope and terrible promise that it – as will soon be seen - merited its own *unique* classification, and that project was the Bell.

Witkowski began to research the story, and uncovered what is perhaps the most important story to come out of World War Two.

3. The Personnel and a New SS Player on the Scene: the Forschungen, Entwicklungen, Patente

When Witkowski was able to assemble at least a partial list of scientists and military personnel involved with the project, a very odd picture emerged. To appreciate the oddity of the picture, one must examine each of the individuals Witkowski uncovered in their turn.

---

[6] Ibid., emphasis added.

[7] Ibid., p. 233, emphasis Witkowski's.

a. SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw

Witkowski was quickly led to the SS, and to one of its departments that was responsible for vetting patents in the Third Reich, and classifying those that seemed to possess potential for further development:

> The whole project was co-ordinated by a special cell co-operating with the SS armament office, subordinate to the Waffen-SS. This cell was designated "FEP", which was an abbreviation of the words "Forschungen, Entwicklungen, Patente" – research, development work, patents. The chief of this "FEP" cell was a certain Admiral Rhein, while the described project was co-ordinated by a quite mysterious individual – namely SS-Obergruppenführer (Four Star General) Emil Mazuw. Why mysterious? Simply because despite possessing one of the highest general's ranks in the SS, practically nothing is known about him. I got hold of his dossier in the USA in 1999, but through this he became in my eyes an even more obscure figure. It followed both from his dossier as well as cards from the course of his service, that Mazuw had been at the very top of the SS elite. He was promoted to the rank of SS Obergruppenführer on 20 April 1942, in other words he had possessed *the highest possible* SS rank at that time (in 1944 the SS Oberstgruppenführer rank was further established, four people being promoted to it). He was awarded with the Honorary saber of Reichsführer SS (Ehrendengen des RFSS) and honorary SS ring with skull and cross-bones (SS Totenkopfring). Such a ring was given by Himmler for special service to the organization. Their bearers constituted the highest caste of SS-men, given admittance to the greatest secrets. Each ring was personally dedicated by Himmler….Mazuw already had it in 1936. He was therefore one of the powers behind the throne of the Third Reich, almost unknown to this day.[8]

What is interesting here in the light of my own, and other's, previous research into the secret weapons think tank of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's, is that the Bell project appears to be under the mysterious "F.E.P.", which in turn is under an

---

[8] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 236-237, emphasis Witkowski's.

Admiral, implying a *Kriegsmarine* connection with whatever exotic technology and physics the Bell represented. The significance of this fact will be examined below.

SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw
Picture from Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe

A second unusual feature of Witkowski's revelations is that the Bell project itself was not *directly* coordinated by Kammler, but by the enigmatic Emil Mazuw, though, as Nick Cook and Witkowski both indicate, Kammler's connection with the project was direct, since he seems to have been involved in Bormann's secret "evacuation command" structure that was apparently used to fly the Bell, scientific papers, and perhaps Kammler himself, out of Europe at the war's end.[9]

Witkowski, in answer to a personal correspondence from me, explained the odd relationship of the F.E.P. to the *Kammlerstab* and other agencies in the following way:

---

[9] Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 115-130; Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 182-190. See also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 333,

> As far as I know, Mazuw wasn't tied with the Ahnenerbe. The situation was such that apart from Kammler's office (Rüstungsstab) – which, what has to be emphasized, wasn't directly responsible for the R&D activities as such but for armaments projects in general, there were "specialized" R&D authorities within the SS (the best proof that they were really important is that it would be virtually impossible to find anything in the literature about it … It was: the "R&D group" at the armament office of the Waffen-SS, headed by SS-Brigadeführer Heinrich Gärtner and the second was the FEP/Waffen-SS cell, headed by Mazuw…it was theoretically responsible for the protection of inventions in the period when the normal patent law was effectively suspended.[10]

Note that this conflicts with the story of the *Kammlerstab* first broken by British journalist Tom Agoston, as recounted in my *Reich of the Black Sun.*[11] Agoston, relying on the confidential statements of former German weapons expert Dr. Wilhelm Voss, clearly implied that it was Kammler himself, plus his "think tank" staff inside of the engineering division at the Skoda Works in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, that headed research and development. But this may only be an apparent contradiction. At the rarefied levels of SS *Obergruppenführers*, contact between Mazuw and Kammler – both involved in sensitive black projects – would have been inevitable. And we know for certain that Kammler himself was in charge of Bormann's special evacuation command at the end of the war, the command which it appears successfully evacuated the Bell from Lower Silesia via a Junkers 390, about which more in a moment.

But what of Witkowski's statement that he knew of no direct or known association of Mazuw with the SS' "occult bureau", the *Ahnenerbedienst?* The answer, as in Kammler's case, must be speculative. However, given that, at its highest level, Himmler intended for his SS to be a kind of "black knights of the round table", and given that his chosen twelve "black knights" with access to the "SS occult center" at the castle of Wewelsburg had to be of at least *Gruppenführer* (general) rank, then again, it would seem unlikely that Mazuw did *not* know of the SS' occult activities and interests.

---

[10] Igor Witkowski, personal correspondence with the author, July 23, 2005.

[11] See *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 99-116.

That a four star SS general, about whom almost nothing is known, is not only involved with the Bell project, but actually the overall director of it, raises as many questions as it answers. Did he, like Kammler, disappear into the bowels of some Allied country's post-war classified projects or perhaps – an equal possibility – simply *disappear*, to continue the project independently? And the presence of a navy Admiral in the parent organization, the F.E.P., raises a further question: why the indirect connection to the German navy? Does this relationship perhaps indicate something about the nature of the Bell itself?

b. Prof Dr Walther Gerlach

Unlike Emil Mazuw, Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach was and is quite famous, and for any number of reasons. As Nick Cook noted in his *Hunt for Zero Point*, Gerlach was a Nobel laureate for his work in spin polarization. A first class physicist, Gerlach went on to specialize in gravitational physics, on the basis of his pioneering experiment[12] that earned him the Nobel prize. But as any researcher of the German atom bomb project knows, Gerlach was also nominally the head of atom bomb research in Nazi Germany by war's end, and was one of the scientists interred by the British at Farm Hall in England, where the scientists' conversations were secretly recorded.

Gerlach was also expert in two other obscure topics, both of which, as we shall see, are closely associated with the Bell: the transmutation of elements, and the "fluorescence of mercury ions in a strong magnetic field, in other words, referring to the behaviour of mercuric plasma." Gerlach had evidently been involved in the topic "for *a long time*, because as far back as January 1925 he wrote to Arnold Sommerfeld about the spin…of ionized mercury." In such matters, Gerlach was "faultlessly well-informed."[13]

---

[12] The Stern-Gerlach experiment. This experiment, along with Einstein's experiment on the photo-electric effect which earned *him* the Nobel prize, and the well-known Michelson-Morley experiment, are perhaps three of the most important experiments in the development of modern physics.

Even more mysteriously, Gerlach, one of the world's premier gravitational physicists *before* the war, *never* returned to the subject *after* the war. Nick Cook comments in his well-known book *The Hunt for Zero Point* that Gerlach thus acted as if "something had scared him beyond all reason."[14] While Cook meant his comment in a speculative sense, there is perhaps some truth to it. If he *was* genuinely frightened, and if this is the reason for his curious post-war silence about spin polarization and gravitation, then this could be due to two causes.

First, as the lead scientist involved with the Bell project, and as a loyal Nazi, Gerlach would have been privy to the curious and strange results of the Bell's operation and possibly have even personally witnessed some of these effects. As we shall see, these effects would have frightened any rational human. So, one explanation – the one that seems to be implied by Nick Cook, in fact – is that Gerlach *saw* or *witnessed* something in the very project he headed that had frightened him into post-war silence.

But there is a second, and I think, more plausible explanation for Gerlach's apparent fright-into-silence. Indeed, it is an explanation that would seem to give a factual basis to Cook's speculation that Gerlach was "frightened" into post-war silence on these admittedly esoteric topics. As Cook himself notes, following Witkowski's research, the SS *shot* the sixty-some scientists and their assistants who worked on the project, rather than let any of them fall into Allied or Russian hands.[15] As we shall see, there appear to be only a few scientists, two of them well-known in their way, that survived the SS' massacre: one was Kurt Debus (about whom more below), and the other was Walther Gerlach.

This allows us to undertake something of a reconstruction, speculative though it will have to be. First, it would appear that the SS, by murdering the project's scientists with the exception of

---

[13] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 254, emphasis added.

[14] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 182-190 See also my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 115-130 and *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 333.

[15] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 242-243.

Debus, Gerlach (and one must assume, possibly others), is intent on preserving the project's *independence* by preventing its secrets from falling into any Allied hands. That this is the most rational conclusion is evident from the fact that if the SS had bargained with the Allies or Soviets to exchange this project in return for their lives, then the process would be self-defeating, if the Soviets or Allies were denied the very technicians that made the project possible. Such scientists and technicians would have been in the Soviet's or Allies' "intelligence targets acquisitions and booty" list, so to speak. By its actions, in other words, the SS is clearly signaling that it has no intention of letting the project fall into *Soviet* hands, and it is equally possible that it has no intention of letting it fall into *Allied* hands either.[16]

So why did Gerlach and Debus escape? They escaped simply because of their sheer notoriety and value to the project.[17] For the SS to have murdered these men, and dumped them unceremoniously into an unmarked mass grave in Silesia, would have inevitably attracted Allied and Russian interest……and *questions,* after the war. And those questions, in turn, would have inevitably led back to the Bell. Gerlach and Debus, moreover, represented a level of expertise and involvement beyond the mere day-to-day testing and experimentation involved in the project. Gerlach, in particular, was the theoretician, capable of formulating the "big picture" of whatever it was the Nazis had discovered with the Bell. Such men would be needed *after* the war if the project were to be continued and advanced. Indeed, as will be seen later in this chapter, it may have been Gerlach or someone in his close circle of friends and associates in the physics community, that initiated the Bell project.

---

[16] I was delighted to discover that Witkowski had come to similar conclusions regarding the real operational purposes for General Patton's Third Army objectives late in the war as I had: "Simultaneously from this period – from mid-April 1945 comes the last known photograph of the Ju 390 – taken in Prague, during preparations for flight. Then the trace comes to an end – there was no aircraft, and no Kammler. Although he was intensively hunted after the war, he completely 'vanished'. The opinion prevails that only one of the superpowers could have so effectively hidden a high-ranking SS general. It is known from other sources that the Americans (Patton's Army) drove a wedge deep into Czechoslovakia *among other reasons to reach the employees and documents of Kammler's 'department' and lengthily interrogated all of them. These materials are to this day kept top secret. This is very intriguing and once again points to the 'American trail.'"*(*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 289, emphasis added).

[17] Witkowski observes that Debus was crucial in the project for the "separation of magnetic fields component," (*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 238). This is highly significant, given Debus' subsequent post-war employment by NASA at the Kennedy Space Center, and given the allegations of some that there are two spaces programs, one a very covert one employing exotic – and suppressed – technology.

So what frightened Gerlach? Very simply: perhaps the SS "allowed" Gerlach and Debus – and any other big name scientist that might have been involved with the project – to witness the executions of their comrades. Or perhaps the SS communicated their fates to Debus and Gerlach in some other fashion. In either case, the message was clear: "keep quiet on this subject, and keep cooperating." If that *was* the message to the two men, then it certainly worked, for Gerlach never even intimated in the Farm Hall Transcripts of his involvement with any project during the war that involved his specialty: gravitation.[18] And as for Kurt Debus, he apparently never mentioned the more exotic technologies to his new employer after the war, as we shall see below. In any case, I believe the SS murders of the Bell's scientists are the best explanation for Nick Cook's observation that Gerlach never touched the subject of spin polarization and gravity after the war, acting as if "something had scared him beyond all reason."

---

[18] Witkowski does mention that according to his sources, Gerlach did speak a great deal in the Farm Hall Transcripts about magnetic fields, atomic nuclei, the earth's gravitation, and "extraterrestrial space." (*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 255). If this is true then it puts a whole other perspective on the classification of the Farm Hall Transcripts and why they remained classified for so long. Perhaps Gerlach's comments also caused him to be brought to this country after his internment in England, since as has been seen, he was subsequently interrogated in the U.S.A., where his wartime research diaries remain classified to this day. This would clearly imply that the U.S.A. knew something about these subjects – more than it was willing to share with its British ally – and brought Gerlach over to flesh out a full picture of the Bell.

Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach at Farm Hall

c. The Mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler

So far, we have encountered in Witkowski's list of Bell personnel two rather well-known scientists, and one very obscure four star SS general. But there is yet another expert involved, and here, one is confronted again with something of a mystery:

> Within the context of one of the people (involved in the project) the problem of "*a simulation of damping of vibrations towards the centre of spherical objects*" appeared. In this case it concerned Dr Elizabeth Adler, a mathematician from Königsberg University (this name appeared only once). [19]

Who was Dr Elizabeth Adler? What was her specialty in mathematics? No one seems to know. My own attempts to find out by contacting the University of Kaliningrad, modern day Königsberg, ended in a wall of stony silence.

But her presence – even if she is only mentioned in connection with the Bell once – is in itself a significant indicator of something.

---

[19] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 235, emphasis added.

Since Gerlach was himself a capable mathematician and theoretical physicist, Adler's presence must indicate a very *rarefied* form of mathematical expertise was required at some point. This in turn means that the Bell represented no ordinary project. For the SS to have apparently "consulted" a mathematician outside the project must indicate that Elizabeth Adler's mathematical skills were *unique.* Find her area of mathematical expertise, and one will have a *significant* clue into the nature of the physics that the Germans were investigating with the Bell.

d. Otto Ambros of Auschwitz „Buna" Fame

As if this list of personnel was not already strange enough, Witkowski, in the same context in which he mentions the involvement of Dr. Elizabeth Adler, then recounts how another name, again one well-known and somewhat imfamous, was involved at some stage in the project:

> In descriptions of "the Bell's" effect on living organisms on the other hand the notion of "ambrosism" ("Ambrosismus") occurred. This was perhaps invented to honour one of the scientists, who admittedly was not a member of the research team, but was in some sense connected with the whole project. It concerned Dr Otto Ambros – then chairman of the so-called "S" committee, responsible for chemical warfare preparations in Speer's Armament Ministry.
>
> I must admit that from the beginning the plot connected to Ambros was totally belittled by myself, as not matching the whole picture. As it was to become evident a few years later, this was a big mistake – although there was never any doubt that chemical weapons were not responsible for "the Bell's" operation, or any kind of chemical agent.[20]

This is the same Otto Ambros that was also appointed by I.G. Farben director Karl Krauch to oversee the construction and operation of its huge "Buna" synthetic rubber plants at Auschwitz, a plant that Carter Plymton Hyrick has quite persuasively argued was not a Buna plant at all, but a huge uranium enrichment facility.[21] Thus, while Witkowski does not seem to be aware of the state of recent German and American research into the actual state of German A-bomb development, his mention of Ambros in this context is for that very reason all the more significant.

---

[20] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235.

[21] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass:* pp. 72-80. See also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 25-35 for a summary of Hydrick's arguments.

If Ambros was intimately involved with the SS in the enrichment of uranium, and presumably in the recovery of other exotic isotopes, then he would certainly be involved in the Bell project *if any aspect of that project required the use of radioactive isotopes.* This last condition, radioactive isotopes, I believe is one of the significant clues into the nature of the device and what the Germans were hoping to accomplish with it, as will be seen subsequently in this and later chapters. The fact that his position at the Farben "Buna" plant also placed him in the orbit of secret SS research and security jurisdiction of the Auschwitz camps is also another connection that would seem to corroborate Witkowski's revelations that Ambrose was somehow involved with the Bell project.

BASIC PERSONNEL RECORD
(Alien Enemy or Prisoner of War)

DEBUS, Kurt H.
(Name of internee)

Male
(Sex)

Height 5 ft. 8½ in.
Weight 156
Eyes blue
Skin ruddy
Hair dark blond
Age 37
Distinguishing marks or characteristics:
Radiating scar on left cheeck and chin.

RIGHT HAND

P. P. C.*
Reference*
INVENTORY OF PERSONAL EFFECTS TAKEN FROM INTERNEE
1.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9.
The above is correct
K. Kurt H Debus
(Signature of internee)

Dr. Kurt Debus' POW Card

e. Dr. Kurt Debus

Debus and Von Braun at NASA

From the standpoint not only of the various scientific disciplines but also from that of the various post-war relationships and themes explored here, Dr. Kurt Debus is the most interesting big name scientist allegedly involved with the Bell, not the least because he is one of the high profile scientists brought to the United States as part of Operation Paperclip. Due to this fact, Debus is also perhaps an indicator that if any of the Allied powers became privy to the secrets of the Bell, then it most likely was the United States, since Debus, curiously, became a director of the Kennedy Space Flight center at Cape Canaveral!

Debus' involvement with the Bell project is made the more curious because of the fact that he was intimately involved with the Peenemünde team of Wehrner Von Braun and, as has been mentioned, continued to be deeply involved with post-war rocket projects in his sensitive position in America’s space program. So what, then, is a *rocket* scientist doing in a project like the Bell?

According to Witkowski’s meticulous research, Debus was not a rocket scientist at all, but rather, was interested in the extremely avante garde notion (even for today) of magnetic fields separation.[22] Moreover, he had apparently designed the power supply for the Bell.

> His parent institution was the institute of High Voltages at Darmstadt Polytechnic (Technische Hochschule). In 1942 he was transferred to the research institute of the AEG consortium in Berlin – Reinickendorf, in addition he also co-operated with the centre in Peenemünde. *He was the author of several publications and patents regarding high voltage measurement technology. He developed among other things instruments for high pressure measurement and high voltage discharge parameters measurement.* At the AEG research institute he constructed a power supply unit, supplying over 1 million volts current and took part in the equipping of a supersonic wind tunnel. He also took part in the development of measurement instruments for the V-2 test launch pads.[23]

Needless to say, such interests would not only have made Debus an invaluable contributor to the Nazi rocket program, but more importantly, such experience in *the measurement of high voltage discharge parameters* would have made him an expert in phenomena of a wholly different nature, a phenomena that one might qualify under the broad label of “Teslian.”

But it was Debus’ character as a loyal Nazi, much like Gerlach, that led Witkowski to discover and corroborate one of his informer’s crucial pieces of information: that the Bell was considered to hold such potential that it was given its own unique classification among all the Third Reich’s admittedly exotic secret weapons projects. Debus, according to Witkowski, had informed on one of his co-workers at AEG, one Richard Crämer, to the Gestapo, in 1942. Crämer was sentenced to two years in prison.

But Crämer was apparently no ordinary German, much less an ordinary engineer, for the chairman of the AEG Research Institute, Prof Dr. Carl Wilhelm Ransauer, wrote a letter to the Gestapo:

---

[22] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 256.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

> Mr. Engineer R. Crämer from the AEG transformers factory in Oberschöneweide is developing together with the AEG Research Institute a project concerning high voltages (Hochspannungsprojekt), which was contracted to AEG by the Ground Forces Armament Office (Heereswaffenamt) and is being realized under the code-name "Charite-Anlage", as a secret device important for the war. The realization of this project is in half dependent on Mr. Crämer, who as the sole employee of AEG possesses necessary qualifications, concerning this special field of electricity. Without the co-operation of Mr. Crämer further realization of this project is not possible. The research and development work must be carried out with full energy, at least until the end of the war.
>
> The "important for the war" or "decisive for the war" importance of this project results from the following issues:
>
> 1. The project is realized under special priority SS/1040, which is only granted in special cases.
> 2. Mr. Ministerial Director Prof. Dr. E. Schumann, director of the Research Division of the Ground Forces Armament Office has granted this project the *highest level* of urgency, which has been described as "*decisive for the war*" (compare the protocol from the briefing of 21.07.42, which may be submitted upon request).
> 3. The Plenipotentiary of the Marshal of the Reich for Nuclear Physics, councilor of State Prof. Dr. A. Esay, President of the Physical-Technical Reich's Office (Physicalisch-Technische Reichsanstalt)… has explained the signing below, that in addition he will prove the necessity of carrying out this work in the interest of the war.[24]

Thus, were it not for Debus' ardent Nazism and denunciation of Crämer, one would never have known even of the existence of the classification "decisive for the war," or *Kriegsentscheidend*, at all.

(1) „Kriegsentscheidend"

As for the term *Kriegsentscheidend*, Witkowski notes that this term was highly unusual. While the term "important for the war" (*Kriegswichtig*) was a technical term implying a lifting of administrative restrictions in order to procure necessary war material,[25] the term “decisive for the war” (*Kriegsentscheidend*) occurs only in this document and only in connection with whatever research the A.E.G., Dr. Debus, and Mr. Crämer, were conducting. Witkowski notes that he “personally analyzed in depth cubic meters of German documentation referring to technology and never came across this term in a different context – as an official designation of any other research project or activity.”[26]

---

[24] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 257, emphasis Witkowski's.

What *is* significant in this context, however, is the fact that none other than Martin Bormann, whenever he corresponded with Gerlach, mentioned the *Wunderwaffe.*[27] Gerlach also wrote Bormann at the end of 1944 that the project on which he was working would be “decisive for the war!”[28] But most importantly, Witkowski uncovered the work of a Polish historian, Herbert Lipinski, who had some access to the Farm Hall Transcripts in their *pre*-declassification form. From Limpinski’s descriptions of the transcripts, as compared to their “public consumption” declassified version, “something completely different followed” whenever Gerlach was present and the subject of conversation turned to physics. For “the topics of conversations were most often: ‘atomic nuclei’, ‘extraterrestrial space’, ‘magnetic fields’ and ‘the earth’s gravitation.’”[29] Clearly, Gerlach and Company were involved in something more rarefied than mere atom bombs.

Debus’ involvement with the Bell raises yet another disturbing series of questions. What was such an ardent Nazi doing as a director of the Kennedy Space Flight center in Cape Canaveral, a post which he was appointed to in 1963? And why would he even be *interested* in mere rockets when the Bell held so much more potential not only for propulsion, but for so many other things? Why did someone, whose expertise was in the distinctively Tesla field of *high voltage electricity discharge measurement*, not only find himself involved both in the semi-secret V-2 program and the much more secret Bell project during the war, but after the war why was this electrical engineer involved as a director of the Kennedy Space center?

---

[25] Ibid., p. 256.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., p. 255.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 255.

4. Dr. Hermann Oberth Takes a Trip with some Friends

Dr. Kurt Debus is not, however, the only Nazi "rocket" scientist who was involved with the Bell. Another is the well-known Dr. Hermann Oberth, who, like the Russian Konstantin Tsiolkovsky and American Robert Goddard, is one of the three founding fathers of modern rocketry. Oberth's involvement remains a mystery, for some time between September 15th and September 25th 1944 he apparently took a "business trip," along with other "Bell" project scientists Herbert Jensen, Edward Tholen, and the enigmatic Dr. Elizabeth Adler, from Prague, to Breslau, and eventually to the region where the Bell itself was being tested.[30] Of course, readers familiar with Tom Agoston's work on the *Kammlerstab,*[31] or with my previous book on Kammler's super-secret black projects "think tank,"[32] will recognize immediately the significance of Prague as the home of a number of Nazi secret weapons projects, and its significance for its close proximity to the headquarters of Kammler's secret weapons "think tank" at the Skoda Works in Pilsen. And readers familiar with the "Nazi Legend" of the UFO will likewise immediately recognize Breslau as the home of the alleged secret "flying saucer" research being conducted there. So it is indeed curious, from a *prima facie* standpoint alone, that Oberth, a relatively well-known figure, should be accompanying an obscure mathematician whose specialty is unknown, and two other scientists of relative obscurity, on what is apparently a "fact-finding" mission to the centers of the Third Reich's most sensitive – and *still* unknown – secret weapons projects!

But Witkowski's commentary on Oberth's involvement is perhaps even more unsettling:

---

[30] Ibid, p. 257.

[31] Tom Agoston, *Blunder! How the US Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to the Soviet Union*

[32] Joseph P Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 95-116.

> Like earlier in the case of professor Gerlach this information reveals to us a certain unusual and significant fact – significant for the work being carried out. Namely that in principle it is unknown what Prof. Oberth was engaged in during the war. One could have the impression that this is some kind of light at the end of the tunnel, which until now has been cloaked in the darkness of night. After all it is known for sure that Oberth was not connected with the centre in Peenemünde, since in this case he would have undoubtedly held at least one of the positions of command, in other words the fact of his engagement would have been known (thousands of specialists employed there worked after the war in other countries, from the USA and USSR to even Egypt and so is out of the question that a possible secret of this kind could not be kept hidden). *So it seems that some kind of alternative program had existed, being carried out for a long time, and quite a serious one at that.*[33]

That is, Oberth's presence on this trip, particularly in the company of the mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler, *whose only known connection to German secret weapons projects is to the Bell*, implies the presence already in Nazi Germany of *two* "space" programs, the one for "public consumption" represented by the V-2 and various other rocket projects, and the other, represented by the Bell. Oberth was perhaps the world's then-leading theoretician of the problems and solutions for *long term manned space flight.* His presence in the circle of scientists involved with the Bell, such as Dr. Adler, Dr. Gerlach, and Dr. Debus, is yet another clue as to the possible principles of its operation and the possible purpose of the project.

We may summarize the possible clues represented by these individuals and organizational relationships surveyed by Witkowski as follows:

Individual or Organization	*Area of Expertise*
F.E.P.	Patents Research and DevelopMent
"Admiral Rhein"	Connection to the *Kriegsmarine*
A.E.G.(*Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft)* and the HWA (*Heereswaffenamt)*	High Voltage High Frequency Research, Army Ordnance Bureau
SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw	Security??? Ahnenerbe connection???

---

[33] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 259, emphasis added.

Prof Dr. Walther Gerlach	Spin Polarization, Magnetism Gravity
Dr. Kurt Debus	High Voltage Discharge Parameters and Measurement, High Voltage Power Supply
Dr. Elizabeth Adler	Mathematician (specialty unknown) Univ. of Königsberg
Dr. Hermann Oberth	Space Flight Theorist and Rocket Engineer

From this list of personnel and their known areas of expertise and research preoccupations, it is fairly easy to draw the conclusion that the Bell may have represented some revolutionary prototypical device for very advanced space flight propulsion that was not based on the inefficient reaction-driven chemical rockets. Indeed, such an interpretation would explain the nominal though tacit involvement of the German navy, for manned spaceflight would require the construction of pressure vessels for outer space flight that would entail similar types of expertise as used in the construction of submarine pressure hulls. Additionally, the German navy would clearly be interested in exotic propulsion for its U-boats, to allow them greater underwater cruising time as well as speeds.

In any case, the presence of Debus, A.E.G., and the Army Ordnance Bureau (*Heereswaffenamt*) that also hovers in the background would seem to indicate a more exclusively *"weapons"* preoccupation with the project. This indication, while mentioned by Witkowski, is, in my opinion, given rather too short shrift in favor of the "propulsion" explanation he seems to prefer. However, as the next two chapters will seek to demonstrate, one must not be too quick to dismiss this aspect of the project.

In any case, the interpretation of the Bell as a breakthrough "field propulsion" device of some sort is clearly the favored theory of British *Jane's Defense Weekly* author and journalist, Nick Cook,[34] and the "propulsion" theory is clearly that favored and implied by Witkowski.

---

[34] See Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 182-192.

B. The Operation of the Bell and Its Effects: Witkowski's Reconstruction of the Bell

In outlining Witkowski's presentation of the known operating parameters, construction parameters, and effects of the Bell, I shall attempt to be as thorough as possible in citation of his research, since much of what he says bears directly on my own admittedly more speculative interpretations of some aspects of the Bell. In doing so, I maintain, in concert with Witkowski and Cook, that at a minimum the Bell represented such a breakthrough in "field propulsion," but I maintain that the Bell represents much more than that. I believe that a propulsion breakthrough was the motivation of the project, but I also believe, that along the way and perhaps even near the very beginning of the project before the full-sized "Bell" was built, that the Germans also encountered some un-anticipated effects that also became principal areas of investigation for the project. As I will attempt to show, in the light of contemporary models and experimentation, the Bell exhibits many hallmarks of a device deliberately designed to *cohere* or "tap into" the Zero Point Energy, and of a device designed to do so not only for propulsion purposes, but for *weaponization.* It is thus best seen, perhaps, as a prototypical "scalar" device, a prototypical technology of an extremely unified physics. With this in mind, we turn now to Witkowski's survey.

1. Where it All Happened

According to Witkowski, the principal laboratories for the work on the Bell were in Lower Silesia, in the town of Neumarkt (modern day Sroda Slaska), and Leubus (modern day Lubiaz), disguised inside the facility *Schlesische Wekstätten dr Fürstenau.* The corporate backing was provided by A.E.G. (*Allgemeine Elekticitäts Gesellschaft*) and the giant Siemens electrical firm.[35]

Yet another underground facility existed at the *Schloss Fürstenstein* (Fürstenstein Castle) in lower Silesia, as well as disguised in a coal mine at Waldenburg, where the Bell may have been initially tested.

---

[35] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 239

Castle Fürstenstein: Note the Hilly and Forested Terrain
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

A Wartime Tunnel Beneath Fürstenstein Castle (From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe; Mr. Witkowski is Visible in the Picture)

A little further away, there is another complex that is a part of the project, the Wenceslas Mine at Ludwigsdorf (modern day Ludwikowize). Here in a very remote valley, again disguised in a coal mine, the SS built a rat's run of tunnels, bunkers, and a very odd object that looks like a large concrete henge, self-evidently a test rig of some sort.

The "Henge" At Ludwigsdorf (Ludwikowice)
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

This "henge" stands *inside a pool* or basin, around which there are ports for heavy electrical cabling.

Witkowski's Sketch of The Henge in its Basin or Pool
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

Witkowski also provided this author with more information that was not available when his book was published. Rainer Karlsch, a German historian who recently published a book in Germany on Hitler's nuclear program, also

> Mentioned in his book that a team of physicists from a German university (in Giessen) has carried out a lot of research in Ludwikowice[36], namely in (the Henge). The result is such that there are

---

[36] Ludwigsdorff.

> isotopes in the construction (in the reinforcement), which can only be the result of irradiation by a strong beam of neutrons, thus that there must have been some kind of device accelerating ions, rather heavy ones. It could be calculated what was the intensity of the radiation in 1945 and generally it was very high.[37]

In other words, whatever had been tested at the Henge – and there is every indication that it was the Bell – it not only required a sturdy structure to keep it *down* but also it gave off strong, heavy, radiation.

2. The History and Code-Names of the Project

While experiments on the Bell first appear to have been undertaken in May and June of 1944,[38] the project itself was conceived some two and a half years earlier, meaning that it required that long to bring whatever theory that underwrote it to practical and technical manifestation.

> The entire research project as such was created in January 1942 – under the code-name “Tor” (“Gate”), which functioned until August 1943. After this it was renamed or rather divided into two “sub-projects”. The code-name “Tor” was replaced by the code-names: “Chronos” and “Laternenträger”. Both referred to “the Bell”, but the project had been divided into physical and medical-biological aspects. It was not established which code-name corresponded to a given aspect of the work. The system powering “the Bell” probably received the code-name Charite-Anlage”.[39]

The code-names are suggestive, since “Chronos” means “time” in the Greek, and “gate” is suggestive enough. Both taken together suggest that at least part of the intention behind the product was to *engineer time*. If so, it is another indicator that the Nazis had abandoned Special Relativity with its locally flat space. Indeed, they were perhaps experimenting in a kind of “hyper-relativity” or a locally-engineered space-time curvature. The significance of the code names, then, points to a very radical and exotic physics, one that, while based *upon* some of Witkowski's speculations, far exceeds them.

---

[37] Igor Witkowski, personal correspondence to the author, July 23, 2005.

[38] Witkowski*, The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 234.

[39] Ibid., p. 235.

But what of the other code-name, *Laternenträger*? Literally, it means a "lantern bearer" or "lantern carrier," i.e., the individual who lit gas street lights in the era before electric lights and photovoltaic cells dispensed with the need for such lamp-lighters. But there may be something more significant in the choice of this particular code-name, as Witkowski notes: "(One) can look at this from yet another angle. It could be, as it was suggested to me, a not too literal translation of a certain ancient name – the name of 'Lucifer', i.e., 'he who carries the light.'"[40]

In any case, the important points for our purposes are not only that the code-names may be indicative, at least in a general way, of the exotic physics the project was to investigate, but also that the project was apparently underway for at least two years *before* a practical technology – the Bell itself – resulted. This implies a high degree of theoretical background work was its inspiration, and that in turn means we must investigate the clues very carefully in an attempt to reconstruct what that theoretical basis might have been.

3. The Last Flight of the Ju 390

So what happened to the Bell and its research team? As detailed in two of my previous books *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, most of the scientists and technicians were murdered by the SS, and the project hardware itself was evacuated. Indeed, there is now strong evidence that "Project Lantern Bearer" (or if one prefer, Project Lucifer) was evacuated in April of 1945 by a six-engine Junkers 390. This is intriguing, since *one of the last pictures of the Junkers 390 was taken at approximately the same period at an airfield in Prague.* Since at the end of the war there was only one Ju 390 left in existence, this means that it flew from Prague to near Ludwigsdorf (probably the aerodrome at Opole, in Poland), picked up its additional cargo there, and then, according to an SS officer who was involved in the project and his interrogation records which

---

[40] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 235-236.

Witkowski found in the Berlin Document Center, it was flown to Bodo airbase in Norway, after which, *like the Bell and General Hans Kammler, it simply disappears.*[41]

The Last Known Picture of a Ju 390,
Coincidentally Taken in Prague in 1945.
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

In *Reich of the Black Sun* I followed Nick Cook's hypothesis that Kammler had not, in fact, died in Czechoslovakia at the end of the war, but that he had either made his way into post-war America's secret black projects along with the Bell as part of a comprehensive bargain struck between the United States and various high ranking Nazis, including Martin Bormann, or that he simply disappeared with it into an independently-run and continuing Nazi secret weapons project.

Witkowski has uncovered certain circumstantial information that appears to corroborate the "American scenario." Among the many other scientists involved with the Bell, there was one Herbert Jensen, whom we have not mentioned until now. Jensen accompanied the well-known Hermann Oberth, and the very mysterious Elizabeth Adler, on their "business trip" from Prague to Lower Silesia. Oberth and Jensen were some of the main "prizes" sought by the USA after the war, along with Kurt Debus. In other words, behind the mad scramble to acquire the Peenemünde rocket scientists and pry open the secrets of the Nazis' atom bomb project, a concerted effort also seems to have been underway to *reassemble as much of the personnel as were involved in the Bell as possible.*[42] Given the extremely secret nature of Project Lantern-Bearer, one must assume that the knowledge of the personnel involved with the project, *as well as the knowledge of who escaped the SS' execution of various scientists and technicians involved,* could only have come from within the SS itself.

---

[41] Ibid., p. 242.

As for Gerlach and Debus, we have already speculated that their high profiles perhaps saved them from the SS' death squads. Perhaps this is also why Gerlach, having been thus "warned off" the subject of spin polarization and gravity research, never publicly returned to these subjects after the war. In this regard it is also noteworthy that Gerlach, after his internment by the British at Farm Hall, was also the *only* Farm Hall scientist who was subsequently transferred to the United States for further intensive interrogation. In my view it is extremely significant that his wartime work diaries were appropriated by the American OSS, where they *remain* classified in the CIA archives. Almost nothing is known of their contents.[43] The fact that Gerlach was singled out for such interrogation and that his wartime diaries were placed under tight classification speaks volumes.

Witkowski also entertains the notion that the Ju 390, which was one of the first aircraft in the world equipped *for mid-air refueling*,[44] a technique pioneered by the Luftwaffe, might have flown its contents to Argentina to continue its research independently of the prying eyes of the Allies, and under the watchful protection of the Peron government. Indeed, Peron had built a modern laboratory for some of the exiled German scientists for research into plasmas and high voltage at Bariloche.[45]

Unlike Witkowski, Geoffrey Brooks unequivocally maintains that the Bell, General Kammler, and the missing Ju 390, made their way to Argentina and eventually to the plasma and high voltage laboratory at Bariloche as part of their super-secret strategic evacuation plans known as Operation *Regentröpfchen* (Raindrop), in which the *Gauleiter* of Lower Silesia, Karl Hanke, played a significant role. In the light of Carter Hydrick's thesis that Martin Bormann actually aided the United States in the surrender of the U-234 and its valuable cargo of fissile uranium and atom bomb components, Brooks' remarks again underscore the significance and importance as a "decisive war-winning weapon" that the Bell had for the Nazis:

---

[42] Ibid., p. 260.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 280.

[45] Ibid.

> The Nazis were particularly anxious to protect documents containing the highest classifications of secret knowledge designated *Geheime Reichssache* relating to the development of arms, aircraft and submarines. The most important of all these, files relating to a super aviation fuel and advanced aircraft, went by long-range Junkers Ju 390 transport aircraft directly to Argentina.
>
> From the point of view of the US Government, the 260 tons of strategic material aboard the German U-boat *U-234* escorted into Portsmouth Navy Yard, New Hampshire, on 19 May 1945 is so absurdly secret that the fact that it is classified as top secret is a secret, as are the documents pertaining to Dr Heinz Schlicke and the nature of the assistance he afforded the Manhattan Project in the three months after his capture. The most secret item of cargo aboard *U-234* remains the eighty small cases of uranium powder which have never appeared on any USN Unloading Manifest and which will have been the fissile material for a rudimentary atomic explosive. *But as far as the German High Command was concerned, the voyage of this U-boat with its extraordinary cargo of war materials and passengers did not rate so highly as to fall within the ambit of the General Plan of Evacuation.*[46]

According to Brooks, whose information in this regard corroborates Witkowski's own discovery of the Bell's classification as *Kriegsentscheidend*, the Bell rated higher than the atom bomb in the German High Command's estimation. While this may seem odd or unusual, it should be recalled that a similar classification scheme has been alleged for captured "UFO" technology in the post-war USA, rating it higher than the hydrogen bomb.

In any case, Brooks then adds significant detail about the Bell in Argentina.

---

[46] Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 2, emphasis added.

> A leftist correspondent of a leading Neuquen daily newspaper active in exposing Nazi war criminals in the Bariloche area of Argentina and who prefers anonymity for that reason has stated in writing that he inspected official documents confirming that the German anti-gravity experiments SS-E-IV and SS-U-13, together with the notorious Bell… arrived aboard a Junkers Ju 390 long-range transport aircraft which flew non-stop from Norway to Gualeguay aerodrome in Entre Rios province, Argentina, at the war's end. *If true, this might be seen by some as suggestive that the SS anti-gravity aircraft project was the post-war utmost priority for the National Socialist scientific elite.*[47]

If Brook's scenario is correct, then it is sobering in its implications, for it indicates that an independent and on-going Nazi development of exotic weapons technologies continued *after* the war. As will be seen in the final chapters of this book, this prospect is chillingly corroborated in yet a different fashion. And it highlights the Two Space Programs Hypothesis in yet another fashion, for "one would also think it safe to assume that if the USAF had been able to make head or tail of German anti-gravity, they would not have bothered with the same old rocket propulsion methods at Cape Kennedy three decades afterwards."[48] Or perhaps, as was seen in the previous chapter, there was a space program within the space program, developing and utilizing an exotic technology, and wrapping it in rockets for show.

4. The Design of the Bell and Its Effects in Operation

Witkowski's anonymous intelligence informant aroused enough interest in the Polish journalist in subject of what *really* constituted the so-called *Wunderwaffe* that he began to search for references to it. The quest began with yet another characteristic statement from Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels relayed by his wife, Magda, to her sister-in-law. The Nazi propaganda minister, it seemed, had seen a weapon "so visionary" that it would guarantee ultimate victory.[49] Such statements were, of course, standard fare for the beleaguered Reich. But Witkowski soon uncovered odd corroboration from another source, this time from the aide to the well-known SS commando, Otto Skorzeny: Karl Radl. Radl disclosed, in documents Witkowski uncovered at the American archives' Berlin Document Center, that Skorzeny had engaged in numerous acts of sabotage behind Russian lines in 1944 because he had "come into contact with the 'wonder weapon' and as a result (had) 'been possessed' by the idea of 'Sonderkampf' ('Special Warfare'), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war."[50] But the matter did not rest there.

---

[47] Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 3, emphasis added. SS-E-IV is the designation of "SS *Entwicklungsstelle IV*" the super-secret SS unit investigating the properties of vacuum flux or Zero Point Energy, one aspect of which would have been the investigation into the control of gravity.

[48] Ibid., p. 9.

After the war, according to reports in the Spanish press that were soon followed by similar articles in the American press, Skorzeny had attempted to sell the secrets of this unknown *Wunderwaffe* to the Americans. These articles "mentioned that among other things what was involved was some unusual flying object, with 'electromagnetic' propulsion, which simultaneously had been '*responsible for a wave of flying saucer observations over North America that summer.*'"[51] The article went on to state that these "saucers" were built in Spain by exiled German scientists, and that their flight principle was based on the gyroscope.[52]

His curiosity now definitely piqued, Wikowski again arranged for further meetings with his anonymous informant. From these meetings, the following picture of the Bell emerged:

> That mysterious device – "the Bell" ("die Glocke") seemed at first glance relatively simple, although the unusual effects of its operation contradicted this. The description was admittedly incomplete and non-scientific, since it had originated from military personnel, who had not had access to all of the data, but even then it included, many valuable details. *The main part of "the Bell" was made up of two massive cylinders-drums around one meter in diameter, which during the experiment span in opposite directions at tremendous speeds. The*

---

[49] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 231

[50] Ibid., pp. 231-232.

[51] Ibid., p. 232, emphasis Witkowski's.

[52] Ibid.

> *drums* were made of a silvery metal and *rotated around a common axis.* T*he axis was formed by quite an unusual core, with a diameter of a dozen or so, to twenty centimeters, with its lower end fixed to "the Bell's" massive pedestal. It was made of a heavy, hard metal.* Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (it was defined as a "vacuum flask"…), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 3 cm thick. It was approx. 1-1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue and *preserving at room temperature the consistency of "slightly coagulated jelly".* From the produced information it followed that *this substance was code-named "IRR XERUM-525" or "IRR SERUM-525" and contained among other constituents the thorium oxide and beryllium oxide (beryllia). The name "Xeron" also appeared in the documentation. It was some kind of amalgam of mercury, probably containing various heavy isotopes.*
>
> *Mercury, this time already in pure form, was also present inside the spinning cylinders. Before the start of each experiment, and perhaps also for its duration, the mercury was intensively cooled.* Since *information appeared about the use of large quantities of liquid gas – nitrogen and oxygen, it appeared that it was precisely these that were the cooling medium. The entire device, i.e., the cylinders and core was covered with the aforementioned ceramic housing, of a bell-like shape – a cylinder rounded at the top crowned with some kind of hook, or fastening. The entire device was about 1.5 m in diameter and about 2.5 m high….*
>
> The person in conversation with me had in any case emphasized that **not once had the term "weapon" been uttered in relation to the described device.**[53]

At this juncture, it is necessary to pause and consider the details, since they differ somewhat from Nick Cook's summary of them in *Hunt for Zero Point* and my own earlier descriptions in *The Giza Death Star Deployed* and *Reich of the Black Sun.*

---

[53] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 232-233, boldface emphasis Witkowski's, italicized emphasis mine.

Igor Witkowski's Sketch of the Bell
(From The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

1. The Bell consisted of
    - a. Two counter-rotating cylinders on a common axis, which cylinders were apparently filled with or coated with pure mercury;
    - b. The axis itself consisted of a heavy metal core, presumably hollow, since it was the receptacle for the mysterious thorium-beryllium-mercury compound known as Xerum-525;[54]
    - c. The outer casing was made of a ceramic material.
2.. The mercury, and presumably the interior of the Bell, was tremendously cooled by (presumably liquid) nitrogen and oxygen;
3. The Bell was approximately (according to this latest research of Witkowski) 2.5 meters high (about eight to nine feet

---

[54] Geoffrey Brooks notes that "By 1944 Germany had cornered all available European stocks of thorium, but, on enquiring the reason, the US *Alsos* mission was unable to establish a satisfactory answer." (*Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 138)

> high) and about 1.5 meters in diameter (or about four to five feet), smaller in size than initially reported by Cook.

This last detail is perhaps significant, since I drew comparisons between the Bell and the UFO recovered at Kecksburg in my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun.* There, relying on Nick Cook's dimensions of 12-15 feet high and 9-12 feet wide, and similar dimensions for the object that crashed at Kecksburg, I drew the speculative conclusion that they were perhaps one and the same object. While the new dimensions tend to weaken this connection, I nevertheless maintain my speculations advanced in that book: that it may have been the Bell or some such similar device that crashed at Kecksburg.[55]

In any case, the above list raises certain important questions:

1. What was the *purpose* of the counter-rotating cylinders?
2. Were these cylinders arranged one inside the other, or one on top of the other?
3. What was the purpose of using mercury in these cylinders?
4. What was the purpose of using the obviously radioactive compound of Xerum 525? Was Xerum 525 some isotope of mercury, or an isotope of mercury in compound with other elements?
5. What was the purpose of the ceramic housing?

As will be seen, Witkowski has his own very plausible explanations for some of these questions. We will examine these in due course, and tender our own speculations as well.

But Witkowski's meetings with his informant revealed much more information not only regarding the device itself, but its experimental operation:

> *Each such experiment was carried out in a specially prepared chamber – a pool. In most cases it was located underground. Its surface was*

---

[55] In this regard, I *did* initially speculate in my *Reich of the Black Sun*, without having had access to Witkowski's work, that the Bell's mysterious Xerum-525 was a radioactive isotope of mercury or of some other elements or compounds. Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 335.

> *covered with ceramic tiles and the floor also with heavy rubber mats. The mats were destroyed after each test (!), while the tiles were washed* – deactivated with a pink liquid resembling brine. In the case of tests conducted inside the chamber of an inactive mine, in 1945, *such a chamber was always destroyed (blown up) after two-three tests….*
>
> First of all “the Bell” itself was prepared along with the considerable power supply installation accompanying it. A whole set of cameras, movie cameras and probably also some measuring devices were placed on a special rack in the research chamber itself. *Then a series of samples or objects were placed nearby, on which the effect of the emitted energy was tested. These were animal organisms (live lizards, rats, frogs, insects, snails and in all probability also….people – prisoners from KL Gross-Rosen)*[56] plants (mosses, ferns, horsetails, fungi, moulds) as well as a whole series of substances of organic origin such as: White of an egg, blood, meat, milk and liquid fats. These preparations were of course carried out by scientists and technicians…as well as by a commando of prisoners from Gross-Rosen concentration camp, specially assigned to this work. It numbered up to 100 people….*Just before the experiment the entire personnel was removed to a distance of 150-200 m, at the same time employing individual, rubber protective suits and helmets or hard hats distinguished by large red visors*.[57]

Thus, we may add to our previous list the following points:

5. The experiments were conducted in an underground chamber, part of which consisted of a pool;
6. The chamber was insulated with rubber mats covering ceramic bricks;
7. The effects of the Bell during its operation extended some 650-700 feet beyond the device;
8. The chambers had to be destroyed after only a few tests, due apparently to the strong residual effects of its operation;
9. The effects of the device on living organisms and organic material was apparently a crucial area of inquiry;

---

[56] “KL”: *Konzentrationslager*: concentration camp.

[57] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 233-234, emphasis added.

10. Even at some distance from the object, its technicians had to be in rubber suits (which suggests that they could not be electrically *grounded* while the Bell was in operation); and,
11. The eyes had to be protected with red visors.

The effects of the Bell when in operation lived up to this odd list of extreme precautions, giving off both "short-term and long-term effects – and perhaps also those about which we do not know."[58] With respect to the short-term effects, these

> became immediately perceptible after the power had been switched on. These were: *a characteristic sound,* which could be described as something extremely similar to *the humming of bees* sealed in a bottle (hence the unofficial name "The Hive" – "Bienenstock" was also used in relation to "the Bell") as well as a series of electromagnetic effects. These consisted of the following: *surges in surrounding 220 V electrical installations (bulbs "blowing*") observed in the case of ground tests at distances exceeding 100 m, *a bluish phosphorescence (blue glow) around "the Bell" – obviously a result of the emission of ionizing radiation*, as well as a very strong magnetic field mentioned in the statements. In addition participants of the experiments felt *disturbances of the nervous system's operation, such as formication ("pins and needles"), headaches and a metallic taste in the mouths*.[59]

Clearly, the Bell's operation induced some very odd, and very extreme effects, and as many readers will recognize, the "metallic taste" in the mouths of participants is one characteristic associated with those who come into close proximity to UFOs.[52]

---

[58] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 234.

[59] Ibid., p. 234, emphasis added. The metallic taste is a signature of some close encounters with UFOs. UFOlogist Timothy Good produces the following account of such an encounter by a German UFOlogist, Dr. Peter Hattwig, and his wife: "Suddenly, we heard a clear humming sound coming from the sky. After three or four seconds this noise, which seemed 'metallic', as though produced by a centrifugal force, grew louder….our bedroom and terrace outside was lit by something even more powerful than the moonlight – a bluish-white colour like neon lighting. At the saem time we both felt a strange metallic sort of taste on our tongues." (Timothy Goode, *Unearthly Disclosure: Conflicting Interests in the Control of Extraterrestrial Intelligence* [London: Arrow Books, 2000], 48).

The long term effects were equally peculiar. Participants would suffer sleep loss, problems with their balance and equilibrium, memory problems, muscle cramps and ulceration. The Germans apparently later “succeeded in radically limiting these unfavourable effects.”[60]

But it was the effect of its operation on organic materials that was the most peculiar, and deadly. The various plants, animals, and presumably hapless concentration camp victims suffered “various types” of damage, the most dominant form being “the disintegration of tissue structures, gelation and the stratification of liquids (among others blood) into distinctly divided fractions and others.”[61] In fact, during the first series of tests, apparently conducted from May to June of 1944, “these kinds of side-effects caused the death of five out of seven scientists engaged in them. As a result, the whole first research team was dissolved,” and it became a high priority for the project to limit these effects.[62] In other words, the deadly effects of the Bell were *not*, at least initially, what the Germans were apparently after. Its purpose was something different. As we shall see subsequently though, such results and its potential for a deadly new type of weapon could not have been lost on the Germans. Indeed, while Witkowski tends toward the view that the Bell represented a secret project in *propulsion* of some sort, its classification as *Kriegsentscheidend* and its clear claim to the title of *“Wunderwaffe”* would seem to call for more speculation in this direction, based on Witkowski’s disclosures. We will return to this subject momentarily.

The oddest changes in organic materials “were observed in the case of green plants.”

> During the first phase, spanning about five hours after the test had been completed, the plants paled or became grey, suggesting chemical decomposition or the decay of chlorophyll. Extraordinary is that despite this, such a plant lived normally, by all appearances, for a further period – the order of a week. This was followed by immediate, almost rapid or cascade (8-14 hours) decomposition to a greasy substance, “with the consistency of rancid fat,...enveloping the entire plant. This

---

[60] Ibid.

[61] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 234.

[62] Ibid.

> decomposition was devoid of all features characteristic of bacterial decomposition – among other things of smell. Besides, it was too rapid, giving the impression that all structure had decayed.
>
> At the same time the formation of undefined crystalline structures was observed in the liquid organic substances….[63]

From this one can surmise what had happened when the device was first used, causing the deaths of five of the scientists and technicians that ran it. Unwary, they were exposed to its unusual effects, and the cellular structure of their bodies and fluids broke down completely. As we shall see, such effects are one clear signature of a "scalar" device.

But these were not the only strange effects associated with the Bell. In the region of Lower Silesia around Ludwigsdorf (modern day Ludwikowice) where the project was based, survivors from the project, or inhabitants of the area during the war, contacted Witkowski, and reporting seeing "objects vertically landing and taking off," objects that some described as "flying barrels".[64]

5. Witkowski's Reconstruction of its Possible Physics

Obviously, the above list of the device's construction, its operation, and effects, paints a very unusual picture. What sort of *physics* lies behind all of it? What were the Germans attempting to accomplish with this bizarre device? Obviously, to have such a complex device in operation by the end of the war would have required some initial testing, planning and designing, taking years of research in its own right. So what were they looking for? What might have been the inspiration? And finally, why would such a device, beyond all the other exotic weapons in the Third Reich's arsenal - an arsenal that included fuel-air bombs, guided missiles, deadly chemical and nerve gases, and possibly even the atomic bomb – be *uniquely* classified as *Kriegsentscheidend*, as "decisive for the war"?

Witkowski set out to answer these questions, and in the process learned that two phrases stood out in the reports concerning the device. These were "vortex compression" and "separation of magnetic fields."[65] Clearly they meant *something*, and something rather exotic, since the mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler from the University of Königsberg had to be consulted on the arcane matter of "a simulation of damping of vibrations towards the centre of spherical objects."[66] But the Bell, obviously, was *not* a sphere, nor were its high-speed rotating drums "vibrating."

---

[63] Ibid., pp. 234-235.

[64] Ibid., p. 263.

The mystery deepens…

As Witkowski puts it, the Bell "possessed so many characteristic features that finding some kind of unequivocal explanation seemed to be attainable."[67] According to him, these are:

- The employment of very high voltages.
- An emphasis of the phenomenon of "magnetic fields separation".
- The occurrence of "vortex compression".
- The fact that the device generated very powerful magnetic fields.
- The spinning of masses / bulky elements as a means to achieve the above effects (directly or indirectly)
- As a result: the generation of powerful radiation.
- *The continuous character of "the bell's" operation – i.e., non-pulse*
- *The reference about transforming mercury into gold.*[68]

This list is interesting, especially as regards the second to last point, the hypothesized "non-pulsed" nature of the Bell's operation. This is, of all the material in Wikowski's research, the one item that lacks any corroboration. While Witkowski is correct that this was its most likely mode of operation, there is one clue that the Bell may also have been a *pulsed* device, and the clue comes from Witkowski himself: the description of its sound like a hive of bees. Such a sound is characteristic of a rapidly opening and closing high voltage direct current switch, such as the type Tesla used in his Impulse Magnifying Transmitter experiments with direct current. The "buzz" sound is characteristic of such devices.

---

[65] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235.

[66] Ibid.

[67] Ibid., p. 245.

[68] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 245, emphasis added.

The last point brings up yet another oddity in the long list of oddities associated with the Bell, and that is transmutation of elements. It will be seen in the next chapter that there was a curious reference in the Farm Hall transcripts on two separate occasions to a "photochemical process" of isotope separation. I speculated that it might be some analogue or derivative to cold fusion. But here one encounters the reference in the context of a project having little to due with "photochemistry" except in the loosest of senses.

As for the reference to transmutation, this is a partly solved problem, for there exists in the *Frankfurter Zeitung und Handelsblatt*, for the evening edition of Friday, June 18, 1924, an article on precisely the transmutation of mercury into gold – long before the discovery of nuclear fission – by none other than Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach![69] Gerlach speaks of such transmutation being possible through the bombardment of a target with "rays" of an unspecified nature, and then goes on to speak of the scientific feasibility of alchemy!

Seeking to piece all of these pieces together, Witkowski contacted Polish physicist Marek Demiański, a specialist in gravitational physics. Outlining the Bell's peculiar properties, Demiański concluded that vortex motion might be a key to generating gravitation, and then added that mercury would "best suit this purpose" as being "a substance of high density and simultaneously as a liquid."[70] Indeed, if the Germans "had succeeded in aligning the axes of nuclei rotation in one direction, with the aid of a strong magnetic field" then perhaps they had achieved some sort of gravitational breakthrough.[71]

Witkowski next tackled the problem of the apparent high voltages used in the Bell. "It must have led to a discharge, and consequently it must have been a question of plasma physics." If indeed it was the case as Demiański suggested that the active substance in such a device be characterized by low viscosity, then gas would be of a lower viscosity than liquid, and plasma lower than gas.[72] Plasmas created through an electric current create vortices known as plasmoids, in which “*the lines of magnetic field force are almost completely closed.”*[73] Under these conditions a plasma vortex is almost completely isolated from its surrounding environment. This in turn creates a kind of *local* “space time continuum” or localized space curvature.

---

[69] Ibid., p. 257.
[70] Ibid., p. 247.
[71] Ibid.

During the period he was formulating these observations, Witkowski visited the Institute of Plasma Physics and Laser Microfusion in Warsaw, where he was met with an incredible site, a plasma trap, having all the characteristic appearance of the Bell!

The Plasma Trap and Focus Device from the Institute of Plasma Physics and Laser Microfusion in Warsaw (From Igor Witkowski’s The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

Incredibly, the same ceramic and rubber-mat shielding was also necessitated by the device, just as they were with the Bell.

---

[72] Ibid., p. 249.

[73] Ibid., emphasis added.

Compelled by the evidence, Witkowski concluded that the Bell represented some sort of “trap for a plasma vortex.”[74] But the Bell was different from the modern device Witkowski saw in one important respect. “It became evident that it was simply the spinning that was missing.”

> Yes, plasma sometimes creates a kind of vortex, but this is usually a side effect. Nobody yet, nobody after the war – has built a “plasma focus” device *chiefly* for the fast spinning of heavy ions…the internal construction of every plasma is purely static. The conception of rotating or counterrotating cylinders remains unknown. Nobody has struck upon the idea of doing this![75]

Thus, Witkowski was led to his final reconstruction of the Bell, and the principle of its operation and the reasons the Germans chose this peculiar method of designing a “plasma focus”:

> I imagined a large, metal drum, in which a small amount of mercury was present. The drum would then be accelerated to a speed of say tens of thousands of revolutions per minute. Under the influence of the centrifugal force the mercury, as a liquid, would cover the walls of the drum creating a thin layer. After achieving the target speed a high voltage electrical discharge would be created between the circumference of the drum (the mercury layer) – and its axis - the core. Theoretically this would accelerate the ions of mercury towards the core, with a speed of many kilometers per second. But since the mercury would already possess a certain torque, in due measure of approaching the core its angular velocity would increase … thus developing an increase in rotational speed. In the case of the drum with mercury this would lead to an overlapping of the two speeds – created by a preservation of the torque and a result of the flow of electric current. From my approximate calculations it followed that by this means it would be possible to achieve a speed of the ultimate “compressed” vortex of the order of even hundreds of thousands of revolutions per second.[76]

And with these tremendous speeds of rotation with a plasma whose *axes* of rotation were all polarized (lined up in the same direction), it followed that enormous kontrabaryc (anti-gravitational) effects might result, since the recent physics literature indicates precisely such a connection between mass and rotation.[77]

---

[74] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 250.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 251.

But what of the transmutation part of it? Sensing that such vorticular structures are an inevitable template of matter itself, Witkowski “recalled the work of the Russian scientist Genadiy Shipov and works of the German physicist, Professor Burkhard Heim (working during the war at the Goettingen University). In all their works there was reference to changes being created in the structure of materials by artificially generated gravitational waves.”[78] As will be seen subsequently, this is a signal clue that much more was involved in the Bell than a mere plasma focus trap, even one incorporating the insightful concept of *rotating* the active substance to achieve maximum spin polarization, a concept well in keeping with Gerlach's interests. Except for one further observation, which we shall get to in a moment, further than this Witkowski does not go.

---

[77] Wikowski cites Japanese experiments in this regard, but one might also point to the various experiments of physicist Di Palma.

[78] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 253. Burkhardt Heim was a well-known and respected physicist and peace advocate in Germany before his death. Almost nothing is said about him in this country, but it is significant that his work was mentioned by Leonard G. Cramp in his well-known UFO classic *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jig-Saw* (Kempton: Adventures Unlimted Press, 1966), pp. 94, 110.

Gravitational research is, in one respect, obviously the motivation and purpose of the Bell. In his recent July 23, 2005 correspondence with the author, Witkowski also makes another connection that is well worth pondering. Connecting the idea of “magnetic fields separation” with atomic spin polarization, Witkowski then goes on to state:

> “We know from contemporary references that the ‘separation’ may be achieved in various ways, like by a superconductor or through a so called pinch in plasma. As I interpreted this, it may refer to a relativistic isolation of a “reference frame”. It’s an idea that has been derived from Einstein’s theory, before the Second World War. NASA has launched the Gravity Probe B spacecraft last year (which has fast spinning balls surrounded by a material superconducting in this temperature, in order to isolate the magnetic field, therefore to basically verify the same effect only that without plasma.) They quoted a different reference however: the theory developed in Germany and Austria before the war mostly by Hans Thirring, a theory of spacetime and gravity which takes into account such a “separation” – if not for NASA, the work would be largely forgotten.”

Witkowski also mentions in his letter that Thirring was a close associate of Dr Walther Gerlach.

6. *A Story from the Neo-Nazi Fringe*

Amazingly, there is a story from the Neo-Nazi fringe element in North America that oddly corroborates many details of Witkowski's reconstruction. The story is made the more remarkable for the fact that it appeared prior to the publication either of Nick Cook's *Hunt for Zero Point* or of the research on which its revelations on the Bell were based: Witkowski's *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* The story emanated from notorious "holocaust revisionist" Eric Zündel's Samizdat Press in Canada. The story allegedly came from a "Prof. Dr. Friedrich Kuhfuss, who died in Barcelona, Spain, in exile, having never been captured by the Allies."[79]

> Deep among the near-primeval, dark and foreboding forests, somewhere in one of the many hilly areas of Germany, there was a secret base simply called X. To the outside world it looked like an ancient hunting lodge, perched atop a small hill. Only two meandering winding roads led up to the "Jadgschloss" as German woodsmen and small farmers of the nearby village (about 8 km distant) would simply call it…. (Their) forest area had been declared a restricted area. They were told that for the duration of the war the entire area was under the direct control of the S.S. All villagers were issued with special passes, with photographs; no outsiders were allowed to visit them and they were sworn to secrecy…. They observed… bus loads of people driving through their village, usually sombre looking men, very few women, but many of them uniformed and an exceptional number of higher rank officers.
>
> Since there was only one Inn in the village, The Gasthaus zum Goldenen Ochsen (The Golden Oxen) occasionally some of the heavy Mercedes and Opel automobiles would stop and their occupants lunch or partake of snacks. The men behaved in a most peculiar manner.

---

[79] Friedrich Mattern, *UFO's: Nazi Secret Weapon?* (Toronto, Ontario: Samisdat Publishers, Ltd. No Date. P. 110

They all took their briefcases with them to lunch, many of these cases being of a size larger than the usual German briefcase….

There was relative quiet for a number of weeks and then one day S.S. men asked the local burgermaster to call together the local inhabitants. An officer was introduced, he announced that close to the Jagdschloss an auxiliary to a concentration camp was to be set up and that the inmates were war plant workers engaged in extremely important work. Nobody was to fraternize with these people and all strangers or strange happenings were to be immediately reported to the S.S. Ortskommandatur….A few days later, truck after truck loaded with construction equipment of every conceivable description rolled through the village….

Soon loud and frightening blasts could be heard day in and day out, reverberating through the valleys. After a few months they ceased. Then huge, slow-moving, flatbed trucks began to arrive carrying loads, covered with tarpaulins all chained to the platforms and guarded by soldiers. This went on for many, many weeks. By now the whole village was rife with the most unbelievable rumours.

One night, the entire village was awakened and terribly frightened by sound of such high pitch and frequency that had commenced only as a hardly audible humming, that it was soon realized that something very unusual was happening. They rushed outside and to their utter amazement and bewilderment they saw a brilliantly illuminated “thing” hovering in the air in the general direction of the Jagdschloss. Then, just as violently as it had announced its arrival the sound died down, the light faded and the strange “thing” settled behind the treetops, out of the sight of the relieved, yet still shaken local people….Soon several of these strange vehicles, each a little different from the other, were flying about, at first slowly but later at such fantastic speeds that it was difficult to follow them with the naked eye….Sometimes, when flying so fast, they made frightful noises, big bangs, that reverberated around the valleys rather like heavy thunderclaps.

…..So, the months became years, then one day long columns of trucks clogged the roads. Since there were two roads into and out of the Jagdschloss it was difficult to know what was transpiring, but soon they knew. Less and less flying “things” were seen and soon the camp was only a shadow of its former self. One day all work ceased, tremendous explosions ripped, once again, through the valley, smoke rose from the area of the Jagdschloss and a few weeks later the Russians rode into town, unopposed, raping and looting everything in sight….Little did (the Russians) realize that in those caved-in caverns, with electrical cables and wires dangling from now damp ceilings, on the debris-littered floors, in seemingly endless halls, with strange burn marks on the concrete floors, walls and ceilings, had taken place one of the wonders of the world…only worthless bits of pieces of metal, nuts, bolts, steel rods, rubber tires, some leather and some strange-looking

> and feeling “slacklike,” grayish substance was to be found amongst all the rubble.[80]

There are a number of things that would tend to indicate that this story is pure fantasy.

First, and most importantly, the idea of SS officers openly carrying briefcases of secret research in the local *Gasthaus* is utter nonsense. For the loyalty-and-security obsessed SS such breaches would have been unthinkable; but, if committed by any member, swiftly and ruthlessly dealt with. Secondly, as Witkowski stated in a personal letter to this author, neither the more modern *Schloss* or the mediaeval castle at Fürstenstein were ever used as hunting lodges.[81]

But there are also a number of things to notice here that corroborate Witkowski’s reconstruction of the Bell in a general fashion, and that therefore tend to indicate that the story contains some elements of truth; indeed, it contains many elements in common with Witkowski’s history of the Bell project, a coincidence made more compelling for the fact that it predates Witkowski’s published work, and for the fact that it comes from a source with profoundly pro-Nazi sympathies. The latter point would, in fact, tend to indicate that someone, somewhere, and independent of any government, knew all about the project and what it had accomplished.

First, the story concerns a heavily forested and hilly area of Germany, which *Schloss Fürstenstein* certainly qualifies for. Secondly, the area, and hence the project reported by the story, were under SS jurisdiction. Thirdly, there was a concentration camp involved to supply slave labor for the construction and presumably for the project.[82] Fourthly, the story indicates that a great amount of blasting occurred, which strongly suggests that a great deal of underground construction took place. As Witkowski notes, there are clear indications that the whole complex of Fürstenstein was full of tunnels and galleries constructed during the war. Fifthly, very obviously the object reported by the village inhabitants in the story gave off strong field effects, a similarity with the Bell that is all too palpable. Sixthly, it is also clear from the story that heavy electrical cabling was involved, yet another connection with the story of the Bell. Seventhly, there is the report of a "slacklike" gray substance found among the rubble, clearly recalling the reports of blackish or grayish goo that resulted from the Bell's tests on organic materials. Eighthly, the story recounts the burning and scorching of concrete and stone walls, tending to support the idea that whatever was involved put out strong radiation, another parallel with the Bell as recounted by Witkowski. Finally, the story records the fact that the site was apparently quickly and thoroughly evacuated by the SS, along with more blasting, an indicator, perhaps, that some of the tunnels and galleries were sealed by the SS to prevent whatever that remained from falling into Russian hands. Here again, the broad outline is consistent with the story of the Bell, with the SS' removal of the object and execution of some of the scientists and technicians involved.

---

[80] Friedrich Mattern, *UFO’s” Nazi Secret Weapon?* pp. 110-113.

[81] Witkowski, personal correspondence to the author, July 23, 2005.

[82] Witkowski makes it clear that this slave labor came from the nearby Gross-Rosen concentration camp.

However, one must weigh this against the unbelievable elements of the story. It is not only *unlikely* but entirely *ludicrous* that SS officers involved in a top secret black project would, on their "off hours," glibly be carrying about secret papers in their briefcases or talking more or less openly about their work at the local *Gasthaus*.

7. Mercury Vortex Engines…Again

As was mentioned previously, Witkowski does not take his analysis of the Bell any further than to imply that it was a uniquely designed plasma vortex trap that perhaps achieved extraordinary kontrabaric effects. Those effects, if one is to believe the reports of inhabitants of the region who spoke of "flying barrels" or even if one is to credit the story from the Neo-Nazi source above, would have been so sensational that the Nazis would have given the device extreme classification.

But Witkowski is alive to the fact that the Bell might represent much more. Ending the section of his book that surveys the Bell, and indeed, ending his entire incredible book, Witkowski asks a question that leads him to consider an unlikely source of inspiration for the whole project:

> (Yet) one more issue remains – how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics. How is it, that they were conscious of bringing about a major turning-point? What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds with the great and influential armaments consortiums? And they won decisively.
>
> It seems that the whole issue is something more than just a technical problem. The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books – one can easily check this. The "Samaranganasutradhara" a book at least 2,000 years old, said for example: "*By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind in motion, a man sitting inside may travel a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.*"[83]

Witkowski is clearly suggesting that the inspiration for the project *might have come from the SS' preoccupation with the occult, and from its investigations of the possible scientific underpinnings in various occult and esoteric treatises.*

We have encountered this theme before, and, as regards the so-called "mercury vortex engines," shall have more to say in chapter six.

But here Witkowski ends his reconstruction of the Bell and his own speculations as to its operation and the actual goals the Germans hoped to achieve with it. In doing so, a number of significant questions remain unanswered.

It will be recalled from the foregoing presentation that Witkowski rightly understands the importance of the *rotation* of the mercury or Xerum-525 substance in the device. But, having once mentioned it, he never considers what the Germans may have been hoping to accomplish by *counter-rotation* of the same substance. In short, the kontrabaric effects of the Bell are explained by *one* rotating cylinder. So why were there *two* cylinders on a common axis rotating in opposite directions? Equally important: *what was their configuration?* Was one cylinder inside the other? Or was one cylinder on *top* of the other?

---

[83] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 284, emphasis Witkowski's.

A related question is this: beyond the possible esoteric and occult inspirations, what in the *physics literature* of the day might have formed the basis of the Lantern-Bearer Project? As we shall see, the Germans had a number of scientists other than Gerlach who realized the importance of *vortices* for the very building blocks of matter. Once this idea is stated, one inevitably sees the implication, for if vortices constitute the fundamental building blocks of matter, then they also constitute a template of action for the transmutation of one form of matter into another, as well as a template *for a variety of other actions as well.*

Yet another question to be at least speculatively answered is why the device was enclosed in a ceramic, bell-like shell? Was this choice of material, and its shape, significant?

Similarly, the characteristic sound the Bell made while in operation was like a beehive. This sound *could* be indicative of a rapidly opening and closing switch to *pulse* the device with high voltage (most likely, direct) current.

Finally, the Bell’s effects on living organisms – whatever its extraordinary kontrabaric and “temporal dilation” effects might have been – surely could not have been lost on the Germans either. Clearly they were in the presence of a phenomenon that could be applied in a variety of ways, as a means perhaps of propulsion, perhaps even of communication, and perhaps also as a weapon.

The phenomenon the Nazis had accessed via the Bell was a *unified* phenomenon and pointed to an underlying *unified* physics. The question is, what is that phenomenon? What were the Nazis after? Did they know what they had accessed?

Why does the figure of Gerlach keep popping up? Why, for example, is an expert in spin polarization, gravitation, transmutation of elements, and mercury plasma, placed in charge of Nazi Germany’s *public* atom bomb project? Why are his diaries still classified? Why would an anti-gravity device suddenly become a *Wunderwaffe*? What possible type of physics could underlie all these things?

Witkowski himself points the way to the theme that will guide us in the next few chapters: *vortices.*

5.

"Working in Fields of Physics that were Monstrous on a Daily Basis"

"(Scalar) weapons are the most powerful and flexible weapons on earth. Nothing else can stand against them. Any nation not possessing (scalar) weapons is already a second-rate power, regardless of how many nuclear missiles, bombers, and submarines it possesses, or how many high-energy lasers and high power microwave weapons it possesses"
Tom Bearden, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*[1]

A. Strange Claims and Quotations: Indicators of Wartime German Research in "Scalar" Weapons

When approaching the more extreme claims advanced in some exotic literature for Nazi secret weapons developments, one has the impression of some dark mediaeval alchemists' laboratory, with the alchemists dressed in the black uniforms of the SS, cracking whips on the backs of emaciated concentration camp slaves to perfect their dreadful machines of power and annihilation. It has all the elements – were the scope of human suffering involved not so real and so enormous – of a bad Hollywood "B" movie, with a gaunt Boris Karloff orchestrating an oddball cast that includes Bela Lugosi, Peter Lorre, Vincent Price and Sydney Greenstreet, all playing larger-than-life villains conspiring to conquer the world.

But the situation is not helped by the strange quotations from *reliable* sources which, if one *really* pays attention to them, should give one pause. Consider two examples from the Farm Hall Transcripts, the transcripts of the conversations of the German atom-bomb scientists interred at Farm Hall, secretly recorded by the British and declassified by them only in 1992. The two examples, which I cited without extensive commentary in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, concern artificial rubies, and an unknown "photochemical process" of isotope enrichment. I will cite both sets of quotations and my remarks concerning them from that book directly.

---

[1] Tom Bearden (Lt. Col., U.S. Army, Ret), *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbara, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), p. 84.

1. The "Artificial Rubies" Passage from The Farm Hall Transcipts (Reich of the Black Sun, pp. 142-132)

On pages 142 and 143 of *Reich of the Black Sun* I observed that one of the interred Farm Hall scientists made a rather astonishing statement, a statement made astonishing not only for its "matter-of-fact" passing nature and brevity, but also because it called forth almost no comment from the editor of the transcripts:

> Then, on July 21, 1945, the handsome and cynical Horst Korsching, discussing the prospects for making a living with Diebner and Bagge, offers a curious observation:
>
> "BAGGE: For the sake of the money, I should like to work on the uranium engine; on the other hand, I should like to work on cosmic rays. I feel like Diebner about this.
>
> "KORSCHING: Would you both like to construct an uranium engine?
>
> "DIEBNER: This is *the* chance to earn a living.
>
> "KORSCHING: Every layman can see that these ideas are exceedingly important. Hence there won't be any money in it. You only make money on ideas which have escaped the general public. If you invent something like *artificial rubies* for the watch making industry, you will make more money than with the uranium engine."[2]

I then commented as follows:

> Artificial rubies? Of course, such things were used in watchmaking before the invention of quartz movement. But in 1945, the idea was fantastic. Of course, by the time of the declassification of these transcripts, the world's first laser, which did in fact use an artificial ruby as the main component of the lasing optical cavity, was history, having been invented in 1961. But in July 1945 the idea was more than a little ahead of its time. Is this another possible, though slight, indication that something else was going on inside Nazi Germany? Later in the conversation, Korsching expresses his desire to return

---

[2] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club*, p. 99, emphasis added.

> Hechingen to collect his telescope, lenses and prisms, an indication that he was perhaps involved in optical as well as nuclear research.[3]

The mention there of the connection between lasers and artificial rubies was not accidental, for on page 104 of *Reich of the Black Sun*, I cited the following quotation from former British intelligence officer-cum-journalist Tom Agoston, who first broke the story of the *Kammlerstab*, the SS's secret weapons think tank, to the West in the 1980s:

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; *laser beams*, then still referred to as "death rays": a variety of homing rockets, and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modern high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.[4]

What is interesting is the juxtaposition of these two quotations, for while Agoston offers no *evidence* for his assertion that the SS was working on the development of lasers during the war, he nonetheless clearly states that this was an avenue of research being pursued.

Thus, the *subsequent* appearance of the Farm Hall Transcripts in the early 1990s oddly corroborates Agoston's assertions with Korsching's very curious reference to artificial rubies, a then costly and time-consuming process that surely would have merited more than merely making rubies for watches. Since the transcripts had not yet been declassified by the British government when Agoston wrote his book, we can only assume that Agoston did *not* know the contents of the still secret Transcripts and was basing his assertions on his confidential talks with Dr. Wilhelm Voss, who first disclosed the story of Kammler's black projects secret weapons think tank.

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 142-143.

[4] Agoston, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985), p. 65, emphasis added.

This juxtaposition argues very strongly, though only circumstantially, that the SS was indeed involved in researching *lasers.* While we do not yet know how far they pressed this research, nor to what degree of success, it is in any case not of immediate concern, since the *theoretical possibility* of lasers already existed within quantum mechanics at that time.

But what is of *real* interest is the *type* of physics that Agoston's and Korsching's remarks - made decades apart and independently of each other – indicate about the nature of the physics *concepts* the Germans were investigating, in this case, aspects of *quantum mechanics and coherence.* As was seen in *Reich of the Black Sun*, Nazi ideology itself, with its rejection of "Jewish" relativistic physics, would have naturally turned to the home-grown, "purely Aryan" and equally successful, quantum mechanical theory as a conceptual basis from which to pursue its advanced projects. We shall return to this all-important though brief clue, *coherence*, in a moment. For now, let us turn our attention to a second odd quotation, another weird glimpse into the possible areas of physics the SS was investigating.

2. The Farm Hall Transcript's Indications of a German Photochemical Process of Isotope Separation and Enrichment

As recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, once the interred German scientists had learned of the Allied a-bombing of Hiroshima, they then begin to debate how the Allies could have "done it so soon," a discussion that naturally quickly turns to the question of separating and enriching enough uranium 235 isotope. In one short exchange between Karl Wirtz and Otto Hahn, the discoverer of nuclear fission, the deduction is quickly made by Hahn that the Allies could only have achieved the production of a uranium a-bomb with such processes, a sentiment quickly echoed by Wirtz with his comment "They have it *too,"*[5] a short admission pregnant with implications that methods of isotope separation were clearly known and available to the Germans during the war.

---

[5] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club,* p. 144, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 144.

But as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, "a short, but astonishing, exchange between Hahn, Weizsäcker, Harteck, Wirtz, and Diebner" then follows:

> HAHN: I think it's absolutely impossible to produce one ton of uranium 235 by separating isotopes.
>
> WEIZSÄCKER: What do you do with these centrifuges?
>
> HARTECK: You can never get pure "235" with the centrifuge. But I don't believe that it can be done with the centrifuge.
>
> WIRTZ: No certainly not.
>
> HAHN: Yes, but they could do it with mass spectrographs. Ewald has some patent.
>
> DIEBNER: *There is also a photochemical process.*[6]

As *Reich of the Black Sun* goes on to indicate, this little exchange is a sign that perhaps the scientists are playing out a farce on their British captors, and that the farce may even be continuing by the British themselves in their declassification of the transcripts.

What do I mean by this? What I mean is that the British declassification is significant for *when* it occurs, and I only explored a few of the possible reasons in the previous book:

> Note that the transcripts are declassified by the British *after* the German reunification in 1989, an oblique admission, perhaps, that there was no more purpose in maintaining whatever secrets they still held, since there would now be other sources available to tell the story that had been long suppressed: that the Nazis had been either perilously close to, or had *actually acquired* the atom bomb before the Allies.[7]

To see what the "farce" being played out by the interred German scientists and the British government's declassification may be, one needs to examine a significant question that I only hinted at in various places in *Reich of the Black Sun:* What is this "photochemical process"?

---

[6] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club,* p, 118, emphasis added, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 144-145.

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 145.

A second reference to this mysterious unknown photochemical process occurs a little later in the Transcripts, during a brief but very suggestive interchange between Hartek and Wirtz:

> HARTEK: They have managed it with mass spectrographs on a large scale or else they have been successful with a photochemical process.
>
> WIRTZ: Well I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength (all talking together).[8]

I then commented as follows:

> At this juncture, Bernstein[9] again observes that "it is not clear" what this photochemical process is.[10] In any case, whatever the process was, Wirtz's mention of it and of irradiation with a particular "wavelength" appears to have provoked a burst of conversation from the other scientists. Were they intentionally trying to drown him out and mask his statements so as not to be recorded? We will never know.[11]

But perhaps we really *do* know what this mysterious though unknown photochemical process of isotope enrichment is.

A clue is again afforded by the *timing* of the declassification of the Farm Hall Transcripts: after German reunification. But their declassification also occurs *after* another significant event, the discovery and publication of *the first cold fusion experiments by Pons and Fleischmann.* Most do not associate cold fusion with isotope separation and enrichment, but the fact of the matter is, *by very easily engineered processes that might best be called precisely "electrolytic" or "photochemical"*, nuclear transmutation of elements has been observed in laboratories all over the world since then, and using materials relatively easily obtained, and able to be engineered in any competent high school or in a garage laboratory bench. The literature covering these cold fusion transmutations is easily available on any internet search.[12]

---

[8] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club*, p. 148, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 148.

[9] Jeremy Bernstein, the editor and annotator of the transcripts.

[10] Referring to Bernstein's comment on p. 120, n. 38, of *Hitler's Uranium Club.*

[11] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 148.

If this or something similar is indeed what the Germans meant by a "photochemical process," then the contents of the Farm Hall Transcripts are nothing less than revolutionary, for it means that we have a *second* indicator, in a very different way, that the Germans were researching the phenomenon of quantum coherence of the medium in a variety of systematically pursued ways.[13] On this view the timing of the release of the transcripts is significant in a dual way, as occurring (1) *after* German reunification and (2) *after* the first public release of cold fusion experimental data.

The implications of the transcripts' two allusions to such a photochemical process by interred German scientists in 1945 is *staggering*, for if they had actually discovered and conducted such experiments – and there was certainly ideological impetus from the Nazi government in its pursuit of "energy independence" to do so – and if they had advanced from an initial "Pons and Fleischman" apparatus to a more sophisticated version that accomplished the transmutation of elements at room temperature, as in the recent Japanese experiments, then we have a second, though still tenuous, indicator that the SS was pursuing some very extraordinarily advanced physics conceptions indeed. And there would have been *little* if anything required in such experiments that did not exist in some form available to the Germans during the war.

---

[12] Q.v. the crucial paper on permeation methods for transmutation by Yasuhiro Iwamura, Mitsuru Sakano, Takehiko Itoh, "Elemental Analysis of Pd Complexes: Effects of D_2 Gas Permeation," *Japan Journal of Applied Physics,* Vol. 41 (2002) pp. 4642-4650, Part I, No 7A, July 2002. As for the SS and fusion research, German researcher Karl-Heinz Zunneck states that fusion energy was one area of the SS's investigations, though he does not indicate how far it had pressed this research (see Karl Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens,* Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2002), p. 151.)

[13] I realize that at this juncture the term "quantum coherence" seems to have little to do with cold fusion, but will expand the term to a more accurate description later. Suffice it to say that the only viable explanations for the anomalous excess energy present in cold fusion experiments is that some aspect of the vacuum energy has been cohered and entered the experiments via mechanisms not yet fully understood.

Small wonder then, that when Wirtz begins to talk of irradiation at particular wavelengths that the other scientists appear to begin talking all at once, as if to drown out his comments from the British recorders, an effort that, if one takes Bernstein's editorial mystification as any indicator, was entirely successful.[14]

What do we have, then, at this juncture?

First, we have allusions, from the same source, to two *different* phenomena – lasers and a "photochemical process" of nuclear transmutation - involving quantum coherence at some level. Second, in the case of the reference to artificial rubies and their implied use in lasers, we have further corroboration from an independent source of research, Agoston, whose corroboration of the "laser" side of the story comes *prior* to the release of the Transcripts themselves and Korsching's passing remark about artificial rubies. Finally, the declassification and release of the Farm Hall Transcripts themselves may be significant with respect to timing in a dual sense, as occurring after German reunification, and after the first public release of cold fusion laboratory data by Pons and Fleischmann.

3. Back to Roswell and the Majestic 12 Documents: Another Odd Corroboration of Possible Nazi Knowledge of Cold Fusion

This last point, and the reference to cold fusion, is highly significant for yet another reason. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I also attempted to subject some of the Cooper-Cantwheel Majestic-12 documents to an analysis of their technical descriptions of the crashed and allegedly "extraterrestrial" vehicle(s), with a view to determine if the technical data warranted a conclusion that the crashed and recovered vehicle(s) was necessary piloted by "ET" and if the technical data as summarized in the documents conclusively demonstrated a non-terrestrial origin for the craft.[15]

---

[14] Bernstein would certainly know of cold fusion, so his mystification may reflect rather his own adherence to that school of "public consumption physics" that rejects a priori any validity to cold fusion claims, since they represent an "open systems" paradigm and approach to COP > 1 systems.

[15] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 287-309.

The conclusion that I reached was, that while exotic, the described technologies were *not exotic enough* to warrant such a conclusion.

One of the objects recovered and described in those documents was a circular plastic tube, about one inch in diameter, through the center of which ran a copper tube. A liquid solution appeared to exist inside the tube, which the document implies is “water.” At this juncture, as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun,* the Nazi “Project Paperclip” rocket scientists were brought in to examine the craft and make a pronouncement. Two of the scientists who allegedly examined the craft were Von Braun and Von Karman, “who were unable to identify” the craft as a Nazi V-Weapon. However, they *were* able to hypothesize that its propulsion was via “a very radical form of propulsion via a charge differential, a fact that suggests that while they may not have been able to identify it, they at least may have had their strong suspicions.”[16]

Additionally, the almost

> Single-mindedly “terrestrial” nature of the technology described should be clearly obvious: a simple plastic tube, approximately an inch in diameter, filled with a substance that is apparently water, in the center of which is a rod wrapped with a coil of “what appears to be…copper material.” Moreover, apparently enough examination or analysis and speculation had been done for the investigators to conclude that the doughnut reactor was somehow a “heavy water” reactor, and that the German scientists are already thinking in terms of a *fusion* rather than a *fission* reactor. This is perhaps significant, for the equipment described, in the context of fusion, suggests the same apparatus set up, in some respects, as the process later known as cold fusion.[17]

Why would the scientists Von Braun and Von Karman have even been thinking in such terms *in 1947*? Clearly, one reason is that if the Majestic-12 documents are indeed genuine, and therefore describing real events, then any *hot* fusion reaction would simply have disintegrated any such “plastic doughnut” in a matter of nanoseconds. Consequently, this means that the Nazi rocket scientists are thinking in such unconventional terms that it compels the possibility that they might have seen or heard of such technology before. This is another indicator, from yet a totally

---

[16] Ibid., p. 306.

[17] Ibid., pp. 306-307.

different quarter that a *very* different habit of "physics thinking and conceptualization" may have been very common currency within the bowels of the Third Reich's secret weapons projects. It may further indicate yet again that much more was being done at Peenemünde during the war than research into mere rockets.

We now have an extremely odd assortment of statements indeed. One group of German scientists are talking about "photochemical processes" of isotope separation and enrichment, which sounds an awful lot like cold fusion, while yet another group of German scientists from a wholly different weapons project is talking about more or less the same thing, and yet a third scientist from the *first* group is found making one short but highly provocative statement about artificial rubies.

Taken together these are strong indicators that within the "reach" of SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's black projects empire the idea of quantum coherence was apparently a central research preoccupation, and that a variety of avenues were being pursued to make the "coherence" of the zero point energy – and weapons based upon it - a practical possibility.

But there is yet a *final* quotation that we must examine with regard to whatever exotic and unifying conceptual foundations the Nazi physicists and engineers may have been seeking.

4. A British Intelligence Agent's Statement on the Monstrous Areas of Physics being Developed by the Kammlerstab

As recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun,* a statement was made to German atom bomb project researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner by an anonymous British intelligence source, an individual who had been a part of the British and American intelligence teams sent in to vacuum Kammler's Black Reich-within-the-Reich of every patent and secret weapons project they could find. The man referred to a "fourth team" within SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's secret weapons "think tank," The fact that he chose to remain anonymous speaks for itself; clearly, there is something extraordinary and much more dangerous than nuclear or thermonuclear weapons in the SS' bag of "alchemical physics:"

> Yes, and then there was also the fourth team, about which we heard rumors during the last phase of the war. This was certainly so shadowy and fantastic, that one could only construe it as a ploy. But after the war it became evident that the world had avoided a colossal catastrophe by a hair's breath…. This fourth team worked *in a field that was monstrous on a daily basis.* And when I say this, I meant thereby that they experimented with things that a well-informed public would to this very day think them to be unthinkable and unbelievable, and thus imaginary. *I mean to imply that these specialists worked in conceptions that totally abandoned conventional physical laws.*[18]

While this quotation clearly pointed in the direction of some of the more exotic weapons projects that were subsequently outlined in *Reich of the Black Sun,* the fundamental question it poses nonetheless remains: just *exactly what* type of strange physics were the Germans actually up to with their “implosion engines”, “bladeless turbines,” radar absorbent materials research, and even the Bell itself?

Were all these projects merely indicative of some mad, insane hodge-podge of a desperate Reich trying to save an increasingly disastrous military situation by snatching at any means to achieve it whatsoever? Clearly such an explanation would explain much of the case, but not everything, and particularly not the quotations being examined in more detail here. So is there an underlying conceptual foundation for all these things, a conceptual foundation that would call forth such a sobering evaluation from a British intelligence agent implying monstrous areas of physics and the destruction of the world in a context that clearly implies he is *not* referring to mere atom or hydrogen bombs?

To answer this important question, one must examine the statements of Lt. Col. Tom Bearden (US Army, Ret.)[19] and his claims of what exactly constitutes “scalar” physics, and his account of its *history*. In doing so, we shall discover some significant indicators that he has missed, or perhaps that he has intentionally left unstated, indicators that imply that the story of weaponized scalar physics begins earlier than post-war Soviet Russia.

---

[18] Mayer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe,* p. 89., emphasis added. Cited in *The Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 96. Again, Karl-Heinz Zunneck also corroborates the German interest in development of a new physics. (See Karl-Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe, und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens*,,p. 59).

[19] In my previous books I mistakenly indicated that Lt. Col. Bearden was retired for the U.S. Air Force. He is, instead, retired from the U.S. Army.

B. Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics

Lt. Col. Tom Bearden has been a consistent proponent of the possibility of accessing the so-called "Zero Point Energy" or ZPE by means of what he calls "scalar physics" for almost two decades.[20] More importantly, one consistent aim of his works has been to point out the extreme power and danger of such physics when it is weaponized. Indeed, much of his writing was initiated by the concern to alert the West and America to the dangers of an on-going Soviet quest to perfect scalar weapons. I recounted much of the history of the Soviet development of such weapons in my book on the Weapon Hypothesis of the Great Pyramid, *The Giza Death Star Deployed.*[21] That history is reprised, and expanded, here.

To understand why the Soviet Union would have developed such awesome weaponry – and their potential power will be discussed below – one must go back to the end of World War Two, the beginning of the nuclear age, and the Cold War. One must comprehend the geopolitical and military situation of that time not only from the Russian point of view but from *Stalin's* point of view. Fully one half of the fifty million military and civilian casualties of World War Two were suffered by the Russians.[22]

---

[20] More recently, Col. Bearden has also used the term "energetics" – coined by the Soviets themselves – and "quantum potential weapons" to refer to this type of physics. Q.v. his last two comprehensive books on the subject, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), and the highly technical tome *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002). The latter work is a superb introduction, by a credentialed scientist of great intellectual caliber, to the physics of cohering the Zero Point Energy.

[21] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 104 – 112.

[22] More recently, even this figure must be called into question, because the Russian government, in the wake of the collapse of the Soviet Communist state,

World War Two would not have been won, and most certainly have been lost, without them. For the German Wehrmacht, the sheer scale of operations on the Russian front dwarfed all others; all other fronts, the Italian and French theaters, were for the Nazi military colossus a mere sideshow. The barbarity of that campaign and the enormous loss of life it caused were the result, not of a conflict between good and evil, but of two barbarous, genocidal and paranoid regimes intent on their own survival and the utter annihilation of the other. After a three-month campaign in 1941, the Wehrmacht came within a hair's breath of doing just that, and the Red Army, after clawing its way back with rivers of its own blood, over the next three and a half years, finally succeeded.

Consequently, by the end of the war, Soviet Russia was in tatters. Not only had she lost approximately sixteen percent of her pre-war population, but the cities of European Russia were piles of rubble; her workforce, industry, and infrastructure were severely dislocated and strained. Her manpower reserves were exhausted, her economy was a shambles, and her people understandably war weary. To make this dismal military picture even more bleak, America had successfully developed the atomic bomb and deployed it in war.

To the Western Allies, therefore, the picture looked as if the Red Army – superbly equipped and competently led – was poised to roll over Western Europe. But to Stalin and his marshals the situation was bleak. He needed to demobilize, but in effect, could not, since the Red Army was his one credible bargaining chip. Only its sheer size, its quality of arms and its leadership, offset the American atomic monopoly. Therefore, much to the chagrin of Soviet economic planners, they had to do the impossible. They had to maintain their devastated economy on a war footing, while simultaneously rebuilding the infrastructure of European Russia, *and* they had to acquire and deploy atomic bombs in sufficient

---

has released classified documents that indicate that Russian casualties, as a direct consequence of military operations, may have been nearly double the 25,000,000 that is usually mentioned. This tends to corroborate in a general way the view argued in my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* that the Germans may have used some type of weapon of mass destruction during their military operations on the Eastern Front.

numbers to be a credible power vis-à-vis the United States and its allies.

By 1949 Russian spies and scientists had indeed achieved the impossible. They had delivered the a-bomb into Stalin's hands. And a few months after the first American H-bomb, the Soviet Union would acquire its own thermonuclear capability. There was just one problem. The Soviet Union could never hope to out produce America in thermonuclear weapons.

It is in this total context that Bearden's reconstruction of the Soviet secret project to acquire scalar weapons should be seen. As he puts it:

> As one aftermath of the U.S. development and use of the atomic bomb, Stalin – ever the total dictator – lashed his Soviet Academy of Sciences furiously. Undoubtedly he pointed out that the destiny of communism had been frustrated by this great technical breakthrough made by the Americans (with help from the British and from political European refugees).

Indeed, as *Reich of the Black Sun* argued, it is extremely doubtful that the American Manhattan Project would have been successful during the course of the war at all if it were not for the surrender of enriched uranium 235 for its uranium bomb, and infrared bomb fuses for its plutonium bomb, by Nazi Germany. Stalin at this point "informed his scientists in no uncertain terms that the next such breakthrough had better be Soviet."[23] Indeed, Stalin's exact words could have left no doubt: "The destiny of communism has been frustrated by the U.S. development of the atomic bomb. That is not the last great technical breakthrough. The next one *will* be Soviet! You will provide me with that great new technical breakthrough at all speed, or I will have your heads. Do I make myself clear, comrades?"[24] Stalin thus

> planned to do exactly what the U.S. had done: Find a new area for a great technical breakthrough and superweapon, put the entire resources

---

[23] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," *Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology* (Tesla Book Company), p. 12.

[24] Bearden, *Fer de Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Cheniere, 2002), p. 6. Bearden offers no source for the quotation.

> of the nation behind it, develop it in great secrecy, and thrust it upon the U.S. and its allies at the eleventh hour….[25]

As a result of Stalin's threats, "the entire Soviet scientific community was galvanized into a most intensive review of all physics."[26] This was the most massive scientific scavenger hunt in history, a Manhattan Project-sized effort, all designed simply to scour through western scientific journals for a clue that might suggest an area for such a technical breakthrough for a superweapon.

> Large review institutions were quickly set up, staffed with the best Soviet scientists and support translators and teams. One such search institute involved some 2,000 PhDs along with their support staffs. Soviet ships brought in shiploads of copies of all the scientific journals of the West – from the beginning - , and they were reviewed paper-by-paper, page-by-page. Anything novel and implying new scientific possibilities, or anything that had not been adequately followed up, was laid aside in a 'select' pile for further review and decision by the best Soviet theoreticians available.[27]

Soviet science was scouring the *forgotten or discarded* and in some cases even the *exotic and esoteric* avenues of Western science. Soviet physics in particular was, due to Russia's isolation and communist ideology, in almost the same situation as physics had been in the Nazi Reich.

Bearden's argument now takes a decidedly speculative turn, but one that is very convincing. Arguing that the Soviet have scalar weapons because certain events and physical anomalies in post-war history bear the clear signature of scalar physics, he then poses the question of how and why the Soviets were led to develop such weapons. The answer is the scenario already outlined. Bearden then inquires what *specifically* they might have found as the "scientific scavenger teams" sifted through scientific journals. Was there anything in the scientific, peer-reviewed literature that would serve as the theoretical foundations for the development of a "superweapon" more powerful than Russia's or America's own hydrogen bombs?

---

[25] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," *Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology* (Tesla Book Company), p. 12.

[26] Bearden, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), p. 7.

[27] Ibid.

His answer is astonishing. The Russian physicists discovered not only a basis for the unification of physical fields that was pre-relativistic, but they found one that could be reconciled with quantum mechanics that would allow them to tap into, or "cohere," the limitless "Zero Point Energy" or "quantum potential."[28] It was thus practical and weaponizable. Moreover, as will be seen below, it was a very *flexible* weapons platform, capable of a variety of uses and effects, and capable of use in varying degrees of destructive power, up to and including gigantic regional devastation and, as we shall see, even capable of planet-busting potential.

But what exactly *is* scalar, or "quantum potential", physics? To answer that question, one must look at Bearden's examination of classical electromagnetic theory and the implicit assumptions that have been the basis of "public consumption" physics since Maxwell in the nineteenth century. His examination is another component of the history of scalar physics.

1. Bearden on the State of Electromagnetic, or Electrodynamic, Theory, and the Elements of Scalar, or Quantum Potential, Physics

a. Classical Electromagnetic Theory as a Perpetual Motion Machine

According to Bearden, contemporary theoretical and experimental physics has been on the wrong track since at least the nineteenth century since Heaviside editted the brilliant work of James Clerk Maxwell in unifying the magnetic and electric fields. In fact, physics has been *so* wrong that electromagnetic theory itself is the single best example of a fundamental violation of one of the foundational laws of physics: the conservation of energy. This is because, unbelievably, standard electromagnetic theory, as it is taught *to this day* in universities in the West, has *no* solid explanation for the origin of electric charge in two of the most fundamental particles in nuclear physics and quantum mechanics: the proton, and the electron:

---

[28] Strictly speaking, "zero point energy" and "quantum potential" are not the same thing, even though the terms tend to be used indiscriminately even by physicists to indicate the energy of the medium or vacuum.

> Let us put it bluntly: Every charge in the universe *already* freely and continuously pours out (electromagnetic) energy in (three dimensional space) in all directions, *without any observable energy input.* That is the well-concealed ***source charge problem***, known but ignored by the leaders of the scientific community for a century. ***All*** (electromagnetic) fields and potentials and their energy come from those source charges, according to electrodynamics itself. Either we must give up the conservation of energy law entirely, or else we must accept the fact that unobservable ***virtual*** (electromagnetic) mass and energy are continuously absorbed from the vacuum by the source charge, transduced into real observable (electromagnetic) energy, and then re-radiated in (three dimensional space) in all directions as observable (electromagnetic) energy, creating the associated fields and potentials reaching out across the universe.[29]

The result of this absurd situation is that the engineering models and devices based on this standard electrodynamics continue to assume “that the charge *freely creates* real (electromagnetic) energy out of nothing at all, in total violation of the conservation of energy law.” Thus, physics faculties, government grant and funding agencies, and corporate research laboratories “unwittingly advocate perpetual motion machines on a scale unparalleled in history. They continue to support an electrical engineering model and a classical electrodynamics model which *do not even model* the active vacuum and its exchange with every charge, much less a *broken symmetry* in that exchange.”[30]

In case this is not clear enough, Bearden, who has a bachelor of science degree in mathematics, a master of science degree in engineering, and a PhD in science, puts the miserable state of “public consumption physics” and its electrodynamics in no uncertain terms:

---

[29] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*(Cheniere, 2002), p. xx, italicized emphasis mine, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden’s.

[30] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 6-7, n. 5.

> There is not now, and there never has been, a single electrical engineering department, electrical engineering professor, or electrical engineering textbook that teaches what powers an electrical circuit. Yet the basis for it has clearly been in particle physics since 1957, as certified by the award of the Nobel Prize to Lee and Yang. What powers every electrical circuit and system is the broken symmetry of the primary power system's source charges and source dipole (i.e., the broken symmetry of the opposite charges on the ends of the dipole) in its fierce energy exchange with the seething vacuum, once that dipole has been made. … Further, any dipole will freely extract (electromagnetic) energy from the vacuum, convert it into real, usable, observable (electromagnetic) energy, and pour out real, usable (electromagnetic) energy continuously and indefinitely, so long as the dipole remains intact.[31]

Or to put it more simply, all electromagnetic devices and circuits "are already powered – though in an inappropriate fashion – by (electromagnetic) energy freely extracted from the vacuum."[32] All electrical circuits, in other words, are already "zero point energy" or "quantum potential" devices.[33] They are just massively inefficient ones for reasons that will be seen shortly.

Since classical electrodynamics viewed charge in a most unscientific manner as a "perpetual motion machine" getting energy from literally nowhere, the next error inevitably followed: electrical circuits and electromagnetic systems were *closed* systems.

But how, then, would classical electrodynamics explain the Coler coil, the curious circuit reproduced in *Reich of the Black Sun*?[34]

---

[31] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. xxii, emphasis added.

[32] Ibid., p. 584. Bearden calls this statement "the central message" of his long and quite technical tome.

[33] Q.v. *Energy from the Vacuum*., pp. 22-23, for some disturbing questions and implications of this insight.

[34] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 226-228.

B
A
C
D
G
N
S
I (Right)
IV (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) III
II (Right)
(Right) V
OUTER (Right).
INNER (Left).

The Coler Coil

As mentioned there, this odd hexagonal arrangement of coils and magnets had *absolutely no source of power* and yet it managed to *produce* power.

Clearly, this circuit, understood in the wider context of the other issues examined in this chapter, would have spurred the German scientists to seek an explanation within the context of the ideologically approved physics of the Nazi regime, i.e., in quantum mechanics and its prediction of a vacuum flux, or “zero point energy.” In understanding such a circuit, in understanding *any* circuit, one will thus find it necessary – if one is to avoid the “perpetual motion machine” of standard electrodynamics – “to think in terms of the *supersystem*, defined as having three components, which are (i) the physical power system itself, (ii) the active local vacuum, and (iii) the active local curvatures of spacetime."[35] Any electrical circuit is thus not a *closed* system but an *open* system.[36]

We now have the first three fundamental components of scalar physics and technologies:

(1) the medium, aether substrate, or "active local vacuum",
(2) the local curved dynamic of space,[37] and
(3) an understanding of circuits as *open* systems, rather than closed perpetual motion machines.

Moreover, as the Coler Coil seems to imply, *some* circuits are more efficient at transducing this "active vacuum" energy than others, and one may reasonably assume, therefore, that this efficiency is a function of its circuit parameters, i.e., of its *geometry* and "*electrical topology,"* of its *shape.*

b. What the Soviets (and Nazis) Found in their Scavenger Hunt: E.T. Whittaker's Decomposition of Scalar Potentials into Bi-Directional Longitudinal Waves

So, with these observations in mind, it is time to ask the important question: What exactly did the Soviets *find* during their scavenger hunt? And more to the point, what might the Germans have concluded and carefully classified from their examination of the Coler Coil? To answer this, it is necessary to take up Bearden's reconstruction of the history of scalar weapons where we left it off.

---

[35] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. xix. Note that Bearden is implying something quite different from Special or General Relativity: a *local* curvature or dynamic of space that is *engineerable.*

[36] For a rigorous discussion of the standard versus "scalar" definitions of closed and open systems in thermodynamics, see Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 6, n. 9. See also *Fer De Lance*, pp. 110-111.

[37] Bearden notes that "the fact that general relativity falsified much of the present foundations of classical thermodynamics seems to have been either ignored or missed by most of the scientific community, although we still (are able to) quote leading Russian scientists who have noticed it and are aware of it." (*Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 7.)

Bearden maintains that in scouring the West’s scientific journals the Soviets would have come across three relatively obscure, highly mathematical, entirely pre-relativistic, and *immensely unusual* papers. Two of them were by the well-known mathematician and theoretical physicist E.T. Whittaker, and one was by a physicist named Barus. Of the three, the Whittaker papers are breathtaking in their implications, not the least of which because they can be made to work within the context of the later-developed quantum theory.

The first paper, a lengthy and highly mathematical tome, is a masterpiece whose full implications – in spite of its benign and somewhat intimidating title “On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics” – are spelled out by Whittaker in the conclusion of the paper(I have italicized the significant portions that bear directly on Bearden’s analysis which follows):

> *It is clear from the foregoing that the field of force due to a gravitating body can be analyzed, by a “spectrum analysis” as it were, into an infinite number of constituent fields;* and although the whole field of force does not vary with time, yet ***each of the constituent fields is of an undulatory character, consisting of a simple wave-disturbance propagated with uniform velocity****….* In each of these constituent fields the potential will be constant along each wave-front, and consequently the gravitational force in each constituent field will be perpendicular to the wave-front, ***i.e., the waves will be longitudinal.***[38]

The significance of this short paragraph may be missed unless one remembers that E.T. Whittaker was also a physicist who believed ardently in the *aether*, i.e., in a medium or mechanism of electromagnetic energy propagation. Indeed, he is the same Whittaker who wrote a classic history of the concept of the aether. Note also that this paper was originally published *in Germany*, and therefore, the Germans could hardly have been unaware of its existence or of its importance as a *non-relativistic* physics as they sought to explain the curious anomalies of the Coler Coil or their late war radar experiments. Indeed, their experiments with radar, and even the Bell itself, are evidence that they were pursuing this "scalar physics" with a vengeance.

---

[38] E.T. Whittaker, “On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics,” *Mathematische Annalen,* Vol 57, 1903 (333-355), p. 355, italicized emphasis mine, bold and italicized emphasis Whittaker’s.

To understand what Bearden means by "scalar" waves in the medium or vacuum, we must now go further into the history of where public consumption physics went wrong. According to Bearden, it began to make its first massive wrong turn after Maxwell. Maxwell first formulated his equations in a mathematical language all but extinct today, a mathematical language called quaternion geometry. This mathematical language differs significantly from the standard "linear algebra," "tensor calculus" and "vector analysis" in which the standard electromagnetic theory is usually couched in textbooks and physics lectures. In short, the equations one learns in physics textbooks and physics courses today as Maxwell's equations are **not** Maxwell's original equations! They are *edited* equations. But to understand what effect this simple change of mathematical language – from quaternions to vector analysis – had on physics, we need to understand a few simple concepts.

First, there are two type of effects that electromagnetic fields can have on charged particles: (1) translation, and (2) stress. There are two types of translation, or movement. The first type is simple translation in a straight line, producing the electrical, or "E" field itself. The second type of movement is that of a spiral, mathematically symbolized as the "B" field. We will not be dealing with the "B" field immediately.

Now let us assume there are two vectors, E_1 and E_2, acting upon a particle as shown:

The result is a translation in the direction of vector E_3 as the two vectors are added together to get a result, which is called aptly enough, a "resultant" vector. Thus, in systems where a large number of translation vectors are involved, "the entire system can be replaced by a single vector," the resultant, which describes the *actual* translation that results from the original vectors.[39]

Now observe that if no translation occurs, the resultant is a "zero vector." However, one must always recall that one is dealing with *geometry* and not simply *mathematics or numbers.* One can therefore envision a multitude of multi-vector systems resulting in a zero translation vector, and yet *which have profoundly different internal stresses and geometries:*

---

[39] Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," *Proceedings of the international Tesla Society,* 6/24-6/68, p. 6/24.

If one were trained to think only in terms of the conventions of linear algebra to replace multi-vector systems with a resultant vector, then in each of the three cases or systems above, one will replace the entire system with a *zero resultant vector.* This means that the *internal stresses of the systems and their rotational characteristics – each obviously quite different – are all replaced by a zero vector, and thus the three systems are erroneously reduced to physical equivalence by a mathematical convention!*

Now we are in a position to see what a scalar is, and why Maxwell deliberately chose quaternion geometry to write his equations, for he had in mind when he did so precisely the types of physical *stress* situations that are simply represented by the vortices in the above diagram.

In standard linear algebra, each of the arrows in the above system would be mathematically represented like this:

v(vector) = ai + bj + ck.

Thus, if the total sum of all such vectors is no translation, then one will replace all such mathematical expressions with a zero vector. But as we have seen, each of these systems contains an internal rotation or stress, so *something* remains. The question is, how to represent it mathematically?

In quaternion geometry, a quaternion is simply a “scalar” plus a “vector,” and a “scalar” is simply a *pure magnitude*, a “number” that has no *direction*. It simply “is.” Thus, a quaternion (q) is a scalar(s) plus a vector (v):

$$q = s + v$$

Substituting our previous expression of a vector into this, we get

$$q = s + ai + bj + ck.$$

Thus, for the hexagonally shaped system above, one would have six different expressions resembling $q = s + ai + bj + ck$. Now imagine we multiply each of these vectors. According to the special rules in linear algebra for multiplying such things, we know that zero times zero is zero. So in linear algebra one would end up with nothing once again, a zero vector, since no translation has occurred. But in *quaternion geometry the scalars, which are* ***not*** *zero, all multiply, and give – according to the rules of quaternion multiplication – the following result:*

$$q \times q = s^2 + t^2 + u^2 + w^2 + x^2 + y^2 + 0_v,$$

where 0_v is the zero vector and the squared quantities are the multiplied scalars. Thus, in quaternion geometry the internal stress is preserved even though there is zero translation occurring. *The scalars thus represent pure magnitudes of force “locked within” a structure possessing no “direction” or “translation.”*

Now we are in a position to understand what scalar physics is: *it is* ***not*** *standard vector or “linear” physics in any sense, but is the* ***non-linear*** *physics of internal stresses in the local medium.*

We are likewise now in a position to understand the enormous implications of the end of Whittaker’s paper quoted above, implications that Bearden’s analysis makes quite clear:

> (The) interference of scalar potentials – each of which is actually a set of longitudinal (electromagnetic) waves, and not a scalar entity at all, but a ***multivectorial*** entity – *produces* (electromagnetic) fields and waves and their dynamics. Hence we hypothesize that the Whittaker

> interference of the propagating reordered (electromagnetic) energy entities, continuously occurring at any point in space, generates the zero-point (electromagnetic) field energy fluctuations of the vacuum itself. Indeed, (a) paper by Evans…has already shown that *just such "scalar interferometry" produces transverse (electromagnetic) fields and waves in the vacuum at a distance.*[40]

In other words, one must imagine each of the scalar entities accompanying the vectors in the diagrams above as being composed of bi-directional *longitudinal* or "acoustic" waves in the medium. Thus, Whittaker "decomposes" the scalar entities into pairs of such pressure waves or "stresses" in the medium. Combining, or "interfering" such waves thus causes the standard electromagnetic fields and waves observed in standard physics. And most importantly, this can be done "at a distance."

But what does this mean?

Simply put, since every atom and every *type* of atom consists of particles with charge and/or mass, then every atom has its own peculiar "scalar signature" or "resonance" (recall the diagrams above and imagine the mathematical notations that would describe each in quaternion geometry). Thus, to produce an *effect* on any one of these systems, one simply has to "work backwards" as it were, and configure its scalar signature, decomposing each of the scalars into its own pair of bi-directional longitudinal pulses and waves.

One may thus envision the innumerable types of "zero sum vector systems" like the diagram above as also being a kind of *template for action*, or what Bearden calls a "causal system robot," or CSR, *a template for producing a desired outcome in a system at a distance by means of configuring resonance to its "scalar signature*":

> With sufficient theoretical development, one can "work backwards" to obtain a desired causal system…corresponding to some physical system…. One thereby creates a deterministic set of spacetime curvatures and impressed dynamics, which we call an "engine."...By

---

[40] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 145, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden's, italicized emphasis mine.

> building in scalar interferometry functions, the CSR can be given "weapons" capabilities, etc.[41]

That is, one reproduces the "scalar" topological signature of the system one wants to influence (or destroy), and loads the appropriate information into it:

> (By) assembling the desired (longitudinal) wave biwave subsets, the two scalar potentials and their resulting interference-produced carrier wave are internally structured *as desired.* This is the use of the so-called ***internal information content of the field.*** We speak of a deliberately structured potential, field, or wave as having been ***conditioned, dimensioned,*** or ***activated***. If these terms are deemed inappropriate, just use the more generic term "internally structured."[42]

By the well-known mass-energy conversion mechanism, mass and inertia are thus "the direct result of – and are – trapped scalar resonance." But what is "trapped scalar resonance"? "The trapping mechanism is the spin of the particle,"[43] that is, the peculiar internal rotating stresses or vorticies in the medium of various systems, diagramed in our simple example above![44]

More than anything else, it is this ability to configure a template based upon the scalar signature and its long distance resonance effects in the medium that allows one to produce an action at a distance that best fills the bill for the "monstrous area of physics" that the British intelligence agent disclosed to German researchers Mayer and Mehner. It is, indeed, a very sophisticated form of magic, and sympathetic magic at that.

For the result of this new physics is that space itself *has structure and content*; the medium or "aether" *may be viewed as nothing but a vast set of scalar potentials, which can be decomposed into longitudinal wave pairs.*[45] And since a "scalar" represents an *internal rotational stress* – as per our diagrams above – scalar physics is also not only non-linear, but *vorticular* physics.

---

[41] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* p. 27. For more on CSRs, see pp. 15-16.

[42] Ibid., p. 112, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden's, italicized emphasis mine.

[43] Ibid., p. 173.

[44] I am *acutely* aware of over-simplifying so much of Bearden's (and others') thinking here.

[45] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 244.

2. Bearden's Claims for "Scalar" Physics and its Weaponization

a. The Dangers of Scalar Resonance: Planet-Busting "Doomsday" Implications

In addition to a superb defensive capability, there is a far more ominous offensive capability. Since, as has been seen, "scalar waves pass through the electron shells of an atom and interact with the nucleus" directly, this means that "they are continually absorbed and emitted by all nuclei in the universe." Consequently, "any large collection of nuclei – such as a star or a planet – is a strong absorber and radiator of scalar wave radiation."[46] One cannot ponder this too long nor overestimate its importance, for it means that any large mass such as a planet is a *natural resonator* of such waves, and this means any scalar weapon has a planetary-sized potential destructive power:

> (This) scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of the large Soviet strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a "pulse" mode, *pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon system results.* Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled systems may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous. Indeed, a solar response could be stimulated so that the Sun would violently belch and destroy our biosphere, among other effects. The simplest doomsday stimulation would be for a violent expulsion of Solar (electromagnetic) energy and particles to occur. If this were due to resonance, the expulsion of Solar (electromagnetic) energy and particles would continue during some decay time. In that case, fiery destruction of the earth, strongly indicative of Biblical prophecy, would result….
>
> Accordingly, use of huge scalar (electromagnetic) weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons

---

[46] Bearden, *Fer De Lance.,* p. 209.

> could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself.[47]

One may even envision the use of a scalar weapon to acoustically oscillate an entire planet beyond its ability to damp the enormous cascade of quantum potential energy to the point that it would explode.[48] Bearden himself is quite alive to this disturbing potential for the weapons:

> (If) the discharge happens to tickle the Sun and Moon’s feedback loops the wrong way, you’ll get convulsions of the earth, mighty burps of the sun raining fire and brimstone on the earth, and *a violent increase in the interior heat of the earth’s molten core, with a concomitant eruption of that core right up through the mantle….*
>
> (Whenever) one activates a large scalar (electromagnetic) weapon, one immediately places the entire earth in deadly peril. The slightest misstep, and it’s curtains for everyone. And it’s curtains for the earth as well.[49]

It takes only a little imagination to see that this principle could be pressed even farther, to the inability of the planet to damp its violent, scalar-induced acoustic cavitation. The planet would consume itself in a violent explosion making a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker.

But in any case, as Bearden makes abundantly clear, scalar weapons possess planet-busting potential.

This in turn corroborates yet another seemingly fantastic assertion that German researchers Mayer and Mehner made in their own investigations of the Nazi atom bomb. Commenting on the allegations of the anonymous British intelligence agent that tipped them off that the SS was working on far more than mere a-bombs and h-bombs, but in areas of physics that seemingly “totally abandoned conventional physical laws,"[50] they then go on to comment on this revelation as follows:

---

[47] Ibid., pp. 209-210, emphasis added. Readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy will recall that I indicated that one characteristic of a scalar weapon of “mass destruction” planet-busting potential was precisely that it be coupled to the base solar system that it is in. Q.v. my *Giza Death Star,* pp. 251-252. The reason for this requirement, once again, is that large masses are natural resonators to scalar waves.

[48] See my *Giza Death StarDeployed, Giza Death Star Destroyed*.

[49] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, p. 408, emphasis is Bearden’s.

> This could only mean that there was a weapons system that possessed enormous range and degree of efficiency that lay beyond that of nuclear weapons technology. Did the Third Reich really prepare the Doomsday Weapon? And if so, where is this technology today? Was it discovered by the Allies or does it lurk secretly deep in the earth waiting for its rediscovery? Is such an Ultimate Weapon has already been in existence for more than fifty years, then it is a legitimate question to ask what today's military really, actually possesses.[51]

Such planet-busting potential over the vast stellar distances of the solar system would seem to be the best and most viable candidate to fulfill this role for it is the only physics that lay within the possibilities of the then existent technology that had the requisite destructive power and enormous range. Additionally, as will be argued subsequently here, there is every indication that this type of physics is exactly what is being presented in the technology of the Bell and various other experiments the Nazis were conducting.

b. The Scalar Template and Weapons Applications

It will be recalled that any physical object, from an atom of any particular element, to planets, has a "scalar signature" that is unique to it. Thus, the notion of a "template" containing information loaded into that scalar signature – or one might say "modulated by it" – means that scalar physics is an extremely *flexible* physics. Depending on the configuration of the signature and the amount of power used, one might induce *beneficial* biological or psychological effects at a distance, as well as being able to induce disease, disordered or traumatic psychological states, alter weather, or, indeed, draw energy out of a target and "freeze" it to death, or slowly load energy into it and cook it, or instantaneously blow up an entire region of an enemy country. The template is a kind of "scalar magician's" pentagram, with its incantations and formulas (equations) producing the desired action from a distance from the system one wishes to influence.[52]

---

[50] Mayer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe*, p. 91, q.v. also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 96.

[51] Ibid., see also *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 96

3. The Implications of Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics

Thus far, Bearden's speculative history of Soviet scalar weapons development is clear enough, and the reason for Stalin's motivations in pursuing them are clear and plausible. But as I noted in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, there was also another source feeding the Soviet interest. This source raises certain questions about the actual Soviet capabilities, and where they actually came from. In his seminal work on the subject of scalar weapons, *Fer De Lance*, Bearden states that "Beside Russia, two other nations – Brazil and (a) 'little friendly nation' – also had developed quantum potential weapons."[53] A little further on, he adds the following very significant details:

> Brazil implemented an energetics weapons program after **it employed the repatriated Dr. Hellmann, a German scientist taken to Russia after WW II along with the German radar team.** Years after being taken to Russia, Hellmann was repatriated and made his way back to Germany. **In a news interview Hellmann reported that he had worked directly on the development of Soviet secret EM weapons which could suddenly freeze large areas of the ocean surface. That of course is a scalar interferometry weapon,** producing negative (converging) EM energy rather than a positive (diverging) EM energy in their distant interference. Also, when the U.S. made David Bohm *persona non grata* in the McCarthy witch-hunts, Bohm was later employed in lecturing and teaching in Brazil for some time. At the time our own scientists continued to pontificate as to whether they *liked* or could *tolerate* Bohm's quantum potential and his hidden variable interpretation of quantum mechanics. Meanwhile, **the KGB weapon scientists and the Brazilian Hellmann project** seized upon Bohm's hidden variable theory with alacrity as soon as he published his seminal paper. Those two weapon groups **were already familiar with the**

---

[52] Bearden is quite clear and consistent throughout his writings that scalar physics can be used in any number of beneficial or malign ways, including the biological and psychological uses indicated above.

[53] Tom Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 40-41. Bearden sometimes refers to scalar weapons by the alternate term "quantum potential weapons."

> **internal longitudinal EM wave structuring of potentials, fields, and waves (Whittaker 1903), and immediately saw the fantastic weapons implications of a deliberately structured quantum potential, containing a specific "engine" as desired.** Most of our scientists still are unaware of it to this day, and are unaware of its formidable weapon implications when combined with Whittaker's 1904 superpotential paper, his 1903 potential decomposition, and quantum field theory.[54]

A number of very important points emerges from this series of revelations:

1. Hellmann was apparently one of the Nazi scientists, a part of a "radar team" brought to the Soviet Union in their own "Operation Paperclip" style use of former Nazi scientists to fuel their own secret weapons projects after the war;
2. Hellmann disclosed that he had been involved in development of Soviet electromagnetic weapons that could freeze large areas of the oceans' surface, a clear signature of scalar weaponry in its "endothermic energy extraction" mode of deployment; finally, and most importantly,
3. Bearden implies that not only were the *Soviets* aware of Whittaker's mathematical papers and their profound implications, but that the *Nazis* were as well.

This is a clear indicator that the Nazis may have been behind the initial development of the theory of scalar electromagnetic physics and the first prototypical scalar devices and weapons.

While Hellmann's claims about freezing vast areas of the oceans' surface sound wild and fantastic, what is even more important is the fact that similar research was undertaken by the Nazis during World War Two into the development of a "cold bomb," a "bomb" that would in effect drain the energy from a region.[55] This clearly implies a theoretical basis in scalar electromagnetics, but even more importantly, *this implies that the*

---

[54] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 52-53, italicized emphasis Bearden's, boldface emphasis added.

[55] To the best of my knowledge, the first comprehensive survey of German research into the "cold" or "endothermic" bomb in English was the German Research Project of Henry Stevens.

theoretical and initial experimental research were already begun by Nazi Germany. Thus, the Soviets did not, after all, achieve their breakthrough. They borrowed it from the Nazis. Moreover, as was indicated in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the Nazis had expressed an interest in Dr. Nowak's "molecular bomb", a bomb of great explosive power brought about by supercooling matter and then suddenly heating it.[56] Scalar electromagnetics would be the best and most efficient way of accomplishing both the necessary cooling and sudden heating and explosive expansion of matter. Finally, as I reported in my second book on the "scalar" weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* there was an event that occurred in early 1943 on the Eastern Front, during the German retreat from Stalingrad, where an entire German regiment was wiped out after the appearance of a strange "energy bubble" over the unit. The "bubble" exploded all the ammunition in the German regiment, wiping the unit out to a man. As I noted there, the circumstances of this strange event have all the hallmarks of a German secret weapons test of a decidedly *scalar* weapon, for needless to say, the "energy bubble" clearly has all the signatures of a scalar weapon.[57]

Such "bubbles" or glowing plasmas of ionized atmosphere are clear signatures of "scalar" weapons at low power usage, as Bearden clearly states:

> (There) is another incident of a gigantic test of a Soviet scalar EM howitzer deep within the Soviet Union.
>
> This is a CIA report, released under the Freedom of Information Act. One can be quite sure that the incident occurred as stated.
>
> The phenomenon was seen from two aircraft approaching Mehrabad Airport in Teheran, Iran on June 17, 1966 and reported by their pilots.
>
> On the far horizon deep within the Soviet Union, an intense spherical ball of light appeared, "sitting on the horizon" so to speak, the globe of light increased to enormous size, dimming as it did so, literally

---

[56] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*, p. 190.

[57] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 109-111. The reason that the test had to have been German and not Soviet is due to the fact that the regiment in question had prepared a secret ambush for a Soviet unit. Its location therefore was known only to the German High Command.

> filling an arc of the distant sky as it expanded. The sighting was shielded from most ground observers' view at the airport itself due to an intervening mountain range that masked most of the phenomenon from the ground.
>
> The silent, expanding globe was observed for four or five minutes before it faded away.
>
> Again, this is positive evidence of the testing of a giant scalar EM interferometer, in the "midcourse ABM globe" type of action.
>
> However, note the date – mid 1966! The Soviets have therefore been testing such scalar weapons of enormous size and power for at least two decades. This implies that development must have started at least a decade earlier, or in the mid '50s.[58]

By "'midcourse ABM globe type of action'" Bearden is referring to the ability of scalar weapons to create a highly charged "bubble" that would scramble or knock out the electronics of any vehicle or missile entering it. This alone would have made scalar weapons an invaluable prize to the Soviets – or anyone else for that matter – for it would render one's opponent's missiles and nuclear warheads so much dead and useless mass, and accordingly, give all that much more weight to one's own nuclear deterrent.

But this is only a circumstantial argument that the Nazis were after scalar weapons. To make such a case stronger, one would have to find evidence that Nazi scientists and their conceptions were the feedstock to this Soviet scalar weapons project. Bearden confirms the worst by offering the following information:

> One of my close colleagues has validated that the German radar team had some severe instrumental anomalies while still in Germany. We think this is what they were:
>
> **In WWII the Germans invented radar absorbing materials, to coat their submarine snorkels and prevent Allied antisubmarine warfare bombers from tracking the snorkels and destroying the subs. A wide variety of highly nonlinear, doped materials were investigated. In addition to single beam radar cross section, the Germans also examined the materials in multi-beam illumination circumstances.**
>
> **It appears that, in some multibeam experiments with some materials, conditions were just right so that the multi-illuminated absorbing material acted as a pumped phase conjugate mirror (PCM), and wave-to-wave interactions emerged. This meant that**

---

[58] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 266-267.

> **the absorber material PCM would suddenly gather up all the energy in the pumping beams, use one of the other beams as a signal input beam, wrecking the experiment and creating havoc in surrounding equipment.**
>
> When the German radar team went to Russia, their knowledge of these anomalies went with them. In the desperate Russian scientific climate to find *just such anomalies*, this startling and anomalous phenomenon would have been exhaustingly examined and studied, once the German radar engineers got to Russia to their new laboratories.
>
> In short, it appears that the Russians quickly came up with what today is called "nonlinear phase conjugate optics," but first in the radar band rather than optics. So before 1950, it appears that the Russians already had working phase conjugating pumped phase conjugate mirrors for the radar bands and in other bands.[59]

Now observe carefully the implications of Bearden's remarks.

First, the phenomenon of phase conjugate mirrors was a direct result of late war German radar experiments on highly non-linear radar absorbent materials (RAM) that they had invented during the war for their U-boats.[60] This is as much as admitting, in a round about fashion, that it was not the Soviets that came up with it, but the *Nazis*.

Secondly, it is to be noted that Bearden clearly implies that the Nazi radar team stumbled across the phenomenon accidentally. We shall offer evidence – when we turn to a consideration of the speculative physics of the Bell itself – that the Nazis were not blindly stumbling about in quest of a breakthrough, but rather, pursuing all available means to acquire scalar technology and weapons. Their discovery was therefore not accidental. They were *looking* for it.

Thirdly, if it *is* the case that the Nazi radar team's observed anomalies were merely the result of happenstance, then there is an implicit contradiction between Bearden's remarks here, and my earlier remarks implying that both the Soviets *and* the Nazis were surely aware of E.T. Whittaker's 1903 paper describing the decomposition of the scalar potential into two opposing longitudinal waves.

---

[59] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 68-69, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

[60] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 184-187.

In other words, if Bearden's case that the Soviets developed scalar weapons is based upon

(1) Strange installations or devices having no conventional explanation;
(2) Strange effects being observed that can only be signatures of a scalar physics and its associated technologies;
(3) The crucial role of wave-mixing on non-linear materials such as in the late war German radar experiments;
(4) The equally crucial role of rotating non-translational vorticular systems in scalar physics *theory*;
(5) A speculative reconstruction of the history of scalar physics based upon probable reconstructions of forgotten physics papers such a Whittaker's, surely known to the Nazis as well as the Soviets; and,
(6) Research and Review Institutions or "think tanks" in the Soviet Union scouring western physics journals for an area for breakthrough and weaponization into a post-nuclear super-weapon,

then by the same token, and as should be now equally apparent, all these things are equally true of the wartime situation of Nazi Germany, and clearly signatures of Kammler's special "think tank." But one must go further than this: *every observed effect of scalar devices finds an earlier echo in events during the Second World War, and the* ***only*** *known experiments that could be construed as having scalar characteristics were conducted by the Nazis.* In my opinion then, this means that the case for a Nazi origin of scalar weapons is much stronger than for a Soviet one.

So, might the Nazi radar team's experiments have been deliberately *looking* for such an effect? Might the radar team have been yet another component of the same project represented by the Bell? While there is no direct evidence, there are a number of factors that would seem to argue persuasively that this is indeed the case. To understand why, we need only look more closely at the Nazi radar absorbent material itself, and what the radar team was initially looking for, and the theory of radar that it implied the Germans were working with. As we shall see, it is a theory profoundly different from the standard theory of radar as a “bounce” of a signal from a reflecting target.

As was described in *Reich of the Black Sun*, some of this radar absorbent material consisted of rubber, into which small iron and zinc balls of specific diameter had been pressed during molding. These balls were resonant to certain *frequencies* known to be used by British and American radar. In the earliest materials, only certain frequencies would be “absorbed” by the material. The Germans knew that eventually the Allies would change their frequencies, and thus the material would be useless. Hence it became necessary that the newer radar absorbent material be absorbent to a wider band of frequencies, and hence the need to test several frequencies on this material. But now notice that the German team is *interfering several beams of different frequencies* on this material. This means, in short, that they have realized two things that are *not* part of the theory of radar in any standard text to this day: (1) that radar is not a “bounce” as much as the target itself is a *“secondary transmitter” resonant to certain frequencies*. The radar signal thus stimulates a current within the target via resonance, and this then is transmitted back to the radar antenna where the amplifier amplifies it; (2) by interfering several frequencies on the *same* target composed of radar absorbent material capable of absorbing different frequencies, they are trying to determine if nonetheless a secondary transmitter effect results, nullifying the material’s stealth properties. In short, this means that they were *expecting* some sort of “anomalous return” to their antennae. What exceeded their expectations, in other words, was not the *result*, but its *intensity*. This further implies that they might also have been aware of the role of longitudinal waves as a means to achieve the phenomenon.

To sum up, the nature of the experiment’s configuration suggests that the Nazis were well aware of “scalar physics” and its peculiar properties, for they clearly perceived radar as a “resonance-and-secondary-transmitter” effect, and not merely a “bounce.” In other words, even to have conceived of such an experiment, the Nazi radar research team had to have known that all material, including highly non-linear material, has a resonance. Thus no "stealth" material is really "stealthy" if one knows how to induce a *secondary transmitter effect* through resonance and interferometry. This is about as far from "public consumption physics" as one can get.

a. Back to "Freya" and "See-Elefant:" The German Over-The-Horizon Radars

The Germans were developing, very early on, a number of early, proto-typical over-the-horizon long range radars capable of guiding their intercontinental missiles to target. The following are diagrams of the *Freya* system from the German Museum in Munich:

Bordgerät Erstling
Abstand v. Leitebene
Lenkverfahren mit Freya-Erstling
Leitebene
Abb. 4
Empfangs-Antenne I
Sende-Antenne
Freya Sende- u. Empfangs-Anlage
Empfangs-Antenne II
30m
30m
B 39/45

Schematic of the Envisioned Use of Freya for Rocket Guidance

Freya Anlage
in Feuerstellung
① Freya-Sende-u.Empfangs-Anlage
② Stromversorgungswagen
③ Sende-Antenne II
④ Sende-u.Empfangs-Antenne
⑤ Sende-Antenne I

Artist's Conception of the Mobile Freya Unit Deployed

Note now that in the artist's conception of the radar unit, the central antenna, labeled number four in the drawing, is labeled a *Sende-u.Empfangs-Antenna*, a sending and receiving antenna, while two other *Sende* antennae are located to either side of this central antenna (the antenna on the left is obscured in the reproduction, being barley visible in the black smudge on the center of the picture). In other words, *Freya* had *three* sending antennae, one of which doubled as a receiving antenna. This system is somewhat obscured in the schematic of the drawing, which, if one studies it closely though, also indicates that the radar unit's two "side" antenna are sending pulses.

Why is this three-antenna sending system so important? And what does it have to do with scalar weapons? First, such plural sending antennae would have been necessary for a simple, prototypical *phased array* radar. If each antenna sends out a pulse *slightly out of phase* with the pulses from the other antenna, the result is that the signal of the whole apparatus can be caused to "bend" or "shape" itself in a certain way, and hence, one can bend the signal to look "over the horizon."

But as has been noted already by Col. Bearden, the *other* thing such radar sets can do is interfere electromagnetic waves on non-linear material, creating the longitudinal or scalar wave in the medium. Thus, such radar devices are potential proto-typical *scalar* weapons, as the following diagram of Bearden of a scalar device sending out two pulses, not only *out of phase* but indeed, *at different times and velocities*. The pulses only overtake each other *on the target, producing the longitudinal wave:*

T2
T1
T0
SLOW WAVE
ΔL1
FAST WAVE
ΔL2
T2
T1
ΔL3
T3
$\frac{\Delta L_3}{c} = \Delta T_3 \Rightarrow EM_3$
TESLA HOWITZER
(SCALAR INTERFEROMETER)

Bearden's Diagram of a Scalar Weapon Pulse

As any cursory examination of Bearden's diagram with the wartime German schematic of *Freya* will attest, there is little basic conceptual difference between the two types of operation.

While this is not to suggest that *Freya* was a scalar weapon, it is clear that such phased array radars constitute the first elements in such a system, *for by simple reconfiguration, one may advance from the idea of out-of-phase pulses to out-of-phase pulses fired at different times and arriving on target at the same time.* In other words, it is not the hardware that changes, it is the *template for action* that changes. It would have been a small step for the Germans to make the change, and, as has already been indicated, *this appears to be exactly what happened in their late-war radar experiments on radar absorbent material (RAM).*

But is there any other corroboration of the claims of this chapter?

b. An Odd Allied Intelligence Report Indicating the Nazi Operation of Scalar Weapons

The destruction of a German regiment on the Russian front in 1943 by what appears to be a scalar weapons test[61] remains speculative. But there is again another indicator from a declassified American intelligence document. The document was uncovered by German researcher Friedrich Georg:

> SECRET
>
> PW INTELLIGENCE BULLETIN no 2/32
>
> 13. Fantasia; German Secret Weapons
>
> Preamble. The following stories are from sources of doubtful reliability and may well be pure products of the imagination. However, in view of the striking similarity between them, they are printed for what they are worth.
>
> First Story
>
> Around 15 Sept 44, CP of 1127 Gren Regt 559 Inf Div was in REINANGE at GSGS 4416/U1/912797. It was a warm sunny day with a few scattered clouds and no wind. About 1600 PW[62] was standing near the church in REINANGE and observed a formation of Allied aircraft pass, flying from SW to NE, low enough to be recognized as four-motored planes. He counted up to 30 planes. They were flying in close formation.
>
> While PW watched them pass by, he saw what he believed to be a small fighter plane (grey color, no identification marks) climb and approach the Allied formation from an easterly direction. PW states that the “fighter plane” was flying at abnormally high speed at that it

---

[61] Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 116. Compare this document with the original Russian story of the German regiment in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 109-111.

[62] PW: the prisoner of war originating the story being recounted.

penetrated into the midst of the formation apparently without being fired at. *Suddenly there appeared, where the "fighter plane" had been before, a red ball of fire, somewhat larger than the plane itself. A split second later, the ball of fire turned into a rapidly expanding red circle (parallel to the ground). This circle was bluish-red at its edge, and as its diameter increased, the interior of the s\circle became an empty space. As the circle enveloped the planes, they just seemed to disappear. In a matter of seconds the entire formation of Allied planes had disappeared, and the sky was just as it had been before.*

PW discussed the incident with several others who witnessed it, including a Hptm[63] of 1559 Arty Regt.[64] This officer (who was subsequently killed) told him that the "fighter plane " in question was a wooden miniature plane with a speed of over 1000 km per hour and which was operated by remote control. The name of the plane is KOMET. The Hptm told him that he had lived near an airfield where such planes were tested and that he had recognized it at once.

(Source: Werner LUTMER, UFFZ. HQ 1127 Gren Regt)

HITLER's Plans. About 10 Oct 44, the CP of 1127 Gren Regt was visited by the 1st general staff officer (I-a7) of XIII SS Corps (an Oberstlt, name unknown). PW talked for about 10 to 15 minutes to this officer's driver, a Rottenfuehrer, who told him the following:

He, the Rottenfuehrer, had overheard a conversation between the general staff officer and HITLER and HIMMLER, who had nvisited the XIII SS Corps HQ a few days before. During the conversation he had overheard HITLER say that "the new secret weapon" would not be employed until a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea could be guaranteed. HIMMLER is supposed to have added that another prerequisite was a temperature of 10 degrees below 0.

(Source: ibid)[65]

---

[63] "Hptm," probably "Hauptman" or "captain," indicating that the PW in question was probably regular German Army.

[64] "Arty": artillery.

[65] George, *Star Wars,* p. 116, emphasis added.

SECRET

PW INTELLIGENCE BULLETIN No 2/32

13. Fantasia; German Secret Weapons

Preamble. The following stories are from sources of doubtful reliability and may well be pure products of the imagination. However, in view of the striking similarity between them, they are printed for what they are worth.

First Story

Around 15 Sept 44, CP of 1127 Gren Regt 559 Inf Div was in REINANGE at GSGS 4416/U1/912797. It was a warm, sunny day, with a few scattered clouds and no wind. At about 1600 PW was standing near the church in REINANGE and observed a formation of Allied aircraft pass, flying from SW to NE, low enough to be recognized as four-motored planes. He counted up to 30 planes. They were flying in close formation.

While PW watched them pass by, he saw what he believed to be a small fighter plane (grey color, no identification marks) climb and approach the Allied formation from an easterly direction. PW states that the "fighter plane" was flying at an abnormally high speed and that it penetrated into the midst of the formation apparently without being fired at. Suddenly there appeared, where the "fighter plane" had been before, a red ball of fire, somewhat larger than the plane itself. A split second later, the ball of fire turned into a rapidly expanding red circle (parallel to the ground). This circle was bluish-red at its edge, and as its diameter increased, the interior of the circle became an empty space. As the circle enveloped the planes, they seemed to just disappear. In a matter of seconds the entire formation of Allied planes had disappeared, and the sky was just as it had been before.

PW discussed the incident with several others who had witnessed it, including a Hptm of 1559 Arty Regt. This officer (who was subsequently killed) told him that the "fighter plane" in question was a wooden miniature plane with a speed of over 1000 km per hour and which was operated by remote control. The name of the plane is KOMET. The Hptm told him that he had lived near an airfield where such planes were tested and that he had recognized it at once.

(Source: Werner LUTHER, Uffz. HQ 1127 Gren Regt)

HITLER's Plans. About 10 Oct 44, the CP of 1127 Gren Regt was visited by the 1st general staff officer (I-a?) of XIII SS Corps (an Oberstlt, name unknown). PW talked for about 10 to 15 minutes to this officer's driver, a Rottenfuehrer, who told him the following:

He, the Rottenfuehrer, had overheard a conversation between the general staff officer and HITLER and HIMMLER, who had visited the XIII SS Corps HQ a few days before. During the conversation he had overheard HITLER say that "the new secret weapon" would not be employed until a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea could be guaranteed. HIMMLER is supposed to have added that anothe

The Allied Intelligence Report Indicating Possible German Use of Scalar Device

What is one to make of this remarkable document?

First, the attitude of the American preparing the report is clear: it is pure “fantasia,” purest fiction.

Secondly, if it is nothing but pure “fantasia,” then why keep it classified until April of 1998? Either it remained classified through simple bureaucratic inertia and the sheer mountain of material at the U.S. National Archives awaiting declassification review, or there was a *reason* to keep it declassified for so long. In my opinion, it is the latter, and that brings us to the third thing about this document.

Note that the final anecdote about Hitler and Himmler having an idle conversation about secret weapons and the need to ensure a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea occurs *at approximately the same time as the alleged Nazi a-bomb testing the Baltic, ca. 10-11 October 1944.* At that point, successful delivery of an a-bomb to any Allied strategic target could only have been accomplished by a Luftwaffe bomber, since the V-2 and V-1 would not have had the ability to lift such a heavy weapon, nor the range to deliver it to any worthwhile Allied target. Hence, the last anecdote makes sense.

But it is the *first* story that contains the reason for keeping this document under wraps for so long. Notably, two elements are not "pure fantasia," since the Messerschmitt 163 "Komet" was in fact a small rocket plane capable of great speeds. Moreover it had a distinctive shape that, once an individual had seen one, would have allowed it to be readily identified. So this element rings true.

The second element that is not "pure fantasia" is the "cloud" apparently fired by the "fighter plane" at the Allied formation. This has all the hallmarks of the "Kugelblitz" system first detailed by Renato Vesco, a gas that was used to ignite or neutralize Allied ignitions.

But here the connections to known German secret weapons projects end, for the "cloud" then behaves in a most *un*-gas-like manner. It neither explodes, nor do the Allied planes' ignitions explode or simply stop. There are no planes falling from the sky, no crashes on the ground, no debris, no nothing. However, the signatures of the "gas cloud" are remarkably similar to the glowing globes that apparently annihilated a German regiment on the Eastern Front in 1943, and remarkably similar as well to similar globes spotted by various pilots near the former Soviet Union and adduced by Bearden as demonstrations of scalar weapons systems by the Russians.[66] The report is clear: the Allied planes simply

---

[66] See my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 109-111. The appearance of such globes of light is one piece of evidence that Bearden often cites as a signature of scalar weapons in their various defensive modes of operation.

disappeared. So we have, from an unlikely source, yet another indicator that Nazi Germany most likely was developing scalar physics and scalar weapons as a component of its most sensitive and secret weapons projects.

4. Conclusions and A Post-War Scalar Postscript: the “Scalar Weapons” Nations and Germany

It is significant that Bearden initially maintained that in addition to the Soviet Union there were three other nations possessing scalar weapons. More recently, Bearden maintains that

> A friendly little foreign nation *does* have such weapons including (quantum potential) weapons that operate in multiply connected spacetime…. That little nation has been responsible for our continued survival and has continued to deter the planned KGB strategic energetics strikes upon the West. There are indications…that at least one – and possible two – other friendly Western nations also possesses such weapons.[67]

One can only surmise – though it is rather obvious – that the “friendly little nation” Bearden refers to is Israel.

The reason why it most likely is Israel requires some explanation. In my second book on the Great Pyramid Weapon Hypothesis, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, I argued that these three nations were most likely France, Japan, and the then West Germany.[68]

As argued there, West Germany would have pressing geopolitical and military reasons for developing such weapons, since it could never hope to offset the American and Russian – not to mention French and British - preponderance in nuclear and thermonuclear weapons, even if it chose to develop its own atomic and hydrogen bombs. Additionally, West Germany had outstanding treaty obligations against the development of atomic weapons.[69] Scalar weapons were not covered in these treaties, and thus afforded the fastest and cheapest method for Germany to acquire strategic weapons that would level the super-power dominated playing field. Their existence in the contemporary German arsenal would also explain two recent events: first, the recent decision of the German government to take all of its nuclear power plants out of commission, since the "left over plutonium" would no longer be needed for any bombs;[70] and secondly, the sudden "reunification" of the two Germanies after a series of devastating earthquakes hit the Soviet Union in 1989.[71] In other words, Germany may have sent the weakened Soviet Union a clear "scalar message" not to interfere in the reunification.[72]

---

[67] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 15-16

[68] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 99-104. Bearden makes the astonishing, and quite disturbing, assertion in *Fer De Lance* that the notorious Japanese yakuza – the Japanese “mafia” with its own neo-fascist and neo-imperialist ideology – has recently acquired scalar weapons. In effect, this means that *Japan* has, since the yakuza is intimately connected to the mainsprings of Japanese economic and governmental power.

But all these were merely circumstantial arguments and speculations. Is there any hard evidence to suggest that Germany actually is one of the early "scalar weapons" powers?

---

[69] In the previous book on Nazi Secret weapons, however, I mentioned that it is my strong belief, based on the evidence presented in Zdenek Cervenka's and Barbara Rogers' book *The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa,* documenting that it was in fact West Germany that was the technological source behind South Africa's and Israel's development of the atom bomb.

[70] Of course, this is *not* the official German government explanation for its decision. The official explanation is couched in the politically acceptable currency that the decision was taken for "environmental reasons." This is not to say that this was not a genuine factor in the German government's decision, but only to say that it was probably not the *ultimate* motivation.

[71] Earthquakes, it will be recalled, are a signature of the use of a scalar weapon in its lowest thresholds of destructive potential.

[72] That Germany seems the obvious choice only requires a moment's reflection. Other than Russia, one cannot honestly maintain that France or Great Britain would have been in a terrible hurry to see Germany reunified. Japan, China, and the U.S. would have been most likely indifferent to it. Israel would have been implacably hostile but probably ultimately acquiescent, and South Africa apathetic or perhaps mildly hostile. Only Brazil may have had some sympathy for the reunification, given its own reliance on German scientists in its own scalar program. But in the final analysis, if those unusually destructive earthquakes were induced, then the finger points to scalar weapons, and to Germany, as to no other.

Indeed there is, and it comes from Bearden himself. Very early on in his research, Bearden "upped" the number of nations possessing scalar weapons, or what he called "Triad" nations, from three to approximately ten nations:

> Some 10 nations, for example, now have scalar interferometry weapons, and even the Japanese Yakuza has them and also has their own facilities for producing them in Japan, including small portable units developed for use in assassination and terrorist type warfare within a targeted nation – the United States of America.[73]

For now the enormous implications of an independent criminal syndicate possessing such weapons must be put aside. We shall return to the subject when we consider the problem of independent Nazi survival and continued independence of their black projects.

For now, it is to be noted that the number of "scalar deterrent" nations has considerably expanded, and this in turn leads us to consider the South African, Israeli, and West German a-bomb program. Indeed, Bearden himself points the finger in this direction:

> According to (syndicated newspaper columnists Jack) Anderson and (Lee) Van Atta, a South African navy contingent was "in the area" (of the test) at the time of the 1979 Vela (satellite) detection, and Israel and South Africa were cooperating on an atomic bomb project as early as 1966. Apparently U.S. announcement of an impending South African atomic test in the Kalahari Desert in 1977 led to such outcry that the test was suspended. Anderson and Van Atta cite succeeding visits to South Africa by Israeli scientists, technicians, and defense officials. *However, since the actual Vela detections showed some deviations from what would be expected from nuclear tests, one can speculate that Anderson and Van Atta have presented evidence for the development of scalar electromagnetic weapons by two additional countries.*[74] One may further speculate that this could reveal what has been checking the Soviets from simply moving against the West with scalar electromagnetic weapons. [75]

---

[73] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* p. 35.

[74] Namely, Israel and South Africa.

[75] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 353-354, emphasis added.

While columnist Jack Anderson knew that there was a hidden "third partner" in the Israel-South Africa project, he was never able to pin down who it was with any certainty. But with the research of Zdenek Cervenka's and Barbara Rogers' book *The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa*, we now know that this hidden partner was West Germany.

Thus, if Bearden is correct, that the Vela satellite detected not an atomic explosion, but an explosion brought about as the result of a scalar weapons test, then the conclusion follows that Germany was, from that point on, a "scalar weapons power."

If this is the case, then one is confronted with a disturbing pattern, for it would appear that scalar weapons research was begun by Nazi Germany at some point prior to or during the World War, and *essentially continued* by the same personnel – in various countries and at their expense, including Germany itself – *after* the war. This in turn permits one to speculate that perhaps all these disparate "scalar weapons" projects and its "not for public dissemination" physics were coordinated from some hidden center.

In any case, we are now in a position to summarize why Bearden's historical reconstruction of the development of scalar weapons must be amended to show their origin, not in post-war Soviet programs, but in wartime Nazi Germany's secret weapons black projects.

(a) First, there are the references to Nazi Germany's interest in building a "cold bomb," and Hellmann's assertions that the Soviets were constructing a weapon to freeze portions of the ocean. Such "endothermic" weapons are clear signatures of a scalar weapon being used in its mode of *extracting* energy from a distant point.

(b) Secondly, there is the report of the annihilation of a German regiment by an "energy bubble" on the Eastern Front during World War Two. As was indicated, this too is the signature of a scalar weapon in yet a different mode of deployment.

(c) Thirdly, there is the peculiar nature of the late war German experiments in multi-wave interference of radar waves on non-linear material, an experiment that strongly indicates that they have understood the significance of resonance effects on non-linear material for scalar physics.

(d) Fourthly, there is the presence of one of the chief scientists involved in these radar and scalar weapons projects, Dr. Hellmann, both in the German, Soviet, and subsequent Brazilian programs.

Taken together these things outline a strong circumstantial case that Nazi Germany was the true origin of scalar weapons, and that during the war the Germans were indeed “working in areas of physics that were monstrous on a daily basis,” pursuing the ultimate planet busting doomsday weapon. And significantly, it appears that West Germany, at least, vigorously pursued such weapons after the war.[76]

---

[76] This permits another speculative reconstruction of history. It is known that Chancellor Adenauer agreed to re-arm West Germany and undertook by treaty with the United States, France, and Great Britain, not to build atomic, biological, or chemical weapons on German soil as a condition of re-armament. What is *little* known, of course, is that Adenauer made it very clear to the other Western Allies that Germany, as a sovereign nation, would not hesitate to develop such weapons if the international situation required it. Might the motivations for Adenauer’s acquiescence, then, have been that the West German government already knew of the possibility of weapons far more destructive and far *cheaper* than atomic and thermonuclear weapons? Clearly it did, for it strains credibility to think that with so many former Nazis in his government, not to mention General Reinhard Gehlen’s extensive left-over-from-the war spy network, that they were totally oblivious to the possibilities, nor oblivious to the accomplishments of SS General Kammler’s black projects “think tank.”

It likewise strains credibility that any self-respecting German government would rely on the good graces of Britain, France, or the United States to ensure its security. As Cervenka’s and Rogers’ book on the West German bomb makes abundantly clear, the West German government very early on undertook the quiet and very secret development of its own independent nuclear deterrent under the very nose of the NATO Alliance while at the same time presenting a posture of perfectly correct “nuclear weapons abjuration” and, when the German media came too close to these projects, outright denials in the teeth of clear evidence to the contrary. Similarly, the Schmidt government heavily financed the private German firm OTRAG’s “corporate Area 51” preserve in Zaire to the tune of several millions of Deutschmarks (q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 268-269). The purpose of this preserve? What has been admitted is that it was to research biological weapons and cruise missiles. One can only assume that this is the tip of the iceberg.

This is a strong though still circumstantial case. Is there any other indicator that "scalar physics" was the destructive beast hidden deep within the belly of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's black projects empire? Indeed there is.

The Bell itself.

So, in the end, Bearden may be right that the Vela satellites detected not an atom bomb test, but a scalar weapons test. He merely missed the ultimate political significance of the test, namely, that behind Israel and South Africa, there was a much more powerful hidden player: Germany.

6.

“For Whom the Bell Tolls”: Scalar Physics, Zero Point Energy, and the Vorticular Aether: A Speculative Reconstruction of the Physics of the Bell

“The mythology and true history of beamray technology properly begins with the Egyptians, whose awareness of vitalistic solar energies prompted a pagan devotion to “Ra” the sun-god.”
Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*[1]

A. US Declassified Patents from the Cold War and SDI

In an obscure but nonetheless remarkable book, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* science and patent researcher Gerry Vassilatos outlines an incredible array of exotic weaponry that exists in recently declassified United States patents. Vassilatos’ own introduction to this highly technical material is itself worth the price of the book, for in it, he details a number of little known advances in experimental physics well worth study, and moreover, that bear directly on some aspects of the Bell and its operation.

Obviously, the subject of Vassilatos’ investigation is the field of SDI, President Ronald Reagan’s well-known Strategic Defense Initiative,[2] and more particularly, the exotic directed energy weapons that were envisioned as being capable not only of defensive action against enemy ICBMs, but ultimately, of *replacing* them as the new generation of post-thermonuclear strategic offensive weapons.

---

[1] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI: Companion Study Guide for “Secrets of Cold War Technology”* (Bayside, California: Borderland Sciences, 1997), Section 1.1. (The Introduction to Vassilatos’ extremely valuable compendium of declassified Cold War SDI patents contains no pagination. Accordingly, citations will be made to the section headings from which quotations or references are taken.)

[2] As we shall see later, some MAJIC 12 documents indicate that the original meaning of the acronym was the “*Space* Defense Initiative.”

Work had already begun during World War Two on the use of X-rays and gamma rays in "burst" devices that would fire a sudden extreme pulse of the deadly high frequency radiation at a target. But in the aftermath of the war and the advent of the nuclear age, particularly after the Soviet Union acquiring its own atomic and hydrogen bombs, the need for some sort of defense against them became immediately felt.

One of the first efforts to improve on the "burst" devices came in 1957, with a patent from the German Siemens firm – US Patent Number 2,904, 692, by inventor Wilhelm Gscheidlen – for the collimation of gamma rays by means of a series of metal baffles with pin-hole sized holes, arranged sequentially, to achieve a lensing effect that would concentrate high frequency gamma photons into a beam, using a cobalt 60 source.[3]

But as Vassilatos notes, "such systems lost much of their initial energy before passing through the multiple baffles of the collimator itself. Ultimately, these pinhole camera systems failed from inherent problems of fundamental incoherence from the source itself, an intriguing engineering problem requiring the discovery of new phenomena for its solution."[4] That is, the sources of gamma rays in these systems was rather like a light bulb, emitting gamma rays of various frequencies. No matter how efficient the collimator baffle system, the beam would still spread out – like a "gamma ray flashlight" beam – and thereby lose much of its energy. The goal was for gamma ray *coherence*, a gamma ray *laser* whose awesome power can only be appreciated by comparison to ordinary optical lasers, which can cut through steel with ordinary light.

The next step was taken in the early 1960s, with so-called Clear Atomic Light" systems, which relied on a system of underground tunnels and a reflecting mirror able to direct the light generated from a nuclear explosion to the surface through a tunnel in a concentrated beam. Such systems, in other words, took the radiation from a nuclear explosion and *directed it in a beam.* Needless to say, using the weapon also destroyed it, since they could never be more than one shot affairs. Nevertheless,

---

[3] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* section 2.5.

[4] Ibid.

> Before the development of far better and more pernicious radiation weapons, this CAL (Clear Atomic Light) beam weapon had no equal. Its declassification in 1973 occurs some 15 years after its testing in coincidence with Project Plowshare, a "peacetime" use of nuclear weaponry. These experimental weapons were part of PROJECT DEFENDER, the original Star Wars Defense Initiative of President Eisenhower. This Project investigated the use of directed hot nuclear plasmas (PROJECT CASABA), high energy particles (PROJECT HOWITZER), and primary experimentation with X and Gamma Ray LASERS.[5]

These CAL or Clear Atomic Light systems quickly moved out of their underground tunnels and bunkers and became more portable, and potentially space-based, weapons platforms.

The well-publicized X-ray laser systems of the early 1980's were based on these early CAL systems, the small nuclear device being housed in a hemispherical or "tanklike" structure surrounded with rods of radioactive material. When the device is detonated, the rods become transmitters of deadly cohered, or lasing, x-rays, incinerating anything in their path almost instantly. Given that a beam of enormous diameter can be constructed with such a device, "one is able to produce" a high frequency, high power x-ray laser beam "for the specific purpose of destroying missiles or cities alike. The length of the rods employed determines the amplification factor."[6] These weapons would have the additional advantage over more indiscriminate hydrogen bombs in that they would leave no residual radioactive fallout in their targets.[7]

Thus, the engineers and scientists in America's black projects were confronted with two unpleasant facts. On the one hand, the older "electrical burst" method of generating such intense beams – the method pursued during the World War, while providing intense rays, also required the construction of enormous installations to generate the rays, thus rendering them impractical as weapons. On the other hand, x-ray lasers were deadly, of sufficient power to be used in an offensive strategic mode, and were far more efficient than the indiscriminate atomic or hydrogen bomb. *But* they could only be used once, since firing the weapon also destroyed it.

---

[5] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, section 2.5.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid.

Yet another problem attended the pursuit of X-ray and gamma ray lasers (gamma ray lasers are often called GRASERS). Since these high frequency radiations (gamma rays are much higher frequency than x-rays and hence pack even more of a punch) were able to permeate almost all forms of matter, creating an optical cavity to achieve coherence (the action that makes an ordinary laser beam) for these frequencies was difficult. Ordinary mirrors and lenses did not effect x-rays or gamma rays.

The quest, in other words, had turned to *reusable* and "portable" x-ray and gamma ray lasers, for obvious reasons: "Becoming operative at the flick of a switch, these weapons represent potentially more of a threat than a single strike nuclear warhead. Any single electronuclear weapon can be fired repeatedly, the equivalent radiant firepower of several warheads."[8]

One method was quickly found, employing the *plasmas* created by sudden vaporization of heavy metals with ordinary optical laser light. Once having created a plasma of such material, this in turn was then pulsed with lasers to create an amplification and cascade effect that resulted in X-rays and gamma rays approaching *coherent*, or lased, nature.[9] "These 'Z-Pinch' plasma devices fire beams easily capable of melting clean holes directly through thick walls of metal and stone."[10]

1. Enter the Mossbauer Effect

It is in the search for reusable X-ray and gamma ray lasers that one encounters a physical effect that might bear directly on the physical and theoretical thinking behind the Bell. The effect is known as the Mossbauer effect, and it concerns the relationship of acoustic and inertial stress and the effects of these on the gamma lasing activity of radioactive materials. It is best to cite Vassilatos extensively:

---

[8] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* sections 2.6 and 2.7.

[9] Ibid., sections 2.6 and 2.7.

[10] Ibid., section 2.7.

While yet a graduate student, Dr. Rudolf Mossbauer (1959) discovered that specific radioactive elements could be stimulated into gamma ray resonance. Mossbauer directed an external supply of monochromatic gamma rays into various radioactive isotopes, finding that they produced identical monochromatic outputs. This gamma resonant effect taught that certain radioactive isotopes could be stimulated to release more gamma rays than the amount delivered to them. Mossbauer found that he could stimulate his isotopes into a supersaturated state by continually supplying them with the requisite quanta. Brought to a state of supersaturation, Mossbauer observed the sudden release of gamma ray bursts several orders in magnitude greater than the input. Furthermore, when properly directed, the gamma burst came as a single coherent emission. Mossbauer had found the means for creating a true gamma ray LASER.

After Rudolf Mossbauer discovered the primary aspects of his strange effect, others began discovering its ancillary phenomena…..Some experimenters disovered that the mere proximity of gamma absorbent matter near a gamma isotope source effectively modified the source, an anomaly. The coherent gamma emissions of Mossbauer resonant stimulations were strangely linked to their absorbers, a relationship modified by motion alone.

Special radioisotopes were rotated on special high speed rotors, demonstrating a phase modulation effect… Slotted shields were made to rotate at high speed between isotope sources and absorbers, adding evidence that phase shifts were indeed occurring…. These findings strongly suggested the possibility of directly modulating Gamma Ray streams by movement alone…. (the) mere application of stress on the isotope samples was found to produce successions of powerful gamma ray bursts. Here was an unexpected “piezonuclear” corollary to the Mossbauer Effect. Isotope samples were applied to loudspeaker cones, and physically vibrated in the presence of absorbent materials….Indeed, certain experimenters discovered a strange effect of vibration upon the isotopes themselves. With applications of increasingly high pitch, the loudspeaker-fixed isotopes produced continual bursts of coherent gamma ray energy. Here was evidence that the mere compression of specific isotopic material could produce an intense gamma supersaturation. What had been observed constituted an avalanche process, one capable of organizing coherent gamma emissions.

The application of audio signals (400 cps) caused remarkably intense gamma emission in these isotopes. It was soon found that ultrasonic vibrations produced staggering gamma emissions….A growing wave of gamma photons is thus both stimulated and driven along by compressional waves alone….

> Researchers who studied the compression phenomenon may not have been prepared for the resultant gamma yield when shock impact was applied to the isotopes. Huge coherent gamma ray bursts were produced throughout the small isotope core, a radiance which may have produced the first uncontrolled gamma ray "event": an explosion of pure and penetrating gamma superradiance. The development of gamma burst "explosives" has well remained completely shrouded in secrecy.[11]

What emerges from the Mossbauer Effect is that abrupt shock – acoustic or otherwise – of certain radioactive isotopes or compounds can cause the emission of radiation to *cohere*, like a laser beam, giving off deadly effects. One can imagine then, in reference to the Bell, that if such radioactive material was spin polarized, and *then* repeatedly pulsed, what sort of deadly effect would result. One might obtain a kind of "*super* GRASER."

In any case, Mossbauer's Effect had enormous implications for the development of strategic offensive directed energy weapons, for the effect made reusable gamma ray lasers a possibility. But there were still obstacles to be overcome, and the one who did it was Josef Eerkens.

> Eerkens (1962) discovered that the application of strong axial magnetic fields to rodshaped samples (of specific Lanthanides) could produce a more highly coherent organization of gamma ray emissions. A "superradiant" beam was found to emerge from both ends of such rods. The discovery that gamma ray emissions could be cohered in preferred directions was yet superseded by methods which actually effected the direction of gamma bursts through a single rod end. Eerkens found it possible to cause the coherent gamma burst to emerge from a designated rod end, by pulsing the rod with gigacycle ultrasound. Producing traveling compression waves in the isotope rod, it was found possible to actually direct the mounting gamma cascade from end to end. The powerful coherent gamma blast was thus capable of being directed, a previously unheard potential.
>
> In the Eerkens design we see a true Gamma Ray LASER, or GRASER... Eerkens founds that the same radioactive materials could be forced to discharge their radioactivity in sudden voluminous bursts when properly stimulated. This latter effect violated the concept that radioactive half-life is an immutable constant, for it was found possible

---

[11] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, section 3.6

> to control the decay rate by a special “enhancement process” involving acoustic energy….(The) frequencies necessary for the control of radioactivity is given as lying between 1 and 10,000 Gigacycles.[12]

That is, *acoustically modifying and pulsing the environment* was the method to stimulate gamma photon cascade and lasing action. In other words, radioactivity is a *reaction of an element to its environment.* Moreover, the fact that this was achieved acoustically suggests that the effect is a *scalar* one, since acoustic waves are the 3-space analogue of longitudinal waves in the medium.

B. Plasmas, Rotation, Pulses, and Zero Point Energy

1. Plasmas and Transmutation

There are further connections between the Bell and the strange world of alternative and suppressed physics, this time to one of the most famous names in “alternative and suppressed” physics next to Nikola Tesla: T. Henry Moray. Moray, as many know, perfected a device that seemed to draw energy from the active medium. Indeed, Moray spoke often and even wrote a book about the “limitless sea of energy” in which we move. And like Tesla, Moray designed his own devices, machines, and most importantly for our purposes, plasma tubes.

> The later years of Moray’s research were dedicated to investigating a peculiar anomaly that occurred on the electrodes within his plasma tubes: Some of the electrode metal would transmute to another element. It exhibited a nuclear reaction as if the nucleus absorbed a proton or emitted a beta particle. Because Moray was secretive about this research, little is known. A clue might appear in Moray’s patent; there is one paragraph describing how to make a particular lead sulfide mixture to be used as electrode material. Did Moray discover how to transmute lead into gold? The anomaly regarding transmutation of elements is hard to believe, except that it has been observed over the

---

[12] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* section 3.7

> last decade in the cathodes from cold fusion experiments, and these experiments are quite repeatable today.[13]

Note here the appearance of nuclear transmutation – via some unknown mechanism – in the context of *plasmas*, yet another link to Gerlach and the Bell.

But there is yet more. Engineer Ken Shoulders made a significant discovery. Shoulders figured out a way to launch a kind of "coherent plasma" that is simply a "cluster of charges predominantly of one polarity,"[14] that is, Shoulders came upon the same principle of *spin coherence*, as exhibited in the Bell, since charge is a phenomenon of *spin*, of *vortices.* When such a "cohered plasma" strikes an aluminum plate, scanning by electron microscope reveals that the tiny crater made in the metal by the plasma impact results in "transmuted isotopes" that are "unusual and rarely found in nature."[15] Moreover, one may easily see that such processes might be identified – somewhat loosely to be sure – as "photochemical," confirming the possibility that similar processes or phenomena were discovered by the Germans during the war, and giving rise to the baffling "photochemical" statements of isotope enrichment in the Farm Hall Transcripts. Moreover, the Farm Hall Transcripts made it clear – in Wirtz's statement that was quickly hushed up by the other scientists – that the process involved "bombardment by a particular wavelength." *If* the Bell was in part being used to research isotope enrichment or element transmutation, then its *rotating* operation clearly implies that one aspect of its conceptualization was precisely resonance, or frequency. Since Gerlach was interested in the subject of transmutation, one may safely assume that the Bell was more than an advanced project in field propulsion. It was also an advanced project in the examination of the basic structure of matter and how to transform it. It was thus a project designed to explore the potentialities of a unified physics. The question remains: what was the basis of that unification?

---

[13] Moray B. King, *The Energy machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), p. 27.

[14] Ibid., p. 37.

[15] Ibid.

The *uniqueness* of the Bell is again manifest, even when compared to these contemporary examples, for the Bell, while clearly involving a plasma, and while clearly involving *charge coherence or polarization*, as in Shoulder's work, involves clearly one other aspect: *counter-rotation, and with that, frequency, and the zeroing of electromagnetic vectors to create a scalar potential.*

2. Four Mysteries and Ion Oscillation

According to physicist and engineer Moray B. King, T. Henry Moray himself understood that there were four big mysteries associated with his machine:

> 1) What is the energy source driving the device? 2) How can thin wires conduct "cold currents" that penetrate glass? 3) How can a device pick up normal street conversations from miles away? 4) How can element transmutation occur at low energies? All of these anomalies seem to center around surging or oscillating ions in plasma, a theme that Moray emphasized throughout his book.[16]

In other words, Henry Moray understood that the four anomalies were connected to "oscillating plasma," that is, to *regularly pulsed* plasma. But there are yet more possible conceptual foundations to the Bell.

3. Paul Brown's Glow Plasma Oscillator

While reading Moray King's *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray,* I came upon this picture of Dr. Paul Brown's "nuclear battery" and was quite stunned at the strong conceptual – and actual physical – resemblance between it and the Bell.

---

[16] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics,* p. 33.

Glow Plasma Oscillator

The nuclear battery
Capacitor in lid
Inner Transformer Coils to take power to outside
Central Coil with Radioactive
Outer Coils
Casing

Paul Brown, U.S. Patent 4,835,433 (1989)

Note the principle of interior and exterior *coils*, with the central coil, as in the Bell, being stimulated by a radioactive material. The coils also imply that rotation was involved in Brown's thinking from the outset.

Moray King notes that

> General Electric, in their due diligence for partnership to manufacture the battery, sent their nuclear physicist to investigate it. Paul Brown said the physicist lost sleep for a week because he could not explain the excessive energy. It was after this investigation that the suppression problems really began for Paul Brown, for it appears he successfully created *self-running, zero-point energy device.*[17]

If this can be said for Brown's device, it is a small step to state the same of the Bell itself, since it operated on principles that, while certainly not identical, were similar.

---

[17] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics*, pp. 64-65.

4. Non-Equilibrium Thermodynamics and Self-Organization

In my books on the Weapon Hypothesis as an explanation of the machine-like properties of the Great Pyramid,[18] I touched upon an aspect of the emerging new physics called “non-equilibrium thermodynamics.” The physics emerged from the pioneering work of Ilya Prigogine, who noticed the tendency of systems, driven into extreme states of non-equilibrium, to self-organize. Three requirements had to be present for any system to self-organize:

> 1) It must be *nonlinear,*
> 2) far from equilibrium, and
> 3) have an energy flux passing through it.
> *The theoretical models describing the zero-point energy fulfill these requirements.* Merging the theories of the zero-point energy with the theories of system self-organization open the scientific possibility of activating a coherent ZPE interaction, which could become a basis for new technology.[19]

As King observes, these requirements “point the way for inventing a system that could tap the zero-point energy:”

> 1) Work with a highly nonlinear system like a plasma,
> 2) drive it far from equilibrium *by an abrupt discharge,* and
> 3) work with the appropriate elementary particles which *maximize their influence when interacting with the zero-point energy*.[20]

Note what is involved here: plasmas which are driven to a far-from-equilibrium state by an abrupt discharge or *pulse,* and *particles*, which, on the view of Wheeler and others – as will be seen below – are but *vorticular structures* in the aether. Two of the elements of the Bell are involved in this – plasmas and rotation – and, if one recalls the “beehive-like” buzzing sound associated with the Bell, a sound characteristic of the rapid opening and closing of high voltage DC switches characteristic of Tesla’s experiments, one may safely conjecture that a third element may have been involved as well, an element that Witkowski, as has been seen, discounts: *abrupt and rapidly repeated high voltage DC pulsing.* If this additional element was involved in the Bell – which in my opinion is likely – then this would mean that it was not only a sophisticated "plasma trap" but something more: it was a zero-point energy device involving the use of *two* different types of electrical potential, continuous (AC) and discontinuous (DC).[21] As King observes, any "abrupt motion of matter is a vacuum energy activator,"[22] since, in effect, one is pulsing a vortex in that vacuum.

---

[18] See my *The Giza Death Star, The Giza Death Star Deployed, The Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

[19] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics*, p. 89, emphasis added.

[20] Ibid., p. 91, emphasis added.

5. Oscillation of Plasma and ZPE Coherence

Thus one arrives at one possible reason behind the Bell itself:

> If the abrupt motion of a single nucleus can activate the vacuum energy, what if we move a large number together? This is exactly what happens during ion-acoustic resonance of plasma.[23]

That is to say, if the Germans had managed to discover the low-energy transmutation phenomenon – and the Farm Hall Transcripts suggest that they did – and if they coupled this idea to spin-cohered or charge-polarized plasma, as the research of Gerlach would consistently suggest, then it is a very short step to the idea that the way to maximize the phenomenon would be via a large aggregate of matter – in a plasma – and to *further stimulate that activity through pulsing of a radioactive substance, as the previous accounts of the Mossbauer effect demonstrate.*

All these factors suggest that the Germans were experimenting with the very structure and fabric of matter, energy, gravity and space-time with the Bell, and for various purposes: propulsion, weaponry, and so on.

---

[21] This would seem to corroborate the assertions of William Lyne in his *Occult Ether Physics.*

[22] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics,* p. 99. See also p. 103.

[23] Ibid., p. 107.

6. Gray’s Scalar Compression Tube

Yet another device examined in King’s book that bears strong conceptual parallels with the Bell is E. V. Gray’s “Scalar Compression Tube.”

Scalar Compression Tube
3
3
30
56
32
34a
34b
12
50
54
4
4
54
60

E.V. Gray, U.S. Patent 4,661,747 (1987)
U.S. Patent 4,595,975 (1986)

The conceptual resemblance to the Bell may be gleaned from a comparison of King’s comments with the diagram above:

> In 1986 (and again in 1987) Gray patented a circuit and a tube. The tube is the critical element and it exhibits characteristics similar to hollow cathode switches and the tubes of Correa and Moray. The thin anode, down the central axis of the tube, contains a spark gap. The anode is surrounded by a cylindrical, double grid cathode with the two grids electrically shorted together. The double grid behaves like a hollow cathode and contains glow plasma. This is the key component….The cold current pulses originate from the glow plasma within this cathode.[24]

The principle of Gray’s “Scalar Compression Tube” then becomes evident in the following diagram:

---

[24] King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics,* pp. 134-135.

Symmetric Implosion Discharge
Spark Gap
Glow Plasma Shell
Anode

King states that the surrounding cylindrical double cathode grid

> Supports a radial, inward ion surge. This could manifest a "scalar compression" pulse where a positive polarization wave is symmetrically directed inwardly to surround the anode. The phrase "scalar" means scalar potential, which results when opposite electric field vectors cancel. Because of symmetry, the radial electric field vectors from the ions are in perfect opposition, which creates a spiking, scalar potential transient when they surge inwardly.

The similarities to Witkowski's own reconstruction of the Bell's operating principles is quite obvious, as is the conceptual similarity to Witkowski's own drawing of the Bell, which has a small lead or cable coming from the top of the device, as if it were a very large version of Gray's tube.

7. Counter-Rotating Electromagnetic Fields, ZPE Coherence, and Kontrabary

The physicist Wheeler thought that fluctuations in the zero point energy – or if one prefers the terminology, "oscillations in the aether" – was the "foundation for all matter and energy in our universe."[25] When this "fluctuation in the aether" is *spin cohered* –

---

[25] Ibid, p. 81.

that is, when a "vortex in the nothingness appears" – then it is detected in normal space as an elementary particle.[26]

In this respect, King offers his own summary on the engineering principles involved not only in cohering the Zero Point Energy, but also in the crucial key area of stimulating a glow plasma, the necessary "ingredient" in the alchemy of aether physics:

> (a) Abrupt motion of glow plasma nuclei is needed; this glow plasma needs to be in the maximum possible state of charge polarization (spin coherence);
> (b) The glow plasma needs to be appropriately *shaped* and *symmetrically compressed*;
> (c) The glow plasma should be caught between *bucking electromagnetic fields*, that is to say, vector-zeroed fields; this is best accomplished by,
> (d) *Counter-rotation* and "*vortical forms.*"[27]

Of these elements, three in particular are crucial to the stimulation of the glow plasma. First there is the abrupt electrical pulse (which one must assume is *rapidly repeated, if the plasma is to be maintained in the necessary state*; hence, one has another explanation of the "beehive" buzzing sound Witkowski reports was associated with the Bell, since the sound is typical of rapidly opening and closing DC switches). The second crucial element is the "bucking electromagnetic fields", and the third is the counter-rotating electromagnetic fields, achieving symmetric compression through rotation.[28]

If one considers this list very carefully, it will be readily apparent that the Bell's design and operation, as described by Witkowski, contains all of these elements *except* that of abrupt and repeated pulsing. Even on Witkowski's description and speculative reconstruction of its operation and design parameters, one is in the presence of *an intentionally designed quantum coherence device.* If one adds in my own speculation of abrupt and repeated shocks to the vortices – delivered by rapid and repeated DC pulses[29] - then the picture of the device and its operation is very nearly complete.

---

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., p. 154.

[28] Ibid.

C. The Vorticular Mechanics of the Aether: The Theories of O.C. Hilgenberg and Carl F. Krafft

There are three laws of any adequate theory of the mechanics of the aether, or of any genuine "hyper-dimensional" physics based upon it. These are:

1. Rotation;
2. Rotation; and,
3. Rotation.

Perhaps this humorous point is overstated, but nonetheless, if there is any single concept that has run as a consistent theme in the previous chapters, from Witkowski's reconstruction of the Bell in chapter four, to Bearden's weaponized scalar physics and our simple schematic explanation of the non-translational, internal stresses of "scalars" versus "vectors" in chapter five, it is *rotation*, or, if one prefer the more accurate term: *vortex* mechanics.

But is there any corroboration of any German wartime *focus* on such a physics, beyond the work and interests of the great Gerlach himself?

There is indeed, and, as we shall see, this vortex model of nuclear physics is a *fully developed theory*, though not, certainly, the mainstream theory. And not surprisingly, the Germans are in the thick and center of it. Two scientists – names carefully expunged from physics textbooks along with that of Nikola Tesla – in particular are involved: O.C. Hilgenberg, and Carl Friedrich (or Frederick) Krafft.

The theory may be called "the vortex aether theory".

In essence, a full theory of a vorticular aether was worked out by Dr. Hilgenberg before the war, complete with alternative explanations of phenomena often adduced as support for relativity. Hilgenberg worked these ideas out in a series of booklets published in Berlin: *Über Strömungsversuche mit Senken und Quellen, die das Wesen der Schwerkraft grundlegend erklären*(1939, “Essay Concerning Flux with Sinks and Sources, clarifying the fundamental substance of the Force of Gravity”), *Über Gravitation, Tromben, und Wellen in bewegten Medien*(1931, “Concerning Gravity, Pulses, and Waves in Moving Media”), *Über den Magnus-Effekt und seine Umkehrung*(1933, “Concerning the Magnus Effect and its Reversal”). These were followed by a thorough exposition of the vortex aether model of atomic structure in an important post-war booklet called *Quantenzahlen, Wirbelring-Atommodelle und Helium-Sechserring-Aufbauprinzip des Periodensystems der chemischen Elemente* (1959, “A Quantum Number Vortex Atom Model and Helium-Hexagonal Construction Principle of the Periodic System of the Chemical Elements”).[30]

---

[29] And these in turn may have been calculated to be in resonance to the ion acoustic resonance of the mysterious "Xerum 525".

Here we shall rely principally on the less technical presentation of Krafft, since in his book *Ether and Matter* Hilgenberg’s ideas are presented in their main substance.[31]

Included in the vortex theory are some criticisms of relativity theory, as one might expect of a theory under development prior to and during the Nazi period. Like others, Krafft criticizes the dogmatic mathematical formalism of relativity by pointing out its tautological nature:

> Regardless of whether the velocity of light is actually constant, it is rendered constant in the Einsteinian equations by the use of variable units of measurement. It is therefore not surprising that the equations of special relativity have met all the so-called “experimental tests”, because they are in substance nothing more than mathematical trueisms, and any violation of a mathematical trueism is unthinkable.[32]

---

[30] In *Reich of the Black Sun* I originally reported the date of this last book as being 1939. However, after much searching to obtain copies of Dr. Hilgenberg’s papers I finally managed to obtain a copy of this work, which is dated 1959. Close comparison of this work with Krafft’s books, however, demonstrates that the vortex model was fully developed during the war, up to and including its modeling of quantum mechanics and atomic structure.

[31] Carl Frederick Krafft, *Ether and Matter*(Richmond, Virginia: The Dietz Printing Company, 1945), p. 26.

[32] Ibid., p. 8.

German physicist Hermann Fricke was even more unsparing of relativity's mathematical formalism and the new dogmas it imposed on physics:

> Instead of the ether we now have formulas and equations according to which some stars are millions of times more dense and others millions of times less dense than the sun, although composed of the same chemical elements. We are now supposed to be able to ascertain (via mathematics) the diameter of the entire world, and also the number of protons and electrons in it. And finally we are supposed to be able to calculate the exact time when the world (including space and time themselves) began with the explosion of a *point.* As to all this, the 20th century physicist may harangue as much as he pleases. All of this is accepted as well-nigh certain. It is only the mechanics of the ether and the vortex atom theory which he may not write about or take up for serious study – *that* is anathema.[33]

But perhaps the dogmatism came from the fact that, "as O.C. Hilgenberg explained in detail in his recently published booklets," the oft-touted "proofs of relativity" – Doppler Red Shift, the progression of Mercury's perihelion, and, of course, the failure of the Michelson-Morley experiment to detect the aether wind – "can be accounted for under the hydro-mechanical ether theory as well as, and even better than under Einsteinian relativity."[34]

Pause and consider what this means. At least one scientist in Germany, Hilgenberg – and there were in fact many others – evolved a theory, based on a vortex model of the aether, that was not only a comprehensive explanation of gravity, that not only gave satisfactory explanations of "relativistic phenomena," but, as we shall see, gave satisfactory accounts of atomic structure as well, and in some cases did so more satisfactorily than the "nuclear" theory. This, basically, was the theoretical milieu in which physicists in Nazi Germany worked, a peculiar blend of the avante garde notions of quantum mechanics and vortices, with the older idea of an underlying substrate common to mind, energy, and matter: the aether.[35]

---

[33] Karl Frederick Kraft, *Ether and Matter,* p. 6, citing an unpublished manuscript by Hermann Fricke.

[34] Ibid., pp. 8-9.

As Krafft points out, one of Hilgenberg's trenchant criticisms was of relativistic interpretations of the Red Shift effect. Positing an aether, Hilgenberg stated a law, in 1931, in opposition to Einstein's emerging "expanding universe" theories that were beginning to emerge,[36] which Krafft summarizes as follows:

> The following is therefore universally true for all media: Whenever a train of waves traverses a medium that has currents flowing across it, an observer who is at rest relative to the source of radiation will observe a diminution of frequency, and a simultaneous refraction of the ray in a direction opposite to the direction of the current it traverses.[37]

The assumption of a vorticular structure in the aether as constituting the basis of observable particles and energy also bridges conveniently to the idea of a flux in the vacuum, or zero point energy, for "if the elementary or subatomic particles are vortices in the ether, then it would be reasonable to assume that such vortices keep the ether in a turbulent and streaming condition."[38]

As Krafft points out, the vortex model also has another powerful explanatory function in accounting for the persistence of the individuality of any given particle.

> The most outstanding characteristic of all elementary particles of matter is their *localized persistence of individuality,* and it is inconceivable how this can be explained on any other basis than vortex motion, wave motion, or motion into or out of a center functioning as a sink or source.
>
> If the ether is incompressible, then it can have only two forms of motion which are dynamically self-sustaining, namely vortex motion and wave motion. The stability of these two forms of motion is not due

---

[35] It should be obvious that by positing a *vorticular structure* of the aether underlying matter and energy, these scientists were very far removed from the classic nineteenth century concept of a static, inert, incompressible aether that inspired the Michelson-Morley experiment.

[36] Krafft, *Ether and Matter,* p. 26.

[37] Ibid., p. 25.

[38] Ibid., p. 29.

> to any unique property of the medium, but is inherent in the form of motion itself.[39]

Moreover, the model assumes another important feature, one pregnant with implications not only for "scalar physics" and the Bell, but also for any true appreciation of the work of Nikola Tesla:

> *A vortex atom for example may be assumed to carry an array of standing waves along with it in the form of nodes and loops in the streamlines of the circulating ether*, as is evidenced by electron diffraction patterns, but this is something very different from the usual concept of "wave atom."[40]

Again, consider what this means: a basic theory had been worked out connecting vorticular structures in the aether, not only with elementary particles and vacuum flux, but that flux is now connected to structures of standing waves in the medium itself, structures which give rise to "nodes and loops" in the medium, making it resemble a crystal lattice.

Krafft uses the following diagrams to illustrate the basic vorticular structure of electrons and protons.

---

[39] Krafft, *Ether and Matter,* pp. 45-46, emphasis in the original. For further thoughts on the relationship of system memory, topological descent, and the aether, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 108-110, 222-245, 272-276.

[40] Krafft, op. cit., p. 46, emphasis added.

Proton
Electron

Krafft's Vortex Model of a Neutron(Left) and Hydrogen Atom (Right)

A further consequence results from this conception, one with obvious implications for the Bell:

> *The mass of a proton must have its origin in the gyrostatic effect of the circulating or rotating ether, either inside or outside the vortex rings.* The greater mass of the proton as compared with the electron may then be attributed either to a greater speed of circulatory movement of the ether, or to a greater volume of circulating ether, or to the difference in geometric structures.[41]

Altering, or cohering the rotation of a particle or aggregate of particles will thus in turn affect the circulation of the ether and consequently affect the mass of that aggregate.

Krafft then makes a stunning series of statements whose similarities to the Bell and the type of physics it implies are obvious:

> If one proton and one electron produces the system of ether current shown in the diagram of the hydrogen atom (above), then many protons and many electrons should produce a similar system of ether currents, but on a larger scale. In order to test for the presence of such ether currents, the arrangement of apparatus shown (below) may be used. An interferometer of approximately square form has hollow metal spheres or cylinders placed over two of the corners. These spheres or cylinders

---

[41] Krafft, *Ether and Matter,* p. 53, emphasis added.

> are then charged electrostatically as shown so that there will be an electrostatic potential gradient along one of the bifurcated beams. If there is a flow of ether along electrostatic lines of force as indicated by the short straight arrows, then there should be a shift of the interference fringes when the electrostatic field is applied, provided the ether flows with sufficient velocity to produce an observable effect.[42]

From there it is a short step to the idea that the two cylinders could be counter-rotated both mechanically and electrically, producing vector cancellation and a "rotational bubble" of localized space around the Bell, to study any mass anomalies.

Krafft's Interferometer

In any case, Hilgenberg, by the time of his "Quantenzahlen" paper, was able to re-model almost the entire periodic table, including the properties of the super-heavy elements not even discovered.

---

[42] Krafft, *Ether and Matter,* pp. 54-55. It will be noted that Krafft's experimental design partakes of the same conceptual error as that which underwrote the original Michelson-Morley experiment, namely, the configuration of the experiment in neatly rectilinear space, and not a rotating one, as had Georges Sagnac.

Hilgenberg’s Neon Model (Number 10, Mass 22)

Hilgenberg’s Krypton Model (Number 26 , Mass 82)

Hilgenberg’s Xenon Model (Number 54, Mass 132)

Hilgenberg's Model of Element 118, Mass 336

What emerges from this?

Basically, that during the crucial years leading up to and during World War Two, the Nazi Reich possessed the outlines of a theory - some of which had been worked out prior to the Nazi assumption of power - of matter, of gravitation, of the atomic and sub-atomic structure of matter, and of the fluctuations of the vacuum or zero point energy. Moreover, this theory was based on a very different and very simple conceptual foundation from relativity. And notably, *one significant prediction of this theory is that local curvature of space is engineerable and that mass displacement effects are achievable by counter-rotation of plasma.* In short, the theory is in radical disagreement with relativity which predicts space curvature only in the presence of very *large* masses.

Additionally, if we assume that the Bell was a *pulsed* device, then it is reasonable to assume that in the process the Nazis, in their experiments on the Bell, discovered quite deadly field effects resembling the Mossbauer Effect, effects that betoken the scalar physics of Tom Bearden.

D. Back to Mercury Vortex Engines

But there is one last clue that must be examined.

It will be recalled that Witkowski mentioned the mysterious “Xerum 525,” and that it was his opinion that this was a radioactive isotope of mercury, in compound with other elements:

> Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (it was defined as a “vacuum flask”…), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 3 cm thick. It was approx. 1-1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue and *preserving at room temperature the consistency of “slightly coagulated jelly”.* From the produced information it followed that *this substance was code-named “IRR XERUM-525” or “IRR SERUM-525” and contained among other constituents the thorium oxide and beryllium oxide (beryllia).*[43]

And, as was seen, Witkowski also ends his survey of the Bell with the comment that the Nazis might have been guided in their research from a most unusual source:

> (Yet) one more issue remains – how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics. How is it, that they were conscious of bringing about a major turning-point? What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds with the great nand influential armaments consortiums? And they won decisively.
>
> It seems that the whole issue is something more than just a technical problem. The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books – one can easily check this. The “Samaranganasutradhara” a book at least 2,000 years old, said for example: “*By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind in motion, a man sitting inside may travel a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.”*[44]

But there is more to it than that.

“Xerum 525” possessed some odd properties, not the least of which was its “violet gold hue.” An ancient Sanskrit text on the ancient *vimana* aircraft of India contains the following interesting sentence: "On the north side *liquefied mixture of loadstone, mica, and serpent slough should be placed. And crystals should be placed at the requisite centers."*[45] Whatever "serpent slough" might be, clearly there is more involved in the ancient "mercury vortex engines" than simply ordinary mercury. It is mercury *in compound with other elements,* for a little way on, the same text indicates that this is a very odd liquid indeed: "Shaktipaniaraka mani *should be placed in the mixture of magnet, mercury, mica, and serpent-slough."* This suggests that the "violet-gold hue" of Xerum 525 might be the result of the mixture of mercury with quasi-crystalline or crystalline elements, suspended in microscopic flecks in the fluid. The similarity of "Xerum 525" to this ancient Sanskrit text describing precisely an unusual form of propulsion achieved through the use of mercury certainly suggests, that at some very high and hidden level, someone in the Nazi Reich was reading ancient texts with a very practiced physicist's eye. In any case, this additional fact makes Witkowski's suggestion of an esoteric foundation to the Bell more credible.

---

[43] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 233, emphasis added.

[44] Ibid., p. 284, emphasis Witkowski’s.

But there is one final thing to consider.

The late Bill Clendenon, well-known UFOlogist and "mercury vortex engine" proponent, similarly stumbled on the ancient Sanskrit *vimana* texts, and drew similar conclusions. At the time, some scoffed at Clendenon's ideas, and of course, at the time he wrote his book, *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods,* the story of the Bell had not yet become public in the upheaval of post-reunification Germany.

And these facts make Clendenon's quotations and analyses (the italicized portions in the following quotation) of the *vimana* texts all the more amazing:

> The Sanskrit *Samarangana Sureadhara* says, "Inside one must place the mercury engine with its iron heating apparatus beneath." *Inside the circular air frame, place the mercury engine with its electric/ultrasonic boiler at the bottom center.*

---

[45] David Hatcher Childress, *Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1999), p. 251, emphasis added.

> “By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind[46] in motion, a man sitting inside may travel to a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.” – *The unchained heat energy from the hot mercury vapor sets the air pump/turbine in motion.*
>
> “Four strong mercury containers must be built into the interior structure. When these have been heated by controlled fire from iron containers, the *Vimana* develops thunder-power through the mercury. And at once it becomes like a pearl in the sky.” – *One mercury boiler and three mercury flux valve sensor units must be installed in the propulsion system within the center of the circular air frame. When these mercury containers have been heated by electrically controlled fire (hot mercury vapor) from the containers, the aircraft develops ultrasonic power through the mercury. And, at once, the ionized recirculating air flow becomes like a pearl in the sky.*[47]

If Bill Clendenon can figure this much out, then it takes little imagination to see how a Walther Gerlach, himself a specialist in gravity, spin polarization, and mercury plasmas, might interpret such a text. Indeed, if one compares Witkowski’s descriptions of the Bell to these ancient texts – without the intermediary of Clendenon’s own speculations – then the resemblance becomes even more palpable.

And if all this sounds incredible, one should recall the article that appeared in the January 3, 1969 issue of *Science,* where scientists Schubert, Gerald and Whitehead “reported that when a heat source was rotated slowly below a dish of mercury, the mercury began to revolve in the contrary direction and then gathered speed until it was circulating faster than the flame.”[48]

---

[46] Whirlwind: vortex!

[47] Bill Clendenon, *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods,* reprinted in David Hatcher Childress, *Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the Power System of Atlantis* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), pp. 96-97, italics in the original.

[48] Brooks, *Hitler’s Terror Weapons*, p. 137. Brooks remarks on the pervasive Oriental and Hermetic influence on Nazism throughout his work, even providing the following little known information about the interrogation of Rudolf Hess: “Rudolf Hess, interrogated in the Tower of London under the effect of a truth serum, stated that National Socialists valued the occult sciences highly and might even be, under Hitler, the puppets of a clandestine Dicrectorate in the Orient.” (pp. 26-27, citing OSS Interrogation Archive document #12678, *Nazi Occult Organizations*) Brooks also states that Hitler personally received a copy of Bulwer-Lytton’s celebrated novel about the ancient Ayrans and their

It would seem, then, that the Bell, whatever else it may be from a purely scientific standpoint, is, from the standpoint of esoteric history, a deliberate attempt to reconstruct an ancient and lost technology, a technology far in advance of that of the 1930s and 1940s.

E. Speculations: the Bell as a Scalar Physics Device

So, gathering together all the alternative notions of the previous chapters, what do we have?

One may perhaps speculate along the following lines:

1. The basic structure of all elementary particles is that they are vorticular structures in the aether;
2. Mass and "particle" or "system" individuality arise and are preserved by means of this vorticular motion;
3. Since a vortex which is stable in the plane of the medium (i.e., not drifting in any direction) nevertheless still rotates around an axis, any particular vortex, of any size in any system context, may be said to possess a scalar signature. In effect, the "scalar signature" of any system is ultimately vorticular in structure and nature;[49]
4. Thus, the local spacetime "medium" or aether is *engineerable* and, contrary to relativity, it is not necessary

---

knowledge of the so-called "Vril" force, which may be seen as analogous to the energy of the aether, or vacuum flux(p. 179), *provided that one understands this aether to be of a vorticular structure, with a definite scalar signature in particular zero-summed cases, and as also being the common substrate not only of energy and matter, but of mind.* (Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science,* pp. 222-245, 272-276, and my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* ch. 7, where I also discuss the Egyptian Hermetic basis of this type of physics). Brooks notes Schopenhauer's Orientalism and Hermeticism, and its influence on Hitler, and its underlying Egyptian basis, and thus "for the second time….we found ourselves confronted by the spectre of Ancient Egypt in connection with National Socialism." (p. 27). Of course, anyone familiar with the immensely learned work of Revisionist Egyptologist and Hermeticist Rene Schwaller de Lubicz will recall his gravitation during the war towards the Nazis.

[49] Consider again the different types of internal stresses represented by the simplistic vorticular structures on page 208.

to be in the presence of large masses to bend or otherwise shape or stress space and the objects in it;[50]

5. Coherence of atomic spin should thus produce not only mass displacement effects that could be utilized for propulsion, but other phenomena that could be weaponized, since vorticular structures can produce standing waves in the medium;
6. This cohering action might be further stimulated by the use of radioactive isotopes subjected to sudden repeated pulses or stresses of an "electro-acoustic" nature, as in the Mossbauer Effect, or a continuous stress by counter-rotation to vector-zero electromagnetic vectors, or some combination of both. I believe that the Bell involved a pulsed aspect of some nature such as this, given Witkowski's testimony of its characteristic *sound*;
7. Since atoms are aggregates of vortices, it is similarly possible to conceive of transmuting one element into another by reconfiguring its scalar signature – i.e., its "aetheric" longitudinal wave structure. Since vortices are accompanied by such structures, an alteration in the one would seem to imply an alteration in the other, and therefore, in the very structure of matter itself. Altering that wave structure could conceivably transmute any matter impacted by it, accounting for "low energy transmutation" phenomena.

While the Bell demonstrably fulfills, in so many different ways, the paradigms of the alternative physics examined in this and in the previous chapters, there can be no doubt that the Germans working on it, led by Gerlach, whose brilliant student Hilgenberg outlined the emerging vortex theory, were interested not only in the *propulsive* uses of their new physics and technology, but also in its benign and malign uses as energy suppliers, and ultimately, weapons of horrendous power. It was a prototype "scalar" device for a new and "unified physics," and it cannot be doubted for a moment that the Nazis new the full potential - both for massively creative good and for massively destructive evil – of what they held in their hands. The fact that the Bell and its master – Kammler – disappeared entirely after the war, the fact that Gerlach's diaries - which doubtless contained much information on the subject – remain classified to this day, the fact that it and it alone, beyond even the Third Reich's fuel air bombs, Sarin gas, and atom bombs, was classified "decisive for the war" (*Kriegsentscheidend*) is testimony enough that they were "working in areas of physics that were monstrous, on a daily basis."

---

[50] That this has profound applications for weaponization and propulsion should be obvious.

7.
"Gerlach's New Alchemy:"
The Mysterious Serum 525

"Although the principal compound is almost completely undocumented, the metallic elements involved (in red mercury) loom large in the history of alchemy and the descriptions of it bear an uncanny resemblance to those of the Philosopher's Stone, right down to its being a form of 'fixed', i.e., thermally stable, mercury which can then be 'projected upon', i.e., amalgamated with, liquid mercury."
S.M.Shires[1]

A. An Article in the Evening Newspaper

On Friday, July 18, 1924, Nobel laureate physicist, Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, published an interesting article in the evening edition of the *Frankfurter Zeitung* newspaper entitled "The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold" (see picture page 274). The article, though brief, opens a Pandora's box of possibilities and speculations dark with abysmal promise. The editorial introduction begins innocently enough:

> To yesterday's telegraphically transmitted note on "Modern Alchemy", we present the following report as a welcome supplement and commentary.

And with that short notice, Gerlach's main text follows in all its significant concision:

> In no. 29 of the weekly magazine "Physical Science," Prof. A. Miethe from the Technical Higher School in Charlottenburg together with Dr. Staumreich *apprises us (of the fact) that it might be possible to induce the disintegration of mercury with relatively simple physical methods* and to clearly identify gold as one of the chemical and physical products of the disintegration. Until now we have known of two types of atomic bonding: spontaneous decay that occurs through no sort of external influence, and that through such external radioactive

---

[1] S.M. Shires, *Mercuric Pyro-Antimonate,* <www.geocities.com/smshires.geo/> , p. 1.

> disintegration process such as was first carried out by the English physicist Rutherford, and as was shortly thereafter repeated in the Vienna Radium Institute by disintegrating lighter atoms (for example, lithium, boron, silicon, aluminum and so on) through bombardment with "rays". The general possibility of an "alchemy" is no longer in need of proof, since atomic research has demonstrated that all atoms are constructed from very simple building blocks, from hydrogen and helium, the lightest things…; various chemical elements may hereafter be distinguished by the number of components and perhaps through the types of atoms they (most readily) bind to.
>
> *The point of origin of Miethe's (investigation) was the observation that mercury lamps ... by means of very powerful and fast bombardment formed a dark incrustation on their interior winding. The research obtained greater amounts of such incrustation in the mercury lamps - it was made certain that such mercury lamps were free of any gold material, in the course of 70 – 200 hours with 70 volts potential and loaded with 400-2000 watts* - yielding a measurable quantity of gold!....The amounts are small, but they are always between 1/10 and 1/100 milligrams, but tangibly weighable and analyzable. …*A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for, because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.*[2]

On first reading, the article appears like so many other popular science articles of that era when nuclear physics was on the verge of the discovery of fission (by Otto Hahn fourteen years later in 1938): full of promise, yet naively unaware of the complexities of quantum mechanics that lurked just around the corner. A modern day physicist would most likely dismiss it as the type of "wishful thinking" that so often accompanies scientific discovery, before the "reality" of subsequent observation sets in.

But there are problems with that viewpoint too, not the least of which is that the article is by Gerlach, and that it *does* occur before the discovery of nuclear fission. Simply put, the transmutation being observed by professors Miethe and Straumreich appears to be induced precisely by "electrolytical" methods, since the "bombardment" being referred to is expressed

---

[2] Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, "The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold, ," *Frankfurter Zeiting,* evening edition, Friday, July 18, 1924. My translation from the German. Emphasis added.

68. Jahrgang. Nr. 532 Abendblatt. Freitag, 18. Juli 1924.

Frankfurter Zeitung

und Handelsblatt.

Begründet von Leopold Sonnemann

= **[Die Verwandlung von Queckſilber in Gold.]** Zu der geſtern uns telegraphiſch aus Berlin übermittelten Notiz „Moderne Alchimie" bringen wir als willkommene Ergänzung die folgenden ſachkundigen Ausführungen: In Nr. 29 der Wochenſchrift „Die Naturwiſſenſchaften" teilt Prof. A. Miethe von der techniſchen Hochſchule in Charlottenburg mit, daß es ihm gemeinſam mit Dr. Stammreich gelungen ſei, den Zerfall des Queckſilbers mit relativ einfachen phyſikaliſchen Mitteln herbeizuführen und als eines der Zerfallprodukte das Gold chemiſch und phyſikaliſch eindeutig zu identifizieren. Bisher kennt man zwei Arten von Atomverwandlungen: die ſpontan verlaufenden und durch keinerlei äußere Einwirkungen beeinflußbaren radioaktiven Zerfallsprozeſſe und die von dem engliſchen Phyſiker Rutherford zuerſt ausgeführt und kürzlich im Wiener Radiuminſtitut wiederholte Zertrümmerung leichter Atome (z. B. Lithium, Bor, Stickſtoff, Silizium, Aluminium u. a.) durch Bombardement mit α-Strahlen. Die generelle Möglichkeit einer „Alchimie" iſt nicht mehr nachzuweiſen, ſeit die Atomforſchung gezeigt hat, daß alle Atome aus ſehr einfachen Bauſteinen aufgebaut ſind, von denen Waſſerſtoff und Helium, die leichteſten Gaſe, ſicher nachgewieſen ſind; die verſchiedenen chemiſchen Elemente unterſcheiden ſich hiernach durch die Anzahl dieſer Beſtandteile, und vielleicht durch die Art, wie ſie zum „Atom" verbunden ſind. Der Ausgangspunkt der Unterſuchungen von Miethe war die Beobachtung, daß Queckſilberlampen beſonderer Konſtruktion (nach Jaenicke) bei ſehr ſtarker Belaſtung ſchnell ſchwarze Beſchläge auf der inneren Wandung bekommen. Die Unterſuchung ſolcher Beſchläge, die in größerer Menge aus dem Lampenqueckſilber gewonnen wurde, ergab einen ſicher nachweisbaren Goldgehalt. Es wurden nun ſolche Queckſilberlampen aus ſicher goldfreiem Material hergeſtellt und während 20—200 Stunden bei 170 Volt Klemmſpannung mit 400—2000 Watt belaſtet. Nach Abſchluß jedes „mit weitgehenden Vorſichtsmaßregeln" ausgeführten Verſuchs wurde Gold im Queckſilber nachgewieſen. Der nach Abdeſtillation des Queckſilbers zurückbleibende wägbare Niederſchlag war goldgelb und kriſtallin oder kruſtenförmig. Der Goldnachweis erfolgte durch chemiſche Analyſe (Unlöslichkeit in Salpeterſäure, löslich in Königswaſſer, Caſſiusprobe, Haberſche Analyſenmethode u. a.), durch den „Goldſtrich", durch die typiſche optiſche Goldreflexion und die Kriſtallform (Würfel und Oktaeder). Die Mengen ſind klein, aber immerhin bei $^{1}/_{10}$—$^{1}/_{100}$ Milligramm durchaus beachtenswert, wägbar und analytiſch faßbar. Eine wirtſchaftliche Bedeutung dürfte die Entdeckung nach Angabe des Verfaſſers kaum haben — (mit einem Strompreis von 10 Pfg. für 1 Kilowatt würde das Gramm auf etwa 100 000 Mark kommen!), deſto größere wiſſenſchaftliche Ausbeute iſt aber zu erhoffen; denn die Angaben des Verfaſſers machen einen durchaus zuverläſſigen Eindruck — wenn auch die Verwunderung über die überaus geringe Stabilität des Queckſilberatoms vorerſt noch ſtört.

Prof. Dr. W. Gerlach.

Gerlach's 1924 Frankfurter Zeitung *Newspaper Article on the Transmutation of Mercury into Gold* in conventional terms of “volts” and “watts.” Yet, the context also indicates that radioactive bombardment – most likely by electrically generated x- rays – is also in mind.

And there are other peculiarities about the article not to be missed, and that is the name of the professor supposedly who made the discovery: A. Miethe. Readers familiar with the Nazi Legend of the UFO will recognize the name of Miethe as being one of those allegedly involved with Schriever, Habermol, Epp, Schauberger, and Bellonzo in flying saucer research for the Nazis. Could this be the same Miethe, or even a relation?

And finally, does Gerlach’s call for “a larger effort” to investigate the phenomenon represent the factual basis behind Jan Van Helsing’s allegations that actual work in radical field propulsion craft began in the secret societies that swarmed in 1920s Germany long before the Nazis came to power?

Whatever the answer to these questions may turn out to be, one thing is clear from Gerlach’s article, and that is that he is not thinking in terms of the standard models of transmutation via *neutron* bombardment that would obtain *after* the discovery of nuclear fission simply because those models do not yet exist, yet, he *is* thinking in terms of *some* form of transmutation via radioactive and electromagnetic bombardment, or rather, *stress.* Indeed, for Gerlach, whose 1921 experiment in magnetic resonance and electron spin won him the Nobel prize in physics, these results must have set his own mind buzzing with the possibilities of what spin and resonance, under extreme conditions, might be able to achieve, given enough funding, interest, and research. This, I believe, is what must have actually been in his mind.

These insights make his final two comments darkly revealing. “A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for,” Gerlach urges, “because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.” It is the familiar cry of a scientist making a plea for research funding. And given his notoriety and that of the newspaper in which he presents his plea, there can be only one intended target of his remarks: the German government and its many corporate financial backers.

But notice the final remark concerning "*the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed."* Gerlach here enunciates in a few words the line of investigation he wishes such research to take: subject a high density, viscuous low stability metal such as mercury to *stress.* And given the context, we know what kind of stress he intends to subject it to: *radioactive and electrical.* Gerlach has deduced the obvious: if such simple means can cause minute amounts of mercury to transmute into gold, then this must mean that these conditions induce a kind of instability in mercury. And with that, a whole new world of possibilities opened up before him, a world he himself calls "alchemical."

Viewed in the context of the previous chapters, an intriguing and highly suggestive constellation of relationships now emerges. At the *end* of the story, we have Gerlach

(1) heading up the most secret weapons project in Nazi Germany (the Bell);
(2) this project by all accounts involved the use of extremely high voltage, given that the device itself had ports for high voltage electrical cabling, given that the Henge pool also had similar ports, and given that Dr. Kurt Debus, an expert in high voltage, was a member of the Bell's scientific research team;
(3) this project apparently utilized some dense and liquid material, the mysterious "Xerum 525", that may very likely have been some isotope of mercury, as plausibly argued by Witkowski;
(4) this liquid was housed in lead lined bottles inside the Bell, which gave off strong radiations, indicating that the serum or liquid may have been mercury highly doped with radioactive materials;
(5) the liquid was rotated at extremely high speeds of mechanical (and possibly electrical) nature;
(6) and then was possibly subjected to sudden high voltage direct current pulses, as I Have argued.

All this is to say that Gerlach headed a project at the end of World War Two that apparently involved some liquid of similar characteristics to mercury which was then *stressed,* just as his article urged.

But at the *beginning* of the story, we have Gerlach writing an article outlining very similar possibilities for a popular German newspaper, and making a subtle though clear plea for a large scale scientific effort to investigate precisely radioactive and electrical *stressing* of *mercury.*

Consequently, it appears that someone, somewhere inside Weimar Germany read Gerlach's article, and decided to back his project. The Bell, therefore, may have been a project that by 1945 had possibly already been underway for twenty-one years! In other words, "the Bell" represents the culmination of a project begun nine years before the Third Reich even existed.

More importantly, Gerlach's remarks also oddly corroborate the mysterious exchange of the scientists interred at Farm Hall who speak of a "photochemical" process of isotope enrichment unknown to the Allies, a process evocative of "cold fusion,"[3] for here in 1924 Gerlach is thinking in precisely such terms: transmutation of a low stability element by subjecting it to high stress of an electrical and radioactive nature. And lest it be forgotten, of all the scientists interred at Farm Hall, it was Gerlach alone who was singled out for the dubious honor of further interrogation by American authorities long after his Farm Hall colleagues had been released and returned to occupied Germany. It was Gerlach alone, of all the scientists interred at Farm Hall, who appeared to be off in his own world of "magnetic fields separation" and "the gravity of local space," remarks which, I am sure, must have raised not only the eyebrows of his British captors but also his fellow scientists.

But is there anything in the literature that indicates such a "radioactively doped" form of mercury might possess some peculiar physical properties? As I wrote in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *The Reich of the Black Sun*, there would indeed appear to be just such a substance:

---

[3] Q.v. chapter 5.

> But what was the mysterious “Xerum 525”? When I first read of this strange material, I thought it might be some radioactive isotope of mercury, or possibly a more radioactive substance in chemical solution of some sort. It is perhaps worth noting that recently a strange substance known as “red mercury”, or mercury antimonite oxide, has been alleged to have strong neutron emitting properties when subjected to sudden explosive stress, and is alleged to be a non-fissile method of triggering the enormous fusion reactions of hydrogen bombs, as well as being capable, in its own right, of ….explosions in the small kiloton range. Perhaps the Nazis had stumbled onto a similar such substance during the war.[4]

But just what exactly *is* red mercury? Is it a powerful new type of conventional explosive, capable of triggering fusion reactions in deuterium and tritium without the need for an atomic bomb as the fuse, as some allege, making a “pure fusion” bomb a nightmarish possibility? Or is it, as others maintain, a fanciful post-Cold War hoax?

B. Mercury Pyro-Antimonate, or Red Mercury (Mercury Antimony Oxide)

1. Code-name DOVE

Red mercury, or mercury antimony oxide – chemical symbol $Hg_2Sb_2O_7$ – enjoyed a short, if notorious, career as the nuclear threat of the nineteen nineties. The story broke more or less simultaneously in various parts of the world, as the mysterious substance appeared to be behind a series of murders in the black market arms trade in post-apartheid South Africa, blocked smuggling attempts in the then recently-reunified Germany, and according to some stories, was even being sought by such “nations of concern” as Libya and Iraq as a basis for their own nuclear weapons programs. Then, almost as soon as the mysterious compound appeared, denunciations of the whole substance and subject as a “hoax” were issued by the United States Atomic

---

[4] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), p. 335.

Energy Commission and various other national and international nuclear regulatory agencies.

But one physicist who did *not* dismiss the story as a pure hoax was the American inventor of the neutron bomb, Dr. Sam Cohen. For Cohen, the possibility of "pure fusion" bombs – that is, hydrogen bombs that do *not* require an atom bomb as their trigger[5] - was brought home to him while he was on a visit to the Lawrence Livermore Laboratories during a visit he made there in the spring of 1958.[6] During this visit, Cohen was briefed on a pure fusion bomb project.

> This device, code-named DOVE, fascinated me. It contained no fissile material; rather, its explosive power derived from heavy hydrogen – deuterium and tritium. Because of its extremely low nuclear cost and its high yield – comparable to that of a very large conventional bomb – it would in a military application, represent a revolutionary new class of weapons. A device of this nature, having a yield the equivalent of 10 tons of TNT, could kill enemy troops out to hundreds of yards, with no significant urban destruction and contamination.[7]

The interest such a device held for the American military was more than just theoretical, for such devices would cost "roughly one-hundredth that of a battlefield fission weapon, meaning that these things could be turned out by the hundreds."[8]

The theory behind such a device was simple.

---

[5] The reason that an atom bomb is required as a "trigger" in a conventional hydrogen bomb is that, according to standard nuclear and thermonuclear theory, the enormous heat and pressures required to initiate fusion reactions can only be achieved by an atom bomb, which heats the atoms of deuterium and tritium – heavy hydrogen isotopes with one and two extra neutrons in their nuclei respectively – with enough energy to cause enough of them to collide and fuse into helium atoms, with a corresponding tremendous explosive release of energy and burst of neutrons. The neutrons which are not required by the helium atom are "kicked out" to form a deadly, but short-lived radiation. Thus, *most* of the long-lived radiation in a conventional hydrogen bomb comes not from the fusion reaction, but from the fission reaction of the atomic bomb that triggers the hydrogen bomb.

[6] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," *National Review*(December 17, 1995, 56-58,76), p. 56.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

> The most promising approach was to use a large spherical high-explosive charge to concentrate the explosive energy in a very small capsule containing deuterium and tritium. In theory, this would cause the desired thermonuclear reaction. *The program proceeded for some years and finally was terminated for lack of progress. Later, the Los Alamos laboratory had a go at it. But to my disappointment, and theirs, the problem remained intractable. The program ultimately was ended.*[9]

That is, theoretically, it should be possible to take the implosion detonator for a conventional atomic bomb, and instead of using it to compress a critical mass of plutonium to initiate fission, one could replace the plutonium with deuterium or tritium, compressing it sufficiently to increase the energy and density, and hence the statistical probability of collision (fusion) of heavy hydrogen atoms, and voila! One would have a "small" hydrogen bomb without the need of an atom bomb to detonate it.

But the effort failed, and it should be obvious why: no conventional explosive possessed sufficient brisance[10] to compress the heavy hydrogen to pressures sufficient to initiate fusion reactions. This affords a clue to what Dr. Cohen is *not* telling in his article: the United States was searching for a *conventional* explosive of sufficient bursting power that, when used in an implosion detonator, would compress heavy hydrogen to fusion energies and pressures. If such could be found, the atom bomb would become as extinct as the dodo bird, for two obvious reasons. First, if such a conventional explosive *could* be found, then it could be used as a powerful explosive in its own right, replacing the need for small yield strategic and tactical fission weapons, since it would be far smaller than a fuel air bomb of similar yield, and far less costly than its fission counterparts. Secondly, if such an explosive could be found, then, as Cohen intimates, it could be used as the detonator for a very small, "clean," neutron-emitting hydrogen bomb, or, as Cohen does *not* intimate, as the detonator for the city-and-county-cracking blockbuster strategic hydrogen bomb. In either case, the cost would be far less than a conventional thermonuclear bomb.

---

[9] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 56.,emphasis added.

[10] I.e., the energy of the explosive "shock" or pressure wave.

However, as Cohen relates, there the story ended, *until* the crack-up of the Soviet Union and the new Russian Republic's willingness to be more open about its nuclear weapons research.

> Several years before Livermore began DOVE, the Soviets had started their own "pure-fusion" development. Unlike the U.S. they were quite open about it, claiming it was directed solely for peaceful applications. In 1957, Soviet nuclear-weapon designer I.A. Artsimovich presented a paper in Geneva describing experiments done in 1952, based on the same high-explosive implosion technology used in DOVE. He claimed progress had been made. Shortly thereafter, however, Soviet researchers stopped all public mention of the project.
>
> On the other hand, the Soviet military had no hesitation in writing about such devices in their open military literature. In 1961, Colonel M. Pavlov, writing in *Red Star,* discussed almost precisely what I had briefed Paul Nitze on. Pavlov's calculations of weapon effectiveness were almost identical to mine, which were classified. This indicated to me that although the Soviets were not talking about research on DOVE, they were doing it.[11]

Then, in 1992, a Russian nuclear weapons expert revealed details about what the Russians called "third generation nuclear weapons," weapons that could "double the yield" with a "hundredfold reduction of weight compared to existing weapons."[12] Cohen cites another Russian authority on the subject as stating "You can drop a couple of hundred little bombs on foreign territory, the enemy is devastated, but for the aggressor there are no consequences,"[13] for with such weapons there is none of the deadly, long lasting radioactive cloud to drift back over the user's own country in a lethal radioactive fallout. Again, one is reminded of the Nazi's use of fuel-air bombs in their rocket batteries on the eastern front, only in this case, it really *is* a combination of the phrases "tactical nukes" and "carpet bombing."

As Cohen explains, the "doubling of yield" with a "hundred fold reduction in weight" clearly indicates that the Russians were *not* talking about standard battlefield tactical nuclear weapons, since even the most pure plutonium still had to be at least a few hundreds of grams simply to have enough material to generate spontaneous fission. Below a certain threshold of weight, fission was impossible, and a one hundredfold reduction would make a fission weapon inconceivable. The Russians therefore had to have been talking about a pure fusion weapon, about "some version of DOVE, *based on a detonation technology that doesn't exist in the United States.*"[14] In other words, there were only two options for interpreting the Russians' remarks: either they were lying, or they had discovered the holy grail of thermonuclear bomb engineering, a conventional explosive with enough brisance to compress heavy hydrogen to fusion pressures and energies.

---

[11] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 56.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

And with this Cohen comments, albeit only briefly, on a whole new type of conventional explosive, of which red mercury is but one substance:

> In recent years unclassified research has been conducted on a new class of materials (including red mercury), referred to as ballotechnics. These materials use a number of elements in low density powder form. When they are subjected to high-pressure shock compression, chemical reactions take place which under certain conditions can produce energy concentrations considerably in excess of those from high explosives. Ballotechnics therefore offer a significantly greater prospect for success in attaining a very low yield pure-fusion weapon than the high-explosive techniques we and other nations have explored.[15]

Cohen also notes that red mercury was allegedly developed in the former Soviet Union precisely as a detonator for nuclear warheads. Indeed, its efficiency as a detonator was so great that a bomb the size of a hand grenade would be sufficient to blow a large ship out of the ocean.[16] After taking note of the fact that the CIA and various other American agencies dismissed the "red mercury" story as a hoax which they nevertheless were taking seriously – "whatever that means," Cohen quips[17] – he then says nothing more about it.

---

[14] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 57, emphasis added.

[15] Ibid., p. 97.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid.

2. The .01 Kiloton Yield Pure Fusion Bomb: The Logic of Fusion Weapons Development

But what has all this to do with red mercury and the Bell? The answer is a complex one, and to see why, one should place Dr. Cohen's remarks in the context of a general history of nuclear weapons developments. The pure fusion device represents the last in the various generations of nuclear weapons. One may summarize these various generations as follows:

a. *First Generation Weapons:*

> This generation of weapon comes in three distinct phases, ascending from the least to the more complex:
>
> (1) *Radiological Weapons ("Dirty Bombs"):* this is the simplest type of nuclear weapon, where a conventional explosive is used to disperse a cloud of deadly radioactive fallout over a wide area. The explosion is purely conventional, although it requires rudimentary nuclear technology to produce the required radioactive isotopes in sufficient quantity for such a weapon. This is the type of weapon many erroneously allege was the only nuclear weapon ever actually achieved by the Third Reich;
>
> (2) *"The Semi-Fission" or "Atomic Fizzle" Bomb:* This type of device actually does generate some nuclear combustion of the nuclear fuel, creating an enormous explosion, though falling short of a full fission reaction. It is a cross between the "dirty" bomb" above and the full fission device below. The explosion, since it does not combust the nuclear material nearly as completely, is also a very dirty bomb. Its yield would be in the fractions of a kiloton, still enormous by conventional standards, but still far short of an actual atom bomb. The atomic "fizzling firecracker" effect of such a bomb

looks and has the shock wave of a typical explosion, but it is nonetheless a "fizzle."

(3) *The Pure Fission, or Atomic Bomb:* This type of device is the first genuinely nuclear bomb, where a critical mass of uranium 235 or plutonium 239 is assembled quickly enough to emit fast neutrons, which then split the atoms of the critical mass in a geometrical growth of fissioning atoms, producing the colossal explosion of an atomic bomb. The crictical mass is typically assembled by an implosion detonator of explosives surrounding a sphere of plutonium, which is crushed to supercritical density. Nonetheless, some of the critical mass remains unconsumed in the explosion no matter how efficient it is, and deadly radioactive fallout is always a by-product of such weapons. These are the types of weapons America first dropped on Japan. Note that to achieve this final stage a basic reactor technology, while not needed, is desirable, since plutonium, the most efficient fuel for such a device, can only be synthesized in a fully functional reactor. This will become an important point as we proceed.

b. *Second Generation Weapons:*

The next generation of weapons comes in three distinct chronological phases:

(1) *Boosted Fission Weapons:* As nuclear technology develops and becomes more proficient as isotope separation and enrichment, purer grade of fissile weapons grade material is produced, allowing more efficient combustion of the critical mass in the explosion, and a commensurate drop in deadly radioactive fallout. Additionally, some neutron emitting material such as deuterium or tritium is "salted" into the critical mass, to create an additional burst of high energy neutrons which increase the amount of neutrons in the chain reaction, increasing the yield of the bomb,

making smaller bombs of higher yield possible. This is the first step towards miniaturizing an atom bomb, as well as the first step toward a fully fledged hydrogen bomb. Atomic bombs of this sort can also be very large, having yields in the several tens of kilotons. It is this type of weapon that some allege was tested by Nazi Germany in March of 1945 at the Ohrdruf troop parade ground in Thuringia.[18]

(2) *Fission-Fusion (-Fission) or Full Hydrogen Bombs:* The next step from boosted fission is to make the heavy hydrogen component of the bomb the main explosive punch of the weapon by packing the bomb with enough fusionable material that, when the atom bomb is detonated, the enormous pressures and temperatures created compress this material to such a degree its atoms *collide and combine, or "fuse"* (rather than *split or fission)*, releasing truly stupendous amounts of energy and free neutrons. The yield of the first exemplars of such weapons were in the tens of megatons (one *million* tons of TNT equals a megaton, whereas an atom bomb is measured merely in kilotons, or one *thousand* tons of TNT). While the fusion reaction produces enormous radiation, this is in the form of gamma and x-rays and free neutrons, which, while deadly, dissipate rather quickly after the explosion when compared to the radiation caused by the atom bomb used to detonate it, which lingers for years. Theoretically, there is no limit to the size of a hydrogen bomb.[19] This type of bomb may have a *second* atom bomb added to increase the yield and radioactive fallout. It implies the existence of a highly developed nuclear technology both to miniaturize the atom bomb, and to create sufficient amounts of fusionable material – the heavy hydrogen isotopes deuterium and tritium - for a thermonuclear explosion.

---

[18] Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun,* chapter 4.

[19] The largest hydrogen bomb ever tested was done by the Soviet Union, which tested a deliverable weapon with a yield of 67 megatons in 1962!

(3) *The Neutron Bomb:* In this type of bomb the atom bomb detonator is made as small and efficient as possible, as is the heavy hydrogen component. The goal is to make the atomic explosion and radioactivity from the fission reaction as *small* as possible, while making the radioactivity from the neutrons of the heavy hydrogen as *large* as possible. The blast damage from such a weapon is thus comparatively small, while its radioactive effects are quite large. The aim is to minimize physical damage to buildings, while killing enemy troops. In effect, the neutron bomb is the opposite of the boosted fission bomb. In the latter, the heavy hydrogen is used to "boost" the yield of the atomic explosion itself, but in the neutron bomb, the atomic explosion is used to "boost" the neutron yield of the heavy hydrogen. The goal of the boosted fission bomb is to increase the explosion; the goal of the neutron bomb to decrease long-life radioactivity and atomic explosion, while increasing short-life deadly neutron radiation. This type of bomb requires the most advanced nuclear technology both in the production of high purity fissile material, the conventional explosives used to assemble it, the science and geometry of assembling the critical mass, and the technology to produce heavy hydrogen or other fusionable materials in high quantity.

(4) *The "Salted" or "Doomsday" Bomb:* While not strictly speaking a type of bomb in its own right, mention must be made of this type of nuclear warhead. A "salted" bomb is simply a fully fledged atomic or hydrogen bomb to which a "doping" or "salting" of highly radioactive material such as cobalt 60 or strontium 90 has been added. The aim is not only to produce a high explosive yield of maximum physical effect, but also to create a cloud of very deadly and very long-lived radiation to drift over an entire province or region in an enemy's territory. As such, any fully fission or fusion warhead may be "salted," although normally hydrogen

bombs were thought to be the best for such purposes, since the mushroom cloud from their explosions reach high into the stratosphere, enabling the fallout to be carried over a wide area. These types of doomsday devices obviously had as much repercussion for the nation using them as for the nation being targeted by them. These were the doomsday weapons of the late 1950s and early 1960s. This type of weapon, while monstrous, constitutes an important step for the creation of the third generation of weapon, since to "salt" a bomb with exotic isotopes implies the existence of a sufficiently large and advanced nuclear technology to create such isotopes in the needed large quantities. This requires a *sophisticated* reactor technology.

c. *Third Generation Weapons: The Pure Fusion, or Pure Hydrogen, Bomb:* This is the type of weapon envisioned by project DOVE, and alluded to by the Russian military experts cited by Cohen. As has already been seen, it dispenses entirely with the need for an atomic bomb to set off the thermonuclear explosion. Thus, very "small" nuclear explosions can be created whose sole goal is to create deadly, though very short lived, bursts of neutrons over an area several hundreds of yards in diameter, killing all life within it, but causing a minimum of physical damage. This type of thermonuclear weapon *requires not only the ability to manufacture heavy hydrogen in sufficient weapons quantity, but also a breakthrough in conventional explosive to achieve the pressures and energies necessary for atoms to fuse, without the necessity of an atom bomb for the "trigger."*

What Dr. Cohen mentioned, as has been seen, is a small device with the equivalent explosive yield of ten *tons* of TNT, what by nuclear terms is a "small" explosion. But the idea that such an explosion would cause no physical damage is nonsense. Only imagine what setting off ten tons of TNT in a normal city block would do, and one gets the idea. In any case, *if* such a weapon were feasible, then it poses the nuclear nightmare in no uncertain terms, for one would no longer have to worry about acquiring an atomic bomb, a much more efficient device would be feasible at much *less* cost. Moreover, with no atom bomb needed, any radioactive effects are very short lived, since the neutrons released by the weapon eventually (and very quickly) run "out of steam" and lose their lethality. In short, *there are relatively no radioactive fallout consequences to a nuclear exchange.*

And there is one final, even more unthinkable, danger. It will be recalled that thermonuclear weapons can be made to be very large in terms of their yield, to the tens if not hundreds of megatons. Thus, within the – as yet unknown - limits of the ability of any such breakthrough in ballotechnic explosives, such fusion bombs could conceivably be made *quite large.* One is confronted with the dreadful prospect of a truly city- (or region-) busting thermonuclear bomb that is not only *cheap to produce, light, and comparatively small,* but also one with almost *no* radioactive consequences to the nation or group using it, and almost no radioactive signature that would allow such a device to be detected..

3. The Red Mercury Legend, Recipe, and "Xerum 525"

We now enter the dark and murky world of late twentieth century nuclear weapons research, a world with its own highly suggestive connection to the Bell, for precisely such a breakthrough in conventional explosives is alleged for the mysterious compound "red mercury." It is therefore worth recounting its legend, the "recipe" for its confection, and their possible relationship to the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525".

a. The Red Mercury Legend

The Red Mercury Legend began in the immediate aftermath of the "collapse" of Communist Russia. With the collapse, several Russian nuclear scientists found themselves out of work, and out of money, and began to sell Russian nuclear secrets on the black market. One of the secrets was Red Mercury. Not much would have been known about it had not the story surfaced in connection with a series of bizarre murders in the Republic of South Africa, murders that raised the prospect that South Africa's own progress in nuclear armaments had proceeded much farther along under its apartheid governments than previously imagined.[20] The story also surfaced, appropriately enough, in Germany, when the German government successfully closed down a number of nuclear smuggling operations, including some allegedly trying to smuggle Red Mercury.[21]

The Red Mercury Legend, however, does not have directly to do with the number of deaths that seem to mysteriously occur in connection with it, but with its properties itself, for it is allegedly one of the prized "ballotechnical explosives," i.e., a "conventional" explosive capable of initiating thermonuclear fusion without an atom bomb.

Authors Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, who researched and published what may be the only book-length investigation of the subject, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare,* traced the origin of the substance to secret Russian nuclear installations around the city of Sverdlovsk.[22] Contacting a Russian named "George", they were quickly apprised of its various properties:

---

[20] For this story, see Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan's *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), ISBN 0-670-86925-2.

[21] Hournam and McQuillan note that Russian spy satellite kept a busy eye on (West) Germany's version of Area 51, a secret preserve in Zaire, central Africa, run by the German firm OTRAG (Orbital Transport and Rockets, AG, a (West) German company involved in cruise missile research. According to Hounam and McQuillan, the Russians also knew a great deal about the extent of South Africa's nuclear bomb program. "This may," they observe, "be connected with a spy swap that took place in 1969 between Moscow and Bonn. According to Chinese (!) intelligence sources, several West Germans held in the Soviet Union were swapped with Soviet spy Victor Loginov. The puzzling aspect of this is that Loginov had been caught spying in South Africa and had been secretly handed over to the West Germans."(p. 141). Consequently, once again, the finger points back to West Germany, and not Israel, as the real technological broker for South Africa's nuclear bomb development. The implication is clear: West Germany was using South Africa as a proxy state to develop its own nuclear arsenal, maintaining a strict adherence to the letter, while simultaneously circumventing the spirit of its NATO treaty obligations. This is not to cast aspersions on the West German government for doing so, for no power in its position would rationally rely on the good graces of its former enemies, France, Great Britain, the United States, or the Soviet Union, in the threat of a war or nuclear exchange between East and West.

> "When it is first made, it is a powder which is dark red in colour. But *we irradiate it in a nuclear reactor which turns it into a very heavy liquid,* the colour of wine. It is very, very expensive, because it is so difficult to make….."
>
> Then George lowered his voice: "You know, my friend, that one of the uses of red mercury is for nuclear weapons. You can make them in a different sort of way – nothing like the ones you have in the West – and they can be used by underdeveloped countries. That is why our mafia are in the black market."[23]

The plot thickens, because, of course, Sverdlovsk or Ekaterinburg is where U-2 pilot Francis Gary Powers was shot down in May, 1960, trying to photograph the very same nuclear installations. And lest one forget, many allege that Lee Harvey Oswald, during his "defection" to the Soviet Union, betrayed the necessary radar secrets and operational parameters of the U-2 that allowed the Soviets to shoot Powers down.

In any case, "George" also related that the uses of Red Mercury could be used in atom bombs in an implosion detonator to compress a plutonium core, while at the same time generating a powerful burst of neutrons to make "the fissioning more efficient."[24] "George" also revealed the fact that many nations were trying quietly to obtain their own supply from the Russian mafia for use in their own nuclear programs, including, predictably enough, Saddam Hussein's Iraq, and much more importantly, Japan.[25]

Wierdly enough, the story of Red Mercury first surfaced publicly in post-Communist Russia, where Presidential Order number 29, signed by Boris Yeltsin, authorized a company called Promecology, headed by one Oleg Sadykov, to sell up to ten tons of the substance annually, an amount with an estimated value of 3.5 *billion* dollars![26] As if this were not enough, Sadykov claimed other unusual properties for the substance, among them "faster semiconductors" and newer, "cheaper methods of energy production."[27]

---

[22] Sverdlovsk has been re-named to its pre-revolutionary name of Ekaterinburg. This is the same city where Tsar Nicholas, Tsaritsa Alexandra and their family were murdered by the Bolsheviks.

[23] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 37.

[24] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 58.

[25] Ibid., p. 59.

At this point, "George"

> Was getting into his stride, disclosing that red mercury, in the form that was leaking on to the black market, perished after several months and became useless – unless buyers had the facility to refresh it. When it was delivered from the production plant, it was in the form of a dark-red honey-like liquid, but as it deteriorated it turned into a powdery sludge.[28]

Presumably "refreshing" means to re-insert the substance into a reactor core, and this may explain the reason that the Soviet military developed a series of small, portable reactors capable of being transported, presumably for battlefield use.

All of the claims put forward by the Russians in the immediate post-Communist era about "doubling yields" with a "hundredfold reduction in weight," about "red mercury" and new semiconductors and cheaper energy, led British nuclear physicist Frank Barnaby to come independently to the same conclusions as did Dr. Sam Cohen; all these claims "must mean that Russia is using a new technology unreported in Western scientific literature," since "such a tiny type of nuclear warhead would be impossible to construct using fissile materials such as plutonium-239 and uranium-235."[29]

---

[26] Ibid., p. 60. This amount of material seems excessively large for such an allegedly rare and costly substance to produce, and is one reason many official atomic energy agencies in the West dismissed the Red Mercury Legend as a hoax or as deliberate Russian disinformation.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p.62.

b. The Recipe and "Xerum 525"

Then, even more strangely, as stories about the strange substance began to appear in the western press, the Russians themselves appeared to be mystified about its properties, for according to a top secret KGB report obtained by British journalist Gwynne Roberts – a report prepared by the KGB's First Chief Directorate, Technical Branch for Boris Yeltsin himself – a few Western companies were also conducting their own very secret research into the substance, including Rockwell, General Dynamics, British Aerospace, and – perhaps with its own dark significance – the German armaments and aerospace firm Messerschmidt-Bölkow-Blohm, and the giant German electrical company, Siemens.[30] The same memorandum also noted that the compound was "a mercury salt of antimony with the formula $Hg_2Sb_2O_7$"[31] and that it was first produced in the Soviet Union near the high energy physics research institute in Dubna in 1968,[32] which possessed a reactor "*suited to implanting* the material with strontium, caesium and other isotopes."[33] The reactor was suitable, in other words, for *"salting"* or *"doping"* the Red Mercury with other highly radioactive material. At this point, the resemblance of the substance – heavy liquid, high radioactivity, deep wine colour – to the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525" should be obvious.[34]

---

[30] Ibid., p. 64.

[31] Hounam and McQuillan also report that a substance reported to be Red Mercury was analyzed by the Bulgarians and found to be an amalgam of mercury and tellurium.(p. 112)

[32] The year 1968 is significant, since this is the first mention in western literature of the same compound, being investigated by explosives manufacturer DuPont.

[33] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p.. 64, emphasis added.

[34] Another form of "salting" appeared to be a compound of mercury antimony oxide "which came with a stick of uranium down the middle." (Ibid., p. 120) In regard to the topic of "salting", one South African researcher, in response to all the claims being made for the substance, concluded that without the presence of some radioactive isotope, "if (red mercury) is used in nuclear weapons at all, it may only be as a carrier for radioactive isotopes….Without enriched uranium or plutonium, red mercury remains only a toxic hazard." (Ibid., p. 126).

Whatever "Red Mercury" may be chemically, certain conclusions about its confection, about it "recipe", may now be drawn:

(1) Mercury itself was most likely involved in whatever compound was actually made – whether that compound was mercury antimony oxide or not – since as a high density liquid metal which can exist in its own radioactive isotope forms, it is an ideal vehicle for "salting" or "doping" with other more radioactive materials;
(2) Mercury also has its own peculiar stability properties which manifest themselves when it is highly stressed, as pointed out by Gerlach's article, and as claimed in ancient texts relating to "mercury vortex engines";
(3) With such a highly "salted" compound, as "Xerum 525" appears to have been, utilized in a device such as the Bell, any number of strange properties may have been discovered by the Germans; and finally and most importantly,
(4) It appears that the essential step in its confection is to subject whatever compound "Red Mercury" represents to exposure in a reactor core. More about this crucial point in a moment.

British physicist Frank Barnaby, on the basis of classified reports recovered from Russia, learned that the chemical composition of the substance prior to its immersion in a reactor core was also important, for the compound mercury antimony oxide was purportedly then "dissolved in ordinary mercury metal, the type used in thermometers. It was then put in containers which were placed in the heart of a nuclear reactor for about twenty days. Under intense neutron bombardment, and perhaps with the addition of catalysts, the material was transformed and became a very thick and heavy cherry-red liquid."[35] Authors Hounam and McQuillan add an interesting comment:

---

[35] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 127.

> Apparently the procedure was quite complicated and entailed mixing the powder with ordinary mercury in roughly equal molar weights, then adding other chemicals whose recipe was a closely guarded secret. After irradiation, the mixture was heated to evaporate the remaining mercury metal, leaving behind the gel.[36]

One may guess that perhaps the "secret ingredients" were hafnium or tantalum isomers, for reasons that will be apparent in a moment.

Note again the crucial requirement of immersion in a *reactor* for the precise purpose of subjecting the compound to high intensity neutron bombardment. We are now in a position to speculate why the material has such a high alleged density, and why it seems to "decay" after a few months, requiring "refreshing" by re-immersion in a reactor, for the chemical composition may be such that it allows the compound to absorb an excessively high and abnormal number of neutrons, which then slowly decays again. This would explain its extreme density. Likewise readers of my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, will also recall mention of the Japanese intercept detailing German research in extremely high density materials such as obtained in certain types of *stars*, an allusion, perhaps, to precisely such German work with high density radioactive compounds immersed in nuclear reactors.

Finally, if the "recipe" for the confection of Red Mercury sounds a bit familiar, it should, for after all, it was Gerlach who hinted at what the possible inspiration may have been: alchemy.

c. Nuclear Isomers, Spin, GRASERS, and Gerlach

But why isotopes of hafnium and tantalum as the "secret ingredient(s)"? These substances are a strange form of radioactive isotope known as nuclear *isomers*, and isomers have some very strange properties indeed. Discovered in 1921, isomers are simply metastable or "extremely stable" forms of atoms that are brought about by a state of excitation of protons or neutrons in their nucleus, such that they require a *change in their spin* before they can release their pent-up energy. We are now a step closer to understanding the Bell, since it now appears that the device, due to the presence of "Xerum 525" was much *more* than a high-voltage, counter-rotating plasma trap as conjectured by Witkowski. It certainly *was* that, but it was also a kind of reactor as well, designed to release nuclear energy by extremely high stresses brought about by high speed rotation and, in my own speculative reconstruction, by abrupt high voltage direct current pulsations.

---

[36] Ibid., note 1, p. 127.

Most isomers have unusually short half-lives, but in the case of tantalum-180m, its half life is an extremely long 10^{15} years, or ten *quadrillion* years. And oddly enough, tantalum-180m is thought to have some connection to exploding stars, to supernovas.

Hafnium-178-2m is yet another metastable isomer, with a half life of a modest 31 years, but also apparently the isomer with the highest excitation energy, giving for one kilogram approximately a quarter megaton of yield of energy, mostly in the form of gamma rays. As such, it is one substance being investigated by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) as a possible *ballotechnic* explosive, capable not only for use in "pure fusion" bombs but also as a means for pumping a gamma-ray laser, or GRASER, recalling the Mossbauer Effect outlined in the previous chapter.

Note now what we have:

(1) Isomers release their energy through changes in their spin;
(2) Nuclear magnetic spin resonance and gravity are the specialized fields of Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, project head of the Bell;
(3) The Bell employed a heavy liquid substance called "Xerum 525", probably a "salted" compound based in part on mercury;
(4) This compound, since it was "salted", depended for its creation on immersion over a period of time in a reactor core to subject the material to neutron bombardment, creating a substance of abnormally high density;
(5) World War Two Japanese intercepts refer to Nazi research in extremely high density materials for fusion research;
(6) Descriptions of Red Mercury are eerily similar to "Xerum 525, and Red Mercury is purportedly a "ballotechnic"

chemical explosive capable of generating fusion bombs without the need for an atom bomb;

(7) "Xerum 525" was subjected to high velocity counter-rotation or stress inside the Bell;

(8) "Xerum 525" may also have been subjected to repeated abrupt extremely high voltage direct current pulses inside the Bell;

(9) Gerlach wrote, nine years before the Nazis took power, of the need for a large scale project to investigate the phenomenon of mercury transmutation when mercury was subjected to precisely such stressing;

(10) Other "occult" and "esoteric" sources have long alleged that some similar such project was conducted in secret, by various secret societies in Germany prior to the Nazi era.

All these things combined tend to corroborate the notion that not only does the Bell represent a project most likely carried out over a long period of time, a project that the Nazis *inherited* from Weimar Germany and not one that they *initiated*, but it also corroborates the notion that at least *some* of this technology, probably in rudimentary form, made its way into the Soviet Union after the war, where it became the basis for the Russians' own research into ballotechnics and their peculiar properties.

C. Back to the Nazi Atom Bomb: The Implications of the Ohrdruf Test Reconsidered

But all these things not only suggest but *require* the use of a reactor in the confection of the compound, and this is problematic, since, after all, the Nazis were not supposed to have been successful in building a reactor. After all, even on the most radical reconstruction of their nuclear program, one that would allow them the achievement of a *uranium* fueled atom bomb, they never had a plutonium bomb because they were unable to synthesize that element in a reactor. No reactor, no plutonium bomb. No reactor, no "ballotechnic", no ability to "salt" a compound like "Xerum 525" by neutron bombardment – and neutron bombardment and absorption is the only conceivably effective way to achieve anomalously high density materials, highly speculative though these thoughts may be.

All these considerations lead inevitably back to the alleged German test of a small critical mass, high yield atom bomb at or near the Ohrdruf troop parade ground on March 4, 1945.[37]

1. *The Claims for the Ohrdruf Test*

In order to appreciate the significance of the Ohrdruf atomic bomb test for the story of the Bell being developed here, it is necessary to reprise some of the remarks I made in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* for readers who may not have read that book, or who may not be familiar with the Ohrdruf story. The test was first brought to the attention of the German researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner by an elderly German expatriate in Argentina by the name of Adolf Bernd Freier, who shortly before his death, told of the test of an atom bomb on the troop parade ground near the village of Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. At this point, it is necessary to cite my remarks from *Reich of the Black Sun* rather extensively, in order to highlight the problems it poses:

> In any case, the most problematical aspect of the alleged test of an atom bomb by the Nazis in the Orhdruf-Three Corners region of Thuringia comes from a rather specific, and rather startling, assertion. According to Freier, the test took place on March 4, 1945 at the old troop parade ground at Ohrdruf. There, a small scaffold about 6 meters high had been erected, at the top of which a small "atomic weapon"[38] was placed. The weapon, according to Freier, was "*100 g*", a mere one hundred grams!
>
> This is one of the most significant, and highly problematical, allegations regarding the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project, made by someone supposedly involved in it, for as will be immediately obvious, 100 grams is *far* short of the 50 or so *kilo*grams of critical mass needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, as has been seen, and it is still well below the amount needed for the critical mass for a typical

---

[37] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 80-86.

[38] "A-Waffe", the wording again is not "Atombombe" but only *A-waffe*, or "A-weapon".

plutonium bomb. Yet, Freier is insistent upon this point, and moreover alleges that all the "slaves", the luckless concentration camp victims that were forced to take part in the test, within a circle of 500-600 meters from ground zero were killed.[39] This would give an area of approximately 1 to 1.2 kilometers of blast damage, roughly the effect of a modern tactical nuclear bomb. Such a blast radius would require an *enormous* amount of the then available conventional explosives, and that amount would far exceed the mere 100 grams Freier alleges for the device. These points indicate that the "A-Waffe: or "atomic weapon" was in fact a fully fledged atom bomb. So how does one explain the *extraordinarily small critical mass*, especially since the Manhattan Project was aiming for a uranium critical mass of around 50 kilograms?

The question deserves serious consideration, for it affords yet another possible clue – if the allegation is to be credited with accuracy – into the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project. We have seen already that the project was developed under several different and discreet groups for reasons partly due to security, and for reasons partly due to the *practical* nature of the German program…..The *real* atom bomb development occurred far from the prying eyes of Allied intelligence, under the auspices of the Reichspost and more importantly, under the direct auspices of the SS.

The second fact of the German atom bomb project we have likewise previously encountered: its emphasis on what was *practically achievable during the war.* Hence, while the Germans *knew* of the possibilities of plutonium and a plutonium-based atom bomb, and therefore knew that a functioning reactor used to produce plutonium for bombs would thereby enable Germany to develop *more* bombs for the same investment of fissile material, they also knew that a major technical hurdle lay across the path: the development of a successful reactor in the first place. Thus, as has been previously argued, they opted to develop a uranium-based bomb only, since uranium could be enriched to weapons grade purity *without* the necessity of the development of a reactor, and since they already possessed the technologies to do so, if employed *en masse.* Like its American Manhattan Project counterpart, the SS-run program relied on massive numbers of enrichment units to separate and purify isotope.

Now let us extend this line of reasoning further. Germany was also seeking to be able to deploy such bombs as warheads on its rockets. And that meant, given their limited lift capabilities, that the weight of the warheads had somehow to be *reduced* by several orders of magnitude for their rockets to be able to carry them. And there is an economic factor. Knowing that their industrial capacity would be strained by the effort, even with the help of tens of thousands of slave

---

[39] Citing Meyer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe,* p. 83.

> laborers from the camps, another problem may have presented itself to the Germans, a problem illumined for them by their own knowledge of the possibilities offered by plutonium-based bombs: *How does one get more bang for the Reichsmark without the use of plutonium? Is there a way to rely on less uranium in a critical mass assembly than is conventionally thought?*[40]

And at this point, the reader will recall the history of nuclear weapons generations given earlier in this chapter, for there is such a way, via "boosted fission," i.e., through the addition of some high neutron emitting source to the atomic fuel to spit extra fast neutrons into the chain reaction than would be caused by the critical mass itself. In short, the Germans were already thinking in terms of *second* generation nuclear weaponry.[41] And one such neutron emitting source is precisely deuterium and tritium;

> Thus, "boosted fission" would have afforded the German bomb program a practical way to increase the number of bombs available to them, *and* a reliable method for achieving an uncontrolled nuclear fission reaction with lower purity of enriched material. It is perhaps quite significant, then, that Freier's testimony concerning the Three Corners underground weapons factories also mentions the existence of an underground heavy water plant in the facilities, for heavy water, of course, contains atoms of deuterium and tritium (heavy hydrogen atoms with one and two extra neutrons in the nucleus respectively).[42]

And there I let matters lie, without going into further comment on the scientific and historical implications of Freier's allegations. That some sort of atomic test *did* take place in Ohrdruf seems apparent from the physical evidence of the region: old tree stumps are flattened in a radial pattern from a common center, as if blasted away in a huge explosion. And the region also has the highest background radiation of any area of modern Germany, a background radiation that is anomalous.

But let us consider, for a moment, the implication of that 100 grams. *If* that 100 grams represented *plutonium*, then it is just barely conceivable that the weapon tested at Ohrdruf was a fully functional "boosted fission" atom bomb, for that is just about the minimum possible amount of plutonium for a conventional *modern* boosted fission tactical nuclear bomb.

---

[40] *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 83-85, emphasis in the original.

[41] Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 85.

[42] *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 85

But therein, too, lies the problem, for that very small amount of plutonium would require by the nature of the case a very *high purity* of plutonium. It would require not only a *reactor* technology, but a rather well-advanced one, and of course, German failures in building a conventional graphite moderated reactor are well-known, as are Heisenberg's own clumsy attempts at construction of a heavy-water moderated reactor towards the end of the war.[43] What all this leads up to is that *a third generation* nuclear weapon, not a neutron bomb as alleged by William Lyne, nor a "boosted fission" bomb as I implied in *Reich of the Black Sun,* but a pure fusion device, a pure *hydrogen bomb*, may in fact been the type of device tested at Ohrdruf, one relying, not on *fission,* but on *the fusion of heavy hydrogen*, to achieve its yield. Only such a device is in keeping with the very small weight and very high yield recorded for it. That the Germans had the technology to produce the heavy water for such a device is known. But to produce a conventional explosive to achieve the extremely high density and fusion energies necessary is another matter,

---

[43] The characterization of Heisenberg's notorious "Leipzig" experimental reactors as "failures" is another legacy and component of the Allied Legend. The fact that the reactors caught fire and were barely able to be put out, in a kind of proto-Chernobyl meltdown, is based on the assumption that Heisenberg was *attempting* to construct a conventional reactor. But as a close examination of the experiments and aims he was trying to achieve will demonstrate, Heisenberg, like his Manhattan Project counterparts, was "tickling the dragon's tail" and attempting to measure neutron cross-sections, all for the probable purpose of obtaining "the next best thing", namely, an atomic "fizzle" bomb, or "semi-fission" bomb. In *that* respect, Heisenberg's experiments were very successful, and doubtless pointed the way to quick achievement of such a bomb. Such a bomb, moreover, placed in the warhead of a V-2, would *not* require the heavy mechanism of a cannon shooting the critical mass together, since it could be assembled by the sheer kinetic energy of the impact of the warhead on the ground, thus creating the "fizzle" explosion, one much larger than the largest conventional bombs, but one still short of the Hiroshima or Nagasaki atom bombs. Precisely just such a concept is behind German atom bomb designs from that period. The following diagram, in fact, is reproduced in Samuel Goudsmit's book as a demonstration of the "failure" of German atom bomb physics during the war, since such a device is unlikely to have fissioned completely:

It will be noted that the bomb contained alternating layers of U^{235} and paraffin, which is used as a moderator to stop thermal neutrons from initiating fission in the uranium until the bomb smashed against the ground, assembling the critical mass. Note also the small sphere in the center of the device. This, like its Manhattan Bomb "Fat Man" counterpart, is an "urchin" of neutron emitting material that is smashed by the plunger, spitting out more thermal neutrons into the chain reaction. In short, this bomb is *designed* to "semi-fission" or "fizzle" with a colossal explosion and, more importantly, being a ground impact device, to churn up a massive cloud of deadly radioactivity. Additionally, there is the extremely *slight* chance that the critical mass assembly in this device, even though assymetrical, may have been fast enough to achieve full fission, though still well below the levels of efficiency as those achieved in the Little Boy bomb.

unless, of course, one recalls the Bell and its mysterious "Xerum 525" and its eerily peculiar resemblance to the alleged ballotechnical explosive compound Red Mercury.

But we are still not off the hook yet, for *every* mention of ballotechnics, from the alleged "Red Mercury" to exotic nuclear isomers, require at some point in the recipe a process of synthesis of the compound by neutron bombardment and absorption in a reactor. In short, one still requires a *reactor*. So both the Ohrdruf test, and the Bell's "Xerum 525" point unmistakably to the existence of a well-developed, though *still quite hidden and unknown reactor technology inside Nazi Germany*. And since their graphite moderated reactors were known to be failures, and since Heisenberg's heavy water moderated reactors and their "failures" are also well-known proto-Chernobyl "disasters", what other options were there?

2. The Implied Existence of a Reactor Technology: Hartek and Houtermann's "Cold" Reactors and the "Recipe"

Oddly enough, it is the physicist Fritz Houtermanns and the nuclear chemist Paul Hartek who point clearly and unequivocally to the existence within Nazi Germany of some very unusual, and even very refined, ideas for reactors with unusual, and very *available* moderators.

Hartek had early on hit upon the simple expedient of using tons of dry ice as a moderator in a reactor, a solution that avoided the cooling and energy problems of a conventional graphite reactor and moreover served his purposes well: the creation of large amounts of nuclear waste to be dusted over enemy cities.[44]

More significantly, as outlined in chapter nine of *Reich of the Black Sun,* Houtermanns pointed the way to a *methane* cooled and moderated reactor. In any case, in both concepts one sees the same principles and aims at work: the creation of a relatively "cool" reactor that avoided the problems associated with graphite, and the creation of a reactor *for the express purpose of creating large quantities of isotopes.* Both concepts, in any case, would have leant themselves rather more easily to the insertion of materials for "salting" via neutron bombardment. In other words, both types of reactor, and especially some version of Houtermanns' methane reactor, would have been ideal designs for creating a "doped" compound such as Red Mercury or Xerum 525.

---

[44] Q.v.. Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Vengeance Weapons: From V1 to Vimana*, pp. 45-49.

The question of whether or not the Nazis would have actually constructed and operated some version of either reactor is a moot one, since the SS-run black projects would have concealed their existence quite successfully, as it did with the uranium enrichment facilities at Auschwitz. Given the nature of this program it is extremely *unlikely* that the SS would *not* have attempted from the earliest date feasible to construct and operate a reactor. The existence of the Ohdruf test and the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525" point clearly, if not entirely conclusively, to the existence of just such a hidden and operational reactor technology inside the Third Reich, a technology that, as the existence of "Xerum 525" indicates, was used in some very exotic materials engineering. The Bell itself may thus be not only related to such technology, but it is also conceivable that it might, to coin a pun, be at its nucleus. Not only may the Germans have discovered some prototypical ballotechnic in "Xerum 525" but they may also have discovered some effect similar to the Mossbauer Effect.

D. Briefly Back to Roswell and MAJIC-12: General Nathan Twining's "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" Reconsidered

Readers of my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* will doubtless be thinking that all this discussion about radioactively "doped" materials such as Red Mercury and "Xerum 525," as well as all the discussion on high electrical discharges and spin, sounds vaguely familiar. But for those for whom it does not, the following MAJIC-12 document, the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," prepared as a technical overview of the craft and technologies recovered at Roswell, is cited just as it was cited in *Reich of the Black Sun:*

> 18. The following elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant that was found inside ULAT-1:[45]
> a. UF6 in metallic form;[46]
> b. Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
> c. Water and uranium tetrafluoride;
> d. Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
> e. Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;
> f. U-235 in metallic form;
> g. Plastic-like material similar to NE 102;
> h. Beryllium;
> i. Pure aluminum;
> h.(sic) Thorium isotope material;
> j. (sic) plutonium powder.[47]

As I point out in *Reich of the Black Sun,* this list of materials, while exotic, was not beyond the technological capabilities of 1940s manufacture, either for Germany or for America. But what *is* unusual is that these materials are all components of what the document itself specifies is a "neutronic engine." Moreover, as other MAJIC-12 documents make clear, some of the scientists consulted by the early Roswell investigators were precisely the Paperclip expatriates Von Braun, Steinhof, and others.

As is likewise observed in *Reich of the Black Sun,* this exotic mixture of materials, like much else in the documents' technical descriptions of the Roswell wreckage, points to technologies clearly associated with the Bell, technologiues similar to "Xerum 525", and thus clearly point to Nazi Germany.[48]

E. A Summary and Conclusions

So, looking back over part two, what does one have?

---

[45] ULAT-1 is the name the document gives to the recovered vehicle.

[46] UF6: uranium hexafluoride.

[47] White Hot Intelligence Estimate, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 294-295. The out-of-alphabetical-sequence itemization is original to the document itself.

[48] *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 301.

1. The Bell represented the culmination of a project possibly begun in the mid-1920s, under the instigation and inspiration of Walther Gerlach;
2. The Bell was intentionally designed, if one combines the insightful views of Witkowski with my own speculations, as “a plasma trap” and *oscillator* designed to subject highly doped radioactive elements in compound with mercury to extremes of mechanical rotation and electrical stress;
3. The purpose of this device may have been, in part, to test the gravitational, vorticular, and “scalar” physics implications of Gerlach’s and his student Hilgenberg’s views of the vorticular structure of matter and of the aether itself, the ultimate ingredients in any planet-busting doomsday weapon;
4. Thus, the project may have been inspired in part by a paleophysical “reconstruction” of ancient esoteric and classical texts regarding the properties of mercury and its “transmutability”, as Gerlach’s references to “alchemy” suggest;
5. Thus, the project may have also been intended to study not only the uses of this theory and technology for energy production and propulsion, but, as the existence of “Xerum 525” and its similarities to the alleged “ballotechnic” Red Mercury suggest, it may also have been intended to create and or investigate the areas of extremely high density matter states and their use as potential weapons in their own right, as distinct from any “scalar” weapons potential as may have existed under point 3 above.

Thus stated it is small wonder that the SS went to such extreme lengths to protect and preserve the secrets of the Bell. After all, what little is known of it is known only from one war crimes trial affidavit of an SS general being tried in post-war Poland for crimes against his own SS, and from the handful of surviving concentration camp victims who worked on the project or in its immediate environs, and who witnessed its effects. And of course, one of its original team members, Dr. Kurt Debus, was subsequently employed by NASA in a very critical position: as a director of the Kennedy Space Flight Center in Florida. Interestingly enough, Debus *never once* mentioned any connection, or gave any inkling, of the existence of a project as secret and as advanced as the Bell. Were it not for the action of the Polish government declassifying SS General Sporrenberg's – the general who was actually tasked with murdering the Bell's research technicians for the SS - war crimes trial affidavit, were it not for the stories of the few remaining eyewitnesses, and for the efforts of Igor Witkowski, nothing whatsoever would be known of it to this day.

But what they *do* tell is enough, if one follows the technical and theoretical clues through to their modern physics analogues, for they tell of a physics, a technology, a *propulsion* and a *weaponry* so advanced and so potentially destructive, that their *conceptual* basis remains hidden and cloaked behind the "public consumption physics" of relativity and an equally if not more severely flawed nineteenth century electrodynamics. Something else altogether occurred in Nazi Germany; some other paradigm was adopted early on and pursued with all the economic and scientific resources and intellectual brilliance that a modern and technologically sophisticated great power could muster. A whole new paradigm of physics – a combination of vortex aether, scalar, quantum-electrodynamic and nuclear physics – appears not only to have been outlined, but *conceptually and experimentally developed*. And if the speculation introduced here is correct, the Bell may represent a project begun approximately nine years before the Nazis even took power.

And the SS murdered its own to keep it a secret.

It stands to reason, then, that no personage, no matter how lofty, would be secure from a similar fate, if he threatened to expose the existence of such a technology or to expose the groups continuing to develop it in the utmost occulted secrecy.

Igor Witkowski's Sketch of the Bell
(Courtesy Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

"Myron's" Sketch of the Kecksburg Acorn,
Allegedly Taken to Wright Patterson Air Force Base where he glimpsed it.

Part Three:
"The Brotherhood":
NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12

"BARNEY
(He takes care to be extremely precise.)
There was a row of windows. A huge row of windows. Only divided by struts – or structures that prevented it from being one solid window. Or then – it would have been one solid window. And the evil face on the –
(He starts to say "leader.")
He looks like a German Nazi. He's a Nazi…"
(There is a questioning tone in his voice.)
DOCTOR
"He's a Nazi. Did he have a uniform?"
BARNEY
"Yes."
DOCTOR
"What kind of uniform?"
BARNEY
"He had a black scarf around his neck, dangling over his left shoulder."
Barney Hill to psychiatrist Benjamin Simon, M.D., under hypnosis,
From John G. Fuller's *The Interrupted Journey*, p. 116.

"The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!...They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is who ***is in power.****"*
Jack Ruby on the JFK assassins,
In Kenn Thomas and Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control Oswald, and JFK: Were we Controlled?,* p. 102.

8.

"The Day After Corso:"

More MAJIC 12 Documents in the Light of Nazi Technology

"My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program."[1]

"The fact that this craft and other flying saucers... seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war."[2]
Col. Philip J. Corso

The old adage has it that a picture is worth a thousand words. So, in this chapter of extensive documentary analysis and comparison of their contents with known Nazi technology, perhaps *two* pictures will be an adequate backdrop for our discussion. I am not the first to notice this comparison, nor, I imagine, will I be the last. Nonetheless, it is worth mentioning again that fact which most UFOlogists know: that the "modern era" of the UFO began with pilot Kenneth Arnold sighting several silvery metal objects skipping across the skies of Washington state while he was flying his private plane. Arnold's sighting, just a few days before the celebrated Roswell incident, inaugurated the modern era of the UFO.

---

[1] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, Ret.), with William J. Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 4.

[2] Ibid.

Kenneth Arnold and his Sketch of His UFO, 1947

But few are aware of the peculiar resemblance of Arnold’s “UFO” to a piece of very real, and very German, hardware already flying in 1939. the Flying Wing of the Horten Brothers.

The Horten Brothers' Flying Wing over Göttingen in 1939

And a close comparison of Arnold's sketch with the Horten brothers' designs for a jet-powered flying wing will exhibit even stronger parallels.

RLM

Flugzeugtypenblatt

Baumuster: „Horten IX“
Bauausführg.: V1, V2.
Baureihe:

Bildskizze
Maßstab 1:100
Maße in mm

150 l
150 l
600 l
360 l
Draufsicht
Vorderansicht
Schnitt A-B
Schnitt C-D
Schnitt E-F

The Hortens’ Design for a Jet Powered Flying Wing

So, with this pictorial backdrop, let us now review some of the more notorious MAJIC-12 documents.

A. MAJIC-12 Documentary Analysis

Many UFOlogists took their cue from Frank Edwards' bestselling *Flying Saucers, Serious Business,* maintaining that the early post-war UFO activity was reconnaissance of our military bases, and particularly, of our atomic testing:

> To this growing list of such "coincidences" we should by all means add the following cases:
>
> The explosions of the first manmade atomic bombs in 1945 were followed by the appearance of UFO's in numbers in 1949….
>
> The 1947 mass appearance of UFO's over the United States included numerous sightings around our atomic installations at Hanford and Oak Ridge, as well as the great scarred area near Alamagordo, New Mexico, where we had fired our first atomic device.[3]

This idea was picked up by Stanton Friedmann and others, who maintained the very plausible scenario that E.T. was monitoring our burgeoning nuclear and soon to be thermonuclear military capabilities, as any prudent intelligent society would monitor the military activities of a potential threat.

So far, so good.

But then Friedmann and others failed to notice the significance of the parenthetical statements Edwards himself makes in the above quotation at the ellipsis, statements I deliberately omitted from the above quotation:

> [The two bombs were exploded over Japan: the 1946 UFO's were over Scandinavia and Russia. If they were looking for the source of those atomic flashes, they had the right latitude but the wrong longitude.][4]

But, given the speculative history recounted in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* and the circumstantial case presented in it for German tests of nuclear devices in 1944 and early 1945 in the Baltic and in Thuringia, then the logic takes on a whole new context and sinister significance. If "E.T." was indeed monitoring atomic tests and human intentions, then the 1946 "fly-bys" over the Baltic and Scandinavia were indeed at the right place.

---

[3] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business* (London: Mayflower-Dell, 1967), pp. 136-137.

[4] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business,* p. 137.

And if one presses the logic a bit more, then it would appear that where the Nazis and their advanced technology went, E.T. and his reconnoitering UFOs were not far behind.

Which brings us at last to Roswell, to MAJIC-12, to Col. Philip J. Corso's well-known version of events and his explanation of the "real origin" of certain technologies, and of course, to the New Mexico Nazis.

While more will be said about Col. Corso's "Roswell-ET" thesis of the origin of some technologies typical of the mid-to-late 20th century, it is worth citing his own words here, since they bear directly on the alleged MAJIC-12 documents examined below:

> My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber-optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. Yet the seeds for all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.[5]

The thesis is quite clear, an extraterrestrial craft crashed and was recovered near Roswell, New Mexico, and the recovered extra-terrestrial technology was back-engineered, leading directly to the integrated circuit via the transistor, to fiber optics, to the laser, and a host of other devices and technologies. This thesis must be born in mind as the following MAJIC-12 documents are analyzed, for we shall return to it at the end of this chapter.

Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood are well-known for their document authentication efforts concerning the MAJIC-12 "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents. Some of these documents they published in a book, which, according to the statements on their own website, argue conclusively for the existence of "ET" and the exotic "ET" origin of the crashed and recovered craft.

---

[5] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, ret), *The Day After Roswell,* p. 4.

However, some alleged MAJIC-12 documents that are *not* included in Robert and Ryan Wood's MAJESTIC-12 book, strongly if not conclusively indicate the continuation of an independent Nazi development of advanced aerodynes and propulsions systems begun during the war. These documents furthermore imply a clear connection between MJ-12 and the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, and the subsequent mysterious death of former CIA Director William Colby.

These documents, analyzed individually in this chapter, are:

1. A Memorandum of the Air Materials Command, Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio, classified SECRET and dated in September of 1947, to Brigadier General George Schulgen at the Offices of the Commanding General of the U.S. Army Air Forces;
2. A Memorandum of a "Research and Development Laboratory" Concerning Flying Saucers submitted to the Commanding General, Air Materials Command, Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio, and also to the Attention of Brigadier C. P. Cabell as USAAF Headquarters in Washington, dated 2 September (1947), with no classification indicated;
3. An apparent NSA Intercept between a American agent Code-named "Joshua" to a Soviet counterpart, mentioning "33 investors" as possible independent sources of funding for Soviet SDI research and development;
4. A Memo from "Thomas Cantwheel" Concerning Recovery, Building, and Test-Flight of so-called "S" Craft based on Recovery of Crashed Vehicle in Louisiana in 1942;
5. A Letter from "Source 1" to Timothy Cooper connecting MJ-12 to the Assassination of President Kennedy, dated June 23, 1999;
6. A Second Letter from "Source 1" to Timothy Cooper outlining significant Details of MJ-12 Operations, including its alleged privatization by President Nixon in 1969, dated July 7, 1999;

7. Dr. Edward Teller’s Pitch to President Reagan for SDI, no date and no classification;
8. Annex C Fragment indicating MJ-12 involvement in assassination of Secretary of War James Forrestal;
9. Double Top Secret Letter from President Franklin D. Roosevelt to General Marshal, concerning recovered Cape Girardeau Craft in 1941, dated February 22/24, 1944;
10. Top Secret Letter from President Franklin D. Roosevelt to General Marshall concerning recovery of crashed vehicle, dated February 27, 1942;
11. The “Bowen UFO Encyclopedia.”

In analyzing these documents, I have retyped them word for word as they appear on the Wood’s website, preserving the various font style changes, and noting page breaks in the original documents as follows: “===END===” or “====END PUBLICLY RECEIVED DOCUMENT====” or some similar notation. All italicized portions are emphases *added* to the documents by me to highlight those aspects discussed in the analysis sections which immediately follow each document. Such italicized portions do not occur in the documents themselves unless otherwise noted. I have also indicated blacked out text by strings of questions marks - ?????? – and attempted to preserve all capitalization.

Finally, for purposes of this chapter, authenticity issues are not discussed, since this would make an already lengthy book grow to enormous proportions. Instead, the documents are presumed to exist in the fuzzy area between “plain straight legitimate” and “cleverly concocted disinformation,” i.e., as even in the latter case containing some legitimate information. I do *not* believe that the documents are hoaxes outright. That being said, on to the documents themselves.

1. Document 1: Air Materials Command Secret Memo to Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, Sept 1947:

The text of the document is as follows, all emphasis has been added:

~~SECRET~~

HEADQUARTERS
AIR MATERIAL COMMAND

1. REPLY ADDRESS BOTH
COMMUNICATION AND ENVELOPE TO COMMANDING
GENERAL, AIR MATERIAL
COMMAND, ATTENTION
FOLLOWING OFFICE SYMBOL
TSDIN____________________

TSDIN/HMM/ig/6-4100
WRIGHT FIELD, DAYTON, OHIO

SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning “Flying Discs”

TO: Commanding General
Army Air Forces
Washington 25, D. C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called “Flying Discs.” This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division T-3. This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel form the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2, Office, Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.

2. It is the opinion that:

a. The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.

b. There are objects probably approximating the shape of a disc, *of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.*

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as *extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly* *aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*

e. The apparent common description of the objects is as follows: -

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

U-39552

~~SECRET~~

=========[PAGE BREAK]=======

~~SECRET~~

Basic Ltr for CG, AMC, WF to CO, AAF, Wash. D. C. subj “AMC Opinion Concerning “Flying Discs”.

(2) Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted.

(6) Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.

f. It is possible within the present U. S. knowledge – provided extensive detailed development is undertaken – to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in sub-paragraph (a) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any developments in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some

high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.

(2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered vehicles which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.

(3) The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.

3. It is recommended that:-

a. Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code Name for a Detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to the Army, Navy, Atomic Energy Commission, JRDS, the Air Force Scientific Advisory Group, NACA, and the RAND and NEPA projects for comments and recommendations, with a preliminary report to be forwarded within 15 days of receipt of the data and a detailed report thereafter every 30 days as the investi-

~~SECRET~~

-2- U-39552

==========[END]========

ANALYSIS:

1. Note that no mention is made of the ET Hypothesis for the origin of recovered vehicular technology. This is extremely odd, for this fact places the memo in the same class as General Twining's "Air Accident Report" as reviewed in my *Reich of the Black Sun.*[6] Odder still is the fact that this date is also in the same approximate time frame as the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", which, according to the analysis in *Reich of the Black Sun*,[7] contains two contradictory data-sets – the technological arguing for

---

[6] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 303-308.

[7] Ibid., pp. 287-302.

terrestrial origins and the biological arguing for ET origins – that are obfuscated in favor of the ET Hypothesis of its origin. The curious omission of the mention of any ET Hypothesis as an explanation of the craft's origins can be explained in one of two ways:

   a. As the document itself avers, the origins of the craft are terrestrial, even though its technology is exotic; or,
   b. The absence of mention of the ET Hypothesis may be a reflection of a lower level of involvement, i.e., it is not mentioned except in the upper echelons of the organization that is beginning to emerge as "MJ-12". A lower level of involvement, however, is itself odd, since by some accounts the recovered craft was shipped to Wright Field directly from Texas, where it had been flown from Roswell AAFB. Thus, in terms of the internal contents of the document, the stronger of the two interpretations is that no "ET Hypothesis" deep cover story is needed. The recovered craft and its technology are therefore terrestrial, though exotic, in origin and nature.

2. Certain statements in the memo, considered individually and collectively, point to a terrestrial origin for the craft, and given the exotic nature of the recovered technology, these can only come from Nazi Germany:
   a. The craft is "*of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft;*" that is, nothing about the craft suggests to Air Materials Command (AMC) an extra-terrestrial origin; its size is consistent with the size and scale of human physiology;
   b. "The reported operating characteristics such as *extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*" This

statement can be explained by references to known, though exotic, technologies of Nazi secret weapons and their alleged performance characteristics (extreme rates of climb), as well as German progress in remote control of aircraft;[8]

c. The "*Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions"* finds an analogue in the assertions of Vesco and Childress in *Operation Intercept* and *Man-Made UFOs* that the so-called Mark I saucers were but exotic but standard suction (jet) aircraft, which left the telltail contrails.[9] The statement "*Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted,"* may also point to German development under Prof. Dr. Lippisch and others of high performance, high altitude ramjet engines; and finally,
d. The statement "*Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated"* once again indicates much too low a performance for any interplanetary craft, but point much more directly to something terrestrial. It should be noted that this speed is far below the 1200mph reported in the White Hot Intelligence Estimate of the same time period.[10] We are therefore dealing with two different craft, or the same craft has been observed under different circumstances. This very low performance figure may likewise indicate the nature of the document itself as being deliberately concocted disinformation, since such a speed would hardly call

---

[8] Recall the examples of the *Triebflugel* or Professor Lippisch's P-13 ramjet fighter from chapter one.

[9] Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, *Man-Made UFO's: Fifty Years of Suppression* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 177-205.

[10] More will be said on the fact that the figure of 1,200 mph repeatedly appears in UFO articles of the period.

forth a secret memorandum. In my opinion, however, it may simply be due to a observation under low performance conditions.

3. The document concludes with three breathtaking statements that shatter the ET Hypothesis:

   “Due consideration must be given the following:-

   (1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.

   (2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered vehicles which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.

   (3) The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.”

   Note that Air Materials Command, by statements (1) and (3), is not even thinking in terms of a recovered ET vehicle, i.e., nothing about the observed technology is so exotic as to compel the ET explanation. Note also, however, the extraordinarily curious statement in item (2), which suggests either that *nothing* was recovered at Roswell – a conclusion this author rejects – or that AMC has not actually *seen* what was recovered, or that what was recovered was not actually a UFO. Statement (3) would tend to mitigate against the interpretation that AMC has not actually seen what was recovered in the formulation of this memo, since any number of propulsion mechanisms could have suggested themselves to AMC *in the absence of any actual craft to examine*. That is AMC could just as easily have proposed magnetic, electromagnetic, or other forms of field propulsion if its conclusions were only based on the *reports* of the flight performance characteristics of UFOs. Therefore, it is most plausible that AMC had actually seen the craft and based its summary on an actual analysis of its propulsion unit. In this context, statement (3) becomes much more significant, since the *only* other country with a known interest in nuclear means of aircraft propulsion at that time period was Nazi Germany.[11] It is to be recalled that one specific area of research of the *Kammlerstab* was precisely in nuclear aircraft propulsion.

Which leaves the statement *"Due consideration must be given the following: - The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command"* to be explained. First it is to be noted that *no mention* is made of the possibility of the technology being *Soviet.* Secondly, it is clear from the statement itself that AMC considers the possibility that it represents a project so black and secret that it is simply unknown to it. This would also allow the possibility that the technology is the product of a wholly independent project. In short, it allows the idea of a continued and independent Nazi continuation of its wartime projects.

4. These conclusions indicate that AMC is at a loss to explain the actual origin of the craft, though it is clear that it thinks of its origins as strictly terrestrial. *Therefore the combined weight of the statements (1) and (3) at the end of the document point to the existence of a program of exotic aerodyne research and development wholly unknown to the USAAF and its premier air technology analysis unit, the AMC at Wright Field.* Given that the document nowhere mentions the alleged recovery of ET *biology*, this tends to support the conclusions reached in *Reich of the Black Sun* that nothing about the recovered technology or its observed performance characteristics compelled to the conclusion that the craft was ET in origin. Indeed, the document implies the existence of a program, possibly completely independent of the US government, about which AMC knows nothing.

---

[11] See the statements of Tom Agoston referenced in my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 105. Additionally, since the Bell incorporated radioactive material in a device clearly intended in part to research exotic propulsion, it may loosely be described as a form of nuclear propulsion.

2. Document 2: Analytical Report of Research and Develop Laboratory of 2 September (1947)

Research and Development
Laboratory

Analytical Report
IJKAD-2B/AO

2 September

SUBJECT Flying Saucers

TO: Commanding General
Air Material Command
Wright Field
Dayton, Ohio
ATTN: AC/A2-g
Brig. Gen. C. P. Cabell
Headquarters, Army Air Force
Washington 25, D. C.

1. *As requested by your letter of 16 July 1947 this office has produced its conclusions on the manufacture, function and possible origin of the above referenced subject.* On-site preliminary study data provided by personnel of T-2 and T-3, search and recovery team of the AFSWP, *'Paper Clip' personne*l, select personnel of the Army Air Forces Scientific Advisory Group and personnel of the Atomic Energy Commission Advisory Committee was utilized in the construction of our analysis.

2. The analyses of the Office of Research and Development are:

a. Aerodynamics and design evaluation studies performed by the Aircraft, Power Pant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-2 personnel, *has concluded that some nation has reached a stage of flight development in which the present ideas are entirely obsolete.*

b. *A notable advance in reducing drag and high-lifts, wing load is evident in the "cleaned up" refinement in the extreme.* The absence of riveting and surface over-lapping indicates a "simplistic" concept that confronts our technology to match the "careful and well-considered compromises in respect to weight, aerodynamic refinement, and design."

c. The designers have managed to offset Bernouilli's theorem that allows the "total pressure in a flow" to be less at all points; we can liken this to the concept of 'conservation of energy' and their negating friction losses, which would dissipate heat.

d. The airfoil design of the circular wing is similar to the NACA 230 series with the exception to the wing plan form and thickness range requirements. The parasite drag appears to be controlled by the refinement of the design and elimination of protuberances. The induced drag lessens with the circular span inversely with the low aspect-ratio of the wing.

e. The fuselage/hull appears to fall into the seaplane type in concept by manifesting excellent hydrodynamic characteristics of low

-1-

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

"porpoising" tendencies. Conventional surface controls are absent in the wing and cabin portions of the recovered sections though what appears to be tabs or flaps are identified. Because there are no vertical or horizontal stabilizers on the craft, there are no fore-and-aft positions of the wing relative to the fuselage/hull. Wing incidence seems to be pre-selected via *an in-flight trim computer to reduce drag attitude when the wing is at the angle of attack required at high speed* and provide stability to lift the weight of the craft.

Basic ltr fr R&D, to CG, AMC, ATTN HQ, AAF, WASH. D. C.,
AC/AS-Z, MAJIC EYES,
Subj "Flying Saucer".

f. A general description of the craft is presented:

(1) Metallic skin of high polished finish. A comparison of AI3I H1112 steels indicates that the metals used to construct the craft exceed structure, chemical composition and mechanical properties currently under development. Metal specimens were subjected to AI3I S620, AI3I 3140, AI3I

4140, AI3I E4340, AI3I 5149m AU3U 5640, AI3I E 52100, and AI3I 430, 410 and 347 machining tests with negative results.

(2) *Craft designed for high altitude flight. Automatic exhaust orifices were identified. A gyro-controlled wing stabilizer apparently maintains craft in a hover mode.*

(3) *Power plant may consist of a spherical reactor (hydrogen isotope type) connected to propulsion motors.*

(4) 100 ft. in diameter with central section approximately 20 ft. Central cabin may have three flight decks: top level for flight control; central section for equipment and lower section for power plant and landing gear. *Circular wing may have rotating section and adjustable leading edge.*

(5) Top (Dome) may have the ability to recede into central section for high performance operations. Observation blisters are retract (sic) to provide observation top and bottom of wing.

(6) *Construction is based on a 6:1 ratio.*

(7) *Flight instruments and controls are activated by optical wave guide fibers similar to glass rods except they are flexible and have a plastic cladding wrap.* All functions may be operated by touch sensitive of texture sending stimuli. Instruments are covered by a plastic plate and seem to be color coded.

(8) Craft may have all weather navigation capability to allow ‘blind flying’. *Possible television viewing used.*

-2-

===========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. Again, nothing in the document mentions the ET Hypothesis as an explanation for the origin of the recovered vehicle, even though, as indicated by the opening statement, the question of its origin is the very purpose originating the memo in the first place: "*As requested by your letter of 16 July 1947 this office has produced its conclusions on the manufacture, function and possible origin of the above referenced subject.*" Indeed, the document is quite clear in its conclusions that "some *nation* has reached a stage of flight development in which the present ideas are entirely obsolete." If the ET Hypothesis were in view as an explanation of origins, this sentence would have been worded appropriately. And again, it is significant that something about the technology suggested to the Air Force that German Paperclip personnel could shed some light on the subject. The Germans, as has been seen from the chapters in part one, had made great strides in high altitude high performance aircraft. Thus, something about the technology *looked "German."*
2. Thus, this tends in turn to corroborate the notion that at some higher level of the MJ-12 group a deliberate deep cover story of ET origins is being put out in the documents themselves to conceal what is now becoming obvious: such high-altitude high performance craft were the exotic purview and provenance of the highly classified experimental research being done by Nazi Germany, since it is the *only* nation on earth at that time to have possessed, developed, and tested such technology. *Thus, the implicit implication of this statement is that these projects were being carried forward after the war, independently or quasi-independently, by some unknown entity and in some unknown location(s).*
3. The exact methods of this achievement are then clearly specified: "*The designers have managed to offset Bernouilli's theorem that allows the "total pressure in a flow" to be less at all points; we can like this to the concept of 'conservation of energy' and their negating friction losses, which would dissipate heat.*" The mention of Bernouilli's theorem suggests that the aircraft was designed for high performance in the atmosphere, most likely in high altitude. Moreover, the brief

and suggestive mention of the conservation of energy and negation of friction losses also strongly suggests German research into suctioning the boundary layer mentioned by Vesco and Childress in *Man-Made UFOS*, and even more suggestively, to experiments in non-equilibrium thermodynamics, a revolutionary physics concept for that time. These theoretical indicators again point clearly to developments in Nazi Germany, as it was again the only country to have undertaken such research. In this regard, it is once again perhaps significant that the recovered craft was brought to Air Materials Command at Wright Field, where a number of Paperclip scientists and technicians are known to have been employed at the time. This fact suggests once again that something about the craft immediately suggested a German provenance to the American personnel involved in its recovery and analysis.

4. The statement that "Wing incidence seems to be pre-selected via *an in-flight trim computer to reduce drag attitude when the wing is at the angle of attack required at high speed* and provide stability to lift the weight of the craft" mentions specifically an in flight computer. This fact may tend to contraindicate our thesis of continued independent Nazi development of such technologies. While it is true that both the Allies and Germans did develop early digital computers during the war, these were of such bulk and size that the complex calculations needed to perform trim computations would have been impractical on an aircraft, even an unconventional one, *unless the Germans had also incorporated their semi-conductor technology in the development of much smaller computers for such purposes.* While *no* evidence exists that this was ever done, the fact that both computing and prototypical transistor technology were possessed by them during the war means that it merely remained to combine the two. As has been argued in *Reich of the Black Sun*, this combining of highly advanced technologies is a signature and favored method of the *Kammlerstab.* And as was seen in chapter two, the Nazis had made great strides during the war of miniaturizing television cameras for use in guided missiles. Nonetheless, this would

have remained a bulky device, and accordingly, this piece of information argues more persuasively for an E.T. or other exotic origin.

5. As noted, the "*Craft (was) designed for high altitude flight. Automatic exhaust orifices were identified. A gyro-controlled wing stabilizer apparently maintains craft in a hover mode.*" The high altitude was again a characteristic of developments by Dr. Lippisch, Dr. Sanger, and others during the war, and the mention of "exhaust orifices" tends to support the conclusion that this is a suction or ramjet based craft of some sort. Note, however, that apparently the craft is capable of stationary hovering, a fact that would seem to preclude any conventional ramjet craft.
6. The description of a spherical power plant based apparently on hydrogen fusion fits similar descriptions given in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" and General Twining's "Air Accident Report" as discussed in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[12]
7. Note that "the circular wing may have (a) rotating section" or turbine of some sort. Again, this points to the researches of Bellonzo (as reported by Vesco/Childress in *Man-Made UFOs*), Schauberger, Fleissner and others in the Third Reich.
8. The "construction is based on a 6:1 ratio", which is the same ratio as reported in the MJ-12 documents examined in *Reich of the Black Sun.* This would tend to argue quite strongly for the fact that we are dealing with one and the same craft.
9. Note that flight control appears to be based on *"optical wave guide fibers similar to glass rods except they are flexible and have a plastic cladding wrap,"* i.e., on fiber optics. Recall that Col. Corso also mentions this piece of technology as being deliberately ET in origin, and recovered from Roswell.
10. The same cannot be said, however, for the final statement: "*Possible television viewing used.*" As has been seen, the Germans were greatly successful, largely due to their semiconductor achievements and ability to miniaturize klystron tubes, in miniaturizing television cameras to sufficiently small

---

[12] See *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330.

size and weight to be used as guidance systems on their lighter rockets such as the Tonne anti-aircraft missile.

11. Finally and most significantly, it must be noted that this memorandum is addressed to Brigadier General C. P. (Charles Peare) Cabell, who later became Deputy Director of Central Intelligence under Allen Dulles, and who was fired by President Kennedy ostensibly for his part in the Bay of Pigs fiasco. It is also to be noted, as some JFK assassination researchers have pointed out, that Cabell's brother was mayor of Dallas during the assassination, and was instrumental in the last minute change of the motorcade route to divert towards the Texas School Book Depository. We have then, with this document, a clear link from the UFO problem with all its "Nazi implications" as exhibited in the documents thus far examined, via Cabell, to the Kennedy assassination. Given that the origin of the craft in no wise is considered to be extra-terrestrial by the document, but rather to have originated with "some nation," we may safely speculate that there is a "Nazi" aspect not only lurking in the background of the 1947 UFO flap, but in that of the JFK assassination as well.

This UFO-JFK assassination connection is "corroborated" in a letter from Timothy Cooper's anonymous source almost immediately.

3. Document 3: Letter of Source 1 to Timothy Cooper:

Received 6/30/99
/s/ Timothy J Cooper

COPY
FILE

June 23, 1999

Mr. Timothy Cooper
P. O. Box 1206
Big Bear Lake, CA 92315

Mr. Cooper:

I am a retired CIA counterintelligence officer who worked for Jim Angleton from ?? ??????????????? secret files ???????????????????? *sensitive files that would connect MJ-12 to JFK's murder.* This document did not exist officially and has never been disclosed within the agency. AWD was very fearful of disclosure to unauthorized channels and leaks in the White House. I literally snatched the "Directives" from the fire and have kept them safe from review. To allow a review would compromise future directors and put the agency in a difficult position.

I feel the time is fast approaching when the files of the Majestic/Jehovah project will be pried loose and the public's right to know should begin. We in CI[13] have monitored civilian UFO research for a long time and have played a major role in keeping the UFO community busy. ?????????????????? that the MJ-12 Directives be sent to you and hopefully, be disseminated in a responsible manner.

I think your decision to work with Dr. Wood was a good one. He has credibility and good science skills. I hope you have read the BLUE BOOK/MAJIC report with an open mind and a critical eye for detail. This, you might say, is the missing BLUE BOOK files (don't confuse these with Project BLUE BOOK). You need proof and here it is. I don't think you realize it but you and Dr. Wood have started a shit storm. Nixon's SCEO ordered all MJ-12 documentation purged and destroyed. This one was not. This carbon copy is the only link to MJ-12 and don't expect any more in the future. Everything is now on computers and there is no existing paper trail to my knowledge. If you play your cards right, you should make progress with what you have. I caution you to be careful about who you talk to and trust with this information.

FILE

P.S, Not everyone has good intentions watch your ass

==========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

What concerns us here is the brief statement toward the beginning of the document: "secret files ???????????????????? sensitive files that would connect MJ-12 to JFK's murder." We have seen in the analysis of the previous document that a clear connection exists between the UFO recovery program and the JFK assassination, via the memo to Brigadier General C. A. Cabell. This is corroborated by Cooper's anonymous source, who goes a step further by implying the existence of files connecting MJ-12 itself to the assassination. The implication is that, at its highest level, the MAJIC – 12 operation is *its ultimate motivation, behind and higher than, but not in contradiction with, the other lesser motives advanced in JFK assassination literature, e.g., Mafia revenge, CIA revenge, and so on.* This is further corroborated and expanded upon by Cooper's "source" in a second letter a few days later:

---

[13] CI: Counter-intelligence.

4. Document 4: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper Concerning Privatization of MJ-12:

Received 7/9/99 IMPORTANT July 7, 1999
Timothy J Cooper

Please read everything I am about to tell you as the truth. I am not a prankster or a wacko. My reason for typing this letter is to give you the facts as I know them. I am what is called in spy jargon a "walk in." I became such in 1982 when I learned about Bill Moore and his "aviary" sources who were really OSI agents. Unlike yourself and others, *Moore was taken in by the deception about Majestic Twelve and EBE's.* He was promised "inside" information regarding the Roswell case. From what I know about Moore and his desire to be on the "inside" led him to hoax some documents based on material supplied to him by OSI. I think he was so taken in by the material that he believed it himself and went off the deep end. You seemed by what I have been told and what I have read about you on the internet to be a level-headed guy with some real backing and good information on the UFO issue. *You may not know now, but you have some really important stuff that is creating a lot of tension in the UFO community. If you don't, you have better appreciate it. You have been given information that no one has. To make my point a little more clearer, remember a few years back when you got the JFK memo William Colby got fingered in it and someone decided to shut him up before he was questioned about it. Coincidence? No way! He was not the first to be eliminated and won't be the last I assure you.* You have been left alone for the most part I think because you are a nobody in the UFO community and have no credibility with them and that is good. I think "they" wanted it this way. Being a high profile personality is not always a good thing. Look how STF[14] got put on the "watch list" by the OSI.

---

[14] "STF": most likely well-known UFOlogist Stanton T. Friedman.

Too high of a profile and too vocal with national identity. Linda Howe is another example.

IMPORTANT

=======[PAGE BREAK]========

-2-IMPORTANT

When high profile individuals begin making waves with allegations and hard proof they put themselves in very difficult situations in which they have to defend constantly. The demise of several key personalities in just the last five years should tell you something.

Now, I want to fill you in on some things regarding the specific studies and conclusions by the defunct MJ-12 group.

a. MJ-12 does not exist as a government intelligence entity. It ceased to exist in 1969 and became a private concern financed by big money and big science.
b. The group has been called by many names. The most recent one was used in 1992 and was identified by the name JEHOVAH. At one time it was called ZODIAC and may have changed in 1995.
c. The UFO/EBE Working Group is an international consortium financed and supported by some of the biggest money institutions and private industrialists in the world.
d. MJ-12 was a consolidation of two Pentagon projects MAJESTIC and JEHOVAH overseen by a group of twelve high level military, intelligence, and scientific institutions within the defense establishment hence MJ-12. Each code name had classification above TOP SECRET and fell into a classification called MOST SECRET.
e. JEHOVAH was a DoD project to back engineer the hardware research the physics. Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer was appointed by Dr. Bush to head this project. The project name was coined by Albert Einstein in 1949. Oppenheimer held this job until 1953 until the AEC no longer considered him reliable and had his security clearance taken away and lost his government job in 1954.
f. Einstein became unreliable in 1955 and died of "cancer".
g. Oppenheimer continued as a MJ-12 player until his death from "cancer."
h. In 1960 MJ-12 concluded that UFOs were a possible threat to U.S. defenses and could instigate mass paranoia. They also concluded that the EBEs could gain control of U.S. defenses

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-3-IMPORTANT

during a nuclear crisis by interfering with the guidance and targeting computers of the Atlas ICBMs based in Turkey.

j. In 1960, President Eisenhower approved a joint defense plan written by MJ-12 that in the event the U.S. came under a nuclear attack by the USSR through EBE deception the U.S. would not retaliate with proposed USAF SIOP[15] and only after confirmation of UFO misidentification launch surgical strikes on the USSR. The purpose of the strikes was to take out USSR command and control infrastructure preventing an all out nuclear war.

k. During the Cuban Missile Crisis President Kennedy was briefed by MJ-12 and was told that the EBE deception was the reason the Soviets wanted to place first strike nuclear weapons in Cuba and he therefore restricted U.S. nuclear forces from initiating the GRAND TOUR to bomber strikes. General Lemay was so furious with JFK that he secretly gave orders to SAC to go ahead with SIOP in the event the U.S. perceived a first strike warning from Russia.

l. In 1963, JFK sought to ease the uneasy tension by extending cooperation with the USSR in outer space investigation of UFOs through a joint moon project. MJ-12 was opposed to this because they felt the militarization of the moon would place the U.S. in a dangerous situation with the EBEs who control the dark side of the moon.

m. In 1964, President Johnson was briefed by MJ-12 on the dangerous relationship with EBEs' and how they influenced the doctrines and policies of U.S. foreign relations. MJ-12 successfully prevented NICAP representatives from issuing their conclusions on UFOs to government leaders and blocked attempts by NICAP to brief Johnson on the UFO threat. MJ-12 was responsible for this coup.

n. In 1969, President Nixon was briefed by MJ-12 on all aspects of UFO activity and the EBE problem since 1947. Fearing possible leaks within his NSC and national security advisor Kissinger, Nixon approved a Special Classified Executive Order that required the U.S. intelligence community to purge all references to MJ-12 in their UFO files and to destroy documents that could connect him to JFK's assassination by MJ-12. As Vice President, Nixon approved ZR RIFLE written by the 40 Committee (MJ-1 issued new directives that sanctioned JFK's murder) for political assassination operations.

o. After the press learned of the Watergate break in and theft of documents that could link MJ-12 to the 40 Committee, MJ-12 arranged for Nixon's exposure to ZR RIFLE and blackmailed him which led to his resignation.

---

[15] SIOP was the US Air Force's targeting timetable for the nuclear and thermonuclear destruction of strategic targets in the Soviet Union.

p. MJ-12 arranged for the removal of FBI DIRECTOR J. Edgar Hoover in 1972 through "natural causes" because he "knew too much" and had used his contract killers to eliminate unrealiable individuals who could expose MJ-12's existence and activities

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

IMPORTANT

Mr. Cooper, I could go on and on but I think you get the gist of it. I cannot verify everything I have written here but with a little reading and research I think you can judge for yourself whether all this is true or not. Consider the JFK murder for example. Everyone believes he was a victim of a "lone nut" assassin as the Warren Commission Report said (which by the way was pure fiction). It was not the Cuban problem or the Cubans. Cuba was a screen to keep civilian researchers and the Congress away from the true motive for his death. *Simply put, Kennedy would have interfered with MJ-12's effort to come up with a defense and a plausible explanation to the UFO/EBE problem and was too sensitive an issue for interruption even by a president.* Everyone believes that a president is in charge of his own office. That is simply NOT TRUE! Presidents can be and are compromised about issues they don't need to know of. The reason is a simple one. It gives them plausible deniability just like CIA directors who are often asked this question: 'What do we know about UFOs?' Once exposed to the data they are changed and are stuck with this problem: 'What do I tell the President?' You can't tell the President without telling others. There is no such thing as a secret in the White House. Just look at the China espionage case. Until he really needs to know nothing will be told him and that is that. This is the real dilemma for those in "the know" because the EMEs (extraterrestrial materialized entities) have complete control over UFOs (not to be confused with man-made UAVs often mistaken for UFOs for they have been around since the 1950s and are operated and controlled by the USAF, CIA and NRO) and can appear anywhere as anything at any time. Do you understand now? The intelligence behind true UFO sighting cases can materialize and ????????

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-5-IMPORTANT

appear at will to anyone at anytime any place. Why do you think the Air Force wanted Project Blue Book terminated? Because they could not explain them in conventional terms without being laughed at by scientists. After 12,000 cases they had all the evidence they needed and handed it over to the CIA and NSA. *Was it mere coincidence that Blue Book was terminated after Apollo 11 landed on the moon? And, do you think it was mere coincidence that the Dead Sea Scrolls appeared about the same time the UFOs were found in New Mexico?* Everything associated with UFOs has a purpose and so far, no one has figured it out yet. The appearance of UFOs in our century is no accident. Why do you think the other project was called JEHOVAH? Put the two together and see for yourself. It is SPIRITUAL! MJ-12 did and it scared the shit out of them. The 12 Apostles and the 12 created in 1947. One is an antitypical reflection of the other except the antitypical 12 are not spiritual men and couldn't grasp the significance and import of what was happening on the world scene. I know this sounds crazy and unbelievable but it is true, believe me. I have it from reliable sources that the CIA used Jacques Vallee's books as a guide for interpreting the human response to the UFO contact problem and I suggest you do the same. He is studied at the CIA and NSA and is quoted in their literature. One thing that you should concern yourself with and that is the possible undercurrent of image and character assassination that may be used against you if you are taken too seriously by the media and the press. Unless you have strong backing by the responsible members of the UFO

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-6- IMPORTANT

and the media you could end up like some others who have tried to use this knowledge for their own personal gain. I also caution you about the severe psychological and spiritual affects from UFO investigations. Some well known researchers have suffered personal identity questions and loss of close family ties and even faith itself. Don't let this happen to you. You have to maintain a balance and perspective when investigating this phenomenon. Some have lost all sense of reality and have suffered insanity as a result. I wouldn't recommend getting involved in remote viewing for a solution. The EMEs are not to be believed and are quite deceptive. *I'll let you in on one secret that MJ-12 found early on. The earth's environment has undergone significant changes and are part of the ENVIRONMENT! The redacted portion of the librarys (??) book found in New Mexico predicts a world wide invasion of EMEs in the year 2030 according to the lunar calendar which commences sometime after 1999.* The CIA has undertaken a survey project called ENVIRONMENT through a joint CIA-civilian project called MEDEA to look at what damage has been caused by EME controlled UFO activity especially around nuclear power plants and industrial waste production. From what I know the earth's population is being contaminated and our DNA is being altered through pollution or our air, food supply, and water. The digital Trojan Horse is going to wreck havoc soon and we have the EMEs to blame (not really, the army is responsible for that one). *To reduce it in a few words, WE ARE CATTLE AND SUBJECT TO SLAUGHTER BY EMEs. That is the GAME PLAN.* The "insiders" know this and are taking advantage of the situation. Our only hope may come from extraterrestrial intervention. *The world leaders see no viable solution except*

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

IMPORTANT -7-

population control through biological warfare and regional conflicts. If UFOs trigger a nuclear exchange lets say between India and Pakistan, or between China and Japan, or North and South Korea, or between Israel and Iraq, the NATO countries will surely take advantage and try to finish them off. Keep an eye on Russia and China. They may start something along these lines and try to draw the U.S. into it. *In order to justify this kind of population control they may invent a crisis from outer space. They may try to convince the world that extraterrestrials may invade our planet and eliminate the human race and therefore they need to deploy their space defenses and kill a number of people in the process.* Already there are events taking place all over the U. S. and in other countries that are UFO related that bear this out. We are being inoculated for possible biological warfare and *at the same time being conditioned (programmed) for extraterrestrial contact. This was and still is the agenda of secret government preparations. They know it is coming but don't know when and how.*

I hope you don't take all this as the rantings of a raging lunatic. What I have written is based on what I have learned over the years and my association with the intelligence community who is equally in the dark as to the ultimate conclusion. I have included some goodies for you which you might find helpful. Lot's of luck to you and keep plugging away. The answer may be a simple one.

IMPORTANT

============[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

This document contains a number of unsubstantiated assertions regarding MJ-12 and the nature of its ongoing operations, not the least of which is again its willingness to commit murder to maintain its deep secrecy and covert development of "recovered technology":

1. Former CIA director William Colby is allegedly murdered because of his implication by name in MJ-12 documents linked to the JFK assassination("y*ou may not know now, but you have some really important stuff that is creating a lot of tension in the UFO community. If you don't, you have better appreciate it. You have been given information that no one has. To make my point a little more clearer, remember a few years back when you got the JFK memo William Colby got fingered in it and someone decided to shut him up before he was questioned about it. Coincidence? No way! He was not the first to be eliminated and won't be the last I assure you.")*
2. MJ-12 appears to have been privatized by President Nixon, in part as a measure to insulate him from being implicated in involvement with the assassination, but, reading between the lines, also in part as a wider attempt to provide completely black cover to MJ-12 and independent sources of funding. Put differently, Cooper's anonymous source alleges a fantastic thing: MJ-12 has grown so powerful it no longer falls under the control of the American government, but has become a private and international concern in its own right, with deep corporate pockets. This is elaborated in three discrete statements by the source:
   a. *"MJ-12 does not exist as a government intelligence entity. It ceased to exist in 1969 and became a private concern financed by big money and big science."*
   b. *"The UFO/EBE Working Group is an international consortium financed and supported by some of the biggest money institutions and private industrialists in the world."*

c. *"In 1969, President Nixon was briefed by MJ-12 on all aspects of UFO activity and the EBE problem since 1947. Fearing possible leaks within his NSC and national security advisor Kissinger, Nixon approved a Special Classified Executive Order that required the U.S. intelligence community to purge all references to MJ-12 in their UFO files and to destroy documents that could connect him to JFK's assassination by MJ-12. As Vice President, Nixon approved ZR RIFLE written by the 40 Committee (MJ-1 issued new directives that sanctioned JFK's murder) for political assassination operations."*

d. These points suggest an *independent* and very secret development of advanced technologies. Notably the date was 1969, the same year as the first Apollo moon landings. One might therefore speculate on the following scenario: Gehlen, Von Braun, and scores of Nazi scientists and intelligence agents struck their famous "bargain" with the American military-industrial-national security complex, and in return, continued not only to pursue their projects, but to penetrate sensitive areas of the very government that presumed to control them, giving them a measure of "semi-independence." In 1969 their influence had grown so powerful, perhaps, that the relationship was severed, and MAJIC-12 became totally independent, perhaps merged into some "Nazi International" with deep corporate pockets.

3. Einstein and Oppenheimer were allegedly murdered by MJ-12 by being "given cancer" when they became "unreliable", presumably meaning no longer in sympathy with the goals or methods of the MJ-12 group. It is significant perhaps that Jack Ruby, the assassin of the alleged assassin of JFK, claimed that he was being "murdered by cancer" injections to silence him.
4. The Apollo Moon program apparently has some connection with a plan not only to militarize the moon jointly with the

Russians,[16] but also is a program specifically designed at its heart – though the purpose remains secret – to investigate UFOs: “*In 1963, JFK sought to ease the uneasy tension by extending cooperation with the USSR in outer space investigation of UFOs through a joint moon project. MJ-12 was opposed to this because they felt the militarization of the moon would place the U.S. in a dangerous situation with the EBEs who control the dark side of the moon.”* In other words, the document gives its own version of the Two Space Programs hypothesis.

5. Kennedy was assassinated for attempted interference with the plans and goals of the MJ-12 group: “*Simply put, Kennedy would have interfered with MJ-12's effort to come up with a defense and a plausible explanation to the UFO/EBE problem and was too sensitive an issue for interruption even by a president.”*
6. The crash and recovery of a craft in Roswell in 1947 and the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls is not coincidental, *implying that there is a spiritual dimension to the problem*. Moreover, the cancellation of Blue Book after Apollo 11 landed is connected: “*Was it mere coincidence that Blue Book was terminated after Apollo 11 landed on the moon? And, do you think it was mere coincidence that the Dead Sea Scrolls appeared about the same time the UFOs were found in New Mexico?”* The implication is similar to my analysis in *Reich of the Black Sun* that the Byrd Highjump Expedition to Antarctica and the subsequent allegations he made in the Chilean press are connected to the events at Roswell and to the murder of Secretary of War James Forrestal. Cooper's source is, moreover, suggesting a

---

[16] See Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* pp. 276-332, which reproduces the Top Secret military study of a Lunar base called “Project Horizon.” It is to be noted that no program of cooperation with the Soviet Union is entertained in the document. Also interesting is the name of the rocket booster in the document that will be designed to reach and help construct the lunar military base: the Saturn II.

"spiritual" dimension by connecting the Dead Sea Scrolls to all of this.[17]

7. Cooper's source alleges that the portion of the recovered "leaf book" that is blacked out in the publicly received version of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate"[18] contains information concerning the planned invasion and slaughter of humanity by EBEs in 2030: "*I'll let you in on one secret that MJ-12 found early on. The earth's environment has undergone significant changes and are part of the ENVIRONMENT! The redacted portion of the librarys*[19] *(??) book found in New Mexico predicts a world wide invasion of EMEs in the year 2030 according to the lunar calendar which commences sometime after 1999.*"
8. Of interest is the coincidence of this genocidal agenda with Hitler's own genocidal plans for the world had he succeeded in conquering it: "*To reduce it in a few words, WE ARE CATTLE AND SUBJECT TO SLAUGHTER BY EMEs. That is the GAME PLAN.*" Thus, even ideologically there appears to be a connection to Nazism, and likewise, to the "spiritual" aspect alleged by Cooper's source. This "globalcidal" agenda appears, however, to be the result of a planned deception of humanity: "*In order to justify this kind of population control they may invent a crisis from outer space. They may try to convince the world that extraterrestrials may invade our planet and eliminate the human race and therefore they need to deploy their space defenses and kill a number of people in the process.*" This squares exactly with Von Braun's warning to Dr. Carol Rosin, as recorded in her affidavit and cited in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[20] In other words, the source's remarks may point to the survival and "internationalization and privatization" of the Nazi death cult via the privatization and internationalization of MJ-12 itself.

---

[17] This is not the place to comment on such problems, which I hope to do in a future book.

[18] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 293-303.

[19] This spelling occurs in the original document.

[20] For the Rosin affidavit see *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 318-319.

5. Document 5: Top Secret/Jehovah NSA Intercept:

I cite the following document in its entirety though only one small portion is of extreme interest:

?????????????

RY
Copy

TOP SECRET ~~JEHOVAH~~

CATEGORY = 12

MESSAGE = 12697232

DL #3421 1211123

??????????
YNYN EEI LAN ANL EXC OPC UTY OCS MDI SHP XP
FM ????
TO MAJSEC
REM
TOP SECRET MAJESTIC-12/33. CITE 227882. WARNING NOTICE-SENSITIVE INTELLIGENCE SOURCES AND METHODS INVOLVED THE FOLLOWING INFORMATION HAS BEEN RECEIEVED FROM A CONTROLLED CLANDESTINE INTERCEPT AND IS FORWARDED AS AN EVAULATIED REPORT NO. 112-98 DATE OF INFORMATION: AS INDICATED RUSSIAN GOVERNMENT SCIENTIST IN CHARGE OF PROJECT ‘KOHTPOA’ EQUIVALENT TO SDI WAS ASSASSINATED AFTER UNAUTHORIZED DISCLOSURE OF PROJECT TO US COUNTERPART
TTCC

1. IN MOSCOW-S4 SS OF NOV 96, CODE NAME “MAJ” MOSCOW STATE UNIVERSITY SPOKE WITH US COUNTERPART CODE NAME ‘JOSHUA’. 2. “MAJ.” “*WE HAVE EXPERIENCED PARETO IN KOHTOPA AND CANNOT GO ANY FURTHER WITH TEST. WHAT ARE YOUR RESULTS? OUR GROUP REQUIRES YOUR DATA FOR COMPARISON. CAN YOU ARRANGE IT? OUR RESULTS WHERE LESS SPECTACULAR WITH VERONEZ SITE AND DENERATED DISCLOUSE TO MOD AND KGB OFFICIALS. WE HAD HOPED FOR POSITIVE CONTACT BUT WAS NOT TO BE. WE COULD’T KEEP PRESS OUT OF IT. DID YOU EXPERIENCE THE SAME AT DREAMLAND?*’ 3. ‘JOSHUA’: ‘WE MET WITH

> SIMILAR RESULTS SOMEWHAT ON THE POSITIVE SIDE BUT CONTACT PROVED ELUSIVE AND WE'RE NOT SURE OUR EFFORTS ARE PAYING OFF AS WE HAD HOPED. AS YOU KNOW, AREA 54 AND 17 ARE NOT SEALED OFF FROM PUBLIC SNOOPING AND MEDIA COVERAGE IS GROWING OVER 95 LEAKS BY TELLER. SAGAN TRIED TO SWAY QUALITY CONTROL TO RELOCATE BUT WERE NOT CONVINCED IT WOULD MATTER IN LIGHT OF OUR RECENT DOWN SIZING. I'M SORRY TO HEAR THE BAD NEWS BUT THERE IS LITTLE I CAN DO ON MY END. CONTROL IS ABSOLUTE AND MJ GROUP IS SEEKING NEW FUNDING BEFORE THE CHINA PROBLEM SURFACES. *I SUGGEST YOU TRY CONTACTING '33' INVESTORS AS THEY ARE OPEN TO NEW VENTURES OF OUR TYPE. IMF WOULD MAKE THE LOAN IF YELTSIN COOPERATES AND STAYS OUT OF YUGOLAVIA.*' CLASSIFIED BY RECORDED REPORTING OFFICER. EXEMPT FROM GENERAL DECLASSIFICATION SCHEDULE OF E.O. 11652, CATEGORY E2. IMPOSSIBLE TO DETERMINE DATE OF AUTOMATIC DECLASSIFICATION. #3421

TOP SECRET ~~JEHOVAH~~

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

Note the statement "I SUGGEST YOU TRY CONTACTING '33' INVESTORS AS THEY ARE OPEN TO NEW VENTURES OF OUR TYPE. IMF WOULD MAKE THE LOAN IF YELTSIN COOPERATES AND STAYS OUT OF YUGOLAVIA." The "33" investors may indicate a possible Masonic involvement as a private source of funding for ongoing, but privatized, MJ-12 type research and development. In this respect, it should be noted that not only were Presidents Roosevelt and Truman both Masons, but that their chief scientific advisor, who played such a crucial role both in the Manhattan Project and in MJ-12, Dr. Vannevar Bush, was also apparently a Mason, according to the following Canadian Masonic site (sponsored by the Grand Lodge of British Columbia).[21]

Note also that the first statement "WE HAVE EXPERIENCED PARETO IN KOHTOPA AND CANNOT GO ANY FURTHER WITH TEST. WHAT ARE YOUR RESULTS? OUR GROUP

---

[21] The site is <http:// freemasonry.bcy.ca/biography/bush_v/bush_v.html>

REQUIRES YOUR DATA FOR COMPARISON. CAN YOU ARRANGE IT? OUR RESULTS WHERE LESS SPECTACULAR WITH VERONEZ SITE AND DENERATED DISCLOUSE TO MOD AND KGB OFFICIALS. WE HAD HOPED FOR POSITIVE CONTACT BUT WAS NOT TO BE. WE COULD'T KEEP PRESS OUT OF IT. DID YOU EXPERIENCE THE SAME AT DREAMLAND?" also suggests some sort of Two Space Program Hypothesis, and a very secret one at that.

6. Document 6: Annex C Fragment:

ANNEX C (Cont'd)

9.??

10. Maintaining the MAJESTIC security has been successful in part because of compartmental function of classified activities of the level achieved by the security system of the Manhattan Project, and new legislation protecting nuclear weapons development.

11. *In protecting the security operations of MAJESTIC, it has been necessary to ??????????????????? individuals who would compromise the intelligence efforts. While distasteful ??????????????????????t times, the use of ??????????????????? measures have been executed. The untimely death of Secretary Forrestal, was deemed necessary and inevitable.*

12. General Statement: If such a crisis in government failure [unreadable] and assure the public's trust against an invasion from another planet, ???????????????????????????? ?? that the following would occur: "The pattern is familiar – employment of subversive agents; infiltration tactics, incitement of disorder and chaos to disrupt normal economy and thereby to undermine popular confidence in government and leaders; seizure of authority without reference to the will of the people."

13. Referenced REPORT TO THE PRESIDENT ????????? 47, BARRS 1-7, dated 19 September 1947, mentions: "in compliance with your directive . . . of 9 July 1947, the attached "REPORT ON FLYING SAUCERS" is respectfully submitted. In consonance with your instructions, advisors from

> State, Treasury, War and Navy Departments [unreadable] on a tour and fact finding mission concerning the reality of other-world [unreadable]. [Unreadable] principle (sic) areas were visited. Successful efforts were [unreadable] all levels of scientists [unreadable] work in classified [unreadable] held with ?????????????????????????????????????? [unreadable] 1,200 memoranda and reports from intelligence and security individuals were received and considered. The report presents against a global background my estimates of the situation, current and projected, in U.S., and U.K., and recommendations deemed to be sound courses of action for formulating plans and policies concerning defenses of allied countries of the United States."

14. As a result of the Twining Report, the President was compelled to sign into law the National Security Act of 1947 which came into effect in 19 September. This did not help the DCI in carrying out the directives of the NSC in matters of intelligence collection concerning the flying saucer problem. The Intelligence Advisory Board was not allowing the new CIA to function as the primary collector of critical flying saucer data, ??

-5-

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

Note that the clear implication is that MJ-12 was involved in the death of Secretary of War James Forrestal, a death many have long considered suspicious: "*In protecting the security operations of MAJESTIC, it has been necessary to ?????????????????? individuals who would compromise the intelligence efforts. While distasteful ??????????????????????t times, the use of ??????????????????? measures have been executed. The untimely death of Secretary Forrestal, was deemed necessary and inevitable."* This calls for some speculation. Assuming that the relationship between Operation Highjump, possible (though improbable) Nazi survival in the Antarctic, and the Roswell crash and recovery are all related, might Forrestal have been privy to the deep cover "ET hypothesis" disinformation plans of MJ-12 and objected to them? Might he therefore have been considered "unreliable" or a risk to the long term, and apparently "globalcidal" goals of the group, as alleged by Cooper's source? If so, he would have been eliminated. Equally, if some rapprochement was struck between MJ-12 on behalf of the US Government and any independently surviving group of Nazis, and had Forrestal known of it, he most likely would have registered severe objections, and again been eliminated. We will most likely never know for certain, but the possibilities bear mentioning.

7. Document 7: Top Secret Memo of President Roosevelt to General Marshall 27 February 1942: and Document 8: Double Top Secret Letter of FDR to General Marshall Feb 22/24, 1944:

TOP SECRET

Top Secret
gm 25

February 27, 1942

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

February 27, 1942

MEMORANDUM FOR

CHIEF OF STAFF OF THE ARMY

I have considered the disposition of the material in possession of the Army that may be of great significance toward the development of a super weapon of war. I disagree with the argument that such information should be shared with our ally the Soviet Union. Consultation with Dr. Bush and other scientists on the issue of finding practical uses for the atomic secrets learned from study of celestial devices precludes any further discussion and I therefore authorize Dr. Bush to proceed with the project without further delay. This information is vital to the nation's superiority and must remain within the confines of state secrets. Any further discussion on the matter will be restricted to General Donovan, Dr. Bush, the Secretary of War and yourself. The challenge our nation faces is daunting and perilous in this undertaking and I have committed the resources of the government towards that end. You have my assurance that when circumstances are favorable and we are victorious, the Army will have the fruits of research in exploring further applications of this new wonder.

You may speak to me about this if the above is not wholly clear.

F. D. R.

TOP SECRET

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

February 22, 1944

THE WHITE HOUSE

WASHINGTON

February 24, 1944

MEMORANDUM FOR

THE SPECIAL COMMITTEE ON NON-TERRESTRIAL SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY

I agree with the OSRD[22] proposal of the recommendation put forward by Dr. Bush and Professor Einstein that a separate program be initiated at the earliest possible time. I also agree that *application of non-terrestrial know how in atomic energy must be used in perfecting super weapons of war to affect the complete defeat of Germany and Japan.* In view of the cost already incurred in the atomic bomb program, it would, at this time, be difficult to approve without further support of the Treasury Department and the military. I therefore have decided to forego such a enterprise. From the point of view of the informed members of the United States, our principle object is not to engage in exploratory research of this kind but to win the war as soon as possible.

Various points have been raised about the difficulties such an endeavor would pose to the already hardened research for advanced weapons programs and support groups in our war effort and I agree that now is not the time. It is my personal judgement that, when the war is won, and peace is once again restored, there will come a time when surplus funds may be available to pursue a program devoted to understanding non-terrestrial science and its technology which is still greatly undiscovered. *I have had private discussions with Dr. Bush on this subject and the advice of several eminent scientists who believe the United States should take every advantage of such wonders that have come to us.* I have heard the arguments of General Marshall and other members of the military that *the United States must assume its destiny in this matter for the sake of the Nation's security in the post-war world and I have given assurances that such will be the case.*

---

[22] OSRD: Office of Scientific Research and Development.

I appreciate the effort and time spent in producing valuable insights into the proposal to find ways of advancing our technology and national progress and in coming to grips with the reality that our planet is not the only one harboring intelligent life in the universe. I also commend the committee for the organization and planning that is evident in Dr. Bush's proposal and the delicate way in which it was presented. I trust the committee will appreciate the situation on which this office must render its decision.

FranklinDRoosevelt

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

From the foregoing alleged letters to Secretary of War General Marshall from President Franklin Roosevelt, we are in a position to draw some tentative conclusions:

1. The US retrieved craft with extraordinary technology earlier than Roswell, ca. 1941-42, most likely the alleged Cape Girardeau and Louisiana crashes noted previously. Given that the Nazi projects are at this time nowhere near the degree of progress they would be by the end of the war and after, we may reasonably assume that these recovered aircraft do not originate there.
2. Two conclusions follow from this:
   a. Given allegations of similar crashes in Fascist Italy ca 1933 and Nazi Germany ca 1936 as recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun* and elsewhere, it is **possible** that the US, Italy and Germany were all in the possession of extraterrestrial technology which each nation began to back-engineer. This would square with some interpretations of the off-the-record remarks made by Von Braun and Von Karmann to Twining as recorded by Col. Corso and mentioned later in this chapter and in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[23] An important question thus ensues: *Why* were these nations in possession of

---

[23] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 302-306.

recovered craft? It is peculiar that it appears that these three major combatants alone were in possession of this technology. It should be noted that the alleged Italian and German crashes occurred prior to the announcement of nuclear fission's discovery by Otto Hahn in 1938, thus making it possible that this research itself was part of the process of back engineering. Given also that it appears from the data presented in *Reich of the Black Sun* that Germany was enriching uranium on a massive scale ca. as early as 1940, this may be a possible explanation.

b. The alternative explanation is that the crash and recovered vehicle themselves are not extra-terrestrial, but stem from some independent terrestrially based group pursuing its own technological developments and that *these* vehicles crashed and were recovered by the Germans, Italians, and Americans. They may represent therefore a continuation of the 1890s "Air Ship Mystery".[24] In support of this contention the following MJ-12 document should be noted:

8. Document 9: Recovered, Reconstructed, and Test-Flown "S" Aircraft and Paper Clip Assistance:

4-15

THE "LOANED" AIRCRAFT WAS ACQUIRED IN 1945 FROM THE AIR TECHNICAL SERVICES COMMAND (ATSC, NOW AEDC, AIR FORCE SYSTEMS COMMAND). THE "S" AIRCRAFT WAS WAS(SIC.) DESIGNED FROM A AERODYNE RECOVERED IN 1942 IN LOUSIANA. RE-CONSTRUCTION COMMENCED IN 1945 WITH THE ASSISTANCE OF GERMAN SCIENTISTS AT WRIGHT FIELD. PROPULSION PROGRAMS TRIED TO DUPLICATE THE ATOMIC POWER PLANT FOUND ON THE AERODYNE CAPTURED IN LOUSIANA AND INTEGRATED THE

---

[24] It is to be noted that the German artist Dellschau, who was intimately connected to the 1890s airship mystery, constantly maintained this continued independent development was in fact the case. In support of this contention these memos should be read in the context of the AMC memos cited earlier, since the Roswell recovery does not evidence a technological basis sufficient to indicate extra-terrestrial origin for the vehicle.

MAGNETIC DRIVE SYSTEM DEVELOPED BY TESLA. THE AAF HOPED TO INTRODUCE THIS CRAFT IN WAR, BUT RESOURCES AND MONEY WAS NOT AVAILABLE. FUNDING WAS NOT AVAILABLE TO R&D UNTIL 1946, WHEN LEMAY TOOK OVER THE PROJECT. *THE S CRAFT COULD TAKE OFF VERTCALLY (SIC) AND REACH ALTITUDES AS HIGH AS 90,000 FEET AT SUPERSONIC SPEEDS.* THE CONTROLS WERE ELECTRONIC FLY BY WIRE AND THE PILOT LOOKED AT PROJECTION OF SYMBOLS ON A TRANSARENT SCREEN. THE CRAFT WAS SO COMPLICATED THAT *TEST PILOTS HAD GREAT DIFFICULTY IN HIGH PERFORMANCE AT VERY HIGH ALTITUDES. SEVERAL TEST PILOTS WERE KILLED AS A RESULT OF DECOMPRESSION AND EJECTION. CAPSULE OR ESCAPE CYLINDERS WERE NOT DESIGNED FOR HIGH ALTITUDE EJECTIONS.* AS A RESULT, ONE “S” CRAFT WAS LOST. THE MATERIALS USED IN THE CONSTRUCTION BY HUGHES AIRCRAFT COMPANY FAILED TO PROTECT THE TEST PILOTS IN MAXIMUM THROTTLE SETTINGS AND EXPOSED THEM TO HIGH DOSE OF RADIATION WHICH RESULTED IN SERIOUS ILLNESS AND DEATH. TEST FLIGHTS CONTINUED OVER THE WSPG IN EARLY 1947 AT KIRTLAND AAF, AND AT ALAMOGORDO AAF TULAROSA RANGE WITH BETTER RESULTS TO FLIGHT PERFORMANCE. BUT EXPOSURE TO THE RADIATION FROM THE ATOMIC ENGINE CONTINUED. *IN 1947, THE “S” CRAFT WAS MODIFIED TO CARRY ATOMIC WEAPONS OVER LONG DISTANCES. BUT HIGH ALTITUDE FLIGHT SIMULATIONS AND PILOT SURVIBAILITY WAS STILL A PROBLEM.* BELL AIRCRAFT WAS GIVEN THE CONTRACT FOR A ROCKET-POWERED AIRCRAFT TEST BED TO RECORD FLIGHT DATA AT SUPERSONIC SPEEDS AS A PROBLEM SOLVING LABORATORY. DATA COLLECTED FROM X-1 AIRCRAFT WAS UTILIZED FOR DESIGN MODIFICATION OF “S” CRAFT AERODYNAMIC TESTS AND LANGELY. RADIATION PROBLEMS PROMPTED A CHANGE IN THINKING IN THE TEST PILOT PROGRAM PROMPTED A NEW PILOT “MODEL” EXPERIMENT USING ALTERNATE CHOICE OF SUBJECTS AND SERVICES, AND *WAS GIVEN SPECIAL STATUS EQUAL TO THE SECURITY OF THE ATOMIC BOMB PROGRAM. AT LEAST A DOZEN “S” CRAFT WERE BUILT AND TEST FLOWN.* THREE WERE LOST DUE TO MECHANICAL FAILURE AND PILOT ERROR. TWO MORE “S” CRAFT WERE LOST ALONG WITH FIVE FATALITIES, THAT CAUSED THE AAF TO CANCEL THE PROJECT INDEFINITELY. ALL SIMILAR “WING” AIRCRAFT PROJECTED FOR SERVICE IN AAF WERE LIKEWISE CANCELLED IN 1949 AT THE RECOMMENDATION OF GENERAL LEMAY. FUTURE ATOMIC-POWERED AIRCRAFT WERE “PILOTLESS” AND WOULD BE CONTROLLED REMOTELY. THE AF WOULD NOT RESUME TESTING OF “LOANED” AERODYNES UNTIL PILOT SAFETY ISSUES WERE SATISFIED AND A MORE SECURE TEST RANGE COULD BE USED FOR AEROSPACE R&D PROGRAMS. AREA 51 IS BUT ONE SUCH RANGE AMONG THE SECRET TEST SITES NOW IN OPERATION. A SPECIAL

RECOVERY AND SECURITY UNIT CALLED S.T.U.D.S., WAS CREATED IN THE LATE 1980'S TO FACILITATE THE SERVICING OF *NEWER "S" CRAFT FLIGHT TEST OPERATIONS. EFFORTS TO CONCEAL THE TRUE NATURE OF FLIGHT OPERATIONS WERE-SUCCESSFUL IN THAT THE AF DEVISED A COVER INTELLIGENCE PROJECT CALLED BLUE BOOK. PROJECT BLUE BOOK, AS A COVER PROHECT, WAS CONTROLLED BY THE CIA TO PROTECT AF TEST FLIGHT OPERATIONS FROM SPECULATION BY THE PUBLIC, AND CONVINCE THE SOVIETS THAT USAF HAD NO AIRCRAFT CAPABLE OF FLIGHT CHARACTERISTICS AND MANEUVERS AS OBSERVED AND REPORTED TO BLUE BOOK AND THE USAF UFO PROGRAM.* IN 1958, PROJECT UFO AND MOON DUST WERE ACTIVATED WHEN USA INTERPLANETARY PHENOMENON UNIT OPERATIONS CEASED AND CIC RESPONSIBILITY FOR UFO SECURITY WAS TRANSFERRED TO USAFOSI.

=========[PAGE BREAK]========

RECONSTRUCTED DRAWING OF A UNIDENTIFIED (SIC) AERODYNE FOUND ON JULY 5, 1947, SOUTH OF SOCORRO, NEW MEXICO, BY MILITARY AND CIVILIAN MEMBERS OF THE ARMED FORCES SPECIAL WEAPONS PROJECT.

(A drawing follows here roughly resembling Testor's model kit of the Roswell UFO)

APPROXIMATELY 100 FEET IN LENGTH
WIDTH OF CHIME IN AFT PORTION WAS APPROXIMATELY 60 FEET
CIME RAN THE LENTH OF AERODYNE
SKIN WAS SMOOTH. NO RIVETS, BOLTS, SEAMS, OR WELDS. LIKE PLASTIC.
NO CANOPY, WINDOWS. NO DOORS, INTAKES, EXHAUST.
MATERIAL WAS NOT INERT.
PROPULSION BELIEVED TO BE ATOMIC.
SILVER-GRAY IN COLOR WITH DARK CHIME SURFACES.
SADDLE SHAPE IN AFT SECTION AND SPEAR SHAPED NOSE.
NO LANDING GEAR WAS OBSERVED. EMBEDDED IN DESERT SAND. NOT DAMAGED.
TRANSPORTED TO ALAMOGORDO ARMY AIR FIELD

DRAWING APPROVED BY
THOMAS CANTWHEEL
1-30-96

/s/Thomas Cantwheel

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. Note that the "S" craft was allegedly a design based on the wartime Louisiana recovery, done with the assistance of the Paper Clip scientists, implying that their special expertise was needed in order to bring the project to completion ("The 'loaned aircraft' was acquired in 1945 from the Air Technical Services Command (ATSC, now AEDC, Air Force Systems Command). The "S" aircraft was was (sic) designed from a aerodyne (sic) recovered in 1942 in Lousiana(sic). Reconstruction commenced in 1945 with the assistance of German scientists at Wright Field."
2. Note also that the propulsion unit is both atomic and magnetic – like the Bell - and has some connection to Tesla, implying a kind of field propulsion. ("Propulsion programs tried to duplicate the atomic power plant found on the aerodyne captured in Lousiana (sic) and integrated the magnetic drive system developed by Tesla.") These statements corroborate William Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, with his peculiar reliance on Tesla's ideas.
3. Note that the "S" aircraft *lacks* an adequate ejection mechanism for ejection at high altitudes and/or high performance, a problem specifically solved by wartime Nazi research in conjunction with their own research into high altitude high performance ramjet aircraft. The report mentions the building of 12 "S" aircraft.
4. The craft were developed to carry and deploy atomic weapons remotely.
5. Finally and most importantly, the Air Force apparently developed Blue Book as a deep cover story to cloak the development of these craft and conceal their extraordinary flight characteristics *behind the ET Myth* as a disinformation operation designed to persuade the Soviets that the US had no such technological capability. This suggests that the nature of the recovered craft in Missouri in 1941 and Louisiana in 1942 were of extraordinary, though terrestrial and unknown, origin.

9: Document 10: Edward Teller's Pitch to president Reason for SDI:

RECEIVED
1 2 *TJC*
3-1

Edward Teller's pitch to President Reagan for SDI

I wish to bring to your attention of a very real(sic) *and dangerous situation that threatens not only us, the world, but our very existence as a race.* For over forty years I have been involved in developing advanced technologies in the defense of this country which would insure our security, freedom, and our form of government from surprise attack. As you must be aware, the Defense Department has initiated several space defense programs of vast proportions and at great expense. But there is a new and alarming development of which I am compelled to inform you of(sic). *A menace greater that the nuclear arms race exists. It does not originate here on earth but comes from space itself. The agent of mass destruction has no reasoning psychology other than the ultimate destruction of our civilization and our way of life as we know it.*

Obtaining critical information of this menace has been hard and time consuming and the facts seem to be tangled among dark threats of ultimate destruction; our innate fear of the unknown has interfered with our ability to comprehend it. A space attack could be real in the near future bringing with it the truth that by our inaction global war could be immensely accelerated. *No longer can the United States be in the position which it found itself in 1947. This was realized and in January 1950 President Truman made the decision to go ahead with a defense program exceeding in scope and cost of the Manhattan Project.* Late in president Eisenhower's office, several attempts

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-2-

was (sic) made to limit further development by prohibiting the testing of space defense weapons. A moratorium was entered into, a "gentlemen's agreement" whereby Russia and the United States concurred that testing be halted until further notice.

Unfortunately, secrecy and denial has prevented further work of which I now propose. A more detailed proposal is difficult to address in my brief, especially since I want it to be realistic and acceptable. Yet such a proposal is made here, both to give warning of what could happen and to begin a concrete discussion on the Space Defense Initiative program. The Defense Department could continue "classification" of critically key information of knowledge collected in 1947 and, therefore, its secrecy in its present form. Only a small number of documents might need to be kept secret for a longer period, but in those cases a few highly responsible persons would have to certify, year by year, that continued secrecy be maintained. What I wish to impress upon you is the need for absolute secrecy for the real reasons for a space defense. The real danger is the existence of secrecy can not be kept secret for ever. Our scientists will not turn to national defense unless they perceive an actual danger to the United States. A danger was perceived in 1939, only two years before Pearl Harbor. It is vital to the program that scientists should perceive the danger now, before it is too late. *What is at stake is not only the prevention of defeat, but the prevention of cosmic war.* Nevertheless, convincing the American people that military research is necessary is a difficult thing.

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-3-

I am not speaking of another arms race, but rather a race of technology. One individual familiar with military technology and engineering of special intelligence, Dr. John S. Foster, Jr., estimates that in 1960 the United States and the USSR spent equal percentages of their military budgets on space defense and research and development, while in 1974 that percentage was three times as high in Russia as in the United States. The quality of future space defense weapons depends more on research and development than on any other factor; the obvious recommendation is that we should spend more on it. Today we spend approximately 10 percent, so this recommendation does not seem too difficult to implement.

Space defense plays important roles in military affairs, particularly in communications and intelligence gathering. Both of these functions apt to become increasingly important in the future. An extension of our information gathering, including continuous surveillance of deep space, should have high priority. This could be done in two ways. One is to increase our ability to launch satellites of all needed varieties within a short time. The other is to provide decoys in space, thereby multiplying the number of targets the enemy would have to knock out. A combination of these two procedures could, indeed, avert the enemy from taking out all our space vehicles. *A third possibility is to prepare retaliation against the enemy by destroying their space vehicles.* But, at least in regard to the important item of information gathering, the enemy relies on stealth more than their spacecraft than we do; therefore emphasis on the first two

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-4-

two (sic) approaches is recommended. In preparing decoys for space vehicles, the main objective would be for decoys to look like space vehicles that function like real ones. One the whole, this is not too difficult. Usually the main problem with a decoy is its mass. In order for a decoy to be inexpensive it must be light, but usually the light weight gives it away – for instance, in meeting air resistance, a lighter vehicle is more easily slowed down. Exceedingly little air resistance is encountered by space vehicles. Therefore, lightweight decoys for space vehicles are more feasible than decoys for almost any other application.

Remotely piloted vehicles (RPVs) have been developed and tested with marginal success. The possibility of RPVs exist for the enemy as well for us. The use of RPVs was first explored by the U.S. Air Force. It can also be applied to small space objects. An ingenious new circular airfoil design is now in experimental stage. A single wing is used in this design. Another design is also under development. This one uses a single wing as well, pivoting at its center at the fuselage. The wing is at right angles to the plane at takeoff and landing, but as the right wing points forward while the left wing points backward. A third design is the triangle-shaped wing and is the focus of intense development of which I have personal knowledge of.

There is the possibility that chemical and biological warfare may be used by the enemy. The fact that these forms of warfare may be inflicted upon us from space only fires my

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-5-

persistence in having the President consider my proposal seriously for a broad and comprehensive Space Defense Initiative.

There are several fronts which must be considered in my proposal to the president. *We must boost spending in new, more powerful radar. We must encourage more research programs for lasers. And, we must investigate the use of microwave and pulse energy devices along with directed energy weapons in space systems. Particle beams are effective over vast distances and could aid in space defense against intruding enemy spacecraft.*

Progress toward such an objective, since the end of World War II, has occurred in discouragingly small steps. Even so, we cannot afford to give up hope; we cannot afford to stop taking small steps. By the same token, we cannot afford not thinking of taking big ones. What I suggest is a big gamble but what if the gamble pays off through a major breakthrough in technology? We have the talent. We have the means. All that is lacking is the political will and determination to succeed. We must not hesitate nor falter. I believe all that I propose is possible and can be done. I ask that you weigh the risks and the benefits and consider what the alternative offers if we fail.

Presidential Approval [ ] Yes [ ] No

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. In Teller's private letter that the SDI program is called rather the *Space* Defense Initiative, rather than the *Strategic* Defense Initiative.
2. While it is clear from the opening paragraph that Teller's remarks throughout the letter could be construed as referring to (a) an extra-terrestrially based and originated threat, it is also true that his remarks could be construed (b) in the standard terrestrial sense as referring to the Soviet Union, or (c) in a *non*-standard terrestrial sense as referring to some unknown terrestrially originated and based threat that nonetheless possesses an advanced outer space traveling capability.
3. With regard to point 2(c) above, observe that the genocidal and "cosmic war" implications Teller alludes to could clearly indicate the presence, within whatever unknown threat constitutes the concern of his letter, of an ideology that is fundamentally a "globalcidal" death cult. It goes without saying that this ideology is consonant to deeply held Nazi beliefs. This may indicate an extra-terrestrial spiritual influence on the development of the ideology of Nazism.
4. Finally it is to be noted that Teller outlines a program of development of an exotic array of directed energy weapons, presumably for offensive as well as defensive purposes against this unknown threat.

PRELIMINARY SCENARIO ASSESSMENT

From the foregoing documentary considerations, a broad scenario emerges.

1. From 1933-1942, the US and the two Axis powers, Germany and Italy, recover and begin the process of back-engineering exotic technology discovered in crashed craft of unknown origin. Alternately, Nazi ideology formed the basis and

environment for the development of a whole new physics and technology.

2. From the memos of President Roosevelt to General Marshall, it is clear that the US has concentrated its scientific efforts on the immediate defeat of Germany and Japan through the development and deployment of the atomic bomb via the Manhattan Project, and thus does not undertake immediate wartime development of the recovered technology.
3. From *The Reich of the Black Sun* is it clear that Nazi Germany, conversely, placed the highest priority on the development of the same sort of technology represented in the alleged crashes. It may be reasonably speculated that since the *Kammlerstab* had one such back-engineering component in its departmental organization that it may have been involved in the reverse engineering of such a craft. Alternatively, as was seen in Part Two, there was sufficient ideological and scientific ferment in Nazi Germany to pursue the development of the exotic physics represented by the Bell entirely independently of any need for an "ET Crash" to provide the motivation or impulse.
4. It is not germane to the case whether the pre-war and wartime recoveries were of extra-terrestrial origins or not. However, the quickness with which the USA was apparently able to redesign the recovered craft in its own "S" craft after the war indicates that the technology is not so exotic as to compel an ET interpretation of its origins. It *is,* however, as the MAJIC-12 Cooper-Cantwheel documents repeatedly note, exotic *enough* to require the assistance of the Nazi Paperclip personnel. In short, home-grown American talent is too unfamiliar with the type of physics and engineering that the recovered vehicles, whatever their origin may be, imply.
5. It also appears from the analysis of documents in the previous section that MJ-12 was involved, and may form the ultimate motivation behind, the murders of JFK and Secretary James Forrestal. The subsequent spin-off and privatization and internationalization of the group – as alleged by Cooper's Source 1 – would seem to indicate that some internal influence, with such international and financial connections, within the MJ-12 group was successful in gaining control of the group

and wresting it from the control of the US government. Only two such groups are alluded to in the documents examined thus far: (a) the Masons, in the form of “the 33 investors” of Document 5 (implying the participation and involvement of fraternal groups in the financing and research of these Black projects); and (b) the Paperclip scientists, implying a connection to, and the continued existence of, post-war international Nazi organizations such as O.D.E.S.S.A. and others.

6. In such documents as have been examined, no specific technological or performance characteristic of the recovered craft is of sufficient performance characteristics to indicate an interstellar origin much less and interplanetary one, since the stated speeds for the vehicles are far below what they would need to be to make such travel possible. Moreover, it is apparent that the performance characteristics in most respects is consonant more with very high altitude high performance craft flying within the terrestrial atmosphere. Other than the allusions to atomic and magnetic drives, which would be consonant with exo-atmospheric flight, the speeds are still far too slow for practical interplanetary travel within our own solar system.
7. This in turn suggests that at the highest levels of MJ-12 a “deep cover” disinformation operation is being waged, to make people think in terms of (friendly) extra-terrestrial visitation as an explanation, while it is apparent from the examined documents that there is an even deeper level of concern *that the craft are indeed hostile and have “globalcidal” intentions.* Such an ideology is consonant with deeply held Nazi beliefs and is thus another subtle indicator of the nature of the US government’s concern and the reason for the high security operation that is MJ-12.
8. In respect to point 7, it is to be noted that Robert and Ryan Wood seem unable to concentrate on internal technical details of any MJ-12 document without obfuscating them in favor of the ET Hypothesis.
9. A possible means of explaining MJ-12 motivations behind the murder or sanction of the murder of JFK should be noted. If, as

one of the documents suggested, JFK planned a joint expedition with the USSR to militarize the moon as a means of defense against the threat posed by UFOs, then this would seem, in light of the pattern emerging of US-USSR cooperation regarding Antarctica, that Kennedy posed a threat to MJ-12 and thereby to the secret Paperclip influence over MJ-12 and over the monopoly on the research and technology and weapons developed under its aegis.

10. The year 1969 is the year MJ-12 is privatized and internationalized. Thus, this might represent, on one point of view, a step in the reassembly of the broken and scattered parts of Nazi secret weapons black projects. If so, then corroboration is rather easy to find: it should be a relatively easy thing to look for details of corporate actions, mergers, and maneuvers and technological developments from that time forward to see if a pattern – if any – emerges that would corroborate or deny this hypothesis. Alternatively, one might look for strange corporate actions immediately prior to and during the period of the JFK assassination that have a German connection or flavor.

With these thoughts in hand, it is time to turn to the most sensational MAJIC-12 document in the Cooper-Cantwheel collection on the Woods' website. This is

10. Document 12: The MJ-12 "Bowen Encyclopedia on Flying Saucers": The Kammlerstab and Nazi Saucers

The Bowen "Encyclopedia on Flying Saucers", dated by Robert and Ryan Wood on their website to sometime in 1959, is the most crucial piece of MJ-12 documentary evidence that one can adduce in support of the above scenario and the thesis advanced in *Reich of the Black Sun* that what crashes in Roswell was a Nazi "saucer." In their website dedicated to the Cooper-Cantwheel and other MJ-12 documents, a website dedicated also to defending the ET Hypothesis as the primary explanation for 1940s UFO observations and crash retrievals and whose header motto is “Evidence That We Are Not Alone”,[25] the following introductory summary is given to the Bowen “Encyclopedia of UFOs”:

> Perhaps the most stunning physical evidence for the existence of the TOP SECRET/MAJIC program is this original 339 page manuscript about flying saucers. Written by Vernon Bowen, the original is on watermarked paper with red TOP SECRET/MAJIC stampings on some of the chapters. Most of the rest of the document is marked CONFIDENTIAL. Original handwritten marginalia shows linkages to Project White Hot, Twining, Vannevar Bush, Moon Dust, and Donald Menzel. A well written snapshot of the public history of flying saucers from 1947 to 1954. Bowen was personally well-connected to many top people.

A perusal of the document itself, which includes a brief biography of Bowen apparently written by himself which I include just as the document appears on the Woods’ website, indicates that the entire 339 page manuscript was his own private assembly of UFO reports, with his own stunning conclusions. This report must have apparently caused quite a flap of its own in MJ-12 corridors, since it was immediately classified “TOP SECRET/MAJIC” and foreign distribution was prohibited. A glance at its contents will show why. (See the bold italicized portions of the document which have been added for emphasis):

---

[25] (q.v. http://www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/ 1948-1959.php)

Vernon Bowen
51 Knofferam Road 1947—1955
Old Grennwich, Conn

12o Woodside Drive
Milbrook 1955-1959
Greenwich, Conn

25 Shoreacre Drive 1950-
Old Greenwich, Conn. Present

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA OF FLYING SAUCERS

By

VERNON BOWEN

THE HIGHEST CLASSIFICATION FOR THIS DOCUMENT IS TOP SECRET/MAJIC NO FORN DISSEM. FOR US “EYES ONLY”. EXEMPT FROM DECLASSIFICATION ORADA. “SPECIAL HANDLING REQUIRED – NOT RELEASABLE TO FOREIGN NATIONALS.”

Other writings by
Vernon Bowen

Children’s Books

THE LAZY BEAVER
THE WONDERFUL ADVENTURES OF TING LING
SNOW FOR CHRISTMAS
THE EMPEROR’S WHITE HORSES
(All published by David McKay Co.)
Records (Collaborations)

THE LITTLE TUNE THAT RAN AWAY (DECCA)
LITTLE TOMMY TINKLE (SIMON AND SCHUSTER GIANT GOLDEN RECORD)

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

(FOR THE INFORMATION OF USAF, NOT A BOOK JACKET)

Vernon Bowen is an advertising copywriter and supervisor. At present writing, he is copy supervisor on Frigidaire, Division of General Motors, for Dancer-Fitzgerald Sample, 547 Madison Avenue, New York City.

Formerly, for ten years, he was with the Geyer Agency, now Geyer, Morey, Hansen and Ballard. While there, he wrote and supervised copy on Kelvinator, Division of American Motors Corporation. And while there, he originated and wrote the Rambler cartoon campaign which has been credited, in part, with taking Rambler from a poor fourth into a strong position of contender with the "Big Three" - and in helping to raise American Motors stock from a low of 5 ¾ to a high of 99 ½.

In his spare time, Vernon Bowen has also written free-lance material. All of his published writings are in books or phonograph records for children.

One of his children's books was a Junior Literary Guild selection. Three of them are now used to some extent for remedial reading in certain public schools.

His last book, The Emperor's White Horses, the story of what happened to the famous Lipiszaners of the Spanish Riding School, Vienna, was double-checked by those who participated in the saving of the horses: Colonel Alois Podhejsky, Director, the Spanish Riding School, Hoffburg, Vienna; Mr.

=========[PAGE BREAK]==========

Charles R. Codman, Col. Ret., (deceased), who was the aide of the late General George S. Patton, Jr., U.S. Army, and who was present at the special performance given for General Patton and his spear-head armored division at Rostau; Mr. R. F. Perry, Col., ret., Alexandria, Va., who visited with members of the Spanish Riding School in Czechoslovakia; and *Mr. Charles H. Reed, Col., ret., Richmond Virginian, who really spearheaded the saving of the Spanish Riding School and its horses* ***while on his mission of persuading the head of German Intelligence to turn over to the U.S. the many truckloads of documents buried on the Czech-Austrian border – documents which are still secret today.***

Vernon Bowen is about as American as the Ohio dirt he came from. One of his ancesstresses, by family tradition, was Pocahontas. Another ancestor, of this same strain, was John Perrot, later Parrot, who rode into Harrodsburg with Daniel Boone to colonize Kentucky. His paternal grandfather served with Fremont in Missouri.

Bowen when to the public schools in his native village of Newtown, Ohio, to Eastern High School in Cincinnati, Ohio, and Marietta College, Marietta, Ohio. He was graduated from Marietta in 1927, Cum Laude, Phi Beta Kappa. He is a member of Alpha Sigma Phi college fraternity, as is his son, who is in Marietta now. He is also a member of his fraternity's honorary fraternity, Delta Beta Zi, the original name of the fraternity when it was founded at Yale.

At present, Vernon Bowen is a deacon in First Congregational Church of Greenwich, Old Greenwich, Connecticut, Chairman of the church's Public

Relations Committee, originator of the church's monthly illustrated news letter, writer of the church's special book on fund-raising, and writer of Marietta College's bluebook for fund-raising, which has been credited with the raising of a substantial number of dollars over the years.

Long interested in education, in Boy Scouting, and in modern methods of teaching, Vernon Bowen lives with his wife in a house that looks out over Greenwich Cove and the striper grounds where he hopes to be out this summer, fishing.

==========[PAGE BREAK AND APPARENT SKIP]==========

other oddities reported here. I wasn't present at any of them. I do not know whether they happened or not. I can only report on what public record stated that people claimed they saw.

==========[DOCUMENT EXCERPTED FROM CHAPTER XIV THE OTHER SIDE OF THE COIN]=============

Now, what evidence is there to show that, incredible though it may be, that saucers are actually none of these things – but new, secret, and utterly fantastic guided or piloted missiles or craft that are made right here on earth?

There is considerable evidence to support this belief.

And perhaps this is really the one and the only secret explanation of flying saucers. Perhaps Henry J. Taylor, Billy Ross, and some other commentators were right when they said, quite early in the game, that flying saucers are secret weapons. The only trouble was, they said they were U. S. weapons. Such may not have been the case at all. But certainly, the Taylor "expose" was the one thing that drew instant, emphatic and universal denial by every branch of the armed services, with even a spokesman for the President considering it important enough to issue a White House denial. There has been no such overwhelming denial of the extraterrestrial theory – there has even been semi-encouragement of this theory all along by the Air Force – although on one occasion a press conference was held following Major Keyhoe's article in TRUE that claimed saucers were from outer space, and there was another denial when President Eisenhower said, in late 1954, that he had been told that saucers were not from outer space.

But, when it was said that saucers were U. S. secret warcraft, there was instant, overwhelming denial.

Yet there is evidence that saucers may be a new and different type of earth craft.

This evidence is not secret. It has been published to millions of people in newspapers and magazines. This writer has had no access to classified information of any kind. There is absolutely nothing here that

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

does not come from publications. The {Major thing?} here that the Intelligence Headquarters of Russia, England, Italy, Spain, Sweden, Yugoslavia and every other country of any consequence of the face of the globe does not know – or could easily acquire by the most amateurish of efforts.

There are no secrets here in this phase of the questioning of the nature of saucers. If there were secrets, they have long since been revealed and given away.

But no writer, to this author's knowledge, has ever brought together the bits of this part of the jig-saw puzzle. Yet they are very significant bits and merit the consideration of anyone trying to understand the mystery of the saucers.

Let's try to put some of the bits together:

Practically all writers on the subject of saucers have discounted the possibility that the saucers have their home basis right here on earth for three or four reasons – and, at first sight, these are very good reasons indeed. Among them are:

1. The extremely high speed.
2. The seemingly impossible maneuvering and the matter of G-pull – the pull of the earth's gravity – on any occupant or occupants.
3. The lack of sound in objects flying faster than sound. The motors of conventional planes roar, or their jets sound like giant blowtorches in the sky. And when a plan of conventional design passes through the sound barrier, it causes a noise like a clap of thunder. Many saucers observed were not [unreadable] a stationary position or a slow speed into speeds that would take them through the
==========[PAGE BREAK]==========
sound barrier.
4. Glow. Many reporters of saucers described them as glowing, either with a greenish-blue glare on the inside, or with completely glowing exterior – reddish, orange, yellow, or other shades of the spectrum.

Now, how about these points? Do they absolutely eliminate the possibility that saucers may be earth craft, after all? Most writers, citing these points, have dismissed the possibilities. But let's take the points, one by one, and analyze them.

1. Speed. Conventional craft, using a principle of "boring through" air, or being forced through air, can get red hot, have metals creep, can fall apart or burn to a crisp from friction. However, by utilizing the principle of "Coanda's Effect," with the object flying in a partial vacuum of its own making, this problem could be overcome. In the opinion of Professor Henri Coanda, discoverer of the effect, as given to Art Buchwald, it would be overcome. In many observations of extremely high speeds in saucers, the most extreme speeds were not observed in the dense, lower layers of our atmosphere, but at higher altitudes, far, far above the earth. And a great many observations of saucers have indicated that they rise in a series of "stairsteps," and achieve greatest velocity

only after gaining the upper reaches of the atmosphere where density, air resistance and friction would be much less.

And on this subject of speed it is well to remember that speeds seemingly impossible to earth craft in 1947, when the first when the first saucers were widely reported, seem terribly old-fashioned today. In 1947, men were trying to break the speed of sound – and secretly had succeeded. But this speed of something over 700 mph became old hat in just six years, when Maj. Charles E. Yeager, in December, 1955, flew

============[PAGE BREAK]==========

a plane of conventional [unreadable] at more than 1,600 mph, or something more than two and one-half times the speed of sound.

And by May, 1955, scientists at Langley Field, Virginia, were reporting that they were doing research on guided missiles that might reach the speed of 15,000 mph. The scientists pointed out that then (1955) they were flying missiles at speeds of 3,000 mph from Wallops Island, Virginia.

Speed, and speed alone – even the fantastic higher speeds reported in saucers – would not seem to rule out completely the possibility that saucers are earth-made.

2. Maneuverability and G-pull on occupant. A great deal of nonsense has been written about the impossibility of having anything human survive the mad maneuvers observed in saucers: acute-angled turns with no slackening in speed; high-speed circling of two discs in the air, as if they were "charging their batteries;" tremendous acceleration from practically zero to thousands of miles an hour; abrupt reverses in direction.

But do all those things rule out the possibility that saucers might be man-made?

Not at all. First, they might be unmanned missiles – especially the tiny saucers that have been reported. Next, now things are coming to light about G-pull and the amount a human can survive, about "weightlessness", about other factors that may enter into the picture.

For instance, in the magazine Flying, March, 1951, p, 34, First Lieutenant Hugh F. McLaurin, USAF, answered the following questions: "What would happen [unreadable] plane and suddenly catapulted into the sky at 13,000 mph? Would you sweat

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

blood? Would you be killed by acceleration or by pressure change? The answers are all no. Lt. McLaurin knew. He went through such a speed in a simulated test and survived.

Again, on G-pull, Major Donald E. Keyhoe, writing in TRUE, December, 1952, wrote: "By applying thrust in an opposite direction, abruptly reversing thrust, an object can be halted in seconds. Tests made with a G-sled by the Air Force has shown that, for a fraction of a second, human beings can take a force of 45 G's and survive."

Maybe Major Keyhoe was a little premature in his announcement of this fact, but as proof of it, USAF, on December 27, 1954, announced that one of its officers, Lt. Col. John P. Stapp, had gone from a record land speed of 652 mph to a dead stop in 1 ½ seconds without ill effects.

This quick stop was made at Holloman Air Development Center at Alamogordo, New Mexico. In the test, Col. Stapp was strapped to a 2,000-pound rocket sled. The only ill effects he suffered were a few blood blisters from dust particles in the air and two black eyes, caused by his eyeballs being thrown forward against his eyelids during the deceleration period.

In stopping, Col. Stapp withstood a pressure equal to 35 G's. His "weight" was more than three tons.

On the evening of December 28, 1954, there appeared in The New York World Telegram and Sun a writeup of an interview with Col. Stapp, made on the 27th, in which the colonel said that he expected to travel at 1,200 mph on the sled. This would be nearly twice as fast, with proportionate step-up in G-pressure, with a violent stop.

Can man withstand the violent maneuvers and sudden decelerations observed in flying saucers?

What do you think?

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

Another factor sometimes overlooked by writers on flying saucers is the phenomenon of weightlessness. If you don't weigh anything, ie., if you have a condition of zero gravity, you can't very well be slammed around by violent maneuvers in the air. Some writers have, however, pointed out that extraterrestrial craft, using some form of magnetic propulsion, might create their own gravitational fields and thus be free of gravitational pull from the earth. Maybe it is not as complicated as all that. In TRUE for July, 1954, writer Don Dwiggins described weightlessness as experienced in a two-seater plane flown by Maj. Edward J. Rackham, USAF acceptance pilot at Lockheed's Van Nuys, California, plant. They went up to only 20,000 feet and then went into a ballistic curve. The result was weightlessness. Mr. Dwiggins photographed a pack of cigarettes floating free in the cabin of the plane.

If weightlessness can be achieved with a ballistic curve, perhaps it can be achieved in some other, but fairly easy way. And such weightlessness might permit violent maneuvering, such as has been (reported?) in flying saucers.

But, if you will read further on the subject of weightlessness, you will find that this phenomenon presents grave hazards to the airman. LIFE Magazine, in an article in its December 6, 1954, issue, pointed out that weightlessness is a highly unpleasant sensation. Mr. airman has been able to stand it for more than

45 seconds. It produces severe disorientation. It dislocates all sense of direction. It produces nausea, nervous distress, loss of ability to co-ordinate, inability to guide the complex machinery of today's flying craft.

So one argument negates the other here.

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

3. The [unreadable] faster than sound.

Here, again, let us refer to the new principle of flight, the "Coanda Effect." If a craft is flying in a partial vacuum, not pushing and compressing the air in front of it, or "boring through" it, (it is) conceivable it might be possible to glide through the atmosphere and [unreadable] through the sound barrier without the "clap of thunder" made by conventional planes. As for the lack of sound issuing from the vehicle itself – motor, engine, turbine, jet – if there exists some new and little publicized principle of flight, plus some new and unpublished method of propulsion – magnetic, anti-gravitational, atomic - it might be possible to achieve soundlessness or near soundlessness.

4. Glow. This is one to really stump the experts, in trying to explain saucers as completely terrestrial craft. But certain atomic, radioactive materials glow with the same kind of blue-green glaze noted in some saucer interiors. But how a crew could be protected from gamma rays emanating from such materials poses an unanswerable question. As to glowing exteriors – Major Keyhoe had written at some length, theorizing that the glow of extraterrestrial space craft could come from varying degrees of heat caused by friction – from preactically white-hot to red-hot, to orange-hot, to yellow-hot, going from highest speeds to the lowest. Perhaps this same principle would hold true of earth-made craft, as well as extraterrestrial vehicles. As to the question of materials which could withstand these heats – present rocket speeds, as published in newspapers – are above 4,000 mph. Such speeds must cause temperatures that make rockets glow – like saucers.

All this may be very thin evidence that saucers could be earth craft. But [unreadable] a lot of evidence

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

used to support [unreadable] thought. And there is a great deal of other evidence that is factual, not based upon pure supposition and theory.

For instance, Professor Coanda discovered his new principle of flight back in 1937. This principle, described previously, in essence is that if you curve a jet of air, or many jets of air, you also create an artificial cyclone, with the tremendous lift of a cyclone, and can lift and maneuver a many-tonned object because you create a vacuum above the whirling blasts of the jets.

Here is a note that may fit:

In The Washington Daily News *for May 14, 1949, was a copyrighted story that the flying discs were of Spanish-Nazi origin. The author held the view that the discs were very real, and that they were of a new "gyroscopic" design.*

Here is another note that also fits somewhere into the picture: On May 22, 1952, there died in Rome, Italy, Giuseppe Belluzo, seventy-six, Italian scientists and former cabinet member. To quote from an article about him in The New York Herald Tribune:

"Mr. Belluzo, who was Minister of National Economy and Minister of Public Instruction during the Fascist regime of Benito Mussolini, was also an authority on cannon and projectiles and a firm believer in flying discs.

"In a newspaper article in 1950, he said that models for flying discs had been drawn in Germany and Italy at about the same time in 1942, and were shown to both Mussolini and Hitler.

"'There is nothing supernatural or Martian about flying discs,' Mr. [unreadable] *simply national*

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

And here, just when it was getting good, the excerpt on the Woods' website ends. Nonetheless, enough detail is in it that readers of *Reich of the Black Sun* and of this book will have noted some stunning things.

1. First, it is evident that Bowen's personal contacts brought him into contact with the head of General Patton's intelligence as the following two statements attest:
   a. "*Charles R. Codman, Col. Ret., (deceased), who was the aide of the late General George S. Patton, Jr., U.S. Army, and who was present at the special performance given for General Patton and his spear-head armored division at Rostau*;"
   b. "*Mr. Charles H. Reed, Col., ret., Richmond Virginian, who really spearheaded the saving of the Spanish Riding School and its horses* ***while on his mission of persuading the head of German Intelligence to turn over to the U.S. the many truckloads of documents***

> ***buried on the Czech-Austrian border – documents which are still secret today.***"

Thus, General Patton's Third Army operations in the late war were connected not only with gathering in the treasure trove of the *Kammlerstab's* top secret research, but also German military intelligence's archives that had been secreted along the Czech-German border. These "archives" could in turn refer to one of three things:

   a. The archives of German Intelligence, particularly of General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost*;
   b. The actual German War Archives, which as recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun* had been transferred to Thuringia, which is along the German-Czech border;
   c. The secreted cache of reports, patents, and so on that the *Kammlerstab* moved to this area probably under the direct auspices and oversight of Kammler himself. The information at the *end* of Bowen's "Encyclopedia" tends to corroborate that this third alternative was the actual case, and tends also to support the thesis, argued in *Reich of the Black Sun*, that General Patton was somehow involved in a highly classified operation designed to secure Kammler and the *Kammlerstab* archives.

3. The bulk of the Bowen UFO Encyclopedia that is extant at the Woods' website is from Chapter XIV of Bowen's book, and it appears that Bowen most favors the *terrestrial* hypothesis as the explanation for the origin of the saucer phenomenon, and moreover that he believes them to be the product of secret black projects weapons development.
4. He then cites the newspaper article that clearly reveals what he thinks the origin of saucers to be. The secret projects of Nazi Germany (and Fascist Italy!).
   a. It is to be pointed out that Bowen's conclusions, coming as they do through personal acquaintance with Patton's intelligence aide, most likely set off alarm Bells – pun intended - within MJ-12, and that they also appear *before* the first publication of Renato Vesco's *Intercept But Don't Shoot* which likewise attributes the

origin of the post-war UFO phenomenon to the wartime development of Nazi flying saucers and to Belluzo. Bowen has thus arrived at his conclusions independently and a full decade before Vesco's book was first published.

b. Bowen additionally provides the background that Belluzzo/Bellonzo was a highly placed official in Mussolini's government, and in addition to his expertise in steam turbines alleged in other sources, is also an expert in projectile ballistics. This would make Belluzzo/Bellonzo a leading candidate for membership in Mussolini's Top Secret UFO study group RS33 led by Marconi.
c. The strong implication of Bowen's remarks is that someone somewhere is continuing the secret development of this technology, and the context of the excerpt of his Encyclopedia also points to the people doing it: Nazis.

5. The last point raises the problem of the reasons for MJ-12's classification of his work. After all, as his preface makes clear that the work is drawn entirely from public accounts and sources. One may therefore conclude that the reasons for the classification lie precisely in the *conclusions* he draws from these of a terrestrial origin and a connection to Nazism and secret black project development of these technologies, a conclusion at odds with the "ET cover story" being adopted at the highest and deepest levels of the US military. Bowen himself makes this clear over and over in the chapter cited. But beyond this, what deeper motivation might lie behind the classification? I can see only three:
    a. The classification was extended because MJ-12 itself knew of the ultimate origins of at least the Roswell saucer, and suspected an independent entity was continuing the Nazi research, a hypothesis advanced in *Reich of the Black Sun*;
    b. The classification was extended because MJ-12, by this date, was already heavily infiltrated by the very Nazis

and Paperclip personnel who were beginning to exercise great influence over the direction of the project and beginning to wrest it from control of the US government.

c. The membership of MJ-12 was divided into two camps at its top decision making level between groups with (1) no Nazi connections or sympathies, and who are ignorant of the extent of Nazi influence and R&D being conducted independently. This group suspects an independent entity is continuing the Nazi weapons development, and that this independent group *is* Nazi, and classifies the Encyclopedia for that reason; (2) a second group *with* Nazi ties and sympathies and perhaps ongoing contact with whatever entity continued, under a new name, which for convenience I have called the "SS Brotherhood of the Bell". This group, for entirely different reasons, would want to deflect attention away not only from Nazi survival, but from Nazi continuance of advance technologies and weapons projects, and from the fact that this continuance was *independent of any sovereign state.* Classification by either group would also be unavoidable since the document also hints that Patton's strange end-war operations can only be satisfactorily explained in connection to German military intelligence and/or to the *Kammlerstab*, its archives and personnel, to American Black projects and nominal American "jurisdiction".

6. The essence of these conclusions tends to corroborate as well the basic thesis behind William Harbison's novel *Genesis* that such independent development was indeed the ultimate controlling power behind the more well-known UFO crash-retrieval cases and that this power was specifically tied to Nazism.

B. The Day After Corso:
An Examination of Corso's The Day After Roswell *In the Light of the Cooper-Cantwheel Documents And German Wartime Technology*

Corso's thesis bears repeating once again:

> My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber-optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. Yet the seeds for all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.[26]

The elements of this thesis may be broken down into the following list:

1. Something crashed in New Mexico;
2. It was recovered by the US Army Air Force;
3. It contained exotic technology of such a nature as to compel the interpretation that what crashed was extra-terrestrial in origin;
4. The recovery of this technology from the crash was back-engineered and led to the ET-derived technologies of
   a. the integrated circuit (and by implication, its forerunner, the transistor);
   b. the laser;
   c. fiber-optics;
   d. particle beams and particle accelerators.

Points 1 and 2 are disputed by no one, so we pass immediately to point 3.

Corso himself, while wishing to maintain that the technology pointed conclusively to something extra-terrestrial in origin, also paradoxically and repeatedly indicates that something about this exotic extra-terrestrial technology looked *peculiarly familiar*, and he does so often in the very next breath, as in the following example:

---

[26] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, ret), *The Day After Roswell,* p. 4.

> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial. Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been surveilling our defensive installations and *even seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[27]

On the previous page Corso indicates the technology he has in mind, because the military feared that at first "the craft might have been an experimental Soviet weapon *because it bore a resemblance to some of the German-designed aircraft that had made their appearances near the end of the war, especially the crescent-shaped Horton (sic.) flying wing.*"[28]

Horten Flying Wing in Flight Before World War Two

---

[27] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 4 emphasis added.

[28] Ibid., p. 3, emphasis added.

On the face of it this is an odd statement to make, since Corso, who was himself involved in Operation Paperclip, most likely knew that the Horten Flying Wings were brought to *this* country, not the Soviet Union. But there is more.

> As early as 1947, scientists who had gone to the Air Material Commnd at Wright Field to see the debris were speculating that the *electronic potential of the Roswell craft reminded them of the German and British antigravity experiments of the 1920s and 1930s.* General Twining was reported to have said more than once that *the name of the Serbian electrical engineer and inventor of alternating current, Nikola Tesla, kept bubbling up in the conversation because the scientists examining the damaged craft described the way it must have converted an electromagnetic field into an antigravity field.* And, of course, the craft itself reminded them of the German experimental fighter aircraft that made their appearance near the end of the war but that had been in development ever since the 1930s.[29]

Well might the name of Tesla have come up repeatedly, since Tesla toward the end of his life made a rather astonishing series of statements concerning his "dynamic theory of gravity":

> During the succeeding two years (1893 and 1894) of intense concentration I was fortunate enough to make two far reaching discoveries. *The first was a dynamic theory of gravity*, which I have worked out in all details and hope to give to the world very soon. It *explains the causes of this force and the motions of heavenly bodies* under its influence so satisfactorily that it will put an end to the idle speculation and false conceptions, as that of curved space….
>
> Only the existence of a field of force can account for the motions of the bodies as observed, and its assumption dispenses with space curvature. All literature on this subject is futile and destined to oblivion. *So are all attempts to explain the working of the universe without recognizing the existence of the ether and the indispensable function it plays in the phenomena.*
>
> ….I consider myself the original discoverer of this truth, which can be expressed by the statement: *There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.*
>
> *....It applies rigorously to molecules and atoms as well as to the largest heavenly bodies, and to all matter in the universe* in any phase

---

[29] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 110, emphasis added.

> of its existence from its very first formation to its ultimate disintegration.[30]

I believe that what Tesla had derived in his "dynamic theory of gravity" was precisely a vorticular model of the aether.

In any case, it is significant that his name kept surfacing in the scientific discussions concerning the Roswell debris at Wright Field, according to Corso, and that it did so also in the context of "British and German" 1930s antigravity experiments. Once again, something about the technology looked *very* familiar:

> At the very least, Twining had suggested, the crescent-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley at Alamogordo in the days after the crash confirmed this. They didn't want to be thought of as *verrükt* (crazy) but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered.[31]

The answer of course is that which Corso implies: there was a "German Roswell" before the war.[32] The development by the Germans of Tesla's ideas or of a vortex aether atom model are never even mentioned as a possibility by Corso.

So what of Corso's allegations about fiber optics, lasers, and integrated circuits, three of the "ET technologies" that jump-started America's post-war technological surge according to the his thesis?

1. Corso on the Integrated Circuit and Transistor

Regarding the integrated circuit, Corso himself notes that one requirement for space exploration was not lost on his superior, General Trudeau: "the development of an integrated-circuit technology so that the electronic components of spacecraft could be miniaturized to fit the size requirements of rocket-propelled vehicles."[33]

---

[30] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Llife of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Brotherhood of Life, 1994), p. 250, emphasis added.

[31] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 73.

[32] See Corso, op. cit., p. 133.

The transistor is a crucial step on the technology tree from the vacuum tube to the development of the integrated circuit. Corso has this to say about it:

> The entire development arc of the radio tube, from Edison's first experiments with filament for his incandescent lightbulb to the vacuum tubes that formed the switching mechanisms of ENIAC, lasted about fifty years. *The development of the silicon transistor seemed to come upon us in a matter of months. And, had I not seen the silicon wafers from the Roswell crash with my own eyes, held them in my own hands talked about them with Hermann Oberth, Wernher von Braun, or Hans Kohler*, and heard the reports from these now dead scientists of the meetings between Nathan Twining, Vannevar Bush, and researchers at Bell Labs, *I would have thought the invention of the transistor was a miracle. I now know how it came about.* [34]

According to Corso's thesis, the answer is, of course that it was all due to exotic recovered ET technology recovered at Roswell. Note especially the "miraculous silicon wafers," the marvelous semi-conducting miracle that would make the integrated circuit possible.

But now Corso's thesis begins to collapse, at least in this matter, for if it was true that miniaturization of electronic components was an essential feature for America's space program, then it was much *more* so a necessity for the Nazis and their rockets, if they were ever to be turned into viable weapons for hurling heavy atomic bombs at anyone.

As for the transistor, whose "discovery history pedigree" is admitted to be obscure at best by many researchers, it did indeed appear to burst on the world in the late 1940s from nowhere….

….unless one recalls a very similar looking device, already in use by the Germans, in 1940:

---

[33] Corso, *The Day After Roswel.*, p. 169.

[34] Ibid., p. 168, emphasis added.

Telefunken

One can only wonder then, how far this work was pressed from this little tube's appearance and use in Nazi Germany in 1940 to the "discovery" of the transistor in 1947. Something was seeded into American industry, something "alien," but alien in the sense of "*foreign*" both scientifically, ethnically and politically.

And as for the miraculous silicon semiconductor chips, a picture suffices to dispense with Corso's thesis on this point as well:

German Semi-Conductor Wafers Manufactured During the War for Use in Infrared Sights, from a Combined Intelligence Objectives Committee Report

In other words, the miraculous “E.T. technology” that Corso refers to already existed in its prototypical stages of development in Nazi Germany.

Thus, as far as the transistor goes, the historical *and verifiable* record points, not to “E.T.” as the origin of the Roswell debris and recovered technology, but to *Nazi Germany.*

2. Lasers

But what of lasers themselves, which Corso also maintains was one of the many devices stemming from the recovered “ET” technology from the Roswell crash?

As my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* and as chapter 5 of this book showed,[35] lasers too were one aspect of “quantum coherence” being researched by the Germans. Igor Witkowski is even more specific in his account of just what the Germans were after, for they were not, it seems, after an ordinary optical laser:

> After all it is common knowledge that among other things work was also carried out on some kind of “X-ray laser” – a source of coherent X-ray or gamma radiation, which is well-known to be lethal to living organisms at high intensity. Thanks to searches carried out in German archives it has been possible to establish that in 1944 a special Luftwaffe research establishment received the task to develop such a weapon, situated at the town of Gross Ostheim. Materials relating to this work are currently located in a civilian establishment – the Karlsruhe research centre and were disclosed several years ago…. One can make out that three different lethal radiation emitters were worked on and that the construction of such a device, effective as an anti-aircraft weapon lay within the Third Reich’s range of possibilities and its military use was possible in a relatively short time – that is to say still before the end of the war. The third and most mature version of the weapon assumed the irradiation of a target 5 kilometers away at a rate of 7 rads a second for 30 seconds which, as affirmed in the report, was completely sufficient to totally paralyze the aircraft’s crew. [36]

---

[35] *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 104-105, and chapter 5 here, specifically the remarks of Horst Korsching, pp. 186-187.

[36] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 92.

While the description of the weapon Witkowski describes does not sound like a genuine cohered X-ray was achieved (noting its limited operational range and relatively low dosage of radiation), it nonetheless is also possible that the idea of *coherence* of X-rays and gamma rays was the goal. Again, this means that the *concept* of coherence predated Roswell as did the first experimental steps towards its realization. There is nothing necessarily extra-terrestrial whatsoever about it.

3. Fiber Optics

Then what of fiber optics? Surely this, at least, was so exotic that no terrestrially-based proto-typical technology existed in 1947? "Members of the retrieval team who foraged around inside the spacecraft on the morning of the discovery," Corso states,

> Told Colonel Blancard back at the 509th (Bomb group) that they were amazed they couldn't find any conventional wiring. Where were the electrical connections? They didn't understand the function of the printed circuit wafers they found, but, even more important, they were completely mystified by the single glass filaments that ran through the panels of the ship.[37]

So once again off Colonel Corso went to consult with a German Paperclip scientist, Hans Kohler:[38]

> The technology was still very new, Hans Kohler told me during a private briefing in early 1962, but the promise of using light as a carrier of all kinds of signals through single-filament glass strands was holding great promise. He explained that the premise of optical fibers was to have a filament of glass so fine and free of any impurities that nothing would impede the light beam moving along the center of the shaft.[39]

But unfortunately, at this point here there exists an indicator – a very *slight* one – that some work along these lines was also underway in Nazi Germany.

---

[37] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 209.

[38] And inevitably, the question occurs, is this the *same* Hans Kohler, or Coler, that invented the Coler coil?

[39] Corso, op. cit., p. 210.

There exists a list of special German research projects in radar, homing devices, and so on that describes a project headed a Professor Karolus, based in Leipzig, whose purpose was to investigate the modulation of mercury lighting for the purposes of “light telephony” that would have operated in the infrared band. Nothing more is known about it, but the connection of the project to *telephony* does raise questions, one that Igor Witkowski himself asks very bluntly: “Could this have referred to some kind of precursor to present day optical fibre telephony?”[40]

What are we to conclude from all this?

As regards the MAJIC-12 documents examined here, one has indications of a definite pattern of exotic though entirely *terrestrial* technology, and one that *might* be under independent or quasi-independent development. And during the period from the end of the war to the early 1960s, only one entity really would have an interest in doing so, a “Nazi International.”

As regards the Corso thesis of Roswell, it is clear that, in two out of the three cases mentioned here - the transistor and the laser – that he adduces were the results of ET seeded technology, there are wartime German antecedents in the technology tree. In the last case – fiber optics – there is a vague reference to “light telephony” that *might* represent a prototypical technology leading eventually to the modern fiber optic technology.

However, when Corso’s thesis is viewed in conjunction with the MAJIC-12 documents reviewed here, and in conjunction with what is known of wartime German research achievements, his thesis shows itself to be rather weak. Indeed, *more documentary substantiation exists for a terrestrial and German origin for some of the technology he cites in support of his thesis, than there exists evidence for its extra-terrestrial origin, for which Corso adduces not a shred of evidence other than his stories.* Indeed, in these anecdotal stories Corso every now and then includes statements to the effect that our military saw the “German resemblance” in the “ET” technology recovered at Roswell! Unless one is to believe the Nazis’ own Thule Society-inspired belief that the white Aryan race is ultimately of extra-terrestrial origin, the indicators seem preponderantly to point to terrestrial, and most probably German origins for the technology.

---

[40] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 157, 158.

Finally, the MAJIC-12 documents examined in this chapter either allude indirectly to, or openly assert, the involvement of the shadowy UFO group in the assassination of President Kennedy.

But before leaving the subjects of MAJIC-12, Nazi Paperclip personnel, Roswell, and Colonel Corso, a final word shows how weirdly, and how intimately, they are all connected:

> Col. Philip Corso, info source for last year's book *The Day After Roswell,* and temporary darling of Ufology, has brought attention to himself with the revelation of a history in spin control and association with right wing extremist elements in the military as well as his former ties to a semi-secret society called the "Shickshinny Knights of Malta"
>
> Before *The Day After Roswell* was a gleam in the eye of someone at Simon and Schuster, Peter Dale Scott wrote about Corso in *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK.* In the light of the fact that he is working on another book with Roswell co-author William Birnes (to be entitled *The Day After Dallas*) *it is worth noting that Corso was an investigator involved with the Warren Commission* who according to Scott, "built on … anti CIA paranoia by telling his friend and fellow Senate staffer [for segregationist Strom Thurmond] Julien Sourwine, who made sure it was relayed to the FBI, that Oswald was tied to a communist ring inside the CIA, and was doubling as an informant for the FBI."
>
> *….The Shickshinny Knights of Malta was apparently founded by old-guard White Russians who emigrated to the US after the revolution, eventually settling in Shickshinny, Pennsylvania. By the end of the Second World War, the organization had evolved into a haven for mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel.* When Corso became involved with the Knights, (circa 1963-64) the organization seemed to operate as an underground think tank and spin factory…. Corso disavows any association with the group.
>
> Perhaps this has little to do with Corso's present activities, however a few people in the UFO community have expressed the feeling that his claims in Roswell may be the result of a few verifyable (sic) facts diluted with much more mis- or disinformation. If this is true, Corso himself may not be aware of it. In light of the man's history, this may not be far off the mark, and there is reason to suspect that he may have been called out of retirement to play the role of publicist one last time.[41]

---

[41] Gregory Bishop, ed., *Wake Up Down There! The Excluded Middle Collection* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), Issue # 8 –

That Corso was an investigator for the Warren Commission is a direct connection to the JFK assassination, but more important are the allegations of associations with a "White Russian émigré community" that after the war became a "haven for mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel."

Just whose "mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel" we already know: General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* with its myriad of "émigré" front organizations. Just what all this has to do with the assassination of President Kennedy was already briefly touched upon in chapter three, "From Russia with Love," but now, it is time to go into the detailed connections of German military intelligence, Nazi technology, German money, and the tragic events in Dallas in November of 1963.

Summer 1998, "Philip Corso's Background, Motivations Questioned," pp. 219-220, emphasis added.

9.

"Mae Brussellsprouts:" Nazi Survival and JFK

"The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!....They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is ***who is in power.****"*
Jack Ruby[1]

"In this connection it is interesting to note that in May, 1924, when the 700th anniversary of the University of Naples, a University founded by Emperor Frederick II, was celebrated, a crown was found near the sarcophagus of the Emperor in the Cathedral of Palermo with the following inscription:
'Seinem Kaiser und Helden
Das geheime Deutschland.'
('To Their Emperor and Hero, from Secret Germany')"
Paul Winkler[2]

After World War Two had ended, the Nazis seemed to have developed a considerable skill and talent for appearing in some very unlikely places doing very unlikely things with some very unlikely people.

Consider, for example, the statement made by famous UFO abductee Barney Hill under hypnosis to his psychiatrist Benjamin Simon:

> "BARNEY
> (He takes care to be extremely precise.)
> There was a row of windows. A huge row of windows. Only divided by struts – or structures that prevented it from being one solid window. Or then – it would have been one solid window. And the evil face on the –
> (He starts to say "leader.")
> He looks like a German Nazi. He's a Nazi…"
> (There is a questioning tone in his voice.)
> DOCTOR
> "He's a Nazi. Did he have a uniform?"

---

[1] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* With an introduction by Kenn Thomas (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press: 1997), p. 102.

[2] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1943), p. 237.

> BARNEY
> “Yes.”
> DOCTOR
> “What kind of uniform?”
> BARNEY
> “He had a black scarf around his neck, dangling over his left shoulder.”[3]

Then there was Jack Ruby’s odd statement on who was behind the Kennedy assassination, also allegedly made under hypnosis:

> The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!...They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is who *is in power*.[4]

Strangely enough, Ruby, by fingering both South America and Nazis, had his finger on an aspect of the Kennedy assassination that few suspected: surviving Nazi communities in South America and their ongoing quasi-independent existence.

A. J.F.K’s Policies

Regardless of whether one agreed or disagreed with his politics, President John F. Kennedy managed during his short term in office to outline policies that clearly threatened a number of well-entrenched and very powerful interests, interests that many believe to comprise elements of America’s “Establishment” or “secret government”. Kennedy had, for example, circulated a national security memorandum after the Bay of Pigs fiasco that effectively turned all paramilitary and covert operations over to the Pentagon, wresting it from the CIA. He had vowed to “smash the CIA into a thousand pieces.” For those people like Allen Dulles or General Charles Peare Cabell – whose appearance in the MAJIC-12 documents we noted in the previous chapter – Kennedy was taking a direct aim at the fiefdoms of bureaucratic power that they had nurtured since the end of World War Two. And with the memorandum, he had scored a direct hit.

---

[3] John G. Fuller, *The Interrupted Journey* (London: Corgi Books, 1966), p. 116.

[4] Kenn Thomas and Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control Oswald, and JFK: Were we Controlled?* (Kempton, Illinois: Adevntures Unlimited Press) p. 102, emphasis in the original.

And, after one of the America's most closely contested elections, Kennedy had won by a narrow margin over Republican incumbent Vice President Richard Nixon. Many maintain that Kennedy won because key counties across the country, like Chicago's notoriously corrupt Cook county in Illinois, were "delivered" to the Kennedy column by then Mayor Richard Daly and various Mafia contacts. It was a story that was claimed for other hotly contested counties. After assuming office, President Kennedy appointed his brother Robert to be Attorney General, and the Kennedy Administration began to go after organized crime. And with brother Robert heading the Justice Department, yet another powerful enemy was gained besides the intelligence community and organized crime. That enemy was J. Edgar Hoover, Director of the FBI, a man who in the quiet circles of party-going power in Washington, D.C., made no secret of his hatred of the Kennedy administration.

At this point, it is worth pausing to note that of these three potential enemies, *two* of them would exercise extraordinary influence over the post-assassination Warren Commission, for Allen Dulles, former head of the CIA and dismissed by Kennedy after the Bay of Pigs, would of course become a prominent member of the Commission, doubtless thereby insuring that any CIA connections were buried or at the very minimum, obfuscated in a word-spin of confusion. The other enemy that figured prominently in the outcome of the Commission was, of course, J. Edgar Hoover's FBI, which exercised inordinate influence over the flow of information and data to the Commission.

As was seen in the previous chapter, however, there are MAJIC-12 documents which – if one accepts their genuineness for the sake of argument – also indicate that Kennedy wanted to internationalize space jointly with the Soviet Union. If one assumes the existence of some covert aspect to either or both of the two countries' space programs, then this too, would have threatened a good many hidden agendas and entrenched power interests. And in this connection, long before any of the MAJIC-12 documents – whether genuine or not – ever surfaced to see the light of day, the Torbitt document drew its own conclusions about to the space program and a network of highly placed Nazis within NASA. For the Torbitt document, Von Braun's control of the Defense Industrial Security Command (D.I.S.C.) becomes a symbol of this network of Paperclip scientists, connected in turn to other World War Two Fascists such as Ference Nagy, representing the émigré community that had collaborated with the Nazis, and that subsequently fled Eastern Europe and Communist reprisal after the war, and, via the Gehlen Organization, that set up a network of front organizations in Western Europe and the United States. These two groups – the Paperclip scientists and the Fascist émigré fronts – in turn were connected to a veritable "Murder Incorporated," the so-called "Permindex" corporation, a company with many of these prominent Fascists, as well as Clay Shaw, on its board of directors. The Torbitt document – long before the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents were ever released to, or planted in, the UFOlogy community – makes very clear a connection to the Kennedy assassination quickly brushed aside by most assassination researchers: The Nazis.

But there is a final potential Kennedy enemy to consider. In June of 1963, the same year as his assassination, Kennedy took aim at one of the most powerful of the "entrenched interests" of the Establishment: international mercantile banking. President Kennedy authorized the printing of approximately four billion dollars of United States Notes and their release for circulation, thereby entirely bypassing the privately-owned Federal Reserve Bank, established by subterfuge and calculated political manipulation after the notorious secret Jekyll Island meeting. Kennedy's move clearly portended an end to the bankers' monopolistic hold over the nation's money supply and a return to "constitutional money," money entirely free of interest to private banks. This aspect of the assassination conspiracy is even less well-known than the Nazi connection, and remains so.

Careful consideration of the disparate groups connected with the assassination – the military-industrial complex, the "national security 'community'" represented by the CIA, FBI and other agencies, the space program, the Mafia, the military, right-wing émigré groups represented by various anti-Castro Cuban fronts as well as the Eastern Europeans, and international corporate finance and banking - will indicate many connections between all these elements, as many assassination researchers have pointed out. But there is one group with connections to all of these organized interests, and that, of course, is the Nazis.

B. Mae Brussell on Nazis and JFK

1. Her Thesis

The late Mae Brussell, well-known conspiriologist and radio talk-show host, was never one to leave a stone unturned. Once having learned of the Torbitt document and its contents, Brussell did what she normally did when confronted by the allegation of deep conspiracy: she began putting the pieces together and carefully documenting her sources.

Her statement of Nazi involvement in the assassination at some high level takes account of these “other players” in the overall scheme:

> This is a story of how key Nazis, even as the Wehrmacht was still on the offensive, anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West. It is the story of how honorable men, and some not so honorable, were so blinded by the Red menace that they fell into lockstep with Nazi designs. It is the story of the Odd Couple Plus One: the mob, the CIA, and fanatical exiles, each with its own reason for gunning for Kennedy. It is a story that climaxes in Dallas on November 22, 1963, when John Kennedy was struck down. And it is a story with an aftermath – America’s slide to the brink of fascism.[5]

Kennedy was gunned down, in other words, by the well-known “coalescence of interests,” which, on Brussell’s view, included the Nazis as very secretive players. But Brussell’s statement hints at something more: a *coup d’etat* with an increasingly fascist face. This “fascist face” will become more and more visible as one considers the details of Brussell's research, which in turn, exposes a possible motivation for Nazi involvement in a conspiracy of "coalescing interests."

---

[5] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination,” *The Rebel,* Nov 22, 1983, p. 1.

2. Germans and Atsugi AFB, Japan: An Oswald Nazi Link

Lee Harvey Oswald.

Say the name and most people think immediately of the assassin, or at least, of the fallguy, in the Kennedy murder.

Fewer people will think of an apparently ordinary American man, with an ordinary background, who became a Marine, and then began to exhibit bizarre if not extraordinary political beliefs for a soldier, much less a Marine.

Even fewer people still will think of those bizarre behaviors and political beliefs in connection with Oswald's known connections to the FBI, and conclude (in my opinion correctly) that Oswald's bizarre display of pro-Marxist political beliefs while a Marine at the secret Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan were part of a pattern of sheep-dipping him. Oswald, in spite of these openly professed beliefs, had certain security clearances at the secret radar base at the airfield, and was learning Russian as well.

And there is one more thing, also well-known to most assassination researchers: Atsugi Air Base was where the CIA's U-2 flights over the Soviet Union originated.

As is well-known to many people, Oswald subsequently concocted a "family emergency" to tend to his sick mother, Marguerite Oswald, in order to be discharged from the Marines. After leaving the Marines, however, Oswald then traveled to the Soviet Union, where he then defected. He was placed in Minsk, Byelorussia (White Russia), in a television factory, and was given, by Soviet standards, a spacious apartment. He met and eventually married Marina Oswald, the daughter of a Soviet military intelligence colonel.

Many assassination researchers believe that Oswald fed the Soviets radar and other technical data which led to the shooting down of Francis Gary Powers' U-2 later the same year. Of course, the U-2 was flown out of Atsugi AFB in Japan. Since the U-2 flights were *CIA* operations and not Air Force operations, this means that the CIA had a secret base at the Atsugi compound. More about this in a moment.

Then, unbelievably, Oswald was allowed to *re*-defect to the USA, along with his Russian wife – no mean feat in those days – where his subsequent movements and connections are more or less well-known.

But what many people do *not* know is that Oswald, in addition to his connections to extremist left-wing beliefs and organizations, also had some very peculiar connections to extremist right wing people and organizations. One of them, unbelievably, is to the émigré-and-spy networks of none other than former Wehrmacht general Reinhard Gehlen.

> When (Allen) Dulles spoke, Gehlen listened. The CIA chief ws convinced, along with his brother, Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, that the "captive nations" of the Soviet bloc would rise up if given sufficient encouragement. At his behest, Gehlen recruited and trained an exile mercenary force ready to rush in without involving American units. Also at Dulles' direction, Gehlen tapped the ranks of his wartime Russian collaborators for a cadre of spies to be parachuted into the Soviet Union. Some of these spies were schooled at the CIA's clandestine base at Atsugi, Japan, where, in 1957, a young Marine named Lee Harvey Oswald was posted to the U-2 spy plane operation there.[6]

While not establishing a direct connection to the Nazis, this is but one bit of information in a pattern of associations surrounding the assassination that Brussell uncovers.

3. Gehlen and the Russian Orthodox Diaspora

Yet another piece in the assassination puzzle was the connection of Gehlen's "Organization" with the émigré communities of Eastern Europeans in this country:

> Gehlen pioneered the setting up of dummy fronts and cover companies to support his farflung covert operations. A major project was to form Eastern European émigré groups in the U.S. that could be used against

---

[6] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 2.

> the Soviets. Both the Tolstoy Foundation and the Union of Bishops of the Orthodox Church Outside Russia were funded by the CIA. Lee and Marina Oswald arrived from the Soviet Union in June, 1962. They were befriended by some three dozen White Russians in the Dallas-Ft. Worth area. Many had identifiable Nazi links; others were in the oil and defense industries. It was an improbable social set for a defector to the U.S.S.R. and his wife from Minsk.[7]

In any case, it is clear that, via Oswald and similar people, Dulles' CIA was playing a very dangerous game with two very dangerous elements – the Soviets and Gehlen's own organization of "former" Nazis – that were implacable enemies of each other and, in turn, at root enemies of America as well. The intention of using the BND is clear: if the operation of training émigrés at Atsugi and elsewhere was exposed, American involvement could be "plausibly denied." Gehlen's Organization is thus the cut-out for the operation. As will be seen subsequently in this chapter, however, "cutouts" can quickly become semi- or even completely independent of their ostensible "controllers" and become, in effect, Trojan Horses.

a. Implication: The Infiltration of US Intelligence and Defense

It is worth pausing to consider again the implication of Operation Paperclip and the similar operation that led to the establishment of the Gehlen Organization with its numerous East European émigré front organizations. From one point of view, that of the U.S. military-industrial-intelligence complex itself, the U.S. was still in the driver's seat, controlling these two groups and directing their activities. Even in the case of the Nazi rocket scientists in the space program and their counterparts in the defense industries, these men can be considered "cutouts," fall guys to take the blame in case something goes wrong, and to insulate the bureaucracies of the Establishment from blame in case they did fail.

---

[7] Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 3. The assertion of CIA involvement with one of the many jurisdictions of the Eastern Orthodox Church in North America may seem odd or completely out of place. In point of fact, however, Brussell is merely repeating information from the Torbitt document and the assassination investigation of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison. The author himself personally knows of the intelligence and military backgrounds of two Orthodox bishops from yet another jurisdiction, and was made aware of a yet a third. The role of the CIA, the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* and other intelligence agencies in establishing and/or using churches for intelligence purposes is therefore a story in and of itself, and would require a book of its own.

But from the point of view of the "cutouts" themselves, they are infiltrators, "users" of the host country's protection and economic power. Such a view, however, can only be reasonably sustained if one detects patterns of behavior on the part of the cut-outs that would indicate *independence* from their "controllers," for such independence would indicate a measure of underlying, though hidden, organization on their part. As will be seen, there are indicators that this is the case, and from within the space program itself.

b. Nazis and "the Rogue Element" In US Intelligence

Various conspiracy researchers[8] have pointed out that there seems to be some "rogue" element within the American (and to a lesser extent, other nations') intelligence services, acting on its own and often counter to its host nation's national interest, and following its own more-often-than-not murky agenda. Others have pointed out that the recent spate of terrorism has to have, at some point, major financial backing and the backing of some major world power. Still others have even hinted of the historical connection of Nazism to militant Islam and to the roots of other terrorist groups.[9] In any case, a surviving and organized network of international Fascism would certainly fit the requirements for all these, though, of course, beyond the historically known connections, the case is speculative.

---

[8] See, for example, Rodney Stritch's *Defrauding America.*

[9] See, for example, the connection between the Nazis and the rise of militant Islam in Egypt under the notorious Banna.

4. Schacht-Onassis

But while the case for a “Nazi International” being the oft-dicussed “rogue element” within intelligence is only tenuous and speculative, the case for its deeply hidden and high-level connections to the JFK assassination becomes stronger the closer one looks. Consider only the fact that Hitler’s financial wizard, Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, former President of the Reichsbank, and father-in-law to SS Commando Otto Skorzeny, was subsequently “on the payroll of Aristotle Onassis.”[10]

We all know who subsequently married Aristotle Onassis, and who strictly refused to talk about what she knew about the murder of her husband. We all know she died relatively recently, still as poised and beautiful as ever, and gave strict instructions that her private diaries were not to be released until long in the future:

Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis.

What we never knew, is that by marrying Onassis, Jackie had married into a family of organized crime with its own set of very strange, very Nazi, connections dating from World War Two.

And what of Otto Skorzeny?

Skorzeny survived the war, helped direct the notorious O.D.E.S.S.A. organization (*Organization der Ehemalige SS Angehörige*, or “Organization of Former SS Members), and established the “Internationale Fascista” in Madrid, Spain, in the same building as was occupied by Spanish Intelligence, *and* by the Madrid section of the CIA!

5. Dulles and McCloy on the Warren Commission

Weirder still were some of the people chosen to be on the Warren Commission, two of whom can only be viewed with extreme suspicion.

One of them, former CIA director Allen Dulles, has already been mentioned. Dulles, of course, was OSS station chief in Zurich, Switzerland, during the war, and helped negotiate the secret deal with General Reinhard Gehlen, and one can only assume, other secret "deals" with Nazi bigwigs, perhaps including Martin Bormann and SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler themselves. Dulles will be encountered again later in this chapter, for we have yet to consider what he was up to *before* World War Two. Dulles as a member of the Warren Commission is perhaps the best example of the post-assassination spin network's ability to undo the "damage" caused by the Kennedy Administration, for Dulles was of course fired by Kennedy for his role in the Bay of Pigs fiasco.

---

[10] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination,” p. 6.

We do know what another prominent member of the Warren Commission was up to before the war: John J. McCloy. For those who may have forgotten, John J. McCloy was the post-war American High Commissioner for (West) Germany, and was responsible for pardoning many Nazis from their war crimes sentences in order to expedite their extradition to the U.S.A. and their use in Operation Paperclip and similar projects.

But before the war John J. McCloy was so highly placed, so "in" on the "inside track," that he managed to share a box with Adolf Hitler at the 1936 Berlin Olympics in what may have been his first television appearance. But why such high honors for an American lawyer? This is in part because he was an attorney for the German chemical cartel I.G. Farben before the war.

6. A Review

Just in case it was missed, a review is in order:

One Warren Commission member was post-war U.S. High Commissioner for Germany, pardoned numerous Nazis, had personally met Adolf Hitler, and legally represented German chemical-industrial giant I.G. Farben before the war: John J. McCloy.

One Warren Commission member had been fired by President Kennedy for his role in the Bay of Pigs, had been Director of the CIA, was OSS station chief in Zurich during the war, and had negotiated the secret deal between German military intelligence guru General Reinhard Gehlen, as was as possible other secret deals between "surrendering" Nazis and the U.S.A.: Allen Dulles.

But during the period that Dulles was still well-ensconced in the CIA, U.S. Marine Lee Oswald was stationed at Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan, where, in spite of his openly professed Marxism and "admiration" for the Soviet Union, he was given security clearances to relatively sensitive radar data connected with the CIA's U-2 flights over Russia. Additionally, since Atsugi AFB was home to the secret U-2 flights over the Soviet Union, it therefore had to have a secret CIA base hidden within the Air Force Base. General Reinhard Gehlen's West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* (Federal Security Service) was apparently training foreign émigrés as a paramilitary force to be dropped into the Soviet Union. Part of this training would doubtless have been in Russian, and part would have included knowledge of Communist doctrine, party organization, and how to "pass oneself off" as a committed Communist. This means that Oswald, if in fact he was being "sheep dipped" for an intelligence assignment in the Soviet Union, as Garrison himself believed, was likely being trained for the role by Gehlen's Organization and by former Nazis! In other words, all the elements converge at Atsugi, and in the person of Lee Harvey Oswald.

In this connection it will be shown later that Oswald's "address book" contained more than just the addresses of FBI agents….

7. South American Death Squads: The "Kinder, Gentler Gestapo" for Hire

Having reviewed the Nazi situation, we are now in a better position to consider other details presented by Brussell, details that begin to hint of what the *Nazi* motivation and role may have been, in addition to all the other groups and their individual reasons for playing a role in the assassination might have been.

When Brussell wrote her assassination piece for Larry Flint's *The Rebel* magazine on the twentieth anniversary of the assassination in 1983, she referred to a Senate Foreign Relations Committee report entitled "Latin America: Murder Inc.," a report that she noted was "still classified" at the time of her article.[11]

---

[11] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination," p. 11.

Brussell indicated that the report stated that the U.S.A.'s intelligence community had "joint operations" with Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Paraguay, and Uruguay," known as "Operation Condor." Brussell then explains the possible significance of the code name by citing a paragraph from a Jack Anderson column:

> Jack Anderson gave a few details in his column "Operation Condor, An Unholy Alliance," August 3, 1979:
>
> "Assassination teams are centered in Chile. This international consortium is located in Colonia Dignidad, Chile. Founded by Nazis from Hitler's SS, headed by Franz Pfeiffer Richter, Adolf Hitler's 1000-year Reich may not have perished."

Brussell then explains the historical connection of Operation Condor to these Nazi-trained and based South American Death squads:

> Otto Skorzeny code-named his assault on American soldiers in the Battle of the Bulge Operation Greif, the "Condor." He continued Condor with his post-war special teams that imposed "sanctions," meaning the assassination of enemies.

And lest one forget, Brussell reminds her readers of the serpents' nest of connections Skorzeny unlocks:

> Skorzeny's father-in-law was Hjalmar Schacht, president of Hitler's Reichsbank. Schacht guided Onassis' shipyards in rebuilding the German and Japanese war fleets. In 1950 Onassis signed on Lars Anderson for his whaling ships on the hunt of Antarctica and Argentina. Anderson had belonged to Vidkum Quisling's Nazi collaborationist group in Norway during the war. Clay Shaw, who was charged by New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison with complicity in the JFK assassination, was a close friend of Hjalmar Schacht.[12]

This presents a very interesting, very nasty, picture.

One can assume, once again, that the U.S. intelligence community's involvement with such groups as Colonia Dignidad was to use them as "cut-outs", accomplishing the necessary political assassination when necessary, and achieving “plausible deniability” when something went wrong. After all, who would believe that such an extensive network of Nazis still existed so long after the war? And who would believe that the American intelligence community was in cahoots with it? That was, after all, 1983, almost forty years after the end of the war. Who would believe that there were still Nazis well-enough organized and well-enough financed to run such South American continent-spanning covert operations? Who would believe that they were still even ideologically committed to Nazism after such a long period?

---

[12] Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 11.

But again, Jack Anderson’s and Mae Brussell’s picture presents yet another disturbing picture: one not only of such continued Nazi existence, but of its continued *semi-* or *complete independence from the control of the U.S. or any Latin American government*. Indeed, it would have been relatively easy for such professionally trained assassins to keep their own records and proofs of connections with these countries’ intelligence services and governments to organized crime and murder and Latin America. In short, it would be a very easy thing for such independent Nazi colonies to blackmail their so-called masters with the threat of exposure.

8. George De Mohrenschildt

When “Marxist” and Soviet defector Lee Harvey Oswald returned to the United States with Russian wife Marina in tow, he began to associate with some very *un*-Marxist and *un*-Communist characters, like East European emigrant and Texas oil geology businessman George DeMohrenschildt. DeMohrenschildt was unusual company for the supposedly poor Oswald to be running with, and he soon introduced Lee Harvey to Dallas’ White Russian and “tsarist” community, where he and Marina were befriended by Ruth and Michael Paine.

The Paines assisted Lee Harvey in obtaining his job at the Texas School Book Depository and he and Marina stayed with the Paines in their home.

This is all highly unusual, for of course, as has already been mentioned, Lee’s wife Marina was the daughter of a colonel in the

Soviet Union's military intelligence, the GRU, while Lee Harvey was, of course, supposedly a pro-Marxist defector to the Soviet Union who had achieved the impossible and "defected back" to the U.S.A. with a Russian wife!

9. The Paines, The Oswalds, and General Dornberger

Michael Paine took an extraordinary risk with this behavior towards the Oswalds, for he worked for Bell Aircraft in connection to the Defense Department, in a position that required him to have a top security clearance.[13] Or perhaps it was not really a risk. Perhaps the Paines were being used to shepherd an already comprised Oswald into his final position.

As for DeMohrenschildt, who was accused of being a Nazi spy, he perished of a fatal gunshot wound, allegedly a suicide, the day that the House Select Committee on Assassinations came looking for him.[14]

10. Martin Bormann and JFK

Many assassination researchers have pointed out that when he was arrested, Lee Harvey Oswald's notebook contained the addresses of some very strange people for a "lone nut assassin" to be carrying around, people that included FBI agents among others. Other assassination researchers have pointed out that Oswald's "Marxist" connections have all the signatures of someone being prepared for a role, in this case, role of "defector."

However, with so many strange Nazi connections lurking in the background, surely somewhere along the long line of murder and "coincidental deaths" that followed the assassination the media would have uncovered something about it and published it. Yet, of the Nazi connection there has been *next* to nothing, and of the Nazi Connection in Oswald's notebook, *absolutely* nothing was said by the major American media.

---

[13] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination, p. 22. Yes, I know what you're thinking, dear reader, and it is the very same Bell Aircraft that employed Dr. Werner Von Braun's former (German) Army boss, General Walter Dornberger. And yes, that's the same Dornberger who was pardoned by John J. McCloy, who was IG Farben's lawyer in America, who was a post-war High Commissioner for Germany, and who was a member of the Warren Commission.

[14] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 22.

Yet, in 1976, a relatively popular book was published by then well-known investigative journalist Sybil Leek and Bert Sugar called *The Assassination Chain*, which had a foreward by none the less than famous syndicated columnist Jack Anderson. The book contained the following bit of information in a chapter called "the Right-Wing Extremist Scenario:"

> When Oswald was arrested, the FBI found his address book, and in it were the addresses of Major General Walker and George Lincoln Rockwell. These improbable names only add to the confusion of other addresses such as that of FBI Agent Hosty, whose conncection with Oswald has never been cleared up.[15]

Oswald was, of course, accused of trying to assassinate Major General Edwin Walker. But this would hardly explain Agent Hosty's presence in the address book, unless Oswald was either planning to assassinate him, or if General Walker's true role was something other than we have been told.

But in any case, the real figure of interest is of course George Lincoln Rockwell, the leader of the American Nazi Party. This seems so incongruously out of place as to be ridiculous, unless one recalls Brussell's allegations concerning the CIA's secret U-2 base at Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan, where Oswald was stationed, and where, according to Brussell, Reinhard Gehlen's "Organization" was recruiting and training paramilitary agents for covert operations inside the Soviet Union.

But why not say something about it? Surely the address of the leader of the American Nazi Party would have cinched the case that Oswald was a "lone nut"! But one would *not* say something about it if in fact the connection was real, and revealed something about Oswald and the conspiracy to assassinate the president.

---

[15] Sybil Leek and Bert R. Sugar, *The Assassination Chain*(New York: Corwin Books, 1976), p. 171.

If, in other words, Oswald was being sheep-dipped for precisely this sort of operation – which his "defection" to the Soviet Union has every appearance of being – then it was a group of former Nazis that were doing it, ostensibly for the CIA, but possibly for their own purposes as well.

In this regard, there does exist evidence that Oswald was exposed to precisely some sort of German connection while in Japan. In one of the most bizarre assassination theory books to appear, author Lincoln Lawrence's *Were We Controlled?* makes the following point from the testimony of one of Oswald's Marine buddies to the Warren Commission, one Nelson Delgado, while they were both stationed in California.

> In his testimony, Nelson Delgado offers these startling thoughts for us to ponder on… Delgado: "Well, like I say, he tried to teach me Russian, but then another time, I had some thought that what he was speaking to me was German." And then later in the same testimony… Liebeler: "It seemed to you like it was German?" Delgado: "Like German, yes." Still later, "I could only assume it was Jewish, or German and later on when I was in Germany, I think… I am pretty sure… it was German that he was speaking." At another point in the questioning, Delgado (by his own testimony, Oswald's closest friend in the Marine Corps) was askied if he had met Oswald at any time when he (Delgado) was in Germany. Delgado: "No, I wanted to… I knew that he was over there and going to school…"[16]

What the alleged assassin of President Kennedy was doing with the address of the American Nazi Party Leader George Lincoln Rockwell in his notebook no one ever seems to want to discuss. Nor does anyone in the American media seem to want to inquire as to where Lee Harvey Oswald might have learned German along the way to his defection to the Soviet Union and his stay in the capital of Byelorussia: Minsk. Mae Brussell alone, in all the American media since the assassination, has intimated where: the Gehlenorg's operation at Atsugi AFB in Japan, preparing, at the behest of Allen Dulles, for covert operations inside the USSR.

---

[16] Lincoln Lawrence and Kenn Thomas, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1997, p. 71.

Some sort of German connection is there, and in the Warren Commission’s own testimony to boot.

But if the American media was silent about this aspect of the assassination, the European media was not. As Brussell indicates,

> In August 1971, a French paper headlined a news story, “Martin Bormann behind the Kennedy murders.” It listed an international band of killers that was located in Texas. They carried out the two assassinations at the German command.
>
> Six years later, June 8, 1977, the London *Guardian* reported, “Bormann Linked with Kennedy Murder.” This story was based on a new book titled *Treason for My Daily Bread* by Mikhail Lebedev.
>
> Lebedev detailed how Martin Bormann left Europe, established his current life in Paraguay, and how the fatal head shot to Kennedy was delivered by an agent paid by Bormann, alias of Zed.[17]

As Brussell points out, these allegations of Nazi connections – known since the Torbitt document was discretely circulated in 1971 – and publicly known since Lebedev’s book, and for that matter, Leek and Sugar’s *The Assassination Chain*, both appeared while the House Select Committee on Assassinations was conducting its investigations to “find the truth.” Yet, the Nazi aspect of the story was the one subject that the Committee’s Chief Consul, G. Robert Blakey, would never countenance, refusing “to admit any research or documents on these subjects.”[18]

In other words, one may speak of possible CIA involvement, of possible Mafia involvement, of the possible involvement of a disgruntled group of anti-Castro Cuban exiles, even of the possible involvement of disenchanted elements within the CIA and the American military, in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. But of the possible involvement of Nazis, one may never speak.

---

[17] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 26.

[18] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 27.

11. The "Octopus" Before the "Octopus": the Bunge Corporation Beats Danny Casolaro by Two Decades

But assuming that there *was* Nazi involvement in the Kennedy assassination, what was its *motivation?* That international bankers would have had motivations, in the retrospective of Kennedy's intention to bypass the Federal Reserve and authorize the printing and circulation of United States notes, seems clear enough. That the Mafia had its own motivations is also equally clear. After all, the Mafia had helped elect the Kennedy Administration, and suddenly it found itself confronted by a hostile Justice Department under Attorney General Robert Kennedy. The Anti-Castro Cubans had motivation, since Kennedy clearly had undertaken private commitments with the Soviet Union not to invade nor to sponsor covert operations designed to overthrow Castro. One may even see in the Anti-Castro forces a motivation for the similar involvement of at least the crypto-Nazi Eastern European émigré groups, such as the White Russian community in Dallas, to which Oswald was introduced by DeMohrenschildt. Such groups would have been low-level players, helping in the detail work to position the major players and cut-outs – people like Oswald himself – in their respective positions. Their motivation would have been clear: after the Bay of Pigs and Kennedy's "betrayal" of the Cuban émigré community, he had signaled clearly his opposition to the CIA's and military's "rollback" policy towards Communism, a policy that depended on these émigré fronts to fight proxy "wars of liberation" from their Communist masters.

Every one of the major alleged players in the assassination conspiracy has a clear and plausible motive for being there.

Except for the Nazis.

Their motivations seem obscure at best, since they seem cloaked behind all the other groups, at the very highest level, like the international bankers themselves, who would clearly have felt threatened by Kennedy's purpose to by-pass the Federal Reserve and create debt-free money. But even here, one can sense the high mystery. That there are strange, if not downright bizarre, connections to Nazis in the assassination should now be clear, yet, unlike even international banking, the Nazis seem to have no interest whatsoever for involvement. Once again, one is back to the question of motivations.

But therein also lies, perhaps, the key to their involvement, and their motivations. For if they lie hidden behind all these other groups, if in fact they – intended as a final deep cover “cut-out” layer – became the ultimate controllers who gave the final “go” order, as the European newspaper reports suggest by naming Bormann himself as the decision-maker, then one may speculate on their motivations.

Clearly, to undertake such drastic action, one of two things, or a combination of both, would have had to be present: (1) Some policy or policies of President Kennedy was perceived as a threat to their interests; and/or (2) some advantage had to be gained by his elimination. As I shall argue below, if there is Nazi involvement, then I believe some combination of both is behind it.

Again, Mae Brussell is the first prominent media personality to mention the tip of a German iceberg that may be the first clue to unraveling the mystery of Nazi involvement, and the even greater mystery of its motivations for such a hideous act. Discovering Lincoln Lawrence’s book *Were We Controlled?*[19] Brussell begins to follow *the only big money trail known to exist in connection with the assassination:*

> The stock market dropped 24 points in 27 minutes when news of President Kennedy’s assassination was announced. 2.6 million shares were sold off. *It was the greatest panic since 1929. Somebody made a huge profit selling short in many markets. Somebody made half a billion dollars in one day.*[20]

That somebody, according to Lincoln Lawrence, was Bunge and Born, LDA, or simply, the Bunge Corporation. The same day, another company’s stock, crashed: the Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation. The crash helped further drive the market down.

---

[19] Referred to previously in its Adventures Unlimited Press reprint edition, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*

[20] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination, pp. 29-30, emphasis added.

Before considering Lincoln Lawrence's presentation of the Bunge Corporation's activities on the week prior to the assassination, it is worth pausing to consider Brussell's own statements of Bunge's extent and influence.

> Allied Crude was controlled by U.S. American Bunge Corporation and financially controlled by a group of share-holders headquartered in Argentina known as "Bunge and Born, LDA.:
>
> *Business Week* of October 19, 1963, one month before the Kennedy assassination, described the Born family in Argentina, the biggest shareholders for Bunge, as being from Europe, specifically Germany.
>
> Everything about Bunge has German influence. They have $2 billion annual business in 80 countries. There are over 110 offices, all linked by Telex and under-the-ocean telegraph channels. The Bunge Corporation is referred to as "the Octopus."[21]

So what, exactly, is the connection between Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining, its crash, the Bunge Corporation, and the Kennedy assassination?

Noting that the massive short-selling that occurred on Nov. 22, 1963, had been prepared well in advance, Lincoln Lawrence, in his little known classic on the Kennedy Assassination, *Were We Controlled?*, gives the following speculative outline of its connections and motivations:

> A small group of hard-as-steel international criminals (with German-Argentine intellectual *and scientific* backgrounds) carefully calculated that:
>
> The coincidence of the assassination of a President of the United States… and the simultaneous scandalizing and collapse of the commodities market… would rapidly **drive the stock market down at least 30 points!**
>
> Having advance knowledge of this event… the group would **sell short** on a heavily financed scale… and a profit of perhaps a **half-billion dollars** would be divided amongst its members.[22]

---

[21] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p.30.

[22] Lincoln Lawrence and Kenn Thomas, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*, p. 23, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis original.

How all this happened was through careful and very well-though-out long term manipulation of a man named Tino DeAngelis and his Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation.

DeAngelis, according to Lawrence, first came to the attention of the financial group behind the Bunge Corporation in 1954, when in the process of contacts with the West German government, he announced his plans to found a company that would refine edible vegetable oils. In 1955, the Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation was founded by DeAngelis and 20 of his most trusted friends in Bayonne, New Jersey.[23]

> Although it was the last thing that he could have foreseen, the formation of Allied fitted The Group's plans and led inevitably to his complete financial ruin – and their profit!
>
> If for a second, you find it hard to believe that a small group operating out of a German headquarters could find it sufficiently profitable to plot the long term expansion and deflation of a financial bubble fathered by a Bronx butcher with dreams of glory, think again.[24]

The Bunge Corporation was chosen, according to Lawrence, to be tied to Allied Crude simply because Bunge's world-wide and virtually instantaneous communications network, which rivaled that of many large governments, was perfect for the sort of minute-by-minute and second-by-second manipulation of the commodities market their scheme required.[25]

Thus, the fate of Bunge and Allied Crude – known to the Group but unknown to the luckless DeAngelis – was wedded in a long term scheme:

> (The Bunge Corporation's) good will was essential to the business destiny of Allied!
>
> Of the fifty-one companies which either lent money to Allied or deposited oil at its Bayonne plant against warehouse receipts, the Bunge Corporation was the one most critically attached to its fate.
>
> When Allied's ship of destiny was steered into the deep waters, as indeed it was by an amazing series of maneuvers, only one collision

---

[23] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*, p. 116.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid., pp. 119-120.

> was needed to sink it instantly to the bottom. A collision with Bunge Corporation would suffice… creating a disaster that would take with it the investment of the other fifty companies.[26]

How was DeAngelis' collapse engineered?

Lawrence answers by stating that Bunge's role apparently was to feed DeAngelis' ambitions, no matter what. "Bunge used its own money to finance DeAngelis instead of resorting to bank loans." [27] Someone at Bunge wanted very much for De Angelis to succeed, or rather, to *appear* to succeed:

> Going even further in its paternal interest in De Angelis' business affairs, Bunge allowed De Angelis to really take off into financial outer space… by pledging at one point as much as thirty-eight shares of the hundred odd shares of Allied stock and other De Angelis stock for huge loans. Someone in Bunge supported him in his efforts to play king. Others, like Karl Groenfeld, Senior Traffic Manager for Bunge, were suspicious.[28]

With such powerful corporate backing apparently in his corner, DeAngelis could do no wrong, and was refused no financial favor by some very prestigious brokerage houses on Wall Street.

In the summer of 1961, DeAngelis and Allied Crude began to be steered "into a position where his back was to the wall,"[29] for during that period

> $166,000,000 was deposited to Tino's firm at the First National Bank of North Bergen.
>
> Tino was led to believe that he had a sure order from Spain for *275 million pounds of soybean oil!* Payment for this would have amounted to thirty-six and a half million dollars! ….
>
> So, of course, began the inevitable build-up of Allied for the big let-down. In his Bayonne tanks, De Angelis had about fifty million pounds of oil. That left 225 million pounds for Allied to acquire in the future.

---

[26] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* P. 118. Lawrence quips that "the Bunge Corporation (sometimes dubbed by financial writers as 'The Octopus') would make a delightful corporate villain for a James Bond fantasy."

[27] Ibid., p. 123.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid., p. 129.

> Tino turned to the Chicago Board of Trade, with a supposed Spanish "promise" of eventual payment in *American dollars.* (Were he not controlled, this alone would have alerted him to take a second look at the deal.) Tino started dealing….Allied is said to have closed over 3,000 separate contracts for 180-million pounds of oil. If the sale to Spain were not consummated, he would have put forth 18 million dollars for these orders. And even a half-cent a pound drop in the futures price (if it occurred before delivery date) would mean that De Angelis would have to produce almost a *million dollars* more within twenty-four hours to meet the margin regulations of the Exchange.
>
> The Spanish deal, of course, as it had been controlled from the start… *vanished into thin air…*leaving Tino sitting on top of the soybean world in an almost insane predicament.[30]

Recall that Spain was headquarters to Skorzeny's International Fascista organization, and that Skorzeny was no stranger to financial wheeling and dealing, being the son-in-law to former Reichsbank President Hjalmar Schacht. Was Skorzeny the source of the "deal" that De Angelis considered so certain? Was this the reason, too, that he did not question being paid in American dollars, since he knew his "source" was certainly capable of paying in American dollars?

We will never know, but we do know that De Angelis' behavior at that point becomes increasingly strange if not tragic. He began to buy futures contracts, "not on orders he had for Allied, but supposedly on contracts he might be going to get."[31] Since the "Spanish deal" and its collapse had already placed De Angelis against the wall, the only way he could purchase these furtures contracts was by issuing phony warehouse receipts for oil stored in his tanks that did not exist![32] Using these phony receipts, he began borrowing money from several brokerage houses for the funds needed to purchase commodities futures.

Recall that Bunge had loaned De Angelis money from its own funds, a process that had been repeated in the years prior to the "Spanish deal." De Angelis approached Bunge for more money in October of 1963 for another loan, and "to his astonishment, Bunge refused!"[33] Bunge had now weakened Allied Crude for the big crash.

---

[30] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* pp. 128-129.

[31] Ibid., p. 134.

[32] Ibid.

De Angelis attempted to survive a bit longer using check-kiting tactics and more phony warehouse receipts.[34]

On the Wednesday afternoon before the assassination, Bunge now moved to eliminate Allied, the very corporation it had helped found and propel to prominence, by informing one holder of the phony warehouse receipts to "be on the alert" about De Angelis.[35] Then, on Thursday November 21st, 1963, the final trap was laid.

> On Thursday afternoon it was important to the success of the "controllers" that the groundwork for a complete panic of the market be laid so that on the day of the assassination, Friday, the prices would plummet and the profits reaped by selling short would be insured.
>
> In considering whether (this scenario) is truth or fantasy, one must note that of the fifty-odd companies that could have moved that day to lift the lid that would light the bomb… the one that did file suit (charging that [one of the warehouse receipt holders] had "lost 160,450,000 pounds of oil worth $14,240,000 at Allied through forged orders was not Haupt, not Williston & Beane… but the Bunge Corporation![36]

As the news of the assassination of the president reached a stock exchange already concussed by the collapse of Allied Crude, its bankruptcy filing, and the suspension of trade of several of De Angelis' brokerage house financial backers, the market plummeted so severely, in part *driven down* by massive short selling, that the Board of Governors closed trading at 2:07 p.m., more than eighty minutes before its normal closing.[37]

One of De Angelis' and Allied Crude's major customers, Frederick Hediger of Garnac Grain, was subsequently quoted in *Time* magazine as "saying that when he heard on the radio that afternoon that 'Kennedy had been assassinated, I thought this must be a plot by the Russians or the underworld – too many crazy things are happening at once.’”[38] Even the New York State Attorney General thought that it was possible that De Angelis and his Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Company had been “’broken’ in the futures market by someone who sold short and profited on a gigantic scale.”[39]

---

[33] Ibid., p. 139.

[34] Ibid., pp. 139-141.

[35] Ibid., p. 142.

[36] Ibid., p. 143.

[37] Ibid.

That someone was, according to Lawrence, a group of Germans inside of Bunge corporation, a group of Germans of “intellectual and scientific background,” who, on his view, orchestrated the whole scenario for *nothing more than massive financial gain*.

Back to this in a moment.

While there are a number of factors that have not been recounted here – as for example the heavy role of “mind control” in Lawrence’s speculations that Oswald, De Angelis, and Jack Ruby were all cynically manipulated by this German “Group” for the mere purpose of immense financial gain – there are a number of points that would tend to make one discount the whole scenario, the most basic of which was that the whole thing occurred *merely* for financial gain.

But oddly, Lawrence himself hints at, though *never again pursues or mentions,* that the “group” behind his scenario had intellectual and “scientific backgrounds,” hinting in turn that there was possibly a motivation *behind* that of the motivation of financial gain. The money was to be *used* for something, something that, if one carefully reads between the lines of Lawrence’s book, is scientific in nature. Of course, the Bell and similar projects would have required heavy financial outlays. And one would have needed such financial injections for independent projects

Only when taken in a much *wider* context of the other major players in the conspiracy and their motivations does Lawrence’s scenario not only make sense, but begins to hint at things that would have made Nazi involvement coalesce with the other elements: the Mafia, big business and banking, the military industrial complex, “pissed-off” émigré groups, and so on. As Lawrence makes clear, the sudden coincidence of the collapse of

---

[38] Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* p. 147

[39] Ibid.

Allied Crude, instigated by Bunge, with the assassination, the heavy round of short selling designed ahead of time to occur on that same day, have all the appearance of events being driven by people "in the know." The events on the stock market during that day have the familiar and dolorous ring of similar stock market events during September 11, 2001 and its aftermath. As will be seen below, the financial picture and motivation of the assassination begin to connect other dots, dots that trace their spider-web-thin and tenuous but still clearly visible threads back to Germany, and World War Two.

We will return to the subject of possible Nazi involvement and motivations in this bizarre scenario in a later section. But for now, there is one last connection that Mae Brussell exposes.

12. More Odd Behavior and Connections: West German Chancellor Kurt Georg Kiesinger, and Nixon

The day after the assassination of President Kennedy, right-wing extremist, Major General Edwin Walker called Munich, Germany from his home in Shreveport, Louisiana. He called the Munich-based newspaper, the *Deutsche National und Soldaten Zeitung* (The German National and Soldiers' Times), a neo-nazi rag based in Munich. He called to tell them that Lee Harvey Oswald, the suspect in the assassination, was the same person that had tried to kill him by shooting through his window in April of 1963.[40] This is the same General Walker whose address, as mentioned above, was found in Oswald's address book, along with that of FBI agent James Hosty, and incongruously, that of American Nazi Party leader George Lincoln Rockwell. Conveniently, "Marxist" Oswald, having allegedly taken pot shots at Walker, was now accused of shooting and killing president Kennedy.

The trouble is, as Brussell points out, "there was never one shred of evidence, or a reliable witness, that could make this connection" of Oswald to the General's would-be (and unsuccessful) assassin.[41] Thus, as Brussell alleges, it became necessary for Ruth Paine to deliver a post-dated letter to Marina Oswald from Lee, implicating him in the attempt on General Walker and establishing him as a “lone nut” extremist capable of murdering prominent figures alone and unaided.[42]

---

[40] Mae Brussel, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 30.

Pause and consider what framing Oswald for this act accomplishes, for it kills two birds with one stone. Firstly, it establishes him as a “lone nut”. Secondly, it *distances* him from his right-wing extremist connections, since he is allegedly shooting at a right-wing extremist general. This in turn would make his alleged Marxist beliefs seem more genuine.

But, asks Brussel, “Why was General Walker in such a hurry to get his information printed in Germany before anybody in Dallas ever heard about it?” Her answer is, even for Mae Brussell, somewhat unusual

> Kurt-George Kiesinger had just been installed as Chancellor of West Germany and Franz-Josef Strauss as finance minister.
>
> Kiesinger entered the radio propaganda division of Nazi Foreign Minister (Joachim) Von Ribbentrop at age 36. He was then directing a world-wide radio propaganda apparatus with 195 specialists under his supervision during the war. He was the liaison officer, coordinating his department’s work with that of Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels.[43]

In other words, Brussell is implying that the change in power in West Germany was somehow linked to the assassination, and the assumption of power in the United States by Lyndon B. Johnson. But beyond this she does not speculate, and that is, for Mae Brussell, decidedly unusual.

C. The JFK Connection in Early MAJIC-12 Documents

If the Nazis were involved in the JFK assassination, then, as Lincoln Lawrence’s speculative scenario avers, one motivation of their involvement was for financing to continue their scientific projects. As for the involvement itself, as was seen in the previous chapter, there are some documents in the Cooper-Cantwheel set of MAJIC-12 classified UFO papers that indicate a connection of at least the subject of UFOs to the assassination, via the memorandum addressed to General Charles Peare Cabell, one of the CIA bigwigs sacked by Kennedy allegedly for his involvement in the Bay of Pigs fiasco.

---

[41] Ibid.

[42] Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 30.

[43] Ibid.

General Cabell also had another connection besides that of the MAJIC-12 group and his CIA association. He was intimately involved in Operation Paperclip, and his involvement was in connection with bringing over Nazi "aviation doctors." Lest one forget who these doctors were, these were the ones performing grizzly and barbaric medical experiments on concentration camp prisoners to study effects on humans in extreme conditions, including outer space.[44]

Cabell's brother Earle was mayor of Dallas during the assassination, and was also instrumental in getting the motorcade route changed to make the detour that took Kennedy into the "kill zone" in front of the Texas School Book Depository and the Grassy Knoll. But the document itself suggests a *technological and policy* motive to the assassination may have underwritten at least the intelligence community's involvement in it, namely, the secret development of recovered technology, the public repression of similar technological development, and the creation of appropriate policies for public manipulation. Kennedy, by threatening to smash the CIA, threatened this agenda with exposure, and that meant, in turn, exposure of Paperclip and how deeply corrupted American intelligence and defense had become. In short, Kennedy threatened – doubtless inadvertently – the whole continuing Nazi enterprise.

One may also view this in connection with the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. If indeed Kennedy was serious about limited cooperation in space with the Soviets, then this too would have threatened aspects of America's – and perhaps the Soviets' own version of the – secret space program with exposure.

---

[44] Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists* (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company: 1987), p. 245.

And finally, what of all the lurking involvement not only of Nazis, but of big oil? Why this strange coalescence? If there was a continued development of the technology represented by the Bell – and the Bell and its strange effects were very *real* – then “the Brotherhood” would have had a final, crowning, motivation: they would have acted not only to continue the secret development *and hoarding of such technology for themselves* but also to maintain the reliance of everyone else on petroleum, using some of those profits to fund that continued technological development, and the suppression of any open and independent development of such technology.

So, if Bunge Corporation pocketed major financial profits from the assassination, then, clearly, this was an after-thought: “If we’re going to do this to protect our interests, why not make a little money on the affair too?”

It is in this context that two other MAJIC-12 documents should be viewed: the alleged letter from Cooper’s anonymous source indicating that President Nixon had “privatizing” the alleged UFO “study group,” giving credence to the idea that its massive intelligence operations and covert technology development, and public technology repression efforts, fell into, if were not originally *in*, independent hands.

Similarly there are hints in this letter as well as in the burned “Annex C” that not only was President Kennedy eliminated because of the threat he posed to this group and its programs, but that Secretary of War James Forrestal was murdered for similar reasons as well.

1. Guy Bannister, UFOs, and JFK

As if all this were not enough, there is yet one more strange connection between the Kennedy assassination, UFOs, advanced technology, and the Nazis. For “one of the men involved in the investigation of UFO reports in the American Northwest (in 1947) was none other than FBI special agent Guy Bannister.”[45] Not only this, but Bannister – who shared a New Orleans office in 1962 with Lee Harvey Oswald's "Fair Play for Cuba Committee" – appears to be the real origin of the FBI's "X Files:"

---

[45] Peter Levenda, *Snister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine* IWalterville, Oregon:: Trine Day, ISBN 0-9752906-2-2), p. 173.

> A look at recently declassified FBI files for that period in 1947 show a number of telexes from Bannister, some with his initials "WGB," all pertaining to UFO phenomena, as well as other FBI documents with the designation "Security Matter – X" or simply "SM-X," the origin – the author supposes – of the "X Files," which at least in 1947 *did* exist at the FBI and was concerned with UFOs…[46]

It is, writes author Peter Levenda, "as if reality were layed like an onion, a palimpsest on which numerous events were written over each other, all on the same page. In this case, we have Operation Paperclip, UFOs, and the Kennedy assassination all written on the same sheet of onionskin parchment. Nazis, aliens, and political murder."[47] For Levenda, the conclusion, disturbing though it may be, is clear: "There is no lack of Nazi influence in and around the events leading up to – and away from – the assassination."[48]

D. The Magus of Ingolstadt

But where do all these spidery-thin strands lead? What, or who, might be at the center of this web?

One of the persons surely near the center, as the European newspaper articles cited by Brussell suggest, was Martin Bormann, former Nazi Party *Reichsleiter*, financial administrator both of the Party's and Hitler's own personal fortunes, ever-present shadow to the Führer, and mastermind of the Nazi "strategic evacuation" plans. While not suggesting that Bormann is the *only* high-ranking member of the decision-making oligarchy that conspired to murder the President, if there is a Nazi involvement, and so many disparate sources suggest there is, then Bormann surely was a *member* of the planning and decision-making level of that group. Perhaps he was its driving force; perhaps he learned of an already existing conspiracy, and in customary Bormann fashion weaseled his way into it, and utilized it for his "Nazi International's" own interest.

---

[46] Levenda, *Sinister Forces, Book One: the Nine,* pp. 173-174.

[47] Ibid., p. 174.

[48] Ibid., p. 266.

But in any case, Bormann is a crucial figure, for after the beginning of actual wartime hostilities and Hitler's ever-growing preoccupation with, and meddling in, Germany's military operations, Bormann was left as the *de facto* day-to-day ruler of Nazi Germany, the gray eminence, the real power behind Hitler's dark throne.

1. Bormann and Ingolstadt: A Connection to the Illuminati?

To appreciate Bormann's significance, it is best to recall that besides his role as party leader and treasurer, he was also an SS *Obergruppenführer.* This would make Bormann – like Kammler and Mazuw – a probable member of Himmler's "initiates" into the SS's so-called "occult secrets and mysteries." One has difficulty imagining the pragmatic and cynical Bormann involved in such rituals for any other purpose than to placate Himmler, and to keep an eye on his most serious rival for power.

In spite of this, Bormann, of all the leading Nazis, is the one figure that is the most shrouded in mystery and contradictions. While finding it difficult to believe that Bormann could be anything less than cynical in his approach to Himmler's fascination with the occult – recall that it is because Bormann kept such faithful notes of Hitler's "table talk" that we know at all that Hitler regarded Himmler's obsession with such things as "nonsense" – it is nonetheless remotely possible that Bormann was a very high initiate into his own secret society affiliations, for he had acquired a home after the Nazi assumption of power, near the town of Ingolstadt, which remained his legal residence throughout the war.

For those who do not know the significance of Ingolstadt, it is the birthplace – on May 1, 1776 - of one of the most notorious secret societies in history: the Bavarian Illuminati of Ingolstadt University professor Adam Weishaupt. Given that Bormann's boss at the time was one Rudolf Hess, a man known to be *steeped in and obsessed with* occult lore and secret societies of every stripe imaginable, it is difficult to believe that Bormann would not have known this aspect of the history of the town he had chosen to make home.

a. Bormann's Manipulation of Hitler

Some have speculated that Adolf Hitler's extraordinary power over masses, and his extraordinary charisma and skill as an orator, came from some occult influence in his life. To a certain extent, this is true, for it is known that Hitler *did* obtain the assistance of individuals, such as the rhetorician Hanussen, trained in the use of *gestures* to accompany *words*, a school of rhetoric with its own occult and esoteric associations. Beyond this, however, nothing at all is known of Hitler's initiation into any secret society, though most scholars have speculated upon it.[49]

If Hitler's evident ability to sway the masses of Germany with pageantry and brilliant rhetoric was evidence of any occult association, however, then Bormann's evident skill in manipulating Hitler – while seemingly his servant – must be taken as the manipulation of the king by the court magician.

What was Bormann's source of power over the man who held such power over Germany and Europe? One very plausible explanation was given by William Stevenson in his book, *The Bormann Brotherhood*.

> The Jew as the source of all evil haunted Adolf Hitler, who feared that his own blood was 'tainted.' This led to the brutal murder of his niece and mistress (Geli Raubal). The details were lost at the time, for the Nazis were already on the march and violent killings became the order of the day. …It was only when Bormann's disappearance became a matter for serious conjecture, and intelligence agents began to go into the ugly details, that an incredible episode in Hitler's life came to light. This explained exactly how Martin Bormann was able to gather into his hands all the strings required to make Hitler dance to his tune.[50]

---

[49] I shall offer evidence, from a source, in this chapter, however, that Hitler was initiated into one such secret society *after* his appointment as Chancellor by Field Marshal President Paul Von Hindenburg.

[50] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovitch: 1973), p. 29.

Like many others examining the “suicide” of Geli Raubal, Stevenson speculates that Adolf Hitler, in a fit of blind rage after Geli had threatened to expose the fact that his grandmother had born a child from Baron Rothschild of Vienna,[51] had killed his niece with a pistol, and then fled the scene in panic, and appealed to Bormann for Help. Bormann assured his Führer that it would be “taken care of”. It had to be, for obviously, a murder investigation of Hitler was a considerable impediment if the Nazis were ever to assume power.

At this point, Bormann begins his rise to power, by somehow persuading the local police investigator of the murder, a man named Müller, to cover up the murder in return for favors and advances. And thus was born an alliance between Martin Bormann and one of Nazi Germany’s other “hidden powers” behind the throne, for Müller went on to become the notorious “Gestapo Müller”, making the Gestapo’s extensive files on just about everybody not only available to his immediate boss, the Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler, but also to Bormann, who thus had up to the minute intelligence on his biggest rival and his entire department of the Nazi government. Bormann, in fact, according to Stevenson, had initiated, via Gestapo Müller, no less than *four* private and discreet investigations of Hitler’s family lines and his Jewish blood and descent, all without Hitler’s knowledge. The blackmail value that all this information would have had for Bormann was incalculable, and accounts for his ability to draw into his hands “all the strings” to make Hitler “dance to his tune”. Indeed, Stevenson’s own characterization of Bormann’s role in this regard is oddly reminiscent of the language of another man, writing in the 1920s, long before Hitler came to power.

But before that, there is something else. Gestapo Müller was *directly responsible for the blanket of security belts around SS*

---

[51] The story first surfaced in the book *The Mind of Adolf Hitler*, supposedly based upon a secret psychological profile of the Führer prepared for President Franklin Roosevelt. The allegation that Anna Maria Schickelgruber, one of Hitler’s grandmothers, had an affair with her employer Baron Rothschild and bore an illegitimate child of him, was the subject of a secret dossier prepared on Hitler by the Austrian Chancellor Dolfuss prior to the Nazi annexation of that nation before the war.

Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's "think tank" in Prague.[52] In other words, Bormann, through his friend Gestapo Müller, was faultlessly well-informed about the extent and nature of Nazi secret weapons research. Indeed, he, Bormann, was the real master of it all.

But what of the language of "dancing to a tune"? What man first used such language in association with Nazis?

The man is senior occultist and member of the Thule Society - the secret society that midwifed the Nazi party into existence – Dietrich Eckhart, who told his disciples shortly before his death to "Follow Hitler: he will make the world dance, but it is we who have written the tune." All this marks Bormann as a possible practitioner of the most classic form of occult black magic: the secret control and manipulation of weak people (Hitler) through their weaknesses and fears.

And Bormann's own choice of Ingolstadt as a home mirrors perhaps a deeply hidden association of its own, for after World War One, Bormann, like many disenchanted German veterans, joined one such society, the Society Against Presumptuousness of Jewry.[53] In any case, these odd characteristics of the two Nazi leaders would tend to fuel the theory of some that Hitler was deliberately manipulated and placed into power, and secretly manipulated behind the scenes by more powerful forces than even he publicly wielded, and, when he had served his purpose, was deliberately sabotaged and cast aside.

b. Bormann's Surrender of the A-Bomb to the USA: The Hydrick Thesis

In any case, it is Bormann's role in establishing the secret strategic evacuation plans for Nazism after its military collapse that interests us here. It was evident to Bormann, as to other high-ranking Nazis, that after the disaster of Stalingrad in early 1943, it was only a matter of time before the military collapse of the Reich if its secret weapons projects did not bear fruit in time. Bormann and other top Nazis, representatives from the agencies of armaments of the Reich, from industry, and of course, from the SS gathered in secret meetings to establish the pipelines for the transference out of Germany of enormous amounts of liquid assets, personnel skilled in scientific research or covert intelligence operations, and of blueprints of weapons and other technologies.

---

[52] Karl-Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens* (Amun Verlag, 2002), pp. 68-69.

[53] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood,* p. 25.

As regards scientific matters, there is an interesting fact presented in Linda Hunt's book *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990.* In that book, Hunt gives the following account of how the United States was so quickly able to find and acquire the German scientists and technologies it sought in connection with Project Paperclip:

> One of JIOA Director Gruhn's first actions as overall administrator of the project was to compile a hiring list of the best-qualified German and Austrian scientists that was used by both the United States and Great Britain as a recruitment tool for decades. Although this list has been mentioned in the past by journalists and historians, no one ever noted that it was partially compiled by Werner Osenberg, the notorious wartime commander of the Gestapo's scientific section. The decision to use Osenberg was made by U.S. Navy Captain Ransom Davis after consultation with the (Joint Chiefs of Staff).
>
> *During the war, Osenberg was in charge of a special SS research council directly subordinate to Reichsmarschal Herman Göring. Osenberg sent his Gestapo agents to investigate work in progress at scientific institutes and report back on each scientist's political reliability. From those reports and the Gestapo's files, Osenberg compiled a list of fifteen thousand names of scientists in the Third Reich. He wrote comments next to the scientists' names regarding their political affiliations, such as SS membership, and his opinion of their scientific abilities. Of course, those scientists who held fanatic Nazi views and SS membership were also those whom Osenberg considered best qualified.*
>
> Osenberg had been captured in 1945 by the Alsos team and interned in a camp in Germany. Soon after the JIOA expressed an interest in him, intelligence officers whisked him out of Germany to Versailles, France, where he set up business as usual, sifting through his files to suggest names of those he considered the best scientists in the Third Reich.[54]

---

[54] Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), pp. 32-33, emphasis added.

Note then, that with Osenberg one has confirmation of a number of themes that have been suggested earlier in this book, as well as in my previous book on this subject, *Reich of the Black Sun*.

1. As a member of the Gestapo and SS, Osenberg's files would, via "Gestapo Müller", have surely been known to Bormann, thus giving Bormann extensive knowledge not only over *what* was being researched, but *who* was doing it.
2. Thus, while Himmler may have, at one time, tried to keep Bormann out of the loop on the extent of Nazi secret weapons research being conducted by the SS, he would have known about it via other private channels available to him.
3. Bormann was thus faultlessly well-informed not only of the state and extent of these projects – and therefore, not only knew of Germany's atom bomb project and its actual state, but of the more exotic areas of research represented by the Bell – *but also of the political reliability of the scientists conducting the research*.
4. With such a list in hand, Bormann and his allies in the strategic evacuation operation would have known exactly who, and what, was to go where, and, via their knowledge of each individual person's political views and loyalty, could have limited the risks to any planned continued *independent* development of the projects already begun, as well as of any planned infiltration of any host country's military and intelligence angencies. With such a list in hand, they could have ensured at least a partial continuance of these projects, provided a network of coordination could be established to do so. Establishment of coordination would have taken advantage of each host country's own "compartmentalization" of security and research, exercising a hidden center of direction.
5. The "Network" in question most likely would have included, but was not limited to, General Gehlen's organization or SS Major Otto Skorzeny's "Fascista Internacionale."

6. Finally, the Osenberg list and evident American interest in it seems to corroborate another speculation, namely, that American knowledge and the nature of its *specificity*, as reflected in General Patton's unerring military drives to the nerve centers of Kammler's secret research departments, could only have come from inside Nazi Germany itself. Since Carter Hydrick has argued a convincing case that it was Bormann himself who directed the surrender of Germany's atom bomb secrets to the United States, it may be reasonably asserted that it was Bormann ultimately coordinating the flow of other sensitive information concerning the Kammlerstab to American intelligence, since he, clearly, is in the position to be the best informed about the nature, extent, and personnel involved with all of Germany's black projects.

With this knowledge at his disposal, the thesis of Carter Hydric, that Bormann helped engineer not only the transference of the enriched uranium of the U-boat 234 to the United States, but also that he may have engineered the transference of a functioning bomb to the United States as well, gains credibility.[55]

One odd occurrence – one again not in harmony with the post-war Allied Legend about German incompetence in nuclear bomb engineering – is the fact that German physicist Rudolf Fleischmann was flown to the USA for interrogation prior to the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki.[56] Why the urgent need to consult a German physicist prior to bombing Japan? After all, the Allied Legend would have it that we had almost nothing to learn from the Germans about atom bomb physics.

c. Bormann's "Special Evacuation Command" and Kammler's Bell: the Nick Cook Thesis

---

[55] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb*(Whitehurst and Company, 2004), pp. 19-30, 241-242.

[56] Linda Hunt, op. cit., p. 34.

It is against the backdrop of Bormann's probable survival of the war and his possible arrangement to transfer atomic bomb materials via the U-234 to the United States, if not of a functioning bomb itself, that his establishment of a special "SS Evacuation Command" at the war's end should be viewed. As was seen in my earlier book, *Jane's Defence Weekly* author and journalist Nick Cook, following the research of Igor Witkowski, notes that Bormann had established this command, placed it under the direct jurisdiction of SS General Hans Kammler, and also placed a special *Luftwaffe* unit of ultra-long range Junkers transport aircraft also under his exclusive command. After the establishment of this command, whose aircraft were, "coincidentally" based in Lower Silesia, Kammler, the Bell, all associated papers concerning the Bell, and the enormous Ju 390 that most probably carried it out of Germany, disappeared completely. Where did it, and the advanced physics and technologies that it carried, go?

One answer, is, of course, to America.

d. Continuation of Ultra-Black Projects and German "Independence" at White Sands and NASA

Whatever their engineering skills may have been, the German scientists at NASA also appeared to be very adept at political maneuvering as well. We have already noted in chapter three how Werner Von Braun himself managed quickly to befriend not only J. Edgar Hoover, but the powerful Democratic Majority leader in the US Senate, Lyndon Baines Johnson, a man whose views on the necessity for space travel, and space *militarization*, are well-known.

German independence from their American hosts became apparent very early on, in the so-called "Juarez Incident," where a modified V-2 of extended range was test fired at White Sands. The project was called, oddly enough, Project Hermes, and was under the direction of Paperclip scientist Ernst Steinhof. The rocket went astray, and landed in Juarez, Mexico. Steinhof, who could have ordered the rocket destroyed in mid-flight when it went off course, did not do so.

> The controversy over the Juarez incident overshadowed a more serious problem at White Sands and Fort Bliss Army base in Texas. What happened there is a flaring example of the military's total lack of control over enemy aliens who were judged to be a threat to the internal security of the United States. Even though there were allegations of sabotage and evidence of gross violations of base security, as one intelligence agent bluntly put it, there was absolutely "no attempts to place them in anything like custody." Army officers in charge of the group maintained little or no surveillance over the Germans' activities either on or off the base.[57]

Later on, the German paperclip scientists at NASA under Debus, Von Braun, Arthur Rudolf and others in fact showed so much independence that an entirely different concern began to manifest itself.

> James Webb, NASA's second administrator, complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center. Rocco Petrone, who became the Marshall Director in 1973, said that Webb felt the group needed to be more tightly managed.[58]

In other words, the Paperclip Germans were attempting to circumvent the normal contract and bidding process of the American government and, using NASA itself as the constructing agency, build the giant Saturn V Apollo boosters on their own. Perhaps they were simply fed up with the bidding process and bureaucratic inertia. Or perhaps there was a more sinister agenda.

But the news from France was not good either. There, employed in projects that would eventually give France its own space booster capability as well as its own land-based and submarine-based ballistic missiles, France's version of the German Paperclip scientists were apparently up to the same sort of thing. Colonel Frank Reed was concerned about security leaks by the Paperclip personnel, because

> He had just returned from visiting Saint Louis, France, where a comparable group of German rocket engineers worked for the French government. While there, the French commandant told Reed he

---

[57] Hunt, op. cit., p. 42.

[58] Hunt, op. cit., p.219.

> suspected the Germans under French control were receiving orders from Germany and working toward a reemergence of the Third Reich.[59]

In other words, regardless of whether or not one accepts the speculation of continued independent Nazi development of their secret projects, the behavior of the German scientists in at least two of the wartime Allied countries that became their subsequent hosts indicates *some* continued connection and coordination between them from some unknown quarter, and the only possible quarter that could conceivably command their continued allegiance and loyalty in this respect is some version of the Gehlenorg, or of ODESSA, or some other similar international network of Nazism.

Nor is this merely idle speculation. Operation Paperclip researcher Tom Bower drew attention to the fact that American intelligence, very early on, was aware that some sort of command structure was still intact and functioning among the German rocket scientists:

> Three Peenemünde scientists, all anti-Nazis who had refused American contracts, confided to Osborne that the rocket team's strict hierarchical structure under Dornberger, Axster, and von Braun had remained intact despite the German surrender. Before every interrogation, each German was carefully briefed by the triumvirate and their lieutenants about what could and could not be disclosed. The guidelines were explicit: divulge no more than required to arouse technical and scientific curiosity and avoid going into technical detail that would render employment by the Americans unnecessary. …After every interrogation, each German was debriefed in the presence of his colleagues, so that the others knew precisely what was the Americans' current state of knowledge. Osborne also discovered that those scientists who criticized or failed to obey Doenberger's edicts were punished.[60]

E. Skull and Bones and "Secret Germany"

---

[59] Ibid., p. 52.

[60] Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists,* p. 126. It should also be pointed out that Bower makes it clear that General Patton's U.S. Third Army was somehow involved in Operation Paperclip. (p. 141).

1. 2004: Bonesman Bush "versus" Bonesman Kerry

But the German and Nazi connection behind the JFK murder, and behind the alleged MAJIC-12 group, is not merely an historical matter of a relatively distant past. It is every bit a contemporary and lasting legacy of power, influence, and corruption.

As briefly as it came to the public's attention, and then was "buried" behind a façade of ostensibly more important "issues," the 2004 American presidential election hosted somewhat of a first, for the candidates from both major political parties had something highly unusual in common, both incumbent Republican President George Walker "Dubya" Bush and Massachusetts Democratic Senator John Kerry were both initiated during their senior year as students at Yale University, into the *same* secret society, the Skull and Bones society.

From one point of view, then, the 2004 election was indeed, "fixed," since no matter what the outcome, a Bonesman would be in the White House. But surely it does not matter if both Bush and Kerry were members of the same innocent, prank-filled college fraternity.

It would not, if Skull and Bones were merely a "college fraternity." The trouble is, it is not, nor are its members and alumni ordinary "common" people.

2. Daddy and Dubya Bush: The RNC and the Eastern European Émigré Community

Consider, for example, that President Bush's father, former President George Herbert Walker Bush, was also a member, as was *his* father, former Senator Prescott Bush, as was former President and Supreme Court Justice William Howard Taft….and on an on the list would go, including prominent clergymen, businessmen, lawyers, and government officials.

While this is not the place to go into an exhaustive history of Skull and Bones, for our purposes it is important to note that the Society itself, founded at Yale in 1832, has *German* roots, being the first, and presumably not the only, chapter of some *very* secret society that existed in Germany at the time, a society that, as of yet, no one seems to know the name of.[61] But given Skull and Bones' members' heavy involvement in religion, law, finance, and politics, one can guess at *one* German secret society with similar interests, initiatory methods, and goals: Adam Weishaupt's Bavarian Illuminati. We have already pointed out that Bormann made his legal residence near Ingolstadt.

It must be recalled that a great deal of the Bush family fortune was made by Prescott Bush precisely in utilizing his "German connections" to do business with Nazi Germany. Indeed, the business interests of Prescott Bush with Germany were considered so extensive that his concerns fell under the "Trading with the Enemy Act".[62]

Son George H.W. Bush went on, of course, to become a Texas oilman, founding Zapata Oil company, and later became director of the CIA, and Ronald Reagan's Vice President. And, during both Reagan's first run for the Presidency as the Republican candidate in 1980, and again, during George H.W. Bush's run in 1988, the Republican national committee had some unusual and powerful political allies: the Eastern European émigré groups, whose leaders maintained publicly impeccable facades that cloaked their fascist and Nazi pasts.[63]

3. *Secret Germany*

---

[61] For exhaustive histories and examinations of the Skull and Bones society, see Anthony Sutton's study, *America's Secret Establishment*. More recently a valuable contribution of the lore of "Bones" is the collection of essays by editor Kris Millegan entitled *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society.*

[62] See *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones,* pp. 173-294 for the whole story.

[63] For the story of the émigré groups and their role in Republican Party politics during the Reagan-Bush years, see Russ Bellant's *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party* (Boston: South End Press, 1991). ISBN 0-89608-419-1. Gehlen's émigré fronts not only continued to exist, they not only continued to be headed by former Nazis, but also helped elect Ronald Reagan and George H.W. Bush! That puts a whole new perspective on G.H.W. Bush's "New World Order" speech, and Reagan's "Mr. Gorbachev, tear down this wall" remark. Similar émigré or exilee community connections exist in the background of former (West) Germany Chancellor Helmut Kohl, who was backed by the Silesian Exiles' Society. (Q.v. *Rechte Machen Kassen* and *The New Reich*)

That there are long, and secret, associations and contacts between the United States and Germany is evident from the Skull and Bones society, both as an organization founded as a chapter of some similar lodge in Germany, as well as through the individual and family connections represented by the Bushes and others who are members of that society. The connections, and associations, have played significant roles in American politics as well, as is evident in the fallout from Operation Paperclip, the Kennedy assassination, and even its much more limited role in the election of Presidents Reagan and G.H.W. Bush.

But there may be a far older association, a far older historical pedigree, one dating back to the Hohenstaufen Emperors of Germany, and to their global imperialistic ambitions.

In 1943, while World War Two was raging in its full fury, an American author published a little-known and long-forgotten book called *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask.*[64] The author's name was Paul Winkler, and he sought to explain the most fundamental mystery of World War Two – and indeed, in a certain sense, of World War One as well – and that was, what on earth had happened to the Germans?

The Germans, Winkler was careful to point out, were no more or less warlike than any other people. Germany had exercised a profound cultural influence on the formation of the "Western ethos": engineers and musicians and physicists and biologists all studied German before the war, and clamored to enter her universities. Mozart, Bach, Beethoven, Schumann, Schubert, Brahms, Dürer, Luther, Einstein, Planck, and on and on the list could go, of famous Germans who profoundly enriched human experience.

Yet, that was the mystery, for while being no more or less warlike *as a people* than anyone else, when they *did* go to war, they did it…. they did it *well.* And with Nazism, it seemed to many as if something in the genius of the German people had gone quite insane, that some "ethnic character defect" had become so pathological that many called for the actual sterilization and extermination of Germans after the war. Indeed, serious plans were drawn up in the United States – the so-called "Morgenthau Plan" – that would have left Germany stripped of all industry and reduced to a servile agrarian state depopulated by some tens of millions, the ultimate Jewish revenge, perhaps, for Nazism's crimes.

---

[64] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1943).

But for Winkler, Nazism, and Germany's well-known ability to wage war, was "not the product of some 'spontaneous generation' crystallized by Hitler's evil genius" nor was it "simply a reaction to the harsh terms of the Versailles treaty" nor did it derive "from some basic trait in the German character."[65] For Winkler, Nazism was the manifestation of something far older, and far more sinister. It was the manifestation of a millenium's long secret conspiracy. It was, in short, a "secret society gone public."

> In 1921….during one of the sessions of the Bavarian 'Landtag' (Pariliament), the Deputy Gareis, with a heavy pile of documents in his hands, made a statement to the other Deputies which none of them seemed able to understand: 'I have here the evidence of a thousand years' conspiracy – evidence which I shall present to you shortly.'
>
> A few days later Gareis was murdered. The criminal escaped punishment and the incident was practically forgotten. The evidence to which Gareis referred was never revealed.[66]

But this incident was enough to fuel Winkler's own quest to reconstruct what Deputy Gareis had unearthed.

What Gareis had unearthed, was not a defect in *Germany*, but rather, a defect that dominated Germany: Prussia and "Prussianism." Winkler comments as follows:

> For us, 'Prussianism' goes back to the early part of the thirteenth century and is still very much alive in our day. *It is the heir of the world-embracing ambitions of the Carolingians and 'Holy Roman' Emperors* – but at the same time it is also what it became during the centuries in the stuffy and nauseating hot-house of East Prussia.
>
> The principal events in Germany between the two World Wars, the reasons for Hitler's rise to power and the events that followed can be

---

[65] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. ix.

[66] Ibid., p. 3.

> understood only by a thorough scrutiny of the Prusso-teutonic and Fehmic organizations.[67]

The “Fehmic orgamizations” that Winkler refers to are the *Helige Vehme*, which were secret imperial courts established by the German Holy Roman Emperors and their supporters in the various principalities and duchies, primarily Westphalia, that were to hand out and deliver death sentences to anyone convicted of treason against the empire. They were, in a sense, also secret societies, since membership was by invitation-initiation.

But in any case, Winkler points the finger at something very significant, and usually completely ignored by histories of Nazism, even by those predisposed to view Nazism as a primarily occult or esoteric phenomenon. That something is the deep secret society connection of Nazism to the old Teutonic Knights, themselves founded by the mediaeval German Emperors to further their imperialistic ambitions.

At a time when the Papacy and the German Emperors were locked in mortal combat and when the Papacy could call on its own “shock troops” in the form of the “military orders” like the Templars or Knights Hospitaliter of St. John, the German Emperors sought to create their own imperial version. The process began when “Emperor Frederick Barbarossa of the Hohenstaufen family had himself proclaimed ‘master of the world,’ *Dominus Mundi*, in 1158 in the fields of Roncaglia during his second campaign in Italy.”[68] In order to offset the papal advantage with its military orders, the German Emperors created their own version, supporting “the formation of the purely German-armed Order of the Teutonic Knights.”[69] This was achieved through a long-term deception, for initially the Order was founded with but vague ties to the Empire in order to secure the necessary papal blessing “indispensable to its prestige.”[70] Nonetheless, the Emperors managed to see that the head of the order during these years were always personally loyal to themselves. Finally, when the existence of the Order was "quite secure" it "more openly put itself at the service of the Imperial plans for expansion."[71] The man responsible for putting the Teutonic Knights on this political footing was Hermann von Salza, the Grand Master from 1210 to 1239.[72]

---

[67] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* pp. 27-28, emphasis added.

[68] Ibid., p. 32.

[69] Ibid., p. 35.

[70] Ibid.

Von Salza approached the Polish Duke Conrad of Masovia and persuaded him that the Teutonic Knights would be able to assist him in his battles against "heathen tribes," namely, the Slavic Berussians, or Prussians, that inhabited the region later to become Prussia. Winkler continues the story:

> Early in 1226 a formal invitation from Conrad arrived at the Order. Von Salza consulted with (Emperor) Frederick II at once and the latter, in his Bull of Rimini, entrusted von Salza with an imperial 'mission' for his future campaign.
>
> This Bull…. Was the very basis for all future action of the Teutonic Knights; a permanent charter for all Prussian conquest, and all German political expansion which, during the centuries to come and until this day, was to radiate from that territory.[73]

In other words, if one follows the logic closely, an organization had a legal charter – *a charter never revoked by competent authority that could claim descent from the original granting authority* – for conquest. And that organization was, by definition, a military secret society whose core ideology was the establishment of a world empire with German, with *Prussian,* hegemony at its heart and height.

The Bull of Rimini may be taken then as the *de facto* founding of the Order that would play such a role in European geopolitics for centuries to come. But equally important is the figure of the "renaissance man" Emperor Frederick II, well-known for his indulgence of scholars and sciences deemed esoteric by any standards, and certainly by the standards of the mediaeval Latin Church. Frederick liked to model his behavior on his famous grandfather Frederick Barbarossa,[74] and also maintained “that the Teutonic Knights had been founded by Barbarossa, a claim which seems to have no justification in fact.”[75] While Frederick II might have been trying to vest his Teutonic Knights with the aura of Barbarossa, and have invented this fact, it nonetheless cannot be discounted that he might have also let slip the real founder of the Order.

---

[71] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* p. 35.

[72] Ibid.

[73] Ibid.

In any case, it is the Order of the Teutonic Knights that must be considered the real heir to the global imperial ambitions of the mediaeval German Emperors, much more so than the German Empire itself.[76]

a. The Hohenzollerns Become Grand Masters of the Order

But by the late Middle Ages and early Renaissance, northern German cities formed the trading league known as the Hansa, or Hanseatic League, in part to overthrow the rule of the Order in cities along Germany’s eastern Baltic coast. This was successful. With its fortune and military power declining, the Order was approached by a new ally – indeed its *only* ally in this period – the Margrave of Brandenburg, Frederick von Hohenzollern.[77] The two – the Order and the Hohenzollern Margravate – entered into a pact to give assistance to each other against the subjects of each. And thus was born the unusual alliance between the house of Hohenzollern and the old Prussian noble interests represented by the Order. As a result of this relationship, by 1511 Albert von Hohenzollern und Brandenburg was elected to the Grand Mastership of the order, a “post he filled with full understanding of the Order’s traditions and ambitions.”[78] As Grand Master, Albert von Hohenzollern secularized the order in 1525 by transforming it into the hereditary Duchy of Prussia.[79] The “secret society” component of the Order lived on in name, and also spawned several offshoot secret societies among the Junker nobility class in Prussia, one of which, the "Society of Lizards", maintained the Order's original imperial designs as well as esoteric doctrines.[80]

---

[74] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. 47.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Ibid., p. 51.

[77] Ibid., p. 79.

[78] Ibid..

[79] Ibid.

But then Winkler asks the all-important question:

> One may ask whether there is an actual secret organization behind the Junkers and Prusso-Teutonics or whether the familiar Prusso-Teutonic organizations are responsible for the sequence of events presented in this book.
>
> Really secret organizations seldom betray their existence by outward signs. Nevertheless the founding of the secret 'Society of Lizards' (Eidechsengesellschaft) is an historical fact. Reliable historians have related how this society tried to pull the strings in Prussia while the Order of the Teutonic Knights still existed. Kotzebue attributes to the activities of this secret society the secularization of Prussia.
>
> The unilinear evolution which has taken place since then – in Prussia and in a Germany dominated by Prussia – and which corresponds point by point to the basic principles of the Society of Lizards might be considered sufficient circumstantial evidence of the survival of a secret Prusso-Teutonic organization right down to our time. But there is more. The entire process of Prussian growth seems to be inspired by an uninterrupted organic plan.... No interruption in the logic of events is observable, however, even since the time when the order ceased to manage the affairs of Prussia....
>
> Our circumstantial evidence goes further: Germany was defeated in 1918 and the old ambitious plans of the Prussian elements seemed shattered forever; yet within a few months somebody, somewhere, behind the curtains in Germany, made decisions of the highest importance. These decisions meant revival of the old Fehme, the organization of systematic terror planned to undermine the young German Republic and to facilitate Germany's secret rearmament. So-called 'secret societies' sprang up from one day to the other all over Germany – societies which were secretive as regards the details of their decisions and activities, but whose existence itself was a secret from nobody. All these secret societies were closely connected among themselves; and there was no rivalry between them. Their activities complemented each other wonderfully. Even a superficial observer

---

[80] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* p. 190. The esoteric connection of the chosen name "Lizards" should be noted, for the lizard, in the form of the salamander, is a symbol of the greatest esotericist, the figure of Hermes Trismegistus, or in his Egyptian nomenclature, Thoth.

> must conclude that all this was possible only if these societies received instructions from the same hidden, absolutely secret sources.[81]

And remember, Martin Bormann became a member of one of these secret societies, as did his then boss in the Nazi Party Rudolf Hess.

b. Hitler's Only Known Initiation

Here the story takes on another bizarre turn, a turn that is *the only known verification of what many have long suspected: that Hitler was a secret society initiate, at some time and some place.* But Winkler's version of the story points not to the usual suspects – the *Thulegesellschaft* and its shady associations with Viennese esotericists and racists Guido von List and Lanz von Liebenfels – but to the old Teutonic Knights:

> At the end of the nineteenth century, Emperor Wilhelm II, who was nurtured on the traditions of the Prusso-Teutonic Order, actually reestablished this Order in Prussia and Germany. *The descendants of those who, acting in the Society of Lizards, displaced the ancient Order from Prussia – and contributed thus to its disintegration – now claimed for themselves the right to appear cloaked in the dignity of those whose place they had taken….* Not much was said about the activities of the revived Order, but its yearly conventions in East Prussia were generally noted by the German newspapers. *A few months after the beginning of the present war, a short notice appeared in German papers announcing that Hitler himself had been initiated into the Teutonic Order.*
>
> No information is published about the internal organization of the contemporary Prusso-Teutonic Order, nor about its exact connections with what – if it still exists – is the present-day survival of the Society of Lizards.
>
> ….In this connection it is interesting to note that in May, 1924, when the 700th anniversary of the University of Naples, a University founded by Emperor Frederick II, was celebrated, a crown was found near the sarcophage of the Emperor in the Cathedral of Palermo with the following inscription:
>
> > "Seinem Kaiser und Helden
> > Das geheime Deutschland"
> > ("To Their Emperor and Hero, From Secret Germany")

---

[81] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* p. 236,

> If we assume the existence of a Secret Germany, the open Junker organizations like the Reichs-Landbund and the Herrenklub – which also derive from the Order of the thirteenth century – have only a secondary role, carrying out instructions of the secret group like all the other recently established societies which we have mentioned. But even if we disregard the circumstantial evidence which proves the actual survival of Secret Germany, we must admit that a straight line can be detected between the Teutonic Order of the thirteenth century and the Germany of today.[82]

In other words, Kaiser Wilhelm II could well afford to abdicate the imperial throne in 1918 at the end of World War One, and go into exile in Holland, for, as Grand Master of whatever secret society entity still existed in Prussia, he and the Hohenzollerns and the Prussian imperialist interests they represented still exercised power and influence behind the scenes. And in any case, the purpose of the initiation of Hitler into this order is clear enough: the bargain had been made with the public political party that would best carry through its secret ambitions.

And what of Bormann? All of this would have been known to him as well.

And it should come as no surprise that this ideology of world domination by an elite also forms the motivation of another secret society, one with its own Germanic connections: Skull and Bones.

F. Final Thoughts

So, if the Nazis, a "Brotherhood of the Bell," *were* involved with the assassination of President Kennedy – and a circumstantial case has been presented that they were, and at a very high level – then what *motivated* their involvement?

The previous chapters have outlined a case that this motivation consisted of several factors, each one alone a sufficient reason for their involvement, and that, taken together, tend to increase the probability that they were involved at the deepest and highest levels of the conspiracy:

---

[82] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* pp. 236-238, emphasis added.

1. They were involved to *protect the technology that they had developed during the war, and its continued quasi-independent or independent development.* This was threatened by Kennedy in any number of ways, by his attempt to smash the CIA, which provided a useful cover for some of their political activities, to his attempt to establish limited cooperation with the Soviets in space. If there was an alternative technology of propulsion involved in the Apollo program, and specifically with the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module), such cooperation might have revealed to the Soviets, bitter enemies of the Nazis, a component of their technology as well as their program of its continued secret development.
2. They were involved to *protect their bases of financial and political operation,* not only within and behind the various Federal agencies and American corporations which they had infiltrated, but also within and behind the various other host countries – particularly in Latin America – that any degree of exposure, such as “smashing the CIA” might have caused, would have threatened.
3. If one posits a connection between an ongoing “Nazi International” and international organized crime, as is likely since drug running, gambling, and so on would be easy means for funding and laundering money for black projects, then the actions of the Kennedy administration against organized crime would also constitute a threat to these interests.
4. If the actions of the Bunge Corporation in massive short-selling on the day of the assassination are an indicator of a deeper Nazi involvement – and it must not be forgotten that Bunge was at that time a German company with headquarters in Argentina – then a subsidiary motivation offers itself, though one that did not enter into the primary calculations for the murder: financial gain. Having entered into(or initiated) a conspiracy to assassinate the President, it would have been uncharacteristic for a Nazi International, especially one headed by the financial wizard Bormann, not to have planned to profit from it.

5. Finally, though not discussed, such a public murder would have an inevitable demoralizing effect on the American psyche, it would serve as a reminder that the hidden elite can remove anyone, at any time, any where, and get away with it. It was a warning, even to the rich and powerful like the Kennedy family, not to attempt to dismantle the loci of power they had put into place to ensure their own continued accretion of power, wealth, and influence.

Whether the Nazis initiated this conspiracy, or later wormed their way into it, is in the final analysis immaterial. But it is clear that they were involved, and at some very deep level.

And of all the groups with connections to the assassination conspiracy – Mafia, disgruntled anti-Castro Cubans, big business, big oil, threatened Federal Reserve shareholders, the military-industrial-intelligence complex, the space program, each group with its own motivation for killing the President - one thing stands out most clearly, when one considers all the evidence. *The Nazis were the one group that shared motivations with all the others. They were the one group with connections to all of them.*

10.

“What is the Brotherhood of the Bell?”

The Brotherhood of the Bell in History and Practice

“And yes, in addition to these many ‘petty’ little conspiracies, there really is a great *conspiracy – in fact, there are many of them. Churchill just referred to the entire set of conspiring cartels as the ‘High Cabal.’ This is a loose-knit set of extraordinarily wealthy cartels that between them control much of the financial power of the world.”*[1]

So what was the SS Brotherhood of the Bell?

From one perspective, that represented by the epigraph above, it was the latest in a long line of organizations designed to suppress alternative energy sources in a history of suppression that began in the nineteenth century, and really took firm root with J.P. Morgan’s suppression of Nikola Tesla early in the twentieth century.

But that is a simplistic picture.

The SS Brotherhood of the Bell was the entire organization of secret research – and the security to protect it – that was developed by the Third Reich in conjunction with its secret weapons projects. That this group intended its existence and research to continue after the war is evidenced by the measures it took to protect the secrets of the Bell by murdering most of its research team, and by spiriting the Bell itself and its project documentation out of Europe to…..to wherever it went.

From the historical perspective, the “SS Brotherhood of the Bell” is both reality and a symbol. As a symbol, it is a sign of what happens when a network of cartels and greedy power-hungry businessmen decide that they know what is best for everyone else, and put into power a political party whose ideology is in consonance with their own grotesque designs for a “New World Order,” who plan the rise, rule of terror, and dizzy fall of a world military super-power all within the lightening fast period of twelve years. In that sense, too, the Third Reich was perhaps a dress rehearsal.

---

[1] Tom Bearden, *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* (Cheniere, 2004, ISBN 0-9725146-0-0), p. 211.

But as a reality, the SS Brotherhood of the Bell was the first historically documented case of a secret development of an off-the-books physics and technology that promises limitless good, and possesses the boundless potential for evil. It is likewise the first documented case of the genuine existence of an alternative and very secret technology. Similarly, it is the first historical example of the measures taken not only to secretly develop it, but also to suppress any thoughts or inclinations toward an *open* development of its full potential. The "SS Brotherhood," like its Teutonic Knights forebears, did not hesitate to murder in order to protect the instruments of its hegemony.

In yet another sense, the SS Brotherhood of the Bell is also the first historical example of a "Military Assessment Joint Intelligence Committee;" or, to put it more succinctly and familiarly, the Brotherhood of the Bell is the first *real example* of a kind of MAJIC-12 group, a group tasked with the secret development of technology and with security and disinformation campaigns designed to deflect attention of anyone who might get too close, and when that fails, to eliminate the interloper. Whether or not this Brotherhood infiltrated the later MAJIC-12 group or indeed became its nucleus, there is little doubt that a connection exists, and my intuition tells me it may have been a component in its initial formation.

In chapters five and six, argumentation was presented that the Bell represented perhaps the first known "scalar" device, a device most probably intended by the Germans to be a breakthrough in propulsion. It certainly was that, and in this instance, the Brotherhood of the Bell may likewise be seen to be the first historical example of a genuinely secret space program. In this regard, recall the significance of the fact that Dr. Kurt Debus, a member of the Peenemünde rocket team – Nazi Germany's "open" space program – was also a member of the Bell's research team, a very hidden and secret project.

In any case, as a proto-scalar device, its weaponization potential, if not initially planned on or realized by the Germans, was quickly perceived by them. Of that there can be no doubt, since its classification as *Kriegsentscheidend* clearly indicates their perception of its potential as a weapon or weapons platform. Its significance as a proto-scalar device would thus seem to render Tom Bearden's following extensive remarks about the suppression of alternative physics and technology – and who is behind it - more significant. Bearden's remarks, cited extensively below, should be read not only for their intrinsic worth, but in the context of what has preceded in this book, for they are characteristic of the operation of any "Brotherhood of the Bell".

> And yes, in addition to these many "petty" little conspiracies, there really is a *great* conspiracy – in fact, there are many of them. Churchill just referred to the entire set of conspiring cartels as the "High Cabal." This is a loose-knit set of extraordinarily wealthy cartels that between them control much of the financial power of the world. You can only find the principals behind a couple of hundred of interlocking corporations, if you penetrate deeply enough. Much of their great financial income comes from the control of energy at its various levels, through a net of interlocking corporations. Something like $2 trillion dollars per year is their "take" from energy worldwide. Oil plays a great role in that. These "high cabal" fellows make or break nations financially, as is almost being done to Argentina as this is being written. They also have been stopping (Coefficient of Performance greater than unity) electrical power systems since shortly after the turn of the century, using whatever means are necessary – fair or foul. That is why we are still burning oil, coal, and natural gas, and why our automobiles and trucks run off gasoline and diesel, and not off free electrical energy from the vacuum. The high cabal intends to keep it that way. Some of the major primary means of "stopping" invention have been as follows:
>
> a. Manipulation and improper use of the law (Gray's production line was shut down by law officers before his engines could roll off there and onto the market).
> b. Involving the unsuspecting inventor in drug charges by planting drugs on his property surreptitiously, then secretly notifying the drug enforcement officials who suddenly raid the premises and discover the narcotics, resulting in the inventor going to jail since he had been caught "red-handed."
> c. Threatening the inventor's life and the lives of his family, to frighten him away from what he is doing.
> d. Arranging a fatal accident for the inventor, such as a fatal auto accident, a fall from a high place, or drowning.
> e. Assassination. Hit men are fairly simple to hire; a good one is a bit more difficult to hire but it's doable. A good hit man might assume

a disguise and fake a robbery, shooting and killing the target in the "robbery." In an extreme case, he just fires at a distance with a professional sniper rifle that is silenced.[2] A variation is the use of a "throwaway" assassin, a fellow who has been deeply conditioned by very harsh methods, to deeply involve his autonomic nervous system. He can be spotted by the "glaring eyes" effect of autonomic nervous system involvement. This fellow is only marginally functional in real life, and requires a handler. He also must "fixate" for some minutes (usually from 20 to 30) on the target, by staring at him for a period. Then – say, the next day – while the target is at lunch in a public restaurant, the throwaway walks in, walks straight to the target, and empties a pistol in him at point blank range. He remains there until the police arrive and arrest him. He is immune even to torture; nothing can be gotten out of him, even by electrical shocks on his genitals…..

f. Making the inventor an offer he "cannot refuse," in the old Mafia sense. In the latter, nicely dressed persons come to the inventor's house, meet with him, and offer him a large sum of money to quit what he is doing for the rest of his life. The going sum varies between $5 million and $10 million, usually. The offer is real and it cannot be refused, either the inventor accepts it, or he and all his family are dead when these gentlemen leave the premises. If the inventor refuses anyway, he and his family are killed. Usually the bodies also just "disappear" and are never found or heard from again.
g. These days, variations are used such as a careful crask of another auto into the back of the inventor's car so he is really shaken up badly but not seriously hurt. He goes to the hospital for checkup, in case of concussion, etc. Everything is seemingly okay, but he is kept overnight for observation. That night he is given a hypodermic of air in his veins. Next morning his family receives a call that the inventor has suffered seizures from an apparent concussion after all, and is fighting for his life. If he doesn't die, he becomes a human vegetable. Piece of cake.
h. Then there's the ice dart dipped in curare. The curare paralyzes the muscles of the heart and lungs; the inventor goes down in convulsive floundering, gasping and unable to breathe or pump blood. He expires very quickly. The curare breaks down in the body, the ice melts, and you have a fellow the medics find died of convulsive hheart seizure,. Etc. Works like a charm. This is an adapted "dirty spooks" trick, adapted from those branches of the

---

[2] As Mae Brussell once pointed out, nowhere and at no time did the Warren Commission ever seriously consider more than one shooter, using a silenced rifle.

intelligence communities of the world that specialize in assassinations.

i. Use of “gaming,” which was originally developed to influence or change the behavior of foreign leaders. Imagine writing a scenario, as for a movie. Only you have the deep psychological profile of the targeted individual. You also have the deep psychological profiles of quite a few other individuals who have “knee-jerk” reactions in a certain direction useful to you in your games (in your scenarios). These are called “agents of influence”, to get them into interacting with the target, only a phone call or other contact need be made and a stimulus given, and they are off and running, self-powered and going after that target with their knee-jerk response. So very sophisticated computers are used, the scenario (intended plot of events to happen) is prepared (the artificial intelligence programs will even give the probabilities of success of all the variants), and a recommended scenario variant is derived and accepted. Then the controller has one or more agents working for him that contact the players (the agents of influence). They get their phone calls or stimuli, react in predictable fashion, and come pell-mell at the inventor, interacting all over the board with him. The range of games is enormous, from stock schemes to lawsuits to infiltrating agents of influence into the internal organization of the inventor to money laundering, etc. The controller follows the progress, and only once in awhile makes slight adjustments (may need to trigger other agents of influence, send in one actual agent, etc.). Over the last 20 years, the gaming has become very expert. So many games can be launched against a single inventor that he usually is finished or nullified by one of them, eventually. Having been gamed over 200 times in the last two decades, I plan to write a book one day on the subject of the games and what to watch for.

j. ...

k. A variation is to send in a special agent who penetrates the (inventor’s) group and becomes a member. Indeed, the high cabal has certain persons who specialize in just such penetration and are specialists at setting up disruption. They have had plenty of practice, and are very good ar their trade. The identities of some of these “special agents” would surprise the causal observer. The so-called “overunity community” is rather strongly penetrated and misdirected by a number of such special agents, in addition to a greater number of agents of influence.[3]

---

[3] Bearden, *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* pp. 211-215.

Such a passage, coming in the middle of an otherwise highly theoretical physics text, is extraordinary.

A. Nick Redfern's FBI Documents on Nazis and UFOs

UFOlogist Nick Redfern is one of few "mainstream UFOlogists" that has at least given the Nazi angle on the early UFO phenomenon a hearing. In fact, he has done more than just give it a hearing, but devoted a whole chapter to it in his book *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed.*

> Before addressing the issue of FBI involvement in this matter, let us first acquaint ourselves with those few tantalizing facts on this emotive issue. Consider the following, extracted from a Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) report of 27 May 1954:
>
> "A German newspaper (not further identified) recently published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental construction of 'flying saucers' carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, the first piloted 'flying saucer' took off and reached a speed of 1,300 miles per hour within 3 minutes. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Meithe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the center of which was a round, stationary cabin gor the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, the Germans destroyed every trace of the 'flying saucer' project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants. Schriever recently died in Bremen, where he had been living. In Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by Miethe, who escaped to France. He is reportedly in the US at present.[4]

This is the standard Nazi Legend of the UFO: the secret test facilities in Breslau and Prague, the names of Habermohl, Schriever, and Miethe, and the allegation of Soviet capture of at least one of these devices. Again, with Prague, one has the connection to the *Kammlerstab.*

But with the mention of Breslau, one must pause once again to consider yet another curious "operational anomaly" of the end of

---

[4] Nick Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed* Simon and Schuster, 1998), pp.198-199.

World War Two, and that anomaly is the fanatical German defense of Breslau against the overwhelming Soviet forces besieging the city. Breslau, of course, was in Lower Silesia, then a province of Germany. As such, it was the nearest large city to the environs where the Bell was tested. So, once again, behind the consistent Nazi UFO Legend and its insistence that something highly advanced was being worked on in or near Breslau, one has in The Bell the probable *basis* of the legend. It should be noted, however, that at no time in the development of the history of the Bell does Polish researcher Igor Witkowski ever mention the names of Miethe, Habermohl, or Schriever in connection with it.

Redfern also mentions the involvement of the United States Air Force in tracking down the Nazi Legend of the UFO:

> A report dated 3 January 1952 from Brigadier General W.M. Garland, USAF, to General Samford, Air Force Director of Intelligence,[5], also addresses the issue of German involvement in the UFO mystery. Although somewhat speculative, *relevant portions of the report confirm that elements of the USAF were of the opinion that some UFOs were of earthly origin.*
>
> “The continued reports of unusual flying objects requires positive action to determine the nature and origin of this phenomena (sic)…. It is logical to relate the reported sightings to the known development of aircraft, jet propulsion, rockets and range extension capabilities in Germany and the USSR. In this connection, it is to be noted that certain developments by the Germans, particularly the Horton wing, jet propulsion, and refueling, combined with their extensive employment of V-1 and V-2 weapons during World War II, *lend credence to the possibility that the flying objects may be of German and Russian origin. The developments mentioned above were completed and operational between 1941 and 1944 and subsequently fell into the hands of the Soviets at the end of the war. There is evidence that the Germans were working on these projects as far back as 1931 to 1938. Therefore it may be assumed that the Germans had at least a 7 to 10 year lead over the United States….*[6]

Reading carefully between the lines, it is clear that as late as 1952, the director of United States Air Force Intelligence is entertaining the possibility not only that some UFOs are of Soviet origin, but of *German* origin as well. But in 1952, Germany was already divided, and in no economic shape to continue such black projects. In other words, General Garland was indicating a possibly *independent and continued German development of these technologies in places outside of Germany*. Note too that according to General Garland, such projects may have been begun in the early 1930s, with the terminus ante quem being fully two years *before* the Nazis took power. In any case, the period from 1931 to 1938 was when the various "aether vortex theories" were being developed in Germany by Hilgenberg and others, so it stands to reason that some experimental headway in technologies based upon those theories had already been made.

---

[5] General Samford is also the US Air Force general who gave the Pentagon’s first, and *last*, press conference-briefing on the UFOs, after the UFO sightings over Washington, D.C., in 1952.

[6] Nick Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files*, pp. 199-200, emphasis added.

However, Garland's remarks might indicate much more, if one places them in the wider context of the Bell, the *Kammlerstab,* and Igor Witkowski's own remarks to the effect that the Bell represented an "off-the-books" program, buried deep behind the V-1 and V-2 and various other rocket and secret weapons projects of Nazi Germany. In effect, Garland is indicating that the possible real beginnings of a UFO-study and engineering group were in the years prior to World War Two, and in Germany. In this connection, I pointed out in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* that such a secret UFO study group clearly existed in Fascist Italy, having been established by Benito Mussolini in 1933.[7] By the time of the end of the war, the SS had in effect become this "study group," and it is no less significant that The Bell was its most sensitive project.

Redfern then cites an FBI report that indicates that those on the "inside" were clearly aware that something was quite wrong with the Allied Legend of American nuclear bomb-engineering superiority over the Germans:

> …In addition (source) said that more recent reports have been received from representatives of the Central Intelligence Agency in Southern Europe and Southern Asia to the effect that the Russians were experimenting with some type of radical aircraft or guided missile which could be dispatched for great distances out over the sea, made to

---

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 319-330.

> turn in flight and return to the base from which it was launched. He related that this information was extremely worthy of notice as experiments in this country have so far only developed to the point where we are concerned with delivering a missile to the required point of impact and no consideration has been given to imparting to that missile the ability to return. (Source) also advised that it is a known fact that the Russians are attempting to develop some type of nuclear energy, that *they received a wealth of information concerning nuclear energy at the time of their occupation in Germany, and that they have at their disposal a limited supply of fissionable materials. (Source) pointed out that the Russians have some very capable scientists in the field of atomic energy and that, in addition thereto, they took into their custody some of the most-advanced and capable scientists of the German nation.*[8]

But why worry at all if the wartime German scientists were such nuclear bunglers? Unless, of course, one recalls that Baron Manfred Von Ardenne had hit upon the idea of using cyclotrons for enriching uranium.

Then Redfern delivers some bombshells.

The first is a report delivered to the FBI in the summer of 1947 – the year of the alleged Roswell crash and recovery, as well as of the alleged founding of MJ-12 – by one of its informants, a Mr. Edwin M. Bailey of Stamford, Connecticut. Bailey's comments were the subject of the following memorandum to the FBI's director, J. Edgar Hoover:

> Bailey stated that the topic of 'flying suacers' had caused considerable comment and concern to the present day scientists and indicated that he himself had a personal theory concerning the 'flying saucers." Prior to advancing his own theory, Bailey remarked that immediately after the conclusion of World War II, a friend of his (censored), allegedly observed the "flying saucers" from an observatory in Milan and Bologna, Italy. He stated that apparently at that time the "flying saucers" had caused a little comment in Italy but that after some little publicity they immediately died out as public interest. Bailey stated that it is quite possible that actually the "flying saucers" could be radio controlled germ bombs or atom bombs which are circling the orbit of the earth and which could be controlled by radio and directed to land on

---

[8] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files,* p. 200, emphasis added.

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
U. S. DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
COMMUNICATIONS SECTION

NOV 7 1957

TELETYPE

Mr. Boardman
Mr. Belmont
Mr. Mohr
Mr. Nease
Mr. Parsons
Mr. Rosen
Mr. Tamm
Mr. Trotter
Mr. Clayton
Tele. Room
Mr. Holloman
Miss Gandy
[redacted]

URGENT 11-7-57 4-55 PM EST WHH

TO DIRECTOR FBI

FROM SAC, DETROIT 1P

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS, IS - X. REBUTEL NOV SIX LAST.

[redacted], WARSAW, POLAND, WAS GERMAN POW MAY, NINETEEN FORTY TWO, UNTIL SUMMER OF NINETEEN FOURTYFIVE. ARRIVED NY MAY TWO, NINETEEN FIFTYONE, AS DP, AR NO [redacted]. [redacted] UPON INTERVIEW ADVISED THAT WHILE GERMAN POW DURING NINETEEN FORTYFOUR OBSERVED A VEHICLE DESCRIBED AS CIRCULAR IN SHAPE, SEVENTY FIVE TO ONE HUNDRED YARDS IN DIAMETER, APPROXIMATELY FOURTEEN FEET HIGH. THE VEHICLE WAS OBSERVED TO SLOWLY RISE VERTICALLY TO HEIGHT SUFFICIENT TO CLEAR FIFTY FOOT WALL AND TO MOVE SLOWLY HORIZONTALLY A SHORT DISTANCE OUT OF VIEW OBSTRUCTED BY TREES. ENGINE OF TRACTOR FAILED TO OPERATE DURING THIS PERIOD AND ONE OTHER OCCASION WHEN HIGH PITCHED WHINNING NOISE HEARD IN AREA. NO INDICATION OF MENTAL INSTABILITY DURING INTERVIEW. FURTHER DETAILS FOLLOW AMSD.

~~E CORRECT LINE FOUR WORD WX FOUR SHLD BE "TWO"~~

Telephoned 11/8/57 WOB

END AND A K PLS

X 4-56 PM OK FBI WA EW

TU DISC

62-83894-342

RECORDED-84
INDEXED-84

Mr. Belmont

NOV 13 1957

11-4-57

FBI UFO Document

any designated target at the specific desire of the agency or country operating the bombs.[9]

---

[9] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files,* p. 202.

Redfern notes that the FBI was in receipt of this memorandum on “18 July, 1946,”[10] a fact which is interesting in and of itself, since in 1947, if one believes the Allied Legend, no one but America was supposed to have atomic bombs! But that anyone could *orbit* them on remotely-guided satellites was still only an idea on the drawing boards, though it had been on the Nazis’ drawing boards long before anyone it was on anyone else’s.

In November of 1957, however, the FBI received one of its most interesting reports in its Detroit office. Barring the FBI’s censoring of the name of the witness in the report, the report itself is extremely significant, since it is the eyewitness testimony of a Polish prisoner-of-war to the extraordinary technology he saw being tested by the Germans:

> (Witness was) born February 19, 1926, in the State of Warsaw, Poland, (and) was brought from Poland as a Prisoner of War to Gut Alt Golssen approximately 30 miles east of Berlin, Germany, in May, 1942, where he remained until a few weeks after the end of World War II. He spent the following years at Displaced Persons Camps at Kork, Strasburg, Offenburg, Milheim and Freiburg, Germany. He attended a radio technician school at Freiburg and for about a year was employed in a textile mill at Laurachbaden, Germany. He arrived in the united States at New York, May 2, 1951, via the “SS General Stewart” as a Displaced Person…
>
> According to (witness), during 1944, month not recalled, while enroute to work in a field a short distance north of Gut Alt Golssen, their tractor engine stalled on a road through a swamp area. No machinery or other vehicle was then visible although a noise was heard described as a high-pitched whine similar to that produced by a large electric generator.
>
> An “SS” guard appeared and talked briefly with the German driver of the tractor, who waited five to ten minutes, after which the noise stopped and the tractor engine was started normally. Approximately 3 hours later in the same swamp area, but away from the road where the work crew was cutting “hay,” he surreptitiously, because of the German in charge of the crew and “SS” guards in the otherwise deserted area, observed a circular enclosure approximately 100 to 150 yards in diameter protected from viewers by a tarpaulin-type wall approximately 50 feet high, from which a vehicle was observed to slowly rise vertically to a height sufficient to clear the wall and then to

---

[10] Ibid.

UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

In Reply, Please Refer to File No. 62-0-11328

Miami, Florida
June 8, 1967

RE: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

On April 26, 1967, [redacted] Miami, Florida, appeared at the Miami Office and furnished the following information relating to an object, presently referred to as an unidentified flying object, he allegedly photographed during November, 1944:

Sometime during 1943, he graduated from the German Air Academy and was assigned as a member of the Luftwaffe on the Russian Front. Near the end of 1944, he was released from this duty and was assigned as a test pilot to a top secret project in the Black Forest of Austria. During this period he observed the aircraft described above. It was saucer shaped, about twenty-one feet in diameter, radio controlled, and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft. He further described the exterior portion as revolving around the dome in the center which remained stationary. It was [redacted] responsibility to photograph the object while in flight. He asserted he was able to retain a negative of a photograph he made at 7,000 meters (20,000 feet). A Xerox copy of the negative, as furnished by [redacted], appears on the last page of this communication. Also, a still photograph he allegedly made "at the risk of my life", illustrating the object parked in a hanger, appears on the last page.

According to [redacted] the above aircraft was designed and engineered by (First Name Unknown) [redacted] a German engineer whose present whereabouts is unknown to him. He assumed [redacted] was taken into custody by Allied Forces upon the termination of hostilities. [redacted] stated [redacted] unsuccessfully attempted to avoid the German draft, but was apprehended by the Gestapo

FBI UFO Document

move slowly horizontally a short distance out of his view, which was obstructed by nearby trees.

This vehicle, observed from approximately 500 feet, was described as circular in shape, 75 to 100 yards in diameter, and about 14 feet high, consisting of dark gray stationary top and bottom sections, five to six feet high. The approximate three foot middle section appeared to be

RE: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

in Vienna, Austria, sometime during late 1943 or early 1944. [redacted] also assumed the secrets pertaining to this aircraft were captured by Allied Forces. He said this type of aircraft was responsible for the downing of at least one American B-26 airplane. He furnished the following fuel and engine data:

> "....Fuel mixture of N_2H_4O in Methyl Alcohol (CH_3CH) rather than 'oxygen-holding' mixture of hydrogen peroxide H_2O_2 in water. 7m 1,3m high two rocket motors; smooth flow, rotary drive over 2,000 meters per second...."

[redacted] said he copied this data from a board located in the hanger area.

[redacted] asserted he was shot down by the British on March 14, 1945, after having been reassigned to the Western Front. He was held prisoner by the British in London and later in Brussels until his release in 1946. He departed for the United States from Bremerhaven, Germany, on December 26, 1951; entering the United States in New Jersey on January 7, 1952, and was subsequently naturalized in Miami during 1958. He is presently employed as a mechanic at Eastern Airlines, Miami, Florida. He related he was born May 3, 1924, in Austria.

[redacted] stated he has withheld this information because he assumed the United States possessed it. He has become increasingly concerned because of the unconfirmed reports concerning a similar object and denials the United States has such an aircraft. He feels such a weapon would be beneficial in Vietnam and would prevent the further loss of American lives which was his paramount purpose in contacting the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI).

[redacted] reiterated he has the original negatives of both photographs. He said the shots were taken at a thirty second time exposure.

This document contains neither recommendations nor conclusions of the FBI. It is the property of the FBI and is loaned to your agency; it and its contents are not to be distributed outside your agency.

2

FBI UFO Document

a rapidly moving component producing a continuous blur similar to an aeroplane propeller, but extending the circumference of the vehicle so far as could be observed. The noise emanating from the vehicle was similar but of somewhat lower pitch than the noise previously heard. The engine of the tractor again stalled on this occasion and no effort

> was made by the German driver to start the engine until the noise stopped, after which the engine started normally.[11]

None of this is the standard fare for the Nazi UFO Legend, for even the place of its testing – Gut Alt Golssen – is a far cry from Prague or Breslau. Nor is a Polish prisoner of war likely to be eager to fabricate anything that would make the Nazis look good.

According to Redfern, a similar account, dated June 8, 1967, also was found in the FBI's declassified UFO files. It reads as follows:

> On April 26, 1967, (source) appeared at the Miami Office and furnished the following information relating to an object, presently referred to as an unidentified flying object, he allegedly photographed during November, 1944.
>
> Sometime during 1943, he graduated from the German Air Academy and was assigned as a member of the Luftwaffe on the Russian Front. Near the end of 1944, he was released from this duty and was assigned as a test pilot to a top secret project in the Black Forest of Austria. During this period he observed the aircraft described above. It was saucer shaped, about twenty-one feet in diameter, radio-controlled, and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft. He further described the exterior portion as revolving around the dome in the center which remained stationary. It was (witness's) responsibility to photograph the object while in flight. He asserted he was able to retain a negative of a photograph he made at 7,000 meters (20,000 feet).
>
> According to (witness) the above aircraft was designed and engineered by a German engineer whose present whereabouts is unknown to him. (Witness) also assumed the secrets pertaining to this aircraft were captured by Allied Forces. He said this type of aircraft was responsible for the downing of at least one American B-26 airplane.[12]

Clearly at least some in the US government's many intelligence agencies were interested in the possibility of Nazi origins for some of the observed UFOs that began invading American airspace after World War Two.

These documents, unlike the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents, are undeniably authentic. One does not have to place them in a gray area between "genuine" and "complete hoax" to appreciate their significance. And this should give one pause, for they corroborate what those MAJIC-12 themselves seem to imply: that *someone*, somewhere, in the confusing tangle of US intelligence agencies, was keeping track of the Nazi angle on UFOs, and that they were perhaps worried about a continued independent covert development of the exotic technology they displayed. The documents that Redfern uncovers in fact corroborate the general scenarios outlined in our own examination and analysis of the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents.[13]

---

[11] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files,* pp. 203-204.

[12] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files,* pp. 205-207.

However one slices it, there *is* a clear documentary indication of Nazi association with the development of at least some of the technology associated with UFO technology.

But more extraordinary is that one detects, at various levels, all the elements involved in Kennedy's assassination. And that may be significant in and of itself, an indicator, perhaps, that the "Brotherhood's" involvement in the murder was ultimately motivated by technological considerations, and financially backed by the world's largest – and well known – corporations. This surely was not the only motivation for the assassination, but, in alliance with threatened "big oil" and banking interests, it was a powerful one. If Kennedy had been successful in smashing the CIA or in joint space cooperation with the Soviets, then this might have exposed a hidden secret space program and its secret technology.

In this context, recall that one of the MAJIC-12 documents indicated that President Nixon privatized the alleged secret UFO study-and-action group. In this context, it is perhaps apparent, that there was not really any reason for him to do so. It had been independent since the end of the war.

But ultimately, what was at stake, beyond this technology and the power it represented?

One answer, perhaps, was allegedly given by Dr. Werner Von Braun himself to his former assistant at Fairchild Industries, Dr. Carol Rosin. Von Braun had retired – or perhaps had "been retired" – to Fairchild Industries from NASA after his Lunar Neutral Point discrepancy revelations to *Time* magazine. Rosin describes Von Braun's "dying message" to her:

---

[13] An interesting sideline on this is that Redfern also mentions the unusual Nazi connections of the famous 1950s "contactee" George Adamski. See p. 315. Redfern is not alone in noting these connections.

> When I was a Corporate Manager of Fairchild Industries from 1974 through 1977, I met the late Dr. Werner Von Braun. We first met in early 1974. At that time, Von Braun was dying of cancer but he assured me that he would live a few more years to tell me about the game that was being played – that game being the effort to weaponize space, to control the Earth from space and space itself. Von Braun had a history of working with weapons systems. He escaped from Germany[14] to come to this country and became a Vice President of Fairchild Industries, when I had met him. Von Braun's purpose during the last years of his life, his dying years, was to educate the public and decision-makers about why space-based weapons are dumb, dangerous, destabilizing, too costly, unnecessary, unworkable, and an undesirable idea, and about the alternatives that are available.
>
> As practically a deathbed speech, he educated me about those concepts and who the players were in this game. He gave me the responsibility, since he was dying, of continuing this effort to prevent the weaponization of outer space. When Werner Von Braun was dying of cancer, he asked me to be his spokesperson, to appear on occasions when he was too ill to speak. I did this.
>
> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that he said to me over and over again during the approximately four years that I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics. That was how we identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered to be the enemy. In fact, in 1974, they were the enemy, the identified enemy. We were told they had "killer satellites". We were told that they were coming to get us and control us – that they were "Commies."
>
> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow. We heard a lot about terrorism. Then we were going to identify third-world country "crazies." We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at that point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids – against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.

---

[14] It should be obvious by now that Von Braun did not "escape" Germany, having worked for Hitler right up to the capitulation.

> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over and over during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. “And remember, Carol, the last card is the alien card. We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens, and all of it is a lie.
>
> ….
>
> The last card that was being held was the extraterrestrial enemy card. The intensity with which he said that, made me realize that he knew something that he was too afraid to mention. He was too afraid to talk about it. He would not tell me the details. I am not sure I would have absorbed them if he had told me the details or even believed him in 1974. But there was no question that that man knew and had a need to know, I found out later. [15]

Rosin makes clear subsequently in her statements that she personally believes in extraterrestrials in the standard sense, that she also makes clear her personal opposition to space-based weapons,[16] and does all this in a manner that suggests that Von Braun was implying that “E.T.” was merely being misunderstood by a trigger-happy American military. In other words, the “lie” Von Braun referred to was that “ET” was being covered up and misunderstood.

But it is not at all obvious from Von Braun’s alleged remarks to her that this is the only interpretation nor even the *best* one. After all, Von Braun had been part of the world’s *first* space program and the first attempt to weaponize space, a program that outlined, long in advance of their realization, the steps necessary to place “killer satellites” in orbit: Nazi Germany’s. And Von Braun’s associate at Peenemünde, Dr. Kurt Debus – a high voltage expert – was also involved with The Bell. Debus subsequently became a director at the Kennedy Space Flight Center in Florida during the Apollo project, a strange position for an expert in high voltage to be in during the world’s first manner Lunar landing program. Von Braun’s remarks might, therefore, be interpreted to mean a *planned deception*, brought about by technology – the “ET Threat” – to be met with another deception, also brought about by technology: space-based weapons for "defense" against "ET" and the occasional large asteroid that wanders too close. And consider, too, that if the weapons are powerful enough to blow apart a large asteroid, what might they do if directed against the earth?

---

[15] Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in modern History* (Cromer, Virginia: Crossing Point, Inc., 2001), pp. 255-256.

[16] Ibid., p. 257.

So what does one make of all the Nazis lurking in the background of the JFK assassination?

The "Brotherhood," like all the other weird players and connections – the anti-Castro Cubans, the Mafia, the Cold Warriors in the CIA and the Pentagon and the FBI, big oil, international banking – had its reasons to act and to enter such a multifaceted conspiracy, perhaps even to orchestrate it. Like them, it was hiding something; like them, it was protecting something.

Mae Brussel was, after all is said and done, right about the Nazis and the assassination, for America has continued the slide to fascism. Dummycrats are indistinguishable from Republicrooks and one conspiracy-ridden scandal – Iran-Contra, October Surprise, Watergate, BCCI, the Savings and Loan debacle, Nugan Hand, Ruby Ridge, Waco, Oklahoma City, 9/11 – follows and blurs into another. Elections are rigged by computer ballots, constitutional crises are tried on for size in Florida, two presidential candidates from the same secret society run for president while the "winner", a "conservative", allows millions of illegal aliens to pour across the borders while claiming to fight a war on terror with a camera on every stoplight in America.

If, with the distance of time from the event, the players in the JFK murder now seem to blur and run together, perhaps that is due not to our failing eyesight or faded memories, but to the fact that the coalescence of interests that brought that conspiracy together have merely continued to coalesce. They will continue to do so, as long as there is a technology that threatens their base of power, a technology – and a *science* - that needs to be suppressed, controlled, and weaponized. They have merely exchanged the black and silver SS uniform for the charcoal grey business suit.

….but be sure and check their ring fingers. And make sure they're not holding the apron strings. Old fraternities die hard.

"Bibliography"

Agoston, Tom. *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia.* New York. Dodd, Mead, and Company. 1985.

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," *Proceedings of the International Tesla Society.*

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles.* Santa Barbara, California. Cheniere Press. 2002.

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons.* Santa Barbara, California. Cheniere Press. 2002.

Bellant, Russ. *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party.* Boston. South End Press. 1991. ISBN 0-89608-419-1.

Bennet, Mary, and Percy, David. *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2001.

Bernstein, Jeremy, ed. *Hitler's Uranium Club.*

Bishop, Gregory, ed. *Wake Up Down There! The Excluded Middle Collection.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2000.

Bower, Tom. *The Paperclip Conspiracy: the Hunt for the Nazi Scientists.* Boston. Little, Brown, and Company. 1987.

Brooks, Geoffrey. *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana.* Barnsley, South Yorkshire, UK: Pen and Sword Books. 2002. ISBN 0-85052-896-8.

Brussell, Mae. "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," *The Rebel,* Nov. 22, 1983.

Childress, David Hatcher, ed. *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: the Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1996.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis.* Kempton, Illinois. 1999.

Clendenon, Bill. *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods,* reprinted in Childress, *Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the power System of Atlantis.* 2000.

Cohen, S.T., “The Dove of War,” *National Review,* December 27, 1993, pp. 56-58, 76.

Corso, Lt. Col. Philip J. (US Army, Ret), and Birnes, William. *The Day After Roswell.* Simon and Schuster.

Edwards, Frank. *Flying Saucers, Serious Business.* London. Mayflower-Dell. 1967.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend.* Kempton, Illinois. *Adventures Unlimited Press.* 2004.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Star Star Deployed.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003

Fuller, John G. *The Interrupted Journey.* London. Corgi Books. 1966.

Georg, Friedrich. *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947, Teliband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen un dar erste Weltraumprogramm.* Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2004.

Greer, Steven M. M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History.* Cromer, Virginia. Crossing Point, Inc. 2001.

Hounam, Peter, and McQuillan, Steve. *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela’s Nuclear Nightmare.* New York: Viking Press. 1995. IDBN 0-670-86925-2.

Hunt, Linda. *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990.* New York: St. Martin’s Press. 1991.

Hydrick, Carter Plymton. *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States’ Atomic Bomb.* Whitehurst and Company. 2004.

Keith, Jim. *Mind Control and UFOs: The Casebook on Alternative 3.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005.

King, Moray B. *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005.

Krafft, Carl Frederick. *Ether and Matter.* Richmond, Virginia. The Ditez Printing Company. 1945.

Lawrence, Lincoln. *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1997.

Lebedev, Mikhail. *Treason – for my Daily Bread.* Ed. W. G. Stanton. Guernsey: Vallencey press. 1977. ISBN 0 905589009.

Leek, Sybil, and Sugar, Bert R. *The Assassination Chain.* New York. Corwin Books. 1976.

Levenda, Peter. *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine.* Walerville, Oregon: Trine Day. 2005. ISBN 0-9752906-2-2.

Lyne, William. *Occult Ether Physics: Tesla Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 2003.

Lyne, William. *Occult Science Dictatorship: The Official State Science Religion and How to Get Excommunicated.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 2001.

Lyne, William. *Pentagon Aliens.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 1999.

Mattern, Friedrich. *UFOs: Nazi Se3cret Weapon?* Toronto: Samisdat Publishers, Ltd.

Millegan, Kris, ed. *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society.* Walterville, Oregon. TrineDay. 2003.

O'Neill, John J. *Prodigal Genius: the Life of Nikola Tesla.* Las Vegas. The Brotherhood of life, Inc. 1994.

Redfern, Nick. *The F. B.I. Files: the FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed.* Simon and Schuster. 1998.

Skorzeny, Otto. *La Guerre Inconnue.* Paris. Albin Michel. 1975.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood.* New York. Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovitch. 1973.

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI: Companion Study Guide for "Secrets of Cold War*

Technology." Bayside, California. Borderland Sciences. 1997.

Vesco, Renato, and Childress, David Hatcher. *Man-Made UFOS: Fifty Years of Suppression.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1994.

Winkler, Paul. *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask.* New York. Charles Scribners' Sons. 1943.

Witkowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Trans from the Polish by Bruce Wenham. Farnborough, England. Books International (European History Press). 2003.

Zunneck, Karl-Heinz. *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe, und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens.* Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag. 2002.

THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE JESUITS

EDMOND PARIS

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Foreword by Edmond Paris. 7

Section I The Founding of the Jesuit Order

1. Ignatius of Loyola. 15
2. The Spiritual Exercises. 20
3. The Founding of the Company. 23
4. The Spirit of the Order. 25
5. The Privileges of the Company. 28

Section II The Jesuits in Europe during the 16th and 17th Centuries.

1. Italy, Portugal, Spain. 31
2. Germany. 34
3. Switzerland. 38
4. Poland and Russia. 40
5. Sweden and England. 42
6. France. 45

Section III Foreign Missions

1. India, Japan, China. 50
2. The Americas: The Jesuit State of Paraguay. 55

Section IV The Jesuits in the European Society

1. The teaching of the Jesuits. 59
2. The morals of the Jesuits. 63
3. The Eclipse of the Company. 67
4. Rebirth of the Society of Jesus during the 19th Century. 73
5. The Second Empire and the Falloux Law — The War of 1870. 76
6. The Jesuits in Rome — The Syllabus. 82
7. The Jesuits in France from 1870 until 1885. 88
8. The Jesuits and General Boulanger. 95
   The Jesuits and the Dreyfus Affair.
9. The Years before the War — 1900-1914. 110

Section V The Infernal Cycle

1. The First World War. 116
2. Preparations for the Second World War. 123
3. German Aggression and the Jesuits. Austria - Poland - Czechoslovakia - Yugoslavia. 139
4. The Jesuit movement in France before and during the 1939-1945 War. 155
5. The Gestapo and the Society of Jesus. 163
6. The Death Camps and the Anti-Semitic Crusade. 172
7. The Jesuits and the Colleqium Russicum. 177
8. Pope John XXIII removes the mask. 183

Conclusion 191
Bibliography 199

Publisher's Introduction

There is no other person more qualified to introduce Edmond Paris' book, "The Secret History of the Jesuits," than Dr. Alberto Rivera, a former Jesuit priest under the extreme oath and induction, who was trained in the Vatican and briefed on the history of the Jesuits.

The information in this book is factual and fully documented, and it should be read by every Bible-believing Christian in the United States and Canada. The Bible says, "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge." (Hosea 4:6)

J.T. C

Dr. Rivera's Introduction

The most dangerous of men are those who appear very religious, especially when they are organized and in a position of authority. They have the deep respect of the people who are ignorant of their ungodly push for power behind the scenes.

These religious men, who pretend to love God, will resort to murder, incite revolution and wars if necessary to help their cause. They are crafty, intelligent, smooth religious politicians who live in a shadowy world of secrets, intrigue, and phony holiness. This pattern, seen in "The Secret History of the Jesuits," spiritually speaking can be seen in the Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees at the time of Jesus Christ. This same evil spirit directed the Roman emperors to issue the ten murderous decrees to persecute the early Christian church.

The "Early Fathers" observed most of the ancient Babylonian system plus Jewish theology and Greek philosophy. They all perverted most of the teachings of Christ and His apostles. They paved the way for the Roman Catholic machine that was to come into existence. Piously, they attacked, perverted, added to and took away from the Bible. This religious anti-christ spirit working through them is seen again when Ignatius de Loyola created the Jesuits to secretly accomplish two major goals for the Roman Catholic Institution: 1) universal political power, and 2) a universal church, in fulfillment of the prophecies of Revelation 6, 13, 17 and 18.

By the time Ignatius de Loyola arrived on the scene, the Protestant Reformation had seriously damaged the Roman Catholic system. Ignatius de Loyola came to the conclusion that the only way his "church" could survive was by enforcing the canons and doctrines on the temporal power of the pope and the Roman Catholic institution; not by just destroying the physical life of the people alone as the Dominican priests were doing through the Inquisition, but by infiltration and penetration into every sector of life. Protestantism must be conquered and used for the benefit of the popes. That was Ignatius de Loyola's personal proposal, among others, to Pope Paul III. Jesuits immediately went to work secretly infiltrating ALL the Protestant groups including their families, places of work, hospitals, schools, colleges, etc. Today, the Jesuits have almost completed that mission.

The Bible puts the power of a local church into the hands of a Godly pastor. But the cunning Jesuits successfully managed over the years to remove that power into the hands of denomination headquarters, and have now pushed almost all of the Protestant denominations into the arms of the Vatican. This is exactly what Ignatius de Loyola set out to accomplish: a universal church and the end of Protestantism.

As you read "The Secret History of the Jesuits," you will see there is a parallel between the religious and political sectors. The author, Mr. Paris, reveals the penetration and infiltration of the Jesuits into the governments and nations of the world to manipulate the course of history by setting up dictatorships, and weakening democracies such as the United States of America, by paving the way for social, political, moral, military, educational and religious anarchy.

The man, Edmond Paris

In the prophetical works of the Book of Revelation, Edmond Paris became a martyr for Jesus. In exposing such a conspiracy, he put his life at stake for truth of the prophetical signs to be known. Edmond Paris never knew me, but I knew him without meeting him personally when I, with other Jesuits under the extreme oath and induction, was being briefed on the names of institutions and individuals in Europe who were dangerous to the goals of the Roman Catholic Institution. His name was given to us.

Works by Edmond Paris

LE VATIAN CONTRE LA FRANCE GENOCIDE IN
THE SATELLITE CROATIA THE VATICAN
AGAINST EUROPE

The Edmond Paris works on Roman Catholicism brought about the pledge on the part of the Jesuits to: 1) destroy him, 2) destroy his reputation, including his family, and 3) destroy his work. And even now these great works of Edmond Paris are being tampered with, but we are praying that God will continue to preserve them when they are most needed for the salvation of Roman Catholic people.

YOURS FOR THE SALVATION OF THE
ROMAN CATHOLIC PEOPLE,

DR. ALBERTO RIVERA (EX-JESUIT PRIEST)

"The love of truth is our only salvation"
Jean Guehenno of the
French Academy

"Wherefore putting away lying,
speak every man truth ....
(Eph. IV, 25.)

Foreword

A last century writer, Adolphe Michel, recalled that Voltaire estimated the number of works published over the years, on the Jesuits, to be about six thousand. "What number have we reached a century later?", asked Adolphe Michel, only to conclude immediately: "No matter. As long as there are Jesuits, books will have to be written against them. There is nothing new left to be said on their account, but new generations of readers come every day... Will these readers search old books?"(1)

The reason just mentioned would be enough to justify us taking up again this oft-told subject. In fact, most early books retracing the history of the Jesuits cannot be found any more. Only in public libraries can they still be consulted, which makes them out of reach for most readers. With the aim of succinctly informing the public at large in mind, a summary of these works seemed necessary.

There is another reason, as good as the one just mentioned. At the same time as new generations of readers come, new generations of Jesuits come to light. And these work today with the same tortuous and tenacious methods, which so often in the past set to work the defensive reflexes of nations and governments. The sons of Loyola are today—and may we say more than ever—the leading wing of the Roman Church. As well if not better disguised than of old, they remain the most eminent "ultramontanes", the discreet but efficacious agents of the Holy See throughout the world, the camouflaged champions of its politics, the "secret army of the Papacy".

For this reason, the subject of the Jesuits will never be exhausted and, even though the literature concerning them is so plentiful, every epoch will have the duty to add a few pages to it, to mark the continuity of this occult system started four centuries ago "for the great glory of God", but in fact

(1) Adolphe Michel: "Les Jesuites" (Sandoz et Fischbacher, Paris 1879).

for the glory of the pope. In spite of the general move towards an ever increasing "laicization", in spite of the ineluctable progress of rationalism which reduces a little more every day the domain of "dogma", the Roman Church couldn't give up the great purpose which has been her goal from the beginning: to gather under her crozier all the nations of the universe. This monumental "mission" must go on, whatever happens, amongst "pagans" as well as amongst "separated Christians". The secular clergy having, in particular, the duty to hold the acquired positions (which is quite arduous nowadays), it is up to certain regular orders to increase the flock of the faithful by converting the "heretics" and "pagans", a work even more arduous. The duty is to preserve or acquire, to defend or attack, and at the front of the battle there is that mobile force of the "Society of Jesus"—the Jesuits. Properly speaking, this society is not secular, nor regular in terms of its Constitution, but a kind of subtle company intervening where and when it is convenient, in the church and outside the church, in short "the agent most skilful, most persevering, most fearless, most convinced of the papal authority...", as wrote one of its best historians.(2)

We will see how this body of "janissaries" was formed, what service without price it rendered the papacy. We will see also how so much effectual zeal was to make it indispensable to the institution it served, exerting such an influence over it that its General was named with good reason the "black pope", as it became more and more difficult to distinguish, in the government of the church, the authority of the white pope and that of its powerful coadjutor.

It is then at the same time a retrospective and a bringing up to date of the history of "Jesuitism" which is found in this book. As the majority of works regarding the Jesuits do not refer to the paramount part they took in the events which have subverted the world during the past fifty years, we thought it was time to fill up the gap or, more precisely, to start with our modest contribution a deeper study into the subject, and do this without concealing the obstacles which will be met by the non-apologist authors wanting to make public writings on this burning subject.

Of all the factors which have played a part in the international life of a century full of confusion and upheavals, one of the most decisive—nevertheless best recognized—resides in the ambition of the Roman Church. Her secular desire to extend her influence towards the East made her the "spiritual" ally of Pan-Germanism and its accomplice in the attempt to gain supreme power which twice, in 1914 and 1939, brought death and ruin to the peoples of Europe.(2a)

---

(2) A. Michel, op.cit.

(2a) See Edmond Paris: Le Vatican contre l'Europe (Fischbacher, Paris), (also P.T.S., London), and L. Duca "L'Or du Vatican" (Laffront, Paris).

The public is practically unaware of the overwhelming responsibility carried by the Vatican and its Jesuits in the start of the two world wars—a situation which may be explained in part by the gigantic finances at the disposition of the Vatican and its Jesuits, giving them power in so many spheres, especially since the last conflict.

In fact, the part they took in those tragic events has hardly been mentioned until the present time, except by apologists eager to disguise it. It is with the aim of rectifying this and establishing the true facts that we present in this and other books the political activity of the Vatican during the contemporary epoch—activity which mutually concerns the Jesuits.

This study is based on irrefutable archive documents, publications from well-known political personalities, diplomats, ambassadors and eminent writers, most of whom are Catholics, even attested by the imprimatur.

These documents bring to light the secret actions of the Vatican and its perfidious actions in creating conflicts between nations when it served its interests. With the help of conclusive articles, we show the part played by the "church" in the rise of totalitarian regimes in Europe.

These testimonies and documents constitute a crushing indictment and, so far, no apologist has tried to disprove them.

On the first of May 1938, the "Mercure de France" reminded us of what had been said four years earlier:

"The Mercure de France of the 15th of January 1934 said—and nobody contradicted it—that it was Pius XII who 'made' Hitler. He came to power, not so much through legal means, but because the pope influenced the Centrum (german catholic party)... Does the Vatican think it made a political error in opening the way to power to Hitler? It doesn't seem so..."

It didn't seem so when that was written, which was on the day following the "Anschluss' when Austria was united to the third Reich—nor later when Nazi aggressions multiplied—nor during the whole of the Second World War. In fact, on the 24th of July 1959 the successor of Pius XII, John XXIII, conferred on his personal friend Franz Von Papen the honorary title of secret chamberlain. This man had been a spy in the United States during the first world war and one of those responsible for the Hitler's dictatorship and the Anschluss. One must suffer from a peculiar kind of blindness not to see such plain facts.

Mr. Joseph Rovan, Catholic writer, comments on the diplomatic agreement between the Vatican and the nazi Reich on the 8th of July 1933:

"The Concordat brought to the national-socialist government, considered nearly everywhere to be made up of usurpers, if not brigands, the seal of an agreement with the oldest international power (the Vatican). In a way, it was the equivalent of a diploma of international honorability". (Le catholicisme politique en Allemagne, Paris 1956, p.231, Ed. du Seuil).

Thus the Pope, not satisfied with giving his "personal" support to Hitler, granted in this way the moral support of the Vatican to the nazi Reich! At the same time as the terror was beginning to reign on the other side of the Rhine and was tacitly accepted and approved, the so-called "Brown shirts" had already put 40,000 persons into concentration camps. The pogroms were multiplying to the accents of this nazi march: "When the Jewish blood streams from the knife, we feel better again." (Horst-Wessel-Lied).

In the following years, Pius XII saw even worse without being stirred. It is not surprising that the catholic heads of Germany vied with each other in their servility towards the nazi regime, encouraged as they were by their Roman "Master". One must read the dishevelled ravings and verbal acrobatics of opportunist theologians such as Michael Schmaus. He was later made a "prince of the church" by Pius XII, and described as "the great theologian of Munich" by the publication "La Croix" on the 2nd of September 1954—or again a certain book entitled Katholisch-Konservatives Erbgut, of which someone wrote:

"This anthology brings together texts from the main Catholic theorists of Germany, from Gorres to Vogelsang; it makes us believe that national-socialism was born purely and simply out of Catholic ideas." (Gunther Buxbaum, "Mercure de France", 15th of January 1939).

The bishops, made to take an oath of allegiance to Hitler by the Concordat, always tried to excel each other in their "devotion":

"Under the nazi regime, we constantly find the fervent support of the bishops in all the correspondence and declarations from ecclesiastical dignitaries". (Joseph Rovan, op.cit. p.214).

In spite of the obvious difference between Catholic universalism and hitlerian racism, these two doctrines had been "harmoniously reconciled)), according to Franz Von Papen; the reason for this scandalous accord was because "Nazism is a Christian reaction against the spirit of 1789".

Let us come back to Michael Schmaus, professor at the Faculty of Theology in Munich, who wrote:

"Empire and church is a series of writings which should help the building up of the third Reich as it unites a national-socialist State to Catholic-christianity...

"Entirely German and entirely Catholic, these writings explore and favour relations and meetings between the Catholic Church and national-socialism; they open the way for a fruitful cooperation, as outlined in the Concordat... "The national-socialist movement is the most vigorous and massive protest against the spirit of the 19th and 20th centuries... The idea of a people of one blood is the focal point of its teachings and all Catholics who obey the instructions of the German bishops will have to admit that this is so... The laws of national-socialism and those of the Catholic Church have the same aim..." (Begegnungen zwischen Katholischem Christentum und nazional-sozialistischer Weltanschauung Aschendorff, Munster 1933).

This document proves the primordial part played by the Catholic Church in the rise to power of Hitler; in fact, it was a pre-established arrangement. It illustrates fully the kind of monstrous agreement between Catholicism and nazism. The hatred of liberalism, which is the key to everything, comes out very clearly.

In his book "Catholiques d'Allemagne", Mr Robert d'Harcourt of the French Academy writes:

"The most vulnerable point, in all the episcopal declarations which followed the triumphant elections of the 5th of March 1933, is found in the first official document from the church containing the signatures of all the German bishops. We are referring to the pastoral letter of the 3rd of June 1933, in which the whole of the German episcopate is involved.

"What form does this document take?" How does it start? On a note of optimism and with this cheerful declaration: 'The men at the head of this new government have, to our great joy, given us the assurance that they place themselves and their work on Christian ground. A declaration of such deep sincerity deserves the gratitude of all Catholics'. " (Paris, Plon, 1938, p. 108).

Since the start of the first world war, several popes have come and gone, but their attitude has been invariably the same towards the two factions which confronted each other in Europe.

Many Catholic authors couldn't hide their surprise—and grief—when writing about the inhuman indifference shown by Pius XII in the face of the worst kind of atrocities committed by those in his favour. Amongst many testimonies, we will quote one of the most moderate in its wording, brought against the Vatican by Mr. Jean d'Hospital, correspondant of "Monde":

"The memory of Pius XII is surrounded with misgiving. First of all, there is this burning question asked by observers from every nation, and even within the walls of the Vatican: Did he know of certain atrocities committed during this war, started and led by Hitler?

"Having at his disposition at all times, and from every quarter, the regular reports from the bishops... could he ignore what the german military heads could never pretend to: the tragedy of the concentration camps—the civilians condemned to deportation—the cold-blooded massacres of those who 'stood in the way'—the terror of the gas chambers where, for administrative reasons, millions of Jews were exterminated? And if he knew about it why didn't he, as trustee and first chorister of the Gospel, come out dressed in white, arms extended in the shape of the cross, to denounce a crime without precedent, to shout: No!?...

"Pious souls will search in vain encyclical letters, speeches and addresses of the late pope; there is no trace of any condemnation of this 'religion of blood' instituted by Hitler, this Antichrist... they will not find the condemnation of racism, which is an obvious contradiction to the Catholic dogma". "Rome en confidence" (Grasset, Paris 1962, pp.91 ss).

In his book "Le silence de Pie XII" published by du Rocher, Monaco 1965, the author Carlo Falconi writes in particular:

"The existence of such monstrosities (exterminations en masse of ethnic minorities, prisoners and deported civilians) overthrows every standard of good and evil. They defy the dignity of their individual being and society in general to such an extent that we are compelled to denounce those who could have influenced public opinion, be they ordinary civilians or Heads of States.

"To keep quiet in the face of such outrages would amount in fact to downright collaboration. It would stimulate the villainy of the criminals, stirring up their cruelty and vanity. But, if every man has the moral duty to react when confronted with such crimes, it is doubly so of the religious societies and their heads, and above all the head of the Catholic Church.

"Pius XII never expressed a direct and explicit condemnation of the war of aggression, even less about the unspeakable crimes commited by the Germans or their accomplices during that war.

"Pius XII did not keep quiet because he did not know what was happening: he knew of the gravity of the situation from the start, maybe even better than any other head of state in the world..." (pp.12 ss).

There is better still! The Vatican gave a helping hand to the carrying out of these crimes by "lending" some of its prelates to be made into pro-nazi agents; these were Messeigneurs Hlinka and Tiso. It also sent to Croatia its own legate—R.P. Marcone—who, with the help of Monseigneur Stepinac, had to keep an eye on the "work" of Ante Pavelitch and his oustachis. Wherever we look, the same "edifying" spectacle presents itself.

As we have already shown, it is not only this monstrous partiality and complacency that we object to. The Vatican's unpardonable crime lies in the decisive part played in the bringing about of two world wars.(3)

Listen to what Mr. Alfred Grosser, professor at the Institute of political studies of Paris University, says:

"The very concise book of Guenter Lewy "The Catholic Church and nazi Germany" (New York McGrawhill-1964) says that all the documents agree to show the Catholic Church cooperating with the Hitler regime...

"In July 1933, when the Concordat forced the bishops to swear an oath of allegiance to the nazi government, the concentration camps were already open... the reading of quotations compiled by Guenter Lewy proves this overwhelmingly. We find in them some crushing evidence from personalities such as Cardinal Faulhaber and the Jesuit Gustav Gundlach."(4)

---

(3) E. Paris, "The Vatican against Europe" (P.T.S. London)

Only empty words can be found to oppose this stack of evidence which proves the culpability of the Vatican and its Jesuits. Their help was the main force behind the lightning rise of Hitler who, together with Mussolini and Franco, who in spite of appearances were but war pawns manipulated by the Vatican and its Jesuits.

The thurifers of the Vatican must bow their heads in shame when an Italian member of parliament cries out: "The pope's hands are dripping with blood". (Speech by Laura Diaz, member of parliament for Livourne, delivered at Ortona on the 15th of April 1946), or when the students of Cardiff University College choose as the theme for a conference: "Should the pope be brought to trial as a war criminal?" ("La Croix", 2nd of April 1946).

* * *

Here is how pope John XXIII expressed himself when referring to the Jesuits: "Persevere, dear sons, in the activities which have already brought you well-known merits.. In that way, you will gladden the Church and will grow with untiring ardour: the path of the just is as the light of dawn... "May that light grow and illuminate the moulding of the adolescents... In that way, you will help to carry out our spiritual wishes and concerns... "We give our Apostolic Blessing with all our heart to your Superior General, to you and your coadjutors, and to all the members of the Society of Jesus". And from pope Paul VI:(5).

"From the time of its restoration, this religious family enjoys the sweet help of God, and has enriched herself very quickly with great progress... the members of the Society have accomplished many important deeds, all to the glory of God and for the benefit of the Catholic religion... the church needs soldiers of Christ with valour, armed with a dauntless faith, ready to confront difficulties... that is why we have great hope in the help your activity will bring... may the new era find the Society on the same honorable path it trod in the past...

"Given in Rome, near St. Peter, on the 20th of August 1964, during his second year as pope".(6)

• • •

On the 29th of October 1965, "l'Osservatore Romano" announced: "The Very Reverend Father Arrupe, General of the Jesuits, celebrated Holy Mass for the Ecumenical Council on the 16th of October 1965".

(4) Saul Friedlander: "Pie XII et le IIIe Reich", (Ed. du Seuil, Paris 1964)

(5) L'Osservatore Romano, 20th of October 1961.

(6) L'Osservatore Romano, 18th of September 1964.

Here is the apotheosis of "Papal ethics": the simultaneous announcement of a project to beatify Pius XII and John XXIII. "To strengthen ourselves in our striving for a spiritual renewal, we have decided to start the canonical proceedings for the beatification of these two great and godly pontiffs who are so dear to us".(7)

Pope Paul VI

* * *

May this book reveal to all those who read it the true nature of this Roman Master, whose words are as "mellifluous" as his secret actions are ferocious.

---

(7) L'Osservatore Romano, 26th of November 1965.

Section I

The Founding of the Jesuit Order

Chapter 1

Ignatius of Loyola

The founder of the Society of Jesus, the Spanish Basque don Inigo Lopez de Recalde, was born at the castle of Loyola, in the province of Guipuzcoa, in 1491. He was one of the strangest types of monk-soldier ever engendered by the Catholic world; of all the founders of religious orders, he may be the one whose personality has left the strongest mark on the mind and behaviour of his disciples and successors. This may be the reason for that "familiar look" or "trade-mark", a fact which goes as far as physical resemblance. Mr. Folliet disputes this fact (1), but many documents prove the permanence of a "Jesuit" type through the ages. The most amusing of these testimonies is found at the Guimet museum; on the golden background of a 16th century screen, a Japanese artist portrayed, with all the humour of his race, the landing of the Portuguese, and of the sons of Loyola in particular, on the Nipponese islands. The amazement of this lover of nature and bright colours is obvious in the way he depicted those long, black shadows with their mournful faces on which is congealed all the arrogance of the fanatic ruler. The likeness between the work of the oriental artist of the 16th century and our Daumier of 1830 is there for all to see.

Like many other saints, Inigo—who later Romanised his name and became Ignatius—looked far from being the one predestined to enlighten his contemporaries (2). His stormy youth was filled with mistakes and even "heinous crimes". A police report said he was "treacherous, brutal, vindictive". All his biographers admit that he yielded to none of his boon companions regarding the violence of the instincts, then a common thing. "An unruly and conceited soldier", said one of his confidants—"he led a disorderly life as far as women, gambling and duels were concerned", added his secretary Polanco (3). All this is related to us by one of his spiritual sons, R.P. Rouquette, who tried somewhat to explain and excuse this hot temper which was eventually turned "ad majorem Dei gloriam". (To the greater glory of God).

---

(1) "La Croix", 31 st of July 1956.

(2) Like Saint Augustine, Saint Francis of Assisi and many others.

As is the case for many heroes of the Roman Catholic Church, a violent physical blow was necessary to change his personality. He had been pageboy to the treasurer of Castille until his master's disgrace. Then he became a gentleman in the service of the Viceroy of Navarre; having lived the life of a courtier until then, the young man started the life of a soldier by defending Pampeluna against the French commanded by the Count de Foix. The wound which decided his future life was inflicted during that siege. A leg broken by a bullet, he was taken by the victorious French to his brother Martin Garcia, at the castle of Loyola. Now starts the martyrdom of surgery without anaesthesia, through which he had to go a second time as the work had not been done properly. His leg was broken again and reset. In spite of all this, Ignatius was left with a limp. One can understand that he only needed an experience such as this to cause him a nervous breakdown. The "gift of tears" which was then bestowed on him "in abundance"—and in which his pious biographers see a favour from on high—is maybe only the result of his highly emotional nature, henceforth to affect him more and more.

His sole entertainment, while lying wounded and in pain, was the reading of the "Life of Christ" and the "Life of the Saints", the only books found in the castle.

As he was practically uneducated and still affected by that terrible shock, the anguish of Christ's passion and the martyrdom of the saints had an indelible impact on him; this obsession led the crippled warrior on to the road of apostolate.

"He put the books to one side and day-dreamed. A clear case of the wakeful dream, this was a continuation into the adult years of the imaginary game of the child... if we let it invade the psychic realm, the result is neurosis and surrender of the will; that which is real takes second place!..."(4)

At first sight, this diagnosis seems hardly to apply to the founder of such an active order, nor to other "great mystics" and creators of religious societies, all of whom had apparently great capacities for organization. But we find that all of them are unable to resist their over-active imaginations and, for them, the impossible becomes possible.

Here is what the same author says on this subject: "I want to point out the obvious outcome of the practice of mysticism by someone possessing a brilliant intelligence. The weak mind indulging in mysticism is on dangerous ground, but the intelligent mystic presents a far greater danger, us his intellect works in a wider and deeper way... When the myth takes over from the reality in an active intelligence, it becomes mere fanaticism; an infection of the will which suffers from a partial enlargement or distortion".(5)

---

(3) R.P. Jesuit Robert Rouquette, "Saint Ignace de Loyola" (Ed. Albin Michel, Paris 1944, p.6).

(4) R.P. Jesuit Robert Rouquette, op.cit., p.9.

Ignatius of Loyola was a first-class example of that "active mysticism" and "distortion of the will". Nevertheless, the transformation of the gentlemen-warrior into the "general" of the most militant order in the Roman Church was very slow; there were many faltering steps before he found his true vocation. It is not our intention to follow him through all those different stages. Let us recall the main points: in the spring of 1522, he left the ancestral castle, with his mind made up to become a saint similar to those whose edifying exploits he had been reading about in that big "gothic" volume. Besides, did not the Madona herself appear to him one night, holding in her arms the child Jesus? After a thorough confession at the monastry of Montserrat, he was planning to go to Jerusalem. The plague was rife in Barcelona and, as all maritime traffic had stopped, he had to stay at Manresa for nearly a year. There, he spent his time in prayers, orisons, long fasts, flagellating himself, practicing all the forms of maceration, and never failing to appear before the "tribunal for penance", even though his confession at Montserrat had apparently lasted three whole days; such a thorough confession would have been sufficient to a less scrupulous sinner. All this depicts quite clearly the mental and nervous state of the man. At last delivered from that obsession of sin by deciding it was only a trick of Satan, he devoted himself entirely to the varied and plentiful visions which were haunting his feverish mind.

"It is because of a vision", says H. Boehmer, "that he started eating meat again; it is a whole series of visions that revealed to him the mysteries of the Catholic dogma and helped him to truly live it: in that way, he meditates upon the Trinity under the shape of a musical instrument with three cords; the mystery of the creation of the world through "something" hazy and light coming out of a ray of sunshine; the miraculous descent of Christ into the Eucharist as flashes of light entering the consecrated water, when the priest held it up while praying; the human nature of Christ and the holy Virgin under the form of a dazzling white body; and finally Satan as a serpentine and shimmering shape similar to a multitude of sparkling and mysterious eyes (6)." Is not this the start of the well-known Jesuitic image-making?

---

(5) Dr Legrain, "Le Mysticisme et la folie" (Ed. de l'Idee Libre, Herblay (S.-et-O.) 1931, pp. 14-16).

Mr. Boehmer adds that the deep meaning of the dogmas was revealed to him, as a special favour from on-high, through transcendental intuitions. "Many mysteries of Faith and science became suddenly clear to him and later he pretended to have learned more in those short moments than during the whole of his studies; however, he was never able to explain what these mysteries were which suddenly became clear to him. There was only a hazy recollection left, a feeling of something miraculous as if, at that moment, he had become "another man with another intelligence".(7)

All this may be the result of a nervious disorder and can be identified with what happens to smokers of opium and eaters of hashish: that enlargement or extension of the ego, that illusion of soaring up beyond what is real, a flashing sensation leaving only a dazed recollection.

Blissful visions and illuminations were constant companions of this mystic throughout his life.

"He never doubted the reality of these revelations. He chased Satan with a stick as he would have done a mad dog; he talked to the Holy Spirit as one does to another person actually; he asked for the approval of God, the Trinity and the Madonna on all his projects and would burst into tears of joy when they appeared to him. On those occasions, he had a foretaste of celestial bliss; the heavens were open to him, and the Godhead was visible and perceptible to him.(8)

Is not this the perfect case of an hallucinated person? It will be this same perceptible and visible Godhead that the spiritual sons of Loyola will constantly offer to the world—not only for political reasons, leaning on and flattering the deep-rooted inclination in the heart of man for idolatry— but also by conviction, having been well and truly indoctrinated. From the start, mediaeval mysticism has prevailed in the Society of Jesus; it is still the great animator, in spite of its readily assumed worldly, intellectual and learned aspects. Its basic axiom is: "All things to all men". The arts, literature, science and even philosophy have been mere means or nets to catch souls, like the easy indulgences granted by its casuists and for which laxity they were so often reproved. To this Order, there is not a realm where human weakness cannot be worked upon, to incite the spirit and will to surrender and go back to a more childish and restful devotion. So they work for the bringing about of the "kingdom of God" according to their own ideal: a great flock under the Holy Father's crozier. That learned men could have such an anachronic ideal seems very strange, yet it is undeniably so and the confirmation of an oft-disregarded fact: the pre-eminence of the emotions in the life of the spirit. Besides, Kant said that every philosophy is

---

(6) and (7) H. Boehmer, professor at the University of Bonn, "Les Jesuites" (Armand Colin, Paris 1910, pp. 12-13).

(8) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p. 14.

but the expression of the philosopher's temperament or character.

Apart from individual methods, the Jesuitic "temperament" seems more or less uniform amongst them. "A mixture of piety and diplomacy, asceticism and worldly wisdom, mysticism and cold calculation; as was Loyola's character, so is the trade-mark of this Order".(9).

In the first place, every Jesuit chose this particular Order because of his natural dispositions; but he really becomes a "son" of Loyola after rigorous tests and systematic training lasting no less than fourteen years.

In that way, the paradox of this Order has continued for four hundred years: an Order which endeavours to be "intellectual" but, simultaneously, has always been, within the Roman Church and society, the champion of the strictest disposition.

---

(9) J. Huber, professor of catholic theology in Munich, "Les Jesuites" (Sandoz et Fischbacher, Paris 1875, p. 127).

Chapter 2

The Spiritual Exercises

When the time came at last for Ignatius to leave Monresa, he couldn't foresee his destiny, but the anxiety concerning his own salvation was not his main concern any more; it is as a missionary, and not as a mere pilgrim, that he left for the Holy Land in March 1523. He arrived in Jerusalem on the 1st of September, after many adventures, only to leave again soon after, on the orders of the Franciscan's provincial who was not desirious to see the precarious peace between Christians and Turks endangered by an untimely proselytism.

The disappointed missionary passed through Venice, Genoa, and Barcelona on his way to the University of Alcala where he started theological studies; it is there also that his "cure of souls" amongst voluntary listeners began.

"In these conventicles, the most common manifestations of piety amongst the fair sex were fainting fits; by that, we realise how hard he applied his religious methods, and how such a fervent propaganda would soon arouse the curiosity and then the suspicion of the inquisitors... "In April 1527, the Inquisition put Ignatius in prison to try him on the grounds of heresy. The inquiry examined those peculiar incidents amongst his devotees, the strange assertions of the accused concerning the wonderful power his chastity conferred on him, and his bizarre theories on the difference between mortal and venial sins; these theories had striking affinities with those of Jesuit casuists of the subsequent epoch.(10)

Released but forbidden to hold meetings, Ignatius left for Salamanque and soon started the same activities. Similar suspicions amongst the inquisitors led to imprisonment again. Release was only on condition of desisting from such conduct. Thus it was, he journeyed to Paris to continue his studies at the college of Montaigu. His efforts to endoctrinate his fellow-students according to his peculiar methods brought him into trouble again with the Inquisition. Becoming more prudent,he met with just six of his college friends, two of which will become highly esteemed recruits: Salmeron and Lainez.

---

(10) H. Boehmer, op.cit. pp.20-21, 25.

What did he have in himself that so powerfully attracted young people to an old student? It was his ideal and a little charm he carried on himself: a small book, in fact a very minute book which is, in spite of its smallness, amongst those which have influenced the fate of humanity. This volume has been printed so many times that the number of copies is unknown; it was also the object of more than 400 commentaries. It is the textbook of the Jesuits and at the same time the resume of the long inner development of their master: the "Spiritual Exercises".(11)

Mr Boehmer says later:

"Ignatius understood more clearly than any other leader of men who preceded him that the best way to raise a man to a certain ideal is to become master of his imagination. We "imbue into him spiritual forces which he would find very difficult to eliminate later", forces more lasting than all the best principles and doctrines; these forces can come up again to the surface, sometimes after years of not even mentioning them, and become so imperative that the will finds itself unable to oppose any obstacle, and has to follow their irresistible impulse".(12)

Thus all the "truths" of the Catholic dogma will have to be, not only meditated, but lived and felt by the one who devotes himself to these "Exercises", with the help of a "director". In other words, he will have to see and relive the mystery with the greatest possible intensity. The candidate's sensitiveness becomes impregnated with these forces whose persistence in his memory, and even more so in his subconscious, will be as strong as the effort he made to evoke and assimilate them. Beside sight, the other senses such as hearing, smell, taste and touch will play their part. In short, it is mere controlled auto-suggestion. The angels' rebellion, Adam and Eve driven out of Paradise, God's tribunal, the evangelical scenes and phases of the Passion are, as one would say, relived in front of the candidate. Sweet and blissful scenes alternate with the most sombre ones at a skilfully arranged rythm. No need to say that Hell has the prominent part in that "magic lantern show", with its lake of fire into which the damned are thrown, the awful concert of screams, the atrocious strench of sulphur and burning flesh. Yet Christ is always there to sustain the visionary who doesn't know how to thank him for not having thrown him already into hell to pay for his past sins.

Here is what Edgar Quinet wrote:

"Not only visions are pre-arranged, but also sighs, inhalings, breathing are noted down; the pauses and intervals of silence are written down like on a music sheet. In case you do not believe me, I will quote: "The third way of praying, by measuring the words and periods of silence". This particular manner of praying consists of leaving out some words between every breath; and a little further: "Make sure to keep equal gaps between every breath and choking sob and word". (Et paria anhelituum ac vocum interstitia observet), which means that the man, being inspired or not, becomes just a machine which must sigh, sob, groan, cry, shout or catch one's breath at the exact moment and in the order which experience shows to be the most profitable". (12a)

---

(11) and (12) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.25, 34-35.

It is understandable that after four weeks devoted to these intensive Exercises, with a director as his only companion, the candidate would be ripe for the subsequent training and breaking.

This is what Quinet has to say when referring to the creator of such an hallucinatory method:

"Do you know what distinguishes him from all the ascetics of the past? The fact that he could observe and analyse himself logically and coldly in that state of rapture, while for all the others even the idea of reflection was impossible.

Imposing on his disciples actions which, to him, were spontaneous, he needed just thirty days to break, with this method, the will and reasoning, in the manner in which a rider breaks his horse. He only needed thirty days "triginta dies", to subdue a soul. Note that Jesuitism expanded together with modern inquisition: while the inquisition dislocated the body, the spiritual Exercises broke up the thoughts under Loyola's machine".(12b)

In any case, one could not examine his "spiritual" life too deeply, even without the honour of being a Jesuit; Loyola's methods are to be recommended to the faithful and ecclesiastics in particular, as we are reminded by commentators such as R.P. Pinard de la Boullaye, author of "Mental prayer for all"; inspired by saint Ignatius, this very valuable aid for the soul would, we think, be more explicit if the title read "alienation" instead of "prayer".

(12a) Michelet et Guinet: "Des Jesuites", (Hachette, Paulin, Paris 1845, pp.185-187). (12b) Michelet et Guinet: "Des Jesuites", (Hachette, Paulin, Paris, 1845, pp.185-187).

Section 1

Chapter 3

The founding of the Company

"The Society of Jesus" was constituted on Assumption Day in 1534, in the chapel of Notre-Dame de Montmartre.

Ignatius was then forty-four years old. After communion, the animator and his companions vowed to go to the Holy Land, as soon as their studies were finished, to convert the infidels. But the following year found them in Rome where the pope, who was then organising a crusade against the lurks with the German Emperor and the Republic of Venice, showed them how impossible their project was because of it. So Ignatius and his companions dedicated themselves to missionary work in Christian lands; in Venice, his apostolate roused again the suspicions of the Inquisition. The Constitution of the Company of Jesus was at last drafted and approved in Rome, by Paul III, in 1540, and the Jesuits put themselves at the disposition of the pope, promising him unconditional obedience, Teaching, confession, preaching and charitable work were the field of action for this new Order, but foreign missions were not excluded as, in 1541, Francis Xavier and two companions left Lisbon to go and evangelise the Far East. In 1546, the political side of their career was launched, when the pope chose Lainez and Salmeron to represent him at the Council of Trent in the capacity of "pontifical theologians".

Mr Boehmer writes:

"Then, the Order was employed by the pope only on a temporary basis. But it performed its functions with so much promptitude and zeal that, already under Paul III, it had implanted itself very firmly into all chosen kinds of activities and won the confidence of the Curia for all time".(12d)

This confidence was fully justified; the Jesuits, and Lainez in particular, together with their devoted friend Cardinal Morone, became the cunning and untiring champions of pontifical authority and intangibility of the

---

(12d) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.47-48.

dogma, during the three sessions of that Council ending in 1562. By their clever manoeuvres and dialectics, they succeeded in defeating the opposition and all "heretic" claims including marriage of priests, communion with the two elements, use of the vernacular in services and, especially, reform of the papacy. Only the reform of convents was retained on the agenda. Lainez himself, by a forceful counter-attack, upheld pontifical infallibility which was promulgated three centuries later by the Vatican Council. (13) The Holy See emerged strengthened from the crisis where it nearly foundered, thanks to the steadfast actions of the Jesuits. The terms chosen by Paul III to describe this new Order in his Bull of Authorisation were then amply justified: "Regimen Ecclesiae militantis".

The fighting spirit developed more and more as time went on as, beside foreign missions, the activities of Loyola's sons started to concentrate on the souls of men, especially amongst ruling classes. Politics are their main field of action, as all the efforts of these "directors" concentrate on one aim: the submission of the world to the papacy, and to attain this the "heads" must be conquered first. And to realise this ideal? Two very important weapons: to be the confessors of the mighty and those in high places and the education of their children. In that way, the present will be safe while the future is prepared.

The Holy See soon realised the strength this new Order would bring. At first, the number of its members had been limited to sixty, but this restriction was promptly lifted. When Ignatius died, in 1556, his sons were working amongst pagans in India, China, Japan, the New World, but also and especially in Europe: France, Southern and Western Germany, where they fought against the "heresy", in Spain, Portugal, Italy and even England, getting in by way of Ireland. Their history, full of vicissitudes, will be of a "Roman" network they will constantly try to spread over the world, whose links will be forever torn and mended.

---

(13) Vatican Council (1870).

The Spirit of the Order

"Let us not forget, writes the Jesuit Rouquette, that, historically, "ultramontanism" has been the practical affirmation of "universalism"... This necessary universalism would be an empty word if it did not result in a practical cohesion or obedience of Christianity: this is why Ignatius wanted this team to be at the disposition of the pope... and be the champion of catholic unity, unity which can be assured only through an effective submission to Christ's vicar".(13a)

The Jesuits wanted to impose this monarchical absolutism on the Roman Church and they maintained it in civil society as they had to look upon the sovereigns as temporal representatives of the Holy Father, true head of Christianity; as long as those monarchs were entirely docile to their common lord, the Jesuits were their most faithful supporters. On the other hand, if these princes rebelled, they found in the Jesuits their worst enemies.

In Europe, wherever Rome's interests required the people to rise against their king, or if these temporal princes had taken decisions embarrassing for the Church, the Curia knew she would not find more able, cunning, or daring outside the Society of Jesus when it came to intrigue, propaganda or even open rebellion".(14)

We have seen, through the spirit of the "Exercises", how the founder of this Company was behind his time in his simplistic mysticism, ecclesiastic discipline and, generally speaking, his conception of subordination. The "Constitutions" and "Exercises", fundamentals to this system, leave us without any doubts on that subject. No matter what his disciples may say—especially today as modern ideas on this subject are totally different—

(13a) R.P. Jesuit Rouquette, op.cit. p.44.

(14) Rene Fulop-Muler: "Les Jesuites et le secret de leur puissance" (Librairie Plon, Paris 1933. p.61).

obedience has a very special place, in fact incontestably the first, in the summary of the Order's rules. Mr. Folliet may pretend to see in it nothing more than "religious obedience", necessary to any congregation; R.P. Rouquette writes boldly: "Far from being a diminution of man, this intelligent and willing obedience is the height of freedom... a liberation from oneself s bondage..."; one only has to read those texts to perceive the extreme, if not monstrous character of this submission of soul and spirit imposed to the Jesuits, making them always docile instruments in their superiors' hands, and even more from their very beginning the natural ennemies of any kind of liberty.

The famous "perinde ac cadaver" (as a corpse in the undertaker's hands), can be found in all "spiritual literature", according to Mr. Folliet, and even in the East, in the Haschichins' Constitution; the Jesuits are to be in the hands of their superiors "as a staff obeying every impulse; as a ball of wax which can be shaped and stretched in any direction; as a small crucifix being lifted and moved at will"; these pleasant formulas are none the less very enlightening. Remarks and explanations from the creator of this Order leave us without any doubt as to their true meaning. Besides, amongst the Jesuits, not only the will, but also reasoning and even moral scruple, must be sacrificed to the primordial virtue of obedience which is, according to Borgia, "the strongest rampart of Society".

"Let us be convinced that all is well and right when the superior commands it", wrote Loyola. And again: "Even if God gave you an animal without sense for master, you will not hesitate to obey him, as master and guide, because God ordained it to be so."

And something even better: the Jesuit must see in his superior not a fallible man, but Christ Himself. J. Huber, professor of Catholic theology in Munich and author of one of the most important works on the Jesuits, wrote: "Here is a proven fact: the "Constitutions" repeat five hundred times that one must see Christ in the person of the General".(15)

The discipline of the Order, assimilated so often to that of the army, is then nothing compared to the reality. "Military obedience is not the equivalent of Jesuitic obedience; the latter is more extensive as it gets hold of the whole man and is not satisfied like the other, with an exterior act, but requires the sacrifice of the will and laying aside of one's own judgment".(16)

Ignatius himself wrote in his letter to the Portuguese Jesuits: "We must see black as white, if the Church says so".

Such is this "height of freedom" and "liberation from one's own bondage", praised earlier on by R.P. Rouquette. Indeed, the Jesuit is truly

(15) J. Huber. "Les Jesuites" (Sandoz et Fischbacher, Paris 1875, pp. 71 & 73).

(16) J. Huber: "Les Jesuites" (Sandoz et Fischbacher, Paris 1875, pp. 71 & 73).

liberated from himself as he is totally subjected to his masters; any doubt or scruple would be imputed to him as sin.

Mr. Boehmer writes:

"In the additions to the "Constitutions", the superiors are advised to command the novices, as God did with Abraham, things apparently criminal, to prove them; but they must proportion these temptations to each one's strength. It is not difficult to imagine what could be the results of such an education".(17)

The Order's life of ups and downs—there is not one country from which it wasn't expelled—testifies that these dangers were recognised by all governments, even the most Catholic. By introducing men so blindly devoted to their cause to teaching among the higher classes, the Company—champion of universalism, therefore ultra-montanism—was inevitably recognised as a threat to civil authority, as the activity of the Order, by the mere fact of their vocation, turned more and more towards politics.

In a parallel way, what we call the Jesuitic spirit was developing amongst its members. Nevertheless, the founder, inspired mainly by the needs of foreign and home "missions", had not neglected skilfulness. He wrote in his "Sententiae asceticae": "A clever carefulness together with a mediocre purity is better than a greater holiness coupled with a less perfect skilfulness. A good shepherd of souls must know how to ignore many things and pretend not to understand them. Once he is master of the wills, he will be able wisely to lead his students wherever he may choose. People are entirely absorbed by passing interests, so we must not speak to them too pointedly about their souls: it would be throwing the hook without the bait".

Even the desired countenance of Loyola's sons was emphatically stated: "They must hold their heads slightly down, without bending it to the left or right; they must not look up, and when they speak to someone, they are not to look them straight in the eyes so as to see them only indirectly..."(18)

Loyola's successors retained this lesson well in their memory, and applied it very extensively in the pursuit of their plans.

(17) Gabriel Monod, in Introduction aux "Jesuites", de H. Boehmer, p. XVI (Armand Colin, Paris) (18) Pierre Dominique: "La politique des Jesuites" (Grasset, Paris 1955, p.37).

Chapter 5

The privileges of the Company

After 1558, Lainez, the subtle tactician of the Council of Trent, was made general of the Congregation with the power to organise the Order as he was inspired. The "Declarations" which he himself composed with Salmeron, were added to the "Constitutions" to form a commentary; they accentuated even more the despotism of the general elected for life. An admonitor procurator and assistants, residing in Rome too, will help him generally to administer the Order divided then into five congregations: Italy, Germany France, Spain, England and America. These congregations were themselves divided into Provinces grouping the different establishments of the Order. Only the admonitor (or overseer) and assistants are nominated by the Congregation. The general appoints all other officials, promulgates the ordinances which are not to modify the Constitutions, administers the wealth of the Order according to his own wishes and directs its activities for which he is responsible to the pope only.

To this militia so tightly knit in the hand of its chief and which needs the greatest autonomy to make its actions effective, the pope concedes privileges which may seem exorbitant to other religious Orders.

By their Constitutions, the Jesuits were exempt from the cloistered rule which applied to monastic life in general. In fact, they are monks living "in the world" and, outwardly, nothing distinguishes them from the secular clergy. But, contrary to this and other religious congregations, they are not subjected to the bishop's authority. As early as 1545, a bull of Paul II enabled them to preach, hear confession, dispense the sacraments, and say mass; in short, exercise their ministry without having to refer to the bishop The solemnisation of marriages is the only thing they are not allowed to perform.

They have the power to give absolution, change vows for others which are easier to fulfil, or even cancel them.

Mr Gaston Bally writes:

"The general's power concerning absolution and dispensations is even wider. He can lift all punishment inflicted on the members of the Society before or after them entering the Order, absolve all their sins, even the sin of heresy and schism, the falsification of apostolic writings, etc... "The general absolves, in person or through a delegate, all those who are under his obedience, of the unhappy state arising from excommunication, suspension or interdict, provided these censures were not inflicted for excesses so enormous that others, beside the papal tribunal, knew about them.

He also absolves the irregularity issuing, from bigamy, injuries done to others, murder, assassination... as long as these wicked deeds were not publicly known and the cause of a scandal".(19)

Finally, Gregory XIII bestowed on the Company the right to deal in commerce and banking, a right it made use of extensively later on.

These dispensations and unprecedented powers were fully guaranteed to them.

"The popes called even upon princes and kings to defend these privileges; they threatened with the great excommunication "latae sententiae" all those who would try to infringe them. In 1574, a bull of Pius V gave the general the right to restore these privileges to their original scope, against all tempts to alter or curtail them, even if such curtailments were authoritatively documented by papal revocation... By granting the Jesuits such exorbitant privileges which run counter to the Church's antiquated constitution, the papacy wanted, not only to supply them with powerful weapons to fight the "Infidels", but especially use them as a bodyguard to defend her own unrestricted power in the Church and against the Church". "To preserve the spiritual and temporal supremacy they usurped during the middle ages, the popes sold the Church to the Order of Jesus and, in consequence, surrendered themselves into their hands... If the papacy was supported by the Jesuits, the whole existence of the Jesuits depended on the spiritual and temporal supremacy of the papacy. In that way, the interests of both parties were intimately bound together".(20)

But this select cohort needed secret auxiliaries to dominate civil society: this role fell on those affiliated to the Company called Jesuits. "Many important people were connected in that way with the Society: the emperors Ferdinand II and Ferdinand III, Sigismond III, king of Poland, who had officially belonged to the Company; Cardinal Infant, a duke of Savoy. And these were not the least useful".(21)

(19) Gaston Bally: "Les Jesuites" (Chambery, Imprimerie Nouvelle, 1902, pp.11-13). (20) Gaston Bally, op.cit., pp.9-10, 16-17. (21) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.37.

It is the same today; the 33,000 official members of the Society operate all over the world in the capacity of her personnel, officers of a truly secret army containing in its ranks heads of political parties, high ranking officials, generals, magistrates, physicians, Faculty professors, etc., all of them striving to bring about, in their own sphere, "l'Opus Dei", God's work, in reality the plans of the papacy.

Section II

The Jesuits in Europe during the 16th and 17th centuries

Chapter 1

Italy, Portugal, Spain

"France", wrote Mr. Boehmer, "is the cradle of the Society of Jesus, but in Italy it received its programme and constitution. Therefore in Italy it first took root and from there it spread abroad".(1)
The author notes the increasing number of colleges and Jesuit academies (128 and 1680); "but", says he, "the history of Italian civilisation during the 16h and 17th centuries shows the results of it most strikingly. If a well-learned Italy thus embraced again the faith and ordinances of the Church, received a new zeal for asceticism and missions, composed again pious poems and hymns for the Church, dedicated conscientiously the painters' brushes and sculptors' chisels to exalt the religious ideal, is it not because the cultivated classes were instructed in Jesuits' colleges and confessionals?"(2)

Gone were "childish simplicity, joy, vivacity and the simple love of nature..."
The Jesuits' pupils are far too clerical, devout, absorbed to preserve these qualities. They are taken up with ecstatic visions and illuminations; they literally get drunk with the paintings of frightful mortifications and the martyrs' atrocious torments; they need the pomp, glittering and theatrical. From the end of the 16th century on, Italian art and literature reproduce faithfully this moral transformation... The restlessness, the ostentation, the shocking claim which characterise the creations of that period promote a feeling of repulsion instead of sympathy for the beliefs they are supposed to interpret and glorify".(3)

It is the mark sui generis of the Company. This love for the distorted, finicky, glittering, theatrical could seem strange amongst mystics formed by the "Spiritual Exercises" if we did not detect in it this essentially

---

(1) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.82.
(2) and (3) Boehmer, op.cit., p.82-83.

Jesuitical aim to impress the mind. It is an application of the maxim: "The end justifies the means" applied with perseverance by the Jesuits in the arts, literature as well as politics and morals.

Italy had been hardly touched by the Reformation. Nevertheless, the Waldenses, who had survived since the middle ages in spite of persecutions and established themselves in the north and south of the peninsula, joined the Calvinist Church in 1532. On a report from the Jesuit Possevino, Emmanuel Philibert of Savoy launched another bloody persecution against his "heretic" subjects in 1561. The same thing happened in Calabria, at Casal di San Sisto and Guardia Fiscale. "The Jesuits were implicated in these massacres; they were busy converting the victims..."(4)

As for Father Possevino: "... he followed the Catholic army as their chaplain, and recommended the extermination by fire of the heretic pastors as a necessary and holy act".(5)

The Jesuits were all powerful in Parma, at the court of the Farnese, as well as in Naples during the 16th and 17th centuries. But in Venice, where they had been loaded with favours, they were banished on the 14th of May 1606, "as the most faithful servants and spokesmen of the pope..."

They were nevertheless allowed to return in 1656, but their influence in the Republic was to be from now on but a shadow of the one they had in the past.

Portugal was a choice country for the Order. "Already under John III (1521-1559), it was the most powerful religious community in the kingdom".(6) Its influence grew even more after the revolution of 1640 which put the Braganza on the throne. "Under the first king of the house of Braganza, Father Fernandez was a member of the government and, under the minority of Alphonse VI, the counsellor most heeded by the regent Queen Louise. Father de Ville was successful in overthrowing Alphonse VI in 1667, and Father Emmanuel Fernandez was made a deputy to the "Cortes" in 1667 by the new King Peter II... In spite of the fact that the Fathers were not fulfilling any public duty in the kingdom, they were more powerful in Portugal than in any other country. Not only were they spiritual advisers to all the royal family, but the king and his minister consulted them in all important circumstances. From one of their own testimonies, we know that not one place in the administration of the State and Church could be obtained without their consent; so much so that the clergy, the high classes and the people contended with each other to win their favours and approval. Foreign politics were also under their influence. Any sensible man would see that such a state of affairs was unprofitable to the good of the kingdom".(7)

---

(4) J. Huber, op.cit., p. 165.

(5) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.89.

(6) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.85, 86, 87, 88.

In fact, we can see the results by the decadent state into which this unfortunate land fell. All the energy and perspicacity of the marquess of Pombal, in the middle of the 18th century, were needed to tear Portugal out of the Order's deadly grip.

In Spain, the Order's penetration was slower. The higher clergy and the Dominicans opposed it for a long time. The sovereigns themselves, Charles V and Philip II, while accepting their services, distrusted these soldiers of the pope and feared encroachments on their authority. But, with much craftiness, the Order eventually defeated this resistance. "During the 17th century, they are all-powerful in Spain, among the high classes and at Court. Even Father Neidhart, former German cavalry officer, fully governed the kingdom as Counsellor of State, prime minister and Grand Inquisitor... In Spain as in Portugal, the kingdom's ruin coincided with the rise of the Order..."(8)

This is what Edgar Quinet had to say about it:

"Wherever a dynasty dies, I can see, rising up and standing behind her, a kind of bad genie, one of those dark figures that are the confessors, gently and paternally luring her towards death..."(9)

Indeed, one cannot impute Spain's decadence to this Order only. "Nevertheless, it is true that the Company of Jesus, together with the Church and other religious orders, hastened her fall; the richer the Order became, the poorer Spain was, so much so that when Charles II died, the State's coffers did not even contain the necessary amount to pay for 10,000 masses usually said for the salvation of a deceased monarch's soul."(10)

---

(7) and (8) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.85, 86, 87, 88.

(9) Michelet et Quinet, op.cit., p.259.

(10) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.85, 86, 87, 88.

Chapter 2

Germany

"It was not southern Europe, but central Europe: France, Holland, Germany, Poland, which were the site for that historical struggle between Catholicism and Protestantism. So these countries were the main fields of battle for the Society of Jesus." (11)

The situation was particularly grave in Germany. "Not only notorious pessimists, but also thinking and wise Catholics considered the old church's cause in all German lands as almost lost. In fact, even in Austria and Bohemia, the break with Rome was so general that the Protestants could reasonably hope to conquer Austria within a few decades. Then how is it this change did not take place and the country was divided into two sections instead? The Catholic party, at the close of the 16th century, had no hesitation in answering this question, for it always acknowledged that the Witelsbach, Habsburg and Jesuits were responsible for this happy turn of events."(12)

Rene Fulop-Miller wrote about the Jesuits' role in these events: "The Catholic cause could hope for a real success only if the Fathers were able to influence and guide the princes, at all times and in all circumstances. The confessionals offered the Jesuits the means to secure a lasting political influence, therefore an effectual action" .(13)

In Bavaria, the young duke Albert V, son of a zealous Catholic and educated at Ingolstadt, the old Catholic city, called on the Jesuits to combat effectively the heresy:

"On the 7th of July 1556, 8 Fathers and 12 Jesuit teachers entered Ingolstadt. It was the start of a new era for Bavaria... the State itself received a new Seal.... the Roman Catholic conceptions directed the politics of princes and the behaviour of the high classes. But this new spirit got hold

(11) and (12) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.89, 104, ,112, 114. (13) Rene Fulop-Miller, op.cit., II, pp.98, 102.

of the higher classes only. It did not gain the hearts of ordinary people... Nevertheless, under the iron discipline of the State and the restored Church, they again became devout Catholics, docile, fanatic, and intolerant towards any heresy..."

"It may seem excessive to attribute such prodigious virtues and actions to a mere handful of strangers. Yet, in these circumstances, their force was in inverse ratio to their numbers and they were immediately effective as no obstacles were met. Loyola's emissaries won the country's heart and mind from the start... From the next generation on, Ingolstadt became the perfect type of the german Jesuit city".(14) One can judge the state of mind the Fathers introduced to this stronghold of faith by reading the following:

"The Jesuit Mayrhofer of Ingolstadt taught in his "Preacher's mirror": "We will not be judged if we demand the killing of Protestants, any more than we would by asking for the death penalty on thieves, murderers, counterfeiters and revolutionaries."(15)

The successors of Albert V, and especially Maximilian I (1597-1651), completed his work. But Albert V already was conscientious in his "duty" of assuring his subjects' "salvation".

"As soon as the Fathers arrived in Bavaria, his attitude towards Protestants and those favourable to them became more severe. From 1563 on, he pitilessly expelled all recalcitrants, and had no mercy for the anabaptists who had to suffer drownings, fire, prison and chains, all of which were praised by the Jesuit Agricola... In spite of all this, a whole generation of men had to disappear before the persecution was crowned a complete success. As late as 1586, the moravian anabaptists managed to hide 600 victims from the duke Guillaume. This one example proves that there were thousands and not hundreds who were driven out, an awful breach into a thinly populated country.

"But", said Albert V to the Munich City council, "God's honour and the salvation of souls must be placed above any temporal interests". 16)

Little by little, all teaching in Bavaria was placed in the Jesuits' hands, and that land became the base for their penetration in eastern, western and northern Germany.

"From 1585 on, the Fathers converted the part of Westphalia depending on Cologne; in 1586, they appear in Neuss and Bonn, one of Cologne's archbishop's residences; they open colleges at Hildesheim in 1587 and Munster in 1588. This particular one already had 1300 pupils in 1618... A large part of western Germany was reconquered in that way by Catholicism, thanks to the Wittelsbach and Jesuits.

---

(14) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.89, 104, 112, 114. (15) Rene Fulop-Miller, op.cit., II, pp.98, 102. (16) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.89, 104, 112, 114.

"The alliance between the Wittelsbach and Jesuits was maybe even more important for the "Austrian lands" than for western Germany".(17)

The archduke Charles of Styrie, last son of emperor Ferdinand, married in 1571 a Bavarian princess "who brought into Gratz castle the narrow Catholic tendencies and the friendship for the Jesuits which prevailed at the Court of Munich". Under her influence, Charles worked hard to "extirpate the heresy" from his kingdom and when he died, in 1590, he made his son and successor, Ferdinand, swear that he would go on with this work. In any case, Ferdinand was well prepared for this. "For five years, he had been a pupil of the Jesuits at Ingolstadt; besides, he was so narrow-minded that, to him, there was no nobler task than the reestablishment of the Catholic Church in his hereditary States. That this task was advantageous or not to his lands was of no concern to Him. "I prefer", said he, "to reign over a country in ruins, than over one which is damned". (18)

In 1617, the archduke Ferdinand was crowned king of Bohemia by the emperor. "Influenced by his Jesuit confessor Viller, Ferdinand started at once to combat Protestantism in his new kingdom. This signalled the start of that bloody war of religion which, for the next thirty years, kept Europe in suspense. When, in 1618, the unhappy events in Prague gave the signal for open rebellion, the old emperor Mathias tried at first to compromise, but he did not have enough power to make his intentions prevail against king Ferdinand, who was dominated by his Jesuit confessor; so, the last hope to settle this conflict amicably was lost". "At the same time, the lands of Bohemia had taken special measures and solemnly decreed that all Jesuits should be expelled, as they saw in them promoters of civil war".(19)

Soon after, Moravia and Silesie followed this example, and Protestants of Hungary, where the Jesuit Pazmany ruled with a rod of iron, rebelled also. But the battle of the White Mountain (1620) was won by Ferdinand, who had been made emperor again after the death of Mathias.

"The Jesuits persuaded Ferdinand to inflict the most cruel punishment on the rebels; Protestantism was rooted out of the whole country by means too terrible for words... At the end of the war, the country's material ruin was complete".

"The Jesuit Balbinus, Bohemia's historian, wondered how there could still be some inhabitants left in that country. But moral ruin was even more terrible... The flourishing culture found amongst the nobles and middle classes, the rich national literature which could not be replaced: all this had been destroyed, and even nationality had been abolished. Bohemia was

(17) and (18) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.117, 120. (19) J. Huber, op.cit., pp. 180-183.

open to the Jesuits' activities and they burned Czech literature en-masse; under their influence, even the name of the nation's great saint: John Huss, gradually grew dimmer until it was extinct in the hearts of the people... "The height of the Jesuits' power", said Tomek, "coincided with the country's greatest decadence in her national culture; it is because of the influence that Order had, that this unfortunate land's awakening came about one century too late..."

"When the Thirty Years War came to an end, and a peace was concluded assuring German Protestants the same political rights enjoyed by the Catholics, the Jesuits did their uttermost to continue the fighting; it was in vain".(20)

But they obtained from their student Leopold the First, then reigning emperor, the promise to persecute the Protestants in his own lands, and especially in Hungary. "Escorted by imperial dragoons, the Jesuits undertook this work of conversion in 1671. The Hungarians rose to action and started a war which was to last for nearly a whole generation... But that insurrection was victoroius, under the leadership of Francis Kakoczy. The victor wanted to drive the Jesuits out of all the countries which fell under his power; but influencial protectors of the Order managed to adjourn these measures, and the expulsion did not take place until 1707...

"Prince Eugene blamed, with a harsh frankness, the politics of the imperial house and the intrigues of the Jesuits in Hungary. He wrote: "Austria nearly lost Hungary because of their persecuting of the Protestants". One day, he bitterly exclaimed that the morals of the Turks were far superior to those of the Jesuits, in practice at least. "Not only do they want to dominate consciences, but also to have the right of life and death over men".

"Austria and Bavaria reaped the fruits of Jesuit domination in full: the compression of all progressive tendencies and the systematic stultification of the people".

"The deep misery which followed the war of religion, the powerless politics, the intellectual decadence, the moral corruption, a frightful decrease in the population and impoverishment of the whole of Germany: these were the results of the Order's actions".(21)

---

(20) Rene Fulop-Miller, op.cit., II, pp. 104-105.

(21) J. Huber, op.cit., pp.183-186.

Chapter 3

Switzerland

It was only during the 17th century that the Jesuits succeeded in establishing themselves successfully in Switzerland, after having been called, then banished, by a few cities of the Confederation, during the second half of the 16th century.

The archbishop of Milan, Charles Borromee, who had favoured their installation at Lucerne in 1578, soon realised what the results of their actions would be, as we are reminded by J. Huber: "Charles Borromee wrote to his confessor that the Company of Jesus, governed by heads more political than religious, is becoming too powerful to preserve the necessary moderation and submission... She rules over kings and princes, and governs temporal and spiritual affairs; the pious institution has lost the spirit which animated her originally; we shall be compelled to abolish it".(22)

At the same time in France, the famous legal expert Etienne Pasquiet wrote: "Introduce this Order in our midst and, at the same time, you will introduce dissension, chaos and confusion".(23)

Is it not this identical complaint heard over and over again, and in all countries, against the Company? It was the same in Switzerland, when the evidence of her evil deeds broke through the flattering appearances with which she excelled in covering herself.

"Wherever the Jesuits managed to take root, they seduced great and small, young and old. Very soon, the authorities would start consulting them in important circumstances; their donations started flowing in, and it was not long before they occupied all the schools, the pulpits of most churches, the confessionals of all high ranking and influential people

---

(22) J. Huber op.cit., p.131.

(23) Cite by H. Fulop-Miller: "Les Jesuites et le secret de leur puissance" (Plon, Paris 1933 p.57)

Confessors looking after the education of all classes of Society, counsellors and intimate friends of members of the Council, their influence grew day after day, and they did not wait long before exercising it in public affairs. Lucerne and Fribourg were their main centres; from there, they conducted the exterior politics of most Catholic cantons...

"Any plan forged in Rome, or by other foreign powers, against Protestantism in Switzerland was assured of the Jesuits' full support...

"In 1620, they were successful in making the Catholic population of the Veltlin rise against the Protestants and they slaughtered six hundred. The pope gave indulgence to all those who took part in that horrible deed.

"In 1656, they kindled civil war between members of the various confessions... Later again a new war of religion was started by the Jesuits.

"In 1712, peace was being discussed in Aarau; Lucerne and Uri had just accepted it when the Jesuits, on an order from Rome, did all they could to reverse things. They refused absolution to all those who would hesitate to take up arms. They proclaimed loudly from their pulpits that one was not obliged to keep his word, when it was given to heretics; they made moderate councillors to suspect, tried to remove them from their posts and provoked, in Lucerne, such a threatening uprising of the people against the government that the supreme authority resigned herself to break the peace. The Catholics were defeated in the fight which followed and signed an ponerous peace.

Since that time, the Order's influence in Switzerland became smaller and smaller".(24)

Today, article 51 of the Swiss constitution forbids the Society of Jesus to hold any cultural or educative activity on the territory of the Confederation, and efforts made to abolish this rule have always been defeated.

---

(24) J. Huber, op.cit., pp.188 ss.

Chapter 4

Poland and Russia

Jesuit domination was nowhere as deadly as it was in Poland. This is proved by H. Boehmer, a moderate historian who does not bear any systematic hostility towards the Society.

"The Jesuits were entirely responsible for Poland's annihilation. The accusation so worded is excessive. The decadence of the Polish State had started before they came on the scene. But they undoubtedly hastened the kingdom's decomposition. Of all the States, Poland, who had millions of orthodox Christians in her midst, should have had religious tolerance as one of the most essential principles of her interior politics. The Jesuits did not allow that. They did worse: they put Poland's exterior politics at the service of Catholic interests in a fatal manner".(25)

This was written at the end of the last century; it is very similar to what Colonel Beck, former Polish Foreign-Affairs minister from 1932 to 1939 said after the 1939-1945 war:

"The Vatican is one of the main causes of the tragedy of my country. I realised too late that we had pursued our foreign politics just to serve the interests of the Catholic Church".(26)

So, with several centuries in-between, the same disastrous influence has made its mark once again on that unfortunate nation.

In 1581 already, Father Possevino, pontifical legate in Moscow, has done his best to bring together the Czar Ivan the Terrible and the Roman Church. Ivan was not strictly against it. Full of glad hopes, Possevino made himself, in 1584, the mediator of the peace of Kirewora Gora between Russia and Poland, a peace which saved Ivan from inextricable difficulties This is just what the crafty sovereign had hoped for. There was no more talk of converting the Russians. Possevino had to leave Russia without having obtained anything. Two years later, an even better opportunity offered itself to the Fathers to get a hold on Russia: Grischka Ostrepjew, an unfrocked monk, revealed to a Jesuit that he actually was Dimitri, son of Czar Ivan, who had been assassinated; he declared himself ready to subdue Moscow for Rome if he was master of the Czars' throne. Without thinking it over first, the Jesuits took it into their hands to introduce Ostrepjew to the Palatine of Sandomir who gave him his daughter in marriage; they spoke on his behalf to King Sigismond III and the pope regarding his expectations, and succeeded in making the Polish army rise against the Czar Boris Godounov. As a reward for these services, the false Dimitri renounced the religion of his fathers at Crascovie, one of the Jesuits' houses, and promised the Order an establishment in Moscow, near the Kremlin, after his victory over Boris.

---

(25) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.135.

(26) Declaration of the 6th of February 1940.

"But it was these favours from the catholics which unleashed the hatred of the Russian Orthodox Church against Dimitri. On the 27th of May 1606, he was massacred with several hundred Polish followers. Until then, one could hardly speak of a Russian national sentiment; but now, this feeling was very strong and took immediately the form of a fanatical hatred for the Roman Church and Poland.

"The alliance with Austria and the offensive politics of Sigismond III against the Turks, all of which were strongly encouraged by the Order, were just as disastrous for Poland. To put it briefly, no other State suffered as much as Poland did under the Jesuits' domination. And in no other country, apart from Portugal, was the Society so powerful. Not only did Poland have a 'king of the Jesuits', but also a Jesuit King, Jean-Casimir, a sovereign who had belonged to the Order before his accession to the throne in 1649...

"While Poland was heading fast towards ruin, the number of Jesuit establishments and schools was growing so fast that the General made Poland into a special congregation in 1751 ".(27)

---

(27) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.135 ss.

Chapter 5

Sweden and England

"In the Scandinavian countries", wrote Mr. Pierre Dominique, "Lutheranism submerged everything else and, when the Jesuits made their counter-attack, they did not find what was found in Germany: a Catholic party already in the minority, but still strong".(28)

Their only hope then was in the conversion of the sovereign who was secretly in favour of Catholicism; also, this king, Jean III Wasa, had married in 1568 a Polish princess, Catherine, a Roman Catholic. In 1574, Father Nicolai and other Jesuits were brought to the recently established school of theology where they became fervent Roman proselytizers, while officially assuming Lutheranism. Then, the clever negotiator Possevino secured the conversion of Jean III and the care of educating his son Sigismond, the future Sigismond III, king of Poland. When the time came to submit Sweden to the Holy See, the king's conditions: marriage of priests, use of the vernacular in services and communion in both kinds, all of which had been rejected by the Roman Curia, brought the negotiations to a dead end. In any case, the king, who had lost his first wife, had remarried a Swedish Lutheran. The Jesuits had to leave the country.

"Fifty years later, the Order won another great victory in Sweden. Queen Christine, daughter of Gustave-Adolphe, the last of the Wasas, was converted under the teaching of two Jesuit professors, who had managed to reach Stockholm pretending to be travelling Italian noblemen. But, in order to change her religion without conflicts, she had to abdicate on the 24th of June 1654".(29)

In England, on the other hand, the situation seemed more faviourable to the Society and it could hope, for a while at least, to bring this country back under the Holy See's jurisdiction.

---

(28) Pierre Dominique, op.cit, p.76.

(29) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.137, 138, 139.

"When Elizabeth came to the throne in 1558, Ireland was still entirely Catholic and England 50 per cent so... In 1542 already, Salmeron and Broet had been sent by the pope to survey Ireland".(30)

Seminaries had been created under the Jesuits' direction in Douai, Pont-a-Mousson and Rome, with a view to train English, Irish and Scottish missionaries. In agreement with Philip II of Spain, the Roman Curia worked at overthrowing Elizabeth in favour of the Catholic Mary Stuart. An Irish uprising, provoked by Rome, had been crushed. But the Jesuits, who had arrived in England in 1580, took part in a large Catholic assembly at Southwark.

"Then, under diverse disguises, they spread from county to county, from country house to castle. In the evening, they would hear confession; in the morning, they would preach and give communion, then they would disappear as mysteriously as they had arrived. For, from the 15th of July, Elizabeth had proscribed them".(31)

They printed and distributed secretly virulent pamphlets against the Queen and the Anglican Church. One of them, Father Campion, was caught, condemned for high treason and hanged. They also plotted at Edinburgh to win to their cause King James of Scotland. The result of all these disturbances was the execution of Mary Stuart in 1587.

Then came the Spanish expedition, the invincible Armada, which made England tremble for a while and brought about the "sacred union" around Elizabeth's throne. But the Company pursued none the less her projects and was training English priests at Valladolid, Seville, Madrid and Lisbon, while her secret propaganda continued in England under the direction of Father Garnett. After the Gunpowder Plot against James I, successor of Elizabeth, this Father Garnett was condemned for complicity and hanged, like Father Campion.

Under Charles I, then in Cromwell's Commonwealth, other Jesuits paid for their intrigues with their lives. The Order thought it would triumph under Charles II who, together with Louis XIV, had concluded a secret treaty at Dover, pledging to restore Catholicism in the land.

"The nation was not fully informed of these circumstances, but the little that transpired was enough to create an unbelievable agitation. All England shuddered before Loyola's spectre and the Jesuits' conspiracies".(32)

A meeting of them in the palace itself brought popular fury to a head.

"Charles II, who enjoyed the life of a king and did not want to go on another 'journey across the seas', hanged five Fathers for high treason at

---

(30) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.137-139.

(31) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.140-142.

(32) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.140, 142.

Tyburn... This did not abate the Jesuits.. However, Charles II was too prudent and too cynical for their liking, always ready to drop them. They thought victory was in sight when James II acceded to the throne. In fact, the king took up Mary Tudor's old game, but used softer means. He pretended to convert England and established for the Jesuits, at the palace of Savoy, a college where four hundred students immediately took residence. A downright camarilla of Jesuits took over the Palace...

"All these combinations were the main cause for the 1688 revolution. The Jesuits had to go against a stream too powerful. Then, England had twenty Protestants for each Catholic. The king was overthrown; all the members of the Company put in prison or banished. For some time, the Jesuits recommenced their work of secret agents, but it was nothing more than a futile agitation. They had lost the cause".(33)

---

(33) Pierre Dominique, op.cit, pp.101, 102.

Section II

Chapter 6

France

In 1551, the Order started to establish itself in France, which was seventeen years after its foundation in the chapel Saint-Denis at Montmartre.

Indeed, they presented themselves as effective adversaries of the Reformation which had won about one seventh of the French population, but people mistrusted these soldiers too devoted to the Holy See. So, their penetration on French soil was slow at first. As in all other countries where general opinion was not in their favour, they insinuated themselves first amongst people at Court, then, through them, into the upper classes. But in Paris, the Parliament, the University and even the clergy remained hostile. It came out clearly when they first attempted to open a college there.

"The Faculty of Theology, whose mission is to safeguard the principles of religion in France, decreed on the 1 st of December 1554, that 'this society appears to be extremely dangerous regarding the faith, she is an enemy of the Church's peace, fatal to the monastic state and seems to have been born to bring ruin rather than edification' ".(34)

The Fathers were nevertheless allowed to settle at Billom, in a corner of Auvergne. From there, they organised a great action against the Reformation in the provinces of southern France. The famous Lainez, the man at the Council of Trent, distinguished himself in polemics, especially at the Colloquy of Poissy, in an unhappy attempt to conciliate the two doctrines (1561).

Thanks to the Queen-Mother Catherine of Medici, the Order opened its first Parisian establishment, the College of Clermont, which was in competition with the University. The opposition from this university, the clergy and the parliament was more or less pacified with concessions, verbal at least, made by the Company who promised to conform to the common right; but the University had fought hard and long against the introduction of "men bribed at the expense of France to arm themselves against the King", according to Etienne Pasquier, and whose words were proved right not long after.

---

(34) Gaston Bally, op.cit., p.69.

There is no need to ask if the Jesuits "consented" to the Saint Bartholomew Massacre (1572). Did they "prepare" it? Who knows?... The Company's politics, subtle and supple in their proceedings, have very clear aims; it is the popes' politics: "destray heresy". Everything must be subordinated to this major aim. "Catherine of Medici worked towards this aim and the Company could count on the Guises".(35)

But this major design, helped so much by that massacre on the night of the 24th of August 1572, provoked a terrible blaze of fratricidal hatred.

Three years later, it was the League, after the assassination of the duke de Guise, nicknamed "the king of Paris", and the appeal to His Most Christian Majesty to fight the Protestants.

"The shrewd Henry III did his best to avoid a war of religion. In agreement with Henry of Navarre, they gathered the Protestants and most of the moderate Catholics against Paris, the League and these partisans, mad Romans backed by Spain...

"The Jesuits, powerful in Paris, protested that the king of France had surrendered to heresy... The directing committee of the League deliberated at the Jesuits' house in the Street Saint-Antoine. Was Spain holding Paris? Hardly. The League? The League was only an instrument in skilful hands... "This Company of Jesus who had been fighting in the name of Rome for thirty years now... This was Paris's secret master".

"So, Henry III was assassinated. As the heir was a Protestant, the murder seemed at first glance to have been for other than political reasons; but is it not possible that those who planned it and persuaded the Jacobin Clement to carry it out were hoping for an uprising of Catholic France against the Huguenot heir? The fact is that a little later Clement was called an "angel" by the Jesuit Camelet, and Guignard, another Jesuit who was eventually hanged, gave his students as a means of moulding their opinions tyrannicidal texts as subjects for their latin exercises".(36)

Amongst other things, these school exercises contained this: "Jacques Clement has done a meritorious act inspired by the Holy Spirit... If we can make war against the king, then let us do it; if we cannot make war against him, then let us put him to death..." And this: "We made a big mistake at the Saint-Bartholomew; we should have bled the royal vein".(37)

In 1592, a certain Barriere who tried to assassinate Henry IV confessed that Father Varade, rector of the Jesuits in Paris, had persuaded him to do

(35) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.84.
(36) and (37) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., pp.85, 86, 89.

it. In 1594, another attempt was made by Jean Chatel, former pupil of the Jesuits who had heard his confession just before carrying it out. It was on that occasion that the previously mentioned school exercises were seized at the house of Father Guignard. "The Father was hanged at Greve while the king confirmed an edict of Parliament banishing the sons of Loyola from the kingdom, as "corrupters of youth, disturbers of public peace and enemies of the State and crown of France...". The edict was not carried out fully and, in 1603, it was revoked by the king against the advice of Parliament. Aquaviva, the general of the Jesuits, had been clever in his manoeuvres and led king Henry IV to believe that the Order, reestablished in France, would loyally serve national interests. How could he, subtle as he was, believe that these fanatical Romans would indeed accept the Edict of Nantes (1498) which determined the rights of Protestants in France, and, even worse, they would back up his projects against Spain and the Emperor? The fact is, Henry IV chose as his confessor and tutor for the Dauphin one of the most distinguished members of the Company, Father Cotton (38a). On the 16th of May 1610, on the eve of his campaign against Austria, he was murdered by Ravaillac who confessed having been inspired by the writings of Fathers Mariana and Suarez. These two sanctioned the murders of heretic "tyrants" or those insufficiently devoted to the papacy's interests. The duke of Epernon, who made the king read a letter while the assassin was lying in wait, was a notorious friend of the Jesuits, and Michelet proved that they knew of this attempt. "In fact, Ravaillac had confessed to the Jesuit Father d'Aubigny just before and, when the judges interrogated the priest, he merely replied that God had given him the gift to forget immediately what he heard in the confessional".(38)

Parliament, persuaded that Ravaillac had only been a tool for the Company, ordered the executioner to burn Mariana's book.

"Fortunately, Aquaviva was still there. Once again, this great general schemed well; he condemned most severely the legitimacy of tyrannicide. The Company always had authors who, in the silence of their studies, exposed the doctrine in all its rectitude; she also possessed great politicians who, when necessary, would put the right masks on it".(39)

Thanks to Father Cotton who took the situation in hand, the Society of Jesus came out of the storm unscathed. Her wealth, the number of her establishments and adherents grew rapidly. But when Louis XIII came to the throne, and Richelieu took the affairs of State in hand, there was a clash of wills. The Cardinal would not let anyone oppose his politics. The Jesuit

(38a) His adversaries used to say that he had "cotton" in his ears! (38) Henri Fulop-Miller, op.cit., p. 113. (39) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.95.

Caussin, confessor of the king, was able to find that out when he was put in prison at Rennes, on Richelieu's order, as a State criminal. This act produced the best results. In order to stay in France, the Order went as far as collaborating with the redoubtable Minister.

H. Boehmer wrote this about it: "The lack of consideration for the Church always shown by the French government, since Philippe le Bel, in the conflicts between national and ecclesiastic interests had been, once again, the best politics".(40)

The accession of Louis XIV marked the start of the most prosperous time for the Order. The "laxism" of Jesuit confessors, this clever leniency they used to attract sinners not very anxious to make penance, was employed extensively amongst ordinary people as well as at Court, especially with the king who was more a ladies' man than devout.

His Majesty had no intention of renouncing his amorous affairs, and his confessor was careful to keep off the subject, in spite of it being plain adultery. So, all the royal family was soon provided with Jesuit confessors only, and their influence grew more and more amongst the high society. The priests of Paris attacked in their "Writings" the loose morals of the famous Company's casuists, but to no avail. Pascal himself intervened, in vain, in favour of the Jansenists, during the great theological quarrel of that time; in his "Provincial letters", he exposed their too worldly opponents, the Jesuits, to eternal ridicule.

In spite of it, the secure place they held at Court assured them of victory, and those of Port-Royal succumbed. The Order was to win another great victory for Rome, whose consequences were against national interests. It goes without saying that they had only unwillingly accepted the religious peace assured through the Edict of Nantes, and had continued a secret war against the French Protestants. As Louis XIV was getting older, he turned more and more to bigotry under the influence of Madame de Maintenon and Father La Chaise, his confessor. In 1681, they persuaded him to restart the persecution against the Protestants. Finally, on the 17th of October 1685, he signed the "Revocation of the Edict of Nantes", making those of his subjects who refused to embrace the Catholic religion outlaws. Soon after, to accelerate the conversions, those famous "dragonnade" started; that sinister name became part of all subsequent attempts to proselytize by fire and chains. While the fanatics cheered, the Protestants fled from the kingdom en-masse. According to Marshal Vauban, France lost in that way 400,000 inhabitants and 60 million francs. Manufacturers, merchants, shipowners, skilful artisans went to other countries and brought them the benefit of their abilities.

"17th of October 1685 was a day of victory for the Jesuits, the final reward for a war which had gone on for one hundred and twenty-five years without respite. But the State paid the cost of the Jesuits' victory. "The depopulation, the reduction of national prosperity were the acute material consequences of their triumph, followed by a spiritual impoverishment which could not be cured, even by the best Jesuit school. This what France suffered and the Society of Jesus had to pay for very dearly later".(41)

---

(40) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p. 100.

During the century following, the sons of Loyola saw, not only France, but all the european countries reject them from their midst—but, once again, it was only for a while; these fanatical janissaries of the papacy had not finished to accumulate ruins in the pursuit of their impossible dream.

---

(41) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.103.

Section III

Foreign missions

Chapter 1

India, Japan, China

The conversion of "pagans" had been the first objective of the Society of Jesus' founder. Even though the necessity to combat Protestantism in Europe involved its disciples more and more, and this political as well as religious action, of which we just gave a short summary, became their main task, they still pursued the evangelisation of distant lands.

Their theocratic ideal: to bring the world under the Holy See's authority, required that they should go into all the regions of the globe, in the conquest of souls.

Francis Xavier, one of Ignatius' first companions who, like him, was canonised by the Church, was the great promoter of Asia's evangelisation. In 1542, he disembarked at Goa and found there a bishop, a cathedral and a convent of Franciscans who, together with some Portuguese priests, had already tried to spread around them the religion of Christ. He gave that first attempt such a strong impetus that he was surnamed the "Apostle of India". Actually, he was more a pioneer and "exciter" than one who really accomplished something lasting. Fiery, enthusiastic, always on the look-out for new fields of action, he showed the way more than he cleared the ground. In the kingdom of Travancore, at Malacca, on the islands of Banda, Macassar and Ceylon, his personal charm, and his eloquent speeches did wonders and, as a result, 70,000 "idolaters" were converted especially amongst the low caste. To obtain this, he did not despise the political and even military support of the Portuguese. These results, more showy than solid, were bound to rouse interest for the missions in Europe as well as throwing a brilliant lustre over the Society of Jesus.

The untiring but little persevering apostle soon left India for Japan, then China, where he was about to enter when he died at Canton, in 1552.

His successor in India, Robert de Nobile, applied in that country the same methods the Jesuits used in Europe very successfully. He appealed to the higher classes. To the "untouchables", he gave the consecrated water only on the end of a stick.

He adopted the clothes, habits and way of living of the Brahmins, mixed their rites with Christian ones, all with the approval of Pope Gregory XV. Thanks to this ambiguity, he "converted", so he claimed, 250,000 Hindus. But, "about a century after his death, when the intransigent pope Benedict XIV forbade the observance of these Hindu rites, everthing collapsed and the 250,000 pseudo-catholics disappeared".(l)

In the north Indian territories ofthe Great Mogol Akbar, a tolerant man who even tried to introduce into his States a religious syncretism, the Jesuits were allowed to build an establishment at Lahore in 1575. Akbar's successors granted them the same favours. But Aureng-Zeb (1666-1707), and orthodox Moslem, put an end to this enterprise.

In 1549, Xavier embarked for Japan with two companions and a Japanese he had converted at Malacca called Yagiro. The beginnings were not very promising. "The Japanese have their own mortality and are rather reserved; their past has set them in paganism. The adults look at those strangers with amusement and the children follow them, jeering".(2) Yagiro, a native, managed to start a small community of one hundred adherents. But Francis Xavier, who did not speak Japanese very well, could not even obtain an audience from the Mikado. When he left that country, two Fathers stayed behind who eventually secured the conversion of the daimos of Arima and Bungo. When this particular one so decided in 1578, he had been considering the matter for 27 years. The following year, the Fathers settled at Nagasaki. They pretended to have converted 100,000 Japanese. In 1587, the internal situation of the land, torn apart by clan wars, changed entirely. "The Jesuits had taken advantage of that anarchy and their close relations with Portuguese merchants."(3) Hideyoshi, a man of low birth, had usurped power and taken the title of Taikosama. He distrusted the Jesuits' political influence, their association with the Portuguese and their connections with the great and wild vassals, the Samourai.

In consequence, the young Japanese Church was violently persecuted, six Franciscans and three Jesuits were crucified; many converts were murdered and the Order was banished.

Nevertheless, the decree was not carried out. The Jesuits continued their apostolate in secret. But, in 1614, the first Shogun, Tokugawa Yagasu, became uneasy with their occult actions and the persecution started again. Besides, the Dutch had taken the place of the Portuguese at the business' counters and were closely watched by the government. A profound distrust

(1) "Les Jesuites", in "Le Crapouillot", Nr. 24, 1954, p.42. (2) "Le Crapouillot", op.cit., p.43. (3) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.162.

of all foreigners, ecclesiastics or laymen inspired from then on the conduct of leaders and, in 1638, a rebellion of the Nagasaki Christians was drowned in blood. For the Jesuits, the Japanese adventure had come to an end, and was to remain so for a long time.

We can read in the remarkable work of Lord Bertrand Russell "Science and Religion" the following racy passage about Francis Xavier the miracle worker: "He and his companions wrote many long letters which were kept; in them, they gave accounts of their labours, but none of those written in his lifetime made any mention of miraculous powers. Joseph Acosta, the Jesuit who was so much troubled by Peru's animals, expressly denied that these missionaries had been helped by miracles in their efforts to convert the pagans. But, soon after Xavier's death, stories of miracles started to abound. It was said that he had the gift of tongues, even though his letters were full of allusions to the difficulties he had to master the Japanese language or find good interpreters.

"Stories were told of how, when his friends had felt thirsty at sea, he had changed salt water into fresh. When he dropped his crucifix into the sea, a crab brought it back to him. According to a later version, he had thrown the crucifix into the sea to still a tempest. When he was canonised in 1622, it was proved, to the satisfaction of the Vatican authorities, that he had accomplished miracles, as no one can become a saint without them. The pope gave his official guarantee to the gift of tongues and was particularly impressed by the fact that Xavier had made the lamps burn with holy water instead of oil.

"This same pope, Urban VIII, refused to believe Galileo's statements. The legend continued to improve: a biography by Father Bonhours, published in 1682, tells us that the saint had resuscitated fourteen persons during his lifetime. "Catholic authors still attribute to him the gift of miracles; in a biography published in 1872, Father Coleridge of the Society of Jesus restated that he had the gift of tongues".(4)

Judging by the exploits just mentioned, saint Francis Xavier well deserved his halo.

In China, the sons of Loyola had a long and favourable time with only a few expulsions in-between; they obtained this on condition they woud work there mainly as scientists and bow to the thousands of years old rite of this ancient civilisation.

"Meteorology was the main subject. Francis Xavier had already foud out that the Japanese did not know the earth was round and were very interested in what he taught them on that and other similar subjects. "In China, it became official and, as the Chinese were not fanatical, things developed peaceably." "An Italian, Father Ricci, was the initiator of it.

---

(4) Lord Bertrand Russell: "Science and religion" (Ed. Gallimard, Paris 1957, pp.84-85

Having made his way to Peking, he played the part of an astronomer before the Chinese scientists... Astronomy and mathematics were an important part of Chinese institutions. These sciences enabled the sovereign to date their various seasonal religious and civil ceremonies... Ricci brought information which made him indispensable and he used this opportunity to speak about Christianity... He sent for two Fathers who amended the traditional calendar, establishing the accord between the course of the stars and earthly events. Ricci helped with lesser tasks as well; for instance, he drew a mural map of the empire, where he carefully put China at the center of the universe..."(5)

This was the Jesuits' main work in that Celestial Empire; as for the religions side of their mission, the interest in it was minute. It is rather amusing to think that, in Peking, the Fathers were busy rectifying the astronomical mistakes of the Chinese, while, in Rome, the Holy See persistently condemned the Copernican system, and that until 1822!

In spite of the fact that the Chinese had very little inclination for mysticism, the first Catholic church opened at Peking in 1599. When Ricci died, he was replaced by a German, Father Shall von Bell, an astronomer who also published some remarkable tracts in the Chinese language; in 1644, he was given the title of "President of the mathematical Tribunal", which created jealousy amongst the mandarins. In the meantime, the Christian communities organised themselves. In 1617, the emperor must have foreseen the dangers of this pacific penetration when he decreed the banishment of all foreigners. The good Fathers were sent to the Portuguese at Macao in wooden cages. But, soon after, they were called back. They were such good astronomers!

In fact, they were just as good as missionaries with 41 residences in China, 159 churches and 257,000 baptised members. But a new reaction against them called for their banishment and Father Shall was condemned to death. No doubt he had not incurred this sentence merely for his work in mathematics! An earthquake and the burning of the imperial palace, cleverly presented as a sign of wrath from heaven, saved his life and he died peacefully two years later. But his companions had to leave China.

In spite of all, the esteem for the Jesuits was so great that emperor Kang-Hi felt obliged to call them back in 1669, and ordered solemn funerals for the remains of Iam Io Vam (Jean-Adam Shall). These unusual honours were only the start of exceptional favours".(6)

A Belgian Father, Verbiest, followed Shall at the head of the missions— and also the Imperial mathematical Institute. He was the one who gave to Peking's Observatory those famous instruments whose mathematical precision is concealed by chimeras, dragons, etc. Kang-Hi, "the enlightened despot", who reigned for 61 years, appreciated the services of that scientist who gave him wise advice, accompanied him to war and even managed a foundry for cannons. But this profane and war-like activity was directed "ad majorem Dei gloriam", as the good Father reminded the emperor in a note he sent him before his death: "Sir, I die happy as I used nearly every moment of my life to serve Your Majesty. But I pray Him very humbly to remember, after my death, that my aim in all I did was to procure a protector for the most holy religion in the universe; and this protector was you, the greatest king in the East".(7)

---

(5) "Le Crapouillot", op.cit. p.44.

(6) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p. 168.

However, in China as in Malabar, this religion could not survive without some artifice. The Jesuits had to bring the Roman doctrine to the chinese level, identify God with heaven (Tien) or the Chang-Ti (Emperor from on-high), blend Catholic rites with Chinese rites, accept Confucian teachings, the cult of the ancestors, etc.

Pope Clement XI, who was told of it by rival Orders, condemned this doctrinal "laxism" and, as a result, all the missionary work of the Jesuits in the Celestial Empire collapsed.

The successors of Kang-Hi proscribed Christianity and the last Fathers left in China died there and were never replaced.

---

(7) "Correspondence" of Verbiest (Brussels 1931, p.551).

Section III

Chapter 2

The Americas: The Jesuit State of Paraguay

The missionaries of the Society of Jesus found the New World much more favourable to their proselytism than Asia. There, they found no old and learned civilisations, no religions solidly established, nor any philosophical traditions, but only poor and barbarian tribes, unarmed spiritually as well as temporally before the white conquerors. Only Mexico and Peru, with the memory of Aztec and Inca gods still fresh in their minds, resisted this imported religion for quite a long time. Also, the Dominicans and Franciscans had already established themselves solidly. It was then amongst the wild tribes, nomadic hunters and fishermen, that the sons of Loyola exercised their devouring activity; the results they obtained varied according to the fierceness and opposition of the various populations.

In Canada, the Hurons, peaceful and docile, accepted easily their catechism, but their enemies, the Iroquois, attacked the stations created around Fort Sainte-Marie and massacred the inhabitants. The Hurons were practically exterminated within ten years and, in 1649, the Jesuits had to leave with about three hundred survivors.

They did not make a strong impression when they went through the territories which, today, make up the United States, and it was only during the 19th century that they started putting some roots down in that part of the continent.

In South America, the Jesuits' action met with some good and bad fortunes, In 1546, the Portuguese had called them to work in the territories they possessed in Brazil; while converting the natives, they encountered many conflicts with civil authority and other religious Orders. The same thing happened in New Granada. But Paraguay was the land for the great "experience" of Jesuitical colonisation; this country spread then from the Atlantic to the Andes and comprised territories which, today, belong to Brazil, Uruguay and

Argentina. The only means of access through the virgin jungle was on the Paraguay and Parana rivers. The population of that land was made up of nomadic and docile Indians, ready to bow to anyone's domination as long as they were supplied with enough food and a little tobacco.

The Jesuits could not find better conditions to establish, away from the corruption of whites and half-castes, the perfect type of colony, a city of God according to their heart's desire. At the start of the 17th century, Paraguay was made into a Province by the general of the Order who had been given all powers by the Court of Spain, and the "Jesuit State" developed and flourished.

These good savages were duly catechised and trained to live a sedentary life under a discipline as gentle as it was strong: "as an iron hand in a velvet glove". These patriarchal societies deliberately ignored liberties of any kind. "All that a Christian possesses, and uses, the hut in which he lives, the fields he cultivates, the livestock which provide his food and clothes, thie arms he carries, the tools he works with, even the only table knife given to every young couple when they set up home, is "Tupambac" God's property From the same conception, the "Christian" cannot dispose of his time and person freely. The suckling child is under his mother's protection. As soon as he can walk, he is in the Fathers' or their agents' power... When the child grows up, it learns, if it is a girl, to spin and weave, and if it is a boy, to read and write, but only in guarani; for Spanish is severely prohibited so as to prevent all trading with the corrupted Creoles... As soon as a girl is fourteen and a boy sixteen years of age, they are married, as the Fathers are anxious not to see them fall into some carnal sin... None of them can become priest monk, and even less Jesuit... They have practically no liberty left. But they are obviously very happy, materially speaking... In the morning, after mass, each gang of workers go to the fields one after another, singing and preceded by some holy image; in the evening, they come back to the village in the same manner, to hear the catechism or recite the rosary. The Fathers have also thought out some honest entertainments and recreations for the "christians" ...

"The Jesuits watch over them like fathers; and, like fathers also, they punish the smallest mistakes... The whip, fasting, prison, pillory on the public square, public penance in the church, these are the chastisements they use... So, the "red" children of Paraguay know no other authority than that of the good Fathers. They do not even vaguely suspect that the king of Spain is their sovereign".(8)

Is this not a picture somewhat caricatured the perfect picture of the ideal theocratic society?

But let us consider how it affected the intellectual and moral advancement of the beneficiaries of that system, these "poor innocents" as they were called by the marquess de Loreto: "The missions' high culture is nothing more than an artificial product from an hot-house, carrying in itself a seed of death. Because, in spite of all this breaking in and training, the Guarani remained deep down what he was: a lazy savage, narrow-minded, sensual, greedy and sordid. As the Fathers themselves say, he only works when he feels the overseer's goad behind him. As soon as they are left to themselves, they are indifferent to the fact that the harvest is rotting in the field, implements are deteriorating and the herds are scattered; if he is not watched when working in the fields, he can even suddenly unyoke an ox and butcher it on the spot, light a fire with the wood of the plough and, with his companions, start eating the half-cooked flesh until none of it is left. He knows that he will get 25 lashings of the whip for it, but also that the good Fathers would never let him starve to death".(9)

---

(8) and (9) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp. 197 ss.

In a book recently published, we can read the following concerning the Jesuits' punishments: "The culprit, dressed in the clothes of a penitent, was escorted to church where he confessed his fault. Then he was whipped on the public square according to the penal code... The culprits always received this chastisement, not only without murmurs, but also with thanksgivings..." "The guilty one, having been punished and reconciled, kissed the hand of the one who struck him, saying: "May God reward you for freeing me, by this light punishment, from the eternal sorrows which threatened me".(10)

After reading this, we can understand Mr. H. Boehmer's conclusion: "The Guarani's moral life enriched itself very little under the Fathers' discipline. He became a devout and superstitious Catholic who sees miracles everywhere and seems to enjoy flagellating himself until blood appears; he learned to obey and was attached to the good Fathers, who cared so well for him, with a filial gratitude which, even though not very deep, was nevertheless very tenacious. This not very brilliant result proves that there was some important defect in the educative methods of the Fathers. What was that defect? The fact that they never tried to develop, in their "red" children, the inventive faculties, the need for activity, the feeling of responsibility; they themselves invented games and recreations for their christians, they thought for them instead of encouraging them to think for themselves; they merely submitted those who were under their care to a mechanical "breaking in" instead of educating them".(11)

How could it be otherwise when they themselves had gone through a "breaking in" lasting fourteen years? Were they going to teach the Guaranis and their white pupils to "think for themselves", when they were absolutely forbidden to do so?

---

(10) Clovis Lugon: "La Republique communiste chretienne des Guaranis" p.197. (11) H. Boehmer, op.cit. pp.204-205.

It is not a Jesuit of old, but a contemporary one who writes: "He (the Jesuit) will not forget that the characteristic virtue of the Company is total obedience of the action, the will, and even the judgement... All the superiors will be bound in the same way to higher ones and the Father General to the Holy Father... It was so arranged as to render the Holy See's authority universally efficacious, and saint Ignatius was sure that teaching and education would henceforth bring back to Catholic unity a Europe torn apart".

It is with the hope of "reforming the world", wrote Father Bonhours, "that he particularly embraced this means: the instruction of youth..." (12)

The education of Paraguay's natives was done on the same principles the Fathers used to apply, now apply and will apply on everyone and everywhere; their aim, deplored by Mr. Boehmer, but which is ideal to the eyes of those fanatics: the renouncement of all personal judgement, all initiative, a blind submission to the superiors. Is it not that "height of freedom", "the liberation from one's own bondage" praised by R.P. Rouquette and which we mentioned earlier on?

In fact, the good Guaranis had been "liberated" so well by the Jesuitical method for more than one hundred and fifty years that, when their masters left during the 18th century, they went back into their forests and returned to their ancient customs as if nothing had happened.

---

(12) F. Charmot, s.j.: "La Pedagogie des Jesuites" (Edit. Spes, Paris 1943, p.39).

Section IV

The Jesuits in the European Society

Chapter 1

The Teaching of the Jesuits

"The pedagogic method of the Company", wrote R.P. Charmot, S.J., "consists first of all of surrounding the pupils with a great network of prayers..."

Later, he quotes the Jesuit Father Tacchini: "May the Holy Spirit fill them as alabasters are filled with perfumes; may He penetrate them so much that, as time goes on, they will be able to breathe in more and more celestial fragrance and the perfume of Christ!"

Father Gandier also has a contribution: "Let us not forget that education, as seen by the Company, is the ministry most similar to that of angels". (1)

Later, Father Charmot has this to say: "Let us not be anxious as to where and how mysticism is inserted into education!..." "It is not done through a system or artificial technique, but by infiltration, by "endosmosis". The children's souls are impregnated because of their being in close "contact with masters who are literally saturated with it".(2)

From the same author, here is "the aim of the Jesuit professor": "Through his teaching, he aims to form, not an intellectual Christian elite, but elite christians".(3)

These few quotations tell us enough about the principal aim of these educators. Let us see now how they form these elite Christians, and what kind of mysticism is "inserted" (or inoculated), "infiltrated" or "pumped into" children submitted to their educational system.

At the front—it is characteristic of this Order—we find the Virgin Mary. "Loyola had made the Virgin the most important thing in his life. The Worship of Mary was the base of his religious devotions and was handed down by him to his Order. This worship developed so much that it was often said, and with good reason, that it was the Jesuits' real religion".(4)

(1,2,3) F. Charmot, S.J. op.cit., pp.413, 415, 417, 442, 493..

This was not written by a Protestant, but by J. Huber, professor of Catholic theology.

Loyola himself was convinced that the Virgin had inspired him when he had drawn up his "Exercises". A Jesuit had a vision of Mary covering the Society with her mantle as a sign of her special protection. Another one, Rodrigue de Gois, was so enraptured with her inexpressible beauty that he was seen soaring into the air. A novice of this Order, who died in Rome in 1581, was sustained by the Virgin in his fight against the devil's temptations; to strengthen him, she gave him a taste of her Son's blood from time to time and "the comfort of her breasts".(5)

Duns Scot's doctrine of the Immaculate Conception" was enthusiastically adopted by the Order which was successful in having it made into a dogma by Pius IX in 1854.

"Erasmus satirically depicted the worship of Mary of his time. During the fourth century, the tale of Loretto's house had been invented; this house had apparently been brought from Palestine by angels. The Jesuits welcomed and defended this legend. Canisius went as far as producing letters from Mary herself and, thanks to the Order, great wealth started to pour in at Loretto (as at Lourdes, Fatima, etc..)

"The Jesuits brought forth all kinds of relics of the Mother of God. When they made their entrance into the church of Saint-Michael at Munich, they offered to the veneration of the faithful pieces of Mary's veil, several tufts of her hair and pieces of her comb; they instituted a special cult, consecrated to worship these objects..."

"This worship degenerated into licentious and sensual manifestations, in particular in the hymns dedicated to the Virgin by Father Jacques Pontanus. The poet knew of nothing more beautiful than Mary's breasts, nothing sweeter than her milk and nothing more delightful than her abdomen".(6)

One could multiply these citations endlessly. Ignatius wanted his disciplies to have a "perceptible", or even sensual piety, similar to his own, and they obviously succeeded. No wonder they were so successful with the Guaranis; this erotic fetichism suited them perfectly. But the good Fathers always thought it would suit the "whites" just as well. As the foundation of their doctrine is an utter contempt for people as human beings, "whites" or "reds" were just the same, and both had to be treated as if they were children.

So they work relentlessly at propagating this spirit and these idolatrous practices; because of the influence they hold over the Holy See, which cannot do without them, they force them on the Roman Church, in spite of

(4) and (5) J. Huber, op.cit., pp.98-99.

(6) "Oeuvres completes" de Bucher (Munich 1819, II, p.477 ss.)

the resistance which has gradually decreased.

"Father Barri wrote a book entitled: "Paradise opens through one hundred devotions to the Mother of God". In it, he expounds the idea that the way by which we enter paradise is not important: the important thing is to enter. He enumerates exercises of exterior piety to Mary which open heaven's doors. Amongst other things, these exercises consist of giving to Mary morning and evening salutations; frequently charging the angles to greet her; expressing the desire to build her more churches than all those built by monarchs put together; carrying day and night a rosary as a bracelet, an image of Mary, etc...

"These practices are enough to assure our salvation and if the devil, when we are about to die, makes claims on our souls, we just have to remind him that Mary is responsible for us and he must sort things out with her".(7)

In his "Pietas quotidiana erga S.D. Mariam", Father Pemble recommends the following: "To beat or flagellate ourselves, and offer each blow as a sacrifice to God, through Mary to carve with a knife the holy name of Mary on our chest: to cover ourselves decently at night so as not to offend the chaste gaze of Mary; to tell the Virgin you would be willing to offer her your place in heaven if she didn't have her own; to wish you had never been born or go to hell if Mary had not been born; to never eat an apple, as Mary had been kept from the mistake of tasing of it".(8)

All this was written in 1764, but one only has to glance through similar works published today in great numbers, or just the Catholic press, to establish the fact that, for two hundred years, this wild idolatry had done nothing but grow and embellish. The late pope Pius XII distinguished himself as far as the ownership of Mary is concerned. Under his rule, a large part of the Roman Church followed suit.

Moreover, the sons of Loyola, who are always anxious to conform to the spirit of the age, try to today to accommodate these mediaeval puerilities, and there are several tracts published by some of these good Fathers under the grand auspices of the "Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique" (C.N.R.S.)

If we add to this the scapulars of various colours with their appropriate virtues, the worship of saints, images, relics, the apology of the "miracles", the adoration of the Sacred Heart, we will have some idea of the "mysticism" with which "the children's souls are impregnated" through their contact with masters "who are saturated with it"—as R.P. Charmot wrote in 1943.

There is no other way to form "elite Christians".

Nevertheless, if they were to win their fight against the Universities, the Jesuit colleges had to expand their teaching and include secular subjects, as the Renaissance had awakened a thirst for learning. We know that they gladly carried it out while taking all the necessary precautions to prevent this learning going against the aim of their teaching: maintaining the minds in complete obedience to the Church.

---

(7) and (8) J. Huber, op.cit., 106-108.

That is why their pupils are first of all "surrounded" by this "great web of prayers", which would not be sufficient if the learning imparted was not carefully purged from all heterodox spirit and ideas. So, Greek and Latin, (Latin is regarded very highly in these colleges), were studied for their literary value; but the "antique" orthodox thought was expounded just enough to establish the so-called superior scholastic philosophy. These "humanists" they were training were able to compose discourses and latin verses, but the only master of their thoughts was saint Thomas Aquinas, a monk of the 13th century

Listen to "Ratio Studiorum", fundamental treatise of Jesuit pedagogy, quoted by R.P. Charmot: "We will carefully discard secular subjects which do not favour good morals and piety. We will compose poems; but may our poets be Christians and not followers of pagans who invoke Muses, mountain nymphs, sea-nymphs, Calliope, Apollo, etc... or other gods and goddesses. What's more, if these are to be mentioned, may it be with the view to caricature them, as they are only demons..."(9)

So, all sciences—and especially natural sciences—will be "interpreted" in like manner.

In fact, R.P. Charmot doesn't even try to hide it in what he said about the Jesuit professor in 1943: "He teaches sciences, not for themselves, but only with the view to bring about God's greatest glory. It is the rule laid down by Saint Ignatius in his "Constitutions". 10)

And again: "When we speak of a whole culture, we do not mean that we teach all subjects and sciences, but we give a literary and scientific education which is not purely secular and impermeable to the lights of Revelation".(11)

The instruction dispensed by the Jesuits was therefore bound to be more flashy than profound, or "formalistic" as it is often called. "They did not believe in liberty, which was fatal as far as teaching is concerned", wrote H. Boehmer.

"The truth is that the relative merits of the Jesuits' teaching diminished while science and the methods of education and instruction progressed and developed, on the basis of a wider and deeper conception of Humanity. Buckle said: "The more civilisation advanced, the more the Jesuits lost ground, not merely because of their own decadence, but because of all the modifications and changes in the minds of those around them... During the 16th century, the Jesuits were ahead, but during the 18th century, they were behind their time".(12)

(9,10,11) F. Charmot, S.J. op.cit., pp.318-319, 508-509, 494. (12) J. Huber, op.cit., II, p.177.

Section IV

Chapter 2

The morals of the Jesuits

The conquering spirit of their Society, the burning desire to attract consciences and hold them under their exclusive influence, could only induce the Jesuits to be more lenient with the penitents than confessors of other Orders or the secular clergy. "We do not catch flies with vinegar", rightly says the proverb.

As we have already seen, Ignatius expressed the same idea in different terms and his sons drew their inspiration from it. "The extraordinary activity deployed by the Order in the field or moral theology already shows that this subtle science had, for him, a much greater practical importance than the other sciences".(13)

Mr. Boehmer, who wrote the phrase we just quoted, reminds us that confession was very rare during the Middle Ages and the faithful resorted to it only in the gravest cases. But the domineering character of the Roman Church made the practice of it spread and grow more and more. In fact, during the 16th century, confession had become a religious duty which had to be diligently observed. Ignatius considered it most important and recommended to his disciplies that as many of the faithful as possible should observe it regularly.

"The results of this method were extraordinary. The Jesuit confessors soon enjoyed everywhere the same consideration shown to the Jesuit professors, and the confessional was considered by all as the symbol of the Order's power and activity, as were the professorial chair and the latin grammar...

"If we read Ignatius' Instructions regarding confession and moral theology, we must admit that, from the beginning, the Order was prepared to treat the sinner kindly, that as time went on, it showed more and more indulgence until this kindness degenerated into slackness...

(13) and (14) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.244-246.

"We can understand easily why this clever leniency made them such successful confessors. This is how they won the favours of the nobles and high-ups of this world who always needed the condescension of their confessors more than the mass of ordinary sinners.

"The Courts of the Middle Ages never had any all-powerful confessors. This characteristic figure appeared in the life of the Courts only in modern times and it is the Jesuit Order which implanted it everywhere".(14)

Mr Boehmer wrote: "During the 17th century, these confessors not only obtained an appreciable political influence everywhere, but even accepted, and sometimes openly, political posts or functions. It is then that Father Neidhart took the direction of Spanish politics as 'prime minister and Grand Inquisitor'; Father Fernandez sat and was entitled to speak and vote in the Portuguese Council; Father La Chaise and his successor held the functions of ministers for Ecclesiastical Affairs at the Court of France.

"Let us remember also the part played by the Fathers in general politics, even outside the confessional: Father Possevino as pontifical legate in Sweden, Poland and Russia; Father Petre, a Minister in England; Father Vota as intimate counsellor of Jean Sobieski of Poland, as 'maker of kings' in Poland, as mediator when Prussia was made into a kingdom; —one must admit that no other Order showed so much interest and talent for politics, and deployed so much activity in it than the Jesuit Order".(15)

"If the 'indulgence' of these confessors towards their august penitents helped greatly the interests of the Order and the Roman Curia, it was the same in the more modest spheres where the Fathers used similar convenient methods. With their meticulous, and even meddlesome spirit, which they inherited from their founder; the famous "casuists" such as Escobar, Mariana, Sanchez, Busenbaum, etc., applied themselves to studying each rule in particular and their applications to all the cases which could be presented at the tribunal of penance; their tracts on "moral theology" gave the Company a universal reputation as their subtlity to distort and pervert the most evident moral obligations was so apparent.

Here are some examples of these acrobatics: "The divine Law prescribes "You shall not bear false witness". "There is false witness only if the one who took the oath uses words which he knows will deceive the judge. The use of ambiguous terms is therefore allowed, and even the excuse of mental reservation in certain circumstances..." "If a husband asks his adulterous wife if she has broken the conjugal contract, she can say "no" without hesitation as that contract still exists. Once she has obtained absolution at the confessional, she can say: "I am without sin", if, while she says it, she thinks of that absolution which took the load of her sin. If her husband is still incredulous, she can reassure him by saying that she has not committed

(15) and (16) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.247-248, 238 ss.

adultery, and if she adds (under her breath) adultery she is obliged to confess."

It is not hard to imagine that such a theory was successful with their beautiful penitent ladies!

In fact, their gallant escorts were treated just as well: "The Law of God commands: "You shall not kill". "But it doesn't mean that every man who kills sins against this precept. For example, if a nobleman is threatened with blows or beating, he can kill his aggressor; but of course this right is only for the nobleman and not the plebeian, as there is nothing dishonourable for a common man to receive a beating... "In the same way, a servant who helps his master seduce a young girl is not committing a mortal sin if he can fear serious disadvantages or bad treatment in case he refuses. If a young girl is pregnant, a miscarriage can be induced if her fault is the cause of dishonour for herself or a member of the clergy."(17) As for Father Benzi, he had his hour of fame when he declared: "it is only a slight offence to feel the breasts of a nun", and, because of it, the Jesuits were nicknamed the "mamillary theologians".

But, as far as that is concerned, the famous Casuist, Thomas Lanchz, deserves the prize for his tract "De Matrimonio", in which the pious author studies with outrageous details all the varieties of "carnal sin".

Also, let us study further these convenient maxims as far as politcs are concerned, especially those relative to the legitimacy of assassinating "tyrants" found guilty of lukewarmness towards the sacred interests of the Holy See. Mr. Boehmer has this to say: "As we have just seen, it is not difficult to guard against mortal sin. Depending on circumstances, we only have to use the excellent means permitted by the Fathers: "equivocation, mental reservation, the subtle theory of the direction of intentions," and we will be able to commit, without sin, acts which are considered criminal by the ignorant masses, but in which even the most severe Father will not be able to find an atom of mortal sin".(18)

Amongst the most criminal Jesuitic maxims, there is one which roused public indignation to the highest point and deserves to be examined; it is: "A monk or priest is allowed to kill those who are ready to slander him or his community."

So, the Order gives itself the right to eliminate its adversaries and even those of its members who, having come out of it, are too talkative. This pearl is found in the "Theology of Father L'Amy".

There is another case where this principle finds its application. For, this same Jesuit was cynical enough to write: "If a Father, yielding to temptation, abuses a woman and she publicises what has happened, and, because of it, dishonours him, this same Father can kill her to avoid disgrace!"

(17) and (18) H. Boehmer, op.cit., pp.238, 241.

Another son of Loyola, quoted by "Le grand flambeau" Caramuel, thinks that this maxim must be upheld and defended: "the Father can use it as an excuse to kill the woman and so preserve his honour".

This monstrous theory was used to cover many crimes committed by ecclesiastics and probably was, in 1956, the reason if not the cause for the lamentable affair of the priest of Uruffe.

Section IV

Chapter 3

The Eclipse of the Company

The successes the Society of Jesus obtained in Europe and far-off lands, even though interspersed by some misfortunes, assured it a preponderant situation for a long time. But, as we have already mentioned, time was not working in its favour. As ideas evolved and the progress of sciences tended to liberate the minds, ordinary people and monarchs found it more and more difficult to endure the ascendancy of these champions of "theocracy". Also, many abuses, born out of its successes, impaired the Society inwardly. Apart from politics in which it was deeply involved as one has seen, to the detriment of national interests, its devouring activity had soon made itself felt in the domain of economics.

"The Fathers became involved too much in affairs which had nothing to do with religion, in commerce, exchange, as liquidators of bankruptcies. The Roman College, which should have remained the intellectual and moral model of all Jesuit colleges had cloth made in huge quantities at Macerata and sold it in fairs at a low price. Their centres in India, Antilles, Mexico and Brazil soon started trading in colonial products. At Martinique, a procurator created vast plantations which were cultivated by negro slaves".(19)

This is the commercial side of Foreign Missions which is just the same today. The Roman Church never scorned at extracting a temporal profit from her "spiritual" conquests. As far as that is concerned, the Jesuits were just like all other religious Orders; they even surpassed them. In any case, we know that, recently, the White Fathers were amongst the richest landowners in North Africa.

The sons of Loyola were as intensely active at making the best of the "pagan's" labours as at winning their souls. "In Mexico, they had silver mines and sugar refineries; in Paraguay, tea and cacao plantations, carpet factories; they also reared cattle and exported 80,000 mules every year".(20

---

(19) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., pp.190-191.

As we can see, the evangelisation of their "red children" was a good source of revenue. And to make an even bigger profit, the Fathers did not hesitate to defraud the state treasury, as seen in the well-known story of the so-called boxes of chocolate unloaded at Cadix which were full of gold powder.

Bishop Palafox, sent as apostolic visitor by Pope Innocent VIII, wrote to him in 1647 "All the wealth of South America is in the hands of the Jesuits".

Financial affairs were just as advantageous. "In Rome, the coffers of the Order made payments to the Portuguese embassy in the name of the Portuguese government. When Auguste le Fort went to Poland, Vienna's Fathers opened a credit account for this needy monarch with the Jesuits of Varsovie. In China, the Fathers lent money to the merchants at 25, 50 and even 100% interest".(21)

The scandalous greediness of the Order, its loose morals, its ceaseless political intrigues and also its encroachings upon the prerogatives of the secular and regular clergy had stirred up mortal enmity and hatred everywhere. Amongst the higher classes, it had been brought into complete disrepute and, in France at any rate, its efforts to maintain the people in a formalist and superstitious piety gave way to the inevitable emancipation of the minds.

Nevertheless, the material prosperity enjoyed by the Society, the acquired positions at the Courts and especially the support of the Holy See which they thought immovable, maintained the Jesuits in their complete assurance, even on the eve of their ruin. Had they not already gone through several storms, suffered about thirty expulsions from the time of their foundation until the middle of the 18th century? Nearly every time, they had been back sooner or later to reoccupy their lost positions.

But this new eclipse threatening them was to be nearly total, this time, and last for more than forty years.

The strange thing is that the first assault against the powerful Society came from the very Catholic Portugal, one of their principal strongholds in Europe. The influence exercised over that country by England since the beginning of the century was prqbably one of the causes of this uprising.

A treaty fixing the boundaries in America, concluded between Spain and Portugal in 1750, had given the Portuguese a vast territory east of the river Uruguay where the Jesuits were working. In consequence, the Fathers had to retreat with their converts on this side of the new frontier, on Spanish territory. So they armed their Guaranis, led a long guerilla war and finally

---

(20) Andre Mater, quoted by Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.191.

(21) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.191.

remained masters of the land which was given back to Spain.

The marquess of Pombal, Portuguese prime minister, felt really insulted. besides, this former pupil of the Jesuits had not kept their "trade-mark" and drew his inspiration from French and English philosophers rather than from his old educators. In 1757, he drove out the Jesuit confessors of the Royal family and forbade the members of the Society to preach. After several quarrels with them, he issued pamphlets to the public—one of which was "Short account of the Jesuits' kingdom in Paraguay" which made a great noise—obtained an inquiry into their conduct by pope Benedict XIV and finally banished the Society from all his territories.

The affair caused a sensation in Europe, and especially in France where, soon after, the bankruptcy of Father La Valette broke out; he was a "businessman" handling huge transactions in sugar and coffee for the Company. Its refusal to pay the Father's debts was fatal. The Parliament, not content with a civil condemnation, examined its Constitutions, declared its establishment in France illegal and condemned twenty four works of its principal authors. On the 6th of April 1762, it issued a 'statement of arrest' (Indictment) in the following terms: "The said Institute is inadmissible in any civilised State, as its nature is hostile to all spiritual and temporal authority; it seeks to introduce into the Church and States, under the plausible veil of a religious Institute, not an Order truly desirous to spread evangelical perfection, but rather a political body working untiringly at usurping all authority, by all kinds of indirect, secret and devious means..." In conclusion, the Jesuits' doctrine was described as follows: "perverse, a destroyer of all religious and honest principles, insulting to Christian morals, pernicious to civil society, hostile to the rights of the nation, the royal power, and even the security of the sovereigns and obedience of their subjects; suitable to stir up the greatest disturbances in the States, conceive and maintain the worst kind of corruption in men's hearts". In France, the Society's properties were confiscated for the benefit of the Crown and none of its members was allowed to stay in the kingdom unless he enounced his vows and swore to submit to the general rules of France's clergy.

In Rome, the Jesuits' general, Ricci, obtained from Pope Clement XIII a bull confirming the Order's privileges and proclaiming its innocence. But it was too late. In Spain, the Bourbons suppressed all the establishments of the Society, the metropolitan ones as well as the colonial ones. So ended Paguay's Jesuit State. The governments of Naples, Parma, and even the Grand-Master of Malta also banished the sons of Loyola from their territories. The 6,000 who were in Spain had a strange experience after they had been thrown in prison: "King Charles III sent all the prisoners to the pope with a grand letter in which he said that he "put them under the wise and immediate control of Your Holiness". But, when the wretches were about to disembark at Civita-Vecchia, they were welcomed with the thunder of cannon shot on the order of their own general who already had to look after the Portuguese Jesuits and couldn't even feed them. They just managed to find them a wretched sanctuary in Corsica".(22)

"Clement XIII, elected on the 6th of July 1758, had resisted a long time the pressing requests of several nations demanding the Jesuits' suppression. He was about to yield and had already arranged a consistory for the 3rd of February 1769 at which he was to tell the cardinals about his resolution to comply with the wishes of these Courts; on the night before that particular day, he suddenly felt ill as he was going to bed and cried out: "I am dying...". It is a very dangerous thing to attack the Jesuits!"(23)

A conclave assembled and went on for three months. At last, cardinal Ganganelli put on the mitre and took the name of Clement XIV. The Courts which had banished the Jesuits kept on asking for the total suppression of the Society. But the papacy was in no hurry to abolish this primordial instrument for the carrying out of its politics, and four years passed before Clement XIV, constrained by the firm attitude of his opponents, who had occupied some of the pontifical States, at last signed the Brief of dissolution: "Dominus ac Redemptor" in 1773. Ricci, the Order's general, was even imprisoned at the castle of Saint-Ange where he died a few years later.

"The Jesuits only appeared to submit to this verdict which condemned them... They wrote innumerable pamphlets against the pope and to incite rebellion; they told lies and slanders without number concerning so-called atrocities committed when their properties in Rome were confiscated".(24)

The death of Clement XIV, fourteen months later, was even attributed to them by a section of European opinion.

"The Jesuits, in principle at least, were no more; but Clement XIV knew very well that, by signing their death warrant, he was signing his own as well: "This suppression is done at last", he exclaimed, "and I am not sorry about it.. I would do it again if it was not done already; but this suppression will kill me".(25)

Ganganelli was right; soon, posters started to appear on the palace walls which invariably displayed these five letters: I.S.S.S.V.,and everyone wondered what it meant. Clement understood immediately and boldly declared: "It means "In Settembre, Sara Sede Vacante", (In September, the

---

(22) Pierre Doninique, op.cit., p.209.

(23) Baron de Ponnat, "Histoire des variations et des contradictions de l'Eglise romaine", p.215. til.

(24) J. Huber, op.cit., p.365.

(25) Caraccioli: "Vie du Pape Clement XIV" (Desant, Paris 1776, p.313).

See will be vacant', (that the Pope will be dead)".(26)

Here is another testimony: "Pope Ganganelli did not survive long after the Jesuits' suppression", said Scipion de Ricci. "The account of his illness and death, sent to the Court of Madrid by the Minister for Spain in Rome, proved that he had been poisoned; as far as we know, no inquiry was held concerning this event by the cardinals, nor the new pontiff. The perpetrator of that abominable deed was then able to escape the judgement of the world, but he will not be able to escape God's justice!"(27) "We can positively affirm that, on the 22nd of September 1774, Pope Clement XIV died by poisoning".(28)

Meanwhile, the empress of Austria, Marie-Therese, had also banished the Jesuits from all her States. Only Frederik of Prussia and Catherine II, empress of Russia, welcomed them in their countries as educators. But, in Prussia, they only managed to stay for ten years, until 1786. Russia was favourable to them longer but, there also, and for the same reason, they eventually aroused the animosity of the government.

"... The suppression of the schism and the rallying of Russia to the pope attracted them like a lamp attracts a moth. They launched an active propaganda programme in the army and aristocracy and fought against the Bible Society created by the Czar. They won several successes and converted prince Galitzine, nephew of the Minister for Worship. So the Czar intervened and we have the Ukase of the 20th of December 1815".(29)

No need to say that the grounds for this Ukase, which banished the Jesuits from Saint-Petersburg and Moscow, were the same as in all the other countries. "We came to realise that they did not fulfill the duties expected of them... Instead of living as peaceful inhabitants in a foreign country, they disturbed the Greek religion which has been since ancient times, the predominant religion in our empire and on which rests the peace and happiness of the nations under our sceptre. They abused the confidence they obtained and turned the youth entrusted to them and inconsistent women away from our worship... We are not surprised that this religious Order was expelled from every country and that their actions were not tolerated anywhere".(29)

In 1820 at last, general measures were taken to drive them out of the whole of Russia.

But, because of political events favouring it, they had set foot again in western Europe when their Order was solemnly reestablished by Pope Pius VII in 1814.

---

(26) Baron de Ponnat, op.cit., p.223.

(27) Potter: "Vie de Scipion de Ricci", (Brussels 1825), I, p. 18).

(28) Baron de Ponnat: "Histoire des variations et contradictions de l'Eglise romaine" (Charpentier, Paris 1882, II, p.224). (29) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.220.

The political significance of this decision is clearly expressed by M. Daniel-Rops, a great friend of the Jesuits. He wrote, concerning the "reappearance of the sons of Loyola": "It was impossible not to see in it an obvious act of counter-revolution".(30)

---

(30) Daniel-Rops, of the French Academy: "Le retablissement de la Compagnie de Jesus" (Etudes, September 1959).

Section IV

Chapter 4

Rebirth of the Society of Jesus during the 19th century

We mentioned that, when Clement XIV was constrained to suppress the Jesuit Order, he apparently said: "I have cut off my right hand".

The phrase seems plausible enough. The Holy See must certainly have found it hard to part with its most important instrument in the domination of the world. The Order's disgrace, a political measure imposed by circumstances, was gradually attenuated by the successors of Clement XIV: Pius VI and Pius VII; and if the official eclipse of the Jesuits lasted forty years, it was because of the upheavals in Europe resulting from the French Revolution. In any case, that eclipse was never total.

"Most of the Jesuits had stayed in Austria, France, Spain, Italy, mingling with the clergy. They met with each other or gathered in large numbers as much as possible. In 1794, Jean de Tournely founded the Society of the Sacred Heart in Belgium as a teaching body. Many Jesuits joined it. Three years later, the Tyrolean Paccanari, who thought he was another Ignatius, founded the Society of the Brothers of Faith. In 1799, the two Societies merged with Father Clariviere as the head; he was the only surviving French Jesuit. In 1803, they joined the Russian Jesuits. Something coherent was coming back to life again, but the masses, and even most of the politicians, did not recognise it at first".(31)

The French Revolution, and then the Empire, gave the Company of Jesus an unexpected credibility again; it was a defensive reaction against new ideas springing up in the ancient monarchies.

Napoleon the First described the Society as "very dangerous; she will never be allowed in the Empire". But, when the Holy-Alliance triumphed, the new "monarchs" did not disdain the help of these absolutists in bringing

(31) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.219—Here is, according to M. Daniel-Rops, the strange death of Paccacaci, founder of the Brothers of Faith: "He was brought before the Holy See, imprisoned at the castle of Saint-Ange and finally was "assassinated". (Etudes, September 1959).

back the people to a strict obedience.

But times had changed. All the skill of the good Fathers could only delay and not stop the propagation of liberal ideas and their efforts were more harmful than useful. In France, the Restoration experienced it in a bitter way. Louis XVIII, an unbeliever and clever politician, tried to contain the rise of "ultras" as much as he could. But under Charles X, narrow-minded and very devout, the Jesuits had it easy. The law which expelled them in 1764 was still being enforced. No matter. They enlivened the famous "Congregation", first kind of Opus Dei. This pious brotherhood, composed of ecclesiastics and laymen, was found everywhere, pretending to "purge" the army, the magistracy, the administration, the teaching profession; it held "missions" all over the country, planting commemorative crosses wherever it went; many of these are still there today; it stirred up the believers to fight the infidels and made itself so hateful that even the very catholic and very legitimist Montlosier exclaimed:

"Our missionaries have started fires everywhere. If something has to be sent to us, we would rather have Marseille's plague than more missionaries".

In 1828, Charles X withdrew the Order's right to teach, but it was too late. The dynasty collapsed in 1830.

Hated and covered with shame, the sons of Loyola nevertheless stayed in France, but disguised, as the Order was still officially abolished. Louis-Philippe and Napoleon III tolerated them. The Republic scattered them in 1880 only, under the administration of Jules Ferry. The closing of their establishments was effective only in 1901, under the law of separation.

During the 19th century, the Company's history in America and half of Europe was equally full of ups and downs as in the past, while fighting the new ideas.

"Wherever liberal-minded people gained victories, the Jesuits were expelled. On the other hand, when the other side triumphed, they reestablished themselves to defend the throne and the altar. So, they were banished from Portugal in 1S34, Spain in 1820, 1835 and 1868, from Switzerland in 1848, Germany in 1872 and France in 1880 and 1901.

"In Italy, from 1859 on, all their colleges and establishments were gradually taken from them, so much so that they were forced to stop all the activities prescribed in their laws. The same thing happened in the republics of Latin America. The Order was suppressed in Guatemala in 1872, Mexico in 1873, Brazil in 1874, Equador and Colombia in 1875 and Costa-Rica in 1884.

"The only countries where the Jesuits lived in peace were the States where Protestantism was in the majority: England, Sweden, Denmark, the United States of America. It may seem surprising at first glance, but the explanation lies in the fact that, in these countries, the Fathers were never able to exercise a polticial influence. Without any doubt, they accepted the fact more by necessity than inclination. Otherwise, they would have taken every opportunity to influence legislation and administration, in a direct manner by manoeuvering the ruling classes, or indirectly by constantly stirring up the Catholic masses".(32)

To be truthful, this immunity of the Protestant countries towards Jesuitic ventures was far from complete.

"In the United States", wrote M. Fulop-Miller, "the Company has deployed a systematic and fruitful activity for a long time, as she is not hindered by any laws... "I am not happy about the rebirth of the Jesuits", wrote the former president of the John Adams Union to his successor Thomas Jefferson, in 1816. "Swarms of them will present themselves under more disguises ever taken by even a chief of the Bohemians, as printers, writers, publishers, school teachers, etc. If ever an association of people deserved eternal damnation, on this earth and in hell, it is this Society of Loyola. Yet, with our system of religious liberty, we can but offer them a refuge..." And Jefferson answered his predecessor: "Like you, I object to the Jesuits' reestablishment which makes light give way to darkness".(33)

The fears so expressed were to be proved right, one century later, as we shall see.

---

(32) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.285.

(33) Rene Fulop-Miller, op.cit., pp. 149-150.

Chapter 5

The Second Empire and the Falloux Law—The War of 1870

In the previous chapter, we mentioned the wide tolerance enjoyed by the Society of Jesus in France, under Napoleon III, even though it was officially prohibited. In any case, it could not be otherwise as that regime owed its existence—largely at least—to the Roman Church whose support never failed, as long as the regime lasted. But it was to be very costly for France.

The readers of the "Progres du Pas-de-Calais", a publication for which the future emperor wrote several articles in 1843 and 1844, could not then suspect him of leniency towards "ultramontanism", judging from the following:

"The clergy demands, under the cover of freedom of teaching, the right to instruct youth. The State, on the other hand, also demands the right to direct public instruction for her own interests. This struggle is the result of divergent opinions, ideas and feelings between government and Church. Both want to influence the new generations coming up in opposite directions and for their own benefit. We do not believe, as one well-known orator does, that all ties between the clergy and civil authority must be broken in order to stop this diversion. Unfortunately, France's ministers of religion are generally opposed to democratic interests; to allow them to build schools without control is to encourage them to teach the people the hatred of revolution and liberty".

And again: "The clergy will stop being ultramontane as soon as one compells them to be brought up, as formerly in an up-to-date manner and to mingle with the people gaining their education from the same sources as the general public."

Referring to the way in which German priests were trained, the author clarifies his thoughts in the following manner: "Instead of being shut away from the rest of the world, from childhood, and so be instilled in the seminaries with hatred for the society in which they must live, they would learn early to be citizens before being priests".(34)

This did not encourage political clericalism for the future sovereign, then a "Carbonari". But the ambition to sit on the throne soon made him more docile towards Rome. Did not Rome herself help him climb the first step?

"Having been made president of the Republic on the 10th of December 1848, Louis Napoleon Bonaparte gathers several ministers around himself, one of which is M. de Falloux. Who is this M. de Falloux? A tool of the Jesuits... On the 4th of January 1849, he institutes a commission whose job is to "prepare a big legislative reform of primary and secondary education"... In the course of the discussion, M. Cousin takes the liberty to remark that maybe the Church is wrong to tie her destiny to the Jesuits. Monseigneur Dupanloup defends energetically the Society... A law on teaching is being prepared which would "make amends" to the Jesuits. In the past, the State and the University had been protected against the Jesuits' invasions; we were wrong and unjust; we demanded that the government applied its laws against these agents from a foreign government and we ask their forgiveness for it. They are good citizens who were slandered and misjudged; what can we do to show them the respect and esteem which are due to them?

"Put in their hands the teaching of the young generations".

"This in fact is the aim of the law of the 15th of March 1850. This law appoints a superior council for Public Instruction in which the clergy dominates, (first art.); it makes the clergy masters of the schools, (art.44); it gives religious associations the right to create free schools, without having to explain about the non-authorised congregations (Jesuits), (art. 17,2); it said that the letters of obedience would be their diplomas, (art.49); M. Barthelemy Saint-Hilaire tries in vain to demonstrate that the aim of the authors of that project is to give the monopoly to the clergy, and that this law would be fatal to the University... Victor Hugo exclaims, also vainly: "This law is a monopoly in the hands of those who try to make teaching come out of the sacristy and the government out of the confessional".(35)

But the Assembly ignores these protestations. It prefers listening to M. de Montalembert who exclaims: "We will be swallowed up if we don't stop immediately the current trend of rationalism and demagogy; what's more, it can be stopped only with the help of the Church".

"M. de Montalembert adds these words to make sure the significance of this law is well described: "To the demoralising and anarchical army of teachers, we must oppose the army of the clergy". The law was passed. Never before in France had the Jesuits won a more complete victory.

M. de Montalembert admitted it proudly... He said: "I am defending justice by backing as well as possible the government of the Republic, which has done so much to save order and maintain the union of the French people; it especially rendered more services to the Catholic Church than all the other governments in power during the last two centuries".(36)

---

(34) "Oeuvres de Napoleon III" (Amyot et Plon, Paris 1856, II, pp.31 and 33). (35) Adolphe Michel, op.cit., pp.66 ss.

All this happened more than one hundred years ago, but seems rather familiar today. But let us see how the "Republic", presided over by prince Louis-Napoleon, was acting internationally.

The revolution of 1848 had, amongst other repercussions in Europe, provoked the uprising of the Romans against Pope Pius IX, their temporal sovereign, who had fled to Gaete. The Roman Republic had been proclaimed. Through a scandalous paradox, it was the French Republic, in agreement with the Austrians and the king of Naples, who put back on the throne the undesirable sovereign.

"A French regiment besieged Rome, took it on the 2nd of June 1849 and restored pontifical power; it managed to maintain itself with the help of a French division of occupation which left Rome only after the first disasters in the Franco-German war of 1870".(37)

This beginning was very promising.

"The coup of the 2nd of December 1851 brought about the proclamation of the Empire. Louis-Napoleon, President of the Republic, had favoured the Jesuits in every way. Now emperor, he refused nothing to his accomplices and allies. The clergy poured out its blessings and "Te Deum" profusely on the massacres and proscriptions of the 2nd of December. The one responsible for this abominable ambush was looked upon as a providential saviour: "The archbishop of Paris, Monseigneur Sibour, who saw the massacres on the boulevard, exclaims:

"The man who was prepared by God has come; the finger of God was never more visible than in the events which produced these great results".

The bishop of Saint-Flour said from his pulpit: "God pointed out Louis-Napoleon; He already had elected him to be emperor. Yes, my dear brethren, God consecrated him beforehand through the blessing of His pontiffs and priests; He acclaimed him Himself; can we not recognise God's elect?"

The bishop of Nevers falsely saluted "Providence's visible instrument". "These pitiable adulations, which could be multiplied still further, deserved a reward. This reward was a complete freedom given to the Jesuits as long as the Empire lasted. The Society of Jesus was literally master of France for eighteen years... she enriched herself, multiplied her establishments and spread her influence. Her action was felt in all the important events of that time, especially in the expedition to Mexico and the declaration of war in

---

(36) Adolphe Michel, op.cit. pp.55,66.

(37) Larousse, VII, p.371.

187O".(38)

"The Empire means peace", declared the new sovereign. But, barely two years after he acceeded to the throne, the first of all those wars which succeeded each other throughout his reign started; history could regard the motives which brought about these wars as unconnected if we didn't see what united them: the defence of the Roman Church's interests. The Crimean war, the first of these mad enterprises which weakened us and was not nationally profitable, is a characteristic example.

It was not someone anticlerical, but the Abbe Brugerette, who wrote: "One must read the speeches the famous Theatine (Father Ventura) gave in the chapel of Les Tuileries during Lent in 1857. He presented the Empire's restorationas God's work... and praised Napoleon III for having defended the religion in Crimea and made the great days of the Crusades shine a second time in the East... The Crimean war was regarded as a compliment to the Roman expedition... It was praised by the whole clergy, full of admiration for the religious fervour of the troops besieging Sebastapol. Saint-Beuve movingly narrated how Napoleon III had sent an image of the Virgin to the French fleet".(39)

What was this expedition which aroused the enthusiasm of the clergy. M. Paul Leon, member of the Institute, explains: "A quarrel between monks revives the question of the East: it was born out of rivalries between the Latin and Orthodox Churches regarding the protection of the Holy places (in Palestine). Who would watch over Bethlehem's churches, hold the keys, direct the work? How is it possible that such small matters could set two great empires against each other?... But, behind the Latin monks is France's Catholic party, provided with ancient privileges and supporter of the new regime; behind the growing demands of the Orthodox, who had grown in numbers, is the Russian influence".(40)

The Czar invokes the protection of the Orthodox Church which he has to assure and, to make it effective, asks that his fleet should use the Dardanelles passage; England, which is backed by France, refuses, and the war breaks out.

"France and England can reach the Czar only through the Black Sea and the Turkish alliance... From now on, the war of Russia becomes the Crimean war and is entirely centered on the siege of Sebastopol, a costly episode without issue. Bloody battles, deadly epidemics and inhuman sufferings cost France one hundred thousand dead".(41)

We must point out that these one hundred thousand dead were Christ's soldiers and glorious "martyrs of the faith", according to Monseigneur Sibour, Archbishop of Paris, who declared at that time: "The Crimean war, between France and Russia, is not a political war, but a holy war; it is not a State fighting another State, people fighting other people, but singularly a war of religion, a Crusade..."(42)

---

(38) Adolphe Michel, op.cit., pp.71-72.

(39) Abbe J. Brugerette: "Le Pretre francais et la societe contemporaine" (Lethielleux, Paris 1933, I, pp.168 and 180).

(40) and (41) Paul Leon, of the Institute, "La guerre pour la Paix", (Ed. Fayard, Paris 1950 pp.321-323).

The admission is not ambiguous. Anyway, haven't we heard the same, not long ago, during the German occupation, expounded in identical terms by the prelates of His Holiness Pius XII and by Pierre Laval himself, president of the Council of Vichy?

In 1863, it is the expedition to Mexico. What is it about? To transform a lay-republic into an empire and offer it to Maximilien, archduke of Austria. Austria is the papacy's number one pillar. The aim is also to erect a barrier which would contain the influence of the Protestant United States over the States of South America, strongholds of the Roman Church.

M. Albert Bayet wrote with sagacity: "The war's aim is to establish a Catholic empire in Mexico and curtail the peoples' right to self rule; as during the Syrian campaign and the two Chinese campaigns, it tends especially to serve catholic interests".(43)

We know how, in 1867, after the French army had re-embarked, Maximilien, the unfortunate champion of the Holy See, was made prisoner when Queretaro surrendered and was shot dead, making way for a republic of which the victor Juarez was president.

Nevertheless, the time was getting nearer when France was to pay, once again, much more dearly for the political support the Vatican assured the imperial throne. While the French army was spilling its blood in the four corners of the world, and getting weaker while defending interests which were not hers, Prussia, under the heavy hand of the future "iron chancellor", was busy expanding its military might in order to unite the German states in a single block." Austria was the first victim of its will and power. In agreement with Prussia which was to seize the Danish duchess of Schleswig and Holstein, Austria was cheated by her accomplice. The war which followed was soon won by Prussia at Sadowa on the 3rd of July 1866. It was a terrible blow for the ancient Hapsburg monarchy which was declining; the blow was just as hard for the Vatican, as Austria had been for so long its most faithful stronghold within the germanic lands. From novw on, Protestant Prussia will exercise her hegemony over them. Unless... the Roman Church finds a "secular arm" capable of stopping completely the expansion of the "heretic" power.

But who can play this part in Europe apart from the French Empire? Napoleon III, "the man sent by Providence", will have the honour of avenging Sadowa. The French army is not ready. "The artillery is out of date. Our cannons are still loaded through the muzzle", wrote Rothan, French minister at Francfort who can see disaster coming. "Prussia knows of her superiority and our lack of preparation", he adds with many other observers. The war instigators are not concerned. The candidature of a Hohenzollern prince for the vacant Spanish throne is the excuse for that conflict; also, Bismark wants it. When he faked the dispatch of Ems, the advocates of war had the game in their hands and they aroused public opinion.

---

(42) Quoted by Monseigneur Journet: "Exigences chretiennes en politique"(Ed. L.V.F. Paris 1945, p.274).

(43) Albert Bayet: "Histoire de France" (Ed. du Sagittaire, Paris 1938, p.282).

France herself declared war. this "war of 1870 which was proved by history to be the work of the Jesuits", as M. Gaston Bally wrote.

The composition of the government which sent France to disaster is described as follows by the eminent catholic historian, Adrien Dansette: "Napoleon III started by sacrificing Victor Duruy, then resolved to appoint to his government men from the people's party (January 1870). The new ministers were nearly all sincere catholics, or ecclesiastics believing in social conservatism".(44)

It is easy to understand, now, what was inexplicable: the haste of this government to extract a "casus belli" from this faked dispatch, even before receiving a confirmation.

"The consequences were: the collapse of the Empire and the counter-coup for the papal throne which followed... The imperial edifice and the papal edifice, crowned by the Jesuits, fell in the same mud, in spite of the Immaculate Conception and papal infallibility; but, alas! it was over the ashes of France".(45)

---

(44) Adrien Dansette: "Histoire religieuse de la France contemporaine" (Ed. Flammarion, Paris 1948, I, p.432)

(45) Gaston Bally, op.cit., pp.100, 101.

Section IV

Chapter 6

The Jesuits in Rome—the Syllabus

One can read, in a book from the Abbe Brugerette, the following passage in the chapter entitled "The clergy under the Second Empire":

"Particular devotions, old or new, were honoured more and more at a time when romanticism still exalted the senses to the detriment of austere reason. The worship of saints and their relics, restrained for so long by the cold breath of rationalism, had taken a new vigour. The worship of the holy Virgin, thanks to apparitions at La Salette and Lourdes, acquired an extraordinary popularity. Pilgrimages to these places privileged by miracles multiplied.

"The French Episcopate... favoured new devotions. It warmly and thankfully welcomed, in 1854, the encyclical letter of Pius IX proclaiming the dogma of the Immaculate Conception... It was also the episcopate, brought together in Paris, in 1856, for the baptism of the imperial Prince, who asked Pius IX that the feast of the Sacred-Heart... should be made into a solemn feast of the universal Church".(46)

These few lines clearly show the preponderant influence exercsied by the Jesuits under the Second Empire, in France as much as over the Holy See, As we saw earlier on, they were and remain the great propagators of these "particular devotions, old or new", this "perceptible" and almost sensual piety made the masses excessively scrupulous in religious matters, especially women. As far as that is concerned, we must admit that they were realists. The time had gone—already under Napoleon III—when the public as a whole, the learned and the ignorant, took a deep interest in theological questions. Intellectually, Catholicism had ended its career.

It is then more by necessity than because of their formation that the sons of Loyola endeavoured, during the 19th century and today, to awaken superstitious religiosity, especially amongst women who make up most of the flock; this was to counter-balance "rationalism", For the secondary education of girls, the Order promoted the founding of several congregations of women. "The most famous and active was the "Congregation des Dames du Sacre-Coeur"; in 1830, it comprised 105 houses with 4,700 teachers and its influence over the higher classes was very important".(47)

---

(46) Abbe J. Brugerette: "Le pretre francais et la societe contemporaine", (Ed. Lethielleux Paris 1933, I, pp. 183-184).

As far as the worship of Mary is concerned, which was always so dear to the Jesuits, it was greatly helped, under the Second Empire, by the very opportune "apparitions" of the Virgin to a little shepherdess of Lourdes; this happened two years after Pius IX promulgated the dogma of the Immaculate Conception (1854), at the instigation of the Company of Jesus. The main acts of this pontificate were all victories for the Jesuits whose all-powerful influence over the Roman Curia affirmed itself more and more. In 1864, Pius IX published the encyclical letter "Quanta Cura", accompanied by the "Syllabus" which anathematized the best political principles of the contemporary societies.

"Anathema on all that is dear to modern France! Modern France wants the independance of the state; the 'Syllabus' teaches that the ecclesiastical power must exercise its "authority without the assent and permission of the civil power. Modern France wants the liberty of conscience and liberty of worship; the'Syllabus' teaches that the Roman Church has the right to use force and reinstate the Inquisition. Modern France acknowledges the existence of several types of worship; the 'Syllabus' declares that the Catholic religion must be considered as the only religion of the state and all others are excluded. Modern France proclaims that the people are sovereign; the 'Syllabus' condemns universal suffrage. Modern France professes that all French people are equal before the law; the 'Syllabus' affirms that ecclesiastics are exempt from ordinary civil and criminal tribunals."

"These are the doctrines taught by the Jesuits in their colleges. They are at the front of the army of counter-revolution... Their mission consists of bringing up the youth put in their care with a hatred for the principles on which French society rests, principles laid down by former generations at a great cost. By their teaching, they try to divide France into two and call into question all that has been done since 1789. We want harmony, they want strife; we want peace, they want war; we want France to be free, they want her enslaved; they are a combatant society receiving its orders from outside; they are fighting us, let us defend ourselves; they threaten us, let us disarm them".(48)

(47) H. Boehmer, op.cit., p.290.

(48) Adolphe Michel: "Les Jesuites" (Sandoz et Fischbacher, Paris 1879, pp.77 ss)

The Holy See's everlasting pretension to dominate civil society was then reaffirmed, as Renan had already said in 1848, in an article entiled "Clerical liberalism": "It demonstrated that the people's sovereignty, the liberty of conscience and all modern liberties were condemned by the Church. It presented the Inquisition as "the logical consequence of the whole orthodox system", as "the summary of the Church's spirit". It added: "When she will be able to, the Church will bring back the Inquisition; if she doesn't do it, it is because she cannot do it".(49)

The power of the Jesuits over the Vatican was shown even more strongly, a few years after the 'Syllabus', when the dogma of Pontifical Infallibility was promulgated; the Abbe Brugerette wrote that this dogma was to "throw over the tragic years of 1870-1871, which put France into mourning, the brightness of a great Christian hope".

The same author added: "One can say that, during the first half of the year 1870, the Church of France was not in France anymore; she was in Rome, passionately busy with the General Council which Pius IX had just called at the Vatican..." "According to Monseigneur Pie, this French clergy had completely "thrown off its own liveries, maxims and French or Gallic liberties". This bishop of Poitiers added that it was done as a sacrifice to the principle of authority, sound doctrine and common right; it placed all that under the feet of the sovereign pontiff, made a throne of it for him and sounded the trumpet, saying: "The pope is our king; not only is his will our command, but his wishes are our rules".(49a)

The resignation of the whole of a "national" clergy into the hands of the Roman Curia is clear enough and, because of it, the subjection of the French Catholics to the will of a foreign despot who, under the cover of dogma or morals, was going to impose on them his political directions without any opposition. The liberal Catholics protested in vain against the exorbitant pretention of the Holy See to dictate its laws in the name of the Holy Spirit. The Abbe Brugerette informs us, their head, M. de Montalembert, published in the Gazette de France an article in which he vehemently protested against those who "sacrifice justice and truth, reason and history, to the idol they set up at the Vatican".(50)

Several notorious bishops such as Fathers Hyacinthe Loyson and Gratry took the same line; the latter not without spirit; Father Gratry said: "He published successively his four Letters to Monseigneur Deschamps. In them, he did not merely discuss historical events, such as the condemnation of Pope Honorius, who, according to him, opposed the proclamation of pontifical infallibility; but, in a sharp and bitter manner, he denounced also the contempt of authoritative catholics for the truth, and scientific integrity. One of them, an ecclesiastical candidate for the Doctorate of

(49), (49a) and (50) Abbe J. Brugerette, op.cit., pp.221, 223.

Theology, even dared to justify false decretals before the Faculty of Paris, declaring that "it was not an odious fraud". And Gratry added: "Even today it is being stated that Galileo's condemnation was opportune". "You, men of little faith, with miserable hearts and sordid souls! Your tricks are scandalous. On the day when the great science of nature was raised above the world, you condemned it."

"Do not be surprised if men, before forgiving you, expect from you confession, penance, deep contrition and amends for your faults".(51) No need to say that the Jesuits, inspiring agents of Pius IX and all-powerful over the Council, were not anxious about confession, penance, contrition or reparation, at a time when they almost reached the goal they had set themselves at the Council of Trent, in the middle of the 16th century. At that time Lainez already supported the idea of papal infallibility.

It only meant consecrating as a dogma a pretention nearly as old as the papacy itself. No other Council until then had been willing to ratify it, but the time seemed just right, then; besides, the patient work of the Jesuits had prepared the national clergy for the surrender of their last liberties; the imminent collapse of the popes' temporal power—it happened before the Council voted—called for a reinforcement of his spiritual authority, according to the ultramontanes. The argument prevailed and the"dictatus papae" of Gregory VII, principles of the mediaeval theocracy, triumphed right in the middle of the 19th century.

What the new dogma especially consecrated was the omnipotence of the Company of Jesus in the Roman Church.

"Under the cover of the Jesuits, who have established themselves at the Vatican since the secular powers have rejected them from all free countries as an association of malefactors, the papacy has aspired to new ambitions. These evil men, who have made the Gospel into a Spectacle of tears and blood and remain the worst enemies of democracy and freedom of thought, dominate the Roman Curia; all their efforts concentrate on maintaining, in the Church, their pernicious preponderance and shameful doctrines."

"Dedicated to the cause of extreme centralisation, irreducible apostles of theocracy, they are the recognised masters of contemporary Catholicism and stamp their seal on its theology, its official piety and its crooked politics".

"True janissaries of the Vatican, they inspire everything, rule everthing, penetrate everwhere, set up "informing" as a system of government, faithful to a casuistry whose profound immorality has been revealed by history and inspired Pascal's immortal pages of sublime mockery. Through the 'Syllabus' of 1864 which they themselves drew up, Pius IX declared war on all free thought and sanctioned, a few years later, the dogma of infallibility which is a real historical anachronism and of which modern science could not care less".(52)

---

(51) Father Gratry, quoted by the Abbe J. Brugerette, op.cit., p.229.

For those who, against all probability, would persist to see a spiteful exaggeration and disparagement in the lines we just quoted, we cannot do better than present the confirmation itself of these facts, from the very orthodox pen of M. Daniel-Rops. This confirmation carries even more weight by the fact that it was published in 1959, under the title "The Reestablishment of the Company of Jesus", in the Jesuits' own publication "Etudes". It is then in a true speech for the defence that we read:

"For many reasons, this reorganisation of the Company of Jesus had a considerable historical importance. The Holy See rediscovered this faithful band, utterly devoted to its cause, and which was to be needed soon after. Many Fathers were to exercise, during that century and until now, a discreet, but deep influence on certain dispositions taken by the Vatican; a kind of proverb was even heard in Rome: "The pope's penholders are Jesuits". Their influence was obvious in the development of the worship of the Sacred-Heart as well as in the proclamation of the dogma of the Immaculate Conception, in the editing of the 'Syllabus' as well as in the definition of 'Infallibility'. The "Civilta Cattolica", founded by the Neapolitan Jesuit Carlo Curci, was supposed to reflect the pope's thought during most of Pius IX's pontificate".(53)

This confession is clear enough. We would only remind the departed spirit of this pious academician that, logically, and judging by all the previous context, it was rather the pope's thought which was reflected in the opinions of the "Civilta Cattolica".

No need to say that the Jesuits, all-powerful in Rome, as much because of their spirit as of their organisation, were going to engage the papacy in international politics more and more, as M. Louis Roguelin wrote: "Since she lost her temporal power, the Church of Rome took advantage of every opportunity to regain all the ground she was constrained to abandon, through a recrudescence of diplomatic activities; as her cleverly concealed scheme is to divide in order to reign, she tried to turn every conflict in her favour."

Boivent, 1927, pp.79 to 81).

(53) Daniel-Rops: "Le Retablissement de la Compagnie de Jesus" (Etudes, September 1959)

According to the plan of Loyola's subjects, the dogma of Papal infallibility greatly favoured this action of the Holy See, whose importance can be measured from the fact that most states have a diplomatic representative accredited to it. Under the cover of dogma and morals, subjects which in principle restrict the infallible word, the pope today disposes of an unlimited authority over the consciences of the faithful. So, during the 20th century, we see the Vatican actively engaged in the interior and exterior politics of countries, and even govern them thanks to Catholic parties. What's more, we will see it support "providential" men such as Mussolini and Hitler who, because of its help, will unleash the worst kind of catastrophes.

Christ's vicar acknowledged profusely the services of this famous society which worked so hard and well in his favour. These "sons of Satan" as some brave ecclesiastics qualified them, are all tarnished, but they can, in return, boast about the august testimonial of complete satisfaction accorded to them by the deceased pope S.S. Pius XII whose confessor, we know, was a German Jesuit.

In this text, published by "La Croix" on the 9th of August 1955, we can read: "The Church does not want auxiliaries of another type than those of this Company... may the sons of Loyola strive to follow the footprints of former ones..."

Today, like yesterday, they are doing just that, to the great evil of the nations.

Chapter 7

The Jesuits in France from 1870 until 1885

The collapse of the Empire should, it seems, have brought about a reaction against the ultramontane spirit in France. But it was not so as Adolphe Michel shows:

"When the throne fell into the mud of Sedan on the 2nd of December, when France was definitely defeated, when the Assembly of 1871 met at Bordeaux, while waiting to come to Versailles, the clerical party was more audacious than ever. In all the disasters befalling the homeland, it spoke as master. Who wouldn't remember the Jesuits' presumptuous manifestations and their insolent threats during these past few years? Like a certain Father Marquigny announcing the civil burial of the principles of '89; or M. de Belcastel, on his own authority, dedicating France to the Sacred-Heart; the Jesuits erecting a church on the hill of Montmartre, in Paris, and so defying the Revolution; the bishops prompting France to declare war on Italy in order to reestablish the temporal power of the pope..."(54)

Gaston Bally explains very well the reason for that apparently paradoxical situation: "During that cataclysm, the Jesuits, as always, quickly went back into their hole, leaving the Republic to get herself out of the muddle as best she could. But when most of the work had been done, when our territory was delivered from the Prussian invasion, the black invasion started again and "pulled the chestnuts out of the fire". The land was just emerging from a kind of nightmare, a terrible dream, and it was just the right time to get hold of the panic-striken masses".(55)

But is it not the same after every war? It is an incontestable fact that the Roman Church has always benefited from the great public disasters; that death, misery and sufferings of every kind incite the masses to search for illusive consolations in pious practices. In that way, the power of those who let loose these disasters is strengthened, if not increased, by the victims themselves. As far as that is concerned, the two world wars had the same consequences as the one of 1870.

---

(54) Adolphe Michel: op.cit., pp.72, 73.

(55) (56) and (57) Gaston Bally, op.cit., pp. 101,107,108,109.

Then, France was conquered; on the other hand, it was a brilliant victory for the Company of Jesus when, in 1873, a law was passed, allowing the building of a basilica of the Sacred-Heart on Montmartre Hill. This church, said to be a "National wish", by a cruel irony no doubt, was going to materialise in stone the triumph of Jesuitism, at the place where it commenced its life.

At first glance, this invocation to the Sacred-Heart of Jesus extolled by the Jesuits may seem, though basely idolatrous, quite innocent.

"To realise the danger", wrote Gaston Bally, "we must look behind the facade, witness the manipulation of souls and see the aim of their various associations: the Brotherhood of "Perpetual Adoration"; the Brotherhood of the "Guard of Honour", the Apostolate of Prayer, the Reparative Communion, etc, etc. The brotherhoods, associates, apostles, missionaries, worshipers, zealots, guards of honour, restorers, mediators and other federates of the Sacred-Heart seem to intend exclusively to, as Mademoiselle Alacoque invited them to, unite their homage to those of the nine choirs of Angels.

So, in reality, it is far from innocent. "The brotherhoods stated their aims many times. They couldn't accuse me of slandering them; I will but quote a few passages from their most clear declarations and gather up their confessions.

"Public opinion was shocked with the remarks of Father Olivier when the victims of the Bazaar of Charity were buried. The monk had seen in the catastrophe only another proof of divine clemency. God was saddened by our "mistakes" and was inviting us, gently, to make amends.

"This seemed monstrous. The building of the Basilica on Montmartre was a result of the same "thought", but this was forgotten".(56)

What was then the terrible sin France had to confess? The aforementioned author answers: "...THE REVOLUTION".

This is the abominable crime we must "expiate".

"And the Basilica of the Sacred-Heart symbolises France's repentance (Sacratissimo cordi Jesu Gallioe poenitens et devoter); it expresses also our firm intention to repair the wrong-doings. It is a monument of expiation and reparation..."(57)

"Save Rome and France in the name of the Sacred-Heart", became the anthem of the Moral Order.

"So we were able to hope against all hopes", wrote the Abbe Brugerette, "and expect from the "pacified heaven" some time or other the great event of the restoration of order and the salvation of the homeland."(58)

It seems though that "heaven", angered with the France of the rights of man, was not "pacified" enough by the erection of the famous basilica, the three candle snuffers, as the "restoration of order", or rather the monarchical restoration, was slow in coming. The same author explains it in the following manner:

"Even though the grandiose manifestations of the Catholic faith, during the years following the war of 1870, may seem impressive, it would be a lack of the sense of observation if French society of that epoch was judged only on the grounds of that exterior piety; we would also be lacking in psychological spirit and be outside the truth. We must wonder then if the religious sentiment was a direct answer, for the whole of that society, to the expression of faith revealed by the imposing pilgrimages organised by the bishops and the earnestness of the masses in the churches...

"Without wanting to attentuate in any way the importance of the religious move in France brought about by the two wars of 1870 and 1914, which also raised such high hopes, we must nevertheless admit that this revival of the faith had not the depth, nor the extent which a true religious renewal would have...

"For, even then, the Church of France was unfortunately comprised of not only thousands of unbelievers and adversaries, but also a very large number of those who were catholics only by name and not conviction. Religious practices were performed, not by conviction, but rather from habit...

"Soon after it was done, France seemed to regret the desperate move which made her send a Catholic majority to the National Assembly, for, five months later, she reversed her position at the complementary elections of the 2nd of July! On that day, the country was to elect 113 deputies. It was a complete defeat for the Catholics and victory for between 80 to 90 Republicans. All the elections following that consultation of universal suffrage had the same character of republican and anticlerical opposition. It would be childish to pretend that they were not the expression of society's sentiments and wishes".(59)

The Abbe Brugerette, speaking about the great pilgrimages organised at that time for the "uplifting of the country", admits that they were the cause of "some mistakes and excesses" which aroused the suspicions of the "Church's adversaries".

"The pilgrimages will be for them enterprises organised by the clergy for the restoration of monarchy in France and pontifical power in Rome. And the attitude taken by the clergy on these two aims will look like justifying this accusation from the irreligious press and will give, on that account, as we shall see later, a mighty impetus to anticlericalism. Without breaking away from its religious habits revived so much during the years after the war, French society will rebel against this "government of priests", as

(58) and (59) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.10 to 14.

Gambetta stigmatized it. Deep down, the French people had kept an invincible instinct of resistance against anything which even vaguely resembled the Church's political domination. On the whole, this nation loved religion, but the spectre of "theocracy" revived by the opposition press frightened it. The eldest daughter of the Church did not want to forget that she was also the mother of Revolution".(60)

Yet, the clergy with the Jesuits at their head were making such efforts to persuade the French people to abjure the republican spirit!

"Since the Falloux law was enforced, the Jesuits, expanded freely their colleges where they brought up the children of the ruling middle-classes and they obviously did not teach them a great love for the Republic..."

"As for the "Assumptionists" created in 1845 by the intransigent Father d'Alzon, they wanted to give back to the people the faith it had lost..."(61) But there were many other envious flourishing teaching congregations:

Oratorians, Eudistes, Dominicans of the Third-Order, Marianits, Marists, which Jules Simon called "the second volume" of the Jesuits bound in asses skin and the famous "Brothers of the Christian Schools", better known under the name of Ignorantins, who taught the "good doctrine" to the offsprings of the middle-classes as well as to more than one and a half million children of the ordinary people.

It is not surprising that this situation put the republican regime on the defensive. A law, proposed in 1879 by Jules Ferry, wanted to remove the clergy from the Councils for Public Instruction into which they had been introduced by the laws of 1850 and 1873, and give back to the state's faculties the exclusive right to grade the degrees of the teachers. Article 7 of this law also specified that "no one would be allowed to take part in public or free teaching if he belongs to an unauthorised religious congregation".

"The Jesuits are aimed at before anyone else in that famous article 7. The priests of the deanery of Moret (Seine-et-Marne) will declare then that "they are on the side of all religious communities, including the venerable Fathers of the Company of Jesus". "To strike them", they write, "is to strike ourselves"... The confession is explicit.

The Abbe Brugerette, who wrote that passage, describes the resistance put up by the Catholics against what he calls a "treacherous attack", but he adds:

"The clergy still ignore the immense progress of the laity; it has not understood yet that, because of its opposition to the principles of '89, it has lost all deep influence over the direction of public spirit in France".(62)

Article 7 is rejected by the Senate, but Jules Ferry invokes the existing laws concerning the congregations.

(60) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.164, 165.

(61) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., p.29.

(62) (63) (64) and (65) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.164, 165, 166, 167, 176, 185.

"In consequence, on the 29th of March 1880, the "Journal Officiel" contains two decrees compelling the Jesuits to break up, and all unauthorised congregations of men and women to "obtain recognition and approval for their regulations and legal status within three months..."

Without any delay, a movement of opposition is organised; "The Church, deeply wounded, is aroused", according to M. Debidour. After the 11th of March, Leo XIII and his Nuncio express a grievous protestation...

"Now it is the turn of all the bishops to defend energetically the religious Orders".(63)

The sons of Loyola were nevertheless expelled. But let us listen to what the Abbe Brugerette has to say on that subject: "In spite of all, the Jesuits, experts at re-entering through the windows when they have been thrown out through the door, had already been successful in putting their colleges into the control of laymen or secular ecclesiastics. Even though not residing in these colleges, they could be seen coming in at certain times of the day to perform duties of direction and supervision".(64)

But the deceit was discovered and the Jesuits' colleges finally closed.

In all, the decrees of 1879 were enforced on 32 congregations who refused to submit to the legal dispositions. In many places, the expulsion was carried out by the military arm "manu militari" against the opposition of the faithful aroused by the Fathers. These not only refused to ask for the legal authorisation, but also refused to sign a declaration disclaiming all idea of opposition to the republican regime; this would have been enough for M. de Freycinet, then president of the Council and favouring them, to still "tolerate" them. When the Orders decided to sign this formal declaration of loyalty, the manoeuvre had been made void and M. de Freycinet had to resign because he had tried to negotiate this accord against the wishes of parliament and his colleagues of the Cabinet.

The Abbe Brugerette comments on the declaration the religious Orders had to sign and found so repugnant:

"This declaration of respect for the institutions France gave herself freely... may seem very harmless and inoffensive, today, when compared with the solemn oath of loyalty demanded from the German bishops by the Concordat of the 20th of July 1933 between the Holy See and the Reich.

"Article 16.—"Before taking possession of their diocese, the bishops will take an oath of loyalty before the president of the Reich or a competent Reichsstatthalter in the following terms:

"Before God and on the Holy Scriptures, I swear and promise, as a bishop should, loyalty to the German Reich and the State. I swear and promise to respect and make my clergy respect the government established according to the constitutional laws. As is my duty, I will work for the good and in the interests of the German State; in the exercise of the holy ministry entrusted to me, I will try to stop everything which would be detrimental to it". (Concordat between the Holy See and the German Reich)(65).

The difference is certainly great between a mere promise of non-opposition to France's regime and this solemn pledge to uphold the nazi state. Just as great as the difference between the two regimes, one democratic and liberal, so hated by the Roman Church, the other totalitarian and brutally intolerent, wanted and set up by the united efforts of Franz von Papen, the pope's secret chamberlain, and Monseigneur Pacelli, nuncio in Berlin and future Pius XII.

It is again the Abbe Brugerette who, after having declared that the governnment's aim had been reached as far as the Company of Jesus was concerned, admits also:

"We could not speak of the destruction of the institution of congregations. The women's congregations had not been touched and the authorised ones, "as dangerous as the others for the lay spirit", were still standing. We knew also that nearly all the men's congregations, expelled from their houses because of the decrees of 1880, had quietly gone back to their monasteries".(66)

But this lull was short-lived. The intention of the state to collect taxes and rights of succession on the wealth of the ecclesiastical communities provoked a general outcry amongst them, as they had no intention to submit to the common law. "The organisation of resistance was the work of a committee directed by the PP. Bailly, "Assumptionist", Stanislas, a Capuchin, and Le Dore, superior of the Eudists... Father Bailly was reviving the great zeal of the clergy by writing: "Like Saint Laurent, the monks and nuns must go back to the rack or thumb-screws rather than surrender".(67)

As by accident, the main revivalist of that "great zeal", Bailly, was an "Assumptionist", or, in fact, a camouflaged Jesuit. As for the rack and the thumb-screws, we could have reminded the good Father that these instruments of torture are in the tradition of the Holy-See and not the one of the republican state.

Finally, the congregations paid—about half of what they owed—and the aforementioned Abbe admits that "the prosperity of their work was not impaired", as we can well imagine.

We cannot go into details concerning the laws of 1880 and 1886 which tended to assure the confessional neutrality of the state schools, this "secularisation"(67a) which is natural to all tolerant minds, but is rejected by the Roman Church as an abominable attempt at forcing consciences, something she has always claimed for herself. We could expect her to fight for this so-called right as violently as for her financial privileges.

---

(66) and (67) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., pp. 185,196,191.

(67a) See Jan Cotereau: "Anthologie des grands textes laiques" (Fischbacher, Paris)

In 1883, the Roman congregation of the Index, inspired by Jesuitism, enters the fight by the condemnation of certain school books on moral and civic teaching. Of course, the matter is grave: one of the authors, Paul Bert, dared to write that even the idea of miracles "must vanish before the critical mind!" So, more than fifty bishops promulgate the decree of the Index, with fulminating comments, and one of them, Monseigneur Isoard, declares in his pastoral letter of the 27th of February 1883 that the teachers, the parents and the children who refuse to destroy these books will be barred from the sacraments.(67b)

The laws of 1886, 1901 and 1904, declaring that no teaching post could be held by members of religious congregations, also started a flood of protestations from the Vatican and the "French" clergy. But, in fact, the teaching monks and nuns only had to "secularise" themselves. The only positive result of these legal dispositions was that the professors of the schools "so-called free" had from now on to produce adequate pedagogic qualifications, a good thing when we know that, before the last war, the catholic primary schools in France numbered 11, 655 with 824,595 pupils As for the "free" colleges, and especially the Jesuits', if their number is being reduced it is because of several factors which have nothing to do with the legal wrangles. The superiority of the university's teaching, acknowledged by the majority of parents, and, more recently, its being without change, are the main causes for its growing popularity. Besides, the Society of Jesus has voluntarily reduced the number of its schools.

(67b) See Jean Cornec: "Laicite" (Sudel, Paris).

Section IV

Chapter 8

The Jesuits and General Boulanger
The Jesuits and the Dreyfus Affair

The hostility of which the devout party pretended to be the victim, at the end of the 19th century, from the Republican state, would not have lacked justification, even though this hostility, or more accurately mistrust, had been even more positive. In fact, the clerical opposition to the regime which France gave herself freely showed itself at every opportunity, according to the Abbe Brugerette. In 1873, the attempt to restore monarchy with the Count of Chambord failed, even though strongly supported by the clergy, because the Pretender stubbornly refused to adopt the tricoloured flag, to him the emblem of Revolution.

"Such as it is, Catholicism seems bound to politics, or to a certain kind of politics... Loyalty to the Monarchy was transmitted from generation to generation in the old noble families as well as in the middle-classes and the common people, in the Catholic regions of the West and South. Their nostalgia of an ancient and idealised Regime, pictured in an epic Middle Age was coupled with the wishes of fervent Catholics whose main preoccupation was the salvation of the religion; they rallied, behind Veuillot, with the legitimate and devout royal family of Chambord, considered to be the form of government most favourable to the Church. Out of the union of these political and religious forces was born, in the strained situation after the war, a kind of reactionary mysticism, illustrated perfectly by Monseigneur Pie, bishop of Poitiers, and its best incarnation in the ecclesiastical world: "France, who awaits another chief and calls for a master..., will again receive from God "the sceptre of the Universe which fell from her hands for a while", on the day when she will have learned anew how to go down on her knees".(68)

This picture, described by a Catholic historian, is significant. It helps to understand the moves which followed, a few years later, the unsuccessful restoration attempt of 1873.

---

(68) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., II, pp.37, 38.

The same Catholic historian describes in the following manner the political attitude of the clergy at that time:

"At election time, the presbyteries become centers for the reactionary candiates; the priests and officiating ministers make home-calls for the electoral propaganda, slander the Republic and its new laws on teaching they declare that those who vote for the free-thinkers, the present government or freemasons described as "bandits", "riffraffs" and "thieves", are guilty of mortal sin. One declares that an adulterous woman will be forgiven more easily than those who send their children to lay schools, another one: that it is better to strangle a child than give support to the regime, a third one: that he will refuse the last sacraments to those who vote for the regime's partisans. The threats are carried out: republican and anticlerical tradesmen are boycotted; destitute people are refused any help and workmen are dismissed".(69)

These excesses from a clergy affected more and more by Jesuitic ultramontanism are even less acceptable from the fact that they emanate "from ecclesiastics paid by the government, as the Concordat is still enforced".

Also, the majority of public opinion is not happy at all with this pressure on the consciences, as the aforementioned author writes:

"As we have seen, the French people, as a whole, is indifferent to religious matters, and we cannot mistake the hereditary observance of religious practices for a real faith... "The fact is that the political map of France is identical to her religious map... we can say that in the regions where faith is strong, the French people vote for Catholic candidates elsewhere, they consciously elect anticlerical deputies and senators... They do not want clericalism, which is ecclesiastical authority in the matter of politics and commonly called "the government of priests".

"For a large number of Catholics, the fact that the priest, this troublesome man, interferes through the sermon's instructions and the confessional's prescriptions in the behaviour of the faithful, checking thoughts, sentiments, acts, food and drink, and even the intimacies of married life, is enough; they intend, at least, to limit his empire by preserving their independence as citizens".(70)

We would like to see this spirit of independence as lively today.

But, even though the opinion of that "large number of Catholics" was such, the ultramontanes would not disarm and pursue, at every opportunity, the fight against the hated regime. They thought for a white that they had found the "providential man" in the person of General Boulanger, minister for War in 1886, who, having organised his personal

---

(69) and (70) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., II, pp.46, 47, 48.

propaganda extremely well, looked like being a future dictator.
"A tacit agreement", wrote M. Adrien Dansette, "is established between the general and the Catholics, and becomes clear during the summer... He has also concluded a secret agreement with royalist members of parliament such as Baron de Mackau and Count de Mun, faithful defenders of the Church at the Assembly...

'The phlegmatic minister for the Interior, Constans, threatens to arrest him and, on the 1st of April, the dictator candidate escapes to Brussels, with his mistress.

"From now on, "Boulangism" declines rapidly. France has not been taken: she recovers... "Boulangism" is crushed at the polls on the 22nd of September and 6th of October 1889..."(71)

We can read, from the pen of the same historian, what the attitude of the pope of that time was regarding this adventurer; he was Leo XIII who, in 1878, had succeeded Pius IX, the pope of the Syllabus, and who pretended to advise the faithful of France to join the republican regime:

"In August (1889), the German ambassador to the Vatican pretends that the pope sees in the general (Boulanger) the man who will overthrow the French Republic and re-establish the throne; we can read an article in which the "Monitor of Rome" envisages that the dictatorial candidate will take over power and that the Church "could benefit greatly from it"... General Boulanger sent one of his former officers to Rome with a letter for Leo XIII in which he promises the pope "that on the day when he would hold in his hands the sword of France, he would do his uttermost to make the rights of the papacy acknowledged".(72)

Such was this Jesuit pontiff; the intransigent clerics objected to his supposed excess of "liberalism"!

The boulangist crisis revealed well enough the action led by the religious party against the lay Republic, under the cover of nationalism. But the colourless nature of the principal character, as well as the resistance of a majority of the nation, had defeated the attempt in spite of all this forced agitation. Nevertheless, these chauvinistic tactics had proved quite effective, especially in Paris, and they were to be used again at another, and better, opportunity. This came about—or was it provoked?—and the disciples of Loyola were, of course, at the head of this movement. "Their friends are here", wrote M. Pierre Dominique, "a bigoted nobility, a bourgeoisie which rejects Voltaire, and many military men. They will especially work on the army, and the result will be the famous alliance of "the sword and the sprinkler of Holy water".

"In 1890, it is not the king of France's conscience they rule any more, but the general-staff, or, at least, its chief; then, the "Dreyfus Affair" breaks out, a real civil war which divides France into two".(73)

---

(71) and (72) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., II, pp.114 ss.

The Catholic historian, Adrien Dansette, sums up the beginning of the Affair as follows:

"On the 22nd of December 1894, the Captain of artillery Alfred Dreyfus is proved guilty of treason, condemend to deportation for life imprisonment and cashiering. Three months earlier, our Intelligence Service had discovered, at the German Embassy, a list of several documents to do with national defence; it established a resemblance between the writing of Captain Dreyfus and the one on that list Immediately, the general-staff cried out: "It's him; it's the Jew". They only had this presumption as the treason had no psychological explanation (Dreyfus had a good reputation, was rich and led an orderly life); the unfortunate man is neverthelsss imprisoned, condemned by a military tribunal after an inquiry so swift and partial that the judgement must have been preconceived. To make it worse, it will be learned later that a secret document was given to the judges, without the knowledge of the counsel for the accused...

"But there was more leakage at the general-staff after Dreyfus' arrest and commandant Picquart, chief of the Intelligence Service after July 1895, learns of a certain project called "petit bleu" (express letters), between the German military attache and the French commandant (of Hungarian origin) Esterhazy; he is a disreputable man who has nothing but hatred and contempt for his country of adoption. But an officer in the Intelligence Service, Commandant Henry, adds to the Dreyfus file,—as we shall see- a false document which would be crushing for the Jewish officer if it was genuine; he also erases and re-writes the name of Esterhazy on the "petit bleu" to give the impression that the document was faked. So Picquart is disgraced in November 1896".(74)

The disgrace of the chief of the Intelligence Service is easy to understand: his zeal to dissipate the accumulated darkness was too excessive.

The most trustworthy testimony is found in the "Carnets de Schwartzkoppen", published after his death, in 1930. It was from Esterhazy, and not Dreyfus, that the author, then first military attache at the German embassy in Paris, received secret documents of the French national defence.

"Already sometime before, in July, Picquart thought the time had come to warn by letter the chief of the general-staff, who was then in Vichy, about his suspicions concerning Esterhazy. The first meeting was on the 5th of August 1896. General de Boisdeffre approved of everything Picquart had done so far concerning this affair and gave him the permission to carry on with his investigation. "The minister for War, General Billot, was equally informed from August about Picquart's suspicions; he also sanctioned the measures taken by Picquart. Esterhazy, whom I had dismissed, had tried, using his connections with the deputy Jules Roche, to be posted to the ministry for War. presumably to try to get in touch with me again, and had written several letters to the minister for War as well as to his aide-de-camp. One of his letters was given to Picquart who, for the first time, realised that his writing was the same as the one on the "list"! He showed a photo of that letter to Du Paty and Bertillon, without telling them, of course, who wrote it... Bertillon said: "Oh, that's the writing on the list!"(75) "Feeling his conviction of Dreyfus' culpability crumbling away, Picquart decided to consult the "small file" which had been given only to the Judges, The archivist Gribelin gave it to him. It was evening. Left alone in his office, Picquart opened Henry's unsealed envelope, on which was Henry's paraph written with a blue pencil... Great was his amazement when he realised the nullity of those pitiful documents, none of which could be applied to Dreyfus. For the first time, he knew that the condemned man on the "Ile du Diable" (Devils Island) was innocent. The following day, Picquart wrote a letter to General de Boisdeffre in which he exposed all the charges against Esterhazy and his recent discovery. When reading about that "secret file", the general jumped up, exclaiming: "Why was it not burned as agreed?"(76) Von Schwartzkoppen wrote further: "My position became extremely uncomfortable. This question was before me: should I tell the whole truth and so repair the horrible mistake and liberate that poor innocent man? If I had been able to act as I wanted to, I would certainly have done just that! Looking at these things in detail, I came to the conclusion that I shouldn't get involved in that matter, for, as things were, nobody would have believed me; also, diplomatic considerations were standing in the way of such an action. Considering that the French government was able to take the necessary measures to clear the matter and make up for the injustice, I really made up my mind not to do anything".(77)

---

(73) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.239.

(74) and (78) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., II, pp.263, 264.

"We can see coming to life the tactics of the general-staff, notes Adrien Dansette: "If Esterhazy is guilty, the officers who provoked the illegal condemnation of Dreyfus, and most of all General Marcier, minister for War at that time, are guilty also. The interests of the army require the sacrifice of Dreyfus; we must not interfere with the sentence of 1894".(78) We remain dumbfounded, today, at the thought that such an argument could be invoked to justify, if we dare express ourselves so, an iniquitous

(75) and (77) "Les Carnets de Schwartzkoppen" Rieder, Paris 1933, pp.147, 148, 162.

(76) Armand Charpentier, "Histoire de l'affaire Dreyfus" (Fasquelle, 1933, p.73).

(78) See earlier on.

condemnation. It was to be so all through the Affair which was then just beginning. Of course, we were then in an Anti-Semitic fever. The violent dissertations of Edouard Drumont, in the "Libre Parole", showed up every day the children of Israel as agents of national corruption and dissolution. The unfavourable prejudice so created incited a large section of public opinion to believe, "a priori", in Dreyfus' guilt. But, later, when the innocence of the accused became evident, the monstrous argument of the "infallibility" of the military tribunal was still upheld, and from now on with a perfect cynicism.

Was it the Holy Spirit inspiring these judges in uniform who could not make any mistake? It would be tempting to believe in that celestial intervention—so similar to the one which guarantees papal infallibility-when we read about Father du Lac, of the Company of Jesus, who had a lot to do with the Affair:

"He directed the college of the "Rue des Postes" where the Jesuits prepared the candidates for the larger Schools. He is a very intelligent man with important connections. He converted Drumont, is the confessor of de Mun and de Boisdeffre, chief of the Army's general-staff, whom he sees every day".(79)

The Abbe Brugerette also mentions the same facts quoted by Joseph Reinach: "Is it not this Father du Lac who converted Drumont and urged him to write "The Jewish France", who supplied the means to create the "Libre Parole"? Does not General de Boisdeffre see the famous Jesuit every day? The chief of the general-staff doesn't take any decision before consulting first his director".(80)

There, on Devil's Island, which deserves its name so well in that deadly climate, the victim of this atrocious plot was treated in an extremely cruel manner, as the Anti-Semitic press had spread the report that he had tried to escape. The minister for Colonies, Andre Lebon, gave orders accordingly.

"On the Sunday morning, the 6th of September, the head warder, Lebar, informed his prisoner that he would not, from then on, be allowed to walk in the part of the island which had been reserved for him, and that he would be confined to his hut. In the evening, he was told that he would be chained at night. At the foot of his bed, made up of three planks, were rivetted two double iron shackles which encircled the convict's feet. When the nights were torrid, this punishment was especially painful."

"At dawn, the guards unfastened the prisoner who, when he got up, trembled on his feet. He was forbidden to leave his hut where he had to stay day and night. In the evening, he was shackled again, and this went on for forty nights. After a while, his ankles were covered with blood and they had to be bandaged; his guards, moved with compassion, secretly wrapped up his Icet before chaining them".(81)

---

(79) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.240.

(80) (83) and (85) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.454, 432, 467.

Nevertheless, the convict still proclaimed his innocence; he wrote to his wife: "There must be somewhere, in this beautiful and generous land of France, an honest man who is couragous enough to search for, and discover, the truth".(82)

In fact, the truth was not in doubt any more. What was lacking was the will to let it burst forth. The Abbe Brugerette himself testifies of the fact: "The presumptions of innocence of the convict on Devil's Island multiply in vain; M. de Bulow's declarations at the Reichstag and those transmitted by M. de Munster, his ambassador, to the French government, also state the innocence of Dreyfus in vain; an innocence proclaimed also by Emperor Guillaume and confirmed when Schwarzkoppen (the German military attache) was recalled to Berlin as soon as Esterhazy was accused by Mathieu Dreyfus (brother of the convict). The general-staff remains opposed to any re-examination of the trial... Someone is busy covering up for Esterhazy. Secret documents are communicated to him for his defence, and even his writing is not allowed to be compared with that on the "list"...

"Shielded in that way, the villain Esterhazy is audacious enough to ask to appear before a Council of war. There, he is unanimously acquitted, on the 17th of January 1898, after a deliberation lasting three minutes".(83)

We must mention that, a few months later, when Colonel Henry was convicted of forgery, Esterhazy fled to England and, in the end, confessed that he was the author of the famous "list" attributed to Dreyfus.

We cannot cite all the many happenings in this drama, the forgeries added to more forgeries in an attempt to conceal an obvious truth, the dismissal of the chief of the general staff, the downfall of ministers, the suicide of Henry, detained at Mont Valerien, who slit his throat and so signed with his own blood the confession of his culpability.

In December 1898, this semi-official note was published by the German press: "The declarations of the imperial government have established that no German personality, high or low, had any kind of relations with Dreyfus. Then, from the German point of view, we see no inconvenience as to the unabridged publication of the secret file.(84)

At last, the inevitable re-examination is decided by the High-Court. Dreyfus has to appear again before the council of war at Rennes, on the 3rd of June 1899, and it is the start of another torture for him. "He could not suppose that he was to meet hatred more odious than when he left and that his former chiefs, conspiring to set him again on the road to Devil's Island,

(81) Armand Charpentier, op.cit., p.75.

(82) "Lettres d'un innocent", January and February 1895.

(84) Maurice Paleologue: "Journal de l'Affaire Dreyfus" (Plon, Paris 1955, p. 149)

would have no pity for this wretch, this poor creature who thought he has endured all the suffering there is to endure".(85)

"So", wrote the Abbe Brugerette, "the council of war at Rennes will only add a new injustice to the iniquity of the 1894 trial. The illegality of this trial, the guilt of Esterhazy, the criminal manoeuvres of Henry will come out clearly during the twenty-nine sessions of that trial at Rennes. But the council of war... will judge Dreyfus on other spying charges which were never the cause of an accusation or report. All the previous leakages will be attributed to him and documents will be produced which had nothing to do with him... At last, and contrary to all our legal traditions, we will require that Dreyfus himself establish that such a document or paper was not handed over by him, as if it was not the task of the prosecution to prove the crime any more".(86)

The partiality of Dreyfus' accusers was so obvious that public opinion outside France was aroused. In Germany, the semi-official "Cologne Gazette" published, on the 16th and 29th of August, in the middle of the trial, two articles in which we read the following phrase: "If, after the declarations of the German government and the debates of the highest court of appeal in France, someone still believes Dreyfus guilty, we can only answer that person that he must be mentally ill or he conscious wants an innocent to be condemned".(87)

But the hatred, nonsense and fanaticism were not disarmed for all that

Even new forgeries were used, replacing those which had lost all credit. To sum it all up, it was nothing more than sinister buffoonery. The end of it, for Dreyfus, was the condemnation to ten years' detention, with mitigating circumstances!

"This miserable trial provoked an indignant stupor all over the world France was despised. Who could have imagined such terrible sorrow?"(88) exclaimed Clemenceau at the reading of English and German newspapers. Mercy was indispensable. Dreyfus accepted it to "carry on", said he, "seeking the reversal of the awful military mistake of which he was the victim. "For this reversal, it was no use counting on the justice of the Councils of war. This justice had been seen at work! It came, once again, from the highest court of appeal which, after thorough investigations and long debates, annulled once and for all the verdict of Rennes. A few days later, the Assembly and Senate, by a solemn vote, reinstated Dreyfus in the army: Dreyfus, upon whom was conferred the Legion of Honour and who was publicly reinstated".(89)

---

(85) See earlier on

(86) and (89) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.469, 471, 472.

(87) Maurice Paleologue, op.cit., p.237.

(88) "L'Aurore", 14th of September, 1899.

This late reversal, obtained so laboriously, was due to "honest and couragous" men, such as those the innocent on Devil's Island wished to see coming forth. Their number grew more and more as truth came to light. After the swift acquittal of the traitor Esterhazy, by a Council of war in January 1898, Emile Zola published in the "Aurore", Clemenceau's publication, his famous open letter "I accuse". He wrote: "I accuse the first Council of war to have violated the law by condemning an accused person on the grounds of some document remaining secret, and I accuse the second Council of war to have covered up this illegality by committing also a judicial crime in knowingly acquitting a culprit".

But the "knights" of our famous Company were on the watch out to hush up anything which could have enlightened the public. A question from the Catholic deputy de Mun brought Zola before the Assize Court of the Seine, and the couragous writer was condemned to one year imprisonment, the maximum penalty, as a result of this iniquitous trial.

Public opinion had been deceived so well by the outcries of the "clerico-nationalists" that the elections of May 1898 were in their favour.

Nevertheless, the public revelation of forgeries, the dismissal of the chief of the general-staff, the evident criminal partiality of the judges opened the eyes of those sincerely seeking the truth more and more. But these came almost exclusively from the ranks of the Protestants, Jews and laymen.

"In France, the Catholics were few and far between, among whom few were prominent, who took sides with Dreyfus... The action of this handful of people made very little noise. The conspiracy of silence surrounded it..."(90)

"Most priests and bishops remain convinced of Dreyfus' culpability", wrote the Abbe Brugerette. Georges Sorel declares also: "While the Dreyfus affair brought division amongst all social groups, the Catholic world was absolutely united against a re-examination." Peguy himself admits that "all the political forces of the Church have always been against Dreyfus".

Must we recall the lists of subscriptions open by the "Libre Parole" and "La Croix", in favour of the widow of the forger Henry who committed suicide? The names of the subscribing priests were often accompanied by "comments not very evangelical", as we are told by M. Adrien Dansette who quotes these:

"A certain Abbe Cros asks for a bedside mat made of Jewish skin which he would be able to stamp on morning and evening; a young priest would like to crush Reinach's nose with his heel; three priests would love to slap the filthy face of the Jew Reinach".(91)

(89) See earlier on.

(90) and (91) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., II, pp.275, 276.

Only the secular clergy is still somewhat reserved. In the Congregations, things are more virulent:

"On the 15th of July 1898, prize-giving day at the College of Arcueil, presided over by Generalissimo Jamont (vice-president of the Superior Council of War), Father Didon, rector of the School Albert-le-Grand, gave a violent speech in which he advocated using violence against the men whose crime had been the couragous denunciation of a military error...

"Must we", said the eloquent monk, "let the wicked go free? Certainly not! The enemy is: intellectualism pretending to despise force, and civilians wanting to subordinate the military. When persuasion has failed, when love(!) has been ineffectual, we must brandish the sword, spread terror, chop off heads, make war, strike..."

"This speech seemed to be a challenge thrown before all the sympathisers of that condemned wretch".(92)

But how many of them have we heard since then? These calls to bloody repressions, coming from gentle clerics, especially during the German occupation! As for the cry of hatred against intellectualism, we can find the perfect echo to it in this declaration from a certain general: "When someone speaks of intelligence, I draw my revolver".

To crush the thought by force is a principle of the Roman Church which has never altered.

The Abbe Brugerette wonders, however, about the fact that nothing disturbed the clergy's belief in the culpability of Dreyfus: "Such a great and dramatic event, coming like a clap of thunder in a blue sky and bringing to light the Department for forgeries operating at the general-staff, must have opened the eyes, even of those not wanting to find the truth. We are referring to the discovery of forgeries made by Henry...

"Had not the time come for the French clergy and the Catholics to repudiate a mistake which had gone on for too long... They, the priests and the faithful could have gone, en-masse, and at the eleventh hour like the workmen mentioned in the gospels, to increase the ranks of the defenders of justice and truth... But the most evident facts do not always shed their light on minds dominated by certain prejudices, as prejudices are opposed to examination and, by their nature, rebel against evidence".(93)

Anyway, what efforts are made to maintain Catholics in error! "Could they guess that they were scandalously deceived by a press stubbornly keeping covered all the proofs of innocence, all the testimonies favourable to the convict of Devil's Island, and also determined to impede the course of Justice by any means?"(94)

At the forefront of that press was "La Libre Parole", created, as we have seen, with the help of the Jesuit Father du Lac, and "La Croix" of the "Assumptionist" Father Bailly. The Order of "Assumption" being a camouflaged branch of the Company of Jesus, we must then attribute to them the start and pursuit of the anti-Dreyfus campaign.

---

(92) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, p.451.

(93) (94) and (96) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.443, 444, 448.

A not very suspicious witness, Father Lecanuet, writes boldly: "The Congregations and especially the Jesuits are denounced by the Affair's historians. And, this time, we must admit that the Jesuits took the first shot with a very thoughtless temerity".(95)

"The provincial Catholic newspapers, such as the "Nouvelliste" of Lyon, to informative and widely read, will nearly all take part in that dark plot against truth and justice. It seems that the watchword was passed around to stop light breaking through and to keep the public in the dark".(96)

In reality, one would need a peculiar blindness not to discern, behind the furor shown by the "Croix" in Paris and in the provinces, the "watchword" mentioned by the Abbe Brugerette. And one would also be very naive not to know the origin.(96a)

M. Adrien Dansette says this also: "It is the "Assumptionist" Order as a whole and with it the Church which are exposed by the campaign of "La Croix"... Father Bailly boasts that the 'Holy-Father' approved of him".(97)

In fact, there isn't any doubt concerning that approval! The Jesuits, to whom the " Assumptionists" lend their name, are they not, since the Order was founded, the pope's political instruments? We have to smile at the story cleverly spread around—which is echoed by apologist historians—that Leo XIII had apparently "advised moderation" to the directors of "La Croix". It is a classical trick, but still somewhat efficacious. Today, there are still some folk who believe in a kind of "independence" of the Holy-See's official voice!

Let us see now what was published in Rome itself by the "Civilta Cattolica", the Jesuits' official publication, under the title "Il caso Dreyfus":

"The Jews' emancipation has been the result of the so-called principles of 1789, whose yoke weighs heavily on all French people... The Jews hold the Republic in their hands, which is more Hebraic than French... The Jew has been created by God to be used as a spy wherever some treason is being prepared... It is not only in France, but also in Germany, Austria and Italy that the Jews must be excluded from the nation. Then, with the great harmony of former times re-established, nations will find again their lost happiness".(98)

---

(95) Father Lecanuet, "Les Signes avant-coureurs de la Separation", p. 179. (96a) The newspaper "La Croix" was then widely published. (Note of the author).

(97) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., p.277.

(98) The "Civilta Cattolica" of the 5th of February 1898.

In the previous chapters, we gave a short summary of the "great harmony" and "happiness" enjoyed by the nations when the sons of Loyola heard the confessions and inspired the kings. As we have just seen, "harmony" was also reigning when they were the confessors and counsellors of the general-staffs chiefs.

According to the Abbe Brugerette, General de Boisdeffre, penitent of the Jesuit Father du Lac, tasted the same bitterness as many others before him who were equally deceived by these "directors of consciences". The confessions of the forger Henry put him under an obligation to resign. "Being a very honest man, he will himself proclaim that he was "Scandalously deceived", and those who knew him were aware that he felt very bitter about the "plot" of which he had been the victim".(99)

And the Abbe Brugerette adds that he stopped "all communications" with his former confessor "and even refused to see him again when dying".

After reading all this, written and published in the "Civilta Cattolica", it would be superfluous to dwell even deeper on the Order's culpability and we can only agree with what Joseph Reinach wrote then: "You see, it is the Jesuits who contrived this dark affair. And, for them, Dreyfus is only a pretext. What they want, and they admit it, is to strangle the laity and a redirected French Revolution..., abolish foreign gods, the dogmas of 1789".

This is clear enough. But, as some still insist, against all evidence, that there was a possible disagreement between the pope and his secret army, between the intentions of one and the actions of the other, it is easy to show the emptiness of such a supposition. The case of Bailly is very enlightening in that aspect.

What can we read in "La Croix" of the 29th of May 1956? Nothing less than this: "As we have announced, His Eminence Cardinal Feltin ordered a research into Father Bailly's writings; he was the founder of our publication and the "Maison de la Bonne Press". Here is the text of that ordinance dated 15th of May 1956:

"We, Maurice Feltin, by the grace of God and of the apostolic Holy-See, cardinal-priest of the Holy Roman Church whose title is Holy-Mary-of-Peace, archbishop of Paris.

"In view of the plan submitted by the Congregation of the Assumption's Augustinians and approved by us, to introduce in Rome the cause of God's servant Vincent-de-Paul Bailly, founder of "La Croix" and "Bonne Press". "In view of the dispositions... and instructions of the Holy See regarding the act of beatification and research into the writings of God's servants: "We have ordered and order the following: "Anyone who knew this servant of God or who can tell us something special about his life must let us know about it... "Anyone who possesses writings of this servant of God must let us have them before the 30th of September 1956, be it printed books, handwritten notes, letters, memoranda... even instructions or advices not written by him, but which he dictated... "For all these communications, we designate Canon Dubois, secretary of our archbishopric, and promoter of faith for this cause".(100)

---

(99) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, pp.435, 454.

Here is a "servant of God" well on the way to receive the just reward for his loyal services in the form of a halo. And we dare say that, as far as his "writings" are concerned and which were so carefully searched for, the "promoter of faith" will have too much to choose from. As for the "printed" material, the collection of "La Croix", especially between 1895 and 1899, will supply the most edifying kind.

"Their attitude (of the Catholic newspapers), and especially the one of "La Croix", constitute at the moment for all "enlightened and upright minds", what M. Paul Violet, Catholic member of the Institute calls an "indescribable scandal"; and this scandal upholds, in the Dreyfus Affair, the most shocking mistakes, the lying and crime against truth, uprightness and justice. "The Court of Rome", he adds, "knows it, as all the Courts of Europe do".(101)

Indeed, the Court of Rome knew better than anyone else! As we have seen, in 1956, she had not forgotten the pious exploits of this "servant of God" as she was preparing his beatification.

No doubt, the promoter of faith credited our future "saint" with those famous lists of subscriptions in favour of the widow of the forger Henry, about which the Abbe Brugerette says: "Today, when we consider those calls for the Inquisition to be brought back, for the persecution of the Jews, for the murder of Dreyfus' defenders, it is like listening to the delirious imaginations of wild and grotesque fanatics. Nevertheless, these are presented to us by "La Croix" as a great, comforting and cheering spectacle".(102)

All those pious wishes concerning the Jews, Father Bailly did not have the joy to see them realised, in his lifetime, by these wild fanatics, under the swastika. He could only take delight in that "great, comforting and cheering spectacle" from heaven, even though, up there, spectacles of that sort are quite common, according to the "learned", and especially Saint Thomas d'Aquin, the Angel of the School:

"In order to help the saints enjoy their blessedness more, and increase their thanksgivings to God, they are allowed to contemplate in all its awfulness the torture of the godless... The saints will rejoice in the torments of the godless". (Sancti de poenis impiorum gaudebunt) (103).

---

(100) "La Croix" of the 29th of May 1956.
(101) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., p.443.
(102) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, p.450.

As we can see, Father Bailly, Founder of "La Croix", had what it takes to make a saint: persecute the innocent, curse those who defend him, give them up to be murdered, uphold with all one's strength lying and iniquity, stir up discord and hatred; these are, to the eyes of the Roman Church, solid titles for glory, and we can understand her wish to bestow the halo on the author of these pious deeds.

However, this question is asked, "Is this 'servant of God' a wonder-worker also? Because we know that, to deserve such a promotion, one must have accomplished miracles well and truly checked."

What were the miracles accomplished by the director-founder of "La Croix"? Was it the transmutation, for his readers, of black into white and white into black? To have presented a lie as the truth and the truth as a lie? Naturally, but a greater miracle was the fact that he persuaded members of the general-staff (and then the public) that, after having committed an initial mistake, and when this mistake was discovered, it was in their "honour" to deny the evidence, transforming in that way the mistake into abuse of power! "Errare humanum est, perseverare diabolicum". The "servant of God" was not taking much notice of that proverb. Instead of letting it inspire him, he hid it under his cassock. In fact, the"mea culpa" is for the simple faithful and not the ecclesiastics, nor—as we have just seen— for the military chiefs who have Jesuit confessors.

The result—searched for—was the exaltation of partisan passions and the division of the French people.

This is stated by the eminent historian Pierre Gaxotte: "The Dreyfus Affair was the decisive turning point... judged by officers, it involved the military institution... The Affair grew, became a political conflict, divided families, cut France into two. It had the effects of a war of religion... It created hatred against the officers corps... It started anti-militarism".(104)

When we think of Europe at that time, Germany over-equiped with arms and surrounded by her two allies, when we recollect the Vatican's responsibility in the start of the 1914 conflict, we cannot believe that the diminution of strength in our military potential was not premeditated.

How could we not notice that, in fact, the "Dreyfus Affair" started in 1894, the year of the Franco-Russian alliance. Then, the spokesmen of the Vatican were very outspoken about the accord with a "schismatic" power which, to their eyes, was a scandal. Even today, a "prelate of His Holiness", Monseigneur Cristiani, dares write:

"Through politics strangely blind and ill considered, our country seemed to take pleasure in provoking war-like inclinations in her formidable

(103) "Somme theologique", in Supple. XCIV, I, 3.

(104) Pierre Gazotte, de l'Academie Francaise, "Histoire de Francais" (Flammarion, Paris 1951, tome II, pp.516, 517.

neighbour (Germany)... In fact, the Franco-Russian alliance seemed to threaten Germany with encirclement".(105)

For the respectable prelate, the Triple Alliance (Germany, Italy, Austria-Hungary) was not a threat to anyone and France was wrong not to stay isolated before such a block. With three against one, the "coup" would have been easier and our Holy Father the pope would not have had to deplore, in 1918, the defeat of his champions.

---

(105) Mgr Cristiani, "Le Vatican politique" (Ed. du Centurion, Paris 1957, p. 102).

Chapter 9

The Years before the war—1900-1914

So, as wrote the Abbe Brugerette: "Under the image of Jesus crucified, divine symbol of the idea of justice, "La Croix" had passionately co-operated with the work of deception and of crime against truth, uprightness and justice".(106)

Justice had nevertheless triumphed in the end and the Abbe Fremont, who did not fear mentioning the sinister crusade led by Innocent III against the Albigenses when referring to the Affair, seemed to be a true prophet when he said:

"The Catholics are winning and they think they will overthrow the Republic because of the hatred for the Jews. But they will, I am afraid, only overthrow themselves".(107)

In fact, when opinion was enlightened, the reaction was fatal. Ranc had learned the lesson of the Affair when he exclaimed: "The Republic will break the power of the Congregations, or she will be strangled". In 1899, a ministry "of republican defence" was constituted; Father Picard, superior of the "Assumptionists", Father Bailly, director of "La Croix", and ten other members of that Order were brought to trial before the tribunal of the Seine for breach of the law on associations. The Congregation of the "Assumptionists" was dissolved.

Waldek-Rousseau, president of the Council, declared in a speech pronounced at Toulouse on the 28th of October 1900: "Dispersed, but not suppressed, the religious Orders formed themselves again, bigger in numbers and more militant; they cover the territory with the network of a political organisation whose links are innumerable and tightly knit, as we have seen through a recent trial".

At last, in 1901, a law is passed, ruling that no Congregation can be formed without an authorisation, and that those who do not ask for it within the legal time will be automatically dissolved.

---

(106) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., II, p.478.

(107) Agnes Siegfried: "L'Abbe Fremont" (F. Alcan. Paris 1932, II, p.163).

It will be these regulations, quite natural on the part of public authorities whose duty it is to check the associations found in their territory, which will be presented to the Catholics as an intolerable abuse. "A man's house is his castle", goes the saying; but the Church is not having any of it: the common law is not for her.

The resistance of the clerics to the application of the law would be enough to show how necessary it was. This resistance will only strengthen the government's attitude, especially under minister Combes; and Rome's intransigence, especially when Pius I succeeded to Leo XIII, will bring ubout the law of 1904, abolishing the teaching Orders.

After that, friction between the French government and the Holy See will be constant. Besides, the election of the new pope was done in significant circumstances.

"Leo XIII died on the 20th of July 1903. The conclave, meeting to designate his successor, gives, after several ballots, 29 votes for Cardinal Rampolla,—42 are needed to be elected—, when the Austrian Cardinal Puzyna stands up and declares that His Apostolic Majesty the Emperor of Austria, king of Hungary, is inspired officially to exclude the secretary of State to Leo XIII. We know that Cardinal Rampolla is pro-French".(108)

Cardinal Sarto is elected. Through the manoeuvre of Austria, which substituted itself for the Holy-Spirit to "inspire" the cardinals of the conclave, this election is a victory for the Jesuits. Indeed, the new pontiff, described as a mixture of "village priest and archangel with a fiery sword", is the perfect type of man wished for by the Order. This is what M. Adrien Dansette says about it:

"When we love the pope, we do not limit the field in which he can and must exercise his will".(109)

Or this from his first consistorial address: "We know that we will shock many people when we declare that we will necessarily be involved in politics. But anyone wanting to judge fairly can see that the Sovereign Pontiff, invested by God with a supreme authority, doesn't have the right to separate politics from the domain of faith and morals".(110)

So Pius X, as soon as he had acceeded to Saint-Peter's throne, publicly declared that, for him, the pope's authority must be felt in every domain, and that political clericalism is not only a right but a duty. He also chose for his secretary of State a Spanish prelate, Monseigneur Merry del Val who was thirty-eight years old and, like him, passionately pro-German and anti-French. This state of mind is not surprising when we read these words from the Abbe Fremont:

---

(108) (109) and (110) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., pp.317, 318, 319.

"Merry del Val, whom I met at the Roman College, was the "Jesuits' favourite pupil". (111)

The relations between the Holy See and France soon felt the effects of that choice. First of all, it was the nomination of bishops by the civil power which brought about a conflict.

"Before the war of 1870, the Holy See learned the names of the new bishops only after they had been nominated. The pope reserved the right, if one was not acceptable to him, to stop him being a bishop by withholding the canonical institution. In fact, the difficulties were enormous as the governments, under any kind of regime, were careful to elect candidates worthy of the episcopal office".(112)

As soon as Pius X was pope, most of the nominations for new bishops were refused by Rome. Besides, the nuncio in Paris, Lorenzelli, was, as we are told by M. Adrien Dansette, "a theologian who has gone astray in diplomacy and madly hostile to France". Some will say: "Just another one added to all the others!" But such a choice for such a post clearly shows what were the intentions of the Roman Curia towards our country.

This systematic hostility was going to show itself even more clearly in 1904, when M. Loubet, president of the Republic, went to Rome to return the visit paid to him in Paris sometime before by the king of Italy, Victor-Emmanuel III.

M. Loubet wished to be received by the pope also. But the Roman Curia produced a supposed "invincible protocol": "The pope could not receive a head of state who, when visiting the king of Italy in Rome, seemed to acknoweldge as lawful the "usurpation" of that ancient pontifical State. But there were precedents: twice, in 1888 and 1903, a head of state—and not one of the less important—had been received in Rome by the king of Italy and the pope. Of course, this visitor was not the president of a Republic, but the German Emperor Guillaume II... The same honour had been given to Edward VII, King of England, and the Czar.

The insulting intention of that refusal was evident, and even emphasised by a note sent to the various chancellories by the secretary of State Merry del Val. A Catholic author, M. Charles Ledre, recently wrote this concerning the matter:

"Could the pontifical diplomacy ignore the decisively important objective which, behind the visit of president Loubet to Rome, was really takingshape?"(113)

Of course, the Vatican knew about the plan to separate Italy from her partners of the Triple Alliance: Germany and Austria-Hungary, these two

---

(111) Agnes Siegfried, op.cit., p.342.

(112) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., p.323.

(113) Charles Ledre: "Un siecle sous la tiare" (Bibliotheque catholique Amiot-Dumont, Paris 1955, p. 125).

Germanic powers considered by the Roman Church to be her best secular arms. This was the very crux of the matter, and was, in fact the reason for the Vatican's frequent bursts of temper.

Other conflicts arose concerning French bishops, considered in Rome to be too Republican. At last, tired of the constant difficulties arising from the Vatican's infringements of the terms of the Concordat, the French government put an end, on the 29th of July 1904, to "relations which were made void by the Holy See".

The breaking of diplomatic: relations was bound to lead, soon after, to the separation of Church and state.

"We find it normal today", wrote M. Adrien Dansette, "that France should maintain displomatic relations with the Holy See, and that State and Church should live under the regime of separation. Diplomatic relations are necessary as France must be represented wherever she had interests to defend, outside any doctrinal consideration. But separation is necessary as, in a democracy founded on the sovereignty of a people divided by several beliefs, the state only owes liberty to the Church".(1 14) And the author adds: "This is, at least, the general opinion".

We can only agree with this reasonable opinion, without forgetting, of course, that the papacy would never endorse it. The Roman Church never stopped proclaiming her preeminence over civil history, throughout her own history, and, for want of being able to impose it openly in recent times, she has done her best to implant it with the help of her secret army, the Company of Jesus.

Besides, it was at that time that Father Wernz, general of this Order, wrote: "The State is under the Church's jurisdiction; so, secular authority is indeed under the subjection of ecclesiastical authorty and has to obey".(U5)

That is the doctrine of these intransigent champions of theocracy, counsellors as well as those who execute their commands, who made themselves indispensable at the Vatican, so much so that, today, it would he absolutely impossible to distinguish even the smallest difference hetween "the black pope" and "the white pope"; they are one and the same. And, when we refer to the politics of the Vatican, we simply mean the Jesuits' politics.

With many other qualified observers, the Abbe Fremont admits it as follows: "The Jesuits dominate the Vatican".(116)

Before the irreducible opposition of the Jesuits, all-powerful in the Church, to the Republic, the State is constrained to enforce the law of

(114) and (117) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., pp.333, 361.
(115) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.241. (116) Agnes Siegfried, op.cit., p.421.

Separation, with several amendments, from 1905 to 1908. This law does not want to decrease the Church's wealth and her buildings set up for worship. The faithful can form themselves into local associations, under the direction of the priest, to manage them. What is Rome going to do?

"In the encyclical letter "Vehementer" (1 lth of February 1906), Pius X condemned the principle of separation and the one pertaining to the local associations. But does he go beyond the principles?"(117) We will soon know. In spite of the advice from the French episcopate, he rejects all settlement, on the 10th of August 1906, in the encyclical letter "Gravissimo".

This is another disappointment for the liberal Catholics: "When I think", exclaims Brunetiere, "that what is refused to the French Catholics, with the certain knowledge that such refusal will unleash a religious war in our poor country which needs peace so much, is granted to the German Catholics, that the "local associations" have been operating there for thirty years to everyone's satisfaction, I cannot help, as a patriot as well as a Catholic, feeling most indignant".(118)

There was some trouble, in fact, when an inventory of ecclesiastical properties was taken, but not a religious war... Even though the ultramontanes were stirring up trouble, the population as a whole remained calm when some of the Church's properties were returned to the state, by her, rather than submit to the conciliatory measures laid down by the law.

Did, then, the writer Brunetiere understand fully the reason for that difference in which the French Catholics and German Catholics were treated by the Holy See? The first world war was to reveal all the significance of it.

While the Jesuits had effectually worked, through the "Dreyfus Affair", at dividing the French people and weakening the prestige of our army, in Germany, they were doing the exact opposite.

Bismark who, himself, had launched in the past the "Kulturkampf" against the Catholic Church, was being loaded with her favours. This is what we are told by the Catholic writer, Joseph Rovan, who also explains it:

"Bismark will be the first Protestant to receive the "Order of Christ" with jewels, one of the highest honours of the Church. The German government allows newspapers devoted to it to publish the fact that the chancellor would be ready effecually to uphold the pope's pretentions of a partial restoration of his temporal authority".(119)

"In 1886, the Centre—German Catholic party—was hostile to the military projects presented by Bismark. Leo XIII intervened in the German interior affairs in favour of Bismark. His secretary of State wrote to the nuncio of Munich: "In view of the approaching revision of the religious legislation which, as we have reasons to believe, will be carried out in a conciliatory manner, the Holy-Father wishes that the Centre promote, in

---

(118) Adrien Dansette, op.cit., p.363.

(119) and (121) Joseph Rovan, op.cit., pp.121, 150 ss.

every possible way, the projects of the military".(120) This is what Joseph Rovan has to say: "German diplomacy intervenes— it is already an old habit—at the Vatican to make the pope exercise his influence over the Zentrum (Catholic party), so as to favour the military projects... The German Catholics are going to speak about the great "political mission" of Germany which is, at the same time, a universal moral mission... The "Zentrum" makes itself also responsible for the prolongation of a reign which, from, blustering in weakness, war-like speeches over naval armaments to more war-like harangues, will eventually lead Germany to catastrophy... The "Zentrum" enters the war (of 1914) convinced of the uprightness, purity and moral integrity of its country's leaders, of the agreement of their plans and programme with the plans of eternal justice".(121)

As we can see, the papacy had done what was necessary to implant this conviction. Besides, as Monseigneur Fruhwirth said in 1914:

"Germany is the base on which the Holy-Father can and must establish gtreat hopes".

---

(120) Jean Bruhat: "Le Vatican contre les peuples" (Paralleles, 21st of December 1950)

Section V

The Infernal Cycle

Chapter I

The First World War

To the fury aroused at the Vatican by the Franco-Russian alliance and shown so well in the Dreyfus Affair, to the anger which the Franco-Italian union incited, and to which the Loubet incident clearly testified, was added a bitter resentment caused by the Entente Cordiale with England. France had firmly decided not to stand alone opposite her 'formidable neighbour' and Austria-Hungary. Politics so "blind and ill-considered", according to Monseigneur Cristiani, were looked upon most unfavourably by the Catholic Holy of Holies. For, besides jeopardizing the "thorough bleeding" godless France needed, these politics were a priceless support for schismatic Russia, this lost sheep whose return to the Roman Catholic fold had never ceased to be hoped for, though its accomplishment might mean a war.

But for the time being the Orthodox Church stayed firmly implanted in the Balkans, especially in Serbia, where the treaty of Bucarest, ending the conflict of the Balkans, had made it a centre of attraction for the Slavs of the South and in particular for those under the yoke of Austria. The ambitious plans of the Vatican and the apostolic imperialism of the Hapsburgs were then in perfect accord, as in the past. To Rome and Vienna, the growing power of Serbia marked her out as the enemy to overthrow.

This is indeed established in a diplomatic document found in the Austrian-Hungarian archives; it reports, for the benefit of the Austrian minister Berchtold, on the talks Prince Schonburg had at the Vatican in October-November 1913:

"Amongst the subjects discussed first of all with the cardinal secretary of State (Merry del Val) last week, the question of Serbia came up, as anticipated. First of all, the cardinal expressed his joy at our firm and opportune attitude of recent months. During the audience I had that day with His Holiness, the Holy-Father, who started the conversation by mentioning our energetic steps taken in Belgrade, he made some characteristic remarks: "It would certainly have been better", said his Holiness, "if Austria-Hungary had punished the Serbians for all the wrongs they had done".(1)

So, the war-like sentiments of Pius X were clearly expressed in 1913 already. There is nothing surprising about this when we consider the inspirers of Roman politics.

"What were the Hapsburgs supposed to do? Chastise Serbia, an Orthodox nation. The prestige of Austria-Hungary, of these Hapsburgs who, with the Bourbons of Spain, were the last supporters of the Jesuits, and especially the prestige of the heir, Francois-Ferdinand, their man, would have been greatly increased. For Rome, the affair became one of almost religious importance; a victory of apostolic monarchy over Czarism could be considered as a victory of Rome over the schism of the East".(2)

However, the affair dragged on in 1913. But, on the 28th of June 1914, the archduke Francois-Ferdinand was murdered at Sarajevo. The Serbian government had nothing to do with this crime committed by a Macedonian student, but it was the perfect excuse for the emporer Francois-Joseph to start hostilities.

"Count Sforza maintains that the main problem was to persuade Francois-Joseph that war was necessary. The advice of the pope and his minister was the one which could best influence him".(3)

This advice was of course given to the emperor, and of the kind which could be expected from this pope and his minister, "favourite pupil of the Jesuits". While Serbia was trying to maintain peace by giving in to all the wishes of the Austrian government which had sent a threatening note to Belgrade, Count Palffy, Austrian representative to the Vatican, gave to his minister Berchtold, on the 29th of July, a summary of the talks he had had on the 27th with the cardinal-secretary of State, Merry del Val; this conversation was about "the questions which are disturbing Europe at the moment".

The diplomat scornfully denies the "fanciful" rumours about the supposed intervention of the pope who apparently "implored the emperor to spare the Christian nations the horrors of war". Having dealt with these "absurd" suppositions, he expounds the "real opinion of the Curia", as conveyed to him by the secretary of State:

"It would have been impossible to detect any spirit of indulgence and conciliation in the words of His Eminence. It is true that he described the note to Serbia as very harsh, but he nevertheless approved of it entirely and, at the same time and indirectly, expressed the wish that the Monarchy

(1) "Document" P.A. XI/291.

(2) and (3) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., pp.245, 246, 250.

would finish the job. Indeed, added the cardinal, it was a pity that Serbia had not been humiliated much earlier, as it could have been done, then, without such great risks attached. This declaration echoes the wishes of the pope who, over the past few years, often expressed regret that Austria-Hungary had neglected 'chastising' her dangerous neighbour on the Danube".(4)

This indeed is just the opposite to the "fanciful" rumours about a pontifical intervention in favour of peace.

In fact, the Austrian diplomat is not the only one who reports on the "real opinion" of the Roman pontiff and his minister.

The day before, on the 26th of July, Baron Ritter, Bavarian Charge d'Affaires to the Vatican, had written to his government:

"The pope agrees with Austria dealing severely with Serbia. He doesn't think much of the Russian and French armies and is of the opinion that they could not do very much in a war against Germany. The cardinal-secretary of State doesn't see when Austria could make war if she does not decide now".(5)

So, the Holy See was fully conscious of the "great risks" represented by a conflict between Austria and Serbia, but, nevertheless, did all in its power to encourage it.

The Holy-Father and his Jesuit counsellors were not concerned about the sufferings of "Christian nations"! It was not the first time that these nations were used for the benefit of Roman politics. The opportunity wished for had come at last to use the Germanic secular arm against Orthodox Russia, "godless" France which needed a "thorough bleeding", and, as a bonus, against "heretic" England. Everything seemed to promise a "lively and happy" war.

Pius X did not see its unfolding and result, both contrary to his forecasts. He died at the beginning of the conflict, on the 20th of August 1914. But. forty years later, Pius XII canonised this august pontiff, and the "Precis d'Histoire Sainte" (Summary of Holy History), used for parochial catechism, dedicated to him these edifying words:

"Pius X did all he could to prevent the start of the 1914 war and he died of anguish when he foresaw the sufferings it would unleash".

If this was satire, it could not be put in a better way!

A few years before 1914, M. Yves Guyot, a true prophet, said: "If war breaks out, listen, you men who think that the Roman Church is the symbol of order and peace, and do not search for blame outside of the

---

(4) "Veroffentlichungen der (Commission fur Neuere Geschichte Osterreichs", 26 Wien-Leipzig 1930, pp.893, 894.

(5) This communication appears in"Bayerische Dokumentenzum Kriegssausbruch", III, p 205.

Vatican: it will be the sly instigator, as in the war of 1870".(6) Instigator of the slaughter, the Vatican was going to uphold no less craftily her Austro-German champions right through the war. The military excursion, in France, which the Kaiser boasted he was going to make, was stopped at the Marne and the aggressor brought back to the defensive after every one of his furious attacks. But, at least, pontifical diplomacy brought him all the help possible, and this is not surprising when we consider that Divine Providence seemed to delight in favouring the central empires.

Indeed, Cardinal Rampolla, considered to be pro-French—and for that reason kept away from the pontifical throne on a veto from Austria—wasn't any more amongst those who could become pope as he had died a few months before Pius X, a death it seems very opportune.

But this was not the whole of "God's" intervention: As he had promised, even before voting took place, the new pope, Benedict XV appointed Cardinal Ferrata as secretary of State.

But the cardinal(7) did not even have the time to take up fully his new position. Having entered the secretary's office at the end of September 1914, HE DIED SUDDENLY on the 20th of October, victim of a terrible indisposition after partaking of some "LIGHT REFRESHMENTS".

"He was sitting at his desk when he suddenly became violently sick. He fell as if lightning had struck him. The servants hastened to come to his help. The doctor, who had been called immediately, realised straightaway the gravity of the situation and asked for a quick consultation. As for Ferrata, he had already understood and knew there was no hope... He pleaded that he should not be left to die at the Vatican... The medical consultation took place immediately at his hotel with six doctors... They refused to draw up a medical bulletin; the one published bore no signatures".(8) He was not suffering from any kind of sickness or infirmity.

"The scandal of this death was such that an inquest could not be avoided. The result of it was: a jar had been broken at the office. The presence of pounded glass in the sugar bowl used by the cardinal was explained quite simply in that way. Granulated sugar can be useful! The inquest was stopped there..."(9)

The Abbe Daniel adds that the sudden departure, a few days later, of the servant of the deceased cardinal provoked quite a lot of remarks, especially as he had apparently been the servant of Monseigneur Von Gerlach before his master entered Holy Orders. This Germanic prelate, a notorius spy, was to flee from Rome in 1916: he was going to be arrested and charged with the sabotage of the Italian battleship "Leonard de Vinci" which blew up in the bay of Tarente, taking with it 21 officers and 221 seamen". His trial was resumed in 1919. Von Gerlach did not appear and was condemned to twenty years hard labour".(10)

---

(6) Yves Guyot: "Bilan politique de l'Eglise", p. 139.

(7) He was not very friendly towards the Jesuits.

(8) and (9) Abbe Daniel: "Le Bapteme de sang", (Ed. de l'Idee Libre, Herblay 1935, pp.28-30).

Through the case of this "participating chamberlain", editor of the "Osservatore Romano", we get a clear idea of the state of mind in the Vatican's high spheres.

It is again the Abbe Brugerette who describes the "entourage of the Holy See": "Professors or ecclesiastics, they are not put off by any obstacles in their pursuit of impressing on the Italian clergy and the Catholic world in Rome respect and admiration for the Germanic army, contempt and hatred for France".(1 1)

Ferrata, who favoured neutrality, had died just at the right time, and Cardinal Gasparri became secretary of State; in perfect agreement with Benedict XV, he did his best to serve the interests of the central empires

"Considering all this, it is not surprising then that Pope Benedict XV, in the following months, worked hard to maintain Italy on the path of intervention which would best serve the Jesuits, friends of the Hapsburgs..."(12)

At the same time, the morale of the Allies was cunningly undermined.

"On the 10th of January 1915, a decree signed by Cardinal Gasparn, secretary of State to Benedict XV, ordered that a day of prayer should be observed to hasten peace... One of the compulsory exercises of piety was the reciting of a prayer written by Benedict XV himself... The French government ordered that the pontifical document should be seized. This prayer for peace was considered to be a softening and destructive manifestation capable of slackening the efforts of our armies, at a time when the German hordes were feeling the irresistible pressure which would push them out of our territory, and when the Kaiser could see coming the terrible punishment his unpardonable crimes deserved... The pope, it was said, wanted peace come what may, at a time when it could only be in favour of the central empires. The pope does not like France; he is "German".(13)

M. Charles Ledre, another Catholic writer, confirms: "On two occasions, mentioned in some famous articles of "La Revue de Paris", the Holy See, by inviting Italy and later the United States to keep out of the war, did not merely wish for a quicker end of the conflict... According to the Abbe Brugerette, it served the interests of our enemies and worked against us".(14)

But the actions of the Jesuits, therefore the actions of the Vatican, were not only felt in Italy and the United States. Any means, every place, is good

(10) (1 1) and (13) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., III, pp.553, 528, 529. (12) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.252. (14) Charles Ledre, op.cit., p. 154.

enough for them.

"It is not surprising then to see pontifical diplomacy busy from the start at hindering our food supply; dissuading the neutrals from joining our side, in order to break the bond holding the 'Entente' together... Nothing was considered too insignificant if it could help this great task, and bring about peace by provoking some weakness amongst the Allies.

"There was worse: Solicitations for a separate peace. Between the 2nd and the 10th of January 1916, some German Catholics went to Belgium to preach, in the name of the pope they said, a separate peace. The Belgian bishops accused them of lying, but the nuncio and the pope remained silent...

"Then, the Holy See thought of bringing together France and Austria, so hoping to make France sign a separate peace or demand that, with her allies, they should negotiate a general peace... A few weeks later, on the 31st of March 1917, Prince Sixte of Bourbon gave the famous letter of the emperor Charlesto the president of the Republic.

"As the manoeuvre had failed on this side of the Alps, it was bound to be tried again elsewhere, in England, in America, and especially in Italy...

"Break up the temporal forces of the 'Entente' in order to stop its offensive attacks, ruin its moral prestige with the view to weaken its courage and bring it to terms... these two things make up the politics of Benedict XV and all the efforts of his impartiality always have been and are still aimed at hamstringing us".(15)

This was written by a notorious Catholic, M. Louis Canet; and this is what the Abbe Brugerette wrote:

"We only learned four years later, through the declarations of M. Erzberger published in the "Germania" of the 22nd of April 1921, that the proposal of peace proclaimed by the Pope in August 1917 had been preceded by a secret accord between the Holy See and Germany".(16)

Another interesting point is that the ecclesiastical diplomat who negotiated this "secret accord" was the nuncio in Munich, Monseigneur Pacelli, future Pius XII.

One of his apologists, the R.P. Jesuit Fernesolle, wrote: "On the 28th of May (1917), Monseigneur Pacelli presented his letters of appointment to the king of Bavaria... He tried hard to enlist the co-operation of William II and the chancellor Bethmann-Holveg. On the 29th of June, Monseigneur Pacelli was solemnly received by the emperor William II at the headquarters of Kreuznach".(17)

(15) Louis Canet: "Le Politique de Benoit XV", (Revue de Paris, 15th of October and 1st of November 1918).

(16) Abbe Brugerette, op.cit., III, p.543.

(17) R.P. Fernesolle, S.J. "Pro pontifice". Imprimatur 26th of June 1947,(Beauchesne, Paris 1947, p. 15.)

So, the future pope was starting his twelve years as nuncio in Munich, then in Berlin, in the way he meant to go on, for, during those years, he multiplied the intrigues to overthrow the German Republic established after the first world war and prepare the revenge of 1939 by bringing Hitler to power.

Yet, when the Allies signed the treaty of Versailles, in July 1919, they were so conscious of the part played by the Vatican in the conflict that it was carefully kept away from the conference table. And, even more surprising, it was the most Catholic State, Italy, which had insisted on its exclusion.

"Through art. XV of the pact of London (26th of April 1915), which defined Italy's participation in the war, Baron Sonnino had obtained the promise from the other Allies that they would oppose any intervention of the papacy in the peace arrangements". 18) This measure was wise but insufficient. Instead of applying the sanctions against the Holy See which it deserved for sparking off the first world war, the victors did nothing to prevent the further intrigues of the Jesuits and the Vatican; these eventually, 20 years later, led to a catastrophe even worse, maybe the worst the world has known.

---

(18) Charles Pichon: "Histoire du Vatican" (Sefi, Paris 1946, p. 143).

Section V

Chapter 2

Preparations for the Second World War

In 1919, the sons of Loyola reaped the bitter fruits of their criminal politics. France had not succumbed to the "thorough bleeding". The apostolic empire of the Hapsburgs, which they had encouraged to "punish the Serbians", had disintegrated, liberating the Orthodox Slavs from the yoke of Rome. Russia, instead of coming back to the Roman fold, had become marxist, anti-clerical and officially atheistic. As for invincible Germany, it foundered in the chaos.

But the proud nature of the Company would never consider confessing a sin. When Benedict XV died, in 1922, it was ready to start again on a new basis. Is it not all-powerful in Rome?

Let us listen to M. Pierre Dominique: "The new pope Pius XI who is, according to some, a Jesuit, tries to patch things up. He asks the Jesuit Father d'Herbigny to go to Russia, in an attempt to rally whatever is left of Catholicism, and especially to see what could be done. Vague and big hope: to rally around the pontiff the persecuted Orthodox world.

"In Rome, there are thirty-nine ecclesiastical colleges, whose foundation marks the dates of great counter-offensives; most of these counter-offensives were Jesuitical in their working and direction: Germanic college (1552), English (1578), Irish (1628, re-established in 1826), Scottish (1600), North-American (1859), Canadian (1888), Ethiopian (1919, re-constituted in 1930).

"Pius XI creates the Russian college (Ponteficio collegio russo di S. Teresa del Bambino Gesu) and puts it under the Jesuits' care. They also look after the Oriental Institute, the Institute of Saint-John Damascene, the Polish college, and later the Lithuanian college. Are these reminders of Father Possevino, Ivan the Terrible and the false Dimitri? The second of the three great objectives during Ignatius' time takes first place. The Jesuits, once again, are the inspiring agents and performers in that great enterprise".(19)

In the defeat they just suffered, the sons of Loyola can see a glimmer of some hope. The Russian revolution, by eliminating the Czar, protector of the Orthodox Church, had it not decapitated the great rival and helped the penetration of the Roman Church? We must strike while the iron is hot! The famous "Russicum" is created and its clandestine missionaries will take the Good News to this schismatic country.(19a) One century after their explusion by Czar Alexander the First, the Jesuits will again undertake the conquest of the Slav world. Since 1915, their general is Nalke von Ledochowski.

From M. Pierre Dominique again: "Some will say that I see Jesuits everywhere! But I am compelled to point out their presence and actions; to say that they were behind the monarchy of Alphonso XIII whose confessor was Father Lopez; that, when the Spanish monarchy was ended and their monasteries and colleges burned down, they were found again behind Gil Robles, then, when civil war broke out, behind Franco. In Portugal, they uphold Salazar. In Austria and Hungary, the Emperor Charles who was dethroned three times; (what part did they play in those attempts to regain the throne of Hungary? Who knows!) They kept the seat warm not knowing much for whom or what. Monsignor Seipel, Dolfuss and Schussnigg are from their ranks. They dream for a while of a great Germany, with a Catholic majority, to which the Austrians would necessarily belong: a modern version of the old 16th century alliance between the Wittelsbach and Hapsburg. In Italy, they support first of all Don Sturzo, founder of the popular party, then Mussolini... The Jesuit Father Tacchi Venturi, general-secretary of the Company, served as the middleman between Pius XI, whose confessors are Fathers Alissiardi and Celebrano (Jesuits), and Mussolini.

"The pope, in February 1929, at the time of the treaty of Lateran, calls Mussolini "the man whom Providence allowed us to meet". Rome does not condemn what is commonly called the "Ethiopian aggression" and, in 1940, the Vatican is still Mussolini's sincere friend.

"The Jesuits have their secret abode in it. From there, they survey the Universal Church with the cold and calculating eye of the politician".(20)

This is a perfect summary of the Jesuit activity between the two world wars. The "secret abode" of Loyola's sons is the political brain of the Vatican. The confessors of Pius XI are Jesuits; those of his successor, Pius XII, will also be Jesuits and Germans for good measure. No matter if, because of it, the plot becomes evident: everything, it seems, is ready for revenge.

(19) and (20) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., pp.253, 254.

(19a) See also Frederic Hoffet's "L'Equivoque catholique et le nouveau clericalisme" (Fischbacher, Paris).

But, under the pontificate of Pius XI, it is the preparatory period. The Germanic "secular arm", defeated, has dropped the sword. While waiting to put it back into its hands, we will prepare, in Europe, a field worth its future exploits, and first of all stop the threatening rise of democracy. Italy will be the first field of action. There is, there, a noisy socialist chief who gathers ex-servicemen around him. This man proclaims an apparently intrasigent doctrine, but he is ambitious and lucid enough to realise how precarious his position is, in spite of his extravagent boastings. Jesuit diplomacy will soon win him over to its side.

M. Francois Charles-Roux, of the Institute, who was our (i.e. French) ambassador to the Vatican at that time, says: "At the time when the future Duce was only a simple deputy, Cardinal Gasparri, secretary of State, had a secret interview with him... The fascist chief had immediately agreed that the pope should exercise a temporal sovereignty over a part of Rome... "When reporting to me about that interview, Cardinal Gasparri concluded: "With this promise, I was sure that, if this man came to power, we would succeed". "

"I will not mention his account of the negotiations between the secret agents of Pius XI and Mussolini..."(21)

These secret agents, the main one being the Jesuit Father Tacchi Venturi, fullfilled their mission extremely well. This is not surprising when we know that Father Tacchi Venturi was secretary of the Company of Jesus and Mussolini's confessor at the same time. In fact, he was "directed" into this "cajolery" of the Fascist chief by the general of his Order, Halke von Ledochowski, as we are told by M. Gaston Gaillard.(22)

"On the 16th of November 1922, Parliament elected Mussolini by 306 votes against 116, and, in that meeting, one saw the Catholic group of don Sturzo, supposedly Christian-Democrat, voting unanimously for the first fascist government".(23)

Ten years later, the same manoeuvre brought about a similar result in Germany. The Catholic "Zentrum" of Monsignor Kass assured, by its massive vote, the dictatorship of Nazism.

In fact, Italy had been, in 1922, the trial ground for the new formula of authoritarian conservatism: fascism, dressed up, when local circumstances demanded it, with some pseudo-socialism. From now on, all the efforts of the Vatican's Jesuits will tend to spread this "doctrine" in Europe, the ambiguity of which is typical of them.

Even today, the collapse of Mussolini's regime, nor the defeat, nor the ruins have been enough to discredit, to the eyes of Italy's Christian democrats, the megalomaniac Dictator imposed on their country by the Vatican. Disowned only outwardly, his prestige remains intact in the hearts of the clerics. The following could be read in the press:

---

(21) Francois Charles-Roux: "Huit ans an Vatican", Flammarion, Paris 1947, pp.47 ss

(22) Gaston Gaillard, p.353 "La fin d'un temps" (Ed. Albert, Paris, 1933). (23) Pietro Nenni "Six ans de guerre civile en Italie" (Librairie Valois, Paris 1930, p. 146)

"We have decided: visitors coming to Rome for the Olympic Games, in 1960, will see the marble obelisk erected by Benito Mussolini to his own glory as it dominates, from the banks of the Tiber, the Olympic stadium. This memorial thirty-three meters high bears the inscription "Mussolini-Dux" and is decorated with mosaics and inscriptions praising fascism. The phrase "Long live the Duce" is repeated more than one hundred times and the slogan "Many enemies means much honour" several times as well. The monument has, on either side, marble blocks commemorating the main events of fascism, from the foundation of the publication "Popolo d'ltalia", by Mussolini, until the establishment of the short-lived fascist empire, and including the war in Ethiopia. The obelisk was to be crowned with a gigantic statue of Mussolini, as a naked athlete, nearly one hundred metcrs high. But the regime collapsed before this strange project could be realised.

"After a year of controversy, the Segni government has just decided that the duce's obelisk should stay".(24)

The war, the blood which flowed profusely, the tears and the ruins do not matter. They are mere trifles, small spots on the monument erected to the glory of "the man whom Providence allowed us to meet", as he was described by Pius XI.

No shortcomings, mistakes or crimes can erase his main merit: the fact that he re-established the temporal power of the pope, proclaimed Roman Catholicism as the religion of the State, and gave the clergy, through laws still being enforced, complete power over the life of the nation.

It is to testify to this that Mussolini's obelisk must stand in the heart of Rome, for the benefit of foreign tourists looking at it admiringly or ironically, and in the hope of better times which would allow the erection of the "naked athlete" one hundred meters high, symbolic champion of the Vatican.

The Lateran Treaty, by which Mussolini showed his gratitude to the papacy, gave the Holy See, apart from the payment of one thousand 750 million liras (i.e. £20,000,000) the temporal sovereignty over the territory of Vatican city. Monseigneur Cristiani, prelate of His Holiness, explains the significance of this event:

"It is certain that the Constitution of the Vatican city was a matter of prime importance in order to establish the papacy as a political power".(25)

---

(24) "Press italienne, New York Herald Tribune, Time and Paris-Presse", 3rd of November 1959.

(25) Monseigneur Cristiani: "Le Vatican politique", Imprimatur 15th of June 1956 (Ed. du Centurion, Paris 1957, p. 136).

We will not waste time trying to conciliate this explicit confession with the phrase so often heard that "the Roman Church is not involved in politics". We will only point out the unique position in the world of a state which is secular and sacred, of equivocal nature as well, and the consequences of that position.

What are the Jesuitical crafty tricks used by this power which, depending on circumstances, makes use of her temporal or spiritual character, to be exempted from all the rules laid down by international laws? The nations themselves have lent their hand to this trickery and, by doing that, helped its penetration into their midst, the Trojan horse of clericalism. "The Pope seemed to identify himself too much with the dictators"(26), wrote M. Francois Charles-Roux, French ambassador to the Vatican. But could it be otherwise when the Holy See itself had raised these men to power?

Mussolini, the prototype, was the inaugurator of that series of "providential" men, these sword-bearers who would prepare the revenge for 1918. From Italy, where it prospered so well under the care of the Jesuit Father Tacchi Venturi and his acolytes, fascism was soon to be exported to Germany. "Hitler receives his impetus from Mussolini; the ideal of the Nazis is the same as in Italy... Since Mussolini is at the head, all the sympathies are for Berlin... In 1923, his Fascism merges with National-Socialism; he becomes friends with Hitler to whom he supplies arms and money".(27)

At that time, Monseigneur Pacelli, future Pius XII and, then, the Curia's best diplomat, is Nuncio in Munich, capital of Catholic Bavaria. There, the star of the future German dictator starts to rise; he is also a Catholic, like his most important associates. Of that country, cradle of nazism, M. Maurice Laporte tells us: "Its two enemies are called Protestantism and Democracy". Prussia's anxiety is therefore understandable.

"It is easy to guess what kind of special care the Vatican gives Bavaria where Hitler's National-Socialism recruits its strongest contingents".(28)

To take from "heretic" Prussia the control of the German "secular arm" and transfer it to Catholic Bavaria; what a dream! Monseigneur Pacelli puts all in his power to realise it, acting in concert with the chief of the Company of Jesus.

"After the other war (1914-1918), the Jesuits' general, Halke von Ledochowski, had conceived a vast plan... the creation, with or without emperor Hapsburg, of a federation of the Catholic nations in central and eastern Europe: Austria, Slovakia, Bohemia, Poland, Hungary, Croatia and, of course, Bavaria.

---

(26) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., p.231.

(27) Antonio Aniante: "Mussolini" (Grasset, Paris 1932, pp.123 ss.).

(28) Maurice Laporte: "Sous le casque d'acier" (A. Redier, Paris 1931, p. 105).

"This new central Empire had to fight on two fronts: on the eastern side against the Soviet Union, on the western side against Prussia, Protestant Great-Britain and republican, rebellious France. At that time, Monseigneur Pacelli, future Pius XII, was nuncio in Munich, then in Berlin, and an intimate friend of Cardinal Faulhaber, von Ledochowski's main collaborator. The Ledochowski plan was the dream of Pius XII's youth".(29)

But was it only a dream of youth? The "Mittel-Europa" Hitler tried to organise was very similar to that plan, apart from the presence, in that block, of Lutheran Prussia, a not very dangerous minority, and the recognised zones of influence which—maybe temporarally—belonged to Italy. In fact, it was the Ledochowski plan, adapted to the needs of the time, which the Fuhrer was trying to realise, under the patronage of the Holy See, with the help of Franz von Papen, secret chamberlain of the pope, and the nuncio to Munich, then Berlin, Monseigneur Pacelli.

M. Francois Charles-Roux writes: "During the contemporary epoch world politics never felt the Catholic intervention more than during the ministry of Monseigneur Pacelli".(30)

And from M. Joseph Rovan: "Now, Catholic Bavaria... is going to welcome and protect all those who sow trouble, all those confederates and assassins of de la Saint-Vehme".(31)

From amongst these agitators, the choice of Germany's "regenerators" will fall upon Hitler, who is destined to triumph over the "democratic mistakes" under the Holy Father's standard. Of course, he is a Catholic, like his principal collaborators.

"The nazi regime is like a return to the government of southern Germany. The names and origins of its chiefs demonstrate it: Hitler is specifically Austrian, Goering is Bavarian, Goebbels is Rhenish, and so on".(32)

In 1924, the Holy See signs a Concordat with Bavaria. In 1927, we can read in "Cologne's Gazette": "Pius XI is certainly the most German pope who ever sat on the throne of Saint-Peter".

His successor, Pius XII, will rob him of this palm. But, for the time being, he pursues his diplomatic career—rather his political career—in this Germany for which, as he later told Ribbentrop, "he would always have a special affection".

Promoted nuncio in Berlin, he works, with Franz von Papen, at destroying the Weimar Republic. On the 20th of July 1932, a state of siege is proclaimed in Berlin and the ministers expelled "manu militari". It is the first step towards hitlerian dictatorship. New elections are prepared which will establish the success of the nazis.

---

(29) VLa Tribune des Nations", 30th of June 1950.

(30) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., p.93.

(31) Joseph Rovan, op.cit., p.195.

(32) Gonzague de Reynold: "D'ou vient l'Allemagne" (Plon, Paris 1939, p. 185).

"With Hitler's approval, Goering and Strasser got in contact with Monseigneur Kaas, party chief of the Catholic Centre".(33)

Cardinal Bertram, archbishop of Breslau and primate of Germany, declared: "We, Christians and Catholics, do not recognise any religion or race...". With many other bishops, he tried to warn the faithful against "the pagan ideal of the nazis". Obviously, this prelate had not understood papal politics, but he was soon going to be taught.

"The "Mercure de France" gave an excellent study in 1934:

"In the beginning of 1932, German Catholics did not consider they had lost the cause but, in the spring, their chiefs seemed somewhat irresolute: they had been told that "the Pope was personally in favour of Hitler".

"That Pius XI was sympathetic to Hitler should not surprise us... For him, Europe could settle down again only through Germany's hegemony... The Vatican had thought of changing the centre of gravity of the Reich, through the Anschluss, for a long time, and the Company of Jesus was openly working towards that aim (Ledochowski's plan), especially in Austria. We know how Pius XI depended on Austria to make what he called his politics triumph. What had to be prevented was the hegemony of Protestant Prussia and, as the Reich was the one to dominate Europe... a Reich had to be rebuilt where the Catholics would be masters...

"In March 1933, the German bishops, meeting at Fulda, took advantage of the speech Hitler gave at Potsdam to declare: We must admit that the highest representative of the government of the Reich, who is at the same lime the head of the national-socialist movement, has made public and solemn declarations, by which the inviolability of the Catholic doctrine, the work and unchangeable rights of the Church are recognised... "Von Papen leaves for Rome. This man, whose past is so wicked, becomes a pious pilgrim with the mission to conclude a Concordat (for the whole of Germany) with the Pope. He too will have to emulate Mussolini's overtures towards the Vatican.(34)

In fact, the same happens in both countries: in Italy, the Catholic party of don Sturzo ensures Mussolini's accession to power; in Germany, the "Zentrum" of Monseigneur Kaas does the same for Hitler—and, on both occasions, a Concordat seals the pact.

M. Joseph Rovan admits this as follows: "Thanks to von Papen, deputy at the Zentrum since 1920 and owner of the party's official publication

---

(33) Walter Gorlitz and Herbert A. Quint: "Adolf Hitler" (Amiot, Dumont, Paris 1953, p.32).

(34) "Mercure de France"; "Pius XI and Hitler" (15th of January 1934).

'Germania'. Hitler came to power on the 30th of January 1933... "German political Catholicism, instead of becoming Christian Democrat, was eventually made to confer full powers on Hitler, on the 26th of March 1933... To vote in favour of full powers, a two-thirds majority was necessary and the votes of the "Zentrum" were indispensable to obtain it".(35) The same author adds: "In the correspondance and declarations of ecclesiastical dignitaries, we will always find, under the nazi regime, the fervent approval of the bishops".(36)

This fervour is easily explained when we read the following from von Papen: "The general terms of the Concordat were more favourable than all other similar agreements signed by the Vatican", and, "the Chancellor Hitler asked me to assure the papal secretary of State (Cardinal Pacelli) that he would immediately muzzle the anticlerical clan".(37)

This was not an empty promise. Already during that year (1933), apart from the massacre of Jews and assassinations perpetrated by the Nazis. there were 45 concentration camps in Germany, with 40,000 prisoners of various political opinions, but mostly liberals. Franz von Papen, the pope's secret chamberlain, defined perfectly the deep meaning of the pact between the Vatican and Hitler by this phrase worth engraving: "Nazism is a Christian reaction against the spirit of 1789".

In 1937, Pius XI, under the pressure of world opinion, "condemned" the racial theories as incompatible with Catholic doctrine and principles, in what his apologists amusingly call the "terrible" encyclical letter "Mit brennender Sorge". Nazi racism is condemned, but not Hitler, its promoter: "Distinguio". And the Vatican takes care not to denounce the "advantagous" Concordat concluded, four years earlier, with the nazi Reich.

While the cross of Christ and the Swastika were co-operating in Germany. Benito Mussolini set forth on the easy conquest of Ethiopia, with the Holy Father's blessing.

"... The Sovereign Pontiff had not condemened Mussolini's politics and had left the Italian clergy fully free to co-operate with the Fascist government... The ecclesiastics, from the priests of humble parishes to the cardinals, spoke in favour of the war...

"One of the most striking examples came from the Cardinal-Archbishop of Milan, Alfredo Ildefonso Schuster (Jesuit), who went as far as calling

(35) and (36) Joseph Rovan, op.cit., pp. 197,209,214.

(37) Franz von Papen, op.cit., p.207.

(38) The enthusiasm of Cardinal Schuster is understandable as the Company of Jesus had suffered the same fate, in Abyssinia, as in the European countries. With the help of usurper Segud, whom they had converted and put on the throne, the sons of Loyola tried to impose Catholicism to the whole country, provoking uprisings and bloody repressions; but they were finally expelled by the Negus Basilides. (Note from the author).

this campaign "a Catholic crusade".(38) "Italy", clarified Pius XI, "thinks this war is justified because of a pressing need for expansion..." "Ten days later, when speaking to an audience of ex-servicemen, Pius XI expressed the wish that the legitime claims of a great and noble nation from which, he reminded them he himself descended, would be satisfied".(39) The Fascist aggression against Albania, on Good Friday in 1939, enjoyed the same "understanding", as we are told by M. Camille Cianfarra: "The Italian occupation of Albania was very advantagous for the Church... Out of a population of one million Albanian people, which became Italian subjects, 68% were Moslems, 20% Greek Orthodox and only 12% Roman Catholics... From the political point of view, the annexation of the country by a Catholic power was bound to improve the position of the Church and please the Vatican".(40)

In Spain, the establishment of the republic had not ceased to be resented by the Roman Curia as a personal offence. "I never dared mention the Spanish question to Pius XI", wrote M. Francois Charles-Roux. "He probably would have reminded me that the Church's interests, in that great and historical land of Spain, were a matter for the papacy only".(41)

So, this "protected hunting-ground" was soon provided with a dictator similar to those who had been already successful in Italy and Germany. The adventure of General Franco only started in mid-July 1936 but, on the 21st of March 1934, the "Pact of Rome" had been sealed, between Mussolini and the chiefs of Spain's reactionary parties, one of whom was M. Goicoechea, chief of the "Renovacion Espanola". By this pact, the Italian fascist party undertook to supply the rebels with money, war material, arms and ammunition. We know that they even did more than what they had promised, and that Mussolini and Hitler kept on "refuelling" the Spanish rebellion with material, aviation and "volunteers".

As for the Vatican, oblivious of its own principle that the faithful must respect the established government, it oppressed Spain with its threats.

"The Pope excommunicated the heads of the Spanish Republic and declared spiritual war between the Holy See and Madrid. Then he produced the encyclical letter 'Dilectissimi Nobis'... Archbishop Goma, new primate of Spain, proclaimed the civil war".(42)

The prelates of His Holiness joyfully accepted the horrors of this fratricidal conflict, and Monsignor Gomara, bishop of Carthagene, interpreted admirably their apostolic sentiments when he said: "Blessed are the cannons if, in the breaches they open, the Gospel springs up!"

---

(39) and (40) Camille Cianfarra: "La Guerre et le Vatican" (Le Portulan, Paris 1946, pp.46,47,48).

Note from the author: Cardinal Schuster was also rector of this strange institution: "L'Ecole de mystique fasciste" (school of fascist mysticism) (41)
Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., p.181.

(42) Andre Ribard: "1960 et le secret du Vatican" (Libr. Robin, Paris 1954, p.45.)

The Vatican even recognised Franco's government, on the 3rd of August 1937, twenty months before the end of the civil war.

Belgium was also looked after by Catholic Action, needless to say, an organisation eminently ultramontane and Jesuitical. The ground had to be prepared for the approaching invasion of the Fuhrer's armies! So, under the pretence of "spiritual renewal", the Hitlerite Fascist gospel was diligently preached there by Monseigneur Picard, Jesuit, Father Arendt. Jesuit, Father Foucart, Jesuit, etc. A young Belgium, who was their victim like many others, testifies to this: "At that time, all of us were already obsessed with a kind of fascism... The Catholic Action to which I belonged was very sympathetic to Italian fascism... Monseigneur Picard proclaimed from the rooftops that Mussolini was a genius and wished fervently for a dictator... Pilgrimages were organised to favour contacts with Italy and Fascism. "When, with three hundred students, I went to Italy, everybody, on our return home, saluted in the Roman fashion and sang Giovinezza.(43)

Another witness says: "After 1928, the group of Leon Degrelle regularly collaborated with Monseigneur Picard... Monseigneur Picard enlisted the help of Leon Degrelle for a particularly important mission: to manage a new publishing house at the Catholic Action centre. This publishing house was given a name which soon became famous: it was 'Rex'...

"The calls for a new regime multiplied... The results of this propaganda in Germany were observed with much interest. In October 1933, an article in 'Vlan' reminded us that the Nazis numbered only seven in 1919, and that Hitler brought them, a few years later, no other dowry than his talent for publicity... Founded on similar principles, the 'rexist' team started an active propaganda programme in the country. Their meetings soon attracted a few hundreds, then thousands of listeners".(44)

Of course, Hitler had brought to the new-born national-socialism, as Mussolini did to Fascism, more than the talent for publicity:- the support of the papacy!

Being only a pale shadow of these two, Leon Degrelle, chief of "Christus Rex", was the beneficiary of the same support—but for a very different purpose, as his job was to open his country to the invader.

M. Raymond de Becker says: "I collaborated with the 'Avant-Garde'... This publication (issued by Monseigneur Picard) aimed at breaking the ties uniting Belgium, France and England".(45)

---

(43) and (45) Raymond de Becker: "Livre des vivants et des morts" (Ed. de la Toison d'Or Brussels 1942, pp.72,73,175).

(44) Jacques Saint-Germain: "La Bataille de Rex" (Les oeuvres francaises, Paris 1937, pp.67,69).

We know how quickly the German armies defeated the Belgian defence betrayed by the clerical fifth column. Maybe we remember also that the apostle of "Christus Rex", donning the German uniform, went, accompanied by much publicity, to "fight on the Eastern front" at the head of his "Waffen SS", recruited mainly amongst the youth of Catholic Action; then an opportune retreat enabled him to reach Spain. But, before that, he gave full vent to his "patriotic" feelings for the last time.

M. Maurice de Behaut writes: "Ten years ago (in 1944), the port of Anvers, the third most important in the world, fell almost intact into the hands of the British troops... At the time when the population was beginning to see the end of its sufferings and privations, the most diabolic nazi invention fell on it: the flying bombs, V1 and V2. This bombardment, the longest in History, as it went on for six months, day and night, was kept carefully hidden, on the order of the allied headquarters. This is the reason why, today, the martyrdom of the cities of Anvers and Liege is still generally ignored.

"On the eve of the first bombardment (12th of October), some had heard on Radio Berlin the alarming remarks of the "rexist" traitor Leon Degrelle: "I asked my Fuhrer", he screeched, "for twenty thousand flying bombs. They will chastise an idiotic people. I promise you that they will make of Anvers a city without a port, or a port without a city".

"... From that day on, the rhythm of the bombardments was going to accentuate, catastrophes and disasters being the results, while the traitor Leon Degrelle was bawling on Radio Berlin, promising cataclysms even more terrible".(46)

Such was the last farewell to his homeland of this monstrous product of the Catholic Action. Obedient pupil of Monseigneur Picard, Jesuit, Father Arendt, Jesuit, etc., the chief of "Christus Rex" strictly followed the papal rules.

"The men of the Catholic Action", wrote Pius XI, "would fail in their duty if, as opportunities allow it, they did not try to direct the politics of their province and of their country".(47)

Indeed, Leon Degrelle did his duty and the result—as we have seen— was in proportion to his zeal.

We read in M. Raymond de Beckers's book: "The Catholic Action had found, in Belgium, exceptional men to orchistrate its themes, such as Monsignor Picard (the most important)... Canon Cardijn, founder of the

---

(46) Review "Historia", December 1954.

(47) Pius XI's Letter "Peculari Quadam", quoted by R.P. Jesuit de Soras, in the "Action catholique et action temporelle" (Ed. Spes, Paris 1938, p. 105). Imprimatur 1938.

(48) Raymond de Becker, op.cit., p.66.

'jocist' movement, a bilious ill-tempered and visionary man..."(48)

This particular one swears today that he has never "seen or heard" his fellow-member Leon Degrelle. So, these two leaders of the Belgian Catholic Action, both working under the crook of Cardinal Van Roey, had apparently never met! By what miracle? Of course, the former Canon doesn't tell us that; since then, he has been made "Monseigneur" by Pius XII and director of the 'jocist' movements for the whole world.

Another miracle: nor has Monseigneur Cardijn ever met the disreputable chief of 'Rex' during the great congress described by Degrelle:

"I remember the great congress of the Catholic Youth at Brussels, in 1930. I was behind Monseigneur Picard, who himself was at the side of Cardinal Van Roey. One hundred thousand youths had marched past us for two hours, cheering the religious authorities assembled on the platform..."(49)

Where, then, was the head of the J.O.C. hiding, whose troops were taking part in that gigantic march past? Was it, through a special decree of Providence, that these two men were condemned to rub shoulders without seeing each other, on official platforms as well as at the Catholic Action centre which they attended constantly?

Monseigneur Cardijn, a Jesuit, goes further. He pretends to have also "verbally" fought 'rexism'.

Really, this Catholic Action was a peculiar organisation! Not only were the chiefs of its two principal "movements" 'J.O.C. and Rex' playing hide and seek in the corridors, but also one could as he says, "fight" what the other did with the full approval of the "hierarchy"!

This fact cannot be disputed: Degrelle was put at the head of 'Rex' by Monseigneur Picard himself, under the authority of Cardinal Van Roey and the apostolic nuncio Monseigneur Micara. So, according to Monseigneur Cardijn, he keenly disapproved of the actions of his colleague in Catholic Action, under the patronage, like himself, of Belgium's Primate,—and without any consideration for the Nuncio, his "protector and revered friend", according to Pius XII".(50)

The assertion is rather severe. We are even more aware of it when we examine what was the attitude, after Hitler's invasion of Belgium, of those such as Monseigneur Cardijn and his associates who, today, repudiate Degrelle and 'rexism'. In a book which was "put under the bushel" when it was published, the chief of 'Rex' himself refreshed memories, as we shall see, and, to our knowledge, what he said was never refuted.

Being a fervent Christian, and acquainted with the interpenetrations of spiritual and temporal, I would not have considered collaborating (with

(49) Leon Degrelle: "La cohue de 1940" (Robert Crausaz, Lausanne 1949, pp.214-215).

(50) "La Croix", 24th of May 1946.

Hitler) without first consulting the religious authorities of my country... I had asked for an interview with His Eminence, Cardinal Van Roey... The cardinal received me in a friendly manner, one morning, at the episcopal palace of Malines... He is animated by a total and cyclonic fanaticism... If he had lived a few centuries earlier, he would have, while singing the 'Magnificat', put the infidels to the sword, or burned or let fall into the convent dungeons the not so obedient sheep of his flock. As it is the 20th century, he only has the crosier, but makes it accomplish a great work. For him, everything was important as long as it served the Church's interests: if it was something good, we would support it, but anything bad was crushed; and the Church has so many avenues of 'service': her works, parties, newspapers, agricultural co-operatives (Boerenbond), banking institutions which assured the temporal power of the divine institution...

"And now, I can sincerely and honestly say that this was the meaning of the cardinal's remarks: "collaboration was the proper thing to do, in fact the only thing a sensible person would do. During the whole interview, he didn't even consider that another attitude could be possible. For the cardinal, in the Autumn of 1940, the war was finished. He didn't even mention the name 'English' or utter the supposition that an allied recovery was conceivable... The cardinal did not think that, politically, anything else but collaboration was possible... He did not object to any of my conceptions and projects... He could have—or should have—warned me if he thought my ideas concerning politics were going astray, as I had come for his advice... Before I left, the cardinal gave me his paternal blessing...

"Other Catholics as well, in the Autumn of 1940, looked towards the great tower of Saint-Rombaut... Many entered the episcopal palace to ask the advice of Monseigneur Van Roey or his entourage, concerning the morality, usefulness or necessity of collaboration...

"More than one thousand Catholic Burgomasters, all the general secretaries, even though carefully chosen, adapted themselves immediately to the new Order... All those good people imprisoned or insulted in 1944 must have wondered, in 1940: What does Malines think? But who would believe that neither Malines, their bishops, nor their priests had been able to put their minds at rest!

"Eight out of ten Belgian collaborationists were Catholics... "During those decisive weeks, because of the choice which had to be made, Malines and the various bishoprics ever issued written or verbal negative advice, to myself or to all those other collaborationists.

"Even though not very pleasant, this, is the plain or naked truth. The attitude of the high Catholic clergy abroad could only strengthen the conviction of the faithful that collaboration was perfectly compatible with the faith... In Vichy, the highest French prelates had their photo taken as they stood with Marshal Petain and Pierre Laval, after the interview between Hitler and Petain. In Paris, Cardinal Baudrillart publicly declared that he was a collaborationist.

"In Belgium itself, Cardinal Van Roey allowed one of the most farmous priests of Flanders—his greatest Catholic intellectual—Abbe Ver-schaeve, declare, on the 7th of November 1940, during a solemn session of the Senate and in the presence of a German general, president Raeder:

"It is the duty of the Cultural Council to build the bridge which will unite Flanders and Germany..."

"On the 29th of May 1940, the day after the surrender, Cardinal Van Roey described the invasion as a kind of present from heaven:

"Be sure", he wrote to the faithful, "that we are witnessing at the moment an exceptional intervention of Divine Providence which is displaying its power through great events".

"So, after all that, Hitler seemed to be nothing less than a purifying instrument, providentially chastising the Belgian people".(51)

Something very similar was happening in our own country, (France), where we were constantly reminded that "defeat is more fruitful than victory", as, before 1914, when a purifying "thorough bleeding" was wished upon France.

Also in these memoirs which fell—or rather were thrown into the oubliette—we find some very interesting details concerning the "Boerenbond, the great Catholic and political and financial machine of Cardinal Van Roey which largely financed the Flemish section of Louvain's University..."(52)

"The printing-house "Standaard" was making sure its presses were kept working by printing the most collaborationist appeals of the V.N.V. (Vlaamsch Nationalist Verbond). Very soon, the business was rolling in money... Being two hundred per cent Catholic and pillars of the Church in Flanders, the leaders of "Standaard" would not have considered collaborating unless the cardinal had first given his blessing to it clearly and distinctly.

"The same was said about the whole of the Catholic press..."(53)

All these efforts were aiming at nothing less than Belgium's break-up, as we are reminded by another Catholic writer, M. Gaston Gaillard:

"The Flemish-speaking Catholics and the autonomist Catholics of Alsace justified their attitude by their tacit support always given to the Germanic propaganda by the Holy See. When they referred to the memorable letter sent by Pius XI to his secretary of State, Cardinal Gaspari, on the 26th of June 1923, they were easily convinced that their politics had the approval of Rome, and, of course, Rome did nothing to persuade them otherwise. Had not the nuncio Pacelli (future Pius XII) ably

(51) (52) and (53) Leon Degrelle, op.cit., pp.213,216ss, 219ss.

supported German nationalists and encouraged the so-called "oppressed" population of High-Silesia? Had not the autonomist plots of Alsace, Eupen-Malmedy and Silesia received ecclesiastical approval which had not always been given discreetly? It was then easy for the Flemish to hide their deeds against Belgium's unity behind the Roman directives..."(54)

Also, in 1942, Pope Pius XII asked his nunciature in Berlin to convey his condolences to Paris on the death of Cardinal Baudrillart, so signifying that he considered the annexation of Northern France by Germany as a fact. It also confirmed once again the "tacit support" always given to the Germanic expansion by the Holy See, and himself in particular.

Today, we can but scornfully smile when we see the Jesuits of His Holiness quibble over something so obvious and repudiate all complicity with the fifth column they themselves had organised, and especially with Degrelle. As for him— safely kept in his refuge as he knows too much—he can recollect at leisure the famous verses of Ovid: "Donee eris felix, multos munerabis amicos. Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris".(55)

We smile when we read the following from R.P. Fessard (Jesuit):

"In 1916 and 1917, we waited for the American reinforcements with so much impatience! In 1939, we sadly realised that, even after war had been declared, Hitler was looked upon favourably by a large part of American opinion; even, and especially by Catholics! In 1941 and 1942, we wondered again if the United States would or would not intervene".(56)

So, it seems the Good Father viewed the results obtained in America by his own Jesuitical brothers "With sadness"! For, and this is an historical fact, the "Christian Front", a Catholic movement opposed to the United State's intervention, was directed by the Jesuit Father Coughlin, a notorious pro-Hitlerite.

"This pious organisation lacked nothing and received, from Berlin, a plentiful supply of propaganda material prepared by Goebbel's office.

"Through is publication 'Social Justice' and radio broadcasts, the Jesuit Father Coughlin, apostle of the swastika, reached a vast public. He also looked after secret "commando cells" in the main urban centres, led according to the sons of Loyola's methods and trained by Nazi agents".(57)

A secret document of the Wilhelmstrasse clarifies the following point: "Studying the evolution of anti-semitism in the United States, we note that the number of listeners to the radio broadcasts of Father Coughlin, well-known for his anti-semitism, exceeds 20 millions".(58)

---

(54) Gaston Gaillard: "La fin d'un temps" (Ed. Albert, Paris 1933, II, p. 141).

(55) As long as you will be happy, you will have many friends; when the clouds appear, you will be alone.

(56) R.P. Fessard S.J.: "Libre meditation sur un message de Pie XII", (Plon, Paris 1957, p.202).

(57) Edmond Paris: "The Vatican against Europe" (P.T.S., London 1959, p.141)

Must we recall the actions of the Jesuit Father Walsh, an agent of the pope, Dean of the School of political sciences at the University of Georgetown, Jesuitic nursery of American diplomacy—and a zealous propagandist of German politics?

At that time, the General of the Society of Jesus was, as by chance, Halke von Ledochowski, a former general in the Austrian army; he succeeded Wernz, a Prussian, in 1915.

Has the R.P. Fessard also forgotten what 'La Croix' wrote all through the war, and especially this: "There is nothing to be gained from an intervention of troops from the other side of the Channel and Atlantic".(59)

Does he not remember either this telegram of His Holiness Pius XII: The pope sends his blessing to 'La Croix', the voice of pontifical thought".(60)

Considering so much forgetfulness, must we come to the conclusion that members of the Society of Jesus have very short memories? They did not incur this reproach even from their enemies, though! Let us rather point out that R.P. Fessard expressed his patriotic fears of 1941-1942 in 1957 only. His "free meditations" over fifteen years brought some results and he had time to re-read a certain passage of the "Spiritual Exercises" which says that "the Jesuit must be ready, if the Church declares that what he sees as black is white, to agree with her, even though his senses tell him the opposite".(61)

As far as that is concerned, R.P. Fessard seems to be an excellent Jesuit!

On the 7th of March 1936, Hitler brought the Wehrmacht into the de-militarised Rhine region, so tearing up the pact of Locarno. On the 11th of March 1938, it was the Anschluss (union of Austria and Germany), and on the 29th of September of the same year, in Munich, France and England had imposed on them by the Reich the annexation of Sudetenland in Czechoslovakia.

The Fuhrer had come to power, thanks to the votes of the Catholic Zentrum, only five years before, but most of the objectives cynically revealed in 'Mein Kampf were already realised; this book, an insolent challenge to the western democracies, was written by the Jesuit Father Staempfle and signed by Hitler. For—as so many ignore the fact—it was the Society of Jesus which perfected the famous Pan-German programme as laid out in this book, and the Fuhrer endorsed it.

---

(58) Secret archives of the Wilhelmstrasse, document 83-26 19/1, (Berlin, 25th of January 1939).

(59) "La Croix", 10th of August 1943.

(60) "La Croix", 28th of January 1942).

(61) "... siquid quod oculis nostris apparet album, nigrum illaesse definierit debemus itidem quod nigrum sit pronuntiare". "Institutum Societatis Jesus" (Roman edition of 1869, II p.417).

Section V

Chapter 3

German aggressions and the Jesuits Austria - Poland - Czechoslovakia - Yugoslavia

Let us see how the Anschluss was prepared:

First of all, and by a "providential" synchronism, when Mussolini seized power in Italy thanks to don Sturzo, Jesuit and chief of the Catholic party, Monseigneur Seipel, a Jesuit, became chancellor of Austria. He held that position until 1929, with an interregnum of two years, and, during those decisive years, he led the Austrian interior politics on to the reactionary and clerical road; his successors followed him on that road which led to the absorption of that country into the German block. The bloody repression of working-class uprisings earned him the nickname "Keine Milde Kardinal": the Cardinal Without Mercy.

"In the early days of May (1936), von Papen entered into secret negotiations with Dr Schussnigg (Austrian Chancellor) working on his weak point and showed him how advantagous a reconciliation with Hitler would be as far as the Vatican's interests were concerned; the argument may seem odd, but Schussnigg was very devout, and von Papen the pope's chamberlain". (62)

Not surprisingly, it was the secret chamberlain who led the whole affair which ended, on the 11th of March 1938, with the resignation of the pious Schussnigg (pupil of the Jesuits), in favour of Seyss-Inquart, chief of the Austrian Nazis. The following day, the German troops entered Austria and the puppet government of Seyss-Inquart proclaimed the union of the country to the Reich. This event was welcomed by an enthusiastic declaration of Vienna's archbishop: Cardinal Innitzer (Jesuit).

"On the 15th of March, the German press published the following declaration from Cardinal Innitzer: "The priests and the faithful must unhesitatingly uphold the great German state, and the Fuhrer whose struggle to set up Germany's power, honour and prosperity is in accord with the wishes of Providence.

---

(62) G.E.R. Gedye: "Suicide de l'Autriche" (Union latine d'editions, Paris 1940, p. 188).

The newspapers printed a facsimile of this declaration to dispel any doubt as to its authenticity. Reproductions were posted up on walls in Vienna and in the other Austrian cities. Cardinal Innitzer.. had, with his own hand, written the following words before his signature: "Und Heil Hitler!"

"Three days later, the whole of the Austrian episcopate addressed a pastoral letter to its diocesans; the Italian newspapers published the text of this letter on the 28th of March: it was a straightforward adhesion to the Nazi regime whose virtues were highly extolled".(63)

Cardinal Innitzer, highest representative of the Roman Church in Austria, also wrote in his declaration: "I invite the chiefs of Youth organisations to prepare their union to the organisation of the German Reich".(64)

So, not only did the cardinal-archbishop of Vienna, followed by his episcopate, throw in his lot with Hitler most enthusiastically, but he handed over also the "Christian" youth to be trained according to nazi methods; these methods had been "officially condemned" in the 'terrible' encyclical letter: "Mit brennender Sorge"!

Then, the 'Mercure de France' justifiably observed: "... These bishops have not taken a decision which involves the Church as a whole on their own accord; the Holy See gave them directives which they merely followed".(65)

This is obvious. But what other "directives" could be expected from this Holy See which brought to power Mussolini, Hitler, Franco and, in Belgium, created the 'Christus-Rex' of Leon Degrelle?

We understand, then, why English authors such as F.A. Ridley, Seeker and Warburg object to the Politics of Pius XI which favoured fascist movements everywhere".(66)

As for the Anschluss, M. Francois Charles-Roux tells us why the Church was so much in favour of it: "Eight million Austrian Catholics united to the Catholics of the Reich could make a German Catholic body more able to make its weight felt".(67)

Poland was in the same situation as Austria when Hitler, after having invaded it, annexed part of it in the name of the Fatherland. A few more million Catholics to reinforce the German contingent under the Roman obedience: the Holy See could only be in favour of this, in spite of all its love for its "dear Polish people". In fact, it did not frown at the brutal regrouping of Catholics in Central Europe, according to the plan of the Jesuits' general, Halke von Ledechowski.

---

(63) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., pp.118, 122.

(64) Ernest Pezet, former vice-president of the Commission for Foreign Affairs, "L'Autriche et la paix" (Ed. Self, Paris 1945, p. 149).

(65) Austria and Hitler ("Mercure de France", 1st of May 1938, p.720).

(66) J. Tchernoff: "Les Demagogies contre les democracies" (R. Pichon and Durand-Auzias, Paris 1947, p.80).

(67) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., p.114.

The Vatican's licensed thurifers keep on reminding their readers that Pius XII "protested" against the aggression in the encyclical letter "Summi Pontificatus". In reality, this ludicrous document, like all other such documents, which numbers no less than 45 pages, contains only one phrase, at the end, concerning Poland crushed by Hitler. And this short allusion is an advice to the Polish people to pray much to the Virgin Mary!

The contrast is striking between those few words of trite condolences and the nattering pages devoted to fascist Italy and the exaltation of the Lateran Treaty; this treaty was concluded by the Holy See and Muss'olini, Hitler's collaborator who, at the time when the pope was writing his encyclical letter, delivered a scandalous speech, as a challenge to the world, and started it with these words: "Liquidata la Polonia!"

But what risks are there in using these derisory alibis, when preaching to the converted? Besides, how many of them would be anxious to examine such references?

Nevertheless, when we study the Vatican's behaviour in this affair, what do we see? First of all, we see the nuncio in Warsaw, Monseigneur Cortesi, urge the Polish government to give in to Hitler in everything: Dantzig, the "corridor", the territories where German minorities live (68). Then, when this is done, we see also the Holy-Father lend his help to the aggressor when trying to make Paris and London ratify the amputation of a large part of his "dear Poland".(69)

To those who would be surprised at such behaviour towards a Catholic country, we will quote a famous precedent: after the first division of Poland in 1772, a catastrophe in which the Jesuits' intrigues played a large part, Pope Clement XIV, when writing to the Empress of Austria, Marie-Therese, expressed his satisfaction as follows:

"The invasion and division of Poland were not done for political reasons only; it was in the interests of religion, and necessary to the spiritual profit of the Chruch, that the Court of Viennna should extend its domination over Poland as much as possible".

Obviously, there is nothing new under the sun—especially at the Vatican. In 1939, there was no need to change one single word in that cynical declaration, apart from "the spiritual profit of the Church" which, this time, consisted of several million Polish Catholics joining the Great Reich.

---

(68) Cf. the "Journal", (1933-1939) of Count Szembeck (Plon, Paris 1952, pp.499).

(69) Cf. Camille Cianfarra, op.cit., pp.259, 260.

This fact easily explains the parsimony of papal condolences in "Summi Pontificatus".

In Czechoslovakia, the Vatican did even better: it provided Hitler with one of its own prelates, a secret chamberlain, to be made into the head of this satellite state of the Reich.

"The Anschluss had made a great noise in Europe. From now on, the hitlerian threat was hovering over the Republic of Czechoslovakia and war was in the air. But, at the Vatican, nobody seemed concerned. Let us listen to M. Francois Charles-Roux:

"In the middle of August, I had tried to persuade the pope that he should speak in favour of peace—a just peace, of course... My first attempts were unsuccessful. But, from the beginning of September 1938 on, when the international crisis reached its worst level, I started gathering, at the Vatican, soothing impressions contrasting strangely with the rapidly deteriorating situation.".(70)

"All my attempts", adds the former French ambassador, "received the same answer from Pius XI: "It would be useless, unnecessary, inopportune". I could not understand his obstinacy in keeping silent". (71)

Events were soon going to explain this silence. It was first of all the annexation of Sudetenland by the Reich, with the support of the Christian Social Party, of course; this annexation was ratified by the Munich accord, and the Republic of Czechoslovakia was divided. But Hitler, who had undertaken to respect its territorial integrity, intended in reality to annexe the Czech countries independent of Slovakia, and reign over it as well by his own appointee.

It was easy for him to attain these ends as most of the main political Slovakian chiefs were Catholic ecclesiastics, according to Walter Hagen (72), and, amongst these, the priest Hlinka (Jesuit), had at his dosposal a "guard" trained on nazi S.A. principles.

We know that, according to canon law, no priest can accept a public post or a political mandate without the Holy See's consent.

This is confirmed and explained by the R.P. Jesuit de Soras: "How could it be otherwise? We have said so already: a priest, by virtue of the 'character' his ordination marked him with, by virtue of the official functions he exercises within the Church itself, by virtue of the cassock he wears, is bound to act as a Catholic, at least when a public action is concerned. Where the priest is, there is the Church".(73)

It was then with the Vatican's consent that members of the clergy sat in the Czechoslovak Parliament. Still more, one of these priests had to have

(70) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., pp.127, 128.
(71) Frnacois Charles-Roux, op.cit., 127, 128.
(72) Cf. Walter Hagen: "Le Front secret" (Les lies d'Or, Paris 1950).
(73) R.P. de Soras, op.cit., p.96.

the Holy See's approval when the Fuhrer himself invested him as head of state -and later conferred on him the highest hitlerian distinctions: the Iron Cross and the Black Eagle decoration.

As anticipated, on the 15th of March 1939, Hitler annexed the rest of Bohemia and Moravia, and put the Republic of Slovakia, which he had created with a stroke of his pen, "under his protection". At the head, he placed Monseigneur Tiso (Jesuit), "who dreamed of combining Catholicism and Nazism". A noble ambition, and easily realised as it had already been proved by the German and Austrian episcopates. "Catholicism and Nazism", proclaimed Monseigneur Tiso, "have much in common; they work hand in hand at reforming the world".(74)

Such must have been also the Vatican's opinion as—in spite of the "terrible" encyclical letter "Mit Brennender Sorge"—it did not haggle over its approval of the gauleiter priest.

"In June 1940, Radio Vatican announced: "The declaration of Monseigneur Tiso, chief of the Slovakian state, stating his intention to build up Slovakia according to a Christian plan, has the full approval of the Holy See".(75)

"Tiso's regime, in Slovakia, was especially afflicting for the Protestant Church of that country, which comprised one fifth of the population. Monseigneur Tiso tried to reduce the Protestant influence to its minimum, and even eliminate it... Influential members of the Protestant Church were sent to concentration camps".(76)

These could count themselves fortunate, as we consider this declaration from the Jesuits' general Wernz, a Prussian (1906-1915): "The Church can condemn heretics to death as any rights they have is because of our forbearance".

Let us see now what kind of apostolic gentleness was used by the gauleiter prelate Tiso towards the Jews: "In 1941, the first contingent of Jews from Slovakia and upper-Silesia arrive at Auschwitz; from the start, those who were not able to work are sent to the gas chamber, in a room of the building containing the crematory furnaces".(77)

Who wrote this? A witness who could not be challenged, Lord Russell of Liverpool, a judicial counsellor at the trials of war criminals.

So, the Holy See had not "lent" one of its prelates to Hitler in vain. The Jesuit head of state was doing a good job and the satisfaction expressed by Radio Vatican is understandable. To have been Auschwitz's first provider, what a glory for this holy man and for the whole Company of Jesuits!

In fact, this triumph lacked nothing. At the time of the Liberation, this prelate was handed over to Czechoslovakia by the Americans, condemned to death in 1946 and hanged—the palm, for a martyr!

---

(74) and (75) Henriette Feuillet: "France Nouvelle", 25th of June 1949.

(76) "Reforme", 17th of August 1947.

(77) Lord Russell of Liverpool: "Sous le signe de la croix gammes", (L'Ami du livre, Geneva 1955, p.217).

"Anything done against the Jews, we do it because of our love for this nation of ours. The love for our fellow-men and the love for our country have developed into a fruitful fight against the enemies of nazism".(78)

Another high dignitary of the Roman Church, in a neighbouring country, could have appropriated this declaration of Monseigneur Tiso to himself. For, if the foundations of the Slovakian "City of God" were hatred and persecution, according to the steadfast tradition of the Church, what can be said of the eminently Catholic state of Croatia, offspring of the collaboration between the killer Pavelitch and Monseigneur Stepinac, and with the assistance of the pontifical legate Marcone!

We would have to look back as far as the conquest of the New World, couple the actions of the adventurers of Cortes and the no less ferocious converter monks to find something worth comparing with the atrocities of those Oustachis", upheld, commanded and prompted by madly fanatical clerics. What these "Assassins in the Name of God", as they were so rightly nicknamed by M. Herve Lauriere, did over four years defies all imagination, and the annals of the Roman Church, even though so rich in such material, cannot produce the equivalent in Europe. Do we need to add that the crony of the blood-thirsty Ante Pavelitch was Monseigneur Stepinac, another Jesuit?

The Croatian terrorist organisation of the "Oustachis", led by Pavelitch, had come to the notice of the French people through the assassination, in Marseille, of King Alexander the First of Yugoslavia and our Foreign-Affairs' minister, Louis Barthou, in 1934. "As Mussolini's government was obviously mixed up in the crime"(79), the extradition of Pavelitch, who had taken refuge in Italy, was demanded by the French government; the Duce obviously took care not to grant it, and the Assize Court of Aix-en-Provence had to impose the death sentence by default on the head of the "Oustachis". This chief of terrorists, hired by Mussolini, "worked" for the Italian expansion on the Adriatic coast. When, in 1941, Hitler and Mussolini invaded and divided Yoguslavia, this supposed Croatian patriot was put. by them, at the head of the satellite state they created under the name of "Independent State of Croatia". On the 18th of May of that same year, in Rome, Pavelitch offered the crown of that state to the Duke of Spolete who took the name "Tomislav II". Of course, he took care never to set foot on the blood-stained soil of his pseudo-kingdom. "On the same day, Pius XII gave a private audience to Pavelitch and his

---

(78) Henriette Feuillet: "France Nouvelle", 25th of June 1949.

(79) Francois Charles-Roux, op.cit., p. 132.

'friends', one of whom was Monseigneur Salis-Sewis, vicar-general ot Monseigneur Stepinac. "So, the Holy See did not fear shaking hands with a certified murderer, sentenced to death by default for the murder of King Alexander the First and Louis Barthou, a chief of terrorists having the most horrible crimes on his conscience! In fact, on the 18th of May 1941, when Pius XII gladly welcomed Pavelitch and his gang of killers, the massacre of Orthodox Croats was at its height, concurrently with forced conversions to Catholicism".(79a)

It was the Serbian minority of the population they were after, as the author Walter Hagen explains: "Thanks to the 'Oustachis', the country was soon transformed into a bloody chaos... The deadly hatred of the new masters was directed towards the Jews and Serbians who were officially outlawed... Whole villages, even whole regions were sytematically wiped out... As the ancient tradition wanted Croatia and the Catholic Faith, Serbia and the Orthodox Church to be synonymous, the Orthodox believers were constrained to join the Catholic Church. These compulsory conversions constituted the completion of "croatisation".(80)

Andrija Artukovic, minister of the Interior, was the great organiser of these massacres and compulsory conversions; but, while doing it, he "morally" defended himself, according to a witness in a high position.

Indeed, when the Yugoslav government asked for his extradition from the United States where he had taken refuge, someone spoke on his behalf: the R.P. Jesuit Lackovic, residing also in the United States, and secretary to Monseigneur Stepinac, archbishop of Zagreb, during the last war.

"Artukovic", states the Jesuit, "was the lay spokesman of Monseigneur Stepinac. Between 1941 and 1945, not one day went by without seeing him in my office or myself going to his. He asked the archbishop's advice on all his actions, as far as their moral aspect was concerned".(81)

When we know what the "actions" of this executioner were, we realise what kind of edifying "moral" advice Monseigneur Stepinac gave him.

Massacres and "conversions" took place until the Liberation, and the good-will of the Holy-Father towards the killers never altered.

One must read, in the Croatian Catholic newspapers of that time, the exchanges of compliments between Pius XII and Pavelitch, the "Poglavnik", to whom Monseigneur Saric, Jesuit archbishop of Sarajavo and a poet in his spare time, dedicated verses impregnated with a rapturous adoration.

(79a) Cf. Herve Lauriere: "Assassins in the Name of God", (Ed. Dufour, Paris 1951, pp.40 ss)

(80) Walter Hagen op.cit., pp. 168,176,198,199.

(81) "Mirror News" of Los Angeles, 24th of January 1958.

(82) With other catholic ecclesiastics such as Monseigneur Aksamovic, the Jesuits Irgolis. Lonacir, Pavunic, Mikan, Polic, Severovic, Sipic, Skrinjar, Vucetic (note of the author).

But this was only a show of good manners: "Monseigneur Stepinac becomes member of the "Oustachi" parliament (82). He wears "Oustachi" decorations, he is present at all important "Oustachi" official manifestations at which he even gives speeches... "Must we then wonder at the respect given to Monseigneur Stepinac by the satellite state of Croatia'? or that his praises were sung by the "Oustachi" press? It is, alas, too evident that, without the support of Monseigneur Stepinac, on the religious and political side, Ante Pavelitch would never have obtained the collaboration of Catholic Croats to such an extent".(83)

To comprehend the full extent of that collaboration, one must read the Croatian Catholic press, the "Katolicki Tjednik", the "Katolick List", the "Hrvatski Narod", and so many other publications which vied with each other in flattering the bloody "Poglavnik"; Pius XII was so pleased that he was a "practising Catholic", and the high esteem of the Sovereign Pontiff embraced even the accomplices of the great man.

The "Osservatore Romano" informs us that, on the 22nd of July 1941. the pope received one hundred members of the Croatian Security Police, led by the chief of Zagreb's police, Eugen Kvaternik-Dido. This group of Croatian S.S., the pick of the executioners and torturers operating in the concentration camps, were presented to the Holy-Father by one who perpetrated crimes so monstrous that his own mother committed suicide in despair.

The goodwill of His Holiness Pius XII is easily explained by the apostolic zeal of these killers. Another "practising Catholic", Mile Budak, minister for Worship, exlcaimed in August 1941, at Karlovac: "The "Oustachi" movement is based on religion. All our work rests on our loyalty to religion and the Catholic Church".(84)

Besides, on the 22nd of July, at Gospic, the same minister for Worship had perfectly defined this work: "We will kill some Serbians, deport others, and the rest will be compelled to' embrace the Roman Catholic religion".(85)

This fine programme was carried out to the letter. When the Liberation put an end to this tragedy, 300,000 Serbians and Jews had been deported and more than 500,000 massacred. By this means the Roman Church had also made 240,000 Orthodox believers enter its fold... who quickly went back to the religion of their ancestors when their freedom was restored.

But, to obtain this ridiculous result, what horrors fell on that unfortunate country! One must read, in the book of M. Herve Lauriere "Assassins in the Name of God", details of the monstrous tortures that

(83) "Le Monde" 27th of May 1953.

(84) Cf. Herve Lauriere: "Assassins in the Name of God", (Ed. Dufour, Paris 1951, p.97).

(85) "L'Ordre de Paris", 8th of February 1947.

these practising Catholics who were the Oustachis inflicted on their poor victims."

The English journalist J.A. Voigt wrote: "Croatian politics consisted of massacres, deportations or conversions. The number of those who were massacred reaches hundreds of thousands. The massacres were accompanied by the most bestial tortures. The "Oustachis" put out their victims' eyes and made garlands with them, which they wore, or presented as mementos".(86)

"In Croatia, the Jesuits implanted political clericalism".(87) It is the present invariably offered by the famous Company to the nations which welcome it. The same author adds: "With the death of the great Croatian tribune, Raditch, Croatia loses its main opponent to political clericalism which will embrace the mission of the Catholic action defined by Friedrich Muckermann. This German Jesuit, well-known before Hitler's advent, made it known, in 1928, in a book whose foreword was written by Monseigneur Pacelli, then apostolic nuncio in Berlin. Muckermann expressed himself as follows: "The pope appeals in favour of the Catholic Action's new crusade. He is the guide who carries the standard of Christ's Kingdom... The Catholic Action means the gathering of world Catholicism. It must live its heroic age... The new epoch can be acquired for Christ only through the price of blood".(88)

Ten years after this was written, the one who wrote the foreword of the Jesuit Father Muckermann's book sat on the throne of Saint-Peter and, during his pontificate, "the blood for Christ" literally flowed in Europe; but Croatia suffered the worst of the atrocious deeds of that "new epoch". There, not only were the priests advocating all out slaughter from the pulpit, but some even marched at the head of the murderers. Others held, apart from their sacred ministry, official posts as prefects or chiefs of the "Oustachi" police, even as chiefs of concentration camps where horrors were not outdone by even Dachau or Auschwitz.

To this bloody list of honours, we must enter the names of the Abbe Bozidar Bralo, the priest Dragutin Kamber, the Jesuit Lackovic and the Abbe Yvan Salitch, secretaries to Monseigneur Stepinac, the priest Nicolas Bilogrivic, etc... and numberless Franciscans; one of the worst of these was Brother Miroslav Filipovitch, main organiser of those massacres, chief of and executioner at the concentration camp of Jasenovac, the most hideous of these earthly hells.

Brother Filipovitch's fate was the same as Monseigneur Tiso's, in Slovakia: when Liberation came, he was hanged, wearing his cassock. But many of his rivals, not very anxious to win the palm of the martyr, fled to

---

(86) "Nineteenth Century and After", August 1943. (87) and (88) Herve Lauriere, op.cit., pp.82,84,85.

Austria, pell-mell with the assassins they had assisted so well.

But what was the "hierarchy" doing, when confronted with the bloodthirsty frenzy of so many of its subordinates?

The "hierarchy", or the episcopate and its leader, Monseigneur Stepinac, voted in the "Oustachi" Parliament for the decrees concerning the conversion of the Orthodox to Catholicism, sent "missionaries" to the terrorized peasants, converted without wincing whole villages (89), took possession of the Serbian Orthodox Church's properties and without ceasing showered praises and blessings on the Poglavnik, copying the example set from on high by Pope Pius XII.

His Holiness Pius XII was personally represented at Zagreb by an eminent monk, the R.P. Marcone. This "Sancti Sedis Legatus" was given the place of honour at all the ceremonies of the "Oustachi" regime, and had himself sanctimoniously photographed at the home of the chief of killers— Pavelitch— with his family which received him as a friend. "Birds of a feather flock together".

So, the most sincere cordiality always reigned in the relations between the assassins and ecclesiastics—of course, many of these ecclesiastics held both positions, for which they were never blamed. "The end justifies the means".

When Pavelitch and his 4,000 "Oustachis"—which included archbishop Saric, a Jesuit, bishop Garic and 400 clerics—left the scene of their exploits to go first to Austria then on to Italy, they left behind part of their "treasures": films, photographs, recorded speeches of Ante Pavelitch, chests full of jewels, gold coins, gold and platinum from the teeth, bracelets, wedding rings and pieces of dentures made of gold and platinum. This spoil taken from the poor wretches who had been murdered were hidden at the Archiepiscopal palace where they were eventually found.

As for the fugitives, they took advantage of the "Pontifical Commission for Assistance", created expressly to save war criminals. This charitable institution hid them in convents, mainly in Austria and Italy, and provided the chiefs with false passports which enabled them to go to "friendly" countries, where they would be able to enjoy the fruits of their robberies in peace. This was done for Ante Pavelitch, whose presence in Argentina was revealed, in 1957, through an attempt upon his life in which he was wounded.

Since then, the dictatorial regime collapsed in Buenos Aires. Like former president Peron himself, his protege had to leave Argentina. From Paraguay where he went first, he reached Spain where he died on the 28th

(89) In Monseigneur Stepinac's own diocese, Kamensko, 400 came back to the Roman Catholic fold in one day. On the 12th of June 1942, "Radio Vatican" announced these mass-conversions, stating that it had been "spontaneous and without any pressure on the part of civil and ecclesiastical authorities".

of December 1959, at the German hospital of Madrid. On that occasion, the French press recalled his bloody career and—more discreetly the "powerful accomplices" who enabled him to escape punishment.

Under the title "Belgrade demanded his extradition in vain", we read in "Le Monde": "The brief information published in the press this morning revived, amongst the Yugoslav people, souvenirs of a past filled with sufferings and bitterness towards those who, by hiding Ante Pavelitch, for nearly fifteen years, obstructed the course of justice".(90) "Paris-Presse" points out the last shelter offered to the terrorist with this short, but significant phrase: "He ended up in a Franciscan monastery of Madrid".(91)

It is from there, in fact, that Pavelitch was taken to hospital where he paid his debt to nature—but not to justice, scoffed at by these "powerful accomplices" who are easy to identify.

Monseigneur Stepinac who had, as he said, a "clear conscience", stayed in Zagreb where he was tried in 1946. Condemned to hard labour, he was in fact only made to reside in his native village. The penance was easy to bear, as we can see, but the Church needs martyrs. The archbishop of Zagreb was then made a member of the holy cohort, in his lifetime, by Pius XII who hastened to confer on him the title of "Cardinal", in recognition of "his apostolate which displays the purest brightness".

We are acquainted with the symbolic meaning of the Cardinals' Purple: the one who dons it must be ready to confess his Faith "usque ad sanguinis effusionem": to the point of shedding blood. We cannot deny that this shedding was abundant in Croatia, during the apostolate of this holy man, but the blood which flowed there in torrents was not the prelate's: it was the blood of Orthodox believers and Jews. Must we see there a "reversibility of merits."

If that is the case, the right to cardinalship of Monseigneur Stepinac cannot be contested. In the diocese of Gornji Karlovac, part of his archbishopric, out of 460,000 Orthodox people who lived there, 50,000 were able to hide in the mountains, 50,000 were sent to Serbia, 40,000 were converted to Catholicism through the regime of terror and 280,000 were massacred".(92)

On the 19th of December 1958, we read in "Catholic France": "To exalt the greatness and heroism of His Eminence the Cardinal Stepinac, a great meeting will take place on the 21st of December 1958, at 4 o'clock, in the crypt of Sainte-Odile, 2, Avenue Stephane-Mallarme, Paris 17. It will be presided over by His Eminence the Cardinal Feltin, archbishop of Paris.

---

(90) "Le Monde", 31st of December 1959.

(91) "Paris-Presse", 31st of December 1959.

(92) Cf. Jean Hussard: "Vu en Yougoslavie" (Lausanne 1947, p.216).

Senator Ernest Pezet and the Reverend Father Dragoun, national rector of the Croatian Mission in France, will take part. His Excellency Monseigneur Rupp will celebrate mass and communion".

This is how a new figure, and not one of the least important, the one of Cardinal Stepinac, came to enrich the gallery of Great Jesuits.

Another aim of this meeting on the 21st of December 1958, in the crypt of Sainte-Odile, was to "launch" a book written in the defense of Zagreb's archbishop, by the R.P. Dragoun himself; Monseigneur Rupp, coadjutor of Cardinal Feltin, wrote the foreword. We cannot give here a full analysis but will say this:

The book is entitled "The Dossier of Cardinal Stepinac", which seems to promise the reader an objective exposition of the trial at Zagreb. In fact, in this volume which numbers 285 pages, we find the speeches of the archbishop's two counsels in full, accompanied by extensive remarks from the author, but, neither the charge itself, nor the speech for the prosecution are mentioned, even briefly.

The R.P. Dragoun seems to ignore the French proverb "Qui n'entend qu'une cloche n'entend qu'un son" (there are two sides to every story)-unless, of course, he knows it too well!

Be that as it may, this systematic obliteration of the opposite side of the story would be enough to close the debate.

Let us consider, though, the good reasons invoked for the discharge of Zagreb's archbishop. But first of all, this question: Was Monseigneur Stepinac really the metropolitan of Croatia and Slovenia? The book of the R.P. Dragoun does not answer this question. On page 142 of that book, we read this concerning the copy of a report by Monseigneur Stepinac, the authenticity of which was contested by the defence:

"In the text of the copy, the archbishop is described as "Metropolitan Croatiae et Slavoniae", but the archbishop is not a metropolitan and never presented himself as such.

This would clear the matter up if we didn't read, on page 114, the following taken from Monseigneur Stepinac's own declarations before the tribunal:

"The Holy See often emphasized that the small nations and the national minorities have the right to be free. Should not I, as "bishop and metropolitan", have the right to discuss it?" The more we read, the less we understand!

No matter! As we are reminded again and again, Monseigneur Stepinac could not influence in any way the behaviour of his flock and clergy. The

To those who bring out the articles of the Catholic press praising the accomplishments of Pavelitch and his hired assassins, the answer is: "It is simply ridiculous to make Monseigneur Stepinac responsible for what the newspaper wrote".

Even when this paper was the "Katolicki List", the most important Catholic publication in Zagreb, diocese of Monseigneur Stepinac! In those conditions, we won't bother mentioning the "Andjeo Cuvar" (The Guardian Angel) belonging to the Franciscans, the "Glasnik Sv. Ante" (The Voice of Saint-Anthony) to the conventuals of the "Katolicki Tjednik", (The Catholic Weekly) of Sarajevo, bishop Saritch, nor, of course, the "Vjesnik Pocasne Straze Srca Isusova" (The Publication of the Guard of Honour of the Heart of Jesus(!), belonging to the Jesuits).

So, it is claimed that Monseigneur Stepinac, "contested metropolitan", had no influence over these publications, of which he was president, and which constantly tried to surpass each other in their adulation of Pavelitch and his regime of blood.

Neither did he have any authority, so they say, over the "Oustachi" bishops Sacric, Garic, Aksamovic, Simrak, etc., who showered praise on the Poglavnik and applauded his crimes, nor over the "Crusaders" of the Catholic Action, these auxiliaries of "Oustachi" converters, nor over the Franciscans murderers, nor over the nuns of Zagreb who marched past, their hands raised in the hitlerian fashion.

What a strange "hierarchy" which had authority over nothing and nobody!

The fact that he sat, with ten other Catholic priests, in the "Sabor" ("Oustachi" Parliament) does not compromise the archbishop—or, at least, we must presume this, as the fact is simply ignored.

We should not reproach him either for his presidency over Episcopal Conferences nor over the Committee for the application of the Decree concerning the conversion of Orthodox people. In this apology, the "humanitarian" pretext of having made so many enter the Roman Church by force, is fully—and skilfully—expounded. We read this, concerning the "awful dilemma" facing Monseigneur Stepinac: "His pastoral duty was to maintain intact the canonical principles but, on the other hand, dissidents who refused to embrace Catholicism were massacred; so, he lessened the severity of the rules."

We become even more bewildered when we read a little further on: "He tried to resolve this dramatic alternative in the circular letter of the 2nd of March 1942, in which he ordered the priests to closely screen the motives for conversion".

This is indeed a peculiar method to "attenuate the severity of the rules" and resolve the "dramatic alternative"!

Was Monseigneur Stepinac opening or shutting the doors of the Roman Church to the false converts? It would be absolutely impossible to find it out if we referred only to this speech for the defence. The archbishop's apologists seem to choose the "shutting", though, when they declare: "... The cases of re-baptisms were very rare in the territory of Zagreb's archdiocese (92a)."

Unfortunately, statistics tell us otherwise, as we said earlier: "... In the diocese of Gornji Karlovac alone, part of Zagreb's archbishopric, 40,000 people were re-baptised".

It is evident that such results could be obtained only through mass-conversions of whole villages, such as Kamensko, in that same archdiocese of Monseigneur Stepinac, where 400 lost sheep returned to the Roman fold in one day, "spontaneously and without any pressure on the part of civil and ecclesiastical authorities".

Then why conceal these numbers? If they were really due to the "charitable sentiments" of the Croatian Catholic clergy, and not to the cynical exploitation of terror, they should have been proud of them. The truth is that the veil thrown over these infamies in an attempt to hide them is transparent and not wide enough. To cover Stepinac, others have to be uncovered: Bishops Saric, Garic, Simrak, the priests Bilogrivic, Kamber Bralo and their associates—the Franciscans and Jesuits have to be uncovered, and finally the Holy See.

We might as well leave this peculiar archbishop to enjoy his "clear conscience", this primate of Croatia supposedly stripped of any authority, calling himself "metropolitan" when he wasn't so and who, to crown the paradox, was opening doors when shutting them. But, at the side of this fantastic prelate, there was another one, consistent and corpulent, the R.P. Marcone, personnal representative of Pius XII.

Was this "Sancti Sedis legatus" also destitute of any authority over the Croatian clergy? Nobody knows! For the "dossier" so well expurgated makes no mention whatsoever of this great person; we could even be oblivious of his existence if we didn't have other information, such as photographs which show him officiating at Zagreb's cathedral, enthroned, amongst the "Oustachi" general-staff, and above all sharing a meal with the family of Pavelitch, the "practising" Catholic who organised the massacres.

Confronted by such a document, it is not surprising that the presence of the pope's representative was "blacked-out"; the mystics would call this "enlightening darkness"! But these few lines from the "dossier" are even more enlightening:

"The procurator himself, in his bill of indictment, names the Holy See's Secretary of State, Cardinal Maglione, who had, in 1942, advised Archbishop Stepinac to establish more cordial and sincere relations with the "Oustachi" authorities".(92b)

This is sufficient to put an end to any more quibbling.

(92a) R.P. Dragoun: "The Dossier of Cardinal Stepinac" (Nouvelles Editions Latines, Paris 1958, pages 46 and 163).

(92b) R.P. Dragoun: "The Dossier of Cardinal Stepinac", (Nouvelles Editions Latines, Paris 1958, p.32).

The collusion between the Vatican and the "Oustachi" murderers is clear enough. The Holy See itself was urging Monseigneur Stepinac to collaborate with them, and the personnal representative of Pius XII, by taking his place at Pavelitch's table, was applying the pontifical instructions to the letter: sincerity and cordiality in the relations with murderers of Orthodox believers and Jews.

This does not surprise us!

But what do the Jesuits think of it all, as they obstinately affirmed that the constant co-operation given to the dictators, by the prelates of His Holiness, was an "option" entirely personal and not dictated by the Vatican?

When Cardinal Maglione sent the previously mentioned recommendations to Zagreb's archbishop, was it his "personal option' he expressed, under the seal of the State's secretary's office?

The proof of the connivance between the Holy See and the "Oustachis" supplied by the R.P. Dragoun, which has just been mentioned, puts an end to this chapter.

But here is a new confirmation of the evangelical sentiments which flourished, and still flourish amongst the faithful of the Croatian Catholic Church towards the Orthodox Serbians.

The "Federation Ouvriere Croate en France" (Federation of Croatian workmen in France) sent out an invitation to the solemn meeting organised for Sunday, 19th of April 1959, at the "General Confederation of Christian workmen" centre, in Paris, to celebrate the 18th anniversary of the foundation of the "Oustachi" Croatian state.

This invitation read: "The ceremony will start with holy mass being said at the Church of Notre-Dame-de-Lorette. But the reader, edified by this pious start, is the more startled when he discovers, soon after, this straight exhortation: "DEATH TO THE SERBIANS... !"(93)

So, this not so banal document expresses the regrets that not more of these "brothers in Christ" were killed.

The book of the R.P. Dragoun, rector of the Croatian Mission in France, implies that the welcome given by the French Catholics to the Croatian refugees was not warm enough. We are told this on pages 59 and 60, and, on pages 280 and 281, the author mentions the "grevious disappointment" these refugees experienced at "being met by a total lack of understanding on the part of their brothers in the faith".

Considering the aforementioned document, this "lack of understanding" seems comprehensible; we are glad that our fellow-countrymen, in spite of the most grand invitations, show little sympathy to a form of piety in which the call to murder walks hand in hand with the "holy mass", in the best Roman and "Oustachi" tradition. We would be even more glad if such

(93) Cf. "Le Monde", 19th of April 1959.

blood-thirsty tracts were not allowed to be printed and distributed openly in Paris itself.

On the 10th of February 1960, the infamous archbishop of Zagreb, Alois Stepinac, died at his native village of Karlovice, where he had been made to reside. This death gave the Vatican an opportunity to organise one of its spectacular manifestations for which it excels.

On that occasion, a lot had to be done as many Catholics had no illusions as far as the Stepinac "case" was concerned. So, the Holy See surpassed itself to give this apotheosis all the pomp possible. The "Osservatore Romano" and all the Catholic press dedicated many columns to the rapturous praises of the "martyr",, his "spiritual testament", and the speeches of His Holiness John XXIII proclaiming "his respect and supernatural affection"; these were the motives which prompted him to give to this cardinal who was not part of the Curia the honours of a solemn service at St. Peter's, in Rome, where he himself would give the General Absolution. And to complete this glorification, the press announced that the beatification of that illustrious person would soon be started.

We must admit that he deserved so much praise, and even the halo, for 'having observed the "holy obedience", and carried out to the letter the pressing instructions of the Holy See concerning the "cordial and sincere" relations wished for between himself and the "Oustachis".

But, even amongst Catholics, we hope that some will be found who will discern, behind the exaltation of this future saint and the burial under flowers of the bloody souvenirs of his "apostolate", the attempt of the Vatican to hide its own crime.

Chapter 4

The Jesuit movement in France before and during the 1939-1945 war

We have seen how the Catholic Action, with Leon Degrelle and his associates at the head, prepared the way for Hitler in the Belgium of "Christus Rex". In France, the same undermining action was going on; it started when Mussolini came to power and ended up, in 1940, with the collapse of the national defence. As for Belgium, it was, so we are told, the "spiritual values" which had to be restored for the good of the country. The F.N.C.: "Federation nationale catholique" (National Catholic Federation) was born and placed under the presidency of General de Castelnau; as many as three million adherents joined it. The choice of its chief was clever: the general, a great military figure and, then, 78 years of age, covered with his personal prestige—but, of course, unknown to him—an intense clerico-fascist propaganda programme.

That the F.N.C, as the whole Catholic Action, was Jesuit through and through is obvious to anyone. But we know also that the good Fathers, whose besetting sin is pride, like to put their signature on the creations of their genius. This they did for the F.N.C. when they consecrated this Catholic army to the Sacred-Heart of Jesus, a worship set up by their Company and whose basilica stands on Montmartre hill, from where Ignatius of Loyola and his companions set off to conquer the world.

A book concerning the F.N.C, whose foreword was written by the R.P. lanvier, preserved for posterity the act of consecration read "at the altar" by the old general. We will quote just a few phrases:

"Sacred Heart of Jesus, The chiefs and representatives of French Catholics, prostrating themselves now before you, have assembled and organised the National Catholic Federation (F.N.C.) to re-establish your reign over this land... All of us, those who are present and those who are absent, have not always been irreproachable... We carry the burden of the crimes the French nation committed against you... It is then with the view to repair and expiate that we present to you, today, our desires, intentions and unanimous resolution to re-establish over the whole of France your sacred and royal sovereignty, and liberate the souls of her children from a sacriligious teaching... We will not flinch any more before this fight for which you condescended to arm us. We want everything to be bent before and devoted to your service...

"Sacred Heart of Jesus, we beseech you, through the Virgin Mary, to receive the homage... "etc".(94)

As for the "crimes of the French nation", the same Catholic author enumerates them:

Fatal words and general directives: socialism is condemned... liberalism is condemned... Leo XIII showed that the freedom of worship is unjustifiable. The pope also showed that the freedom of speech and expression cannot be justifiably accorded... So, the freedom of thought, press, teaching and worship, considered by some as rights natural to man, cannot possibly be given...

"We must", said Pius XI, "re-instate these teachings and regulations of the Church".

Such is the main aim of the F.N.C., under the Hierarchy's control assured by the decentralization of the diocesan Committees.

"In the Catholic Action, as in the war, the famous word of General de Castelnau remains true: "Forward".(95)

This is certainly clear and explicit. We know, then, what to expect when we read this, from Pius XI: "The Catholic Action is the faithful's apostolate..." (Letter to Cardinal Van Roey, 15th of August 1929).

Strange apostolate, consisting of the rejection of all liberties valued by civilised countries and to be the patron of, instead of, of the totalitarian gospel! Is this "the right to communicate to other minds the treasures of Redemption"? (Pius XI, "Non abbiamo bisogno").

In Belgium Leon Degrelle and his friends, heroes of the Catholic Action spread around them these "treasures of Redemption"... revised and up-dated by the Jesuit Father Staempfle, the discreet author of "Mein Kampf".

It was the same in France where lay apostles, "joining in the activity of the hierarchical apostolate" (Pius XI "dixit"), were busy setting up another "collaboration". Let us read what Franz von Papen, the pope's secret chamberlain and the Fuhrer's right hand man, wrote concerning this subject:

"Our first meeting took place in 1927, when a German delegation, to which I had the honour to belong, came to Paris, for the "Social Week of the Catholic Institute", under the presidency of Monseigneur Baudrillart

---

(94) and (95) Georges Viance: "La Federation nationale catholique", foreword by the R.P. Janvier (Flammarion, Paris 1930, pp. 186,187,188,78).

This was indeed a fruitful first contact as it marked the start of a long exchange of visits between important personalities from France and Germany.

"On the French side, the RR. PP. Delattre (Jesuit), de la Briere (Jesuit) and Denset (Jesuit)... were present at these conferences".(96)

Further on, the good apostle adds that, at times, "this conference of Catholics reached superhuman heights of greatness".

This "greatness" reached its zenith on the 14th of June 1940, the day which saw the flag adorned with the swastika fly victoriously over Paris. We know that Goebbels, chief of hitlerian propaganda, indicated that date three months before, on the 14th of March, and that the German offensive was only launched on the 10th of May.

The accuracy of this forecast is not as astonishing as it may seem.

"Here is the secret report of agent 654 J.56, working for the German Secret Service, who sent these revelations to Himmler: "Paris, 5th of July 1939. "I can declare that, in France, the situation is now in our hands. Everything is ready for J day and all our agents are at their posts. Within a few weeks, the police force and military system will collapse like a pack of cards".

Many secret documents relate that the traitors had been chosen a long time before. Men like Luchaire, Bucard, Deat, Doriot... and Abel Bonnard (of the French Academy)".(97)

(This particular one fled to Spain at the Liberation. He came back to France on the 1st of July 1958, gave himself up, but was immediately released on a temporary basis by the president of the High-Court of Justice!)

The extremely well documented book of M. Andre Guerber gives details of payments allocated to these traitors by the German SR. This money was well and truly earned, for their work was very effective. Besides, the atmosphere had been prepared for a long time, now. To "regenerate" the land according to the wishes of the Catholic Action, a whole brood of apprentice-dictators, on the model of Leon Degrelle, had hatched, men like Deat, Bucard, Doriot who was—according to M. Andre Guerber—"agent No.56 BK of the German Secret Service". Of all this motley band he was also the one best thought of by the archbishopric and those well-disposed towards them... and, of course, by Hitler who, later on at Sigmaringen, gave him full power.

Doriot was the rising star; but, for the immediate future and to treat cautiously the transition after the foreseen and wanted defeat, another man was needed, a highly respected military chief who would be able to dress up the disaster and present it as a "national recovery".

---

(96) Franz von Papen: "Memoires" (Flammarion, Paris 1953, p.91). (97) Andre Guerber: "Himmler et ses crimes" (Les Documents Nuit et Jour, Paris, 1981)

In 1936 already, Canon Coube wrote: "The Lord who brought forth Charlemagne and the heroes of the Crusades can still raise up saviours... Amongst us, there must be men whom He has marked with His seal and who will be revealed when his time has come... Amongst us, there must be men of the cloth who are the workmen in the great national restorations. But what are the necessary conditions they need to accomplish this mission? Natural qualities of intelligence and character; also supernatural qualities that is to say obedience to God and His Law is just as indispensable, as this political work is moral and religious before anything else. These saviours are men with generous hearts who work only for the glory of God..."(98)

When the disciple of Loyola expounded these political and religious thoughts, he knew who this pious "saviour" would be, as his name was not a secret amongst clerics and fascists; this is told us by M. Francois Ternand:

"A clever and persistant propaganda campaign began in favour of a "Petain dictatorship"...

"In 1935, Gustave Herve published a pamphlet which we are going to examine... The tract is entitled "We need Petain"... its foreword is an enthusiastic apology of the "Italian recovery" and "the even more amazing recovery of Germany", also an exaltation of the wonderful chiefs who were the authors of these recoveries. Now what about our own French people?... There is a man around whom we could gather... We also have a providential man... Do you want to know his name? It is Petain".

"We need Petain", for the homeland is in a dangerous position; and not only the homeland, but Catholicism also: "Christian civilisation is condemned to death if a dictatorial regime is not set up in every country"...

"Listen: "In peace time, a regime can only be swept away by a coup d'Etat if it is willing or if it has no support from the army and administrations. The operation can be a success only through a war and especially a defeat".(99)

So, the path to follow was already made clear in 1935 to "re-christianise" France, the regime had to be swept away, and the best way to attain this was to suffer a military defeat which would place us under the German yoke. In 1943, this was confirmed by Pierre Laval, the pope's count and president of the Vichy government:

"I hope Germany will be victorious. It may seem strange to hear the one who is defeated wish for the victor's victory. It is because this war is not like previous ones. It is a true war of religion! Yes, a war of religion".(100)

(98) Canon Coube: "Sainte Therese de l'Enfant Jesus et les crises du temps present", (Flammarion, Paris 1936, pp.165 ss). Imprimatur: 11th of January 1936.

(99) Francois Tenand: "L'Ascension politique du Marechal Petain", (Ed. du livre francais, Paris 1946, pp.40 ss).

(100) National Radio, 2nd of January 1943.

This indeed was what the Church wanted, even though unpleasant for the forgetful Jesuit Fessard, whom we mentioned earlier on, who doesn't want to know any more what was said on the American radio for the 20 million listeners of the "Christian Front", by his Loyolan brother Father Coughlin: "The German war is a battle for Christianity".(101)

But during the same period, in occupied France, Cardinal Baudrillart, rector of the Catholic Institute in Paris, was saying the same thing. Listen to him:

"Hitler's war is a noble enterprise undertaken for the defence of European culture".(102)

So, on both sides of the Atlantic, as indeed all over the world, the clerical voices were singing the praises of victorious Nazism.

In France, Cardinal Suhard, archbishop of Paris, set the example to all the episcopate by "collaborating" fully, and so did the Jesuit nuncio Monseigneur Valerio Valeri.

After the Liberation, the government asked the Vatican to recall no less than thirty bishops and archbishops who were deeply compromised. In the end, it consented to recall three of them.

"France has forgotten...", wrote M. Maurice Nadeau. 'La Croix', the most dangerous mouthpiece at the service of collaboration, takes its place amongst the publications of a liberated France; the prelates who were urging the French youth to work for the victory of Germany have not been brought to trial".(103)

One could read in "Artaban" of the 13th of December 1957:

"In 1944, 'La Croix' was prosecuted for having favoured the enemy and brought before the Court of Justice in Paris; the case was put in the hands of Judge Raoult who dismissed it. The affair was discussed at the Chamber, on the 13th of March 1946 (see J.O. Parliamentary Debates, pages 713-714) and it was learned, then, that M. de Menthon, minister for Justice and thorough at purging the French press, had spoken in favour of'La Croix'.

In fact, "the voice of pontifical thought"—as Pius XII called it, in 1942, when sending it his blessing—was the only one exempted from the general measures taken to suppress all the newspapers published during the occupation, even though, as 'Artaban' reminds us:

"'La Croix' received instructions from the German Lieutenant Sahm and, in Vichy, from Pierre Laval".

Of course, the 'pontifical thought' and hitlerian instructions happily coincided. This is confirmed when we study the war-time editions of this estimable paper.

(101) 7th of July 1941.

(102) 30th of July 1941. ,

(103) Foreword to "L'Eglise a-t-elle collabore"?, by Jean Cotereau (Spartacus, Paris, May 1946).

One of the Jesuits' attributions, and not one of the least important, is to supervise all the Catholic press. In the various papers adapted to the need of their readers, they bring out, as necessary, the various shades of the 'pontifical thought' which, under its undulating aspects, nevertheless reaches implacably towards its aims. There is not one "Christian newspaper or periodical that does not enjoy the collaboration of some-discreet—Jesuits.

These Fathers who are "all things to all men" are of course the best at playing Chameleons. This they did, as we know, and, after the Liberation, we had the surprise to see coming up, everywhere, Fathers "who had belonged to the resistance" (they joined it later than others!), and who testified that the Church had NEVER NEVER "collaborated".

Forgotten, abolished, evaporated were the articles of 'La Croix' and other Catholic newspapers, the episcopal mandates, the pastoral letters, the official communications from the Assembly of Cardinals and Archbishops, the exhortations of Cardinal Baudrillart calling on French youths to don the nazi uniform and serve in the L.V.F. after having taken an oath of allegiance to Hitler! All this was past and forgotten!

"History is a novel", said a disillusioned thinker. The one of our epoch will be true to this definition: the novel is being written under our eyes. Many 'historians' are contributing to it, well-disposed ecclesiastics and laymen, and we can be certain that the result will be edifying: a Catholic novel, of course. The Jesuits' contribution is extensive, as worthy heirs of Father Loriquet whose "History of France" gave such a fanciful picture of Napoleon.

Compared to this skilful feat, it was a simple matter to camouflage the collaboration between the clerics and the German occupier, from 1940 to 1944, and make it vanish. And this is still going on; over the years, so many articles have been written in newspapers, periodicals, books, under the patronage of the "Imprimatur", to sing the praise of the misjudged super-patriots such as Suhard, Baudrillart, Duthoit, Auvity, Du Bois de la Villerabel, Mayol de Luppe, etc.! What a lot of pages blackened to exalt the attitude—so heroic—of the episcopate, during the war years in which France experienced "a situation which led the French bishops to become the "defenders of the city"!, as a wry joker wrote.(104)

"Slander, and slander again! there is bound to be something left", advised Basile, this perfect type of Jesuit. "Whitewash, and whitewash again", say his successors, great writers of "historical novels".

And this whitewashing is being carried out extensively.

Future generations, submerged by a torrent of exaggerations, will devote a thankful thought—at least, we hope they will—to these "defenders" of the city, these heroes of the Roman Church and Homeland, "dressed with a candid honesty of white linen" by the work of their apologists; some of them were even canonised!

---

(104) R.P. Deroo: "L'Episcopat francais dans la melee de son temps", (Bonne Presse, Paris 1955, p. 103). Imprimatur 1955.

On the 25th of August 1944, the Jesuit Cardinal Suhard, archbishop of Paris (since the 11th of May 1940!) and leader of the clerical collaborators, imperturbably decided to celebrate the "Te Deum" of victory at Notre-Dame. We were spared this unseemly farce only through "the strong protest of the general chaplain of the F.F.I."

We read in "France-Dimanche" of the 26th of December 1948: "His Eminence, Cardinal Suhard, archbishop of Paris, on the anniversary of his entering the priesthood has just received an autographic letter from His Holiness Pius XII who congratulates him, amongst other things, for the part he played during the occupation. We know that the cardinal's behaviour during that period had been severely criticized after the Liberation. When General de Gaulle arrived back in Paris, in August 1944, he refused to meet the cardinal at the "Te Deum" in Notre-Dame. At that time, the prelate was openly accused of "collaborationist tendencies".

The Holy-Father's congratulations are then understandable. But there is another story of "Te Deum" even more edifying!:

After the allies disembarked, the city of Rennes suffered much in the fighting which followed, and many died amongst the civilian population as the commanding officer of the German garrison had refused to evacuate them. When the city was taken, the traditional "Te Deum" was going to be celebrated, but the archbishop and primate of Britany, Monseigneur Roques, absolutely refused, not only to officiate himself but also to allow this ceremony to take place in his cathedral. To thank Heaven for the liberation of his city was an intolerable scandal to the eyes of this prelate. Because of this attitude, he was confined to the archbishop's residence by the French authorities.

Such loyalty to the "pontifical thought" called for an equivalent reward. It came from Rome, soon after, in the shape of a Cardinal's hat.

We can blame the late Pius XII with many things, but we must admit that he always "acknowledged his own". A flattering letter to Cardinal Suhard, distinguished collaborator, the Cardinal's purple for Monseigneur Roques, hero of the... German Resistance: this "great pope" was practising a strict distributive justice.

Of course, his entourage was of the kind which could advise him wisely: two German Jesuits, R.P. Leiber and R.P. Hentrich, "his two private secretaries and his favourites".(105) His confessor was the German Jesuit Bea. Sister Pasqualina, a German nun, supervised his household and above all cooked for him. Even the canary, answering to the sweet name of "Dumpfaf", had been imported from beyond the Rhine.

---

(105) 'La Croix', 10th of October 1958.

But had not the Sovereign Pontiff told Ribbentrop, after Hitler invaded Poland, that "he would always have a special affection for Germany"?(106).

---

(106) We read in "Documentation catholique" of the 15th of March 1959: "As far as the very estimable German nation is concerned, we will follow the example given to us by our Predecessor (Pius XII), signed John XXIII. The spirit of continuity is one of the Vatican's attributes.

Section V

Chapter 5

The Gestapo and the Company of Jesus

If Pius XI and Pius XII's goodwill and friendliness never failed towards the Fuhrer whom they had brought to power, we must admit that he fullfiled all the conditions of the pact by which he was bound to the Vatican. As he had expressly promised to "strangle" the anticlericals, they soon followed the liberals and Jews into the concentration camps. We know how the chief of the Third Reich had decided the fate of the Jews: they were simply massacred or, when more advantagous, made to work until worn out then liquidated. In this case the 'final solution' was only delayed.

But let us see, first, how an especially "authorised" personality, Franco, Knight of the Order of Christ, expressly confirmed the collusion between the Vatican and the nazis. According to "Reforme", this is what the press of the Spanish dictator (Franco) published on the 3rd of May 1945, the day of Hitler's death:

"Adolf Hitler, son of the Catholic Church, died while defending Christianity. It is therefore understandable that words cannot be found to lament over his death, when so many were found to exalt his life. Over his mortal remains stands his victorious moral figure. With the palm of the martyr, God gives Hitler the laurels of Victory".(107)

This funeral oration of the nazi chief, a challenge to the victorious allies, is voiced by the Holy See itself, under the cover of Franco's press. It is a communique of the Vatican given via Madrid.

Of course, this missing hero well deserved the gratitude of the Roman Church and they do not attempt to conceal it. He served her faithfully: all those this Church pointed out to him as her adversaries felt the consequences. And this good 'son' wasn't slow in admitting what he owed to his Most Holy Mother, and especially to those who made themselves her soldiers in the world.

---

(107) "Reforme", 21st of July 1945.

"I learned much from the Order of the Jesuits", said Hitler... "Until now, there has never been anything more grandiose, on the earth, than the hierarchical organisation of the Catholic Church. I transferred much of this organisation into my own party... I am going to let you in on a secret... I am founding an Order... In my "Burgs" of the Order, we will raise up a youth which will make the world tremble... Hitler then stopped, saying that he couldn't say any more.."(108)

Another highly placed hitlerian, Walter Schellenberg, former chief of the German counter-espionage, completed this confidence from the Fuhrer, after the war:

"The S.S. organisation had been constituted, by Himmler, according to the principles of the Jesuits' Order. Their regulations and the Spiritual Exercises prescribed by Ignatius of Loyola were the model Himmler tried to copy exactly... The "Reichsfuhrer SS"—Himmler's title as supreme chief of the SS—was to be the equivalent of the Jesuits' "General" and the whole structure of the direction was a close imitation of the Catholic Church's hierarchical order. A mediaeval castle, near Paderborn in Westphalia, and called "Webelsbourg", was restored; it became what could be called a SS monastery".(109)

For their part, the best theological pens were busy demonstrating the similarity between the Catholic and Nazi doctrines. And, for that work, the sons of Loyola were the busiest. As an example, let us see how Michaele Schmaus, Jesuit theologian, presented to the public a series of studies on this subject:

"Empire and Church" is a series of writings which should help the building up of the Third Reich as it unites a national-socialist state to Catholic-christianity... The national-socialist movement is the most vigorous and massive protest against the spirit of the 19th and 20th centuries... A compromise between the Catholic faith and liberal thinking is impossible... Nothing is more contrary to Catholicism than democracy... The re-awakened meaning of "strict authority" opens up again the way to the real interpretation of ecclesiastical authority... The mistrust of liberty is founded on the Catholic doctrine of original sin... The national-socialist Commandments and those of the Catholic Church have the same aim..."(110)

---

(108) Hermann Rauschning, former national-socialist chief of the government of Dantzig: "Hitler m'a dit", (Ed. Co-operation, Paris 1939, pp.266, 267, 273 ss).

(109) Walter Schellenberg: "Le Chef du contre-espionnage nazi vous parle" (Julliard, Paris 1957, pp.23-24).

(110) "Begegnungen zwichen Katholischen Christentum und nazional-sozialitischer Weltanchaunung", by Michaele Schmaus, professor at the Faculty of Theology of Munich. (Aschendorf, Munster 1933).

This aim was the "new middle-ages" Hitler promised Europe. The similarity is obvious between the passionate anti-liberalism of this Jesuit from Munich and the equal fanaticism expressed during the "act of consecration of the F.N.C. in the basilica of Montmartre". During the occupation, the R.P. Merklen wrote: "These days, liberty no longer seems to merit any esteem".(111)

Quotations such as these could be multiplied by the thousand. Is not this hatred of liberty under all its forms the character itself of the Roman Master? It is easy also to understand how the Catholic "doctrine" and the nazi "doctrine" could harmonise so well. The one who ably demonstrated this accord, "The Jesuit Michaele Schmaus", was called by 'La Croix', ten years after the war, the "great theologian of Munich"(112), and nobody will be surprised to learn that he was made a "Prince of the Church" by Pius XII.

Under the circumstances, what becomes of the "terrible" encyclical letter "Mit brennender Sorge", from Pius XI, which was supposed to condemn nazism? No casuist has tried to tell us... naturally!

The "great theologian" Michaele Schmaus had many rivals, according to a German author who sees in the "Katolisch-Konservatives Erbgut" the strangest book ever published by the German Catholic Publications:

"This anthology which brings together texts from the main Catholic theorists of Germany, from Gorres to Vogelsang, makes us believe that national-socialism was born out of Catholic ideas".(113)

When writing this, the author certainly didn't realise he was describing it so perfectly.

Another well informed person, the mainspring of the pact between the Holy See and Berlin and the pope's secret chamberlain, Franz von Papen, was even more explicit:

"The Third Reich is the first world power which not only acknowledges but also puts into practice the high principles of the papacy".(114)

To this, we will add the result of this "putting into practice": 25 million victims of the concentration camps—the official figure issued by the United Nations Organisation.

Here, we find it necessary to add something especially for candid minds, for those who cannot admit that the organised massacres were one of the papacy's "high principles". Of course, this candour is diligently maintained:

---

(111) "La Croix", 2nd of September 1951.

(112) "La Croix", 2nd of September 1954.

(113) Gunter Buxbaum- "Les Catholiques en Europe centrale" ("Mercure de France", 15th of January 1939).

(114) Robert d'Harcourt of the French Academy: "Franz von Papen, l'homme a tout faire" L'Aube, 3rd of October 1946).

—"Such barbarian deeds belong to the past"!

So say some good apostles to the simple, while shrugging their shoulders before the non-catholics "for whom the fires of the Holy Inquisition are still burning".(115)

So be it! Let us set aside the superabundant testimonies about the clerical ferocity of years gone by to consider the 20th century.

We will not recall either the exploits of men like Stepinac and Marcone in Croatia, nor Tiso in Slovakia, but will confine ourselves to examining the orthodoxy of certain "high principles" they put so well into practice.

Are they really out-dated today—these principles—disowned by an "enlightened doctrine", officially rejected by the Holy See with other mistakes of a dark past? It is easy to find out.

Let us, for example, open the "Great Apologetics", by the Abbe Jean Vieujan, which can hardly be described as mediaeval as it is dated "1937". What do we read?

"To accept the principle of the Inquisition, one only needs a Christian mentality, and this is what many Christians lack... The Church has no such timidity".(116)

One could not put it better.

Is another proof, no less orthodox and modern, necessary? Listen to the R.P. Janvier, a famous conference speaker at Notre-Dame:

"By virtue of her indirect power over temporal matters, should not the Church have the right to expect Catholic States to oppress heretics even to the point of death, so as to suppress them?

Here is my answer:

"I do advocate this, even to the point of death!... Leaning first of all on the practice, then on the teaching of the Church itself; and I am convinced that no Catholic would say the opposite without erring gravely".(117)

We could not accuse this theologian of speaking in riddles. His speech is clear and concise. It would be impossible to say more with fewer words. Everything is there, concerning the right the Church arrogates to herself to exterminate those whose beliefs do not correspond with hers: the "teaching" which compels her, the "practice" which legitimates by tradition, and even the "call to the Christian states", of which the hitlerian crusade was such a perfect example.

The following words, far from ambigious, were not pronounced in the darkness of the Middle-Ages either:

"The Church can condemn heretics to death, for any rights they have are only through our tolerance, and these rights are apparent not real". The author of this was the Jesuits' general Franz Wernz (1906-1915), and the fact that he was German as well gives even more weight to his declration.

---

(115) "Temoignage chretien", 6th of December 1957.

(116) Abbe Jean Vieujan: "Grande Apologetique" (Bloud et Gay, Paris 1937, p.1316).

(117) Conference of the 25th of March 1912.

During the 20th century also, Cardinal Lepicier, notoroius prince of the Church, wrote: "If someone professes publicly to be an heretic or tries to pervert others, by his speech or example, he can not only be excommunicated, but also justly killed..."(118 & 118a). If that's not a characteristic appeal to murder, I might as well be "changed into a peppermill" as the late Courteline said.

Is the Sovereign Pontiffs contribution wanted as well? Here it is, from a modern pope whose "liberalism" was criticised by intransigent clerics, the Jesuit Pope Leo XIII: "Anathema on the one who says: the Holy Spirit does not want us to kill the heretic".

What higher authority could be invoked after this one, apart from that of the Holy Spirit?

Even though this may displease those who manipulate the smokescreen (reference to those who put out smoke signals during the choice of a Pope), the soothers of disquieted consciences, the papacy's "high principles" remain unchanged and, amongst other things, the extermination for the Faith is as valid and canonical today as it was in the past. A conclusion most "enlightening"—to use a word dear to mystics—when we consider what happened in Europe between 1939 and 1945.

"Hitler, Goebbels, Himmler and most members of the party's "old guard" were Catholics", wrote M. Frederic Hoffet. "It was not by accident that, because of its chiefs' religion, the National-socialist government was the most Catholic Germany ever had... This kinship between National-socialism and Catholicism is most striking if we study closely the propaganda methods and the interior organisation of the party. On that subject, nothing is more instructive than Joseph Goebbel's works. He had been brought up in a Jesuit college and was a seminarist before devoting himself to literature and politics... Every page, every line of his writings recall the teaching of his masters; so he stresses obedience... the contempt for truth... "Some lies are as useful as bread!" he proclaimed by virtue of a moral relativism extracted from Ignatius of Loyola's writings..."(119)

Hitler did not award the palm of Jesuitism to his chief of propaganda, though to the Gestapo's chief, as he told his favourites: "I can see Himmler as our Ignatius of Loyola"(120).

(118) "De stabilitate et progressu dogmatis", first part, art VI 9 I ("Typographia editrix romana, Romae 1908").

(118a) See Sol Ferrer-Francisco Ferrer. Un Martyr au XXe siecle (Fischbacher, Paris). (119)) Frederic Hoffet: "L'lmperialisme protestant" (Flammarion, Paris 1948, pp.172 ss). (120) Adolf Hitler: "Libres propos" (Flammarion, Paris 1952, p.164).

To speak thus, the Fuhrer must have had some good reasons. First of all, we notice that Kurt Heinrich Himmler, Reichsfuhrer of the SS, Gestapo and German police forces, seemed to be the one most impregnated by clericalism amongst the Catholic members of Hitler's entourage. His father had been director of a Catholic school in Munich, then tutor of Prince Ruprecht of Bavaria. His brother, a Benedictine monk, lived at the monastery of Maria Laach, one of the Pan-German high places. He also had an uncle who had held the important position of Canon at the Court of Bavaria, the Jesuit Himmler.

The German author Walter Hagen gives also this discreet information: "The Jesuits' general, Count Halke von Ledochowski, was ready to organise, on the common basis of anti-communism, some collaboration between the German Secret Service and the Jesuit Order".(121)

As a result, within the SS Central Security Service, an organisation was created, and most of its main posts were held by Catholic priests wearing the black uniform of the SS. The Jesuit Father Himmler was one of its superior officers.

After the Third Reich's capitulation, the Jesuit Father Himmler was arrested and imprisoned at Nuremberg. His hearing by the international tribunal would have apparently been most interesting, but Providence was keeping a watchful eye: Heinrich Himmler's uncle never appeared before that court. One morning, he WAS FOUND DEAD IN HIS CELL, and the public never learned the cause of his death.

We will not insult the memory of this cleric by supposing that he willingly ended his days, against the solemn teaching laws of the Roman Church.

Nevertheless, his death was as sudden and opportune as the one of another Jesuit, sometime before, Father Staempfle, the unrecognised author of 'Mein Kampf'. Strange coincidence indeed...

But let us come back to Kurt Heinrich Himmler, chief of the Gestapo, which meant he held in his hand the essential reins of power of the regime. Was it his personal merits which earned him such a high position? Did Hitler see in him a superior genius when he compared him to the creator of the Jesuit Order? It is certainly not what the testimonies of those who knew him imply as they saw in him nothing more than mediocrity.

Was that star shining with a borrowed brightness? Was it really Kurt Heinrich Himmler, the ostensible chief, who actually reigned over the Gestapo and the secret services? Who was sending millions of people, deported for political reasons, and Jews to their death? Was it the flat-faced nephew or the uncle, former Canon at the Court of Bavaria, one of von Ledochowski's favourites, a Jesuit Father and superior officer of the SS?

It may seem reckless, and even presumptuous, to take such an indiscreet look behind the scenes of History. The play is performed on the stage, before the combined lights of the footlights, the stagelights and the arc lights. This is normal for any show; and the one who wants to see behind the props may well be regarded as troublesome and ill-bred.

---

(121) Walter Hagen, op.cit., p.358.

However, the spell binding actors on whom the public's gaze is fixed have all come from behind the scenes. This is more than evident when we study these "sacred monsters" and realise that they are far from equal to the individuals they are supposed to represent.

Such seems to have been the case of Himmler. But wouldn't it be right to say the same of the one whom he helped as his right hand man, Hitler?

When we saw Hitler gesticulating on the screens or heard him bawling his hysterical speeches, did we not have the impression of looking at the movements of an automaton ill adjusted, with overstretched springs? Even his most simple and composed movements reminded us of a mechanical puppet. And what about his dull and globular eyes, flabby nose, bloated physiognomy whose vulgarity could not be disguised by that famous lock of hair and brush moustache which seemed glued under his nostrils.

Was this snarler at public meetings really a chief? the "real" master of Germany, an "authentic" Statesman whose genius was going to turn the world upside-down?

Or was he just a bad substitute for all that? A covering skin cleverly blown up and a phantom for the use of the masses, a rabble rouser?

He himself admitted it when he said: "I am only a clarion". M. Francois-Poncet, then French ambassador to Berlin, confirms that Hitler worked very little, was not a reader and let his collaborators have their own way.

His helpers gave the same impression of emptiness and unreality. The first one, Rudolf Hess, who flew to England in 1941, looked on his own trial at Nuremberg as a total stranger, and we never learned if he was completely insane or just a lunatic. The second one was the grotesque Goering, vain and obese, who wore the most spectacular comic-opera uniforms, a glutton, a great robber of paintings and, to top it all, a morphine drug addict.

The other main personalities of the party bore the same resemblance and, at the trials of Nuremberg, it was one of the journalists greatest surprises to have to report that—apart from their own particular defects— these Nazi heroes lacked in intellect, character, and were more or less insignificant.

The only one who stood above that vulgar mob—because of his astuteness and not his moral worth—was Franz von Papen the chamberlain of His holiness, "the man for every job"... who was bound to be acquitted.

If the Fuhrer comes out as an extraordinary puppet, was the one he modelled himself upon more consistent? Let us recall the ridiculous exhibitions of that "Caesar fit for a carnival", rolling his big black eyes that he wanted to flash under that strange hat decorated with curtain tassels! And those photographs meant for propaganda, taken from his feet and depicting only his jaws, jutting out against the sky, the wonder man, as an immovable rock—symbol of a will which knew no obstacles!

What a will! From the confidences of some of his companions, we get the picture of a man constantly undecided; this "formidable man" who was going to "invade everything", with elemental force (to use terms of Cardinal Ratti, future Pius XI), did not resist the advances made to him by the Jesuit Cardinal Gasparri, secretary of State, on behalf of the Vatican.

Just a few secret meetings persuaded the revolutionist to enlist bag and baggage under the Holy Father's standard, to carve out the brilliant career we know so well, and the well known former minister Carlo Sforza could write:

"One day, when time will have attenuated the bitterness and hatred, it will be recognised we hope, that the orgy of bloody brutalities which turned Italy into a prison for twenty years, and ruins through the 1940-1945 war, found its origin in an almost unique historical case: the utter disproportion between the legend artificially created around a name and the real capacities of the poor devil who bore that name, a man who was not obstructed by culture".(122)

This perfect formula is applicable to Hitler, as well as Mussolini: same disproportion between the legend and capacities, same lack of "culture" in those two mediocre adventurers with almost identical pasts; their lightning careers can find an explanation only in their gift for haranguing the masses, a gift which brought them before the glare of publicity.

That the legend was "artifically created" is evident enough when we know that, today, the Fuhrer's retrospective apparition on the screens of Germany provokes nothing more than a huge laugh.

But was not the obvious inferiority of these "providential men" the very reason for which they were chosen to be elevated to power? The fact is that the same lack of personal qualities can be found in all those the papacy elected to be its champions.

In Italy and Germany, there were some "real" statesmen, "real" chiefs, who were able to take the helm and govern without having to resort to this delirious "mystic". But these were too bright intellectually and not sufficiently pliable. The Vatican, and especially the "black pope", von Ledochowski, could not have held them "as a baton in his hand", according to the fiery formula, and made them serve his aims at all costs until catastrophe struck.

We have seen how the revolutionist Mussolini was turned inside out, as one would do with a glove, by the Holy See's emissaries who promised him power.

---

(122) Count Carlo Sforza: "L'ltalie telle que je l'ai vue", (Grasset, Paris 1946, p.158).

The unbending Hitler was to prove just as malleable. The Ledochowski's plan was, originally, to create a federation of the Catholic nations in central and eastern Europe, in which Bavaria and Austria (governed by the Jesuit Seipel) would have had the pre-eminence. Bavaria had to be separated from the German Republic of Weimar—and, as by chance, the agitator Hitler, of Austrian origin, was then a Bavarian separatist.

But the chance to realise this federation and place a Hapsburg at its head became more and more slim, whilst Monseigneur Pacelli, the nuncio who had left Munich for Berlin, became the more conscious of the German Republic's weakness because of the poor support the Allies gave it. The hope to get hold of Germany as a whole was then born at the Vatican and the plan was modified accordingly:

"The hegemony of Protestant Prussia had to be prevented and as the Reich was to dominate Europe—to avert the Germans' federalism—a Reich had to be reconstituted in which the Catholics would be masters".(123)

This was enough. Turning completely round with his "brown shirts", Hitler, who had been until then a Bavarian separatist, became overnight the inspired Apostle of the Great Reich.

---

(123) Mercure de France: "Pius XI and Hitler", 15th of January 1934.

Chapter 6

The Death Camps and the Anti-Semitic Crusade

To what extent the Catholics were masters of Nazi Germany soon became apparent as also did the severity with which some of the "Papacy's high principles" were applied.

The liberals and Jews had plenty of spare time to find out that these principles were far from out-dated, as the most orthodox voices confirmed it. The right the Church arrogates herself to exterminate slowly or speedily those who are in the way was "put into practice" at Auschwitz, Dachau, Belsen, Buchenwald, and other death camps.

The Gestapo of Himmler, "our Ignatius of Loyola", diligently performed these charitable deeds; civilian and military Germany had to submit "perinde ac cadaver" to this all-powerful organisation.

No need to say that the Vatican washed its hands of these horrors. When giving an audience to Dr Nerin F. Gun, a Swiss journalist who had been deported himself and who wondered why the pope had not intervened, at least by providing some assistance to so many unfortunate people, His Holiness Pius XII had the affrontery to answer:

"We knew that, for political reasons, violent persecutions were taking place in Germany, but We were never informed as to the inhuman character of the Nazi repression".(124)

And that at the time when the speaker of Radio Vatican, the R.P. Mistiaen, was declaring that "overwhelming documentary proof" concerning the cruelty of the Nazis had been received".(125)

Without any doubt, the Holy Father was not informed either on what was going on in the "Oustachi" concentration camps, in spite of his own legate's presence in Zagreb.

---

(124) "Gazette of Lausanne", 15th of November 1945.

(125) R.P. Duclos: "Le Vatican et la seconde guerre mondiale", (Ed. Pedone, Paris 1955. p.255) Imprimatur 1955.

Once, though, the Holy See was seen to take some interest in the fate of certain people condemned to deportation. They were 528 Protestant missionaries, survivors of all those who had been taken prisoners, by the Japanese, in the islands of the Pacific and interned in concentration camps in the Philippines. M. Andre Ribard, in his excellent book "1960 and the secret of the Vatican", reveals the pontifical intervention on behalf of these unfortunates.

The text appears under No.1591, dated: Tokio 6th of April 1943, in a report from the Department for Religious Affairs in occupied territories, and I quote the following extract: it expressed the wish of the Roman Church to see the Japanese pursue their politics and prevent certain religious propagators of error to regain a freedom to which they were not entitled".(126)

From the "Christian" point of view, this charitable step needs no comment, but is it not most significant, politically speaking? In Slovakia— as we know—Monseigneur Tiso, the Jesuit Gauleiter, was also free to persecute the "separated brethren" even though Germany, to which his State was a satellite, was mainly Protestant. It says a lot about the influence the Roman Church had in the Hitlerian Reich!

We have also seen the part played in Croatia by the representatives of that Church, in the extermination of Orthodox believers.

As for the anti-Jewish crusade, the Gestapo's masterpiece, it may seem superfluous to mention again the part played in it by Rome, as we have already related the exploits of Monseigneur Tiso, the first provider of Auschwitz's gas chambers and crematoria furnaces. We will just add a few characteristic documents to this dossier.

First of all, here is a letter from M. Leon Berard, ambassador of the Vichy government to the Holy See:

Marshall Petain, Sir,

In your letter dated 7th of August 1941, you honoured me in asking certain information touching the questions and difficulties which could arise, from the Roman Catholic point of view, out of the measures your government took concerning the Jews. I have the honour to answer that nothing has been said to me, at the Vatican, which could be interpreted as a criticism or disapproval of the laws or directive deeds in question..."(127)

The periodical "L'Arche", when mentioning this letter in an article entitled "The Silence of Pius XII", tells of a subsequent and complementary report which M. Leon Berard sent to Vichy on the 2nd of September 1941:

---

(126) Andre Ribard: "1960 et le secret du Vatican", (Librairie Robin, 38, rue de Vaugirard. Paris 1954, p.80) and Frederic Hoffet: "Politique romaine et demission des Protestants" (demission des laiques) (Fischbacher, Paris).

(127) and (129) Leon Poliakov: "Breviaire de la haine" (Calmann-Levy, Paris 1951, pp 345, 350, 351).

Is there a contradiction between the Status of the Jews and the Catholic doctrine? Only one, and Leon Berard respectfully points it out to the head of State. It resides in the fact that the law of the 2nd of June 1941 defines the Jews as a race... The Church (wrote Vichy's ambassador), never professed that the same rights should be given to all citizens... As someone in authority at the Vatican told me, you will not find yourselves in difficulties over the Status of the Jews".(128)

There is, "translated into practice", the "terrible" encyclical letter "Mit brennender Sorge", against racism, widely referred to by apologists.

But we find something even better, in M. Leon Poliakov's book:

"The proposal of the Protestant Church in France that, together with the Roman Church, they should take some measures against the rounding-up of Jews, during the Summer of 1942, was rejected by the Catholic dignitaries".(129)

Many Parisians still remember how the Jewish children were taken from their mothers and sent, by special trains, to the crematory furnaces of Auschwitz. These deportations of children are confirmed, amongst several other official documents, in a note of the "SS Haupsturmfuhrer Danneker", dated 21st of July 1942.

The awful callousness of the Roman Church—and of its chief in particular—inspired, not long ago, these revengeful lines from the aforementioned periodical "L'Arche":

"Over five years, Nazism was the author of outrage, profanation, blasphemy and crime. Over five years, it massacred six million Jews. Amongst these six million, 1,800,000 were children. Who, yes, who said once: let the little children come unto me? And for what reason "Let them come unto me so that I can butcher them?" The militant Pope has been followed by a diplomatic pope.

From occupied Paris, we go to Rome, occupied also by the Germans after the Italian collapse. Here is a message addressed to von Ribbentrop, Nazi Foreign Affairs minister:

"German Embassy at the Holy See. Rome, 28th of October 1943.

Even though urged on every side, the pope has not expressed any demonstrative reprobation of the deportation of Jews from Rome. He can expect our enemies to reproach him in this attitude, and see it exploited by the Protestants of Anglo-Saxon countries in their propaganda against Catholicism; when considering this delicate question, the endangerment of our relations with the German government was the deciding factor..."

---

(128) "L'Arche", November 1958.

(129) See earlier on.

Signed: Ernst von Weiszaeker(130)

When relating the career of this Baron von Weiszaeker—tried as a war criminal "for having prepared extermination lists"—"Le Monde" of the 27th of July 1947 wrote:

"Perceiving a German defeat, he had himself appointed at the Vatican, taking this opportunity to work closely with the Gestapo".

For the benefit of our readers not yet fully convinced, we will quote the following official German document which sets out the Vatican's dispositions—and those of the Jesuits—towards the Jews, before the war:

"Studying the evolution of anti-semitism in the United States, we note with interest that the number of listeners to the radio broadcasts of Father Coughlin (a Jesuit), well known for his anti-semitism, exceeds 20 millions".(131)

The militant anti-semitism of the Jesuits in the United States, as everywhere else, is not surprising on the part of these ultramontanes, as it is in perfect accord with the "doctrine". Let us see what M. Daniel-Rops, of the French Academy, has to say on the subject; this author specialises in pious literature and publishes only under the auspices of "the Imprimatur". We read in one of his best known works, "Jesus and His times", published in 1944, during the German occupation:

"Over the centuries, wherever the Jewish race was scattered, blood flowed, and always the call for murder uttered at Pilate's judgment hall drowned the cry of despair repeated a thousand times. The face of a persecuted Jewish nation fills History, but it cannot obliterate this other face, smeared with blood and spittle, for which the Jewish crowd felt no pity. No doubt, Israel had no choice in the matter and had to kill its God after disowning Him, and, as blood mysteriously calls for blood, Christian charity may have no choice either; should not the divine will compensate with the horror of the progroms the unbearable horror (the Crucifixion') (132)

How well said! Or, to put it more bluntly: if millions of Jews had to go through the gas chambers and crematory furnaces of Auschwitz, Dachau and elsewhere, it was their just desert. This adversity was wanted by the "divine will" and "Christian charity" would err if turning towards them.

The eminent professor M. Jules Isaac, president of the "Amitie judeo-chretienne", exclaimed when referring to this passage:

"These terrible and blasphemous phrases provoke an unbearable horror

---

(130) "Secret archives of the Wilhelmstrasse".

(131) "Secret archives of the Wilhelmstrasse", (document 83-26 19/1, Berlin 25th of January 1939).

(132) Daniel-Rops: "Jesus en son temps" (Artheme Fayard, Paris 1944, pp.526, 527). Imprimatur, 17th of April 1944.

themselves", aggravated the more by a note which says: "Amongst the Jews today..., some of them... try to shrug off this heavy responsibility... Honourable sentiments indeed, but we cannot go contrary to the evidence of History... the terrible weight (of Jesus' death) which Israel must bear is not up to men to reject".(133)

M. Jules Isaac brings to our notice that the phrases in question have been altered by the publisher "in the more recent editions" of this edifying book—that is to say, after the Liberation. There is "a time" for everything: the crematory furnaces were out-dated.

So, from the doctrinal affirmation of the papacy's high principles to their putting into practice by Himmler, "our Ignatius of Loyola", the ring is closed—and we will add the half mad anti-semitism of the Fuhrer thus loses much of its mystery.

But—going back to this subject—does it not also shed more light on that baffling individual?

The things which were imagined, before the war, in an attempt to explain the evident disproportion between the man and the part he had to play! There was a gap, an obvious vacuum felt by all. To fill this gap, legends were abounding: stories were spread abroad not always without the secret purpose of misleading!, Occult sciences, oriental magicians, astrologers inspired, so we were told, the sleep-walking hermit of Berchtesgaden. And the choice of the swastika as the Nazi party's insigna, which originated from India, seemed to corroborate the idea.

M. Maxime Mourin refuted this particular assertion:

"Adolf Hitler had been a pupil at the school of Lambach and sang amongst the choir boys in the abbey bearing the same name. He discovered the swastika there, as it was the heraldic sign of Father Hagen, the abbey's administrator".(134)

The Fuhrer's "inspirations" are also easily explained, without having to resort to mysterious or exotic philosophies. If it is obvious that this "son of the Catholic Church", as he was described by Franco, was submitted to the impulses of mysterious leaders, we know also that these had nothing to do with oriental magic.

The earthly hells which devoured 25 million victims bear another stamp, easily recognisable: the one of people who had to go through a lengthy and meticulous training, as prescribed in the "Spiritual Exercises" (of the Jesuits).

---

(133) Jules Isaac: "Jesus et Israel" (Albin Michel, Paris 1948, p.382).

(134) Maxime Mourin: "Histoire des Grandes Puissances" (Payot. Paris 1958, p.134).

Section V

Chapter 7

The Jesuits and the Colleqium Russicum

Amongst the various causes which decided the Vatican to start the first world war, by urging the emperor of Austria, Francis-Joseph, to "chastise the Serbians", the main one was, as we have seen, to strike a decisive blow against the Orthodox Church, this hated and centuries old rival.

Beyond the small Serbian nation, the Vatican aimed at Russia, the traditional protector of Orthodox believers in the Balkans and the East.

M. Pierre Dominique wrote:

"To Rome, this affair became most important; a victory of apostolic monarchy over Czarism could be looked upon as a victory of Rome over the schism of the East".(135)

The Roman Curia was in no way concerned that such a victory could only be acquired through a gigantic holocaust. The risk, rather the certainty of it, was accepted, as the alliances made it unavoidable. Urged on by his secretary of State, the Jesuit Merry del Val, Pius X made no secret of it and the Bavarian Charge d'Affaires wrote to his government, on the eve of the conflict: "He (the pope) does not think the French and Russian armies would be successful in a war against Germany".(136)

This wicked calculation proved wrong. The first World War, which ravaged the north of France and left several millions dead, did not fulfil Rome's ambitions; it divided Austria-Hungary instead, so depriving the Vatican of its main stronghold in Europe and liberating the Slavs who were part of that double monarchy from Vienna's apostolic yoke.

In addition, the Russian revolution liberated from the Vatican's control those Roman Catholics, for the most part of Polish origins, who lived in the Czars former empire.

The defeat was total. But the Roman Church "patiens quia aeterna" was going to pursue with fresh efforts her politics of the "Drang nach Osten", the thrust towards the East which combined so well with the Pan-German ambitions.

---

(135) Pierre Dominique, op.cit., p.246.

(136) Bayerische Dokumente zum Kriegsausbruch, III, p.206.

For that, as we mentioned earlier on, the raising up of Dictators and the second world war with its retinue of horrors; the "cleaning up" of the Wartheland, in Poland, and the "compulsory catholicisation" of Croatia were two examples, especially atrocious, of these horrors.

It was of no importance that 25 millions died in concentration camps, 32 millions soldiers were killed on the battle fields and 29 millions were wounded and maimed; these are the official statistics of the United Nations Organisation (137) and show the magnitude of that carnage! This time, the Roman Curia thought her aims had been reached, and one could read in 'Basler Nachrichten' of Basle:

"The German action in Russia poses the question of that country's evangelisation; the Vatican is most highly interested in it".(138)

And this, from a book devoted to the glorification of Pius XII:

"The Vatican and Berlin signed a pact allowing the Catholic missionaries of the Russicum college to go to occupied territories and the placing of the Baltic territories under Berlin's nunciature".(139)

The "catholicisation" of Russia was about to be launched, under the protection of the Wehrmacht and SS, in the manner Pavelitch and his associates were carrying it out in Croatia, but on a much vaster scale. This was indeed a triumph for Rome!

What a disappointment, then, when the hitlerian thrust was stopped at Moscow and when von Paulus and his army were trapped in Stalingrad! It was Christmas time, Christmas of 1942, and one must re-read the Message—rather the vibrant call to arms—addressed to the "Christian nations" by the Holy Father:

"This is not a time for lamentation, but action. May the Crusades' enthusiasm get hold of Christianity, and the call of "God wants it!" will be heard; may we be ready to serve and sacrifice ourselves, as the Crusaders of old..." We exhort and implore you to take upon yourselves the awful gravity of the present situation... As for the volunteers who participate in this Holy Crusade of modern times, "raise the standard high, declare war on the darkness of a world separated from God".(140)

On this day of the Nativity, we were far from "Pax Christi"!

This war-like address was not the expression of the "strict neutrality" the Vatican flatters itself to observe in international matters. This address was made even more improper by the fact that Russia was the ally of England,

(137) "La Croix", 7th of September 1951.

(138) "Basler Nachrichten", 27th of March 1942.

(139) and (140) "War messages to the world", by Pius XII (Ed. Spes, Paris 1945, pp.34 and 257 ss).

America and Free France. We smile while reading the vehement contestation of Pius XII's thurifers who tell us that Hitler's war was not a real "crusade", when that word is mentioned in the Holy Father's Message.

The "volunteers" the pope called to arms were those of the "Azul Division" and those recruited by Cardinal Baudrillart in Paris.

"Hitler's war is a noble enterprise in the defence of European culture", he exclaimed on the 30th of July 1941.

We note, though, that the Vatican is not interested any more in the defence of this culture now that it strives to make African nations revolt against France. Pius XII said: "The Catholic Church does not identify herself with western culture". (141 and 141a)

The impostures and gross contradictions are endless on the part of those who accuse Satan of being the "father of all lies".

The defeat sustained in Russia by Hitler's armies, "these noble defenders of European culture", involved also the Jesuit converters. One wonders what Saint-Theresa was doing before such a disaster! Pius XI had proclaimed her "patron-saint of unfortunate Russia" and Canon Coube represented her standing, "smiling but as terrible as an army set for battle against the Bolshevist giant".(142)

Had the Saint of Lisieux—used for all kinds of work by the Church—succumbed under the new and gigantic task assigned to her by the Holy lather? It would not be surprising.

But, instead of the little saint, there was still the Queen of Heaven who had taken upon herself, in 1917 already, under certain conditions, to bring back schismatic Russia to the Roman Church's fold. Let us read what 'La Croix' said about it:

"We will remind our readers that the Virgin of Fatima had herself promised the conversion of the Russians, if all Christians sincerely and joyfully practised all the commandments of the evangelical law".(143)

We want to point out that, according to the Jesuit Fathers who are great specialists in miraculous matters, the celestial Mediator recommended as especially effective the daily use of the rosary.

This promise from the Virgin had even been sealed by a "dance of the Sun", a wonder which occurred again in 1951, in the gardens of the Vatican, for the benefit of His Holiness Pius XII only.

Nevertheless, the Russians entered Berlin, in spite of the crusade called tor by the pope—and, until now, the fellow-countrymen of Mr. Khrushchev have not shown any eagerness, as far as we know, to appear

---

(141) "Le Monde", 13th of April 1956 (Congress of African catholic students).

(141a) See also Francois Mejan: "Le Vatican contre la France d'Outre-Mer" (Fischbacher).

(142) Canon Coube: "Sainte Therese de l'Enfant Jesus et les crises du temps present" (Flammarion, Paris 1936, p.6 ss). IMPRIMATUR 11th of January 1936.

(143) "La Croix", 11th of June 1947.

before the doors of Saint-Peter in penitent garb with the halters around their necks.

What went wrong? Had christains not 'told' sufficient beads on their rosaries? Were Heaven's requisite number of 'tens' not fulfilled?

We would be tempted to believe this to be the cause if there wasn't that rather scabrous detail in the wonderful story of Fatima. The promise of Russia's conversion, sensibly given to the clairvoyant Lucia in 1917, was "revealed" by her in 1941 only, when she had become a nun, and made public in October 1942 by Cardinal Schuster, a keen partisan of the Rome-Berlin Axis; it was made public by request, or shall we say order, from Pius XII—this same Pius XII who, three months later, expressed the aforementioned call for a Crusade.

Very "enlightening" indeed: One of Fatima's apologists admits that, because of it, the matter "evidently loses some of its prophetic value..."(144) This is the least one could say about it! A certain canon, great specialist in the matter of the "Portuguese miracle" tells us in confidence: "I must confess that, as far as I am concerned, it is only with great reluctance that I added to my first editions the text revealed to the public by His Eminence Cardinal Schuster..."(145)

We certainly understand the good canon's feelings:

So, the Holy Virgin told the shepherdess Lucia, in 1917: "If my requests are heeded, Russia will be converted...", while charging her to keep this "secret" to herself. How, then, could the Christians have come to know these "requests" and meet them?

"Credibile quia ineptum".

It seems that, from 1917 until 1942, "unfortunate Russia" did not need to have prayers offered on her behalf, and that they were urgently needed only after the Nazi defeat at Moscow and when von Paulus was trapped in Stalingrad.

At least, it is the only conclusion this late revelation allows. The supernatural—as we have said already—is a powerful thing, but it must be handled with some care.

After Montoire, the Jesuits' general, Halke von Ledochowski, already spoke haughtily about the general meeting the Company would hold in Rome, after England had capitulated, the importance and brilliance of which would not find an equal in all its history.

But Heaven had decided otherwise, in spite of Saint-Theresa and the Lady of Fatima. Great Britain braced herself against the enemy, the United States entered the war, (even though the Jesuit Father Coughlin had worked so hard), the Allies disembarked in North Africa and the Russian campaign was a disaster for the Nazis.

---

(144) Michel Agnellet: "Miracles a Fatima" (Ed. de Trevise, Paris 1958, p.54). Imprimatur 1958.

(145) Canon Barthas: "Fatima, merveille du XXe siecle", (Fatima Editions, Toulouse 1957, p.81) Imprimatur 1957.

For Ledochowski, it was the collapse of his great dream. Wehrmacht, SS, "cleaner-ups" and Jesuit converters were retreating together. The general's health did not stand up to such a disaster and he died.

Let us see, though, what this "Russicum" is which Pius XI and von Ledochowski added, in 1929, to the already so rich and varied Roman organisation.

"With the apostolic Constitution "Quam Curam", Pius XI created this Russian seminary, in Rome, where young apostles of every nationality would be trained, "on condition that they adopt, before anything else, the Byzantine-Slav rite, and that their minds were made up to devote themselves entirely to the task of bringing Russia back into Christ's fold"(146)

This is the aim of the Russian pontifical College, alias "Russicum", the Oriental pontifical Institute and the Roman College—these three Centres are also administered by the Company of Jesus.

At the "Roman College"—45, Piazza del Gesu—we find the Jesuits' noviceship and, amongst the novices, some bear the name of "Russipetes", as they are destined to "petere Russiam", or go to Russia.

Orthodox believers should watch out, for so many valorous champions are determined to crush them. We must point out, though, that the aforementioned "Homme nouveau" affirms:

"All these priests are certainly destined to go to Russia. But this project cannot be realised for the time being".(147)

According to this particular publication, the Soviet press calls these apostles "the Vatican's parachutists". And, from the testimony of someone well-informed on the subject, we come to the conclusion that this name fits them quite well.

The person in question is no less than the Jesuit Alighiero Tondi, professor at the Gregorian pontofical University, who repudiated Ignatius of Loyola, the "Spiritual Exercises" though not without a considerable row and resigned from the famous Company, together with its pomp and deeds.

We can read the following, amongst other declarations, in an interview he gave to an Italian newspaper:

"The activities of the Collegium Russicum and other organisations linked to it are many and varied. For example, together with Italian fascists and what remains of Geman nazism, the Jesuits organise and co-ordinate the various anti-Russian groups, on the ecclesiastical authority's order. The ultimate aim is to be ready, eventually, to overthrow the governments

(146) "L'Homme nouveau" (L'Avenir catholique), 7th of December 1958.

(147) "L'Homme nouveau" (L'Avenir catholique), 7th of December 1958.

of the East. Finances are provided by the ruling ecclesiastical organisations. This is the work the leaders of the clergy apply themselves to. These same ones would readily tear their cassocks apart, out of grief, when they are accused of meddling in politics and urging the bishops and priests of the East to conspire against their governments."

"When talking to the Jesuit Andrei Ouroussof, I said that it was disgraceful to affirm in the "Osservatore Romano", the Vatican's official voice, and in other ecclesiastical publications, that the unmasked spies were "martyrs of the faith". Ouroussof burst out laughing.

"—What would you write, Father? he asked me. Would you call them spies, or something worse? Today, the Vatican's politics need martyrs. But, at the moment, martyrs are difficult to find. So they are fabricated.

—But this is a dishonest game!

"He shook his head ironically.

—You are ingenous, Father. Because of your work, you should know better than anyone else that the Church's leaders have always been inspired by the same rules.

—And what about Jesus-Christ? I asked.

He laughed: "One must not think of Jesus-Christ", he said. "If we thought of Him, we would end up on the cross. And, today, the time has come to put others on the cross and not be hoist on it ourselves."(148)

So, as the Jesuit Ouroussof said it so well, the Vatican's politics need martyrs, volunteers or not. It "created" millions of them during two world wars.

---

(148) Interview which appeared in "Il Paese" on the 2nd of October 1954.

Section V

Chapter 8

Pope John XXIII removes the mask

Out of all the fictions generally accepted in this world, the spirit of peace and harmony attributed to the Holy See is probably the most difficult to root up—as this spirit seems inherent to the nature of the apostolic magister itself.

In spite of the lessons of History, not fully known or too quickly forgotten, the one who calls himself "Christ's vicar" must necessarily incarnate, in the eyes of many, the ideal of love and fraternity taught by the Gospel. Does not logic, as well as sentiment, want it to be so?

In reality, the events make us realise that this favourable presumption must be greatly abated—and we believe that it has been sufficiently demonstrated. But the Church is prudent—as we are often reminded—and it is seldom that her real actions are not surrounded by the indispensable precautions which will take care of appearances. "Bonne renommee vaut mieux que ceinture doree" (A good reputation is better than a golden belt), says the proverb. But it is even better to possess both. The Vatican— immensely rich—guides itself by this maxim. Its political lust for domination always assumes "spiritual" and humanitarian pretexts, proclaimed "urbi and orbi" by an intense propaganda which a goldplated belt provides for—and the "good reputation", thus preserved, maintains the inflow of gold to the said belt.

The Vatican does not deviate from that line of conduct and, when the stand it takes in international affairs is clearly revealed through the attitude of its hierarchy, the legend of its absolute impartiality is kept alive by those solemn and ambiguous encyclical letters and other pontifical documents. Recently, the hitlerian era multiplied such examples. But could it be otherwise of an authoritative power which is supposed to be transcedent and universal at the same time?

The instances when that mask was seen to fall are very rare. For the world to be a witness of such a spectacle, a contingency is necessary which, to the Holy See's eyes, endangers its vital interests. Only then does it throw aside all ambiguity and openly places all the credit at its disposition on one of the scales.

This is what happened in Rome, on the 7th of January 1960, concerning the "summit" conference which was to bring together heads of Eastern and Western governments, in an attempt to settle the conditions of a truly peaceful co-existence between the defenders of two opposite ideologies.

Of course, the Vatican's position before such a project did not leave us in any doubt. In the United States, Cardinal Spellman demonstrated it plainly by urging Catholics to show their hostility to Mr. Khrushchev when he was the guest of the American president. For his part, and without expressing it clearly, His Holiness John XXIII had shown little enthusiasm for the "detente" in his Chritmas message. The "hope" it expressed, to see peace set up in the world, a wish which is a "must" in such a document, seemed very weak accompanied as it was with many calls to Western leaders to be prudent. But, so far, the Vatican put on a good face.

What happened, then, within less than two weeks? Did another long-cherished "hope"—to see the first one fail—prove vain? Did the decision of Mr. Gronchi, president of the Italian Republic, to go to Moscow make the cup of Roman bitterness overflow?

Whatever happened, the storm broke out suddenly on the 7th of January—and the ecclesiastical thunders burst (with unprecedented fury) upon the "Christian" Statesmen, guilty of wanting an end to the cold war. On the 8th of January, "Le Monde" printed the following:

"On the day the president of the Italian Republic was to leave to pay a minutely-prepared official visit to Moscow's leaders, Cardinal Ottaviani, successor of Cardinal Pizzardo as secretary of the Holy-Office congregation, or chief of the Church's supreme tribunal, delivered a most astonishing speech in the bascilica of "Saint-Marie-Majeure", during a morning propitiatory service for "the Church of Silence".

"Never before had a prince of the Church, holding one of the Vatican's most important posts, attacked the Soviet authorities, so furiously, nor reprimanded so harshly the Western powers who dealt with them".

"Le Monde" gave substantial excerpts of that violent speech which amply justified the qualificative of "most astonishing" it had just used. "Tamerlanes's times are back", affirmed Cardinal Ottaviani—and the Russian leaders were described as "new antichrists" who "condemn to deportation, imprison, massacre, and leave nothing but wasteland behind them". The orator was shocked that nobody anymore was "scared to shake hands with them", and that, "on the contrary, a race was arranged to see who would be the first to do so and exchange smiles with them". Then he reminded his listeners that Pius XII withdrew to Castelgandolfo when Hitler came to Rome—forgetting though to add that this same pontiff had concluded with the said Hitler a Concordat most advantagous for the Church.

Space travel was not spared either in that violent denunciation: "the new man... believes he can violate Heaven by feats in space and so demonstrates once more that God does not exist".

The Western "politicians and statesmen" who, according to the cardinal, "grow stupid with terror", were severely hauled over the coals—as were all the "Christians" who "do not react or leap with rage any more..."

Finally, this virulent and significant conclusion:

"Can we declare ourselves satisfied with any kind of detente when, in the first place, there cannot be any sort of calm, within humanity, unless we observe an elementary respect for conscience, our faith, the face of Christ covered once more with spittle, crowned with thorns and struck? Could we hold out our hand to those who do this?"

These dramatic words cannot make us forget that the Vatican can hardly speak of "respect for consciences" as it shamelessly oppresses them in countries where it dominates, such as in Franco's Spain where the Protestants are persecuted. In fact, it is most impudent—on the part of the Holy-Office's secretary especially!—to demand that others observe this elementary respect" when the Roman Church rejects it entirely.

The encyclical letter "Quanta cura" and the "Syllabus" are explicit:

Anathema on the one who says: every man is free to embrace or profess the religion his judgment considers to be right".
("Syllabus", article XV)

"... It is madness to think that the freedom of conscience and worship are mere rights to every man." ("Encyclical letter "Quanta cura")

Judging by the way it treats "heretics", it is no wonder that the Vatican systematically condemns all attempts to come to terms between "Christian" States and those who are officially atheistic. "Non est pax impilis"—"No peace for the wicked"!

And the Jesuit Father Cavelli, like many others before him, proclaims that this "intransigence" is the Roman Church's "most imperative law".

As a counterpart to this explosion of fury on the cardinal's part, we will quote another article which appeared in the same number of "Le Monde", on the 9th of January 1960:

"Humanity is approaching a situation where mutual annihilation becomes a possibility. In the world today, there is no other event which can be compared, in importance, to this... We must then strive incessantly for a just peace". So said President Eisenhower, yesterday, Thursday, before the United States Congress, at the same time as Cardinal Ottaviani, in Rome, condemned the co-existence as partaking of the crime of Cain.

The contrast between two manners of thought cannot be more striking: the human and the theocratic—nor more obvious the mortal danger hovering over the world because of that nucleus of blind fanaticism we call the Vatican. Its "sacred" egoism is such that circumstances and the urgent necessity for an international accord, in order to avoid the almost total extermination threatening humanity, do not matter.

The Holy Office's secretary—this supreme tribunal whose past is too well-known—does not take into account such negligible contingencies. Do the Russians go to mass? This is the important thing, and if President Eisenhower does not understand it, it is because he "seems to have grown stupid with terror", to use the terms of the fiery "Porporato".

The delirious frenzy of Cardinal Ottaviani's speech makes us smile at the same time as shocking us. And many think that this firebrand will find it difficult to persuade "Christians" that the atomic bomb must be accepted gracefully. But we must be on our guard! Behind this spokesman of the Holy See, there is all the pontifical organisation—and especially this secret army of Jesuits not made up of ordinary soldiers. All the members of that famous Company work within the corridors of power, and their action, without making a great deal of noise, can be singularly effective, that is to say evil.

A rumour was spread that Cardinal Ottaviani's brutal stand was not the exact reflection of the Holy See's thought, but only that of one of the so-called "integrist" clan. The Catholic press, in France at any rate, tried to attenuate the import of that violent speech—and "La Croix", in particular, only printed a short extract from which all violence had been omitted. Wise opportunism indeed, but it could not deceive anyone. It is just impossible that such a sharp criticism, of an exceptional political importance, could have been uttered from the pulpit of "Sainte-Marie-Majeure" by the Holy Office's secretary, without the approval of that Congregation's chief, of its "prefect", the Sovereign Pontiff himself. And, as far as we know, he never disowned his eloquent subordinate. Pope John XXIII could not throw that bomb himself, but by making one of the most important of the Curia's dignitaries take his place, he wanted to make his connivance obvious to everyone.

Moreover, and by a strange "coincidence", a more modest explosion took place at the same time, in the form of an article in the "Osservatore Romano", condemnding once again socialism, even non-marxist, as "opposed to Christian truth". However, those who practice this political "mistake" are not excommunicated "ipso facto" like the communists. They still have the hope of escaping Hell—but the threat of Purgatory remains!

By showing its opposition to any attempt at bringing together East and West so vehemently, was the Vatican expecting some positive results? Was it really hoping to intimidate the Statesmen who pursue these politics of peace? Or was it at least hoping to provoke a move contrary to the "detente" amongst the faithful?

As unreasonable as such a hope may seem, it may well have haunted these clerical minds. Their peculiar views are bound to produce such illusions. What's more, these soothsayers, they could not have forgotten a certain illusion used for so long to deceive those who trusted them—and which they apparently shared. We are referring to "Russia's conversion", apparently announced at Fatima by the Holy Virgin in person—in 1917— to Lucia the shepherdess, who eventually embraced holy orders and testified of it somewhat late, in 1942, in the "memoirs" she wrote at her superiors' request.

This cock and bull story may make us smile, but the fact remains that the Vatican—under Pius XII's pontificate—propogated it throughout the world with any amount of speeches, sermons, solemn declarations, a torrent of books and pamphlets, and the peregrinations of the statue of that new and very political "Notre-Dame" across every continent—where even the animals, so we were told, came to pay homage. This noisy propaganda is still clearly remembered by the faithful—as are the wild affirmations such as this one, printed on the 1st of November 1952 by "La Croix":

"Fatima has become a cross-roads... The fate of the nations can be decided better there than around tables".

Its thurifers cannot find refuge in ambiguity any more. The alternative is perfectly clear: "detente or cold war".—The Vatican chooses war—and does not hide the fact.

This choice should not surprise anyone—if past experience, even in the recent past, has been a lesson to us. And if it surprised some, we believe that it is because of its unceremonious proclamation, or without the usual camouflage."

We begin to understand the violence when we consider the importance of the stake to the Roman pontiff. We would misjudge the Vatican by thinking it capable of renouncing a hope as old as the Eastern schism itself, the one of bringing back Orthodox believers under her obedience through a military success. Hitler's rise was due to this obstinate hope—but the final defeat of his Crusade still did not open the eyes of the Roman Curia to the folly of such an ambition.

There is another and even more pressing desire: to liberate in Poland, Hungary and Czechoslovakia this famous "Church of Silence" which has only become such because of the unexpected turn of events—for the Holy See—in the Nazi Crusade. "Qui trop embrasse mal etreint (grasp all, lose all): a wise proverb which has never inspired fanatics.

To resume its march towards the East, its clerical "Drang nach Osten", and first retrieve the lost strongholds, the Vatican still relies upon the Germanic "secular arm", its main European champion in need of new strength and vigour. At the head of Federal Germany—western section of the great Reich—it had placed a trusty man, Chancellor Konrad Adenauer, the pope's secret chamberlain—and the politics he pursued for more than fifteen years clearly display the Holy See's stamp. Exhibiting at first great caution and an opportune "liberal" state of mind, the man his fellow-countrymen nicknamed "der alte Fuchs"—"The old fox" worked at rearming his country. Of course, the "moral" rearmament of the population, and of the German youth in particular, was an imperative supplement to the first.

That is why important posts in the ministries and administrations of Western Germany are held by many individuals with notorious hitlerian pasts—the list is long—and captains of industry such as von Krupp and Flick, who had not long since been condemned as war criminals, direct again their gigantic works which were restored to them. The end justifies the means. And this end is clear enough: to forge Siegfried's new sword, the arm necessary for revenge—a revenge which would be shared by the Vatican.

It is then with a perfect synchronsim that the chancellor-chamberlain, during an interview given to a Dutch periodical, echoed the fulminating speech Cardinal Ottaviani had just expressed:

"...The peaceful co-existence of nations whose views are totally opposite is just an illusion which, alas, still finds too many supporters".(150)

The incendiary "sermon" given on the 7th of January at "Sainte-Marie-Majeure" preceded by a few days—as by accident—the visit of Konrad Adenauer to Rome. The reports the press gave were unanimous at underlining the friendly and sympathetic atmosphere which prevailed during the private audience His Holiness John XXIII gave to the German chancellor and his Foreign Affairs minister, Mr. von Brentano.

We could even read in "L'Aurore":

"This meeting provoked a rather unexpected declaration from the chancellor, when answering the pontifical address which praised the courage and faith of the German government's head:

"I think that God has given the German people a special part to play in these troubled times: to be the protector of the West against the powerful influences of the East threatening us".(151)

"Combat" accurately noted:

We had heard this before, but in a more condensed manner: "Gott mit uns"—"God with us". (The motto on the belt buckle of the German soldiers in the 1914/18 war).

And that newspaper added:

"Dr Adenauer's evocation of the work attributed to the German nation

(150) "ELSEVIERS WEEKBLATT", quoted by "Combat" on the 11 th of January I960.

(151) "L'Aurore", 23rd of January 1960.

(152) "Combat", 23rd of January 1960.

(153) "Le Figaro", 23rd of January I960.

found its inspiration in a similar declaration from the previous pontiff. We are therefore allowed to presume that if Dr Adenauer pronounced this phrase in the present circumstances, it is because he thought his listeners were ready to hear him".(152)

In fact, one would have to be singularly naive and utterly ignorant of elementary diplomacy to think that this "unexpected" declaration was not part of the programme. We wager also that it did not cast any shadow over "the prolonged conversation Mr. Adenauer had with Cardinal Tardini, the Holy See's secretary of State, whom he entertained for luncheon at the German Embassy".(153)

The spectacular intrusion of the Holy-Office in international politics, voiced by Cardinal Ottaviani, shocked even Catholics who were long accustomed to the Roman Church's encroachments in the affairs of State. Rome was aware of it. But the perpetuation of the cold war is so vitally important to the Vatican's political power, and even its financial prosperity, that it did not hesitate repeating such political views, even though the first one had been badly received.

The journey Mr. Khrushchev made to France, in March 1960, gave it another opportunity. Dijon was one of the cities the Soviet leader was to visit. Like all his colleagues in the same situation, the mayor of Dijon had to welcome courteously the guest of the French Republic. The chief city of Burgandy had an ecclesiastic as its deputy-mayor, Canon Kir.

According to the canonical law, the Holy See had expressly authorised thc priest to accept this double mandate—with all the functions and duties entailed. However, his bishop forbade the mayor-canon to receive Mr. Khrushchev. On that occasion, the municipal sash had to give way to the cassock.

So, the visitor was welcomed by an assistant who stood in for the absent deputy-mayor. But the unconstrained manner in which the "hierarchy" scoffed at civil authority on that occasion aroused the sharpest comments, On the 30th of March, "Le Monde" wrote:

"Who is actually exercising authority over the mayor of Dijon: the bishop or the prefect? And above these representatives of a central power: the pope or the French government? This is the question asked In everyone..."

The answer is not doubtful: theocracy first. But, from now on, to be received by a cassock wearing mayor, will the guests of the French Republic have to be supplied with confession tickets?

In the aforementioned article, the editor of "Le Monde" also rightly says:

"Beyond this French interior question, the Kir affair brings to our notice a larger problem. The Vatican's action is not concerned only with the relations between a mayor and his government. In the way it took place, it constitutes a direct and spectacular intervention in international diplomacy"

This is certainly true—and the reactions this affair provoked nearly everywhere show that its import was clearly understood by world opinion. In the United States especially, the public, which had already witnessed the hostile demonstrations organised by the cardinals Spellman and Cushing during Mr. Khrushchev's visit, started to question the real independence a Roman Catholic president could preserve with regard to the Holy See.

Many feared, in that case, to see the foreign politics of the country bent in favour of the Roman Church's interests—to the prejudice of the nation's interests, no small danger in any circumstances, but above all in the present situation.

The resistance to the move for an East-West "detente" was then organised "openly", after the "bomb" thrown by Cardinal Ottaviani.

A ridiculous instrument, some may say, compared with those which threatened to bury under ruins—sooner or later—nations mad enough to remain in the deadlock of a snarling antagonism. But we can see that the Vatican, compelled to use "spiritual" arms, endeavoured to make the best of them. The Jesuits, who steer its diplomacy, were doing their uttermost to ward off the worst "calamity" which ever hovered over the Holy See: an international accord which excluded resorting to war.

What would become of the Vatican's prestige, its political importance and all the advantages, pecuniary and others, which proceed from it if, because of such an accord, it could not plot anymore, use its influence, haggle over its co-operation with governments, favour some and bully others, oppose nations, create conflicts for the benefit of its own interests— and if, to serve its immoderate ambitions, it could not find any more soldiers?

*No one can be deceived—and the Jesuits even less than others—a general disarmament would toll the knell of the Roman Church as a world power. And the "spiritual" head itself would totter.

We must then expect to see the sons of Loyola opposing with all their arsenal of tricks the desire for peace of nations and governments. To ruin the edifice whose foundations are tentatively laid, they will not spare their mines and counter mines. It is a war without mercy, a holy war, sparked off by Cardinal Ottaviani's mad speech. And the Company of Jesus will pursue it with the blind obstinacy of the insect—"ad majorem papae gloriam"— without any anxiety as to the catastrophes which will result. The world must perish, rather than the supremacy of the Roman Pontiff!

*PUBLISHER'S NOTE:

Edmond Paris was at a disadvantage in that he wasn't aware that a shift was already under way by the 'Whore of Revelation" to fulfill Bible prophecy. She is prepared for all eventualities.

The Jesuits evaluated World War III and decided the U.S. would lose, and the Vatican always goes with the winner. Since then she has enthusiastically thrown her support to Moscow and even acquired a communist pope from Poland. She is secretly preparing a concordat with Russia, and currently pushing a Marxist gospel world wide. The Jesuits are currently behind the disarmament movement to subdue the U.S.

Moscow will serve the Vatican as the muscle to conquer nations where Roman Catholicism will he the only religion tolerated world wide. Russia will be pushed to attack Israel, fulfilling the prophecies of the Bible (Ezekiel, chapters 38 & 39) and the antichrist of the Vatican will await his doom at the second coming of Christ.

J.T.C.

Conclusion

We have recapitulated, in this book, the main manifestations of the multiform activity deployed by the Company of Jesus, during four centuries; we have established also that the militant, even military, character of this famous and ultramontane institution fully justifies the title often attributed to it of "secret army of the Papacy".

To the front of the action, for the glory of God—and especially of the Holy See—is the order these ecclesiastical soldiers gave themselves and of which they are proud; at the same time, they endeavour, through the book and pious press which they supervise, to disguise as much as possible and present as "apostolic" enterprises the action they exercise in their favourite field: the nations' politics.

The clever camouflage, the protestations of innocence, the railleries about the "dark schemings" attributed to them by the disordered imagination of their enemies—and which are groundless, according to them—all this is outweighed by the unanimous hostility of public opinion towards them, always and everywhere, and by the inevitable reaction to their intrigues which brought about their explulsion from every country, even from the most strongly Catholic.

These fifty-six expulsions, to quote only the main ones, provide an invincible argument! It would be sufficient to prove the evil nature of this Order.

How could it not be injurious to civil societies as it is the papacy's most efficacious instrument in imposing its law on temporal governments, and that this law—by nature—has no consideration for the various national interests? The Holy See, being essentially opportunist, does embrace these interests when they coincide with its own—we saw this happen in 1914 and 1939—but, if it brings them a substantial help then, the final result is not beneficial for all that. This was seen also in 1918 and 1945.

Terrible to its enemies, or those who oppose it, the Vatican, this amphibious clerico-political organisation, is even more deadly to its friends. By observing some vigilance, one can be forewarned of its underhand thrusts, but its embraces are deadly.

On that subject, Mr. T. Jung wrote, in 1874, the following lines which have not grown old-'The power of France is in inverse ratio to the intensity of her obedience to the Roman Curia".(1)

And from a more recent witness: M. Joseph Hours, when studying the effects of our very relative "disobedience", he wrote:

"There is no doubt about it; right through the continent (and maybe, today, all over the globe), wherever Catholicism is tempted to become political, it is also tempted to become anti-French".(2)

A just remark indeed, even though the term "tempted" is rather weak. We will nevertheless conclude that "to obey" would be more to the point.

Is it not better, in fact, to expose oneself to this hositlity, rather than to have to come to this conclusion, like Colonel Beck, former Foreign Affairs minister of the very Catholic Poland (2a)".

"The Vatican is one of those principally responsible for the tragedy of my country. I realised too late that we had pursued our foreign politics just to serve the sole interests of the Catholic Church".

Moreover, the fate of the very apostolic empire of the Hapsburgs was not too encouraging; as for Germany, so dear to the hearts of popes, and especially Pius XII's, she could not be pleased, finally, with the costly favours Their Holiness lavished on her.

In fact, we wonder if the Roman Church reaped any profit at all from this mad aspiration to govern the world, a pretension kept alive by the Jesuits more than anyone else. In the course of four centuries in which these firebrands spread strife and hatred, slaughter and ruins in Europe, from the Thirty Years War until the Hitler Crusade, did the Church enjoy gain or suffer loss?

The answer is easy: the clearest and most incontestable result is a continuous diminution of the "heritage of Saint-Peter"—a sad end to so many crimes!

Did the Jesuits' influence obtain better results within the Vatican itself? It is very doubtful.

A catholic author wrote:

"They always aim at concentrating the ecclesiastical power which they control. The pope's infallibility exasperates bishops and governments: they nevertheless ask forit at the Council of Trent and obtain it at the Vatican Council (1870)... The Company's prestige fascinates, within the Church, its adversaries as much as its friends. We have respect or, at least, we fear it; we think it can do anything, and we behave accordingly".(3)

---

(1) T. Jung: "La France et Rome", (Charpentier, Paris 1874, p.369).

(2) "L'Annee politique et economique", 19, quai Bourbon, Paris 4e, January-March 1953, pp.2 ss.

(2a) Declaration made on the 6th of February 1940.

Another catholic writer strongly stated the effects of this concentration of power in the Pontiffs hands:

"The Society of Jesus was suspicious of life, the source of heresy, and opposed authority to it.

The Council of Trent seems already to be the testament of Catholicism.

It is the last genuine Council.

"After that, there will only be the Vatican Council which consecrates the abdication of the councils.

We are well aware of the popes' gain at the end of the councils.

What a simplification—what an impoverishment also!

Roman Christianity takes possession of its character of absolute monarchy, founded now and forever on papal infallibility.

The picture is beautiful but life bears its costs.

Everything comes from Rome, and Rome is left to lean only on Rome".(4)

Further on, the author sums up what the famous Company must be credited for: "It delayed maybe the death of the Church, but by a kind of pact with death".(5)

A kind of sclerosis, if not necrosis, is spreading and corrupting the Church, under that Loyolan ascendancy. Vigilant guardians of the dogma, whose antiquated character they accentuate with their aberrant worship of the Virgin Mary, the Jesuits, masters of the Gregorian Pontifical University which was founded by Ignatius of Loyola, check the teaching of the seminaries, supervise the Missions, reign at the Holy-Office, animate the Catholic Action, censure and direct the religious press in every country, patronize with tender love the great centres of pilgrimages: Lourdes, Lisieux, Fatima, etc. In short, they are everywhere, and we can regard as significant the fact that the pope, when ministering at the mass, is necessarily assisted by a Jesuit; his confessor is always a Jesuit, too.

By working at perfecting the concentration of power in the hands of the Sovereign Pontiff, the Company is in fact working for itself and the pope, apparent beneficiary of that work, could echo these famous words: "I am their chief, so I follow them".

So, it becomes more and more hopeless trying to distinguish the action of the Holy See from the one of the Company. But this Order, the very back bone of the Church, tends to dominate her entirely. For a long time now, the bishops have been nothing more than "civil servants", docile executors of the orders coming from Rome, or rather from the Gesu.

(3) Andre Mater- "Les Jesuites" (Reider, Paris 1932, p. 118).

(4) and (5) Henri Petit: "L'Honneur de Dieu" (Grasset, Paris 1958, p.88).

Without any doubt, Loyola's disciples endeavour to mask from the eyes of the faithful, the harshness of a more and more totalitarian system. The Catholic press, under their direct control, assumes some variety of inspiration, to give its readers the illusion of a kind of independence, to be open to "new" ideas: the Fathers, who are all things to all men, willingly practise these juggler's tricks which deceive only the star-gazers. But, behind these petty amusements, the everlasting Jesuit is watching, about whom an aforementioned author wrote: "Intransigence is inborn in him. Capable of being a shuffler, because of his craftiness, he only excels at being stubborn".(6)

We find excellent examples of that stubborness and insidious bias in the patient work of the Company's members, to conciliate, for better or worse, the "modern" and scientific spirit to which they take care to be attentive with the demands of the "doctrine" in general and, especially, with these rather idolatrous forms of devotion—the worship of Mary and wonderworking—of which they remain the most zealous propagators.

To say that these efforts are crowned with success would be an exaggeration: when blending water and fire, we obtain mainly steam. But even the inconsistency of these clouds is rather pleasing to certain subtle minds, even though warned about the dangers too much precision in the thoughts brings to a sincere piety. "Vade retro, Satanas"!

As far as that is concerned, German metaphysics are most helpful; we find in them everything we need, and even the opposite. There isn't any childish superstition which, after pedantic treatment, does not acquire some appearance of seriousness and even depth. It is rather amusing to follow the game in the periodicals and bulletins of various cultural groups.

There, the enquirer finds the material he needs, and especially the one who, through an inclination somewhat aberrant, enjoys reading between the lines.

However, these men full of bitterness do not live only the speculative sphere, the good Fathers made sure they gave their apostolate amongst "intellectuals" a solid temporal foundation. To the gifts of the Spirit the lavishly bestow upon their disciples are added substantial advantages. Besides, it is an ancient tradition. In Charlemagne's time, the converted Saxons received a white shirt. Nowadays, the beneficiaries of a newly-found or re-discovered Faith enjoy other favours, especially in the academic and scientific worlds: the not very clever student passes examinations without difficulties; the professor is given the professorial chair of his choice; the physician who is a "believer", in addition to rich clients, has preference when wanting to join some important society, etc.. Through a natural mechanism, these choice recruits will bring others and, as there is strength in numbers, their conjugated action will be most efficacious in what we call the leading spheres.

---

(6) Andre Mater, op.cit., p. 192.

This can be seen in Spain, so we are told, and even elsewhere.

In "Le Monde" of the 7th of May 1956, M. Henri Fesquet devoted an important article to the Spanish "Opus Dei". When defining the action of the pious and occult organisation, he wrote: "Its members... aim at helping intellectuals to reach a religious state of perfection through the exercise of their professions, and sanctify professional work".

This is no new story, and M. Fesquet knows it, for he says a little further on: "They are accused—and the fact doesn't seem deniable—of wanting to occupy the keyposts of the land, to be at the core of the University, administration, government, to prevent from entering or even expel from them unbelievers and liberals".

The "Opus" apparently entered France "clandestinely" in November 1954, "brought in" by two priests and five laymen, doctors or medical students. That may be so, but we doubt if this reinforcement coming from "tras los montes" was really necessary to the pursuit of their work which has been going on for a long time now, in France, mainly in the medical and academic worlds, as certain scandals in examinations and competitions revealed it.

In any case, the French branch of this Action, supposed to be "God's work", doesn't seem to be clandestine after all, judging by what Francois Mauriac wrote about it:

"... I was the recipient of a strange confidence, so strange in fact that, if it had not been signed by a Catholic writer who is one of my friends and whom I trust, I would think it was a practical joke. He had offered an article to a periodical which accepted the offer gladly, but never acknowledged its receipt. Months go by, my friend becomes anxious, makes inquiries, and eventually receives this answer from the director of that periodical: "As you probably know, the "Opus Dei" has been checking what we publish for the past few months. And this "Opus Dei" absolutely refused to allow that text to be printed". This friend asks me the question: "What is the "Opus Dei"? And I, too, openly and candidly ask it..."(7)

This question—about which M. Francois Mauriac hints is not as "candid" as he says—the eminent academician could have asked it from people he knew well: writers, publishers, booksellers, men of science, lecturers, theatre and cinema people—unless he preferred to inform himself quite simply at the editing centres.

As for the opposition the "Opus Dei" is supposed to meet from certain Jesuits, we see in it nothing more than group rivalry. The Company as we have said and proved—is "modernist" as easily as "integrist", according to the opportunities, as it is determined to have a foot in both camps. In fact, the same publication "Le Monde" printed an article by M. Jean Creach, ironically inviting us to admire an "Auto-da-fe of the Spanish Jesuits", fortunately limited to the works of French literature. Indeed, this Jesuit censor doesn't seem to be a "modernist", judging by what M. Jean Creach says:

---

(7) "Le Bloc-notes de M. Francois Mauriac", in the "Express" of the 29th of October 1959

"If Father Garmendia had the power of Cardinal Tavera, the one whose gaze was resuscitated by Greco like lightning in a greenish mask, above the purple, Spain would be acquainted only with our literature by emasculated... or even beheaded authors".

Then, after quoting several amusing examples of the Reverend Father's purifying zeal, the author tells this pertinent reflection:

"Are the brains formed by our Jesuits so weak that they cannot confront even the smallest danger to triumph over it themselves?", whispered a mischievous tongue? "Tell me, dear friend; if they are incapable of it, what is the value of the teaching which renders them so feeble?"(8)

To this humorous critic, we can answer that the said weakness of the brains moulded by the Jesuits is, in fact, the main value of their teaching—and its danger as well.

This is the place to which we always have to return. Through a special vocation—and in spite of some honourable, even famous, exceptions— they are the sworn enemies of freedom of the mind: Brainwashed brainwashers!

This is their strength, as well as their weakness and injuriousness. M. Andre Mater stated extremely well the absolute totalitariansim of their Order when he wrote: "Through the discipline which unites him, in spirit, to all his fellow-members, each one of them acts and thinks with the intensity of thirty-thousand others. This is Jesuitic fanaticism".(9)

More terrible nowadays than ever before, this Jesuitic fanaticism, absolute master of the Roman Church, has embroiled her deeply in the competitions of world politics in which the militant and military spirit distinguishing this Company delights in. Under its care the papal organisation and the swastika launched a deadly attack on the hated liberalism and tried to bring about the "new Middle-Ages" Hitler promised Europe.(10)

In spite of von Ledochowski's prodigious plans, in spite of Himmler, "our Ignatius of Loyola", in spite of the slow-death camps, in spite of the corrupting of minds by Catholic Action and unrestrained propaganda of the Jesuits in the United States, the "providential man's" enterprise was a failure, and the "heritage of Saint-Peter", instead of increasing in the East, was reduced by that much.

---

(8) "Le Monde",.31st of August 1950.

(9) Andre Mater, op.cit., p. 193.

(10) Frederic Hoffet, op.cit., p.172.

An undeniable fact remains: the national-socialist government, "the most Catholic Germany ever had"(10), was also and by far the most abjectly cruel—without excluding from the comparison the barbarian epochs. Painful declaration indeed for many believers, but one it would be wise meditating upon. In the Order's "burgs", where the training was a copy of the Jesuitic method, the master—apparent, at least—of the Third Reich formed this "SS elite" before which, according to his wishes, the world "trembled"—but also vomited with disgust. The same causes produce the same results. "There are disciplines too heavy for the human soul to bear and which would utterly break a conscience... Crime of alienation of oneself masked by heroism... No commandment can be good if, first of all, it corrupts a soul. When one has engaged oneself fully in a society, other beings lose much of their importance".(1 1)

In fact, the Nazi chiefs had no consideration for the "other beings"; we can say the same as well of the Jesuits!

"They made obedience their idol".(12)

And this utter obedience was invoked by the accused of Nuremberg to excuse their awful crimes.

Finally, we borrow from the same author, who analysed Jesuitic fanaticism so well, this final judgment:

"We reproach the Company with its skill, its politics and deceit, we ascribe to it all the calculations, all the hidden motives, all the underhand blows; we reproach her even with the intelligence of its members. Yet there isn't one country where the Society has not experienced great disappointment, where it hasn't behaved in a scandalous manner and drawn upon itself righteous anger.

"If their machiavellism had the depth generally attributed to it, would these grave and thoughtful men constantly throw themselves into abysses human wisdom can foresee, into catastrophes they were bound to expect as the Order experienced similar ones in all civilized States?

"The explanation is simple: a powerful genius governs the Society, a genius so powerful that it thrusts it sometimes even against stumbling-blocks, as if it could break them, ad majorem Dei Gloriam".

"This genius is not the one of the general, of his advice, of the provincials, nor the heads of every household...

"It is the living genius of this vast body, it is the inevitable strength resulting from this gathering of sacrificed consciences, bound intelligences; it is the explosive strength and domineering fury of the Order, resulting from its nature itself.

---

(11) and (12 Henri Petit: "L'Honneur de Dieu", pp.25, 72, 73.

"In a great accumulation of clouds, lightning is powerful and the storm is bound to break out".(13)

Between 1939 and 1945, the storm killed 57 million souls ravaging and ruining Europe.

We must be on our guard; another and even worse catastrophe may lie hidden in these same clouds; lighting may strike again, throwing the world into "abysses human wisdom can foresee", but out of which, if it had the misfortune to let itself be thrown into, no power could rescue it.

In spite of what Rome's spokesmen may say, it is not "anticlericalism" which prompted us to study carefully the Vatican's politics, or those of the Jesuits', and to denounce its motives and means, but the necessity to enlighten the public about the sly activity of fanatics who do not retreat before anything—the past has proved this too often—to reach their aims.

We have seen how, during the 18th century, the European monarchies united to demand the suppression of this evil Order. Nowadays, it can concoct its intrigues in peace and the democratic governments do not seem to appear concerned.

The danger the world is exposed to because of this Company is far greater today than at the time of the "family pact", and even greater than when the two World Wars broke out.

No one can nurse any illusion as to the deadly consequences another conflict would have.

---

(13) Henri Petit, op.cit, pp.152-153.

THE SATURN MYTH

A reinterpretation of rites and symbols
illuminating some of the dark corners of primordial society

DAVID N. TALBOTT

David N. Talbott

THE
SATURN
MYTH

A reinterpretation of rites and symbols illuminating some of the dark corners of primordial society

Intrigued by Velikovsky’s claim that Saturn was once the pre-eminent planetary god, David Talbott resolved to examine its mythical character. “I wanted to know,” he wrote, “if ancient sources had a coherent story to tell about the planet . . . I had no inkling of the spectacular tale hidden in the chronicles.”

In this startling re-interpretation of age-old symbolism Talbott argues that the “Great God” or “Universal Monarch” of the ancients was not the sun, but Saturn, which once hung ominously close to the earth, and visually dominated the heavens.

Talbott’s close textual and symbolic analysis reveals the fundamental themes of Saturn imagery and proves that all of them—including the “cosmic ship”, the “island at the top of the world”, the “eye of heaven” and “the revolving temple” were based on celestial observations in the northern sky. In addition he shows how such diverse symbols as the Cross, “sun”-wheels, holy mountains, crowns of royalty and sacred pillars grew out of ancient Saturn worship. Talbott contends that Saturn's appearance at the time, radically different from today, inspired man's leap into civilization, since many aspects of early civilization can be seen as conscious efforts to re-enact or commemorate Saturn’s organization of his “celestial” kingdom.

A fascinating look at ancient history and cosmology, *The Saturn Myth* is a provocative book that might well change the way you think about man’s history and the history of the universe.

David N. Talbott is the founder and former publisher of *Pensee*, an out-growth of the Student Academic Forum which developed the book, *Velikovsky Reconsidered*. He is also the co-author of *The Ecstasy of Sati-Ra*, a cosmological mystery. He now lives with his family in Oregon.

Talbott, David N., *The Saturn Myth*

ISBN: 0-385-113376-5

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 76-51986

Copyright © 1980 by David N.Talbott.

All Rights Reserved.

Printed in the United States of America.

First Edition.

Kindle version created by ***PapaLazzzaru***, August 2013; revised March 2014, February 2015. Final revision June 2016.

CONTENTS

I: INTRODUCTION

Myth And Catastrophe

II: THE GREAT FATHER

The *"One God"* Of Archaic Monotheism

The Universal Monarch

The Age Of Kronos

India

Iran

China

Northern Europe

The Rites Of Kingship

The Heaven Man

Who Was Adam?

The Great Father Saturn

The Saturn Myth Reconstructed

III: THE POLAR SUN

Sun And Saturn

Day And Night

Saturn And The Pole

The Unmoved Mover

Egypt

Mesopotamia

India

China

The Americas

IV: SATURN'S COSMOS

The Enclosed Sun

The Lost Island

The Egg

The Cosmos And The Divine Assembly

The Circle Of The Gods

The Great Mother

Womb And Thigh

Womb And Cosmos

The Hermaphrodite

V: THE HOLY LAND
The Mother Land
Saturn’s Earth
The Egyptian Paradise
The World Wheel
The One-Wheeled Chariot
The City Of Heaven
The Enclosure As Prototype
The World Navel
The Ocean
VI. THE ENCLOSED SUN-CROSS
The Four Rivers Of Paradise
The Crossroads
The Four-Eyed Or Four-Faced God
The Foundation Stone
The Four Pillars Of Heaven
Symmetrical Elaborations Of The Sun-Cross
VII: TEMPLE, CROWN, VASE, EYE, AND CIRCULAR SERPENT
The Temple
The Egyptian Temple
Temple And Womb
The Crown
The Vase
The Eye
The Circular Serpent
In Summary: A Coherent Doctrine
VIII: THE COSMIC MOUNTAIN
- *Egypt*
- *Mesopotamia*
- *India*
- *Japan, China, Iran, Siberia*
- *Siberia*
- *Greece And Rome*
- *Western Semitic*
- *The Americas*

A Collective Memory

- The Mount Of Masculine Power
- The Cosmic Mountain Personified
- The Single Leg
- The Serpent/Dragon
- The Stream Of Life
  - *Boreas And The Hyperboreans*
  - *The North Wind Shu*
  - *The River Of Life*
  - *The Eden-Fountain*
- The King Of The Mountain

IX: THE CRESCENT

- The Crescent And Saturn
- The Crescent And Womb
- Crescent And Motherland
- The Crescent And Mount
- The Heavenly Twins
- Who Were The Dioscuri?
- The Black And White Twins
  - *The Two Assemblies*
  - *The Two Lands*
  - *The Two Crowns*
  - *The Two Eyes*
  - *The Two Serpents*
  - *The Two Thrones*
  - *The Two Vases (=Two Eyes)*
  - *The Two Lakes or Rivers*
  - *The Two Cords*
- Symbolism Of The Crescent
- The Crescent Horn
- The Horned Mountain

X: THE CRESCENT-SHIP (PART 2)

  - *The World-Ship*
  - *The Island-Ship*
  - *The City-Ship*
  - *The Temple-Ship*
  - *The Wheel-Ship*

The Egg-Ship
The Eye-Ship
The Vase-Ship
The Shield-Ship
The Throne-Ship
The Serpent (Dragon)-Ship
THE CRESCENT-ARMS
THE KA-ARMS
THE CRESCENT-WINGS
INTERCONNECTED SYMBOLS
The Plant Of Life
Sword
The Altar
ABOVE AND BELOW, LEFT AND RIGHT
SATURN'S DAY
XI: CONCLUSION
BIBLIOGRAPHY
ENDNOTES

I: Introduction

The planet Saturn today is recognizable only to those who know where to look for it. But a few thousand years ago Saturn dominated the earth as a sun, presiding over a universal Golden Age.

Modern man considers it self-evident that our familiar heavens differ hardly at all from the heavens encountered by the earliest star worshippers. He assumes that the most distinctive bodies venerated in primitive times were the sun and moon, followed by the five visible planets and various constellations—all appearing as they do today, but for such ever-so-slight changes as the precession of the equinoxes.

This long-standing belief not only confines present discussion of ancient myth and religion; it is the fixed doctrine of modern astronomy and geology: every prevailing theory of the solar system and of earth's past rests upon an underlying doctrine of cosmic uniformity—the belief that the clocklike regularity of heavenly motions can be projected backward indefinitely.

But the evidence assembled in the following pages indicates that *within human memory* extraordinary changes in the planetary system occurred: in the earliest age recalled by man the planet Saturn was the most spectacular light in the heavens and its impact on the ancient world overwhelming. In fact Saturn was the one "great god" invoked by all mankind. The first religious symbols were symbols of Saturn, and so pervasive was the planet god's influence that the ancients knew him as the creator, the king of the world, and Adam, the first man.

Since the only meaningful defense of this claim is the entire body of evidence presented here, I shall not presume upon the reader's credulity, but only ask that he follow the narrative to its end.

Myth And Catastrophe

If our generation disdains the possibility of fact in the language of myth it is because we are aware of discrepancy between myth and the modern world view, and we ascribe it to the blindness or superstition of the ancients. There is hardly an ancient tale which fails to speak of world-destroying upheavals and shifting cosmic orders. Indeed, we are so accustomed to the catastrophic character of the stories that we hardly give it a second thought. When the myths tell of suns which have come and gone, or of planetary gods whose wars threatened to destroy mankind, we are likely to take them as amusing and absurdly exaggerated accounts of local floods, earthquakes, and eclipses—or write them off altogether as expressions of unconstrained fancy. How many scholars, seeking to unravel the astronomical legends and symbols of antiquity, have questioned whether the heavenly bodies have always coursed on the same paths they follow today? In the past three hundred years barely a handful of writers have claimed any connection between myth and actual celestial catastrophe:

William Whiston published in 1696 *A New Theory of the Earth*, arguing that the biblical Deluge resulted from a cometary cataclysm. The book produced a storm of scientific objections and had no lasting impact outside Christian orthodoxy.

In 1882 and 1883 two books by Ignatius Donnelly appeared: *Atlantis, the Antediluvian World*, and *Ragnarok: the Age of Fire and Gravel.* Relying on global myths, Donnelly claimed that a massive continent called Atlantis once harboured a primordial civilization, but the entire land sank beneath the sea when a comet rained destruction on the earth. Both of Donnelly's books became best sellers and are still available today. Yet conventional theories of earth and the solar system remain unaffected by these works.

Around the turn of the century Isaac Vail argued in a series of brief papers that myths of cosmic upheaval relate to the collapse of ice bands surrounding our planet.[1] Three quarters of a century after his death, his work is familiar only to the esoteric few.

In 1913 Hans Hoerbiger published his *Glacial-Kosmogonie*, contending that the great catastrophes described in ancient myth occurred when the Earth captured another planet which became our moon.[2] The relatively small interest in Hoerbiger's thesis vanished within a couple of decades.

This was the extent of noteworthy research into myth and catastrophe when Immanuel Velikovsky, in early 1940, first wondered whether a cosmic disturbance may have accompanied the Hebrew Exodus. According to the biblical account, massive plagues occurred, Sinai erupted, and a pillar of cloud and fire moved in the sky. His quest for a solution led Velikovsky through a systematic survey of world mythology and eventually to the conclusion that ancient myths constitute a collective memory of celestial disorder. The great gods, Velikovsky observed, appear explicitly as planets. In the titanic wars vividly depicted by ancient chroniclers the planets moved on erratic courses, appearing to wage battles in the sky, exchanging electrical discharges, and more than once menacing the earth.

Velikovsky set forth his claims of celestial catastrophe in his book *Worlds in Collision* (published in 1950), proposing that first Venus and then Mars, in the period 1500-686 B.C., so disturbed the Earth's axis as to produce world-wide destruction. The book became an immediate best seller and the focus of one of the great scientific controversies of this century.[3]

I mention Velikovsky not only because his work obviously relates to the thesis of this book, but because, as a matter of record, Velikovsky first directed my attention toward Saturn. In a manuscript still awaiting publication Velikovsky proposed that the now-distant planet was once the dominant heavenly body, and he identified Saturn's epoch with the legendary Golden Age. While I have not seen Velikovsky's unpublished manuscript on Saturn, a brief outline of his idea inspired the present inquiry: was Saturn once the preeminent light in the heavens?

Yet I possessed at the outset no conception of the broad thesis presented here—which fell into place with surprising rapidity, once I set out to reconstruct the Saturn myth. While expecting to find, at best, only faint echoes of Saturn (or no hint at all), I found instead that the ancients, looking back to "the beginnings," were obsessed with the planet-god and strove in a thousand ways to relive Saturn's epoch. The most common symbols of antiquity, which our age universally regards as *solar* emblems (, etc.) were originally unrelated to our sun. *They were literal pictures of Saturn*, whom the entire ancient world invoked as "the sun." In the original age to which the myths refer, Saturn was no remote speck faintly discerned by terrestrial observers; the planet loomed as an awesome and terrifying light. And if we are to believe the wide-spread accounts of Saturn's age, the planet-god's home was the unmoving celestial pole, the apparent pivot of the heavens, far removed from the visible path of Saturn today.

At first glance, however, the Saturn myth seems to present an entanglement of bizarre images. The earliest, most venerated religious texts depict the great god sailing in a celestial ship, consorting with winged goddesses, fashioning revolving islands, cities and temples, or abiding upon the shoulders of a cosmic giant. It is impossible to pursue Saturn's ancient image without encountering the paradise of Eden, the lost Atlantis, the fountain of youth, the one-wheeled "chariot of the gods," the all-seeing Eye of heaven, or the serpent-dragon of the deep. Though celebrated as living, *visible* powers, none of Saturn's personifications or mythical habitats conforms to anything in our familiar world. Yet once one seeks out the concrete nature of these images, it becomes clear that each referred to the *same celestial form.* The subject is a Saturnian configuration of startling simplicity—whose appearance, transformation, and eventual disappearance became the focus of all ancient rites.

---

[1] A number of Vail's papers have been collected and published by Donald Cyr, Annular Publications, 25 West Anapamu Street, Santa Barbara, California.

[2] A general and less-than-convincing survey of mythological evidence will be found in H. S. Bellamy, *Moons, Myths and Man.*

[3] This is not the place to recount the details of the "Velikovsky affair" or to recite the many unexpected space age discoveries weighing in Velikovsky's favor. The story receives comprehensive coverage in the recent book *Velikovsky Reconsidered*, a series of papers by scholars acknowledging substantial scientific evidence in support of Velikovsky's claims.

I now have little doubt that, if Velikovsky had pursued the Saturn question to the end, he would have perceived a vastly greater influence of the planet than he originally recognized. He would have discovered also that the full story of Saturn adds a new perspective to much of the mythological material gathered in *Worlds in Collision.* (In this connection I must stress that I alone am responsible for the themes and conclusions presented in this book. Realizing that Velikovsky has had to defend his own heresy for better than a quarter of a century, I have no desire to burden him with the heresy of others.)

Nothing came as a greater surprise to me than the sheer quantity of material bearing directly on the Saturn tradition. The scope of the subject matter made it necessary to separate the material into two volumes: the first dealing with the original Saturnian apparition, the second with Saturn's catastrophic fate. This initial volume then, focuses on the primordial age of cosmic harmony and the unified image of Saturn as king of the world.

II: The Great Father

Anyone attempting to trace the Saturn legend must reckon with the primordial god-figure whom ancient races celebrate as "the great father," and who is said to have first organized the heavens and founded the antediluvian kingdom of peace and plenty, the "Golden Age." While few of us today could locate Saturn in the starry sphere, the earliest astral religions insist that the planet-god was once the all-powerful ruler of heaven. But paradoxically, they also declare that he *resided on earth* as a great king. He was the father both of gods and men.

This dual character of the great father has been the subject of a centuries-long, but unresolved debate. Was he a living ancestor subsequently exaggerated into a cosmic divinity? Or was he originally a celestial god whom later myths reduced to human proportions? For an explanation of the great father researchers look to such varied powers as the solar orb, an esteemed tribal chief, or an abstract "vegetation cycle." Almost uniformly ignored is the connection of the primordial man-god with the actual planet Saturn—even though it is precisely the latter that can tell us why the great father appears in both human and celestial form.

The overwhelming preoccupation of ancient ritual is with an ancient "great god":

1. The myths say that the god emerged alone from the cosmic sea as the preeminent power in the heavens. Out of watery chaos he produced a new order. The ancients worshipped him as the creator and the supreme lord of the Cosmos.

2. This solitary god, according to the legend, founded a kingdom of unparalleled splendour. He was the divine ancestor of all earthly rulers, his kingdom the prototype of the just and prosperous realm. Throughout his reign an unending spring prevailed, the land produced freely, and men knew neither labour nor war.

3. In the god-king's towering form the ancients perceived the Heaven Man, a primordial giant whose body was the newly organized Cosmos. The legends often present the figure as the first man or "primordial man," whose history personified the struggle of good and evil.

4. Whether emphasizing the great father's character as creator, first king, or Heaven Man, widespread traditions proclaim him to be the planet Saturn.

In investigating the traits of the archaic god we must give greatest weight to the oldest astral religions—those which are closest to the original experience. The best material, coming from ancient Egypt and Mesopotamia, provides a remarkably coherent picture of the god and enables one to see the development and the distortions of the idea among later peoples. What is most surprising, however, is the enduring power of the root themes.

The "One God" Of Archaic Monotheism

In the beginning the ancients knew one supreme god only, a divinity invoked as the creator and the father of all the gods.

According to a long-established school of thought, man's consciousness of a supreme being emerged slowly from a primitive fascination with petty spirits and demons. Adherents to this opinion tell us that human reason gradually modified capricious spirits of "vegetation," "spring," "the ancestors," or "sexual power" into the great gods of global religion.

Of such an *evolutionary* process, however, one finds little evidence. The great edifices erected by Herbert Spencer, E.B. Tylor, and James G. Frazer[4] appear to rest exclusively on the assumption that one can learn the origins of theism by studying existing primitive cultures. The idea is that the civilized races of old must have first passed through "primitive" phases. Before the Hebrews, Greeks, or Hindus developed their elevated ideas of a supreme god, they must have possessed beliefs and customs similar to those of modern-day tribes of Africa, Australia, or Polynesia. Only by *slow development*, say these theorists, could a race rise above the ludicrous magic, totems, and fetishes of the savage.

It is interesting that the advocates of the various evolutionary theories, in their fascination with present-day primitive cultures, almost never concern themselves with the oldest religious texts and symbols which have come down to us. The sacred hymns and eulogies of ancient Egypt and Mesopotamia reveal a tradition of a "great god" reaching back into prehistoric times. Moreover, a comparison of early and later sources, rather than suggesting a development, actually indicates the *disintegration* of a once-unified idea into magic, astrology, totemism, and other elements with which the evolutionists associate the "first stages" of religion.

Figure 1. Atum, the solitary god of beginnings.

There are grounds for speaking of an archaic monotheism, astral in nature, existing long before the idea of God received its spiritual and philosophical elevation in Hebrew and Greek thought. To the ancients themselves the entire question was simply a matter of concrete history: the present world is a fragmented copy of an earlier age, in which the supreme light god stood alone in a primeval sea, occupying the cosmic centre.

Ancient Egyptian texts repeatedly invoke a singular figure worshipped as the greatest and highest light of the primeval age. One of his many names was Atum, a god "born in the Abyss before the sky existed, before the earth existed."[5] These are the words of the *Pyramid Texts*, perhaps the world's oldest religious hymns, but the texts of all periods look back to the same primordial time when Atum shone forth alone. "I came into being of myself in the midst of the Primeval Waters," states the god in the *Book of the Dead.*[6] More than once the *Coffin Texts* recall the time when Atum "was alone, before he had repeated himself."[7] He "was alone in the

---

[4] Spencer, *The Principles of Sociology*; Tylor, *Primitive Culture and Researches into the Early History of Mankind*; Frazer, *The Golden Bough*.

In 1934 E.A. Wallis Budge published his *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, whose very title indicates the influence of the evolutionary theory on specialists. Budge writes (p.56): "Animism must have preceded the magical cults of the predynastic Egyptians, and it, in its turn, was succeeded by the cults of animals, birds, reptiles, trees, etc., which after animism formed the predominant part of the later religion of the Egyptians. The great merit and fact that it embraced a qualified totemism and fetishism and prepared the way for the higher classes of spirits to become 'gods.'" Yet one looks in vain for evidence of this assumed evolution among the Egyptians.

[5] *Pyramid Text* 1040.

[6] Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 40, from Chapter 85 of the *Egyptian Book of the Dead*.

[7] Clark, *op. cit.*, 94.

Primeval Waters," they say.[8] "I was [the spirit in?] the Primeval Waters, he who had no companion when my name came into existence."[9]

Each locality in Egypt appears to have possessed its own special representative of the father god.[10] To some he was Horus, "the god who came first into being when no other god had yet come into existence, when no name of anything had yet been proclaimed."[11] Other traditions knew him as Re, "the God One who came into being in the beginning of time . . . O thou who didst give Thyself birth! O one, mighty one of myriad forms and aspects, king of the world . . ."[12]

The followers of Amen proclaimed their god "the Ancient of Heaven . . . , father of the gods."[13] Ptah was "the splendid god who existed alone in the beginning."[14]

The different local names of the primeval deity, though adding complexity to Egyptian religion as a whole, do not cloud the underlying idea. He is the "god One," the "Only One," the "father of beginnings," the "Supreme Lord," the singular god "except whom at the beginning none other existed."[15]

Surveying Egyptian religion one cannot fail to notice the priests' obsession with the past—and their vivid portrait of the great god in his "first appearance." Those who look for an unseen creator in early Egyptian religion will be disappointed. He is a visible and concrete power, the "lord of terror," or "the great of terror."[16] The memory of this solitary light god and creator was as old as the most ancient Egyptian ritual. His appearance—and eventual departure—shaped every aspect of the Egyptian world view.

So also in Mesopotamia, about which Stephen Langdon raises the question of archaic monotheism. After prolonged study of Semitic and Sumerian sources, Langdon concludes that veneration of spirits and demons had nothing to do with the origins of Mesopotamian religion. Rather, "both in Sumerian and Semitic religions, monotheism preceded polytheism and belief in good and evil spirits."[17]

Langdon notes that on the pictographic tablets of the prehistoric period, the picture of a star repeatedly appears. The sign , he claims, is virtually the only religious symbol in the primitive period, and in the early Sumerian language this star symbol is the ideogram for writing "god," "high," "heaven," and "bright." It is also the ideogram of An, the oldest and loftiest of the Sumerian gods.

An (or Anu) was the father of the gods and the central light at the universe summit, a god of "terrifying splendour" who governed heaven from his throne in the cosmic sea Apsu.

---

[8] *Ibid.*, 95.

[9] *Ibid.*, 74. Elsewhere the texts employ the phrases "while he was still alone," (77), "when I [Atum] was still alone in the waters . . . " (38).

[10] Muller observes, for example, that within the capital of each of the forty-two nomes, the original patron god was extolled "as though he was the only god or was at least the supreme divinity." *Egyptian Mythology*, 17-18.

[11] Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 37.

[12] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, Introductory Hymn to Re.

[13] Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, 80.

[14] Ptah is "le dieu splendide qui existait tout seul au commencement. Il n'y a pas son pareil, celui qui s'est créé au commencement sans avoir ni père ni mère. Il a façonné son corps tout seul, celui qui a créé sans être créé, celui qui porte le ciel comme le travail de ses mains." Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire*, 160-61.

[15] Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. I, 131 ff., 400, 501: also Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 4-5, 138-39.

[16] Hassan, *op cit.*, 24, 27; Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 14.

[17] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, xviii.

But the Sumero-Babylonian pantheon is filled with competing figures of the primordial creator. Enki (or Ea), Ningirsu, Ninurta, Tammuz—each appears as a local formulation of the same great god.[18] Each shares in the character of the singular An, ruling as universal lord, fashioning his home above and radiating light in the midst of the celestial ocean.

Here, as in Egypt, the god of archaic monotheism is not a transcendent spirit or invisible power, but a central light. A Sumerian epic to Ninurta proclaims, "Anu in the midst of Heaven gave him fearful splendour." Ninurta, according to the text, is "like Anu," and casts "a shadow of glory over the land."[19] All Mesopotamian figures of the primeval god possess this tangible character, and accounts of the god's radiant appearance are more of a historical than a speculative nature.

Egyptian and Mesopotamian traditions of the solitary creator find many parallels in later Hebrew, Greek, Persian, Hindu, and Chinese mysticism and philosophy. But it is the earlier imagery which illuminates the later. And however unorthodox the idea may seem, the oldest records treat the great god's birth in the deep and his acts of "creation" as events experienced by the ancestors. "Hearts were pervaded with fear, hearts were pervaded with terror when I was born in the abyss," proclaims the god in the *Pyramid Texts*.[20] The solitary god, in the presence of the ancestors, brought forth the primeval world or "earth." To understand the great god's creation one must put aside modern philosophical and religious conceptions. The tradition has nothing to do with the origins of our planet or of the material universe. *The subject of the original creation legend is the formation of the great god's visible dwelling above.* The legend records that when the creator rose from the cosmic sea a great band or revolving island congealed around the god as his home. The band appeared as a well-defined, organized, and geometrically unified dwelling—a celestial "land" fashioned by the great father. All space outside this enclosure belonged to unorganized Chaos.

In a later section of this book I intend to show that ancient races the world over recorded *pictures* of the great god and his circular abode. The images were and (the second, more complete form showing streams of light radiating from the god to animate his "city of heaven"). The words which in the ancient languages denote this enclosure receive various translations as "heaven," "cosmos," "world," "land," "earth," "netherland"—terms which take on vastly different meanings in modern usage. In their *original* sense the words signified one and the same thing: a band of light which appeared to set apart the "sacred ground" of the great god from the rest of space.

(One cannot begin a survey of the great father without confronting his celestial enclosure, but a full discussion of this dwelling will be possible only after certain other aspects of the single god receive clarification. I mention the enclosure now in order to indicate the general, and unconventional, direction of this investigation. When texts cited in the following pages employ the terms "heaven," "earth," or "world" the reader should know that the usual interpretation will not be my interpretation.)

---

[18] *Ibid.*, 93. "Les épithètes laudatives insisteront sur son caractère de dieu des cieux, père des cieux, et surtout de roi des cieux. Il trône au sommet de la voûte céleste." Dhorme, *Les Religions de Babylonie et d'Assyrie*, 23.

[19] The iconography of such dieties, states Frankfort, reveals a single underlying idea. *Op. cit.*, 282. According to Van Dijk, "les différents dieux des panthéons locaux sont les 'Erscheinungsformen'—des formes pluralistes—d'une même divinité." "Le Motif Cosmique dans la Pensée Sumérienne," 4.

But Jeremias in his discussion of these "monotheistic streams" described the supreme god as an "invisible divine power." It is difficult to imagine a less appropriate description of An or any of his representative deities. In the texts An is not only the "light of the gods," but a light of "terrifying glory." Alfred Jeremias, *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 227. Also Jeremias, *Monotheistische Strömungen . . .*

If only one god prevailed in the beginning, how did the Sumero-Babylonian religion acquire its almost endless number of deities? Langdon writes: "By giving special names to the functions of each deity [or representative of An] the theologians obtained an enormous pantheon, and by assigning special functions of the three great gods to their sons, and again giving special names to their functions the parent tree became a forest of gods and minor deities." *Op. cit.*, 91.

[20] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 124.

Of the Egyptian Atum (or Re) I note these special characteristics:

1. Primeval Unity. Atum is the "One," but also the "All." Though he is the solitary god of beginnings, an assembly of lesser gods emanate from him and revolve in his company. These secondary deities, the *paut* or "circle" of the gods, constitute Atum's own "limbs." Atum's body is the primeval Cosmos,[21] denoted by the circle in the sign .

2. Regulator. Atum is the stationary god, the "Firm Heart of the Sky." His hieroglyph, however, is the primitive sledge , signifying "to move." As the central light or pivot, he imparts motion to (or "moves") the heavens, while he himself remains *em hetep*, "at rest." Directing the celestial motions (and the related cycles) he becomes the god of Time.[22]

3. The Word. The Egyptians recall Atum as the ancient Voice of heaven:

The Word came into being.

All things were mine when I was alone.

I was Re [=Atum] *in his first manifestations.*

The texts describe the god's "first manifestations"[23] as the bringing forth of his companions (his "limbs"), which issue—or explode—from the god as his fiery "speech." This circle of secondary divinities receives the name Khu, meaning "words of power," but also "brilliant lights" or "glorious lights."

4. Water God. A well-known chapter of the *Book of the Dead* includes this description of Re:

I am the Great God who created himself.

Who is he?

The Great God who created himself is the water

it is the Abyss, the Father of the Gods.[24]

The great god and the celestial ocean—"a lake of fire"—are fundamentally one. The waters issue from the god yet, paradoxically, give birth to him.

5. The Seed. Atum is the masculine power of heaven, the luminous Seed embodying all the elements of life (water, fire, air, etc.), which flow from him in streams of light. He is the universal source of fertility animating and impregnating the Cosmos.[25]

What is most compelling about the portrait of Atum-Re is that numerous Egyptian divinities *duplicate* the image. The very traits of the great god, outlined above, are endlessly repeated in the figures of Osiris, Ptah, Horus, Khepera, and Amen—each of whom appears as the solitary god in the fiery sea; the god One who brought forth the company of gods as his own limbs; the god of the reverberating speech; the *unmoving* god producing the celestial revolutions; the final source of waters and the impregnating Seed of the Cosmos.[26]

If we were to inquire of an Egyptian priest how he arrived at this notion of the supreme god, the priest would tell us that he did not "arrive" at the idea at all. The great god was a *historical* divinity, who ruled heaven for a time, then departed amid great upheavals. The hymns and ritual texts (the priest would say) simply record the incarnation of the god in the primordial era and recount the massive cataclysms which accompanied the collapse of that era.

---

[21] *Pyramid Texts* 1039-40.

[22] See especially the section on "The Circle of the Gods".

[23] See the discussion of the Egyptian "Unmoved Mover".

[24] Clark, *op. cit.*, 79.

[25] Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 121.

[26] See the section on the cosmic womb.

As the following sections will show, the general tradition is global and highly coherent.

The Universal Monarch

The same cosmic figure whom the oldest races knew as the creator and supreme god appears in the myths as a terrestrial king, reigning over the Golden Age. His rule was distinguished for its peace and abundance, and he governed not one land alone but the entire world, becoming the model of the good king. Every terrestrial ruler, according to the kingship rites, received his charisma and authority from this divine predecessor.

No mythical figure remains more enigmatic than the great king to whom so many ancient peoples traced their ancestry. Who was Osiris, the legendary ruler who led the Egyptians out of barbarianism and reigned as king of the entire world? Who was Enki, whom the ancient Sumerians revered as the "universal lord" and founder of civilization?

The same figure appears repeatedly as one passes to India, Greece, China, and the Americas. For the Hindus it was Yama; for the Greeks, Kronos; for the Chinese, Huang-ti. The Mexicans insisted that the white god Quetzalcoatl once ruled not only Mexico but all mankind. In North America the same idea attached to the primordial figure Manabozo.

So vivid are the recollections of the Universal Monarch that his story usually forms the first chapter in the chronicles of kingship. And the kingship rites meticulously preserve a memory of the god-kings rule. Each stage in the inauguration of a new king reenacts the "first" king's life and death. The rites take the initiated back to the beginning—to the mythical "creation."

An extraordinary theme emerges: In the original age of cosmic harmony and human innocence the gods dwelt on earth. Presiding over the epoch of peace and plenty was the Universal Monarch, who founded temples and cities and taught humanity the principles of agriculture, law, writing, music, and other civilized arts. This Golden Age, however, ended in the god-king's catastrophic death.

What is most puzzling to modern commentators is that the king of the world, "ruling on earth," is at the same time the creator, the "god One." How did the ancients come upon this paradoxical notion?

The Age Of Kronos

Greek legends recall a remote and mysterious era of Kronos, the creator god who, wielding his sickle, ruled from the summit of Olympus. Eventually displaced by his own son, against whom he warred violently, Kronos seems to have appeared to the Greeks as a split personality, at once a radiant god—the very author of the world—and a dark, demonic power.

But in an old tradition, with roots in earliest antiquity, Kronos is preeminently the good king, his darker side concealed. "First of all the deathless gods who dwell on Olympus made a golden race of mortal men who lived in the time of Kronos when he was reigning in heaven. And they lived like gods without sorrow of heart, remote and free from toil and grief: miserable age rested not on them . . . The fruitful earth unforced bare them fruit abundantly and without stint. They dwelt in ease and peace upon their lands with many good things, rich in flocks and loved by the blessed gods."[27]

When Hesiod wrote these lines the Golden Age of Kronos was but a faint and often confused memory. To observe the antiquity of the idea one need only refer to the cradles of ancient civilization—Egypt and Mesopotamia.

Among the Egyptians the father of the paradisal age possessed many names, but each tradition proclaimed the same original excellence of creation, subsequently corrupted. The peaceful epoch was distinctly the age of

---

[27] Evelyn-White, *Hesiod, the Homeric Hymns and Homerica*, 11.

Kronos, under a different title. “Throughout their history the Egyptians believed in a time of perfection at the beginning of the world,” observes Clark.[28]

In the earliest age, say the Egyptian sources, the great god was the first king, a ruler whose life served as a model for all succeeding ages. With the god-king Osiris the Egyptians constantly associated a vanished Golden Age. As king, Osiris, the “Beneficent Being,” taught his subjects to worship the gods, gave them the arts of civilization, and formulated the laws of justice. Founding sacred temples and cities and disseminating wisdom from one land to another, he became the benefactor of the whole world.[29] But his eventual murder brought world-wide destruction.

Among classical writers (Herodotus, Diodorus, Plutarch) the idea prevailed that Osiris lived on our earth as a man or man-god. Egyptian sources, too, often portray him in human form. Yet the early religious texts say again and again that Osiris was the supreme light of heaven, ruling from the cosmic centre. He was, in fact, “the lord of the gods, god One.”[30] His body formed the Circle of the *Tuat*, the celestial residence of the gods. And the secondary gods themselves constituted the limbs of Osiris.[31]

Indeed, the traditions of Osiris melt into those of Re, the “god One, who came into being in primeval time.” Just as Osiris’ followers remembered his rule on earth, so did other Egyptians recall the terrestrial reign of the Creator Re. To this age, states Lenormant, the Egyptians “continually looked back with regret and envy.” To declare the superiority of one thing above all other things imaginable, it was enough to affirm, “its like had never been seen since the days of Re.”[32]

Re, the father of the gods, reigned over the terrestrial world, but wandered away when the heavens fell into disorder. “All chronological tradition affirms that Re had once ruled over Egypt,” writes Budge, “and it is a remarkable fact that every possessor of the throne of Egypt was proved by some means or other to have the blood of Re flowing in his veins . . .”[33] But the same belief applied to Horus, the god-king *par excellence*, as well as Atum, Khepera, Ptah, and Amen. The fact which must be explained is that the memory of the creator-king and his original age of abundance was far broader than any *local* tradition.

And the story was not limited to Egypt. According to the theologian and historian Eusebius (who relates the account of the Babylonian priest-historian Berossus), the ancient tribes of Chaldea owed their civilization to a powerful and benevolent figure named Oannes, who ruled before the Deluge. Prior to Oannes, the tribes lived “without order, like the beasts.” But the new god-king, who *issued from the sea*, instructed mankind in writing and various arts, the formation of cities, and the founding of temples. “He also taught them the use of laws, of bounds and divisions, also the harvesting of grains and fruits, and in short all that pertains to the mollifying of life he delivered to men; and since that time nothing more has been invented by anybody.”[34]

Oannes was simply the Greek name for the Babylonian Ea (the Sumerian Enki), worshipped in the city of Eridu at the mouth of the Euphrates. The tradition dates to the earliest stage of Sumerian history, a time when the myths say that Enki and his wife Damkina governed the lost paradise of Dilmun, the “pure place” of man’s genesis.

They alone reposed in Dilmun;

---

[28] *Op. cit.*, 103.

[29] Budge, *Osiris; the Egyptian Religion of Resurrection*, 1-23.

[30] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 131.

[31] Of Osiris Budge writes, “His Body formed the circle of the Tuat . . . Osiris enshrined within himself all the cosmic gods or gods of nature.” *From Fetish to God*, 183.

[32] *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, 58.

[33] *Gods*, Vol. I, 329.

[34] Quoted in *The Cambridge Ancient History*, Vol. I, Part 2, 102.

Where Enki and his wife reposed,

That place was pure, that place was clean . . .

In Dilmun the raven croaked not.

The kite shrieked not kite-like.

The lion mangled not.

The wolf ravaged not the lambs.[35]

The inhabitants of this paradise lived in a state of near perfection, drinking the waters of life and enjoying unbounded prosperity.

Ruling over this favoured domain, Enki introduced civilization to mankind, founded the first cities and temples, and set down the first laws.

If, in the account of Berossus, the bringer of civilization appears as a man (or part man, part fish), the earlier accounts call him the creator. His home was the cosmic sea Apsu, the celestial waters of "fire, rage, splendour and terror."[36] The priests of Ea or Enki deemed him *Mummu*, the creative "Word." Like the Egyptian creator, Enki brought forth the secondary gods through his own speech.

Diverse localities worshipped the same cosmic power under different names. In the ancient city of Lagash the priests honoured the god Ninurta as the father of the paradisal age. Ninurta founded temples and cities; the years of his rule, connected with the beginning of the world, were "years of plenty."

Ninurta—scaled the mountain and scattered seed far and wide,

And the plants with one accord named him as their king.[37]

The Sumerians themselves knew that Ninurta was the same as the "vegetation god" Damuzi (or Tammuz), "son of the Apsu"—the shepherd of mankind whom classical mythology knew as Adonis and whose catastrophic departure or death became the focus of ritual lamentations for many hundreds of years.

But Enki, Ninurta, and Damuzi were only aspects of the creator An, whose ideogram (as previously noted) appears as the earliest Mesopotamian sign of divinity. In all the myths and temple hymns, the Sumerians distinguish the present age from "that day," or "the days of old," when the gods "gave man abundance, the day when vegetation flourished."[38] The supreme figure reigning over this remote age was AN, the central and highest light, whose foremost epithet was *lugal*, "king." The Sumerians claimed that the very institution of kingship descended from "the heaven of An." It was An who produced the beneficent age—"when the destiny was fixed for everything that was engendered (by An), when An engendered the year of abundance."[39]

How widespread was this memory of a Golden Age, foundered and governed by the creator himself? It appears that the tradition was either preserved in or migrated to every section of the world. In Mexico, legends recount the ancient rule of Quetzalcoatl, who appeared from the sea to become the good and wise ruler of Tollan, in the Golden Age of Anahuac. The legend describes the god as a "lawgiver, teacher of the arts, and founder of purified religion."[40] He was the "Ancestral Founding King," and all later Toltec kings considered themselves his direct descendants.[41] Of Quetzalcoatl the Toltecs sang:

---

[35] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 194.

[36] *Ibid.*, 105.

[37] *Ibid.*, 119.

[38] Van Dijk, *op. cit.*, 16*ff.*

[39] *Ibid.*, 23. Van Dijk writes (p. 32): "Cette pensée que le jour de l'origine est devenu le prototype des autres jours où, tant dans la mythologie que dans l'histoire sumérienne, de grandes catastrophes se sont produites, se trouve perpétuée dans l'expression . . . comme dans les temps lointains."

All the arts of the Toltecs,
their knowledge, everything came from Quetzalcoatl.
The Toltecs were wealthy,
their foodstuffs, their sustenance, cost nothing.
They say that the squash
were big and heavy . . .
And those Toltecs were very rich,
they were very happy;
There was no poverty or sadness.
Nothing was lacking in their houses,
There was no hunger among them . . .[42]

In the story of Quetzalcoatl one finds the same confusion of man and god as in the legends of Egypt and Mesopotamia. The chronicler Sahagun writes, "Although this Quetzalcoatl had been a man they respected him as a god."[43] Indeed, he was the creator, for "He made the heavens, the sun, the earth."[44] The Toltecs claim that in the beginning their race knew only one god:

Only one god did they have,
and they held him as the
only god, they invoked him,
they supplicated him; his name
was Quetzalcoatl.[45]

Not only was Quetzalcoatl the "Giver of Life"; the legend proclaims that the first divine generation emanated directly from him. But eventually the god (like his counterparts around the world) suffered a violent fate, bringing to an end his Golden Age. To the Egyptian, Mesopotamian, and American Indian accounts of the remote epoch correspond numerous legends of India, Iran, China, and northern Europe:

India

The Hindu Brahma, Yama, Vishnu, and Manu converge as representatives of a solitary supreme god and creator governing a lost paradise as the first king, setting forth the first moral codes, and imparting to mankind the fundamentals of civilization. Yama appears as the "universal lord"; Manu, as the "king of the world" or "universal legislator," to whom later monarchs traced their lineage.[46]

---

[40] Alexander, *Latin American Mythology*, 66.

[41] Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 195. Burland, *The Gods of Mexico*, 33, 47.

[42] León-Portilla, *Pre-Columbian Literatures of Mexico*, 40-41.

[43] Quoted in Burland, *op. cit.*, 149.

[44] Alexander, *op. cit.*, 69.

[45] Perry, *op. cit.*, 196.

[46] Guenon, *Le Roi du Monde*, 13*ff.* Perry, *op cit.*, 126*ff.*

"In the beginning," say the Upanishads, "there arose the Golden Child. As soon as born he alone was lord of all that is."[47] This was Brahma, the "god One." His prosperous epoch, however, ended in his own death and a world-destroying conflagration.

Iran

Yima, the Iranian transcript of the Hindu Yama, is the patriarchal lord of mankind, the "brilliant Yima" who first introduced law and civilization to the world. His age knew "neither cold nor heat . . . neither age nor death." So resplendent was his rule that "the world assembled round his throne in wonder." But then (when Yima diverged from the path of justice), the Glory fled from his kingdom, and he was put to death. Thereupon, the eternal spring became a devastating winter.[48]

China

In the earliest age, according to ancient Chinese lore, the purest pleasure and tranquillity reigned throughout all nature. Mankind suffered neither hunger, nor pain, nor sorrow. "The whole creation enjoyed a state of happiness . . . , and things grew without labour; and a universal fertility prevailed." It was over just such a paradise that the "Yellow Emperor" Huang-ti ruled. Considered the father of the Taoist religion, Huang-ti was the creator, a universal lawmaker and founder of arts and civilization. He was also a mortal, and his fruitful era vanished upon his death.[49]

Northern Europe

During the "peace of Frodi," a mythical Danish king, no man injured another and a magical mill ground out peace and plenty for the entire land. Frodi is the Norse god Frey, founder of temples and religious rites, the "generous lord under whom peace and fruitfulness abounded," both the "lord of the Swedes" and "god of the world." In the footsteps of the Scandinavian Odin (the creator) well-being, peace, and good seasons followed. The legends style him the first king, the "inventor of arts," and the source of human wisdom. But the age of Frey dissolved in flames, just as Odin and his prosperous kingdom came crashing down in the fires of Ragnarok.[50]

Here then, is a world-wide motif, deeply ingrained in the religious and historical records of all principal races. "The idea of the Edenic happiness of the first human beings constitutes one of the universal traditions," states Lenormant.[51] Ministering over this age is the Universal Monarch. While extolled as the solitary supreme god and the creator of the world, he yet appears as a ruler on earth, the ancestor of terrestrial kings. By his teaching mankind rose from barbarianism. But in the end the god met a catastrophic fate, and his death or departure brought a violent termination of the first world order.

The Rites Of Kingship

The ritual surrounding ancient kings amounts to a summary of ancient beliefs about the Universal Monarch, for every local sovereign was the successor and representative of the great god who ruled the world during the Golden Age. The rites of kingship testify to the enormous power which the collective memory of this god-king held over later generations. Chronicles of kingship from Egypt, to Mesopotamia, to Persia, to China, to Italy, to northern Europe, to pre-Columbian Mexico all trace the line of kings back to the first king, a supreme cosmic deity who "founded" the kingship rites.

---

[47] Fluegel, *Philosophy, Qabbala and Vedanta*, Vol. I, 179. Of Vishnu, the inscription on the famous Iron Pillar of Delhi declares, "The beauty of that king's countenance was as that of the full moon [candra];—by him, with his own arm, sole world-wide dominion was acquired and long held; and although, as if wearied, he has in bodily form quitted this earth, and passed to the other-world country won by his merit, yet, like the embers of a quenched fire in a great forest, the glow of his foe-destroying energy quits not the earth . . . " Vincent A. Smith, "The Iron Pillar of Delhi," 6.

[48] Carnoy, *Iranian mythology*, 304-5; Darmesteter, *The Zend-Avesta*, lxv, lxxxviii, 10-11.

[49] Faber, *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol. II, 139; Ferguson, *Chinese Mythology*, 21.

[50] Davidson, *Gods and Myths of Northern Europe*, 92*ff*., 56, 202*ff*.; MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 32, 39, 113-14, 133.

[51] *Les Origines de l'Histoire*, Vol. I, 58.

"When history begins there are kings, the representatives of the gods," states Hocart.[52] No greater mistake could be made by historians than to assume that the sovereignty of kings grew out of economic or material concerns. Instead, the crucial forces were religious. The king was a product of ancient ritual, and the ritual centered in cosmic beliefs which, for several millennia, could not be shaken loose. To comprehend the mighty influence of kingship in the ancient world one must penetrate the mystery of the king's prototype, the Universal Monarch.

In the first king's life and rule originated the prerogatives and obligations of all local sovereigns. It was the duty of every king to perform the rites instituted by the great god in the beginning, and to renew, if only symbolically, the primordial era of peace and plenty.

In the ritual, the king turns the wheel of law first turned by the great god, rides on the god's own cosmic ship, takes as spouse the great mother (mistress of the great father), builds temples and cities patterned after the god's celestial abode, and subdues the forces of darkness (barbarians), just as the god defeated chaos in the beginning. Whatever the marvels of the great father, it is the duty of each local king to repeat them, or at least ritually to reenact these accomplishments as if he were the great god himself.

In his study of kingship in Egypt, Henri Frankfort tells us that *the great god was the first king*: "Whether named Re, Khepri or Atum, he is the prototype of Pharaoh, and the texts abound in phrases drawing the comparison."[53] To certify his authority as a successor of the Universal Monarch, the king credits himself with having introduced an age of abundance like that of the ancestral sovereign. Thus, Thutmose III not only sits "upon the throne of Atum," but claims to have achieved "what had not been done since the time of Re" and to have restored conditions "as they were in the beginning."[54] Amenhotep III strives "to make the country flourish as in primeval times"[55]

Similarly, when the Sumerian king Dungi ascended the throne, the people supposed that a champion had arisen to restore the Paradise which existed before the Flood (but was lost through transgression).[56] Each king, states Alfred Jeremias, was expected to reproduce the wonders of the great god, the primeval king.[57] Thus does Assurbanipal proclaim that upon his ascension to the throne "Ramman has sent forth his rain—the harvest was plentiful, the corn was abundant—the cattle multiplied exceedingly."[58]

Among the Hebrews, "Every king is a Messiah, and at times the hope is expressed that the king will introduce a new Golden Age."[59] Such is the test of the *just* or *good* ruler, who brings prosperity and a fruitful earth. This belief, which seems to have held sway over the entire ancient world, receives insufficient attention from historians: it points directly to the extraordinary memory of the Universal Monarch.

---

[52] *Kingship*, 7.

[53] *Op. cit.*, 148.

[54] *Ibid.*, 149.

[55] *Ibid.*, 51.

[56] Canney, "Ancient Conceptions of Kingship," 74n.

[57] "Aus dem Anspruch des Gottkönigtums ergibt sich der des Weltimperiums. Der Heros Ninib wird in einem zweisprachigen Text als König eingeführt, dessen Herrschaft bis an die Grenzen Himmels und der Erde leuchten soll . . . Dasselbe gilt vom historischen König. Naramsin besteigt als Eroberer den Weltberg. Wie jeder Kult als kosmisch gilt, so wird jede Stadt, jedes Land, jedes Reich als Kosmos angesehen. Nicht die Grösse des Territoriums, sondern die Idee ist massgebend. Auch ein Stadtkonig nennt sich in diesem Sinne lugal kalama, 'Weltkönig.' Die Länderbezeichnungen und Königstitel sind in diesem Sinne kosmisch gemeint: šar kibrât irbitti 'König der vier Weltteile,' šar kissati 'König des Weltalls.'" *Handbuch*, 178.

[58] Eliade, *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 405.

[59] Canney, *op. cit.*, 74.

Consider: Homer gives as the ideal "a blameless king whose fame goes up to the wide heaven, maintaining right, and the black earth bears wheat and barley and the trees are laden with fruit, and the sheep bring forth and fail not, and the sea hives store of fish, and all from his good guidance, and the people prosper."[60]

Can this be anything other than the lost age of Kronos? Why should a fertile soil confirm the *righteousness* of kings? The connection becomes clear once one takes the Universal Monarch as more than an esoteric fiction and recognizes him as the shaping force behind the ideals of kingship. Just as peace and plenty followed in the footsteps of the first (ideal, "good") king, they should follow those of his successors who share in the charisma of the great predecessor.

"The further we go back in history," observes Jung, "the more evident does the king's divinity become . . . In the Near East the whole essence of kingship was based far more on theological than on political considerations . . . it was self-evident that the king was the magical source of welfare and prosperity for the entire organic community of man, animal, and plant; from him flowed the life and prosperity of his subjects, the increase of the herds, and the fertility of the land."[61] This image of the local king is drawn directly from the image of the Universal Monarch.

Thus did every ancient ruler call himself the "king of the world" and claim to radiate power and light. Thompson tells us that the Mayan ruler declared himself "as something like King of Kings, ruler of the world, regent on earth of the great Itzam Na . . . a sort of divine right of kings which would have turned James I green with envy."[62] What Thompson calls an "inflated notion of grandeur" seems to characterize all ancient kings (who "shine like the sun" and direct the heavenly motions); but the reason must be appreciated: every king was, in a magical way, the Universal Monarch reborn. *The institution and ritual of kingship point to the same great god and the same Golden Age as do the myths of cosmic beginnings.*

In what historical conditions did this collective memory originate? And if the Universal Monarch governed the entire heavens as the god One, why was he called an "ancestor"?

The Heaven Man

So vivid was the great father's celestial image and so overpowering was his influence on civilization in its infancy, that the ancient chroniclers often gave him human form, recalling him as the "first man." But he was no mortal of flesh and blood. In his original character he upheld the Cosmos as the Heaven Man, a celestial giant whose body encompassed all the gods and composed the "primeval matter" of creation.

The great father reigned over the prosperous age and then departed amid great upheavals. The mythical accounts give this imposing figure such tangible and "human" traits that more than one scholar reduces him to a living man—an esteemed tribal ancestor whose heroic exploits succeeding generations progressively enlarged until the entire universe came under his authority.

This is the approach of William Ridgeway, who, in a survey of the best-known figures of the great father, argues that only an actual tribal chief could have left such a profound imprint on primitive communities. Ridgeway asks us whether the abstract "sky," or the solar orb, or a vegetation spirit—common explanations of the great father—could produce such devotion as is evident in the annual lamentations over the ruler's catastrophic death. Osiris, Brahma, Tammuz, Quetzalcoatl—their devotees remember each as a living ancestor, whose passing was a terrifying calamity.[63]

---

[60] Ridgeway, *Dramas and Dramatic Dances of Non-European Races*, 6. Compare the role of the Irish king: "Prosperity was supposed to characterize every good king's reign in Ireland, perhaps pointing to earlier belief in his divinity and the dependence of fertility on him; but the result is precisely that which everywhere marked the golden age." MacCulloch, *Celtic Mythology*, 137-38.

[61] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 258.

[62] J. Eric and S. Thompson, *Maya History and Religion*, 232.

Of course Ridgeway does not assume that one man alone accounts for all the traditions of a great father. Rather he seeks to identify each in terms of a historical figure quite distinct from the venerated ancestors of other tribes. If his arguments against prevailing astronomical and vegetation theories carry great weight, they fail to explain the global parallel between the respective myths. Nor can one reconcile Ridgeway's interpretation with the incontrovertible fact that, in the earliest accounts, the great father is manifestly *cosmic.*

That many sacred histories, however, present the creator-king in human form is a paradox requiring an explanation. The solution lies in the nature of the legendary "first man."

Who Was Adam?

If one compares the traditions of Adam with the global image of the great father there can be little doubt that this primal ancestor was simply a special form of the Universal Monarch. According to Hebrew legends Adam's stature was so great that he extended from earth to the centre of heaven.[64] His countenance obscured the sun.[65] Like the Universal Monarch, "Adam was lord on earth, to rule and control it,"[66] teaching his subjects the first arts and sciences.[67] The myths say that terrestrial creatures "took him to be their creator, and they all came to offer him adoration."[68] While the chroniclers call this a "mistake," substantial evidence shows that the tradition pertained more to a god than a man.

In Gnostic and other mystic systems Adam is not a mortal but a cosmic being whose body contained the seed of all later creation. As observed by G.G. Scholem, summarizing the traditions of the Hebrew Kabala, Adam—or *Adam Qadmon*—is the "primordial man," that is, "a vast representation of the power of the universe," which is concentrated in him.[69] This Adam is a "man of light" occupying the centre of the Cosmos and radiating energy along the axis of the universe. He is creator and supporter of the world, whose body encloses all the elements of life.[70]

Islamic mystics called Adam "the universal man" or "the perfect man" upholding the cosmos.[71] To the Ophites of the early Christian era, he was Adamas, "the man from on high" or, in the words of Lenormant, "the typical perfect man, that is, the heavenly prototype of 'man.'" In one of the cosmogonic fragments preserved in the extracts of Sanchuniathon (as recorded by Philo of Byblos) Adam is born at the beginning of all things and is identical with the Greek *ouranos*, "heaven."[72] The modern day Mandaeans of Iraq know Adam as the "King of the Universe," a personification of all that spiritual man is intended to be and achieve.[73]

---

[63] Ridgeway, *The Origin of Tragedy*; and *Dramas and Dramatic Dances*.

[64] Graves and Patai, *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis*, 61; Ginzberg, *The legends of the Jews*, Vol. I, 59.

[65] Ginzberg, *op. cit.*, 60.

[66] *The Book of the Secrets of Enoch* 31:3, in Charles, *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the old Testament*, Vol. II, 450.

[67] Jung, *op. cit.*, 398-99.

[68] Ginzberg, *op. cit.*, 64; Graves and Patai, *op. cit.*, 62.

[69] Quoted in Cirlot, *A Dictionary of Symbols*, 4.

[70] "Adam-Kadmon ist nach der Kabbala der erste Mensch, der Urmensch, die erste aus dem Unendlichen, der absoluten Vollkommenheit (En Sof), unmittelbar hervorgehende Emanation, in der ältesten hebräischen Mystik Gott selber." Schwabe, *Archetyp und Tierkreis*, 9.

[71] "El insânul-qadim, c'est-à-dire l'Homme primordial,' est, en arabe, une des désignations de l''Homme universel' (synonyme d'El-insânul-kamil, qui est littéralement l''Homme parfait' on total); c'est exactement l'Adam Qadmon hébraique." Guenon, *Formes Traditionelles et Cycles Cosmiques*, 64n.

This, of course, sounds almost exactly like the primordial god One of global legend. Indeed, *in the myths of many lands the first man and creator-king are identical.* Though the Hindu Yama and his counterpart Manu appear as the creator and king of the world, they also signify the primal ancestor. Their character as first man, however, does not mean flesh and blood. They are the *celestial prototypes*, notes Lenormant, symbolic of "man" in general.[74]

The role of the Hindu Yama is filled in Persian myth not only by Yima, but also by Gaya Maretan, a legendary first king, a man of perfect purity, "produced brilliant and white, radiant and tall."[75] He, too, "appears as the prototype of mankind."[76]

Many myths make no distinction between the creator and first man. The Oceanic Tiki "is at once the first man, and the creator or progenitor of man."[77] Among the Koryak the creator of the world is also "the first man, the father and protector of the Koryak."[78] The Assiniboin, a North American Siouan tribe, say that it was the First Man who brought the World out of the primeval water. ". . . They also say of the First Man, the Creator, that no one made him, and that he is immortal."[79]

The Altaic Tatars similarly speak of a World Man or First Man. In the creation myths he doubles for god himself and raises the World from the cosmic waters.[80] Comparable is the World Man of the Laps,[81] or the Lonely Man whom the Yakuts deem the first ancestor and whose dwelling pierced the summit of heaven.[82]

If the general tradition be our guide, Adam is the solitary god of beginnings, presented in human form. This was the opinion of the controversial Gerald Massey, who, enchanted by the depth of Egyptian cosmology, proposed that the Hebrew Adam echoed the older Egyptian Atum, the god who shone forth alone in the Abyss.[83] It matters little whether the relationship of the two figures is as direct as Massey suggested. Throughout the ancient world the original god One passed into the legendary first ancestor.

---

[72] "Les Ophites ou Nahasséniens, dans les premiers siècles du christianisme, avaient adopté cette idée due Adam Qadmon dans leur Adamas . . . qu'ils appelaient 'l'Homme d'en haut,' traduction exacte du titre de la Kabbale, 'l'Adam supérieur.' A leur tour, les Barbélonites, qui étaient une branché dérivée des Ophites, disaient que Logos et Ennoia, par leur concours, avaient produit Autogénes (Qadmon), type de la grande lumière et entouré de quatre luminaires cosmique . . . Remarquons que dans un des morceaux cosmogoniques, cousus maladroitement les uns au bout des autres, que nous offrent les extraits du Sanchoniathon de Philon de Byblos, tels que nous les possédons, Epigeios ou Autochthon, c'est-à-dire Âdâm (avec la mème allusion a adâmâth que dans le texte de la Genèse), nait à l'orignine des choses due dieu supreme 'Elioûn, et est identique à Ouranos . . . " Lenormant, *Les Origines de l'Histoire*, 41n.

[73] Drower, *The Coronation of the Great Šišlam*, IX.

[74] Lenormant, *Les Origines De l'Histoire*, 170.

[75] Carnoy, *op. cit.*, 293*ff.*

[76] Dresden, "Mythology of Ancient Iran," 342.

[77] Dixon, *Oceanic Mythology*, 23-27.

[78] Hocart, *Kings and Councilors*, 53.

[79] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 105-6.

[80] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 316.

[81] De Santillana and von Dechend, *Hamlet's Mill*, 130.

[82] Uno Holmberg, *Der Baum des Lebens*, 59-60.

[83] *Ancient Egypt*, Vol. I, 437-38.

As the creative intelligence and voice (Word) of heaven, the great father came to be viewed as the *thinking* and *speaking* "man"—a towering giant whose *body* was the original Cosmos. Both Atum and the later Adam possess this distinctive character as Heaven Man, but certain developments of the idea stand out:

1. In the Egyptian version of the myth the great god (Atum-Re), through tumultuous "speech," brings forth a circle of subordinate gods as satellites revolving in his company and forming his own limbs. The central god and his revolving members compose the primordial cosmos (Heaven, World). The crucial term is *paut*, "primeval matter," referring to the material emitted by Atum, which took form as the Cosmos. Paut is equivalent to the Khu or fiery "words of power" uttered by the great god. The term signifies at once the "circle" of the gods and the "body" of Atum-Re. Which is to say:

Cosmos=Company of Gods=Creator's Limbs, Body.

That the created Cosmos emanated from the primordial god is a theme which persisted in later traditions of Adam. From Adam Qadmon sprang successive degrees of creation. Gnostic tradition knew Adam as the *prima materia* of the Cosmos[84]—a remarkable parallel to the Egyptian primeval matter, the limbs of Atum-Re.

The great god's body embraces and is "heaven"—not only in Egyptian but in all principal cosmologies. Like Atum, the Sumerian An encompasses "the entire heaven"; indeed, his very name signifies "heaven," and one can trace the equation of "god" and "heaven" (or "shining heaven") through all of the ancient languages. The Chinese *tien* signifies both the high god and "heaven," as does the Altaic *tengri.* The Sanskrit dyaus (Latin deus) carries the double meaning "god" and "heaven." It is useless to look to the open sky for an explanation of this equivalence. Originally, "heaven" meant the organized Cosmos (or body) of the god One, formed by the circle of lesser gods. The myths unanimously insist that this celestial order collapsed with the death of the great god, the Heaven Man.

2. The all-embracing character of the great father facilitated an important development of the god's image at a time when cultural mixture could have destroyed the "monotheistic" theme. In ancient Egypt almost every district seems to have had its favoured representative of the god One, a fact which gives the great compendiums of Egyptian religion (*Pyramid Texts*, etc.) a misleading appearance of confusion. How can we speak of a *solitary* god when Egyptian texts refer to an endless number of primary deities?

In more than one locality the priests themselves at least partially resolved the problem by adopting alien gods as the *limbs* of the local great god—a process obviously encouraged by the preexisting image of the god as Heaven Man. This habit was widespread in Egypt and occurred as early as the *Pyramid Texts*, which assimilate a number of once-independent gods into the body of Atum:

Your head is Horus of the Netherworld, O Imperishable . . .

Your nose is the Jackal [*Ap-uat*],

Your teeth are Sopd, O Imperishable,

Your hands are Hapy and Duamutef . . .

Your feet are Imsety and Kebhsenuf . . . etc.[85]

A hymn from the *Papyrus of Ani* similarly honours Osiris:

The hair of Osiris Ani is the hair of Nu.

The face of Osiris Ani is the face of Re.

The eyes of Osiris Ani are the eyes of Hathor.

The ears of Osiris Ani are the ears of Ap-uat.

---

[84] Jung, *op. cit.*, 385, 409.

[85] *Pyramid Text* 148-49. "Man kann hier wohl sogar soweit gehen dass alle anderen Götter in Atum beschlossen sind," Writes L. Grevan, *Der Ka in Theologie unb Königskult der Ägypter des Alten Reichs*, 15.

The lips of Osiris Ani are the lips of Anpu . . .[86]

In almost the same words, the *Papyrus of Nu* joins the divinities Osiris, Ptah, Anpu, Hathor, Horus, Isis, and others to the body of Re.[87] In the Memphite theology Atum, Horus, Thoth, and the company of gods became the limbs of Ptah.[88] Syncretization of this sort, though appearing absurd to us today, actually helped to preserve the original idea against the eroding forces of cultural assimilation. Faced with a growing number of competing deities, the priests proclaimed: there was only one great god in the beginning, whose body encompassed a circle of subordinate deities.

3. In a subsequent development of the myth, the Heaven Man passed into a mythical-philosophical explanation of our Earth and the material universe as a whole. Here the god appears as a primordial giant who existed before the Deluge and gave his body to creation—not the creation of the primordial Cosmos, but of *our* world with its mountains, seas, clouds, and surrounding heavenly bodies.

A noteworthy example is the Scandinavian primeval giant Ymir. In the *Prose Edda* the gods fashion "the world" from the giant's body—"from his blood the sea and lakes, from his flesh the earth, from his bones the mountains." His teeth become rocks and pebbles, his skull the sky, and his brains the clouds. The sparks and burning embers produced by his dismemberment become the stars.[89]

Compare the Hindu giant Purusha, whose body formed the world: "His mouth was the Brahman, . . . his two thighs the Vaisya; from his two feet the Sudra was born. The moon was born from his mind; from his eye the sun was born. From his navel was produced the air; from his head the sky was evolved; from his two feet the earth; from his ears the quarters."[90]

Purusha is the Primal Man. In Buddhist lore this cosmic giant is Bodhisattva Manjucri; elsewhere in China the role belongs to the demiurge Pan-Ku, whose body provides the material for creation.[91] The Zoroastrians claimed that the created world was the giant Spihr ("Cosmos"), the body of the great god Zurvan.[92] All such heaven-sustaining giants can be best understood by reference to the original Cosmos of the god One, rather than the open expanse to which the term "heaven" normally refers today.

4. If the giant myths emphasized the material form of the Heaven Man, an age of metaphysics stressed the god's character as universal intelligence, raising his image to a high degree of philosophical purity. The god One became the First Principle, First Cause, Mind, Word, or Self (*logos*, *nous*, *sophia*, *tao*, etc.). Yet in none of these cases did detached philosophy succeed in creating a pure abstraction. The Greek *nous*, the animating "Mind" or "Intelligent Spirit," was never fully divorced from the antecedent tradition of the Heaven Man. Both Eusebius and Syncellus identify the great Mind with Prometheus, the Primordial Man who lived before the Deluge.[93] In Orphic description of the universal Mind it is hardly distinguishable from the Hindu giant Purusha: ". . . All things were contained within the vast womb of the god. Heaven was his head: the bright beams of the stars were his radiant locks . . . The all-productive earth was his sacred womb: the circling ocean was his belt . . . ; his body, the universe, was radiant, immovable, eternal; and the pure ether was his intellectual soul, the mighty Nous, by which he pervades, animates, preserves, and governs, all things."[94]

---

[86] Budge, *Gods*, Vol.I, 111.

[87] *Ibid.*

[88] Clark, *Myth and Symbol*, 61-63.

[89] Sturluson, *The Prose Edda*.

[90] Zaehner, *Zurvan: A Zoroastrian Dilemma*, 137.

[91] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 372.

[92] Zaehner, *op. cit.*, 140.

[93] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 172.

Nous was the primordial One, from which all things emanated—the central light which produced and regulated the Cosmos (body). An exactly equivalent notion was the Hindu Universal Self. Here the original concept certainly did not mean "invisible soul" or anything like it. The cosmic Self was Brahma or Prajapati, the "Golden Child" who appeared alone on the first occasion. "In the beginning," say the *Upanishads*, "Prajapati stood alone."[95]

The same texts say, "In the beginning there was Self alone." From the primordial Self, enclosing all the life elements, issued the creation in successive degrees. "From the Self sprang ether; from ether, air; from air, fire; from fire, water" . . . etc.[96] (Adam Qadmon radiated the elements in similar fashion.)

Hindu thought portrays the Universal Self as the first form (and the animating soul) of the Heaven Man. "In the beginning this universe was nothing but the self in the form of a man. It looked around and saw that there was nothing but itself, whereupon its first shout was 'It is I!'; whence the concept 'I' arose." Then the Self "poured forth" the creation. The created World (Cosmos), in Hindu myth, took form as the *giant Purusha*, recognized as the body of Prajapati-Brahma (Self).

Numerous traditions view the emanation or pouring out of creation as the great god's "speech." This is the root meaning of the Greek and Hebrew "Word," which signify, really, "*visible* speech." (The Chinese *tao*, the primeval unity or First Cause, also conveys the idea "to speak.") "By the *word* of the Lord the heavens were made," states the Hebrew Psalmist (Ps. 33:6). "This idea of the creative Word of God," observes John Allegro, "came to have a profound philosophical and religious importance and was, and still is, the subject of much metaphysical debate. *But originally it was not an abstract notion; you could see the 'Word of God.'*" [Emphasis added.] In the Hebrew creation legend the "speech" of the creator is *poured out* as "spittle" or "seed." "The most forceful spurting of this 'seed' is accompanied by thunder and the shrieking wind."[97] The imagery takes us back to the thundering voice of Atum.

In most creation legends and certainly in the Egyptian and Sumerian prototypes, the great father, his life-bearing rays, his voice (word), and the company of gods (limbs)—all appear as powers *seen* and *heard.* The god is the celestial "Man" whose history became the overwhelming obsession of ancient ritual. Residing at the stationary centre—the domain which the Egyptians called *Maat* ("truth" or "wisdom") and the Mesopotamians denominated Apsu (residence of "wisdom")—the god commanded the cosmic revolutions. He was, in short, the creative "intelligence," producing a new and harmonious celestial order. Thus was the Heaven Man the *ideal* man and the *ideal* king.

The Great Father Saturn

The lost epoch of peace and plenty was the age of the planet Saturn. Ancient myths and rites present Saturn as the god One, the first king, and the all-encompassing Heaven Man.

Adam, the first ancestor, presided over a garden of abundance. Among the Hebrews such sacred occasions as the Sabbath and Jubilee commemorated this original state of man and the world, when Adam ruled Eden and the land produced freely without human effort. The Greek celebration of the *Kronia* similarly hearkened back to the lost Golden Age of Kronos. The parallel was no coincidence: Adam *was* Kronos, in human form.

---

[94] *Ibid.*, 42.

[95] Fluegel, *op. cit.*, k203-4.

[96] *Ibid.*, 202.

[97] Allegro, *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross*, 21.

What the Greeks called the *Kronia*, celebrating the fortunate era of Kronos, the Latins termed the *Saturnalia*, a symbolic renewal of the *Saturnia regna* or reign of the planet Saturn. In the mystic heritage Saturn is the Universal Monarch, whose prosperous age all ancient people sought to recover.

These are the words with which James G. Frazer summarizes the Latin tradition:

> [Saturn] *lived on earth long ago as a righteous and beneficent king of Italy, drew the rude and scattered dwellers on the mountains together, taught them to till the ground, gave them laws, and ruled in peace. His reign was the fabled Golden Age: the earth brought forth abundantly: no sound of war or discord troubled the happy world: no baleful love of lucre worked like poison in the blood of the industrious and contented peasantry. Slavery and private property were alike unknown: all men had all things in common. At last the good king, the kindly king, vanished suddenly; but his memory was cherished to distant ages, shrines were reared in his honour, and many hills and high places in Italy bore his name.*[98]

The Latin poet Ovid knew the tradition well:

The first millenium was the age of gold;

Then living creatures trusted one another;

People did well without the thought of ill:

Nothing forbidden in the book of laws,

No fears, no prohibitions read in bronze,

Or in the sculpted face of judge and master . . .

No brass-lipped trumpets called, nor clanging swords

Nor helmets marched the streets, country and town

Had never heard of war: and seasons traveled

Through the years of peace. The innocent earth

Learned neither spade nor plough;

she gave her Riches as fruit hangs from the tree; grapes

Dropping from the vine, cherry, strawberry

Ripened in silver shadows of the mountain,

And in the shade of Jove's miraculous tree

The falling acorn, Springtide the single

Season of the year.[99]

But then, states Ovid, "old Saturn fell to Death's dark country." There is not a race on earth that forgot this cataclysmic event—the death of Saturn, the Universal Monarch; or the fall of Adam, the Heaven Man. And peoples the world over, for thousands of years, awaited the full turn of Time's wheel, when Saturn's kingdom would appear again to rescue the world from a decadent age of Iron (the present age, marking the lowest of the descending ages after the *Golden Age*). The powerful memory of Saturn's age gave rise to a prophesied return, as announced in the famous lines of Virgil:

> *Now is come the last age of the Cumean prophecy: the great cycle of periods is born anew. Now returns the Maid, returns the reign of Saturn: now from high heaven descends a new generation. And O holy goddess of*

---

[98] Frazer, *The Golden Bough*, abridged edition, 675.

[99] Ovid, *The Metamophoses*, 33-34.

childbirth Lucina, do thou be gracious at the boy's birth in whom the Iron race shall begin to cease and the Golden to arise all over the world . . .[100]

That Saturn governed the Golden Age is a supreme tenet of the ancient mysteries. This is why the most sacred day of the week, commemorating the primordial era, was dedicated to Saturn. The Hebrew Sabbath, the seventh day of the week, was the day of Saturn, as was the seventh day of the Babylonian and Phoenician weeks.[101] For the Romans the seventh day was *Saturni dies*, "Saturn's day." This was the Anglo-Saxon "day of Seater [Saturn]," which, of course, became our Saturday.

The archaic god One, the father of all the gods, was not the solar orb, not the "open sky," but the planet Saturn. "Saturn possessed the double property of being the forefather of all other planetary gods, and of having his seat in the highest heaven," write R. Klibansky, E. Panofsky, and R. Saxl in their study of *Saturn and Melancholy.*[102] The tradition was maintained with striking consistency from its early expressions in Sumero-Babylonian religion through the age of medieval astrology.

On the subject of Mesopotamian religion and astronomy, three widely respected researchers are Peter Jensen, Alfred Jeremias, and Stephen Langdon. A survey of their works will reveal these conclusions concerning the identity of the great god in Mesopotamia: An, the oldest and highest of the Sumero-Babylonian gods, whose primordial age was "the year of abundance," signified Saturn, according to Jensen.[103] The same verdict is tacitly maintained by Jeremias and Langdon, who identify the great god Ninurta as *both the planet Saturn and a form of Anu.*[104] The shepherd Tammuz was likewise Saturn, according to Jeremias.[105] And one can add the well-known fact that the Sumerian Enki (Babylonian Ea, the Oannes of Berossus) came to be translated Kronos (Saturn) by the Greeks.[106]

The identity of the creator-king as the planet Saturn seems to occur throughout the ancient world. The Canaanite (and Hebrew) El—closely corresponding to the Sumero-Babylonian An—was Saturn.[107] The Hindu Manu, the king of the world, was *Satyavratta*, the planet Saturn.[108] Collitz tells us that Yima, the Iranian transcript of the Hindu Yama, god of the Golden Age, likewise denoted Saturn.[109] The Zoroastrians knew Saturn as the heaven-sustaining Zurvan, "the King and Lord of the Long Dominion."[110] The Chinese Huang-ti, mythical founder of the Taoist religion, "is acknowledged to be Saturn."[111] Even the Tahitians say of Fetu-tea, the planet Saturn, that he "was the King."[112]

---

[100] Quoted in Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, 322-23.

[101] Hildegard and Julius Lewy, "The Origin of the Week and the Oldest West Asiatic Calendar."

[102] Faber *op cit.*, Vol. II, 235; Klibansky, Panofsky, and Saxl, *Saturn and Melancholy*, 152.

[103] *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 136-37.

[104] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 55; Jermias, *Handbuch*, 137, 278.

[105] *Handbuch*, 92, 137.

[106] O'Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 77.

[107] Patai, *The Hebrew Goddess*, 32-33; Faber, *op. cit.*, 223.

[108] Faber, *op. cit.*, 491; Grimm, *Teutonic Mythology*, 248-49n.

[109] "Konig Yima and Saturn," 95aff.

[110] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 778-79.

[111] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 129.

[112] Makemson, *The Morning Star Rises*, 47*ff.*

In classical thought Saturn is the primordial *satus*, "seed," from which the Cosmos sprang; the mind or cause which brought forth the original creation; the universal source of water, fertility, and vegetation; and father Time, the regulator of the cosmic cycle.113

It was Saturn who, before retiring to the nether realm, *dwelt on earth*, establishing his rule over the entire world. An Orphic fragment declares: "Orpheus reminds us that Saturn dwelt openly on earth and among men."114 Thus before the reign of Zeus, "Kronos [Saturn] ruled on this very earth," writes Dionysius of Halicarnassus.115

Saturn was the cosmic Adam, bringing forth a company of secondary deities as his own limbs. In the ancient Sumerian city of Lagash the priests deemed Saturn (Ningirsu or Ninurta) "the man whose stature filled the an-ki," the entire Cosmos.116

The Sumero-Babylonian worshippers of the planet Saturn, observes Hildegard Lewy, "conceived their god as the *embodiment of the whole universe*, the various deified astral as well as natural phenomena being imagined *as members of this divine body* and, therefore, as executors of a unique will." "The guiding idea . . . [was] the belief in the existence of only one great god."117

To preserve "the strictly monotheistic principle," notes Lewy, the priests composed this hymn to Saturn (Ninurta):

O Lord, Thy face is the sky . . .

Thy two eyes, oh Lord, are the gods Enlil and Ninlil.

The lids of thy two eyes are Gula (and) Belit-ili.

The white of thy two eyes Oh Lord, are the twin (god)s Sin and Nergal.

The lashes of Thy two eyes are the radiance of the Sun god . . .

Thy chin, oh Lord, is the astral Istar.

The gods Anum and Antum are thy two lips.

*Thy tongue is the god Pabilsag . . .*118

Though the language pertains to the later-evolved imagery of the Heaven Man, it leaves no doubt that the archaic doctrine conceived Saturn's body as the entire Cosmos. *The legendary cosmic giant originated in the mythical recollections of Saturn's all-encompassing form.*

In Zoroastrian myth this celestial giant is Zurvan, widely recognized as Saturn. The mystic traditions define Zurvan as the "first principle" and the "original seed." He is, writes Zaehner, "the father of the Cosmos. From his seed proceeds the entire material Cosmos . . ."119 In the creation Zurvan provided, or emitted, the "original unformed matter" from which the wheel of the Cosmos was produced. The idea is precisely that of the Egyptian "primeval matter" or the alchemist's *prima materia*, *i.e.*, Adam, the Primordial Man.

---

113 Collitz, *op. cit.*, 102; Faber, *op. cit.*, 167; O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 778.

114 Quoted in de Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 222.

115 *Ibid.*

116 Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, 118. On the meaning of *an-ki*, usually translated "heaven and earth," see here.

117 *Origin and Significance of the Mâgen Dâwîd*," 356-57. [Emphasis added.]

118 *Ibid.*, 354-56.

119 Zaehner, *op. cit.*, 222.

The created Cosmos, say the Zoroastrian texts, took the form of an immense giant named Spihr, housing the elements of fire, wind, water, and earth. The Spihr was "the First Body," "the body of Zurvan of the Long Dominion."[120] "As the god whose body is the firmament he is the macrocosm [Cosmos as a whole] corresponding to man, the microcosm [Cosmos in miniature]," observes Zaehner. Thus did Zurvan come to be viewed as "the prototype of man," eventually acquiring human form as the first ancestor—"the origin of the human race."[121]

Saturn's identity as the Heaven Man and first ancestor occurs again and again in Gnosticism, in alchemy, and in the traditions of the Kabala. "As the first man," observes Jung, "Adam is *Homo maximus*, the Anthropos [Man *par excellence*] from whom the macrocosm arose, or who *is* the macrocosm. He is not only the prima materia but a universal soul which is also the soul of all men."[122] Saturn, Jung adds, is a *synonym* for Adam and the *prima materia*. The planet is the Philosophical Man or Original Man—"the blessed Man on high, the arch man Adamas."[123]

In the *Great Magical Papyrus of Paris*, Kronos/Saturn is "Lord of the World, *First Father.*"[124] Orphic thought identifies the primordial man Prometheus with Saturn;[125] the Lapps speak of the ancient *Waralden Olmay* or "World Man"—who "is the same as Saturnus";[126] and Norse legend identifies Saturn as the Heaven Man Kroder.[127]

All of this means simply that the primordial Cosmos originally signified the *limbs of Saturn*, a circle of secondary lights revolving in the company of the giant planet. The terms conventionally translated as "Cosmos," "heaven," "world," "universe," or "firmament" (as in the previous paragraphs) denoted the primeval celestial order of which Saturn was king and which collapsed with Saturn's fall.

The Saturn Myth Reconstructed

From the foregoing evidence a distinctive portrait of Saturn emerges. In the earliest age recalled by the ancients the planet—or proto-planet—came forth from the cosmic sea to establish dominion over the primeval Cosmos. The planet-god ruled as the solitary, central light, worshipped as the god One—the only god in the beginning.

Saturn's epoch left a memory of such impact that later generations esteemed the god as the Universal Monarch, the first and *ideal* king, during whose rule occurred the prehistoric leap from barbarianism to civilization. Throughout Saturn's era of cosmic harmony no seasonal vicissitudes threatened men with hunger or starvation, and men suffered neither labour nor war.

In the "creation" Saturn, the primal Seed, ejected the fiery material ("primeval matter"), which congealed into a circle of lesser lights (the Cosmos). The myths describe this resounding birth of the secondary gods as Saturn's "speech": Saturn was the *Word* or *voice* of heaven.

The ancients conceived Saturn as the visible intelligence bringing forth the Cosmos as his own body and regulating its revolutions. Thus was the planet denominated the Heaven Man, a being eventually recalled as the prototype of the human race—the first ancestor.

---

[120] *Ibid.*, 112.

[121] *Ibid.*, 112-113, 136.

[122] Jung, *op. cit.*, 409.

[123] *Ibid.*, 409, 493, 335; also Jung, *Aion*, 197, 208.

[124] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 147. [Emphasis added.]

[125] *Orphic Hymns*, no. 13.

[126] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 130.

[127] Schwabe, *op. cit.*, 8.

When Saturn departed the world, the Golden Age catastrophically ended. This is the universal tale of the dying god, the overthrown "first king" or fallen "first man." Whether betrayed by a dark force, or chastised for having committed the forbidden sin, or inflicted with old age and a weariness of mankind, the result is the same: a corruption of nature and a progressive worsening of the human condition. The story is the first—and one could almost say, *only*, theme of tragedy and drama in antiquity: Saturn's Golden Age came to a sudden and catastrophic end, either caused by or accompanied by the fall of the great god.

That the distant planet Saturn should loom at the centre of ancient rites is a fact which conventional wisdom will not easily explain. One looks in vain for any characteristic of Saturn, the present-day *planet*, which might account for Saturn, the *primeval god.* Could the present speck of light have provoked the ancient memory of a creator standing alone in the deep? Or produced the universal legend of the first king and the lost age of abundance? Or inspired the myth of the Heaven Man?

If, as is almost universally believed, the heavens have undergone no major changes in astronomically recent times, then the myth—however meticulously developed—can only be a fabrication, produced through the purest disregard for actual observation and experience. I do not ask the reader to ignore this possibility, and I am fully aware that to many mythologists myth and fancy are synonymous. Since the argument of this book rests on the coherence of the Saturn myth as a whole, and since many details remain to be covered I urge only a willingness to consider the evidence in its entirety. Whatever the true origins of the myth, it constituted for the ancients a compelling vision—a vision deserving careful study by all students of history, religion, and mythology.

III: The Polar Sun

Saturn's mythical history includes two themes which not only contradict the planet's visible appearance today, but seem to mock the canons of modern astronomy:

1. Saturn, not the solar orb, was the authentic "sun"-god of ancient ritual.

2. Throughout Saturn's reign this sun-planet remained fixed at the north celestial pole.

These two themes, affirmed by the straightforward testimony of ancient sources, compose a global memory: in the beginning Saturn did not move on its present remote orbit, but ruled as the *central sun* around which the other heavenly bodies visually revolved. Of this tradition early man has left us evidence far too numerous to cover fully in this volume. I offer below a summary of the principal sources.

Sun And Saturn

The myths and rites celebrate Saturn as the primeval sun.

Today, few mythologists looking back across several millennia to the beginnings of astral religion see anything more than worship of the rising and setting sun, the solar orb. This preoccupation with the solar orb is evident in popular surveys: "The preeminence of the Sun, as the fountainhead of life and man's well-being," writes W. C. Olcott, "must have rendered it at a date almost contemporaneous with the birth of the race, the chief object of man's worship . . . It was sunrise that inspired the first prayers uttered by man, calling him to acts of devotion, bidding him raise an altar and kindle sacrificial flames." "Before the Sun's all-glorious shrine the first men knelt and raised their voices in praise and supplication, fully confirmed in the belief that their prayers were heard and answered."[128]

Not without reason do scholars identify the Greek Helios, Assyrian Shamash, or Egyptian Re with the solar orb. Can it be doubted that Helios, radiating light from his brow and mounted on a fiery chariot, is our sun? That *helios* became the Greek word for the solar orb is beyond dispute.

In Egypt countless hymns to the god Re extol him as the divine power opening the "day."[129] "The lords of all lands . . . praise Re when he riseth at the beginning of each day." Re is the "great Light who shinest in the heavens . . . Thou art glorious by reason of thy splendours . . ."[130] Such imagery would seem to leave no question as to the god's solar character.

Yet if the preceding analysis of the great father is correct, Re (or Atum) is not the solar orb but the planet Saturn. The Golden Age of Re was the age of An, Yama, or Kronos. One thus finds of interest an Egyptian ostrakon (first century B.C.) cited by Franz Boll: the ostrakon identifies the planet Saturn as the great god Re.[131]

---

[128] Olcott, *Myths of the Sun*, 141-42.

[129] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 627.

[130] *Ibid.*, 76.

[131] Boll, "Kronos-Helios," 343, R8.

Taken alone, this identification could only appear as a very late anomaly divorced from any solid tradition. But many scholars notice that among the Greeks and Latins there prevailed a mysterious confusion of the "sun" (Greek *helios*, Latin *sol*) with the outermost planet. Thus the expression "star of Helios" or "star of Sol" was applied to Saturn.[132] Though the Greek *Kronos* was the Latin *Saturn*, Nonnus gives *Kronos* as the Arab name of the "sun." Hyginus, in listing the planets, names first Jupiter, then the planet "of Sol, others say of Saturn."[133] Why was the planet most distant from the sun called both "sun" and "Saturn"?

Concerning the confusion of the sun and Saturn among classical writers, a simple explanation was offered: the Greek name *Helios* so closely resembles the Greek transliteration of the Phoenician El that classical authors confused the two gods; since El is the Greek Kronos—and is so translated by Philo—Kronos/Saturn came to be confused with Helios, the sun.[134] Yet, as noted by Boll, the identification is more widespread than generally acknowledged and is much more than a misunderstanding of names.[135] The "confusion" is also far older than Philo, who lived in the first century of the Christian era. In the *Epinomis* of Plato (who lived in the fifth and fourth centuries B.C.), there is an enumeration of the planets, which, as customarily translated, entails this unstartling statement: "There remain, then, three stars (planets), one of which is preeminent among them for slowness, and some call him after Kronos."[136] Yet the original reading is not *Kronos* but *Helios*[137]—which is to say that Plato (or his pupil Phillip of Opus, to whom some ascribe authorship of the *Epinomis*) gave the name Helios to Saturn. But copyists, who could not believe that Helios was anything other than the sun, "corrected" the reading to "Kronos." Moreover, writes Boll, this practice of "correcting" the name Helios to Kronos was not uncommon among later copyists.[138] Originally, Boll concludes, Helios and Saturn were "one and the same god."[139]

The equation of sun and Saturn is very old, with roots in Sumero-Babylonian astronomy. Of the Babylonian star-worshippers the chronicler Diodorus writes: "To the one we call Saturn they give a special name, 'Sun-Star.'"[140] Among the Babylonians the "sun"-god *par excellence* was Shamash, the "light of the gods," whom scholars uniformly identify with the solar orb. But M. Jastrow, in an article entitled "Sun and Saturn," reports that in the Babylonian astronomical texts the identification of Shamash with Saturn is unequivocal: "*the planet Saturn is Shamash*," they boldly declare.[141]

---

[132] Bouché-Leclerq, *L'Astrologie Grecque*, 93, note 2.

[133] Hyginus, *Poetica astronomica* II, 42.

[134] This explanation is tentatively accepted by Bouché-Leclerq, *op. cit.*, 93, note 2.

[135] "Allein seither ist völlig klar geworden und wohl auch allgemein zugestanden, dass die Gleichsetzung von Kronos, dem Gotte des Planeten Saturn, mit dem Sonnengotte weit vor jedem möglichen griechischen Missverständnis liegt: es handelt sich um ein altes und durch Keilinschriften vollkommen sicher bezeugtes Stuck des babylonischen Sternglaubens . . . " Boll, *op. cit.*, 343.

[136] Plato, *Epinomis*, 987c.

[137] *Ibid.*

[138] "Ich habe seitdem die gleiche Variante noch an verschiedenen Stellen beobachtet: in Ptolem. Tetrab, p. 67, 8 schreiben die zwei alten Ausgaben Kronon während die beste Hs. V (Vatic. 1038) hlion hat; bei Rhetorios in Catal, codd. astrol. VII 203, 9 steht in dem Hss. R V Kronon, in T hlion: gemeint ist hier wie bei Ptolemaios der Planet Saturn. auffallender und wohl kaum ursprünglich ist die gleiche Variante in dem Pinax des Kebes, wo die 3. Hand des sehr späten Cod. C (XV. Jahr.) und dije Hs. Meibojms am Rande zweimal (p. 1, 1.2, 7 Pr.) den Namen (Kronon) des Gottes, dem der Tempel mit jenem Pinaz geweiht ist, durch 'Hlion ersetzen." *Op. cit.*, 344.

[139] "So viel ist aber sicher, dass nach einer oft bezeugten Vorstellung der Babylonier und Syrer Kronos und Helios eine und dieselbe Gottheit sind, die sich in den zwei mächtigsten Gestirnen des Tages und der Nacht offenbarte," *Ibid.*, 345-46. It must be emphasized, however, that the proposed distinction between day and night sun is unnecessary. There is only one primitive sun: Kronos-Helios.

[140] Diodorus II. 30-33.

[141] Jastrow, "Sun and Saturn ", 163-78.

In support of this identity Jastrow notes numerous examples involving "the interchangeable application of the term 'Samas' to either the great orb of the day or the planet Saturn."[142]

The apparent equivalence of Saturn and the "sun" goes back to Sumerian times, as is evident in the dual aspect of the creator god Ninurta. Langdon deems Ninurta both the sun and Saturn: ". . . the *sun-god* Ninurta . . . in the original Sumerian Epic of Creation, defeated the dragon of chaos and founded cities . . . In Sumero-Babylonian religion he is the War-god and planet Saturn."[143]

It is not difficult to see why Ninurta, or Ningirsu, though identified with the planet Saturn in the astronomical texts, came to be confused with the solar orb. "Ningirsu, coming from Eridu, rose in overwhelming splendour. In the land it became day."[144] Saturn, as Ningirsu, is "the god who changes darkness into light."[145] The priests of Lagash invoke him as "King, Storm, whose splendour is heroic."[146] This unexpected quality of the planet led Jensen to designate Saturn as a symbol of the "eastern sun" or "the sun on the horizon," though he offered no explanation for the proposed connection.[147]

The sunlike aspect of Saturn prevails from the earliest astronomy through medieval mysticism and astrology. "Saturn with its rays sends forth transcendent powers which penetrate into every part of the world," wrote an Arabic astrologer of the tenth century.[148] When the alchemists, inheritors of ancient teachings, spoke of Saturn as "the best sun,"[149] it is unlikely that they themselves knew what to do with the idea. But that the tradition was passed down from remote antiquity is both indisputable and crucial.

In claiming that the great father Saturn, presiding over the lost epoch, was the primeval "sun," I do not propose that our sun was absent—rather, that it simply did not preoccupy the ancients. To avoid confusion on this point I must indicate here a conclusion for which I intend to cite additional evidence in a later section.

Day And Night

Those scholars who notice the identification of the ancient sun and the planet Saturn usually speak of Saturn as a mythical "night sun" or "second sun."[150] But in truth, Saturn was the sun-god pure and simple, for the body we call "sun" today was not a subject of the early rites.

The problem is to discern the original meaning of "day" and "night." Many hymns to Shamash and Re—the celebrated suns of Mesopotamia and Egypt—describe these gods coming forth at the beginning of the ritual day, and the terminology often *appears* to signify the rising solar orb. One of the chapters of *Book of the Dead*, for example, is "The Chapter of Coming Forth by Day."[151] Does this not refer to the solar orb rising in the east?

A quite different interpretation is possible. Considerable evidence suggests that, to the ancients, the day began with what modern man calls "night"—that is, with the *setting* of the solar orb. It is widely acknowledged that the Egyptian day once began at sunset.[152] The same is true of the Babylonian and Western Semitic days.[153] The Athenians computed the space of a day from sunset to sunset, and the habit appears to have prevailed among northern European peoples.[154]

---

[142] *Ibid.*, 171.

[143] *Semitic Mythology*, 55. [Emphasis added.]

[144] Albright, "*The Mouth of the Rivers*," 165.

[145] Jastrow, *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 57.

[146] Hildegard Lewy, "Origin and Significance of the Mâgen Dâwîd," 335.

[147] *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 115-116, 136*ff.*

[148] Klibansky, Panofsky, and Saxl, *Saturn and Melancholy*, 129.

[149] Schwabe, *Archetyp und Tierkreis*, 492.

[150] This is, for example, the opinion of both Boll and Jastrow, in the articles cited above in notes 131 and 141.

[151] Chapter II.

This widespread custom poses a special problem for solar mythology. If, originally, the day began with the *disappearance* of the solar orb and the coming out of other heavenly bodies, who is the great god who shines at the beginning of this day? The explicit answer comes from the Sumerian texts identifying *Saturn* as god of the "dawn." Saturn "came forth in overwhelming splendour. In the land it became day."[155] This does not (as Jensen proposed) equate Saturn with the "sun [solar orb] on the horizon." It means that the coming forth of Saturn inaugurated the *archaic* day, which began at sunset. So long as the solar orb was visible, the fiery globe of Saturn remained subdued, unable to compete with the sheer light of the former body. But once the solar orb sank beneath the horizon, Saturn and its circle of secondary lights acquired a terrifying radiance.

Therefore, in archaic terms, Saturn was the great god of the "day," not the "night sun" as scholars usually propose. But obviously, the eventual shifting of the "dawn of day" from the solar sunset to the solar sunrise could only create a widespread confusion of day and night and morning and evening. On this distinction among the Egyptians, Budge writes, "At a very early period, however, the difference between the Day-sky and the Night-sky was forgotten."[156] Under normal circumstances would one likely forget this distinction?

If there is confusion, it is because radically different celestial orders separate the present age from the former. The *primeval* sun was the solitary god of the deep, the one god of archaic monotheism, the planet Saturn. Only in a later age did Saturn come to be confused with the solar orb.

There is, in fact, a decisive difference between the primeval god and the body we call the sun today: unlike the rising and setting solar orb, *the original sun-god never moved.*

Saturn And The Pole

In ancient ritual Saturn appears as the stationary sun or central fire at the north celestial pole.

When Saturn ruled the world, his home was the summit of the world axis: with this point all major traditions of the great father agree. Even today, in our celebration of Christmas, we live under the influence of the polar Saturn. For as Manly P. Hall observes, "Saturn, *the old man who lives at the north pole*, and brings with him to the children often a sprig of evergreen (the Christmas tree), is familiar to the little folks under the name Santa Claus."[157]

---

[152] E. Neumann, for example, speaks of a presolar ritual in which "the reckoning of time begins and ends with nightfall. Even in Egypt the evening is the time of 'birth,' and the morning, when the luminous world of the stars vanishes, is a time of death, in which the day-time sky devours the children of night. This conception, which was universal among early mankind, becomes understandable if we free ourselves from the correlation day=sun." *The Great Mother*, 26.

One of the many peculiarities of the Egyptian sun-god is that he not only brings the day, but shines at "night." *The Book of the Dead* reads, "I am that god Re who shineth in the night." To the "father of the gods" the Egyptians sang, " . . . thou lightest up the habitation of the night . . . " Re Harmachis, in the Dendera temple inscriptions appears as "the shining Horus, the ray of light in the night." Budge, *op. cit.*, Chapter CXXXI; Jung, *Symbols of Transformation*, 269; Brugsch, *Thesaurus Inscriptionum Ägyptiacarum*, 16.

In this connection one cannot fail to notice the number of ancient gods whom scholars customarily deem "night suns." Egypt is a good example. The popular god Osiris is almost always termed a sun of night, as is Ptah Seker. Budge, *op. cit.*, 7n, follows a well-established practice when he designates Atum "a form of Re and the type of the night sun." The same appellation is given to the Sumero-Babylonian Tammuz, the Hindu Varuna and Yama, the Iranian Yima, and the Greek Dionysus to name a few of many examples. In the conventional view Saturn, for reasons which remain unspecified, is the planetary representative of the night sun.

[153] On the original priority of the night among the Hebrews and Arabs see Ignaz Goldziher, *Mythology Among the Hebrews*, 62-74. In Babylonia it was in "later times" that "the reckoning of time was altered to the extent of making the day begin with sunrise, instead of with the approach of night." Jastrow, *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 78.

[154] Faber, *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol. I, 236-37.

[155] Albright, *op. cit.*, 165-66.

[156] Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol.II, 102.

Santa Claus, descending yearly from his polar home to distribute gifts around the world, is a muffled echo of the Universal Monarch, the primordial Osiris, Yama, or Kronos spreading miraculous good fortune. His polar abode, which might appear as an esoteric aspect of the story, is in fact an ancient and central ingredient. Saturn, the "best sun" and king of the world, ruled from the polar zenith. But while popular tradition located Santa Claus at the *geographical* pole, the earlier traditions place his prototype, the Universal Monarch, at the *celestial* pole, the pivot of the revolving heavens.

The home of the great father is the cosmic centre—the "heart," "midst," or "navel" of heaven. As the earth rotates on its axis the northern stars wheel around a fixed point. While most stars rise and set like the sun and moon, the circumpolar stars—those which describe uninterrupted circles about a common centre—never fall below the horizon. The invisible axis of the earth's rotation leads directly to that central point—the celestial pole—around which the heavens visually turn. All of the ancient world looked upon the polar centre as the "middle place," "resting place," or "steadfast region" occupied by the Universal Monarch.

One of the first writers to recognize the pole as the special domain of the great god was W. F. Warren, who wrote in *Paradise Found* (published in 1885): "The religions of all ancient nations . . . associate the abode of the supreme God with the North Pole, the centre of heaven; or with the celestial space immediately surrounding it. [Yet] no writer on comparative theology has ever brought out the facts which establish this assertion."

In the following years a number of scholars, each focusing on different bodies of evidence, reached the same conclusion. The controversial and erratic Gerald Massey, in two large works (*The Natural Genesis* and *Ancient Egypt*), claimed that the religion and mythology of a polar god was first formulated by the priest-astronomers of ancient Egypt and spread from Egypt to the rest of the world. In a general survey of ancient language, symbolism, and mythology, John O'Neill (*The Night of the Gods*) insisted that mankind's oldest religion centered on a god of the celestial pole.

Zelia Nuttall, in *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilizations*, undertook an extensive review of ancient Mexican astronomy, concluding that the highest god was polar. From Mexico she shifted to other civilizations, finding the same unexpected role of a polar god.

Reinforcing the surprising conclusions of the above researchers was the subsequent work of others, among them Uno Holmberg (*Der Baum des Lebens*), who documented the preeminence of the polar god in the ritual of Altaic and neighbouring peoples, suggesting ancient origins in Hindu and Mesopotamian cosmologies;[158] Leopold de Saussure (*Les Origines de l'Astronomie Chinoise*), who showed that primitive Chinese religion and astronomy honour the celestial pole as the home of the supreme god; Rene Guenon (*Le Roi du Monde and Le Symbolisme de la Croix*), who sought to outline a universal doctrine centering on the polar gods and principles of ancient man.

That these and other researchers, each starting down a different path, arrived at much the same conclusion concerning a supreme polar god of antiquity should have been sufficient to provoke a reappraisal of long-standing assumptions. Is it possible that, as these writers claimed, the ancient star-worshippers paid greater heed to a god of the pole than to the solar orb? Rather than respond to the question, solar mythologists diplomatically ignored it, thereby assigning the above investigators to an undeserved obscurity.

I want to reopen the question, but to approach it from a different perspective. Most of the aforementioned writers possessed a common—if unspoken—faith in the ceaseless regularity of the solar system, seeking to explain the polar god in strictly familiar terms: the centre of our revolving heavens is the celestial pole; the great god of the centre and summit must have been the star closest to this cosmic pivot.

---

[157] *An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolic Philosophy*, LXXIX. [Emphasis added.]

[158] See Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiösen Vorstellungen der Altaischen Völker*, 37.

But as observed in the previous pages, the great father was not a mere "star"; he was the planet Saturn, recalled as the preeminent light of the heavens. Moreover, the Saturn myth states that the planet-god *resided at the celestial pole!*[159]

In the myth and astronomy of many lands Saturn's connection with the pole is direct and unequivocal. Chinese astronomers designated the celestial pole as "the Pivot," identifying the "Genie of the Pivot" as the planet Saturn.[160] Saturn was believed to have his seat at the pole, reports G. Schlegel.[161] This strange and unexplained image of Saturn caught the attention of de Saussure (one of the foremost experts on Chinese astronomy), who added an additional startling fact: the Iranian *Kevan*, the planet Saturn, also occupies the polar centre.[162]

But the theme is older than Chinese or Iranian tradition, for it finds its first expression in the Sumero-Babylonian An (Anu), the highest god, acknowledged as the planet Saturn. Each evening, at Erech, the priests looked to the celestial pole, beginning their prayer with the words, "O star of Anu, prince of the heavens."[163]

Saturn ruled from the summit of the world axis.[164] I must note, however, that I am not the first to observe this general principle. A recent volume by Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechend, entitled *Hamlet's Mill*, offers the revolutionary conclusion that according to an ancient doctrine Saturn occupied the celestial pole.

But the authors, maintaining an unqualified attachment to the uniformitarian premise, exclude in advance any extraordinary changes in the solar system. Instead they speak of Saturn's polar station as a "figure of speech" or astral allegory whose meaning remains to be penetrated.

"What," they ask, "has Saturn, the far-out planet, to do with the Pole? . . . It is not in the line of modern astronomy to establish any link connecting the planets with Polaris, or with any star, indeed, out of reach of the members of the zodiacal system. Yet such figures of speech were an essential part of the technical idiom of archaic astrology, and those experts in ancient cultures who could not understand such idioms have remained helpless in the face of the theory."[165]

If one could find, in the present order of the heavens, a possible inspiration for the widespread tradition of Saturn's polar station, then the historians and mythologists, operating on uniformitarian principles, would have something concrete to work with. But the primordial age, as defined by universal accounts, stands in radical contrast to our own era. One can no more explain Saturn's ancient connection with the pole by reference to the present arrangements of the planets than one can explain, within the uniformitarian framework, Saturn's image as the Universal Monarch, the Heaven Man, or the primeval sun. Yet the fact remains that throughout the ancient world these images of Saturn constituted a pervasive memory which many centuries of cultural evolution could not obliterate.

The Unmoved Mover

In the sixth century B.C. Xenophanes of Colophon offered this definition of the true god:

---

[159] Quoted in Faber, *A Dissertation on the Cabiri*, Vol. I, 134.

[160] Schlegel, *L'Uranographie Chinoise*, 630-31.

[161] *Ibid.*, 631.

[162] De Saussure, "*Le Système Cosmologique Sino-Iranienne*," 235-97; "*La Série Septénaire, Cosmologique et Planétaire*," 333-70; see discussion of de Saussure's findings.

[163] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 94.

[164] On Anu as the ruler of the celestial pole, see also Jensen, *op. cit.*, 17-19.

[165] *Ibid.*, 136.

“There is one God, greatest among gods and men, neither in shape nor in thought like unto mortals . . . *He abides ever in the same place motionless, and it befits him not to wander hither and thither.*”[166]

A remarkable parallel occurs in the Hindu Upanishads:

There is only one Being who exists,
Unmoved yet moving swifter than the mind;
Who far outstrips the senses, though as gods
They strive to reach him, who, himself at rest,
Transcends the fleetest flight of other beings.
Who, like the air, supports all vital action.
He moves, yet moves not.[167]

To the supreme power in heaven Aristotle gave the name “Unmoved Mover,” a term which expressed succinctly the paradoxical character of the god One: though turning the heavens, he himself remained motionless. According to the general tradition, the god stood at the stationary cosmic centre, imparting movement to the celestial bodies which revolved about him.

A fact which conventional interpretation cannot explain is that the very terms which ancient astronomers apply to the celestial pole are applied also to Saturn. Consider the image of the pole:

I am constant as the northern star,
*Of whose true-*fix’d *and* resting *quality.*
There is no fellow in the firmament.

So declared Shakespeare’s Caesar. [Emphasis added.] Many centuries before Shakespeare, Hipparchus spoke of “a certain star remaining ever at the same place. And this star is the pivot of the Cosmos.” Among the Chinese, the pole star is the “star of the Pivot,”[168] to the Polynesians it is the “Immovable One.”[169] The Pawnee call it “the star that stands still”; this star, they say, “is different from other stars, because it never moves.”[170] To the Hindus, the star is *Dhruva*, “firm.”[171]

Consider now the image of the planet Saturn. In China, as noted above, Saturn rules “the Pivot.” The Sumero-Babylonian Ninurta—Saturn—is the god of the “steady star” and of “repose.”[172] Enki, also the planet Saturn, is “the motionless lord.”[173] Mithraic teaching portrays the planet as the cosmic man Aion, the “resting” god.[174] In Sanchuniathon’s description of the Phoenician El (Saturn) the god “flew while at rest and rested in flight." To this description, O'Neill responds: "Just the symbolism of the Polar Power whirling the heavens round, but ever reposing himself at the motionless centre."175

---

[166] Quoted in Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, 243. [Emphasis added.]

[167] Quoted in O’Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 737. [Emphasis added.]

[168] Schlegel, *op. cit.*, 631.

[169] Makemson, *The Morning Star Rises*, 5.

[170] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 95.

[171] Coomaraswamy and Nivedita, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists*, 378.

[172] Langdon, *Sumerian Liturgical Texts*, 137.

[173] Lenormant, *Origines de l’Histoire*, Vol. I, 393.

[174] Schwabe, *op. cit.*, 8, 388.

Saturn's stationary character is the trait most overlooked by conventional mythologists. The reason is that the mythologists expect the image of the primeval light god to fit the rising and setting solar orb, while in fact ancient ritual and myth portray the god as a central sun at the polar zenith.

To the modern mind nothing could be less "scientific" than a polar sun. Yet the unmoving sun *is* the ancient tradition, as noted by E. A. S. Butterworth: "[The primeval sun] is not the natural sun of heaven, for it neither rises nor sets, but is, as it seems, ever at the zenith above the navel of the world. *There are signs of an ambiguity between the pole star and the sun.*"176

If Butterworth is correct we have a convergence of three vital truths: Saturn was the primeval sun; Saturn occupied the celestial pole; the primeval sun occupied the pole. Each of these points contradicts modern understanding, yet each finds verification in the independent research of specialists, none of whom seem to have been aware of the work of the others. (That is, de Santillana and von Dechend, while documenting Saturn's connection with the pole, seem unaware of the planet's identity as sun; Jastrow and Boll, though perceiving the equation of Saturn and sun, ignore Saturn's polar station; Butterworth, though recognizing the polar sun, fails to notice that he is dealing with the planet Saturn.)

On the tradition of the polar god or polar sun numerous traditions concur.

Egypt

If there is an orthodoxy among Egyptologists, it is the belief that the Egyptian great god has his inspiration in the *rising and setting* sun. Atum, Re, Osiris, Horus, Khepera, and virtually all the great gods of the Egyptians are explained as symbols of the solar orb—either the sun of day, or the sun "during its night journey."

Because the Egyptian concept of the "sun" involves many complexities which might distract from the present general inquiry, I shall reserve many details for treatment in later sections. I cite below, however, a few of the evidences indicating the polar station of the Egyptian supreme god.

1. Of the Egyptian great father there is no better representative than the mighty Atum, whom Egyptologists usually regard as a sun-god shining at night. He is the acknowledged alter ego of the primeval sun Re, founder of the lost Golden Age.

The *Coffin Texts* say:

The Great God lives,

fixed in the middle of the sky

*upon his support.*177

The reference is to Atum, whom the eminent Egyptologist R. T. Rundle Clark calls "the arbiter of destiny perched on the top of the world pole."178

The creation legend states that when Atum came forth alone in the beginning, he stood *motionless* in the cosmic sea.179 His epithet was "the Firm Heart of the Sky."180 To the Egyptians, states Enel, "Atum was the

---

175 *Op. cit.*, 748.

176 *The Tree at the Navel of the Earth*, 124. [Emphasis added.]

177 Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 59.

178 *Ibid.*, 41.

179 Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 309.

180 Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 36.

chief or centre of the movement of the universe" at the celestial pole, for the Egyptians knew the pole as the "midst" or "heart" of heaven—"the single, immovable point around which the movement of the stars occurred."[181]

Clark tells us that "the celestial pole is 'that place' or 'the great city.' The various designations show how deeply it impressed the Egyptian imagination. If god is the governor of the universe and it revolves around an axis, then god must preside over the axis."[182]

Clark is so certain of the great god's polar station that he writes, "No other people was so deeply affected by the eternal circuit of the stars around a point in the northern sky. Here must be the node of the universe, the centre of regulation."[183] (As we will see, Clark underestimates the influence of the polar centre in other lands.)

Atum was the "Unmoved Mover" described in Egyptian texts many centuries before Aristotle offered the phrase as a definition of the supreme power. The Egyptian hieroglyph for Atum is a primitive sledge , signifying "to move." To the god of the cosmic revolutions, the *Book of the Dead* proclaims "Hail to thee, Tmu [Atum] Lord of Heaven, who givest motion to all things."[184] But while moving the heavens Atum remained *em hetep*, "at rest" or "in one spot."

2. Moreover, and contrary to nearly universal opinion, the great god Re has little in common with the solar orb. Unlike our ever-moving sun, Re stands at the stationary "midst" or "heart" of heaven.[185] He is the motionless sun "who resteth on his high place."[186]

His home is the polar zenith:

> *. . . May your face be in the north of the sky, may Re summon you from the zenith of the sky.*[187]
>
> *My father ascends to the sky among the gods who are in the sky; he stands in the Great Polar Region and learns the speech of the sun folk. Re . . . sets his hand on you at the zenith of the sky.*[188]

Concerning the enigmatic symbolism of the Egyptian sun-god, Kristensen tells us that "the place where the light sets is also called the place where it rises."[189] In reference to the solar orb the statement appears meaningless. But the notion that Re rises and sets in one spot is inseparable from the vision of Re as the lord of *hetep*, "rest." In fact the god does not literally "rise" or "set" at all. With the phases of day and night his light "comes forth" and "recedes"; the god "comes out" and "goes in." When we say today that the moon "comes out" at night we do not mean that it rises in the east; we mean simply that the moon *grows bright.* Precisely the same meaning attaches to the Egyptian words which so often receive the translation "rise" (*uben*, *pert*, *un*).[190]

---

[181] *Les Origines de la Genèse et l'Enseignement des Temples de l'Ancienne Egypte*, 20-21, n.2.

[182] Clark, *op. cit.*, 58.

[183] *Ibid.*, 58.

[184] Renouf, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 147.

[185] Faulkner, *The Coffin Texts*, Spell 257.

[186] Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 394.

[187] *Pyramid Texts* 1016.

[188] *Pyramid Texts* 1168-70.

[189] Quoted in Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 29.

[190] Hence Re not only "comes out" in the Tuat, but "rests" there also. Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 25.

Thus, rather than a moving sun, Re is the central pivot round which the lesser gods revolve. “They [the companions of Re] go round about behind him,”[191] states one text. The deceased king aspires to attain the great god’s position so that “these gods shall revolve round about him.”[192]

Figure 2. The resting Osiris.

3. The god-king Osiris, an obvious counterpart of the primeval sun Re, is the god of the *tet*, “firmness” or “stability.” “He is always a passive figure,” notes Budge. “As a cosmic god he appears as a *motionless* director or observer of the actions of his servants who fulfil his will.”[193] In this he is the prototype of the terrestrial king, who takes up symbolic residence at the cosmic centre.

Thus is Osiris the stationary *heart* of heaven: “Beautiful is the god of the motionless heart,” proclaims the *Book of the Dead.*[194] The hymns extol Osiris as the lord of *hetep*, “rest,” or as “the resting heart.” One Egyptologist after another seeks to understand the imagery in terms of a night sun “resting” in an imagined underworld. But numerous Egyptian sources show that the place of rest is the motionless centre and summit. Osiris is “exalted upon his resting place,”[195] or “in the heights.”[196]

The hieroglyphs portray a column of steps leading to the polar zenith; it is here that the hymns locate Osiris: “Hail, O Osiris, thou hast received thy sceptre and the place whereon thou art to rest, and the steps are under thee.”[197] The deceased beseeches the great god: “. . . May I be established upon my resting place like the Lord of Life.”[198]

It is also futile to interpret Osiris’ “rest” or “motionless heart” as mere symbols of death. The state of rest, one must remember, belongs to the living or resurrected Osiris, for the texts apply the term *hetep*, “rest,” to Osiris *em ankh*, “as a living being.”[199] It should be clear to all who consider the language of the hymns that the unmoving *heart* means the unmoving *god*, for the heart *is* the god (as when the texts describe the heart “upon its seat”).[200] Osiris, the motionless heart, is the central, stationary sun: “O still heart, Thou shinest for Thyself, O still heart.”[201]

---

[191] Budge, *The Book of the Dead*, 398.

[192] *Ibid.*, 644.

[193] *From Fetish to God*, 190. [Emphasis added.]

[194] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 120.

[195] Budge, *The Book of the Dead*, 260.

[196] Renouf, *op cit.*, 7.

[197] Budge, *The Book of the Dead*, 388-89.

[198] *Ibid.*, 251.

[199] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 123, 134.

4. The stationary sun, the sun at the polar zenith, also occurs under many other names in Egyptian religion, including:

—Horus, the “firm and stable” god who “takes his place at the zenith of the sky.”[202]

—Ptah, “in the great resting place.”

—Iemhetep, whose name means “the one who comes forth while standing in one place.”[203]

—Sepa, whose name means “stable.”[204]

—Men, whose name means “fixed,” “abiding,” “stable,” “firm.”[205]

—Tenen, connected with the root *enen*, meaning “motionless,” “rest,” “inactivity.”[206]

—Khepper, the Turning One, who spins around while occupying the same stationary position.[207]

Thus, in the hieroglyphs, all of the Egyptian great gods appear as *firmly seated* figures. This immovable posture— —which corresponds to divine imagery in many other lands is no accident. The seated or resting god is the Unmoved Mover.

Figure 3. Khepher, the Turning One.

---

[200] *Ibid.*, 105.

[201] Budge, *Gods*, Vol, I, 332.

[202] *Pyramid Text*, 854.

[203] Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 426.

[204] Énel, *op. cit.*, 117.

[205] Budge, *A Hieroglyphic Vocabulary to the Theban Recension of the Book of the Dead*, 174.

[206] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 508-9.

[207] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 151.

Figure 4. The firmly seated (resting) god.

5. That the Egyptians conceived the cosmic centre as the source of celestial motions is clear from the terminology of the centre. The "heart" of heaven is *ab* ( ), a word which has the concrete meaning of "centre" or "midst." But as noted by Renouf, *ab* ( ) also conveys "the sense of lively motion."[208] In the latter usage, the determinative appears to depict a human figure turning around while standing on one foot, *i.e.*, in one place, at rest. Denoted by the word *ab* is the resting but ever-turning heart of heaven. Similarly, while the term *men* means "fixed" or "abiding," in reference to the god of the stable centre and summit, *mennen* means "to go round."[209]

To the great god, as the steadfast centre or foundation stone of the Cosmos, the Egyptians gave the name *Benben* (see discussion of The Foundation Stone). But *ben* alone "is a verb of motion, and particularly of 'going around'" This dual, seemingly paradoxical relationship of motion and rest occurs throughout the Egyptian texts and becomes intelligible only when one recognizes the central sun, the Unmoved Mover, as the source of the imagery.

"I am the Heir, the primary power of motion and of rest," reads the *Book of the Dead.* Though the words have a modern sound, Renouf assures us that they express the literal sense of the hieroglyph text. It is in the root character of every polar god to "move" while at "rest."[210]

6. Inseparable from the Egyptian motion of "rest" is the concept of "silence." The motionless centre of the heavens is the Still Place or Region of Silence. (Our English word *still* accurately conveys the close relationship between the concepts *unmoving* and *silent.*)

> [The great god is] *King of the Tuat . . . Noble Body whose* rest is complete *in the Region of Silence.*[211]
>
> *King is he who* rests *in the Silent Region.*[212]

---

[208] *Ibid.*, 67.

[209] *Ibid.*, 45.

[210] *Ibid.*, 113.

[211] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 106. [Emphasis added.]

[212] Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 40-41. [Emphasis added.]

But those experts who connect the solar orb with the great god have nothing to say concerning such language. The god who stands at rest in the Silent Region is Re, the sun-god *par excellence;* yet the entire concept contradicts the image of our wandering sun.

7. What often prevents generalists from perceiving the stationary character of the primeval sun is the translator's unfortunate habit of substituting vague and intangible terms for literal meanings. Budge follows a common practice when he renders a hymn to Re in these words: "Homage to thee, O thou who art in peace."[213] From such terminology one could hardly be expected to formulate a clear concept of the god. But the phrase "in peace" actually conceals a vital meaning, for the Egyptian original is *em hetep.* Literally, the hymn celebrates the god who shines "at rest" or "while standing in one place." (In seeking to interpret Egyptian sources I have found that specific, literal, and concrete meanings of the original texts are uniformly preferable to the more general and abstract language so often chosen by translators. Of this truth, the reader will find many examples in the following sections.)

Mesopotamia

Like the central sun of Egypt, the primeval light god of Sumero-Babylonian religion "comes forth" (shines) and "goes in" (declines, diminishes) at the "centre" or "midst" of heaven (*Kirib sami; Kabal sami*), which is also the zenith (*ilatu*). "In the centre he made the zenith," states one text.[214] Residing at the centre and summit, the great god is the "firm" or "steadfast" light.[215]

The oldest representative of this stationary sun is the polar god An (Anu).[216] An fills the sky with his radiant—even terrifying—light: "the terror of the splendour of Anu in the midst of heaven."[217] Thus does Robert Brown, Jr., term the polar god a *nocturnal sun*, the "Lord of the Night."[218]

All principal forms of An appear as *stationary* gods. Enki is "the motionless lord" and the god of "stability."[219] A broken Sumerian hymn, in reference to Ninurash (a form of Ninurta) reads:

Whom the "god of the steady star*" upon a foundation.*

To . . . cause to repose in years of plenty.[220]

Failing to perceive the concrete meaning of such terms, solar mythologists like to think of a place of "repose" as a hidden "underworld" beneath the earth, a dark region visited by the sun after it has set. But the place of repose is no underworld. It is:

The lofty residence . . .

The lofty place . . .

The place of lofty repose . . .[221]

---

[213] Budge, *From Fetish to God*, 401.

[214] Jensen, *op. cit.*, 11.

[215] *Ibid.*, 16-19; Brown, *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations*, Vol. I, 269; Vol. II, 191.

[216] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 94; Jensen, *op. cit.*, 17*ff.* I certainly cannot accept, however, Jensen's identification of Anu with the pole of the ecliptic.

[217] Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 482.

[218] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 184, 190.

[219] Lenormant, *op. cit.*, 393. Ea (Eriki) was the "king of destinies, stability and justice." O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 490.

[220] Langdon, *Sumerian Liturgical Texts*, 137. [Emphasis added.]

[221] Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, 172.

Ninurta, in his "place of lofty *repose*," is the precise equivalent of the Egyptian Re, who "*resteth* on his high place." That both gods are identified with the planet Saturn further confirms the striking parallel. What, then, of the great god Shamash, whom one expert after another identifies with the solar orb alone? The prevailing consensus cannot hide the fact that Shamash, like Ninurta and Anu, is addressed as the planet Saturn ("Shamash is Saturn," say the astronomical texts). Thus Shamash sends forth his light from the immovable centre or "midst" of heaven:

Like the midst *of heaven may he shine!*[222]

O Shamash . . . suspended from the midst *of heaven.*[223]

O Sun-god, in the midst *of heaven . . .*[224]

I have cried to thee, O Sun-god, in the

midst *of the glittering heaven.*[225]

Let there be no misunderstanding as to the literal and concrete meaning of the "midst." It is, states Robert Brown, the stationary centre, "that central point where Polaris sat enthroned."[226] Accordingly, in the symbolism of the ziggurat and other "sun" temples, Shamash occupies the "*summit* house," the "*fixed* house," or the "house of rest."[227] The top of the ziggurat, a symbolic model of the Cosmos, is the "light of Shamash," and the "heart of Shamash," denoting (in the words of E. G. King) the pivot "around which the highest heaven or sphere of the fixed stars revolved."[228]

The Babylonian tradition of the polar sun has been preserved up to the modern era in the tradition of the Mandaeans of Iraq. In their midnight ceremonies these people invoke the celestial pole as *Olma I'nhoara*, "the world of light." With the following words they beseech the polar god: "In the name of the living one, blessed be the primitive light, the Divinity self-created." This polar god, states one observer, is the "*primitive sun* of the star-worshippers."[229]

India

The Hindu Dhruva, whose name means "firm," stands at the celestial pole—"a Spot blazing with splendour to which the ground is firm, where is fixed the circus of the celestial lights of the planets, which turn all around like oxen round the stake, and which [the Spot] subsists motionless."[230] What remains to be explained by mythologists is that the "obviously solar" god Surya "stands *firmly* on this safe *resting place.*"[231] Surya, states V. S. Agrawala, "is himself at rest, being the immovable centre of his system."[232] And just as the Egyptian primeval sun "rises and sets" in one place, Surya occupies *samanam dhama*—"the same place of rising and setting."[233]

---

[222] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 177, note 1. [Emphasis added.]

[223] Pritchard, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 387. [Emphasis added.]

[224] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 177, note 1. [Emphasis added.]

[225] *Ibid.*, 173. [Emphasis added.]

[226] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 191.

[227] Jastrow, *op. cit.*, 638-41. [Emphasis added.]

[228] *Akkadian Genesis*, 24, quoted in O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 78.

[229] Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles*, quoting an article in the London *Standard*, October 19, 1894, entitled "A prayer meeting of the star-worshippers." [Emphasis added.]

[230] *Bhagavata Purana*, Chapter 4.

[231] Eggeling, *Satapatha-Brahmana IV*, 3, 4, 9. [Emphasis added.]

[232] Agrawala, *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 82-83.

Another name for the stationary sun is Prajapati. "The sun in the centre is Prajapati: he is the horse that imparts movement to everything," writes Agrawala.[234]

Figure 5. Resting Brahma.

Figure 6. Resting Buddha.

The motionless Dhruva, Surya, and Prajapati compare with the light of Brahma, called the "true sun," which, "after having risen thence upwards . . . rises and sets no more. It remains alone in the centre."[235] Brahma, observes Guenon, is "the pivot around which the world accomplishes its revolution, the immutable centre which directs and regulates cosmic movement."[236]

In fact, every Hindu figure of the primeval sun appears as the fixed mover of the heavens. The Hindu Varuna, "seated in *the midst* of heaven," is the Recumbent," the "axis of the universe."[237] "*Firm* is the seat of Varuna," declares one of the Vedic hymns.[238] In him "all wisdom centres, as the nave is set within the wheel."[239] One of Varuna’s forms is Savitar, the “impeller.” While the rest of the universe revolves, the impeller stands firm. “. . . Firm shalt thou stand, like Savitar desirable.”240

---

[233] Velanker, *Rigveda Mandala VII*, 147.

[234] Agrawala, *op. cit.*, 66.

[235] Chatterji, *The Bhagavad Gita*, 145.

[236] *Études sur l'Hindouisme*, 19.

[237] Keith, *The Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads*, Vol. I, 96; Coomaraswamy, *A New Approach to the Vedas*, 8, 60-61, 92, note 71. [Emphasis added.]

[238] Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 122. [Emphasis added.]

Occupying the same resting place is the supreme god Vishnu “who takes a *firm* stand in that resting place in the sky.”241 The location is the celestial pole, called “the exalted seat of Vishnu, round which the starry spheres forever wander.”242 Vishnu is the polar sun or central fire: “fiery indeed is the name of this *steadfast* god,” states one Vedic text.243

A fascinating and archaic form of the Hindu great god is Aja Ekapad, originally conceived as a one-legged goat, the support and mover of the universe. Observes Agrawala: “The question arises as to the meaning of *ekapad.* It [Aja] is called *ekapad* or one-footed for the reason that *ekapad* or one-footed denotes the absence of motion.”244 Agrawala calls this supreme being or principle that of “Absolute Static Rest.”245 “The principle of Rest,” writes the same author, “is inexhaustible and the source of all motion.”246

The sacred ground occupied by the Hindu great god is the “middle place,” “the steadfast region,” or “the motionless heaven.”247 In the Brahmanist tradition it is *Nirvana*, “the Supreme Resting Place” at the centre and summit.

To the Buddhists this is the nave of the cosmic wheel, the throne of the Buddha himself. It is *acalatthana*, the “unmoving site,” or the “unconquerable seat of *firm seance.*”248 The Buddha throne crowned the world axis, states Coomaraswamy.

China

The ancient Emperor on High, according to a universal Chinese tradition, stood at the celestial pole. Chinese astrologers, according to Schlegel, regard the polar god as “the Arch-Premier . . . The most venerated of all the celestial divinities. In fact the Pole star, around which the entire firmament appears to turn, should be considered as the Sovereign of the Sky.”249 The supreme polar god was Shang-ti, the first king. His seat was “the Pivot” and all the heavens turned upon his exclusive power.

Raised to a first principle, the polar god became the mystic *Tao*, the motor of the Cosmos. The essential idea is contained in the very Chinese word for Tao, which combines the sign for “to stand still” with the sign “to go”

---

239 *Ibid.*, 121-22.

240 Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, XIX, 45.4.

241 Eggeling, *Satapatha Brahmana*, III, 6.3.15. [Emphasis added.]

242 Quoted in de Santillana and von Dechend, *Hamlet’s Mill*, 138.

243 Velanker, *op. cit.*, 219. [Emphasis added.]

244 *Op. cit.*, 40, citing *Rig Veda* X.82.6.

245 *Ibid.*, 70.

246 *The Thousand Syllabled Speech*, Vol. I, 112.

247 Eggeling, *Satapatha Brahmana* II.5.1.14; see also note 4, p. 36; Coomaraswamy, *A New Approach*, 68.

248 Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 42-43. *Ibid.*, 43-45, 52, 55.

Comparable to the firmly seated position of the Egyptian great god is the position of the “resting” or “meditating” Buddha. The Buddha “sat himself down cross-legged in an unconquerable position, from which not even the descent of a hundred thunderbolts at once could have dislodged him.” Quoted in Campbell, *Oriental Mythology*, 16. [Emphasis added.]

249 Schlegel, *op. cit.*, 507.

and “head.” The Tao is the Unmoved Mover, the god One who goes or “moves” while yet remaining in one place.

Chinese sources proclaim the Tao to be the “light of heaven” and “the *heart* of heaven”[250] that is, the central sun. “Action is reversed into non-action,” states Jung. “Everything peripheral is subordinated to the command of the centre.”[251] Thus the Tao rules the “golden centre,” which is the “Axis of the World,” according to Erwin Pousselle.[252]

Yet while many writers have observed the polar station of the Chinese supreme power, few indeed have noticed that Chinese astronomers identify this central sun as the planet Saturn. Saturn, according to the astronomical texts, is “the Pivot,” his primeval seat the celestial pole. It is Saturn, states Schlegel, who imparts motion to the universe.[253]

One of the few writers to notice Saturn’s connection with the pole is de Saussure, who tells us that Chinese astronomy places the planet in the Centre, around which all secondary elements and powers revolve: “. . . the Centre represents the Creator, Regulator of the entire Cosmos, the Pole, seat (or throne) of the supreme Divinity.”[254] Saturn, states de Saussure, “is the planet of the centre, corresponding to the emperor on earth, thus to the polar star of Heaven.”[255]

The Americas

In southern Peru the Inca Yupanqui raised a temple at Cuzco to the creator god, the authentic sun, who was superior to the sun we know. Unlike the solar orb he was able to “rest” and “to light the world from *one* spot.” “It is an extremely important and significant fact,” writes Nuttall, “that the principal doorway of this temple opened to the north.” (Since the north celestial pole is not visible from Cuzco, 14-deg below the equator, Nuttall assumes that this tradition of a polar sun was carried southward.)[256]

In Mexico a form of the central light is Tezcatlipoca, who, though said to “personify the Sun,” yet resides at the pole—as does Quetzalcoatl, the “sun,” first king, and founder of civilization, who Nahuatl priests say inaugurated the era of “the Centre.”[257]

---

[250] Jung, *Alchemical Studies*, 20. [Emphasis added.]

[251] *Ibid.*, 25.

[252] “Seelische Führung in Lebenden Taoismus,” in *Yoga und Meditation im Ostem und im Westen*, 193.

[253] *Op. cit.*, 631.

[254] “La Série Septenaire, Cosmologique et Planétaire,” 342.

[255] “Origine Chinoise de la Cosmologie Iranienne,” 305.

[256] *Op. cit.*, 161, emphasis added.

[257] *Ibid.*, 42, 56, 95; Burland, *The Gods of Mexico*, 94.

Figure 7. Resting Xiuhtecuhtli.

Burland tells us that, among the Mexicans, “the nearest approach to the idea of a true universal god was Xiuhtecuhtli,” recalled as the Old, Old One who enabled the first ancestors to rise from barbarism. Xiuhtecuhtli appears as the *Central Fire* and “the *heart* of the Universe.” “Xiuhtecuhtli was a very special deity. He was not only the Lord of Fire which burnt in front of every temple and in the middle of every hut in Mexico, but also *Lord of the Pole Star*. He was the *pivot* of the universe and one of the forms of the Supreme Deity.”[258] An obvious counterpart of this central sun is the Mayan creator god Huracan, the “*Heart* of Heaven” at the celestial pole.

The Pawnee locate the “star chief of the skies” at the pole. He is the “star that stands still.” Of this supreme power they say, “its light is the radiance of the *Sun* God shining through.”[259]

The American Indians also have a counterpart to the Egyptian Still Place and the Hindu Motionless Heaven. A Zuni account relates that long ago the *heart* of the great father Kian’astepe *rested* in a sacred spot called the *Middle Place*. Here, at the cosmic centre, the holy ancestors “sit perfectly still.”[260] It does not take a great deal of imagination to see that this is, once more, the stationary pivot of the heavens.

From one land to another one encounters the same connection of the great father or primeval sun with the celestial pole. To the traditions cited above, one might add the following:

In the Persian *Zend Avesta* the sun god Mithra occupies the summit of the world axis, a fixed station “around which the many stars revolve.”[261] The common identification of Mithra with the Zoroastrian Zurvan/Saturn cannot be ignored.

Iranian cosmology, as reported by de Saussure, esteemed the celestial pole as the centre and summit of heaven, where resided “the Great One in the middle of the sky.” who is equated with *Kevan*, the planet Saturn.[262] Throughout the ancient Near East, states H. P. L’Orange, the “King of the Universe” appears as a central sun, “the Axis and the Pole of the World.”[263]

The Greek sun-god Helios, in an old tradition, resides at the centre of the Cosmos, with the heavenly bodies revolving around him.[264] Upon evaluating the imagery of Helios in Homer’s *Odyssey*, Butterworth concludes that the mythical sun remained always at the zenith, the celestial pole.[265] What gives meaning to the tradition is the identity of Helios and the planet Saturn, as earlier documented.

---

[258] *Op. cit.*, 77; see also p. 80. [Emphasis added.]

[259] Alexander, *op. cit.*, 95-96. [Emphasis added.]

[260] Stevenson, *The Zuni Indians*, 46, 80.

[261] Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta*, Miher Yast XII, 49-50.

[262] “Le Système Cosmologique,” 292-3.

[263] *Studies in The Iconography of Cosmic Kingship*, 13.

[264] Bloch, “Le Symbolisme Cosmique et les Monuments Religieux dans l’Italie Ancienne,” 24-25; see also L’Orange, *op. cit.*, 29.

"According to Jewish and Muslim Cosmology," writes A. J. Wensinck, "the divine throne is exactly above the seventh heaven, consequently it is the pole of the Universe."[266] Thus Isaiah locates the throne of El (originally the planet Saturn) in the farthest reaches of the north.[267]

The alchemists regarded the pole as the dwelling place of "the central fire," the motor of the heavens. ". . . The whole machinery of the world is drawn by the infernal fire at the North Pole," notes Jung.[268] An alchemical text proclaims: "At the Pole is the heart of Mercurius, which is the *resting place* of his Lord."[269] "Most important of all for an interpretation of Mercurius," Jung writes, "is his relation to Saturn. Mercurius *senex* [the *aged* Mercurius] is identical with Saturn."[270]

Records of numerous nations around the world stand as a collective witness to a strange, yet consistent idea—an idea which finds no explanation in the heavens we know. Global myths insist that when the first civilizations rose from barbarism a brilliant light occupied the celestial pole. This steadfast light was the ancient sun-god, repeatedly identified as the planet Saturn, the Universal Monarch.

Is it possible to reckon with this extraordinary memory in terms acceptable to the modern age? Mythologists and historians of religion always assume that archaic astral traditions, though filled with imaginative explanations, nevertheless refer to the very celestial order which confronts us today. The entire Saturn myth challenges this long-standing assumption. Could it be that Saturn's image as the polar sun—however strange, however difficult to reconcile with present physical theory—represents true history?

---

[265] *Op. cit.*, 28-29.

[266] "*The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth*," 55.

[267] Isaiah 14: 13-14.

[268] *Aion*, 135.

[269] Jung, *Alchemical Studies*, 209, note 8. [Emphasis added.]

[270] *Ibid.*, 226.

IV: Saturn’s Cosmos

The ancients preserved more than mythical-historical accounts of Saturn’s rule. From one section of the world to another the planet-god’s worshippers drew pictures of the Saturnian configuration, and these pictures become the universal signs and symbols of antiquity.

In the global lexicon of symbols the three most common images are the enclosed sun ☉, the sun-cross ✦, and the enclosed sun-cross ⊕. It appears that every ancient race revered these signs as images of the preeminent cosmic power. In Mesopotamia and Egypt the signs occur in the earliest period.

Prehistoric pottery and rock carvings from Crete, China, Scandinavia, Africa, Russia, Polynesia, and the Americas suggest that numerous ancient rites centered on these simple forms—which became the most venerated images in the first hieroglyphic alphabets.

But what did these signs signify to the ancients? With scarcely a dissenting voice, scholars routinely tag them as solar symbols. They tell us that such renderings of the sun are perfectly natural (that is, they *must* be “natural” ways of representing the sun because one sees the signs everywhere!)

Though everyone seems to agree on the solar origins,271 many disagree as to what the signs depict. In the image ☉, does the outer band represent a parhelion (atmospherically caused halo around the sun)? Or does it stand for “the circle of the sky”? Some commentators suggest that the outer circle is itself the sun, leaving open the question of the meaning of the enclosed dot.272

Similarly, in evaluating the sign ⊕, the experts cannot agree whether the four arms of the cross denote rays of the sun or four quarters of the world. It is also said that the four arms depict spokes of an imagined sun wheel rolling across the sky each day.

Is it necessary to point out that these differences of opinion immediately throw into question the common claim that the signs are *natural* solar emblems? So long as the meaning is uncertain one can hardly state that a symbol is a *natural* expression of anything. Yet surely those experts who debate the significance of the “sun” symbols must wonder why the ancients, *with one accord*, inscribed the same images the world over.

Consider the relatively complex sign ⊕. The basic form occurs along with many variants on every continent. Whatever it may signify, it is more than a simple drawing of the sun. If it is a solar image, then one must assume not only that the sun worshippers around the world instinctively adopted the sun to a more complicated abstract form, but that every ancient sun-cult drew upon the same abstraction. Why?

---

271 B.L. Goff, for example, discusses the sign (here) as an “explicit” solar form in Mesopotamia. Why explicit? Because “it is surrounded by rays.” Goff, *Symbols of Prehistoric Mesopotamia*, 22.

272 This has, in fact, become the popular explanation of the Egyptian *Aten*.

The enclosed sun-cross ⊕ is not an abstraction. It simply records what the ancients originally *saw*. It is a literal drawing of the *polar sun*, passed down from earliest antiquity: the image of Saturn, the Universal Monarch.

Rarely do archaeologists, seeking to interpret the widespread "sun" symbols, consult ancient mythology. Yet the myths explain the symbols, and the symbols illuminate the myths. Largely overlooked by archaeologists are the hundreds upon hundreds of myths and liturgies focusing on the cosmic images ☉, ✦, and ⊕. Ancient sources reveal a world-wide concern with a concrete celestial form—an *ideal* configuration identified as the great god and his heavenly dwelling. The subject is not the present world order, but the former. The symbols, legends, and sacred hymns attempt to preserve a memory of Saturn and the primeval Cosmos.

The Enclosed Sun

When Saturn appeared alone in the cosmic waters, a brilliant band congealed around the god as his celestial "island." This band was the original Cosmos, often portrayed as a revolving egg, a coil of rope, a belt or a shield enclosing the central sun.

The sacred hymns and creation legends of ancient Egypt say that when the creator arose from the cosmic sea, a vast circle appeared around the god, forming the original Place—"the place of the primeval time," or "the Province of the Beginning."[273] This primeval dwelling was the "island of *Hetep* [Rest],"[274] a steadfast, revolving enclosure. Egyptian texts of all periods offer vivid images of this enclosure on the waters—called "the golden Pai-land," the "Island of Fire," "the divine emerging primeval island," or "the island emerging in Nun [the cosmic waters]."[275]

Diverse sources agree that the island of creation stood at the cosmic centre and that it was the residence of the creator himself, the central sun. Thus, while Osiris is the "motionless heart" in the Island of Fire, Atum, the stationary Heart of Heaven, is "the Sole One who is alone . . . , who made his heart in the Island of Fire."[276]

In the following pages I shall attempt to show that Egyptian sources depict the band as *something seen*—the god's visible dwelling in heaven. Indeed, the Egyptians—and all other ancient races—*were so preoccupied with the Saturnian band that they elaborated a vast symbolism presenting the same enclosure under wide-ranging mythical forms.*

Yet standard treatments of ancient myth and religion say little or nothing of the enclosure. And even less do writers on the subject seem aware that the pictograph of the enclosure sun ☉ is a straightforward portrait of Saturn and his legendary home.

It is not for want of evidence that the experts have missed this connection. The only obstacle is the *a priori* world view of the researchers themselves—who presuppose that all references to the primordial light god can only signify the solar orb. In connection with our sun today, the ancient language of the enclosure will appear esoteric or meaningless.

Of Re, the *Coffin Texts* say, "We honour him in the sacred enclosure."[277] Re is the "sender forth of light into his Circle."[278] "I am the One who is in his Circle," he announces.[279] What could this terminology signify in relationship to the solar orb? Since our sun possesses no perceptible relationship to an enclosure or circle, the translators will likely ignore the terms or contrive a complicated metaphysical concept to explain them.

---

[273] Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*, 12-13, 65-67, 86.

[274] *Ibid.*, 12-13.

[275] *Ibid.*, 185; Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 38, note 21.

[276] Faulkner, *The Coffin Texts*, 100.

[277] Lacau, *Traduction des Textes des Cercueils du Moyen Empire*, 30.

[278] Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol, I, 340.

Though the Egyptian hieroglyph for Re is , and though this sign, taken literally, immediately illuminates the foregoing references, no one seems inclined to take the sign—or the texts—literally.

To the enclosure round the sun the Egyptians gave the name *Aten*, a term familiar to every student of Egyptian religion. "Spacious is your seat within the Aten," read the *Coffin Texts.*[280] One of Re's titles is *am aten-f*, the "dweller in his Aten." Both Atum and Horus possess the same title. Similarly, the *Book of the Dead* invokes Osiris: "O great god who livest in thy divine Aten."[281] Since the Egyptian pictograph of the Aten is or , it should be clear that the term refers to a circular enclosure housing the sun-god.

But from the beginning Egyptologists have attempted to explain the Aten as the sun itself, translating the word as "the solar disk." Rather than clarify the Egyptian concept, such a translation only confuses the sun-god with his celestial dwelling. One Egyptologist, for example, states that the Aten was the sun, and that the sun was conceived as "the window in heaven through which the *unknown* god, 'Lord of the Disk,' shed a portion of his radiance upon the world."[282]

Having identified the Aten with the solar orb, the writer concludes that the god who resides in the Aten is an invisible god. Budge voices a similar opinion when he calls the Aten "the material body of the sun wherein dwelt the god Re"[283] as if Re himself were an invisible power and the solar orb the visible emanation and dwelling of the god.

It is impossible to reconcile such metaphysical interpretations with the concrete imagery of the Aten in Egyptian texts. The Aten is indeed the visible "window in heaven" and the "body of the sun," but this "window" or "body" is surely not the solar orb. It is, as the Aten sign (,) indicates, a *band* housing the sun. And the primeval "sun" is Saturn.

The same misunderstanding occurs in the case of the Egyptian terms *khu* and *khut.* The terms refer to "the circle of glory" or the "brilliant circle," conceived as a fixed *place*—"the place where the [primeval] sun shines forth." Though the Egyptians regarded this circle as the visible emanation of the creator, standard translations render *khu* as "Spirit" or "Soul" (implying an unseen power) and *khut* as "horizon" (suggesting the place of the solar sunrise). Both translations violate the literal sense of the words: literally, the *khut* (written with the sign) is the "Mount of Glory."

The circle of the *khu* or *khut* was the "glory," "halo," "nimbus," or "aureole" of the creator—what the Hebrews called the *Shekinah* (the encircling "glory" of God) and the Greeks *stephanos* (circle or crown of "glory"). Indeed, every figure of the creator stands within the luminous ring, always considered as his own emanation. The band is not only the god's "halo," but his *dwelling* at the cosmic centre.[284] "In diagrams of the Cosmos"

---

[279] Lacau, *op. cit.*, 43.

[280] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 43.

[281] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 382. *Tem* is also "the dweller in his disk." *Ibid.*, 94.

[282] Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 11. [Emphasis added.]

[283] *Gods*, Vol. II, 69.

[284] The Hebrew Shekinah was a "cloud of glory," recalled as the visible dwelling of God. Patai, *The Hebrew Goddess*, 138-40.

observes J. C. Cirlot, “the central space is always reserved for the Creator, so that he appears as if surrounded by a circular or almond-shaped halo.”[285]

Figure 8. Mithraic Saturn, with surrounding halo.

Figure 9. Japanese Buddha, with surrounding halo.

If one accepts the immediate sense of the archaic terminology, the enclosure was no abstraction. It was Saturn’s shining band. The Babylonian Anu—Saturn—was “the High One of the Enclosure of Life,”[286] his dwelling “the brilliant enclosure.” (Here, too, the enclosure becomes the place of the primeval “sunrise.”)[287] The Maori of New Zealand know the planet Saturn as Parearau, whose name conveys the meaning “circlet” or “surrounding band.” From this name of Saturn, Stowell concluded that the natives could *see* the present Saturnian ring with the naked eye—something all astronomers know to be impossible today.[288]

When the African Dogon draw Saturn they depict it as an orb within a circle—a fact which Robert Temple, in his book *The Sirius Mystery*, cites as evidence for seemingly inexplicable Dogon astronomical knowledge (which he contends was introduced to the ancients by extra-terrestrial visitors!). But no one asks whether the order of the solar system may have changed, allowing for a *once-visible* Saturnian band.

---

[285] *A Dictionary of Symbols*, 40. This is what a Babylonian text recalls as the “veil of gold in the midst of heaven”; the texts compare it to a crown. Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 274. To the Hindus this was the Khvarenah, “the Awful Royal Glory.” Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 143.

[286] Brown, *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations*, 185.

[287] Lenormant, *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, Vol. I, 13. The Babylonian sun-god “rises” within the enclosure, but “sets” within it also. Sayce, *op. cit.*, 171, 513. The subject is the central sun.

[288] Best, *The Astronomical Knowledge of the Maori*, 35-36.

The Lost Island

Figure 10. Classical artists often portrayed the great god's "halo" or "aura" as an arched mantle.

For the primeval enclosure the Egyptians employed a variety of interrelated symbols. The circle of the *khu* or Aten was nothing other than the Island of Fire, the Province of Beginning. A single spell of the *Coffin Texts* thus identifies Re as "the noble one who is at the land of the Island of Fire," but also calls Re the god "who is in his Aten."[289] The subject is not two different enclosures but one enclosure under two different titles.

And this identification of the central sun as an *enclosed* or *encircled* god appears to throw light on the endlessly repeated myth of the lost island. What the Greeks called Ogygia (the island of Kronos/Saturn in the farthest north) occurs under many different names the world over. The white island, the floating island, the revolving island—may not these primeval dwellings simply echo the Saturnian enclosure? One recalls the words of Dionysius of Halicarnassus:

Haste to the realms [rings] *of* Saturn

shape your course,

Where Cotyle's famed island wandering floats

On the broad surface of a sacred lake [the Abyss].[290]

Not of our earth, the lost isle floated in the sea of heaven. Japanese legends recall the ancient cradle of life as Onogora, a floating island ("the drifting land") which congealed on the waters. This was the isle of the Congealed Drop. Its location, states a native commentator, was originally the North Pole, from which it eventually moved to its present position.[291] O'Neill properly relates the Japanese isle to the floating island of Delos raised from the sea by Poseidon. Another name for this island was Ortygia, which O'Neill connects with the Latin *verto*, Sanskrit *vart*, "to turn."[292] Answering to the same tradition are the Floating Islands of the *Argonautica*, called the Strophades, or "Islands of Turning."

In the voyages of the Celtic divine hero Maelduin the adventurer encounters a fabulous isle in the midst of the sea: "Around the island was a fiery rampart, and it was ever wont to turn around and about it."[293]

Examples are too numerous to receive elaborate treatment here: the primeval, revolving islands of Rhodes and Corcyra, spun on the cosmic spindle; the primeval isle of the *Cyclos*, "wheel," which gave its name to the Cyclades; the "white island" of Zeus "in the midst of the sea"; the floating Hindu white island (*Shweta-dwipa*) at the polar centre; the lost Toltec "white island" of Tula, the centre of the world.[294]

Without exception, the shining, floating, revolving islands are esteemed as the place where history began and seem to answer to the same archaic tradition as the Egyptian Province of the Beginning, the revolving enclosure around the central sun. Is it possible that the ancients *saw* the mythical island—that the isle was not a geographical location, but a visible band enclosing Saturn? One must consider several closely related images, which also imply a visible band around the ancient sun-planet.

---

[289] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 102.

[290] Ant. Rom. lib. i cap. 23 quoted in Faber, *A Dissertation on the Cabiri*, 66. [Emphasis added.]

[291] O'Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 32.

[292] *Ibid.*, 32.

[293] Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 373.

[294] See O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 32-35, 615*ff.* Guenon, *Formes Traditionelles et Cycles Cosmiques*, 38; *Le Roi du Monde*.

The Egg

A hymn from the Egyptian *Coffin Texts* reads:

I was he who came into existence as circle,

he who was the dweller in his egg.

I was the one who began everything, the dweller in the primeval waters.[295]

Here the reference is to Atum as the creator of the egg, but other traditions say of the great god Ptah that he "created the egg which proceeded from Nun [the cosmic waters]."[296]

In the *Book of the Dead* the light god shines as "the mighty one within the egg."[297] "Homage to thee, O thou holy god who dwellest in thine egg."[298]

As the stationary light god "turns round about" his egg revolves around him. "I am the god who keepeth opposition in equipoise as his Egg circleth round."[299] "O thou who circlest round, within thine Egg."[300] Atum, as governor of the revolving egg, is the lord of Time, for "time is regulated by the motion around the egg," Clark tells us.[301]

Similar to the egg of Atum is the revolving sphere produced by the Orphic Chronos (Time, who is *Kronos*, Saturn):

The great Chronos fashioned in the divine

Aether [the fiery sea] *a silver egg.*

And it moved without slackening in a vast circle.[302]

To this revolving egg compares that of the Society Islands' creator Ta'oroa, "the ancestor of all the gods," who sat "in his shell in an egg revolving in endless space."[303]

---

[295] Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 74.

[296] Major Sandman Holmberg, *The God Ptah*, 119.

[297] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 577.

[298] *Ibid.*, 493.

[299] Renouf, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 108.

[300] *Ibid.*, 133.

[301] *Op. cit.*, 56.

[302] Guthrie, *Orpheus and Greek Religion*, 137, citing Orphic Hymn 71.

[303] Eliade, *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 413.

Figure 11. Ptah, fashioning the World Egg upon a potters wheel.

The same egg appears in Hindu myth, set in motion by the central sun Prajapati.[304] Mircea Eliade finds recollections of the cosmic egg in Indonesia, Iran, Phoenicia, Latvia, Estonia, West Africa, Central America, and the west coast of South America as well.[305]

Certainly, none of the later traditions improve upon the Egyptian texts which describe the egg as the enclosure round Atum-Re. But one can hardly fail to be impressed by the consistency of the tradition. And even the alchemists, much of whose teachings descended from Egypt, remember the connection of the egg with Saturn. They recall the egg as a fiery enclosure on the primordial sea—a circle with a "sun-point" in the centre (*i.e.*, ☉). This "world-egg is the ancient Saturn," they say.[306]

Is not this cosmic egg the band which the Egyptians called Aten*?* "O thou who art in thine egg, who shinest from thy Aten," reads the *Book of the Dead.*[307] Just as the Egyptian god-king is "the ruler of all that the Aten encircles," so also is he "powerful in the egg" or "ruling in the egg."[308]

In celebrating the primeval egg, the priests commemorated the island of beginnings. Budge summarizes the Egyptian tradition: "The first act of creation began with the formation out of the primeval watery mass of an egg, wherefrom issued the light of the day, *i.e.*, Re."[309] Concerning the identity of this egg and the island or "Province of the Beginning," the texts from the temple of Edfu remove all doubt: another name for the Province of the Beginning was "*the Island of the Egg.*"[310] Egyptian sources thus suggest this equation:

Aten (enclosure of the central sun)=Cosmic Egg=Primeval Island.

The Bond. To reside within the Aten is to reside "in the coil" or "in the cord." The Hieroglyphs depict the Aten as a cosmic bond or knot, indicated by an enclosure of rope with the ends tied together (*shen* 𓍶). (Thus *shen*, "coil," "bond," may be written with the determinative ☉, the Aten sign.) The bond signifies both a *boundary*—distinguishing the unified domain of the Universal Monarch from the rest of space—and *order*, marked by ceaseless, stable revolution round the central sun. It is the “bond of regularity” (*shes maat*), protecting the god-king from the surrounding waters of Chaos. Accordingly, the Egyptian king, considered as the incarnation of the Universal Monarch, takes up symbolic residence within the celestial cord, acquiring the great god’s power as “ruler of all that the Aten encircles.” The priests indicated this power of the terrestrial ruler by placing his hieroglyphic name within the *shen*-coil . And in order to accommodate longer names they eventually expanded the coil to an ovoid form, which yielded the familiar royal cartouche in which the names of all later kings were inscribed.

---

[304] Agrawala, *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 23*ff.*

[305] *Op. cit.*, 413-415.

[306] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 46-47; *Alchemical Studies*, 82.

[307] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 104.

[308] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 44.

[309] *Gods*, Vol. I, 291, summarizing the research of Brugsch.

[310] Reymond, *op. cit.*, 66.

Of this cosmic bond or knot the hieroglyphics offer many signs (among them). But each possesses the same root meaning as a protective boundary defining the original dwelling of the creator in heaven. The symbols convey the sense “to circumscribe,” “to set the bounds.” The creator, as the Measurer, prescribes the limits and measures out the sacred enclosure by “stretching the cord” round about, producing a unified dwelling (the primeval island), protected from the evils of Chaos and darkness.[311]

That the ancient mythmakers conceived Saturn’s enclosure as a cord binding together the god’s dwelling will explain why the Babylonian Ninurta, Saturn, holds the *markasu* or “bond” of the Cosmos. Langdon writes: “The word *markasu*, ‘band,’ ‘rope,’ is employed in Babylonian philosophy for the cosmic principle which unites all things, and is used also in the sense of ‘support,’ the divine power and law which hold the universe together.”[312] The Orphic poet thus celebrates Saturn (Kronos) as “Father of the blessed gods as well as of man . . . you who hold the *indestructible bond* . . .”[313]

It is easy for contemporary writers to speak of Saturn’s bond as an invisible principle holding “the universe together,” but in the original symbolism one *sees* the bond as the shining boundary of *Saturn’s dwelling* (the true Cosmos). It was not in Egypt alone that the cord signified the “edge” or “border.” What the Greeks called *peirata*, “rope” or “bond,” possesses the additional meaning “boundary.” The Latin *ora*, “cord,” means also “edge.”[314] A similar meaning attaches to the “noose” of the Hindu Varuna and Yama. The bond delimited and protected the sacred space occupied by the Universal Monarch, and its connection with the sign links it directly with Saturn’s island-egg.

The Garment. Mythmaking imagination also appears to have conceived the Saturnian band as the god’s girdle, collar, or belt. “I am the girdle of the garment of Nu, shining, shedding light,” states a hymn from the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*.[315] The great god is “the Girdled and the Mighty one, coming forth triumphantly.”[316] A common hieroglyphic determinative of the “girdle” or “collar” is the cord sign .

The Shield. All creation legends involve a struggle between the light god and the destructive powers of the Abyss (Chaos). The mythic enclosure provides the god’s defense against the turbulent waters which originally prevailed. The Egyptian enclosure, states Reymond, “had the function of protecting the sacred area from the evil coming from outside.”[317] Aten was one of the numerous Egyptian names for this defensive rampart in heaven: “The Aten makes thy protection,” states the *Litany of Re.*318 The cosmic egg serves as the same fortress: “I am Horus . . . , whose protection was made within the egg; the fiery blast of your mouths [the fiery water of Chaos] does not attack me.”319

---

[311] On the rite of “stretching the cord” see *ibid.*, 239, 308*ff.*

[312] *Semitic Mythology*, 109.

[313] De Santillana and von Dechend, *Hamlet’s Mill*, 132-133, citing Orphic Hymn 13. [Emphasis added.]

[314] Onians, *The Origins of European Thought*, 317.

[315] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 182.

[316] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 203.

[317] *Op. cit.*, 239.

The band of the Aten ⊙, as the protective boundary, was the great god’s “shield,” fending off what the texts call “the fiends” of disorder. It is this mythic history of the band which explains why, in the hieroglyphs, the shield sign ⧖ signified sacred space in general. All who resided within the shield’s enclosure occupied the safe and stable ground.

Figure 12. Mexican divinity holding a revolving cord-shield.

Cord, belt, and shield converge. The great father wears the cord as a girdle: it protects him as a shield—not merely in Egyptian symbolism, but in the international language of symbols. Why, for example, did divine figures from Babylonia to Greece to Mexico wear a sacred belt of rope, and why was the belt conceived as an impenetrable defense? Mexican illustrations of the divine shield show it to be *nothing more than a circle of rope.* It was certainly not practical experience which suggested the magical powers of a shield so conceived!

But the mythical imagery of the enclosed sun ⊙ is quite sufficient to explain such anomalies: the great god’s shield and the celestial cord signified one and the same protective enclosure.

If the ancients actually saw a band around Saturn, it is clear that the enclosure fostered diverse but interrelated mythical interpretations. A literal reading of Egyptian and other texts will confirm an extraordinary equation:

Enclosure of the central sun=primeval island=cosmic egg=cord (bond)=girdle (belt, collar)=shield.

Concerning the overlapping images much more needs to be said. The signs and the myths become comprehensible only when one relates them to the heavens of *ancient* times. Celestial island, egg, cord, girdle, and shield mean nothing more than a shining, revolving enclosure around the great god. Was this band real or imaginary? The question can be answered by exploring certain other aspects of the enclosure.

The Cosmos And The Divine Assembly

The sign of the enclosed sun ⊙ *portrays a circle of secondary lights revolving about the stationary god and forming Saturn’s Cosmos.* The mystic traditions of the great father present an apparent paradox: he is the god One, the *solitary* god in the cosmic sea; yet he is the All, embracing a company of lesser gods.

---

318 Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 52.

319 Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 126.

This is not a contradiction. In the first phase of creation the god brought forth a circle of secondary lights: *these issued directly from the god to become his visible limbs.* It is the fundamental character of the god One—the Heaven Man—to unite in a single "body" all the secondary powers of the Cosmos.

In Pythagorean, Neoplatonist, and Gnostic systems the primal figure is "the One, the All," whose symbol is the enclosed sun ⊙. Hindu mysticism offers the latter sign as the image of the primordial unity, and the same interpretation is repeated by the alchemists.

Today one naturally thinks of "the All" as *boundless* space. The terms which translators render as Cosmos, heaven, firmament, sky, or universe suggest to the modern mind a limitless arena of the sun, moon, planets, and constellations. But the original meaning of the All is *bounded* space—a *place* (*the* place, or place *par excellence*). The *Cosmos* simply means the province of the god One, who, as Lord of the All, governs and is the "whole and its parts." Having overlooked this restricted sense of the terminology the translators replace concrete meanings with ambiguity (in the guise of modern-sounding metaphysics). The once-visible dwelling of the central sun thus becomes, in the translations, "all existence."

Almost without exception the translators fail to notice 1) that the creator was Saturn, recalled as the central sun; and 2) that the sign of the central sun and the sign of the All were the same image ⊙. The true Cosmos was Saturn's enclosure. And nothing else is necessary in order for one to understand the ancient characterization of Saturn as the Heaven Man whose "body" *encompassed* the Cosmos. When Hildegard Lewy reports that the Sumero-Babylonian priests of Saturn regarded the planet-god as "the embodiment of the whole universe" the modern mind boggles: could the ancients have been so frivolous as to identify Saturn—the present, barely discernible point of light—with "the whole universe"? The answer is that Saturn was not a mere speck of light, but a gigantic globe at the polar centre; and the "universe" did not mean the open heavens but Saturn's dwelling, the *an-ki* or band of the Cosmos. Saturn's towering form "filled the an-ki."

Zoroastrian texts describe the original Cosmos as the body of Zurvan (Time, Saturn), a revolving wheel called the Spihr, which remained *ever in the same position.* The fall of the stationary wheel coincided with the collapse of the primordial era.[320] The image suggests, not unlimited "space," but the tangible configuration of the enclosed sun ⊙.

Accordingly, the later mystic traditions, as reviewed by Jung, describe the image ⊙ as the cosmic form of Adam, the Anthropos, the Original Man or Man on High—identified as Saturn.[321] Always the "body" of this primal man means "Cosmos."

The interrelated myths and symbols of Saturn's Cosmos receive remarkable clarification in the creation accounts and the liturgies of ancient Egypt. Though I briefly touched on the Egyptian texts in earlier discussions of the Heaven Man, amplification is necessary.

The Circle Of The Gods

Whether called Atum, Re, Osiris, Horus, Khepera, or Ptah, the Egyptian great god sits enthroned within a circle of secondary deities, satellites of the central sun. The gods are the Glorious Ones, Never-Resting Ones, or Living Ones; the Circle of Fire, Divine Chiefs, Apes of Dawn, Holy Ancestors, or Revolving Ones; the Followers of Horus, the Followers of Re, or the Followers of Osiris.

While the divine assembly possessed many names, its singular character stands out in the texts of all regions. There is no Egyptian company of the gods other than that which revolves round the central sun—a fact uniformly ignored by writers on Egyptian religion.

---

[320] Zaehner, *Zurvan: A Zoroastrian Dilemma*, 111*ff.*

[321] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 11, 12, 44*ff.*

The texts repeatedly confirm the same relationship of the assembly to the great god:

This is the Circle of gods about Re and about Osiris.[322]

The satellites of Re make their round.[323]

Thy followers circle about.[324]

Re maketh his appearance . . . with the cycle of gods about him.[325]

His Ennead [circle of gods] *is around about his seat.*[326]

I am Re amidst his Ennead.[327]

Go ye round about me, O ye gods.[328]

Hail to you, Tribunal . . . O you who surround me . . .[329]

Divine is your name in the middle of the gods.[330]

These gods shall revolve round about him.[331]

Glorious is your sah [brilliant form] *in the midst of the living Ones.*[332]

These are the "stars who surround Re."[333]

When it is light all faces adore him, the Brilliant One, he who arises [shines] *in the midst of his Ennead.*[334]

The dilemma for solar mythology is obvious: seeing the references to the great god in the above lines, no one would think of denying that the subject is a *visible power* (which all presume to be our sun). But the descriptions of the god's revolving companions are equally explicit. To what visible powers do *they* answer? No circle of lights appears to revolve about the body we call sun today.

Egyptian descriptions of the celestial assembly take us back to the remote age, separated from the present by a wide chasm. Every Egyptian cult possessed mythical accounts relating to the birth of the divine assembly in remote times. Despite numerous versions of the legend, it is impossible to ignore the coherent pattern. From a study of the numerous fragments, I offer the following reconstruction and interpretation of the myth.

---

[322] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 51.

[323] *Ibid.*, 258.

[324] Piankoff, *The Wandering of the Soul*, 12.

[325] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 264.

[326] Piankoff, *The Wandering of the Soul*, 27.

[327] Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 34.

[328] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 189.

[329] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 4.

[330] Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire*, 100.

[331] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 644.

[332] Hassan, *op. cit.*, 54.

[333] *Pyramid Text* 732.

[334] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 14.

In the primordial epoch the creator first appeared in the Abyss, alone, wandering, without a resting place. “I found no place to stand—I was alone,” states the god.[335]

After his appearance the god “uttered words” and these utterances possessed a *visible form* as the *kheperu*, the first things created. The *kheperu* “came forth from my mouth.”[336] These visible “words” flowed from the creator as the waters of Chaos, the sea in heaven upon which the creator floated or wandered. To reckon with the tradition in its own terms one must think of the primordial sea as a fiery “ocean of words” in heaven, emitted by the god in a prolonged and resounding explosion.

An Egyptian term virtually identical to *kheperu* is *pautti*, often translated as “primeval matter.” The *pautti* issued directly from the creator in the form of radiant speech, forming a fiery, watery mass. The creator brought forth this primeval matter and, paradoxically, “produced himself” in it (“I produced myself from the primeval matter which I made”).[337]

For a time the creator wandered in the luminous sea but eventually came to rest at a point of stability, the cosmic centre. Two events followed: an island congealed around the god as his “place of rest,” and the circle of the gods came into being, embracing the creator. The two events are synonymous.

From the *unorganized* sea of words—the *kheperu* or *pautti*—the creator brought forth an *organized* dwelling. He “gathered” the enclosure together as a barrier against the watery Chaos which he himself had created. The fiery particles of the newly formed enclosure composed the circle of the gods. That is, the gods stood on the enclosure’s “edge” or “border”—the “shore” of the celestial isle ⊙. In one text these are “the gods who belong to the Shore. They give an island to the Osiris NN.”[338] This was the Cosmos, formed by the “Council of the gods who surround the Island of Fire.”[339]

Vital to this interpretation of the myth is the identity of the divine assembly with the *kheperu* or *pautti* “uttered” by the creator. The secondary gods are themselves the shining “words” or “names” spoken by the creator and organized into a revolving circle. *Kheperu* thus means “the revolving ones,” while *pautti* signifies “the primeval ones,” who inhabit and give form to the Island of Fire.[340]

What, then, do the texts mean when they say that the *kheperu* or *pautti*, though erupting from the creator, “produced” the great god? The answer is clear-cut: the circle into which the constituent particles (visible words) congealed was the creator’s “body.” The god One “collected” or “gathered together” *his own limbs* (“I united my members”). He “produced himself.”[341]

The *Coffin Texts* depict the creator alone in the primeval sea:

> [I was] *he who had no companion when* [or until] *my name came into existence . . .*
>
> *I created my limbs in my “glory”*
>
> *I was the maker of myself . . .*[342]

---

[335] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 309.

[336] *Ibid.*, 308.

[337] *Ibid.*, 314.

[338] Piankoff, *Wandering of the Soul*, 87.

[339] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 192.

[340] Reymond, *op. cit.*, 119.

[341] Thus, the Litany of Re invokes the god as “the One Joined Together.”

[342] Clark, *op. cit.*, 74.

Literally, the limbs which the god produced are "my limbs of my khu." The phrase is of sweeping significance.

An Egyptian sign of the *khu* was the hieroglyph . The term, in explicit reference to the creator's "circle of glory" (halo, aura, Aten), means at once "words of power" and "brilliant lights." Depicted by the hieroglyph is the island of creation, around which are ranged the secondary deities (*khu*) produced through the creator's "speech." In bringing forth this divine assembly the creator became the maker of his own body. "O Khepera . . . whose body is the cycle of the gods forever," proclaims the *Book of the Dead*.[343] The same texts speak of "the souls of the gods who have come into being in [or as] the members of Osiris."[344]

The entire symbolism focuses on the celestial form of the enclosed sun . Individually, the fiery lights which compose the enclosure (island of the Cosmos) are the creator's "limbs" (plural), but as a unified circle, the assembly forms his "body" (singular). Correspondingly, the respective lights are the creator's multiple "names" or "words" ("the names of his limbs"), while as an organic whole (the All) the circle is the god's *singular* "Name." When the hymn cited above states that the god was alone "until my name came into existence," the meaning is concrete, not abstract. The creator remained alone until he brought forth the circle of the *khu*, his visible Name in heaven.

That the god's Name was his tangible dwelling—his circle of glory—is a fact absolutely essential to a comprehension of the enigmatic symbolism. "I have *made firm my name*, and have preserved it that I may have life through it."[345] The reference is to the enclosure of life, the Island of Fire "made firm" at the stationary cosmic centre, when the creator ceased to wander in the Abyss. Thus the hieroglyphic determinative of "name" (*ren*) is the *shen* sign , the sign of the celestial enclosure or circle of the Aten. *To possess a "name" is to reside within the* Aten . A single hymn from the *Book of the Dead* provides a remarkable summary of the related symbols:

I am the great god who came into existence by himself.

This is Nu who created his names paut neteru as god.

Who, then is this?

It is Re, who created the names of his limbs.

There came into existence in the form of the gods

who are in the following of Re . . .

Who, then, is this?

It is Tem [Atum] *in his* Aten.[346]

The self-generated god in the above lines is Nu, whose hieroglyph identifies him as both the source and the substance of the cosmic waters. The text says not only that the great god "created his names" but that these "names" are the *paut neteru*—the circle of the gods.

But why is the assembly called the paut, or primeval matter? It is because the revolving gods erupted directly from the creator, eventually forming the organized enclosure. The secondary gods, as words or names spoken by the creator, composed the god's own "limbs," so that the text can say the god "created the names of his limbs.” That these “came into existence in the form of the gods who are in the following of Re” means simply that they formed the revolving assembly.

---

[343] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 39.

[344] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 561.

[345] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 116. [Emphasis added.]

[346] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 29.

Who, then, is this god who shines within the circle of his own limbs? “It is Atum in his Aten.” The priests could not have stated more emphatically the equation of the celestial assembly and enclosure of the primeval sun . Here is the formula set forth by the Egyptian texts:

Cosmos (enclosure of the central sun)=primeval matter (sea of words) in its organized form=circle of the gods=limbs or body of creator=creator’s visible Name.

That the circle formed by the divine assembly is the cosmic *dwelling* of the creator is a truth affirmed not by one local cult alone, but by all streams of Egyptian ritual. Below I list a few of the Egyptian words that connect the assembly with the enclosure of the central sun:

Khu. In the creation, as noted above, the *khu* erupt from the creator as “words of power” or “brilliant lights.” This “circle of glory” the body of Osiris or Re composes the god’s celestial home, the Aten . Thus *khus* means “to fashion a dwelling.”

Figure 13. The body of Osiris forming the circle of the Tuat, the Cosmos.

Tuat. The term refers to the “resting place” of the creator at the summit. The hieroglyphic symbol of the Tuat shows the light god within a celestial band which the texts equate with the circle of the Aten, “The Mysterious Soul, which rests in its Aten, rests in the Tuat of Re.”[347] In the hymns and in art, the Egyptians depicted the Tuat as the *body* of Osiris or Re. But Tuat means also “the circle of the gods”; the enclosure, the “body” of the sun-god and the divine assembly are synonymous.

Shen, shenit, sheniu, shenbet. The *shen* signs and portray the central sun’s enclosure as a cord of rope—the bond of the Cosmos. *Shen* means “to revolve,” in reference to the revolving band of the Aten. (The *shen* sign and the Aten sign function as interchangeable glyphs.) Hence, the *sheniu* is the great god’s cosmic “chamber” while the *shenit* are the “chiefs” or “nobles” on high who travel the circuit round the *shen.* *Shenbet*, meaning “body,” is the *bet* or “place” marked out by the *shen.* Again, enclosure, “body,” and assembly converge.

Tchatchat. The *tchatchat* are the “chiefs” or “heads”—the council of gods revolving around the stationary sun. But *tchatchat* also signifies “boundary,” “enclosure,” or “holy domain.” The circuit traversed by the chiefs is the boundary of the celestial enclosure .

---

[347] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 29; see also Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 29.

Rer, reri, rert. While *rer* means “to revolve or encircle,” *rert* means “men”—the inhabitants of the primordial domain. The *reri* are “the revolving ones” (comparable to the *kheperu*), who collectively enclose the sacred space. Accordingly, *rer* possesses the additional meaning “the enclosed domain.”

Paut, pat. The secondary gods are the *pautti*, the “primeval matter” which (as stated above) congealed into the creator’s revolving dwelling. Paut thus signifies the creator’s “body.” Obviously related are the *pat*, the primeval gods whose name conveys the sense “to go round like a wheel or in a circle.” It is no coincidence that the hieroglyphic determinative of the *pat* is an egg : the circle around which the *pat* revolve is the egg of the Cosmos, and this egg is the “body” of the god Seb.

Tchet, tchetu. While *tchet* means “to speak,” *tchetu* signifies “words,” “things spoken.” In the creation the great god uttered visible “words” in the form of the lesser gods. That the creator’s words became his dwelling is reflected in the term *tchet*, the “house” or “chamber” of the great god. *Tchet* also means “body.”

Shes, shesi. An Egyptian name of the cosmic bond is *shes*, written with the hieroglyph . The Tuat (, dwelling of Re or Osiris) is the *shes maat*, the “bond of regularity” (or of stable, ceaseless revolution). The texts also speak of celestial *shesi*, divine “warriors” who protect the great god. They “protect” the god because, collectively, they form the defensive rampart, the cosmic shield.

The language and symbolism of the celestial assembly reveal an underlying idea connecting the separate traditions. The secondary gods are not merely ill-defined “companions,” or “assistants” (as so many Egyptologists seem to assume); rather, they possess concrete form as the enclosure of life, the very enclosure which the priests celebrate as the island of beginnings, the revolving bond, or the cosmic egg (all figures of the Cosmos).

The Cosmos, in other words, has nothing to do with “all existence.” The concept relates to an *organized domain*—“the whole and its parts”—fashioned by the creator out of previously unorganized cosmic debris (primeval matter). An Egyptian word for the unified domain is *temt*, which means “all” or “complete” and also “to collect,” “to gather together.” Clearly related is the word *Temtiu*, one of the names of the secondary gods. It is the secondary gods themselves that the creator “collects” or “gathers together” to form the cosmic island.

Pertaining to the same root concept are the terms *tema*, “to unify, join together”; *temi*, “shore,” “bank,” or “border”; and *temen*, “all,” “totality.” The *unified All* (Cosmos) is contained within the border of the enclosure, and the *border* is the *shore* of the cosmic island .

The Saturnian band is thus the *pathway* traversed by the secondary gods. The gods revolve around the shore, or around the bond, or around the egg. “Every god who is on the border of your enclosure is on the path . . . ,” states a *Coffin Text*.348

The testimony could not be more explicit. The road traveled by the secondary gods is the *uat*, the “way” or “path,” denoted by the glyph . But the same glyph signifies the *tcher*, “boundary.” The *path* of the gods and the *boundary* of the unified Cosmos (the All) are synonymous. Thus the phrase *er tcher* (“to the *tcher*” or “to the boundary”) means “all,” “the whole.” The great god, as *Neb-er-tcher*—“he who rules to the boundary”—is the ruler of the whole, lord of the revolving Cosmos. It is the same thing to say that he governs “all that the Aten [ ] encircles.” The whole range of images challenges orthodox interpretations.

But the symbolism of the Cosmos and divine assembly reaches far beyond Egypt. Do not all supreme gods sit enthroned within the circle of secondary divinities? Ninurta, Kronos, El, Yama, Huang-ti and every other Saturnian figure has his “sons,” “councilors,” “spies,” “followers,” “assistants,” or “warriors” seated round about him. The Mesopotamian sign is a self-evident image of the celestial assembly. It is this Cosmos—

---

348 Lacau, *op. cit.*, 33.

not boundless space—which Saturn's "body" encompassed. What the mystics knew as "the universe" organized within Saturn's "bond" or "cord" (Babylonian *markasu*) becomes meaningful only as the visible Saturnian band, or circle of the gods.[349]

The Great Mother

The sign of the enclosed sun ☉ *also portrays Saturn, the generative Seed, within the womb of the mother goddess. As the female personification of the Cosmos, the great mother is inseparable from Saturn's "body."*

The mysteries of the mother goddess give rise to an endless debate. What is the fact in nature which will explain the cosmic union of Isis and Osiris, Tammuz and Ishtar or Kronos and Gaea? One scholar after another puzzles over the goddess' varied forms, finding her everywhere and nowhere. If to one writer she is the fertile earth around us, to another she is the moon and to another "the universe," the "sky," or the morning star. The diverse interpretations seem to suggest that there were many goddesses with a singular figure—the heavenly consort of the great father. Here, for example, is one statement, offered as the words of the Egyptian goddess Isis to Apuleius:

> *. . . My name, my divinity is adored throughout the world, in divers manners, in variable customs, and by many names. For the Phrygians that are the first of all men call me the Mother of the gods of Pessinus; the Athenians, which are sprung from their own soil, Cecropian Minerva; the Cyprians, which are girt about by the sea, Paphian Venus; the Cretans, which bear arrows, Dictynian Diana; the Sicilians, which speak three tongues, infernal Prosperpine; the Elusinians, their ancient goddess Ceres; some Juno, others Bellona, others Hecate, others Ramnusie . . . ; and the Egyptians, which are excellent in all kind of ancient doctrine, and by their proper ceremonies accustomed to worship me, do call me by my true name, Queen Isis.*[350]

In their cosmic rites the Egyptians seemed unwilling to distinguish Isis from such local figures of the great mother as Nut, Hathor, Mut, or Neith. Each local goddess bore identical or similar epithets ("the Eye of Re," "the mother of Re," "the Lady of the Holy Land," etc.).

But if the ancients acknowledged a common personality of the goddess, what was that personality's underlying trait? There is one universal attribute: the great goddess possesses the form of an enclosure—a circle or womb—housing and "giving birth to" the great father. Neumann perceived this trait when he described the goddess' "elementary character" as "the Great Round" or "the world-containing and world-creating uterus."[351] From his exhaustive study of the great mother G. S. Faber concluded that *every goddess* appears as a protective enclosure sheltering the great father. Of this truth there is no shortage of evidence.[352]

The god Tammuz sits within the womb of Tiamat, "the mother of the hollow." "Mother-womb" is the epithet of the Sumerian goddess Gula, while Ishtar's name means "womb."[353] Hindu sources describe the great mother as the *yoni* or "womb" and the great father as "he enveloped in his Mother's Womb."[354] Agni is the male god "shining in the Mother's eternal womb."[355]

---

[349] It can hardly be doubted that the assembly in heaven served as the prototype of all sacred assemblies on earth: just as the king represented the Universal Monarch, his councilors or assistants answered to the circle of secondary divinities around the central sun. Among the Greeks, notes Onians, "a circle appears to have been the ritually desirable form for a gathering." *Op. cit.*, 444. Similarly, the Sumerian GIN, "to assemble," possesses the sense "to circle, turn, enclose." Langdon, *A Sumerian Grammar*, 216. This aspect of the sanctified assembly is, of course, universal. (Even today we speak of a circle or band of assistants, followers, or companions without really knowing why.)

[350] Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, 43.

[351] *The Great Mother*, 227.

[352] *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*.

[353] Allegro, *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross*, 92.

Similarly, the Norse Odin is "the dweller in Frigg's bosom."[356] In Orphic doctrine the receptacle housing the great father is the goddess Vesta. The Gnostics remembered the old god as the "Ancient of Days who dwelt as a babe within the womb."[357] Among the Maori the great mother is the "Shelter Maid" or "Haven Maid."[358]

Descriptions of the primeval womb show that the ancients recall the goddess as a *visible* band—what Hindu texts call the "golden womb,"[359] and Babylonian "the jeweled circlet" (a title of Ishtar).[360] The imagery pertains directly to the enclosed sun ☉. In Hinduism the latter sign depicts "the male seed-point or *bindu* in the cosmic womb," states Alan Watts.[361] "The Father is like the centre (*Nabhi*) of the circle and the Mother the circumference (*Paramanta*)," notes Agrawala.[362] The same male-female symbolism of the enclosed sun ☉ occurs in European stone carvings discussed by V. C. C. Collum.[363] That the Hebrews regarded the *Shekinah* (the creator's encircling "aura," "anima," or "glory") as "the Mother"[364] leads to the same conclusion: the great god's *halo* was his own spouse. Accordingly, the Tibetan ritual invokes the great god as "the centre of the Circle, enhaloed in radiance, embraced by the (divine) Mother."[365]

This conception of the great mother receives compelling support from ancient Egyptian sources. The Egyptian sun-god has his home within the womb of his mother and consort, the "Great Protectress."[366] Of Re, the *Book of the Dead* proclaims, "Thou shinest, thou makest light in thy mother."[367] Elsewhere Re appears as the sun "in the womb of Hathor."[368]

Osiris shines forth from the enclosure of his mother Nut: "Homage to thee, King of kings, Lord of lords, Prince of princes, who *from the womb of Nut* hath ruled all the world."[369] The abode of Horus is his mother Hathor, whose name means “the House of Horus.” And the goddess Nekhebet is said to personify the primeval abode of the sun.[370]

---

[354] Agrawala, *The Thousand Syllabled Speech*, 115.

[355] Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 23.

[356] MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 174.

[357] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 281.

[358] Best, *op. cit.*,

[359] Eggeling, *The Satapatha Brahmana*, Part II, 394.

[360] Brown, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 268.

[361] Preface to Perry, *op. cit.*

[362] *Thousand Syllabled Speech*, 127.

[363] "Die Schöpterische Mutter Göttin," 221-324.

[364] Patai, *op. cit.*, 239.

[365] Evans-Wentz, *The Tibetan Book of the Dead*, 127.

[366] *Pyramid Text* 838.

[367] Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 4.

[368] Bleeker, *Hathor and Thoth*, 48.

[369] Budge, *From Fetish to God*, 30; see also *Pyramid Text* 1607. [Emphasis added.]

As earlier noted, the Egyptians portrayed the celestial dwelling as the *shen* bond . But this enclosure was really the womb of Nut, states Piankoff.[371] (Thus the goddess Shentit takes her name from the *shen* bond.)

The mother goddess was not our earth, not the open sky, not the moon, but the *dwelling of the central sun*, the enclosure of the Aten : “My Aten has given me birth,” states the god-king.[372] This direct connection of the mother goddess with the sun’s enclosure will explain why the Aten sign , though serving as the glyph of Re, also denotes “mistress,” in reference to the god’s celestial consort.[373] The god’s mistress was his own emanation, his halo of “glory” or “splendour.” The priests who invoked the great god’s *khut* or “circle of glory” also celebrated the *goddess* Khut, who was the same circle.

Residing within the enclosure, the central sun is the shining seed impregnating the great mother. “I am indeed the Great Seed,” declares Re.[374] “O Re, make the womb of Nut pregnant with the seed of the spirit which is in her,” reads a hymn of the *Pyramid Texts*.[375] The same texts celebrate “the womb of the sky with the power of the seed of the god which is in it.”[376] And again, “Pressure is in your womb, O Nut, through the seed of the god which is in you.”[377]

In his coming forth within the cosmic womb the sun “copulates with” or “impregnates” the mother goddess, and this relationship expresses itself in the language. The Egyptian *nehep* means “to copulate” while *nehepu* means “to shine.” Though *beka* denotes “the coming forth” of the sun, the same word means “pregnant.” Thus the union of the primal pair is renewed daily (or with each “dawn” of the central sun).

But the same coming forth receives mythical interpretation as the *birth* of the light god. Nut is at once Re’s *spouse* and his *mother*, who “bears Re daily”:[378]

> *I am exalted like that venerable god, the Lord of the Great House, and the gods rejoice at seeing his beautiful comings forth from the womb of Nut.*[379]
>
> *His birth is wonderful, raising up his beautiful form in the womb of Nut.*[380]
>
> *Hail, Prince, who comest forth from the womb.*[381]

---

[370] Brugsch, *Religion*, 324.

[371] *Mythological Papyri*, 6.

[372] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 92.

[373] See, for example, the use of the sign (here) in Budge, *Papyrus of Ani*, 71.

[374] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 258.

[375] *Pyramid Text* 990.

[376] *Pyramid Text* 532.

[377] *Pyramid Text* 1416.

[378] *Pyramid Text* 1688.

[379] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 148.

[380] Budge, *From Fetish to God*, 416.

[381] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 260.

Conception and birth are thus confused. The impregnating Seed (father) is also the Child. It is this equation which yields Re's title as "Man-Child."[382] He is the prototype of "the son who impregnates his mother," or the "father who gives birth to himself."

But the confusion does not end here, for the mother goddess, as the great father's encircling aura, is herself the *emanation* of the masculine power. The solitary god brings forth the womb of heaven unassisted. In this sense the goddess is the great father's "daughter," so that if one considers the entire range of possibilities, three relationships to the goddess—father, husband, and son—are united in one figure.

Imagery of this sort runs through all of the religious texts of ancient Egypt. Amon-Re is "he who begets his father."[383] The goddess Hathor becomes "the mother of her father and the daughter of her son."[384] Atum-Kheprer "brought himself into being upon the thigh of his divine mother."[385] In the ritual of the Karnak temple Re's "daughter" Mut encircled "her father Re and gave birth to him as Khonsu."[386] The same goddess is "the daughter and mother who made her sire."[387]

Equation of father and son is explicit in the case of Osiris and his "son" Horus. *The Pyramid Texts* describe Osiris shining "in the sky as Horus from the womb of the sky."[388] "The king is your seed, O Osiris, you being potent in your name of Horus who is in the sea."[389] The gods, in the *Book of the Dead*, recall the ancient time of Horus "when he existed in the form of his own child."[390]

Because the terrestrial king symbolically acquires the attributes of the Universal Monarch, the rites show the local ruler uniting with the mother goddess and reproducing himself within the cosmic womb. He announces that he has been "fashioned in the womb" of the great mother,[391] and after invoking "the womb of the sky with the power of the seed of the spirit which is in it," then proclaims: "Behold me, I am the seed of the spirit which is in her."[392] "O Nut . . . it is I who am the seed of the god which is in you."[393]

Frankfort deals with the subject at length, showing that the king's impregnation of the mother goddess and simultaneous birth in the womb was central to Egyptian ritual. The king "enters her, impregnates her, and thus is borne again by her"[394] exactly as the great god himself.

If the king receives his authority on earth through personification of the Universal Monarch, it is through the same identification that he attains the heavenly abode of the goddess upon death, taking up his residence within the sheltering womb as an Imperishable One. In a hymn to Nut, King Pepi beseeches the goddess, "Mayest thou put this Pepi into thyself as an imperishable star."[395] "Mayest thou transfigure this Pepi within thee that he may not die."[396]

---

[382] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 180.

[383] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 177.

[384] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 431.

[385] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 134.

[386] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 180.

[387] *Ibid.*, 177.

[388] Budge, *Osiris: the Egyptian Religion of Resurrection*, 68.

[389] *Pyramid Text* 1505.

[390] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 337.

[391] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 42.

[392] *Pyramid Text* 532.

[393] *Pyramid Text* 1416-17.

[394] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 177.

Frankfort comments: ". . . the notion of a god who begets himself on his own mother became in Egypt a theological figure of thought expressing immortality. The god who is immortal because he can re-create himself is called Kamutef, 'bull of his mother.'"[397] The king aspires to duplicate the feat of the Universal Monarch, giving birth to himself in the womb of Nut. Though the divine marriage and its imitation in kingship ritual involve many complexities and enigmas, the underlying theme remains clearly defined. Symbolically, the king has his home in the cosmic womb; he simultaneously impregnates the goddess and is "born" by her. The source of the ritual is celestial, for it reenacts the First Occasion when the great father, the fiery Seed, took to wife the band of "glory" which congealed around him. The sign of the primordial union is everywhere before us but rarely recognized. It is the sign of the enclosed sun ☉.

Womb And Thigh

In connection with the symbolism of the mother goddess one notes that the "womb" is generally synonymous with the "thigh" or "lap." When ancient reliefs depict the god or king on the lap of the great mother, they refer to the primeval union, in which the father of the gods resides within the goddess' protective enclosure.

An Assyrian tribute to Assurbanipal reads: "A meek babe art thou, Assurbanipal, whose seat is on the lap of the Queen of Ninevah [Ishtar]."[398] Thus the Sanskrit yoni, the female enclosure and dwelling of the great father, may be translated either "lap" or "womb." The Latin word for "thigh"—*femen*, *feminis*—means "that which engenders."[399] A similar connection occurs in Egypt, where *Khepesh*, "thigh," means the womb of Nut housing Osiris or Re.

Many gods—in Hindu, Greek, and European myth—are thus "born from the thigh," like the Egyptian Khepren who "brought himself into being upon the thigh of the divine mother."[400]

This overlapping symbolism of womb, lap, and thigh will be met more than once in the following sections.

Womb And Cosmos

To identify the mother goddess as the band of the enclosed sun ☉ is to equate the goddess with Saturn's Cosmos, the revolving company of the gods. The goddess Nut is "the representation of the cosmos," states Piankoff.[401] Thus while the Egyptian *khut* signifies the "circle of glory" formed by the secondary gods, Khut also means the mother goddess. And though the *shenit* are the "princes" in the divine circle, the goddess is *Shentit;* both words derive from the *shen*, the bond of the Cosmos.

---

[395] *Ibid.*, 177; see *Pyramid Text* 782.

[396] *Ibid.*, 177.

[397] *Ibid.*, 180.

[398] Ward, *The Cylinder Seals of Western Asia*, 154.

[399] Onians, 182.

[400] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 134.

[401] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 6.

Figure 14. The Man-Child on the lap of the mother goddess. **(a)** Cyprus;

Figure 14. (b) Egypt;

Figure 14. (c) India;

Figure 14. (d);

Figure 14. (e) British goddess Gwen.

The religious texts confirm the equation. “He is the one who cometh forth this day from the primeval womb of them [the secondary gods] who were before Re,” reads the *Book of the Dead*.[402] “I have come forth between the thighs of the company of the gods.”[403] What the *Book of the Dead* calls “divine beings of the Thigh”[404] means the celestial assembly, the secondary gods who collectively form the womb of cosmic genesis.

But the interrelated symbolism does not stop here. Every Egyptian priest knew that the mother goddess was the revolving egg housing the central sun. Indeed, the hieroglyphic image of an egg at the end of the divine name means “goddess.” Of Osiris the goddess Isis declares: “His seed is within my womb, I have molded the shape of the god within the egg as my son who is at the head of the Ennead.”[405] The god within the womb is the god within the egg, who is the god ruling the Ennead (circle of gods).

By the same equation the womb becomes the garment or belt girdling the sun: the deceased king prays that he may be *girt* by the goddess Tait,[406] or announces that “My kilt which is on me is Hathor.”[407] In the case of the goddess Neith the womb becomes the shield. (The shield is the hieroglyph for Neith.)[408] Though the symbols of the primeval enclosure differ, each is presented as a form of the great mother, whose entire character answers to the visible Saturnian band ☉.

---

[402] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 265.

[403] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 594.

[404] *Ibid.*, 392.

[405] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 125.

[406] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 205.

[407] *Pyramid Text* 108.

The Hermaphrodite

In the *Great Magical Papyrus of Paris*, dated around the first half of the fourth century A.D., appears the Oracle of Kronos. The recommended prayer invokes Kronos as “Lord of the World, First Father,” but also bestows on the god the peculiar title “Man-Woman.”[409] Kronos is Saturn, the primeval sun. To what aspect of the god did this title refer?

In Saturn the primal male and female principles unite, yielding the *hermaphrodite*, or *androgyne.* Few of the preeminent deities of antiquity are free of this duality. The Sumerian Anu, Ninurta, Tammuz, and Enki; the Hebrew El; the Hindu Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva; the Iranian Zurvan; the Mexican Quetzalcoatl—all reveal a female dimension. Their spouse is never wholly separated from their own body.

The Egyptians esteemed Atum as “that great He-She,”[410] while celebrating Amen as the “Glorious Mother of gods and men.”[411] The Egyptian word for this primeval unity is *Mut-tef*, or “Mother-Father.” From what has been established in the previous pages concerning the symbolism of the enclosed sun ☉ there can be little doubt as to the concrete meaning of the *Mut-tef.* The word signified the organized Cosmos,[412] the central sun and its enclosure, considered as the male and female parents united in a single personality: the great father’s *body* was also the god’s *spouse*, the womb of heaven.

This duality finds expression in the Egyptian term *khat*, which may be translated either “body” or “womb.” The man-child Horus, who dwells in the womb of Hathor, is *Khenti-Khati*, at once “the dweller in the body” and “the dweller in the womb.” *The Litany of Re* proclaims that “the khat [body] of Re is the great Nut,” the mother goddess.[413]

Egyptian artists showed the *body* of Osiris forming the circle of the Tuat, the abode of Osiris or Re.[414] But every student of Egyptian religion knows that the Tuat, house of rest, was the womb of Nut.

The hermaphrodite, then, personifies the original Cosmos, which means Saturn and his visible dwelling ☉. G. S. Faber, in his comprehensive study of ancient ritual, notes that the great father (“the Intelligent Being”) “was sometimes esteemed the animating Soul and sometimes the husband of the Universe, while *the Universe was sometimes reckoned the body and sometimes the wife of the Intelligent Being*: and, as the one theory supposed a union as perfect as that of the soul and body in one man, so the other produced a similar union by blending together the husband and wife into one hermaphrodite.”[415]

---

[408] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 451.

[409] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 147.

[410] Clark, *op. cit.*, 41.

[411] Énel, *Les Origines de las Genese et l’Enseignement des Temples de l’Ancienne Egypte*, 13, note 4.

[412] *Ibid.*, 11*ff.*

[413] Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 54.

[414] Schafer, “Altägyptische Bilder der Auf- und Untergehenden Sonne,” 20.

[415] *Origins*, 165. [Emphasis added.]

With Faber’s assessment it is impossible to disagree, so long as one remembers that to the ancients, the “universe” (Cosmos) meant Saturn’s home, not a boundless expanse. That Saturn’s Cosmos acquired a dual character as the god’s “body” and as his “spouse” is sufficient to explain the primordial Father-Mother.

The hermaphrodite or androgyne, Eliade tells us, is “the distinguishing sign of the original totality [*i.e.*, the All].” Its customary form is “spherical,” he notes.[416] We thus arrive at the following equation:

Band of the enclosed sun=Cosmos (island, egg, cord, girdle, shield, circle of the gods)=body of the great father=womb of the great mother.

---

[416] *Patterns*, 423. See also Eliade, *Myth of the Eternal Return*.

V: The Holy Land

Ancient ritual the world over conceived the terrestrial ruler as the incarnation of the Universal Monarch. By the same principle each local city or kingdom became a transcript of the god-king's primeval domain. The sanctified territory on earth was laid out according to a *cosmic* plan, revealed in remote times.

On this priority of the cosmic dwelling all major traditions concur. A celestial Sumer and Akkad preceded the organization of the actual Mesopotamian kingdoms. And such settlements as Eridu, Erech, Babylon, and Lagash took their names from a heavenly city occupied by the central sun.

Every Egyptian town—Heliopolis, Herakleopolis, Memphis, Abydos, Thebes, Hermopolis—mirrored a prototype, a "city in which the sun shone forth in the beginning." So did Egypt as a whole, according to the ritual, reproduce the dwelling gathered together and unified by the creator.

Hebrew tradition knew a heavenly Jerusalem which gave its name to the terrestrial city; and what the Hebrews claimed of their city, the Muslims claimed of Mecca. The Chinese declared their kingdom to be a copy of the celestial empire, and each capital city imitated the same plan.

In unison, diverse traditions of the Near East, Europe, Asia, and the Americas recall a Holy Land *par excellence*, founded and ruled by the creator himself. From this Saturnian kingdom every nation took instruction in the ideals of kingship and in the proper organization of the sacred domain.

The Mother Land

In the creation myth the great god raised a circular plot of "earth" from the cosmic waters. The enclosure was Saturn's paradise—the kingdom of heaven—appearing as a vast wheel or throne turning about the stationary god.

Saturn's Earth[417]

In seeming reference to the fertile soil around us, the Latin poet Virgil celebrates the "mother of harvests" and "the mighty mother of men." But he gives the great goddess of fertility an intriguing title: "Saturn's Earth."

Why *Saturn's* Earth? The curiosity increases when one notices that the Sumerian An, Enki, and Ninurta—all identified as Saturn—rule "in the *Ekur*." The translators render *Ekur* as "earth."[418] So also did Chinese astronomy deem Saturn the planet of the "earth,"[419] while the Phoenician Saturn is said to have dwelt "in the centre of the earth."

The Egyptian "earth god" is Seb (or Geb). That is, writes Budge, "the earth formed his body and was called the 'house of Seb.'"[420] But if Seb's body was the earth, why did the Greek historian Plutarch translate Seb as Kronos (Saturn)?[421]

---

[417] Virgil, *Georgics*, ii. 173*ff*.

[418] Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 189*ff*.; Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 99.

[419] De Saussure, "Le Systeme Cosmologique Sino-Iranienne."

[420] *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. II, 94.

What connection of the planet Saturn and the “earth” might have justified this identity? Of course the common English translation, “earth,” naturally suggests to the modern mind our planet suspended in space. But to the ancients no such detached view was possible. They knew only a terrestrial *region*, however large or small. In archaic ritual, the terms which experts translate as “earth” mean literally “land,” “place,” “province”; and the only region which the ancients considered worthy of sanctification as the “land” was their *own* unified state or nation—all else belonging to the “barbarians.”

But every sacred “land” organized around a religious-political centre proclaimed itself a copy of the *primeval* dwelling in heaven. Thus the Egyptian *ta*, often rendered as “earth,” refers first and foremost to the heavenly province of the creator—the *ta ab* (“pure land”), *ta nefer* (“beautiful land”), *ta sheta* (“mysterious land”), *ta ankhtet* (“land of life”), or *ta ur* (“great land”). Such terms are synonymous with *ta Tuat*, the “land of the Tuat,” the cosmic dwelling of Osiris or Re. In naming terrestrial Egypt *ta*, the Egyptians gave their homeland the name of the cosmic “place” *par excellence.*

Ta signifies the cosmic dwelling “gathered together” by the creator. That the Egyptians conceived the *ta* as the “body of Seb” corresponds with everything we have learned of the primeval enclosure. Of equal significance is Seb’s hieroglyphic symbol, the egg . The myths say that the egg of Seb is that from which the sun first shone forth (*i.e.*, it is the same as the revolving egg of Atum, the egg of the Cosmos). This so-called “world egg” has no connection with our planet.

Nor did the Sumerian *Ekur*, “earth,” denote our planet. As observed by Jensen, Langdon, and others, the *Ekur* appears as the celestial home of the creator.[422] Åke Sjöberg and E. Bergmann state the identity bluntly.[423] The Sumerians knew this celestial domain as the *ki*—“the place” or “the land”—invoked as *ki-sikil-la*, the “pure land” or “pure place,” and *ki-gal*, “great land.”[424]

The Sumerian *ki* was the Assyrian *Esara*, the supreme “place.” Rather than familiar geography, the term refers to the created land of *cosmic* beginnings. Thus *Esara*, according to Jensen, was used with special reference to “the earth as it appeared *at the creation.*”[425] Equivalent is the “celestial land” of Hindu myth,[426] or the “pure land” of the Buddhists.[427] No greater mistake could be made than to seek a *geographical* location of this lost land.

Ancient cosmology locates the primordial “place,” not “down here,” but at the celestial pole, the centre and summit. In Egyptian thought, states Clark, the celestial pole is “that place” or “the great city.” Here dwells the “Master of the Primeval Place.”[428] When the god in the *Coffin Texts* proclaims, “I am the creator who sits in the supreme place,” the reference is to the polar abode, Clark tells us.[429] Iranian astronomy drew on the same tradition when it designated the celestial pole as *Gah*, which means simply “the place,” the dwelling of “the Great One in the Middle of the Sky.”[430]

---

[421] Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride*, XII.

[422] Jensen, *op. cit.*, 188*ff.*; Langdon, *op. cit.*, 102.

[423] *The Collection of the Sumerian Temple Hymns*, 136.

[424] Van Dijk, “Le Motif Cosmique dans la Pensée Sumérienne,” 49.

[425] *Op. cit.*, 199. [Emphasis added.]

[426] Lenormant, *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, Vol. II, 21.

[427] Guenon, *Le Roi du Monde*, 95.

[428] Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 58-59, 222.

[429] *Ibid.*, 58-59.

[430] De Saussure, “Origines Chinoise de las Cosmologie Iranienne,” 303.

In Iranian cosmology it is *Saturn* who occupies the polar *Gah*, “place”—just as it is Saturn who, in the form of the polar An, rules the Sumerian “pure place.” Hence, one could properly call this domain “Saturn’s Land,” or “Saturn’s Province.” And this simple relationship enables us to understand why the ancients, who regarded their own sacred territory as a duplication of the celestial dwelling, extolled the fertile soil as “Saturn’s Earth.”

The Egyptian Paradise

A clarification of the Egyptian concept will help to illuminate the general tradition. One of the features of the Egyptian *ta*, “land,” which has encouraged its identification with *our* earth is its mythical character as a garden or field of abundance. To reside in the *ta* is to live in the *Garden of Hetep*. Many descriptions of this primeval domain do indeed sound very much like a *terrestrial* paradise. The land is filled with wheat or barley, and the inhabitants drink of beer and cool waters. In the *Book of the Dead*, the deceased king announces, “I know the names of the domains, the districts and the streams within the Garden of Hetep . . . there is given to me the abundance . . .”[431] The *Pyramid Texts* depict the deceased king drinking oil and wine and living off “the bread of eternity” and “the beer of everlastingness.”[432]

The Egyptians deemed the meadow of peace and plenty at once the *ancestral* land and the *future* home of those yet to pass beyond. Many writers, of course, recognize the *Garden of Hetep* as an early—perhaps the earliest—mythical expression of the lost paradise. Its underlying nature, however, has yet to be penetrated by the conventional schools.

To anyone willing to consider the entire context of Egyptian evidence, it should be clear that the primeval land produced by the creator and imbued with overflowing abundance was celestial. Those who attain the *Garden of Hetep* reach the heaven of the creator. The deceased king in the *Pyramid Texts* goes “to see his father Osiris.” He announces: “I have gone to the great island in the midst of the Sekhtet Hetepet [*Garden of Hetepet*] on which the swallow-gods alight; the swallows are the Imperishable Stars . . . I will eat of what you eat. I will drink of what you drink, and you will give satiety to me at the pole . . . You shall set me to be a magistrate among the Khu, the Imperishable Stars in the north of the sky, who rule over offerings and protect the reaped corn, who cause this to go down to the chiefest of the food-spirits who are in the sky.”[433]

Let us analyze this important text, which combines several Egyptian interpretations of the celestial garden. As used above, the term *Hetepet* signifies “abundance” or “food offerings.” so that the Garden of Hetepet is the Garden of Abundance or Garden of Food Offerings in heaven. Hetepet possesses a root sense of “gathering together” or “uniting” (much like *temt*, “collecting,” “gathering together”), a meaning which is vital to the symbolism as a whole.

Hetepet is, of course, inseparable from *hetep*, “rest,” “standing in one place.” The *Garden of Hetepet* is the *Garden of Hetep*. One can reasonably speak of the Garden as the dwelling of *rest and abundance* (*i.e.*, “peace and plenty”), gathered together by the creator. The symbolism is, as I shall attempt to show, much deeper than standard interpretations would suggest.

In the midst of the celestial garden is the “great island,” whose inhabitants—the swallow-gods—are the *Akhemu-Seku* (“never-corrupting” ones), here translated as “the Imperishable Stars.” The Egyptians also called these divinities *Akhemu-Urtu* (“never-resting” ones), conventionally identified as circumpolar stars who, revolving around the polar axis, never sink beneath the horizon. But the foregoing text identifies these gods as more than “stars” (in the modern sense of the word). They are the Khu (“words of power” or “light spirits”), which erupted directly from the creator. *There is a vast body of evidence to show that these secondary light gods were themselves the abundant “food” or “offerings” of the celestial garden and that this is what the above hymn means when it speaks of the “food-spirits.”*

---

[431] Renouf, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 193-94.

[432] Budge, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 119.

[433] *Pyramid Text* 1215-20.

The flowing beer (or wine) and the field of grain (wheat, barley, corn) are, in fact, indistinguishable from the primeval sea of words (secondary gods) which sprang from the creator and which the great god gathered together to form the enclosure of the primeval island—his own "body." On the "great island in the midst of the Garden of Hetepet" the fiery particles (Khu, *Akhemu-Urtu*) "alighted," collectively forming the enclosure. If, in one myth, the god's shining "words" congealed into the island, in another, the isle was produced from the luminous "grain of heaven." *The "words of power," the "grain," and the "company of the gods" represented interrelated mythical interpretations of the primeval matter ejected by the creator.* In the imagination of the Egyptians the creator collected the grain from the celestial field (sometimes called the *Sekhet-Sasa* or "Field of Fire"), and produced the enclosure as the "granary of the gods"—the house of abundance which every king hoped to attain upon death. The grain served as the "dough" from which the creator fashioned his dwelling; and it is this crucial relationship which explains the interconnected meanings of the Egyptian term paut or *pautti*—signifying at once the "primeval matter" (company of gods) and "dough" or "bread." The creator organized the company of gods (the grain) into the revolving Cosmos, conceived as a celestial land of abundance.

Primeval matter=creative "words"=secondary gods=grain of heaven (dough, bread).

In their ceremonies the Egyptians reenacted the creation on a microcosmic scale by fashioning ritual dough cakes used in offerings to the dead. These cakes of paut symbolized the created "land" or "earth," produced from the overflowing grain of heaven. Thus, while the Egyptian *ta* means "land," *ta* also means "bread" or "cakes." Such interrelated terminology pervades the Egyptian language. A review of this usage reveals two consistent principles:

1. The lesser gods (children, servants, assistants) coincide with the "dough"—the beer and grain which erupted from the creator. (Prior to unification as the "land," or Cosmos, the fiery particles compose the sea of Chaos and thus may be termed "fiends" or "demons" of darkness.)

2. The organized dwelling ("land," "city," "place," "domain") coincides with the "granary" and the molded "cake" or "bread" of heaven.

Here are a few of the many examples:

The "children" of the great god are the *pert*, "things which appear"; but *pert* also means "grain." The texts describe the beer and grain (the children) as *pert er kheru*, "appearing at [or as] the words" of the creator. Thus, while *akhib* means "to speak," *akhabu* signifies "grain," and the inhabitants of the heavenly dwelling are the *Akhabiu.*

Similarly, *seru* means at once "grain" and "princes" or "chiefs"; both uses are inseparable from *ser*, "to command," and *serui*, "flame." Properly understood the "grain" and the "princes" refer to the same fiery material mythically perceived as the creator's flaming "commands."

Though *heq* signifies the "ale" or "beer" spit out by the creator, it also means "to command."

If *aut* is "radiance" or "glory" (compare *khu*), the same word signifies "abundance." But *aut* derives from *au*, "children." The abundant wheat and barley—*i.e.*, the light spirits who glorify the creator—are brought forth as the god's own offspring.

Henu means the "servants" of the great god, who "go round about" (*hennui*); but *henu* also denotes "abundance." The lush growth of the celestial abode is the *hen*, but the same word signifies the "glory" or "majesty" of the ruling divinity. From the notion that the celestial lights "glorify" the creator, it is a very short step to the idea that they "praise" him or "sing prayers" to him. Thus *hen* means also "to praise."

Accordingly, the word *tebhu* means "abundance" but also "prayers." (One should not attempt to distinguish the "prayers" from the praying gods; those who glorify the great god *are* the glory.)

So also does *senem* mean, at once, "abundance" and "to pray," "adore."

While "grain" is *shert*, the related term *sherriu* signifies the "little gods."

Fenkhu means "abundance," but the same word denotes the inhabitants of the celestial land.

Ahau means "food" but also the dwellers in the "land."

Hetepet means "abundance," while the *hetepetiu* are the secondary gods. *Khefa* is "food," but the *Kheftiu* are the "fiends" of Chaos (eventually organized into the unified dwelling).

Betu means the "grain" or "barley" of heaven, but also the "demons."

Just as the secondary gods compose the "limbs" or "members" of the central sun, so does the grain. An Egyptian term for "grain" is *atpet*, manifestly derived from *at*, "limb," and *pet*, "heaven." The grain becomes the "limbs of heaven" (or of the Heaven Man).

Thus *nepu* signifies "limb" or "flesh," while *neper* means "grain." The primeval abode is *Nepert*, *i.e.*, the land formed from the grain.

Gathered together by the creator, the grain becomes the enclosure of the primeval land—the "granary" or the "bread" of the gods (symbolized by the dough cakes employed in the rites of the dead). Thus, while *shen* (,) denotes the "bond" or "cord" in which the great god dwells, *shena* means at once "granary" and "body" (the god's body encompasses the grain). *Shenti* also means "granary," but the same word signifies "garment." (The garment—belt, girdle, collar—is the organized band of grain.) Symbolizing this celestial enclosure are the *shens*, or sacrificial cakes.

Peq is a name of the celestial land; and the great god's garment (=land) is *peqt.* But *peqt* also means the "cake" of the gods.

Similarly, *sesher* is the god's garment, while *seshert* denotes the cake or bread of heaven.

Qefenu is a name of the god's dwelling, while *qefen* signifies the sacred "cake."

Nes means both "grain" and "fire." (The field of grain is the field of fire.) In the rites the grain is fashioned into the *nest* or sacrificial cake. But *nest* also denotes the "throne" of the creator. (Creator's throne=primeval land.)

The *benet* are light-spirits who accompany the creator. Helping to explain the term is the related word *bennut*, signifying the "matter" or "fluid" which erupted from the solitary god. This primeval matter forms the sacred cake, for "cake" or "bread" is *bennu. Bener*, a name of the created land, derives from the same root.

The "food-spirits" gathered together to form the primeval enclosure are the "builders" of the god's home. Thus, the "beer" which flows from the creator is *aqet*, but *aqet* also denotes a "builder" or "mason"—*i.e.*, one of the *aqetu* who fashion the celestial dwelling.

The language repeats the same connections again and again:

1. Secondary light gods=celestial abundance (grain, beer, etc.)

2. Unified dwelling of god=celestial abundance (grain, land, body, garment, beer, etc.) gathered into organized form, *i.e.*, as "cake" or "bread."

It is clear that, in Egyptian ritual, the sacred cakes meant much more than mere "bread." The cakes were symbols of the great god and his creation—the Garden of Abundance. The celestial prototype of the cake was the island of beginnings, which the creator organized from a previously chaotic sea of "beer and grain." That the Egyptians conceived the unified "land" or celestial "bread" as the *body* of the creator is crucial to the symbolism; in eating the cake, or in drinking the sanctified beer, the initiates symbolically enjoyed the abundance of the primeval age, or, what is the same thing, they consumed the body of the creator. (I shall not distract from the present discussion by elaborating parallels in later religious symbolism.)

The interrelated terminology identifies the primeval *ta*, "land," with the *enclosure of the central sun* . The Egyptians knew that the primeval garden lay within the circle of the Aten. ("Thou makest thy creations in thy great Aten," reads the *Litany of Re*.)434 Thus the Egyptians denoted the garden of Re by combining the Aten glyph with the glyph for "garden": .

The significance of such imagery seems to have escaped mythologists: *the lost "homeland" of global lore was the original dwelling of the sun-god.* Of the Egyptian *han* or "homeland," Reymond writes: "The Sun-God was believed to operate from his birthplace . . . In its essential nature the primeval sacred domain was the very place from which the Radiance issued first."435 This "sacred domain" was the island of *ta*, the celestial earth.

Egyptian sources term the created domain *Neter-ta*—the "Holy Land" or "God's Earth." Here occurred the primordial dawn. That is, it was from Neter-ta that the stationary sun shone forth. A hymn to Amen-Re, for example, invokes the sun-god as the "Beautiful Face, who comest [shines] from Neter-ta."436 No wonder that Egyptologists confuse this Holy Land with the terrestrial east—the place of the *solar* sunrise!

The exact counterpart of the Egyptian Neter-ta is the Sumerian *Dilmun*, the "clear and radiant" dwelling of the gods, ruled by the Universal Monarch Enki. Dilmun, according to Sumerian hymns, is "the place where the sun rises."437 And many thousands of miles from Mesopotamia the natives of Hawaii recall an ancestral land, *Tahiti Na*, "our peaceful motherland: the tranquil land of Dawn."438 So also did the Hindus, Persians, Chinese, and many American Indian tribes conceive the lost paradise as the place of the "sunrise."439

The World Wheel

That Saturn, the primeval sun, first shed its light from the circle of the created "earth" will explain why the celestial land often appears as a great *wheel* revolving around the stationary sun. It may be called alternately the "world wheel," "world mill," or "chariot." And this turning wheel of the Holy Land is consistently represented by the signs ☉ and ⊕.

Hindu descriptions of the cosmic wheel affirm that the ancient sun stands at the centre, as the *Chakravartin* or "wheel-turner." From the stationary pivot of the wheel, the Universal Monarch "directs the movement without participating in it himself," states Guenon.440

On the Buddhist iconography of the world wheel, Coomaraswamy writes: "He whose seat is on the lotiform nave or navel of the wheel, and himself unmoving sets and keeps it spinning, is the ruler of the world, of all that is natured and extended in the middle region, between the essential nave and the natural felly."441 The organized "world" lies within the ever-turning rim ☉. The Buddhists regard this sacred domain as both an ancestral paradise and "the situation of the Goal,"442 the heaven reached by the deceased.

---

434 Budge, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 340.

435 Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*, 84.

436 Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 7. But one of the Egyptian phrases for the sacred land is *Neter-ta-Mehti*, rendered by Brugsch as "das nordliche Gottesland"—"the northern land of the gods." This, states Massey, was "the polar paradise in heaven, not an elevated part of our earth." See Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 378.

437 Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament*, 24.

438 Melville, *Children of the Rainbow*, 10.

439 See for example the review by Gaster, *op. cit.*, 24*ff.*

440 *Op. cit.*, 18.

441 Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 27.

442 *Ibid.*, 42.

Buddhist myths say that a plot of “land” congealed out of the cosmic waters to form a band around the great father, becoming the “golden wheel”: “The surface of these waters, just as in the Brahmanical cosmology and in Genesis, is stirred by the dawn wind of creation. The foam of the waters solidifies to form the golden circle (*Kancana-mandala*) or ‘Land of Gold’ (*Kancana-bhumi*), the same as Hsuan-tsang’s ‘golden wheel’ and representing ‘the foundations of the earth’ . . . The surface of the Land of Gold is the Round of the World.”[443]

That the world wheel stood at the stationary pole is confirmed by the Buddhist account of the primeval “wheel king”—owner of a “wheel whose steadfastness was the measure of his fitness to rule.” He was “a universal king,” “a righteous king ruling in righteousness, lord of the four quarters of the earth.” (The four quarters were the four divisions of the wheel ⊕.) The myth states not only that the revolving wheel remained in a stationary position, but that a fall from its fixed place would mean the death of the ruler. “If the Celestial Wheel of a Wheel-turning king shall sink down, shall slip down from its place, that king has not much time to live . . .”[444] That is, of course, exactly what happened: the wheel fell, the Universal Monarch died, and the world was thrown into confusion.

One is reminded of the Zoroastrian world wheel called the Spihr. This ever-turning wheel was the “body” of Zurvan, or Time, the planet Saturn. Throughout the primordial epoch, the wheel of the Spihr remained in one spot; and its fall coincided with the collapse of the prosperous age.[445]

In many myths Saturn’s earth-wheel acquires the poetic form of an enormous mill churning out abundance. An old Icelandic tradition, for example, knew the mill as the fabulous possession of Amlodhior Frodhi under whose rule mankind enjoyed peace and prosperity. Recruited by Frodhi to work the mill were two giant maidens, who day and night turned the massive wheel, grinding out gold and happiness. But like all fabled wheels, Frodhi’s mill eventually broke down, causing the death of the great monarch.

As shown by de Santillana and von Dechend, Frodhi was the planet Saturn.[446] The authors (whose work is titled *Hamlet’s Mill*) review widespread traditions of the cosmic mill—from Iceland to Finland to India to Greece—finding many unexpected connections with the same remote planet. (Not once, however, do the two writers wonder whether the tradition of the Saturnian wheel may have originated in the actual observation of a band around the planet.)

As the possession of the Universal Monarch, the mill lies in the farthest north and is regularly identified with the “pole” or “axis” of the world. The Finnish *Kalevala* locates the mill (here called the *Sampo*) on a great rock in “North Farm,” the polar garden of plenty. The hero Ilmarinen:

> *. . . forged the Sampo skillfully: on one side a grain mill, on the second side a salt mill, in the third a money* [*i.e.*, gold] *mill.*
>
> *Then the Sampo ground away, the lid of many colours went round and round.*[447]

This cosmic mill, too, broke down, bringing wholesale disorder. And if the Finnish *Sampo* is a late and fanciful version of the mill, the linguists now recognize the *Sampo’s* connection with the older *skambha* of Hindu ritual.[448] In the *Atharva Veda* the *Skambha* (meaning “pole”) appears as the “golden embryo” and the “frame of creation," a mill-like edifice "which poured forth the gold within the world." The Vedic hymn equates the mill (*Skambha*) with the whole creation. The body of the *Skambha* houses the life elements and the gods; it is the "ancient one" or "great monster," whose veins are the four quarters of the world (*i.e.*, ⊕). That the cosmic mill is at once the Universal Monarch's body and the created paradise will immediately explain why, in the general tradition, the collapse of the great wheel coincides with the death of the god-king and the sinking of the lost land into the waters of the Abyss.

---

[443] *Ibid.*, 52.

[444] Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 131.

[445] Zaehner, *Zurvan: A Zoroastrian Dilemma*, 111-13, 136, 222.

[446] De Santillana and von Dechend, *Hamlet’s Mill*, 86*ff.* As soon as one compares the imagery of Saturn’s revolving wheel with corresponding images of the Saturnian isle, egg, cord, and girdle, one is forced to think beyond coincidence. The varied symbolism hearkens to a singular form. When Snorri Sturluson speaks of Amlodhi’s churning wheel as the “Island Mill,” he preserves (probably unwittingly) an important connection: in the original myth the turning island and the mill wheel were the same thing.

[447] Magoun, *The Kalevala*, 55-61.

[448] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 111.

Nothing so confuses the underlying theme as the habit, begun long ago, of conceiving the primordial wheel, or island of "earth," in terrestrial terms. Could the landscape familiar to the ancients have produced the many interrelated images of the turning wheel?

The One-Wheeled Chariot

The great god sits enthroned within the celestial earth as in a one-wheeled chariot. Thus, in Scandinavian rock carvings the symbol ⊙—the universal sign of the world wheel—may either appear alone or as the wheel of a celestial wagon. All ancient sun-gods seem to own such a wheel or chariot. The one-wheeled chariot of the Hindu Surya clearly answers to the same cosmic form as "the high-wheeled chariot" of the Iranian Mithra.[449] An early form was the famous sun wheel of the Babylonian Shamash.

Figure 15. The wheel of Shamash, held in place by a cord.

Figure 16. Triptolemus riding on a single wheel.

---

[449] Keith, *Indian Mythology*, 138.

Figure 17. The wheel of Ixion.

Figure 18. Hebrew Yahweh on a single wheel.

Greek art depicts the great father Dionysus seated upon a one-wheeled chariot, much like that of the old god Triptolemos. In the *Astronomica* of Hyginus one finds Triptolemos remembered as “the first of all to use a single wheel.”[450] Argive tradition held that the father of Triptolemos was Trochilos, “he of the wheel,” whom some identified as the inventor of the first chariot. The Greeks of Chios knew the primeval god Gyrapsios, “he of the round wheel.”[451] Obviously, none of these wheels or wheel gods can be separated from the famous wheel of Ixion, set loose in a celestial conflagration. The Hebrew Yahweh similarly sits upon a single wheel.

While modern commentators offer competing interpretations of the cosmic wheel—the chariot of the gods—few stop to notice the link with Saturn. Cook, for example, after a prolonged study of ancient wheel symbolism, acknowledges Kronos (Saturn) as the old wheel or “disk” bearer, but is not inclined to draw any conclusions from this.[452] The “inventor” of the wheel, or “chariot,” was the now-distant planet. This is what the Chinese tell us when they report that the god-king Huang-ti, who is identified with the planet Saturn, was the first to use the wheeled chariot. In more than one of the illustrations presented here the cosmic wheel serves as the *throne* of the ruling god. L’Orange calls this “the throne chariot,” noting many examples in the ancient Near East.[453] One of the divinities to sit upon such a chariot (or wheel-throne) is the Hebrew Yahweh, whose seat is “the wheel of the throne of his glory.”454 (The god’s revolving throne is the circle of “glory”—that is, his own “halo.”)

---

[450] Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion*, Vol. I, 215, 225.

[451] *Ibid.*, 290.

[452] *Ibid.*, 298.

[453] L’Orange, *Studies in the Iconography of Cosmic Kingship*, 48*ff.*

If later art showed the god *on* the wheeled seat, the original motif has the god in it, for the throne *revolves around the god.* Here, for example, is a verse from the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, revealing a little-noticed aspect of the cosmic throne: “O my Seat, O my Throne, come ye to me, and go ye round about me, O ye gods. I am a *sah* [luminous body], therefore let me rise up [shine] among those who follow [go around] the great god.”455 When the deceased king attains the celestial throne he stands within the revolving circle of the gods, the “followers” of the central sun. The Edfu texts call this the “throne-of-gods,” for *the divine assembly itself forms the wheel of the throne.*456

Figure 19. The Celtic god of the wheel.

Figure 20. Anglo-Saxon Seater, with wheel.

Denoted by the throne or wheel-throne is the plot of *ta*, “land,” which first emerged from the cosmic sea. The creator brought forth the revolving circle of earth as his “primeval seat.” Reymond writes: “The Earth was caused to emerge from Nun by virtue of the radiance of the Sun-God who was believed to dry up the water

---

454 Scholem, *Jewish Gnosticism, Merkabah Mysticism and Talmudic Tradition*, 26.

455 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 189.

456 Reymond, *op. cit.*, 5, note 23. The Throne, as observed by Énel, is not merely the seat of the god, but an enclosure. The primeval sun “dwells” in his throne. *Les Origines de la Genèse, et l’Enseignement des Temples de l’Ancienne Egypte*, 221. The most common Egyptian word for “throne” is *ast*, often written with the determinative (here) which means “chamber,” “abode.” *Ast* signifies the god’s “place”—not just any place, but the place—the *ast ab* (“place of the heart”), *ast urt* (“great place”), *ast hetep* (“place of rest”), or *ast maat*, (“place of regularity”).

around his primeval seat."[457] This plot of created "earth" was the *han* or "homeland," which the texts call *neset*, the "throne."[458]

The implications reach far beyond Egypt and bear directly on the wide-ranging myths of cosmic chariots and primeval mills noted above. What one usually regards as two separate themes—the "chariot of the sun" and the "world wheel"—converge in a single image: the wheel of Saturn, the primeval sun. That the ancients denoted the "sun wheel" and the created "earth" by one and the same sign was no coincidence.

The City Of Heaven

The Saturn myth tells us not only that the planet-god ruled the Holy Land as the first king but that he founded the first city. Saturn's "city" means "Saturn's Earth."

The great god lives

fixed in the middle of the sky . . .

dweller in the city.[459]

This is the pronouncement of the Egyptian *Coffin Texts.* The cosmic city is the Primeval Place: "I have come to this city, the region of the 'First Time' to be . . . a dweller in 'this land.'"[460] Thus the Egyptians invoke a celestial Memphis, "the divine emerging primeval island"; a celestial Thebes, "the island emerging in Nun which first came into being"; a celestial Hermonthes, "the high ground which grew out of Nun," or "the egg which originated in the beginning";[461] a celestial Elephantine, the "city in the midst of the waters," or the "throne of Re";[462] and a celestial Abydos, the *ta-ur* or "Great (Primeval) Land."[463]

The integrated symbolism—though at times complex—never departs from the underlying idea of an enclosure around the central sun. The imagery concerns "the original state of the world," rather than a terrestrial city, states Clark.[464] Depicted is the city of the "dawn" or of the "sun's coming forth." The tradition is universal. Mention Erech and historians naturally think of the ancient city in southern Mesopotamia. But the Erech invoked in the ritual is no terrestrial habitation. It is:

Erech, the handiwork of the gods,

The great wall touching the sky,

The lofty dwelling place established by Anu.[465]

The creator An (Anu)—who is the planet Saturn—dwelt in the *uru-ul-la*, "the city of former times"—not a city on earth but the embryo of the Cosmos, according to Van Dijk.[466] Ruling from the "midst of heaven," An shines as “the hero of the sacred city on high.”[467] This is the “city founded by An . . . Place where the great gods dine, filled with radiance and awe . . .”[468] The hymns call it “the great city,” and “the *place where the sun rises*.”[469]

---

[457] *Op. cit.*, 83.

[458] *Ibid.*, 84.

[459] Clark, *op. cit.*, 59.

[460] *Ibid.*, 177.

[461] Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 380, note 21.

[462] Pritchard, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*.

[463] Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 273. The name of the celestial city of Pe means simply "seat" or "throne."

[464] *Op. cit.*, 53.

[465] Pritchard, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts*, 47.

[466] *Op. cit.*, 13, 20.

All Mesopotamian traditions describe the celestial city as the original garden of abundance—“the dais of plenty . . . the pure place . . . Its heart like a distant shrine . . . Its feasts flow with fat and milk, are rich with abundance.”[470]

Thus did the Sumerians recall the lost land of Dilmun as “the primeval city”:

Dilmun, the city thou hast founded . . .

Lo, thy city drinks water in abundance.

Lo, Dilmun drinks water in abundance.[471]

Egyptian and Mesopotamian descriptions of the cosmic city make clear that this habitation was the same enclosure as the lost paradise, and the identity persists in Hebrew and Muslim thought, which continually associates Adam’s paradise with a *cosmic Jerusalem.* The light of the Jerusalem above was provided by God himself. “And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto glass.”[472] One of the Psalms glorifies the celestial Jerusalem as “Sublime in elevation in the uttermost north . . . the City of the King.”[473] The heavenly city lay at the cosmic centre; it was the first thing created by God; and it was surrounded by the primeval sea. The image, observes Faber, is “plainly borrowed from the garden of Eden.”

The Hebrews also preserved the tradition of a primordial city of Tyre, similarly identified with Eden.[474] In Ezekiel we read:

“O Tyre, you have said,

‘I am perfect in beauty.’

Your borders are in the heart of the seas . . .

You were in Eden, the garden of God;

every precious stone was your covering.”[475]

This equation of the cosmic city and the original paradise finds numerous parallels in other traditions. The Persian *vara* fashioned by Ahura Mazda is at once the first city and the lost paradise.[476] The “all-containing city of Brahma” at the pole merges into the paradisal plain of Ila;477 the Imperial City of the Chinese Shang-ti coincides with the mythical paradise of Kwen-lun;478 while the Mexican lost city of Aztlan (“surrounded by waters”) and the Mayan lost city of Tula (the “enclosure” in the sea) both appear as gardens of abundance.479

---

[467] Langdon, *Sumerian Liturgies and Psalms*, 297.

[468] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 2.

[469] *Ibid.*, 89. [Emphasis added.]

[470] Kramer, *From the Tablets of Sumer*, 87.

[471] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 195. The same can be said of the celestial city of Eridu, which like Dilmun served as the primeval home of Enki. Eridu, “teeming with fertility,” floated on the cosmic sea Apsu, and more than one writer has asserted, with Pinches, that Enki’s city was “as a garden of Eden.” Sayce, *Gifford Lectures*, 386; Albright, “*The Mouth of the Rivers*.” Pinches’ comment is quoted in Thompson, *The Devils and Evil Spirits of Babylonia*, lvi.

[472] Revelation 21:11.

[473] Psalm 48:2.

[474] *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, 350-51.

[475] Ezekiel 27: 3-4; 28: 13 (RSV).

[476] Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta*, I, 16-19.

A coherent pattern unifies what are often assumed to be unrelated myths and symbols: the created “earth,” the lost paradise, the wheel of the sun, the revolving throne, and the cosmic city. While the mythical formulations vary, all point to the same band housing the central sun.

Surely it is of significance that, while these images are often dissociated in later myths, they constantly overlap in the earliest versions. The Aztecs may have forgotten that the lost city was the throne of the creator; and perhaps many Greek cults no longer remembered that the Island of the Blessed was the turning wheel of the sun, but such connections are central to the world’s oldest cosmologies.

The interrelationships are clearly evident in the image of the mother goddess, who unites in a single personality the varied aspects of the celestial earth: paradise, wheel, throne, and city.

The Egyptian great mother—whether called Isis, Nut, Hathor, Mut, or Neith—is *nebt en neter ta*, “the Lady of the Holy Land” or “the Lady of God’s Earth.” The “island of earth,” according to the *Pyramid Texts*, lies “between the thighs of Nut.”480 If one permits the Egyptian concept to illuminate later symbolism of the “mother earth” one sees that the supposed distinction between earth goddesses and sky goddesses lacks foundation. “God’s Earth” means Saturn’s Earth, and this *mother* land, circumscribed by the womb of the goddess, is the enclosure of the central sun ☉.

Nor can one fail to notice that the hieroglyph for the goddess Nut ⊗—“the holy abode”—is the form of a wheel and an obvious prototype of the “world wheels” so common to Eastern symbolism. Isis, in the classical age, was also symbolized by a wheel.481

Mesopotamian cults represented the goddess Ishtar, “the womb,” by a wheel. The Hindu goddess Rta is the “wheel of law” controlling the cosmic cycle, while the goddess Ila personifies the *chakra* or world wheel. The name of the Celtic goddess Arianrhod means “silver wheel.” One is reminded also of the iynx wheel of Aphrodite and the wheels of Tyche, Nemesis, and Fortuna, all of which appear to reflect a common idea. As the stable, ever-turning circle of the Cosmos, the goddess eventually became the abstract “wheel of Mother Nature.”482

And when one realizes that the wheel served as the great father’s revolving throne it can come as no surprise to discover that, in the archaic terminology, “throne” and “goddess” are synonymous. “The seated great mother,” states Neumann, “is the original form of the ‘enthroned goddess,’ and also of the throne itself. As mother and earth woman the Great Mother is the ‘throne’ pure and simple . . . The king comes to power by ‘mounting the throne’ and so takes his place on the lap of the Great Goddess, the earth—he becomes her son.”483

---

477 Faber, *op. cit.*, 326, 341.

478 See the discussion of the Chinese polar mount Kwen-lun.

479 Alexander, *Latin American Mythology*, 114, 178.

480 *Pyramid Text* 188.

481 Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 271. Cook’s entire discussion (Vol. I, 253-83) assumes the wheel to be synonymous with the solar orb.

482 Nuemann, *The Great Mother*, 238.

483 *Ibid.*, 98.

Figure 21. The goddess Nemesis, with wheel of fate.

In the Hindu kingship rites reviewed by Hocart, “the king is made to sit on a throne which represents the womb.”484 But the identity of the throne and womb is as old as human language: the Egyptian hieroglyph for Isis, the womb of heaven, is a simple throne .

But the same mother goddess encloses the cosmic city. The determinative of “city” in the Egyptian hieroglyphs is simply the sign of the “holy abode” , the goddess Nut. The *Pyramid Texts* invoke the goddess, “in this your name of ‘settlements,’ . . . in this your name of ‘City.’”485 while the *Book of the Dead* extols the great mother as “Lady of terrors, lofty of walls.”486

The Egyptian city-goddess finds a close parallel in the Babylonian goddess Ura-azaga, whose name means “brilliant town.”487 Tyro, the mother goddess of the Tyrians, gave the Greeks their word *tyrsis*, “walled city.”488 To enter the celestial city is to find shelter in the primeval womb. Thus the refuge of Delphi is “the womb” and Jerusalem “the city of the heavenly womb.”489

In the New Testament (Book of Revelation) one finds a fascinating equation of primeval goddess and primeval city. In his vision, John beholds “the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication . . . and upon her forehead was a name written, ‘MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.” Who was this “mother of harlots”? The angel explains: “And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.”490 The language points to the ancient rites of kingship, in which every local ruler took as his *consort* the city (womb) on the cosmic waters.

---

484 Hocart, *Kingship*, 80. The significance is too often missed: after informing us that the throne was the glyph of Isis, Budge continues, “but we have no means of connecting it with the attributes of the goddess in such a way as to give a rational explanation of her name, and all derivations hitherto proposed must be regarded as mere guesses.” Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 202. But is it a “mere guess” to connect the Isis-throne with the enclosure of the primeval womb? (The Egyptian *ast*, “throne,” means “enclosure,” as we have seen.)

485 *Pyramid Texts* 178, 1605.

486 Accordingly, the sun in the cosmic womb appears as the “boy in the city.” Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 274.

487 Jastrow, *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 59.

488 Graves, *The Greek Myths*, 223.

489 Allegro, *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross*, 133.

490 Revelation 17: 1-2, 5, 18.

In ranging over the myths and symbols of the created earth, paradise, wheel, throne, and city, one thus remains in the shadow of a single mother goddess, who contains within her womb the first organized domain in heaven, the island of Saturn's Cosmos ☉.

The Enclosure As Prototype

In dealing with the myths and symbols of the Holy Land one must reckon with the distinction—not always spelled out in ancient literature—between the celestial prototype and the terrestrial copy. Every sacred kingdom or city derives its character from the primeval dwelling, so that whatever was said of the enclosure above was also said of the imitative form constructed by men.

"From the concordant testimony of all the traditions," writes Guenon, "a conclusion emerges very clearly: the affirmation that there exists a 'Holy Land' par excellence, prototype of all other 'Holy Lands,' the spiritual centre to which all other centres are subordinated."[491]

Through identification, the sacred history of the race or nation merges with the history of the gods, for each organized community viewed itself as a duplication of the celestial "race." Each line of historical kings leads back to a first king who is not a man, but Saturn, the supreme power of heaven; in the same way, the race as a whole traces its ancestry to a generation of gods or semi-divine beings who inhabited the "earth" raised in the creation. By this universal tendency, Saturn's paradise becomes the *ancestral* land, the place where history began. Does not every nation claim that its ancestors descended from a race of gods, who occupied a happy garden at the centre and summit?

It was with the utmost seriousness that the ancients laid out their first political settlements, taking the cosmic habitation as the *prescribed plan.* The purpose was to establish Saturn's kingdom on earth, repeating the creator's defeat of Chaos and founding a central authority whose power extended to a protective "border" separating the kingdom of light from the powers of darkness and disorganization (the "barbarians").

Accordingly, the first sacred cities were organized as circular enclosures around the ruling lord. Ritual requirements superseded practical considerations, and even when geography and growth prevented or distorted the purely circular form, the sacred city was still *conceived* as a revolving enclosure. Symbolically, every Egyptian city lay within the shield or protective border of Nut (the "Great Protectoress"). The Babylonian map shows the land as a circle around a centre. "Here," concludes Eliade, "the earthly abode is the counterpart (*mehret*) of the heavenly abode."[492]

Hebrew thought repeatedly insists that the terrestrial Jerusalem was but a likeness of the city first constructed by God. "A celestial Jerusalem was created by God before the city was built by the hand of man . . . The heavenly Jerusalem kindled the inspiration of all the Hebrew prophets," observes Eliade.[493] The distinction between the local and the primordial city receives emphatic statement in the Syriac Apocalypse of Baruch, when God asks, "Dost thou think that this is that city of which I said: 'On the palms of my hands have I graven thee'? This building now built in your midst is not that which is revealed with me, that which was prepared beforehand here from the time when I took counsel to make Paradise . . ."[494] (Again, note the equation of the city—Jerusalem and paradise.)

Equally clear is the primacy of the archetypal city in Hinduism, according to Eliade. "All the Indian royal cities, even the modern ones, are built after the mythical model of the celestial city, where, in the age of gold

---

[491] *Op. cit.*, 95.

[492] *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 19-20.

[493] *The Myth of the Eternal Return*, 8-9.

[494] II Baruch IV: 2-4.

(*in illo tempore*), the Universal Sovereign dwelt . . . Thus, for example, the palace fortress of Sigiriya, in Ceylon, is built after the model of the celestial city Alakamanda and is 'hard of ascent for human beings'"[495]

Symbolically, each Hindu settlement stood within the *mandala* or "circle," delineating a consecrated space magically protected from the invading forces of disintegration.[496] The sanctified area, observes Tucci, "by the line of defense which circumscribes it, represents protection from the mysterious forces that menace the sacred purity of the spot . . ." This protective circle is "above all, a map of the cosmos."[497]

As documented by L'Orange, the circle around a centre was the ideal form of sacred cities in the Near East, as typified by the residential cities of Darabjird and Firuzabad, whose circular form served as a precedent for the "Round City" of Baghdad. The ideal pattern derived from the ancient conception of the Cosmos, states L'Orange.[498]

The same symbolism attaches to the Roman *mundus*a trench dug around the spot on which a new city was to be built. The enclosure served as a protective bond, ordaining the city as a renewal of the primeval homeland.[499] In the old documents the Roman cities were the *urbes*, from *orbis*, "round."[500]

The consistent pattern of the sacred territory shows the influence of a universal prototype. Yet few researchers take the prototype seriously. When the creation myths speak of a primordial Heliopolis, Erech, or Jerusalem, the analysts think only of the terrestrial city. One can, with far greater assurance, insist that the local habitation *never* produces, on its own, a cosmic myth of any kind.

In Egypt, it is the primeval sun who rules the original Heliopolis, Memphis, Thebes, Herakleopolis, just as it is the primeval sun who governs as the first king of Egypt as a whole. The city and kingdom repeat, on different scales, *the same history* and this fact alone is sufficient to show that the "history" is not local but universal. If the myths say that Egypt was "gathered together" from the primeval matter, forming an island around the sun, they say the same of the sacred city, whatever its name.[501]

That the ancients often forgot the distinction between their own city or kingdom and the celestial prototype was a natural result of the inseparable bond between the two. The local habitation inherited the mythical character of the celestial, so that the divergent actual histories of ancient nations lead back to one universal history.

It is in this sense that one must understand the legends of the first kings and primeval generations. Many Egyptian texts, for example, refer to a remote time in which the land was ruled by the "followers of Horus." An inscription of a King Ranofer (just prior to the Middle Kingdom) recalls "the time of your (fore)fathers, the kings, Followers of Horus." A text of Thutmose I speaks of great fame the like of which was not "seen in the annals of the ancestors since the Followers of Horus." The *Turin Papyrus* places this primeval generation prior to the first historical king, Menes.[502]

---

[495] *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 9.

[496] Tucci, *The Theory and Practice of the Mandala*, 23.

[497] Ibid., 23.

[498] *Op. cit.*, 9*ff*.

[499] Eliade, *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 15-16.

[500] Jung and Kerenyi, *Essays on a Science of Mythology*, 12.

[501] Many Egyptologists, however, make no distinction between the cosmic and the local cities. Thus Budge, speaking of the actual Egyptian city of Henen-su (Herakleopolis), tells us that this habitation "is often referred to in the *Book of the Dead*, and a number of important mythological events are said to have taken place there. Thus it was here that Re rose for the first time when the heavens and the earth were created, and it was this rising which formed the first great act of creation . . . Osiris was here crowned lord of the universe . . . In this place the souls of the beatified found a place of rest in the realm of Osiris . . . " Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 58-59. That these were cosmic, not geographical places and events, should be obvious.

[502] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 90.

Did these mythical "ancestors" actually rule terrestrial Egypt? In truth the "Followers of Horus" means, not a generation of mortals, but the assembly of the gods. The "ancestors" were the light-spirits of the celestial city, encircling and protecting the central sun. Just as the myths translate the Universal Monarch into the first king of Egypt, so also do they express the god-king's companions as a primeval race from which all Egyptian nobility might claim descent. Every Holy Land on our earth was assimilated to the same celestial kingdom and every race to the same generation of gods.

The World Navel

Through identification with Saturn's dwelling, each terrestrial kingdom or city of antiquity distinguished itself as the Middle Place, the centre from which history took its start. Symbolically each local Holy Land became the *omphalos* or "navel of the world."

Thus, the mythic navel constitutes a global motif of archaic symbolism. As documented in the separate studies of Roscher and Muller,[503] the ancient cities of Babylon and Nineveh (as well as Baghdad), Jerusalem, Hebron Bethel, Shechem, and the entire land of Palestine; numerous Greek cities (including Athens); the Muslim city of Mecca; and countless other cities of Asia and Europe were styled "the navel" or "the centre of the earth."

Just as the Egyptians conceived their land as the "middle-earth" (*Aguipte*), the Chinese proclaimed their empire to be the "Kingdom of the Middle."[504] Early Japanese sources call Japan the centre of the earth—or the "middle kingdom of the reed plain," while the Mongolians regard their home as "the Middle Place."[505] Peoples of northern Siberia know the Yenisei as "the centre of the world,"[506] Ireland was once the kingdom of the *Mide* or "Middle."[507]

In faraway Easter Island the natives speak of their land as the "navel."[508] And in the Americas, the Zuni call (or once called) their town "the Middle Place"; the Inca city of Cuzco signified "the navel of the earth";[509] so also did the Chickasaw of Mississippi regard their territory as "the centre of the earth."[510]

The reader may respond: isn't it perfectly natural that a people, seeing other lands and nations distributed around them, would come to regard their own as the "centre"? This is, of course, a common explanation of the universal habit. On closer examination, however, it becomes clear that the concept of the world navel reflects something more than narrow vision or tribal arrogance.

The acknowledged religious centre of the Greeks was Delphi, on the steep slopes of Mount Parnassus. Here was located the omphalos ("navel"), revered as the Seat of Apollo and "the centre of the earth." But among the Greeks, Delphi was not alone in claiming distinction as the omphalos. Similar claims were made for world navels in the Peloponnesus, at Elis, at Thessaly, and at Crete. Both the Aetolians and Epirotes were called *omphalians* or "people of the navel."[511]

---

[503] Roscher, *Omphalos; Neue Omphalosstudien; Der Omphalosgedanke bei Verschiedenen Völkern*; Muller, *Die Heilige Stadt*.

[504] Brown, *Eradinus: River and Constellation*; de Saussure, "Origins Chinoise de la Cosmologie Iranienne."

[505] W.T. Warren, *Paradise Found*, 141, note 3; O'Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 359.

[506] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 308.

[507] Guenon, *op. cit.*, 79.

[508] Makemson, *The Morning Star Rises*, 10; Heyerdahl, *Kon-Tiki*, 141.

[509] Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilization*, 133.

[510] W.T. Warren, *op. cit.*, 248, note 1.

[511] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 83.

Many competing seats of Apollo appear as the omphalos, according to Roscher.[512] Rather than suggest narrow-mindedness, such repeated claims confirm a consistent memory: from high antiquity the idea must have been passed down that Apollo's throne occupied the "centre." All local shrines certainly shared this tradition. But one must not mistake the imitation for the original. Just as one might say of Apollo's statue, "This is the god Apollo," without intending a literal identification, so could the cult worshippers say of the local shrine, "This is the throne of Apollo at the earth navel." That the statement comes from more than one locality only reinforces the general tradition. The truth was observed by W. T. Warren long ago when he declared Delphi to be "a memorial shrine, an attempted copy of the great original."[513]

Clearly, the "great original"—the god's primeval home—was not of our earth. Apollo, the polar sun, was not the only god to occupy this centre. In Mexico, a Nahuatl hymn extols the god Ometeotl as:

Mother of the Gods, Father of the Gods,

the old God

distended in the navel of the earth,

engaged in the enclosure of turquoise

He who dwells in waters the colour of the bluebird.[514]

A Babylonian hymn located the god Ea at the "centre of the earth":

The path of Ea was in Eridu, teeming with fertility.

His seat (there) is the centre of the earth;

his couch is the bed of the primeval

mother.[515]

Similarly, the Egyptian Osiris "sits in judgement on the Primeval Mound, which is in the middle of the world," states Clark.[516] In the ancient account of Sanchuniathon, the great god El (Kronos/Saturn) acquires supremacy "in a certain place in the *center of the earth.*"[517]

The earth navel, in the original tradition, is the inaccessible dwelling at the cosmic summit which is why the Hindus could say of the fire god Agni,[518] "He is the head and summit of the sky, the centre [*Nabhi*, navel] of the earth." Hebrew and Muslim thought constantly identifies the throne of Yahweh and Allah with the "navel of the earth," but this navel is *above*, for the Muslim text states of the *Ka'ba*, or earth navel: "Know that the centre of the earth, according to a tradition on the authority of the Prophet, is the Ka'ba: it has the significance of the navel of the earth, because of its rising *above* the level of the earth."[519]

Another source relates, "Tradition says: the *polestar* proves the Ka'ba is the highest situated territory; for it lies over against the centre of heaven."[520] Both Jerusalem and Mecca, as earth navels, lie at the cosmic summit.

---

[512] Roscher, *Omphalos*, 20*ff.*

[513] *Op. cit.*, 235.

[514] Léon-Portilla, *Pre-Columbian Literatures of Mexico*, 63.

[515] Sayce, *Gifford Lectures*, 386.

[516] *Op. cit.*, 178.

[517] Faber, *A Dissertation on the Cabire*, Vol. I, 73. [Emphasis added.]

[518] Muir, *Original Sanskrit Texts* V, 214*ff.*

[519] Wensinck, "*The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth*," 36. [Emphasis added.]

[520] *Ibid.*, 15. [Emphasis added.]

“The centre of the earth and the pole of heaven, both are intimately connected with the throne,” observes Wensinck.[521]

Similarly, Gnostic traditions surveyed by Jung consider the polar region both “the seat of the highest gods” and “the navel of the world.”[522] That the Greek omphalos received the appellation “axis” indicates an obvious connection with the pole.[523]

In all of these traditions, of course, one has to contend with the confusion between the celestial earth and what we call “earth” today. It can hardly be doubted that ancient races eventually came to use the phrase “world navel” in connection with the terrestrial landscape. The original concept of the navel, however, is not complicated by ambiguous meanings of the “earth.” In the original tradition, the created earth is the navel, pure and simple; Saturn’s Cosmos appeared as a central enclosure or “navel” of dry ground rising from the primordial waters. So it is not surprising to find that the symbol of the navel was the enclosed sun ☉, the sign of the world wheel. “The concentric circles or the dot-in-circle denoted, in the Mediterranean area, the omphalos, the navel of the earth,” states Butterworth.[524] (Thus, in organizing their sacred cities in the form of a wheel the ancients expressed the cities’ character as “navel.”)

The enclosed sun ☉, according to Neumann, served as “the life symbol of the womb-navel-centre.”[525] It would be difficult to improve upon this definition. To reside within the life-containing navel is to dwell in the *womb of the mother goddess*, for the omphalos, as discerned by Uno Holmberg, is “the representative of the Great Mother” not only in classical symbolism but in Hindu and Altaic ritual also.[526]

Hence Delphi, the Greek omphalos, signifies “the womb.”[527] The spouse of Hercules is Omphale, the female personification of the omphalos.[528] In the same way, Hindu ritual constantly identifies the mystic yoni or “womb” with the navel: Agni is “born from the yoni or navel of the earth,”[529] while Brahma is the “navel-born.”[530]

Such symbolism connects the famous navel with the primeval enclosure. Saturn’s band, marking out the stable, revolving island which appeared in the cosmic waters, came to be remembered as the cosmic centre—where mythical history began.

The Ocean

Many ancient traditions describe a circular ocean or river girdling the “earth.”

---

[521] *Ibid.*, 55.

[522] Jung, *Aion*, 125.

[523] Roscher, *Omphalos*, 43.

[524] *The Tree at the Navel of the Earth*, 39.

[525] *Op. cit.*, 127.

[526] *Der Baum des Lebens*, 95.

[527] Faber, *Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol. III, 90.

[528] *Ibid.*, 92.

[529] Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 19.

[530] *Ibid.*, 18.

The gods, according to the Norse creation legend, “made the vast ocean, in the midst of which they fixed the earth, the ocean encircling it as a ring.”[531] By the Greek Okeanos, “the whole earth is bound.”[532] The Babylonians said of the nether river, “all earth it encloses.”[533] Hebrew and Arabic cosmologies, according to Wensinck, hold that “the whole of the earth is round and the ocean surrounds it like a collar.”[534]

In spite of the widespread belief, certain classical writers grew skeptical. Of the famous ocean-stream the historian Herodotus announced: “For my part, I cannot but laugh when I see numbers of persons drawing maps of the world without reason to guide them; making, as they do, the Ocean-stream to run all round the earth.”[535]

Or again: “The boundaries of Europe are quite unknown, and there is not a man who can say whether any sea girds it round either on the north or on the east.”[536] Such was the inevitable conclusion of historians and philosophers, once the “world” or “earth” lost its original cosmic meaning and passed into a figure of geography. Even today conventional treatments of the mythical ocean perpetuate the misunderstanding.

The cynics overlooked a most significant point: originally, the ocean encircled the *creator* as a girdle: Okeanos was no terrestrial river, but the “belt” around the cosmic deity.[537] The “land” which the ocean enclosed was the dwelling of the gods. Hesiod, for example, in his description of the shield of Hercules (an acknowledged figure of the Cosmos) identifies the ocean as the rim of the shield, enclosing a celestial paradise.

The shield was a wonder to see, “for its whole orb was a-shimmer with enamel and white ivory and electrum, and it glowed with shining gold.” Within the shield’s protective enclosure dwelt the great god and the lesser divinities: “There also was the abode of the gods, pure Olympus, and their assembly, and infinite riches were spread around in the gathering of the deathless gods.” The inhabitants of this circular land above celebrated a continual festival, for here grew grapes and corn in abundance. “And around the rim,” writes Hesiod, “Ocean was flowing, with a full stream as it seemed, and enclosed all the cunning work of the shield.”[538]

As in the case of the world navel, the imagery makes sense only when one understands the created “earth” as the dwelling of the great god himself.

Egyptian sources remove all possible doubt as to the celestial character of the encircling stream. The *Coffin Texts* say of the Father of the Gods: “the river around him is ablaze with light.”[539] The same circular river is called a lake of fire. Re appears as *ami-mer-nesert*, “he who is in his fiery lake”; while the throne of Horus is the “Lake of Double Fire.”[540]

Actually, the Egyptian ocean or lake is simply the Tuat, the dwelling of Osiris or Re:[541] “This is the lake which is in the Tuat . . . This lake is filled with barley [*i.e.*, grain, abundance]. The water of the lake is fire.”[542]

---

[531] Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 184.

[532] Onians, *The Origins of European Thought*, 316.

[533] Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 478.

[534] Wensinck, “The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites,” 25.

[535] Herodotus iv, 36.

[536] Herodotus iv, 45.

[537] In the Orphic description of the primeval Nous or Mind, “the circling ocean was his belt.” See our chapter II.

[538] Evelyn-White, *Hesiod*, 229*ff.*

[539] Clark, *Myth and Symbol*, 86.

[540] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 187.

[541] See *Pyramid Texts* 77 and 512.

Containing the fiery waters of the Abyss, the celestial river or lake encircled the "world." *The Pyramid Texts* invoke:

The Great Circle, in your name of "Great Surround,"
an enveloping ring, in the "Ring that encircles the
Outermost Lands",
A Great Circle in the Great Round of the
Surrounding Ocean.[543]

In the Egyptian symbolism this watery circle is the band of the enclosed sun , the band which circumscribed the outermost limit of the cosmic dwelling. The "ocean" in the above text is the *Shen-ur*, or "the great Shen." In the Egyptian language the *shen* bond or cord (,) signifies at once the band of the Aten and "ocean" or "river." One can properly term this circle of water "the river of the cosmic bond" or "the ocean of the cord."

Pointing to the same interrelationships is the Egyptian word *nut.* Nut, the goddess, is the female personification of the Cosmos or *shen* bond; but *nut* also denotes "stream," "river," "sea." The encircling river, as the *border* of the "Holy abode" (*nut*), thus gives rise to the phrase "the ocean, the border of Nut."[544] That *nut* further means "cord" and "city" only confirms the integrated symbolism.

In none of this symbolism is there any suggestion of a *terrestrial* ocean. As detailed by Reymond, the primeval waters form an enclosure around the *resting place of the great god* "perhaps resembling the channel which was made around sacred places later on."[545] Encircled by the celestial river, the province of beginning becomes the "island in the stream,"[546] or the "pool." (See, for example, the "pool of Hermopolis"; the celestial Abydos was the "pool of Maati.")[547]

The mythical "waters" are inseparable from the primeval matter or company of gods which exploded from the creator, subsequently to be gathered into the circle of glory (*khut*). The radiant gods—or "Primeval Ones"—revolved around the border of the cosmic ocean or lake, for the Egyptians, according to Reymond, "imagined that, after the phases of the primary creation were completed, these Primeval Ones lived in the vicinity of the pool . . . Their resting place, however, is portrayed as of the most primitive appearance: *the bare edges of the pool.*"[548] The gods occupy the border and revolve around it, as confirmed by the *Book of the Dead*: "'Hail,' say these gods who dwell in their companies and who go round about the Turquoise Pool."[549]

Nor in Egypt alone does the cosmic ocean form the band of the enclosed sun . Here is a Sumerian description of the Engur or "river" around the motionless lord Enki:

---

[542] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 152.

[543] Clark, *op. cit.*, 117.

[544] Maj Sandman Holmberg, *The God Ptah*, 106.

[545] *Op. cit.*, 142.

[546] Kees, "Kulttopographische und Mythologische Beträge," 151.

[547] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 97; Reymond, *op. cit.*, 152.

[548] *Op. cit.*, 80. [Emphasis added.]

[549] Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 170.

Thou River, creatress of all things,
When the great gods dug thee, on thy bank they placed mercy.
Within thee Ea, King of the Apsu, built his abode.
They gave thee the Flood, the unequalled.
Fire, rage, splendour, and terror . . .
O great River, far-famed River . . .[550]

These are the waters of the cosmic sea Apsu—"the waters which are forever *collected together* in the deep,"[551] corresponding to the Egyptian dwelling gathered together by the creator. The oldest image of this encircling river or ocean is the ancient Sumerian sign for *Kis* (the all, the complete land, the Cosmos): . The band in this sign, according to Jeremias, represents the encircling ocean, the same river that is depicted encircling the "earth" (Cosmos) in the Babylonian world map.[552] Like the Egyptian ocean the revolving stream forms the border of the celestial land.

As the womb of primeval birth, the Sumerian *Engur*, "River," provides a close parallel to the Egyptian goddess Nut. Indeed, like Nut, the Sumero-Babylonian river goddess was conceived as the unifying cord. The waters of *Engur* (Apsu) compose the *tarkullu*, "rope," or the *markasu*, "band," bond," holding together the created Cosmos.[553] Like the Egyptians, the Sumero-Babylonians recalled the enclosure of the cosmic ocean as that which gave birth to the primeval sun. The god who "illuminates the interior of the Apsu" is Ninurta, the planet Saturn.[554]

---

[550] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 105.

[551] Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 487. [Emphasis added.]

[552] Jeremias, *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 31.

[553] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 309.

[554] Jensen, *op. cit.*, 248-467.

VI. The Enclosed Sun-Cross

The Four Rivers Of Paradise

“And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads.”[555] So reads the Book of Genesis. The four rivers of Adam’s paradise, according to many Hebrew and early Christian accounts, flowed in opposite directions, spreading to the four corners of the world.[556]

The tradition is apparently universal. The Navaho Indian narration of the “Age of Beginnings” speaks of an ancestral land from which the inhabitants were driven by a great catastrophe. Among the occupants of this remote home, some say, were “First Man” and “First Woman.” Most interesting is the means by which the land was watered: “In its centre was a spring from which four streams flowed, one to each of the cardinal points . . .”[557]

The Chinese paradise of Kwen-lun, adorned with pearls, jade, and precious stones, lay at the centre and zenith of the world.[558] In this happy abode stood a central fountain from which flowed “in opposite directions the four great rivers of the world.”[559]

Four rivers appear also in the Hindu *Rig Veda*: “the noblest, the most wonderful work of this magnificent one [Indra], is that of having filled the bed of the four rivers with water as sweet as honey.”[560] The *Vishnu Purana* identifies the four streams with the paradise of Brahma at the world summit. They, too, flow in four directions.[561]

Iranian myth recalls four streams issuing from the central fount Ardvi Sura and radiating in the four directions. Similarly, the Kalmucks of Siberia describe a primordial sea of life and fertility, with four rivers flowing “toward the four different points of the compass.”[562]

The tradition is repeated by many other nations. The Mandaeans of Iraq enumerate four great rivers flowing from the north.[563] Just as the Babylonians recalled “the land of the four rivers,”[564] the Egyptians knew “Four

---

[555] Genesis 2:10.

[556] Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament*, 27-28; Wensinck, “The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites,” 59-60; see also our section on “The Foundation Stone”.

[557] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 159.

[558] W.T. Warren, *Paradise Found*, 129; O’Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 909.

[559] Lenormant, *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, 26.

[560] *Ibid.*, 19-21.

[561] *Ibid.*, 27-29.

[562] Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiösen Vorstellungen der Altaischen Völker*, 86-87; *Der Baum des Lebens*, 71*ff.*

[563] Albright, “*The Mouth of the Rivers*,” 189.

[564] Brown, *Eradinus: River and constellation*, 46.

Niles," flowing to the four quarters.[565] The home of the Greek goddess Calypso, in the "navel of the sea," possessed a central fountain sending forth "four streams, flowing each in opposite directions."[566]

In the Scandinavian *Edda*, the world's waters originate in the four streams flowing from the spring Hvergelmir in the land of the gods,[567] while Slavic tradition recalls four streams issuing from under the magic stone Alatuir in the island paradise of Bonyan.[568] Brinton finds the four mystic rivers among the Sioux, Aztecs, and Maya, just as Fornander discovers them in Polynesian myth.[569]

The lost land of the four rivers presents a particularly enigmatic theme for conventional mythology because few, if any, of the nations possessing the memory can point to any convincing geographical source of the imagery. When the Babylonians invoke Ishtar as "Lady, Queen of the land of the Four Rivers of Erech,"[570] or when an Egyptian text at Dendera celebrates the Four Niles at Elephantine, one might expect the familiar landscape to explain the usage. But wherever the mythical four rivers appear, they possess the character of an "ideal" land, in contrast to actual geography.

The reason for this disparity between the mythical and terrestrial landscapes is that *the four rivers flowed, not on our earth, but through the four quarters of the polar "homeland.*" To what aspect of Saturn's kingdom might the mythical rivers refer?

For every dominant mythical theme there are corresponding signs (though this truth is still to be acknowledged by most authorities). The signs of the four rivers are the sun-cross and the enclosed sun-cross , the latter sign illuminating the former by showing that the four streams belong to the primeval enclosure. Issuing from the polar centre (*i.e.*, the central sun), the four rivers flow to the four corners of Saturn's Earth.

The sign of the enclosed sun-cross , observes Cirlot, "expresses the original Oneness (symbolized by the centre)," and "*the four radii . . . are the same as the four rivers which well up from the fons vitae* . . ."[571]

But if one myth identifies the arms of the sun-cross as four paradisal rivers, there are other interpretations of the cross as well, for this primal image produced a wide-ranging and coherent symbolism, as I shall now attempt to show.

The Crossroads

From Saturn, the central sun, flowed four primary paths of light. In the myths these appear as four rivers, four winds, four streams of arrows, or four children, assistants, or light-spirits bearing the Saturnian seed (the life elements) through the four quarters of the celestial kingdom.

---

[565] Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 173.

[566] Albright, "The Goddess of Life and Wisdom" 261.

[567] Gaster, *op. cit.*, 27.

[568] *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. II, 706.

[569] Gaster, *op. cit.*, 27.

[570] Brown, *op. cit.*, 46.

[571] *A Dictionary of Symbols*, 127. [Emphasis added.] The mystic idea "is confirmed and reinforced when it is portrayed in architectural plans: whether in the cloister, the garden or the patio, the fountain occupies the centre position, at least in the majority of architectural works built during periods within the symbolist tradition, as in Romanesque or Gothic edifices. Furthermore, the four rivers of Paradise are denoted by four paths which radiate out from the region of the cloister towards a clear space, circular or octagonal in shape, which forms the basin of the fountain." *Ibid.*, 113.

The sun-cross *and enclosed sun-cross* , *depicting the four life-bearing streams, thus serve as universal signs of the Holy Land.*

The modern world is accustomed to think of “the four quarters” in terrestrial terms. Today we conceive north, east, west, and south only in relationship to our own position or to a fixed geographical reference point. Chicago is “west” of New York and “east” of Omaha, and to the modern mind the “four corners of the world” only serves as a vague metaphor for “the entire globe.”

To the ancients, however, “the Four Corners of the World” possessed explicit meaning; originally, the phrase referred not to geography but to *cosmography*, the “map” of the celestial kingdom, laid out in the polar heaven. One of the few scholars to recognize this quality of the mythical “four corners” was O’Neill: “It results from any full study of the myths, symbolism, and nomenclature of the Four Quarters that these directions were viewed in the strict orthodoxy of heavens-mythology, not as the NSEW of every spot whatever, but four heavens-divisions spread out around the pole.”[572]

The sun-cross , as the symbol of the four quarters, belongs to the *central* sun. In sacred cosmography the central position of the sun-god becomes the “fifth” direction. To understand such language, it is convenient to think of the mythical “directions” (or arms of the cross) as *motions* or *flows of energy*. From the great god the elements of life flow in four directions. The god himself, who embodies all the elements, is “firm,” “steadfast,” or “resting”; his *fifth motion* is that of rotation while standing in one place.

The directions can also be conceived as *regions*: the central (fifth) region and the four quarters spaced around it.

This is why the Pythagoreans regarded the number five as a representative of the fixed world axis.[573] The Pythagorean idea clearly corresponds with the older Hindu symbolism of the directions. In addition to the standard four directions, Hindu doctrine knows a fifth, called the “fixed direction,” the polar centre.[574]

In China, too, the pole is the immovable fifth direction, the “central palace” around which the cardinal points are spaced.[575] And in Mexico, Nahuatl symbolism asserts that “five is the number of the centre.”[576]

In the “ideal” kingdom of heaven the Universal Monarch stands at the centre, and all the elements of life—fire, water, air, and seed—flow from the god-king in four brilliant streams. Often interpreted as four sons of the creator, the streams mark out the four quarters of the cosmic isle, or “earth.”

Let us consider first the Egyptian symbolism of the directional streams. According to the Egyptian creation texts, the great god, standing alone, brought forth as his own “speech” the primeval matter—or sea of “words”—which congealed into an enclosure. The Egyptians associate this pouring out of the seed or life elements with four luminous streams flowing from the central sun. The four emanations are the four “sons” of Atum or the Four Sons of Horus, each identified with a quarter of the heavenly kingdom.[577] Importantly, the Egyptians term these paths of light the “Four Khu”: they are the “words of power”—streams of creative “speech” coursing through the four divisions of organized space.

---

[572] O’Neill, *op. cit.*, 184.

[573] Delatte, *Etudes sur la Litterature Pythagoricienne*, 153-54.

[574] *Rig Veda*, IX. 74.6; IX. 113.8.

[575] De Saussure, *Les Origines de l’Astronomie Chinoise*, 159-60, 230.

[576] Dejourne, *Burning Water*, 72.

[577] Budge, *op. cit.*, 226; W.M. Muller, *Egyptian Mythology*, 46, 95, 112.

The *Pyramid Texts* call these “the four blustering winds which are about you.”[578] The Four Sons of Horus “send the four winds.” In one source the four winds issue from the mouth of Amen.[579] In the *Book of the Dead* they are “the four blazing flames which are made for [or as] the Khu [words of power],”[580] while the *Coffin Texts* invoke them as the “four gods who are powerful and strong, who bring the water.”[581]

The Egyptians also interpreted the four paths of light as “arrows” launched by the creator toward the four quarters. (In hieroglyphs, the arrow means “shaft of light.”) It was an ancient practice of the Egyptian king, on assuming the throne, to release an arrow, in each of the four directions,[582] thus reenacting the creation, or organization of the celestial kingdom. The arrow is *sat*, which means “to shoot,” but also “to pour out”; for the four arrows launched by the king signified the waters of life originally “poured out” by the creator, whom the king personified. *Sat* also means “to sow” or “to scatter seed abroad”; which is to say, the four streams carried to the four corners the creative seed of abundance.[583] By launching the four arrows the local king proclaimed himself the Universal Monarch and sanctified *his* kingdom as a duplication of the primeval abode.

In Egypt the cross—as the symbol of the four directional streams—possesses two important meanings. The form , *un*, signifies “coming to life,” for the directional streams shone forth with the daily birth of the central sun (*i.e.*, with the setting of the solar orb). In the form (or), *ami*, the cross means “to be in” or “to be enclosed by”—in reference to the unified space *enclosed* within the womb of the mother goddess .

When certain Egyptologists first encountered the symbol of the goddess Nut , they saw in it “a pictorial symbol of primitive Eden divided by the four-fold river.”[584] That conclusion would gain little credence among modern Egyptologists, yet it is much closer to the truth than the bland explanations currently in fashion. The four streams of life, emanating from the creator, coursed through the womb of Nut, the Holy Land. Thus the deceased implores the goddess, “Give me the water and the wind which are in thee.”[585]

Another symbol of the “holy abode” is the sign [586] showing a cross of arrows superimposed upon a shield. The glyph is precisely equivalent to the symbol of Nut , for Nut, the Great Protectoress, was the cosmic shield, and the four streams of life, enclosed within the womb of Nut, were the same as the shafts or arrows of light launched toward the four corners.

---

[578] *Pyramid Text* 497.

[579] Gaster, *op. cit.*, 5.

[580] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 414.

[581] Faulkner, *The Coffin Texts*, 1. Often the Egyptians represented the four streams by four vases or “four crocodiles.” (The crocodile is an Egyptian symbol of flowing water.) Renouf, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 78. The four crocodiles “live by the Words of Power”—that is, they come to life through, or as, the outward-flowing speech of the creator. On attaining the heavenly kingdom, the deceased king beseeches the crocodiles (rivers): “Let not thy fiery water be inflicted upon me.” *Ibid.*, 79. As figures of the four life-bearing streams the crocodiles were identified with the four quarters of the Cosmos. *Ibid.*, 97.

[582] Campbell, *Oriental Mythology*, 78.

[583] Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. II, 55.

[584] W.T. Warren, *op. cit.*, 179.

[585] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 113.

[586] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 452.

The land of the four rivers was that which the creator gathered together from the sea of words, his own emanation. The hieroglyphic symbol for “to collect, gather together” and for “the unified land” is , depicting the primeval enclosure (*shen*) divided into quarters by a cross of two flails. That the flail sign , in the Egyptian language, is read Khu, equates the flail-cross with the four streams of life (*khu*, “words of power”) radiating from the central sun.

There is, in other words, a level of Egyptian symbolism that the specialists have yet to penetrate. Standard treatments of the Egyptian Holy Land say little or nothing of the directional streams, though these powers are vital to the symbolism as a whole. And one can be certain that the paths of light and life have nothing to do with an ill-defined “four quarters” of our earth, where they are conventionally located. The four winds, or four rivers, or four pathways, or four shafts of light (arrows) belonged to the *lost* land in heaven, and only through symbolic assimilation to this cosmic dwelling did the terrestrial habitation share in the imagery.

A comparison of Egyptian cross symbolism with that of other lands reveals numerous parallels. The oldest Mesopotamian image of divinity was the sun-cross , symbol of the creator An, the planet Saturn. An, like his counterparts around the world, “brought forth and begat the fourfold wind” within the womb of Tiamat, the cosmic sea.[587]

The cult worshippers of Ninurta (Saturn) also represented their god by the cross. Hence, the cuneiform ideograms for the fourfold *saru*, “wind,” and for *mehu*, “storm wind”—both of which belong to Saturn—take the form of a cross (figs. 22, 23). The Babylonian Saturn inaugurates the day, “coming forth in splendour,” and this coming forth of Saturn means the coming forth of the four winds (as in Egypt), for the Akkadian *umum* denotes both “day” and “wind,” just as the Sumerian signs UD and UG, both used for “day,” occur also in the sense of “wind.”[588] (The ancient Hebrew expression “until the day blows” conveys the same identity.)

Figure 22. Babylonian *saru*, “wind.”

---

[587] Pritchard, *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 62.

[588] Hildegard and Julius Lewy, “The Origin of the Week and the Oldest West Asiatic Calendar,” 5.

Figure 23. Ideogram for *mehu*, or “storm wind.”

Saturn’s four winds mark out the quarters or directions of the Cosmos, Saturn’s kingdom. Cosmological texts speak of the “furious wind . . . commanding the *directions*”:589 the Sumerian *im* and Akkadian *saru*, “wind,” also signify “region (or quarter) of heaven.”590

As in Egypt, the Mesopotamian four winds coincide with the four rivers of life. Instead of the simple sign , some images show four streams of *water* radiating from the central sun (fig. 24).591 The best-known Mesopotamian figure of these streams is the famous “sun wheel” of Shamash (a god also identified as Saturn). Portrayed are four rays of light and four rivers flowing from the central god to the border of the wheel (fig. 15).

Figure 24. (a) Mycenaean four rivers symbol;

---

589 *Ibid.* [Emphasis added.]

590 Tallquist, “Himmelsgegende und Winde,” 106.

591 Jeremias, *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 252.

Figure 24. (b) Four rivers symbol, Troy;

Figure 24. (c) Babylonian image presenting the arms of the sun-cross as four rivers.

Hrozny tentatively suggests that Shamash's cross was a sign for "settlement."592 With this suggestion one is compelled to agree, for the first settlements, organized for a ritual purpose, imitated the heavenly abode. Each sacred territory became "the land of the four rivers" and each ruler "the king of the four quarters."

Geographical limitations did not prevent the Assyro-Babylonian priests from assimilating the map of *their* land to the quartered circle of the *primeval* kingdom. Thus a text reproduced by Virolleaud locates the land of Akkad, Elam, Subartu, and Amurru within the fourfold enclosure of the sun ⊕.593 "Every land," states Jeremias, "has its 'paradise,' which corresponds with the cosmic paradise."594

The land of the sun-cross ✦ lay within the primeval circle, and this fact will explain why the Babylonian sign of the four *kibrati* or "world quarters" (*i.e.*, ✦) also denoted "the interior" or "the enclosed space."595

---

592 O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 184.

593 Jeremias, *op. cit.*, 12.

594 *Ibid.*, 13.

595 Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 167-69.

The terminology offers a fascinating parallel to the Egyptian *ami* (,), "to be in," "to be enclosed by." To dwell in the land of the four rivers is to occupy the Saturnian enclosure.596

The same overlapping interpretations of the four streams occur in Hindu symbolism. Here the cross and the circle, according to one observer, represent "the traditional abode of their primeval ancestors . . . And let us ask what better picture or more significant characters in the complicated alphabet of symbolism could have been selected for the purpose than a circle and a cross—the one to denote a region of absolute purity and perpetual felicity, the other those four perennial streams that divided and watered the several quarters of it."597

The Hindu Holy Land lies within the world wheel, turned by the stationary sun at the centre. The spokes of the wheel, delimiting the four quarters, "have their foundation in the single centre which is Surya [the sun]," notes Agrawala.598

In the ritual of the *Satapatha Brahmana* the spokes of the wheel become "arrows" launched in the four directions and carrying the life elements to the four corners. The arrows sent in one direction "are fire," those in another "are the waters," those in another "are wind," and those in another "are the herbs."599 The *Paippalada* or Kashmirian *Artharva Veda* terms the latter flow of arrows "food." The idea seems to be that of abundance or "plenty" radiating from the heart of the Cosmos (and thus answering to the four Egyptian arrows [*sat*] transmitting the seed of abundance to the outermost limits of the kingdom). The Hindus symbolized these shafts of light by setting afire the spokes of the sacred wheel.600

Figure 25. Hindu cross.

A pictorial image of the four streams occurs on ancient Hindu coins depicting the arms of the sun-cross as arrows directed toward the four corners (fig. 25).

Every ancient Indian settlement reflected the primeval map of the Cosmos, its unified domain lying within the sacred circle and its four primary streets answering to the celestial crossroads. The settlement's organization

---

596 *Ibid.*, 472. Saturn's streams of light illuminate "the interior of the Apsu (cosmic sea)." As in Egypt, the explosive shafts of light were interpreted as four streams of "speech" radiating to the four corners. The "four winds" and "four world directions," according to Jeremias, correspond to the creator. *Op. cit.*, 148.

597 Quoted in W.T. Warren, *op. cit.*, 179-80.

598 *The Thousand Syllabled Speech*, Vol. I, 158.

599 Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, III.iii.

600 Eggeling, *Satapatha Brahmana*, III, 5.3.14-16.

reenacted the creation. As noted by W. Muller, the Hindu sacred city "duplicates the Cosmos in wood, brick and stone: its axes [north-south; east-west] demarcate the four quarters of the universe."[601]

Muller finds the same concept of the quartered kingdom in Ceylon, Burma, Cambodia, Thailand, and Vietnam. Each sacred habitation appears as "the celestial city of the king" and each ruler as the wheel-king. "State and nation represent a quartered universe [Cosmos]," writes Muller. Every image of the sacred "settlement" reflects the image of the "world"—the circle and cross.[602]

In China, the emperor stands symbolically at the pole, while ranged around him are the powers of the cardinal points.[603] The cosmic centre is *ch'ien*, from which, to use Jung's phraseology, "the four emanations go forth, like the heavenly forces extending through space."[604] At the *ch'ien*, the centre, the four *she* or world quarters converge.[605]

The ideal celestial organization finds expression in the ancient Chinese hieroglyph . The sign, according to C. Hentze, denotes the *contree suburbaine* or settlement around a centre.[606] Is this not once more the primeval "place" sustained by the outward flow of "life" (or "arrows") from the central god?

L'Orange, in his studies of cosmic symbolism in the Near East, notes that the great residential cities of Ekbatana, Darabjird, and Firuzabad were patterned after the wheel of the Cosmos, with the king appearing at the intersection of the crossroads. "Wall and fosse are traced mathematically with the compass, as an image of the heavens, a projection of the upper hemisphere on earth. The two axis streets, one running north-south and the other east-west, divide the city into four quadrants which reflect the four quarters of the world. At the very point of intersection, in the very axis of the world wheel, the palace is situated, here sits the king, 'The Axis and Pole of the World,' 'The King of the four Quadrants of the World' . . ."[607]

To this city of the wheel also corresponds the imagery of Jerusalem and Palestine. The terrestrial city and Holy Land, in more than one medieval map, appear in the ideal form of a quartered circle , for such was the image of the Eden paradise, with its four directional streams. And this is why Solomon and Hezekiah, in constructing works for the distribution of Jerusalem's waters, sought to imitate the four rivers of paradise—even to the point of naming one stream Gihon (a river of Eden) and declaring that from beneath the temple these streams flowed out over the whole world.[608]

The ancient Etruscans, followed by the Romans, looked to the same image of the fourfold Cosmos in laying out the plan of the sacred city. The surveyors, according to W. Muller, sought to map out the "terrestrial image of a celestial prototype," and their division of the land into four regions—the *Roma quadrata*—"reflects a powerful cosmological model: the quartered earth of the Roman world image."[609]

---

[601] *Die Heilige Stadt*, 124.

[602] *Ibid.*, 145*ff.*

[603] De Saussure, *op. cit.*, 160, 230.

[604] Jung, *Mandala Symbolism*, 74.

[605] Schlegel, *L'Uranographie Chinoise*, 146.

[606] "Cosmogonie du Monde Dresse Debout et du Monde Renversé," 109.

[607] L'Orange, *Studies in the Iconography of Cosmic Kingship*, 13; see also W. Muller, *op. cit.*, 130*ff.*

[608] W.T. Warren, *op. cit.*, 233.

[609] W. Muller, *Die Heilige Stadt*, 21.

It is surely significant that all of the key features of the sun-cross ✦ and the enclosed sun-cross ⊕ reviewed above occur also in the Americas. Often the parallels are stunning. The Omaha Indians, for example, invoke the "Aged One":

> . . . *seated with assured* permanency and endurance,
>
> In the centre where converged the paths,
>
> *There, exposed to the violence of the* four winds,
>
> *you sat,*
>
> *Possessed with power to receive supplications,*
>
> *Aged One* . . .[610]

To reside at the intersection of the celestial crossroads ✦ is to "sit" (rest) at the cosmic centre, the abode of "permanency" and "endurance." This "centre" is also the place where the "four winds" meet, for the four winds and heavenly pathways are synonymous.

Burland relates that the symbol of the Mexican god Xiuhtechuhtli—the "Old, Old One," the lord of the central fire at the pole—was "a white cross of the Four Directions in the black background of the night."[611]

The Inca Yupanqui, writes Nuttall, "raised a temple in Cuzco to the Creator who, superior to the sun [solar orb], could rest and light the world from one spot." This central sun was represented by a cross.[612]

Indeed, the sun-cross is a symbol of the primeval god throughout the Americas—from the Inca of Peru to the Eskimos of Alaska. Wherever the New World symbolism can be examined in sufficient detail, one finds that the cross possessed the same significance as in the Old World.

The best authorities tell us the native American sun-cross depicts the "four winds"—conceived as visible, even violent flows of life and energy from a *central* or *stationary* god. (That is, the winds are just the opposite of the incongruous abstractions to which they have been reduced by so many mythologists.) The four winds are the "breath" of the sun-god (as in ancient Egypt), bearing the seed of life from the centre to the four corners. Thus the Mayan *Ik* means at once "wind," "breath," and "life." Like the Egyptian streams of *sat* it is "the causer of germination."[613]

In Mexico, Quetzalcoatl, "god of the Four Motions," was represented by the sun-cross, and this symbol explains his title, "Lord of the four winds." According to Nuttall, the cross "had a deeper meaning than has been realized, for it represents life-giving breath carrying with it the seeds of the four vital elements, emanating from the central lord of life, [and] spreading to the four quarters . . ."[614]

Also noted by Nuttall is the use of the cross in Copan, where it "is associated with a figure in *repose*, occupying the *Middle*, and four puffs of breath or air, laden with life-seeds, emanating from this."[615]

Just as the Egyptians personified the four emanations as four "sons" of the central god, so did the Mexicans. From the supreme god Ometeotl issued the four Tezcatlipocas, "the primordial forces which were to generate the history of the world." The four sons corresponded to the four quarters of the world.[616]

---

[610] Alexander, *op. cit.*, 19. [Emphasis added.]

[611] Burland, *The Gods of Mexico*, 131.

[612] Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilization*, 160-161.

[613] J. Eric and S. Thompson, *Maya History and Religion*, 257.

[614] *Op. cit.*, 223.

[615] *Ibid.*, 280. [Emphasis added.]

Figure 26. Variations of the enclosed sun-cross in the Mississippi Valley.

Figure 27. Arapaho sign of the four winds.

The same powers—central god and four emissions—were represented by the five Tlalocs, who, like the Mayan Bacabs and Chacs, "were set at four cardinal points and at the centre of the heavens."[617] From his dwelling at the world summit Tlaloc sent forth the waters of the four quarters, often symbolized (as in Egypt and India) by four vases. The gods who transmitted the waters to the four corners were the same as the gods of the four winds.[618]

But there is an even more striking parallel with Old World symbolism: the four streams of light and life were interpreted as *arrows* coursing in the four directions. In the Nahuatl language the word *tonamitl* means at once a "ray or shaft of light" and "the shining arrow." According to the chronicler Ixtlilxochitl, it was a native custom, on consecrating a new territory, "*to shoot with utmost force four arrows in the direction of the four regions of the world.*"[619] Thus did the priests sanctify the land as a renewal of the primeval kingdom, in exact accord with the ancient Egyptian practice!

Consistent with the global iconography of the central sun, the American Indians revered the sun-cross and enclosed sun-cross as emblems of the unified domain, the Holy Land. Among the Mexicans "the cross and the circle" are a "native symbol for 'an integral state,'" writes Nuttall. Illustrating this symbolism is the famous Mexican Calendar Wheel, displaying four principal and four secondary rays (or "arrows"), signifying the four quarters and their four subdivisions. This wheel of Time, states Nuttall,[620] portrays the ideal habitation, and the prototype lay in heaven, not on earth. The wheel is "as clearly an image of the nocturnal heaven as it is of a

---

[616] Léon-Portilla, "Mythology of Ancient Mexico," in Kramer, *Mythologies of the Ancient World*, 449-50.

[617] Roys, *The Book of the Chilam Balam*, 67.

[618] See, for example, J. Eric and S. Thompson, *op. cit.*, 270-71.

[619] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 255.

[620] *Ibid.*, 198.

vast territorial state which once existed in the valley of Mexico, and had been established as a reproduction upon earth of the harmonious order and fixed laws which apparently governed the heavens."621

From the center of the ancient Inca city of Cuzco, four roads radiated in the four directions. At the intersection of the crossroads rested a golden vase from which a fountain flowed. Thus did the four roads imitate the four paths or streams transporting the waters of life to the four quarters.

The Mayan *Book of Chilam Balam* offers the following map of northern Yucatan:622

Campech
Calkini
Mani
Tihoo
Cumkal
Zaci
Itzmal

Figure 28. Cosmological map of northern Yucatan.

Roys reports that this map—adapting actual geography to the primordial ideal—"is fairly typical in Maya documents."623 Here again is the *Roma quadrata*, the celestial Jerusalem, or Egyptian *Neter ta*, the Holy Land.

The Delaware sacred text called the *Walum Olum* records the primeval dwelling of the Great Spirit by the image . This was the nation's ancestral homeland, they say.624

A group of anthropologists, on examining the *Walum Olum*, reported that the four points on the circle "indicate the four quarters of the earth." By "earth" they obviously meant the terrestrial landscape. But if the quartered circle refers to our earth,625 then the dot inside certainly is not the sun, in spite of the steadfast opinion of solar mythologists.

In this case, the experts possessed the answer without recognizing it. The text itself identifies the sign with "the place where the Great Spirit stayed." To this statement the commentators add: "Concentric circles or a circle with a dot in the centre means divine or hallowed."626 Combining the two statements one obtains a clear-cut definition of the sign as "the divine or hallowed place where the Great Spirit stayed." Denoted is the quartered, *primeval* land, of which the terrestrial Holy Land was but a symbol.

As a final example, I note that the sun-cross and the life-giving streams are recalled even in Hawaiian myth. Here the creator Teave is the "Father-Mother" from whom "life coursed to the four directions of the

---

621 *Ibid.*, 274.

622 Roy, *op. cit.*, 125.

623 *Ibid.*, 125.

624 Indianapolis, Indiana Historical Society, *Walum Olum*, 11.

625 *Ibid.*, 11.

626 *Ibid.*

world.”[627] From the cosmic centre and zenith, Teave organized the celestial “kingdom” with his “*flaming cross of shining white light*,” “the first and foremost Cross of God.”[628] The “Primordial Lord of the Sun” (Teave) transmitted the life elements to the four corners through the agency of four assistant gods: “. . . The blood of life pulsated from the infinite and coursed to the north, east, south, west, via the Four Sacred Hearts of God, the deities Tane, Tanaoroa, Tu, Rono.”[629]

The widespread traditions of the primordial kingdom and the four life-streams reflect a consistent memory. On every continent one finds a compulsion to organize the native land after a cosmic original, defined by the enclosed sun-cross ⊕. The focus is the primeval ground occupied by the great father—whose home is the “earth” brought forth in the creation legend. By superimposing the map of Saturn’s Earth onto the local landscape, the ancients consecrated their native territory as a likeness, or a renewal, of the celestial abode.

The Four-Eyed Or Four-Faced God

In the ancient Egyptian Heb-Sed festival, the king ascends to the throne of Osiris, where he is deified as the great god’s successor. To certify his authority as Universal Monarch, he launches four arrows toward the four corners, then assumes his throne, turning to the four cardinal points in succession.[630]

By facing the four directions the king repeats the feat of the great god; for the Universal Monarch, occupying the steadfast centre (or fifth region), ceaselessly turned round about, sending his rays of life through the four divisions of unified space.

The classical historian Diodorus tells us that when the name Osiris is translated into Greek it means “many-eyed”—“and properly so; for in shedding his rays in every direction he surveys with many eyes, as it were, all land and sea.” To Osiris, Herodotus compares the Greek Dionysus—a god who, in the *Bacchic Hymn*, shines “like a star, with a fiery eye in every ray.”[631]

By facing the four directions and by sending forth the four directional streams, the Universal Monarch becomes the god of four faces or four eyes. “Homage to thee, O thou who hast four faces,” reads a line of the *Pyramid Texts.*[632] Osiris, as the Ram of Mendes, is the god of “four faces on one neck.”[633]

The Hindu *Atharva Veda* speaks of the “four heavenly directions, having the wind as lord, upon which the sun looks out.”[634] This, of course, can only be the central sun, who is Brahma, a god of *four faces.* The myths also attribute four faces to Shiva.[635] The central sun Prajapati takes the form of the four-eyed, four-faced, and four-armed Vivvakarman, the “all maker.”[636] Agni, too, faces “in all directions,”[637] as does Krishna.[638]

---

[627] Melville, *Children of the Rainbow*, 18.

[628] *Ibid.*, 18.

[629] *Ibid.*, 40, 126, 140.

[630] Campbell, *op. cit.*, 78; Jung, *Aion*, 198.

[631] Herodotus, I.11.2-3.

[632] Quoted in Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 85.

[633] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 65.

[634] Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, 52.

[635] Keith, *Indian Mythology*, 110.

[636] *Ibid.*, 52.

[637] *Ibid.*, 41.

Chinese myths recall a four-eyed sage named Ts'ang Chieh, a legendary inventor of writing (*i.e.*, the Universal Monarch).639 The old Greek god Argos, in the *Aigimios* of Hesiod, looks "this way and that with four eyes."640 Macrobius tells us the great god Janus was sometimes represented with four faces, in allusion to the four quarters of the Cosmos.641

Among the Tarahumara in North America, the cross represented the god Hikuli, "the four-faced god who sees all things."642 The "Central Lord" of Mexican ritual, represented by the cross, is "He who looks in four directions."643

There can no longer be any doubt that the four-eyed or four-faced god is Saturn, for the sun-planet appears in Babylonian myth as Ea (Sumerian Enki)—a god of *four eyes* that "behold all things."644 The Phoenician El—Saturn—has four eyes, as does the Orphic Kronos (Saturn). The Chinese Yellow Emperor Huang-ti—identified as Saturn—is also four-eyed.645 The four-eyes, or four faces, become intelligible only in connection with the five regions—the polar centre and the four divisions ranged around it.

The Foundation Stone

Residing at the immovable centre of the Cosmos, Saturn was the stone or rock of foundation, the prototype of the cornerstone (situated where the four corners meet— *). The four beams of light which radiated from the Saturnian stone appeared to sustain the world wheel at its "four corners"* *, so that, in many myths, the life-bearing streams are synonymous with the "four pillars of the world."*

In the mystic traditions reviewed by Manly P. Hall (Masonic, Hermetic, Qabalistic, Rosicrucian, etc.), the planet Saturn looms as the elementary power of creation. The planet-god "was always worshipped under the symbol of the base or footing, inasmuch as he was considered to be the substructure upholding creation," states Hall.646

The writer is, of course, thinking in metaphysical terms, and when he speaks of "creation" he doubtless means something much different from the "creation" discussed in the foregoing sections. Yet his summary, when stripped of metaphysics and solar terminology, accurately conveys an age-old idea: "The *solar system* [read: Cosmos] was organized by forces operating inward from the great ring of the Saturnian sphere; and since the beginning of all things was under the control of Saturn, the most reasonable inference is that the first forms of worship were dedicated to him in his peculiar symbol—the stone. Thus the intrinsic nature of Saturn is synonymous with that spiritual rock which is the enduring foundation of the *Solar temple* [read: dwelling of the central sun]."647

---

638 Suhr, *The Mask, the Unicorn and the Messiah*, 89.

639 Ferguson, *Chinese Mythology*, 31.

640 Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion*, Vol. II, 379.

641 Cited in Faber, *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol I, 166.

642 Alexander, *op. cit.*, 176-77.

643 Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 200.

644 Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 69. The reference is to Marduk, who has four eyes which "behold all things even as he (Ea)."

645 Derk Bodde, "Myths of Ancient China," in Kramer, *Mythologies*, 374.

646 *An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolic Philosophy*, cviii.

647 *Ibid.*, ccviii. [Emphasis added.]

In the earlier symbolism of the Foundation Stone, there is no hint of solar associations, and the stone is not a "spiritual [invisible] rock," but the *shining center* around which the created earth, or Cosmos, congealed.

The Egyptians knew the Foundation Stone as the Benben. Frankfort writes that the "first piece of solid matter actually created by Atum in the primeval ocean . . . was a stone, the Benben; and it had originated from a drop of the seed of Atum which fell into the primeval ocean."[648] More precisely, one should say that Atum *was* the seed and the seed *was* the Benben stone—the first thing to stabilize at the cosmic centre. "Thou [Atum] didst shine forth as Benben," recalls a *Pyramid Text*, in connection with the first phases of creation.[649]

Atum, or Re, is the "Great Seed," and this aspect of the god is conveyed by the term *ben* (from which the word *Benben* was produced): *ben* signifies "to beget." But the same word means "to go round": the Benben is the steadfast *seed-stone*, which, turning round about, moved the wheel of the Cosmos.

From Atum, the Benben, flowed the four streams of life, demarcating the four quarters or corners of the cosmic dwelling. It is thus vital that *ben* signifies "corner," while the hieroglyphic sign for "corner" is .[650] Since the stone of foundation lay at the *center*, the "corner" of the *ben* cannot have originally meant the corner of a square or rectangular edifice—even if later generations came to conceive it as such. Denoted is one of the four "quarters" converging on *the central stone* . This meaning is suggested by another sign— , *apt*, signifying "division of the holy abode." The sacred edifice is divided into four quarters or corners defined by the angles of the *ben* . Also relevant here are the sign *ses*— , "to divide," and the common sign of "the holy abode"— , *nut*. The "four corners" meet at the Benben (Atum), the Foundation Stone.

"Go to the streamings of the Nile [that is, the heavenly waters] and there you will find a stone that has a spirit," stated an old alchemical source.[651] Clearly, the tradition refers to the Foundation Stone, the central source of the four streams radiating life to the inhabitants of the celestial kingdom.

This quality of the central sun persists in Hebrew and Muslim imagery of Adam, the Heaven Man. The Nassenes esteemed Adam as the "rock" and "cornerstone."[652] Writes Jung: "The stone is indeed of supreme importance, because it fulfills the function of Adam Kadmon as the 'capital stone,' from which all the upper and lower hosts in the work of creation are brought into being."[653]

The theosophic *Zohar* declares, "The world did not come into being until God took a certain stone, which is called the foundation stone, and cast it into the abyss so that it held fast there, and from it the world was planted. This is the central point of the universe, and on this point stands the Holy of Holies."[654]

Patai summarized the tradition: "In the middle of the Temple and constituting the floor of the Holy of Holies, was a huge native rock which was adorned by Jewish legends with all the peculiar features of an Omphalos, A Navel of the Earth. This rock, called in Hebrew *Ebhen Shetiyyah*, the Stone of Foundation, was the first solid [*i.e.*, stable, stationary] thing created, and was placed by God amidst the as yet boundless fluid of the primeval waters. Legend has it that just as the body of an embryo is built up in its mother's womb from the navel, so God built up the earth concentrically around this Stone."[655]

---

[648] *Kingship and the Gods*, 153.

[649] *Ibid.*

[650] Énel, *Les Origines de la Genèse et l'Enseignement des Temples de l'Ancienne Égypte*, 30.

[651] Cited in Jung, *Alchemical Studies*.

[652] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 437.

[653] *Ibid.*, 446-47, citing Kabbala denudata I, Part 1, 16.

[654] *Ibid.*, 447n, citing Zohar I, 231a.

Is this not the same account as that recorded by the Egyptians, who say that Atum, the masculine Foundation Stone, came to rest at the cosmic centre, and that the created "land" or "earth"—the womb of the mother goddess—congealed around the central god?

Hebrew and Muslim traditions locate the Foundation Stone in the paradise of Eden. The Arabic term for the stone is *es-Sakra*—"the Rock." Thus the Mosque of Omar—known as *Kubbat es-Sakra*, "Dome of the Rock"—bears on its western facade the inscription: "The Rock of the Temple—from the Garden of Eden."[656] The legends relate that the Foundation Stone conceals beneath it all the world's waters and winds: "All sweet water comes from under the Holy Rock," notes Wensinck; "thereafter it spreads over the earth." A Muslim text states that "all rivers and clouds and vapours and winds come from under the Holy Rock in Jerusalem."[657] This can only mean that the four rivers of Eden, which water "the whole earth," have their origin in, or under, the Foundation Stone.

Though the stone belongs to the centre, it is, like the Egyptian Benben, a *cornerstone*, for one reads in Isaiah, "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold I lay in Zion [*i.e.*, Jerusalem] for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious *corner* stone, a sure foundation."[658] The *center* is the intersection of the *four corners* .

That the Foundation Stone stood at the source of the four directional paths is the consistent theme in all of the ancient architectural plans reviewed by W. Muller—from Europe to Southeast Asia. When the Roman augur marked out the four directions of the sacred city he sat upon a stone—which denoted the *center*, the intersection of the north-south and east-west axes.[659] (One naturally thinks also of the *lapis niger* or black stone of the Roman Forum, signifying the centre of the world.)

The map of ancient Ireland shows four provinces—Connaught, Ulster, Leinster, and Munster—surrounding the *central* province of Mide ("the Middle"), where was situated the *Aill na-Mircann*, the "Stone of the Divisions."[660] This basic pattern occurs also in the original plan of Nimwegen in the Netherlands: at the intersection of the "four streets of the world" stood a great blue stone.[661] A similar stone stood at the symbolic centre of Leiden, from which four main streets radiated in four directions.[662]

At the center of the sacred Hindu dwelling, where the directional paths meet, stood the Foundation Stone, considered as the fixed point from which creation began.[663] In Thailand the Foundation Stone of the royal palace, lying at the intersection of the crossroads, was the "corner-stone of the land."[664]

---

[655] Patai, *Man and Temple*, 85.

[656] Vilnay, *Legends of Jerusalem*, 17.

[657] Wensinck, *The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth*, 34.

[658] Isaiah 28: 16. [Emphasis added.]

[659] W. Muller, *Die Heilige Stadt*, 38*ff.*

[660] *Ibid.*, 94.

[661] *Ibid.*, 198.

[662] *Ibid.*, 198-99.

[663] *Ibid.*, 198-99.

[664] *Ibid.*, 145. Such traditions illuminate the image of Oedipus sitting on a stone where the ways part into many roads. O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 393.

Nor can one ignore the identity of the Foundation Stone and the planet Saturn. Arabic thought often identifies the Foundation Stone of Eden/Jerusalem with the sacred stone of the Ka'ba in Mecca.665 (Tradition says that Adam himself sat upon the Ka'ba stone, and that "forty years before Allah created the heavens and earth the Ka'ba was a dry spot floating on the water and from it the world has been spread out."666 It is reported that in the pre-Islamic period the statue of a god Hubal stood inside the Ka'ba above the opening of a well. The well symbolized the central source of the world's waters, and *Hubal was the planet Saturn.*

In the tradition reconstructed by Hildegard Lewy, the statue of Hubal filled the same purpose as the stone. When the stone was removed "a statue of the planet Saturn [Hubal] had served in its place as the visible symbol of the planetary god to whom the Ka'ba was dedicated."667

But the Meccan stone, as affirmed by numerous accounts, symbolized the very rock which the Hebrews called *Ebhen Shetiyyah*—the Foundation Stone.668 The Mohammedans, writes Lewy, "were fully aware of the functions of the sacred stone of Mecca and Jerusalem. The sacred stone of Jerusalem represented the same god [Saturn] as the Black Stone of Mecca."669

The Foundation Stone is thus an indispensable ingredient in the symbolism of the four life-bearing streams. The stone denotes Saturn in his character as the steadfast support of the turning Cosmos and the source of the radiating life elements.

The Four Pillars Of Heaven

There is an aspect of the four streams which seems to defy nature and reason: they are called "pillars."

The Egyptian Four Sons of Horus appear as four supports holding aloft the womb of heaven (Nut). But the standard analysis of the four pillar-gods, by dispersing them to an indefinable "four corners" of our earth, deprives them of their concrete aspect as *life-streams flowing from the central sun.* When the great god identifies the Four Sons of Horus as the spirits who "have sprung from my body and who shall be with me in the form of everlasting judges . . . ," it is clear that the four powers occupy a *particular place.*670 Thus the

---

665 "At resurrection day, the Ka'ba Stone, which is in holy Mecca, will go to the Foundation Stone in holy Jerusalem, bringing with it the inhabitants of Mecca, and it shall become joined to the foundation Stone." Vilnay, *op. cit.*, 17.

666 Wensinck, *Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth*, 18. As is well known, the stone of the Ka'ba is black ("the black stone"). But it was not always so, for the legends claim that before Adam left Eden, it was a white hyacinth. This is, in fact, a theme which occurs elsewhere: the white stone (or god) loses his radiance, becoming "black." Though I intend to review this theme in a subsequent volume, it is appropriate to note here that, in a widespread myth, Saturn, the primeval sun, passes into a figure of death and darkness, a prototype of Satan. Saturn becomes the "black planet." ("Saturn is frequently called the 'black' or 'dark' planet," observes Hildegard Lewy, *Origin and Significance of the Mâgen Dâwîd*, 339.)

667 Hildegard Lewy, *op. cit.*, 360.

668 *Ibid.*, 362.

669 *Ibid.* The myth of the four rivers flowing from the Foundation Stone and defining the four quarters of the world proves to be most tenacious. O'Neill, for example, cites the following from an old magazine, *The Post Angel*, which published a section called "Answers to Correspondents," in 1971:

"Q.Why does the needle in the sea-compass always turn to the North?"

"A. The most received opinion is that there is under our North Pole a huge black rock, from under which the Ocean issueth in 4 currents answerable to the 4 corners of the Earth or 4 winds: which rock is thought to be all of a loadstone, so that by a kind of affinity it draweth all such like stones or other metals touched by them towards it." O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 129.

Even when the cosmic imagery has become confused with geography, the central features are the same as in the Egyptian version expressed thousands of years earlier.

670 Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 497.

Pyramid Texts locate Atum-Re at “the *place* of the four pillars,”[671] and this “place” is doubtless the womb of Nut, the Holy Abode ⊗. *The four streams are conceived as four pillars radiating from the immovable Foundation Stone to sustain Saturn’s Cosmos at four cardinal points.*

The Hindu *Satapatha Brahmana*, in setting forth the ritual of the world wheel, extols the great god Vishnu with the words: “O Vishnu, with beams of light thou didst hold fast the earth on all sides.”[672] The four primary rays of the Hindu central sun ✦ constitute the pillars of the celestial dwelling ⊕. (The connection is implicit in the English word *beam*, which means both a ray of light and a fixed support.)

So also do the four winds serve as pillars. The Ethiopic *Book of Enoch* reads: “I saw the treasures of all the winds: I saw how He had furnished with them the whole creation and the firm foundations of the earth. And I saw the *corner stone* of the earth: I saw the four winds . . . : these are the pillars of the earth.”[673] In architectural representations of Eden’s four rivers, they too appear as pillars.[674] The Mayan Bacabs, who personify the four directional streams, are the *four props of heaven.* Similarly, in Hawaiian myth, the life elements radiate to the four corners of heaven by means of the four spirits, Tane, Rono, Tanaoroa and Tu—called “the Four Male *Pillars* of Creation.”[675]

On our earth no one has ever seen a beam of light, a wind, or a river serving as a pillar, yet this is the extraordinary function of the four paths of light and life flowing from the creator. As spokes of the world wheel ⊕, the streams appeared to “pillar apart” and to steady the revolving enclosure.

Symmetrical Elaborations Of The Sun-Cross

In the course of many centuries the sun-cross often acquired complex and symmetrical associations, as schools of myth and theology combined various interpretations of the four streams in formal systems. These evolved systems often identify each quarter of sacred space with an element, colour, season, or representative animal.

An early example of this tendency is the assignment of a different substance to each of the four paradisal rivers. While Marco Polo journeyed to the court of Kublai Khan he was told the legend of an old ruler called the Sheikh of the Mountain. The sheikh was distinguished for his possession of the world’s most beautiful garden, containing the best fruits of the earth. Through the garden passed four conduits, one flowing with wine, one with milk, one with honey, and one with water. The sheikh proclaimed his garden to be paradise.[676]

Hindu literature describes the four rivers of paradise as flowing respectively with milk, butter, honey, and wine.[677] Similarly, Strabo relates the report of Calamus that the first race of men enjoyed a blissful land in which “corn of all sorts abounded as plentifully as dust does at present; and the fountains poured forth streams, some of water, some of milk, some of honey, some of wine, and some of oil.”[678]

---

[671] *Pyramid Text* 158. [Emphasis added.]

[672] Eggeling, *op. cit.*, 5.3.14.

[673] Book of Enoch 18: 1-3. [Emphasis added.]

[674] Cirlot, *op. cit.*, 18.

[675] Melville, *Children of the Rainbow*, 33. [Emphasis added.]

[676] Butterworth, *The Tree at the Navel of the Earth*, 53.

[677] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 16.

[678] *Ibid.*, 15.

In a corresponding manner each river receives a different *color*. The four rivers of the Chinese polar paradise Kwen-lun possess a remarkable feature: one is blue, another white, another red, and another black.[679] Each of the Hindu four rivers has its special colour.[680] The Kalmucks of Siberia describe a primordial sea from which four rivers flowed "toward the different points of the compass," each issuing from the mouth of a different animal and identified with different colours: "The eastern river contains silver sand, the southern blue jewel sand, the western red jewel sand and the northern gold sand."[681]

In developing the symbolism of the terrestrial kingdom, the ancients borrowed from the imagery of the celestial, assigning a different colour, element, or season to each geographical "cardinal point." Of course the celestial prototype, the sun-cross , does not itself suggest which terrestrial direction should be associated with "fire" and which with "air," or whether one special direction should be linked with "blue" and another with "red." Thus there seems to be no single pattern of the symbolism from one land to another.

But the tendency toward such formalization was universal. Both the Mexicans and the Zuni identified the four directions with respective colours and "elements" (air, water, fire, earth), though the specific relationship differed, as indicated below:[682]

	MEXICO	ZUNI
North	Red, Fire	Yellow, Air
West	Yellow, Earth	Blue, Water
South	Blue, Air	Red, Fire
East	Green, Water	White, Earth
Center	Many colors	All colors

The Maya, on the other hand, connected the east with red, the north with white, the west with black, and the south with yellow. Throughout North America, according to Alexander, the directional gods were associated with respective colours, though there "is no uniformity in the distribution of the colours to the several regions."[683]

Buddhist symbolism shows four rays radiating from the heads of Makasukha to the four corners, each ray associated with a colour,[684] while the Chinese developed the following associations of the directions:

DIRECTION	COLOR	ELEMENT	SEASON
North	black	water	winter
West	white	metal	autumn
South	red	fire	summer
East	green	wood	spring
Center	yellow	earth	

Taken alone, these varied connections tell us little, for such developments are largely a matter of local innovation. What is important for our analysis is the unanimity with which the ancients conceived their land as four quarters around a centre, identifying the quarters with the primal life elements which all traditions describe flowing from the central sun in radiant streams.

---

[679] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 909.

[680] Lenormant, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 19-21.

[681] Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiösen Vorstellungen*, 86-87; *Siberian Mythology*, 358-59.

[682] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 293.

[683] Alexander, *op. cit.*, 287.

[684] Jung and Kerenyi, *Essays on a Science of Mythology*, 15.

Moreover, there is one aspect of the elaborated symbolism of the four quarters which deserves closer attention—namely, *the connection of the planet Saturn with the centre around which the four “elements” or colors or seasons are ranged.* In the specific associations of the Chinese directions indicated above one recognizes no correspondence with a “general tradition.” For example, the Chinese identification of the center with the element “earth” or with the color yellow fails to coincide with any world-wide pattern. Surely it is significant, however, that in China the center, the element “earth,” and the colour yellow *all belong uniquely to the planet Saturn*—a startling fact which agrees with the equally startling placement of Saturn at the pole, the cosmic centre in Chinese thought.[685] Saturn is Huang-ti, the *Yellow* Emperor, his residence the *Central* Palace from which the four directions radiate.

This character of Saturn prevails in the Chinese symbolism of the five visible planets. Saturn is placed at the centre, while Mercury, Venus, Mars, and Jupiter are spaced at the “four corners” around Saturn. Nothing in the present orbits of the planets would suggest Saturn’s location at the centre of this system. In fact, as the outermost visible planet, Saturn would seem the least worthy of such distinction.

But originally, Saturn was the polar sun, the central source of the directional streams, and it was only to be expected that the other four planets, like the four seasons, four colours, or four elements, came to symbolize the powers of the four quarters, their symbolic location possibly being decided by the element with which each planet was identified. As to the “center,” Saturn could be the only choice. The order was:

NORTH
Mercury

WEST CENTER EAST
Venus Saturn Jupiter

SOUTH
Mars

This cosmological system receives extensive treatment by Leopold de Saussure.[686] To the Chinese, he reports, Saturn corresponded to the sacred centre, around which the cardinal points ranged; symbolism of the terrestrial centre mirrored the symbolism of the celestial pole. The other four planets were equated with the four seasons, elements, and colours, the entire system having its origin in the concept of the four divisions of heaven, to which the polar centre, Saturn’s domain, was added as the “fifth.”

What is even more extraordinary, the location of Saturn at the polar centre—with the four quarters dispersed around him—was not unique to China. De Saussure finds the same system in Iran. Iranian cosmology connects the five planets with five regions of space, the centre being fixed at the celestial pole. *Placed at the pole was Kevan, the planet Saturn, precisely duplicating the station of the Chinese Saturn.* Here is the system:

NORTH
Mars *(Vahram)*

WEST CENTER EAST
Venus *(Anahid)* Saturn *(Kevan)* Mercury *(Tir)*

SOUTH
Jupiter
(Auharmzd)

---

[685] De Saussure, *La Série Septénaire, Cosmologique et Planétaire*, 340.

[686] *Ibid.*, 333-70; *Le Système Cosmologique Sino-Iranienne*, 235-97; *Origine Babylonienne de l’Astronomie Chinoise*, 5-18.

The reader will note that the directional connections of the four peripheral planets do not correspond to the connections in the Chinese system. What is vital is Saturn's central station as the source of the four emanations. "The planet that the Chinese consider as the symbol of the emperor [*i.e.*, Saturn] is associated, in Iran, with the Great One in the Middle of Heaven, which is to say, with the celestial pole; it bears the name . . . of Kevan and it is precisely identified by the translators with Saturn."687

After reviewing the stunning concordance of the Chinese and Iranian symbolism, de Saussure concluded that the Iranian system must have been borrowed from the Chinese. Later, however, following correspondence with the Iranian scholar Junker, de Saussure changed his opinion; for Junker pointed out that the same idea—the polar centre surrounded by four heavens-divisions—prevailed in the older Babylonian and Hindu systems. Therefore, concluded de Saussure, "the division of the universe into a central region and four peripheral divisions [and] the assimilation of the terrestrial sovereign to the celestial pole . . . occurs not only in Chinese cosmology—which is particularly rational, symmetrical and well preserved—but also in Babylonian, Vedic [Hindu] and Iranian cosmologies."688

Most surprising of all, however, was the discovery by de Saussure and Junker that when the principles of the five regions are applied to the oldest enumeration of the sun, moon, and planets in Babylonia, Saturn acquires the central (polar) station.689 "In the most ancient Babylonian series [of planets] based on the number five," states de Saussure, "the planet Saturn is placed, as in China, in the middle."690 The polar Saturn, presiding over the central region and surrounded by the powers of the four quarters, thus occurs in the earliest formal astronomy.

To summarize: The imagery of the quartered kingdom centers on the sign of the sun-cross , depicting Saturn sending the seed of life in the four directions. Ancient mythmakers interpreted the radiating streams as four beams of light, four winds, four rivers, four paths of arrows, or four pillars of the Cosmos .

But the heaven-dividing streams eventually passed into an expanded symbolism, relating each direction to an element, season, colour, or planet. In such elaborate and symmetrical renderings of the quartered kingdom, one recognizes the arbitrary influence of innovation. But the root idea remains consistent from one land to another, and when such symbolism is subject to scrutiny, Saturn looms at the cosmic centre—the "fifth region," the immovable pole around which the directional elements, seasons, planets, etc. are ranged.

---

687 De Saussure, *Le Système Cosmologique Sino-Iranienne*, 277.

688 "*Origine Babylonienne de l'Astronomie Chinoise*, 18.

689 *Ibid.*, 16-17.

690 *La Série Septénaire*, 358.

VII: Temple, Crown, Vase, Eye, And Circular Serpent

A primary thesis of this book is that the Saturnian configuration provoked many different symbols, whose underlying relationship to a single cosmic form too often goes unnoticed.

When the ancients laid out the sacred city they sought to establish a likeness of the cosmic dwelling, a circle around a fixed centre. And in organizing the first kingdoms, unifying once-separate territories, the founders followed the same celestial plan.

There was only one dwelling of the great god, but this dwelling inspired imitative forms of *varying* scale and *varying* ritual functions. At root the creator's home is simply "the place," "the land," "the holy abode," or "the enclosure." Only with the construction of imitative *cities* does the god's residence become "the cosmic city." And only after the organization of imitative terrestrial *kingdoms* can one meaningfully term the heavenly abode a "celestial kingdom."

What the smallest city and grandest empire have in common is an identical relationship to the Saturnian enclosure. Distinctions of scale "down here" do not alter the fact that the *celestial* city and kingdom are absolutely synonymous.

In addition to the images of the Saturnian band reviewed in the foregoing sections, several others require attention.

The Temple

Like the ancient city and kingdom, the terrestrial shrine copies Saturn's dwelling. (Saturn, as we have seen, founded the "first" temple.) Though the local temple acquired its own special functions and attributes, the ritual leaves no doubt that the *cosmic* "house," "shrine," and "chamber" mean the same thing as the "city of heaven."

Sumerian texts describe the cosmic *city* of Eridu as:

The house *built of silver, adorned with lapis lazuli . . .*

The abyss [cosmic ocean],

the shrine *of the goodness of Enki, befitting the divine decrees,*

Eridu, the pure house *having been built.*[691]

Conversely, the celestial temple is called "the primeval city" (the very title of many Sumerian cities themselves), and the hymns say of the Kes temple:

Indeed it is a city, indeed it is a city, who know its interior?

The Kes temple is indeed a city,

who knows its interior?[692]

Enki, the Sumerian Saturn, erects his temple or "sea house" as *the crowning act of creation*:

---

[691] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 63. [Emphasis added.]

[692] Gragg, *The Keš Temple Hymn*, 170-71.

After the water of creation has been decreed,
After the name hegal (Abundance), born of heaven,
Like the plant and herb had clothed the land,
The lord of the abyss, the King Enki,
Enki, the lord who decrees the fates,
Built his house of silver and lapis lazuli:
Its silver and lapis lazuli, like sparkling light.
*The father fashioned fittingly in the abyss.*693

This is the "far-famed house built in the bosom [heart, centre] of the Nether sea."694 The cosmic dwelling becomes the "Good temple built on a good place . . . floating in the sky . . . heaven's midst."695 It is said to "float like a cloud in the midst of the sky."696

In constructing the earthbound copy of the temple above, states Jastrow, the Babylonians strove to make both the exterior and interior "resplendent with brilliant colouring—'brilliant as the sun.'"697 The purpose is clear: to imbue the local temple with a lustre matching that of the prototype. Symbolically, the local temple takes on the radiance of the celestial, becoming the "house of light," "house of the brilliant precinct," or "lofty and brilliant wall"; "the house of great splendour," "the beautiful house," "the brilliant house."698

To deal with the Sumero-Babylonian imagery in its own terms one must understand the cosmic temple not only as the god's house—but more. *The temple fashioned in the abyss is the created "earth."* The Sumerian Ekur, the house of Enlil on the cosmic sea Apsu, means both "temple" and "earth" ("land," "place").699

Gragg confirms the identity of the cosmic temple and the created "earth" when he notes "the cosmic dimensions of the temple. It fills the whole world."700 The Sumerians celebrated the god's shrine as the "pure place, *earth of An*," (that is, *Saturn's Earth*).701

Throughout the previous sections I have contended that Saturn's dwelling produced the original myth of the lost paradise. That the great god's house enclosed the cosmic land of fertility and abundance is the straightforward declaration of the Sumerian temple hymns. (Though some of the lines in the following quotes are broken, one cannot fail to discern the consistent theme):

House, Mountain, like herbs and plants beautifully blooming

---

693 Kramer, *op. cit.*, 63.

694 Combe, *Histoire du Culte de Sin*, 121.

695 Gragg, *op. cit.*, 169.

696 Sjöberg and Bergmann, *The Collection of the Sumerian Temple Hymns*, 13.

697 *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 632.

698 *Ibid.*, 641.

699 The same meaning attaches to the Babylonian Esharra, the dwelling which the creator measured out on the cosmic sea. Jastrow calls Esharra "a poetic designation of the earth." *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 431. Jensen relates the term especially to the earth as it appeared at the creation. *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 188*ff.* The literal meaning is "house of fullness" or "house of fertility."

700 *Op. cit.*, 158.

701 *Ibid.*, 23. [Emphasis added.]

. . . your interior is plentitude.[702]

The temple is built; its abundance is good!

The Kes temple is built; its abundance is good![703]

House with well-formed jars, set up under heaven . . .

(Full of) the abundance of the midst of the sea . . .

Emah, the house of Sara, the faithful man

has enlarged for you (Umma) in plenty . . .

(With) good fortune it is expanding, (its)

. . . abundance and well-being . . .[704]

House . . . from your midst (comes) plenty,

Your treasury (is) a mountain of abundance . . .[705]

Your interior is the place where the sun rises*, endowed with abundance, far-reaching . . .*[706]

House with the great me's of Kulaba . . . ,

(its) . . . has made the temple flourish,

Well grown fresh fruit, marvellous, filled with ripeness,

Descending from the midst of heaven . . .[707]

One sees that the temple stands at the cosmic "midst" or centre. From its interior shines the primeval sun, it houses the flourishing celestial garden.

The chamber of the great god, according to Sumerian creation myths, was that in which dwelt the original generation of "men" (*i.e.*, the company of gods to whom all races traced their ancestry and from which each race took its name). The chamber was the prototype of Eden, the ancestral birthplace.

In the Sumerian myth of the primordial hero Tagtug occurs a lively description of the god's chamber as a celestial garden. Occupying the house of abundance are the Anunnaki, the great god's companions. And here came into being the first generation of "Mankind":

The abundance of the goddess of flocks and of the Grain Goddess,

The Anunnaki in "the holy chamber"

Ate and were not filled . . .

The Anunnaki in "the holy chamber"

Drank and were not filled.

In the holy park, for their (the god's) benefit,

---

[702] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, Temple Hymn 39.

[703] Gragg, op. cit., 174.

[704] *Ibid.*, Temple Hymn 25.

[705] *Ibid.*, Temple Hymn 18.

[706] *Ibid.*, Temple Hymn 15. [Emphasis added.]

[707] *Ibid.*, Temple Hymn 21.

Mankind with the soul of life came into being.
Then Enki said to Enlil:
"Father Enlil, flocks and grain
In "the holy chamber" have been made plentiful.
In "the holy chamber" mightily shall they bring forth."
By the incantation of Enki and Enlil
Flocks and grain in "the holy chamber" brought forth.
Pasture they provided for them abundantly,
For the Grain-goddess they prepared a house . . .[708]

The flowering of the celestial garden is a widespread theme which I touched on briefly in the earlier discussion of the Egyptian creation and which I intend to explore at greater length in a subsequent volume. It is surely worthy of note, however, that the great god's "chamber" is the same as the "holy park" in which "Mankind" was brought forth.

If one reads the above lines in the light of the Egyptian symbolism—which equates the first generation of gods (men) with the "abundance" erupting from the creator—the Sumerian myth takes on greater meaning than might otherwise be evident. Immediately after the statement, "Mankind with the soul of life came into being," Enki declares that "flocks and grain in 'the holy chamber' have been made plentiful." *The primeval generation was the same thing as the overflowing abundance*, both referring to the luminous debris which erupted from the creator as "speech." Thus the "flocks and grain" of the celestial garden, according to the Sumerian text, are brought forth "by the *incantation* [*i.e.*, speech] of Enki and Enlil" (two competing figures of the single creator). To my knowledge, such close parallels between the Egyptian and Mesopotamian creation accounts have never received adequate attention by comparative mythologists.

The blossoming chamber of the Sumerian creation also finds a counterpart in a Hawaiian genesis myth, reproduced by Leinani Melville:

Man descended from the Sacred Shrine of
The King who created the heavens.
The Shrine of the King of Heaven who caused
that distant realm to bloom and flower:
The Consecrated Realm of Teave, the World of Teave.[709]

Both the Hawaiian and Sumerian sources place the genesis of the race in the great god's shrine or chamber, likened to a flowering garden. Just as the Sumerian chamber or temple corresponds to the "earth," so does the Hawaiian sacred shrine answer to "the World of Teave."

The Egyptian Temple

As in Mesopotamia, Egyptian sources portray the primeval temple as the visible dwelling of the sun-god:

May I shine like Re in his divine splendour in the temple.[710]

Homage to thee [Osiris Nu]*, O thou who art within the divine shrine, who shinest with rays of light and sendest forth radiance from thyself.*[711]

---

[708] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 190-91.

[709] Melville, *Children of the Rainbow*, 21.

[710] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 638.

> *. . . Every god shall . . . rejoice at the life of Ptah when he maketh his appearance from the great temple of the Aged One which is in Annu.*[712]
>
> *Thou art the ruler of all the gods and thou hast joy of heart within the shrine.*[713]

The great god's shrine, house, or temple is the band of "glory," the Aten ☉: "Your pavilion is enlarged in the interior of the Aten," states a *Coffin Text.*[714]

When the Egyptians laid the foundation of a temple, they consecrated the enclosed ground as "the primeval territory of the domain of the sun-god."[715] Each temple became a miniature of the cosmic habitation founded in the creation. Thus the Egyptians viewed the Edfu temple as "the veritable descendant of the mythical temple that was created at the dawn of this world . . . ," Reymond tells us.[716] The foundation ground became "the Blessed Territory from the time of the Primeval Ones . . . , the Hinterland of the Primeval Water."[717] This was the Province of the Beginning, "the Blessed *Homeland.*"[718]

In Hebrew cosmology, reports Wensinck, "the sanctuary is the type and representation of Cosmos and Paradise and as such a power diametrically opposed to Chaos."[719]

From the very spot of the Hebrew temple "the first ray of light issued and illuminated the whole world." Indeed, the temple *was* the "whole world," according to a Midrash: "The temple corresponds to the whole world."[720] Tradition states that the primordial light was "not identical with the light of the sun, moon and stars," but lit up the temple from its centre and radiated out through the windows.[721] The cosmic temple, in other words, was the lost land of the "dawn" or first "sunrise."

Temple And Womb

Nothing is more basic to the imagery of the temple than its identity as the cosmic womb. Neumann observes: "Just as the temple is . . . a symbol of the Great Goddess as house and shelter, so the temple gate is the entrance into the goddess; it is her womb, and the innumerable entrance and threshold rites of mankind are expressions of this numinous feminine place."[722] Throughout the Near East, states Allegro, "the temple was designed with a large measure of uniformity" and this sacred abode is "now recognizable as a microcosm of the womb."[723]

---

[711] *Ibid.*, 404.

[712] *Ibid.*, 51.

[713] *Ibid.*, 17.

[714] Lacau, *Traduction des textes ses Cerueils du Moyen Empire*, 45.

[715] Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*, 311.

[716] *Ibid.*, 311.

[717] *Ibid.*, 311.

[718] *Ibid.*, 305. [Emphasis added.]

[719] "The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth," 15.

[720] Patai, *Man and Temple*, 116.

[721] *Ibid.*, 84-85.

[722] *The Great Mother*, 159.

[723] Allegro, *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross*, 25.

Not in one land, but in every segment of the world, the sacred texts confirm this identity of temple and womb. The Egyptian great god resides within the womb of the goddess as in a "house" or "chamber." The goddess Hathor is "the house of Horus."[724] The name of Isis means "chamber," "house," "abode," etc., and the Egyptians claimed she was the house in which Horus came into being.[725] Nut is "the good house,"[726] and Neith the "house of Osiris,"[727] while the name of Nephthys means "Lady of the House."

The identity stands out in this hymn to Re: "I am exalted like the holy god who dwelleth in the Great Temple, and the gods rejoice when they see me in my beautiful coming forth from the body [*khat*, "womb"] of Nut, when my mother Nut giveth birth to me."[728] To shine as the "sun" within the cosmic temple is to come forth within the womb of Nut, "the good house."

Among the Egyptians, notes Sethe, "house" served as a poetic expression for the womb.[729] Clearly, this "poetic expression" originated as a radical identity in the ritual. Just as the goddess' titles denominate her the "house" or "temple" of the great god, so does the temple receive the character of the goddess. Ptah's temple at Memphis is the "mistress of life,"[730] and an inscription in King Seti I's funerary temple states, "I am thy temple, thy mother, forever and forever."[731] The Holy Chamber from which Re shines forth is, according to Piankoff, "The Holy Chamber of the Netherworld [Tuat], the womb of divine birth."[732]

Throughout Mesopotamia, one discovers the same features of the temple. Here, too, the cosmic "house" appears as the womb of primeval genesis. Urukug is "the shrine which causes the seed to come forth,"[733] while the temple of Aruru is "the procreative womb of Emah"[734] and the temple of Lilzag "the house of exalted seed."[735]

The Mesopotamian temple or chamber thus gives birth to the god. Tammuz, the man-child, is "the offspring of the house"[736] and Marduk the "Child of the holy chamber."[737] In the Babylonian creation epic we read:

In the chamber of fate, the abode of destinies,

A god was engendered, most able and wisest of gods.

In the heart of the Apsu was Marduk created.[738]

---

[724] Bleeker, *Hathor and Thoth*, 25.

[725] Budge, *Osiris: the Egyptian Religion of Resurrection*, Vol.II, 272.

[726] Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. I, 462.

[727] Levy, *Religious Conceptions of the Stone Age*, 117.

[728] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 260.

[729] Cited in Bleeker, *op. cit.*, 25.

[730] Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts*, 5.

[731] Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 67.

[732] *The Litany of Re*, 25n.

[733] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 32.

[734] Langdon, *Sumerian Liturgical Texts*, 115.

[735] *Ibid.*, 141.

[736] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 347.

[737] *Ibid.*, 155.

"You have taken my seed into the womb, have given birth to me in the shrine," declares King Gudea to the goddess Gatumdug.[739] One can compare the Sumerian text: "In the great house he has begotten me."[740] As in Egypt, the gate of a sanctuary is conceived as the entrance to the womb of the goddess.[741] Hence, Sargon styles one of the gates of his palace *Belit ilani*, "mistress of the gods."[742]

The Crown

Among all ancient races the crown, wreath, or headband signified religious and political authority. Yet this world-wide function of the crown reflects no self-evident fact of human nature or of the external world. What was the source of the crown's numinous powers?

The symbols of kingship have their origin in the Universal Monarch, the ancestor of kings and "founder" of the kingship ritual. Legends of the great god say that, when he established his kingdom, he wore as a crown his "circle of glory" (halo, aura). Before Egyptian rulers ever donned the White Crown, the crown of the great father Osiris shed its light at the cosmic centre: "His crown clove the sky and consorted with the stars."[743] The primordial sun, reports Pliny, "established civilization and first triumphantly crowned heaven with his glowing circle."[744] In the ritual of the Mandaeans it was the "First Man" who wore as a crown the "circle of radiance, light and glory."[745] One could hardly make a greater mistake than to assume, with so many modern scholars, that the crowns worn by gods are simply projections onto the heaven order of the crowns worn by terrestrial kings. Divorced from the crown of the Universal Monarch, the headdress of the local king becomes a meaningless artifact. Whatever powers the crown may possess, they derive from the cosmic prototype.

---

[738] *Ancient Near Eastern Texts*, 62.

[739] Kramer, *The Sacred Marriage Rite*, 28.

[740] Langdon, *A Sumerian Grammar*, 253.

[741] Levy, *op. cit.*, 100.

[742] Jastrow, *op. cit.*, 327. Of the goddess Belit-ekalla, "Belit of the palace," Jastrow writes: "it must be confessed that the precise force of the qualification of 'Belit of the palace' escapes us." *Ibid.*, 227. To one aware of the root meaning of the god's "house" the title can hardly pose a mystery.

The identity of "womb" and "house" occurs in every section of the globe. Simplicus reports that the Syrian goddess Derceto or Atargatis was the habitation of the gods, just as Orphic doctrine styled Vesta the house of the gods. Faber, *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, III, 49. The Hindu *Rig Veda* states: "They conduct him to the hut of the consecrated; the hut of the consecrated." Keith, *Rigveda Brahmanas*, 108. The same meaning of the sacred house prevails in China, according to Hentze, *Das Haus als Weltort der Seele*, 73.

The Mayans knew the goddess Ix Ahau Na, rendered by Roys as "Palace Lady"—an appellation exactly equivalent to the Babylonian "Belit of the Palace" and the Egyptian "Lady of the House" (Nephthys). In the Mayan language Na means both "mother" and "house." See J. Eric and S. Thompson, *Maya History and Religion*, 245.

With this understanding of the cosmic temple, one can better appreciate the sacred marriage rites so often conducted in sacred chambers. The king or high priest signified the god, while the queen or priestess represented the goddess and thus the temple itself, the cosmic receptacle housing the seed of abundance. Symbolically the temple was the spouse of the king, and the kings union with the temple maiden reenacted the primal marriage.

" . . . It is from the temple," states Patai, "that the blessings of fertility issued forth the whole world . . . The temples of many an ancient people were regarded as the Nuptial Chamber in which the divine powers of fertility, the Father God and Mother Goddess, celebrated their great annual wedding feast for the purpose of ensuring the fruitfulness of the earth and the multiplication of man and beast." Patai, *op. cit.*, 88.

[743] Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 103.

[744] Quoted in Brown, *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellation*, Vol. I, 32.

[745] Drower, *The Coronation of the Great Šišlam*, 13.

Fundamentally, the crown is an *enclosing band.* The most important component of the Egyptian crown was the gold headband, while the great god was “Master of the Head-Band.”[746] The Sumerian word for crown, *uku*, means “great band.”[747] In the classical etymologies reviewed by Onians the “crown” possesses the concrete meaning of a “circle” or “band” enclosing a god or a man.[748]

When the Egyptian priests placed the sacred band on the head of the king, deeming him the regent of the sun-god Re, they were guided by the image of the great god himself, whose hieroglyphic was , showing the sun-god in the circle of the Aten. Thus, in the Theban ritual, the gods Horus and Set say to the new king, “I will give thee a life like unto that of Re, years even as the years of Tem,” and “I will establish the crown upon thy head *even like the Aten on the head of Amen-Re.*”[749]

The great god not only *wears* the crown of glory, *he dwells in it.* He “appears in the White Crown”[750] or “comes forth from the Very Great Crown.”[751] In the *Book of the Dead* one finds “the divine being who dwelleth in the nemmes crown.”[752]

More specifically, the god’s crown is his *spouse*—the womb-goddess who emanated from the god, yet gave birth to him.

O Red crown, O Inu [the crown]*,*

O Great One . . .

O Inu, thou hast come forth from me;

And I have come forth from thee.[753]

To wear the crown is to reside within the womb; or conversely, to be born in the womb is to wear the crown.[754] It is in this sense that one must understand the statement of the *Coffin Texts* that the god is “born” in the crown or that the king is “the son of the white crown.”[755] The same identification of crown and womb explains the statement that Osiris first shone forth “fully crowned from his mothers womb.”[756] Does not the sign depict the “fully crowned” god within the cosmic womb?

“I am he who is girt about with his girdle and who cometh forth from the goddess of the Ureret crown.”[757] This statement from the *Book of the Dead* concurs with numerous other references in Egyptian texts, equating the crown with the mother goddess. In the *Pyramid Texts* we read: “I know my mother, I have not forgotten my mother, the white crown."[758] The same texts say of the king: "thy mother is the Great Wild Cow, living in Nekeb, the white crown, the Royal Headdress."[759] Accordingly, the Egyptians esteemed the goddess Isis as "the Crown of Re-Horus"[760] and the goddess Tefnut as the "diadem of Re."[761]

---

[746] Muller, *Egyptian Mythology*, 129.

[747] Langdon, *Sumerian Grammar*, 21.

[748] *The Origins of European Thought*, 445, 450-460.

[749] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 344. [Emphasis added.]

[750] Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 117.

[751] Piankoff, *The Wandering of the Soul*, 22.

[752] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 253.

[753] Quoted in Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 108.

[754] Lacau, *op. cit.*, 22.

[755] Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 248.

[756] Clark, *op. cit.*, 177.

[757] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 345.

The identity of goddess and crown, has, in fact, been fully acknowledged by Clark and Frankfort, among others.[762] Yet Frankfort's explanation amounts to this: "The goddess is simply the personification of the power of royalty . . . and hence is immanent in the crown."[763] The statement tacitly assumes that the local crown came first (who knows why) and that the great goddess, personifying an abstract "power of royalty," came to be identified with the crown *simply because the crown was a symbol of royal power.*

But the relationship of the crown and womb amounts to a radical identity; both take their character from the same visible band. Ignored by Frankfort is the explicit equation of *both the goddess and the crown* with the circle of the Aten.

That the god dwells in the crown means that the crown is the god's house or temple—what the Egyptians called "the temple of the White Crown." Speaking of the headgear of Sumer and Egypt, Levy notes that "in each case it bears a relation to the monuments. It [the crown] may, in fact, be considered as itself a little sanctuary."[764] But what was the source of this unexpected identity? Sumerian temple hymns repeatedly invoke the *cosmic* temple as the great god's crown. The temple of Eqaduda is the "Crown of the high plain"[765] and Sippar the "Sanctuary of heaven, star of heaven, *crown*, borne by Ningal."[766] The Kes temple becomes the "Great, true temple, reaching the sky, temple, *great crown*, reaching the sky . . ."[767]

The same identity prevails elsewhere. Hentze, observing that the Mexican Quetzalcoatl wears his temple as a crown, reports that such symbolism pervades early Chinese bronzes. One notes also the "world house" worn as a crown by the famous Diana of Ephesus. Like the sacred abode of all great gods the latter crown-temple has four doors facing in four directions.[768]

Since the cosmic temple is the same thing as the cosmic city, one should not be surprised to find that the city also appears as the crown. In the *Book of the Dead* occurs a description of "Re when at the beginning he rose in the city of Suten-henen [Heracleopolis], crowned like a king in his rising."[769] The evidence suggests that the city (or kingdom) in which Re first shone forth was the very circle of glory which he wore as a crown—and this is why, in the symbols and , the Egyptians combined the *hetch*-crown and *tesher*-crown with the symbol of the goddess Nut , the "city" or "holy land." In accord with this identity the Babylonian hymn proclaims, "Borsippa [the cosmic city] is thy crown."770

---

[758] *Pyramid Text* 910.

[759] *Pyramid Text* 729, quoted in Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 174.

[760] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 213.

[761] Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire*, 46.

[762] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 107, 174; Clark, *op. cit.*, 219.

[763] *Op. cit.*, 107.

[764] *Op. cit.*, 176.

[765] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 21.

[766] *Ibid.*, 45. [Emphasis added.]

[767] Gragg, *op. cit.*, 169. [Emphasis added.]

[768] Hentze, *op. cit.*, 96.

[769] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 93.

Often the crown takes the form of a city wall. The most famous example, perhaps, is the crown of Tyche of Antioch, which corresponds to the turreted wall of the city.771 Concerning the goddess of the city-crown, Suhr writes: ". . . the whole city wall, in a diminutive version, was placed on her head, beginning with Astarte and continuing with Aphrodite of Greek and Roman times."772 Yet why the crown was assimilated to the city wall remains unexplained by modern researchers—and will continue to remain a puzzle until scholars acknowledge the concrete form of the mother goddess, city, and crown as a single band of light around the great god.

The Vase

Mythmaking imagination also expressed the Saturnian band as a vase or receptacle housing the sun-god and his waters of life: all the waters of the world, according to ancient belief, originated in the solitary god.

As a symbol of the all-containing receptacle above, the round vessel became a popular figure of the mother goddess. ". . . The great goddess as divine water jar is the mistress of the upper waters." observes Neumann.773

G. Elliot Smith notices the close connection of the mother goddess with the vase: "The idea of the Mother Pot is found not only in Babylonia, Egypt, India, and the Eastern Mediterranean, but wherever the influence of these ancient civilizations made itself felt. It is widespread among the Celtic-speaking peoples . . . It became also a witch's cauldron, the magic cup, the Holy Grail, the font in which a child is reborn in the faith, the vessel of water here being interpreted in the earliest sense as the uterus or the organ of birth."774

Figure 29. The goddess Nut as the revolving water container.

The vase, in the Egyptian hieroglyphs, denotes the celestial goddess Nut and the female principle in general.775 An interesting Egyptian illustration depicts Nut, bearing the cosmic vessel on her head, and spinning around with sufficient speed to cause drops of water to fly outward (see fig. 29).

---

770 Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 81.

771 Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 19-23.

772 *The Spinning Aphrodite*, 146.

773 *Op. cit.*, 127.

774 *The Evolution of the Dragon*, 181.

775 Neumann, *op. cit.*, 128.

The mother goddess is the revolving water container in heaven. Sumero-Babylonian cylinder seals show the purifying waters of the Apsu descending from a vase, regarded as the mother womb. The vase is in "the heaven of Anu," called "the place of the flowing forth of the waters which open the womb."[776]

The same symbolism of the vase prevails in China, according to Hentze (who relates the symbolism of the feminine container to a global tradition).[777] The Zuni address the sacred pot as "the Mother,"[778] while a Peruvian jar covered with breasts on all sides obviously expresses the identical theme.[779]

Thus does the sun-god *dwell in the vase*, renewing his birth each "day": "I have come forth from my djenit-jar, and I will appear in the morning," reads an Egyptian *Pyramid Text*.[780] (I remind the reader that archaic "day" means our "night.") To the same symbolism belongs the Hindu Vasishtha who is "born from the jar"[781] and is obviously akin to the Iranian Fravashi Khumbya, "the son of the jar."[782] Muslim tradition echoes this theme in declaring that the soul of Mohammed preexisted in a vase of light in the world of spirits.[783] The Chinese alchemist Wei Po-Yang says: "The True Man living in a deep abyss, floats about the centre of the round vessel."[784] The mother vase housing the manchild appears even in Mexico (fig. 31).[785]

Among the Mayans, writes Nuttall, the vase symbolized "the divine essence of light and life proceeding from 'the Heart of Heaven.'"[786] Appropriately they designated the symbolic vase as the "navel or centre,"[787] a characterization which agrees with Neumann's interpretation of the vase as the "centre from which the universe is nourished."[788]

The vase denotes, in other words, the celestial earth, the original land of abundance. While the Egyptian priests of Ptah claimed the primeval land to have been fashioned by Ptah on his potter's wheel, the hymns also extol "the *pottery* which Ptah moulded"[789] in clear reference to the same primordial enclosure: the subject is the realm of the ancestors, where the resurrected dead receive "the fresh water in a *jar* which Ptah has fashioned."[790]

---

[776] Albright, *The Mouth of the Rivers*, 173.

[777] *Op. cit.*

[778] Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilization*, 105.

[779] Neumann, *op. cit.*, 124.

[780] *Pyramid Text* 437.

[781] Agrawala, *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 21.

[782] Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta*, Part II, 225.

[783] O'Niell, *The Night of the Gods*, 923.

[784] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 348.

[785] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 100.

[786] *Ibid.*, 284.

[787] *Ibid.*, 96.

[788] *Op. cit.*, 132.

[789] M. S. Holmberg, *The God Ptah*, 46. [Emphasis added.]

[790] *Ibid.*, 46. [Emphasis added.]

Figure 30. The mother goddess as water container. Vase from Troy, fourth stratum.

Figure 31. Man-child in vase. From Mexico, Vienna Codex.

Here is the declaration of “the potter” in the *Pyramid Texts* (as translated by Faulkner): “I am your potter upon earth . . . I have come and have brought to you this mansion of yours which I built for you on that night when you were born, on the day of your birth-place; it is a beer-jar (sic!).”[791] Most instructive is Faulkner’s parenthetical “sic!” following the phrase “beer-jar”—as if to suggest that the scribe suffered a lapse of reason: what could a beer jar have to do with the great god’s “mansion” and “birthplace”? Among the Egyptians beer symbolized fertility and abundance flowing from on high. The ritual “beer-jar” was the primeval land—the dwelling which congealed around the great father and (as the cosmic womb) “gave birth” to him. The same texts in which the above lines appear locate the potter god in “this Island of Earth.” Vessel, temple, earth, and womb denote the same celestial enclosure.

The Eye

One of the most mysterious symbols which have come down to us is the solitary and all-seeing Eye. In ancient Egypt, where the most complete information is available, the symbol pervades the monuments and the sacred texts of all periods. “The Eye is the key to the religion,” states Clark.[792] Yet no archaic sign has been less understood than the mystic Eye: “The Eye is the commonest symbol in Egyptian thought and the strangest to us.”[793]

---

[791] *Pyramid Texts* 1184-85. In Numerous ancient rites reviewed by Hentze—from China to Mexico to Italy—the deceased, or their ashes, were placed in vases which possessed the shape of a house; and these “house-urns,” in each cult, symbolized the “Earth-Mother.” Artists in China and Peru depicted the house-urn containing an unborn child. The vase sheltered the deceeased as the womb, giving birth (that is, rebirth) to him in the land of beginnings. Neumann describes similar symbolism of the house-urn in the Aegean cults of the Bronze Age, where the dead man lies in the vessel “as a child in the attitude of an embryo.” The practice of enclosing the dead within house-like vases symbolizing the mother-womb does not explain itself. The union of womb, house, and vessel hearkens back to the primordial order and the original dwelling of the great father. See Hentze, *op. cit.*; Neumann, *op. cit.*, 163.

[792] *Op. cit.*, 227.

Is the Eye, as almost uniformly asserted, the solar orb? Nowhere is the weakness of solar mythology more apparent than in its handling of this puzzling symbol. One Egyptologist after another, by following the solar interpretation, passes over in silence the many enigmatic particulars of eye symbolism.

To my knowledge the only well-known authority to reject categorically the solar interpretation is Rudolph Anthes. After devoting extensive research to the Eye of Re, Anthes concludes that the Eye “apparently *never* was the sun.”[794] Yet Anthes, seeking an answer in the heavens as they appear to us today, does not begin to unravel the interconnected symbolism of the Eye.

Strictly speaking the Egyptian Eye is neither a “sun” nor a “star,” but the *circle* or *enclosure* fashioned by the creator as his celestial home. The great god *resides* in the Eye as the pupil. One of the most common names of the Eye in Egypt is *Utchat*, hieroglyphically rendered as . The Utchat hieroglyph combines three closely related signs:

1) , meaning “to see” and also “to form, fashion, create”;

2) , “to fashion, encircle”; and

3) , “cord, to bind, to encircle.”

The all-seeing Eye is the *created enclosure*, the bond around the primeval sun.

Thus the god has his home in the Utchat (Eye): “I am in the Utchat.”[795] “I am he who dwelleth in the Utchat.”[796] “Enter thou in peace [*em hetep*, “at rest”] into the divine Utchat.”[797]

A *Coffin Text* reads, “I am Horus in his Eye,”[798] while the *Harris Magical Papyrus* states, “I am Shu under the form of Re, seated in the middle of his father’s eye.”[799] In the *Book of the Dead* one finds: “I am the pure one in his eye”;[800] “I am he who dwelleth in the middle of his own Eye.”[801]

Thus does the great god reside in the enclosure of the Eye as the “pupil.” “Praise be to thee, O Ra, Exalted Sekhem, aged one of the pupil of the Utchat [Eye].”[802] “I am in the Utchat . . . I sit in [*em*, “as”] the pupil of the eye . . . ”;[803] “God-the-pupil-of-whose-eye-is-terrible is thy name . . .”

---

[793] *Ibid.*, 218.

[794] Rudolf Anthes, *Mythology in Ancient Egypt*, in Kramer, *Mythologies of the Ancient World*, 87-90. [Emphasis added.]

[795] Lacau, *op. cit.*, 177.

[796] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 178.

[797] *Ibid.*, 638.

[798] Lacau, *op. cit.*, 65.

[799] Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, 103.

[800] Budge, *Papyrus of Ani*, 219.

[801] Renouf, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 164.

[802] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 344.

[803] Budge, *Papyrus of Ani*, 219.

When the texts speak of “the Eye of ‘Re who is in his Aten,”[804] one recognizes that the Eye *is* the Aten, for the Egyptians treated the Eye sign and the Aten sign as interchangeable symbols. Just as the Aten constituted the protective enclosure, so did the Eye: “O Osiris Nu, the Eye of Horus protecteth thee, it keepeth thee in safety . . .”[805] “. . . He is Horus encircled with the protection of his Eye . . .”[806] “My refuge is my Eye, my protection is my Eye . . .”[807] “I am the dweller in the Eye; no evil or calamitous things befall me.”[808]

Such references surely indicate that the Eye is not the sun or the sun-god, but the *goddess*, in whose protective womb the sun-god dwells. As a matter of fact, though Egyptian ritual presents the goddess under many names, *all primary figures of the goddess receive the appellation “Eye of Re.”* This includes, among others, Isis, Hathor, Nut, Sekhet, Iusaaset, Mehurt, Bast, Tefnut—and of course, the *goddess* Utchat (“Eye”).[809]

“The complex meshes of eye symbolism,” states Clark, “are woven all around the Egyptian Goddess and she cannot be understood or compared with other goddesses until they are unravelled.”[810] Yet, while Clark notes several interesting associations of the Eye and goddess he fails to discern the Eye’s *root character*, as the protective enclosure.

Only the direct identity of the Eye and cosmic womb will explain its context in the ritual: “The child who is in the eye of Horus, hath been presented to thee . . .”[811] “I am he whose being has been moulded in his eye.”[812] Horus is said to “. . . rear and nourish the multitudes through that Unique Eye, *Mistress of the Divine Company* and Lady of the Universe [All, Cosmos].”[813]

The very goddesses whom the texts depict as the Eye of the primeval sun are also called the “house,” as we should expect. As to the identity of the Eye and the temple, Egyptian sources leave no room for debate (though I know of no Egyptologist to observe the connection). The temple of Karnak is “the healthy eye of the Lord of All,”[814] a striking parallel to the Sumerian temple as the “House, eye of the land.”[815]

In the *Book of the Pylons* Re hearkens back to the remote age when “I was in the temple of my eye,”[816] while the *Book of the Dead* speaks of the son of Osiris residing “within the temple of his Eye in Annu.”[817] Elsewhere one finds the primeval sun coming forth “in the sanctuary of my eye.”[818]

---

[804] Vandier, “Iousâas et (Hathor)-Nébet-Hétépet,” 31, 83.

[805] Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 415.

[806] *Pyramid Text* 195.

[807] *Pyramid Text* 320.

[808] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 97.

[809] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 354, 422, 430, 443, 447, 517; Vol. II, 213, 279.

[810] *Op. cit.*, 227.

[811] Budge, *The Litany of Funerary Offerings*, 135.

[812] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* 178.

[813] Clark, *op. cit.*, 150. [Emphasis added.] That the Eye, though female, belongs to the great father (as the “Eye of Horus,” “Eye of Ra,” or “Eye of Nu”) agrees fundamentally with the character of the enclosed sun (here) already examined. The sun and its enclosure constitute the primordial Androgyne or “Father-Mother.” A common idea underlies the mythical recollections of “birth” from the great gods navel, thigh, or eye; the imagery focuses on the simple and universal form of the primal parents: (here).

[814] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 152.

[815] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 41.

[816] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 186.

Figure 32. The eye of the resting god.

Of course no one who automatically thinks “sun” when reading “eye” is likely to reflect on the overlapping symbols of the eye as a *band* or *enclosure.* Nor can one so trained meaningfully explain why, throughout Egyptian ritual, the eye appears in conjunction with the *crown.* In the Egyptian mystery play, the king is commanded, “take thou thine eye, whole to thy face,” and the command is carried out by placing the *crown* upon the king—for the crown, as “the symbol and seat of royal power . . . is called the eye of Horus.”[819]

The *Pyramid Texts* say, “Horus has given you his eye that you may take possession of the Urert-Crown.”[820] “O king, stand up, don the eye of Horus . . . that you may go forth in it, that the gods may see you clad in it.”[821] As to the identity of Eye and crown one could not ask for more explicit statements than these: “I wear the white crown, the eye of Horus.”[822] “O Osiris the king, I make firm the eye of Horus on your head—a headband.”[823] “I give you the crown of Upper Egypt, the eye which went up from your head.”[824] (The circle of glory issued from the central sun.)

If the god wears the Eye as a crown, so also does he take the Eye as a throne, and this relationship of the Eye and throne helps to explain the hieroglyph for Osiris, in which the two symbols appear together— . But to conventional schools the combination makes little sense. In Budge’s opinion, for example, there is no clear basis for the assimilation of the two signs, and “the difficulty is hardly likely to be cleared up.”[825]

---

[817] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 209.

[818] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 166.

[819] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 127.

[820] *Pyramid Text* 635.

[821] *Pyramid Texts* 844-45.

[822] *Pyramid Text* 1234.

[823] *Pyramid Text* 2274.

[824] *Pyramid Text* 1816.

[825] *Gods*, Vol. II, 113-14.

Yet to anyone aware of the interrelated images of the Aten ☉, the Osiris hieroglyph will pose no mystery. The throne is the symbol of Isis (*i.e.*, Isis *is* the throne), but the same goddess appears as "the eye"—so that Osiris sits *enthroned* within the circle of the Eye. Indeed, the Egyptian language says as much when it terms the throne *ast utchat*—"the throne of the Eye." And the *Book of the Dead* brings the Eye and throne into connection with the crown and egg: "I am the lord of the crown. I am in the Eye, my egg . . . My seat is on my throne. I sit in [*em*, "as"] the pupil of the eye."[826]

Though the influence of the Eye was felt far beyond Egypt, it is the integrated Egyptian imagery that throws light on later developments of the symbol. While the texts sometimes speak of "two eyes" (see the section The Two Eyes), fundamentally there is only one Eye of the great god. "I am Re who wept for himself in his single eye,"[827] state the *Coffin Texts.* The single Eye of Re or Horus is paralleled by the "clear-seeing eye" of the Sumerian Enki,[828] the single eyes of the Norse Odin,[829] the Iranian Ahura Mazda,[830] and the Mexican Tlaloc,[831] the "ageless eye of all-seeing Zeus,"[832] and the "one-eye of heaven" belonging to the Japanese Ama no Ma-hitotsu.[833]

The Egyptian Eye of Horus, in the *Book of the Dead*, is that which "shineth with splendours on the forehead of Re."[834] One can easily understand how subsequent generations, possessing only *conceptions* rather than *perceptions* to guide them, gave the great god increasingly human form, translating the central Eye into the legendary "third eye," which in Hindu representations appears as little more than a decorative jewel. The single eye of the Cyclops belongs to the same class of images. If the eye is not centered on the forehead, it may be located on the breast, as in the case of the Hindu demon Kabandha, slain by Rama,[835] and the headless man encountered by Fionn, Oisin, and Caoilte in Celtic myth.[836] (The pupil of the Eye ☉ is the Heart of Heaven.)

Surely one cannot properly evaluate the fanciful one-eyed giants of the classical and medieval age without first taking into account the celestial Eye—which left a mighty imprint on the earliest ritual.[837]

---

[826] Budge, *Papyrus of Ani*, 96.

[827] Clark, *op. cit.*, 95.

[828] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 464.

[829] MacCulloch, *Celtic Mythology*, 50.

[830] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 464.

[831] *Ibid.*, 464.

[832] Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion*, Vol. I, 186.

[833] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 464.

[834] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 56.

[835] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 464.

[836] MacCulloch, *op. cit.*, 169.

[837] As an example of contemporary analyses I note the explanation of the Cyclopes offered by Robert Graves: "The Cyclopes seem to have been a guild of Early Helladic bronzesmiths. Cyclops means 'ring-eyed,' and they are likely to have been tatoed with concentric rings on the forehead, in honour of the sun . . . Concentric circles are part of the mystery of smith-craft: in order to beat out bowls, helmets, or ritual masks, the smith would guide himself with such circles, described by compass around the centre of the flat disk on which he was working. The Cyclopes were one-eyed also in the sense that smiths often shade one eye with a patch against

The Cyclops, or “wheel-eyed” giant, corresponds in many ways to the god Odin, of Norse mythology. Odin’s all-piercing eye is also “a giant wheel.”[838] In ancient cosmology nothing is more explicit than such imagery of the *enclosed* sun. If the experts have failed to unravel the mystery of the Eye or Eye-wheel ⊙, the failure is not due to a lack of evidence but to the *habit* of the researchers, who, from the start, excluded the enclosure from the mythological investigation.

The Circular Serpent

Figure 33. Saturn as Mithraic Zurvan (Time), with central eye. (Pupil of eye=heart of heaven.)

It would be quite impossible, within the limited space permitted here, to review all the interconnections unifying the imagery of the Saturnian band. For every instance previously cited, many others have been left out simply to avoid excessive monotony.

As a final example of overlapping imagery, I shall cite the case of the circular serpent. All of the Saturnian gods—Atum-Re, An, Yama, Huang-ti, Quetzalcoatl, Kronos—reside within the fold of a serpent (dragon, fish, crocodile, etc.). But this symbol cannot be evaluated in isolation from the celestial earths, eggs, wheels, temples, crowns, and eyes which fill the ancient lexicon.

In the general mystic tradition, reports Cirlot, “the dragon, the serpent or the fish biting its tail, is a representative of time.”[839] Father Time, of course, is Saturn. Thus the Greeks placed in the hands of Chronos a snake which formed a ring by holding its tail in its mouth,[840] and this circular serpent is clearly that which the Hindus called Kali (“Time”). The Zoroastrians represented Zurvan (“Time”) by an enclosing serpent. A serpent encircles a Nahuatl calendar wheel (wheel of time) published by Clavigero.[841] On the famous Mexican calendar stone twin serpents form a single enclosure around the stone.[842]

The Egyptians associated the circular serpent with Atum (god of Time), identifying the serpent with the cosmic waters erupting from the creator: “I am the outflow of the Primeval Flood, he who emerged from the waters,” the serpent announces.[843]

---

flying sparks.” Graves, *The Greek Myths*, 32. In one paragraph Graves offers three different—and equally unsatisfactory—explanations of the “ring-eyed” god.

[838] Grimm, *Teutonic Mythology*, Vol. I, 703.

[839] *A Dictionary of Symbols*, 48.

[840] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 194.

[841] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 26.

[842] *Ibid.*, 26.

[843] Clark, *op. cit.*, 50.

The water serpent, issuing from Atum, constituted an aspect of the creator, eventually forming a coil around "himself":

I bent right around, I was encircled in my coils,

One who made a place for himself in the midst of his coils.

His utterance was what came forth from his mouth.[844]

Why the reference to the "utterance" of the god in association with the appearance of the serpent-coil? The reason is that the serpent, embodying the "outflow" of erupting waters, was himself a manifestation of the creator's speech.

In the *Coffin Text*, the great god, or Master of the All (Cosmos), recalls the original age "while I was still in the midst of the serpent coil."[845] And the king hopes to attain this very enclosure: "The King lies down in your coil, the King sits in your circle" proclaims a *Pyramid Text.*[846]

Can this serpent be anything other than the band of the enclosed sun ☉? The sun-god Re, while deemed *ami khet*, "dweller in the fiery circle," is also *ami-hem-f*, "dweller in his fiery serpent." Do not the circle and the serpent mean the same thing? The hieroglyphs offer conclusive evidence. Though the common pictograph of Re is ☉, the Egyptians also denoted Re by the glyph , showing the serpent as the *band around the primeval sun.*

This direct identification of the serpent and the circle of the Aten enables us to test the coherence of Aten symbolism as a whole. For if the serpent denoted the band of the enclosed sun ☉ one should find:

1. That the serpent was the circle of the mother goddess and defined the limits of the All (*i.e.*, the cord, egg, shield, or belt of Saturn's Cosmos).

2. That the serpent enclosed the world-wheel, city, throne, earth-navel and celestial ocean.

3. That the same serpent formed the wall of the cosmic temple, encircled the god-king as a crown, enclosed the celestial waters as a vase, and defined the circle of the all-seeing Eye.

Figure 34. (a) Egyptian and

---

[844] *Ibid.*, 51.

[845] *Ibid.*, 51.

[846] *Pyramid Text* 2289.

Figure 34. (b) Mayan versions of the circular serpent as water container.

Throughout all of ancient Egypt the circular serpent was the symbol of the great mother. In the hieroglyphs, the Uraeus serpent, often used in conjunction with an egg, means “goddess.” “The goddess Uatchet cometh unto thee in the form of the living Uraeus, to anoint thy head . . . ,” reads the *Book of the Dead.*[847] A Karnak temple inscription states that the goddess Mut, in the form of a serpent, encircled “her father Re and gave birth to him as Khonsu.”[848]

In the same way the Babylonians knew the great goddess as “the mother python of heaven.”[849] The Cosmos, according to Jeremias, was represented as the womb of the “shining Tiamat,” the enclosing serpent or dragon of the primeval sea.[850] So also did the Hindus, Cretans, Celts, Greeks, Romans, and Mexicans represent the mother goddess as a serpent or dragon.[851]

It is the same thing to say that the circular serpent enclosed Saturn’s Cosmos. In the Egyptian language the “coil” formed by the serpent is literally “the cord” or “the band,” indicated by the hieroglyphs and . The serpent itself was the *rope* which the creator stretched round about, gathering the primeval waters or primeval matter into an organized enclosure.

Figure 35. Circular dragon in Haropollo, *Selecta hieroglyphica* (1597).

---

[847] Quoted in Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 443.

[848] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 180.

[849] Albright, “The Goddess of Life and Wisdom,” 273.

[850] *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 21; R. C. Thompson, *The reports of the Magicians and Astrologers of Nineveh and Babylon*, Vol. II, 249.

[851] Collum, “Die Schöpferische Mutter Göttin,” 249, 274; Neumann, *op. cit.*, 18, 153; Faber, *op. cit.*, vol. II, 456; Burland, *The Gods of Mexico*, 133.

Figure 36. The alchemist circular dragon.

Figure 37. Mexican circular serpent biting its tail.

Figure 38. Circular serpent motif on the interior of a food basin from Sikyatki in the South-Western United States.

Figure 39 (a) [& b] Two Chinese versions of the circular dragon.

Figure 39b. The dragon encloses the central sun.

Figure 40. Hindu circular serpent, enclosing the *bindu*, or central sun.

Figure 41. Alaska circular serpent, indicating close relationship to enclosed sun.

In Sumero-Babylonian imagery, too, a circular serpent—called "the *rope* of the great god"[852]—encloses the original Cosmos. The serpent-rope is "the bond of the All" held by Enki or Ninurta (Saturn).

But the cord is synonymous with the cosmic egg and girdle, and this conjunction of Saturnian symbols makes particularly interesting the statement of the Greek philosopher Epicurus to Epiphanius: ". . . the All was from the beginning like an *egg*, and the *pneuma* [World Soul] in *serpent* wise around the egg was then a *tight band as a wreath or belt around the universe.*"[853] The Orphics called this serpent Chronos, describing it as the *bond*

---

[852] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 116. [Emphasis added.]

[853] Quoted in Onians, *op. cit.*, 250. [Emphasis added.]

(peirata) of the Cosmos. The serpent-bond "lies around the Cosmos," proclaimed the Pythagoreans.[854] It was thus an ancient custom to display images of the cosmic egg encircled by a vast serpent.

All the evidence in the foregoing sections indicates that this circle of the Cosmos was the "earth" or "place" fashioned in the creation. Hence, the serpent who circumscribes the organized All is the same serpent whom the ancients depicted encircling the created "world."

In the Gnostic work *Pistis Sophia*, Our Lord states, "The outer darkness is a great serpent, the tail of which is in its mouth, and it is outside the whole world."[855] As shown by Budge, the idea had its roots in Egypt, where the world-encircling serpent was Apepi, "a serpent with his tail in his mouth."[856] Horapollo reports that when the Egyptians wished to depict the "world," they painted a serpent.[857]

The Babylonian *Esharra*, the circle of created "earth," is identified as the primordial beast Tiamat,[858] the world-enclosing serpent-dragon which the Hebrews called Tehom and the Muslims the "Mysterious Serpent."[859] To the Hindus it was the fabulous serpent Naga that enclosed the world in its folds. Scandinavian myth knew the serpent Midgard, the *Weltumspanner*, or "Stretcher-round-the-World."[860]

All ancient cosmologies which speak of a world-encircling serpent say that its body formed the river or ocean shielding the organized earth from Chaos. The serpent, dragon, or crocodile, in the Egyptian system, thus denotes the celestial watercourse. (Hence, the primeval serpent encircling Atum not only emerges from the cosmic sea; it is itself "the outflow of the Primeval Flood.")[861]

Sumero-Babylonian cosmology knows "the river of the *girdle* of the great god"—a world-encircling ocean which is also called "the river of the *snake*."[862] According to Hebrew and Arabic thought, states Wensinck, "The whole of the earth is round and the ocean surrounds it like a collar. Other authors compare the circle of the ocean around the earth with a wreath, a ring, or with the halo round the moon. *The commonest image of the ocean, however, is that of a serpent.*"[863] Thus the famous Leviathan "grips his tail between his teeth and forms a ring around the ocean."[864] The Scandinavian Midgard serpent occupied the same circular sea, biting his tail.[865] The Greek Okeanos, the boundary of the world, was the serpent Chronos.[866] Even the Aztecs knew "the sea as a circumambient Great Serpent."[867]

---

[854] *Ibid.*, 332.

[855] Quoted in Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 266.

[856] *Ibid.*, 332.

[857] Horapollo 1.c.2.

[858] R. C. Thompson, *Reports*, 249.

[859] Wensinck, "Ideas of the Western Semites," 61*ff.*

[860] Brown, *Researches*, Vol. II, 105.

[861] Clark, *op. cit.*, 50.

[862] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 281. [Emphasis added.]

[863] Wensinck, "The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites," 25. [Emphasis added.]

[864] Graves and Patai, *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis*, 51-52.

[865] MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 328.

[866] Onians, *op. cit.*, 249-51.

[867] Alexander, *Latin American Mythology*, 57.

Nor can one ignore the identical serpent enclosing, or forming, the great god's throne. Muslim legends recall a brilliant serpent around the throne of Allah: "Then Allah surrounded it by a serpent . . . this serpent wound itself around the throne."[868] The same serpent, in Hebrew accounts, wound itself around the cosmic throne-wheel of Solomon: "And a silver dragon was on the machinery of the throne."[869] ". . . And a silver serpent bore the wheel of the throne."[870]

One remembers also the serpentine wheeled seats of such Greek figures as Triptolemos and Demeter.[871] The seat of the Mayan god Anhel is a serpent,[872] much like the snake-seat of the primordial pair recalled by the Miztecs.[873] Just as the Egyptian serpent-dragon Set becomes the throne of Osiris, so do the parallel figures of Tiamat and Leviathan become the thrones of Marduk and Yahweh in Babylonian and Hebrew imagery.[874]

So also is the *temple* likened to the circular serpent. Sumerian hymns describe the cosmic temple "in heaven like a dragon gleaming."[875] This dragon-like abode answers to the Babylonian sanctuary of Ea, represented by a serpent or fish.[876] Belonging to the same class are the Uraei who form the walls of the heavenly dwelling of Osiris,[877] the serpentine temples or *dracontia* of Abury,[878] the "Iguana House" of Mayan ritual,[879] and the girdling snake of the Greek Achis, which surrounded the *temenos* or inner shrine of the gods.[880] The Muslims declare that at the founding of the Sacred House of the Ka'ba, a serpent with a "glittering appearance" wrapped itself around the wall "so that its tail approached its head."[881]

The great father's dwelling was the encircling serpent or dragon—issuing from the cosmic sea. And it matters not whether the abode be termed a "temple" or a "city," for the cosmic city was equally tied to the imagery of the circular serpent, as confirmed by Egyptian illustrations of a serpent encircling the district of Hermopolis;[882] the Hebrew imagery of Leviathan surrounding the primeval, celestial Jerusalem; and the serpentine enclosure of the Teutonic Asgard, the city of the gods.

Always we encounter the same serpent, glittering in the light and marking out the primordial enclosure. In the case of the Egyptian Eye and crown the identity with the Uraeus serpent is spelled out with uncanny boldness.

---

[868] Wensinck, "Ideas of the Western Semites," 62.

[869] *Ibid.*, 63.

[870] *Ibid.*, 63.

[871] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 221, 229.

[872] J. Eric and S. Thompson, *op. cit.*, 268.

[873] Emerson, *Indian Myths*, 347.

[874] I intend to take up such imagery in greater detail in the second volume of this work.

[875] Langdon, *Sumerian Liturgies and Psalms*, 316.

[876] Wensinck, "Ideas of the Western Semites," 65.

[877] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 377.

[878] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 735.

[879] J. Eric and S. Thompson, *op. cit.*, 212-14.

[880] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 522.

[881] Wensinck, "Ideas of the Western Semites," 64.

[882] Clark, *op. cit.*, 53.

Egyptian hymns locate the enclosing Uraeus on the "brow" of the great god, and *this circular serpent is at once the band of the single Eye and the circle of the crown*:

> *He has come to you, O NT-Crown; He has come to you, O Fiery Serpent . . . O Great Crown . . . Ikhet the Serpent has adorned you . . . because you are Horus encircled with the protection of his eye.*[883]

> *O King, the dread of you is the intact Eye of Horus, the White Crown, the serpent-goddess who is in Nekheb.*[884]

To wear the crown is to wear the Fiery Serpent, which, in turn, is to reside within the enclosure or "protection" of the Eye. Though offering no explanation, Clark recognizes the identity of these cosmic images: "The Eye is elevated as the defensive cobra which—on the pattern of the earthly pharaohs—encircled the brows of the High God," he writes.[885]

Figure 42. The circular serpent encircling Hermopolis.

The connection immediately explains why the Sumerian *Mus*-crown, conceived as a golden band, was "the great *dragon*."[886]

Though the circular serpent appears in many guises, at root there is only one such creature, for its diverse forms—as the Cosmos, "earth," temple, city, throne, crown, and Eye—are simply the different mythical formulations of the circumpolar enclosure.

These unnatural roles of the circular serpent—which mythologists tend to regard as the most irrational and unfathomable aspects of ancient symbolism—actually provide one of the most significant unifying threads.

In Summary: A Coherent Doctrine

Saturn's primordial home was a simple enclosure, a dwelling universally recorded by the sign ⊙. Mythmaking imagination expressed the enclosure in many ways, and it is the very variety of formulations which testifies to the band's overwhelming impact on the ancient world.

To deal meaningfully with this imagery one must admit the influence of a celestial order vastly different from that familiar to us today. We customarily think of "myth" as the opposite of "reality." Yet the consistency of the testimony suggests that the mythical view, passed down to us through sacred signs, monuments, and literature, connects us with a very real world confronted by the first mythmakers.

---

[883] *Pyramid Texts* 195-98.

[884] *Pyramid Text* 900.

[885] *Op. cit.*, 93.

[886] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 29. [Emphasis added.]

The present heavens explain neither the ancient rites of kingship nor the array of astral symbols which grew up around the king—who was conceived as the human incarnation of the ruling divinity in heaven. Always, the ritual and symbol refer to an age different from our own, an age when Saturn, the central sun, ruled from the celestial pole, encircled by his band of "glory."

Saturn's band was the primeval Cosmos, viewed as the planet-god's own consort, the womb on the cosmic waters. The myths alternately depict the band as a revolving island in the sky, a cord of rope forming the boundary of Saturn's domain, a shining egg, a shield, and the creator's collar, belt, or girdle.

This was the "earth" which (in the universal creation legend) the great god raised from the celestial sea. In mythical history it became the ancestral land of peace and plenty—Adam's paradise. Saturn's kingdom possessed the form of a great wheel; it was the creator's revolving throne, the celestial city, the lost navel or Middle Place, where (cosmic, mythical) history took its start. Around the border of the heavenly "land" flowed a circular river or ocean.

The same band was Saturn's revolving temple, which he wore as a crown and in which he dwelt as the pupil of the all-seeing Eye. As the cosmic vase, the band housed Saturn's waters of life.

And finally, Saturn's band appears in the guise of a shining serpent wrapped around the central sun and denoted by the Egyptian sign .

Divorced from the archetypal enclosure the various symbols (temples, crowns, thrones, wheels, etc.) appear as isolated forms of uncertain origin. We simply take them as "facts." Why, then, were these forms systematically related in language, art, ritual, and myth? It is not a question of later generations recklessly joining unrelated images. The further back we go the greater the unity. The best evidence of the harmonious vision comes from the oldest sources of ancient Egypt and Mesopotamia. Here we find the central sun wearing the cosmic city and temple as a crown; taking as his throne the eye of heaven, the holy land, or the vase of upper waters; shining in the centre of an egg called the "earth"; and encircled by a river which forms the wall of the temple but also the circle of the gods. In each case we find that the symbol refers directly to the womb of the mother goddess enclosing the great father Saturn.

In reviewing this imagery of the enclosure one confronts many dominant motifs of ancient religion. Whatever the mythical formulation of the band, the hymns celebrate its presence at the polar centre. Yet who can locate a source of the imagery in today's tranquil heavens? Where is this revolving river of "splendour and terror"? Where is the city of "the White Wall," the "clear and radiant" holy land, the temple "like a dragon gleaming," the "throne of light," the "golden" egg, or the "fiery" serpent?

If the texts present alternative versions of the band, they never question its existence in primeval times. It is the archaic reality concealed within a massive body of myths and symbols, all pointing to the signs ⊙ and ⊕ as images of Saturn, the polar sun.

VIII: The Cosmic Mountain

To the images of the enclosed sun *and enclosed sun-cross* *ancient myths add the cosmic mountain—a column of light rising along the world axis and visually appearing to hold aloft the great god's home. The signs of the Saturnian mountain are* *and* .

Throughout the world one encounters the story of a shining peak which once rose to the centre of heaven. Though this cosmic mountain appears under many different names, accounts from every section of the world tell much the same story. The Egyptians knew the great column as the Primeval Hill, the Babylonians as the World Mountain. The mount passed into Hinduism as the cosmic Meru, into Iranian myth as Hera-Berezaiti, and into Chinese myth and astrology as Kwen-Lun. Mexican cosmology gave it the name Colhuacan. Its most familiar representatives were Olympus and Zion.

But does not Olympus refer to the well-known peak in Macedonia, and Zion to the small hill in Palestine? In truth the mythical Olympus and the mythical Zion are the same mountain; only their terrestrial representations differ. When the ancients sanctified a familiar hill, giving it the name of the primeval mount, they sought to characterize their own land as a duplication of the "homeland." The local mountain took its mythical attributes from the *cosmic* peak. Always the sacred mount rises "higher than any mountain on earth," attaining the polar centre and functioning as the cosmic axis.

Legends of the heaven-sustaining peak say that the creator—the central sun—ruled his kingdom from the mountaintop, where stood the original paradise with its four life-bearing streams.

Egypt

According to the long-standing belief of Egyptologists, the sun-god rises over the eastern horizon each morning and sinks below the western horizon each evening. In widely accepted translations of the texts, one repeatedly finds such wording as "horizon from which Re goes forth,"[887] "Thou living Soul who comest forth from the horizon,"[888] or "Re riseth in his horizon."[889] But if the Egyptian light god truly rises from the horizon then surely it is not Saturn, the steadfast *polar* sun.

A closer look at the terminology is needed. As I have already observed, the words which the translators render as "rise" (*pert*, *uben*, *un*) mean literally "to appear," "to shine," "to send forth light," etc. The conventional choice of the word "rise" follows from the belief that the hymns describe the *solar orb* emerging in the east.

But what about the word "horizon," which occurs with such frequency in the standard translations? The Egyptian term for the place of the sun's coming forth is *khut*, whose literal sense is anything but "horizon."[890]

---

[887] *Pyramid Text* 585.

[888] Budge, The *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 481.

[889] *Ibid.*, 400.

[890] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 248, note 7.

The hieroglyph for *khut* (or) combines two signs—the Re or Aten sign and the sign for "mountain" . (I take up the latter sign in the section on the cleft peak.) Its literal meaning, as noted by Renouf, is "Mount of Glory" and "there is no reason why we should continue to use the misleading term horizon." Literally, the great god does not "rise from the *horizon*," but "shines in the Mount of Glory." To what did the Egyptians refer by such language?

The hymns speak not of the present world order, but the former, when the creator took as his seat the pillar of the Cosmos. An inscription of the Karnak temple extols the *khut* or Mount of Glory as "the venerable hill of *primeval beginning*."891 Hearkening to the same age, the Edfu texts recall "the First Occasion in the *High Hill* at the beginning of Coming Into Existence."892 In the *Pyramid Texts* we read, "I am the Primeval Hill of the land in the midst of the sea, whose hand no earthlings have grasped."893 (The reader will now recognize the "midst of the sea" as the polar "heart," "navel," or "centre" of the cosmic waters.)

The myths and liturgies of the Mount of Glory (Primeval Hill) relate that the creator raised the mount from the Sea of Chaos. States Frankfort: "Within the expanse of the primeval waters he created dry land, the Primeval Hill, which became the centre of the earth, or at least the place round which the earth solidified. Local traditions differ as regards the details; but everywhere the site of creation, the first land to emerge from chaos, was thought to have been charged with vital power. And each god counting as Creator was made to have some connection with this Hill."894

If Frankfort's summary is accurate, then the Primeval Hill is directly related to the enclosure of earth which the creator gathered together as a stable dwelling—the Cosmos.

To discern the connection of the mount and enclosure we must return once more to the legends of Atum. The texts of all periods agree that in the beginning Atum, or Khepera, floated alone in the Abyss without a resting place. The god recalls the original epoch:

. . . *When I was alone in the waters* . . .

before I had found anywhere to stand or sit,

before Heliopolis [the celestial earth] *had*

been founded that I might be there,

before a perch had been formed for me to sit on . . .895

"I found no place where I could stand," states the god in a similar account.896 In the hieroglyph for "to stand," (*aha*) the key sign is , conveying the meaning "to support," "stability." Which is to say that in the beginning the god wandered without a *stable support.* This was "before a *perch* had been formed for me to sit on." The glyph for "perch" is , signifying the primordial pedestal of the great god. It was a common Egyptian practice to place the emblems of the creator upon the perch sign , for the perch or pedestal means the

---

891 Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 154. [Emphasis added.]

892 Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*, 48-49. [Emphasis added.]

893 *Pyramid Text* 1022.

894 *Op. cit.*, 51-52.

895 Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 46.

896 Budge, *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. I, 309.

same thing as "mountain." Thus Osiris, enthroned upon the Primeval Hill, is "like an exalted one upon thy pedestal,"[897] while Anup, "the god who is on his mountain," is also "the god who is on his pedestal."[898]

It seems that the creation accounts refer to a time before the appearance of the great mountain or perch. Prior to the emergence of this foundation occurs the central act of creation, recalled in numerous accounts: the bringing forth of the *khu*—"brilliant lights," "words of power"—the fiery "waters" which erupted directly from the creator and came to be recalled as radiant "speech."

A literal translation of one text yields the following:

I could find no place to stand

I uttered the incantation

[khut] *with my heart.*

I laid the foundation of Maa.

I produced all the aru [the "guardians" of the deep, the assembly].

I was alone.

I had not spit in the form of Shu.

I had not poured out Tefnut.

No other worked with me.

I laid a foundation with my own heart . . .

I poured out (seed, water) in the form of Shu.

I emitted (seed, water) in the form of Tefnut.[899]

The language indicates that the creator, originally alone, "uttered" or poured out from his "heart" the watery mass (*khu*, *khut*) in which the primordial foundation was laid. That this foundation is identified with the gods Maa or Shu is crucial: for *Maa and Shu signify the cosmic pillar holding aloft the central sun.*

That the pillar of Shu was born from the *khu* or *khut* emitted by Atum is the explicit statement of the *Coffin Texts*, where Shu declares:

I am life, the Lord of years, living for ever, Lord of eternity

the eldest one that Atum made in [or from] *his Khu*

in giving birth to Shu.[900]

Or again, Shu announces:

. . . I came into being in the limbs of the Self-Creator.

He formed me in [with] *his heart and he created me in his Khu.*[901]

The Egyptian priests clearly know that the Shu-pillar, formed in the fiery abyss, was the same thing as the "perch," or "pedestal" upon which the heart of heaven eventually found "rest." Thus, while one *Coffin Text* reads, “I am raised aloft on my standard (, “perch”) above yonder places of the Abyss,”902 another states, “I am high in the form of Horus . . . He has established my heart on his great standard. I do not fall on account of Shu.”903 The “foundation of Maa,” cited above, refers to the same mountain or pillar. A common glyph for *maa* is , the very image used to designate the Primeval Hill. Often the glyph is simply read as the “pedestal” of the great god. In its root meaning, *maa* or *maat* denotes “the stable, enduring foundation,” the source of cosmic regularity. (It is the axle of the Cosmos.) Thus the creator, resting upon the axle-pillar, is he who “rests upon Maat.”

---

[897] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 159.

[898] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 606, 624, 627.

[899] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 309.

[900] Clark, *op. cit.*, 86.

[901] *Ibid.*, 83.

In the Egyptian language, the concept “support” or “foundation” merges with “mountain” or “hill.” The word *thes*, for example, means “support,” “to bear, lift up.” but also “mountain.” The reason is that the only mountain with which the ritual is concerned is the *primeval* mountain, the foundation of the Cosmos. “May I endure in the sky like a [or *the*] mountain, like a [the] support,” reads a *Pyramid Text.*904

Figure 43. The solitary Eye upon the primordial “Perch.”

The cosmic pillar, according to the creation accounts, originated in the seed or water of life flowing from the creator Atum: *the very khu or khut which congealed into the circle of “glory” took form also as the heaven-sustaining column.* Indeed, one finds that in much of the symbolism, the enclosure and the mount are inseparable—the enclosure being considered as the hollow summit of the mount. (See below)

To understand the Egyptian hieroglyph for the Mount of Glory (*khut*,), one must consider the full range of meanings attached to the terms *khu* and *khut.* In their most elementary sense the words refer to the *fiery essence* or luminous matter which exploded from the creator. From this root meaning are derived a number of interrelated hieroglyphic terms.

When written , *khu* is often translated “soul” or “spirit.” The reference is not to invisible powers but to flaming debris, conceived as the erupting substance of the creator and personified in the ritual as the light-spirits of the abyss.

Thus, when written with the determinative (*i.e.*,), *khut* means “fire.”

---

902 Faulkner, *The Coffin Texts*, 226.

903 *Ibid.*, 230-31.

904 *Pyramid Text* 1559.

But the mythmakers interpreted the same erupting debris as visible "speech" or "words" uttered by the creator. Hence *khu* ( ) means "words of power" while *khut* ( ) denotes the "creative incantation" which produced the fiery, watery mass.

In fashioning the Cosmos or celestial earth the creator gathered the sea of "words" into a circle of "glory," sometimes denoted by the sign (*khu*, often written or). This is the enclosure of the Aten , the great god's encircling "aura" or "halo."

But the most common symbol of the creator's "glory" (*khu*, *khut*) is the sign , depicting not only an enclosure but vertical streams of light ascending the world axis. It is no coincidence, then, that this very *khu* sign also denotes *Shu*, the light-pillar formed in the primordial sea. The radiant column, as proclaimed in the texts, was "poured out" by the creator Atum.

Of precisely the same significance is the *khut* sign , the "Mount of Glory," or more specifically, "the mount and enclosure of the khu." Because the glyph is regularly used in the sense of "the place from which the sun shines forth," Egyptologists as a whole overlook all the interconnected meanings of the glyph and simply translate it as "the horizon." But as we have seen, "the place from which the sun shines forth" means the circumpolar enclosure, not the eastern horizon. In the Egyptian language it is impossible to separate the polar "place *par excellence*" from the cosmic mountain.

To this celestial peak the Egyptians continually looked back in their myths and rites. On behalf of the deceased king the priests poured a heap of sand on the floor inside the pyramid, placing atop the sand a statue of the king and reciting a prayer which began:

Rise upon it, this land which came forth as [or from] *Atum, the spittle which came forth as* [or from] *Kheprer, assume your form upon it, rise high upon it.*905

The sand represented the Primeval Hill, which the Egyptians often depicted by a flight of stairs, or , leading to the centre and summit of heaven. If Atum, or Re, shone from the summit of the hill, so did Osiris: "Osiris sits in judgement in a palace in the Primeval Mound, which is in the centre of the world," writes Clark.906

"Hail, O Osiris, thou hast received thy sceptre and the place whereon thou art to rest, and thy steps are under thee," reads the *Book of the Dead*.907 The hill was the fixed resting place of the central sun, its summit the supreme object of ascension symbolism. The king beseeches the great god: ". . . May I be established upon my *resting place* like the Lord of Life."908 The obvious Egyptian monuments to the mount so conceived are the great pyramids, which render in stone the ancient idea of a stairway to and support of the heavenly dwelling. The steps signify the primeval foundation laid by the creator.

---

905 Clark, *op. cit.*, 41.

906 *Ibid.*, 178.

907 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 388-89.

908 *Ibid.*, 251. [Emphasis added.]

In all Egyptian symbols of the mount one finds the same general significance. Always, it is the *stable pillar* supporting the *resting* god.

One of the most famous representations of the Primeval Hill is the obelisk . The small pyramidion on top of the obelisk denoted the *Benben* stone (Foundation Stone), the Seed of Atum, the central sun. (The same form crowned the pyramid.)

Atum-Khepri, thou wert high as the Hill

Thou didst shine forth as Benben.[909]

Figure 44. Egyptian Re atop the steps.

To the modern mind it may seem peculiar that the foundation stone should lie at the summit rather than the base of the cosmic hill. But when one realizes that the summit was the fixed *centre* of the turning Cosmos the idea takes on a remarkable logic. Atum, the stone of the foundation, was the "Firm Heart of the Sky," resting upon a stationary support:

The Great God lives,

fixed in the middle of the sky upon his support.[910]

So reads a *Coffin Text*, in obvious reference to Atum or Re, whom Clark terms "the arbiter of destiny perched on the top of the world pole."[911] Thus the obelisk , the symbol of Atum resting on the cosmic pillar, came to be employed as an ideograph for the Egyptian word *men*, signifying "stability" and "to rest in one place." *Men* also means "mountain" and "pedestal."

Derived from the same root is the Egyptian word *mena* or *Menat*, the celestial "mooring post." The Egyptians conceived the stationary pillar as the stake to which the lights of the revolving assembly were bound. The cosmic mountain is the *Mena-uret*, the "Great Mooring Post," symbolized by the sign . (The rope drawn around the neck of the configuration confirms the close connection of the pillar and cosmic bond).[912]

---

[909] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 153.

[910] Clark, *op. cit.*, 59.

[911] *Ibid.*, 41.

[912] Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 243; see *Pyramid Text* 794c.

It seems more than a little likely that the Egyptian *Mena-uret* was the very pillar from which the Muslims derived the *minaret*, the lofty tower attached to the Muslim mosque, and designated *Qutb*, the "pole" or "axis."

While in many myths the mount is personified as a secondary divinity (Shu, Maa) holding aloft the creator, the hill may also appear as the trunk or lower limbs of the creator himself. Atum, as suggested by several sources cited above, is inseparable from the mount on which he rests. The great god Ptah merges with the god Tatunen, a personification of the Primeval Hill, so that the *Book of the Dead* can say "Thy beauties are like unto the pillar of the god *Ptah*."[913] The glyph for the great god An is , meaning "pillar."

A famous Egyptian emblem of the pillar was the *Tet* , the special symbol of Osiris. The Tet sign denotes the support of the Cosmos. "The idea of the Tet column," writes Clark, "is that it stands firmly upright."[914] In the ritual these emblems serve as "world pillars holding up the sky and so guaranteeing . . . the world in which the king's authority holds good."[915] Tet means "stability," "permanence." It is the pedestal of Osiris, the "resting heart" or "motionless heart." Significantly, many Egyptian illustrations of the Tet-column include a pair of human eyes at the top (fig. 151a), emphasizing that the column was (as Egyptologists often observe) the *trunk* or *backbone* of Osiris himself.

In other words, *the Egyptians viewed the cosmic mountain as the great god's own spinal column.* Hence the sign , depicting the pillar of the *khu* (or of Shu) as vertical streams of light, also means "back" or "backbone." The word *aat*, signifying the primeval "perch" or "pedestal" of the creator, possesses the additional meaning of "backbone."

Pertaining to the same symbolism is the pillar sign , read as *sept*, "to be provided with." Helping to explain the sign is the root *sep* or *sepa*, "stability," often written with the determinative —"spinal column."[916] So too, while the word *thes* refers to the primordial "pillar," "prop," or "mountain," *thes* can also mean "backbone."

Figure 45. Tet, the "stable" pillar of the Cosmos.

---

[913] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 582. [Emphasis added.]

[914] *Op. cit.*, 236.

[915] *Ibid.*, 237.

[916] Énel, *Les Origines de la Gènese et l'Enseignement des Temples de l'Ancienne Égypte*, 117.

Through extension of the symbolism in a different direction, the cosmic mountain became the creator's "staff" or "sceptre." Texts and reliefs depict the great god's sceptre as the support of heaven or of the god himself.917

The theme may not always be recognized by conventional schools, however. A previously cited hymn from the *Book of the Dead* proclaims to Osiris, "Hail, O Osiris, thou hast received thy sceptre and the place whereon thou art to rest and the steps are under thee."918 Few have stopped to think that the sceptre signifies the same "resting place" as the steps; both refer to the column of the Cosmos. Thus, in the sign the sceptre holds aloft the glyph for "heaven" .

A spell of the *Coffin Texts* reads, "I am the guardian of this great prop which separates the earth from the sky."919 But another spell declares, ". . . That *staff* which separated sky and earth is in my hand."920 Often the sceptre is in the form of a lotus, or papyrus holding aloft the great god.921

Whatever the particular symbolism of the cosmic mountain, all sources agree on one point: *the revolving* Aten *forms the hollow summit of the peak.* To shine in the Aten is to shine "in the midst" or "in the interior" of the *khut* , the Mount of Glory. The god occupies "the enclosure of the High Hill." "O very high mountain! I hold myself in thy enclosure," proclaims the king.922

A literal translation of Egyptian texts will yield:

*O you in your egg, shining in your Aten, growing bright in your Mount of Glory.*923

*Grow bright and diminish at your desire . . . You send forth light every day from the middle of the Mount of Glory.*924

*You shine in the Mount of Glory. The Aten receives praise, resting in the mountain and giving life to the world.*925

*Homage to you, O you shining in the Aten, Living One coming forth in the Mount of Glory.*926

*O Re in the Mount of Glory.*927

*Re shines in the Mount of Glory.*928

*The Osiris Nu is at rest in the Mount of Glory.*929

---

917 Schafer, "Altägyptische Bilder der Auf- und Untergehenden Sonne," 19, note 7.

918 Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 388-89.

919 Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 176.

920 *Ibid.*, 148. [Emphasis added.]

921 Moret, "Le Lotus et la Naissance des Dieux in Égypte," 501.

922 Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 363.

923 Cf. Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 104.

924 Cf. Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 320.

925 Cf. Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 11.

926 Cf. *ibid.*, 481.

927 Cf. *ibid.*, 393.

928 Cf. *ibid.*, 400.

You shine in the Mount of Glory day by day.[930]

Again and again the same terminology occurs. The sun-god does not rise from the mount, but shines *in* it. I know this claim may not be welcomed by those experts who have built their entire interpretation of Egyptian cosmic symbolism around the rising and setting solar orb. But having reviewed all of the primary Egyptian sources I have yet to find an early text which, when translated literally, suggests that the sun-god (during his reign) ever leaves the cosmic peak. Though he sails in a ship, as we shall see, only the ship moves, revolving round the stationary god. And though the texts describe a peak of the right and of the left, they are two peaks of a *singular* mount.

The widely respected Egyptologist W. R. Kristensen tells us that fundamentally there was only one "horizon" (*i.e.*, *khut*, Mount of Glory). The two "horizons" were "viewed as essentially identical; what applied to one held true for the other too. That they were geographically separated could not obliterate the impression. In mythical cosmography they often assume one another's functions. *The place where the light sets is also called the place where it rises . . .*"[931]

To what cosmic idea did the Egyptians refer in order to speak of the sun rising and setting on the same mountain? Kristensen assumes that while sacred cosmology united the two mountains, they were "geographically separated." Holding to the solar interpretation, one could hardly believe anything else.

The problem does not lie with the texts, but with the solar interpretation, which looks for imagery of a rising and setting sun where there is none. The Egyptian sun-god "comes out" ("grows bright") and "goes in" ("diminishes") *em hetep*, "while standing in one place." That "place" is the enclosure of the stationary summit.

The universal signs of the sun on the mountaintop are and . To the former corresponds the Egyptian hieroglyph denoting *khut*, the Mount of Glory, or *Shu*, the divine personification of the Mount, but also serving as the determinative of "spinal column." Other Egyptian illustrations depict the disk of the Aten supported by the Tet-column, or resting over the obelisk (as was customary in the earliest forms of the obelisk),[932] or raised aloft by the divine sceptre. The consistent theme is that the enclosure and the Mount are inseparable.

In the hieroglyphs, the simple form of the *mena-uret* or Great Mooring Post is , but the larger illustrations offer a more detailed portrait of the binding post. A papyrus, for example, shows the goddess Hathor amid the celestial garden, wearing the *Menat* symbol.[933] Here the form is: .

The post, or "pillar of the cord (Cosmos)," appears to sustain a circle enclosing the image , the Egyptian sign of the four life-bearing streams (*un*).

---

[929] Cf. *ibid.*, 446.

[930] Cf. *ibid.*, 71.

[931] Quoted in Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 29. [Emphasis added.]

[932] Budge, *Gods*, Vol.I, 354.

[933] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, fig. 39.

Clarification of the mooring-post symbol is provided by a *Coffin Text*, in which the "All-Lord" (ruler of the Cosmos) looks back to the primordial age and the "four good deeds which my own heart did for me in the midst of the serpent-coil [cord, bond, Cosmos] . . . I did four good deeds within the portal of the Mount of Glory. I made the four winds that every man might breathe thereof."[934]

Does not the above image of the Great Mooring Post answer directly to these lines? On the Mount of Glory stands the garden of abundance, animated by the life elements radiating in luminous streams from the central sun—the great god's "heart."

Of the Egyptian paradise, Massey writes, "The general tradition is that this paradise was a primeval place of birth and that it was in the north, *upon the summit of a mount now inaccessible to the living anywhere on earth*."[935] This paradisal enclosure at the summit was the cosmic city—and every sacred city—be it Heliopolis, Thebes, Memphis, Busiris, or Abydos—mirrored the history of the prototype, symbolically resting atop the Primeval Hill. Of the deceased king, the *Coffin Texts* announce:

> *Annubis is mindful of you in Busiris, your soul rejoices in Abydos where your body is happy* [*em hetep*, "at rest"] *on the High Hill.*[936]

When the deceased ruler enters the city of the god-king, he returns to the Holy Land, the celestial earth at the summit of the polar mountain.

Osiris, the "god on the top of the steps [Primeval Hill],"[937] is the universal lord "in possession of a seat, his heart being at peace [*em hetep*, "at rest"] on the Mountain of the Necropolis [city of the ancestors]"[938] Amen-Re is the "dweller in Thebes, the great god who appeareth in the Mount of Glory."[939] The name of Abydos—*Abtu*—signifies the "mountain of the heart."

In the same way every temple, as a symbol of the Saturnian enclosure, magically rested on the Primeval Hill. "Each and every temple was supposed to stand on it," writes Frankfort. "This thought is applied even to temples built quite late in the history of Egypt."[940] Surely the temple builders knew that they were not constructing the local dwelling on the *actual* Primeval Hill; but in imbuing the temple with the *mythical* qualities of the original dwelling, the architects gave concrete form to an ideal defined in the beginning. When Hatshepsut identifies the Karnak temple as the "Mount of Glory upon earth, the venerable hill of primeval beginning,"[941] she connects the local edifice with the central hill of creation, the mount on which the house of the sun-god originally stood.

States Frankfort: "The queen, by beautifying Karnak, honoured the centre from which the creation took its start . . . The identity of the temples with the Primeval Hill amounts to a sharing of essential quality and is expressed in their names and in their architectural arrangements by means of ramps or steps. Each temple rose from its entrance through its successive courts and halls to the Holy of Holies, which was thus situated at a point noticeably higher than the entrance. There the statue, barge or fetish of the god was kept, resting upon the Primeval Hill."[942]

---

[934] Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 7.

[935] *Op. cit.*, 376. [Emphasis added.]

[936] Clark, *op. cit.*, 134.

[937] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 117.

[938] Piankoff, *The Wandering of the Soul*, 103.

[939] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 17.

[940] *Op. cit.*, 150.

[941] *Ibid.*, 154.

In all basic details, the Egyptian symbolism of the Primeval Hill corresponds to the cosmic images , . The Mount forms in the cosmic sea, stretching upward along the world axis to hold aloft the central sun. The hollow summit of the Mount is the circle of the Aten, within whose enclosure the sun "grows bright" and "diminishes" with the cycle of night and day. This Mount of Glory is the site of the original paradise, the city or temple of the Universal Monarch.

A review of similar imagery in other lands will show the influence of a world-wide tradition.

Mesopotamia

I have argued that the Egyptian Atum, the solitary god in the deep, is the very figure whom Babylonian astronomy identifies as the planet Saturn. Atum, "the Firm Heart of the Sky," stands "fixed in the middle of the sky upon his support."

Here, on the other hand, is a broken Sumerian reference to Ninurash, or Ninurta, the planet Saturn:

Whom the "god of the steady *star" upon a* foundation

To . . . cause to repose *in years of plenty.*[943]

Saturn, founder of the Golden Age, was the stationary light "upon a foundation," exactly as the Egyptian Atum. Accordingly, Babylonian astronomical texts give Saturn the name *Kaainu*, the Greek *kiun*, "pillar."

What was this foundation or pillar of Saturn? It was the "mountain of the an-ki [Cosmos]," formed—like the Egyptian counterpart—amid the waters of Chaos. ". . . Of the hill which I, the hero, have heaped up," proclaims Ninurta, "let its name be Hursag [mountain]."[944] This cosmic peak, whose "foundation is laid in the pure abyss," the Babylonians denominated "the mountain of the world."[945] Ninurta "scaled the mountain and scattered seed far and wide"[946] just as Atum, resting upon the Primeval Hill, radiated the seed of life in all directions.

"Here, in the Chaldean Olympus," writes Sayce, "the gods were imagined to have been born; its summit was hidden by the clouds, and the starry firmament seemed to rest upon it."[947]

In what portion of the sky did the ancient Mesopotamians locate the hill? Several texts, as normally translated, identify the Mount as "the place where the sun rises," seeming to fix the peak in the east.

Concerning the Hursag raised by Ninurta, a hymn reads:

Incantation—O Sun-god, from the great mountain is thy rising;

from the great mountain, the mountain of the ravine, is thy rising;

from the holy mound, the place of destinies, is thy rising.[948]

---

[942] *Ibid.*, 152.

[943] Agrawala, *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 82-83. [Emphasis added.]

[944] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 81.

[945] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 99; Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 360.

[946] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 119.

[947] *Op. cit.*, 360.

[948] *Ibid.*, 515.

The texts also connect the lost land of Dilmun with a cosmic mountain, a peak which appears to be the same as the Hursag, for it is “the mountain of Dilmun, the place where the sun rises.”[949] The temple hymns employ the same terminology in describing the *Kur* (“mountain”) as *Kur-d-utu-e*’*-a*, “the mountain where the sun rises.” In the *Epic of Gilgamesh*, the hero journeys to the Mashu Mountain upon which the vault of heaven rests. Through its gate the sun comes forth.[950]

Mesopotamian reliefs show the sun-god standing upon a cleft peak virtually identical to the Egyptian “mountain” symbol (fig. 60). With the rarest exceptions, authorities identify the image with the solar orb rising over an eastern hill.

Certain writers, in fact, believe that the entire character of the mythical Mount can be explained by the simple experience of native races viewing the eastern sunrise. Jacobsen, for example, urges that we understand the Hursag as “the range of mountains bordering the Mesopotamian plain on the east. As seen on the eastern horizon, its shining peaks towering from earth up into heaven, the hursag appears indeed to belong equally to both of these cosmic entities, and the epithet . . . ‘of both heaven and earth,’ is therefore as forceful as it is apt.”[951]

But there is a curious feature of the great column: *the mount from which the Babylonian sun-god* “*rises*” *is the same mount on which it* “*sets.*” The singular hill is “the mountain of the night [“sunset”], the mountain of the sunrise, the *mountain of the* centre.”[952]

Through the gate of the Mashu Mountain attained by Gilgamesh the sun-god Shamash comes forth. But the keepers of this mountain-gate are those who “guard Shamash at the rising *and setting* of the sun.”[953]

Similarly, in connection with a hymn to the “Fire-god,” containing enigmatic references to “the mountain of the sun-set” and “the mountain of the sunrise,” Sayce writes: “We must consider the poet to have looked upon the mountain behind which the sun rose and set as *one and the same.*”[954]

Were the Sumero-Babylonian races oblivious of the geographical realities? One remembers Kristensen’s observation that the Egyptian sun-god rises and sets upon a singular *khut* or “Mount of Glory.” Is this seeming confusion of east and west due to the abandon of the mythmakers, or to a modern misunderstanding of ancient cosmology?

One can begin to resolve the dilemma by comprehending the primeval mount’s title as “the mountain of the centre.” The mount is the *pivot*, for the Assyro-Babylonians gave it the title “the axis of heaven”—a designation which leads Lenormant to describe the mount as “the column which joined the heavens and the earth and served as an axis to the celestial vault.”[955] This, of course, creates a conflict with the apparent solar imagery of the peak. Because the “sun”-god shines from the mountain, Lenormant seeks a compromise between the polar and the eastern locations: “. . . The mountain which acted as a pivot to the starry heavens was to the northeast . . .” Unfortunately, the compromise fails to explain either trait of the mountain: the Babylonian sunrise does not occur to the northeast,[956] and in no sense could the northeast appear as a cosmic axis. One faces the very paradox observed by Butterworth when he speaks of the "ambiguity between the Pole and the Sun."[957]

---

[949] Kramer, *op. cit.*, 98.

[950] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 209.

[951] *Toward the Image of Tammuz*, 118.

[952] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 449. [Emphasis added.]

[953] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 209. [Emphasis added.]

[954] *Op. cit.*, 361. [Emphasis added.]

[955] *Chaldean Magic*, 152.

[956] *Ibid.*; see also Lenormant, *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, Vol. I, 126-127.

The entire difficulty vanishes when one recalls:

—that the Sumero-Babylonian sun-god does not literally rise, but "comes forth" or "grows bright."

—that the sun-god comes forth at the polar *centre* or *heart* of heaven.

—that the sun-god is Saturn.

These principles permit us to see that what conventional interpretations must regard as flatly contradictory aspects of the world mountain actually reveal a harmonious idea. The subject is "the mountain of the centre" at whose summit shines the stationary sun. The god "comes out" and "goes in" on the mountaintop, through the "gate" or "door" or "window" of the polar enclosure; but he accomplishes this without moving from his fixed abode.

The Babylonian sun-god, observed Warren, comes forth from "the true summit of the Earth, the Northern Pole."[958]

It is, in fact, impossible to comprehend Babylonian cosmology apart from the polar character of the great Mount. Obviously, to ascend the *world* mountain is to attain the world *summit*, and the summit is, as many writers have noted, the polar dwelling of An, the "midst" or "heart" of heaven.

In all ancient cosmologies the centre and summit meet at the celestial pole, and the Sumero-Babylonian world view is no exception. The Babylonian "Pole-star," states Robert Brown, "is seated in majesty on the summit of the northern heights."[959] One of the names of the pole is *Dugga* (Semitic *Saqu*), which means "high" and is connected with the idea "to rise up," "to come to the top."[960] The ruling polar god is thus the commander of the *summit*, which can only be the summit of the world mountain. The "Judge of Heaven [Anu] in the *centre* is bound" (*i.e.*, he is enclosed within the bond). And "in the Centre he fixed the Zenith"[961] that is, he raised the world mountain, the primeval foundation. Like the Egyptian *Mena-uret*, the Sumerian mount becomes the "binding post" or "mooring post" (DIM.GAL) of the turning Cosmos.

The god on the cosmic mountain was the planet Saturn, "the pillar." Anu atop the "illustrious Mound," Shamash on the "mountain of the world," Ninurta at the summit of Hursag, Tammuz on the "Shepherd's Hill" of Arallu, and Enki ruling the Ekur ("mountain house"), or the "mountain of Dilmun"—all point to the planet Saturn, the primeval sun upon the column of the Cosmos .

With this cosmic mountain the Sumerians identified every city and every temple. As in Egypt, the Mount and enclosure always appear together, the Mount serving as the heavenly abode's support. Of Enki's temple, the hymns record, "The holy foundation made with skill rises from the nether-sea."[962] Confirming this union of the cosmic temple and Mount are the titles of the sacred dwellings—"The House, Foundation of the An-ki (Cosmos)"; "House, the mountain of the Cosmos"; "House of the Mountain"; "Temple whose platform is suspended from heaven's midst . . . growing up like a mountain."

---

[957] *The Tree at the Navel of the Earth*, 124.

[958] "The Gates of Sunrise in ancient Babylonian Art," 242.

[959] *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations*, Vol. I, 184.

[960] *Ibid.*, 185.

[961] Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 11. [Emphasis added.]

[962] Langdon, "A Hymn to Eridu," 64.

In the same manner the hymns extol the local city as a duplication of the celestial prototype. The earthbound Eridu received its name from Enki's city above, the cosmic Eridu fashioned in the waters of the Apsu "like a holy highland" or "like a mountain." The city of Ninazu was the "mountain, pure place."963 Indeed the entire land of Akkad was symbolically linked with the great mountain and portrayed as the centre of the world.964

If the symbols of the enclosed sun are and , the symbols of the Mount and enclosure are and . The basic images occur throughout Mesopotamia. Depicted is the inaccessible paradise, a circular plain situated atop the mountain of the world and watered by four rivers flowing in four directions. Thus the Assyrians called the world mountain "the land [or mountain] of the four rivers." Massey recognized this as "the mythical Mount of the Pole and the four rivers of four quarters, which arose in Paradise."965 Yet neither Massey nor the more conventional authorities seem to have perceived that the mountain-paradise corresponds in every way to the simple images and .

Nor has any writer given sufficient attention to the extraordinary parallel between the Egyptian and Mesopotamian images of the cosmic mountain.

India

"In all the legends of India," states Lenormant, "the origin of humanity is placed on Mount Meru, the residence of the gods and the column which unites the sky to the earth."966 For the Hindus, Meru was the prototype of the sacred hill. As the Aryans spread through India they named many local peaks "Meru," deeming each a copy of the primeval mount.967

The original Meru was the *polar* mountain, its summit the quartered enclosure of the celestial paradise . Hindu sources describe the mount as a cosmic pillar fixed in the middle of the plain Jambu-dwipa, or rising in the midst of the cosmic sea. On the summit of this "golden mountain" or "Jewelled Peak" lies the heavenly city of Brahma, and around the peak lie the cardinal points and intermediate quarters.968 Toward each of the four quarters of the mountain paradise flows an outlet of the central water source, the celestial Ganges.969

Meru reaches the centre of heaven, and around its summit the stars revolve.970 The mount, states Lenormant, is "at once the north Pole and the centre of the habitable earth."971 The "world navel" means the *zenith.*

---

963 Sjöberg and Bergmann, *The Collection of the Sumerian Temple Hymns*, 51.

964 W. T. Warren, *Paradise Found*, 166-69.

965 *The Natural Genesis*, Vol. II, 21.

966 *Les Origines*, Vol. II, 17.

967 *Ibid.*; Faber, *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol. III, 201.

968 Wilson, *Vishnu Purana*, Vol.II, 110*ff.*; Guenon, *Le Roi du Monde*, 85; O'Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 400.

969 Lenormant, *Les Origines de l'Histoire*, Vol. II, 19.

970 *Ibid.*

971 *Ibid.*

Hindu ritual commemorates the cosmic pillar through the sacrificial stake or post. In the *Satapatha Brahmana*, the priest raises the sacred stake (*yupa*) with the words: “With thy crest thou hast touched the sky; with thy middle thou hast filled the air; with thy foot thou hast steadied the earth.”[972] The cosmic pillar was the foundation of heaven: “Prop thou the sky! fill the air! stand firm on the earth.”[973] “A stay art thou! Do thou make firm the sky!”[974]

This “firm” or “stable” support corresponds in every way to the primordial foundation of Egyptian and Mesopotamian cosmologies. The *Satapatha Brahmana* locates the post in the *centre* of the sacrifice shed (*Sadas*), itself a symbol of the Cosmos. The participants in the ritual form a circle around the post and touch it with the words, “Here is stability . . . Here is joy.”[975]

The cosmic post, Eliade informs us, was the axis of the world. By mystically ascending the celestial pillar the sacrificer attained the cosmic centre and summit.[976]

The Indian world pillar, whether considered as a cosmic mountain (*Meru*) or as a pole or stake reaching from earth to heaven, is that which sustains the central sun. Buddhist iconography reviewed by Coomaraswamy depicts the wheel of the “sun” raised upon a cosmic column called “the pillar of fire.”[977] To the solar mythologists the pillar can only be in the east, the direction of sunrise. Yet Coomaraswamy writes: “The wheel is supported by a column, the *Axis of the Universe*.”[978] The “sun,” in other words, means not the wandering solar orb, but the Buddha or Brahma—the “true sun” which “after having risen thence upwards . . . rises and sets no more. It remains alone in the centre.”[979]

The Indian pillar—reflecting the cosmic images and —serves at once as the foundation of the Cosmos and the axle of the revolving wheel above. That the *axle* is the pillar is confirmed in the *Rig Veda*: “. . . by the axle of his wheeled-car indeed, by his abilities, he pillars apart Heaven and Earth.”[980] Resting atop the axle-pillar, the great god appears as the “unmoved mover” of the revolving wheel.[981]

Thus the “axle-born” Buddha resides at the centre or nave of the wheel, imparting motion to the turning circumference while himself remaining motionless. The wheel, in turn, rests upon “a universal ground” or foundation, a lotus-like pillar. “The pillar extends from Earth to Heaven; it is the axis of the Universe,” states Coomaraswamy.[982] Buddhist art and architecture give numerous and elaborate expressions to the idea, but reduced to its fundamentals, it is simply the polar “sun”-wheel sustained by the cosmic mountain .

---

[972] Eggeling, *Satapatha Brahmana*, III, 7, 1, 14.

[973] *Ibid.*, III, 6, 1, 15; Eliade, *Le Chamanisme el les Techniques Archaïques de l’Extase*, 362-63.

[974] *Satapatha Brahmana*, I, 2, 1, 10.

[975] *Ibid.*, Part IIn 140-43, 454, note 3.

[976] Eliade, *op. cit.*, 363.

[977] *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, Figs. 1-5.

[978] *Ibid.*, note to Fig. 2. [Emphasis added.]

[979] De Saussure, *Les Origines de l’Astronomie Chinoise*, 231, 249.

[980] *Rig Veda* X, 89, 4, in Coomaraswamy, *op. cit.*, 29.

[981] *Ibid.*, 28-29.

[982] *Ibid.*, 34.

Japan, China, Iran, Siberia

With the axis-mountain of Indian thought we can bracket closely related examples from neighbouring lands:

A title of the Indian Meru was *Sumeru*, the “excellent” Meru, a name which Buddhism carried into China as *Siumi*, and to Japan as *Shumi*. Even the relatively late Chinese commentary the *Li-Khi* locates Mount Siumi in the “middle” of the Cosmos, *i.e.*, at the pole.[983] The Japanese Mount Shumi was, according to Hepburn, “a Buddhist fabulous mountain of wonderful height, forming the axis of every Universe, and the centre around which all the heavenly bodies revolve.”[984]

The most common name of the polar mountain in China is *Kwen-lun.* Called the world’s highest mountain, Kwen-lun stood at “the centre of the earth.”[985] On its summit lay a shining circular plain, recalled as a celestial homeland whose “sparkling fountains and purling streams contain the far-famed ambrosia.”[986] The paradise, notes Warren, possesses “a living fountain from which flow in opposite directions the four great rivers of the world.”[987]

Named “the Pearl Mountain,” Kwen-Lun rises to the celestial pole, the abode of the first king Shang-ti.[988] Around it revolve the visible heavens.[989] Kwen-lun is “described as a stupendous heaven-sustaining mountain, marking the centre or pole.”[990] It is the “Great Peak of Perfect Harmony,” whose summit displays Shang-ti’s palace, named *Tsze-wei*, “a celestial space around the N. Pole.”[991]

Distinct from Kwen-lun, but representing the same idea, is the Chinese Mount Kulkun, designated as the “King of the Mountains, the summit of the earth, the supporter of heaven and the axis which touches the pole.”[992]

The true nature of the cosmic mount is evident in the Chinese symbolism of the king post. Mystic traditions defined the centre post of a roof (or the top of such a post) as the *Ki.* The chief upright (*Ki*) of the local dwelling symbolized the *Tai-Ki* or “Great Ki” in heaven, the central support of the turning Cosmos. The “Great Ki” was the god-king Shang-ti, dwelling upon the summit of the polar mount Kwen-lun.[993]

The Iranian counterpart of Meru was the cosmic mountain Hera Berezaiti, raised by Ahura Mazda. In the *Zend Avesta* this “bright mountain” appears as “the first mountain that rose up out of the earth.”[994]

From this cosmic mountain the sun shone forth each day. “Up! rise up and roll along! thou swift-horsed sun, above Hera Berezaiti, and produce light for the world . . .”[995] (Darmesteter’s translation seems to suggest a solar chariot ascending in the east to pass swiftly over the sky.) According to the *Bundahish* the "light rises up from Hera Berezaiti."[996]

---

[983] O’Neill, *op. cit.*, 400.

[984] *Ibid.*, 400.

[985] W. T. Warren, *op. cit.*, 146-47.

[986] *Ibid.*, 143-44.

[987] *Ibid.*, 128.

[988] Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 349.

[989] Warren, *op. cit.*, 129.

[990] *Ibid.*, 147.

[991] O’Neill, *op. cit.*, 521.

[992] Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilization*, 288.

[993] O’Neill, *op. cit.*, 226. O’Neill summarizes the Ki as follows: “Placed in the middle, it is (like the pivot, like the king, like the Pole star) the center and the Terminus; or like the upper point of the post of a house, which is the center, and supports all . . . The Ki, the supreme Pole, is the centre of the heavens and of the Earth. *Ibid.*, 520. Again, the “center” coincides with the “summit.”

[994] Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta*, Part II, 175.

Does the mountain, then, lie to the geographic east? It does not. The sun atop the mount is Mithra, "the lord of wide pastures, . . . sleepless, and ever awake; from whom the Maker Ahura Mazda has built up a dwelling on the Hera-Berezaiti, *the bright mountain around which the many stars revolve*, where come neither night nor darkness, no cold wind and no hot wind, no deathful sickness, no uncleanness made by the Daevas, and the clouds cannot reach up unto the Hera-Berezaiti."[997]

The polar character of the mount was not lost on Lenormant, who wrote: "Like the Meru of the Indians, Hera-Berezaiti is the pole and centre of the world, the fixed point around which the sun and the planets perform their revolutions."[998] Through the paradise at the zenith flowed the four directional rivers; and here was Ahura Mazda's "shining" abode, the "house of praise."[999]

So profoundly influenced were the Iranians by this primordial mountain that one encounters the same cosmic hill under numerous names. As reported by Lenormant, all the groups embodied by the race, "desiring to have their own Hera-Berezaiti," left commemorative sacred mountains in one location after another.[1000]

When the *Zend Avesta* speaks of "Mount Us-hindu, that stands in the middle of the sea,"[1001] one recognizes the same central mountain. The *Bundahish* describes the cosmic peak as "that which, being of ruby, of the substance of the sky, is in the midst of the wide formed ocean."[1002] Is this not the character of every Primeval Hill, rising to the *centre* of the cosmic sea?

The Iranians also called the cosmic mountain Taera (or Terak). In the *Pahlavi Texts* Taera appears as the "Centre of the World."[1003] And again, the central mount is the axis, for the *Zend Avesta* depicts the "holy Rasnu" resting "upon the Taera of the height Haraiti, around which the stars, the moon and the sun revolve."[1004]

On the cosmic mount lay the birthplace of the first ancestor. In the "centre of the earth" Gayomarth was born "radiant and tall," ruling upon the great hill as "king of the mountain."[1005] This world centre was the paradise Airan-vej, the Iranian Eden, and Gayomarth was the "first man." The most distinctive characteristic of this paradise was the great peak Kadad-i-Daitik, termed "the Centre of the Earth." And where was this primordial mountain at the centre of the world? It is identified as "the peak of judgement" atop Hera Berezaiti.[1006]

---

[995] *Ibid.*, Part I, 225, including note I.

[996] West, *Bundahish XX*.

[997] Darmesteter, *op. cit.*, Part II, 131-32. [Emphasis added.]

[998] *Ararat and Eden*, 41.

[999] Dresden, "Mythology of Ancient Iran," 359.

[1000] *Les Origines*, Vol. I, 30*ff.*

[1001] Darmesteter, *op. cit.*, Part II, 101.

[1002] West, *op. cit.*, xii, 6.

[1003] Warren, *op. cit.*, 243.

[1004] Darmesteter, *op. cit.*, Part II 175.

[1005] *Ibid.*, 33, note 1.

[1006] Warren, *op. cit.*, 156-57.

Thus could the Manichaeans say with assurance, “The Primeval Man comes, then, from the world of the Pole Star.”[1007]

Siberia

Among Altaic races one finds a well-preserved memory of the cosmic pillar. “The conception of a sky-supporting pillar reaches back among the Altaic race to a comparatively early period,” states Uno Holmberg.[1008] The consensus holds that the column rose to the stationary celestial pole. Among many tribes it was “the golden pillar.” The Kirghis, Bashkirs, and other Siberian Tatar tribes recall it as “the iron pillar.” To the Teleuts it was “the lone post” and to the Tungus-Orotshons, “the golden post.”[1009]

Siberian myths describe the pillar as a great mountain, which the Mongols and Kalmucks call Sumur or Sumer and the Buriats Sumbur (closely related to the Hindu Meru or Sumeru). “In whatever form this mountain is imagined, it is connected always with the cosmography of these peoples, forming its centre . . . As far back as can be traced it has been a cosmological belief.”

“Where, then, is the summit of this earth-mountain?” asks Uno Holmberg. “We might suppose it to be at the summit of Heaven, directly above us . . . It was not, however, envisaged thus, but instead its peak rises to the sky at the North Star where the axis of the sky is situated, and where, on the peak, the dwelling of the Over-god and his ‘golden throne’ are situated. To this idea points also the assumption, met everywhere in Asia, that the world mountain is in the north.”[1010]

Siberian creation myths relate that the “high God” Ulgen, at the creation of the world, sat atop a “golden mountain.”[1011] The Siberians conceived the axle-pillar as the *centre post* to which the revolving celestial bodies were bound. Just as Egyptian texts termed the pillar the “Great Mooring Post” and the Sumerians denominated it the “binding post,” Altaic races gave it the name “mighty tethering post.” Nomads of Central Asia claim that their use of a post for tethering of their steeds imitates the gods, who fastened their horses to the heavens post. Certain Siberian Tatar tribes describe the cosmic pillar as a “golden horse post” raised in front of the gods’ dwelling.[1012]

Altaic and Finno-Ugric tribes commemorated the world pillar through the sacrificial pillars erected in the centre of the village or as the centre-pole of the tent. The ritual post of the Lapps was *Veralden Tshould*—“the pillar of the world"—and represented the lofty polar column.[1013] Uno Holmberg reports that the wood post which supports the centre of the Altaic shaman's tent duplicates the cosmic character of the primeval pillar upholding heaven. In the magical rites the shaman ascends this post to reach the navel and summit of the world.

[1007] Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiösen Vorstellungen der Altaischen Völker*, 80.

[1008] *Siberian Mythology*, 333.

[1009] *Ibid.*, 341.

[1010] *Ibid.*, 342.

[1011] Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiösen Vorstellungen*, 59.

[1012] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 337. Though the cosmic pillar is explicitly polar, the Siberians (like so many other races) connect it with the primeval “sun.” The Ostiaks describe the celestial binding post as standing “on the side of the sun.” Certain tribes deem the celestial pole the “Pillar of Gold,” “the Pillar of Fire,” or “the Pillar of the Sun.” Eliade, *op. cit.*, 236.

Some traditions describe the binding post as made of iron. The Voguls recall “the holy iron pillar of god erected for the tethering of the holy animal with many-coloured thighs,” while others often depict it as a shining “nail” serving as the axis and support of the cosmos. The Samoyeds, for example, speak of a polar “nail of the sky,” “round which the heavens revolve.” Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 221. Among the Finns and Lapps the conception of the world pillar as a golden nail was very common. Holzmayer describes the belief as follows: “In the middle of the sky, or in the north, the heavens are affixed to a nail in such a manner that they are able to revolve round the nail, the revolving causing the movement of the stars.” This nail is at the same time conceived as the support or foundation of the sky. *Ibid.*

The Altaic “Nail of the North” was the axis of the world mill. The Ostiaks sang: “There is a mill which grinds by itself, and scatters the dust of a hundred versts away. And there is a golden pole with a golden cage on top which is also the Nail of the North.” De Santillana and von Dechend, *Hamlet’s Mill*, 96. We can now understand this mill as the ever-turning cosmic wheel supported by the “golden pole” or axis-pillar: (here).

"In the middle of the world stands a pillar of birch wood, say the Yakuts."[1014] The sacred pole, Holmberg reports, stood for the mountain of the navel.

Like so many other races, the Finns identify the navel with the summit, for they recall the origin of fire:

Over there at the navel of heaven

On the peak of the famous mountain.[1015]

On the cosmic mountain appeared the "first man," radiating light. Altaic and Finno-Ugric races as a whole regard this centre—the "stillest place"—as the site of the lost paradise, watered by four rivers, each associated with a different colour. Here, they claim, the "sun" never set beneath the horizon, and here the original race enjoyed a perpetual spring.[1016]

Greece And Rome

When the Greeks speak of Mount Olympus as the home of the gods, one customarily thinks of the famous Macedonian peak, the highest mountain in Greece. Yet numerous peaks in Greece and Asia Minor competed for the title "Olympus." Arcadia and Thessaly had their own Olympus, as did Laconia. Mountains in Attica, in Euboea, and in Skyros are still called Olympus today. Four different peaks of Mount Ida bore the name, while there was another Olympus in Galatia, another in Lydia, another in Lycia, another in Celicia. So also did Lesbos and Cyprus possess a sacred Olympus.

For an explanation of the many locations one must look to the cosmic prototype. Each hill entitled Olympus commemorated the original resting place of the great father Kronos (later Zeus), just as the hill which the Romans called the Capitoline symbolized the "Mount of Saturn."[1017] Dionysius of Halicarnassus thus reports a complete assimilation of the Capitoline or Saturnian hill and the Greek Olympus or Mount Kronos.[1018] Both hills signified the primordial mount on which the old god Saturn founded his celestial residence.

The mythical Olympus, which gave its name to so many sacred peaks, was the "wholly-shining" summit, the "aetherial" height or "burning sky." The author of the Platonic Epinomis refers to Olympus as "the Cosmos."[1019]

Plato tells us that Olympus was the omphalos or navel of the earth,[1020] a fact of vital significance, since the Greeks knew the omphalos as the "axis."

[1013] In one such wooden post described by Leem an iron nail was stuck in the top as an obvious symbol of the world nail. Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 221-22.

[1014] Uno Holmberg, *Die Religiosen Vorstellungen*, 47-48.

[1015] *Ibid.*, 62.

[1016] *Ibid.*, 75-88.

[1017] Lenormant, *Les Origines*, Vol. I, 146.

[1018] Dionysius of Halicarnassus, I, 34; II, 1.

[1019] Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion*, Vol. I, 101, 114-15.

[1020] Plato, *Critias*, 120; Lenormant, *Les Origines de l'Histoire*, Vol. I, 146.

Moreover, the tradition of Olympus cannot be divorced from that of Ida, another mythical mountain possessing more than one localization. That Mount Ida bore the name Olympus and, like Olympus, was said to rise into the *aether*,[1021] reveals the underlying identity of the two heaven's pillars. Ida was the birthplace:

In the centre of the Sea *is the White Isle of Zeus*
There is Mount Ida, and our race's cradle.[1022]

So declares Aeneas. To anyone aware of the general tradition, this mountain in the middle of the sea can only be the primeval hill, the cosmic peak to which every race on earth traces its ancestry.

Also conceived as the centre of the world was the famous Mount Parnassus, from which, according to local myths, the human race descended. On the slope of Parnassus stood Delphi, Apollo's popular shrine, esteemed as "the navel." But here too we must look beyond the commemorative terrestrial mount to comprehend its symbolism. The mythical Parnassus is doubtless the same as the Sanskrit Parnasa, which the Hindu *Puranas* call *Meru*, the polar mountain.

One of those to perceive the Greek sacred mountain as the copy of the cosmic mount was Warren, who concluded: "Olympus was simply the Atlantean pillar [the "pillar of heaven"] pictured as a lofty mountain, and supporting the sky at its northern Pole. In fact, many writers now affirm that the Olympus of Greek mythology was simply the north polar 'World-mountain' of the Asiatic nations."[1023] But the point is only rarely acknowledged today, and most treatments of the subject still ask the Macedonian mount to explain its own mythical image.

Western Semitic

Mount Zion, the site of the ancient Hebrew temple, is a small hill in Jerusalem, between the Tyropoeon and Kedron valleys. The Hebrews frequently call Jerusalem itself "Zion."

But in the "last days," according to Isaiah (2:2), Zion "shall be exalted above the hills." This will be the new Jerusalem. The Book of Revelation, in reference to "a new heaven and a new earth," implies a transformation of the mount: "[An angel] carried me away in the spirit to a *great and high mountain*, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven."[1024] The verse suggests that in the order to come the celestial city will rest on a mountain reaching to heaven.

The concrete image of the *new* Jerusalem, however, is supplied by the memory of the *primordial* Jerusalem, founded at the creation. This was the mount on which Yahweh, or El, stood in the beginning. From the available evidence, one observes the following characteristics of the cosmic Zion:

***1.** The mountain stood at the navel of the world.*[1025]

Thus, in the "creation," God fashioned the "earth" around Zion.[1026]

***2.** The mountaintop was the world summit.*

Among the Hebrews, states Wensinck, "the sanctuary [Zion] has been considered as the highest mountain or the highest territory of the earth." This is, Wensinck adds, "the first character of the navel."[1027] (Every navel marks the centre and summit.) Through assimilation with the cosmic Zion, the local hill acquires the imagery of the original.

[1021] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 116.

[1022] Quoted in Warren, *op. cit.*, 182. [Emphasis added.]

[1023] *Ibid.*, 212.

[1024] Revelation 21:10. [Emphasis added.]

[1025] Wensinck, "*The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth*," 1-10.

[1026] *Ibid.*, 16.

[1027] *Ibid.*, 13.

> *Great is the Lord, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in the mountain of his holiness. Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is mount Zion.*[1028]

The phrase "beautiful for situation" (*yepeh nop*) has the concrete meaning of "towering superb" (Gaster's rendering of the phrase).[1029] Needless to say, the small hill in terrestrial Jerusalem did not supply this image.

***3.** Zion lies in the farthest north.*

Mt. Zion, "thou far reaches of the North," an emperor's citadel.[1030]

Here the cosmic Zion is identified with the celestial Zaphon, the Mount of Congregation in the uttermost north. This is the mount from which Lucifer was cast down:

> *For thou* [Lucifer] *hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God:* I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north [Zaphon]. *I will ascend above the heights of clouds; I will be like the most High.*[1031]

Thus does God (as El, the Most High) reside on a great northern mountain, reaching the stars. Clifford tells us that "Zaphon's meaning seems to be practically 'heavens'."[1032] That Zion was synonymous with this cosmic mountain in the far north links the modest hill in Jerusalem with the polar mountain of global mythology.

***4.** God appears as a radiant light atop Zion.*

> *Out of Zion, the perfection of beauty, God hath shined. Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about him.*[1033]

***5.** The primeval temple (or city) rests on Zion.*

". . . The habitation of Yahweh on Zion is the earthly counterpart of the glorious mansion which, in traditional popular lore, the divine overlord is said to have built for himself on the supernal hill of the gods," writes Gaster.[1034]

***6.** God resides* "*in*" *the cosmic Zion.*

The enclosure of God's dwelling (temple, city) is inseparable from the mountain on which it rests. Thus can the Psalm employ the phrase, "in the city of our God, *in* the mountain of his holiness."[1035] God's "dwelling place *in* Zion"[1036] is the enclosure of the summit.

7. Zion is the site of Adam's paradise, the land of the four rivers.

To the prince of Tyre (clearly the cosmic, not the terrestrial city) the Lord declares:

[1028] Psalm 48: 1-2.

[1029] Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament*, 758.

[1030] Psalm 48:2, as translated by Gaster, *op. cit.*, 758.

[1031] Isaiah 14:13-14. [Emphasis added.]

[1032] Clifford, *The Cosmic Mountain*, 162.

[1033] Psalm 50: 2-3.

[1034] To Come.

[1035] Psalm 48:1. [Emphasis added.]

[1036] Psalm 76:2. [Emphasis added.]

> *Thou hast been in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering . . . Thou wast upon the* holy mountain *of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.*[1037]

In these lines the prince of the cosmic city appears in the character of Adam, enthroned amid the fiery stones of Eden. To occupy the primeval garden is to abide upon "the holy mountain of God."[1038] The point is noted by Wensinck: "Paradise really consists of a mountain higher than any mountain on earth . . . Paradise is also considered as a navel."[1039] That the mountain surpassed all terrestrial peaks simply means that it was cosmic, as was the paradise at the summit.

These characteristics of the heaven's peak in Hebrew tradition find additional confirmation in the closely related cosmic mountain of Canaanite myth. Zaphon in the far north appears repeatedly in the texts as the resting place of the high god Baal. "There are striking similarities between the mountain *spn* [Zaphon] in the Ugaritic texts and Mount Zion in the Hebrew Bible," writes Clifford. "On both the deity dwells in his temple from which he exercises his rule; thunder and lightning are frequently his means of disclosure; the mountain . . . is impregnable; it is connected with fertility; and it is a cosmic centre."[1040]

Noteworthy is "the mythic and cosmic dimension of the pillar or mountain. That is, it joins the upper and lower world; in it is contained a super abundance of life, of water; it is the throne of the deity."[1041] Just as the Hebrew Yahweh dwells *in* Zion, so does the Canaanite high god Baal dwell *in* the cosmic Zaphon:

In the midst *of my mountain, divine Zaphon,*

In the holy place, the mountain of my heritage,

In the chosen spot, on the hill of victory.[1042]

Baal is enthroned, yea (his) seat is the mountain . . .

In the midst *of his mountain, divine Zaphon . . .*

His head is wonderful.[1043]

It must be this cosmic hill depicted in a Phoenician ivory, reproduced by Clifford. The ivory (dated to the first millenium B.C.) shows a mountain personified as a male deity. The mountain-god holds in his hand a vase from which four streams flow in opposite directions.[1044] Issuing from the summit of the mount, the four rivers provide a distinct parallel to the four rivers of other traditions.

[1037] Ezekiel 12: 13-15. [Emphasis added.]

[1038] See also the *Book of Jubilees* 8:19.

[1039] *Op. cit.*, 14.

[1040] Clifford, *op. cit.*, 131.

[1041] *Ibid.*, 97.

[1042] *Ibid.*, 68. [Emphasis added.]

[1043] *Ibid.*, 77. [Emphasis added.]

[1044] *Ibid.* Complementing Hebrew traditions of Zion are the Muslim tales of the world mountain Kaf. According to the commentary of Tha'labi, "Allah created a large mountain of green emerald, from which the green colour of the sky is derived: it is called mount Kaf and it surrounds the whole earth." Wensinck, *op. cit.*, 5. The mount served as a stable support and enclosed the "world." This is exactly the image of the enclosed celestial earth forming the summit of the primeval hill: (here).

Muslim cosmology knows the holy city of Mecca as the summit of the worlds highest mountain. *Ibid.*, 12, 25. The throne of Allah on the mountaintop or world summit stood at the celestial pole. "The highest point and the center of heaven is the Polestar," states Wensinck. *Ibid.*, 47.

The Americas

"The ancient Mexicans," writes Warren, "conceived of the cradle of the human race as situated in the farthest North, upon the highest of mountains, cloud-surrounded, the residence of the god Tlaloc. Thence come the rains and all streams, for Tlaloc is the god of the water. The first man Quetzalcoatl, after having ruled as king of the Golden Age of Mexico, returned by divine direction to the primeval Paradise in the North (Tlapallan) and partook of the draught of immortality. The stupendous terraced pyramid-temple of Cholula was a copy and symbol of the sacred Paradise mountain of Aztec tradition, which was described as standing 'in the *Centre of the Middle-country.*'"1045

Called *Colhuacan*, Tlaloc's mountain was the site of the mythical homeland Atzlan, the "White Mountain" from which, according to the myths, the Mexicans descended.1046 Resting on the summit of Colhuacan was the temple of Mixcoatl, "the god of the Pole Star."1047 Though Mexican myths abound with references to the primordial "centre," one notes that (as stated by Sejourne) "the centre . . . is also the point where heaven and earth meet,"1048 *i.e.*, it is "the world's highest point," the summit of the world mountain.

As an indication of the close correspondence between the Mexican paradisal mountain and that of other races, I cite the following Mixtec account of divine origins. The account relates that "the father and mother of all the gods" constructed a mansion upon a *great hill* while the world yet lay "in deep obscurity":

. . . When all was chaos and confusion,

the earth was covered with water,

there was only mud and slime on the surface of the earth.

At that time . . .

there became visible

a god who had the name 1-Deer

and the surname Snake of the Lion

and a goddess, very genteel and beautiful,

whose name was also 1-Deer

and whose surname was Snake of the Tiger.

These two gods are said to have been the beginning

of all other gods . . .

Western Semitic races claim that the creator dwelt in a celestial tent, reflected in imitative tents on earth. The central pole of the terrestrial tent corresponds to the world mountain. The Arabs called *the cosmic mountain* itself the "Central Pole of the Tent," while the Arabic name for the pole star, Al-rucaba, gave the Spanish *arrocabe*, "the kingpost of a roof." O'Neill, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 226.

The polar mount also finds symbolic expression in the Arabic minaret or "light house," a slender and lofty tower atached to a Muslim mosque. On the balcony of the minaret the muezzin calls the people to prayer. The worlds largest minaret is the Qutb Minar at Delhi, standing over 240 feet high and described by one observer as resembling "a cyclopean red telescope." *Ibid.*, 206-8. The Quth (of Qutb Minar) is, as we have seen, the "pole" or "axis" of the universe. The minaret—commemorating the axis-pillar—thus corresponds well with the sacred poles and pillars of other nations. (I earlier proposed that the prototype of the minaret was the Egyptian Mena-uret—the Great Mooring Post.)

1045 *Op. cit.*, 247. [Emphasis added.]

1046 Masey, *Ancient Egypt*, 588.

1047 Krickerberg, in *Pre-Columbian Religions*, 41; Fay Diego Duran, *Book of the Gods and Rites*, 161, translator's footnote.

1048 Sejourne, *Burning Water*, 89.

As soon as these two gods became
visible on earth, in human form,
the accounts of our people relate
that with their power and wisdom
they made and established a large stone
on which they built a very sumptuous mansion,
constructed with the finest workmanship
which was their seat and residence on earth . . .
This large stone and the mansion
were on a very high hill,
near the village of Apoala . . .
This large stone was named
"the-place-where-the-heavens-were."
And there they remained many centuries
in complete tranquillity and contentment, as in a pleasant and delightful place . . .

The poem goes on to describe the planting of a garden of abundance on the mountaintop with—

flowers and roses
and trees and fruit
and many herbs
and in this way
began the Mixtec kingdom.[1049]

Here we have the god One ("1-Deer") appearing in the primeval waters and taking as his spouse the great mother. The appearance of the primal pair coincides with the fashioning of a mansion atop "a very high hill." That this was the cosmic mountain is clear from the reference to the "large stone" of foundation atop the hill: its name was "the-place-where-the-heavens-were" (it was not of our earth). With its garden of plenty, this home of the Mixtec pair offered "complete tranquillity and contentment." (Compare the Egyptian *Garden of Hetep*, whose very name conveys the dual meaning "rest" and "abundance.")

All nations look back to the god One as the first king and to the first generation of gods as the "ancestors." Thus the poem concludes: "in this way began the Mixtec kingdom."

A central mountain, identified with "the earth's navel," appears also in the myths of the Pima of the southwestern United States. From this mountain the world was populated.[1050] The Omaha commemorate the great rock which Wakanda summoned from the waters, at the beginning of the world:

. . . The great white rock,
Standing and reaching as high as the heavens, enwrapped in mist.
Verily as high as the heavens . . .[1051]

[1049] Léon-Portilla, *Pre-Columbian Literatures of Mexico*, 56-57.

[1050] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 178.

[1051] *Ibid.*, 107.

"The Indians, like the Semites," states Alexander, "conceived the world to be a mountain, rising from the waste of cosmic waters, and arched by the celestial dome."[1052]

The aborigines of Guiana know the great mountain Roraima, "ever-fertile source of streams." Surrounding this peak, the natives say, is "a magic circle." On the same mountain they recall an enormous serpent "which could entwine a hundred people in its folds."[1053]

In the Eskimo tradition, the upper or netherworld lies beyond a great mountain around which the celestial dome revolves. The land above this *axis-mountain* is said to resemble our earth.[1054]

Like other races, the American Indians represented the cosmic Mount by the centre-post of the sacred dwelling. Perhaps the most interesting version occurs in the Delaware symbolism of the "Big House," a ritual dwelling known to represent the primeval creation. Atop the centre-post of the Big House stood the effigy of the creator god Gicelemukaong. "The post on which his face appears represents him in his aspect as centre post of the universe, the supporter of the whole structure of creation," writes Muller.[1055] The connection of this king-post with the Great Bear[1056] proves its polar character, while the creator at the summit is without doubt the supreme polar god.

A Collective Memory

The myths and symbols of the cosmic mountain constitute a collective memory shared by all mankind. The Mount universally appears as the inaccessible height, attaining the centre of heaven. Around its summit revolves the circle of the Cosmos. In all principal accounts the Mount appears as the ancestral homeland—the lost paradise with its four rivers.

From one section of the world to another the ancients represented the primeval hill through sacred posts and pillars—the centre-posts of temples and other holy dwellings, or the free-standing columns holding aloft various emblems of the great god and his enclosure.

The pillar of light appearing to support the planet-god was "the earth's highest mountain." The god on the mountaintop seemed to occupy the summit of the terrestrial landscape, yet also appeared literally as the pivot around which all the heavenly bodies turned.

In other words, one can speak of the great father as ruling "on *our* earth" without reducing him to mere human proportions. The same figure ruled as the central sun.

It is to the cosmic mountain that one must refer in order to make sense of the commemorative hill or sacred column. Yet the priority of the cosmic peak is only rarely admitted by the experts.

Were the Greeks so unsophisticated as to believe that Kronos—acknowledged to be the planet Saturn—sat enthroned on a *local* Olympus? Did the Hebrews truly believe that Yahweh, at the creation, actually stood on the mound of earth which we now call Zion? (The truth is that in the age of epic poetry and fable, when the chroniclers confused the cosmic Olympus and Zion with their local representations, most educated men stopped believing the myths.)

[1052] *Ibid.*, 8.

[1053] *Latin American Mythology*, 277.

[1054] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 8.

[1055] In *Pre-Columbian Religions*, 163.

[1056] *Ibid.*, 166. The Mexican national temple of Tlaloc and Vizilputzi (Tlaloc's brother) stood in the center of the city of Mexico, whence four causeways radiated in the four direction. "In the center of the temple stood a richly ornamented Pillar of peculiar sanctity," noted Warren, *op. cit.*, 247, note 1. Since the intersection of the crossroads symbolized the cosmic center and summit, the pillar clearly represented Tlaloc's celestial mountain at the navel of the world.

The center and capital of the Peruvian city of Cuzco stood at the intersection of four great highways running to the north, south, east, and west, each traversing one of the four provinces or vice-royalties into which Peru was divided. In the central temple was a circle and in the center of the circle stood a sacred pillar. *Ibid.*, note 2.

The memory of the *cosmic* mountain existed prior to the naming of sacred hills on our earth or the fashioning of symbolic representations. Indeed, the point should go without saying. While Greek mythologists like to think that the Macedonian Olympus gave rise to myths of the Olympic home of the gods, surely no one would suggest that the towering obelisks, iron posts, or minarets were fashioned *before* men conceived the great god resting on such a support. The cosmic myth precedes and gives meaning to the symbol. Local mountain and sacred pillar share the same role as characterizations of a cosmic prototype.

Divorced from the prototype the symbol will always appear as an expression of gross ignorance. A good illustration of this is Cook's explanation of the Germanic sacred pillar Irminsaul, "the pillar of heaven." To the primitive, Cook tells us, "the sky stands in need of a visible support. Early man was in fact haunted by a very definite dread that it might collapse on him."

"How that belief arose, we can only surmise. It may be that in the dim past, when the ancestors of these tribes developed out of hunters into herdsmen and emerged from the forest on to the open plain, they missed the big tree that seemed to support the sky ('heaven-reaching' as Homer calls it). And in the absence of the mighty prop there was nothing to guarantee the safety of their roof [the sky]."

"Now early man was a practical person. His roof being insecure, he proceeded to shore it up."[1057]

One observer after another confuses the symbol with the prototype. Can one credibly suggest that primitives raised the sacred post because "they missed the big tree that seemed to support the sky"? Could the most ignorant savages have believed that the very piece of wood before them sustained the entire heavens so that a few blows of an ax would bring down the sun, moon, and stars?

A few comparative mythologists, noting the sacred mountain's connection with the world axis, seek to understand it as an astronomical metaphor: the ancients must have been so impressed by the visual revolution of the heavens around a central point—the celestial pole—that they conceived a great column supporting heaven at its pivot and constituting the fixed axle of the universe. These writers see the mountain as a primitive fiction employed to explain the regular and harmonious motions of the heavens.

But in the ancient world view, the cosmic axis-pillar belongs to an integrated vision and cannot be separated from other central themes. If the Mount was no more than a colourful metaphor for the cosmic axis, in what metaphor did the polar sun originate? Why was this stationary light called Saturn? And why do the hymns incessantly invoke a shining band around the god, or four primary rays of light radiating from this central sun? To explain the cosmic mount as an analogy drawn by primitive imagination, one must, in similar terms, account for the entire range of motifs attached to the signs and , the world-wide images of the mountain. Such a task would require abstractions far beyond any to which the ancients were accustomed.

While modern man looks for an explanation of the myths in the present heavens, the mythmakers themselves repeatedly tell us that they speak of a *vanished* world order. The cosmic mountain is the *Primeval* Hill; the garden at the summit is the *lost* paradise; and the central sun ruling the enclosure is the *banished* god-king. The entire drama set forth in archaic ritual takes place in a previous age, separated from our own by overwhelming catastrophes (a subject which must be reserved for treatment in a separate volume).

When the ancient priests invoke the "Mount of Glory," the "Jewelled Peak," the "pillar of fire," or the "golden mountain" they affirm the Mount as a visible and powerful apparition.

Moreover, one need only consider the diverse mythical forms of the Mount to discover a symbolism of such breadth and coherence as to refute any appeal to abstractions.

The Mount Of Masculine Power

[1057] *Op. cit.*, Vol. I, 55-56.

Mythical history presents the cosmic mountain as the masculine power of the heavens, implanting the luminous "seed" (Saturn) within the womb of the mother goddess. The goddess, personifying the band around the central sun, thus becomes the "mistress of the mountain."

If the Egyptian Atum or Re is the Great Seed, the Mesopotamian Ninurta, or Ningirsu, is "the life giving Seed."[1058] The ritual declares the primal seed to have been generated by the world pillar. "My king Ningirsu . . . , trusty lord, Seed spawned by the Great Mountain," reads a Sumerian hymn.[1059] In the same vein the Egyptians conceived Re the "Seed" of the cosmic mountain Shu.

The mountain is the *generative* pillar and the great goddess its queen. Upon forming the great column in the waters of Kur, Ninurta addresses his wife Ninmah (a form of Ninhursag):

Therefore on the hill which I, the hero, have heaped up,

Let its name be Hursag (mountain), and thou be its queen.[1060]

Similarly, Ishtar, the "womb," is the spouse on the mountain:

O supreme mistress of the mountain of the universe.[1061]

The concrete meaning of the goddess' title will be observed in a Canaanite fragment referring to Ishtar and Mount Pisaisa: the mount *cohabits* with the goddess.[1062] The world mountain takes the form of the Ithyphallus, observes Jeremias.[1063]

Egyptian ritual invokes the mother goddess as the "Spouse on the Mountain,"[1064] while the great father becomes *An-mut-f*, "the pillar of his mother."[1065]

That the great goddess, as mistress or queen of the mountain, actually cohabits with it may not always be explicitly spelled out, though the relationship is often explicit in the symbolism of the Mount itself. The phallic dimension of the cosmic pillar is very clear in the Egyptian obelisk , symbol of the Primeval Hill supporting the Benben stone or "Seed" of Atum. According to Rouge, "A comparative study of these little monuments proves that the obelisk was revered because it was the symbol of Amen the generator . . . The obelisk passes insensibly from its ordinary form to that of the phallus."[1066]

The Egyptian and Mesopotamian conceptions of the world mountain as masculine power accord with Hindu symbolism of the cosmic mount Meru, deemed the male principle of the universe.[1067] Meru was, in fact, the famed *lingam* or phallus of Shiva, extending upward along the "axis of the universe."[1068] Reflecting this idea is the phrase "the virile mountain," employed by the *Atharva Veda.*[1069]

[1058] Kramer, *The Sacred Marriage Rite*, 54.

[1059] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 257.

[1060] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 81.

[1061] Jastrow, *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 399.

[1062] Clifford, *op. cit.*, 30.

[1063] "Der Ithyphallus, der auf der elamischen Vase realistisch dargestellt ist, entspricht in der mythischen Symbolik der Weltberg." Jeremias, *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 24.

[1064] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 115, note 1.

[1065] *Ibid.*, 54.

[1066] Quoted in O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 201.

[1067] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 331.

The "heavenly pillar" on which the Japanese pair Izangi and Izanami stood in the beginning[1070] was, according to the respected authority Hirata, at once the world axis and the lingam.[1071]

". . . Every mountain was deemed the phallus of the World, and every phallus or cone was an image of the holy mountain," observes Faber.[1072]

The phallic character of many sacred pillars is so widely acknowledged as to require little argument.[1073] Indeed, certain scholars are so impressed by this attribute of sacred pillars that they seek to build an entire interpretation of ancient ritual around the theme: every pillar and every related symbol becomes an expression of a primitive preoccupation with human reproduction—and nothing else.

Figure 46. Cretan Mistress of the Mountain.

Yet in each instance, one sees the *prevailing* theme of the *cosmic* mountain. It is one thing to admit the masculine attribute of the pillar (among other attributes), but quite another thing to assert, as some do, that the pillar was initially nothing more than a masculine emblem. The cosmic mountain came first, and it was quite natural that the ancients, reflecting on the mountain's relation to the enclosed sun at the summit ( ), interpreted the entire configuration in masculine-feminine terms. Faber, after reviewing the global image of the holy mountain, concludes that in each case the mountain had on its summit a mystic circle given the name of the mother goddess and called "the Circle of the World." The "sun"-god, states Faber, resides within this enclosure as husband of the great mother, while the mountain itself is the organ of universal generation. (Unnoticed by Faber, however, is the connection of this universal cosmology with the sign .)

Those who assert the absolute priority of phallicism not only forget that the sacred pillar was cosmic from the start (*i.e.*, it was not a mere phallic emblem gradually enlarged to cosmic dimensions), but must gloss over the many independent attributes of the pillar and enclosure. (It would be absurd, for example, to argue that the mythical lost paradise—watered by four rivers running to the four corners—was the product of primitive phallicism.)

[1068] Coomaraswamy, *op. cit.*, 54-5; 66, note 15; 88, note 132.

[1069] Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, 680.

[1070] Philippi, *The Kojiki*, 50.

[1071] *Ibid.*, 398-99, citing Hirata, *Pure Shinto*, 67.

[1072] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 203.

[1073] *Ibid.*, 30*ff.*, 201*ff.*

One interpretation of the polar configuration overlaps with another. But only the prototype explains the symbol.[1074]

The Cosmic Mountain Personified

The cosmic mountain often takes the mythical form of a great giant supporting the central sun or holding aloft the womb of the Cosmos. On other occasions the Mount becomes the lower limbs of the great god himself.

Of the heaven-sustaining giant, there is no more popular figure than the Greek Atlas. In modern imagination Atlas is the lonely god bearing our earth on his shoulders. But Hesiod surely speaks for the original version when he writes: “And Atlas through hard constraint upholds the wide heaven with unwearying head and arms, standing at the borders of the earth, before the clear-voiced Hesperides.”[1075] Pindar has Atlas “bearing up against heaven’s weight,”[1076] while Ovid speaks of “strong Atlas who wears heaven on his shoulders.”[1077] (The reader will recall that “heaven” means “the Cosmos.”)

The usual view is that the Hesperides, in whose company Hesiod places Atlas, occupy a mysterious region either in Libya or in the far west. But Apollodorus, describing the eleventh labour of Hercules, relates that the golden apples guarded by the Hesperides “were not, as some have said, in Libya, but on Atlas, among the Hyperboreans.”[1078] This, of course, places Atlas in the far north, as noted by Frazer.[1079]

When Apollodorus uses the phrase “on Atlas,” he refers to Atlas as the *mountain* on which Hera planted the garden of the gods.[1080] The mythical Mount Atlas and heaven-sustaining god were synonymous, the myths declaring that Perseus petrified Atlas into the mountain.[1081] Since there is a range of mountains in northwest Africa called Atlas many writers assume this to be the subject of the myth, but Apollodorus’ location of the mount and garden among the far-northern Hyperboreans speaks for a quite different idea.

[1074] The *cosmic mountain* was the masculine source of universal generation, a fact reflected in the pronounced phallic atributes of the mountain-god. Enlil, the Mesopotamian “great mountain,” raises aloft the goddess Ninhursag, the “queen” of the cosmic hill, and implants the male “seed” (Saturn) within the celestial womb.

The Babylonian Bel (Canaanite Baal) receives the title “lord, the mightly mountain Bel.” Allegro informs us that the god “derives his name from a Sumerian verb Al, ‘bore,’ which combined with a preformative element BA, gave words for ‘drill’ and ‘penis’ and gave Latin and us our word ‘phallus.’ *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross*, 24. Bel, the “mighty mountain,” was the generative pillar of the heavens. The phallic mountain was also the bore because it was the turning axle.

The Egyptian Shu, personifying the Light Mountain, is “lord of the Phallus” and appears in one text (*Pyramid Text* 642) to be equated with the male organ of Atum. More generally the pillar-god represents the phallus of Geb, brother and husband of Nut. Egyptian art depicts Shu standing on the recumbent Geb and supporting the curved and star-studded body of Nut with outstretched arms. Elsewhere, however, the artists replace Shu by the phallus of Geb. These illustrations, coming from the late period of Egyptian history, yet preserve a vital idea, whose origins will be found in the simple configuration (here). The identity of Shu, the heaven’s pillar, with the phallus of Geb, illuminates these lines from the *Coffin Texts*: “As Geb I shall impregnate you [Nut] in your name of sky. I shall join the whole earth to you in every place. O high above the earth! You are supported upon your father Shu.” Quoted in Clark, *op. cit.*, 49.

[1075] Evelyn-White, *Hesiod, the Homeric Hymns and Homerica*, 117.

[1076] Pindar, *Pythian Odes* iv, 289.

[1077] Ovid, *Metamorphoses*, 168.

[1078] Frazer, *Apollodorus*, II. V. II.

[1079] *Ibid.*, 221, note 2.

[1080] Hyginus, *Poetic Astronomy* ii. 3.

[1081] Graves, *The Greek Myths*, 144.

To find the original character of Atlas, one must consult the global tradition, for this heaven-sustaining god has many counterparts around the world.

In India numerous gods appear as personifications of the world mountain. Agni is a “supporting column,” or the “pillar of life,”[1082] a god who “upholds the sky by his efficacious spells,”[1083] and serves as the “axle” of the cosmic wheel or chariot.[1084] “Agni is represented as the axis of the Universe, extending as a pillar between Earth and Heaven,” states Coomaraswamy.[1085]

Closely related is Indra, he “who is vast and self-sustained like a mountain, the radiant and formidable Indra.”[1086] “Be thou just here; be not moved away; like a mountain, not unsteady; O Indra, stand thou fixed just here; here do thou maintain royalty.”[1087]

Of Vishnu, Hindu ritual declares, “Thou proppedst asunder those two worlds, O Vishnu.”[1088] Savitar is the axis-pillar of the world wheel: “All immortal things rest upon him as on the axle end of a chariot.”[1089] And the *Upanishads* sing of Prajapati “By him the heavens are strong and earth is steadfast, by him light’s realm and sky-vault are supported.”[1090]

Hindu traditions of the heaven-sustaining god find a parallel in the cosmic image of the Buddha as “the golden mountain.” Buddhist iconography presents the Buddha either as a pillar of fire or as the central sun atop such a pillar, which was the “axis of the Universe.”[1091]

Among Altaic races the central pillar often receives personification as a towering figure supporting the heavens. The celestial column becomes “the Man-Pillar of Fire,”[1092] or “the iron pillar man.”[1093] The Finnish supreme polar god was Ukko, invoked in the *Kalevala* with the words “O Ukko, god on high, supporter of the whole sky!”[1094]

Mithraic shrines depict Mithras in the form of Atlas, supporting the vault of heaven. “From the moment of his birth Mithras held the globe as *Kosmocrator* (ruler of the Cosmos),” states Cumont. “Atlas served to stress both the significance of Mithras’ task as bearer of the heavens and the power derived from this junction.”[1095] The

---

[1082] Oldenberg, *Vedic Hymns*, 49.

[1083] *Ibid.*, 61.

[1084] *Op. cit.*, 65.

[1085] *Ibid.*, 10.

[1086] *Rig Veda* V, 3, 160.

[1087] Whitney, *op. cit.*, 347.

[1088] Eggeling, *op. cit.*, III, 5, 3, 14.

[1089] Campbell, *Oriental Mythology*, 208.

[1090] Nikhilananda, *The Upanishands*, 18. We also saw that the Hindu *skambha*, or universe post, acquired the form of a cosmic giant sustaining the heavens. See here.

[1091] Coomaraswamy, *op. cit.*, 10; 68, note 30; see plates I and II; see also O’Neill, *op. cit.*, 194.

[1092] Eliade, *op. cit.*, 239.

[1093] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 234-35.

[1094] Lenrot, *The Kalevala*, 5.

[1095] Cumont, *The Mysteries of Mithra*, 116.

Germanic Heimdall represented the turning axle-post of the heavens[1096] while the name of the Semitic god El has for its primitive sense "a column."

In North America, the divinity widely recognized in legend and myth by diverse Indian tribes was Manabozho, who "resides upon an immense piece of ice in the Northern Ocean," directing the cosmic movements. One of the forms of Manabozho was Ta-ren-ya-wa-go, "the holder of the Heavens."[1097] The assimilation of the great god to the cosmic mountain on which he rests will explain why, in the language of ancient astronomy, Saturn is the "pillar." The connection bears on an enigmatic reference to Saturn in the Old Testament. The prophet Amos charges Israel with having "borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun, your images, the star of your god."[1098] The term *Chiun* refers to the "pillar" or "pedestal" of the star-god worshipped by the Israelites in the desert. It is the name of the planet Saturn and traces back to the Babylonian *Kaiun*, also Saturn—the "steady star upon a foundation." Plutarch gives the title *Kiun* to the Egyptian Anup, the "god who is on his pole." *Kiun*, states Massey, "denotes the highest point, at the centre, and is applied to the founding of the world. *The name was assigned to Saturn as the god in the highest.*"[1099]

Saturn, the Heaven Man, thus acquires the form of a cosmic giant, whose vast trunk is the mountain of the world. *The sign* *offers us a picture of the Kosmocrator, the all-containing being embracing the male and female powers and supporting the Cosmos.*

Moreover, this connection of the supreme god to the cosmic pillar provides a further refutation of the common view which has the god, as our sun, *leave the mountain each morning* and soar across the sky to sink below the western horizon. It is the mountain that gives the god his identity as the supporter of the heavens. Could one reasonably call the mount the god's *lower limbs* if the sun were joined to the mount only at the moment of sunrise? The true light god does not move, but remains fixed at the summit.

The Single Leg

Reflecting the assimilation of the great god to the cosmic mountain is the repeated characterization of the Mount as the god's single "leg."

The ancient Mayans knew no greater god than Huracan, "the Heart of Heaven." In the *Popul Vuh*, the sacred book of the Quiche Maya, Huracan presides over the creation, bringing forth the first dawn.[1100] The name *Huracan* means literally "One-Leg." Goetz and Morley render his name as "flash of a leg or the lightning."[1101]

Did the single leg of Huracan derive from a bolt of lightning? We can answer the question by looking at other one-legged gods, of which world mythology presents a surprising number. Huracan's counterpart in Nahuatl ritual was the polar god Tezcatlipoca, who also possessed a single leg. And the same people worshipped Huitzilopochtli:

> *Portentous one, who inhabits the region of clouds, you have but one foot.*[1102]

[1096] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 158-59.

[1097] Emerson, *Indian Myths*, 338-39, 438. Atlas was *the cosmic mountain* personified. Thus both Euripides and Aristotle relate the pillar of Atlas to the world axis. Warren comments: "The upright axis of the world is often poetically conceived of as a majestic pillar, supporting the heavens and furnishing the pivot on which they revolve." *Op. cit.*, 122.

[1098] Amos 5:26.

[1099] *Ancient Egypt*, 670. [Emphasis added.]

[1100] Goetz and Morley, *Popul Vuh*, 81-84.

[1101] *Ibid.*, 82, note 7.

[1102] Léon-Portilla, *op. cit.*, 65.

Similarly, the Lillooet Indians of British Columbia recall an old thunder god who stood on one leg.[1103]

Looking beyond the Americas one finds that the natives of Australia remember a one-legged god Turunbulun, who also possessed a *single eye.*[1104] This peculiarity, in turn, reminds one of the ominous figure met by Owein in the Arthurian legend: coming to a clearing in the forest, Owein encountered a large mound on which stood a black, *one-eyed, one-legged giant.*[1105]

The Celtic Sol stood on one foot all day.[1106] The African Wachoga tell of the old god Mrule who resided on earth for a time before departing because of human unkindness; the god had only one leg.[1107] O'Neill notes that a bronze statue of a Cabirean god of the Medici *lararium* stood on one foot.[1108] Russian myth presents the demonic Verlioka as a one-eyed and one-legged figure.[1109] So also was the Chinese primeval god K'uei one-footed.[1110]

That more than one of these figures possesses a single eye in addition to one leg is surely the key to a solution.

The Cyclopean eye answered to the enclosed polar sun , which the myths place on the world pillar . Does not the latter image offer us the simplest and most direct explanation of the one-eyed, one-legged god?

The decisive evidence comes from Egypt and India. In language which Egyptologists rarely attempt to comprehend, Egyptian texts speak of the "leg" or "thigh" of Osiris, Set, or Ptah. While the female "thigh" was the lap (womb) of the great mother, Egyptian texts similarly show that the *masculine* "thigh" or "leg" was the cosmic mountain. While numerous texts depict the god shining over the Light Mountain, the god Osiris is said to "shine above the Leg of heaven."[1111] "Hail, Leg of fire, who comest forth from Akhekhu" proclaims the *Book of the Dead.*[1112]

The Egyptian *sept*, written with the mountain symbol , means "provide with." But *sept* also means "leg." Massey's conclusion must be our own: "The leg or thigh was an Egyptian figure of the pole, as we find it in 'the leg of Ptah' . . . Hence, 'above the leg' is equivalent to 'over the pole.'"[1113] Kees tells us that the leg of Set, from which the "Nile" was said to flow, represented the pole.[1114]

[1103] Harris, *Boanerges*, 33.

[1104] Coomaraswamy and Mivedita, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists*, 388.

[1105] Rhys, *Arthurian Legend*, 594.

[1106] MacCulloch, *Celtic Mythology*, 190.

[1107] Werner, *African Mythology*, 138.

[1108] *Op. cit.*, 214.

[1109] *Ibid.*, 216.

[1110] Bodde, "Myths of Ancient China," in Kramer, *Mythologies of the Ancient World*, 374-76.

[1111] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 118.

[1112] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 370.

[1113] *Ancient Egypt*, 311.

[1114] Cited in Neumann, *The Great Mother*, 224.

The one-legged god appears to be represented in the Egyptian hieroglyph *ab* , for the determinative seems to depict a figure turning round while standing on one leg. At least this is the motion suggested by the word's sense "to go round." That *ab* ( ) also means "heart" suggests that the one-legged god is the stationary but ever-turning *heart of heaven*—the Egyptian counterpart of the one-legged Mayan god Huracan, the "Heart of Heaven."

We can test this interpretation against Hindu symbolism. Hindu legends say that the old god Manu, the "king of men" (the first man and the first king), "did arduous penance for ten thousand years"—all the while "*poised on one leg*."[1115] The great father Shiva not only endured "heavy penances on Mount Himavant," but "stood on one foot for a thousand years."[1116] In the *Upanishads* one reads that the "Brahman is only one-footed."[1117]

The great god's one foot reinforces the principle of "rest", "Meditation," or "penance." A case in point is the archaic figure of Aja Ekapad, called the "one-footed" support of the Cosmos.[1118] Agrawala tells us that "ekapad or one-footed denotes the absence of motion." The one-footed god "was devoid of any motion and represented the principle of Absolute Static Rest."[1119]

On the meaning of the great god's single leg, Coomaraswamy and Nivedita write: "The earliest of male anthropomorphic gods is said to have been Pole-star, and there is a touch of humour in the way he is portrayed up and down the pages of ancient mythology. The Pole-star, it seems, from his solitary position at the apex of the stellar system gave rise to the notion of a god who was one-footed . . . Thus the *Rig-Veda* contains numerous references to Aja-Ekapad—a name that may be translated either the One-footed Goat or the Birthless One-footed One."[1120]

The Hindus knew the celestial pole as *Dhruva-lok* or "place of Dhruva," (the "firm" god).[1121] In the *Bhagavata-purana*, one reads that Dhruva, god of the pole, in profound meditation, "maintained himself upright on one foot, motionless as a *stake*."[1122] (In truth, the one leg of the motionless Dhruva *was* a "stake"—the central pillar or mountain of the world.)

[1115] Suryakanta, *The Flood Legend in Sanskit Literature*, 4. [Emphasis added.]

[1116] Keith, *Indian Mythology*, 113.

[1117] Nikhilanda, *op. cit.*, 221*ff.*

[1118] Schwabe, *Archetype und Tierkreis*, 34.

[1119] Agrawala, *op. cit.*, 41, 70. Yet strangely, while observing the connection of the one foot and motionlessness, Agrawala never mentions the celestial pole—and even more strangely, he identifies Aja Ekapad as the solar orb (page 42).

[1120] Coomaraswamy and Nivedita, *op. cit.*, 388-89.

[1121] *Ibid.*, 378.

[1122] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 501. [Emphasis added.] The identity of the single leg as the world pillar finds additional confirmation in the symbolism of sacred structures, mythical and historical. In the Japanese *Kojiki* the mythical emperor Jimmu encounters a palace which appears to rest on a central post. Chamberlain renders the description as "a palace which could be entered with one stride." But the most literal translation, according to Chamberlain, would be "a one-foot-rising palace." As is so often the case the literal rendering is superior to that chosen by the translators. That the palace rises on a single foot or leg is confirmed by the Nihongi reference to the same palace: here, instead of *ashi*, "foot," we have *hashira*, "pillar." The native commentators seem to agree that the single pillar supported the whole weight of the palace, observes O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 224.

That the polar god rules the world while standing on one leg throws light on the Siamese ritual in which the king, in imitation of the Universal Monarch, and in order to prove his fitness for holding supreme authority, stood on one leg.[1123] One thinks of the Greek purification rites which required initiates to stand on one foot only.[1124] The practice of praying on one leg occurs also in old Jewish rites in Jerusalem and among Muslim dervishes and Hindu hermits.[1125] It would be useless to seek a "natural" explanation for the practice, for the prototype does not lie in what we call the natural world today. Emulated is the feat of the Universal Monarch or first ancestor, conceived as the Ideal Man. "He who has one foot has out-stripped them that have two," states the *Rig Veda.*[1126] The statement derives meaning from the supremacy of the one-legged polar god, who, while standing fixed at the cosmic centre yet moved the turning heavens. The great god's single "leg" means the world mountain.[1127]

The Serpent/Dragon

The serpent fills more than one role in the myths of beginnings. While the circular serpent denotes the Saturnian enclosure, there is also a masculine serpent who serves as the foundation or pillar.

A comparison of global traditions indicates that while many legends locate the celestial "earth" on the cosmic mountain, this enclosure may also appear as the crown of an erect serpent. In the beginning, according to a creation myth of southeastern Borneo, there was only the sky and the sea, "in which swam a great serpent upon whose head was a crown of gold set with a shining stone. From the sky-world the deity threw earth upon the serpent's head, thus building an island in the midst of the sea; and this island became the world."[1128]

The Battak of Sumatra say that in the "primeval ocean swam or lay a great serpent on whose head the heavenly maiden spread a handful of earth . . . and thus she formed the world."[1129]

In Hindu myth the gigantic serpent Shesha sustains the "world" on his head,[1130] as do the Hebrew Leviathan and the Muslim cosmic serpents. Among the Buriats of Siberia, the tradition prevails that the mighty Ulgen created a giant fish amid the cosmic waters to support the "world."[1131]

[1123] Frazer, *The Golden Bough*, Vol. I, 230.

[1124] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 422.

[1125] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 230. This leads us to the suggestion that the fabulous polar mountain of Meru must in some sense have been the leg or thigh of the great god. There is a well-known classical tradition that Zeus gave birth to Dionysus from his "thigh" (which reminds us of the Egyptian god-king issuing from the cosmic "leg"). The Greek "thigh" is *meros*, and the Greek Mount Meros was equivalent to the Hindu Meru, the starting point of creation and mythical birthplace of gods and man. Birth from the leg or thigh is equivalent to cosmic birth atop the mountain of the world. (We must remember that the feminine "thigh" or womb composed the summit of the mount or leg and thus an inseparable part of the androgynous Heaven Man.)

[1126] Coomaraswamy and Nivedita, *op. cit.*, 388.

[1127] Perceiving the influence of astral symbolism, O'Neill recognized the leg-pillar as the polar axis. "In Mailduins Voyage he came to an island called Aenchoss, that is One-foot, so called because it was supported by a single pillar in the middle . . . ," reports O'Neill. A curious form of the palace on one foot occurs in a Russian tale, relating how four heroes who are wandering about the world come to a dense forest in which an izba or hut twirls round on a fowl's leg. "The youngest, prince Ivan (our Jack) makes it revolve with the magic word Izbushka. This supplies the idea of cosmic rotation which is absent in the Japanese myth." O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 225. The mythical dwelling raised on a single leg echoes a cosmic tradition. No one has even seen, on our earth, an island supported by a pillar or leg—or a house revolving on a leg. The leg was the central pillar seeming to sustain the primeval sun's cosmic dwelling.

[1128] Dixon, *Oceanic Mythology*, 159-60.

[1129] *Ibid.*, 161.

[1130] Coomaraswamy, "The Symbolism of the Dome," 19.

[1131] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 310.

Is there an underlying consistency between these myths and other myths which depict the celestial earth as the summit of the world mountain? What is the connection of the serpent/dragon and the axis-pillar?

Of course, it is easy to imagine that a stream of ice or debris stretching between the Earth and Saturn would, before the latter orb attained stability at the polar centre, take on a twisting, serpentine appearance. And, in fact, the cosmic mountain in many creation epics is presented as a churning, serpentine column rising along the world axis and finally achieving stability. (I intend to explore this churning mountain in a subsequent volume).

Here is a fact which linguists and comparative mythologists overlook: in several lands the word for "mountain" is the same as the word for "serpent" or "dragon," though our natural world offers no basis for the equivalence. In Mexico, Nahuatl can mean "serpent" but also "mountain,"[1132] so that one might term the polar Mount Colhuacan a cosmic "serpent-mountain." "Serpent-Mountain" is indeed the title of the Mexican primeval hill Coatepelt.[1133]

The Egyptian Set is the primordial serpent or dragon, but *set* also means "mountain." The mythical Mountain of Set, in fact, is the acknowledged Egyptian counterpart of the Hebrew Zaphon in "the farthest reaches of the north."[1134] And like the Mexicans, the Egyptians knew the "Serpent Mountain," a figure of the pole, according to Massey.[1135]

The ancient Sumerian dragon in the cosmic sea was the *Kur*, playing a prominent role in the creation myth, but *kur* also possessed the meaning "mountain"; indeed, "the sign used for it is actually a pictograph representing a mountain."[1136] The Greek *Boreas* is the primeval serpent raised from the waters of Chaos, but etymologists connect the serpent-god's name with a primitive *bora*, "mountain."

"Among primitive peoples," writes Suhr, "there are signs of the column in the form of a python or dragon riding from the level of the earth to the clouds."[1137] Suhr notes several Chinese paintings "in which a dragon is represented as rising from the water of the earth."[1138] "A dragon ascending from the earth to the clouds can serve as the whirling column—which no doubt accounts for so many dragons on pillars."[1139] In northern Australia ceremonies of the Murngin commemorate with a central pole the great python who "rises up from a pool" and "towers up to the level of the clouds . . ." The python was the central pillar of heaven.[1140]

Only the identity of the world pillar and erect serpent/dragon can explain the primitive habit of decorating commemorative pillars with scales. The shaft of early Jupiter columns "was often patterned with scales," notes Cook.[1141] In both Egypt and Mesopotamia images of sacred mountains reveal a scaled pattern.

Since the great god often unites with the Mount in such a way that it becomes his lower limbs, we need look no further for an explanation of the great father's universal serpentine character: the erect serpent/dragon formed the god's pillar-like trunk. Describing Ningirsu as "like heaven his tremendous size," a Sumerian text calls this creator god a "Flood-demon [*i.e.*, dragon] by his lower limbs."1142 "Your hinderparts are the Celestial Serpent," declares the Egyptian *Pyramid Texts*.1143 The idea is vividly expressed by the illustration of the African god Ammon reproduced by Cook: the head and shoulders of the god melt into a pillar-trunk formed by the body of a serpent.1144 (fig. 47) Babylonian cylinder seals show the high god wearing a robe or dress in the form of a mountain.1145 Typically, the mountain-dress is covered with scales, identifying it with the serpent/dragon.

[1132] Nuttall, *op. cit.*, 262-63.

[1133] Krickerberg, in *Pre-Columbian American Religions*, 47.

[1134] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 249.

[1135] *Ancient Egypt*, 304.

[1136] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 76.

[1137] *Before Olympos*, 81.

[1138] *Ibid.*, 87.

[1139] *Ibid.*, 85.

[1140] *Ibid.*, 84. Sacred pillars claimed to have been fashioned by the companions of Quetzalcoatl also received the form of serpents, as did sacred pillars in Ireland. O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 378.

[1141] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 89.

Serpentine lower limbs of divine figures are, of course, common to the art of many peoples. Indeed it would be useless to attempt a review of all the creator gods joined with the serpent/dragon, since no prominent figure of the great father appears to have escaped this identification, even if at times subdued. The unanswered question is, Why? The last thing suggested (to us) by slithering serpents is the idea of a creator! Yet the prototypical identity of the erect serpent/dragon and the cosmic mountain gives striking coherence to the symbolism and places the world-wide union of creator and serpent above grotesque and inexplicable coincidence.

Figure 47. Ammon, with serpentine trunk.

An equally bizarre feature of the mythic serpent is its phallic powers, as documented by Crawley, Hartland, Briffault, Eliade, and others. Here is Eliade's summary of the theme: "Even today it is said in the Abruzzi that the serpent copulates with all women. The Greeks and Romans also believed it. Alexander the Great's mother, Olympia, played with snakes. The famous Aratus of Sicyon was said to be a son of Aesculapius because, according to Pausanias, his mother conceived him of a serpent. Suetonius and Dio Cassius tell how the mother of Augustus conceived from the embrace of a serpent in Apollo's temple. A similar legend was current about the elder Scipio. In Germany, France, Portugal and elsewhere, women used to be afraid that a snake would slip into their mouths when they were asleep, and they would become pregnant, particularly during menstruation. In India, when women wanted to have children, they adored a cobra. All over the East it was believed that woman's first sexual contact was with a snake, at puberty or during menstruation. The Komati tribe in the Mysore province of India uses snakes made of stone in a rite to bring about the fertility of women. Claudius Aelianus declares that the Hebrews believed that snakes mated with unmarried girls; and we also find this belief in Japan. A Persian tradition says that after the first woman had been seduced by the serpent she immediately began to menstruate. And it was said by the rabbis that menstruation was the result of Eve's relations with the serpent in the Garden of Eden. In Abyssinia it was thought that girls were in danger of being raped by snakes until they were married. One Algerian story tells how a snake escaped when no one was

---

1142 D'Alviella, *The Migration of Symbols*, 29.

1143 *Pyramid Text* 2128.

1144 Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 359.

1145 Hans Henning Van Der Osten, *Ancient Oriental Seals in the Collection of Mr. Edward T. Newell*, 113.

looking and raped all the unmarried girls in a house. Similar traditions are to be found among the Mandi Hottentots of East Africa, in Sierra Leone and elsewhere.”[1146]

No extent of conventional rationalization could hope to explain this pervasive superstition. The supposed masculine power of serpents echoes an age-old tradition, whose original subject was the *cosmic* serpent, not the lowly serpents of our earth. The impregnating serpent was a creature of myth, his phallic power deriving from his identity with the engendering mountain of the world. The primeval serpent, often regarded as the male organ of the great father himself, rose along the world axis. That this archetypal memory produced reverberations in global folklore for thousands of years attests to the dramatic power of the original experience.

The Stream Of Life

The cosmic mountain also found expression as a stream of wind or water either descending from the polar abode or ascending the world axis from “*below.*” *As a stream of air it was the life-giving* “*breath*” *of the great father, often called the* “*North Wind.*” *As a river it was the central stream in which the ancients believed all the waters of the world to originate—or a well, fountain, or spring channeling the waters of the deep upward along the world axis to be dispersed in four streams flowing to the four corners of the celestial abode* .

Boreas And The Hyperboreans

The Pelasgian Boreas or Ophion is an archaic, serpentine god whom pre-Hellenic Greeks apparently revered as the father of creation. Graves reconstructs the fragments of the myth:

“In the beginning, Eurynome, the Goddess of All Things, rose naked from Chaos, but found nothing substantial for her feet to rest upon and therefore divided the sea from the sky, dancing lonely upon its waves. She danced towards the south, and the wind set in motion behind her something new and apart with which to begin a work of creation. Wheeling about, she caught hold of this north wind, rubbed it between her hands and behold! the great serpent Ophion. Eurynome danced to warm herself, wildly, until Ophion, grown lustful, coiled about those divine limbs and moved to couple with her. Now the North Wind, who is called Boreas, fertilizes; which is why mares often turn their hindquarters to the wind and breed foals without aid of a stallion. So Eurynome was likewise got with child.”[1147]

As to the origins of Boreas, Graves can only say that he “is the serpent demiurge of Hebrew and Egyptian myth,” from whom the Pelasgians claimed to have descended. But questions come immediately to mind. Why was Boreas, the *Pelor* or “prodigious serpent,” called the “North Wind”? Why was this wind, like the erect serpent, believed to bring about conception?

Boreas, the North Wind, figures in a long-standing debate concerning the Hyperboreans, the servants of *boreal* Apollo. Ancient chroniclers unanimously agree that the *Hyper*boreans lived *beyond* or *above* Boreas, taking this to mean “beyond the North Wind,” or in the farthest north. But certain modern etymologists contend that the classical interpretation rests on a confusion of terms: these critics connect Boreas and the Hyperboreans not with the “North Wind,” but with a primitive Greek word, *bora*, meaning “mountain.” Bora is the name of a mountain in Macedonia, the highest peak between the Haliakmon and Axios rivers. Under this modern interpretation Boreas is simply “the wind of the mountain.”

By such reasoning *boreal* Apollo becomes the god of a local peak, and Apollo’s servants (the Hyperboreans) become either divine assistants *above* this mount or human worshippers *beyond* the mount. The classical identification of Boreas and the Hyperboreans with the utmost north loses its long-standing validity.[1148]

[1146] *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 165-66.

[1147] *Op. cit.*, 27.

[1148] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 494; Guthrie, *The Greeks and Their Gods*, 78.

Yet to accept the primitive identity of Boreas with the *bora* or "mountain" does not require one to concede that Bora or Boreas originated in reference to a *Macedonian* peak. If we focus on prototypes rather than local geography we see that Boreas pertained to *both* the "mountain" *and* the "North Wind"—but the original reference was cosmic. The "North Wind" was the luminous "breath" of the polar god, stretching along the world axis; and this very stream received mythical interpretation as the world mountain (the true Bora in heaven).

The North Wind Shu

A widely overlooked fact is that the world's oldest ritual designates the celestial pillar as "the breath of life."

The Egyptians, as previously observed, personified the Mount of Glory as the heaven-sustaining giant Shu. Yet Egyptologists as a whole rarely think of the god in such concrete terms. Budge writes: "Shu was a god who was connected with the heat and dryness of sunlight and with the dry atmosphere which exists between the earth and the sky."[1149] It is hard to imagine any link between "the dry atmosphere" and the god whom the Egyptians regularly depicted as a cosmic pillar holding aloft the goddess Nut, the womb of heaven.

But Budge remarks, almost incidentally, that Shu "was a personification of the wind of the North." Or again: "He was certainly, like his father Tem, thought to be the cool wind of the North."[1150] Budge's language seems to describe a transitory breeze from Lower Egypt. If the god personified such an ephemeral force, why did he receive explicit representation as the pillar of the heavens? The answer is that the "North Wind" did not refer to a terrestrial breeze but to the *visible* "breath" of Atum, the "firm Heart of the Sky" at the celestial pole. More than once the *Book of the Dead* speaks of "the north wind which cometh forth from Tem [Atum]."[1151] "I have come to protect thee, Osiris, with the North Wind which cometh forth from Tem," states one hymn.[1152] Elsewhere the wind issues from Atum-Re in conjunction with the mother goddess: "Let me snuff the air which cometh forth from thy nostrils, and the north wind which cometh forth from thy mother [Nut]."[1153]

The texts leave no doubt that this "wind" or "breath," descending from Atum (or Re), was the light pillar Shu: ". . . He breatheth and the god Shu cometh into being," states one hymn.[1154] "Thou art established upon that which emanateth from thy existence," states another.[1155] "Thou hast emitted Shu and he hath come forth from thy mouth."[1156] One text describes the god as "a great column of air" holding aloft the womb of Nut.[1157] In the *Pyramid Texts* the "north wind" is described as "smoke" and said to "lift up" the god-king.[1158] Clearly, the Egyptians conceived the stream of breath as a *visible pillar.*

Rather than "air" I should call this life-bearing breath "ether." While many sources describe the wind descending from the mouth or nostrils of Atum or Re, others view it as rising from "below" to vivify the god and his company of celestial spirits. "O thou Re, who dwellest in thy divine shrine, draw thou into thyself the winds, inhale the North Wind."[1159] This wind is the "sweet air for thy nose."[1160] "The sweet wind of the North is for thy heart."[1161] The deceased king aspires to attain the cosmic domain of the great god: "I will take for myself my breath of life . . . I will snuff the wind for myself, I will have abundance of the north wind, I will be content among the gods."[1162]

[1149] *Gods*, Vol. II, 87.

[1150] *Ibid.*, 91.

[1151] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 625.

[1152] *Ibid.*, 503.

[1153] *Ibid.*, 65.

[1154] *Ibid.*, 391.

[1155] *Ibid.*, 373.

[1156] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 90.

[1157] Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire*.

[1158] *Pyramid Texts* 277, 1551.

Actually, the Egyptians left for us a very expressive image of this life-bearing ether in the hieroglyph , depicting luminous streams of *khu*, "glory," rising to the enclosed sun. And the relationship of Shu, the heavens pillar, to this stream is beyond dispute. For the hieroglyph appears as the *determinative* in the name of Shu . Shu, the pillar bearing aloft the womb of the mother goddess, was no terrestrial breeze, but rather the visible North Wind flowing in a brilliant stream between our earth and Saturn's Cosmos.

This very connection of the polar mount and the breath of life prevails also in Mesopotamia. One text states that the cosmic mountain on which the Sumerian Ningirsu (Saturn) resides is the *dwelling place of the North Wind*:

To the mountain where the North Wind dwells,
I [Ningirsu] *have set my foot.*
The man of immense strength, the North Wind,
From the mountain, the pure place,
Will blow the wind straight towards you.[1163]

The text calls this North Wind "the breath of life to the people."

The Sumerians personified the cosmic mountain as the giant Enlil ("the great mountain"), a striking counterpart to the Egyptian pillar-god Shu. Like Shu, Enlil is the "Wind of the Netherworld Mountain"—that is, he personifies at once the cosmic hill and the breath of the creator. "Between heaven and earth the Sumerians recognized a substance which they called *lil* [in En*lil*], a word whose approximate meaning is wind (air, breath, spirit)," states Kramer.[1164] Enlil thus represents the ethereal column joining heaven and earth.

And the Hindu Agni, the pillar of heaven, was the same stream of air, or "smoke": "He (Agni) as a pillar of smoke upholds the heavens."[1165] The *Rig Veda* says, "Agni, even as it were a builder, hath lifted up on high his splendour" (compare Shu holding aloft the circle of *khu*, "glory"). "His smoke, yea, holdeth up the sky . . . a standard as it were the pillar of sacrifice, firmly planted and duly chrismed."[1166]

[1159] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 401.

[1160] *Ibid.*, 625.

[1161] Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 115.

[1162] *Pyramid Text* 1158.

[1163] Kramer, *Sacred Marriage Rite*, 32.

[1164] *From the Tablets of Sumer*, 72.

[1165] Coomaraswamy, *A New Approach to the Vedas*, 96, note 92b.

[1166] Coomaraswamy, "Symbolism of the Dome," 35, citing *Rig Veda* IV, 6, 2-3.

The *Upanishads* thus declare: “The Breath-of-Life is a pillar.”[1167] Both the Hebrews and Muslims claimed that the created earth rested on “the wind,”[1168] that is, the primeval *wind* and the primeval *foundation* were one and the same thing.

We return, then, to the Greek Boreas. In exploring the question of Boreas and the Hyperboreans, can one ignore the archaic identity of the cosmic mountain and North Wind? Once we acknowledge this identity, the question as to whether Boreas received his name from the North Wind or from the *bora* (“mountain”) becomes meaningless: the North Wind *was* the mountain. And Boreas’ serpentine form corresponds to the original form of the Mount in both Mesopotamia and Egypt. Moreover, the myth of Boreas impregnating the mother goddess—which gave rise to the later belief that the wind brings about conception[1169]—agrees with the universal character of the cosmic pillar: it is the engendering mountain of heaven.

The River Of Life

Ancient ritual also celebrates a stream of *water* either descending from on high or welling up from the deep as a central fount, spring, or well bringing life to the celestial abode.

In Egypt the heaven-sustaining giant Shu—the ethereal pillar of the North Wind—also represents the descending or ascending river. Shu is the “waterway,” while the polar god “is established upon the watery supports of the god Shu.” Egyptian creation tales describe the pillar-god as the emission of the polar Atum or Re. Shu is “poured” or “spit” from the mouth of the ruling divinity. “What flowed from thee became Shu,”[1170] states a hymn to Amen-Re.[1171] “You are the eldest son of Atum, his first-born; Atum has spat you from his mouth in your name of Shu.”[1172]

“Thou hast emitted Shu, and he hath come forth from thy mouth . . . He hath become a god, and he hath brought for thee every good thing; he hath toiled for thee, and he hath emitted for thee in his name of Shu, the royal double. He hath laboured for thee in these things, and he beareth up for thee heaven with his hands in his name of Shu, the body of the sky.”[1173]

The “toiling” Atlas-like pillar bearing the heavens was the watery “emission” of the creator. In the phrase “Thou hast emitted Shu,” the Egyptian word translated as “emitted” is *ashesh*, which means both “pouring out” and “supporting,” as noted by Budge: “It is difficult to reconcile these totally different meanings unless we remember that it is that which Tem, or Re-Tem has poured out which supports the heavens wherein shines the Sun-god. That which Tem, or Re-Tem has poured out is the light, and the light was declared to be the prop of the sky.”[1174] Yet, while recognizing this connection of the heavens pillar with the “waters” and “light” poured out by the creator, Budge has no concrete image with which to link the integrated concepts.

The cosmic river, “poured out” from the receptacle of the mother womb, was not only the world mountain but also the single leg of the great god. Thus, in the Egyptian glyph we see the vase resting on the leg of heaven, as we should expect. And the *Book of the Dead* appropriately juxtaposes the leg with the river of light:

[1167] *Ibid.*, 53.

[1168] Wensinck, *The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites*, 18.

[1169] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 759, note 6.

[1170] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 327.

[1171] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 88.

[1172] *Pyramid Text* 1871.

[1173] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. II, 90.

[1174] *Ibid.*, 90.

"O thou leg in the Northern Sky, and in that most conspicuous but inaccessible Stream."[1175] If one refers the imagery to the cosmic original , one sees that the descending stream *was* the leg!

The Egyptian river of the pillar, the celestial Nile, compares with the heavenly Euphrates invoked in Mesopotamian ritual. For the Babylonians knew "the pure Euphrates" as the "great mountain" Enlil:

> *With water which the lord* [Ea] *has guided from the great mountain* [Enlil],
> *Water which down the pure Euphrates he has guided,*
> *The product of the apsu, for the purpose of lustration.*[1176]

Enlil, the world mountain personified, is thus "the man of the river of the netherworld, the man devouring river,"[1177] and, as noted by Van Buren, "the expression 'to set for the mountain' signified to depart this life by crossing the river of death."[1178]

While some traditions describe a *descending* pillar-stream, others depict it as an *upward*-flowing current. And often it is both. In a Sumerian myth, Enlil says to his wife:

> *"The 'water' of my king, let it go toward heaven, let it go toward earth . . ."*[1179]

The Hindu *Rig Veda* has the waters passing "upwards and downwards"—like the stream of ether which Aristotle describes as a constantly moving "river" joining heaven and earth and composed of "ascending and descending vapours."[1180] An ancient Chinese philosopher, Yang Hiung, states that "the ether emanates and rises, and its splendorous essence floats above, and rolls in a sinuous current which has been named the heaven-River or torrent, and the vaporous stream or pure River."[1181] Having noted that the Egyptians recorded the ethereal stream by the hieroglyph , symbol of the pillar-god Shu, we thus find most relevant the ancient Chinese hieroglyph for "ether" . This concrete image sharply contrasts with the popular definition of the mythical ether as an *imaginary substance filling the entire heavens.* The ether was the fiery, pillar-like river flowing along the world axis.

[1175] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 165.

[1176] Albright, "The Mouth of the Rivers," 178.

[1177] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 46.

[1178] *Symbols*, 8. Though many writers on comparative mythology note the common belief in a celestial river—the mythical source of all terrestrial waters—no one seems to have perceived the root identity of this famous stream with the Primeval Hill. Darmesteter, however, comes close when he writes (of the Iranian celestial river): "Waters and light are believed to flow from the same spring and in the same bed: 'As light rises up from Hera Berezaiti [the polar mountain] so waters spring up from it and come back to it.'" Darmesteter, *op. cit.*, Part I, 225.

Similarly, Clifford reports that Ugaritic texts and seals depict the Canaanite cosmic mountain as "the paradisiacal source of water that gives fertility." The Mount, he states, "joins the upper and lower worlds; in it is contained a super abundance of life, of water; it is the throne of the deity." *Op. cit.*, 97.

Thus can the Japanese Kojiki announce: "That down river which is like a mountain of green leaves, looks like a mountain but it is not a mountain" (Philippi, *op. cit.*, 222), and the northwestern American Indians can speak of the river leading to the end (summit) of the world as a vast "pole" ascended by the souls of the dead. Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 248-49.

[1179] Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, 45.

[1180] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 866.

[1181] Schlegel, *L'Uranographie Chinoise*, 208.

The Eden-Fountain

That all the world's waters originate in a central source is a belief found among all ancient peoples. The explanation lies not in geography but in *cosmography*—the map of the *celestial earth.* Viewed as an upward-flowing current the heavenly river becomes the fountain, spring, or well whose waters are dispersed in four streams flowing to the four corners of the circular plain on the mountaintop .

From the perspective of the cosmic dwelling, the fount rises from below, or "the deep." This very idea occurs in the imagery of Eden. In the Genesis account two statements concern the waters of the primitive paradise:

> *But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground*. (Gen. 2:6)
>
> *And a river went out from Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads*. (Gen. 2:10)

According to the general consensus of authorities, the second reference amplifies the first, indicating that a central source "watered the whole face of the ground" through four headstreams.[1182]

The word conventionally translated as "mist," observes Gaster, "is really a technical term (borrowed ultimately from Sumerian) meaning an upsurge of subterranean waters."[1183] We can reasonably connect this channel of water from below with the "fountain of life" which a Psalm locates in the dwelling of God: "And thou shalt make them drink of the river of thy pleasures. For with thee is the fountain of life: in thy light shall we see light."[1184] Gaster calls this the "paradisiacal fountain."[1185]

But whether the life-bearing waters appear as "upsurge," "river," or "fountain," one receives the impression of a central source rising from below and flowing outward in four streams. Gaster finds a prototype of the upsurge in an Old Babylonian creation myth according to which, at first, "all land was sea, and in the midst of that sea was a spring which served as a pipe."[1186] The same passage is noted by Butterworth, who suggests that the pipe or "well" rose along the cosmic axis.[1187] When one relates this evidence to the concrete Mesopotamian imagery of four rivers radiating from the central sun the connection with the cosmic image becomes clear.

That the Babylonian and Hebrew channels of water are dispersed in four streams suggests a Germanic parallel—the spring Hvergelmer, the "navel of the waters," from whence all rivers flow.[1188] The *Edda* declares that four streams issue from this central fount watering Asaheim, the home of the gods, while Hindu texts describe a fourfold headspring of all waters at "the Centre of Heaven."[1189] The Iranian Realm of the

---

[1182] Clifford, *op. cit.*, 78.

[1183] *Op. cit.*, 6-7.

[1184] Psalm 36: 7-8.

[1185] Gaster, *op. cit.*, 27.

[1186] *Ibid.*, 7.

[1187] *Op. cit.*, 68.

[1188] De Santillana and von Dechend, *op. cit.*, 208-9; MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 333.

[1189] Gaster, *op. cit.*; *Rig Veda* ix 74, 6; ix, 113, 8.

Blest is watered by four streams issuing from the *central fountain* Ardvi Sura, while the *central fount* of the Chinese Kwen-lun disperses its waters in four streams, watering the garden at the summit.[1190]

It does not take a great deal of imagination to see that the paradisal fountain, sending forth the elements of life in the primordial birthplace—or place of rebirth—is the legendary "fountain of youth" or "fountain of immortality."

Probably the earliest prototype of these fountains is the Egyptian pillar-god Shu, bearing the waters and breath of life along the world axis. To breathe the North Wind of Shu or drink of the polar waters is to enjoy rebirth in the domain of beginnings, the land of immortality and perpetual youth. This breath or water (as the four Winds or Four Niles of heaven) courses out from the central fount and through the womb of Nut, the Holy Land which every king sought to attain upon death.[1191]

The King Of The Mountain

The few mythologists who discuss the cosmic mount at all tell us that it is a metaphor for the world axis: the axis of the turning heavens is *like* a mountain reaching from earth to the celestial pole (or pole star); by imagining a great pillar as the support and axle of the universe (say these mythologists), the ancients possessed a simple explanation for the observed motions of the heavenly bodies.

To evaluate this interpretation of the mythical mountain one must ask how well it accounts for all aspects of the tradition. In the myths the Mount appears as a column of light, often constituting the Universal Monarch's lower limbs or single "leg." United to the pillar, the god-king becomes the heaven-sustaining giant.

The myths also express the Mount as a cosmic serpent, whose body forms the serpentine trunk of the great father. In many traditions the pillar appears as the vertical stream of life—the ether, wind, breath, or waters either coursing down the world axis or rising along the axis to be dispersed in four streams animating the celestial kingdom. Saturn, the central sun, enthroned within the polar enclosure, ruled from the mountaintop.

Perhaps we can best judge the metaphorical explanation of the cosmic hill by placing ourselves in the position of an ancient observer and assuming that he looked out upon the same heavens which we see today. Our observer, noticing that the stars of the circumpolar region slowly swing around a central point, realizes that a line from that polar pivot through the earth serves as an invisible axle around which the sun, the moon, and all the stars revolve.

[1190] The Biblical Fountain of Life, states Gaster, "has abundant parallels in folklore. In the Koran, for example, we read of the wondrous paradisiacal fountains, Salsabil and Kauthar ('Abundance'); while the North American Indians knew . . . of a Fountain of Youth and Vigor on the paradisal island of Bimini (or Boiuca). A hula chant from Hawaii likewise makes mention of such a fountain; while in Celtic belief it was held that in the midst of the island of Avalon flowed a rill from which sprang a fountain the waters of which gave life to the spirits of the departed. An old French poem speaks in a similar vein of a fountain of perpetual youth in the land of Cocagne; all who bathe in it are at once rejuvenated. In Pseudo-Callisthenes' version of the Alexander legend, the hero goes in search of the Fountain of Immortality; and it need scarcely be added that the Fountain of Youth, Beauty, or Immortality is a very common feature of European folktales." *Op. cit.*, 27, 28.

[1191] The central spring or fount comes alive each night, appearing as a river of fire. This was the nature of Ammon's legendary "Fountain of the Sun" and of the spring of Zeus at Dodona. At midday, Pliny reports, the spring of Zeus fails altogether, "but it soon increases till it is full at midnight, from which time onwards it again gradually fails." Ammon's pool (the "Fountain of the Sun"), "cold by day, is hot by night."

The tradition is noted by Cook, who cites the reports of Herodotus, Lucretius, Ovid, Diodorus, and others to the effect that the Fountain of the Sun grows colder each morning until midday, but that as the day declines the fount grows warmer "becoming tepid at sundown and fairly bubbling with heat at midnight." It may seem strange that such a spring, increasing with the setting of the solar orb, was the "Fountain of the Sun." Among the chroniclers of the fount the current explanation was that by night the sun went below the earth and there boiled the water. Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 868.

In truth, the cosmic fountain rose to the central sun at the pole, becoming a fiery stream each night ("day," in the earliest ritual). Pliny says that the spring of Zeus at Dodona kindles torches—obviously no characteristic of a terrestrial spring. The mythical imagery pertains to the archetypal fountain of the sun, the fiery, ethereal stream of Shu, to which the Egyptians gave pictorial expression in the hieroglyph: (here).

Starting from this perception, what conjectures must our observer add in order to evolve the mythical view outlined in the previous pages? First, he must decide, in contradiction of his observations, that the axis is not an *invisible* column but a veritable pillar of fire and light. He must conclude also that a stationary sun rests (or once rested) atop the shining pillar—again in contrast to actual observation. He must identify this central sun not with the blazing solar orb but rather with the planet Saturn—though this remote and unimpressive planet today never approaches the polar region. Further, it must occur to our observer that Saturn, as king of the mountain, resides (or once resided) within a great band, divided by four primary streams. And finally, in a series of baseless speculations, he must conclude that in primeval times Saturn ruled at the summit as the *creator*, the *first king*, and the *first man*, presiding over a paradise of unlimited abundance.

Can one realistically propose that such a progression of thought could follow from a mere metaphor for the world axis? To arrive at the complete mythical image of the cosmic mountain (,) our hypothetical observer must not only heap one conjecture upon another, but *repudiate direct observation at each stage.* Of what value—religious, psychological, or otherwise—is a fiction which flatly contradicts the phenomena it is intended to explain?

Cynics may say that primitives are capable of conjuring any force imaginable to explain something they do not understand. But the hypothetical case before us does not require the primitive simply to invent explanations for things observed; it requires him to *deny immediate experience* and yet to compose a grandiose vision sufficiently persuasive to acquire hypnotic power over the ancient world. Of course the mass of available evidence argues against any such inventiveness on the part of early man.

Yet these difficulties vanish once we free ourselves from the doctrine of cosmic uniformity and consider whether our primitive observer may have actually witnessed the strange forces which ancient records describe in such detail. The polar mountain is only one ingredient in an integrated cosmology which seems to have prevailed over the entire ancient world. May not the mythical Mount, the central sun, the polar enclosure and crossroads—focusing on the celestial image —speak for powers which were “really there”?

IX: The Crescent

Our investigation up to this point covers five primary images of the Saturnian configuration: the enclosed sun , the sun-cross , the enclosed sun-cross , the enclosed sun and pillar , and the enclosed sun-cross and pillar . I have contended that these symbols realistically depict Saturn's actual appearance to the terrestrial observers.

Of course, one faces a special difficulty in attempting to prove that the sacred signs denoted a visible apparition. One can show that a coherent, global symbolism developed around the cosmic image ; but how can one really prove that this configuration was more than the invention of an ancient cult—perhaps the extraordinary product of an advanced race whose abstract unification of discordant cosmic powers gained world-wide distribution?

There is a specific category of evidence, I believe, which removes any possible appeal to abstractions. I refer to the symbolism of the crescent . In the detailed sources left us by the oldest civilizations the symbolic crescent—which all men automatically identify with our moon—plays a vastly greater role than generally perceived. But in none of the primary sources can one actually identify the crescent with the body we call "moon" today!

If there was any single turning point in my inquiry it was the realization that the crescent *with which ancient ritual deals is inseparable from the band of the enclosed sun* . The key is the image (or the simplified) showing the crescent as the *lower half of the band.*

It was this connection—occurring in both Egypt and Mesopotamia—that convinced me of the band's reality and led me to explore more deeply its various mythical formulations.

The crescent in the sign suggests that Saturn's band received illumination from the solar orb in such a way as to present terrestrial observers with two semicircles of light and shadow.

The concept of a half-illuminated band immediately places in a new perspective the universal image : is it possible that the famous sun-in-crescent represented not a contrived "conjunction" of the solar orb and new moon (the conventional explanation), but rather the primeval sun Saturn resting over the illuminated portion of his polar enclosure? Certainly the overlapping images and imply that the enclosed sun and sun-in-crescent pertain to a single astral configuration.

When O'Neill claimed that the sign symbolized the celestial pole, he took the sign as a kind of metaphor—an ancient means of representing the revolution of the circumpolar stars around a fixed centre. Others have identified the band as the illusory atmospheric halo which occasionally surrounds the solar orb, while still others explain the band as an abstract "circle of the sky." But the connection of the band with a *crescent* would suggest a more tangible character.

As a test of this possibility several questions require examination:

—Is Saturn, the primeval sun, associated with a crescent?

—Is there a consistent *connection* of the crescent and the band of the enclosed sun ◯?

—Is the crescent equated with the circle of the mother goddess?

—Does the Holy Land or celestial earth rest within the embrace of the crescent?

—Does a crescent occupy the summit of the cosmic mountain?

The Crescent And Saturn

It is well known that in classical mythology Saturn (or Kronos) wields a curved *harpe* or sickle by which he establishes his primeval rule, and most authorities would concur with Kerenyi in identifying the sickle as the "image of the new moon"[1192] But why should Saturn possess the "new moon" as his weapon?

The connection appears to be very old, for it occurs also in ancient Babylonia. Ninurta, the planet Saturn, holds in his hands a weapon called SAR-UR-U-SAR-GAZ, and also BAB-BA-NU-IL-LA. The first name of Ninurta's weapon means "who governs the Cosmos and who massacres the Cosmos," while the second name means "hurricane which spares nothing."

The astonishing fact is this: these names of Saturn's weapon are the very epithets of the Babylonian Sin, the crescent "Moon."[1193] That is, the crescent of Sin is the "weapon" (sickle, sword) with which Saturn founded and destroyed the primeval order.

But there is another peculiarity also: though always identified by scholars as the lunar sphere, Sin is never presented as a "half-moon," "three quarters moon" or "full moon." He is simply *Udsar* "the crescent." And however incongruous the relationship might appear today, Babylonian art continually presents Sin as the *lower half of the enclosed sun-cross* ⊕.

Figure 48. Various Mesopotamian versions of the sun-in-crescent.

Did this relationship of the Sin-crescent to Saturn and his enclosure originate in a haphazard combination of once independent symbols—or in a fundamental equation? The connection between Sin and Anu (the planet Saturn) amounts to an "identity," according to Jensen.[1194] Rawlinson says the same thing: the Babylonians regarded Sin—the crescent—as an aspect of the planet Saturn.[1195] Jeremias states the equation unequivocally: Sin=Saturn.[1196]

[1192] Kerenyi, *Prometheus*, 51.

[1193] Combe, *Histoire du Culte de Sin*, 11-12.

[1194] *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, 191.

[1195] Rawlinson, *Herodotus*, Essay X.

[1196] *Handbuch der Altorientalischen Geisteskultur*, 96.

When one considers the relationship of the Sin-crescent to the sign , the nature of the identity becomes clear. The Sin-crescent is part of the circular dwelling or "body" of Saturn. Thus the texts invoke Sin as the *protective rampart of the Cosmos*—a "high defensive wall,"[1197] or a:

Golden sanctuary, which in the land is magnificent!

Luminous sanctuary which in the land is elevated![1198]

As Saturn's emanation, Sin is synonymous with the great god's circle of "glory" (halo); and this fact gives stunning significance to what must otherwise be regarded as a purely esoteric statement of Assyro-Babylonian astronomical texts: "Saturn stands in the halo of Sin," the texts proclaim (not once but several times).[1199] Crescent and enclosure are one.

Do not these evidences strongly suggest that the ancients perceived a literal band around Saturn and that this Saturnian dwelling or "halo" displayed a crescent?

Another piece of evidence is noteworthy. The Babylonians represented the circle of Saturn's Cosmos (the circle of the gods) by the sign . If my contention is correct, the crescent of Sin was simply the brightly illuminated half of this circle (assembly). So it is of no small significance that Babylonian symbolism also represented the assembly by the sign . Needless to say, the heavens familiar to us today offer no conceivable source of the image.

Figure 49. Sun-in-crescent, on the Ur-Nammu stele from Ur.

Figure 50. Hawaiian cross design showing alternate positions of the crescent around the central sun.

[1197] Combe, *op. cit.*, 146.

[1198] *Ibid.*, 114.

[1199] Jastrow, "Sun and Saturn," 143.

Figure 51. American Indian mounds, conveying the image of the revolving crescent.

Such identities point emphatically to an underlying relation of the ancient signs and . While the former depicts the entire Saturnian enclosure, the latter portrays only the brightly illuminated portion of the band—so that one might appropriately speak of Saturn's "crescent-enclosure" and schematically render the idea this way : .

It should be stressed, however, that the common location of the crescent *beneath* the central sun is not its only placement in ancient symbolism. At times the crescent appears to stand on end (or), while at other times it is inverted above the sun . Of course, this is exactly what we should expect—for if the crescent was the illuminated portion of a circumpolar band then that crescent must have appeared to revolve around the band with every full rotation of our planet upon its axis. One could thus render the daily rotation of the crescent schematically: .

As we shall see, there is a distinctive relationship of this revolving crescent to the phases of the archaic "day" and "night"—as well as to many other aspects of ancient cosmography. But let us take the present line of inquiry a little further. Does the equation of the crescent and enclosure occur also in Egypt? The Egyptians (as previously observed) called the enclosure Aten, recorded by the hieroglyph . (In the course of time this symbol evolved into the simplified form , with the enclosed sun dropped out. It is the latter form that generally prevails in later Egyptian art.)

In numerous representations of the Aten *a crescent forms the lower half of the enclosure.* In fig. 52, I offer an imposing example from the tomb of Ramesses VI, showing the Aten resting within a crescent and flanked by four male figures, two right and two left.

Figure 52. The Egyptian crescent-enclosure.

The hieroglyphic form of the crescent-enclosure is , a form which progressively developed into the images , as the artists gradually expanded and flattened the crescent into a larger receptacle supporting the enclosure.

This image of the Aten and crescent seems to have generated great confusion among Egyptologists. One of the gods associated with the crescent-enclosure is Khensu, whom all authorities identify as the moon. But the god’s image remains enigmatic, for Budge writes: “He wears on his head the *lunar disk* in a crescent, or the *solar disk* with a uraeus, or the solar disk with the plumes and uraeus.”1200 Did the Egyptians have difficulty deciding whether the god was the sun or the moon?

Figure 53. Three illustrations of the Egyptian god Khensu, showing the progressive enlargement of the Aten’s crescent by Egyptian artists.

When Budge calls the sign a “*lunar* disk in a crescent,” he avoids any association of the sign with the sun. But on the following page he writes of Khensu: “On his head rest the lunar crescent and disk. In this form he represents *both the sun at sunrise and the new moon.*”1201 Either the Egyptians possessed a remarkable indifference concerning the astral character of their gods, or scholars have misunderstood the symbolism.

By putting aside all *a priori* verdicts one discerns a root consistency in the Egyptian image of the crescent-enclosure. In Egyptian ritual, the crescent is not the moon but a semi-circle “embracing” the central sun . Very early the Egyptians personified the crescent-enclosure as the divinity Ah, Aah, or Aahu, denoted by the glyph or , and always translated “moon.” The word *ah*, however, also means “to embrace”—a concept devoid of meaning in connection with our moon, but charged with meaning when referred to the band (or the illuminated portion of the band) enclosing the central sun. *Ah* further signifies “to defend against” and “collar.” That is, like the Babylonian “moon”-god Sin, the Egyptian *ah* signifies the defensive rampart protecting the sun-god: and the same crescent-enclosure is worn by the great god as his “collar.” Again, such interrelationships can only appear absurd when considered as aspects of our moon.

Figure 54. Ah, god of the crescent-enclosure.

The only “*moon*” *invoked in early Egyptian ritual is that which houses the central sun.* Chapter LXV of the *Book of the Dead*, bearing the title “The Chapter of *Coming Forth by Day* and of Gaining the Mastery over

---

1200 *The Gods of the Egyptians*, Vol. II, 36. [Emphasis added.]

1201 *Ibid.*, 37. [Emphasis added.]

Enemies," begins, "Hail (thou) who shinest from the Moon [Ah] and who sendest forth light therefrom."[1202] "In several chapters the sun is spoken of as shining in or from the moon," notes Renouf.[1203]

One version of the *Coffin Texts* reads: "Going forth into the day and living after death. O you Sole One who rises [comes forth] in the moon, O you Sole One who shines in the moon."[1204] The "moon" is the dwelling of the solitary god, and the nature of this dwelling is accurately communicated to us in the ancient signs and .

Recalling that the Babylonians related the crescent of Sin to the circle of the gods , one wonders whether a similar relationship occurs in Egypt. The Egyptian assembly is the paut—a term which refers at once to the company of gods, the limbs of Osiris or Re, and the grain or bread of heaven. Though the Aten sign may serve as the determinative of paut, the most common hieroglyph for paut is , the inverted crescent-enclosure!

One thus finds a striking correspondence between the Egyptian and Mesopotamian symbolism of the crescent—a symbolism which takes on coherence only when one sees the crescent as the illuminated half of the polar enclosure . By no extent of rationalization can one accommodate the imagery to the sun and moon familiar to us today. Indeed the difficulty is recognized by Butterworth in his examination of the sun-in-crescent . The crescent "is not the natural luminary of heaven," writes Butterworth, "for it has its hollow side turned towards the 'sun.'"[1205] The point is worth emphasizing. The crescent of *our* moon always *faces* the solar orb, but in the early symbolism of the sun and crescent such a relationship rarely if ever occurs. No matter what the position of the crescent around the sun (, , , or), the sun stands within the "embrace" of the crescent, giving rise to what Briffault deems an "astronomically incongruous" image.[1206] But the image appears discordant only if we judge it against the present heavens. The primeval sun, states Butterworth, is "contained in the hollow of the recumbent crescent moon. *This is the sun that is always in the zenith*"[1207] (*i.e.*, it is not the body we call "sun" today).

Figure 55. Hindu syllable OM, the creative word.

[1202] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 228.

[1203] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 263-64.

[1204] Faulkner, *The Coffin Texts*, 131.

[1205] *The Tree at the Navel of the Earth*, 109.

[1206] *The Mothers*, Vol. III, 82.

[1207] *Op. cit.*, 127. [Emphasis added.]

Figure 56. Phoenician sun-in-crescent.

The Crescent And Womb

If the crescent revered in antiquity denoted the illuminated half of Saturn's enclosure, then it must be synonymous with the cosmic womb—the mother goddess.

That numerous goddesses, in later times, came to be associated with *our* moon is a fact so thoroughly documented that we need not belabor the evidence here. Yet the reasons for this association are by no means clear. "From the beginning," states G. E. Smith, reviewing the early counterparts of the Egyptian Hathor, "all goddesses—and especially this most primitive stratum of fertility deities—were for obvious reasons intimately associated with the moon."[1208]

And what are the "obvious" reasons for the connection of the goddess with the moon? It is, Smith claims, "the cyclical periodicity of the moon which suggested the analogy with the similar physiological periodicity of women . . ." Also, "The influence of the moon upon dew and the tides, perhaps, suggested its controlling power over water and emphasized the life-giving function which its association with women had already suggested."[1209] These reasons are neither obvious nor adequate.

What requires explanation is the crescent-goddesses' elementary character as a *receptacle housing the central sun.* That the Egyptian goddess Hathor was represented by a crescent or "lunette" does not alter the fact that her very name means "the dwelling of Horus." Similarly, Isis, also represented by a crescent, was the temple chamber or throne enclosing Osiris. The Babylonian Ishtar, whose symbol was the crescent, was the "womb" housing the man-child Tammuz. This very aspect of the crescent is explicit in the title of the "moon"-divinity Sin, who is called the "mother womb, begetter of all things."[1210]

It can hardly be doubted that the Saturnian crescent eventually became confused with our moon. The confusion is most noticeable in the case of the Greek Selene and Latin Luna, whose names were assigned to the lunar sphere. But neither the names nor the imagery of Selene and Luna *originated* in connection with our moon. Within the sphere of Luna "Sol is hidden like a fire." Helios dwells as the impregnating seed within the womb of Selene.[1211] "According to these ancient ideas," writes Jung, "the moon is a vessel of the sun: she is a universal receptacle of the sun in particular."[1212] For an explanation of this imagery one must look to the former celestial order. Long before the Greeks named the solar orb Helios, they knew Helios as the planet Saturn—just as Sol primitively signified the same planet. Selene and Luna derive their mythical character from Saturn's enclosure, and the signs and offer a literal portrait of the ancient mother goddess.

[1208] *The Evolution of the Dragon*, 56.

[1209] *Ibid.*, 56.

[1210] Suhr, *The Spinning Aphrodite*, 57.

[1211] Jung, *Mysterium Coniunctionis*, 177.

[1212] *Ibid.*, 129.

Crescent And Motherland

There is a further implication: the "moon" must mean the same thing as the created "earth" watered by the four rivers of life. Though it is difficult to imagine a less likely identity in conventional terms, here is Faber's conclusion concerning the moon and earth in global mythology: "The female divinity, however apparently multiplied according the genius of polytheism, ultimately resolve themselves into one, who is accounted the great universal mother both of gods and men, and *this single deity is pronounced to be alike the Moon in the firmament and the all-productive Earth.*"1213

Faber gives far too many examples than can be cited here. In each case the goddess "was astronomically the Moon," but "her mystic circle is declared to be the circle of the World."1214 The goddess Isis, reports Faber, "was declared to be equally the moon and the earth: and she is at the same time unanimously determined by the ancient theologists to be one with Ceres, Proserpine, Minerva, Venus, Diane, Juno, Rhea, Cybele, Jana, Atergatis . . . (etc.). These again are said to be mutually the same with each other: and if we descend to particulars, we still find them indifferently identified with the Earth and the Moon."1215

What might our earth (as perceived by the ancients, not by modern astronomy) have in common with the lunar sphere to promote this seemingly irrational identity? The question is raised by Briffault: "There is not, in fact, an earth-goddess who is not at the same time a moon-goddess. All Earth Mothers, as Bachofen remarked 'lead a double life, as Earth and as Moon.'"1216 The identity prevails not only in the advanced civilizations but among primitive races also. The Maori identify the "moon" (Hine, or "the Woman") with the earth. So do Caribbean natives—and this identity corresponds with the overlapping personalities of the "moon" and "earth" among the Mexicans, Chaldaeans, Chinese, Hindu, Greeks, and northern European races.

Briffault confesses the irrationality of the equation: "The Greeks expressly called the moon 'a heavenly earth' and 'a part of the earth.' That persistent identification of the moon with the earth would be unintelligible in peoples ignorant of modern astronomical conceptions, let alone in uncultured races such as the Caribs and the Polynesians. When the earth is conceived as a huge, solid, immovable surface contrasting in every respect with the wandering sphere or disc of the moon in the heavens, *there appears to be no imaginable ground for assimilating the one to the other. The identification cannot arise from any analogy in appearance or function.*"1217

Briffault proposes to resolve the dilemma by positing an intimate connection of "the moon and earth with women and their functions." He suggests that the divinized female came first and her attributes were, through analogy, transferred at once to the moon and the earth.1218 But that such indirect reasoning on the part of ancient man should lead to an identification so universal and so fundamental is not easy to believe.

Actually, no rationalization of this identity is necessary. In the archaic world order, the crescent and earth (land, province) *were* identical. The circle of the "moon" (crescent-enclosure) was the island of beginnings—*Saturn's Earth.* The mythical "moon," as Faber observes, was "what some call 'a terrestrial heaven' or 'paradise,' and others a 'heavenly earth' . . . it is described as wearing the semblance of a *floating island* . . ."1219 This "island of the Moon" contained "within its sphere the Elysian fields or Paradise," which came to be known as "the paradise of the moon."

1213 *The Origins of Pagan Idolatry*, Vol. II, 3. [Emphasis added.]

1214 *Ibid.*, 5.

1215 *Ibid.*, 6.

1216 *Op. cit.*, Vol. III, 61.

1217 *Ibid.*, 61. [Emphasis added.]

1218 *Ibid.*, 61.

1219 Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 13. [Emphasis added.]

There exists, in fact, a most appropriate Mesopotamian symbol of this paradise, though it has yet to receive the serious attention of the experts. It is the sign , repeated again and again on Mesopotamian cylinder seals. The sign depicts the quartered earth, the celestial “land of the four rivers.” That this paradisal earth lies within the embrace of a vast crescent may appear foolish to modern critics, but is strictly consistent with numerous independent traditions equating the primeval “earth” and “moon.”1220

The Crescent And Mount

In all ancient myths of the lost paradise, the land of peace and plenty rests upon a cosmic pillar—“earth’s highest mountain.” One of the peculiarities of the Mount is that it possesses two peaks, rising to the right and left of the central column.

The Egyptian Mount of Glory (Khut) reveals two peaks between which rests the Aten or enclosed sun . Depicted by this sign are “the two great mountains on which Re appears.”1221 And what is most interesting about the Egyptian symbol of the cleft peak is that it finds strikingly similar parallels in other lands. The Mesopotamian sun-god rests upon a twin-peaked world mountain of identical form (fig. 60), and the same dual mount occurs also in Mexico—here too revealing the sun-god between the two peaks (fig. 61).

Figure 60. Assyro-Babylonian Shamash standing between the two peaks.

Figure 61. (a) Mexican twin peaks, with central staff;

1220 *Ibid.*, 18.

1221 Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 224.

Figure 61. (b) Central sun between two peaks.

The Delaware Indians recall a primeval land—“the Talega country,” where long ago “all kept peace with each other.” The pictograph of the lost land is —an extraordinary counterpart to the Egyptian Mount of Glory .

In Hebrew and Muslim thought “the mountain of paradise is a double one,” observes Wensinck.[1222] To the Hebrews Sinai, Horeb, Ebol, and Gerezim were all conceived as images of a twin-peaked mountain, states Jeremias.[1223] In the primeval Tyre (paradise), according to the description of Nonnus, a “double rock” rises from the ocean. In its centre is an olive (the central sun) which automatically emits fire, setting it in a perpetual blaze.[1224] The Syrian and Hittite great gods stand equally balanced upon two mountains.[1225] In the beginning, according to a central Asiatic legend related by Uno Holmberg, “there was only water, from which the two great mountains emerged.”[1226] From the central mount of Hindu cosmology rise two secondary peaks to the right and left.[1227] Of course, the twin pillars of Hercules point to the same idea.

The ancient concept of a cleft summit left a deep imprint in ancient architecture, according to Vincent Scully, author of the book *The Earth, the Temple and the Gods.* In Crete, “a clearly defined pattern of landscape use can be recognized at every palace site,” Scully writes. “More than this, each palace makes use, as far as possible, of the same landscape elements. These are as follows: first, an enclosed valley of varying size in which the palace is set; I should like to call this the ‘Natural Megaron’; second, a gently mounded or conical hill in axis with the palace to north or south, and lastly a higher, *double-peaked or cleft mountain* some distance beyond the hill but on the same axis. The mountain may have other characteristics of great sculptural force . . . but *the double peaks or notched cleft seem essential to it* . . . It forms in all cases a climactic shape which has the quality of causing the observer’s eye to come to rest in its cup . . . All the landscape elements listed above are present at Knossos, Phaistos, Mallia, and Gournia, and in each case they themselves—and this point must be stressed—are the basic architecture of the palace complex.”[1228]

The same pattern occurs repeatedly throughout Greece and Asia Minor, according to Scully. A good example is the siting of the citadel of Troy, which looks out across the isle of Imbross to the more distant isle of Samothrace from which rises (directly “beyond the long low mound of Imbross”) the “double peaks” of Phengari.[1229]

[1222] “The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth,” 13.

[1223] Jeremias, *op. cit.*, 57.

[1224] Wensinck, “Tree and Bird Cosmological Symbols in Western Asia,” 19, citing Nonnus, *Dionysiaca*, XI, 407 sqq.

[1225] Butterworth, *op. cit.*, 55.

[1226] *Der Baum des Lebens*, 62.

[1227] Lenormant, *Les Origines de l’Histoire*, Vol. II, 204-5.

[1228] *The Earth, The Temple and the Gods*, 11. [Emphasis added.]

[1229] *Ibid.*, 22, 203.

In what ritual notion did this common architectural requirement originate? The name of Samothrace's sacred mountain offers a vital clue: *Phengari* is the "Mountain of the Moon." The title is not incidental, for the "Mountain of the Moon"—in more than one land—is the very title of the Primeval Hill, the pillar of the Cosmos! Thus, the "White Island" of Hindu myth is distinguished by the presence of a primordial mountain rising to the "moon." Mount Ararat, which Faber connects with the paradisal hill, is denominated *Laban*, "the mountain of the Moon." So too does the crescent moon rest on the summit of the Hindu Meru. Faber writes: "At the head of the Nile, according to the Indian geographers, is the Meru of the southern hemisphere: this is also a mountain of the Moon . . . At the source of the Rhine, the Rhone, the Po and the Danube, all of which were holy rivers, is what may be styled 'the Meru of the west': here again we have a mountain of the Moon, for Alpan is but a variation of Laban, and Jura or Ira or Rhe denotes 'the Moon' equally in the Celtic and the Babylonian dialects. Lebanon, at the head of the sacred river Jordan, was another lunar mountain . . . And even in the island of Borneo, the peak at the head of its largest river is known by the title of 'the mountain of the Moon.'"[1230]

An early prototype of such mountains, Faber contends, is the vast summit of the Himalaya, from which the Ganges flows. The Hindus deemed this towering mass *Chandrasichara*, the "mountain of the Moon," while two small hillocks of this lofty region receive the title *Somagiri*, the "Mountains of the Moon."[1231]

At work is the cosmic image of a crescent moon resting upon a great mountain and thereby forming a *cleft* summit. ". . . The figure presented to their imagination, would be a conical peak terminating in two points formed by the two horns of the crescent."[1232] Consistent with the universal sun-in-crescent , the great father himself stands midway between the peaks of the right and left, states Faber.[1233]

One thus derives the images and as the simplest renderings of the "Mountain of the Crescent." Every student of ancient symbolism, of course, will recognize these as images of global distribution, presented in an infinite number of variations.

Figure 62. Babylonian pillared crescents.

[1230] *Op. cit.*, Vol. III, 202.

[1231] *Ibid.*, 203-4.

[1232] *Ibid.*, 204.

[1233] *Ibid.*, 204.

Figure 63. Sabaean altar, with pillared sun-in-crescent.

Figure 64. Hittite crescent-enclosure on support.

Figure 65. Pillared crescent, from Peru.

Surely one cannot ignore this general symbolism of the cosmic mountain in attempting to understand the common mountain image . This pictograph, I suggest, simply *adapts the primal crescent to its mythical interpretation as two peaks.* Which is to say, the Egyptian (or the later) refers to the same cosmic form as the crescent-enclosure . In fact, Budge says as much when he calls the latter sign an image of "the sun at sunrise"—for this is precisely the purported meaning of the sign . (I shall subsequently show that by picturing the crescent below the central sun as opposed to the alternative positions , , the ancients denoted the archaic "day," the period of Saturn's greatest brilliance.)

That the two peaks of the Egyptian Khut signified the cleft summit of a single mountain is forcefully indicated by the "mountain-sceptre" of Re, showing the dual mount as the top of a single column . As observed by many authorities, the sceptre represented the pillar of heaven. This particular form closely parallels the early "mountain" hieroglyph , which passed into the image , identifying the cleft peak with the solitary god's original "perch" or "pedestal."[1234] The "pedestal," as we have seen, was also called the pillar of Shu, which the hieroglyphs record by the sign . Here too a single column branches into two secondary supports. (In following sections the reader will find numerous evidences connecting the images and with the underlying cosmic form).

The Egyptian hieroglyphs also employ the mountain sign , appearing to show *three* peaks; and in early representations this configuration, too, appears as the summit of a central pillar . There can be little doubt that the three-peaked mount pertains to the same idea as the twofold summit. The middle peak appears to indicate a simple extension of the central column. The great god, who stands between the peaks of the right and left, becomes himself a part of the mount on which he rests.

This development finds illustration in the Hindu symbolism of Mount Meru, the mountain of the crescent moon. Meru, despite its *crescent* peak, is the *tricutadri*, or mountain of *three* summits. Similarly, the Hindu "White Island" or lost paradise is deemed "the three-peaked land."[1235]

Compare Olympus in the Greek poem:

From Olympus, the summit
From the three *peaks of Heaven.*[1236]

The basis of this symbolism, according to Faber, is the great god, "standing upright" in the midst of the cleft so as to present the image of a central mountain "terminating in three points formed by the two horns of the crescent and its centrical mast [the great god]."[1237]

[1234] Percy E. Newberry, "Two Cults of the Old Kingdom," 24*ff*.

[1235] Faber, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 204.

[1236] Quoted in Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion*, Vol. I, 114. [Emphasis added.]

[1237] *Op. cit.*, vol. III, 204-5.

Accordingly, the primal Hindu image passes into the later , which forms the crest of the Hindu trident —the symbol of the cosmic column. The trident, in other words, originated in the cleft “Mountain of the Moon” . To this image answers the Egyptian three-peaked column .

Of the three-peaked mount much more could be said, but at the cost of distracting from the more basic theme—the two-fold summit. It is my contention that the myths of the split peak originated in the prehistoric perception of a vast crescent seeming to constitute the summit of a cosmic column . Within the cup of the crescent rested the sun . Moreover the crescent was itself simply the illuminated half of a circular band . And if we include the four rivers of life we arrive at the form as the complete image of the Saturnian configuration. Have the ancients preserved for us a literal rendering of this idea?

One could not ask for a more accurate representation than that provided by the cylinder seals of ancient Mesopotamia, which offers us the symbol .[1238] The circular paradise on the mountaintop, watered by the four rivers, lay within the primeval “moon” (of which our lunar crescent is but a pale emblem).

Surely the remarkable correspondence of myth and symbol concerning this celestial configuration (a configuration which flatly contradicts the present arrangement of the heavens) suggests that something more than primitive fancy is at work. If the thesis outlined here is correct, then a single celestial apparition gave rise to these interrelated images: .

The crescent is a central ingredient in the symbolism, and its presence implies a tangible band so illuminated as to display two halves, one bright, the other more subdued.

The Heavenly Twins

Saturn’s enclosure united two semicircles of light and shadow, distinguished by a revolving crescent. In the bright and dark divisions of the enclosure the ancients perceived the cosmic twins, the “two faces” of the Universal Monarch.

In the human domain, one of every eighty-six births involves twins. But among the gods, the abnormal is the rule. The great father is either born of or raised by twins, while also giving birth to twins. And the great god himself commonly appears in dual form.

Prevailing astronomical explanations of the celestial twins identify them as a circle of day and night, or as the evening and morning star, or as the sun and moon. The constellation Gemini became the zodiacal representative of the celestial twins, though it is almost universally agreed that the mythical pair existed long before the naming of such star groups.

Who Were The Dioscuri?

Privileged as the starting point of countless treatises on the twins are the Greek Dioscuri (the two sons of Zeus), Castor and Polydeuces. In a battle with their cousins Idas and Lynceus (sons of Aphareus) Castor fell mortally wounded. While his brother gasped for breath, Polydeuces beseeched Zeus: “Bid me also die, O King, with this my brother.”

[1238] Hans Henning van Der Western, *Ancient Oriental Seals in the Collection of Mr. Edward T. Newell*, fig. 6, no. 217.

Zeus answered the prayer by granting that the two brothers spend alternate days above and below the earth. Pindar records Zeus’s promise: “. . . If thou contendest for thy brother, and art minded to have an equal share with him in all things, then mayest thou breathe for half thy time beneath the earth, and for half thy time in the golden homes of heaven.”[1239]

Cook’s explanation of the reward is simple enough: the brothers represented the day and night sky, revolving round our earth. Their alternating position provides “a simple but graphic expression of the obvious fact that the divine sky is half dark, half bright.”[1240] Supporting this interpretation is the remark of Philon the Jew concerning the habit of mythologists: “They bisected the sky theoretically into hemispheres, one above, the other below, the earth, and called them Dioskoroi, adding a marvelous tale about their life on alternate days.”[1241]

Several centuries after Philon, Joannes the Lydian (living in the sixth century A.D.) repeated the theory: “The philosophers declare that the Dioskoroi are the hemisphere below, and the hemisphere above, the earth; they take it in turns to die, according to the myth, because turn and turn about they pass beneath our feet.”[1242] Observing that semicircles were sacred to the Dioscuri, Cook concludes that the two brothers personify two halves of a celestial circle—“the animate Sky.”[1243] This, of course, would not preclude the ancients from employing the sun and moon or the morning and evening star as symbols of the light and dark hemispheres: “These are but secondary modes of denoting the great primary contrast between Day and Night,” states Cook.[1244]

Of the celestial twins one could pursue example upon example in classical myth alone: Apollo and Artemis, Zetes and Calais, Zerhus and Amphion, Hercules and Iphicles, Otus and Ephialtes, Pelias and Neleus, to name a few. And these figures of the celestial twins are simply a small segment of the vastly larger Indo-European pattern reviewed by Walker.[1245]

Figure 66. The Latin twin god Janus, whose single hat means “Cosmos.”

[1239] Pindar, *Nemian Odes*, 10.148*ff.*

[1240] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 440.

[1241] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 432-33.

[1242] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 433.

[1243] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 434.

[1244] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 435.

[1245] *Ibid.*, Vol. I, 771.

Also, one must place alongside the twins the comparable *two-headed* or *two-faced* god. Here we meet Janus, whom the Italians knew as the "most ancient of gods," and whom they regularly depicted with two faces, looking in opposite directions (fig. 66). Janus, according to Cook, personified the vault of heaven, his two faces signifying the two aspects of the sky (day and night): Janus "was originally the divine Sky. The divine Sky is bright by day and dark by night. Being, therefore, of a two-fold or twin character, Janus was naturally represented as a double-faced god."[1246]

Janus, as the twin-god *par excellence* gives us the title *Janiform*, applied to any two-headed or two-faced deity (of which the ancient world provides innumerable instances). I give as an example a specimen from Etruria (fig. 66), depicting a Janiform head wearing a *petasos* or broad-brimmed hat (often associated with Hermes). This compares with the "broad-brimmed hat" worn by Odin, Attis, and others. According to Eisler, whose opinion is shared by Cook, the hat symbolized, simply, "the sky" so that the two faces together correspond to the entire circle of the hat (heaven, sky).[1247]

The Black And White Twins

Though not all twins are black and white, many are, and it is this very dichotomy which Cook notices in several Greek examples. In certain instances one twin appears on a white horse and the other on a black.[1248]

This aspect of the twins appears to be universal. In his character as a twin-god the Mexican Quetzalcoatl unites with Mictlantecuhtli, the two divinities appearing back to back, one black, the other white.[1249] The Zuni represented their twin war gods by black and white masks. The black and white Asvins of Hindu myth are an obvious parallel. Hindu philosophers, states Agrawala, divided the cosmic wheel into two halves, one black and one white, which they personified as twin sisters forming "a circle (chakra) revolving in eternal time."[1250] In Melanesia, states Eliade, "one constantly comes across the myth of the two brothers, one bright, the other dull."[1251]

Often the twins struggle with each other (sometimes one is "good" and the other "evil"), a feature which complements the black-white and rising-setting aspect of the Dioscuri. Chinese myth describes two brothers named Opeh and Schichin at constant war.[1252] The Ugaritic twins Mot and Aliyan quarrel, as do the Celtic Gwyn and Gwythur.[1253] Remus dies at the hand of Romulus. Acrisius and Proetus quarrel while in the womb of their mother. Jacob and Esau do the same. The North American Indian mother goddess Awehai conceived twins who battled while yet in the womb. There can be little doubt that the Chinese yin and yang (primordial forces of light and darkness) or the Manichaean primal pair of good and evil bore a close relationship to this general tradition of the cosmic twins.

The black and white aspect of the twins appears to be consistent with Cook's theory of a revolving heavenly sphere divided into contending hemispheres of light and darkness. But there are other features of the twins which fit less comfortably into Cook's model. Why were the twins so often conceived as two *primeval rulers* (or two aspects of the Universal Monarch, the founder of civilization)?

[1246] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 378.

[1247] Eisler, *Weltenmantel und Himmelszelt*.

[1248] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 435.

[1249] Neumann, *The Great Mother*, 205.

[1250] *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 42-43, 62*ff.*

[1251] *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 52.

[1252] O'Neill, *The Night of the Gods*, 836.

[1253] Graves, *The Greek Myths*, 243, note 2.

The Dioscuri bore a distinct relationship to the twins Romulus and Remus, the legendary *founders* of Rome. There seems to have been a general tradition of dual kingship, for just as the Dioscuri, in early Doric days, found personification in two kings of Sparta, the Latin Romulus and Remus appear as royal twins, reigning with equal rights. Representations of Romulus and Remus often assimilate the pair to the Dioscuri.[1254]

The question is whether something as abstract as a boundless "sky" could have provoked the idea of a primeval pair ruling in effect as a single king. The twins, as in the case of Janus, attach themselves to the Universal Monarch as his two faces, looking in opposite directions. Cook, of course, recognizes this, but he conceives Janus, the primeval god-king, not in concrete terms, but as an open expanse—the "sky."

Was this the true identity of Janus? One notes with considerable interest the statement of Joannes the Lydian: "Our own Philadelphia still preserves a trace of the ancient belief. On the first day of the month (*i.e.*, January) there goes in procession no less a personage than Janus himself, dressed up in a two-faced mask, *and the people call him Saturnus, identifying him with Kronos.*"[1255]

To Cook this identity of Janus and Saturn must result from an ancient confusion, but to us it accurately reflects the archaic doctrine. Janus, as the "most ancient indigenous god of Italy" (Herodian's phrase),[1256] is the great father, whom the star-worshippers of many lands recognized as the planet Saturn.

Also crucial is the relationship of the celestial pair to the *cosmic pillar.* Many ancient representations of the twins or twin-god place the two heads atop the sacred pole. As for the Janiform type in Greece, Cook cites instances in which "the double face is set on a pillar or post."[1257] One finds similar portrayals of the two-faced god in China, northern Europe, Siberia, India, the Americas, and elsewhere. To one who conceives the post as nothing more than a venerated piece of wood, the connection between it and the two-faced god will mean nothing. But to one who sees the sacred post as the emblem of the Primeval Hill, the placement is charged with meaning: the cosmic twins occupied the summit of the central mountain.

Of the male deities worshipped by the Navaho, states Alexander, the most important are the twins Nayanezgani and Thobadzistshini, who bring to an end the primeval Age of Giants. "Their home is on a mountain in the centre of the Navaho country." "The legend of the heaven-growing rock, lifting twins to the skies, occurs more than once in California."[1258]

Here are two aspects of the celestial twins which do not readily fit Cook's explanation of the pair. The twins are two faces or two aspects of Saturn, the Universal Monarch; and they sit upon the cosmic mountain. Are these accidental attributes of the twins or do they pertain to an integrated image?

It is surprising that Cook, while giving meticulous attention to classical testimony, gives no attention to the more ancient prototype of the Dioscuri and the Janiform god. The most complete evidence comes from ancient Egypt, whose ritual and art provide an incisive portrait of the twins.

[1254] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 442-43.

[1255] Quoted in Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol II, 376. [Emphasis added.]

[1256] *Ibid.*, 335.

[1257] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 381.

[1258] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 235.

Figure 67. The twin god Horus-Set.

Of the black and white brothers the world knows no older example than the Egyptian pair Horus and Set. In fig. 67 the heads of Horus and Set appear upon one body, looking to the right and left. The black head of Set contrasts sharply with the light head of Horus, emphasizing the pair's role as "the two opponent gods."

Closely related to Horus and Set are the twins Isis and Nephthys, often portrayed back to back. The Egyptian pairs Shu and Tefnut, Thoth and Maat, Sekhet and Neith all reveal a similar underlying character.

In the *Book of the Dead* the pictograph of the two "portions" of Horus and Set is the sign , the band of the Aten.[1259] The clear implication is that the sun-god's enclosure possesses two twin-like divisions, one light, the other dark. Moreover, if the circle of the Aten is half light, half dark, surely one cannot ignore the related sign , the crescent-enclosure, which appears to provide a literal illustration of the two realms of Horus and Set.

In the same way, the Egyptian *shen* bond stood not only for the sun-god's enclosure (Aten) but for the *twins* Isis and Nephthys.

Together Isis and Nephthys, the back-to-back twins, formed the protective "border" or "boundary" of the All, the Cosmos. While the Egyptian *tcher* means "boundary," "limit," *tehera* means "protective rampart" and *tcherti* the two halves of the boundary or rampart. The two *Tcherti* are Isis and Nephthys.

Egyptian cosmology reveals the coherent image of a *bisected enclosure* revolving around the central sun. Two interrelated aspects of the twins stand out:

1. In one sense the twins are simply the light and dark halves of the enclosure—a characteristic most pronounced in the pair Horus and Set.

2. But the twofold enclosure revolved around the stationary light god, and by its revolution, the illuminated crescent—the "face" of the great god—marked out the respective divisions of the "right and left" (,) and "above and below" (,). In their primary personality, the twins Isis and Nephthys represented these counterpoised positions of the crescent, and hence two divisions of the celestial kingdom. (In standard translations, the divisions of the left and right are usually rendered as "east" and "west," confusing cosmography (the map of the Cosmos) with the local geography, while the "above" and "below" are translated "heaven" and "earth," leading to a different but equally troublesome confusion.)

This interpretation of the cosmic twins coincides with Cook's in identifying the pair with a celestial circle, half dark and half light. Distinguishing this view from Cook's, however, is the proposed nature of the circle. Did the twofold circle mean the abstract "sky," or a concrete band (with crescent) enclosing the central sun?

[1259] Massey, *Ancient Egypt*, 375.

A requirement of the interpretation set forth here is that the sun-god stand *between* the twins and that the circle of the twins *revolve around him.* Of course, if the twins refer to the open "sky" and the sun-god means the solar orb, it would be meaningless—in fact a contradiction—to place the god in the centre of the circle (*i.e.*, between the semicircles of day and night) or to speak of the twins revolving around the sun-god.

The Egyptians' great god wears the enclosure of the Aten as a "girdle." *According to the Pyramid Texts this garment is the circle of the celestial twins*: "I am girt with the girdle of Horus, I am clad with the garment of Thoth, Isis is before me and Nephthys is behind me."[1260] Such language occurs repeatedly in early Egyptian sources. In the *Book of the Dead*, the king asks, "May I see Horus . . . , with the god Thoth and the goddess Maat, one on each side of him."[1261] In the *Coffin Texts* Atum declares of the twins Shu and Tefnut: "I was between these two, the one being in front of me, the other behind me."[1262] "The two mistresses of Buto accompany you to the right and left."[1263] The *Pyramid Texts* announce that the "two great and mighty Enneads . . . set Shu for you on your east [left] side and Tefnut on your west [right] side."[1264] The king proclaims, "Neith is behind me, and Selket is before me."[1265] Thus the Universal Monarch gives "judgement in the heavens *between* the two Contestants [Horus and Set]."[1266]

The light and dark halves of the enclosure—in perpetual revolution, or "conflict"—are balanced by the great god. "I am the girdle of the robe of the god Nu . . . which uniteth the two fighting deities who dwell in my body [*khat*, "womb"]."[1267] "I am the god who keepeth opposition in equipoise as his Egg circleth round."[1268]

With a little imagination one might possibly conceive the open sky as a black and white sphere revolving around our earth, but such a circle could in no sense appear as a *twofold band around a central sun.* It is here, in short, that Cook's explanation of the twins appears to break down.

The Egyptian twins signify two divisions of the Aten ☉. There is only one enclosure of the sun, yet by virtue of its portions of light and shadow it becomes the "twofold circle" or, as often translated, "the two circles." And this "double" band is the womb of the mother goddess, giving birth to the central sun. A *Coffin Text* thus celebrates "the *two rings* which have given birth to the gods."[1269] The reference is to the twofold enclosure of Isis and Nephthys. "He was conceived in Isis and begotten in Nephthys," states the *Book of the Dead.*[1270] The same source declares: "I was conceived by the goddess Sekhet, and the goddess Neith gave birth to me."[1271]

Accordingly, the *Coffin Texts* say:

[1260] *Pyramid Text* 1089.

[1261] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 6.

[1262] Lacau, *Traduction des Textes des Cercueils du Moyen Empire*, 52.

[1263] *Ibid.*, 37.

[1264] *Pyramid Texts* 1690-91.

[1265] *Pyramid Text* 1375.

[1266] *Pyramid Text* 289. [Emphasis added.]

[1267] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 261.

[1268] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 108.

[1269] Lacau, *op. cit.*, 48. [Emphasis added.]

[1270] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 261.

[1271] *Ibid.*, 229.

> . . . *Your* two mothers *who are in Nekheb* [the celestial province] *shall come to you* . . .[1272]
>
> *Oh you two who conceived Re, you shall bear me who am in the egg.*[1273]

The *Pyramid Texts* reveal the same notion of a twofold womb:

> . . . *The two* great ladies [Isis and Nephthys] *bore you.*[1274]
>
> *My mother is Isis, my nurse is Nephthys.*[1275]
>
> *The King was conceived by Sakhmet, and it is Shezmetet who bore the King.*[1276]

The two goddesses were not merely twins, but the two halves of a single womb. These two divisions may appear either as the *two thighs* of Nut ("Re shines between the thighs of Nut")[1277] or as the thighs of Isis and Nephthys. To attain the primeval womb "the King ascends upon the thighs of Isis, the King climbs upon the thighs of Nephthys."[1278]

That the two-fold enclosure was something more than an ill-defined "sky" is proved by the enclosure's various symbolic forms. The fact is that *every mythical formulation of the Saturnian band (assembly, holy land, temple, city, eye, serpent, etc.) is specifically portrayed as a twofold circle, whose two divisions are the cosmic twins.*

Here are a few examples from the Egyptian system:

The Two Assemblies

Egyptian texts identify the circle of the gods as the "Two Conclaves" or "Two Enneads":

> . . . *You stand in the Conclaves of the Mount of Glory . . . the Two Enneads come to you bowing.*[1279]
>
> *The sky is strong and Nut jubilates when she sees what Atum has done, while he sat among the Two Enneads.*[1280]
>
> *I have given you vindication in the Two Conclaves.*[1281]
>
> *My lips are the two Enneads: I am the Great Word.*[1282]

This twofold circle of the gods forms at once the "body" of the great god and the "womb" of the great mother:

> *Hail, Khepera . . . the two-fold company of the gods is thy body.* [*khat*, "body," may also be translated "womb"].[1283]

[1272] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 61. [Emphasis added.]

[1273] *Ibid.*, 168.

[1274] *Pyramid Text* 804. [Emphasis added.]

[1275] *Pyramid Text* 1375.

[1276] *Pyramid Text* 262.

[1277] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 210.

[1278] *Pyramid Text* 996.

[1279] *Pyramid Texts* 1292-93.

[1280] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 232.

[1281] *Ibid.*, 237.

[1282] *Pyramid Text* 1100.

[1283] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 108.

I am a great one, the son of a great one. I issue from between the thighs of the Two Enneads.[1284]

I have come forth between the [two] *thighs of the company of the gods.*[1285]

It was a *crescent* which divided the circular assembly into two portions, for the hieroglyphic symbol of paut, “company of the gods,” is the crescent-enclosure .

The Two Lands

The celestial “Egypt,” founded and ruled by the Universal Monarch, possessed two divisions, alternately termed “the right and left” or “the above and below.” The priests of the Memphite doctrine announced: “Thus it was that Horus appeared as King of Upper Egypt and as King of Lower Egypt who united the Two Lands in the province of the (white) Wall at the place where the Two Lands are united.”[1286]

The first king is the creator, and the “land” which he gathered together and unified is a twofold circle. Hence the Two Lands receive the title “the Two Ladies” (Isis and Nephthys) or appear as “the portions of Horus and Set,”[1287] or the twin circle of the gods.[1288]

In their organization of the terrestrial kingdom the Egyptians strove to reproduce the bisected enclosure, the ideal kingdom. Writes Frankfort: “The dualistic forms of Egyptian kingship did not result from historical incidents. They embody the peculiarly Egyptian thought that a totality comprises opposites . . . *A State dualistically conceived must have appeared to the Egyptians the manifestation of the order of creation* . . .”[1289]

Figure 68. The Egyptian twin gods bind together the unified “land.”

In the early ritual texts the phrase “Upper and Lower Egypt” consistently refers to the celestial kingdom, not local geography. When the *Pyramid Texts*, for example, declare that “the Two Lands shine again and he [the great god] clears the visions of the gods,”[1290] it should be obvious that they refer to the primordial dwelling above, rather than terrestrial Egypt.

The Two Crowns

[1284] *Pyramid Text* 1087.

[1285] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 594.

[1286] Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods*, 27.

[1287] *Ibid*., 21-27.

[1288] *Pyramid Text* 1297.

[1289] *Op. cit.*, 19-20. [Emphasis added.]

[1290] *Pyramid Text* 373.

The god-king is "the Good Ruler who *appears in the Double Crown*, King of Upper and Lower Egypt, Lord of the Two Lands."[1291] No one reading these lines for the first time is likely to imagine that the "Double Crown" denoted the same dual enclosure as the "Two Lands." Yet, drawing on the cosmic imagery discussed in previous pages one perceives the influence of a single conception. Though the Two Lands are Isis and Nephthys, the same twins appear as two crowns worn by the god-king. ". . . [Y]our two mothers the two White Crowns caress you, your two mothers the two White Crowns kiss you . . ."[1292]

The Egyptians proclaimed that the two crowns composed the circle of glory (*khu*) which issued from the heart or head of the great god. "The two 'Great in Magic' [crowns] grew out of his head. Thus it was that Horus appeared as King of Upper Egypt and as King of Lower Egypt . . ."[1293] To acquire the two crowns was to unify the Two Lands.

The Two Eyes

"Thou didst stretch out the heavens wherein thy two eyes might travel," reads the *Book of the Dead.*[1294] The two eyes are simply the two halves of the singular revolving eye, personified by the cosmic twins. "Thine eyebrows are the two sister goddesses who are at peace with each other," reads the *Book of the Dead.*[1295] Isis and Nephthys are thus called "the two eyes" of Re.

The Two Serpents

If the Egyptian sign relates the circular serpent or uraeus to the band of the enclosed sun, the sign of the "two" uraei shows the latter to be two halves of the same band—a fact which agrees with the title of Isis and Nephthys as "the two serpent-goddesses." "The goddess Nebt-Unnut is established upon thy head [as the crown] and her uraei of the South [Upper Egypt] and North [Lower Egypt] are upon thy brow."[1296] (The Two Lands compose the two uraei serpents, which the god-king wears as a double crown.)

The texts leave no doubt that the eye, crown, and circular serpent, each referring to the same enclosure around the light god, possessed a dual aspect, as two eyes, two crowns, and two serpents; and this twofold enclosure was the double circle of the gods (the Two Enneads) encircling the Two Lands.

O King, I provide you with the Eye of Horus, the Red Crown rich in power and many natured, that it may protect you, O king, just as it protects Horus; may it set your power, O King, at the head of the Two Enneads as the two serpent-goddesses who are on your brow, that they may raise you up.[1297]

Passing briefly to other forms of the primeval enclosure one finds the same connection with the celestial twins:

The Two Thrones

The king has come to his throne which is upon the Two Ladies.[1298]

The Two Vases (=Two Eyes)

[1291] Piankoff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 118. [Emphasis added.]

[1292] *Pyramid Text* 310.

[1293] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 27.

[1294] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 87.

[1295] *Ibid.*, 583.

[1296] *Ibid.*, 72.

[1297] *Pyramid Text* 901-2.

[1298] *Pyramid Text* 263.

*Take the two Eyes of Horus, the black and white; take them to your forehead that they may illuminate your face—the lifting up of a white jar and a black jar.*1299

The Two Lakes or Rivers

*I am born, I purify myself in the two great and mighty lakes in Heracleopolis . . .*1300

*O Destroyer who comest out of the Double Throne Lake.*1301

He has circumambulated the Two Banks. [The Two Banks denoted the circle of Upper and Lower "Egypt," enclosed by the revolving river.]1302

The Two Cords

*Oh you two who are lifted up . . . , who make the metacord of the god . . .*1303

*These are the two knots of Elephantine which are in the mouth of Osiris.*1304

Every mythical form of the primeval enclosure in Egypt appears as a twofold band, the circle of the celestial twins. The diverse figures of the twins, though complicating the symbolism, always point to the same root idea. The twins denote the revolving enclosure of the great god's dwelling in heaven, divided into equal portions of light and shadow. Neither Cook's identification of the twins as the abstract night and day sky, nor any other explanation based on the present celestial order, can account for the underlying identity of the twins as *a circle revolving around a central sun.*

Figure 69. An Etruscan mirror depicts the Dioscuri to the right and left of a central "sun" or "star."

1299 *Pyramid Text* 33.

1300 Piankofff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 51.

1301 Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 324.

1302 *Pyramid Text* 406.

1303 *Pyramid Text* 666.

1304 *Pyramid Text* 234.

Figure 70. The Uruboros, identified as "the One, the All," half dark and half light. From the *Codex Marcianus* (11th century).

In numerous lands the great father appears to have his home within the embrace of celestial twins. Butterworth reports that ". . . From Asia Minor to Egypt, from Delos to Syria, reliefs and coins and other works of art and craftsmanship bear representations of a triad consisting of the Dioskoroi, the 'Heavenly Twins,' dispersed on either side of a divine figure . . ."[1305]

In Egyptian, Sumero-Babylonian, Iranian, Hindu, and Greek imagery the twins appear as twin doors (of the right and left) from which the sun shines forth.[1306]

The Gnostic uroborus or circular serpent is half black and half white and encloses the sun (fig. 70). The Muslim circular serpent, enclosing the Ka'ba and constituting the world ocean, "glitters" in the sun and is half white and half black.[1307] But the same twofold serpent will be found from China to the Americas (figs. 71, 72, 73, 74 & 75).

The world egg of Hindu, Greek, and Chinese symbolism is bisected into black and white semicircles. Hindu sources depict the primeval womb as "two bowls" which together form a single circle, half white, half black.[1308] The face of the Mexican mother goddess is half black, half white, resembling the black and white Greek Erinyes or the bright and dark aspects of the Greek goddess Demeter-Persephone.[1309]

Similarly, two winged goddesses turn the wheel of Ixion, just as two goddesses operate the wheel of the Icelandic world mill or the wheel of the Hindu Skambha.[1310]

The Babylonian Shamash and Tammuz rest within the mouth of the "twin rivers,"[1311] while the Canaanite El stands "at the sources of the Two Rivers, in the midst of the pools of the *Double*-Deep."[1312]

[1305] *Op. cit.*, 101.

[1306] Like the Egyptian Horus and Set the Babylonian gates of the right and left are "the twin fighters." Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion*, 492; Jastrow, *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 285.

[1307] Wensinck, "The Ideas of the Western Semites," 64.

[1308] Agrawala, *The Thousand Syllabled Speech*, 106.

[1309] Briffault, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 62, 163.

[1310] Cook, *op. cit.*, 49.

[1311] Wensinck, "The Ideas of the Western Semites," 169.

[1312] Clifford, *op. cit.*, 49. [Emphasis added.]

Aqua ☿ Phi:
Phi
Phi:
Phi
Corpus

Figure 71. Twofold circular dragon in alchemist manuscript.

Figure 72. (a) Egyptian;

Figure 72. (b) Sumerian, and

Figure 72. (c) Malayan illustrations of the primeval twins reveal a remarkably similar concept. Together the twins form an enclosure.

Figure 73. Buddhist Tri-Ratna.

Figure 74. Chinese twin dragons, and the quartered circle.

Figure 75. Twofold dragon from Honduras.

The band of the enclosed sun, whatever its mythical form, is consistently portrayed as a twofold circle, half black and half white. What defines the two divisions is the illuminated crescent , revolving about the band so as to alternately face "above and below" , or "left and right" , .

While ancient sources never question the dual character of the enclosure, the language of the two divisions is susceptible to considerable misunderstanding by anyone attempting to read it within the context of an assumed solar mythology or of local geography. (I examine these confusions in later sections on "Heaven and Earth" and "East and West.")

Symbolism Of The Crescent

The connection of the circumpolar enclosure with a crescent confirms that the images and pertained to the same celestial configuration as the images and . But just as the ancients interpreted the enclosure and cosmic mountain in different ways, should we not find that they expressed the crescent in varying forms also? In seeking to answer this question one must reckon with the most extraordinary aspects of the Saturnian imagery.

Of the crescent in the primary images and ancient sources present these basic forms:

—The horns of the bull-god (or cow-goddess).

—The great father's ship.

—The uplifted arms of the heaven-sustaining giant.

—The outstretched wings of the mother goddess (or winged god).

In the language of ancient ritual, "horns," "ships," "arms," and "wings" possess an underlying identity which defies all natural relationships between such concepts in the modern world. To reside within the wings of the mother goddess is to dwell upon the upraised arms of the Heaven Man. But these same wings, or arms, constitute the great god's sailing vessel—which in turn is depicted as two shining "horns." Let us examine the connection of these forms with the Saturnian configuration .

The Crescent Horn

In accord with the images *and* *, the central sun appears as a horned god (the Bull of Heaven), while his spouse, the cow-goddess, encloses the sun-god within two horns.*

Though extolled as the "sun," all figures of the great father possess the crescent "moon" as two horns, reigning over the first age as the generative Bull.

In Egypt, the "sun-gods" Re, Horus, Osiris, Amen, and Ptah all take the form of a horned god—the mighty "bull."[1313]

Osiris is the "son of Nut, lord of the two horns."[1314] The *Litany of Re* celebrates the god as the "supreme power, with attached head, with high horns."[1315] One of Re's epithets is simply "Shining Horn."[1316]

A chapter of the *Book of the Dead* begins: "I am the sharp-horned Bull, who regulateth the sky, the Lord of the risings in heaven, the great Giver of Light, who issueth from Flame."[1317]

"I am seated in front of the Great Ones like the horned Re," reads a *Coffin Text.*[1318] As the incarnation of the great god, the king acquires the title "Bull of Light."[1319]

[1313] Briffault, *op. cit.*, 192.

[1314] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 157; Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*, 409.

[1315] Piankoff, *The Litany of Re*, 24.

[1316] *Ibid.*, 13.

[1317] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 107.

[1318] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 243.

It is the general consensus of Egyptologists that Re and his counterparts originated as solar gods. To what, then, do the sun-god's shining "horns" refer?

The characterization of the great god as a horned deity seems to be a general principle of ancient thought. A Babylonian hymn to Ramman (the "sun-god") begins: "O lord Ramman, thy name is the great god glorious bull, child of heaven . . . , lord of plenty."[1320] Anu, Ninurta, Enlil, and Enki all possess radiant horns. ". . . The sun, as the 'Bull of Light' [the very title of the Egyptian god-king], was accorded the supreme position in the Babylonian solar-god hierarchy," writes Conrad.[1321] But the *horns* of the Bull of Heaven are the crescent "moon":

Father Nannar, heavenly lord

. . . moon *god . . . lord of Ur . . .*

lord of the brilliant crescent . . .

O strong bull, great of horns.[1322]

Hindu sources depict Vishnu, Brahma, Shiva, Agni, and Indra as bulls with luminous horns. The Greek Dionysus (Latin Bacchus) is "the bull-horned god" said to have been born a "horned child." Adonis receives the same form. The Canaanite El is addressed as "Bull-god" while the Greek Kronos is "the horned god." If Yahweh was "the Bull of Israel," Helios was the "Adiounian bull."

From Africa to northern Europe to the Americas the archaic "sun"-god wears the horns of the crescent "moon."[1323]

In the myths of several lands the celestial bull appears in the guise of Heaven Man, his body providing the primeval matter of the Cosmos. A hymn of the Hindu *Atharva Veda*, titled "Extolling the Ox," identifies the various gods with the limbs of the cosmic bull: "Prajapati and the most exalted one are his two horns, Indra his head, Agni his forehead, Yama his neck-joint . . ." etc.[1324] The Persians knew this beast as the "Primal Bull" or "the Sole-Created Ox" dwelling in Eran Vej, the "central land"; his form was "white and brilliant as the moon." The world of the first man and first woman was created from his body.[1325]

There is only one sense in which the myth of the horned "sun" or great father will find meaningful interpretation. The horns belong to Saturn, the sun within the crescent-enclosure ☉. If the Babylonians knew Saturn as Anu, "the horned one," the Phoenicians called the planet-god Ba'al Qarnaim, "Lord of the Two Horns."[1326] The Greek Saturn-name Kronos, according to Robert Brown, possesses the radical sense "the Horned."[1327]

[1319] Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire*, 72.

[1320] Conrad, *The Horn and the Sword*, 102.

[1321] *Ibid.*, 39.

[1322] *Ibid.*, 38. [Emphasis added.]

[1323] Gelling, *The Chariot of the Sun*, 81-82; Bailey, *The God-Kings and the Titans*, 192.

[1324] Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, Vol. II, 547.

[1325] Campbell, *Occidental Mythology*, 204-5; Briffault, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 191.

[1326] Brown, *Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations*, Vol. II, 183; Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. III, 554.

[1327] *Op. cit.*, Vol. I, 3n.

Figure 76. Two Egyptian versions of the winged bull: **(a)** the Apis bull of Memphis;

Figure 76. (b) the Bacchis bull of Hermonthis.

Figure 77. The horns of the celestial ibex (Mesopotamia) enclose the sun-cross. From a vase discovered at Susa.

Figure 78. Bucranium design, Mesopotamia.

Figure 79. Fragment of painted vessel from Baluchistan, showing the “sun” between the borns of the bull.

Ancient Egyptian imagery is unvarying in connecting the horns with the Aten, the enclosure of the sun . In a *Coffin Text* the great god recalls the first occasion, “before the Aten had been fastened on the horns.”1328 Another source describes the “Aten which is between his horns.”1329 Pharaoh Thutmose I calls himself the god “Horus-Re, Mighty-Bull—the sun with sharp horns who comes out of the Aten.”1330 Can one seriously doubt that such hymns refer to the light god within the crescent-enclosure ?

Two popular forms of the Egyptian horned god were the Apis Bull, worshipped at Memphis, and the Mnevis Bull of Heliopolis. Illustrations of these bull-gods confirm the very relationship of the horns and enclosure described in the hymns: the circle of the Aten rests firmly upon the bull’s horns, offering the precise image . The Egyptian bull-god Bakha similarly wears the Aten between his two horns. The hieroglyphic symbol of the horned Aten is . (On the meaning of this imagery the specialists remain silent.) One of the hieroglyphic forms of the Aten has as its determinative the sign , signifying “the two-horned enclosure.” That the mystic horns embrace or encircle the central sun is a principle reaching far beyond Egypt. In the famous horned cap of Mesopotamian divinities, “the horns were imagined as encircling the head of a divinity rather than springing out of it,” writes Van Buren.1331 Sometimes the symbolic horns in Mesopotamia are not those of a bull but rather of an ibex, a heavenly beast whom the myths call the “Ibex of the Apsu [cosmic ocean].”1332 Vase paintings show the horns of the ibex encircling the sun-cross1333 (fig. 77). Elsewhere the “sun” appears between the horns of a bull (figs. 78, 79).

In Egyptian and Scandinavian rock drawings the “sun” rests between the horns of bovine figures, and the illustrations often emphasize the horns’ character as an enclosure by drawing them full circle (figs. 84, 87). Correspondingly, a poem of the East African Didinga extols the:

1328 Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, 88.

1329 Piankoff, *Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 125.

1330 Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 6.

1331 “Concerning the Horned Cap of the Mesopotamian Gods,” 319. See Hans Henning Van Der Osten, *op. cit.*, fig. 22, no. 114, 116, 128, 153, 168.

1332 Kramer, *Sumerian Mythology*, xii.

1333 Jeremias, *op. cit.*, 99, fig. 70.

*White Cow of heaven, your horns have curved full circle and are joined as one.*1334

In the same vein the Hindu *Atharva Veda* recalls "The ruddy one, the sharp-horned bull, who encompassed Agni, the sun."1335 The Iranian Verethraghna, who bears the "glory" (halo) of Ahura Mazda, possesses "the shape of a wild beautiful ram, with horns bent round."1336

The horns which are "bent round" will be the crescent-enclosure, the dwelling of the central sun —which is to say, the horns are inseparable from the womb of the mother goddess. Hence the Egyptian sign , which neatly expresses the crescent's mythical aspect as two horns, denotes the goddess Hathor, the "House of Horus." Because Hathor is the goddess of the horned womb, there is no contradiction between the hymns locating Re "in the *womb* of thy mother Hathor" and the representations of the goddess as "sky-cow who bears the sun-god *between her horns*."1337

In the same way, Hathor is at once the Eye of Re and the horns supporting the Eye: "I am that eye of yours which is on the horns of Hathor," reads a *Pyramid Text.*1338 One of the names of the Egyptian goddess is simply "Horns, Lady of Purification."1339

Figure 80. The goddess Hathor, wearing the horned Aten.

Closely paralleling this title of Hathor is the name of the Mesopotamian goddess: "the Lady with the horned countenance."1340 The Sumerian goddess Inanna describes her own womb as "a horn,"1341 while the related Phoenician goddess Ashtoreth appears as "Queen of heaven with crescent horns" or "Ashtoreth of the double horn."1342 A horn, in the Hindu *Satapatha Brahmana*, means the womb of primeval genesis. ". . . The black deer's horn is the same as that womb," states the text. The priest "touches with it [the horn] his forehead close over the right eyebrow, with the text, 'Thou art Indra's womb'—for it is indeed Indra's womb, since in

---

1334 Conrad, *The Horn and the Sword*, 89.

1335 Whitney, *op. cit.*, Vol. II, 714.

1336 Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta*, Part II, 237.

1337 Bleeker, *Hathor and Thoth*, 48. [Emphasis added.]

1338 *Pyramid Text* 705.

1339 Piankoff, *The Wandering of the Soul*, 10.

1340 Lenormant, *Chaldean Magic*, 149.

1341 Kramer, *The Sacred Marriage Rite*, 59.

1342 Sayce, *op. cit.*, 256.

entering it he enters thereby, and in being born he is born therefrom: therefore he says, ‘Thou art Indra’s womb.’”[1343]

It makes no difference whether the horns are those of a bull, cow, ram, antelope, deer, goat, or buffalo. The vital idea was of a horned enclosure, and ancient nations inheriting the tradition obviously adapted the celestial horn to animal forms most familiar to them.

The Horned Mountain

In the *Pyramid Texts*, the king returns to the womb of his birth, with the words: “I have joined my mother the Great Wild Cow. O my mother, the Wild Cow which is upon the Mountain . . .”[1344] “Homage to thee, Re, supreme power, Shining Horn, Pillar of Amentet,” reads the *Litany of Re*.[1345] The Bakha bull, which supports the Aten between its horns, is “the Bull of the two Mountains.”

That the horns of the bull or cow constitute the two peaks of the cosmic mountain can alone explain such imagery. *The Bull of Heaven, in its original form, is nothing more than a horned pillar*—as is made clear in a *Pyramid Text* addressing “the Pillar of the Stars . . . , the Pillar of Kenset, the Bull of Heaven.”[1346] This is the bull “whose horns shine, the (well) anointed pillar, the Bull of Heaven.”[1347]

In truth, all that distinguishes the horned Aten from the “Mount of Glory” hieroglyph is the mythical form in which the recumbent crescent found expression. Mythically, the crescent was viewed as both a split peak *and* two horns.

Indeed, one finds that the Egyptian priests had no doubts about the identity of the horns and the cleft summit, for the two symbols constantly overlap in Egyptian art. Sometimes the head of a bull is placed between the two peaks of the mountain symbol , with the Aten resting on the bull’s two horns (figs. 81, 82).

In an early period, the Egyptians represented the twin peaks by the image , locating the cleft summit atop the primeval “pedestal” . At other times, however, they showed a bull resting on the pedestal with the mountain sign displaced to the side (fig. 83). Clearly, the artists recognized the overlapping meanings of the two symbols.

Often, in fact, the mountain sign is drawn so as to appear *more like horns than two hills* (fig. 85b), and this image, as noted by Percy Newberry some time ago, is virtually identical to the Cretan “horns of consecration” discussed by Sir Arthur Evans in his now-famous work, “The Mycenaean Tree and Pillar Cult”[1348] (fig. 85a) Thus G.E. Smith observes the “*identity* of what Evans calls the ‘horns of consecration’ and the [Egyptian] ‘mountains of the horizon.’”[1349] (By “mountains of the horizon” Smith means, of course, the two-peaked Mount of Glory.)

[1343] Eggeling, *Satapatha-Brahamna* II, Part II, 33.

[1344] *Pyramid Text* 389.

[1345] Piankoff, *Litany of Re*, 26.

[1346] *Pyramid Text* 280, in Piankoff, *The Pyramid of Unas*.

[1347] *Pyramid Text* 282-83.

[1348] Newberry, “Two Cults of the Old Kingdom,” 24*ff.*

[1349] *Op. cit.*, fig. 26.

Figure 81. Illustration of the Aten (circular serpent) from the *Papyrus Of Her-Uben* shows the overlapping interpretations of the Aten's crescent as a twin-peaked mountain, the horns of a cosmic bull, and twin loins (Aker).

Figure 82. To show the identity of the Aten's crescent-horns and the twin peaks, Egyptian artists placed the bull's head between the two peaks.

Perceiving the horns as the cleft summit of the pillar sustaining the Cosmos , one can understand the spell of the *Coffin Texts*, which reads: "I am the Bull, the Old One of Kenzet [*Kenset*, the horned pillar] . . . I support the sky with my horns."[1350]

[1350] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 148.

Figure 83. Prehistoric Egyptian symbols for the two-peaked mount.

Figure 84. By indicating the horns as a full circle, prehistoric Egyptian pictures of the cosmic bull (or twin bulls) emphasize the connection of the horns with the celestial enclosure.

Figure 85. (a) Cretan “horns of consecration”;

Figure 85. (b) Egyptian “cleft peak.”

Figure 86. Mesopotamian horned pillar.

The Sumero-Babylonians personified the heaven-sustaining peak Hursag as the mountain giant Enlil, also a *horned* pillar:

O great Enlil, im-hur-sag [Great Mountain]
whose head rivals the heavens,
whose foundation is laid in the pure abyss,
Whose horns *gleam like the rays of the Sun-god.*[1351]

Both Egyptian and Mesopotamian sources give the heaven-sustaining mountain shining horns! The name of the Babylonian antediluvian king Alaparos derives from *alap*, "bull" and *ur*, "foundation." He is the "Bull of the Foundation."[1352]

[1351] Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 99. [Emphasis added.]

[1352] Brown, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 56.

Figure 87. Variations of the cosmic bull in Scandinavian rock drawings. At root the bull is the pillar and crescent-enclosure.

Figure 88. Rock picture from Germany, identified by Herbert Kuhn as "stylized oxen."

Figure 89. American Indian horned enclosure, resting on erect serpent.

Thus the paradisal "earth" rested upon the crescent-horns. The Babylonians called the horned pillar the "Great Bull, the most great Bull, stamping at the holy gates . . . director of Abundance, who supports the god Nirba . . ."[1353] Lenormant comments: "This bull thus plays the role of a kind of Atlas, bearing the earth and its harvests upon his shoulders."[1354] But the primeval "earth," as we have seen, was simply Saturn's Cosmos.

Many Siberian legends speak of a primeval bull supporting the "world."[1355] Hebrew and Muslim traditions place a bull atop the serpent-dragon Leviathan (here a symbol of the heavens pillar). The bull supports the earth on its shoulders.[1356] The ram's horn of the Germanic Heimdal holds fast the rim of the world.[1357]

We consider again the Mesopotamian symbol of the quartered earth upon its pillar . What is astonishing about this symbol is that it exactly corresponds to the mythical image of the bull, or horned pillar, holding aloft the cosmic enclosure (with four streams of life) and supporting the sun-god between its horns. To my knowledge, however, no one has yet proposed any connection between this sign and the myths.

[1353] Lenormant, *Les Origines*, Vol. I, 116.

[1354] *Ibid.*

[1355] Uno Holmberg, *Siberian Mythology*, 331-2.

[1356] Wensinck, "*The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites*," 3.

[1357] Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters*, 182.

As our earth turned on its axis, the crescent-horn must have visually appeared to revolve around the enclosure , , , . “The Great Bull of Osiris circles around!” proclaims a text from the *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon.*1358 Two lines from the *Book of the Dead* suggest the same thing: “I am the steer . . . I go round the Sekhet-Aaru [the circular plain of abundance].”1359

Accordingly, the revolving horns mark out a twofold enclosure. One of the earliest symbols of the Two Lands is a double-headed cow, facing to the right and left.1360(fig. 90) The *Pyramid Texts* call this “the two bulls within the Ibis.”1361 The reference is more significant than one might recognize at first glance, for the ibis encompassing the two twins is the god Thoth—whose symbol is the crescent-enclosure —:

“I have come and I have installed this house of mine . . . The door which is on it is two opposing bulls,” reads a *Pyramid Text.*1362 Together the “opposing” horns of the left and right , distinguish the full circle of the “door.”

To anyone perceiving the role of the Egyptian “two Bulls” as two halves of the sun’s enclosure (the door or gate through which the sun comes forth), it is impossible to overlook the corresponding imagery of two bulls in Mesopotamia, guarding the gates of the palace or temple. These are the “two bulls of the gate of the temple of E-Shakil,” the “two bulls of the gate of Ea,” or the “two bulls of the gate of the goddess Damkina.”1363

Figure 90. The Egyptian twin-headed bull, symbol of the “Two Lands.”

1358 Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 84.

1359 Renouf, *op. cit.*, 114-15.

1360 Mackenzie, *The Migration of Symbols*, 18.

1361 *Pyramid Text* 425.

1362 *Pyramid Text* 1266. Another text reads: “See among whom this King stands, the horns on his head being those of two wild bulls, for you are a black ram, the son of a black ewe, whom a white ewe bore.” *Pyramid Text* 252. In this hymn one discerns the two primary forms of the cosmic twins. The twins, as the two “wild” or fighting bulls, are simply aspects of a singular horned god, whose horns alternately face opposing directions. But the twins also have to do with a circle half light and half shadow, and this bisected enclosure is the womb of the great gods birth. Hence he is “the son of a black ewe, whom a white ewe bore.”

1363 Lenormant, *Les Origines*, Vol. I, 114. In the symbolism of the Hindu *Rig Veda* it is the universal Bull and Cow who together compose the primeval womb. They “are like two inverted bowls uniting to form a common womb,” writes Agrawala. *Thousand Syllabled Speech*, 106.

Figure 91. Mesopotamian design conveying the image of the primeval enclosure and revolving horns.

As to the primary meanings of the horned god or goddess ancient sources do not equivocate: mythically, the horns signify the revolving crescent reaching around the primeval enclosure and seeming to "support" or "embrace" the sun-god. The horns compose the two peaks of the cosmic mountain. And in their opposing positions around the central sun, they are identified as the cosmic twins, the "opponent gods."

X: The Crescent-Ship (Part 2)

All ancient sun gods sail in a celestial ship. In the oldest ritual the ship appears as a crescent revolving around the circle of the great god's dwelling, while the god himself remains stationary. The ship's "mooring post" (and, by extension, its "mast") is the cosmic mountain.

One of Saturn's most extraordinary possessions is the ark of heaven. Saturn is "literally represented as sailing over the ocean in a ship," remarks Faber.[1364] Ovid tells us that because the planet-god traversed the entire sphere of the "earth" in his primordial voyage, his special token was a ship, and this is the ship which appears on the reverse of coins stamped with the double face of Janus.[1365] The latter god, as Saturn's alter ego, was the "inventor" of barks and ships.[1366]

All of the Saturnian gods of the Sumero-Babylonian pantheon sail in a celestial ship, one of whose names is *Magula-anna*, "Great boat of Heaven." The "beloved ship" of Ningirsu is "the one that rises up out of the dam of the deep."[1367] Ea rides "the ship of the antelope of the Apsu,"[1368] while Ninurta sails in the ship Magur.

The Chinese Huang-ti—the planet Saturn—was the first to sail in a ship. In his journey across the ocean, Hercules rode in a "golden goblet"—the ship of Helios (Saturn)—to which one naturally compares the "new-moon" boat of Dionysus. A ship of "self-made light" transports the Avestan great god Yima (Saturn).

The Phoenician great father Chrysor "was the first man who fared in ships,"[1369] but it was also said that the twin god Ousoos "was the first who launched a boat."[1370] The Japanese creator god Sukuna-Biko-Na rides "on the crest of the waves in a heavenly *Kagami* boat."[1371] "A golden ship of golden tackle moved about in the sky," reads the Hindu *Atharva Veda*.[1372]

Natives of the Marquesas say that in the beginning there was only the sea on which the creator Tiki floated in a canoe.[1373] The Hawaiian god Tanaroa sailed above in a "flying canoe,"[1374] much like the great shaman of the Yenisei Ostiaks, who "rows his boat in heaven." The legendary Hiawatha navigated "a white canoe which moved without human aid."[1375]

[1364] *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, 495.

[1365] Cited in *ibid.*

[1366] *Ibid.*

[1367] Jastrow, *Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 654.

[1368] Langdon, *op. cit.*, 106.

[1369] Brown, *Eradinus: River and Constellation*, 12.

[1370] Brown, *Researches*, Vol I, 39.

[1371] Philippi, *The Kojiki*, 115.

[1372] Whitney, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 227.

[1373] Dixon, *Oceanic Mythology*, 20.

[1374] Melville, *Children of the Rainbow*, 37.

That the original form of the sun-god's ship was a *crescent* is a fact disputed by no one. The crescent form prevails in Egypt, Mesopotamia, Persia, India, Greece, Scandinavia, and even in the Americas, leading to the popular belief that the mythical sun voyages in the "ship of the new moon."

This opinion is due to one fact alone: the new moon is the only crescent familiar to the modern age. Yet so routine is the identification of the crescent-ship with our moon that mythologists give almost no attention to specific imagery suggesting a radically different interpretation.

Having observed the "unorthodox" role of the crescent-horn, it is appropriate to note first that ancient symbolism always equates the great god's ship with the bull or cow of heaven. Prehistoric drawings from Egypt continually relate the ship to a horned creature and later Egyptian art continued the theme.[1376]

Figure 92. The Mesopotamian great gods sail in the horned ship.

The same connection occurs in many Scandinavian rock drawings. A rock picture from the Nubian desert south of Kerma shows the ship so placed on the back of a bull that the boat and the galloping animal are one.[1377]

The Sumero-Babylonian Nannar or Sin, esteemed as the bull with glistening horns, is also "the shining bark of the heavens."[1378] "May you ferry over by means of the Great Bull," reads an Egyptian *Pyramid Text.*[1379] Another declares: "the Bull of the sky has bent down his horn that he may pass over thereby . . . ,"[1380] while a *Coffin Text* celebrates the "long-horn which supports the *bark* of Anubis."[1381]

Many years ago G.S. Faber, examining ancient symbolism of the ship, wrote: "A heifer seems to have been adopted as perhaps the most usual emblem of the Ark . . . That the heifer was an emblem of the Ark appears from a very curious passage in *The Etymological Magnum*, the author of which informs us, that Theba, in the Syrian dialect, signified 'a heifer' . . . The import, however, of Theba, in the Hebrew language, is 'an ark'; and the only reason why a heifer was designated by the same appellation, was the circumstance of its being used as an arkite emblem.”[1382]

[1375] Alexander, *North American Mythology*, 52.

[1376] Winkler, *Rock Drawings of Southern Egypt*, no. 17, 22, and inset, pl. xxxiii; Piankoff, *Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 153.

[1377] Campbell, *Oriental Mythology*, 69-70.

[1378] Jeremias, *op. cit.*, 243.

[1379] *Pyramid Text* 792.

[1380] *Pyramid Text* 1433.

[1381] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 279. [Emphasis added.]

If the crescent-horn is that which embraces the enclosed sun and visually revolves around the band each day, the ship of heaven must be the same crescent.

Direct confirmation comes from ancient Egypt. Though the Egyptian ship (as depicted in the reliefs) always possesses the crescent form, it revolves in a circle: “. . . the ark of heaven was the revolving sphere configurated as a sailing vessel . . . the ark is portrayed in the act of sailing over a vast unfathomable hollow void,” writes Massey.[1383]

Perhaps the most common Egyptian word for “to sail” is *seqet*, from the root *qet*, “a circle” (written with the determinative). Literally, *seqet* means “to go in a circle” (compare *seqeti*, “encircled”). Hence one text declares that “the barge *circles* in the sky,”[1384] while another extols “the *circlings* of the henhenu-bark”[1385] (*henhenu* is a name of the circular ocean above).

But what was the nature of the ship’s circular pathway? The ship sails around the sun-god’s enclosure: “I stand up in thy enclosure, O Maa; I sail round about.”[1386] Chapter CXXXVI of the *Book of the Dead* is thus entitled “The Chapter of Sailing in the Great Boat of Re to Pass over the Circle of Bright Flame.”[1387] Moreover, this connection of the crescent-boat with an *enclosure* will be found also in Mesopotamia. Though the crescent of Sin was the *ma-gur* boat possessed by Ninurta (Saturn), the sign for *gur* means “circular enclosure.”[1388]

Is there any direct statement that the enclosure depicted in the sign is the ship’s pathway? The Egyptians called the band Aten or *khu* (“glory,” “halo”): “Hail to you who sails in his Khu, who navigates a circle within his Aten,” reads the *Book of the Dead*.[1389]

Clearly, the subject is the crescent-enclosure. In the *Pyramid Texts*, King Unas announces, “I revolve round heaven like Re, I sail round heaven like Thoth.” While Re’s image is the Aten , the common symbol of Thoth is the crescent-enclosure . Allowing the one image to explain the other, we see that Unas does not here engage in two separate acts, but in a single act depicted in two different ways: to revolve within the Aten is to sail in the crescent-ship of Thoth.[1390]

The circle of the Aten is the “brow” of Re, and it is on Re’s brow that the texts locate the ship: “I fly up and perch myself upon the forehead of Re, in the bows of his boat which is in heaven,” states the *Book of the Dead*.[1391]

[1382] *A Dissertation on the Cabiri*, Vol I, 177-78.

[1383] *Op. cit.*, 576.

[1384] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, citing a text from the *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*. [Emphasis added.]

[1385] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 149. [Emphasis added.]

[1386] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 488.

[1387] *Ibid.*, 411.

[1388] Vanderburgh, *Sumerian Hymns from Cuneiform Texts in the British Museum*, 44.

[1389] Cf. Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 83.

[1390] *Pyramid Text*.

[1391] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 443, citing the *Book of the Dead*, Chapter LXVI.

“Thou sailest on high in the Evening Barge, thou joinest the followers of the Aten,”1392 To appreciate this line from the *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon* one must recognize that the “followers” themselves compose the enclosure of the Aten; the great god in the ship resides within the circle of lesser gods. It is the same thing to say that the secondary gods, by forming the enclosure, stand on the “pathway” of the ship, as stated in the *Coffin Texts*: “Every god who is on the border of your enclosure is on the path of your boat.”1393 Could one ask for a more explicit statement equating the enclosure and the revolving ship?

Figure 93. The “sun”-wheel resting in the cosmic ship, as depicted in Scandinavian rock drawings.

It is clear from the Egyptian sources that the ship and the secondary gods (the ship’s crew), in revolving around the Aten, circumscribe the great god, who resides in the centre of the circle:

> *I cause Truth* [maat] *to circle about at the*
> *head of the great barge which carries the*
> *Justified One in the council . . .*
> *The crew of Re circles about.*1394
> *The dwellers in the Sektet Boat go*
> *round about thee . . .*1395

This, then, is the *only* sense in which the central sun “moves”: he sails around the enclosure , , , , while yet remaining *em hetep*, “at rest” or “in one place.” The ship is thus “the Boat of Rest [*Hetep*].”1396

> *O God Re, grant thou that the Osiris Nu may travel on in thy boat em hetep.*1397

1392 Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 72.

1393 Lacau, *op. cit.*, 33.

1394 Piankoff, *Wandering of the Soul*, 27.

1395 Budge, *From Fetish to God*, 401.

1396 Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 250.

1397 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 410.

Let me embark in thy boat, O Re, em hetep.[1398]

Thy resting place is the barge of Khepri.[1399]

Agreeing with this view of the ship and pathway are the many hymns and liturgies which describe the boat of heaven navigating the circular ocean. (As earlier observed, this revolving river was the circle of the Aten ☉.)

I have made my way and gone round the heavenly ocean on the path of the bark of Re.[1400]

Lo, I sail the great Bark on the Stream of the god Hetep.[1401]

Other hymns similarly depict the ship going around the "Lake of the Tuat," "the Pool of Maat," or "the Pool of Fire."[1402]

This cosmic ocean, lake, or river means the circular womb (or body) of the mother goddess. Hence, the goddess Nut, the enclosure around the sun-god Re, takes the form of the circumambient sea, and numerous reliefs show the sun-god's boat *sailing over the body of the goddess.* "I am a Sahu, who assigneth the bounds as he saileth round the starry throng of Heaven, the body of my mother Nut," states the *Book of the Dead.*[1403]

But it is not sufficient to identify the mother goddess as the pathway of the crescent-ship, for the crescent and enclosure are one: *the ship is the goddess.* Though Nut is the "pathway," the deceased king beseeches the goddess:

"Row me, O mother of mine; tow me, O abode of mine."[1404]

"O Boat of the sky . . . O Boat of Nut."[1405]

Similarly, the "ship of Hathor," as stated by Bleeker, was "the expression of her being. When the boat was carried in procession, it was the dramatization of the deity's hierophany."[1406] One of the names of the Hathor-ship is "mistress of love"; it is called "the boat which exalts her beauty."[1407] A ship was also the symbol of the goddess Isis.[1408] The dweller in the primeval womb is the captain of the ship.

A survey of ship symbolism in other lands will reveal the same identity. The womb of the Sumerian Inanna is "a ship."[1409] "The ship of the brilliant off-spring" was an epithet of the Babylonian goddess Bau.[1410] In

---

[1398] *Ibid.*, 398.

[1399] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 239.

[1400] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 86.

[1401] *Ibid.*, 193.

[1402] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 97, 135, 515, etc.

[1403] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 131.

[1404] *Pyramid Text* 303.

[1405] Budge, *Osiris: the Egyptian Religion of Resurrection*, Vol. I, 118.

[1406] *Op. cit.*, 61.

[1407] *Ibid.*, 60, 89.

[1408] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. III, 24-27.

[1409] Kramer, *The Sacred Marriage Rite*, 59, 64.

[1410] Jastrow, *Religion of Babylonia and Assyria*, 655.

Hindu myth the goddesses Ila, Isi, Lacshmi, and Parvati are synonymous with the ship Argha,[1411] transporting the great father (Manu, Shiva, Brahma) over the waters. Bergelmir—the Norse mythical giant—"was born in a boat"[1412] (*i.e.*, boat=womb). The Latin goddess Minerva "was surnamed Ergane, from Ereg or Erech, the 'ark'; under which title she was venerated both in Laconia, and in Boeotia," Faber tells us.[1413] The Celtic Goddess Ceridwen takes the form of a ship,[1414] and the ship was the symbol of the old Latin goddess Ceres (Demeter), the Phrygian goddess Cybele, and the Phoenician goddess Ashtoreth.[1415]

The ship, in other words, is part and parcel of the circumpolar enclosure. And the identity finds confirmation in all mythical formulations of the enclosure:

The World-Ship

The Egyptian ship is "the Barge of Earth." "O gods who carry the Barge of Earth, who support the barge of the Tuat," proclaims the *Book of Gates*.[1416]

While the name of the Hindu goddess Ida (or (Ila) means "the world," she is depicted as a floating ship; Stonehenge, the famous Druidic monument, was called at once "the circle of the World," "the enclosure of the ship-goddess Ceridwen," and the "Ark of the World."[1417]

The ship-goddess is none other than the mother earth in heaven.

The Island-Ship

Ancient history is filled with legends of floating, paradisal islands, of which the Greek Delos and Hindu "island of the Moon" are noteworthy examples. The Italian floating isle of Cotyle; the Egyptian floating island of Chemnis, described by Herodotus; and the Celtic floating island of Snowdon suggest a common theme.[1418]

The tradition of the island-ship receives remarkable expression in the Roman island of Tiber, which, as a monument to Asclepius, was fashioned with a breastwork of marble into the form of a ship, its upper part imitating the stern and its lower part the bow.[1419] Fig. 94, taken from Carl Kerenyi's *Asklepios*, shows the ancient form of Tiber Island as reconstructed by a sixteenth-century draftsman.[1420] Symbolized is the island of the blessed resting within the vast crescent of the cosmic ship.

[1411] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. I, 330, 385; Vol. III, 43, 63.

[1412] MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 275.

[1413] *A Dissertation*, Vol. I, 106.

[1414] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. I, 330, 363, 384.

[1415] *Ibid.*, Vol. III, 28-33.

[1416] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 153.

[1417] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. I, 330; Vol. III, 30, 230. So also does the world navel appear in the form of a ship. Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 355*ff.*;

[1418] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. III, 222-27, 40-41, 89*ff.*

[1419] *Ibid.*, Vol. II, 263.

[1420] Kerenyi, *Asklepios*, 5, fig. 3.

Figure 94. The city-ship of Tiber island, as reconstructed by a draftsman in the sixteenth century.

The City-Ship

The Egyptians commemorated the ship's daily revolution by fashioning an image of the great god's barge, placing it on a sledge-shaped stand, and *dragging it around the walls of the city*1421—for the city wall denoted the primeval rampart, the path of the ship. "This Great God travels in this city, on the water," states one text.1422 Thus, the Mesopotamian Surripak is "the city of the Ship," corresponding to Homer's Mycenae, the "ark-city." The Greek cities of Thebes, Argos, and Berytus are connected by Faber with the ancient "ship" names *theba*, *argha*, and *baris* or *barit.*1423

The Temple-Ship

Just as the Egyptians conveyed the sacred ship around the wall of the city so did they also pull it around the wall of the *temple*, in imitation of the cosmic ship which coursed daily around the great god's dwelling. Egyptian illustrations depict the shrine as an inseparable part of the boat. And the texts confirm this connection: "The Sektet boat receiveth fair winds, and the heart of him who is *in the shrine thereof* rejoiceth."1424

A Sumerian hymn to the Kes temple equates the dwelling with "the princely Magur-boat, floating in the sky."1425

Good temple, built on a good place,

Kes temple, built on a good place,

Like [or as] *the princely Magur-boat, floating in the sky.*

Like the pure Magur-boat . . .

Like the boat of heaven, foundation of all the lands,

Cabin of the banda-boat which shines from the beaches,

*Temple, roaring like an ox, bellowing like a breed bull.*1426

The Greeks designated a temple and a ship by the same word, *naus* or *naos.* Our word *nave* (from the Latin *navis*) possesses the dual significance of a temple and a ship.1427

The Wheel-Ship

1421 Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 66.

1422 Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 273.

1423 *A Dissertation*, Vol. I, 177-78.

1424 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 13. [Emphasis added.]

1425 Gragg, *The Kes Temple Hymn*, 168.

1426 *Ibid.*

1427 Faber gives several examples of ship-temples from India, Italy, and Ireland. *Origins*, Vol. II, 288-89.

One of the most unnatural aspects of the great god's "chariot" (wheel) is that it functions also as a ship. In commemoration of the god's remarkable vehicle, the ancients often placed the sacred ship on wheels, drawing it on *dry land.* Scandinavian rock carvings depict the "wheel of the sun" resting in a cosmic boat (fig. 93), and from Assyria to Britain to Polynesia images of cosmic ships either contain wheels or are set on wheels. The vehicle of the Chinese Huang-ti was both a ship and a chariot.[1428] Similarly, the Sumerian magur-boat receives the appellation "chariot." Cosmic ship and world wheel are one.

Figure 95. Egg of Lunus.

Figure 96. Atum, seated within the Aten, sails in the ship of the Eye.

The Egg-Ship

"The god Lunus of Heliopolis and Carrhae," writes Faber, "was an egg, on the top of which rested a crescent formed like a boat."[1429] (fig. 95) But the god whom classical writers translated as Lunus was the Egyptian Aah, or Thoth, whose hieroglyph was the crescent-enclosure , and one can reasonably assume that, in accord with this symbol, the egg originally stood within, or upon, the crescent boat. Thus the Hindus knew the ship Argha as the lower half of a primeval egg which floated on the waters of Chaos.[1430]

The Eye-Ship

An Egyptian *Coffin Text* speaks of "the barge, the Eye of thy father."[1431] Elsewhere one finds, "I am the Great One in the midst of his Eye, sitting and kneeling in the great barge of Khepri [the Turning One]."[1432] "O you who are in the Eye of the Bark of the God."[1433] In precise accord with such language the symbolic Eye was regularly inscribed upon ships of Egypt (fig. 96). Interestingly, the same symbol appears on the Greek Argo. A

[1428] O'Neill, *Night of the Gods*, 585; see references in Nibley, "Tenting, Toll, and Taxing," 602, note 19.

[1429] *Origins*, Vol. I, 195; see plate I, fig. 11, 22.

[1430] *Ibid.*, 192; Guenon, *Le Roi du Monde*, 92, note 4.

[1431] Piankoff, *Wandering of the Soul*, 14.

[1432] *Ibid.*, 28.

[1433] *Pyramid Text* 124.

Phoenician terra-cotta model of a galley from Amathus reveals the central Eye upon its prow.[1434] The Eye occurs also on Chinese boats.[1435]

The Vase-Ship

Reflecting the identity of the ship and receptacle is the English word *vessel*, meaning both "container" and "ship." The German *Schiff* means, at once, "ship" and "water container," and the roots of the German *Kanne*, "pot," and *Kahn*, "boat," are identical.[1436]

In Egyptian symbolism, Piankoff tells us, "The jar is the cradle and at the same time a vessel for crossing the celestial waters."[1437] The receptacles in which Hindu priests offered fruits and flowers to the gods were called *arghas*. But the Argha was the ship on the cosmic sea.[1438]

The Shield-Ship

Norse mythology knows the "shield-god" Ull, the son of Thor's wife Sif by an unknown father. "The shield, according to the skalds, was 'the ship of Ull,' that on which he traveled—a reference to a lost mythology . . ." writes MacCulloch.[1439] Similarly, King Arthur's magic shield Prydwen served as the hero's ship.[1440]

The Throne-Ship

In the *Pyramid Texts* the king ascends to the "throne which is in your bark, O Re."[1441] And the *Book of the Dead* locates the throne in the same ship: "I shall advance to my throne which is in the boat of Re. I shall not be molested, and I shall not suffer shipwreck from my throne which is in the boat of Re, the mighty one."[1442]

The Serpent (Dragon)-Ship

G.E. Smith writes: "The custom of employing the name 'dragon' in reference to a boat is found in places as far apart as Scandinavia and China . . . In India the Makara, the prototype of the dragon, was sometimes represented as a boat which was looked upon as a fish-avatar of Vishnu, Buddha or some other deity."[1443]

Numerous Egyptian sources identify the ship with the cosmic serpent—who is also the "pathway" traversed by the boat. The *Book of the Dead*, for example, describes the ship sailing over the "back" of the serpent-dragon Apepi.[1444] A dragon-like creature often serves as a ship in Mesopotamian cylinder seals, just as the serpentine Chronos forms the path of the ship of Helios

One could, of course, endlessly expand the list of such connections between the enclosure and the ship. One might even say that the ship has no independent existence apart from the enclosure.

[1434] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 820.

[1435] *Ibid.*

[1436] Neumann, *op. cit.*, 256.

[1437] Piankoff, *Litany of Re*, 64; *Pyramid Texts* 437, 1185.

[1438] *Asiatic Researches*, Vol. III, 134.

[1439] MacCulloch, *Eddic Mythology*, 157.

[1440] Faber, *Origins*, Vol. III, 91-92, 177.

[1441] *Pyramid Text* 336.

[1442] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 230.

[1443] *Op. cit.*, 117, note 1.

[1444] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 297.

Nor can one ignore the widespread connection of the great god's ship with the cosmic mountain. In accord with the archaic forms and , *the ship rests on the mountaintop, providing the Mount with its cleft summit.* From Egypt to Mesopotamia to Scandinavia one finds the images of the ship brought into connection with the pillared crescent . Fig. 101f, from southwest Norway can be compared to a prehistoric drawing from Egypt (fig. 102f). In the latter instance the pillared crescent is shown twice, while one end of the ship terminates in a crescent-enclosure .

For a more formal version of the ship and Mount I offer details from two illustration in the *Book of the Dead* (fig. 97). In both drawings the ship, in the form of a double serpent, rests upon the Primeval Hill. While one shows the throne within the ship, the other shows the steps of the Primeval Hill: "I have reached the high portals of the Entourage of Re, who reckon up the *pillared* bark," announces the king in a *Coffin Text.*1445

The subject is a *revolving* ship, traversing a circle around the summit of the cosmic mountain, , , , . That is, the Mount serves as the axis of the ship's revolution: "I assume my pure seat which is in the bow of the Bark of Re. It is the sailors who row Re, and it is the sailors who convey Re round about the Mount of Glory, and it is they who will convey me round about the Mount of Glory."1446 "Hail, Only One! behold thou art in the Sektet boat as it goeth round about the Mount of Glory."1447

When the texts describe the god "sailing over the supports of Shu,"1448 or engaged in his "voyage over the Leg of Ptah,"1449 they do not depart from the integrated symbolism of the world pillar, for the supports of Shu ( ) and the leg of Ptah refer to one and the same cosmic column.

It is surely significant that in both Egypt and Mesopotamia the cosmic pillar appears as the "mooring post" of the great god's ship. What the Sumerians called *dimgal* (Babylonian tarkullu) and the Egyptians *mena* or *menat* may be translated either as the "Binding Post" or "Mooring Post." The Egyptian image of the *menat* is , depicting the enclosed sun-cross atop the cosmic pillar; but *menat* is a common term for the post to which the ship of heaven is tied or moored, and the verb *mena* means "to tie the boat to the post."

One can also understand the axis-pillar as the ship's *mast.* We earlier noted that the great father, considered as an extension of the Mount, becomes the central (third) peak rising between the two peaks of the right and left. When one views the crescent (two peaks) as the ship of heaven the equivalence of the Mount and the ship's "mast" becomes self-evident. The general tradition is observed by Faber: "A vast centrical mountain formed the mast or boss of the mundane boat: and the great father, rising out of the sacred umbilicus of the arkite

---

1445 Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 186. [Emphasis added.] The close connection of the ship and the Mount of Glory is apparent in another hymn from the same texts: "The Great Ones who are in the Mount of Glory appear, the Followers of the Lords of all rejoice, the crews and servants of the bark are glad, and those who are in the Mount of Glory are happy when they see you in this dignity of yours." *Ibid.*, 39.

1446 *Pyramid Text* 710-11.

1447 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 478.

1448 Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 261.

1449 Renouf, *op. cit.*, 166. A widespread association of the ship and the axis-pillar is noted by Cirlot: " . . . Many primitive peoples place ships on the end of a pole or on the roof of a house . . . all these forms, then, represent the axis valley-mountain, or the symbolism of verticality and the idea of height. An obvious association here is with all the symbols of the world-axis." *A Dictionary of Symbols*, 295.

world, supplied to it the place of a mast. That mountain was the hill of paradise."[1450] The Hindu symbol of the ship on the mountaintop, according to Faber, is the trident of Shiva, composed of a rod or staff surmounted by a "lunette" with a spike rising in its centre. The trident, he states, denotes "the ship Argha under its sidereal form of a crescent with Shiva standing in the midst of it and supplying the place of a mast."[1451]

This identity of the ship's mast and the axis-pillar is also noted by Coomaraswamy, who relates an introductory verse of the *Dasakumaccrita*, listing "the mast of the ship of the earth" as an aspect of "the axis of the universe." In the construction of Hindu stupas the universe axis was represented by a central finial often extending upward to an impressive height. The column bore the title "sky-scraping" *yasti*, or "mast."[1452]

It is noteworthy also that the Sumerian *dimgal*, the "mooring post" or "binding post," often receives the translation "ship's mast."[1453] In our world a mast and a mooring post are wholly distinct, but in the symbolism of the cosmic ship and mountain they are strictly synonymous, as we should expect.

By understanding the ship's mast as an extension of the cosmic mountain one perceives a deeper meaning in the steps which rise in the centre of the Egyptian boat illustrated below (fig. 97). The steps, as the most common Egyptian symbol of the Primeval Hill, here replace the ship's mast. And it is no accident, for while the Egyptian *khet* means "steps" (Primeval Hill), *khet* also means "ship's mast" (*Primeval Hill=steps=mast=Primeval Hill*). The symbolism becomes all the more fascinating when one discovers that the Hindus identified the steps or pyramid as both the polar Mount Meru and the mast of the ship Argha.

Figure 97. Two Egyptian versions of the cosmic ship and Primeval Hill.

Such integrated symbolism underlines the fundamental relation of the crescent-ship to the cosmic mountain. Faber thus concludes: "Here we may perceive the reason why the pagans deemed those mountains peculiarly sacred, which branched out at their summits into either two or three smaller peaks or tumuli. They considered them, in the one case, as naturally shadowing out the holy hill with the navicular Moon resting on its top, and in the other case, as still being a physical copy of the same holy hill surmounted by the Moon, but the Moon now rendered complete by the addition of the centrical mast or pilot . . . "1454

[1450] *Origins*, Vol. II, 20.

[1451] *Ibid*., 382.

[1452] Coomaraswamy, "Symbolism of the Dome," 18. The mast of the cosmic ship of Life coincides "with the vertical axis of the house and the axle-tree of the chariot," writes Coomaraswamy. *Ibid*., 11.

[1453] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *The Collection of the Sumerian Temple Hymns*, 21, 67, 151.

It follows from this line of evidence that the Egyptian mountain signs and —offering a natural representation of the two- or three-peaked summit—must have possessed the same import as the ship of heaven; both the ship and the cleft summit had their reference in the crescent, visually united to the celestial column so as to form the image . The ship on the mountaintop merges with the two peaks of the right and left. Consistent with this overlapping imagery are those prehistoric Egyptian vase paintings depicting the cosmic ship bearing the mountain sign .1455

It is, of course, the universal opinion of Egyptologists that the mountain glyph represents two geographical peaks real or imaginary, from which the solar orb rises each morning.

But if the analysis set forth here is correct, *the twin peaks of the Mount, being synonymous with the ship of heaven, must have revolved daily around the sun-god's enclosure—in flagrant contradiction of natural geography!*

Figure 98. The twin-peaked Khut , depicted as an inseparable part of the cosmic ship.

Could the Egyptians have believed that the cleft summit sailed with, or as, the cosmic ship? Actually, it was not uncommon for the Egyptian artists to place the Khut (Mount of Glory) within the revolving ship, proclaiming the essential identity of the two images (fig. 98). Of this identity Clark provides two examples. In each case the Aten rests between the peaks of the right and left, which in turn sit squarely in the cosmic ship.

Responding to the first instance, Clark calls the cleft hill the "eastern horizon," adding that "this hill is *incongruously placed in the solar boat.*"1456 In the second illustration the Aten "rests on the twin-peaked mountain of sunrise. *Against all verisimilitude* this figure, mountain and all, is being conveyed across the waters of the heavenly ocean in a boat."1457 As bizarre as this sailing mountaintop may appear to conventional mythologists, it is, to us, one of several independent proofs that the mountain sign means simply the revolving Saturnian crescent, here rendered naturalistically in its mythical form as two peaks. When the texts say that the god "sails round about in the Khut ," they mean literally that *he sails within the cleft peak as in a ship.* Of course, to reckon with these concepts one must abandon once and for all the standard translation of Khut as "horizon." The twin peaks are anything but a fixture of the local landscape. (Though the most common position of the mountain image is upright, some illustrations depict it in an *inverted* position ,

---

1454 *Origins*, Vol. III, 205.

1455 Newberry, "The Petty-Kingdom of the Harpoon and Egypt's Earliest Mediterranean Port," 18n.

1456 *Op. cit.*, 252. [Emphasis added.]

1457 *Ibid.*, 251. [Emphasis added.]

again contradicting geography.) Moreover, the distinction between the upright and inverted positions of the revolving twin peaks is crucial to the symbolism of the archaic "day" and "night," as I shall show.

Equally important is the relation of the ship to the cosmic twins. The image tells us that the ship itself divides the enclosure into two portions of light and shadow. Accordingly, though the Egyptian word *At* denotes the boat of heaven, the same word means "to divide, bisect." The language conforms precisely to the cosmology of the crescent-enclosure, half dark, half light.

But the Egyptians also identified the ship with the twins Isis-Nephthys, the "two eyes" (the left and right positions of the revolving crescent).[1458] "Thy right eye is in the Sektet boat, and thy left eye is in the Atet boat," declares the *Book of the Dead.*[1459] In the ritual for the deceased, a chapter of the *Book of the Dead* is to be "said over a Bark of Re coloured in pure green. And thou shall place a picture of the deceased at the prow thereof. And make a Sektet boat on the right side of it and an Atet boat on the left side of it."[1460] Together, the boats of the left and right compose the protective enclosure or bond, represented by the *shen* sign .

In its every feature, then, the great god's ship conforms to the revolving Saturnian crescent—enclosing the central sun, resting upon the cosmic mountain, and dividing the circumpolar enclosure into divisions of light and shadow.

The Crescent-Arms

To terrestrial observers gazing up the axis-pillar, the Saturnian crescent appeared as two outstretched arms reaching around and holding aloft the crescent-enclosure .

No one considering the image of the sun-in-crescent resting atop the cosmic pillar will have any difficulty understanding why the crescent came to be viewed as the outstretched arms of the great mother, or of the heaven-sustaining god.

Of course, it is only in combination with the central sun and pillar that the crescent could acquire this significance. Nothing in our crescent moon, for example, could possibly suggest the upraised arms of a human-like figure. In ancient art, however, the crescent is often located behind the shoulders of a divinity (as suggested by the form) and in certain cases *replaces the arms.* (In fig. 99 I offer several examples from the Americas.)

In fig. 100 the Hindu twins Jagan-Nath and Bal-Rama, bearing the respective black and white countenances of Shiva and Vishnu (with whom they are identified), stand to the right and left of the goddess Subhadra, a form of Devi. The "body" of each of the three deities appears to be composed of two eggs ([twofold] egg="body"); upon the bodies of Jagan-Nath and Bal-Rama rests a crescent-like form and in each crescent appears the head of the deity. Commenting on this image, Faber writes: "The crescent itself exhibits the rude semblance of arms, as the twofold egg does that of a body: but a sort of standard attached to the frame on which the three divinities are seated, sufficiently shows that *the apparent arms are really a lunette*, for the standard displays in a black background the mystic crescent with a circular ball within it representing the head of the deity."[1461]

[1458] *Pyramid Texts* 1981-82.

[1459] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 507.

[1460] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 259.

[1461] *Origins*, Vol II; see plate I, fig. 16. [Emphasis added.]

Figure 99. (a) Columbian pictograph;

Figure 99. (b) Columbian pictograph;

Figure 99. (c) Bolivian pictograph;

Figure 99. (d) Brazilian pictograph;

Figure 99. (e) Arapahp sign for "person";

Figure 99. (f) North American goddess.

Figure 100. Hindu twins, Jagan-Nath and Bal-Rama, with semicircular arms, stand to the right and left of the goddess Subhadra.

A more pure form of the crescent- or horned-arms occurs in Scandinavian rock drawings, repeatedly exhibiting the image along with numerous variations which present the semi-circular shape alternately as horns or as outstretched arms of more human-like forms (fig. 101). This mixture of images, in fact, leaves the archaeologists undecided as to whether, in the simple form , it is arms, or horns, that are horn-like arms, or arms extended upward *to form a crescent.* In other instances, the human figure does not stand in the boat, but holds the boat aloft on upraised arms (figs. 101a, 101b). Moreover, in some cases the ship rests on the human shoulders in such a way as to *replace the arms* (figs. 101c, 101d).

Figure 101. (a)

Figure 101. (b)

Figure 101. (c)

Figure 101. (d) In numerous Scandinavian rock drawings the cosmic ship either rests on the upraised arms of a Heaven Man or actually *forms* the god's arms (a, b, c & d);

Figure 101. (e)

Figure 101. (f) In other drawings from the same religion a pillared crescent stands in the ship. (e & f)

Figure 102. Prehistoric Egyptian images of the cosmic ship alternately show the Heaven Man (with upraised arms) or the pillared crescent standing in the ship.

Figure 103. Predynastic Egyptian figurines.

Figure 104. Cretan mother goddess.

Figure 105. Symbols of the Phoenician goddess Tanit.

Figure 106. Hittite image.

The cosmic divinity with upraised arms will be found in all quarters of the world (figs. 103, 104, 105 & 106). Most crucial are the associations of such figures with the axis-pillar and enclosure. The mythical Afrite of Arabian myth was an apostate angel, "tall and black" (Saturn="black" planet), whose trunk formed a vast pillar, his arms stretching heavenward.

Compare the description of the Hindu Manu, the "glorious sage" and first king: "With *arms uplifted* and *poised on one leg*, he, the king of men, practiced hard austerities in the *Badari* forest, named Vishala. And there he did arduous penance for ten thousand years with his head downwards and his eyes unwinking."[1462]

[1462] Suryakants, *The Flood Legend in Sanskrit Literature*, 4. [Emphasis added.]

Of the Iranian Mithra, the *Zend Avesta* declares: “With his arms lifted up towards Immortality, Mithra, the lord of wide pastures, drives forward . . . in a beautiful chariot [the world wheel] that drives on, ever-swift, adorned with all sorts of ornaments, and made of gold.”

I pose the question: are the upraised arms an accidental convention, or an integral component of the Saturnian image ? A conclusive answer is provided by Egyptian sources.

The Ka-Arms

One of the most familiar Egyptian terms is *ka*, the symbol for which is two upraised arms . Though the word *ka* occurs with great frequency in the hieroglyphic texts, few writers can agree on a tangible meaning. Budge confesses the general lack of agreement on the subject: “The exact meaning of this word [*ka*] is unknown, but it has been translated by double, image, genius, subconscious self, natural disposition, abstract personality, character, mind, etc.; all these meanings are suggested by their contexts, but the real meaning of the word has yet to be discovered.”1463

“The closest approximation to the Egyptian notion of Ka is ‘vital force,’” writes Frankfort. “The qualification ‘vital’ frees it from the precision of the natural sciences, which would, of course, be an anachronism: and the combination ‘vital force’ may stand for a somewhat vague popular notion without mechanistic implications. The Ka, according to this view, should be impersonal and should be present in varying strength in different persons or in the same person at different times.”1464

In none of the common interpretations is the Ka regarded as a *visible* power. Instead, the experts tend to treat the Ka as a hidden source of life. Clark tells us that “the Ka is a symbol of the transmission of life power from the gods to man. But it is not only the act, it is also the source of this power. Everyone is a receiver of divine power and everyone is an individual, so each has his own Ka.”1465

I am not prepared to argue that these modern-sounding definitions are wholly wrong—only that they focus on derived, rather than concrete meanings. *In its original sense the Ka is exactly what its glyph indicates—two upraised arms*— ! The ancients *saw* the two arms of the Ka, and every aspect of the symbolism springs from a once visible relationship of these arms to the great god and his dwelling.

In recording the Saturnian configuration nothing could have been more natural than the interpretation of the crescent as two arms, straining upward. To present the “arms” in human form, is, of course, the only possible way to express pictorially this mythical interpretation of the crescent (just as the only way to depict the crescent’s mythical form as horns was *to draw it as horns* or to place the crescent-enclosure on the head of a Bull).

To test the proposed connection of the Ka-arms with the Saturnian image , several questions require investigation:

Do Egyptian sources locate the central sun within the Ka-arms? Are the cosmic ship and horns identified with these outstretched arms? Do the Ka-arms reach around the enclosure? Do the arms constitute the cleft summit of the world mountain? Is the Ka one half of a twin circle?

1463 Quoted in Perry, *op. cit.*, 138.

1464 *From Fetish to God*, 328.

1465 *Op. cit.*, 62.

Figure 107. (a) The Ka;

Figure 107. (b) The Ka resting on the primordial "perch";

Figure 107. (c) The Ka embracing the royal "name."

Figure 108. The arms of the Abyss supporting the Aten.

On each of these questions, Egyptian sources yield a clear-cut reply.

1. While most analyses discuss the Ka as a (hidden) dimension of the human personality, Egyptian sources consistently locate the Ka not in this world, but among the gods. The point is noticed by Breasted: "... The ka was not an element of the personality, as is so often stated. It seems to me indeed from a study of the *Pyramid Texts*, that the nature of the ka has been fundamentally misunderstood . . . It was in the world of the *hereafter* that he [the Ka] chiefly if not exclusively had his abode . . ."[1466]

When the king dies "he goes to his Ka in the sky,"[1467] and here, in heaven, the Ka protects him from the destructive demons of Chaos.[1468] But why is this protective genius portrayed as two outstretched arms ? The reason is that the heaven attained by the deceased king is the dwelling of the central sun, who resides within the embrace of two shining arms raised aloft in the Abyss. "This god is like this," states one mythological text: "Two arms guard the body of this god."[1469] Another invokes Atum shining forth from "the arms of Aker."[1470] The great god Re "is like this on the arms of the Mysterious One."[1471] "The Aten is in the Tuat. The arms of the Mysterious Face come out and lift it up,"[1472] reads another text.

Thus Osiris "rests" within the two arms of the Ka: "Hail, O Osiris, thy ka hath come unto thee and . . . thou resteth therein in thy name of Ka-Hetep."[1473] "Thy father Tatunen lifteth thee up and he stretcheth out his two hands behind thee."[1474]

[1466] *Op. cit.*, 231.

[1467] *Development of Religion and Thought in Ancient Egypt*, 52.

[1468] *Ibid.*, 53; *Pyramid Text* 1431.

[1469] Thus the dead king Pepi "lives with his ka; he [the *ka*] expels the evil that is before Pepi, he removes the evil that is behind Pepi, like the boomerangs of the lord of Letoplis [the cosmic city], which remove the evil that is before him and expel the evil that is behind him." *Pyramid Text* 908, translated in Breasted, *op. cit.*, 53.

[1470] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 212.

[1471] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 71.

[1472] *Ibid.*, 94.

[1473] *Ibid.*, 376.

[1474] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 388.

In truth, the saying “to go to his ka” means to attain heaven and thus to reside in the protective embrace of the heaven-sustaining god .

*O Re-Atum, your son comes to you, the King comes to you; raise him up, enclose him in your embrace . . .*1475

*It is pleasant for me . . . within the arms of my father, within the arms of Atum.*1476

*O Atum, set your arms about the King . . . O Atum, set your protection over this King . . .*1477

*Go up on high, and it will be well with you, it will be pleasant for you in the embrace of your father, in the embrace of Atum.*1478

To represent the union of the king with the outstretched arms of heaven the Egyptians depicted the Ka enclosing the cartouche or royal name of the Horus-king (fig. 107c). In the hieroglyphs the Ka-arms signify “to embrace” and “to protect.” “The royal Ka put his arms around the Horus name to protect it from harm,” notes Clark.1479 There is no need to seek out hidden metaphysical implications in this symbolism, for the Ka was in every way an emblem of the *visible* enclosure, the *protective* rampart in heaven.

2. That the Ka-arms pertain to the “embracing” crescent will explain why the sun-god *sails* on the two arms; the same text which describes Re “like this on the arms of the Mysterious One,” declares, “This Great God sails over this cavern [the hollow of the Tuat] *on the arms* of the Mysterious One.”1480

A spell from the *Coffin Texts* has the king appearing “in the bark of the morning . . . in the arms of Anup.”1481 And Osiris sails “on the two arms of Horus in his [Horus’] name of ‘Henu-bark.’”1482 This equation of the ship and the outstretched arms finds repeated illustration in the cosmic scenes depicted on coffins and papyri.

It follows from this identity, of course, that the arms of the Ka are synonymous with the luminous horns of the celestial bull. And here lies the simple explanation why the Egyptian word for “bull” is also *ka*, written with the same arms , to which the determinatives are added. (The subject is the generative Bull of Heaven.)1483

I know the secret of Hieraconopolis.

It is the two hands of horns *and what is in them.*1484

The embracing hands or arms mean the same thing as the horns.

1475 *Ibid.*, 86.

1476 *Pyramid Text* 160.

1477 *Pyramid Text* 151.

1478 *Pyramid Texts* 1653-54.

1479 *Pyramid Text* 212.

1480 *Op. cit.*, 232. [Emphasis added.]

1481 Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 93.

1482 Lacau, *op. cit.*, 31.

1483 Hassan, *op. cit.*, 12.

1484 Newberry, “Two Cults of the Old Kingdom,” 28. [Emphasis added.]

3. If the outstretched arms, as suggested by the configuration , reach around the circumpolar enclosure, then “to go to his Ka” must signify the king’s rebirth in the primeval womb. Did the Egyptians identify the Ka-arms with the mother goddess?

“When the dead king was placed in his coffin,” writes Piankoff, “he was placed *between the arms of his mother Nut.*”[1485] The king’s return to the mother womb is expressed in the *Pyramid Texts*:

Thou art given to thy mother Nut, in her name coffin;

She embraces thee, in her name sarcophagus.[1486]

Nut, the “coffin,” means Nut, the womb of primeval birth (or rebirth). And to dwell in the womb is to reside within the *embracing* arms of the goddess. Thus, the very goddess in whose *womb* shines the central sun is also described enclosing and protecting the sun, or king, with *outstretched arms.*

I am thy mother Nut. My arms encircle thee in life and health.[1487]

The arms of Nut who bore you are about you so that your beauty may be upraised.[1488]

Words spoken by Isis the Divine:

I have come, I encircle my son with my arms . . . I shall be his protection eternally.[1489]

. . . The goddess Maat embraceth thee.[1490]

Figure 109. Nut embracing the Aten with outstretched arms.

In apparent defiance of nature, the texts proclaim that the Ka-arms *give birth* to the sun-god. The *Pyramid Texts* extol “the Great One who came into being in the arms of Her who bore the god.”[1491] In the *Instruction of Ptahhotep* appears the statement, “He is thy son, whom thy Ka hath begotten for thee.”[1492] And elsewhere we read: “Thy mother bringeth thee forth upon her hands, that thou mayest give light to the whole circumference which the Aten enlighteneth.”[1493]

[1485] Piankoff, *The Pyramid Text of Unas*, 43. [Emphasis added.]

[1486] *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 21.

[1487] *Ibid.*, 21, quoting *Pyramid Text* 616.

[1488] *Ibid.*, 114.

[1489] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 54.

[1490] *Ibid.*, 83.

[1491] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 4.

[1492] *Pyramid Text* 258.

In the tomb of Tut-Ankh-Amon appear four gold coffins containing the extracted viscera, each coffin being represented by a goddess, and symbolically enclosing one of the Four Sons of Horus. The inscriptions upon the lids of the coffins leave no doubt as to the identity of the enclosing arms and the protective womb:

> *Words spoken by Isis: I close my arms over that which is in me. I protect Imesty who is in me, Imesty, Osiris King Neb-Kheperu-Re, justified before the Great God.*
>
> *Words spoken by Nephthys: I embrace with my arms that which is in me, I protect Hapy of Osiris King Neb-Kheperu-Re, justified before the Great God.*
>
> *Words spoken by Neith: I encircle with my arms that which is in me, I protect Dua-mutef who is in me, Dua-mutef, Osiris King Neb-Kheperu-Re, justified before the Great God.*
>
> *Words spoken by Selkit: My two arms are on what is in me. I protect Keb-senuf who is in me, Keb-senuf, Osiris King Neb-Kheperu-Re, the justified one.*[1494]

The inscriptions explicitly declare that the arms of the goddess enclose the god-king within the womb. That the goddess (womb) *is* the arms, and that these arms are those of the Ka, is confirmed by a design in the funerary temple of King Seti I (fig. 110). The design shows a female figure embracing the king. *On the head of the goddess stands the two arms of the Ka within which is written the goddess’ name.*[1495]

In depicting the Ka, Egyptian artists were obviously constrained by the awkwardness which would result from the human-like representation of the image as a man-child within the arms of a god or goddess. In our world one does not embrace a child with *uplifted arms.* To accommodate the primal image to a natural anthropomorphic mode of representation, the artists showed the arms twice—first, as the arms of the human, or personified Ka, embracing and protecting the man-child; and second, as upraised arms placed upon the head of the Ka-divinity. It is the latter representation which expresses the cosmic form of the protective embrace.

Figure 110. The divinized Ka embraces the man-child.

[1493] Erman, *The Literature of the Ancient Egyptians*, 59.

[1494] Renouf, *op. cit.*, 24.

[1495] Piankoff, *op. cit.*, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 19.

Figure 111. The Egyptian goddess Isis, whose upraised arms enclosed the central sun.

Hence, the goddess Isis, often depicted enclosing her son Horus upon her lap (womb), is also shown standing erect with arms held aloft (fig. 111). Since the uplifted arms, by Egyptian symbolism, mean "protect" and "embrace," one can be certain that the raised arms of Isis pertain directly to Isis' role as the "protectress" of the sun-god. Cosmic symbolism was not determined by what is "natural" in the human world so much as by the literal form of the Saturn apparition .

The outstretched arms of the Egyptian great god or goddess hold aloft and encircle the celestial earth.

*O King, you have enclosed every god within your arms, their lands and all their possessions. O King, you are great and round as the circle which surrounds the Hau-nebut.*1496

*The earth is raised on high under the sky by your arms, O Tefenet.*1497

An identical picture occurs in the Iranian *Zend Avesta*, where Mithra, "with arms lifted up towards immortality," encloses "the boundary of the earth."

*And do thou, O Mithra! encompassing all this around, do thou reach it, all over, with thy arms.*1498

Pointing to the same relation is the common Egyptian phrase "house of the Ka."1499 To dwell in the cosmic temple is to rest within the arms, and the texts thus speak of "the two arms of the temple."1500

4. Among the Egyptian gods none is more often depicted with upraised arms than the pillar-god Shu, between whose arms rests the primeval sun Atum, or Re. Egyptian reliefs regularly portray Shu standing erect and sustaining the body (womb) of the goddess Nut with his arms held in virtually the same position as those of the Ka-symbol . *The arms which enclose the sun-god belong to the cosmic mountain.* Thus we read: "The mountain will hold out its arms to him and the living Ka's will accompany him."1501

The hieroglyphic symbol of the Shu-pillar or mountain is —called "the two pillars of heaven." The two pillars, in other words, are really one pillar, with two arms. Hence Re, who shines between the mountain peaks

---

1496 Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 67.

1497 *Pyramid Text* 847.

1498 Darmesteter, *op. cit.*, Part II, 146; Perry, *op. cit.*, 138-39.

1499 *Pyramid Text* 1405.

1500 Énel, *Les Origines de la Genèse et l'Enseignement des Temples de l'Ancienne Égypte*, 211.

1501 Piankofff, *The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 125.

of the right and left, also rests atop the forked pillar of Shu, whose two secondary supports are the embracing arms of the Ka. “Thou seest Re upon the pillars which are the arms of heaven,” reads the *Book of the Dead.*[1502]

In the *Papyrus of Mut-hetep* the embracing arms are those of Tatunen, the acknowledged personification of the Primeval Hill. “Thy father Tatunen, placing his hands behind thee, raiseth thee up.”[1503] What are these two arms of the Primeval Hill other than the two peaks of the right and left?

Most relevant in this connection is the hieroglyphic symbol for “living Re”— . The image not only shows the sun-god resting within the upraised Ka-arms, but presents the arms as an extension of the heavens pillar, so that the entire configuration suggests a human form virtually identical to that of Shu in the above-mentioned illustrations. The same image in yet more human form is offered by the hieroglyph , symbol of the elevated god and the cosmic summit. And in the glyph the Egyptians depicted the personified pillar holding aloft the symbol of heaven . What is clear from a survey of the related texts and symbols is that the Egyptians conceived the arms of the Mount or god in visible terms. When the king, in a *Pyramid Text*, beseeches the god, “O Shu, may your two arms be behind Teti,” one witnesses the influence of things seen, not abstract speculation.

In the signs , , and , we have three closely related ways of representing the prototypal form , and it is this prototype which enables one to see why the Egyptians celebrated the Ka-arms as the *two peaks* of the Mount of Glory. The Ka-sign and the mountain sign gave pictorial expression to two equally compelling interpretations of the pillared crescent. Once one perceives this underlying identity of the arms and the twofold peak, it is impossible not to notice that the Egyptians themselves remembered the connection through many centuries (even if they did not understand it perfectly). Repeatedly the artists showed two arms extended upward from the cleft peak (fig. 112). As is usually the case with the most significant symbolic relationships, the union of the arms and two peaks is set forth *in spite of* its seeming mockery of the natural order.

Figure 112. Khepre, residing in the Aten, appears between the two arms, which correspond to the two peaks of the Khut.

[1502] Clark, *op. cit.*, 233.

[1503] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 587.

The equivalence of the Ka-arms and two peaks is confirmed by other symbols also. One of the Egyptian names of the twofold Mount of Glory was Aker, drawn as a twin-headed lion .[1504] Just as the Aten rests on the two peaks of the Khut , so also does it lie on the "back of Aker." In one text the sun-god Re commands Aker, "O, give me your arms, receive me . . . I give light for you, I dispel your darkness."[1505] The arms of Aker can be nothing other than the two peaks from which the sun-god shines forth each day, for the *Book of Caverns* says that the "One of the Tuat goes forth [shines] from the arms of Aker."[1506] The same source also invokes:

Duati, the Infernal One, who comes out of the arms of Aker.[1507]

Atum, who comes out of the arms of Aker. Ifeny, who comes out of the arms of Aker.[1508]

Though the terminology will offend the modern ear, it is perfectly consistent with the cosmic image to speak of the "two arms of the mountain," and this is exactly what the Egyptians meant by the phrase "the arms of Aker."

5. It remains to be asked, then, what was the relationship of the crescent-arms to the cosmic twins. Certainly one cannot ignore the fact that the Egyptian *ka* is often translated "double" or "twin." "The ka of the king is his twin; it accompanies him through life as a protective genius, it acts as his twin and his protector in death."[1509]

The imagery of the king has its origin in the image of the Universal Monarch. If the arms depicted by the Ka sign refer to the Saturnian crescent, reaching halfway around the circumpolar enclosure, this in itself is sufficient to explain the Ka's designation as the "twin." In the configuration the twin (or half the enclosure) *is* the two arms.

In accord with the counterposed positions of the revolving crescent (and , or and), Egyptian representations of the arms show alternating relationships to the central sun. While the upright position of the arms is very common in Egyptian art, one finds innumerable instances in which the arms embrace the Aten either from the right or left, or from above. Of the latter instance I give three examples (figs. 81, 113, 114). Like so many Egyptian representations, all of these examples juxtapose different mythical versions of the crescent. In the first (fig. 81) we see the man-child sitting upon the mountain symbol and resting within the enclosure of the Aten, here presented as a circular serpent with tail in mouth. This circle, in turn, rests upon the horns of a bull whose head is placed between the twin lions Shu and Tefnut, representing the peaks of the right and left. But reaching around half of the serpentine band *from above* are two arms—clearly the same arms which elsewhere embrace the Aten from below.

[1504] Budge, *From Fetish to God*, 401.

[1505] The reader will have no difficulty seeing that the Aker glyph simply translates the image (here) into leonine form.

[1506] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 71.

[1507] *Ibid.*

[1508] *Ibid.*

[1509] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 69.

Figure 113.

Figure 114. To depict the full cycle of the "day" Egyptian artists showed the outstretched arms embracing the Aten alternately from above and from below. (113 & 114)

It is my contention that such symbolism represents alternate phases of the archaic day, each "day" being marked by a full revolution of the crescent around the enclosure, as it passes from its position below to an inverted position above and back to below again.

As figures of the revolving crescent, the upright and inverted arms are synonymous with the cosmic twins, who personify the above and below (as well as the right and left). Just this connection of the arms with the twins is indicated in the *Papyrus* of *Pa-di-Amon* (fig. 113). The illustration shows the Aten in the centre flanked by the two goddesses. Two male figures are also present, one above and one below, each reaching around the Aten with outstretched arms, so that together the upright and inverted arms compose a complete enclosure—the circle of the cosmic twins.[1510] The same relationship of the upright and inverted arms to the circle of the Aten will be seen also in the *Papyrus of Khonsu-Renep*.[1511] (fig. 114)

Closely related are the symbolic representations which portray the arms alternately reaching round the Aten from the right and left. One such example occurs in the *Papyrus of Khonsu-mes A*. Here the arms are explicitly connected with the symbols of Abtet and Amentet, the two divisions of the celestial kingdom (left-right).[1512]

[1510] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 37.

[1511] *Ibid.*, 39.

[1512] *Ibid.*, 38.

Figure 115. The twin goddesses Isis and Nephthys stand to the right and left of Osiris-Re, forming an enclosure with their arms.

Clearly, the counterpoised arms denote the cosmic twins, revolving daily round the Aten. The texts say as much when they locate the great god *within the arms (or hands) of the twins.* In a *Coffin Text* Atum recalls the beginning:

> [At first] *I lived with my two children, my little ones,*
>
> *the one before me, the other behind me . . .*
>
> *I rose over them, but* their arms were around me.

Similarly, one finds:

> *The arm of Horus is about you* [and] *the arm of Thoth, the two great gods have supported you.*1513
>
> *You are raised aloft on the hands of Shu and Tefnut . . .*1514
>
> *Isis and Nephthys salute thee, they sing songs of joy at thy rising* [coming forth] *in the boat, they protect thee with their hands.*1515

Together the counterpoised arms of the twins form the protective enclosure—the womb giving birth to the central sun.

> *. . . The god is given birth by the sky upon the arms of Shu and Tefnut.*1516

The symbolism of the outstretched arms meets every test of the Saturnian crescent. The arms take the form of a crescent enclosing the central sun. They are inseparable from the cosmic womb; they constitute the two peaks of the world mountain; and they are identified directly with the celestial twins.

The Crescent-Wings

The same crescent which appeared to the ancients as upraised arms also received mythical interpretations as the extended wings of the great god or goddess.

Ancient Sumerian myths recall a monstrous bird called Imdugud hovering over the primeval waters, its wings outstretched. Imdugud (the Akkadian winged dragon Zu) was a form of Ningirsu or Ninurta, the planet Saturn.1517

1513 *Pyramid Text* 1570-71.

1514 *Pyramid Text* 1353.

1515 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 17.

1516 *Pyramid Text* 1443.

1517 On the connection of Imdugud with Ninurta, see Jacobsen, *Toward the Image of Tammuz*, 4.

In this primordial wind-bird or thunder-bird scholars recognize the prototype of the Teutonic Hraesvelgr, the winged god of the storm, and the Hindu eagle Garuda, whose wings were so great as to affect the cosmic revolutions. According to the Athapascans of North America a raven hovered over the waters generating claps of thunder by the movement of his wings.[1518]

Natives of Hawaii say that at the beginning of time, when only the ocean existed, a great white bird appeared in the highest heaven, the egg of the world resting *between its outstretched wings.*[1519] Very similar is the Hebrew mythical bird Ziz, standing in mid-ocean. The Ziz was as monstrous as Leviathan, for while his ankles rested on our earth, his head reached the sky.[1520]

Though the relation is sometimes forgotten, the primeval winged beast originally appears either as the great god himself or as the god's vehicle. When the Orphics celebrated the "Sun that soarest aloft on golden wings," they hearkened back to an age-old tradition. Among all of the great gods of antiquity it would be difficult to find a single figure who neither possesses wings nor rides upon wings.[1521]

If the Hebrew Yahweh "rides upon the wings of the wind," the Hindu Vishnu is carried about on the shoulders of the eagle Garuda. The Hindu Agni, Mithra, Varuna, and Yama receive the title Suparna, meaning "strong-winged." It is said that the outstretched wings of the Suparna *embrace the Cosmos.*[1522] Also presented as winged gods are the Persian Mithra and Zurvan, the Hebrew and Phoenician El, the Greek Kronos, and all of the leading deities of ancient Egypt.

Anyone willing to look beneath the surface will find that the great god's wings are much more than a contrived convenience enabling him to "fly." To thoughtful observers the special role of the winged god presents many enigmas. In Egypt, for example, the hieroglyph for the great god Horus is a falcon, but the wings of the falcon, in early Egyptian art, do not convey the sense of "flight" (as one should expect, if the god acquired his wings for a "natural" purpose). Rather the wings—always outstretched—define the limits of the Cosmos, and it is not easy to see how the Egyptians could have arrived at this consistent notion through observation of what we call the natural world today. Horus is "the venerable bird in whose shadow is the wide earth; Lord of the Two Lands under whose wings is the circuit of heaven [the Cosmos]."[1523] Concerning this image of Horus, Frankfort writes, ". . . The central problem, the relation between god and falcon, seems entirely insoluble."[1524]

What powers did the ancients seek to represent by the spread wings of the divine eagle, hawk, or falcon—or the extended wings of the purely mythical "thunder-bird" described around the world? The Egyptians called the cosmic island of beginnings the "Great Foundation Ground of the Ruler of the Wing"[1525] almost as if the Wing possessed a character of its own. The divinized Wing marched around the island, according to the texts.[1526]

Few comparative mythologists seem to have recognized that a common image of the cosmic bird prevails throughout the world, and this image corresponds directly to the pillared sun-in-crescent . Rather than portray the winged beast either in flight or in a seemingly normal resting position, the artists regularly depicted it virtually standing on its tail feathers, with its wings spread upward to form a crescent.

[1518] Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament*, 5.

[1519] Melville, *op. cit.*, 32.

[1520] Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews* Vol. I, 28-29; Graves and Patai, *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis*, 55.

[1521] Cook, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 342, citing Orphic Frag. 49, 3.

[1522] Agrawala, *Sparks from the Vedic Fire*, 52-55.

[1523] Frankfort, *op. cit.*, 37.

[1524] *Ibid.*, 143.

[1525] Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*, 16.

[1526] *Ibid.*, 120-21.

Figure 116. Examples of the winged divinity on the cylinder seals of western Asia.

Figure 117. The primeval eagle, from the Mesopotamian city of Lagash.

Figure 118. Egyptian eagle, with symbols of "life."

Figure 120. The American Indian thunder-bird.

In figs. 116, 117, 118 & 120 I include examples from Western Asia to the Americas. The reader will see that certain of the instances are virtually indistinguishable—and all present the sacred bird in the same "unnatural" way.

In Homer’s hymn to Selene, the poet extols “the long-winged Moon.”[1527] But does the lunar crescent alone suggest extended wings? It is only in connection with the cosmic form that the crescent’s role as wings takes on meaning. And this is the very crescent which the ancients also knew as the sacred horn, the ship, and the upraised arms.

As seen in fig. 121, the wings of the cosmic falcon enclose and protect the deified king, in precisely the same fashion as the Ka-arms. A review of the artistic tradition shows that the wings of the great god or goddess melt into the divinity’s extended arms in such a way as to become indistinguishable from them. The identity is also confirmed in Egyptian texts, where the arms of Re are called “the two birds of Ptah.”[1528] A text from the tomb of Ramesses VI invokes the great god’s “two wings, the arms of Tay.”[1529]

Figure 121. The cosmic falcon.

Figure 122. The winged goddess Nut.

[1527] Evelyn-White, *Hesiod, The Homeric Hymns and Homerica*, 459.

[1528] Piankoff, *Litany of Re*, 54.

[1529] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 368.

Figure 123. Zuni winged goddess.

Figure 124. Spartan goddess Artemis Orthia.

Adding to the "unnatural" character of the winged divinity is the continual association of wings and horns. The great god may be called either a winged bull or a horned bird. Moreover, it is clear that the combination of the two images did not result from syncretism (a later merging of incompatible or once independent traditions). Frankfort acknowledges "the simultaneous validity of these views of the king," insisting that the winged and horned aspects of the god are "a primitive feature and not the product of the syncretism of later times." Noting this dual aspect of the god Horus and his mother-spouse Hathor, Frankfort writes: "The mingling of the falcon and cattle images in the relationship of Horus and Hathor is not due to syncretism. It recurs in the case of the war-god Monthu of Thebes, who was conceived as a falcon but was also manifest in the Buches bull. The royal titulary shows it, too, for after Thutmosis I the name which is crowned with the falcon and is called the Horus- or Ka-name regularly includes the epithet 'strong bull.' The palette of Narmer illustrates how little ancients were disturbed by this simultaneous use of the two images. It shows the king's victory three times, once as a man destroying the enemy chief with his mace, once as the Horus falcon holding him in subjection with a rope passed through his nose, and once as a 'strong bull' demolishing enemy strongholds."[1530]

If the Egyptians were not bothered by this paradoxical duality, it was for a simple reason: *the great god's shining horns were also his wings!* This is why the Apis bull was pictured with outstretched wings upon its back[1531] (fig. 76a) and why the portrait of the Bakha bull shows a vulture extending its wings over the bull's hindquarters.[1532] (fig. 76b)

The same winged bull, of course, is common to Mesopotamian ritual (fig. 126) and passes into Hebrew cherubim, protectors of the divine throne. The wings of the cherubim "reached from one end of the world to the other."[1533]

[1530] *Op. cit.*, 173.

[1531] Budge, I 74.

[1532] Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 437.

[1533] Patai, *The Hebrew Goddess*, 122; Lenormant, *Les Origines*, Vol.I, 112*ff.*

Figure 126. Assyrian winged bull.

Further evidence is provided by the winged ship, which occurs in almost every segment of the world.[1534] While it may not be immediately clear from the later, more fanciful versions of the bird-ship, it is abundantly clear in the earliest sources that *the wings and the ship are the same thing.* In the Egyptian *Pyramid Texts*, the expanded wings constitute the ship of the gods—just as the image suggests:

O you gods who cross over on the wing of Thoth to yonder side of the Winding Waterway.[1535]

. . . Ferry me over, O Thoth, on the tip of your wing as Sokar who presides over the Bark of Righteousness.[1536]

O wings of Thoth, ferry me across, do not leave me boatless.[1537]

O Thoth . . . put me on the tip of your wing on yonder northern side of the Winding Waterway.[1538]

Surely it is no coincidence that the symbol of Thoth, the master of the wing-ship, was the crescent-enclosure . The wings of the winged god or goddess answer to the illuminated portion of the circumpolar band. The subject is a winged circle, as one discerns in numerous representations of the primeval sun's dwelling. Whether it is the Egyptian Aten, or the Assyro-Babylonian enclosure of the sun, the Greek wheels of Ixion, Dionysus, or Triptolemus, the Hindu world wheel or Chakra, the Mexican "shield" of the sun-god—the enclosure consistently appears with wings and/or tail feathers. If the ancients soon forgot the special form of the winged enclosure (*i.e.*,), they did not lose the general idea.

[1534] Gelling, *The Chariot of the Sun*, 120*ff.*; Magoun, *The Kalevala*, 37-38; O'Neill, *op. cit.*, vol. II, 1,009, 1,012.

[1535] *Pyramid Text* 595.

[1536] *Pyramid Text* 1429.

[1537] *Pyramid Text* 1176.

[1538] *Pyramid Text* 1377.

Figure 127. The Egyptian winged KhepRer, the Turning One.

Figure 128. The Assyrian winged circle.

Figure 129. The Hindu Chakra or winged wheel of the “sun.”

Figure 130. Inscription at Mehterhane, the Central Prison of Constantinople.

Figure 131. Drawing from a thirteenth-century window in Auxerre catherdral.

Figure 132. Mexican winged bird.

Figure 133. Detail from fig. 74 showing enclosed sun on back of bird.

Figure 134. **(a)** Persian Ahura Mazda, dwelling in the winged enclosure;

Figure 134. (b) Assyrian winged god Asshur, in the winged enclosure. Note that both the Assyrian and Persian examples connect the god's skirt with the tail feathers. In the ancient Mesopotamian pictographs the "skirt" means "mountain."

Figure 135. Aztec shield, with tail feathers.

Figure 136. Mesopotamian winged circles confirm **(a)** that the band encloses the sun-cross and

Figure 136. (b) that the band displays a crescent.

Figure 137. Isis, protecting the sun-god with her extended wings.

The relation of the wings to the enclosure is vital to any meaningful interpretation of the winged god or goddess. Surely we are not simply dealing with a venerated bird gradually translated into a god (as many authorities propose). From the beginning, the wings belonged to the Saturnian band. In many instances the artists show the great god residing within or issuing from the winged circle (figs. 134a, 134b).

In the symbolism of the Egyptian goddess Nut one sees the underlying identity of the outstretched wings and the cosmic womb. Though Nut personifies the band of the Cosmos, she is often depicted standing erect with arms and wings extended outward and upward (fig. 122) in striking accord with the prototypal form . The spread wings are those which enclose and protect the central sun, for the king beseeches the goddess: "Mother Nut, spread thy wings over me, encircle (me) with thy arms in health and life that I may be *inside* thee, that thou (mayest) be my protection."[1539] To be embraced by the outspread wings is to dwell *within* the great goddess, in the womb. Daily the goddess "conceives you, she bears you, she puts you within her wing."[1540] Nothing could be more futile than attempting to resolve the enigmatic language in conventional (or "natural") terms. But when referred to the overlapping images of the Saturnian configuration , the ritual terminology acquires an extraordinary precision. The outstretched and upraised wings actually *do* enclose the sun within the celestial womb.

No less remarkable is the location of the all-seeing Eye upon the crescent wing or wings:

The Eye of Horus gleams upon the wing of Thoth.[1541]

The Eye of Horus is placed on the wing of his brother Set.[1542]

All figures of the primeval bird reveal a common feature: they dwell upon the cosmic mountain. Indeed, as already observed, it is the Mount, rendered as the "tail feathers," which makes intelligible the common interpretation of the polar crescent as outstretched wings.

Egyptian myths say that at the dawn of the world the great god took the form of the Bennu bird or Phoenix, radiating light from its extended wings and *perched atop the Primeval Hill.* The Bennu was the "Soul" of Re, which means that it issued directly from Re, congealing out of the primeval matter, or waters. (Thus *bennut* means "matter" or "issue," while *bennu* means the "bread" of the gods, the primeval matter organized into a circle.)

Figure 138. Prehistoric Hopi image of winged earth mother.

[1539] Piankoff, *Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon*, 46. [Emphasis added.]

[1540] *Pyramid Text* 1370.

[1541] *Pyramid Text* 976.

[1542] *Pyramid Text* 1742.

Figure 139. Mesopotamian eagle supporting divine figure between its wings.

The relation of the Primeval Hill to the Phoenix or Bennu is summarized by Clark: "Since the waters were in absolute darkness the emergence of God meant the coming of light, the first morning. For the Heliopolitans morning was marked by the shining of light on an erect pillar or pyramidion on a support which could reflect the rays of the rising sun. At the beginning a light-bird, the Phoenix, had alighted on the sacred stand, known as the Benben, to initiate the great age of the visible God. The rising of the mound and the appearance of the Phoenix are not consecutive events but parallel statements, two aspects of the supreme creative moment."[1543] To the same elementary image belongs the winged Khepera, resting upon the tet or pillar of the Cosmos, and supporting the Aten with outstretched wings.[1544] The *Pyramid Texts* speak of the "Mountain of the *zehzeh*-bird,"[1545] or "the Pillar of the *zehzeh*-bird."[1546]

Similarly, the Sumerian Imdugud, who "looks down upon the mountain,"[1547] was said to have his home on the northern Mount Masius; while his counterparts—the Persian Saena or Simurgh and the Hindu Garuda dwelt upon the polar mountains of Hera Berezaiti and Meru.[1548] Accordingly, the Assyro-Babylonians consistently located the winged circle of the "sun" atop the cosmic pillar.[1549] The natives of Northwest Siberia fix upon their symbols of the world pillar a wooden figure of a bird sometimes with two heads. The winged figures which so often adorn the summit of American Indian totem poles provide an obvious parallel.

[1543] *Op. cit.*, 39.

[1544] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 220.

[1545] *Pyramid Text* 389.

[1546] *Pyramid Text* 2243.

[1547] Sjöberg and Bergmann, *op. cit.*, 99.

[1548] Albright, "The Goddess of Life and Wisdom," 268, note 3.

[1549] Van Buren, *Symbols of the Gods in Mesopotamian Art*, 96-99.

Figure 140. Mesopotamian cylinder seals indicate the close relation of the “sun”-bird’s wings to the two peaks of the cosmic mountain.

Like all figures of the crescent, the expanded wings, alternately embracing the central sun from the left and from the right (or from above and below), appear in the role of the twins. The goddess Nut may be presented in the primary form ; but two secondary divinities flank the goddess to the right and left, extending their wings toward each other so as to form a complete enclosure. These winged twins are equivalent to Isis and Nephthys, the “two kites” who, standing to the right and left, together enclose the sun-god within their wings.

A spell of the *Coffin Texts* reads:

> *Isis comes and Nephthys comes, one of them from the west* [literally the right] *and one of them from the east* [literally the left]*, one of them as a kite and one of them as a screecher . . . They prevent Horus of the Two Lands from putrefying.*[1550]

Compare this line from the *Pyramid Texts*:

> . . . *This King has become pure through the eye of Horus, his ill is removed by the Two Kites of Osiris.*[1551]

To be purified and protected within the Eye is to be made strong by the “Two Kites” of the left and right (,), whose counterpoised wings shadow out the full circle of the Eye. The same twin birds compose the crown:

> *O you two kites who are on the wings of Thoth, you two who are on the crown . . .*[1552]

Thus the goddesses Isis and Nephthys are said to have placed themselves upon the head of the great god “as the two kites” and these, in turn, are identified as the two uraei serpents and the two Eyes—all figures of the bisected womb or enclosure.[1553] And the proof of this identity is the very name of the “two kites.” They are the *Tcherti*, which means nothing more than the two halves of the *tcher*, the “enclosure” or “boundary,” of the Aten .

Interconnected Symbols

A comprehensive discussion of the Saturnian crescent’s wide-ranging mythical forms would require vastly more space than available here, but a brief summary should be sufficient to indicate the breadth of the symbolism. Supplementing the imagery discussed above are the following mythical versions of the crescent:

The Plant Of Life

Egyptian sources relate that the original dwelling of the solitary god took the form of a shining lotus—called “the Great Lotus that issued from the pool in the Island of the Two Flames, the Province of the Beginning.” The lotus “initiated light” at the “First Occasion in the High Hill at the Beginning of Coming into Existence.”[1554]

According to the legend, the lotus sprang up from the watery abyss, emerging from the Khu (luminous matter) erupting from the creator. One of the Egyptian names for this plant of life was *Nefer Tem* (“the young or beautiful Tem”), a personification of the “North Wind” or breath of Re. In Chapter CLXXIV of the *Book of the*

[1550] Faulkner, *op. cit.*, 68.

[1551] *Pyramid Text* 312.

[1552] *Pyramid Text* 1254.

[1553] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 32.

[1554] Reymond, *op. cit.*, 68.

Dead, the deceased announced “I grow bright like Nefer-Tem, who is the lotus at the nostrils of Re, when he comes forth in the Mount of Glory each day.” Re is thus “that great god who is within the lotus bud of gold.”[1555]

Inscriptions at Dendera show the king offering a lotus to the god Horus with the words, “I offer thee the flower, which was in the beginning, the glorious lily of the great water. Thou camest forth from the midst of its leaves in the town of Chmun (Hermopolis magna) and didst lighten the earth, which was still wrapped in darkness.”[1556]

Parallels to the Egyptian cosmic lotus, as the home of the great god, will be found in all sections of the world, including the Americas. The Mayans knew the flower as “the form of the moisture of heaven, the substance of heaven, the yellow blossom of heaven.”[1557] Looking back to the creation a Mayan text recalls, “Then it was that the flower sprang up, wide open . . . Thereupon the heart of the flower came forth to set itself in motion. Four-fold [*can-hek*, literally “four-branched”] was the place of the flower and Ah Kin Xocbiltun was set in the centre.”[1558]

Figure 141. The primeval sun’s birth in the lotus.

Figure 142. The man-child Horus on the lotus blossom.

Much the same tradition occurs in Mesopotamia, where a Babylonian text depicts the plant of life emerging in Eridu, the dwelling on the cosmic sea:

[1555] Clark, *op. cit.*, 67.

[1556] Mariette, *Denderah*, 1, 55a.

[1557] Roys, *The Book of the Chilam Balam*, 131.

[1558] *Ibid.*, 105.

(In) Eridu a stalk grew over-shadowing: in a holy place did it become green;
its root was of white crystal which stretched toward the deep;
(before) Ea was its course in Eridu, teeming with fertility;
its seat was the central place of the earth: its foliage was the couch of Zikum (the primeval mother).
Into the heart of its holy house which spread its shade like a forest hath no man entered . . .
In the midst of it was Tammuz.[1559]

Figure 143. Tut-Ankh-Amon, presented in the form of Nefer-Tem.

This "bright plant which grows up from the apsu [the cosmic sea]"[1560] is clearly an early prototype of the famous Hindu *soma* and Iranian *haoma* plants both recognized as belonging originally to the gods in heaven.[1561] (Thus the haoma is "the first of the trees planted by Ahura Mazda in the fountains of life.")[1562]

Egyptian, Hindu, and Buddhist sources either show the head of the great god emerging from a lotus or depict the god in a resting position in or above the lotus.

It is logical to refer such imagery of the lotus-seat to the archetypal sun-in-crescent ☉ and all the more so because the plant of life is regularly identified with the crescent "moon."[1563] The soma and haoma plants are widely discussed as figures of the "moon." The Mayan Book of Chilam Balam refers to the "moon" as the "flower of the night."[1564] Similarly, the Sumero-Babylonian crescent of Nannar or Sin is the "lofty plant, magnificent, whose abundance never ceases."[1565]

We have seen that the Babylonians depicted the crescent of Sin as the support, or lower half, of the world wheel ⊕. The relationship illuminates Hindu and Buddhist symbolism of the cosmic wheel resting in the *expanded leaf of a lotus* (fig. 144). The lotus supports and reaches around the celestial "land" and is thus always identified with the mother goddess, the female personification of the wheel. In the ritual of the *Satapatha Brahmana* a lotus leaf becomes the "birthplace of Agni" and "the symbol of his womb." Upon the symbolic lotus leaf the priest lays a round gold disk said to represent the "sun." "The lotus means the Waters, and this earth is a leaf thereof . . . and this same earth is Agni's womb," reads the text.1566 It is imagery of this sort which yields such epithets of the Hindu great god as "lotus-born," "lotus-seated," or "lotus-navelled."1567

[1559] Sayce, *op. cit.*, 238.

[1560] Albright, "*The Mouth of the Rivers*," 193.

[1561] See, for example, the discussion in Eliade, *Patterns in Comparative Religion*, 290.

[1562] Briffault, *op. cit.*, Vol. I, 130.

[1563] *Ibid.*, 131.

[1564] Roys, *op. cit.*, 94.

[1565] Combe, *op. cit.*, 99.

The connection of the lotus and "lotus-born" god with the sun-in-crescent is equally evident in the equation of the lotus and the cosmic ship. In the Egyptian system the ship and the lotus are synonymous: the great god sails in a *lotus-ship*, which the artists illustrate either by a lotus blossom in the centre of the ship or by a lotus terminating either one end or both ends of the vessel.1568

Figure 144. Hindu world wheel resting in lotus leaf.

Figure 145. Lotus blossom=ship as mythical image of the Saturnian crescent.

And the same equation occurs among the Hindus, who tell us that the cosmic ship Argha was the lotus on which the great god sailed in the beginning.1569

Now if the blossom of the plant of life is the circumpolar crescent, one can assume that the "stem" is the cosmic mountain. The Egyptians represented the great god's "sceptre" as a lotus and in both the hieroglyphs and in art this sceptre becomes the pillar upholding "heaven" .1570 Lotus-pillars are often depicted supporting the god's shrine or throne,1571 while at other times the great god is depicted resting upon a lotus column.

But the plant of life was also represented as a papyrus—and called "the Gleaming Sceptre of Papyrus."1572 A text published by Dumichen says "Thou art the Eye of Re, at the tip of the papyrus-stem."1573 Of course other

---

1566 Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 19-20.

1567 *Ibid.*, 17-18.

1568 Morez and Schhubert, *Der Gott auf der Blume*, 38.

1569 Faber, *Origins*, Vol. II, 217; vol. I, 19. In Egyptian ritual there is also a fascinating relationship of the plant of life and the outstretched arms of heaven (the Ka). *Pyramid Text* 544a has the king proclaiming himself to be the "flower which issued from the Ka."

1570 Budge, *Gods*, Vol. I, 413, 439.

1571 See example in Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 29.

1572 Clark, *op. cit.*, 163.

texts say that it is the light-pillar Shu which holds aloft the Eye, but there can be no contradiction: the Egyptian word *shu* means both "light-pillar" and "papyrus."

The identity of the two powers is also explicit in Hindu iconography. The soma plant, to which many hymns of the *Rig Veda* are devoted, is "the stabilizer and supporter of heaven."[1574] The introductory verse of the *Dasakumaraccrita* includes as a figure of the world axis "the stalk of the lotus where Brahma resides."[1575] Of the cosmic lotus in Buddhism, M. Mus writes: "The prolongation of the stem, which is the axis of the sensible world, bears at the summit of the universe the spiritual lotus-throne . . ."[1576] Thus does the cosmic Mount Meru become the "lotus-mountain,"[1577] and in the same way the Iranian haoma plant appears as the "imperishable pillar of life."[1578]

Figure 146. The Lotus column surmounted by the Horus-falcon.

Figure 147. Egyptian Eye (=crescent-enclosure) supported on the lotus column.

[1573] Quoted in O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 467.

[1574] Bhawe, *The Soma Hymns of the Rig Veda*, 82.

[1575] Coomaraswamy, *Elements of Buddhist Iconography*, 89, note 139.

[1576] Quoted in *ibid.*, 55.

[1577] O'Neill, *op. cit.*, 400.

[1578] *Ibid.*, 290.

Figure 148. Saturn riding on his serpentine chariot and wielding his scythe (from Poeticon Astronomicon, Venice, 1485).

Sword

Saturn comes to power wielding his curved sword or scythe, which writers generally connect with the crescent "moon." The Greek Kronos carries as his special weapon the curved harpe and it has often been proposed that this weapon lies behind the relatively late astronomical sign of Saturn, ♄. The harpe and the winged *harpies* (birdlike female monsters) surely trace to the same root. (That is, "sword" and "wings" refer to the same cosmic form.)

In a Sumerian hymn, Ninurta, or Saturn, invokes the "sickle of my Anuship" [*i.e.*, of kingship] and the weapon is called at once *sharur* and *shargaz*—both names of Sin, the crescent "moon."1579 Sin is the "sickle" and the "curved sabre" of the great god.1580

The Egyptians knew the sword as the *khepesh*, written with the signs and , or as the *ma*, whose sign, , depicts a sickle fashioned from the jawbone of an animal. The *Pyramid Texts* identify the great god's sword as "a sharp strong horn"1581 (sword=horn). But *khepesh* also means the "shoulder" or "two arms" of heaven. And here the symbolism meshes precisely with that of the Babylonian system, which declares the sickle of Sin to be "the two arms" of Enlil, the cosmic mountain.

That the sword shares in the coherent imagery of the Saturnian crescent is suggested by other traditions also. In Genesis 3:24, Yahweh is said to have placed in *front* (translators say to the "East") "of the garden of Eden kerubim and the flaming blade of the sword which turns, to keep the way of the tree of life." If the thesis presented here is correct, the winged *kerubim* refer to the same revolving crescent as the turning sword. Many scholars logically connect the Hebrew *kerubim* with the Assyro-Babylonian *kirubi*, the winged and horned beasts who in the form of twins guard and define the limits of the great god's enclosure. In the Assyrian vocabulary, *kirub* means "bull," while *kirubu* designates a large species of bird of prey. The revolving "sword" of Genesis, on the other hand, is the *khereb*, a "curved sickle," recognized as the Hebrew counterpart of the Greek harpe and the Egyptian *khepesh.*1582

The Altar

1579 Combe, *op. cit.*, 11; Langdon, *Semitic Mythology*, 91.

1580 Langdon, *op. cit.*, 27.

1581 *Pyramid Text* 240.

1582 Lenormant, *Les Origines* Vol. I, 129*ff.*

For reasons which I intend to examine at length in a subsequent volume, the Saturnian crescent was the receptacle of a primordial "sacrifice." Together the crescent and cosmic mountain formed "the Altar of the World."

Egyptian hieroglyphs record the altar by the sign . Upon the altar—called the Altar of Hetep ("rest") or Altar of the Uatchet (Eye)—rests all the food and drink of the celestial habitation.

In the *Book of the Dead*, the great god comes forth "in the city of Annu, upon the altar of the lady of the two lands," and it is clear that the Egyptians conceived the altar as supporting and embracing the entire celestial domain (or twin "lands").[1583] Hence the sign —glyph of the "holy domain"—shows the womb of Nut , resting on the altar.

Always, the altar conveys the same significance as the primordial "world." Among the Hindus, notes Eliade, "the building of the altar was conceived as a creation of the world. The water with which the clay was mixed was the same as the primeval waters."[1584] "As large as the altar is, so large is the earth," reads the *Satapatha Brahmana.*[1585]

The same altar may be termed "the navel of the earth . . . the lap [womb] of Aditi," in close correspondence with Egyptian symbolism.[1586]

Hebrew and Muslim thought, according to Wensinck, considered the altar "as a symbolic representation of the earth."[1587] A Midrash asks, "Where is the navel? In Jerusalem. But the navel itself is the altar."[1588] Of the primeval altar, tradition says, "Its top reached to heaven."[1589]

The god upon the altar is simply the "sun" resting in the pillared crescent . (Hence the image of the sun-in-crescent upon the Sabaean altar in fig. 63.) Early prototypes of the altar throughout the ancient world not only connect it with the central pillar of the Cosmos[1590] but suggest a radical association with the cosmic bull, while altars from Persia to Crete to Africa were either decorated with horns or given the shape of horns. "The horned altar" and "the horns of the altar" were, of course, common phrases among the ancient Hebrews.

Above And Below, Left And Right

More than once, in discussing common translations of ancient sources, I have had occasion to refer to the inappropriate use of the phrases "east and west," "north and south." and "heaven and earth." Such terminology, I have suggested, arises from the habit of reading *solar* imagery into non-solar texts and of interpreting the great god's cosmic dwelling in *terrestrial* terms.

[1583] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 476.

[1584] *Patterns* 372.

[1585] Eggeling, *op. cit.*, Part I, 86.

[1586] *Ibid.*, 213, note 2.

[1587] "The Ideas of the Western Semites," 10.

[1588] *Ibid.*, 11.

[1589] *Ibid.*

[1590] Schwabe, *Archetype und Tierkreis*, 377*ff.*

Without attempting to provide a complete analysis of the problem (which I intend to explore in a separate volume on Egyptian religion), I shall simply indicate the manner in which the question can be resolved by reference to the Saturnian configuration.

Of course, there can be little progress toward an improved understanding of ancient religious texts until the translators and commentators acknowledge the celestial character of the imagery. From start to finish the hymns and liturgies deal with cosmic figures and cosmic events. And when these mythical figures and events are connected with a primordial "land" it is imperative that one understand this "land" as the enclosure of the original great god, who is Saturn. The texts deal, not with geography, but with *cosmography*—the map of the celestial kingdom. In relation to Saturn's dwelling the words which translators render as "east" and "west" actually mean something quite different. And while the modern phrase "heaven and earth" *suggests* little concrete meaning, the archaic terms so translated convey a very specific sense.

In the Egyptian language the word rendered as "east" is *Abtet* (*Abt* or *Abti*), while the word translated "west" is *Amentet* (or *Amenti*). To what did the Egyptians refer by these words?

If the first mistake of the translators is to assume that Abtet and Amentet are geographical terms, the second is to assume that they *necessarily* refer to opposite regions, or directions. Standard translations are based on the premise that the "sun" rises in the east and sets in the west. Yet to anyone following this logic ancient Egyptian texts will leave the impression that the priests were continually forgetful of the place of sunrise and sunset. If Amentet was the "west," why did the Egyptians repeatedly describe the great god "coming forth" or "renewing himself" in Amentet*?* I cite below a few conventional translations:

Behold the coming forth from the West.[1591]

Osiris, He who arises in Health, He at the Head of the West.[1592]

The arms of the inhabitants of the West receive thee in thy forms of glory and rejuvenation.[1593]

I make myself young (in) the fair West.[1594]

When thou comest forth in peace there arise shouts of delight to thee, O thou lord of heaven, thou prince of the West.[1595]

Of such imagery as this, Kristensen writes: "What was meant is evidently that the sun, when it goes down does not die but reaches the hidden fountain of life."[1596] But one naturally remains skeptical of such conjecture. Do the hymns cited above portray the solar orb "when it goes down"? The truth is that if we substituted "east" for "west" in these lines they would appear to solar mythologists as perfectly reasonable descriptions of the rising sun. Rather than the "west," Amentet is simply the Holy Land, the primeval enclosure. The head, or governor, of Amentet is the central sun, which does not rise or set, but "goes in and out" (*i.e.*, grows bright and diminishes) with the full cycle of each "day." The great god's "coming forth in Amentet" signifies the *beginning* of the day. (An equivalent phrase, "coming forth by day," occurs repeatedly in Egyptian texts). Thus Chapter CVII of the *Book of the Dead* is "The Chapter of Going Into and Coming Out from the Gate of the Gods of Amentet."[1597] Chapter XVII extols the great god's "coming out and going in" within Amentet.[1598]

[1591] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 217.

[1592] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 76.

[1593] *Ibid.*, 37.

[1594] *Ibid.*

[1595] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 85.

[1596] Quoted in Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 30.

[1597] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 314.

It is the same thing to say that the god grows bright and diminishes within the womb of the mother goddess. There was, in fact, a goddess Ament whom the Egyptians equated with Isis, while Isis herself was "the Divine Mother, Lady of Amentet."[1599] The phrase has no original connection with geography; it simply refers to Isis as the womb or enclosure of the Holy Land above. Hathor is the same goddess: "Hathor, Lady of Amentet . . . , Lady of the Holy Country."[1600] Elsewhere the texts identify Amentet as the circumpolar Tuat, the womb of Nut.[1601] There is no association with the geographical "west."

To reside within the Holy Land of Amentet is to rest in the mother-womb, which goes by many names. In text after text the priests seek to show that the various names of the Holy Land signified the same enclosure. When the *Book of the Dead* calls Osiris the "mighty one who comest forth from Nut, thou king in the city of Nifu-ur, thou Governor of Amentet, thou lord of Abtu (Abydos),"[1602] the reference is not to different dwellings but to different names of the same dwelling.

What has caused so much confusion is the fact that the Holy Land is a *bisected* circle. The central sun is he who "unites the *two* Tuats, the *two* regions of Amentet."[1603] Here one must reckon with the paradox of the celestial twins. *In naming the two divisions of the Holy Land the Egyptians brought together two independent names for the enclosure as a whole, pairing them as opposites.*

This development of the language stands out in the case of Isis and Nephthys, both of whom, independently, denote the full circle of the Aten ☉. Isis is the "house," "chamber," or "throne" of the central sun, while Nephthys is the "Lady of the House" (or simply "Lady-House"). As a *pair*, however, Isis and Nephthys personify two halves of the circle, the "left and the right," suggested by the counterpoised positions of the revolving crescent , .

In the same way the Egyptians paired the name Amentet with another name of the same dwelling—Abtet—yielding the dual kingdom of Amentet-Abtet.[1604] When joined as opposites, Amentet and Abtet are precisely synonymous with the twins Isis and Nephthys. By this union, Amentet acquires the literal meaning "region of the right" and Abtet, "region of the left." The idea that the god-king, standing in the centre of the enclosure, balances the divisions of the left and right will be found repeatedly in both the texts and in art. That translators commonly use the terms "east and "west" has caused a major confusion in conventional translations.

Like Amentet, in other words, the Egyptian term Abtet (conventionally translated "east") may refer either to the entire celestial kingdom or to one of its two divisions. Fundamentally, Abtet is the sacred land at the centre and summit. The king, in the *Pyramid Texts*, seeks to attain this dwelling, with the words, "May I ascend and lift myself up to the sky as the great star in the midst of Abtet." "I have come into heaven, and I embrace my seat which is in Abtet," reads a line from the *Book of the Dead.*[1605] Here, any connection of Abtet with the "east" or the solar orb exists only in the mind of the translators.

[1598] Budge, *The Papyrus of Ani*, 27.

[1599] Piankoff, *Mythological Papyri*, 93.

[1600] *Ibid.*, 79.

[1601] "Hail Re! His resting place is the Tuat; what he traverses is the Beautiful Amentet." Piankoff, *Pyramid of Unas*, 30. "The disk is in the Tuat, the disk rests in Amentet." Piankoff, *Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 376. "The souls of Re in Amentet are exalted, and in the zone of the Tuat the souls . . . cry out in their songs of exultation unto the soul of Re who dwelleth therein . . . O ye Hetepu gods, grant ye that I may enter into the Tuat, and let me make a way into the beautiful Amentet." Budge, *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 612-13.

[1602] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 387.

[1603] Piankoff, *The Tomb of Ramesses VI*, 76. [Emphasis added.]

[1604] *Pyramid Text* 1038.

[1605] Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 516-17.

The same inappropriate use of terms is evident in the phrase "heaven and earth" recurring in virtually all accepted translations. "The universe as a whole was referred to as 'heaven and earth,'" states Frankfort.1606 The two terms in question are *pet* (translated "heaven") and *ta* (translated "earth").

Literally, the phrase "pet and ta" means "the above and below." Numerous Egyptian illustrations indicate that, together, the two divisions composed an enclosure around the "sun"-god. As opposites the *pet* and *ta* mean the celestial twins, here personifying the revolving crescent in its alternate positions above and below the stationary god.

But this does not mean that *pet* necessarily denotes "above" any more than *ta* necessarily means "below." As a matter of fact, many signs extol "two pet," one above and one below (denoted by the sign and its inverse). And few phrases are more common in Egyptian sources than the "two ta," explicitly referring to the upper and lower divisions of the celestial kingdom. Fundamentally, the *pet* is the twofold circle of Saturn's Cosmos, and the *ta* is the same circle, conceived as an enclosure of "land" around the central sun. *It is only as a pair that pet and ta acquire the meaning "above and below."* And in no sense does the translation "heaven and earth" convey the tangible significance of the terms.

The Egyptian "circle of above and below" is the womb of Nut, the "holy abode" (written with the sign).1607 Yet Nut's identity with the full circle did not prevent the Egyptians from pairing Nut with another goddess, Naunet, so that together they represented the two *halves* of the circle, represented by the signs of the "above" (Nut) and the "below" (Naunet). In the same way the priests joined Nut with the male figure Geb, identifying Nut with the upper half of the enclosure and Geb with the lower. According to tradition the separation of the portions was carried out by the god Shu, the pillar with outstretched arms. *Indeed, it was the arms of Shu (*i.e., *the Saturnian crescent) which divided the circle into upper and lower regions, according to the original tradition.*

The division of the enclosure into male (lower) and female (upper) halves gave rise to two interrelated signs of masculine and feminine connotation. The sign depicts the male power (usually translated "lord") while the same semicircular image inverted (and in smaller scale) signifies "feminine." Together the upper and lower hemispheres compose the complete circle of the Aten or *shen* bond. To translate masculine and feminine divisions as "heaven" and "earth" simply destroys the interrelated symbolism of the enclosure.

Figure 149. Nut and Geb, as the Above and the Below.

The terminology in question ("left and right," "above and below") concerns celestial regions marked out by the revolving Saturnian crescent, which is the ever-turning face of the central sun (or the "two" faces of the twin god). This is why the sign , which may also be presented inversely , means, among other things, *heru*, or "face." The *herui* are the "two faces" of Horus, or of Horus and Set, acknowledged personifications of the "Upper Land" and the "Lower Land."

Pertaining to the same imagery is the notion of two semicircular "mounds" joined so as to form a full circle. The Egyptian "mound" sign is nothing more than one half of the quartered womb of Nut . Its

---

1606 *Op. cit.*, 19.

1607 "Nut encompasses and 'is' heaven and earth," states Neumann. *Op. cit.*, 223.

meaning is “division of the holy abode.” The central sun may be designated either “the Great One in the Mound” or the dweller in “two” mounds.1608

The two mounds are the two *atenti* or *aterti*, the two halves of the Aten. *Atent*, written with the sign (one half of the elongated *shen* bond, or cartouche), signifies a “division into opposite regions.” The texts speak of an *atert meht*, the “lower half” of the Aten; and an *atert shema*, the “upper half.” Any attempt to understand such terminology in terrestrial terms can only yield confusion.

The divisions of the “right and left” and “above and below” are not only manifestly cosmic, their special character derives from the relation of the revolving crescent to the stationary god and his enclosure. When the crescent passes below the god it “supports” him, and when it arches above , it “bows” to him. Thus the texts say of the cosmic twins: “The two mistresses of Buto [the celestial city] accompany you to the right and left . . . , they support you and bow to you.”1609 The same thing is said of the twin regions:

> *The two regions of Abtet* [the left] *and Amentet* [the right] *make adoration unto thee, bowing low and paying homage unto* [*sethes,* “supporting”] *thee.*1610
>
> *O luminary, the lower and upper halves of Heaven* [*pet*] *come to thee and bow low in adoration.*1611

That the *bowing* region means the upper half of the enclosure (in opposition to the “supporting” region below) is demonstrated by the symbolism of Nut. While Nut, in her relationship to Geb represents “above,” this quality of the goddess may be represented either by the sign or another sign of precisely the same significance— —depicting the “above” as a *bowing* goddess.

Saturn’s Day

In the revolving crescent we possess the key to Egyptian symbolism of the “day” and “night,” for the crescent’s position simply reflected the position of the solar orb in relation to the terrestrial observer. One should think of the revolving crescent as Saturn’s ship, in which the god voyaged around the four regions (“above” , “left” , “below” , “right”), all the while standing in one place. The four positions (regions) will correspond to four segments of the archaic day:

1. The cycle began with the descent of the crescent as it moved from its position “above” (solar orb directly overhead) to its position directly to the “left” of Saturn (solar sunset). On reaching the region of the “left,” Saturn and the crescent began to grow bright, due to the darkening of the heavens as the solar orb sank below the horizon. Hence, in the general symbolism of the “left and right” (Abtet and Amentet) the left is the region of “dawn” or “growing bright.”

The cosmic ship, on reaching Abtet, the “left,” became the *Matet* ship, whose name means “becoming strong.” It was, in other words, a *descending* ship which grew bright—a fact which has frustrated many solar mythologists, who would have expected the “dawn” or “morning” to express itself in a *rising* solar bark. “I descend in the ship of the morning,” states the god.1612

1608 Piankoff, *Litany of Re*, 169.

1609 Lacau, *op. cit.*, 37.

1610 Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, 85.

1611 *Ibid.*, 80.

1612 *Coffin Text* 118; see also Spell 302.

Including the polar mount, the image of the "dawn" is . The Egyptians gave human form to the image in the hieroglyph , symbol of the *tua* or "morning." Mythically, the god "awakens," and the spirits of the celestial city come to life, "praising" and "supporting" the god with the descending crescent-arms. It was these aspects of the archaic dawn which supplied the Egyptian pillar-sign with its interconnected meanings: "to awaken," "to praise," "to support."

2. The supreme moment of the "day" was that at which the Saturnian crescent sat squarely upon the central pillar, the two horns of the crescent reaching equally to the left and right . At this moment the solar orb stood directly beneath the terrestrial observer, and the entire Saturnian configuration shone its brightest.

3. As the crescent traveled toward the region of the "right" (which it reached at the solar sunrise) Saturn's brilliance began to diminish. The god's vessel became the *Semktet* ship, or the ship of "becoming weak." The god "sails upstream" in the *Semktet* ship (again, a surprise to solar mythologists). In the dual kingdom of Abtet-Amentet the region of Amentet (the "right") is thus the domain of declining, or "going in."

4. The cycle was completed with the return of the crescent to the position "above" (solar orb directly overhead). This point in the cycle, when Saturn's light was most subdued, was the archaic "night."

The cycle of the day and night is one of the most pervasive themes in Egyptian art, and the key is the revolving crescent. In connection with the cosmic twins, I have already noted that the primal pair has its origin in the alternating positions of the crescent around the central sun, and that this symmetrical opposition is depicted in illustrations of the daily cycle. The artists often showed a pair of arms (=crescent) reaching around the Aten alternately from above and below, or from the left and right. These are not only pictures of the dual regions, but of the cycle of "coming forth and diminishing."

Around this cycle the Egyptians built an impressive range of symbols, and the underlying connection with the revolving crescent reflects itself in two basic rules:

1. All symbols of the "day" (in opposition to "night") have their origin in the image of the crescent "below." This is why the signs for the "lower" region generally overlap with signs for the "day." In fact, a number of interrelated ideas converge on the same celestial image (, , ,): "below," "lower," "day," "coming forth," "life," "existence," "awake," "support," "celebrate," "masculine power."

2. Similarly, the symbols of the "night" generally coincide with the symbols of the "above," all taking their meaning from the inverted crescent (, , ,), The meanings include: "above," "upper," "mound," "night, diminished," "negation, absence," "asleep," "concealment," "bowing," "feminine," "arrival" (at the top), and "completion" (of the cycle).

Here are a few of the key signs:

1. , . The signs not only portray the Khut or Mount of Glory, they signify "the coming forth" of the sun-god, who shines between the two peaks of the right and left. In this sense the signs have exactly the same meaning as the image , *i.e.*, the "day." But the mountain sign also means "the below."

While Egyptologists like to think of the two peaks as fixed on our earth, the Egyptians themselves knew that the great god "sailed" in the Khut or "revolved" round the Aten in the Khut. This is why the artists not only placed the two peaks in the revolving ship, but *often depicted them in an inverted position* *above the* Aten.

The inverted peaks simultaneously mean “the above” and “concealment” or “obscurity.” Together, the upright and inverted peaks represent both the full cycle of the day and the full circle (above and below) of the celestial kingdom.

Figure 150. Khut and Ankh, interchangeable symbols of the twin-peaked mountains.

Figure 151. (a)

Figure 151. (b) Egyptian illustrations of the Ankh, with outstretched arms holding aloft the Aten. The Ankh issues from the Tet, the pillar of “stability.” (a & b)

2. . No Egyptian sign is more familiar to the modern world than the *Ankh.* In Egyptian symbolism the Ankh corresponds in fundamental meaning to the Khut, or Mount of Glory. To convey this equation the artists either superimposed the Ankh on the two peaks (fig. 150) or showed the Aten resting, not on the Khut, but on two arms extending upward from the Ankh (figs. 151a, 151b).

The Ankh (whose origins the experts have long debated) is but a conventionalized image of the polar configuration during the period of "coming forth," or "life." We have already seen that the image of the crescent-enclosure passed into the related forms , , , . The Ankh . merely adds the central pillar.

Just as the central sun "comes forth in the Mount of Glory," so also does it "come forth in the Ankh"—literally, "in the Mountain of life." As a figure of the sun-god's period of brilliance or "activity" the hieroglyph came to signify "life" generally.

3. . This sign for the "upper face" of the sun-god takes its meaning from the crescent in its position "above" , *i.e.*, the "night"-time position. Thus, in addition to its meaning as "the upper region" the sign also denotes "obscurity," "concealment," and "night."

To show the relation of above and below ("night and day"), the artists often placed the sign over the cleft peak , so that together the two images present an *enclosure*, signifying the full circle of the Aten.

Figure 152. Together, the "above" and the "below" (the upraised arms) form the enclosure of "the above and below."

Figure 153. Nut, the Above, held aloft by Shu. (Arms of Shu=ship=twin peaks as figures of the Below).

4. , , , , . Upraised arms, in Egyptian symbolism, signify the crescent "below" , and thus possess the full range of meanings associated with Saturn's "day." The Ka-arms, commonly shown supporting the Aten, convey the sense of "life," "coming forth," "support," and "masculine power" ("below"="male principle"). The sign (or) denotes "living Re," while the sign carries the interrelated meanings "to support," "to celebrate."

But numerous illustrations also show the Ka-arms embracing the Aten from *above* (figs. 113, 114). Here they denote "the upper region," the region of the "night." Hence the related signs and (inverted) arms mean "cessation," "absence," "negation," and completion."

5. , , . In illustrations of the daily cycle, these signs of the “upper region” (corresponding to the crescent above) are interchangeable with the image of the inverted cleft peak . They mean “hidden,” “concealed,” and by extension, “mysterious,” “secret.”

(Concerning the sign , however, an additional significance deserves consideration. The twofold enclosure, or circle of the cosmic twins—pertaining to symmetrically related positions of the crescent—is a circle half light and half shadow. In one character, the twins simply represent the light and dark divisions, so that the inverted semicircle might represent, not the “night”-time crescent, but the *shadow* in the “day”-time configuration . It is thus highly significant that the sign , read *Khaibit*, means “shadow.” As the female [upper] portion of the circle, the Khaibit comes to be conceived as the consort of the male power [lower region]. Of course, one could hardly expect the Egyptians to rigorously maintain the distinction between the “shadow” and the inverted crescent.)

6. , , , . As earlier noted, all symbols of the Aten resting in the horns signify “coming forth” and “below.” But in the sign the horns are inverted over the central sun and pillar. The sign’s meaning is “concealed,” “mysterious.”

7. , , , . All of these images of the primeval “mound” depict the upper region, marked out by the crescent at the completion of the daily cycle. Thus the mound sign (or) means “to arrive (at the top),” “to complete the journey (or cycle).” Closely related is the sign , “to arrive.” Generally the mound signs refer to the region of “sleep,” “death,” or “diminished light.”

The reverse of these mound signs is suggesting the crescent in its “day”-time position. The glyph means “golden” or “brilliant.”

8. , . While the sign denotes the masculine power of the Cosmos (the below), the inverse image denotes the feminine (the above). When the crescent reaches the below the celestial kingdom is in “celebration.” Hence the sign means “celebration,” “festival of life.”

Though many additional aspects of the Egyptian twofold kingdom and the related circle of “day and night” need to be explored, I cite the above simply to indicate how the Saturnian configuration can illuminate certain Egyptian images which have long remained unexplained.

Concerning the relation of the Egyptian system to the language and symbols of other nations, I offer no steadfast rule. But there is every reason to believe that certain general principles can be applied elsewhere. In ancient Sumerian thought, for example, the “Cosmos” is designated by the term *an-ki.* (Jensen renders the word as “the All.”)[1613] The most common translation of *an-ki* is “heaven and earth.” But the symbol of “the All” is , and the *literal* meaning of *an-ki* is “above and below,” suggesting a noteworthy parallel with the Egyptian circle of *pet-ta.* And just as the Egyptian goddess Nut forms the “circle of above and below,” so does the Sumerian goddess Inanna “encompass the an-ki.”

[1613] *Op. cit.*, 1-3.

To unravel the symbolism of the dual kingdom, or of the quartered kingdom, the first requirement is to put aside prevailing geographical interpretations. The language originated in connection with the celestial dwelling. In the original imagery the phrase “heaven and earth” is meaningless. There is no “north,” “south,” “east,” or “west,” There is simply the above and below, the left and right, the regions of coming forth and declining. As to the capacity of this principle to resolve numerous enigmas of ancient speech I have no doubt.

XI: Conclusion

In the foregoing pages I have attempted to show that the oldest motifs of ritual and myth focus on a coherent set of ideas—and that these ideas bear no relationship to the present world order. What modern man views as creations of a fragmented and irrational imagination actually pertain to a vision of exceptional simplicity. The Cyclopes, dragons, and one-legged giants speak not for unconstrained speculation, but for once visible powers.

To modern writers, seeking to penetrate the language of myth, it is as if early races contrived their fantastic symbolism in conscious disdain for later efforts to understand. “Anyone who has ever entered the labyrinth of an archaic culture’s mythical compendia (the *Pyramid Texts*, the *Vedas*, the *Theogony*) can testify to a desperate suspicion that there is no thread of objective reality,” confessed one classicist. Such a suspicion is difficult to dispel in the face of such “primitive” imagery as golden mountains reaching heaven, revolving islands and temples, winged goddesses, cosmic bulls, circular serpents, and descending rivers of fire. Mythologists quickly despair of rational explanation.

But it is the thesis of this book that the confusion results chiefly from the failure of the modern age to discern the underlying cosmic order to which the myths refer. Our reconstruction of this order includes the following elements:

1. In the earliest age recalled by man the planet Saturn was the dominant celestial body. Ancient races the world over record that there was once a “Golden Age”—a kingdom of cosmic harmony ruled by a central light god. Numerous sources identify this light god as the planet Saturn.

2. Accounts of Saturn’s appearance suggest that the planet hung ominously close to the earth. In early ritual and astronomy Saturn appears as the “primeval sun,” described as a figure of “terrifying splendour.” Today, Saturn appears as a bare speck of light following the same visual path as the solar orb. But during the legendary Golden Age, Saturn stood in the north. Legends from every continent depict the primeval sun as an immense, fiery globe at the north celestial pole—the visual pivot of the heavens. Unlike the rising and setting solar orb, the primeval sun remained fixed in one place.

3. The modern age has misread the ancient accounts of “the beginning.” These accounts speak of a creator, a first man, and a first king—all referring to the same cosmic figure. It is impossible to understand these accounts in any conventional sense because the ancient terminology carries meanings radically different from the modern. The legendary creator, first man, and first king was Saturn.

4. The subject of the global creation legend is a spectacular cosmic event actually witnessed by the ancients: massive quantities of cosmic debris exploded from Saturn, clouding the heavens and eventually congealing into a vast band around the planet. In mythical terms this band was Saturn’s created “land” in heaven. Saturn ruled this celestial kingdom as both the Universal Monarch and Adam, the Primordial “Man.”

5. The ancients drew pictures of Saturn incessantly, and these pictures will be found around the world. Ancient papyri, clay tablets, monuments, artifacts, and rock drawings consistently show a central orb surrounded by a circle. This symbol of the “enclosed sun” is the original hieroglyph for the planet Saturn.

6. Images of Saturn in his enclosure occur on every page of ancient texts. The band is Saturn’s spouse, the mother goddess. But it is also his revolving temple, city, or island in heaven. It is the stationary, but ever-turning “world-wheel” recalled by almost every ancient race. Saturn wears the band as a golden girdle, collar, or crown. He dwells in it as the pupil of the all-seeing Eye. The same band receives mythical interpretation as Saturn's throne, a receptacle of cosmic waters, and an encircling serpent.

7. Four primary streams of light appeared to radiate from Saturn, dividing the Saturnian band into quarters. The symbols of these four streams are the sun-cross and enclosed sun cross . Mythically, these are the four rivers of the lost paradise, the four winds, and the four pillars of Saturn's Cosmos. The enclosed sun-cross is thus the universal image of the "unified state" on our earth, for every terrestrial "holy land" was a copy of the *ideal* kingdom above.

8. The same records which describe Saturn's band and its four-fold division depict a pillar-like stream ascending the world axis and visually seeming to sustain Saturn's dwelling. Two primary images of this "cosmic mountain" are and . In the myths this column appears as the great god's single leg, a vertical stream of water or air (the North Wind), and the erect serpent or dragon of the deep.

9. Receiving light from the solar orb, the Saturnian band acquired a brightly illuminated crescent, which, as the earth rotated on its axis, visually revolved around Saturn each day. The light and dark portions of the band found expression in the black and white cosmic twins, while the alternating positions of the crescent produced the twins of the "right and left" or "above and below."

10. In the polar configuration the ancients saw, at once, the cleft summit of the cosmic mountain, with the central sun standing between the peaks of the right and left; the cosmic bull supporting Saturn between its horns; Saturn's crescent-ship on the mountaintop; the heaven-sustaining giant with out-stretched arms; the winged god or goddess; the plant of life; Saturn's turning sword; and the altar of the world. It was the relation of the Saturnian crescent to Saturn's period of brilliance which produced the original symbolism of the four directions and of "day and night."

In the earliest age the Saturnian configuration was the exclusive focal point of religious rites. But when Saturn's Golden Age passed away, mankind drew on all aspects of nature to commemorate his reign. The solar orb, the moon, meteorological forces, various animals, mountains and rivers—all manifest some special quality of the creator-king. And where no representative powers were available in nature, the ancients fashioned their own monuments in earth and stone.

The first requirement, then, is to distinguish between the primeval, cosmic forms on the one hand, and, on the other hand, the representative images chosen to depict those forms in ritual and myth. We must separate the *archetype* (concealed reality) from the *symbol* (analogy or representation of reality).

In examining the world of symbolism our predicament is much like that of the dwellers in Plato's allegorical cave, who can discern the nature of things only through the shadowy specters cast on the wall. Most of the cave's inhabitants take the shadows for the real world, but occasionally a wiser man recognizes that the shadows are merely the blurred image of a more coherent reality.

So it is with ancient myth and ritual. One must not confuse the shadow with its source, the symbol with the thing symbolized.

If the Egyptians came to regard the bull as sacred it was only because this animal was the natural counterpart to the Bull of Heaven, whose horns, supporting the very vault of the Cosmos, "shone like day." If the eagle was similarly venerated, this was because its expanded wings seemed to mirror a special quality of the "winged" creator, or the "winged" goddess.

The same principle applies to the symbolism of the constellations. The vital powers depicted by constellation figures date back to an era long before men began imposing anthropomorphic and zoomorphic forms on star groups. But eventually the ancients sought to represent diverse aspects and traditions of the great god by sketching them out in the heavens.

Could a patternless group of stars have inspired the history of mighty Orion? Rather, the story of Orion *preceded* astrology. (In fact, Orion is widely acknowledged to be the Greek version of the Babylonian Tammuz-Ninurta, the planet Saturn.) And when priest-astronomers finally projected Orion onto the starry dome, they received only the most feeble assistance from the stellar patterns themselves.

Likewise, our sun, contrary to long-standing opinion, never inspired the idea of a "supreme god" and never produced an original myth of creation. Only in later times did the poets and historians confuse the solar orb with the great god of beginnings. But that such a confusion did occur is crucial to an understanding of the development of ancient religion. In Egypt, for example, the original ritual of the *central sun* was eventually transformed into eulogies to the solar orb; and the devotion to the celestial kingdom passed finally into a veneration of nature as a whole. (The most decisive shift occurred in the time of Akhenaten.) One could trace similar developments among numerous races, as priests, philosophers, astronomers, and more practical-minded generations became ever more preoccupied with "this world," recasting Saturnian imagery within the context of a less spectacular cosmic order.

Rather than attempt to follow the complex process here, I ask the reader to await treatment of the subject in the second volume of this work (entitled *The Cataclysm*). The fact is that the traditions reviewed in previous sections supply only the preface to the Saturnian drama. In these pages I have sought only to demonstrate the reality of Saturn's polar configuration, reserving discussion of the ultimate calamity for the subsequent volume.

Saturn's death or fall, we will discover, constituted the prototypal catastrophe, recounted by the ancients in numerous forms and elaborations. The collapse of the celestial kingdom; the world-destroying deluge; the battle with the serpent-dragon of the deep; the birth of Jupiter; the Child-Hero; the resurrection and transformation of Saturn; and Saturn's eventual departure to the distant realm—these are key elements in a story of incalculable impact on ancient imagination.

But to decipher the myths of the great catastrophe one must have clearly in mind the nature of the celestial order brought to an end with Saturn's fall. For those willing to pursue the question in an objective spirit there is the promise of dramatic discoveries about man's past.

Bibliography

V. S. Agrawala,

—*Sparks from the Vedic Fire* (Benares, 1962);

—*The Thousand Syllabled Speech* (Benares, 1963).

W. F. Albright,

—"The Mouth of the Rivers," *The American Journal of Semitic Languages and Literatures*, Vol. XXXV, No. 4;

—"The Goddess of Life and Wisdom," *The American Journal of Semitic Languages and Literatures*, *Vol.* XXXVI, No. 261.

Hartley Burr Alexander,

—*North American Mythology*, "Mythology of All Races," Vol. X (New York, 1964);

—*Latin American Mythology*, "Mythology of All Races," Vol. XI (New York, 1964).

John M. Allegro, *The Sacred Mushroom and the Cross* (New York, 1970).

Apollodorus, *The Library* (Cambridge, 1967), James G. Frazer, ed., 2 vols.

James Bailey, *The God-Kings and the Titans* (New York, 1973).

H. S. Bellamy, *Moons, Myths and Man* (New York, 1938).

Elsdon Best, *The Astronomical Knowledge of the Maori* (Wellington, 1922).

S. S. Bhawe, *The Soma Hymns of the Rig Veda* (Baroda, 1957).

C. J. Bleeker, *Hathor and Thoth* (Leiden, 1973).

Raymond Bloch, "Le Symbolisme Cosmique," *Série Orientale Roma*, Vol. XIV (Rome, 1957).

Franz Boll, "Kronos-Helios," *Archiv für Religionswissenschaft*, *XIX* (1916-19).

A. Bouche-Leclerq, *L'Astrologie Grecque* (Paris, 1899).

Robert Briffault, *The Mothers* (London, 1927), Vol. I.

Robert Brown, Jr.,

—*Eradinus: River and Constellatton* (London, 1883);

—*Researches into the Origins of the Primitive Constellations* (Oxford, 1900), 2 vols.

K. H. Brugsch,

—*Thesaurus Inscriptionum Ägyptiacarum* (Leipzig, 1883-91);

—*Religion und Mythologie der Alten Ägypter* (Leipzig, 1890).

E. A. Budge,

—*The Egyptian Book of the Dead* (London, 1901);

—*A Hieroglyphic Vocabulary to the Theban Recension of the Book of the Dead* (London, 1911);

—*From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt* (London, 1934);

—*Osiris: The Egyptian Religion of Resurrection* (New York, 1961);

—*The Papyrus of Ani* (New York, 1967);

—*The Gods of the Egyptians* (Dover edition, New York,1969), 2 vols;

—*The Litany of Funerary Offerings* (New York, 1972).

C. A. Burland, *The Gods of Mexico* (New York, 1967).

E. A. S. Butterworth,

—*The Tree at the Navel of the Earth* (Berlin, 1970);

—*The Cambridge Ancient History* (Cambridge, 1971), Vol. I.

Joseph Campbell,

—*Oriental Mythology* (Viking Compass edition, New York, 1970);

—*Occidental Mythology* (Viking Compass edition, New York, 1970).

Maurice A. Canney, "Ancient Conceptions of Kingship," *Oriental Studies in Honor of Cursetji E. Pavry*, J. D. C. Pavry, ed. (London, 1933).

Albert J. Carnoy, *Iranian Mythology*, "Mythology of All Races," Vol. VI (New York, 1964).

R. H. Charles, ed., *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament* (Oxford, 1913).

Mohini M. Chatterji, translator, *The Bhagavad Gita* (New York, 1960).

J. C. Cirlot, *A Dictionary of Symbols* (London, 1962).

R. T. Rundle Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt* (New York, 1959).

Hermann Collitz, "König Yima und Saturn," in *Oriental Studies in Honor of Cursetji E. Pavry*, J. D. C. Pavry, ed. (London, 1933).

V. C. C. Collum, "Die Schopferische Mutter Göttin," in Olga Fröbe-Kapteyn, *Vorträge über Gestalt und Kult der Grossen Mutter, EranosJahrbuch* (Uppsala, 1938).

E. Combe, *Histoire du Culte de Sin* (Paris, 1908).

Jack Randolph Conrad, *The Horn and the Sword* (New York, 1957).

A. B. Cook, *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion* (New York, 1964), 3 vols.

A. K. Coomaraswamy,

—"Symbolism of the Dome," *The Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. XIV, No. 1 (March 1938);

—*A New Approach to the Vedas* (London, 1963);

—*Elements of Buddhist Iconography* (New Delhi, 1972).

A. K. Coomaraswamy and Sister Nivedita, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists* (New York, 1967).

F. Cumont, *The Mysteries of Mithra* (New York, 1956).

James Darmesteter, *The Zend Avesta* (Oxford, 1880), 3 vols.

H. R. Ellis Davidson, *Gods and Myths of Northern Europe*, Penguin Books edition (Middlesex, 1964).

Hertha von Dechend, with Giorgio de Santillana, *Hamlet's Mill* (Boston, 1969).

Armand Delatte, *Études sur la Litterature Pythagoricienne* (Paris, 1915).

Edouard Dhorme, *Les Religions de Babylonie et d'Assyrie* (Paris, 1949).

Roland B. Dixon, *Oceanic Mythology* “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. IX (New York, 1964).

Ignatius Donnelly,

—*Atlantis, the Antediluvian World* (New York, 1882);

—*Ragnarok: The Age of Fire and Gravel* (New York, 1883).

M. J. Dresden, “Mythology of Ancient Iran,” in Samuel N. Kramer, ed., *Mythologies of the Ancient World* (Garden City, 1961).

E. S. Drower, *The Coronation of the Great Sislam* (Leiden, 1962).

Fray Diego Duran, *Book of the Gods and Rites*, Fernando Horcasitas and Doris Heyden, trans. (Norman, 1971).

J. Eggeling, trans., *Satapatha Brahmana* (Delhi, 1963), 3 vols.

Robert Eisler, *Weltenmantel und Himmelszelt* (Munchen, 1910).

Mircea Eliade,

—*Le Chamanisme et les Techniques Archaiques de l’Extase* (Paris, 1951);

—*The Myth of the Eternal Return* (Westminster, 1954);

—*Patterns in Comparative Religion* (New York, 1963).

Ellen Russell Emerson, *Indian Myths* (Wayzata, 1965).

Énel, *Les Origines de la Genèse et l’Enseignement des Temples de l’Ancienne Égypte* (Paris, 1963).

Adolf Erman, *The Literature of the Ancient Egyptians* (New York, 1971).

W. Y. Evans-Wentz, *The Tibetan Book of the Dead* (Oxford, 1957).

Hugh G. Evelyn-White, trans., *Hesiod, the Homeric Hymns and Homerica* (Cambridge, 1970).

G. S. Faber,

—*A Dissertation on the Cabiri* (Oxford, 1803), 2 vols.;

—*The Origins of Pagan Idolatry* (London, 1816), 3 vols.

R. O. Faulkner, trans., *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts* (Oxford, 1969) , trans., *The Coffin Texts* (Oxford, 1974).

John C. Ferguson, *Chinese Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. VIII (New York, 1964).

Maurice Fluegel, *Philosophy, Qabbala and Vedanta* (Baltimore, 1902).

Henri Frankfort,

—*The Intellectual Adventure of Ancient Man* (Chicago, 1946);

—*Kingship and the Gods* (Chicago, 1948).

James G. Frazer,

—*The Golden Bough*, Vol. l (London, 1907);

—*The Golden Bough*, abridged edition (New York, 1963).

Theodor H. Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament* (New York 1969).

Peter Gelling, with Hilda Davidson, *The Chariot of the Sun* (New York, 1969).

Louis Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews* (Philadelphia, 1913), Vols. I and 11.

Eugene Goblet d’Alviella, *The Migration of Symbols* (New York, 1956).

Delia Goetz, with Sylvanus G. Morley, *Popul Vuh* (Norman, 1950).

B. L. Goff, *Symbols of Prehistoric Mesopotamia* (Yale, 1963).

Ignaz Goldziher, *Mythology Among the Hebrews* (New York, 1967).

Robert Graves, *The Greek Myths* (New York, 1955).

Robert Graves, with Raphael Patai, *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis* (New York, 1966).

L. Grevan, *Der Ka in Theologie und Königskult der Ägypter des Alten Reichs* (Gluckstadt, 1952).

Jacob Grimm, *Teutonic Mythology*, J. S. Stallybrass, trans. (New York, 1966), 4 vols.

Rene Guenon,

—*Le Roi du Monde* (Paris, 1958);

—*Le Symbolisme de la Croix* (Paris, 1931);

—*Études sur l'Hindouisme* (Paris, 1968);

—*Formes Traditionelles et Cycles Cosmiques* (Paris, 1970).

W. K. C. Guthrie,

—*The Greeks and Their Gods* (Boston, 1955);

—*Orpheus and Greek Religion* (New York, 1966).

Manly P. Hall, *An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolic Philosophy* (San Francisco, 1928).

J. Renel Harris, *Boanerges* (Cambridge, 1913).

M. Selim Hassan, *Hymnes Religieux du Moyen Empire* (Cairo, 1928).

C. Hentze,

—"Cosmogonie du Monde Dresse Debout et duMonde Renverse," *Serie Orientale Roma*, Vol. XIV (Rome, 1957);

—*Das Haus als Weltort de Seele* (Stuttgart, 1961).

H. Heras, *The Empire of the Swastika* (Bombay, 1937).

Thor Heyerdahl, *Kon-Tiki* (Chicago, 1951).

Hirata, *Pure Shinto* (Yokohama, 1910).

A. M. Hocart,

—*Kingship (Oxford*, 1927);

—*Kings and Councilors* (Chicago, 1970).

Hans Hoerbiger, *Glacial Kosmogonie*, 2nd edition (Leipzig, 1925).

Maj Sandrnan Holmberg, *The God Ptah* (Lund, 1946).

Uno Holmberg,

—*Der Baum des Lebens* (Helsinki, 1922);

—*Die Religiösen Vorstellungen der Altaischen Völker*, Folklore Fellows Communications, Vol. 125 (1938);

—*Siberian Mythology*, "Mythology of All Races," Vol. IV (New York, 1964).

Indianapolis, Indiana, Historical Society, *Walum Olum* (Indianapolis, 1954).

T. Jacobsen, *Toward the Image of Tammuz* (Harvard, 1970).

M. Jastrow,

—*The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria* (Boston, 1898);

—“Sun and Saturn,” *Revue d’Assyriologie et d’Archeologie Orientale*, Vol. 7 (1909).

Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* (Strassburg, 1890).

Alfred Jeremias,

—*Monotheistische Strömungen Innerhalb der Bab. Religion* (Leipzig, 1904).

—*Handbuch derAltorientalischen Geisteskultur* (Leipzig, 1913);

C. G. Jung, *Collected Works*, Bollingen Series (Princeton, 1956-72).

C. G. Jung, with C. Kerenyi,

—*Essays on a Science of Mythology*, R. F. C. Hull, trans. (Princeton, 1969);

—*The Kalevala* (Cambridge, 1963), Francis P. Magoun, Jr., translator.

Hermann Kees, “Kulttopographische und Mythologische Beiträge,” *Zeitschrift für Ägyptische Sprache und Altertumskunde*, 71 Band, Erstes Heft.

A. B. Keith,

—*Indian Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. XII (New York, 1964);

—*The Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads* (Delhi, 1970), 2 vols.;

—*Rigveda Brahmanas* (Delhi, 1971).

Carl Kerenyi,

—*Asklepios* (New York, 1959);

—*Prometheus* (New York, 1963).

C. Kerenyi, with C. G. Jung, *Essays on a Science of Mythology*, R. F. C. Hull, trans. (Princeton, 1969).

R. Klibansky, with E. Panofsky and R. Saxl, *Saturn and Melancholy* (London, 1964).

Samuel Noah Kramer,

—*From the Tablets of Sumer* (Indian Hills, 1956);

—*Mythologies of the Ancient World* (New York, 1961);

—*The Sacred Marriage Rite* (Bloomington, 1969);

—*Sumerian Mythology* (New York, 1972).

Walter Krickeberg, *Pre-Columbian American Religions* (New York, 1969).

Pierre Lacau, *Traduction des Textes des Cercueik du Moyen Empire* (Paris, 1937).

Stephen Langdon,

—*A Sumerian Grammar* (Paris, 1911);

—*Sumerian Liturgical Texts* (Philadelphia, 1917);

—*Sumerian Liturgies and Psalms* (Philadelphia, 1919);

—“A Hymn to Eridu,” *Journal of the Society of Oriental Research*, Vol. 5, No. 2 (1921);

—*Semitic Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. V (New York, 1964).

Francois Lenormant,

—*Chaldean Magic* (London, 1878);

—*Les Origines de l’Histoire* (Paris, 1880), 3 vols.

Miguel Leon-Portilla, *Pre-Columbian Literatures of Mexico* (Norman, 1969).

G. Rachel Levy, *Religious Conceptions of the Stone Age* (New York, 1963).

Hildegard Lewy, “Origin and Significance of the Mâgen Dâwîd,” *Archiv Orientalni*, Vol. 18 (1950).

Hildegard and Julius Lewy, “The Origin of the Week and the Oldest West Asiatic Calendar” *Hebrew Union College Annual*, Vol. 17 (1942-43).

H. P. L’Orange, *Studies in the Iconography of Cosmic Kingship (Oslo*, 1953).

J. A. MacCulloch,

—*Eddic Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. II (New York, 1964);

—*Celtic Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. III (New York, 1964).

Donald A. Mackenzie, *The Migration of Symbols* (London, 1926).

F. P. Magoun, Jr., trans., *The Kalevala* (Harvard, 1963).

Maude Worcester Makemson, *The Morning Star Rises* (New Haven, 1941).

A. E. Mariette, *Denderah* (Paris, 1880).

Gerald Massey,

—*The Natural Genesis* (London, 1883), 2 vols.;

—*Ancient Egypt* (New York, 1970), 2 vols.

Leinani Melville, *Children of the Rainbow* (Wheaton, 1969).

Siegried Morenz, with Johannes Schubert, *Der Gott auf der Blume* (Ascona, 1954).

M. A. Moret, “Le Lotus et la Naissance des Dieux in Égypte,” *Journal Asiatique*, *T IX* No. 1 (Jan.-Feb. 1917).

William Mullen, “The Center Holds,” *Pensee* (May 1972).

W. Muller, *Die Heilige Stadt* (Stuttgart, 1961).

W. M. Muller, *Egyptian Mythology*, “Mythology of All Races,” Vol. 12 (NewYork, 1964).

E. Neumann, *The Great Mother* (Princeton, 1973).

Percy E. Newberry,

—“The Petty-Kingdom of the Harpoon and Egypt’s Earliest Mediterranean Port,” *Annals of Archaeology and Anthropology*, Vol. 1 (1908);

—“Two Cults of the Old Kingdom,” *Annals of Archaeology and Anthropology*, Vol. I (1908).

Hugh Nibley, “Tenting, Toll, and Taxing,” *The Western Political Quarterly*, Vol. XIX (1966).

Swami Nikhilananda, *The Upanishads*, abridged edition (New York, 1963).

Sister Nivedita, with A. K. Coomaraswamy, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists* (New York, 1967).

Zelia Nuttall, *Fundamental Principles of Old and New World Civilization*, Archaeological and Ethnological Papers of the Peabody Museum, Vol. II (Harvard, 1901).

W. T. Olcott, *Myths of the Sun* (Capricorn Books edition, New York, 1967).

John O’Neill, *The Night of the Gods* (London, 1893).

R. B. Onians, *The Origins of European Thought* (Cambridge, 1954).

Ovid, *The Metamorphoses*, Horace Greeley, trans. (New York, 1960).

E. Panofsky, with R. Saxl and R. Klibansky, *Saturn and Melancholy* (London, 1964).

Raphael Patai,

—*The Hebrew Goddess* (New York, 1967);

—*Man and Temple* (New York, 1967).

Raphael Patai, with Robert Graves, *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis* (New York, 1966).

John Weirr Perry, *Lord of the Four Quarters* (G. Braziller, 1966).

Donald L. Philippi, trans., *The Kojiki* (Princeton, 1969).

Alexander Piankoff,

—*The Tomb of Ramesses VI* (New York, 1954);

—*The Shrines of Tut-Ankh-Amon* (New York, 1955);

—*Mythological Papyri* (New York, 1957);

—*The Litany of Re* (New York, 1964);

—*The Pyramid of Unas* (Princeton, 1968);

—*The Wandering of the Soul* (Princeton, 1974).

Erwin Pousselle, "Seelische Führung in Lebenden Taoismus," in Olga Fröbe-Kapteyn, ed., *Yoga und Meditation im Osten und im Westen* (Zurich, 1934);

J. B. Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Reaching to the Old Testament* (Princeton, 1969);

George Rawlinson, *Herodotus* (London, 1964);

P. Renouf, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* (London, 1904);

E. A. Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple* (New York, 1969);

John Rhys, *Studies in the Arthurean Legend* (Oxford, 1891);

William Ridgeway,

—*The Origin of Tragedy* (New York, 1910).

—*Dramas and Dramatic Dances of Non-European Races* (Cambridge, 1915);

W. H. Roscher,

—*Omphalos* (Leipzig, 1913).

—*Neue Omphalosstudien* (Leipzig, 1915).

—*Der Omphalosgedanke bei Verschiedenen Völkern* (Leipzig, 1918);

Ralph L. Roys, *The Book of the Chilam Balem* (Norman, 1967);

Giorgio de Santillana, with Hertha von Dechend, *Hamlet's Mill* (Boston, 1969);

Leopold de Saussure,

—"Origine Chinoise de la Cosmologie Iranienne," *Journal Asiatique* (Oct.-Dec. 1922);

—"Origine Babylonienne de l'Astronomie Chinoise," *Archives des Sciences Physiques et Naturelles*, Vol. 5 (Jan.-Feb. 1923);

—"Le Systeme Cosmologique Sino-lranienne," *Journal Asiatique* (April-June 1923);

—"La Série Septénaire, Cosmologique et Planétaire," *Journal Asiatique* (April-June 1924), *Les Origines de l'Astronomie Chinoise* (Paris, 1930).

R. Saxl, with R. Klibansky and E. Panofsky, *Saturn and Melancholy* (London, 1964).

A. Sayce, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion* (Oxford, 1898).

Heinrich Schäfer, "Altägyptische Bilder der Auf- und Untergehenden Sonne," *Zeitschrift für Ägyptische Sprache und Altertumskunde*, VI Band.

G. Schlegel, *L'Uranographie Chinoise* (Taipei, 1967).

G. G. Scholem, *Jewish Gnosticism, Merkabah Mysticism and Talmudic Tradition* (New York, 1960).

Johannes Schubert, with Siegried Morenz, *Der Gott auf der Blume* (Ascona, 1954).

Julius Schwabe, *Archetyp und Tierkreis* (Basle, 1951).

Vincent Scully, *The Earth, the Temple and the Gods* (New York, 1969).

Laurette Sejourne, *Burning Water* (New York, 1956).

Åke W. Sjöberg with E. Bergmann, *The Collection of the Sumerian Temple Hymns* (Locust Valley, 1969).

G. Elliot Smith, *The Evolution of the Dragon* (Manchester, 1919).

Vincent A. Smith, "The Iron Pillar of Derhi," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (January 1897).

Herbert Spencer, *The Principles of Sociology* (London, 1872-96).

M. C. Stevenson, *The Zuni Indians* (Washington, 1905).

Snorri Sturluson, *The Prose Edda*, J. I. Young, trans. (Berkley, 1971).

Elmer G. Suhr,

—*Before Olympos* (New York, 1967);

—*The Spinning Aphrodite* (NewYork, 1969);

—*The Mask, the Unicorn and the Messiah* (New York, 1970).

Surya Kanta, *The Flood Legend in Sanskrit Literature* (Delhi, 1950).

Knut Tallquist, "Himmelsgegende und Winde," *Studia Orientalia 11* (1928).

J. Eric and S. Thompson, *Maya History and Religion* (University of Oklahoma, 1970).

R. C. Thompson,

—*The Reports of the Magicians and Astrologers of Ninevah and Babylon*, Vol. II (London, 1900);

—*The Devils and Evil Spirits of Babylonia* (London, 1903).

Giuseppe Tucci, *The Theory and Practice of the Mandala* (London, 1969).

Edward Burnett Tylor,

—*Researches into the Early History of Mankind* (London, 1878);

—*Primitive Culture* (London, 1903).

E. Douglas Van Buren, "Concerning the Horned Cap of the Mesopotamian Gods," Orientalia, Vol. 12 (1943) *Symbols of the Gods in Mesopotamia (Rome*, 1945).

F. A. Vanderburgh, *Sumerian Hymns from Cuneiform Texts in the British Museum* (New York, 1966).

Hans Henning Van Der Osten, *Ancient Oriental Seats in the Collection of Mr. Edward T. Newell* (University of Chicago Oriental Institute Publications, Vol. XXII).

Jacques Vandier, "Iousâas et (Hathor)-Nébet-Hétépet," *Revue d'Egyptologie* t. 17 (1965).

J. Van Dijk "Le Motif Cosmique dans la Pensée Sumérienne" *Acta Orientalia* (Vol. XXVIII No. 1-2).

H. D. Velanker, *Rigveda Mandala VII* (Bombay, 1963).

Zev Vilnay, *Legends of Jerusalem* (Philadelphia, 1973).

W. H. Ward, *The Cylinder Seals of Western Asia* (Washington, 1910).

W. F. Warren,

—"The Gates of Sunrise in Ancient Babylonian Art," *The Babylonian and Oriental Record*, *Vol.* 111, No. 11 (Oct. 1889);

—*Paradise Found* (Boston, 1885).

A. J. Wensinck,

—"The Ideas of the Western Semites Concerning the Navel of the Earth," *Afdeeling Letterkunde* (Deel XVII No. 1);

—"The Ocean in the Literature of the Western Semites," *Afdeeling Letterkunde* (Deel XIX No. 2).

Alice Werner, *African Mythology*, "Mythology of All Races," Vol. VII (New York, 1964).

William Whiston, *A New Theory of the Earth* (London, 1696).

W. D. Whitney, *Atharva Veda* (Berlin, 1966).

Hans Winkler, *Rock Drawings of Southern Egypt* (London, 1938).

R. C. Zaehner, *Zurvan: A Zoroastrian Dilemme* (Oxford, 1955).

Endnotes

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

(back)

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

svalispeaksagain 7:01 pm on March 24, 2019

Tags: Christian (24), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), SRA (45)

The Real Agenda Behind the Occult

As I have healed, my parts inside have shared more and more of the "real picture" of what was going on during my life. Early on, I had recovered some memories which were part of the story, but by no means the whole story of my life. This is due to the fact that healing is a process, and over time, as parts deeper within the system have shared information, I have learned more. Early in my healing, I had only learned about my six brainwave systems (alpha, beta, gamma, delta, epsilon, theta) (see my earlier article on this) and had not discovered the six systems that were previously unknown to me (omicron, mu, null, lambda, omega, and chi). When I remembered these other six previously unknown systems, I remembered more about the cult's agendas, as that information was held in these systems.

When I was younger, I believed that the goal of occult groups, including the one I was raised in, was to create a "better world" through the coming New World Order. I truly believed, in my cult host, that I was serving mankind by preparing to help usher in the time of "he who is to come" (link) who after his birth was known as "he who as come" as well as by other names.

I worked hard to improve things, and dedicated to my life to what I believed would be the betterment of mankind. What I had not remembered at that time was the secret held by my core *(Chi)* system, which was wholly dedicated to Satan: that the group I was in, while publicly stating their desire to bring in new world order filled with joy and peace, was actually committed to the complete destruction of mankind.

The reason for this is simple: they serve Satan, and that is his agenda; he wants mankind destroyed because he hates all men, who created by God, who loves them. The chi system parts were programmed since they were in the womb to absolutely hate God and all men (mankind was labled as "mortals" who were a fallen, descended state) and to desire the destruction of all mortals so that the immortal, or ascended, could reign.

This, in a nutshell, was the theology I was taught while in the group. This knowledge was hidden from my conscous awareness until late in my own healing journey. it was terrible to remember that I participated in meetings with others who were planning and looking forward to the destruction of mortal mankind; or the programming and torture in the womb of my

Follow •••

and I by actors who stated scripts such as "we are mortal men, and cannot help ourselves from hurting you" and other similar ones. Later, these fetal parts were "rescued" by Satan, who then whispered "one day, you will be able to take revenge for what men have done to you."

Even most of my cult parts were completely unaware of this programmed, hidden (to myself) agenda. Many cult loyal parts thought we were working to create a better, kinder world and it caused deep distress to realize that the real agenda of the group I was raised in was quite different.

What comforts me is the realization that while those in occultic groups are planning these things, their agenda will fail. The Bible has already described what will happen: Satan will make his play for power, using men and hybrids who serve him, and he will not win. It won't even be a contest, because the God of the Christian Bible is the creator, not the created; and will bring about the real new creation and reign on earth that mankind is looking towards.

The difference? The Christian God truly loves His creation, while Satan despises it. I am thankful that the One who loves me and all mankind, the true God, is the One who will win. Satan's time is limited; he knows this, so he will attempt to draw men into his plans and schemes. My prayer is that those who have believed himi will become aware that Satan is a liar; and the Christian God tells the truth.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Occultic Agenda	The different types of SRA and Mind Control	The Real Anthony Fauci
April 3, 2021	January 29, 2019	October 20, 2022
In "healing"	In "mind control"	In "healing"

H S 3:33 pm on April 30, 2019

I love your articles because by revealing the evil, it makes the good contrast with the evil which in the end makes light reveal its brightness even more! Especially for the fortunate ones like me who has been taking the blessed environment for granted, your articles provide an eye-opening realization… to be honost, I couldn't sleep for days after reading your stories…However I came to know that the bible is not a fairy tale and that there really are enemies in this world, working very very hard.. However we are not frightened because we know that the true victory is with our Creator! Glory to the Lord! I pray for all the survivors and victims of the occultic groups… I know that our savior Jesus weeps for them… and loves them and is more than willing to give them the complete healing…! Ms. Svali You are such an important witness. I pray that you will stay strong and wise, God bless you!

★ Liked by 3 people

John 4:37 am on July 22, 2020

How are you still alive? And how yiu left the group.. is that even possible to leave a secret organization.. can you explain that?…. why they didnt or Not tracking you by now

★ Liked by 1 person

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Mother Programming

Processing Mind Control Trauma →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

THE OCTOPUS

THE OCTOPUS © 2004 by Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith and Feral House

ISBN 0-922915-91-1
All Rights Reserved.

Feral House
PO Box 39910
Los Angeles, CA 90039

www.feralhouse.com
info@feralhouse.com

Author Kenn Thomas' Steamshovel Press can be accessed at
www.steamshovelpress.com

Designed by Hedi El Kholti

THE OCTOPUS

Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro

Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith

Feral House

"Facts are but the Play-things of lawyers—Tops and Hoops, forever a-spin.... Alas, the Historian may indulge no such idle Rotating. History is not Chronology, for that is left to lawyers, —nor is Remembrance, for Remembrance belongs to the People. History can as little pretend to the Veracity of the one, as claim the Power of the other—her Practitioners, to survive, must soon learn the arts of the quidnunc, spy and Taproom Wit—that there may ever continue more than one life-line back into a Past we risk, each day, losing our forbears in forever—not a Chain of single Links, for one broken Link could lose us All—rather, a great disorderly Tangle of Lines, long and short, weak and strong, vanishing into the Mnemonick Deep, with only their Destination in common."

—The Revd Wicks Cherrycoke, *Christ and History*[1]

---

[1] From *Mason & Dixon* by Thomas Pynchon.

Contents

iv Acknowledgements
viii A Note on Sources
xi Prologue: A Death in Martinsburg
1 Chapter 1: Danny Casolaro
5 Chapter 2: PROMIS Breaking
10 Chapter 3: Michael Riconosciuto
15 Chapter 4: "Danger Man"
18 Chapter 5: Earl Brian
30 Chapter 6: Indio
41 Chapter 7: Behold, a Pale Horse
43 Chapter 8: Wild Rumors
47 Chapter 9: Pursuit of the Tape
54 Chapter 10: Mysterious Deaths
59 Chapter 11: Robert Booth Nichols
64 Chapter 12: A Sea Creature Surfaces
66 Chapter 13: The Octopus
69 Chapter 14: Tracking the Octopus
72 Chapter 15: Tentacles (an Octopus hagiography)
102 Chapter 16: Bringing Back the Head of the Octopus
109 Chapter 17: Final Hours
114 Chapter 18: Rippling Waves
120 Chapter 19: Inslaw and the Law
132 Chapter 20: Whitewater Currents
140 Chapter 21: Diana
150 Chapter 22: Jim Keith
158 Chapter 23: September 11 Epilogue
163 Appendix 1: An Interview with the Hamiltons
180 Appendix 2: Casolaro's Newsclippings File
220 Appendix 3: An Interview with Michael Riconosciuto
230 Index

Dedicated to Jim Keith, 1949–1999

Acknowledgements

Danny Casolaro developed a body of research that inspired and affirmed the work of many researchers and writers in the last decade of the twentieth century. The author would like to acknowledge that community and salute its continued growth.

Many of its members can be found in the footnotes of this book. All deserve great credit for saving and furthering the shattered remains of Casolaro's research. Special lifetime thanks go to my late partner Jim Keith, co-author of the original edition of this book and the great popularizer of conspiracy culture critique, and our mutual late comrade, Ron Bonds of IllumiNet Press. Connected now by their suspicious early deaths to the Octopus mystery, their spirits no doubt reside now with Danny Casolaro, the great conspiracy writer that neither met.

X. Sharks DeSpot and Judy Miller also deserve credit for their research help. Credit for the original edition also still goes to Raleigh Muns, for that last little bibliographic note, and to Jim Martin of Flatland Books for his continued support. A nod for the subsequent help, support and promotional favors goes to Greg Bishop, Rob Sterling and Acharya S, and readers of my magazine, *Steamshovel Press*. The great psychogeographer, extranationalist, Guy Debord biographer and novelist Len Bracken contributed the most to the revised edition of this book.

Timothy Leary's dissipated structure, as always, has an ongoing impact. Outside of all that, I have had as inspiration two of the finest children in the world, Sara and Simon, and my beautiful companion, Jennifer Crets.

Jim Keith's acknowledgements, from the first edition:

This book is for Verity and Aerika, and for the Keith and Angell clans.

Great thanks to Bob Sonderfan for kindnesses too numerous; for the Saturday night spetznaz; and to Ron and Nancy Bonds.

The authors would particularly like to express their gratitude for the patience of publisher Adam Parfrey, who has Satan's patience for contracts.

A Note on Sources

The surviving notes of Danny Casolaro provide part of the basis for this book's examination of his research. After Casolaro's death, his brother, Dr. Anthony Casolaro, originally gave the notes to ABC's *Nightline* program in order to allow six journalist acquaintances of his brother a chance to review his leads. Tony Casolaro then turned the papers over to Investigative Reporters and Editors (IRE), an office in the University of Missouri School of Journalism in Columbia, Missouri. That office still makes the papers available to researchers.[1] The collection includes court documents, a newsclipping file, tour guides and annual business reports that pertain to Casolaro's investigations, and what remained of his handwritten notes. These did not include any papers that Casolaro had with him the night he died.

Wide-ranging sources of information supplement this scarce record of the life, investigative work, and death of Danny Casolaro. These include: affidavits filed by arms merchants and convicted felons; mainstream and non-mainstream periodical sources, including some that publish messages received from channeled aliens, others notorious for their far-right connections, lite-left leanings, and radical chic pose; unattributed sources on the Internet; anonymous *samizdat*; participants in Casolaro's investigation; peripheral players; researchers who knew Casolaro; and researchers whose work expanded on the Octopus thesis. While some might question the credibility of some of these sources—as, indeed, some questioned the credibility of Casolaro's own sources—the authors include them here because they illuminate the research in obvious ways.

Chapters in this book have been footnoted to encourage readers to track these sources and make their own judgments concerning credibility. Any readers with new information, corrections, or supplemental sources are encouraged to contact the author.

---

[1] Griffin, Michael, "Key To Death, Mystery May Be Among Casolaro's Documents," *St. Louis Journalism Review*, Volume 22, Number 180, October 1992.

A good story allows a writer to go into himself and see how deep the place is from which his life flows. A great story, though, is as natural a possession as our lungs and spreads its roots into the depths of everything we love and everything we hate.

—J. Daniel Casolaro

Fifth-floor room at the former Sheraton Inn where Casolaro died.

PROLOGUE:

A Death in Martinsburg

Saturday, August 10, 1991, shortly after 12:30 p.m., a housecleaner working at the Sheraton Inn near Highway 81 in sleepy Martinsburg, West Virginia, knocked on the door of room 517. No answer. She slid her passkey into the hole and opened the door.

The bed was turned down, but looked unrumpled, as if it had not been slept in. A man's clothing rested on the bed's foot. Glancing into the bathroom, the housecleaner spied blood smeared on the floor. She hurriedly called the main desk and told the assistant head housekeeper, Barbara Bittinger, to rush to the room.

Bittinger arrived quickly and ventured into the bathroom. The door and the shower curtain partially obscured her view, but she saw a half-empty bottle of red wine by the toilet, a cigarette ashtray by the tub, and then a piece of broken glass and gouts of blood splashed onto the wall.

A pair of pale, bony knees stuck out from the tub. She noticed two towels drenched in blood under the sink. Bittinger recalled, "It looked like someone had thrown the towels on the floor and tried to wipe the blood up with their foot, but they didn't get the blood, they just smeared the floor."[1]

The blood-filled bathtub contained the nude body of a blond man. Bittinger called 911.

---

[1] Connolly, John, "Dead Right," *Spy*, January 1993.

J. Daniel Casolaro

CHAPTER 1.

Danny Casolaro

Minutes after Bittinger's call, Martinsburg city police and paramedics arrived. They determined that the dead man in the tub was a white male in his early 40s. They found a dozen deep gashes in his wrists, a shoelace around his neck, and two plastic wastepaper basket liners floating in the tub, as if someone had tried to asphyxiate him. When the paramedics lifted the body from the tub, a single-edged razor blade appeared, along with an *Old Milwaukee* beer can and a paper coaster.

On the bedroom desk sat an empty composition notebook, a legal pad with one page removed, and a Bic pen. The page from the legal pad lay nearby with a note written on it:

> *To those who I love the most,*
> *Please forgive me for the worst*
> *possible thing I could have done.*
> *Most of all I'm sorry to my son.*
> *I know deep down inside that God will let me in.*

If these were the dead man's words, they were the last of his obscure writing career. A wallet found at the scene, filled with credit cards and a driver's license, identified the man as Joseph Daniel Casolaro of Fairfax, Virginia.

Danny Casolaro had published three books, and worked as a journalist of sorts, writing for tabloids and trade magazines. Now his work would be distinguished by a book he never finished, the ultimate political conspiracy thriller based on documentable fact, which he had started to call *The Octopus*.

The Octopus was Casolaro's name for a handful of spooks and power brokers in the intelligence community who manipulated public events as wide-ranging as the 1980 October Surprise that may have cost Jimmy Carter the presidency, and the BCCI bank scandal in the early 1990s. Like the tentacles of his metaphoric sea creature, the slashes in both wrists—eight on one side, four on the other—pulled Casolaro down into oblivion, ending his investigation into a power cabal whose involvement in a list of notorious contemporary political crimes he had documented in his book. Perhaps Casolaro erred in changing the book's title from *Behold, a Pale Horse*, taken from the Biblical admonition from *Revelation 6*: "Behold a pale horse and its rider's name was death."

Even as Casolaro focused his investigation on tracking software, his manuscript dealt with many connected crimes. It included contra war chemical and biowarfare weapons developed on the tribal lands of the Cabazon Indians of Indio, California, weapons possibly used in the October 23, 1983 blast at a compound in Beirut that left over 300 American and French military personnel dead. His research also looked at bizarre murders among the Cabazon Indians involving administrators of the tribal land; the privatization of CIA dirty tricks through the notorious Wackenhut security firm, the policemen for both the Cabazons and the mysterious Area 51, home of secret spy planes and rumored UFOs; Vietnam MIAs; corruption at Hughes Aircraft; the human genome project; even the Illuminati secret societies of the 18th century.

To his friends, Danny Casolaro was, above all else, the ultimate "nice guy." He came from a well-to-do background in McLean, Virginia, the hub of the intelligence community that preoccupied his adult attention. His father had been a successful obstetrician. Although his Catholic Italian family had experienced its share of tragedies—a congenital heart defect took one of Danny's five siblings, an infant, and an older sister died of a drug overdose in Haight-Ashbury—Danny grew up with the good things in life. By all reports, he was a congenial, open-minded and trusting soul with few serious worries. At age 20, he left Provident College to search for treasures of the Incas in Ecuador. When he returned, he settled into a marriage that lasted thirteen years and produced one son, Trey (J. Daniel Casolaro III). He lived in a $400,000 home on three acres in Fairfax City, Virginia, where he kept horses. He played the piano. His literary tastes ran along the lines of Jack Kerouac and the Beats; he was an Elvis Costello fan.

Danny Casolaro had achieved only modest success in his chosen profession of writing. The magazines and tabloids he wrote for were as varied as his research: *Washington Crime News Service*, *Home and Auto*, *Providence Journal*, *Washington Star*, *The National Enquirer*, and the *Globe*. His published books, seemingly towering triumphs to a novice writer, did not provide him much in the way of financial rewards. His novel, *The Ice King*, a Hemingway-like novel about mountain climbing, had been published by a vanity press. He also published a short story collection, *Makes Me Think of Tall Green Grass*, and worked on two films, *Rain For A Dusty Summer* and *To Fly Without Wings*, the latter narrated by Orson Welles. According to one source, "Danny wasn't an investigative reporter. He was a poet."[1]

The first piece of Casolaro's life to pass into conspiracy lore was that a mysterious informant may have supplied him with the last bit of evidence he needed to prove the existence of his Octopus cabal. Just prior to leaving for Martinsburg, Casolaro warned his brother, "If anything happens to me, don't believe it's an accident."[2] According to friends and family, little in Casolaro's disposition or behavior could have led to suicide. The gashes in his wrists were too deep to be self-inflicted. The suicide note was unconvincing. The discovery of his body, the rush to autopsy—without the consent of family—and the quick cleaning of the murder site increased suspicions.

Something in Casolaro's Octopus research quite likely led to his murder.

---

1. James Ridgeway and Dough Vaughan, "The Last Days of Danny Casolaro," *Village Voice*, October 15, 1991.

2. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 33.

PROMIS
INSLAW, Inc.
PROMIS

The Promis software made by Inslaw, the Institute for Law and Social Research.

CHAPTER 2.

PROMIS Breaking

After a brief return to college, Danny Casolaro picked up stringer work for various tabloids and magazines. He eventually found his way to *Computer Age Publications*, which reported daily on the personal computer trade. Casolaro stayed there for ten years, eventually becoming part-owner. He sold his stake in the company in 1990. Unfortunately, friends said Casolaro had vastly underestimated the value of the newsletter, and had sold it for far less than it was worth.[1]

In early 1990, Danny Casolaro was on the make for a new beginning. He was looking for a great story, something he could sink his teeth into, something that would catapult him toward the monetary rewards he desired. A friend and fellow worker in the computer magazine business, Terry Miller, suggested that Casolaro look into a developing scandal involving software made by a company called Inslaw, the Institute for Law and Social Research. After discussing the case with one of the company's founders, William Hamilton, Casolaro felt like this might just be the right project.

The Inslaw case began in 1982, when the US Justice Department granted Hamilton's company ten million dollars over three years to adapt a computer program to the needs of US attorneys in tracking criminal cases from office to office. The program was called Prosecutor's Management Information System, or PROMIS. Hamilton explained that, as a former member of the super secret National Security Agency (NSA), he and his wife Nancy developed PROMIS with funding from the government's Law Enforcement Assistance Administration (LEAA).

After the LEAA funding was phased out at the end of the Carter administration, the Hamiltons converted Inslaw into a for-profit business, with the government's knowledge and approval. Hamilton had sent a letter to the Department of Justice requesting they waive any rights to the enhanced version of PROMIS, and on August 11, 1982, a lawyer for the Department responded, ver-

Bill and Nancy Hamilton

Elliot Richardson

ifying that Inslaw had the rights to any privately funded enhancements added to the public domain version of PROMIS.

The PROMIS program was developed for the purpose of tracking individuals pursued or prosecuted by the Justice Department, and included the vital capability of interfacing with other databases.

As Hamilton explained his situation, Casolaro must have grown increasingly aware of the pot-boiler possibilities inherent in this story. PROMIS was the Maltese Falcon of a conspiracy web into which Hamilton had fallen. Hamilton made it clear to the computer-savvy Casolaro that the enhancements he had made to PROMIS were not minor. Early enhancements enabled the software to be run on other, less-powerful computer systems than the original, including IBM, Wang, Burroughs, and Prime; later enhancements—the ones taken by Justice—allowed it to run on a DEC VAX minicomputer.[2]

If Hamilton sounded bitter when he talked about the deal he had struck with the government, he had his reasons. The 1982 agreement with the Justice Department, through which Inslaw was to be paid $10 million for placement in US prosecutor offices and enhancements for seventy-four smaller department offices, would have been just the beginning of PROMIS' applications. Hamilton estimated that the demand for the software might eventually exceed five billion dollars. In place of that watershed business, Hamilton received a decade-long legal battle.

The problems began after Inslaw delivered the modified PROMIS to the Justice Department. First, payments to the Hamiltons were suspended. Next, the Department accused Inslaw of overcharging. By February of 1985, the Justice

Department had withheld almost two million dollars from Inslaw. When it became obvious that the Justice Department was not going to honor its contract, the company's attorney, former US Attorney General Elliot Richardson, renowned for his role in the Watergate scandal, advised the Hamiltons to sue. In June 1986, the Hamiltons took Richardson's advice and filed suit.[3]

As the lawsuit progressed, the Hamiltons learned about secret dealings behind the scenes at the Justice Department relating to Inslaw. On St. Patrick's Day, 1987, the first of several whistleblowers stepped forward. Anthony Pasciuto, the deputy director of the Justice Department's Executive Office for United States Trustees, secretly met with the Hamiltons, and told of pressure from Thomas Stanton, the director of his office, to get Trustee officer William White and others to liquidate Inslaw. Pasciuto also said that Cornelius Blackshear, the US trustee in New York, knew what Stanton was doing, and that he had talked about the pressure on Inslaw to US Court of Appeals Judge Lawrence Pierce. Blackshear, under a deposition by Inslaw's lawyers, confirmed his statements to Pasciuto, but the following day met with a representative of the Justice Department and recanted in a sworn affidavit, saying that Pasciuto had confused the Inslaw case with another one. After offering his testimony, Pasciuto listened while White, his superior in the Department, denied the statements that Pasciuto said had been made to him. In anger and frustration, Pasciuto also recanted. Despite this, Pasciuto lost his job two days after he testified. A Justice Department memo recommended his dismissal, saying, "...but for Mr. Pasciuto's highly irresponsible actions, the Department would be in a much better litigation posture than it presently finds itself in."[4]

Even though Pasciuto had changed his story, the federal bankruptcy judge hearing the case, Judge George F. Bason, accepted Pasciuto's original testimony. The judge also noted that White had recently joined a law firm practicing in bankruptcy matters, and that his future with the firm might have been jeopardized if he had muddied the water with the US Trustee's Office. Bason made the observation that Cornelius Blackshear had also offered "two different versions of the same event," and that the first version, which confirmed Pasciuto's original testimony, was the most credible. In September, 1987, Judge Bason ruled on Inslaw vs. the United States of America, finding the government guilty of trickery, deceit and fraud. He ruled that that the US Department of Justice had stolen the PROMIS software.

Judge Bason stated that officials of the Justice Department had attempted to bankrupt Inslaw through an "outrageous, deceitful, fraudulent game of cat and mouse, demonstrating contempt for both the law and any principle of fair dealing." Judge Bason also wrote to Attorney General Edwin Meese, suggesting that an outside official be appointed to review the evidence because of evidence of

Attorney General Richard Thornburgh

Attorney General Edwin Meese

perjury by officials in the Justice Department. Meese did not answer the letter.[5]

On February 2, 1988, Judge Bason ordered the Justice Department to pay Inslaw approximately $6.8 million in licensing fees, and an additional near $1 million in legal expenses. Bason postponed his assessment of punitive damages. An appeal was upheld by US District Court Judge William B. Bryant.[6] Judge Bason's assessment of punitive damages against the Justice Department never came.

In November, 1987, Judge Bason threw out a motion by the Justice Department for the liquidation of Inslaw. A month later, Bason received word that he would be denied reappointment to the bench. The judge became one of four out of 136 federal bankruptcy judges to have been denied reappointment in the previous four years. The decision was made by a four-person merit selection panel that had been appointed, in obvious conflict of interest, by Judge Patricia Wald, who had previously been employed by the Justice Department. Outrageously, Bason's position was filled by S. Martin Teel, Jr., a Department of Justice lawyer who had represented the IRS in its audits of Inslaw and had recommended liquidation of the company.[7]

In March, 1988, Pasciuto, the man who had recanted his earlier testimony about Department corruption, decided to come clean. In a letter from his attorney, Pasciuto described Justice Department actions designed to destroy Inslaw, quoting a statement by Robert Hunneycutt of the Department's finance offices, that "people in the US Attorney's offices don't like Inslaw," and that invoices from the company were among those designated never to be paid.[8]

In August, 1989, the behavior of the Justice Department with regard to

Inslaw had gained such infamy that the chairman of the Judiciary Committee, Jack Brooks of Texas, began an investigation with a letter to Attorney General Richard Thornburgh. Thornburgh questioned the need to reinvestigate, but promised full cooperation. As the investigation proceeded, however, he seemed to do all in his power to thwart it. At first Thornburgh refused to appear before the committee or to surrender Justice Department files relating to the case. This forced the Judiciary Committee to subpoena almost five hundred documents. Thornburgh finally relented and released the files, although one source in the House of Representatives alleged that approximately twenty of the files were missing.[9]

In December, 1989, Inslaw attorney Richardson submitted a writ of mandamus to the US District Court in Washington, D.C. asking for the government to intervene with the appointment of an independent investigator to further pursue Inslaw's allegations, now supported by a court ruling, about the theft of PROMIS by the Justice Department. Richardson stated that, "Attempts to acquire control of PROMIS were linked by a conspiracy among friends of Attorney General Meese to take advantage of their relationship with him for the purpose of obtaining a lucrative contract for the automation of the Department's litigating divisions."[10]

This was where the case stood when William Hamilton and Danny Casolaro talked on the phone. Casolaro found Hamilton's story interesting, particularly since it dealt with one of his interests, computers. Casolaro took the bait, but only when Hamilton started telling him about Michael Riconosciuto.

---

1. "Autopsy Backs Suicide Ruling," *Washington Times*, Aug. 16, 1991.

2. "Area Writer Investigating...," *Washington Post*, 8/13/91; Fricker, Richard L., "The Inslaw Octopus," *Wired 1.1*, premiere issue, 1993 p. 80.

3. Mahar, Maggie, "Beneath Contempt: Did the Justice Department Deliberately Bankrupt Inslaw?," *Barron's National Business and Financial Weekly*, March 21, 1988.

4. Martin, Harry, "Federal Corruption," *Napa Sentinel*, March 12, 1991.

5. Martin.

6. Martin.

7. Mahar.

8. Mahar.

9. "Was Writer the Victim of a DC Conspiracy?," *The Boston Globe*, August 14, 1991.

10. Bleifuss, Joel, "Software Pirates," *In These Times*, May 29–June 11, 1991.

CHAPTER 3:

Michael Riconosciuto

Jeff Steinberg worked as an aide to Lyndon Larouche, the perennial presidential candidate notorious for conspiracy views about the English empire. Steinberg had put Bill Hamilton in touch with Michael James Riconosciuto, a 44-year-old denizen of the shadowy world of covert operatives. Riconosciuto first called Hamilton on May 18, 1990, and talked with him for two and a half hours, spinning a gossamer of connections that added startling new dimensions to the Inslaw case.[1] Riconosciuto, in hundreds of collect telephone calls to Hamilton, revealed inside knowledge of the government conspiracy to steal PROMIS from the Hamiltons. He stunned Hamilton further when he told him that he had personally modified the PROMIS software as research director of a joint venture of the Cabazon Indian tribe of Indio, California, and the nation's third largest private security firm, Wackenhut.

Riconosciuto revealed that part of his job in the modification of the software had been to create a "back door access" for spying into the files of its users.[2] These users included Great Britain, South Korea, Japan, Jordan, Canada, Israel, Egypt, Canada, and Iraq—Bill Hamilton tallied the figure at "as many as eighty-eight countries"—for use in such activities as the tracking of terrorists.[3]

According to Riconosciuto, Attorney General Edwin Meese had provided PROMIS to Dr. Earl Brian and Peter Videnieks from the Department of Justice, who had then supervised the Wackenhut/Cabazon project to copy the program.[4]

Riconosciuto initially had been excited by the software. He told one interviewer: "...this package worked, OK? I mean it really and truly worked. And when I got my first copies of it and ran it up, I was dumbfounded. I have a statistical exercising package where I can put computer software and/or hardware, and/or hardware/software systems through their paces, and I can determine at which point it will become unreliable... And here again, you have to realize that we were on the threshold of a whole new era with bio-technology and with information technology. Earl Brian had some backing, and he was going to buy out some well placed start-up companies that already had a running start, and then he was going to pump money and talent and the right connections into them, and make them go…"[5]

Riconosciuto was not the only one to extol the virtues of PROMIS. Harry Martin of the *Napa Valley Sentinel*, while editing several defense publications, believed that an Israeli software package which he tested utilized PROMIS, and had the capability to "[deal] with the complete military structure, and who's who and what's what. I mean, it even got down almost to the number of shoelaces: how many handguns—everything... It gets into numbers and details. And that's what this software has this tremendous power to do."[6]

The theft of PROMIS, according to Riconosciuto, wasn't all that was going on at the Cabazon Indian Reservation. The Cabazon/Wackenhut venture included the production of advanced weaponry, including biological weapons, and fuel-air explosives (FAX), a new technology supposedly the equal of some nuclear weapons in explosive power. Riconosciuto claimed to have been involved in the production of the fuel-air explosives in collaboration with Gerald Bull of Space Research Corporation, an arms dealer who designed the "supergun," and was murdered in Brussels, Belgium in 1990.[7]

Riconosciuto dropped additional bombshells on Hamilton. He maintained that Meese had provided Brian with PROMIS as a pay-off on a favor. Riconosciuto made the dramatic allegation that William Casey, outside counsel to Wackenhut prior to his work in the Reagan administration, had hired him and Brian in 1980 to facilitate the now infamous "October Surprise," in which the Reagan administration allegedly paid the Iranians not to release American hostages until after his election. Riconosciuto claimed that he and Brian had paid the Iranians forty million dollars in bribes. The PROMIS software, so Riconosciuto said, was Brian's payment for his participation.[8] Riconosciuto also claimed that he had been instrumental in exposing the Nugan Hand bank scandal; that he had met "the Jackal," the famed international terrorist; and that he had made a tape recording of a clandestine meeting with William Casey that he was holding as an "insurance policy" on his life.

Could he be believed? At least some of what Riconosciuto said could be corroborated. The Cabazon-Wackenhut joint venture did exist from 1981 to 1983, and Riconosciuto was involved with it, at least in some capacity.[9] A report from a task force of the Riverside County, California Sheriff's Office also placed Earl Brian ("with the CIA") and Riconosciuto at a weapons demonstration put on by the Cabazons and Wackenhut.[10]

Amazingly, even Riconosciuto's allegations about Brian's involvement in the so-called October Surprise could also be verified, at least to a degree. Brian had told several persons that he planned a visit to Paris the weekend of the October

SHERIFF DEPT
PIERCE COUNTY
B

Michael Riconosciuto

OU'RE FREE
FTER ALL, WE ARE AMERI

The October Surprise hostage.

Surprise meeting(s), and Ari Ben-Menasche, who claimed to be present at the Paris meeting(s) said "I saw Brian in Paris."[11]

Shortly after Hamilton was contacted by Riconosciuto, Hamilton told Casolaro about his new source. By late 1990, according to his friends, Casolaro spoke of little else. He immediately set about investigating this new informant's background. What he learned only complicated the matter.[12]

Casolaro discovered that Riconosciuto had been a gifted child whose science projects, including the construction of an argon laser, had enabled him to work as a research assistant to Dr. Arthur Schalow, the Nobel laureate. Other things in Riconosciuto's past had a shadier aspect. After leaving Stanford University, Riconosciuto migrated to Haight-Ashbury in San Francisco, where he went to work on an underground newspaper. Riconosciuto told Casolaro that he had acquired some photos that the newspaper had published which showed a narcotics agent having sex with an underage girl, and because of this the narc had framed Riconosciuto on drug charges. In 1973 Riconosciuto was sent to prison for two years for manufacturing psychedelic drugs.

Casolaro didn't buy Riconosciuto's statement that he was innocent of the drug charges. His notes stated flatly that "Mike sold dope through Phyllis." (Phyllis remains unidentified.) Casolaro told Bill Hamilton he didn't totally buy into Riconosciuto's wild stories. Nonetheless, Risconosciuto provided leads Casolaro was determined to follow.

Casolaro ran down the leads, phoning person after person around the country, spreading his net further as he developed new contacts. A complicated case of computer thievery was turning into something closer to a Robert Ludlum thriller. Casolaro started to spend a lot of his professional life on the telephone. Each of Riconosciuto's leads seemed to connect to another. Danny Casolaro began to sense that he was on the trail of the conspiracy story of the century.

By the beginning of 1991, Casolaro was heavily involved with the Inslaw case. One contact supplied by Riconosciuto was a man named Alan Standorf, who worked at the secret military electronic listening post at Vint Hill Farm, near Manassas, Virginia. Standorf supplied Casolaro with classified information and, in order to quickly return the materials to avoid detection, Casolaro set up high-speed commercial duplicating and collating equipment in room 900 at the nearby Hilton Hotel.

Danny Casolaro may not have known what he was getting into when he began the investigation of PROMIS and the conspiracy tributaries that ran from it. But the truth was brought home to him on January 31, 1991, when Alan Standorf's body was found on the back floor of his car at the Washington National Airport. Standorf had been murdered by a blow to the back of his head.[13]

---

1. Corn, David, "The Dark World of Danny Casolaro," *The Nation*, Oct. 28, 1991, pp. 511–516.

2. Corn, p. 513.

3. Broadcast on WBAI-FM, New York, Pacifica Radio Network, September 20, 1991.

4. "The Com-12 Briefing," *Phoenix Liberator*, March 23, 1993, p.17.

5. WBAI Broadcast.

6. WBAI Broadcast.

7. "CIA Computer Genius Alleges Massive Conspiracy," *Technical Consultant*, Dec/Jan 1991, p. 7.

8. Corn, p. 512.

9. "Worldwide Conspiracy or Fantasy?" *Seattle Times*, August 29, 1991.

10. Stich, Rodney, *Defrauding America*, Diablo Western Press, Alamo, California, 1993, p. 83.

11. Fricker, Richard L., "The Inslaw Octopus," *Wired*, premiere issue, 1993.

12. James Ridgeway and Dough Vaughan, "Worldwide Conspiracy or Fantasy?" *Seattle Times*, August 29, 1991, p. 34.

13. Stich, p. 407; *Contact*, May 10, 1994, p. 19.

US Justice Department agent Peter Videnieks.

CHAPTER 4:

“Danger Man”

Bill Hamilton convinced Michael Riconosciuto to tell his story on the record. On March 21, 1991 Michael Riconosciuto filed a sworn affidavit on the Inslaw case. He began by stating that US Justice Department agent Peter Videnieks had threatened him if he cooperated with a House Judiciary Committee investigation of Inslaw.[1] The following text of the affidavit provides a toe-hold for Danny Casolaro’s research:

> I, MICHAEL J. RICONOSCIUTO, being duly sworn, do hereby state as follows:
>
> 1. During the early 1980s, I served as the Director of Research for a joint venture between the Wackenhut corporation of Coral Gables, Florida, and the Cabazon Band of Indians of Indio, California. The joint venture was located on the Cabazon Reservation.
>
> 2. The Wackenhut-Cabazon joint venture sought to develop and/or manufacture certain materials that are used in military and national security operations, including night vision goggles, machine guns, fuel-air explosives, and biological and chemical warfare weapons.
>
> 3. The Cabazon Band of Indians are a sovereign nation. The sovereign immunity that is accorded the Cabazons as a consequence of this fact made it feasible to pursue on the reservation the development and/or manufacture of materials whose development or manufacture would be subject to stringent controls off the reservation. As a minority group, the Cabazon Indians also provided the Wackenhut Corporation with an enhanced ability to obtain federal contracts through the 8A Set Aside Program, and in connection with Government-owned contractor-operated (GOCO) facilities.

4. The Wackenhut-Cabazon joint venture was intended to support the needs of a number of foreign governments and forces, including forces and governments in Central America and the Middle East. The contras in Nicaragua represented one of the most important priorities for the joint venture.

5. The Wackenhut-Cabazon joint venture maintained close liaison with certain elements of the United States Government, including representatives of intelligence, military and law enforcement agencies.

6. Among the frequent visitors to the Wackenhut-Cabazon joint venture were Peter Videnieks of the US Department of Justice in Washington, D.C., and a close associate of Videnieks by the name of Earl W. Brian. Brian is a private businessman who lives in Maryland and who has maintained close business ties with the US intelligence community for many years.

7. In connection with my work for Wackenhut, I engaged in some software development and modification work in 1983 and 1984 on the proprietary PROMIS computer software product. The copy of PROMIS on which I worked came from the US Department of Justice. Earl W. Brian made it available to me through Wackenhut after acquiring it from Peter Videnieks, who was then a Department of Justice contracting official with responsibility for the PROMIS software. I performed the modifications to PROMIS in Indio, California; Silver Springs, Maryland; and Miami, Florida.

8. The purpose of the PROMIS software modifications that I made in 1983 and 1984 was to support a plan for the implementation of PROMIS in law enforcement and intelligence agencies worldwide. Earl W. Brian was spearheading the plan for this worldwide use of the PROMIS computer software.

9. Some of the modifications that I made were specifically designed to facilitate the implementation of PROMIS within two agencies of the Government of Canada; the Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP) and the Canadian Security and Intelligence Service (CSIS). Earl W. Brian would check with me from time to time to make certain that the work would be completed in time to satisfy the schedule for the RCMP and the CSIS implementations of PROMIS.

10. The proprietary version of PROMIS, as modified by me, was, in fact, implemented in both the RCMP and the CSIS in Canada. It was my understanding that Earl W. Brian had sold this version of PROMIS to the Government of Canada.

11. In February 1991, I had a telephone conversation with Peter Videnieks, then still employed by the US Department of Justice. Videnieks attempted during this telephone conversation to persuade me not to cooperate with an independent investigation of the government's piracy of Inslaw's proprietary PROMIS software being conducted by the Committee on the Judiciary of the US House of Representatives.

12. Videnieks stated that I would be rewarded for a decision not to cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee investigation. Videnieks forecasted an immediate and favorable resolution of a protracted child custody dispute being prosecuted against my wife by her former husband, if I were to decide not to cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee investigation.

13. Videnieks also outlined specific punishments that I could expect to receive from the US Department of Justice if I cooperated with the House Judiciary Committee's investigation.

14. One punishment that Videnieks outlined was the future inclusion of me and my father in a criminal prosecution of certain business associates of mine in Orange County, California, in connection with the operation of a Savings and Loan institution in Orange County. By way of underscoring his power to influence such decisions at the US Department of Justice, Videnieks informed me of the indictment of these business associates prior to the time when that indictment was unsealed and made public.

15. Another punishment that Videnieks threatened against me if I cooperated with the House Judiciary committee is prosecution by the US Department of Justice for perjury. Videnieks warned me that credible witnesses would come forward to contradict any damaging claims that I made in testimony before the House Judiciary Committee, and that I would subsequently be prosecuted for perjury by the US Department of Justice for my testimony before the House Judiciary Committee.

FURTHER AFFIANT SAYETH NOT.

Michael J. Riconosciuto
(Signed and sworn to before me this 21st day of March 1991—Notary Public)

---

1. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 38.

CHAPTER 5:

Earl Brian

Following the lead of Riconosciuto's revelations, Danny Casolaro took a long look at a man named Dr. Earl Brian. Riconosciuto claimed that this man, along with Peter Videnieks, had headed the alleged Wackenhut/Cabazon project to alter the PROMIS software. Casolaro eventually developed a dossier on Brian.

Brian was a high-profile individual who had been a combat physician during the Vietnam War. He reportedly worked in an air support unit for the Operation Phoenix political assassination program, a well-known covert action program to wipe out the Viet Cong in Vietnam. After his return to the States, Brian became Secretary of Health and Welfare in California, under Governor Ronald Reagan. In 1974, Brian had resigned his cabinet position to go into private business, which Casolaro learned had allegedly included arms deals with the Shah of Iran. Brian's company Xonics had been cited by the Security and Exchange Commission for illegal commissions and for issuing press releases with bogus information meant to boost stock prices.

Brian also was involved in a scandal involving the confiscation of computer tapes with the records of 70,000 California state welfare files. These tapes were later discovered at the University of Southern California. After an unsuccessful campaign for a Senate seat, Brian joined the USC faculty.[1]

During the Reagan administration, Brian served as an unpaid chairman of a Reagan task force on health care cost reduction, reporting directly to Attorney General Ed Meese. Brian also served with Meese on a "pro-competition" committee.[2] Further associations of Brian and Ed Meese had come out during Meese's confirmation hearings, when Meese had admitted that his wife had borrowed $15,000 from an advisor, Edwin Thomas, to buy stock in Brian's company. Meese had not listed the transaction in his financial disclosures. Brian headed Infotechnology, Inc., a powerful New York holding company which controlled UPI, the Financial News Network, and the Learning Channel.[3] If these connections led far afield from Inslaw, others dovetailed neatly. Hadron, Inc. was also controlled by Brian. Hadron, Inc. had suddenly taken an affluent turn—after being $12 million in the red—upon Meese's ascendancy to the office of Attorney General. The company now subsisted on government revenues, including a $40 million contract with the US Department of Justice.

The name Hadron, Inc. rang a bell with Bill Hamilton. Hamilton eventually realized that Inslaw's difficulties may have begun as early as April 1983. Hamilton had been in his office when he received a telephone call from Dominic Laiti, the chairman of Hadron, Inc. Hamilton recalled Laiti telling him that Hadron, Inc. was trying to corner the market on law enforcement software, and that "they had purchased Simcon, a manufacturer of police department software—and Acumedics, a company that provides computer-based litigation support services for courts." Now Laiti was offering to buy Inslaw from Hamilton in order for Hadron, Inc. to obtain the PROMIS software. According to Hamilton, when he turned down the alleged offer, Laiti bragged of his powerful contacts in the Reagan administration, and told him "we have ways of making you sell."[4]

Within 90 days of the date of the alleged Laiti call the deal between Inslaw and the Justice department began to unravel.[5] A little research also showed that Peter Videnieks, prior to overseeing the PROMIS contract for the Justice Department in 1981, had been in charge of three contracts between the US Customs Service and Hadron, Inc.[6] In light of the links between Earl Brian, Peter Videnieks, and Hadron, Inc., suddenly Dominic Laiti's "ways of making you sell" threat took on more substance.

Many of Riconosciuto's claims about Brian were backed up by information in the following March 21, 1991 affidavit filed on behalf of Inslaw by Ari Ben-Menasche.[7]

> I, ARI BEN-MENASHE, being duly sworn, do hereby state as follows:
>
> 1. Between August 1977 and September 1987, I was employed by the Israel Defense Forces (IDF)/Military Intelligence External Relations Department.
>
> 2. In my above capacity, I had contacts with the Office of the Israeli Prime Minister's Anti-Terrorism Advisor.
>
> 3. In 1982, the Israeli Prime Minister's Anti-Terrorism Advisor was Rafael Eitan.
>
> 4. In a meeting that took place in December 1982 in Mr. Eitan's office in the Kirya in Tel Aviv, Israel, Mr. Eitan told me that he had received earlier that year in the United States, from Mr. Earl Brian and Mr. Robert McFarlane, PROMIS computer software for the limited use of the IDF's Signals Intelligence Unit for intelligence purposes only. Mr. Eitan stated on this occasion, and on earlier occasions as well, that he had special relationships with both Mr. Brian and Mr. McFarlane.

Earl Brian

Ari Ben-Menashe

> 5. This meeting took place in the context of a visit by a foreign dignitary. During a break in the meeting, Mr. Eitan took me aside and gave me the above facts to relate to my superiors so that Mr. Eitan's office could take credit for the introduction of the PROMIS computer software into IDF's Signals Intelligence Unit.
>
> 6. I hereby certify that the facts set forth in this Affidavit are true and correct to the best of my knowledge.
>
> FURTHER AFFIANT SAYETH NOT
>
> Ari Ben-Menashe
> Signed and sworn to before me this 21st day of March, 1991.

Lexington, Kentucky, was the temporary home of Ari Ben-Menashe, a former Israeli intelligence officer who had moved there after his acquittal in New York on arms trading charges. The federal government had accused Ben-Menashe of conspiring to sell three transport planes to an undercover federal agent. He spent a year in prison awaiting trial, but when he finally came to trial, the jury acquitted him after he brandished a diplomatic passport as evidence that his activities had been sanctioned by Israel, and documents showing that the planes in question actually belonged to the Israeli government.

Ben-Menashe became talkative when he left prison. He claimed to have been personally involved in billion-dollar weapons deals between Iran and Israel, part of the latter's plan to exacerbate Iran/Iraq tensions. He verified Riconosciuto's assertions that PROMIS had been sold to foreign intelligence agencies and traded through back-channels that developed over the October Surprise and Iran-contra operations, and that Earl Brian had been involved. As a special intelligence consultant to the Israeli prime minister in 1989, Ben-Menasche maintained that a Chilean arms manufacturer told him that he had been a go-between in Brian's deal to sell PROMIS to Iraqi intelligence. Two years prior to that, according to Ben-Menasche, he attended a meeting in Tel Aviv where Brian claimed that the Central Intelligence Agency, the National Security Agency and the Defense Intelligence Agency all used PROMIS, and then gave the software to Israeli intelligence.

Even with this independent corroboration, Earl Brian continued to deny any connection with Riconosciuto and Ari Ben-Menasche. He insisted that he had only read about Inslaw in the papers, although the company's founders continued to insist that Brian's company had tried to acquire it in 1983.[8]

Then Richard Babayan, an Iranian arms dealer in prison awaiting trial on securities fraud, corroborated Ben-Menasche's statements, connecting Brian to the sale of the software to Iraq and South Korea. In an affidavit dated March 22, 1991, Babayan swore:

> I, RICHARD H. BABAYAN, being duly sworn, do hereby state as follows:
>
> 1. During the past several years, I have acted as a broker of sales of materials and equipment used by foreign governments in their armed forces, intelligence and security organizations.
>
> 2. In the capacity described in paragraph #1, I attended a meeting in Baghdad, Iraq, in October or November, 1987, with Mr. Abu Mohammed of Entezamat, an intelligence and security organ of the Government of Iraq. Mr. Abu Mohammed is a senior ranking official of Entezamat and a person with whom I had extensive dealings over the previous three years.
>
> 3. During the aforementioned meeting with Mr. Abu Mohammed, I was informed that Dr. Earl W. Brian of the United States had recently completed a sales presentation to the Government of Iraq regarding the PROMIS computer software. Furthermore, it is my understanding that others present at Dr. Brian's PROMIS sales presentation were General Richard Secord, of the United States, and Mr. Abu Mohammed.
>
> 4. In early to mid-1988, in the course of subsequent visits to Baghdad, Iraq, I was informed that Dr. Earl W. Brian had, in fact, provided the PROMIS computer software to the Government of Iraq through a transaction that took place under the umbrella of Mr. Sarkis Saghanollan, an individual who has had extensive business dealings with the Government of Iraq since the late 1970s in the fields of military hardware and software. I was also informed that the

Government of Iraq acquired the PROMIS software for use primarily in intelligence services, and secondarily in police and law enforcement agencies.

5. During the course of the visits described in paragraph #4, I also learned from Mr. Abu Mohammed that the Government of Libya had acquired the PROMIS computer software prior to its acquisition by the Government of Iraq; that the Government of Libya had by then made extensive use of PROMIS, and that the Government of Libya was highly recommending the PROMIS software to other countries. I was informed that the high quality of the reference for the PROMIS software from the Government of Libya was one of the principle reasons for the decision of the Government of Iraq to acquire PROMIS.

6. In the capacity described in paragraph #1, I attended a meeting in early 1988 in Singapore with Mr. Y.H. Nam of the Korea Development Corporation.

7. The Korea Development Corporation is known to be a cutout for the Korean Central Intelligence Agency (KCIA).

8. I learned from Mr. Y.H. Nam during the meeting described in paragraph #6 that the KCIA had acquired the PROMIS computer software, and that Dr. Earl W. Brian of the United States had been instrumental in the acquisition and implementation of PROMIS by the KCIA.

9. In the capacity described in paragraph #1, I attended a meeting in Santiago, Chile, in December, 1988, with Mr. Carlos Cardoen of Cardoen Industries. During this meeting, I was informed by Mr. Cardoen that Dr. Earl W. Brian of the United States and Mr. Robert Gates, a senior American intelligence and national security official, had just completed a meeting in Santiago, Chile, with Mr. Carlos Cardoen.

10. I hereby certify that the facts set forth in this Affidavit are true and correct to the best of my knowledge.

FURTHER AFFIANT SAYETH NOT.
Richard A. Babayan

Further corroboration for the illegal sale of PROMIS would come from former agent of the United States' Defense Intelligence Agency, Lester Knox Coleman III. In *Trail of the Octopus*, an examination of his work in the DIA, Coleman claimed that as a surveillance consultant to the Cypriot Police Force Narcotics Squad (CPFNS), he witnessed CPFNS officers unpacking software from boxes marked "PROMIS Ltd, Toronto, Canada," for use in the police agency's recently centralized database. Although it seemed unlikely that such secret dealings would be so trumpeted, the story supported Riconosciuto's allegations that Earl Brian had sold it to the Canadians.

According to Coleman, the database had been installed by Link Systems, Ltd., described by Coleman as a US government "cut-out," established to fulfill a contract with the United Nations Fund for Drug Abuse Control. Further investigation by Coleman revealed that these were bootleg copies of PROMIS, "made without the knowledge of Inslaw, to which a 'backdoor' software routine had been added. No matter how securely the front door might be barred with entry codes and passwords, American operators, holding the key to the secret back door, could break into the PROMIS systems operated by Cyprus, Egypt, Syria, Pakistan, Turkey, Kuwait, Israel, Jordan, Iran and Iraq whenever they wished, access the data stored there and get out again without arousing the slightest suspicion that the security of those systems had been breached..."[9]

In 1992, Ari Ben-Menasche published a memoir of his career in international arms trading called *Profits of War*. In it, he explained his understanding of William Hamilton's NSA background in establishing spy posts against the North in Vietnam, where he computerized a Vietnamese-English dictionary and began developing early versions of PROMIS, according to Ben-Menashe.[10] "The program he was developing would have the ability to track the movements of vast numbers of people around the world. Dissidents or citizens who needed to be kept under watch would be hard put to move freely again without Big Brother keeping an eye on their activities." [11] Elaborating on his sworn statement, Ben-Menasche explained that some officials working for the Reagan administration had hoped to use the Israelis to sell PROMIS to intelligence and police agencies throughout the world. Ben-Menasche quoted Rafi Eitan, the anti-terrorism advisor to the Israeli PM mentioned in the affidavit, as saying "We can use this program to stamp out terrorism by keeping track of everyone. But not only that, we can find out what our enemies know, too."[12]

Ben-Menashe also gave some description of how he envisioned the PROMIS software might work: "Using a modem, the spy network would then tap into the computers of such services as the telephone company, the water board, other utility commissions, credit card companies, etc. PROMIS would then search for specific information. For example, if a person suddenly started using more water and more electricity and making more phone calls than usual, it might be suspected he had guests staying with him. PROMIS would then start searching for the records of his friends and associates, and if it was found that one had stopped using electricity and water, it might be assumed, based on other records stored in PROMIS, that the missing person was staying with the subject of the investigation. This would be enough to have him watched..." Ben-Menashe also detailed PROMIS' notorious "back door," which allowed Israeli access, via modem and coded passwords, to the files of any foreign intelligence service using PROMIS.

Details about how PROMIS works, why it made such a prize for Earl Brian, were and remain sparse and vague. In a newsletter produced as part of a database on intelligence literature and personalities called *Namebase*, author Daniel Brandt argues that Ben-Menashe's chapter on PROMIS compromised an otherwise "frequently believable" book and should have been deleted. Brandt states that "a 'back door' to get around password protection is easy for any programmer,"[13] and it explained why the intelligence community might be interested in peddling it to foreign governments. "Please note, however, that you still need physical access to the computer, either through a direct-connect terminal or a remote terminal through the phone lines, in order to utilize a back door. Ari Ben-Menashe wants us to believe that foreigners allow technicians from another country to install new computer systems in the heart of their intelligence establishments, and don't even think to secure physical access to the system before they start entering their precious data.

"Then he claims that PROMIS ... can suck in every other database on earth, such as those used by utility companies, and correlate everything automatically...I don't like to see whistleblowers like Ben-Menashe needlessly discredited by their own high-tech gullibility."[14]

One person who might have had a view of how PROMIS works was Charles Hayes. Newspapers identified Hayes as a salvage dealer in Pulaski County, Kentucky, near the temporary home of Ari Ben-Menashe in Lexington, who purchased $45 worth of surplus computer equipment from the government in July 1990. The equipment included 13 terminals, nine printers, two cartridge module drives, 19 backup cartridges and two central memory units—equipment that had been used by the US Attorney's office since 1983 to maintain information via PROMIS on the witness protection program, informants, office employees, and outstanding grand jury cases. In August, when federal officials discovered that a weak magnetic screwdriver had failed to purge this information from the equipment adequately, two FBI agents dispatched to make inquiries of Hayes were kicked out.[15] Three days later, Hayes began to cooperate with the US Attorney's office, denied that he had possession of any information that might have been on the equipment, and invited an inspection. Inspectors discovered that the serial numbers of the two cartridge modules that Hayes claimed were the ones he bought did not match the numbers of the modules the Justice Department had sold.[16] Hayes then claimed he had sold the modules, but did not name the purchasers until after federal officials filed a lawsuit.[17] Justice Department attorneys later claimed that Hayes had indeed tried to sell the secret information to an undercover informant, but criminal charges were never filed.[18] The case led to a congressional investigation of computer security; the Justice Department now tosses rather than sells its extra data storage devices.

Even Bill Hamilton did not have a firm grasp on the workings of the full, modified PROMIS system. In a 1992 interview, he maintained that it could run on "any UNIX machine, Hewlett Packard UNIX, RISC 6000, AT&T, AS400 under its own operating system and on mainframes under MVS," that it was comprised of 88 program modules and that the source code—replete with the Inslaw name throughout the code commentary— was kept by any government that had it. When asked how a foreign country could modify the source code without discovering the back door, Hamilton was cryptic: "I don't know what's meant by the back door. What we've been told is that not only the software was sold, but computers with extra chips...What the chips do, we've been told, the extra chips, is to broadcast the data inside PROMIS to satellites owned by the NSA ... but we don't know enough about it as they've never shared anything with us."[19] This possibility neatly bypasses objections that physical access is required for a back door to work.

Ari Ben-Menashe claimed that Earl Brian's company Hadron sold PROMIS to Jordan as a test for the back door. Hadron technicians installed PROMIS for Jordanian intelligence in Amman, connecting it also to the computers of the city's public utilities, IBMs sold to Jordan in the late 1970s. From a small apartment in Amman, a Mossad-connected importer/exporter used PROMIS "to find out everything about everybody—as well as to tap into Jordan's military secrets," downloading it all to disks and passing it on to his contacts whenever he left the country.

With the help of Wackenhut and the Cabazons, according to Ben-Menashe, the US developed its own version of the back-door and the US and Israel began looking for a neutral company through which it could sell the program to foreign intelligence services. The company chosen for the task was Degem, a computer firm with offices in Israel, Guatemala and the South African Bantustan homeland. It had been taken over for the purpose by Robert Maxwell, the publishing mogul who drowned under mysterious circumstances in 1991.[20] Through Maxwell's Degem, working in tandem with Brian's Hadron, the software found a home with the military regime in Guatemala, where it tracked leftist insurgents. "Even if they traveled under a false name, various characteristics, such as height, hair color, age, were fed into roadside terminals and PROMIS searched through its database looking for a common denominator. It would be able to tell an army commander that a certain dissident who was in the north three days before had caught a train, then a bus, stayed at a friend's house, and was now on the road under a different name. That's how frightening the system was." According to Ben-Menashe, PROMIS was used in South Africa to track and squelch the organizers of a strike among the black coal miners via their mandatory identity cards.[21] Degem also sold PROMIS to the Soviet Union and the system was utilized by its GRU intelligence service at least until the coup against Mikhail Gorbachev.[22]

Ben-Menashe had one more footnote to add to the PROMIS story in his memoir. He claimed that because of Inslaw, an attorney, Leigh Ratiner of the Washington law firm Dickstein and Shapiro, was forced into early retirement in an agreement that forbade him to practice law for five years. This happened shortly after Ratiner began representing Inslaw for the firm. According to Ben-Menashe, this also happened after Dickstein and Shapiro received a $600,000 transfer from a CIA-Israeli slush fund for the purpose of getting Ratiner off the case, via Earl Brian.[23]

---

1. Fricker, p. 79, 80; Linsalata, Phil, "The Octopus File," *Columbia Journalism Review*, Nov–Dec 1991, p. 76.

2. Fricker, p. 78. Earl Brian's role in the PROMIS theft was spelled out explicitly by Inslaw lawyer Elliot Richardson in the *New York Times* in 1992. Richardson was the attorney general who actually stood up to Richard Nixon's corruption during the Saturday Night massacre. Brian sued over the *New York Times* article and lost. Richardson had written the article to encourage investigation of the case, but Brian used the opportunity to start a nuisance libel suit. On November 29, 1995, the New York Court of Appeals dismissed Brian's claim and declared that Richardson's assertions came under free speech protections.

Although never prosecuted over the PROMIS allegations, Brian survived only one more year after the libel suit before other past shady deals began to catch up with him. In October 1996 a California jury convicted him of Federal bank fraud, conspiracy and lying to auditors. Prosecutors charged that Brian had drafted documents to conceal losses of the Financial News Network and United Press International, for whom he served as chief executive, in order to obtain $70 million in bank loans for his other concern, a biotechnology firm called Infotechnology.

3. Mahar.

4. Mahar.

5. Bleifuss, Joel, "Scandal Gates," *In These Times*, September 18–24, 1991.

6. Bleifuss.

7. Linsalata.

8. Goddard, Donald, with Lester Coleman, *Trail of the Octopus: From Beirut to Lockerbie*, London: Bloomsbury, 1993, p. 198.

9. Valentine, Douglas, *The Phoenix Program*, New York: Avon Books, 1990. Valentine notes that the Phoenix program of assassination and torture utilized a "Big Mack" computer system to develop documentation "that directs the territorial intelligence system to quantitatively and qualitatively evaluate" the Viet Cong infrastructure (VCI)—in other words, tally body counts. "Statistical evidence of success so pleased the Washington brain trust," according to Valentine, "that additional computer systems were quickly introduced. In March 1969 the National Police Evaluation System went on line, recording 'police assignment data' for analysis and 'counter-measures.'" In 1970 Big Mack's bilingual replacement, the Big Mack Special Collection Program, shifted the burden of reporting and accountability to the RVN Territorial Intelligence System. In January 1970 the VCI Neutralization Information System was inaugurated to record all anti-VCI operations. The National Police Criminal Information System (NPCIS) was implemented in April 1970 to track VCI who were held beyond 'statutory limitations.' Designed to 'interface' with a Chieu Hoi [amnesty program] 'tracking system,' which aided province security committees in the 'post-apprehension monitoring of released VCI,' NPCIS was also compatible with theVCI Neutralization and Identification System, which stored in its classified files 'a history of the VCI member from the time of his identification to his neutralization.'"

Phoenix program police system upgrades happened at roughly the same time that the St. Louis Police Commission upgraded to the REJIS system at the behest of Bill Hamilton's older brother Alan. According to researcher C. D. Stelzer, Alan Hamilton held the position of secretary of the St. Louis Board of Police Commissioners from 1967 to 1970 and had worked for the city police computer system since 1964. Like his brother, he had also worked with the NSA. After his service as secretary to the St. Louis Police Commissioners, Alan Hamilton worked for an information system tied to the FBI's mainframe, where he lobbied hard for the use of the first public version of PROMIS.

10. Ben-Menashe, Ari, *Profits of War*, Sheridan Square, New York, 1992, p. 130.

11. Ben-Menashe, p. 131.

12. In 1995 Microsoft announced that the new version of its Windows software, *Windows '95*, would include an Internet interface with the capability of reading the user's hard-drive directory and reporting it to Microsoft. Eerily reminiscent of the PROMIS back door, such transmissions ostensibly could only happen voluntarily when the user registered the software electronically.

13. Brandt, Daniel, "Cyberspace Wars," *Namebase Newsline* No. 2, July–September 1993.

14. Baker, David L., "Computer Records Accidentally Sold," *Lexington Herald-Leader*, September 1, 1990.

15. Baker, David L., "Buyer Says Agents Didn't Find Computer With Secrets," *Lexington Herald-Leader*, September 5, 1990.

16. "Buyer of US Computer Files To Be Disclosed," *Lexington Herald-Leader*, September 6, 1990.

17. Baker, David L., "US Says Pulaski Man Tried To Sell Secrets," *Lexington Herald-Leader*, September 22, 1990.

18. Interview with Bill Hamilton, *Technical Consultant*, Volume 2, Issue 2, August–September, 1992.

19. Maxwell's body was found floating in the ocean near his yacht, the Lady Ghislaine, off the Canary Islands on November 5, 1991. He had not been seen for hours preceding his death. These types of rumors, of connections to Mossad and other international spy groups, had long circulated about Maxwell, and his publishing empire's finances had come under official review. Nevertheless, Spanish authorities concluded that Maxwell died of a heart attack, although he had no history of heart disease. Maxwell's daughter Ghislaine said the family was satisfied with the investigation, but his sons, widows and lawyers insisted that the death was accidental, perhaps with an eye toward Maxwell's $35.8 million insurance against accidental death. ("Maxwell's Mysterious Death Raises More Questions," *MIN Media Industry Newsletter*, No. 47, Vol. 44, November 25, 1991.)

One of the forensic specialists who worked on the autopsy later noted that a perforation under Maxwell's left ear could have been caused by an injection of a lethal substance. Labor Party MP George Galloway openly speculated in the British House of Commons that Maxwell was murdered because "dead men tell no tales." Britain's PM John Major was even moved to deny publicly that British intelligence was investigating Maxwell's finances after his death. By 1995, however, Britain's Serious Fraud Office had spent $13.9 million tracing Maxwell's web of over 400 companies (Reuters, 2/15/95), resulting in charges against Maxwell's financial advisors, Larry Trachtenberg and Robert Bunn, and his two sons, Ian and Kevin, for defrauding pensioners. A second charge of conspiring with his father was brought against Kevin Maxwell, age 36. The charge claimed that months before the elder Maxwell's death, he and his son used other pension assets and shares in another Israeli company, Scitex Corporation, to illegally raise money for other Maxwell companies (Reuters, 5/26/95). The collapse of Maxwell's empire—which ultimately led to son Kevin standing in the unemployment line and widow Elisabeth unsuccessfully fishing for a publisher to handle her memoir—began well before he died, lending credence to the suicide theory.

20. Oddly, Charles Hayes of Chicago, a member of a congressional delegation, was sent on a fact-finding tour to Johannesburg at the exact moment the world's second largest platinum mine fired 20,000 black workers to end a walk-out in January 1986. The mine was located in the homeland of Bophuthatswana, northwest of Johannesburg ("South African Platinum Mine Fires 20,000 Blacks Over Strike," *Lexington Herald Leader*, January 7, 1986.) In December of that year, attorney Charles Hayes, who would later buy the loaded Justice Department computers, was involved with a gemstone smuggling operation in Brazil with links to Kentucky. He represented one of the Brazilian corporations indicted by the US over the smuggling. (White, Jim, *Courier-Journal*, September 6, 1990.)

21. Ben-Menashe, p. 141.

22. *Ibid.*

The body of Alfred Alvarez, shot in the head with a .38 caliber bullet, burned in the desert heat for a day. It sat in a wooden chair behind Alvarez's house in a yard on Bob Hope Drive in Rancho Mirage, located in Riverside County. Police discovered the body along with those of two others, friends of Alvarez. Six months later, police broke open a door to a condo on Kearny Street and discovered the dead body of Paul Morasca, hog-tied by a telephone cord noosed around his neck and his curled legs. Morasca had strangled slowly as his legs uncurled. Three days later, Mary Quick, a 63-year-old school-teacher and head of the Women's auxiliary of American Legion Post 509 in Fresno, was killed by a shot to the head as she approached the Legion Hall. Investigators came to believe that all three murders were connected.[1]

---

[1] Littman, Jonathan and Taylor, Michael, "Bizarre Murders Puzzle Cops," *San Francisco Chronicle*, December 30, 1991.

CHAPTER 6:

Indio

For a time, Danny Casolaro focused his investigation on the collaboration between Wackenhut Corporation and the Cabazon Indian tribe. The clues provided by Riconosciuto, Casolaro looked deep into the Cabazon angle and watched the connections branch out. From the theft of the PROMIS software, the trail led to the October Surprise, to Ed Meese and Earl Brian, to the Cabazon reservation and to points beyond. The connections kept multiplying. Casolaro made plans to visit the reservation, but never did.[1]

The Cabazon tribe has only thirty members, making it one of the country's smallest tribes. Its desolate, three-and-a-half mile desert reservation is located near Indio, California, in the Coachella Valley outside of Los Angeles, to the Salton Sea's north. The tribe was as destitute as the land it owned until the arrival from Florida in 1978 of Dr. John P. Nichols, a white-haired and bearded Burl Ives lookalike. By the early 1980s, Nichols had transformed the Cabazon landscape into an enormous casino operation, replete with a power plant and housing developments. It became a center for international business, particularly in the weapons and security trade. In his notes, Casolaro calls John Philip Nichols "flaky—beyond a reasonable scope of achievement." He also calls him "a dangerous man." Nichols had been described by others variously as a charlatan and a spook, but a man with an obvious talent for writing successful grants. A Cabazon chairman, Art Welmus, described the tribe's predicament when Nichols came on the scene: "When you don't have nothing and you can't get grants, you're last on the totem pole. Where can you get a start?"[2] After Nichols had taken control, Welman remarked, "It's all controlled by outside forces. These poor Indians are brainwashed. They don't want to lose the money they're getting."[3]

The origins of grantsman Nichols' Svengali-like hold over the Cabazons remain as obscure as the job history on his résumé. Nichols depicted himself as an expert in "socio-health and economic-development planning" with twenty-five years experience. He also cited credentials as an ordained minister and Ph.D., with twenty years of employment by Pro Plan International, a company involved in economic development. Other jobs listed on Nichols' résumé included stints as a Milwaukee brewer and labor organizer, a mental health program director in Kentucky, Wisconsin and Michigan, and manager of a Coca-Cola plant in Sao Paulo, Brazil. The résumé included a number of falsifications and items conveniently left out. According to his claimed alma mater, the Philatea Theological Seminary of the Free Protestant Episcopal Church in London, Ontario, Nichols never earned a doctorate in theology. As a labor organizer, he had been arrested for mishandling union funds and was later picked up on a fugitive warrant.

Other facets of Nichols' life also resisted a narrow reading of his background in "socio-health and economic-development planning." Although he left the bottling plant after a year, Nichols spent ten more years in Chile, Bolivia, and Brazil. Although he played a significant role in organizing two million Marxist and Catholic voters into the leftist Chilean Evangelical Church,[4] he later bragged about his involvement in the murder of democratically-elected President Carlos Allende, as well as the attempted murder of Castro, under the orders of the CIA.[5] Later, Nichols denied that he ever made such statements. He characterized himself as "a simple social worker."

Nichols also worked at one time as business partners with G. Wayne Reeder, an alleged CIA operative. Reeder was partners with Neal Bush, brother of George W. Bush, and defaulted on over fourteen million dollars debt to the failed Silverado Savings and Loan and San Marino Savings and Loan companies. During their association, Reeder was one of many people who provided Nichols the commodity he needed to succeed as a grantsman: contacts. Among many others, Uganda's Idi Amin and Chilean president Eduardo Frei made the list, and police reports indicated that Nichols had business contacts in sixteen foreign countries.[6]

Whatever Nichols was, social worker, big money shmoozer or something else, he quickly took over the management of the Cabazon tribe and began building his empire in the desert. Benefits accrued to an operation based on Indian lands. The sovereign status of Indian lands grants certain advantages to investors, including tax advantages, relative freedom from government scrutiny, and the bypassing of legal regulations—such as environmental impact statements—which would be required on non-reservation lands. One of the first schemes Nichols put into action was the mail order sale of tax-free cigarettes from the reservation. This operation employed about ten Cabazon Indians in a non-air conditioned trailer. The Indians reportedly made about one hundred dollars a week for their work. The cigarette sales succeeded, and within two years

John Philip Nichols.

Alfred Alvarez.

the tribe branched out into the sale of tax-free liquor. The state of California stepped in this time, however, and sued and won for unpaid taxes on the liquor. From available records, it appears the back taxes were never paid. Similarly, Nichols' plans for a telethon, an Indian Olympics, the processing of coal and the importations of gold, and the development of a pharmaceutical firm all fell through—rankling tribal members, who charged that Nichols had manipulated tribal factions and brought in non-Cabazons to vote on these operations.[7] Nichols had bigger plans. In 1979 he put together the arms-manufacturing partnership between the Cabazon tribe and the Wackenhut Corporation, called Cabazon Arms. Wackenhut remains one of the world's largest private security operations and the third largest private prison contractor in the United States. Among numerous other operations, Wackenhut has supplied guards for US embassies worldwide, security for nuclear installations and test sites in the United States, and security-related enterprises in thirty nine countries around the world.

Wackenhut is a private detective agency founded in 1954 by former FBI man George Wackenhut and three ex-FBI friends in Miami, a hotbed of rightist political activity at the time. George Wackenhut had important political connections—Florida governor Claude Kirk and Senator George Smathers among them—and shared a predilection with J. Edgar Hoover for acquiring files on people. His connections helped build his agency into a powerful private police force with huge government contracts. Senator Smather's law firm hired guards from a Wackenhut subsidiary to work nuclear bomb test sites in Nevada and Cape Canaveral, a workaround to the federal law forbidding private detectives from working for the government. George Wackenhut's preoccupation with

George Wackenhut and wife Ruth.

Former Florida governor Claude Kirk George Wackenhut (center) and Grace Kelly's brother, Jack (right).

compiling files made the agency an extraordinary intelligence resource as well. Investigator John Connolly noted that "By 1965, Wackenhut was boasting to potential investors that the company maintained files on two and a half million suspected dissidents—one in forty-six American adults then living. In 1966, after acquiring the private files of Karl Barslaag, a former staff member of the House Committee on Un-American Activities, Wackenhut could confidently maintain that with more than four million names, it had the largest privately held file on suspected dissidents in America."[8]

By then, almost half of Wackenhut's executive staff were former FBI members, two of whom had been senior officers of the division in charge of domestic intelligence. Current and past members of the Wackenhut board of directors included former CIA Deputy Director Frank Carlucci, former Deputy CIA Director Bobby Inman, former CIA Director Admiral William Raborn, and former FBI Director Clarence Kelly.

Michael Riconosciuto provided more names in the cast of characters that made up the history of Wackenhut: "Robert Jason, who is the group vice president of Wackenhut, has an interesting history. Robert Jason was vice president of International Telegraph and Telephone [ITT] … During the Allende situation in Chile, he was the CIA station boss as well as vice president of ITT for Chilean operations. And his deputy station boss was Dino Pianzio. And John Philip Nichols was working under Dino John Pianzio at that time. Jason goes from ITT to Wackenhut. During the Carter administration, Robert E. Jason is Commissioner of US Customs for the entire Carter administration. As Commissioner of Customs, he has some interesting projects directly out of his office. One of them was Fat Albert, the drug interdiction surveillance balloons ... the big balloons with radar and other sensors that were doing the aerial surveillance for drug smugglers flying in ... vendors supporting that project were wholly owned by Earl W. Brian. The contracting officer handling all of those companies was Peter Videnieks, out of the Bureau of Customs.... And this was a very large procurement. And Videnieks' job, as contracting officer, was to deal with industry."[9]

To assist in the administration of Cabazon Arms, John Philip Nichols recruited Peter Zokosky, husband to the Mayor of Indio and the previous head of an ammunitions manufacturing company called Armtech. Under the impression that Nichols intended to start a similar arms manufacturing operation on the Cabazon land, Zokosky soon discovered himself "involved with drug dealers, schemers, contras and murderers."[10]

In 1981, Nichols, Zokosky, and A. Robert Frye, a vice president of Wackenhut, travelled to Quebec in an attempted $18 million dollar purchase of Valleyfield Chemical Products Corporation, a weapons propellant manufacturer. The deal went bust due to Canadian government objections. The trio then went to Indiana, New Jersey, and Washington, D.C., setting up the manufacturing of combustible cartridge cases and three hundred pairs of night vision goggles. Zokosky recalls that the goggles, at least, were intended to be sold to the Nicaraguan contras, and recalls a demonstration of the equipment for contra Eden Pastora (aka Commander Zero) at a police weapons range in Lake Cahuilla, California.[11] Powerful men were creating powerful schemes on the Cabazon Reservation, and that power could be used to stop those who might interfere with those schemes.

In 1982, Fred Alvarez, a Cabazon tribal leader, and two companions, were found murdered on the Indio reservation. Alvarez had been critical of Nichols' and Wackenhut's dealings with the Cabazon tribe,[12] and he had mentioned to friends that he had received death threats. Investigative reporter Virginia McCullough later came to believe that Alvarez had discovered that monies rightfully belonging to the Indians were being embezzled by the partnership called Bingo Palace Inc.[13] Alvarez knew what he was getting into, however. He had told the *Indio Daily News*, "My life is on the line.There are people out there [on the reservation] that want to kill me."

According to Riconosciuto, "Alvarez was present at all the meetings, and he was gung-ho behind Nichols, and everything that was going on there. OK? We were all red-blooded Americans, and we believed in the things that were going on! The way things were shaping up with the Reagan Election Committee and the things that were being orchestrated made us all concerned. And Alvarez wrote a detailed letter to Ronald Reagan expressing his concern. All the details of the October Surprise hostage issue were outlined in the letter. I mean, in specifics."

Linda Streeter-Dukic, Alvarez' sister, described early relations of Alvarez and the inner circle around Nichols as being amicable, but said that when he started objecting to some of the schemes coming down from Nichols and the other tribe leaders, they began to send him on business trips. One trip was to Denver, in June 1981, to attend a conference. Streeter says that, while in Denver, Alvarez was offered a large amount of money to carry drugs back to Indio, but had turned the offer down.

"When he got off the plane," she said, "the police grabbed him, threw him spread-eagle against a car and searched him and his bags." Alvarez's mother said that only Nichols and his son were aware of Alvarez's trip to Denver.[14]

On the morning of July 1, 1981, a meeting was scheduled by Alvarez with attorney and former Cabazon chairman Joe Benitez. The intended topic of discussion was how to oust Cabazon control from Nichols. When Benitez arrived at Alvarez's home in Rancho Mirage he found Fred Alvarez shot through the head as he sat in a chair. Alvarez's girlfriend and another friend were also nearby, shot dead.[15] [16]

The murder of Alvarez and his friends took place during a period when Nichols, Zokosky, and a Wackenhut associate named Bob Frye were travelling around the country on munitions business. Zokosky told reporter John Connolly, "I felt like they were stalling. We had no meetings scheduled." [17] Zokosky returned to Indio, and the following day the bodies of Alvarez and his companions were found. The day after that, Nichols returned to Indio. When Zokosky told Nichols about the murders, "Nichols seemed unaffected, like he already knew." Zokosky stated that Nichols, "... dialed a number and asked for Bob Frye. 'Alvarez has been murdered,' he said into the phone a few seconds later. After another few seconds, Nichols said, 'Okay, so long,' and hung up."[18]

The investigation of the deaths by the police was slipshod and hurried. Police familiar with the case note the friendship of Nichols with one of the investigating detectives. One police investigator believed he was removed from the case because of pressure put on his superiors from the outside. When the investigator pursued further on his own, he received death threats, one from a crossbow-wielding man. Fearing for his family, the man gave up and moved out of town.[19] In any case, the investigation languished until the appearance of Jimmy Hughes. Hughes had been Nichols' Wackenhut bodyguard, and he reported to Indio police officials that he was Nichols' bagman for the murders of Fred Alvarez and his friends. Hughes described Nichols and two of his sons, Mark and John Paul, as having doled out $5,000 in cash in front of him, with orders to deliver the money to two men in the nearby town of Idyllwild. Hughes stated that, "Nichols admitted to me the ordering of the Alvarez murder. He stated there was a US-government covert action... Pressures from unknown Washington, D.C. government agencies have caused a possible shutdown of this case."[20]

According to Hughes, the murderers included several ex-Green Berets employed as firemen in Chicago. Hughes went into hiding in Sonoma and Lake counties after the murders, under the protection of the Riverside county District Attorney's office and the California Department of Justice. The FBI offered Hughes protection under a witness protection program, but he turned it down, fearing "Nichols has made a deal with the FBI through the Wackenhut Corporation. Possibly ... he himself has been protected by the FBI."[21] Hughes also stated that the Alvarez investigation had been interfered with by "an agency out of Washington, D.C." Offering no other specifics, he said, "The FBI is small potatoes compared to the agency."

NAPA Sentinel editor Harry Martin detailed curiosities about the investigation that followed Hughes' revelations: "The chief investigator for the Riverside County District Attorney's Office was later taken off the case and transferred to the Juvenile division and then given early retirement. Shortly after his retirement, the DA investigator states that he was pulled off the road one day by a CIA agent and told to forget all about the 'desert' if he wanted to enjoy his retirement."[22]

After Jimmy Hughes came forward with information he left the country, reportedly traveling to Guatemala. Hughes was said to be in possession of documentation linking the men at Cabazon to a hit list of political targets including Swedish Prime Minister Olof Palme, who was murdered in 1986; Israeli intelligence agent Amiran Nir, who died in a mysterious plane crash; and Cyrus Hashemi, a key player in the events of October Surprise, also murdered in 1986.

The expansion of Cabazon enterprises continued after the murder of Alvarez. In 1983 the Department of Defense gave the Cabazons authorization to manufacture weaponry. At that time Nichols also engaged in discussions with Stormont Laboratories, a genetics lab, about the possibility of manufacturing a bio-weapons detector. In March 1983, a casino and bingo parlor appeared on the reservation—visible on the left side of Highway 10 driving in to Palm Springs. Part of the funding for the bingo parlor came from a $90,000 HUD grant, given ostensibly to the Cabazons for the construction of a museum.

In 1983, the Cabazons contacted La France Specialties, another weapons manufacturer, to seek assistance in building a weapons factory on the Indian lands. A letter to La France said that the weapons intended to be manufactured included assault rifles with laser sights, sniper rifles with one mile-plus range, 9mm machine pistols, rocket systems, night vision scopes, and battle communications systems.[23]

Danny Casolaro focused on the most grisly of the Cabazon murders in his notes, that of Riconosciuto associate Paul Morasca: "In 1982, the body of thirty-year-old Paul Morasca was found hog-tied and fatally strangled in his condominium on San Francisco's Telegraph Hill. Morasca, who had been working among the Cabazon Arms confidantes, reportedly had the access codes for offshore accounts containing hundreds of millions of dollars in drug money ostensibly for covert operations."[24]

Michael Riconosciuto said of Morasca's death, "And then my associate Paul Morasca was found murdered. I was the one who found him. And Nichols and others tried to keep me away from our condominium office in San Francisco. It was suspicious to me. And after almost fourteen days of not seeing Paul—and then a day after he missed a critical meeting that there's no way he would have missed—that's when I went looking for him. And Nichols tried to get me down to the desert on an emergency basis to work on some project so that I'd be otherwise occupied. And I said that I'd be down there as soon as I found out what happened to Paul. And he was really pushy and really stressed out. When he came across to me on this, it made me even more suspicious. And other people that I talked to tried to dissuade me, and it was just not normal, the amount of pressure and emphasis they were putting on this situation. I knew in my gut ... Paul was dead! He'd been slowly strangled to death."[25]

Three days after Paul Morasca's murder, a woman named Mary Quick—63 years old, a school teacher and Women's Auxiliary president of Fresno's American Legion—was headed toward Legion Post 509 when she was killed by a single gunshot to the head in an apparently unrelated mugging. A year after the murder, however, police learned that Riconosciuto claimed a business association with Mary Quick's nephew, Brian Weiss. Police sources told the *San Francisco Examiner* that Weiss gave his aunt a bank card with secret account numbers, perhaps the same access codes that may have led to Paul Morasca's murder. According to the police, "She had no connection (to any of the principals) and could be trusted. Mary Quick was to be instructed to give information only to Paul (Morasca) or Michael Riconosciuto. She was not aware of what the computer card was for and had never received the card." Riconosciuto claimed that Mary Quick's murderers were probably trying to recover the card.[26]

After the death of his wife, John Philip Nichols became involved with a twenty-seven-year-old heroin addict. Nichols attempted to hire a hitman to kill his girlfriend's alleged suppliers, but made the mistake of soliciting the hit through a police informant. On tape Nichols can be heard saying, "I'll pay five hundred and five hundred," for two murders. Nichols also made clear that there would be additional work for the proposed hitman: "I need some work done in Latin America. I do a lot of business down there." Nichols proposed that the murderer move to Las Vegas, and "not freelance, but work out a guaranteed income."

In January of 1985 John P. Nichols was arrested on charges of soliciting the murder of five persons. The case never came to trial. Nichols pleaded no contest and was sentenced to prison for four years, although he served only nineteen months. The felony conviction forced Nichols' official removal from his job running the Cabazon reservation. The elder Nichols continued as "mental health counselor" to employees and the Indians on the reservation, however, while his son, John Paul Nichols, became tribal administrator. A thirty thousand square foot casino and bingo hall were soon under construction, and a deal was cut with Colmac Corporation to construct a $150 million power generating plant on the reservation. Other business dealings by the Cabazon tribe included plans for a thirteen hundred luxury housing project to take advantage of HUD funding, and an industrial incinerator for medical wastes. Both proposals would have taken advantage of the fact that environmental impact statements would not be required because of the land's sovereign status—a legalism pointed out by Michael Riconosciuto in his affidavit of March 21, 1991. An extensive Southern California Edison electrical facility has also been developed on Cabazon land.[27]

In 1990, control of the Cabazon reservation was turned over to John Paul's younger brother, Mark. Mark had served six months in jail in Florida for possession and sale of cocaine and LSD in 1978. Also in 1990, a pari-mutuel offtrack betting parlor was opened, courtesy of a grant from HUD. The Indian Gaming Regulatory Act of 1988 made the practice of Indians opening betting parlors and casinos commonplace by the early 1990s. In fact, the act allowed tribes like the Cabazons to buy property outside the reservation but regulate it under the same rules of sovereignty that protected the industrial incinerator and Riconosciuto's manufacture of chemical weapons from federal control, creating great potential growth for such enterprises.[28]

Casolaro began looking into illegal operations connected to other Indian reservations in the United States. He found connections to the Papago Indian reservation and the alleged shipment of drugs by the CIA and the criminal underground. In his notes on Cabazon, Casolaro remarked: "Guns to Iraq—Missiles to Iran—Dope—for money" with arrows showing that dope money funds the above.[29]

Casolaro had a hard time trying to come up with a title for his unfolding story. He listed several alternates for his manuscript: "On the Trail of the Moneycatchers," "On the Trail of an Unlikely Alliance," "On the Trail of an Alliance Gone Awry," "Rogue Spies, Big Oil, Organized Crime and Secret Empires," and the prophetic "Death of the Poet." Each suggested some connection to what he had learned in his research on the Cabazons, struck as he was with its importance to the Inslaw case. At one point he considered simply calling the book *Indio*.[30]

---

1. "Inslaw," *Leading Edge*, p. 48; "The Family That Preys Together," *Covert Action* 41.

2. Littman, Jonathan, “Mystery Man Who Transformed a Tribe,” *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 5, 1991.

3. Littman, Jonathan, “Tiny California Tribe’s Huge Clout,” *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 4, 1991.

4. Littman, “Mystery Man.”

5. “The Com-12 Briefing,” *Phoenix Liberator*, March 23, 1993, p. 16.

6. Littman, “Mystery Man.”

7. Littman, “Mystery Man.”

8. Connolly, John, “Inside the Shadow CIA,” *Spy*, September 1992.

9. Mahar.

10. Connolly, John, “Badland,” *Spy*, April 1992.

11. *Ibid.*

12. From *US News & World Report*, August 23, 1993: “In 1980, California’s Cabazon Indian tribe hired as their poker-room manager one Rocco Zangari, identified as a mobster in Senate testimony. He was subsequently fired. Later, after tribal Vice Chairman Alfred Alvarez complained to local newspapers about poker-room skimming, Alvarez and two others were shot dead; the case has never been solved.”

13. McCullough, Virginia, Interview with Kenn Thomas, January 27, 1994.

14. Connolly, “Badland.”

15. Littman and Taylor, “Bizarre Murders.”

16. In the spring of 1991, Linda Streeter-Duvic and former tribal chairman Art Welmus attempted again to organize the Cabazon tribe to oust John Philip Nichols and clan as administrators of the Cabazons. They were kept from assembling in the tribal hall by eleven guards, but held their meetings instead in a nearby mobile home. In response, the Nicholses initiated expulsion proceedings, and flew in a parliamentarian from Wisconsin to conduct hearings. Armed guards took twenty Cabazons to a trailer next to a bingo hall, where they witnessed the parliamentarian accuse Welmus of the theft of a cheesecake, the attempt to use the tribal hall, and of maligning the Nichols management in the local press. The vote to banish Welmus and Streeter-Duvic was deadlocked until votes were received from five Nichols supporters recently registered as voters. The new voters were non-Cabazon, distant relatives (stepchildren) of the Nichols faction. The final vote expelled Welmus, age sixty, from the tribe and Streeter-Dukic, age 44, for twenty years, and fined them $50,000. (Littman, Jonathan, “Tribal Managers Tough To Challenge,” *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 4, 1991; a letter from counsel to the Cabazons to the San Francisco Chronicle dated Sept. 19, 1991 challenged the details of this report and Jonathan Littman’s entire series on the Cabazons and demanded a retraction, which it did not receive.)

17. Connolly, “Badland.”

18. *Ibid.*

19. Littman and Taylor.

20. Connolly, "Badland."

21. *Ibid.*

22. Martin, Harry, *NAPA Sentinel.*

23. Connolly, "Badland."

24. Casolaro's Notes, p. 88.

25. Casolaro's Notes, p. 104.

26. Littman and Taylor.

27. Connolly, "Badland."

28. Malone, Roy, "Edgar Opposes Indians' Plan for Casino," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, October 14, 1992. Interestingly, in March 1995, Bill Hamilton's brother Lou gathered together investors from the St. Louis, Missouri area for a riverboat gambling site in Lemay, Missouri. The effort gained news attention because some the investors were longtime donors to the political campaigns of the St. Louis County Executive George R. "Buzz" Westfall. Lou Hamilton's company, Futuresouth, was the St. Louis partner to the Showboat casino chain based in Nevada. (Schlinkmann, Mark "Casinos Enlist Westfall Backers," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, March 30, 1995.)

29. Casolaro, p. 359.

30. Jonathan Littman, "Tiny California Tribe's Huge Clout," *San Francisco Chronicle*, 9/4/91.

CHAPTER 7:

Behold, a Pale Horse

Danny Casolaro pulled the various threads he had uncovered together into a book proposal for submission to publishers, entitled, *Behold, a Pale Horse*. He didn't realize at the time, but he was describing a part of the interlinking cabal he would later call "The Octopus." The following excerpt is from the book proposal.

> *Behold, a Pale Horse* will be a haunting odyssey that depicts a manifesto of deceit, decisions of conscience, good and evil, intrigue and betrayal.
>
> John Philip Nichols found his promised land just north of Mexicali on the wild grasses above the Salton Sea.
>
> He was sixty-years-old then and the Cabazon Indian reservation on the edge of Sonora was an ideal place for him to nurse his secret self. This is vast desert emptiness where the yucca reaches nearly forty feet high, where the Mormons saw it as a symbol pointing to the promised land and they called it the Joshua Tree. But the Joshua Tree is an ugly, unsymmetrical lily with burly arms crooked at the elbow and it points everywhere, not unlike John Philip Nichols, as if asking itself "what shall I do next?"
>
> There is a point on the ridge of the Little San Bernardino mountains known as Salton View where you are more than five thousand feet above the desert and where, to the north, you can see the great escarpment of Mount San Jacinto and, to the south, the man-made Salton Sea, the orchards of the Coachella valley and, on a clear day, old Mexico.
>
> It is always clear in Indio and with the clarity of the warbler in the cottonwood grove, John Philip Nichols knew that he could bring his box office charity and all his earthly possessions into the reservation of the Cabazon Band of Mission Indians. With no more than two dozen Indians and nearly

> two thousand acres of desert solitaire, cactus and cotton grove, the Cabazon reservation was a suitable home for gambling, dope, dirty money and gun running and all the fugitive visions that line the edge of oppression.
>
> John Philip Nichols didn't howl under twelve full moons before the gambling was underway and, in the desert night, people flocked from all over to Indio Bingo and to the poker casino at the fork of Highway 10 and Highway 86. Under a major corporation's umbrella subsidiary, later to be named Cabazon Arms, the gun runners and the money traders soon arrived, the weapon makers and the generals from Babylon, contra resuppliers, covert operatives from both the East and West and, in what one source calls "a marriage of necessity," the dope dealers, the mobsters and the murderers.
>
> Whatever John Philip Nichols saw in the dark cathedral of those desert nights in silence and certainty cracked and came unglued. After a number of still-unsolved execution-style murders and solicitation-for-murder charge for which he was jailed, the dark vision of John Philip Nichols eroded. Although he's been released from a short stint in prison, he's a one-eyed Jack now since only Indio Bingo gambling—managed by his sons, the Las Vegas-managed poker casino, the Indians and the most formidable creatures of the desert remain.

Several of the Cabazon Arms associates during the 1980s are coming out of the shadows to take top billing for the actual participation in the multi-million dollar laundered payment to the Iranians to delay the release of the hostages, in shutting down the dope and dirty money schemes of Nugan Hand and resurfacing its activities, in assisting Gerald Bull in the refinements and distribution of his weapon arsenal including his Super Gun and in the development of the Fuel Air Explosive technologies—thought to be responsible for the Beirut bomb which killed two hundred forty-one US servicemen.

An international cabal whose services cover parochial political intrigue, espionage, the trade of weapon technologies, biotoxins, drug trafficking, money laundering and murder has emerged from an isolated desert Indian reservation just north of Mexicali. While this cabal continues, its origins were spawned thirty years ago in the shadow of the Cold War. In recent months, however, several of its members have gratuitously taken credit for the purposeful delay of the release of the hostages until after the 1980 election, scuttling and resettling the schemes of the Australian-based Nugan Hand bank, their involvement with Gerald Bull, assassinated last spring in Brussels and the development and distribution of fuel air explosive technologies.

CHAPTER 8:

Wild Rumors

The facts that Danny investigated astounded him, but the rumors were out of this world, some of them quite literally.

Rumor had it, for instance, that the Cabazons belonged to worldwide “Reservation Operations” run on Indian lands by the “Enterprise” and Wackenhut under the project name “Yellow Lodge.”[1] Yellow Lodge allegedly produced advanced warfare projects, including parthenogenic viruses co-engineered with Stormont Labs in Woodland, California. Stormont Labs later acknowledged that it had discussions with Wackenhut concerning biological weapons.[2]

Yellow Lodge ran operations on Jicarilla Apache lands and other Indian reservations, including a center called “D6” located in Dulce, New Mexico. Danny learned that some UFO enthusiasts identify this location as the site of a huge underground joint human/alien base. Others believe the alien base to be government disinformation intended to confuse the real nature of the Dulce operation.[3]

In his notes Danny mentions “MJ 12—extraterrestrial,” alleged by the more excitable end of the UFO research spectrum to be a super-secret US military group charged with signing a non-aggression pact with space aliens.[4] He also mentions “Area #51,” and “Pine Gap.” Area 51 is a military test site in Nevada for advanced aerial weaponry. Although only through a recent job-hazards lawsuit has the Air Force begun to admit to the existence of the base, Area 51 has long been known as the staging ground for the U2 spy plane, the SR17 Blackbird, and is much-rumored as the home of the post-Stealth marvel called the Aurora. In 1989, a man named Bob Lazar went public with claims that he had worked at Area 51, taking apart and reverse-engineering alien space craft. Although even UFO skeptics acknowledge some consistencies in Lazar’s stories, his efforts at documenting his credentials and work history have met with some doubt.[5]

Pine Gap is the top secret underground American base located near Alice Springs in Australia, officially known as the Joint Defense Space Research Facility.[6] Pine Gap allegedly serves as the central American base for the monitoring of spy satellites and interception and decoding of various forms of broadcast communications between foreign powers unfriendly to the US. Pine Gap was built in 1968, ostensibly as a means of sharing space program data with the Australians. Opposition to the base grew as it became clearer that it had a more prosaic purpose—espionage. In his 1987 book *The Crimes of Patriots*, author Jonathan Kwitny demonstrated that CIA manipulation led to the early end in Australia of the administration of Labor Party PM Gough Whitlam, in part because of his opposition to Pine Gap. Indeed, Whitlam was rousted after his public complaints about intelligence agency deceptions over the tragic US policy in East Timor, and the CIA's funding of Australia's right-wing Country Party. By a quirk of Australia's constitution, Whitlam was not driven from office by an election, but was removed by a governor-general he had appointed, one who had strong ties to the CIA.[7] No doubt the paranoia about this destabilization of the US ally down under fueled other rumors among locals about the underground Pine Gap base involving alien/government collaboration.[8]

One early page of Danny's notes seemingly ties together Area 51, Pine Gap, a small Pennsylvania town called Tonoma, and possibly one of its citizens, someone named Fred Dick. Perhaps tracing one of many convoluted dead ends that Danny traced, the authors of this book dispatched an investigator to the "Tonoma, PA" in the notes, but failed to find Dick, even after placing a classified in the local newspaper, or any indication of what may have linked him to the two mysterious military bases.[9] Buried in notes written much later, however, were references to Tonomopah, Nevada, near Area 51. Fred Dick, however, remains a mystery.

Although he had an interest in computers and science, Casolaro's interest in the UFO world began with Michael Riconosciuto. Riconosciuto had a proclivity for flights of flying saucer fancy going back at least a generation. After Casolaro's death, he told one computer magazine that Danny had learned nothing more than what one of two intelligence agency factions wanted him to know in order to embarrass the other faction. One faction was called Aquarius and had a leadership sub-group called MJ-12.[10] Riconosciuto even told one writer that he had witnessed the autopsy of an alien body. The writer concluded that Riconosciuto "would have told anyone anything to get out of prison."[11]

Rumors also had it that Riconosciuto had worked for Lear Aircraft in Reno, Nevada. This connected him to both John Lear, Sr., creator of the Lear jet, and often claimed by UFO buffs as having done research on anti-gravity for the government, as well as John Lear, Jr., a former CIA pilot who also hit the UFO circuit with tales of saucers and aliens in cahoots with the US government. Lear

Jr. and Bob Lazar comprise a faction within the UFO sub-culture that maintains a regular presence at its gatherings. Other members of this nexus have included the redoubtable William Cooper, whose 1991 book, *Behold a Pale Horse*, shared the title of the first draft proposal of Casolaro's manuscript and became notorious for its examination of Area 51, its reprinting of the anti-Semitic Protocols of the Elders of Zion, and its claim that JFK was shot by the driver of his car in the presidential motorcade. To a lesser extent this nexus also included Gordon Novel, by rumor and confession a minor player in the Kennedy assassination and the Watergate scandal. Some have suggested that the bizarre tales of extraterrestrials coming from this nexus serve as disinformation to deflect attention away from serious issues such as gun-running and black project weapons development.[12]

Riconosciuto had his own inter-generational connection to the UFO lore, and his own link to the Kennedy assassination. His father Marshall had been a business associate of Fred Crisman, a man involved in the Maury Island incident, one of the earliest UFO incidents to follow pilot Kenneth Arnold's famed flying discs over Mt. Rainier in 1947.[13] Arnold, in fact, investigated claims by Crisman and Harold Dahl that Dahl, his son, his dog and two others witnessed six saucers as the crew boated in Puget Sound along the shore of Maury Island. Dahl's child was burned and his dog killed when one of the saucers spewed metallic debris on the boat. Crisman and Dahl mailed metal fragments of the debris to *Amazing Stories* editor Ray Palmer, who hired Kenneth Arnold himself to investigate. Confused by what he was hearing from Crisman and Dahl, Arnold called in two Air Force Intelligence officers. They conducted some interviews, collected some of the debris, and were headed back to home base on a B-25 when an explosion on their early morning flight killed them both. The Maury Island incident was written off for years as a hoax,[14] but recent research has brought up the possibility that Crisman used his possession of the saucer debris as a means to a career among the spooks.[15]

Flying saucer crash retrieval rumors mounted in 1947 near the Riconosciuto stomping ground in Tacoma, Washington. The *Tacoma News Tribune* reported upon a retrieval by William Guy Bannister, the FBI Special Agent in Charge of the area at the time.[16] Bannister became famous much later in life when he shared office space with the Fair Play for Cuba Committee in New Orleans, possibly employing Lee Harvey Oswald as an *agent provocateur*. Crisman, too, had been connected to Oswald via a subpoena from the investigation of JFK's death by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison. Some alleged that Crisman was one of the three hoboes photographed after their arrest in the railroad yard behind the infamous grassy knoll on November 22, 1963. Crisman was notably silent about both Maury Island and JFK in his 1970 memoir of life in Tacoma, entitled *Murder of a City*, written under the pseudonym of Jon Gold.[17] He did have warm comments about Marshall Riconosciuto, however, and recounted that the young Michael "had discovered several electronic bugs" at his father's office.

---

1. "The Com-12 Briefing," *Phoenix Liberator*, March 23, 1993, p. 16.

2. Cockburn, Alexander, "Meters and Mortars," *New Statesman*, March 27, 1992.

3. "Com-12," p. 23.

4. Blum, Howard, *Out There*, Simon and Schuster, New York, 1990. Sources for the history of MJ12 abound in the rumor mill. This book, written by a two-time Pulitzer Prize nominee and former *New York Times* investigative reporter, discusses without dismissing the prospect of secret US government investigations of extraterrestrials. It also reproduces the infamous MJ-12 documents, from which lore about this unholy alliance has arisen.

5. "A Lineman For Lincoln County: Area 51's Glenn Campbell Interviewed," *Steamshovel Press* #12, 1995.

6. Sauder, Richard, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, Dracon Press, 1995. Although this book does not mention Pine Gap, it documents similar underground bases around the world and provides a credible view of the tunneling technology.

7. Kwitny, Jonathan, *The Crimes of Patriots*, Touchstone, New York, 1987. Casolaro took extensive notes from this book primarily for its main subject, the Nugan Hand bank scandal, which began to figure prominently in the Octopus theory.

8. "The Mysterious US Base of Pine Gap," *Notes From the Hangar*, 3rd Quarter, 1991.

9. Correspondence with investigator G. J. Krupey, September 8, 1993.

10. Brown, Colin, "CIA Computer Genius Alleges Massive Conspiracy," *Technical Consultant*, December–January 1991.

11. Ecker, Don, "Inslaw: Was Wackenhut a Player?" *UFO Magazine*, Vol. 8, No. 1, 1993.

12. Hansson, Lars, *UFOs, Aliens and 'Ex'-Intelligence Agents: Who's Fooling Whom? The Inside Story of John Lear, Bill Cooper and the Greatest Cover Up in History*, Paragon Research, Orlando, Florida, 1991.

13. According to researcher Virginia McCullough, Marshall Riconosciuto also had associations to Nixon crony Pat Moriarty, and references to both appear in Casolaro's notes. McCullough noted that Moriarty helped arranged Nixon's first trip to China and was later connected to another conspiracy potentate, Bo Gritz. Michael Riconosciuto mentioned his father in point 14 of his March 1991 affidavit for the House Judiciary Committee.

14. Ruppelt, Edward J., *The Report On Unidentified Flying Objects*, Doubleday, Garden City, NY, 1956, pp. 26–27; Menzel, Donald H. and Boyd, Lyle G., *The World of Flying Saucers*, Doubleday, Garden City, NY, 1963, pp. 21–23.

15. Flammonde, Paris, *The Age of Flying Saucers*, Hawthorne Books, New York, 1971, p. 13–17; Halbritter, Ron, "The Hoax On You," *Steamshovel Press* #12, 1995, p. 23.

16. Halbritter, p. 24.

17 Gold, Jon, *Murder of A City*, Tacoma, WA, 1970, p. 78.

CHAPTER 9:

Pursuit of the Tape

One of the incidents Danny Casolaro wrote about in his manuscript was the attempted retrieval of an important tape that Michael Riconosciuto, "Danger Man," had stashed away. Here is Danny's account of this episode, from his Octopus manuscript:

> It is a pale moon that illuminates the characters in this story. With chords of fear and longing, it is a world of darkness and betrayal that everyone thinks they know but few have seen. The real faces in this world are all too human. Danger Man's mind is as balkanized[1] as the script he lives and the land he travels. Perhaps betrayal becomes a way of life.[2] The background music no longer echoes national anthems[3] but T. S. Eliot's *Gerontion*: "Think/neither fear nor courage saves us. Unnatural vices/are fathered by our heroism. Virtues/are forced upon us by our impudent crimes."
>
> These impudent[4] crimes are the subject of this update and a brief capsule seems as hopeless as carving the Lord's Prayer[5] on the head of a secret agent. For, like the enormous Danger Man himself, this story will resist[6] shrinkage. Its events are too febrile, its local color too relentless.[7]
>
> The sun had burned away the morning fog when I arrived in Seattle on Easter Sunday, bound for Everett, some thirty miles away. I had come to visit and retrieve a tape recording from the intriguing Danger Man himself, forty-three-year-old Michael J. Riconosciuto, whom lawmen had deposited in the Snohomish County jail in Everett, Washington.
>
> The tape Danger Man has recorded a month earlier, he alleged, was a direct threat from a former Justice Department official describing two legal entanglements that were about to befall him if he cooperated with a mushrooming Capitol Hill inquiry. If this tape was retrievable, I knew this scandal was about to be publicly born.

It was during the last year that I began calling Michael "Danger Man." During hours of telephone calls from him, he had told me in exotic detail of his participation in "an enterprise" that worked its way around the world, trading in dope, dirty money, weapons, biotoxins and murder for the secrets of the temple. I had been able to unearth some documentation and a number of other people who were willing to provide a rich array of detail regarding Danger Man, his former associates and the underground empire he described.

But now he had become a key witness in the eight-year-old legal battle between the Justice Department and Inslaw, a District of Columbia computer company whose software tracking system called PROMIS has been used by law enforcement to track cases and criminals. "but it will track anything once its provided with the rules," Inslaw's founder says.

Inslaw charged, and two courts have agreed, that the software—selling for $150,000 per user—had been stolen by a handful of people in the Justice Department in the course of a contract dispute. Now, Inslaw charges, the software has been distributed by profiteers to intelligence and military agencies in, among other countries, Iraq, Libya, South Korea, Israel and Canada. Inslaw's William Hamilton had independently learned from a Canadian official that PROMIS was being used in nine hundred different locations in Canada.

A little more than a week before his arrest, Danger Man had filed an affidavit in the case on behalf of Inslaw saying that private interests had hired him in the early 1980s to modify the software for Canadian distribution. Those private interests, he told me, represented tentacles of the underground cabal that made its home on an Indian reservation just north of Mexicali. In the affidavit, Danger Man said he was called in February by a former Justice Department official and warned against cooperating with an investigation into the case by the House Judiciary committee. He added that the former Justice official told him that if he talked to investigators he would be implicated in an unrelated criminal case and would lose another ongoing child custody case.

Late Friday evening on March 29, on the Key peninsula off Puget Sound, Danger Man was arrested for distribution of methamphetamine.

I arrived in Snohomish County two days later on March 31. This is ponderosa pine and giant fir country flanked by the Cascade Mountain range to the east, Port Gardner Bay and the Olympic Mountains to the west with the Snohomish River snaking through the north end of the city of Everett, the county seat. By late evening, I had been to the jail a number of times and each time Danger Man was refused visitors on the orders of the U. S. Marshall in Seattle. Still, Danger Man was able to find me at a nearby motel and call several times from the jail with cryptic directions for the retrieval of the tape, his expected movement the following day to a federal magistrate in Tacoma and more details about how dangerous he was becoming to the enterprise.

That enterprise moved drugs, guns and money to the ever changing temples of power in different parts of the world, the geography changing with the political climate unless the political climate could be changed to suit the enterprise, according to Danger Man, two other "agents of influence," and a former Israeli agent.

But no one is supposed to talk about it and Danger Man told me again of his best friend Paul who had been murdered in San Francisco almost ten years earlier. "Paul was the best there was as a money mover. The access codes he maneuvered were offshore accounts amounting to over a billion dollars," Danger Man said. "They don't play around. You're just found dead one day."

Traveling to Tacoma with Danger Man's lawyer, I saw seals basking in the only shaft of sun I had seen so far in the Northwest—fat with their catch of steelhead trout moving to freshwater spawning. We talked of Danger Man's allegations, some documentable, and the tape that both of us had been promised.

"Michael sure called this one," the lawyer said. We arrived in Tacoma just before the 3 PM hearing. Danger Man filled the courtroom with his presence. Under six feet tall, he was immense in frame but agile and graceful in movement like some giant white rabbit or perhaps some hybrid fugitive creature related to a fox.

A former Air America pilot who says he may know Danger Man under a name other than Michael Riconosciuto says, "He was called 'the Fat Man' in Asia." Richard Brenneke won't even talk about Danger Man over the telephone. (Brenneke's claims through the years regarding his role in an "October Surprise" plot to delay American hostages in Ran until after the 1980 election have been bouncing around for some time.)

The hearing before a federal magistrate in Tacoma concerned bail for Danger Man which was refused. While the complaint charged an isolated incident of distributing drugs on March 29, there were four other dates mentioned in which confidential informants with audio and video recordings were used as well.

The next day—April 2—I was driven from Gig Harbor to a patch of bog in the peninsula on the reaches of Puget Sound. This is where, I was told, Danger Man had thrown a copy of the tape from a car on the night of his arrest. I was driven up into the hills on the peninsula. Here the high pine trees, mostly wolf pine, and the red cedar stay in the rain shadow. The ground is mostly scrubland and skunk cabbage heavy with the scent of wild herbs and flowers, especially in the pouring rain. Many of the people live in huts, some attached to mobile homes, in the backwater of the peninsula. The first man I was to meet on this far end of nowhere was an old, grey-bearded Swede in a wide-brimmed leather hat. He came out of his hut talking in staccato rhythms and reciting broken poetry. He appeared somewhere between sixty and seventy years of age. “Can you cry?” he asked me. “Then prepare to shed a tear and shed them now,” he said. He hardly paused on the hillside in the pouring rain before advising that “The fault is not in the stars. The fault is in ourselves.”

When he stopped talking, he started singing and finally I was able to ask if he had a tape for me.

My driver said, “No. He doesn’t have the tape. We just wanted you to meet some of Michael’s old friends.”

Sitting side by side under a tarp, the bearded old Swede took me on a compulsory guided tour of Danger Man from the time he was a child winning science fairs to now. Prior to working with the Nobel Laureate at Stanford’s Physics Lab at sixteen and seventeen years of age, he had suddenly already distinguished himself in mining, sonar, lasers and communications. Much of that I had heard before. Nobel laureate Dr. Arthur Schalow, in a lengthy interview months before, remembered Danger Man well. “You don’t forget a sixteen-year-old youngster who shows up with his own Argonne laser,” Dr. Schalow had told me. There was an old article about Danger Man when he was ten-years-old after he strung up an alternative telephone service in his neighborhood.

The old Swede, Danger Man’s father and my driver wanted to make it very clear that this was a person who made very powerful people take notice of him when he was a boy. But why, I asked, would this group pursue him. Everyone, including Danger Man’s father, would tell me “To control him.” He had been running from that, I was told, since the mid-‘80s when he left the Indian reservation. And now he was regarded as a rogue always presenting a moving target having been harassed through the years by brigades of law enforcement for one charge or another. I had even found an old letter of his dating back to 1982 in which he described having “to present a periscopic image to the public.” The rain did not let up as the old Swede danced in the brush. I watched a big jack rabbit dart under and then away from the old Swede’s tarp before it limped trembling and hidden in the grass. While some creatures are born to hunt, other are born to flee. These are nature’s fugitives, and, like the fox, have a curious freedom in the masks they wear and access to obscure regions where no one will follow. Sometimes they have the protective coloring of the hunter but that is the ruse of the fox. They learn that instinctively.

By the end of the week I had trucked back and forth across Puget Sound by daylight and nightfall in an odyssey of pursuit for the tape. I would meet Danger Man in jail and talk with him many times from the Kitsap County jail to which he had been moved on the peninsula.

I had also been placated, I presumed, with documents concerned mostly with weapons, fuel air explosives, documents relating to Gerald Bull, assassinated the previous spring in Brussels, Carlos Cardoen in Chile, mining papers, lab papers relating to scientific experiments with lasers, and letters regarding the return of that mysterious billion dollars which Danger Man said had come from the Nugan Hand bank in Australia. I had already seen some of these documents in the months before but now it looks as though the gumshoes from the House Judiciary Committee would also see them.

Two Capitol Hill investigators had arrived on my heels to interview Danger Man. By the end of the week they had arrived in Seattle, had discussions with the U. S. Attorney, and made arrangements to have Danger Man moved.

"I'm screwed," Danger Man said, "don't you see. These guys are my only hope. I've come up with the cheapest way to refine platinum there is. But I'm screwed because they'll try to show that the chemicals I use at the mine are precursor ingredients to making methamphetamine." The chemicals at one of his labs included, he said, chloracetone, sodium cianide, nitric acid, ammonium chloride and bags of platinum dust.

If I received the tape, the original, I was to give it to the investigators, he said. I could make a copy, he added, to bring back to Washington, DC.

The next morning, Danger Man was moved from his cell on the Kitsap peninsula to Seattle where the Judiciary Committee investigators and their stenographer would be interviewing him. I arrived in Seattle and met both investigators. Despite their refusal to let me accompany them on their interview with Danger Man, we reached an agreement to engage in dialogue back in the nation's capitol. They spent all day with Danger Man and then, I learned, provided documents from another repository which I had not seen in Bremerton at the southern tip of the inlet. Having arrived on the 3rd of April, both investigators left on the 5th.

By the tail end of the week, I had learned that federal agents had raided one of Danger Man's labs in the mountainous Pine Creek area west of Tonasket still high in rain and snowmelt as well as his place in Aberdeen, a coastal strip town and still another place in Anaheim, California.

I had previously talked to a Denver businessman about Danger Man and his elusiveness. "I watched Mike demonstrate a new laser weapon he had created," the Denver man said, "a wand that blew whatever he pointed it at straight up in the air. I had called a number of high ranking military people and Michael was scheduled to demonstrate this new creation at Fort Hood, Texas. When the time came and we gathered at Fort Hood, Michael just didn't show. That's the way he was then and I don't expect he's any different now."

The beginning of spring always has its moody, bad tempered transitions but with the tape never emerging, I was more than a little frustrated and more than doubtful in the tape's existence. "I hope, for your sake, I'm wrong," I told him when he was back in the jail at Kitsap County.

He was unhappy I was leaving. I could sense his feelings grow mute in embarrassment, everything in him withdrew, a silence arose. I was going to be indulgent with whatever he said which I knew would still leave both of us empty handed; for ultimately, and precisely in the deepest and most important matters, especially if he was telling the truth, he was unspeakably alone.

I returned home the next day.

---

1. Danger Man's mind is "willful and fragmented" in an earlier draft.

2. This sentence added to earlier draft.

3. "keeps a tune to the oath of patriots "

4. "impudent" added

5. "the Bill of Rights"

6. "resists"

7. "Its events are too current, its local color too feverish."

"Arriving just a few minutes before his flight, [Abbie] called me and started talking in a stream as soon as I picked up the phone: "This fucking truck, this fucking truck swerved; fucking truck." I didn't get a chance to ask him what truck. Then, just as suddenly as he'd began, his tone changed, grew quieter and conspiratorial: "Jack, don't believe anything you might hear on the radio or see in the newspapers tonight. Whatever it is, it's not true."[1]

---

[1] Hoffman, Jack and Simon, Daniel, *Run, Run, Run, The Lives of Abbie Hoffman*, A Jeremy Tarcher/Putnam Book (G.P. Putnam's Sons), New York, 1994, p. 336.

CHAPTER 10:

Mysterious Deaths

Riconosciuto could claim a dark credibility derived from the fact that colleagues in his shadowy world continued to fall. An attorney from Philadelphia, Dennis Eisman, known as the "Fatal Vision lawyer" because of his involvement in the Jeffrey McDonald case, was in touch with Casolaro and was scheduled to travel to Washington to defend Riconosciuto, planning also to meet with a woman who had evidence of threat to his client. In April, Eisman was shot and killed in his car in Philadelphia. According to one source, just prior to Eisman's death, indictments were pending against him and other attorneys for narcotics trafficking and money laundering. The indictments never appeared.

As soon as Michael Riconosciuto found out that Eisman was dead, he called Virginia McCullough. McCullough said that he was "absolutely panicky in jail." Riconosciuto told her, "They've killed my attorney," and asked her to telephone another attorney working on his case, James Guthrie, to warn him. McCullough did, and Guthrie told McCullough, "I'm out of here."[1]

Nine days after Michael Riconosciuto issued his affidavit in the Inslaw case, he was arrested. In April 1991, police arrested Riconosciuto on one count of distributing methamphetamine manufacture at Lakebay in Washington state.

Investigators for the Intelligence Committee of the House of Representatives met with Riconosciuto in Tacoma, spent six hours taking depositions from him, and asked him for proof for his statements by way of legal documents. According to one report, Riconosciuto asked for clear "Lawyer-Client Privilege" labeling on documents when he called them in from his attorney, as a precaution against search and seizure by government agencies. Nevertheless, Riconosciuto's jailers opened the privileged packages and refused to forward them. Instead, the report goes on, they contacted the NSA, which sent a team to review the material. By the end of December 1991, the agency had not commented on when the documents would be returned to Riconosciuto.[2]

Casolaro conferred with Riconosciuto regularly in late 1989, and flew to Tacoma for the trial and to act as a legal investigator for ten days.[3] Their meeting and the fruitless search for the alleged tape recording of Videnieks may have contributed to a certain disillusionment that Danny felt about "Danger Man" by the time he returned home. "That guy is nuts," he told a journalist after his Washington trip.[4] No such assessment of Riconosciuto's sanity was needed to determine that his statements were suspect. In addition to life among the ufonauts, Riconosciuto failed to produce an oft-requested passport to corroborate his claimed trips to Iran. When asked by the CNN Moneyline program to describe Peter Videnieks, whom he claimed to have met on several occasions and who threatened him on the lost tape, Riconosciuto was unable to do so.[5]

Four days after interviewing Danger Man on June 19, 1991, former Nixon campaign aide Alan Michael May died in his home in San Francisco. During the interview, Riconosciuto had talked about May's involvement in the October Surprise. The initial coroner's report attributed May's death to heart attack, but an autopsy showed the presence of polypharmaceuticals in his body.

Anson Ng, a reporter for the *Financial Times* of London, pursued Jimmy Hughes, the Wackenhut security guard central to the Alvarez murder case, to South America in an attempt to get an interview. While in Guatemala during July 1991, Ng was murdered by a single bullet to the chest. His death was ruled a suicide. The Guatemalan government was asked to retrieve Ng's floppy discs and personal papers regarding his investigation. It did so and turned them over to a US intelligence agency. In a press conference a few weeks later, Senator Alan Cranston requested that these items be returned, but they never were.[6]

More than a year earlier, on March 31, 1990, a British journalist named Jonathan Moyle was found dead, hung in a hotel room closet in Santiago, Chile. "Although Casolaro and Moyle were probing different leads, their investigations involved some of the same people," said columnist Jack Anderson.[7] Moyle, an editor at London's *Defense Helicopter World*, had been investigating the weapons trade, specifically the alleged sale of non-military US helicopters to Iraq for refitting as attack choppers. The notes Moyle left behind contained reference to a sophisticated missile guidance system that held Iraqi interest, although whether or not it used the system in its disastrous SCUD attacks during the Persian Gulf War is unknown. Instrumental in the arms-dealing Moyle had investigated was Carlos Cardoen, the same man Ari Ben-Menashe identified as the intermediary between Iraq and Earl Brian for the PROMIS software deal.[8] Initial reports called Moyle's death a suicide, but evidence, including the presence of a strong sedative in his system and possible asphyxiation, suggested otherwise.[9]

It is unclear whether or not Moyle kept contact with Danny Casolaro, although his notes include references to Carlos Cardoen and the Iraqi missile deal. Casolaro knew about Alan May and had also learned about Anson Ng's death shortly after it took place. He also remembered the January murder of Alan Standorf. Riconosciuto had introduced Casolaro to Standorf as an electronic intelligence operative of the NSA, working at the Vint Hill military installation in Virginia that gathered information from espionage satellites and other sources throughout the world. Casolaro agreed that Standorf had important information linking the Justice Department to parts of the various scandals he had researched. After Standorf's death, Danny mentioned to a friend, Bill Turner, that a key source had vanished.[10]

Did Danny feel the tentacles tightening? If so, it was not reflected in his research notes. He collected information on vicious killers and power brokers, but gave no clue that he thought they were coming after him.

Over time, Michael Riconosciuto lost three lawyers and an investigator under what could be construed as mysterious circumstances. In February 1987 Larry Guerrin, a private investigator conducting Inslaw-connected work for Riconosciuto, was killed in Mason County, Washington. After Eisman's death, in April 1993, another attorney who worked with Riconosciuto, John Crawford, died suddenly from a heart attack in Tacoma.[11] The decomposed body of a third Riconosciuto lawyer, Paul Wilcher, was found in Wilcher's Washington, DC apartment on June 23, 1993. Wilcher also had been an attorney for the pilot Gunther Russbacher, who claimed to have videotape proof and sixteen witnesses to his having flown George H. W. Bush to one of the October Surprise meetings.[12] Wilcher belonged to the American Patriot Fax Network and had recently prepared an ambitious fifty-five page fax summarizing information on circumstances leading to the fiery deaths of David Koresh and his followers in April 1993 that he sent as a challenge to Attorney General Janet Reno. The fax included details of the story of his client, Russbacher, concerning the October Surprise, and a page of information on the Inslaw case, pointing out that an executive assistant to Senator Robert Byrd, Democrat from West Virginia, was the wife of Peter Videnieks, who had threatened Riconosciuto.[13]

The mysterious death list came also to include the execution-styled slaying of Ian Spiro and his family, a wife and three daughters, in San Diego on November 1, 1992. Spiro reportedly worked for US and British intelligence agencies on operations that included the October Surprise, Iran-contra and the hostage crisis in Lebanon. Spiro spoke with Riconosciuto, for whom he was helping collect documents to present to a grand jury, only a few days before his death.[14]

Later, others would begin to develop lists of significant deaths related to the Inslaw case in much the same way many began making connections between the deaths of witnesses and others associated to the JFK assassination twenty five years earlier. In addition to the Riconosciuto lawyers, the list included Vali

Delahanty, whose knowledge of a DEA plan to set up Riconosciuto on a drug charge would have made her an important witness for Riconosciuto. She disappeared on Aug 18, 1992 but her body was not discovered until the following April, in a ravine near Lake Bay, Washington.[15] Another Riconosciuto ally, Pete Sandvigen, who was working to help Riconosciuto defend himself from the drug charges, died the following December, an ammo clip from the gun he carried mysteriously missing.[16]

Barry Kusnick, a computer engineer who had worked on PROMIS enhancements, also made the list. According to one report, Kusnick's enhancement was called Brainstorm, an artificially intelligent program that applied the prognosticating ability of PROMIS to individual thought patterns. It ostensibly allowed PROMIS to deduce from personality characteristics the potential action of the person being traced. As in the Inslaw case, Kusnick apparently had made the modifications under a government contract that the government failed to pay, attempting to drive Kusnick into bankruptcy. Kusnick had previously done communications and intelligence work for Northrop Corporation and the US military. His body had not been found, and nine months after he was reported missing family members were unable to get known business partners to acknowledge knowing him. Five boxes of his belongings were found in a lock-up facility[17]

Sherman Skolnick, long-time chairman of Chicago's Citizen's Committee to Clean Up the Courts, charged that nearly forty witnesses in the Inslaw case had been murdered and complained that a federal judge appointed to review the case failed to show concern over the safety of other witnesses. He also claimed that a Special Federal Grand Jury in Chicago planned to do an end-run around the judge and issue high-level indictments. Skolnick also reported that three of the grand jury witnesses joined with Riconosciuto to file suit against the judge for obstructing the indictments, and that the judge had an FBI agent interrogating witnesses who was himself suspected of murdering Casolaro.[18]

Most interesting of all the mysterious deaths connected to Inslaw, however, was that of 1960s political activist Abbie Hoffman. Hoffman wrote an early piece on the October Surprise for *Playboy* magazine and shortly thereafter was involved in a suspicious automobile accident. Most regarded his death on April 12, 1989 as the suicide it was reported as, caused perhaps in part due to depression he suffered from the continued pain resulting from that accident. Others, however, suspected foul play in Hoffman's death, notably David Dellinger, a fellow member of the Chicago 8. Dellinger's suspicions even led him to attempt to retrieve the coroner's report for examination, but he was stopped by a threatened court battle. "They basically would not allow that to go to court," Dellinger concluded, "but [Abbie's] son Andrew and Abbie's first wife Sheila, are convinced he was killed."[19]

---

1. McCullough interview.

2. "Com-12," p. 20.

3. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 34; "Worldwide Conspiracy, or Fantasy?" *Seattle Times*, August 29, 1991.

4. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 35; Linsalata.

5. Brown, p. 7.

6. Anderson, Jack and Van Atta, Dale, "Another Casualty in the 'Octopus Case," *Washington Post*, August 28, 1991.

7. Anderson.

8. Ben-Menashe, p. 239 passim.

9. "The Riddle of Room 1406," *The Sunday Times*.

10. Stich, *Contact*, p. 407.

11. *Ibid.*

12. Russbacher, Guenther, Interviewed by Alex Horvat and Joe Palermo, March 17, 1993.

13. Wilcher, Paul, *American Patriot Fax Network Fax*, May 21, 1993, p. 69.

14. Thomas, Kenn, "Inslaw Revisited," *Steamshovel Press* #9, Fall 1993, p. 44.

15. Stich, *Contact*, p. 407.

16. *Ibid.*

17. "Inslaw," *Leading Edge*, p. 48.

18. Skolnick, Sherman, "Obstruction of Justice Charged in Inslaw Special Grand Jury in Chicago," privately published paper, 1993.

19. "King Co-Opted; Abbie Assassinated," *Steamshovel Press* #9, Fall 1993, p. 7.

CHAPTER 11:

Robert Booth Nichols

The Hamiltons acquired another important informant and introduced him to Danny Casolaro: Robert Booth Nichols, not to be confused with John Phillip Nichols.[1] Casolaro wrote in his notes that Robert Nichols "looks like Clark Gable."[2] Nichols presented himself as a dashing, spy-like figure with connections to both the legal and illegal underworld, including the infamous Gambino crime family. He had worked at the Cabazon reservation with Riconosciuto. Riconosciuto and Nichols formed a business partnership in the 1970s to manufacture fertilizer, pesticide, and weaponry, including fuel air explosives and the G-77—an inexpensive sub-machine gun invented by Nichols—but the two had argued in 1984 and had not spoken since.[3]

Casolaro and Nichols spoke on the phone fifteen times in July, calls which lasted as long as two hours. They met at the Four Seasons Hotel in Washington, D.C. on July 10, 1991. Casolaro was so impressed with the sophistication and "insider" knowledge his new friend Nichols had that he came to consider him a mentor. At one point, Casolaro spoke to him about his money troubles and Nichols offered financial assistance—in exchange for a twenty-five percent interest in Casolaro's home and right of first refusal if he sold it.[4]

To tempt his girlfriend, Wendy Weaver, into accompanying him to his meeting with Nichols at the Four Seasons, Casolaro described Nichols as the president of the Bechtel corporation, just arrived from Kuwait. Nichols intimated at the dinner party that he was going to be named state security minister of the Caribbean island of Dominica, which would become a center for rebuilding Kuwait. Nichols repeatedly warned Casolaro that what he was researching was dangerous. Nichols warned Casolaro at least five times about the danger of associating with Riconosciuto. He warned that if Casolaro said anything that went against Nichols' former partner Riconosciuto, he would be killed. At one point during the evening, responding to a slight from another patron at the bar that

Robert Booth Nichols

Clyde's in Tyson Corner, meeting place of Danny Casolaro and Robert B. Nichols.

Weaver later described as imagined, Nichols grabed the man, slamed him against the wall and declared that he would kill him. Later that evening, Casolaro confided to Weaver that Nichols "really scared him." In his notes, Danny Casolaro characterized Nichols as "very powerful."[5]

On another night, Casolaro and a different friend met Nichols at Clyde's in Tyson's Corner. Nichols again talked about Dominica, saying he had just done a radio broadcast in his new position as minister of state security, and he also said that he was part of a planned CIA coup that was going to happen there. Casolaro's friend claimed that Nichols "had this story that they were going to turn Dominica into a CIA base, had plans for a desalination program and pulled out this design drawn by a French architect of a dome the size of Texas Stadium that was half under water. Really, the whole thing reminded me of Ernst Stavro Blofeld..." After lunch, Danny took his friend aside and showed him what he alleged was a summary of an FBI wiretap on Nichols that linked him to the Yakuza and the Gambino family. The friend was shocked. "I said, 'Danny, I'm gonna take you out back and whip your ass! You just put me in a meeting with this man and didn't tell me what the hell—why didn't you tell me before?'" Casolora explained he just wanted to see how Nichols would react.[6]

Casolora related Nichols' stories about Dominica in his Notes "Before the reins of the Octopus are turned over to several younger players, the game continues now—July, 1991—on the tiny Caribbean island nation of Dominica. Possessing the largest boiling deep water lake in the world, Dominica's geothermal potential is unmatched. It is here that the Octopus may be making its boldest and most dangerous move yet."[7]

In 1976, Nichols represented a Saudi company, Ali & Fahd, in a failed attempt to acquire Howard Hughes' Summa Corporation, after the death of the reclusive magnate. Joseph Cicippio, later taken as a hostage in Lebanon, was an employee of Ali & Fahd at the time, and stated that Nichols represented himself as an agent for the US government in the takeover bid. Cicippio said that Nichols showed him Justice Department identification, and had information which he assumed could only have been acquired through government contacts.[8]

Casolaro learned more about Nichols from Richard Stavin, formerly a special prosecutor for the Justice Department's Organized Crime Strike Force, who had some familiarity with Nichols' attachment to the mob end of the entertainment industry. On July 31, 1991 Stavin explained to Danny about Nichols' connections to the Gambinos and the Yakuza, which the FBI had investigated in 1987 as part of its probe of Mafia presence in Hollywood. Stavin also mentioned that Nichols had at one time offered to become an informant for the Justice Department, although he did not know whether anyone had taken him up on the offer. Stavin felt that passing this information on may have contributed to Danny's death.[9]

The FBI's focus in 1987 was on Mob influence in the motion picture industry. They took particular interest in Eugene Giaquinto, a member of the board of directors of Nichols' Meridian Arms, a firm that was to manufacture the G-77 gun in South Korea. At that time, Giaquinto also served as president of the home entertainment sector of MCA, which owned Universal Pictures. In his application to wiretap Giaquinto, agent Thomas G. Gates, who later supplied information to Casolaro, suggested that FBI investigative files indicated that in 1978, Nichols had been "an international money launderer for money generated through narcotics trafficking and organized crime activities." [10] The wiretaps caught Giaquinto and Nichols discussing a takeover of MCA, and revealed Giaquinto's connection to renowned mobster John Gotti. Although the investigation was derailed by members of the Reagan administration, Giaquinto left both MCA and Meridian, but not before unsuccessfully trying to secure an appointment for Nichols to head an industry anti-video piracy operation in Asia. Nichols denied any involvement with the Yakuza or the Mafia. Ron Rosenbaum wrote in *Vanity Fair* that Nichols traced "the trouble to an FBI misunderstanding of his screenplay career. He says he was introduced to a high level executive of MCA several years ago at a coffeeshop. When the MCA man encouraged him to turn some tales he'd told him into screenplays, they became friends, and briefly, business associates. Unknown to him, the MCA man was the subject of a full-court-press FBI investigation for being a key organized-crime link to the entertainment industry. And so, Gable [Nichols] says his voice was picked up by taps on the MCA man's phone. The bureau misinterpreted their conversations as containing code words for illegal activities, turned around, targeted him, and slandered him to his business associates. In fact, Gable's

Steven Seagal sporting somebody else's military-issue beret and insignia.

Steven Seagal and ex-CIA operative Robert Strickland.

company is suing an FBI man for libel and slander. He says that the wiretap summary was part of the FBI man's affidavit in the Gable slander suit."[11]

Nichols' response to Gates' affidavit linking him to John Gotti and the Gambino family through Giaquinto was to sue Gates and the US Government for libel. However, the federal district courts dismissed Nichols' suits twice. Gates, believing Nichols to be undeterred in his attempt at retribution, said in testimony before the House Judiciary Committee that informants had twice told him that Nichols had placed a contract on his life.

The other high point of Nichols' movie career came with his cameo appearance as a terrorist in the 1992 Steven Seagal movie, *Under Siege*. Perhaps not coincidentally, Seagal became embroiled in controversy when a writer, Alan Richman, claimed in *GQ* magazine that Seagal had appropriated details of the biographies of former associates Robert Strickland and Gary Goldman and passed them off as incidents in his own life. When investigator John Connolly later repeated the charges in *Spy* and made further claims that Seagal tried to set up Richman in a fake homosexual tryst and tried to have Goldman killed, Seagal sued unsuccessfully.

In 1993 Nichols sought damages against the Los Angeles Police Department over an incident that caused the revocation of his concealed weapons permit and, consequently, a cancellation of the money for the manufacture of the G-77 by Swiss financiers. According to his testimony, Nichols had been thrown to the floor, disarmed, handcuffed and carted off to a North Hollywood jail by LAPD officers responding to a disturbance complaint at a club called The Palomino.[12] Nichols said he was not involved with any disturbance but had only stopped in at the club for a couple of beers. Further testimony and legal documents reflected an impressive list of former business partners, including Howard Hughes cohort Robert Maheu and Texas oil magnate Clint Murchison.[13]

Casolaro may not have understood the possible danger of possessing the information he had learned from Richard Stavin, that Nichols may have offered himself as a government stool pigeon. Casolaro may have worried that if he let slip his knowledge of Nichols' association with the Mafia and the Yakuza during a conversation, Nichols might turn dangerous. Six days after talking to Stavin, Casolaro spoke again to his mentor. The following day Casolaro informed Stavin that Nichols had warned him off the investigation. At about the same time, Casolaro called FBI agent Thomas Gates and asked whether he should take seriously Nichols' warnings that, "If you continue this investigation, you will die." Gates later commented that Casolaro was "upbeat, not like a person contemplating suicide."[14]

---

1. In January 1993, writer John Connolly cast suspicion on the relationship between Bill Hamilton and Robert Booth Nichols: "... despite Hamilton's reservations about Nichols' character, the man who designed a program for tracking criminals and the man who has been linked by the FBI to two crime organizations communicate with surprising frequency. Last summer I visited Hamilton's office in Washington to get a copy of the phone records that would show his call to Nichols on August 9, 1991. He seemed reluctant. It took a fair amount of persuasion to convince him to turn it over—and what he gave me was a photocopy with all but that call blocked out. Shortly after leaving, I remembered that I had wanted to ask him something else and returned to his office. While I was waiting in the reception area, the phone rang. The receptionist buzzed Hamilton: 'Robert Booth Nichols, returning your call.' When I asked Hamilton about the call, he replied, 'I call Nichols all the time. It was just a coincidence that it was right after you left.'" (Connolly, John, "Dead Right," *Spy*, January 1993.)

2. "Without the ears," Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 35.

3. Corn.

4. Linsalata; Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 36.

5. Connolly, "Dead Right"; Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 36.

6. Ron Rosenbaum, "The Strange Death of Danny Casolaro," *Vanity Fair*, Vol. 54, December 1991.

7. Casolaro's Notes, pp. 1–7.

8. From Casolaro's Notes "Sworn affidavit alleges that Nichols gets word from Justice department."

9. "Unanswered Questions on Casolaro," *The Spotlight*, September 28, 1992.

10. Corn.

11. Rosenbaum, p. 96.

12. From Casolaro's notes, "A Palomino is a Pale Horse."

13. Weinstein, Henry and Feldman, Paul, "Trial Offers Murky Peek Into World of Intrigue," *Los Angeles Times*, March 21, 1993

14. "Unanswered Questions on Casolaro," *The Spotlight*, September 28, 1992.

CHAPTER 12:

A Sea Creature Surfaces

On May 8, 1991, the Inslaw case was overturned on second appeal, on the technicality that it should not have been tried in bankruptcy court. The ruling came on the day before the Justice Department would have had to release all of its software to the Hamiltons.[1] The Hamiltons asked the Supreme Court to hear the case in October.[2]

In mid-June 1991, Danny Casolaro met with Jeff Steinberg, the Lyndon Larouche aide. Steinberg, who had earlier arranged the contact between the Hamiltons and Michael Riconosciuto, arranged for Casolaro to talk to an informant who went by the odd name of CHIPS, a former Customs agent who was now assisting the Treasury Department. Steinberg believes that CHIPS turned Casolaro's investigations further in the direction of Robert Booth Nichols, toward the Gambino Mafia family and drug trafficking.

Shortly thereafter, Casolaro made phone contact with E. Howard Hunt,[3] a name that appeares on the "A" list of many conspiracy researchers. Of late, Hunt had made a career writing spy fiction, but his infamy stretched back to his role as one of the Watergate burglars and before. Hunt had lost a defamation case against accusations that he had been involved in the JFK assassination.[4] Hunt had been active in many spook projects of the Kennedy era, most notably in the failed Bay of Pigs invasion. Even as Casolaro developed a "cordial, even effusive" relationship with Hunt,[5] he kept taking notes.

In a memo, Steinberg observed that by this time, Casolaro was on the trail of Inslaw and related stories "back to a dirty CIA 'Old Boy' network" that had begun working together in the 1950s around covert operations in Albania. These men had gotten into the illegal gun and drug trade back then and had continued in that business ever since. Martin Killian, a Washington correspondent for *Der Spiegel*, also spoke to Casolaro about the conspiratorial entity Casolaro was by now calling "the Octopus," a cabal which Casolaro believed had been started by CIA superspook James Jesus Angleton. Casolaro believed that the motive for creating the Octopus had been revenge for the notorious Albanian operation which had been compromised by Soviet mole Kim Philby.[6]

According to Tony Casolaro, Danny's brother, Danny did not see the Octopus as a tightly-structured organization. "He didn't envision them as a group like the Mafia. More as a network. They would overlap when their needs coincided." The view reflected in Casolaro's notes was that "This is the Octopus whose defensive posture could reap havoc anywhere in the world. Indeed, what you will learn in this true crime narrative is a massive unraveling of modern history's most incredible puzzles."[7]

---

1. DiRienzo, p. 8; "Shadow Justice," *Unclassified*, Vol. 3, No. 3, 1991.

2. Linsalata.

3. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 35.

4. Lane, Mark, *Plausible Denial*, New York: Thunder's Mouth, 1992.

5. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 35.

6. *Ibid.*

7. Casolaro's notes.

CHAPTER 13:

The Octopus

Danny Casolaro never lived to tell the full story of the Octopus. He left us with only drafts and notes for his proposed project. Nonetheless, the story he was outlining is compelling and credible. Here are Casolaro's notes on his Octopus:

> This is the story of eight men whose real life "impossible mission" intrigues have dominated key events that span the globe for nearly a half-century. They are the men who make up *THE OCTOPUS*.
>
> They are not government officials but their tentacles can reach into any part of government in almost any country including legitimate and rogue spy networks. They are not notable industrialists but they can pull the strings of the oil and banking empires at will. They are not known criminals but they have successfully penetrated all factions of organized crime including the Mafia, the Japanese Yakuza, the secret Chinese Triads and the terrorist underground.
>
> With its tag team compartments, its exploitation of hundreds of people and formidable stealth, *THE OCTOPUS* will help to unravel the most compelling puzzles of the twentieth century. What may have begun for these few learned men as a utopian response to harsh post-war realities quickly gave way to what simple men have always known as the real enemy which is selfishness and its allied forces of fear, greed, and power. While a few of these eight men came together to insure the failure of an initiate in Albania in the fifties, almost every one of them helped to frustrate the Cuban Bay of Pigs invasion. What did the fiasco at the Bay of Pigs accomplish? President Nixon and Attorney General John Mitchell were becoming impossible as far as the Octopus was concerned. Even Kissinger was being difficult in bypassing normal circles of intelligence with Vietnamization and the China card. Since this was the mission that reaped a windfall, how did all the pieces come together for the snowballing of Watergate? What mistakes, though, were made?

A different, marginally more officious costume was worn in Chile with Salvado Allende. Since this operation provided accumulated debt for favors performed, the Octopus was now mature enough to know how to collect those debts.

What were the favors performed, and what was the due bill? It didn't take many people to design the apparatus that would insure the renewal of the lease for the Pine Gap installation near Alice Springs, Australia. After all, how could a democracy spit up a Prime Minister that could sack the security of the Western Alliance? What about tentacle operations of the Octopus in Angola, Rhodesia, Mozambique and Nigeria? Was this another case of wearing the right costume again, as in Chile. Politically correct assistance can cover the cover of the Octopus for anything—drug trafficking, throughout Asia and the Mideast, arms dealing and murder. But what happened to the money—nearly a billion dollars?

Who drove the Shah out of power? Can best friends do this to each other? What role did the Octopus play and for what reason? Who lit the fire for the war between Iran and Iraq? What part did the Octopus play? What was its purpose in the big picture? Is any picture that big?

Jimmy Carter had bruised the Octopus as badly as Nixon did with focus. Why did the Octopus come off the ocean floor for this to make sure no rescue was possible? What happened to those Sea Stallion helicopters, the most dependable helicopter in aviation history? Everyone knows that hostages equal money but why is it that no one has asked what happened to the billions of dollars in frozen assets? Since Reagan was not a favored son of the Octopus, why did it work so hard to insure his election in 1980? Even if the participation by campaign officials in holding the hostages until the election was limited to just the acquiescence of smiling gentlemen who knew better, why was the veil removed when it could have been so absolutely secret?

Exploiting foreign policy objectives with the contras in Nicaragua is one thing, but why was the creation of a Latin American equivalent to the Golden Triangle so irresistable? A huge amount of money—several billion dollars—was raised for the Afghan freedom fighters. The freedom fighters didn't get it and even the Octopus had to fight for it. Who else started to play the game in earnest? How did the Octopus stop it?

Was it just a clever hand that the Octopus played with Kuwait and Iraq? What about Kuwait's OPEC decisions which goaded Saddam Hussein into his takeover? What roles did the Octopus play? Why was the Bank of Credit and Commerce International [BCCI] suddenly a sacrificial lamb?

Before the reins of the Octopus are turned over to several younger players, the game continues now—July, 1991—on the tiny Caribbean island nation of Dominica.

Possessing the largest boiling deep water lake in the world, Dominica's geothermal potential is unmatched. It is here that the Octopus may be making its boldest and most dangerous move yet. *THE OCTOPUS* is a story about eight people who have been able to penetrate and exploit the secret empires of spy networks around the world, big oil and organized crime.

Since it spans the globe and in its compartmentalized penetration in such disparate secret societies has enabled it to control—through access—government around the [world]. This penetration by such a small group of people in such seemingly disparate and secret empires has enabled this group to develop compartmented tentacles that control governmental institutions in the US and abroad.

Indeed, the Octopus is less than a dozen people who have changed the course of history the world over. This completed project will rewrite history at the Bay of Pigs, in Allende's Chile, Watergate, Australia, Iran, Iraq, the 1980 election, the drug/gun running in Latin America, and most recently the war in Iraq. In events that span the globe nations know how to use this Octopus and acquiesce in its designs. I will show you how these eight people caused the US to turn its back on Fidel Castro after supporting him in the mountains of the Sierra Maestra.

CHAPTER 14:

Tracking The Octopus

Danny Casolaro believed the Octopus responsible for criminal conspiracies which, linked, formed a virtual history of intelligence double dealing from 1950 to the present. These events, in Casolaro's view, included the ousters of US President Richard Nixon, Australian Prime Minister Gough Whitlam, the Shah of Iran, and the murders of Chilean President Allende, and, of course, of President John F. Kennedy. Casolaro saw the Octopus' tentacles entwined throughout the creation of the Golden Triangle and Latin America drug trade, the Cuban Bay of Pigs debacle, the October Surprise, the BCCI banking scandal, and, almost as an afterthought, the theft of PROMIS software.

Casolaro found a "Secret Team," a high cabal of players operating a clandestine, parallel government, identified previously by other writers.[1] The cabal had operated beyond the control or scrutiny of the elected government, financed by drug-running from Southeast Asia and the Americas.

Other researchers tended to see the Octopus as a fog of political crimes ascribed to the alphabet soup of intelligence agencies, institutions or even the natural dialectic of the modern terrorist state and its citizenry. Casolaro's Octopus, however, was no grand, unified mega-conspiracy theory. Casolaro believed the crimes could best be identified by linking them to a small network of named individuals that made up his Octopus. He outlined their hierarchy and provided specific detail about their behind-the-scenes role in contemporary political history.

Casolaro named people both familiar and unfamiliar to other researchers. He deemed the "first level" operatives to be Richard Helms, George Pender, John Philip Nichols, and Ray Cline. The second level included Robert Chasen, E. Howard Hunt, Edwin Wilson, Thomas Clines, and Ted Shackley. Working backward from the PROMIS theft, Casolaro saw them in new relationship, a nearly organic entity that impacted on both past and then current events.

Casolaro's proposed chapter titles for *The Octopus* provide a glimpse into the trajectory of his research:

Chapter 1: 1980—The Most Dangerous Year. Casolaro's notes include sub-divisions entitled "Death of Paul Morasca, Death of Fred Alvarez," "Resupply of Contras," "Casey," "Vesco," "John Nichols," and "Transition—Mideast."

Chapter 2: Backing up: The Post War Years. 1944-1950. When they met. Kim Philby.

Chapter 3: Tag Team Compartments. 1959: Patrice Lumumba, Fidel Castro, Europe, Albania, Golden Triangle, China, Formosa. He also brackets "Moriarty, [Marshall] Riconosciuto, Fat Tony."

Chapter 4: 1966: Making Friends With the Terrorist Underground. Dealers, Drugs & Money [additional unreadable line].

Chapter 5: What Went Wrong With Nixon and the Windfall/Surprise.

Chapter 6: 1975: Australia With PM Houghton.

Chapter 7: The Asian Underground.

Chapter 8: Oil [unreadable] Controlling Countries.

Chapter 9: The Big Crime—ICN, Yakuza & Terrorists, Triads.

Chapter 10: 1980.

Chapter 11: The role of Mossad.

Chapter 12: KGB Underground.

Chapter 13: Wackenhut.

Chapter 14: Mideast—Beirut.

Chapter 15: Iran Shah, Helms.

Chapter 16: Iran & Iraq.

Even as he sketched this outline, Casolaro continued making phone calls, and connections that brought the Octopus closer to the surface for a clearer view. Whether he approached his work as a student of history or as fodder for fiction, some of his realizations were not easy for him to face. According to Virginia McCullough, "Danny would say that he couldn't believe the government would do drugs for arms. He was God, motherhood, and apple pie. I would say, 'Look Danny, let's get real, we're living in the 20th century.'"[2]

One new contact, William Turner, had been an aerospace engineer at Honeywell in Virginia until Hughes Aircraft bought his division. Turner, who lived a short distance from Casolaro, contacted him and furnished him with details of an alleged fraud by Hughes Aircraft. Turner claimed that when he reported the fraud to his seniors they began a cover-up. Turner had left Hughes in April 1991. In August, Turner and Casolaro met in Martinsburg, and Turner handed over documents which he said proved a "vast government conspiracy."[3] Casolaro met with Turner again on February 21, at the Sheraton. The two discussed Casolaro's concept of the Octopus with Casolaro making further connections between Oliver North and BCCI. In May or June they met again in Inwood, West Virginia, drinking and bar-hopping. Casolaro was effusive over his book-in-progress, and promised Turner he would personally autograph a copy for him once it was in print.[4]

McCullough at this time also noticed Casolaro's research taking on more focus and intensity. "In the middle of May he became very centered about what he wanted from me. What he wanted from me was everything I knew Riconosciuto was involved with, with the Iran-contra, with the Cabazon Indian reservation, and how that pertained to the PROMIS software."

"It began to come home to me loud and clear that there was a real danger here."[5]

---

1. Prouty, L. Fletcher, *The Secret Team*, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 1973.

2. Virginia McCullough interview.

3. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 36.

4. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 40.

5. McCullough.

CHAPTER 15:

Tentacles

The following material, labeled a "hagiography" in the original edition of this book, was assembled from Danny Casolaro's notes by researcher/writer Jim Keith.

The following chronology lists some of the events and people that Casolaro believed involved the alleged super-cabal, "the Octopus." It has been developed from Casolaro's notes but expanded upon with additional research; Casolaro did not mention many of the internal connections documented here.

OSS in China

Casolaro's Octopus may have begun earlier than he thought. During World War II the OSS chapter in China, Detachment 202, included in its memberships alleged Octopi Ray Cline (later station chief in Nationalist China between 1958 to 1962), E. Howard Hunt, and Richard Helms, as well as such future covert ops luminaries as Mitchell WerBell III (arms dealer, trainer of terrorists, and on-and-off employee of the CIA) and Major General John Singlaub. Singlaub later commanded the CIA's infamous Operation Phoenix assassination program in Vietnam, which provided yet another link to other alleged Octopus personnel. China has historically had substantial involvement in opium production and trade, although it is not known whether the Octopus took much notice of the commodity at this time. In his notes, Casolaro lists Helms, Hunt, Shackley, Pender, Clines, Nichols as being "OSS."[1]

The Albanian Operation

The history of the Octopus as delineated by Danny Casolaro begins with the OSS/British intelligence Albanian operation, which took place after World War

II. The Americans and British set upon a plan to try to dislodge a Soviet bloc country from Moscow's influence, believing that this might lead to the shattering of the Soviet bloc. Albania was chosen because of its political instability, and because of the belief that a large number of Albanian dissidents were waiting for the opportunity to revolt. According to the CIA's Frank Wisner, it was "a clinical experiment to see whether larger rollback operations [by the OSS] would be feasible elsewhere."[2]

Using bases in Malta and Libya, joint commanders James McCargar and Kim Philby (the head of MI6 division in charge of Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, liasing between British and American intelligence) supervised the landing of hundreds of agents into Albania via parachute or across the border of Greece. Almost all of these operatives were killed or captured. Kim Philby was an agent in the KGB's British "ring of five," and was run by Yuri Moldin, whose specialty was recruiting and wielding homosexual agents. Philby defected to Moscow, and later admitted that he had betrayed the Albanian mission to Soviet intelligence. E. Howard Hunt played a subordinate role in the Albanian operation, working out of Washington, D.C.[3]

Although Danny Casolaro does not state it explicitly in his notes, he apparently conceived the Octopus starting as an anti-Communist response to Philby's betrayal; a conclave of OSS/CIA veterans, dispersing and coalescing in what Casolaro called "tag team compartments" and reaping huge profits through assassination, arms sales, the control of governments, international drug trafficking, and the promotion of international fascism.[4]

Coup d'Etat in Guatemala

The Octopus soon surfaced again. E. Howard Hunt played an important role in the 1954 overthrow of Jacobo Arbenz' Communist-inclined (but not Communist) government in Guatemala, which had been democratically elected. Arbenz made the mistake of appropriating 225,000 acres of land from the United Fruit Company (later renamed United Brands), an organization alleged to have been established by the Mafia and deeply involved in international drug shipping since the early 1900s. John Foster Dulles and the State Department lined up behind United Fruit, which was not unusual since Dulles' law firm represented the company, and his brother Allen (at that time the director of the CIA) had earlier been the president of United Fruit. Allen Dulles also shepherded an extensive postwar collaboration with the Nazis, most notably with Project Paperclip in which hundreds of Nazi scientists and soldiers were brought to the United States. Allen Dulles served as the international lawyer for George Bush, and on the Warren Commission, ostensibly investigating the death of John F. Kennedy.

Guatemala was prevented from buying arms from the US or its allies, forcing Arbenz to purchase arms from the Czechs, which in turn confirmed American suspicions that Guatemala had gone Communist. The Guatemalan operation was part and parcel of the activities of the CIA in combatting revolutionary activity and industrial nationalization in the Caribbean, Mexico, and Central America, later echoed in the CIA's attempts to invade Cuba and assassinate Cuban premier Fidel Castro.[5]

The American invasion of Guatemala was assisted by the Anti-Communist League of the Caribbean (ACLC), a group started by ex-FBI, possibly CIA, Minuteman, and alleged Kennedy assassination conspirator Guy Banister in the same year as the takeover. Lee Oswald purportedly knew Banister, used his office, and was alleged by private detective Jack Martin to have been one of Banister's agents.[6] Banister and Michael Riconosciuto's father Marshall have been connected to UFO activity—hoaxed or otherwise—in the Tacoma, Washington region. (See Chapter 8.)

Significant in understanding the purpose and the reach of the Octopus is that the ACLC comprised a portion of what evolved into the World Anti-Communist League, with preparatory meetings beginning in 1958, although the group was not officially founded until 1966. Funding for the WACL was alleged to have been funnelled through alleged Octopus member Ray Cline, who had been a member of the OSS in China, and station chief for the CIA in Taiwan between 1958 and 1962. Researcher John Judge has stated that the WACL was financed by Nationalist Chinese opium money.[7]

The chairman for the WACL was at one time Major General John Singlaub, linked closely and repeatedly to alleged Octopus personnel. The WACL has over time included in its membership Nazi SS, Solidarists, mercenaries, death squad members, and other fascist elements.

Ray Cline had also been influential in furthering the purposes of the international right wing in collaboration with Chaing Ching-kuo, the son of Chiang Kai-shek. In the late 1950s they formed the Political Warfare Cadres Academy, with recruiting managed by the WACL. The Academy has been responsible for training many of the men involved in death squads, terrorism, and "unconventional warfare" throughout Latin America.[8]

Cuba

When Fidel Castro—who initially was anti-American, but not Communist—came to power in Cuba in 1959, he was rebuffed and diplomatically snubbed in his appeals for aid from the US. He nationalized the country's oil and gas resources and other industries, cutting American companies out when they had only begun to access Cuban resources. Castro also took over the lucrative Mafia-owned casinos on the island, incurring the wrath of that group. President Eisenhower subsequently approved $13 million for a covert war against Castro, whuch included sabotage missions and at least eight attempts on the Cuban leader's life by the CIA (following plans drafted by E. Howard Hunt).

A possibly significant factor in the war against Cuba was that, prior to Castro's 1959 revolution, the island had been a major center for the Mafia for heroin and cocaine processing and shipping from Marseilles. A drying-up of this important drug conduit greatly concerned the Mafia and its long-term partner, the CIA, which had used the island's casinos to launder payments to mobsters. The OSS/CIA's partnership with the Mafia had begun with Operation Underworld in 1936.[9]

CIA operations targeted against Cuba were run by Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines out of the JM/WAVE CIA office in Miami, which grew into the largest CIA station in the world, employing over 3,000 agents and operating through at least 55 dummy corporations.[10] According to a statement by E. Howard Hunt, Richard Nixon was the White House "secret action officer" in charge of the 53/12 Group of the National Security Council, which ran the Bay of Pigs fiasco.[11] The Mafia supplied intelligence reports on Cuban troops and ships and recruited men for the CIA invasion force. Mafia don Santos Trafficante, later implicated by some researchers in the JFK assassination, worked through Frank Sturgis (aka Frank Fiorini), who engaged in pre-invasion raids and was a member of the Operation 40 hit squad to assassinate Cuban leaders. Richard Whattley, a mercenary involved in this operation, stated of the Bay of Pigs operation that "Trafficante would order Sturgis to move his men and he'd do it. Our ultimate conclusion was that Trafficante was our backer. He was our money man."[12]

Other members of assassination teams included Cubans Felix Rodriguez, and Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero, and Mitchell WerBell III,[13] under the supervision of E. Howard Hunt, whose boss was station chief Theodore G. Shackley. Quintero appeared frequently in important covert operations, including as a Special Forces training advisor in Vietnam, doing jobs for the CIA's Task Force 157, and as supply officer for weapons shipments to the contras, working with Shackley, Clines, Hakim, and Secord. Also alleged to have been involved in assassination attempts on Castro is Dr. John P. Nichols, the administrator in the Cabazon/Wackenhut venture which Danny Casolaro investigated. Edwin Wilson is said to have been a "junior officer" in the attempts to assassinate Castro and his supporters.[14]

The Bay of Pigs operation, in which 1,400 CIA trained and armed anti-Castro Cubans invaded Cuba, was led by Theodore Shackley, and took place on April 15-19, 1961. The operation was a miserable rout for the anti-Castro forces, and Kennedy was blamed by many of the involved JM/Wave operatives for the defeat, for withdrawing logistical support.[15] A sense of the importance ascribed to the Bay of Pigs operation is provided by E. Howard Hunt in his autobiography, *Give Us This Day*:

> No event since the communization of China in 1949 has had such a profound effect on the United States and its allies as the defeat of the US-trained Cuban invasion brigade at the Bay of Pigs in April 1961.
>
> Out of that humiliation grew the Berlin Wall, the missile crisis, guerrilla warfare throughout Latin America and Africa, and our Dominican Republic intervention. Castro's beachhead triumph opened a bottomless Pandora's box of difficulties that affected not only the United States, but most of its allies in the free world.
>
> These bloody and subversive events would not have taken place had Castro been toppled. Instead of standing firm, our government pyramided crucially wrong decisions and allowed [Cuban unit] Brigade 2506 to be destroyed. The Kennedy administration yielded Castro all the excuse he needed to gain a tighter grip on the island of Jose Marti, then moved shamefacedly into the shadows and hoped the Cuban issue would simply melt away.

Although not specifically named as a member of the Octopus by Casolaro, there is much to suggest that George H. W. Bush was part of the management of the Bay of Pigs invasion. This evidence includes the code name of the operation, Operation Zapata, reflecting the name of Bush's oil drilling company. At the time of the Bay of Pigs invasion, Bush had oil rigs located thirty miles north of Cuba near Cay Sal, an important CIA operations base. Former members of the CIA have alleged that Bush allowed the CIA to use Zapata as a front for its operations, and that Bush also functioned in disbursing CIA monies to agents in the area.[16]

In Casolaro's notes he makes the following connections: "Zapata—1953—Narcotics Smuggling—Shadow govt."[17] There are other speculative links between Bush and Casolaro's Octopus, including the fact that the Bush family fortune was secured in large part through the rise of Hitler, through his father's Union Banking Corporation, which acted as a front for the Nazis, specifically the major German financier Fritz Thyssen. To this day, George Bush retains many connections linked to the Nazis and fascists. George Bush is also a member of the Yale Skull and Bones secret society. Founded by General George Russell in the early 1800's, Skull and Bones has long been a recruiting ground for the CIA.

General Russell was the anglophile Boston Brahmin said to have dominated the opium trade in the 1800s as successor to the Perkins opium syndicate. Skull and Bones recruited from other Boston Brahmin families—such as the Bundys, Coffins, Paynes, Sloanes, Tafts, and Whitneys—also alleged to have been involved in the opium markets, with the Bush family historically serving as operatives for these Eastern Establishment interests. The current Russell Trust organization also has been connected to Wackenhut. Another connection of George Bush to the Octopus is his acquaintance with George DeMohrenshildt. DeMohrenshildt apparently worked as an agent of the CIA, had Nazi connections, may also have been a Soviet agent, and, events suggest, may have been Lee Harvey Oswald's handler. According to one source, Bush's connection to De Mohrenshildt went back to the late 1940s. Bush's name and address were found in De Mohrenshildt's address book after the latter's death, which took place shortly before he was supposed to testify before the Warren Commission.[18]

The anonymous *Com-12* briefing refers to the Black Rose Organization, which runs a "Black World Order" using drug monies from the Golden Triangle and the Golden Crescent. According to this anonymous but intriguing report, the current chairman and co-founder of the Black Rose is alleged to be George Bush (known in underworld circles as the White Rose). Bush is alleged to have developed a heroin shipment ring while Ambassador in China, and to run cocaine from Panama through his offshore oil rigs.[19]

Although not noted in this samizdat document, Theodore Shackley (linked to drug trafficking in Southeast Asia) was the head of the CIA's Far East Division during the time that Bush was the American ambassador to China. When Bush became CIA director in 1976 he made Shackley Associate Deputy Director of Operations, the third most important position in the CIA. One anti-Castro group in Miami at the time of the Bay of Pigs was called the White Rose.

The ultimate significance of the White Rose—perhaps leading back to the real power behind international drug running—may reside in George Bush's association with Boston Anglophile interests and his claimed connection to British royalty; the white rose is the symbol of the House of York, which fought the War of the Roses against the House of Lancaster. Many researchers have noted British aristocratic and banking interests behind world drug trafficking.

An anonymous informant stated to Barbara Honegger that George Bush was elected an honorary (i.e. non-Italian) member of the Italian Masonic (and CIA and Mafia and Vatican-supported) cabal Propaganda Due ("P2") in 1976. His induction coincided with his appointment as director of the CIA. P2 is an influential secret society, hardwired into major clandestine networks, and known to have chapters around the world. The terrorism cell within P2, it was discovered by Italian police, was called "the Rose of Twenty."[20]

David Yallop, in his book *In God's Name*, states that, "On the surface P2 was and still is a fanatical insurance policy against potential Communist governments. Excluding Italy, there are still branches functioning in Argentina, Venezuela, Paraguay, Bolivia, France, Portugal, and Nicaragua. Members are even active in Switzerland and the United States. Moreover, P2 interlocks with the Mafia in Italy, Cuba, and the United States. It interlocks with a number of the military regimes of Latin America and with a variety of groups of neo-Fascists. It also interlocks very closely with the CIA. It reaches right into the heart of the Vatican. Apparently the common interest of all these elements is a hatred and fear of communism."[21] Note the parallel with the anti-Communist purpose of the Octopus, as viewed by Danny Casolaro.

Kennedy Assassination

After the Bay of Pigs invasion, John F. Kennedy promised "to splinter the CIA into a thousand pieces and scatter it to the winds."[22] He did not carry out his threat, however, beyond dismissing Allen Dulles in July 1961, and his cohort Charles Pearre Cabell in December 1961. Richard Helms, as CIA Deputy Director of Plans, remained. Richard Helms also had the dubious distinction of suggesting to Allen Dulles the creation of the CIA's infamous MK-ULTRA program in 1953.[23] Helms became the director of the CIA in 1966. Shortly thereafter, at the time of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's prosecution of Clay Shaw, former CIA agent Victor Marchetti overheard Helms during staff meetings repeatedly ask an assistant "Are we giving Shaw all the help we can?"[24] Still on board at CIA after Kennedy's "purge" was E. Howard Hunt, an Octo-spook that Casolaro met on the phone. Hunt had helped set up the Bay of Pigs, was one of the Watergate "plumbers," and was alleged by one Lee Harvey Oswald familiar to have involved him in a mind-control operation.[25] While Kennedy stated to aides that "the CIA will have to be dealt with" before travelling to Dallas, the opposite apparently came true. Persistent allegations placed Hunt and another Watergate burglar, Frank Sturgis, in Dallas on the day of the assassination. Some researchers have also alleged that Sturgis and Hunt were two of the three "hobos" on the railroad tracks behind the grassy knoll who were arrested by Dallas police.[26] Mark Lane, one of the earliest critics of the Warren Commission, documented Hunt's inability to defend himself in court against accusations of his presence in Dallas in his book, *Plausible Denial*.[27] One of Lane's key witnesses in that trial, Marita Lorenz, named E. Howard Hunt, Frank Sturgis, Orlando Bosch, Lee Harvey Oswald, the Novo Brothers, Gerry Patrick Hemming and Pedro Diaz Lanz as part of a convoy that traveled from Miami to Dallas for the JFK hit. The Novos were later held for the Letelier murders; Bosch was imprisoned for bombing a Cubana Airlines jet in October 1976, killing seventy-three people. Were these more Octopus hits?[28]

And what of the George Bush address found in the address book of CIA agent George DeMohrenschildt, a close associate of Lee Harvey Oswald's? DeMohrenschildt had been a spy for the OSS in German intelligence, and some have speculated that he also may have been Bush's CIA "handler."[29] Jeanne DeMohrenschildt alleged that her husband had been a Nazi spy,[30] and J. Edgar Hoover had written a memo concerning "Mr. George Bush of the CIA," who had been briefed on November 23, 1963, about the reaction to Kennedy's assassination by anti-Castro Cuban exiles in Miami.

Bush, Helms and Hunt held keys to answers behind the mother of all assassination conspiracy tales, as well as the strings to an Octopus puppet who may have had special knowledge regarding JFK's death: Richard Nixon. The Watergate tapes of June 23, 1972 have Nixon and H. R. Haldeman, his chief of staff, scheming to put a halt to the FBI investigating Watergate because it might expose "the Bay of Pigs thing." Later, Haldeman said that he believed that the "Bay of Pigs" phrase was code for JFK's assassination.[31]

Researcher Paul Kangas points out that the tape reveals "Nixon discussing the role of Bush's partner, Robert Mosbacher, as one of the 'Texas fundraisers for Nixon.' On the tapes Nixon keeps referring to the 'Cubans' and the 'Texans.' The 'Texans' were Bush, Mosbacher and Baker. This is another direct link between Bush and evidence linking Nixon and Bush to the Kennedy assassination... In the same discussion Nixon links 'the Cubans,' 'the Texans,' Helms, Hunt, Bernard Barker, Robert Mosbacher and 'the Bay of Pigs.' Over and over on the Watergate tapes, these names come up around the discussion of the photos from Dallas that Nixon was trying to obtain when he ordered the CIA to burglarize the Watergate."[32] Frank Sturgis told the *San Francisco Chronicle* that "the reason we burglarized the Watergate was because Nixon was interested in stopping news leaking relating to the photos of our role in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy."[33]

In 1976 it was revealed that Richard Helms had lied to the Warren Commission when he said that the CIA had not made contact with Lee Harvey Oswald (Freedom of Information Act documents showed otherwise), but George Bush used Agency pressure through a call to Associated Press to prevent the story from surfacing.[34]

The career movements of alleged Octopus member Ted Shackley also illuminate Bush's secret life: from 1952 to 1959 and 1965 to 1966 Shackley worked in Germany; in the 1962 to 1964 period he was Station Chief in Miami; Shackley became station chief in Saigon and Vientiane from 1964 to 1974 and chief of the CIA's Far East Division thereafter, while George Bush served as the Ambassador to China. After Bush's ascension to CIA director, Shackley was promoted to Associate Deputy Director of Operations, considered the agency's third most powerful job. Shackley was put in charge of Central American operations.[35]

Another nexus between Casolaro's research and the JFK assassination concerns the Banca del Lavoro, a state-owned Italian bank that he was investigating as part of the BCCI tentacle of the Octopus. According to the Torbitt Document, an unpublished report of some controversy among researchers (although there does not seem to be an indication that Casolaro had a copy), the Banca del Lavoro financed the training of an assassination team in Mexico, some of whose members wound up in Dealey Plaza on November 22, 1963.[36] The bank's branch in Atlanta came under investigation for five billion dollars in loans it made to Saddam Hussein prior to the Gulf War, the so-called Iraqgate scandal, with George Bush at its center.

Southeast Asia

The main sources of the heroin supply shipped to America since the 1930s were established through the actions of the US intelligence agencies, particularly the OSS/CIA. Beginning in the mid-'30s, through a collaboration with the Sicilian-American Mafia and the Corsican underworld, the OSS helped create "the French Connection" in Marseilles, France. The CIA, in the early 1950s, also supported the opium-growing Chinese nationalist Kuomintang in the Burmese Shan states. This was accomplished through two dummy corporations, Civil Air Transport (later named Air America) and Sea Supply Corporation, flying in weapons and cash, and flying out raw opium. Sea Supply had been founded by CIA man Paul Helliwell, who later played a prominent role in the Bay of Pigs and other CIA operations against Castro. Other airlines were partially or wholly owned by the CIA, and were considered part of "Air America." For a sense of the extent of the CIA's power, it should be noted that Air America was the largest airline in the world at the time of the Bay of Pigs.[37]

Beginning in 1954, the US began its war against Southeast Asian revolutionary movements. This meant collaboration with men like Ngo dinh Nhu, the rich drug dealer who was the brother of South Vietnam's President Ngo dinh Diem, and tribes like the Montagnards (or Hmong, whose opium the CIA's Air America regularly transported). The Montagnard tribesmen assassinated an estimated 100,000 non-combatants in Cambodia, Laos, and Thailand. Among the Montagnards in Laos could be found alleged Octopi and CIA Saigon station chief Shackley, with Thomas Clines working in support of drug lord Vang Pao and his Meo tribes, with opium being shipped to Mafia lord Santos Trafficante. The Phoenix Project, run by Shackley and Clines (with alleged participation by another supposed Octopus operative, Dr. Earl Brian, as well as Major General John Singlaub) in South Vietnam in 1974-5, was responsible for killing approximately 60,000 civilian Vietnamese, financing said to have been provided by Vang Pao drug monies. It was during this period in Vietnam that Clines and Shackley met arms dealer and rogue-CIA man Edwin Wilson, with whom they were later to become close friends. Wilson is another person alleged by Casolaro to be a member of the Octopus.[38]

Shackley is mentioned in a letter from the drug lord Khun Sa to the US government dated 28 June 1987: "During the period 1965 to 1975 CIA Chief in Laos Theodore Shackley was in the drug business." The letter also says: "Santos Trafficante acted as his buying and transporting agent while Richard Armitage handled the financial section with banks in Australia."[39]

Watergate

Danny Casolaro's investigation of the Octopus continued to note many of the same individuals appearing and re-appearing in the major conspiratorial scandals of the era. Casolaro attributed Watergate to the Octopus.

Watergate and the fall of the Mafia-funded politician Richard Nixon arguably began in April 1971, on the tenth anniversary of the Bay of Pigs debacle. E. Howard Hunt, allegedly retired from the CIA although still working for the CIA front Robert Mullen & Co., travelled to Miami, Florida to recruit agents for the White House Special Investigations Unit (the Plumbers) from Bay of Pigs veterans. Richard Helms, an alleged Octopus member and DCI of the CIA at the time, was informed of the formation of the Plumbers on the first day of its operation.

The personnel employed in the Watergate burglary were all veterans of the Bay of Pigs, but more importantly, all of them also were closely linked to the CIA, either as officials or contract agents. These were E. Howard Hunt, G. Gordon Liddy, Bernard Barker (E. Howard Hunt's lieutenant during the Bay of Pigs operation), Agency security specialist James McCord, Eugenio Martinez (who had been involved in three hundred fifty-four anti-Cuban forays, only to find himself arrested at Watergate), and Frank Sturgis. The CIA furnished psychological profiles to the team, and also provided material assistance to Hunt.[40]

On June 17, 1972, the Plumbers were caught in the Democratic National Committee's offices at the Watergate complex in Washington, D.C. Theories as to what the Plumbers were doing in the Democratic headquarters vary from planting or removing an electronic bug, to the theft of a secret file of information on a prostitution ring which implicated Democratic party figures, or, in another version, John Dean. White House aide Chuck Colson came to view the Plumbers as a team whose first purpose was to spy on Richard Nixon, owing their allegiance only to the CIA. Richard Nixon also believed, according to his autobiography, *RN: The Memoirs of Richard Nixon*, that he had been trapped: "The whole thing was so senseless and bungled that it almost looked like some kind of setup."[41]

Casolaro noted: "President Nixon and Attorney General John Mitchell were becoming impossible as far as the Octopus was concerned. Even Kissinger was being difficult in bypassing normal circles of intelligence with Vietnamization and the China card. Since this was the mission that reaped a windfall, how did all the pieces come together for the snowballing of..." [Notes end.] Casolaro undoubtedly was referring to the distrust that had developed by 1972 between Richard Helms' CIA and the Nixon White House. Helms believed that Nixon was trying to co-opt the power of the CIA, and undermine its strength with plans for a domestic intelligence agency. Apparently Casolaro believed that the Watergate debacle was a CIA (or Octopus) operation meant to destroy Nixon and his administration.

Assassination in Chile

The Octopus thrashed again in 1973 in Chile. Shackley and Clines headed up the "Track II" CIA strategy in Chile, acting in support of DCI Helms and Henry Kissinger in the assassination of democratically-elected President Salvador Allende Gossens (the hit allegedly performed by two Cubans) and eight other assassination attempts against Chilean officials. By his own admission, John P. Nichols, who later ran the Wackenhut/Cabazon enterprise, was involved in the Allende assassination plot. As Casolaro wrote in his notes, "A different, marginally more officious costume was worn in Chile. Since this operation provided accumulated debt for favors performed, the Octopus was now mature enough to know how to collect those debts. What were the favors performed, and what was the due bill?"[42]

Iran, Iraq, Libya, and the "October Surprise"

CIA presence in Iran began circa 1953 with Operation Ajax, launched to defend British oil interests in the country against nationalist interests led by Dr. Mohammad Mossadegh. With CIA assistance, the Shah retained control in the country.[43] In 1965, Henry Kissinger masterminded a secret war employing the Kurds, supporting the Shah against Iraq. Additional support to the Kurds was provided by the Israelis. After the Iraqis launched a major attack against Kurdistan, Henry Kissinger washed his hands of the matter, and suspended support. Starting in 1975, Kissinger, CIA Director William Colby, and Shackley intervened in Iran in support of governments friendly to the US. By 1980, however, the United States had switched its support to Iraq, in opposition to Iran.

In Libya, Edwin Wilson, along with friend and former CIA man Frank Terpil, worked for Qaddafi, training his air force, providing airplanes, weapons, and mercenaries, as well as a laboratory for the manufacture of assassination equipment and plastic explosives bombs that could be carried through airport metal detectors. Wilson also offered training of Qaddafi's forces in "espionage, sabotage, and general psychological warfare." During this period Wilson supplied reports on his activities to Theodore Shackley at the Agency, and federal court testimony suggests that Wilson was acting through an arrangement with the CIA. Wilson also hired Cuban Bay of Pigs veterans like Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero, whom he had met in 1967, through Thomas Clines. Wilson is said to have made $15 million from this Libyan operation, but it was hardly the only moneymaking scheme that he was involved in at the time.[44]

Casolaro wondered outloud about the actions of the Octopus: "Who drove the Shah out of power? Can best friends do this to each other? [Casolaro may have been referring to the relationship between Helms and the Shah dating from their childhood time together in a Swiss boarding school.] What role did the Octopus play and for what reasons? Who lit the fires for the war between Iran and Iraq?"[45] Casolaro asked, "What part did the Octopus play? What was its purpose in the big picture? Is any picture that big? Jimmy Carter had bruised the Octopus as badly as Nixon did with more directed focus. Why did the Octopus come off the ocean floor for this to make sure no rescue was possible? What happened to those Sea Stallion helicopters, the most dependable helicopter in aviation history? [This refers to the Carter Administration's aborted attempt at rescuing the Americans held in Iran.] Everyone knows that hostages equals money but why is it that no one has asked what happened to the billions of dollars in frozen assets?" One of the ways in which Jimmy Carter may have "bruised the Octopus," as Casolaro noted, was through the imposition of a 1979 embargo on the shipment of arms to Iran.

Certainly that bruise healed quickly. Octopus familiar Ted Shackley appeared, after his alleged retirement from the CIA in 1979, in 1984 negotiations for the shipment of arms to Iran by the Reagan administration. Shackley passed information from Iranians General Manucher Hashemi and Manucher Ghorbanifar (who had held influential positions in the SAVAK secret police under the Shah and were close to the Ayatollah Khomeini) to Oliver North and alleged P2 member Michael Ledeen in the White House. The Iranians suggested that arms shipments to "moderates" such as themselves in Iran could do much to prevent the Ayatollah from taking sides with the Soviets, and could speed the release of the American hostages. The billions of dollars of arms shipments began, using Israel, Taiwan, and South Korea as middlemen, as early as 1981, with some of the profits from the Iranian shipments being diverted to help the contra cause in Nicaragua.

Nicaragua

During the Reagan administration the holy banner of a war on drugs was used to create a war in Nicaragua against the Sandinistas, funded in part by illegal drug trafficking. Prior to the arrival of guns from the CIA in 1982, the contras were a rag-tag band, by reports engaging in more cattle rustling than fighting against the Sandinistas. After small success initially against the Sandinistas, in 1983 the CIA redoubled its aid to the contras with additional aid, air support, and through the mining of Nicaraguan ports. At the same time, contra leaders were negotiating weapons shipments through the Wackenhut/Cabazon arrangement in Indio, California.

While the CIA was engaging in its merry little war, Congress was initiating legislation to halt the funding of the contras, and by 1983 the Boland Amendment restricted above-board funding of the contras. In violation of this Congressional statute as well as international law, the CIA went ahead with covert funding and support. After a series of revelations about US involvement in Nicaragua, however, the contras found that their CIA supplies were beginning to dry up. Private donations were sought, and channelled to the contras through the NSC, with Marine Lieutenant Colonel Oliver L. North as the official contact point for the contras.

According to a report of the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence released in 1987, North worked through at least three accounts at the Geneva branch of Credit Suisse, with monies being channelled to the contras, as well as the Mossad and the Afghan rebels. Albert Hakim and General Richard Secord were signatories on the account. The same branch of Credit Suisse was used by Manucher Gorbanifar—alleged by the CIA to be a shared agent of the Mossad and the Iranian Savama intelligence agency (successor agency to SAVAK)—as well as Mossad agent Yacov Nimrodi in the purchase of US armaments for Iran.[46] Bush, Shackley, Clines, Singlaub, Hakim, Felix Rodriguez, and Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero, pop up again in various capacities providing arms to the contras. Another major participant in the contra supply operation was retired General John Singlaub, who had been spotted in alleged Octopus circles since China during World War II.[47]

Did drug running have anything to do with the secret government's war in Nicaragua? Casolaro thought so. In his notes he wrote: "Exploiting foreign policy objectives with the contras in Nicaragua is one thing but why was the creation of a Latin American equivalent to the Golden Triangle so irresistable?"[48]

Lieutenant Colonel Oliver North's contra supply operation used known drug traffickers in the transport of weapons to the contras, and those same traffickers shipped drugs bought from the contras into the United States, via military bases which included Homestead Air Force Base near Miami. Major shipments of drugs were flown out of the ranch of CIA operative John Hull, who met on several occasions with Oliver North. Jack Blum, Special Prosecutor for Senator John Kerry's Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations, said in interview, "There is no doubt in my mind that Oliver North knew about narcotics trafficking...."[49]

Blum is not the only one who linked North to drug trafficking. According to Tim Ross, a veteran BBC broadcaster in Columbia, "In late '84, early '85, North brought five Afghani military advisers to Columbia on a speaking tour, three left, two stayed. The two that stayed were chemists who introduced heroin manufacturing to Columbia. He also brought in an Israeli agronomist who helped to cultivate opium poppies."[50]

Although North has denied any involvement in drug trafficking, some entries in his diaries are difficult to explain. July 9, 1984: "... wanted aircraft to go to Bolivia to pick up paste, want aircraft to pick up 1,500 kilos." July 12, 1985: "$14 million to finance Supermarket came from drugs." The term "Supermarket" refers to a Honduran weapons depot which was used for contra re-supply.[51]

After North left the National Security Council due to his part in the Iran-contra affair, a handwritten flowchart of some of his covert network (which he labeled "Project Democracy") was discovered in his safe. Project Democracy had been authorized by Reagan's National Security Decision Directive 77, while North had been appointed by NSC director Robert McFarlane to head up the covert networks. North's flowchart lists approximately twenty "Resource Development" and "Financial Management" companies as well as gun-running operations (including Amalgamated Commercial Enterprises, Southern Air Transport, Trans World Arms, Defex-Portugal, and Udall Research Corporation) linked to the CIA's General Secord, Albert Hakim, Ted Shackley, and Thomas Clines.

One factor links the majority of these companies: funding from the National Endowment for Democracy.[52] NED includes in its management Henry Kissinger, Sally Shelton Colby (the wife of ex-CIA director William Colby), Barbara Haig (Alexander Haig's daughter), John Richardson (of the CIA, a former law partner in Allen Dulles' Nazi-linked firm, Sullivan and Cromwell), Carl Gershman (former head of Social Democrats, USA and the Young People's Socialist Alliance), and Jay Lovestone (founder of the Communist Party, USA). Links lead from Gershman and Lovestone to the Trust, the Bolshevik group led by Trotsky and Bukharin and financed by the Morgan Guaranty Trust (a company run almost entirely by Skull and Bones members), and associated with Dulles' Sullivan and Cromwell law firm. When Dulles formed the CIA, Lovestone's Socialist labor operations were merged with it, forming the American Institute for Free Labor Development. Strange bedfellows, indeed, in certain cases both literally and figuratively.[53]

Some Pentagon officials have privately (and rightly or not) stated that Kissinger (as well as Brzezinski) are KGB "moles." Brzezinski was allegedly recruited during the time he was part of a study group of New World Order Round Tabler William Yandell Elliot, which included Kissinger as a member. Kissinger is alleged to have joined a KGB homosexual spy ring which had penetrated EUCOM G-2 headquarters in Oberammergau, Germany at World War II's end. Kissinger is also closely connected to the Chatham House British intelligence think tank, the nexus of post-Round Table New World Order influence.[54]

In 1983, the NED was organized as a "private foundation," although financed by Congress to the tune of eighty million dollars. Its "private" status kept it safe from Freedom of Information requests as well as governmental audits. NED has been involved in hundreds of programs as a "private CIA," including destabilizations of President Marcos of the Philippines and the Panamanian government, support for the Nazi PAN party in Mexico, channeling of money to the contras, and support for operatives of the Medellin drug cartel. Some observers have stated that the NED's operations are more extensive and more effective than those of the CIA.[55]

The NED has been alleged to be a private intelligence network with the purpose of establishing a fascist, corporatist world state, a theme which also seems to inform the movements of Casolaro's Octopus. The model of this state can be observed in Michael Ledeen's book, *Universal Fascism*, in which he extolls a fascist state based upon the ideals of Gabriele d'Annunzio, Mussolini's predecessor. Ledeen was connected to P-2, which was in turn connected to the NSC.[56]

Reporting directly to North (as well as being a consultant in the Pentagon and State Department) was Michael Ledeen. Ledeen was responsible for obtaining Israeli Mossad spy Jonathan Pollard his job in the Department of the Navy, for establishing a line of Israeli influence into the NSC, and is known in Italy to have been a member of the Propaganda Due (P2) Masonic lodge. P2, with a membership believed to include Henry Kissinger and Alexander Haig, is the organization known to have taken over the highest levels of Italian government and responsible during the '70s and '80s for an attempted bankrupting of the Vatican, in an alliance that linked the P2, the KGB, and major networks of drug trade.

The Wall Street Journal detailed a meeting between Alexander Haig, Michael Ledeen, and high-ranking P2 member and number two man in Italian intelligence Francesco Pazienza. Pazienza is said to have been involved in shipments of US arms to Iran arranged by the Reagan administration.[57]

The direct historical antecedent of P2 was the Propaganda Uno lodge of Freemasons Giacomo Mazzini and Albert Pike. In the 19th century P1 was directly involved in the creation of Marxism, anarchism, and syndicalism; in programs sponsoring both fascism and communism; and in a plan reportedly launched at the

1815 Congress of Vienna designed to combat the spread of the democratic movement of the United States. At the Congress of Vienna it is alleged that a program to institute a "New Age" was concocted, and that Italian Fascism, German Nazism, and the Bolshevik revolution were variant attempts at international political disruption. Is this the essence of the philosophy of the men in Casolaro's Octopus?[58]

The October Surprise

The October Surprise, if factual, can be viewed as yet another stunning *coup d'etat*, like the assassination of Kennedy and the ouster of Nixon. The October Surprise is the persistent allegation that individuals high in the administration of Ronald Reagan had, with or without the president's knowledge, arranged for fifty-two American hostages held in Iran to be detained until after his election, thus stealing the thunder (and a landslide of votes) from his opponent, Jimmy Carter, derailing his reelection. Casolaro on the October Surprise (as well as the Inslaw case), excerpted from his *Behold, a Pale Horse* book proposal:

"While rumors of the hostage release delay circulated for years after the election of Ronald Reagan, it wasn't until 1988 that testimony [was] offered by two covert operatives in two different courts regarding their knowledge and participation of a hostage-release stall managed by then Reagan campaign chief William Casey. But now, two more covert operatives have emerged from that desert reservation in the journey of this story effort to confirm that previous testimony and provide richer details regarding the laundered payment by the Saudis and other particularities in order to prevent what Casey feared the most, a surprise release of the hostages before the election almost guaranteeing windfall votes for President Jimmy Carter. The alleged reward to another Reagan insider for that mission to Iran in the summer of 1980 has been almost wholly responsible for the leaks leading to this odyssey. For it was in that reward in the form of a multimillion dollar government contract that technologies were found to have been stolen by the government from another company. In that other company's recovery from bankruptcy, its CEO has been the real life star and gumshoe in this drama that continues to unfold each day."[59]

Casolaro also wrote:

"Since Reagan was not a favored son of the octopus, why did it work so hard to insure his selection in 1980? Even if the participation by campaign officials in holding the hostages until the election was limited to just the acquiescence of smiling gentlemen who knew better, why was the veil removed when it could have been so absolutely secret?"[60]

Casolaro obviously believed in stories that a deal had been struck by George Bush and other members of the Reagan administration with the Ayatollah Khomeini to detain the hostages. That arms shipments to "moderate factions" in

Iran had begun shortly after the deposing of the Shah, as early as 1980, is fact. The evidence for the "October Surprise" begins with statements of Abolhassan Bani-Sadr, the former president of Iran, who claimed after-the-fact knowledge of the event. Another source backing up the Bani-Sadr story was Ari Ben-Menashe, a member of Israeli intelligence, who corroborated Bani-Sadr and also offered insider knowledge about the Inslaw case.

Other sources varied in terms of their credibility. Additionally suggestive is that there is a twenty-one hour gap in George Bush's schedule corresponding to the time he is supposed to have been in Paris negotiating the hostage detainment, and conflicting stories from Bush and his staff about what he was doing when the alleged negotiation with the Iranians took place. In an affidavit Attorney Paul D. Wilcher sent to Attorney General Janet Reno, he too detailed the existence of a "Shadow Government," parallelling in precise terms the Casolaro Octopus, and their participation in the October Surprise: "The October Surprise treason refers to the top secret trip then-Vice Presidential candidate and former CIA Director George Bush (along with a planeful of some twenty-five to thirty other top CIA covert operatives—including a handful of prominent Republican and Democratic Senators and Congressmen) took to Paris on the weekend of October 18th and 19th, 1980.

While in Paris, Bush secretly met with representatives of the Ayatollah Khomeini, paid them bribes in the amount of $40 million, and pomised to deliver to the man additional $5 billion in arms (the shipments of these arms began flowing even before the election), in exchange for the Iranians' agreement NOT to release the fifty-two American hostages they held in Tehran until after the November 4th, 1980, US Presidential elections—in order to guarantee the humiliation and defeat of President Jimmy Carter in that election—and in order to cement the CIA's lock on the White House for the next twelve years under George Bush. The Reagan and Bush Administrations—and Congress, in separate House and Senate October Surprise investigations in 1992 —have tried to tell us that the October Surprise never happened—that Bush and his CIA cronies never made this secret trip to Paris on October 18th and 19th, and that no secret deal with the Iranians was ever struck. But that simply is not true—as the sixteen covert operatives referred to below will demonstrate in their forthcoming testimony. They will even produce a video tape to prove both the "October Surprise" treason, and George Bush's participation in it—beyond all shadow of any doubt."

Mr. Wilcher, age forty-six, was later found in his apartment dead from unknown causes.[61]

Also involved in shipments of arms to Iran was the Italian Masonic P-2 lodge, according to the sources of researcher Barbara Honegger. The grandmaster of the P-2 was Licio Gelli, who allegedly was closely linked to Theodore Shackley when the latter was stationed in Rome.[62]

Cabazon/Wackenhut

Alleged Octopus member John P. Nichols arrived at the Cabazon reservation in 1978. One former CIA man, however, who chooses to remain anonymous, said in an interview that Wackenhut had a presence on the Cabazon reservation since at least 1959, and that, "Guys have disappeared down there [at the Cabazon reservation] for a long time."

The Wackenhut/Cabazon connection includes a number of players pivotal in Casolaro's Octopus investigation. Here, in an endeavor run by one of the largest private police forces in the world, contras and criminals bargained for arms shipments, and met with CIA operatives. Here, testing of fuel-air explosives were allegedly performed, a technology said to have been used later by extremist Islamic groups against the US military in Iran. Here, the voicing of an unwanted opinion, as in the case of Fred Alvarez, might leave your life forfeit. With his investigation of the Cabazon reservation, Danny Casolaro was treading on dangerous ground, indeed.

Many of the events that took place in the final days of Danny Casolaro's life are connected to Wackenhut. Casolaro was investigating the unsolved murders of Alvarez and his friends on the Cabazon reservation—and planned to visit the reservation. Casolaro's death is alleged to have occurred shortly after he had requested an interview with John Philip Nichols about the Cabazon/Wackenhut collaboration. Casolaro's contact with two women who looked " too good to be true," may have been just that. Wackenhut has been shown to use women to compromise their targets, as in Wackenhut covert operations connected to the Alaskan pipeline. Is it possible that these women were pumping Casolaro for information, to find out just what he knew and just what leads he was following? Some of the figures with whom Casolaro was associating with were connected to Wackenhut, including Nichols and Riconosciuto. Finally, the *Com-12* briefing alleges that the Wackenhut Special Services Team and the NSA contacted the Martinsburg Police and told them that they would investigate the Casolaro death, and that the police should keep this secret.

Nugan Hand Bank

"It didn't take many people to design the apparatus that would insure the renewal of the lease for the Pine Gap installation near Alice Springs, Australia. After all, how could a democracy spit up a Prime Minister that could sack the security of the Western Alliance? What about tentacle operations of the Octopus in Angola, Rhodesia, Zimbabwe, Mozambique and Nigeria? Was this another case of wearing the right costume again, as in Chile? Politically correct assistance can cover the cover of the

Octopus for anything—drug trafficking, throughout Asia and the Mideast, arms dealing and murder. But what happened to the money—nearly a billion dollars?" [63]

The functions of the American Pine Gap installation in Australia include the receipt and transferral of information from spy satellites, the interception of phone calls from Europe, and the relaying of messages to the American nuclear submarine fleet. Gough Whitlam, the Labor Party candidate elected prime minister of Australia in 1972, was concerned about the cozy relationship between the ASIO, the Australian Security Intelligence Organization, and the CIA, and that ASIO had gone rogue. This in turn caused concern at the CIA. Ted Shackley is said to have gone "paranoid" and to have ordered a dimunition of the information made available to them, while Ray Cline mentions " a period of turbulence to do with Alice Springs."

Fearing the curtailment of their Australian operations due to an approaching renewal date for the Pine Gap base, the CIA flexed their muscles, and perhaps a couple of tentacles. On November 8, 1975, a message of protest about Prime Minister Whitlam was sent by Theodore Shackley to the head of ASIO. On May 11, 1975, the CIA and OSS-connected Governor General of Australia John Kerr removed Whitlam as the head of government, using constitutional pretext. According to CIA analyst Kevin Mulcahy, the CIA effort was headed by Milton Wonus, a friend of Nugan Hand Bank's (and possibly the CIA's) Bernie Houghton.[64]

After removing Whitlam from office, the Octopus was still not finished with Australia. At 4 A.M. on January 27, 1980, the body of banker Frank Nugan was found in his Mercedes in Lithgow, Australia. He had died from a single gunshot from the .30 caliber rifle which lay on the seat beside him. Nugan had been half owner, with partner Michael Jon Hand, in Nuhan Ltd., a group of banks founded in 1973, whose most visible subsidiary was Nugan Hand bank in Australia (and whose name is usually applied to the enterprise). Hand had been a Green Beret in Vietnam, working closely with Air America, his commanding officer at the time being William Colby.

Hand is also alleged by former associates to have been a drug-runner. The deceased Frank Nugan had been a lawyer in Australia. Others connected to Nugan Hand included the president of the bank, US Rear Admiral Earl P. "Buddy" Yates; the president of Nugan Hand Inc., Hawaii, Brigadier General Edwin F. Black; and a number of other senior CIA officials. Black had served in the OSS, been a member of the National Security Council, and had commanded all US troops in Thailand during the Vietnam War. The company also retained as a lawyer William Colby, former head of the CIA. Black had been Colby's OSS commander. Inquiries additionally showed that the majority of shareholders in Nuhand, Ltd. were connected to the CIA in some capacity.[65]

According to former CIA man Vincent Marchetti, the author of the classic *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, speaking on Australian radio in October of 1980, Nugan Hand "...doesn't seem to be a [CIA] proprietary in the full sense of the word, that is, owned and controlled by the agency, nor does it seem to be a simple front organization. It seems to be more of an independent organization with former CIA people connected with it, and they're in business to make money, but because of their close personal relationship with the agency they will do favors for the Agency.

"This would include providing cover in some instances for operators, it would include laundering of money, it would include cutouts for any sort of highly clandestine activity the Agency is involved in but does not want to be any way directly connected with. When these organizations cooperate with the agency, the Agency uses its influence, both directly within the government and indirectly through other proprietaries and through other friendly organizations within the establishment, to throw business the company's way because they want the company to flower and succeed because it provides good cover for them."[66]

Shortly after the death of Nugan, Michael Hand, Yates, and CIA-connected alleged drug-runner Bernie Houghton led a group of former Southeast Asia military operatives in several ransackings of Nugan Hand files. A roomful of documents were shredded in the process.[67]

Inquiries following the death of Nugan found that Nuhan Ltd., which had been claimed to have moved one billion dollars through its channels each year, was flat broke. The company was placed under the control of a bankruptcy court.

With prosecution of the bank pending, in June, 1980, Michael Hand and Bernie Houghton fled Australia and vanished. The only lead about the current whereabouts of Michael Hand is offered by the anonymous *Com-12* document: "Hand is currently the most wanted individual the Australian government has its sights on. He is living in the Middle East under the protection of an Islamic group by the name of the 'Grey Wolves.'"[68]

The business of Nugan Hand was laundering money, particularly money connected to illegal activities, including the sale of drugs. Neil Evans, who was the chief representative for Nugan Hand in the major Bangkok drug terminus Chiang Mai has stated that Nugan Hand was an intermediary between the CIA and Southeast Asian drug rings. Nugan Hand, however, was also engaged in activities that have very little to do with moving money. The letters of John Owen, hired as a representative of Nugan Hand in Southeast Asia, sent in the course of his daily operations to the bank, are filled with reports on troop movements and military activities in Cambodia and other areas.[69]

Nugan Hand was also involved in the financing of a number of CIA-connected operations in Africa, with Hand and Houghton dealing with friends like Major

General Richard Secord, Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero, and alleged Octopus stalwart Theodore Shackley. The *Com-12* document links another alleged member of the Octopus to Nugan Hand: "The drug-proceeds ... wound up deposited in Nugan-Hand Bank in Australia after Dr. Earl Brian carried the bank codes out of Southeast Asia using formal diplomatic immunity."[70]

Casolaro noted several Octopus/Nugan Hand forays in his papers, including the propping up of tiny minority white governments in Rhodesia (now Zimbabwe) and Angola. Millions of blacks in these countries were not allowed to vote, and their efforts to take control of their homelands were characterized by the CIA and Establishment press as Communist. Arms sales to these white minority governments were engineered by Edwin Wilson with Bernie Houghton and Michael Hand representing Nugan Hand, which provided financing.[71]

An anonymous but intriguing document is the Kiwi Gemstone, alternately known as the Opal File, provided a great deal of additional information about Nugan Hand, placing the operation within a greater international Mafia context.[72]

Egypt

In 1979 Edwin Wilson and Theodore Shackley formed EATSCO, the Egyptian American Transport and Services Corporation, which, according to some sources, obtained an exclusive and highly lucrative Pentagon contract to ship US arms to Egypt. Wilson also included in the partnership Richard Secord, Thomas Clines, Hussein K. Salem, and Erich von Marbod (at the time Deputy Director of the Defense Security Assistance Agency in the Pentagon). Secord and his partners were indicted in 1983 for $8 million in "billing abuses" to the government. Michael Ledeen, at the time a State Department advisor, stepped in, suggesting to US Attorney E. Lawrence Barcella that the overcharged funds may have been used for the funding of black operations (thus rendering them a "hands-off" proposition for prosecution). Secord retired from the Pentagon in 1983, after the EATSCO scandal, then started another company, IRANSCO, with Albert Hakim, in order to ship arms to Iran.[73]

Bombing of Pan Am 103

The anonymous *Com-12* briefing provided a CIA connection to the bombing of Pan Am Flight 103. The following excerpt describes this connection:

> One of Casolaro's many mistakes was his sudden interest, shortly before his death, in the bombing of Pan Am Flight 103 over Lockerbie, Scotland. Killed on board the flight, among many others, were Ron Laviviere, Bill Leyere and Dan O'Connor—all CIA operatives from the Beirut station. Also killed was

> Matthew Gannon, the Chief of Station, CIA, Beirut office. The *Toronto Star* did a story by John Pictton which was right in every aspect.
>
> The commander in charge of their team was a US Army intelligence officer by the name of Charles McKee, one of the individuals in charge of counter-terrorist operations in the Middle East. Part of the information that was in transit with these now-deceased individuals was material which could be used to destroy the "Enterprise." Included was the connection to the Syrian drug smuggling ring and the man by the name of Manozar Al-Kassar. Kassar was deeply involved in the drugs and arms for hostages deal with Secord, North, Poindexter, Hakim, and all the others of the Black Rose Group.
>
> McKee's operation uncovered an Aqua-Tech group (CIA deep cover operatives) which was actually the team the CIA employed to help provide cover protection, safe routing and screening procedures for the Middle East drug-running operations. Part of their duties was to cover and deflect interest from other intelligence offices from Europe and other countries, especially US agencies and, in particular, another deep cover operation working somewhere within the Office of Naval Intelligence.
>
> The ONI [Office of Naval Intelligence] Group is working currently to topple the "Enterprise" and restore the intelligence community to fall back within the guidelines of their original intent. The most pertinent of their motives is a salvage operation on the US Constitution and the prevention of an extreme right-wing, fascist wing within the US government and intelligence communities (known to many as Aquarius or the Fourth Reich [Order of the Rose]).
>
> West German intelligence and Mossad uncovered the fact that a bomb had been placed on board PanAm Flight 103 by detecting a different briefcase than the one regularly used by the drug smuggler. As mentioned, McKee's team was on board the same flight with key evidence which would be devastating to the "Enterprise." When the bomb information was relayed to the proper sources, the reporting agencies were ordered by the CIA Cover Operations Group to "Disregard."
>
> The parameters of this operation reach to the highest levels of many world governments. The Gander, Newfoundland crash is also linked, as well as the bombing of the Marine barracks in Beirut.[74]

The S & L Crisis and BCCI:

During the Reagan administration, rules regulating the practices of Savings and Loan institutions were relaxed, creating an influx of speculation—not to mention outright thievery—in a normally conservative financial zone. Vice President Bush took the helm of a Task Force on Financial Regulation in charge of this area of financial investment, and may also have been in charge of a systematic looting of the nation's Savings and Loan associations by the intelligence community and associated organized crime elements. Research into twenty-seven Savings and Loans "failures" during the 1990s evidence showed that a large percentage of these businesses had been owned by individuals with ties to the CIA, and that many of these institutions had made large (and often unsecured) loans to individuals linked to the CIA and organized crime. Profits accrued from the looting of the S&Ls were sometimes used in the financing of the contra movement. Predictably, the CIA moved to block the investigation of operatives connected to the S & L and bank failures.

One case of an S&L nosedive is instructive. Stefan Halper and Harvey D. McClean, Jr. were co-workers on the 1980 Bush campaign. Halper had also been the son-in-law of alleged Octopus member Ray Cline. McClean was connected to organized crime figure Herman K. Beebe, an associate of Mafia don Carlos Marcello. Beebe provided funding for the Palmer National Bank, which Halper and McClean founded in 1983. Palmer Bank engaged in lending to persons and organizations providing aid to the contras, funds which included money sent to Oliver North's Swiss bank accounts. Halper later set up the legal defense fund for North.

Another bank failure was Vision Banc Savings, owned by Robert I. Corson, identified as a money launderer by federal sources, and also reputed to be a CIA operative. Corson's bank was involved in a number of highly lucrative land purchases and resales in 1986. These transactions, according to the Christic Institute, were made by buyers connected to the CIA and the Mafia, using a portion of Manuel Noriega's cocaine profits. After the funds were transferred to Vision Banc, they were transferred as unsecured loans to a number of companies involved in the funding of the contras and run by Richard Secord. Secord and Theodore Shackley were both on the receiving end of funds in the collapse of several S&Ls.

The George Bush family also took advantage of the virtually unregulated state of the industry. Bush sons Jeb and Neil both made out like bandits from the collapse of S&Ls. The Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC) absorbed a $4.6 million loan that Jeb Bush and Armando Codina (the leader of the right-wing Cuban American National Foundation) had defaulted on to the Broward Federal Savings and Loan in Sunrise, Florida, despite the partners' possession of posh real estate holdings in Miami. Neil Bush and two partners in Good International, Inc. defaulted on $132 million in loans from Silverado Banking Savings and Loan, for which Bush had served on the Board of Directors from 1985 to 1988. Bush had not disclosed his connections to the firm when arranging the loan.

Neil Bush is also connected, through the receipt of an $86 million dollar loan to his company, to Robert Corson and Herman Beebe, Sr., the figures mentioned above in the collapse of S&Ls. Brother Jeb Bush is also connected to Wayne Reeder, an associate of Beebe, who defaulted on a $14 million loan from Silverado. Reeder was a partner of John Philip Nichols of alleged Octopus infamy, and was present at meetings at the Cabazon reservation attended by contra leaders—bringing full circle to the odyssey of the Octopus that Casolaro tracked.[75]

The most prominent of dominoes in the collapse of CIA-linked banks was the Pakistani-owned Bank of Credit & Commerce International, its four hundred subsidiaries shut down in sixty-two countries in 1991. BCCI was engaged in laundering money from drug profits and arms-trade, providing banking for known international terrorists, and the razing of national treasuries. BCCI was also at hand for the National Security Council when it needed a conduit for contra money or for other covert measures.

An informant stated to *Time* magazine that, "BCCI was a full-service bank. They not only financed arms deals that one government or another wanted to keep secret, they shipped the goods in their own ships, insured them with their own agency and provided manpower and security. They worked with intelligence agencies from all the Western countries and did a lot of business with East bloc countries."[76] *Time* quoted an unnamed American State Department official who said, "when you look at the Saudi support of the contras, ask yourself who the middleman was: there was no government-to-government connection between the Saudis and Nicaragua...

"It was BCCI that financed and brokered [Chinese] Silkworm missiles that went to Saudi Arabia, and those were equipped with sophisticated Israeli guidance systems. When you couldn't sue direct government transfers or national banks, BCCI was there to hot-wire the connections between Saudi Arabia, China, and Israel."[77]

Drugs were a major part of the revenues of the bank. According to a US intelligence officer quoted by Time, "If BCCI is such an embarrassment to the US that forthright investigations are not being pursued, it has a lot to do with the blind eye the US turned to the heroin trafficking in Pakistan."[78]

Among the clients of BCCI were Manuel Noriega, Ferdinand Marcos, Saddam Hussein, and the Palestinian terrorist Abu Nidal. When BCCI went belly-up, investigators estimated that $10 billion or more was missing from the bank's coffers.[79]

According to US investigators, the US Justice Department acted to interfere in probes of bank illegalities, including the blocking of a deposition by a key witness. Manhattan District Attorney Robert Morgenthau stated, "We have had no cooperation from the Justice Department since we first asked for records in March 1990. In fact they are impeding our investigation, and Justice Department representatives are asking witnesses not to cooperate with us." [80]

Researcher Sherman Skolnick discussed BCCI and the October Surprise:

"A source on the committee recently told me that the committee wanted to bring out the fact that there are large private business deals—not government to government, but private business deals—between George Bush and former Panamanian dictator General Manuel Noriega and between Bush and Iraqi dictator Saddam Hussein.

"These deals went through BCCI and through another bank which interfaces with BCCI, the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL). However, there's great pressure not to bring that out at the hearings.

"So can we have confidence in Kerry's committee? You can judge for yourself. Kerry is, along with President Bush, a member of the Skull & Bones Society at Yale University... Kerry is also chairman of the Democratic Senatorial Campaign Committee, which has received campaign contributions from BCCI. Kerry himself received a $5,000 contribution from BCCI officials."[81]

The connection of BCCI to President Bill Clinton was discussed in an interview with Tom Brown, who investigated both the Mena, Arkansas drug and arms transshipment point (See Chapter 20), as well as the "Bank of Crooks and Criminals, International." Brown mentioned Stephens Inc., stating that, "This company is one of the biggest bond sales and investment banking firms in the country. It's located right in Little Rock, Arkansas and has a disproportionate influence on the government of the state of Arkansas. Back in 1977, Stephens Inc. invited some people from BCCI to come into this country, and they set up the purchase of what has now become First American Bankshares in Washington. Now in December of 1991 the *Arkansas Democrat* had a report entitled 'Reports Link Stephens to BCCI.' The story was written by Hal Brown and identifies the same Curt Bradbury not only as a former Stephens employee, but as chairman, president and chief executive officer of Worthen National Bank. Bradbury is quoted as saying, 'First of all, I don't know anything about any BCCI ties, and neither do you.' This is in December of 1991. Remember, it was in 1977 that Stephens, Inc. invited BCCI into this country and organized the whole BCCI takeover of Clark Clifford's First American Bankshares. It just so happens Stephens Inc. owns 38 percent of Worthen National Bank. Now we go back to August of 1991. At that time there was another article in the now-defunct *Arkansas Gazette*. This article was entitled 'Little Rock on the BCCI route to power.' The article was written by Paul Barton. I quote this article: 'Curt Bradbury, then a financial analyst for Stephens Inc., and now chairman and chief executive officer of Worthen National Bank of Arkansas provided [a BCCI officer] research about Financial General, including a copy of its latest report. Financial General was the parent company of the National Bank of Georgia, the bank run by Bert Lance [longtime crony of former President Jimmy Carter].'

"That purchase of Financial General and the National Bank of Georgia is what evolved into First American Bankshares, the Clark Clifford bank in Washington. What is the Clinton connection? Worthen National Bank (headed by the aforementioned Bradbury) gave Clinton a $2.5 million line of credit for his presidential campaign."[82]

No less of an Establishment mouthpiece than *Time* magazine has talked about the connections of BCCI to an organization called "the black network," which "functions as a global intelligence operation and a Mafia-like enforcement squad. Operating primarily out of the bank's offices in Karachi, Pakistan, the 1,500-employee black network has used sophisticated spy equipment and techniques, along with bribery, extortion, kidnapping and even, by some accounts, murder." One wonders if this "black network" might not be identical to George Bush's Black Rose, and a controlling tentacle of Casolaro's Octopus.[83]

An Arab operative of the Black Network states, "I was recruited by the black network in the early 1980s. They came to me while I was in school in the US; they spoke my language, knew all my friends and gave me money. They told me they wanted me to join the organization, and described its wealth and political power, but at first they never said exactly what the organization did."[84]

Summary

What Danny Casolaro had come to see was a collusion of international crime and political power focused around a handful of men, primarily CIA operatives, who had banded together after World War II. Following the associations that Casolaro made, starting with the OSS in Albania, the trail of murder and conspiracy led from this tight net of good old boys in US intelligence to a complex weave of major international criminals and power brokers; to Nazis and fascists at least sometimes wearing the uniform of the US military, to drug trafficking networks melding seamlessly into international banking; to private armies and death squads; to secret societies such as Skull & Bones and P2; to men busily engaged in looting banking institutions and national treasuries; and to the presidents and potentates of the world. These men reaped and are still reaping staggering profit while at the same time constructing omnipresent world criminal and fascist networks—and all in the name of anti-Communism.

What Danny Casolaro planned to expose was an Octopus indeed, and certainly no figment of his imagination.

---

1. Prados, John, *Presidents' Secret Wars*, William Morrow and Company, New York, 1986, p. 155.

2. Prados, p. 46.

3. Prados, p. 51.

4. Casolaro notes; Ridgeway & Vaughan, pp. 37-38.

5. Swomley, John M., *American Empire*, Macmillan Company, New York, pp. 153-157.

6. Kangas, Paul, "The Role of Richard Nixon and George Bush in the Assassination of President

Kennedy," *The Realist* 117; Kohn, Howard, "The Secret Alliances of the CIA from World War II to Watergate," *Rolling Stone*, May 20, 1976; Russell, Dick, *The Man Who Knew Too Much*, Carrol & Graf, 1994.

7. Judge, John, "Nazis in the White House."

8. Anderson, Scott, and Anderson, Jon Lee. *Inside the League*. Dodd, Mead & Company, New York 1986. pp. 55-56, 58.

9. Kohn.

10. Swomley, p. 168-177; Kimery, Anthony, L. "In the Company of Friends," *Covert Action Information Bulletin* #41.

11. Kohn.

12. *Ibid.*

13. Kwitny, p. 277.

14. Prados, p. 366.

15. Kohn; O'Toole, G.J.A. *The Encyclopedia of American Intelligence and Espionage*. Facts On File, New York, 1988, p. 49.

16. Kimery.

17. Casolaro notes; "Last Days," Ridgeway & Vaughan, p. 37.

18. Russell, Dick, *The Man Who Knew Too Much*, Carrol & Graf, 1994, p. 272.

19. Com-12.

20. Honnegger, Barbara, *October Surprise*, New York: Tudor Publishing Company,, 1989. pp. 240-242.

21. David Yallop, *In God's Name* .

22. Summers, Anthony, *Conspiracy*, New York: Paragon House, 1989, p. 226; Hurt, Henry, Reasonable Doubt, New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1985, p. 283.

23. Russell, p. 381.

24. "Secret Alliances of the CIA," *Matrix III*, p. 659.

25. See Chapter 12: Interview with Kerry Thornley, *Steamshovel Press* #5, Summer 1992, p. 17.

26. The charges were first made in the 1975 book *Coup D'Etat In America* by Alan J. Weberman and Michael Canfield (The Third Press, 1975); and were offered again as recently as Robert Groden's excellent photo study of the assassination, *The Killing Of A President*, New York: Viking Studio Books, 1993.

27. Lane, Mark, *Plausible Denial*, New York: Thunder's Mouth, 1991.

28. "JFK's Killers Apprehended," *Yipster Times*.

29. Kimery, Anthony L., "In The Company of Friends," *Covert Action* #41; "Secret Alliance," *Matrix III*.

30. Brussell, Mae, "Nazi Connection to JFK Assassination."

31. Haldeman, H. R., *The Ends of Power*, with Joseph DiMona, New York: Times Books, 1978, p. 39. In later years, Haldeman reached the disingenuous conclusion that Nixon was referring to the CIA cover-up of Fidel Castro's involvement in the JFK assassination. As new files on the assassination are released, the CIA continues to hint at this as an explanation for its obvious moves at cover-up. The heroic motivation for protecting Castro, according to this scenario, was to avoid a nuclear confrontation with his sponsors in his Soviet Union. In *Ends of Power*, however, the information is being used to blackmail Helms—had the agency indeed acted so heroically to save the world from nuclear conflagration, blackmail would not have been much of a prospect.

32. Kangas.

33. *San Francisco Chronicle*, May 7, 1977.

34. *Matrix III*.

35. Kimery.

36. Torbitt, William, *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal*, 1970.

37. Kohn.

38. "Behind the Iran/contra Affair," Christic Institute pamphlet.

39. Bleifuss, Joel, "Scandal Gates," *In These Times*, Sept. 18-24, 1991.

40. Kohn; Prados, pp. 324-325.

41. Kohn.

42. Casolaro notes.

43. Prados, pp. 94-97.

44. Kwitny, p. 102-103

45. Casolaro notes.

46. Brewda, Joseph. "Senate Report Attacks 'Parallel Government,'" *Executive Intelligence Review*, Feb 13, 1987.

47. Prados, p. 382; Kimery; "Behind the Iran/contra Affair," Christic Institute pamphlet.

48. Casolaro notes.

49. *Shadow*, Feb/May, 1995, pg. 21.

50. *Ibid.*

51. *Ibid.*

52. Zoakos, Criton. "Tower Commission Covers up for 'Project Democracy,'" *Executive Intelligence Review*, March 13, 1987.

53. *Ibid.*

54. Thompson, Scott. "Project Democracy: 'Glasnost' Submarine in US Intelligence," *Executive Intelligence Review*, Mar 13, 1987.

55. *Ibid.*

56. Benton, Nicholas F. "'Parallel Government' Exposed by EIR Report," *Executive Intelligence Review*, April 17, 1987.

57. Honegger, p. 124; Servadio, Leonardo, "Ledeen's Spanish Connection," *Executive Intelligence Review*, March 20, 1987.

58. *Ibid.*

59. Casolaro notes.

60. Casolaro notes.

61. Wilcher, Paul, American Patriot Fax Network Fax, May 21, 1993.

62. Honegger, p. 238.

63. Casolaro notes.

64. Kwitny.

65. *Ibid.*

66. *Ibid.*

67. *Ibid.*

68. Com-12.

69. Kwitny.

70. *Ibid.*

71. *Ibid.*

72. Keith, Jim, *The Gemstone File*, IllumiNet Press, Atlanta, Georgia, 1992.

73. Honegger, p. 81-82.

74. Com-12.

75. Calhoun, Jack. "The Family That Preys Together," *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Summer 1992.

76. Beatty, Jonathan and Gwynne, S.C., "The Dirtiest Bank of All," *Time*, July 29, 1991. 77-80.

77. *Ibid.*

78. *Ibid.*

79. *Ibid.*

80. *Ibid.*

81. Skolnick, Sherman, "Bush-Saddam-BCCI Oil Kickback Scandal Can't Be Buried," *Spotlight*, August 26, 1991.

82. *Spotlight*, Nov 23, 1992.

83. Beatty.

84. Beatty.

"In the middle of the journey of our life, I found myself in a dark wood, having lost the straight path."

—quote from Dante's *Inferno* in Danny Casolaro's notebook[1]

---

[1] Rosenbaum, Ron, "The Strange Death of Danny Casolaro," *Vanity Fair*, Vol. 54, December 1991.

CHAPTER 16:

Bringing Back the Head of the Octopus

Danny Casolaro was warned from all sides to back off his investigation. Bill Hamilton noted that a number of Casolaro's contacts involved in US intelligence warned him that some of the leads he was following could be fatal.[1] Hamilton also claimed that, "Danny was planning to go to a particular facility in the Washington, DC area, owned by the United States government, a facility with connections to one or more of the people who run 'the Octopus.' I think you can assume it's a covert intelligence facility, from the way that it's presented. And just going to this facility, I was warned, could get him killed. The other thing that he was doing was making inquiries, over the telephone, to the Syndicate in Los Angeles. And those inquiries had rattled the cages of some people out there. And there was some concern that they might respond to the rattling by killing Danny. The claim that I have heard from some sources is that someone with mob responsibilities (I guess you'd call it)—some person in the mob—is a member of the leadership of 'the Octopus' and it's someone from the Los Angeles mob. And Danny was on to it." The whereabouts of this security installation was communicated to Danny Casolaro by Robert Nichols.[2] Casolaro had also received threats from a man associated with the matters he was investigating among the Cabazons. "Now that you know this stuff you will have to die," he quoted to a friend as one threat against his life that he linked to his investigations of Indian reservations.[3]

As Robert Booth Nichols passed warnings to Casolaro about Michael Riconosciuto, Riconosciuto was warning him about Nichols. Riconosciuto said that he mentioned to Nichols an attempt by the Cali cocaine cartel to stop the extradition of an alleged Columbian drug-runner named Gilberto Rodriquez Orejuela and Nichols, "went ballistic." Riconosciuto later implied that Casolaro may have died for the sake of this information, "But by the time I heard about it, there was nothing I could do, you know, except to warn Danny. And I called from that day on—it was on a later Monday—Tuesday, Wednesday, all the way through the weekend when they found Danny. Every day I was calling the Hamiltons, asking if anybody had heard from Danny. And I was frantic."[4]

Toward the end, coincidences began to enshroud Casolaro. A woman he picked up at a party surprised him with the depth of her knowledge about his research and the claim that she knew someone connected to the Octopus. He ran into a friend of Peter Videnieks, the Justice Department official Riconosciuto accused of threatening him, at a restaurant. The man claimed to have served in Special Forces and had previously worked for a company connected to Inslaw. He had been so forthcoming with information that he alarmed Casolaro's companions. Casolaro experienced "queer coincidences that would feed anyone's paranoia."[5] The Hamiltons believed that in the last days of his life Danny Casolaro was being tailed by a man named Joseph Cuellar, an Army special services officer and friend of Peter Videnieks.[6]

On Sunday, August 4, Casolaro attended a pool party at real estate agent and close friend Danielle Stalling. Stalling had attempted to subdivide Casolaro's property for sale to provide him with badly needed funds. Stalling noticed Casolaro's concern over threats to his life. He convinced his brother John, who had been staying with him, to move to other quarters.[7] On Monday, August 5, Casolaro's housekeeper, Olga, came by his home to find Casolaro conferring with a man in the kitchen. Olga described the man as heavy and possibly East Indian.[8] That same day, Casolaro telephoned Bill McCoy, a retired Army CID officer living in Fairfax. They discussed the Octopus and Casolaro claimed that *Time* has given him the go-ahead for an article about it. He also told McCoy that Time-Warner had agreed to finance his work. Both claims were later denied by the Time-Warner group. Casolaro also described to McCoy a round-the-world excursion in which he planned to investigate the Octopus, financed by the advance money. Casolaro wanted to visit thirteen countries in two months, finishing the trip off with a visit to arms merchant Edwin Wilson at an Illinois prison. Casolaro noted in his papers: "When the Advance Comes, ROAST PIG—SUMMER PARTY." He feels that he has his quarry in his literary sights and saw the main dish as an ironic statement.[9]

Tony Casolaro saw his brother on Monday, August 5, and thought he looked tired. Danny said he'd been getting threatening calls in the middle of the night, ruining his sleep, adding that the calls had been going on for about three months.[10] A close friend, Ben Mason, appeared at Casolaro's house around 3:30 PM, and although Mason was anxious to go to a restaurant to eat, Casolaro retrieved five pages of material from a box and showed it to Mason. The first page had information on contra arms transfers, allegedly involving Adman Khashoggi. Two more pages were photocopies of BCCI checks for one million and four million dollars, drawn on Adman Khashoggi and Manucher Ghorbanifar accounts.

These checks had been known to researchers since 1987 or earlier. Another page contained a passport photo of Hassan Ali Ibrahim Ali, said to be the manager of Sitico, allegedly a front for Iraqi arms deals. From the way Casolaro spoke to Mason, it seemed that he had met Ibrahim. Doug Vaughan's research determined that the pages had come from Bob Bickel, who had gotten them from Richard Brenneke, another figure prominent in Casolaro's research, someone who had provided testimony about the October Surprise. Casolaro had Mason look at an outline for the *Octopus* book, and mentioned that he was discouraged about his agent's inability to sell the book. He said that he dreaded the idea of obtaining a new agent.[11] In contrast to what he said to McCoy, he had received his third rejection, this one from Little, Brown and Company. Casolaro knew that there was a $178,000 balloon payment due on his home Mortgage. He had taken at least two loans.[12]

Did Casolaro have a reasonable expectation that he would sell the book and receive the elusive advance? Some critics, notably David Corn in the *Nation,* commented on the "overly dramatic, purplish prose" evidenced by Casolaro's notes (James Kilpatrick said associates had considered his style "florid"), and his other works were virtually self-published. In his notes and drafts, however, the published fiction shows professionally spare work, suggesting that Casolaro began with rough, almost stream-of-consciousness drafts that he subsequently polished into something tighter. His finished prose was certainly not worse than much that is published by mainstream book publishers. While he knew that conspiratorial fiction a la Robert Ludlum could be lucrative for publishers, that Casolaro planned to fictionalize his view of the Octopus was at odds with his eagerness to prove the truth of the sea-beast's existence. Perhaps he had plans beyond the single manuscript.

Danny Casolaro's investigations were never less than far-reaching. Harry V. Martin, reporting later in the *Napa Sentinel,* listed some of the subjects Casolaro was gathering information on during this period: Dominic and Bob Bolsano; Gemini Industries; the Papago Indian tribe; the Menominee Indian tribe; gold and platinum smuggling from Southeast Asia, via Mexico, through the Papago reservation in New Mexico, and gold smuggling from South Vietnam; the Cabazon Indian tribe, the murders and political intrigue connected to it, as well as the attendant issues regarding sovereign tribal land and the weapons/gun traffic; the Primerit Bank of Nevada; BCCI and other related institutions; Dr. Earl Brian; Peter Videnieks; Community Banking of Southern California; Home Savings of Seattle; Theodore Strand; Robert Booth Nichols; Department of Commerce EDA funds; the Wackenhut Corporation; former Bank of America director Bill Jenson; the death of journalist Don Bolles; a corridor between Mexico and New Mexico which the Drug Enforcement Agency refused to patrol; an IBM-Tel Aviv connection linking the PROMIS software to Israeli intelligence. Casolaro had also developed arcane avenues of research into Nevada's mysterious Area 51, the human genome project,[13] and even, his notes reflected (perhaps as background on Michael Riconosciuto), psychedelic history, specifically Ken Kesey and Billy Hitchcock, who helped fund Timothy Leary's Millbrook commune.

These topics have preoccupied the computer nets and writings of those interested in conspiracy theories before and since Casolaro became their cyber-folk hero. They certainly could have been fodder for a writing career. The volume of the accumulation alone suggested that Casolaro had plans for the future with or without the magical advance. In fact, he had cast his original proposal as a series of articles and a book. Casolaro did have a mild form of multiple sclerosis, an often debilitating disease fatal to a small percentage of its sufferers. It may have caused him moments of disorientation, but he did not feel strongly enough about it to have it treated and he did not discuss it with people close to him. In fact, most did not know about it until after Casolaro's autopsy. The one talk he did have about MS, with friend and nursing teacher Ann Marie Winfield, ended with an assurance from her that it probably was not serious and her observance that Casolaro did not seem concerned or suicidal over it.[14]

If he was suicidal, his behavior contradicted it. He visited the office of his insurance agent and made a payment on his house insurance.[15] According to one report, "A review of his financial records indicated that he had made a July mortgage payment of about $2000, and still had $2,700 in his bank account. [16]

On Tuesday, August 6, Casolaro finished what he was working on, having working steadily at the typewriter since the previous day. His housekeeper Olga assisted him in packing a black leather bag, and watched him pack papers into a briefcase. When she lifted the briefcase, she found it heavy. Casolaro told her, "I have all my papers...Wish me luck. I'll see you in a couple of days." He hugged Olga and she crossed her fingers for good luck.

Suicide? "Not in a million years!" his cousin and sometimes drinking partner Jim Gualteri would later insist, "Danny wasn't a coward. He wasn't afraid. He would have never done that. Danny had a regular girlfriend. He was a good person. He was a sweetheart who liked to laugh a lot. Danny was a pretty happy-go-lucky guy. He was very happy with his life. I would call Danny very inquisitive. Writing was a great passion in his life. He was writing a book that would blow everybody's mind away in terms of revelations about the government and all the sinister things that were going on."[17]

Before leaving the house, Casolaro received a call from Ben Mason. "Danny was upbeat," Mason said. "He was enthusiastic about his source in West Virginia."[18] Mason had called to discuss Casolaro's financial situation—a topic

Casolaro had also discussed with another friend, Art Weinfield. Both Mason and Weinfield had concurred with Casolaro on the importance of getting that advance, and Casolaro told Mason that if it were not forthcoming he would have had to borrow from his family, as he had done many times in the past.[19] Jim Gualteri affirmed this last point: "Knowing how close the family was, they would have never left Danny in the lurch for money. Very close-knit family."[20]

Shortly before his trip to Martinsburg, Casolaro called Virginia McCullough. They had often discussed the idea that members of the government might have been engaging in drug running in order to fund guns. Casolaro told McCullough, "You know, Virginia, I'm becoming a believer." McCullough said that Casolaro sounded "distressed, but distressed ... because he had to face the truth." At the same time, McCullough recalled, "he sounded very upbeat. When he came back he would have Justice right where he wanted them in the Inslaw matter."[21]

Casolaro had also called Albro Lundy Jr. of Beverly Hills approximately a week before his death. Lundy recounted that Casolaro related that he was close to finding out who was in control of the Octopus, and made a new connection: to the issue of missing Vietnam POWs and MIAs.[22]

One of the reasons Casolaro went to Martinsburg was to interview for a second time one or more members of the staff of Senator Robert Byrd. The interview had been planned for Friday night, August 9, 1991. Casolaro had mentioned to the Hamiltons that one chapter of the *Octopus* book would be about Senator Byrd. He believed the secrets that would crack the Inslaw case resided with members of Byrd's staff. He also told Bill Turner that he was going to meet with two of Byrd's staff, one of whom was related to Mrs. Peter Videnieks. Reporter Sarah McClendon said that Casolaro had spoken with Mr. and Mrs. Peter Videnieks. Mrs. Videnieks is Byrd's chief of staff in his Washington office, and had two relatives working on Byrd's staff.[23] Bill Hamilton also claimed that the Martinsburg stay was supposed to involve a meeting with Videnieks and Earl Brian.[24] "He had been researching this thing for a long time and was very excited about the information he was finally getting," said Ben Mason. "He was in good spirits and very excited about the source he was going to see in West Virginia. There is no way in the world that he would have killed himself."[25] "He had been digging into stuff for months and getting no where," Casolaro's brother Tony said in a telephone interview. "Then, suddenly, he said he had this big breakthrough, some source he had." Danny had also told his brother that if an "accident" befell him, not to believe it. According to Bill McCoy, Casolaro made one more call on August 5, to Bob Bickel, a Texas oil engineer and former Customs Bureau informant, and told him that he was going to bring back the head of the Octopus.

Then Danny departed for Martinsburg.[26]

---

1. Interview with Bill Hamilton by Paul DeRienzo, WBAI-FM Radio, September 20, 1991.

2. Hamilton interview; Corn, p. 514.

3. *Contact*, May 10, 1994, p. 19.

4. Rosenbaum, p. 98.

5. Corn, p. 515.

6. The Hotline, March 11, 1993; Sarah McClendon's Washington Report, January 6, 1994.

7. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 36-37.

8. *Ibid.*

9. *Ibid.*

10. *Ibid.*

11. Connolly, "Dead Right."

12. "Unanswered Questions on Casolaro," *Spotlight*, September 28, 1992.

13. A note from Arthur Pallotta to Casolaro attached to an unidentified article in Casolaro's newsclippings file on the human genome project and its first director, James Watson, read: "Danny—Cannot think of one project so massive and comparable to the 'Man In The Moon.'" The $3 billion Human Genome Organization (HUGO) worked to decode the human genetic structure. Its director, James Watson, co-discoverer with Francis Crick of DNA, resigned over conflict of interest questions regarding his stock ownership in companies like Eli Lilly, Angen, Inc., and Ongene Science, Inc., charges that Watson bitterly denied. Moral and ethical issues of genetic testing and genetic degradation haunt genome research, but its potential to cure disease is enormous—as is the potential for profit for medical treatments resulting from it. Casolaro's clippings collection included stories on the European Economic Community's delay of the start of its own human genome project for the sake of the ethics issues. It also included an article on research at Howard Hughes Medical Institute that gave symptoms of arthritis to a rat through the insertion on a human gene, and the isolation of cancer and gender identification genes. The Human Genome Project also discovered genes for cystic fibrosis and fragile X syndrome, responsible for many forms of mental retardation. Casolaro's interest along these lines may have coincided with an interest in Creutzfeldt-Jakob, or Mad Cow, Disease and other bacterial research work done by subcontractors to Wackenhut like the Stormont Laboratories of Woodbine, California.

In October 1992, HUGO issued a report recommending the collection of genetic material from 722 "Isolates of Historic Interest" (IHIs), or indegenous ethnic people whose numbers are diminishing and leave sample DNA of each community with its regional institution or a national government. Another purpose was to locate and secure patents on unique genes that could be used to fight disease. "Access to an IHI's complete genetic make-up means it's theoretically possible to devise cheap and targeted biological weapons trained solely on that community," reported the northern California independent newspaper *Community Endeavor* (6/15/93), "Human rights violations against indigenous people, by their own governments and/or governments within their regions, is a major cause of their physical extinction." This and similar issues may have attracted Casolaro's interest to the Human Genome Project, but he may also have been more interested in possible treatment for his own undiagnosed case of multiple sclerosis.

14. Connolly, "Dead Right"; Ron Rosenbaum noted in *Vanity Fair* that "... Not long before his death Danny had approached a nurse he knew and questioned her closely about the symptoms of multiple sclerosis and brain diseases. This was particularly pertinent to the murder-or-suicide question, because an autopsy examination of Danny's brain revealed possible symptoms of M.S. Initially, his friends and family had dismissed this as irrelevant—it couldn't be a motive for suicide, because Danny had never complained of symptoms, or, to their knowledge known of the disease. Then I mentioned to Ann the cryptic notes I'd found in Danny's files on germ warfare, on slow-acting brain viruses like Mad Cow Disease, about targeting people with them by slipping them into meat pies ... maybe he thought he'd been targeted."

15. Ridgeway and Vaughn, p. 37.

16. "Inslaw Prober Had Financial Worries," *Washington Post*, 8/17/91.

17. Interview with Jim Gualteri by Kenn Thomas, January 20, 1994.

18-19. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 37.

20. Gualteri interview.

21. Virginia McCullough interview.

22. A posting on the alt.conspiracy newsgroup from March 11, 1992 included the story of Albro Lundry III, who testified before a congressional committee on Vietnam POWs and MIAs that his father, an MIA airman, was pictured in photographs that the committee sought to authenticate. Lundry claimed to have received a call from Casolaro in August, a week prior to his death, in which Casolaro claimed to be "only one or two steps away from uncovering the men in charge." According to this account, Casolaro had said that "BCCI, Inslaw, Iran-contra, and the cover-up of POW-MIA was all related."

23. *The Hotline*, March 11, 1993.

24. Hamilton interview.

25. "Area Writer Investigating," *Washington Post*, August 13, 1991.

26. Connolly, John, "Dead Right"; Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days."

CHAPTER 17:

Final Hours

The last hours or Danny Casolaro's life were set in the little town of Martinsburg, West Virginia. In Martinsburg, witnesses saw Casolaro sitting in his car behind the IRS building, apparently waiting for a contact. Michael Riconosciuto later told NBC's *Unsolved Mysteries* series that "Danny had a source there inside the IRS' computer data center that was giving him hard copy printouts of IRS information on certain specific targets that Danny was after."[1]

Shortly before noon, on Thursday, August 8, Casolaro checked into room 517 of the Sheraton Hotel in Martinsburg. A few minutes later he went to the Stone Crab Inn, a restaurant located near an exit north on Interstate 81. He drank a bottle of wine during his nearly three hours there. Around 3 PM, Casolaro left for a Pizza Hut located within a block of the Sheraton. He ordered a pitcher of beer, but after being told by the waitress she could not serve him alcohol without food, he also ordered pizza.[2] Casolaro flirted with her, saying he was member of the Edgar Allen Poe Society, and quoting from the poem epigraph to Fitzgerald's *The Great Gatsby*. This was not out of character for Casoloro. Wendy Weaver, an old girlfriend, remembered when Casolaro once greeted her at a restaurant with roses, in a tuxedo, and wearing a tin hat he had painted gold.[3]

He sat alone for about half an hour, then left. Around 5 PM, Casolaro went into the lounge at the Sheraton, Heatherfield's, with a man described by a waitress as "maybe Arab or Iranian." The man complained about slow service to the waitress, but Danny apologized for him, saying he had had a hard day. They drink about four beers apiece, and then left the cocktail lounge.

Casolaro returned to the lounge for a bucket of ice about 5:30 PM. On the way back to his room, Casolaro ran into Mike Looney, the hotel guest who was staying next door to him. Looney noticed the ice bucket Casolaro was carrying and commented, "It's a hell of a note when you have to walk all the way to Virginia to get a bucket of ice." Looney encountered Casolaro again around 8 PM

Sheraton Inn.

in the bar. Casolaro was talking with two blonde women in tights. After the women left, Looney commented to Casolaro, "It looked too good to be true." Danny had been drinking imported bottled beer, but switched to less expensive glasses of draft beer during happy hour. He and Looney struck up a conversation about the Octopus research, and Casolaro told him he was going to meet a contact—an Arab, Looney thought he remembered—whose information would crack the case.

The appointed time came, but no contact appeared. Casolaro left, possibly to make a phone call or to relieve himself. When he returned, he told Looney that the source was only going to furnish some travel documents, and so he didn't mind getting drunk.

Casolaro and Looney remained in the bar until last call, around 11:30 PM. Looney later recalled, "He was excited about what he was doing. He thought he was onto something big. He was convinced that there was a conspiracy. I was taking a kind of devil's advocate position."[4]

Casolaro's next known movement was 2 PM, Friday, August 9, when he met with informant Bill Turner in Turner's car in the lot of the Sheraton (to avoid what Casolaro assumed was his bugged room). Turner said, "[Danny] came bouncing up with that famous old smile of his and opened the car door and got in..."[5] Turner said Casolaro was carrying a cardboard accordion file, and that he gave Casolaro some papers regarding mismanagement at Hughes and the Pentagon. Turner also told Casolaro about problems he was having with the Veteran's

Inside The Stone Crab Inn.

Administration over charges that he had received improper benefits. The meeting lasted approximately forty-five minutes. Turner described Casoloro as enthusiastic, saying that Casolaro was excited about wrapping things up over the weekend, and that Casolaro told Turner he'd be back in touch. Casolaro's last words to Turner were, "Bill old buddy, got to watch your p's and q's and look over your shoulder."[6]

Casolaro returned to the Stone Crab Inn Friday at about 2:30 PM, where he had a shrimp cocktail and began drinking bottles of Bud Lite. He paid with a credit card at 5:12 PM and told the bartender that he had "a rough night." The bartender thought Danny looked lonely and introspective. The bartender remembered him as "a man with something to say. He was just like this, 'Take a minute and talk to me.' He told me to keep smiling."

After leaving the Stone Crab Inn sometime before 6 PM, Casolaro made a pay phone call on Interstate 81 and a collect call to his mother's home. He spoke with his niece and said he'd be late and might not make it all to the family dinner. This was hardly unusual. When his brother Tony recalled the incident, he noted that "When the phone rang, we knew it would be Danny. It was like him to show up late or not at all."[7]

Casolaro's whereabouts from that point are unknown until around 10 PM, when he entered a convenience store located near the Sheraton and waited while the clerk brewed fresh coffee. The last time any one saw Casolaro alive, he was walking back to the Sheraton with his coffee.[8]

View from the fifth floor of the former Sheraton Inn.

While Casolaro had been in Martinsburg, some of his friends become concerned about not hearing from him. Bill Hamilton called Robert Booth Nichols in Los Angeles on Friday, August 9, worried about not having heard from Casolaro and asked if Nichols had. According to Hamilton, Nichols said: "Yes, he called late Monday night. Danny sounded like the cat who had swallowed the canary. He was euphoric. I have probably had fifty hours of telephone conversations with him in the last year; he always plays chess with me on the phone. Danny told me he had just come back from meeting with a source, and he now knew everything about Inslaw and PROMIS, and the Hamiltons were going to be very excited." Nichols also informed Hamilton that he, Nichols, was travelling to Europe that same evening.[9] Ann Klenk, a CNBC producer who sometimes had dinner with Danny,[10] worried when he made no inquiries to her about a program she had just finished that she knew would intrigue him. She went by his house, and, finding it empty, scribbled a note to him: "Danny—where the hell are you?"[11] Bill Hamilton called the house as well and received no answer.[12]

Casolaro's housekeeper, Olga, received four or five strange phone calls that day. At 9 AM a man called and said, "I will cut his body and throw it to the sharks." Approximately thirty minutes later, a man who Olga believed was different from the first caller said, "Drop dead," and then hung up. When Olga answered a third call, there was no voice, only music playing in the background. A fourth call again had music playing. At 10 PM there was another call. This time, the other end was completely silent.[13]

The *Village Voice*'s national affairs editor, Dan Bischoff, took a call from an anonymous man who said the paper should "look into the disappearance of a reporter investigating the October Surprise in West Virginia." This happened sometime after 4 PM on Sunday August 11. He passed the word on via e-mail to Jonathan Larsen, *Village Voice* editor-in-chief.[14]

The housecleaner discovered Danny Casolaro's body on Saturday, August 10, 1991, just before 12:51 PM. Shortly thereafter, police called family members, and reports of Danny's death began to appear in the media.

---

1. Connolly, John, "Dead Right."

2. *The Hotline*, March 11, 1993.

3. Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days," p. 39; Rosenbaum, Ron, "Strange Death of Danny Casolaro," *Vanity Fair*, p. 83.

4. The Hotline.

5. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 39.

6. The Hotline.

7. "Frequent Drinking Marked Writer Casolaro's Final Days," *Washington Post*, August 25, 1991, A 19; Ridgeway and Vaughan, pp. 39-40; *The Hotline*.

8. Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days," pp. 39-40.

9. Ridgeway and Vaughan, pp. 37-38.

10. Rosenbaum also reported in *Vanity Fair* that three weeks before he died, Casolaro asked Ann Klenk "Will you kiss me when I'm dead?" Klenk remarked that "He'd told me several times that summer that if I heard he met with an accident make sure I got that shit [meaning his notes] out of there." The program Klenk had been working on was a live interview with Richard Secord, a key figure behind Iran/contra operations. According to a pamphlet published by Christic Institute, a group whose research had greatly interested Danny, Secord flew missions "during CIA's covert air war in Laos in 1960s," embezzled "millions of dollars as a top Pentagon official overseeing Middle East arms sales in late 1970s," and was a par ter with Shackley, Clines, Hakim and convicted terrorist supplier Edwin Wilson in the Egyptian Air Transport and Service Corporation (EATSCO), an arms dealing entity.

11. Ridgeway and Vaughan, pp. 38.

12. *Ibid.*

13. *Ibid.*

14. *Ibid.*

CHAPTER 18:

Rippling Waves

The police had no idea that Danny Casolaro had been investigating malevolent and murderous forces. When Danny's brother Tony spoke with detective Sergeant George Swartwood, the one who first informed the family of Danny's apparent suicide, Tony received a contradictory description of the body's wounds—cuts on both the wrists and the arms.Tony then told Swartwood about Danny's investigative work. Research papers and notes, other than the terse suicide message, were nowhere in evidence at the murder scene; the detective did not know they should have been. No autopsy had been planned. Swartwood directed Tony Casolaro to the medical examiner's office, where coroner Sandra Bining in turn refered him to the West Virginia medical examiner, a man with the coldly appropriate name of James "Jack" Frost. On late Monday, Frost agreed with Tony about the suspicious circumstances of Danny's death and scheduled an autopsy for the following Wednesday. He observed to the incredulous Tony Casolaro that the body had already been embalmed. Because of the hastily drawn conclusion of suicide, Sandra Brining had turned Casolaro's body over to the funeral home. Because the family had not received prior notification, the embalming had violated the law—and had made the autopsy that much more difficult.

After being brought up to speed by Tony Casolaro, Swartwood's people backpedaled as quickly and as thoroughly as possible to investigate the death. They went back to the Sheraton and searched for indications of a break-in—fingerprints, even footprints on the roof in case someone had scaled the walls and entered through a window. One detective took a dog onto the local highway to look for the papers Tony Casolaro had mentioned—Danny's papers as well as those he had just received from Bill Turner. The effort was too late in many respects. The coroner's husband David, a fire department lieutenant, had the bathroom door removed less than a half-hour after the body was found. The coroner herself—also an emergency room nurse—drained the bathtub without a filter. The body had been moved to the Brown Funeral Home and its director, Charles Brown, had done the embalming.[1]

Sandra Brining performed a brief medical examination before the autopsy. She took a blood sample from the heart, noted old scars on the right leg and scalp, and an old bruise inside the upper, right arm. She also counted the slash scars on his wrists. The right wrist had seven or eight slashes;[2] the right had three or four, all of them deep, strongly inflicted cuts. It was then that Brining determined that the death was a suicide.

Dr. James Frost's autopsy agreed with Brining's conclusion that Danny Casolaro's life spilled out through the cuts on his wrists. Frost determined that there were no signs of struggle and not enough drug residue in blood and urine samples to indicate an artificial inhibition of any such struggle. He reported, "no alcohol found in body ... traces of codeine from Tylenol III and an anti-depressant drug were found."[3] Toxicological tissue tests also indicate the presence of hydrocone, used in the painkiller Vicodin, six tablets of which Casolaro's dentist had prescribed for him three years previously, but the quantity of the anti-depressant was too minute to identify. "Of the five or six things that bothered me the most, this is one of them," Tony Casolaro commented later, "Because they found no pill bottle, no written prescription at any pharmacy."[4]

This was only the beginning of the suspicions that spread out like ripples behind an octopus swimming off after an attack. The first involved the recent death of Alan Standorf, the electronic intelligence specialist whom, according to Rodney Stich, Casolaro had met through Michael Riconosciuto. Casolaro had called Standorf a key source. After Casolaro's death, when Art Weinfield accompanied Casolaro's sister Mary Ellen and son Trey to the Martinsburg police station to recover Danny's car, they ran into detectives who identified themselves as working for the National Airport Authority in DC.[5] The detectives explained that they were looking into possible connections between Danny's death and Standorf's, a "low-level" civilian NSA employee at the restricted Vint Hill military facility. Standorf was killed by a blow to the head in early January. If he was not killed for the $500 he had just retrieved from an ATM, then his body was made to look that way. It had been discovered at National Airport in late January, wrapped in his coat in the back seat of his car, money missing. The detectives explained that Army intelligence officers joined their investigation of the case twice before an anonymous caller mentioned the link to Casolaro. While the detectives never came up with evidence connecting the two cases, according to Ridgeway and Vaughan, they did discover that their anonymous tip came from one of Casolaro's last informants, Bill Turner.[6]

Fearful that he might be the next target of the Octopus, Bill Turner got himself arrested in late September on a bank robbery charge. A similar strategy had been used by a spook named Richard Case Nagell when he realized he was entangled in the conspiracy to kill JFK. In September 1963 Nagell shot up a bank in San Antonio, was arrested and thereby removed as a participant.[7] Less than an hour and a half after a bank robbery in the rural town of Gore, police picked up Turner and matched him with images from the bank's security camera. Was Turner justifed in such actions, steering the police to connect Danny's death with Standorf's and fleeing into police custody? Turner failed to make two appointments to discuss this with the authors of the original edition of this book and thereafter his telephone number became unlisted. One person who would support Turner's fears was Harry Martin of the *NAPA Sentinel.* "Basically what we're dealing with is Air Force counterintelligence," said Martin in an interview, "What Casolaro was finding was procurement fraud, manufacturing fraud and kickbacks. He didn't start out in that direction, but that's what he stumbled across. And, of course, that is what did him in... One of my contacts in the Air Force came back from Virginia the same weekend as Casolaro's death. Of course, it hadn't quite been reported. He came back and his knuckles were raw and he had scratches on them and he talked about beating up this guy in a hotel inWest Virginia." "Again," Martin adds, "I didn't have Casolaro on my mind at the time... At the same time the contact indicated that he had gotten ahold of all these papers from this guy and that he destroyed those papers. When you put two and two together—the contact had these papers and he dealt with Hughes Aircraft—-and the fact that the guy had been in West Virginia for two days and came back like he had been in a fight..."[8] Martin declined to give the name of his contact.

One report had Bill Hamilton providing some support for the scenario: "We had one meeting with an FBI agent and the First Assistant US Attorney from Los Angeles on our February submission. And they had questions principally about material in that submission about the death of the journalist Danny Casolaro. During the meeting they confirmed to us that something we had heard from a confidential source was true. And that was, a maid at the hotel in Martinsburg, West Virginia had seen a man coming out of Danny Casolaro's hotel room the morning he was found dead, but before his body was discovered. Then, subsequent to that meeting, the Justice Department attempted to deny that they had, in fact, confirmed that during the meeting with us. And that effort to deny it makes you very uncomfortable, you know?"[9]

Perhaps Bob Bickell also felt some of that discomfort. On August 5, Casolaro had called Texas oil engineer Bickell, who at one time worked as a Customs Bureau informant, apparently to talk about Robert Booth Nichols and his association with a former Justice official named Michael Abbell and Columbian drug lord Gilberto Rodriquez, both of whom were being investigated for their connections to the Cali drug cartel. Bickel previously had aspired to blow the whistle on CIA chief Robert Gates' role in shipping weapons to Iraq in the late 1980s. He had given Casolaro photocopies of one million and four million dollar checks drawn on the BCCI accounts of Iran-contra go-betweens Khashoggi and Ghorbanifar. He also gave him the passport photograph of Hassan Ali Ibrahim Ali, a front man for Iraqi weapons sales. (Doug Vaughan traced these papers back to Richard Brenneke.) The check photocopies had circulated among researchers for years but when matched with the passport it seemed to represent a great breakthrough to Danny. Was Hassan Ali Ibrahim Ali the "maybe Arab or Iranian" man that a waitress saw Casolaro with at the Sheridan that night?

Bickell had told Bob McCoy that Casolaro was trolling for the head of the Octopus on his final night, and he later told a writer that "Danny had confronted Robert Booth Nichols about his relationship with Mike Abbell."[10] Writer Chris Seymour, whose unpublished six hundred page manuscript in part explored the drug traffic angle of Casolaro's work, suggested that the drug angle pre-occupied the fifteen phone calls to Nichols found on Casolaro's phone bill the month prior to his death. This view supported the report that Casolaro had been collecting information about Nichols' various connections to the Gambino family and the Yakuza from former Justice Department prosecutor Richard Stavin. Stavin's report emphasized that names found in Casolaro's notes included members of FIDCO, the First Intercontinental Development Corporation, a group in California created to re-construct bombed-out Beirut in Lebanon. The FIDCO board member list contained the names of Texas oilman Clint Murchison, Jr. and Howard Hughes crony Robert Maheu, names that also had emerged during Nichols' pursuit of damages against the LAPD for revocation of his concealed weapons permit in 1993. The list also included Nichols as a senior vice-president of FIDCO's Investment Committee.[11]

Seymour claimed that FIDCO was set up in 1983 to take advantage of financial aid then being offered to Lebanese president Amin Gemayel, aid that helped smooth out drug traffic avenues. Correspondence from former Reagan aide Michael McManus to engineering executive George Pender, both FIDCO board members, and to Gemayel, established the influx of over three billion dollars in money and assets into the Lebanese ruins. According to Seymour, the US Senate Judiciary Committee determined in 1985 that Gemayel's finance minister supervised the importation of Turkish opium into Lebanon, where it was processed into heroin, sent to Italy and eventually exported for sale in the US. A report in *High Times* named Gemayel's brother as an asset to the CIA.[12] "Of note also is the fact that Bekaa (Valley) in Lebanon later became a center for processing Columbian Cartel cocaine for re-export to European markets."[13] In one proposal for the Octopus manuscript, Casolaro had indeed asserted that the fuel-air explosive Michael Riconosciuto developed on Cabazon land was used in the bomb that killed over three hundred US Marines in Lebanon in October 1983. Could it have been research along these lines that led to his death?

For his part, Ari Ben-Menashe gave Bill Hamilton another hint about Casolaro's company on the night of his death. Ben-Menashe claimed that two FBI agents from Lexington, Kentucky had scheduled a meeting with Casolaro in Martinsburg with proof of the illegal sale of PROMIS to the FBI and Mossad. One of the agents, E. B. Cartinhour, had a grudge about the fact that Reagan teflon had protected administration officials from indictments over the October Surprise. Ridgeway and Vaughan could not get a response from Cartinhour, but a colleague insisted that he had never heard of Casolaro and could not discuss Ben-Menashe because it involved classified information.[14]

Lester Knox Coleman III, the former Defense Intelligence Agency operative who swore in an affidavit about seeing bootleg PROMIS software at Cypriot Police headquarters, had yet another theory. On August 3, Casolaro called him after reading the affidavit and asked if he could help on the Octopus project with more information. That Casolaro could track him so easily impressed Coleman—it actually upset him a bit—so he took the opportunity to strike up a deal. He would tell Casolaro more of what he knew if Casolaro helped him find information on John McCloskey, a divorce lawyer who had recruited him into the DIA. The lawyer had links to the intelligence community and BCCI, and so was ripe for Casolaro's interest as well. The phone call ended with a promise to exchange information.

In nine days, news of Casolaro's death after a meeting with an unknown informant reached Coleman. Was that final meeting with McCloskey? Coleman later discovered that McCloskey owned a horse farm down the road from where Casolaro died, although he had not been seen in the area for a couple of years. When he called McCloskey's telephone number in Martinsburg, he reached the Shenandoah Women's Center and the people there had never heard of McCloskey. Coleman called William Hamilton about his suspicions only to learn about threats Hamilton had received because of PROMIS. The thought of how quickly Casolaro had tracked him added to Coleman's fear that he may be the next target for "sanctions" because of his involvement with the PROMIS affair. He explained as much to Swedish authorities when he petitioned for asylum.[15]

Coleman and Bickell's stories came together in an odd way. Coleman's book also gave the particulars of a sting operation called "Khourah," involving heroin shipments from the Bekaa Valley to the US. Seymour notes that two years previously Michael Riconosciuto tried to trade details of the DEA sting to the FBI.

Notable among Riconosciuto's claims was that the operation's head, DEA man Fred Ghanem, was related to FIDCO participant Maurice Ghanem.[16]

The veracity of these contradictory conspiracy scenarios about Danny Casolaro's death must be measured against attempts by the various authors and characters to associate their research and experience with this famous case. Casolaro primarily worked by phone (Ridgeway and Vaughan noted that his "professional life existed on the telephone"), and the tributaries of his research were labyrinthine. His Octopus metaphor was proved apt before and after his death.

---

1. Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days."

2. One researcher even suggested that Casolaro sent a final pointer to the presence of the Octopus by cutting eight slashes—one for each tentacle—to indicate its involvement in his murder.

3. "Frequent Drinking Marked Writer Casolaro's Final Days," *Washington Post*, August 25, 1991, A 19.

4. Ridgeway and Vaughan, p. 41.

5. Ridgeway and Vaughan described the authorities in charge of the investigation of Casolaro's death as nothing more than "aggressive, professional suburban public servants." The *Com-12* Briefing suggested, however, that "Wackenhut Special Services Teams, along with NSA officials, informed the Martinsburg Police Department that they would secretly conduct the investigation of Casolaro's death and the police were to maintain this cover," and that "Casolaro had received 60 pages of whistle-blowing documentation on a major defense contractor. The material was repossessed that night by the assignment team from NSA and Wackenhut."

6. Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days," p. 42.

7. Russell, Dick, *The Man Who Knew Too Much*, Carrol & Graf, 1994.

8. Interview with Harry Martin by Kenn Thomas, October 25, 1994.

9. *Contact*, May 17, 1994.

10. Seymour, Cheri, "Curiosity Killed Freelance Writer," *Spotlight*, March 20, 1995.

11. *Ibid.*

12. Weinberg, Bill, "The Syrian Connection," *High Times*, March 1993.

13. Seymour, Cheri, "Drugs, Politics, Foreign Intrigue," *Spotlight*, March 27 1995.

14. Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days," p. 42.

15. Goddard, Donald, with Lester Coleman, *Trail of the Octopus: From Beirut to Lockerbie*, Bloomsbury, London, 1993, pp. 247-251 (326 pp.).

16. Seymour, Cheri, "Massive Government Coverup Exposed," *Spotlight*, April 3, 1995; the *Com-12* Briefing also supports these stories in their broad strokes. See Chapter 15, "The Bombing of Pan Am 103."

CHAPTER 19:

Inslaw and the Law

Danny Casolaro had been pulled under by the Octopus of his imagining or his investigations, perhaps both. In nearby waters, however, other behemoths thrashed about for supremacy in an even larger conspiratorial sea—the law. The legal forces lined up against Inslaw became visible when the Hamiltons discovered that Associate Attorney General D. Lowell Jensen had, as District Attorney in Alameda County, California, promoted DALITE, a rival management software, to fifty-eight county California district attorney offices. Larry Donoghue, the man responsible for selecting software used by the Los Angeles office and later named deputy district attorney for Los Angeles County, recalled that, "Jensen called me into his office and I went away feeling what I regarded to be unusual and significant pressure to select the DALITE system." PROMIS, however, had won the Los Angeles County office and, as Bill Hamilton later remarked, "... evidently Jensen bore a grudge." Hamilton added, "Jensen was promoted to associate Attorney General in May or June of '83—and that's when all the contract disputes came up." Jensen served as chairman of the oversight committee in charge of PROMIS. Additionally, Jensen had served with Ed Meese for twelve years in Alameda County while Meese had been a deputy district attorney. In 1985, Meese promoted Jensen to Deputy Attorney General. Jensen also came under scrutiny during the Senate's Iran-contra investigations when a memo was discovered from him tipping off Oliver North that the federal prosecutors were aware of his actions. This from a Justice Department official charged with prosecuting the matter.[1]

There was no misunderstanding in the government's handling of PROMIS. The government, or at least a particular segment of it, was out to get Inslaw, according to Frank Mallgrave, as quoted in *Wired*:

> On a gorgeous spring morning in 1981, Lawrence McWhorter, director of the Executive Office for USA attorneys, put his feet on his desk, lit an Italian cigar, eyed his subordinate Frank Mallgrave and said through a haze of blue smoke: "We're out to get Inslaw."
>
> McWhorter had just asked Mallgrave to oversee the pilot installation of PROMIS, a job Mallgrave refused, unaware at the time that he was being asked to participate in Inslaw's deliberate destruction.
>
> "We were just in his office for what I call a BS type discussion," Mallgrave told *Wired*. "I remember it was a bright sunny morning... (McWhorter) asked me if I would be interested in assuming the position of Assistant Director for Data Processing... basically working with Inslaw. I told him... I just had no interest in that job. And then, almost as an afterthought, he said 'We're out to get Inslaw.' I remember it to this day."[2]

The position eventually went to C. Madison "Brick" Brewer. Bill Hamilton had previously fired Brewer for poor job performance. Hamilton originally thought Brewer's actions against Inslaw were due to Brewer's personal vendetta, but that was before revelations concerning Earl Brian, the October Surprise payoff and the rest of the sordid mess surfaced.[3] The Justice Department determined that no conflict of interest existed for Brewer in his new assignment. Brewer testified in federal court that he received approval from Deputy Attorney General Lowell Jensen, whose vested interest in the rival DALITE software had been damaged by the contract award to Inslaw in the 1970s, for all of his actions regarding Inslaw. Perhaps revenge had transformed Inslaw's contract disputes into a legalistic attempt to trash the company.

Things could never be that simple in Inslaw's case, however. Joined with Brewer's at Justice was Peter Videniecks, the man who, according to Michael Riconosciuto, had threatened him to discourage him from testifying before the House Judiciary Committee. Videniecks had his own incestuous connection to Inslaw: he had worked in the Customs office maintaining its contracts with Earl Brian's Hadron, Inc. systems consulting group. Videniecks and Brewer led Justice to demand that Inslaw turn over PROMIS just in case an alleged impending bankruptcy made it impossible for the company to live up to its contracts. Inslaw agreed, but with the stipulation that Inslaw retain all rights to enhancements to the program and that Justice only provide it to the US Attorney's office. Justice, predictably, reneged, and made no effort to determine the validity of Inslaw's claims of ownership to PROMIS enhancements. The Justice Department began to withhold payments, making Inslaw's subsequent forced march into bankruptcy court a self-fulfilling prophecy, and beginning the process that originally had attracted Casolaro's attention. As Inslaw's problems mounted, Earl Brian's

Hadron, Inc. made a play to take over the company through Dominic "We have ways of making you sell" Laiti. Another company, SCT, financed by investment bankers linked to Brian, also attempted a buy-out.

Inslaw ultimately hired Leigh Ratiner of Dickstein, Shapiro and Morin, to file suit against Justice to the tune of $30 million. Ratiner established the bankruptcy court as having jurisdiction in the dispute with the unique argument that Justice had seized control of PROMIS. As Inslaw's creditor, this violated a tenet of the Bankruptcy Act forbidding creditors from controlling the property of debtors.[4] The strategy led to Judge George Bason's favorable ruling for Inslaw in 1987, which also led to Bason's early removal from the bench and, according to Ari Ben-Menashe, possibly also to Leigh Ratiner's early retirement by a pay-off to his law firm.[5] Federal district court judge William Bryant upheld Bason's decision after an appeal by the Justice Department, and the Supreme Court denied review in October 1991. A separate appeals court, however, deciding on an appeal made by the Justice Department, ultimately overturned Bryant on the basis of the jurisdictional argument. A three member panel of judges determined that federal bankruptcy court had no jurisdiction in the case. No judgement was ever issued exonerating the Justice Department from its actions in the Inslaw matter.

Casolaro had given some thought to other legal dimensions of the Inslaw predicament. In undated notes, he made an extensive study of computer software and hardware case law, from the point of view of trade secret protection, trademark protection, contract law and patent law and copyright law. From that perspective, he underlined the concept of "a reverse engineering approach" that he felt was applicable to the legal status of PROMIS. Called the "clean room technique," it is used as a method of avoiding copyright infringement in the developing of software products of similar functions. The clean room uses two teams, one receiving and decompiling the protected work legally and "producing a document setting forth ideas and specifications that are in the unprotected idea domain." The second team takes the document and, with no further communication with team one, creates a new product without infringing on the protected aspect of the original software. Casolaro noted that such reverse engineering had been used by many computer manufacturers to clone Apple and IBM computers. Apple and IBM never pursued legal action against the clean room technique because they feared an unfavorable legal action.[6] Perhaps for similar reasons, the PROMIS problems were never played out in the copyright arena.

During these legal maneuvers, information concerning the illegal distribution of PROMIS on the international market continued to come in. On January 8, 1991, Communications Canada (AKA the Canadian Workplace Automation Research Centre, or CWARC) wrote a letter to Inslaw requesting information on the program, stating that "CWARC is aware that your company's software products are being used in federal departments and agencies." Inslaw, however, had never authorized a Canadian sale of PROMIS. The Hamiltons' daughter Patricia also swore in an affidavit that an official of the Canadian Department of Communications informed her that the RCMP were using PROMIS in 900 offices in Canada.[7]

In November 1992, Bill Hamilton learned the identity of a potential client for PROMIS. A man had come to Hamilton in February 1983, was wowed by the presentation of the software, but never came back to purchase. The customer had identified himself as Dr. Ben Orr. Through a photograph identification, Hamilton discovered that Dr. Ben Orr was the chief of Israel's anti-terrorist intelligence division under Menachem Begin, and director of LAKAM, the scientific intelligence gathering unit of the defense ministry in Israel. He had no doubt been sent by the Justice Department to look at wares promised.[8] Ari Ben-Menashe verified the pseudonym.[9]

On June 9, 1993 two plaintiffs, Brenda James-Soulliere and Virginia Welmas-Nichols, filed a slander suit against enterprises and individuals that had worked to bring one portion of Casolaro's research—the murder and malfeasance among the Cabazons—to a broader audience through broadcast and print media. The court filing described the plaintiffs as members of the Cabazon tribe and residents of Riverside County. The defendants included several well-known researchers, notably Virginia McCullough, Harry Martin and Dave Emory, radio stations KPFK and KFJC, and Dave Emory's tape service, *Archives on Audio*. The complaint also listed 600 unidentified "Does" as responsible for the slander as well.

Since 1980, Emory had broadcast commentary on the influence of fascism on contemporary life through various radio programs in the San Francisco Bay area. Beginning in April, 1991, Emory began broadcasting some of the earliest and most in-depth reporting about Casolaro, the Cabazons, and the Inslaw scandal. The court filing listed his November 15 and 17, 1992 shows as the offending programs, along with one from November 22, 1993. The November 15 show had featured a discussion with *NAPA Sentinel* editor Harry Martin about the Cabazon involvement with Wackenhut, the modification of PROMIS, and the development of biological and chemical weapons; the November '93 broadcast included comments by Virginia McCullough regarding the Cabazon/Wackenhut venture, tribal gambling operations, and connections to the mob. Emory made tapes of the program available through his tape service, *Archives on Audio*.

Several interesting documents surfaced as court exhibits for the trial, including correspondence between John Philip Nichols and Robert Booth Nichols, a long letter from John Nichols detailing weapons research development by Cabazon Arms, and inter-office memoranda from Wackenhut. A defendant's motion for dismissal was granted by the court on October 29, 1993.[10]

Jack Brooks

William Barr.

The first congressional investigation of the Inslaw matter came from the Senate Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations, headed by Sam Nunn. During the course of that inquiry, its chief investigator, Ronald LeGrand, quoted a senior officer at Justice that he refused to name as saying the Inslaw case "was a lot dirtier for the Department of Justice than Watergate had been, both in its breadth and its depth." Although Inslaw lawyer Elliot Richardson later pointed out that LeGrand "now says he and his friend were only discussing rumors," he concurred with the sentiment. Richardson was one of the few people to emerge from the Watergate days as a man of integrity, having lost his job for refusing to fire special prosecutor Archibald Cox at Richard Nixon's direction. Richardson would ultimately call for a special prosecutor for the Inslaw case. "When the Watergate special prosecutor began his inquiry," Richardson remarked, "indications of the President's involvement were not as strong as those that now point to a widespread conspiracy implicating lesser government officials in the theft of Inslaw's technology."[11]

The Nunn Committee issued a report concluding that the Justice Department had victimized Inslaw and, in addition, had intimidated witnesses before the committee—some of them into silence for fear of their jobs; others into being advised by the litigation division before testifying. Justice also refused access to any records whatsoever, a precursor to the treatment the department would give the next inquiry into Inslaw—the House Judiciary Committee, headed by Jack Brooks.[12]

Brooks' committee concluded that "The history of the Department's behavior in the Inslaw case dramatically illustrates its 1. reflexive hostility and 'circle the wagons' approach toward outside investigations; 2. inability or unwillingness to look objectively at charges of wrongdoing by high level Justice officials, particularly when the agency itself is a defendant in litigation; and 3. belligerence toward Justice employees with views that run counter to those of the agency's upper management. The fact that the Department failed to recognize a need for an independent investigation of the Inslaw matter for more than seven years is remarkable. Failure to do so has effectively shielded officials who may have committed wrongdoing from investigation and prosecution."

Despite the stone walling by the Justice Department—in fact, with special mention of it—Brooks' committee reached conclusions favorable to Inslaw. It had reviewed the volume of legal material and history of PROMIS and Inslaw, the Cabazons and Wackenhut, and their relationships to Michael Riconosciuto, Robert Booth Nichols, John Philip Nichols and Earl Brian; the sworn statements of Riconosciuto; the allegations of Ari Ben-Menashe, Charles Hayes, and Lester Coleman; Richardson's 1989 writ of mandamus filing request for independent investigative counsel; and various soft-pedalings and interference by Justice. Although the committee did not include Danny Casolaro's death as part of its formal investigation, it did note the irregular circumstance of his death:

"Mr. Casolaro died on August 10, 1991, and his death was officially ruled a suicide on January 5, 1992, over five months later. The criticism of the investigation of Casolaro's death by the Martinsburg, WV, police center on the following areas: Prior to any coroners' investigation and before his family was notified, Mr. Casolaro's body was embalmed, which may have limited the effectiveness of autopsies or toxicological examinations. Some evidence has also surfaced indicating that immediately following the discovery of the body, the room was not sealed by the Martinsburg authorities, potentially allowing for the contamination of the possible crime scene. Additionally, it was reported that the room in which Mr. Casolaro was found was cleaned before a thorough criminal investigation could be conducted."

The committee took a statement from Richard Stavin about the nature of Casolaro's Octopus research and the involvement of Robert Nichols and John Philip Nichols; and another from FBI field agent Thomas Gates. Gates mentioned that Casolaro's phone book, containing Gates' number had not been located during the police investigation. He also mentioned that Martinsburg police had found "hacking" wounds on Casolaro's arms not consistent with them being self-inflicted. Gates had concluded this was cause to suspect murder.

The House Judiciary Committee reached three conclusions: that the current attorney general, William Barr—who had succeeded Richard Thornburgh the day Casolaro's autopsy report was released—should immediately settle Inslaw's claims in a fair and equitable manner; that Justice department officials with any prior participation in the Inslaw litigation be excluded from further involvement except as needed to supply information to future investigations as needed; and that the Justice Department appoint and independently conduct "a full, open investigation of the Inslaw allegations of a high level conspiracy within the Department to steal enhanced PROMIS software to benefit friends and associates of former Attorney General Meese, including Dr. Earl Brian." Ancillary to this last conclusion was a recommendation for an investigation into Danny Casolaro's death.[13]

Thornburgh had ostensibly regarded the Inslaw affair as a simple contract dispute. Faced with intense criticism from the Justice Department, however, Thornburgh's successor Barr acceded to the request for a special prosecutor. He appointed a retired federal judge, Nicholas J. Bua, in November, 1991. Unfortunately, and despite the tremendous momentum to decide things in a way satisfactory to Inslaw, Bua's report, filed in March 1993 with Janet Reno as attorney general, did to the case's legal standing what had been done to Casolaro.

Incredibly, Bua cleared the Justice Department, the office for which he worked, of wrongdoing in the affair.[14] News of the report did not surface until late May because it was being edited to take out information supposedly relevant to national security.[15] According to Bua, the evidence was not sufficient to support the claim that the Justice Department, specifically Ed Meese and crony Earl Brian, stole PROMIS from the Hamiltons and sold it illegally to police agencies around the world. Bua also apparently complimented Michael Riconosciuto's story-telling abilities ("a historical novel; a tale of total fiction woven against the background of historical facts") but pooh-poohed his contention that he modified the software to give it back door access. Bua also maintained that the removal from the bench of judge George Bason, who had originally ruled in favor of Inslaw, was only a coincidence. According to Bua, Bason had not been re-appointed because he was an inefficient administrator. Bua added two final insults to his list of appalling conclusions: Danny Casolaro had committed suicide and there was no evidence that the Justice Department attempted to influence the investigation of his death.

Not mentioned in the report was the $25 million Bua had offered Elliot Richardson to settle the case—more than triple the amount awarded in the first federal ruling for Inslaw. Bua made the offer in a December 1992 phone call to Richardson and, according to Richardson, they had at least two follow up calls about it.[16]

Bua's report was deficient in many obvious ways, and Inslaw filed a report on July 12, 1993 to point them out. For instance, Bua failed to do a basic code comparison between PROMIS and the software currently being used by the FBI, instead relying on the expertise of a Georgetown University professor that such a comparison would be a waste of time. Bua also was selective in his choice of interviewees from Justice Department who had knowledge of the case, neglecting to talk to them all. The Inslaw rebuttal also maintained that Bua's information on George Bason came in large part from Judge Roger Whelan, the judge from whom administrative problems were inherited by Bason, or so went the House Judiciary Committee Testimony of U. S. District Chief Judge Aubrey Robinson. Whelan at the time also worked for AT&T, an Inslaw creditor.[17]

The July 12 rebuttal contained eighty pages and ten attachments, expanding the particulars and adding to the documentation perhaps more than any other legal document,[18] especially factoring in the twenty-nine page addendum Inslaw released on February 14, 1994. The last items in this chapter highlight some of its many revelations.

Robert Maxwell

> [Robert] Maxwell's role as a cutout for a foreign nation's sale of computer software has been implicitly acknowledged by the actions of the FBI. Robert Maxwell's dissemination of computer software was the subject of an FBI foreign counterintelligence investigation in 1984. Ten years later, in January 1994, Inslaw obtained, under the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA), eighteen pages relating to an investigation on this subject in New Mexico in June 1984. The FBI furnished the documents to Inslaw in response to a FOIA request for documents relating to Maxwell's involvement in the 'dissemination, marketing or sale of computer software systems, including but not limited to the PROMIS computer software product, between 1983 and 1992.' The FBI heavily redacted the eighteen pages and ascribed the redactions to the secrecy requirements of national security. One month before the FBI released the documents to Inslaw, it partially reclassified two of the pages that had been officially declassified in their entirety one year earlier. The FBU redacted the newly reclassified portions in the copies given to Inslaw.
>
> Robert Maxwell also developed a business relationship during the latter half of the 1980s with two computer systems executives from the Meese Justice Department, at least one of whom had responsibilities relating to the proprietary version of PROMIS. Robert Maxwell set up a tiny publishing company in McLean, Virginia, in August 1985. That company then hired two senior computing systems executives from a unit of the Meese Justice Department that operated the proprietary version of PROMIS. One was the Director of the Justice Data Center, the Justice Department's own internal computer time-sharing facility where the proprietary IBM version of PROMIS was operating for one of the legal divisions under license from Inslaw. the Director of the Justice Data Center resigned his estimated $90,000-a-year Senior Executive Service position to become Vice President for Technical Services at the six-employee start-up national defense company owned by Robert Maxwell.

Submarines

The Navy confirmed to a reporter for *Navy Times* that it has a PROMIS software system and that it operates its PROMIS on a VAX computer in support of its nuclear submarines. The Navy's Undersea Systems Center in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, furthermore, notified the reporter in writing that its engineers had locally developed this VAX version of PROMIS; that its PROMIS is installed only at its land-based facility at Newport, Rhode Island; and that its PROMIS has never been installed on board any nuclear submarine. Inslaw has, however, obtained a document published by the same Undersea Systems Center in 1987 that reveals its PROMIS is not only operating at the land-based 'test facility' in Newport, but it is also operational on board both attack class and 'boomer' class submarines. The Navy, like the CIA and the NSA, clearly has difficulty in giving a credible accounting of its PROMIS software.

Danny Casolaro

According to written statements of which Inslaw has obtained copies, another undeclared mission of the Justice Department's covert agents was to insure that investigative journalist Danny Casolaro remained silent about the role of the Justice Department in the Inslaw scandal by murdering him in West Virginia in August 1991. Inslaw has acquired copies of two relevant written statements furnished to a veteran investigative journalist by a national security operative of the US government, several months after Casolaro's death. The individual who reportedly transmitted these written statements to the journalist by fax has testified under oath to being a national security operative for the FBI and CIA. Partial corroboration for his claimed work for the FBI is reportedly available in the sworn testimony of several FBI agents during a recent criminal prosecution. One statement purportedly reflects the operative's personal knowledge and belief that Casolaro was killed by agents of the Justice Department and is allegedly written in the operative's own hand. The other statement is an excerpt from a typewritten set of questions and answers. The questions were posed to a senior CIA official by the investigative journalist; the answers, purportedly from the senior CIA official, were reportedly sent by fax to the journalist by the national security operative, who was acting as an intermediary. The following is the pertinent questions and answer:

> ***Q**: Do you have any information for [San Francisco-based investigative journalist] George Williamson yet regarding the Danny Casolaro matter?*
>
> **A**: Yes. Casolaro appears to have been working as a freelance writer at the time of his death and was gathering material for a book. He was investigating the Inslaw case. He was on the trail of information that could have made the whole matter public and led to exposure of the Justice Department and their involvement in the matter. Apparently he was very close to obtaining that information.

> We do not agree with the consensus of opinion among the reporters who looked into this matter, that Casolaro committed suicide. Casolaro was murdered by agents of the Justice department to insure his silence. The entire matter was handled internally by Justice, and our agency was not involved.[19]

---

1. Mahar, Maggie, "What Really Sparked the Vendetta Against Inslaw?," *Barron's National Business and Financial Weekly*, April 4, 1988.

2. Fricker, Richard L., "The Inslaw Octopus," *Wired 1.1*, Premiere Issue, 1993, p 80.

3. Richardson, Elliot, L., "A High-Tech Watergate," *New York Times*, October 21, 1991.

4. Fricker, p. 101.

5. Ben-Menashe, *Profits of War*, p. 141.

6. Casolaro's notes.

7. Martin, Harry V., "Canadians Begin Probe On Pirated Software From Justice Department," *NAPA Sentinel*, April 12, 1991.

8. *Wired*, p. 77.

9. Bleifuss, Joel, "The Inslaw Affair Continued," *In These Times*, December 14, 1992.

10. Brenda James-Soulliere and Virginia Welmas-Nichols, Plaintiffs v. KPFK, Archives on Audio, A California Business Organization, Dave Emory, An Individual, Harry Martin, An Individual, KFJC, A California Corporation, Virginia McCullough, An Individual, and Does 1 through 600, Inclusive, Defendants, Los Angeles Superior Court, June 9, 1993.

On other broadcasts, Emory outlined a larger context for the "October Surprise," and thereby Earl Brian's involvement with the PROMIS software. In the 1995 *Archives on Audio* catalog (POB 170023, San Francisco, CA 94117-0023), Emory explained that, "by 1976, George Bush's CIA was actively supporting and grooming the Khomeini forces. The subsequent takeover of the US embassy in Teheran, the withholding of the US hostages until after President Carter's defeat was assured, the Khomeini government itself and the Iran-contra scandal proper were all outgrowths of this profound and long-standing relationship. It should be noted that parts of this relationship have been misunderstood as what has become known as the 'October Surprise.' Although there was massive collusion between the Reagan-Bush campaign and the Khomeini forces during the 1980 election campaign, there was no 'deal' cut during the campaign. Rather, the 'deal' was part of a covert operation begun years before and the collusion during the campaign was an outgrowth of it."

11. Richardson.

12. Martin, Harry V., "Federal Corruption," *Napa Sentinel*, March 12, 1991.

13. *The Inslaw Affair, Investigative Report By The Committee On The Judiciary*, 102nd Congress, 2nd Session, House Report 102-857, U. S. Government Printing Office, Washington, September 10, 1992.

14. Frievogel, William and Casmier, Stephen, *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, June 18, 1993

15. *Washington Post*, May 29, 1993.

16. Bleifuss, Joel, "Inslaw Breakers," *In These Times*, August 9, 1993.

17. Bleifuss, p. 12.

18. Richardson, Elliot L., et. al., *Inslaw's Analysis and Rebuttal of the Bua Report*, July 12, 1993.

19. Richardson, Elliot L., et. al., Addendum to *Inslaw's Analysis and Rebuttal of the Bua Report*, February 14, 1994.

At the funeral: Danny Casolaro's sister Linda (far left), Friend Wendy Weaver, brother John, mother Frances and brother Tony.

Close family and friends attended Danny Casolaro's funeral service: his mom, Frances; his brothers, Tony and John; sister Linda; and girlfriend Wendy Weaver. All of them were no doubt preoccupied with their grief and with the unsettled question of his murder or suicide. Maybe they even thought of the dozens of questions Danny had raised about complex conspiracies and mysterious people.

None of them, however, recognized two other figures in attendance: a man in a tan overcoat and an African-American in Army uniform and regalia. As the casket was lowered into the earth, the soldier placed a medal on it and gave a salute. Then both strangers left in a hurry. Since Danny had never served in the military and never researched or wrote about it, his life had wrought one final mystery.[1]

---

[1] Ridgeway and Vaughan, "Last Days"; Bischoff, Dan, "One More Dead Man," *Village Voice*, August 27, 1991; Danny's cousin, Jim Gualteri pointed out that the family made a videotape of the funeral, but he could not track it down.

CHAPTER 20:

Whitewater Currents

Octopus tentacles arose briefly from under the relatively calm waters of a new administration's first year in office. Danny Casolaro had been dead for two years and the key players in the investigation he began had ostensibly left power after the 1992 election.

Columnist William Safire reported that Bill Clinton and George Bush struck a secret deal after Clinton's election that the former president would withhold criticism of the new administration for one year in exchange for Clinton's soft-pedaling of the Iran-contra investigations.[1] A month before the end of that deal, a month before the former Arkansas governor's first anniversary as president, the Clinton administration reopened the Inslaw investigation. In December 1993, the FBI began again to interview Casolaro's close associates and friends with an eye toward resolving the question of his death—was it a suicide or murder?

Under the new administration, the FBI was not satisfied with the determination of Judge Bua's report. It was still concerned with "Danny's state of mind at the time of his death," Casolaro girlfriend Wendy Weaver told the *San Francisco Chronicle*. "They said they were going to interview all these people and then bring the findings back to their experts to determine if he was suicidal... I told them I thought it was murder."[2] Press reports were silent as to why the case was being reopened at this time; indeed, few papers other than the Chronicle reported on it at all. Only the dim political purpose of the coming end to Bush's year of silence even suggested an answer. Did the new administration take interest in this high profile case, touching as it did on the intelligence backgrounds of prominent Republican personalities, as protection against Clinton-bashing from the Bush camp? Or was there more to it?

The review of the case had been ordered by Associate Attorney General Webster "Webb" Hubbell, then the third-ranking official at the Justice Department (seen by some as the Department's *de facto* head), a Clinton family friend. In noting that Hubbell had been assigned to review the Inslaw case, long-time Washington watcher Sarah McClendon also noted that Casolaro had maintained that additional details about the Inslaw relationship with the Justice Department could be had from employees in the office of Senator Robert Byrd.[3] McClendon affirmed Casolaro's story that he had scheduled an interview with these employees for the Friday preceding his death. Senator Byrd's chief of staff was the wife of Peter Videniecks, contracting officer at the Justice Department during the Inslaw period. McClendon quoted Bill Turner as saying that Casolaro told him that he planned to meet with two members of Robert Byrd's staff. McClendon also noted the Hamilton's complaints that Hubbell and FBI investigator Scott Erskine had plans to release a report without having talked to important Casolaro associates or investigating curious incidents, including a threat against Casolaro made by a friend of Videnieks, Joseph Cuellar, who apparently was also trailing the writer.[4]

Hubbell himself had already been connected to the Inslaw case through the confessions of Danger Man. In April, 1992, Michael Riconosciuto told *Village Voice*'s Frank Snepp of the link between guns-and-drugs operations at an airstrip in Mena, Arkansas—a story that already loomed as a major Clinton-era scandal because of Clinton's failure to investigate the situation as governor[5]—and Park-On-Meter (POM), a parking meter manufacturer in Russellville, Arkansas, that figured prominently in making Webb Hubbell one of the early victims of another Clinton debacle, the Whitewater affair.[6] Riconosciuto claimed to have worked with Terry Reed, the Mena pilot whose revelations first brought the Oliver North-styled smuggling operation to national attention.

Riconosciuto also told Mark Swaney, the head of a University of Arkansas student group responsible for a petition drive to investigate Mena, that he had been involved in developing chemical and biological weapons in a project connected to POM—apparently never explicitly that this was also connected to the work he did on Cabazon tribal lands—and that the company also manufactured external fuel tanks for C-130 transport planes. Riconosciuto had already confided to Alexander Cockburn that he had supervised high-tech equipment transfers and developed software to help launder money at Mena[7] and explained that POM, in conjunction with the infamous Wackenhut and Stormont Labs in Woodland, California, began production of the delivery system for the new chemical and bio warfare weaponry for use in the contra war in 1983. Long-range transport missions require the use of external fuel tanks, but again Riconosciuto was not explicit in connecting this with his tales of space aliens or the bizarre aircraft at Area 51 that had attracted Casolaro's attention.[8]

Riconosciuto told Cockburn that Park-On-Meter made the tanks for unconventional guerilla warfare against the contras. POM was to receive chemical agents from the 354th Chemical Company of the Army Reserve, located on property across from the barn housing the POM facilities, for use in explosive devices made with the same equipment POM used to produce parking meters.[9]

Stormont Labs acknowledged only discussions with Wackenhut regarding biological weapons, and Wackenhut denied working with POM. POM president, Seth "Skeeter" Ward III, also Webster Hubbell's brother-in-law, admitted that the company had some Pentagon contracts, but only for "re-entry nose cones for the nuclear warheads on the MX missile and nozzles for rocket engines," not chemical or biological weapons delivery systems, although he confessed to not knowing what kind of aircraft parts POM made for one of its contracts with McDonnell Douglas.[10] Ward also denied another central charge made by Danger Man: that POM received the first industrial development loan made by the Arkansas Development Finance Authority (ADFA), a controversial state authority co-written by Webster Hubbell in 1985. Bill Clinton appointed every member of the ADFA's governing board and was required to approve its every bond issue, apparently with no other legislative means of guaranteeing that the money would be spent as intended.

The ADFA primarily served two masters: the Stephens, Inc., investment bank that received seventy-eight percent of ADFA's underwriting fees and sales of housing and industrial bonds (Clinton had appointed two Stephens associates to the ADFA board);[11] and Clinton crony Dan Lasater, whose Lasater and Company firm underwrote $664 million in municipal bond issues after the creation of the ADFA.[12] Lasater was a party animal renowned for cocaine soirees at his Arkansas mansion, who claimed to have paid off drug debts of the President's brother Roger. Even after a police investigation of Lasater in 1985 for drugs, Clinton approved a $30.2 million bond issue to overhaul the state police radio system. In 1986, Lasater was sentenced to thirty months in prison for the distribution of cocaine (Roger Clinton was an unindicted co-conspirator) and was pardoned for it by Clinton. He remained connected to the White House through White House official Patsy Thomasson, manager of Lasater and Company, while Lasater was in jail. In this murky financial atmosphere, and despite Ward's denials, it is probable that the ADFA did issue one of its first bond issues to POM—with Clinton's required approval.

Mena did not provide the only evidence that the Octopus swam in Whitewater currents, however. Its tentacles also stretched toward the most infamous scandal of the Clinton era: the Vincent Foster death. POM's admitted jobs for the Pentagon and the funny finances of the ADFA remained obscure for the most part in the media. Webster Hubbell's representation of POM became the official reason for his resignation from Clinton's Justice Department, one month after his reopening of the Inslaw investigation. The Rose Law Firm declared that Hubbell had failed to provide documentation for expenses he had charged to the firm and that POM lost $1 million in litigation expenses when Hubbell unsuccessfully pursued a patent infringement case he took on a contingency basis for his brother-in-law "Skeeter" Ward. "Unfortunately, because of public speculation about me and my former law firm," Hubbell said in his resignation letter, "I will have to spend a significant amount of time on an internal matter with my former partners."[13]

In addition to bringing POM out of the Washington spotlight, the resignation shielded Hubbell from other accusations regarding the Whitewater Development Corporation real estate investments. Specifically, Hubbell served on the Resolution Trust Corporation during its takeover of the Madison Savings and Loan, owned by Whitewater partner James McDougal and previously represented by Hubbell. Hubbell failed to inform the RTC of the potential conflict.[14] Unofficially, Hubbell was the second victim of Whitewater, following White House counsel Bernard Nussbaum's forced resignation for questionable meetings with federal regulators looking into the Whitewater Development Corporation real estate investments. Nussbaum had been responsible for removing Whitewater files and a diary from the office of White House aide Vincent Foster less than three hours after Foster's death from a gunshot wound. He was accompanied on that visit by Patsy Thomasson. Foster's last weekend had been spent in the company of Webster Hubbell, his wife and another couple—White House counsel Michael Cardozo and his wife. Hubbell joined the group in Maryland after leaving the meeting that informed William Sessions of his dismissal as FBI director. After returning from a Hawaiian vacation, Bill Clinton spent the weekend in Arkansas dining with David Edwards, a former Stephens Inc. employee and conduit for $23 million from the king of Saudi Arabia for the Middle Eastern studies program at the University of Arkansas. Clinton had one last twenty minute conversation with Foster the Monday night before his death.[15] Oddly, one of Foster's last phone conversations on the morning of his death was with Brantley Buck, the Rose Law Firm partner assigned to investigate Webster Hubbell and POM.[16]

In 1995, new suspicions arose concerning the use of PROMIS in the world banking system. One post on the Internet charged (or, rather, sarcastically reported the "false" charge) that Systematics, a subsidiary of Alltech Corporation comprised of Systematics Financial Services Inc., Systematics Information Services Inc. of Little Rock, Arkansas, and Systematics Telecommunications Services Inc. of Dallas, Pennsylvania, had modified the PROMIS software for sale to private banks, with the attendant back-doors to allow the NSA to spy on banking operations. The post went on to charge that Webster Hubbell had "helped work out strategies to use Systematics software to spy on commercial and central banks." The anonymous source encouraged Internet readers to verify the charge (or "the utter falsehood of these malicious lies"), and attached a long list of bank and financial service addresses, executive names and capsule histories of their conversion to Systematics software, replete with citations in American Banker.[17]

The Systematics information and Vince Foster's last weekend with Webster Hubbell and Michael Cordoza came together to float the last odd rumors about the PROMIS program. Instead of the recreational affair it was described as during the Congressional Whitewater hearings, the source of this new speculation suggested that the Clinton cronies met to plot damage control over a burgeoning scandal involving PROMIS. Nearly $3 billion had been emptied out of Swiss bank accounts belonging to dozens of high-powered political types—both Democrats and Republicans—by a CIA faction known during this period as "the Fifth Column." The Fifth Column group served as expert hackers, collecting routine foreign intelligence data, presumably through the PROMIS back-door, when they encountered Vince Foster's name in the Mossad system. From there, they tracked Foster's bank trail to the Banca Della Svizzera Italiana, a small Italian border bank, where the Israelis deposited $2.73 million. The rumors only speculated about what Foster gave the Israelis: high level intelligence information; encryption codes; data on black operations subcontractors—he was dead before it could be figured out. Whatever it was, the Fifth Column tipped its hand to Foster that he was under investigation by removing the money, although according to the story his was not the only account raided. Making another apparently regular one-day trips to Geneva, Foster discovered the missing money, and later perhaps someone mentioned to him that he was under investigation for espionage, and thereafter he became suicidal.[18]

---

1. Safire, William, "No Wonder Bush Is Quiet About Clinton," *Houston Chronicle*, September 10, 1993.

2. Taylor, Michael and Littman, Jonathan, "Death of Conspiracy Investigator Probed," *San Francisco Chronicle*, February 12, 1994.

3. Sarah McClendon's *Washington Report*, January 6, 1994.

4. McClendon.

5. The Mena story begins with a drug dealer named Barry Seal who apparently began smuggling drugs through the airstrip in 1982. The operation continued past Seal's 1984 drug conviction in Miami. As Seal began working deals with the Drug Enforcement Agency and Ollie North's network after that conviction—trading undercover work against the Sandinistas for leniency—a

second wave of questionable businesses descended upon Mena. These businesses described themselves variously as aircraft and parts delivery services, but stories of drug traffic continued.

In 1989, new allegations were made by a former investigator for the US military, Gene Wheaton, that the airfield was also used for commando training. The Arkansas state police investigated and reported to the US attorney, but expected indictments were never returned, leading to the suspicion that the Reagan administration could add one more small cover-up to its tally. Apparently, Bill Clinton did not become involved with the story until a pair of students at the University of Arkansas—Mark Swaney and Tom Brown—appealed directly to their then-governor to investigate. The appeal, and another call for a state grand jury from Arkansas' deputy state prosecuting attorney, was stone walled. When Arkansas representative Bill Alexander met with Governor Clinton, he was told that $25,000 in state money had been set aside to investigate Mena. The amount was too slight for an effective investigation but even that was never delivered. The prosecuting attorney in Mena's Polk County at the time said he never received the offer from the then-governor's office.

The IRS began an investigation of Barry Seals' operation in Mena after Seal was murdered in Baton Rouge, Louisiana by Columbian drug traffickers, but according to Bill Duncan, a former IRS investigator, the investigators were warned off, causing Duncan to quit and testify before a House committee about all he had learned of money laundering, covert operations and drug smuggling in Mena.

The claim that Clinton was remiss in not investigating Mena was first made public by Larry Nichols in a defamation suit against the governor. Clinton had hired Nichols as marketing director for the Arkansas Development Finance Authority but fired him when his alleged contacts with the contras became too apparent, citing the charge that Nichols had made unauthorized phone calls to Central America as a reason for the firing. In Nichols' subsequent lawsuit contesting that charge, he also first publicized the claims of Gennifer Flowers.

The court case of Terry Reed also added much to the Mena story. In 1988, Reed was charged with postal fraud for receiving insurance money on a false claim. Reed claimed that his airplane had been stolen as part of an Ollie North-styled project called "Project Donation," wherein "donations" to the contra cause were filed as lost or stolen with insurance companies and then reimbursed. According to Reed, he had no awareness of "Project Donation" at the time of his plane's disappearance, and so reported it as a legitimate loss. The plane reappeared after Reed learned of the Donation project and warned his contacts in the Ollie North network that he would have no part of it. Reed told his story with co-author John Cummings in *Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA*, published by SPI Books/Shapolsky.

The person who first reported the discovery of what turned out to be Reed's plane to the National Crime Information Center was Raymond L. "Buddy" Young, then working for Bill Clinton as security chief and since chosen by Clinton to head the Dallas regional office of the Federal Emergency Management Agency. Federal Judge Frank Theis later said that Young and an associate "acted with reckless disregard for the truth" in their version of how they came to realize the plane was not stolen. Charges against Reed were dropped.

6. Snepp, Frank, "Clinton and the Smuggler's Airport," *Village Voice*, April 14, 1992.

7. Cockburn, Alexander, "Meters and Mortars," *New Statesman*, March 27, 1992.

8. In "The Crimes of Mena," an article published in the July 1995 issue of *Penthouse*, authors Sally Denton and Roger Morris report that logs found in the plane flown by Eugene Hasenfus—shot down over Nicaragua in October 1986, beginning the Iran-contra scandal—linked it to Area 51. The plane was owned by Barry Seal. The Denton/Morris article does much to document the Mena episode. It was commissioned and later rejected by the *Washington Post*.

9. Cockburn.

10. Cockburn.

11. Davis, L. J., "The Name of the Rose," *The New Republic*, April 4, 1994.

12. "The Lasater Affair, Ghosts of Carelessness Past," *The Economist*, May 7, 1994.

13. Davis.

14. Davidson, Joe, "Hubbell Resigns Key Justice Post In Surprise Move," *Wall Street Journal*, March 15, 1994.

15. "The Foster Death," *Washington Post*, January 14, 1994.

16. Isikoff, Michael, "Conspiracy Theorists Find Foster Case Hard To Resist," *Washington Post*, March 13, 1994.

17. Grabbe, J. Orlin, "Allegations Regarding Vince Foster, the NSA and Banking Transactions," published on the Internet and via fax network, March 1995.

18. Norman, James, R., "Fostergate," *Media Bypass*, Vol. 3, #8, August 1995. Additional details for this particular addenda to the PROMIS story appeared in *The Spotlight*, August 7, 1995 edition, which printed a contemporaneous transcript of an interview with James Norman on Tom Valentine's *Radio Free America* program. The transcript was posted to Brian Redman's *Conspiracy Nation* electronic newsletter (bigxc@prairienet.org), August 2, 1995.

By August, 1993, Danny Casolaro had been dead for two years. A man named Gary Eitel testified before a Congressional committee headed by Rep. Charles Rose (D-NC), which examined the misuse of an "historic aircraft exchange program."

As early as 1991, Eitel learned that private air-cargo companies that contracted with the US Forest Service were using aircraft intended for firefighting duty on unauthorized overseas missions, some allegedly for the CIA. The mastermind of this scheme was a former Air Force pilot named Roy Reagan. After leaving the service, Reagan made a career brokering aircraft deals, and one former military C-130 he had brokered later crashed and burned on a CIA mission in Angola.

In an interview with the *Portland Free Press*, Gary Eitel described his May 23 deposition in federal court as more like an interrogation. Present were an obviously hostile group of powerful attorneys, including Stuart M. Gerson, appointed to the Justice Department by George Bush. Gerson was held over as acting Attorney General in the early Clinton Administration, and later represented defendant Roy Reagan.

As Mr. Eitel prepared to testify before Rep. Rose's congressional committee, a shocking and suspicious turn of events occurred. Eitel's friend and associate from T&G Aviation, Jack Chisum, was run down and killed by an automobile while walking along a roadside.

As the May 23 deposition progressed in federal court, attorneys for the companies made repeated references to the fate of Jack Chisum, and clearly made attempts to reveal Mr. Eitel's unlisted home address.

Under questioning by former acting US Attorney General, Stuart Gerson, Mr. Eitel discussed the fact that public service aircraft require no certification, when Gerson suddenly blurted out a totally unrelated question: "Do you know who killed Danny Casolaro?"

Apparently, Gerson believed that Casolaro was murdered. Mr. Eitel believed that Gerson's totally incongruous question was a direct threat.[1]

---

[1] Titus, John, "CIA Airlines Never Die," *Portland Free Press*, July/August 1995, pp. 4–5.

CHAPTER 21:

Diana

August 31, 1997: intoxicated to some degree with alcohol, Prozac and the sedative Tiapridal, chauffeur Henri Paul took two famous charges, Dodi Al Fayed and Diana, Princess of Wales, on a ride into the Pont D'Alma tunnel underneath the streets of Paris. The only person in the S280 Mercedes sedan to emerge alive from the other end of the tunnel was the accompanying bodyguard, Trevor Rees-Jones. The sedan had passed a white Fiat and, after a blinding flash,[1] it crashed into a concrete tunnel pillar at somewhere between 90 and 110 miles per hour. The car ricocheted and then smashed into the opposite tunnel wall. Paul and the 42-year-old Dodi Al Fayad died instantly. Paramedics gave 34-year-old Diana a blood transfusion at the scene, but her heart stopped in the ambulance en route to the hospital and she died four hours after the crash.

Diana's death made an impact in world history similar only to the Kennedy assassination, which occurred in the year of Diana's birth. Just like that event, the details of how she died became a matter of great debate and conspiratorial theorizing.[2] Just as JFK's death was officially investigated and declared the result of a single gunman acting alone, the official investigation of Diana's death concluded that it was a simple automobile accident. And just as with JFK, a preponderance of unlikely coincidences and unanswered questions left many people suspicious that the crash in the Pont D'Alma tunnel was an orchestrated assassination, done for the sake of keeping Diana from pursuing her relationship with Dodi Al Fayad, an Egyptian, a Muslim and the son of powerful businessman, Mohamed Al Fayed.[3] Some even suggested that Diana was pregnant with Dodi Al Fayed's child at the time of her death.

While such speculation has become not at all unusual in the affairs of public figures, underneath the layers of various competing theories about the death of Diana lie facts, rumors and arcane connections that relate it directly to

Danny Casolaro's Octopus research. Three years after Diana's still unsettled death, which occurred six years after Casolaro's, the disaster in the Pont D'Alma tunnel brought the story of the Octopus, PROMIS software, and Casolaro's world of Iran-contra spies, arms merchants and corrupt politicos back in the news. As noted, the shadowy presence of Adnan Khashoggi once again emerged in the background of Diana's death. Khashoggi was Dodi Fayed's uncle and a well-known broker of military hardware deals involving Saudi Arabia stretching back to the 1970s.[4] Recall that Casolaro had only days left to live when he took his friend Ben Mason down into his basement and proudly showed him several photocopied pages documenting contra arms transfers involving Khashoggi and a partner, Manucher Ghorbanifar, as well as the copies of BCCI checks drawn on Khashoggi's accounts. Mason later reported that Casolaro was elated over a source he was about to meet in West Virginia, someone Casolaro described to Virginia McCullough as being involved in guns-and-drugs transfers. And, of course, Casolaro had told his fellow hotel guest, Mike Looney, that he was meeting with an Arab.

No one has suggested that Casolaro planned to meet Khashoggi or even a compatriot, but he was investigating Iran-contra arms dealings and he did place great importance on that final meeting, and called it something that would wrap up his Octopus research. As with all of his research, however, this tributary led to others involving Octopus entanglements beyond Iran-contra and beyond PROMIS and Inslaw. Casolaro's focus on the Khashoggi documents almost certainly involved knowledge of Khashoggi's April 1986 meeting with Tony Rowland, Australian tycoon, publisher of *The Observer* newspaper and an adversary of Mohammad Al Fayed's attempt to gain British citizenship.[5] Khashoggi, Gorbanifar and journalist/Israeli foreign adviser Amiram Nir attempted to persuade Rowland to join the Iran-contra effort by helping sell arms to Iran. The attempted alliance bogged down after the meeting, when Rowland inquired into US circles about covert support for such an effort. It seems very likely that Casolaro knew about this alliance between Dodi Fayed's maternal uncle, Khashoggi, and his father's bitter enemy, Rowland. The deeper significance, of course, became clear after Casolaro's death, and after Diana's.[6]

Although Casolaro had apparently wrapped up, or was going to wrap up after that final meeting, his research into Iran-contra, he no doubt also took a strong interest in possible Octopus involvement in other covert arms deals involving Khashoggi. That was no small list. It included such little and well known brouhahas in the world of international arms traffic as the Petromonde scandal, the Litton scandal, the Westland Scandal, the Lockheed scandal, the Northrop scandal, the Lina Al-Bassam scandal and, most importantly, the corruption involving the Al Yamamah contracts and Iran-contra.

The amount of attention and detail Casolaro brought to all this parahistory remains lost in the accordion file that disappeared at his death. Adnan Khashoggi's role in the Northrop scandal of the early 1970s was well known to him, however. In 1972 and 1973 Khashoggi had served as the middle man in corruption pay-offs ("commissions" for various arms-deals, often involving the sale of sub-standard equipment to the Saudis) by the aerospace firm Northrop to the head of the Saudi Air Force, General Hashim M. Hashim and to his successor, General Asad Zuhair. Northrop, which also made illegal campaign contributions to Richard Nixon, paid Saudi prince Khaled bin Abdullah over $500,000 in bribes, after Abdullah's public complaint that "If I get nothing, then I will make sure Adnan gets nothing." A Security Exchange Commission investigation of the situation led only to Northrop's signing a pledge to no longer conceal the bribes.

The Saudi royal family outlawed the commissions, but with laws that were ill-defined and never enforced. Extra-contractual "commission" payments continued to maintain the wealth of the Saudi royals. Khashoggi continued as the sole House of Saud contact for arms dealers, through a front company incorporated in Luxembourg, Triad America Corporation, with funds Northrop deposited into a Swiss bank for Khashoggi, who continued to funnel much of it to the Saudi royals. Although the Northrop deal eventually did fall apart, Khashoggi continued to use his connections to King Fahd and Prince Sultan to broker arms deals.[7]

Not the least of these deals was the Al Yamamah contract umbrella, a central contractual arrangement signed in Riyadh in February 1986, that supported both the British aerospace industry and the corrupt wealth of the Saudi royal family. Through this series of contracts, the Saudis turned over oil to the Bank of England, which allowed for its sale through Shell Oil and British petroleum. Profits from that were turned over to the UK's defense ministry, which paid the British Aerospace corporation when it provided military hardware to Saudi Arabia. Like the Northrop arrangements, the Al Yamamah umbrella comes replete with "commissions" and bribes, and involves the delivery of substandard military hardware.[8]

In a search for justice in what he regarded as the murder of his son and Princess Diana, Mohammad Al Fayed returned to the history and speculation about the multinational Octopus cabal. In the early fall of 2000, Al Fayed filed a Freedom of Information Act suit against the CIA and several other US intelligence services. He declared his intent to recover documents originally surfaced by a self-proclaimed CIA agent named Oswald LeWinter. LeWinter previously had tried to sell documents to an Al Fayed cohort in Austria, documents purportedly implicating the British government in the Diana crash. LeWinter was arrested as a fraud, however, and sentenced in Vienna to four years in 1998.

LeWinter apparently still holds to the authenticity of the doucments, stating that "I had a choice at my arrest to identify the documents as genuine or as fakes. If I said genuine, I would face charges in the US of high treason ... so I said they were forgeries and was arrested for fraud."

Only one of LeWinter's documents surfaced in the British press after being seized by police in Vienna, the document below.

DOMESTIC COLLECTION DIVISION
Foreign Intelligence Information Report
Directorate of Intelligence

WARNING NOTICE—INTELLIGENCE SOURCES AND METHODS INVOLVED FURTHER DISSEMINATION AND USE OF THE INFORMATION SUBJECT TO CONTROLS STATED IN BEGINNING AND END OF REPORT

REPORT CLASS: TOP SECRET
REPORT NO: 00.D 831/173466-97
COUNTRY: France
DATE DISTR: 17 June 1997
SUBJECT: File Overview: Diana Princess of Wales-Dodi
REFERENCES DCI Case 64376
SOURCE: CASParis/CASLondon/COSGeneva/CASKingston/ UK citizen Ken Etheridge.

1. Relationship initiated between Diana POW and Dodi aF according to reliable intel sources in November 1996. Intimacy begins shortly after they meet. (Report filed)

2. Reliable source reports Palace seriously disturbed by liaison. PM considers any al Fayed relationship politically disastrous. Edinburgh sees serious threat to dynasty should relationship endure. Quote reported: "Such an affair is racially and morally repugnant and no son of a bedouin camel trader is fit for the mother of a future king," Edinburgh. (Report filed)

3. Request from highest circles to DEA attache UK for 6 on Dodi re: Cocaine. See file forwarded to UK embassy DC. (Copy filed)

4. US liaison to MI6 requested by David Spedding for assistance in providing permanent solution to Dodi problem. Blessing of the Palace secured. (Twiz filed)

5. WHuse denies Spedding request. Harrison authorized only to arrange meeting for MI6 representative with K-Team Geneva. (Twiz on file)

6. Meeting in Geneva reportedly successful. (Report filed)

> 7. Al Fayed Mercedes Limo stolen and returned with electronics missing. Reliable intel source confirms K-Team involved. Source reports car rebuilt to respond to external radio controls. (Report filed.)"[9]

Writer Rayelan Allan[10] made the following correlation between the LeWinter document and many of the figures Casloaro had followed as part of the Octopus involvement in Iran-contra:

The connection between Al Fayed and the Iran/contra scandal was difficult to prove, but Richard Taus, former FBI agent states that Al Fayed and Khashoggi were connected to the Iran/contra scandal through Castle Securities. Castle Securities was formerly Drexel Company, which was connected to Drexel, Burnham, Lambert and the junk bonds scandal. Taus states that many people who were involved in Castle Securities part of a group out of Freeport, Long Island known as the K-Team. Most if not all K-Team members were part of the Iran/contra scandal. Taus reported that the K-Team was a CIA operation which included many infamous names such as Oliver North, Admiral John Poindexter, Richard Secord, and Adnan Khashoggi...

Lord Earl Spencer (Diana's father) was the best friend of Adnan Khashoggi's brother-in-law, Mohammad Al Fayed. Al Fayed was connected to the K-Team and its enterprises through Castle Securities. The ten year friendship between Lord Spencer and Al Fayed eventually lad to the introduction of Al Fayed's 40-year-old son, Emad 'Dodi' Fayed, to Princess Diana. Mohammad El Fayed and Adnan Khashoggi had been connected to the K-team through their business deals. The K-team was/is made up of CIA operatives who were/are members of Faction 1—the New World Order, and Faction 2—the opposition to the NWO. Al Fayed and Khashoggi were connected to the men who make up Faction 2.[11]

The idea of the factional split in the global police intelligence community had a long life in the Casolaro saga. Danger Man Riconosciuto previously maintained that two factions, COM-12 and Aquarius, had leaked information to Casolaro in order to embarass and manipulate each other.

As the accumulation of rumor and speculation continued to move Diana and the Octopus closer together in the thinking of conspiracy students, Riconsociuto emerged again to make a connecting link. The Royal Canadian Mounted Police, key players in the original tale of the PROMIS software piracy, reopened its investigation into the affair in 1999/2000 when it conducted a series of interviews with a former stockbroker in Ontario named John Belton. Reporters from the *Toronto Star* discovered from Belton that the RCMP had reopened its investigation into the Canadian role in the Inslaw affair and the possible threat it represented to Canadian security. "Belton said RCMP officers have already confirmed to him that they do use the PROMIS software [and the security of the

RCMP has been compromised as a result of trap doors in the software]....The chainsmoking Belton unraveled his story at the kitchen table of his sprawling, ramshackle house near Ottawa. The table is stacked with thick binders jammed with documents detailing his allegations. Court documents, detailed notes of telephone conversations and newspaper clippings are marked up with highlighter and neatly organized." The *Star* quoted Belton as saying, "You're not dealing with paranoid crazies, or the UFO guys. I'm very serious about this."[12]

Belton's story affirms details that have long been supplied by arms merchant and former Israeli spy Ari Ben-Menasche, who went on to work as a security consultant in Montreal. At the time of Belton's revelations to the Canadian press, Ben-Menasche reported that renewed interest in the case had led two Scotland Yard detectives to fly over and interview him. Their purpose: to discuss meetings Ben-Menasche had with none other than Mohammad Al Fayed. Details of that contact have yet to surface, but the Scotland Yard investigators were inexplicably accompanied by the two RCMP officers working on the (unofficially) reopened PROMIS case, Sean McDade and Randy Buffam.[13]

Investigators also spoke with Riconosciuto's lawyer, Louis Buffardi, and Riconosciuto himself repeated the details of his involvement with PROMIS, but both made another unexpected connection of it all to a 1997 Octopus-style double homicide in Hercules, California. Like members of the Cabazon tribe before them, the bodies of 12-year-old Brendan Abernathy and his 43-year-old father Neal, who owned a car repair shop, were found bound in their living room, wrapped in electrical cable and shot execution style. Acquaintance with Riconosciuto may have been among the motives for their murder. Mountie McDade joined Hercules police detective Sue Todd in a prison interview of Riconosciuto, but the details of how the Canadian case related to the California murder, as well as its connection to Ari Ben-Menasche and Mohammad El Fayed, and to the death of Diana, remains unclear.

---

1. An internet posting to the *Conspiracy Theory Research List* (CTRL) from September 11, 1997 echoed reports that photographs from the scene at one point reveal a motorcyclist ahead of the Mercedes popping flashbulbs into the eyes of driver Henri Paul. The motorcyclist/photographer was not among the paparazzi arrested at the scene. The report of the flash persisted three years later, as a former MI6 agent named Richard Tomlinsin reported that "Henri Paul was an MI6 informer paid to spy on Diana and Dodi. The Diana crash was chillingly similar to a previous MI6 plot. That plot was to assassinate the Serbian leader Slobodon Milosevic in Geneva using a powerful laser strobe light—similar to that described by witnesses to the Paris crash—to blind the driver." The laser strobe, publicized greatly in an English documentary entitled *Diana: Secrets Behind The Crash*, was mentioned again by Dodi Al Fayed's father Mohammed Al Fayed during a press conference announcing his Freedom of Information Act suit against the CIA and other US intelligence agencies for documents pertaining to the crash. One witness, secretary Brenda Wells, made statements strongly discriminating the strobe flash from the paparazzi flashbulbs.

2. The following list outlines some suspicious details about the car crash:

- It took an hour and forty minutes to get Diana to the Pitie Salpetiere hospital. Four other hospitals were closer. The White House, and consequently the US intelligence community, regards the Pitie Salpetriere as the official hospital of choice for officials visiting Paris. (This slowness has been described as part of the French inclination to stabilize a vicitm before proceding to hospital and as an attempt by the ambulance to not aggravate Diana's injuries.)

- Early news reports had Diana up and walking around immediately after the crash. She also supposedly was able to speak some words, and reportedly one photograph of the scene showed her utterly unbloodied.

- A few weeks prior to the accident, the Mercedes had been stolen from the garage of the Ritz hotel, where the fatal ride began. Police recovered the car but found that its instrumentation had been tampered with. Shortly thereafter, the car was reinspected and reconditioned.

- Contrary to normal procedures for bodyguards, guard Trevor Rees-Jones fastened his seatbelt before the ride. The others did not. Rees-Jones later claimed amnesia about the event, not due to trauma but to the drugs he recieved in the hospital for his severe facial injuries.

- Henri Paul appears sober in video footage taken at the Ritz Hotel just before the fatal ride. The notion that Paul was severely alcoholic has been challenged by friends and family.

- A mysterious $200,000 had been deposited in Henri Paul's bank account just prior to the wreck. Former MI6 agent Richard Tomlinson claims the money came from MI6.

- The French opened up the tunnel roadway only hours after the crash and neglected to collect important evidence. Even establishment apologist Gerald Posner acknowledged the incompetence of the French investigation.

- Seventeen cameras inside the tunnel failed to operate at the time of the crash.

- The papparazzi photographer who may have owned the white Fiat encountered by the death car, James Andanson, died under questionable circumstances in May 2000. Police discovered Adnandson's burned body in a charred BMW in the Aveyron woodland, near the village of Nant in Southwestern France. Previously, Andanson's Paris office had been burglarized by three masked and well-trained men who wounded a security guard and for a while kept the office staff hostage. It took four weeks for police to identify Andanson's remains from DNA tests. Official investigators claim that the white paint of Andanson's Fiat did not match that recovered from scrape marks on the Merecedes, and consider Andanson's death a suicide, despite the bizarre circumstances.

3. Mohammed Al Fayed owns the posh Harrod's department store in London. He has worked hard to ferret out government documents held in secret and other information concerning possible plots in the death of his son Dodi and his son's lover Diana. The UK government has long denied Mohammed Fayed's application for British citizenship and has looked askance at the impact his wealth and influence have had on politics in England. The UK government has also deferred his request for a full inquiry into the crash to the official French investigation most people find seriously flawed. Mohammed Al Fayed holds the view that Queen Elizabeth's husband, Prince Philip, the Duke of Edinburgh, ordered the deaths of his son and Diana and is now using the CIA, MI5

and MI6 to cover it up. He has, of course, been dismissed as a conspiracy theory nutter. The status of his lawsuit and any new information about his investigative effort can be found at his website, www.alfayed.com.

4. Khashoggi spent three semesters studying economics at Chico State University in California before starting a business renting his truck to companies doing business in Saudi Arabia. After college, he developed those contacts into a role as a liaison between US and Saudi corporations and the Saudi military, primarily under Sultan bin Abdul Aziz. That role, in its various legal and extra-legal dimensions, brought Adnan Khashoggi to great wealth as a broker of long-term deals involving military hardware. In the transformation from renting out his truck to shepherding arrangements for tanks and jet fighters, Khashoggi came to own a dozen estates and a $70 million yacht docked at Porto Banus, Spain. The yacht, called the Nabila, appears in the James Bond movie *Never Say Never Again.* Khashoggi later sold it to his friend, Donald Trump. The 1987 biography of Adnan Khashoggi, published by Warner Books and written by Ronald Kessler, is entitled *The Richest Man In The World.*

5. Alex Constantine notes, "Tiny Rowland was the publisher of London's *Observer* until reporter Tom Bower researched the financier's past a few years ago and discovered him to be a former Hitler Youth Corps leader. Rowland served a spell in an allied detainment camp toward the end of the war, then migrated to South Africa and found enormous wealth there in the mining industry. Thereupon he relocated to the UK to purchase the *Observer* and rub shoulders with some of the most notorious movers in the world business community, including Daniel Ludwig, a hotel magnate who retains a PR agency solely to keep his name out of the newspapers." (10/13/97)

6. Peter Rushton claimed on the *alt.politics.org.cia* internet list that he had been given "a large file of allegations against Rowland" by Francesca Pollard as part of a counter-offensive launched by Mohammad Al Fayed against intrique by Arab industrialist Ashraf Marwan, working as a front for Tiny Rowland, to secure a large number of shares in the House of Fraser, the company that owns Fayed's Harrod's.

The battle between Roland and Mohammad Al Fayed was fought in part with the help of Nemi Chand Jain, known also as Chandraswami. The followers of Chandraswami, one of India's swarm of gurus for the jet-setting elite, include Indian Prime Minister Narasimha, Tiny Rowland and Adnan Khashoggi. At one point Chandraswami circulated a faked tape of Mohammad Al Fayed admitting that he acquired Harrod's with the help of the Sultan of Brunei. He also introduced to Khashoggi a woman named Pamela Bordes, whose wile apparently helped Khashoggi seal deals. Bordes was quoted as saying she was physically afraid of Khashoggi but mentally afraid of Chandraswami.

7. In 1996, the Committee Against Corruption in Saudi Arabia (CACSA) reported, "The reverberations of Saudi Arabia's procurement of over eighty Northrop F-SE/F's are still being felt today, even as the kingdom seeks to replace the top heavy aircraft with newer, sleeker trainer-fighter models. Saudi Arabia also bought F-SNB's from Northrop in 1971, the first phase of the contract, a few years before they bought the F-5EIF's. The deal was worth $4.2 billion before they bought the F-5EIF's.

"The F-5's still have to be maintained until they are replaced. Three years ago, the Minister of Defense, Prince Sultan bin Abdul Aziz, pressured Northrop to award the maintenance contract to the Al Salam Aircraft Company, which was described as 'poorly managed.' (*Mednews—Middle East Defense News*, April 19, 1993). The joint venture company was established to handle the overhaul of both Royal Saudi Air Force and Saudia, the commercial carrier aircraft. Al Salam's facilities at the Riyadh airport are inadequate because its overhaul hangars are not connected to the runway, rendering them inaccessible to planes, and because the hangars do not have an adequate power supply for the maintenance and repair work Al Salam was set up to do."

Khashoggi's talent at brokering deals emerged again in 2003. In the *New Yorker* ("Annals of National Security, Lunch with the Chairman," March 17, 2003), Seymour Hersh reported that Khashoggi arranged meetings between a wealthy Saudi industrialist named Harb Saleh al-Zuhair and Richard Perle, who served in the Bush administration as chairman of the Defense Policy Board, an advisory group to the Pentagon. Perle was also one of the neoconservative architects of the administration's "pax Americana" foreign policy and a strident advocate of invading Iraq. It was his role as a partner in a venture capital firm that caught Hersh's attention, however. The company, Trireme Partners L.P., produced defense and anti-terrorist technologies. It had sent a letter to Khashoggi stating that war and the fears of terrorism would greatly increase the demand for Trireme's services. Boeing had already contributed twenty million dollars in an attempt to attract investors like Khashoggi and his friends, according to the letter. It was a shameless attempt at war profiteering, but also a clear conflict of interest because of Perle's government position. After the Hersh article, Perle was forced to resign as Defense Policy Board chairman, although he continued to serve on the board (along with the likes of Henry Kissinger). He even threatened to sue Hersh over the controversy.

8. Information about Al Yamamah comes largely from the dissident group within Saudi Arabia, since British Aerospace does not reveal terms of the contract and the British press has been slow to investigate. The Committee reported that "The Saudi Arabian government has British Aerospace wrapped around its finger because revenues from the al-Yamamah deal saved the company from going under. In the early 1990s, it was losing as much as $1.8 billion dollars a year... British Aerospace agreed to supply Saudi Arabia with forty-eight Tornadoes, thirty Hawks, thirty Pilatus PC 9s, two Jetstream trainers, and a variety of missiles and ground based equipment in exchange for oil. Two years later, under Al-Yamamah, the Saudi government ordered forty-eight more Tornados.

In January 1993, immediately after the company reported one of the worst annual losses of any British company ever, Saudi Arabia ordered more Tornados. The focus of the Al-Yamamah contract is money, not weapons. In the words of George Galloway, the Saudi govervnemt has ordered "vast amounts of unusable weapons" which were worth millions of pounds to British aerospace. The Saudi government does not care whether the weapons work. The royal family is using the al-Yamamah deal as a cover." (Internet posting, September 19, 1997.)

Researcher DasGoat summarized, "It was in the context of the joint US-British trade in arms in the Middle East, camouflaged by Operation Desert Storm—that Khashoggi's brother-in-law Mohammad Al Fayed apparently managed somehow to bring down the British government, or rather the conservatives around Thatcher (and her protege John Major) who, indistinquishable from Republicans around Reagan and Bush, turned their nation's treasury into a personal slush fund, making their fortunes from investing in corrupt and criminal activities (whitewashed as covert operations or wars) in the arms and drugs market." (To *CTRL* list, 9/11/97.)

9. "Edinburgh" here refers to Prince Phillip; "WHuse" refers to the White House; and David Spedding is the head of MI6.

10. In 1997, Rayelan Allan provided a fanciful but fascinating discussion of the history behind the fateful crash site, under the psuedonym "Ru Mills" via Brian Redman's *Conspiracy Nation*:

> Princess Diana and her soon-to-be husband, Dodi Fayed, were fatally injured in the Pont de l'Alma tunnel. The site is ancient, dating back to the time of the Merovingian kings (ca. 500—751 A.D.), and before. In pre-Christian times, the Pont de l'Alma was a pagan sacrificial site. Note that in the pagan connotation, at least, sacrifice is not to be confused with murder: the sacrificial victim had to be a willing participant.

> In the time of the Merovingian kings, the Pont de l'Alma was an underground chamber. Founder of the Merovingian dynasty was Merovaeus, said to be descended from the union of a sea creature and a French queen. Merovaeus followed the pagan cult of Diana. In Middle English, "soul" (Alma) has as etymology "descended from the sea." "Pont" has as a Latin root "pontifex," meaning a Roman high priest. (See also pons, pontis—bridge; passage.) "Alma" comes from the Latin "almus," meaning nourishing. One translation of Pont de l'Alma would be "bridge of the soul." Another would be "passage of nourishment." All true European royalty is descended from the Merovingians, which are believed to be descendants of Jesus Christ.
>
> During the Merovingian era, if two kings had a dispute over property, it was settled in combat at Pont de l'alma. According to legend, anyone killed there goes straight to Heaven and sits at the right hand of God, watching over all his foe was to do. The person killed in combat was actually considered to be the "winner," since he became God's eyes on earth and could even manipulate events.
>
> The current British royal family are imposters. The House of Windsor is a fraud. But the lineage of Lady Diana Spencer goes back to Charles II House of Stewart. The House of Stewart is of "true" royal blood. Diana's sons, William and Harry, have three quarters true nobility in their blood.

Rayelan Allan developed her thesis that Diana's death was arranged in order to use her image to create a world-controlling religion in the book, *Diana, Queen of Heaven*, available at the web site www.dianaqueenofheaven.com.

11. Allan, Rayelan, "Diana Was Not The Target," *Paranoia* Magazine, Issue 24, Fall 2000.

12. Lawton, Valerie and Thompson, Allan, "Rigged Software Claimed To Hack Intelligence Files," *Toronto Star*, August 28, 2000.

13. Lawton, Valerie, "Spy Trap Probe Now Tied To US and Britain," *Toronto Star*, August 29, 2000.

CHAPTER 22:

Jim Keith

Jim Keith often sat at a Reno bar, drinking Coronas with lime served by his friend, the bartender Seth Jameson. Some nights he also met with a person Seth knew as Keith's Sufi contact.

Seth knew Keith well;[1] he knew little of the Sufis. Sufism has origins in the early Islam of the desert nomads, although the Sufi Order of the West was founded in London in 1910 for the "transmission of spiritual truth in a manner that is consistent with modern, Western culture."[2] For years, Jim Keith collected obscure bits of information for various zines[3] and books that featured his writing. Unlike Danny Casolaro, whose story so intrigued Keith that he helped write this book on Casolaro, Keith did not operate in total obscurity. He was well-known, practically a celebrity in the world of marginals publishing. He lectured regularly at conspiracy and UFO conferences and had several acclaimed titles to his credit.[4] Keith regaled conspiracy theorists for many years. He was pleased that he had found such an obscure source from a mysterious, religious/mystical background, the Sufis. He had a second column due for a new online newsletter called *Nitro News.*

Keith's Sufi friend told him of returning from a trip to London for *Dhikr*, a celebration of Allah that often involved ecstatic trance states. He told Keith that the ceremony was attended by the personal physician of Dodi Fayed, the man who died with Diana on the fateful day of the Pont D'Alma tunnel crash. The doctor, a non-Sufi Muslim, privately revealed a great secret to Keith's Sufi friend: Diana was pregnant when she died. The doctor had personally made the examination and verified the pregnancy.

Keith felt that this was just the thing to follow the *Nitro News* column he had written on the possible conspiracy in the plane crash that killed JFK, Jr. A question remained, however. What was that physician's name? Keith hoped he could get two columns out of this, one asserting the idea of the pregnancy, another giving the name of the physician. Nitro News had been slow in paying, so he wanted to stretch out the writing chores. The Sufi provided him with the name after another assurance that his own name would be kept anonymous.

Perhaps Keith thought of Casolaro as he parted company with the Sufi and determined to go home and knock out that column. Home those days was a trailer outside of Reno. Keith returned to it and wrote this column:

> PRINCESS DIANA WAS PREGNANT; FAYED'S PHYSICIAN EXAMINED HER
>
> Recent French findings have not put to rest the suspicion that a conspiracy was responsible for the death of Diana, Princess of Wales, millionaire Dodi Fayed, and driver, Henri Paul, in Paris on August 31, 1997. The case for conspiracy is familiar enough to those who delve into the hidden side of world politics.
>
> Diana had crossed the reigning House of Windsor, and had taken on the color of an enemy to the throne of Great Britain. Born of competing Stuart Royal line, she had been a thorn in the side of the British Monarchy virtually from the beginning of her marriage to Prince Charles. She was far more popular than the aloof Charles, and a perception of unfair treatment by the Royal Family only added to already numerous calls for the abolition of the Monarchy.
>
> It is fair to think that the House of Windsor may have seen Diana as becoming dangerously powerful, and as a threat to its future. She was also viewed as a threat to other elements of the British establishment, including the arms industry, whose lucrative business in death was challenged by her calls for an international ban on land mines. Diana had already been targeted with surveillance and wiretaps by Britain's domestic intelligence agency, MI5, and through the leaking of her private conversations to the press.
>
> At least two persons close to Diana and Dodi Fayed have told the press that the couple was planning on marrying. They had been dating for nine months, and Dodi's purchase of a quarter million dollar diamond ring for her provided additional confirmation.
>
> The British establishment would have seen a marriage to Dodi Fayed as an alliance with the Muslim world, and there was the real possibility that Diana would convert to the Islamic faith. Equally important, Dodi's father was billionaire Muhammad Fayed, related to the Saudi Royal Family. He is alleged to have compromised many British politicians through the use of his bribes and other incentives.
>
> Of central importance to the belief that Diana may have been murdered are unconfirmed reports that she was pregnant by Dodi Fayed at the time of her death. Certainly, the birth of a child with Egyptian blood, half-brother to Diana's sons, would have been seen as a devastating event to the rulers of Britain. So far, however, no conclusive proof has been offered that she was

> pregnant. I have now obtained the closest thing to proof that will probably ever be revealed.
>
> Confirmation of Diana's pregnancy comes from a unique source: through the network of the Middle Eastern religious group called the Sufis. The Sufis are a meditative, mystical offshoot of the Islamic faith, and several members of this group are friends of the author.
>
> One of my Sufi contacts, who chooses to remain anonymous traveled to London to participate in *Dhikr*, a remembrance of Allah. Both Sufis and orthodox Muslims attended this ritual. My contact reports that while participating in this ceremony, he met Dodi Fayed's personal physician, a man who is a Muslim, but is not a Sufi. In private conversation, the physician told him that Diana and Dodi Fayed had planned on getting married, and that he had personally examined her and determined that she was pregnant.
>
> If this is the case, why has this physician not come forward and told the press? One can only speculate. Perhaps this information is being kept secret as part of a larger indictment when Muhammad Fayed finally weighs in with proof of a conspiracy.

Keith sent the new column to his editors at *Nitro News*, planning to use the physician's name in the next one next. He planned to do this after a visit to the Burning Man festival in Black Rock, just north of Reno.[5]

The lore of the Burning Man attracted Keith. Larry Harvey, Jerry James and twenty sympaticos started the event by burning an eight-foot stick figure of a man on Baker Beach in San Francisco in June of 1986. Harvey did it to purge himself of feelings from a romance gone wrong; the others had their own reasons to create a symbolic break from the past. The stick burning had long been moved to Black Rock and had become a massive 50-foot effigy for over 15,000 heavily dosed revelers. Keith did not have a past to purge, but he did have a reputation to protect and promote as Reno's top party animal. As a top bar fly on the Reno scene, especially for his UFO conspiracy talk group at the Planet 9 bar on East Fourth Street, how could he not go? Burning Man consisted of intense mass hedonistic revelry, fireworks and pyrotechnics, thousands of free spirits practicing amateur performance art and drug-abundant celebration.

He eventually found himself on one of the many stages at Burning Man. He was seen by many in the party atmosphere shaking hands, laughing with the rest of the crowd, bumping into people. At some point, however, he lost his balance and fell off the Burning Man stage.

Keith's long-time friend, Wayne Henderson, later imagined Keith's situation the following morning:

> He is disheveled; still wearing most of what he was wearing last night (good performance; GREAT party) and the first thing he notices is that he's got a monumental case of dragonmouth, and a headache. Oh, and his leg hurts.
>
> He rises, goes to the bathroom with a cup of strong coffee in his hand and some Led Zeppelin on the stereo. The aspirin starts to kick in, the headache begins to fade. His leg hurts. He gargles, showers. Gets another cup of 40-weight coffee.
>
> He rummages through a pile of papers on his work desk. Book manuscript (GOT to finish that intro) e-mails, articles, letters (got to answer that one from IllumiNet), back issue of *Steamshovel Press* (his leg hurts), more letters, more e-mails (should get online today, *Conspiracy Journal* is due), dog-eared invitation to a party at the Burning Man festival, what was I looking for anyway?
>
> God-all-MIGHTY, what the HELL did I do to my LEG? On the phone, make arrangements to go to the hospital and have a doctor look at this, put a splint on the darned thing, I've got work to do, for Chrissakes..."[6]

The pain was such that Keith called paramedics, who delivered him to the Washoe Medical Center in Reno. He balked at the idea of anesthesia and surgery, but the Washoe doctors explained to him that the tibia fracture he suffered at Burning Man required both. Keith's nephew Chris Davis came out to be with him at Washoe. Keith told him, "I have a feeling that if they put me under I'm not coming back. I know if I get put under, I am going to die." [7] The doctors insisted that the surgical procedure was routine.

Keith called his old friend from Planet 9, George Pickard, and told him that one of the hospital attendants had the same name as someone he debated months ago on MSNBC. The topic had been black helicopters and this person represented the Pentagon in arguing that the choppers just do not exist. [8] Ordinarily Keith liked these kinds of coincidences. They were fodder for his writing. This time, he told Piccard, it was getting a bit too weird. His came out to Washoe to be with Keith. "I was told that Jim was in room 106, on the first floor," Pickard later reported, "When I checked that room, 106, I found an elderly lady with a completely different name. A nurse refused to tell me what happened and directed me to an unidentified family spokesperson for information." [9]

Somewhere between nephew Davis' visit and George Pickard's attempt, Keith assented, very reluctantly, to the anesthetic and the surgery. He died on the operating table.

On September 7, 1999, a blood clot traveled from Jim Keith's leg to his lung during or shortly after surgery that Washoe Medical Center doctors assured him was routine, and killed him. "There's no conspiracy here," Washoe County deputy coroner Steve Finnell later assured a Reno *Gazette-Journal* reporter, "This could happen to any one. We see it all of the time. This is considered an accidental death."[10]

A great outpouring of grief at the passing of this celebrity of the conspiracy circuit appeared in the form of several memorial web pages, but none of the comments stated the overriding sentiment at news of Jim Keith's death more succinctly than that of writer Jim Hougan:

"A fucking knee operation?"[11]

A debate followed for many months about whether or not to regard Keith's death with suspicion. The strange coincidence that *Nitro News*, which posted Keith's column about Princess Diana to the web the day before Keith left for Burning Man, went mysteriously offline for two weeks just before the news of Keith's death, fanned the flames of suspicion. Had Keith's demise been orchestrated by the Octopus? Had someone whacked Keith's knee at Burning Man? Did the Pentagon send an assassin to Washoe Medical? As with Danny Casolaro, a proper investigation never happened and most accepted deputy coroner Finnell's explanation, as disquieting as it seemed to other potential patients in Washoe County.

Keith himself would have noted the coincidences: that he died shortly after writing about Diana's pregnancy, but before he named the physician; that even that column mysteriously disappeared from the web; that he died prematurely, at age 49, under unusual circumstances; the strange coincidence of the name of that hospital attendant. Death by blood clot in this way is rare, despite the assertions of the deputy coroner. It should not have happened. That it happened to Keith was one more of those bizarre coincidences that leave people scratching their heads, like all of the deaths surrounding Danny Casolaro's research.

Among Keith's professional associates, news of his death hit Ron Bonds the hardest. Bonds ran IllumiNet Press in Lilburn, Georgia. IllumiNet published the majority of Keith's books. Bonds wrote to one memorial site, "He was more like a partner here. He did all of our proofreading, he typed up stuff for me and we talked on the phone every day! He was like a consultant. It'll be a real drag to keep on without his help and input."[12] Keith's death took a large toll on Bonds and IllumiNet. Although he continued to publish—he had at least three of the prolific Keith's manuscripts on hand[13]—he and his wife began making plans to move into the real estate business.

Bonds began IllumiNet after a brief career as a record producer and promoter for a Label called *Elvis On Drugs*, and at one point he started a church called the Church of Beaver Cleaver. A perverse sense of humor and a Southern charm characterized everything that Bonds did. One of his early discoveries as a publisher was Kerry Thornley, the Marine corps chum of Lee Harvey Oswald. Bonds had published *The Idle Warrior*, a novel Thornley wrote about Oswald long before the assassination, and *The Principia Discordia*, a Monty Pythonesque lampoon of religion. Bonds also reprinted *The Mothman Prophecies*, a classic work of UFO literature by the writer John Keel, was sold as a Hollywood movie, but even in death, Jim Keith was his top-seller as well as his close friend.[14]

Bonds carried on half-heartedly for months. Then, on April 7, 2001, he and his wife Nancy went to lunch at an El Azteca restaurant near their home in Lilburn, Georgia. Later that night, at about 9 PM, Bonds headed to the bathroom following an attack of nausea. For the next six hours, his condition worsened, with diarrhea and vomiting, and he asked Nancy to call an ambulance before he collapsed on the floor of the bathroom. He was unconscious when the ambulance arrived. It took him to Grady Memorial Hospital in Atlanta because it had a better trauma unit than nearby DeKalb General. Medical personnel inserted tubes through his mouth and nose and into his lungs and intestines, but nothing stopped the swelling and massive bleeding in his stomach and colon. On April 8, at 5:30 AM Ron Bonds died from the bleeding at age 48.[15]

After an autopsy the following day, the Fulton county coroner, Dr. Henninger, determined that the bacteria *clostridium perfringens* caused the swelling, and that it came from contaminated food Bonds ate at the El Azteca. Health inspectors were called out and they discovered that the beef served at El Azteca contained bacteria in excess of what could be considered harmful to health, although an acceptable level for many people. Reactions to clostridium perfingens vary greatly among individuals and Bonds had suffered from chronic gastritis. Through credit card receipts, the health inspectors tracked down 118 El Azteca customers from that day. Only seven had diarrhea in the period following their consumption of food at the restaurant, five had cramps and three vomited. A 1999 study by the Centers for Disease Control indicated that a fatal reaction to *clostridium perfringens* food poisoning occurs in .0005 percent of cases.[16]

The last book Bonds published by Jim Keith was *Biowarfare in America*, which discussed targeted biotoxins. In it, Keith quoted Larry Wayne Harris, a man who had been arrested by the FBI in February 1988 for possession of the anthrax bacterium, as claiming that an attempt was made against his life by a needle wielding a cobra venom that induces massive clots to the lungs.[17]

Then in November 2001, a half-dozen additional cases of suspicious circumstances surrounding knee surgery operations were reported across the country. The first of these was a 23-year-old student in Minnesota named Brian Lykins, who died from a clostridium infection. The other cases also involved variants of the clostridium bacteria, eventually traced to a tissue bank in Atlanta, near Ron Bonds' home.[18]

Another strange coincidence: Keith had written specifically about clostridium bacteria previously for FATE, the newsstand digest of paranormal stories. In typical Jim Keith fashion, he had tied it to another offbeat conspiracy topic, cattle mutilations. "Many mutilated cattle have been found marked with fluorescent paint," wrote Keith, "probably to help identify them in the dark. But most telling is that a large percentage of mutilated cattle have also been injected with strains of clostridium bacteria (a genus that includes bacteria that cause blackleg and malignant edema). In a 1970 investigation of bacteriological warfare, Senator Frank Church's Senate Select Committee on Intelligence determined that the CIA had stockpiled canisters of this same bacteria."[19]

How odd that Keith's friend and publisher died of poisoning from the same bacteria, that many knee injuries ended in death due to clostridium and that the clostridium caused "blackleg" in cattle, a term that resonated eerily with the knee injury that claimed Keith's life.

---

1. Jameson, Seth. E-mail correspondence with author, August 15, 2001.

2. Bowker, John, ed., *The Oxford Dictionary of World Religions*, Oxford University Press, 1997, p. 925.

3. Jim Keith's work as a writer for small circulation zines included *Dharma Combat*, published by Keith himself. Typically, one issue of *Dharma Combat* ("a magazine about spirituality, metaphysics and reality" according to its indicia) consisted of 8.5x11 sheets of brightly colored paper, folded in half and side-stapled. The following issue would be printed on several sheets of 11x17 paper, stapled in an upper corner, with a "Permanent Universal Rent Strike" poster as a back cover. Article titles included "Around Again To Armageddon," "Sympathy for the Revel," "The Dulce Base," "Operation Majority," "Demolish Serious Culture," and "Hallucinogenic Hypno-Vision and the Plasmatic Cells of Gaia." Although Keith's zine world of the late 1980s and early 1990s foreshadowed the conspiracy theorist internet free-for-fall, it had the imprimatur of his unique personality. It also included many well-known personalities of the ongoing info underground, such as G. J. Krupey, X. Sharks Despot, Wayne Henderson and Len Bracken.

4. Keith graduated from zines to books, eventually producing many well-known titles highly regarded by readers of conspiracy and parapolitical literature. They include *The Gemstone File* (IllumiNet, 1992); *Black Helicopters: Strikeforce for the New World Order* (IllumiNet, 1994); its sequel, *Black Helicopters II: The Men In Black* (IllumiNet, 1997); *OK Bomb: Conspiracy and Cover-Up* (IllumiNet, 1996); *Mind Control—World Control* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 1997); *Secret and Suppressed* (Feral House, August 1993); *Casebook on Alternative Three* (IllumiNet, 1997); *Saucers of the Illuminati*; *Mass Control: Engineering Human Consciousness* (IllumiNet, 2000); and *Biowarfare In America* (IllumiNet, 2001). Keith also co-authored the first edition of *The Octopus: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro*, published by Feral House in 1996.

5. *Bad Day At Black Rock* is a famous Spencer Tracy movie released in 1955. Wilhelm Reich called it one of his favorites, in fact, and Keith was great admirer of Reich. Movie reviewers have identified the location of the town of Black Rock in that movie as Arizona, California, and "remotely western." The movie includes a character named Reno Smith, however, and it seems likely that it took place in the same town as the Burning Man festival.

6. Henderson, Wayne, "Dimly Visible Through a Fog of Evasions," *Steamshovel Press* #17, 2000, p. 53.

7. Vankin, Jonathan, "Jim Keith: Gone But Not Forgotten," *Conspiracy Currents* Number 54, Conspire.Com, October 22, 1999.

8. Pickard, George, *Erskine Overnight* radio program, September 30, 1999.

9. Pickard, George, from a no longer extant memorial web page for Jim Keith.

10. Damon, Anjeanette, "Rumors Abound in Death of Conspiracy Theorist," *Reno Gazette-Journal*, September 28, 1999.

11. Hougan's books include *Spooks: The Haunting of America—The Private Use of Secret Agents* (William Morrow, 1978); *Secret Agenda, Watergate, Deep Throat and the CIA* (Random House, 1984); and *Kingdom Come, A Novel of Conspiracy* (Ballantine, 2000).

12. Ron Bonds on the *Steamshovel Press* memorial website for Jim Keith, 2000.

13. Powell, Kay, "Ronald Bonds, 48, published conspiracies," Georgia newspaper, April 11, 2001.

14. *Ibid.*

15. Comments by Ron Bonds' widow, Nancy Kratzer, to author, August 2001.

16. Shalhoup, Mara, "Widow sues restaurant: Rarely fatal bacteria contributed to diner's death," *Creative Loafing*, Atlanta, Georgia, August 2001.

17. By the end of 2001, mysterious deaths among microbiologists specializing in infectious disease began to accumulate. They included: Dr. Benito Que (11/12/01, attacked by four men, at least one wielding a baseball bat, in Miami); Don C. Wiley (11/16/01, found dead after jumping, falling or being pushed from a bridge in Memphis, Tennessee); Vladimir Pasechnik (11/23/01); Robert M. Schwartz (12/10/02, stabbed); and Set Van Nguyen (12/14/01), suffocated in a laboratory airlock.

This list moved from the conspiracy rumor circuit to front page news with the Casolaro-like "suicide" of David Kelly on July 18, 2003. Kelly, a microbiologist, had served as the head of the biological inspections team in Iraq before the US invasion. He was outspoken about "sexed up" intelligence reports concerning Iraq's biological weapons used by the US and Britain as a justification for the war. Like Casolaro, Kelly warned of "dark actors playing games" because of what he had researched and discovered before being found dead with a slit wrist not far from his Oxfordshire home.

Kelly also had a direct connection with a previous name on the microbiologist death list. In 1989 he had helped debrief the Soviet defector Vladimir Pasechnik. (Fountain, Nigel and Smith, Sarah A., "Obituary: David Kelly, Biological weapons expert with a reputation for thoroughness," *Guardian*, July 19, 2003.)

18. Lykins' bacterial infection was traced to cartilage taken from a cadaver and supplied by Cryolife, a tissue bank outside of Atlanta. Marcus, Adam, "Knee Surgery Suspended in Minnesota After 3 Die," Yahoo News, November 20, 2001. Majeski, Tom, "Knee Surgery Probe Turns To Cadavers," Pioneer Press, December 7, 2001.

19. Although the exact issue of *Fate* in which this appears is unknown, it appears with a *Fate* copyright on the web at http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/cattle003.html.

CHAPTER 23:

September 11 Epilogue

Ever expanding and morphing into new, more sinister applications, the PROMIS software remains a thing of legend and fact. Legend has it that the ECHELON satellite system, which can photograph automobile license plates from outer space, utilizes some mutation of PROMIS' extrapolation capabilities to fill in the visual contents of those long distance photos.[1] Fact has it that the coming "smart card," a credit-card-sized surveillance tool that can hold over five gigabytes of information on its holder, has been pioneered in the Hong Kong transit system under the name, "the Octopus card."[2]

Fact and legend about PROMIS came together after the world-changing disasters that occurred on September 11, 2001. An Irish nationalist known as "McGuffin" gave an unsourced report that Osama Bin Laden avoided capture by the US military in the months after the World Trade Tower and Pentagon crashes by using PROMIS. He asserted that the FBI turncoat Robert Hanssen passed the version of PROMIS used by British and German intelligence onto Russia, where it proceeded to find itself in the hands of the notorious chief Arab terrorist.[3]

The Justice Department reporter for the *Washington Times* picked up the story and concluded, "The sophisticated software gives Bin Laden access to databases on specific targets of his choosing and the ability to monitor electronic banking transactions, easing money-laundering operations for himself or others."

The Justice department's complaint against Hanssen charged that he made extensive use of FOIMS (Field Office Information Management Systems) and COIN (Community On-Line Intelligence Systems), two of the FBI's known case management software systems. The *Times* quotes sources as saying "FOIMS and COINS are believed to be upgraded versions of the PROMIS software program."[4]

"McGuffin" claimed that Inslaw's Bill Hamilton told him that Osama Bin Laden paid the Russians $2 million dollars for an upgraded version of the software, called "Enhanced PROMIS." The *Times* quotes Hamilton as having no specific information about Hanssen, but suggested that a technical manual given by Hanssen to the Russians according to the FBI, was "related to the use of PROMIS as the standard software of the US intelligence community." "McGuffin" argued that "Hanssen, before his arrest, had played an important role in installing [PROMIS] in MI5, MI6 and [Germany's] BND."[5]

Michael Riconosociuto himself claimed to have met Bin Laden in the Spring of 1986 while networking with representatives of the anti-Soviet mujahadeen. Danger Man proposed to sell shoulder-held missile launchers—called MANPADS, or Man Portable Air Defense Systems—for use against Soviet helicopters. According to the story, Bin Laden at the time traveled under the name "Tim Osman," a pseudonym supplied "by the CIA for his tour of the U.S. and U.S. military bases, in search of political support and armaments." Apparently the meeting ended when Riconosciuto explained that his faction of intelligence world connections did not think Bin Laden represented the true mujahadeen. The story ended with another plea to release Riconosciuto from his current prison residence in Springfield, Missouri: "If the war against Osama Bin Laden (Tim Osman) is not a total fraud, then what is Michael Riconsociuto doing in prison? Why doesn't he have an office next to Colin Powell so he can give realistic advice on Bin Laden's thinking?"[6]

Another writer/editor team, Tom Flocco and Michael Ruppert, made the case for the use of PROMIS in the insider trading deals that preceded the September 11 tragedies. They received a non-denial from CIA spokesperson Tom Crispell that "the CIA had been using PROMIS beyond American borders to scrutinize world financial markets for national security purposes," and one from the FBI claiming that "the FBI has discontinued use of the PROMIS software." Flocco notes that the latter denial "followed almost seventeen years of denial by the FBI and the Department of Justice—in court and under oath—that they used the software at all." Nevertheless, Ruppert and Flocco maintain that stock screening and short selling that came in the days before the plane crashes[7] were accomplished with PROMIS, as was the financial tracking of Bin Laden's assets that happened in the aftermath.[8]

Research tributaries leading to PROMIS keep alive Casolaro's sense of history and parapolitics, and his foreboding about the developing world of perpetual surveillance and war. Despite the push to transform the tragedies of September 11 into simple-minded, war-hungry patriotism—and whether or not PROMIS is ever proven to be a part of the manipulations—many Americans more readily accept the notion that Osama Bin Laden came to power under Octopus-like funding. Plans to strengthen US military power in Afghanistan, where US "retaliation" for 9/11 was felt first, began as early as 1990, when oil was struck in the eastern portion of the Caspian Sea, in Kazakhstan. The democracy-warping results of the American presidential election in 2000 returned to power the same crew of secret government cronies that Casolaro had tracked through Iran-contra and on back to drug traffic in the Golden Triangle of Southeast Asia. The "anti-terror" war seems more about building a pipeline to the Caspian, exploiting the opium crop in Afghanistan and expanding the weapons trade than about protecting America from terrorists.[9]

---

1. Internet posting, 12/15/01.

2. Mailloux, Jacqueline, "Octopus Cards Back In Business," June 17, 1998. About four million Octopus cards had been issued for Hong Kong's Mass Transit Railway Corporation by the transport consortium Creative Star. The supplied was exhausted and the consortium at the time planned to order three million more. It planned another increase of seven million increase for the following year. This is a relatively small growth pattern due to the fact that "the Octopus card uses proprietary technology."

Chow, Tinnie, CNN EbizAsia Correspondent, "Smart Cards Offer Shorter Queues and More Risks," February 16, 2001. Chow quotes Mac McGolpin, the CEO of AsiaWebCo, as saying that the new card uses biometrics to encode "some part of your physical presence or being on the card," and notes "new ways of using Octopus cards are being initiated…."

3. "McGuffin" Dispatch 265, received from *Lobster* publisher Robin Ramsay September 21, 2001.

4. Seper, Jerry, "Software likely in the hands of terrorist; FBI's Hanssen seen as provider," *The Washington Times*, June 14, 2001, p. A1.

5. John Judge expressed a cautionary note about all of this: "Well, it seems bin Laden has lots of talents and lots of time on his hands. What the hell would it take to monitor all that information from all those agencies? On the other hand, if bin Laden is their creature, perhaps one agency lets him know what another is doing against him. Sounds more like an elaborate cover to explain why we have not caught him or will not. Hanssen is a double agent case I think planted to feed disinformation into the Soviet hands. His links to Opus Dei and COINTELPRO make me think he was really a very clever plant. So, I'd be cautious with these conclusions. Perhaps he did install something that would allow US intelligence to track Bin Laden, etc. That would make sense." Correspondence with author, September 21, 2001.

The issue returned again with the June 2003 resignation of Paul Redmond, the Assistant Secretary for Information Analysis for the Homeland Security department. Described by some as a "legendary spy catcher"—he had a role in the capture of Aldrich Ames—Redmond resigned for "health reasons." Most took that as polite cover for Redmond's frustration with underfunding of the department, but others connected it to a rumored secret investigation Redmond was conducting into Hanssen's role in delivering PROMIS to Osama. According to this rumor, Redmond had discovered shockingly long-standing common interests between the Bush and bin Laden families and was forced to resign. PROMIS, in fact, also had been given to Saddam Hussein by the senior Bush in the early 1990s. (Casolaro reported that Iraq was one of the countries that purchased the software illegally.) Although the story provided an opportunity for Inslaw's story to be discussed anew in various opinion and editorial pieces, it seemed to trace to a single source. Thomas, Gordon, "Riddle As US Spy Chief Quits," *Sunday Express* (UK), July 6, 2003.

6. Grabbe, J. Orlin, "When Osama Bin Laden Was Tim Osman," *Laissez Faire City Times*, Vol. 5, No. 46, November 12, 2001. Grabbe's web site is at orlingrabbe.com. He gives Michael Riconosciuto's current address as 21309-086 Box 4000, US Medical Center, Springfield, MO 65801-4000. Another web site with information on Riconosciuto's possible connections to current world events appears on the web at mindgallery.com/hiddenroom/wizard/index.html.

7. A short selling spree also preceded the Kennedy assassination, as documented in the book *Mind Control, Oswald and JFK* (Adventures Unlimited Press, edited by Kenn Thomas).

8. Flocco and Ruppert's three part story linking this information to a banking entity called Deutschebank/A.B. Brown as well as CIA executive A. B. "Buzzy" Krongard, can be found at Ruppert's "From The Wilderness" web site, www.copvcia.com.

9. Even as the war moved into the Philippines, echoes were heard of Casolaro's cross-connections between the domestic and the foreign in the global strategy of tension. Adam Parfrey gave the most detailed and succinct report:

The ACLU worked tirelessly on behalf of Abraham Ahmed, who the legal organization claimed was a victim of racist profiling. On the same day as bombing, Ahmed attempted to fly from Oklahoma City to Amman, Jordan, but was stopped at Heathrow Airport after American Airlines flight security notified the FBI of the Middle Easterner's suspicious behavior. Ahmed was cuffed and returned to the US after his luggage was found to contain such things as two car radios (the sort used to bomb Pan Am 103), silicon, solder, shielded and unshielded wire, a timing device, a photo album with pictures of weapons and missile, and a blue jogging suit similar to that seen worn by an Arab suspect in front of the Murrah building on the morning of the blast. Perhaps prompted by ACLU's media tirade, the FBI promptly released suspect Abraham Ahmed, and President Clinton apologized to the Arab-American community.

Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols had continual contacts with known terrorist entities up to the day of the Murrah Building blast. Nichols was married to a Filipina woman, and took trips to Cebu City, Philippines (*without* his wife) in late '92 and early '93 to meet with such friendly folk from the Abu Sayyaf terrorist org as Ramzi Yousef, Abdul Hakim Murad, Wali Khan Amin Shah and several others to discuss the bombing of the OKC building.

Murad was arrested in 1995 for the initial World Trade Center bombing, and after viewing the Oklahoma City Bombing on a New York jail television set, he remarked to a guard that the "Liberation Army of the Philippines"—a group connected to Abu Sayyef, was responsible for the blast. Later, Abu Sayyaf leader Edwin Angeles corrected Murad for the record: "It was the Palestine Liberation Army and the Islamic Jihad which Murad was referring to. This army is associated with Hamas and is based in Lebanon."

After the Oklahoma City Bombing, Saudi intelligence told the FBI that Iraq had hired Pakistanis to do the Murrah Building job. Edwin Angeles is a Pakistani."

Parfrey, Adam, "The Oklahoma City Bombing Jihad," *Konformist newswire*, October 10, 2001 (www.konformist.com/911/ok-jihad.htm).

Bill and Nancy Hamilton.

APPENDIX 1:

An Interview with William and Nancy Hamilton

The following interview with Bill and Nancy Hamilton was conducted by Kenn Thomas at the Inslaw office in Washington, DC on June 8, 1995.

Q: How did you first get in contact with Danny?

Bill Hamilton: You should contact Terry Miller, president of Government Sales Consultants, which provides advice to companies that sell computer-related products to the United States government.

Q: He worked with Danny Casolaro at Computer Age Publications.

Bill: That's right. He was an old friend of Danny's. In August of 1990, he talked to Danny and suggested that he look into investigating this thing. Again, that's the month that Danny contacted us. He contacted us when we were on vacation at the beach in Delaware. He wanted to come down and see us at the beach, which was not convenient for us, so it didn't happen. But that began our conversations with him. That lasted for a year until he died in August 1991.

Q: Do you know anything at all about his relationship with *Computer Age* at the time?

Bill: He owned it.

Q: Was he in the process of selling it?

Bill: He had already sold it. I don't know how many months before this.

Q: Did he talk about it at all?

Bill: He talked about it.

Q: Was he disappointed in the terms of the sales?

Bill: I don't know. That's his private business. I worked with him mostly on the investigation of the Justice Department. He was not a person who exhibited much interest in financial matters. I don't ever recall much of a conversation about terms of the sale of his newsletter.

Q: It goes to the question of whether or not he was suicidal. Some people have suggested the poor terms might have contributed to that.

Bill: That's ludicrous. That's the most ludicrous thing I have ever heard.

Nancy Hamilton: In the year of talking to this man, there was never any evidence that he was depressed about anything, much less that. He never mentioned that he was disappointed in that to my knowledge. He was excited about his investigation.

Bill: It was much too serious a matter. He spent a year full-time looking into malfeasance by the government and the government has been unwilling to allow an independent investigation of his death. The malfeasance was in the Justice Department and the Justice department insists that only it will be the judge of whatever happened down there and the local Martinsburg authorities who are not the kind of places you'd think about going if you were looking for sophisticated investigative capabilities.

Nancy: If anything bothered him, it was what he was finding out about the way his government worked. He was a person who found it difficult to believe that the government was capable of such skullduggery. He didn't want to believe it, just as we don't want to believe it. But when presented with fact, you have to accept it. And that is depressing.

Q: When you first met, at what stage was the case?

Bill: We had already had three weeks of trial in 1987, and this was 1990. We had already the three hundred ninety-nine findings of fact that had already been upheld by a separate opinion in the United States district court.

Nancy: It was already under investigation by the House Judiciary committee. It had already been investigated in part by the permanent subcommittee on investigations, which found stone walling, blocking and intimidation at the Justice department.

Bill: There had been an extensive public record at that time.

Q: So you were kind of like the story behind the story he was pursuing.

Nancy: No, we were the story. Terry Miller told him that he should get on this story, that is was a very interesting story. He then called us to find out more about the story. He was into the Inslaw story. His investigation into Inslaw took him into other areas and at one point he expressed frustration that he was getting all this information on these other things connecting, he thought, to Inslaw and was frustrated at getting the hard stuff he needed on Inslaw. Just a week before he died he expressed to different people that he finally got the final evidence on Inslaw, pieces that directly affect Inslaw.

Q: Was he sharing his research on the other topics with you as he went along?

Bill: He was willing to. We didn't really have time to entertain it. We're trying to operate a business here and so we had limited interest in BCCI and the rest of it. Our meetings primarily consisted of telephone conversations with him every day.

Nancy: And asking questions as he went about his investigation, because as he picked up information it would raise questions that he needed to ask us. We would answer his questions and he would proceed with his investigation. If something puzzled him about what he was told, how could this be, you know. That was the main thing.

Q: At any point did he say he had a contract to get published?

Bill: No. He was working on one and he was optimistic. He expressed optimism about getting one. In fact, he was planning a party in the final few weeks of his life. He was planning the guest list of a party to celebrate the book contract.

Q: As time went along, you put him in contact with Michael Riconosciuto.

Bill: Yes. But you have to understand how that works. We gave him lots of contacts. He'd take those contacts and get other contacts of his own.

Q: How did you know Riconosciuto?

Bill: Riconosciuto called us a few months before Danny came on this case, in May in 1990, and spoke to us for two and a half hours, talking to us about the Wackenhut/Cabazon joint venture, Earl Brian, Peter Videnieks and people like that.

Q: How soon was it after that talk with Riconosciuto that you had him talk to Casolaro?

Bill: August/September, 1990. We had one conversation with Michael Riconosciuto in May, 1990, and we didn't hear from him again until almost the end of that calendar year.

Q: Did you find Riconosciuto believable at that time?

Bill: A lot of what Riconosciuto said we found hard to believe but we attempted to find out whether or not it was true. I would say that 75% of it turned out we found corroborating evidence about it. So, most of what he told us about during that first telephone conversation seems to have been true. And we talked to people he worked with at the Wackenhut/Cabazon joint venture who expressed hostility toward him, disliked and disparaged him but who corroborated most of what he said in his affidavit to us. What they did not corroborate was the part of the affidavit that is most important to Inslaw's case. And that is that the joint venture, in addition to producing fuel-air explosives and biological and chemical warfare weapons, night vision goggles and machine guns, was modifying the PROMIS software for Earl Brian. They didn't deny it. They said they didn't know about it. Over time they have admitted, these former colleagues who don't like Riconosciuto, that there was an NSA project on the Wackenhut/Cabazon joint venture and that it's extremely highly classified, more highly classified than any other projects. And no one has ever explained what that project was.

Q: So these people were hostile to Riconosciuto but they were actually saying the same thing.

Bill: They're not admitting PROMIS, but they are admitting that a colonel from NSA flew out to the Cabazon reservation one day and chewed out some FBI agents who were investigating the homicides of the vice-chairman of the tribe and a couple of other guys, Alvarez and a few other guys, and told them to keep their noses out of the NSA project and that Riconosciuto was involved in the NSA project. So it seems likely to me that what they're doing is expressing some healthy fear about violating espionage laws by affirming some of the stuff that Riconosciuto was saying about the NSA project. I think the NSA project is very likely the PROMIS project.

Q: Over time, Casolaro became more and more skeptical of Riconosciuto because, in addition to everything that could be verified about what he said, he said some pretty wild stuff after a while.

Bill: I wouldn't characterize it that way. He was disappointed when he went out to see him in jail after he was arrested. He was not able to get a copy of what Riconosciuto claimed to have, which was a tape recording of Peter Videnieks threatening him. Whether that existed or not, I have no way of knowing. But a lot of the things that Riconosciuto talks about that are extreme sounding are things involving the United States intelligence agencies. And most of that stuff is probably true. US intelligence agencies use people like Riconosciuto.

Nancy: That is very clear from what we have learned over all these years. They hire people like Riconosciuto. And they are the first to say that if you bring Riconosciuto in, look at him, you can't trust anything he says. But in the Noriega trial, the government brought in just such witnesses. But we think what happens, from what we've learned, the government hires these people, they do things for the government that normally American citizens wouldn't do, and then they do some things for themselves that normal American citizens don't do and the government can't say anything about it because they're their boys.

Q: Let me bring up Robert Booth Nichols' name. Would he fall into that category?

Nancy: Of having worked for the government? Yeah.

Bill: Oh, yeah.

Q: Now you introduced Nichols to Casolaro as well, right?

Bill: Yes.

Q: Could you go over exactly how that happened?

Bill: We contacted some reporters to see if they ever heard of Riconosciuto. West Coast reporters. And Nichols had been interviewed by people who contacted him on the savings-and-loan matter. He talked to us a little bit about the savings-

and-loan matter first time. That's why we contacted Mary Fricker and Steve Pizzo, who did this book called *Inside Job.*

Nancy: ... *The Looting of America's Savings and Loans*.

Bill: We got a phone call from Michael Riconosciuto and a small part of what he told us had to do savings-and-loan. It sounded like he knew a lot about the bilking of the savings-and-loans, too. Did they ever encounter him? They had interviewed him and they also had interviewed at least one or two other people that had worked on that Wackenhut/Cabazon joint venture. They introduced us to Peter Zokosky, and we interviewed him and he introduced us to Bob Nichols. We talked to Nichols. Nichols and Zokosky both have a low opinion of Riconosciuto but both verified everything he said in his affidavit except the PROMIS stuff.

We talked a number of times with Nichols and met with him on a couple of occasions, once here in Washington, once in California when we were out there for some other reason. And he met with Danny here and Danny talked to him quite a bit. He's more presentable than Riconosciuto in the sense of looking more middle-class, and bright, as is Riconosciuto. What he really is, I'm not sure. He obviously has had extensive dealings with intelligence agencies, both in our country and probably in other countries.

Q: So what was his relationship with Casolaro like?

Bill: He talked a lot to Casolaro.

Q: Did it grow along the same lines as the one with Riconosciuto? Did he accept everything he said?

Nancy: He did not accept...

Bill: That predicate is wrong. Casolaro did not accept everything that...

Nancy: ... anyone...

Bill: ... Riconosciuto said, that I said, or that Nichols said. What Casolaro believed about Nichols and Riconosciuto at the end, I don't know. I talked to Danny everyday, sometimes several times a day. I was intensely involved with him, but I couldn't tell you about at the end of his life what he thought about those two guys. At various times he thought Nichols had been part of his Octopus and had broken away from it. But I'm not at all sure that he still thought he had broken away from it at the end. I'm just not clear. He had a lot of misgivings about both of them, he found them both useful. They told him things that you won't get from the Justice Department, about the Justice Department. he never took anything at face value.

Q: Is it too far afield not to talk a little about PROMIS and when it first developed.

Bill: That's already documented. We can give you some documents on the history.

Q: Let me ask about the current status of the case. Is there an appeal left?

Nancy: No. We're back in court

Q: Back in court?

Nancy: The US Congress, the Senate, passed a unanimous Congressional reference sending the Inslaw case over to the government courts.

Q: Are you familiar with the fact that Webster Hubbell reopened the investigation?

Bill: He was appointed by Janet Reno to look into the responses to the Bua report, which was commissioned by her predecessor but released by Reno. So we dealt with Hubbell.

Q: Didn't Bua essentially close the investigation?

Bill: Bua was appointed by William Barr. In December of 1992, Barr recused himself of Inslaw because he was going back to his old law firm, which in the meantime had been representing Earl W. Brian in the Inslaw case. Even that was a little too much for a person like Barr, I guess. It didn't look too nice. So Bua supposedly didn't submit the report to Barr and then there was an interregnum between Barr's departure and the beginning of the Democrat confirmed as Attorney General. During that interregnum there was a Republican holdover of the Attorney General.

Q: Stuart Gerson.

Bill: Why Bua didn't submit it to Gerson is hard to explain. He supposedly submitted—I don't necessarily believe any of this stuff—submitted it to Reno when Reno was confirmed. Gerson was the Attorney General under Clinton for the first few months because Clinton couldn't find an Attorney General that could be confirmed. Gerson was the acting Attorney General but Hubbell was really running the department.

Q: What happened to Hubbell's investigation?

Bill: He didn't do an investigation. Hubbell did a whitewash.

Q: He just dropped it?

Bill: No, he pretended to do an investigation, focusing on the Danny Casolaro aspects.

We did a very detailed rebuttal of the Bua report a month after Reno released it and submitted it for rebuttal a month after Reno and Hubbell went to the House and Senate Judiciary committees. Then we met with Hubbell a few months later, in the fall of 1993, October of '93. That was the first and only time.

The rebuttal is striking in its disrobing of the Bua report. The Bua report is flimsy, on its own terms unconvincing, it contradicts the fully litigated findings of fact of two sitting federal judges and it contradicts the investigative findings of a major committee of congress. Just flatly contradicts all of that. So if you accept the Bua report, you have to accept simultaneously that the legal system is a joke. That not only can you have one set of litigated findings that are meaningless, but that you can have two sets of litigating findings that are meaningless, and a congressional investigation. While that's possible in theory, it's unlikely in practice. It's also alarming, and if the press had any brains they should have said, "Wait just a minute!" Because if that's true, we've got real problems.

Nancy: The judges, of course, had sworn testimony from both sides, in a court of law, whereas Bua talked only a few minutes to me and Bill. That was the end of discussion. And no key Justice people were put under oath.

Q: Was there not an offer made before the Bua report was issued to make a settlement?

Bill: Bua will lie about it. You ought to ask him. Bua has denied that he made an offer, and he's a distinguished former judge who probably wouldn't lie. But Bua called Elliot Richardson and said to him, "Have you given any thought to a global settlement figure?" He did this in November or December of 1992 when Barr was still Attorney General. And Elliot Richardson explained to him that it's hard to come up with a global settlement when your own Justice Department won't candidly discuss the scope of what they have done. What is the scope of the damages? What is the relative magnitude of the damages? How many copies have you made of this software and what else have you done with it?

Q: What was the dollar figure at that point?

Bill: He thought that Attorney General Barr would approve a settlement of $25 million quickly if he would make such a proposal. He also told three different reporters that he was considering recommending this in his report. The reporters were being used as trial balloons for us. In the same time frame, the fall of 1992, he was considering recommending that the Department of Justice pay Inslaw twenty five to fifty million dollars. And when he mentioned $25 million to Elliot Richardson, one of the reporters, an investigative producer at CNN, said he means fifty.

Q: So the whole impetus had to come from you. These were just suggestions that Bua was dropping.

Bill: Elliot said that he was a little surprised that the criminal investigator is the civil negotiator.

Nancy: We had given the evidence of broad malfeasance in the department and to have the response be, "How much do you want?" we felt was inappropriate for someone who was supposedly an investigator.

Bill: It's a farce.

Q: Now Bua denies it all.

Bill: He denied it to the press and then Elliot offered to make available these detailed contemporaneous notes of the various conversations and then he shut up. He didn't talk about it anymore.

Q: All that happened before the report was issued.

Bill: That's right.

Q: So the report comes out and that supposedly settles it or was there an appeal after that?

Bill: But it can't settle it. It's the Justice Department exonerating itself.

Q: What I'm trying to determine is where Hubbell tried to focus the investigation, the appeal.

Nancy: Appeal is the wrong word. This isn't a court. Bua is not a judge. He's a former judge hired by Barr using Justice department lawyers.

Bill: Paid by Barr and reporting to Barr. That's not a judge.

Nancy: But it gives the coloration of a judicial finding.

Bill: But he is a lawyer for Attorney General Barr. He cannot put something down on paper, he can't do anything without his client Bill Barr. So what happens is that that report is released by Reno in March and she appoints another person with the honorific title of judge. Judge Hubbell will now review any problems that people have with the Bua report. So we submitted our rebuttal and we met with them in October. And we acknowledged that there were two areas of problems with the Bua report. Not problems, but two pieces of unfinished business...

Nancy: Two that required further investigation, because our rebuttal made it pretty clear that this report was ludicrous on its face.

Bill: And the two that he had acknowledged Bua hadn't done a good enough job on were Danny Casolaro and whether the FBI was using our software. So that's what he initially acknowledged that he would look into.

Q: Did he make a public statement of some sort?

Bill: Well, he told us.

Nancy: We really don't want to go into what Hubbell said to us. We don't think that we should.

Q: The only reason I ask is that when they originally announced that they were going to reopen the original investigation, very few newspapers reported on it all.

Nancy: Actually, reopening the investigation they didn't. They said Bua had done a good job. And so the only two areas that they would look further at were the ones we mentioned. On those they ended up siding with the Bua report also.

Q: That Danny Casolaro committed suicide and that there was no malfeasance on the part of the FBI.

Nancy: That the FBI software was not our software.

Bill: You have to understand that this is like ... the former Justice department lawyer who is in the front page of the *New York Times* and *Washington Post* today, Michael Abell, who has just been indicted for obstruction of justice with regard to the Bolivian Cali cartel. It is no different than for that person to say "I was in the Justice Department for seventeen years and I am issuing a report that finds me innocent." Thank you, Mr. Abell. the Justice Department is the defendant. The institution is the defendant. It is the same institution that is sitting in judgement on itself and contradicting the results of every single independent review of its conduct. In other words, the bankruptcy court, the US District court, the House Judiciary committee, the Senate permanent investigations subcommittee, all of those independent tribunals are wrong and we're right about ourselves. We're blameless. So when you look at it that way...

Q: But when you're talking about Hubbell's investigation...

Bill: Hubbell is the Justice Department.

Q: But it's a whole different set of personnel than these other investigations.

Nancy: Not really. Same career people.

Q: One of the most alarming things about the whole business is Hubbell's connection to Park-On-Meter and how Riconosciuto makes claims to be connected to Park-on-Meter. It's all such an inbred thing. The people that were involved in all this in the first place do seem to be Republicans—Earl Brian, Ed Meese and Reagan—and here, a new administration, Democrats, different people and they're all connected to it too.

Bill: Well, if you follow Mena, which I'm sure you have, they seem to have been a kind of partner to Reagan/Bush administration on some of these covert things.

Q: Did you see a lot of evidence for that connected to your problems? Did you know about Park-On-Meter?

Nancy: We read about it. But you look at the Hubbell-Reno investigation, or handling of Inslaw, I should say, because it was no real investigation, when the Congress said let's get it to an independent tribunal. Last fall, Charlie Rose introduced, last summer, actually, that they would send the case to another independent tribunal and while it was in committee, Reno rushed a letter to committee members to vote against it and summarizing their report which they hadn't even copied and made available. So intense was their effort to keep us out of court again. You have to ask, why are they so intent, if there is nothing to it? What do they to lose by having people looking at this case again?

Bill: There were two people we knew in the lobbying effort in the House of Representatives last fall to try to keep us from getting back to court, Edwin Meese and Janet Reno, personally.

Nancy: And so when it was re-introduced this spring by Senator Hatch it passed by the unanimous consent of the Senate.

Q: Is it their point that the software that is being used now by Interpol, the Mossad, the FBI and so on, is not PROMIS?

Bill: They do not acknowledge any of this.

Q: I know one of the failures of the Bua report is that it didn't do a code comparison. I take it that Hubbell investigation didn't do one either.

Bill: No.

Nancy: We haven't been anywhere near the FBI's software.

Bill: The US Attorney's stuff, that's what the court case was about. That's all we knew about at the time. The US Attorney's office have never paid us for the software. So we used the subpoena power and got the software and compared it with our privately financed enhancements, the records of the department, who paid for it and all that, and we proved at the time of the trial we did not know that the software had been disseminated outside the US Attorney's office. We didn't find that out until subsequent years. First of all, Bua hired a professor at Georgetown University, the computer science department, the head of the department. She's the one who declined to compare the code and made a fatuous statement that PROMIS tracks judicial proceedings and the FBI system tracks investigations, so they couldn't possible be the same software. Just a fatuous comment.

Our software tracks investigations at the state and local level, all over the United States. That's a stupid thing to say.

Then Hubbell hired a new professor from MIT, and they offered to have us attend his examination of the code. But they made it clear to us that we would not be permitted to look at the code he would look at, the FBI code. We told them that we were not interested in pretending to support another phony examination. If there was going to be any credibility, the people who developed the PROMIS code have to be able to see that code. What are you afraid of in letting us look at it? We don't mind that you have your own experts there, but we want to see it. We don't, frankly, trust the government and we wouldn't believe anything the Justice Department said under any administration.

Q: Did they respond to that at all?

Bill: They said no, you can't look at it. So then they had their MIT professor say it's not the same code and who knows what he looked at?

Q: Are you familiar with this company in Little Rock, Arkansas called Systematics, Inc.?

Bill: Yes.

Q: The story there is that somehow PROMIS has been applied to the banking industry. Do you know anything about it?

Bill: We are fairly confidant that it was installed in the World Bank in 1983 and the International Monetary Fund. Danny Casolaro introduced us to two former computer employees at the World Bank who told us all of this. There have been published articles in the international banking regulator newsletter that independently verified that. So if you put it in the World Bank and the International Monetary fund, it's not likely that you've just put it there. Any effort to take software as flexible as it is, you have to really think through how you're going to use it in a different application area and think about how you're going to use it in banking and then just put it in one bank, that doesn't make sense. So the hardest evidence we have has to do with the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund, but logic supports the idea that it is much more widely used.

Q: You hear a lot of different things about the way PROMIS has been applied. There has even been a report that one of its earliest uses was to extrapolate Soviet sub launches out of the Arctic ice.

Bill: I haven't heard that one.

Q: You haven't?

Bill: There was supposedly an application by the military, that it was out on loan from the Justice Department.

Nancy: The software wouldn't launch things.

Q: No, the story is that it had the ability to track...

Nancy: It does have that ability. It can track anything.

Q: They apparently had a very difficult time prior to using it, using whatever it was they used, tracking submarines through the Arctic ice. The Soviets would just go in there and they would lose track of them.

Bill: We are fairly confidant that they use PROMIS on the nuclear submarines to track other submarines. They call it PROMIS.

Nancy: It doesn't do the tracking. You give it the information to make it keep track of your information. It has no capacity to do the tracking itself.

Bill: It's just keeping track of the tracking transactions, where you last saw it, when, the last sighting.

Q: It doesn't extrapolate from there? That's the rumor, why PROMIS is so attractive to people, is that it has great predictive capabilities.

Bill: Not really.

Nancy: It depends on how you use the information you have. It organizes it for you and it's valuable that way, but it's up to the human being using it to go from there.

Q: Now you have two brothers in St. Louis, right? And one of them was the secretary to the police board in the early 1970s?

Bill: I don't know what years anymore. He was secretary of the police board once.

Q: He was there at a time when they implemented something called REGIS. Is that connected to PROMIS?

Bill: No. He created REGIS.

Q: A different kind of software altogether?

Nancy: REGIS isn't software. It's an organization.

Bill: Regional Justice Information System.

Q: So you say you have never seen what the FBI uses. Have you seen a demonstration of the software of any of the groups that supposedly have PROMIS, like the Mossad or the Mounties, or whatever?

Bill: Oh no, no, they won't let us.

Nancy: We'd love to see a demonstration. Although the demonstration isn't...

Bill: You have to look at the source code.

Nancy: That's what was wrong with the professor at Georgetown, saying, "I just looked at the screen and I don't need to see any more." That's ludicrous.

Q: So do you still own PROMIS? Or does the Justice Department?

Bill: Why would the Justice Department own it? Because they stole it? You think that's how it works? If I steal your glasses, they're mine?

Q: Of course, you're right.

Nancy: If you make a copy of the Lotus software, you don't own the software. You just have a copy.

Q: So you still make PROMIS available to your clients?

Bill: We sell it.

Nancy: We don't give it away. And the software is always changing. That's what we're about here, is developing new software, adding to it, creating new enhancements to it, keeping up with the times.

Q: Does it have a version, like PROMIS 1.7?

Nancy: You can call it that, but it doesn't matter.

Q: Who are your clients? If the Justice Department supplying everyone with it...

Bill: We don't sell it to intelligence agencies. And we don't sell to the World Bank and International Monetary Fund. We sell to state and local courts, prosecutors. We sell to big corporations. But we don't sell to US and foreign intelligence agencies.

Nancy: You may be thinking of a smaller program. It's five hundred thousand lines of code approximately. So it's not something you easily copy and disseminate. It's a complicated, sophisticated system.

Q: Are you familiar at all with Casolaro's investigation of Hughes Aircraft? That's one of the theories, that in investigating Inslaw and the Octopus, he just kind of brushed up against manufacturing fraud involving Hughes Aircraft and that led to his death.

Nancy: What he brushed up against was someone who was interested in Hughes Aircraft, who used to work for it, Bill Turner. As you may know, when a reporter works on a story, or even for Inslaw having a story, everybody and his brother who has some kind of problem think maybe they can handle my problem. So Bill Turner went to Danny hoping to get Danny interested in Bill Turner's problem at Hughes Aircraft. And that's how he got into that.

Q: You have no reason to believe there was more to it than that?

Nancy: What do you mean by more than that? That's how he came into Hughes Aircraft. He met with Turner the night before he died and Turner had given him, according to Turner, a stack of documents.

Bill: I don't think there is anything particular to Hughes Aircraft. That may all be true or not true, I don't know. But in setting out to investigate the Justice Department's theft of PROMIS, this is the point Nancy made, he ended up picking up stones and finding stuff about BCCI, about the October Surprise, sales of high technology to Iraq, to Saddam Hussein, before the war, and about Iran-contra, and I think that reason he did is that some of the same people are involved with all of these things, making money. They don't say, "Let's do something bad. Let's make some money." That's what Danny told me this whole thing was about, people set out to make money by selling drugs, weapons, stolen software.

Nancy: I think that when he died, a lot of the headlines and news shows said, "Reporter Investigating BCCI" because BCCI had just broken on to the scene. That meant something to someone. But what we've told you is actually what happened.

Q: So you are convinced that he was murdered.

Bill: We think that there has never been an honest investigation of what happened to him and that there are all of the indications that we are aware of strongly suggesting that he was murdered. But we're not saying that OK, there—accept that he was murdered. We're saying, get out of the way and let an independent investigation, by an independent counsel...

Nancy: Who doesn't have any interest...

Bill: ... who doesn't have anything to hide, do an investigation. Let it take place.

Nancy: There's too many questions about his death for any reasonable person to say, yes, this was suicide. And there's a lot of misinformation out there that worry about his finances. We didn't see it. He was not a guy who gave a damn about his finances. We know other things, that his family had money, offered him money.

Bill: Friends offered him money. He didn't kill himself for that.

Q: So do you believe it was because of his investigation of the Inslaw case, or do you think that with all these things, it could have been anything, therefore, let's find out.

Nancy: We can't know. If we knew, we wouldn't be wondering any longer. But he certainly was into a lot of things during his investigation. BCCI is a major, major scandal.

Bill: And it looks increasingly convincing to us that the PROMIS software was installed throughout the BCCI empire to keep track of wire transfers of money and letters of credit so that NSA could monitor. I believe that the PROMIS software was used in all kinds of things. There are two things knitting all this together. One is that the same people are making money in all these different kinds of businesses. And the other thing that is in many instances PROMIS was the useful way of keeping track of everything that was happening.

APPENDIX 2:

Casolaro's Newsclippings File

The clipping references below are from a database of Danny Casolaro's known clippings as compiled by an intern working at Investigative Reporters and Editors (IRE).

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY: RESEARCH AND PROCUREMENT
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR/AI/BG-02
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: FAME MAGAZINE ARTICLE ABOUT MURDERED BALLISTICS GENIUS GERALD BULL WHO ATTEMPTED TO BUILD A SUPER GUN FOR IRAQ.
KEYWORDS: GOLDNER, PROJECT BABYLON, PROJECT HARP, SADDAM HUSSEIN, CHARLES MURPHY

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-01
YEAR: 81
SUMMARY: MONTREAL GAZETTE PROFILE OF WEAPONS SCIENTIST BULL AFTER HIS RELEASE FROM JAIL FOR SHIPPING WEAPONS TO SOUTH AFRICA
KEYWORDS: SPACE RESEARCH CORP, JOSHUA NKOMO, LES POUDIERES REUNIES BELGIQUE, HARP

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-03
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE ARTICLE ON HOW MURDERED BALLISTICS GENIUS SUPPLIED SADDAM HUSSEIN
KEYWORDS: MCGILL UNIVERSITY, HARP, GHN-45, PROJECT BABYLON, ADVANCED TECHNOLOGY

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-04
YEAR: 91
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL ON AMERICAN NON-INTERVENTION ON BALLISTIC GENIUS' DESIGN AND SALE OF SUPERGUN TO IRAQ
KEYWORDS: MALONE, SPACE RESEARCH CORP, GHN-45, ERFB, VOEST ALPINE STEEL

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-05
YEAR: 9?
SUMMARY: NEW YORK TIMES MAGAZINE PROFILE OF MURDERED BALLISTICS GENIUS
KEYWORDS: KEYWORDS:PROJECT BABYLON, MOSSAD, HARP, POUDRERIES REUNIES DE BELGIQUE

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-06
YEAR: 93
SUMMARY: MACLEANS MAGAZINE PROFILE ABOUT "ROCKET SCIENTIST" GERALD BULL
KEYWORDS: CANADIAN ARMAMENT RESEARCH AND DEVELOPMENT ESTABLISHMENT

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: BULL, GERALD
NO.: PR\AI\BG-07
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNIDENTIFIED NEWSPAPER ARTICLE ON HOW SUPERGUN DESIGNER WAS FUNDED BY THE ATLANTA GEORGIA BRANCH OF BANCA NAZIONALE DEL LAVORO
KEYWORDS: FRIEDMAN, BNL, SPACE RESEARCH CORP, HENRY GONZALEZ, TDG, TEG

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-01
YEAR: 88
SUMMARY: L.A. TIMES ARTICLE ON ORIGIN OF BOMBER AND WEAPON USED IN KILLING OF MARINE BATTALION IN 1983
KEYWORDS: CIA, FBI, HAFEZ ASSAD, SMILING DEATH, HEZBOLLAH, ISLAMIC JIHAD, ALVIN P. ADAMS

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-02
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: JACK ANDERSON COLUMN ON CHILEAN ARMS MERCHANT CARLOS CARDOEN'S DEALINGS WITH SADDAM HUSSEIN
KEYWORDS: IRAQ, CHILE, CLUSTER BOMBS, CARDOEN INDUSTRIES, GLOBAL HELICOPTER TECHNOLOGY INC.

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-03
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: JACK ANDERSON COLUMN ON CARDOEN INDUSTRIES AND MYSTERIOUS DEATH OF A BRITISH JOURNALIST.
KEYWORDS: JONATHAN MOYLE, ANTHONY MOYLE, JORGE OCHOA, IRAQ

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-04
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: VILLAGE VOICE ARTICLE—"GULFGATE: HOW THE US SECRETLY ARMED IRAQ
KEYWORDS: MURRAY WAAS, SARKIS SOGHANALIAN, WILLIAM EAGLETON, HAWK, CIA

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-05
YEAR: 91
SUMMARY: WALL STREET JOURNAL—US CUSTOMS EXAMINE MIAMI DEVELOPMENT COMPANY FOR ILLEGAL ARMS SALES TO IRAQ.
KEYWORDS: CARLOS CARDOEN, INDUSTRIAS CARDOEN S.A., SWISSCO DEVELOPMENT CO.

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-06
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER—IRAQ BRAGS OF NEW MISSILE AND ARMS INDUSTRY EVALUATES HUSSEIN'S CLAIM.
KEYWORDS: DON KERR, TAMMUZ MISSILE, FLIGHT INTERNATIONAL, FUEL-AIR EXPLOSIVE, ARGENTINA, EGYPT

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-07
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: MIAMI HERALD—PENTAGON DISPUTES REPORT OF NEW IRAQI MISSILES
KEYWORDS: FUEL AIR EXPLOSIVE

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-08
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: ATIN AMERICAN REGIONAL REPORTS—CHILE'S CARDOEN CLAIMS TO NO LONGER EXPORT WEAPONS TO IRAQ
KEYWORDS: ADVANCED FUSE TECHNOLOGY, JONATHAN MOYLE, BELL HELICOPTERS, GEC-MARCONI

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-09
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: TIMES STAFF PROFILE ON CARLOS CARDOEN, CHILEAN ARMS EXPORTER
KEYWORDS: IRAQ, CLUSTER BOMB,

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-10
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—US CONFIRMS THAT IRAQ HAS POWERFUL NEW GAS BOMB
KEYWORDS: FUEL AIR EXPLOSIVE, HENRY SOKOLSKI (CASOLARO NOTES JOHN BRODER-293-4650 MELISSA HEALY 213-237-5000)

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: IRAN/IRAQ PROCUREMENT
NO.: PR\AI\IP-11
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: ASSOCIATED PRESS—ARI BEN MENASHE ACQUITTED OF ILLEGAL ARMS SALE CHARGE
KEYWORDS: ARMS EXPORT CONTROL ACT, RICHARD ST. FRANCIS, C-130E, YITZHAK SHAMIR

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: KHASHOGGI, ADNAN
NO.: PR\AI\KA-01
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: THE HOUSTON POST—NEW YORK JURY CLEARS IMELDA MARCOS AND KHASHOGGI OF LOOTING AND CONCEALING FILIPINO ASSETS.
KEYWORDS: GERRY SPENCE, OTTO OBERMAIER, PHILIPPINES

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: KHASHOGGI, ADNAN
NO.: PR\AI\KA-02
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: POST ENERGY—KHASSHOGI ANNOUNCES JOINT VENTURE WITH NRG RESOURCES INC.
KEYWORDS: OIL, NATURAL GAS, PHOENIX OIL & GAS CO., BILL TURNEY, JERRY ALLEN

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: KHASHOGGI, ADNAN
NO.: PR\AI\KA-03
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN MAGAZINE—PROFILE ON KHASSHOGI'S ROAD FROM RICHES TO RUIN
KEYWORDS: TRIAD AMERICA CORPORATION, SALT LAKE CITY, EMMANUEL FLOOR, TRIAD INTERNATIONAL

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: RESEARCH & MISC.
NO.: PR\AI\RM-01
YEAR: 71
SUMMARY: THE PRESS DEMOCRAT—SONOMA ENGINEERING AND RESEARCH INC. ANNOUNCES THEIR FIRM WILL EXPAND
KEYWORDS: RADAR, ARTHUR B. VANE, VERNON E. DUNN, MICROWAVE

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: RESEARCH & MISC.
NO.: PR\AI\RM-02
YEAR: 83
SUMMARY: THE INTERNATIONAL ADVISOR—"TITANIUM: A STRATEGIC METAL" DESCRIBES MILITARY USES OF THE METAL AND THE THREAT FROM THE USSR
KEYWORDS: PRATT AND WHITNEY, SOVIET UNION, AUSTRALIA, SOUTH AFRICA, CONSOLIDATED RUTILE LTD.

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: RESEARCH & MISC.
NO.: PR\AI\RM-03
YEAR: 83
SUMMARY: BRISBANE COURIER—THE QUEENSLAND GOVERNMENT GAVE FINANCIAL BACKING TO A MUNITIONS FACTORY LINKED WITH CORRUPT "PAINTERS AND DOCKERS"
KEYWORDS: AUSTRALIA, COSTIGAN COMMISSION

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: RESEARCH & MISC.
NO.: PR\AI\RM-04
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: TIME MAGAZINE—A REVIEW OF INDIA'S ARMS BUILDUP AND ITS CHANGING ROLE IN WORLD POLITICS.
KEYWORDS: MALDIVES STRIKE, NUCLEAR WEAPONS, BALLISTIC-MISSILES, FIJI, RESEARCH AND ANALYSIS WING

SUBJECT: ARMS INDUSTRY
FILE: RESEARCH & MISC.
NO.: PR\AI\RM-05
YEAR: 91
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—NAVY ASSISTANT SECRETARY FOUND GUILTY OF SELLING GOVERNMENT SECRETS TO DEFENSE FIRMS
KEYWORDS: OPERATION ILL WIND, DICK THORNBURGH, FBI, MAZLAT LTD., ISRAEL, SPERRY CORP., MARTIN MARIETTA

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-01
YEAR: 81
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—OVERVIEW OF CONFLICTS ON THE CABAZON RESERVATION DUE TO GAMBLING CASINOS AND THE LEADERSHIP OF JOHN PHILLIPS NICHOLS, A NON-INDIAN
KEYWORDS: PRO-PLAN INTERNATIONAL, MAFIA, HOOPA RESERVATION

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-02
YEAR: 81
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—PROFILE OF SLAIN INDIAN WHO PROTESTED THE MANAGEMENT OF THE CABAZON RESERVATION BY JOHN PHILLIPS NICHOLS
KEYWORDS: BUREAU OF INDIAN AFFAIRS, CASINO, GAMBLING, INDIO

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-03
YEAR: 82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON IS HELD IN CONTEMPT FOR REFUSING TO TESTIFY IN A MURDER TRIAL. (CASOLARO NOTE: THOMPSON WORKED FOR CIA, ASSOCIATED WITH JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS.

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-04
YEAR: 82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON RECANTS PREVIOUS TESTIMONY IMPLYING GUILT OF MURDER DEFENDANT.
KEYWORDS: WILLY WISELY

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-05
YEAR: 82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—ROBBERY VICTIM OF PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON AND WILLY WISELY HAS HAD LIFE DISRUPTED WITH PROTECTIVE CUSTODY WHILE THE ALLEGED ROBBERS ARE FREE. FBI ALLEGEDLY INTERVENED ON BEHALF OF THOMPSON TO HELP HIM AVOID JAIL.
KEYWORDS: ARTHUR SUEL, JOHN ABBOTT, CANADA

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-06
YEAR: 82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—WISELY CONVICTED OF MURDER AND DECIDES TO FIGHT FOR LIFE SENTENCE. PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON IS FREE ON BAIL.
KEYWORDS: ARTHUR SUEL

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-07
YEAR: 83
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES MAGAZINE—A PROFILE OF JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS AND HIS EFFECT ON THE CABAZON RESERVATION.
KEYWORDS: BINGO, GAMBLING, ALVAREZ, INDIO

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-08
YEAR: 84
SUMMARY: DAILY NEWS, INDIO—FORMER CABAZON SECURITY CHIEF SAYS HE HAS BEEN GIVEN IMMUNITY BY THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE IN EXCHANGE FOR TESTIMONY ABOUT THREE MURDERS
KEYWORDS: PETER ZOKOSKY, WAYNE REEDER, JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS, COVERT ACTION

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-09
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: DAILY NEWS, INDIO—JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS ARRESTED FOR SOLICITATION AND CONSPIRACY TO COMMIT MURDER. FORMER SECURITY HEAD ALLEGES THAT NICHOLS ALSO INVOLVED WITH COVERT ACTIVITIES IN CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA.
KEYWORDS: HIT MEN, EL SALVADOR, GAMBLING,"THE SHOW AND TELL" EQUIPMENT SHOW

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-10
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS ARRESTED FOR SOLICITING MURDER.
KEYWORDS: JOHN PAUL NICHOLS, INDIO, JAMES HUGHES, PETER ZOKOSKY

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-11
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: THE PRESS-ENTERPRISE—AN OVERVIEW OF JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS DETRACTORS AND SUPPORTERS.
KEYWORDS: ARTHUR WELMAS, LINDA STREETER, JAMES HUGHES, PAUL MORASCA, NASA, WACKENHUT, A.R. FRYE, ARMS MANUFACTURE, PAUL MORASCA, CIA, FBI

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-12
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER—ALLEGATIONS THAT JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS HELD WEAPONS DEMONSTRATIONS FOR EDEN PASTORA (THE CONTRAS).
KEYWORDS: COMMANDER ZERO, MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO, PAUL MORASCA, PETER ZOKOSKY

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-12
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: 20/20 TRANSCRIPT—A GERALDO RIVERA INVESTIGATION INTO GAMBLING AND MURDER ON THE CABAZON RESERVATION.
KEYWORDS: JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS, LINDA STREETER, FRED ALVAREZ, ROCCO ZANGARI

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-13
YEAR: 88
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—VARIOUS INDIAN RESERVATIONS INCLUDING THE CABAZON RESERVATION, PLAN TO USE A SATELLITE-LINK TO CREATE A GIANT BINGO GAME.
KEYWORDS: GAMBLING, JOHN PAUL NICHOLS

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-14
YEAR: 85
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—RESERVATION BINGO PROFITS ARE GOING TO OTHER THAN NATIVE AMERICANS. MENTIONS CABAZON RESERVATION AND MAFIA INVOLVEMENT.
KEYWORDS: JOHN PHILIP NICHOLS, JOHN PAUL NICHOLS, ROCCO ZANGARI

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-15
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER, ON ZOKOSKY CORP. STATIONARY—PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON SENTENCED TO LIFE IMPRISONMENT FOR TWO TRUCK HIJACKINGS.

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: CABAZON RESERVATION
NO.: PR\CW\CR-16
YEAR: 91
SUMMARY: YORKSHIRE POST (ENGLAND)—INSLAW COURT DATE WILL REVEAL CABAZON RESERVATION ALLEGEDLY USED TO DEVELOP FUEL AIR EXPLOSIVES AND OTHER MILITARY HARDWARE, SOME USED BY THE CONTRAS. USES MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO AS SOURCE.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, EARL BRIAN, EDWIN MEESE, PETER VIDENIEKS, WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-01
YEAR: 84
SUMMARY: WALL STREET JOURNAL—WACKENHUT CORP. INVESTORS APPROVE BUYOUT PLAN BY LEVERAGED INVESTORS.
KEYWORDS: GEORGE WACKENHUT, MERRILL LYNCH

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-02
YEAR: 88
SUMMARY: MIAMI TODAY—AN INTERVIEW WITH GEORGE WACKENHUT, FOUNDER OF WACKENHUT CORP.

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-03
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: THE ASSOCIATION OF CITADEL MEN ALUMNI NEWS—A PROFILE OF WACKENHUT WORLDWIDE BY THE CO.'S DIRECTOR OF CORPORATE RELATIONS. MENTIONS BOARDMEMBERS CLARENCE KELLY, FRANK CARLUCCI, ADM. WILLIAM RABORN JR., ALL FROM VARIOUS GOVERNMENT INTELLIGENCE GROUPS.
KEYWORDS: FBI, CIA, DEFENSE INTELLIGENCE AGENCY

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-04
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: INVESTOR'S DAILY—WACKENHUT DIVERSIFIES INTO DOING BACKGROUND CHECKS, WEAPONS TESTING, AND AN INTERNATIONAL DETECTIVE AGENCY WHILE UPGRADING ITS BASIC SECURITY GUARD SERVICES.
KEYWORDS: PRISONS, STATE DEPARTMENT, GEORGE R. WACKENHUT

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-05
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: ANNE ARUNDEL COUNTY SUN—COUNTY HIRES WACKENHUT FOR PRISONER TRANSPORT.
KEYWORDS: WACKENHUT CUSTOM PROTECTION DIVISION

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-06
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: FORBES—WACKENHUT GROWTH IS UP DUE TO INCREASE IN CRIME. CO. HANDLES PRISON MANAGEMENT IN SEVERAL STATES AND SECURITY FOR NUCLEAR WEAPONS FACILITIES.
KEYWORDS: RICHARD WACKENHUT, CORAL GABLES

SUBJECT: CABAZON ARMS AND WACKENHUT
FILE: WACKENHUT CORPORATION
NO.: PR\CW\WC-07
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: AUSTIN AMERICAN STATESMAN—ARTICLE EXAMINING WHETHER PRIVATE PRISONS ARE REALLY MORE EFFICIENTLY RUN. WACKENHUT IS ONE OF THE COMPANIES EXAMINED.

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-01
YEAR: 88
SUMMARY: SCIENCE NEWS—RESEARCH INDICATES THAT A SMALL PART OF THE Y CHROMOSOME MAY BE RESPONSIBLE FOR ACTUAL GENDER DETERMINATION. BUT ALL AGREE FURTHER STUDIES ARE NEEDED.
KEYWORDS: M.I.T.

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-02
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: SCIENCE—THE COMMISSION OF EUROPEAN ECONOMIC COMMUNITY DECIDES TO DELAY THE START OF A HUMAN GENOME PROJECT IN EUROPE BECAUSE THE RESEARCH PLAN DOES NOT PAY ENOUGH ATTENTION TO ETHICAL AND SOCIAL IMPLICATIONS OF THE PROJECT.
KEYWORDS: FILIPINO PANDOLFI

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-03
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST HEALTH—AN OVERVIEW OF THE US HUMAN GENOME PROJECT, AN EFFORT TO IDENTIFY EVERY ONE OF THE ESTIMATED 100,000 GENES IN THE HUMAN BODY. THE EVENTUAL COMPLETION OF THE PROJECT SHOULD ALLOW SCIENTISTS TO ELIMINATE THE GENETIC ROOTS OF DISEASE.
KEYWORDS: COLD SPRING HARBOR LABORATORY, DNA, ROBERT MAYZIS, LOS ALAMOS

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-04
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—SCIENTISTS INSERT A HUMAN GENE LINKED WITH ARTHRITIS INTO A RAT. THE RAT SUBSEQUENTLY DEVELOPS ARTHRITIC SYMPTOMS.
KEYWORDS: HOWARD HUGHES MEDICAL INSTITUTE, HAROLD C. SIMMONS, LOCKHEED

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-05
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: WALL STREET JOURNAL—RESEARCHERS HAVE ISOLATED A SPECIFIC GENE IN HUMANS AS MAKING THEM HIGHLY SUSCEPTIBLE TO CANCER. DESCRIBED AS A STARTLING RESULT OF THE NEWFOUND ABILITY TO MAP THE HUMAN GENOME.

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-06
YEAR: 89
SUMMARY: NEW YORK TIMES—MAJOR TECHNICAL ADVANCES ARE SPEEDING UP THE PROCESS OF MAPPING THE HUMAN GENOME.
KEYWORDS: DR. JAMES D. WATSON, DR. FRANCIS CRICK, DNA, COLD SPRING HARBOR LABORATORY

SUBJECT: GENETIC RESEARCH
FILE: GENETIC RESEARCH
NO.: PR\GR\GR-07
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN MAGAZINE—A PROFILE OF JAMES WATSON AND THE HUMAN GENOME PROJECT WHICH WILL ATTEMPT TO MAP ALL THE GENES ON EVERY HUMAN CHROMOSOME
KEYWORDS: CASOLARO NOTE: TO CASOLARO—ARTHUR PALLOTTA 703 524 1021 “DANNY—CANNOT THINK OF ONE PROJECT SO MASSIVE AND COMPARABLE TO “MAN IN THE MOON.”

SUBJECT: PERSIAN GULF WAR
FILE: GULF WAR
NO.: PR\GW\GW-03
YEAR: 3/15/91
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—PROFILE OF DIPLOMAT APRIL GLASPIE WHO WAS ACCUSED OF GIVING THE "GREEN LIGHT" TO SADDAM HUSSEIN'S INVASION OF KUWAIT.

SUBJECT: PERSIAN GULF WAR
FILE: GULF WAR
NO.: PR\GW\GW-02
YEAR: 3/5/91
SUMMARY: VILLAGE VOICE—AN EXAMINATION OF US POLICY THAT ALLEGEDLY FORCED THE GULF WAR IN ORDER TO ULTIMATELY SECURE THE MIDDLE EAST FOR THE US AND OTHER GOVERNMENTS.
KEYWORDS: MARGARET THATCHER, KING HUSSEIN, CIA, JIDDA, KUWAIT

SUBJECT: PERSIAN GULF WAR
FILE: GULF WAR
NO.: PR\GW\GW-01
YEAR: 90
SUMMARY: BOOK EXCERPT "SADDAM HUSSEIN AND THE CRISIS IN THE GULF"—CHAPTER 9 'THE MANUFACTURE OF DEATH' DETAILS IRAQ'S ARMS PURCHASES AND THE GOVERNMENT POLICIES THAT MADE IT POSSIBLE. ALSO INCLUDES A LOOK AT HOW IRAQ MADE NON-MILITARY INVESTMENTS IN US CHEMICAL PLANTS THAT ACTUALLY SUPPLIED THE BUILDING BLOCKS TO ITS CHEMICAL WEAPONS EFFORT.
KEYWORDS: CHRISTOPHER CROWLEY, SAAD 16, WILLIAM H. WEBSTER, PFLAUNDLER CO., NUCLEAR WEAPONS

SUBJECT: PERSIAN GULF WAR
FILE: GULF WAR
NO.: PR\GW\GW-041
YEAR: 4/1991
SUMMARY: VANITY FAIR—A LOOK AT THE ASSASSINATION OF ABU AYAD, ARAFAT'S SECOND-IN-COMMAND IN THE P.L.O. ALSO AN EXAMINATION OF THE P.L.O.'S ROLE IN THE POST-GULF WAR MIDDLE EAST.
KEYWORDS: YASSIR ARAFAT, HAMZA ABU ZEID, IRAQ, CIA, SADDAM HUSSEIN

SUBJECT: GULF WAR
FILE: GULF WAR
NO.: PR\GW\GW-01
YEAR: 7/30/91
SUMMARY: VILLAGE VOICE—A REPORT THAT THE DEPARTMENT OF COMMERCE FALSIFIED AND ALTERED 88 IRAQI EXPORT LICENSES SUBPOENAED BY A CONGRESSIONAL COMMITTEE. THE ACTS INCLUDED RELABELING AN INVENTORY OF US-MADE MILITARY TRUCKS AS "COMMERCIAL UTILITY CARGO TRUCKS."
KEYWORDS: SADDAM HUSSEIN, ROBERT GATES, RICHARD THORNBERG, CONSARC

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-01
YEAR: 5/15/90
SUMMARY: CHARLOTTE OBSERVER—THE NUKEM AND THREMALKEN CO.'S STRESS THAT THEY HAVE RECEIVED ZERO VIOLATIONS FROM STATE REGULATORY AGENCIES FOR THEIR INCINERATOR PLANTS.

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-02
YEAR: 8/5/90
SUMMARY: THE SALISBURY POST—AN COMPUTER ENGINEER CHALLENGES THE PLACEMENT OF A HAZARDOUS WASTE INCINERATOR IN HIS COUNTY
KEYWORDS: NUMEROUS NOTES WITH REGARD TO THE ARTICLE AND THE COMPANY AMERICAN NUKEM.

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-03
YEAR: 8/9/90
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN PAPER—POSSIBLE ACTION MAY BE TAKEN BY THE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH AND THE E.P.A. AGAINST VIOLATIONS AT A HAZARDOUS WASTE INCINERATOR. ALSO: "MARTIN IS ACCUSED OF PLAYING TWO SIDES"—NORTH CAROLINA'S GOVERNOR SUPPORTS ALABAMA'S BAN ON IMPORTING OF HAZARDOUS WASTE, BUT ALSO SAYS THAT THEREFORE N.C. MUST BUILD A WASTE INCINERATOR.

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-04
YEAR: 9/12/90
SUMMARY: THE RALEIGH NEWS AND OBSERVER EDITORIAL—CONFLICTS OF INTEREST WITH CERTAIN STATE OFFICIALS SHOULD NOT DERAIL NORTH CAROLINA'S ATTEMPT TO FIND SAFE WASTE DISPOSAL.
KEYWORDS: SANDOZ CHEMICALS, CHEM-NUCLEAR INC.

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-05
YEAR: 9/29/90
SUMMARY: THE CHARLOTTE OBSERVER—AN ENGINEER HIRED BY COUNTIES OPPOSED TO PLAYING HOST TO CHEMICAL WASTE COMPLEXES SAYS THE STATE MANIPULATED DATA IN SCREENING THE SOIL FOR THOSE COUNTIES, MAKING THE SITES ELIGIBLE FOR ACCEPTING THE PLANT.
KEYWORDS: WESTINGHOUSE ENVIRONMENTAL AND GEOTECHNICAL SERVICES, PEI ASSOCIATES

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-06
YEAR: 10/14/90
SUMMARY: GREENSBORO NEWS GUEST COLUMN "EXPLORING ALTERNATIVES TO INCINERATION"
KEYWORDS: THERMALKEM, HAZARDOUS WASTE MANAGEMENT COMMISSION

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-07
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER—AN INCINERATOR NORTH CAROLINA GOVERNOR JIM MARTIN PREVIOUSLY LISTED AS GOOD HAS PREVIOUSLY PAID MORE THAN $3 MILLION IN A SINGLE FINE FOR IMPROPER BURNING.
KEYWORDS: THERMALKEM, PCBS

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-08
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER—AN ENVIRONMENTAL GROUP SAYS A PROPOSED N.C. INCINERATOR IS OVERSIZED FOR THE STATE'S NEEDS.
KEYWORDS: E.P.A.,NORTH CAROLINA WASTE AWARENESS AND REDUCTION NETWORK

SUBJECT: HAZARDOUS WASTE
FILE: CAROLINA
NO.: PR\HW\C-09
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN NEWSPAPER—WASTE COMPANY THERMALKEM CONTRIBUTED TEN THOUSAND DOLLARS OF FOOD AND ENTERTAINMENT FOR A SOUTHERN LEGISLATOR'S CONFERENCE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-01
YEAR: 1/20/70, 12/19/70,6/10/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE, ALL, "HEALTH CARE CHIEF RESIGNS; EX-ARMY DOCTOR IS NAMED" —EX-CHIEF TO BECOME A PRIVATE HEALTH CARE CONSULTANT. GOV. RON REAGAN NAMES EARL BRIAN TO THE POST."SOLON, SOCIAL WORKERS DEMAND OUSTER OF DR. BRIAN AS MEDICAL PROGRAM HEAD"—ASSEMBLYMEN ACCUSE BRIAN OF SABOTAGING HEALTH PROGRAM FOR THE POOR.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-02
YEAR: 1/22/70
SUMMARY: THE SACRAMENTO BEE—A PROMOTER OF CALIFORNIA'S STATE HEALTH PROGRAMS OPPOSES EARL BRIAN'S APPOINTMENT TO DIRECTOR OF THE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH CARE SERVICES.
KEYWORDS: MEDI-CAL, GOV. RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-03
YEAR: 1/29/70
SUMMARY: UNKNOWN PAPER, EDITORIAL—EARL BRIAN IS DESCRIBED AS INEXPERIENCED TO RUN CALIFORNIA'S STATE HEALTH CARE.
KEYWORDS: MEDI-CAL

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-04
YEAR: 3/29/70
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—A PROFILE OF THEN 28 YEARS-OLD EARL BRIAN AS HE PREPARES TO BECOME MEDI-CAL DIRECTOR.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-05
YEAR: 2/6/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—A PROFILE OF EARL BRIAN'S TENURE AS DIRECTOR OF THE STATE HEALTH CARE PROGRAM
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-06
YEAR: 4/29/70
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—EARL BRIAN IS APPROVED AS STATE DIRECTOR OF STATE HEALTH CARE SERVICES.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-07
YEAR: 1/12/71
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—THE STATE BOARD OF MEDICAL EXAMINERS REFUSES TO DISCIPLINE EARL BRIAN, DIRECTOR OF MEDI-CAL, FOR CUTBACKS IN THE MEDI-CAL PROGRAM.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-08
YEAR: 2/22/71
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—THE CALIFORNIA MEDICAL ASSOCIATION PRESIDENT SAID THAT MEDICAL DIRECTOR EARL BRIAN BECAME UPSET WHEN THE CMA BEGAN ADVISING MEMBERS THAT MEDI-CAL FACED A FISCAL CRISIS.
KEYWORDS: RALPH W. BURNETT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-01
YEAR: 4/29/71
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—A JUDGE IN A HEARING ADMITS A MEMO CONTRADICTING MEDI-CAL DIRECTOR EARL BRIAN'S PREVIOUS TESTIMONY THAT HE HADN'T KNOWN OF PROGRAM DEFICIT.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-10
YEAR: 6/10/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—OUTGOING MEDI-CAL DIRECTOR EARL BRIAN IS SUED IN A CLASS ACTION SUIT TO RAISE STATE HEALTH CARE REIMBURSEMENTS.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-11
YEAR: 06/30/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—PHOTO OF EARL BRIAN NAMED AFTER BEING SWORN-IN AS CALIF. SECR. OF HUMAN RELATIONS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-12
YEAR: 11/19/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—CALIFORNIAN EARL BRIAN NAMED AS POSSIBLE NIXON WHITE HOUSE STAFF MEMBER.
KEYWORDS: RICHARD NIXON, RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-13
YEAR: 2/12/73
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—THE NIXON ADMINISTRATION ATTEMPTS TO LURE CALIFORNIA BUREAUCRAT EARL BRIAN TO A WASHINGTON POST. CURRENT HEW SECRETARY IS CASPAR WEINBERGER.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, ROBERT CARLESON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-14
YEAR: 9/21/72
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—NOW AN AIDE FOR GOVERNOR RONALD REAGAN, EARL BRIAN MAKES RADICAL CHANGES TO THE CALIFORNIA HEALTH AND WELFARE AGENCY.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-15
YEAR: 9/9/73 AND 7/24/77
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE '73: GOVERNOR REAGAN URGES EARL BRIAN TO RUN FOR US SENATE. '77: A CALIF. STATE REPORT ON GOV. REAGAN'S LAX HANDLING OF THE NURSING HOME INDUSTRY ALSO MENTIONS AN ON-GOING INVESTIGATION INTO THE FINANCING OF EARL BRIAN'S ABORTIVE US SENATE CAMPAIGN IN '74.
KEYWORDS: BEVERLY ENTERPRISES, RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-16
YEAR: 1/2/74
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—CALIF. HEALTH AND WELFARE HEAD EARL BRIAN CREATES A 'NEWSLETTER FILM' FOR STATE EMPLOYEES.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-17
YEAR: 1/18/74
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—CALIF. SECRETARY OF HEALTH AND WELFARE RESIGNS TO RUN FOR US SENATE AGAINST INCUMBENT ALAN CRANSTON.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-18
YEAR: 1/19/74
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—GOVERNOR REAGAN ANNOUNCES EARL BRIANS'S REPLACEMENT FOR THE POSITION OF SECRETARY OF HEALTH AND WELFARE. BRIAN IS RUNNING FOR US SENATE.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, JAMES E. JENKINS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-19
YEAR: 2/13/75
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—FORMER CALIFORNIA HEALTH AND WELFARE AGENCY CHIEF EARL BRIAN IS ANGRY OVER THE CANCELLATION OF A BRIAN RESEARCH PROJECT BY THE NEW BROWN ADMINISTRATION.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, ROBERT CARLESON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-20
YEAR: 6/22/78
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—AFFIDAVITS BY TWO FORMER US SENATORS SAY FORMER SECRETARY OF CALIFORNIA HEALTH AND WELFARE TOOK CAMPAIGN CONTRIBUTIONS FROM THE NURSING HOME INDUSTRY IN EXCHANGE FOR INCREASING NURSING HOME PAYMENTS FROM THE STATE.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-21
YEAR: 2/28/88
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—EARL BRIAN NOW THE CHAIRMAN OF INFO TECH CORP WHICH HAS AN INTEREST IN COMPANIES SUCH AS FINANCIAL NEWS NETWORK AND UNITED PRESS INTERNATIONAL.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, DWIGHT GEDULDIG

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-23
YEAR: 11/28/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—PROFILE OF EARL BRIAN AS EMPIRE BUILDER AND OWNER OF INFOTECH.
KEYWORDS: HADRON, FINANCIAL NEWS NETWORK, COMTEX SCIENTIFIC

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-24
YEAR: 11/28/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—OVERVIEW OF EARL BRIAN'S PLANS TO SAVE UPI.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: BRIAN, EARL
NO.: PR\IN\BE-13
YEAR: 2/12/73
SUMMARY: SACRAMENTO BEE—THE NIXON ADMINISTRATION ATTEMPTS TO LURE CALIFORNIA BUREAUCRAT EARL BRIAN TO A WASHINGTON POST. CURRENT HEW SECRETARY IS CASPAR WEINBERGER.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, ROBERT CARLESON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INFOTECH
NO.: PR\IN\IT-01
YEAR: 10/25/90
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—INFO TECH ASSET FINANCIAL NETWORK NEWS HAS INSUFFICIENT CASH FLOW TO MEET COSTS.
KEYWORDS: EARL BRIAN, ALAN HIRSCHFIELD, ALLAN TESSLER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INFOTECH
NO.: PR\IN\IT-02
YEAR: 10/29/90
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—FINANCIAL NEWS NETWORK AND INFO TECHNOLOGY STOCK BOTH DROPPED IN THE MARKET AND OTHER TROUBLES.
KEYWORDS: EARL BRIAN, SECURITIES AND EXCHANGE COMMISSION

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INFOTECH
NO.: PR\IN\IT-03
YEAR: 11/12/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—AN ACCOUNT OF INFO TECH AND FNN'S ATTEMPT TO RESTORE THEIR IMAGE.
KEYWORDS: HADRON, INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INFOTECH
NO.: PR\IN\IT-04
YEAR: 11/12/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INFOTECH FIRMS REPORTEDLY TARGET OF CRIMINAL FRAUD PROBES RELATING TO INSLAW.
KEYWORDS: F.B.I., S.E.C., CHALLENGER LTD.,

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INFOTECH
NO.: PR\IN\IT-05
YEAR: 11/19/90
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—AN INDEPTH LOOK BEHIND THE PROBLEMS AT FNN AND INFOTECH.
KEYWORDS: HADRON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-01
YEAR: 4/83
SUMMARY: LEGAL TECH—INSLAW, INC. SIGNS AN AGREEMENT WITH EASTERN INFORMATION SERVICES IN WHICH INSLAW ACQUIRES AN EIS ACCOUNTING SOFTWARE AND INTEGRATES IT WITH INSLAW'S MODULAW, A LAW PRACTICE SUPPORT SOFTWARE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-02
YEAR: 9/3/83
SUMMARY: THE ECONOMIST—A SHORT SIDEBAR ABOUT INSLAW INC. AND THEIR SOFTWARE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-03
YEAR: 10/12/86
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—D. LOWELL JENSEN, FORMER NO. 2 JUSTICE OFFICIAL IS ACCUSED BY THE INSLAW LAWSUIT OF HELPING FORCE THE SOFTWARE COMPANY INTO BANKRUPTCY.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, WILLIAM HAMILTON, RONALD REAGAN, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-04
YEAR: 12/9/86
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—A FEDERAL BANKRUPTCY JUDGE REFUSES TO DISMISS INSLAW INC.'S LAWSUIT AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: RONALD REAGAN, PROMIS, DALITE, LOWELL JENSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-01
YEAR: 6/11/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—FEDERAL BANKRUPTCY JUDGE DELAYS DECISION ON INSLAW SUIT FOR 2 DAYS.
KEYWORDS: JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON JR.,DEAN COOPER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-06
YEAR: 6/13/87
SUMMARY: PHILADELPHIA INQUIRER—US BANKRUPTCY JUDGE GEORGE BASON RULES THAT THE US JUSTICE DEPARTMENT UNLAWFULLY TRIED TO PUT INSLAW OUT OF BUSINESS AND THAT TWO DEPARTMENT OFFICIALS GAVE "UNBELIEVABLE" TESTIMONY.
KEYWORDS: LOWELL JENSEN, PROMIS, EDWIN MEESE, THOMAS STANTON, C. MADISON BREWER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-07
YEAR: 6/13/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—A US JUDGE RULES THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT MADE "UNDUE AND IMPROPER ATTEMPTS" TO DRIVE THE INSLAW SOFTWARE CO. OUT OF BUSINESS.
KEYWORDS: JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON JR.,WILLIAM HAMILTON, C. MADISON BREWER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-08
YEAR: 6/22/87
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—INSLAW ATTEMPTS TO REMOVE THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S TRUSTEES FROM THE SOFTWARE COMPANY'S BANKRUPTCY PROCEEDINGS.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-09
YEAR: 9/21/87
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT IGNORES US JUDGE GEORGE BASON'S RULING THAT THEY APPOINT AN INDEPENDENT OFFICIAL TO REVIEW INSLAW'S LIST OF ALLEGATIONS.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, D. LOWELL JENSEN, JOHN BOLTON, DAVID MARTIN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-10
YEAR: 9/29/87
SUMMARY: ST. LOUIS POST DISPATCH—A US JUDGE ORDERS THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT TO PAY INSLAW INC. FOR FIVE YEARS USE AND DUPLICATION OF THE COMPANY'S SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, GEORGE F. BASON JR., ELLIOT L. RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-11
YEAR: 9/29/87
SUMMARY: ARIZONA REPUBLIC—US BANKRUPTCY JUDGE GEORGE BASON JR. RULES THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ENGAGED IN "OUTRAGEOUS AND INDEFENSIBLE" CONDUCT AGAINST INSLAW INC.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON, WILLIAM HAMILTON, D. LOWELL JENSEN, JANIS A. SPOSATO, WILLIAM P. TYSON, LAURENCE MCWHORTER, JACK S. RUGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-12
YEAR: 9/29/87
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—US JUDGE RULES THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT STOLE INSLAW'S SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-13
YEAR: 9/29/87
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—JUDGE RULES AGAINST JUSTICE DEPARTMENT AND FOR INSLAW.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, PATRICK KORTEN, ELLIOT RICHARDSON, JUDGE GEORGE F. BREWER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-14
YEAR: 9/29/87
SUMMARY: NEW YORK TIMES—US JUDGE RULES THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT USED "TRICKERY, FRAUD AND DECEIT" TO STEAL PROMIS SOFTWARE FROM INSLAW INC.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER, PATRICK KORTEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-15
YEAR: 10/2/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON TIMES—A PROFILE OF INSLAW FOUNDER WILLIAM HAMILTON AND HIS BATTLE WITH THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, PATRICK KORTEN, NANCY HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-16
YEAR: 10/5/87
SUMMARY: CRIME CONTROL DIGEST—US JUDGE SAYS D.O.J. USED “FRAUD” TO DESTROY INSLAW INC. JUDGE ALSO SAYS A NUMBER OF GOVERNMENT OFFICIALS DISPLAYED “COLLECTIVE AMNESIA” WHEN QUESTIONED ABOUT THE CASE.
KEYWORDS: LAW ENFORCEMENT ASSISTANCE ADMINISTRATION, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-17
YEAR: 10/5/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—PRO-INSLAW RULING RESTORES COMPANY’S CREDIBILITY.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, NANCY HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-18
YEAR: 10/5/87
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—JUDGE GEORGE BASON JR. RULES AGAINST THE GOVERNMENT IN THE INSLAW SUIT AND FINDS THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT PROJECT MANAGER FOR THE COMPANY HAD A VENDETTA AGAINST THE OWNERS.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER, WILLIAM A. HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-19
YEAR: 10/6/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL CALLING FOR AN IMMEDIATE PUBLIC ACCOUNTING OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT’S BEHAVIOR IN THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER, JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-20
YEAR: 10/12/87
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT AWARDS HADRON INC. A 40 MILLION DOLLAR CONTRACT FOR AUTOMATED LITIGATION SUPPORT. HADRON’S LARGEST STOCKHOLDER IS DR. EARL BRIAN, FORMER CALIFORNIA HEALTH OFFICIAL.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, ACUMENICS, BIOTECH, FAIRFAX VA.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-21
YEAR: 10/12/87
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—A PRESTIGIOUS WASHINGTON D.C. LAW FIRM THAT ORIGINALLY REPRESENTED INSLAW INC. AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT IS ACCUSED OF CONFLICT-OF-INTEREST.
KEYWORDS: DICKSTEIN, SHAPIRO, AND MORIN, LEIGH RATINER, D. LOWELL JENSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-22
YEAR: 10/12/87
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL EDITORIAL RECOMMENDING LAWFIRMS TO DO PRO BONO WORK IN CASES LIKE THE INSLAW SUIT.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-23
YEAR: 10/12/87
SUMMARY: TIME—A SUMMARY OF THE INSLAW CASE TO DATE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-24
YEAR: 10/12/87
SUMMARY: THE NATIONAL LAW JOURNAL—A DETAILED SUMMARY OF THE INSLAW CASE AND THE RULING OF JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON.
KEYWORDS: EXECUTIVE OFFICE FOR UNITED STATES ATTORNEYS, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-25
YEAR: 12/21/87
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—THE SENATE GOVERNMENTAL AFFAIRS PERMANENT SUBCOMMITTEE ON INVESTIGATIONS BEGINS INVESTIGATING THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: SAM NUNN, ALAN EDELMAN, D. LOWELL JENSEN, AMELIA BROWN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-26
YEAR: 1/18/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—FEDERAL BANKRUPTCY JUDGE GEORGE BASON SAYS HE IS NOT REAPPOINTED DUE TO HIS RULING IN THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: S. MARTIN TEEL JR., WESLEY WILLIAMS JR., PATRICIA M. WALD

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-27
YEAR: 1/20/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT CLAIMS JUDGE GEORGE BASON IS BIASED AND DEMANDS HIS OUSTER FROM THE INSLAW CASE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-28
YEAR: 1/23/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT DENIES JUDGE'S CLAIMS OF RETRIBUTION AGAINST HIM FOR UNFAVORABLE INSLAW RULING.
KEYWORDS: JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON, S. MARTIN TEEL JR.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-29
YEAR: 2/1/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—BANKRUPTCY JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON JR. SET TO DETERMINE DAMAGES OWED TO INSLAW BY JUSTICE DEPARTMENT
KEYWORDS: PATRICIA WALD, DEAN COOPER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-30
YEAR: 2/1/88
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—INSLAW CREDITOR DROPS PETITION TO CLAIM MONEY OWED FOR LEGAL FEES
KEYWORDS: DICKSTEIN, SHAPIRO, & MORIN, EDWIN MEESE, NORMAN OLIVER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-31
YEAR: 2/1/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW ATTORNEYS SEEK EVIDENCE THAT AT&T AND THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE COLLUDED TO DESTROY THE SOFTWARE COMPANY.
KEYWORDS: KENNETH A. ROSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-32
YEAR: 2/2/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON ORDERS THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT TO PAY INSLAW $6.8 MILLION IN DAMAGES.
KEYWORDS: MCDERMOTT, WILL, & EMORY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-33
YEAR: 2/15/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON STRUGGLES TO REMAIN ON THE BENCH AFTER RULING AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: S. MARTIN TEEL JR., NORMA HOLLOWAY JOHNSON, JEROME BARRON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-34
YEAR: 2/15/88
SUMMARY: CHICAGO TRIBUNE—SUMMARY/OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR
KEYWORDS: LEONARD GARMENT, EDWIN MEESE, GEORGE BASON, PROMIS, D. LOWELL JENSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-35
YEAR: 2/15/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW ACCUSES AT&T ATTORNEY OF CONFLICT OF INTEREST.
KEYWORDS: ROGER WHELAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-36
YEAR: 2/22/88
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—REMOVED JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON URGES PROSECUTOR TO PROBE EDWIN MEESE'S CONNECTION TO THE INSLAW AFFAIR.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-37
YEAR: 2/29/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT PLANS TO FIRE AN EMPLOYEE WHOSE STATEMENTS HELPED INSLAW WIN A RULING AGAINST THE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: ANTHONY PASCIUTO

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-38
YEAR: 2/29/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—IBM AND INSLAW NEGOTIATE A DEAL TO HELP PULL INSLAW OUT OF BANKRUPTCY.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-39
YEAR: 3/7/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL EDITORIAL RECOMMENDS A SPECIAL PROSECUTOR TO LOOK INTO THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: ANTHONY PASCIUTO

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-40
YEAR: 3/7/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—SENATE EXAMINES JUSTICE DEPARTMENT PROPOSALS FOR AUTOMATION TO SEE IF STOLEN PROMIS SOFTWARE WILL BE USED.
KEYWORDS: PROJECT EAGLE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-01
YEAR: 9/88
SUMMARY: HE WASHINGTON POST—A PROFILE OF US ATTORNEY JAY B. STEPHENS AND HIS ROLE IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: IRAN-CONTRA, OLIVER NORTH, PROMIS, C. MADISON BREWER III

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-42
YEAR: 3/18/88
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—PROBLEMS WITH JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OFFICE MECHANIZATION "PROJECT EAGLE"

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-43
YEAR: 3/21/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—FOLLOWING THE REMOVAL OF PREVIOUS JUDGE GEORGE BASON, INSLAW BANKRUPTCY PROCEEDINGS REMAIN DORMANT.
KEYWORDS: AT&T, KENNETH ROSEN, S. MARTIN TEEL

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-44
YEAR: 3/21/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL LETTER TO THE EDITOR—BASON SAYS HE NEVER PERSONALLY BELIEVED HE WAS REMOVED FROM BENCH FOR HIS INSLAW RULING, BUT THAT OTHER BARRISTERS HAVE TOLD HIM THEY THINK HE WAS.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-01
YEAR: 3/22/88
SUMMARY: L.A. DAILY JOURNAL—OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW CASE
KEYWORDS: PAUL SIMON, CORNELIUS BLACKSHEAR, PROMIS, LEAA, LEONARD GARMENT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-46
YEAR: 4/4/88
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—AN OVERVIEW THAT EXAMINES MAJOR CHARACTERS IN THE INSLAW SCANDAL
KEYWORDS: ANTHONY PASCIUTO, S. MARTIN TEEL, C. MADISON BREWER, EARL BRIAN, HADRON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-47
YEAR: 4/4/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—A SENATE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE PREPARES TO QUESTION JUSTICE OFFICIALS ON THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, KENNETH ROSEN, LEONARD GARMENT, ARNOLD BURNS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-48
YEAR: 4/4/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ASKS COURT TO DROP BARRING OF THREE KEY SOURCES, EMPLOYEES PETER VIDENIEKS, JACK RUGH, AND C. MADISON BREWER
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, PROJECT EAGLE, JUDGE WILLIAM BRYANT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-50
YEAR: 4/16/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—EX-WHITE HOUSE COUNSEL JAY B. STEPHENS WAS NOMINATED FOR US ATTORNEY GENERAL BY PRESIDENT RONALD REAGAN. IN 1983, STEPHENS OPTED NOT TO INVESTIGATE BIAS IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: OLIVER NORTH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-51
YEAR: 4/15/88
SUMMARY: DATAMATION—AN OVERVIEW OF INSLAW OWNER AND FOUNDER BILL HAMILTON AND HIS WIFE AND THEIR STRUGGLE AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: AT&T, SOFTWARE AND SERVICES INDUSTRY ASSOCIATION

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-52
YEAR: 4/15/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL—JUDICIARY PANELS SHOULD GET TO THE BOTTOM OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: SENATE PERMANENT SUBCOMMITTEE ON PERMANENT INVESTIGATIONS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-53
YEAR: 4/18/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—PROJECT EAGLE BECOMES CAUGHT UP IN JUSTICE DEPARTMENT-INSLAW DISPUTE.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER III, PETER VIDENIEKS, JACK RUGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-54
YEAR: 4/25/88
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—LETTER FROM PRESIDENT OF HADRON INC., A COMPANY INVOLVED IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR THROUGH DR. EARL BRIAN, DENIES CERTAIN PUBLISHED STATEMENTS.
KEYWORDS: DOMINIC A. LAITI

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-55
YEAR: 5/4/88
SUMMARY: RICHMOND TIMES-DISPATCH—A FOLLOW-UP ON THE CONGRESSIONAL PROBE'S LOOK INTO EDWIN MEESE'S ROLE IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: CORNELIUS BLACKSHEAR, ANTHONY PASCIUTO, LEIGH RATINER, DOMINIC LAITI

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-56
YEAR: 5/6/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ANNOUNCES THAT IT IS INVESTIGATING DEPARTMENT OFFICIALS FOR POSSIBLE PERJURY DURING THE INSLAW HEARINGS.
KEYWORDS: JOHN RUSSELL, EDWIN MEESE, SAM NUNN, LEONARD GARMENT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-57
YEAR: 5/6/88
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT PROBING POSSIBLE EMPLOYEE PERJURY IN THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: JAMES C. MCKAY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-58
YEAR: 5/6/88
SUMMARY: US REP. JACK BUECHNER PRESS RELEASE—CALLS FOR RESIGNATION OF EDWIN MEESE AND QUOTES JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON'S RULING ON INSLAW AND THE ABA CODE OF PROFESSIONAL RESPONSIBILITY.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-59
YEAR: 5/7/88
SUMMARY: SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT LAWYERS CONCLUDE THAT THERE IS NO NEED FOR AN INVESTIGATION INTO EDWIN MEESE'S ROLE IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: DICKSTEIN, SHAPIRO, & MORIN, JOHN C. KEENEY, CHARLES R. WORK

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW A
NO.: PR\IN\IA-60
YEAR: 5/11/88
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES EDITORIAL—CALLS FOR A PUBLIC REPORT OF THE EFFORTS OF INDEPENDENT COUNSEL JAMES MCKAY IN HIS INVESTIGATION OF EDWIN MEESE AND INSLAW.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-01
YEAR: 5/16/88
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—FORMER INSLAW LAWYER PRESSURES CBS TO A KILL A NEWS REPORT THAT IT DROPPED INSLAW AS A CLIENT BECAUSE OF JUSTICE DEPARTMENT PRESSURE.
KEYWORDS: DICKSTEIN, SHAPIRO, & MORIN; LEONARD GARMENT; LEIGH RATINER; MARTY KOUGHAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-02
YEAR: 5/16/88
SUMMARY: DIGITAL REVIEW—OVERVIEW OF INSLAW CASE. INCLUDES TIMELINE OF EVENTS.
KEYWORDS: EXECUTIVE OFFICE OF US ATTORNEYS, PROMIS, EARL BRIAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-03
YEAR: 5/23/88
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—LETTER FROM JUSTICE OFFICIAL CORRECTING ALLEGED ERRORS IN A PREVIOUS ARTICLE.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM P. TYSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-04
YEAR: 5/23/88
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—LETTER FROM FORMER INSLAW LAWYER DENYING THAT HIS FIRM TRIED TO STIFLE A CBS NEWS REPORT ON INSLAW.
KEYWORDS: LEONARD GARMENT; DICKSTEIN, SHAPIRO, & MORIN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-05
YEAR: 8/25/88
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE REPORT FAULTS THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT FOR NOT MAKING EMPLOYEES SIGN A FINANCIAL DISCLOSURE ACT.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, URSULA MEESE, DICK THORNBURGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-06
YEAR: 6/13/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW ATTORNEY'S TRY TO REMOVE AT&T FROM THE SOFTWARE COMPANY'S BANKRUPTCY PROCEEDINGS, CLAIMING CONFLICT OF INTEREST.
KEYWORDS: MICHAEL FRIEDLANDER; JUDGE GEORGE F. BASON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-07
YEAR: 6/13/88
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—AN INDEPENDENT PROSECUTOR'S REPORT WILL DRAW "UNFLATTERING" CONCLUSIONS ABOUT EDWIN MEESE.
KEYWORDS: IRAQ; E. ROBERT WALLACH; WEDTECH CORP.; ELLIOT L. RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-08
YEAR: 6/6/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE DECIDES TO INVESTIGATE EDWIN MEESE'S ROLE IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: JOHN KEENEY; LEONARD GARMENT; OFFICE OF PROFESSIONAL RESPONSIBILITY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-09
YEAR: 6/13/88
SUMMARY: BUSINESS WEEK—OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: EARL BRIAN; LAW ENFORCEMENT ASSISTANCE ADMINISTRATION; D. LOWELL JENSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-10
YEAR: 6/27/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT BLASTS INSLAW CASE VERDICT IN A FILED APPEALS BRIEF.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAMS B. BRYANT; CORNELIUS BLACKSHEAR; ANTHONY PASCUITO

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-11
YEAR: 7/18/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW SAYS THREE WHISTLE BLOWERS HAVE CORROBORATED THE COMPANY'S CHARGES ABOUT THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE TRYING TO DRIVE IT OUT OF BUSINESS.
KEYWORDS: MARK M. RICHARD; RONALD L. GAINER; JOHN C. KEENEY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-12
YEAR: 8/12/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—EDWIN MEESE ATTEMPTS TO BLOCK TESTIMONY TO A SENATE SUBCOMMITTEE BY TWO JUSTICE DEPARTMENT EMPLOYEES, BUT IS REVERSED.
KEYWORDS: SAM NUNN; GEORGE F. BASON; THOMAS STANTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-13
YEAR: 8/25/88
SUMMARY: SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE—THE GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE CRITICIZES THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S FAILURE TO REQUIRE EMPLOYEES TO FILE FINANCIAL DISCLOSURE REPORTS.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM FORD, GERRY SIKORSKI, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-14
YEAR: 9/12/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW FILES ANSWER TO JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S APPEAL ON INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: EARL BRIAN, WILLIAMS B. BRYANT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-15
YEAR: 10/3/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW FILES A RESPONSE TO D.O.J. APPEAL ON THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: AT&T, C. MADISON BREWER, WILLIAM BRYANT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-16
YEAR: 10/24/88
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—AFTER TWO JUDGES RECUSE THEMSELVES FOR CONFLICT OF INTEREST, BANKRUPTCY JUDGE JAMES SCHNEIDER TAKES OVER THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: AT&T, HADRON INC., EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-17
YEAR: 10/31/88
SUMMARY: NEW TECHNOLOGY WEEK—A SECRET MEMO FROM A JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OFFICIAL TO A SENATE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE COMPARES THE INSLAW CASE TO WATERGATE.
KEYWORDS: D. LOWELL JENSEN, EDWIN MEESE, SAM NUNN, JAMES SCHNEIDER, UNIX, DALITE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-18
YEAR: 11/28/88
SUMMARY: THE NATIONAL LAW JOURNAL—A MAJOR WASHINGTON LAW FIRM WILL SPEAK BEFORE A BANKRUPTCY JUDGE ON ALLEGED CONFLICT OF INTEREST WHILE HANDLING INSLAW'S SUIT AGAINST THE GOVERNMENT.
KEYWORDS: SAM NUNN, LEONARD GARMENT, JAMES F. SCHNEIDER, LEIGH RATINER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-19
YEAR: 12/28/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—INSLAW EMERGES FROM BANKRUPTCY REORGANIZATION WITH HELP FROM IBM, BUT MUST PAY OLD LEGAL FEES TO A LAW FIRM THE COMPANY CLAIMS MISHANDLED THEIR CASE.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, DICKSTEIN SHAPIRO

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-20
YEAR: 2/20/89
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OFFICIALS ARE CONSIDERING OFFERS FOR ITS "PROJECT EAGLE" OFFICE COMPUTERIZATION PLAN.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-21
YEAR: 7/3/89
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—TWO COMPANIES PROTEST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S AWARD OF THE PROJECT EAGLE CONTRACT TO TISOFT INC.
KEYWORDS: PRIME COMPUTER INC., FALCON SYSTEMS INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-01
YEAR: 10/89
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—WHILE AWAITING THE BEGINNING OF IT'S PROJECT EAGLE UPGRADE PROJECT, THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT LOOKS FOR UPGRADES OF OTHER COMPUTER EQUIPMENT.
KEYWORDS: KRIME COMPUTER INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-23
YEAR: 7/10/89
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—A SHORT PROFILE ON TISOFT INC. AND THE BOOST THE PROJECT EAGLE CONTRACT WILL MEAN FOR THE COMPANY.
KEYWORDS: JOHN A. OAKES, AMICUS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-24
YEAR: 9/30/89
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A SENATE SUBCOMMITTEE CONCLUDES THAT JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OFFICIALS SHOWED "POOR JUDGEMENT," BUT THAT THEY COULD FIND NO EVIDENCE OF A CONSPIRACY TO BANKRUPT INSLAW INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-25
YEAR: 10/2/89
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—A SENATE COMMITTEE FINDS NO CONSPIRACY ON THE PART OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT TO DRIVE INSLAW INTO BANKRUPTCY BUT SAYS PERSONAL BIASES DID UNDERCUT THE DEPARTMENT'S INTEGRITY.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-26
YEAR: 11/23/89
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A FEDERAL DISTRICT JUDGE UPHOLDS A BANKRUPTCY COURT'S RULING THAT THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE HARASSED INSLAW AND TRIED TO DRIVE IT OUT OF BUSINESS.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM B. BRYANT, AMY BROWN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-27
YEAR: 11/23/89
SUMMARY: ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH—A US DISTRICT JUDGE AFFIRMED THAT THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE "WILLFULLY AND FRAUDULENTLY" SOUGHT TO DRIVE INSLAW INC. OUT OF BUSINESS.
KEYWORDS: MICHAEL ROBINSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-28
YEAR: 8/7/89
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—PRIME COMPUTER INC. GIVES UP PROTEST OF JUSTICE DEPARTMENT AWARDING PROJECT EAGLE CONTRACT TO TISOFT INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-29
YEAR: 12/4/89
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—FEDERAL JUDGE WILLIAM BRYANT UPHOLDS PREVIOUS INSLAW AWARD AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: GEORGE F. BASON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-30
YEAR: 12/18/89
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—AN OVERVIEW TO DATE OF THE INSLAW CASE AND THE BEHAVIOR OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT. ARTICLE COMPARES THE INSLAW SITUATION TO OTHER FORCED-BANKRUPTCIES INVOLVING THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: CAMPAIGNER PUBLICATIONS, CAUCUS DISTRIBUTORS, THE FUSION ENERGY FOUNDATION, LYNDON LAROUCHE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-31
YEAR: 12/24/89
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL—SUPPORTS THE RECENT UPHOLDING OF AN AWARD TO INSLAW FROM THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: C. MADISON BREWER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-32
YEAR: 12/27/89
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—INSLAW SEEKS COURT-ORDERED PROBE OF ITS CASE, CLAIMING THE GOVERNMENT STOLE ITS SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: DICK THORNBURGH, WILLIAM HAMILTON, ELLIOT RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-33
YEAR: 12/28/89
SUMMARY: ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH—INSLAW ASKS A COURT TO FORCE ANOTHER JUSTICE DEPARTMENT INVESTIGATION OF IT'S OWN BEHAVIOR WITH REGARD TO INSLAW INC.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, WILLIAM B. BRYANT, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-34
YEAR: 12/31/89
SUMMARY: THE ATLANTA JOURNAL—INSLAW ALLEGES THAT ATTORNEY GENERAL EDWIN MEESE CONSPIRED AGAINST THE COMPANY AND ASK A COURT TO FORCE MEESE'S SUCCESSOR TO INVESTIGATE THE MATTER.
KEYWORDS: RICHARD THORNBURGH, URSULA MEESE, EARL BRIAN, HADRON INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-35
YEAR: 1/4/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES COMMENTARY—EDITORIAL RECOMMENDS THAT ATTORNEY GENERAL DICK THORNBURGH RECONSIDER HIS REFUSAL TO INVESTIGATE THE HANDLING OF INSLAW CONTRACTS BY THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-36
YEAR: 1/6/90
SUMMARY: CHICAGO SUN TIMES, JAMES J. KILPATRICK COLUMN—REVIEW OF INSLAW CASE UP TO SECOND RULING IN FAVOR OF INSLAW BY JUDGE WILLIAM BRYANT.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, JOHN R. BOLTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-37
YEAR: 1/8/90
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW ASKS A FEDERAL JUDGE TO SEEK A PROBE INTO ALLEGED DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE CONSPIRACY AGAINST THE SOFTWARE COMPANY.
KEYWORDS: RICHARD THORNBURGH, EDWIN MEESE, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-38
YEAR: 1/15/90
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER MARKET REPORT—INSLAW ACTS TO FORCE ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH TO APPOINT IMPARTIAL SPECIAL PROSECUTOR TO LOOK INTO ITS CLAIMS OF CONSPIRACY.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON, EDWIN MEESE, LOWELL JENSEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-39
YEAR: 1/15/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—AFTER WINNING A $76 MILLION JUSTICE DEPARTMENT COMPUTER CONTRACT, TISOFT INC. PUTS ITSELF UP FOR SALE.
KEYWORDS: PROJECT EAGLE, PATRICK GALLAGHER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-40
YEAR: 1/15/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW CLAIMS THAT SEVERAL UNFRIENDLY TAKEOVER BIDS BETWEEN 1983 AND 1986 WERE ORCHESTRATED BY EARL BRIAN.
KEYWORDS: HADRON INC., URSULA MEESE, PROMIS, SAM NUNN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-41
YEAR: 1/29/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW FILES A GOVERNMENT CONTRACT APPEALS BOARD SEEKING $2 MILLION IN PAYMENTS WITHHELD BY THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, RICHARD THORNBURGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-42
YEAR: 2/5/90
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ANNOUNCES THAT IT WILL APPEAL THE FEDERAL COURT RULING THAT IT STOLE SOFTWARE FROM INSLAW INC.
KEYWORDS: DEPARTMENT OF TRANSPORTATION, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-43
YEAR: 2/2/90
SUMMARY: THE COMPUTER LAWYER—DETAILED LEGAL OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: EXECUTIVE OFFICE OF THE UNITED STATES ATTORNEYS, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-01
YEAR: 24/90
SUMMARY: NATIONAL JOURNAL—OVERVIEW OF INSLAW AFFAIR TO DATE.
KEYWORDS: URSULA MEESE, EARL BRIAN, PROJECT EAGLE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-45
YEAR: 3/5/90
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—INSLAW FOUNDER WILLIAM HAMILTON REBUTS A PREVIOUS LETTER FROM A JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OFFICIAL WHO CLAIMED THAT INSLAW HAD MALIGNED THE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: THOMAS G. DOOLEY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-46
YEAR: 4/30/90
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—INSLAW ALLEGES THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT IS TRYING TO SECRETLY CONVERT INSLAW SOFTWARE AND THEREBY STEAL IT.
KEYWORDS: MICHAEL ROBINSON, LAND AND NATURAL RESOURCES DIVISION

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-47
YEAR: 4/3/90
SUMMARY: ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH—OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR TO DATE. INSLAW FOUNDER SAYS THAT 42 US ATTORNEYS OFFICES CONTINUE TO USE TEST VERSIONS OF SOFTWARE STILL UNDER DISPUTE.
KEYWORDS: D. LOWELL JENSEN, PROMIS, WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-48
YEAR: 3/5/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ASKS A FEDERAL JUDGE TO DISMISS AN INSLAW PETITION COMPELLING A PROBE OF THE DEPARTMENT.
KEYWORDS: EARL BRIAN, SAM NUNN, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-49
YEAR: 3/17/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL—QUESTIONS THE RESISTANCE OF ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH AND THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT TO A FULL ACCOUNTING OF THE INSLAW MATTER.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW B
NO.: PR\IN\IB-50
YEAR: 4/2/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT SEEKS A COURT-APPOINTED MEDIATOR TO QUIETLY SETTLE THE INSLAW CASE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-01
YEAR: 4/2/90
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER WEEK—NETWORK SYSTEMS CORP. SAYS IT HELPED TISOFT INC. WIN THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE “PROJECT EAGLE” CONTRACT AND WAS JILTED WHEN TISOFT PUT ITSELF UP FOR SALE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-02
YEAR: 4/16/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—AFTER MONTHS OF RESISTANCE, ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH AGREES TO ASSIST CONGRESSIONAL INVESTIGATORS IN THEIR LOOK INTO THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: REP. JACK BROOKS, PROJECT EAGLE, GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-03
YEAR: 4/28/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST EDITORIAL—COMMENDS ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH FOR FINALLY COOPERATING WITH A CONGRESSIONAL COMMITTEE LOOKING INTO THE INSLAW CONTRACT DISPUTE.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-04
YEAR: 4/30/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW CLAIMS THAT A JUSTICE DEPARTMENT SOFTWARE BUY IS REALLY A SURREPTITIOUS EFFORT TO CONVERT INSLAW'S PROMIS SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: CAROL ROTHGEB, MICHAEL ROBINSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-05
YEAR: 5/7/90
SUMMARY: NEWS-PRESS, JAMES J. KILPATRICK EDITORIAL—AN OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW DISPUTE TO DATE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-06
YEAR: 5/7/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—INSLAW SUGGESTS THAT THE WINNER OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S PROJECT EAGLE CONTRACT IS INVOLVED IN A CONSPIRACY AGAINST THE SOFTWARE COMPANY.
KEYWORDS: TISOFT INC., PAT GALLAGHER, WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-07
YEAR: 5/18/90
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—AN OVERVIEW OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR TO DATE WITH AN ANALYSIS OF PROBLEMS WITH THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S "PROJECT EAGLE," AN OFFICE AUTOMATION PLAN.
KEYWORDS: PATRICK GALLAGHER, WILLIAM HAMILTON, JACK BROOKS, TERRY MILLER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-01
YEAR: 5/28/90
SUMMARY: BUSINESS WEEK—A PROFILE OF US ATTORNEY GENERAL DICK THORNBURGH.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM H. GRAY III, DAVID R. RUNKEL, KENNETH W. STARR

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-09
YEAR: 9/10/90
SUMMARY: THE NEW REPUBLIC—ARTICLE REVIEWS MAJOR EVENTS TO DATE IN THE INSLAW AFFAIR AND QUESTIONS WHY ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH DOESN'T LEAD AN INVESTIGATION OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S BEHAVIOR.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, ANTHONY PASCIUTO, CORNELIUS BLACKSHEAR, SAM NUNN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-10
YEAR: 7/2/90
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—A HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE PROBE FINDS IRREGULARITIES IN THE AWARD OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S "PROJECT EAGLE" CONTRACT TO TISOFT INC.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS, ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-11
YEAR: 8/6/90
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—INSLAW'S ACCUSATION THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT STOLE ITS SOFTWARE UNDER THE "PROJECT EAGLE" PROGRAM LEAD THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE TO CUT THE PROJECT'S BUDGET IN HALF PENDING AN INVESTIGATION.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS, WILLIAM HAMILTON, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-12
YEAR: 12/7/90
SUMMARY: THE PRESS DEMOCRAT—HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE CHAIRMAN JACK BROOKS ACCUSES THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OF ENGAGING IN A COVER-UP OF THE INSLAW AFFAIR BY WITHHOLDING DOCUMENTS FROM THE COMMITTEE.
KEYWORDS: STEVEN R. ROSS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-13
YEAR: 12/5/90
SUMMARY: SAN FRANCISCO DAILY JOURNAL—THE HEAD OF THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE LOOKING INTO THE INSLAW AFFAIR SAYS HE WILL LOOK INTO WHETHER THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT IS WRONG IN CLAIMING "PRIVILEGE" IN WITHHOLDING 200 DOCUMENTS FROM THE COMMITTEE.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS, D. LOWELL JENSEN, ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-14
YEAR: 12/6/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, MARY MCGRORY COLUMN—QUESTIONS WHY ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH WOULD USE "EXECUTIVE PRIVILEGE" TO WITHHOLD DOCUMENTS FROM A HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE LOOKING INTO THE INSLAW DISPUTE.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON, WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-15
YEAR: 12/6/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—REP. JACK BROOKS ACCUSES THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT OF WITHHOLDING DOCUMENTS TO FRUSTRATE HIS PANEL'S PROBE OF ALLEGED IMPROPRIETIES IN THE DEPARTMENT'S DEALINGS WITH INSLAW, INC.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS, STEVEN R. ROSS, GEORGE FRANCIS BASON JR.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-16
YEAR: 12/8/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, EDITORIAL—SUMS UP INSLAW DISPUTE TO DATE AND QUESTIONS WHY ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH WOULD REFUSE TO COOPERATE WITH A HOUSE COMMITTEE PROBING THE MATTER.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-17
YEAR: 12/10/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE MAY ISSUE SUBPOENAS FOR HUNDREDS OF JUSTICE DEPARTMENT DOCUMENTS REGARDING DEALINGS WITH INSLAW INC. THAT THE DEPARTMENT HAS TO DATE WITHHELD.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, WILLIAM BRYANT, JACK BROOKS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-18
YEAR: 12/17/90
SUMMARY: BOSTON GLOBE—INSLAW LAWYER ELLIOT RICHARDSON ASKS THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S OFFICE OF PUBLIC INTEGRITY TO CONTACT 30 WITNESSES TO TESTIFY ON BEHALF OF INSLAW.
KEYWORDS: ASSISTANT ATTORNEY GENERAL WILLIAM WELD

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-19
YEAR: 1/28/91
SUMMARY: FEDERAL COMPUTER MARKET REPORT—A THREE-JUDGE PANEL HAS HEARD THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT APPEAL OF THE INSLAW INC. SUIT. A RULING IS EXPECTED IN THE NEXT THREE MONTHS.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-20
YEAR: 2/21/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE LOOKS INTO ALLEGATIONS THAT INSLAW'S SOFTWARE WAS SOLD ILLEGALLY TO IRAQI AND ISRAELI INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES.
KEYWORDS: CIA, DEFENSE INTELLIGENCE AGENCY, BIOTECH CAPITAL CORP., EARL BRIAN, ARI BEN-MENASHE, ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-21
YEAR: 2/18/91
SUMMARY: GOVERNMENT COMPUTER NEWS—A SUMMARY OF THE INSLAW DISPUTE TO DATE.
KEYWORDS: MARK B. STERN, MICHAEL FRIEDLANDER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-22
YEAR: 2/19/91
SUMMARY: THE ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH—AFFIDAVITS IN THE INSLAW DISPUTE CLAIM THAT INSLAW'S SOFTWARE WAS ILLEGALLY SOLD TO THE ISRAELI, IRAQI, AND CANADIAN GOVERNMENTS.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, ARI BEN-MENASHE, EARL BRIAN, CIA, CARLOS CARDOEN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-23
YEAR: 2/21/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—A HOUSE COMMITTEE INVESTIGATES ALLEGATIONS THAT INSLAW'S SOFTWARE IS BEING USED ILLEGALLY BY VARIOUS FOREIGN INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES.
KEYWORDS: KISRAEL, CANADA, CIA, BIOTECH CAPITAL INC., PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-24
YEAR: 2/25/91
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—EARL BRIAN CALLS AFFIDAVITS STATING HE ILLEGALLY SOLD INSLAW SOFTWARE TO FOREIGN GOVERNMENTS "A TISSUE OF LIES."
KEYWORDS: INFOTECHNOLOGY INC., DENIS LACHANCE, ARI BEN-MENASHE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-25
YEAR: 2/27/91
SUMMARY: THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE DENIES CHARGES THAT IT DELIVERED STOLEN INSLAW SOFTWARE TO THE ISRAELI, CANADIAN, AND IRAQI GOVERNMENTS.
KEYWORDS: CARLOS CARDOEN, INFOTECHNOLOGY INC., EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-26
YEAR: 2/15/91
SUMMARY: THE MIAMI HERALD, JAMES J. KILPATRICK COLUMN—SUMS UP THE INSLAW DISPUTE TO DATE INCLUDING THE ACCUSATIONS THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT SOLD THE SOFTWARE TO FOREIGN INTELLIGENCE AGENTS.
KEYWORDS: AUBREY ROBINSON, PAUL H. MANNES, MARTIN TEEL, CIA, EDWIN MEESE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-27
YEAR: 3/18/91
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—A DETAILED REVIEW OF THE INSLAW DISPUTE WITH AN EMPHASIS ON MANY OF THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT INVOLVED.
KEYWORDS: JAY STEPHENS, MICHAEL SHAHEEN JR., CHARLES WORK, ELLIOT RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-01
YEAR: 3/24/91
SUMMARY: ST. LOUIS POST-DISPATCH—AFFIDAVITS CHARGE THAT WHITE HOUSE AIDE ROBERT C. MCFARLANE ILLEGALLY TRANSFERRED INSLAW SOFTWARE TO ISRAELI OFFICIALS.
KEYWORDS: ARI BEN-MENASHE, RICHARD H. BABAYAN, RICHARD SECORD, EARL BRIAN, MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO, WACKENHUT CORP., CABAZON INDIANS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-29
YEAR: 3/25/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—THE GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE REPORTS THAT THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT SOLD SURPLUS COMPUTERS WITHOUT FIRST ERASING SENSITIVE INFORMATION FROM THEIR MEMORY BANKS.
KEYWORDS: ROBERT WISE JR., CHARLES HAYES, HOWARD G. RHILE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-30
YEAR: 3/28/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, MARY MCGRORY COLUMN—SUMMARIZES THE INSLAW DISPUTE TO DATE INCLUDING AFFIDAVITS BY A ENTREPRENEUR THAT EARL BRIAN SUPPLIED HIM WITH STOLEN INSLAW SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-31
YEAR: 3/31/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A KEY WITNESS FOR INSLAW INC. IS ARRESTED IN WASHINGTON STATE. MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO HAD CLAIMED THAT PRIVATE INTERESTS HIRED HIM TO MODIFY ALLEGEDLY STOLEN SOFTWARE DEVELOPED BY INSLAW.
KEYWORDS: PETER VIDENIEKS, PROMIS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-32
YEAR: 4/4/91
SUMMARY: THE VANCOUVER SUN—INSLAW SAYS THAT THE CANADIAN GOVERNMENT WAS "DUPED" INTO ILLEGALLY ACQUIRING INSLAW SOFTWARE. US COURT DOCUMENTS ALSO SHOW A CANADIAN COMMUNICATIONS DEPARTMENT ADMITTING TO USING THE SOFTWARE WITHOUT AN AUTHORIZED SALE.
KEYWORDS: ROYAL CANADIAN MOUNTED POLICE, EARL BRIAN, RICHARD BABAYAN

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-33
YEAR: 4/5/91
SUMMARY: VANCOUVER SUN—VICTORIA MPs WANT THE CANADIAN SOLICITOR GENERAL GRILLED OVER THE RCMP AND CANADIAN SECURITY INTELLIGENCE SERVICE USING ALLEGEDLY STOLEN INSLAW SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: PIERRE CADIEUX, JOHN BREWIN, WILLIAM BRYANT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-34
YEAR: 4/5/91
SUMMARY: FINANCIAL TIMES—ARI BEN-MENASHE ACCUSES REAGAN ADVISER ROBERT MCFARLANE OF ILLEGALLY DISTRIBUTING INSLAW SOFTWARE TO THE ISRAELI GOVERNMENT.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-35
YEAR: 4/9/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, MARY MCGRORY COLUMN—A PROFILE OF INSLAW LAWYER ELLIOT RICHARDSON AND HIS EFFORTS ON BEHALF OF THE COMPANY.
KEYWORDS: RICHARD THORNBURGH, AUBREY E. ROBINSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-36
YEAR: 4/9/91
SUMMARY: FINANCIAL TIMES—A COURT GIVES INSLAW THIRTY DAYS TO SUBPOENA WITNESSES AS PART OF AN EFFORT TO SPEED UP AN INVESTIGATION INTO JUSTICE DEPARTMENT BEHAVIOR.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-37
YEAR: 4/27/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, EDITORIAL—A RECAP OF THE INSLAW DISPUTE AND HOW THE ATTORNEY GENERAL HAS RECENTLY AGREED TO LET THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE SEE EVERY DOCUMENT PERTINENT TO THE INSLAW DISPUTE.
KEYWORDS: JACK BROOKS, WILLIAM BRYANT

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-38
YEAR: 4/30/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, MARY MCGRORY COLUMN—ATTORNEY GENERAL DICK THORNBURGH WILL LET THE HOUSE JUDICIARY COMMITTEE VIEW EVERY JUSTICE DEPARTMENT DOCUMENT PERTINENT TO THE INSLAW CASE.
KEYWORDS: ELLIOT RICHARDSON, BOB FISKE, ELLIOT RICHARDSON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-39
YEAR: 5/8/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—A FEDERAL APPEALS COURT THROWS OUT A 1988 RULING AGAINST THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT THAT IT STOLE SOFTWARE FROM INSLAW INC. INSLAW CAN STILL PURSUE ITS CLAIMS IN OTHER COURTS.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN MEESE, JUDGE STEPHEN F. WILLIAMS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-40
YEAR: 5/8/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT WINS AN APPEAL OF A PREVIOUS COURT DECISION THAT IT HAD "STOLEN" SOFTWARE FROM INSLAW INC. HOWEVER THE THREE-JUDGE APPEALS PANEL SUGGESTS THAT INSLAW FILE ITS SUIT IN ANOTHER, MORE PROPER FEDERAL COURT.
KEYWORDS: STEPHEN F. WILLIAMS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW C
NO.: PR\IN\IC-41
YEAR: 5/11/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, EDITORIAL—STATES THAT A RECENT OVERTURNING OF A PRO-INSLAW RULING WAS BASED NOT ON THE MERITS OF THE CASE BUT THAT THE ORIGINAL BANKRUPTCY COURT RULING WAS OUTSIDE THE JURISDICTION OF THE BANKRUPTCY COURT.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-01
YEAR: 3/8/88
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—HADRON INC., AN EARL BRIAN COMPANY, REPORTS ITS QUARTERLY EARNINGS DOWN FROM THE SAME PERIOD LAST YEAR.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-02
YEAR: 6/16/88
YEAR: LOS ANGELES TIMES—MEMOS FROM A WEDTECH INC. CONSULTANT TO ATTORNEY
SUMMARY: GENERAL EDWIN MEESE INDICATE THAT THEY HELPED LAUNCH A PROBE OF A WEDTECH COMPETITOR.
KEYWORDS: E, ROBERT WALLACH, GARCIA ORDINANCE CORP.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-03
YEAR: 6/19/89
SUMMARY: SUMMARY:THE WASHINGTON BUSINESS JOURNAL—A PROFILE OF GLOBALINK, A COMPUTER THAT TRANSLATES WRITTEN FOREIGN LANGUAGES INTO ENGLISH.
KEYWORDS: DOMINIC LAITI, HADRON INC.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-04
YEAR: 10/28/88
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, EDITORIAL—ENCOURAGES LEGISLATIVE “WHISTLE BLOWER” PROTECTION.
KEYWORDS: K. WILLIAM O’ CONNOR, JOSEPH WRIGHT, PAT SCHROEDER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-05
YEAR: 9/12/90
SUMMARY: OPINION, EDITORIAL—AUTHOR BELIEVES THAT A KENTUCKY MAN’S CLAIM OF HAVING FOUND SECRET INFORMATION ON A USED JUSTICE DEPARTMENT COMPUTER IS A FRAUD.
KEYWORDS: CHUCK HAYES

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-06
YEAR: 9/18/90
SUMMARY: THE LEXINGTON HERALD READER—CONGRESS PLANS TO INVESTIGATE THE ACCIDENTAL SALE OF GOVERNMENT SECRETS IN SURPLUS COMPUTER EQUIPMENT BY THE US ATTORNEY’S OFFICE IN LEXINGTON, KY.
KEYWORDS: GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE, CHARLES HAYES, BOB WISE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-07
YEAR: 3/25/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—THE GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE SAYS IT UNCOVERED A FAILURE BY THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT TO SECURE SECRET COMPUTER FILES BEFORE SELLING COMPUTER HARDWARE AS SURPLUS.
KEYWORDS: HOWARD G. RHILE, ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH, HARRY H. FLICKINGER, ROBERT WISE

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-08
YEAR: 3/27/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON TIMES—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT DOESN’T KNOW IF SURPLUS COMPUTER HARDWARE CONTAINED SECRET INFO AND/OR WHO BOUGHT IT.
KEYWORDS: GENERAL ACCOUNTING OFFICE, ROBERT E. WISE, HARRY H. FLICKINGER

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: INSLAW MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IN\IM-09
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—AN ARTICLE ON HOW DIFFICULT IT IS FOR SMALL COMPANIES TO EMERGE FROM A CHAPTER 11.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: JUSTICE DEPARTMENT
NO.: PR\IN\JD-01
YEAR: 2/5/90
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—A SENATE STAFF REPORT CALLS INTO QUESTION A JUSTICE DEPARTMENT ETHICS OFFICER'S POLITICAL INDEPENDENCE IN HIS PROBE OF ALLEGATIONS AGAINST THE DEPARTMENT OVER THE INSLAW AFFAIR.
KEYWORDS: MICHAEL SHAHEEN JR., ROGER PILON, MATTHEW MYERS

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: JUSTICE DEPARTMENT
NO.: PR\IN\JD-02
YEAR: 3/25/90
SUMMARY: NEW YORK TIMES MAGAZINE—A CLIPPING FROM A PROFILE OF THEN-PRESIDENT BUSH'S CABINET. THE CLIPPING FOCUSES ON ATTORNEY GENERAL RICHARD THORNBURGH.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM SAXBE, ED MEESE, JOHN SUNUNU

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-02
YEAR: 4/25/77
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—DATA COLLECTED USING PROMIS SOFTWARE SHOWS THAT MORE THAN HALF OF THE FELONY ARRESTS IN FIVE JURISDICTIONS ACROSS THE COUNTRY WERE REJECTED BY PROSECUTORS OR DISMISSED AFTER CHARGES WERE FILED.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-03
YEAR: 5/16/77
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—A STUDY CONDUCTED BY THE LAW ENFORCEMENT ASSISTANCE ADMINISTRATION (WHICH DESIGNED THE ORIGINAL PROMIS SOFTWARE) SHOWS THAT ONLY 8% OF WASHINGTON D.C.'S POLICE OFFICERS MADE MORE THAN HALF OF ALL ARRESTS THAT LED TO CONVICTIONS IN 1974.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-04
YEAR: 6/10/78
SUMMARY: SATURDAY REVIEW—AN ARTICLE BASED UPON INSLAW DATA AND CRITICIZING THE US COURT SYSTEM.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-05
YEAR: 12/25/78
SUMMARY: WASHINGTON POST—A CASE STUDY OF WASHINGTON D.C.'S CRIMINAL JUSTICE SYSTEM FINDS WIDELY DIFFERING SENTENCING PRACTICES AMONG DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA JUDGES.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON, INSLAW

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-06
YEAR: 2/16/79
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—AN EDITORIAL BY INSLAW DIRECTOR OF RESEARCH BRIAN E. FORST STATES THAT MOST ARRESTS FOR SERIOUS CRIMES DO NOT END IN
SUBJECT: CONVICTION.
FILE:
NO.: INSLAW
YEAR: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
PR\IN\PS-07
4/23/79
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—AN INSLAW STUDY REVEALS THAT PERSONS WHO HAVE BEEN ARRESTED FOR BURGLARY, ROBBERY, AND LARCENIES HAVE A 60 PERCENT CHANCE OF AGAIN BEING ARRESTED FOR CRIMES.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-08
YEAR: 8/79
SUMMARY: DISTRICT LAWYER—AN ARTICLE BY INSLAW PRESIDENT WILLIAM HAMILTON SAYS ONE OF THE TWO MOST COMMON REASONS FOR FELONY CASES BEING DROPPED IS POLICE FAILURE TO COLLECT SUFFICIENT EVIDENCE.
KEYWORDS: LAW ENFORCEMENT ASSISTANCE ADMINISTRATION

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-09
YEAR: 10/14/79
SUMMARY: THE CHICAGO TRIBUNE, EDITORIAL—RECOMMENDS PROMIS SOFTWARE AS A WAY OF MANAGING PROSECUTOR CASELOADS AND STOPPING UP THE CRIMINAL JUSTICE SIEVE.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-10
YEAR: 1980
SUMMARY: 'IMPROVING PROSECUTION?: THE INDUCEMENT AND IMPLEMENTATION OF INNOVATIONS FOR PROSECUTION MANAGEMENT' BY DAVID LEO WEIMER—A BOOK EXCERPT THAT QUESTIONS WHETHER USE OF INSLAW SOFTWARE BY PROSECUTORS' OFFICES INSTEAD OF A RIVAL SOFTWARE WAS THE BEST CHOICE.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, DALITE, D. LOWELL JENSEN, WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-11
YEAR: 3/16/82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—AN INSLAW SURVEY OF 264 FEDERAL JUDGES SHOWS A WIDER-THAN-PREVIOUSLY-BELIEVED DISPARITY IN SENTENCING.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-12
YEAR: 4/16/82
SUMMARY: LOS ANGELES TIMES—AN INSLAW STUDY SUGGESTS THAT THOUSANDS OF LAWBREAKERS ARE ESCAPING PROSECUTION BECAUSE OF JURISDICTIONAL RIVALRIES BETWEEN STATE AND FEDERAL LAW ENFORCEMENT AUTHORITIES.
KEYWORDS: ATTORNEY GENERAL WILLIAM FRENCH SMITH

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-13
YEAR: 5/11/82
SUMMARY: WALL STREET JOURNAL—A LOOK AT THE LOS ANGELES CAREER CRIMINAL PROSECUTION UNIT, A LEGAL SPECIAL TEAM THAT WORKS TO WIN STIFFER SENTENCES FOR CAREER-CRIMINALS.
KEYWORDS: BARBARA BOLAND, INSLAW

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-14
YEAR: 9/13/82
SUMMARY: THE NATIONAL LAW JOURNAL—INSLAW STUDIES SHOW THAT CAREER-CRIMINALS ARE NOT BEING PROSECUTED BECAUSE LAW ENFORCEMENT OFFICIALS ARE IGNORING WAYS TO IDENTIFY THEM. OTHER CRIMINALS GO FREE BECAUSE LACK OF COORDINATION AMONG THOSE OFFICIALS.
KEYWORDS: JUSTICE DEPARTMENT'S OFFICE OF LEGAL POLICY

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-15
YEAR: 12/29/82
SUMMARY: THE DAILY RECORD (BALTIMORE)—VARIOUS FORMS OF ELECTRONIC TECHNOLOGY ARE BEING BROUGHT TO BEAR IN THE FIGHT AGAINST CRIME.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, INSLAW

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-16
YEAR: 1/3/83
SUMMARY: NATIONAL CONFERENCE ON THE IMPACT OF CRIMINAL JUSTICE PROGRAM INITIATIVES ON DATA REQUIREMENTS AND INFORMATION POLICY—A SPEECH BY JAMES Q. WILSON QUOTING AN INSLAW STUDY ABOUT WHAT CRITERIA TO USE IN DECIDING PRIORITY OF PROSECUTING CRIMINALS.

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-17
YEAR: 8/8/83
SUMMARY: LEGAL TIMES—US ATTORNEY'S OFFICES NATIONWIDE GO ONLINE WITH INSLAW'S PROMIS SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM HAMILTON

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-18
YEAR: 8/10/83
SUMMARY: THE WALL STREET JOURNAL—A PROFILE OF NEW YORK'S CAREER CRIMINAL PROGRAM WHICH STRESSES JAILING CRIMINALS WHO COMMIT LARGE NUMBERS OF CRIMES, EVEN LESS SERIOUS CRIMES.
KEYWORDS: INSLAW

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-19
YEAR: JUNE-JULY 1984
SUMMARY: JUDICATURE—ARTICLE RECOMMENDS THAT COURTS MAKE BETTER USE OF INFORMATION TECHNOLOGY AND CASE MANAGEMENT SOFTWARE.
KEYWORDS: PROMIS, DOCKETRAC

SUBJECT: INSLAW
FILE: PROMIS SOFTWARE: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IN\PS-20
SUMMARY: THE JOURNAL OF LEGAL STUDIES—AN ANALYSIS OF THE ROLE OF THE PROSECUTOR BASED ON AN INSLAW RESEARCH PROJECT.
KEYWORDS: BILL HAMILTON, BRIAN FORST, WILLIAM LANDES

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IO\CB-01
YEAR: 3/24/72
SUMMARY: NBC NEWS 'CHRONOLOG'—A TRANSCRIPT OF A TELEVISION REPORT ABOUT A CLANDESTINE ARMY TRAINED, EQUIPPED, ADVISED, AND PAID BY THE CIA AND FIGHTING IN LAOS.
KEYWORDS: AGENCY FOR INTERNATIONAL DEVELOPMENT, VIET NAM, MUNG

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IO\CB-02
YEAR: 5/17/84
SUMMARY: 20/20—A TRANSCRIPT OF A TELEVISION REPORT ON THE LIFE AND DEATH OF GEORGE WEISZ, A MASTER SPY FOR THE CIA
KEYWORDS: BILL HARVEY, DEPARTMENT OF ENERGY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: BACKGROUND
NO.: PR\IO\CB-03
YEAR: 9/27/84
SUMMARY: THE PRESS-ENTERPRISE—THE CIA DENIES AN ALLEGATION CARRIED BY ABC NEWS THAT THE AGENCY ENGAGED IN A PLOT TO KILL HONOLULU INVESTMENT COUNSELOR RONALD REWALD WHO CLAIMS HIS FAILED COMPANY WAS A CIA FRONT.
KEYWORDS: SCOTT BARNES

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-01
YEAR: 8/26/91
SUMMARY: NEW YORK TIMES—A TEAM OF EX-GREEN BERETS MAY HAVE BEEN RECRUITED BY A FORMER CIA AGENT TO TRAIN LIBYAN TERRORISTS.
KEYWORDS: EDWARD P. WILSON, COLONEL QADDAFI

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-02
YEAR: 8/30/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A FORMER CIA AGENT SHIPPED TWENTY TONS OF PLASTIC EXPLOSIVES FROM THE US TO LIBYA TO BE USED IN TERRORIST BOMBS.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN P. WILSON, FRANK TERPIL

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-03
YEAR: 9/6/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A GROUP OF INTERLOCKING BUSINESSES ASSOCIATED WITH A FORMER CIA AGENT TRANSFER TECHNOLOGY AND MILITARY EQUIPMENT TO THE MIDDLE EAST.
KEYWORDS: EDWIN P. WILSON, THOMAS G. CLINES, FRANK TERPIL, THEODORE G. SHACKLEY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-04
YEAR: 9/14/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—AN ANALYSIS OF THE ISSUES BROUGHT FORTH BY THE ACTIVITIES OF EX-CIA AGENTS EXPORTING WEAPONS TECHNOLOGY TO TERRORIST COUNTRIES.
KEYWORDS: LIBYA, EDWIN P. WILSON, QADDAFI

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-05
YEAR: 9/19/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—THE HOUSE SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE MOUNTS A FULL SCALE INVESTIGATION OF THE ACTIVITIES OF EX-CIA AGENT EDWIN P. WILSON.
KEYWORDS: MUAMMAR EL-QADDAFI, FRANK E. TERPIL

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-06
YEAR: 9/23/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—EX-CIA AIDE SEES "NO WAY" TO BAR RETIRED INTELLIGENCE OFFICERS FROM DOING BUSINESS ABROAD.
KEYWORDS: VERNON A. WALTERS, EDWIN P. WILSON, FRANK E. TERPIL

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-07
YEAR: 9/30/91
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—THE JUSTICE DEPARTMENT DECIDES TO BOLSTER ITS INQUIRY INTO AN INVESTIGATION OF EDWIN WILSON AND FRANK TERPIL, TWO EX-CIA OFFICERS CHARGED WITH SELLING EXPLOSIVES TO LIBYAN TERRORISTS.
KEYWORDS: WILLIAM H. WEBSTER

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-08
YEAR: 9/13/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—THE F.B.I. IS INVESTIGATING AN ALLEGATION THAT A COMPANY OWNED BY EX-CIA OFFICER EDWIN P. WILSON BRIBED A KEY-FEDERAL OFFICIAL.
KEYWORDS: CONTROL DATA CORPORATION, KEVIN P. MULCAHY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-10
YEAR: 10/11/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—TWO FORMER ASSOCIATES ACCUSE EX-CIA AGENT EDWIN P. WILSON OF TRYING TO DIVERT AMERICAN ELECTRONIC INTELLIGENCE GATHERING TECHNOLOGY TO THE SOVIET UNION.

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-10
YEAR: 10/13/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—CURRENT AND FORMER EXECUTIVES OF A SMALL CALIFORNIA ELECTRONICS COMPANY SAY TWO FORMER CIA AGENTS TRIED TO MARKET SENSITIVE AMERICAN TECHNOLOGY ABROAD.
KEYWORDS: FRANK E. TERPIL, EDWIN P. WILSON, STANFORD TECHNOLOGY CORPORATION

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-11
YEAR: 10/24/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A 10 COUNT INDICTMENT WAS HANDED DOWN AGAINST EX-CIA AGENTS FRANK TERPIL AND EDWIN P. WILSON FOR SHIPPING EXPLOSIVES TO LIBYA AND TRAINING LIBYAN TERRORISTS. THE INDICTMENT ALSO INCLUDED A VIRGINIA MAN WITH SUPERVISING THE LIBYAN END OF THE DEAL.
KEYWORDS: DONALD SCHLACHTER

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-12
YEAR: 10/25/81
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—AN ASSASSIN TARGETING A LIBYAN STUDENT IN COLORADO IN 1980 FOUND SANCTUARY AT AN ENGLISH FARM OWNED BY EX-CIA AGENT EDWIN P. WILSON.
KEYWORDS: EUGENE A. TAFOYA, FAISAL ZAGALLAI

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: RENEGADES
NO.: PR\IO\CR-13 & 14
YEAR: ?
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES MAGAZINE—A TWO-PART ARTICLE ABOUT HOW FORMER CIA ANALYST KEVIN P. MULCAHY WAS DUPED INTO COORDINATING ILLEGAL EXPORTATION OF TECHNOLOGY AND TRAINING TO LIBYA TERRORISTS AT THE BEHEST OF EX-CIA AGENTS FRANK TERPIL AND EDWIN P. WILSON.
KEYWORDS: MUAMMAR EL-QADDAFI

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-05
3/1/90
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A COSTA RICAN JUDGE SIGNS AN EXTRADITION ORDER FOR AN ALLEGED CIA OPERATIVE, NOW IN THE US, FOR THE BOMBING OF A NEWS CONFERENCE GIVEN BY CONTRA EDEN PASTORA IN 1984.ALSO: THE WASHINGTON POST—A JACK ANDERSON COLUMN MAINTAINS THAT CONGRESS IS PROTECTING THE OPERATIVE.
KEYWORDS: JOHN HULL, MAXIMO ESQUIVEL, PHILIP HOLTZ, TONY AVIRGAN, THE OVERSEAS PRIVATE INVESTMENT CORPORATION, JEFFREY FELDMAN

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-04
YEAR: JUNE 1990
SUMMARY: CHRISTIAN SOCIAL ACTION—AN ARTICLE BY A MEMBER OF THE CHRISTIC INSTITUTE CLAIMS THAT THE CIA HAS HISTORICALLY USED DRUG DEALERS AND DRUG SMUGGLING TO SUPPORT THEIR COVERT WAR EFFORTS.
KEYWORDS: JOHN F. KERRY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-03
YEAR: 3/26/90
SUMMARY: THE NATIONAL LAW JOURNAL—SEVERAL CASES WITH RECENT DEVELOPMENTS STEM FROM THE IRAN-CONTRA AFFAIR INCLUDING A COSTA RICAN ATTEMPT TO EXTRADITE FROM THE US AN ALLEGED CIA OPERATIVE, THE HARASSMENT OF AN ANTI-CONTRA ACTIVIST, AND THE APPEAL OF A SANCTION IMPOSED AGAINST THE CHRISTIC INSTITUTE.
KEYWORDS: JOHN HULL, EDEN PASTORA, JACK TERRELL, F.B.I., JUDGE JAMES L. KING

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-02
YEAR: 10/11/87
SUMMARY: THE SACRAMENTO BEE—A LEFT-AND A RIGHT-WING ACTIVIST BOTH CLAIM THE CIA USES A "SECRET TEAM" THAT RUNS GUNS, SMUGGLES DRUGS, AND CONDUCTS ASSASSINATIONS IN THE NAME OF ANTI-COMMUNISM.
KEYWORDS: THE CHRISTIC INSTITUTE, MIAS, FULGENCIO BATISTA, THEODORE SHACKLEY, THOMAS CLINES, RICHARD SECORD, JOHN K. SINGLAUB, OLIVER NORTH, TONY AVIRGAN, MARTHA HONEY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-01
YEAR: 2/17/87
SUMMARY: IN THESE TIMES—THIS ARTICLE CONTRADICTS THE WIDELY REPORTED ACCOUNT THAT IRANIANS LEAKED THE ARMS-FOR-HOSTAGE DEAL. INSTEAD, THE REPORTERS MAINTAIN THAT ISRAELI INTELLIGENCE LEAKED THE PLOT TO PROTECT SOME OF THEIR OWN AGENTS.
KEYWORDS: AL SHIRROA, KHOMEINI, EDWIN MEESE, NATIONAL SECURITY COUNCIL, ARIEL SHARON, SAM EVANS NORTHRUP, CYRUS HASHEMI

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-06
YEAR: 11/5/90
SUMMARY: SOUTH FLORIDA BUSINESS JOURNAL—A YEAR AFTER THE CONNECTION BETWEEN A TERRORIST/DRUG SMUGGLER AND THE PAN AN 103 BOMBING WAS REVEALED, THE DRUG ENFORCEMENT AGENCY DECIDES TO INVESTIGATE.
KEYWORDS: MONZER AL-KASSAR, JUVAL AVIV, CIA, THE CONTRAS, ABU NIDAL

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-07
YEAR: 11/23-30/90
SUMMARY: THE BOSTON PHOENIX—ARTICLE DETAILS THE COVER-UP OF DRUG TRAFFICKER BARRY SEAL'S ROLE IN IRAN-CONTRA AND HIS EVENTUAL ASSASSINATION BY MEDELLIN CARTEL GUNMEN.
KEYWORDS: TERRY REED, ARKANSAS, JOHN CATHEY, OLIVER NORTH, FELIX RODRIGUEZ, "BLACK EAGLE"

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-08
YEAR: 12/17/90
SUMMARY: BARRON'S—A PRIVATE PROBE BY PAN AM ALLEGES A TERRORIST-DRUG LINK IN THE PAN AM 103 BOMBING AND THAT THE CIA AND DEA. WERE VIRTUAL SPECTATORS TO THE TRAGEDY.
KEYWORDS: MONZER AL-KASSAR, RICHARD SECORD, MOSSAD

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-09
YEAR: 2/11/91
SUMMARY: THE BOSTON HERALD—A NEW YORK FEDERAL PROSECUTOR WHO WORKED ON THE IRAN-CONTRA CASE CLAIMS HIS BOOK "OPENING ARGUMENTS" THAT THE CIA UNDERMINED THE IRAN-CONTRA PROBE BY BRIBING SENIOR OFFICIALS IN COSTA RICA AND INTERFERING WITH WITNESS TESTIMONY.
KEYWORDS: JEFFREY R. TOOBIN

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-10
YEAR: 12/2/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—SENTENCING OF IRAN-CONTRA CONSPIRATOR THOMAS G. CLINES WAS POSTPONED AFTER DEFENSE ATTORNEYS ASK TO RESPOND TO PROSECUTION CLAIMS THAT CLINES FINANCIALLY MISREPRESENTED HIMSELF.
KEYWORDS: PAULA M. JUNGHANS, LAWRENCE E. WALSH, OLIVER NORTH

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-11
YEAR: 5/4/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A FORMER OPERATIVE IN OLIVER NORTH'S IRAN-CONTRA NETWORK SAYS GEORGE BUSH WAS NOT WARE OF THEIR OPERATION.
KEYWORDS: FELIX RODRIGUEZ, DONALD GREGG, LAWRENCE E. WALSH, RONALD REAGAN

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: CIA: IRAN-CONTRA/DRUG SMUGGLING
NO.: PR\IO\CI-13
YEAR: 6/5/87
SUMMARY: THE SACRAMENTO BEE—A BURMESE DRUG WARLORD ACCUSED THE ASSISTANT US SECRETARY OF DEFENSE AND OTHERS OF DRUG TRAFFICKING TO FUND ANTI-COMMUNIST OPERATIONS.
KEYWORDS: KHUN SA, RICHARD L. ARMITAGE, THEODORE SHACKLEY, JAMES G. "BO" GRITZ

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-01
YEAR: 2/28/92
SUMMARY: A HEARING BEGAN ON THE TRIAL OF A GROUP OF FORMER MILITARY AND POLICE OFFICERS FOR THE ILLEGAL SALE OF WEAPONS AND TECHNOLOGY TO DRUG RUNNERS.
KEYWORDS: THE COMPANY, LARRY EARL BRYANT, ALVIN SNAPER, ANDREW CARTER THORNTON II

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-02
YEAR: 9/13/85
SUMMARY: THE LOS ANGELES TIMES—A FORMER NARCOTICS OFFICER ONCE LINKED TO A SOUTH AMERICAN DRUG RING PARACHUTED TO HIS DEATH WITH 77 POUNDS OF COCAINE. (HIS MAIN CHUTE FAILED TO OPEN.)
KEYWORDS: ANDREW CARTER THORNTON II, THE COMPANY

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-03
YEAR: JANUARY 1990
SUMMARY: THE AMERICAN SPECTATOR—A PROFILE OF THEN-RULER GENERAL MANUEL NORIEGA AND HIS PROSPECTS FOR THE NINETIES.
KEYWORDS:

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-04
YEAR: 12/15/90
SUMMARY: THE BOSTON GLOBE—IN LOS ANGELES, TWO INDICTMENTS WERE UNSEALED AGAINST A BOLIVIAN IMMIGRANT REPUTED TO RIVAL LEADERS OF THE COLOMBIAN COCAINE CARTELS.
KEYWORDS: JORGE ROCA SUAREZ

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-05
YEAR: 12/19/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—THE DRUG ENFORCEMENT AGENCY SUSPENDS RAIDS IN PERU AS THE RESULT OF INTERFERENCE FROM THE PERUVIAN ARMED FORCES.
KEYWORDS: ROBERT C. BONNER, THE INTERNATIONAL MONETARY FUND

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-06
YEAR: 12/19/90
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A TOP COCAINE TRAFFICKER WANTED IN THE UNITED STATES, SURRENDERS TO COLOMBIAN AUTHORITIES WITH THE AGREEMENT HE WILL NOT BE EXTRADICTED TO THE UNITED STATES.
KEYWORDS: FABIO OCHOA VASQUEZ

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-07
YEAR: 1/22/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—A DRUG TRAFFICKER WHO SURRENDERED UNDER THE COLOMBIAN PRESIDENT'S AGREEMENT NOT TO EXTRADITE HIM TO THE UNITED STATES, IS RELEASED FROM COLOMBIAN PRISON AFTER LESS THAN TWO MONTHS.
KEYWORDS: GONZALO MEJIA, CESAR GAVIRIA, CARLOS GUSTAVO ARRIETA

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-08
YEAR: 2/28/91
SUMMARY: THE NEW YORK TIMES—A SENATE STAFF STUDY AND TESTIMONY AT A SENATE PANEL REVEALS THAT BRITISH AND ISRAELI MERCENARIES PROVIDED PARAMILITARY ASSISTANCE TO DRUG TRAFFICKERS IN COLOMBIA IN 1988 AND 1989.
KEYWORDS: SENATOR WILLIAM V. ROTH, DAVID TOMKINS, YAIR G. KLEIN

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: DRUG ENFORCEMENT ADMINISTRATION
NO.: PR\IO\DE-09
YEAR: 5/3/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST, JACK ANDERSON AND DALE VAN ATTA—INVESTIGATIONS BY A HOUSE SUBCOMMITTEE AND THE TREASURY DEPARTMENT'S INSPECTOR GENERAL ALLEGE THAT CUSTOMS AGENTS FRATERNIZE WITH DRUG DEALERS IN THE MIDWEST.
KEYWORDS: REPRESENTATIVE DOUG BARNARD JR., CUSTOMS COMMISSIONER CAROL HALLETT

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: INTELLIGENCE MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IO\IM-01
YEAR: 1/26/90
SUMMARY: THE BOSTON GLOBE—AN OVERVIEW OF VICTOR OSTROVSKY, A FORMER MOSSAD SPY,WHOSE MEMOIR OF LIFE IN THE SPY SERVICE ALLEGES ASSASSINATIONS, BLACKMAIL, AND INTERNAL INTERFERENCE IN OTHER COUNTRIES.

SUBJECT: INTELLIGENCE ORGANIZATIONS
FILE: INTELLIGENCE MISCELLANEOUS
NO.: PR\IO\IM-02
YEAR: 12/5/90
SUMMARY: BOSTON GLOBE—TWO SENIOR RETIRED ISRAELI MILITARY OFFICERS CONSPIRED TO TRAIN AND ARM ASSASSINS FROM THE MEDELLIN COCAINE CARTEL.
KEYWORDS: YAIR KLEIN, JOSE GONZALO RODRIGUEZ GACHA, PINCHAS SHACHAR

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-02
YEAR: 1/20/73
SUMMARY: RICONOSCIUTO IS CONVICTED OF STEALING $3,000 WORTH OF ELECTRONIC EQUIPMENT.
KEYWORDS: DAVID F. LADELY

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-03
YEAR: 5/23/73
SUMMARY: SEATTLE POST-INTELLIGENCER—MARSHALL RICONOSCIUTO, FATHER OF MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO, TESTIFIES AT HIS SON MICHAEL'S TRIAL FOR DRUG TRAFFICKING THAT HE RAISED $80,000 FOR HIS SON'S RESEARCH INTO CHEMICAL AND ELECTRONIC PRODUCTS.
KEYWORDS: LESTER WOOTEN, JOHN HUTT

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-01
YEAR: 9/15/72
SUMMARY: RICONOSCIUTO AND TWO OTHER MEN ARE ARRESTED AND CHARGED WITH CONSPIRING TO MANUFACTURE LSD, PCP, AND MDA FOLLOWING A SIX-WEEK SURVEILLANCE BY NARCOTIC AGENTS.
KEYWORDS: LESTER WOOTEN, STEVEN MICHAEL BERRY

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-04
YEAR: 5/24/73
SUMMARY: RICONOSCIUTO CLAIMS THAT HIS LIFE HAS BEENTHREATENED BY BOTH DRUG DEALERS WHO WANTED HIM TO MANUFACTURE ILLEGAL DRUGS AND BY NARCOTICS AGENTS WHO WANTED HIM TO CONFESS TO DOING SO.

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-05
YEAR: 5/25/73
SUMMARY: RICONOSCIUTO IS FOUND GUILTY OF MANUFACTURING AND POSSESSING ILLEGAL DRUGS BY A SEATTLE FEDERAL JUDGE. THE JUDGE ORDERS A MENTAL EXAMINATION BEFORE SENTENCING.
KEYWORDS: JUDGE WALTER MCGOVERN

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-06
YEAR: 10/7/73
SUMMARY: RICONOSCIUTO IS SENTENCED TO TWO YEARS IN PRISON FOR THE ILLEGAL MANUFACTURE OF DRUGS AND IS RECOMMENDED TO A FEDERAL PRISON WHERE MENTAL TREATMENT IS AVAILABLE.

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-07
YEAR: 2/13/74
SUMMARY: SEATTLE POST INTELLIGENCER—PART 1 OF AN OVERVIEW OF THE INFORMERS INVOLVED WITH THE RICONOSCIUTO DRUG BUST AND ANOTHER RELATED CASE.
KEYWORDS: PAUL DESCHAMPS, RICHARD L. TEEFY, IRWIN SCHWARTZ

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-08
YEAR: ?/?/73
SUMMARY: SEATTLE INTELLIGENCER—PART TWO OF THE EVENTS LEADING UP TO MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO'S 1972 DRUG ARREST.

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-09
YEAR: 4/16/81
SUMMARY: MARSHALL RICONOSCIUTO, FATHER OF MICHAEL AND PRESIDENT OF HERCULES RESEARCH CORP., ANNOUNCES A POWERFUL ELECTRONIC POWER SUPPLY THAT WILL POWER A PATENTED HEATING AND COOLING DEVICE.
KEYWORDS: HENRY RANKIN, INTERPROBE, MODULAR ENERGY TRANSFER CATALYZER

SUBJECT: CABAZON/WACKENHUT
FILE: MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO
NO.: PR\CW\MR-01
YEAR: 3/31/91
SUMMARY: THE WASHINGTON POST—MICHAEL RICONSCIUTO IS ARRESTED AND HELD WITHOUT BAIL IN A RURAL WASHINGTON JAIL FOR UNKNOWN CHARGES. THE PREVIOUS MONTH RICONOSCIUTO HAD FILED AN AFFIDAVIT IN THE INSLAW CASE SAYING THAT HE HAD ILLEGALLY MODIFIED INSLAW SOFTWARE AT THE BEHEST OF PRIVATE INTERESTS.
KEYWORDS: PETER VIDENIEKS, WILLIAM HAMILTON

APPENDIX 3:

An Interview with Michael Riconosciuto: the Maury Island Connection

Michael Riconosciuto's link to Kennedy assassination figure Fred Crisman remains one of his most interesting. Its details are examined in the book *Maury Island UFO* (IllumiNet Press), a prequel to *The Octopus*, for which the following interview was conducted.

Q: Do you remember Fred Crisman, or Jon Gold? What can you tell me about him? Are you familiar with his memoir, *Murder In The City*?

A: *Murder In the City* really wasn't a memoir for Fred Crisman. *Murder In The City* was about a political episode in Tacoma that Fred Crisman played a role in.

Q: But it is written by him, right?

A: He's the author of it, yes. He had a talk show there and there was a big, heated political battle in Tacoma. My father was on one side and Dave Rollins was on the other side. These are two guys that grew up together and were rivals.

Q: Who is the other one?

A: Dave Rollins.

Q: This is what's mapped out in Jon Gold's, AKA Fred Crisman's, book.

A: Yes. I had known Fred ever since I was a small boy, probably about eight years old. And I traveled all over the world with him. I probably made twenty trips abroad with him.

Q: One of the grey areas with Crisman for me is what role he played in the Maury Island UFO thing.

A: The Maury Island UFO was an event that he created.

Q: He created it out of whole cloth?

A: I have about almost 1600 pages of handwritten notes by Fred Crisman.

Q: Oh yeah?

A: Uh huh.

Q: An unpublished manuscript?

A: Yes.

Q: That's a new one.

A: Fred was working with Mary C. Johnson at Boeing.

Q: What is the name again?

A: Mary C. Johnson. Mary Catrina Johnson. In security at Boeing. And they had done some tests or something and...

Q: This is late 1940s?

A: Yes. And there was a public outcry over it. Too much public scrutiny into what was going on. So Fred came up with this cover story.

Q: The cover story was intended to cover up what was happening at Boeing?

A: Yes.

Q: Which was what?

A: Some sort of test.

Q: Test?

A: Some sort of aircraft.

Q: Aircraft tests at Boeing?

A: Yes. And what happened was that something had gone wrong and some debris had fallen over Maury Island and they had to get the stuff back. Fred did, in fact, get the stuff back.

Q: That is my understanding just from reading the books on the thing, that he held on to it. There is no indication that he turned over everything he had to those two investigators that died.

A: Now the two investigators that died were basically in on it. They were out to investigate the security screw ups at Boeing and the procedures for running their test program.

Q: I see. So you're saying this was a test on an advanced but conventional aircraft that went awry? This is what fell on Harold Dahl and Crisman wasn't actually part of the actual incident, right? He comes in later?

A: He comes in later, yes. But the problem is that a dog that belonged to Harold Dahl died of radiation sickness.

Q: Oh, really?

A: Yes. And there was something...

Q: Dahl's son was also injured.

A: Yes. There was something radioactive on board. It was a big scandal, a big problem. When these Air Force guys died, Fred was absolutely bent out of shape, and he related that to me.

Q: All of this is in this manuscript that you talked about, right?

A: Yes, and personally, he told me what went on behind it.

Q: Do you know anything more about that slag that fell on them? Do you know what it was?

A: No. Other than there was a reactor of some sort on board this aircraft. It was an advanced radar platform of some sort. And Mary C. Johnson has corroborated the story many years later, like in 1982 and 1983 and '84. I spent a lot of time with Mary C. Johnson.

Q: Does she still work for Boeing?

A: Oh, no. She's deceased. She was up there in years.

Q: When you say she corroborated it, you mean corroborated it to you. She didn't talk to the press or anything like that?

A: Oh no. She wouldn't have any reason to. She was a career type person and she was a kind of mentor to our little group up in Seattle. She and Arlen Bell's widow were on the board of directors of one of our companies. I had bought her home out in Lake Bay, Washington. She used to come out and visit us all of the time. I spent a lot of time with her .

Q: OK. So, at the time, Crisman was working for what, military intelligence or something of that sort?

A: He was a point man on cleaning up a mess. And it was just a fluke that those Air Force guys died in that plane crash.

Q: So as far you understand Kenneth Arnold's role, for instance, and Ray Palmer's role in this, is that Crisman helps to inject into the media that this was some kind of UFO event and Palmer kind of glommed onto that. He has no direct role in the cover-up, right?

A: Crisman was a master at emotional contagion. An absolute master at it. In the OSS, over occupied territories in Europe where they were doing nuclear research, Crisman had a deal with some guys out in the Army Air Corps, and they were dropping these do-nothing, sophisticated gizwidgets that were in bombs. The Germans couldn't ignore them. They looked like high-tech surveillance devices, you know?

Q: How large were they?

A: Oh, probably twelve to fifteen pounds each. And there e were would be several of them in a good-size aerial bomb. The German High Command's attitude was that they were sophisticated somethings and they were being dropped in their most sensitive areas. The German scientists kept telling them, "No, no, no, nothing." And it was one of the... the story's been documented in a book but I can't think of the name of it. It was a great brain drain on their nuclear program. Fred gave me some astronomical figure on how many man years took away from the scientific effort of their nuclear program at a critical time. And Fred got these scientists from Princeton and the University of Chicago and he got some real eggheads to come up with this scam that he ran on them. Fred was a master of this kind of thing.

Q: We're still talking about late '40s here, right?

A: Right. In Indochina, Fred had a history of doing that stuff.

Q: These widgets that you're talking about were just totally fake little things that they attached to bomb drops?

A: Well, they actually did have some substance. Enough so that they couldn't be ignored.

Q: I have a news article from July 11, 1947 talking about Guy Banister, then working as a SAC (Special Agent in Charge) for the FBI in Butte recovering what is reported as a flying disc that's thirty and a half inches in diameter. I wonder if there's a connection there.

A: In post World War II they had a development phase with these radioactive discs to cloud the film of aerial surveillance platforms. They used different schemes and they had a lot of trouble recovering them. They had a lot of screw ups.

Q: So these things had a function then?

A: Yes. And extreme raditaion will destroy most films, especially in sensitive aerial photography. Now Fred was very, very close to George Wackenhut.

Q: I don't know if that's been established before.

A: Oh, yeah. Absolutely. I've known of it since 1963, maybe the first time I ever saw them together. Do you know who Chuck Emmert is?

Q: I haven't heard the name yet, no.

A: OK. His mother was a wealthy Florida socialite who financed George Wackenhut when he originally stared Wackenhut.

Q: Is that a name that I could do a Lexis Nexus search on?

A: I doubt it, He managed to stay pretty buried, although his mother—I can't remember her first name—but she was big in southern Florida, with anybody in social circles down there would be able to steer you to her.

Q: Did Crisman ever talk about the Kennedy assassination with you?

A: Yeah, he did.

Q: What about this idea that some people have that he was one of the three hoboes in the railroad yard behind Dealy plaza?

A: Well, I don't know about that. He gave me his version of what happened.

Q: He did give it to you.

A: Oh, yeah. A mutual friend of ours was a former Treasury Department agent who, during the Warren Commission, was one of the investigators for the committee

Q: Do you want to name him?

A: His name is Bob. I don't know where he is now. I lost track of him about ten years ago.

Q: Do you not want to give a last name?

A: I really don't. I think he just wants ... he was very, very ill at the time I last saw him. He was working for us. I was with both he and Fred when Fred found out that he had turned over information to Garrison.

Q: Fred had turned over information?

A: No, this guy Bob.

Q: Bob turned information over to Garrison?

A: Right. What I found astounding was that when Bob was working on the Warren Commission, what the hell was that? Why didn't he turn that over the Warren Commission? And one day I asked him and he said he did. They knew everything.

Q: Now when you say that stuff, what exactly are you referring to here? Crisman's story of his role in the assassination?

A: Right. What had gone on.

Q: Is it possible for you to summarize that briefly, or is that in the 1600 page manuscript you were talking about?

A: Here's something that happens: everybody says, "Hey, how come you know about everything?" Every conspiracy that's ever gone down the pike. It kinda seems that. If something happens, hey, Riconoscuito's got something to say about it. Well, I can't help it that I was raised around Fred Crisman. I mean, I can't help that cosmic act of fate in my life.

Q: I understand what you're saying, and things really are connected. People have trouble accepting that fact at all, that there connections to be made.

A: I get treated like I'm delusional. So I find that around certain things, the less I say, the better off I am because most people are not going to take the time to go check it out. Very few people even know who Fred Crisman is or what kind of a player he was. I tried to tell some reporters from the *Village Voice*, "I knew Fred Crisman." They refused to believe me. "There was a thing written about it." "Yeah, yeah, sure, show us the book..." How can show a book when I'm in a jail cell... I have a friend who was a SAC the day that happened.

Q: The day of the Kennedy assassination?

A: Yeah. I'll tell you what, I got it more than just from Fred.

Q: I'm still curious about exactly what Fred Crisman told you. Is it possible to summarize it?

A: I really don't want to go into that. Calls are taped here. Fred left a momentous…

Q: What about that manuscript?

A: He had it squirreled away and as far as I know, it's safe. The party that has it is very reliable. At this point in time, it is irrelevant to me getting out of prison. The things that concern me are the things connected to this case. I was just fascinated by the fact that Crisman came up. It seems that *Contact* magazine found out that Crisman knew my father and then they found out that he actually knew me and they just went wild. They made a big deal out of it.

Q: Which magazine?

A: *Contact*. And *UFO Magazine*... This Colin Brown was hanging around Ted Gunderson...

Q: Brown was the guy that worked for Technical Consultant magazine.

A: I think so.

Q: And you did an interview with him.

A: Not really. I talked to him on the phone a couple of times and I wanted some help on my case. I didn't want to talk about weirdness. I was research director at Wackenhut and at the time I was there we took over Area 51 in Nevada and we also had the Nevada test site and he was pumping me for all kinds of stuff out of there and I just told him, "Hey, I don't want to get into that. I've got enough problems right now. I'm facing life in prison on drug charges and it all stems from the Cabazon/Wackenhut joint venture and I just don't need to get into this stuff."

Q: Did Danny Casolaro pump you for information about that?

A: Yeah. Danny found out a lot of stuff. In fact, Danny had a lot of information on that and I'm surprised you didn't get it.

Q: The papers that were collected after he died originally went to ABC's *Nightline*. By the time they got to me, they had been picked over pretty cleanly. But there are notes in there about Area 51. Some, not a lot.

A: That whole subject matter with Wackenhut is one that I would want to steer clear of. Again, there's an aura of being delusional and I'm concerned about credibility here and the fact of the matter is that Wackenhut is is the only company that has ever had the security contract for any of these places, even though they are supposed to go up for open bid. And this is the way it's been since the early '50s, when these various agencies in these various places were set up. Wackenhut was steered right in and I happened to have been born into a situation by virtue of my father's contacts, my maternal grandfather's contacts. I was just around.

Q: You appear in that book, *Murder of a City*, as wiring your father's office.

A: Well, no. We ran a cable TV company.

Q: I'm currently trying to track this article that has a photograph of you and it talks about a child prodigy, a child genius working with various kinds of sound equipment. It's really this glowing piece about what a genius you are working with sound.

A: I was doing commercial sound as a teenager. I made a lot of money as a teenager doing commercial sound. I was involved with various rock'n'roll groups during what is known as the instrumental sound era. Most of these groups hit the charts. The Viceroys. The Ventures. The Wailers. Paul Revere and the Raiders. I don't know if you're familiar with any of those groups.

Q: Sure. Who wouldn't be familiar with the Ventures? The guitar groups are what you're talking about.

A: Yeah, the instrumental sound.

Q: And you worked with them?

A: You bet.

Q: Like producing albums and so forth?

A: Kearney Barton and myself.

Q: You did the sound at the gigs or you produced albums?

A: The whole bit. Back then we had Ampex three track recorders. That was the state of the art at that time. I was doing special effects and things like that. I was pretty involved and I made a lot of money.

Q: So as a teenager you were working as an *entrepeneur*?

A: Right. I was building sound systems, building these new huge 300 watt tube amplifiers, transmitting tubes, sound reinforcement systems, you know, PA systems.

Q: And this was at the time that your father was involved with Crisman?

A: He knew Crisman ever since he was in high school.

Q: He has his own business going on.

A: Advertising, public relations. My father worked on Kennedy's campaign staff when he got elected and he got Governor [Al Rosalini] elected up in the state of Washington. He was the point man for former Senator Warren Magnuson, Scoop Jackson. He was one of Scoop's top advisers. So this thing with Fred Crisman is kind of an aside here.

Index

Acumedics, 19
Al Yamamah contract umbrella, 142
Albania, 64, 66, 70, 73, 97
Ali & Fahd, 61
Alvarez, Alfred, 29, 34, 35, 36, 39, 55, 70, 89, 166
American Patriot Fax Network, 56, 58, 100
Amin, Idi, 31
Anderson, Jack, 55, 58
Angleton, James Jesus, 65
Anti-Communist League of the Caribbean, 74
Arbenz, Jacobo, 73, 74
Area 51, 2, 43–46, 105, 133, 137, 227
Arkansas Development Finance Authority, 134, 137
Arnold, Kenneth, 45, 223
Aurora, 43
Babayan, Richard, 21, 22
Baghdad, Iraq, 21
Banca Della Svizzera Italiana, 136
Bani-Sadr, Abolhassan, 88
Banister, Willam Guy, 74, 224
Barr, William, 125, 169–172
Bason, George F., 7, 8, 122, 126, 127
Bay of Pigs, 64, 66, 68, 69, 75–81, 83
BCCI, 2, 69, 71, 80, 93, 95–97, 100, 103, 104, 108, 117, 118, 141, 165, 178, 179
Begin, Menachem, 123
Behold, A Pale Horse, 2, 41, 87
Beirut, Lebanon, 2, 42, 70, 92, 93, 117, 119
Belton, John, 144, 145
Benitez, Joe, 35
Ben-Menasche, Ari, 12, 19, 21, 23, 145
Bickel, Bob, 104, 106, 116–118
Bin Laden, Osama, 158–161
Bingo Palace, Inc., 34
Bining, Sandra, 114
Bittinger, Barbara, xiii, 1
Black Rose Organization, 77
Blum, Jack, 46, 85
Bonds, Ron, viii, 154, 155, 157
Brainstorm, 57
Brandt, Daniel, 24, 27
Brenneke, Richard, 49, 104, 117
Brewer, C. Madison, 121
Brian, Earl, 10, 11, 18, 19, 21, 22, 24, 25, 26, 30, 55, 80, 92, 104, 106, 121, 125, 126, 129, 166, 173
Brooks, Jack, 9, 124, 125
Brown, Charles, 115
Bua, Nicholas, 126, 127, 132, 169–172, 174
Buck, Brantley, 135
Bull, Gerald, 11, 42, 51
Burning Man festival, 152, 153, 156
Bush, George, 73, 76, 77, 79, 80, 87, 88, 94, 95, 97, 129, 132, 139
Bush, Jeb, 94
Bush, Neil, 94
Byrd, Robert, 56, 106, 133
Cabazon Arms, 32, 34, 37, 42, 137
Cabazon Indians, 2, 15, 31
Cabell, C. P., 78

Canadian Security Intelligence Service (CSIS), 16
Cardoen Industries, 22
Cardoen, Carlos, 22, 51, 55
Cardozo, Michael, 135
Carlucci, Frank, 33
Carter, Jimmy, 2, 67, 83, 87, 88, 96
Casey, William, 11, 87
Casolaro, Anthony, ix, 111
Casolaro, Trey, 2, 115
Castro, Fidel, 31, 68, 70, 74–76, 80, 99
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 2, 11, 13, 26, 31, 33, 36, 38, 39, 44, 46, 60, 64, 65, 72–86, 88–95, 97–99, 113, 117, 128, 129, 136, 137, 139, 142, 144–147, 156, 157, 159, 161
Chasen, Robert, 69
Chiang Kai-shek, 74
Chicago's Citizen's Committee to Clean Up the Courts, 57
CHIPS, 64
Chisum, Jack, 139
Cicippio, Joseph, 61
Cline, Ray, 69, 72, 74, 90, 94
Clines, Thomas, 82, 83, 84, 85, 92, 94
Clinton, Bill, 96, 132, 133–137, 161, 169
Clinton, Roger, 134
Clostridium, 155, 156
Clyde's, 60
COIN (Community Online Intelligence Systems), 158
Coleman, Lester Knox III, 22, 23, 118, 125
Colson, Chuck, 81
Com-12, 13, 39, 46, 58, 77, 89, 91, 92, 98, 100, 119
Communications Canada, 122
Computer Age Publications, 5, 163
Contra War, 70
Cooper, William, 45, 46
Coral Gables, Florida, 15
Country Party, 44
Cox, Archibald, 124
Cranston, Alan, 55
Crawford, John, 56
Credit Suisse, 84
Creutzfeldt-Jakob (Mad Cow) Disease, 107, 108
Crimes of Patriots, The, 44, 46
Crisman, Fred, 45, 220–222, 225–227, 229
Cypriot Police Force Narcotics Squad, 22
D6, 43
Dahl, Harold, 45, 222
DALITE, 120, 121
"Danger Man," see Michael Riconosciuto
Death of the Poet, 38
DEC VAX minicomputer, 6
Defense Intelligence Agency, 21, 22, 118
Degem, 25, 26
Delahanty, Vali, 56
Dellinger, David, 57
DeMorenshildt, George, 77
Dhikr, 150, 152
Diana, Princess of Wales, 140–152, 154
Dick, Fred, 44
Diem brothers, 80
Dominica, 59, 60, 67, 68, 76
Donoghue, Larry, 120
Dulce, New Mexico, 43
Dulles, John Foster, 73
East Timor, 44
ECHELON, 158
Edgar Allen Poe Society, 109
Eisman, Dennis, 54, 56
Eitan, Rafael, 19, 20, 23
Eitel, Gary, 139
Emory, Dave, 123, 129
Entezamat, 21
Fair Play for Cuba Committee, 45
Fairfax, Virginia, 1, 2, 103
Fayed, Dodi, 140, 141, 144–146, 148, 150–152
Fayed, Muhammad, 141, 142, 144–147
Fifth Column, 136
Financial News Network, 18, 26
FOIMS (Field Office Information Management Systems), 158
Foster, Vincent, 134, 135, 136, 138
Frei, Eduardo, 31
Frost, Dr. James, 114, 115
Frye, A. Robert, 34, 35
Fuel Air Explosives, 51, 59
Gable, Clark, see Robert Booth Nichols
Galloway, George, 28, 148

Gambino crime family, 59
Garrison, Jim, 45, 78, 225, 226
Gates, Robert, 22, 117
Gates, Thomas, 61–63, 125
Gerson, Stuart, 139, 169–170
Ghorbanifar, Manucher, 83, 103, 117, 141
Giaquinto, Eugene, 61, 62
Gig Harbor, 49
Gold, Jon, 45, 46, 220
Goldman, Gary, 62
Gorbachev, Mikhail, 26
Gotti, John, 61, 62
Gualteri, Jim, 105, 106
Guatemala, 25, 36, 55, 73, 74
Guerrin, Larry, 56
Guthrie, James, 54
Hadron, Inc., 18, 19, 25, 121, 122
Haig, Alexander, 85, 86
Haight-Ashbury, 2, 12
Hakim, Albert, 75, 84, 85, 92, 93, 113, 162
Haldeman, H. R., 79, 99
Hamilton, Alan, 27
Hamilton, William, 5–7, 9–12, 15, 19, 23, 25, 27, 40, 48, 59, 63, 64, 102, 106, 107, 112, 116, 118, 120, 121, 123, 158, 163, 179
Hand, Michael Jon, 90, 91, 92
Hanssen, Robert, 158, 159, 160, 161
Harris, Larry Wayne, 155
Hashemi, Cyrus, 36
Hashemi, Manucher, 83
Hayes, Charles, 24, 25, 125
Helms, Richard, 69, 72, 78, 79, 81, 82, 83
Henderson, Wayne, 152, 156
Hitchcock, William, 105
Hoffman, Abbie, 53, 57
Home and Auto, 2
Honeger, Barbara, 77, 88, 98
Hoover, J. Edgar, 32, 79
Houghton, Bernie, 90, 91, 92
Hubbell, Webster "Webb," 132–136, 169, 170, 172–175
Hughes Aircraft, 2, 71, 116, 178
Hughes, Howard, 61, 63, 107, 117
Hughes, Jimmy, 35, 36, 55
Hull, John, 85
Human Genome Project, 2, 105, 107
Hunneycutt, Robert, 8
Hunt, E. Howard, 64, 69, 72, 73, 75, 76, 78, 79, 81
Hussein, Saddam, 67, 80, 95, 96, 161, 178
Illuminati, 2
Indio Daily News, 34
Indio, California, 2, 10, 15, 16, 30, 34, 35, 41, 42, 84
Infotechnology, 18, 26
Inman, Bobby, 33
INSLAW (Institute for Law and Social Research), 5–10, 13, 15, 19, 21, 25, 26, 38, 46, 48, 54, 56–58, 64, 87, 88, 103, 106, 108, 112, 120–129, 132, 133, 135, 141, 144, 158, 161, 163, 165, 166, 169, 171, 174, 178, 179
Iran-contra, 21, 56, 71, 85, 108, 117, 120, 129, 132, 137, 141, 144, 160, 178
Israel Defense Forces (IDF), 19
Jameson, Seth, 150, 156
Jason, Robert, 33
Jensen, D. Lowell, 120, 121
JM/WAVE, 75, 76
Joint Defense Space Research Facility, 44
Joshua Tree, 41
Judge, John, 74, 160
Keith, Jim, 72, 150–157
Kelly, Clarence, 33
Kennedy, John F., 69, 73, 78, 79
Kerouac, Jack, 2
Kesey, Ken, 105
Khashoggi, Adnan, 103, 117, 141, 142, 144, 147, 148
Khomeini, Ayatollah, 83, 87, 88, 129
Killian, Martin, 64
Kirk, Claude, 32, 33
Kissinger, Henry, 66, 82, 85, 86, 148
Klenk, Ann, 112, 113
Korean Central Intelligence Agency (KCIA), 22
Koresh, David, 56
Kusnick, Barry, 57
Kuwait, 23, 59, 67
Kwitny, Jonathan, 44
La France Specialties, 36

Laiti, Dominic, 19, 122
LAKAM, 123
Lane, Mark, 78
Larouche, Lyndon, 10, 64
Larsen, Jonathan, 113
Lasater, Dan, 134
Law Enforcement Assistance Administration, 5
Lazar, Bob, 43, 45
Lear, John, 44
Learning Channel, 18
Leary, Timothy, viii, 105
Ledeen, Michael, 83, 86, 92
LeGrand, Ronald, 124
LeWinter, Oswald, 142
Lexington, Kentucky, 20, 24, 118
Libya, 22, 48, 73, 82, 83
Link Systems, Ltd., 23
Looney, Michael, 109, 110, 141
Lorenz, Marita, 78
Maheu, Robert, 63, 117
Major, John, 28, 148
Makes Me Think of Tall Green Grass, 3
Mallgrave, Frank, 120, 121
Manassas, Virginia, 13
MANPADS (Man Portable Air Defense Systems), 159
Marchetti, Victor, 78, 91
Martin, Harry, 11, 36, 116, 119, 123, 129
Martinsburg, West Virginia, xiii, 1, 3, 71, 89, 106, 109, 112, 115, 116, 118, 119, 125, 164
Mason, Ben, 103, 105, 106, 141
Maury Island incident, 45
Maxwell, Robert, 25, 127
May, Alan Michael, 55
McLean, Virginia, 2, 127
McClendon, Sarah, 106, 133
McCloskey, John, 118
McCoy, Bill, 103, 104, 106, 117
McCullough, Virginia, 34, 39, 46, 54, 71, 106, 123, 129, 141
McDonald, Jeffrey, 54
McDougal, James, 135
McFarlane, Robert, 19, 85
McWhorter, Lawrence, 121
Meese, Edwin, 7, 8, 10, 18, 30, 120, 126, 173, 174
Mena, Arkansas, 96, 133
Meridian Arms, 61
Microsoft, 27
Miller, Terry, 5, 163, 165
Mitchell, John, 66, 82
MJ12, 46
Mohammed, Abu, 21, 22
Moldin, Yuri, 73
Morasca, Paul, 29, 36, 37, 70
Mossadegh, Mohammad, 82
Mothman Prophecies, 155
Mount San Jacinto, 41
Moyle, Jonathan, 55
Murchison, Clint, 63, 117
Murder of a City, 45, 46, 228
Nam, Y. H., 22
National Enquirer, 2
National Police Criminal Information System (NPCIS), 27
National Security Agency, 5, 21
Ng, Anson, 55, 56
Nicaragua, 16, 34, 67, 78, 83, 84, 95, ,137
Nichols, John Phillip, 30–42, 69, 75, 82, 89, 94, 123, 125
Nichols, Mark, 38
Nichols, Robert Booth, 59–64, 102, 104, 112, 116, 117, 123, 125, 167, 168
Nidal, Abu, 95
Night Vision Goggles, 15, 34, 166
Nir, Amiran, 36
Nixon, Richard, 26, 69, 75, 79, 81, 97, 124, 142
Noriega, Manuel, 94, 95, 96, 167
North, Oliver, 71, 83–85, 94, 120, 133, 134
Novel, Gordon, 45
Nugan Hand Bank, 11, 42, 46, 51, 89–92
Nugan, Frank, 90
Nunn, Sam, 124
Nussbaum, Bernard, 135
October Surprise, 2, 11, 12, 21, 30, 34, 36, 49, 55, 56, 57, 69, 82, 87, 88, 95, 104, 113, 118, 121, 129. 178
On the Trail of an Alliance Gone Awry, 38
On the Trail of An Unlikely Alliance, 38

On the Trail of the Moneycatchers, 38
Operation Zapata, 76
Orejuela, Gilberto Rodriguez, 102
Orr, Ben, 123
Osman, Tim, see Osama Bin-Laden
OSS, 72–74, 79, 80, 97, 223
Oswald, Lee Harvey, 45, 74, 77, 78, 79, 154, 155, 161
P2 Lodge, 77, 78, 83, 86, 97
Palme, Olaf, 36
Palmer, Ray, 45, 223
Pan Am 103, 92, 119, 161
Parfrey, Adam, 161–162
Park-On-Meter, 133, 173
Pasciuto, Anthony, 7, 8
Pender, George, 69, 72, 117
Philby, Kim, 65, 70, 73
Phoenix Program, 27
Pianzio, Dino John, 33
Pickard, George, 153, 157
Pierce, Judge Lawrence, 7
Pine Gap, 43, 44, 46, 67, 89, 90
Pont D'Alma tunnel, 140, 141, 150
Profits of War, 23, 27, 129
Project Paperclip, 73
PROMIS (Prosecutor's Management Information System), 5, 7, 9–13, 16, 18, 27, 30, 48, 55, 57, 69, 71, 105, 112, 118, 120–123, 125–129, 135, 136, 138, 141, 144, 145, 158, 159, 161, 166–169, 174–179
Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion, 45
Providence Journal, 2
Provident College, 2
Puget Sound, 45, 48, 49, 51
Pulaski County, Kentucky, 24
Quick, Mary, 29, 37
Quintero, Rafael "Chi Chi," 75, 83, 84, 92
Rabor, William, 33
Rancho Mirage, 29, 35
Ratiner, Leigh, 26, 122
Reagan, Ronald, 18, 34, 67, 87, 173
Reagan, Roy, 139
Reeder, G. Wayne, 31, 94
REJIS system, 27
Reno, Janet, 56, 88, 126, 169, 174
Reservation Operations, 43
Richardson, Elliot, 6, 7, 9, 26, 124, 126, 129, 170, 171
Riconosciuto, Marshall, 46
Riconosciuto, Michael, 9–13, 15, 17–22, 30, 33, 34, 36–38, 44–49, 54–59, 64, 70, 71, 74, 89, 102, 103, 105, 109, 115, 118-119, 121, 125-126, 133, 134, 144, 145, 159, 161, 165–168, 173, 220-229
Rodriguez, Felix, 75, 84
Rogue Spies, Big Oil, Organized Crime and Secret Empires, 38
Rose Law Firm, 135
Rowland, Tony, 141, 147
Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP), 16, 144
Russbacher, Gunther, 56, 58
Russell, George, 76
Sandinistas, 84, 136
Santiago, Chile, 22, 55
SAVAK, 83, 84
Schalow, Arthur, 12, 50
Seagal, Steven, 62
Seals, Barry, 137
Secord, Richard, 21, 75, 84, 85, 92–94, 113, 144
Sessions, William, 135
Seymour, Chris, 117–119
Shackley, Ted, 69, 72, 75, 77, 79–85, 88, 90, 92, 94
Silverado Savings and Loan, 31
Simcon, 19
Singlaub, John, 72, 74, 80, 84
Skolnick, Sherman, 57, 95
Skull and Bones, 76, 85
Smathers, George, 32
Southern California Edison, 38
Spiro, Ian, 56
SR17 Blackbird, 43
Stalling, Danielle, 103
Standorf, Alan, 13, 56, 115, 116
Stavin, Richard, 61, 63, 117, 125
Stealth, 43
Steinberg, Jeff, 10, 64
Stephens, Inc., 96, 134

Stich, Rodney, 13, 115
Stone Crab Inn, 109, 111
Stormont Laboratories, 36, 107
Streeter-Duvic, Linda, 39
Strickland, Robert, 62
Sturgis, Frank, 75, 78, 79, 81
Sufism, 150
Summa Corporation, 61
Systematics Information Systems
    Task Force 157
Teel, S. Martin, Jr., 8
The Ice King, 3
The Palomino, 62
Thomas, Edwin, 18
Thomasson, Patsy, 134, 135
Thornburgh, Richard, 9, 125, 126
Thyssen, Fritz, 76
To Fly Without Wings, 3
Tonoma, Nevada, 44
Trail of the Octopus, 22, 26, 119
Turner, Bill, 56, 71, 106, 110, 111, 114–116,
    133, 178
Tyson's Corner, 60
U2 Spy Plane, 43
UFOs, 2, 43–46, 74, 145, 150, 152,
    220–221, 223
Under Siege, 62
Union Banking Corporation, 76
United Fruit Company, 73
United Nations Fund for Drug Abuse
    Control, 23
United Press International (UPI), 26
UNIX, 25
US Justice Department, 5, 15, 95
Valleyfield Chemical Products
    Corporation, 34
VCI Neutralization and Identification
    System, 27
Videnieks, Peter, 10, 15–19, 34, 55, 56,
    103, 104, 106, 133, 166, 167
Viet Cong, 18
Vietnam, 2, 18, 23, 72, 75, 80, 81, 90, 105,
    106, 108
Wackenhut, George, 32, 224, 225
Wald, Judge Patricia, 8
Ward, Seth "Skeeter" III, 134
Warren Commission, 73, 77–79, 225, 226
Washington Crime News Service, 2
Washington National Airport, 13
Washington Star, 2
Watson, James, 107
Weaver, Wendy, 50, 60, 109, 130, 131, 132
Weiss, Brian, 37
Welles, Orson, 3
Welmus, Art, 30, 39
WerBell, Mitchell III, 72, 75
Whattley, Richard, 75
White Rose, 77
White, William, 7
Whitewater Development Corporation, 135
Whitlam, Gough, 44, 69, 90
Wilcher, Paul, 56, 58, 88, 100
Wilson, Edwin, 69, 75, 81, 92, 103, 113
Windows 95, 27
Wisner, Frank, 73
Women's Auxiliary of American Legion
    Post 509, 29, 37
Woodland, California, 43, 133
Xonics, 18
Yakuza, 60, 61, 63, 66, 70, 117
Yellow Lodge, 43
Zokosky, Peter, 34, 35, 168

WWW.FERALHOUSE.COM

THE ASSASSINATIONS

Probe Magazine on JFK, MLK, RFK, and Malcolm X

Edited by James DiEugenio and Lisa Pease •
Introduction by Judge Joe Brown

"Throughout the '90s, Lisa Pease and Jim DiEugenio covered the issues and reported on new developments in the JFK, MLK and RFK assassination cases in remarkable depth. Their book is a must-read to understand how these leaders were systematically eliminated. It is a unique volume in the literature on this subject."
—William Turner, former FBI agent and co-author of *Deadly Secrets*

6 x 9 • 684 pages • paperback • ISBN: 0-922915-82-2 • $24 • Now Available

INSIDE THE SHADOW GOVERNMENT

National Emergencies and the Cult of Secrecy

By Harry Helms

This first in-depth exploration of what the *Washington Post* called the "Shadow Government" reveals standby plans for martial law and the use of federal troops for civilian law enforcement; the underground facilities where the political and corporate elite would be taken in case of a major national emergency; plans for arrest without probable cause or a warrant, of American citizens by presidential order; and details of plans to suspend basic constitutional rights, governmental control of all radio and TV stations, and seizure of private property and bank deposits during a "national emergency."

5 x 8 • 160 pages • paperback • ISBN: 0-922915-89-X • $9.95 • Now Available

WAR IS A RACKET

The Antiwar Classic by America's Most Decorated General

By General Smedley D. Butler • Introduction by Adam Parfrey

General Butler's notorious 1933 speech, "War is a Racket," excoriates "the small inside group" that "knows what the racket is all about." The Feral House edition provides more rare anti-imperialist screeds and an exposé of a Congressional inquiry into Butler's whistleblowing of a coup d'etat attempt by big business against Franklin Delano Roosevelt.

5 x 8 • 160 pages • paperback original • ISBN: 0-922915-86-5 • $9.95 •
Now Available

TO ORDER FROM FERAL HOUSE:
Individuals: Send check or money order to Feral House, P.O. Box 39910, Los Angeles CA 90039, USA. For credit card orders: call (800) 967-7885 or fax your info to (323) 666-3330. CA residents please add 8.25% sales tax.

U.S. shipping: add $4.50 for first item, $2 each additional item. Shipping to Canada and Mexico: add $9 for first item, $6 each additional item. Other countries: add $11 for first item, $9 each additional item. Non-U.S. originated orders must include international money order or check for U.S. funds drawn on a U.S. bank. We are sorry, but we cannot process non-U.S. credit cards.

THE NEW UNDERWORLD ORDER

Triumph of Criminalism

DARK ACTORS PLAYING GAMES

THE GLOBAL FANTASIES OF THE GEOMASONIC ILLUMINATI

Christopher Story

Author of *'The European Union Collective'*

THE NEW UNDERWORLD ORDER is a world in which official criminality, driven by bribery and corruption, is the norm among all layers of governance. At the vast intergovernmental level, the Rule of Law does not apply - a state of affairs which is exploited to the full under cover of a facade of hypocritical official rectitude. But at the country level, it is ruthlessly relied upon by corrupt intelligence cadres when it suits their interests - and equally ruthlessly flouted by operatives and officials most of the time, on the cynical basis that 'everyone is doing it'. In particular, 'everyone' is engaged in perpetrating crimes against humanity - in the form of drug-trafficking operations, which are controlled by the competing and simultaneously collaborating intelligence services of the Great Powers in order to finance their corrupt operations, and to sustain the corrosive and subversive global hegemony activities of the Illuminati, of which intelligence communities form, wittingly or unwittingly, the backbone, as they consist essentially of esoteric secret societies. This study, then, is about the rampant global corruption in high places arising from the free-wheeling, unrestrained abominations of the system of synarchy - rule by secret societies.

Although focused mainly on the United States and Britain, the Author addresses the consequences of official criminalism worldwide - showing that it flourishes in surprising places, such as the Vatican. He begins by exposing the lie that greets all who enter the Langley headquarters of the CIA; shows how the perverse influence of the occultic secret societies at Yale University has successfully institutionalised poisonously reprobate attitudes and mentalities-originating in Germany-from generation to generation, infecting cadres at the highest levels and influencing the whole of society for the worse; and identifies the links between the Yale synarchy system and the drug trade, which is the primary financing source for the Illuminati.

In Chapter 4, The Hex of Himmler, the Author shows how the same perverse German influence has corrupted the CIA - and follows this with a documented expose of German Freemasonry (The House of Lucifer). Chapter 6, which is entitled The Angels of Light, shows how the Evil One resides within, and controls, prominent 'religious' organisations, alienating billions from the Way, the Truth and the Life.

Chapter 7 - The Synagogue of Satan - exposes the Illuminati from historical documents, and paves the way for the Author's detailed analysis of The Thousand-Year Reich, which German secret 'Black' intelligence, based at Dachau, near Munich, is building on what it considers to represent 'the ruins of the United States'.

Accordingly, the identity of our continuing common enemy is clearly revealed. ■

Memorandum for the non-Christian reader

This book is written from the perspective of True Christianity (meaning that the Author accepts, and proclaims, that Jesus Christ is indeed the Son of God, and 'is come in the flesh'). There are two reasons for this. First, it represents the undeniable, but extensively denied, Truth. Secondly, this work, by definition, examines and exposes the Works of Darkness. This cannot and must never be done without the protection afforded, both to Author and Reader, of the Word, Name and presence of Jesus Christ. For those who do not believe, and who deny the truth expressed in verse 1 of Psalms 14 and 53 - 'The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God' - the Author has this request. Please read this detailed expose of contemporary and relevant historical Works of Darkness, both because the study contains intelligence that has hitherto been concealed or misinterpreted, and because the Scriptural references, which are generally spelled out here in full, provide the absolute standard of perfection against which the reprobate evils described herein can only be judged and properly understood. The Author does not seek to convert anyone: conversion occurs when a person takes the simple step of Faith, which results in the Free Gift of Grace from the Holy Spirit, and is always a matter for the individual, not for anyone else. At the same time, the corollary to this fact needs to be understood - namely, that True Christianity is exclusive, not inclusive, as wayward 'Christian' churches, ever fearful for their worldly survival, have chosen to assert. This becomes crystal clear to anyone reading Scripture: and, who knows, some readers of this work may be encouraged by it to do so. Should this be decided, start with Chapter 9 of John, and the final Chapters of Luke. Use the King James Bible, which has not been adulterated and modified by modern reprobate 'editors', and try to find a One Year Bible employing the King James Version, divided into 365 Scripture readings which take no more than fifteen minutes daily. The Author has done this for eight years, and the experience has changed his life.

If, however, the reader cannot 'handle' this for the moment, he or she is urged not to be discouraged. For the Author believes that this work may well assist many to understand the underlying causes of the mess we're in - not least by identifying the hidden perpetrators of serial crimes, including crimes against humanity such as drug-trafficking, a source of the Illuminati's funding. It also addresses certain issues, such as the extensive Jewish Nazi participation in the Holocaust ('Shoah'), which have been carefully obfuscated and 'written out of history'. Since The Order of the Illuminati is Luciferian and is engaged in criminal operations worldwide, it seeks by every means available to procure absolute control over the world, on the false assumption that its criminality can thereby be hidden from scrutiny for ever.

Finally, it will become clear as this book unfolds that German secret 'Black' intelligence exploits The Order of the Illuminati as its densest, most effective cover.

The Abwehr (Nazi) Intelligence Continuum is located, of all places, at Dachau, a name synonymous with death. The secret 'Black' intelligence organisation directing the New Underworld Order offensive is known as DVD - Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst. The head of DVD until he fell ill in 1976 was Admiral Canaris. British intelligence sources inform the Author that the present actual head of DVD is George Bush (Busche) Sr. (2006). Dr Henry Kissinger may have served briefly as de facto DVD Chief while George Bush Sr. doubled as Director of Central Intelligence. ■

THE NEW
UNDERWORLD
ORDER

Curse of Criminalism

DARK ACTORS PLAYING GAMES

The Luciferian German Fascist-
Illuminati Criminal Revolution
Conspiracy to Control the World
By means of
A global coup d'etat by instalments

Christopher Story

This work is dedicated to the memory of:

The late Andrew ('Andy') Stephenson
who was murdered by agents of the Illuminati
in 2005, in retaliation for his tireless work in exposing the manipulation
of electronic voting equipment and software, ahead of the 2004 Election.

Andrew travelled the length and breadth of the United States, at his own expense, giving lectures on how the recently mandated electronic voting machines were intended to be a platform for the wholesale falsification of election results, thereby making a mockery of the American Government's widely publicised vaunting of 'democracy' elsewhere in the world, especially in the Middle East. It was because his brilliantly accurate presentations -which showed precisely how voting results could be, and had been, rigged -threatened to expose the cynicism and hollowness of the officially asserted 'democracy mission', that Andy was considered to have become a serious threat to the US authorities' domestic and international credibility.

He was poisoned using a Himmlerian formula, in the shape of a substance capable of mimicking pancreatic cancer. That he was indeed murdered has been confirmed to the Author by several knowledgeable US sources. Andy gave up everything, including ultimately his own life, to warn the American people that criminalised forces are engaged in hijacking the Republic's democracy and freedoms. Poisoning is the traditional Illuminati method.

All who know of Andrew's sacrifice are united in recognising his heroism in standing up to the Illuminati and exposing their endless criminality.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Christopher Edward Harle Story was born in England in 1938 and was educated at Eton College and at Christ Church, Oxford. From 1959 to 1961 he worked as a public relations officer for a large corporation in Montreal and Toronto, returning to Britain in 1961. After several years of free-lance writing he founded his own publishing company in 1963, and has been engaged in writing and publishing ever since. His main serials and journals corporation, World Reports Limited, publishes intelligence journals and newsletters for the international financial community and for certain specialist readerships. Global Analysis Limited publishes the newsletter Global Analyst and provides specialist strategic consultancy services. His book publishing company, Edward Harle Limited, specialises in 'politically incorrect' - i.e., 'correct' - books such as the present work [see book website: www.edwardharle.com]. He testified before the Subcommittee on Domestic and International Scientific Planning, Analysis and Cooperation of the US House of Representatives' Committee on Science and Technology in September 1978, on 'Saudi-American Finances'; and in September 1981, he testified again, before a Subcommittee of the House Committee on Government Operations, on 'Petroliquidity and the US Treasury's International Financial Policy'. In 1967, he married Janet Rooney, who is from Adelaide, Australia, and they have four grown-up daughters and one (new) granddaughter. ■

ABOUT EDWARD HARLE LIMITED

Edward Harle Limited, using Christopher Story's two middle names, specialises in publishing classic intelligence books which serve the purpose of exposing the lies and deceptions of corrupt governments, intelligence services and institutions in today's oppressive environment of criminalism (the hegemony of organised criminal operations to realise the potential of strategy and to enrich the perpetrators and their corrupt institutions). The company's titles reflect the ugly reality that all the main governments are controlled by Dark Forces - resident within revolutionary intelligence communities which are in control, out of control, and need urgently to be brought under control. The best intelligence officers are well aware of the scale of this crisis and, in both the United States and Britain, are confronted with the serial evils perpetrated as permissively by domestic intelligence sectors, as by their foreign competitors, with which they may routinely collaborate. The dark, oppressive world that these people inhabit, which is riddled with Freemasonry and riven with internal hatreds, tensions, rivalries and threats (in both Britain and America), spills over into the 'visible' world of ordinary, defenceless people, and pollutes governance at every level. Our intelligence books seek to shed light into the dark corners of this 'hidden world' - which now affects every facet of our fives. Truly, the intelligence communities of the world are to blame for the mess we're in, and for the chaos that they seem to specialise in generating. This is not to say that there are not 'white hats' who try, against massive odds, to inculcate sense into the maddened skulls of these people: and Christopher Story is privileged to know a few of them. It may be found mat these works are uncompromising in their logic - which is the whole point. If you require 'sanitised' and often confused disinformation, why not rely upon the 300+ known US Information Warfare websites which distort facts, libel good people and 'play games' with our minds for evil purposes? But if you prefer the truth - or our honest attempts to promote it - please give us your support! You can do this by buying our books - or, if you really agree that what we are doing is indispensable, you may care to assist us financially, or with a bequest in your Will. ■

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS VIII

FOREWORD IX

Chapter 1 The Langley Lie 1

Chapter 2 The Curse of Yale 33

Chapter 3 The Lure of Drugs 79

Chapter 4 The Hex of Himmler 183
Addendum to Chapter 4: The Frankfurt School 254

Chapter 5 The House of Lucifer 259

Chapter 6 The Angels of Light 345

Chapter 7 The Synagogue of Satan 419
Appendix 1 to Chapter 7: A Directory of alleged Illuminati programmers A 517
Appendix 2 to Chapter 7: Directory of Illuminati traps for the unwary The 519
Appendix 3 to Chapter 7: JASON Society of The Order of the Quest 522

Chapter 8 The Thousand-Year Reich 529
Appendix 1 to Chapter 8: The Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact Mark II 610
Appendix 2 to Chapter 8: The North American Illuminati GULAG system 612
Appendix 3 to Chapter 8: The continuing Soviet Illuminati GULAG system 614

Conclusion The Scissors Strategy 617

Index To Chapters 1-8 633

Notes and References: The expanded notes and references annotated in the main text are given at the end of each Chapter, not at the end of the book. This Index captures key names in the main text of Chapters 1-8 only.

Addenda New Underworld Order Insights 661

THE STANDARD OF ABSOLUTE PERFECTION

True Christianity is not inclusive, it is exclusive. Thus Jesus Christ specifically contradicts all today who, through ignorance and perversity, preach the false gospel of multi-faith inclusive-ness. As Peter, 'filled with the Holy Spirit', said boldly to the rulers and elders of the people in Jerusalem (Acts, Chapter 4, verse 12): 'Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is none other name under Heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved'. It is by the name of Jesus ONLY that the devils are cast out. Therefore, the Author boldly asserts throughout this study the certainty and reliable eternity of the Word of God through Jesus Christ. Since this investigation concerns the Works of Darkness, it contrasts those works with the light and simplicity that is in Jesus Christ It is, after all, 'that old serpent, the Devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world'. This stance is not intended to be provocative - although that may seem to be the case, to those who believe in neither God nor the Devil - but rather to delineate the standard of absolute prefection against which the exposed evils can only be judged. ■

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The Author is constrained by the infernally compartmentalised environment of the vast and oppressive US intelligence community from openly acknowledging the assistance and inspiration given to him by distinguished 'white hats' among their number - brave professional people who prefer the Rule of Law to open-ended gang warfare and whose bitter experiences have led them, in most of the cases that I have in mind, to acknowledge that there is but one source of Truth - namely, Jesus Christ, 'who is the Son of God and is come in the flesh'.

Inevitably, this understanding sets up tensions between the evil deception standards of the corrupt intelligence communities, and the standards required of those who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and recognise that it is only by His name that we are saved - and by no other means. The Author came to understand this truth definitively after his late friend Malachi Martin taught him the simple truth that evil spirits are cast out exclusively in the Name of Jesus Christ If Malachi had not sadly died suddenly on 27th July 1999, we would certainly have 'cracked this' together.

That Jesus is the only Name that Evil Spirit obeys was first made manifest when the man possessed of many devils who roamed naked among the tombs in the country of the Gadarenes 'saw Jesus afar off, and... ran and worshipped Him. And cried with a loud voice, and said: 'What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not'. For he [Jesus had] said unto him, Come out of Him, thou unclean spirit'. Jesus then asked Evil Spirit's name - since in exorcism, the demons must be identified by their names. 'And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many'. In response to the devils' request that Jesus cast them out into a herd of 2,000 swine who were feeding on the slopes, Jesus consented; and 'forthwith ... the unclean spirits went out, and entered [appropriately] into the swine; and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea... and were choked in the sea' [Mark, Chapter 5, verses 6-13]. Note that the previously possessed madman 'ran and worshipped' Jesus having 'seen him afar off' - which teaches us loud and clear that the devils know Him (as is further revealed elsewhere in the New Testament, for instance in James (the brother of Jesus) Chapter 2, verse 19: The devils also believe, and tremble'). For, as this book elaborates, the 'principalities and powers' herewith exposed are not atheists. On the contrary, they believe in Satan (or Lucifer), whose speciality is turning truth inside out and upside down. Hence they know that the name of Jesus is the only Name by which men and women can be saved; and, being bound by Satan, they correctly identify Jesus as their main enemy: Jesus Belthemitus Maledictus. Jesus Christ is the ONLY enemy of all those exposed in this book.

Due to threats specifically directed at those who 'speak out' nowadays in the United States, the Author has had to remove acknowledgment references to special American friends who have helped him with the development of this work. Such threats are typically perpetrated by telephone, by posting threats on websites known to be visited by the targets in question, by unsolicited emails seeking to entangle the target in polemical discussions for entrapment purposes, by unsolicited third party interventions during telephone conversations, and by other means conjured up by the sick intelligence minds who waste their empty lives 'doing this stuff'.

Those who have helped me include several women of special depth, talent and understanding, the like and quality of whom I have rarely encountered outside the United States. Their special attributes include a determination to resist by all means at their limited disposal the depredations of those exposed in this book; and they are among those who have demonstrated by their true friendships that the endless duplicity I have encountered among intelligence-related parties is not yet the norm (although it has often felt like it). Others include one generous friend from the British Isles who has made his home in America; several senior officers and appalled intelligence officials who have done their best to serve their country rather than the Illuminati; and a number of researchers and generous helpers who have, I know, assisted me behind the scenes. The fact that I cannot acknowledge their kindness by naming them is itself indicative of the steepening angle of the slide towards perdition that we face. ■

FOREWORD

THE SUBTERRANEAN MOVEMENT, A.K.A. THE RIVER STYX

In March 2003, the Author introduced a special issue of his long-standing financial journal International Currency Review, which is devoted in part to exposing hidden official and intergovernmental financial scamming, with the following passage:

'The great majority of mankind' wrote Machiavelli in 'The Prince', 'are satisfied with appearances as though they were realities... and are often more influenced by things that seem than by those that are'. How things have not changed! Early in the 20th century, the English thriller writer, John Buchan, revealed how well he understood this sinister reality: 'Away behind all the Governments and the armies there was a big subterranean movement going on, engineered by very dangerous people', observed his character Richard Hannay'[1].

'The ancient Greeks recognised this phenomenon: their image for it was the River Styx - the black underground river that rushes in the depths of darkness to Hades. When we consider what is happening behind the level of perceived reality today, we can appreciate, with awe and respect, just how inspired and intelligent these ancient people were. This agonised report is all about the River Styx, which is overflowing its subterranean confines, has erupted to the surface and is flooding all over the West's financial and political institutions. In the United States, the political system is literally drowning in this black flood'.

'Another way of focusing upon what follows is perhaps to think of the following simple model. Let us say that, for the purposes of clarification, the 'perceived world' of Presidents, Parliaments, Congresses, Monarchies, judges, courts, businesses, tax collectors, political collectives, trade unions, banks and the stock market, is the 'vertical world'. Within this 'vertical world', relationships are clearly defined. Cabinets are presided over by Prime Ministers, the United States has a Constitution (until it is suspended, anyway) to which American citizens defer, trade unions are led by well-known political agitators, military personnel report to their superiors, businessmen must adhere to a well-understood chain of responsibility, and so on. Relationships are generally overt, well understood, and respected. What this special analysis will address is a parallel, hidden 'horizontal world'. Within this secretive, murky environment, relationships exist which ruthlessly cut across those prevailing in the overt, 'vertical' world. The relationships and linkages prevailing in the horizontal world are largely unknown to the inhabitants of the 'vertical world''.

'Because the two often clash, inexplicable developments may occur in the 'vertical world' which defy rational explanation. An obvious contemporary example was the Bush Administration's fixation first with Afghanistan, following 9/11, and its 'subsequent' fixation with 'dealing with' Iraq. In fact, detailed plans to 'address' Afghanistan were discussed between Russian officials and their American counterparts at meetings held in Washington on 1-2 August 2000, while President Clinton remained in office. As for Iraq, President George W. Bush campaigned in part on a promise to 'take 'em out', and within hours of his inauguration, reports from Washington indicated that the new Administration would 'look for a radical approach in dealing with Iraq'. A declassified paper showing that planning for a 'post-Saddam

Iraq' was the subject of a National Security Council meeting held on 31st January 2001, just days after President George W. Bush Jr's inauguration. Therefore, the offensive against Iraq never had anything to do with 9/11, either'.

'... The power of the 'River Styx' dimension is now such a dangerous incubus worldwide - that is to say, its flooding of our institutions has reached such disturbing proportions - that it is the duty of the analyst who seeks the truth at all times, to penetrate behind the veil in order to try to make sense of what is happening[2]. Normal reportage is inadequate and semi-redundant, because it takes no account of what is going on behind the curtain of the Wizard of Oz. If some of what follows is uncomfortable reading, this does not reflect a desire for prurience. The Author recognises that we are certainly enjoined and sternly warned (Biblically) not to consort with the darkness - i.e., not to attend a Black Mass out of inquisitiveness, for instance. But a dispensation exists in respect of those who would seek to place a candle in the darkness - the miracle of which is that by this single small act, the dark recesses are illuminated (in the genuine, rather than the esoteric, sense).

THE 'ORDER' TO BE IMPOSED BY THE NEW WORLD - BY 'THE ORDER'

Sophisticates may rightly assert that there is nothing new about any of this. The history we were taught in school (before national history was completely abolished by the manipulators) was already so sanitised as to leave us not just ignorant about how power is exploited and controlled, but brainwashed as well. Some who may prefer the relative comfort of leaving their heads in the sand even insist that because 'this is the way things are and have always been', it is a waste of time exposing the evils reviewed, for instance, in this work. By extension, it can reasonably be argued that the title of this book is perhaps misleading, because the 'New World Order' global scam is nothing new. And in one sense, this is true.

But any such criticism fails to take account of the real meaning of the slogan 'New World Order'. The World Revolution is not actually about establishing a 'new form' (to cite Lenin) of 'world order', but rather about the 'Order' which is to be imposed by the New World - by which is meant the United States, which is the military enforcement arm of The Order. The word 'Order' is a tell-tale clue as to what is really happening. All secret societies using 'The Order' belong to the Illuminati, which in turn is the primary manifestation of a shadowy 'Order of the Quest', dedicated philosophically to maximising 'human happiness' without God.

The Jesuits call themselves The Order. Opus Dei refers to itself as The Order. The Yale-based Skull and Bones is The Order. The even more reprobate Ordo Templi Ori-entis styles itself The Order. Scratch around for secret societies labelled 'The Order', and you will immediately see the significance of the word 'Order'. Jorg Lanz von Liebenfels, a former Cistercian monk who was excommunicated because of his homosexual activities and who flew an occult swastika above his castle in Austria in 1907, founded the Ordo Novi Templi ('Order of the New Temple') which specialised in merging Luciferian occultism with violent anti-Semitism. According to the Austrian Psychologist Wilhelm Daim, Lanz was the 'father' of National Socialism'[3]- an assessment which falls short of the reality that Fascism was developed many years earlier on behalf of the Illuminati by one of the 'two Karls' - Professor Karl Ritter, of

Frankfurt University (the other Karl, of course, being Karl Marx, who was briefed to elaborate the dialectical 'antithesis' to Fascism - Communism, first tried out in Paris). According to Scott Lively and Kevin Abrams, 'the "SS" symbol was originally used by Guido von List, a close associate of Lanz, who formed the Guido von List Society in Vienna in 1904. The Guido von List Society was accused of practicing a form of Hindu Tantrism which featured sexual perversion in its rituals. This form of sexual perversion was popularised in occult circles by a reprobate British intelligence officer named Aleister Crowley who, according to the Hitler biographer J. Sydney Jones, enjoyed "playing with black magic and little boys". List was accused of being the Aleister Crowley of Vienna. Like Lanz, List was an occultist; he wrote several books on the magick principles of rune letters (from which he chose the "SS" symbol). In 1908, von List "was unmasked as the leader of a blood brotherhood which went in for sexual perversion and substituted the swastika for the cross". The Nazis borrowed heavily from List's occult theories and research. List also formed an elitist occult priesthood called the Armanen Order, to which Hitler himself may have belonged'[4].

THE ILLUMINATI ALMOST ALWAYS OPERATE UNDER FALSE FLAGS

This further Order, like all the myriad other secret societies using the term 'Order', either overtly or covertly, to denote their status, belonged therefore to the system of synarchy (rule, or intended rule, by secret societies) developed by the revamped (Order of the) Illuminati - which was first exposed by the former Illuminist, Professor John Robison, of Edinburgh University, in his classic work 'Proofs of a Conspiracy' (1798). These innumerable secret societies represented, and represent today, cells and cadres of the Illuminati who, their Jesuit-trained Jewish 18th century re-founder, Professor Adam Weishaupt, decreed, must always operate under false flags, so that official opposition to and penetration of the Illuminati is permanently frustrated. Working to instructions from the Rothschild Family, Weishaupt 'devised', Professor Robison explained, 'an ingenious vehicle for world conquest - a secret Order - which would prove immensely attractive to other mentally superior beings of a similar frame of mind. He called it the Illuminati Order, and grafted it, at selected points, onto Freemasonry - like a fungus'. Freemasonry was to be the primary host for this parasitical secret globalist organisation. 'The Order of the Illuminati' - promoting 'free-thinking' and every abomination from self-murder (suicide) to abortion and paedophilia on the basis of the motto of 'Do as Thou Wilt' later promulgated by Crowley, one of its blackest offspring - 'appears as an accessory to Freemasonry'[5].

Freemasonry was selected for this task by Weishaupt because of its established system of Lodges, its initiations by secret ritual, and its structure designed to entice and indoctrinate successive generations of dupes into and through its ranks. Once enticed into this nexus, those rising up the initiation ladder in and beyond the three basic 'Blue Degrees', where the exploited Masonic masses congregate, are exposed to occultic and demoniac activities and accordingly open themselves up to infestation or even to possession by evil spirits. As taught by the Jesuits - among whom Weishaupt, though of Jewish extraction, was educated - all members of The Order, and of its sub-Orders, would spy on each other in perpetuity.

Certain 18th century German Masonic Lodges, Robison reiterated, 'were the nursery or preparation-school for another Order of Masons, who called themselves the Illuminated, and... the express aim of this Order was to abolish Christianity, and overturn all civil Government.... The Order was said to abjure Christianity.... Sensual pleasures were restored to the rank they held in the Epicurean philosophy. Self-murder (suicide) was justified on Stoical principles'. Abortion was to be encouraged, given the sexual licence secretly advocated by The Order.

And all manner of subtle, gross deception devices, 'inventions of evil things' [Romans, Chapter 1, verse 30], abominations and scamming and entrapment techniques, with which students of the oppressive intelligence communities are only too familiar these days, were to be developed. One of Weishaupt's closest associates, criminal court Judge Zwack (Weishaupt's Illuminati correspondent 'Cato'), laid these plans out in a document dated 1778, cited by Professor Robison. They included a proposal for the establishment of wife-swapping, woman-sharing and prostitution arrangements, controlled secretly by Illuminati Brothers:

'It will be of great service, and procure us both much information and money, and will suit charmingly the taste of many of our truest members, who are lovers of the [female] sex'. And given that the essence of Illuminism is dialectical double-mindedness, not least to maximise confusion among the 'profane', 'it should consist of two classes, the virtuous, and the freer hearted (i.e. those who fly out of the common tract of prudish manners); they must not know of each other, and must be under the direction of men, but without knowing it. Proper books must be put into their hands, and such (but secretly) as are flattering to their passions'.

'INVENTORS OF EVIL THINGS' [ROMANS, CHAPTER 1, VERSE 30]

Professor Robison's account of Zwack's revealing report continued: 'There are, in the same handwriting, descriptions of a strong box, which, if forced open, shall blow up and destroy its contents; several receipts for procuring abortion; a composition which blinds or kills when [it is] squirted in the face; a sheet, containing a receipt for a sympathetic ink; tea for procuring abortion (Herbae quoe habent qual-itatem deleteriam); a method for filling a bed-chamber with pestilential vapours; how to take off impressions of seals, so as to use them afterwards as seals (forgery); a collection of some hundreds of such impressions, with a list of their owners, princes, noblemen, clergymen, merchants, etc; a receipt ad excitandum furorem uterinum; a manuscript entitled 'Better than Horus'. It was afterwards printed and distributed at Leipzig Fair, and is an attack and bitter satire on all religion... also a dissertation on suicide. N.B. His sister-in-law threw herself from the top of a tower. There was also a set of portraits, or characters, of eighty-five (loose) ladies in Munich; with recommendations of some of them for members of a Lodge of Sister Illuminatae; also injunctions to all the Superiors to learn to write with both hands; and that they should use more than one cipher'[6]. In this description we can see the ancestors of familiar contemporary intelligence sector abominations.

'In the Illuminised German Lodges, death was declared [to be] an eternal sleep; patriotism and loyalty were called narrow-minded prejudices, and incompatible with universal [fake, cold] benevolence; while continual declamations were made on liberty and equality as the inalienable rights of men. The baneful influence of accumulated property was declared an insurmountable obstacle to the happiness of any nation'... and... 'Nothing was so frequently discoursed of as the propriety of employing, for a good purpose, the means which the wicked employed for evil purposes; and it was taught, that the preponderance of good in the ultimate result consecrated every mean employed [the end justifies the means]; and that wisdom and virtue consisted in properly determining this balance. This appeared big with danger; because it appeared that nothing would be scrupled at, if we could make it appear that The Order could derive advantage from it, because the great object of The Order was held as superior to every consideration. They concluded by saying that the method of education' [in accordance with Luciferian Jesuit principles] 'made them all spies on each other, and on all around them'[7].

The crucial modus operandi of The Order of the Illuminati - a 'superior' secret society in its own right which has over 1.1 million members, bound by Satan, in the United States alone* - has been, ever since its re-founding and 'upgrading' by Weishaupt in Germany, which remains the delegated seat of the Illuminati today -to surround rulers and power-brokers with members of The Order so that 'the profane' - that is to say, those of us of independent mind who, by the Grace of God, have been bypassed by these evil manipulators, to the detriment no doubt of our own careers and prosperity - can never access high places or occupy positions of real authority and power. If, by some accident, any such individual should reach high office and his or her true orientation is unmasked, he or she is targeted for destruction. As Robison explained this methodology (in his late 18th century context):

'The authority of the ruling powers is represented as of inferior moral weight to that of The Order. [Weishaupt taught that] "These powers are despots when they do not conduct themselves by [The Order's] principles; and it is therefore our duty to surround them [rulers] with its [The Order's] members, so that the profane may have no access to them'. This means that those who seek power or possess political ambition but whose souls have not yet been sold to Satan (The Illuminati), have no chance of ever wielding it - making of course a complete nonsense of 'democracy' and 'freedom' which are words that the Illuminati use as slogans to bamboozle the hoi polloi, whom of course they fundamentally despise. Yes, they tend to despise ordinary people indeed - despite all their falsely self-righteous bravado about 'the Brotherhood of Man' (meaning the Brotherhood of Men, i.e., 'the chosen', namely the members of Illuminati secret societies and of Illuminati-penetrated and -controlled Freemasonry).

---

* According to Cisco Wheeler, a former Illuminati mind-control programmer, at least ten million people have been programmed as mind-controlled slaves using Himmlerian and Tavistock Institute-derived trauma-based mind-control programmes with codenames such as MONARCH and MK-ULTRA A more recently developed, non-trauma, electronic means of mind-control programming that emerged out of the Montauk Project (after its location on Long Island), may have entrapped millions more. Al Bielek, who was prominently instrumental in developing the Montauk Project, has stated that there may also be as many as ten million victims of Montauk-style mind-control programming worldwide, with the majority living in the United States. Bielek is also on record as having revealed that there are covert Montauk Programming 'Centers' in every important city in America. A list of alleged Illuminati programmers, including the late Pope, is given on pages 517-518 of the present work. What is usually referred to as 'public opinion' is really carefully crafted and scripted propaganda designed to elicit an intended behavioural response from the general public. Public opinion polls are taken specifically with the covert intention of gauging the public's acceptance of pre-planned Illuminati operations and projects. A strong showing in opinion polls tells the Illuminati manipulators that a given programming operation is 'taking', while a poor outcome tells the New Undlrworld Order manipulators that they need to recast or 'tweak', the programming until the desired response is achieved. While the general thrust and content of a given burst of controlled propaganda is decided by the London-based Tavistock Institute, according to sources, implementation of the propaganda in the United States is handled by more than 200 controlled 'think tanks' such as the CIA's RAND Corporation and the Brookings Institution, which are overseen and directed by the leading New World Order control organisation in the United States, the Stanford Research Institute (SRI), located at Menlo Park, CA The Author, who has visited the United States frequently every year since 1977, has never - repeat, NEVER - encountered a single 'think tank', lobbying organisation or specialised media outlet that is not controlled in some manner, with an instrumental axe to grind. This grim state of affairs has been exacerbated in recent years by the emergence of more than 300 controlled intelligence Information Warfare websites which exist to spread disinformation, propagate confusion and divert attention from questionable or downright evil official policies, so that no-one can fathom what is happening.

And as Professor Robison concluded, citing Weishaupt himself again: "'Thus we are able most powerfully to promote [The Order's] interests. If any person is more disposed to listen to Princes than to The Order, he is not fit for it, and must rise no higher. We must do our utmost to procure the advancement of Illu-minati into all important civil offices'"[8].

This objective has long since been attained - so that the 'democratic system' has become a plaything of The Order of the Illuminati, which has hidden behind the 'conspiracy theory' lie for so long that contemporary exposures such as this book have evidently come as a bleak surprise to its crazed leadership. As is well known, anyone who ventures into this undergrowth is immediately excoriated variously as a 'nutcase', a 'maverick' (the word routinely used by brainwashed British journalists to describe colleagues such as this Author who don't share their 'slides'[9] - that is, any prefabricated, sterile views they may hold), or a else 'conspiracy theorist'. According to this fatuous perception, there is no such thing as a conspiracy. In denigrating all conspiracies as fantasies by definition, so that further enquiry is thereby precluded, the Uluminati have successfully hidden their own mammoth conspiracy which is of proportions without historical precedent, from view: or so they foolishly imagine.

Yet Lenin, one of the Illuminati's most notoriously influential agents, explicitly wrote that the World Revolution is a conspiracy. Specifically in 'What is to be Done?'in 'Burning Questions of Our Movement'[10], V. I. Lenin expounded, with his usual nit-picking language pedantry: '...In form, such a strong revolutionary organisation... may also be described as a "conspiratorial" organisation, because the French word "conspiration" is the equivalent of the Russian word "zavogor" ("conspiracy"), and such an organisation must have the utmost secrecy'.

This definitively puts paid to the untutored, knee-jerk 'conspiracy theorist' response of the ignorant, the perverse and those with empty heads who prefer the life of the ostrich, to all who seek to expose these serially evil conspirators and their accursed secret societies, machinations and lies, which are responsible, thanks to the Uluminati's hegemony within intelligence communities, for the deteriorating mess we're in today. The 'conspiracy theory' jibe is the most effective lie of all.

INTELLIGENCE COMMUNITY HABOURS KEY ELEMENTS OF THE AGENTUR

Yes, intelligence officers hold all the key posts in the West, or control and encompass about those who occupy them - in conformity with the Jesuitical methodology extrapolated by Adam Weishaupt and his synarchy successors. The Uluminati have successfully done their utmost to procure the advancement of members of their vast agentur 'into all important civil offices'. In one letter to a co-conspirator, dated 6th February 1788, Weishaupt wrote that 'in particular, every person' (in, or a candidate for, The Order) 'shall be made a spy on another and on all around him. Nothing can escape our sight [so that] the trustworthy alone will be admitted to a participation of the whole maxims and political constitution of The Order. In a Council of such members we shall labour at the contrivance of means to drive by degrees the enemies of reason and of humanity out of the world, and to establish a peculiar morality and religion fitted for the great Society of mankind'[11] which of course the Illuminati 'elite' lust without ceasing to control.

Specific echoes of this form of idolatry of control, which requires the Illumi-nati conspirators and their agentur to reorder every facet of our existence in vain pursuit of their own security, appeared in the Communist literature. For instance, a Soviet tome dating from 1934 contained the following statement, the shorter-term context being the underlying fear that the Soviet system might be undermined from within: 'The socialist society will be forced to apply the most resolute measures for a long time (including the liquidation of people who are especially dangerous to the socialist system) against people who are harmful and deliberately destructive to socialist production, i.e. those who seek to undermine the socialist state and to re-establish the capitalist system'[12]. A generation later, the following warning that all must be brought to think alike, appeared in a compendium of Soviet political thought: 'Under Communism, public opinion will become a mighty force, capable of bringing to reason those individuals who might not want to follow Communist customs and rules of behaviour in the community'[13].

The Soviet literature also inadvertently revealed the Illuminati's global false culture (mind-mapping) offensive, as for instance in this passage dating from the mid-1960s: 'Boundless possibilities are opened up under Communism for the cultural advancement of mankind.... The cultures of different peoples, national in form, will be increasingly imbued with the same Communist content. Their drawing together on this basis will provide a mighty stimulus to the mutual enrichment and development of national cultures and in the long run will lead to the formation of a single, deeply international culture that will be truly the [Godless] culture of all mankind'[14].

'POLITICAL CORRECTNESS': SUBSTITUTING 'SLIDES' FOR ENQUIRY

Hence, it is not hard to trace the Illuminati origins of the contemporary scourge of 'political correctness', which is a mind-control mechanism to substitute 'slides' for original thought and enquiry, on the assumption that this will ensure over time that subservient populations become putty in the hands of the manipulators. As a 'beneficial add-on', the Illuminati anticipated that mind-controlled agentur operatives would in due course rise to the top of the pile - a notable example being the young leader of the British Conservative Party (as of 2006), David Cameron, whose mental-mapping and prior sensitivity training has been so extreme that almost his entire verbal output consists exclusively of vapid, prefabricated ideological 'slides'.

In crucial respects, the present work is spiritual, because what we will be examining here are the very 'principalities and powers' that wage war against the Way, the Truth and the Life - the Word of Jesus Christ, who is their sole enemy. Foolishly, these people imagine that they can and will destroy Christianity - which can never happen, given Christ's assurances to us that 'Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world' [Matthew, Chapter 28, verse 20] and 'Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall not pass away' [Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 35] - knowing that much of the formal fabric represented by the manmade Christian denominations is putrid, soggy and rotten, especially the Vatican (and its corrupt daughter churches) which, with the ascendancy of the refounder of the modern mafia, Giuseppe Mazzini, and the establishment of the sovereign Vatican mini-state, became one of two primary political organising centres of the Illuminati's World

Revolution from 1870 onwards. Mazzini's 'partner' was the occultist mass murderer and American Civil War criminal, Albert Pike, with whom Mazzini 'divided powers', leaving Pike to concentrate on his gobbldegook, magick, the elaboration of Scottish Rite rituals, fake mythology and initiation ceremonies, to invoke spirits, and to plan three great catastrophes. The first two of these materialised in the formats of the First and Second World Wars, and the third is unfolding 'as we speak', setting the Jews against Islam for the 'final' Luciferian conflagration. Pike developed these demonic plans, probably under Satanic influence, at a mansion that he built for himself located in Little Rock, the headquarters today of the Rose Law Firm with which which Mrs Hillary Clinton (codename 'Queen Melusina') is associated. And, as Weishaupt wrote to his correspondent: 'By this plan we shall direct all mankind. In this manner, and by the simplest means, we shall set all in motion and in flames. The occupations must be so allotted and contrived, that we may, in secret, influence all political transactions'[15].

'NONE OF THIS MUST EVER COME OUT' - SCARED U.S. INTEL OFFICER

The niuminati require that their black intentions, driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer'[16], must remain hidden from all investigators, and from the curious, for all time. In the course of research for this book, the Author has been told by several US niuminati sources that 'none of this must ever come out'. Although this statement was made and repeated in the context of the Author's separate investigations into the Illuminati's hidden financial scamming operations, it was meant also to be relevant to the subject-matter of this book - which has, of course, necessarily relied heavily not only upon the Author's own research, but also upon the prior work of recognised authorities, including certain Masonic writers who have themselves revealed secrets of the Brotherhood. The warning that 'none of this must ever come ouf was first enunciated by Weishaupt himself, who wrote in a letter cited by Robison as follows:

'There must (a la Jesuite) not a single purpose ever come in sight that is ambiguous and that may betray our aims against religion and the state'.

'One must speak sometimes one way and sometimes another, but so as never to contradict ourselves, and so that, with respect to our true way of thinking, we may be impenetrable'[17].

This is the main underlying origin of the most nauseating characteristic of all dimensions of German-originated Illuminati operations and of all agentur members - their double-mindedness. With certain exceptions, such as Ordo Templi Orientis, which does not even bother to present a 'benevolent' facade, all Illuminati open and / or secret societies present an outward, beneficial and benevolent face for public consumption, while masking of course their hidden evil purposes. The open, friendly facade (the Vatican is known as the Open Friendly Society) is the cynical deception device to divert public attention from the real purposes of the organisation's existence. Often it is not hard to identify the underlying nefarious dimension - as is the case, for instance, with the massive networking and mind-mapping operation run out of what was the Office of the (former) UK Deputy Prime Minister, John Prescott, calling itself 'Common Purpose'. Neither word used in this title is defined, of course, because if the true objectives of this subversive mind-control nexus were known, it would fail. Its hidden objective, masked behind a facade of 'sensible'-sounding Aesopian jargon, is to develop a cadre of brainwashed apparatchiks in every key control-sector of British society, in order to minimise, over time, opposition from the lower government, banking, industrial and other structures to the subversive policies being implemented by the Fabian revolutionary British Government. Under the controlled Tony Blair, its entire focus was/is to fulfil the requirements of secret German strategy manipulated through penetrations of the intelligence services - controlled by the German 'Black' intelligence organisation based in Dachau known as DVD (Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst).

Professor Robison wrote further that when a candidate for Illuminated status 'is drawn out of the general mass of Free Masons' to become Illuminatus Minor, he is required to sign a document which includes the following binding oath:

'I bind myself to perpetual silence and unshaken loyalty and submission to The Order, in the persons of my Superiors; here making a faithful and complete surrender of my private judgment, my own will, and every narrow-minded [as defined exclusively by the Illuminati, of course] employment of my power and influence... I will conduct myself as required by The Order.... I pledge myself to account the good of The Order as my own, and am ready to serve it with my fortune, my honour, and my blood. The friends and enemies of The Order shall be my friends and enemies...'[18].

GOVERNANCE IN THE TIGHT GRIP OF DARK ACTORS PLAYING GAMES

In other words, governance, not least via the tight control exercised on high office-holders by the deeply penetrated intelligence communities, is in the hands of a self-appointed sect of very dark operatives whose will has been forfeited and bound to a Luciferian force. By definition, therefore, none of these people can ever respond to the so-called Will of the People - hence the emptiness of their verbiage - since they are bound by an agenda set by the Brotherhood, which serves its own interests rather than those of the general population, and which seeks global hegemony and control.

And the dreadful reality is that the United States is the 'enforcement arm' of The Order, which is to be imposed by the New World. That this is the case is revealed by study of works by the 33rd Degree Mason and occultist Manly P. Hall, who identified Sir Francis Bacon as the most influential transmission mechanism of the Rosicrucian paganism from which Illuminism is descended, the origins of which have been traced to 14th century Germany. Having concluded that the 'Old World' - contemptuously referred to by present-day US Illuminists as 'Old Europe' - was not 'ready' to adopt the pagan 'Ancient Mysteries' for which 'Do as Thou Wilt' is an accurate proxy, Bacon set about promoting the idea that it was to be in the New World that his pagan 'Ancient Mysteries' prescriptions would triumph. Yet it was only in the 1920s that the United States adopted the insignia of The Order of the Illuminati on the most widely used US banknote, the $1.00 bill - reproducing the Luciferian, occultic image which appears on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States.

That the reverse of the Great Seal displays the insignia of the Illuminati is a fact of which most Americans, to this day, are ignorant. The insignia was adopted by Weishaupt when he founded The Order of the Illuminati on the 1st May (= the

Druid pagan feast of 'Beltane') in 1776. It is that event that is memorialised by the inscription in Roman numerals MDCCLXXVI at the base of the pyramid on the insignia - not the date of the signing of the Declaration of Independence, as is commonly but erroneously supposed.

The hideous all-seeing eye, which is to be found in all occult 'religions', is also the symbol of the spy system that Weishaupt established under the subtitle of 'Insinuating Brethren' to guard the 'secret' of The Order - namely the intention of destroying Christianity and of establishing a global dictatorship - and to terrorise the population into resigned acceptance of rule by the synarchy (precisely as is happening in the United States and Britain). The Illuminati criminals lust after global control so that they can be protected from exposure and punishment.

INSIGNIA OF THE ILLUMINATI USED EVERY DAY BY ALL AMERICANS

This Illuminati secret service 'enjoyed' its first sadistic workout during the Reign of Terror of the French Revolution. Subsequent elaborations of that abomination included of course the bloodbath and Reign of Terror that accompanied and followed the Russian Revolution, the Nazi Reign of Terror and industrialised murderous abominations inflicted against Jews and others in central Europe, Stalin's earlier and continuing bloodbaths, and subsequent abominations including US atrocities in Japan (Hiroshima and Nagasaki) and Vietnam, US and British abominations in the former Yugoslavia and Iraq, the genocides in Cambodia, Ruanda, Zimbabwe and elsewhere, and all wars of the 'enforcement arm' of the Illuminati.

Given that they use the insignia of the Illuminati displayed so provocatively on the $1.00 bill in their everyday transactions, Americans prove the conspirators' point that they can 'get away with anything' - or so they believe. Despite frequent travelling in the United States since 1977, the Author has never encountered any protest against the manifestly provocative display of this Illuminati symbol on the most widely used American banknote. Nor has the Author ever encountered an American who understood that the words ANNUIT COEPTIS on the insignia can mean 'Our Enterprise' (Our Conspiracy) - a phrase used by President G. W. Bush in 2005 when he referred to 'our vast intelligence enterprise', a slip of the tongue which clearly confirmed his knowledge (as a controlled operative himself, with many handlers) that the implementing structures of the conspiracy are integrated within, and control, the US intelligence community, which in turn controls the US Presidency and all other key institutions and structures. The phrase below, NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM, meaning the 'new secular' (not social) 'order', proclaims the focus of the conspiracy. The insignia acquired Masonic significance ONLY after the merger of Weishaupt's Order of the Illuminati with The Order of Freemasonry at the Congress of Wilhelmsbad in 1782.

The ardent Illuminist Thomas Jefferson, together with Benjamin Franklin and John Adams (an ancestor of the Roosevelts), proposed the use of the Illuminati insignia on the reverse of Great Seal, to Congress, which adopted it on 10th June 1782. On adoption of the Constitution, Congress decreed, by an Act of 15th September 1789, that the insignia should be retained on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States. The obverse image was first applied to the left of the reverse of the $1.00 bill by Presidential decision, when Roosevelt launched his 'New Deal' in 1933[19], coinciding with Hitler's 'coup d'etat by instalments' operation.

It is contended by some analysts that Franklin, Adams and Jefferson were not aware of the evil purposes of the Illuminati. The Author does not agree. It is very evident that the American Revolution represented an Illuminati putsch - as is perfectly clear, not least, from the routine excoriation of George III that one hears in the United States to this day. After all, George III was a ruler who was refusing to 'cooperate' with the Illuminati. In any case, the perception that the American Founding Fathers were ignorant of the Illuminati's nefarious plans is based upon a misunderstanding of the base nature of the Illuminati agentur, which, as is reiterated elsewhere in this book, is driven by the Janus doctrine of wearing two faces, one of which is hidden. Thus, it would have been perfectly logical for Franklin, Adams, Jefferson et al to have carried out and sponsored an infinite number of good works, while simultaneously espousing nefarious Illuminati activities and strategies.

In addition to integrating internal and external espionage, obsessive secrecy, blood oaths and opportunities for blackmail into The Order's modus operandi, to ensuring the perpetual education of fresh Illuminati cadres drawn from the ranks of the Masonic Blue Degrees, constructively insinuating and installing members of their vast agentur into high places or into the entourage of those occupying positions of power, and more recently ensuring that illuminised, geomasonic, controlled intelligence officers occupy the most important state and international positions, the Illuminati further seek always to ensure that they have scope to select evil people - individuals with gross secret blemishes, and especially paedophiles - for preference within their dark conspiracy (although this practice is not universally applied).

WHY PAEDOPHILIA IS SO COMMONPLACE AT THE HIGHEST LEVELS

The reason that paedophilia is especially preferred as a weakness 'qualifying' such a candidate for high office, can only be explained in spiritual terms, as follows. Jesus used violent language against those who corrupt, degrade or harm little children, innocents in whom dwells the Holy Spirit: for, as He also taught us, the human person is the temple of the Holy Spirit. Specifically, Christ declared that 'whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea' [Matthew, Chapter 18, verse 6]. [And the reason that Masonry is the key vehicle for Luciferian abominations is the little-observed one that, prior to the invention of 'Speculative Masonry', Masons were engaged in building temples (cathedrals) made of stone - an 'unnecessary' activity spiritually, since the temple of the Holy Spirit is the human person]. Given that this is what all who corrupt children and young people deserve, and given that the human person is the temple of the Holy Spirit ('for behold, the kingdom of God is within you' [Luke, Chapter 17, verse 21]), it follows that there can be nothing worse than to subvert and corrupt ('offend' in Jesus' gentle speech) children. In Matthew, Chapter 12, verses 31-32, Jesus warns: 'Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come'.

Since children in general are innocents in whom dwells the Holy Spirit, it is plainly the case that corruption of children, in whatever form, represents blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. And since Satan seeks through his seething powers to maximise the potential for confusion, destruction and chaos, we need not be surprised at the prevalence and high incidence of paedophilia in high places - of which instances could be cited applicable to both the United States and Britain. Those who corrupt children cannot be forgiven; and, as they are not atheists ('for even the devils tremble, and believe'), they know that they are lost. They have no hope.

For most of the time, these people are in denial about this desperate state of affairs; but at night, or when they are alone, or when confronted with exposure, they are all terrified. It has been specifically revealed by a defector from the Illumin-ati that these people are 'all unhappy', and wish that they had never been sucked into the hellish world of the Illuminati. A few may manage against all the odds to develop the strength of character to burst out from what binds them, but they can only do this through repentance and faith in Jesus Christ: there is no other way.

Those who have blasphemed against the Holy Spirit, knowing that they are on their way to perdition, seek, therefore, to take as many members of humanity down to hell with them as they can, on the ludicrous working assumption that they will be less lonely in the state of permanent torment that awaits them. They are not atheists. And since they are in this state, they remain obedient instruments of Lucifer, and do his bidding, because they know they have no hope. It follows, finally, that it makes 'sense' for Satan to entice as many ambitious people into the hell of paedophilia as possible, since the ranks of the Illuminati are thereby swelled, and implementation of Satan's lust for global hegemony is promoted accordingly.

The single product of Luciferians is death - spiritual and physical death for themselves, and as many deaths of others as they may acquire opportunities to inflict. In April 2006, 'The Times' (London) published a brief review of 'Laura Bush, an Intimate Portrait of the First Lady', by Ronald Kessler, a former Capitol Hill staffer who allegedly served the interests, in the back rooms of the Legislative Branch, of those members of the Illuminati who successfully sought to ensure that the use of aspartame would be approved. This substance induces seizures, and is believed to be responsible for the rapid increase in Alzheimer's and autism (Alzheimer's in turn serving the interests of the insurance scamming dimension of the Illuminati, based primarily in Indianapolis - since the more patients who spend their final years afflicted by Alzheimer's', the more wills can he malevolently modified, the more estates can be plundered and the more life assurance policies can be stolen and scammed).

In hot temperatures, aspartame undergoes a chemical reaction, becoming formaldehyde - explaining the phenomenon of Gulf War Syndrome. The vast supplies of Coca Cola containing aspartame that were delivered for consumption by the troops in the Middle East lay for weeks on the tarmac in temperatures of up to 140 degrees Fahrenheit. The Chief Executive Officer of Merck, the manufacturers of aspartame, at the relevant time, was Donald Rumsfeld. Merck later acquired Monsanto, suppliers of the ingredients for aspartame[20].

THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES AND BLOODLUST

According to "The Times" review of Kessler's book, Mrs Laura Bush 'gives him the "greasy eyeball over a flippant or inconsiderate remark or when he failed to show the right kind of courtesy or attention to someone", in the words of their friend Donald Ensenat. 'She doesn't need to verbalise with him. It registers". When Mr Bush stated that he wanted Osama Bin Laden (a.k.a. the CIA operative and asset 'Tim Osman') "dead or alive", she responded by saying: 'Bushie, you gonna git 'im?" He took the point, telling friends: "She didn't want to see me become too bellicose, react with bloodlust"'[21].

Bloodlust? Where exactly did the 43rd President of the United States get that idea from? On 19th March 2003, as the first news of the attack on Iraq came through, the President was caught on the internal White House video camera punching his right fist into the air, exclaiming: 'Feels good, feels good'. Is this man possessed? Unfortunately, it has been reliably alleged that, at a certain pre-presidential stage of his existence, George W Bush Jr. was indeed present at an occult ceremony in the course of which an unknown number of persons lost their lives.

Death is nothing to the Illuminati. As alluded to elsewhere, the Author himself received no less than seven death threats in the course of researching this study. When people fall out of line with the Illuminati, they may be at risk. Certain pop singers, such as Jimmy Hendrix, were intelligent enough, and insufficiently drugged, to comprehend the Illuminati's permissive society strategy, and in particular its exploitation of the 'music' industry to propagate the sterile, Luciferian idolatries of mind-control, sex and death. When Hendrix started to insert lyrics in his 'songs' that revealed his understanding of what was going on, he was liquidated. The Illuminati are particularly focused on attacking the children of their targets, especially if they are twins (they have an occultic fixation on twins, and on twin boys aged 11).

'UNHAPPY' COWARDS AND BULLIES

These people are capable of anything. The two most heinous Illuminati regimes to date have of course been Stalin's USSR, and Nazi Germany (sample atrocities of which are displayed on page 658). But by far the worse Illuminati regime ever to have been developed in human history may be emerging 'as we speak'. It is the United States. As one European friend of the Author, long resident in the United States, has explained: 'The Nazi/Illuminati dictatorship that will emerge in the United States will be by far the worst that mankind has ever perpetrated'. This study seeks to help delay or even to neutralise any such Luciferian outcome.

Just as these evil people are all 'unhappy', it should also be borne in mind that they are cowards and bullies. The Author discovered this personally when, having delivered a lecture on Soviet strategy at the East Side Conservative Club in the Plaza Hotel in New York in December 1995, he mistakenly allowed a certain Soviet, who was an emigre from Stalin's entourage, to ask the first question. This operative strode in his dirty raincoat to the lectern, elbowed the Author out of the way, and proceeded for 12 minutes to denounce everything that the Author had said. When finally the Author regained the lectern, he uttered three sentences, which he has never been able to recall. It appeared that the words were not his. Jesus said: 'But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye; for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost' [Mark, Chapter 13, verse 11]. Certainly, the effect was that the Soviet operative visibly shrank into his chair as the whole hall erupted in a standing ovation lasting for several minutes.

But the words were not those of the Author.

One should never deliberately set out to to confront evil. But when confronted with evil - which is different - standing up to these cowards and bullies from a rock-solid position of integrity, causes them to fall back. Consider what happened when Jesus confronted the band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees brandishing weapons after Judas had betrayed Him:

'When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place; for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples. Judas then, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons. Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them. As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground'. [John, Chapter 18, verses 1-6].

NONE CAN WITHSTAND THE POWER OF JESUS CHRIST

Quite simply, the power of Jesus Christ is greater by far than all the destructive power of these deluded contemporary disciples of Satan: 'And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth' [Matthew, Chapter 28, verse 18]. This means that if, in His Name, we refuse to be bamboozled by their lies, by their manipulations of the truth, by the games they play with our minds, by the scams and deceptions they perpetrate, by their false promises and blandishments, and by their sterile posturings, threats and empty words, they will he unable to achieve their objectives. In this connection, it should be stressed that one of their most effective weapons is our own sense of their overwhelmingly oppressive power and the consequent sense of helplessness that it is intended to impose upon us. This psychological intimidation should be resisted. Because although they believe they are winning, that is a delusion. They are all headed for perdition; and they know it.

The American Republic can be saved. It can be wrested from the hands of these amoral, serial criminalists. The 'white hats' in the intelligence community, and their colleagues and supporters throughout the US structures, can perfectly well summon up the collective will to terminate the reign of these people, to face them down, and to cease relying exclusively upon the pro bono activism of private foreign friends of the United States, for the progress that needs to be made.

The Author believes in 'the power of one'. Even one person, properly guided and motivated, can achieve decisive results, as the Author has been able to do in connection with certain key developments not addressed (for security reasons) in this study. Despondency is unwarranted, as these people are all deeply discontented - and in their rational moments, would wish that the aspirations for salvation expressed here could be realised, and their hellish existence terminated.

For, as indicated, the end that these Luciferians face, and their sole product, is death. That they are cowards was illustrated by the following account of the final moments in the life of one of the flluminati's most odious creations, Stalin's Interior Ministry chief, Lavrentii Beria, who, as this investigation reveals, was the German Abwehr's highest-level long-range penetration agent in Moscow. The account is taken from a description of Beria's execution attributed to the KGB officer Yuri Ivanovich Nosenko, who may have been present at it, or even Beria's executioner:

'Nosenko claimed that he was one of the agents who had arrested Lavrentii Pavlovich Beria, the man who had been Stalin's chief executioner during the mass exterminations of the prewar purges. As head of the People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs (NKVD), the predecessor of the KGB, Beria had masterminded perhaps the most-feared secret police agency of its day. Thousands, maybe millions, died at his orders. But, according to Nosenko, when given a pistol and told to shoot himself, Beria cried uncontrollably, clutching at the boots of those who tried, in vain, to convince him to "do the honourable thing". Beria was finally shot by one of his captors'[22].

AFTER THEY DELIVER DEATH, THEY BECOME POSSESSED

This is a gruesome illustration of the fundamental cowardice of these people. When it comes to their own demise, they tend to see death in a different light -having all their possessed lives 'believed' in the Satanic lie of reincarnation (taught by The Order). There was, however, no sign in the spring of 2006 that the leader of the enforcement arm of the Illuminati had entertained any second thoughts over the ease with which he had presided to date over the delivery of death. After Lady Thatcher had long been forced out of office, the Author met her at a birthday party held, appropriately enough, at the Tower of London. It was 13 years after the sinking of the Argentine warship, the Belgrano, which she had ordered, with substantial loss of life. Instead of the blue eyes that the Author had noticed when he had first been invited to advise her in March 1979, he saw before him a woman whose eyes were blazing jet black. Several Members of Parliament separately reported to the Author that the identical phenomenon had been observed, from time to time, with respect to the eyes of the subsequent British Prime Minister, Tony Blair.

Two American women reported separately to this Author in the early 1990s that they had noticed with alarm, while in his presence at events in Washington, that the physical temperature surrounding MVD General Eduard Shevardnadze, the former Soviet dictator of Georgia and usurper of power in Tbilisi in March 1992, known as Stalin II, was freezing cold. It is rare that one observes operatives who are 'perfectly possessed', but certain candidates for this description at the highest levels of the Bush Jr. Administration might spring to mind. Those who are perfectly possessed maintain an identical expression on their faces and usually never display any emotion at all. As will be explained in this study, this may be because they have progressed far along the path laid out for them during their Skull and Bones rituals or their initiations into the Fellow Craft Degree in Scottish Rite Freemasonry.

The state of mind and soul to which they are required, at this lowest level, to begin to aspire and to reach and surpass, was described by the late 33rd Degree Mason Manly P. Hall, as follows. The candidate must achieve 'the transmutation of personal affection into impersonal compassion.... Personalities cannot bind the true Second Degree member, for having raised one point of the compasses, he now realises that all personal manifestations are governed by impersonal principles'.

'At this point the candidate consecrates the five senses to the study of human problems with the unfolding sense centers as the motive; for he realises that the five senses are keys, the proper application of which will give him material for spiritual transmutation'[23].

The integrated instruction to 'study human problems' dispassionately, and to discard all personal affection in favour of 'impersonal compassion' (a contradiction in terms) both procures that the candidate/adept abandons any inclination to 'seek after the Lord thy God', and ensures that he discards his humanity, exchanging human warmth for a disconnected, dispassionate, cold-hearted, illusory presumption that he is well on the way towards 'transmutation' (illumination). By contrast, the reality is that we are all, each one of us, born with the knowledge of God, and drawn to seek after Him because we are His creation (as is obvious to anyone who has observed a newborn baby at close quarters). Our lifelong, agreeable task is to 'seek the Lord, if haply [we] might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being;... For we are also his offspring' [Paul, in Acts, Chapter 17, verses 27-28].

ERSATZ 'HUMAN PROBLEMS': SUBSTITUTES FOR TRUE SPIRITUALITY

The Illuminati Order's maddened offensive against True Christianity presupposes (erroneously) that it can be completely destroyed. But the presumption and instruction to substitute 'impersonal compassion' and the 'study of human problems' for personal affection and our search for God, has necessitated the creation of false, 'collective' concerns and issues which are presented for public consumption as 'human problems' that are intended to replace our search for God (labelled 'religion', a word that the Author finds somewhat obstructive and tries not to employ). These 'global issues' - the dubious, fabricated 'lines' about 'global warming', 'poverty in Africa', 'poverty eradication', Third World debt (an issue taken up for some reason by certain ignorant and uncomprehendingly bewildered Church of England clerics), 'bird 'flu', AIDS, and so forth - are contrived specifically as substitutes for personal spirituality.

Issues such as 'poverty in Africa' are also designed to provide fresh scamming opportunities - so that those gullible people attending 'pop' concerts in city parks having paid premium prices to sit in crammed conditions in vast numbers to listen to tawdry 'music' noise on the pretext of 'helping alleviate poverty in Africa', have no real idea what happened to their money. In summary, they exchange good money, with no accountability, for a 'warm, fuzzy feeling' that they have contributed to the alleviation of one of the problems facing humanity - without undergoing any spiritual transformation in relation to God whatsoever. In the meantime, they have been fleeced, since the lack of accountability ensures that the huge sums raised by these means are routinely stolen. These events are just standard Illuminati scamming operations.

In the 1930s and into the 1960s, an agitprop organisation calling itself 'The British-Israel Movement' flourished among Christian denominations in Britain and the United States. It claimed by convoluted false historical deduction that the Anglo-Saxons are descended from the wandering Israelites, and campaigned for a Union of Britain with Canada and the United States under British supremacy, along Rosicrucian lines. The organisation successfully raised very large sums of money ostensibly for Israel. The first page of an official booklet, devoted to this subject, quoted from 'The Fourth Book of Kings' - which of course does not exist.

This was an early example of what has become the familiar practice of elaborating and spinning fairy tales from Scripture, on the sound assumption that only a small minority of the population reads the Holy Bible and would accordingly be equipped to expose the lies being disseminated. The example du jour as this book was being finalised was of course 'The Da Vinci Code', exploiting the base lies that Jesus recovered from His Crucifixion and married Mary Magdalene.

Other authors have written authoritatively on the vast interlocking spider's web of elitist criminal conspirators. The upper levels of the tightly compartmentalised Illuminati structural pyramid of secret societies feature planning committees of which the public has little or no knowledge. These upper levels embrace secretive conclaves, of which the following have been identified by several authorities, led by the British intelligence officer Dr John Coleman, who published an analysis in 1992 entitled 'Conspirators' Hierarchy: The Story of The Committee of 300': The Council of Three, The Council of Five, The Council of Seven, The Council of Nine, The Council of 13, The Council of 33, The Grand Druid Council, The Committee of 300 (also called 'The Olympians'), and the Committee of 500. The considerable 'underground' literature on this subject is usually poorly annotated, and exposes appearing on the Internet are, with a handful of honourable exceptions, typically, and often deliberately, devoid of notes and references. Moreover such sources often provide uncorroborated information without addressing the question: 'Why?', which is always the most important.

THE AUTHOR'S APPROACH IS INSTINCTIVE

Rather than rely primarily on such sources, the Author has approached this vast subject instinctively, on the basis of his experience of strategic deception and intelligence community lies and scamming behaviour. There are undoubtedly many gaps in what follows; but this detailed attempt at exposing the Luciferian conspiracy, which binds the leaderships of all the G-8 countries and, these days, many of the others, is presented in good faith for use as a weapon against these evil people by all who know a little of these matters, and no doubt by many who know much more than the Author does. It should be recalled that whenever a leader previously selected by the Illuminati proves not to be a 'team player' and to diverge from what is required of them, they are 'taken out' - prominent examples being President Kennedy, President Ali Bhutto (Pakistan), Aldo Moro (in Italy), and of course Mrs Thatcher, who belatedly realised that the European Union was a trap. She probably never understood that it is, in fact, the manifestation of a long-range Abwehr strategic deception designed to decapitate the hated British wartime victors once and for all. The European Union forms one blade of the DVD's long-range 'scissors strategy', the other blade of which is the Abwehr's fifth-column penetration of the key US structures [see page XXXIII] - another way of summarising German long-range strategy to defeat the 'main enemy' to that shown in the Conclusion on page 629. The US Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) chief, Admiral Boorda - described by an impeccable source as a great patriot - and the former Director of Central Intelligence, William Colby, were both 'taken out' because they had balked at, or were on the verge of exposing, operations or strategies of the Illuminati.

SOME CLOSING CONSIDERATIONS

The Author has been separately engaged in detailed research into how the New Underworld Order is being refinanced, at the intergovernmental level, where 'funny money' is conjured out of thin air by means of the sophisticated exploitation of the international fiat money financial system. At this level, billions are converted into trillions in the space of, say 18 months. Incorporation of this research would have resulted in the expansion of this presentation to well over 1200 pages; and since the research was ongoing as this book was being finalised, it has necessarily had to be excluded. Suffice it to say that a prolific money-generating engine has been perfected to finance the New Underworld Order. This Author substitutes 'Underworld' for 'World' so as to signal that these operations have been hijacked by the Illuminati - which makes it hard for patriotic intelligence officers who believe in the nation state, and who have to work in this environment, to ensure that the Rule of Law is upheld. Those who cross the Illuminati criminals, are liable to suffer false witness, false arrest, false imprisonment, false house arrest, the illegal confiscation of their assets, and other abominations - harsh penalties that the corrupt intelligence communities reserve specially for the punishment of their own colleagues and employees who refuse, for instance, to agree to US Presidents stealing billions from trustors' accounts. The Author is referring here to specific information in his possession.

The quotations from Scripture in this book are taken from the King James Version of the Holy Bible throughout. None of the other versions can be relied upon, since a subsidiary project of the Illuminati is to procure the repeated rewriting of Scripture until the Word of God is obliterated, or rendered of no value, and replaced by that of Lucifer - in accordance with a 'salami tactics' programme of constant textual 'renewal', contrary to warnings against tampering with Scripture that appear in both the Old and the New Testaments: 'The words of the Lord are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O Lord, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever' [Psalm 12, verses 6-7].

It is an interesting fact that three 'authors' of 'new versions' of the Holy Bible were struck dumb after their work had been completed. Two of them, the nineteenth century occultic spiritualists Westcott and Hort, changed the traditional Greek text which underlies the King James Version, in no less than 8,413 places - using the corrupt Vaticanus manuscript. For the definitive studies which show that the King James Version is true, and the only text to be trusted and which certainly conveys the Word of God in its total purity, the reader is directed to the classic studies of this subject published in the United States by Dr Gail Riplinger[25].

The Author is solely responsible for any errors and omissions in this work. ■

FOREWORD: Notes and references

1 John Buchan, The Thirty-Nine Steps', William Blackwood & Sons Ltd, Pan Books Ltd, London, 1979, page 11.
2. It may of course never be possible, in this murky context, to expose more than a fraction of the truth. But enough of it can be exposed to make the investigation worth while, to help dispel familiar illusions, and even to make the ruthless enemy think twice. The alternative would be to emulate a person whom the Author once knew who said that 'I like my head stuck in the sand, and I prefer to leave it there'.
3 'Der Mann der Hitler die Ideen gab' ('The Man who gave Hitler his Ideas'), 1958, cited in the excellent study of Nazi homosexuality, The Pink Swastika: Homosexuality in the Nazi Party', by Scott Lively and Kevin Abrams, Founders Publishing Company, Box 20307, Keizer, OR 97307, USA, 1996, page 2. This is indispensable reading not least because it provides advance warning of the evil significance of the obviously deliberate homosexualisation of US and British political parties and institutions, including the military. For instance, elements of the partly brainwashed British military now routinely demand to know if new recruits are homosexual, not because this information can in any way assist the military to do its job efficiently, but because a mandated proportion of the military population 'must' be homosexual in order to 'reflect' the proportion of homosexuality in the population (which is well below 1% but is malevolently asserted by mind-mapped apparatchiksto be of the order of 10%).
4. The Pink Swastika', op. cit. (Note 3), page 3.
5. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Western Islands, Boston MA, 1967, pages 62-63.
6. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 79.
7. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 61.
8. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 74.
9. The US intelligence author and deprogrammer Fritz Springmeier has revealed, in a treatise entitled The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines', that most people these days are encumbered by built-in 'slides' which he revealed to be a CIA term for a conditioned type of response which dead-ends a person's thinking and terminates debate or examination of the topic at hand. For example, any mention of the word 'conspiracy' usually generates a 'slide' response, with many unknowingly brainwashed people dismissing out of hand, in a knee-jerk reaction, the very notion that such a phenomenon as a conspiracy could ever exist. See the Author's reference, in the main text, to the fact that Lenin, an Illuminati operative, himself specifically described the World Revolution as a conspiracy. By creating a 'slide' that presupposes that there is no such thing as a conspiracy, the conspirators think they are permanently protected from exposure.
10. V. I. Lenin, 'What is to be Done?', in 'Burning Questions of Our Movement', Volume 5, page 475, in 'Lenin on Language', Raduga Publishers, Moscow, 1983, page 162.
11. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 77.
12. 'Socialism or State Capitalism in the Soviet Union', M. Rezunov, 'Sovetskoe Gosudarstvo I Sotsialisticheskoe Obschchestvo'l'The Soviet State and Socialist Society'], Leningrad, 1934, pages 12-18.
13. 'In Search of Marxist Identity', essay published in 'Soviet Political Thought: An Anthology', selected, translated and edited by Michael Jaworskyi, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, MA, 1967, page 521.
14. 'In Search of Marxist Identity', in 'Soviet Political Thought: An Anthology', op. cit, page 523.
15. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 84.
16. 'When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mystery of his Craft [= witchcraft]. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply [this] energy.... The hand that slays must lift the fallen, while the lips given to cursing must be taught to pray. The heart that hates must learn the mystery of compassion'. Many P. Hall, 33rd Degree Mason, in The Lost Keys of Freemasonry or The Secret of Hiram Abiff', Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., Richmond, VA, originally published in 1923; 1976.
17. John Robison, Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit., page 85.
18. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 71.
19. 'Pawns in the Game', by William Guy Carr, CPA Book Publisher, P.O. Box 596, Boring, OR 97009-0596, USA, page XIII.
20. Private information to the Author from a US intelligence source.
21. The Times', London, 5th April 2006, page 39: 'The Glower behind the Throne', by Tom Baldwin.
22. 'Crusade: Undercover against the Mafia & KGB', Chapter 12, Yuri Ivanovich Nosenko, KGB, page 100; text provided to the Author on 21st March 1994 by a US intelligence source.
23. Manley P. Hall, The Lost keys of Freemasonry', op. cit, pages 51-52.
24. 'British-Israel: What is it?', originally published by Trumpet Press, Houston, Texas in 1938, page 1.
25. See for instance, Dr Gail Riplinger's short-form booklet, 'Which Bible is God's Word? Answers to Common Questions Concerning Modern Versions and Translations', Hearthstone Publishing, 1994; and 'New Age Bible Versions: An Exhaustive Documentation exposing the Message, Men and Manuscripts moving Mankind to the Antichrist's One World Religion', Dr Gail Riplinger, A.V. Publications Corporation, P.O. Box 280, Ararat, VA 24053, USA: ISBN 0-9635845-0-2. Telephone: 1-800 435 4535. ■

• Fact: The US Federal Government's secret research laboratory at Los Alamos has been digitising the Dead Sea Scrolls because they prescribe all the elements needed to coerce the population into acceptance of the New Underworld Order. Specifically, they prescribe the confiscation of all personal property, and the coming of false Messiahs. Their widespread dissemination is a direct attack upon the perfect Gospel of Jesus Christ. ■

THE ILLUMINATI RATS IN THE RIVER STYX

'PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS': INTERPRETING THE EVIDENCE

Since this book addresses the 'Works of Darkness' and exposes Dark Forces and 'Dark Actors Playing Games', the main hazard facing both Author and reader alike is how to disentangle the poisonous threads in order to arrive at a reliable overall strategic assessment of what is happening. Few analysts think strategically, especially in the intelligence communities - given compartmentalisation, the environment of lies and deception, and the breakup of national intelligence into competing groups manipulated by foreign powers.

The Author has been able to identify these powers, and which US intelligence cadres appear to be attached to, working for or manipulated by them, by analysing remarks uttered by such people when taken off guard. For instance, one US intelligence operative was caught staring that 'Britain will be left dangling', and insisting that Tony Blair, allegedly a corrupted asset of German/French 'Black' intelligence, would not be leaving office, in the face of widespread expectations to the contrary associated with UK corruption and murder investigations. A British Prime Minister is not protected for all time by a Secret Service, as is the case with US Presidents. From remarks such as these, and ample other evidence, cosidered in context, it has been possible to identify which ruthless competing cadres within the vast US intelligence community are linked to which malevolent foreign power. Hatred of the British is usually a reliable indication of a German (DVD) connection.

This Author has, in various private serial publications of which he is the Editor, exposed the existence of the Dachau-Based German 'Black' intelligence agency, DVD (Deutsche Verteidigungs (or Versicherungs) Dienst), located, of all places, at Dachau, near Munich. Exposure of this agency, successor of the Nazi Abwehr, was 'never supposed to happen'; and as a consequence, the entire postwar perspective has had to be revised. The Author was privileged to expose this organisation following the death of Sir Edward Heath, a long-term Abwehr agent, and the atrocities committed against British people and the UK infrastructure on 7th July 2005, which were allegedly ordered by President Chirac, Germany's co-conspirator, and monitored by GCHQ inter alia while the French President was in Gleneagles for a G-8 conference. It has since transpired that a fifth bomb was meant to have exploded in the Northern Line beneath the River Thames, and that, as a consequence, a sizeable proportion of the London Underground was to have been flooded - causing immense physical and psychological damage, murdering thousands of Londoners, and probably destabilising the whole world. This was being interpreted in intelligence circles as nothing less than an act of war - as were indeed the 9/11 atrocities, which have also been traced to Al-Qaeda, an operation of German 'Black' intelligence, DVD. In both Britain and the United States, these atrocities were facilitated by deep, long-term German Nazi Continuum penetrations. In the United States, the Fifth Column has resided since 1946 onwards primarily inside the CIA, and it is the German-linked cadres therein, led by the Frankfurt-based COREA group, which are predominantly behind the CIA's drug operations, and responsible for its comprehensive corruption - the term 'CIA' embracing here all the myriad other US intelligence services, including the National Security Agency (NSA), to which the CIA is supposedly subordinate. In the spring of 2006, it was the case that the NSA 'reported to' John Negroponte, the newly-installed US Director of National Intelligence (DNA), and that Negroponte allegedly 'reported to' George Bush Sr., who, over the years, has allegedly acquired control over at least $206 trillion (according to sensitive intelligence) of 'funny money' allegedly leveraged from the $4.0 billion amassed to finance the First Gulf War, the theft of assets arising from the collapse of Continental Illinois Bank, the exploitation of a Trust established by the late CIA Director of Central Intelligence, William Casey, and the massive looting operations carried out against the US Savings and Loan sector in the 1980s. George Bush Sr., alleged by British sources to be the actual head of the DVD, having succeeded Admiral Canaris in the late 1970s, also allegedly has German citizenship, which can be based on ethnicity. A Jacobin Illuminist named Busche is identified by Professor John Robison of Edinburgh in his classic expose of the Illuminati, published in 1798 [on page 78 of the Western Islands edition, Boston, MA, 1967: see Figure 75 on page 495 of this work]. German 'Black' intelligence specialises in heroin, while the parallel French and Spanish 'Black' intelligence organisations 'do cocaine'. Spain, which is awash with drugs, has been a staging post for alleged Bush Sr.-connected Latin American drug deliveries into European countries.

In the United Kingdom, German 'Black' intelligence has penetrated MI5, MI6 and GCHQ, via a UK 'Black' intelligence outfit labelled GO-2, which actually resides inside MI6. The Author has also begun to expose this entity, which 'reports' to DVD in Dachau. GO-2 is responsible for 'managing' two drug cartels, and is accordingly ultimately responsible, under the Prime Minister, Tony Blair, allegedly a tool of German/French intelligence, for deliberately distributing cocaine into British schools.

Both Britain and the United States have official structures which are divided against themselves, as a consequence of long-range foreign penetrations. It is understood that GCHQ, which 'reported to' GO-2, woke up to this dreadful situation upon monitoring the 'act of war' allegedly ordered by President Chirac for 7/7, alluded to above. It is also becoming clearer by the day that the following British Prime Ministers were (and/or are) controlled ultimately by the DVD: Macmillan, Wilson, Heath, and allegedly Tony Blair. In Germany itself, the DVD selects the Chancellor, and simply informs him or her of its activities. In other words, German 'Black' intelligence, which represents the Nazi Continuum, controls the Berlin Government and represents the custodian of continuing Nazi long-range strategy. After all, the 'Madrid Circular Letter', intercepted by the Allies in the early 1950s [see page 573] proclaimed that 'For us, the war never ended': Fur uns, der Krieg ist niemals vorbei.

It is clear from much of the evidence exposed in this book that the IUuminati provide German Nazi continuing strategic intelligence policymakers with long-range cover for their global control objectives. According to a high-level IUuminati source in the United States, the powers of 'Old Europe' are fighting for supremacy, and must be left to fight it out among themselves. This is one way of looking at the crisis. But it fails to explain the community of interests between the criminalist cadres of, for instance, the continuing Soviets (there was no discontinuity of Soviet strategy, either) and those of 'Black' Ops agencies run by the other Great Powers. In this rats' sewer flowing into the River Styx, all the Illuminati's stinking rats smell the same. ■

SOME PRINCIPAL THEMES OF THIS BOOK

CONCEPTS WITH WHICH THE NON-SPECIALIST MAY BE UNFAMILIAR

The New Underworld Order is driven by The (deranged) Order of the Illuminati, grafted onto Freemasonry - which it absorbed at the Congress of Wilhelmsbad in 1782 [see below] while retaining the outer structures of Speculative Masonry. The Illuminati rely for protection on their own label and their lie that there is no such thing as a conspiracy - having persuaded those whom Lenin called 'Useful Idiots' to assume that it is analysts like this Author who are deranged! But it is The Order which is mad - driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer' to believe its own lies such as that of the 'Orphic Egg' [opposite] and the mechanistic universe. ■

THE INSIGNIA OF THE ORDER OF THE ILLUMINATI

- THIS IS THE IMAGE ADOPTED BY THE GERMAN JEWISH EX-JESUIT ADAM WEISHAUPT WHEN HE 'REFOUNDED' THE ORDER OF THE ILLUMINATI ON 1ST MAY [THE PAGAN FEAST OF BELTANE] 1776. IT IS OF COURSE THE SAME IMAGE THAT APPEARS ON THE U.S. $1.0 BILLS - SO THAT MILLIONS OF AMERICANS ROUTINELY HANDLE THIS EMBLEM OF THE ILLUMINATI EVERY DAY.
- IT IS FOUND ON THE REVERSE OF THE GREAT SEAL OF THE UNITED STATES, ASSERTING THE GLOBAL TASK APPOINTED FOR AMERICA BY THE EUROPEAN ILLUMINATI - WHICH WAS THAT THE MEW WORLD' IS TO IMPOSE THE ORDER' UPON THE WHOLE OF HUMANITY - THE UNITED STATES BEING THE ORDER'S 'ENFORCEMENT ARM'. THE INSIGNIA ACQUIRED GEOMASONIC SIGNIFICANCE AFTER FREEMASONRY WAS MERGED WITH THE ORDER OF THE ILLUMINATI AT THE CONGRESS OF WILHELMSBAD, GERMANY, IN 1782, WHEN IT WAS DECREED THAT THE ILLUMINISTS WOULD SURREPTITIOUSLY 'PIGGYBACK' WITHIN THE GEOMASONIC STRUCTURES. U.S. ADMINISTRATIONS AND INTELLIGENCE CADRES ARE DECEITFULLY ENGAGED IN IMPLEMENTING THE AGENDA OF THE ILLUMINATI, RATHER THAN SERVING THE AMERICAN PEOPLE.

ANNUIT COEPTIS
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM

A CONTROLLABLE MECHANISTIC UNIVERSE

ILLUMINATI CONTROLLERS DESPISE HUMANITY AND BELIEVE THEY HAVE A UNIQUE DISPENSATION TO LIE TO THE PUBLIC AS A MATTER OF COURSE, AND TO MANIPULATE THE TWO 'OPPOSING' FORCES OF 'GOOD AND EVIL' (THESIS-ANTITHESIS OR 'PROBLEM-REACTION) TO ACHIEVE THEIR INTENDED 'SYNTHESIS': AND THEIR DELUSIONS ARE BASED UPON A MAD FAIRYTALE INVENTION CALLED THE ORPHIC EGG' In summary, the Illuminati have adopted / invented / co-opted a fantastic piece of nonsense to 'rationalise' their concept of creation, the universe and human existence. Specifically, reality arises from a so-called 'Orphic Egg' [see below] out of which, when cracked open, fly three 'phanes' - the Great Architect of the Universe itself (!!) and 'good' and 'evil'. Actually, Illuminists believe in neither, since their universe is mechanistic. Through progressive initiation, they purport to become entitled to order the affairs of the whole of humanity. Because the hoi polloi are ignorant, they are not entitled to 'special knowledge' and can be lied to indefinitely. These mad people have a solution for every human problem, which is why our corrupted Governments and the European Commission never stop legislating and intermeddling. But their efforts are cumulatively futile: for the literal meaning of the word 'Revolution' is 'going round and round in circles'. ■

The Ophic Egg is encircled by the Serpent - symbolic of the Devil, of course. This image, which openly acknowledges that this myth is an invention of Satan, is taken from 33rd Degree Mason Manly P. Hall's very rare Rosicrucian tome entitled 'Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy', published by H. S. Crocker & Co., 1928. The image appeared originally in Bryant's 'An Analysis of Ancient Mythology'. Manly Palmer Hall's caption reads:

THE ORPHIC EGG

The ancient symbol of the Orphic Mysteries was the serpent-entwined egg, which signified the Cosmos as encircled by the fiery Creative Spirit' [i.e., Satan]. The egg also represents the soul of the philosopher [sic]; the serpent, the Mysteries' [invocation of demons, magick, etc]. 'At the time of initiation the shell is broken and man emerges from the embryonic state of physical existence wherein he had remained through the foetal period of philosophic[al] regeneration'.

This explanation diverges from the actual myth [see the main text above], illustrating how these madmen invent 'lines' to suit the deception in hand. ■

PAGANISM ADAPTED = DECEPTION

PEOPLE CONFUSE ORGANISED RELIGION WITH TRUE CHRISTIANITY

Knee-jerk bias against Christianity is based upon the mistaken assumption that the churches represent the Truth of Jesus Christ. That this is mistaken is evident not least from the particular aberration elucidated immediately below:

ISIS, QUEEN OF HEAVEN

In 'Morals and Dogma', the Luciferian occultist Magus and consolidator of US Freemasonry Albert Pike, states that Isis, Queen of Heaven, describes herself as 'instructed by Mercury. No-one can destroy the laws which I have established. I am the eldest daughter of Saturn, the most ancient of the gods, I am the wife and sister of Osiris the King... Rejoice, O Egypt, land that gave me birth'. This image, contained in Manly P. Hall's Luciferian Rosicrucian tome [see page XXXI], is taken from 'Mozaize Historie der Hebreeuwse Kerk', an otherwise unidentified Dutch esoteric document. Below: Esoteric depiction of 'Die Gottesmutter', the Mother of God' (a contradiction in terms) by Albrecht Diirer. See Jeremiah, Chapter 44, 16-25, condemning worship of this goddess.

John Dee (1527-1608), Elizabeth I's astrologer and a member of the Anglican Church, supervised thinly veiled 'Goddess worship' of the Queen herself.

THE DIALECTICAL METHODOLOGY

THE DUAL-HEADED ILLUMINATI OPPONENT OF 'THE MAIN ENEMY'

The essence of Illuminism and of Freemasonry - because it has been comprehensively penetrated, taken over and serves as the host for The Order of the Illuminati - is double-mindedness, the very essence of deception and lies. The dialectical method reflects this central reality. Anyone who fails to discern this central truth will remain forever confused. Once we grasp this fact, the behaviour of the deranged manipulators exposed in this book becomes comprehensible, and we can never remain blinded and trapped for long by their serial lies and blandishments. A critical variant of the dialectical methodology is what can be called 'The Scissors Strategy', which is illustrated in simplified format below [and on page 629]. In this model, one hand holds the handles of the scissors, but there are two blades. The single hand is invisible to the general public (the 'Goyim', or 'Bourgeoisie'), who perceive solely the behaviour of the two blades. Since this book concludes that for all contemporary practical purposes the Illuminati originate and are controlled from Germany, and since this study shows that for German 'Black' intelligence (DVD) the Second World War 'never ended', the practical outcome is the offensive and stand-off shown below. ■

THE SCISSORS STRATEGY

THE HAND IN THE SCISSORS:
THE ILLUMINATI
COVER FOR GERMAN [DVD]
LONG-RANGE STRATEGY
EUROPEAN UNION COLLECTIVE
TARGETING BRITAIN: THE LONG-
RANGE DECEPTION STRATEGY
COORDINATED BY DVD, DACHAU,
ALLEGEDLY HEADED BY GEORGE
H.W. BUSCHE SR. [AS OF 2006].
THE 'MAIN ENEMY'
BRITAIN AND
THE UNITED STATES
MASSIVE LONG-TERM FIFTH COLUMN
PENETRATION OF U.S. STRUCTURES
BY GERMAN AGENTS AND AGENTS
OF INFLUENCE SUPERVISED BY THE
DVD, DACHAU, ALLEGEDLY HEADED
BY GEORGE H.W. BUSCHE SR., AS THE
SUCCESSOR TO ADMIRAL CANARIS,
TAKING OVER CONTROL IN 1976-78.

THE WORD OF GOD

' ... Filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit malignity; whisperers. Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful; Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are wormy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them '. Romans, Chapter 1, verses 29-32. AD 60.

' They know not neither will they understand; they walk on in darkness; all the foundations of the earth are out of course '. Psalm 82, verse 5.

' But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which, while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows'. 1 Timothy, Chapter 6, verses 9-10. AD 65.

' Now the works of the flesh are manifest which are these: Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft hatred, variance, emulations, uncleanness, wrath, strife, sed itions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like.... They which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance...; and they which are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts '. Galatians, Chapter 5, verses 19-24. AD 60.

' For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie'. Revelation, Chapter 22, verse 15. AD 96.

'Let both grow together [the tares, i.e. the weed darnel, which looks like wheat until it matures, whereupon it assumes a different aspect]; and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers. Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn '. [Jesus: the parable of the tares]. Matthew, Chapter 13, verse 30. AD 31 (or 27).

' He that is unjust let him be unjust still; and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still '. Revelation, Chapter 22, verse 11. AD 96.

' Then said he unto me, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? For they say, the Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth.... And behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord; and their faces toward the east and they worshipped the sun toward the east'. Ezekiel, Chapter 8, from verses 12 and 16. This is the first ever description of the Luciferian Masonic Lodge. BC 594.

' Flee out of the midst of Babylon; and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this is the time of the Lord's vengeance; he will render unto her a recompense. Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord's hand, that made all the earth drunken; the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed; howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed; forsake her, and let us go every one into his own country; for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up even to the skies '. Jeremiah, Chapter 51, verses 6-9. BC 595.

' And he answered and said, Babylon is fallen; and all the graven images of her gods he hath broken unto the ground'. Isaiah, Chapter 21, verse 9. BC 714.

'And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations chunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication '. Revelation, Chapter 14, verse 8. AD 96.

' If they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them '. Isaiah, Chapter 8, verse 20. AD 741.

' Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light '. Matthew, Chapter 11, verses 28-30. AD 31 (or 27).

' If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free *. John, Chapter 8, verses 31-32. [Verse 30: And as he spake these words, many believed on him']. See Chapter One, page 1 of this work, opposite -->

CHAPTER ONE

THE LANGLEY LIE

THE CENTRAL LIE MASQUERADING AS THE TRUTH

Visitors to the headquarters of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) at Langley, Virginia, are confronted with the following slogan:

'You shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free'.

This slogan, which is dishonestly intended to lead the observer to understand, contrary to the actualite, that the CIA deals in the truth, also encapsulates another lie.

The second lie hidden in the slogan exploits the cynical assumption that few in the modern world know Scripture. If they did, they would immediately be aware that this slogan is actually taken out of context from a glorious statement, given to us for our salvation, by Jesus Christ. The relevant text is to be found in the Gospel of John, Chapter 8, verses 31-32:

'Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, 'If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free'.

In other words, knowing the truth is explicitly conditional upon 'continuing in my word' - which means following the truth of Jesus Christ, who is the Way the Truth and the Life, i.e., walking in His Way. This truth is affirmed in John, Chapter 14, verse 6, where: 'Jesus saith unto him (Thomas): T am the way, the truth and the life: no man cometh to the Father, but by me'[1]. No worship of the Virgin Mary, no obsession with sublimated obscenities such as flagellation ('mortification of the body') as taught by that sinister intelligence organisation Opus Dei, no diversionary preoccupation with weeping statues or Black Madonnas (Sufism), no oppression by false 'New Age' religions, no adherence to any other 'faith' on the erroneous assumption of 'religious' equivalence, will procure the saving Grace of the Father, through the Holy Spirit. 'No man cometh to the Father, but by me'. True Christianity - and indeed access to the Truth - is exclusive, not inclusive. This naturally means that all diversionary 'religions', including Freemasonry with which the intelligence and some policymaking communities are infested, are absolutely incompatible with the Truth - that is, with the Way, the Truth and the Life. And because Freemasonry, the scaffolding of the Synagogue of Satan*, is in fact a gradualist introduction to Lucifer, the 'God of this World', it is particularly to be noted here, at the outset, that all forms of Masonry, which is witchcraft, are diversionary dead-ends, roadblocks erected by Satan to divert seekers after truth, from the Truth - leading those who indulge therein to perdition, being wholly incompatible with 'continuing in my Word' so that 'ye shall know the truth', allowing 'the truth to set you free'.

Indeed, the whole of the Truth is to be found clearly laid out by Jesus Christ in the Gospels; and those of a contrite, humble and tender heart are enjoined to read the

---

* See Footnote at the end of the Notes and References to Chapter 1: page 32.

Gospel of John to begin with, wherein he or she will find the certainty of the Way, the Truth and the Life. And the essence of the mystery of salvation is that, as Jesus Christ explains in John, Chapter 6, verse 65: 'No man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father'. So, when he or she, for instance, makes the crucial decision, having absorbed the above, to read the Gospel of John, that person is, by definition, thereby given the grace to do so 'of my Father'. The glory of spiritual salvation -through knowing the Truth that shall make us free - lies in the fact that the sum total of what is necessary to begin to claim it, is to make this one initial decision to seek the Truth where it lies, which has to come of our own free, unimpeded will.

The Truth which such a contrite, humble and tender heart finds in response to being thus called[2] has nothing to do with any 'truth' purveyed by man - let alone with the kind of 'truth' that the CIA purports, according to its deceitful slogan, to dispense. Apart from misrepresenting the words of Jesus by usurping them and taking them out of context, the slogan accordingly dispenses the lie that since the CIA deals in 'the truth', whatever it promulgates is 'the truth' - which by extension has the power to make Americans (and the rest of the world) 'free'.

But, as this book shows, the CIA and the vast US intelligence community as a whole - with which we have to be primarily concerned because of their global power, and because of their generational penetration by long-range German Abwehr/DVD and covert continuing Soviet agents and agents of influence - deal not in 'the truth' but in never-ending lies, or in lies, diversions and omissions mingled with truth, which amount to the same thing. For many of these people know little but deception as a way of life.

In fact the omission of pertinent information with an intention to mislead has been aptly described as the worst form of lie. Consequently, and logically, far from 'setting us free', the works of the US intelligence Establishment, given the immensity and arrogance of its power, are in the process of oppressing not only the American people, but also the whole world. The CIA's participation in the international drug trade, emulating the long since exposed drug offensive of the covert Soviet GRU-KGB against the West[3], is a scandal of millennial proportions, which goes unaddressed. In this respect, as in so many other dimensions, the United States, at this stage of the World Revolution, is rapidly 'converging'[4] towards the 'former' USSR[5]- 'convergence' being a primary objective of the World Revolution. The fact that, as will be demonstrated in this book, the CIA's global drug-trafficking operations are in fact a dimension of the operations of the Illuminati, in no way 'excuses' the US intelligence community from responsibility for the perpetration of this abomination.

U.S. INTELLIGENCE ADMITS IT HAS A 'HEART OF DARKNESS'

As if to anticipate this book, a so-called 'former' US intelligence operative has openly acknowledged that US intelligence is engaged in Works of Darkness. Of course, we all know this - the whole world, since Abu Ghraib, now knows it, although even today few have any grasp of the scale of the reprobate US intelligence community's involvement in such works; but for a 'former' US intelligence operative to admit as much, is certainly a most interesting development. It would be comforting to believe that the remark was made in a contrite spirit of humility and tenderness towards those whom the intelligence community has wronged. No such luck, unfortunately.

The 'former' operative's admission surfaced in an article by the veteran US investigative reporter (with the closest of intelligence community links), Seymour

Hersh, in the aftermath of the atrocities committed in Abu Ghraib, with which the US intelligence-linked corporations CACI and Titan 'were' associated (and for which they were largely responsible). Hersh was describing what he had learned about a 'Special-Access Program' (SAP), or clandestine 'Black' operation subject to the US Defense Department's most stringent level of security, which was itself 'blown' by Hersh's revelations in The New Yorker[6]. Under the SAP, Hersh reported, 'commandos crossed borders without visas and could interrogate terrorism suspects deemed too important for transfer to the military's facilities at Guantanamo, Cuba'. US commandos, operatives and other specialists 'carried out instant interrogations - using force if necessary -at secret CIA detention centers scattered all around the world'. The (resulting) intelligence 'would be relayed to the SAP command center in the Pentagon in real time, and sifted for those pieces of information critical to the 'White', or overt, world' [see pages 6 and 8 et seq. for the significance of this differentiation from the 'Black', or 'covert' world]. This is the paragraph in which the unprecedented official admission in question was made:

'Fewer than two hundred operatives and officials, including [Defense Secretary Donald] Rumsfeld and General Richard Myers, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, were "completely read into the program", the former[7] intelligence official said. The goal was to keep the operation protected. "We're not going to read more people than necessary into our heart of darkness", he said. "The rules are: 'Grab whom you must. Do what you want'".

For any US intelligence official to acknowledge publicly that his or her intelligence community has a 'heart of darkness' is probably unprecedented. All national intelligence communities, being essentially ocultically-oriented secret societies riddled with Freemasonry, have 'hearts of darkness'; but they scarcely ever admit this central reality, other than via symbology, such as MI5's revealingly esoteric triangle-symbol shown in Figure 1 below. Two possible explanations for this open admission of collective demonic possession, which emerged in the aftermath of the maelstrom of reve-

Figure 1: THE ILLUMINATI EMBLEM OF MI5
WHICH TELLS US EVERYTHING WE NEED TO KNOW

I
EⅡR
U.
K.
M
INTELLIGENCE
V

With growing lay knowledge and understanding of the transnational depredations of occultic Masonry, many organisations have adopted the practice of hiding their Freemasonic and Illuminati connections and pedigrees - although it is deliberately 'allowed', in what they name the 'Age of Aquarius', that esoteric orientations may be displayed. The international oil companies have always displayed their geomasonic linkages through corporate symbology (pyramids, sunbursts, circles, etc). Britain's MI5 intelligence service uses this occultic pyramid symbol, which is almost 100% geomasonic. In the top sub-triangle, the 'I', supposedly for Intelligence, is symbolic of the all-seeing eye of Set (Satan) or Lucifer, which is also shown. In the left sub-triangle, the 'M', which the layman is supposed to assume stands for 'Military', further alludes to Molech, the Caananite god-idol to which the children of Israel sacrificed their unwanted children. In the right-hand sub-triangle, the 'V stands not only for the 'perfect number' 5, but also, in part, for the state of so-called 'perfect knowledge' to which Freemasons aspire as they 'progress' towards total Illumination (actual possession by Lucifer, or Set).

lations and reports surrounding the Satanic abuse perpetrated inter alia by those 'cutout' US intelligence operatives at the notorious Abu Ghraib detention facility in the Baghdad area and elsewhere, sprang to mind.

One possibility was that the official intelligence 'owners' of the 'heart of darkness' are so Satanised and indifferent to the sufferings they inflict that they couldn't care less any more, especially now that they have been 'rumbled', what the rest of the world thinks. Such an attitude would be consistent with the arrogant protestation, heard repeatedly from some Americans, that it doesn't matter what conclusions the rest of the world has reached concerning the dangers that this revolutionary United States now presents to humanity: what matters is that America should be feared.

The second possibility is that the intelligence source who briefed Hersh was somewhat ashamed of the blackness of the CIA/DIA's collective 'heart of darkness', and was dismayed by the appalling international publicity as well as by the fact that this SAP had gone so badly wrong: 'We've never had a case where a Special-Access Program went sour - and this goes back to the Cold War'.

He complained that the intelligence officer to whom Mr Rumsfeld had delegated the SAP, Stephen Cambone, an operative with an allegedly murky past, had decided to bring the SAP rules (i.e., the absence of all residual morality) into the prisons; in other words, the regular military personnel operating in the prisons were told that what went on there now formed part of the covert operation, where no civilised rules applied.

By the time the official's 'heart of darkness' admission appeared in print, the whole world had been reminded that the United States' regard for human life and dignity was as depraved as that of the Hitler and Stalin regimes; that power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely; and that the United States' protestations that it was engaged in 'spreading democracy' in a region where it is non-existent, was indeed, as had always been widely assumed, a disreputably fraudulent prospectus. This was the case not least because the United States is itself in the habit of rigging its own electoral process, as the extensively documented fiddling of the November 2004 General Election demonstrated [see Addendum 1, page 662].

The shamefacedness of the Bush II Administration on this score was repeatedly in evidence following that election, as top officials from the President down reiterated the official 'line' that the United States is the guardian angel of that wondrous gift called 'democracy'. For example, on 16th June 2005, President G. W Bush denounced the Iranian election as a sham designed to ensure that power was to be retained in the hands of an undemocratic, repressive elite. 'The Iranian people', Mr Bush said, 'deserve a genuinely democratic system in which elections are honest, and in which their leaders answer to them instead of the other way around'. This hypocritical statement - one of many of its kind coming from a US President who, whatever may have been thought of the heavily Soviet-penetrated US Democratic Party, is shown to have presided over a political machine that stole both the election of 2004 and the preceding election - was typical of lies perpetrated by the head of a regime engaged in the exercise of 'democratism' (a Soviet-era word meaning 'the creation and maintenance of the illusion of democracy') who, by ingrained habit, chooses to be unable and unwilling to distinguish between truth and falsehood. For Iranians, who are no fools, to be told by a US President who claimed to be sustaining 'freedom' while openly depriving the American people of it, and who bragged about democracy after having usurped power which is supposed to flow from the people, was further proof of the accuracy of their slogan describing the United States as 'the Great Satan'. Mr Bush then tried to distinguish between the Iranian regime and the people of Iran by hurriedly elaborating that 'today, the Iranian regime denies' the Iranian people their rights. 'It brutalises its people and denies their liberty'. And Washington wondered why the Iranian people are so manifestly equivocal about American official professions of 'friendship' towards them, as opposed to their regime. It is because the level of hypocrisy pouring out of Washington's intelligence-controlled regime stinks in their nostrils.

Take the President's assertion on that occasion that the Iranian regime 'brutalises' its people', a true statement that is overwhelmingly supported by the historical record. The US regime does likewise. For instance, from late 2004 onwards, US journalists have been sent to jail for refusing to divulge their sources to the authorities, which is exactly what happens in brutalised states like, say, Zimbabwe. In 2005, Andrew Stephenson, who worked tirelessly pro bono publico to expose the fraudulence of the 2004 General Election [see Appendix 1], made the serious mistake of seeking employment in Washington DC as a lobbyist, having exhausted his financial resources. On the plane back to his home city, Seattle, he was taken violently ill, and was later diagnosed with cancer of the pancreas. After patriotic Americans rallied round and raised, in extremely short order, no less than $70,000 to finance a very serious surgical operation at Johns Hopkins Hospital, carried out by the nation's top surgeon in this discipline, attempts were made by one of the US Government's several hyperactive disinformation and discrediting teams to spread lies to the effect that Stephenson had raised the funds for his own benefit, i.e. fraudulently. When activists exposed these lies and their perpetrators, the hospital authorities professed to have been unable to locate the $70,000, which had been despatched to them by Fedex (it was suddenly 'found' lying unopened in an office). After Stephenson's return to Seattle, another branch of the evil US intelligence disinformation team (based in Toronto) intervened unilaterally with the Seattle authorities, who were to have provided Andy Stephenson with urgently necessary chemotherapy, so that his insurance cover was suddenly cancelled. On 9th June, a very senior US intelligence official (one of the few with any integrity) informed this Author that the virus that will have caused Stephenson's cancer was most likely injected via syringe into a toothpaste tube in his hotel room: 'That's how they do it', he added. A few days later, a colleague (of this Author) who was attending a political reception, raised the subject of the Government's repressive policies with a person known to be an intelligence officer as well as a political operator. He 'snapped his fingers', whereupon two operatives approached our friend and entered into a conversation, dealing with certain issues that our friend had raised. One of these, a Transportation Security Agency (TSA) operative, said gratuitously, on the subject of poisonings, that 'a lot of these are happening' [sic] - meaning that the US Government is engaged, 'as we speak', in the standard Illuminist practice of poisoning its enemies.

It therefore, self-evidently 'ill behoves' the President of the United States to lecture the Iranians (and other foreigners whose governments are equally the servants of Lucifer) on the abominations of their governments, and the repressive policies against their own people that they perpetrate, when the US Government is itself engaged in the same kind of Satanic behaviour while professing that it is the guardian angel of freedom and democracy. No wonder such official hypocrisy stinks in the nostrils of members of the human race who have not yet succumbed to the orchestrated dumbing-down processes being perpetrated against them by their own Illuminised governments.

Manifestly such behaviour, and any association with it or condoning of it, is incompatible with the Way, the Truth and the Life. A certain kindly American intelligence officer known to the Author has touchingly protested that he loves the Lord first, and his country next - which, being interpreted, and in the context in which this statement was made - meant that he saw no incompatibility between his lifelong association with the CIA, and thus with its 'heart of darkness', and his 'commitment' to Jesus Christ. Unfortunately, such a convenient compromise is out of the question for those who profess to believe, and therefore hope for salvation. In Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 10, verse 21, Paul warns:

'Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils; ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils'.

A choice has to be made. Shall I remain associated with this intelligence organisation and its now openly self-acknowledged 'heart of darkness'? Or shall I renounce, once and for all, the 'Works of Darkness', so that I shall, by the Grace of the Holy Sprit, be available to be saved?

'Let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall' [I Corinthians Chapter 10, verse 12]. And in Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians, Chapter 5, verse 11, Paul commands:

'And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them...'... which is what this work humbly seeks, to the very best of the Author's ability and resources, to do. Note crucially that Paul describes all Works of Darkness as 'unfruitful' - something of an understatement, perhaps, given that, since the Devil is the author of confusion, all Works of Darkness (and therefore all intelligence operations and activity) are characterised by endless strife, contentiousness, bitterness, false witness, deception, lies and generally reprobate behaviour. The Author has himself been a witness to, and a victim of, of this routine pattern of official delinquency, in the course of research inter alia for this book.

Indeed, in the intelligence community context, such institutionalised delinquency in the name of national security soon becomes quite obvious to the targeted observer who is not sitting on his or her brains. One reason for this is that the same techniques are always redeployed, since the Devil knows of no new tricks. The preoccupations, for instance, of the US intelligence community typically revolve around launching fresh deception or scamming operations in order to cover up past 'botches' - operations which have gone badly wrong and have unravelled. Indeed it is characteristic of the CIA and its internal subsidiaries and rivals that they specialise in operations that go wrong. So there is a constant imperative to develop fresh initiatives to cover up previous botches, or to provide 'diversionary services'. This behaviour is akin to that of a gambler at a casino who has lost more than he possesses and who seeks ever more desperately to recoup his losses by taking risks against unbeatable odds, in the pathetic hope that he will 'get lucky' and will not only recoup all his losses, but will earn a profit, too. Of course, this never happens.

Hersh's article on the circumstances surrounding Abu Ghraib made it crystal clear that what the 'former' intelligence official who admitted that the CIA (et al) has 'a heart of darkness' was most concerned about was that the secret SAP or 'Black' operation, which he said at one point 'is still active', would never be exposed (even though, as indicated, he was himself helping to expose it). The 'Black' programme had to be kept in the darkness and not revealed to the 'White' world, according to an intelligence 'consultant' also interviewed by Hersh - not only for security reasons, but also 'because the process is unpleasant. It's like making sausage: you like the result but you don't want to know how it was made'. A European version of this syndrome reads: 'When you put your shoes outside your hotel room at night for polishing, you don't want or need to know who cleaned them'.

'Also', the 'former' intelligence officer told Hersh, 'you don't want the Iraqi public and the Arab world, to know' (what utterly depraved barbarians we are - Ed.). 'Remember, we went to Iraq to democratise the Middle East [sic!]. The last thing you want to do is let the Arab world know how you treat Arab males in prison'.

But so 'botched' was this accursed Work of Darkness, that not just the Arab world, but every corner of the globe, today knows how certain brutalised Americans treat Arab males in prison: with total indifference to suffering, with depraved sexual lust and with Nazi-like contempt. Reports of imprecise British atrocities perpetrated in Iraq appear to have been disseminated in part so as to take the spotlight off the aberrations of the offending American personnel, although it appears that the collapse of morality which underlies the US abominations has infected the British as well. This behaviour is consistent with the indoctrination format espoused and perpetrated by the Illuminati, which seeks to procure that selected victims, operatives and imple-menters of its nefarious plans must be brought to inflict pain without flinching, to kill if necessary without ever looking back afterwards, and to maximise the potential of the use of fire. In his last interview before his sudden death during an exorcism of a young girl in July 1999, the Author's late friend Fr Malachi Martin explicitly confirmed that Luciferians (who are worshippers of, and are possessed by, Lucifer) 'have all passed through [initiation] and that involves three things: the infliction of pain without flinching, the infliction of death without flinching, and the use of fire'.

It is no accident that, since Abu Ghraib and the less publicised parallel American atrocities were first exposed, the whole world has been gratuitously provided with an excuse to ignore the Geneva Conventions in the future - a development that will of course inevitably rebound upon US combatants in the years ahead. But from the perspective of the Illuminati, this coarsening of perceptions of what is acceptable, serves their objective of desensitising humanity to the terminal horrors to come - just as the reprobate, perverse contemporary obsession with teaching schoolchildren about the Holocaust, death and murder (through Satanic videos and music, school plays and other teaching methods) serves the self-same Satanic purpose [See Addendum 2, page 675].

Meanwhile, of course, the US State Department's complaints about human rights abuses abroad, published in its annual Congressionally mandated compendium entitled Country Reports on Human Rights Practices (which covers almost every territory in the world with the singular exception of the United States itself), have lost all credibility. In summary, the primary message Washington has successfully delivered into every TV-owning and newspaper-reading household in the world is that, since 9/11, the end justifies the means, and the rule of international law has been consigned to the historical dustbin, even as the United States self-righteously professes otherwise.

This is the very essence of the perverted philosophy of the Sect of the Illuminati, [see Chapter 7] which the intelligence-controlled US Government serves. For, as John Robison, author of the first expose of the sect wrote, in his 'Proofs of a Conspiracy' [1798], the Illuminati espouse 'the propriety of employing, for a good purpose, the means which the wicked employ for evil purposes'[8]: The end justifies the means.

This is the common thread which 'illuminates' everything they do.

SEGREGATING THE 'BLACK' WORLD FROM THE 'WHITE' WORLD

What the 'former' US intelligence officer speaking to Seymour Hersh worried most about, then, was not that US CIA-linked and military personnel had been involved in serial atrocities, and that such behaviour continued unabated, but rather that a typical example of the US intelligence community's serial 'Works of Darkness' had surfaced into the 'White', or overt, world, also mentioned by this operative - that is, the 'normal' world which US intelligence officers typically look down upon because of their 'superior' knowledge and possession of 'secrets', and because they believe that they control the perceptions of the 'White' world from which they themselves originated but which they have come to despise.

Indeed, a senior CIA officer, lecturing on a 'spy cruise' off the US West Coast in the spring of 2003, took pride in the claim that US intelligence controls the mainstream media[9]. And it subsequently emerged, thanks to leaks from a TV studio, that there appears to be an intelligence cell attached to every US mainstream media newsroom[10] in the United States. This explains why thinking Americans rightly complain that the news fed to them is controlled. They know this instinctively, and they are right: Fox News is now regarded as the US Government's propaganda channel, and CNN was rapidly acquiring a similar reputation as this book was being finalised. For it is indeed the case that the intelligence community - which controls the US Government, as will be seen - necessarily, as a prerequisite for and as a corollary of doing so, also controls the dissemination of 'information', as is the case in the covert Soviet Union. Hence, the United States is 'converging' ever more comprehensively and dialectically towards the dark models of the covert 'former' Soviet Union and the Nazi Third Reich.

Why is it that abuses by the CIA and its 'protected' barons, its global scamming operations and its involvement in drug-trafficking on the pretext that this gives it an insight into the parallel covert ongoing Soviet drugs offensive, have been reported and scrutinised for decades, with not the slightest change in this monstrous organisation's behaviour being detectable? The Senate Committee on Intelligence headed by Senator Frank Church, of Idaho, in 1975, sifted through the CIA's abuses and dark operations over the preceding two decades, to zero effect. Afterwards, Senator Church was duly liquidated - a fate which has likewise been the lot of innumerable operatives associated with the nexus of serial US official criminality that is loosely labelled 'Iran-Contra'.

The multiple (and continuing) abuses committed, by design, by the CIA's 'cutouts' in Iraq (and of course in Afghanistan and elsewhere) are merely symptomatic of the pitch blackness of the CIA's 'heart of darkness', which will be illustrated in this book. And the likelihood of any change occurring appears to be non-existent. On 10th August 2004, President George W Bush, fresh from telling election gatherings about his faith in God, confirmed his nomination of a man with a reputation for possessing one of the CIA's darkest hearts of all - the eight-term Republican Congressman and fellow Yale graduate, Porter Goss, a 'former' CIA case officer with an allegedly murky past - as his choice for Director of Central Intelligence (DCI), following the earlier forced resignation under imprecise dark clouds of his predecessor, Mr George Tenet, a man whose code name reads both ways: spelt backwards, his name is unchanged. Such a name is ideal for an Illuminati operative, whose chief characteristic is that, by definition, he is double-minded in all that he thinks, schemes, says and does.

One intelligence analyst described Porter Goss, who was fired by Bush Jr. in 2006, as 'a former point man for assassinations, a former CIA agent, who left the CIA under clouded circumstances. He was a field agent, but was actually forced out because of a trail of bodies that got tagged to him, literally, all over the world'. None of these allegations were recycled when Goss suddenly 'resigned' in the spring of 2006.

Citing comments by Al Martin (pseudonym) - said to have 'intelligence connections' and to be a former 'contributor' to the President's Council of Economic Advisers - the source reported in that 'in 1983, Goss was allegedly involved in Iran-Contra profiteering with Jeb and Neil Bush and he was allegedly exposed' (according to this 'Al Martin') 'in his involvement in Neil Bush's alleged Destin Country Club development fraud - a fraud out of which he allegedly made $3 million illegally. He then became involved with Carlos Cardoen and Swissco Management, and the fraud that Swissco Management committed, not only in Florida, but throughout the United States, in those so-called illicit 'tax-swap deals'. You could compare it [Goss's selection by President Bush to head the CIA, albeit for less than two years] to the crime family where the soldier rises from the street to become the capo, having taken the hits over the years for his superiors in the organization'.

The source continued: 'Of course, unlike an organized crime family, the difference between the Administration and your average run-of-the-mill organized crime family is that the (present) Cabal controls not only the entire nation, but influences policy throughout the planet. They are above all laws and impervious to any action'. 'Al Martin' - who curiously appears to be protected from the consequences of some of his reported statements - was further quoted as saying that 'the Bush-Cheney regime must feel that it is a risk worth taking [appointing Goss] because they are now in de facto control of the mainstream media'. 'So, therefore, how much of Goss's past would be liable to be brought up?' at his US Senate confirmation hearings, and in the mainstream press? None of the relevant information, obviously[11]. And so it proved. Following Goss's departure, the services of the flawed military spy, General Mike Hayden, were solicited.

In 1986, Porter Goss's alleged involvement in the Destin Country Club fraud, the Swissco Management fraud, the Topsail Development fraud, the Destin Dome fraud, and various other frauds with which members of the Bush family were allegedly involved, was indeed revealed in The Washington Times. Yet, disgracefully, not a single reference to any of this background appeared, for instance, in the reports on Goss's nomination published in The Financial Times on 11th August 2004[12]. Of course not.

On the contrary, the British newspaper was more interested in the relish with which Mr Goss, as Chairman of the House of Representatives' Intelligence Oversight Committee, had criticised and clashed with the former Director of Central Intelligence (DCI), George Tenet, over complaints of inadequate clandestine human intelligence collection (HUMINT) - a debate which is nothing new, having persisted ever since the days when the subsequently murdered William Colby was the DCI. Like President Vladimir Putin, who is a Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) officer accustomed to using his 'KGB past' as cover, Porter Goss was allegedly a US military intelligence officer 'before' joining the CIA. His past alleged involvement in a trail of 'wet affairs' (assassinations) lends a sinister meaning to his observation, when still Chairman of the House Intelligence Committee, that 'we are being too namby-pamby about taking risks to get the good penetration of the hard targets in the denied areas'.

But it is precisely because this book inevitably has to address the 'Works of Darkness', and some of those who perpetrate and preside over them, that the Author considered it essential - in order for the reader to keep his or her bearings, and to be aware that the Author does not peer into the darkness for prurient, but rather for exposure, reasons - that it should begin with references to the Way, the Truth and the Life, namely the opposite of the darkness, access to which remains open to anyone who may decide, for his or her own salvation, to renounce all 'Works of Darkness', that is, to make the necessary choice. Indeed this opportunity is explicitly alluded to by Jesus Christ himself, in Luke, Chapter 6, verse 35, where He explains: 'But love ye your enemies, and do good... and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest; for He is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil'.

For this reason alone, this book will doubtless be considered highly subversive in certain quarters. That is not its intention. However it is unavoidable that the truth will irritate corrupted sensibilities and will threaten to destabilise lies, deception and disinformation. And it may come as a surprise to many that the Lord is even willing to accept the evil man and woman indulging in the kinds of abominations described in this book, who truly repents. The subversiveness of this book relates to the obvious reality that consorting with the Works of Darkness, whether within an intelligence community or not, is incompatible with the salvation uniquely offered by Jesus Christ.

Those US operatives who, like the disgraced Robert Hanssen, belong to Opus Dei, which is exposed for what it is in Chapter 6, and who console themselves with the false panacea of purgatory offered by the Catholic Church, are deluding themselves, as there is no such place: it is a self-serving diversionary invention that is devoid of all Scriptural content. [Note: Contrary to the official lie, the traitor against the United States, Robert Hanssen, is not held in solitary confinement sine die in a Colorado top security facility, in a dungeon with no natural light and only a computer as company, but is in fact today a free man - an example of how the US legal system is routinely abused in the interests of the US intelligence community to convey one impression for public consumption and to sustain the false appearance of the integrity of the system, whereas in practice the outcome is the opposite of the public perception].

Figure 2:

A REAGAN-GORBACHEV GEOMASONIC HANDSHAKE

The late President Ronald Reagan and 'former' President Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachev (whose German Jewish name is Orbach or Korbach), at their first meeting, held in Versoix, Switzerland, on 19th November 1985. In this old photograph. President Reagan is shown 'gripping' with the geomasonic Supreme Master Grip, with a pronounced 'Ma-Ha-Bone' ('Lion's Paw'). Gorbachev attempts the same, but Mr Reagan (who is in full control here) won't allow the same grip. This reveals that Ronald Reagan, a supremely powerful Luciferian, could demand (and maintain) 'the upper hand". The 'Ma-Ha-Bone' Real Grip of the Master Mason entails the grasping of the other's wrist as Reagan is doing, indicating who is the Boss. The Master Mason (or higher) firmly grasps the right hand of the fellow Mason. The thumbs of both the hands are interfaced. The first Mason (Reagan) presses the tips of all his fingers hard against the wrist of the fellow Geomason, where it unites with the hand. For further graphic instances of how the Illuminati-penetrated and -controlled geomasonic fraternity in public life signal their Masonic credentials to each other, see page 734. Mr Gorbachev has remained clandestine supremo of the KGB Continuum, concentrating on the subversion of the 'Main Enemy', Britain and the United States: 'working by other means' [Lenin]. ■

The intelligence community's concept of the 'White' world - which of course presupposes the existence of its own world of darkness, or 'Black' world, exposed in Seymour Hersh's cited article - was as revealing as the 'former' intelligence officer's actual acknowledgement that the CIA and the rest of the US intelligence community possesses a 'heart of darkness'. Because, if one stops to think about this, what was meant is that there is no 'whiteness' in the intelligence community at all. After all, if the outside is 'White' in the minds of US operatives, the inside has to be 'Black'; otherwise it would not be necessary to describe the 'overf outside world as 'White'.

By extension, for representatives from the 'White' world to complain about the pitch blackness of the 'Black', covert intelligence world, would seem, on the face of it, to be a waste of time - were it not for one critical factor. This is that representatives of the 'Black' world of corrupt, criminalised intelligence occupy supreme positions of power in the US 'White' world, precisely as they do in the 'former' Soviet Union. Almost every notable 'player' on the Washington scene is, or 'has been', a US intelligence officer. Scratch anyone you meet in these circles and you will soon discover an intelligence connection. The same applies to almost everyone one meets in the US capital area. And just about every Washington think-tank, institute, pressure group and lobbying organisation has intelligence connections - or else, like the Heritage Foundation, the Institute of Policy Studies, and the Institute of World Policy, serves its interests, or those of a particular compartmentalised fraction or sector thereof.

Indeed it has been the Author's experience over four decades that no US pressure group, think-tank or other seemingly worthy-sounding organisation turns out, upon investigation or on the basis of practical experience, to be the 'free-standing' organisation that it purports to be. Almost every such entity has an intelligence axe to grind. Apparently objective and sympathetic analysts operating websites or intensive email correspondence operations turn out with alarming frequency to be US intelligence

Figure 3:

CNN TV still of a devil face image in the 9/11 flames. CNN is now widely considered to have become little more than a propaganda arm of the US Government. So far it has not been possible to prove that this still was part of the Psy-Ops operation, like the far image: ☛

Courtesy: CNN

This 9/11 devil image was allegedly taken by Mark Phillips, a CIA Psy-Ops agent, and was submitted to the Associated Press, which is known to be close to authorities, at 8.59 a.m., and was time-stamped 9.13 am by AP. Mark Phillips is the CIA co-author of the lethal book *Trance Formation of America*, which 'exposes' mind-control atrocities perpetrated by secret US intelligence structures....

Courtesy: AP

officers or paid disinformation specialists - exposed when they themselves blow their own cover, which, being typically careless, they are very apt to do. After countless years of being deceived by these decoys, the Author and many of his concerned US friends have 'wised-up' to the comprehensive scope of the US intelligence community's penetration of its own society, which was already pervasive enough before the Department of Homeland Security, a.k.a. the emerging US Ministry of State Security, was given carte blanche to perpetrate acts such as the removal of people off the streets and to fly them in a special Boeing to unknown destinations. And since the US intelligence structures are themselves deeply penetrated and compromised, especially by covert and even overt Soviet, East German (STASI - i.e., deep cover DVD) and Israeli agents, it follows from these findings alone that the United States is far from being master of its own ultimate fate (as will be further and separately proven in this work).

A particularly alarming feature of the intelligence environment in the first decade of the 21st century, furthermore, is the ease with which the professional cameraderie that flourishes between national intelligence communities has 'legitimised' the apparent wholesale penetration of US intelligence, so that all concerned take this for granted.

INTELLIGENCE OPERATIVES IN HIGH PLACES

Bill Clinton is allegedly a CIA operative, as is his wife, Hillary (whose codename is 'Queen Melusina'). The codename for Ms. Condoleeza Rice is 'Velvet Mushroom'. According to a US intelligence operative and other sources, George W. Bush's Vice President, Richard Cheney was allegedly in charge of the CIA's notorious MK-ULTRA mind-bending and personality-alteration programme for some years. George Bush Sr., of course, was Director of Central Intelligence before becoming Vice President under President Reagan, and subsequently President. He had remained (at our press date) essentially the most important and powerful intelligence 'baron' in the United States ever since - emulating President Mikhail Gorbachev, who remains 'to this day' the ultimate boss of the covert Soviet KGB [information provided to the Author by a senior US intelligence source]. Ronald Reagan's Masonic pedigree, illustrated for instance by his tell-tale Ma-Ha-Bone handshake when greeting President Gorbachev [see Figure 2][13], suggests he will also have had intelligence connections: he was certainly a very senior Mason. Al Gore, Vice-President under President Clinton, and with family connections to Soviet figures, has allegedly amassed intelligence on key US intelligence officeholders as a means of procuring protection for himself and his family, having endured threats from intelligence cadres to one or more of his children (they do this to each other all the time: we are describing an inner chamber of hell here). President Ford, with enveloping intelligence connections and the 'highest' Mason ever to have occupied the Oval Office, is mentioned as engaging in depraved activities in a work (written by a CIA Psy-Ops operative, Mark Phillips, who was responsible for the 'devil in the smoke' picture taken on 9/11: Figure 3), which describes the extreme depredations of the intelligence community's psycho-manipulation programmes such as MK-ULTRA, over which, as noted, Vice-President Dick Cheney, with his special experience, allegedly presided[14]. President George W. Bush Jr. is known to have carried out intelligence missions working directly for his father, and to have managed certain Bin Laden family finances. Since it will be shown that George Bush Sr.'s (DVD) agenda is to accelerate implementation of the New (Under)world Order (N.U.O.) of the German Illuminati, President Bush II may have been meant to be a key implementer of the N.U.O., despite reported differences with his father. As the hand signals given at his Inauguration on the occult date of 20th January 2005 [Figure 4, below and Addendum 9, page 732] revealed, it is clear that he serves the interests of the Illuminati.

George Bush Sr.'s Vice-President, Dan Quayle, is a CIA operative who is now extensively engaged in global investment and 'hedge fund' activity through, inter alia, an investment fund called Cerberus Capital Management, which specialises in buying up near-bankrupt or failing enterprises in Asia and elsewhere [See Addendum 3, page 679]. Hedge funds buy up such assets because illicit funds need laundering, i.e. 'place-ment', more urgently than rate of return: indeed, the fundamental difference between any drug money flows and all normal flows-of-funds is that the drug money pipeline is endless and is always in urgent need of 'placement'. It is significant that Cerberus was the monstrous watchdog of Hades with 50 heads and a voice of bronze (that is to say, a voice like one who is possessed with devils) who guarded the hideous gate of the Kingdom of Hades in Greek mythology. Sometimes Cerberus had only three heads. Sometimes he bristled with serpents and his evil mouth dribbled black venom. Once a visitor had passed Hades' guard-dog, he could never re-emerge. So why on earth (or in hell) would anyone want to name a hedge fund after such a hellish underworld monster?

That question, obviously, is answered in general terms by reference to the aforementioned self-exposure of the CIA's heart of darkness. It is also interesting to recall that Huntington, Indiana, where Quayle grew up, was at one stage (and may still be) particularly notorious for its manifestations of wicca and Satanism. As will be shown inter alia in the chapter on the sect of the Illuminati, which controls US and other intelligence services, the proliferation of occultism is a primary dimension of the N.U.O.

This is why video games and other materials disseminated through chain bookstores in the United States and elsewhere have reached levels of murderous obscenity and depravity consistent with Satanic possession and the reign of Lucifer.

Figure 4: President George W. Bush Jr. displays the standard Satanic gesture during the Inauguration on 20th January 2005. The 'line', for public consumption purposes, was that this hand signal represented the 'Hook 'em Horns' gesture employed by fans of the University of Texas Longhorns. This was the fairytale disseminated by Associated Press and CNN, despite conclusive evidence, supported by academic authorities, that this gesture represents an open celebration of, and a sign of obeisance to, the Devil (Satan, or Lucifer).

THE MAN WHO CONDONED THE DROPPING OF PEOPLE INTO THE SEA

After the nomination of Porter Goss as Director of Central Intelligence, perhaps the most insensitive, sinister and perverse 'heart of darkness' appointment by President George Bush II in 2004 was his selection of John Negroponte, a Sephardic Jew, as Ambassador to Baghdad, where he was to head up the largest US Embassy in the world, with more than 3,000 employees and over 500 CIA officers. Despite this Mr Negroponte's infamous record in Central America, this man encountered negligible Congressional opposition, even from Senate Democrats who once criticised him for supporting widespread human rights abuses. But that was then: post-Abu Ghraib is now: and he is crowned with worldly glory, as the Director of National Intelligence.

As US Ambassador to Honduras, Negroponte played a key role in coordinating US covert aid to Contra death squads in Nicaragua, and to shoring-up a CIA-backed death squad operating in Honduras itself. During Negroponte's term as Ambassador there, diplomats alleged that the local US Embassy's annual human rights document, submitted for inclusion in the State Department's Country Reports on Human Rights Practices compendium, made Honduras appear to be more like Norway than Argentina. In 1995, The Baltimore Sun - which still seemed free, back then, to publish information that might be censored by its in-house intelligence cell today - outlined the activities of a secret CIA-trained Honduran army unit, Battalion 3-16, which employed "shock and suffocation devices in interrogations" reminiscent of the hooded figure image depicting the US atrocities in Abu Ghraib [Figure 5]. The newspaper's correspondents wrote:

"Prisoners often were kept naked and, when no longer useful, were killed and buried in unmarked graves". In other words, these Abu Ghraib-style atrocities are nothing new at all: they have been standard US practice for decades.

A former official who served under Mr Negroponte in Honduras has said that he was ordered to remove all mention of torture and executions from the draft of his 1982 report on the human rights situation in Honduras, sanitised as usual for consumption in the 'White' world. It was interesting that Senator Christopher Dodd of Connecticut, Stalin's grandson, who opposed John Negroponte when the Senate Foreign Relations Committee reported his nomination to be US Ambassador to the United Nations in 2001 (the post he occupied before his Iraq posting), suddenly now came out in support of this man - observing for the record that 'whatever differences I've had years ago with John Negroponte, I happen to feel he's a very fine Foreign Service officer and has done a tremendous job in many places'. The hearings on Negroponte's nomination to be US Ambassador to Baghdad were punctuated by protests and statements from knowledgeable outside experts who were in a position to remind the Senate Foreign Relations Committee (consisting extensively of intelligence operatives masquerading as politicians) of Mr Negroponte's extremely murky past[15], including his apparent readiness to condone, facilitate and preside over the recorded practice of dropping those who were to be 'disappeared', from a helicopter into the ocean.

One of the outside witnesses who contributed to the Committee's hearing held on 27th April 2004 to approve the nomination of John Negroponte as Ambassador to Iraq, was a certain Sister Laetitia Bordes, a Catholic nun with the Society of Helpers, a Catholic community for women. Her remarks, relayed from San Bruno, California, are taken verbatim from the transcript of the hearing:

'I had gone to Honduras to meet with then-Ambassador John Negroponte to find out what happened to 32 women from El Salvador, who had taken refuge in

Honduras and who had disappeared. At that time, there was the Battalion 3-16 [see page 14]. The Battalion was another name for the horrible death squad that was operating in Honduras at that time. That was well known to Ambassador Negroponte. The reason it was very well known to Ambassador Negroponte was that General Alvarez Martinez was then Chief of the Honduran armed forces, and he was the secret head of Battalion-316. Now, Mr Negroponte and Martinez, the people would tell you, it was known that they would wine and dine together, and had ongoing connections. So, it is absurd to think that Mr Negroponte would say that he did not know what was going on in El Salvador at that time. As I found out 13 years later, the women we were looking for had been badly, badly tortured and then put in a helicopter and dropped into the ocean. They used Salvadoran military and helicopters to take these women and drop them over the ocean. Now, Battalion 3-16 continued to function the whole time that Negroponte was there'.

The ocean over which recalcitrant Iraqi bodies might 'conveniently' be dropped today is located several hours' flying time further away than the vast ocean available to the Honduran death squads. But Sister Laetitia pressed home her point, to the reported annoyance of members of the US Senate Foreign Relations Committee:

'General Alvarez was beheaded by his own military. There was a kind of coup, and he took temporary refuge in the United States. When he went back to Honduras, he was assassinated. It is believed that he was assassinated by members of the military, who were very upset with him because of the deals that he had made with the United States [i.e., with John Negroponte] while he was in charge. What angers me -angers me very, very much - is that there's absolutely no reference being made to the past of Mr Negroponte in Honduras during these hearings. We just don't hear anything about it. We do not learn from our history. The people of Iraq are going to be the ongoing victims of John Negroponte, who believes that the end justifies the means'[16].

Figure 5: This image, based upon the notorious picture of a hooded prisoner being subjected to extreme torture and barbaric maltreatment at Abu Ghraib, which informed the whole world that the 'Illuminised' US authorities are indeed in seemingly in the grip of evil forces, further displayed, in an 'in-your-face' manner, that they shamelessly model their behaviour in accordance with the reprobate methods that the US State Department routinely condemns in its annual compendium 'Country Reports on Human Rights Practices'.

Negroponte was subsequently, of course, selected by President George W. Bush Jr. to serve as the Director of National Intelligence, a new 'supremo' post created under the National Intelligence Reform Act, one-third of which is secret - so that the American population has no knowledge of what nefarious repressive provisions it contains - and which Mr Bush signed into law on 17th December 2004.

THE U.S. GOVERNMENT'S ALIBI: THE END JUSTIFIES THE MEANS

Today, the United States operates internationally on the basis that the end justifies the means, which is the central precept of Illuminised Freemasonry as revealed by John Robison in 1798, promulgated by the 'father' of US Scottish Rite Freemasonry, Albert Pike, and as is routinely displayed by the actions and methodology of such hidden manifestations of Illuminism as Opus Dei [see Chapter 6]. Further authority for the statement that the United States operates internationally on the basis that the end justifies the means has helpfully been provided by a 'Pentagon consultant' who was interviewed, once again, by Seymour Hersh - who, in spite of his intelligence connections, remains one of the most respected and penetrating investigative journalists working today in the United States. In the same New Yorker interview on the aftermath of the Abu Ghraib atrocities, Mr Hersh reported that this 'consultant', who is clearly a military intelligence officer, told him candidly as follows:

"The White House subcontracted this to the Pentagon, and the Pentagon subcontracted it to [Stephen] Cambone.... This is Cambone's deal, but Donald Rumsfeld and [General Richard] Myers approved the program".

Hersh reported the 'Pentagon consultant' as adding that 'when it came to the interrogation operation at Abu Ghraib... Rumsfeld left the details to Mr Cambone' (a military intelligence officer). 'Rumsfeld may not be personally culpable', the consultant added; and then Hersh again cited the source's words verbatim: "But he's responsible for the checks and balances. The issue is that, since 9/11, we've changed the rules on how we deal with terrorism, and created conditions where the end justifies the means"'[17]- in accordance with the fundamental precept of the Illuminati.

This assessment is corroborated by the best analysts. In an assessment of the Yale Skull and Bones Society [see Chapter 2], of which George H. W. Bush is considered the chief Patriarch, and of which his son George W. is an adept, Kris Millegan wrote in 2003 that 'The Order of 322' is 'a multi-generational cult that believes in the power of death to bring about change, a group of Zeitgeist initiates believing that the end justifies the means, and uses massive deaths to feed their necromancy'[18]. That author gave two examples of how death is alleged to be consciously used to achieve 'revolutionary change', although the fomentation of foreign wars should perhaps have been his first choice here: 'As Governor of Texas, George W. Bush "hung" all prisoners sentenced to death that he had the opportunity to kill, except one, Henry Lee Lucas - a confessed serial killer for a shadowy cult. Bonesman and US political power-player Henry L. Stimson took the credit for talking President Truman into dropping the bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki', one of the most Satanic atrocities ever perpetrated. 'These are just two of the Order's death-dealing activities"[19].

Hitler, Stalin, Pol Pot, Ayatollah Khomeini, Saddam Hussein, Slobodan Milosevic (who, like Saddam Hussein, was a 'client' of US intelligence at one stage, until he was double-crossed by the Americans, or else double-crossed them), and every other dictator under the sun, has found it convenient to take short cuts, on the basis that the end justifies the means - thereby in the process decapitating the Rule of Law. Each of these monsters was involved in the occult and in secret societies in one way or another, as is the case today in the case of leaders such as Vladimir Putin, Mahmoud Abbas (a.k.a. the founding Hamas terrorist Abu Mazen) and Colonel Qadhaffi. No matter what form occultic and Luciferian involvement may take, it has one product alone: death, both spiritual and physical. So it is logical that, specialising in death, practitioners should 'believe in the power of death to bring about change'.

Now the United States has joined this parade of hideous tyrants and their tyrannies, in the pitch darkness. What has happened is that, just as US intelligence competes and at the same time collaborates with the covert ongoing Soviets to maximise the financial and revolutionary potential of global drug-trafficking operations (delivering death to cull the population in accordance with the Illuminati's obsessive preference while generating annual proceeds now estimated at several trillions of dollars), and just as it has consorted with organised crime and has become criminalised, so has the Pentagon descended into the darkness, in comprehensive breach of international law, taking the view that it has no choice but to use the same tactics as its assumed enemies - although Al-Qaeda is in fact a bogus, stateless global revolutionary cooperative operation of international intelligence, the purpose of which is to 'leverage' the world through violence towards the New Underworld Order intended by the Illuminati: deploying the power of death to bring about 'change'. Al-Qaeda is their creation.

This evil, occultically-derived, top-level consensus to allow the end to justify the means has had disastrous consequences, with the United States having forfeited all respect and moral authority internationally - and now universally considered, even among large numbers of thinking Americans, to be the most dangerous country in the world. That this reputation is self-inflicted is a consequence of the supremacy of its criminalised intelligence community and of that community's self-acknowledged occult, Luciferian 'heart of darkness' in the service of the Illuminati.

OPPRESSION ARISING FROM CONSORTING WITH FORCES OF EVIL

President Bush II, like President Clinton before him, is in the habit of indulging in the Pharisaical habit of advertising his 'spiritual relationship' with the Lord. Prior to the Presidential Election in 2000, G. W. Bush's wife, Laura, asked about her husband's religious stance, said that in 1988, a friend had given him a 'daily Bible' (enabling the user to read the entire Bible every year, in 365 segments, a Scripture reading method used for many years by this Author). Bill Clinton used to make a point of attending church with a Bible held in a camera-friendly position in his right hand, so that the words Holy Bible could clearly be seen. A psychiatrist has suggested that, for Mr Bush, his person, that of God and America, are all but one and the same. Specifically, Dr. Justin Frank, a prominent Washington psychiatrist and author of a book called Bush on the Couch: Inside the Mind of the President, was reported by Capitol Hill sources on 29th July 2004 as explaining that President Bush suffered from what he called 'character pathology', including 'grandiosity' and 'megalomania' - 'viewing himself, America and God as interchangeable'. The Capitol Hill source reported that the President was withdrawing more and more from aides and staff, retreating into a private, paranoid world in which only ardent loyalists were then welcome. [For this Author's essay, on President Bush's psychology based on Dr Frank's book, see Addendum 4, page 681].

A political adviser told the same source that 'yes, there are growing concerns.

The George W. Bush we see today' (towards the end of his First Term) 'is not the same, gregarious, back-slapping President of old. He's moody, distrustful, and withdrawn' - hallmarks of those who consort with Lucifer. He was prescribed powerful antidepressant drugs after he stormed off stage rather than answer questions about his former relationship with indicted (intelligence corporation) Enron executive Kenneth J. Lay. White House insiders were reported to have told the Legislative Branch source that the strong prescription medications appeared to have increased Mr Bush's sullen behaviour towards those around him.

A staffer working for the House of Representatives' Speaker, Dennis Hastert, said: 'This is a President known for his ability to charm people one-on-one. Not any more'. In late July 2004, one of the few First Term close associates with continued access to the President was said to be the (former) Attorney General, John Ashcroft. Disloyal White House aides were alleged to have told the source that the two men 'believe they are on a mission from God'. However Figure 4 shows that President G.W Bush's allegiance is in fact to Lucifer. Members of the President's family repeated this Satanic gesture many times during the nine Inauguration balls held on 20th January.

The illustrations in Addendum 9 on page 732 show that making Satanic signs is now all the rage in this 'New Age of Aquarius'. Space precludes showing all the available pictures of prominent people like members of President Bush's family signalling their allegiance to Satan, but those who have been photographed perpetrating this particular abomination include King Abdullah of Jordan, ex-Prime Minister Silvio Berlusconi of Italy, Prince Charles, the British Prime Minister Tony Blair, Tom Ridge, the former US Vice-President Dan Quayle, Elizabeth Taylor, General Tommy Franks, Senator John Edwards, Michael Jackson and the late self-styled high priest of Satan, Anton Szander LaVey. The identical salute appears in the Satanic Bible labelled Mano Cornuto, which signals allegiance between Satanism participants and their horned god. The former American witch, saved by the Grace of God, the Rev. David J Meyer, of Beaver Dam, WI, pointed out in March 2005 that the appalling Reuters News Service photograph of Mrs Laura Bush displaying this Satanic salute with her right hand during the 2005 Inauguration ceremonies, also included the President standing next to her giving the same signal with his left hand in a pointing position - a sign that means 'cursed be' in the occult. So, no doubt remains that those in charge of our affairs in the United States, Britain and Italy were/are covert followers of Satan who are no longer even ashamed to disguise this fact, even though both the British Prime Minister and the US President continue simultaneously to attend church services from time to time. The Devil is the author of confusion, and, like Mr Bush, he's been having a ball[20].

An environment in which such forces are at work is bound to be characterised by recriminations, sourness and confusion, since, as the author of confusion, the Devil delights in the creation of conditions for the maximisation of lies and chaos. Glimpses of such a torpid atmosphere at the very highest levels of the US Government were evident during the run-up to the Presidential Election in 2004. Tom Ridge, then Homeland Security Secretary, was reported be spending hardly any time at all with the President, and was said to be receiving 'most of his marching orders' from John Ashcroft, who was then in charge of the US Department of 'Justice'. 'Some people on Ridge's staff gripe privately that Ashcroft is 'Bush's Himmler'', referring to Hitler's SS Chief. And one senior US Homeland Security aide went much further: 'Too many', he said, 'make the mistake of thinking that Dick Cheney is the real power in the Bush Administration. They're wrong. It's Ashcroft, and that is reason enough for all of us to be very, very afraid'. In the same report it was just as inaccurately elaborated that the US Secretary of Defense, Donald Rumsfeld, had fallen out of favour and had informed his own staff that 'no matter what happens in November, I'm outta here'. It was thought that perhaps his practice of standing for ten hours a day at his stand-up desk, had finally left him exhausted, as well as disillusioned[20]. As it turned out, both assessments were (typically) based upon deliberately diversionary disinformation and lies, perhaps to shift attention away from the intended retention of power by the two most prominent and ruthless figures in the Administration, and for the immediate future: Messrs Rumsfeld and Cheney.

In June 2005, President Bush Jr. was reported to have intended to close down the 'Gulag'-type camp at Guantanamo Bay, Cuba, presumably because of impending legal cases that were likely to cause the Administration embarrassment, only to have been informed by Mr Cheney that this remained out of the question - revealing, of course, that the top intelligence officer serving as Vice President tells the President of the United States what to do. John Ashcroft left the Administration, Mr Cheney stayed as Vice President, and Donald Rumsfeld, fresh from having established his super-secret Strategic Support Group (SSG), an internal Defense Department intelligence service, remained en poste, to finalise any further aggressive moves that may then have been at the planning stage. And all reports about the President's questionable mental and medical condition vanished during and after the campaign.

While these First Term insights will long since have been forgotten, the significance, for our purposes, of these reports about the atmosphere within the innermost presidential circle in the late summer of 2004, should not be overlooked. The direct and sure consequences of intermeddling with demons and with the Works of Darkness are demonic infestation and oppression - viewed doubtless by agnostic

HE'S BACK..!
HERE'S TONY-Y-Y-Y!
10

Figure 6: This cartoon appeared in The Times, of London, on 1st September 2004, to coincide with the return to London of the Prime Minister, Tony Blair, from his summer holidays. In June 2005, America was up in arms about the so-called 'Downing Street Memo', and the shifty evidence it contained that the US and British Governments lied about their 'justification' for the attack on Iraq. Neither could admit the truth, namely that two Russian ships, sailing from Umm Qasr well before the war, removed all evidence of Iraqi weapons of mass destruction, in accordance with a standard procedure applicable in all states within the Soviet (Russian) sphere of influence. The cartoon reveals what the British media really thought about the Prime Minister - reflecting observations of certain politicians who had watched him closely, that at times he seemed 'possessed'.

Jewish professionals like Dr Frank as psychological disorders, but by those who understand that infestation or possession by the powers of darkness is indeed a grave and certain consequence of such activity, as a spiritual condition.

President George W. Bush's Satanic gestures during the evening Inauguration festivities were entirely consistent with the generally occult nature of those events. The very word Inauguration comes from augur, meaning one who is invested with occult omens. The event took place on 20th January, a significant witchcraft date. The cited former US astrologer and witch who is well equipped to provide accurate interpretations of contemporary manifestations of Luciferianism and Satanism among our leaders and false role models, reports that 'as a former astrologer saved by the Grace of God, I can tell you that astrology is the time-clock of the Illuminati' (explaining President Reagan's obsession with it, influenced in part by his wife Nancy) 'and it is impossible to practise witchcraft without if.

'On the 20th day of each month, the sun crosses from one sign to the next as it travels through the so-called 'houses of the heavens'. The 12 astrological signs make up the wheel of the year, or, as witches call it, 'the wheel of fortune'. The passages of the sun from one occult astrological sign to the next are called transitions, and the most important of the 12 transitions is 20th January - because the sun travels from Capricorn, the occult sign of the goat, into Aquarius, the 11th sign and the haven of the new age of Antichrist'.

In anticipation of this event, the former witch who recorded all this wrote:

'Yes, it happens on Inauguration Day! This is the day when the President, with some religious leader standing next to him, will be invested with the spirits of Aquarius while he stands at the West Front of the US Capitol, and faces the ancient Egyptian obelisk, known as the (phallic) Washington Monument. This is an occult ceremony of the first magnitude'[21].

PRESIDENT REAGAN'S EXECUTIVE ORDER 12333

Invoking the National Security Act of 1947, as amended, President Ronald Reagan promulgated Executive Order 12333 on 4th December 1981 entitled 'United States Intelligence Activities'. This Executive Order authorised the establishment by US intelligence operatives and cadres of corporations owned by the US Government for intelligence purposes, and prescribed that their intelligence community connections may be denied.

The relevant text (language) reads as follows:

2.7. Contracting: Agencies within the Intelligence Community are authorized to enter into contracts or arrangements for the provision of goods or services with private companies or institutions in the United States and need not reveal the sponsorship of such contracts or arrangements for authorized intelligence purposes'.

This provision covers the establishment of onshore or offshore corporations by American intelligence operatives from any of the 18+ agencies 'controlled' by the Central Intelligence Agency and also such US intelligence organisations as are not supervised by the CIA, which is subordinate to the National Security Agency (NSA) in practice, and now to the new Director of National Intelligence (Mr John Negroponte as at mid-2006). The corporations established under Executive Order 12333 and any relevant subsequent presidential order and legislation, are referred to as as Title 18, Section 6 corporations. There are several thousand of these, many of which have bank accounts containing substantial accruals belonging to the US Government. In part because of serious rivalry between different warring groups within the enormous US intelligence community, the colossal offshore fund accruals belonging to the US Government were waiting in mid-2006 for the legal environment to be adjusted to facilitate their repatriation to the US Treasury, and for funds stolen by various parties to be traced. ■

In a subsequent report, the Rev. Meyer, the former witch, elaborated as follows: 'In the occult practice of astrology, Aquarius is the 11th sign of the zodiac and the sign of the new age of Lucifer. We also know that in the occult, the number 5 is the number of death. This 2005 Inauguration is the 55th inauguration, and the President will take his omens, which is what 'inaugurate' means, while facing the Washington Monument, which is 555 feet high. The dais, which is the raised platform from which the President will be speaking is surrounded by semi-circular seating which is designed to look like a mystical Egyptian phoenix with raised wings. The phoenix bird is the symbol of the New Age and the New World Order.... The Inauguration speech [was] given at precisely 12.00 noon. According to witchcraft and astrology, this is the very moment when the sun transits into the 11th sign of Aquarius.... The President's speech [was about] peace and freedom for the entire world, with the inference that he is the man who will bring it to pass. The occult timing and surrounding circumstances of this entire inaugural event are amazing. In the midst of a war and with a heavy military presence in Washington, DC, the President wants to be known as a man of peace. Countless thousands have been killed and are being killed with this so-called 'peace'. Thus, this man of false peace will begin speaking at the moment Aquarius rises, and Aquarius is the water sign of peace in witchcraft' .

If President G.W. Bush had really been familiar with Scripture, by reading every day, as his wife told a TV audience he had been doing since 1988, he would be aware of the two warnings in Jeremiah against those who say 'Peace, peace, when there is no peace'[23]. He would also have been familiar with these verses of Isaiah:

'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!'

'Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!'[24] There is a parallel manifestation of this degree of darkness at the highest levels of

Figure 7: A decidedly powerful (but partially obscured) geomasonic handshake between the former Israeli Prime Minister, Ariel Sharon, left, and the Palestinian Authority President Mahmoud Abbas - the 'former' Hamas terrorist Abu Mazen - at Sharm el-Sheikh, Egypt, on 8th February 2005. This image of the two 'former' terrorists using such a signal illustrates the dialectical method in operation: both operatives are 'Illuminised'.

the British Government, which is co-responsible for the aggressive global destabilisa-tion that has flowed from the disastrous Iraq adventure. A Member of Parliament known to the Author was among several MPs who noticed, during his years as a backbencher during Blair's first term, that in certain circumstances, the face of British Prime Minister, Tony Blair, appeared demonic[25]; on a separate occasion, a source reported that he had noticed that on occasion, Blair's eyes are pitch black; and a cartoon published in The Times in early September 2004 [Figure 6], reconfirmed that media observers have also noticed this. It is alleged that the Blairs were present at some sort of pagan rite during a visit to Mexico. This lends special significance to a 2004 report in The Mail on Sunday (London), to the effect that Tony Blair had instructed civil servants that witches, Druids and pagan worshippers were to be given a say in official policy. David Blunkett, the former Home Secretary, was reported to have established a Whitehall bureau at a cost of about £1.0 million of British taxpayers' money, which had met representatives from such groups. The unit takes the view that 'accurate information' about paganism must be made universally available, especially to children[26]. The Blair-appointed Archbishop of Canterbury, Dr Rowan Williams, is known as the Archdruid of Canterbury, given that his first public act prior to his consecration was to undergo a widely publicised induction into a high Druidic Degree, at a pagan ceremony in Wales - thereby of course sowing confusion and chaos in the minds of susceptible people as to what the Church of England worships. In February 2005, the reprobate British Fabian Government, aware that the exploitation of sexuality is an efficient paganising conduit, presided over a Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual and Transgender Month, in the course of which secondary schoolchildren in England were 'taught' about historical figures and their deviant sexuality. Naturally, the organisers of this abomination claimed hypocritically that it was aimed at combating homophobic bullying in UK schools[27]. On 24th October 2004, a BBC news programme reported that the Captain of HMS Cumberland, located at Devonport Naval Base in Plymouth, had allowed a naval technician, Chris Cranmer, to register as a Satanist[28].

This fellow purported to be a follower of the Church of Satan, founded in San Francisco in 1996, by its high priest, the late Anton LaVey. Indicating where the British military Establishment now stands with regard to demonic activity, a 'politically cor-rect', pontificating spokesman for the Royal Navy observed snootily: 'We are an equal opportunities employer and we don't stop anybody from having their own religious values'. On the same level of crass official ignorance and arrogance was a report in June 2006 that UK Home Office staff are being allowed to take lessons in witchcraft.

It has almost always been the case that Governments are in the hands of Satan -even though, given our free will and the availability of the spiritual Free Gift of Grace to those who take the first genuine step towards repentance, as outlined above, this is not in fact inevitable. The English King Henry VI, founder of Eton College and King's College Cambridge, both glorious religious establishments, was clearly not in the hands of Satan, as any sensitive Old Etonian familiar with English history and with the perfection of Eton College Chapel and its worship, understands. It appears that, very occasionally and exceptionally, power may devolve into hands that are not drenched in blood or otherwise sullied by abominable past behaviour.

Nevertheless, the reality that governance is typically to be found in the hands of Lucifer and his Workers of Darkness was confirmed during and by the Temptation of Christ, from which we learn that Satan has power over ALL Governments:

'Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;

'And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me'.

'Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve'.

'Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him'[29]. Note, first, that ALL the kingdoms of the world were (are) in the hands of Satan. And note, secondly, that when Jesus told Satan to leave him, Satan did precisely that - the point being that if we order him out, he departs: a remarkable fact that can yet give hope to those in thrall to Satan, including many of those so identified in this book.

In one of his great speeches, recounted in The Acts of the Apostles, Paul reiterates how Jesus Christ had intervened in his life on the road to Damascus saying, amid the glory of His bright light, in the Hebrew tongue, 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?[30]- and had commissioned him, after his conversion:

'To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me'[31].

For as long as the United States and Britain are led by men who falsely represent that they profess the Christian faith, but in reality walk in pitch darkness, and inflict death and destruction 'without flinching', because of their twisted belief in the power of death to bring about 'change', these two formerly civilised but now deeply decadent countries' barbaric contribution to the deterioration of international conditions will continue to escalate. It was particularly telling that both President Bush and Tony Blair have repeatedly professed to be Christians. They were and are greatly deluded, and in deluding themselves, they lie to the whole world. If they or their successors continue to prepare and perform Works of Darkness on the scale so far exhibited, the consequences for humanity will indeed ultimately be catastrophic.

Apart from the genuine Saul-like repentance and transformation of our leaders' personal lives that is urgently necessary, a first practical step towards the restoration of stability and avoidance of catastrophe would be for certain over-powerful, arrogant and wayward intelligence services to be ordered back into their ghettos, for their ranks to be decimated of free-wheeling planners and workers of darkness, for their criminal intelligence operations to be deprived of legal protection, and for a definitive code of conduct to be imposed by statute upon the entire intelligence community, breaches of which will be met with the full force of the law. In the United States, this would mean repealing the National Security Act et seq., which legislation collectively established a criminals' charter, and for Executive Order 12333 [see the vox on page 20] to be repealed, as well. The protection afforded by legislation and Presidential decree for US intelligence operatives to commit crimes with impunity -the only rule being not to get caught - needs to be cancelled. As matters stand, US intelligence relies ferociously upon the law whenever a cover-up is required - while at the same time serially breaking both domestic and international law with impunity.

A second useful step would be for US policymakers to take a profound policy decision to STOP fretting about the assumed energy shortage in years to come. It is likely that if the United States had not invaded Iraq, the Iraqi regime would have proceeded with the multiple energy contracts that it was in the process of negotiating and concluding with the oil companies of over 30 nations[32,33]; and the oil which, as a consequence of the invasion, did not come on stream, would have been forthcoming earlier. If the United States had been genuinely interested, as its propaganda professed, in securing a stable supply of oil for the whole world, rather than in reality conveying the impression of greedily seeking the control of all Iraqi oil for itself, oil prices would arguably not have risen so steeply from mid-2004, and the so-called 'peak oil' crisis about which so much has been written, would not have been accentuated.

The third necessary reform, indeed a prerequisite for the decriminalisation of the US intelligence sector, albeit a symbolic one, would be for the CIA to remove its lying Langley slogan, since it obviously cannot face completing the quotation.

Unfortunately, information such as that which is to follow will be liable to preclude any clean-up of the criminalised US intelligence services' general modus operandi, since those driving strategy consider that they are engaged, on behalf of the American people, in a life-or-death struggle for the survival of the United States and its economy, given the nation's long-term energy requirements. At least, this is how those concerned may rationalise their actions and ruthless behaviour. Beyond these self-evident considerations lurks the even more sinister reality that the United States is in the hands of Illuminists (who are Luciferians), whose own very long-established modus operandi is based on the principle of synarchy - or government by secret societies, as will be explained in Chapter 2 et sea. The complication which arises as a consequence of this subversive state of affairs can be simply explained as follows: when the American people go to the polls, they innocently believe (leaving aside their knowledge of political corruption and pork-barrel DC politics) that they are electing a President, a Vice-President, Congressmen and Senators whose exclusive remit will be to serve the interests of the US electorate - whereas, given the synarchy dimension, the reality is that they wind up electing powerful and blackmailable members of the synarchy cliques, most of whom are intelligence officers, and all of whom work together at a certain level (while simultaneously competing with each other on a lower plane). In other words, the American people are living in a dreamworld.

A revolution, or rather what can more accurately be termed a 'coup d'etat by instalments', has taken place recently within the old republican structures established by the Masonic American Revolution itself. As the Danish philosopher Kirkegaard pointed out, the most successful revolutions are those which take place within the framework of the ancien regime. That is what has taken place in the United States. Although a sizeable minority of its highly intelligent people, thought to amount to a constituency of some five million, recognises that the nation faces the worst crisis of its existence, the majority of the population have no grasp of the reality that the Rule of Law has collapsed - given that powerful figures who have stolen billions of dollars and have murdered hundreds of Americans, go unpunished, and that the American version of democracy is now reduced to a decadent means of changing personnel alone, with real power resting in the hands of the corrupt synarchists, whose identity will in part be reviewed in this book.

Concerning the collapse of the Rule of Law, the United States, having inherited English Common Law, retains ancient legal principles called Misprision of Treason and Misprision of Felony. What these mean is that anyone subject to US jurisdiction who is aware that treason and felonies (like stealing billions of dollars, or more) have been committed, is committing a crime by failing to pass such information to the authorities. But if the authorities themselves are complicit, the Rule of Law has collapsed.

U.S. ECONOMIC POWER DEPENDENT UPON DOLLAR SUPREMACY

It is of course well understood that US global power, analysed conventionally without taking into account the secret hidden strength of the vast European money power, depends upon two key props: overwhelming military power, and the continued unchallenged supremacy of the US dollar. After the calmer years that followed the Second World War and the Bretton Woods settlement, under which the US dollar was convertible into gold, and the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank were established - and which marked the restart of the global collective governance process - the postwar economic and financial settlement began to break down as the European economies recovered, becoming strong exporters by the late 1960s[34].

As the growing economic strength of Europe coincided with President Johnson's escalation of the Vietnam War - demanded by the US military-industrial complex and the CIA following Johnson's installation after the assassination of President John F. Kennedy (believed to have been engineered by Abwehr /DVD operatives in the US intelligence community itself) - the United States incurred soaring public sector deficits.

While this process helped the establishment of the Eurodollar market, throughout the 1960s, President de Gaulle demanded to be paid for French exports to the United States in gold, rather than in the Federal Reserve's paper currency. By novem-ber 1967, the drain of gold from official US and Bank of England vaults had reached critical proportions.

After Britain had to devalue the pound, during its 'sick man of Europe' phase, the French and other central banks stepped up their demand for gold in exchange for their dollar reserves. Their accurate calculation was that, given the squandering of vast financial resources in Vietnam - a syndrome which the Bush Administration is now repeating, with consequences which will certainly be as dramatic in due course - it would only be a matter of months before the United States, like Britain earlier, would itself be compelled to devalue its dollar against gold; so they all resolved to demand payment in gold at the prevailing higher fixed price.

By May 1971, the drain of US official gold had become so alarming that even the Bank of England now sided with the Banque de France in demanding US gold for its holdings of dollars. That was the advanced stage at which, rather than risk the disappearance of the United States' entire stock of official gold, the Nixon Administration decided to abandon the link with gold entirely, moving to a unilaterally declared system of floating currencies in August 1971. This rash decision provided relief over the short and medium term, but has predictably resulted in the accumulation of intractable longer-term financial problems caused by fiat money creation and manipulation, with a derivatives overhang by 2006 of $770 trillion.

In practice the consequence of this 'Break with the Past' was that control over monetary policy was further privatised, with the large international banks assuming the role that the central banks had exercised under the gold standard, but entirely without gold. It was presupposed that the constant interaction of market forces alone would stabilise the foreign exchange markets and would ensure that a runaway fiat money system did not develop hyperinflationary characteristics. Market forces duly rose to the new challenge. The free floating of the US dollar, which compelled all the leading currencies to float against it - together with the escalation of OPEC oil prices in 1973 by 400% after the Yom Kippur War - triggered the petrodollar recycling phase of the slow-burning crisis, and of the United States' precarious global hegemony.

The first oil shock suddenly created a colossal demand for the floating dollar. All oil importing countries faced the problem of how to export in dollars in order to pay their expensive new energy import bills. At a secret meeting organised by the globalist (Illuminati-sponsored) Bilderberg organisation held during May 1971 in Saltsjoebaden, Norway the petrodollar recycling strategy that was duly adopted in 1973, was prelanned and finalised - which clearly implies that the oil 'shock' was contrived to leverage and exploit the severance of the US dollar from gold (as this Author and certain others thought was the case at the time). The primary operative behind this strategy was the Illuminist renegade Jew of German extraction and alleged triple agent, with his heavy German accent, Dr Henry Kissinger (allegedly expelled from his US Jewish congregation), who invented the phrase 'recycling of petrodollars'.

With OPEC suddenly choking on dollars that it could not use, US and British banks moved on cue to absorb the dollars and to onlend them as Eurodollar bonds or loans, especially to the Third World countries desperate to borrow US dollars to finance their oil imports. The Author's own journal International Currency Review followed the progress of these phases of the crisis in successive issues, accurately predicting that the whole process would implode, as indeed happened in the early 1980s. Colossal volumes (by the standards of those days) of US dollars were recycled between OPEC, the London and New York banks, and then back to Third World countries. The international financial community and its transnational institutions have been unwinding or adding to this sovereign debt glut ever since.

The Third World debt crisis was finally triggered after Mr Paul Volcker's US Federal Reserve Board had unilaterally escalated US interest rates to record levels, in order to 'save' the dollar. After three years of these stupendous interest rates, the US dollar was 'saved', but the entire developing sector of the world economy found itself burdened by usurious US interest rates charged on their vast petrodollar loans

Note: Observe that the serial number below - C321321321C - sums to 666 and that the serial number at the top right - C123123123C - sums likewise to 666. This is the number of the Vatican.

1,000,000,000
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
C123123123C
C321321321C
ONE BILLION
ONE
1,000,000,000
1,000,000,000
1,000,000,000

Figure 8: This image, and Figure 9, show the front and reverse of a US Treasury Diamond Certificate, with face value of $1.0 billion. The reason for its tattered appearance is that it was evidently held in the billfold of a prominent solicitor located in Singapore, who allegedly attempted to trade it at a discount with other corrupt parties. The details underlying this relevant scandal are omitted here because the point of showing this Diamond Certificate is to illustrate how US oil imports are financed. Notice anything odd about the serial numbers - C321321321C and C123123123C? Each sums to the Illuminati's Kabbalistic Number 666.

(Babylonian-style 'loan capitalism'). To enforce debt repayment both to buttress the dollar system and so as to prevent the nations of the 'south' from acquiring any degree of economic independence, the London and New York banks called in the services of their creature, the International Monetary Fund, to act as their 'debt policeman'. Public expenditure for health, education and welfare was slashed on the IMF's instructions, in order to ensure that the loan capitalist banks could rely on receiving timely repayments on the loaned petrodollars. They had found that lending to countries was easy, since the Third World debt managers did not treat the debt they incurred professionally - given that it was sovereign debt, not their own.

In 1973, David Rockefeller (a senior Illuminist) and other operatives relaunched the Trilateral Commission, an old Abwehr front, in order to take special account of the emergence of Germany's ally, Japan, as a major industrialised nation, and a massive importer of oil. One idea was to ensure that Japanese trade surpluses from exports would be deployed to buy oil in dollars (not in pounds sterling French francs or Japanese yen). The remaining Japanese surpluses were held in US Treasury bonds, to earn interest. The Group of Seven (G-7) was further established to hold Japan and Western Europe inside the dollar system. From time to time in the 1980s, International Currency Review and various prominent voices in Japan called for three reserve currencies (the US dollar, the Japanese yen and the deutschemark) to share the global reserve function. But thanks to US pressure exerted inter alia by the mechanisms described above, this never happened: the dollar remained dominant, and the crisis was contained - for the time being.

In the mid-1970s, International Currency Review exposed the existence of what the Author called the secret Saudi-American Agreement, established in June 1974 by the US Treasury Secretary of the day, William Simon, and Dr Kissinger. It was to be held in place through the establishment of the US-Saudi Arabian Joint Commission on Economic Cooperation, the full statute of which was published in the Author's journal.

1,000,000,000
1,000,000,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE BILLION DOLLARS
1,000,000,000
1,000,000,000

Figure 9: Say that the US Bureau of Engraving and Printing reproduces 64 of these Diamond Certificates up on one sheet. Each sheet is 'worth' $64 billion. However the actual cost of producing each sheet is, shall we say, $1,000 (being very generous, and adding-in all of the Bureau's costs and overheads). Each sheet therefore costs the United States $1,000. But when placed at the disposal of oil producers, the total purchasing value of the sheet is $64 billion. This trick only 'works' if petroleum is universally invoiced in US dollars.

This exclusively revealed that the spedal arrangement entailed Saudi Arabia, the largest oil producer, selling its oil exclusively for dollars, and that the US Treasury and the New York Federal Reserve Bank (as the Treasury's agent) would facilitate the purchase of US Treasury bonds with Saudi petrodollars. Specifically, the New York Fed would telephone the Saudi Arabian Monetary Agency (SAMA) to advise of an upcoming marketing exercise for US Treasury securities, indicating what volume of securities (say, $3.0 billion) would be announced to the market, and asking whether SAMA wished to purchase any 'add-on' US securities. These would be sold 'privately' ('off the books') for Saudi petrodollars, but were not irredeemables: the Saudis could, if they so wished (which did not at first happen) dispose of such securities in the New York financial marketplace. This arrangement followed an early attempt by the US authorities to persuade the Saudis to buy irredeemables. After about $640 million of such US Treasury paper had been acquired, SAMA's advisers, White Weld, suggested to the Riyadh authorities that it would not be a good idea to buy any more.

IRAQ INVOICES FOR ITS OIL IN EUROS AND IS DECAPITATED

The convention (enforced inter alia by the above mechanisms) that oil is sold and paid for globally in dollars, demands the buildup of colossal trade surpluses in order to accumulate dollar surpluses to finance oil bills. It is still the case that 70% of world trade is transacted dollars. These days, with its huge deficits, the United States must import at least $1.5 billion daily in order to avoid a dollar collapse and to keep its interest rates low enough to support the debt-burdened corporate economy. The net debts of the corporate and official sectors have been deteriorating at an horrific pace. But on 1st November 2000, Radio Liberty/RFE broadcast a report headlined 'IRAQ: BAGHDAD MOVES TO EURO'. The wire was picked up for barely 48 hours by CNN and other media, but then abruptly dropped. The Iranian authorities had also been openly debating in early 2000 the merits of switching their oil exports to the Euro.

Following the bursting of the dot.com bubble, the unravelling of that intelligence community scam called Enron, and the Worldcom finance scandal, all associated with recessionary trends as well as with rapacious intelligence scamming operations, the dollar began to lose its attraction for foreign investors. With France and Germany preparing to block war in the UN Security Council, rumours surfaced that the central banks of Russia and China had quietly started dumping US dollars and purchasing Euros. Whenever he needs to exert latent pressure on the United States, GRU-President Putin starts talking about making greater use of the Euro. For 'weapons of mass destruction' in the 2003 Iraq War context, read the threat that others would follow Iraq and shift into Euros, destroying overnight the United States' currency, economy and global economic hegemony.

As one US economist put it, the ending of the dollar's reserve role would be a 'catastrophe' for the United States. Interest rates would have to be raised higher than Paul Volcker's 17% level in 1979 - a dollar crisis which resulted directly from steps by France, Germany and Saudi Arabia to start selling US Treasury bonds.

The decapitation of Iraq therefore represented a crude reversion by the United States to the use of its military power to maintain the hegemony of the dollar system. But as this brief summary indicates, the underlying dollar strategy is extremely fragile. The crude intent behind the use of military power is to acquire direct control over oil resources, so that the issue of oil denomination in another currency cannot realistically arise in the future. The attack on and occupation of Iraq served as a crude warning to any other states, such as Iran, which were considering switching to the use of the Euro for their energy export business. While the lesson will certainly have been learned regionally, there also remains the obvious danger that China and other countries could unilaterally decide to pay for their imported oil in their own currencies, rather than in dollars. If oil exporters were again to start invoicing in a currency other than the dollar, and oil importers started to remit payment in their own currencies, America would soon learn that while it is the largest economy and military power in the world, it is not bigger than the Rest of the World.

Under President G. W. Bush Jr., America's attempts to procure de facto control over foreign oil resources have been frustrated everywhere: in Russia, in Venezuela and, so far, in Iraq, where the oil sector has remained under the threat and reality of sabotage. For this reason, the Author anticipated, in a report published in February 2005, that, irrespective of the consequences, the Bush II Administration would be tempted to mount further military operations. That may have been one reason why his ally, Tony Blair, called a UK General Election one full year earlier than was constitutionally necessary - in case he became embroiled in 'another Iraq'.

Sophisticates and cynical intelligence officers will tell you that the way they do things is 'the way of the world', and that to urge improvements in behaviour, as the Author does in this work, and has done in several conversations with senior US intelligence officers, is pointless, meaningless, and naive. For, apart from anything else, 'the way of the world' dictates that in order to avoid economic meltdown, the United States must maintain the hegemony of the US dollar at all costs.

Figures 8 and 9 on pages 26 and 27 show a US Treasury Diamond Certificate worth $1.0 billion. The Diamond Certificate is displayed here in order to illustrate at this juncture the essence of the crisis which the US strategists consider that America faces, although one needs to bear in mind all the time that, as indicated above, the US national interest is always subordinated by the synarchists to their own plans for global hegemony and the close control of the world's assets in the interests of 'the Brotherhood of Man' - which represents not what it appears to imply, but rather the self-interested Brotherhood of the Geomasonic Illuminists themselves.

The cost to the US Bureau of Engraving and Printing of one sheet containing, say, 64 Diamond Certificates worth $1.0 billion each, is of the order of, say, $1,000 - being generous, if one takes into account the Bureau's labour costs and overheads, the cost of engraving, special paper and inks, machine running time, the guillotining and finishing processes, and all the other costs which the Author, as a Master Printer himself, necessarily knows about. Thus for a total cost not exceeding, say, $1,000, and probably much less, the US Government has created $64 billion of 'value'.

Therefore, for each printed Certificate, the Bureau of Engraving and Printing is 'creating' wealth worth $999,999,000 out of thin air. These US Diamond Certificates are delivered into the hands of, or for the account of, oil producers, in exchange for the oil imported from them by the United States. So if the United States owes the Saudi Arabian Government $10 billion in settlement of outstanding oil invoices, it can settle these oil bills inter alia by making ten $1.0 billion Diamond Certificates available for account of the Saudi Arabian Monetary Agency (SAMA). Once in SAMA's hands, the Diamond Certificates acquire 'actual' value (i.e., real buying power), both within the 'closed' intergovernmental financial system, and ultimately in the 'open' sector. For this trick to remain valid, the US dollar must remain the currency in which all oil invoices and payments are denominated. For if powerful countries were to abandon this oil-dollar standard, and to begin paying for their imported oil in their own or in other national currencies, such as the Euro, the pound sterling or the Japanese yen, the ability of the United States to pay for its imported energy requirements by printing such pieces of paper, would be challenged, seriously jeopardised, or terminated.

This is because if, all of a sudden, the Saudis were to demand payment in Euros (which would not occur under prevailing conditions, given the ongoing Saudi-American relationship), the United States would need, all of a sudden, to obtain the necessary Euros on the foreign exchanges, which might necessitate transferring real wealth (dollars) in exchange for the Euros, rather than handing over Diamond Certificates specially printed for the purpose. The oil-dollar system might continue to function fitfully; but the threat of it collapsing is a national security issue of such gravity that the United States is prepared to go so far as to attack and invade any oil-producer which might be brazen enough to demand payment for its exported oil in any currency other than the dollar. Of course, this is far from a complete or even an adequate explanation of the phenomenon of the oil-dollar standard. But at least it explains why the intelligence services attach the highest priority to serving the interests of the US oil corporations, and are mandated to place their interests first.

It should also be noted, in the light of what follows, that the serial numbers that are shown on the Diamond Certificate illustrated on pages 26 and 27 devolve to 666 (123+123+123 = 666), which is of course a primary occultic Kabbalistic number, as indicated in the Book of Revelation. Therefore, this specific Illuminati code is displayed by the US Government to its foreign counterpart, which, being likewise Illuminised, recognises the code and its significance.

Enough has been reviewed here to make it clear that the slogan at Langley is indeed as deceitful and misleading as was explained at the outset. The intelligence community deals not in the truth, but in lies and deception. Its rationale has been the same down the centuries: national security. But control by criminalised, Illuminised intelligence is incompatible with good governance, however pressing the pretext. ■

Chapter 1: THE LANGLEY LIE: Notes and references:

1. Biblical quotations throughout are taken from the King James Authorised Version of the Holy Bible.
2. The notion that we choose Christ, which is dispensed by false prophets, is erroneous. We cannot 'decide for Christ' without the desire to know the truth being 'given us of the Father'. He calls us, not the other way round: and He does this as soon as we make the first move of our own free will, which we have to exercise first (because He gave us free will). In John, Chapter 15, Jesus tells his disciples plainly: 'Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever you shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you'. If we are 'in the Word' - that is, reading Scripture (which is essential), however imperfectly - and are trying (however inadequately) to follow his Way and Truth to Life, it is a fact that 'whatsoever we ask of the Father' in Jesus' name, He gives it to us. Obviously it is no use asking for a new Mercedes: we have to ask for what is in accordance with His will. 'If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you' [John, Chapter 15, verse 7]. 'Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened' [Matthew, Chapter 7, verses 7-8]. An American friend and the Author prayed jointly for a young woman (unknown to the Author), who was so ill that her family had been called to her hospital bedside. She began her complete recovery at the very moment of our prayer. The explanation was that what was asked for was 'in His Name' and in accordance with His Will. It is a waste of time asking the Father for whatever is not in accordance with his Will, which, through Grace - a freely given gift of the Lord that follows our submission with a contrite, humble and tender heart - is made known to us.
3. See: Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West by Dr Joseph D Douglass Jr., Edward Harle Limited, London and New York, 1999. Available from the Author's offices. See: www.edwardharle.com.
4. 'Convergence' is a Soviet concept, developed by the Soviet strategists within one or more of the specialist Leninist Institutes of the Soviet Academy of (Leninist) Sciences. The Soviet revolutionary meaning of 'convergence' is: 'con-

vergence on our terms', meaning that the West is required to 'converge' substantively with the covert Soviet Union, whereas any 'convergence' of the covert Soviet Union is to be cosmetic only. Hence, as anyone who is not sitting on their brains can see for themselves, Russian 'privatisation' devolved the assets of the Party-State into the hands of selected GRU and KGB operatives, from whose hands the assets are being extracted piecemeal under the Presidency of the senior Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) officer, Vladimir Putin. Under the present phase of the Soviet long-range strategy, the USSR is essentially 'marking time' while the West's politico-social system (in both Europe and the United States) evolves into a de facto communised, collectivised clone of the 'former' Soviet system.

5. The Soviet Union is always qualified in this and all related works by the adjective 'former' in parentheses. The Author is Editor and publisher of Soviet Analyst, which monitors the continued existence of the Soviet Union in practice. For further details, see the Author's book The European Union Collective: Enemy of its Member States' [Edward Harle Limited, London and New York, 2002], which explains the parallel Soviet and pan-German agendas for a collectivised Europe, a scheme which is now at an advanced stage of decrepitude. As revealed by a US operative to the Author and mentioned in the present work, Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachev (real name Orbach or Korbach) remains head (as of 2006) of the KGB Continuum.

6. Seymour M. Hersh, 'The Gray Zone: How a Secret Pentagon Program came to Abu Ghraib, Annals of National Security', The New Yorker, 24th May 2004. The 'former' intelligence operative 'blew' the 'Black' operation in question by revealing outline details to Hersh. Whenever such revelations surface in the 'mainstream' media, it is usually because the intelligence authorities concerned have wound up the programme, and replaced it with a successor programme. However intelligence duplicity being what it is, it is conceivable in this instance that the SAP continues, but that the revelations to Hersh in this article simply conveyed the false impression that it had been wound up. If that was the case, it will certainly have been replaced by a comparable SAP 'Black' programme. Reports continue (as of June 2006) to emerge of atrocities at the 23 secret US intelligence facilities in Afghanistan, in the multiple such evil centres in Iraq, Jordan, the British colony of Diego Garcia, and at Guantanamo Bay, Cuba.

7. As probably a 'former' intelligence official himself, Hersh would know perfectly well that the use of the prefix 'former' in this context is cosmetic. US citizens are not allowed to divulge the identities of existing US intelligence officers. But there is no such individual as a 'former' intelligence operative, because they all know too much and have to be monitored and 'handled' for their lifetime. One of the problems facing the implementers of US and New Underworld Order operations since the Reagan era is that timetables have slipped badly. This has meant that significant numbers of ageing operatives remain 'operative' and 'on the books'. These people have long since been 'read into' (to use the CIA euphemism for 'indoctrinated into') geopolitical operations of such complexity and ongoing relevance, that they 'cannot be released'. Many of the individuals mentioned in this book are, or soon will be, past normal 'retirement age'. The primary reason for their continued involvement in multiple operations is that they alone are 'fully read into' 'Black' operations which it would be too hazardous or dangerous to reveal to others. Some of the hazards concern the systematic rifling of financial assets by intelligence operatives and 'barons' themselves.

8. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', 1798, Western Islands, Boston, MA, 1967, page 61.

9. Information to the Author from a participant on the spy cruise, during which seminars on intelligence issues, tradecraft and related subjects, were provided.

10. The report to the effect that intelligence cells are located in or adjacent to every 'mainstream' media pressroom appeared for 24 hours in 2004, and then vanished from the 'screen'.

11. Uri Dowbenko, 'Bush-Cheney Cabal Names Porter Goss CIA Chief, posted on 'Dowbenko's' Internet site, 25th June 2004, well ahead of President Bush's formal announcement. The report noted: Why did former CIA operative Rep. Porter Goss get the nod to be the new DCI (Director of Central Intelligence) at the CIA?' [Answer]:]. 'It means that the Bush Cheney Cabal, a.k.a. the Bush Crime Family, is so sure of itself and its power that it can name one of its own, a former point man for CIA assassinations, to be the head of the CIA'.

12. 'Bush nominates Goss as new CIA chief' and associated reports, The Financial Times, London, 11 August 2004.

13. For a display of important observed geopolitical occult handshakes,see Appendix 70, page 734.

14. Trance Formation of America: The True Life Story of a CIA mind-control Slave' by Cathy O'Brien (the 'rehabilitated sex slave') with Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing, Inc., 1995 (Reality Marketing is thought to have been an intelligence-linked entity, based in Las Vegas where certain intelligence community mass mind-control operations, including film-making for propaganda purposes, such as the ludicrous footage of Osama Bin Laden in a bathrobe against a moonscape, are based). In 'Trance Formation of America', former President Ford is depicted as a sadistic prima donna who demands services from sex slaves as of right. It was at Gerald Ford's home in Colorado that Dr Alan Greenspan, the 'chief accountant' and facilitator of the colossal dubious financial transactions of the Illuminati, took place in June 2004. Mark Phillips allegedly perpetrated the 'devil in the smoke' photographic deception which deceived many following the 9/11 provocation [see Chapter 4, page 183].

15. 'Democracy Now!' Radio/TV news programme broadcast on over 200 US stations, 28th April 2004.

16. John Negroponte's support of and involvement with the Battalion 3-16 death squad in Honduras was extensively aired by the witnesses ONLY, at the hearing held on 27th April 2004, from the transcript of which this excerpt is taken verbatim.

17. Seymour M. Hersh, op. cit.

18. 'Fleshing Out Skull & Bones: Investigations into America's most powerful Secret Society', edited by Robert A. [Kris] Millegan, TrineDay, 2003, page 418.

19. 'Fleshing Out Skull & Bones: Investigations into America's most powerful Secret Society', Ibid, page 418.

20. 'Sullen, Depressed Bush Retreats into Private Paranoid World: Bush using Drugs to control Depression', Teresa Hampton and William D. McTavish, Capitol Hill Blue Staff, www.capitolhillblue.com, 29 July 2004.

21. Pastor David J. Meyer, The Last Trumpet Newsletter, January 2005, page 2. That author also pointed out that on 13th December 2004, the Associated Press (AP), a US Government mouthpiece, made a curious reference to President George W. Bush as 'the first-born son', a blasphemous/Jewish statement implying that the President is endowed with a spiritual force which we are all supposed to assume is god-like, or at least characteristic of a firstborn male as described in Scripture (the first-born being 'hallowed to God'). All this reminds this Author of the perceptive remark of a female American friend of his who asserted with conviction in the autumn of 2000 that she thought that George W. Bush could be the Antichrist. She never gave any explanation for that insight. Concerning the provenance of this information (from the Rev. Meyer) about the occult and astrology, the Author is aware that

many such sources are unreliable and perversely transmit disinformation. However this source is 100% credible, and is widely so regarded internationally, because of his intimate knowledge of witchcraft given his past life as an hyperactive witch. His statements on witchcraft practices, beliefs and aberrations are factually correct. There is no doubt that the US Presidency is in thrall to witchcraft, which accompanies and precedes Luciferianism.

22. Pastor David J. Meyer, The Last Trumpet Newsletter, January 2005, pages 4-5.

23. Jeremiah Chapter 6, verse 14; and the identical warning in Jeremiah Chapter 8, verse 11. This passage is followed by the further warning lamenting the absence of shame and the catastrophe which will befall such people [verses 12 and 13J: 'Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? Nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they shall fall among them that fall; in the time of their visitation they shall be cast down, saith the Lord. I will surely consume them, saith the Lord: there shall be no grapes on the vine, nor figs on the fig tree, and the leaf shall fade; and the grass that I have given them shall pass away from them'. In other words, they have all been warned.

24. Isaiah, Chapter 5, verses 20-21 and 23. 'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!... Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!'. All of which is horribly familiar today.

25. Personal communication to the Author by the Member of Parliament concerned (name withheld).

26. The Mail on Sunday, 22nd August 2004.

27. Global Analyst, January-February 2005, Global Analysis Limited, 108 Horseferry Road, Westminster, London SW1P 2EF, Volume 2, Number 1, page 23: Teaching Children Perversion'.

28. BBC News report, 'Navy approves its first-ever Satanist', 24th October 2004.

29. The Gospel according to Matthew, Chapter 4, verses 8-11.

30. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 14.

31. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 18.

32. According to documents extracted by legal process by Judicial Watch, Washington DC, from the Cheney Energy Task Force, the countries listed in Note 33 below (with their energy corporations in parentheses) were in various stages of negotiating for rights, carrying out exploration work, constructing facilities, or otherwise preparing to exploit Iraqi oil, as of 5th March 2001. Although the Energy Task Force is commonly referred to as the 'Cheney Energy Task Force', detailed research work along these lines had long been under way during the Clinton era - illustrating a key point emerging from this analysis, namely that political 'opposites' in the 'White' world, being controlled by the intelligence services, since the most senior posts are usually held by intelligence operatives, are actually 'on the same page' -just playing opposite ends of the political dialectic for public consumption in the 'White' world. Thus: Clinton and the Democratic Party, extensively penetrated by Communists and fellow-travellers = Thesis; Bush II, driven by the 'German' element of the intelligence services following the Himmler Nazi tradition = Antithesis (or vice versa). Repeated cycles of the Hegelian dialectic (which is itself based upon the occult-Masonic concept of the 'mechanistic world') continue until the Synthesis (= One World Government, or the New Underworld Order) is achieved. However, since these forces are driven by Satan, who is the author of all confusion, the Synthesis is of course never actually realised This illustrates that these people are all fools. Their belief in the geomasonic mechanistic world guarantees this. The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good, God looked down from Heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. Everyone one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one'. Psalm (of David) 53, verses 1-3.

33. The countries (with their energy corporations in parentheses) that were identified by the Cheney Energy Task Force as being in various stages of negotiating for rights, carrying out exploration work, constructing facilities, or otherwise preparing to exploit Iraqi oil as of 5th March 2001, all of which lost out due to the invasion, were as follows: Algeria (Sonatrach); Australia (BHP); Canada (Ranger, Bow Canada, Alberta Energy, CanOxy, Chavco Resources, Escondido, Talisman, IPC, PanCanadian); China (CNPC, Norinco, Sinochem); Czech Republic (Strojexport); Finland (Neste Oy); France (Total Elf Aquitaine), Forasol SA, IBEX, Perenco); Germany (Deminex, Preussag, Slavneft); Greece (Kriti); Hungary (Hanpetro); India (ONGC, Reliance); Indonesia (Pertamina); Ireland (Bula); Italy (Agip, Snamprogetti); Japan (Japex, Mitsubishi); Malaysia (Petronas); Mexico (Pemex); Netherlands (Larmag, Dutch Royal Shell); Norway (Statoil); Pakistan (Crescent); Romania (Petrom, Mol); Russia (Kond Petroleum, Lukoil, Zarubezneft, Mashinoimport, Tatarneft, Rostneft, Sidanco); South Korea (Sangyong, Samsung, Pedco, Hambo, Yukong, Daewoo); Spain (Repsol); Taiwan (CPC); Tunisia (Setcar); Turkey (TPAO); United Kingdom (Branch Energy, Pacific Resources); Vietnam (Petro-Vietnam). Common sense dictates that had all these countries and corporations been left to 'get on with it', Iraq's oil could have been brought on-stream much earlier than is now likely to be the case. As indicated in the main text, the United States oil lobby's propaganda insists that its purpose is to procure adequate energy supplies at fair prices for the whole of humanity. The invasion of Iraq in 2003, planned from the outset of the Bush II Administration (on the basis of planning in place under the Clinton Administration) resulted in the termination by force majeure of all these operations, from which of course the United States had been excluded. It is therefore perfectly clear to anyone who is not influenced by US special pleading that one purpose of the invasion was to ensure that Iraq's energy resources were brought under US control, and the negotiating countries excluded, rather than the United States. This exposes the lie that US oil policy is intended to procure affordable energy supplies for the whole of humanity. Secondary data source: International Currency Review, Volume 30, Number 1, August 2004.

34. This final sub-section is condensed from Economic Intelligence Review, Volume 10, Number 1, pages 13-15, January-February 2005, World Reports Limited: www.worldreports.org.

* The Synagogue of Satan: Revelation of John: Words of Jesus Christ: Chapter 2, verse 9: 'I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are of the synagogue of Satan'; and Chapter 3, verse 9: 'Them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie'. The Synagogue of Satan is the pagan-Satanic Illuminised geomasonic structure controlled by 'the god of this world', Lucifer. In the contemporary context, it is identifiable as Geomasonic Illuminism. At the Congress of Wilhelmsbad (1782), the Illuminati and the elders of Freemasonry agreed to merge, with the Illuminati taking Masonry over. Jewish authorities agree that 'Masonry is Jewish'. The central Illuminati control centre is Germany, with two main components of the Illuminati - the 'Black Nobility' and the Communists - being Jewish. Hence the heavy Illuminati weighting of German Jews.

CHAPTER TWO

THE CURSE OF YALE

CALLING GOOD EVIL AND EVIL GOOD

'And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said 'He hath Beelzebub, and by the Prince of the Devils casteth he out devils'. The source in Scripture for this blasphemy against the Holy Spirit is the Gospel of Mark, Chapter 3, verse 22 (322)[1].

The Lord dealt with this lie immediately: 'And he called them unto Him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end'[2].

Just as Satan cannot cast out his own demons - on the contrary, he desires to infest everyone - so does he refuse to evacuate the premises he inhabits unless he is cast out by his nemesis, the power of Jesus Christ, who taught us to say: 'Get thee behind me Satan'[3]. The problem with the United States is that its god, from its foundation, is Lucifer - as is displayed by means of the Eye of Set, or Lucifer, on the $1.0 bill, atop a truncated Masonic pyramid, which is replicated from the image on reverse of the Great Seal of the United States - not Jesus Christ: which is why political Washington is perpetually in turmoil, and why many Americans are always so exercised about the issue of whether it should be legal to display the

Wer war der Thor, wer Weiser, wer Bettler oder Kaiser?
Ob Arm, ob Reich, im Tode gleich

Figure 10: On the west wall in the Skull and Bones 'Tomb' on the Yale campus is this elderly engraving representing an open burial vault inside which, on a stone slab, rest four skulls arranged around a fool's cap and bells, an open book, some mathematical instruments, and a royal crown. Upon the arched wall located above them is bleakly inscribed: 'Wer war der Thor, wer Weiser, wer Better oder Kaiser?', while below the vault image is engraved, in Germanic script: 'Ob arm, ob Reich, im Tode gleich'. The picture is displayed along with a card, on which is appended: 'From the German Chapter'. Presented by D. C. Gilman of D. 50' (Daniel C. Gilman).

Ten Commandments in public schools, and about the sterile absence of any religious teaching therein. Following the pernicious tradition imported by the US Illuminati from Germany (specifically the dumbing-down political control methodology of Wilhelm Wundt, of the University of Leipzig [1875-1920]), the schools are mind-control factories. They deploy the convenient excuse that religious faith is a matter for parents, not for the US school system - which, given the consequent Illuminist Outcome-Based Education curriculum, teaches relativism, that truth is a matter of individual perception and choice, and that there is no God, and induces depression and confusion in the minds of children (who are universally referred to as 'kids', as of the goat) in order to churn out a lumpen-proletariat that is unable to think for itself, stripped of spiritual nourishment. Hence sex education, which fosters the lusts of the flesh from an early age, and 'death education', which is designed to impregnate young minds with the only product known to the Illuminised Workers of Darkness: death.

In the United Kingdom, children as young as 12 to 14 at schools all over the country were reported in June 2005 to be indulging in 'daisy chain' group sex, with some incidents being captured by the cameras of their mobile telephones, and disseminated all round the country and to their school friends, and girls as young as 12 years of age being raped after boys had demanded group sex with them, and they had refused[4]. Abominations such as these are the direct consequence of the temporary triumph of the evil, nihilistic regimen of the Illuminati, the transnational Workers of Darkness, who seek to drag the whole of humanity down into the pit with them (to 'keep them company') because they are jealous of all who are not yet depraved, and because they look forward to the time 'soon' when the 'Ancient Mysteries' - the hegemony of pagan sex-magic, ritual and the invocation of demons - will be realised.

In the United States, children are taught every minute detail there is to know about the Holocaust, and are required to take part in death-oriented school plays, such as certain plays by the Satanic American playwrite, Edgar Allen Poe. Their 'death education' is completed by the universal Satanisation of video games and other electronic playthings, all inventions of the Devil, that focus on sex and death, and which are not only addictive, but have the consequence that the child or teenager is afflicted by oppression, with his or her true underlying personality smothered by what amounts to infestation by Evil Spirits, or an oppression similar to such infestation. Indeed when an American friend of the Author resolved, with one of his sons, that all the boy's Satanic tapes and other paraphernalia should be destroyed, they found that many items jumped out of the fire, and that a bunch of ravens suddenly appeared circling overhead. The recalcitrant toys of the Devil had to be repeatedly thrown back into the bonfire, after jumping out several times, far away from the bonfire.

The deliberately addictive nature of these abominations further alienates the child from things of beauty - from art, from good music, from poetry, from the beauty of the countryside, from Scripture of course, from romance in human relationships, indeed from all that enhances human life and makes it such a joy to be alive. These are all evils that are directly attributable to the brazen emergence and harsh, stone cold arrogance of Satan, who goes 'to and fro in the earth' and walks 'up and down it'[5] 'seeking whom he may devour'[6]. The diabolical, chaotic, Satanic, sexually-oriented 'music' (noise) that is mass-produced for consumption by youth, completes the hell which our generation has created for the young people and children whom once we used to love. To abuse children by filling their minds, souls and environment with diabolical inventions such as these, is nothing less than wanton, flagrant, serial blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. Recall that Jesus prescribed a violent end for those who do such things: 'But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged around his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea'[7]. It should be noted that this grim warning is repeated twice more in the Gospels - indicative of its singular importance[8]. All those who corrupt children with devilish things face a terrible vengeance: that's a certainty.

Another Scriptural reference will place what follows in the necessary context: Psalm 127 begins: 'Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain'[9]. The fundamental problem with the United States (and with Britain, though via a different sequence of historical events), is that the house that replaced the edifice that had been erected by the

THE YALE CLUB OF NEW YORK CITY · 1897 ·
ET
LUX
VERITAS
אורים ותמים
322
FILE AND CLAW.
BADGE.
11A
11B

Figure 11A: The central component of the Yale University crest, taken from a napkin purloined by the Author from the dining room of The Yale Club in New York City. The Latin inscription, 'Lux et Veritas', means, of course, 'Light and Truth'. What do the Hebrew words mean and what are they doing there? The Author can only answer the first part of this question. The Hebrew words are 'Urim' and 'Thummim', oracles from the Old Testament, which learned Rabbis believe represented stones upon which were written 'Yes' and 'No', which were reckoned to indicate the answer to any given question raised with God. So, the Yale Crest reads as follows: 'Light and Truth. Yes and No'. In short, the University is double-minded. Figure 11B: The death-badge of another Yale secret society. File and Claw. In a survey of the Yale secret societies, illustrative of the system of synarchy - rule by secret societies - which has the upper hand in the United States, Europe and elsewhere (under the European Commission, there are 3,068+ secret committees about which hardly anything was known until recently) - Harper's Weekly of 7th February 1874 explained: 'An allusion to these societies would not be complete without a reference to their initiations, which are known of and cited throughout the country as illustrations of pandemonium broken loose. Until 1869, they were very rough in character, and often resulted in serious injury to some of their victims but since that time, a Professor has been present during the sports, to interfere in case they are taken too far. Tossing in a blanket, rolling in a wheel, stowing away in a coffin, sitting suddenly in a tub of ice, or put under a guillotine, where the knife is arrested within a few inches of the victim's nose, and members yelling, blowing horns, burning phosphorus, and masked as skeletons and demons' [see Figure 12 on page 36] - these are what a candidate has to pass through before being invested with the dignity of membership'. No wonder the 'values' inculcated in such initiations have infected American society so perniciously. The everlasting pandemonium prevalent in Washington, DC, is entirely consistent with this background.

colonists has not been constructed by the Lord, but rather by Lucifer.

It is accordingly no surprise that, as has been stated, Washington - a city that was notoriously laid out to an occult blueprint with a gigantic pagan (phallic) obelisk at its centre - is perpetually in a state of turmoil and confusion. There is always some scandal brewing inside the corridors of power and in the bowels of the political establishment. The Author has visited Washington regularly for four decades, and has found that this city is almost always engulfed in controversy, bitterness, deception, treachery and shame - reflecting the fact that its god, Lucifer, is in control there.

The Author once told the late Fr. Malachi Martin that he always felt most uncomfortable and oppressed staying in the Washington area for more than 24 hours. 'Oh, you would do', Malachi responded. 'It is a very evil place, and you would sense that. I am not surprised'. And there always seem to be parallel indications of organised vice - most conspicuously nowadays focused on paedophilia, and on the suborning of the foreign diplomatic community inter alia through prostitution masterminded by an intelligence community-linked cut-out apparatus located near Dupont Circle. 'Many sorrows shall be to the wicked'[10], and they shall know no peace. By contrast, 'great peace have they which love thy law: and nothing shall offend them'[11].

SENSE OF OPPRESSION REPLICATED IN NEW HAVEN

The sense of oppression evident to many in the Washington area is replicated in a US city considerably further north, the influence on Washington of which has always been pronounced: New Haven, Connecticut, the seat of Yale University. As one analyst wrote in July 1996, Yale is the place 'where three threads of American social history - espionage, drug smuggling and secret societies - intertwine into one'[12]. The University, originally named Yale College, was established in 1718, after Elihu Yale,

Figure 12: A woodcut from 'Fifty Years of Yale News', by the Skull and Bones historian Clarence W. Mendel, published in 'Yale News' on 28th January 1928, New Haven, Connecticut. The illustration makes it crystal clear that the activities of Skull and Bones (and some other Yale-based secret societies) are of an occultic and Satanic nature. It is no surprise that a culture nurtured on devilry is inherently untamed and unruly.

educated in London, who served for many years with the British East India Company and became Governor of Fort Saint George, Madras, India, in 1687, had returned to England in 1699, having amassed a great fortune. Yale's name as a philanthropist having crossed the Atlantic, he responded to many requests from the Collegiate School in Connecticut for donations and learning materials; and an early graduate from the school, Cotton Mather, in due course suggested that the school should, as a consequence, be renamed Yale College. It was among Yale graduates that one of America's first intelligence organisations, known as the 'Culper Ring', was formed. This appears to have been the precedent for Yale University's close relationship, since the foundation of the Republic, with the intelligence community. And since such a sizeable proportion of the population of the DC and Virginia area belongs to that immense community, Washington's close association with Yale is self-evident.

The drug-running connection dates from 1824, when Samuel Russell, educated in London, established a firm entitled Russell and Company with a view to procuring opium in Turkey and smuggling it into China, which had the world's largest population of drug addicts. In 1828, the company was combined with a Boston-based opium concern, T. H. Perkins, and became the leading American opium smuggling organisation and the dominant American force in China. The Russell family was one of many whose European and American fortunes were acquired from the 'China' (opium) trade. Kris Millegan has written that 'Russell & Co. was very much a family affair, with uncles, cousins, brothers, fathers and sons dominating the firm and its allied banks and fronts. The Russell family was steeped in Yale College history'[13].

Samuel Russell's cousin, William Huntington Russell, who studied in Germany in 1831-32, formed a senior society, soon to become known as 'The Order of Skull and Bones', after arriving at Yale in 1832, his partner being Alfonso Taft. Russell introduced

"BONES" HALL, YALE.

"KEYS" HALL, YALE.

Figure 13: Two examples of the expensive real estate owned by Yale secret societies. Left: 'Bones' Hall, the HQ of the Satanic Skull and Bones secret society. Right: the HQ of the Scroll and Keys society. The notion of rule by secret societies, or synarchy, is of the essence of the conspiracy of the Illuminati, who secretly place their operatives in key posts or alongside the holders of power so that only the universalist policies of the Illuminati are pursued - as for instance, in the case of the failing European Union.

Taft and others to the atheistic social control methodology, or 'scientific method', which was flourishing in Germany, especially Prussia, at that time - including a diabolical educational system which has since invaded the US and British educational establishments, among those of many other misguided countries. The proposals included the prospectus advanced by Johan Wolfgang Fitche, which stipulated that children were to be handed over to the State, which would instruct them in what and how to think. Hence such modern aberrations as 'death education' in US and British schools.

In an interesting precursor of what happened to the US stock market and the financial system when the Taliban succeeded in virtually neutralising the production of opium in Afghanistan in 2001, a crash in the opium market occurred in 1837, with speculators' losses reverberating internationally - the financial panic being so severe that cash became scarce in both the United States and Great Britain. Likewise, the removal of Afghani opium from the international market under the Taliban caused certain pipelines of drug proceeds to dry up, depressing the US stock market and adding to international economic and financial stresses following the millennium Y2K bug fiasco and the deflating of the dotcom boom in 2000.

THE GERMAN CONNECTION CONFIRMED

Following a break-in to the meeting hall of the Skull and Bones Senior Society (the notorious Tomb) on 29th September 1876, one of a number of such edifices on the Yale campus [refer, for instance, to Figure 13 on page 37], a document was identified which asserted that 'Skull and Bones is the chapter of a corps in a German university. General Samuel Russell, its founder, was in Germany before his Senior Year and formed a warm friendship with a leading member of German society. He brought back with him to college, authority to found a chapter here'. The new Yale chapter was modelled upon the German university Verbindung (secret society) precedent, establishing what was to become the most conspicuous parallel between German and US society, namely the presence in academic centres of secret societies (synarchy), with which the social classes concerned remain obsessed to this day.

The group conducting the break-in called itself The Order of File and Claw [see Figure 11B on page 35], operating in apparent opposition to The Order of Skull and Bones, as the image of a skull with a file and a claw in lieu of the two bones used by Skull and Bones for its symbol, is thought to imply. They discovered an upstairs room, labelled Lodge 322, which they described as 'the sanctum sanctorum of the temple... furnished in red velvet'[14] with a pentagram on the wall. In other words, this and other Yale secret societies are nests of witchcraft. (The only room clad in red velvet that the Author has personal experience of was the dining room of Paul Channon MP, in Belgrave Square, London, in the 1960s). The 'File and Claw' report added that the group had discovered 'pictures of the founders of Bones at Yale, and of members of the Society in Germany, when the chapter was established here in 1832'.

The intruders also found an old engraving [Figure 10, on page 33] illustrating an open burial vault 'in which', according to a US expert, 'on a stone slab, rest four human skulls, grouped around a fool's cap and bells, an open book, several mathematical instruments, a beggar's scrip, and a royal crown'. On the arched wall in the engraving above the vault are the following German words: 'Wer war der Thor, wer Weiser, wer Bettler oder Kaiser': 'Whether fool, wise man, beggar or Emperor'. Below the vault is displayed this concluding sentence: 'Ob Arm, Ob Reich, im Tode gleich':

'Whether poor or rich, all of us die' - or, in the more cynical tone implied by these inscriptions: 'Poor or rich, all hit the ditch'.

The most celebrated of recent researchers into the secrets of Skull and Bones, and its corruption of American society, the late Anthony Sutton (whose widow thinks that his death in the early 2000s may not have been natural), explained the occult spiritual meaning and purpose of the focus on human skulls and bones (replicated in many photographs of 'Bonesmen' which have emerged into the public domain over the years), by citing the following penetrating statement by Margaret Elizabeth Stucki:

THE SKULL: MORTALITY UNMASKED 'The opposite of the mask is the skull. The face of the person is a fleshy skin worn between the two. People who deny the person as made in the image of God directly, and individually created and loved by Him, will seek either of these exits to being truly human: the mask, which covers the mortal man, or the skull which is left after mortal man has departed. Primitive minds who have not yet found God and sophisticates who have rejected Him, desire the mask and the skull'[15].

In other words, the adoption of, and fixation with, human skulls is a deliberately provocative display of The Order's blunt and insistent rejection of the existence of a

SECRET SOCIETIES AT YALE – MUNSEY'S MAGAZINE, JUNE 1894

SECRET SOCIETIES AT YALE.

One of the most remarkable features of college life at New Haven—The undergraduates' secret organizations, their fine club houses, their prestige and influence—"Skull and Bones," "Scroll and Key," "Wolf's Head," and others.

By Rupert Hughes.

14A

14B

Figure 14A: The Order of Skull and Bones, of which this is the symbol, was established at Yale in 1832-33 under the pirate (drug-running) flag of William H. Russell, used for his family firm's China operations. The US fascination with China, which was then the world's largest user and producer of opiates, can be traced to this connection. The skull and crossbones is the symbol of death that is used on bottles of poison: and poisoning is classically the Illuminati's preferred method of 'liquidation'. The symbol is used on pirates' flags, and was the centrepiece of the Nazi Tofenkopf ('death's head') insignia of the Schutzstaffel, or SS. It was used in Prussia by elite soldiers as long ago as 1740. Note that the skull has no lower jaw: the missing mandible signifies the absolute requirement of secrecy. Thanks to Anthony Sutton, Kris Millegan, Andrei Navrozov and others, and to the Internet, the secrecy imperative or cover of Skull and Bones, and of the Illuminati of which this murderously evil secret society is a central node, has been well and truly 'blown'. But although these people may think they have secured the upper hand, their fear of exposure remains intact. Figure 14B: The headpiece of an article on the 'Secret Societies at Yale', published in Munsey's Magazine in June 1894. The article explained: 'It is in the mysterious halls of the secret societies that the student finds his dearest pleasures, and from them it is that the powers that direct the college democracy issue'. In other words, Yale College is effectively controlled by its secret witchcraft societies.

God who cares for us and loves us. Those who reject God in this way are, by definition, in the hands of Satan, whose sole product is death (both physical and spiritual). That is why they deal endlessly and exclusively in death - whether raining fragmentation bombs down on civilian populations, massacring unknown hundreds of thousands of Iraqis, committing atrocities in the former Yugoslavia, exporting arrested individuals deemed to be terrorists to countries under the odious US regime of 'extraordinary rendition' so that they can be tortured there with legal impunity for the US officials concerned, bombing the hell out of Belgrade with Luciferian ferocity, manipulating the earth's crust using demonic technology to create earthquakes and tsunamis (the artificially induced tsunami that was generated on 26th December 2004 killed 300,000 people[16], a hundred times more than the 3,000 who were by official secret design murdered on 9/11), or systematically teaching children about death, and flooding the marketplace with Satanic videogames and demon-oriented playthings, thereby corrupting and destroying their childhood.

For all these people, the Apostle Paul - the converted Pharisee who was formerly 'breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord'[17], who, as this Scripture confirms, had himself been hyperactively engaged in serially murderous activities against the 'saints' (which means those who believe and profess that Jesus Christ is the Son of God) - has the following explicitly grave warning and condemnation which all Illuminists who have obtained a copy of this book and who have qualms about the course they are following should read again and again with appropriate care and diligence: for it describes their kind perfectly:

'And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge [so that there is no space for God in overcrowded modern life at all, especially in the education system - Ed.], God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient. Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetous-ness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventers of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful; Who, knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them'[18]. Paul's warning cannot be sufficiently repeated.

This passage succinctly describes, far better than has ever been done by anyone, the cynical mentality, depravity, obtuse stupidity, emotional aridity, arrogant self-satisfaction and self-absorption, coldness and indifference towards others and little children, ruthlessness and exploitativeness, acquisitiveness, and perverse fascination with the occult and with all the Works of Darkness, that the Author has encountered in the course of his several brushes with a certain type of US intelligence officer, while researching this book and other writings. It is not surprising that, at a certain conference several years ago addressed by prominent American operatives, a well-known British operative was observed to shun the company of the American intelligence contingent and to prefer the company of the odious KGB General Oleg Kalugin, who was also lecturing on that occasion. The point is that the odiousness of Soviet KGB and GRU operatives is taken for granted and well understood in the West. However some of their US counterparts have raised deception techniques and deviousness to the status of a new art form, wrapping as they do their nefarious practices and intentions in a spurious cloak of legality. For woe betide anyone from 'outside' who 'breaks the law' in this Devil's kitchen - notwithstanding that the National Security Act of 1947 et seq. and as amended, authorises US intelligence officials to break the law and can be considered indeed to be a 'crook's charter'.

In that passage from Romans, certain phrases are highlighted in bold type, such as 'inventers of evil things', because they are especially relevant in our context: but the entire inspired passage summarises to perfection the essence of the mentality which thinks that it has acquired supremacy over our lives and against which the millions of patriotic Americans and others who seek in whatever manner they can to uphold the truth, are implacably and instinctively opposed. For the deluded Illum-inati cadres believe, as a consequence of their brainwashing, that they have the right to order the affairs of the world and to create 'order out of chaos' - cynically aware that, since Lucifer is their master, and the Devil turns everything upside down, what they invariably achieve is the creation of the reverse - chaos out of order. And death.

The Order of Skull and Bones is an exclusively Yale-based cult with close historical connections with Germany, and focused exclusively on death. That is its ultimate product, as is the case with all Luciferian organisations. It is, as has been noted and will be seen, 'a multi-generational cult that believes in the power of death to bring about change, a group of Zeitgeist initiates believing that the end justifies the means, and using massive deaths to feed their necromancy'[19]. For the heirs of these people, the infliction of 300,000 deaths in Iraq (killing without flinching), and the unfettered use of primitive barbarian torture methods (inflicting pain without flinching) about which the US State Department's self-righteous annual compendium entitled Country Reports on Human Rights Practices complains vociferously when such atrocities are identified as having been committed by other countries, are neither here nor there.

The primary characteristic of all these people is that they are double-minded. Double-mindedness is the essence of the Hegelian dialectical methodology, which creates conflict to make 'progress' or advance 'history' - manipulating opposing forces in what to them is an exclusively mechanistic world, the methodology applied also by Nazism and Marxism-Leninism, both of which are driven by the same double-minded Hegelian roots. Hence, for instance, Paul Wolfowitz, a former US Deputy Secretary of Defense who presided over the furious attack on Iraq, will accordingly have been the perfect candidate to become President of the World Bank, which runs a massive front operation projecting itself as a global welfare agency. Behind the scenes, the World Bank handles intergovernmental payments and manages a parallel financial universe of colossal proportions about which the general public is largely ignorant. Meanwhile Mr Wolfowitz now sits on the opposite side of the dialectic, doling out 'aid' to Third World countries, after having bombed one of them back to the Stone Age.

Figure 11A on page 35 shows a crest on a paper napkin purloined by the Author from The Yale Club of New York, which contains within it the Yale University crest. In the circle around the centre are the words: 'Lux et Veritas', Latin for 'Light and Truth'. But in the centre are two Hebrew words, Urim and Thummim, which are the oracles used for some centuries by the children of Israel when the High Priest needed to know God's answer to a specific question: they signify 'Yes' and 'No'. As will be explained on page 42, the Yale crest accordingly advertises the fact that Yale College is a double-minded University of the Illuminati. Its long history of condoning the secret teaching of occultism, Satanic initiation and the gross abominations in which the College's secret societies specialise, identifies it as a generational source of poison.

YALE: THE PRIMARY NORTH AMERICAN UNIVERSITY OF THE ILLUMINATI

An obscure note buried in The Torah: A Modern Commentary[20], states that the Yale University crest indeed incorporates the two Hebrew words Urim and Thummim. These are believed to have been oracular pieces which were consulted by the High Priest when an answer, ostensibly from God, to a thorny question (such as: 'Should the children of Israel go out to war against the Philistines?') was required. As is typical with Torah commentary, Jewish authorities are unsure of the exact specifications of Urim and Thummim. According to some rabbinical authorities, they were probably stones with YES and No engraved on them, which were used like dice. In time, they fell into disuse, as priests and judges able to discern the appropriate answers (or the will of God) took their place. Josephus, the first century Jewish general, reported that Urim and Thummim had not been used for 200 years, but some authorities think they had ceased to be in use somewhat earlier. During the Babylonian exile [BC 536] they were reinstated briefly by Ezra [Ezra Chapter 2, verse 63] and they were employed also by Nehemiah [Nehemiah, Chapter 7, verse 65][21].

Thus we discover that Yale's crest conveys the following deliberately ambivalent message: 'Light and Truth: Yes and No'. Hence, on the one hand, Yale University purports to dispense Light and Truth, while on the other hand, it simultaneously dispenses the reverse thereof, namely: 'Darkness and Lies', the dissemination of which is delegated to its secret witchcraft societies. And that it does precisely this is openly displayed, in thinly-disguised form, for the whole world to see upon the University's crest.

What this means unequivocally is that Yale University is double-minded: and since, as we have seen, double-mindedness is of the essence of Illuminism, and the University is effectively controlled and subordinate to its own evil secret societies which practice occult abominations and witchcraft-related rituals, it is obvious to anyone with eyes to see that Yale University is North America's primary seat of occultic Illuminism in the education sector: the University of the Illuminati, in thrall to Lucifer.

James, the brother of Jesus Christ, writes in his General Epistle: 'A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways'. Just two verses earlier, he warns that '...he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed'[22]. In part, this means that, at a certain stage in life, we have to make a key decision: whose side are we on, that of Jesus Christ, or Lucifer? Wavering between the two leads to perdition, if the tension is not resolved in favour of God, and lies are preferred instead. James is elaborating, in his usual succinct manner, upon the Word of Jesus Christ found in Matthew, Chapter 6, verses 19-24:

'Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in Heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through and steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light' (meaning, that if we are not double-minded, but have made, of our own free will, the decision that is the necessary prerequisite for the Free Gift of His Grace, and the consequent revelation to us of 'the Way the Truth and the Life'[23], then the light that is consequently within us will shine forth and our 'whole body shall be full of light' - the opposite characteristic of those who remain double-minded, and therefore full of darkness). Jesus concluded: 'But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness'. And what is Satan called? He is called Lucifer, 'the light-bearer'[24]- namely, the bearer of false light. This 'illuminates' why Jesus so carefully employed these words: 'If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!' - by which he meant that if we substitute the false, occult light (= darkness) of Lucifer, as those that this book describes do, then how great is that darkness! How great indeed!

It may not be widely known outside the intelligence community that the CIA and its agencies have a philosophical rule or principle, which states that members of the intelligence community alone are entitled to what they call 'the truth', and that the masses are accordingly not entitled to it. That this is a central component of the indoctrinated CIA mentality has been confirmed to the Author by an attendee at an intelligence conference, who explained that this was in fact one of the first precepts that those attending the conference were taught.

Equipped with our observation of the hideous environment of darkness in which these people live and have their being, and within which they plot to destabilise all our lives, we can discern a deeper meaning to this precept than may seem superficially to apply. The 'truth' that is meant here is the Tight' to which they themselves are addicted, namely the false light of the Tight-bearer, Lucifer'. That Lucifer, the Devil, the god of the Illuminati, turns the truth and everything else upside down, and is the bearer of false light, was of course notoriously confirmed by the occultist, magician, necromancer, Freemason, and serial worker of demonic abominations, Albert Pike, the 'father' of revised US Scottish Rite Freemasonry, in his 'bible' of Masonry, 'Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry':

'Lucifer, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light, and with its splendors intolerable blinds feeble, sensual, or selfish Souls? Doubt it not!'[25].

Reverting to Scripture [Matthew Chapter 6, verse 24], the Lord concluded: 'No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon'.

You cannot be double-minded and expect to get away with it indefinitely.

***

Confirmation of the institutionalised reprobate occultism and witchcraft which haunts and controls Yale University is available not just from the evidence that has been amassed by a number of serious researchers over the past several decades about The Order of Skull and Bones, which has been greatly accelerated with the maturity of the Internet[26], but also by assembled information about many other secret societies of the synarchy. Some have sinister tomb-like structures, called temples, very similar to the 'Bones' tomb on the Yale campus, such as Book and Snake (Sigma Delta Chi), He Boule, Berzelius, Wolf's Head (founded in 1883), Scroll and Key, and The Order of the File and Claw [see Figure 11B, page 35] (antagonistic to and yet evidently part of Skull and Bones, which is an exact proxy for the standard cooperation-cum-compet-ition modus operandi of the intelligence community). File and Claw is thought to have been a manifestation of a chameleon-like group calling itself 'Bull and Stones'.

Phi Beta Kappa, an early secret society, was established at Yale in 1780, functioning until 1825. An article in Yale Daily News in 1928 about the secret societies and the snobbish social system with which they have always been associated was accompanied by a woodcut illustrating the Satanic nature of their activities, focused on placing the neophyte in a coffin [Figure 22, page 36][27]. The erection of these tomb-like temples has served the intended purpose of providing a pretext for the perpetuation of the secret societies themselves, while infecting Yale University with an aura of evil which is integrated with its public 'persona' to such an extent that their notoriety obliterates any 'Lux et Veritas' that the University might lay claim to, domestically and internationally: which is unsurprising since the University proclaims and takes pride in the fact that it is double-minded, via its crest.

The convoluted history of these and other secret societies at the University of the Illuminati at Yale (including several others using Greek-letter acronyms such as Delta Kappa Epsilon, Psi Upsilon, Delta Psi (a.k.a. 'The Tea Company') and Alpha Delta Phi), suggests that at various periods, warfare seems to have prevailed within the complex campus synarchy, as would be expected in any such Devil's kitchen - one irony here being that synarchy is supposed to be the opposite of anarchy, namely a state of affairs in which everything is controlled by secret organisations, whereas under anarchy, everything is out of control: yet geopolitically, synarchy leads to anarchy by the following sequence: the Illuminised intelligence services are in control, and out of control, the overall outcome being the grandfather of geopolitical anarchy. No-one in the United States seems to have the slightest idea how to address this crisis.

It is well known that such rivalry has at times extended at Yale to the raiding of a rival secret society's tomb for the purpose of seizing and stealing the ritual artefacts found there. In the first half of the 18th century, secret societies, notably Cretonia (which lasted just a few years), Livonia (reputed to have lasted for a century) and Brothers in Unity (fate unknown), had emerged, then faded. The proliferation of secret societies at the University in later years led quickly to intense competition between them to 'tap' the most eligible (and genealogically acceptable) candidates. What these candidates scramble for is to be selected by the most prestigious of the secret societies, for the privilege of being taught all about occultism, witchcraft and the cult of death.

Council on Foreign Relations [Direction and Coordination]
Trilateral Commission: Instrument of German Black intelligence (DVD).
Bilderberg: Evaluates and selects personnel to implement Illuminati policy and strategy.
Set up by the Pole, Dr Retinger with the SS Officer Prince Bernhard, on behalf of the Abwehr/DVD.
Chapter 322 of THE ORDER Fast-track occult training centre of German Illuminati origin
Inner Core
Inner Circle
Outer Circle
The Penumbra of THE ORDER
Pilgrim Society
Atlantic Council
Bohemian Grove [German Illuminati decadence]
(California: Modelled after the debauched pagan 'groves' and high places dedicated to idols (demons) explicitly condemned throughout the Old Testament).

Derivation: *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to The Order of Skull & Bones*, Antony C. Sutton, Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana,1986, page 37. The diagram is further annotated by this Author.

The late Anthony Sutton, who studied Skull and Bones for many years, concluded that the synarchy system of Illuminati control in the United States is organised as shown in this diagram: (1) An Outer Circle, consisting of large, open agitprop networks with some membership from Skull and Bones; (2) An Inner Circle, made up of secret societies, including Chapter 322; and (3) An Inner Core, a very secret society within a secret society network, which is the key inner decision-making, steering core. Sutton's diagram is accurate in asserting Inner Circle participation by other secret organisations: among these is Opus Dei. Entities using the term The Order, beginning with the Jesuits, are components, along with many other secret societies. The chief Rex in the United States has been the German-accented operative, Dr Henry Kissinger, 'mentor' of alleged DVD chief, George H. W. Bush (Sr.), who succeeded Nazi Admiral Canaris in 1976-78. Positioning the director of German 'Black' intelligence inside the 'Main Enemy' was clearly a stroke of German Nazi Luciferian genius. ■

Figure 15: A diagram published by the late Skull and Bones expert, Anthony Sutton, explaining how Chapter 322 of The Order relates to some other Illuminati organisations. Sutton's realisation that Skull and Bones is a Chapter (labelled 322) of a vast (German) global conspiracy has not been sufficiently appreciated. The present work reveals inter alia that organisations calling themselves The Order, like Opus Dei, are ALL Illuminati components.

CAMPUS COMPETITION TO 'ENJOY' A LIFE LEADING TO PERDITION

Each of these societies developed its own occultic badge, redolent with black symbolism. For instance, He Boule's badge displays an owl, the predatory bird of the night, while that of Eta Phi is a mask. As a certain Rupert Hughes wrote in the obscure Munsey's Magazine, June 1894 [see Figure 14B, page 39], 'the Bones badge consists of a gold skull and crossbones over the number 322, and it is worn on the lower left side of the waistcoat.... there are many interesting customs in vogue among these (competing) secret brotherhoods, such as their habit of returning home from meetings in absolute oblivion of each other and of everybody else, walking at opposite sides of the pavement and crossing each other's paths on entering their houses.... Most inexplicable to an outsider is the fact that a Yale man is unwilling to breathe a word about his college society, and seemingly feels insulted at any mention of it. Even the most bewitching young woman is warned not to make any remark about his badge (which, by the way, is supposed never to leave his person, even during a bath, when it is carried in his mouth)...'.

Recall that the Skull and Bones symbol has no mandible, indicating that members are sworn to secrecy. This is what the intelligence officers meant when they stated, at the conference mentioned earlier, that 'the truth' is theirs exclusively, and is not available to the masses, who, being 'profane', are despised and entitled to be lied to at all times .

As has been seen, by the 'truth', they mean the lies of Lucifer - including the 'secrets' of the Ancient Mysteries of occult paganism and demon invocation which they hold for themselves and which cannot be shared with the 'profane' (the Rest of Humanity).

The ritual of 'tapping' new candidates to these secret societies (in this case, Skull and Bones, and Wolf's Head) was described by Rupert Hughes in Munsey's Magazine thus: 'The day of election into these societies is perhaps the quaintest feature of Yale life. It is called 'tapping time' or 'slap day', and falls on the third Thursday in May, at five in the afternoon. Then all the anxious Juniors congregate in front of what is now

Figure 16: The fixation with rising from the dead, from a tomb, which is a central feature of the Skull and Bones death-oriented witchcraft initiation ritual. This illustration is extracted from 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', one of modern Freemasonry's classic works, by the late 33rd Degree Mason Manly P. Hall [Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., Richmond, VA, 1923/1976, frontispiece). It celebrates the grip of the Lion's Paw (handshake) in the 'Pyramid Mysteries'. The priest wore a lion's mask. According to the occultist Manly P Hall: 'By this grip the spirit in man, long buried in the sepulchre of substance, is raised to life, and the candidate goes forth as a builder entitled to the wages of an initiate'.

used as 'the fence', and pray that they may be chosen' - unaware or oblivious to the fact that if they were to be chosen, they run the risk of their entire life being blighted by the consequences of indulging in occultism. 'Soon, a solemn Senior issues from one of the society halls and threads the crowd until he finds the man he has been delegated to notify. He deals him a vigorous slap on the back, and says sternly: 'Go to your room''.

'Amid wild cheering, the lucky man obeys mutely, followed by his slapper, who says to him: 'Will you accept an election to the society known as Skull and Bones?' and goes back in silence to the hall (i.e. temple, or tomb-like secret society house - Ed.) whence he came, while the happy [i.e. deceived and naively deluded - Ed.] Junior returns to receive the envious congratulations of his friends. About the same time, a Keys man, with a Wolf's Head man in his wake, goes through the same evolutions'.

'Between 'tapping time' and initiation, a week elapses. During this, the slapper and the slapped preserve a sacred mutual silence, except on one occasion, when the new man is notified of the time and place of the awful ordeal, which is consummated in the dark recesses of the mysterious chapter house'.

This passage makes it clear that activities with homosexual overtones comparable to the esoteric ritual known to be perpetrated by Skull and Bones upon its neophytes, take place in the temples of the other prominent societies, too. There is evidently competition to be 'tapped' for the most prestigious secret societies, which are Skull and Bones and Scroll and Keys. Rupert Hughes wrote that 'Keys' 'takes annually the fifteen most convivial and socially prominent men left by Bones. [But] Wolf's Head is much less highly rated, and instances are not wholly unknown wherein students unnoticed either by Bones or Keys have yet refused to join Wolf's Head. Its pin is a golden wolf's head transfixed on a loop, and it has a magnificent chapter house'.

THE SATANIC-HOMOSEXUAL FOCUS OF THESE HIDEOUS BLACK RITUALS

The least celebrated, but by far the most distinguished, living analyst of The Order of Skull and Bones, is the Author's friend Andrei Navrozoy, whose extraordinary book The Gingerbread Race[28], published in 1993, followed Antony Sutton's groundbreaking expose by about seven years. While at Yale, Andrei was the editor of The Yale Literary Review, giving him access to extensive information about Skull and Bones, which had been published inter alia decades earlier in the journal. Having single-handedly unravelled much of the mystery of The Order, Andrei explains, in the final pages of his book, that he made a concluding attempt to expose George Bush Sr.'s membership of Skull and Bones and its implications for governance, prior to the General Election on 8th November 1988. In the course of his researches, Andrei had discovered the Satanic-homosexual nature of the ritual imposed upon 'tapped' members of The Order, by way of Bones' sordid initiation rites. It is appropriate to get to the point here by citing The New York Times, so that any suggestion that this Author may have any axe to grind by following what has since become an honourable tradition of exposing these extreme evils embedded in the American synarchy system, can have no validity-Several weeks prior to that election, Andrei submitted an article to The New York Times entitled 'Why I am Not Voting'. Just one week prior to the election, the article was accepted and set up in type - too late for the article to have any marked effect on the outcome of Bush vs. Dukkakis. On Monday 7th November 1988, Andrei received a telephone call from the Editor who asked him whether it was true that (Bonesman) William J. Buckley Jr. belonged to the secret society. 1 confirmed this, whereupon the

Figure 17:

ACHIEVEMENTS AND REINFORCED GERMAN CONNECTIONS OF THE PRIMARY MID-19TH CENTURY CONSOLIDATORS OF THE ORDER OF SKULL AND BONES AT YALE

The three key mid-19th century figures featured here were responsible for sowing the seeds of the wholesale destabilisation of the traditional morality-based educational system, and ripening it for its contemporary revolutionary purpose*.

In his 1986 work 'America's Secret Establishment, the late Antony Sutton explained: ' Our present educational chaos can be traced to three members of The Order: Daniel Coit Gilman (first President of the University of California and First President of Johns Hopkins University), Timothy Dwight (12th President of Yale University) and Andrew Dickson White (first President of Cornell University). Gilman imported the experimental psychology of the Hegelian physiologist Wilhelm Wundt from Germany. This psychology was grafted onto the American educational system through the educational laboratories at Columbia and Chicago Universities. And they moved... John Dewey [notorious American education engineer - Ed.], a pure Hegelian in philosophy, along the fast track in his career. This has been aptly termed The Leipzig Connection'. For Hegelians, the individual is not important, so the child must be trained to have the attitudes so that he causes no trouble to the state which he is taught to serve, rather than the reverse'.

Antony C. Sutton, op. cit, pages 56 et seq. Hence, the evil influence of the Skull and Bones department of the Illuminati has corrupted and reoriented the US educational system for mental-psychological mass manipulation control purposes. The result Outcome-Based Education, also incorporates Soviet methodology.

DANIEL C. GILMAN
1856: Founded Russell Trust
(The Order, now RTA, Inc.)
Librarian of Yale University
President: University of California
President: Johns Hopkins University
President: Carnegie Institution
THE ORDER
[incorporated
1856]
ANDREW D. WHITE
1854: University of Berlin
1867: President Cornell University
1894: U.S. Ambassador to Berlin
TIMOTHY DWIGHT
1856: University of Berlin
1856: Yale Theological Seminary
1866: President Yale College

Derivation: America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to The Order of Skull & Bones, Antony C. Sutton, Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana, 1986, page 93.

***Note: Skull and Bones, a.k.a. The Brotherhood of Death,** a.k.a. **'The Order'**, was established [see main text] at Yale University in 1832. *The Order was first* incorporated in 1856.

' So far as education is concerned, the Illuminati objective was [is - Ed.] as follows: 'We must win the common people in every corner. This will be obtained chiefly by means of the schools, and by open, hearty behaviour, show, condescension, popularity and toleration for their prejudices which we shall at leisure root out and dispel' '.

Antony C. Sutton, op. cit, page 80.

NOTE: SEE BOX, PAGE 61, FOR CONFIRMATION THAT THE INITIATION RITES OF SKULL AND BONES AND OF THE SECT OF THE ILLUMINATI, AS DESCRIBED IN 1798 BY JOHN ROBISON. COINCIDE. I.E. SKULL AND BONES IS A CHAPTER OF THE ILLUMINATI. BOTH ARE SWORN TO SILENCE: HENCE THE SKULL HAS NO MANDIBLE.

Editor got round to the point of his call, which was that the article could not be run. Andrei had supplied The New York Times with some of the details of his research. On the very next day, he received at Yale a cutting from The New York Times, which appears to have used his material, and from which Andrei cited certain passages in his book. The article began as follows:

YALE SOCIETY RESISTS PEEKS INTO ITS CRYPT

Special to The New York Times

'NEW HAVEN - In a sylvan pocket tucked off High Street, masked by blank slits in an ancient stone building called the Tomb, barred from the world by a padlocked iron door, Skull and Bones keeps its secrets closely. But it casts a shadow across the country'.

The article had appeared on the front page of the 'Metropolitan' section of the newspaper on Friday, 4th November 1988, and had been carefully timed so as to preclude the possibility of any further investigation immediately ahead of the scheduled Presidential Election on 8th November 1988. Andrei had in fact provided the details for this article as early as two years earlier at a lunch. 'The New York Times had decided to flex its muscle, but not so much as to cause damage to the Bush campaign', he elaborated. The article continued:

'If Bonesmen say anything at all, they portray their association as a venerable fraternity whose rituals instil honourable and selfless values in youthful initiates and forge intimate bonds of friendship that last a lifetime. But their cloak of secrecy suggests something considerably more kabbalisric' [sic! This, from the Jewish-dominated New York newspaper].

As Andrei now explained, 'what that 'something' was, the American voter would not be told, although the reporter did mention, thirteen equivocating paragraphs later, that the youthful initiates...

'...recount their sexual histories while lying naked in a coffin. Within the Tomb are the purloined skulls of Pancho Villa and Geronimo, the latter obtained by a raiding party that included the Vice President's father, Prescott S. Bush.... Efforts to get to the truth are met either by silence (Jonathan Bush, the Vice President's brother declined to answer questions on the subject) or by carefully crafted misinformation'.

CONFIRMATION OF HOMOSEXUAL-SATANIC ORGIES PUBLISHED IN 2004

In 1977, Ron Rosenbaum, who as an undergraduate at Yale lived next door to the Skull and Bones Tomb, prepared what he thought was the first outsider's investigation into the secret society, its rituals and its baleful influence on American culture. He asserted in The New York Observer in 2004 that a member of the Yale community had reported that in April 2000, he had managed to audiotape a Skull and Bones initiation ceremony from a previously unexploited perch within the Tomb. In April 2004, an attempt was made, Rosenbaum explained, to videotape another such ceremony. The team's equipment included three night-vision-capable digital video cameras, one tape recorder, a stepladder and two walkie-talkies. As a result, images were obtained of a figure dressed like the Devil, another figure dressed in a hooded-skeleton costume, and other figures clad in black robes. The most significant finding reported by Rosenbaum was a recording of the Skull and Bones 'death mantra', which nonsensically reiterates the following theme, celebrating the Illuminati's sole product - Death: 'The hangman equals death! The devil equals death! Death equals death!'

Rosenbaum's report in The New York Observer continued: 'Initiates spend [part of] their Senior Year in the basement crypt of the Bones Tomb taking turns lying in a coffin, and, in two long, intense, psycho-drama autobiographical sessions in said coffin, recount their personal sexual history to the other 14 chosen ones.... The death-centered imagery, the injunction to initiates that they must "die to the barbarian world" and be reborn in the Elysian company of the elect of The Order, as they call it, are what makes Skull and Bones radically different from a college fraternity'[29].

Given this endless focus on death, it is hardly surprising that George W. Bush Jr. presided over more executions than any State Governor in the history of the United States: his mind was permanently affected by this culture of death, by this devilish illusion that death is to be exploited in the interests of 'change'. Some Skull and Bones membership books contain pictures of a large number of skulls laid out on a bench, with the word 'Equality' inscribed beneath them, conveying the message that everyone meets death, so that since this is the case, everything is permitted prior to death -including mass executions, fragmentation bombing, and all the other death-oriented atrocities already mentioned. Rosenbaum's report elaborated with a detailed summary of the obscene exclamations and shrieks that the team managed to record, which are frankly too depraved to be repeated here: the reader must refer to the original report in The New York Observer. However it is necessary to relate the central elements of the ritual which were definitively recorded by the investigation team on 12th April 2004, beginning with the stage of the proceedings when 'a devil figure pulled them' (the neophytes or initiates) one by one 'into a white tent in the [internal] courtyard where, we think, they found their femurs' (human bones which they were each required to select from a pile of bones presumably rifled from desecrated graves or from the bodies of murdered victims from earlier years) 'and emerged with what looked like a thigh bone, although it was impossible to tell whether it once belonged to a human or not'.

'When they re-emerged from the tent, they were led to the centrepiece of this part of the ritual. They were forced face-to-face with a shocking tableau: a guy holding what seemed like a butcher knife, wearing a kind of animal-skin "barbarian" look, stood over what seemed to be a woman covered in fake blood and not much else. The neophyte then approached a skull a few feet away from the knife-wielder-and-victim tableau. The neophyte knelt and kissed the skull, at which point the guy with the knife knelt and cut the throat of the prone figure (well, pretended to cut the throat)'.

Andrei Navrozov told the Author personally after Ms book had been published that the ritual in the tomb involved one or more unspeakable acts perpetrated upon the initiates, involving a coffin and sexual activity. To this day, Bonesmen at Yale hold what an early observer described as 'strange, occultish' initiation and other rites each Thursday and Sunday in the gloomy Tomb, which was constructed in 1856. Navrozov also explained the curious custom whereby every year, the 15 current Bonesmen were given a task, involving a requirement that an artefact must be brought back to the Tomb on the Yale campus. The mentioned skulls are the most notorious such artefacts.

As an example, a given year's task might require the Bonesmen to remove a candelabra from a prominent building, or to bring in the Archbishop of Canterbury's mitre. The Author has invented these two examples, but they illustrate the kind of task which has to be fulfilled. An observation to be made is that the annual task emphasises one of the characteristics of American society in general, and of Bonesmen in particular: acquisitiveness. The accumulation of material wealth is a lifelong preoccupation.

A COMPROMISING ADDRESS BY A BONES FOUNDER EXPOSED

One of the most prominent of the early nineteenth century Bonesmen, Daniel Coit Gilman, accompanied by Timothy Dwight and Andrew Dickinson White, went to study philosophy at the University of Berlin. Gilman returned from Europe and incorporated Skull and Bones as the Russell Trust Association in 1856 (in recent years, allegedly to hide irregularities calling into question its charitable tax status, amended to RTA Inc.), with himself as Treasurer and William H. Russell, the cousin of the drug trafficker, as President; and he spent the next 14 years in New Haven consolidating the power of The Order. In 1858 he was appointed Yale's Librarian. It was Gilman who presented The Order of Skull and Bones with the sinister engraving of the four skulls - fool, wise man, beggar, emperor - discussed earlier [see Figure 10, page 33]. The picture is accompanied by a card which reads: 'From the German Chapter. Presented by DC Gilman of D. 50'. We will investigate the meaning of the D shortly.

The influence of these three men was enormous. Daniel Gilman became the first President of the University of California, and helped to found, and was the first President of, Johns Hopkins University in Washington, DC. Gilman was also the first President of the Carnegie Institution, which furthers 'One World' strategies, and helped to found three other prominent foundations - the Peabody, Slater and Russell Sage Foundations. His colleague Andrew D. White was the first President of Cornell University. Millegan reported that he also served as the 'US Minister to Russia, US Ambassador to Berlin and first President of the American Historical Association' (which allegedly regulates historical research and publications ensuring its consistency with, evolving Illuminati strategy). White was also Chairman of the American delegation to the first Hague Conference in 1899, which established an international judiciary'.

Bonesman and Gilman 'buddy' Timothy Dwight, a Professor (believe it or not) at Yale Divinity School, was installed as the President of Yale in 1886. As Milligan confirms, all Yale Presidents since then have either been Bonesmen or else directly tied to the Order of Skull and Bones and its interests. Therefore, this occult Order is integrated into Yale's governing structures and accordingly, as we have seen, effectively controls and influences the University itself, as well as the United States' strategies and the social environment of the country. The trio of Gilman, Dwight and White also influenced other key areas of US and international life, having founded the American Economic Association, the American Chemical Society and the American Psychological Association. Their influence on the US educational system has been profoundly damaging, leading to the imposition of 'Outcome-Based Education', modelled along Soviet lines, which seeks not to inculcate knowledge, skills and understanding but to manipulate the mind and psycho-social orientation of young people for control purposes.

The influence of the Skull and Bones death-oriented manipulative trio on the US educational system is displayed in the panel on page 51 [Figure 18], and the essence of Outcome-Based Education is explained in the diagram on page 53 [Figure 19]. The German origins of the educational assault are examined more fully in Chapter 4.

For the 50th anniversary of the foundation of The Order of Skull and Bones in 1883, Timothy Dwight not only revealed that Elihu Yale's tombstone had been stolen and brought to the Tomb, but also described part of the Skull and Bones initiation ceremony. Andrei Navrozov referred to this document amusingly, citing 'the manuscript of Timothy Dwight's fiftieth anniversary history of the society, a copy of which I am at present the sole uninitiated possessor'[30], and from which he reproduced this passage, Figure 18 [See also Chapter 4]:

THE INFLUENCE OF WILHELM WUNDT ON AMERICAN EDUCATION

HERBART [GERMANY]
Educational theorist. Individual = servant of the state. Studied at Jena University under known Illuminati Herder, Fichte and Goethe.
HEGEL [GERMANY]
Chief exponent of the dialectic, whereby the Illuminati create conflict of 'opposites'.
WILHELM WUNDT
(University of Leipzig 1875-1920)
TRAINS AMERICAN STUDENTS WHO BECOME INFLUENTIAL EDUCATORS
DANIEL COIT GILMAN
(THE ORDER OF SKULL AND BONES)
BECOMES PRESIDENT OF JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY
TRAINS JOHN DEWEY
WILLIAM WELCH
(THE ORDER OF SKULL AND BONES)
FOUNDS HOPKINS MEDICAL SCHOOL
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY TEACHERS COLLEGE
John Dewey (1904-1930)
E. L. Thorndike (1899-1942)
James E. Russell (1897-1917)
Department of Psychology
James McCattell (1891-1917)
UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
John Dewey (1894-1904)
CHARLES JUDD (1909-1946)
German Monetary Economics:
Von Hayek, Von Mises *et al.*
Funded by Rockefeller Foundations General Education Board and Carnegie Foundation

Derivation: America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to The Order of Skull & Bones, Antony C. Sutton, Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana, 1986, page 84.

NOTE: The synarchy (rule by secret societies) system is buttressed by the operations of numerous tax-exempt foundations established by members of The Order, which finance projects in furtherance of the secret objectives of the Illuminati, of which Skull and Bones is a coercive component.

in which Dwight revealed the secret Satanic gobbledegook imprecation used by the Bones initiates, and the sexual content of initiation:

'But the initiation itself is not changed. The same gelatinous mess is made of the barbarian stranger in every case, by the same process and by the same solemn rites' [The reader will not be assisted by this Author in interpreting the preceding sentence, which provides 'horse's mouth' confirmation of the perverse sexual content of the 'process and solemn rites', which are 'the same' for every initiate: in other words, there is not a single Skull and Bones initiate who has escaped this Satanic ritual involving masturbating with his peers].

'The new candidate is recreated; ceases to be a Him; finds a new spirit within him, which casts out the old [sic confirmation for True Christians, and for anyone with common sense, that the rites have the intended effect of infesting or investing the initiate with demons, or causing him to suffer demonic infestation or possession with evil spirits, which of course take hold and drive his behaviour unless he repents, for the rest of his life]; knows more of Demosthenes [see below] in a few moments [i.e., though the resulting infestation or possession by evil spirits] than his teachers had ever taught him, and, as he gains for himself the accurate meaning and pronunciation of the word 'Toby-fkliwizi-firo-catlicko-carricks-carnicksi-carnickso-macpherson-o'phane', begins to understand and to speak the sacred language. And so we all become some of the Skull and Crossbones, to whom all others are but contemptible foemen'.

CRASH COURSE TO INFEST IGNORANT YOUNG MEN WITH DEMONS

From this passage, and the preceding information, contained in an address by one of the early patriarchs of The Order of Skull and Bones, who was then the President of Yale College, no less, the following horrendous intelligence emerges:

1. The initiation rituals are designed to be of such demonic intensity that evil spirits are duly invoked, as intended, with the express purpose that the neophyte being initiated is to be infested and/or possessed by them. In occultism and magic, infestation or possession by evil spirits can occur only when the participant, of his own free will, invites Evil Spirit (which, as is manifested in the New Testament is/are both singular and plural simultaneously) to enter him or her. This is an undisputed fact with which all experts, and sound exorcists, agree. (Likewise, in spiritual healing the sick person must, of his or her own free will, believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and has power over all things and the desire to heal the person: otherwise, prayers for spiritual restoration to health may not be heeded). The Satanic initiation rites of The Order of Skull and Bones are clearly crafted so as not to compromise the free will of the initiate, while at the same term subjecting him in practice to oppressive 'peer pressure' that by now he proves unable to resist. Such instrumental interference with and exploitation of the innocence of young people represents a grievous blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. The temple of the Holy Spirit is the human person[31].

2.1. The initiate attends Skull and Bones rituals every Thursday and Sunday during his Senior Year. The first point to make here is that this means his energies and attention are being seriously hijacked and diverted from his studies and from the source of enlightenment that he should in fact be paying attention to, on the assumption that he wishes to progress spiritually, namely Scripture. If he, instead of wasting his time with these reprobate occult rituals and activities, were to devote just half an hour a day to reading Scripture, he would quickly understand that in caving in to The

Order's peer pressure tactics, he is being diverted by evil forces from the Way, the Truth and the Life of Jesus Christ. We have to place this consideration first, since this is the essence of the mistake he is making. Instead of which the initiate, being blind, is being led to perdition by the blind, or by those who have been blinded by Satan and who have perversely mistaken the false Tight' he offers for the real thing. 'And no marvel: for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light' (= Lucifer)[32].

2.2. WHY must the initiate attend Skull and Bones rituals every Thursday and Sunday during his Senior Year? The answer to this question 'illuminates' the extreme gravity of the Curse of Yale. What is going on during these rituals? More than enough is known about their content to make it crystal clear to all sober analysts that regular attendance at these Satanic rituals has the following single purpose: to procure specifically that the neophytes/initiates are indeed infested and taken over or possessed by demons (evil spirits). In other words, what is happening is that the initiates undergo a systematic series of witchcraft rituals designed to impregnate evil spirits into high-flying young persons who, unless their wills resist throughout the initiation rites - or their wills are robust enough to give them the strength to refuse to participate and to escape, which has never been heard of - are intended to emerge from Yale infested or possessed by evil spirits, so that they are accordingly equipped for the Luciferian work they will be required to undertake (for massive material rewards, of course) all through their lives on behalf of the Illuminati. We can see clearly that the foregoing is true not least by comparing the intense course of rituals provided by The Order at Yale with the 'more leisurely' diversionary 'service' rendered to Masonic candidates and adepts as they progress through successive Scottish Rite or Grand Orient Degrees towards infestation by evil spirits and the worship of Lucifer. Those processes usually take many years, unless a key figure (such as the current Shah of Persia in exile) is considered to be of such prospective value to the Luciferian elite that he is initiated into, say, the 33rd Degree, having jumped or omitted a large number of 'lesser' degrees. By contrast, the The Order of Skull and Bones at Yale provides an intensive crash course which is intended to procure that, within the space of just the initiate's Senior Year or less, the selected initiates are infested or possessed by demons when they leave Yale. This ensures that, once deposited back into 'real life', no time is wasted by these 'chosen ones', who are accordingly equipped and fully qualified to proceed with the Luciferian tasks that the niuminati will in due course allot to them.

OUTCOME-BASED EDUCATION (= PROGRAMMING)

1	2	3	4	5
CLEAN THE SLATE	DUMB THEM DOWN	MODIFY THEIR BEHAVIOUR	CONFUSE THEIR VALUES	ASSESS. REMEDIATE. ASSESS.
Uproot all pr-existing values, religion, ideas, conditions	Omit academics, and reduce knowledge to a minimum	Stimulus/ response: standard animal training techniques	Dialectical thinking: Technique to induce changes in thinking	Verify that the programming has taken firm hold and brainwashing is final

Figure 19: Outcome-Based Education, imposed in the United States, is derived from the subversive educational philosophy of Wilhelm Wundt [see Figure 18] and from the Soviet blueprint. Its purpose is to brainwash young people so that their minds are controlled and they can be the more easily manipulated.

3. The neophyte/initiate 'begins to understand and to speak the sacred language'. In June 2003, the Author received a weird telephone call from an individual (later clearly identifiable as a CIA operative), calling from Dublin (a hotbed of CIA activity) who, after alleging family ties with the Author, started to discuss Scripture. (Since the National Security Agency, GCHQ and other snooping organisations listen in to the Author's telephone calls, this sudden feigned interest, out of the blue, in the Author's scriptural studies, was clearly a consequence of such routine eavesdropping). During the first half hour, the statements uttered by this cold caller were scripturally correct. However as the conversation progressed, the caller introduced certain abominable aberrations, such as the diversionary lie that Eve had sex with the serpent - from which this ogre concluded that the descendants of that union were the Black and Brown races, while the descendants of the union between Adam and Eve were the White and Yellow races (the old Nazi eugenics garbage). The Author has possession of the name and the Dublin and San Diego addresses of this individual. After ordering a large number of publications, shouting 'I don't mind how much it costs, do you hear me? Send me everything you publish' and providing 'his' (CIA) Credit Card details, the caller then proceeded with the following question: 'Can you speak in tongues?' Upon the Author saying that he could not, the caller emitted a loud demonstration of incomprehensibly hideous convoluted verbal non-stop gobbledegook.

The Author quickly realised that this represented a demonstration of an infestation which the caller could evidently 'turn on and off' at will, and which he purported to believe was the work of the Holy Spirit - whereas of course in reality it represented a manifestation of trickery by one or more manifestations of Evil Spirit, and therefore represented another blasphemy against the Holy Ghost (for which no forgiveness is available). When the Apostles were visited at Pentecost by the Holy Spirit, they spoke in foreign tongues and made perfect sense to those foreigners who were present[33], whereas the harsh demoniac noise coming down the phone line from this deluded CIA operative was chaotic, confused, and meaningless. After two further unsolicited demonstrations of this dreadful stream of confused drivel, which the CIA caller started and stopped, like turning the bathwater on and off, and which he continued to misrepresent as a manifestation of the Holy Spirit's gift of 'speaking in tongues', the Author made it plain to the caller that he was in error, and finally managed to terminate the unsolicited 'conversation'[34].

But in the light of the passage from Timothy Dwight's 50th anniversary address to assembled Bonesmen, placed in the public domain by Andrei Navrozov, it is crystal clear to the Author that this verbal garbage was illustrative of or comparable to, and from the same source as, the 'sacred language' of Skull and Bones witchcraft, such as: 'Toby-fkliwizi-firo-catlicko-carricks-carnicksi-carnickso-macpherson-o'phane'.

In other words, fake 'speaking in tongues' is one of the manifestations of demonic infestation or possession which is or can be conferred through the Satanic initiation rites to which those Senior Year Yale undergraduates who are 'lucky' enough to be 'slapped' and 'tapped', foolishly and ignorantly aspire. Self-evidently, those who are not 'tapped' suffer disappointment at their exclusion from the advertised guaranteed route to wealth and power at the time, but are saved from the extreme dangers inherent in any dabbling with the occult. This is a particularly evil form of 'dabbling' as the neophyte is made to 'desire' the 'privilege' of initiation, which turns out to be a trap liable to enslave him for the rest of his life, turning him into a servant of Lucifer[35].

Figure 20:

'IN YOUR FACE' DISPLAYS OF THE ILLUMINATI'S OCCULT KABBALISTIC NUMBER 322: SEE ALSO PAGES 72 & 738

The Area Code for Brussels is 322. As a defector from the sect of the Illuminati explains in Chapter 7, Belgium has traditionally been the financial centre of the Illuminati. Therefore, when dialling a Brussels telephone number, one is dialling into the seat of the New Underworld Order, the engine of the globalist revolutionary assault on nation states. The European Union Collective exists to subsume and displace its constituent nation states, as befits such a Leninist supranational organisation which operates collectively and superfluously duplicates government structures, after the Leninist control model. Lenin was an implementer for the Illuminati. Nation states stand in the way of Illuminati hegemony.

For many years, the World Council of Churches, a revolutionary body with secular objectives masquerading as a Christian organisation, had precisely 322 member churches. The Second Iraq War was carefully planned to begin on 22nd March 2003 (322), but was triggered 48 hours earlier ostensibly, according to the 'line' retailed in late April 2003, because the CIA had been in close contact with a 'guy on the ground' in Baghdad before the war about Saddam Hussein's movements, prompting the United States to attack one of the dictator's compounds earlier than planned. An agonised meeting took place in the Oval Office, lasting for four hours, as President Bush and his colleagues wrestled with the problem of whether or not it would be 'bad luck' not to start the war on the kabbalistically opportune date of 322. It proved, as subsequent events have shown, to be 'bad luck' indeed.

On 12th November 2001, DynCorp, an intelligence community and US Government data processing, military operations and intelligence work contractor, was awarded a contract worth precisely $322 million to produce and store vaccines for the US Department of Defense. DynCorp, with Hadron, both of which are US intelligence-linked defence contractors, are involved inter alia in classified research programmes on communicable diseases.

Around New Year 2004, British Airways Flight 223 (which is 322 backwards) en route to Washington, DC was repeatedly delayed while US Homeland Security officials investigated every passenger against a data base, establishing that there were no terrorists on board on any of the flights concerned. 322 people were reported slaughtered in the Beslan atrocity.

The US-sourced computer program used by the Author to make up this book has a mechanism enabling blank pages to be mass-produced forward. The Author made use of this facility and, without specifying how many extra blank pages were needed, was surprised to discover that the page expansion mechanism had stopped on page - guess what?
- 322. Another British researcher who has been preparing manuscripts exposing Skull and Bones and Masonic occultism has, on several occasions, found that the number 322 has suddenly appeared on his screen, for no rational reason (Evil Spirit is not rational).

The Order of Skull and Bones is known as The Brotherhood of Death, and as Chapter 322 of a German secret society which, given the virtual identity of Skull and Bones initiation rituals with those of the Illuminati sect, and the precise coincidence of their objectives and modi operandi, is certainly the Illuminati. Given that 'Bones' adepts are branded in the small of the back with a 'D' for Demosthenes [see main text], who committed suicide in BC 322, the date of this legendary Greek character's death is also pertinent - as is the fact that it is in Mark Chapter 3, verse 22, that we read: 'And the Scribes which came down from Jerusalem said "He hath Beelzebub, and by the Prince of the Devils doth he cast out devils"'.

This discovery prompted the Author to look up other combinations of 3 and 22 in the Gospels (on the basis that these people, not the Author, attach occultic, kabbalistic, magical, Luciferian, superstitious significance to such numerology; and what do we find?

Why, that Luke, Chapter 22, verse 3, is the place where Luke writes: 'Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve'. It was Satan himself, not one or more of his demons, who entered into Judas Iscariot: in Chapter 22, 3 (322 reversed). Given that The Order is The Brotherhood of Death - Satan's product
- this verse makes everything plain. For the rigorous schedule of Skull and Bones rituals and its Senior Year indoctrination represents a crash course in demonic infestation or possession. ■

THE 'GREAT AND THE GOOD' = OFTEN THE VERY BAD AND THE LOST

Prominent initiates of Skull and Bones down the decades who, in varying degrees, have imposed, sustained or in no way impeded the deadeningly reprobate hegemony of, their Satanic 'death culture' upon US strategy, society and thus upon the international community, have been identified in recent years by other researchers from The Order's own documentation - some of which has become available after initiates have 'seen the light' (i.e., repented), and after break-ins to the Tomb on the Yale campus. A published list of Skull and Bones members over many decades was made available to Antony Sutton by the daughter of a 'Bonesman', and Kris Millegan has published an extensive list of 'Bonesmen' in his book 'Fleshing Out Skull and Bones', published in 2003[36].

Among known members identified from such Bones records, including a large number of Jewish extraction, are Victor Ashe, who was serving as US Ambassador to Poland in early 2005 (in good time for the Pope's death on 2nd April 2005, and who is known to be George W. Bush's extremely close associate), many Aliens, Bissells, Blairs, Blakes, David Lyle Boren (a top Illuminati implementer), Bowles, Bradfords, Browns and Brooks, William Buckley, William and McGeorge Bundy, George Herbert Walker Bush, George W Bush, Jonathan Bush, Prescott Sheldon Bush (the Bush family patriarch), a large number of Cheneys (but not Richard Cheney), innumerable Clarks, Henry Sloane Coffin, many Cowles, Davenports, Davieses and Davises, Days, Timothy Dwight, Edwards, Ellises, Emersons, Esselstyns, Evans, Farnams, Fergusons, Irving Fisher, Fisks, Footes, Fosters, Franks, Frosts, Fullers, Gills, Hadleys, Halls, William Hamilton (cartoonist and writer, evidently NOT the inventor of the PROMIS software), William Averill Harriman, Henry John Heinz E, Donald Hoagland, the diplomat John Holbrook, Hoyts, Hudsons, Hydes, Jacksons, James, Johnsons, Johnstones, Jones, Kelloggs, John Kerry, Knapps, Knights, Lambs, Lamberts, Lewises, Lipincofts, Littles, Livingstones, Lords including Winston Lord, Lovetts - including Robert Lovett who replaced General Marshall as Secretary of Defense and who, after the Second World War, chaired the Lovett Committee which wrote the precise prescription for the establishment of the Central Intelligence Agency in 1947 - inducing Gaddis Smith, a Yale history professor, to pronounce that 'Yale has influenced the Central Intelligence Agency more than any other university, giving the CIA the atmosphere of a class reunion' - Lukins, Lufkins, Lynches, Mallons, Matthews, Thomas McNamara, Millers, Mills, Mitchells, Moores, Morrises, Nicholls, O'Briens, Oppenheimers, Owens, Paines, Palmers, Pecks, Perkins, Perrins, Perrys, Peters, Phelps, Pinchots, Pillsburys, Pratts, Prestons, Prices, Joseph C Rathborne, George Raymond, Reids, Richards, Richardsons, Robertsons, Roberts, Robinsons, Percy Avery Rockefeller, Roses, Ross, Russells including William Huntington Russell, Scotts, Joshua Sears, Seymours, Sheffields, Shepards, Simmons, Slades, Sloanes, Smiths, Smyths, Snells, Spencers, Eugene William Stetson Jr. (a friend of the senior Bush and of Averill Harriman, who organised the H. Smith Richardson Foundation which participated in MK-ULTRA, the CIA domestic covert psychological warfare (Psy-Ops) operation), Stevens, Stephensons, Stewards, Stillmans, Henry Lewis Stimson (who was 'credited' with having persuaded President Truman to achieve change through death by dropping atoms bombs on Japan), Strongs, Stubbs, many Tafts (including Alfonso, a 'Bonesman' colleague of the drug-linked William H. Russell in the Class of 1833 and William Howard Taft, US President from 1909 to 1913), Taylors, Thachers, Thompsons and Thomsons, Thornes, Townsends, Tylers, Alfred Vanderbilt, Waldens, George Herbert Walker (x2), Henry Wallace, Watkins, Wells, Frederick Weyerhauser, Whites, many Whitneys, Wilburs, Williams, Wilsons, Dean Witter, Woods, Woodruffs, Woolleys, Wrights and Zuckers [37].

The 'class reunion' characteristic of the Central Intelligence Agency - which, like other intelligence services such as MI5 (with its occultic triangle-symbol: see Figure 1, page 3) possesses features akin to an occult secret society, as has been the case since at least the time of Queen Elizabeth I - is evident from any review of the pedigrees of some of the better known 'spooks' who, as Mr Millegan puts it so appropriately, have built 'the CIA's haunted house'. These include (with their Skull and Bones Year in parentheses), Sloane Coffin (1949), James Buckley (1944), Bill Buckley (1950), William and McGeorge Bundy (1939 and 1940), Senator David Boren (1963), Senator John Kerry (1966), and George H. W Bush Sr. (1948) (who 'tapped' Coffin who 'tapped' Bill Buckley, the alleged continuing mouthpiece of the US Illuminati).

Other prominent 'Bonesmen' have included Henry Luce, of Time-Life (1920); John Thomas Daniels, of Archer Daniels Midland (1914); Harold Stanley, a founder of Morgan Stanley (1908); Alfred Cowles, of Cowles Communications (1913); Henry P. Davison, Senior Morgan Guaranty Trust partner (1920); John Heinz, Chief Executive Officer, Heinz Foods (1931); Pierre Jay, first Chairman, Federal Reserve Bank of New York; George Herbert Walker, Jr., financier and co-founder of the New York Mets (1927); Fred Smith, founder, Chief Executive Officer and President of Federal Express (1966); William Draper III, of the US Defense Department, the United Nations and the US Import-Export Bank; Dean Witter, investment banker (1944); Russell W Davenport, editor of Fortune Magazine and creator of the Fortune 500 list that celebrates material wealth (1923); Evan G. Galbraith, US Ambassador to France and Managing Director of Morgan Stanley (1950); Richard Gow, President of Zapata Oil, for which George Bush Sr. worked and was/is connected (1955); Amory Howe Bradford, married to Carol Warburg Rothschild, General Manager, The New York Times (1934); C. E. Lord, who was Comptroller of the Currency (1949); and Winston Lord, Chairman, the Council on Foreign Relations, US Ambassador to China, and Assistant Secretary of State under President Clinton. Many Bonesmen have been US Ambassadors to China, the source and top consumer of opiates in the 19th century, since President Nixon re-established a direct US political and economic relationship with the Chinese Communists.

SKULL AND BONES AND THE GLOBAL DRUG TRADE

Details of the traditional connections between between Yale, Skull and Bones and the global drug trade have also been delineated by researchers. In 1903, the Yale Divinity School established a network of schools and hospitals in China, with Mao Tse-Tung among their staff. Mao, that former employee of the Yale organisation in China, who had been involved in narcotics operations during the 1930s and 1940s, used drugs against Chinese populations before reorganising China's drug-related intelligence activities to focus on external operations after the Communists had seized power in 1949. The presence of Mao Tse-Tung among the personnel at a Yale-organised establishment in China provides evidence of US intelligence intermeddling in Chinese affairs in connection with the spread of Communism to China. It appears that - as in the subsequent well-known instances of Slobodan Milosevic, Saddam Hussein, and General Manuel Noriega - US intelligence's intrigues in China during the prewar and World War II years, exploiting Yale's 'China resources', were associated with an operation in which Mao Tse-

Tung may have been double-crossed - a familiar ploy of US intelligence, based upon the crude operational 'bait and switch' tactic. In the 1970s, George Bush Sr. was allegedly despatched to 'look after' the China trade originally developed by Messrs Russell and Company, which was among the first, along with European opium trading houses, to trade out of Shanghai when the port was first opened to foreigners in 1843. As Kris Millegan has written, 'the Bush family is still very much involved in the economic activities of "Red" China. Many researchers contend that George Bush Sr. has been with the CIA since the early 1950s, and that one of his jobs was to consolidate and co-ordinate the worldwide narcotics industry, the largest industry on earth'.

It is, as will be revealed in Chapter 7, the industry most extensively exploited by the Illuminati to finance The New Underworld Order, fronted secretly by Germany. What has not hitherto been understood is that George Bush Sr. allegedly took over from Admiral Canaris, the veteran German spymaster, as the head of Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD), the German 'Black' intelligence agency and controller of German global strategy (covered by the STASI, the Illuminati dimension and the Cold War), in the late 1970s, after he ceased to be Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) and ahead of his becoming US Vice President. This was possible not least because George Bush (Busche) Sr. may hold German nationality (which can be based on ethnicity) as well as his US nationality.

It is no accident that the activities of the global energy corporations and of intelligence linked drug-trafficking organisers, appear in many contexts to coincide. For instance, Richard L. Armitage, a veteran operative who served as Deputy Secretary of State under Colin Powell during the first Bush Jr. Administration, refused Condoleeza Rice's invitation to remain with the State Department, reportedly using colourful language to make his point, and indicating that he would be leaving the Government to establish an 'export-import agency' in Kabul, where, prior to the US invasion, the Taliban had all but eradicated drug-cultivation and trafficking operations. Following the post-9/11 US invasion of Afghanistan, drug cultivation soared to the highest levels ever recorded. The Vietnam 'Police Action' was likewise almost certainly connected to the lust of criminalised US intelligence, serving not the interests of the American people but rather those of the Illuminati, and behind them Germany, to acquire hegemony in the 'Golden Triangle'. Large numbers of bodybags were returned from Vietnam stuffed not with human bodies, but with heroin.

Prior to the Vietnam 'War', the Golden Triangle focused upon Burma was operated by Corsican mobsters and French intelligence operatives. When the United States replaced the French, penetrated US intelligence, assisted by Sicilian mafia cadres, took over[38]. Under President Reagan, the highest US Government official involved in the so-called 'war on drugs' was then the most prominent of all 'Bonesmen' - the then Vice President George Bush Sr., who chaired Reagan's Cabinet working group on drugs and was Director of the National Narcotics Interdiction System which, like all subsequent US official 'anti-drug' structures, performed the function of providing the chief drug-runners with a convenient means of maintaining an accurate overview of the global drug economy, and of eliminating or controlling the opposition. Frances Mullen Jr., a former chief of the ineffective Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA), which carries out token 'anti-drug busts' in order to remind the American people that the Government is 'doing something' about the drugs scourge, described Mr Bush Sr.'s purported antidrug activities as 'an intellectual fraud' and 'a liability rather than an asset'. This was of course code for his knowledge that George Bush Sr. is allegedly the biggest global drug-trafficking crook of them all, in line with his DVD status. Further specific details of

US covert intelligence drug-trafficking policy for the Illuminati, follow in Chapter 3.

As Kris Millegan reports, 'soon after these statements, Mullen resigned and the resultant General Accounting Office (GAO) report was buried'[39]. The GAO document stated that there were 'no benefits from the US National Narcotics Border Interdiction System, directed by George Bush. In fact, the overall effect was to encourage supply'. This is just one of a long series of incidents and documents exposing the reality that the corrupted US Government intelligence structures are in the hands of, integrated with and in many respects indistinguishable from, organised criminal interests - as a direct consequence of which the self-financing, stand-alone US intelligence community has effectively hijacked, and covertly controls, the US Government itself. Since the CIA, with its myriad 'subordinate' agencies, is hugely criminalised and may accurately be described, like the KGB, as a 'state within the state 'and a criminal organisation, and since an International Monetary Fund official is on record as having stated that 'we cannot fix the global drug problem because if the drug problem were to be solved, the international financial system would collapse'[40], the United States is the checkmated victim of a truly millennial crisis which is destabilising the whole world.

In March 2005, a senior US intelligence officer told this Author that 'no-one' (in Washington) 'can move'. He refused to elaborate, since he was referring to the blackmail nexus which is throttling governance. In conversations with other US operatives in the spring of 2005, the Author was advised that the overall situation could be described as one of 'check' but not of 'check-mate'. Successive Presidencies have been penetrated and controlled by German 'Black' intelligence (DVD), based in Dachau -the key exception being John R Kennedy, who was assassinated on German (DVD) instructions precisely because he was not a DVD asset. In addition to George Bush Jr.'s father, reliably alleged to be the actual head of the DVD, the retention of George Tenet, a Clinton appointee and an alleged German/French intelligence asset, as Director of Central Intelligence, was the coup that most fatally compromised the Administration of George Bush Jr., from the outset.

The US intelligence community's control over the media, which has culminated, as noted earlier, with the installation of an intelligence cell in every press room, is nothing new. In the late 1980s, Monika Jensen-Stevenson, a staff producer with the 60 Minutes programme at CBS, left her job after CBS had refused to air her findings on the United States' involvement in drug-trafficking. In 1991, she published Kiss the Boys Goodbye[41], which explains inter alia just how the US intelligence community perverted the official Prisoner-of-War/Missing-in-Action (POW/MIA) structures, and used them to cover the trafficking of drugs from the Golden Triangle region. Likewise the criminalised US intelligence community (or elements of it) have routinely leveraged the taxpayer-funded anti-drug structures (such as the Drug Enforcement Agency) as cover for drug-running operations, and to facilitate the seizure of control over and elimination of competition. The Government indulges in cosmetic operations to appease public opinion.

- The so-called 'War on Terrorism' has a coefficient - called the 'War on Drugs'. In addition to fronting the US National Narcotics Border Interdiction System, Vice President Bush fronted a Task Force on Combating Terrorism, under President Reagan, as a result of which counter-terrorism tactics, the politics of the drug wars between criminal gangs and between criminalised elements of national intelligence communities, became interchangeable and indistinguishable. As Russell S. Bowen once pointed out, 'the war against terrorism and the war on drugs have similar modi operandi in [respect of] their disdain for the [US] Constitution. Only one career Government man has the distinction of simultaneously overseeing both these "wars", George Bush'.

Mr Bowen might have added that drug-trafficking is terrorism.

In the case of General Manuel Noriega, formerly a drug-trafficking 'partner' of the United States, his greed placed him in direct conflict with covert US drug-running interests, so he was 'taken out' - enabling US business to be resumed 'as normal'; and the Afghani Taliban were overthrown after their suppression and usurpation of local opium poppy cultivation interfered with cash flows into the US financial system, with destabilising financial and economic consequences. Within one year of the US invasion of Afghanistan, opium poppy production now 'protected' by the US military, had risen to historically unprecedented levels - while sporadic anecdotal information received in the summer of 2005 indicated that rehabilitation of the country remained largely a pipedream. No wonder that the sinister Richard L. Armitage was in such a hurry to get back into the 'business', setting up his 'export-imporf agency in Kabul. He is alleged to have exclaimed, while hidebound by his State Department position: 'We gotta get back into business'.

ROSS PEROT FIRED ONCE BUSH SR. KNEW WHERE HE WAS COMING FROM

After President Ronald Reagan had appointed Ross Perot, the Texas billionnaire, to the President's Advisory Council on Foreign Intelligence, the late President added to Perof s responsibilities by making Perot a special Presidential investigator, charged inter alia with researching the fate of the United States' Prisoners of War (POWs) and troops Missing in Action (MIA) from the Vietnam War. Taking his new responsibilities very seriously, Mr Perot, equipped with special clearance and access to documents and sources, spent a considerable amount of time and money (presumably his own, as the American Government typically takes advantage of others' private wealth) looking for answers to questions which have distressed thousands of suffering, bereaved Americans for decades. Monika Jensen-Stevenson reported on Ross Perot's activities as follows, in 'Kiss the Boys Goodbye':

ILLUMINATI TARGET THE TOP UNIVERSITIES

Universities were originally founded as centres inter alia of religious instruction. For instance, the Author's magnificent Oxford College is named Christ Church. But while he was an undergraduate there, he noticed little of the presence of Jesus Christ: in fact the ancient Cathedral is spiritually cold, depressing and 'dead'. The reason for this becomes evident if one enters the right-hand ante-chapel area and turns with one's back to the small altar, looking upwards. There, displayed well above eye level, are certain Masonic inscriptions. In other words, this College-based Cathedral, like the College itself, and so much else at Oxford, is double-minded. Antony Sutton has the following interesting observation on page 80 of his work 'Inside America's Secret Establishment: An introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones' [op. cit.]:

'The Illuminati was founded at the University of Ingolstadt. The Group (a German-linked Illuminati Establishment source) was founded at All Soul's College, Oxford, and The Order [of Skull and Bones] was founded at Yale University in the United States'.

Although we might quarrel with the assertion that the Illuminati were actually founded by Adam Weishaupt at Ingolstadt (a substantial body of research suggests a far longer historical pedigree), that is not pertinent: the Illuminati were consolidated at Ingolstadt.

But Antony Sutton then draws attention to the following irony: 'The paradox is that institutions supposedly devoted to the search for truth and freedom have given birth to institutions devoted to world enslavement' - by 'Brothers' of the Illuminati conspiracy. Chapter 8 reveals that The Apostles at Cambridge were an Abwehr recruiting pool. ■

'Relations between Bush and Perot had gone downhill ever since the Vice President had asked Ross Perot how his POW/MIA investigations were going'.

"'Well, George, I go in looking for prisoners", said Perot, "but I spend all my time discovering [that] the Government has been moving drugs around the world and is involved in illegal arms deals.... I can't get at the prisoners because of the corruption among our own people"'. Whether Perot knew that he was speaking directly to the alleged primary source of that corruption, was not related.

'This ended Perot's official access to the highly classified files as a one-man presidential investigator. "I have been instructed to cease and desist", he had informed the families of missing men early in 1987'.

This contretemps was described slightly differently by Russell S. Bowen in 1991: 'As Cold War adventurism was given primacy in American foreign policy over the goals of the war on drugs, covert action and the secrets of the CIA's continuing wars in Southeast Asia were considered more important than efforts to release POWs. The POW issue has never been popular with American liberals' [= socialists - Ed.] 'who otherwise rush to question the CIA, because it was an issue which became a cause of the American righf (and also because of the implications for socialism of any detailed exposures of Soviet criminality towards Prisoners of War and missing US soldiers).

'One of the loudest critics of Government cover-ups of POW information is Senator Jesse Helms. Ronald Reagan embraced the cause of appointing Texas billionaire Ross Perot to investigate the fate of Vietnam MIAs. But Mr Perot took the assignment more seriously than the Reagan-Bush Administration [had] apparently intended'. Here again, it would appear that the main intention of appointing Perot had been to divert the abused American public with a charade, conveying the impression that 'something was being done' to solve the 'riddle' of the missing POW /MIAs.

'When he got hard evidence of at least some POWs [being] still alive in Southeast Asia and found his search for them blocked by American intelligence officials involved

SIMILARITY OF ILLUMINATI INITIATION TO THE INITIATION RITUAL RITES OF SKULL AND BONES

The classic expose of the sect of the Illuminati, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', by John Robison, originally published in 1798 [see Chapter 7] contains a description of part of the initiation ceremony or ritual for the degree of Regent (there are only two Illuminati degrees that are higher, according to Robison, Magus and Rex), which reveals similarities with the death-oriented initiation ritual of The Order of Skull and Bones, a.k.a. The Brotherhood of Death, a.k.a. The Order:

The candidate is presented for reception in the character of a slave; and it is demanded of him what has brought him into this most miserable of all conditions. He answers: Society - the State - Submissiveness - False Religion. A skeleton is pointed out to him, at the feet of which are laid a Crown and a Sword. He is asked whether it is the skeleton of a King, a Nobleman, or a Beggar? As he cannot decide, the President of the meeting says to him, 'the character of being a Man is the only one that is of importance'.

As with Skull and Bones, the essence of the point is that we are all mortal, so we are all equal (in death), which by extension implies that all power is illegitimate or to be challenged (the unspoken exception being the intended collective power of the Illuminati).

The Regent ritual stresses the 'line' that power in the hands of 'our rulers' is 'not so secure as in the hands of our Members whom we train up with so much care, and place about Princes' and that the Illuminati are uniquely and exclusively qualified to rule. ■

in drug trafficking, Perot complained to Vice-President Bush. As soon as Mr Bush realized where Perot was coming from, Perot was dropped like a hot stone by the Administration[42]. This story, incidentally, illustrates a tell-tale phenomenon that we have identified among members of the intelligence community: they are constantly blowing their cover. They blow their cover whenever one of their multiple lies unravels before our noses, as happens all the time; whenever a high security classified telephone rings accidentally in an office by mistake; whenever an eavesdropping chip is found in a target's jacket; whenever a political activist who has single-handedly exposed the fraudulence of a General Election is poisoned; whenever heavy breathing and pointed electronic interruptions and noise take place during telephone calls; whenever an undertaking is breached; whenever one of them who has threatened a colleague (as they do all the time) demands to know whom he is alleged to have threatened and whether the person asking the question is possessed; and whenever all kinds of other reprobate behaviour rarely encountered in normal life, is observed. In this instance, Vice President Bush Sr. reconfirmed, if any confirmation was ever necessary the involvement of US intelligence and the Government at the very highest level in drug-running, at the expense of American prisoners of War and Missing in Action, and with stone cold-hearted indifference to the plight and suffering of the bereaved.

Addictive drugs such as heroin and cocaine cannot be manufactured for distribution without the necessary precursor chemicals. Therefore, establishing which pharmaceutical companies manufacture these chemicals provides leads to the Octopus-like network of organised criminality which hides within and at the highest levels of the official structures. Among the largest manufacturers of the precursor chemicals used for cocaine and heroin is Eli Lilly Company of Indianapolis, one of the most occult of all American cities. This is the home capital of the Quayle family which is a shareholder in the firm, on the board of which George Bush Sr. has served. Eli Lilly is also the corporation which was the first, evidently, to synthesise LSD for the US intelligence community. A number of Bush family members have held shares in Eli Lilly.

In 'George Bush: The Unauthorised Biography', by Webster Griffin Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, which traces in great detail the convoluted activities and relationships of George Bush Sr., reference is made in Chapter Four to the H. Smith Richardson Foundation [see page 56], which became 'a Bush family-dictated private slush fund which was to be utilized by the Central Intelligence Agency, and by Vice-President Bush, for the conduct [actually, just one of the conduits - Ed.] of the Iran-Contra adventures...'.

'The Bush family knew Richardson and his wife through their mutual friendship with Sears Roebuck's Chairman, General Robert E. Wood. General Wood had been President of the America First organization, which had lobbied against war with Hitler's Germany. H. Smith Richardson had contributed the start-up money for America First and had spoken out against the United States "joining the Communists" in fighting Hitler. Richardson's wife was a proud relative of Nancy Langehorne from Virginia, who married Lord Astor and backed the Nazis from their Cliveden Estate.... The H. Smith Richardson Foundation was organized by Eugene Stetson, Jr.., Richardson's son-in-law. Stetson (Skull and Bones, 1934) had worked for Prescott Bush as Assistant Manager of the New York branch of Brown Brothers Harriman'.

[This is how these Octopus-related narratives, which drop names everywhere with tedious regularity, proceed. One must be patient].

'In the late 1950s, the H. Smith Richardson Foundation took part in the "psychological warfare" of the CIA. This was not a foreign, but a domestic, covert operation, carried out mainly against unwitting US citizens. CIA Director Allen Dulles and his British allies organized MK-ULTRA, the testing of psychotropic drugs including LSD on a very large scale, allegedly to evaluate 'chemical warfare' possibilities. In this period, the Richardson Foundation helped finance experiments at Bridgewater Hospital in Massachusetts, the center of some of the most brutal MK-ULTRA tortures'.

As has been summarised [page 62], Eli Lilly Co. synthesised LSD for the Central Intelligence Agency's brutal MK-ULTRA offensive, which at a later stage was allegedly controlled by Richard Cheney, George Bush Jr.'s Vice President. Russell S. Bowen reports that 'after leaving the CIA [sic: this is of course inaccurate] in 1977, George Bush was made a Director of the Eli Lilly pharmaceutical company by none other than Dan Quayle's father and family, who owned the controlling interest in the Lilly company and the Indianapolis Star. Dan Quayle subsequently allegedly acted as a go-between for drug kingpins, gun runners and US Government officials' implicated in what is formally known as the Iran-Contra scandals (although this phrase has since acquired the broader meaning of referencing the entire hornets' nest of related scandals). 'The entire Bush family were large stockholders in Lilly, Abbott, Bristol, Pfizer, etc. After Bush's disclosure of assets in 1979, it became public [knowledge] that Bush's family still had a large interest in Pfizer and substantial stock in the drug companies. In fact, Bush actively lobbied illegally both within and without the Administration as Vice President in 1981, to permit drug companies to dump more unwanted, obsolete or especially domestically-banned substances on Third World countries'.

'While Vice President, Bush continued to act illegally on behalf of pharmaceutical companies by going to the IRS [Internal Revenue Service] for special tax breaks for certain drug companies manufacturing in Puerto Rico. In 1981, Bush was ordered to stop lobbying on behalf of the drug companies, by the US Supreme Court. He did, but the pharmaceutical companies still received a 23% additional tax break for their companies in Puerto Rico which made these American-outlawed drugs for sale to Third World countries'[43]. As is revealed in Addendum 3 on page 679, Dan Quayle has subsequently allegedly been engaged in finding 'placement' opportunities for the endless streams of drug-trafficking proceeds which are laundered via so-called 'hedge funds'.

Since this flow-of-funds is relentless and never-ending, the primary objective of its 'hidden' managers is to find 'investment opportunities' so that the funds can conveniently be placed or invested as quickly as possible, after having been 'parked' with hedge fund accounts. This explains why Dan Quayle's investigations have involved seeking 'investment' opportunities in the shape of a rescued Japanese bank and bankrupt airlines, including Air Canada. The fact that a target organisation is commercially unviable or effectively bankrupt is not, in this context, a barrier to such 'buyout' investments. On the contrary, organisations in such an advanced stage of commercial and financial decrepitude may be ideal depositories for such laundered funds, given that they necessarily require financial injections that are significantly larger than viable enterprises, by an order of magnitude.

Since the flow of drug-trafficking proceeds has at times been far greater than the flow of funds arising from oil and gas transactions (although the much higher oil price structure (in mid-2006) brought the two sources of Black funds into line), an army of 'specialists' such as the alleged Illuminati operative Dan Quayle is engaged in seeking out bolt-holes for the never-ending and ever-ballooning cascade of global drug remittances.

EUGENICS AND MIND- AND PERSONALITY CONTROL

An addendum to the activities of the Bush-linked H. Smith Richardson Foundation may conveniently be included here. Averill Harriman (1913), involved in racial purity issues and the mastermind of the eugenics movement, had based this activity at Yale University, where the American Eugenics Society maintained its headquarters. Tarpley and Chaitkin reported in 1992 that 'the coercive psychiatry and sterilization advocates had made the Yale/New Haven Hospital and Yale Medical School their laboratories for hands-on practice in brain surgery and psychological experimentation' - one of the lines of enquiry controlled by Himmler in Nazi Germany which were continued in the United States after the importation of a large number of Nazi scientists from 1946 onwards [see Chapter 8]. 'And the Birth Control League was there, which had long trumpeted the need for eugenical births - fewer births for parents with 'inferior' bloodlines. Prescott Bush's partner Tighe was a Connecticut director of the League, and the Connecticut League's medical advisor was the eugenics advocate Dr Winternitz' (of German extraction, naturally) 'of Yale Medical School.... In 1950, people who knew something about Prescott Bush knew that he had very unsavoury roots in the eugenics movement.

Eugenics and psychological mind- and personality-manipulation were twin obsessions of Heinrich Himmler's Nazi scientists. All projects initiated through the agency of Luciferians acquire a 'seething energy' of their own [see page 72] - a case in point being a Center for Creative Leadership partly funded and established by the H. Smith Richardson Foundation (linked to Bush Sr.), located north of Greensboro, North Carolina (not far from the seat of American/'world' Scottish Rite Freemasonry).

An investigator for the Tarpley-Chaitkin book toured the facility in 1990 with a guide, who said that 'in these rooms, agents of the Central Intelligence Agency and the Secret Service are trained. He demonstrated the two-way mirrors through which the Government employees are watched, while they are put through mind-bending psychodramas. The guide explained that "virtually everyone who becomes a general" in the US armed forces also goes through this "training" at the Richardson Center. Another office of the Center for Creative Leadership is in Langley, Virginia, at the headquarters of the Central Intelligence Agency. Here also, Richardson's Center trains leaders of the Central Intelligence Agency .

The Order of Skull and Bones, and most of the other 'fraternal' Yale University societies, with their secret passwords and handgrips, furnish naive and worldly young men with varying degrees of mental conditioning and brainwashing, depending upon the witchcraft content of their rituals and gobbldegook - the 'Bones' cult being the most diabolical because, as discussed, it imposes an intensive crash-course upon the neophytes with the specific intent of inducing infestation and/or possession by evil spirits. The Author remembers an American graduate who suddenly appeared at Christ Church, Oxford, and stayed for one year. The physical appearance of this person was awesome and dark: frightening in fact. A generation or so later, the Author encountered this individual at a party in New York, and his physical appearance remained as dark as ever. He is listed as 'Bonesman' of a Class of the late 1940s.

People's faces do not necessarily betray the fact that the person concerned has dabbled in witchcraft: but they often do. While referred to by those on the inside as 'The Order' - a feature of many Illuminati organisations: indeed the use of this phrase is a definitive indication of Illuminati membership, as already mentioned - Skull and Bones is, as we have seen, also referred to by some as Chapter 322 of a German secret society. Researchers usually leave this observation hanging in mid-air, failing to seek identification of the German secret society concerned. The Author believes, and is certain, that the German secret society in question is the Illuminati. Antony Sutton was unsure, in the 1980s, whether this sect had remained in existence after it was suppressed in Bavaria in the eighteenth century. This book proves that it exists, using new contemporary information, and drawing on multiple sources, old and new, to expose its cynically manipulative modus operandi. Skull and Bones is indeed a primary locus and spawning pond of the Illuminati virus in the United States.

More and more evidence of this truth is being brought together by researchers. In his book The Holocaust, the distinguished historian, Martin Gilbert, revealed that it was agreed at the notorious Wannsee Conference in 1942, when expansion of the Nazi 'Final Solution' was finalised under the cold supervision of SS Obergruppenfuhrer Reinhard Heyrich and the Gestapo chief Heinrich Himmler and other top Nazis, that should the 'Final Solution' not be completed by Nazi Germany, this agenda for the completion of the 'Final Solution' and the implementation of a New World Order would be transplanted over time to the United States [see Chapter 8]. When Hitler invoked his Thousand-Year Reich, he was not simply bragging. In The Twisted Cross by Joseph Carr, it was further revealed that when Hitler arrived in the Bavarian Alps, he would climb up into the mountains and scream into the wind for Satan to possess him, and to give him power to become the Antichrist reigning on earth for a thousand years. Furthermore, Hitler was trained, in his early years, by Jesuits, like Weishaupt.

The Nazi regime was an operation of the Illuminati: and the Third Reich has installed itself in Washington, DC - a process that began almost immediately following the Second World War, while the world was being diverted by the distraction of the emerging Cold War which froze relations between the West and another product of the Illuminati, Stalin's Marxist-Leninist Soviet Union and Bloc, for a pre-ordained period of precisely 40 years (the Berlin Wall was dismantled in 1989 just as soon as the 40 years had been completed). How this happened, and what the implications are for the United States - which is today equipped with the apparatus (concentration camps, an Amtrak gassing facility in Indianapolis, special trains for the removal of dissidents, guillotines etc) is now quite well understood - thanks to extensive recent research and, once again, diligent work that has been published inter alia on the Internet. This narrative is continued in Chapter 4, entitled The Hex of Himmler.

The Author interpolates here an interesting discovery that he made in June 2005, while interviewing and recording the observations of a distinguished US operative whose past work for the US Presidency has no equal. When the Author pointed out that certain nefarious US official policies and activities in the 1980s represented Works of Darkness and that he and others were actually working for the Illuminati rather than for the President of the United States (POTUS), he remarked that, operationally, 'we didn't realise that, at the time. I understand it now'. And it is true that (other) former supporters of the New Underworld Order within the CIA are now actively fighting its implementation, which may be one of many reasons why the controllers' timetables are constantly slipping. One CIA operative told an informant: 'We even called this plan to seize America for the New World Order 'The Final Solution', and this is what we called it from inside the CIA'. This fact was volunteered when the CIA insiders concerned revealed to the informant how they had themselves helped to design some of the concentration camps that will be activated when Martial Law is imposed in the United

States following another provocation by cut-outs for Germany's 'Black' DVD[45].

It seems almost superfluous to add that this evidence reinforces the Author's view that the criminalised Central Intelligence Agency its agencies and other dimensions of the US intelligence community are, or are fully capable of being, a reprobate menace to the American Republic and its people, and that it is a prerequisite for any possible resolution of the colossal US corruption and subversion crisis, that the intelligence services are sharply disciplined, cut down to size, and forced to comply with the Rule of Law, as President Kennedy once intended (an intention which cost him his life, of course). The irony is that this may not be possible without intervention by the military - which is itself Masonically corrupted, and cannot, it seems, be relied upon to act solely in the interests of the American people. If the necessary crackdown were to occur, those who need to be rounded up would need to be taken from the intelligence structures themselves: they could all be 'comfortably' housed in just one of the odious concentration camps that they have devised and installed, in pursuit of the transferred Nazi 'Final Solution' abomination.

The 'Brotherhood of Death' - a.k.a. Skull and Bones, a.k.a. The Order, formerly the Russell Trust Association (incorporated in 1856), more recently (in 1961) reorganised as RTA Incorporated - is the primary generational source of the Nazi Illuminati (Illuminazi) mentality that can be detected in elements of US society and within parts of its colossal interlinked intelligence and political/policymaking structures.

The Society's members, mindful that the skull on their symbol has no mandible, so that it cannot 'speak', are sworn to silence; and all non-members are known as 'outsiders' or 'vandals' (Weishaupf s 'profane'). Since the publication of the cited works by Antony Sutton and Andrei Navrozov on Skull and Bones, certain Russell Trust papers previously available for perusal in the Sterling Library at Yale, have disappeared. There is naturally no requirement for secrecy, unless the holder of secrets has something to hide: secrets are superfluous if there is nothing to conceal.

Initiates are required to leave the room if anyone present raises issues involving a mention of Skull and Bones; and they are precluded, under oath, from answering questions about The Order and its organisations. When Andrei Navrozov attempted, via correspondence, to procure a response to a question about The Order from President Bush (Sr.), he drew the standard response that this was a matter he could not discuss. Kris Millegan explains, on page 20 of his book, that 'when Don Schollander (Skull and Bones, 1968), the Olympic Gold Medallist and only known Skull and Bones member living in Portland, Oregon, was contacted by local Wilamette Week reporter John Schrang regarding his involvement with The Order, he said: 'If s really something I can't talk about'[46]. But the precautions that The Brotherhood of Death has taken over the years to prevent the leakage of its secrets, based in part on blood oaths, have been very far from successful, so that a substantial body of information about its filthy, depraved occult-pagan ritual activities has entered into the public domain in recent years.

In summary, as a result of the leakage of these secrets, it is clear that The Order practices a form of mind- and personality-manipulation through sexual abuse. It is well known that personality-splitting techniques developed by the Nazis and elaborated inter alia by US intelligence through its MK-ULTRA and related programmes can involve the exploitation of sexual abuse, which is the means whereby the personality is destabilised and 'split'. For True Christians, this is the mechanism whereby the victim's will is neutralised and he (or she) is led to invite evil spirits in - the opposite procedure to the means whereby Jesus Christ reveals Himself to us, after we have believed on Him and taken steps to become familiar with His Word (even if we have only just started this process). Here is the Scripture reading which confirms this:

'Behold I stand at the door, and knock; if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me'[47]. Instead of opening the door, by the exercise of their free will, to Jesus Christ, who is the Way, the Truth and the Life, initiates of The Brotherhood of Death have invited other forces in; and if they recognise their error later in life, they may encounter extreme difficulty in expelling them - which can only be achieved in the context of total repentance, a contrite heart, and an effort of will: although it certainly can be done, as most of us have the chance for personal salvation. 'Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool'[48]. By the time that it dawns upon the trapped initiate that he has been led towards perdition, the riches which have accrued consequent upon his service to Lucifer, the 'god of this world', may have smothered any desire to change course, which may well be far too uncomfortable to be contemplated.

According to the late Antony C. Sutton, the acknowledged pioneer and expert on The Order, Ron Rosenbaum may have been correct in deducing that the other two 'Senior Societies' at Yale - Scroll & Key and Wolf's Head, supposedly competitive societies also founded in the 19th century - are part of the same network. 'Senior Societies' exist, apparently, only at Yale. In an article published in Esquire in September 1977, Rosenbaum stated ('very accurately', according to Sutton) that 'anyone in the Eastern Liberal Establishment who is not a member of Skull & Bones is almost certainly a member of either Scroll & Key or Wolf's Head'[49,50]. In one ritual, Rosenbaum explained (in a magazine accustomed to touching upon such matters), the initiate emerges from the Tomb naked, engaged in mud-wrestling with another initiate, a sequence ending in anal intercourse. The article, based on details of the initiation ceremony in question, which took place in 1940, contained inter alia the following statements:

'McGeorge Bundy wrestled baked in a mud pile as part of his initiation'.

'Supreme Court Justice Potter Stewart... dressed up in a skeleton suit, howled wildly at an initiate in a red velvet room inside the Tomb...'.

Ron Rosenbaum's Esquire article further described part of that initiation ceremony thus: 'New man placed in coffin - carried into the central part of building. New man chanted over and reborn into society. Removed from coffin and given robes with symbols on it [sic]. A bone with his name on it is tossed into [human] bone heap at start of evening. Initiates plunged naked into mud pile'.

Antony Sutton explains as follows on page 201 of his book on this subject, citing the very respected researcher Rosenbaum as his source:

'According to Rosenbaum, "one can hear strange cries and moans coming from the bowels of the tomb during initiation. Four elements of the initiation ceremony are recorded: (1) That the initiate has to lie naked in a sarcophagus; (2) That he is required to tell the "secrets" of his sex life to fellow initiates; (3) That patriarchs dressed as skeletons and acting as wild-eyed lunatics howl and screech at new initiates; and (4) that initiates are required to wrestle naked in a mud pile"'.

It should be recalled that this reprobate debauchery is indulged in by the initiates under immense peer pressure. Having been programmed to lust after membership, its achievement locks them into the sarcophagus of Lucifer for the rest of their lives.

MAIN FEATURES OF THE NEW WORLD ORDER ACCORDING TO SUTTON

Sutton's conclusion, which has never been contradicted and which is consistent with all the reliable research that has emerged on this subject in recent years, although it is incomplete, is that The Order is indeed a component of the sect of the Illuminati [see Chapter 7] and that it exists in order to bring about the establishment of a German-dominated New World Order - namely, "a planned order with heavily restricted individual freedom, without Constitutional protection, without national boundaries or cultural distinction', and that the characteristics of this New World Order - which will facilitate the triumph of criminalism, hence 'New Underworld Order' - will be as follows (Sutton's list having been compiled in the 1970s, so that much of what he predicted has since materialised, as all serious students of this vast subject will be aware):

1. Education will be perverted in order to prescribe and dictate how the population will be required to behave [= for instance, Outcome-Based Education].

2. Money: Wealth and the exchange of goods will be controlled by the New Underworld Order elite, namely by the highest ranks of the Illuminati.

3. The Law will exist as a mechanism for the enforcement not of justice, but rather of the arbitrary will of the state, regional and world government, world law and the world legal and court systems. This is of course already the case in the European Union context, where the European Court of Justice exists specifically not to dispense justice, but to enforce the will of the Collective, and to advance its agenda.

4. Politics will be manipulated so as to ensure its absolute consistency with the Illuminati's requirements, directing each state or regional bloc. Democracy will be false, elections will be overtly rigged, and 'undesirable' Representatives, Senators or Members of Parliament will be ruthlessly weeded out, so that they cannot serve as roadblocks to the implementation of the global New Underworld Order strategy. Independent publishers such as this Author will be stalked, spied upon and framed to eliminate them from the scene. It is hardly necessary to elaborate that this state of affairs exists 'as we speak' in both the US and the British and European contexts. See further comments on the manipulation of 'democracy' in Figure 21, panel opposite, on page 69].

5. The Economy will exist purely to enable the illuminised elite to accumulate additional wealth. Note: There is an obvious conflict here: One of the elements of the Illuminati's programme which Antony Sutton may not have fully anticipated is the 'population reduction' plan, which has been discussed for instance at successive Illuminati Gorbachev Foundation/State of the World (= 'World State') Forum events in the United States. At the first of these mammoth mind-manipulation and influence-building fests, held in San Francisco in 1995, the proposition that 90% of the world's population needed to be eliminated, 'to protect the planet', was promulgated. The AIDS epidemic is doing a 'fine job' on this particular score in Southern Africa, where, in Zimbabwe (where a roll of toilet paper cost Z$200,000 in June 2006), at least 2 million people were expected to die of starvation in 2005 alone. Such an outcome would be absolutely perfect for cadres of the Illuminati, who can then (they surmise) move in and take over Zimbabwe's rich mineral and other resources: which is why not a finger has been lifted against the odious Stalinist dictatorship of the ogre Mugabe. But the snag is: if the workforce has perished or been liquidated, (a) who will, e.g., work the mines, and (b) to whom will end-products be sold, so that the Illuminists can be enriched? As with all the inventions of the Devil, they haven't thought this one through properly. And as all their schemes generate chaos and confusion, they'll never be able to do so.

Figure 21:

HYPOCRISY, LIES AND INSTABILITY

An extraordinary feature of those who deal in lies is that they come to believe them, as Dr Josef Goebbels found out. Not only did he and Hitler succeed in selling their lies as truth to the German people, but Mr Schicklgruber came to believe them himself.

A case in point, unfortunately, is President George W. Bush (Jr.), who very tactlessly informed the Iranian people on 16th June 2005 that their General Election would 'change nothing'. The Iranian people, he said, 'deserve a genuinely democratic system in which elections are honest, and in which their leaders answer to them, instead of the other way round'. The Rest of the World was left speechless at this hypocritical arrogance.

This was indeed a shocking statement - and was received in Tehran as such - coming from a man whose elections in 2000 and 2004 were stolen, according to the most reliable information to hand. In 2000, James Baker III allegedly obtained $40 million from Carlos Lehder, a US-German Illuminati asset who had been instrumental in setting up the drug cartels in Colombia (which are creations of US intelligence: see Chapter 3), in exchange for his release from US custody and his transfer to Germany. Al Gore was told, upon alighting from a limousine, that he had not, after all, as he had been advised when he had climbed into it, won the election; some $32 million was allegedly handed over to the Democratic National Committee in exchange for their conceding the election, while $8.0 million was allegedly spent to bribe officials, prison staff, judges, lawyers, etc., to observe omerta.

In 2004, the election was rigged electronically [see Addendum 1, p. 662], and a consignment of gold (looted from the basement of the Twin Towers?) was allegedly paid to John Kerry.

According to author Kris Millegan, Robert P. Johnson, a.k.a. William Barr, an operative, informed William Clinton in Arkansas, while he was the corrupt Governor of that corrupt State, that 'you are our fair-haired boy, but you do have competition for the job you seek' (of President of the United States). 'We would never put all our eggs in one basket. You and your State have been our greatest asset' (for an explanation of which, see Chapter 3). 'Mr Casey' (the Director of Central Intelligence) 'wanted me to pass on to you that unless you *** up [sic] and do something stupid, you are Number One on our short list for the job you always wanted' ['Fleshing Out Skull and Bones', Ed. Kris Millegan, op. cit., page 18].

Thus William Casey, the Director of the Central Intelligence Agency, who was also a Sovereign Knight of Malta, signalled to William Clinton, through George Bush Sr.'s last Attorney General (like Bush Sr., and Clinton, an intelligence operative), that provided he (Clinton) didn't 'mess up', the intelligence community would instal him as President. In other words, it is not the electorate who choose the presidential candidates, it is the intelligence community - an intolerable usurpation of power by an organisation that is supposed to SERVE the Executive Branch, rather than to CONTROL it. As in the 'former' Soviet Union, it is the intelligence community that's in the driving seat -which means that American democracy is just as much of a sham as President George W. Bush Jr. said that the Iranian version is.

And what is so disturbing about this is that the Washington elite apparently assumed that Iranians, who are heirs of a much older civilisation than that of the United States and are highly sophisticated, are ignorant of the fact that US democracy is a sham, and has been a sham for more three decades - at least since President Carter was replaced by Ronald Reagan and George Bush Sr., following the deception operation known as the 'October Surprise'. In actual fact, the US Presidency has proved to he a highly unstable institution. In the modern era, the President of the United States has been assassinated, removed or imposed consecutively ever since the Eisenhower era. And most sensible, informed analysts now believe that Kennedy's murder was a German-inspired CIA 'inside job', with the actual culpability, if ever allowed to emerge, liable to shock the whole world.

It is therefore grossly inappropriate for ANY President of the United States to lecture the Iranians, the Russians, or anyone else, about so-called 'democracy'. Likewise, given the emasculated condition of British democracy, the rigorous controls that have been legislated for over the qualifications of candidates, and the oppressive overhang of the institutions of the corrupt, Leninist, duplicated EU structures, no British Prime Minister should use such rhetoric either. We should remove the rotten motes from our own hard eyes first. ■

6. History will be bastardised, rewritten and manipulated to promulgate lies and to represent evil as good, and good as evil, which is of course scripturally verboten.

7. Mass psychology will be used to manipulate the way people think. 'Psy-Ops' will be openly and ruthlessly conducted by the official propagandists in order to hide and misrepresent what is happening on a national and a global scale. [This process is today working 24/7 and overtime, as all who are not sitting on their brains can understand. Some intelligence operatives who are engaged in the colossal US domestic 'Psy-Ops' operation have expressed surprise to the Author and to one of his special US contacts, that we understand so much of what is going on: for instance, absurdly, we are not supposed to have fathomed that the US and British political systems are controlled, so that it is almost neither here nor there who wins an election, as the Illum-inati always win. Apparently we weren't supposed to have been clever enough to work this out. The intelligence officer who realised that the Author's US contact understood this perfectly well, was astounded, and somewhat rattled.

8. Philanthropy will be exclusively Pharisaical, so that people (the goyim) think well of the controllers. For example, on 10th June 2006, Mikhail Gorbachev, supreme head of the KGB Continuum, held a vulgar white-tie banquet at Althorp, the Spencer family's Northamptonshire estate, ostensibly in aid of the raisa Gorbachev Foundation. The fawning British 'mainstream' media lavished nauseous praise on his 'philanthropy'.

9. Medicine will provide the state with sole power over health, life and death. This was a primary control objective, by the way, of the Illuminati's prize disciple, Lenin.

10. Religion will be totally paganised and perverted so that the 'Ancient Mysteries' (occultism, kabbalistic magic, and all the related abominations including the summoning up of evil spirits) will be condoned, encouraged or facilitated. Note: The Author distinguishes, in the 'Christian' context, between 'Churchianity' which, as the staggering decadence of the Church of England demonstrates, is largely alien to 'the Way the Life and the Truth', and True Christianity, based on Faith, Grace and Scripture.

11. Media: The broadcast and print media will be controlled, so that what people think and know will be in the hands of the controllers. This is the situation today.

12. Continuity: The controlling Illuminised elite will appoint its own followers and disciples to ensure longevity into future generations: The Thousand-Year Reich. They have pursued this objective with success for several generations already.

Although this Author has somewhat elaborated the late Antony Sutton's twelve identified objectives, which were first prophesied by him in 1977, it can be seen that they have been largely accomplished - which is why the world is now experiencing a crisis of historically unprecedented proportions. Specifically, the educational system has been hijacked, to produce young people with the 'politically correct attitudes' and little or zero profound knowledge, especially of Scripture and history, and to provide space for abominations such as 'sex education' and 'death education'. The creation of money is in the hands of geomasonically controlled central and commercial banks, which have usurped de facto control over, and have in many cases stolen, or used for self-interested collateral and cross-collateralisation leverage and hypothecation purposes, untold trillions of US Government fiat money funds held in offshore accounts of US Government Title 18, Section 6 intelligence corporations which were originally legitimised under President Reagan's Executive Order 12333, of 1981 [see box, page 20].

The law in both Britain and America is being systematically undermined and replaced by false law: for example, the ancient body of English Common Law is being overwhelmed by the 'superior' law of the European Union Collective, even as the European Court of Justice exists in order to further the interests of the EU political collective, not to dispense 'justice'. The political democratic system has been perverted in both Britain and the United States so that there is no true democracy at all: what happens at elections is that there may be a change of selected controlled personnel, that's all. This, as will be seen in Chapter 7, is 100% in conformity with long-range Illuminati strategy.

With the constant enlargement of corporations and the free-wheeling expansion of certain types of business such as bookstore chains (which are major absorbers of the endless pipeline of drug money), economic and financial power is being consolidated into fewer and fewer hands. The bookstores are also major outlets for the mass distribution of diabolical 'noise' 'music' CDs and Satanic videos, which are swamping the minds and souls of young people to the virtual exclusion of all else in the United States - consistently, as we have seen, with the death orientation of the Illuminati cadres that are promoting this Luciferian filth. History is being and has been rewritten, so that British schoolchildren have hardly any awareness of English history, but know all about colonialism, global warming and other 'politically correct' issues.

Psychology has long since been perverted to manipulate minds and to divide personalities both individually and collectively, to break down the family, to split the sexes, and to control the masses, inter alia through the proliferation, especially in the United States, of endless, pernicious Psychological Operations ('Psy-Ops', perpetrated by cadres of intelligence operatives, at every level. The abuse of philanthropy, so that the 'benefactor's' good works' are extensively publicised, and the general public is indoctrinated with 'politically correct' 'causes' and 'good works' which serve the double-minded interests of the Illuminati, is routine. The abuse of medicine through such devices as the contamination of vaccines, compulsory vetting of children with mandatory prescribed interventions, and the dispensing of death by staff working to intelligence instructions, is known in some US institutions. Euthanasia, or Satanic legitimised 'mercy murder', was being debated in the confused British Parliament in May 2006.

Organised religion has been degraded and perverted, with the reprobate Church of England being led, for instance, by a confirmed Druid, given to complex, convoluted, interminable and spiritually barren pronouncements, and its activities being characterised by an almost total lack of spirituality and a wholesale departure from the teachings of Jesus Christ; as for the Roman Catholic religion, its commonly acknowledged faults are legion; and the abuses perpetrated by many of its priests as a consequence of the reprobate, unnatural and repressive prohibition against priests marrying, need no introduction. The media is perceived by thinking people in the United States and Britain to be controlled, with US intelligence known to be proud of its 'achievement' in bringing the print and broadcast media under its thumb. Indeed, this boast was explicitly made at a US intelligence conference attended by one of our contacts, and was presented as the CIA's most impressive achievement. In the United Kingdom, it has for many years been impossible for analysts such as this Author to carry on any meaningful conversation at all with a 'mainstream' British journalist, since the minds of such people are clogged with preconceived notions, with bogies and 'slides' such as their facile acceptance of the lie that there is no such thing as a conspiracy, with 'politically correct' opinions, and with an underlying arrogance which almost defies description. For this reason, the Author considers it a complete waste of time to engage with such people, and prefers to disseminate his work 'by other means'.

THE KABBALISTIC NUMBER 322 AND LUCIFER'S 'SEETHING POWERS'

A few further points need to be made about 322, before we examine the international drugs dimension that the ffluminati, through the Brotherhood of Death, have integrated into US strategy. The significance of the use of the Kabbalistic 'magic' number, 322, is explained in a number of parallel ways. William Russell, the heir to a drug-running business, imported the blueprint of the society from Germany in 1832, as we have seen, so the most basic 'line' is that The Order is the second chapter of a German secret society (a branch of the ffluminati) established in 1832, hence 322. Confusingly, though, there are rooms designated 323 and 324 in the Tomb on the Yale campus.

A more sophisticated, and probably more accurate parallel source of The Order's obsession with 322 (although some dismiss this as a quaint fable) is that it stands for the homosexual orator Demosthenes who committed suicide by taking poison - the preferred 'liquidation method' of the ffluminati: hence the skull and crossbones on bottles of poison - in the temple of Neptune in Calauria, in 322 BC

Although the names of Skull and Bones neophytes are changed upon initiation, the membership list (known as 'Addresses') is made available to each member, using the initiates' real names. These names are provided in a copy bound in black leather with peculiar symbols inside and outside. The owner's name and the letter 'D' are gilt-stamped on the outer cover of the earlier issues which have emerged into the public domain, at least to the end of the 19th century. The list is surrounded by a heavy black border, signifying the death of the named initiate, as he adopts his new 'Bones name' - i.e. has been 'reborn' into this 'death cult', which is both nonsensical and upside-down, that is to say, entirely typical of a fraud perpetrated by the Evil One, who is the author of confusion and lies. Moreover, crucially, lies are followed by (spiritual and/or physical death: the two go together: as Jesus Christ told the murderous Pharisees (who were plotting to liquidate him: 'Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar and the father of it'[51]. In the pure light of this Truth, we can see all the more clearly, then, why Skull and Bones is also called The Brotherhood of Death. It is a self-perpetuating nest of lies and death indoctrination. As such it is a deadly menace to the American public, to the American people, and to the whole world. Through self-replicating mechanisms such as those perpetrated by Skull and Bones, devilish practices, debaucheries, infestations and demonic possessions of past decades are perpetuated and projected indefinitely into the future.

The ceremonial fixation with the initiate being lowered into a coffin and then 'rising again' from it, is modelled upon and is an echo of the 'raising to life' of the candidate in the Pyramid Mysteries, as explained by the 33rd Degree Mason, Manly P. Hall, in ''The Lost Keys of Freemasonry or The Secret of Hiram Abiff [see Figure 16, page 45]. Hall makes it crystal clear that Masonic initiation into the 'craff (= witchcraft) is intended to infest the initiate with the power of evil. This admission is contained in Hall's promise that the initiate will acquire knowledge of 'the dynamo of living power', through which he will 'learn the mystery of his craft [i.e., of witchcraft]. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands'[52]. And he is unknowingly en route to perdition.

Antony Sutton reported that 'the first class list of 1833 has two blank lines in place of the eleventh name on the list. This supports the argument that the society has German origins and this is the listing of the anonymous German connection'[53].

In calculating and expressing a given year, the Brotherhood of Death adds 322 to the current year, so that 2006 is 2006 + 322 = 2328. Demosthenes is alleged to have founded a Greek patriotic society in the same year that he committed suicide, and is also reported to have been a proponent of murderous Satanic practices. Plutarch wrote about Demosthenes as follows:

[Demosthenes] 'was meagre and sickly from the first, and hence had his nickname of Batalus given him, it is said, by the boys, in derision of his appearance; Batalus being, as some tell us, a certain enervated flute-player, in ridicule of whom Antiphanes wrote a play. Others speak of Batalus as a writer of wanton verses and drinking songs. And it would seem, too, that some part of the body, not decent to be named, was at that time called batalus by the Athenians. But the name of Argas, which they also say was a nickname of Demosthenes, was given him because of his behaviour, as being savage and spiteful, argas being one of the poetical words for a snake; or for his disagreeable way of speaking. Argas being [also] the name of a poet who composed very harshly and disagreeably. So much, as Plato says, for such matters'[54].

According to the wife of a 'Bonesman' who must remain anonymous, each initiate has the letter 'D' stamped or etched in the small of his back. Young American women, when considering whether to become engaged to a high-flying young Yale Graduate, need, as a routine precaution, to investigate whether their beau has this bodily characteristic; and if such a mark is discovered, should consider carefully whether they wish their lives to be encumbered with the dark consequences of his initiation into The Order of Skull and Bones.

In 1928, Clarence W. Mendel wrote a critical article about the Yale secret societies, especially the three Senior Societies, in 'Yale Daily News', in which he inaccurately concluded as follows: 'They [the secret societies] can be a blessing to Yale, and Yale will not tolerate their being a curse'.

This is the absolute reverse of the truth: these secret societies, especially Skull and Bones, Scroll and Key, and Wolf's Head (if the second and third are, as Rosenbaum believed, part of the same network), are a curse to Yale; and Yale has persistently tolerated them and has allowed them to become institutionalised: so that Yale therefore tolerates them being a curse. As a consequence, Yale College is itself a Black curse upon the American people, upon US society, upon its political system and establishment, and through these, upon the whole world. It is an engine of witchcraft, a pernicious and evil Illuminazi nest of death and abomination; and until its baleful influence, which overwhelms any positive contributions Yale may have made to society, is removed, it will continue to spread its accursed evil throughout the United States and the world.

Most of all, Yale stands for double-mindedness, which is the essence of the curse of the two-faced, dialectically-oriented Illuminati. 'A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways'. Instability, confusion, lies, cynicism, cold-heartedness, self-absorption and double-dealing are the marks of the 'Bonesman' Illuminist. Among normal people, double-mindedness is a hazard of our humanity, and a challenge to be overcome, as we progress spiritually. But the Illuminati base their entire approach to geopolitics upon a deliberate strategy of double-mindedness. Thus a Wolfowitz can preside over the planning and perpetration of the offensive against Iraq one year, and ascend two years later to the globalist 'welfare' role of President of the World Bank - without any blushes, secure in the knowledge that the 'mainstream' media can never grasp how, in conscience, he could make such a transfer. Double-mindedness is the secret. ■

22
LAUNDROMAT
ALLEGED U.S. ILLUMINATI CRIMINALIST CONNECTIONS
WESTERN SUGAR
Directors: GEORGE BUSH SR, GENERAL MANUEL NORIEGA
OLIVER NORTH, GENERAL RICHARD SECORD
NORMAN BROWNSTEIN, LEONARD YALE MILLMAN
AIMCO (NHP)
WWF GROUP
SHADOW GOVERNMENT, CIA ASSETS
Oliver North, Ted Shackley, 'Al Martin', Dick Brenneke, Gunther Russbacher, Michael Riconosciuto, Gene Tatum
AND MANY OTHER OPERATIVES
US DEPARTMENT OF 'JUSTICE'
LEE RADEK, Public Integrity Division, a.k.a. The God Squad, MARK RICHARD, DAVID MANN
HARVARD ENDOWMENT FUND
ALTEL
'BLACK' CORRUPTION CONTROL:
DVD DACHAU
CAPRICORN [= goat] HOLDINGS
UNITED BANK OF DENVER
DENVER CONNECTION
SYSTEMATICS (PROMIS: Inslaw affair)
OHIO CONNECTION
Flatiron Construction Company, Colorado
M & L Business Machines
ARKANSAS CONNECTION + William Weld
HARKEN ENERGY George Bush Jr.
Bar Op
Robert Joseph
WESTERN SAVINGS & LOAN
ROSE LAW FIRM
Jackson Stephens
Stephens Inc.
Carl Lindner
CARLYLE GROUP **
LEONARD YALE MILLMAN
Denver king-pin
Former Father-in-Law of Stewart Webb (Federal whistleblower) *
INTELLIGENCE ANALYST
Michael Milken
BCCI [CLOSED DOWN BY U.S. INTEL]
ARKANSAS DEVELOPMENT FINANCE AUTHORITY
King Harris
Albert Rose
Mill Rose Construction Co.
Lyons
James M. Lyons
OMNI BANK
Hillary Clinton [= CIA: 'Queen Melusina']
Vince Foster [with whom Hillary had a prolonged affair]
Webster Hubbell
William Kennedy
BILL CLINTON [CIA]
TRICOR
IRAQGATE
BNL
Gulf War syndrome scandals
Marvin Davis
MAURICE STRONG
Don Lasater
Allyn International Neckle Sewing Machines
KEY BANK
PARAMOUNT PICTURES
ADNAN KHASHOGGI
AMERICAN FINANCIAL CORPORATION
MARC RICH
MARVIN DAVIS
ROBERT VESCO
BERNIE CORNFELD
WHITEWATER DEVELOPMENT
Charles Keating
John King
King Resources
MDC Holdings Inc
Richmond Homes
SILVERADO SAVINGS & LOAN
Neil Bush, Director
LINCOLN SAVINGS & LOAN
E. Systems
IMPERIAL SAVINGS & LOAN
Beneficial Finance
What is MAURICE STRONG (UN operative and top Illuminati globalist) doing here? VERY good question. In 1980s, he was on Board of the Better World Society with GEORGIY ARBATOV [KGB/top Gorbachëv aide], Chinese official Zhou Boping, Jimmy Carter, Ted Turner and other Illuminati figures
RAYTHEON
Norman Brownstein
Director: CITICORP
Director: Chubb Securities
Larry Mizel
Philip Winn
MADISON SAVINGS & LOAN
TWIN CITIES BANK OF LITTLE ROCK
BEACH FEDERAL BANK
AMERICAN CONTINENTAL CORPORATION
ENRON [Serial Frauds]
Ken Good
Bill Walters
WINN GROUP (HUD Fraud)
KISSINGER & ASSOCIATES
Note: Dr Henry Kissinger = alleged Soviet agent BOR alleged cover for DVD Dachau
Blinder & Robinson
ATLANTA SECURITIES
CORAL GABLES SECURITIES
Ray Harvey
John Dick
NOTE: This chart does not include significant other entities alluded to in numerous related contexts in the narrative of this book.
NATIONAL BROKERAGE GROUP OF COMPANIES
VENTURA SECURITIES
COMPENDIUM TRUST (Jersey, Channel Islands)
INSEL TRUST (Isle of Man)
AIG Insurance
AMERICAN INTERNATIONAL GROUP, INC.
['American' = CIA].
Blackstone Group
HOUSTON ENERGY PARTNERS LTD.
GEORGE BUSH SR., JAMES BAKER III, ROBERT MOSSBACHER
Meyer Blinder
MAURICE GREENBERG
CARLYLE GROUP **

Figure 22: This adapted chart, first prepared in 1999 and updated in successive years (most recently in 2002), shows links between the Bush Family, the Clintons and some of their scandals, AIG (the huge insurance industry organisation allegedly used for money-laundering), and the Carlyle Group, which allegedly acts as one of a number of favoured Illuminati 'storehouses' for the accumulating wealth of the 'chosen illuminated ones', as well as a useful 'funny money' fiat distribution pipeline, like many so-called 'hedge funds'. The Author has adapted this chart to show that the corruption control is exercised by the Nazi Continuum 'Black' intelligence agency, Deutsche verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau - through George Busche Sr. (as of 2006), identified as the alleged actual head of DVD.

*The author of the original chart is Stew Webb, the former son-in-law of a Denver-based mogul, Leonard Yale Millman. His information is based upon detailed knowledge obtained during his marriage to the former Miss Millman. Note how the alleged Bush criminalist 'Family's' connections interconnect inter alia with those of the alleged intelligence criminalist Clintons. This exposure is of course only partial.

Chapter 2: THE CURSE OF YALE: Notes and references:

1. Mark, Chapter 3, verse 22. In this verse, the scribes accused Jesus of being possessed of the Devil (Beelzebub) and of casting out devils by invoking the Devil. 'Bonesmen' are effectively pledged, through repulsive initiation rites, to the Devil. This alone could explain The Order's use of 322. The Lord makes it quite plain that to accuse Him of being possessed by Satan and of casting out devils in the name of the Devil, represented a blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, for which no forgiveness is possible. This warning is given in the context of the scribes' mentioned lie that he was casting out devils by the power of Satan: 'Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme: But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation; Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit' and that he was casting out devils by invoking Beelzebub. [Mark, Chapter 3, verses 28-30].
2. Mark, Chapter 3, verses 23-26.
3. 'Get thee behind me, Satan'. If we tell him to get lost, he and his demons cannot harm us, because he cannot destabilise us - unless we invite or make it possible for him and them to do so. 'Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the Devil leaveth Him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto Him' [Matthew, Chapter 4, verses 10-11]. See also Luke, Chapter 4, verse 8.
4. 'Girl's rape filmed by teenagers on mobile', The Times, London, page 2, 18th June 2005.
5. Job, Chapter 1, verses 6 and 7: 'Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it'.
6. First Epistle of Pefer, Chapter 5, verse 8: 'Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the Devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour'. Peter then gives us the hope which is of the Holy Spirit (verses 9-11): 'Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world. But the God of all grace who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, settle you. To him be all glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen'.
7. Matthew, Chapter 18, verse 6. This is preceded by: 'And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me' [verse 5].
8. Mark, Chapter 9, verse 42: 'And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck and he were cast into the sea'. And in Luke, Chapter 17, verses 1 and 2, the Lord's warning to those who corrupt children is crystal clear: 'Then said he unto his disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come; but woe unto him, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones'. In the New Testament of Jesus Christ, where a severe warning is repeated, it addresses an issue of exceptional gravity. It is clear, for those who have ears to hear and eyes to see, that offending (corrupting) little children and young people is an offence so grievous that no forgiveness is possible: in other words, such offence represents blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, for which the Lord tells us elsewhere that no forgiveness is obtainable. Jesus makes this crystal clear in Matthew Chapter 12, verses 31-32: 'Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man [Jesus], it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come'. This is repeated in Mark, Chapter 3, verses 28-29: 'Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme; But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation'. See also Note 7.
9. Psalm 127, verse 1. This is a Psalm of Solomon, who was preparing to build the First Temple at the time. It recognised that if the Lord was not 'on side', the project would ultimately fail.
10. Psalm 32, verse 10.
11. Psalm 119, verse 165.
12. 'Fleshing Out Skull & Bones: Investigations into America's most Powerful Secret Society', edited by Robert A. (Kris) Millegan, TrineDay, LLC, Walterville, OR 97489, 2003, ISBN 0-9752906-0-6.
13. 'Fleshing Out Skull & Bones: Investigations into America's most Powerful Secret Society', Edited by Robert A (Kris) Millegan, op. cit.. This is an excellent compendium of information, including historical articles and materials, on Skull and Bones, a.k.a., 'The Order'. It should be noted that many Illuminist organisations are referred to internally as 'The Order' - including Ordo Templi Orientis, Opus Dei, the Society of Jesus (Jesuits), and the sect of the Illuminati, which has infiltrated governance and key organisations - including Freemasonry, the Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses and many others. Indeed, as observed elsewhere in this book, the use of the term 'The Order' to describe an organisation or sect signifies that the organisation in question is a component of the Illuminati. All are mechanisms of mind-control and personality modification.
14. These details are taken from the summary by Kris Millegan in 'Fleshing out Skull and Bones', op.cit, pages 1 et seq.. Not all the quotations are supported by references, but the research is considered by other analysts to be accurate.
15. Margaret Elizabeth Stucki, 'War on light: The Destruction of the Image of God in Man Through Modern Art', Freedom University Press, Florida, 1975, page 7; recited by the late Skull and Bones expert Antony C. Sutton in 'America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones', Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana, 1986, ISBN 0-937765-02-3.
16.The Author was informed in early 2005 by a senior US intelligence official, in an email, that the tsunami was induced/natural, which was an oblique way of confirming that it was induced. Separately, another senior US intelligence official has informed the Author specifically that the tsunami was artificially induced for control purposes, and that the atrocity was a cooperative operation involving several important countries, including the United States, Russia and probably the United Kingdom. 17. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 9, verse 1.

18. Romans, Chapter 1, verses 28-32.

19. 'Fleshing out Skull and Bones', op. cit., page 418, in an essay entitled: 'God and Man and Magic at Yale', one of a number of related treatises in this volume.

20. The Torah: A Modern Commentary', Union of American Hebrew Congregations, New York, Rabbi W Gunther Plant, Ed., 1912-, ISBN 0-8074-0055-6, page 624.

21. Urim and Thummim: 'And thou shalt put in the breastplate of judgment the Urim and the Thummim' [Exodus, Chapter 28, verse 30; 'And he put the breastplate upon him [Aaron]; also he put in the breastplate the Urim and the Thummim' [Leviticus, Chapter 8, verse 8]; 'And of Levi, he said, Let thy Thummim and thy Urim be with thy holy one' [Deuteronomy, Chapter 33, verse 8]; 'And the Tirshatha [Governor] said unto them, that they should not eat of the most holy things, till there stood up a priest with Urim and with Thummim' [Ezra, Chapter 2, verse 63]; 'And the Tirshatha said unto them, that they should not eat of the most holy things, till there stood up a priest with Urim and Thummim' [Nehemiah, Chapter 7, verse 65]. Since they used the Hebrew words Urim and Thummim, it is evident that the assembled Oxford and Cambridge academics who translated the King James Bible were ignorant of, or could not agree upon, an appropriate translation of these two terms. This uncertainty is echoed, as indicated, in the findings of the modern rabbinical authorities, who are nevertheless consistent in asserting that Urim and Thummim were indeed devices of the oracle, meaning YES and No.

22. The General Epistle of James, Chapter 1, verse 8, and verse 6.

23. 'I am the Way, the Truth and the Life. No man cometh to the Father but by me'. John, Chapter 14 verse 6.

24. See Note 25 and the quotation from 'Morals and Dogma' by Albert Pike, on this page (43).

25. Pike, Albert, 'Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry', first published 1871, House of the Temple, Washington DC, 1969, page 321.

26. Reiteration of the relevant somewhat tedious information about Yale's many secret societies is not attempted in extensive detail here, since that work has been done by others. The most recent compendium of such information is the mentioned volume, 'Fleshing Out Skull and Bones', edited by Kris Millegan, op. cit. The first serious modern study was undertaken by the late Antony C. Sutton in 'America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones', Liberty House Press, Billings, Montana, 1986, ISBN 0-937765-02-3, op. cit.

27. Clarence W. Mendel, from 'Fifty Years of Yale News', 'Yale Daily News', 28th January 1928, New Haven, CT; cited in 'Fleshing Out Skull and Bones', op. tit, pages 521 et seq..

28. Andrei Navrozov, The Gingerbread Race: A Life in the Closing World Once Calle Free', Picador, Pan Books Limited, Pan Macmillan Publishers Limited, London and Basingstoke, UK, 1993, ISBN 0-330-37636-8.

29. 'At Skull and Bones, Bush's Secret Club Initiates Ream Gore', Ron Rosenbaum, The New York Observer', 12th September 2004.

30. Andrei Navrozov, The Gingerbread Race', op. cit., page 279

31. First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 6, verse 19: 'What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?' Luke, Chapter 17, verse 21: 'Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you'. See also Acts, Chapter 8, verse 48: 'Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands'. Temple- and cathedral-building is spiritually diversionary. Speculative masonry is therefore itself derived from a spiritual blind alley.

32. // Corinthians, Chapter 11, verse 14. The entire passage (verses 13-15) is of crucial importance for anyone who wishes to see through the diversions of the Devil, including those perpetrated by fake formal religion: 'For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel: for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works'. But in the case of The Order of Skull and Bones, this abomination is so evil that no attempt is made to hide its filthiness, its foul-mouthed vulgarity, and its Satanic orientation. The Order's attempts to cover up its devilish occultic aberrations have become less and less effective in recent years, and the truly abominable nature of this Curse of Yale has been and is being exposed. This is happening because, as Jesus Christ clearly warned, no evil secrets can be covered up for ever. The criminalised intelligence community exerts massive energy in covering up past criminal operations, or botches, thereby revealing that it is perfectly well aware that the activities in question (such as drug operations) are criminal abominations. Let the Lord speak clearly to those who have ears to hear and eyes to see: 'For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was anything kept secret, but that it should come abroad' [Mark, Chapter 4, verse 22]; 'For

THE HEAD OF GERMAN 'BLACK' INTELLIGENCE

In October 2005, intelligence operatives attended the Munich Beer Festival - accompanied by an overhead satellite. Why did they need a satellite at the Beer Fest? Because the real reason for their presence at this convivial event was not to get themselves legless on Bavarian brews, but rather to monitor the HQ of German long-range Nazi Continuum strategic deception intelligence, based at Dachau, near Munich - Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst. In the same month, the Author published an issue of his financialjournal International Currency Review, in which the late Sir Edward Heath, Lord (Roy) Jenkins, and Geoffrey Rippon (who, with Heath, signed the British EEC Accession Treaty) were exposed as agents of the Abwehr (DVD), so that the Treaty, having been signed by traitors engaged in strategic deception, was and remains null and void. The Author also exposed the fact that successive EU Collective treaties have been procured by means of corrupt 'payola' payments - naming specific sums paid to key political figures in exchange for their services in trying to procure the failed European Constitution Treaty.

As a consequence of the Dachau surveillance operation identified above, it has been confirmed to this Author that George H. W. Bush Sr. was (as of 2006) allegedly the actual head of the German 'Black' agency - while other significant DVD penetrations were identified. So the writing is on the wall for the German long-range strategic deception planners, who, though in control of accumulated stolen funds on a prodigious scale, thought that their cover was impenetrable, and that any complicity in the 9/11 and 7/7 atrocities would never be discovered. As always, they went too far, and may pay a heavy price. ■

nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither anything hid, that shall not be known and come abroad' [Luke, Chapter 8, verse 17].

33. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 2 verses 1-8: 'And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? And now hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?' There follows a list of the foreign places from which the Jews of the diaspora, who were at Jerusalem, came, and the languages in which the Apostles and disciples who were filled with the Holy Spirit, were speaking. In other words, what they said made perfect sense in these foreign languages: whereas, in the instance of false 'speaking in tongues' described in the main text, the output heard by the Author over the telephone was chaotic, hideous, without meaning, joined-up and, to anyone not 'in the Word', would have sounded terrifying. Because it was diabolical.

34. This was an extremely unpleasant experience. Not only did this character unleash a torrent of meaningless demonic gobbldegook three times during the extensive conversation, but he progressively twisted Scripture until it was obvious that he was beyond aberrant. In retrospect it appeared that the object of this exercise was to test the Author's faith and knowledge of Scripture, as certain Illuminati intelligence cadres have been working for years on ways to demolish Christian faith, which is done inter alia by studying those whose faith is very strong, to identify why it 'works' and thus what methods can most effectively be used to neutralise it. All such efforts have historically failed and will of course continue to fail, since 'Heaven and Earth will pass away, but my words shall not pass away' [Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 35] The operative then demanded that we send him ALL our publications, shouting 'I want everything you publish. I don't care what it costs, d'you hear me?' So we duly obliged. It was bizarre, and indicative of how deranged many of these people are.

35. There is really little difference between the evil enticement by these means of naive, if headstrong, young undergraduates, and the corruption of children. Both deny the individual the opportunities which life offers and represent blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

36.The identity of the lady who provided the late Antony Sutton with the bound copy containing very extensive historical listings of 'Bonesmen' is known to the Author.

37. These names are selected from an alphabetical list of 'Bonesmen' to be found on pages 675-693 of 'Fleshing out Skull and Bones', edited by Kris Millegan, op. cit.

38. This drug network is documented in a number of works, including: 'The Politics of Heroin in South East Asia', by Alfred McCoy, Harper & Row, 1991; The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence & International Fascism', by Henrik Kruger, South End Press, 1980 [A/ofe; South End Press is a far-left US publishing house; however the facts in this book are accurate]; and 'Double-Cross: The Explosive, Inside Story of the Mobster Who Controlled America', by Sam and Chuck Giancana, Warner Books, 1992. See also: 'Kiss the Boys Goodbye: How the United States betrayed its Own POWs in Vietnam', by Monika Jensen-Stevens & William Stevenson, Plume, 1991; and The Big White Lie: The Deep Cover Operation That Exposed the CIA Sabotage of the Drug War', Michael Levine, Thunder's Mouth [sic]. See also Chapter 3 of the present work.

39. 'Fleshing out Skull & Bones', op. cit., page 11.

40. Statement reported personally in 1995 to the Author by William Norman Grigg, a Senior Editor with The New American', P.O. Box 8040, Appleton, Wl 54912.

41. 'Kiss the Boys Goodbye', op. cit,: see Note 17.

42. The Immaculate Deception: The Bush Crime Family Exposed', Russell S. Bowen, America West, P.O. Box 2208, Carson City, NV 89702, ISBN 0-922356-80-7, page 101. Also available through: Emissary Publications, PMB 1776,9205 S.E. Clackamas Road, Clackamas, OR 97015. Telephone: 503-824 2050.

43. The Immaculate Deception', op. cit., pages 98-99.

44. 'Fleshing out Skull and Bones', op. cit., page 303, quoting with permission from Chapter Four of 'George Bush: The Unauthorized Biography', 'Executive Intelligence Review', 1992, written by Webster Griffin Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, which contains more information about George Bush than any other source the Author knows. The problem with the book is that it was published by 'Executive Intelligence Review', an organisation run by the alleged counterintelligence operative Lyndon Larouche, who was a Marxist-Leninist agitator in the 1960s. However several researchers working for this outfit have excellent track records, so it is problematical for analysts to accept this source as genuine. On the one hand, the organisation publishing such material is hampered by an allegedly unfavourable reputation, while on the other hand some of their analysts work to the highest standards. All other considerations aside, the main problem with the analyses undertaken by these people is their habit of stringing long lines of connections together and drawing conclusions from the links such connections allegedly imply. All research into Skull and Bones, and into the history of the Bush family and the Nazi connections of Prescott Bush, suffer from this problem: in particular, 'straight' Skull and Bones research cannot avoid extensive analyses of the relevant personnel and their connections and activities both at Yale College and afterwards. The sober analyst must therefore be on guard; but as with all such research, truth and factual information can be recognised for what it is, and separated out from conjecture. The sources cited in this Chapter all pass necessary credibility tests: indeed, in 'Fleshing out Skull and Bones', the weakest essay is by an academic who plays around with 'conspiracy theory', obviously unaware that Lenin specifically proclaimed, in writing, that his Revolution was part of a massive conspiracy. The Author can illustrate the kind of linkages that are suspect, few of which are evident in these works, but which do appear in past work by 'Executive Intelligence Review'. For instance, the Author was both at Eton and an undergraduate at Christ Church, Oxford, at exactly the same time as Lord (Jacob) Rothschild. The kind of false analysis which is criticised here would deduce from these facts that Christopher Story knows, is in thrall to, acts on the instructions of, does the bidding of, is part of the circle of, and advocates New World Order policies espoused by, Lord Rothschild, all of which statements would be untrue. Rothschild's estate lies only a few miles away from where the Author is writing this book: but nothing whatsoever can be read into this, just as none of the other speculations, if ever made (which they never have been) could be verified.

45. 'The Final Solution and US Martial Law: The Deadly Link', by Pam Schuffert: unpublished monograph report from Germany, 2002, supplied to the Author by the distinguished US researcher and warrior for sanity, Charlotte Iserbyte. The Author's reference to the comment by a key US intelligence operative interviewed by the Author in June 2005 is of exceptional importance, as it confirms his suspicion that a number of talented and dedicated operatives were deceived by their own controllers, a widely-used technique which has special relevance here. Understanding that such people were deceived enables us to resolve conflicts arising from the fact that they participated in operations which were clearly Luciferian, and yet are now ready and willing to warn the world of the consequences of the Illuminati's intended hegemony.
46. 'Fleshing Out Skull and Bones', Kris Millegan, op. cit., page 20.
47. Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 20.
48. Isaiah, Chapter 1, verse 18. It is possible for almost all to be saved: after all, with God, anything is possible. But any member of the Illuminati who reads this book must realise that repentance is an absolute prerequisite for salvation. The example of the conversion of the Apostle Paul is an expression of the hope and opportunity we have for salvation: members of the Illuminati sect are not precluded, provided they have not participated in blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. If they have done this unknowingly, 'they may still be OK' (eligible for salvation') as our Lord's stricture on this issue is not absolute, if the text is read carefully. See Notes 1 and 8.
49. 'America's Secret Establishment', Antony C. Sutton, op. cit, pages 5-6.
50. The article by Ron Rosenbaum cited by Antony Sutton appeared in 'Esquire', September 1977, and was entitled: 'The Last secrets of Skull and Bones'. Sutton comments on page 6 of his book, in a note: 'Unfortunately, the article completely misses the historical significance of Skull and Bones, although it is an excellent source of lurid details and the mumbo-jumbo rites'.
51. Gospel of John, Chapter 8, verse 44.
52. Manly R Hall, 'The Lost keys of Freemasonry or The Secret of Hiram Abiff', page 48, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., Richmond, VA, 1923-1976, ISBN 0-88053-044-8, which is 'Dedicated to the Seekers of Light wherever dispersed upon the face of the globe'.
53. 'America's Secret Establishment', Antony C. Sutton, op. cit., page 7.
54. Essay on Demosthenes by Plutarch, written about 75 BC, translated by John Dryden.

THE PROPORTIONS OF THE CRIMINALISM CRISIS

Criminalism is a word coined by the Author for use in his financial serial publications to distinguish officially sponsored criminal operations from 'stand-alone' mafia-style organised crime.

Criminalism means the exploitation of state-sponsored criminal operations in the interests of strategy, an activity that is manifestly open to abuse. For instance, according to Pat Cameron, a former Los Angeles-based attorney for the US Secret Service/Treasury intelligence operative Leo Wanta, former President George Bush Sr. allegedly sought to withdraw $210 billion of funds from one of the myriad Title 18, Section 6 US Government intelligence-sponsored corporations set up by Wanta for the implementation of state intelligence operations. Leo Wanta, a co-signatory of the account, refused to apply his signature, pointing out that the funds in the bank accounts of one of the offshore Ameritrust corporations belonged to the US Government, not to an individual. Partly because of his refusal to meet the former President's wishes, and because separately - in his role as a US Treasury/Secret Service analyst and Trustor - he wrote on a financial print-out that he was auditing 'Acceptance of value by former U.S. President of the United States George (Jorge) Bush is direct violation of our USA Title 5, Section 7353, et seq.: Jim Baker III told me to just "Shut Up", as I am protected by Rogers Houston Memorandum to Co-operate', but I kept Receipts & Notes', he was subsequently arrested on trumped-up charges, falsely alleged by officials to be dead, and made to suffer extreme humiliation and imprisonment/house arrest for an imposed period of many years: just for doing his duty. Separately, Hillary Clinton allegedly withdrew a very large sum of money from Grenada-based Crozier Bank. She and her CIA operative husband have acquired property in Ireland, to which they may intend to flee should the authorities finally decide that they must be prosecuted - there being no extradition treaty between Ireland and the United States.

President Ronald Reagan's Executive Order 12333 [see box, page 20], which, in 1981, authorised the establishment by intelligence cadres of corporations at home and abroad for intelligence purposes, and for their sponsorship and ownership to be denied, opened up myriad opportunities for corruption by intelligence operatives. Powerful intelligence 'barons' and other senior figures who control US intelligence offshore bank accounts may be liable from time to time to be tempted to take some of the funds for their own purposes. So many instances of this behaviour have been identified by the Author that it is concluded that a proxy US mob gang war has been raging for years between cadres of operatives owing allegiance to competing-cooperating barons, as they struggle for control of colossal US financial assets. At the same time, trillions of dollars' worth of funds have been misappropriated. This is the mirror image of what has of course been routine practice in the criminalised 'former' USSR.

Gorbachev's Politburo authorised similar 'private' corporations a decade after President Reagan's Executive Order 12333, as a consequence of which the number of Soviet intelligence-linked corporations ballooned - many of them carrying the tell-tale suffix 'ex'. A similar situation has accordingly arisen in the 'former' Soviet Union, where the Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) officer serving as President, V. Putin, has been masterminding a campaign to force intelligence officers like Mikhail Khodorkovsky to disgorge the 'assets of the state' which were 'temporarily' privatised into their hands in order to fool the international community with a 'new form' of Leninist 'state controlled capitalism'.

In short, Illuminati money operations typically devolve into ruthless criminal behaviour. ■

CHAPTER THREE

THE LURE OF DRUGS

DRUGS AS THE LUBRICANT OF THE NEW UNDERWORLD ORDER

Because the Illuminati secretly run the global drug networks - as will be revealed by the Illuminati defector whose ghastly findings about this global control sect are reviewed in Chapter 7 - and because the historical connections between the Luciferian Skull and Bones society at Yale College and drug-trafficking have been discussed in Chapter Two, this Chapter addresses the drug-trafficking dimension of the New Underworld Order. Specifically, it reveals the massive, decades-long involvement of German-linked elements of the United States' intelligence community in drug-trafficking - arguably the biggest sub-scandal of the myriad scandals touched upon in this book (which of course, necessarily scratches only the surface of these issues, since it is impossible (a) for any single human brain to encompass the enormity of what is going on and (b) no single individual can possibly, via the public domain, amass details of the innumerable drug-trafficking networks, scams and operations that are being worked overtime at any given moment).

MAIN REASONS FOR THIS STUDY'S FOCUS ON THE UNITED STATES

To start with, though, it is necessary to correct certain misapprehensions. First, this book is not intended as a blanket attack on the US intelligence community, but rather upon the rotten components of it which are manipulated by the (Dachau) Forces of Darkness. The Author knows that many honourable US intelligence officers exist: indeed, he has had the privilege of knowing a few of them. These people are known to be disgusted and demoralised by the cancer of corruption, and not a little concerned at the magnificent opportunities it offers, by definition, to covert continuing enemies of the United States for blackmail, and for consolidation of the scourge of interpenetration which has immobilised intelligence agencies of the Great Powers. Secondly, the Author knows that it has been suggested, inaccurately, in some quarters that the Author has 'done an about face' - focusing on what is wrong in the West in general and the United States in particular, rather than, as in the past, on the Soviet dimension of the World Revolution.

This is inaccurate: those who have made such allegations have failed to understand, or refuse to consider, the reality that the Illuminati's preferred methodology is to manipulate 'opposites' (the Hegelian dialectic), with the intention of creating the conditions for 'progress' towards their global control objective. In general terms, therefore, the division of ideologies into 'left' and 'right' is a crude, populist deception for consumption by the masses which observers and analysts need to see through, before any reliable understanding of the world's problems can emerge. The corollary to the unjust allegation in question is that the Author is not paying adequate attention to the continuing Russian/Soviet dimension of the criminalist onslaught upon the West. That is untrue: the first two books published by this Author's book publishing company, Edward Harle Limited - The Perestroika Deception by the Soviet defector, Anatoliy Golitsyn, and Red Cocaine, by Dr Joseph D. Douglass Jr. [see: www.edwardharle.com] - explicitly addressed the Soviet dimension of the World Revolution, and the covert Soviet drug offensive against the West. A further, later, investigation - this Author's own analysis, The European Union Collective - revealed how the European Union, as Gorbachev proclaimed in London on 23rd March 2000 - is 'the New European Soviet'.

The focus of this book on the United States reflects several considerations. First, the United States has long since imported, and integrated into its 'class' Zeitgeist primarily via Yale College, the entire baggage developed by the Illuminati, a hyperactive-ly powerful, evil sect born and bred in Germany which serves as a deep covert instrument for the fulfilment of long-range German strategy to establish irreversible global hegemony. This deep penetration has laid the basis for the unprecedented crisis that America faces today, because few US strategists have a clear grasp of its significance. The Thousand-Year Reich' is a concept normally associated with Hitler: but in actual fact, it represents a long-term strategy elaborated by pan-Germans spanning the years from Frederick the Great, Bismarck, Haushofer and their Nazi heirs onwards. Secondly, this study's focus on the United States reflects the reality that Britain and the United States remain decisively 'the joint Main Enemy', in the eyes of both German (covert Nazi) and the Soviet (covert Marxist-Leninist) strategists, who have systematically, acting secretly together at the intelligence level, subverted and decapitated British power and global authority, and are concurrently engaged in massive Fifth Column and subversion operations in the United States (although they both underestimate the huge military strength of the United Kingdom, which remains truly awesome). These strategists see control over the United States as the key to global control, which is why the United States is the primary target of covert continuing German (Nazi International) global deception strategy, masterminded by the Dachau-based Nazi 'Black' German intelligence service, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, or DVD [covert German Defence Service] which, with back-up assistance from the parallel French 'Black' covert intelligence operation, manipulates and ultimately controls, with a separate Soviet dimension, the Islamic terrorist networks spun originally from the Muslim Brotherhood. This was established by the Abwehr in the Middle East during the 1920s in order to undermine British influence in the region - Al-Qaeda having been definitively identified as a manipulated instrument of the DVD. It will be shown in Chapter 8 that the Nazi Continuum has specifically stated, in a document captured by the Allies in the early 1950s, its intention of establishing the Thousand-Year Reich on the ruins of the United States. The German offensive against Britain is today concentrated mainly in the EU entrapment mechanism.

Although, given the focus of this book, this Chapter addresses the scandal of US intelligence drug operations and collaboration with organised criminal elements, it is not to be assumed that the Author is unaware of the nefarious drug-peddling activities of the British, German, French, Spanish, Dutch, Israeli, Chinese and probably the Swiss authorities. Cadres of French and German intelligence have been proliferating drug-trafficking operations, for decades. 'Clean' British intelligence sources advise that the Nazi apparat under Hitler, presided over by that evil genius Heinrich Himmler and the Abwehr, were well aware of the demoralising impact of drugs as a sabotage weapon. As Dr Joseph D. Douglass Jr. explains in his book Red Cocaine, the Soviet (and subsequent covert Soviet) drug-trafficking operations in the Western Hemisphere were and are, to this very day, coordinated via the Americas Department of the Cuban Communist

Party, which is controlled by the Jesuit-educated intelligence officer, Fidel Castro, whose DGI intelligence service was always heavily penetrated and directed by KGB operatives. For many decades, French intelligence has used cocaine-trafficking proceeds to penetrate and sustain the US Democratic Party, while the Republican Party has been the beneficiary of heroin-related proceeds developed by German (DVD) intelligence assets. The identity of one such asset is exposed in this Chapter. Spanish 'Black' intelligence is devilishly criminalised, exploiting its Latin American connections, especially in Colombia, for drug-trafficking and covert blackmail and bankrolling purposes - with Spain today awash with drugs and allegedly used (until he was ordered out of Spain in June 2006) by George Bush Sr.'s Latin American drug-related deliveries into Europe on behalf of the DVD. Chinese intelligence were running drugs long before Mao Tse-Tung used drugs against his own people prior to 1949, after which he presided over the externalisation of Chinese Communist drug activities, with a regional focus. In the 19th century, British and American interests were, as noted in the preceding Chapter, involved in opium and general narcotics trading at the expense of Far Eastern Untermenschen. So the involvement of intelligence communities - which are primarily occultic secret societies - in criminal drug operations independently from and in collaboration with, self-standing organised criminal networks, has been the norm for perhaps two hundred years.

A GREAT POWER MUST UNILATERALLY RENOUNCE DRUGS

A senior US intelligence operative told the Author in 2005 that 'if you attack the drug operations, they will kill you'. He said this not in order to threaten, but to enlighten. To which the obvious answer is that no part of the known truth is eligible for suppression. Drug-related intelligence criminality perpetrated by so-called civilised nations is a Satanic aberration that reveals the criminal nature of the governments that permit such activities, even on the 'pragmatic' ground that 'everyone else is doing it, so we have no choice. There is no alternative'. Actually, there is: what a national government thus compromised has the option of doing is to voluntarily renounce, and to order all its structures to cease and desist from, all drug-related activity - on pain of the same severe penalties that are (or ought to be) served up to drug traffickers at every level. Those who will reply that 'the world is not like thaf (as one worldly-wise and deeply cynical US intelligence operative said to the Author in March 2005), need to look at themselves in the mirror, take stock, and repent - or they will indeed 'die in their sins'.

However, this certainty does not seem to alarm them. For the evil people we are talking about are indoctrinated with the Nietschian nihilism expressed on the grim engraving upon the west wall of the Skull and Bones 'Tomb' on the Yale campus: 'Ob Arm, ob Reich, im Tode gleich'. For such people, death is 'the terminus': yet their demented occultic 'religion' impregnates them with the Luciferian lie that we live in a 'mechanistic world' and that they, as 'chosen ones', are privileged to be empowered (through ritualistic progression) to manipulate the opposing 'mechanistic forces' of 'good' and 'evil' (although they do not in fact believe in good and evil at all, notwithstanding that in their blinded eyes, 'Lucifer' is good and Jesus Christ (uniquely) is perceived to be the personification of evil, given that the Devil 'turns everything upside down'). And to 'compensate' them for the absence of any hope arising from their obeying the Evil One, these Luciferian occultic Masonic nutcases have invented the ludicrous delusion of 'reincarnation'.

So to 'hope' for any of the competing Great Powers to renounce the drug-trafficking operations of their criminalised intelligence communities will doubtless seem ridiculous to any cynical intelligence officer who may have been ordered to read this book. Yet it is exposure that such people fear most: after all, senior US intelligence officials have boasted, and expressed pride in the fact that, they control the US media - which they do in order, of course, to minimise exposure. And such control of free speech feeds, necessarily, on itself: as the darkness descends, exposure of official criminality becomes less and less feasible, but never impossible to achieve (since the media's controlling intelligence cells can never be 100% certain that 'breakouts' will not occur). These people are 'lost: in whom the god of this world' (Lucifer, the Prince of this World) 'hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them' [Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 4, verses 3-4]. Those, therefore, who are feared most, are those into whose souls this brilliant true light has indeed shined: for if, by accident, any such being should reach appropriate high office, he or she would be bound, if so empowered, to demand the immediate cessation of all drug-related operations by the penetrated authorities and their compromised structures, whatever the consequences. For governments that not only tolerate such activities, but participate in them, are criminal governments.

DRUG OPS AND POLITICAL PAYOLA BY BRITISH INTELLIGENCE

For the British political parties, the consequences of any cessation of official drug-related operations would be severe. In the 1950s and 1960s, the two main British political parties enjoyed paid-up memberships in excess of one million each. When the Labour Party (under the corrupted Harold Wilson) and Conservative Party (under the corrupted long-term German Abwehr agent, Edward Heath: see Chapter 8) embarked upon the treacherous course of 'taking Britain into Europe', both realised that the British electorate would be fundamentally antagonistic to the collectivisation and therefore the destruction of their ancient British sovereignty, that their memberships would decline, and that, accordingly, some other means of financing would become necessary. The means to hand was, and remains, drugs. In 1972, when the treasonous German agents Edward Heath and Geoffrey Rippon signed the UK Treaty of Accession to the European Economic Communities, the number of heroin addicts was of the order of 30,000. The total number of heroin addicts today exceeds 300,000; and these people are supported by the (criminalised) National Heath Service, which provides them with methadone, cynically ensuring that their demand for heroin after 'treatmenf will continue.

The collapse of political memberships has accelerated in recent years. In May 1997, when 13,517,911 British electors voted for the Labour Party, the symbol of which is the Rosicrucian Rose, it had 407,000 members; in May 2005, when 9,547,944 people voted for Labour, it had 200,000 members. A similar collapse of Conservative Party membership has occurred. Whereas funds for General Elections were successfully raised in the 1950s and part of the 1960s by local activists, the flow of funds from the 'grass roots' has to a considerable extent dried up, as cynicism, propelled by dissatisfaction and disgust at Britain's corrosive EU membership, has proliferated.

Membership of the European Union, which, as will be explained later, is an operation of secret German long-range strategic intelligence, has been associated with the corruption of British politics - the EU and its structures being accustomed to and driven by German-style corruption on the grand scale [see Chapter 8]. Accordingly, with the penetration of MI6 and other elements of the British intelligence community, drug operations are now routinely deployed to bankroll the two main political parties (the Author had no information at press date on the financing of the Liberal Democrats, although their limpet-like adherence to and support for the sterile policy of British membership of the Collective suggests that similar arrangements may apply). And the funds are made available by certain intelligence cadres, with large sums being transferred from offshore accounts, in exchange for sizeable rake-offs for the perpetrating 'benefactors' concerned.

Specifically, MI6, under John Scarlett, is oriented towards the German/French axis, with Scarlett, in particular, suspected of being an asset of Franco-German intelligence. In 2004 and early 2005, MI6 attempted to smear this Author, as he prepared to expose the giga-financial operation to finance the New Underworld Order presided over by George Bush Sr., in his financial journal International Currency Review. The Author, pre-warned of this intention by a veteran British journalist with deep MI6 contacts, proceeded to publish 16 pages of detailed information, in the journal, about how the intended smears were conveyed to him, ostensibly 'to make you sit up'. Following this 'blow-back', the smearers appeared for a time to have ceased and desisted. Their clumsy libels against this Author consisted of allegations that the Author was somehow associated with Sir Mark Thatcher in connection with the aborted Equatorial Guinea fiasco (in which a group of mainly British investors / operatives were supposedly engaged in plotting to overthrow the dictatorial government of that oil-rich country). A second, equally farcical version had the Author engaged in some underhand transaction in Monaco with Bernie Ecclestone, the British motor racing king-pin, an alleged drug dealer who was involved in the notorious Great Train Robbery in the 1960s. Such absurd inventions, concocted inside the MI6 building, overlooked the well-known fact that the Author works 24/7, 365 days of the year on his business's books and serials, so that there would be no time for any such stupid ventures. The veteran British journalist who retailed the Mark Thatcher invention, Gordon Thomas, warned the Author that MI6 had obtained unspecified false information about the Author, which had been retailed to the British media. This outrage was also reported in International Currency Review.

In the light of the Author's knowledge that elements of MI6 are not only 'working with' German and French intelligence against Britain's interests, but that MI6 is in the habit of frustrating the work of honest MB operatives working round the clock against the Al-Qaeda cells ultimately controlled by German 'Black intelligence, one can see why MI6 stupidly dislikes the Author and all his works. That corrupted intelligence organisation will dislike him all the more for revealing, herewith, that MI6 accommodates the GO-2 'anti-drug' cadre of UK intelligence community, at their Lambeth headquarters, and that GO-2, far from curbing drug-trafficking into Britain, actively encourages and facilitates it. Specifically, it coordinates two drug cartels which are the sources of corrupt drug finance made available to the main British political parties by its 'good offices'. After informing the Author of these dreadful facts, the reliable intelligence sources who provided this information, added in unison: 'Britain has a criminal government'. It is to be hoped that these necessary exposures will help any critics in the United States to understand that both our countries are victims and at the same time perpetrators of these unspeakable evils, so that this book's focus on the evils identified inside the US structures and society, must not be construed as being in any way indicative of bias on the part of the Author against the United States.

Knowing how sensitive Americans are to criticism of any kind, this needed to be said, not least since the Author is a frequent visitor to the United States and a devoted fan of that great country. Indeed the Author's very familiarity with parts of America has, in part, motivated this investigation - which has been assisted by the relative transparency of US society, and by tensions caused by foreign penetration inside US intelligence: the underlying source of leaks by paradoxically dissident loyal US operatives.

Keeping the main British political parties afloat and at times awash with drug money has of course irreparably corrupted the British political system, converting the genuine democracy that flourished up to the 1950s and 1960s into a the decadent criminalised cess-pit that we see before our eyes today. The reverse of the drug money coin is, of course, the familiar word: BLACKMAIL. Should a key political party, or elements within it, show signs of deviating from 'the agenda', GO-2 and MI6 have the means, shall we say, of ensuring that any such intended 'deviancy' is brought back 'on message' with minimal delay. In the unlikely event of a 'mishap', taking the form of some indiscreet politician persisting with deviations from 'the line', heavy hints or threats are issued concerning the dire consequences liable to attend any such departure. And what is the 'line' to which all the main UK political parties are required to adhere so rigidly? You guess right: no rocking of the European Union boat. No talk of Britain leaving the German-dominated European Union. And of which key country is the European Union a long-term foreign policy strategic extension and deception? Answer: Germany. The key political parties are paid for by drug money, coordinated by the DVD, Dachau.

GERMANY EXPORTS ILLUMINISM AS ITS MAIN STRATEGIC COVER

German intelligence has always influenced and been present deep within foreign targeted intelligence and policymaking circles - not least within the Soviet intelligence and Communist Party structures. The Illuminist Grigory Efimovich Rasputin-Novy was widely assumed by the Russian nobility to be a German subversion operative. As Edvard Radzinsky has explained in his book 'Rasputin: The Last Word' [Weidenfeld and Nicholson, and Phoenix, Orion Books Ltd., London, 2000, page 527]: 'At the time, they were already saying on every [street] corner and in every home that Rasputin was in the pay of German agents. And Rasputin, and the Tsarina who deferred to him, and [Anya] Vryubova [the Tsarina's closest friend] - the 'dark forces' - decided to lead Russia out of the war'. But that, indeed, was what Rasputin, who had been 'prepositioned' with the Imperial Family by German intelligence prior to the war, was instructed to do.

It is, indeed, a speciality of German intelligence to position operatives at the heart of targeted royalty. For instance, Mrs Wallis Simpson, a dark and sinister (as well as being an unsurprisingly ugly) woman, has been described to the Author by an intelligence source as a German agent, whose task had been to persuade King Edward VIII of the necessity of not impeding the Third Reich's plans in general, and remaining neutral in any war that might break out, in particular.

And an incident in which Prince Harry, who once showed signs of excessively wild youthful behaviour, was photographed dressed up in a Nazi era uniform was, the Author is reliably informed, a typical discrediting operation masterminded by the Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, which, like its Abwehr predecessor, has a long history of intermeddling with targeted European Royal Families. The fact that the British Royal Family is of partly German origin is not material, as the family and its national loyalties predate the hyperactivity phase of German Illuminism.

Finally, Lavrentii Beria, Stalin's odious Uluminati secret police chief, was a long-serving German deep penetration agent. While his (Jewish) boss, the Illuminist Josef Stalin (Djugashvili), was alive, Beria was accustomed to dining with the tyrant in the middle of the night (as Stalin, being 'of the darkness', preferred, like the occult Illuminist Hitler, to work at night: the daylight bothered him). Beria certainly maximised the potential for implementing Karl Marx's vow to procure the destruction of as much of humanity as possible. But as soon as Stalin was dead, Beria took it upon himself to travel to East Germany, with the intention of procuring the outcome that was finally orchestrated by Soviet military intelligence under Vladimir Putin in 1989-91, directed by KGB Supremo Gorbachev.

As for the German Illuminist, Karl Marx, likewise of Jewish extraction (but having had a Protestant upbringing), he abandoned his early Christian learning well before his twenties (as did Stalin, who had been a seminary student in his teens), and took to writing demonic poetry and plays. In his poem 'The Pale Maiden', Karl Marx wrote: Thus Heaven I've forfeited, I know it full well. My soul, once true to God, Is chosen for Hell'. This is uncannily close to the 'lyric' belted out by the Finnish Illuminati-controlled devil Lordi at the 51st Eurovision 'Song' Contest on 20th May 2006: 'Wings on my back, I got horns on my head, My fangs are sharp, and my eyes are red: Not quite an angel or the one that fell; Now choose to join us [the whole point - Ed.] or go straight to Hell'.

As he became demon-possessed, having, like Lenin, Stalin and Hitler, indulged in occult activities, Marx's private writings became openly demonic. Marx was enticed into the occult while at University - just as 'tapped' Yale 'Bonesmen' are enticed into occultism by means of the intensified crash course in demonic possession that they so eagerly embrace after being 'chosen'. Having proclaimed in one youthful outburst identified by the Romanian hero and Pastor, Richard Wurmbrand, who discovered and examined Marx's poems, plays and other writings, and his letters to his father[1], that 'Nothing but revenge is left to me', Marx spent the rest of his life, which he lived in unclean, dishevelled chaos, in pursuit of revenge against the Lord Almighty: 'I wish to avenge myself against the One who rules above', he wrote, thus revealing that, contrary to the common supposition, he was far from being an atheist. You can't take revenge against someone who doesn't exist.

'Embracing me', he wrote under demonic possession, 'the world will dumbly pass away, And then sink down to utter nothingness...'. And, having abandoned God, imagining he could spite the power that creates life, he dedicated his existence to turning truth upside down, which meant, as it means today, substituting death ('collateral damage') for life. Incredibly, too, Marx actually revealed, in an early poem, that he intended to 'go all the way' to becoming 'like a god' - the temptation elaborated at the beginning of the Book of Genesis, propelled by the 'seething energies of Lucifer'[2]: for in one screaming poem, he wrote, according to Pastor Wurmbrand's research: 'With disdain I will throw my gauntlet Full in the face of the world, And see the collapse of this pygmy giant [God] Whose fall will not stifle my ardour. Then I will wander godlike and victorious Through the ruins of the world And, giving my words an active force' [i.e., empowering them with the 'seething energy' derived from his 'familiar' spirit(s)], T will feel equal to the Creator' (even though Marx says that the Creator will have 'collapsed').

Such was, and remains to this day, the madness and demonic energy typical of members of the huge covert sect of the Illuminati, spawned originally from a Jesuit cradle in Germany. These are Tosf souls who consciously seek to outwit the prophesy of the greatest of all the Lord's prophets, Isaiah: 'How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!' (i.e., Lucifer weakens the nations, as we see so clearly today). 'For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into Heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God... I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High'[3].

The Soviet Government established by Trotsky and Lenin was the first large-scale pitch-Black Illuminati-sponsored regime of the modern era, despite having been formulated and directed mainly by operatives of Jewish extraction (for the Illuminati are neutral and agnostic about Jewishness, even though many are Jews: they use the Jews, and having made full use of their talents, discard them later, as necessary, while at the same time reserving the option of using them as scapegoats for their own open-ended criminality, as will be explained in Chapter 7 on the Illuminati. This is one of the most disturbing characteristics of what the Apostle Paul referred to as 'the mystery of iniquity'[4].

The second such modern Great Power Illuminist abomination was of course Nazi Germany. Following the fall of Hitler's regime - which the whole world mistakenly assumed 'meant' the collapse of Nazism - many similar abominations, modelled along Illuminist lines, sprang into existence: the Communist Chinese and Cambodian regimes and, most conspicuously today, the Illuminist regimes of North Korea, of Cuba and of Libya's Colonel Qadhaffi (who has surely one of the most evil of all recognisable faces) - and of the former Iraqi Ba'ath regime presided over by the Illuminist Saddam Hussein. That particular system was directly based upon the Nazi model, being originally a creation of covert Nazi intelligence. Following the First World War, Hungary experienced a brief encounter with Illuminism, in the format of the murderous Bela Kun interlude. Without exception, the speciality of each of these abominations was mass slaughter. And the Illuminati 'black regime' model was developed in Germany. It now manifests itself most conspicuously in the United States, where a Nazi-style 'coup d'etat by instalments' is in progress 'as we speak', and swat teams with helmets similar to those worn by Nazi stormtroopers are sent in to stricken cities (like New Orleans) and the Federal Emergency Management Agency does nothing except belatedly deliver a consignment of 25,000 bodybags. Were these then filled with bodies, or with drugs, as in Vietnam?

ONGOING COVERT SOVIET CRIME AND DRUG-TRAFFICKING OPS

Germany's covert orientation towards, and penetration of, the Russian structures, did not cease with orchestrated, controlled, and typically Leninist 'collapsible Communism', although Vladimir Putin was reported in mid-2005 to be engaged in measures to purge his structures of German intelligence agents. That this reported purge was under way highlighted an issue left unresolved in this Author's first book ''The European Union Collective' - namely that the long-range double-headed 'enemy' of Britain and the United States (France/Germany-covert USSR), cannot rely upon its own coherence, since these powers are all ambitious, ruthless, and divided against and among themselves. Of course, the covert Soviet strategic continuum has different ideas about where this will all lead, from the long-range intentions of covert Nazi intelligence, with its focus on a German-dominated 'Thousand-Year Reich' to be built on the ruins of the United States. Thus, in May 2002, the top Soviet Mlitary Intelligence (GRU) officer, Vladimir Putin, addressing the new NATO-Russia Council, felt confident enough to tell the assembled leaders of NATO: 'We should call ourselves the House of the Soviets'. The former Secretary-General of NATO, Lord Robertson, 'once' a Communist, who was in the Chair, responded by saying: 'I will declare that to be a joke' - which, of course, it was not. On the contrary, Putin was deadly serious, and those present, including President George W Bush, knew it. Yet even though President Bush Jr. was indeed present, the US President was quoted as parroting at another public venue, on 17th July 2002: 'Russia is no longer the enemy. Communism is dead'- the old, long since discredited mantra from the 1989-91 period.

Given that the 'collapse of Communism' was orchestrated by Soviet intelligence, with extensive clandestine financial engineering assistance from the West, it follows that the Communist dimension of the World Revolution dialectic, including its drug-trafficking and organised criminal operations, have remained not just intact, but hugely invigorated by the predicted realisation that the West has remained fast asleep while this strategic deception proceeds in accordance with the Soviet revolutionary blueprint initially formulated by the Comintern in 1928 and upgraded after the death of Stalin. This was all explained in 'The Perestroika Deception'[5], by the genuine Soviet defector, Anatoliy Golitsyn, and is elaborated upon in successive issues of Soviet Analyst[6], a publication edited by this Author. The Soviet (and now covert Soviet) Illuminist regime is 'stand-alone' in terms of its own revolutionary agenda, in accordance with the routine geomasonic Illuminist discipline of the dialectic of mechanistic 'opposites'.

Many reports have been published in 'Soviet Analyst' exposing dimensions of ongoing Soviet criminalist and drug intelligence activities, which are run in parallel with covert German, French and Spanish intelligence-coordinated drug-trafficking operations. Addendum 6 on page 695 ('Covert Soviet Financial Scams') is included specifically in order to emphasise the essential point that Soviet criminalism (= the exploitation by intelligence of organised criminal operations in the interest of strategy), which is State ('Revolution') policy, remains a hideous menace: it looks at Soviet intelligence criminalist penetration of the banking system, glimpses of which slipped into the public domain in the late 1990s in the context of the scandals surrounding the Soviet intelligence scams involving the embezzlement of $4.8 billion of IMF money, and Russian money-laundering operations via Bank of New York, Republic National Bank of New York, and innumerable offshore entities, including FTMACO, based in Jersey, and various Cyprus-based offshore companies. Moscow's southern Cyprus-based money-laundering centre was established in the late 1980s by the son of Andrei Gromyko (Katz), the former long-serving Soviet Foreign Minister and briefly President, who suddenly vanished from his senior position with the Soviet Academy of [Leninist] Sciences and surfaced in Cyprus, where as indicated he arranged for Cyprus to be used for Russian intelligence money-laundering purposes - residing in Limassol, close to the two British Sovereign areas of Akrotiri and Dhekelia. For a number of years, Gromyko Jr.'s telephone number (under his family name of Katz) could be found in the Limassol telephone directory.

On 11th November 1999, the Bulgarian Ambassador to the United States, Philip Dimitrov, addressed a meeting in Washington, DC, attended by the Author. His theme was the progress of Bulgaria generally 'since the fall of Communism'. As soon as questions were invited, the Author asked the following question: 'Is the official firm KINTEX still in business, run by KGB officers and trafficking in drugs?' KINTEX is a large, notorious Bulgarian state-owned conglomerate, run as always by Bulgarian intelligence, which is allegedly involved in drug-trafficking (almost all corporations with the suffix 'ex' are KGB-related operations). Taken aback, the Bulgarian Ambassador blurted out that 'the KGB people who were running KINTEX have been cleaned out' [sic]. This was the first-ever official confirmation that KINTEX 'was' a KGB corporation. The response also confirmed, first-hand, the Bulgarian connection to the Uluminati's global-drug-traffick-ing operations. When the Author pressed home with the supplementary question 'Is KINTEX still involved in drug-trafficking?', Mr Dimitrov did not answer the question, but repeated, with some irritation, his earlier statement that 'the KGB people who were running KINTEX have been cleaned out'. He then stormed out of the meeting.

As the Author argued in Soviet Analyst[7], if the Bulgarian authorities had been genuinely interested in getting out of the global drug-trafficking business, why in that case keep KINTEX alive at all, since its alleged drug operations had been so widely publicised over the years? Why not at least change the entity's name? Secondly who, exactly, 'cleans out' the KGB? No-one, of course, since the relabelled KGB is in the driving seat - in all States of the 'former' Soviet Bloc, as previously: indeed all East European and other Bloc States' intelligence services remain in the same subordinate relationship with Soviet intelligence as was the case prior to the application (by the KGB and GRU) of the 'collapsible Communism' strategic deception in 1989-91. The same applies to their Interior Ministry structures. The false-flag, puppet 'non'-Communist Bulgarian Government would never have been in any position to order Soviet KGB officers to leave KINTEX, especially since KINTEX 'was' so deeply involved in the implementation of Soviet global drugs strategy, which has the highest priority. Finally, the very fact that KINTEX has remained fully operative confirmed, without a shadow of doubt, that Mr Dimitrov was being 'economical with the truth': for, obviously, KINTEX has remained in the global drug business, and under the control of the (relabelled) KGB, as before. Indeed, given the massive ongoing US intelligence drug-trafficking operations which will be discussed, there can never have been any question of 'former' Soviet Bloc drug-trafficking operations being mothballed or closed down.

SOVIETS UNLEASH CRIMINAL CADRES INTO WESTERN STRUCTURES

In the 1990s, several prominent Russian officials (Communists masquerading as 'non'-Communists, as has by now become routine) made it evident that covert Soviet global revolutionary strategy entailed the unleashing of an army of Soviet criminal intelligence operatives into Western structures.

For example, Boris Uvarov, functioning under the label of the Serious Crimes Investigator of the Russian Federation, made it crystal clear for the benefit of anyone listening, that Western authorities had still, as late as the early 1990s, failed to realise what was about to hit them. According to the late Claire Sterling a CIA operative, author and pioneer of serious open investigations into the interaction of the criminal underworld with intelligence communities and vice versa, Boris Uvarov, with typical Bolshevik 'candid arrogance', let the cat out of the bag when he pronounced:

'Naturally it's wonderful that the Iron Curtain is gone, but it was a shield for the West Now we've opened the gates, and this is very dangerous for the rest of the world. America is getting Russian criminals; Europe is getting Russian criminals. They'll steal everything. They'll occupy Europe. Nobody will have the resources to stop them. You people in the West don't know our mafiya yet. You will, you will'[8].

This offensive represented a primary dimension of Moscow's economic and financial warfare operations against the West - the reverse of, or 'blowback', in opposition or response to, the extensive financial and economic warfare offensives being waged by Western (especially British and American) intelligence specialists against the Soviets and their fake 'non'-Communist successors in 1989-92. Some of the US Financial Warfare operations against the 'former' Soviet Union, including the removal of about 2,000 tonnes of official gold from the vaults of the Soviet Central Bank (Gosbank) and the degradation of the rouble, were masterminded by the heroic and unjustly treated US Secret Service/CIA/FBI intelligence officer Leo Wanta, whose subsequent exposure of criminal demands by US Presidents resulted in his illegal incarceration and house arrest.

In his excellent book 'Red Mafiya: How the Russian Mob has invaded America' [Little, Brown and Company, New York, 2000, page xv], Robert I. Friedman noted that 'the FBI has described [Vyacheslav Kirillovich] Ivankov as the most powerful Russian mobster in the United States. Before coming to the U.S. in 1992, he spent many years in the GULAG for a number of gruesome crimes, including torturing his extortion victims, and he had personally ordered the killing of so many journalists, police and civilians in Russia that a ruling council of mob bosses banished him to America. He arrived with several hundred no-neck thugs led by a former KGB colonel'. According to other sources, at least 17,500 Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) operatives were embedded in the United States and its structures by the mid-1990s - an unconscionable state of affairs which is all the more disconcerting given that the continuing Soviet GRU controls and supervises the Soviet element of the drug offensive against the United States and the West. For, naturally, the United States is far from the only key Western country to have been targeted by covert Soviet (Russian) intelligence criminalists. The consequences of drug operations in Britain by intelligence criminalists have predictably proved absolutely disastrous, and the British Government has consistently covered up the scale of its comprehensive failure in the so-called 'war against drugs', exactly as has consistently been the case in the United States. Whereas we know, and the Author documents in this Chapter, that German-linked elements of the vast US intelligence community are up to their necks in drug-trafficking, and have been so engaged for decades, the British tradition of official secrecy has hitherto prevented the exposure of any British intelligence involvement in this Luciferian activity. This can only mean one of two things: either British intelligence has been able to hide its complicity much more successfully than the leaky US intelligence community, which is riven by internal strife and rivalries; or else the British intelligence authorities have rightly refrained from participating in this evil game. The first alternative is correct: GO-2, a British 'Black' intelligence agency within MI6, not only controls two drug cartels and enables the proceeds to be deployed to finance the degraded political system, but also feeds cocaine into British schools.

In late August 2002, officers from the (overt) Bavarian Office for the Protection of the Constitution told the German newspaper 'Die Welt'[9] that Russian crime syndicates operating in Germany had close links to the Russian intelligence structures and also with 'high-ranking officials from politics and industry in Russia'. According to the German newspaper, in the past, German law enforcement officials had suspected that only former intelligence agents were involved with Russian organised crime groups.

But 'today', the report affirmed, they had evidence that active duty officers were involved. According to unnamed Bavarian officials: 'Often extremely flexible, interlinked businesses serving primarily money-laundering purposes have been established, commissioned by Russian intelligence services and criminal organisations'.

The funds earned from these criminal activities flowed mainly into real estate, restaurants and hotels. Endeavouring to reconstruct the various sophisticated criminal transactions, the investigators complained that 'through the purposeful establishment of global links of firms and accounts, the flow-of-funds frequently can hardly be reconstructed', according to one literal translation from the German. The overt German security service confirmed separately that Russian organised crime operatives are 'cooperating with' Russian intelligence officers in criminal businesses engaged in human trafficking, money-laundering and illegal immigration scams. It made no mention of the massive heroin-trafficking conducted by the covert Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst.

Thanks to compartmentalisation, which is as prevalent inside German intelligence as within the vast US intelligence community, it is possible that the overt officials concerned were unaware of DVD's dug operations. Whatever the truth of the matter, this German leap towards understanding was extremely belated. What on earth prevented German officials from making the connection earlier? The answer was revealed in the report itself: They thought, or purported to believe, that the criminals in question were 'former' Russian intelligence officers, who had resorted to crime - whereas of course they were and remain intelligence officers who were redeployed, along with criminal cadres released from the Soviet GULAG, specifically to realise the full potential of criminalism, in the interests of ongoing Soviet subversion and sabotage strategy.

Why did they make that false assumption? First, because the overt German intelligence and Jaw enforcement communities may, as indicated, work apart from the long-range strategists working inside the Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst at Dachau, even though the DVD also has its officers penetrated deep inside the overt German Bundes Nachrichtendienst (BND) service (just as GO-2 sits inside MI6); and operatives and police cadres in the open structures do not 'think dialectically'. And secondly, because of course they had fallen for the early lie that, following the Soviet 'August coup' provocation in 1991, the so-called 'purge' of the Soviet security services undertaken by Vadim Bakatin that year, was genuine - so that, therefore, hundreds of thousands of 'former' KGB operatives had been 'thrown out of work' and had resorted to crime as a means of survival. By jumping, along with their comparably deluded colleagues in other Western intelligence, or at least, policymaking, communities, to this lamentably false and naive conclusion, they found themselves well-primed to absorb the easily-transferred lie that the organised crime activities in which these 'out-of-work' intelligence officers were involved, were 'stand-alone' operations - like the US mafia-type activities familiar to Western movie audiences (even though the Chicago mafia has been used for decades by US intelligence to carrying out 'dirty work' operations, such as 'liquidations').

On 25th April 2005, 14 notorious Chicago mafia gangsters - including such criminals as Joseph (the Clown) Lombardo, Frank (the German) Schweihs, Frank (Gumba) Saladino, and other professional 'old mafia' criminals and murderers, reputed for decades to have been the city's key organised crime gangsters, and most of whom should have been arrested years and decades ago - were suddenly rounded up by the Chicago Police Department. The United States Attorney, Patrick J. Fitzgerald, announced the indictment of the 14 reputed mobsters and their associates on charges of plotting and executing 18 murders as far back as 1970.

So why on earth were these criminals left alone for up to 35 years, to get on with their filthy activities? Several of the accused are now in their mid-70s. The late respected analyst Sherman Skolnick, who knew the local scene well, has advised that a longstanding 'nexus' between the local Chicago CIA station chief, the local FBI, the Internal Revenue Service and other components of the corrupt US Federal bureaucracy in Chicago were in the routine habit of employing the services of the Chicago Mafia, known as 'the boys', to perform the US Federal Government's dirtiest jobs, such as domestic political assassinations 0ohn and Robert Kennedy) and foreign 'liquidations' in Mexico and Central and South America, to order - together with operations to import drugs into the United States, penetration of foreign governments through dope trafficking, flooding foreign jurisdictions with counterfeit paper money, smuggling high-tech weapons and gold, and manipulating the mass media through blackmail and other practices. He further advised that this 'old-style' Mafia 'Establishment', having become sclerotic and set in its ways, had come to stand in the way of the Federal authorities' preferred alternative underworld structure in Chicago - namely the highly-disciplined, experienced Russian mafiya cadres who have taken over the local underworld, many of whom are KGB and Soviet Spetsnaz operatives. He informed the Author and others that 'the US Gestapo' now prefers to delegate its dirty work to these ultra-efficient, professionally trained Soviet criminal classes. The informant added that there are good reasons to believe that the vast Chicago Russian mafiya, operating with impunity, consists, in part, of renegade Mossad and Jesuit cadres[10].

CRIMINALISATION OF CAPITALISM PREDICTED BY CLAIRE STERLING

This horrendous state of affairs was explicitly anticipated by Claire Sterling, following investigations which she described in her classic work 'Thieves' World'. In the course of a telephone conversation with a known US intelligence operative in 2004, a friend of your correspondent mentioned that two copies of 'Thieves' World' had been acquired, one for this Author and one for his friend. 'Oh', said the operative, 'I thought we had bought them all up' - by which he meant that a systematic attempt had been made to buy up or remove all copies of 'Thieves' World' [see Figure 23 below] from the open marketplace.

Armed with this information, the Author was of course pre-advised as to the singular importance of the intelligence contained in this work which is the classic source for early information on the financial, economic and criminal warfare dimensions of the red-

FROM 'THIEVES' WORLD' By Claire Sterling

Simon & Schuster, New York, 1994, ISBN 0-671-74997-8

'Far from the commonplace affair it may seem, laundering crime money can be an intoxicating power game. A global turnover of half a trillion narcodollars [as of 1994 - Ed.] produces colossal amounts of converted, expendable capital that can go anywhere overnight A launderer converting it by reinvesting it can move faster than any company accountable to stockholders or any State agency or international body'. Page 31.

'Naturally it's wonderful that the Iron Curtain is gone, but it was a shield for the West. Now we've opened the gates, and this is very dangerous for the rest of the world. America is getting Russian criminals; Europe is getting Russian criminals. They'll steal everything. They'll occupy Europe. Nobody will have the resources to stop them. You people in the West don't know our Mafiya yet. You will, You will'. Page 113, citing comments by Boris Uvarov, Russian Serious Crimes Investigator.

'People like [the distinguished US Secret service/ US Treasury operative Leo Wanta were doing the big straight swaps. Like an underground clearing house, they were collecting the rubles from Russian enterprises and rounding up foreign buyers. 'Hundreds of Russian firms chip in the rubles to get hard currency that isn't taxed away by the government; without people like Wanta, they'd be paying 30 cents on the dollar to the Central Bank. They're dying to do it. Wanta could line up a hundred billion rubles in a week'. Pages 203-204.

'Oh, I thought we'd bought them all up'.
US intelligence officer, on learning in 2004 that the Author and a colleague had acquired two copies of this book.

THIEVES' WORLD
THE THREAT OF THE NEW GLOBAL NETWORK OF ORGANIZED CRIME
CLAIRE STERLING
AUTHOR OF THE TERROR NETWORK AND OCTOPUS

Figure 23. Thieves' World: The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime, by Claire Sterling, Simon & Schuster, New York. 1994, disguised the intelligence operations that were embedded within international Financial Warfare transactions.

hot intelligence war that rages behind the scenes and the headlines 'as we speak'. Among the notable insights from this classic work, are the following:

'Describing the [criminalism] scene in the summer of 1992, Deputy Chief Anatoliy Trechov of Moscow's Interpol declared: 'Less than half of our joint ventures work. Only a quarter deal with their declared activities. Two or three out of five are financed with money of dubious origin. Many joint ventures are fictitious. Often they're one-man operations to swing hard currency deals. Four thousand of them have rights of access to the foreign market. At least 500 of our mafiya groups use them to link up with international crime - in the United States, Italy, Germany, Austria, France, Canada, Poland'. Six months later, Boris Yeltsin himself adjusted this last estimate upwards. 'At least a thousand Mafiya groups have contacts with international organised crime', he said. 'The American and Sicilian Mafias' (Claire's code for US intelligence) 'were the first in, by way of what was arguably the biggest black market currency swap ever perpetrated. As they and others moved in deeper, their Russian confederates moved out farther'.

In other words, (a) 'collapsible Communism', a long-planned Soviet Leninist strategic intelligence deception, was orchestrated and lubricated, in part, by means of intelligence interaction with the Soviet and Western intelligence underworlds; and (b) the interaction of US and Western criminalised or underworld-linked intelligence operatives with Soviet criminal intelligence experts, flung the door wide open for the mass walk-in of Soviet intelligence criminalism experts that has since taken place - so that 'collapsible Communism' is being followed by the engineered collapse of capitalism.

Enemy objectives include seizing control of the Western financial system - via its engine room, the banking networks - to compromise capitalism irretrievably, to milk the system for their own World Revolution objectives, to enrich themselves in the process, and to integrate the consequently criminalised Western financial entities with their own criminalised structures, so as to consolidate monopoly control. To the extent that Western and US intelligence understands belatedly what has happened, and what its own operations facilitated, the defeatist rationale that prevails today is that things have gone so far that 'we have no choice but to compete and to wage secret intelligence warfare on their terms'. In other words, the secret global intelligence war has acquired the characteristics of its model - Mafia gang warfare.

MAXIMISING THE POTENTIAL OF SOVIET INTELLIGENCE CRIMINALISM

As a consequence, the covert Soviet intelligence criminalism offensive has indeed been empowered (due mainly to irresponsible components of the US intelligence structures) to maximise the potential of unfettered criminal and drug-trafficking operations, protected by its detailed knowledge of endless parallel US criminal intelligence activities. Put another way, the US intelligence and policymaking communities are paralysed by the fact that, since the German element of US intelligence is itself so deeply compromised through its underworld and drug-running operations, they lack all moral authority - so that US operations to contain the spread and depredations of Soviet criminalism have been neutralised by their own ill-advised and reckless criminalism behaviour. It is also the case that since of course Soviet intelligence has made it its business to stay well informed, in real time, about US intelligence criminalism operations, it regards any protests and opposition from the West about its crime offensive with cynical derision.

By descending into the sewer with Russian criminal operatives, the United States' German-influenced intelligence services have smothered themselves in the same filth as their Soviet counterparts. All sewer rats are brown: there are no distinctions. By merging intelligence operations with the domestic and Soviet underworlds, US intelligence has, over the years and especially since the 'changes' of 1989-91, laid itself wide open to compromise, blackmail and consequent further deep penetration by foreign intelligence - under the guise of 'cooperation' both above and below the radar. And covert Soviet intelligence is of course only too well aware of the criminal histories of prominent past and present Illuminati operatives in the US political firmament who are protected inter alia by the US Secret Service, and by their intelligence covers and their high offices, from the consequences of any exposures of their serially criminal activities (so far).

Russian organised criminal operations at home and abroad are not independent at all: they are controlled and run by the intelligence services, under cover of the basic illusion summarised above. Vadim Victorovich Bakatin, who supervised the 'reorganisation' of Soviet intelligence after the 'collapse', earned the Order of Lenin from Gorbachev in 1987.

In late December 1999, the Financial Times of London carried reports elaborating on earlier leaks from US authorities to the effect that Russian [GRU-linked] 'organised crime figures' had been contributing to the campaign funds of prominent US politicians. In fact, what has been happening is that both Chinese and Russian elements have been 'competing' to make contributions (Chinese intelligence cadres being heavily involved in drug-trafficking as well, both in competition with, and in collaboration with (as necessary) their Soviet and American intelligence competitors/collaborators). The tactical purpose of such contributions is that, prior to exposure, the politician concerned (the victim) is susceptible to the underlying threat of blackmail; while after exposure, he or she is liable to be discredited: in this way, the electoral prospects of candidates favoured by the dialectical Left can be enhanced at the expense of 'unreliable' candidates.

For instance, the former Republican Mayor of New York, Rudolph Giuliani, was allegedly identified from 1993 and 1997 election records as a recipient of funds ($46,250) from family members and businesses linked to Semyon (Sam) Kislin - named in a 1994 internal report by the Federal Bureau of Investigation [FBI] as a Russian KGB crime syndicate member. Kislin also helped to organise fund-raising events yielding millions of dollars for Mr Giuliani's campaigns, including a once expected bid for the US Senate.

The Russian commodities trader further donated $8,000 to the campaigns of the New York Senator, Charles Schumer, a Democrat, while also contributing to the campaigns of several other political figures all across the political spectrum, including the Clinton-Gore re-election campaign, and Republican Senator Alfonse d'Amato. Kislin even sat on the New York City Economic Development Board.

Likewise, Jacob Bogatin, an associate of the Russian KGB/GRU operative Semyon Mogilevich - identified by both US and British intelligence as the head of a Russian crime syndicate - made donations to the US National Republican Congressional Committees in 1996-98. An Interpol report dating from 1996 claimed that Kislin's firm, Trans Commodities Inc., was used by two 'reputed mobsters' from Uzbekistan, Lev and Mikhail Chernoy, for fraud and embezzlement purposes. An FBI intelligence report dating from 1994 on the Brooklyn-based Mafia organisation headed by Vyacheslav Ivankov [see page 89], the imprisoned godfather of Russian organised crime in the United States, listed Kislin as a 'member/associate' of Ivankov's gang - claiming that his company co-sponsored a Russian GRU-criminalist boss and contract killer for a US visa, and asserting that he was a 'close associate' of a notorious GRU-linked arms smuggling operative, Babeck Seroush, an Iranian 'hoodlum' who later settled in Russia.

One interesting point here was that Seroush was indicted in 1984 by Rudolph Giuliani, who was then the US Attorney for the Southern District of New York, on charges of conspiring to smuggle semiconductors and night-vision goggles to North Korea. But West Germany, where he was living - protected by DVD - declined to extradite him to the United States. Mr Seroush was an Iranian-born 'Communist' who first moved to the Soviet Union in the 1970s and specialised in smuggling high-tech military equipment for the Red Army. He also has a record of drug-smuggling. According to the FBI and Interpol, 'an intelligence firm called Trans Commodities Inc. laundered millions of dollars and was used for fraudulent banking documents by the Chernoys in the early 1990s, with the brothers 'engineering' the takeover of much of Russia's metals industry, notably aluminium, through alleged embezzlement, money laundering and murder. The FBI report claims that in the early 1990s, Mikhail Chernoy was 'doing business as Transcommodities (sic), a New York-based trading company which is known to have laundered millions of dollars from Russia to New York'.

Further, a 1996 Interpol report based on several continuing investigations of the Chernoys, claimed that Blonde Management, controlled by the Chernoy brothers, is 'a money-laundering company target of US law enforcement'. The Uzbeki Chernoys were said now to be Israeli citizens and were 'suspected of money laundering, embezzlement of funds, and contract killing', according to Interpol.

The Russian authorities revealed separately to the FBI that the Chernoys reportedly 'defrauded' the Russian Central Bank of more than $100 million through an elaborate scam involving dozens of fictitious companies. The brothers then used the funds as seed money as they and a London-based holding company, Trans World Group, rapidly gained control, through a maze of offshore companies and alliances, of Russia's aluminium industry, while acquiring a large stake in the processing and distribution of other metals and petroleum products. This, at least, is the received, inadequate, sanitised, Western official interpretation of these particular matters. All such 'snapshots', by definition, omit details of parallel and connected operations on both sides - that is to say, on the part of criminalism cadres within the corrupt Soviet structures who were collaborating and continue to collaborate with their Israeli, Western and US counterparts in similar scams. Strategic analysis illuminates matters further. The initial funds were of course made available by the Russian Central Bank for use by these KGB/GRU officers to establish 'state-controlled capitalism'/criminalist structures.

BIZARRE AND RUTHLESS TREATMENT OF OPERATIVES

It is standard practice for Soviet intelligence (as well as for US intelligence) to leave operatives who 'mess up', to dangle in the wind, after exposure, only to be rehabilitated (often with a new ID) later, once the relevant publicity has died down (or not, as the case may be). In the covert Soviet Union, the most conspicuous victim of this practice in recent years has been Mikhail Khodorkovsky, a minor Minister in the late Gorbachev Government, senior KGB officer, and founder of the European Union Bank in Anguilla, identified not only as a KGB money-laundering entity but also as a 'bank' used by the German-American sometime CIA Director of Operations, a Mr Edward Lyle Bryan (Goeringer): see Addendum 7 on page 701 for details. In the US context, the FBI spy, Robert Hanssen, labelled when he was convicted on 6th July 2001 after pleading guilty to 15 counts of espionage, as the spy who did more damage to US national security than anyone in history, was reported to have been incarcerated in an underground cell at the vast intelligence and solitary confinement complex in Denver, with no natural light and only a computer for companionship. It was said that he would be serving life, having cooperated with the authorities in exchange for them not asking for the death penalty. Yet in June 2005, the Author was authoritatively informed by an impeccable US intelligence source that Hanssen was a free man, living on the West Coast.

'Mike' Delmart Vreeland, an operative who predicted the 9/11 attacks from a prison cell in Toronto, and who was said by a high-level US Pentagon intelligence officer to be 'no longer a threat to you' (this Author) 'because he is in solitary confinement for a very long time, and his case is sealed', was reported (a) to have been released from incarceration, again in June 2005, after serving no more than six months of such 'punishment', and having probably been held for his own protection, in view of the sensitive operations in which he had been involved; while (b) he was simultaneously reported to be still in solitary confinement (which remained the case as of June 2006). The Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) operative identified the Iraqi connection with Al-Qaeda, bringing back from an operation in Moscow the text of a message from Uday Hussein to President Putin dated June 2000, in which the precise date and targets of the 9/11 events were identified [see Figure 24, page 97]. This text has been criticised as a possible forgery, in which case it would have been designed to deflect attention away from the actual controllers of Al-Qaeda, and the inspiration behind the Iraqi Ba'athists, namely Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau. The Illuminati's controllers reserve the right ultimately either to rescue and protect their own operatives, or else to treat them with ruthless harshness. In sensitive cases, operatives who, according to the rule that protection may be afforded them in hospital or jail, ought to have been liberated long ago, may be jailed, 'for their own protection', for many years, or held under house arrest.

Abandonment by their handlers and intelligence communities is the risk that such operatives are required by their CIA or their KGB/GRU superiors to accept, as part of their job description. Those Soviet operatives who were to become 'oligarchs' accepted the poisoned chalice in the format of an opportunity to 'become billionaires overnighf -which was the offer made by Soviet intelligence at the outset of the orchestrated 'changes' in the late 1980s under the KGB strategic intelligence chief, Mikhail Gorbachev.

THE OLIGARCHS: KGB/GRU OPERATIVES FAKING 'FREE ENTERPRISE'

Specifically, the intelligence officers who subsequently emerged as 'oligarchs' - such as Vagit Y. Alekperov, Pyetr O. Aven, Boris Berezovsky, Mikhail M. Fridman (Friedman), Andrei I. Kazmin, Mikhail B. Khodorkovsky, Vladimir O. Potanin, Aleksandr P. Smolensky, Vladimir P. Vinogradov, Rem Vyakhirev, Anatoliy Chubais, Vladimir Wolfovich Zhirinovsky, and a few years later (in 2004) Roman Abramovich - were 'tapped' by their GRU and KGB intelligence superiors and asked whether they would like to wake up the next morning as billionaires, it being implied that their talents suited them for the task - on the unspoken (or perhaps formal) understanding that, as happened in the 1930s, the Party-State would in due course require the assets, which were to be privatised into their hands, to be handed back with compound interest[11].

When some of them, such as the mentioned KGB operative/politician Mikhail Khodorkovsky, were judged to have become too powerful or arrogant, or had embezzled too much, President Putin (who was himself still 'owed' $30 billion of 'special' funds from US secret intelligence sources in 2006) demanded that they disgorge their assets, or, in this case, arrested the operative concerned and held him sine die in jail. This massive operation, in which the 'assets of the Party-State were 'privatised' into the hands of selected KGB/GRU officers, was implemented in order to convince the naive international institutions, governments and policymakers blinded by the dazzling 'success' of orchestrated 'collapsible Communism', that the 'changes in the Soviet Union (and Bloc) were for real, and that the 'former' Communists had embraced 'capitalism' - whereas, in reality, these manoeuvres represented an elaborate Leninist strategic ruse, assisted by Western 'Financial Warfare' intelligence, called 'State-controlled capitalism': a more sophisticated variation of Lenin's New Economic Policy 'state capitalism' of the 1920s, which Stalin closed down within the space of three weeks in the following decade.

Interestingly, three weeks was the precise length of time that Mikhail Gorbachev took to close down - for international public consumption only - the 'Stalinist model' of Communism, in August and September 1991. According to The Washington Post[12], President Putin launched his intelligence operation to claw back the 'assets of the Party-State' that had been 'privatised' into the hands of these selected KGB/GRU 'oligarchs', at a round table meeting of 21 such KGB/GRU 'oligarchs' held in Moscow in July 2000. Addressing the meeting in his familiar Aesopian surreal Bolshevik method of speaking Putin warned: 'I only want to draw your attention to the fact that you have yourselves formed this very state, to a large extent through political and quasi-political structures under your control. So perhaps what one should do least of all is blame the mirror'.

Given that compartmentalisation also exists within the Soviet intelligence services, although not to the extreme extent that bedevils US intelligence, Putin was informing the highly intelligent, specially selected, largely Jewish criminalist KGB crooks concerned that he was perfectly well aware that they were intelligence operatives who had exploited their control of overt political and covert (= 'quasi-political') structures, to leverage the colossal wealth that they had accumulated - and (unspoken) that the assets that they controlled as a consequence of their criminalist intelligence operations belonged ultimately to the State (which would in due course be requiring restitution and disgorgement with all the interest due to it), as occurred when Stalin set the precedent in the 1930s.

In the modern era, the main initial wave of Soviet criminalist specialists arrived in the West during the mini-perestroika years under Leonid Brezhnev, in the early 1970s. In 'Red Mafiya', Robert I Friedman pointed out that 'in America, Miami had become the Russian mob's second city. Like Brighton Beach, it had a large Russian immigrant population. In the early 1970s, the Miami Beach Police Department began to notice that an inordinate number of Russian emigre taxi drivers were committing criminal acts. These Russians didn't fit the cops' preconceived notion of crooks, however. "They were always neatly dressed and very clean-cut and gave the appearance of wanting to fit in and learn the American way of life", said a Federal law enforcement report, written in

Figure 24, opposite, top (1): The text of a letter from Uday Hussein, Saddam Hussein's eldest son, to Vladimir Putin, dated 9th June 2000, predicting the 9/11 attacks, which the US intelligence officer 'Mike' Delmart Vreeland obtained in Moscow and was assigned to courier along with three diplomatic bags, to Canadian intelligence, but which he copied after sensing that something was about to go awry after he had landed at Toronto Airport. There, instead of being met by Canadian intelligence, he was approached by Russians. He handed over dummy diplomatic bags and kept a copy of this Note, which some have tried to dismiss as a forgery. It specifically confirms Iraqi complicity in the 9/11 attacks, implying Soviet involvement - thereby masking the reality that Al-Qaeda is controlled by DVD, Dachau, i.e. German involvement. Figure 24, opposite, lower image (2): Vreeland's 'Prison Note' scribbled ostensibly in the dark, on the floor of a Toronto prison cell. The Note was dated August 2001, and contained the phrase: 'They will paint me crazy and call me a liar... Let one happen stop the rest!!!'. After 9/11, the sleepy Canadian authorities woke up to the significance of this Note and passed it to their US counterparts. The Note also contains the intriguing observation: 'No comments on Lehder', a reference to the German (Colombian) DVD operative who masterminded the establishment of drug-trafficking cartels for criminalised US intelligence: see page 151 et seq.

❶

Date : Fri, 5 Jun 2000 15:40:24 -0400
Attachments : PROMT_sOnlineTranslator(2).txt (25k)

Быстрая радиация от взрыва не должна быть обсужденной в большой детали, однако, нейтроне, и лучи гаммы выпустят смертельные дозировки в от 4 до 7-мильной квартиры. Что - нибудь живущее в той области будет мертво так или иначе от начального взрыва. Начальная забастовка(удар) и или нападение, если Вы будете, начнется в Центре международной торговли 9-11-2001, нашими братьями в причине. Трехмильный Остров и Пентагон - также цели, которые мы не будем пропускать в начальной террористической стадии нападения, которая я мог бы добавлять, отброшу Американцев и оставлю их clueless к реальной забастовке(удару) после отпуска. Если все идет как запланировано, нападение будет работать также. После Американцев, кто без сомнения будут думать, что Осама виновен, война начала с его группой, стенды Российской империи, чтобы заставить первые плоды войны в сумм денег, обещанных Американцами помогать им поскольку, они всегда сделали в прошлом, это чисто время. Американцы предложат Москву что - нибудь, что это может, чтобы заставить это - поддержка, объявление, это - то, когда Вы сторона с ними и фарфором входите в W.T.O.. В некотором пункте(точке), Осама сообщит его ядорного оружия, купленного из России, мы будем отрицать это и будем утверждать, чтобы были украдены .WE НЕ ДОЛЖЕН ПОЗВОЛИТЬ АМЕРИКАНЦАМ ЗНАТЬ О НАШИХ НОВЫХ СПУТНИКАХ! Наконец, с Канадским Дипломатом и wildcard американский Офицер разведки Вриланд Delmart Пупа и Бастиен Марк, будут иметь дело в пути, подходящем к нам, наше Американское должностное лицо гарантирует это. Бастиен умрет от естественной причины, лейтенант Вриланд станет требуемым преступником, и его морские отчеты(рекорды) исчезнут .. так будет это случаться с другими, мы не будем называть. Последний(прошлый). ЕСЛИ, Буш Выигрывает выбор, мы будем использовать Vreelands старого Партнера, чтобы убить его после отпуска, только когда вещи, кажется, возвращаются к нормальному. Я пошлю большее количество деталей вовремя, пока мы не встречаем(выполняем) снова. Быть сильными мой союзник, будущее Америк Собирается быть нашим. Посыльный только, Kuday H.

❷

19

"N"
D.E.M.J. Vreeland
7th
October
2001

Now, just —
Sears tower ? Chicago
world trade centr
white house —
pentagon ?
world bank Malasia —
water supplies —
Scotia Building Toronto —
Parliament Bldg. Ottawa —
Royal Bank Toronto or [illegible] —

[illegible] they will paint me crazy and call me a liar.

[illegible] let one happen — stop the rest!!!

name
Dimitri
CHALKIN
OLEG
MARC
HENRY
OTTAWA
VLADIVOSTOK
(DR. HAIDER)?
bilateral

— Re. comments so [illegible] — Re. Thompson, [illegible]
Transfer [illegible] custody, [illegible]
my own [illegible] my [illegible] — Nov 20

C/R — Cov agreement TC-97

1994. Gradually, the Miami police learned that these taxi drivers were involved in many of the same crimes that had made the Italian Mafia so powerful: extortion, narcotics, gambling and prostitution. "They were a very tight group of criminals who had a code of silence that even the threat of arrest could not break", the report added'[13].

'By the late 1980s, the Miami Beach Police noted that crimes involving Russian criminals were growing craftier; their schemes more involved - well-organized narcotics trafficking, burglary and counterfeiting rings, and sophisticated bank and jewellery frauds. Even as the Russian mobsters graduated to white-collar crime, a continuing influx of Russians allowed them to control the streets, "RUSSIAN ORGANIZED CRIME IS A NEW AND SERIOUS THREAT TO SOUTH FLORIDA", warned a 1994 report. 'This is a well-educated group of active, young criminals' - specially trained in criminalism by Soviet intelligence, which has presided over a mass exodus of KGB and GRU operatives who have long since become embedded all over the United States, in universities, government, software (especially), business operations, and functioning as drivers, restaurateurs, you name it. In addition to Miami Beach and Brighton Beach, Brooklyn is now flooded with Russians, Chinese and other immigrants, who have been buying up property, pushing the local tradesmen out of business, establishing ethnic diners all over the place, and generally asserting their ownership. The Russian 'taxi driver phenomenon' has also been reported throughout the country. And in June 2005, New York real estate agents were being swamped with money from Russia and other 'former' Soviet Bloc countries. Funds for the purchase of New York apartments were being wired to them, sight unseen, on the basis of the brochure alone.

Of course the invasion of Soviet criminalist operatives, while most noticeable in the United States, has proliferated in Europe, too, leveraging the potential associated with the corruption of elements of the German, French, Spanish, Dutch and British intelligence communities, and of the European Union structures, which are institutionally corrupt. On 18th June 2005, Spanish police arrested 28 alleged Mafia bosses from 'former' Soviet Republics in 11 cities and resort towns in Alicante, Catalonia and the Costa del Sol, in what was described as the largest swoop on organised crime in European history. In this sting, called Operation Wasp, police froze 800 bank accounts, searched 41 estates and businesses, and confiscated 42 Porsches, Jaguars and other luxury cars.

Some €400,000 in cash and cheques were seized, along with guns, jewellery and properties, including a small mansion in Barcelona. Most of the capos were reportedly from Georgia, a traditional centre of criminal operations in Soviet times and for generations previously. They laundered money from illegal activities in their home countries and abroad, 'through a vast and expanding network of properties, restaurant chains and bars along the Spanish coast. They were charged with money laundering, bankruptcy fraud and maintaining ties to organised crime'[14].

Spain, at the crossroads between Europe and Africa, is also the main entry point for drugs and money from the Latin American cartels, which as this Chapter will show are far from being 'stand-alone' operations, but are controlled by foreign intelligence. The mentioned swoop was one of several large-scale police operations against international drug trafficking, prostitution and money-laundering rings on the Spanish coast, as the local authorities struggle to prevent Spain from 'becoming another Colombia' -the image that they have in mind. At the beginning of the same month, Spanish, Portuguese and British police found nearly five tonnes of cocaine worth an estimated £225 million at street level aboard a trawler off the Spanish coast, arresting 11 people, including three Britons. In March 2005, another laundering ring was broken up by simultaneous raids. The size of the law enforcement hauls has been increasing.

Reports such as these indicate that some European police forces are becoming more effective and appropriately ruthless in discovering and apprehending perpetrators of the absolutely heinous crime of drug-trafficking, which cynically wrecks the lives of millions of foolish and vulnerable people, and of innocent and impressionable children. A colossal industrial structure has been established to facilitate distribution of the drugs: for instance, on the very same weekend that the massive swoop that has been described took place, The Guardian', one of the British newspapers that gave the sting most coverage, was simultaneously sponsoring the annual 'pop music' festival at the ancient occult site at Glastonbury. This is timed every year as close as possible to the summer solstice, which is one of the primary dates of the occult calendar. The drug distribution infrastructure exploits such events to maximise the distribution of their product, the consumption of which goes hand in hand with 'enjoyment' of diabolical 'music' (noise) and dabbling in the occult. Indeed the proliferation of drugs, which is a project of the Illuminati as will be elaborated later, and the subculture they encourage, has been a carefully calculated prerequisite for the explosion of interest and dabbling in the occult[15].

EVERYONE IS IN ON THE ACT: SO 'ANYTHING GOES' IN THIS HELL

The rampant activities of 'former' Soviet Bloc drug operatives, mistaken in the West as manifestations of a 'stand-alone' 'ex'-Soviet Mafiya - whereas in reality these people are all connected with and supervised by the ongoing covert Soviet intelligence services -have proliferated most of all because Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU), which directs the Soviet dimension of the drug offensive because it is considered a weapon of war and sabotage, is fully aware of the fact that US intelligence has been engaged in drug-trafficking on a massive scale for decades, driven originally by German penetration of the CIA. Naturally, the Soviet attitude is that counterdrug operations against Soviet intelligence criminalists can never achieve decisive success while the Central Intelligence Agency continues with its own cynical money-making operations from the drug trade. Although close lay observers have known for many years about this scandalous state of affairs, the intelligence services have been adept at keeping the lid on this prospectively explosive scandal - and have more incentive for doing so than ever, given that everyone is in on the act. Drug-trafficking, holding financial assets in secret numbered offshore accounts, and ignoring the tax and reporting regulations imposed by metropolitan authorities, is 'acceptable' in this Thieves' World, a.k.a. the New Underworld Order. For instance, as the distinguished drugs expert Rachel Ehrenfeld has pointed out[16], George Bush Sr., a top CIA operative of course, took immediate steps to provide himself and the CIA with what he thought would be appropriately dense cover. 'To be sure, he did not wait long to announce his own views on drugs' - the problem being that the views he announced were false, and were not his real views. Those were formulated during his Senior Year at Yale, as an occult adept of Skull and Bones, and in the context of his German intelligence connections and orientation. 'In his inaugural address, the new President made clear [that] the fight would be a priority. Bush's early appointment of William Bennett and his orders to the drug czar to produce a plan within six months were' not 'steps in the right direction', as Rachel politely suggested, but rather measures to provide cover for the continuing scandal of rampaging drug operations in which the CIA remained involved. Unfortunately, Ms. Ehrenfeld allowed her optimism to gain the upper hand, insofar as the US Government's true intentions were concerned. Nor did she distinguish between the probably honourable intentions of the various US anti-drug structures, and the notoriously evil intentions and practices of elements of the penetrated US intelligence services, which is the most depressing and alarming feature of the crisis the world faces. Obviously, if 'the main enemy's' intelligence services are engaged in global drug-trafficking, all expressions of concern at the Soviet drugs offensive against the West, such as those elaborated by Dr Douglass in 'Red Cocaine', were bound to be jeopardised. For, before the United States can ever hope to stem and counter the flood of Soviet-, French-, German-, Mexican- and Spanish-provenanced drugs, and the corruption and money-laundering flows associated with them, its own filthy house will need to be put in order. And since the intelligence services run and control the Government, what chance is there ever of that happening?[17]

The Central Intelligence Agency has controlled and accumulated colossal stocks of 'Black Operations' funds ever since President Harry Truman signed the National Security Act in 1947, which, with its amendments and successor legislation, has created a 'crooks' charter' environment - separating the intelligence community from the rest of the US Government, given its command of vast resources that Congress knows nothing about. The first lay analyst to come to grips with this was Jeffrey Robinson, in his excellent book 'The Laundrymen', first published in 1994[18]. 'Right from the beginning', wrote Robinson, 'the Agency's more consequential role would be 'covert'. Officially included in that category have always been: subsidies to individuals; financial support and 'technical assistance' to political parries; support of private organizations, which includes labour unions, business companies, cooperatives, and so forth; economic operations' (meaning financial and economic warfare); and 'para-military or political actions designed either to overthrow or support a regime'.

Mr Robinson acknowledged extensive assistance from the Customs Attache at the US Embassy in London, John Hurley, and many officials from the US Department of Justice, US Customs, the Federal Bureeau of Investigation (FBI), the Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA), the Criminal Investigation Division of the Internal Revenue Service (IRS), and the Office of the District Attorney for New York County, as well as (in Britain) from HM Customs, the National Criminal Intelligence Service (NCIS), and the Metropolitan Police; and from the relevant Canadian, Australian and European law enforcement and financial regulation authorities.

'As the CIA could never finance any of these things publicly... they operated their own laundry. The Director' (of Central Intelligence) 'maintains a top-secret slush fund - a huge pile of invisible money that Congress knows nothing about - for which he's accountable directly, and only, to the President'. This, of course, means in theory that the Director of Central Intelligence has to be meticulous in his stewardship of such 'Black' funds - unless perchance the President himself happens to be corrupt, or to 'know everything', as allegedly was, and remains, the case with George Bush Sr..

'What's more', Mr Robinson continued, Dwight Eisenhower created - and every President since has followed suit - a top-secret group to advise the CIA on the best use of those funds and, when necessary, to procure additional monies for specific covert operations. In Ike's day, the group was called the 5412 Committee, named for' (i.e., after - Ed.) 'the National Security Council paper that authorized it. It was then, and remains today, the most secret organization in the United States of America'[19].

This secret 'Black Ops' funding organisation operates below Cabinet level and

Figure 25, top and above: Colombian Police and Navy officers inspect key components of a huge Russian-fabricated 'drug' submarine in Facatativa, just outside Bogota, the capital of Colombia, on 7th September 2000. On the preceding day, Colombian Police officials had discovered the submarine under construction in a shed, along with documents in Russian, Spanish and English. Police and Naval officials said that the submarine would have been capable of shipping 200 tons of cocaine below the ocean's surface. Its largest component measured 100 feet long by 11 feet wide. INSET: Captain Fidel Azula stands inside a large component to measure its dimensions. These pictures illustrate the intensity of today's drug-related intelligence warfare.

is charged with reviewing and approving all of the United States' clandestine operations, 'in order', Robinson elaborated, 'to protect the President from any clandestine operation gone wrong', which happens all the time: indeed a vast proportion of the energies of the intelligence community is permanently engaged in covering up botched jobs and preventing exposure of operations which have been misconceived or badly handled. 'Considered so ultra-sensitive that not even the National Security Council is kept informed of its activities, those few men who know about it refer to it simply as The Special Group'[20].

PRESIDENT 'PROTECTED' AGAINST BACKWASH FROM IRAN-CONTRA

Just as the Soviets go in for relabelling elements of their security services, their US counterparts do the same. Various Administrations have altered the name of this 'Special Group' from 5412 to various other obscurely derived titles, including 'The 303' and "The 40 Committee'. But the concept behind this ultra-secret organisation has remained unchanged (or at least that was the case when Robinson's book first appeared in 1994) - 'that it must be the Special Group, and not the President, who officially approves certain plans - such as illegal interventions into the internal affairs of another State'. While 'the buck stops at the Oval Office', it appears that the President's approval of any Special Group proposal is only ever given verbally. Since all communications within the Oval Office are, as we all know from Watergate, recorded (by the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI), which also monitors and records every telephone conversation into and out of Capitol Hill), a record obviously exists of verbal presidential approvals (although this statement needs to be qualified as well, since ONI has a habit, on occasion, of expunging certain communications and leaving tapes blank, where this is considered 'necessary').

The President will be briefed on a Special Group proposal by a member of what Robinson calls 'the Cabal', consisting of the President's National Security Advisor, the Secretaries of State and Defense and the Director of Central Intelligence. 'The members of the group work it out among themselves, and then brief the President. Nothing is written down with his name on it. Nothing is ever signed by him. That way, should something go wrong, the CIA can 'rightfully' claim they acted on the authority of the Special Group, which means that the President can ostensibly deny that he has ever approved of such an activity'[21]. This is, of course, Talmudic loopholism, a.k.a. legal sheis-terism, at its 'finest'.

Jeffrey Robinson appears, back in 1990, to have been extremely well informed, as this Author is about to confirm. As he pointed out, 'if, as has often been suggested, Ronald Reagan knew anything at all about the Iran-Contra affair, that would have been down to his Administration's equivalent of the 5412 Committee.... Iran-Contra is, in fact, a perfect example of what the Committee is supposed to do. If you accept the premise that William Casey, as Director of Central Intelligence, committed the CIA to engage in the illegal activities for which Oliver North was tried, then the plan would almost certainly have been brought up in a Special Group meeting. The Secretaries of State and Defence would have known about it, agreed to it, and presented it for final approval to the President. But because nothing is written down and therefore nothing can ever be traced back to the President' (except, this Author must add, from the recordings of what went on in the Oval Office), 'Ronald Reagan's denial of any knowledge of the affair is an impenetrable defence'.

Even so, it may have been considered prudent for former President Reagan to spend his final years in a state of mental confusion. An attempt to poison this Author, while in Washington, having been made in March 2005, the subject of the lengths to which certain forces within the US intelligence community are prepared to go, is naturally of exceptional continuing interest to him. According to research he has conducted, certain cadres possess access to the means to induce cancers (through, for instance, injecting a toothpaste tube using a syringe while the target is away from his hotel bedroom) and mind-eroding diseases like Alzheimer's. Nancy Reagan believed that more than one attempt was made on her husband's life and she is reported to have intimated privately that the then Vice President may have been involved. The Author has established that the distinguished US Secret Service/Treasury intelligence officer Leo Wanta saved President Reagan's life once (he informed the Author modestly, but the Author believes he may have done so on two separate occasions). It would have made typically diabolical sense for the forces in question to have decided that it would be safest to have President Reagan's mind confused beyond any possibility of him recalling any details about Iran-Contra (a phrase which stands for a much wider range of operations than is usually implied) by artificially inflicting him with Alzheimer's. Everything could then be wrapped up with a magnificent funeral, attended by the Great and the Good.

President Reagan's Special Group empowered the CIA 'to funnel money to right-wing forces that were trying to overthrow the leftist government of Mauritius, to spend millions trying to destabilise Colonel Qadhafi's regime in Libya and to bankroll the Afghan rebels with hundreds of millions of dollars. White House and CIA records now [Robinson's book is dated 1994, as noted - Ed.] suggest that in the first six years of his Administration, Reagan knew of and/or approved of at least 60 money-laundering plots to finance CIA covert activities'.

Innumerable examples of such covert illegal activities abroad could be listed, ranging from the Bay of Pigs to the complex Financial Warfare operations aimed against the Soviet system. It is only necessary to mention here one instance of such activity that appeared to be especially pertinent during the summer of 2005. Since 9/11, the US Government has been empowered by the complacent and hijacked Congress to undertake almost any subversive operation clandestinely. The Mujahadeen el-Khalq (MEK), an Iranian opposition terrorist group, once directed by Saddam Hussein's Mukhabarat security services, was reported by Scott Ritter, the former United Nations weapons inspector in Iraq, to be 'now working exclusively for the CIA's Directorate of Operations'[22]- a transformation that will have been effected with the lubricational assistance of untold sums of clandestinely assembled 'Black Ops' money. Mr Ritter commented that 'it is a bitter irony that the CIA is using a group still labelled as a terrorist organisation, a group trained in the art of explosive assassination by the same intelligence units of the former regime of Saddam Hussein, who are slaughtering American soldiers in Iraq today, to carry out remote bombings in Iran of the sort that the Bush Administration condemns on a daily basis inside Iraq'[23]. But in a hell like this, U-turns and lies are the norm.

It may help to pause to highlight a crucial insight that emerges here. All of a sudden, brutalised intelligence structures that were accustomed to fulfilling the commands of the Saddam Hussein regime, since overthrown by the United States, are being used by the former Iraqi regime's enemy to implement its policy in Iraq. Likewise, during and after the Iranian Revolution in 1979, the Shah's dreaded SAVAK secret police structures switched sides and served the Illuminati-controlled Islamic governing structures with even greater zeal than they had defended the Shah's regime. Similar switches took place in Afghanistan. The objective observer has a choice: he can simply put such 'adjustments' down to pragmatic, opportunist intelligence community decision-making or else he can pay attention to what such 'switching' implies. What it implies is that the terrorism and drug-trafficking structures that may be at loggerheads at one point in time, cooperate closely in other (later) circumstances, so that loyalties among them have no ultimate meaning.

That would be 100% consistent with the central finding and theme of this book, which is that opposing dialectical 'forces' are manipulated by the double-minded Illuminati master strategists and operatives (which are far from being unidentifiable, as will be shown) in what they consider to be a wholly mechanistic world. The accuracy of this assessment will become apparent in Chapter 7 on the Illuminati.

Even more apparently incongruously, the US Secretary of Defense, Donald Rumsfeld had, by midsummer's day 2005, paid two known visits to Azerbaijan, the fief-dom of the son of the former Brezhnev era Communist Party boss and apparatchik, KGB General Gaidar Aliyev, to prepare the ground for 'a massive military presence that will foretell a major land-based campaign designed to capture Tehran'[24], according to Mr Ritter.

Earlier, Mujahedeen rebels in Afghanistan, who were, late that year, operating as elements of the 'Northern Alliance' fighting the Taleban, which was standing in the way of US oil projects in the region, were corralled into the new Afghani official structures and Government following the US attack on Afghanistan in late 2001. These Mujahedeen had been heavily engaged in drug trafficking in earlier years, while fighting against the Soviet-supported Government. Among these drug cadres, the CIA's main client was Gulbuddin Hekmatyar, a leading Afghani drug lord and heroin refiner. CIA-supplied trucks and mules that had previously conveyed US arms into Afghanistan were now used in order to transport opium to laboratories along the Afghani/Pakistani border. The output from these laboratories provided, for some years, up to 50% of the heroin consumed annually in the United States and 75% of the heroin used in Western Europe. In 1990, US officials admitted that they had failed to investigate or take any action against these drug operations, out of a desire 'not to offend' their Afghani and Pakistani associates.

Dennis Dayle, a former head of a key department within the US Drug Enforcement Administration made the following statement to a journalist in the late 1990s:

'If the following statement were made to American citizens, would you agree with it? "Enormously powerful criminal organizations are controlling many countries, and to a certain degree controlling the world, and controlling our lives. Your own [US] Government to some extent supports them and is concealing this fact from you". I KNOW that to be true. That is not conjecture. Experience, over the better part of my adult life, tells me that this is so. And there is a great deal of persuasive evidence.... You can contain drug trafficking by the immobilization of the few cartels that truly control it...'. AND BY IMMOBILISING THE INTELLIGENCE CADRES, LIKE BRITAIN'S CORRUPT GO-2, WHICH FACILITATE THE CARTELS' OPERATIONS.

'IF YOU ATTACK THE DRUG OPERATIONS, THEY WILL KILL YOU'

As noted on page 81, this was the warning issued in 2005 to the Author by a very friendly US intelligence executive. This book could not have been published without a detailed expose of international competitive drug-trafficking, which the intelligence officer concerned agreed is an abomination and a crime against humanity. The warning was issued not as a threat but in the Author's interest. However this study would have made no sense without a proper look at the drug-trafficking component of the unprecedented international crisis. Drugs support the international financial system, although sophisticated hypothecation techniques have been developed which can function independently of open-ended laundered drug money flows. A Great Power like the United States - and a Great financial Power like Britain - should summon the courage and the greatness to renounce this abomination. Britain can lead the way immediately by putting its secret 'Black' intelligence agency GO-2, which is supposed to combat the drug offensive, out of business forthwith. How about it? ■

Unfortunately, however, Mr Doyle, though operating at the 'sharp end' of the inadequate US 'war against drugs', may not have been aware that the Colombian drug cartels were themselves established by the Central Intelligence Agency, spearheaded by a STASI (cover for DVD) operative called Carlos Lehder (son of the Nazi escapee Wilhelm Lehder) who may have used his CIA cover itself as cover for his STASI (former Eastern German intelligence) connections, which was in turn a cover for his true allegiance - to the covert Nazi DVD, based in Dachau. A certain number of STASI operatives are known to have been operating for some years with or within the US intelligence community, one prominent and powerful (not to mention ruthless) such operative having been a certain Eva Teleki (real name Sturzl), who moved to London in 2004. She controlled billions of dollars' worth of funds belonging to the US Government, and was suspected by certain intelligence experts as being or having been a paymaster for Al-Qaeda cells operating in the United Kingdom, of which there were then said to be at least 15, as late as September 2005.

Mr Doyle's observation that the US Government 'to some extent supports them' (the powerful criminal organisations, which are manifestations of the Illuminati - the Mafia having been established in Italy by Giuseppe Mazzini, the occultist and partner of the notorious necromancer and Masonic king-pin Albert Pike, and the founder of modern Italy), 'and is concealing this fact from you' (the American people), was of course a gross understatement. Forget the modifying phrase 'to some extent'. The reality is worse by an order of magnitude: together or in competition with the intelligence services of the covert Soviets, the Israelis, Chinese Communists, Britain, France, Germany, Spain and The Netherlands and others, elements of the CIA have organised and were/are running frenetic, lucrative, controlling drug-trafficking warfare operations in Latin America, Afghanistan, Turkey and elsewhere. The participation of government agencies in this evil business is a scandal of millennial proportions which will result in the corruption of all ordered governance everywhere, since the financial, banking and capitalist systems have become victims and collaborators in this historically unprecedented global organised intelligence crime wave. And the corruption of governance is what the planners of the New Underworld Order, the Illuminati, both anticipate and always intended. It is also what Boris Uvarov predicted [see page 88].

THE CYNICAL MANIPULATION OF 'DEMOCRATISM'

In the US context, such operations will certainly have been pre-approved by the 'Black Ops' financial centre, or 'Special Group', which controls funds of such magnitude that it need never apply to Congress for permission for anything. This means, self-evident-ly, that this secret sub-Cabinet level organisation is much more powerful than any other component of the US Government, including the President himself - which in turn means that the United States' democracy is a total sham. It is, in fact, nothing more than a thoroughly dishonest display of 'democratism' - meaning in the Soviet context, the creation and maintenance of the illusion of democracy. This word is to be found in the Soviet literature - for instance, on page 96 of 'Proletarian Internationalism: Guideline of the Communists', by V. Plyanksky, published in 1970 by Novosti Press Agency Publishing House, Moscow[25]. The United States practices a form of 'democratism' - maintaining the illusion of democracy for public consumption, but in practice offering the electorate no more than the appearance of a choice of personnel ostensibly from the 'Left' or the 'Right' of the dialectic, while the intelligence services, which are in turn controlled by the Illuminati at the highest levels, in fact control the Executive, Legislative and Judicial Branches of the overt Government, selecting and imposing their own candidates.

Both countries cynically and corruptly practice forms of 'democratism', in order to sustain the elite intelligence controllers' fragile 'legitimacy', although the covert Soviet model is the subject, from time to time, of literary inventiveness - the most recent example being a definition offered by Irina Khakamada, who had the effrontery to stand against GRU-President Putin in the controlled and manipulated March 2004 Russian 'presidential election', but was unable to obtain any air-time on NTV. 'There is no democracy in Russia', she told 'The Guardian' in July 2005[26]: 'There is only a virtual matrix of democratic space created by the Kremlin's Political Departmenf, since in fake 'posf-Soviet Russia it is not even considered safe to allow 'democratism' games such as are orchestrated in the United States to sustain the illusion that the people can influence the outcome of elections other than by means of changes of personnel. Whereas in the United States, it does not matter who wins elections, since the intelligence services always win, in covert Soviet Russia, it does not matter who wins elections, as the covert Communists, controlled by the intelligence services with which the covert Communist Party of the Soviet Union is integrated, always win[27]. As Mme Khakamada elaborated, the Kremlin's Political Department 'copies reality. If there is a democratic opposition to the Kremlin, it creates a different one loyal to the Kremlin'. Irina Khakamada explained how a rise in leftwing youth activism was countered by the Kremlin launching "Nashi" - a youth group designed to tackle 'Fascism' and corrupt bureaucracy - that held a 60,000-strong rally in Moscow under police protection. 'This system creates dangers', she added. 'When I was competing for the Presidency, an important part of the audience was thinking I was part of the matrix'. She added that only her strong criticism of the Kremlin's handling of the Nord Ost theatre siege, in which 129 people died, proved to voters that she was genuine. However Mme Khakamada's candour was itself false: all political activists on the Moscow stage are 'part of the matrix', as the entire political charade continues, as has been the case for over two decades, to be managed along Leninist deception lines (whereby political opposition forces and factions are all centrally controlled) for ignorant Western public consumption.

WHERE INTELLIGENCE IS IN CONTROL, CORRUPTION IS THE NORM

In a controlled, false 'democracy', where the intelligence services call all the shots, the primary issue facing the society is invariably corruption, which typically assumes (as has happened in these countries) epidemic proportions, and where corrupt practices are cynically accepted as the norm - give or take some cosmetic arrangements, such as the feeble US anti-drug structures, designed to enable the double-minded controllers to maintain at all times that 'everything is being done to see to it that these problems are addressed' etc, etc, etc. Jeffrey Robinson's observation that 'if you accept the premise that William Casey, as Director of Central Intelligence, committed the CIA to engage in the illegal activities for which Oliver North was tried, then the plan would almost certainly have been brought up in a Special Group meeting', was extremely prescient. The Author has obtained, from deep within US intelligence, the text of an Affidavit prepared six months before his death by William Casey, President Reagan's Director of Central Intelligence, in which the accuracy of Mr Robinson's assessment is confirmed (except that this Author suggests that, as will be seen, the operations identified therein may have been so secret that not even the 'Special Group' was officially aware of them: indeed, this is implied by the text of the late William Casey's document).

The text that follows was provided by the Author's source prior to its inclusion in documentation associated with the case of [Colonel, a.k.a. Pvt.] William M. Tyree, who has remained unjustly imprisoned for allegedly murdering his wife - who was in fact 'liquidated' by US intelligence because she kept a diary in which she recorded details of CIA drug-running operations. The document subsequently formed part of the defendant Tyree's case against the US Department of the Army, Civil Action Number 99cv2709, in the United States District Court for the District of Columbia, dated 8th November 1999, presided over by The Honourable Colleen Kollar-Kotelly, filed by the Attorney of Record, Raymond Kohlman, of 7 Milton Street, Attleboro, Massachusetts 02703. When the Author sought in June 2005 to check facts with Mr Raymond, he discovered that there was no trace of such a lawyer in the State of Massachusetts, and that the address given was the office of a property sales firm called Welch Real Estate. As is revealed below, Raymond Kohlman 'just happens' to have been the attorney who filed a lawsuit, discussed below, on behalf of the wrongly imprisoned former Green Beret, William Tyree (which will 'fall into contexf as we proceed with this exposure). The significance of Raymond Kohlman's 'disappearance' will emerge below.

The text of William Casey's Affidavit appeared separately in Uri Dowbenko's book Bushwhacked [2003 [pages 100-103]], but the text cited below was handed personally to this Author by a US intelligence contact in 2005. The Author naturally agrees with Uri Dowbenko's conclusion (on page 99 of his book), that 'Casey's rationalisation of his heinous behavior and his cocaine trafficking, which he frames as a noble battle against the enemies of Western civilization - should be required reading for every student of 20th century history, and every student of psychopathology. Casey's Apologia Pro Vita Sua is the classic defence of a world-class criminal'.

CASEY'S AFFIDAVIT JUSTIFYING U.S. INTELLIGENCE DRUG OPERATIONS

William Casey's Affidavit, or 'statement of position', prior to its inclusion in any court papers, is given here verbatim (with no corrections, except for the elimination of some wrongly-placed apostrophes, and that the Author has divided the statement into numbered sections and has inserted in square brackets some unavoidable italicised interpolations) as shown below. Casey later committed suicide in hospital in order to protect the President of the United States, according to a very senior knowledgeable[28] source, and contrary to the received views that he died of natural causes or was murdered.

'I, William J. Casey, declare:

I have found that freedom is a priceless commodity that demands constant vigilance to guaranteed [sic] its longevity.

1. I was assigned to the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) in London, England, during World War II. During that time I befriended a young German soldier named Gunther [Russbacher], who later became one of the key covert operatives of the CIA-US secret criminal government. I used Gunther and several other anti-Nazi German prisoners of war in OSS operations within Nazi Germany'. [In other words, the drug proliferation operations, including the establishment as a deliberate act of US state policy, of the drug cartels in Latin America, over which William Casey, and later William Colby, presided, as DCI Casey was now to explain, were inspired by German [Nazi] colleagues and assistance - a fact of crucial importance for this analysis].

I knew this violated Geneva (War) Convention [sic]. I did not care. The Geneva Convention was but a set of rules governing man's atrocities committed in the name of political ideology. To wage war with rules is to prolong human suffering. Open warfare is the last resort of a civilized nation and must be used sparingly. Wars must be fought savagely utilizing all tools and tricks at hand. Gunrher was a tool. Ignoring the Geneva Convention was the trick.

2. After I became Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) on January 28, 1981, I was approached and briefed by William Colby, former DCI. My history with Bill Colby is known. Colby notified me off the record of two operations he was still running in Latin America [i.e., Colby continued running these after he had ceased to be DCI - Ed.]. Both operations were without the knowledge of, and consent of, the United States Congress, President Ronald Reagan or even the United States intelligence apparatus' [implying that operations sanctioned and initiated by the 'Special Group' may bypass even the intelligence structures themselves, which has obvious further implications - Ed.]. 'Colby identified the operations as "A-6" (RED MIST) and "A-7" (PROJECT SANDMAN). A-7 entailed smaller operations. I was told that A-6 identified individuals and the build-up of the Communist threat in Latin America. Some intelligence collected in A-6 was used in TASK FORCE-157 [the details of which Casey did not identify here - Ed.].

3. I was told that A-7 was "the Phoenix program" of Latin America. It involved the assassination of the Communist infrastructure throughout Latin America. I was told that Colby authorized assets involved in A-6 and A-7 to engage in narcotics trafficking to finance both operations [sic]. Colby engaged in similar operations that I know of in Vietnam for the same reason.

4. Colby candidly informed me that he had prepositioned more than one million pounds of cocaine in Panama between December 1, 1975 and April 1, 1976. This was done with the aid of our gallant ally, General Manuel Noriega. The cocaine was transported into El Salvador, Costa Rica and Honduras between 1976 and 1981. Colby now sat in front of me with hat in hand and requested my help in the delivery of the cocaine to the American market.

5. I was told that Colby was using a mutual friend of ours, Colonel Albert Vincent Carone, United States Army, Military Intelligence, to field A-6 and A-7. Al Carone is a charismatic patriot that General Joseph W. Stilwell [sic] introduced us to in late 1945. Beside the usual qualifications, Al Carone brought to the anti-Communist effort a direct connection to his longterm friend, Vito Genovese.

6. Genovese was the head of gambling and narcotics for the controlling Mafia family in New York to [sic] which Carone was made a member. Carone is a friend of international fugitive Robert Vesco [resident in Castro's Cuba, Fidel Castro being a Jesuit-educated intelligence officer - Ed.]. Carone has several anti-Communist intelligence sources that include Marita Lorenz, a [German] friend of Fidel Castro. Al Carone is the younger brother of Dr Pasquale Carone. Dr Carone worked for Central Intelligence on other matters.

7. Colby told me that the profits from the prepositioned cocaine would be laundered through Al Carone, the New York Mafia and Robert Vesco [who, as indicated, was hiding in Communist Cuba, indicative of Illuminati double-minded, two-facedness - Ed.], then redirected to the anti-Communist effort through Colby.

8. After discussion with Al Carone, I made the decision to bring the prepositioned cocaine into Mena Airport, Mena, Arkansas. Central Intelligence has used Mena Airport on prior occasions. This time the cocaine is the tool. The trick was to ignore the law and avoid public scrutiny. We were helped in our efforts by William J. Clinton and William F. Weld [concerning the exceptional importance of whom, see box opposite, page 109].

9. By 1984, all prepositioned cocaine had arrived at Mena Airport and additional cocaine sources were secured. Cocaine was being transhipped through Hangers Four and Five at Ilopango Airbase, El Salvador. My point man at Mena was Adler Berriman Seal (Berry [sic: i.e., Barry] Seal, who was gunned down by machine-gun fire in the Salvation Army parking lot in Baton Rouge, Louisiana on 19th February 1986 - Ed.].

10. Bill Clinton [when Governor of Arkansas] has proved invaluable so far by con taining the local law enforcement investigations into the intelligence activity at Mena'.

• The Author interrupts here to make a critical point. Until President George W. Bush Jr. signed the National Intelligence Reform Act on 17th December 2004 (one-third of which is secret, so that no-one knows what the Act contains - an astonishing development given the United States' (false) image as a paragon of transparent democracy -Ed.), it was of course illegal for the CIA to conduct operations on American soil (a rule which the CIA broke routinely; but nevertheless, it was illegal). More generally, since the CIA's clandestine operations are almost invariably illegal, the intelligence community is at constant risk of mobilising the forces of law enforcement (not to be confused with law and order) against them. The obsessive secrecy surrounding operations and the identities of operatives is driven in part by this reality. Historically, when things go badly wrong (as in the Iran-Contra nexus of cases), exposure of the Agency' illegal operations occurs inter alia as a consequence of this institutionalised tendency for the clandestine services to clash with the Rule of Law, and hence with law enforcement.

The underlying, and inescapable, conclusion to be drawn is that the serially illegal operations of the US intelligence services are incompatible with the 'freedom' which President Bush Jr., for instance, preaches to the Rest of the World ideologically. Scott

WILLIAM WELD: COCAINE SHIPMENTS FIXER

William F. Weld was cited by William Casey, the late Director of Central Intelligence under President Reagan (who committed suicide in hospital in order to protect his President), as the primary legal 'fixer' whose job was to frustrate and neutralise bona fide investigations into the cocaine shipments into Mena, Arkansas. 'Bill Weld', Casey affirmed, 'as Assistant United States Attorney, was placed in charge of the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice. This was done so that Bill Weld could control investigations into Mena by Federal law enforcement agencies. The placement of Weld... proved invaluable'.

In other words, this man, who later became the Governor of Massachusetts, and in 2005 announced that he would be running for the Governorship of New York State, obstructed justice ostensibly in the interests of national security, but actually (or also) in order to facilitate the distribution of poisonous drugs destined for consumption by American citizens in gross contravention of the law. Drug-running is a crime against humanity, and aiding and abetting it represents wilful participation in a crime against humanity.

William F Weld has played an important behind-the-scenes role in furthering preparations for the imposition of the New Underworld Order upon the world, again ostensibly 'in the interests of US national security'. He was, for instance, the recipient of a letter dated 16th May 1985 from William Bradford Reynolds, Assistant Attorney General, Civil Rights Division, of the US Department of 'Justice', now in the public domain, which read as follows: 'Dear Mr Weld: As agreed Messrs Manichur Ghorbanifar, Adnan Khashoggi, and Richard Armitage will broker the transaction of PROMIS software to Sheikh Khalid bin Mahfouz for resale and general distribution as gifts in his region, contingent upon the three conditions we last spoke of. PROMIS must have a soft arrival. No paperwork, customs, or delay. It must be equipped with the special data retrieval unit. As before, you must walk the financial aspects through Credit Suisse into [Mahfouz'] National Commercial Bank. If you encounter any problems, contact me directly. Sincerely, Wm. Bradford Reynolds, Assistant Attorney General, Civil Rights Division. ■

Ritter goes further. "'Liberation" and "democracy", he wrote in June 2005, 'have become none-too-subtle code words within the neo-conservative Cabal that formulates and executes American foreign policy today, for militarism and war'[29].

And the Author goes yet further than Mr Ritter, whose statement is correct, as far as it goes. For the Illuminati, who ultimately control the intelligence services, democracy is impermanent and will be discarded and dispensed with at the appropriate time. That time has already passed, so that US democracy is now, as indicated, an illusion, a deception, and a variant of Soviet 'democratism'. In due course, the nuisance of having to go through the massive inconvenience of 'fighting' and rigging elections, will be discarded altogether. Therefore, when the President of the United States uses the weasel words 'democracy' and 'liberation' or 'freedom' in justification of the Illuminati policies which he is helping to carry out, the fact that these are empty slogans is, to him and his associates, neither here nor there - since for these people, as with Lenin, all institutions are temporary, expendable, transitory, and replaceable in accordance with the requirements of the World Revolution of the ffluminati that these people in reality serve.

THE US GOVERNMENT TRUSTOR WHO 'ROSE FROM THE 'DEAD'

It is also appropriate here to interpolate another crucially important fact. This is that operatives professionally engaged for many years in implementing the hidden policies of the ffluminati may normally have been in ignorance of the fact that this is what they were doing. It is obvious that William Casey thought that the conflict between 'freedom' (as he put it in his Affidavit) and Communism was a life-or-death struggle upon which the future of humanity rested - whereas it turned out to be just a stage in the manipulated and orchestrated arena of controlled tensions that the ffluminati's deeper strategists were accustomed to managing and directing given their concept of the world as a 'mechanical space' within which opposing forces could be manipulated - since they believe that the universe is mechanical, and the opposing forces that they purport to control are likewise mechanical, although they may pay lip service (only) to the concepts of good and evil. They can do no more than that - since for these people, Lucifer is good and Adonai (Jesus Christ) is the epitome of evil, as he stands for the opposite of their 'Do as Thou Wilt' philosophy and alibi.

Leo Wanta has acknowledged to the Author, again for the record[30], that he and his colleagues 'did not understand' at the time that their operations were furthering the strategies of the Illuminati. They thought that they were working exclusively for Uncle Sam. The Author's judgment, having interviewed this heroic US figure at length, is that this entirely spontaneous admission, was thoroughly honest, and in no way contrived. The Author had burdened him with no prior leading questions which might have elicited such an observation. This reinforces the Author's view that the Presidency of the United States, together with the US intelligence services, or key elements thereof, are in fact masquerading as instruments of the Government of the United States, while in practice they are being used as primary instruments of the Illuminati. To describe this central point in blunter language, the US Presidency and the intelligence community which serves it have been hijacked by the Illuminati, in accordance with their modus operandi of inserting their agentur adjacent to or inside the highest levels of governance.

In such conditions, a loyal servant of the United States such as Leo Wanta, whose patriotism no-one has ever, or could ever, question, was himself deceived and double-crossed, into believing that his loyalty was reciprocated at the very highest level -

(D) 890811 / 36 / 11 / 918125 FIFTY BILLION USD ($ 50,000,000,000.00) 16.45
SENDING BANK: BANCO EXTERIOR DE ESPANA MALAGA SPAIN
(13) — RECEIVING BANK: BANK OF CHINA HONG KONG
ABA: ACCT #:
CREDIT: SYNERGY TRUST

FIN, p70

(D) 890811 / 36 / 11 / 918140 TWENTY FIVE BILLION USD ($ 25,000,000,000.00)
SENDING BANK: BANCO EXTERIOR DE ESPANA MALAGA SPAIN
(1) — RECEIVING BANK: MORGAN GUARANTY TRUST NY NY
ABA: 021000238 ACCT#: 722000011
CREDIT: UNION BANK OF SWITZERALND GENEVA SWITZERLAND
ABA: 422 - 861 UBS CH ACCT #: 336397
CREDIT: INTERNATIONAL FINANCIAL SERVICES LTD R J GEORGE Sr & DON WILCOX

D:22

890812 / 36 / 11 / 918149 TWO BILLION FIVE HUNDRED MILLION USD
(D) [$ 2,500,000,000.00]
SENDING ~~BANK: BANCO EXTERIOR~~ DE ESPANA MALAGA SPAIN
(1) — RECEIVING BANK: MORGAN GUARANTY TRUST NY NY
ABA: 021000238 ACCT #: 722000011
CREDIT: HAWAII NATIONAL BANK HONOLULU HAWAII
ABA: ACCT #: GENERAL ACCOUNT
CREDIT: HAWAII NATIONAL BANK CORP TRUST DEPARTMENT

(D) 890810 / 36 / 11 / 716882 ONE BILLION USD [$ 1,000,000,000.00]
SENDING BANK: BANCO EXTERIOR DE ESPANA MALAGA SPAIN
RECEIVING BANK: BANCO DE PANAMA PANAMA CITY PANAMA
ABA: ACCT #:3294 - 5528
CREDIT: PILGRIM INVESTMENTS / JORGE BUSH

(D) 890811 / 36 / 11 / 1018231 FIVE HUNDRED MILLION USD [$ 500,000,000.00]
SENDING BANK: BANCO EXTERIOR DE ESPANA MALAGA SPAIN 25-B
(1) — RECEIVING BANK: MORGAN GUARANTY TRUST NY NY
ABA: 021000238 ACCT #: 722000011
CREDIT: BANK OF AMERICA WALNUT CREEK CA.
ABA:1210003580466 ACCT #: 0224006685
CREDIT: PINNACLE HOLDINGS / FRANCIS X. DRISCOLL ATTORNEY TRUST

Acceptance of value by former U.S. President of the United States, George (Jorge) Bush is direct violation of our USC-A Title 5, Section 7353, et seq —

Jim Baker III told me to just "shut up" as I am protected by Rogers Houston Memorandum to "co-operate", but I kept receipts & notes —

Figure 26: As a senior US Secret Service/Treasury/CIA/FBI Financial intelligence operator, Leo (Lee) Wanta, who saved President Reagan's life on at least one occasion, was called upon to verify payments associated with the raising from 200+ international banks of $27.5 trillion in 1989-91, an operation presided over inter alia (but mainly) by George H. W. Bush. The funds were raised to 'enhance' the so-called 'global security environment', to buttress components of the international financial system, which may have been in systemic danger, and essentially to provide the New Underworld Order strategists (the Illuminati's controllers) with enough financial resources to impose their One World plans on the whole world, and to bribe every policymaker, intelligence officer, ruler, influential media baron, and other targeted power-broker, in the whole world, for the whole of the 21st century. Gorbachev sponsored a 'Global Security Project', and was closely involved with this operation. During the massive fund-raising, there was an 18-month hiatus, during which time the funds, to be paid out in US dollars, were held or sterilised by the Federal Reserve Board. When Wanta came to check through all the transactions, he found that large sums had been siphoned off into private accounts. In particular, George Bush Sr. (alleged DVD) had benefited, contrary to US law, as his note above makes clear.

whereas in reality it was being abused. It is hardly surprising that, when President Bush Sr. came to demand that Wanta allow him to withdraw funds from the $210 billion on deposit in an account or accounts of Ameritrust, one of the Title 18, Section 6 US Government secret intelligence corporations of which Wanta was a co-signatory and Trustor, Wanta refused to give his signature for the withdrawal of the funds, on the ground that they belonged to the US Government, not to an individual. Later, when auditing geofin-ancial transactions associated with the raising of $27.5 trillion to finance the 'Global Security Environment' (code for the New World Order, a.k.a. 'The New Underworld Order') in his capacity as a high-level Secret Service/US Treasury operative, Leo Wanta annotated a computer transactions print-out as follows: [Figure 26, page 111]:

'Acceptance of value by former US President of the United States, George (Jorge) Bush is direct violation of our USA Title 5, Section 7353, et seq. Jim Baker III told me to just "SHUT UP", as I am protected by Rogers-Houston Memorandum to "co-operate", but I kept receipts & notes'.

What this meant was that, having discovered the alleged embezzlement by the former President of the United States, Wanta, as a special secret service agent, had alerted the Treasury to this state of affairs, only to be slapped down by Jim Baker, President Bush Sr's long-time factotum and 'fixer', who is himself a lawyer. All present and former Presidents of the United States, including those who are deceased, are protected in perpetuity by the Secret Service. This gives them effective criminal immunity.

So, having established that President Bush Sr. had allegedly arranged for the diversion of certain international funds, and given his mentioned earlier point-blank refusal to accommodate President Bush's demand that he disgorge for Mr Bush's alleged use separate US Government secret intelligence funds of which he was the custodian, Leo Wanta, arguably one of the most brilliant intelligence and Financial Warfare officials ever to have been employed by the US Government - the man who saved President Reagan's life and engineered the financial submission of the Soviet Union in 1991 -found himself at the receiving end of the ruthless, revengeful wrath of the Illuminati.

After Leo Wanta had likewise refused to accommodate a similar alleged request from President Clinton, that President summarily dismissed William Sessions, the head of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (which is subordinate to the CIA, to the great detriment of the Rule of Law) in 1993, in order to prevent Sessions from pursuing the matter; Vince Foster (who was spying for the FBI against Mrs Hillary Clinton, even though he was allegedly her lover) was murdered, Mrs Clinton having headed the Children's Defense Fund, an intelligence slush account (Hillary being an intelligence operative like her CIA husband) from which, likewise, it had been intended that funds should be embezzled; and Mr Wanta was arrested in Switzerland, where he had travelled inter alia with an FBI order to arrest the international criminalist Marc Rich (Reich) and was thrown into a stinking Swiss dungeon for 134 days, before the Israeli Prime Minister, Yizhak Rabin, interceded with the Swiss authorities to procure his release. He was then flown in shackles back to the United States, arraigned before a New York US court, released unconditionally, but rearrested on the Courthouse steps on a trumped-up State of Wisconsin tax evasion charge. This led to him being unjustly convicted and jailed for 22 years, although his sentence to jail was later commuted to house arrest.

On 14th November 2005, following payment in July that year by a third party of a court-ordered sum which included illegally charged State tax that he had already paid twice earlier, Mr Wanta was unconditionally discharged and became free to work and travel: but 13 years of the life of one of the most talented of all US Secret Service operatives of all time had been wasted, and countless financial and other opportunities for the alleviation of the US Government's severe financial problems, had been forfeited - all in order to protect the tawdry reputations high-level criminalist operatives.

As Trustor of the $27.5 trillion raised in 1989-92 from more than 200 international banks, for the 'Global Security Fund' and 'Environment' - an amount which was looted by criminalist cadres and worth well over $60 trillion by June 2006 - the reappearance of Leo Wanta on the scene when US intelligence had deliberately spread the lie that he was dead, caused a collective heart attack within the international financial community. The lie that Mr Wanta was dead had provided 'cover' for the misappropriation of these funds, located offshore, by crooked operatives and international banks, which had been using them extensively as collateral, had cross-collateralised them and hypothecated their value, in some cases in order just to stay afloat. Thus the corrupt intelligence cadres and the banks had a community of interest in representing that Leo Wanta, the official Trustor on behalf of the US Government, was dead - relying upon Statutes of Limitations, upon administrative arrangements such as Lloyd Bank TSB's statement to the Author in April 2006 that 'we destroy documents after ten years', and on the unfounded belief that he was deceased, which would have meant that the funds devolved to the banks. When it was discovered that he was NOT dead, both intelligence operatives and banks had to scramble to 'restore' or 'replace' trillions that had been misappropriated, misused or stolen.

Underlying this colossal crisis was the dark state of affairs arising from President Reagan's Executive Order 12333 [see page 20], whereby US intelligence operatives are empowered to establish commercial corporations at home and abroad and to run their associated bank accounts, while denying any intelligence involvement. Given the intensity of CIA compartmentalisation, this enables crooked operatives to represent that the corporations in question are their own, rather than US Government, entities - which means that, if registered offshore as most of them are, operatives may be liable to seek to enrich themselves 'at the expense of the US Government itself. It is 'not for nothing', as they say in Moscow, that the Clintons have acquired (allegedly with such funds) property in the Irish Republic, which has no extradition treaty with the United States*.

CIA BUSINESSES USED TO WASH FUNDS FOR COVERT OPERATIONS

It is a tribute to Jeffrey Robinson's acumen that he managed to unravel so much before the concrete evidence of such activities became available to researchers who could slash their way through the dense undergrowth of disinformation which surrounds this dark forest of lies. For in The Laundrymen', discussing CIA-controlled businesses, or cut-outs, Robinson stated that the CIA had used them for years to wash money through them to pay for all sorts of covert activities. His context was a huge CIA command post located on the campus of the University of Miami, following the Bay of Pigs fiasco. Operatives there, under the codename JM/ WAVE, 'directed the activities of a reported 3,000 Cuban agents whom they'd set up in false businesses. 'In one particular case, a CIA

*During his period at Oxford University, Bill Clinton shared a house at 46 Leckford Road, in 1968-69, with Strobe Talbott, who later became Deputy Secretary of State under Clinton, and Frank Adler, who resisted the Vietnam draft and later committed suicide. The property earned its place in history as the house in which Clinton puffed on joints but 'didn't inhale', while he was supposedly studying on a Rhodes Scholarship. Four years later, a man called Howard Marks moved in with his girlfriend, to study physics. Not long after he left Oxford, Marks began dealing in drugs, and he ended up masterminding a drug cartel with a turnover of £100 million, before being arrested and jailed for 25 years. After being released early from jail - perhaps he was a GO-2 asset? - he wrote a best-selling autobiography called 'Mr Nice'.

operator found that he could make more money running an Agency cut-out than he could by staying on the payroll. According to the rules, he was required to turn over the extra money to the Government. So he simply resigned from the CIA, kept the business and kept the profits. The CIA never said a word, because they couldn't admit they'd owned the business in the first place'[31]. And this was many years before President Reagan's Executive Order 12333 specifically authorised such intelligence cut-outs to be established and for their intelligence provenance to be denied.

But we have diverged from the text of Casey's document, which continued:

'11. Bill Weld, as Assistant United States Attorney, was placed in charge of the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice. This was done so that Bill Weld could control investigations into Mena by Federal law enforcement agencies. The placement of Weld has proved invaluable'.

Here we have explicit confirmation that the US intelligence community frustrates US domestic law enforcement, with which, as indicated, its operations are wholly incompatible - quite apart from being usually moral repugnant. Leo Wanta explicitly told the Author that drug-trafficking is immoral and an abomination; but it was also he who then added that 'if you go after them, they will kill you'[32]. This was not a threat: he does not do that, as he is a devout follower of Jesus Christ. It was a warning about the viciousness of the Illuminati. It follows that the supremacy of the criminalised elements (especially the German-oriented components) of the US intelligence community, which cooperate with and form part of, the flluminati, is a menace to the continued existence of the Republic. It has been consistently driving it in the direction required by the flluminati - which by definition can have nothing whatsoever to do with the interests of the people of the United States, let alone with those of the Rest of the World.

'12. I ordered John Poindexter, Robert McFarlane and Oliver North to go outside normal channels and use available assets, including the Mafia, to ensure the arrival of the cocaine into Mena Airport. The arrivals occurred in no small part through the efforts [of] personnel assigned to the National Security Agency (NSA) and Army Security Agency (ASA). The men and women of the NSA and ASA blinded early warning defense satellites and radar grid[s] to enable the aircraft to land undetected at Mena Airport. The NSA and ASA operations were SEA SPRAY and JADE BRIDGE.

13. I have learned that the course of the democratic [sic!] struggle for Nicaragua and Latin America is beginning to swing in our direction. I attribute this success to A-6 and A-7 which Bill Colby had the insight, precision and spine to carry out. I take notice of the heroic efforts of Al Carone, Bill Clinton, Bill Weld, John Poindexter, Bud McFarlane and Ollie North [names familiar to all who have tried to understand Iran-Contra -Ed.]. Without these men, A-6 and A-7 would not have appeared.

14. Freedom is a priceless commodity. The amount of freedom you enjoy is a result of the amount of vigilance you invest.

15. My actions may be recorded as criminal, condemning countless Americans to drug dependency. I don't care. All wars produce casualties. Generally the more violent the war, the shorter the length. My choice was either to stare down a protracted Cold War guerrilla insurgency in Latin America, or use the means available to finance and wage a violent war of short duration for democracy. I stand by my decisions. The tool is cocaine. The trick is to understand that the drug user had the freedom to make a choice. They chose the drug. I chose to use their habit to finance the democracy that all Americans enjoy. To keep those Americans safe from the Communist threat knocking on our

back door in Latin America. For a change, the drug user will contribute to society.

16. I declare under penalty of perjury that the above facts are true and correct to the best of my knowledge and belief.

17. Executed this 9th day of December 1986 in Mclean, Virginia.

[Signed] William J. Casey'.

• • •

Now that this admission, from the late Director of Central Intelligence, that the CIA engages in drug-trafficking as a matter of deliberate state policy has been documented (rather than presumed from the vast accumulation of circumstantial evidence hitherto in circulation), it is clearly this Author's straightforward duty to highlight, for the record, its fallacies and what this abominable revelation implies.

In the first place, as already hinted, the former DCI was clearly ignorant of the fact that his focus on 'defeating Communism' in Latin America, and his mental approach to this challenge, precluded any understanding on his part of the fact that he, along with so many others, was no more than simply a manipulated pawn in the greater game of death being played by the invisible Illuminati handlers. For quite clearly, William Casey saw the challenge he thought he faced, in the same black-and-white terms as his predecessor, William Colby. And he believed his own slogans. The opposite of Communism, for him, was 'freedom'. Unless he was lying in his Affidavit, Mr Casey appeared to have no knowledge or inkling of the possibility that the Vice President he served was actually playing a much deeper game, serving enemy forces beyond the United States whose interests did not coincide with those of the American people. The Author wishes to emphasise this important fact, since Leo Wanta has separately and honestly confirmed in an interview with the Author, as indicated, that 'we didn't understand that at the time' [viz that the Illuminati were manipulating and directing our activities].

So, both William Casey and Leo Wanta were being deceived. Even the head of the CIA was a victim of the occultic Illuminist forces that control US intelligence.

CIRCUMSTANCES SURROUNDING THE DEATH OF WILLIAM COLBY

It is much less clear that Colby did not understand. Although it might appear from Casey's evidence that Colby saw the Communist threat to 'democracy' in the same black-and-white terms, the fact that he was continuing to control two massive illegal operations in Latin America many years after he had ceased to be Director of Central Intelligence himself, suggests otherwise. Born on 4th January 1920, William Colby became Director of Central Intelligence on 4th September 1973 - following James R. Schlesinger, when President Nixon shifted him to the post of Secretary of Defense. President Gerald Ford, the 'highest' and most occult Mason ever to have occupied the Oval Office, advised by Dr Henry Kissinger (the top Illuminati operative, alleged member of the 'high' German Illuminati Directorate, and the alleged Soviet agent BOR), dismissed Colby in late 1975, and replaced him by George H. W Bush. Schlesinger (of German extraction) resurfaced later as the head of the crucial Mitre Corporation [MIT -Massachusetts Institute of Technology] established by Kissinger himself.

Since William Casey was not appointed CIA Director of Central Intelligence until January 1981, it is clear that William Colby continued to run the super-secret intelligence operations A-6 and A-7, the existence of which was unknown to the President, Congress and the intelligence community, between the date of his replacement by George Bush Sr. in late 1975 and January 1981, a period of more than five years.

If Casey's statement that William Colby said that not even the intelligence community knew about these operations, a fresh question arises: whose operations were they? This Author believes that, in the light of what follows, they represented secret operations of German 'Black' intelligence, since later in this work it will be revealed, from an Illuminati defector source, that the global drug trade is run by the Illuminati. And it will also fall out that the cover of defeating Communism in Latin America was indeed used to procure the establishment by the CIA of the Latin American cartels.

For these were, as we shall see, far from 'stand-alone' phenomena.

On 29th April 1996, a correspondent for the UK newspaper Daily Express, Peter Birkett, told Chris Ruddy of NewsMax.com, that his newspaper's MI6 sources had claimed that William Colby was assassinated by US intelligence operatives, presumably to cover up the Latin American cartels scandal. Colby was reported to have disappeared from his country home on the Wicomico River in Maryland. The immediate official 'line' was that he had died in a canoeing accident, after his waterlogged canoe was found on the shore near his home. The Associated Press, which has become more and more of an official mouthpiece, reported that Colby was 'missing and presumed drowned', having died as the result of 'an apparent boating accident'. The news agency elaborated that Mrs Colby, who was in Texas at the time that her husband had disappeared, had spoken by telephone with him on the day that he had vanished, and that he had told her that he was not feeling well 'but was going canoeing anyway'. A week later, Mrs Colby rebutted the Associated Press report, telling The Washington Times that her husband had been perfectly well and had made no mention of going canoeing. The cause of death was reportedly a so-called aneurism, causing him to drown, resulting in hypothermia. However Mrs Colby later said that her husband had said in his phone call that he planned to have his dinner, take a shower, and go to bed. Investigators said that he left his dinner unfinished, went out in his canoe in the middle of the night on a rough and windy river without his lifejacket, experienced a heart attack, and drowned.

His body, inevitably, surfaced in the water, near his waterlogged canoe, a week later. Researchers, naturally unconvinced, due to the failure of the facts to match, added Colby to the list of 82 operatives and others who had, by that early stage, died suspiciously since President Clinton came to office, murdered in part by agents of his predecessor. Given that some 450+ operatives and others with detailed knowledge of dimensions of the nexus of scandals still called 'Iran-Contra' had been 'taken down', incarcerated, liquidated or placed under house arrest as the intelligence community scrambled to cover up their illegal operations, or rather to pour sand onto the raging fire of controversy which partial exposure of its 'heart of darkness' and of its illegal activities had ignited, William Colby's suspicious 'drowning' must indeed be counted among the hundreds of casualties of these endless scandals. This Author has separately described the purges and murders which took place during the Clinton era as the US intelligence community struggled to cover up its past misdeeds, as comparable to one of the multiple waves of arrests, liquidations and false accusation fests perpetrated under Stalin (Djugashvili), albeit of less horrendous proportions. They presage much worse purges to come, given the readiness and ease with which those abominations were committed, as the Republic ditches its false democracy, scraps the Constitution, and realises the full potential of the Third Reich which has surreptitiously installed itself in Washington. This will only happen, however, if the German-oriented Fifth Column gains the decisive upper hand, which was still far from inevitable, as late as mid-2006.

HOW THEY 'JUSTIFY' DRUG-TRAFFICKING IN THEIR TWISTED MINDS

The familiar and probably to come extent diversionary focus on Clinton as the instigator of such abominations diverts attention from the likelihood that these murders -and the hundreds of arrests, incarcerations and 'disappearances' reported routinely during the Clinton years - were orchestrated by the 'German' elements of the US intelligence community, fearful that their nefarious secret activities would culminate in a decisive backlash. The fact that they have been so comprehensively covered up, despite multiple leaks via the courts and in the open media, makes this a certainty. Just as likely is the parallel reality that since the Iran-Contra anti-Communism operations masked the deeper Illuminati drug-running programme, the multiple 'Clinton deaths' were actually Illuminati assassinations in all but name. And since the Illuminati provide German 'Black' intelligence with what it has hitherto assumed to be impenetrable cover, the phrases 'German Black intelligence' and 'Illuminati' are fully interchangeable here.

Put another way, the Illuminati Dark Forces would resort to anything to hide their global drug operations, and would never brook typically botched US intelligence operations exposing the Illuminati's drug-running and money-making activities.

The second irony is that the late Director Casey's justification for the illegal operations initiated under William Colby that he adopted and expanded, was intellectually flawed. The Author has been informed that drug-taking is considered by the perpetrators to be 'recreational', so that what is happening is that a product that is 'required' and 'in demand' for recreational use, is being supplied - the unspoken corollary being: what is wrong with that? How can anyone who is not depraved use this crass argument?

But since this spurious argument appears to remain intact to this day, the Author hereby takes it upon himself to demolish it, even though this task has long since been conscientiously performed by Dr Joseph D Douglass Jr, in his book: 'Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West'[33] [Edward Harle Limited, London & New York, 1999].

Dr Douglass conclusively demonstrated what ought to be apparent to CIA analysts who know a thing or two about psychotropic drugs (after all, MK-ULTRA and its parallel and successor 'Black' programmes were/are CIA operations), that marihuana, cocaine, heroin and artificial drugs are not naturally in demand, but rather that on the contrary, supply stimulates demand, rather than the other way round. What Casey's mistaken argument omits is the nature of these drugs. If you eat an orange and decide that you would like to eat more oranges because they taste nice, you are doing yourself no harm, as oranges are a natural food provided for our nutrition and enjoyment. But these drugs are not nutritious: they are addictive. The demand that arises following their supply is a consequence not of 'recreational demand' but of demand resulting from addiction.

The fact that the source of demand for drugs is their addictive characteristic presupposes that if the drugs are not available, then addiction cannot occur, given the lack of supply. In other words, William Casey's argument, which is evidently sustained as an alibi by CIA drug-runners and their controllers to this day, is based upon an egregious, diabolical, disgraceful lie. For any supposedly civilised government to permit elements of its structures to conduct (in the case of the United States, on a colossal scale) drug-running operations, and to justify such nefarious behaviour by resort to a lie as crude as this, is beyond catastrophic. It represents the grandfather of all scandals. This necessary condemnation applies to the Author's own Government as well, given the intelligence now to hand about the corrupt drug-running activities of the GO-2 intelligence cadre working from within MI6 headquarters in Lambeth, Central London.

To this lie is often attached the further deceit that 'if we don't do it, others will fill our shoes'. To which the answer is: so what? If other evil states sponsor drug-running operations, that is a scandalous matter for their own governments or peoples to address. The United States has created or elaborated a global drug monstrosity, financing its intelligence operations from drug-running just like the Chinese and the Soviets.

And the most powerful drug-running country today is arguably the United States. If a miracle were to happen, and the overpowerful US intelligence services were to be brought to book and forced (somehow) to cease and desist, a vast component of the drug scourge that is degrading mankind would be neutralised. The United States could then begin to restore its globally shattered and tawdry reputation by deploying resources in opposition to the equally nefarious drug-running operations of its dialectical rivals.

Unfortunately, this is evidently not about to happen, because drug-running is an operation not just of US intelligence, but of the Illuminati which controls it, or elements of it. Hence, there is, as matters stand, no will to address this gargantuan crisis, not least because the continued 'integrity' of the international financial system depends upon the continued pipeline of laundry money generated by the drug trade. The money supply expands to meet the demand for funds with which purchases of drugs are financed.

William Casey ran his argument into a brick wall with his penultimate statements that 'the drug user[s] had the freedom to make a choice. They chose the drug'.

The deceitful implication here is that the user of drugs has the choice to cease to consume them. The answer to that is that (a) he would not have begun to consume them if the CIA/DVD had not facilitated their supply in the first place {see above) and (b) that once addicted (which can happen almost immediately), exercising 'the freedom to make a choice' becomes at once extremely difficult, for physiological reasons.

It is true that druggies can, with an immense effort of will, achieve separation from these products of the Devil. But, as the late Mr Casey and all those CIA and other US intelligence officers who sup with the Devil on this score know perfectly well, the addictive characteristics of the drugs ensure that the balance of probability is that the drug addict will constantly seek to renew the temporary gratification obtained from using the drugs supplied by the CIA's drug operatives and foreign criminalised intelligence collaborators. Therefore, the argument deployed here is thoroughly dishonest. It is a lie.

Finally, William Casey admitted in his Affidavit that he couldn't care less about (a) the fact that he had violated the Geneva Convention or (b) that his actions condemned 'countless Americans to drug dependency'. The Author will spell this out more clearly:

The late head of the US intelligence community stated that he was perfectly comfortable 'condemning countless Americans to drug dependency'.

Note that Mr Casey used the imprecise phrase 'countless', which, taken literally and in context, might be construed as implying indifference as to whether the number of Americans whose lives his actions blighted and destroyed in exchange for 'freedom' amounted to a thousand, ten million, or two hundred million. That is what his statement means. If 200,000,000 Americans were condemned to drug dependency, that would have been fine with the late Director of Central Intelligence. The victims would have been dead by now - but free! Since none of his successors have done anything to reverse this activity, and what follows will reveal and confirm that the so-called Colombian drug cartels were established by US intelligence, it is clear that the United States is in desperate need of leadership by people who can think straight, and whose minds are not confused, who judgment is not wanting and who are not Luciferians.

Criminal governance can never escape detection. The US authorities have been criticised for failures surrounding their handling and interpretation of warnings ahead of the 9/11 attacks, with a strong overtone of suspicion that the authorities themselves may have been complicit in the catastrophes. It is now well understood in sensitive quarters in both London and Washington that Al-Qaeda is a front for German/French 'Black' intelligence and that the explosive charges which demolished the US buildings were laid by collaborators. The backgrounds of key individuals such as George Tenet, allegedly an asset of French intelligence, and of his mentor, the Skull and Bones alumnus David L. Boren [see page 587 et seq.], later the head of the University of Oklahoma, in whose backyard a number of operatives associated with the atrocities lived and were trained, reinforce evidence separately sifted by US and UK intelligence that 9/11 and 7/11 were acts of war committed against the United States and Britain, which, if repeated, may trigger very grave consequences. The discovery that the Northern Underground Line beneath the Thames was meant to have been breached by a bomb, and upwards of 10,000 Londoners drowned on 7/7, plus GCHQ intercepts associated with the attacks pinpointing French and German 'Black' intelligence involvement, have been kept - like the real conclusions about 9/11 - under wraps, for one reason only: the desire to avoid the prospect of a Third World War, not against the covert Soviet Union, but once again against Germany, the Nazi Continuum of which has, by its own admission (see Chapter 8) never ceased waging war against the 'main enemy' - Britain and the United States. The methods employed include proxy terrorism, bribery, corruption, Fifth Column penetration, and drugs.

THE AFFIDAVIT OF US SPECIAL FORCES OFFICER EDWARD P. CUTOLO

The next 'smoking gun' document confirms how extensive the super-secret off-off-budget and hidden operations revealed to William Casey by Colby had been, providing further documented proof of CIA drug-running operations. It is an Affidavit by Edward P. Cutolo, dated 18th March 1980[34], the details of which corroborate Casey's assertions, provide extraordinary insights into possible tensions between the Illuminati forces and corrupt elements of the US intelligence community, and reveal collaboration with Israeli intelligence (known as Megawatt operations). The text of this Affidavit, dated 8th March 1980, is given below in full. [The reader is asked to exercise patience as the narrative develops]:

'I, Edward P. Cutolo, having been duly sworn, do state under oath:

1. I am currently the Commanding Officer of the 10th Special Forces Group (Airborne), 1st Special Forces, Fort Devens, Massachusetts. 2. I swear affirmation to the contents of this affidavit freely and without coercion or threat to my person.

3. In December 1975, I spoke with Colonel "Bo" Baker concerning a classified mission that he commanded during that month, inside Colombia. The mission was known as WATCHTOWER. [Note: Colonel A. J. Baker, a US intelligence officer, later died mysteriously in Germany while undergoing minor surgery at a US facility - a familiar 'happening', the Author understands. At the last count, the total number of operatives, lawyers and others associated with Iran-Contra to have been 'taken down' exceeded 430 - Ed.].

4. Following a lengthy discussion with Col. Baker, I was introduced to Mr. Edwin Wilson and Mr. Frank Terpil. Both Wilson and Terpil were in the employ of the Central Intelligence Agency. Both Wilson and Terpil inquired if I was interested in working for short periods of time in Colombia and I acknowledged that I was.

5. In February 1976, I commanded the second WATCHTOWER Mission into Colombia. This mission was 22 days long and ended with only one reportable incident

occurring between team members and a Colombian army unit. There were no fatalities received by WATCHTOWER team members. There was no indication that the Colombian army unit sustained fatalities.

6. The purpose of Operation WATCHTOWER was to establish a series of three electronic beacon towers beginning outside of Bogota, Colombia and running northeast to the border of Panama. Once the WATCHTOWER teams (Special Action Teams) were in place, the beacon was activated to emit a signal that aircraft could fix on and fly undetected from Bogota into Panama, before landing at Albrook Air Station.

7. During the February 1976 WATCHTOWER Mission, 30 high performance aircraft landed safely at Albrook Air Station where the aircraft were met by Colonel Tony [sic] Noriega, who is a Panama Defence Force [PDF] Officer currently assigned to the Customs and Intelligence Section. Noriega normally was in the company of other PDF officers who were known to me as Major Diaz-Herrera, Major Luis del Cid, and/or a Major Ramirez. Also present at most of the arrivals, was Edwin Wilson, and an unidentified male Israeli national.

8. The cargo flown from Colombia into Panama consisted of cocaine.

9. The [mentioned] male Israeli national was identified and known to members of the [US] 570th Military Intelligence Group in Panama who only specified that this individual had the authority from the U.S. Army Southern Command in Panama to be in the A.O. [sic].

10. In March, 1976, a third WATCHTOWER Mission was implemented and I was in command of that mission which lasted 29 days and engaged in the same tactics used in the February 1976, mission. The March mission encountered a serious accident and resulted in several Special Action Team members being injured from wounds suffered while they were attempting to exfiltrate from Colombia across the border into Panama where helicopters were waiting to extract them.

11. The March 1976 mission incident occurred as the Special Action Team that was on station at Turbo, Colombia, encountered 40 to 50 armed men. Action Intelligence reports identified the armed men as local bandits. In regards to this incident the helicopters waiting in Panama, to extract the Special Action Team, entered Colombian air space without authorization and successfully extracted the Special Action Team, after an estimated six- or seven-minute fire-fight.

12. During the March 1976, WATCHTOWER Mission, 40 high performance aircraft landed safely at Albrook Air Station where they were met in the previously related fashion by those named.

13. After the WATCHTOWER Mission in March 1976, I lost touch with several of the men who had served on the Special Action Teams. I made no attempt to locate them.

14. In 1978, I assumed command of the 10th Special Forces Group (Airborne) at Fort Devens and recognized two soldiers [there].

15. The two soldiers [that] I recognized were assigned to 10th Special Forces Group (Airborne). One [of them] was assigned to a Special Forces Operational Detachment Alpha in the 3rd Battalion - Sgt. John Newby. The other had just been reassigned off an Operational Detachment Alpha following a criminal Investigation Division matter being levied against him, PFC William Tyree. Tyree was reassigned to a Forward Support Team but had been carried for the preceding month on the 2nd Battalion's roster.

16. Upon the assumption of command, I created and implemented 12 separate Special Action Teams. Their mission was to implement Army Regulation 340-18-5 (file

number 503-05). My authority for this action came directly from FORSCOM through Edwin Wilson who appeared before me in my office at 10th Special Forces Group Headquarters. This action was taken to develop surveillance of politicians, judicial figures, law enforcement agencies at the State level, and of religious figures [in conformity with the remit of the A-6 RED MIST program identified by William Colby when he briefed William Casey in 1981 - Ed.]

17. Edwin Wilson explained that it was believed that Operation WATCHTOWER might be compromised and become known if politicians, judicial figures, police and religious entities were approached or received word that U.S. troops had aided in delivering narcotics from Columbia into Panama. Based on that possibility, intense surveillance was now undertaken by my office to ensure that if WATCHTOWER became known about, the U.S. Government and the Army would have advance warning and could prepare a defense [sic].

18. I was under orders never to inform Colonel Forrest Rittgers, [who was] Commanding Officer of Ft. Devens. The reason for this order, I was told, was that in the event Ft. Devens personnel were caught in the act of implementing the surveillance, Col. Rittgers will have a margin of plausible deniability with which he may be able to downplay and defend against injuries [sic].

19. The surveillance was unofficially referred to as Operation George Orwell based on the theme of the surveillance and the George Orwell published work '1984'.

20. I instituted surveillance against Ted Kennedy, John Kerry, Edward King, Michael Dukakis [who was later a Vice Presidential candidate], Levin H. Campbell, Andrew A. Caffey, Fred Johnston, Kenneth A. Chandler, Thomas P. O'Neill [later the House Speaker], to name a few of the targets. Surveillance at my orders was instituted at the Governors' residences of Massachusetts, Maine, New York, and New Hampshire.

The Catholic Cathedrals of New York and Boston were placed under electronic surveillance also. In the area of Ft. Devens, all local police and politicians were under surveillance at various times. [In other words, A-6 (or its clone) was being implemented domestically, as well - which was doubly against the law then prevailing - Ed.].

21. I specifically employed individuals taken from the 441st Military Intelligence Detachment and 402 Army Security Agency Detachment assigned to the 10th Special Forces Group to supplement the Special Action Teams carrying out Operation Orwell.

22. I also recruited a number of local State employees who worked within the ranks of local police and as court personnel to assist in this operation. They were veterans and had previous security clearances. They were told at the outset that if they were caught they were on their own.

23. Among the Special Action Team personnel was (then) SP4 William Tyree. Tyree had learned of the Operation and requested in person to be part of it. Tyree was used in less than a dozen surveillances.

24. In October 1978, it became known to me that SP4 Tyree was receiving telephone threats to his wife and himself. He made that fact known to his First Sergeant, Frederick Henry, and then approached me. Following our discussion, I considered placing Tyree under surveillance to arrive at who was behind the threats and whether or not the threats had the potential of compromising Operation Orwell.

25. On 26 December 1978 I began a file on SP4 Tyree and assigned a three-man surveillance Special Action Team to the multi-dwelling apartment complex [that] SP4 Tyree shared with his wife. That unit was in place from that date until 14 February 1979.

26. On 5 January 1979, Tyree appeared before me to receive a Field Grade Article-15 (non-judicial punishment) for his part in the theft and sale of military property. I had to make an example out of Tyree and instituted the most severe punishment possible. I concluded that with pending Congressional inquiries, the Post Commander (Colonel Rittgers) would reverse my decision on appeal, in Pvt. Tyree's favor. A reason to support this conclusion, in addition to pending Congressional inquiries, was the fact that the proceedings against Pvt. William Tyree were flawed from the outset of the investigation with a number of discrepancies.

27. I was told and understood that the main reason for seeking the Article-15 against him was to make an example of him, to show others that cooperation with the Command law enforcement agencies was mandatory.

28. On 26 January 1979, Pvt. Tyree tendered his Appeal of my sanction. The Appeal is attached. It is the best example of what proof existed against Pvt. Tyree when he came before me on 5 January 1979. It also names the characters in another matter that was unfolding as of that date.

29. By 29 January 1979, Senator Garn's office had contacted the Army Liaison Office in Washington D.C, on behalf of Pvt. Tyree who referred the matter to my office, as I was Pvt. Tyree's Commanding Officer. I then notified Sgt. Doucette in Washington D.C, that it would be approximately two weeks before further action could be taken in regard to the threats Pvt. Tyree was receiving. At that point I knew the threats were taking place, but had not ascertained from whence they originated.

30. At approximately 0945 hours on 30 January 1979, Pvt. Tyree reported to my office at 10th Special Forces Group Headquarters per my instructions. Pvt. Tyree reported that between 2400 hours and 0100 hours of the previous night his wife had received another threatening phone call. I was notified of the call by the Special Action Team in place at the Tyree residence prior to speaking with Pvt. Tyree. I ordered Tyree to keep this matter to himself as it was being investigated. I notified Pvt. Tyree I would contact him between 1200 and 1300 hours at his duty station as soon as I could look into a matter that pertained to the threats. This meeting lasted until 1019 hours.

31. On 30 January 1979, at approximately 1147 hours, two men were dropped in the parking area of the apartment complex that Pvt. Tyree resided within. One man was identified as Erik Aarhus. The second man, due to his face being covered, could not be identified as the two men entered the apartment building where the Tyree family resided. Surveillance indicated that at least one of the two men entered the Tyree apartment and left prior to the arrival of Pvt. William Tyree and his wife at noon.

32. On 30 January 1979, at noon, Pvt. Tyree and his wife were seen arriving at the apartment complex they resided in. Pvt. Tyree never exited his truck and Mrs. Tyree entered the building where their apartment was located. After she disappeared, a car almost ran into Pvt. Tyree as he was leaving the parking lot. Mrs. Tyree was stabbed to death in their apartment shortly thereafter.

33. Following a scream, local police were notified. The first police car responded quickly and a single officer entered the building where the Tyree family resided. After the officer entered, one of the two men exited from a window on the ground floor of the building This widow was identified as the Tyree bedroom window. The man seen leaving this window was identified as SP4 Earl M. Peters. Peters exited the window wearing blue denim, with a red hood sticking out of the rear neck area of the blue denim jacket. He was carrying a box, green and white in color that was described by the Special

Action Team as long and flat in appearance. Peters then walked from the building to the driveway entrance of the apartment complex and walked in the general direction of the main street in Ayer, Massachusetts. Within 5 or 6 minutes after the first police officer arrived, a second officer identified as the Police Chief appeared.

34. After the Police Chief had arrived, a third vehicle arrived. This was 10 to 15 minutes later. That vehicle carried an unknown man in his late 30s. He was later identified as the landlord of the Tyree apartment.

35. Upon knowledge that Mrs. Tyree was dead, the Special Action Team did notify me of this fact and I did place Pvt. Tyree under intense surveillance. In addition, I placed SP4 Peters under surveillance and at approximately 1405 hours during the afternoon of the murder Sp4 Peters signed a weapon (12 gauge shotgun, Remington 1100) into the Service Company. The weapon was in a long flat green and white box bearing the name 'Remington' across the front and back sides. [*Note: The author of the Affidavit says Mrs Tyree was stabbed, but inconsistently stresses Pvt. Peters' gun - Ed.].

36. Pvt. Tyree was questioned and cooperated in a limited fashion. He was then taken to the 441 Military Intelligence Detachment where he slept overnight on the Commanding Officer's couch, under guard. The following morning, I spoke to him in my office at the 10th Special Forces Group Headquarters. I informed him of the surveillance and of what I knew had occurred to his wife. He knew at that point that SP4 Peters and Pvt. Aarhus had both been involved in the murder and he began to talk to me.

37. Pvt. Tyree admitted, on 31 January 1979 in my office to me, that his wife had been killed, he felt, because of a set of diaries she had kept. Tyree explained that SP4 Peters and SP4 Rosario were named throughout the books as being involved in [certain] illegal matters on and around Ft. Devens. I knew [that] Rosario had been alleged to be involved in such matters and knew the information could be true. Then Pvt. Tyree admitted that his wife knew of Operations WATCHTOWER and Orwell, as he had seen it in her diaries the previous night. Pvt. Tyree swore he didn't reveal the Operations to her and I believed him. Tyree didn't know where the diaries were at this time.

38. Upon Pvt. Tyree leaving my office, I initiated contact with Massachusetts State Police Lieutenant J. Dwyer, of the Middlesex District Attorney's Office. Lt. Dwyer had cooperated previously on Operation Orwell and understood the urgency of the situation. Lt. Dwyer notified me that during a search of the Tyree apartment he [had] discovered the diaries behind the fridge with a note to the family of Elaine Tyree. He did not disclose the contents of the note.

39. Shortly before noon on 2 February 1979, I received a telephone call from Lt. Dwyer indicating he would drop off the diaries belonging to Elaine Tyree at my office. Upon receipt of the diaries I reviewed them, noting [that] much of Operation WATCHTOWER and Orwell was written about throughout the many pages of the diaries.

40. After my review, I contacted Colonel Moore of the U.S. Army Liaison in Washington D.C., and notified him of the scope of the issues involved in the murder of Elaine Tyree. I did notify him at that time of the possibility that arms and narcotics trafficking played a role in her murder. Due to security issues surrounding Operations WATCHTOWER and Orwell, I did not indicate how the arms and narcotics trafficking figured in the murder of Elaine Tyree, however.

41. Despite repeated warnings to stay out of the investigation and to remain silent, Pvt. Tyree was arrested on 13 February 1979, after [he had] attempted to bring about the arrest of Pvt. Aarhus. The surveillance Special Action Team reported that an armed con-

frontation between Pvt. Tyree and SP4 Peters occurred prior to the arrest of Pvt. Tyree.

42. During February 1979, Pvt. Tyree was arraigned on the pending civilian criminal charges. It was too risky to allow a military court to review the charges against Pvt. Tyree with Operation Orwell still ongoing and Senator Garn's office requesting a full investigation. Pvt. Tyree therefore had to stand before a civilian court of law on the criminal charges.

43. Prior to the arrest of Pvt. William Tyree, Lt. Dwyer approached me and insisted on knowing whether or not Tyree had ever served in Vietnam. I suspect Lt. Dwyer was attempting to learn if Tyree's involvement in the military operations elsewhere were being covered up the way Operation WATCHTOWER was. I replied in the negative, that Tyree had never been in the Republic of South Vietnam. I then contemplated for the first time [the possibility] that Tyree might go public on Operations WATCH-TOWER and Orwell because I had not come forward. Based on that conclusion, I gave orders to erase certain parts of his military records.

44. Actual information erased included the attendance of Pvt. Tyree at certain service schools and references to overseas service. I ordered all records to be erased that linked Pvt. Tyree to Operation WATCHTOWER or Orwell. Service schools and badges [that] I know were erased included his Taper Flash Special Forces Qualification', 'Crewman's Aviator Wings', 'Canadian Airborne Badge', and 'Master Parachute Badge'. I also gave orders to disenfranchise Pvt. Tyree from [the] Special Forces. I wanted no-one standing up for him and in the process dragging the information concerning Operation WATCHTOWER into the public eye. [Note: And to hell with poor Pvt. Tyree, whose wife had just been murdered because she knew about the US military's illegal drug-running operations, and who had himself been arrested after confronting his wife's murderer - Ed.].

45. Unknown to him, Pvt. Tyree underwent a hearing on the criminal charges in a local courthouse, under the surveillance of Operation Orwell. I learned through transmissions that Tyree only spoke of defense issues with his attorney, but [had] never mentioned Operations WATCHTOWER or Orwell. In the process of Pvt. Tyree's hearing, a State police officer from Lt. Dwyer's office discovered [that] the State courthouse was under surveillance. This led to the arrest of the senior Court Officer, Ira Kiezer, who took full responsibility and never mentioned my office.

46. After the hearing concluded, the presiding judge in the Tyree matter found no reason to bind Tyree over for the trial on the murder of his wife. I found myself faced with the possibility that Pvt. Tyree, upon release, would become angered at my decision to disfranchise him. So I approached Lt. Dwyer who informed me that an indictment had already been secured for Tyree and that he would stand trial for the charge of murder. Lt. Dwyer expressed concern that there would not be enough evidence to warrant a guilty finding against Tyree. Lt. Dwyer indicated that the only person with enough credibility was SP4 Peters. I could not inform Lt. Dwyer that Peters had been the person responsible for Elaine Tyree's murder.

47. After weeks of consideration, I concluded that the security of Operation WATCHTOWER and Orwell came first and AR 340-18-5 strictly prohibited the disclosure of intelligence gathered pursuant to that regulation.

48. On 29 February 1980, Pvt. Tyree was convicted of murder and will spend the duration of his life incarcerated. I could not disseminate intelligence gathered under Operation Orwell to notify civilian authorities who actually killed Elaine Tyree. [Note: For illegal operational reasons, including the need to cover up US drug-running, therefore,

an army private (named as a Colonel in the court documents to which Casey's Affidavit was appended, but as 'Private' in Cutolo's Affidavit) faced spending the rest of his life in jail for murdering his wife, even though his Commanding Officer knew who had actually committed the murder (false witness). The Author's enquiries have indicated that the unfortunate Pvt. Tyree is still incarcerated (as of June 2006). - Ed.].

49. The current intelligence on Archbishop Romero (El Salvador) indicates [that] he is in receipt of physical evidence supporting several allegations that the United States is currently, [along] with Honduras, Costa Rica, El Salvador, and Panama, covertly training and sponsoring freedom fighters attempting to overthrow the current regime in Nicaragua; that these freedom fighters are also being supported from funds arising from Operation WATCHTOWER in part; that Mr. Robert D'Aubuisson (El Salvador) secretly aided the freedom fighters by allowing US advisors to train the freedom fighters inside El Salvador; [and] that Sr. D'Aubuisson was contacted by Edwin Wilson and Frank Terpil prior to the freedom fighters being trained inside El Salvador.

This information made it necessary to protect Operation WATCHTOWER and Orwell regardless of the costs [i.e., regardless of the murder of Pvt. Tyree's wife by someone other than her husband and regardless of the fact that this US military officer or soldier was languishing in prison, where he faced spending the rest of his life - Ed.].

50. I have been in communication with Lt. Dwyer. In November 1979, after some prodding, Lt. Dwyer and the Middlesex District Attorney went to the Massachusetts Supreme Court and obtained a ruling that prohibits any court but the Massachusetts Supreme Court from ordering the arrest of suspects in the Tyree murder. I am told that this is without precedent and that normally any court can issue arrest warrants for suspects in a murder. This will ensure that only Tyree and Aarhus are arrested for the murder and that SP4 Peters will not have to be subjected to having to defend himself on the witness stand. That also could bring about the entire matter being made public as by this time, I am certain that SP4 Peters is acutely aware that something is afoot, or he would have been arrested when the hearing in the local courthouse was held. [Another instance of the perversion of the US system of 'justice' by intelligence - Ed.].

51. I mailed the diaries of Elaine Tyree to a post office box number in Langley, Virginia, per instructions of Edwin Wilson who contacted me by telephone concerning the diaries [i.e., the diaries were sent to the CIA, where of course they have been suppressed - Ed.]. Wilson also notified me of the intelligence on Archbishop Romero.

52. I reviewed the diaries prior to mailing them. The diaries contained most of the information on SP4 Peters, as Pvt. Tyree indicated they did. I suspect that this was the motive for Peters' killing of Elaine Tyree. The diaries contained no mention of Pvt. Tyree or his alleged illegal dealings. I suspect that Elaine Tyree only wrote in the diaries relating to soldiers other than her husband, who were involved in illegal activities in and around Ft. Devens.

53. The diaries kept by Elaine Tyree mentioned certain personal entries that can corroborate the fact that I saw the diaries, that they exist, and that the information contained within them is accurate. There were numerous entries relating to Elaine Hebb Tyree's family located in Maryland, and her friends in the army.

54. January 1978 entry: 'Rosemary got a job with the FBI and has to be in Washington D.C. by January 31, 1978. Cindy and Edie got out of the hospital today (that is, Thursday)'.

55. From reading the entry on Cindy and Edie I suspect that [the] actual date of

their release from the hospital was 12 January 1978. But no specific date was given, nor was the hospital named that they were admitted to.

56. January 1978 entry: 'Rosemary will be leaving for Washington D.C., on Sunday. I may ride back with her'.

57. From reading the entry concerning Rosemary driving to Washington, I suspect the actual date Rosemary left the Hebb family home in Cumberland, Maryland, to travel to Washington, possibly with Elaine Tyree, was 29 January 1978. No actual date was given in the diaries, nor was there further mention whether or not Elaine Tyree actually rode 'back with her.'

58. November 1978 entry: 'SP5 Scott had a little baby girl. She was due in July. I remember her back before she came to Ft. Devens'.

59. From a reading of the entries on SP5 Scott which begin to appear in the diaries around April 1978, I suspect this female was a member of a unit Elaine Tyree was assigned to either at Ft. Lee, Virginia, or at Ft. McClellan, Alabama. In either case, this is an intimate fact obviously known only to Elaine Tyree, as no one else would need any knowledge about when another female friend gave birth, and the gender of the baby born to the female friend in question.

60. January-February 1978 entries. 'I've been running around with Heidi Urban. We go all over together when I don't have duty.... Pat Imbu left in mid-January'.

61. From my reading of the entries on Heidi Urban, the main facts appearing obvious are that Elaine Tyree is then at Ft. Lee, Virginia [and] that Pvt. William Tyree is not present as he is at Ft. Devens, Mass. Other than Elaine and Heidi, no-one, specifically not Pvt. Tyree or myself, could know that Elaine and Heidi were 'running around together' at that time, unless these facts are represented in the diaries maintained by Elaine Tyree in her own handwriting. Elaine Tyree was [now] assigned to Company C, 1st Battalion, Quartermaster School.

62. November 1978 entry: 'Dear Diary, my brother Steven who has been stationed in England for a over a year, is coming home on the 20th for good'.

63. From reading the entries on Steven, I learned that he is currently assigned to an Air Force Base in England and that Elaine Tyree got along well with him.

64. From further consideration and reading entries on SP5 Scott. I conclude that Mrs Elaine Tyree knew this female at Ft. Lee, Virginia, in the sense that both Scott and Elaine Tyree underwent the same training there. I don't gather from the entries that SP5 Scott married or had a name change between her duty at Ft. Lee, Virginia, and Ft. Devens, Mass., but I could be forgetting or overlooking the numerous personal entries in the diaries in an attempt only to view data pertinent to Operation WATCHTOWER or Orwell.

65. November 1978 entry: 'Peters came by the apartment today. Bill spoke with him in the front room while I was washing dishes. Peters is thinking about buying a new truck. Bill asked Peters if he was going to have Dennis Testagrossa steal this new truck and burn it so [that] Peters could collect the insurance the way Peters had the last time? Peters laughed and said the payments are better on this truck than the one he had Testagrossa steal from the parking lot of Carlin's Bar. This was the first I knew that Peters was involved in the stealing of his own truck. Peters told me [that] Bill was not involved because at the time Bill was under too much attention'.

66. I have not seen proof that Pvt. Tyree was involved in illegal activities. I have seen ample proof that he is foolish and eager to do things his way, since Pvt. Tyree's involvement in the March 1976 WATCHTOWER incident with the 40-50 armed Colombians.

67. I have detailed the pertinent events in this Affidavit should something happen to me. The lug nuts have been loosened on my car tires twice in the past week. I have had someone tamper with my car once and I have received telephone calls at my home where no one answered at the other end. I have seen other men involved in Operation WATCHTOWER meet accidental deaths after they had also been threatened.

68. Sgt. John Newby reported that he had received threats just prior to the parachuting accident that claimed his life in October 1978. It was at that time that (then) SP4 Tyree began to report threatening phone calls. I saw a pattern and still believe that a pattern exists. [Note: The only difference being that, this time round, it's Cutolo who senses that his life is in danger, rather than the incarcerated army private. Cutolo also died prematurely].

69. I gave Colonel Baker the original copy of this Affidavit. [Note: As indicated earlier, Colonel A.J. Baker died suddenly while undergoing light surgery under anaesthesia at a US military facility in Germany -Ed.]. I gave true copies to Mr Hugh B. Pearce, and to Mr Paul Neri of the National Security Agency, and instructed each person to deliver this Affidavit to the authorities in the event [that] something occurs to me. [Note: And a great deal of use that would be, wouldn't it, given that 'the authorities' are themselves the perpetrators of these murders and illegal activities. It is understood that 'something did indeed happen' to Cutolo, later. -Ed.].

70. I believe [that] the friends I have entrusted with the original and copies of this affidavit will place the national security of the United States and American interests in Latin America first, and if circumstances allow, will bring this affidavit to the attention of the authorities in the event that something occurs to me.

71. During the conversation with Edwin Wilson, I was informed of the sensitive data related to Archbishop Romero. He also spoke to me concerning operation WATCH-TOWER and the geopolitical climate in Latin America and the need to maintain security. I notified him that I had requested to release intelligence gathered from Operation Orwell to civilian police authorities involved in the Elaine Tyree murder and that the Staff Judge Advocate's Office had denied the request.

72. Edwin Wilson [then] explained that Operation WATCHTOWER had to remain secret and gave these reasons [for his demand]:

(1) If the operation became public knowledge, it would undermine present governmental interests as well as those in the future;

(2) There are similar operations being implemented elsewhere in the world. Wilson named the 'Golden Triangle' of Southeast Asia and [also] Pakistan [in this context]. Wilson stated [that] in both areas of the world, the CIA and certain other intelligence agencies are using the illegal narcotics flow to support forces fighting to overthrow Communist governments, or [else] governments that are not friendly towards the United States. Edwin Wilson revealed [the names of] several recognized officials [from] Pakistan, Afghanistan, Burma, Korea, Thailand and Cambodia as being aware of and consenting to these arrangements, similar to the arrangements in Panama;

(3) Wilson cited the military coup in Argentina in 1976, the coup in Peru in 1976, the collapse of the Somoza Government in Nicaragua in 1979, and the growing civil war in El Salvador as examples of the need for operations like WATCHTOWER, as these operations funded the ongoing US effort to combat Communism and [to] defeat various activities directed against the United States or matters concerning the United States.

73. Edwin Wilson [then] explained that the profits from the sale of narcotics were laundered through a series of banks. Wilson stated that over 70% of the profits were being laundered through the banks in Panama. The remaining percentage was

being funnelled through Swiss banks with only a modest remainder being handled by banks within the United States. Wilson indicated that a large proportion of the profits are brought into the banks of Panama without being checked. I understood that some of the dollar profits in Panamanian banks arrived through Israeli couriers.

I became aware of that fact from normal conversations with some of the Embassy personnel assigned to the Embassy in Panama. Wilson also stated that an associate whom I don't know also aided in overseeing the laundering of funds, which were then used to purchase weapons to arm the various factions that the CIA saw as friendly towards the United States. The associate's name is Tom Clines. Wilson indicated that most of [the activity under] Operation WATCHTOWER was effected on the authority of Clines.

74. I was notified by Mr Edwin Wilson that the information forwarded to Washington D.C., was disseminated to private corporations that were developing weapons for the US Department of Defense. Those private corporations were encouraged to use the sensitive information gathered from the surveillance on US Senators and Representatives as leverage [with which] to manipulate those Congressmen into approving whatever costs the weapons systems incurred. [Note: This is a formal, explicit acknowledgement of the widespread use of blackmail by the US intelligence community as an instrument of domestic and international military policy. - Ed.].

75. Edwin Wilson named three weapons systems when he spoke of private corporations receiving information [that was derived] from Operation Orwell:

(1) An armored vehicle;

(2) An aircraft that is invisible to radar;

(3) A weapons system that utilizes kinetic energy. I got the impression [that] this weapon was being developed either for use by NASA or for CBR [sic] purposes. I wrote down what I recalled at the time and it is attached [omitted by the source for this presentation as being not strictly relevant, as was certain other related material - Ed].

76. Edwin Wilson indicated to me during our conversation which entailed the dissemination of Operation Orwell information and the identification of the three weapons systems, that Operation Orwell would be implemented nationwide by 4th July 1980. [Accordingly]:

77. As of the date of this affidavit, 8,400 US police departments, 1,370 churches, and approximately 17,900 citizens have been monitored under Operation Orwell. The major churches targeted have been Catholic and Latter-Day Saints [sic]. I have stored certain information [that was] gathered by Operation Orwell on Ft. Devens, and pursuant to instructions from Edwin Wilson have forwarded additional information gathered, to Washington, D.C. [Note: At that time, the CIA was prohibited from spying on US citizens domestically: but what the hell, the law is only there to be exploited when the intelligence community needs its protection: at all other times, it can be disregarded - Ed.].

78. Per orders from Edwin Wilson, I did not discuss the implementation of Operation Orwell with my staff or others outside beyond the personnel assigned to surveillance. The only matter [that was] discussed with Operation Orwell personnel was what the Special Action Teams needed to know in order to carry out their mission. Certain information was collected on suspected members of the Trilateral Commission and also the Bilderberg Group. [Note: This formal documented admission is extremely significant. The Author is advised by reliable intelligence sources that the Trilateral Commission is a subversive front for German long-range 'Black' Intelligence, while the Bilderberg Organisation allegedly selects and approves personnel and Illuminati

agentur in order to ensure that the interests and objectives of the Illuminati, serving ultimately, as a practical matter, German long-range global hegemony strategy, are always sustained - Ed.]. Among those that information was collected on were Gerald Ford and President Jimmy Carter. Edwin Wilson indicated that additional surveillance was implemented against the former CIA Director George H. W. Bush. Sr., whom Edwin Wilson named as a member of the Trilateral Commission. [This statement confirms that Operation Orwell was directed domestically against the long-range German/DVD Fifth Column in the United States - Ed.]. [Mr Cutolo added]: I do not have personal knowledge that Ford, Carter or Bush were under surveillance.

79. I spoke to Colonel James N. Rowe on 5 March 1980. I specifically requested that Col. Rowe communicate with several contacts he possesses within the CIA. I requested Colonel Rowe to check out Mr Edwin Wilson. I had two concerns. The first was that Edwin Wilson may pose a threat to national security by disseminating classified information on the CIA's activities to personnel without a clearance or a need to know that information. Edwin Wilson, during his conversations with me, outlined information that was classified and which I had no need to know: information that pertained to the activities of the CIA in the United States and Latin America. I've related such conversations with Mr Wilson herein. The second concern I had was the issue of his authority and [of his] connection to Thomas Clines. I was told repeatedly that Clines was the agent in charge and that Wilson worked with Clines. Colonel Rowe indicated that he would make the inquiries I requested and would contact me with that information as soon as he had something. Colonel Rowe indicated that it would be 60 to 90 days before he would speak to the CIA contact that was most apt to have knowledge of the information I requested. I agreed to meet Colonel Rowe at Ft. Bragg the next week in June in the event Colonel Rowe received documentation relating to the information I sought.

80. On 7 March 1980, Colonel Rowe contacted me. During the course of our conversation Colonel Rowe informed me that his initial inquiries with CIA contacts confirmed that Edwin Wilson was working for Thomas Clines at the times in question. Colonel Rowe indicated that Edwin Wilson was under scrutiny by the CIA at that time but had not been given the details of the circumstances surrounding the events of that matter. Colonel Rowe also indicated that there was an Israeli aspect to the matter involving Edwin Wilson, and Colonel Rowe provided the name of David Kimche as being the Israeli most likely to be involved with Edwin Wilson.

[Note: David Kimche was head of the Israeli Foreign Office and therefore in charge of Mossad, the Israeli foreign intelligence service. He was the most powerful and most senior of all Israeli foreign and intelligence officials. For David Kimche to have been involved in such operational matters meant that Israeli intelligence is heavily involved in drug-trafficking operations, too, as is confirmed shortly. Indeed, as will be seen, the Israeli drug operations in Latin America (and elsewhere) are extensive (and may be intertwined with parallel Soviet drug-trafficking operations - Ed.]. With regard to my concerns that Edwin Wilson posed a possible threat to national security or to the inner working of the CIA, Colonel Rowe indicated that off the record, that was a concern of several people to whom he had also spoken.

Colonel Rowe further indicated that he would be in receipt of documentation by the first week of June [1980] which listed Edwin Wilson's involvement in several operations. I specifically asked Colonel Rowe if he had the names of any of those operations at this time and his reply was in the negative. Colonel Rowe did indicate that it was his understanding that each operation had basically the same characters involved, and Colonel Rowe named two other individuals involved with Edwin Wilson. Colonel Rowe named Robert Gates and William J. Casey as officials who had been named in the documentation he would acquire prior to our scheduled meeting in June 1980

81. On 7 March 1980, after my conversation with Colonel Rowe, I made [some] inquiries through Paul Neri and Pentagon contacts and was informed that David Kimche had ties with the Israeli Intelligence Agency known as 'The Mossad'. I also asked that I be provided a photograph, if any existed, of David Kimche. I requested such a photograph to determine if Mr Kimche was the unidentified male Israeli national who met the aircraft flying into Albrook Air Station during Operation WATCHTOWER. In addition, I sought whatever photographs existed on those who were known associates of David Kimche for the same reason.

82. During March 1980 I received three photographs from Army Intelligence contacts at the Pentagon. Amongst the three photographs were two individuals I recognized. David Kimche's photograph had been shown to me by a friend, Col. Robert Bayard, shortly prior to his murder in Atlanta, Georgia, in 1977. According to Bayard, Kimche was due to meet with him later. Shortly thereafter, I was informed through the normal lines of communication that Col. Bayard was murdered. As of this date his murder remains unsolved. The photograph of Kimche that Colonel Bayard had produced appeared to be a surveillance photo. There is no doubt that Kimche was the person Bayard named as being in the photograph. According to Colonel Bayard, Kimche was due to meet with him to discuss a matter that related to Col. Bayard's previous duty in the U.S. Army and assignment in the CIA.

83. The second individual I recognized from the three photographs I received, was listed as Michael Harari. I was informed that Michael Harari is listed as a senior Mossad agent. Harari was the unidentified male Israeli national that met the aircraft which flew into Albrook Air Station during Operation WATCHTOWER. He was the one who gave Edwin Wilson two briefcases full of U.S. currency in various denominations. The briefcases were given to Edwin Wilson at the end of the operation in February and March 1976. It is my understanding from Pentagon contacts, that Harari's activities in Latin America are well known, including his drug trafficking endeavors. I was also informed from those same contacts that the Pentagon, on the orders of several Washington VIPs, have gone to great lengths to keep the activities of Harari a secret. I have begun preparations to meet with David Kimche or Michael Harari while in Europe on annual NATO exercises. I intend to verify that Harari was the individual who gave Edwin Wilson the briefcases while at Albrook Air Station during Operation WATCHTOWER.

84. I was informed from Pentagon contacts, off the record, that CIA Director Stansfield Turner and former CIA Director George Bush are among the VIPs that shield Harari from public scrutiny. Those Pentagon contacts further indicated to me their knowledge that Operation WATCHTOWER was implemented and of my involvement in that operation. This was the first time that U.S. military authorities confirmed to me that the Operation occurred and gave their approval. I also learned that Mr Harari was a known middleman for certain matters involving the United States inside Latin America. Harari acted with the support of a large network of Mossad personnel throughout Latin America and worked mainly in the import and export of arms and drug trafficking.

85. As a further means of corroborating this affidavit, on 9 February 1979, I spoke to Colonel Rittgers concerning the release of Pvt. Tyree from Walter Reed Medical Center in Washington D.C., where he had been admitted on 5 February 1979. Colonel

Rittgers notified me that Pvt. Tyree had fully recovered from the depression, which was brought about by the murder of Mrs Elaine Tyree. Colonel Rittgers indicated that upon arrival at Ft. Devens later that day, he would interview Pvt. Tyree to determine for himself if Pvt.. Tyree felt he was in any real danger.

86. I also spoke to Captain Gruden who was then the Commanding Officer of the 409th Army Security Agency Company, based in Augsberg, Germany. The telephone call was brief and I inquired into what information PFC Tina Gregory might be expected to give in support of Pvt. Tyree's trial defense. The surveillance of the civilian court house in the early stages of the criminal proceedings against Pvt. Tyree indicated PFC Gregory could have knowledge about Operation WATCHTOWER since PFC Gregory and Mrs Elaine Tyree were very close friends. I was not able to learn much from Captain Gruden who was leaving his office when I called. In order not to attract attention to the value of the information PFC Gregory may or may not have, I passed the entire phone call off as my being interested about the fate of Pvt. Tyree who was under my command.

Signed under the pains and penalties of perjury on this 11th day of March 1980. Edward P. Cutolo Colonel Infantry Commanding'. [Since deceased].

• • •

THE AFFIDAVIT OF THE LATE US ARMY COLONEL EDWIN WILSON*

Edwin Wilson, a retired US Army Colonel who - like so many others involved in the nexus of operations generically known as Iran-Contra, died under mysterious circumstances (in November 1996) - certified in his own Affidavit, parts of which have been made available to this Author, that 'Mr Tyree had been decorated in relation to the classified operations he participated in. Following the participation of Mr Tyree in the WATCHTOWER operation, he was called upon to serve his country in a variety of classified operations in Latin America, Africa and Pakistan. Our investigation [conducted by Colonel Wilson as an Army Military Intelligence (MI) officer into the William Tyree case - Ed.] found that these subsequent operations came under the general project referred to as SANDMAN. SANDMAN was a project of the United States Central Intelligence Agency (CIA). SANDMAN also involved soldiers of the United States military. The information about SANDMAN is limited. SANDMAN exclusively dealt with so-called "wet operations" (assassinations) and Mr Tyree was involved in several assassinations that were verified by Special Forces soldiers we interviewed. This resulted in Mr Tyree receiving a variety of decorations, which the US Army refuses to admit were ever awarded to Mr Tyree'. The late Colonel Wilson's Affidavit also revealed that Wilson had 'gone back to source', i.e. had interviewed William Colby: 'Ironically during conversations I had with Mr Colby, I learned that he had personally requested and attained [that] a waiver be given to soldiers involved in WATCHTOWER and SANDMAN. One of those soldiers was Mr Tyree. From my involvement in the CIA Program MK-ULTRA' - the true meaning of which acronym Colonel Wilson now divulged - 'Manufacturing Killers Utilizing Lethal Tradecraft Requiring Assassination, I was aware that waivers could be given in regards [sic] to meritorious action during the course of intelligence related operations'.

---

*The Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, November 1987 [House Report # 100-433/Senate Report #100-216] states, in Chapter 21, on page 327, that General Richard Secord, overall controller of 'the Enterprise... the group of offshore companies that carried out the Iran and Contra operations', was introduced to Edwin Wilson, a former [sic!] CIA officer who had become enormously successful in international business dealings'. Note 18 appended on page 329 of the Report and referring to this statement adds: The principal source of Wilson's wealth turned out to be arms deals. During 1983, Wilson was convicted of conspiring to sell arms and explosives to Libya as well as of conspiring to murder the Federal Prosecutor and six witnesses in his trial' [information based upon reports in The Washington Post, 14th March 1983, page A17; and the same newspaper, 10th January 1984, page A4].

Executive Order 12333 was signed by President Reagan almost as soon as he had settled in at the White House in 1981. The inspiration for this crucial Executive Order has been exposed in a lawsuit brought (unsuccessfully, as of 2006) by the aforementioned Green Beret William Tyree (the subject of the foregoing Affidavit sworn by the late Colonel Cutolo) who had languished in jail for 23 years (by the summer of 2006) for a crime he did not commit (the murder of his wife Elaine, who kept a diary in which details of CIA and DIA drug-running connections were described) and who is the main subject, as indicated, of the preceding Affidavit by Colonel Edward P. Cutolo.

The American investigative author Rodney Stich has explained the context of this Affidavit in his book Defrauding America[35]: The CIA utilized the Army Intelligence Agency in Operation WATCHTOWER, which began in the mid-1970s. US Colonel A. J. Baker was ordered to oversee part of Operation WATCHTOWER and turned the operation over to Colonel Edward P. Cutolo, who also commanded the 10th Special Forces based at Fort Devens, Massachusetts'.

Lawsuits are typically a source of revelations and exposures of criminal intelligence operations in the United States: by contrast, in Britain, detailed information about intelligence criminalism as, for instance, might have been revealed in the course of the lengthy trial proceedings concerning the defunct, corrupt intelligence institution Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) that were concluded in London in 2006, tend to be less readily obtainable. That institution, a money-laundering conduit used for international organised criminal chug-running and terrorism money-laundering operations, was closed down by US intelligence - having originally, in 1972, been partially established by Bank of America, allegedly a US intelligence bank, which originally bought shares in BCCI, before selling them off quietly into the market ten years later.

Rodney Stich's observations continued:

'[Cutolo] who had been ordered by the CIA to supervise Operation WATCH-TOWER, grew increasingly concerned about its flagrant illegality and conducted an investigation in an attempt to bring it to a halt.... Fearing that he might be killed because of the investigation, he prepared a fifteen-page single-spaced Affidavit dated March 11, 1980 [actually, 8th - Ed.] describing the CIA drug-trafficking and other activities.... Cutolo was [duly, as he had anticipated - Ed.] killed, as were several other people working with him to expose the drug-trafficking operations.... The Affidavit exposed the installation and operation of the radio beacon towers [for the guidance of aircraft bringing in drugs] and several of the drug flights in which he participated'.

'The Cutolo Affidavit described the killing of an Army servicewoman, Mrs Elaine Tyree, who had knowledge of Operation WATCHTOWER which she described in her diary. To shift attention from the actual killer and his connection to the ongoing drug operation, the military charged [Elaine] Tyree's husband with the killing. "It was too risky to allow a military court to review the charges against Pvt. Tyree", read the Affidavit'. Rodney Stitch's explanatory narrative about this Illuminati murder continued: 'At the first military hearing, the presiding judge found no reason to bind Tyree's husband over for trial for the murder of his wife. This decision risked further investigation and possible exposure of the corrupt operation. Army pressure caused the county prosecutor to indict the husband for murdering his wife even though the Army knew [that] the actual killer was someone else. [False witness and the perversion of justice - Ed.]. The Cutolo Affidavit stated: "On 29 February 1980, Pvt. Tyree was convicted of murder and will spend the duration of his life incarcerated [as has indeed so far been the case - Ed.].

I could not disseminate intelligence gathered under Operation Orwell [a surveillance operation directed against US politicians and others] to notify civilian authorities [as to] who actually killed Elaine Tyree'". Clandestine intelligence operations involving such egregious serial illegality have to be covered up by ever more desperate lies, false witness and murder. But has anyone in authority taken this on board? It is to be doubted.

WILLIAM TYREE'S WRONGFUL IMPRISONMENT LAWSUIT AND AFFIDAVIT

It is from Pvt. Tyree's own lawsuit against the CIA et al., a so far vain attempt to procure his release, that 'further and better particulars' about how the US intelligence community was self-sucked irretrievably into the sewer of Latin American drug-running, and why this happened, has been obtained. The late William Casey's own Affidavit, the text of which has been cited, locks all these revelations into place, leaving zero doubt that the CIA's penchant for drug-running has been exploited (as will be seen) by the Illuminati, which finances its operations inter alia precisely from such activity. And as this book argues and demonstrates, the Illuminati, spawned in its modern from from Germany, is a global instrument of covert German Nazi (Himmlerian) world hegemony strategy.

The Author knows for certain that American intelligence has itself been double-crossed, since, as has been explained, one of its most distinguished and effective operatives informed him specifically on 9th June 2005, in response to the Author's comment that 'these are ultimately operations of the Illuminati': 'Yes, but we didn't know that, at the time'. Given the Author's knowledge of and relationship with the source concerned, he is certain that this statement is accurate. It opens the lid on the possibility (which the Author believes to be a certainty) that rogue Illuminati forces working within and manipulating elements of the US intelligence community have systematically exploited its corruption and weaknesses in pursuit of an Illuminised agenda that diverges sharply from the interests of the United States (however misconceived in the first place) and its misled and largely innocent population.

William Tyree's lawsuit has been described by one intelligence operative turned historian as 'a work of art, a masterpiece of legal reasoning and an important historical source document'[36]. It began by questioning the legality of all Executive Orders and similar 'decrees' issued by US Presidents - which form a parallel body of 'law' promulgated independently of the Executive and Judicial Branches of the Federal Government.

All attempts to question the legality of these unilateral presidential decrees have so far failed. Tyree's lawsuit pointed out that Executive Order 12333 authorised 'the privatisation of intelligence and covert operations and permitted agencies other than the CIA to conduct 'Special Activities', thus effectively opening the door, previously closed by the National Security Act of 1947 et seq., to the White House National Security Council Staff or even private entities/assets, i.e. third party cutouts, to carry out covert operations'. Uri Dowbenko has written that 'in plain language, this means that the CIA could subcontract or "farm out" their drug-smuggling and assassinations to third party personnel and continue to enjoy their "plausible deniability", i.e., denying any knowledge or involvement with criminal activities'[37]. Permission to lie about the intelligence provenance of so-called Title 18, Section 6 US Government (intelligence) corporations was specifically provided for in the text of Executive Order 12333. But while these people flout the law all the time, they also use it to crucify those they discard.

The 101-page Complaint or lawsuit dated September 1998, claiming $63 million on behalf of his client - filed by Ray Kohlman, the lawyer who was the Attorney of Record in respect of William Casey's Affidavit, the pre-filed text of which has been cited above, and whom the Author found (in June 2005) had 'vanished' from his Massachusetts office address - states that William Tyree was falsely imprisoned in the context of the theft of diaries kept by his murdered wife Elaine, which contain evidence that would have exonerated him and exposed the false witness against him at his trial.

Tyree had married Elaine on 31st December 1977. As Uri Dowbenko explained, 'she was an avid diarist who had been keeping detailed notes on all the illegal activities she was observing'[38]. Kohlman's apparent disappearance from his Massachusetts office, is either a precaution for his own safety following his action in filing the lawsuit (Case Number 98CV11829JLT), or else indicative of the possibility that he, too, has been liquidated, 'suicided', compromised or otherwise disposed of, along with the 450+ operatives, lawyers and others whose connections with Tran-Contra' have proved their undoing or worse. The Complaint exposed not only detailed information about CIA drug-running and money-laundering operations, but also that the so-called Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) - a shadowy and seemingly unconstitutional entity which has the power to suspend the US Constitution and to usurp the power of the Executive, Legislative and Judicial Branches of the US Federal Government - was established independently of Congress, using the vast profits from CIA drug-trafficking. The lawsuit, accompanied by numerous Affidavits and appendices, named the Central Intelligence Agency, former CIA Director and President George Bush Sr., and the self-admitted official assassin D. Gene Tatum, as defendants 'in the far-reaching case involving US Government sanctioned drug smuggling, murder and cover-up'[39].

ENTER A U.S. ARMY COLONEL AND MAFIA-CONNECTED MONEY-LAUNDERER

William Tyree's Complaint and lawsuit contains first-hand details and revelations of these nefarious (Illuminati) activities, by US Army Colonel Al Carone, who, as we have seen, was identified by William Casey in his (cited) Affidavit - details which, 'corroborated with evidence from other sources, reveals a dark history of the United States that has been neglected by mainstream historians'[40] and censored by the American media, which CIA cadres have openly boasted of being under the thumb and control of the Agency[41]. Indeed the same cadres made it clear, in the course of a lecture attended by one of the Author's contacts, that the general public has no right to know 'the truth', and that the only class entitled to know what is really happening is the intelligence community. This is because the intelligence community, ignoring all legality, is engaged in organised criminal activities going far beyond its remit, which it seeks to hide from the general public, not least because many of these evil activities are designed to ensure the intelligence community's independence from its only legal source of funding - the US Congress. By developing 'off-balance sheet' financial resources such as the financial pipelines generated by hypothecation and global drug-dealing, the US intelligence community has accumulated unfettered power, which it exercises over both the Executive and Legislative Branches of Government in its own, rather than the Republic's, interests. The Tyree lawsuit cites at length from information provided by Colonel Carone -who himself died in on 7th January 1990, in Albuquerque, New Mexico, obviously of an induced CIA cancer, as his medical records stated that he perished due to 'chemical toxicity of unknown etiology'. Carone was 'a CIA paymaster and a Mafia-connected money-launderer [see William Casey's Affidavit - Ed.], who incidentally held the rank of full Colonel in Army Intelligence. As Colonel Oliver North's bagman, he also couriered large amounts of cash in and out of the country'[42]. Carone was, however, ordered to perform these and related functions directly by the Director of Central Intelligence, William Casey, himself. And Casey was, as he himself acknowledged in his Affidavit, simply continuing clandestine operations that had been in train for many years previously, and which William Colby was still running, without the knowledge of the US President, Congress or even (as he affirmed) the US intelligence community itself, many years after he had ceased himself to be DCI.

Rodney Stich, as well informed on these matters as Uri Dowbenko, elaborated in his book 'Defrauding America' that 'Carone had complex relationships'. [He] 'was a member of the Gambino [Mafia] family', although as Casey's Affidavit text revealed, he was 'co-opted' into the Gambino family, the Author suggests, for operational intelligence reasons. Carone had 'connections to other crime groups in the eastern part of the United States' and was 'a detective on the New York vice squad, a member of the military and a CIA operative'[43]- an all-round criminalist intelligence officer, in fact. Colonel Carone's evidence, incorporated in William Tyree's massive Complaint, continued:

'Once Ronald Reagan became President, his old-time friend William Casey, the head of the CIA, was able to convince him to sign Executive Order 12333 into effect... which took the CIA out of [the] covert operations business... authorized the use of private assets/entities to be used by the National Security Council to conduct covert operations including the drug [smuggling]... Allowing private assets and entities to do the dirty work meant [that] the CIA could do whatever it wanted to do, in or out of the United States...'.

Of course, the CIA has always effectively been in that position; but there is no doubt that Executive Order 12333 'essentially privatised the CIA's drug-smuggling, making the Agency even more insulated from discovery of its criminal activities'[44] - or so, for a time, it was officially assumed. 'You had National Security Council staffers that were tied right into drug-trafficking themselves, like Ollie North. Hell, his diary had everything in it. Between his diary and your wife's [Elaine's] diaries, the whole thing is blown. Totally compromised', Carone reported to Tyree[45]. This special, Mafia-linked source in whom William Casey had placed so much trust at the outset of this disastrous series of manipulated misadventures, revealed the depths to which US intelligence had sunk - only to die suddenly, like so many other Iran-Contra whistleblowers. And as Carone further informed William Tyree, he 'had delivered [drug] money to the gangs because they were on the CIA payroll under Executive Order 12333, which allowed the CIA to hire outside sources to help the CIA perform their jobs' [as Carone, with his blinkered operative's vision, saw the situation - Ed.]. 'He had delivered money to the gangs because they transported the drugs across the United States, i.e., Atlanta, Norfolk, Philadelphia, New York and Boston'. CIA/DVD drugs, that is.

Colonel Carone also fingered George Bush Sr. and Bill Clinton as CIA operatives, not that these facts are anything new: the point is that Colonel Carone's Affidavit explicitly confirmed them: 'George Bush was CIA prior to the assassination of John Kennedy in 1963' and 'the Governor of Arkansas that looked the other way at Mena, Bill Clinton, was CIA back in the late 1960s'. Mena Airport was the CIA's drug transhipment airport, to which aircraft laden with cocaine flew in undetected (the Author uses the past tense only because later information is not available), assisted by the blinding by National Security Agency and Army Security Agency personnel of US early warning satellites and radar installations (Operations SEA SPRAY and JADE BRIDGE).

Carone further informed William Tyree, according to Tyree's Affidavit, that 'he had taken money to a female named Ruth Paine in late 1956 on orders from William Casey', an OSS-CIA operative as he states in his own Affidavit. Carone said that Paine was approached by the CIA to find and recruit an individual that was expendable [and] with Communist ties and some type of anti-American background.... Carone said that when Ruth Paine found the individual, she notified her CIA contact, identified as George De Mohrenschildt, who in turn contacted his CIA supervisor, identified as George Bush. Carone said that George Bush was the same George Bush that was CIA Director [sic]. Carone said the individual located by Ruth Paine was identified as a Mr Lee Harvey Oswald. FBI records/reports filed within 14 days after the assassination of President Kennedy will reflect that Mr George Bush met with J Edgar Hoover, as Bush was trying to ascertain what the FBI might have stumbled onto by mistake in regards to the Ruth Paine-Oswald connection'. These comments allude to the alleged involvement of German 'Black'intelligence in Kennedy's assassination.

The late Colonel Carone's sworn testimony, replicated in William Tyree's Complaint, which sheds such detailed light on the consequences of William Casey's controversial decisions - all justified, as Casey's Affidavit itself reveals, by what Uri Dowbenko described (aptly, in view of what follows in Chapter 6 on the Jesuits) as 'Jesuit casuistry' - revealed that Carone 'was a paymaster for both US Military Intelligence personnel and CIA personnel when Tyree knew and worked with him. He also worked as a representative of the Bank of Credit and Commerce International [BCCI] which he stated was a bank founded by the US Intelligence Community in part to finance covert (Black) Operations worldwide without the approval of Congress'. BCCI was closed down by US intelligence - after the bank's nefarious criminalist intelligence activities began to be exposed. Immediately ahead of its closure, the bank actually possessed assets of $17.0 billion, and liabilities of some $9.0 billion. Hence it was more than just solvent: it was cash-rich. The excess funds were embezzled or diverted by US intelligence.

'He (Colonel Al Carone) was authorized to withdraw funds from First American Bancshares (a.k.a. BCCI) account #2843900, which he stated was a 'Black Operations' fund unknown to the US Congress at the time' - consistently with Casey's Affidavit statement Carone elaborated that he was the middleman between certain CIA factions and certain Mafia families that operated illegal enterprises in New York City. Carone told the Plaintiff [Tyree] that the CIA used BCCI, BNL (Banca Nazionale del Lavoro), BCP and Intermaritime Bank to launder money for Black Operations worldwide and for the Mafia in New York City'.

Note the interesting reference to 'certain CIA factions', which reconfirms that the CIA is riven by internal frictions, rivalries, tensions and perverse loyalties to certain 'competing' 'barons' such as George Bush Sr., Hillary Clinton and Al Gore, who, in turn, may be beholden to foreign powers and elements of their intelligence services.

William Tyree's lawsuit then filled in these further dots:

'Colonel Carone said [that] the military drug trafficking Operation WATCHTOW-ER fit[ted] in the picture in the following fashion. Between 1971 and 1972 [sic], BCCI was conceived and born primarily as a bank for the US Intelligence Community to go around Congress in funding so-called 'Black Operations'. In December 1975, February-March 1976, Operation WATCHTOWER took place [sic] that brought over 100 military-style plane loads of cocaine out of Colombia into Albrook Air Station in Panama. In 1976, Arkansas businessman Jackson Stephens and Indonesian businessman Mochtar

Riady formed Stephens Financial Ltd in Hong Kong which led to a meeting of Stephens and Riady with members of the BCCI' [sic].

'In 1977, Jackson Stephens invited BCCI into America and helped BCCI bring about the purchase of First American Bancshares, operated by Clark Clifford and Robert Airman.... Jackson Stephens and Mochtar Riady were in business together and paid off politicians from Arkansas to look the other way and ignore the CIA cocaine operation at Mena, Arkansas. The Lippo Group, i.e. Mochtar Riady, had been involved with Bill Clinton since Clinton was Governor in Arkansas. Stephens, Riady and the CIA are in bed together. They own a lot of people. They have a lot of money. They get things done. I answer to Stephens indirectly. I answer to his money is who I answer to [sic], and so does everyone else at the CIA that wants to get things done where Stephens has influence'.

William Tyree's lawsuit, which was already 11 years old when this book was being finalised, further alleged that the criminalised intelligence thugocracy, or Illuminati mob, that have hijacked the US Government, has established its own parallel structures for overthrowing the US Constitution and imposing a coercive state.

With the assistance of the 9/11 'Reichstag Fire' provocation, the later establishment of the Department of Homeland Security, or Ministry of State Security, together with the passage of the original post-9/11 Patriot Act USA and subsequent legislation - including the National Intelligence Reform Act signed into law by President Bush Jr. on 17th December 2004 - a much denser superstructure of oppressive mechanisms and legislation has been grafted onto the original framework installed by elements of the US intelligence community to enable the Constitution to be scrapped, and the intelligence cadres that control the Government to seize absolute power, dispensing with the aggravation of constantly having to report to Congress. The obscenely delayed response to the Hurricane Katrina disaster in New Orleans and along the Gulf Coast, and the subsequent spin to the effect that local authorities are unable to handle disasters so that national 'solutions' are needed, was intended to provide the basis for a further 'giant leap forward' - as the 'coup d'etat by instalments', modelled on the Hitlerian precedent, forged ahead with apparent impunity. The breaches in the levees occurred several hours after the hurricane had vanished, suggesting prepositioned explosives; Amtrak and Greyhound Buses refused to assist in evacuations, suggesting that they were ordered not to participate; the so-called Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA), now absorbed within the Department of Homeland Security, did nothing significant to assist the endangered population, until they graciously despatched a consignment of 25,000 body bags to the stricken area on 8th September; and the President at first praised the 'incompetent' Michael Brown, head of FEMA, before he was ordered a week later to return to Washington in disgrace. Rations diverted from the stocks of the British military, on being received in the United States, were commandeered by arrogant officials on the ground that they contained beef which had to be tested for contamination. Whereas the whole world was waiting to see pictures of relief being distributed to the traumatised residual population, all we saw was Nazi-style swat teams descending the escalator in the New Orleans Convention Center, and military convoys, ships (jamming electronic communications) and armed men descending on the place as though on some kind of macho 'high'.

Immediately following the commencement of hostilities in Iraq in March 2003, President George W Bush was seen on the White House video punching his hands into the air and exclaiming 'feels good, feels good' [see Addendum 4, page 681]. None of this 'feels' at all good to outside observers, let alone to unbrainwashed Americans.

As indicated, the Tyree Complaint referred specifically to the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA). The lawsuit alleged that FEMA, created by Executive Order, is illegitimate not simply because all Executive Orders may be illegal, but also 'since Congress had to approve FEMA for two specific reasons:

(1) FEMA is a vaguely written Executive Branch-created agency that has the power to suspend the US Constitution and put the Legislative and Judicial Branches of Government out of work [evidently Michael Brown was bewildered by the powers he could wield, or else a blazing row took place behind the scenes during the New Orleans fiasco, as a consequence of which he was made to look helpless - Ed.]

(2) FEMA is an Executive Branch creation that clearly affects all three branches of Government capable of silencing the voice of the people (i.e., Legislative) and the legal redress of the people (i.e., Judiciary)'.

FEMA: A COVERT MILITARY ENTITY FUNDED BY DRUG MONEY

According to the lawsuit, FEMA was initially funded by laundered drug money. The Plaintiff alleges that the defendants CIA and George Bush did intentionally engage in the complained-of conduct herein to conceal... the origins of FEMA, and that profits from drug trafficking by the CIA were used in some part to originally fund FEMA and the drafting of the FEMA infrastructure'. William Tyree's Complaint further stated that Colonel Carone had told him (the Plaintiff) that 'Colonel Ollie North worked on developing a plan known as FEMA, which would in an ill-defined national emergency, allow the US Military to take control of the United States to ensure national security' and that Colonel Carone had said that 'FEMA originally stood for "Federal Emergency Military Action" (i.e. Martial Law) but was retitled "Federal Emergency Management Agency" because it would be better received by the people of the United States' (a presentational and purely cosmetic adjustment). This would explain why little aid arrived in New Orleans (2005) for a week and why all we saw on TV were the images of military vehicles and personnel, and swat teams. Tyree's Affidavit elaborated separately that the late Colonel Carone had also claimed that 'he took drug profits that were clean and laundered in 1982-1984 to the following: NSC (National Security Council)' -Colonel Oliver North, who used the funds to create and develop FEMA' [sic].

So FEMA, at the epicentre of the post-Katrina storm in the United States, was established by CIA drug money. That figures. There are now 600-800 prison camps in the United States, with a particularly large such establishment in Alaska (see the partial list in Appendix 2 to Chapter 8, page 612). Until the third quarter of 2005, these camps, which were operated or to be operated by FEMA, were all staffed and even surrounded by full-time guards, but held few inmates, although some of them contained large numbers of prisoners. Under arrangements prevailing right through the New Orleans disaster phase (which Vice-President Richard Cheney called 'an exercise', when he said on 10th September 2005 that 'we are on top of this exercise' - meaning, that from the perspective of the coup d'etat by instalments, all was going according to plan), the camps were to be activated under Martial Law conditions. Since Martial Law was indeed declared, applicable to certain areas, following Hurricane Katrina 'exercise', some FEMA camps were activated accordingly. The significance of Mr Cheney's observation becomes evident in this context. So far as he and the hidden Illuminati controllers who have hijacked the US Government are concerned, the New Orleans catastrophe had tested the readiness of the concentration camp apparat which FEMA exists to operate. The name of this extremely sinister organisation, now incorporated under the control of the Department of Homeland Security (US Ministry of State Security), is deliberately misleading, as has been explained.

A large number of Presidential Executive Orders, now associated with FEMA, have been accumulated over three decades, which would enable the President of the United States to suspend the Constitution and the Bill of Rights at will. The main Executive Orders concerned are listed on page 605. One question, hard to answer at the time this book was being finalised, has been: what has interfered with the timetable of the coup d'etat by instalments? Why have there been so many instalments to date? What has been preventing the Illuminati from consolidating their gains and 'going all the way'? It is not as though the Executive Branch lacks the necessary powers to finalise the transformation of the United States into the Fourth Reich, as is intended, overnight. For instance, the Federal Government can take over all modes of transport and the control of highways, seaports and airports, can seize full control of the communications media, and can seize all electrical power, gas, petroleum, fuels and minerals. The authorities can grab all means of transportation, including personal cars, trucks or vehicles, and may, by Executive Order, impose total control over all highways, seaports and waterways. They can take over all food resources and farms and can mobilise civilians into work brigades under official supervision (Communist direction of labour). The Government can also immediately assume control over all health, welfare and education functions, while the Postmaster General is designated to operate a national registration system for all persons in the United States. Another Executive Order allows the Government to take over all US airports and aircraft, including commercial planes. The Housing and Finance Authority can, under Executive Order powers, relocate communities, build new housing with public funds, designate areas to be abandoned, and establish new locations for populations. The Government can take over all railroads, inland waterways and public storage facilities, while a separate Order specifies the responsibilities of the Office of Emergency Planning and gives authorisation for all Executive Orders to be put into effect simultaneously at times of increased international tension and economic or financial crisis. There is a special Order which allocates authority to the Department of Justice to enforce the plans set out in Executive Orders, to institute industrial support, to establish judicial and legislative liaison, to control all aliens, to operate penal and correctional institutions (the US GULAG), and to advise and assist the President in respect of these powers; and critical emergency preparedness functions are assigned to Federal Departments and agencies, with one Order consolidating 21 operative Executive Orders issued over a 15-year period.

And in a little-reported development, the International Emergency Economic Powers Act, which enables the US President to seize the property of a foreign country or national, and has been implemented in respect of Iranian, Cuban, Libyan, North Korean and Iraqi assets, has since 1979 been partly the responsibility of FEMA: in that year, these foreign asset seizure powers were transferred to FEMA in the course of a sweeping consolidation, although they have in practice been exercised by the Treasury.

So, the CIA-controlled pipeline of drug money is disgorging its contents, in part, into the bank accounts of the corporations that are engaged in the construction or upgrading of the US concentration camps, or have been so engaged in the recent past.

And what physical assets are historically associated with concentration camps? Obviously, death trains. An updated catalogue of the concentration camps - which are replicated in Canada, where virtually all military bases, especially those located north of the 50th parallel, are set up with concentration camps - is provided, as noted, on page 612. Details of what is known (in the public domain) of the US death and population transportation trains, all modelled on the Nazi precedent, are provided on page 602 et seq.. An Amtrak railcar repair facility in Marion County, Indianapolis, is reliably reported to have 3-4-inch gas mains leading to large furnaces (crematoria), helicopter landing pads, railheads for prisoners, Red/Blue/Green zones for the classification and processing of the incoming human beings, one-way turnstiles, barracks, towers, high fences topped with razor (barbed) wire, and an adjacent refrigeration plant facility for the bodies pending cremation. Separately, the Author was informed in September 2005 that a television film had been shown in Indiana, in which 21 local concentration camp facilities were identified, and in which scenes of people being forced into delousing and disinfecting areas were shown. Thereafter, the video stopped, with no explanation. The Author's source indicated that the reason the film stopped with the disinfecting operation was that, thereafter, the lives of the people in the film came to an abrupt end. It was not clear whether this represented an enactment, or was 'for real'. The 'mystery of iniquity' again.

The Author suspects, as do several of his advisers, that the US coup d'etat by instalments is far further advanced than is generally realised, and that it was, in the second half of 2006, by no means out of the question that 'Final Solution' operations were being reconsidered. A similar conclusion could be drawn from the unknown fate of large numbers of the poor Blacks who were were forcibly removed from New Orleans, in what appeared to be an outbreak of ethnic cleansing (sorry, Mr Cheney, it was an 'exercise').

Ghastly and shocking though these revelations are bound to be to any sane person, there is a great deal more evidence that the criminalisation of the US Government structures, consequent upon the Government having been hijacked by the Illuminati, may be almost beyond recall. As one US intelligence operative put it to one of the Author's US friends, 'they are out of the gate and can't go back'. But they can be fatally tripped up.

TELL-TALE CLUE OF ILLUMINATI PROVENANCE OF THE U.S. 'GULAG'

We are now able to link the Illuminati directly with FEMA and the concentration camps and death trains infrastructure. The highest 'Degree' of the sect of the Illuminati is entitled 'Rex'. This level of 'Illumination' represents the apex of the 'Greater Mysteries', and is superior to the rank or 'Degree' of 'Magus' [see Chapter 7 on the Illuminati: e.g., Figure 78, page 497]. Within the complex FEMA nexus of regulations and schemes is the 'Rex-84' Program, ostensibly established in part to exert control over any 'mass influx' of illegal aliens across the Mexican/US border. Under this plan, such hoardes would be rounded up and held in detention (= concentration) camps. It was under 'Rex-84' that the policy of closing down US military bases and converting many of them into concentration camps was initiated. Two sub-operations that are associated with 'Rex-84'are Operation Cable Splicer and Operation Garden Plot, which were to be implemented once the 'Rex-84' Program had been initiated for its original purpose (as probably occurred in the context of the New Orleans atrocity, but may have been happening earlier, as suggested above). Cable Splicer is a plan to procure the 'orderly takeover' of State and local governments by the Federal Government. FEMA was intended to be the executive arm of the planned US Nazi-style Police State, with a brief to head up all operations; but, as indicated, FEMA itself was subsumed within the Department of Homeland Security under George Bush II: so that, as the New Orleans event may have revealed, lines of communication may have become atrophied or severely compromised. At all events, the concentration (sorry, 'detention') camps have railroad facilities as well as roads leading to and from the detention infrastructures, while many also have an airport close at hand. Most of the concentration camps can house a population of 20,000 prisoners, with the largest concentration camp being based outside Fairbanks, Alaska. This is a massive 'mental health' facility, modelled along Himmlerian lines (but on a far larger scale), which is equipped to hold approximately 2 million people. Many of the camps are even referred to locally as 'Rex-84' camps - an example being a camp at Oakdale, 90 miles east of San Francisco, CA, which is capable of holding 20,000 people. While the majority of the US concentration camps were devoid of inmates as late as the first quarter of 2006, a number of camps were known to be heavily populated - an example being a renovated internment camp at El Reno, on Route 66, Colorado, which holds 12,000 inmates 'as we speak'. Camps holding ex-New Orleans residents were also said to be extensively in use.

Before continuing, it is appropriate to review the dynamic of the intended Fourth Reich, currently being haltingly constructed on the planned ruins of the United States, which appears to be well on track towards becoming the worst abomination in world history. A Government which, like that of the United States, has been so comprehensively compromised that its intelligence community is up to its neck in criminal operations, cooperative operations with the Mafia, and above all, drug-trafficking and distribution activities - and associated with which powerful individuals have enriched themselves, accumulating vast hidden financial power, including licence to order the liquidation, framing, incarceration, discrediting, or beating up of 'enemies', recalcitrant journalists, whistleblowers and others who stand up to their serial thuggery - will inevitably reach a 'tipping point' beyond which recovery from such institutionalised corruption becomes impossible. This is happening in the United Kingdom, as is evident from the Author's detailed observations, published in International Currency Review, of the institutionalised looting that is characteristic of the European Commission and its related structures, which has spread its corrupt way of life to all the EU 'Member States'.

HOW CRIMINALISM LEADS INEVITABLY TO AUTHORITARIANISM

The point is that it is though criminalisation - especially the universalisation of drug-trafficking and distribution, with its accompanying scourge of comprehensive financial corruption, and the accompanying decadence with which these evils are associated - that the safeguards against what is happening before our eyes in the United States are challenged, eroded, and finally openly dismantled, to the bored indifference of the majority of the (disenfranchised) electorate, with its one-track 'baseball game' mentality. It was disconcerting for the Author to be informed by a Belgian, long resident in the United States and married to an American, that 'the American people will just love the coming dictatorship. They are ideal fodder for this. In the United States, if you cross someone, you are quite likely to have your tires slashed, or to be subjected to other forms of wanton harassment, since these people cannot bear to be contradicted or told what they don't want to hear'. Of course, this is far from the mentality of the millions of Americans who understand, to a greater or a lesser extent, what lies in store, and who, in many cases, devote a considerable part of their waking hours to trying to alert their fellow citizens to what awaits them. But the assessment does not, unfortunately, diverge from the Author's own somewhat bitter experience.

Which takes us straight back to the Special Group, mentioned earlier, that functions 'below' the National Security Council but is actually (in a rather Leninist twist) superior to the NSC - the secret operations of which are not necessarily known even to the President of the United States, let alone to the US Congress. These glimpses of serial Hluminati criminalist abominations -just a selection from a colossal menu which would require several large volumes to describe - were originally justified, as we have seen, on the spurious, false and nonsensically cynical basis that it made perfect sense to sell drugs to Americans, in order to fight Communism. What this knowledge reveals to us is with what diabolical subtlety the Illuminati leveraged and exploited the dialectic of the Communist 'threat'. The late DCI, William Casey, motivated by the precedent established by William Colby, and by his intelligence associates of German background, was possibly naive enough to fall for the bait. Had he been in a position to apply appropriate standards, and had he seen through the deception, Casey would have ordered the clandestine drug operations in Latin America to be closed down.

As we shall see, the chief organiser of the cartels was actually a German agent working deep within the corrupted American intelligence structures, named Carlos Lehder. While, therefore, on the surface, with the benefit of intelligence divulged in the following pages, it would appear that the cartels were established by elements of the deeply corrupted US intelligence structures, the actualite was that a covert Nazi - working, the Author suspects, for the DVD, based at Dachau - was primarily instrumental, under higher alleged German assets (such as, allegedly George H. W. Bush Sr. and his henchman, Jim Baker), in setting up the Latin American cartels. Assuming this to be broadly correct, the DVD was engaged, together with its co-conspirators in Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) which works through the Americas Department of the Cuban Communist Party, in ensuring the long-term subversion of the United States and the terminal corruption of US intelligence and of the banking system. German and Soviet covert intelligence work together, representing the two blades of one operational pair of scissors [see page 629].

This leaves currently unresolved the allegiance of William Colby, who was responsible for facilitating the discrediting (unsuccessfully) of the genuine Soviet defector, Anatoliy Golitsyn, who revealed, in detail, the Soviet long-range revolutionary subversion strategy in his books 'New Lies for Old' and ''The Perestroika Deception'. Was he, like Edward Heath, Geoffrey Rippon, Roy Jenkins and the Dulles Brothers, a long-term German Abwehr/DVD agent? When Carlos Lehder was suddenly released and relocated not to Colombia, but to Germany, in 2000 [see page 156], his release from jail and relocation were arranged by former President Bush Sr.'s factotum, Jim Baker.

As has been seen, William Casey's rationale (Jesuit casuistry) was based upon the egregious lie that drug users consume toxic substances out of choice - whereas, after having succumbed to the initial temptation, their addiction drives their demand, which is met by supply: so that if the supply is absent in the first place, the initial temptation is not present, and the subsequent artificial demand cannot arise.

Ignoring the reality that drugs differ from all other commodities in that their consumption is driven by supply, not demand (a typically Satanic inversion), has led the United States, and much of the rest of the world, to the verge of a millennial crisis not only of governance, but also of modern society. The outcome is spreading lawlessness and the wholesale corruption of the collaborating international banking system. The end-result, that we are witnessing today, is the collapse of the Rule of Law.

HOW THE DIALECTIC MISLED EVEN THE UNITED STATES' TOP SPIES

The disturbing revelation so far is that the United States' top intelligence officers were so preoccupied with their opposition to Soviet Communism, that they lacked any understanding of the dialectical reality that the Cold War masked the lack of any discontinuity of long-range pan-German strategy. The Nazi Fifth Column inside the CIA specialised in exploiting the menace of Communism to disguise DVD strategy, predicting, for instance, a large Communist buildup in Latin America in the early 1970s. Operation WATCHTOWER was initiated to preposition drugs in Panama/Central America from South America, ostensibly to fund covert actions against the predicted Communist threat. The prediction became reality, and the flow of cocaine into the United States increased as a result of the prediction. Since the Vietnam experience, policymakers knew that it would be useless asking Congress to finance covert action in Latin America. An avenue needed to be established that took the CIA out of the picture, because the CIA was already busy fending off allegations of trafficking drugs out of Southeast Asia and Europe; and the CIA needed to avoid being seen to be tied into the Latin American cocaine trade. Operation WATCHTOWER generated vast quantities of cocaine which was meant to be sold to finance anti-Communist operations in Latin America because Congress had shut down general funding of anti-Communist activities in that region. Likewise, heroin trafficking had been undertaken by the CIA in Southeast Asia on the pretext of 'fighting Communism'. Nor did US intelligence, both military and 'civilian', develop and apply this diabolical strategy in any way half-heartedly - treating, and continuing to deal with, the American people with ruthless contempt. On the contrary, it is American intelligence - influenced and, as will be shown, led by German penetration agents - which, acting on the basis of the same instructions that were adopted by William Casey, was responsible for establishing the Colombian drug cartels, which the international general public has all along assumed to have been home-grown, self-standing organised criminal networks. Exposure of this abomination has, thanks to the CIA's control of the American media, and the fecklessness of elements of its British counterpart, been suppressed. Perhaps it was this particular abomination to which President George H. W Bush Sr. is reported to have referred when he made the apocryphal comment that 'if the American people knew what we have done, they would string us all up on lamp posts'. As the Author has observed elsewhere, stock market punters might be well advised to buy shares in their local street furniture manufacturer, as an unprecedented number of lamp posts will be needed in any overdue settling of scores with the mobsters who, under cover of their intelligence community and Illuminati backgrounds, have long since effectively torn up the American Constitution, destroyed the Rule of Law, and nullified the Bill of Rights.

Figure27: The late CIA DCI, William Colby, who was found drowned following a 'canoeing accident' in 1996, directed two super-secret drug operations in Latin America which have gravely destabilised the Republic.

On 17th April 2004, the Author, who was speaking by telephone from England to a contact in the United States, observed in a decisive manner that the staffs of US official structures that were engaged in drug-trafficking needed to be 'string up from lamp posts' - a remark intended to evoke the admission attributed to George Bush Sr.. The telephone line went dead. A few days earlier, the Author had been speaking transatlantically with another American friend on the same subject, commenting forcefully that one thing was certain: all who push drugs are engaged in creating hell on earth not least for their addict victims, and they themselves will all go to hell itself.

You guessed correctly. The transatlantic telephone connection went dead again. Obviously, the Dark Forces listening to the Author's telephone conversations don't like being reminded that they themselves are locked inside the fast train to hell.

THE C.I.A. HAS HISTORICALLY ALWAYS 'JUSTIFIED' ITS DRUG OPERATIONS

But of course, there has always been a 'rational' alibi to cover US intelligence drug-running operations. CIA criminalist operations proliferated up to 50 years ago in the shadow of the overt Cold War. By the 1980s, the CIA and its controlled cadres were engaged in a convoluted hidden drug-trafficking programme involving high-ranking La Cosa Nostra figures, the Gambino crime family, the Japanese Yakuza - with various associated cabals engaged in political intrigue at both the State and national levels - espionage, weapons technologies including trafficking in biotoxins such as the pathogen which produces mad cow disease (illuminating why the British authorities 'needed' to 'sacrifice' cattle some years ago on such a colossal scale, as they may have been combating 'blowback' against British intelligence), drug trafficking, money laundering and of course murder-for-hire. The CIA is the covert operations division of the US Executive Branch's foreign policy strategists, and has been engaged in multiple terrorist activities over the years: in fact, like the KGB, it has been described as a terrorist organisation.

Such abominable abuses of secret power were and remain possible not least thanks to the National Security Act of 1947 et seq., which can very accurately be described in combination as providing US intelligence, like its covert Soviet and Chinese counterparts, with carte blanche to perpetrate criminal operations and to rampage around the world implementing scams against foreign governments and selected individual targets, with impunity. In other words, US intelligence is covered by a 'crooks' charter' -supplemented by the geomasonic culture of omerta rooted in oaths taken by Masons at several stages of their progressive initiations - which end by not even excluding treason and murder from the obligation upon members of 'The Brotherhood' to protect each other against exposure of their crimes, including High Crimes and Misdemeanours involving the highest office-holders.

So incestuously intertwined have these geopolitical underworld covert criminalist intelligence operations become that it has even been known for 'rival' intelligence agencies to run drug rings within their competitors' intelligence communities. The deep penetration operations masterminded by Carlos Lehder appear to have been a case in point. Another such example of this concerns an Israeli intelligence officer known as Al Holbert, who in due course rang alarm bells by investigators who had not been aware of this evil man's background. Al Holbert was allegedly the king-pin behind a huge drug-running organisation functioning within the CIA called 'The Company' (not to be confused with the identical familiar term for the CIA).

Since interpenetration of 'rival' national (and domestic) intelligence agencies is the 'name of the game', it is hardly surprising that a corollary must be interpenetration of drug operations within the targeted intelligence communities. Since, by descending into the drug-trafficking gutter, intelligence communities compromise themselves irreparably, penetration is soon transformed, via 'rivalry', into (Satanic) cooperation.

ANOTHER 'SMOKING GUN' AFFIDAVIT IN WHICH THE U.S. GOVERNMENT'S CRIMINALITY IS EXPOSED

In the United States, insights into the cesspit of corruption that has engulfed the US structures as a consequence of the failure of the CIA to use a long spoon prior to supping with the Devil in its Illuminati incarnation, are frequently obtainable from open court records. The following Affidavit was distributed on 5th March 2005 by the activist Stew Webb on behalf of the wronged FBI Special Agent Richard Taus. It sheds further light on the culture of 'omerta' characteristic of gangland, of which elements of the US Federal Government are today so notoriously an extension. This gangland holds large numbers of political prisoners - intelligence officers and agents who have have refused to go along with the organised criminal behaviour of their Government.

AFFIDAVIT OF RICHARD M. TAUS

'I, Richard M. Taus, declare and state: I am a former Special Agent for the Federal Bureau of Investigation assigned to the New York Field Office and the Brooklyn-Queens Metropolitan Resident Agency from July 1978 to November 1988. I was assigned to both the Foreign Counter-intelligence Division and the Criminal Division.

During this period, my investigations into these matters revealed criminal activities and operations which I reported and documented to my superiors in the FBI, as follows:

- The involvement of officials, agents and operatives of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) with organized crime members and drug-trafficking activities. And the participation of members of the CIA who engaged in the looting of the Savings and Loan (Thrift) Industries, financial scams and fraudulent securities transactions.
- The involvement of people from the National Security Agency Staff and Council and the White House in criminal activities associated with funding the acquisition of military supplies and equipment, arms and ammunition, which were referred to as the Iran-Contra Arms Initiative, known as Irangate, and the Iraqi scandal (Iraqgate).
- Associations between known and suspected members of the Mafia, and CIA agents in conducting drug-trafficking activities and financial frauds.

I was ordered by my supervisors in the FBI to halt these investigations, destroy my written reports, terminate my informants and make no reference to these criminal and subversive activities implicating high-ranking Government officials, politicians, Mafia and business leaders who controlled and manipulated Government agencies and operations.

Without any support from my superiors at the FBI New York Field Office, I then sent a letter describing what I had discovered in my official status as an FBI Special Agent, to the FBI Director, William Sessions, and this was ignored. I proceeded to write [to] Congressional officials, among them Senators Arlan Spector, Alfonse D'Amato, John Kerry and Congressman Norman Lent, Charles Schumer, and many others who were on both the Senate and House Intelligence Oversight Committees. None of the above officials or representatives provided any support or assistance in exposing the CIA-White House corruption and the obstruction of justice tactics by my FBI superiors.

My sole purpose in preparing this Affidavit, to be used by the former FBI Special Agent-In-Charge of the Los Angeles Field Office, SAC Ted Gunderson*, is to bring to justice the criminal and subversive activities that I and other Government agents and operatives have discovered during our official and Government-related duties.

I declare and affirm under penalty of perjury that these statements are true to the best of my knowledge and belief. Executed this 13th day of August 1997, in the County of Clinton, State of New York. Richard M. Taus'. ■

*The source, Stew Webb, stated on 5th March 2005: This is being released because Ted Gunderson, named in this Affidavit, has done nothing for Richard Taus', who remains in a Federal Prison. To remove operatives and agents who 'cause trouble', the Illuminati controllers are in the habit of causing their imprisonment on trumped-up charges, using false witness, or inducing lethal 'accidents'. Like the Mafia, which is an Illuminati invention.

THE COMPANY' [NO RELATION]

This organisation was initially exposed by The San Francisco Chronicle on 28th April 1982, under the heading 'STORY OF SPIES, STOLEN ARMS AND DRUGS'. It consisted of 'about 300 members, many of them former military men or ex-police officers with nearly $30 million worth of assets, including planes, ships and real estate'. The article elaborated that 'Federal drug agents said that the organization had imported billions of dollars' worth of drugs from Latin America, and was also involved in gun-running and mercenary operations'. Its specialised military equipment consisting inter alia of a TV camera for taking pictures during the hours of darkness, 1,500 rounds of small arms tracer ammunition for use in night combat, nine infrared sniperscopes, a remote-controlled helicopter, and secret components from the radar unit of a Sidewinder guided missile, which were stolen from a US Naval Weapons station in the Mojave Desert.

The San Francisco Chronicle obtained this and other related information after Mr Brian Leighton, a former Assistant US Attorney in Fresno, California, had been instrumental in facilitating the indictment of 29 members of 'The Company' in 1981. US Federal agents had reported to the Grand Jury examining the matter that the stolen equipment was going to be used to provide drug operatives with electronic equipment, with some of it being intended for trading to drug suppliers in Colombia. Among the 29 drugs and arms operatives indicted was a former US narcotics officer called Andrew 'Drew' Thornton, who was aged 40 at the time. Once again, the judicial system was having to examine a criminalist operation with nefarious intelligence connections.

On 13th September 1985, The LOS Angeles Times published a report on Thornton's death, entitled: 'FORMER NARCOTICS OFFICER PARACHUTES OUT OF PLANE, DIES WITH 77 POUNDS OF COCAINE'. The article said that Thornton had been indicted in 1981 (see above) for 'flying a plane to South America for a reputed drug ring known as The Company''.

Interviewed by The Los Angeles Times, Mr Leighton made the following understandably cynical comment: 'I'm glad his parachute didn't open. I hope he got a hell of a high out of that...'. Leighton subsequently went into private law practice.

Further public domain information concerning The Company' appeared in a now obscure book by Sally Denton called 'THE Blue Grass Conspiracy'. This book revealed that The Company's' base was located at Lexington, Kentucky, and that US prosecutors in Lexington, Fresno (Brian Leighton) and Miami had been cooperating in an operation to 'bring The Company down'. The San Francisco Chronicle noted that in January 1982, Gene Berry, a State prosecutor located in Charlotte Harbour, Florida, was shot in the face as he answered his door. Police subsequently arrested a certain Bonnie Kelly for Berry's murder. Bonnie's husband, Mike McLure Kelly (codenamed 'Gopher'), was a suspected member of 'the Company', who later pleaded guilty in the Fresno, California, case.

Significantly, the 'former' Israeli intelligence operative, more recently operating from Montreal, Ari ben-Menashe, lived for a time in Lexington.

Sources have advised this Author of the existence of a declaration by Mr William Hamilton, the inventor of the original PROMIS software (which reconciles conflicting software programs and can be used inter alia to hack into bank accounts) which contained inter alia the following statements:'... On or about April 3, 1991, I spoke by telephone with Mr Brian Leighton, an attorney in private practice in Fresno, California. He stated that during the 1980s, while serving as an assistant United States Attorney in Fresno, California, he had investigated a nationwide criminal enterprise known as 'The Company', which was engaged in illegal drug trafficking on a massive scale'.

AL HOLBERT, DOUBLE OR TRIPLE AGENT

In 1991 and 1992, coinciding with 'the changes' in the 'former' Soviet Union ('collapsible Communism'), a series of sudden violent deaths of US intelligence operatives, all connected with the 'Iran-Contra' affair (shorthand for a much broader secret nexus of off-balance-sheet intelligence operations) began. One of the very earliest victims was Alan Michael May, aged 50 - a former Northern California Field Director in Richard Nixon's Presidential campaign and the lawyer for Mr Nixon's brothers Donald and Edward (who was found dead in his San Francisco home on 19th June 1991). This was some four days after the 'Napa Sentinel' newspaper described May's role in the alleged plot by officials of the Republican Party to bribe Iranian officials to delay the release of US hostages until after President Reagan's inauguration in January 1981 (the operation known as 'The October Surprise'). Alan May was allegedly involved with a certain Al Holbert in 'the Company', described separately at the time by a concerned US intelligence source, as 'a current national security nightmare to this country'.

From such sources it has been possible to assemble certain intelligence about this Al Holbert. First, he was exceptionally interested in technology (i.e., accessing advanced US technology with a view to stealing such secrets for intelligence purposes). He had a firm grasp of physics, mathematics, chemistry and military hardware: in other words, from these multiple interests alone one could deduce that he was a military intelligence operative. Secondly, according to the US operative Mchael Riconosciuto, who knew and dealt with Holbert from 1961 to 1981, Holbert passed on secrets he obtained through his myriad contacts in the United States, to the Israelis. Thirdly, on arrival in the United States (year unspecified by the Author's source), Holbert went to work for the US Treasury in Philadelphia. A spokesperson for the Treasury confirmed that Holbert was 'involved at very high levels, giving special training'. So, is the US Treasury that criminalised?

Roconosciuto further elaborated: 'Al Holbert taught courses in interrogation techniques. He also taught touchkill techniques, you know, with the thumbs on the temples and various scary areas like that. He moved around to a lot of different (US) agencies. He got involved with the FBI and he was involved with the Drug Enforcement people'. Notwithstanding these myriad penetrations, he told Riconosciuto throughout his 15-year acquaintance that he worked for the Israelis.

However other US intelligence officers had been curious, not to say suspicious, of Holbert for a long time. When pressed about the possibility of Holbert having been a double agent, Riconosciuto replied, in the course of a debriefing:

'Well, he was with the Soviets, but he was also with the Israelis. Holbert definitely is connected with Israeli intelligence. I mean, there's no ifs and buts, or maybes... He was decorated in combat for them'.

Michael Riconosciuto travelled to Israel, where he met an official who was the Deputy Israeli Defence Minister for a number of years, in charge of defence production, a friend of Ariel Sharon. It was through this official, and a General Peratt, that Riconosciuto reconfirmed Al Holbert's position with the Israelis. Riconosciuto is on record as having told US intelligence (which he also served) that 'Holbert is definitely one of their boys. I got an admission out of General Peratt that Al Holbert was... a Trotskyite, and they knew about it; and I couldn't understand why they kept a guy like that around. I was told that I just didn't understand the ways of the world'.

This is a familiar intelligence operative put-down. In this context, what was intended to be meant here was that Riconoscuito didn't understand the dialectical method, whereby both dimensions of conflict are managed and macro-controlled by a common manipulative source, from above (cf. the 'scissors strategy': pages XXXIII and 629). However Riconosciuto knew much that was of interest to his interlocutors, including the fact that Holbert reported to one Jean-Pierre Boegner, a French operative, whose address was the extremely expensive one of 114 Champs Elysees, Paris 8ieme, France.

According to another key source, Jean Pierre Boegner reported directly to Colonel Stefan Uznanski of Ukraine, a very senior KGB (not GRU) officer. This would make sense, because although the GRU (Soviet Military Intelligence) plans and directs the Soviet dimension of the drug offensive against America and the West, the KGB handles all the financial arrangements.

Uznanski was based in Vienna and Salzburg. Boegner served time in a French jail following one of the assassination attempts on General de Gaulle. Riconosciuto eventually discovered from Holbert that he was also a Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) officer, and that he had bragged that there were (in the mid-1990s) over 35,000 GRU agents active on the North American continent. According to US operatives working with the CIA-linked Wackenhut Corporation, the actual number at that time was about 50% lower - still a colossally high and disturbing number, implying that there was no barrier to these Soviet operatives entering the United States. That is consistent with what is known about the Soviets' 'criminalism offensive' against the United States and the West, based on boasts by senior 'post'-Soviet officials that the West was being flooded with criminalists from the Soviet Union and from all over Eastern Europe. Riconosciuto added: 'You know, he's touched the Central Intelligence Agency, the Treasury Department, the US Secret Service and various local law enforcement agencies all over the country'.

SOVIET DRUG OPERATIONS CONDUCTED FROM WITHIN THE CIA

Does this outline information represent just evidence of Soviet penetration of US intelligence, or was Al Holbert at one stage essentially running 'The Company' or certain of its key operations, from within US intelligence, while at the same time serving the Israelis and the GRU? Sophisticates imply that drug and related criminalist operations are now, and have been for perhaps two or three decades, a 'free-for-all' sphere of activity in which the criminal intelligence classes of key drug-peddling countries and regions like the 'former' Soviet Union, Bulgaria, China, Germany, France, Spain, Israel and the United States collaborate, compete and are integrated with, either their own domestic or else foreign intelligence cadres - so that it has ceased to make sense to interpret these appalling developments as indicative of power struggles between nation states, since the drug and related criminal businesses have all been comprehensively internationalised. They ignore all national borders. For instance, cooperation between criminalism operatives of US and Israeli intelligence can be traced back to the assistance provided to the CIA by the (Jewish) Meyer Lansky crime syndicate from Chicago, with which the CIA was cooperating from an early stage of its existence. The Lansky Syndicate reportedly set up international drug-running operations from Southeast Asia through the CIA-linked Corsican Mafia in the Mediterranean. The resulting lucrative joint Lansky-CIA international drug racketeering operations thrived against the background of deep US involvement in Southeast Asia, which was itself a perverse cover for US intelligence drug-smuggling activities: and since the Vietnam War years, the CIA has been at the forefront of heroin and cocaine trafficking globally.

Concerned observers will doubtless ask: what is the extent to which these activities represent official policy? We know that the ongoing covert Soviet drug offensive against the West is official policy (sabotage). So, does the United States pursue a countervailing or similar strategy? The answer is that US intelligence has been criminalised since the Second World War, and that one of the 'justifications' it uses to 'rationalise' this behaviour is precisely that the United States has no choice, because 'everyone else is doing it'. As has already been discussed, this 'line' is immoral and intolerable. A so-called Great Nation like the United States should have the guts to suppress its own drug-running operations, to announce this to the whole world, and then to warn other countries' intelligence services that the writing is on the wall for them, as well. To continue in thrall to the blanket corruption and associated blackmail arising from its intelligence community's descent into the gutter will result in the destruction of the Republic. Unfortunately, the grip of the German Fifth Column/Illuminati on the US intelligence and official structures is so comprehensive that this outcome seems almost inevitable. As an example of the use of drugs for political purposes by the United States, it is thought in this context that Turkey has long been a key route through which US intelligence-linked operatives have been filtering drugs into the 'former' Soviet space. Public domain information exists to the effect that the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) 'inadvertently' uncovered the colossal CIA drug trafficking scandals. However the FBI is subordinated to the CIA, which is in turn subordinated to the National Security Agency (NSA) and, after Mr Bush Jr. signed the National Intelligence Reform Act on 17th December 2004, to the Director of National Intelligence, the first holder of that new post being John Negroponte. The frustration of honest FBI agents is evident from open intelligence concerning one or more FBI Affidavits in support of applications to intercept wire communications, in order, according to one of these FBI Affidavits, to determine 'source, type and quantity of narcotics/controlled substances, methods and means of delivery, and the source of funding for purchasing narcotics/controlled substances'. The relevant intercepts were to be implemented in respect of a number of very well-known CIA operatives and their superiors. The resulting intercepted communications read like a 'Who's Who' of US organised criminal intelligence.

OPEN DATA ON U.S. OFFICIAL DRUG-RUNNING

Mr Ron Rosenbaum, the investigative reporter who has written for Vanity Fair, reported some years ago in one of his articles, on Gilberto Rodriguez Orejuela, head of the Cali drug cartel, who was 'deeply involved with Michael Abell, formerly of the US Department of Defense'. Copious notes for a proposed book by Danny Casarolo, the journalist murdered by the familiar Illuminati means of poison and whose death William Hamilton has said was related to his investigation into the linked PROMIS software scandal, were deposited by his brother, Dr Tony Casarolo, with the Western Historical Manuscript Collection at the University of Missouri. According to a graduate student who examined the notes, they focused on a cabal of leading US intelligence operatives, one of whom was identified as Glen Shockley, a CIA contract employee who allegedly ran 'Jose Londono' of the Cali Cartel. This information is derived from a taped interview with Michael Riconosciuto conducted by US Government agents while he was negotiating for inclusion in the Witness Protection Program.

If US intelligence operatives were 'running' Cali Drug Cartel operatives, does it not follow that the Cali Cartel, the Medellin Cartel, and other such drug-running organisations in Latin America may actually have been (and their replacements or successors today actually are) operations of US intelligence? It has been confirmed to us at the highest level that this is indeed the case. The Colombian cartels were established by US intelligence. But behind this operation, at least one notorious German (DVD) operative has been identified. And as will be explained when we examine the Illuminati sect in detail, global drug-trafficking is the Illuminati's main speciality, together with prostitution, human trafficking, and other abominations of this nature.

Gilberto Rodriguez Orejuela was arrested, along with a certain Jorge Luis Ochoa, the notorious drug runner, in Madrid, a European centre of Illuminati drug ops., and extradited to Colombia in the mid-1980s. Rodriguez Orejuela was kept in jail in Cali, of all places, for a full year. Other inmates ran errands for him and the prison director referred to him as Don Gilberto. His cell resembled a hotel suite, as he was allowed to equip it with whatever luxuries he chose. On an occasion referred to as the Day of the Prisoner, it was Sr. Rodriguez Orejuela himself who hosted a huge party away from the prison - attended, among others, by the State Governor.

When his trial eventually took place, it was a farce, the main witness against him being a lowly US Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA) agent who did not speak fluent Spanish. He was accordingly provided with an official interpreter who did not speak fluent English. She found it impossible to convey the details of his evidence, and the agent spent much of his time on the witness stand with his face buried in his hands, poor man, attempting to contain his disbelief. The trial was not even held in the courtroom itself, but rather in the Judge's office, which was so overcrowded that it could barely hold the participants, let alone representatives of the press and television who travelled to Cali from Bogota. The local media wholly ignored the trial.

During the trial hearing, Rodriguez Orejuela even directed the television crews as to when they could and could not run their cameras. His first decision each day was to choose the menu for lunch, whereupon, as befits a Mafia boss, he would instruct one of his many attending aides what to buy. At lunchtime, the improvised courtroom was turned into a canteen and Rodriguez Orejuela would invite the Judge to join him, an invitation that His Honor was careful not to decline, for fear of his life.

TYPICALLY FARCICAL ACQUITTAL

In July 1987, Rodriguez Orejuela was acquitted of all the charges that had been brought against him. This meant that not only was he a free man in Colombia, but he was further immune from extradition to the United States on the original charges. In any case, by then the reconstituted Colombian Supreme Court had decided, by a single vote, that Colombia's extradition treaty with the United States was unconstitutional.

The Colombian Government of the day subsequently attempted to repair the flaws in the legislation underlying the treaty, but in June 1987, the Supreme Court rejected it for a second time. All-night parties were celebrated that very night in Medellfn, Cali and Bogota. As one observer in Medellin put it, 'they celebrated the news as they do when they crown (drug world jargon for 'successfully complete') a trip. For them, it was the best crowning they ever had'. In the present context, it appears that Rodriguez Orejuela's trial was a farce because he was a key asset of US intelligence, with which he was cooperating and who were 'running' him, meaning that his operations were actually drug operations of US intelligence. In the interests of fairness, though, it is necessary to mention in passing that justice in Colombia in those days (and probably still today) was/is a farce generally. This is odd, because suburbs of Bogota look exactly like, say, Weybridge, in Surrey, England - with ersatz Tudor-style houses and English-style gardens that seem to have been lifted straight out of prosperous London suburbs. The reason for this state of affairs is that Bogota's plusher suburbs were built in the 1930s by builders who used UK housing plans, reflecting the extensive British influence in Colombia (something that comes as a surprise to many). Given this influence, it is very curious that the British do not appear to have succeeded in implanting in Colombia the standards, or anything at all approaching the standards, applicable to the pre-E.U. British system of justice.

Middle class Colombians are sophisticated and highly critical of their own country, although they routinely use the standard excuse that there's nothing wrong with the drug business because it just meets demand - whereas of course, as discussed, drugs are the one commodity in the world that depend for their sales figures on supply, not demand. If the supply is cut off, demand falls away (admittedly leaving existing consumers suicidal, but at least more liable to survive). Colombian lawyers, asked for their opinions of the local criminal justice system, are often brutally candid. For example:

THE CORRUPT COLOMBIAN LEGAL NON-SYSTEM

In the 1980s, two British reporters were taken on a tour of Bogota's courts. They duly found out that the Colombian court and justice systems are 'a joke'. 'The prosecutor, sporting an open collar shirt, swivelled in his chair, smoking a cigarette and drinking soda from a bottle. The three-member jury looked aimlessly at the ceiling with no apparent interest in the arguments of one of the defence lawyers, whose table was partially covered by half-eaten sandwiches. The defendant paid no attention to the proceedings whatsoever, while his relatives chatted loudly among themselves and exchanged luncheon snacks. "And this is a showpiece", explained our knowledgeable guide'.

'In cases like these, we were told, juries almost inevitably vote for acquittal - for fear that if they don't, they will be the next victims. The judges share that fear. "They don't make enough money to live decently, they don't make enough to buy a car, they are not important enough to deserve decent protection", said our guide. "If you want to see the bottom line, go along to one of the office bathrooms" (American euphemism for toilet); "there is no toilet paper, no soap, no towel. Under those circumstances, who isn't going to have a price?"'

The Colombian drug capo, Carlos Lehder, of crucial significance, as already indicated, did not get off so lightly after he was captured, although his capture had momentous consequences very much later. In late January 1987, a man walked into the office of a high-ranking local police officer in Medellin and asked how much reward he would receive if he told the authorities where to find 'one of the capos you're looking for'. He was told that although the Colombian Government had approved the payment of rewards for information, there was, as yet, no budget to finance them. So the man walked out of the Police Station, saying: 'I won't tell you, then. Think about it, and I'll call you in a few days'.

When he duly returned, he was informed that the Colombian Government had still not been able to provide any money for such rewards, but that the US Embassy in Bogota was willing to pay $50,000 for reliable information.

For that amount, the informant disclosed where Carlos Lehder was hiding, but did not name him. At dawn on 4th February 1987, Major William Lemus of the Rionegro Police and 35 police officers raided a residence in the small town of Guarne, located about 20 miles from Medellin. A startled guard opened fire with a machine gun, but dropped the weapon and ran, as soon as he saw the uniforms. A dozen young men, all in their underwear, emerged from the residence and also tried to escape, but Major Lemus threatened to shoot them. Then Lehder, who now appeared at the doorway, announced: 'Hold your fire please. I'm Carlos Lehder'. Whereupon Lehder and his young men (hireme?) posed for a photograph, as though they were victims of some practical joke, while Lemus called his superiors in Medellin and announced: 'The Virgin has smiled on us. We have captured Carlos Lehder Rivas'.

According to the received version of the events which followed, the police called the Mayor of Medellin, who telephoned the Minister of Defence in Bogota. As a result, at 10.45 that morning, the President of Colombia asked the Minister of Justice whether Carlos Lehder could be extradited immediately to the United States. Before noon, a US Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) plane was on its way from Florida. In the afternoon, Lehder was taken to Bogota by the Colombian Air Force and at 5.07pm he was placed aboard the DEA's Turbo Commander. Before midnight, less than 18 hours after his arrest, Lehder was already incarcerated in a US jail in Tampa, Florida. All the usual procedures and international rules had been disregarded.

Subsequent reports from Colombia suggested that the Medellin Cartel and its extended family were perfectly content that Lehder had been removed from their midst. The other drug king-pins were thereafter allowed to live in comparative peace.

Why were the Colombian king-pins so satisfied with this state of affairs?

GERMAN-COLOMBIAN PARENTAGE

At the time of his deportation, Carlos Lehder Rivas was worth up to $3.0 billion, of which only $2.0 million was subsequently traced. Bear in mind that the CIA 'contract' employee, Glen Shockley, as we have seen, allegedly 'ran Jose Londono' of the Cali Cartel. In 1992, in exchange for his testimony against Manuel Noriega, an asset of US intelligence (who had decided that he wanted a larger cut from US drug operations) and originally a subordinate of Sr. Lehder, the American authorities reduced Lehder's publicly announced sentence from life plus 135 years, to 55 years (for public consumption). The original prosecutor of Lehder, Robert Merkle, later complained that Lehder's special treatment in prison, and the reduced sentence, together with alleged protection for him and his family in the United States, represented a travesty of the so-called Witness Protection Program.

'First of all, Lehder's testimony was entirely gratuitous and unnecessary for a conviction of Noriega. Secondly, they gave a deal to the guy who was directing the bad activities, to convict someone who was following directions'. In other words, with respect to drug operations, Carlos Lehder Rivas was the capo and Noriega -who at one stage angered the CIA by advising them not to transfer arms to the Nicaraguan Contras in exchange for drugs - was indeed his subordinate. Which, in translation, meant that Noriega was originally 'run' by Carlos Lehder.

According to his legend (which means that the information may be inaccurate), Lehder was born in the United States of a German father (Wilhelm) and a Colombian mother. Given the very extensive penetration of the Central Intelligence Agency, over several generations, by Germans, Sr. Lehder was clearly 'suitable material' for CIA recruitment - especially as he started his criminal life as a low-level drug dealer in Mchigan, home of many notorious drug Mafia Illuminati families, and whence the similar low-life perpetrator, 'Mike' Delmart Vreeland, also emerged from the underground into the intelligence community [see details of his findings implicating Uday Hussein in 9/11, Figure 24, pages 96-97]. Another prominent, and ruthless, operative of German extraction was the CIA Director of Operations - the previously mentioned German-American named Lyle Edward Goeringer, who called himself Paul K. Bryan. This senior official was involved inter alia in extensive financial money-laundering transactions through the European Union Bank in Anguilla, established by the key KGB operative and one-time junior Gorbachev Minister, Mikhail Khodorkovsky: see Addendum 7, page 701].

After doing time for a drug-related car theft, Lehder (according to the version of his life promulgated for public consumption), 'decided to seek his fortune in Colombia'. In reality, after surviving for a time as a car dealer, being a German Illuminati offspring he was recruited into, or penetrated, the US intelligence community - elements of which typically seek out such corrupt personnel from the low-life criminal communities - and was despatched to Colombia to establish new US detection-free secure drug-trafficking arrangements. It seems highly unlikely that a low-life Michigan car dealer would have been entrusted with the responsibility of establishing a network of drug cartels, which is an extremely demanding brief; and much more likely that this man was a German intelligence asset fully trained for the task he was to be required to undertake.

Carlos Lehder duly inaugurated, on behalf of his overt US intelligence superiors, efficient, high-tech arrangements for the mass distribution of drugs into the United States - thus declaring war against all Americans. Police officers in New York City have told contacts of ours that they know perfectly well that elements of the US Federal Government machinery (namely, cadres within the intelligence communities) are keen to maximise opportunities to generate hidden illegal profits from mass drug transactions, the proceeds being used to mmimise the CIA's dependence upon the Congress for funding, and also to enrich individual operatives wherever possible.

U.S. DRUG OPERATIONS DESTABILISE COLOMBIA

At the southernmost tip of the Bahamas, now an independent country, Lehder found a remote landing strip (Norman Cay). He secured the strip by bribing local Bahamian officials and terrorising its neighbours. Lehder then established a conveyor-belt system, with jets arriving at Norman Cay loaded with cocaine, for offloading and then reloading onto smaller planes for despatch into northern Florida, Georgia and the Carolinas (home of the central location of Scottish Rite American Freemasonry).

At the time, the uninvolved elements of the US authorities were watching only the country's southern borders, so aircraft that arrived at different points well north of the border were not under surveillance. The first load that Lehder shipped in 1982 yielded $1.0 million profit for two days' work. Having tested the new arrangements, Lehder, secretly pursuing and implementing the CIA's strategy, proceeded to talk the other local drug lords into establishing a cooperative, which developed into the Medellin Cartel. At the peak of the Cartel's power, a jet loaded with up to 300 kg of cocaine arrived every hour at the Bahamian airstrip. By the early 1980s, Lehder operated 15 cars and trucks, three aircraft, a helicopter, 12 haciendas, an apartment building and nine other properties, including a huge Bavarian-style tourist complex in Armenia City, Colombia, together with drug assets everywhere.

As in the Soviet Union, when US intelligence operatives become excessively greedy and forget who they are supposed to be working for, they are typically cut down to size. In Lehder's case, the primary problem was that the violence he spawned was disproportionate, and furthermore left the US intelligence community in serious danger of reprisals ('blowback') from Colombia - which would have been inconvenient, given the country's reserves of oil and of course its endless pipeline of supplies of drugs which provides the colossal hidden reserves of the CIA with constant replenishment. Yet the American authorities never charged Lehder with murder - merely with drug dealing and money laundering - even though acts of violence conducted on Lehder's behalf were documented in a US Federal detention order compiled in 1987.

Specifically, the US authorities stated that Lehder and others were responsible for assassinating the Colombian Justice Minister in 1984; for the armed attack in 1985 on the Colombian Supreme Court building that killed 11 justices and 84 others; for the assassination of two newspaper editors in Colombia and 26 other journalists; for the shooting of Colombia's Ambassador to Hungary in 1987; and for a long list of murders of street police officers, informants and Colombian Government officials.

Given this murderous litany, it ought to strike anyone who is not sitting on their brains, as astonishing that Carlos Lehder Rivas was not retained in Colombia, tried for all these dreadful crimes, and executed. The reason this did not happen was that Lehder was a key US intelligence operative, and his services might be required by the criminal elements of the US Government at a later date: which they were.

LEHDER CONTACTS HIS SUPERIORS

Despite his integration within US intelligence, Carlos Lehder considered his own self-acquired power to be so great that at one stage he threatened to kill one US Federal Judge every week if he was ever caught. This threat, typical of an operative with the mentality of a Nazi, prompted US officials to put narcotics agents, their families and other officials on worldwide alert after his arrest. During Lehder's trial in 1988, US Marshals were parked outside the homes of prosecutors and other agents involved in Lehder's case.

Why did the US authorities react in such an extreme manner to this man's odiously threatening behaviour, which they should never have tolerated? The answer to this question is that, although he was regarded as extremely dangerous, not least because of everything he knew about nefarious US drug-running operations out of Latin America, Lehder was a covert foreign operative who exercised control and power as a consequence of his status vis-a-vis Illuminati colleagues at high levels within the US intelligence and other structures. He qualified for special treatment, and his power had to be respected. When he uttered that threat, the US authorities knew that he was ruthless enough to carry it out, and had supporters in high places who would or might cover up for him. Because of this status, the Government established a deal with Lehder from the very outset of his incarceration. Instead of being held in Florida where he was to be tried, Lehder was housed in a two-cell unit at the US penitentiary at Marion, Illinois, and was provided with a telephone, as well as many other conveniences.

Once ensconced there, he used his leverage within the US intelligence community to contact aides to George Bush Sr., the alleged DVD king-pin, whose hand has allegedly been seen in all these events from the assassination of President John F. Kennedy onwards. During the following 18 months, senior FBI, CIA and other investigating agencies interviewed Carlos Lehder in the comfort of his prison cell.

But Robert Merkle, the prosecutor, knew nothing of these contacts with the US intelligence community. Although Lehder boasted of possessing sensitive information about corrupt governments throughout Central and South America and the Caribbean, Lehder testified only in the case of Noriega - and, as Merkle said, his testimony was wholly superfluous, contributing nothing of relevance to the Prosecution's case.

In the autumn of 1995, Lehder complained that he was the victim of a double-cross. In a letter he wrote to US District Judge William Hoeveler of Miami, who had presided over the Noriega case, Lehder asked to recant his testimony because he said that the US Government had reneged on a deal whereby his sentence would have been reduced further - to 30 years. Such a sentence reduction would have made him eligible for extradition to Colombia or Germany. Within weeks of that letter being sent, according to several protected witnesses consulted by the Pittsburgh Post-Gazette for an article published on 26th May 1996, Lehder was whisked away into the night. Consulted by the newspaper, neither Colombian nor German officials said they knew where he was.

Robert Merkle is on record as saying that 'I know that Lehder, right after he was arrested, tried to cut a deal directly with [former Vice-President George H. W.] Bush and the FBI.... There's a lot of stuff that went on that was very questionable. I have been speculating for years that Lehder was free but I figured he'd be in Germany or a tax haven with his money, which he still has. One of the major things that was agreed in terms of indicating that he made a deal, was that Lehder wasn't required to turn over assets'. In 1996, Merkle had commented publicly that Lehder 'received a very large quid for a very small quo'. Why wasn't Lehder required to disgorge his drug proceed assets?

Because he was an intelligence officer controlled ultimately by Germany's ultra-covert continuing Nazi International intelligence service, DVD. Carlos Lehder was an Illuminati operative whose true allegiance was to Germany, not the United States.

U.S. TREASURY CONFIRMS LEHDER'S 'OVERT' STATUS

A certain glamorous operative, Coral Talavera Baca, who ostensibly became Lehder's wife, was reported in a US Treasury document compiled by a Secret Service agent to have begun hiding Lehder's financial assets when aged 23 in 1987, the year that Lehder was captured - inter alia in a Bohemian company called Capital Investment Group (CIG). The Treasury report also stated that Carlos Lehder was an employee of the US Treasury, and a free man. The US analyst/investigator Michael Ruppert later discovered that Talavera was employed by the American International Group (AIG), the huge and since scandal-ridden US insurance group, at Two Rincon Center, San Francisco.

The American insurance industry is notoriously corrupt and is believed to be in receipt of vast inflows of laundered drug money annually. The biggest supplier of funds and controller of this industry in the United States and overseas is allegedly the so-called super-stock market guru, Warren Buffett, who allegedly launders funds inter alia for clients known as the 'hofjuden', or highly placed Jewish/Khazar wealth-holders.

On 11th September 2001, Buffett was at a business meeting convened at Offutt Air Force Base, to which location President George W. Bush Jr. was flown in Air Force One, after he had finished reading that notoriously occultic story about a goat to some schoolchildren. Offutt is the base at which the President of the United States has access to certain crucial operational facilities. AIG has had close ties to the Central Intelligence Agency since the 1950s. One can draw one's own conclusions.

AIG has also been linked closely with the long notorious Arkansas Development Financial Authority (ADFA) and Goldman Sachs, headed by Mr Robert Rubin, later US Treasury Secretary under President Clinton. During the 1990s, Goldman Sachs and the allegedly corrupt Harvard Endowment Fund channelled vast resources (as much as

$300 billion) to Russia. On 1st December 1987, Goldman Sachs distributed a confidential Memorandum concerning the projected establishment offshore, in Barbados, of a reinsurance company (yet another prospective laundering vehicle) called Coral Re, using the first name of the glamorous beauty and operative who became Lehder's wife. All potential investors, including Ruppert says, the State of Arkansas' ADFA, were requested to return or destroy the Memorandum if they were not intending to take part. Coral Re was an offshoot of AIG, and of course ADFA was at the centre of numerous allegations of money-laundering operations connected with the Mena Regional Airport (Arkansas) drug delivery centre associated with the Iran-Contra series of interlinked covert intelligence programmes in the 1980s. Maurice Greenberg, now the ex-Chief Executive Officer of AIG, had been a candidate for appointment as the CIA's Director of Central Intelligence in 1995, revealing his importance as an alleged money-launderer for the intelligence community. Indeed, it has hardly been necessary for the covert Soviets to despatch their criminalism operatives into Western structures in order to corrode and collapse them from within, since the corrupted CIA has been doing just that for years.

EVIDENCE OF SOVIET CONNECTIONS

Ruppert, who is former policeman with a generally respected investigative record, and is probably an operative himself (so that what he reports has to be put through a counterintelligence wringer before being considered 'reliable'), reported in 2001 that he personally investigated Capital Investment Group (CIG) in San Francisco, and established from the entity's corporate filings that the company had been located at 601 Gateway Boulevard near San Francisco Airport until their filings ceased in 1997.

Michael Ruppert further reported that he had personally 'poked around' the building until he could find someone on the building staff who had been there in the mid-1990s. 'Oh yeah', said one of the building's employees, 'the Russians. There was Boris and Vladimir and Natasha. They treated the eighth floor like it was Russian territory.... They had so many extensions running and so many computers going that they blew the fuses in the building six times. Everybody was complaining about them. They left us in 1996, I think. I have no idea where they went after that'.

LEHDER FUNDS TO PAY OFF THE DEMOCRATIC NATIONAL COMMITTEE

In April 2005, an impeccably knowledgeable US source informed the Author that when Al Gore alighted from a limousine in 2000 convinced that he had won the Presidential Election that year, he was staggered to be informed by a senior representative of the Democratic National Committee (DNC) that, no, there had been a computer glitch, and his victory was far from assured.

The source informed us that James Baker HI had allegedly been in touch with Carlos Lehder in jail, and had requested that he hand over a large sum of money immediately, in exchange for his freedom. It transpired that Lehder procured $40 million from a bank, on being driven there, of which some $8.0 million was allegedly deployed to pay off officials for them to erase all trace of Lehder having ever been at the prison facility in question, while $32 ($32.2?) million was allegedly transferred, not to Al Gore, but to the Democratic National Committee. Carlos Lehder Rivas was then conveyed to Germany.

It is clear, therefore, that Lehder was (is) a German DVD operative who worked within the corrupted US intelligence community, to establish key drug distribution networks as official US covert policy in Latin America, ostensibly on behalf of the

Illuminati, providing as always cover for the DVD. Like a number of operatives who have been working 'inside' the US intelligence community - since one consequence of interpenetration is that 'we are all good friends now' - Lehder may have had a STASI (East German) controller or handler. But the STASI, too, have all along provided cover for the Nazi International's secret 'Black' intelligence service, based at Dachau, the DVD.

In his 'Prison Note' [reproduced on page 97] the Office of Naval Intelligence officer 'Mike' Delmart Vreeland incorporated the following cryptic remark: 'No comments on Lehder - No thank you. No comments'. His Note was prepared for submission to his superiors in a 37-page report in which he intended to indicate what he would reveal in exchange for US intervention to procure his release from custody, freedom to live in his own apartment in Ottawa, and a new ID. It will be recalled that Lehder started his criminal existence as a small-time drug dealer in Michigan, the same area from which the very similar character Vreeland emerged.

Vreeland's unexplained comment about refusing to answer any questions that might be put to him about Carlos Lehder begs a sizeable number of questions, and if Lehder's legend is based on fact could also be related to the possibility that the two may have known each other or even collaborated in Michigan in their early years, so that Vreeland would have been well aware how dangerous Lehder was and is. But the Author discounts this interpretation, in favour of the likelihood that Vreeland, who is from a long-established US-Dutch Illuminati family, knew whom Lehder really worked for, and understood his importance to the Dluminati and thus to German 'Black' intelligence. Vreeland's generational Illuminati family background would explain his reluctance to be interrogated on drug-running issues connected with Carlos Lehder's operations in Latin America, since Vreeland's speciality seems to have been the 'former' USSR. His reluctance to talk about Lehder also suggests his knowledge of links between Lehder's former activities and not only German 'Black' intelligence, but also Soviet Military Intelligence, which is known to have been penetrated by the Abwehr/DVD. The Russian language note, surfaced by Vreeland, from Uday Hussein addressed to Putin [Figure 24, page 97], and dated June 2000, served the function of implicating Soviet intelligence in 9/11, to divert US and British intelligence from identifying the reality that the 9/11 atrocities attributed to Al-Qaeda were instigated by the DVD, from Dachau.

INTERNATIONAL COOPERATIVE ILLUMINATI INTELLIGENCE DRUG-RUNNING

If Lehder, as his name suggests, is also of Jewish extraction, there may further have been a connection with Israeli intelligence - with whom the CIA has collaborated, as has been seen, in Latin America. One confirmation of this was contained in William Tyree's Complaint, where he stated that 'in February and March 1976, a second and third WATCHTOWER operation took place under the command of Colonel Edward Cutolo, and more cocaine was brought into Albrook Air Station, Panama. [Tyree]... saw the CIA officer Edwin Wilson, CIA officer Frank Terpil, CIA asset/officer Colonel Albert V Carone, and Israeli Colonel Michael Harari'.

Israeli, British and South African operatives were reported in June 2005[46] to be engaged on behalf of the Pentagon on 'above top secref operations under the umbrella codenamed Task Force 121 (TF 121), using special operations personnel in the US Army's Delta Force, Green Berets, Navy SEALS, British Special Air Service (SAS) and Special Boat Service (SBS) and various ex-US and foreign intelligence personnel, to undertake illegal kidnappings, assassinations of foreign political leaders and figures, drug-running, and other destabilising operations abroad under cover of the 'the war against terror', which is of course carefully orchestrated. British Special Forces had been joined by South African Reece Commandos and Israeli Sayaret Mat'kal operatives. These cadres were said to be operating under the authority of the US Defense Secretary, Donald Rumsfeld, the Undersecretary for Intelligence, Stephen Cambone (the veteran operative) and the Deputy Undersecretary for Intelligence, Lieutenant General William G. Boykin. These Pentagon-controlled units, operating primarily out of the Joint Special Operations Command (JSOC) at Fort Bragg, North Carolina, and Fort Drum, New York, were reported to be active in Latin America, especially in Colombia, where they have been linked to the smuggling of cocaine in order to finance 'off-the-books' operations being carried out by the Pentagon commandos. In April 2005, five US military operatives were arrested by Colombian authorities for attempting to smuggle cocaine on a military flight to Texas. A month later, two further US troops were arrested in Colombia for attempting to smuggle 32,000 rounds of ammunition destined for Colombian counter-narcotics units, to the right-wing paramilitary terrorist and drug smuggling group calling itself the Self Defense Forces of Colombia. The US Ambassador to Colombia, William Wood, reportedly refused to extradite the US military operatives back to Colombia, invoking the US-Colombia Treaty which apparently grants US military personnel diplomatic immunity. In other words, what was happening in the 1970s, 1980s and 1990s is happening in the 21st century: there has been no change in US official drug-running behaviour and operations in Latin America: none whatsoever.

CIA/DVD-MEDELLIN MONEY-LAUNDERING NEXUS

According to an informed source, in the late 1970s, Jeb Bush (now Governor of Florida, with a Colombian Jewish wife), was installed as head of the Venezuela branch of Texas Commercial Bank, a principal owner of which was Mr George Herbert Walker Bush ('Sr.'). This bank branch allegedly became a staging post for the mass laundering of proceeds from the Medellin Cartel which, as we have seen, was controlled by the US Treasury and secret DVD (Dachau) Nazi intelligence operative Carlos Lehder. In fact the Cartel was, according to this very source, 'co-founded by Carlos Lehder as a Bush family business partner'. The source elaborates that this drug cartel 'was part of the whole CIA operation into the Southern States of the United States, headquartered, in part, at an airport in Western Arkansas, at Mena. The Elder Bush, his sons Jeb and George W, and Ollie North, and Bill Clinton, were all part of the operation. Guns were smuggled by CIA flights to Central America with side-trips to Colombia to pick up huge shipments of cocaine, which supported the Colombian economy more than coffee'. The resulting massive profits were deployed to finance further clandestine operations and scams associated with the ongoing intelligence corruption pipeline known as the Tran-Contra Affair'. The distinguished late US investigative journalist Sherman Skolnick reported from Chicago on 24th August 2001 that, while working at the Press Office of the Federal Bureau of Prisons, Chandra Levy (who, like Monica Lewinski, was an Israeli intelligence officer) may have stumbled upon detailed information linking the Bush Family to the Oklahoma City bombing and/or to the Family's partnership with the so-called 'Colombian' drug baron Carlos Lehder.

Another transmission point for the vast flow of drug proceeds arising from these criminalist US intelligence operations was allegedly the very small First National Bank of Mena, Arkansas, which was bought by the 'ethnic Chinese' Riady family, also linked to the Bush family and Bill Clinton. This bank allegedly became a transmission point for the colossal dope cashflow which was then allegedly transferred up to Garfield Ridge Trust and Savings Bank, Chicago. Its principal shareholder for many years was US Congressman Dan Rostenkowski. Likewise the Chicago bank's Board Chairman was for many years an alleged former US Secret Service (i.e., US Treasury) official, Dan Shannon. For his part, Rostenkowski was closely aligned to the key Chicago financial markets - the Chicago Mercantile Exchange, the Chicago Board of Trade and the Chicago Board Options Exchange - which allegedly provided, of course, the next stage in the laundering process. In 1994, Rostenkowski was indicted on corruption charges and stepped down as House Ways and Means Committee Chairman, losing his seat in that year's Congressional elections. In 1996, he pleaded guilty to mail fraud, was fined, and served a 17-month sentence.

It may be helpful here to recap some of the main findings arising from this study. With respect to the intelligence on US drug-running operations in Latin America that have been considered to date, the following facts have been established:

1. Carlos Lehder Rivas, who masqueraded as a Colombian drug dealer, was in fact a US Treasury/CIA intelligence operative sent to Colombia to organise, rationalise and then control the flow of drugs from Colombia (and Bolivia and Peru to an extent) into the United States, and to arrange appropriate money-laundering facilities. As well as being a US Treasury operative he was a deep cover agent of the German secret ongoing Nazi Black intelligence organisation, DVD, Dachau.

2. An ongoing covert Soviet and a possible STASI involvement have been identified. The STASI label has always been in part a cover for the Nazi International's DVD.

3. The Central Intelligence Agency is as usual shown to be a cynical criminal organisation masquerading as an intelligence community, and financing its operations from drug-trafficking - to the severe detriment of the population it 'serves', just like its covert Soviet counterpart. It has recently been reconfirmed to the Author at the highest level that the CIA is financially independent of Congress - as indeed is perfectly obvious from all the research he has been conducting in this area of the enquiry.

4. It follows that the intelligence services are long since out of control, in control, and need to be brought decisively under control if this crisis is ever to be surmounted.

Ralph McGhee, who was a CIA operative for 25 years, mainly in Southeast Asia, where he witnessed US bombing and napalming of villages and of their inhabitants, has pointed out that 'the CIA is not now, nor has it ever been, a Central Intelligence Agency'. It is the covert action arm of the President's foreign policy advisers. In that capacity it overthrows or supports foreign governments while reporting 'intelligence' justifying those activities. It shapes its intelligence, even in such critical areas as Soviet nuclear weapons capability, to support presidential policy. Disinformation is part of its covert action responsibility and the American people are the primary target of its lies'.

Since at least the Vietnam War era, the CIA has been at the forefront of heroin trafficking. In addition to being the main source of US propaganda for domestic and foreign consumption - hence, inter alia, the proliferation of conflicting disinformation and diversionary US Information Warfare websites, many of which are controlled by a central apparatus, the Author has been told [see Note 3, Chapter 7, page 512] - the CIA is indeed the covert arm of the predatory US Illuminist Government, and has accordingly been engaged traditionally in many terrorist operations. In fact, the CIA is itself a terrorist organisation, funded primarily by the profits of drug-smuggling. President

Bush Jr.'s 'war on international terrorism' provides (or is de facto supposed to provide) the United States with cover for its own terrorist activities, some of which have already been alluded to here. The CIA's serious drug-running activities were pioneered in and prior to the Vietnam Era by the Jewish Meyer Lansky Syndicate operating out of Chicago, which had already established international heroin running operations from Southeast Asia via the CIA-linked Corsican Mafia in the Mediterranean (Corsica being a particularly nasty little island where a bed-and-breakfast hostess once refused to hand the Author back his passport so that he could leave, without a corrupt payment). The atmosphere in Corsica reeks of the French Mafia.

The US intelligence community has been 'off the rails' for decades. The stench of this criminal organisation's activities reeks in the nostrils not only of informed American people, but of the whole world. At Watergate, for instance, President Richard Nixon was discarded in order to cover up CIA money-laundering. The key 'smoking gun' tape revealed Nixon's acceptance of the need to mobilise the CIA to halt the FBI's Watergate investigation because the FBI had 'run into' a CIA covert operation. When asked why he thought it was a CIA operation, the FBI Director of the day commented: 'Because of the amount of money involved'. The lesser-known Watergate burglars were mainly from the ranks of Cubans associated with the CIA's Miami station.

Watergate had much wider connotations, not least involving the Israeli nuclear programme, which are not relevant here. The verdict of H. R. Haldeman, referring to a Mexican bank used for laundering relevant funds, is however pertinent to this analysis: 'If the Mexican bank connection was actually a CIA cover operation all along, unknown to Nixon; and Nixon was destroyed for asking the FBI to stop investigating the bank because it might uncover a CIA operation (which the Helms Memo seems to indicate that it actually was after all), the multiple layers of deception by the CIA are astounding'*[7]. They reflected, and reflect, of course, 'the mystery of iniquity'.

The main point here is that the CIA was heavily engaged in money laundering (as it had been in earlier years as well) in the 1970s: and the central figure, as has been the case ever since, was George Bush Sr.. But behind George Bush stood his mentor - the senior Illuminati operative, German Jew and alleged member of the secret Illuminati Directorate, Dr Henry ('Henny') Kissinger, the alleged DVD agent who persuaded the Illuminati's President Ford to give Bush Sr. William Colby's job.

As has been alluded to, Dr Kissinger is allegedly a long-term Soviet agent, whose Soviet codename is BOR, as well as being allegedly a mole for the DVD. His presence at the epicentre or environment of US governance for decades, and his relationship with and influence over George Bush Sr., have provided ample scope for foreign manipulation of, and interference in, the affairs of, the United States, which has reached epidemic proportions. But the question is: which foreign power does Dr Kissinger allegedly serve?

Given his mentorship of George Bush Sr. and his German provenance, the answer to this question suggests itself unequivocally: and soundings among high-level intelligence circle have indicated that this assessment is correct. If so, then Dr Kissinger's 'outer defence' - rumours of his Soviet allegiance, 'corroborated' by his Soviet code-name BOR - mask his actual, deeper allegiance to the Nazi International in general, and to the Dachau-based DVD 'Black', hidden intelligence community, in particular.

Another cover employed by DVD operatives, as has been seen, is the 'former' East German STASI label. Manipulation of high-ranking US political figures is facilitated by the institutionalisation in such circles of vice of every kind, and their foolish attendance

THE BOHEMIAN GROVE: WHERE THE ELITE ARE FILMED IN DEBAUCHERY FOR BLACKMAIL

For the past 130 years [as of 2005], world leaders and members of the US elite have travelled to Sonoma County, Northern California, in July, to participate in orgies and occult activities on a secluded 2,700 acre compound called the Bohemian Grove. On 15th July 2000, the US talk show host, Alex Jones, and colleagues, including a British contingent, managed to penetrate the notorious Bohemian Grove by clandestine means, and to film some of the repulsive activities that were taking place during this annual summer camp of Illuminati.

Bohemian Grove is the site of an annual two-week gathering of prominent males, with participants having included the likes of Henry Kissinger, James Baker III, David Rockefeller, John Lehman, Elliot Richardson, Newt Gingrich, George Bush Sr. and Jr., Jimmy Carter, Richard Nixon, Helmut Schmidt, General Colin Powell, Richard Cheney, Gerald Ford, William Simon, Ronald Reagan, William French Smith, and William Perry, former Secretary of Defense under Clinton, also a known participant. Participation in this 2,700-member club, founded in 1872 amid a certain amount of mystery, may entail a wait of 15 years before coveted admission is granted.

Herbert Hoover once referred to the Bohemian Club's Annual Summer Encampment as 'the greatest men's party on earth'. In reality, Bohemian Grove events celebrate and institutionalise 'the spirit of Bohemia', according to Peter Phillips, of Sonoma State University, who actually wrote a doctoral thesis on the Grove. Bohemia is of course in Germany: so what this means is that the Illuminati, which in its modern format originated in Germany, indulge in pagan occult rituals, permissive sex and various abominations, the mildest of which is an occult ceremony beneath a huge idol in the shape of an owl, called Moloch - the Caananite god to which the pagan tribes, and at times the children of Israel, sacrificed 'unwanted children' (postnatal contraception). In 'Paradise Lost', John Milton described Moloch as follows: 'First Moloch, horrid King, besmirched with blood, Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears, Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud, Their children's cries unheard, that passed through fire, To his grim idol'. In Scripture, Moloch is condemned as the worst of all the ancient abominations: but the Illuminati 'Useful Idiots' attending the grim, pagan ceremony held at the Bohemian Grove every summer, revere it, reaffirming before it their Luciferian preferences.

Programmed 'Monarch' sex slaves are routinely employed to 'entertain' the assembled debauched members of the globalist elite, and to facilitate the gratification of their animal desires. The annual gathering of these nutcases begins with the so-called 'Cremation of Care' ritual, in which a mascot is burned in effigy, symbolising 'freedom from care - a trap for the unwary. Various bizarre enactments take place. Druids in red-hooded robes march in procession and chant to the Great Owl Moloch, according to many inside reports obtained not only as a consequence of Alex Jones' penetration in 2000, but also from the scores of local men who work in the Grove as servants. One near-victim has described the Bohemian Grove's inner hideaways and secret locations - which include an UNDERGROUND (U.N. derground), a Dark Room, a Leather Room, and a Necrophilia Room. Occult human sacrificial rituals, involving the murder of babies, children and 'discarded' sex slaves, have also been credibly reported, given a sizeable accumulation of insider information about this place of serial abominations.

Cathy O'Brien, the 'Monarch' sex slave deprogrammed by Mark Phillips, has identified the underlying evil purpose of the Bohemian Grove as BLACKMAIL. She reported that her 'handler' had told her about high-tech, undetectable cameras using fiber-optics, and fish-eye lens cameras that are positioned strategically in each of the Bohemian Grove's numerous sexual perversion theme rooms. She has reported that 'I was programmed to function in all rooms at the Bohemian Grove in order to compromise specific government targets according to their personal perversions'. That's how Luciferian US intelligence does its business.

She and Phillips calculated that no-one would believe what they have divulged in their book Trance Formation of America' [see main text], in which these comments were published, unless they were dead. This calculation proved to be correct. At the same time, neither replied to the Author's letter enquiring whether Mark Phillips was actually engaged in an experiment to establish whether a programmed (MK-ULTRA-style) 'Monarch' sex-slave could be successfully and permanently deprogrammed; and when one receives no response from such operatives, this normally means that the questions put to them cannot be answered without compromising their operations: i.e., the Author's suspicion is correct. ■

at annual Bohemian Grove events [see page 161], at which they are encouraged to indulge in sexual, drug and drinking excess, and which they are erroneously informed cannot or will never be exposed. However the real purpose of the Bohemian Grove orgies is precisely to ensure participants they can be manipulated through blackmail, since secret cameras witness their debauched behaviour, of which they are discreetly reminded 'as necessary'. Reverting to the case of Dr Kissinger, the traditional, long-term penetration of the Soviet intelligence sector by German Nazi 'Black' operatives provides the known context for this operative's use of his suspected Soviet connections as cover for his real affiliation - service to the Nazi International. At this point, we can hear some argue that any such allegiance would be surreal, since, as a Jew, Dr Kissinger would be 'sure' to be antagonistic towards Nazism. However, that would be a shallow, knee-jerk reaction. For the reality is that Zionism is a form of Nazism. In his early working days, the Author foolishly joined a Jewish merchant bank in London, for which he was totally unsuited. There, a much older woman who worked in the same department took pity on him, and 'looked after' him in the canteen at lunchtime. The Eichmann trial was the main feature in the news at the time. The Author remembers saying to this kind lady: 'How come Eichmann, a Jew, presided over the Holocaust?' To which she replied: 'Don't you know that a Jew's greatest enemy is another Jew?'. That first-hand remark should, though a cliche, eliminate any fanciful notion that Dr Kissinger could not possibly be, for instance, a covert DVD operative. On the contrary, his clear Illuminati credentials, and the fact that he is alleged to have been thrown out of his synagogue by his local Jewish community, clarify this man's geopolitical orientation and loyalties. A 'handle' on this man's nature can be obtained by contemplating the fact that, after appearing incongruously as a mourner at Princess Diana's Memorial Service at Westminster Abbey, Kissinger was observed the next evening in a London nightclub, ogling at a Turkish belly-dancer.

CYNICAL U.S. DECEPTION OF COLOMBIA

Now that we can see clearly that the Medellfn cartel was controlled by, and was an instrument of, US intelligence, manipulated or probably even commanded in turn by at least one German Nazi covert operative, who appears to have been whisked away from Colombia by the DEA and quickly incarcerated 'for his own safety', it can also be seen that the Colombian Government, while benefiting financially, has been cynically deceived by the US Government, of which the vast US intelligence community forms an overbearingly powerful component. If we pursue this line of reasoning further, a number of disturbing insights emerge. The Cali Cartel replaced the Medellin Cartel; and just like the Medellin Cartel, the Cali Cartel has been, and is, clandestinely controlled by a foreign power - namely, the United States.

During his heyday operating in Colombia, Lehder financed the establishment of a newspaper and a new political party, the Movimiento Nacional Latino. His colleague, Pablo Escobar, founded a newspaper, and was elected to the Colombian Congress in 1982. By the following year, Escobar's personal wealth was estimated at $2 billion.

He proceeded to finance the construction of a barrio for poor families in Medellin - a 'philanthropic' gesture typical of successful giga-criminals the world over. In mid-1983, Tranquilandia, which was then the largest cocaine laboratory in history, went into production on the banks of the Rio Yari in Los Llanos. It operated no less than fourteen independent, fully equipped laboratories, water and electricity supply, roads, dormitories, and its own airstrip, and it produced 3,500 kg of pure cocaine every month.

When the Colombian President of the day, Belisario Betancour, appointed Rodrigo Lara Bonilla Minister of Justice, the political climate abruptly changed. Bonilla suddenly launched a sharp offensive against the drug trade, inducing one of Bogota's leading newspapers, El Espectador, to publicise some of the crimes committed by Pablo Escobar. In March 1984, a massive Colombian Police posse raided Tranquilandia and arrested everyone working there. The police proceeded to confiscate seven aircraft, weapons and vehicles, plus all the chemicals on the premises. (These chemicals are typically manufactured by only a handful of corporations, of which Eli Lilly, with which George Bush Sr. has or has had key connections, is one). Fourteen tonnes of cocaine were reportedly seized and thrown into the river.

THE U.S.-TRIGGERED COLOMBIAN COCAINE CIVIL WAR

The Cartel disappeared from view, with the exception of Carlos Lehder, who offered, in exchange for immunity from prosecution, to pay off Colombia's entire foreign debt, then standing at $13 billion. After agonised consideration, this proposal was turned down by the Government. However once the publicity had died down, the Medellfn Cartel continued business more or less as usual. In particular, it began to invest its profits in land, and later in industry. Then, as the drug operatives became major landowners, they created their own private armies to protect their investments. In 1984, Lehder or associates in or working for the Medellfn Cartel, killed the Justice Minister, Rodrigo Lara Bonilla. The Government responded in an odd manner: it implemented the old Extradition Treaty, which had been signed years earlier with the United States, but had never been applied. Four minor drug traffickers were at once sent to the United States to stand trial, to maintain the illusion for public consumption that 'something is being done'.

The Cartel then started a public campaign against the Treaty, but failed to shift the Government's stand. So the Cartel began to target the Treaty's leading supporters, such as Guillermo Cano, the publisher of El Espectador, who was assassinated in late 1986. The Attorney-General was later shot to death. In February 1987, the Colombian security forces and the anti-narcotics police, with cooperation from the US Drug Enforcement Agency, captured and immediately extradited Carlos Lehder to the United States.

It is not known whether the DEA operatives were aware that they were handling an operative employed by the US Treasury and US intelligence generally - to organise and deliver a pipeline of colossal profits for the benefit of corrupt US official cadres and to inflate the vast hidden resources of the intelligence services.

The consequences of the United States' secret intermeddling in the national affairs of Colombia, and of its abominable and cynical manipulation and seizure of control over the Colombian drug trade (paralleled later, under George H. W. Bush Sr.'s Presidency, in Panama), were catastrophic. The United States literally succeeded in destabilising Colombia - which some believe may well have been an outcome not inimical to CIA planners, given that the United States is a key global revolutionary power and that it is capable of being a menace to the stability of the whole world.

In August 1989, the Medellfn Cartel assassinated the leading presidential candidate, Luis Carlos Galan, thereby threatening what remained of the corrupted integrity of Colombia's fragile democracy. All hell then broke loose. Galan's murder triggered a declaration of all-out war by the Government; and the United States - which had provoked the chaos from the outset - immediately offered $65 million of emergency aid and logistical support. If these funds were taken from a CIA 'Black' budget, there was of course no shortage of resources that could be raided for this purpose.

President Barco of Colombia thereupon confiscated 989 buildings and ranches, 367 aircraft, 73 boats, 710 vehicles, 4.7 tonnes of cocaine, 1,279 guns and 25,000 rounds of ammunition from the Cartel's structures. The traffickers responded with a demonic reign of terror, burning the farms of regional politicians in Antioquia, and detonating bombs at many banks, newspaper offices, political party headquarters, and private homes in Bogota, Cali, Medellin and Barranquilla. In September 1989, an explosion destroyed the offices of El Espectador. During November, a mid-air bombing killed all the 101 passengers and six crew members aboard an Avianca flight from Bogota to Cali. In December, a massive truck bomb ripped into the bottom floors of the National Police Agency (DAS) in Bogota, damaging buildings 20 blocks away.

The war culminated in a massive manhunt that led to the killing of another prominent Cartel leader, Gonzalo Rodriguez Gacha, known as 'El Mexicano', who had been suspected of masterminding the reign of terror. After his death, the remaining Cartel leaders urged the Government to negotiate. Extended negotiations then led to the surrender of the three Ochoa brothers, and Pablo Escobar and their aides.

On the face of it, the no-holds-barred drug war represented the consequences of yet another CIA operation, or nest of evil operations, that (as usually happens) went so badly wrong that the overt responsible structures of the US Federal Government had to intervene (inter alia, with the $65 million of aid). But if Colombian officials and Ministers had been properly informed, they would have been well aware that the United States had been playing extremely cynical and dangerous games in Colombia, which elements of it had been exploiting for criminal covert purposes for years.

With this effective truce, the farcical character of the Colombian justice system kicked in again. The deal that was struck was that the traffickers had to surrender and plead guilty to just one crime, in exchange for guarantees that they would not be extradited like Carlos Lehder (who had simply been transferred back to base, albeit not in the manner he might have preferred), and they would serve reduced sentences in a specially constructed prison in Envigado, the home town of Pablo Escobar, close to Medellfn. To conclude the matter, the Constitutional Assembly ruled formally that the Extradition Treaty did not apply to Colombian nationals. But it manifestly continued to apply to non-Colombian nationals, like Carlos Lehder.

CARTEL DECAPITATED: SO IT WAS BUSINESS AS USUAL

With the surrender or deaths of all the top leaders of the Medellfn cartel, guess what? Narco-terrorism subsided, but the drug business remained unaffected! An estimated two or three tonnes of top quality cocaine continued to reach the United States every week from Colombia alone, in cargoes smuggled in by sea or air. Escobar and his associates were, for the time being, having to put up with the inconvenience of operating their cocaine businesses from behind bars. They all had telephones.

When Pablo Escobar escaped from his jail following a 'botched' attempt to remove him from La Catedral (the prison) to a more secure location, narco-terrorism resumed. For the next 18 months, Colombia's elite Search Block sought Escobar, tracking down and then killing most of his aides and collaborators. Finally, after 499 days of searching the special unit located Escobar in December 1993, and shot him dead.

However thanks to US intermeddling and the parallel activities of Cuban and Soviet-linked rival drug networks, drug trafficking out of Colombia has continued expanding. For while Colombia's elite force concentrated its resources in hunting one man, the other cartels were of course quick to take advantage of the situation. The Cali Cartel, which likewise developed during the 1980s, moved quickly to take over the markets of the now shattered Medellfn Cartel, becoming Colombia's largest drug producer.

And as has been explained, the Cali organisation was led by the Rodriguez Orej-uela brothers, at least one of whom was controlled by US intelligence. In other words, the German-oriented cadres within the CIA did not place their eggs in one basket, but diversified their sources of drug pipeline funds, to guard against the possibility (likelihood) that one or more of the networks that they had established would be blown.

The problems which leaders of the Cali Cartel faced were quickly dissipated (see above), and by 1994, this US-sponsored Cartel was believed to be controlling over 80% of New York's cocaine market, with dominant shares in other US and European markets. The criminalised intelligence services of both the leading revolutionary powers -the 'former' USSR and the United States - are engaged in drug offensives against their populations, in conformity with the Satanic priority of the dialectical World Revolution, to create chaos out of order. The later Cali king-pins diversified into opium poppies and into heroin, apparently reflecting changes in consumer habits in the United States, but in reality catering for drug demand stimulated by supply. Meanwhile the German, French, Italian, Spanish, Mexican and Israeli 'Black' intelligence communities continued to thrive, through cooperation and competition with the US and Soviet networks, as never before.

The arrest in June 1995 of the Call Cartel leader, the US intelligence asset-operative Gilberto Rodriguez Orejuela, involved in excess of 3,000 troops raiding dwellings in Bogota and Cali. Yet Colombia continues to benefit from an inflow of an estimated $6 billion annually from the illegal drug operations set up originally, and controlled by, US intelligence - a factor which of course ensures that the networks established by US intelligence on behalf of its German Illuminati controllers continue to function normally.

At the same time, Colombia's political fabric had been severely destabilised. Not only was the ruling political class targeted, but the arrest of Gilberto Rodriguez Orejuela did little to alter the dynamics of the Colombian drug trade: and the Government has been subsequently been unable to repeat the success it achieved against the Medellin Cartel. In other words, it was business as usual.

One apparent reason for this is that the political classes generally have been further corrupted. President Ernesto Samper was obliged to spend much time during his final years in office refuting allegations that his election campaign had been financed by drug money. President Samper's Liberal Party successor, Horacio Serpa, lost the election in June 1998 to the 'Conservative' Andres Pastrana, who in 1994 had exposed Sr. Samper's corrupt connections with the Cali Cartel.

COLBY, CASEY AND IRAN-CONTRA

At the risk of some repetition, but in the interests of clarity, let us briefly revisit William Casey's Affidavit, in order to draw out the main features of this sobering narrative. After William J. Casey, an old Office of Strategic Services (OSS) operative based in London during the Second World War, became the CIA's Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) on 28th January 1981 under President Ronald Reagan (in office, thanks to George Bush Sr.'s 'October Surprise' operation to bribe the Iranians with $32 million, to release the US hostages from Tehran only after President Reagan's inauguration), he was approached and briefed by the former DCI, William Colby (who was found drowned many years later), who informed him off the record about two operations that he was continuing to run in Latin America. Both these operations were being run without the consent or knowledge of the US Congress, the President or even the intelligence apparatus itself. One reason for this level of secrecy was that the operations were actually directed by covert German Nazi drug-running intelligence, with Colby unknowingly in charge.

The operations were identified by Colby under the codenames of A-6 (RED MIST) and A-7 (PROJECT SANDMAN). A-7 was the 'Phoenix Program' of Latin America, involving the assassination of the Communist infrastructure throughout Latin America. A-6 identified individuals and the build-up of the Communist threat in the region.

William Colby authorised the US intelligence assets involved in A-6 and A-7 to engage in narcotics trafficking to finance both operations, having himself engaged in similar operations in Vietnam for the same purpose. Between the beginning of December 1975 and 1st April 1976, Colby prepositioned more than a million pounds of cocaine in Panama, with the assistance of General Manuel Noriega. This cocaine was conveyed to El Salvador, Costa Rica and Honduras between 1976 and 1981. It now needed to be conveyed to the American market.

CIA-MAFIA UNDERWORLD LINKS EXPOSED

To assist him in these nefarious operations, Mr Colby used the aforementioned Colonel (Dr) Albert Vincent Carone, a US military intelligence officer, with experience also in working for the CIA, and close Mafia links, to field the A-6 and A-7 operations. Dr Carone had a long-time 'friend', Vito Genovese, head of the gambling and narcotics activities for the controlling Mafia family in New York, of which Dr Carone, who was also a friend of the international fugitive Robert Vesco (hiding from US justice in Cuba), was made a 'member'. Thus elements of the US military, as well as the CIA, are mafiosi.

Contrary to the universal view, Fidel Castro, who received a Jesuit education, like so many revolutionaries and spies, has maintained secretly cordial relations with certain US structures all his life. The Americas Department of the Cuban Communist Party, run by Cuban intelligence cadres under the control of the KGB, directs all covert Soviet drug-trafficking operations in the Western Hemisphere, in 'competition' with the colossally subversive drugs offensive of the CIA's Illuminati against their own population.

William Colby arranged for the profits from the preposifioned cocaine to be laundered through Dr. Carone, the New York Mafia, and Robert Vesco (who has been hiding out in Cuba since his exposure). They were then to be redirected to fund the anti-Communist operations in Latin America, through Colby himself. Hence, Robert Vesco, the fugitive from US justice, remained at the same time a long-term money-laundering collaborator with the CIA. (As for the facts on the ground, the House of Representatives' Intelligence Committee knew perfectly well that the Sandinistas were not shipping arms to Communist guerrillas in El Saldavor, as President Ronald Reagan had claimed. Congressman Lee Hamilton complained that 'we were, however, unable to respond to the President's (erroneous) assertions because this information was classified. The Democratic and admittedly fiercely anti-Reagan Senator Moynihan elaborated: 'I knew the President's claim could not be substantiated, but I knew this from classified briefings which a Chairman or Vice Chairman of such a committee is sworn not to discuss in public. The effect is to hide things from the American people that they need to know').

Casey discussed these matters with Dr Carone and accordingly decided to have the prepositioned cocaine brought into Mena Airport, Arkansas, which the CIA had used on earlier occasions, and through which large volumes of cocaine had been, and would continue to be, shipped into the US interior. Assisting William Casey so as to ensure smooth operations were William J. Clinton, a CIA operative, later the President of the United States, and William E Weld [see Casey's Affidavit, and the box on page 109], the scion of a well-known banking family (White Weld having been an early adviser to the Saudi Arabian Monetary Agency), who later became Governor of Massachusetts and was in 2006 seeking the Governorship of New York State. As Assistant US Attorney, Weld was placed in charge of the Criminal Division of the US Department of 'Justice'. The purpose of this appointment was so that William Weld could control investigations into Mena by the US Federal law enforcement agencies, which of course knew nothing (or not enough) about the detail of these criminal intelligence activities.

Clinton assisted Casey by systematically smothering the Arkansas law enforcement investigations into the drug-running operations by the CIA through Mena. That was why Clinton was elevated to the Arkansas Governorship. William Casey now instructed Robert McFarlane, John Poindexter and Oliver North to go beyond 'normal channels' and to use 'available assets, including the Mafia', to ensure the arrival of the cocaine into Mena Airport. Personnel assigned to the National Security Agency (NSA) and the US Army Security Agency (ASA) facilitated the cocaine arrivals, with the early warning defence satellites and the radar grid being blinded to enable the cocaine-laden aircraft to land undetected at Mena Airport. The codenames for these NSA and ASA operations were SEA SPRAY and JADE BRIDGE.

As we have also seen, evidently William Casey justified these criminal decisions, actions and policies by invoking the false pretext that US drug users have a choice: whether to consume drugs or not. This alibi is both morally and practically indefensible, as well as being ignorant nonsense. In the first place, as discussed, drug consumption is a consequence of supply, not demand. In the case of food for normal sustenance, such as corn flakes, there is a natural demand from the population, which is met by supply.

However in the case of addictive drugs, two factors differentiate them from all other commodities. First, there is no natural demand for drugs such as cocaine. Its insidious usage spreads as a consequence solely of supply - to foolish people who are offered cocaine at parties, for instance. If the drug is available, then demand for it can be generated. If the supply is cut off, demand (except from those unfortunates who are hooked on the drug) dries up. Secondly, demand from users who have started to use the drug because of its availability (supply) is artificially and exponentially increased because of the resulting addiction. It follows, obviously, that William Casey's self-interested and shallow 'justification' for continuing the de facto Illuminist strategy of his predecessor was wholly devoid of intellectual validity quite apart from its Satanic immorality.

As for William Colby himself, his preoccupation with decapitating the Communist infrastructure in Latin America may seem to have provided absolute confirmation of his anti-Communist credentials. For instance, Colby reportedly presided over nearly 25,000 assassinations in Vietnam. But the longer-term consequences of his authorisation of open-ended drug dealing by US intelligence assets have been so disastrous, and so predictable, that, if it were not for the fact that he was blinded by the dialectical trap in which he had to operate, they might have implied a subversive intent. They are certainly consistent with the parallel strategy devised by Dr. Kissinger (the alleged Soviet agent BOR and German Illuminati controller) to establish the precarious system whereby oil invoices issued by oil producers are denominated exclusively in US dollars.

THE PITIFUL DRUG DECADENCE OF THE UNITED KINGDOM

Figure 28 below shows that as opiate and cocaine supplies in the United Kingdom proliferated between 1970 and 2000, the numbers of dependent users of these imported drugs known to treatment services grew exponentially. The chart may be compared with Figure 29 on page 169, in which exactly the same progression in the United States, between 1960 and 1980, is recorded. As has been explained, the drug crisis in the United Kingdom is now controlled by a corrupted intelligence cadre, GO-2, which "facilitates" the operations of two drug cartels, financing the main political parties and ensuring largely trouble-free distribution of these drugs, to the fury of drug interdiction operatives and law enforcement elements, who know what is going on. It was in this context that the Author was informed, in the third quarter of 2005, by two senior, disgusted, intelligence officers, that 'we have a criminal government in the United Kingdom'. For a component of government to preside over drug-running operations is a scandal of extreme proportions, and it is hoped that exposure inter alia via this study will serve the official perpetrators with appropriate notice that this state of affairs will not be tolerated, and that efforts will be made to bring these criminals who - as in the United States -hide behind their 'national security' screen - to justice. Furthermore, since GO-2 operates from the Lambeth headquarters of MI6, the leadership of which in 2005 was considered by the Author's informants to be unreliable (to put the matter mildly), MI6 is a party to

OPIATE AND COCAINE USERS IN THE UK [THOUSANDS]
■ ADDICTS NOTIFIED TO HOME OFFICE
▨ ADDICTS IN TREATMENT
100
90
80
70
60
50
40
30
20
10
0
70
72
74
76
78
80
82
84
86
88
90
92
94
96
98
0

50,000 LONDONERS ADDICTED TO CRACK COCAINE
According to researchers at Imperial College London and Bristol University, there were almost 50,000 crack cocaine addicts in London by 2005, against about 13,600 users identified in the 2001-02 *British Crime Survey*. This finding, based on data from 12 London boroughs, and publicised on 20th September 2005 by *'The Guardian'*, suggests that 1.3% of 15-44-year-olds use crack. This would be consistent with the Author's intelligence on UK official criminalism. ■

Figure 29. New opiate and cocaine abusers in the United Kingdom, 1970-2000. Increased drug dependency reflects increased supply - which is co-ordinated by GO-2, a UK intelligence cadre which is supposed to be engaged in anti-drug operations. According to furious UK intelligence sources, GO-2 controls or works with two drug cartels, thus frustrating drug-interdiction operations by the diminishing proportion of the UK intelligence community that remains uncorrupted. Note: As discussed elsewhere, GO-2 operates out of the MI6 headquarters in Lambeth, just across Vauxhall Bridge in Central London. In 2004-2005, MI6/GO-2 attempted to smear the Author, who retaliated by published a detailed account of these attempts in his global financial journal, International Currency Review.

this abomination. Drug-running is a crime against humanity and the Author regrets to say that the British Government condones and participates in this form of atrocity.

In 2005, the cost of damage to health and social functioning due to heroin and/or crack cocaine usage was conservatively estimated at £5.0 billion annually. In the United Kingdom, drug users were estimated to commit no less than 36,000,000 crimes a year, that is to say, 56% of the (colossal) total number of crimes. The British police have long since given up bothering to find the perpetrators of crimes, unless murder, rape or some other high-profile aberration is involved. The notion that British taxpayers receive value for money, in the form of protection, from the police, is wholly discredited. When the Author sought to advise the authorities of a possible terrorism dimension, he struggled to make himself understood to a half-literate police clerk at Belgravia Police Station, who made so many mistakes that he kept pulling sheets out of his record book and starting over again. A day and a half later, there had been no follow-up, despite the urgency of the matter; and the Author was reduced to calling the Downing Street Press Office, as a result of which a Scotland Yard officer telephoned to make an appointment. In general, the police service is dismal, and morale appears to be low - doubtless because the police know that the Government is itself involved in drug-running.

The Author's UK intelligence sources estimate that Britain now has 300,000 heroin addicts, compared with 30,000 in 1972, when Britain was illegally 'bounced' into

Figure 29. New cocaine users in the United States, 1962-80 [in thousands], showing conclusively the correlation with with increased supplies of the drug. In the early 1960s, when supplies were low, recorded addiction was of minimal proportions. Data source: Rouse, B.A., Ed., 1995, 'Substance Abuse and Mental Health Statistics Yearbook', DHHS Publication No. (SMA) 95-3064, Government Printing Office, Washington DC. Reproduced from 'Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West, by Dr Joseph D. Douglass Jr., Edward Harle Limited, 1999, page 157. Dr Douglass attributed the increased supply and cocaine addiction to the entry of Soviet-controlled drug-traffickers into the market. Extrapolation of the chart would also reflect the consolidation of the Latin cartels set up by US intelligence, fronted inter alia by Lehder.

membership of the corrupt European Economic Communities [see Chapter 8]. They openly attribute this state of affairs to Britain's EU membership in general, and to the ease with which German, French and Spanish intelligence-linked drug cadres have consequently been able to penetrate the UK structures and networks, in particular.

Despite the fact that GO-2/MI6 'facilitates' the drug-running and distribution operations of two drug cartels into and within the United Kingdom, available data on the UK drug crisis are provided, believe it or not, by the Downing Street Strategy Unit. Whether this curious fact reflects ignorance on the part of the apparatchiks working there, with respect to the abominations perpetrated from Lambeth, or whether we are confronted with the 'blind eye' syndrome, or one part of the official structures having no clue what is happening in other areas of the Government, is unknown. But according to this source, the total heroin and/or crack user population in Britain had reached 280,000 by mid-2005 (the numbers are not additive), with an estimated 260,000 people hooked on heroin, 140,000 users of crack, and 250,000 people addicted on cocaine. The estimated average annual spend per heroin addict was £10,000 - which means that cash-flow generated by this abomination alone was of the order of £2.6 billion. The estimated 140,000 crack users were also spending about £10,000 annually on their vice, generating a further £1.4 billion; while the 250,000 cocaine users were spending some £5,500 each, generating a further £1.4 billion annually - for a total annual inflow of £5.4 billion. The Table on page 171 provides further details of the size of the scam - suggesting that 31 retail tonnes of heroin, 10 tonnes of crack and 22 tonnes of cocaine were flooding into the United Kingdom annually, implying that interdiction operations are totally ineffective.

To ensure that this is indeed the case, the Blair Government abolished the ancient Customs and Excise Department, which had made progress with its interdiction activities - merging the department into the notoriously incompetent Inland Revenue. The Author's informants advise that this was done, in part, in order to remove the annoyance

Figure 30. The cost of drugs per week for a UK heavy abuser. Usage of crack cocaine, cocaine and heroin was conservatively estimated in mid-2005 to be generating at least £5.4 billion annually. Taking the use of other drugs into account, the conservative estimate would be of the order of £7.0 billion annually. However analysts believe that the actual cash-flow generated as a consequence of the permissive supply of drugs into the United Kingdom could be much higher. Usage follows supply, not the other way round. The Government cynically maximises the potential for cash-flow generation by means of National Health Service prescription of methadone for heroin addicts, so that when released from treatment, they revert to heroin usage.

of Customs seizures, so as to allow this lucrative trafficking in human misery, to expand unimpeded. It appears to be 'justified' by the same dishonest argument that is used in the United States and was spelled out by William Casey in his Affidavit.

With the two main political parties hooked into this criminalised system, Britain is rapidly cascading downwards into the same abyss as the United States; and hardly a single prominent voice is heard in Westminster, on the BBC, or anywhere except sometimes in the columns of 'The Guardian' newspaper, complaining about this disgraceful, scandalous and abhorrent state of affairs. When the Author asked informants whether contenders for the leadership of the British Conservative Party were liable to 'go along' with this scandal, he was informed that David Davis deplores this abuse. But does anyone else? One or more senior figures are reported to be addicted to crack cocaine.

Ignorance in Britain, not least in media circles, concerning the clandestine official forces that are engaged in drug-trafficking is almost universal. On 5th July 2005, extensive publicity was given to a report by Lord Birt, the former Director General of the BBC, who is paid by the Prime Minister to 'think ahead' on behalf of the Downing Street Strategy Unit, which exposed the extent to which the British Government's purported anti-drugs policy had failed. The report effectively stated that the result of the 'war against drugs' so far had been a massive increase in consumption. The massive increase in consumption was facilitated by GO-2/MI6, but of course this fact, of which Lord Birt, in fairness, may have been ignorant, was never mentioned. If an allusion to the possible involvement of Britain's own intelligence cadres in drug-trafficking and facilitating the operations of two drug cartels was included in Lord Birf s original draft, any such reference had been removed by the time the document was made available for public consumption. If Lord Birt had consulted the right people in the intelligence community, we would certainly have learned about this abomination.

Lord Birt employed management consultancy-speak and semi-spurious quantifying techniques to describe the Government's failure on this score, illustrated by the report's finding that traffickers into the British market enjoy such high profits that seizure rates of 60%-80% are needed in order for there to be any impact on the flow of drugs into the country - whereas nothing greater than 20% has ever been achieved. The document was presented in full to the Prime Minister in June 2003. On 1st July 2005, following action under the new British Freedom of Information Act, only 52 of its 105 pages were published. Release took place on the eve of the ghastly 'New World Order' 'Live 8 'concert', a mass mind-manipulation and propaganda fest fronted by a character called Sir Bob Geldof who seems to be 'licensed' from on high to mastermind such mass psychology operations. By publishing the document immediately ahead of that event, the authorities had hoped that its findings would be 'buried'; so 'The Guardian', which is seized of the Government's propensity to play such routine dirty tricks, cleared its front page on 5th July 2005 to provide maximum coverage to the report, which was supposed

UK DRUG USAGE ESTIMATES*: MID-2003

These estimates are conservative*	HEROIN	CRACK	COCAINE
Estimated user numbers [data not additive]	260,000	140,000	250,000
Estimated average annual spend per user	£10,000	£10,000	£5,500
Annual cash-flow generated per year	£2,600,000,000	£1,400,000,000	£1,400,000,000
Price per gram	£60.00	£105.00	£60.00
Derived retail tonnes consumed per annum	31	10	22

Estimated UK usage and spending on heroin, crack and cocaine. Source: Downing Street Strategy Unit to represent Phase One of Downing Street's reappraisal of UK official drugs policy. In December 2005, Lord Birt brought forth Phase Two of his analysis, entitled 'Diagnoses and Recommendations', which remained unpublished when this study went to press.

The half of the Phase One report that was not published, but was nevertheless leaked to 'The Guardian', contained a scathing verdict on UK official operations to disrupt the drugs supply chain. This was the nearest that Lord Birt felt able to go (or his official censors would allow him to go) in drawing public attention to the fact that Britain has a criminal government. The 'missing' information summarised by the newspaper concluded that the estimated UK annual supply of heroin and cocaine, which it said could be transported into the country in five standard-sized shipping containers, had a value conservatively estimated at £4.0 billion. Among the officially suppressed data (withheld because it was supplied by a security agency) was a table provided by the National Criminal Intelligence Service showing average UK street prices for various drugs. The average cost tor a heavy cannabis (marihuana) user was given as £89 a week, and £525 for a user of crack cocaine. Users of cocaine were said to be spending £420 a week, and heroin addicts £300 weekly: see Figure 30, on page 170.

The suppressed pages, according to 'The Guardian', stated that the drugs supply market into Britain is sophisticated, and that attempts to intervene had not resulted (as of June 2003) in sustainable disruption to the market at any level. 'Government interventions against the drug business are a cost of doing business, rather than a substantive threat to the industry's viability.... Because upstream UK suppliers enjoy high profits, they are more able to absorb the cost of interception. Thus upstream seizures may temporarily impact street availability, but are unlikely to threaten the viability of any individual business'. Stressing the hopeless inadequacy of seizure rates, the study said that the outcome over the preceding decade and a half had been that, 'despite interventions at every point in the supply chain, cocaine and heroin consumption has been rising, prices [have been] falling, and drugs have continued to reach users'.

Since 'The Guardian' had access to the pages of the first Birt Report which were withheld under the Freedom of Information Act, and since the newspaper's coverage made no mention of the involvement of intelligence services, it may be assumed that it was made clear to the newspaper that such references would not be welcome. But they are necessary. And now that intelligence confirmation of this scandal has been forthcoming it will be interesting to see whether the filthy activities of GO-2/MI6 are brought to a halt through an overdue change of personnel, or whether, as usually happens, the buck will be passed, the messenger will be shot, and the crisis will simply escalate.

Lord Birf s report subsided, unfortunately, into the usual mushy rhetoric about the number of deaths in Britain from drugs (749 annually from heroin and methadone) being nothing like the 6,000 annual deaths from alcohol abuse and the 100,000 deaths inflicted by smoking tobacco. There were 674 annual hospital admissions on mental health grounds resulting from cannabis use, compared with an average of 3,480 in the case of heroin users (on the basis of the outdated data contained in the report). But three million people in Britain (5% of the population) use illicit drugs every year. Figure 28 shows the exponential notified increase in UK dependent opiate and cocaine users between 1970 and 2000 inclusive. It reveals that prior to the collapse of morality and the international competitive drug-running free-for-all presided over and facilitated by intelligence communities, there were hardly any dependent opiate and cocaine users in the United Kingdom at all.

Drugs are distributed not least at mass Psy-Ops events such as the Glastonbury

Festival which coincides every year with the occult summer solstice, and which attracts hoardes of brainwashed young (and not-so-young) people, who waste their weekends sleeping together and smoking pot, while listening to tawdry, often Satanic, sounds from a distant rostrum - a pastime which binds them ever more closely into the decadent 'New Age' of Aquarius subculture, leaving their minds and souls empty, their bodies exhausted, and their spirits alienated as far as Satan can procure, from their Maker. The 'Live 8' 'concert' of trashy 'music' held in Hyde Park at which Sir Bob Geldof was hugged in public by Tony Blair in a revolting display of touchy-feeliness, was another such deliberately demoralising artificial event, which the British media blew up out of all proportion. These mass Psy-Ops events, which occur with ever increasing frequency as the New Underworld Order unfolds, are intended inter alia to substitute 'global values' for the lost morality which has been fostered in part by the distribution of drugs by criminalised intelligence communities allied to the Illuminati. They are components of the continuing, orchestrated campaign to try to force 'universal values' upon the whole of humanity, and to deny our precious individuality.

THE PRESCRIPTION OF THE GERMAN AGENT, LAVRENTII BERIA

It has already been stated that Lavrentii Beria, Stalin's odious Interior Ministry secret police chief, was a deep-cover German agent. This fact is well understood among UK

'THE COMMUNIST MANUAL OF INSTRUCTIONS ON PSYCHO-POLITICAL WARFARE' With an Introduction by Lavrentii Beria

From Volume 9, Congressional Record, 1939

'This misalignment of the loyalty of youth... sets the proper stage for a realignment of their loyalties with Communism. Creating a greed for drugs, sexual misbehaviour and uncontrolled freedom... will with ease bring about our alignment'.

- Note that Beria understood that demand for drugs has to be created (through supply), since of course, no natural demand for such poisonous substances exists - a simple reality that UK and US authorities choose to ignore.
- Beria prescribed that Psychopolitical operatives masquerading as 'mental healers' must be placed in the close entourage of the children of prominent leaders. This method represents a manifestation of the Illuminati's rule, based upon Jesuitical practice, of positioning their agentur adjacent to seats of power, or better still, occupying powerful positions. This is why intelligence officers are Presidents, Prime Ministers, holders of high office, and top officials in leading countries. In the psychopolitical context German intelligence has successfully destabilised foreign regimes using 'mental healers' - instances being: (1) Rasputin, a German agent who operated right deep inside the Russian Royal Family; (2) Mrs Wallis Simpson, an agent for the Abwehr, who penetrated the British Royal Family with a view to influencing the King to disapprove of war against Germany. Edward VIII was allowed to claim that he had renounced the throne because of love for his 'commoner' companion, but in reality he was forced to abdicate when the Abwehr's penetration was exposed; and (3) Susie Orbach, a 'mental healer' (psychoanalyst) from the US West Coast allegedly not recognised professionally in London, who may have targeted Princess Diana. ■

BRAIN-WASHING

A Synthesis of the Russian Textbook on Psychopolitics

PSYCHOPOLITICS - The art and science of asserting and maintaining dominion over the thoughts and loyalties of individuals, officers, bureaus, and masses, and the effecting of the conquest of enemy nations through "mental healing."

Figure 31: 'Brain-Washing': A Synthesis of the Russian Textbook on Psychopolitics', or the 'Communist Manual of Instructions on Psychopolitical Warfare', as exposed by Kenneth Goff in testimony before a US Congressional Committee hearing in Washington DC [Extracted from Volume 9 of the 1939 Congressional Record].

intelligence operatives. So, following Stalin's death, Beria took it upon himself to implement instructions from his covert German (Nazi) controllers, and travelled to East Germany where he had intended to start the process which the KGB and the GRU actually implemented more than a generation later, in 1989 - at the end of the 40-year period that was secretly agreed between the Allies and Stalin during which Germany was to be occupied by all the wartime 'Allies'.

While working for his occultic Illuminist meister, Beria indulged in the extirpation of human beings on a scale which would have made his German mentors, Karl Marx and Adolf Hitler, envious. The proportions of Beria's 'population reduction' orgy of terror will, however, have been marginal compared with what may have been planned for the United States, and which would be put into effect if the Fourth Reich were to complete its elevation into view on the ruins of the Republic. This is what Nazis stated, in a document exposed in Chapter 8, that they intend to achieve; and many thinking Americans who have managed to avoid being brainwashed and psychologically manipulated by their partially criminalised intelligence services, recognise instinctively what could be in store. Given Lavrentii Beria's long covert service to the Nazi International at the epicentre of Stalin's murderous Illuminist regime, and given that Beria was one of the most odiously Satanic of all the Illuminati's 'Soviet' revolutionaries, it is instructive to review what this ogre had to say about the use of drugs to poison and destabilise targeted populations.

His poisonous advice appeared in a textbook prepared by the Comintern for use by US underground Communist training schools. It contains an address by Lavrentii Beria to American students attending Lenin University in Moscow, prior to 1936. The text of this address was published as a Foreword to the subversive document - which was originally entitled 'THE Communist Manual of Instructions in Psychopolitical Warfare', and was employed in the United States for the training of Communist political cadres in the 1930s.

It was first exposed by a Mr Kenneth Goff, who was a dues-paying member of the Communist Party USA (CPUSA) from 2nd May 1936 to 10th October 1939, when he resigned in disgust, in order to appear voluntarily before the Un-American Activities Committee in Washington, which was chaired at that time by Martin Dies. During the years of his US Party membership, Goff attended a Communist Party school located at 113 E. Wells Street, Milwaukee, Wisconsin, which functioned under the name of The Eugene Debs Labor School. The curriculum included training in psychopolitics, including 'the art of capturing a nation through brainwashing and fake mental health - the subjecting of whole nations of people to the rule of the Kremlin by the capturing of their minds'[48]. This conditioning included the use of drugs, and the sexualisation of youth, with the deliberate intent of disassociating young people from their national loyalties, and their families. It is manifest that Beria's evil prescription has been fulfilled to the letter, through the creation of Satanic 'music' and a drug-pop culture which alienates them from their families, promotes wholesale promiscuity, and procures the breakdown of the family, institutions and society that has taken place.

It is also clear that Mr Goff did not understand that the programme he was outlining was the agenda of the Illuminati. In the document exposing the Illuminati, dating from the late 18th century that the Author examines in Chapter 7, it will be seen that the promoters of societal breakdown knew, and know, that what they prescribe for youth is wrong and undesirable, but they justify what they prescribe with the excuse that the outcome will be 'for the greater good' (of the Brotherhood): the end justifies the means.

'THE COMMUNIST MANUAL ON PSYCHOPOUTICAL WARFARE' AND PARALLEL U.S. ABOMINATIONS

'The Communist Manual on Psychopolitical Warfare' was used in the United States in the 1930s for training Communist cadres. The Manual was exposed by an American Communist, Kenneth Goff, who resigned from the Communist Party USA (CPUSA), in 1939, after three years as a dues-paying member, operating under his own name and an alias, John Keats.

In 1939, Goff appeared before the Un-American Activities Committee chaired by Martin Dies, in Washington DC, and his testimony was published in Volume 9 of the Congressional Record of that year. Allegations that the text was a British forgery, are false.

The Soviet Illuminati regime defined psychopolitics as 'the art and science of asserting and maintaining dominion over the thoughts and loyalties of individuals, officers, bureaus, and the masses, and the effecting of the conquest of enemy nations through "mental healing"'.

By 'mental healing' was meant intervention by fake 'psychiatrists' whose evil task, while masquerading as that of healing, was actually to destabilise and control the minds of their targets. Particular emphasis was placed upon the targeting of the spouses and children of prominent figures in the policymaking and political firmaments of 'enemy' countries.

The families of these persons', the Manual asserted, 'are often deranged from idleness and glut, and this fact must be played upon, even created. The normal health and wildness of a rich man's son must be twisted and perverted and explained into neurosis and then, assisted by a timely administration of drugs or violence, turned into criminality or insanity. This brings at once someone in "mental healing"' (e.g., Rasputin, a German agent) 'into confidential contact with the family, and from this point on, the very most must then be made of that contact'.

This prescription is identical to the splinter-programming operations of specialist US intelligence cadres working within the framework of the Himmlerian tradition and such mind-control programmes, designed to split targeted personalities, as MK-ULTRA Project Monarch, under which Multiple Personality Disorder was created and subdivided so that the victim acquires a wide range of 'alters' which his or her handler can trigger using pre-programmed words or phrases from 'The Wizard of Oz', 'Alice in Wonderland', and many other freakish mind-fantasies.

The fact that Lavrentii Beria, who has been exposed as a German agent, like Rasputin, was promoting the same Satanic destructive degradation prescriptions as the heirs of Nazi psychological warfare operatives, provides irrefutable confirmation of the common Illuminati origins of the two primary 20th Century 'Black' regimes, Soviet Communism and Nazism.

In the United States, official researchers in this field established how to exploit the Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD), or Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) created by means of near-death trauma (violence) and gross sexual abuse in their victims. DID represents the mind's sane response to insanity - providing a mechanism for dealing with trauma that is beyond comprehension. For instance, incestuous rape (extensively used for this purpose, as parents in this business ritually abuse their children) violates primitive instinct and surpasses pain tolerance.

By compartmentalising the memory of such horrendous abuse, the rest of the mind can function 'normally' as though nothing had happened - until reminded of the past abuse. This compartmentalisation, Himmler's researchers and their Satanic US and German CIA heirs discovered, is created by the brain actually shutting down neuron pathways to a specific part of the brain. The same part of the brain that is already conditioned to the trauma then deals with it again and again, as 'needed'.

Lavrentii Beria, being an agent for the Abwehr who reached the position of head of the Soviet NKVD, was talking 'the same language'. The 'Manual', to which he provided an introduction, taught, for instance, that 'exercises in sexual attack on patients should be practiced by the psychopolitical operative to demonstrate the inability of the patient under pain-drug hypnosis to recall the attack, while indoctrinating a lust for further sexual activity on the part of the patient'. For this purpose, unsuspecting patients were to be satiated and hooked with opiates, cocaine, and other mind-bending drugs. ■

We can see this much more clearly today, given the intensive research that has been taking place into these issues, and the brazen lack of concern shown by promulgators of the 'New Age' abominations, about such exposures as have already occurred. Of special interest here is the Communist Manual's instructions concerning the distribution of drugs:

'By making available drugs of various kinds, by giving the teenager alcohol, by praising his wildness, by stimulating him with sex literature and advertising to him or her practices as taught at the Sexpol[49], the psychopolitical operator can create the necessary attitude of chaos, idleness and worthlessness into which can then be cast the solution which will give the teenager complete freedom everywhere - Communism'.

In case it should be imagined that the prescribed outcome (Fasco-Communism) is outmoded, any brief study of the logical conclusion of what is happening and intended in both Europe and the United States will confirm that the projected end-product is 'Fascist Communism'. And if it should be thought that, as a covert Nazi, Lavrentii Beria would not have wanted to promote Communism, a moment's recollection of the Stalin-Hitler dialectic ('International' Socialism versus 'National' Socialism) will bring the observer back 'on message'. Recall, too, that the regimes of Lenin/Trotsky and Stalin, on the one hand, and of Hitler, Himmler, Goebbels et al on the other, were the first mega-Illuminati Black regimes, created as models for the future, and based on the false dialectical 'opposites' developed by the 'two Karls', Ritter (Fascism) and Marx (Communism) [see page 558] whose work was sponsored by the Illuminati. Because the Illuminati, and their Nazi associates have never been defeated - the destruction of the Hitler regime having been mistaken for the destruction of Nazism - these demonic forces, driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer', have never rested, and intend to implement their hellish plans. As the Nazi paper examined in Chapter 8 explained, 'for us, the war never ended'.

The psychopolitical operator (a false psychiatrist or psychoanalyst, such as those spawned especially in the United States following the mass migration of revolutionary actives like Wilhelm Reich, from Freud's Vienna-based school) was in a position, the 'Communist Manual' advised, to turn children into beasts:

'The role of the psychopolitical operator in this is very strong. He can, from his position as an authority on the mind, advise all manner of destructive measures. He can teach the lack of control of this child at home' ('do as you please' education). 'He can instruct, in an optimum situation, the entire nation in how to handle children -and instruct them, so that the children, given no control, given no real home, can run wildly about with no responsibility for their nation or for themselves'.

This agenda [see also Chapter 2] has long since been implemented in both Britain and the United States - taking the dark form of 'Outcome-Based Education' in which the child's attitudes and acceptance of 'universal values' are rated far above his or her acquisition of knowledge and skills. It is hardly surprising that in neither country can sizeable numbers of graduates spell or compose sentences properly, and that in the United States, attention spans can now be measured in nanoseconds. This is obvious whenever one is unfortunate enough to glance at almost any US TV programme: sub-liminal messages and rapidly changing images are intentionally consistent with the minimisation of attention spans. This condition in turn maximises the potential for the malevolent Illuminati elite to exploit, manipulate, mislead, deceive, control, and ultimately perpetrate atrocities against, its own citizens, with 100% impunity. That people could be so consistently ill-intentioned is hard to comprehend: but we are describing reality.

'TO MAINTAIN AND EXPAND POWER, RULERS MUST DEPLOY TERROR'

The intended mass psychopolitical offensive was delayed, beyond the Soviet Union, because of the outbreak of the Second World War. It was resumed in the 1950s, after Stalin's death, when it was integrated into the Communist long-range deception strategy later exposed by Anatoliy Golitsyn in his classic works 'New Lies for Old' and 'The Perestroika Deception'[50]. With our closer understanding of the German origins of these evils, the precise correlation of Lavrentii Beria's drug-based prescription for the creation of societal 'chaos out of order', and the parallel prescriptions of the Frankfurt School [see Addendum, Chapter 4], become glaringly self-evident. The 'Communist Manual' further prescribed the psychomanipulative ingredients necessary for any sustained reign of 'state terror', the relevance of which can be seen much more clearly in the light of contemporary random global terrorism attacks such as the DVD/Al-Qaeda 9/11 atrocities, Madrid or the DVD-coordinated terrorist attacks in London on 7th July 2005.

For instance, the 'Communist Manual' proclaimed that: 'An element of terror must always be present on the part of those who would govern'. Were George Bush Sr. and Jr., Vice-President Cheney and their cohorts ever students of the 'Communist Manual on Psychopolitical Warfare'? Their obvious understanding of the role that terror is meant to play, according to the Illuminati, in the retention and maximisation of power, appears to be a practical consequence of their comparable indoctrination, programming and conditioning as controlled and controlling operatives through MK-ULTRA-type mind-focused and sex-based Monarch abominations - Mr Cheney having at one stage allegedly been in charge of the MK-ULTRA and related Himrnlerian-Tavistock conditioning programmes developed by the CIA. The pedigree of these Satanic mind- and personality-modification methods stretches back to the Nazi scientists [Chapter 8] and earlier.

Lavrentii Beria's odious prescriptions must seem primitive by the standards of the diabolical perpetrators of Himmlerian Psychological Operations and the mind- and personality-modification techniques that the CIA, the Tavistock Institute and other centres of these evil traditions in the West, and these 'inventors of evil things', have since contrived to develop. But 'qualitatively', there is no difference whatsoever between the cold prescriptions and institutionalised brutality taught by Beria, Himmler and Cheney.

THE END JUSTIFIES THE MEANS • MAN IS AN EXPENDABLE ANIMAL

The reprobate and hellish Lavrentii Beria taught that 'the (false) psychiatrist (by which was meant: psychopolitical operative) is aptly suited to this role, for his brutalities... are inexplicably complex, and entirely out of view of human understanding.... If you would have obedience, you must make it clearly understood that you have no mercy. Man is an animal. He understands, in the final analysis, only those things, which a brute understands.... The end thoroughly justifies the means. The degradation of populaces is less inhuman than their destruction by atomic fission, for to an animal who lives only once, any life is sweeter than death'.

As will be seen in the Chapter on the Illuminati, The end justifies the means' is the sect's primary and explicitly stated rationale - central to its conspiratorial modus operandi, and of greater fundamental importance even than 'Do as thou wilt', the professed motto of one of the Illuminati's most perniciously reprobate manifestations, Ordo Templi Orientis, to which George Bush Sr. allegedly belongs.

Lavrentii Beria, the German (Nazi) agent operating at the epicentre of Stalin's dictatorship, who endorsed these utterly depraved, authoritarian 'principles', which included the ruthless maximisation of the potential of drug-trafficking operations as a weapon against targeted populations, met an appropriately ghastly end, crawling on his knees and begging for the mercy that he had systematically denied to millions of his victims.

According to one description of Beria's last moments, the Soviet KGB 'defector' Yuri Ivanovich Nosenko 'made an interesting revelation that, if true, adds a curious footnote to the story of one of history's most diabolical villains. Nosenko claimed that he was one of the agents who arrested Lavrentii Pavlovich Beria, the man who had been Stalin's chief executioner during the mass exterminations of the prewar purges. As head of the People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs (NKVD), a predecessor of the KGB, Beria had presided over the most feared secret police agency of its day. Millions died at his orders. But, according to Nosenko, when given a pistol and told to shoot himself, Beria cried uncontrollably, clutching at the boots of those who tried, in vain, to convince him to do "the honourable thing". Beria was finally shot dead by one of his captors', who is believed by some to have been Nosenko himself.

As elaborated in the preceding Chapter, the mentally deranged perpetrators of Works of Darkness, whether actual members of the huge sect of the Illuminati, or their duped operatives, agentur, adepts and implemented, have only one product: death.

Which is of course why drug-trafficking, which leads addicts to an early grave, is their preferred means of financing the completion of their World Revolution, a.k.a. the New Underworld Order. Pending their early demise, drug addicts (whose fragile lives have been destroyed by these Dark Actors, the odious intelligence operatives who have prostituted themselves and their countries' integrity for the cash-flows 'needed' to finance covert control operations without the sanction of the legislatures that are supposed to oversee their activities) are left to attack old ladies and to rob passers-by, in their desperate search for funds with which to finance the addictions induced by the supply of drugs from which the Illuminati finance their global hegemony abominations.

As for these deaths, they represent, for the corrupt perpetrators, 'collateral damage'. The end justifies the means. Human life is expendable. Man is an animal. This doctrine is the Luciferian reverse of the Way, the Truth and the Life. Our consolation is that, as Paul tells us, 'they which commit such things are worthy of death' [Romans, 1, 32].

Verne Lyon, a 'former' CIA undercover operative, who appears to have realised that the slogan at Langley is a lie, and has understood where all this is leading, states:

'Given the power granted to the office of the Presidency and the unaccountability of the intelligence agencies, widespread illegal domestic operations [by the CIA] are certain. We as a people should remember history, and not repeat it. It is therefore essential that the CIA be reorganized and stripped of its covert operations capability. Effective Congressional oversight is also an important condition for ending the misuse of the intelligence apparatus that has plagued every US Administration since the formation of the CIA. A great deal is at risk: our personal freedoms, as well as the viability of this society. The CIA must be put in its place.'

'Should we demand or allow anything less, we will remain vulnerable to these abuses and will face the risk of decaying into a lawless state destined to self-destruction'.

This prophecy was uttered many years ago. Its accuracy cannot be disputed. It is late in the day, indeed, for honourable Americans and Britons to begin a belated agitation for the drug crimes committed against humanity by their intelligence barons to cease, and for those powerful figures who mastermind these abominations to be brought to justice. Given the depravity of their crimes, lamp-post treatment would hardly be out of order. ■

Chapter 3: THE LURE OF DRUGS: Notes and references:

1. Publicised in the classic work 'Marx and Satan' by Pastor Richard Wumbrand, a former leader of the underground church in Romania, who was of Jewish extraction and who spent 14 years in a dungeon located beneath the palace inhabited by the dictator, Nicolae Ceausescu. This remarkable book is available from The Voice of the Martyrs: www.persecution.com.
2. The 'seething energies of Lucifer': see e.g., page 72 and Note 52 to Chapter 2, on page 78.
3. Isaiah Chapter 14, verses 12-14. Verses 15-17 continue appropriately: ''Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?' Who does this remind you of?
4. 'The mystery of iniquity' is mentioned and explained by the Apostle Paul in his Second Epistle to the Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verse 7: 'For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked [One] be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders. And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they receive not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie; That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness'. This is a perfect description of those who invoke the pretext of 'peace' and protecting people from terrorist attacks, as justification for perpetrating atrocities. By his brilliant phrase 'the mystery of iniquity', Paul also means that the rational, normal person trying to lead his life in accordance with civilised standards of morality cannot understand what drives these evil people: it is a mystery. This mystery is really only explainable in spiritual terms, namely that they are 'possessed': driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer'.
5. 'The Perestroika Deception: The World's Slide towards the Second October Revolution ['Weltoktober']', Anatoliy Golitsyn, Edward Harle Limited, London and New York, 1995 and 1999 (reprinted four times). Copies of this work are available, as is the case with all our titles, from the London and New York offices (www.edwardharle.com).
6. 'Soviet Analyst'' is edited by this Author and is published by World Reports Limited, 108 Horseferry Road, Westminster, London SW1P 2EF, UK. For details, see website: www.sovietanalyst.com.
7. 'Caught Red-handed', Soviet Analyst, Volume 26, Number 2, February 2000, page 2.
8. 'Thieves' World: The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime', by the late Claire Sterling, Simon and Schuster, New York, 1994, page 113; from Claire's interview with Boris Uvarov in Moscow, July 1992.
9. 'Die Welt', 29 August 2002.
10. 'Soviet Analyst', Volume 29, Number 7, May 2005, page 12.
11. In 'The Party's Gold', by Igor Bunich, Kiev, circa 1986, the author recalls how Stalin ordered his NKVD (Interior Ministry) chief, Genrikh Grigoryevich Yagoda, to demand full details of all the co-revolutionaries' secret Swiss bank accounts and their numbers. Yagoda duly procured this information and furnished it to Stalin (Djugashvili), but omitted details of his own Swiss bank accounts. Stalin, however, who had his own 'inner inner' super-secret intelligence service, checked the bank account numbers off against the list supplied by his own agents, and found Yagoda's secret bank account details, which had been omitted from the list that Yagoda had himself prepared. Stalin now demanded that all those on the list repatriate the 'assets of the Party-State' which they had raped ('the Party's Gold'), which all did, hoping that by repatriating the assets they had stolen, their lives would at least be saved. But when the time came, Yagoda received a bullet through the temples, like all of the other prominent Leninist revolutionaries with the single exception of Krupskaya, Lenin's widow, who broke down and wept in Stalin's presence. Stalin relented and preserved Krupskaya's life. GRU-President Vladimir Putin's campaign against the 'first generation' of (KGB-GRU) 'oligarchs' (who are today being succeeded by an even more flamboyant group of such operatives) is modelled upon Stalin's operation to recover 'the Party's Gold', i.e. the assets of the Party-State which were 'privatised', for international public consumption and cosmetic hoodwinking purposes, into the hands of the selected KGB and GRU operatives who later became known as 'the oligarchs'.
12. The Washington Post', 29th July 2000.
13. 'Red Mafiya: How the Russian mob has invaded America', Robert I. Friedman, Little, Brown and Company, Boston, New York and London, 2000, page 149.
14. 'Police swoop on Spain's Costa crime kings', The Guardian', London, 21st June 2005, page 10.
15. Human sacrifices at Satanic abominations now take place all over the United States at the Summer Solstice, around 22nd June and at the annual event of Demon Revels (the High Grand Climax) on the 24th December. Other occult dates on which such atrocities (animal and/or human sacrifice and dismemberment) are perversely revelled in, include 7th January (St Winebald's Day), 20th January (Inauguration Day, 2005; and another Grand Climax Day), 2nd February (Sabbat Festival with Satanic revels), 25th February (St. Valpurgis Day), 1st March (St Eichstadt), 14th April (variable date of Good Friday, the day of the death of Christ, which is greatly celebrated by these people), 21st April, 30th April (Walpurgisnacht),

20th July (five weeks and one day after the Summer Solstice), 1st August (Lammas Day), 7th September (Marriage to the Beast Satan), 20th September, and 28th and 31st October (so-called Satanic Holy High days). For human sacrificial victims, if animals are not used, the perpetrators of these atrocities - towards which official blind eyes are routinely turned, not least because of the involvement of elements of the official structures and law enforcement in such activities - steal babies from hospitals, or else use drugged females. In March 2005, it was reported in the 'mainstream' media that the FBI has a list of 22,000 women in the United States who have been reported missing, and that none of the women on this list are ever found. Women victims are typically scouted for at all-night orgy-rave parties, during which they are drugged, and from which they never return. Indeed some such parties are staged for this very purpose. Commentaries allege that the actual number of females who have disappeared in the United States is far larger, by an order of magnitude. The same kind of thing takes place in the United Kingdom, whence so many of these evils originate. For instance, an ordained churchman, known to the Editor, told us several years ago that the number of cases of human sacrifice which he himself knew about in a given recent year, in the diocese of Exeter alone, was 19. Multiplied by the number of Church of England dioceses, this would imply several hundred abominations of actual female human sacrifice in England and Wales alone, every year. If reported at all, such intelligence tends to be based upon anonymously supplied information, or upon leads collected by concerned priests. The same source further informed us that the actual data about these 19 human sacrifice instances were expunged from a report which is evidently compiled from time to time by the Church, and routinely 'buried'.

16. Rachel Ehrenfeld, 'Narco Terrorism: How Governments around the World have used the Drug Trade to finance and further terrorist activities', Basic books, HarperCollins Publishers, New York, 1990, page 177.

17. Rachel Ehrenfeld, whom the Author has interviewed and whose pioneering work and serious approach to the subject he greatly admires, addressed, in 'Narco Terrorism', the operations of intelligence criminalist drug traffickers from Bulgaria, Cuba, Lebanon and Syria, Colombia, Peru, Bolivia and the United States, omitting the drug-trafficking activities of the Israelis, the British and the Chinese Communists and Triads. Although her omission of information about Israeli trafficking may have been intentional, the lack of information about the drug-trafficking operations of the Chinese Triads, is paralleled in the present work, for reasons of space. But a brief note on the Chinese Triads' drug operations appears in the box on page 182.

18. Jeffrey Robinson, 'The Laundrymen': Inside the World's Third Largest Business', Simon & Schuster Ltd, London. Mr Robinson had been resident in London for 15 years when the third edition of this work was published in 1998.

19. Robinson, 'The Laundrymen', op. cit., page 332.

20. Robinson, 'The Laundrymen', op. cit., page 332.

21. Robinson, 'The Laundrymen', op. cit., pages 332-333.

22. Report by Scott Ritter dated 19th June 2005.

23. Scott Ritter, op. cit.

24. Scott Ritter, ibid.

25. The entire proceedings of the Conference (the International Conference of Communist and Workers' Parties, held in June 1969 in Moscow - a replay of the 1960 81-Party Conference at which the Soviet long-range strategy was approved) were based on Leninist methods of work, typical of the Communist movement, viz democratism and the equality of all [Communist] Parties in considering the agenda. 'Proletarian Internationalism: Guideline of the Communists, V. Polyansky, Novosti Press Agency Publishing House, Moscow, 1970, page 96. This document happens also to contain an officially sanctioned confirmation of the accuracy of Anatoliy Golitsyn's analysis elaborated in his classic works 'New Lies of Old' and 'The Perestroika Deception'concerning the Communist Party of the Soviet Union's long-range deception strategy. The following passage (pages 94-95) says it all: The 1957 and 1960 Moscow Conferences of representatives of Communist and Workers' Parties have made a deep imprint upon the history of the International Communist Movement. They made a major contribution to the development of Marxist-Leninist theory. At these Conferences by the collective efforts of the fraternal Parties, the objective laws of development of the world revolutionary process were defined, and the principles of the international strategy of the Communist movement in a new situation elaborated'.

26. 'The Guardian', G2 section, 6th July 2005, page 5.

27. 'Political Affairs, Theoretical Journal of the Communist Party CSA', September/October 1994, page 43: The Central Committee of the Party [entitled] The Union of Communists' and the Moscow City Committee of the CPSU [= Communist Party of the Soviet Union - Ed.] congratulate you on the 75th anniversary of the founding of the Communist Party, USA.... And today, in the time of growing reaction in the world, the CPUSA remains loyal to Marxism-Leninism and continues to be one of the most authoritative vanguards of the world Communist movement. We, Soviet Communists, will always remember your moral support.... We are glad to tell you that... the Communist movement in Russia and the Soviet Union is reviving and its influence is growing'. The April 1995 issue of 'Political Affairs' contained an article by Sam Webb, Secretary of the Labor Commission of the CPUSA, who had earlier returned from the Third Congress of the Russian Communist Party, held in Moscow in January 1995. Page 4 of this issue contained the following paragraph: 'Also attending were other components of the Communist Movement in Russia. The most prominent was the Communist Party of the Soviet Union, which acts as a coordinating structure of the parties of the former USSR'. These references are entirely consistent with the state-

ment by President Gorbachev at the 29th Congress of the CPSU on 6th July 1990, that 'in a democratic [sic!] state, a changeover to a multiparty system is inevitable. Various political parties are gradually being formed in our country. At the same time, a fundamental renewal of the CPSU is inevitable. What is the most civilised process of modernising the Party, the one least painful for the people? First, it is necessary to organisationally codify all the platforms that exist in the CPSU and to give every Communist time for [controlled - Ed] political self-determination. I am sure that most rank-and-file Communists link the Party's future with the democratic wing. Secondly, to change the name of the Party [RELABELLING]. It should be a party of democratic socialism. [And] the Party should divest itself of all State functions'. • As Anatoliy Golitsyn explained and anticipated, without being burdened by the day-to-day running of the country, the CPSU could concentrate upon implementing, on a global scale, the Leninist model of the Revolution. Note, finally, that in Gorbachev's statement, there is a presumption that the Communist Party of the Soviet Union shall remain in existence, as a supremely powerful political force, which is exactly what happened. Nowhere is there any suggestion that the CPSU should be wound up: and it wasn't. • THE PARALLEL WITH THE SECRET, COVERT NAZI CONTINUUM IS STRIKING. THE NAZI PARTY WAS 'DIVESTED OF ALL ITS STATE FUNCTIONS' WITH THE DEFEAT OF HITLER'S THIRD REICH IN 1945. IT WAS THEREFORE LEFT TO DEVELOP AND APPLY LONG-RANGE GLOBAL 'THOUSAND-YEAR REICH' STRATEGY, WITHOUT HAVING TO WORRY ABOUT DAY-TO-DAY POLITICAL MANAGEMENT.

28. The Author, who was allowed to record the interview in question, which took place in 2004, has this statement on tape, which is stored remotely in a secure location.

29. Scott Ritter, report dated 21st June 2005, op. cit.

30. In an extended, recorded, interview conducted by the Author on 9th June 2005.

31. Jeffrey Robinson, 'The Laundrymen', op. cit, page 334.

32. Taped statement, in the same interview as is referred to in Note 30.

33. 'Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West', by Dr Joseph D. Douglass Jr., Edward Harle Limited, London and New York, 1999. See website: www.edwardharle.com.

34. The text of this Affidavit was first published in 'The Latin American Times', Volume 17, Number 8, January 2003, World Reports Limited, 108 Horseferry Road, Westminster, London SW1P 2EF, United Kingdom. The Author's attention was drawn to the Affidavit by a US intelligence source who is among those who are disgusted at the corruption of the Agency.

35. Rodney Stich, 'Defrauding America', cited by Uri Dowbenko in: 'Bushwhacked: Inside Stories of True Conspiracy', Conspiracy Digest LLC, Montana, 2003, pages 89 ef seq.

36. Uri Dowbenko, 'Bushwhacked', op. cit. [in Note 35], page 91.

37. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 91.

38. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 92.

39. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 83.

40. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, 91.

41. Senior US intelligence operatives lecturing on a cruise off the West Coast of the United States in 2003 boasted openly of the intelligence community's exceptional success in bringing the mainstream media under its control. A witness who was present divulged to the Author that they boastfully considered this to be their greatest success, by far.

42. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 84.

43. Cited by Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 85.

44. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 94.

45. Uri Dowbenko, op. cit, page 94.

46. 'Rogue Ops: Task Force 121 under FBI investigation', intelligence report by Wayne Madsen, posted on 26th June 2005.

47. H. R. Haldeman, in 'The Ends of Power', New York, 1978, page 64.

48. 'Brainwashing: A synthesis of the Russian Textbook on Psychopolitics', with an Address by Stalin's NKVD Chief, Lavrentii Beria, and an Editorial Note by a former US Communist, Kenneth Goff. The document was made available in association with Goff's testimony before the House Un-American Activities Committee in Washington, DC, in 1939. See main text and Figure 31, page 173.

49. There are very few references in the Communist and Reichian literature to the Sexpol, which was a department of the Lenin School in which 'sexual politics' was taught. The 'methodology' for the exploitation of sexuality for revolutionary purposes was developed mainly by Wilhelm Reich, a leading 'light' of the revolutionary Frankfurt School based at the University of Frankfurt during the Weimar Republic period. Reich invented the phrase 'sexual revolution'. In 1934, Wilhelm Reich was expelled from the German Communist Party, from the International Psychoanalytic Organization [sic], and finally from Germany itself by the Nazis. A Freudian 'clone', Reich was a member of the Austrian Communist Party from 1927 to 1930 (in Vienna) and of the German Communist Party from 1930 to 1934, during which periods he organised sex clinics to help Austrian and German youth. The late Dr Leo Raditsa, a friend of the Author, of St John's College, Annapolis, MD, wrote, in an unpublished manuscript sent to the Author in 1999, that 'the sexual revolution of the sixties and seventies when Reich was read everywhere without, however, much public discussion, could not have occurred without Reich and, of course, his teacher, Freud'.

50. 'New Lies for Old', Anatoliy Golitsyn, Dodd, Mead, New York, 1984. Several years after the publication of this classic work, Dodd Mead went out of business. Subsequently, several illegal pirated editions of the work appeared in the United States, which are in breach of the author's copyright. Using a combin-

ation of his knowledge of the KGB's Leninist methodology and retained inside information, Golitsyn predicted inter alia the removal of the Berlin Wall and the bringing to fruition of the Soviet long-range strategic deception strategy, both of which were duly implemented under President Gorbachev, who had been head of the all-powerful CPSU Administrative Department under Yuri Andropov (Lieberman). Gorbachev (real name Orbach or Korbach) remained head of the KGB Continuum until at least 2005, when his overall supervisory responsibilities may (although the Author personally doubts this) have been taken over by Yevgeniy Primakov (Finkelstein), leaving Gorbachev free to continue escorting a wealthy US West Coast divorcee and gathering intelligence on the US social circuit. The Perestroika Deception, Golitsyn's second classic work, was first published in 1995, and was edited by this Author. It has been reprinted four times and is available from Edward Harle Limited at the London and New York offices [www.edwardharle.com]. This second work contained a large number of predictions about the future course of events, based upon Golitsyn's self-initiated memoranda to the Central Intelligence Agency, which approved publication after screening for security issues. The Soviet Leninist long-range deception strategy is described in both volumes. Additional documented intelligence about the long-range deception strategy is contained in the Author's book 'The European Union Collective', Edward Harle Limited. London and New York, 2002: see again www.edwardharle.com. The details of the Soviet strategic deception component are not elaborated here, as this would take us away from the focus of the present work. The three mentioned titles provide comprehensive information about Soviet strategic deception and how it has been deployed to hoodwink the West - as a key element of the Illuminati's dialectical manipulation process. ■

• • • Note on Putin: That Vladimir Putin is a senior Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) operative is not in doubt, even though very senior CIA officials who were so informed by a contact of the Author's during a 'spy cruise' off the West Coast of the United States, were surprised and alarmed to be advised of this crucial fact, assuming him to be a KGB officer. That Putin is GRU is evident not least from his general demeanour, especially from his fixation with the martial arts. One respected senior hands-on US intelligence officer, who used to go drinking with Putin in Leningrad, and who was interviewed in May 2004, told the Author: 'Of course he's GRU. We always knew he was dangerous because of his preoccupation with judo etc'. 'Mike' Delmart Vreeland, an Office of Naval intelligence operative with hands-on experience in Moscow, separately confirmed that Putin is a GRU officer. Michael Waller, the US expert and historian of the KGB, has reported that a biography of Putin, viewed on the Internet in 1997, alluded to Putin's GRU background, but that this information was edited out of subsequent versions of his biographical details (after he had risen to international prominence). Finally, it is evident from the quite extraordinary hagiography of Putin, 'First Person: An Astonishingly Frank Self-Portrait of Vladimir Putin', ghost-ed by Nataliya Gevorkyan, Natalya Timakova and Andrei Kolesnikov, Public Affairs, Perseus Books Group, New York, 2000, that Putin has a background with Soviet military Intelligence. Putin masterminded the successive satellite 'revolutions' from East Germany, working in collaboration with US intelligence cadres. ■

THE MASONIC CHINESE TRIAD DRUG CADRES

Shamefully, the world's leading countries compete among themselves for advantage in the world's most valuable business - drugs. The Chinese drug-running community is dominated by the criminal offshoots of the Chinese Triad Society, a once colossal 'patriotic' organisation formed to rid China of its hated Manchu overlords, the Ch'ing dynasty. The original Triad Society has continued to flourish in Hong Kong and in every sizeable Chinese community overseas - which means just about everywhere. Most of its members are hardworking, law-abiding citizens. But in the early 1980s, the criminal minority among them was known to be organised into more than 1,500 gangs, with over 500 based in Kong Kong alone, engaged in narcotics, prostitution rackets, illegal gambling, protection rackets, and murder-on-demand.

The Chinese have a long tradition of secret societies, with the first thought to have been formed 2,000 years ago. The resulting instincts for secrecy have given Chinese intelligence a considerable advantage over its foreign rivals, while also ensuring that Chinese criminal organisations have earned a reputation for ruthlessness and efficiency that makes Mazzini's Mafia and its heirs look amateurish.

Writing in the best book on this subject, 'Triangle of Death: The Inside Story of the Triad's-the Chinese Mafia' [Routledge and Kegan Paul, London, ISBN 0-7100-8732-2, date uncertain] the Australian-born researcher, Frank Robertson, stated: 'Today there is no valid comparison between the Triad Society and the Mafia, and even less with Western Freemasonry, although there is a similarity in some of the recognition signals used by the Chinese Society and Masons'. The author distinguishes between the original nationalistic organisation and its non-criminal continuum, which he calls the Triad Society, or 'The Society', and the Chinese criminal gangs, which he calls 'the Triads'. Photographs of the hand-signals used by the Triads show that they are all left-handed, involving elaborate contortions of the left hand to generate signals with exotic titles such as 'Head of Dragon' and 'Tail of Phoenix' (the sign of a branch commander). There is also a photograph of 'the secret Triad hand-clasp used by the Second Lodge in Hong Kong', showing that the Triad initiating the greeting uses his left hand to clasp his colleague's right hand in a completely unnatural manner. The author's dismissal of Masonic influence or connections is obviously inaccurate, since the facts that Triads operate in Lodges, and use initiation ceremonies and secret handshakes, make it clear that this organisation, like its lethal Japanese criminal counterpart, the Yakuza, is a huge Masonic op. ■

CHAPTER FOUR

THE HEX OF HIMMLER

THE PSY-OPS DEVIL IN THE RITUAL FIRE SACRIFICE

Among the spectators, including a group of Israelis, who were conveniently situated in Brooklyn directly across the river from the World Trade Center as the two passenger aircraft hit the Twin Towers on 9th September 2001, was a 'photographer' named Mark Phillips. Within days of the atrocities, photographic stills of the smoke and the flames engulfing the towers were released into the public domain. The Author became aware of the existence of the two images, shown here in Figure 3, page 11, and Figure 32 below, which purport to reveal the face of the Devil in the smoke and flames.

The image of the Devil in the smoke was traced to Associated Press, the London bureau of which the Author knew well. On enquiring at the Picture Library whether the image was available, he was informed by the Librarian that he had only recently

Figure 32: The face of the Devil in the smoke during the 9/11 abomination [see also Figure 3, page 1 7] which appeared in images attributed to Mark Phillips that were submitted electronically at 8.59 am and were received, according to the London AP office, at 9.13 am. This would have provided just 14 minutes for the frame(s) to be doctored to illustrate the presence of Satan at this Illuminati Ritual Fire Sacrifice.

become aware of the image, and that there appeared to be just one among a series of frames which contained the image of the Devil's face in the smoke. The Author established that the images were timed at 8.59 am on 11th September 2001, and were submitted electronically to AP's bureau at 9.13 am. In separate investigations, the Author and colleagues have established that all enquiries to Associated Press concerning 9/11 have had to be routed through the Washington Bureau, which indicates very clearly that information on these events is controlled by US intelligence, of which Associate Press is essentially an extension and which it is is known to serve generally.

Initially, it seemed to the Author to be impossible for such an image to be inserted within the brief timeframe of 14 minutes implied by the timings given by the AP Librarian in London, which are marked on the source of the stills. The Author was initially therefore inclined to accept the terrifying pictures as genuine. Concerning the CNN photograph [Figure 3, page 11], which shows another face of the Devil in the flames, the Author has not been able to establish the relevant time-sequence.

According to David Bay, of the independent US Baptist Cutting Edge Ministries, two former Satanists called him within two hours after these pictures were released, to inform him that the demons, especially the image in Figure 32, looked exactly like demons they had seen during an occult ritual in which demons physically manifest themselves in this dimension (after being 'conjured'). Some of the most powerful demons in Satan's kingdom are known as Fire Demons, as implied by the Author's late friend Malachi Martin who confirmed, as reported on page 7, that Illuminati and 'high' geomasonic initiates 'have all passed through [initiation] that involves three things: the infliction of pain without flinching, the infliction of death without flinching, and the use of fire'. It was to Fire Demons that the ancient pagan peoples, including at times the children of Israel, sacrificed their children to Moloch (post-natal contraception), which 'illuminates' the evil represented by the idol Moloch in the shape of a giant owl that is at the centre of bizarre occult ritual ceremonies at the Bohemian Grove [see box, page 161], frequented by the Illuminati, including [see the same box] the German Illuminist, Helmut Schmidt. (All German Chancellors are selected by the DVD, Dachau). The appearance of these demons can legitimately be interpreted as confirmation that the 9/11 attack on the Twin Towers - which were blown up from deep underground (in accordance with the final paragraph of Protocol 9 of the 'Protocols of the Elders of Zion', which is the Illuminati blueprint for the New World Order (Kingdom of Satan)), skewed so that the blame for Dluminati atrocities is transferred to the Jews (see Chapter 7) - was a fire ritual sacrifice carried out by the Illuminati - the New Orleans catastrophe being by contrast, a water or drowning sacrifice. (The Holocaust was an earlier mass sacrifice abomination).

In 1990, Steve Jackson, a creator of card games, began developing a card game that he later called the 'Illuminati New World Order' (PNWO) game. The British intelligence-linked Psy-Ops so-called 'White Magic' occultist David Icke, has drawn attention to the most striking of the cards in this game, which include a card showing a terrorist attack on the Twin Towers. The card game was eventually published in 1995. But right at the start of the process of developing the game, Jackson received an unwelcome visit. He stated [on www.sjgames.com] that 'on the morning of March 1, 1990, without warning a force of armed Secret Service agents - accompanied by Austin police and at least one civilian 'expert' from the phone company - occupied the offices of Steve Jackson Games and began to search for computer equipment.... A large amount of equipment was seized, including four computers, two laser printers, some loose hard disks, and a great deal of assorted hardware', including the computer containing the blueprints of the new game. Steve Jackson later won the subsequent court case.

In those days, the Secret Service was ultimately controlled by George Bush Sr., and Jackson and Icke have speculated that President George Bush Sr. may have been worried about something that S.J. Games was up to, and organised the raid in an attempt to shut the firm down so that the card game - which anticipated an event that was then still 11 years into the future - would never appear. In the event, the game was produced and won the 1995 Origins Award for Best Card Game.

CIA PSY-OPS DABBLING INEVITABLY CONJURES UP DEMONS

Mark Phillips openly advertises himself on the Internet as a 'former' CIA operative. There is of course no such thing as a 'former' intelligence officer. And this man is much more than a routine cloak-and-dagger man. He is a professional handler, with a special expertise: psychological operations - a nefarious discipline, derived from the experimental activities of Heinrich Himmler and his cadre of evil Nazi scientists: activities that Western intelligence agencies, notably the British and the American communities, have elaborated, as of course have the covert Soviets.

Phillips is the co-author of a controversial and extremely unpleasant Psychological Operations (Psy-Ops) book called Trance Formation of America: The True Story of a CIA mind-control Slave [1995] with Cathy OBrien, the so-called MONARCH slave in question [see box, page 161, page 224 et seq., and Figure 42, page 225]. Mark Phillips deprogrammed her[1]. Photographs of Phillips reveal him to resemble the epitome of a CIA or DIA officer - large forehead, white, typically stressed-looking and not at all a happy man. This reflects the fact that he is an expert in mind- and personality-programming, and segmentation, behaviour modification, deprogramming, manipulation and 'psychic driving' - with experience in mind-control and MK-ULTRA-type trauma-based mind-bending.

Phillips is or has been involved in top secret US Government investigations into 'secret knowledge' (dabbling in the occultic 'Ancient Mysteries') which may include activities akin to sorcery, wizardry, divination, demonology psychological manipulation, personality-splitting through sexual abuse, and related nefarious activities 'pioneered' under Heinrich Himmler and annexed by the Soviet Union and the West following the Second World War, which the Western Allies foolishly concluded had erased Nazism from history (a fatal, millennial error). Secret knowledge equals power, the intended end result being (global) control - which is what the New Underworld Order perpetrators are seeking. This is of course the most demonic form of idolatry. Remember what Satan said to the Lord when he was tempting Him? [page 23]: 'Again, the Devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me'. ALL 'kingdoms' are in Satan's hands.

What these geomasonic New Underworld Order fanatics, members of the congregation of the Synagogue of Satan (the Illuminati), have done, is the precise opposite of what the Lord did: they have fallen down before Satan to worship him. But Satan, being 'the father of lies and a murderer from the beginning' and 'the author of confusion', is of course playing deadly games with them, which is what his demons invariably do when invoked. All conjuration runs the extreme risk that those doing the invocations will certainly be deceived. Satan is not a reliable partner, and cannot easily be shaken off once a person has entered into an agreement with him or his minions.

THE CORRUPTING INFLUENCE OF THE BRITISH TAVISTOCK INSTITUTE

Yet the Illuminated Ones continue to believe that what they call The Project - to procure global control at all costs, eliminating billions of human beings in the process if 'necessary' - is feasible, and even 'on track' to succeed, notwithstanding that the current generation of Illuminati intelligence patriarchs are becoming exceedingly long in the tooth, having missed several 'completion deadlines', many being long past normal retirement age: another typical trick of Satan. Here they are, turning the whole world upside down in pursuit of their Luciferian objectives, having fallen down and worshipped Satan, who they imagine has given them 'permission' to proceed - but who, in reality, is tricking, deceiving and impeding them, complicating and generally making their life as close to a living hell on earth, as it will most certainly be for them when they descend into the pit.

A primary source of demonic mind-control research for the past three-quarters of a century and more has been the Tavistock Institute, established by the British Military Intelligence officer Sir John Rawlings-Reese in 1921, initially to study the effects of shell-shock on British troops who survived the First World War, and soon to establish the 'breaking poinf suffered by men under extreme stress. His successor in 1932 was Kurt Lewin, a German Jewish operative who soon transferred from Britain to the United States in the 1930s, the first of many prewar German intelligence infiltrators, and set up the Harvard Psychology Clinic [see box opposite, page 187]; and during this period, the Tavistock Institute supposedly focused on strategic warfare studies. The Institute was established under the direction of the secret British Psychological Warfare Bureau. An offshoot of this notorious Institute, the National Institute for Applied Behavioural Studies, organises so-called 'sensitivity training' for corporate leaders and government groups and organisations. The influence of the Tavistock Institute as a source of knowledge on behaviour modification in Britain, the United States and Commonwealth countries, especially Australia, Canada and New Zealand, should not be underestimated. Its prophet was the Austrian-German of Jewish extraction, Sigmund Freud, and it pioneered behavioural science along Freudian lines. Its 'network' includes the far-left, often subversive University of Sussex; the Stanford Research Institute; the Esalen Institute at Big Sur, CA, directed in the 1980s by Dr Jim Garrison, who established the Tamalpais Institute on 10th April 1991 which became the Gorbachev Foundation/USA on 10th April 1992; the Hudson Institute (specialising in futurology); the Heritage Foundation; the Georgetown University Center for Strategic and International Studies (where US State Department personnel are trained); US Air Force Intelligence; and the RAND (= Research ANd Development) Corporation; plus the CIA's crucially important Mitre Corporation [MIT - Massachusetts Institute of Technology] which is engaged inter alia in procuring that every computer in the world will report directly into the Pentagon.

Other prominent Tavistock-related mind-bending operations include the Human Ecology Fund (part of the MK-ULTRA infrastructure supporting illegal experiments on mind-control), the Ditchley Foundation, created in 1957 (which has an American branch), and is used as an important conduit for secret Tavistock instructions, the Brookings Institution, Flow Laboratories, National Training Laboratories (NTL), the Institute for Applied Behavioural Sciences, National Education Association, the Wharton School of Finance and Commerce (at the University of Pennsylvania), and the Institute For The Future which, though funded by the Ford Foundation, draws its long-range forecasting from the Tavistock Institute. This institute's projects define what it believes to be the changes that will be taking place within 50-year time-frames: its so-called 'Delphi pan-

KURT LEWIN: GERMAN TAVISTOCK OPERATIVE

The Tavistock Institute 'of Human Relations' [sic] operates from long-established offices at 30 Tabernacle Street, London EC2A 4DD, on the fringes of the City of London. It distributes Human Relations, published by Plenum Press, and a new journal calling itself Evaluation. Having been set up originally by Sir John Rawlings-Reese to study the effects of shellshock on British troops, it appears to have been targeted almost from the outset by elements of the German Illuminati - Sigmund Freud being its original 'prophet' (who settled in Maresfield Gardens, London, when he moved to Britain).

In 1932, the German 'refugee' of Jewish extraction, Kurt Lewin, managed to penetrate the Institute, of which he quickly became a Director. In the following year, Lewin surfaced in the United States, still calling himself a 'refugee'. He was the driving force behind the establishment of the Freudian Harvard Psychology Clinic. It should not be assumed that because this entity originated much of the propaganda campaign to turn the US public against Germany, in preparation for the United States' entry into the Second World War, Lewin, being of Jewish extraction, was fundamentally anti-German. On the contrary, as is the standard practice of deep penetration operatives, he aligned himself with the Zeitgeist of the day, while at the same time performing the subversive tasks for which he had been selected. Dr Henry Kissinger, who experienced a meteoric rise to power later, another of these German refugees of Jewish extraction, was a student of Sir John Rawlings-Reese.

In 1938, President Roosevelt executed a secret agreement with the British authorities, under the terms of which the Special Operations Executive was instructed to formulate US policies. In implementation of this agreement, Roosevelt despatched General Donovan to London for indoctrination (partly at the Tavistock Institute), preparatory to setting up OSS, which became the Central Intelligence Agency in 1947, under the supervision of SOE-SIS. OSS methods, extended to and massively elaborated by the CIA, have always been driven by guidelines originally established by the Tavistock Institute which, as we have seen, was penetrated by German operatives and modelled its operations along mechanistic lines which deny humanity and treat human beings like mindless animals. The Institute's title implies that its main focus is the fostering of harmonious 'human relations', whereas its real purpose is the development of methodologies to control human behaviour - the identical Illuminati remit to that followed by Heinrich Himmler.

The Tavistock Institute 'of Human Relations' originated the mass civilian bombing raids conducted by Roosevelt and Churchill as clinical experiments in the monitoring of mass terror. All Tavistock and its related American foundations have a single objective -to break down the psychological strength of the individual, by means of such devices, borrowed inter alia from the Frankfurt School and mimicking the programme of Lavrentii Beria, as mass brainwashing ('political correctness') and the fostering of a mental attitude of sullen, grim resignation in the face of the advancing New Underworld Order of the Illuminati. Any technique that helps to break down the family unit, and family-inculcated principles of revealed religion (only available through True Christianity), honour, reliability, respect for the female sex, patriotism and sexual behaviour, is deployed by Tavistock 'school' scientific manipulators as weapons for manipulating 'the masses'.

With the de facto partial ascendancy of the Illuminati, mass invocations of occult forces are also increasingly in evidence - recent examples being the mass sacrifice of British farm animals (animal sacrifices) in the late 1990s, and new controlled 'natural' catastrophes (with occultic connotations) invoking the forces of air, fire, earth and water. Freudian psychotherapy, malevolently applied, induces permanent mental illness through the destabilisation of the psyche and character. The victim may then be advised to 'establish new rituals of personal interaction' - meaning to indulge in brief sexual encounters which in fact set the participants adrift with no stable personal relationships, thus destroying their ability to establish or maintain a family. In the United States, the Tavistock School' has developed such power that no-one achieves prominence in any field unless he or she has been trained in scxalled 'behavioural sciences' at Tavistock or one of its numerous effective US subsidiaries. All the operations of the Tavistock School' are directed towards producing cyclical collapse, which explains why the CIA's 'Heart of Darkness' yields such poisonous fruit. ■

els' decide what is normal and what they consider to be abnormal, and prepare position papers to 'steer' Government. It recommends the liberalisation of abortion legislation and drugs usage, that cars entering urban areas should pay tolls, teaching birth control in schools, legalising homosexuality, transferring planning permissions and zoning controls to central government, and the establishment of new communities in rural areas (a la Pol Pot, using concentration camps). Of exceptional power and importance, too, is the notorious Institute for Policy Studies (IPS), which spawns satellite operations like raindrops. Although ostensibly an instrument for aligning US policy with that of the overt/covert Soviet Union, it is considered also to be a Tavistock 'network' agency. Finance for the IPS was derived from the Samuel Rubin Foundation and the Stern Family Fund - Samuel Rubin having himself been a member of the Soviet Comintern.

The founder of the Hudson Institute in 1961, Hermann Kahn (of German Jewish extraction and background) also founded the RAND Corporation. B. K. Eakman, writing in a study entitled Educating for the New World Order [provenance uncertain], has revealed a manual for 'change agents' developed for the US Government by the RAND Corporation, which he described as... 'a how-to manual with a 1971 US Office of Education contract number on it entitled 'Training for Change Agents', plus seven volumes of 'change agent studies' commissioned by the US Office of Education from the RAND Corporation in 1973-74; and scores of other papers submitted by behaviorist researchers who had obtained grants from the US Office of Education for the purpose of exploring how to 'freeze' and 'unfreeze' values, to 'implement change' and to turn potentially hostile groups and committees into acquiescent, rubber-stamping bodies by means of such strategies as the goofy 'Delphi Technique'. (For strategy, read: stratagem - Ed.). The RAND Corporation's main function is brainwashing using Tavistock-type techniques, which are derived from the German Frankfurt School [see pages 254-258], the Freudian influence, and the input of prominent Himmlerians of German background such as Hermann Kahn.

It should be understood, again, that the inevitable focus on the United States in this book is not to be construed as indicative of any bias on the Author's part: on the contrary, the United States is the victim of nefarious European intrigues, the primary sources of which have historically been Britain and Germany, although the focus of this work is the German dimension because the Illuminafi serves as a global programme and extension of the hegemony strategy of the continuing Nazi International. All three countries (and of course others, like France, Italy and Spain) are themselves victims of the machinations of the synarchy offensive - the conspiracy of secret societies and cabals owing allegiance to Lucifer and which remain hell-bent upon procuring global control, condemning 94% of the world's population to subordinate status while the remaining 6% (which this Author considers to be a generous proportion) consolidate their control of the world's assets, especially energy and food resources. There is little doubt that the inspiration and controlling centre of this synarchy conspiracy is Germany.

These evil forces and entities, to a greater or lesser extent driven by the 'seething energies' of Lucifer, have made it their business to seek the means to control populations by the use of psychotropic drugs and psychological operations (Psy-Ops), and in particular to identify ways to procure the submissive obedience of subject populations in perpetuity. It would appear, however, that the authorities concerned lack conviction that they will ever succeed - which explains, for instance, why the British Government maintains a colossal secret arms dump at the British Army's key base at Catterick, Yorkshire. The arms which were handed in following the controversy surrounding the

GEOPOLITICS - A PAN-GERMAN (NAZI) INVENTION

According to the 'Encyclopedia Americana' editions accessible from the 1960s, geopolitics was defined as follows: 'For this university of education... modem Germany - The Third Reich - is primarily responsible. The war which blocked Germany's initial drive for world dominion, and the revolution which put into power the Nazis who were to launch the second drive, gave us geopolitics. German GEOPOLITIK is the logical product of a materialistic and deterministic school of thought which, through more than two centuries, has progressively gained sway over the German mind until it reduced man to the status of a biochemical entity. Geopolitics, in its quest for an invincible brand of power politics, has taken unto itself such varied fields as economics, jurisprudence, the social sciences, medicine, psychology and military strategy'.

The accuracy of this assessment - complete with the realisation by the author that the Second World War represented a further drive for world domination, implying that the drive had by no means been abandoned - is unique for the period.

The 'American Encyclopedic Dictionary', also dating from the 1960s, described geopolitics specifically as 'a doctrine of Nazi Germany, advocating aggressive expansion'. And in his address to American students attending Lenin University in the 1930s for indoctrination (incorporated as a preface to 'Brainwashing', the version of The Communist Manual of Instructions on Psychopolitical Warfare', which was used in the United States in the 1930s for the training of Communist cadres in the United States, the deep covert German Abwehr operative and long-term German penetration agent, Lavrentii Beria, who headed Stalin's repressive NKVD (Interior Ministry and a predecessor of the KGB) asserted:

'Psychopolitics is an important if less known, division of geopolitics'.

So Beria presided over the implementation of the pan-German (Nan) tradition and methodology of geopolitics in the Soviet Union, which he integrated into the curriculum for the training of Soviet and external Communist cadres.

It is hard to imagine a more absolute confirmation of the fundamental identity of National Socialism (Nazism) with International Socialism (Communism), which the Illuminati manipulated dialectically then, and are continuing to manipulate today, in furtherance of their global hegemony agenda. Lenin himself was a German Abwehr agent, who consolidated the breakthrough achieved by his fellow German agent - the psychopolitical operative, Rasputin, whose infiltration into the inner sanctum of the confused, superstitious and semi-deranged Russian Imperial Family, procured the disintegration of Tsarist power. Other German or German-tradition psychopolitical operatives who performed a similar function have included [see also page 173]:

- Mrs Wallis Simpson, the sinister German Abwehr agent who, using her occult female powers, bewitched her target Edward VIII as part of an elaborate German operation which was intended to keep the British out of the wars that the occult Illuminist Adolf Hitler and his Black Illuminati colleagues were planning.
- Susie Orbach, a US West Coast 'psychoanalyst' practising in London, who may have been instrumental in converting her target Princess Diana from being a sweet, semi-innocent Princess into a hard-bitten and embittered divorcee, bent on revenge.

The Author has been informed that German occult Black intelligence is particularly keen on this form of subversion, which involves placing a 'healer' adjacent to the targeted individual, for subversion purposes. There was no difference at all between this methodology and that promulgated by the odious Lavrentii Beria, who wrote:

'Psychopolitics is a solemn charge. With it you can erase our enemies as insects. You can cripple the efficiency of leaders by striking insanity into their families through the use of drugs.... You can change their loyalties by psychopolitics.... By psychopolitics create chaos, leave a nation leaderless".

And the 'Manual', based on the occultic German methodology that Beria used, advocated 'creating a greed for drugs, sexual misbehaviour and uncontrolled freedom.... By making readily available drugs of various kinds, by giving the teenager alcohol, by praising his wildness, by stimulating him with sex literature and advertising to him or her practices as taught at the Sexpol, the psychopolitical operator can create the necessary attitude of chaos, idleness and worthlessness...' needed to facilitate the attainment of hegemonic objectives.

GO-2, a 'Black' intelligence cadre located inside MI6, is engaged in precisely such subversive drug-distribution operations on behalf of the Illuminati. It should be closed down immediately. ■

Dunblane mass murders on 13th March 1996, were also hoarded at Catterick. This arms dump - over and above a consignment of 17,500 Heckler and Koch and 22,500 pump action shot guns bought up by the authorities for police use - is the British Government's back-up resource, for use in the event that the population fails to meet official subservience expectations, and such weapons are needed to contain the popular insurrection when it wakes up to the reality of the UK 'coup d'etat by instalments'.

DIMENSIONS OF THE BEHAVIOUR MODIFICATION OFFENSIVE

Before following Mark Phillips' activities somewhat further, various connections which illustrate how far infra-governmental research into mass and individual behaviour modification has developed since 1921, and since Himmler's experiments using such ogres as Dr Mengele, are worth reviewing here - as governments compete among themselves to find or perfect psychopolitical tools to control their own and 'enemy' populations. Some of these references may seem unconnected, but that conclusion would be inaccurate. Subliminal mind-control research in the United States was pioneered inter alia by a Dr Milton Erickson. A 'classic' work called 'Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis' by Dr William S. Kroger, has been in use for many years. The leading US scientist specialising in dissociative disorders in the 1990s was Dr Bennet Braun, of German extraction. Such experts deal in activities like 'revivification', which is a technique for painless, non-abreactive memory recovery. A clinical technique called hynosleep has been developed which programmes a mind-controlled slave to die. Such slaves are used for various nefarious intelligence purposes, including suborning and seducing Presidents, senior officials and diplomats, or for acting as 'lone-wolf' assassins. In the United States, many 'mental health care technologies' have been held back from public use - for the usual reason: national security. Likewise effective therapy regimes for dissociative disorders have never been released for general application, in order to protect nefarious secrets concerning classified mind-control research. Under the National Security Act of 1947, amended in 1986 and probably subsumed by the National Intelligence Reform Act, which President G. W. Bush signed into law on 17th December 2004 (one-third of which, recall, is secret), the US Government can now censor or cover up anything they choose.

Scientology, a demonic cult, founded by L. Ron Hubbard, who was friendly with Jack Parsons, head of the Californian chapter of the ultra-Satanic Ordo Templi Orientis, exploits subliminal mind-control techniques acquired during Hubbard's military service with US Navy Intelligence: hence this appallingly demonic cult was a product of one of the most lethal US intelligence services, the Office of Naval intelligence (ONI).

Mr Hubbard invented a fake 'science' which he called 'Dianetics', a mind-control technique which he named after his first wife Diane. At the Chicago BookExpo America event in June 2004, the Author observed a very large area devoted to Scientology, and was approached by several witches who evidently thought he would be appropriate material for indoctrination. Considering that the very smallest display area, just a few feet square, costs $4,000 just for the area on which a display stand is to be erected alone, it was evident that this operation has sizeable funds at its disposal - an impression reinforced by anyone who has visited, for instance, Scientology's establishment at East Grinstead, Sussex. The Author has separately established that a number of well-known sects in the United States are in fact covers for money-laundering operations and are run by US intelligence officers. Scientology appears to fits this profile, and remains an operation connected to the Luciferian official behaviour modification apparatus.

SCIENTOLOGY: OFF IN A SATANIC ORBIT OF ITS OWN

Scientology, which is totally fake, is a corrupt money-making machine that preys upon vulnerable young people, especially if they have money. As an outgrowth of the fashion for Luciferian mind-control and personality-manipulation abominations developed in the Himmlerian tradition - and as a consequence of the evil activities of the British Tavistock Institute which, as we have seen, was influenced, if not 'taken over' by, an

SCIENTOLOGY =
PSYCHO-POLITICAL TERRORISM
AN OPERATION OF U.S. COUNTERINTELLIGENCE

STEP 1: DIAGRAM ILLUSTRATING THE INITIATION OF THE FRAUD

Notwithstanding that Himmler was a primary originator of psycho-manipulation techniques such as those developed and elaborated by Scientology, the German authorities concluded that Scientology is a seditious totalitarian 'psycho-terror' organisation intent upon mind-control, global dominion and criminal operations, and which is engaged in money-laundering and financial crimes.

Book sales [& at book fairs]
Media advertising
Commissioned field staff
Targeting of celebrities
Strategic infiltrations
Kidnapping off the street
... yielding new prospects.

Having lied non-stop so routinely, Scientology nowadays depends upon previously 'successfully' deluded 'thick' celebrities to drive in new 'shills' – 'Useful Idiots' like Tom Cruise, John Travolta, Kirsty Aley, Jenna Effman, Ann Archer, for example (as per e.g., Madonna with Kabbalah).

WISE (= World Institute of Scientology Enterprises [*vehicle for corporate fraud*]:
TradeNet : Laundering Operations
Rev. Reed Slatkin's Ponzi Operation.
The Rev. Kent Stryker's Charities.
Vancouver Stock Exchange frauds.
Digital Lightwave and other scams.

More WISE operations perpetrated via: Affiliated US corporations such as Hollander and Sterling, engaged in selling Hubbard's so-called 'management technology'; Medical Doctors, Chiropractors, Veterinary Surgeons, corrupt Insurance Companies, brokerages, and other targeted clusters of 'the willing'.

External propaganda publications, e.g.: *Freedom.* Special *reports. Fraudulent* press releases. Huge volumes of Internet domain names to trap the unsuspecting.

Targeting of children and minorities – those they feel don't yet have a clue about their true nature. Uses bogus 'Study Technology'. So-called World Literacy Crusade, Drug Free Marshalls, and other 'worthy' operations/ traps.

Scientology's false Claims include: Bridge to immortality and superior powers, plus *false medical claims.* Hubbard's Military Record: Unfit for command. Dianetics = *placebo effect. Scientology = fake religion* + Secrets of the Universe + scientific double-talk + Orwellian 'Newspeak'.

Targeting and infiltration of Local Civics, Churches, Political Parties, Attorney Generals' Offices, Consumer Protection Offices, the Internal Revenue Service, Congressional Staffers. *Retains Lobbying firms e.g. Federal Legislative Associates.*

UNDUE INFLUENCE FEEDBACK LOOPS:

Front Organisations:
Drug Free Marshals,
Applied Scholastics. PLUS:
Various so-called 'religious freedom' (agitprop) fronts.
World Literacy Crusade.

Go to Step 2: Extending the time before the anticipated mind-fraud is discovered.

'Oh what a tangled web we weave, When first we practice to deceive'.
– William Shakespeare a.k.a. the intelligence operative and occultist, Francis Bacon

Members of the public are referred to internally using characteristically Nazi-style abusive terminology, such as 'raw meat' or 'wogs'.
Source: Ron Hubbard

Figure 33: How the Scientology fraud is initiated: This and the next four diagrams [Figures 34-37] show how the fraud against innocent targets is initiated, prosecuted and 'protected' by fraud and deception.

operative ('psychopolitician') of German Jewish extraction, and which built its most heinous aberrations upon the work of Freud (who moved to Britain from Vienna) - its activities can be examined in considerable detail, thanks to the brave exposures of some of its victims who have managed to regain their right minds and their emotional and intellectual stability. All the statements in what follows are fair comment and alleged.

Like many of these operations, including Moral Re-Armament (MRA) [see page 199], this organisation seems to have vast financial resources - which does not inhibit it in any way from seeking by allegedly foul means to maximise its finances (a common feature of all 'fake' religions and sects). It is in fact one of the most heinous manifestations of the Works of Darkness spawned by UK and US intelligence, which have paralleled, competed with, and been modelled on, the manic mind and psyche experiments conducted by Himmler's scientists. A brief study of how it operates will therefore reveal the depths of depravity to which these Luciferian Illuminati 'scientists' typically descend, as they seek to drag innocent human beings into the pit along with their own deluded, mad operatives. Scientology is nothing less than a form of institutionalised sorcery using mental programming techniques developed in accordance with the odious traditions of the CIA's MK-ULTRA programme, and its multiple Luciferian offshoots and variations, such as MONARCH (the programme to create high-level sex slaves who are used to convey secrets among targeted members of the global leadership elite), BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, MK-DELTA and MK-NAOMI. Large numbers of Nazi mind-control experts who had been working for Himmler were exfiltrated from Germany, mainly after the War, and were put to work inter alia (but mainly) in the United States, where they continued to elaborate the manipulative occult-oriented techniques they had developed or been working on under Himmler, in the institutes affiliated with Britain's Tavistock Institute, originally set up by the British Army Institute of Psychological Warfare.

Ron Hubbard first surfaced from the Black intelligence world when he published a work called 'Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health' in 1950. He then steered straight for 'church' status, establishing the first Church of Scientology in Los Angeles on 18th February 1954. Thereafter, Hubbard expounded his demented 'beliefs' and sorceries in over 40 books and 2,500 taped lectures. These days, the Church of Scientology claims to have more than 8 million members in 3,200 churches in some 54 countries, with a deluded UK membership alone, of 100,000 victims. However credible critics say that worldwide membership of the Church of Scientology is closer to 50,000, with British membership no higher than 1,500.

In conformity with the pack of lies and fabrications on which this abomination is based, Scientology has taken very good care to substitute its own morality for Christianity. Its flavour is encapsulated in the cult's concept of 'acceptable truth', which of course begs the question: 'acceptable to whom?' Those who fall for this false 'religion' gain nothing and, as is typical with such organisations, are allegedly bled financially throughout their troubled memberships. Investigation of Scientology's dark activities is precluded by its 'charitable' (in the United States) status, and further by its status as a 'church'.

In reality, this appears to be a typical criminal intelligence organisation, using familiar intelligence community scamming and deception methodology, and steeped in Himmlerian mind-control and personality-manipulation techniques. At the very apex of its headquarters building is a 'Christian' cross augmented by a four-pointed star.

The former Scientology victim who developed the charts [Figures 33-37] shown on these pages distilled in them the fruits of many years of dark existence in this collective, unknowingly helping to run the scam - followed by many years trying to recover from those sterile and wasted years, and millions of dollars and ten years of litigation fighting these evil people, who have raised aggressive and malicious litigation to the status of an art form. Litigation is a primary means by which Scientology seeks to defend its reputation, oblivious to the reality that to anyone with even basic information about this sect, it simply stinks. Like the intelligence community generally, its evil activities are so promiscuous that it is forever engaged in cover-up operations.

The Author experienced this fact at first hand when, many years ago, he made the mistake of travelling to East Grinstead, East Sussex, where he had been summoned by a

HYPNOTIC DELUSIONS

THE REPROGRAMMING STAGE

TO MAXIMISE THE PROSPECTS FOR CONTROL STEP 2:

DIAGRAM ILLUSTRATING THE TIME EXTENSION ROUTINE

At Stage 2, Scientology programmers, knowing that their fraudulent activity will in due course be discovered by the targets themselves, embark upon steps to extend the time before duped adherents ('shills', formerly 'raw meat or 'wogs') 'see the light, while reprogramming the minds of their dupes to believe anything, through the use of hypnotic techniques augmented by subliminal electric shock.

SHAME FEEDBACK LOOP:
If not resolved then go here.
ADULATION: POSITIVE FEEDBACK LOOP
EXTREME SECRECY

Disconnection policy: Members and staff who know anyone who connects the dots and becomes troublesome, must be disconnected or 'handled'.

Questioning the "tech" triggers discipline by "ethics" conditions and auditing (at person's expense), consuming additional sterile time and financial resources...

Escapes thwarted by 24 hour guards and in some cases actual fencing and barbed wire.

Concentration Camps [RPF] and 'Isolation Policy' as in the Lisa McPherson death + Stress induced damage to hypothalamus: damages long term memory, thwarting future testimony of disgruntled members.

TOTAL DEGRADATION: Infliction of degradation that is so severe that few would ever testify as having endured it, if still capable of remembering.

Use of lie detector 'E-meter', extremely detailed questionnaires, interviews, and security checks to determine every member's family and work connections for use by Scientology and to control them.

'Hubbard the wise man' image: Plagiarism of previous art without attribution makes a clever con-man look like a prophet to the target – instead of the con-man he always was.

When the false claims are not realised, a new 'secret' upper-level is unveiled to appease unending optimism – constantly extending the path, so that victim won't notice that it all goes nowhere.

XANU The "secret levels" – invoking the spirits of dead space aliens. Some analysts incorrectly assert that this manipulation stage is just science fiction, but in reality, the focus is now on conjuring up evil spirits, or playing at such activities.

Levels of initiation – referred to as Grades V, VA & R6EW – were developed by one John McMaster, (Clear #1). All traces of this homosexual operative have been deleted from the internal history of this abomination called Scientology.

E-Meter provides 2 to 6 volt DC, hand to hand. Swedish* research shows evidence that this causes changes at the cellular level, which may help explain addiction to Scientology's serial lies and inventions.

Scientology Online Censorship Software prevents the membership from gaining access to public court records as well as to certain specific individuals and topics.

All that is good is due to the efforts of the founder and all that is bad is due to the poor discipline of the mark, or the 'enemies' of Scientology.

Adulation Positive Feedback Loop testimony of people who are part of the way across 'The Bridge to Total Freedom'. 'Emperor has no clothes' syndrome plus placebo effect.

*Nordenström: '*Biologically Closed Electric Circuits; 'BCEC Systems*", 1982 Nordic Publications

Figure 34: These summaries seek to explain by means of graphics how Scientology applies its initiation levels, false techniques, electric shock, isolation policy in concentration camps, and degradation abominations.

print buyer who wanted to place a print order. On asking the local taxi driver to take him to the magnificent Saint Hill HQ of Scientology, an ancient castle, he immediately sensed that the driver hated the place, since he fell silent and refused even to say thank you when paid. The Author removed himself at high speed from East Grinstead, perceiving the error of his ways, after sensing the pitch-dark atmosphere there.

A MONEY-MAKING MACHINE THAT EXPLOITS THE VULNERABLE

Scientology smells of filthy lucre. Its multiple critics have estimated that Scientology makes about $300 million annually from its operations worldwide. Enquiries in recent years have led the Author to conclude that a substantial number of weird cults and sects are in reality money-laundering operations - a fact that was separately confirmed to the Author by the respected US-Israeli drug money expert, Ms. Rachel Ehrenfeld, in 1999. Certain very well known 'cults', and new elaborations thereof, which deserve extensive exposure, are just that. To mask such activities, they also preside over ruthlessly efficient scamming mechanisms for making money - like constant circulars requesting resources to fund litigation, or money to construct spectacular cathedrals or premises - and charge through the nose for all their services, indoctrination, training etc.

A CONSPIRACY OF SILENCE TO FOOL JUDGES AND OFFICIALS

(TREATMENT OF THOSE WHO CONNECT THE DOTS)

STEP 3: INTIMIDATION, LITIGATION, OPPRESSION, COERCION

Those victims, members and staff who 'connect the dots' and 'discover the fact' of the fraud, are liable to be subjected to any of the nefarious assaults and oppressions shown in the diagram below.

IRS 'charitable' status granted to Scientology (after innumerable years of litigation) in a sealed secret court closing agreement Blackmail or the purchase of an IRS insider suspected.
Stealing of critical books from US Public Libraries; even the systematic removal of newspapers and magazines from newsstands.
Orchestrated letter-writing and e-mail campaigns undertaken by deluded adherents of Scientology, to influence the gullible media.
A Head of Scientology and Bill Clinton are/were both known to have used or to use the services of the law firm Williams & Connolly.
Targeting of writers, publishers of critical books, articles and TV/radio shows. If this fails, then advertisers are targeted.
Printed material on 'Dead Agents' and other intimidating productions plus details of auditing and forced confession procedures designed to terrorise the targeted individuals.
Religious Smokescreen put up by orchestrated letter-writing campaigns by ever-deluded adherents to influence cynical public officials, despite the cult's extreme continuing notoriety.
Standard intelligence community practice: Targeting of:
Critics
Ex-members
Children
Custody/divorce
Lawyers
Insurance cos.
Judges
Juries
Employers
Supporters
Neighbours
Pets
Office of Special Affairs [O.S.A., a.k.a. 'G.O.'] Uses internal and external publications to discredit attackers and to label all critics with the standard 'conspiracy theorist' put-down lie.
Routine use of litigation stress as the mace and financial burdens induced by litigation as the sword – to procure silence. It is remarkable that after decades of all this, victims still adhere.
Private Investigators hired via law firms managed by Scientology's Office of Special Affairs.
Generates false reports to local and Federal Government [as in attacks on Stacey Young's cat sanctuary 1998] described on NBC Dateline [plan to frame Ms. Paulette Cooper re a bomb threat to Henry Kissinger (a.k.a. Soviet agent 'BOR') in 1977. Documents seized by the FBI.
Interference with livelihoods and ability to make a living.
If unable to attack directly, then Scientology will attack supporters, job, or landlord.

Figure 35: This graphic explains how victims, members and staff who 'connect the dots' and 'discover the fact' of the fraud are subjected to diabolical methods of attack, including litigation and false witness.

Confused youths who may make the serious initial mistake of entering the surprisingly shabby London base of Scientology called London Org., may find themselves filling in a 200-part questionnaire called the 'Oxford Capacity Analysis' test, as a result of which they are very liable to be 'scientifically' diagnosed as depressed, unstable, nervous, shy, at a loss, etc, etc, etc - that is to say, afflicted with a general condition for which Scientology possesses all of the answers. Naive newcomers are shown a film about 'mind technology which eulogises the extremely dead L. Ron Hubbard, whose revolutionary [sic!] ideas could of course change the person's life, and eventually the whole world. Naturally, the movie fails to to describe what the world would be like after the undefined 'changes' advertised.

At an introductory course, for which they must pay, candidates are told that their inability to 'understand' issues is attributable to 'mental blocks' called 'engrams', and that these must be removed in order for the person to become 'clear' and in a position to 'realise one's full potential'. So, here we go yet again: this is yet another version of the lie that men can become as gods - the lie perpetrated by the serpent in Genesis. As the candidate 'progresses', he or she is subjected to 'auditing' and is liable to be put on an 'emeter', a crude lie detector. While all this is going on, constant pressure is exert-

SOME KNOWN TECHNIQUES
USED FOR THE SAME PURPOSE
(METHODS USED TO COERCE AUTHORITY ITSELF)

STEP 4: FALSE WITNESS, TRICKERY, LIES AND THREATS

Standard intelligence community fraudulent practice, trickery, bait and switch and similar techniques are used to create maximum confusion. Litigation pressure is exerted ruthlessly and without mercy. Decades of such activity have not dimmed the 'seething powers of Lucifer' which drive this dreadful US counterintelligence menace, condemned abroad as a 'psycho-terrorist' organisation.

Documented pattern of fabricating allegations of a criminal or a despicable nature: exploitation.

Generate well written, but false allegations of criminal or despicable activity, then send this to multiple US agencies, and to foreign governments and media, disguising Scientology as the source of the lies.

If an official agency or individual is successfully tricked into investigating the critic of Scientology (i.e., takes the bait) to see if the allegations are true, THEN Scientology feeds the FACT of that inquiry back into this chain of false data to make the allegations more plausible: a standard counter-intelligence technique.

Find anyone who believes a false, libellous statement (false witness) and then quote that person, thereby escaping liability: or hedge a libellous statement with waffle, such as 'upon best information and belief'. Technique used against journalists, newswires and the judiciary.

Having found one of their own malleable members, Scientology will convince the selected internal 'Useful Idiot' of the veracity of their claims, thus escaping liability for malicious libel which might otherwise apply. At this stage of the hideous game, Scientology must rely upon the 'success' of its own programming and brainwashing operations to ensure the continued cooperation of the internal 'Useful Idiot' concerned. Having created the hell in which they live and have their being, the perpetrators are themselves now victims of their own satanic deviousness, anxiously propping up their inverted pyramid of lies which has long since become unstable and in danger of collapse. This is prevented by every dirty trick imaginable, including new ruses invented all the time.

Even if no US State or Federal agency is 'successfully' misled by the distorted information, the elaborate ruses are used as rhetoric in even tenuously related civil litigation, in order to try to baffle the court with innuendo. The fabrications are further used on various controlled websites. Systematic use is made of every opportunity to maximise the potential of the lies in question, using all means at their disposal.

If Scientology successfully deceives a law enforcement agency into prosecuting its bogus claims, they WIN whether the person gets convicted or not, as the target must bear the expense of untangling the farrago of falsehoods that has been fabricated. Because of the cult's intelligence connections, *its operatives behave exactly like your average criminalised, scamming intelligence operative and con artists.*

Figure 36: Scientology, like all US intelligence-related scamming organisations, does not refrain from using its 'seething powers of Lucifer' to coerce, mislead and undermine the structures of authority themselves.

ed on the victim to take a 'purification rundown', lasting a week (of saunas and vitamins costing £1,000, according to victim reports in the United Kingdom).

On a number of websites, the 'secrets' of certain upper levels of this 'church' are pointedly exposed. But it is not even necessary to research such sites to be aware of the many layers of deception perpetrated on innocent, if ill-advised, victims. A concept (shown in wall posters) called The Bridge to Total Freedom' identifies the 'ways' to get to 'clear' and beyond, which is called Operating Thetan 8 - when one allegedly acquires the power of telekinesis and astral projection (both of which are demonic activities). One ex-victim says: 'No-one would ever tell me how much it would cost [to 'get there'], but former Scientologists have claimed a figure of more than £250,000'.

One of the 'church's' most controversial processes is the familiar mind-control technique, already mentioned above, known as 'auditing' - a process of 'eradicating one's engrams' by revisiting past traumas. The same ex-victim told "The Times' (London, 18th February 2004): 'I was required to go over various horrible incidents for hours until my head hurt, and I felt scared and unhappy'. Scientology disseminates a portfolio of very bizarre 'facts' that are supposed to lie at the end of the 'bridge'. A British ex-victim says: 'Had I known that at the end of the Bridge to Total Freedom we are all covered in dead space aliens as the result of the actions of an ancient galactic ruler, Xenu (or Xanu), I would never have been interested in the first place'. Of course this is all demonic, totally fake garbage concocted by that very dead and mad US intelligence operative Ron Hubbard, who, like so many of these Illuminati nutcases, seems to have generated these demoniac fantasies while evidently possessed by demons. And indeed, this first-hand revelation tells us something vital: all references to 'space aliens' that one reads about nowadays are actually coded mentions of demons. Since modem Westem man does not believe in God, he does not believe in demons either. So they go by another name.

The same former UK Scientologist attended a special gala evening at Saint Hill to which no less than 7,000 people had been invited, two-thirds from European countries other than Britain. His description of that event contained a further clue to what Scientology is all about: 'In the oak-panelled entrance hall there were men and women dressed in what looked like some sort of naval uniform, pressing people to join the Sea Org., a quasi-military wing of the 'church'. All around were various booths, united in their single purpose: persuading people to part with their money in pursuit of the goal of becoming a 'clear' - namely, a fully brainwashed, manipulatable, mind-controlled zombie, who, being a deluded, deceived 'Useful Idiot', has had to pay for the privilege.

In the United States, an astonishing 150 Scientology 'churches' and corporations benefit from Internal Revenue Service Section 501(c)(3) full tax-exempt status (granted in 1993, after years of litigation and, in the view of some, following alleged bribery of IRS officials, and renewed in 1999). It has been alleged that the Internal Revenue Service (IRS) entered into a tax agreement with the Scientology organisation providing tax benefits that had previously been determined by the US Supreme Court to be unlawful.

Specifically, after 20 years of opposing full tax-exempt status for Scientology, the IRS unaccountably reversed itself, and the US Federal Government now assists and participates in Scientology's expansion abroad in conformity with the sect's arrogant written policies of 'taking over the control or allegiance of key political figures... the proprietors of all news media [and] those who monitor international finance'.

Now, in what context have we come across this before? Obviously, in relation to our brief look at Lavrentii Beria's Satanic teaching materials on 'psychopolitics'.

This reveals that the provenance of Scientology's mind- and psyche-manipulation dementia is identical to the provenance of Beria's abominations - namely, the perverse teachings of components of the German Illuminati cadres, such as the Frankfurt School, which migrated en masse to the United States in the face of the Nazis' harassment of its Jewish members. That was one of the many contradictions typical of the Nazis - another of which was the Nazi Party's oppression of homosexuals, notwithstanding that Nazi recruiting techniques and youth programmes were redolent with

MANAGING 'TRAITORS'

OPPRESSIVE CONTROL METHODS

(APPLIED TO THOSE WHO SEE THROUGH THE LIES)

STEP 5: ALL MEANS USED TO DEFEND THIS ABOMINATION

The United States is one terrorist attack (permitted and/or perpetrated by the US authorities themselves or by international intelligence allies, as in the case of 9/11) from Martial Law. The ruthlessness with which drugged and programmed US military and intelligence personnel have abused, and continue to abuse, prisoners in Afghanistan, Iraq and many other locations, including the British island territory of Diego Garcia, and the fact that a large number of US concentration camps have been readied for use in such an eventuality, provide indications of what is to come. The mentality driving these prospective horrors is interchangeable with, and akin to, the twisted dementia of Scientology, which brooks no opposition, and treats all critics as scoundrels and enemies, to be destroyed, Its totalitarian mindset of Nazi Stalinism represents America's future.

Adherents are coerced to sign secrecy and confidentiality agreements which are meant to silence them forever. This is to ensure that victims do not wake up from their dream until the Statute of Limitations for fraud has expired.

O Hubbard was convicted of fraud in France. His wife and other executives served time in prison after the largest domestic spying case in US history: United States vs Mary Sue Hubbard.

Scientology identifies for its leadership positions those who consider every good tiling that happens to be attributable to the 'exact duplication' of Ron Hubbard's 'copyright' technology, and every bad thing to be due to the inadequacy or failure of the mark (language of the curt). Thousands of copyright registrations are typically filed - breaking books up into small sections. This device makes 'fair use quotation' difficult and easier to sue for. And they can't wait to sue...

Pattern of blackmailing Federal Judges: Judge Richie in US vs. Mary Sue Hubbard.

Use of litigation 'to harass, not to win', plus Black Propaganda and character assassination, is similar to the tactics of Third Reich. The German Government recognised this behaviour and placed Scientology under surveillance, labelling it a 'psycho-terrorist' organisation. Other countries have adopted very negative responses to this evil coercive cult Scientology has been denied religious and/or tax-exempt status in France, Belgium, Germany, Spain, Israel, Greece and even Russia. Given its intelligence links, this suggests that it is indeed loathed by its own evil progenitors/collaborators.

Scientology uses what it calls 'acceptable truth' rather than the concept of the whole truth, in other words, it has invented its own depraved system of 'relative morality". This is similar to Soviet 'socialist morality and also to 'socialist legality'. Its fake' religious' stance lends this false 'credibility*.

SCIENTOLOGY AND ITS MYRIAD FRONTS ALL USE THE TECHNIQUES DESCRIBED IN THESE DIAGRAMS. THEY ARE THE FAMILIAR SCAMS OF INTELLIGENCE.

One US Judge suffered attacks on his dog, and had his car tyres slashed. Scientology pursues litigation against its dissident members and staff with a clear view to obtaining a gag order for silence, to prevent its ex-members from alerting the slumbering, controlled and compromised 'mainstream' media.

The primary governing internal law of Scientology is referred to as 'The Supreme Test', which represents what Hubbard called The ability to make things go right" (for Scientology).

Scientology deploys the Hubbardian Doctrine of 'acceptable truth' instead of the Whole Truth [see at left]. Another invention is its related 'Fair Game Law' (viz., the end justifies the means) and something called its 'Simon Bolivar Policy'.

There are reports of a massive truck-driven shredding machine running for 24 hours a day for many weeks in anticipation of a raid on Scientology.

In certain death cases (Lisa Macpherson being one), it was falsely asserted that 'cremation' is a religious doctrine, to hide evidence. There is in fact no Hubbardian 'doctrine' about cremation.

Chronic elevated levels of adrenal hormones caused by constant stress to victims results in damage to the hypothalamus in the brain. Disgruntled staff members are detained and sent to internal prison camps for reprogramming. [Professor Steven Kent: 'Brainwashing in Scientology's Rehabilitation Project Force'].

Data is given to private investigators who then 'discover' it in the course of their investigations.

At one point in recent years, Scientology was retaining at least three firms of private investigators in Washington DC full-time, without any typically odious Scientology litigation emerging. A source has suggested that this activity may have targeted US Congress or Executive Branch officials. The innermost secrets of members (victims) are collected for blackmail purposes when needed, in order to ensure silence and to gain cooperation.

Physical threats: One technique is the gangland method of chasing enemies on the road and then forcing their cars into the ditch, or worse.

Hubbard invented the ideological assertion that all who attack Scientology have criminal backgrounds, thereby 'justifying' relentless pressure, intimidation, coercion and harassment against all who cross its crooked, demonic path.

Figure 37: Finally, the mad perpetrators of this scamming machine are compelled to devote time and resources to 'managing' those who have seen through the lies and scams, who are treated as 'traitors'.

homosexuality: both being instances of Illuminati double-mindedness. These days, Washington seems quite content with Scientology's 'Fair Game' practices, which mandate the use of litigation augmented by many other overt and covert means to 'harass', 'terrify' and/or 'utterly destroy' those whom Scientology perceives to be its enemies - which is to say, former members and staff who have seen through its endless deceptions.

A detailed submission by former Scientology victims to Congressmen F. James Sensenbrenner and John Conyers, Chairman and Ranking Minority Member respectively of the US House of Representatives' Judiciary Committee in February 2002, contained a reference to Scientology's 'policy and practice of requiring certain staffers (such as Scientology's Sea Org. members) to have abortions', together with 'secular policies and practices that include child labor law violations and other civil and human rights violations'. The complaint to the US Congress further confirmed the cult's 'policies and practices [that are] intended to "utterly destroy" those citizens and others (such as the former IRS Section 501(c)(3) Cult Awareness Network) that the religious corporation (Scientology) deems to impede its objectives'.

CULTS AND SO-CALLED CULT-BUSTERS: A SELF-SERVING DIALECTIC

'Cults' like Scientology are created or exploited servants of the Illuminati, as are the dialectical opposition to them - the equally controlled 'cult-busters' (operating dialectically on the basis of problem-reaction-solution, or Thesis-Antithesis-Synthesis). The America-based Cult Awareness Network (CAN) was exposed in 1995 as a front for the Anti-Defamation League, the powerful Zionist agitprop organisation. The Zionists are essentially Jewish Nazis, incongruous though this may appear, thanks to the success of long-term Psychological Operations (Psy-Ops) over the decades since the Second World War - one consequence of which was that the world was persuaded to equate the defeat of Nazi Germany with the destruction of Nazism and their vast apparat, which never took place. One of the prime movers behind CAN was the notorious US intelligence mind-control operative, Dr Louis Jolyn ('Jolly') West [see page 212], who was connected to a similar group called the American Family Foundation. West was the intelligence psychiatrist chosen by the authorities to 'analyse' Jack Ruby (Rubenstein), who shot Lee Harvey Oswald, the CIA operative-patsy accused of assassinating John F. Kennedy, and who understood that he had been set up (to mask the fact that the hit was a German Abwehr/DVD operation). Rubinstein was in turn an operative of the US-based global mafia king Meyer Lansky (born Maier Suchowjansky in Grodny, USSR), an instrument of the Rothschilds, servant of Israel, and essentially an arm of Mossad. Meyer Lansky's Chicago-based mafia organisation performed 'services' for US intelligence, including as has been seen, setting up drug-running operations in Asia.

The fake 'church' of Scientology has a 'secular' arm called the World Institute of Scientology Enterprises ('WISE'), an umbrella organisation controlling the organisation's myriad 'business' ventures. Businesses owned by Scientologists are licensed to use its so-called 'secular technology' (also incongruously referred to as 'religious technology') in exchange for license fees often exceeding 10% of gross revenues. But it is unwise to do business with WISE, for both WISE and a senior 'church' entity called RTC may enter the relevant premises, close them down and seize all 'their' assets at any time. The IRS-Scientology agreement of 1993 required WISE to be disbanded no later than 1995, but both Scientology and the IRS have ignored this provision. This suggests that Scientology remains an alleged scamming instrument of the criminalised segment of the US intelligence community.

Figures 33-37 on pages pages 191-197 reflect, as has been indicated, the findings of a former Scientology victim who opted to reveal what he had learned and experienced during half a lifetime wasted in the clutches of this evil cult. One can obtain some idea of how evil this organisation is considered to be by recalling that certain leading governments, the intelligence and secret operations of which are no strangers to the occult, regard the organisation as anathema. For instance, the British authorities refused to grant Scientology tax-exempt status, on the ground that it lacks any socially redeeming qualities. It has been denied religious or tax-exempt status in France, Germany, Belgium, Spain, Israel, Greece and Russia. In five of these countries, it has been raided by the police.

In Germany, the organisation has been described as a seditious totalitarian 'psycho-terror' group intent upon global domination, and engaged in money-laundering and financial crimes. German courts have recently upheld the official electronic surveillance of Scientology for reasons of national and internal security, and the protection of the state and its democracy. The Author has included this information not least in order to provide a context for the following observation. The ultra-secret (no longer) Black intelligence service of the Nazi International, based appropriately in Dachau, known by the initials DVD (for Deutsche Versicherungs Dienst or Deutsche Verteid-igungs Dienst, meaning either German Insurance (in the sense of insuring the future of Nazism) Service, or German Defence Service (with the same connotation) was, the Author discovered, hardly known about at all in Germany itself as late as September 2005. The Author's exposure (in International Currency Review, Volume 30, Number 4, distributed in October 2005) of this organisation's existence, and that the late Sir Edward Heath, the former British Prime Minister was a long-term Abwehr agent, may have changed this situation. DVD is basically the successor intelligence service to the Nazi Abwehr, and has served ever since as the 'Black' (hidden, wholly unaccountable) intelligence service of the continuing covert Nazi International. The DVD is not financed by German taxpayer funds, but the German Government (at Chancellor level) approves its actions. It is therefore by no means incongruous that the overt German structures should, for instance, have raised serious objections to the Satanic cult called Scientology and all its evil baggage, not least since Germans are by no means ignorant of the ghastly activities of Heinrich Himmler and his death scientists.

In the United States, Scientology's compound, located near Hemet, in California, has been labelled 'armed and dangerous'. In other words, this is quite clearly a psycho-control instrument of criminalised counterintelligence, although this reality is disguised by an 'agreement' with the US intelligence community.

MORAL RE-ARMAMENT AND OTHER MIND-BENDING OPERATIONS

Another long-established US mind-bending operation is Moral Re-armament (MRA), which uses the familiar technique of group exposure accompanied by implied subsequent blackmail potential. Young men selected from 'good universities' are typically brought to MRA hideaways arid premises in the United States or at Caux, Switzerland, and in Mayfair, London, where, sitting in circles, they are encouraged to confess all their weaknesses and sins. Once thus stripped of the natural means of psychological protection and self-preservation, the young victims are putty in the hands of their behaviour modification manipulators and controllers. At a later stage of indoctrination, they are subjected to hard-sell pressures to hand over financial resources to the group. One long-term victim of this sect was the late British Conservative MP, Patrick Wolridge-Gordon.

This apparat hides behind respectable fronts, thereby deceiving the US population and the whole world. For instance, the American Psychiatric Association, an alleged instrument of the synarchical New World Order conspiracy, disseminates disinformation about treatment modalities for severe dissociative disorders, such as what used to be called Attention Deficit Syndrome. The founder of the American Psychiatric Association, Dr Ewan Cameron, conducted MK-ULTRA mind- and personality/behavioural experiments in Canada. At meetings of various servants of Lucifer and 'The Project' to establish the Satanic New World Order, such operatives and implementers indulge in 'revelation of method' introductions, such as secret signs and handshakes [see pages 732-737], in-group references and coded language, enabling secret society members to identify one another, as they befuddle the contemptible masses. These 'flawed' masses were and are to be 'perfected', which was the rationale adopted by the controllers of the British Round Table, Skull and Bones operatives and their servants the Rockefellers, to justify their sponsorship and practice of research into psychiatry, eugenics and euthanasia.

This particular abomination is now 'top of the agenda' in Britain, the United States and The Netherlands: hence those publicised terminations of terminally ill patients and of 'imperfecf newly-born babies. The linkages are truly horrendous: for instance, the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology, Eugenics and Human Heredity and its associated institutes (which changed their collective name after Hitler's defeat in 1945 to Max Planck Institutes[2]), were funded by the Rockefellers. In 1927, the Rockefeller Foundation provided funds for the construction of the Max Planck Institute's first building. The Institute was headed by Hitler's racial purity expert, Ernst Rudin. For three decades after the war (at least), thousands of people in many European countries were sterilised. A cadre of US intelligence is engaged in the sterilisation of parts of the Mexican population to this day. A protege of Ernst Rudin, Franz J.KaIlmann, who became a key US heredity research operative in New York State, received funding from the US controllers of Scottish Rite Freemasonry to prove that mental illness was hereditary. Indeed, from 1949 to 1963, a certain Robert Hanna Felix was director of psychiatric research for Scottish Rite Freemasonry - revealing that the controllers of the occultic Scottish Rite are well aware that their witchcraft operations are consistent and integral with mind modification.

BEARING THE BRUNT OF WILHELM WUNDT

These aberrations are all traceable historically to the influence of Wilhelm Maximilian Wundt (1875-1920) of the University of Heidelberg, who took the chair of philosophy at the University of Leipzig, where he established the first psychological laboratory, founded a journal of 'Philosophical Studies', and redefined psychology, especially with respect to its application in education to train servants of the state. Education is a subset of human engineering. Wundt perversely believed that psychological studies should be based upon physical reactions. Humanity thus becomes essentially valueless in a mechanistic world - to be played around with, modified or destroyed at will, and with impunity. Wundt's research was adopted and applied by the Prussian military and Government, and incorporated into a three-tiered schooling system in which 0.5% of pupils (the Akademie) are taught to think; 5.5% (Realschulen) are partially taught to think; and 94% (Volkschulen) of the students learn obedience, freedom from stressful thinking, and how to follow strict orders. It was therefore hardly surprising that the demoniac Adolf Hitler (Schicklgriiber) encountered little opposition among the general population to his hypnotic speeches, prescriptive demands and commands, as the first generation of Berlin schoolchildren brought up under the Volkschulen system were ripe for his manipulative mass behaviour modification offensive. The Volkschulen approach ensured that its students would not learn creative thinking, by dividing whole ideas into sub-subjects (mathematics, science etc) and then dividing these units into smaller units, and also by dividing time into small units. This is the teaching methodology used to this day, although it has been overlaid by Outcome-Based Education, which seeks to deliver young people with the 'correct' attitudes, and who have absorbed 'politically correct' concepts which, by definition, preclude creative thinking altogether. Modern education is also (deliberately) hampered by the demonic diversions provided by the insidious pop culture, which is a mass mind-control and behaviour modification transmission device to inculcate young minds with the Works of Darkness.

The Luciferians behind this devilish assault on our children[3] believe that they have the upper hand not least because children (or, as they prefer to call them, after the goat, 'kids') are being brought up nowadays to be computer literate at an early age, a state of affairs which promotes what they regard as the most disrupted state of society, one of disassociation, in which the individual is isolated from other members of the group. His or her main interaction is with electronic media, which in turn is 'just perfect' for the Luciferian project, since the Internet has been turned into the most efficient means for transmitting pornography ever invented: and the sexualisation of the young is 100% consistent with geomasonry and with the focus of all Masonry and witchcraft. Public health institutions have likewise been hijacked, or else founded in the first place as vehicles for the transmission of Luciferian propositions, one of the most notorious of which is a statement by Dr G. Brock Chisholm, who pronounced that 'the re-interpretation and eventual eradication of the concept of right and wrong are the belated objectives of nearly all psychotherapy'. No wonder an International Study Group for the Effects of Psychotropic Drugs on Normal Humans discussed, at their conference in 1967, the directions that mind-control and behaviour modification studies and results would follow up to the year 2000. These are all projects of the Luciferian controllers of the New Underworld Order.

Since the 1960s, sodium fluoride has been added to water in many developed countries where Luciferian powers hold hidden levers of power and influence. This is done not to preserve tooth enamel, as was proclaimed, for instance, by an oral hygiene propaganda unit run by Gibbs Toothpaste (part of Unilever) in the 1960s, but as a means of controlling the population through mass medication, since this substance was thought to be a mechanism for the reduction of resistance to domination, control and loss of liberty. The part of the brain responsible for an individual's power to resist domination is a small area of the brain tissue in the rear occiput of the left lobe. Repeated doses of tiny amounts of fluorine poison can narcotise this area, ostensibly rendering a person submissive to the will of persons seeking to control and govern him. Fluoride usage is a direct product of this Luciferian behaviour modification research. Charles Eliot Perkins, who was despatched by the US Government after the Second World War to annexe and take over I. G. Farben, the notorious manufacturers of Zyklon-B poison gas, stated that 'any person who drinks artificially fluorinated water for a period of one year or more will never again be the same person, mentally or physically'.

As a corollary to this effective denial that the human being is anything more than a bunch of atoms, to be manipulated at will, psychology according to Wundt became the study of the brain and the nervous system, discarding the notion that human beings have souls on the basis that if something is not scientifically quantifiable, it is not worthy of investigation. And Wundt's influence spread to the East as well as to the West: for example, Lenin's favourite psychologist, Ivan Pavlov (Pavloff), studied physiology in Leipzig. Pavlov unravelled patterns of animal behaviour through his experiments with dogs: in 1906, for instance, he measured their salivation by cutting holes in their cheeks, into which he inserted tubes. In his book 'Bio-Dynamics: The Battle for Youth' [1930], Dr Boris Sokoloff[4] recalled Professor Ivan Pavloff, whom Lenin consulted during a 'sabbatical' lasting several months at his dacha, pronouncing:

> 'There is no soul; there is only a reflex - a difference in electrical potentials and an increase in ions and irritation. We should not try to make an issue of our weakness by allowing ourselves even to think that we shall never understand this or that. We must understand everything and we shall. This will come to be'.

The influence of Wundt on psychology, psychiatry and education in the United States was paralleled, thanks to the studies undertaken by the key mid-19th century Bonesmen Gilman, Dwight and Russell, by the influence of Hegel, whose dialectical method is central to the modus operandi of all Luciferian control practitioners, from the revolutionary Leninists to members of The Order. The dialectic postulates that every force (Thesis) creates or is confronted by an opposing force (Antithesis), creating conflict, which in turn generates a third force, namely Synthesis (Thesis + Antithesis = Synthesis). The hotbed of Hegelian theorising has for a century been Johns Hopkins University, which 'figures', given its Skull and Bones origins and connections.

In the United States, the so-called 'father' of behaviourist psychology is reckoned to be John Broadus Watson (1878-1958), the evil Wundtian behavioural scientist who emerged from the heavily German-influenced University of Chicago where he learned all about Wilhelm Wundt and perversely taught that a child's wishes, needs and feelings should be treated as though they did not exist. This doctrine of Satan, which contravenes Jesus Christ's explicit teaching that no-one can enter into the Kingdom of God unless they humble themselves as little children, has damaged millions of young people for more than two generations. Watson is notorious for having boasted that he could take any 20 human infants and, by applying behavioural techniques, could create out of them whatever kind of person that he wished, whether beggar, butcher or thief. Children were to be removed from their mothers during the third or fourth week, otherwise attachments were sure to develop. Watson, who seemed to hate love, argued that mothers loved their babies for sexual reasons: otherwise, why would they kiss their children on the lips? He loathed mothers whose 'excessive affection' rendered a child forever dependent and emotionally unstable (the absolute reverse of the truth of course, as the Devil turns everything upside down). Children, therefore, should never be kissed, hugged or allowed to sit on their mothers' laps. Any occasional kissing should be confined to the forehead. Parents would soon discover their capacity for being 'perfectly objective' and yet kindly towards their children. The Author remembers an aunt who behaved exactly as prescribed by Watson: naturally, she was considered hard-hearted, cold and aloof.

Watson's behaviourism placed emphasis on the external behaviour of people and on their reactions to given situations, rather than on the internal, mental and spiritual condition of the people concerned. In the obtuse opinion of this fellow, analysis of the behaviour and the reactions human beings was the only objective method of gaining insight into human behaviour: which of course made sense from his warped perspective, since as a follower of Wundt he dismissed the ideas of spirit and soul as make-believe. Another misguided Wundt student - and US military intelligence operative -B. F. Skinner, developed operant conditioning and was the evil inventor of the 'Skinner Box', a crib-sized container into which children are placed for the purposes of conducting mind-control research, and for conditioning purposes.

For instance, one of the favoured techniques, extensively used in Illuminati training sessions, is placing a child in such a confined space with a rabbit, and telling the child that he will not be released until he has strangled the rabbit. This diabolical practice is designed to procure that the child becomes indifferent to inflicting pain without flinching, and to killing without flinching (as explained by Fr. Malachi Martin). The Author has established independently from US experts with direct Illuminati family background experience that this abomination is precisely as described here.

PROJECT BLUEBIRD-ARTICHOKE-MK-ULTRA-MK-SEARCH

mind-control experimentation in narcohypnotic techniques was initiated during the 1940s in a number of formerly belligerent countries. Project BLUEBIRD (relaunched as ARTICHOKE in August 1951 in a cover-up exercise), headed by Morse Allen, was mounted by US intelligence (the Joint Intelligence Committee) to develop methods of conditioning personnel to prevent unauthorised extraction of information from them. LSD, first synthesised by Sandoz Laboratories in Basel, Switzerland, in 1938 and by Dr Albert Hoffmann in 1943, arrived in the United States in 1949. Its arrival was an ingredient in the US intelligence community's developing work on the manipulation of human behaviour and mind-control, which 'blossomed' (to use a totally inappropriate word here) with Richard Helms' recommendation that the CIA must expand its research into both offensive and defensive brainwashing which became MK-ULTRA. Experiments with LSD were conducted by a Dr Harris Isbell, and overseen on behalf of the Scottish Rite by Robert Hanna Felix: one of these experiments involved giving Black prison inmates LSD for 75 consecutive days, with the dosage being increased whenever tolerance for LSD was indicated. In a similar experiment at Pont Saint-Esprit in France in 1951, the entire town went raving mad. One of the leading US mind-control experts, George Estabrooks, conducted research into the creation of hypnotically programmed couriers and into the hypnotic induction of split personalities. These victims, often used as hands-on operatives, have handlers like all other intelligence operatives, who can trigger pre-programmed reactions in the subject, such as ordering him to undertake an assassination (programmed omega subjects).

The American analyst Michael E. Kreca has expertly summarised the sordid history of the US Government's contribution to the United States' drug problem, in the following manner[5]. In September 1942, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) Director and Army Major General William 'Wild Bill' Donovan began his search for an effective 'truth serum', to be used on prisoners of war and captured spies. Starting with a budget of $5,000 and the blessing of President Franklin Roosevelt, he enlisted the aid of a few prominent physicians and mind-control psychiatrists such as George Estabrooks and Harry Murray as well as the former Prohibition agent and notorious Federal Bureau of Narcotics (FBN) Director Harry Anslinger.

The OSS/FBN team first tested a potent marijuana extract, tetrahydrocannabinol acetate (THCA), a colourless, odourless substance, lacing cigarettes or food items with it, and administering them to volunteer US Army and OSS personnel, all of whom eventually acquired the nickname 'Donovan's Dreamers'. Testing was also conducted under the guise of treatment for shell shock, the original Tavistock Institute remit.

Donovan's team found that THCA, which they termed 'TD', for 'truth drug', induced 'a great loquacity and hilarity', and even, in cases where the subject didn't feel physically threatened, some useable 'reefer madness'. Peyote, morphine and scopolamine were judged too powerful to be used in effective interrogation. In the light of all this, Donovan concluded, 'the drug defies all but the most expert and search analysis, and for all practical purposes can be considered beyond analysis'. The OSS did not, however, end the programme. By that time, faced with the terrifying ship losses the United States was suffering because of the efficiency of German U-boats, Donovan pressed on, hoping to find some effective chemical means to help in the interrogation of captured German U-boat sailors and naval officers.

In May 1943, George Hunter White, an Army captain, OSS officer and former FBN agent, gave standard cigarettes laced with THCA to an unwitting August Del Grazio, an influential New York City gangster nicknamed 'Augie Dallas'. Del Grazio, who by then had done prison stretches for assault and murder, had been one of the Mafia's most notorious enforcers and narcotics smugglers. Michael Kreca's analysis reveals that he operated an opium alkaloid factory in Turkey and was a key participant in the long-running Istanbul/Marseilles/NYC heroin pipeline commonly known as the 'French Connection'. Influenced by the THC, Del Grazio (who was also helping to smuggle spies and Mafiosi into German-occupied Italy) revealed volumes of vital information about underworld operations, including the names of several high-ranking city and state officials who took bribes from the Mob. Donovan was encouraged by the results of White's tests, commenting in writing that 'Cigarette experiments indicated that we had a mechanism offering promise in relaxing prisoners to be interrogated'.

The extensive wartime German (Himmlerian) experiments with various hallucinogenic drugs at the Dachau concentration camp, directed by Dr Hubertus Strughold, later honoured as 'the father of aviation medicine', aroused great interest in the United States - especially after a US Navy Intelligence technical mission to Dachau in October 1945 reported in detail on Strughold's work. So great was the US official interest in what had been going on at Dachau, in fact, that when the OSS and its successor, the CIA, imported nearly 800 German scientists of various specialties under the auspices of the infamous 'Project Paperclip' during 1945-55, it made sure to include Dr. Strughold.

Dr. Strughold's barbaric 'medical experiments', for which his subordinates were tried and convicted as war criminals at Nuremburg, were nothing more than a series of bizarre and unspeakably brutal Satanic tortures. Even so, he learned a lot about human behaviour and mescaline, a natural alkaloid present in the peyote cactus. Mescaline, long central to many Native American religious rituals and first chemically isolated in 1896, is a phenethylamine, the ergoline skeleton of which is also contained in lysergic acid (a tryptamine).

Sandoz Laboratories' chief chemist Dr. Albert Hofmann also discovered a lysergic acid derivative called ergonovine, a medication used to retard excessive postpartum uterine bleeding. Based on his work with ergonovine, Dr. Hofmann initially derived d-lysergic acid diethylamide tartrate-25 (LSD, a refined alkaloidal liquid byproduct of the rye fungus, ergot) in a series of experiments in Zurich in 1938. He used the naturally occurring lysergic acid radical, the common item in all ergot alkaloids, as the major component of the substance. Further experiments in this vein yielded psilocybin, derived from the Mexican Psilocybe Cubensis mushroom, hydergine, essential today in the

PROJECT MKULTRA, THE CIA'S PROGRAM OF RESEARCH IN BEHAVIORAL MODIFICATION

JOINT HEARING

BEFORE THE

SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE

AND THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

AUGUST 3, 1977

Printed for the use of the Select Committee on Intelligence
and Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
96-408 O WASHINGTON : 1977

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C., 20402
Stock No. 052-070-04357-1

Figure 38: The images of covers of Congressional reports are shown here and in the following pages in order to provide precise indications of certain published sources of open domain information on CIA-'Tavistock School' mind- and personality-manipulation and abusive research activities, such as near-death trauma, conducted in the German Himmlerian tradition by the US intelligence community.

improvement of cerebral circulation in geriatric patients, and dihydroergotamine, an important ingredient in blood pressure medication.

The well-read and broadly educated Dr. Hofmann knew that ergot had a long natural and cultural history as both a medicine and a poison. Ancient Greek midwives used to give an ergot-based, gruel-like drink, called kykeon, to their patients who were about to give birth. Kykeon was also consumed during the autumn Eleusinia, the ancient Greek agricultural festival celebrated in honor of the goddess of agriculture, Demeter. Across the Atlantic, sacramental Maya morning glories, beautifully depicted at the ancient Mayan temple-palace complex at Teotihuacn, Mexico, dating to about 1450, also contained ergot-based alkaloids.

However, the mindset governing the drug research work conducted by the Central Intelligence Agency and the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) was far different from that of Dr. Hofmann's. To the Cold War spymasters, ex-Nazis like Dr. Strughold were definitely evil, but they were useful as well. This pervasive amoral pragmatism led, of course, to the odious, notorious and repellent MK-ULTRA experimentation, developed by Dr Sydney Gottlieb [see page 208], in which, for nearly 25 years, thousands of everyday Americans, both military and civilian, were heavily closed with numerous very potent artificial psychoactive drugs, often without their knowledge or consent. An unknown number of foreign, including British, individuals, were targeted in 'remote' psychological manipulation exercises by Dr Gottlieb's 'scientists'. The pervasive amorality of this Himmlerian experimentation also led to the prevailing US intelligence community culture of 'anything goes, as we are protected by the National Security Act et seq., and there's nothing anyone can do about it, not even Congress, as we have our people in all the top intelligence, policymaking and political slots'.

Michael Kreca elaborated that this phenomenon of the obsessive focus and reliance upon 'the interests of national security' - the expediency mentality - combined with the United States' celebrity-obsessed pop culture which gleefully raises and shamelessly promotes snake oil hustlers as well as the pharmaceutical industry's expensive 'pill for every ill' philosophy, was a recipe for incompetence and arrogance far more hazardous than any synthetic alkaloid that had been developed, and came as no surprise to experts like Dr. Hofmann. LSD proved to be invaluable in the psychiatric treatment of certain patients: the actor Cary Grant was cured of alcoholism by carefully administered doses of the drug under close medical supervision, because it is thousands of times more potent than the traditional herbal mixtures. In fact, it is thousands of times more potent than the milder of the entheogenic alkaloids. It is effective at doses of as little as a ten-millionth of a gram, which makes it 5,000 times more potent than mescaline. It should never be taken without training or supervision, Michael Kreca warned.

The Navy tested mescaline as part of its 1947-53 Project CHATTER. The personality-modification Project MK-ULTRA itself was first organised in 1949 by Richard Helms under the direction of the German Abwehr agent Allen Dulles, and was initially labelled as Project BLUEBIRD. Two years later, it was renamed ARTICHOKE (after one of Dulles's favourite foods), and then it was relabelled MK-ULTRA in 1953 - finally becoming MK-SEARCH in 1965 until the program's 'official termination' eight years later.

MK-ULTRA was directly responsible for the sudden wide underground availability of LSD, phencyclidine (PCP, also called 'angel dust'), dimethyltryptamine (DMT), 2,5-dimethoxy-4-methylamphetamine (STP), and other very powerful synthetic psychoactive drugs in the 1960s. A decade earlier, the CIA and the US Army had contacted Sandoz

. 1:
H88:
D84 .1043

HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA, 1977

HEARINGS
BEFORE THE
SUBCOMMITTEE ON
HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH
OF THE
COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE
NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS
FIRST SESSION
ON
S. 1893

TO AMEND THE PUBLIC HEALTH SERVICE ACT TO ESTABLISH THE PRESIDENT'S COMMISSION FOR THE PROTECTION OF HUMAN SUBJECTS OF BIOMEDICAL AND BEHAVIORAL RESEARCH, AND FOR OTHER PURPOSES

SEPTEMBER 20 AND 21, 1977

DEPOSITORY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
RECEIVED
FEB 16 1978
STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW YORK
AT ALBANY

SUNY-ALBANY
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

Printed for the use of the Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
[illegible] O WASHINGTON : 1977

Figure 39: In 1966, the double-minded Richard Helms ordered the destruction of the MK-ULTRA files (and probably those of related Luciferian programmes), but of course the work, and the invention of 'evil things', continued. Congressional hearings were being conducted on this subject, and on the abusive testing of drugs on humans, as late as 1977. Dr Gottlieb supervised CIA mind-control research up to 1973.

Laboratories requesting several kilograms of LSD for use in the test programme. Dr. Hofmann and Sandoz refused this request, so the CIA Director Allen Dulles persuaded the Indianapolis-based pharmaceutical luminary organisation, first mentioned in Chapter 2, Eli Lilly (later the pioneers of and chief cheerleaders for the widely prescribed antidepressant Prozac) to synthesise the drug contrary to then existing international patent accords - making the US Government and Lilly the first illegal domestic manufacturers and distributors of LSD.

The product was distributed via the Central Intelligence Agency's organised crime allies and through the FBI's counterintelligence programmes (COINTELPROs) directed against various revolutionary activist groups of the period. The actual definition of the codename MK-ULTRA remains, for some, unclear; but a former Army Special Forces Captain, John McCarthy, who ran the CIA's Saigon-based Operation Cherry which targeted the Cambodian ruler Prince Sihanouk for assassination, claimed, with Edwin Wilson [see Chapter 3] that MK-ULTRA did (does) indeed stand for 'Manufacturing Killers Utilizing Lethal Tradecraft Requiring Assassination'.

On April 10, 1953, in a speech at Princeton University, the CIA's Director of Central Intelligence, Allen Dulles (further feeding the already widespread but misguided fear about the high effectiveness of the alleged Chinese 'brainwashing' of US prisoners of war in the Korean context) warned that the human mind was a 'malleable tool', and that the 'brain perversion techniques' of the Communists were 'so subtle and so abhorrent' that 'the brain becomes a phonograph playing a disc put on its spindle by an outside genius over which it has no control'. What Mr Dulles concealed, of course, was that Britain and the United States had been working overtime on perfecting similar techniques for many years, and that the original sources and inspiration for these aberrations was the same. He also concealed the DVD propaganda component of his warnings.

In its simplest and most odious form, propaganda involves condemning one's opponent publicly for doing what one is already doing privately. One characteristic of liars and deceivers is that they usually accuse their opponents of the sins that they are committing themselves. Dulles, of course, was that very 'outside genius'. Three days after warning assembled Princetonians of the disturbing ramifications of these techniques, he had directed MK-ULTRA researchers to perfect them.

Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, the CIA's expert on lethal poisons, (who was reputedly the inspiration for Stanley Kubrick's bizarre Dr. Strangelove character played by Peter Sellers in the 1964 film of the same title) led the operation as the Director of the Chemical Division of the Technical Services Staff and, via a front organisation called The Society For Human Ecology, and distributed $25 million worth of drug research grants to Harvard, Stanford, UC Berkeley and other US institutions. In later life, Dr Gottlieb became well-known for his enigmatic observation that 'the bottom line on this whole business has not yet been written'. Gottlieb was among many prominent behaviour modification and mind-control experts from Germany, of Jewish extraction, who have collaborated over the decades to create the new hell on earth which the Luciferians have been constructing not least in order to destroy True Christianity (which is impossible). In the 1960s, Gottlieb travelled to the Congo, with a little black bag containing a biotoxin destined for the toothbrush of his target, Patrice Lumumba.

The technique of applying poisons to a target's toothbrush has contemporary resonance following the state-sponsored poisoning in 2005 of the self-motivated US patriot Andrew Stephenson, of Seattle, who almost single-handedly toured the United

,4.1
H88:
B52/3/
977
.1043

BIOLOGICAL TESTING INVOLVING HUMAN SUBJECTS BY
THE DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE, 1977

HEARINGS
BEFORE THE
SUBCOMMITTEE ON
HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH
OF THE
COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE
NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS
FIRST SESSION
ON
EXAMINATION OF SERIOUS DEFICIENCIES IN THE DEFENSE
DEPARTMENT'S EFFORTS TO PROTECT THE HUMAN SUBJECTS,
OF DRUG RESEARCH

MARCH 8 AND MAY 23, 1977

DEPOSITORY

GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
RECEIVED
NOV8 1977
STATE UNIVERSITY OF NEW YORK
AT ALBANY

SUNY-ALBANY
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

Printed for the use of the Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
97-867 O WASHINGTON : 1977

Figure 40: Many secrets concerning the US intelligence community's emulation and elaboration of Nazi experimentation were only revealed in the course of Congressional Hearings in the 1970s. But since the CIA is self-financing (its Congressional appropriations being just pocket-money) and is essentially accountable to no-one at all, exposures of its Himmlerian abominations have made no difference to its behaviour.

States to draw public attention to the intended falsification of the 2004 General Election outcome by means of the manipulation of electronic voting machines and software [for a review of the electronic methods that have been developed to 'control democracy', namely, so as to finalise the substitution of 'democratism' for 'true democracy', see Addendum 1, page 662]. After exhausting his financial resources, Andy made the fatal mistake of travelling to Washington DC, in search of a lobbying job on Capitol Hill. On the return flight to Seattle, he was violently ill, and shortly afterwards was diagnosed with cancer of the pancreas[6]. The late Jimmy Goldsmith, the British businessman turned founder of the since-defunct Referendum Party, mysteriously developed cancer of the pancreas within 18 months of his starting to write and give speeches against free trade and Britain's participation in the European Union Collective. On investigating these and other mysterious deaths, the Author established from impeccable intelligence sources that the favoured technique is to enter the target's hotel bedroom while he is out attending a conference or meetings, and to inject his toothpaste tube with the biotoxin du jour, which may also be applied to the toothbrush. The reason for this procedure is that biotoxins are most efficiently and rapidly absorbed via the underneath of the tongue.

Poor Mozart was poisoned when, through 'The Magic Flute', he exposed the occult evils of Freemasonry, despite his reliance on financial handouts from known Masons. When Captain William Morgan exposed Freemasonry with his little book, published in 1827, entitled 'Illustrations of Freemasonry' [from which the old drawings of Masonic 'grips' etc shown in Addendum 10 on page 734 and on page 10 are taken], he was murdered. Stephen Knight, the British author of 'THE Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons'[7], one of the first modern exposures of Freemasonry, was likewise liquidated.

Wherever possible, Illuminati assassinations, as in the case of Mozart, are conducted by means of poisoning; and the modern focus has been on developing biotoxins which mimic natural illnesses. The pancreas being one of the most sensitive of all the internal organs, a Himmlerian biotoxin has been developed which either mimics or creates cancer of the pancreas, which has the 'advantage' that the victim appears normal until close to the end.

For two decades, the odious Dr Sidney Gottlieb, the US Government's leading poisoner (who died and descended to hell on 10th March 2005), presided over the CIA's Technical Services Division, where he supervised the invention and preparation of lethal poisons, experiments in mind-control and the administration of LSD and other psycho-active drugs to unwitting subjects. There remains a possibility that the CIA had been concerned that Gottlieb, who was tending to move towards tentative 'repentance' in his declining years, may have been about to expose a wide range of the CIA's most diabolical programmes, amid the general revulsion at the atrocities committed by CIA-linked operatives at Abu Ghraib and many other locations in Iraq, Jordan, Afghanistan, and on the British Territory (leased to the United States) of Diego Garcia).

The Abu Ghraib atrocities were simply elaborations of certain abominations committed in the context of the CIA's demonic Phoenix Program, supervised by William Colby in Vietnam. A team of CIA 'Wehrmacht' 'psychologists' established a base at Bien Hoa Prison near Saigon, where suspects were being held after Phoenix Program round-ups. They proceeded to perform Himmlerian experiments on the prisoners. In one of these, three prisoners were anaesthetised, their skulls were opened, and electrodes were implanted by CIA doctors into different parts of their brains. The prisoners were revived, placed in a room and given knives while the electrodes were activated. The CIA observers 'hoped' they would attack each other. When they didn't, they were shot dead.

MIDNIGHT CLIMAX: USING SEX FOR CONTROL AND ENTRAPMENT

Earlier, George Hunter White, of THCA-laced 'Lucky Strikes' fame, had returned to the FBN (now the Drug Enforcement Administration) at the end of the war, where he continued to research behaviour modifying drugs. In 1955, he was a high ranking FBN administrator who helped the CIA develop and implement a similar operation called MIDNIGHT CLIMAX. In this infamous scheme, 'safe houses' staffed with prostitutes were established in San Francisco. The hookers lured men from local taverns back to these safe houses after their drinks had previously been spiked with LSD. White's team secretly filmed the subsequent events in each house. The purpose of these so-called 'national security brothels' was to enable the CIA to experiment with the use of sex and mind-altering drugs to extract information from test subjects - and, it was planned, from spies, prisoners of war, defectors and saboteurs. The sex entrapment apparatus run out of premises close to Dupont Circle in Washington, DC, was and is an ongoing byproduct of this 'research'. It performs the function of entrapping diplomats and other targets for espionage and blackmail purposes. Not all diplomats are suitable fodder for invitations to the Bohemian Grove in California, which specialises in blackmail entrapment.

MIDNIGHT CLIMAX was ostensibly terminated after eight years when the CIA's Inspector-General of the day, John Earman, charged that 'the concepts involved in manipulating human behaviour are found by many people within and outside the Agency to be distasteful and unethical'. It would be reassuring if this perspective had made the slightest difference to the way this criminalised organisation behaves, but of course it hasn't. Mr Earman asserted that 'the rights and interests of US citizens were placed in jeopardy'. Earman further noted that LSD 'had been tested on individuals at all social levels, high and low, native American and foreign'. MK-ULTRA's bureaucratic godfather, Richard Helms, summarily rebuffed Earman's charges, claiming that 'positive operational capacity to use drugs is diminishing, owing to a lack of realistic testing. Tests', Helms continued, 'were necessary to keep up with the Soviets'.

However, Helms reversed himself a year later when testifying before the Warren Commission, the cover-up operation headed by Gerald Ford (a.ka. the alleged pornography boss Leslie Lynch King. Jr.) investigating the assassination of President Kennedy, claiming that 'Soviet research has consistently lagged five years behind Western research'.

Upon formal retirement from the bureaucracy in 1966, George White wrote a startling farewell letter to Dr. Gottlieb. He reminisced about his MIDNIGHT CLIMAX work, and uttered these notorious, cynical and frightening observations, which have since become legendary: 'I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the all-highest?'

Where else indeed, but as a member of what would later become the hypocritical War on Drugs, as cover for drug-trafficking? For by the end of the 1950s, the CIA was financing just about every qualified LSD researcher and psychologist it could find, through contractors such as the Society for the Study of Human Ecology

In 1966, Richard Helms ordered the destruction of MK-ULTRA's files, but of course the work continued, and Congressional hearings on the subject were being conducted as late as 1977 [see Figures 38-39] - with the CIA's mind-control research supervised up to 1973 by Dr Sidney Gottlieb. Visitors to Long Island who have friends living there, as does the Author, will at some stage discover that the 'ground zero' location for eugenics research (for the past century) has been Cold Spring Harbour, LI.

MK-ULTRA experimentation, in which Vice-President Richard Cheney was allegedly involved in a senior supervisory role, did not of course follow standards for medical experimentation (such as informed consent) established at Nuremberg. Between 1958 and 1960, LSD tests were conducted to establish how an LSD-dosed soldier would behave under interrogation. By the mid-1960s, at least 1,500 US Chemical Corps army personnel had been subjected to LSD experimentation. The psychoactive compound quinuclidinyl benzilate (BZ), first tested at Edgewood Arsenal in 1959, was given to about 2,800 soldiers and was deployed in grenades, mortar shells and missiles used in Vietnam. In MK-ULTRA training of Navy personnel for deployment in 'combat readiness units', the men were strapped to chairs with their eyelids clamped open and were forced to watch films of carnage until they were desensitised. One report says that these men were also compelled to watch propaganda aimed at the dehumanisation and vilification of other cultures, which they were required to hate.

Meanwhile Aldous Huxley (whose homosexual lover was D. H. Lawrence), of the Tavistock Institute, and a member of the filthy British drug and homosexuality cult called Children of the Sun, spearheaded a Tavistock project to intoxicate elements of the US population with LSD in about 1950 (an episode the trademarks of which have been obliterated by the subsequent LSD period publicised by Dr Timothy Leary: see below). The gullible American population was prepared for LSD by Huxley's very evil book, The Doors of Perception. Huxley pronounced that 'there will be in the next generation or so, a pharmacological method of making people love their servitude, and producing ... a kind of painless concentration camp for entire societies'. The diabolical Esalen Institute at Big Sur, California sponsors, to this day, meditational and psychoesoteric training with links to Aldous Huxley. The US Army reservation on the former US military base at The Presidio, outside San Francisco, is the location of a Satanic child molestation ring with which the notorious US military intelligence operative Colonel Michael Aquino, the head of the Temple of Set, was associated. A military research laboratory there develops, tests and modifies advanced US Government mind-control knowledge and applications.

THE JOLLY JAPES OF LOUIS JOLYON WEST

These evil activities were then developed in the following manner. An employee of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), Jerry Garcia, was employed to channel youth dissent and rebellion into 'benign' and non-threatening directions. Still in the 1950s, the US Public Health Service [sic!!] meanwhile employed the services of the prominent LSD proponent, Dr Timothy Leary, to popularised the use of LSD, which was of course extremely damaging to those who followed this evil example. The intended mass infusion of LSD into US culture was contrived to turn the masses away from political activism and towards a life of 'ecstatic mystic peasantry' - an objective that has comprehensively failed. Dr Leary's drug experiments, undertaken at Harvard University, were funded by the CIA, which also trained or trains operatives to raise children to become sex slaves (Project MONARCH slaves). A number of covert mind-control slave camps are known to exist in the United States, of which Mount Shasta is one.

On the day of the Oklahoma City bombing - a mass traumatisation event, like the assassination of President Kennedy and 9/11, which was intended to influence and affect the United States' national identity and cohesiveness, to fracture the souls of the American people and to accustom them to the perception that the nation and its

Government are subject to hidden forces beyond their control - a certain Dr Louis Jolyon West appeared on the prime-time Larry King Live nationwide TV show, which is thought to be extensively used to deceive the American people, to characterise Timothy McVeigh as yet another 'lone nutcase'. And who was Louis Jolyon West, mercifully no longer with us to torment humanity (1924-99)?

On 2 January 1999, this evil man, a key US mind-control specialist, died, like Lenin, of a rapidly advancing malignant tumour which even he lacked the power to overcome. Formerly the celebrated psychiatric consultant to the US Air Force, occupant of the Chair of the Department of Psychiatry and Behavioural Sciences at the University of California, and Director of its Neuropsychiatric Institute, Los Angeles (UCLA), this fellow was born in Brooklyn, of immigrant Russian-Jewish parents. After enlisting in the military, he was sent to the University of Iowa where he participated in a secret specialised training programme. His later work on behaviour modification and mind-control for US intelligence developed into an extensive study of cults, torture and brainwashing. He worked in particular as a court-appointed psychiatrist, examining Jack Ruby, the murderer of Lee Harvey Oswald.

During the Korean War, West studied Soviet and Chinese techniques of brain-washing and torture. He said at the time that US prisoners-of-war had falsely confessed to engaging in germ warfare because their captors had instilled a sense of guilt in them through solitary confinement, prolonged sleeplessness and physical abuse, which he described as the classic tools of brainwashing. These 'just happen' to be precisely the 'tools' employed by US intelligence and its 'cut-ouf torturing and interrogation organisations like CACI at Abu Ghraib and the large number of similar enterprises scattered around Iraq and Afghanistan. In the course of his research, West demonstrated that prisoners could become convinced of their own guilt by these same 'tools' of solitary confinement, physical abuse and lack of sleep. He extended these findings to his study of cults, pontificating that they practice 'the three Ds: debility, dread and dependency'. He was accused by some of killing an elephant named Tusko at Oklahoma Zoo in the 1960s with an overdose of LSD, while he was directing an LSD research programme for the CIA at the University of Oklahoma. In 1962, Louis Jolyon West published a tome on hallucinations, which he had edited, consisting of papers by prominent members of the American Psychiatric Association and other scientists on such issues as the spiritual effects of LSD and the experiences of schizophrenics.

Dr West was cleared at TOP SECRET level for work on MK-ULTRA operations. He was to have headed the UCLA Violence Project, which had been approved by President Reagan but which was ostensibly cancelled in response to public protest. The project was to have been housed in a Nike missile site outside Los Angeles, in the Santa Monica mountains. In his book 'Journey Into Madness', the British writer Gordon Thomas says that Dr West had proposed (but this Author suspects that the CIA had proposed) the creation of a financially well-endowed multidisciplinary Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, within the confines of which doctors would explore all types of violent behaviour, what caused it, and how it could be detected, prevented and treated.

The Center was to have dealt with individuals who displayed antisocial and impulsive aggression tendencies. Its laboratories were to specialise in genetic, biochemical, and neurophysiological studies of 'violent individuals, including prisoners and hyperkinetic children'. This proposal was enthusiastically promoted by Governor Ronald Reagan of California, but the State Legislature thought it was evil, and refused to sanction the development of the means to enable the State to monitor individuals with implants from central control stations. Two South American doctors, working at detention centres in Paraguay and Chile, who were familiar with the work of Himmler's Dr Mengele, were to have been recruited for this Satanic project with which Ronald Reagan was so enamoured: one was to run the Center's shock room, and the other was to direct the Center's psychosurgical operating unit, where the latest lobotomy techniques were to be used. In 1994, ''The Times', London, estimated that 15,000 people had been implanted with electronic brain devices during the preceding decade.

A number of other abhorrent CIA mind-control MK-ULTRA programs were supposedly cancelled - although the frequency with which such cancellations have been reported suggests to the Author that these 'cancellations' may represent disinformation. One was a proposal to implant brain electrodes in prisoners at Vacaville State Prison, California, the site of Himmlerian CIA mind-control experiments on the drug pemoline under another related programme called MK-SEARCH. The prisoners were to be monitored by remote tracking technology after discharge. If they entered a restricted area or exhibited sexual arousal patterns on remote EEG equipment, a signal would be sent to their brain electrodes immobilising them, while law enforcement personnel would be despatched to apprehend them. A second mind-control experiment at Vacaville State Prison, set up in February 1972, was also supposedly 'aborted'. A Maximum Psychiatric Diagnostic Unit there was to deal with selected inmates from the 700 held in solitary confinement in California prisons. A Luciferian programme, evolved from experiments such as those performed in Bien Hoa prison, near Saigon, in 1968, was developed for this unit, under which prisoners would have electrodes implanted in their brains to monitor them and to control their behaviour after discharge, using radio transmitters. Following public outrage, the California Department of Corrections called a press conference on 30th December 1977 to announce that the project had been 'temporarily abandoned for administrative reasons'. Other 'shutdowns' of nefarious programmes, attributable to negative public reaction, have been recorded - two notable instances being the Tuskeegee Syphilis Study and the Lafayette Clinic Aggression Project.

These supposed closures of Himmlerian programmes - which may well have been continued, of course, under different cover - demonstrate that when information about the evil practices of the hidden Luciferian establishment leak into the public domain, the American public (especially the Californian public, which has a commendable record in this respect) can be mobilised to a sufficient extent at least to make life temporarily inconvenient for these evil people - who include the Harvard brain electrode team, doctors from Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, the Navy Medical Neuropsychiatric Research Unit in San Diego, and the Veterans Administration Hospital, Salt Lake City. An outfit calling itself the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, with a board consisting of CIA and military doctors, exists not to investigate the 'syndrome', but in fact to disprove claims of cult mind-control - in order (of course) to cover up behaviour modification and mind-control operations of US intelligence which are in danger of being exposed by the victims, their handlers, or both (as in the case with which Mark Phillips is associated, even thought it appears that Phillips is or was nevertheless also engaged in establishing whether a MONARCH Slave can be permanently deprogrammed).

It was, by the way, that man of darkness, Dr. Gottlieb, from Germany, who sponsored CIA research by the notorious Dr Ewen Cameron at McGill University, Montreal, where he routinely dosed psychiatric subjects with jolts of electricity through their brains. What degree of demonic madness accounted for such abominations is hard to imagine.

THE NAZI CONNECTION ACTUALLY 'TOOK OFF' DURING THE WAR

Writing in their 1998 book 'Whiteout: the CIA, Drugs and the Press' [ISBN: 1-85984-8974], Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St. Clair revealed that the United States' enthusiastic infatuation with Heinrich Himmler's Illuminati Toten-scientists can be traced back to 1944, although as we have seen the German penetration in this dimension began in the 1930s. The story of the recruitment of Nazi scientists and warfare technicians by the Pentagon and the Central Intelligence Agency is well told in two excellent but unjustly neglected books: Tom Bower's 'The Paperclip Conspiracy' (1987)[9] and Linda Hunt's 'Secret Agenda' (1991)[10]. Hunt's reporting in particular, is first rate. Exploiting the Freedom of Information Act, she opened up thousands of pages of crucial documents from the Pentagon, the State Department and the CIA that should keep researchers occupied for years to come.

Information about experiments by the Nazi doctors was surfaced primarily from the trial record of the medical cases conducted at the Nuremberg tribunal, from Alexander Mitscherlich and Fred Mielke's 'Doctors of Infamy' (1981)[11], and Robert Proctor's frightening account in 'Racial Hygiene' (1988)[12]. The US Government's research into biological warfare is admirably profiled in Jeanne McDermott's book, 'The Killing Winds' (1979)[13]. The best account of the US Government's role in developing and deploying chemical warfare agents remains Seymour Hersh's book 'Chemical and Biological Warfare' (1969)[14] from the late 1960s. In an attempt to track down the cause of Gulf War Syndrome (which he perhaps 'didn't realise' was allegedly caused by aspartame in soft drink consignments), Senator Jay Rockefeller held a series of remarkable hearings on human experimentation by the US Government. These studies are cited to provide further references beyond the scope of this broader enquiry, which focuses on pan-German global control plans and their integration into the Dluminati dimension of Germany's Luciferian offensive.

The mass exodus of Himmler's Nazi scientists inter alia to the United States was not, as all analysts have hitherto assumed, solely a consequence of corrupt and pragmatic decisions made by amoral American and British intelligence officers and misguided policymakers, but was also - crucially, as is explained in Chapter 8 - an intended corollary of subtle Nazi propaganda and influence-building operations masterminded from the German Geopolitical Centre set up by the Nazis in Madrid in 1942. Anyone who loses sight of this central fact will miss the whole point of this book.

In their remarkable analysis, Cockburn and St Clair explained that 'a careful review of the activities of the CIA and the organisations from which it sprang reveals an intense preoccupation with the development of techniques of behaviour control, brainwashing and covert medical and psychic experimentation on unwitting subjects including religious sects, ethnic minorities, prisoners, mental patients, soldiers and the terminally ill. The rationale for such activities, the techniques and indeed the human subjects chosen show an extraordinary and chilling similarity to Nazi experiments. This similarity becomes less surprising when we trace the determined and often successful efforts of US intelligence officers to acquire the records of Nazi experiments, and in many cases to recruit the Nazi researchers themselves and put them to work - transferring the laboratories from Dachau, the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, Auschwitz and Buchenwald to Edgewood Arsenal, Fort Derrick, Huntsville Air Force Base, Ohio State, and the University of Washington'. Thus the Nazi International contrived with great skill to transfer Himmler's Satanic operations to the eager United States.

'As Allied forces crossed the English Channel during the D-Day invasion in June 1944, some 10,000 intelligence officers known as T-Forces were right behind the advance battalions. Their mission was to seize munitions experts, technicians, German scientists and their research materials, along with French scientists who had collaborated with the Nazis. Soon a substantial number of such scientists had been picked up and placed in an internment camp known as the Dustbin. In the original planning for the mission a prime factor was the view that German military equipment - tanks, jets, rocketry and so forth - was technically superior and that captured scientists, technicians and engineers could be swiftly debriefed in an effort by the Allies to catch up'.

'Then, in December 1944, Bill Donovan, head of the OSS, and Allen Dulles [the German Abwehr deep cover intelligence agent - Ed.], OSS head of intelligence operations in Europe operating out of Switzerland, strongly urged FDR to approve a plan allowing Nazi intelligence officers, scientists and industrialists to be "given permission for entry into the United States after the war and the placing of their earnings on deposit in an American bank and the like". FDR swiftly turned the proposal down, saying: "We expect that the number of Germans who are anxious to save their skins and property, will rapidly increase. Among them may be some who should properly be tried for war crimes, or at least arrested for active participation in Nazi activities. Even with the necessary controls you mention, I am not prepared to authorize the giving of guarantees"'.

But Cockburn and St Clair pointed out that 'this presidential veto was a dead letter even as it was being formulated'. A scheme codenamed Operation Overcast was under way as early as July 1945, approved by the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Its purpose was to bring into the United States 350 German Nazi scientists, including Werner Von Braun and his V2 rocket team, chemical weapons designers, and artillery and submarine engineers. There had been some theoretical ban on Nazis being imported, but this was as empty as FDR's edict. In addition to Von Braun, the Overcast shipment included such notorious Nazis and SS officers as Dr. Herbert Axster, Dr. Arthur Rudolph and Georg Richkey.

Von Braun's team had used slave labor from the Dora concentration camp and had worked prisoners to death in the Mittelwerk complex: indeed, more than 20,000 had died there from exhaustion and starvation. 'The supervising slavemaster was Richkey. In retaliation against sabotage in the missile plant - prisoners would urinate on electrical equipment, causing spectacular malfunctions - Richkey would hang them, twelve at a time from the factory cranes, with wooden sticks shoved into their mouths to muffle their cries. In the Dora camp itself, he regarded children as useless mouths and instructed the SS guards to club them to death, which they did'.

This record did not inhibit Richkey's high-speed transfer to the United States, the authors reported, 'where he was deployed at Wright Field, a US Army Air Corps base near Dayton, Ohio'. Richkey was then put to work overseeing security for dozens of other Nazis who were by now pursuing their researches for the United States. 'He was also assigned the task of translating all of the records from the Mittelwerk factory. He thus had the opportunity, which he used to the utmost, to destroy any material compromising to his colleagues and himself. By 1947 there was enough public disquiet, stimulated by the columnist Drew Pearson, to require a pro forma war crimes trial for Richkey and a few others. Richkey was sent back to West Germany and put through a secret trial supervised by the US Army, which had every reason to clear Richkey since conviction would disclose that the entire Mittelwerk team now in the US had been accomplices in the use of slavery and the torture and killing of prisoners of war, and thus were also guilty of war crimes. The US Army therefore sabotaged Richkey's trial by withholding records now in the United States and also by preventing any interrogation of Von Braun and others from Dayton: and Richkey was acquitted. Because some of the trial materials implicated Rudolph, Von Braun and Walter Domberger, however, the entire record was classified and held secret for forty years, thus burying evidence that could have sent the entire rocket team to the gallows'.

'Senior officers of the US Army knew the truth. Initially the recruitment of German war criminals was justified as being necessary to the continuing war against Japan. Later, moral justification took the form of invoking "intellectual reparations" or, as the Joint Chiefs of Staff put it, as "a form of exploitation of chosen rare minds whose continuing intellectual productivity we wish to use". Endorsement for this repellent posture came from a panel of the National Academy of Sciences, which adopted the colleg-ial position that German scientists had somehow evaded the Nazi contagion by being "an island of nonconformity in the Nazified body politic", a statement that Von Braun, Richkey and the other slave drivers must have deeply appreciated'[15].

But these excuses were soon overwhelmed by a much more saleable proposition. 'By 1946, a rationale based on Cold War strategy was becoming more important. Nazis were needed in the struggle against Communism, and their capabilities certainly had to be withheld from the Soviets. In September 1946, President Harry Truman approved the Dulles-inspired Project Paperclip, the mission of which was to bring a targeted 1,000 Nazi scientists to the United States. Among them were many of the vilest criminals of the war: there were doctors from Dachau concentration camp who had killed prisoners by putting them through high altitude tests, who had frozen their victims and given them massive closes of salt water to research the process of drowning. There were the chemical weapons engineers such as Kurt Blome, who had tested Sarin nerve gas on prisoners at Auschwitz. There were doctors who had instigated battlefield traumas by taking women prisoners at Ravensbriick and filling their wounds with gangrene cultures, sawdust, mustard gas, and glass, then sewing them up and treating some with doses of sulphur drugs while timing others to see how long it took for them to develop lethal cases of gangrene'.

Cockburn and St Clair continued: 'Among the targets of the US Paperclip recruitment program were Hermann Becker-Freysing and Konrad Schaeffer, authors of the study 'Thirst and Thirst Quenching in Emergency Situations at Sea'. The 'scientific' study was designed to devise ways to prolong the survival of pilots downed over water. To this end, the two scientists had asked Heinrich Himmler for "forty healthy test subjects" from the SS chief's network of concentration camps - the only debate among the scientists being whether the research victims should be Jews, gypsies or Communists. The experiments took place at Dachau. These prisoners, most of them Jews, had salt water forced down their throats through tubes. Others had salt water injected directly into their veins. Half of the subjects were given a drug called berkatit, which was supposed to make salt water more palatable, though both scientists suspected that the berkatit itself would prove fatally toxic within two weeks. They were absolutely correct. During the tests the doctors used long needles to extract liver tissue. No anaesthetic was given. All the research subjects, of course, died. Both Becker-Freysing and Schaeffer received long-term contracts under Paperclip; Schaeffer ended up in Texas, where he continued his research into 'thirst and desalinisation of salt water.'

Becker-Freysing was given the responsibility, the authors reported, 'of editing for the US Air Force the massive store of aviation research conducted by his fellow Nazis. By this time he had been tracked down and brought to trial at Nuremberg. The multi-volume work, entitled 'German Aviation Medicine: World War II', was eventually published by the US Air Force, complete with an introduction written by Becker-Freysing from his Nuremberg jail cell. The work neglected to mention the human victims of the research, and praised the Nazi scientists as sincere and honourable men 'with a free and academic character labouring under the constraints of the Third Reich'. One of their prominent colleagues was a certain Dr. Sigmund Rascher, also assigned to Dachau. In 1941 Rascher informed Himmler of the vital need to conduct high-altitude experiments on human subjects. Rascher, who had developed a special low-pressure chamber during his tenure at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, asked Himmler for permission to have delivered into his custody 'two or three hundred professional criminals', a Nazi euphemism for Jews, Russian prisoners, and members of the Polish underground resistance. Himmler quickly assented and Rascher's experiments were under way within a month.

'Rascher's victims were locked inside his low-pressure chamber, which simulated altitudes of up to 68,000 feet. Eighty of the human guinea pigs died after being kept inside for half an hour without oxygen. Dozens of others were dragged semi-conscious from the chamber and immediately drowned in vats of ice water. Rascher quickly sliced open their heads to examine how many blood vessels in the brain had burst due to air embolisms. Rascher filmed these experiments and the autopsies, sending the footage along with his meticulous notes back to Himmler. "Some experiments gave men such pressure in their heads that they would go mad and pull out their hair in an effort to relieve such pressure", Rascher wrote. "They would tear at their heads and faces with their hands and scream in an effort to relieve pressure on their eardrums". Rascher's records were scooped up by US intelligence agents and delivered to the Air Force'.

That is how keen the relevant evil cadres of the US intelligence community were to obtain and build upon these hellish findings. The US intelligence operatives were in fact so entranced with their mission, that they went to extraordinary lengths to protect their recruits from criminal investigators at the US Department of Justice. One of the more despicable cases was that of Nazi aviation researcher Emil Salmon, who, though a Jew, had helped during the War to set fire to a synagogue filled with Jewish women and children. Salmon was sheltered by US officials at Wright Air Force Base in Ohio after being convicted of crimes by a denazification court in Germany.

ENTER THE OFFICE OF NAVAL INTELLIGENCE

Through its Technical Mission in Europe, the US Navy was also hot on the trail of state-of-the-art Nazi research into interrogation techniques. The Navy's intelligence officers soon came across Nazi research papers on truth serums, this research having been conducted, yet again, at Dachau concentration camp, by a Dr. Kurt Plotner. Plotner had given Jewish and Russian prisoners high doses of mescalin and had watched them display schizophrenic behaviour. The prisoners began to talk openly of their hatred of their German captors, and to make confessional statements about their psychological makeup. Reading Dr. Plotner's reports, the US Naval Intelligence officers discovered that Plotner had experimented with some success with mescalin as a speech- and even truth-inducing drug, enabling interrogators to extract 'even the most intimate secrets from the subject when questions were cleverly put'. Plotner also reported researches into mescalin's potential as an agent of behavioural modification or mind-control.

Cockburn and St Clair reported that 'this information was of particular interest to Boris Pash, one of the more sinister figures in the CIA cast of characters in this early phase. Pash was a Russian emigre to the United States who had gone through the revolutionary years at the birth of the Soviet Union.... In his capacity as head of security Pash had supervised the OSS officer George Hunter White's use of THC on Manhattan Project scientists. In 1944 Pash was picked by Donovan to head up what was called the Alsos Mission, designed to scoop up German scientists who had been involved in atomic, chemical and biological weapons research. Mr Pash set up shop at the house of an old prewar friend, Dr. Eugene von Haagen, a professor at the University of Strasburg, where many Nazi scientists had been faculty members. Pash had met von Haagen when the doctor was on sabbatical at Rockefeller University in New York, researching tropical viruses. When von Haagen returned to Germany in the late 1930s he and Kurt Blome became joint heads of the Nazis' biological weapons unit'.

'Von Haagen', the authors reported, drawing on their study of official documents, 'spent much of the war infecting Jewish inmates at the Natzweiler concentration camp with diseases, including spotted fever. Undeterred by the wartime activities of his old friend, Pash immediately placed von Haagen into the Paperclip Program, where he worked for the US Government for five years providing expertise in germ weapons research. Von Haagen put Pash in touch with his former colleague, Blome, who was also speedily enlisted in the Paperclip Program. There was an inconvenient hiatus when Blome was arrested and tried at Nuremberg for medical war crimes, including the deliberate infecting of hundreds of prisoners from the Polish underground with TB and bubonic plague. But fortunately for the Nazi man of 'science', US Army Intelligence and the OSS withheld mcriminating documents they had acquired through their interrogation. The evidence would not only have demonstrated Blome's guilt but also his supervising role in constructing a German CBW laboratory to test chemical and biological weapons for use on Allied troops'. Blome was acquitted.

One final excerpt from Cockburn and St Clair's analysis is relevant here. 'In 1954, two months after Blome's acquittal', they asserted, 'US intelligence officers journeyed to Germany to interview him. In a memorandum to his superiors, Mr H. W Batchelor described the purpose of this pilgrimage' in the following terms - which will have warmed the cold hearts of the long-term strategic deception operatives of the Nazi International at the Madrid-based German Geopolitical Centre [see Chapter 8], who had been largely responsible for enticing the short-sighted Americans to embrace the Nazi intelligence and scientific communities, in pursuit of their long-range strategy of establishing the Nazis' Thousand-Year Reich on the ruins of the United States itself:

"We have friends in Germany, scientific friends, and this is an opportunity to enjoy meeting them to discuss our various problems".

At the session, Blome gave Batchelor a list of the biological weapons researchers who had worked for him during the War and discussed promising new avenues of research into weapons of mass destruction. The authors concluded that 'Blome was soon signed up to a new Paperclip contract for $6,000 a year, and flew to the United States, where he took up his duties at Camp King, an army base located outside Washington, DC. In 1951 von Haagen was picked up by the French authorities. Despite the tireless efforts of his protectors in US intelligence, the doctor was convicted of war crimes and sentenced to twenty years in prison'.

Thus the 'received view' that US intelligence hastened to exfiltrate as many Nazi scientists and intelligence specialists as it could, in the context of the rivalry induced by the Cold War, is incorrect. On the contrary, US intelligence, aided and abetted by the British, lusted after these Nazis and their Satanic expertise from the get-go.

ENDLESS INTELLIGENCE MACHINATIONS TO DESTABILISE SOCIETY

In 1999, 'The Albany Times Union' reported that the University of Albany had closed down research being conducted by Professor Kathryn Kelley, who had been examining the fears of people who claimed to have been surgically implanted with communications devices capable of reading their thoughts. Dr Kelley referred in writing to a massive implant research programme funded by the National Security Agency and the US Department of Defense, costing $2.0 billion. Exposure of this research by Dr Kelley herself and concerned graduate students, resulted in the University's announcement; but it was obvious that the project itself continued (and that, again, the work Dr Kelley was doing would also have continued). One graduate student, Gregory George, who reported that he was part of a team assigned to lay the factual foundations for implant research, was reported to have identified several firms that had developed 'trans-tympanic transducers' - instruments functioning like mini-telephones that send voice messages to the inner ear. At a conference in Orlando, Florida, in the same month, Dr Kelley had explained how a subject might be implanted with such a device during anaesthesia, perhaps leaving tiny stitches visible in the ear. She referred to the devices as RAATs (short for radio wave, auditory, assaultive transmitting implants). Dr Kelley wrote in her paper that 'when (short-wave) operators transmit to or scan RAAT implants in victims, they can talk to the victims remotely and anonymously, and hear the victim's speech and thoughts'. Her paper must have annoyed her ultimate funders by pointing out that the National Institutes of Health routinely deny any Government role in such research - lying to the American public.

In 1995, Ralph Tortorici, who claimed that the American Government had planted microchips in his body, held a class of 37 students hostage and shot one student during a struggle at the University of Albany. In 1999, the gunman hanged himself in his prison cell. In 1994, Advanced Neurotechnologies developed a brain-to-computer interface that can translate brainwaves into coded data. A microchip called, ominously but appropriately 'Soul Catcher 2025', that can be placed behind a human eye to record all visual and physical sensations as well as thought, is reportedly under development at British Telecom's Martlesham Laboratories. The extent of British involvement in behaviour modification, mass mind-control and Psy-Ops is evident from the extensive list of US organisations with which a clear link to the Tavistock Institute is or has been identified, following the transfer of the German Jew Kurt Lewin to America in the 1930s.

The direct involvement of Scottish Rite Freemasonry in behaviour modification, mind-control and personality manipulation research and operations has already been alluded to. But how many people know that the murderers Charles Manson and Sirhan Sirhan were connected to the AMORC Rosicrucians, the Satanic sect which is embedded within Scottish Rite Freemasonry and which has published a secret document containing instructions on how to summon up the Devil himself? Manson's operating base was the Spahn Movie Ranch which was purchased after Manson's incarceration by the German Krupp Family - key figures involved in the arming of Hitler's Third Reich. Many of the Manson murder victims in Georgetown, Guyana, had been involved in Satanism and death rites. Congressman Leo Ryan, who had uncovered information linking the CIA to the creation of mind-control cults, went to Guyana to investigate. His appearance there reportedly triggered the suicides and murders. Dr Mootoo, a Guyanan pathologist who was the first to arrive at the Jamestown atrocity scene, concluded that all but three of the 'suicide' victims had been murdered.

'INVENTORS OF EVIL THINGS' AND MEDDLERS WITH SOULS

In Paul's Epistle to the Romans, the perpetrators and promoters of such evils were precisely identified. The list, as we have seen, includes a description of the Luciferians and their abominations who are exposed in this analysis, who have put God aside and presume to be in a position to reorder every dimension of human existence, including spirituality: hence, for instance, an organisation in the United States calling itself the Council on Spiritual Practices, which in fact investigates every psychoscientific aberration and occult 'spiritual' departure under the sun. Paul included, in his list of 'the lost', a category of 'abominable persons' which precisely fits the reprobate characters itemised here: 'inventors of evil things'. Among these is an offshoot of Scientology founded by one Robert DeGrimston called The Process, which specialises in 'returning' the mind to a blank state (tabula rasa) through violence. This is attempted during certain Masonic rites, when the candidate is picked up bodily and thrown about the Lodge and between participants, as shown here in the illustration from Captain Morgan's exposure of Freemasonry dated 1827 [Figure 41].

Figure 41: The caption to this illustration from Captain William Morgan's exposure of US Freemasonry dated 1827, entitled 'Illustrations of Masonry', reads as follows: 'Candidate as Hiram Abiff falling into the canvas, having been struck in the forehead by the setting maul of the supposed third ruffian, Jubelum. This spooky name mimicks the pejorative occultic-masonic initials J.B.M., short for the blasphemous Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus, and is associated with the names of two other ruffians, Jubela and Jubelo, who are proclaimed to be 'missing' when a roll call of the workmen on Solomon's Temple is called by the Master in one of the key Masonic ceremonies. The three ruffians are thought to represent a blasphemous insult to the Holy Trinity of God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. The ceremony in question is accompanied by much violence, as is confirmed by the following excerpts from Captain Morgan's account, citing the prescribed Lodge language: '[Seizing the candidate by the throat... and jerking him about with violence].... The ruffian then gives the candidate a blow with the twenty-four-inch gauge across the throat, on which he fled to the West Gate [of the Temple], where he was accosted by the second ruffian, Jubelo, with more violence, and on his refusal to comply with this request, he gave him a severe blow with the square across his breast, on which he attempted to make his escape at the East Gate, where he was accosted by the third ruffian, Jubelum, with still more violence, and on refusing to comply with this request, the ruffian gave him a violent blow with the common gavel on his forehead, which brought him to the floor...'. Thus the central ceremony of Blue Lodge Freemasonry is infested with violence, infesting Masons with a tolerance of violence as 'collateral damage'. This ritualised violence is also associated with an attempt to clear the candidate's mind by forcing him to ensure an ordeal after which nothing will ever be the same for him again. With such a tabula rasa, Luciferian infestation can proceed.

To 'cleanse' new members of the Khrystos/Krigonogov cult, the victims were fed 'Jordan Water' which induces cell mutation and assists in the brainwashing process. Among the mind-control weapons reportedly used in Waco, Texas, during the siege of David Koresh and his group were portable electromagnetic devices. Experiments using Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) transmission have been reported, assaulting inner city residents as guinea pigs. Never-ending false reports about aliens (demons), and alien abduction, are thought by some to represent a cover for mind-control experimentation. The sudden drop in ozone levels observed in the 1970s was triggered by electromagnetic bombardment of the atmosphere, not by greenhouse gases. The electromagnetic broadcasting installations are known to exist in a number of advances countries, including the United Kingdom and the United States, where this dimension is controlled by the High-Frequency Active Auroral Research Program (HAARP), activated in 1997 and located in Gakona, Alaska, that is capable of changing weather patterns, inducing hurricanes and earthquakes. It is run by the US Department of Defense, the Phillips Laboratory of the US Air Force, and the Office of Naval Research. Weather modification, as over New Orleans and the US Gulf Coast, is achieved by altering the molecular composition of an atmospheric region. The Pentagon claims that HAARP exists for ionospheric research purposes.

The essence of the evil Tavistock method is the degenerate psychology which the German Tavistock operative Kurt Lewin called 'group dynamics', such as the method used by Moral re-Armament. In a Lewinite brainwashing session, individuals from varying backgrounds and with contrasting personalities are manipulated by a 'group leader' to form a 'consensus' of opinion, thereby procuring a new 'group identity'. The key to this insidious process is the creation of a controlled environment in which stress is introduced (sometimes called dissonance), designed to destabilise and crack an individual's belief structure. Using the peer pressure of other group members, the individual is 'cracked', and a new personality is supposed to emerge, equipped with new 'values'. The parallellism of this method with the Skull and Bones and Masonic ritual of being 'born again' out of a state of death in a coffin, is no coincidence. The degrading experience causes the person to deny that any change has taken place - which means, in effect, that the victim has been brainwashed without being aware of what has occurred. This is in fact the same method, with some minor modifications, as that used in all so-called 'sensitivity groups' or 'T-groups', or in the context of the rock-sex counterculture which exists to make money while destroying the family, and in 'touchy-feely' format, as promoted by the Esalen Institute - which succeeded on one occasion in brainwashing over 500 Catholic nuns to leave the church and the teaching profession. It is also the method being used by 'Common Purpose', a sinister brainwashing operation run secretly by the UK Central Government from an office in Whitehall.

'Group dynamics' are deployed on a large scale by one of the leading US 'Tavistock School' entities, National Training Laboratories (NIL), which was established in 1947 by members of the US Tavistock network and located originally on an estate at Bethel, Maine. The specific objective of NTL's remit was the brainwashing of government officials, educational institutions and corporate bureaucracies in Tavistock's 'methodology', so that such brainwashed 'leaders' could then be used either to run Tavistock 'group dynamics' sessions themselves, to to hire other similarly trained groupies to do the job.

From the mid-1950s onwards, National Training Laboratories (NIL) put most of the United States' corporate leaderships through mass brainwashing programmes, while running similar programmes for the State Department, the Navy, the Department of Education, and other components of the US Federal bureaucracy. It is believed that several million such officials and servants of the state have been 'deconstructed and rebuilf by the National Training Laboratories, now called the NTL Institute for Applied Behavioural Sciences, based at Rosslyn, Virginia.

This organisation's West Coast base is Western Training Laboratories in Group Development, and there are various satellite organisations. One of NTL's biggest customers since the 1950s has been the National Education Association, which is the largest organisation of teachers in the United States. In 1964, the NTL became a direct component of the National Education Association, establishing 'group sessions' in all of its branches and affiliates. Whenever you hear of 'group sessions' taking place, be sure that what is happening is a form of brainwashing originally propounded and developed by the Tavistock Institute and its manic affiliates, loci of the 'seething energies' of Lucifer.

With funding from the US Department of Education, the NTL Institute designed all the programmes for the training of US primary and secondary school teachers, and has had a hand in the development of the most insidious of prevailing and ongoing 'educational reforms', including Outcome-Based Education, sex education and 'death education'. The Tavistock-related NTL Institute for Applied Behavioural Sciences is a brainwashing centre specialising in artificial stress training, in which participants suddenly find themselves immersed in having to defend themselves against vicious accusations, familiar from our earlier look at Scientology's similarly odious abominations.

The Tavistock Institute's known network extends from the far-left University of Sussex, to the Hudson Institute, founded by the German Jew Hermann Kahn in 1961. As indicated, Khan also founded the CIA's most prominent related agitprop think-tank, the RAND Corporation. Other related organisations (already listed) include the Heritage Foundation (founded by Paul Weyrich with funding from Joseph Coors, a beer magnate), the Center for Strategic and International Studies at Georgetown (which trains US State Department personnel), US Air Force Intelligence, and the CIA's Mitre Corporation. A network of secret New Underworld Order groups such as the DVD front, the Trilateral Commission, the Ditchley Foundation, the Mont Pelerin Society and the Club of Rome (which 'educates' us all on the need for population reduction, which it plots) provides a complex conduit for New Underworld Order Luciferian instructions to the Tavistock organisations in the United States. The US branch of the Ditchley Foundation has been run by Cyrus Vance, the former US Secretary of State, and Director of the Rockefeller Foundation, and by Winston Lord, President of the Council on Foreign Relations. The wife of Winston Lord, a Bonesman, was the Chairwoman of the Board of Freedom House, a misnamed publishing house. It is a Council on Foreign Relations front which is allegedly involved, inter alia, in the manipulation of the 'Christian Righf which has been heavily targeted by the CIA over the years.

One of the most odious of alleged American Nazis was Senator Robert C. Byrd, who 'justified' mind-control activities as a means of thrusting mankind into accelerated revolution, in conformity with neo-Nazi principles. Mankind's spiritual needs must be manipulated in order to bring about 'world peace' through what Byrd considered 'the only means available - total mind-control under the New World Order'. Mark Phillips' deprogrammed sex slave Cathy O'Brien reports that Byrd 'believed in the Nazi and KKK principles of "annihilation of underprivileged races and cultures" through genocide' - to breed 'the more gifted - the blondes of this world' [see panel, page 251].

BACK TO MARK PHILLIPS, D.I.A. PSY-OPS 'DEPROGRAMMER' - PHOTOGRAPHER

With this background in mind, we can now revert to some considerations about Trance Formation of America, the atrocious Psy-Ops book by Mark Phillips and the MONARCH slave he says he has deprogrammed, Cathy O'Brien. Mr Phillips' full name is Marquart (Mark) Ewing Phillips, who was born on 17th May 1943 in Nashville, Tennessee. In the introduction to the book (which contains evidence of degradation, depravity, sexual indulgence and drug-crazed behaviour among holders of high office associated with psyche manipulation and criminal activity protected under the guise of security spanning many US Administrations, that is far more disturbing than the already alarming enough details published so far in this work), Mr Phillips writes as follows:

'This brief and highly condensed contribution is intended to provide an understanding of why, when, and where I embarked on a study of the most secret technology known to man: Trauma-based mind-control' which has evolved from experiments being conducted by Heinrich Himmler's Satanised scientists. 'Through the publication of declassified United States Government documents, our US Department of Defense (DOD) admits that this ancient wizard's mechanism for control is so dangerous that most information pertaining to it must remain classified as TOP SECRET. As the employee of a DOD subcontractor with exposure to mind-control research, I was required to sign an oath of secrecy. To this day I am restricted by law from revealing certain specific information that directly pertained to my employment as, among other "sensitive" exposures, a US DOD subcontractor in mind-control research'.

Phillips adds: T was able to liberate MK-ULTRA victims, Cathy O'Brien and her daughter, Kelly, from the invisible grip of this US Government secret weapon of control'. The book records what Mr Phillips says is the story of the rehabilitation of the MONARCH sex slave Ms. Cathy O'Brien and her daughter, Kelly - although Cathy O'Brien's reported attempts to obtain rehabilitation rights for her daughter Kelly have been repeatedly blocked on 'grounds of national security'; and in the process, an enormous amount of disgusting, disreputable, reprobate and frankly repulsively compromising material about top US officials and leaders, past and present, is recorded.

A sequel to 'Trance Formation of America', entitled 'Mind Kontrol - The Proof', dealing with MK-ULTRA, MK-DELTA (chemical and biological warfare) ARTICHOKE., BLUEBIRD, LSD, Psylocybin, hypnosis, interrogation techniques and other control methodologies used by the US Government, and allegedly based on 17,000 images obtained under the Freedom of Information Act and well over 34,000 files, has since been published by O'Brien-Phillips, who also have a video for sale entitled 'mind-control Out of Control', and have made a business out of their revelations (that is to say, of revelations by Cathy O'Brien), which reveal how successful Mark Phillips has been in deprogramming Cathy. Indeed, one of the purposes of this book is to illustrate, perhaps by design, that it is possible to rehabilitate pre-programmed and abused MONARCH sex slaves. The other main purpose may be to signal that the authorities' retention of Cathy's programmed daughter is a scandal, like everything else in this Luciferian cesspit of evil. The book also serves the purpose of adding greatly to the openly available detail about extreme degradation and corruption in high places, which, as the intelligence services know, not least from Hitler's experience during the Second World War, the vast majority of the population won't want to believe, or will be all the more confused by.

This Author is accustomed to teasing out truth from falsehood in copy prepared by Soviet intelligence, and it is his opinion that if Phillips' document represented an ele-merit of a Soviet discrediting offensive, it would contain certain tell-tale language and idiomatic traits too inconsequential (to the reader) to review here. This is not a Soviet discrediting work, although following the 'Period of Escalating Violence', as laid down in the Comintern's 'Blueprint for World Revolution' [1928], the next stage is indeed a concerted operation to discredit the leaderships of 'enemies of the Revolution'.

Motivated by the necessity to establish whether the 'photographer' called Mark Phillips who took the 9/11 picture(s) of the Devil in the smoke is the same person who ghosted/co-authored Cathy O'Brien's 1995 detailed expose of the application of trauma-based mind-control programmes in the interests of strategy, the Author wrote to Ms O'Brien, in the spirit of O'Brien-Phillips' requests for input, implied by their website. The letter asked whether Ms O'Brien represented a 'deprogramming case study', implying a scintilla of doubt as to whether the pair's representation that 'Cathy Phillips', as she now is, is indeed a survivor of Project MONARCH'S (MK-ULTRA) mind-control programme, and that Mark Phillips is the person ('former' intelligence operative) who rescued her, represents the full story. The Author received no reply to his letter, which is more or less to be expected if the addressee is an intelligence operative. The letter asked whether Mark Phillips is the same Mark Phillips who 'took' the Devil-in-the-smoke photographs. Since there was no reply to this question, the Author has concluded that the two Phillips are indeed the same.

TRANCE
FORMATION
of AMERICA
The True Life Story of a CIA Mind Control

Figure 42: 'Trance Formation of America' by Cathy O'Brien, which exposes, in enormous detail, the sex-based mind-control manipulation operations of the Illuminati at the highest Black levels of Government in North America. The lurid content is so detailed that it cannot be fiction.

In which case, it is evident (as is almost always the case when one follows such a line of reasoning) that the operative in question is NOT a 'former' Psy-Ops' operative, but remains engaged in this line of esoteric activity, and was responsible for distributing some of the the image(s) of the Devil in the smoke. While it was a Psy-Ops operation, it is also likely that, since the destruction of the Twin Towers was a Fire Ritual Sacrifice, the Devil or demon images were real: they did not need to be faked. This would explain how it was possible for the Devil-in-the-smoke image to be delivered to Associated Press within 14 minutes of extreme pressure and drama.

The intelligence agent here seems to be more than simply a 'former' CIA 'Psy-Ops' expert, but rather may be a fully paid-up Tsy-Ops' operative. In a rational environment, such a discovery would perhaps throw into question the entire grim contents of 'Trance Formation of America' and its reports of high-level participation in degrading behaviour modification (brainwashing) or mind control operations contained therein - considering that the phrase Project MONARCH is not mentioned in any open intelligence documents, and that Ms. O'Brien apparently cannot remember any dates or Air Force Laboratory layouts that could be verified by an objective researcher seeking to check her facts. This lack of information forces at least one observer to conclude that the entire package of material the Phillipses have published could have been compiled from already published accounts.

ARE THEY 'LICENSED' TO PUBLISH SUCH COMPROMISING MATERIAL?

Furthermore, Mr and Mrs Phillips have continued with apparent impunity to publish material, in the United States, that remains in the public domain, which condemns holders of the highest offices as the most foul and contemptible of human beings, accompanied by exhaustive detail including dates, locations and details of who else was present at given sexual abuse abominations. To be able to publish such extremely damaging information - about Presidents Ronald Reagan and Gerald Ford (a.k.a. Leslie Lynch King), about Richard Cheney's alleged sexual brutality and involvement in high-voltage tortures, or the handing of $2.5 million of pornography profits to a MONARCH slave for crediting with the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), about the joint participation of the Jesuits and the CIA in torture just before death in the course of Nazi-style Death's Door Programming in PROJECT MONARCH (the internationally recognised cryptic codename for which is 'Freedom Train'), about Bill Bennett, the so-called Drug Czar and Bill Clinton at the Bohemian Grove, about the alleged evil of Senator Robert Byrd and the facility with which Bill Clinton had mastered mind-control access to MONARCH sex slaves - implies that such 'releases' of information are 'sanctioned' and therefore controlled. It is not unknown for horrendous atrocities (for instance, such as those perpetrated at Abu Ghraib) to be 'surfaced' from the intelligence world, as a means of masking the emergence of even more compromising material. Another possibility is that public reaction to such disclosures is monitored, to gauge how 'successful' mass desensitising operations have been. Further, since it is apparent that Mark Phillips was responsible for the Associated Press 'Devil-in-the-smoke' frame(s), one cannot be certain that these Satanic Psy-Ops revelations of his are not themselves a component of a broader, ongoing 'Psy-Ops' programme. Psychological Operations perpetrated against the American people by structures of their own Government have escalated by an order of magnitude in recent years, as the Luciferians imagine that they are approaching the realisation of their mad plans to reorganise humanity and the whole world.

The Devil-in-the-smoke image was replicated, as shown in Figure 3 on page 11, by a Devil or demon image seen amid the flames, which was broadcast by CNN. The Author is therefore certain, given all the circumstances and the known facts, and recalling that former Satanists recognised the Devil-in-the-smoke figure as identical to devils conjured during Satanic Fire Rituals, that the images were genuine, not fakes, and that, as an experienced Psy-Ops manipulator and CIA mind-control expert and therefore a de facto occultist, Mark Phillips would not have been surprised that the Fire Ritual of the Twin Towers duly conjured up fire demons, as provided for in the magical invocation procedures of the 'Ancient Mysteries' to which these Illuminati adhere, aspire to, and which they seek to universalise. As for the gross publicity that the Phillipses' have given to the absolutely unspeakable evils described in their book, they themselves suggest that colleagues had informed them that no-one would believe what they have revealed, unless they had been liquidated. They have not been murdered, as far as is known.

Finally, as Goebbels, Himmler and Hitler discovered, the perpetration of unspeakable acts on a mass scale, or on any scale, sounds so gross and unlikely as to be unbelievable. Those who know the truth are afraid, at the very least, of being made to look foolish by retailing it: so they shut up. Exactly the same syndrome is evident today: if some of the information collected from the public domain by observers such as this Author were to appear in the 'mainstream' press - although this may change - the general supposition has been that it would not be believed.

But when millions of Americans are 'disappeared' and squeezed into specially equipped railcars, standing room only, and are forced to hold onto straps while the trains run the length of the United States, up into Alaska and through the Bering Strait tunnel into the 'former' USSR, where they will be disposed of and never heard of again, the Author and those who know about these abominations, if still alive, will perhaps look less foolish than some would like to make them look today.

Mrs Phillips writes, of the second book, that 'much of the information enclosed herein has been corroborated and validated through brave and courageous 'clean' members of the law enforcement, scientific and intelligence communities familiar with this (i.e. her own) case. These individuals' efforts helped me to understand and corroborate what happened after a lifetime of systematic physical and psychological torture orchestrated to modify my behaviour through totally controlling my mind. Some of these courageous individuals are employed by the very system that controlled me, and live in fear of losing their jobs, their families, or their lives. They have gone as far as they dare towards publicly exposing this tool of engineers of the New World Order - to no avail. This book is a grassroots effort to solicit and enlist the public and private support of human rights advocates, the recognized, respected doors in America to expose this invisible and social menace...'.

'The expertise of my primary advocate and skilled deprogrammer' - which means that Mr Phillips of course learned his deprogramming skills from the same secret sources that teach the Satanic programming skills in the first place, as she now admitted - 'developed though his US Defense Department knowledge of 'Top Secret' mind-control research and researchers, was responsible for the restoration of my mind to normal functioning. As a result, I have recovered memories related to this text, and, having survived the ordeal, have reached this point of enormous frustration' - by which she must have meant that she earnestly seeks to persuade Americans somehow to demand that these Satanic practices conducted by the authorities must cease. If that is true, why did she or Mr Phillips not answer the Author's letter, as the Author is being of assistance here?

'In 1988, through a series of brilliantly orchestrated events, Mark Phillips rescued me and my 8-year-old daughter, Kelly, from our mind-controlled existence and took us to the safety of Alaska for rehabilitation. It was there that we began the tedious process of untangling my amnesic mind to consciously recall what I was supposed to forget'.

'Many US and foreign government secrets and personal reputations were staked in the belief that I could not be deprogrammed and rehabilitated to accurately reveal the criminal covert activities and perversions in which Kelly and I were were forced to participate, particularly during the Reagan/Bush Administrations. Now that I have gained control of my own mind, I view it as my duty as a mother and American patriot to exercise my gained free will to expose the mind-control atrocities that my daughter and I endured at the hands of those in control of our government. This personal view of Inside Pandora's Box includes a keen perception of how mind-control is being used to apparently implement the New World Order, and a personal knowledge of WHO...

of the so-called "masterminds" are behind this world and mind dominance' programme.

All of which sounds highly commendable; indeed, as indicated, the Author was so impressed that he wrote, as indicated, to Ms O'Brien, at the publicised address, indicating inter alia his intention of elaborating upon this issue (in this book). No response.

mind-control and personality modification operations are among the myriad evil tools being deployed to leverage the world towards One World Government. Colossal financial resources have been corralled for that purpose. Other methodologies include mass Psy-Ops, terrorism, the global distribution of pornography and biowarfare byproducts in the form of generic pharmaceuticals via the Internet, the degradation of entertainment, the hijacking of sport and 'spectacles' for global propaganda purposes, the exploitation of environmental issues, innumerable scams and financial and commodity warfare operations, military operations conducted by proxy, dialectical scene-setting (creation of Thesis and Antithesis), the liberal misuse of the legal process, false witness, and assassinations - to name only some of the more widely used 'chaos'-making mechanisms.

IMPLICATIONS OF THE FAILURE TO REPLY TO THE AUTHOR'S LETTER

Because the Author received no reply to his letter, and also because Trance Formation of America was published in Las Vegas - where the intelligence community creates propaganda and disinformation films and videos, so why not printed material as well? - he has had to conclude that the availability of Cathy O'Brien's material in the public domain, and the fact that she and Mark Phillips appear to be able to continue publishing this material with impunity, must suit the perpetrators of these atrocities. As in the covert Leninist Soviet Union, the existence of 'controlled opposition' (controlled dialectical Antithesis) provides the Thesis with 'credibility'. But that, of course, implies that Mr Phillips is quite content with this state of affairs, especially as he may continue, apparently, to be engaged in Psy-Ops operations (at least, as at 9/11).

So here we have (a) intelligence operative(s) publicly rebelling against the abominations demanded of them by their superiors; (b) remaining alive despite revealing state secrets and detailed descriptions, which could not possibly be invented, of the debauched and reprobate behaviour of past and present holders of the highest offices in the United States, complete with code names, and other details which could only be obtained from inside knowledge; and (c) perhaps continuing to work for the very perpetrators of atrocities whom they condemn in the open exposure material.

Is this all done to maximise confusion; does it reflect extreme continuing antagonisms and divisions inside the intelligence services (about which there is much separate evidence); or is the publication of these titles itself a component of the endless cycle of cynical Psy-Ops operations in which the reprobate US intelligence services are perpetually engaged? Or is it that these intelligence operatives suffer from the consequences of having had their personalities split themselves, and are kind of bipolar - agreeing with all sides of every question while they continue working for the Satanised ogres who employ them? As has been mentioned, the Phillips' were themselves informed that no-one would believe what they had published unless they themselves were liquidated, which has not happened - the implication being that 'no-one believes this stuff'. But the Nazis discovered that crimes of Satanic ruthlessness and intensity, organised on a production-line basis, can be largely (but not completely) hidden from view, even though large numbers of Germans had to be involved in their administration - simply because the sane mind, to retain its integrity, rejects what it rightly considers to be abhorrent.

BASED ON THE EGYPTIAN BOOK OF THE DEAD'

Whatever the correct answer to such questions, if their are any, given this world of induced Satanic chaos, Mr Phillips has submitted to at least one interview in which he tried to explain the broader context of US official mind-control operations, and correctly traced the outline history of this Satanic cluster of programmes to the Nazis. In the excerpts that follow, Mark Phillips also confirmed an assessment reached separately from public-domain information by this Author - namely, that the Second World War, including the Illuminati-contrived dialectical struggle between National Socialism and International Socialism (Communism), never ended: it just shifted across the Atlantic. Since the Bush-Cheney intelligence cadre displays continuity with the Himmler-Nazi tradition of pre-emptive attack, and the Clinton-Kerry-Gore cadre with the Communist 'line', while the Bushes, Dick Cheney, Bill Clinton and John Kerry are each and every one of them intelligence operatives, it follows that the Second World War has been continuing within the US intelligence community without ceasing. This would be entirely consistent with documented proof that the Nazi International strategists intended to continue the war until the Thousand-Year Reich has been established in Washington, DC.

Mark Phillips was interviewed by 'Guerrilla News Network' (date uncertain) which, despite its revolutionary name, is a serious website; and the fact that it was through this medium that Mr Phillips provided serious, if cynical and at times complacent, answers to important questions, does not detract from the need for Mr Phillips' remarks to be given serious consideration:

Q: Define the term 'Psychological Warfare' (Psy-Ops).

A: 'Psychological warfare is nothing more than a series of well-planned and well-executed, invisible programmes all working in tandem - none of them knowing what the others are doing - to manipulate the minds of our enemies or our adversaries into believing something quite different from reality. So they are misled and we in turn win the war that's actually never been fought on a battlefield'.

Notice that Mark Phillips does not define who 'our enemies or our adversaries' are, that are being lied to (which is what his elaborate answer meant: they are being lied to). He omitted to say that 'our enemies or our adversaries' could be (in this context) the American people, or selected components of it - those who do not, for instance, go along with the undermining, collectivisation or loss of national sovereignty inherent in the conspiracy to establish the New Underworld Order, or who do not accept the validity of innumerable official programmes, including compulsory vaccination, the substitution of mind-bending and propaganda for education, and the mandatory application of revolutionary 'politically correct' 'solutions' in the workplace. By this very omission, this obviously highly skilled ongoing Psy-Ops intelligence expert all but revealed that it is legitimate for such techniques to be used against the domestic population, whose primitive expectations must be 'modified' to conform with the authorities' preferences.

Q: Explain the origins of mind-control.

A: mind-control research has been around since 'The Egyptian Book of the Dead' was recorded. You can see the entire formula for trauma-based mind-control right there in 'The Egyptian Book of the Dead'. It has escalated from there through various religions, or cults as they are called, for thousands of years. And as a result of that, Hitler gave Himmler a charge to research the multi-generationally incest-abusing families of Northern Europeans. Because Himmler had found out that these people had incredible, what Hitler termed, 'super-human' traits as a result of this mind-control.

Before we go any further, let us recall the deeper relevance of all this. In Scripture, the term 'Egypt' is synonymous with 'the Darkness' (no offence to modern Egypt being intended here), since the children of Israel were led by the Lord 'out of the darkness into the light' in a real-time and real-life metaphor for the challenge that faces all of us. Our natural tendency is to descend towards the darkness, which is why Lucifer is having such a ball 'as we speak' - as the Illuminati offensive against True Christianity, which they seek (in vain) to extinguish, appears to have gained the upper hand. Phillips' response confirms that the CIA, taking its cue from Himmler and the Tavistock Institute, 'leverages' the 'darkness' of the 'Ancient Mysteries' for geopolitical purposes.

In short, here we have further proof - this time, from an expert horse's mouth - that the US Government's black intelligence services have been investigating the occult, the 'Works of Darkness' away from which the Lord led the Israelites[16]. The panel on page 231 confirms that this is indeed the CIA's objective. The whole point of Exodus is that the children of Israel were being removed from Egypt - universally recognised to be the Biblical metaphor for Darkness - and led towards the Land of Milk and Honey (a living metaphor for the True Light). Exodus and the history of the transfer of the people of Israel from Egypt to Canaan is a 'living parable', showing how the Lord leads us from the darkness in which, through sin, we have languished, into His glorious light of Truth. By dabbling in these 'Ancient Mysteries', occult works of sorcery and darkness, the US intelligence services, which control the Federal Government, have magnified the Illum-inati's intended transference and universalisation of that darkness into the contemporary world, where it is in the process of being re-magnified in conflict with the Light - which these evil, misguided and demented people call the darkness, just as they call the darkness (of Lucifer) the light. Moreover there is separate evidence (from the RAND Corporation, the US intelligence 'think-tank' established by the German Jew, Hermann Kahn that the US Government's reprobate intention is indeed to 'bring the whole world back to Egypt' (the Darkness); for, as indicated earlier, these people, who are NOT atheists, all know that they are heading straight for the pit. The lust for 'Egypt, the Prize' expressed in the document summarised in the panel opposite, provides documented proof of this statement. Reverting now to Phillips' interview:

Q: Give us a little history lesson. As World War II was ending, the Nazis had done a lot of research (along these lines). How did the Allies feel about these people and their research?

A: What the United States was concerned about was that these Nazis [Himmler's occultic research scientists and operatives - Ed].... had all this information and data, but we couldn't seem to prosecute them. Because they had already, a lot of them, scattered out to various countries like Russia, Italy and South America [sic]. So what the CIA persuaded Congress to do [was] to pass this Project Paperclip [sic], as a legal means of importing these people into the United States and introducing them into our military industrial complex, including our colleges and universities. Their view was this: If we don't bring these people into our country and contain them, then our enemies, the Soviet Union, will get them.

In other words, the Nazis didn't lose the war; they just had to move. So Hitler's Thousand Year Reich' boast was less foolish than we once thought. And it is clear from our study [in Chapter 8] of the operations of the Nazi International, established by the German Abwehr as the German Geopolitical Centre in Madrid in 1942 (but planned several years earlier), that the super-secret Nazi (Reinhard Gehlen) 'Black intelligence service DVD', based in Dachau, has been at war with us ever since.

THE ILLUMINATI IN THEIR OWN MAD WORDS:

THE RAND CORPORATION LOOKS FORWARD TO THE DARKNESS:

'EGYPT IS THE PRIZE'

The CIA-linked RAND Corporation presented a talk to the US Defense Policy Board on 10th July 2002, accompanied by 24 slides. It contained inter alia the following slogans, which will doubtless seem very odd to anyone who has visited modern Dubai:

- The Arab world has been in a systemic crisis for the last 200 years.
- It missed out on the Industrial revolution. It is missing out on the digital revolution.
- It lacks inner resources to cope with the modern world.
- Its self-esteem is shattered. Could God be wrong [sic!!!]?
- Turn the rage against those who contradict God. The West, object of hatred.
- A whole generation of violently anti-Western, anti-American, anti-modern shock troops.
- Wars, since independence, have been the principal output of the Arab world.
- All Arab states are either failing states or threatened to fail.
- The tension between the Arab and the modern world has reached a climax.
- The Arab world's home-made problems overwhelm its ability to cope, so the crisis is consequently being exported to the Rest of the World.
- There is no public space for debating ideas, interests, policies.
- Plot, riot, murder, coup are the only means to bring about political change.
- In the Arab world, violence is not a continuation of politics by other means: violence IS politics, politics IS violence. This culture of violence is the prime enabler of terrorism.
- Terror as an accepted, legitimate means of carrying out politics goes back 30 years.
- 9/11 was a 'symptom' of the crisis spilling out of the region. [Nonsense: It was DVD].
- The paroxysm is liable to last for several decades.
- The US response will decisively influence the duration and outcome.
- Once upon a time., there was a partnership between America and Saudi Arabia.
- Since 1745, 58% of all rulers of the House of Saud have meant a violent death.
- Wahabism loathes modernity, capitalism, human rights, republics, democracy, religious freedom, an open society, and practices the opposite.
- Saudis under Prince Abdullah launch a putsch within Sunni Islam, shifting from a pragmatic policy to promoting radical Islam.
- Saudi Arabia is central to the self-destruction of the Arab world and the chief vector of the Arab crisis and outwardly-directed aggression.
- The Saudis are active at every level of the terror chain, from planners to financiers, from cadre to foot-soldier, from ideologist to cheer-leader.
- There is a daily outpouring of virulent hatred for the United States from the Saudi media.
- Dismantle and ban all the Kingdom's 'Islamic charities' and confiscate their assets.
- The Saudis are hated throughout the Arab world: lazy, overbearing, dishonest, corrupt.
- Iraq is the tactical pivot.
- Saudi Arabia the strategic pivot.
- EGYPT THE PRIZE..

The final point, EGYPT THE PRIZE, reveals the true purpose of this extraordinary outburst of RAND invective. Egypt has relatively little oil. But it is the Biblical Land of Darkness, the original source of 'The Egyptian Book of the Dead', on which the CIA's Himmlerian occultic investigations, experimentation and MK-ULTRA-type abominations are openly acknowledged to be modelled. The Pharaohs tried in vain to prolong life by focusing their misguided and ignorant religious attention on the dead. RAND lets the black cat out of its black bag. ■

PROJECT PAPERCLIP REVISITED, AND HITLER'S INTEREST IN MIND-CONTROL

The interview with Mark Phillips yielded further official revelations:

Q: What was the exact nature of Project Paperclip?

A: Project Paperclip was a United States Government (sanctioned by Congress) CIA project that actually began in 1947, having been approved by Congress in 1946, to sanction the importation of Nazi and Fascist scientists into the United States.

Q: What were the basic mechanics of Project Paperclip?

A: Project Paperclip was nothing more than a transport operation. The airline that I worked for, Capital International Airways (i.e. CIA, which later handled drugs - Ed.) was a large contributor to this. Every airline that I know of in the United States was used, whether they knew it or not. But Capital, along with a couple of other carriers, were the primaries. Capital was actually put into business in 1947 because of Project Paperclip. And it was just the transportation of moving these people and their families around the world, wherever they wanted to go. But mainly, the first wave, was to bring these scientists. There were 700-odd scientists that were propulsion scientists and some 600-odd who were not propulsion scientists; they were psychiatrists. Or mind sciences people. I wouldn't distinguish them by calling them psychiatrists.

Q: So when they got here, what were some of the duties that these Project Paperclip scientists had to work on?

A: Werner von Braun was put in charge of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) to develop what Hitler had already developed, the V2 rocket, into something that could carry people or individuals into outer space.

Q: Was this propulsion research linked to mind-control?

A: We're talking about two separate sciences here, mind-control and propulsion science. Both of them were part of the Hitler war machine. Some of these people were dedicated Nazis. Some of them were Jewish [so that Hitler had continued using Jewish scientists, who betrayed people of their own ethnic background, and whose continued presence in the Nazi structures reveals that the sacrifice of millions of Jews, gypsies and others, was a witchcraft sacrifice masked by an official policy - Ed.]. Some of them were Gentiles. Some of them were Austrian. It was a whole cross-section of people. These were just people. But they were involved in some of the highest technologies known at that time, which included propulsion sciences and mind-control.

Q: So when did the CIA pick upon mind-control and where did it go from there?

A: Well the 'CIA' was actually working on it in the 1920s. But there was no CIA in the 1920s. So it was really being done in private laboratories and quite openly, and by 1931 there were a couple of articles that actually hit the national papers like Dr Skinner's work and him putting his daughter in what was known as the 'Skinner Box'. And, of course, we have photographs of that. The CIA's interest in it became piqued [sic] when, after World War II, they found that more research had been done by Hitler on mind-control of not only the masses, but of individuals too. More research was dedicated to that than even to the rockets. And as a matter of fact, Werner von Braun commented to a reporter [on one occasion] that if the money had been spent on rockets and not diluted in some of these other areas, they would probably have won the war.

Q: So Hitler was hugely interested in mind-control.

A: [Paraphrase]: He was. Hitler didn't believe that a nuclear holocaust was the answer to how to win the war. He did not believe in nuclear weapons [sic]. The V2 rocket was even outfitted with whistles so that it would begin to terrorize the targeted popillation. It was a psychological warfare weapon combined with an ordnance delivery system that had never been seen before on the planet. So he was overwhelming Northern Europe, particularly Great Britain, with these rockets, as a psychological thing, more than because of any sort of damage they could do....

Breaking off here, the Author was brought up partly in London, and remembers the months when we were being bombarded by V2 rockets. It is true that once the engine had switched itself off, there was an eerie silence, followed by a sharp whistling sound before the explosion. The eerie silence was by far the worst part. Mark Phillips did not experience this terror, and his comment playing down the physical damage inflicted by V2 rockets is make-believe. In Winnington Road, London N2, where we once lived, most of the houses in the road were empty burned-out shells. The Author and his brother sometimes played around the wrecks of these burnt-out houses. It was a matter of pride to remain in a house which had not been destroyed.

The interview proceeded:

A: [Continued]: The mind-control aspect of it was a hidden science that Hitler [cherished] steeped in mysticism [Author: i.e., the occult]. He had sent a whole troupe of his scientists all the way to Tibet to discover what [the Tibetans] knew with regard to mind-control.... We've got the videos and the tapes of that trek, sending these [German] scientists up the side of these mountains in Mongolia [sic! Is Phillips' geographical knowledge faulty?]. I mean, this is major stuff - that he would stop right in the middle of the war to send valuable scientists into such an extraordinary environment.

Q: [Paraphrase]: What is the status of mind-control research in the United States?

A: mind-control research in this country for war purposes, psychological warfare purposes, started out really for the military, and for espionage. So around 1952, the CIA's reporter over in Korea released the term 'brainwashing' to introduce the whole idea and concept to the American people that there was something else in the arsenal of weaponry of the Chinese.

Q: What is it about the mind sciences that make them so appealing to groups who want to dominate and control other people? [A loaded question - Ed.].

A: All wars are won in the minds of the people, not on the battlefield. I believe this is the basis for the United States, as well as for other Governments that are actively engaged in mind-control research and applications. In fact, that's their belief.

Q: What was the thinking behind the CIA's initial desire to create MK-ULTRA?

A: I believe that the thinking of the OSS at that time, and the OSI, of course, that became the CIA.... the CIA was given the responsibility for actually placing individuals out of Project Paperclip, these Nazi and Fascist scientists dealing with the mind-control sciences, into the military-industrial complex for further development of this secret technology that Adolf Hitler regarded as the world's most dangerous and absolutely the best war tool that anyone could have for taking over the planet [sic].

Q: What was it called?

A: The name for the mind-control research [project] established in this country was MK-ULTRA, and the earliest that we know about [it] through Freedom of Information documents is 1952.

Q: Is that the only name for mind-control operations in the United States?

A: MK-ULTRA evolved actually [from] Project BLUEBIRD, the first project to spin, and that was in 1947. Actually some people say it was in 1949, but documents prove it was in 1947 [sic]. So it started immediately upon these Nazi scientists being brought into this country. They immediately dovetail[ed] into Project BLUEBIRD and then it went to MK-ULTRA and then [to] MK-SEARCH. I mean, it's changed its names so many times that nobody knows what it's called now [in short, this Satanic activity continues - Ed.].

Q: Who were the first subjects exposed to MK-ULTRA?

A: The first subjects that the CIA was interested in were people who were coming out of the battlefield and people who had actually been exposed to primitive forms of brainwashing by the Russians as well as the Chinese, Japanese, and, from my knowledge, then in Korea, of course. In 1952, it was announced by a CIA news person who was reporting from the front that we had soldiers coming back who were saying what great people and what a great country North Korea was. And that was just unheard of at that time....

Q: Who were their next targets?

A: Well, I believe that the next targets were people that were incarcerated within penitentiaries and mental institutions, as proven by Dr Ewen Cameron's research.

Intervention by the Author He is aware of one case of telephonic mind-control research intervention by US operatives in the United Kingdom between the years 1985 and 1988, in the context of a dispute between brothers concerning the will of their late mother, who had instructed solicitors on her death bed to exercise her Power of Appointment under an old family trust in favour of the brothers' sister, who was in need of income for her lifetime because of a disability. The intervention, which was accompanied by a physical break-in, involved attempts to manipulate the mind of the brother who had facilitated the visit of the solicitors, as a result of which the other brothers thought that they had been deprived of their inheritance. Among eccentric exogenous interventions, which included scams such as the familiar device of faxed 'confirmations of order' for a very large delivery of coffee beans, and advance delivery advices for goods or services never ordered, were repeated garbled messages left on an office answering machine. In those days, such machines usually had an LED display showing how many messages were retained in the memory. In the evening repeated instances of the same garbled message, would cause the LED display to reach 40 or 50 messages. When the matter was reported to the telecommunications authorities and law enforcement, after 2,200 such messages, the source of the problem was finally, allegedly, traced to a teenage Sri Lankan living in his parents' home in South London. After a period of several months free from this intervention, the entire syndrome started up again

On the second occasion, Scotland Yard became involved, the trouble was traced to the same source, and the intervention ceased. The Author is of course referring to his own personal experience. It was at the end of this episode, which coincided with the break-in, that the charming Scotland Yard detective on the case told the Author: 'Mr Story, all I can tell you is that it wasn't us'. The garbled voice used a phrase making use of the two generic words in the Author's serials publishing company, World Reports [Limited]. It is quite probable that the story about the mentally defective Sri Lankan was invented in order to provide the Author with an explanation for the failure of the operation. When a CIA operative calling himself Carl Story telephoned the Author in June 2003 and alluded to having been aware of the Author and his work 15 years earlier, the Author was able to connect some of the dots.

It would be interesting to know what lessons the reprobate MK-ULTRA-type mind-control freaks thought they had learned from this exercise, which inflicted much gratuitous pain, suffering and anxiety on the Author and his family. When the Author related this story (which has been severely condensed in the foregoing summary) to a certain US MK-ULTRA victim in the Washington DC area in the late 1990s - a victim, who has managed to pull himself out of the mental pit into which the CIA's evil manipulations had deposited him - he laughed and said 'Welcome to MK-ULTRA'.

[Mark Phillips' interview now continues]:

Q: And how did the Government use the law to protect themselves?

A: In 1947, after the President of the United States told the Pentagon and the US Congress that he'd made a mistake signing this Project Paperclip into law, there was of course an exemption in the Project Paperclip legislation which stated that 'no person who belonged to the Nazi Party could be brought into this country' - which just about eliminated everybody they could have brought in on Project Paperclip. [This is not quite the full story: see below - Ed.]. So, what they did was, they established the 1947 National Security Act, which adopted the rules of ethical [sic] military conduct which the military had been using for years to protect our country's secrets [!!! - Ed.]. [But] what actually happened was that we have never had such cascade of losses of national secrets, intelligence secrets, technology secrets, since that time. Never. It's been unprecedented in American history that we have lost this much information'.

'The reality was and is that the National Security Act of 1947... it was just to cover crimes. It was not to cover secrets'.

So here we have an admission, from a man identified and labelled as a 'former' DIA officer (but who is also reported to be a CIA operative) who clearly remained -at least until 9/11, and given the failure of the Phillipses to respond to the Author's letter despite the inviting tone of their publicity material, allegedly remains - involved with the intelligence services, that the purpose of the National Security Act of 1947 is to provide the entire intelligence community with carte blanche to commit heinous serial crimes, including those already alluded to in this analysis. This is a view with which the very best independent analysts agree, and with which the Author most certainly also concurs. In order for the Republic to save itself, the most drastic repeal of that legislation et seq is an absolute prerequisite; and of course there is not the slightest indication that this is 'about to happen anytime soon'.

PRESIDENT TRUMAN TRIED TO STOP THE NAZI INFLUX...

The manifestly sanitised and simplified account by Mark Phillips can be augmented by open domain information. President Truman agreed in September 1946 to authorise Project Paperclip, after the discovery of particle/laser beam weaponry, flying discs (saucer-like vehicles) and other advanced technology at German military bases - the War Department having urged that NASA and the CIA must control this technology and the Nazi scientists and engineers working on it.

President Truman expressly excluded, though, anyone 'found to have been a member of the Nazi Party and more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazism or militarism'. The US War Department's Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA) carried out detailed background investigations of the scientists. In February 1947, the Director of JIOA, Bosquet Wev, submitted the first group of German scientists' dossiers to the US State and Justice Departments for review. Most of the dossiers were damning and the visa requests of the first batch were all denied. This infuriated Wev, who wrote a memorandum warning that 'the best interests of the United States have been subjected to efforts expended in "beating a dead Nazi horse"' - a statement which contained two errors: first, importing these evil men would, as a senior British intelligence officer warned, prove to have fatal consequences over the longer term; and secondly, the Nazi horse was by no means dead, just feigning tiredness.

Meanwhile the Director of Central Intelligence (CIA), Allen Dulles, whom the Author has already identified as a German (Nazi) Abwehr agent (information derived from British intelligence sources), had formed an unhealthy friendship and partnership with General Reinhard Gehlen, the former Nazi intelligence chief operating in the Soviet Union. Gehlen began by feeding false 'information' to Dulles, and consequently to Truman, which appeared to show that the Soviets were poised to attack the West.

Specifically, he reported that the Soviet forces in Eastern Europe were comprised of 208 crack assault divisions, most of which were high-speed motorised rifle and tank divisions, Gehlen's data showing that the Communists outnumbered Western forces in Europe by a ratio of ten-to-one. Then, early in 1947, Gehlen informed the newly consolidated but fledgling CIA that his agents had noticed subtle changes in Soviet billeting and leave policies, and that troops were being recalled for some unspecified reason, which he implied could be the start of a preparation phase for the suspected invasion. This was followed by an outright prediction by General Gehlen that the Soviets would move rapidly once all troops and equipment had been activated, and that it would not be long before Western Europe suffered a Soviet Blitzkrieg. [See also Chapter 8].

All these reports were calculated disinformation concocted by Gehlen, since by 1946 the Soviet Army was over-extended, under-equipped and exhausted from prior combat. Many of the battalions that had reached Berlin had arrived on foot. There was not even sufficient motorised transport to move one entire division without depriving another of its motorised assets. Almost 50% of the Red Army's transportation was still horse-drawn! Additionally, US Army intelligence had itself established that the bulk of Soviet forces in Eastern Europe were bogged down rebuilding the Eastern Zones, reorganising security (intelligence) structures following the 'defection' of Gehlen, suppressing the local populations, and performing official administrative functions. Indeed the US military intelligence estimate was that Soviet ground and air forces would not be combat effective against the Western powers for at least a decade.

But, willingly 'duped' by Gehlen, and convinced by Bosquet Wev's arguments, the Abwehr agent Allen Dulles had the Nazi scientists' dossiers rewritten to delete incriminating Nazi evidence, as a result of which manoeuvre, the Gehlen scientists were delivered to the CIA via the Agency's own airline, Capital International Airways. The Agency subsequently embarked upon a myriad programmes derived from, triggered and inspired by the Nazis' mad research, including MK-ULTRA/ARTICHOKE and OPERATION MIDNIGHT CLIMAX. The man most responsible for this carefully planned Nazi 'switch' was Dulles, who became Director of Central Intelligence.

During and following the so-called 'collapse' of the Soviet Bloc (orchestrated by the KGB-GRU, with expert US and Western 'Financial Warfare' assistance), a significant cadre of East German STASI operatives mysteriously 'switched' sides and have been monitored 'working for' US intelligence. One of these operatives is a certain Eva Teleki (nee Sturzl). Under instructions from a very high-up US source, she appeared at a jail in which the US intelligence hero Leo Wanta was being illegally and unjustly held, and procured a Power of Attorney over an estimated $69 billion of funds. In 2004 she transferred to London. STASI is cover for DVD. This represented a transfer of US funds into the hands of the Nazi Black intelligence agency based at Dachau. Nothing has changed.

TRUMAN WAS DOUBLE-CROSSED BY THE NAZIS INSIDE THE C.I.A.

Writing in 'The Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists' in 1985, Ms. Linda Hunt, also the author of 'Secret Agenda', wrote that she had examined more than 130 reports on Project Paperclip subjects, and had found that every one of them 'had been changed to eliminate the security threat classification'. The American people, and the whole world, are now paying the price for this millennial error of judgment. Meanwhile President Truman, who had explicitly required the Project Paperclip legislation to preclude the importation of Nazi scientists, was evidently never made aware that his directive had been violated, a fact that State Department archives and memoirs from that era confirm. According to another analyst, Clare Lasby, Project Paperclip officials 'covered their designs with such secrecy that it bedevilled their own President; at Potsdam, he denied their activities and undoubtedly enhanced Russian suspicion and distrust' - since the Soviets knew from their own HUMINT sources what was going on. In other words, Stalin thought that Truman had lied to him; and there is nothing that a liar loathes more than being lied to. However what had happened was that Truman's own intelligence structures had double-crossed him and had withheld from him the truth of the matter, which is treason.

An example of how the details of key scientists' backgrounds were sanitised in this way by the US intelligence services - thereby serving their own interests, and those of the Germans/Illuminati, rather than those of the American people as was required by President Truman - applies to the dossier on Dr Werner von Braun, the most celebrated of the imported German scientists. A US military intelligence report on the German rocket scientist dated 18th September 1946 stated that 'subject is regarded as a potential security threat by the Military Governor'. But the following February, a revised security evaluation of von Braun stated that 'no derogatory information is available on this subject. ... It is the Military Governor's opinion that he may not [sic!] constitute a security threat to the United States'. Nazi characters admitted into the United States thanks to this egregious treachery, procured by means of Nazi penetration of the US intelligence community - which flew in the face of the wishes and precise intentions of the President and Congress of the United States - were some of the blackest [see also pages 215-219]:

Arthur Rudolph: The wartime Operations Director of the previously mentioned Mittelwerk factory at the Dora-Nordgausen concentration camps, where 20,000 workers died from beatings, hangings and starvation. Rudolph had been a member of the Nazi Party since 1931. In 1945, a military file on this creature had reported: '100% Nazi, dangerous type, security threat!!! Suggest internment'. By contrast the JIOA's final dossier on him stated that there was 'nothing in his records indicating that he was a war criminal or an ardent Nazi or otherwise objectionable'. So Dr Rudolph, fresh from presiding over those deaths and beatings at Dora-Nordgausen, became a US citizen and later designed the Saturn-5 rocket used in the Apollo moon landings. But in 1984, when his war record was finally re-investigated, he fled to West Germany, which did NOT extradite him back to the United States.

Wernher von Braun: From 1937 to 1945, von Braun was the technical director of the Peenemunde rocket research centre, where the V2 rocket, which (contrary to Mark Phillips' flaccid comment) devastated parts of the United Kingdom, was developed. By 1970, this man, whose Nazi past had been 'expunged for the record', was the associate Administrator of the US National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA).

Kurt Blome: This high-ranking Nazi scientist told US military interrogators in 1945 that he had been ordered in 1943 to experiment with plague vaccines on concentration camp prisoners. He was tried at Nuremberg in 1947 on charges of practicing euthanasia (extermination of sick prisoners), and of conducting experiments on human beings. Although acquitted, his earlier admissions were well known, and most observers were of the opinion that this man had participated in Satanic experimentation against humans. Two months after his Nuremberg acquittal, Blome was interviewed at Camp David, Maryland, on issues connected with biological warfare. In 1951, he was hired by the US Army Medical Corps to work on chemical warfare projects. His file made no mention of Nuremberg.

Major General Walter Schreiber: According to Ms. Linda Hunt's article for the well-respected Atomic Scientists' organisation, the US Military Tribunal at Nuremberg heard evidence that 'Schreiber had assigned doctors to experiment on concentration camp prisoners and had made the funds available for such experimentation'. The Assistant Prosecutor said that this evidence would have resulted in Schreiber's conviction if the Soviets, who had held him from 1945 to 1948, had made him available for trial.

Once again, Schreiber's Paperclip file made no mention of this evidence. So 'The Project' found work for this fellow at the Air Force School of Medicine at Randolph Field, Texas. When the conscientious columnist, Drew Pearson, publicised the Nuremberg evidence in 1952, the resulting negative publicity led the JIOA to arrange a visa and a job for Schreiber in the Nazi state of Argentina, where his daughter was living; and on 22 May 1952, Schreiber was flown to Buenos Aires.

Hermann Becker-Freysing and Siegfried Ruff: These two, with Kurt Blome, were among 23 defendants in the Nuremberg War Tribunal 'medical case'. Becker-Freysing was convicted and sentenced to 20 years in jail for having conducted experiments on inmates at Dachau concentration camp - starving them, and force-feeding them sea water that had been chemically altered to make it drinkable. Ruff was acquitted in a close decision on charges that he had killed as many as 80 Dachau inmates in a low-pressure chamber designed to simulate altitudes in excess of 60,000 feet. As already indicated, before their trial, Becker-Freysing and Ruff were paid by the US military to write reports about their grotesque experiments on human beings.

In October 1945, a US Navy technical mission to Dachau concentration camp reported in detail on various German wartime experiments carried out on inmates, using hallucinogenic drugs. These were directed by the previously mentioned odious Dr Hubertus Strughold, who was also imported to the United States under Project Paperclip after the War. This ogre's barbaric 'medical experiments', for which his subordinates were tried and convicted as war criminals at Nuremburg, amounted to 'nothing more than a series of bizarre and unspeakably brutal tortures. Even so, he learned a lot', wrote the independent US expert, Michael E. Kreca[17], in 2001, 'about human behaviour and a natural alkaloid found in the peyote cactus called mescaline' (that substance long central to many Native American and Australian aborigine religious rituals).

While the Project Paperclip Nazi operatives were settling down in the United States, General Gehlen - having convinced the Americans thanks to the Nazis' placement of their Abwehr agent Dulles in the 'top slot' that, given his unrivalled knowledge and contacts, he was the right man to rehabilitate the German intelligence community - began re-establishing his presence in West Germany, after receiving the go-ahead from Allen Dulles to establish a quasi-'private' intelligence organisation, to be called The Gehlen Organisation, which became the DVD, based at Dachau. This of course quickly regained control of most of the former agents now based inside the Iron Curtain; and, with the help of many of his former staff, Gehlen put many of them back to work. In spite of 'agreeing' with the Americans (not Dulles) not to hire any former Gestapo, SS or SD members, he nevertheless sought them out and placed them on the payroll (financed by the CIA, i.e., the CIA's payroll), regardless of his undertaking; and of course the by now deeply Nazi-penetrated CIA did nothing to prevent him. A similar state of affairs arose in Iraq in 2004, when the US authorities, lacking adequate (or indeed any worthwhile) HUMINT, re-hired Ba'ath party thugs, military and operatives, having earlier ruled out any such hirings. This 'came naturally' to certain US cadres, given that the Iraqi Ba'ath regime (like its Syrian counterpart) was modelled upon Hitler's Third Reich. The fact that it was supported by the Soviets, who built a large number of bases in Iraq to 'match' the American military bases constructed in Saudi Arabia inter alia by the CIA's Vinnell Corporation, should not mislead us: for, traditionally, Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) has been extensively penetrated by deep cover German (Nazi) operatives.

Heinrich Rupp: Rupp has been convicted in the United States of bank fraud. As a CIA operative, he was deeply involved in the Savings and Loan scandals and scams masterminded in part by elements of the corrupted US intelligence community, including allegedly members of the Bush ('Crime') Family. A Federal Grand Jury reported their acceptance of the veracity of testimony that Rupp, the late CIA Director William Casey, who was then Ronald Reagan's Campaign Manager, and Donald Gregg, who became US Ambassador to South Korea, flew in a supersonic military aircraft with George Bush Sr. and other operatives to Paris in 1980, during the election campaign in which Bush Sr. was on the ticket with Ronald Reagan. The testimony in question stated that three meetings were held on 19-20 October 1980 at the Hotel Florida and the Hotel Crillon. It was at this meeting, according to court testimony, that arrangements were made to sabotage President Jimmy Carter's re-election campaign by procuring a delay in the release of the US hostages in Tehran until after Mr Carter had been defeated (popular frustration at the hostage crisis being, as predicted, to blame for his defeat). The hostages were indeed released on 20th January 1981, immediately after Reagan and Bush Sr. were sworn into office. Iran had been promised the release of its financial assets which had been frozen by the US Treasury's Office of Foreign Assets Control, and the basis for the subsequent Iran-Contra scandals was established. This effective 'coup d'etat', known as the 'October Surprise', necessitated the transfer of George Bush Sr. from the United States to Paris and back for a scheduled appointment in such a manner that no-one would know he had ever left (a precaution which ended in failure, since extensive details of this operation have since leaked into the public domain). Some $45 million of 'Black Operations' funds was procured to bribe the Iranians to comply with the US political operatives' requirements, but only $32 million was paid to them - the rest having been 'misappropriated' en route. The stealing of such secret 'Black' funds goes on all the time.

One of the guests at the Inauguration of President Reagan was Licio Gelli, founder of the secret neo-Fascist Masonic Lodge P-2 - a double agent for the CIA and the KGB, identified by Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien as 'the central figure in Europe and South America that linked the CIA, [the] Masonic Lodge, the Vatican, ex-Nazis and several South American Governments, the Italian Government, and several international banks' - key flluminati players of the New Underworld Order.

Among Gehlen's 'recruits' were Franz 'Streber' Six and Emil Augsburg, members of an SS mobile Death's Head (Totenkopf) killing squad that had hunted down and murdered Soviet Jews, intellectuals and partisans. Gehlen also re-recruited the Gestapo

Chiefs of Paris and Kiel, as well as Willi Krichbaum, the (Jewish) former senior Gestapo chief for Southeastern Europe.

The fact is that, as mentioned, the OSS, and its then relabelled successor intelligence organisation, the CIG (Central Intelligence Group), forerunner of the CIA, deliberately chose, thanks to the successful Nazi penetration of US intelligence at the highest level by the Abwehr agent Allen Dulles, to 'believe' General Gehlen's lies about Soviet military capabilities - because his false arguments facilitated their intended annexation of the Nazi scientists, contrary to Presidential and Congressional instructions.

INTELLIGENCE COMMUNITY ALREADY IN THE DRIVING SEAT IN THE 1940S

It was thus already the case, immediately following the Second World War (and indeed previously) that the US intelligence community was driving and detenruning US policy, not the other way round, although the intelligence cadres were always meticulous about making sure that, for public perception purposes, the Executive and Legislative branches appeared to remain in charge. Today, that process has gone so far beyond the point of no return that the disconnect between what the American public perceives to be the White reality - that the Republic has a Constitution and a Government that abides by it and serves the people - and the Black actualite', is complete. Nor can members of Congress do their job properly: all their Capitol Hill and private office telecommunications are permanently bugged by the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI).

Allen Dulles was indeed a traitor to the United States: he knew perfectly well that Reinhard Gehlen was lying through his teeth about the Soviet threat. All veteran OSS agents would have known that the Soviet divisional resources were far less strong in manpower than the US and Western equivalent. A Soviet division was typically one-third as strong as an American division, and its leadership was far less effective. Rather than being able to function in combat with flexibility, with officers able to make on-the-spot field decisions, Soviet officers had to wait for orders from upper-echelon sources before reacting to any change in the flow-of-battle. Since they retained in their collective memory horrific details of Stalin's purges, they dared not act on their own initiative, for fear of being shot at dawn. This rigidity had at times caused the Soviets grievous losses and defeats; whereas, by contrast, the US and British forces had encouraged battlefield decisions to be made at the lowest levels during the heat of conflict.

According to a 'former' CIA officer, 'Gehlen's reports and analyses were sometimes just retyped onto CIA stationery and presented to President Truman without further comment'. This represents a remarkable level of outright foreign penetration. If the President had been on his toes he would have queried the absence of commentaries by the CIA sources, but obviously he wasn't that bright. President Truman reacted by ceasing military budget cuts, increasing spending for weapons research, military equipment and the (Nazi-inspired) space programme, and expanding the nuclear weapons programme. These decisions led to what became the nuclear charade, or strategic deception. The threat of a nuclear winter (assiduously promulgated by Hermann Kahn), and the fact that two nuclear devices cannot be detonated too close together in time, has long since made nuclear war 'inconceivable'. President Truman's change of mind, consequent upon the fact that his own intelligence services were purveying General Reinhard Gehlen's lies to him without comment, also resulted in the CIA being at the receiving end of millions of 'Black' dollars for covert operations. In the decade following the end of the War, the CIA consumed a large tranche of funds that it never accounted for.

According to Victor Marchetti, a former chief analyst specialising in Soviet military capabilities, and author of a study entitled 'The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', 'the Agency loved Gehlen because he fed us what we wanted to hear. We used his stuff constantly, and we fed it to everyone else: the Pentagon, the White House, the newspapers. They loved if. Here is another open admission, into the White world, by an arrogant CIA operative, confirming that, as early as immediately after the Second World War, US intelligence was already completely out of control - deceiving the President, the military brass, and the American people via the press, as it pursued its own secret occult-esoteric power agenda. But actually, this agenda hadn't been originated by the US intelligence community at all: it was fed to and grafted onto the US intelligence structures by means of deep penetration, subtle influence-building, agitprop and corruption operations masterminded by the Nazi International from its headquarters initially established in Madrid during the Second World War. How the German Geopolitical Centre achieved this U-turn within the US intelligence and policymaking communities, building on the treachery of their Abwehr agent Allen Dulles, is recounted in Chapter 8.

Immediately after making the admission outlined above, Marchetti concurred that Gehlen was a consummate liar and a waste of time and space: 'Gehlen had to make his money by creating a threat that we were afraid of, so we would give him more money to tell us about it. In my opinion, the Gehlen Organisation provided nothing worthwhile for understanding or estimating Soviet military or political capabilities in Eastern Europe or anywhere else'. That was true: but Marchetti never understood the bigger picture.

TRIUMPH OF A COVERT NAZI DISINFORMATION OPERATION

For the reality was that the US intelligence and official structures fell victim to a massive German disinformation and strategic deception operation, the effect of which was to confirm the transfer of the mentality and certain of the structures of Hitler's Third Reich across the Atlantic, where it is flourishing as never before, and where it threatens - and this is no exaggeration - a repetition of the Nazi population reduction and control atrocities on a far larger scale. The Author believes that he may live to see this happening in his lifetime, unless exposure can thwart this catastrophe.

The resulting Cold War, fostered by Gehlen's lies and leveraged by the Nazi agent Dulles, which lasted for almost 50 years, cost US taxpayers alone approximately $8.0 trillion. The careful reader will have noticed that, since the US intelligence community knew, from the outset (a) that Soviet military capabilities were greatly inferior to US and Western capabilities, and (b) that nuclear war was out of the question for the technical reason cited above, the CIA, DIA, NSA, ONI and the rest of these intelligence organisations were deceiving the American public on this crucial issue for half a century.

They were doing this, in part, because they had become hooked on mind-control operations and on searching for the ultimate technologies of political control, ideas which were first developed in both Germany and in Britain, where an early pan-German penetration had taken place into the Tavistock Institute. And the targets of this nefarious endeavour are the innocent American people themselves.

Perfection of such technologies and intermeddling with the occult and the 'Ancient Mysteries', and the culture of lies that their development entails, enable privileged, Satanised intelligence elites modelled along Himmlerian lines, whose crimes are covered by blanket secrecy legislation, and which employ official appointments and political office as cover, to practice those very abuses that they condemn for public consumption in the White world - money-laundering, stealing public funds, drug-dealing, orchestrating terrorism and the engineering of a classic revolutionary Period of Escalating Violence, for instance - in order to invoke the proliferation of these evils as justification for the enslavement of their citizens, which in turn becomes essential in order for the criminalised intelligence cadres' crimes to be covered up. This morbid sequence of events is shown in diagrammatic form in Figure 43 on page 243 opposite. Hence the United States' Patriot Acts I, and II and III, and Britain's notorious Civil Contingencies Bill, 'guillotined' through the complacent Westminster Parliament in 2004-05, which provides Ministers, whips and any individuals they may designate, with powers to do anything they like, having declared a State of Emergency on the basis of extremely widely-drawn criteria. In other words, both countries have put in place the means to dispense with the annoyances and expense of 'democracy' altogether, in the face of evils or 'Reichstag Fire'-type events for which they are capable of being responsible. The use of the 'Reichstag Fire' mass traumatisation technique has been deployed already several times in the United States, yielding the desired mass behaviour modification consequences -and in the case of 9/11, providing the authorities with a pretext for the invasions of Afghanistan and Iran in response to the requirements of the oil corporations.

CIA IS PROLIFERATING DEMONIC INFESTATION AND POSSESSION

As will have been gathered en passant earlier, the Author was privileged to be a personal friend of the late Dr Malachi Martin, the Jesuit exorcist and author of many great works, including 'Hostage to the Devil' [Perennial Library, 1987 and HarperSanFrancisco 1992], in the course of which Malachi informed the Author in general terms about the mind-control and demonic possession deprogramming and exorcisms in which he was periodically engaged. The reader may wonder why, given the searing criticisms of the Jesuits elaborated in Chapter 6, the Author attaches any importance to the late Dr Martin's work and insights: and the 'short-form' answer to this legitimate query is that, to the Author's certain personal knowledge, Malachi was in the process of nearing the completion of a lifelong struggle to 'come out of her'[18] (the entrapment of Jesuitism, if not of the Catholic Church itself). It became clear to the Author that this great, late and sadly missed authority - blessed, there was no doubt, by the Holy Spirit when the Author first met him - made no distinction between programmed mind-control (by whatever Himmlerian or Tavistock-related 'technology' it had been procured), and possession by evil spirits. He knew that meddling with the occult, leveraging the Black Magic of the 'Ancient Mysteries', was a trap into which the US intelligence community had fallen, and that, as is inevitably the case, the consequences of such entrapment are unspeakable. As a Jesuit who understood and knew the evil ways of the Vatican and his own order, and was therefore familiar of course with the Jesuit tradition ('technology') of mind and personality programming and manipulation [see Chapter 6], and as a priest who was nevertheless at times imbued and led by the Holy Spirit, he was in a position to know the truth of this matter.

It follows from all this evidence alone that, in failing to take a long spoon to their unending Satanic banquet with the Nazi scientists and their Himmlerian mind-control experiments, which have proliferated ever since, the CIA and other US intelligence agencies involved in this demented, reprobate activity, have been proliferating demonic infestation and possession all over the United States, and externally. Hence the mindless, 'in-your-face' evidence of the wholesale spread of demonic and occult literature, Satanised 'music',

FOREIGN PENETRATION

Orchestrated by the German Geopolitical Centre [Nazi International] Madrid, activating the Reinhard Gehlen Organisation (DVD), Allen Dulles, George Kennan, other Abwehr assets, and a subsequent ongoing stream of criminal scientists.

CONSEQUENT AGGRAVATED CORRUPTION

Institutionalisation of lying, false witness and deception using the Cold War to cover up the 40+-year German criminal penetration of US structures [ongoing Project Paperclip]. Development of an 'anything goes' mentality under cover of omnibus 'crooks' charter' intelligence legislation [the 1947 US National Security Act et seq].

CRIMINALISATION OF INTELLIGENCE

Consolidation of links between organised crime and intelligence, leading to 'competitive' drug-dealing orchestrated by intelligence: e.g., the Latin American drug cartels set up by foreign agents such as Al Holbert and Carlos Lehder working within the US cooperative intelligence community, and a 'culture of scamming'.

CRIMINALISATION OF GOVERNMENT

Because US intelligence is partly criminalised and because primary positions (such as the Presidency and Vice-Presidency of the United States) are owned, as in the Soviet Union, Britain, Israel, France, Germany and other countries), by senior intelligence officers for whom criminal ops. are the norm, a hellish environment is institutionalised at the highest levels, in which money-laundering, the stealing of public and intelligence funds, drug-dealing, the 'placement' of drug-trafficking pipeline proceeds with 'hedge funds', prostitution, occult practices and de facto gang warfare between 'competing' groups owing their 'allegiance' to antagonistic intelligence barons, who are traitors aligned with foreign powers, becomes routine.

CRIMINAL DICTATORSHIP

Complete with American death trains, concentration camps, institutionalised official lying, surveillance and propaganda - to ensure that official and intelligence crimes are covered up, and perpetrators are not all 'hung from lamp posts'. ■

Figure 43: Diagrammatic representation of how this foreign penetration of the intelligence community, and the consequent aggravation of corruption, leads over time to the collapse of orderly governance and the imperative of repressive dictatorship, as the high-level criminals seek permanent protection.

and death-oriented games and videos, which may be observed in every US chain bookstore, where each month more and more space seems to be devoted to these reprobate preoccupations of the demented Illuminati. 'Religion' now includes every form of pagan abomination under the sun, as any visitor to one of these stores can easily verify.

The Author enjoyed a long telephone conversation with Malachi, who was born on 23rd July 1921, exactly one week before his death in New York City on 27th July 1999. On that occasion, the often merry Irish priest was full of his usual banter, as well as indulging in very serious conversation with his unworthy interlocutor. The purpose of the phone call had been that the Author wanted to know whether he wished to continue his subscription to 'Soviet Analyst', a publication edited since 1991 by the Author. 'Oh yes, please, you're my lifeline', he said over-generously.

Some time earlier, Malachi had told the Author of an incident when he had been thrown by a powerful force from his writing stool, in the small cell-like room where he worked, in his friend's apartment on East 63rd Street. The lady of the house and her daughter had just left to go shopping. Shortly after they left, Malachi was flung to the floor by a force so strong and oppressive that he was unable to get up, and felt he might have languished, badly hurt, until he died. But the two women, who were smokers, had forgotten their cigarettes. So they retraced their steps, rode back up the elevator, and reentered their apartment - whereupon they found Malachi lying in a desperate state. 'Their cigarette addiction saved my life', Malachi had quipped. He had been certain that Evil Spirit had objected so strongly to what he was exposing in his books, that it had been unable to tolerate his activities any longer. That event reminds the Author that in the course of preparing this book, as mentioned earlier, the computer program automatically opened up a sequence of precisely 322 blank pages.

After relating this story, Malachi explained (as he did in 'Hostage to the Devil') how vulnerable the exorcist is to an attack during exorcism, and how he needs always to pray for protection, in case of such an attack. The Author has it on impeccable personal authority that Malachi suffered his fatal heart attack while in the process of exorcising a severely possessed young girl - exactly one week, as mentioned, after the Author had enjoyed his last conversation with him.

In one of his final public interviews, in 1999, Malachi alluded to the exponential increase in occult devilry that was and is permeating North America (and the United Kingdom, as well). 'For the first time in the work we have been doing for 31 years in this corner of the globe, during the last ten years or so, we have found young men and women, thirty-somethings or twenty-somethings, coming forward and saying: 'Listen, I made a pact with the Devil. I wanted this woman. I wanted this man. I wanted this job. I wanted this money. I wanted this, this, and this, and I made a pact and he gave it to me and now I can't get rid of him. He dominates my will. Please liberate me. And then people get to it by means of things like an ouija board, or by spiritual means or channelling'.

And by being abused by US intelligence mind-control technology and personality-splitting programmes derived originally from the experiments undertaken by Heinrich Himmler's Nazi scientists on concentration camp victims.

Referring generally to the Luciferians' apparent hegemony, Dr Martin elaborated:

'We are now, according to the official doctrine of the Luciferians, in what they call 'the Availing Time'. They have a tradition that in these years they can avail of the time to install the Prince, who is Lucifer, as the greatest power on earth, in charge of human civilization, and adored by men'.

This is that Lucifer, 'that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world'[19] - the god of Masonry, to which candidates are progressively introduced, as they are sucked deeper and deeper into the false, esoteric world of lies, the 'Ancient Mysteries' and murder which it has to offer, the god worshipped by 'high' Masons who are intelligence officers, by the holders of high office whom they have abused under their nefarious mind-control programmes, and whose children the intelligence services themselves routinely target for paedophilia and mind-control purposes.

And since Lucifer is a liar, all those who do or condone these things are, by definition, themselves deluded and deceived: and the pathetic dimension to all of this is that while they know perfectly well that this is the case, they continue down this path to destruction and the pit. To repeat: as Paul writes in verse 32 of the first Chapter of his Epistle to the Romans, these evil people 'knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them'. Thus Paul knew, by the Grace of the Holy Spirit, that those who do these things, and perpetrate these abominations (a) know that what they are doing will lead them to the pit of destruction (for as indicated earlier, they are not atheists), (b) yet continue with their abominations and (c) obtain satisfaction in doing them and in others doing them, and in enticing others to do them.

The Author knows of several instances in which US operatives have threatened each other with death; and since embarking on these enquiries, the Author has himself received seven separate such threats from these pathetic mental defectives, for daring to even think of exposing some of their serial abominations.

Malachi's interviewer asked to what end these deluded people were seeking to enthrone Satan on earth, and he replied simply:

'To exalt the power of Lucifer. That's the end in itself. It's the [sole] Luciferian purpose. If they don't do it in these years, then it is put off sine die, without resolution. They are very keen on getting it done'.

Authoritatively distinguishing between Satanism and Luciferianism, Malachi also had this to say, as has previously been noted, in part: There is a layer of Satanism, of Satanist ritual which prepares people for perfect Luciferian adoption. They [Satanists] have covens and sacrifices and rites. But the Luciferians have no rites, you know.... [Such levels of Satanism are] a preparation for Luciferianism, and there are reversals sometimes. You will find a crowd of Luciferians having a Satanic ritual as a reminder of things. But they [Luciferians, who consider themselves 'of a higher order'] have all passed through [the relevant niuminati initiation rites] and that involves three things: the infliction of pain without flinching, the infliction of death without flinching, and the use of fire'.

So, bombing the hell out of civilian populations, using the most lethal weapons imaginable, is not an issue for these 'inventors of evil things'[20]. Dropping fragmentation bombs on civilian populations is not an issue for the British or the American military, just as the abominations inflicted by the covert Soviet military in Chechnya and elsewhere are 'no problem' for the Illuminati's operatives in the Kremlin. Sexually abusing defenceless prisoners in the hell-holes of Abu Ghraib, the eight other such hell-holes in Iraq, the CIA control centres in Jordan, at Guantanamo, on the British island of Diego Garcia, and in any of the 23 prison hell-holes the United States has set up in Afghanistan directed from its main base at Kandahar (which, like Babylon and Tripoli just happens to sit on the esoterically important - for the Luciferians - 33rd parallel), is not an issue[21].

On 5th September 2004, Oleg Gordievsky the (false) Soviet defector who was reputedly the highest-ranking KGB officer to work for MI6 (which raises the obvious unanswered question: why has he not been liquidated for his treachery as is mandatory for all Soviet traitors?) wrote in ''The Daily Telegraph' that 'the attitude that I remember all too well in the KGB is that deaths are 'normal wastage''. This is the same as the US Illuminati concept of 'collateral damage'. If 100,000-300,000 people have been murdered in Iraq, that is 'collateral damage'. When the Author asked a US operative with extensive experience inside the 'former' USSR what was the difference between the attitude towards murder of the KGB-GRU and of US intelligence, he said: 'Not much. The Russians kill more'.

BRIEF PROFILES OF MIND-CONTROLLED ASSASSIN-OPERATIVES

One purpose of personality-splitting brainwashing operations is to create and maintain a large and expanding cadre of individuals suitable for recruitment as controllable operatives and assassins who will do the really dirty work, in response to instructions from their handlers. These multiple-split personalities have been programmed in such a manner that they have been made (through deviant sexual means and other ways of manipulating the psyche) responsive to trigger-phrases, often based upon make-believe stories such as 'The Wizard of Oz' and 'Alice in Wonderland', as described by the Phillipses in their books.

The Author and his associates have been informed repeatedly by US operatives, almost as though their statements represented warnings, that it is standard practice for one's children to be targeted. All children of intelligence officers in the Washington and Virginia areas are targeted, and large numbers wind up abused, and in various states of mental and physical disarray as a consequence. Some children of 'Illuminati' parents are genetically-bred to function as outstanding psychics. Among these, a number are trained to perform as psychic assassins, possessing the ability to induce cardiac arrest or neural dysfunction. It is said that the former Soviet General-Secretary Yuri Andropov (Lieberman), was assassinated in this manner. Among the more notorious 'lone nutcases' who were in fact MK-ULTRA-type programmed split personalities developed for assassination purposes, and who could be triggered by their handlers to perform assassinations on demand, were:

Sirhan Sirhan: This assassin was programmed at a racing stables in Santa Ana, California by two CIA mind-control specialists - one of them a priest. A co-worker of Sirhan at the stables was Thomas Bremer, whose mind-controlled brother Arthur, shot Governor George Wallace in 1972. Not many miles from the stables is a Synagogue used for mind-control purposes. Its rabbi is a 'former' Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) officer. It is well known within the ranks of the Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD) that mind-controlled 'patsy' Sirhan Sirhan, in keeping with the 'patsy' who was arrested for the murder of Israeli Prime Minister Yitzak Rabin, actually fired blanks at Robert Kennedy, in order to misdirect the attention of eyewitnesses. At least one police officer's eyewitness report was re-written by a senior officer in order to protect the true conspirators. Moreover, police radio communication was disrupted (as in the Princess Diana assassination) thereby preventing the broadcasting of the descriptions of other suspects. Bill Kurtis's TV show, A & E Investigative Report, on the assassination of Robert Kennedy, suggested that Sirhan Sirhan was a mind-controlled assassin or 'patsy' created under Project ARTICHOKE. This programme was developed in order to create 'Manchurian Candidate' assassins (omega victims), who could be programmed to kill a target and then not even remember they had ever killed anyone at all. Sirhan Sirhan was perfect for the job. Angry at the death of his parents during a conflict with Israel, the convicted assassin of Robert Kennedy was said to have been in a trance-like state during and after the shooting. Later, Sirhan Sirhan affirmed emphatically that he did not actually remember anything that happened during the shooting. [This reference to Project ARTICHOKE suggests that it had a specific purpose, so that the earlier references to ARTICHOKE being one of the precursors of MK-ULTRA may not be wholly accurate. Artichoke rhymes with heart and choke, so it was probably concerned specifically with the training, personality-splitting and mind-controlling of assassins].

William Joseph Bryan, Jr.: One of the drummers with the Tommy Dorsey Band for some time was a certain William Joseph Bryan, Jr. (a.ka. William Joseph Bryon, and William Jenning Bryan HI, etc.). William Joseph Bryan, Jr. was a CIA mind-control creep who programmed people when he was with the Air Force as Chief of Medical Survival Training, which was a covert brainwashing section. Bryan opened up his own Hypnotherapy Institute on Sunset Strip in Hollywood, where he programmed targets for service to the Illuminati. It was this particular Bryan (a familiar CIA false name) who programmed Sirhan Sirhan to kill Robert Kennedy.

John Hinckley: This young man who wounded Ronald Reagan is another mind-controlled victim who has been unfairly victimised. Hinckley was programmed in Lexington by an aide to a British Intelligence psychiatrist, who had previously programmed the Son-of-Sam Satanic cultist David Berkowitz, a member of a Los Angeles Satanic cult called The Children, at a Westchester, NY, mind-control 'facility'. Like Patrick Purdy, who massacred seven Vietnamese children in a Stockton, California schoolyard, Hinckley had associated with neo-Nazis and had been prescribed mood-altering neuroleptic pharmaceuticals.

Curt Cobain of the 'musical' group 'Nirvana', was another victim, on this occasion of National Security Agency (NSA) brainwashing, and was 'terminated' by the NSA. Cobain, like Jimmy Hendrix, had started writing clues about the NSA's activities into his music, to communicate some idea of what was happening, to his music followers. This was a dangerous departure, given the extensive involvement of the CIA, for instance, in the drug-ridden 'country music' industry (which was and remains a key CIA outlet for its drugs). He referred in his music to the NSA as the 'friends inside his head' (i.e., his demon 'familiars'). Once the NSA puts on the highest level of brainwashing pain, the subject expires quickly. Cobain used heroin to numb and otherwise diminish the effect of the brainwashing. [Note: That victim's reference to 'friends inside his head' is typical of classic demonic infestation or possession. At the Gorbachev Foundation/State of the World Forum event in San Francisco in September 1995, the Communist agitator Barbara Marx Hubbard told an audience that she had a 'familiar' called 'John' whom she consulted at all times. Malachi Martin wrote about familiars in his classic work 'Hostage to the Devil'].

The Jonestown, Guyana, massacre, a group control experiment: Survivors of Jonestown have testified as to the effectiveness of the group control 'technology' used in Jamestown. After this gruesome experiment in mind-control was terminated with a massacre, large amounts of drugs were discovered. Just one footlocker at Jonestown alone contained 11,000 doses. The authorities prevented chemical autopsies of the bodies to ensure secrecy of the sophisticated concentration camp, which was used for medical and psychiatric experimentation by the CIA. What may have happened was that a programmed intelligence operative (a 'Clear Eyes') was accidentally activated, through a lone sequence. There was no way to stop the killings. All members of the cult were programmed to at least 'Level Three'. Only three deaths were attributable to cyanide; the rest died from gunfire. [Again, discussion of demonic infestation 'levels', or 'alters', is most authoritatively discussed by Fr. Malachi Martin in 'Hostage to the Devil'].

David Koresh: This operative/mind-controlled programmed assassin was a long time CIA asset. Waco had been a CIA centre for mind-control ever since the end of the Second World War. Many of the German Nazi mind-control scientists were brought to Waco to continue their experiments. The Waco 'sleepers' (of which there were seven in number) had somehow been triggered, and they were preparing to carry out their preprogrammed responses. The 'sleepers' in the compound were created to be programmed domestic terrorists and can be compared to the members of the Japanese cult, Aunt Shinri Kyo, which bombed the Tokyo subway with Sarin gas and killed and wounded hundreds of people. The seven sleepers in the Waco compound were within days of manufacturing a nerve gas toxin that would have been powerful enough to kill up to 350,000 people. A total of 86 men, women, and children were murdered in the Branch Davidian compound on Monday, 19th April 1993 -ALL of them at the hands of the four members of a CIA 'wet' team, operating under cover of the Delta Force. This atrocity had been preceded by another such event at Ruby Ridge. One message delivered as a consequence of this atrocity - which officials justified at the time on the basis that it allegedly prevented a far worse atrocity occurring (the deaths of 350,000 people) - was that the authorities want the American people to know the horror that will befall people who defy the Government, which is of course itself the cause of these Satanic disturbances.

Port Arthur Massacre, Tasmania, Australia: On Sunday 28th April 1996, an unknown professional combat shooter opened fire in the Broad Arrow Cafe at Port Arthur in Tasmania. In less than five minutes, 20 people lay dead, 19 of them killed with single shots to the head, fired from the right hip of the fast-moving shooter. The awesome display of combat marksmanship was blamed on intellectually impaired Martin Bryant ('Bryan' again) who was held in illegal strict solitary confinement for more than 120 days, until he was 'ready' to plead guilty. But no trial ever took place. He was probably liquidated. Other Tone nutters' (in the United States) who never stood trial include Mark David Chapman, Sirhan Sirhan {see page 246), James Earl Ray, Lee Harvey Oswald and David Berkowitz. A court trial is a nuisance and dangerous for the Illuminists.

[Note: Australia is extensively involved in these intelligence operations under secret accords with Britain and the United States. Aspects of the New Underworld Order will be run from a vast underground control centre near Alice Springs. This facility houses developments which are understood to have made a hardened and cynical US intelligence officer whose identity is known to the Author, to exit the facility as fast as he could, and to cease work which had involved frequent visits there].

John Lennon: Shortly before Lennon's death at the hands of a mind-controlled 'Manchurian Candidate'-type assassin, Mark Chapman, hired to 'terminate' Lennon who had by then become his own man and was considered a 'loose cannon', Lennon had had the audacity to 'ouf his mind-manipulation perpetrators in a Playboy interview, in which he had not only revealed details of LSD's completely unforeseen liberating impact upon human society and civilization, but also, even more to the point, had indicated that he was, like Cobain and Hendrix, aware of the extent to which he and other pop musicians had been set up by 'dark forces'- for use as mass sensitisation dupes.

The Columbine killings: This atrocity was associated with an ongoing operation in the United States to remove guns out of the hands of the American people. One month, to the day, after Columbine, another similar shooting occurred in Georgia. Such school killings, another of which occurred in Dunblane, Scotland (although this also aimed to cover up a vast high-level rent-boy scandal), are intended to inflame anger and hysteria, as occurred in early September 2004 in the 'former' Soviet Union in the case of the Beslan massacre of hundreds of schoolchildren. In the United States, Great Britain, Australia, and now the 'former' USSR, the media whips up anger and hysteria and keeps it fresh in the public's mind - with continual graphic, around the clock 'overkill' coverage and commentary on the dead and wounded victims, the pain and suffering of the families, and the traumatic scars left on children who watch television all over the world.

In the United States, President Clinton, a CIA operative working to instructions of course (although this man is also a very 'high' Mason), exploited the hysteria of the moment to blame guns for the problems in America's schools; whereupon, amid all the hysteria, Congress was pressured to pass more guns laws. But it gets worse. It is also true, in the US context, that in order to condition the public into supporting stricter gun-control measures - an absolute necessity for the conspirators, given America's gun-ownership tradition - mind-controlled children have been programmed to shoot classmates. One of the Columbine High-School shooters, Eric Harris, used to live at Plattsburg Air Force Base, in New York State, with his Air Force officer father. At the age of ten, Harris was allegedly accustomed to complain to his friends that he was being drugged at the base. This base, although officially closed, is known to harbour an enormous underground facility, which is allegedly still being used as a mind-control programming center. One Columbine teacher stated publicly that she was wounded by an adult male, not by a student (four adult gunmen took part). Federal personnel had visited the school earlier.

Because of the continuing controversy surrounding the assassination of President Kennedy - who had demanded that the CIA must cease its drug-trafficking operations, and whom the Nazi International wanted out of the way, which was why he was murdered - the Author has omitted a detailed note here on Lee Harvey Oswald, whose photographs certainly reveal him to have had the profile appropriate for a programmed assassin. Other such MK-ULTRA-spawned assassins have also included, of course, the Satanic Charles Manson, Timothy McVeigh and John Salvi.

It is estimated that there are between two and ten million mind-controlled victims in the United States. Victims are usually programmed to slash their arms if their front alter-per-sonality begins to recover memories of the trauma programming. This inhibits further autonomous memory recovery: they occasionally begin to recover memories if their programmer or handler dies. Many have been abused by their parents, a familiar, even standard aberration among Illuminati families. Buford Furrow, arrested for a shooting at the Jewish Community Center, in Granada Hills, California, was admitted to a psychiatric institution after slashing his arm in several places, behaviour consistent with mind-control activity. Significantly, a National Security Council (NSC) e-mail address for a Buford Furrow located at McChord Air Force Base, was deleted after his arrest.

Notwithstanding the widespread use of programmed operatives whose handlers can modify their behaviour by triggering their layered 'alters', colossal blunders costing agents' lives occur quite frequently. On 29th August 2003, US Ambassador Joseph Wilson told a Washington symposium that Karl H. Rove, President Bush's White House 'fixer', had been the person who had leaked to 'The Washington Post' that his wife, Valerie Plame, was a CIA operative of 26 years' standing. Her entire overseas team was liquidated.

CONFIRMATION OF THE FREE-WHEELING ILLUMINATI AT WORK

JANUS, an international Psychological Operations (Psy-Ops) team consisting of high-level scientists, serves NATO and operates from its headquarters in Belgium, which, as indicated elsewhere, is the financial centre of the Illuminati. In the United States, a group of highly intelligent African-American women, known as the Black Angels, is maintained by intelligence for Psy-Ops assassination 'wet affairs' (liquidation) work. According to an anonymous and disgusted US intelligence source, a total of 250,000 children in the United States were stolen from the streets over an unspecified period and used for experimentation purposes at 25 intelligence stations. The end justifies the means.

One of the most notorious manipulative projects of all, called the Montauk Mind-Control Program, was initiated after the Second World War on the old Montauk Air Force Base, Long Island, run by Dr John von Neumann, a pre-war Nazi scientist, and Jack Pruett, an Air Force operative, who was succeeded in due course by Dr Hermann C. Untermann and another Nazi expert (in electronics), Dr Matthew E. Zerrett. This project was initially funded by proceeds from the $10 billion worth of Nazi gold captured in 1944 by US troops, in a successful 'Financial Warfare' operation. The last of the Montauk experimental bases was reportedly 'closed down' on 12th August 1983. Dr Von Neumann, who came to the United States, as noted, before the Second World War, was reported by the US Government to have died in 1956; but in reality he was still alive as late as 1989, and in contact with US intelligence. This penetration suggests that the Nazi apparat had actually engaged in focused penetration ops long before the outbreak of the Second World War. When Hitler's regime had finally been defeated, the German Geopolitical Centre's subtle propagandists fostered the lie that Nazism had perished along with it - a strategic deception operation which has had terrible consequences.

The Phillipses have reported, and other sources concur, that, as has been mentioned, the MR-ULTRA programme, based upon Himmlerian technology, was the 'brainchild' not only of the odious Dr Sydney Gottlieb, but also of Richard Helms, later Director of Central Intelligence (DCI), and was intended to complete the development of techniques pioneered by Nazi scientists - including electrical shock, sleep deprivation, memory implantation, memory erasure, sensory modification, psychoactive drug experimentation, and 'many more cruel practices'. 'Project Paperclip', they add, 'ultimately brought in key players involved in the assassination of the Pope, the 'October Surprise' operation - the sabotage of President Carter's peace talks by means of an internal US intelligence-directed coup - 'and a great many other things still classified to this day'.

The Phillipses' published research 'shows that the OSS/CIA that was formed [by] the National Security Act [is] the same agency that [has] employed hundreds of Nazis [and] has been in alliance with the Vatican through various Agency connections such as Licio Gelli. The CIA/Vatican alliance that assassinated Pope John Paul I, John F. Kennedy and dictators of Third World countries, is the Illuminati'. This statement is accurate. Details of how Pope John Paul I was assassinated are given in Chapter 6.

And the Phillips' short-form (but of course incomplete) conclusion is stunning:

> The Bavarian Illuminati has been around for centuries in one way or another. Its presence in the 20th century is the direct result of the Nazis [sic]. The Nazi connections to the occult and the Bavarian Thule Society were parallel to the American members of 33rd Degree Freemasonry [sic]. When Operation Paperclip was successfully executed, the Nazi element of the Bavarian Thule society was fused with the American members of Freemasonry to create the [modern] Illuminati. Operation Paperclip, MK-ULTRA,

SELECTED UNEDITED STATEMENTS IN:
'TRANCE FORMATION OF AMERICA'
The True Life Story of a CIA Mind-Control Slave
By Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips

Published privately, 1995: Reality Marketing, Inc., Las Vegas, NV 89102, USA. See Figure 42, page 225.

• • • Rather than comment further on the content and flavour of this book, the Author has selected the following brief excerpts, which are self-explanatory. The book contains such horrific descriptions of eye-witnessed high-level corruption and CIA Himmierian debauchery that they cannot be reproduced here.

' In the past 150 years, there has been a resurgence of widespread interest in the so-called 'Black Arts' which include Satanism or Luciferian religions. These constitutionally-protected (in the United States) 'religions' use trauma to control the minds of their followers'.

' In 1971, The New York Times reported on ... a report to Congress [which] clearly showed that the CIA was interested in the cause-and-effect clinical findings that occult practices have on the Black Arts practitioner's and/or the observer's mind. Of particular interest to the CIA were the heightened levels of suggestibility that certain occult rituals produced in the minds of the practitioners. Cannibalism and blood rituals were ranked highest in the order of importance to their research '.

' Linda Hunt, in her book 'Secret Agenda', [cites] declassified Department of Defense documents identifying Project Paperclip as being the secret importation and relocation of Nazi and Fascist scientists into the United States over a 40-year period. These brilliant criminal scientists were primarily focused on two areas of research, rockets and the mind. They were placed in positions of authority in prestigious universities, colleges, industries, and NASA. Over the years, these imported criminals have directly influenced our society with advanced rocket technologies and mind-control applications through US Government-sponsored research.... Nazism, as a philosophy and form of government, is alive and destroying our country, in part, as a result of Project Paperclip'.

' Many US and foreign government secrets and personal reputations were staked on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed and rehabilitated to accurately reveal the criminal covert [and violently obscene - Ed.] activities in which I (and her daughter Kelly) were forced to participate, particularly during the Reagan/Bush Administrations'.

' Violations of laws and rights, Psychological Warfare intimidation tactics, threats to our lives, and various other forms of CIA Damage Containment practices thus far have remained unhindered and unchecked due to the National Security Act 1947 and the 1986 Reagan amendment to same, which allows those in control of our Government to censor and/or cover up anything they choose ».

' Project MONARCH was a US Defense Intelligence Agency TOP SECRET project... a mind-control operation which was [author maintains use of the past tense, but it's still happening] 'recruiting' multigenerational incest-abused children with Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) for its genetic mind-control studies. Visual acuity of an MPD [victim] is 44 times greater than that of the average person'.

' Huntsville, Alabama, is a place with a NASA research facility and where [children] were regularly taken for the production of child and adult pornography films'.

[Senator Robert C] Byrd 'believed that in order for this world to survive, mankind must "take a giant step in evolution through creating [sic, i.e. Man is God - Ed.] a superior race". To create this "superior race", Byrd believed in the Nazi and KKK principles of "annihilation of underprivileged races and cultures" through genocide, to alter genetics and breed the more gifted - the blondes of this world'.

[Senator Robert C] Byrd said that 'our country's involvement in drug distribution, pornography and white slavery was 'justified' as a means of "gaining control of all illegal activities worldwide" to fund Black Budget covert activity that would "bring about world peace through world dominance and total control"'. In short Byrd had 'bought' the German Illuminati's programme for global control. ■

'October Surprise' and George Bush Sr. are all facets of the Illuminati, a group whose ideals are rooted in the occult, and dedicated to world domination'.

It is extraordinary that the entirely separate research by this Author, which carefully sought to by-pass and initially to discount the work of Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien, because of the unanswered questions that have been alluded to, has culminat-ed in exactly the same conclusion. The separate investigations in other Chapters of this book leave no room for doubt that Nazi 'Black' Intelligence has successfully leveraged its occult dimension, through systematic influence-building, penetration and the creation of an identity of purpose within US intelligence, as an instrument of Nazi global hegemony strategy. Put another way, the Illuminati fulfil the function of an occultic cover for German intelligence - which is directed by the secret DVD from a town that is synonymous with the mass production of death: Dachau. An impeccable, and knowledgeable, US intelligence source has separately confirmed the accuracy of this assessment.

This Author knows, from an intelligence source, that the Pope receives a briefing from the Vatican's CIA Rezident every Friday afternoon. Not least, since Cathy O'Brien traces early stages of her traumatised childhood to abuses inflicted upon her by her Catholic schoolteachers, she and Phillips have concluded that 'the CIA and the Vatican are the Illuminati'. Indeed Rome has been a central locus of Illuminism since Grand Master (33rd Degree) Giuseppe Mazzini, a revolutionary terrorist leader, Sicilian gangster, drug-dealer and the founder of the Mafia - a man who authorised thefts, arson and the poisoning of his opponents - divided responsibility for the control of the World Revolution with Albert Pike - taking responsibility for political operations, which were to be directed from Rome. The Vatican is the seat of the 'Beast-Lamb' - that is to say, translating John's inspired prophetic vision into our own perceptions, of the man whose number is 666, who stands in the place of Jesus Christ, and who presides over a place where, as Dr Malachi Martin personally told the Author, 'people are not nice at all'. ■

NAZI CONNECTIONS IN FULL WASHINGTON DAYLIGHT

Paul Weyrich, operative founder of the Heritage Foundation, a Melkite Greek Catholic, has a background with ties to Nazi collaborators. In the 1970s, Weyrich helped arrange appointments and political contacts on Capitol hill for Dr Franz-Josef Strauss, of Bavaria, who assisted Nazi collaborators. Dr Roger Pearson, writer and organiser for the Nazi Northern League, joined the editorial board of 'Policy Review', the monthly Heritage Foundation publication, in 1977. Dr Pearson's racist theories have been circulated worldwide by neo-Nazi and White-supremacist organisations. Pearson was brought to the United States by Willis Carto, the operative founder of the neo-Fascist Institute for Historical Review (Holocaust denial) and the Liberty Lobby which published the anti-Semitic 'Spotlight' newspaper, now succeeded by 'American Free Press'. The British Eugenics Society had this mention of Roger Pearson on its website: 'Hans K. Gunther, a Nazi anthropologist and eugenicist... was assisted by Dr Roger Pearson of the Eugenics Society, an important figure on the racist journal, 'Mankind Quarterly'. [This] racist journal was still pumping out venom [as of 1994], still influenced by Dr Roger Pearson. Josef Mengele's co-researcher at Auschwitz, Von Vershuer, was on the editorial advisory board of this journal before his death in 1970'. The Free Congress Foundation, the political arm of the Heritage Foundation, until recently housed the Coalition of the Americas, which used to be run by Laszlo Pasztor, a convicted Austrian Nazi collaborator. Pasztor was a former leader of the pro-Nazi Arrow Cross organisation in Hungary. During the Cold War period -which, as this book shows, was exploited, leveraged or engineered by the Reinhard Gehlen Organisation to provide a deception background for the furtherance of the Nazi International's long-range strategy - such operatives worked behind an anti-Communist cover. ■

Chapter 4: THE HEX OF HIMMLER. Notes and references

1. 'Trance Formation of America: The True Life Story of a CIA mind-control Slave', by Cathy O'Brien with Mark Phillips, Reality Marketing, Inc., Las Vegas, Nevada 89102,1995. It is pertinent that this book was published in Las Vegas, where considerable high-level US intelligence resources are devoted to the creation of disinformation films, videos and other media, including the ridiculous footage purportedly showing Osama Bin Laden (the CIA's 'former' asset Tim Osman) in a bathrobe on some moonscape or other. However, much of the information in this privately-published work, the cover of which is illustrated on page 225, is consistent with the entirely independent research conducted by the Author and his colleagues. Specifically, the Author has identified and publicised documented evidence of colossal funding operations that have been undertaken independent of governments, raising in 1989-92 an initial $27.5 trillion (which exceeded $65 trillion by the third quarter of 2006I ostensibly for the financing of the so-called Global Security Environment, linked to the Global Security Project headed by Mikhail Gorbachev in the early 1990s. Following the framing of the US Government Trustor of these funds, crooked US intelligence officers, intelligence crime family 'barons' and international banks made liberal use of the funds, until the Trustor, whom the CIA had said was 'dead', 'came to life' in 2005. O'Brien and Phillips (who are married) cite, on page 78 of their book, the following accurate statement by Senator Daniel Inouye (Democrat, Hawaii), which independently confirms that the Author's giga-financial researches into the funding of the Illuminati's New Underworld Order have been correctly focused. Referring to the New Underworld Order apparat as a 'secret government', he described it as follows before a Senate Subcommittee: ft is 'a shadowy Government with its own Air Force, its own Navy, its own fund-raising mechanism, and the ability to pursue its own ideas of 'national interest', free from all checks and balances, and free from the law itself. Senator Inouye's description indicated that he saw the 'shadow governmenf as a US phenomenon: but it is in fact a Shadow International Government - the secret structure of the Illuminati.
2. The associated German institutes (originally Kaiser Wilhelm Institutes, but from 1945 Max Planck Institutes, include the following: Biophysics (Frankfurt-am-Main); Chemistry, 1911 (Berlin-Dahlem); Biology, 1912 (Berlin); Medical Research; Physics (Berlin); Physical Chemistry and Electrochemistry, 1911 (Berlin, now the Haber Institute); Breeding Research; Leather Research; Brain Research; Foreign and International Private Law; Cell Physiology; Coal Research. In 1938, at a Berlin institute, Otto Hahn and Fritz Strassmann discovered nuclear fission.
3. 'And Jesus called a little child unto Him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, yet shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. Whoso therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea': Matthew, Chapter 18, verses 2-6. 'But Jesus called them [little children] unto Him, and said. Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the Kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, whosoever shall not receive the Kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein': Luke, Chapter 18, verses 16-17. 'And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their hearts, took a little child, and set him by Him, And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth Him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great': Luke, Chapter 9, verses 47-48,
4. 'Biodynamics: The Battle for Youth', Dr Boris Sokoloff, Covici, Freide Publishers, New York, 1930, on page 8. Dr Sokoloff knew Lenin, but later fled from Soviet Russia to the United States. Sokoloff taught that senility is avoidable and that 'the struggle with senility is the problem of mankind and of modern science'. In other words, his quest was for immortality - the same as the quest of Masons and all Luciferians, who believe, pathetically, in reincarnation, one of the Devil's cruder deceptions.
5. 'How the US Government Created the 'Drug Problem' in the USA', excellent Internet essay by Michael E. Kreca.
6. Information about the state murder of the hero Andy Stephenson in 2005 was obtained both from the Author's contact with him in the months before he died, and from a close friend.
7. 'The Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons', Stephen Knight, Dorset Press, 1986, ISBN 0-88029-113-3.
8. 'Whiteout: the CIA Drugs and the Press', a classic analysis: Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St Clair, CounterPunch, 1999, ISBN 1-85984-897-4.
9. 'The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists', Tom Bower, Michael Joseph, London, 1987, Boston, Little Brown and Company.
10. 'Secret Agenda', Linda Hunt, St Martin's Press, 1991.
11. 'Doctors of Infamy', Alexander Mitscherlich and Fred Meilke, 1981. Further details lacking.
12. 'Racial Hygiene: Medicine under the Nazis', Professor Robert Proctor, Harvard University Press, 1988, ISBN 0-674-74578-7.
13. The Killing Winds: The Menace of Biological Warfare', Weidenfeld and Nicholson, London, 1979, Arbor House, 1987.
14. 'Chemical and Biological Warfare', Seymour Hersh, 1969,1970, Panther Press, ISBN 0586-032959.
15. 'Whiteout: the CIA, Drugs and the Press', Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St Clair, op. cit..
16. Israeli and American archaeologists are now obtusely arguing that since there is no archaeological record of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and since the movement of 600,000 males and their families of the children of Israel into the wilderness and their wandering there for 40 years would have been logistically impossible and the Egyptians allegedly garrisoned Canaan at the time of the Exodus, the entire Exodus story is a myth. However extensive internal evidence makes it clear that this cannot be the case. No human mind, or group of minds, could have invented the inspired Old Testament literature.
17. Kreca, op. cit.
18. 'Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto Heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities', Revelation, Chapter 18, verses 4-5.
19. 'Lucifer, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world', Revelation, Chapter 12, verse 9.
20. 'Inventors of evil things': Epistle of Paul to the Romans, Chapter 1, verse 30. See also page 221.
21.'A reprobate mind' Romans, Chapter 1, verses 28-32. The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God', Psalms 14 and 53, verse 1. 'Be still, and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth': Psalm 46, verse 10. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit'; a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise': Psalm 51, verse 17. 'Fret not thyself because of evildoers, neither be thou envious against the workers of iniquity. For they shall soon be cut down like the grass, and wither as the green herb. Trust in the Lord, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed. Delight thyself also in the Lord; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart. Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in him; and he shall bring it to pass': Psalm 37, verses 1-5. 'But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear Fear him which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea I say unto you, Fear him': Jesus Christ, Luke Chapter 11,verse 5. Obviously, these people do not fear Satan, because many of them worship him. They are in for a rude awakening indeed.

ADDENDUM: THE FRANKFURT SCHOOL

The mass mind-control mechanism commonly referred to in recent years as 'political correctness' (PC) is a crucial instrument of the Illuminati's World Revolution, applied equally by both sides of the main 20th Century geopolitical dialectic - International versus National Socialism (although as is being demonstrated, National Socialism is in fact German International Socialism). It first emerged as a sub-ideology from the activities of the Frankfurt School, formerly the Institute of Social Research, which was established at Frankfurt University in Germany in 1923, and was relocated to New York City in 1934[1]. By the end of the Second World War, most of the original members of the Frankfurt School had become American citizens, a development which 'opened a new English-speaking audience for focusing on American forms of authoritarianism[2].

From 1930 onwards, the leading members of the Frankfurt School, Horkheimer, Adorno, Fromm and the French philosopher Marcuse, laboured to translate Marxism from economic into cultural terms, which they mainly achieved by crossing Marx with Freud[3]. Parallel work and thinking was being undertaken at the same time by Antonio Gramsci, the Italian Communist, who was to be incarcerated for nine years under Mussolini. The leading members of the Frankfurt School were all Jewish.

The first poisonous doctrine developed by the Frankfurt School was 'Critical Theory', the basis for the pretentious 'politically correcf 'studies' departments in American Universities. The Institute subsequently developed its so-called 'studies in prejudice'. These manipulative studies, notably as developed in Adorno's influential book 'The Authoritarian Personality', argued for the Revolution that anyone who defended or adhered to traditional Western culture and morality had a psychological problem. It is a well-known characteristic of the 'criminal' mentality that the perpetrator of a given trespass seizes every opportunity of accusing others of committing the same offence, in order to mask his or her own trespass. Yet the 'PC mentality has itself developed a category of offence which the PC mind is apt to condemn, in knee-jerk fashion, as 'finger-pointing' or 'type-casting'[4]. Both accusations prejudge the thinking and intentions of the accused, and therefore reveal prejudice in the mind of the 'politically correct' individual who purports to object to language employed by the accused. It can of course never be the PC perpetrator who has a psychological problem - which is of course the reverse of the truth. Once again, 'political correctness' turns the truth inside out and upside down. That is its Luciferian revolutionary purpose.

'Political correctness' displays the classical hallmark of all Luciferian ideologies, in that it 'demands that people live a lie'[5]. In fact, 'political correctness' demands that we must all accept in innumerable lies as the truth. Such lies include the revolutionary egalitarian assertions that men and women are interchangeable; that there are no differences between or among races or ethnic groups (when these groups are taken as wholes, as 'political correctness' requires, so that its lies in this context are based upon empty generalisations); or that homosexuality is normal and perfectly acceptable. As one analyst has explained, the unholy PC trinity that 'political correctness' demands that we bow down and worship consists of racism, sexism and homophobia[6].

The same veteran American intelligence observer and activist, Paul Weyrich [see box, page 252] has pointed out that all ideologies lead to coercion, dictatorship and thereafter in all probability to genocide[7]: and in many of his pronouncements, it seems as though they verge upon actual predictions, rather than just warnings. This may be because,' ironically', this operative came from a Melkite Greek Catholic background rich with links to Nazi collaborators and neo-Fascist organisations, so he would have known what he was talking about. One of his handlers was an operative called William Lind, described as 'very condescending and arroganf by one observer, who also said that Lind gave the impression of being 'an ageing Brownshirt'. The reason for the tendency towards dictatorship implied by Weyrich was that ideology is bound to fail - pending the procurement of definitive methods of forcing the whole of humanity to think alike (which the Illuminati are heavily engaged in seeking, but which cannot be achieved). For, since we are all wonderfully made, we are all, each one of us, miraculously different (which was what the Lord intended). Hence none of us naturally thinks in the same way; and the high priests of 'political correctness' know this perfectly well - which means that they fundamentally know that they are liars.

In other words, ideologies presuppose that the state or supranational entity (in the contemporary context) must adopt them as official ideologies, so that they become enforceable, and are enforced, by the state. This is where ideology leads because in the end there is no way to compel people to bow down to and accept lies except by threats of coercion, leading to the concentration camps and the GULAG.

The term that the promoters of 'political correctness' apply to any open defiance of its revolutionary mandates is 'hate' - illustrating that like all ideologies, 'political correctness' has developed its own 'Newspeak'. Anyone who defies any ideology is, as noted, suffering from a psychological problem - that is to say, he is 'nuts'. Hence, of course, the notorious usage of 'psychiatric hospitalisation' in the overt Soviet Union, and to a considerable extent in the United States, as a routine method of ensuring that those who are deemed to have erred in their attitude or thinking are 'brought to reason' - a practice which has continued without interruption into the false 'post'-Soviet era. Nor are overt and covert Communist regimes alone guilty of this profound evil today. On the contrary, the use of 'lunacy testing' and other 'psychiatric coercion' techniques is commonplace in the American military, in the intelligence community where handlers decide that their operative needs to be neutralised, as well as throughout the United States' penitentiary system, which in many respects carries a close resemblance to the Soviet GULAG.

Even so, it was the Soviets who were the first to reveal the central importance of 'political correctness' to the Luciferian Revolution, and to emphasise formally its intentionally coercive purpose. The pertinent pronouncement appeared in the primary compendium of Lenin's version of the dialectical Revolution entitled 'The Foundations of Marxism-Leninism', a compendium first compiled under Stalin and revised and updated after his death. In this document, it was affirmed that 'in deciding other affairs, methods of public influence, the influence of public opinion, will be utilised. Under Communism, public opinion will become a mighty force, capable of bringing to reason those individuals who might not want to follow Communist customs and rules of behaviour of the Community'[8]. It is important to recall that the overt Soviets were in the habit of publishing their revolutionary prescriptions as though they applied primarily to the Soviet Union and its satellites. In practice, the prescriptions developed and approved for 'domestic' public consumption were likewise sanctioned for international application: thus the essay in which this passage appeared was entitled 'Marxism-Leninism as a Philosophy and World Outlook'.

The Illuminati, being schooled and steeped in the occult, have always recognised that the achievement of the global hegemony after which they lust - which has become an international cooperative endeavour that serves (and this is crucial) the German long-range strategy - depends upon their mastery over and control of the human mind. In 1920, the British Amy General J. F. C. Fuller, pronounced farsightedly that the traditional methods of military warfare would be 'replaced by purely psychological warfare, wherein weapons are not used or battlefields sought... But [rather]... the corruption of the human reason, the dimming of the human intellect, and the disintegration of the moral and spiritual life of one nation by the influence and will of another is accomplished'[9].

The Nazi International, and their contributing mentors from the Frankfurt School, fully understood that corruption of 'the enemy', by all means to hand, given that for them 'the war never ended' [see Chapter 8], necessitated controlling his mental processes. Lenin, the German Abwehr operative, had exactly the same understanding, as was acknowledged by B. H. Liddell Hart, who wrote:

'Lenin had a vision of fundamental truth when he said that "the soundest strategy in war is to postpone operations until the moral disintegration of the enemy renders the delivery of the mortal blow both possible and easy". This is not always practicable, nor his methods of propaganda (to include sophistry, strategic deception, and strategic self-deception) always fruitful. But it will bear adaptation: 'The soundest strategy in any campaign is to postpone battle, and the soundest tactics to postpone attack, until the moral dislocation of the enemy renders the delivery of a decisive blow practicable'[10].

In the passage taken from 'Marxism-Leninism as a Philosophy and World Outlook', the emphasised words 'bringing to reason' reveal the coercive intent underlying revolutionary 'political correctness'. The Illuminist Revolution has no hope of ultimate survival, let alone of triumph world-wide, if it cannot first achieve control over our minds, and assure itself that this control will remain permanent: which of course it can never achieve, which is why revolutions go 'round and round in circles' (the revealingly literal demonic meaning of the word 'revolution').

Transferred to the United States because of the prospect of Nazi harassment of its Jewish membership, the Frankfurt School took care to re-invent authoritarianism so that it did not, at least for the time being, resemble its European counterpart. Instead of applying the threat of terror and physical and mental coercion, the Frankfurt School now attempted to enforce conformity of thinking by more gentle means. According to Martin Jay, the most effective of these were to be found in the cultural field. American mass culture thus became one of the central concerns of the Frankfurt School'[11]. In fact, Lenin and Trotsky realised almost from the outset that theatre and film, popular transmission mechanisms of popular culture, had to be brought under reliable revolutionary control, just as Lenin laid down that the press needed to be at the Revolution's service at all times - a lesson that the CIA has learned and has applied with gusto. In the course of a 'spooks' cruise' off the West Coast in 2003, a 'fly on the wall' reporting to the Author revealed that the senior US intelligence officers on board were particularly proud of their achievement in controlling the press. They have also sought to control the Internet, spawning a large number of deliberately contradictory Information Warfare agitprop websites.

An American student of the Frankfurt School wrote in 1976 that'... there was a meeting of American scholars at a conference on religious and racial prejudice in 1944. Over the next five years, a Frankfurt School team under the direction of Max Horkheimer conducted in-depth social and psychological profiles of Americans under the mentioned project entitled 'Studies of Prejudice'. One of the results was a book entitled 'The Authoritarian Personality' by Theodor Adorno, et al, that summarised one of the largest public opinion surveys ever undertaken in the United States. It was published in 1950, and conformed to the original Critical Theory in every respect. As a document that testified to the belief system of the Frankfurt School revolutionaries, it was essentially anti-God, anti-Christian, anti-family, anti-nationalist, anti-patriot, anti-conservative, anti-hereditarian, anti-ethnocentric, anti-masculine, anti-tradition and anti-morality. All of these are elements inherent in Critical Theory'[12], which owes much to the Jewish authors' infestation with the occult mumbo-jumbo of the Kabbalah.

The ostensible objective of the Frankfurt School's activities and research in the United States was much more subtle than had been the case in Europe. Their new, US-oriented purpose was education for tolerance, rather than praxis for revolutionary change. Having studied American liberal thought and attitudes carefully, they cleverly adapted their revolutionary rhetoric to suit and merge with the mainstream of liberal Left thought in America, while maintaining intact their cultural Marxist objectives. Their language now came to match more closely the liberal (i.e., socialist)'... New Deal rather than Marxist or radical language'[13].

But of course toleration was in fact the reverse of what the Frankfurt School was promoting. Yet, as Dr Gerald L. Atkinson has written, 'the non-authoritarian (utopian) personality, insofar as it was defined, was posited as a person with a non-dogmatic tolerance for diversity. This thought is dominant in today's Boomer generation, the New Totalitarians'[14]. And of course by the end of the century, 'diversity' was the watchword of all US and UK 'politically correct' thinking, having invaded the boardrooms of American and British industry, whence it permeated organisations of all kinds from the highest levels of management to the workforce. A certain US transportation utility spent millions of dollars in the late 1990s and into the new century on elaborate programmes to indoctrinate and brainwash the workforce, introducing one the Frankfurt School's gems - 'affirmative action' - everywhere.

In practice what this meant was that whenever a vacancy arose, no matter how qualified a Caucasian candidate for the post might be, preference was always given to the disadvantaged from an ethnic background. As one wag cynically put it, 'if you are an illiterate female Black dwarf who has served nine years in a penitentiary for drug abuse, you may be just the person we're looking for to head up our new public relations department'. Though this 'politically incorrecf example is exaggerated of course, and perhaps offensive to some, such upside-down 'thinking' is much less unusual in American industry and in the employment market generally, than the objective observer may believe. This kind of perversity has brought forth the phenomenon of 'attitude' (or 'attitood'), displayed so often by store assistants, servers etc, whose focus is upon what the customer says and believes (which such people arrogantly assume), than upon providing the requisite and expected standard of service. It is also consistent with Wundtian 'Outcome-Based Education' which postulates that it is not what the pupil learns that matters, it is his or her 'attitude'. Provided the child or teenager has been sufficiently indoctrinated in the norms of 'political correctness' - for example, to equate animals with humans ('animals rights') or to accept without question the wholly inaccurate assertion that the resources of 'the planet' (a 'politically correct', revolutionary environmentalist key-word) are finite, findings such as that the child cannot spell or write a coherent sentence in English and has learned next to nothing (even though what he or she is supposed to have been taught conformed strictly to the anti-nation state 'politically correct' collectivist agenda), are disregarded. What matters is that the child has the right 'politically correcf attitude. This aberrant Illuminati-sponsored abuse of education has spread far beyond the United States to the other main English-speaking countries.

'Cultural Marxism' and the dumbing-down of the higher faculties of man through provocatively sensate or affective miseducation and the blanket infliction of decadent, Satanic popular 'music' upon the population, as preached by the Frankfurt School in the United States, have created a partial mental 'tabula rasa' in the confused minds of glazed-eyed, targeted youth, preparing the way for and spawning knee-jerk responses to 'prejudice', 'bigotry' and 'discrimination'. These platforms preceded the destructive concepts of 'affirmative action', 'diversity' and 'multiculturalism' which are now dominant in American and British society, and within the bureaucratic structures of both countries.

Such mental aberrations are the direct descendants of the Institute's study in the 1940s of 'anti-semitism', by which was meant anti-Communism and 'discrimination' (by which was meant in turn support for capitalism). It was that 'study' which inserted the language of 'civil rights' (quite recently joined by 'civil society'), 'discrimination', 'women's rights', 'children's rights', and other minority 'rights' into mainstream American and, after an interval, into British 'culture'. The situation has long been reached in both countries in which care has to be taken not to 'upset' the 'feelings' of minorities, when in comparable situations the sensibilities of the majority Caucasians would never be a factor.

What is the underlying point of all this garbage, apart from being an exercise in mass mind-manipulation and control? A key point that has gone unnoticed is that, since the Illuminati strive to obliterate 'religion' (by which they mean the Torah and True Christianity: the false religions, they use), the resulting intended mental 'tabula rasa' is replicated by a spiritual vacuum, as well. So the inculcation of what the supreme Illuminist Mikhail Gorbachev proclaims to be 'common human values' is intended to replace the personal spiritual relationship that the True Christian enjoys with God: for, since the Illuminati are not atheists, but understand very well that spiritual forces exist, they seek to ensure that the forces in 'common usage' are those provided by their god Lucifer, rather than by God himself.

Moreover the resulting general acceptance of this tripe (especially among the young, who have been deprived of access to True Christianity, for instance) provides lucrative new opportunities for making money. Thus trashy pop stars and are easily hired to appear in Hyde Park, Central London, in the 'touchy-feely' presence of Tony Blair and this 'licensed' hippie, 'Sir' Bob Geldof, to 'promote' 'aid for Africa' and 'poverty reduction'. The 'Useful Idiots' who contribute to such mass Psy-Ops events by buying tickets or sending relief funds, have no means of verifying what happens to their money after it has been collected. If they knew that such events were usually massive scamming operations, the scales might fall from their bleary, befogged and misguided eyes.

As the American analyst Raymond V. Raehn has explained, 'Critical Theory' as applied mass psychology has led [in particular] to the radical deconstruction of gender in the American culture. Critical Theory required the distinction between masculinity and femininity to disappear. The traditional roles of mothers and fathers were to be dissolved, so that patriarchy would be ended. Children are not to be raised according to their biological differences, but should be free to move in and out of existing genders and gender roles, according to their own 'preferences. This reflects the Frankfurt School rationale for the disintegration of the traditional family'[15] which was 'necessary' in order to create the preconditions for a wholesale attack on private property. Property represents power, and the persistence of power centres other than in the hands of the Illuminist elite, is not to be permitted.

The Frankfurt School's perverted alumni preached that '... even a partial breakdown of parental authority in the family might tend to increase the readiness of a coming generation to accept social change'[16]. 'Change' is of course a primary keyword of the Revolution, and is routinely used without elaboration - that is to say, its terms are never defined. Whenever the word change is used with no indication of what it means (change from what and to what?), its use and purpose is intentionally deceptive and revolutionary. The 'politically correct', indoctrinated revolutionary or unwitting 'Useful Idiot' accepts all 'change' as being by definition desirable, and is trained not to waste time questioning what 'changes' are intended, or where they may lead. As indicated, the Revolution reveals both the weakness of its intellectual underpinnings and its deceptive nature by routinely failing to define its terms, and by shrinking from spelling out what the end-result of 'change' is intended to be. Its actives fear to do so, knowing perfectly that if their true revolutionary intentions were known, the coerced support upon which they rely would all but evaporate overnight.

Finally, we need to consider briefly the relevance of Jewish 'mysticism' as a factor in the subversive formulations of members of the Frankfurt School. Since all criticism of Jews by Gentiles is liable to be labelled anti-semitic, the most appropriate way to address the Judaic characteristics of the Frankfurt School is to rely upon criticism by a Jewish author and expert. The most helpful examination of the Jewishness of the Frankfurt School is perhaps to be found in an essay entitled 'Georg Lukacs and the Frankfurt School: A Case of Secular Messianism', examining the contribution of one of the Institute's leading 'lights', Georg Lukacs, by Joseph B. Maier[17]. In this important essay, the Jewish author acknowledged that German Jewry was preoccupied with the mysticism of the Kabbalah, which of course is derived from pagan Babylon and denies the existence of any absolute truth.

On the contrary, there are, according to one of the Frankfurt School's most important (though not self-admitted) teachers, Walter Benjamin, innumerable variations on any given theme. This utterly Talmudic approach he expressed in the following memorable statement: 'I have never been able to do research and think in a way other than, if I may so put it, in a theoretical sense - namely, in accordance with the Talmudic teaching of the forty-nine levels of meaning in every passage of the Torah'[18].

What this reveals is that, for these people, revolution - going round and round in circles - is Talmudic: for there are no absolutes, only interpretations. That is precisely the trap that the Nazi International's greatest project, the European Union Collective, has set for the ignorant and unwary non-German Goyim who have accepted that strategic deception device for the usurpation of national sovereignty, as genuine. In the EU context, there are no fixed truths: everything is debatable, transitory, arguable, temporary, contradicted, ephemeral, or expendable. That just happens to be the essence of Leninism, which has no values except 'the revolution' itself: that is to say, that 'going round and round in circles' is an end in itself. Lenin, as we have repeatedly seen, was a German-hired subversion operative, so it is no surprise that his mad, Talmudic ideas correspond precisely with those promulgated by the Frankfurt School, which coexisted with Nazism in Germany, and has prepared the ground for the Thousand-Year Reich to be erected on the ruins of the United States. As for why Jews collaborate de facto with Nazis, this mystery is resolved when one understands that Zionism is Jewish Fascism. ■

Chapter 4: The Hex of Himmler: ADDENDUM: The Frankfurt School

1. Paul M. Weyrich, 'Free Congress Commentary', March 2000. Weyrich founded the Heritage Foundation, one of the US institutes linked to the Tavistock Institute and which, as shown in the box On page 252, has alleged Nazi connections.
2. 'The Resister', Volume IV, Number 4, page 55, paper by Dr Gerald L, Atkinson, Cdr, US Navy (Retd). Dr Atkinson is author of 'The New Totalitarians: Bosnia as a Mirror of America's Future', and 'From Trust to Terror: How Radical Feminism is Destroying the US Navy'. The British Navy is afflicted by the same curse of 'politically correct' asinine stupidity.
3. Weyrich, op. cit.
4. At the Annual Meetings of the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank held in Prague in September 2000, the Author attended a seminar at which the speaker was Mary Robinson, an apparently high-level indoctrinated globalist who is intolerant of any point of view other than her own. When the Author raised several pertinent questions critical of her assertions, she failed to answer the questions, but accused the Author of 'type-casting' and 'finger-pointing'.
5. Weyrich, op. cit.
6. Weyrich, op. cit.
7. Weyrich, op. cit.
8. 'Osnovy Marksisma-Leninisma' [The Foundations of Marxism-Leninism'] in a collectively prepared essay entitled 'Marxism-Leninism as a Philosophy and World Outlook', Moscow, 1956.
9. Private paper by Robert D. Hickson, August 1996: The Sophistic Phenomenon and Strategic Psycho-Cultural Revolution: 'Narco-Democracies', Illusionary Liberation, and Miseducation unto the Corrosion of Sloth and Hopelessness', page 11.
10. Cited by Hickson, op. cit., page 12.
11. Martin Jay, 'The Dialectical Imagination: A History of the Frankfurt School and the Institute of Social Research', University of California Press, 1973.
12. Raymond V. Raehn, 'Critical Theory: A Special Research Report', unpublished, 1 April 1996; cited by Dr Gerald L Atkinson in The Resister', Volume IV, Number 4. The 'Critical Theory' of the Frankfurt School is quintessentially and tire-somely Talmudic and Leninist: everything is transitional: visible reality is uni-dimensional, reality is philosophy.
13. Jay, op. cit, page 227.
14. Cultural Suicide, Dr Gerald L. Atkinson, 'The Resister', Volume IV, Number 4, page 55.
15. Raehn, op. cit.
16. Jay, page 135.
17. 'Georg Lukacs and the Frankfurt School: A Case of Secular Messianism', Joseph B. Maier, private paper.
18. Walter Benjamin, 'Briefe', Volume 2, Frankfurt-am-Main, Suhrkamp, 1996, page 678.

CHAPTER FIVE

THE HOUSE OF LUCIFER

THE 'DIFFERENCE' BETWEEN SATANISM AND LUCIFERIANISM

Hitherto we have all but employed the terms the Devil, Satan and Lucifer interchangeably, which is perfectly valid because this infernal entity is indeed one and the same. However in the minds of the deranged 'Useful Idiots' who have fallen for this idolatry and have made a pact with him, or who seek, whether knowingly or not, to do so, there is an important distinction. Satanists, mentally deranged by the use and abuse of drugs, accuse the Lord God (of Christians) of having betrayed humanity. They are not atheists, but openly acknowledge and recognise that their god, Satan, occupies a position super-naturally which, equipped with the 'magickal' powers that they claim to be able to mobilise in response to what they know about the 'Ancient Mysteries', they conspire to evoke - often raising demonic spirits which turn the tables and possess them instead.

By contrast the Luciferians, initiates of kindred occult rites and of course labouring under strange delusions - because, as discussed earlier, the Being they worship is the king and author of lies and murder - deliberately place Lucifer at the top of their agenda, go about their evil business driven by his 'seething powers', and glorify him as the principle of all that is 'good'. In other words, being idiots and deluded idolaters, they have fallen for Satan's 'reversal' lie - that good is evil, and evil is good, as Satan, masquerading as the serpent, beguiled Eve in the Garden of Eden. To Luciferians, he is the equal of Our Lord (Adonay), whom they describe as the principle of evil - because He stands in the way of their motto (as expressed by the Satanic Illuminati sect called Ordo Templi Orientis): 'Do as thou wilt'. You want that woman? Take her. You want casual sex? Grab it. You covet that man's assets? Raid them. Accuse him unjustly; deploy false witness against him. Have him flung into jail. You want Iraq's oil? Seize it.

Luciferians have 'risen' (i.e. descended) via initiation to the level at which they have exchanged normal human sensibilities, sensitivity and emotion, for a 'higher (= lower) calling', in which they take great pride, devoid of all normal human emotion (which is actually spiritual death). The 'rising' Mason who is 'progressing upwards' (i.e., descending) towards the state of 'perfect understanding' as he is initiated serially into ever more demonic grossness and gobbldegook, acquires tell-tale characteristics which can be recognised as distinct from those of normal human beings. George Bush Sr., for instance, displays a patrician aloofness and deadness which is typical of such deluded personalities. One of the geomasons' most celebrated authors, Manly P. Hall, describes precisely, in ''The Lost Keys of Freemasonry' [1923][1], what the 'requirements' of high Masonry are supposed to be. It should be noted that each sentence in what follows needs to be read as a whole: if parts of a sentence are extracted out of context, the incorrect impression is given. For instance, in the first paragraph, 'simplicity with its accompanying power' follows 'kindness in the face of unkindness'. Simplicity, in the Christian and True Judaic perception is not accompanied by power, but is rather a prerequisite for divine acceptance by itself. In Hall's description of the twisted and deformed 'mature' Masonic personality that emerges from the first three (deliberately deceptive) Degrees (the Blue Degrees), all emotions are to be suppressed and overlaid with a cold air of innate superiority. The 'calmness' of the 'higher' Mason is derived from the fact that his soul is dead and his heart is stone cold. Since this is the condition into which the initiate is intended to emerge from the first three (Blue) Degrees only, just imagine what a frozen heart initiates of the 'higher' (= lower) Degrees are ordained to acquire. This illuminates the late Fr. Malachi Martin's statement that Luciferians and Satanists 'have all passed through in a sense and that involves three things: the infliction of pain without flinching, the infliction of death without flinching, and the use of fire'. In the following excerpts from Manly P. Hall's treatise, lies and reprobate occult advice are represented as desirable:

'The following requirements are necessary before the student can spiritually say that he is a member of the Ancient and Accepted Rite of the Fellow Craft:

1. The mastery of emotional outbreaks of all kinds, poise under trying conditions, kindness in the face of unkindness, and simplicity with its accompanying power. These points show that the seeker is worthy of being taught by a Fellow [witch]Craftsman.

2. The mastery of the animal energies, the curbing of passion and desire, and the control of the lower nature[2] mark the faithful attempts on the part of the student to be worthy of the Fellow Craft. [This deceitfully suggests that candidates are supposed to lead upright and chaste lives as their superiors do: they don't, and neither do their superiors, given the sexual orientation of Masonic ritual and symbolism. But pagan priesthoods purported to be celibate, in order to falsely enhance their 'standing' among the credulous populace - a base negation of human nature that has been disastrously perpetuated by the Roman Catholic Church].

3. The understanding and mastery of the creative forces[3] [i.e. connecting with demonic forces: see below], the consecration of them to the unfolding of the spiritual nature, and a proper understanding of their physical application, are necessary steps at this stage of the student's growth. [This is all about 'taming' and 'connecting with' or invoking the 'seething powers of Lucifer': again, see below].

4. The transmutation of personal affection into impersonal compassion shows that the Fellow Craftsman truly understands his duties and is living in a manner worthy of his order. Personalities cannot bind the true Second Degree member, for having raised one point of the compasses he now realises that all personal manifestations are governed by impersonal principles.

5. At this point the candidate consecrates the five senses to the study of human problems [i.e. not the things of the Lord: this is 'humanism', plus a slow-motion advancement towards demonic infestation - Ed.] with the unfolding of sense centers as the motive; for he realises that the five senses are keys, the proper application of which will give him material for spiritual transmutation if he will apply them to the common divisor of analogy... The Entered Apprentice [First Blue Degree] may be termed a materialistic Degree. The Fellow Craft [Second Blue Degree] is religious and mystical [sic], while the Master Mason [Third Blue Degree] is occult or philosophical [sic]. Each of these is a Degree in the unfoldment of a connected life and intelligence, revealing in ever fuller expression the gradual liberation of the Master from the triangular cell of threefold negation which marks the early stage of individualization'[4].

THE BLUE DEGREES ARE THREE SIDES OF AN OCCULT TRIANGLE

So, the first three (lowest) Degrees [see Figure 44 on page 263], the so-called Blue Degrees - hence the widespread application of blue as a symbol of Masonic affiliation, for instance as the colour of the United Nations, the background to the esoteric European Union flag, or as the colour employed by IBM, or 'Big Blue' - are three sides of a triangle, which of course is a primary occult symbol of the Kabbalah. In Manly P. Hall's book, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', on the page facing the preceding paragraph, is an illustration of the initiate standing atop the truncated pyramid with his arms outstretched and in his left hand a Tau Cross (a cross with a circle above the cross-beam), which is the Crux Ansata, representing the union of male and female = fecundity [see Figure 45 on page 265]. The caption beneath that picture reads, in the original: 'The Master Mason, having completed his labors [in the Blue Degrees - Ed] becomes a worker on a higher plane than the one in which the ordinary builder is permitted to work'. So the labourers in the 'Blue' Degrees - 'the blue canopy of the Masonic Lodge', as Hall describes them on page 61 of his book - are 'ordinary workers' who, as we have seen, are deceived as to the real nature and purpose of Masonry: they represent the vast bulk of the pyramid, from the base up to where it is truncated - as shown on the US $1.0 dollar note, emblem of the Illuminati that Americans use for small purchases without the majority of them having the slightest clue that the note they proffer to the sales person carries images symbolic of this Satanic nexus of cults called Freemasonry [Figure 53, page 334]. And only a select few Americans seem able to grasp that the single eye on the dollar bill, which is replicated from the Great Seal of the United States, is in fact the evil 'All-Seeing Eye' eye of Lucifer [Figure 54, page 335: see Figure 47 on page 281 for the occult Masonic images on both sides of the Great seal of the United States]. When ordinary uncompromised Americans willingly place their opened right hand across the left breast to hear or to sing the National Anthem, they are unwittingly performing the Sign of Fellow Craft (viz., the Second Blue Degree) without due guard [see Addendum 10, Figure G, page 737].

Once he is a Master Mason, a candidate is eligible, if selected, to move on up (i.e., down, of course) the much more rarefied ladder of occultic initiations shown in Figure 44 on page 263, which entice the adept towards the worship of Lucifer and to learn some elements of the sorcery and magick of the 'Ancient Mysteries' of Egypt and Babylon, including instructions on how to summon up demons and the Devil himself (in the Rosicrucian tradition). Even so, all those who embark upon these 'higher' initiation stages, are routinely tricked by their superiors, since all Works of Darkness deceive those who indulge in them.

Already, the naive 'Useful Idiots' who have embarked upon the so-called 'Blue Degrees' are being purposefully deceived by their peers; for Masonry is a Cult of Darkness that deceives its fellow Masons about the true meaning of its mad symbols and esoteric rituals. That brazen lying is of the essence, was made crystal clear by the Patriarch of modern American and 'world' Scottish Rite and Palladian Freemasonry, the sorcerer and necromancer, Albert Pike, when he specifically explained in his tome 'Morals and Dogma' that...

The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the Initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them; but it is intended that he shall imagine [that] he understands them. Their true explication is reserved for the Adepts, the Princes of Masonry.... It is well enough for the mass of those called

Masons, to imagine that all is contained in the Blue Degrees; and whoso attempts to undeceive them will labor in vain, and without any true reward violate his obligations as an Adept. Masonry is the veritable Sphinx...'[5].

The offensive and sterile culture of lies and deception, of the double-cross and of 'bait and switch', which is the norm in US and other intelligence circles, is derived explicitly from this institutionalised geomasonic tradition of deception. Hobbled by compartmentalisation, US intelligence operatives may be proficient and effective in whatever vineyard of sour grapes they live and have their deluded being, but they have no idea at any given moment who is deceiving them among the intelligence community and sub-community to which they belong - let alone who of their foreign contacts is liable to scam and double-cross them. These people forfeit true friendships and normal human relationships for the temporary buzz and lifelong uncertainty characteristic of the castle of lies and dirty tricks in which they live; and they know that if they 'mess up', they are very likely to be set up, abandoned, or otherwise abused by the ruthless, cold-hearted machine to which they belong. When they target people unconnected with intelligence, they usually blow their cover - because having emerged from the darkness, they have no idea how to function in broad daylight. This hellish environment reflects the fact that all intelligence organisations are essentially esoteric secret societies, impregnated with Masonry and therefore Illuminism and, in the case of the CIA and certain other leading intelligence networks, fatally compromised by their compulsive meddling with the occult.

Notwithstanding that all Freemasons are deceived by their peers, 'Blue Masonry' Degrees purport to inculcate the Lesser Mysteries of the Ancients, whereby only the exoteric doctrines were revealed. All subsequent Degrees, which cannot be accessed unless one has passed through the Blue Degrees, and is invited to 'go on higher', inculcate the supposed 'Greater Ancient Mysteries', incorporating Babylonian-Talmudic Kabbalism with the 'Egyptian Mysteries'. On initiation, Masons receive an alias by which name they are henceforth known in the Lodge, as is the case with The Order of Skull and Bones. All Masonry contradicts the Word of Jesus Christ by substituting 'help a brother Mason' for the Christian teaching that one should love one's neighbour as oneself, which means helping everyone as necessary, without distinction. The Brotherhood is not the Brotherhood of Man (the whole of Mankind) but of Men (the Illuminati).

MASONIC 'LIFE' 'ABOVE' THE BLUE DEGREES

The occult initiation stages that may follow passage through the three lowest Degrees of both the Scottish and York Rites of 'Anglo-Saxon' Freemasonry, are all metaphorically crammed within the approach to the 'capstone', i.e., they form the building blocks of the final courses of the Great Pyramid (of Egypt, the Biblical metaphor for the Darkness and the 'Mysteries' of which, as Manly P. Hall claims on pages 102-103 of 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry'[6], are 'progenitors of modern Freemasonry'). Certain of the 'highest' Illuminati celebrated the millennium at an occult rite at the Great Pyramid -their number reportedly including the alleged controlling Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst agents George Bush (Busche) Sr. and Dr Henry Kissinger. Senior German operatives are conspicuous within the higher ranks, where German is routinely spoken.

By the time that Lady Queenborough (Edith Starr Miller), the greatest lay investigator of Freemasonry, was completing her research in the early 1930s, it had become apparent that for any career in the financial sector, membership of a Lodge was an absolute prerequisite[7]. This state of affairs has long since been replicated in the United

EMBLEMATIC STRUCTURE OF FREEMASONRY

RED CROSS CONSTANTINE
ACTIVE 33°
ROYAL ORDER SCOTLAND
COUNCIL S J 19° TO 30°
SUBLIME PRINCE OF THE ROYAL SECRET
S J Consistory 31–32
YORK RITE
SCOTTISH RITE
Honorary 33°
A.A.O.W.M.S. shrine
Knight Commander of the Court of Honour
CONFERRED BY COMMANDERY
CONFERRED BY COUNCIL
CONFERRED BY CHAPTER
ORDER OF KNIGHTS TEMPLAR COMMANDERY
ORDER OF KNIGHTS OF MALTA
ORDER OF THE RED CROSS
SUPER EXCELLENT MASTER COUNCIL
SELECT MASTER
ROYAL MASTER
ROYAL ARCH MASON CHAPTER
MOST EXCELLENT MASTER
PAST MASTER (VIRTUAL)
MARK MASTER
32
31 Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander
30 Knight of Kadosh
29 Knight of St. Andrew
28 Knight of the Sun
27 Knight commander of the Temple
26 Prince of Mercy
25 Knight of the Brazen Serpent
24 Prince of the Tabernacle
23 Chief of the Tabernacle
22 Knight of the Royal Axe
21 Noachite or Prussian Knight
20 Master Ad Vitam
19 Grand Pontiff
18 Knight of the Rose Croix
17 Knight of the East & West
16 Prince of Jerusalem
15 Knight of the East or Sword
14 Grand Elect Mason
13 Master of the Ninth Arch
12 Grand Master Architect
11 Sublime Master Elected
10 Master Elect of Fifteen
9 Master Elect of Nine
8 Intendant of the Building
7 Provost & Judge
6 Intimate Secretary
5 Perfect Master
4 Secret Master
CONSISTORY OF PRINCES OF THE ROYAL SECRET
19° TO 32° CHIVALRIC
Chapter 17° - 18° Religious
Council 15° -16° Historic
LODGE OF PERFECTION
4° TO 14° INEFFABLE DEGREES
4° to 14°
Chapter S A 15° to18°
EASTERN STAR
G
BLUE LODGE
MASTER MASON
3
FELLOW CRAFT
2
ENTERED APPRENTICE
1

Figure 44: A diagram derived from official speculative geomasonic sources in which the various symbols applicable to each Degree of the Scottish and York Rites are shown. Explaining all the occult symbolism resident in the emblems of each of the degrees, plus others, would require a separate volume. Note the existence of two categories of 33rd Degree, conferable upon both York and Scottish Rite adherents - the Honorary 33rd Degree, and the Active 33rd Degree. Certain candidates are selected by the Luciferian hierarchy for Honorary 33rd Degree status, such as the son of the late Shah of Persia (Pahlavi). Note that the emblem of the Eastern Star [bottom, right is the INVERTED PENTAGRAM, the sign of evil and of the Evil One, employed for invoking evil spirits. According to the 'Dictionary of Mysticism' [Frank Gaynor, New York, Philopsophical library, 1953, page 136], the pentagram 'is considered by occultists to be the most potent means of conjuring spirits: when the single point points down and a pair of points are on top, it is a sign of evil (Satan) and is used to conjure powers of evil'. Also the familiar sun with rays, arch, compass, square and G (for Generation and Gnosticism, not for God), are standard geomasonic occult symbols.

Kingdom which had an estimated 600,000 Masons in 1990 - to the extent that, in addition to presupposing progress in the City of London, a Masonic background is more or less essential in the legal profession, in the police and accountancy, among engineers, draughtsmen, engineering salesmen and corporate buyers (notably), among company directors, senior executives and contractors, and in the construction sector (architects, surveyors, petty officials, estate agents, builders, and the building trades), and wherever business and favours are accessible through contacts and networking. It is rife, believe it or not, in the reprobate Church of England and other British churches, notably the Church of Scotland and the Presbyterian Church of Wales - which is of course a contradiction in terms, and is de rigeur in local government (which is extremely corrupt in Britain) and to a considerable extent in Whitehall. Masonic initiation is also secretly prevalent, as in the United States, throughout the intelligence community and politics, although UK Members of Parliament are forbidden by their House rules to shake hands with other Freemasons within the precincts of the Palace of Westminster. The rationale for this is likely to be an earlier attempt to frustrate Masonic practice, in which brother Masons go to their brother Masons' aid to the exclusion of other considerations.

However a former MP has told the Author personally that many of his colleagues would disappear in the evenings for no known reason, gathering for private meetings in the precincts of the House, without ever inviting someone known not to be a Mason into their gatherings, or explaining the reason for their frequent absences. Masonry of course wastes a colossal amount of a person's lifetime, so Masonic activity must likewise wreak havoc in a politician's life, given that all politicians are deliberately worked to the bone (so that they have as little time to think and take in the 'larger picture', as can be arranged)[8]. Particularly insidious is the Speculative Society of Edinburgh, to which politicians, judges, police and other members of the control system belong. Freemasons deny that this clearly Masonic secret society has anything to do with Masonry: but as lies are the norm in this milieu, this is meaningless.

Indicative of the corrupting influence of Masonry among British country solicitors is the following description by the late Stephen Knight, author of The Brotherhood, who, like Mozart, died suddenly and mysteriously (shortly after his book appeared in 1984): 'The Law Society is one of the most Masonic institutions in the world.... A great many of the sixty-odd members of the Law Society Council as well as a high proportion of the Society's staff and committees: 90% of all male staff above the age of thirty are Freemasons. ... I have thousands of papers on one case... so well documented that it can be followed in minute detail. It involves one of the many Masonic members of the Law Society Council, who had personally committed an act of gross negligence which caused one of his clients to lose a £100,000 inheritance. Deliberate action on the part of several other firms of Masonic solicitors - some of the biggest names in the legal profession - acting in collusion with the original solicitor and with each other to cover up the negligence, brought the client to the edge of financial ruin. Having mortgaged his home, spent £15,000 in legal fees to lawyers who deliberately ignored his instructions, wasted valuable time and generated hundreds and hundreds of expensive, unnecessary documents, he was forced to apply to the Law Society, of which his chief opponent was an influential member, for legal aid. Finally, in 1982, after fighting Masonic manipulation of the legal system for more than a year, and only after a direct appeal to a senior and non-masonic official in the Department of Health and Social Security, which works in tandem with the Law Society on legal aid applications, he was granted a legal aid certificate - but on extremely onerous conditions'[9].

Figure 45: The Masonic candidate standing on top of the symbolic incomplete pyramid, which Albert Pike described, with no explanation and without elaboration, as 'the universal symbol of immortality' ['Morals and Dogma', page 633]. This statement appears in Pike's explanation of the occult mathematical religion of Pythagoras, or 'arithmomancy'. It is quite extraordinary that the paragraph in question contains a lie, or a denial of the geometry of the pyramid. Specifically, Albert Pike, who has just textually revered the Triangle with its three sides, now writes: 'For if the Triangle, figured by the number 3, forms the triangular base of the pyramid, it is unity which forms its point or summit'. But the base of a pyramid is not triangular, it is square! So all Pike's elaborate explanations of the hidden arithmomancy 'meanings' of triangles and pyramids, many of which contain unexplained dogmatic statements, are unreliable to the point of being eligible for ridicule. In this weird illustration from Manly P. Hall's 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', the candidate has reached the stage of near-immortality by ascending to the platform on top of the pyramid, brandishing a Tau cross, the symbol of the pagan slain-and-risen god, Tammuz, or 'crux Tau', 'crux ansata' and 'crux Hermis', the 'phallus' emblem of Generative Power and of 'eternal transmigrating life'. Immortality would be 'complete' if the four sides of the pyramid were actually to reach a single point: but the goal of perpetuating life, sought by Rosicrucian magick, has always eluded all these demented members of the broad 'Order of the Quest'.

The Author has personally experienced a disgraceful instance of apparent Masonic collusion between country solicitors in connection with a family matter, which was only resolved when he took the case to one of the very largest solicitors in London, who, at enormous cost, struck fear into the souls of these reprobate Masonic firms because of the sheer prestige of its name. As a result of the newly appointed London solicitor's intervention, all the country firms' earlier endless obstructive tactics suddenly ceased.

As for the UK intelligence services, absurd denials by British intelligence officers in the 1980s that Masonry exists or is rife inside the UK intelligence community, as is the case in the United States, reported in Stephen Knight's The Brotherhood, are belied not least by the occult-masonic MI5 symbol shown in Figure 1 on page 3. In the early 1980s, British intelligence tried to disguise the well-known Masonic influence with which it had always been plagued, given intelligence research that had revealed the likelihood of KGB penetration of the services through Masonic membership, the KGB and DVD having been well aware that the largest secret organisation in Britain has always been Freemasonry.

LURE OF MASTERY OF THE 'SEETHING ENERGIES OF LUCIFER'

It has been noted that Luciferians (and would-be Luciferian Masons as they 'rise') are, or run the risk of being progressively 'endowed' with, powers to manipulate (as these 'Useful Idiots' come to believe) the 'seething energies of Lucifer'. The source of this knowledge is Manly P. Hall himself, who, routinely uses the name 'God' when in fact he is secretly referring to Lucifer, and who writes as follows in 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry' [lies shown in italics]: 'Man does not listen to that little voice which speaks to him in ever loving ever sorrowful tones. This voice speaks of the peace accompanying the constructive application of energy which he must chain if he would master the powers of creation'[10].

Here is Satan calling the candidate/initiate, telling him that he can become like a god, which is what is meant by 'master[ing] the powers of creation'. But it gets worse: 'The lost key... is the mastery of emotion, which places the energy of the universe at their disposal. Man can only expect to be entrusted with great power by proving his ability to use it constructively and selflessly. When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mastery of his Craft. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply energy. Incessant vigilance over thought, action and desire is indispensable to those who wish to make progress in the unfolding of their own being.... the firm, kind hand of spirit must curb the flaming powers of emotion with an iron grip'[11].

Satan, in the guise of Masonry, is spinning lies to the initiate, first of all, along the lines (in so far as any sense at all can be derived, for instance, from Manly P. Hall's extremely confused esoteric writings) that Freemasonry is the custodian of the 'Ancient Mysteries' which only the privileged few have ever accessed because only the super-initiated have been equipped down the centuries for reaching the level of 'perfection' needed to become imbued with knowledge of them; and that the natural emotions, with which we were all endowed by the Lord, as part of our equipment for enjoyment of the life we have been given, are to be suppressed. Anyone believing such garbage needs a head examination; but several million dupes worldwide, who have no idea that they are being deceived, walk headlong into this complex Satanic trap, and encumber their lives as they grope vainly in the Darkness for 'enlightenment'.

Is it because they have been indoctrinated into suppressing and controlling normal emotions that those mad, semi-possessed high-level Luciferians attend, for instance, the (German) Illuminati's Bohemian Grove [see box, page 161], where, having suppressed their emotions in accordance with their weird geomasonic training all year round, they drink themselves insensate and lie around the estate drunk and sick as dogs, consume illicit drugs, and indulge in Satanic, reprobate and cruel, bestial sexual practices - inflicting pain without flinching, inflicting death without flinching, and using fire to propitiate their god Lucifer? Is this the norm, because they have been brainwashed into suppressing their natural emotions? What does this mean? That a Luciferian Mason no longer loves a woman for her beauty, her grace, her mind, her personality, her spiritual gifts, the incredible unity of her person, the glory of her presence, but uses her for his own filthy self-gratification, and not her alone, but hundreds of others, too? And such behaviour has proliferated far beyond the self-interested Brotherhood - in conformity with the Illuminati's programme for young people from Britain, who are debauched by the foul pop culture inflicted on the country by these Luciferians, and who flock today to the innumerable Bohemian Groves that have sprung up to entice them into Satanic activity, and to consume the drugs produced and distributed by intelligence 'services'.

According to the late Manly P. Hall's sterile and cynically confused assessment and 'promise', the suppression of emotions is the key to placing oneself in a position where one will (according to the Masonic blueprint) be 'entrusted with great power'. Having mastered the emotions, the foolish dupe must then learn 'the proper application of the dynamo of living power' - namely, 'the seething energies of Lucifer', which will become his to use and manipulate. And here is the most egregious lie of all: for, far from ultimately procuring the power to manipulate and control 'the seething powers of Lucifer', the adept will be fortunate if he manages to avoid those demonic powers taking hold of him, to some degree. The Satanic deception is embedded in the enticing lie that the candidate will, through initiation, gain the power to control, manipulate, and use to his own advantage, these demonic powers - whereas the outcome will be that the powers assume control of him, as Satan always intends. In such circumstances, he will discover, far too late, that he cannot shake them off without a supreme exercise of his own will, and certainly assistance from a True Christian outside the Lodge. And there is no chance of relief without total repentance on the part of the possessed: he has to want to be rescued, and he has to have faith that the Lord Jesus Christ - the only name to which Evil Spirit ever responds and pays respect - can rescue him and restore him to normal life.

The Masonic (Satanic) lie that Man is capable, exclusively through Masonic initiation, of mastering the 'seething energies' of Lucifer, is derived from the heresy of 'Deism', which merges the existence of God with the false, manmade concept of a mechanistic world. 'Deism' can be encapsulated in the phrase 'God sleeps', and its esoteric 'magick' symbol is a circle with a diagonal line through it, which is widely used in public places and for modern road signs. This doctrine states that 'God, the Supreme Architect of the Universe, created all things, but then isolated himself from the entire creation and let it operate on its own. He fell asleep and hasn't been on top of the situation. This is the very essence of the teachings of Freemasonry'[12].

By means of this deception, celebrating the building of a stone temple and thus rejecting the Lord's statement that the human person is the temple of the Holy Spirit, preserves the idea that 'God' created the world, while inventing a mechanistic world within which the Illuminati/Masonic 'Chosen' assert that they are privileged to reorder Man's affairs. This device enables them to face both ways - to be double-minded.

IDENTITY OF THE EVIL ONE REVEALED AT FELLOW CRAFT STAGE

Even though Manly P. Hall is actually still talking here about what must happen to the initiate of the second lowest Degree (Blue Degree), Fellow Craft, he has, as has been seen, already introduced the name of Lucifer. So in fact it is at this lowly level, contrary to the received view, that initiates are introduced to Lucifer, or more specifically to the concept of his 'seething energies' (because in the ceremonies, there is no mention of Lucifer until a much higher level is reached). Therefore, in this sense, fashionable references to the initiation of the candidate into de facto Luciferianism occurring at 'capstone levels' are inaccurate. It is untrue to suggest that the Blue Degrees are basically innocuous. On the contrary, even at the Entered Apprentice level, the candidate is told that his tongue will be torn from his mouth, a revoltingly barbaric, Satanic proposition, if he divulges any of the Lodge's secrets. Nevertheless, as the shape of the pyramid below the truncated shelf shows, the vast majority of Masons belong to the three lower Degrees; and as members of Lodges at those levels, while they may delude themselves that Masonry is all about doing good works ('salvation by works') and having pleasant dinners with plenty of wine flowing, and cigars afterwards - with the 'workings' (ritual ceremonies) just a quaint hangover from some mystical past - in reality their minds are already being well and truly infected with elements of Satanism, their hearts hardened (because they must suppress their emotions) and their souls polluted with the smoke of the Evil One. Their minds are progressively filled with esoteric nonsense and make-believe, as can be imagined by reviewing the following passage from Manly P. Hall's invented description of the 'seething energies' in question. The reader of this passage (and of Manly P. Hall's book) has every right to conclude that the study and practice of Masonry, as a 33rd Degree initiate, had sent the late pagan Mr Hall completely mad:

'It is strange how divine powers may become perverted until each expression and urge becomes a ruffian and a murderer. The divine compassion of the gods manifests in this world of form very differently than in the realms of light. Divine compassion is energised by the same influxes as mortal passions and the lusts of earth. The spiritual rays of Cosmos - the Fire Princes of the Dawn - which seethe and surge through the unregenerate man, are the impulses which he perverts to murder and hate. The ceaseless power of Chaos, the seething spirals of perpetual motion, whose majestic cadences are the music of the spheres, are energized by the same great power that man uses to destroy the highest and the best. The same mystic power that keeps the planets in their orbits around the solar body, the same energy that keeps each electron spinning and whirling, the same energy that is building the Temple of God, is now a merciless slave-driver which, unmastered and uncurbed, strikes the Compassionate One and sends him reeling backward into the darkness of his prison'. After this outburst, the maddened Mr Hall starts waffling about 'the Fellow Craft of the Cosmic Lodge' which exists 'to teach mankind the lessons of self-mastery'[13].

The Author will waste no time seeking to decipher this convoluted gobbldegook, which lacks any scientific basis and represents the demented meanderings of a 'high' Mason who is also the author of 'An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Kabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy: Being an Interpretation of the Secret Teachings concealed within the Rituals, Allegories and Mysteries of All Ages', published in 1928 (the same year as the Bolsheviks generated their 'Blueprint for World Revolution' at the 1928 Comintern Conference), in San Francisco, by H. S. Crocker Company Incorporated, of which only 100 copies were initially printed. This Rosicrucian document, which contains instruc-

Figure 46: Frontispiece from the original libretto of The Magic Flute, printed by Mozart's Lodge 'Brother', Ignaz Alberti, in Vienna, 1791. The frontispiece, which was suppressed in later editions, is rich in Masonic symbols. The globalist Albert Einstein wrote, in his classic study 'Mozart, His Character, His Work' [Cassell and Company Limited, London, 1946-1956] that Mozart and his librettist for Die Zauberflote, Shikaneder, 'were Freemasons: Mozart an enthusiastic one, and Shikaneder surely a crafty and active one. The latter used the symbols of Freemasonry quite openly in the libretto. The first edition of the libretto [of The Magic Flute] contained something rare in such books, two copperplate engravings, one showing Shikaneder-Papageno in his costume of feathers, but the other showing the portal to the 'inner rooms', the Great Pyramid with hieroglyphics, and a series of emblems: five-pointed star, square and trowel, hour-glass and overthrown pillars and plinths. Everyone understood this. Mozart took care, by means of rhythm, melody and orchestral colour, to make the significance of the opera, an open secret, still clearer. He began and ended the work in E-flat major, the Masonic key. The slow introduction to the Overture begins with the three chords, symbolising the candidate knocking three times on the portal; and then in the climactic scene, Tamino knocks on three different doors. A thrice-played chord follows Sarastro's opening of the ceremonies in the temple. Woodwinds - the typical instruments of the Viennese Lodges - play a prominent part'. Yet nine weeks after the first performance of Die Zauberflote, Mozart died a truly wretched and painful death - as though, having in error celebrated and arguably mocked the 'magick' of the occult, he was duly rewarded with its sole product (death). The eternal mystery is how, given such secular and occultic preoccupations, Mozart composed some of the most sublime religious music ever written. It was as though his true 'divinely' inspired spirit kept seeking release from the worldly oppression of his financially supportive Masonic peers. There are also serious prophesied repercussions for people of Jewish extraction who dabble in such matters.

tions on how to raise the Devil himself, discusses every conceivable dimension of the 'Ancient Mysteries', including activities that are labelled by Manly P. Hall himself as 'Ceremonial Magic and Sorcery'.

This subversive Rosicrucian publication contains the essence of the Zeitgeist of the Illuminati, as conveyed originally from mediaeval Germany to England and Scotland, via France, and then 'back' to Germany. In 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', the late Mr Hall betrayed signs of having indeed been clean deprived of his senses by such intermeddling and investigations. Rosicrucianism is appended to the Scottish Rite like a limpet, since the assemblers of ritual, sorcery and magick for Freemasonry, led by Albert Pike, sought to include all manifestations of such 'ancient devilry', without exception, in their stinking geomasonic cauldron - so that Freemasonry would become the globally acknowledged custodian of the 'Ancient Mysteries' for all eternity.

Huge swathes of Masons' private time are taken up with the rituals, meetings, dinners, and learning the verbal tripe that must be recited at 'workings' - time during which they desert their families; at the same time, considerable financial payments to the Lodge are demanded, which benefit not so much the Lodge itself, but the higher echelons of the Masonic pyramid, where luxurious living is the norm.

ACKNOWLEDGING THE TRUTH, AND THE NEED TO 'COME OUT'

'Blue Degree' Masons are already, from the outset of their ill-advised collaboration, sitting in the back pews of the House of Lucifer, even though few of them may realise this. Those who manage to wake up before being sucked further into this gradualist diversionary trap for the unwary, should resolve to make the necessary sacrifice and to take decisive early action on the basis of the Apostle Paul's injunction in his Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 6, verse 17: 'Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you'. But He won't receive the Mason while he is touching this unclean thing: no chance.

And in Revelation, Chapter 18, verse 4: 'And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, 'Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues'. While the Mason is sitting in the House of Lucifer he is, by definition, susceptible to infections of which he may have no immediate knowledge; and when, if ever, he realises what these are, it may be too late for salvation (although this is never the case, as the Lord's arm is 'stretched out still: 'For all this' [all the serial sins of the children of Israel] 'his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still' [Isaiah, Chapter 5, verse 25]. By which is meant that although the Lord's anger at the person he loves having followed the wrong path, has not been assuaged, yet he is ready with his hand to pull the misguided, opinionated fool away from the course he has embarked upon, and to encourage him to take the right road - towards true, as opposed to fake, salvation, and protection from possession by the 'seething energies' of Lucifer.

Since we have quoted Isaiah, the greatest of the prophets (a word which can mean 'he who shows the right way'), let us also rejoice in his condemnation of these false prophets of Masonry, who preach lies instead of truth, and call them the truth:

'Woe unto them that call evil good and good evil, that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter. Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight... Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!' [Isaiah, Chapter 5, verses 20-21 and 23].

'For', writes Paul in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians Chapter 11, verses 13-15, 'such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light' [see Chapter 6]. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works'.

In other words, Masonry, like other false religions, deceitfully represents that it knows the true source of light, and will lead the candidate towards it. This is a false prospectus which anyone who is not sitting on his or her brains should be able to see immediately: for all groups and societies pledged to secrecy and demanding initiation before 'progress' are false, deceitful, oppressive and abominable both by definition and 'in the sight of the Lord'.

No initiation and no secrecy is demanded of those who seek the Lord Jesus Christ. He says: 'Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me' [Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 20]. And this offer is open even to some abominable people whose evil Works of Darkness are discussed in this book if they repent: 'Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord; though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool' [Isaiah, Chapter 1,18].

'But the fearful [of taking the plunge away from evil - Ed.], and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burnetii with fire and brimstone'. [Revelation, Chapter 21, verse 8].

CONFUSION AMONG 'CHRISTIANS', AND THE JEWISH RESPONSE

Since Satan is the author of all lies and confusion, and Lucifer is revealed as the false god that Freemasons hasten to worship (via his guises as the Great Architect of the Universe who went to sleep after his creation, and JAHBULON), it follows that nothing any Masonic authority has written in the past, and nothing that such people will write about Freemasonry in the future, can be relied upon. We have already seen that Manly P. Hall was apt to write rubbish; and there are passages in the works of Albert Pike which read as though the author was stoned on drugs, which may indeed have been the case. On occasion, he all but evokes Lucifer in his writings, as in the notoriously revealing passage from his 'Morals and Dogma' tome, which is the Bible of American Scottish Rite Freemasonry:

'Lucifer', he gushes, almost in his familiar sorcerer's invocation mode, 'the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light, and with its splendors intolerable blinds feeble, sensual, or selfish Souls? Doubt it not!'[14].

With Lucifer in the driving seat, Masonic writers, deceived of course themselves, face the problem that they cannot be believed. So it is not surprising that the authorities differ concerning the provenance of the sorcery formulae and gobbledegook that infests the sterile rituals of Freemasonry. As we have seen, Many P. Hall states unequivocally that 'Egypf was 'the cradle of superior culture and most exalted philosophy' and he invokes 'undeniable evidence', which he fails to provide, 'that the Egyptian Mysteries were the progenitors of modern Freemasonry', before lamenting that the historical basis for his statement is actually all but lacking. With the benefit of our study of Scripture, we know that Egypt, as indicated, is the Old Testament's primary metaphor for 'the

Darkness' (no insult intended to modern Egypt); and, as also indicated, we know that the historical information provided in Exodus is a 'living metaphor' for God's wish to lead us away from the darkness (of sorcery, idolatry, the burden of sin, lies, murder and false witness) into the light 'of His Holy Countenance'. Egyptian culture was focused upon death, whereas the intended culture of the children of Israel was focused upon 'the living God', who makes his Holy Spirit available to us if we seek him.

Later in the recorded history of the children of Israel, the elite and most skilled among them were exiled for 70 years to Babylon, as prophesied by Jeremiah, in Chapter 25, verse 11 (606 BC): 'And these nations [Israel and Judah, the two kingdoms] shall serve the King of Babylon seventy years'. In Chapter 29, verse 10 (599 BC) Jeremiah adds: 'For thus saith the Lord, That after seventy years be accomplished, I will visit you, and perform my good word towards you, in causing you to return to this place' [Jerusalem], which is of course precisely what happened when the prophets Ezra (536 BC) and later Nehemiah (446 BC) returned with large numbers of Babylonian Jews to the long-destroyed City of David. Those among their number of later generations who secured the permission and blessing of later Babylonian kings to return to rebuild Jerusalem, returned to the Word of God; but large numbers remained dispersed 'in Iraq', where they absorbed the magical sorcery and 'Ancient Mysteries' secrets of their pagan captors and hosts. After the destruction of Jerusalem in AD 70, when the sacrificial system of Moses ceased and the messianic rolls were destroyed, later generations of Jewish 'scholars' took the most elaborate steps to merge the Torah with Babylonian Kabbalistic sorcery, a process that occupied many centuries - generating the Judaism of today, which is foreign to True Christianity and so incompatible with it as to render meaningless the deceptive phrase, 'Judao-Christian civilisation'. That, for them, there are, say, 49 interpretations of any given Judaic scriptural phrase is itself absurd, and it reveals that for this culture, there is no truth: how can there be, if every phrase of their scriptures has 49 interpretations? The Judaic-Kabbalistic mentality, tradition and culture is, from the True Christian perspective, sterile - and reflects total the fulfilment of Jesus Christ's prophecy in Matthew, Chapter 23, verses 37-39, that since the Jews would not recognise who He is, and recognise the truth that He offered them, while He was with them, their 'house' would be empty and sterile - the word house meaning their 'religion':

'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord' [meaning Jesus Christ Himself][15].

Rather than recognising who He is, the Jews have wasted two millennia fiddling around with the Babylonian Kabbalah, which their rabbis imported from Babylon and have merged incongruously with the Torah. In the spirit of Caiaphas, they have sought to destabilise and disadvantage Christianity ever since Jesus was executed. And since Lucifer enthroned himself in Rome almost from the outset, as is reviewed in Chapter 6, Jews, like almost everyone else, have confused True Christianity (of which most are entirely ignorant) with the reprobate Catholic Church, which for much of its history has been both conspicuously corrupt and the perpetrator, even, of crimes against humanity. Other Churches, especially the Church of England which was, of course, born of royal adultery, are 'daughters' of the Church of Rome, and are comparably reprobate.

In one sense, therefore, one cannot really blame the Jews for their animus against 'Christians', who for the most part were never followers of Jesus Christ. During the multiple outbreaks of the Jesuit-inspired Inquisition atrocities, authorised and promoted by the deceptively tided Pope Innocent III (1198-1216), which resulted in the murder of upwards of 50 million people over a period of 500 years, certain hapless victims were strapped to a long table known as 'the rack' and stretched by rope and windlass; heavy pinchers were used to tear out fingernails or were applied red-hot to sensitive parts of the body; rollers with razor-sharp knife blades and spikes were used, over which the 'heretics' were rolled backwards and forwards; women were installed in a deadly hollow iron instrument which was the size and figure of a woman, within which knives were arranged in such a way and under such pressure that the helpless victim was lacerated within its deadly clasp; victims stripped of their clothing had their arms strapped behind their backs with a cord, weights were attached to their feet and a pulley then suspended them in mid-air or dropped and raised them with violent jerks, dislocating parts of the body; and some sensible people who rejected Catholic propaganda had molten lead poured into their ears and eyes. Many Popes remain notorious for their odious deeds and their gross immorality. Pope Sergius III (904-911) obtained the Papal office by murder. John XII (955-983) is described in ''The Catholic Encyclopaedia' as 'a coarse, immoral man, whose life was such that the Lateran was spoken of as a brothel'; Pope Boniface VII (984-985) maintained his position by distributing stolen funds; Benedict VII (1012-24) 'bought the office of the Pope with open bribery'; and on 31st October 1501, Alexander VI (Roderigio Borgia, 1492-1503), who consulted astrologers and sorcerers, conducted a sex orgy in the Vatican, featuring 50 nude girls for the pleasure of his guests[16].

During the Council of Constance, three Popes, and sometimes four of them, cursed each other every day, calling their opponents (probably accurately), antichrists, demons, sodomites, adulterers and whatever other descriptive insult came to mind. A John XXIII (1410-1415) not to be confused with the modern Pope who curiously adopted the same name and number, was accused by 37 witnesses of fornication, incest, adultery, sodomy, simony, murder and theft. Innumerable witnesses proved that he had violated 300 nuns, who were kept for the purpose. This particular Pope was publicly referred to as the Devil Incarnate. He taxed everything in sight - including usury, gambling and prostitution.

According to 'The Catholic Encyclopaedia' itself, again, one of the very worst Popes was Boniface VIII (1294-1303). It states that 'scarcely any possible crime was omitted - infidelity, heresy, simony, gross and unnatural immorality, idolatry, magic.... Protestant historians, generally, and even modern Catholic writers... class him among the wicked Popes, as an ambitious, haughty, and unrelenting man, deceitful also and treacherous, his whole pontificate one record of evil'[17]. Many other Popes (not to mention one woman who masqueraded as a man but gave birth to a child during a procession from St Peter's to the Lateran, whereupon she died) - were guilty of abominations too numerous to list here.

In later years, the Pope, who stands in the place of Christ, was blasphemously pronounced to be Christ Himself. On 20th June 1894, Pope Leo XIII pronounced that 'we hold on earth the place of God Almighty'; and on 9th January 1870, the Vatican Council had proclaimed: 'The Pope is Christ in office, Christ in jurisdiction and power... we bow down before thy voice, O Pius, as before the voice of Christ, the God of truth; in clinging to thee, we cling to Christ'. Given such a dreadful background, it is indeed hardly surprising that the Jews have likewise clung over the centuries, in the face of such abominations, to the misapprehensions of their earlier leaders under Caiaphas.

THE JEWISH KABBALISTIC CONTRIBUTION AND DIMENSION

Moreover, such, historically, have been the provocations of evil men calling themselves Christians over the centuries, that it is almost reasonable to sympathise with decisions believed to have been constructively taken by Jewish leaders to undermine what they considered to be Christianity, which they cannot, or refuse to, distinguish from the Word of Jesus Christ - even though even a brief examination of Jesus' legacy leaves no doubt that the man-made, organised Christian churches are, for the most part, gross, blasphemous aberrations. The issue of Jewish influence within, or of cooperation and annexation via the Illuminati of, Freemasonry has been the subject of debate for a century and a half. On 3rd August 1855, Dr Isaac M. Wise, a Mason, published an editorial in the US journal "The Israelite', which contained the following 'illuminating' paragraph:

'Masonry is a Jewish institution whose history, Degrees, charges, passwords and explanations are Jewish from the beginning to the end, with the exception of only one by-Degree and a few words in the obligation'.

This statement was cited by Samuel Oppenheim in an article[18] published by the American Jewish Historical Society in 1910, in which this Jewish non-Mason elaborated:

'That the connection of Jews with Masonry in the early history of the United States was of benefit to them, as well as that it was to the advancement of The Order, is probably [sic] true, though little has been written on the subject by Jewish historians. An examination of the various publications accessible here [in New York], relating to Masonry, reveals the names of Jews who have often been mentioned in works treating of their race, and who have been representative men in their respective States. Their names appear in lists of members of the subordinate and Grand Lodges of many of the original thirteen States. They were, however, always a small minority in the few Lodges with which they were connected. Among their fellow members or those with whom they were brought into relation through Masonry were men prominent in the affairs of the nation. Several Jews are known to have been members of the Lodge with which Governor Oglethorpe, of Georgia, was connected. In the Lodge to which Washington belonged, a Jew... was a member. Jews, also, were members of the Lodge to which belonged Edmund Randolph and John Marshall, of Virginia, and DeWitt Clinton, of New York, all of whom were Grand Masters in their respective States. In Rhode Island, Pennsylvania, and South Carolina, prominent non-Jewish names were likewise met with as members of Lodges to which Jews were admitted. The relationship of Jews to The Order brought them naturally more directly into contact with their Christian brethren than would otherwise probably have been the case...'[19]. Note the author's use of the phrase The Order to describe Freemasonry, when he is really referring to The Order of the Illuminati. The use of this phrase by Jesuits, Opus Dei, Ordo Templi Orientis and innumerable others perpetrating Works of Darkness is indicative of the fact that all these organisations are instruments of Lucifer and either collaborate with, or are integrated within, the Illuminati. Three words are purposely omitted from all usage of this 'universal' phrase The Order', namely 'of the Quest': it stands in fact for 'The Order of the Quest'. The Brotherhood is 'The Brotherhood of the Quest' which is engaged in seeking 'happiness for all mankind', without Jesus Christ. If the words 'of the Quest' were added, the various compartmentalised sects would betray that they are of the Rosucrucian Illuminati.

Later in his analysis, Samuel Oppenheim reported that 'a consideration of what has been said herein shows the probability of Jews having been the first to introduce Masonry into the Colonies, and that the period of their greatest activity as Masons in

THE MASONIC 'NEW AGE' 'ALL ROADS LEAD TO GOD' LIE

FALSE BOAST OF THE ILLUMINATI MASONS

'Freemasonry is simply theosophy. It is the perpetuation of the worship of the old pagan gods of ancient Egypt, Greece, India, etc.....The contention is that God revealed himself ages ago, long before the Christian era, to the whole world; and that there is no essential difference between the gods of this land or of that'[1]. In other words, pagan deities are equated with Jesus Christ - which is to say, gods that represent devils, purport to be indistinguishable from Christ. Satan turns all truth upside down.

This familiar lie is repeated ad nauseam today by those who, out of ignorance or perversity, insist that the various organised 'religions' are all concerned with seeking the same God - so that it is as possible to blaspheme against false gods and prophets, as it is possible to blaspheme against The Lord. Yves Marsaudon (Scottish Rite) praised the so-called 'ecumenism' nurtured by Vatican II, thus: 'Catholics... must not forget that all roads lead to God. And they will have to [sic] accept that this courageous idea of free-thinking, which we can really call a revolution, pouring forth from our Masonic Lodges, has spread magnificently over the dome of St Peter's'[2].

This confirmation that the assault against Christianity (both as inadequately represented by the organised 'Christian' churches and by True Christianity based on the Word) is indeed a Masonic assault (driven in parallel of course by the Illuminati penetration within Freemasonry), is supported by numerous insiders, whose opinionated arrogance has provided yet further ample proof of this dimension of the Luciferian conspiracy. For instance, in Le Catholicisme Liberal [1969, repeated by Lefebvre, (see Note 2), page 100], Marcel Prelot, a French Senator and of course a Freemason, proclaimed that 'we had struggled for a century and a half to bring our opinions [sic!] to prevail with the Church and had not succeeded. Then came Vatican II, and we triumphed'[3]. In reality, they only 'succeeded' in penetrating a false representation of the Truth.

They did not succeed in the true sense: for it is a fact that evil spirit(s) will respond and consent to being cast out exclusively by Jesus Christ - a reality that will be confirmed by any genuine Christian exorcist, and which, in the Author's experience, provides the conclusive, unchallengeable proof of the unique divinity of Jesus Christ. The Author was made definitively aware of this by his friend, the late Dr Malachi Martin; but it is confirmed in Mark, Chapter 16, verse 17: 'And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my Name shall they cast out devils'.

Moreover the devils know him. for instance, the man who met Jesus in the country of the Gadarenes 'who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains'; who. with the gargantuan strength of the possessed, repeatedly broke his chains and fetters, and who 'always, night and day... was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying and cutting himself with stones', did something quite remarkable: 'When he saw Jesus AFAR OFF' - not close up but AFAR OFF - he 'ran and worshipped him, And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most High God: I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not'[4]. For, indeed: The devils also believe, and tremble'[5].

Obviously, if devils can be cast out ONLY by the Name of Jesus Christ, as is the case, they cannot be cast out by the names of Confucius, Buddha, Mahommed, Matreya, or even by the name of Mary. Likewise, 'no man cometh to the Father, but by me'[6]. ■

Notes and references:

[1] 'The Menace of Freemasonry to the Christian Faith', Rev. C. Penney Hunt, The Freedom Press, Breaston, Derby, 1930, page 8. The title of this work is misleading, as it implies that the Christian faith might be 'defeated' by Freemasonry. However Christ taught us that The Gates of Hell shall not Prevail' against the great faith demonstrated by Peter and all the Lord's true followers, in His Word, and in our knowledge, through faith, that Jesus is indeed The Way, the Truth and the Life' and that, contrary to what all who claim that other gods are equal to Him, 'No man cometh to God save through me'.

[2] Quoted in Archbishop Marcel Lefebvre, 'An Open letter to Confused Catholics', Kansas City, Angelus Press, 1992, page 89; cited by John Vennari in The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita: A Masonic Blueprint for the Subversion of the Catholic Church', pages 23-24.

[3] Cited by John Vennari, op. cit., page 24.

[4] Mark, Chapter 5, verses 1-19.

[5] General Epistle of James, Chapter 2, verse 19.

[6] John, Chapter 14, verse 6.

the early history of the Republic was between 1780 and 1810. The Jews described in this paper were men of parts and character, and distinguished in the early American annals of their people. Their connection with The Order [unstated: 'of the Illuminati'/ 'of the Quest'] was no doubt of significant benefit to their coreligionists, as it was to themselves, and brought them into relations with many not of their race, prominent in the official and civil life of the country, who were also members of the fraternity. Nearly all were members of the Hebrew congregations in the cities where they resided'.

'Though it is not maintained that [it was] because they were Masons [that] they arranged during 1790 for the loyal addresses of their various congregations in Washington yet the facts presented herein may very well be considered in support of a theory that their connection with The Order made them feel doubly desirous to join in the welcome to the head of the nation, who like themselves was a Mason. The singular fact stands out that in Newport, the Jewish master of the Masonic Lodge delivered, on behalf of his Lodge, the first Masonic Address to Washington as President, at the same time that he delivered his address on behalf of his congregation, and that many members of the Hebrew congregations in New York, Philadelphia, Richmond, in Charleston and Savannah which likewise addressed Washington, were also Masons'[20].

From this singular evidence alone, it is crystal clear that active and overt Jewish penetration of operational (as opposed to dogmatic) Freemasonry in the United States had taken place prior to the country's occult Revolution, which was an operation of geomasonic forces based in Europe. For Jews versed in their rabbinical Kabbalistic literature, participation in Masonic Lodges did not entail any 'culture shock' or impose any learning curve, especially in the US context, since the Fraternity of the Rosy Cross -Kabbalistic occultists in the English Elizabethan tradition of Jewish alchemy and sorcery - claimed to have been directly responsible for fomenting the American Revolution itself.

ROSE CROIX, THE 'ORDER OF THE QUEST' AND THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

Manly P. Hall's extremely rare occult work, referred to above, entitled 'An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Kabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy: Being an Interpretation of the Secret Teachings concealed within the Rituals, Allegories and Mysteries of All Ages', contains the following passage which needs to be cited before this Author will reveal the Jewish Kabbalistic pedigree of the sect of the Rosicrucians, whose primary 'prophet' was Sir Francis Bacon, the Elizabethan and Jacobean sorcerer and mystic (and the probable author of the works of Shakespeare as is clearly revealed in Hall's cited work): The Fraternity of R.C. [Rosy Cross - the Rosicrucians - Ed.] is an august and sovereign body, arbitrarily manipulating the symbols of alchemy, Qabbalism, astrology and magic to the attainment of its own peculiar purposes, but entirely independent of the cults whose terminology it employs'.

The three major objects of the Fraternity are:

1. 'The abolition of all monarchical forms of government' [with the exception, for varying transitional periods, perhaps, of any 'collaborating monarchies', such as those of Britain, Belgium and the Netherlands - Ed.] 'and the substitution therefor of the ruler-ship of the philosophical elect. The present democracies are the direct outgrowth of Rosicrucian efforts to liberate the masses from the domination of despotism'. [This explains why the globalist elite and key Illuminati figures manipulate the 'left-wing' and 'right-wing' dialectical 'opposites' to procure the 'democratic' outcomes that they seek, and why they openly regard democracy as a temporary, interim, transitory, dispos-

able phase which is scheduled for abolition: hence, for instance, the anti-democratic structures of the corrupt European Union Collective - Ed.]. In his Rosicrucian-Masonic treatise, Hall wrote that 'in the early part of the eighteenth century the Rosicrucians turned their attention to the new American Colonies, then forming the nucleus of a great nation in the New World. The American War of Independence represents their first great political experiment and resulted in the establishment of a national government founded upon the fundamental principles of divine and natural law [sic!]. 'As an imperishable reminder of their sub rosa activities, the Rosicrucians left the Great Seal of the United States' [see Figure 47, page 281]. The Rosicrucians were also the instigators of the French Revolution, but in this instance were not wholly successful, owing to the fact that the fanaticism of the revolutionists could not be controlled and the Reign of Terror ensued' [a phenomenon that was replicated after 1917 in Russia, and to which Manly P. Hall, who was living and writing in the immediate aftermath of the Soviet Revolution, carefully omitted to allude - Ed.].

2. The reformation of science, philosophy and ethics: "The Rosicrucians declared that the material arts and sciences were but shadows of the divine wisdom' [sic!] 'and that only by penetrating the innermost recesses of Nature could man attain to reality and understanding. Though calling themselves 'Christians' [sic!], the Rosicrucians were evidently Platonists and also profoundly versed in the deepest [occult] mysteries of early Hebrew and Hindu theology. There is undeniable evidence that the Rosicrucians desired to re-establish the institutions of the 'Ancient Mysteries' as the foremost method of instructing humanity in 'the secret and eternal doctrine. Indeed, being in all probability the perpetuators of the 'Ancient Mysteries', the Rosicrucians were able to maintain themselves against the obliterating forces of dogmatic Christianity [i.e. the dogmatic assertions of the Church of Rome, which they confused with 'the simplicity that is in Chrisf - Ed.] only by absolute secrecy, and by the subtlety of their subterfuges. They so carefully guarded and preserved the Supreme Mystery - the identity and interrelationship of the Three Selves - that no-one to whom they did not of their own accord reveal themselves has ever secured any satisfactory information regarding either the existence or the purpose of The Order. The fraternity of R.C., through its outer organization, is gradually creating an environment or body in which the Illustrious Brother C.R.C. [sic: Lucifer - Ed.] may ultimately incarnate and consummate for humanity the vast spiritual and material labors of the Fraternity'.

[Here, Hall anticipates the supremacy and hegemony of the Chief Rosicrucian, identifiably the blasphemous Christ Rose Croix, who is Lucifer - an intention epitomised and accelerated by such abominations as the foul revelling in Satanic exhibitionism of the reprobate Finnish 'Lordi', who 'won' the Eurovision Song Contest, a platform controlled by Illuminati forces, on 20th May 2006. We have to proceed now beyond this indication that the Rosicrucians, who are attached to and were the first to infiltrate Freemasonry, consider themselves to be the absolute custodians of the occult secrets of the 'Ancient Mysteries': it has been included here to show that the United States is a creation of the British custodians of Jewish kabbalistic sorcery, who left knowledge of their intent on the Great Seal of the United States - Ed.].

3. [And because they seek immortality on earth, and seek to prolong human life indefinitely as they secretly know that, having rejected Christ despite their absurd protestations to the contrary, they are destined for permanent spiritual and physical death - Ed.]: 'The discovery of the Universal Medicine, or panacea, for all forms of disease'. [It is no coincidence

that it is in the United States that mass hypochondria is the most extreme, preoccupation with the taking of pills is a mass fetish, and where giant pharmaceutical companies occupy pride of place alongside their occultic global energy corporation collaborators, in the hierarchy of US Illuminist organisations pledged to the realisation of these Rosicrucian dream-fantasies of Lucif-erian origin]. There is ample evidence that the Rosicrucians were successful in their quest for the Elexir of Life. In his 'Theatrum Chemicum Britannicum', [the Rosicrucian occultist] Sir Elias Ashmole stated that the Rosicrucians were not appreciated at that time in England, but were welcomed on the Continent. He also stated that Queen Elizabeth was twice cured of the smallpox by the Brethren of the Rosy Cross, and that the Earl of Norfolk was healed of leprosy by a Rosicrucian physician... It is hinted by John Heydon [see below] that the Brothers of the Fraternity possessed the secret of prolonging human existence indefinitely.. .'[21].

In another work, entitled The Secret Destiny of America[22], Manly R Hall stated unequivocally that the United States was meant to be and to procure the fulfilment of the aspirations of The Brotherhood of The Order of The Quest, and he elaborated that alchemists, the Illuminati of Italy (ultimately led by Giuseppe Mazzini), the Knights of the Holy Grail in Northern Europe, 'Christian and Jewish Kabbalists' and 'the Rosicrucians in their hidden houses [who] used the Rose of Sharon as the symbol of brotherly love, a simple rearrangement of the letters r-o-s-e becoming e-r-o-s, the Greek God of [physical - Ed.] love, Eros. ...All these groups belong to what is called The Order of the Quest. All were searching for one and the same thing under a variety of rituals and symbols. That one thing was a perfected social order, Plato's commonwealth, the government of the philosopher-king'[23] [and his self-selected cohorts - Ed.].

Then Hall reveals how the occult Rosicrucians, who, as we have seen, regarded themselves as custodians of the 'Ancient Mysteries' and were dominated in Elizabethan and Jacobean England by Sir Francis Bacon, were responsible for the conversion of the Masonic (stone cathedral-building) guilds into the co-custodians of occult gobbldegook (speculative Masonry), in the following revealing passage:

'About the middle of the 17th century [the Baconian sorcerer - Ed.] Sir Elias Ashmole, patron of the liberal arts and founder of the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford, was initiated into the guild of the operative Freemasons of London, the first non-craftsman to be permitted membership. From that time on, the entire pattern of the guilds was changed, and speculative Masonry came to dominate the older form of the craft [i.e., it became witchcraft - Ed.], and the intellect builder came into his own. One veil of the old symbolism was lifted, to reveal in full clarity that the guilds were dedicated to a program social and political. In this way, the old dream of the philosophic [occultic, Luciferian - Ed.] empire descended from the ancient world to modern time. Secret societies still exist, and regardless of the intemperance of the times, they will continue to flourish until The Quest is complete. For more than three thousand years, secret societies [synarchy - Ed.] have labored to create the background of [esoteric, Kabbalistic -Ed.] knowledge necessary to the establishment of an enlightened democracy among the nations of the world'[24].

What was the precise connection between the Rosicrucians and the Jewish Kabbalists? It was manifestly close, both intellectually and, this Author suspects, physically; for several of their number, including John Heydon (Haydar) and Sir Elias Ash(er)mole, show signs of Jewish extraction. To complete this part of the analysis, it is necessary, finally, to cite a further passage in which the Jewish Kabbalistic-Babylonian connection is explicitly revealed; and this passage, too, is taken from Manly P. Hall's 'An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Kabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy: Being an Interpretation of the Secret Teachings concealed within the Rituals, Allegories and Mysteries of All Ages', which extremely rare document contains the following passage:

'Johann Valentin Andreae is generally reputed to be the author of the 'Confessio' [context omitted here - Ed.]. It is a much-mooted question, however, whether Andreae did not permit his name to be used as a pseudonym by Sir Francis Bacon. Apropos of this subject are two extremely significant references occurring in the introduction to that remarkable potpourri, 'The Anatomy of Melancholy'. This volume first appeared in 1621 from the pen of Democritus Junior, who was afterwards defined as Robert Burton, who, in turn, was a suspected intimate of Sir Francis Bacon. One reference archly suggests that at the time of publishing 'The Anatomy of Melancholy' in 1621, the founder of the Fraternity of R. C. [the Rosicrucians - Ed.] was still alive. This statement - concealed from general recognition by its textual involvement - has escaped the notice of most students of Rosicrucianism. In the same work, there also appears a short footnote of stupendous import. It contains merely the words: 'John. Valent. Andreas, Lord Veru-lam'. This single line alone definitely relates Johan Valentin Andreae to Sir Francis Bacon, who was Lord Verulam, and by its punctuation intimates that they are one and the same individual'.

From this, it is clear that the remodeller of the (German-originating) Rosicrucians was Sir Francis Bacon himself. The text from Manly R Hall's rare work continues as follows, confirming that the Rosicrucians had adopted and integrated the sorcery of the Babylonian Kabbalah into their 'philosophy', and that John Heydon was one of the primary collectors and integrators of this tradition into the Rose Croix:

'Prominent among Rosicrucian apologists was John Heydon, who inscribes himself 'A Servant of God, and a Secretary of Nature''. In his curious work, 'The Rosie Cross Uncovered', he gives an enigmatic but valuable description of the Fraternity of the R.C. in the following language':

'''Now there are a kind of men, as they themselves report, namely Rosie Crucians, divine [words missing] officers of the Generalissimo of the World [i.e., the Prince of this World, a.k.a. Satan. a.k.a. Lucifer - Ed.], that are as the eyes and ears of the great King [Lucifer - Ed.], seeing and hearing all things: they say these Rosie Crucians are seraph-ically illuminated, as Moses was, according to this order of the elements, earth refin'd to water, water to air, air to fire'. He further declares that these mysterious Brethren possessed polymorphous powers, appearing in any desired form at will. In the preface of the same work he enumerates the strange powers of the Rosicrucian adepts:

''I shall tell you what the Rosie Crucians are, and that Moses was their Father...; some say they were of the order of Elias, some say the Disciples of Ezekiel; * * * For it should seem Rosie Crucians were not only initiated into the Mosaical theory, but have arrived also to the power of working miracles, as Moses, Elias, Ezekiel, and the succeeding Prophets did, as being transported where they please, as Habakkuk was from Jewry to Babylon, or as Philip, after he had baptised the Eunuch to Azorus [Acts, 8,40], and one of these went from me to a friend in Devonshire, and came and brought me an answer to London the same day, which is four days' journey; they taught me excellent predictions of astrology and earthquakes; they slack the Plague in Cities; they silence the violent Winds and Tempests; they calm the rage of the Sea and Rivers; they walk in the Air; they frustrate the malicious aspects of Witches; they cure all Diseases'''.

'The writings of John Heydon are considered a most important contribution to Rosicrucian literature. John Heydon was probably related to Sir Christopher Heydon, "a Seraphically Illuminated Rosie Crucian", whom the late F. Leigh Gardner, Hon. Secretary Soc. Ros. in Anglia, believes to have been the source of his Rosicrucian knowledge. John Heydon travelled extensively, visiting Arabia, Egypt, Persia, and various parts of Europe, as related in a biographical introduction to his work, 'THE Wise-Mans Crown, Set with Angels, Planets, Metals, etc., or the Glory of the Rosie Cross' - a work declared by him to be a translation into English of the mysterious book M brought from Arabia by Christian Rosencreuz'". [M is the 13th letter of the alphabet - Ed.]. The Kabbalistic magick, which is the essence of Rosicrucianism, was thus scooped up along with Middle Eastern Sufism, of which the (very dark) Emirs of Kuwait are custodians to this day.

In summary, the following important connections emerge:

1. The Patriarch of the Rosicrucians was Sir Francis Bacon.

2. Rosicrucian 'philosophy' incorporates the entire content of the Kabbalah's sorcery, alchemy, divination, astrology and other abominations [per Manly P. Hall's rare work].

3. 'Babylonian' Jews appear to have collected Kabbalistic secrets for incorporation into Rosicrucian 'philosophy' and to have promulgated the Babylonian dimension of the 'Ancient Mysteries' in Elizabethan and Jacobean England, collaborating with the Rosicrucians to maximise the potential of this connection.

4. Sir Elias Ashmole, a Jew and a leading Rosicrucian, was accepted into the 'guild of the operative' [i.e., practical - Ed.] 'Freemasons in London' in the middle of the 17th century, being the first non-craftsman to be so admitted; and from this position, he spearheaded the conversion of the powerful secret guilds (which had remained secret societies since their foundation in the first millennium, so as to preserve their building secrets and thus to be able to maintain desired pricing structures, like a sort of professional cartel -Ed.). By this means initially, Masonry was, from the outset of its new 'speculative' (occult) manifestation, permeated with the sorcery of the Babylonian-Jewish Kabbalah.

5. Jews occupied powerful and influential positions within Masonic Lodges in the United States long before the Masonic Revolution, which they welcomed enthusiastically, having been involved in its planning.

6. The Revolutionary United States was founded in a Masonic Lodge in Philadelphia, was later endowed with a capital city which is laid out (as is well known) to replicate various Masonic symbols, is driven by Rosicrucian-controlled Freemasonry, and was provided with a Great Seal which contains the R. C. secrets of its purpose. The Great Seal was imposed upon the new Republic by the Kabbalistic Rosicrucians 'as an imperishable reminder of their sub-rosa activities'. Later the Rosicrucians tried to pull the same trick in France, but initially failed, though a precedent was set for later upheavals.

It would appear that the United Kingdom was prevailed upon, coerced or otherwise persuaded to abandon her global Empire as a quid pro quo for the United States' assistance during the Second World War. At some stage during the War, the United Kingdom was made to understand that the Rosicrucian mission of the Revolutionary United States remained to be fulfilled and that a unity of purpose would be essential in order for these plans for global hegemony to be realised. Implementation of the Rosicrucian project for a 'New World' - that is to say, to be New World-driven - Order, which was initiated by Sir Francis Bacon and his secret affiliates on the Continent, especially France, the Netherlands and Germany, was not to be impeded any longer. It was, however, delayed by the Cold War, and is used as cover by the Nazi International dimension of German Illuminism.

THE ROSICRUCIAN GREAT SEAL OF THE UNITED STATES CLEARLY PROMULGATES THAT THE NATION'S GOD IS LUCIFER

ANNUIT COEPTIS
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM
E PLURIBUS UNUM

Figure 47: The reverse and obverse of the Great Seal of the United States. The face of the pyramid, exclusive of the panel containing the date 1776, consists of 72 (for the mathematical financial Babylonian Rule of 72) stones arranged in 13 rows. The mystical number 13, revered by the mind-controlled geomasonic elite, is used prolifically both on the Great Seal and of course on the $1.0 dollar bill, which Americans use without realising that they are employing Luciferian money for their small transactions. On the $1.0 bill and the Great Seal there are 13 leaves in the olive branches, 13 bars and stripes in the shield, 13 feathers in the tail, 13 arrows, 13 letters in 'E Pluribus Unum' on the ribbon, 13 stars in the crest above, 32 long feathers representing the 32nd Degree in Masonry (at which stage the identity of the god they worship is revealed), 13 granite stones in the Pyramid, and 13 letters in Annuit Coeptis. For numerology, derived from Pythagorean arithmomancy, is central to kab-balistic reasoning. It is the geomasonically imposed Rosicrucian occult secret 'destiny' of the United States, as the instrument of a European cabal (from Kabbalah), to lead the world into the 'New Age' (of Aquarius), in which Lucif erian Jewish occultism replaces all traces of true Christianity (impossible) and false Christianity (very likely).

A NATION LIVING UNDER THE CURSE OF ITS OWN OCCULT SYMBOLS

When Benjamin Franklin, who was of Jewish extraction, travelled to France to be honoured by the French State following the American Revolution, he was received by the Lodge of Perfection in Paris, the most famous of all the French Secret Orders. His name, written in his own hand, is to be found in their record ledger, close to that of the Marquis de Lafayette. According to Manly P. Hall, writing in 'The Secret Destiny of America', 'Franklin spoke for the Order of the Quest, and most of the men who worked with him in the early days of the American Revolution were also members. The plan was working out, the New Atlantis was coming into being, in accordance with the program laid down by Francis Bacon a hundred and fifty years earlier. The rise of American democracy was necessary to a world program'[25]. Here, then, we have the confirmation that the United States is a Rosicrucian, and therefore Kabbalistic, creation, built upon the foundation of the Christian Colonies, the Christian tradition of which it usurped: hence the US legal prohibition of the teaching of religion (i.e., Christianity) in state schools'.

Unsurprisingly, therefore, the Great Seal of the United States, being a devious Rosicrucian concoction, is jam-packed with esoteric, occultic symbolism, which is replicated throughout the US Federal Government, as is illustrated by the familiar US official symbols and logos shown in Figures 48 and 49 on pages 289 and 293. Americans only became aware of what was on the reverse side of the Great Seal when it appeared on the one-dollar bill, in the Series 1935A.

The Statue of Liberty, which the whole world thinks of as representing freedom - is not what it seems, either. According to the American Christian analyst, Berit Kjos, 'Torch races date back to the ancient Greeks. A sanctuary in Olympia dedicated to the goddess Hestia, sister of Zeus, housed glowing embers which, every four years, would be fanned into flame by the winning athletes. To preserve the purity and power of the fire, it had to be moved with speed. Soon competitions developed to see which individual or group - a relay - could move the torch the fastest. The winner won the honor of lighting the fire in the name of the patron deity of the city'[26].

Freemasons provided the United States with its occult torch-bearing 'goddess': 'Towering above the shimmering but polluted waters she holds in her outreached arm and hand a torch of fire and light. A gift of the Masonic Order [of the Quest - Ed.], the modern inheritors of the Illuminati heritage, the Statue of Liberty was sculptured by Frederic Bartholdi [of Jewish extraction - Ed.], a member of the Masonic Lodge of Alsace-Lorraine. In Paris, France, the statue is significant to the secret societies [synar-chy - Ed.] plotting the New World Order'[27].

This Author has visited the United States many times annually since 1977, having visited earlier when living in Canada in the early 1960s. On almost every occasion, his visits to Washington, DC have coincided with some scandal or other. The impression gained by a non-resident is that Washington is a city in which scandals and corruption proliferate - a state of affairs that has probably never been worse than it is today. In mid-2006, US colleagues were openly in despair at the catalogue of scandals that had enveloped the Republican Party under President George W. Bush. But London has acquired a similar reputation, with elements of British intelligence engaged, like their US counterparts, in drug-trafficking operations, and thus committing crimes against humanity - specifically, their own people. Following the exposure by the Author's financial journal in October 2005 of horrendous institutionalised looting at the European Commission, the UK press, accessories to the corruption, stayed silent.

SYMBOLS OF KABBALISTIC SORCERY AND THE OCCULT ON

THE GREAT SEAL OF THE UNITED STATES

Given his status as a primary historian and interpreter of Kabbalistic geomasonry, Manly P. Hall's explanations for esoteric sorcery symbolism on the Great seal of the United States must be taken seriously. The following explanations are taken from his book The Secret Destiny of America' [ISBN 0-89314-388-X], 1944, pages 126 et seq.:

- Phoenix: In mythology, the Pheonix lives for 500 years; only one bird lives at any one time; and at its death its body opens and a new-born Phoenix emerges. The Phoenix thus represents immortality and resurrection (reincarnation). It is used as an emblem of power, superiority, immortality. Represents the signature of The Order of the Quest.
- The Great Pyramid of Gizeh: The pyramid is composed of 13 (occult number) rows of Masonry, showing 72 stones. The pyramid is without a capstone. 'No trace has ever been found of the cap of the Great Pyramid. A flat platform about thirty feet square gives no indication that this part of the structure was ever otherwise finished; and this is appropriate, as the Pyramid represents human society itself, imperfect, incomplete. The Great Pyramid was believed by ancient Egyptians to be the tomb of the god Hermes, or Thot, the personification of Universal Wisdom.
- The 72 stones: This represents the Kabbalistic mathematical 'power of 72' phenomenon on which the Babylonian fiat money system is based. The 72 stones are also the 72 arrangements of the Tetragrammaton, or four-lettered name of God in Hebrew. These four letters can be combined in 72 combinations, resulting in what is called the Shemhamforesh, 'which represents, in turn, the laws, powers, and energies of Nature by which the perfection of man is achieved' [sic].
- Obverse of the Great Seal: The obverse of the Great Seal of the United States has been used by the Department of State since 1782, but the reverse was not cut at that time because it was regarded as a symbol of a secret society and not the proper device for a sovereign state'.
- The All-seeing Eye: Manly P. Hall writes: The pyramid is without a capstone, and above its upper platform floats a triangle containing the All-Seeing Eye surrounded by rays of light'. Dr Cathy Burns, the US author of 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated' [Sharing, Mount Carmel, PA, 1998] devoted a complete chapter [Chapter 20] on the All-Seeing Eye, which appears on MI5's symbol [Figure 1, on page 3]. It is one of the most prominent symbols of the Illuminati. In Masonry, the eye is used to represent Osiris. Albert Pike, the sorcerer and Grand Patriarch of modern US Freemasonry, stated that the All-Seeing Eye is 'the emblem of Osiris, the Creator' ['Morals and Dogma', op. tit, pages 15-16]. The All-seeing Eye is found in Egypt India and elsewhere in the world, as symbolic of the supreme occult power. Pike further explained that 'the Blazing Star has been regarded an an emblem of Omniscience, or the All-Seeing Eye.... It has the Kabbalistic meaning of the Divine Energy, manifested as Light, creating the Universe' ['Morals and Dogma', op. cit., page 16].

On 15th September 2005, 16 'cooperating' nations took part in a stage of a six-week military exercise called Exercise Bright Star, during which fixed-wing aircraft from the 13th US Marine Expeditionary Unit (Special Operations Capable) force and three other countries carried out a fly-past (in US English, a fly-by) above the Great Pyramid. A total of 8,000 US troops were operating in Northern Egypt (the PRIZE: see page 231] for the duration of the exercise. Details of this exercise were posted on the US Marine Corps' website, which has a jet-black background. ALL websites with a black background are Illuminati sites. Sergeant Justin R. Peterson, of Dearborn, Michigan, was quoted on the website as making the following Masonic observation: 'It was basically a multinational handshake'. The 16 nations taking part in the Exercise were from what the Illuminati Rosicrucian capos of the New Underworld Order project call the 'Functioning Core'. ■

ENGLISH AND GERMAN KABBALISM IN EARLY AMERICA

Sir Francis Bacon's Kabbalistic secret Society of the Rosie Cross 'was set up in America before the middle of the 17th century', according to Manly P. Hall, so that by the time of the American Revolution, the True Christian basis of the Colonies had been severely compromised by this Babylonian-occult infusion. 'Bacon himself had given up all hope of bringing his dream to fruition in his own country, and he concentrated his attention on rooting it in the New World [HENCE the slogan-phrase: 'New World Order']. He made sure that the American colonists were thoroughly indoctrinated with the [Illuminati's seemingly innocuous] principles of religious tolerance, political democracy, and of social equality. Through carefully appointed representatives, the machinery of democracy [which the Illuminists need to install in order to be able to manipulate the 'mechanistic' dialectical 'opposite' forces that they create - Ed.] was set up at least a hundred years before the period of the Revolutionary War'[28].

The Rosicrucians had meanwhile developed relationships and virile centres of Kabbalistic esoteric operations on the European Continent, having 'gone international' from their earliest years, as Hall elaborated:

'Bacon's secret society [the Rosicrucians - Ed.] was not limited to England; it was most powerful in Germany, in France, and in The Netherlands, and most of the leaders of European thought were involved in the vast pattern of his purpose. The mystic empire of the wise [sic, i.e. of sorcery] had no national boundaries and its citizenry was made up of men of good purpose [sic! Remember: the Devil turns everything upside down: this should read 'bad purpose', of course - Ed.] in every land. The Alchemists, Kabbalists, Mystics and Rosicrucians [i.e., soothsayers and sorcerers - Ed.] were the incisive instruments of Bacon's plan. Representatives of these groups migrated to the Colonies at an early date and set up their organization in suitable places'[29].

And the German dimension manifested itself from a very early stage, revealing that the German branch of Kabbalistic sorcery and Illuminism was engaged in America from the late 17th century onwards. Given this background, it is no longer hard to understand how it has come to pass that German Illuminism has such a brutal stranglehold within the US official, corporate and financial sector structures. 'One example', Hall explains, 'will illustrate the trend. About 1690, the German Pietist theologian, Magistar Johannes Kelpius, sailed for America with a group of followers all of whom practiced mystical and esoteric rites. These Pietists settled in Pennsylvania and their descendants still flourish in Lancaster County. Kelpius for some years lived as an Anchorite in a cave located in what is now Fairmont Park, Philadelphia. The Pietists brought with them the writings of the German Jewish mystic, Jacob Boehme, books on magic, astrology, alchemy, and the Kabbalah'. The Rosicrucians first emerged in 14th century Germany, long before Bacon hijacked their occult fantasies.

In 1627, Bacon had published his 'New Atlantis', as a kind of appendix to a work called 'Sylva Sylvarum', a natural history of ten centuries. It showed the figure of an ancient creature representing Time drawing a female figure out of a dark cavern. The meaning of this illustration is that through time, the 'hidden truth' shall be revealed. Manly P. Hall explained in 'The Secret Destiny of America' that 'this figure is one of the most famous of the seals or symbols of The Order of the Quest[30]. The document contained a single reference to a secret society and revealed allegorically that Bacon, having despaired of any prospect of establishing an 'ideal' society in touch with 'hidden forces' (demons), had set his mind on 'enlarging the bounds of human empire'[31] in the Americas.

THE SORCERY OF THE BABYLONIAN KABBALAH AND ITS MANIFESTATIONS

The Kabbalistic Degrees of 'higher' Masonry are in touch with all secret societies, both Masonic and non-masonic. Possession of a Kabbalistic diploma by the member of a non-Masonic Satanic sect enables non-masons to visit Lodges and inner shrines of ordinary Masonry in all countries of the world. This is because the heads of non-Masonic Satanic sects belong to exalted Degrees of the various Masonic rites; and if so requested by subordinates, the heads of such Satanic organisations will provide diplomas or documents providing entry to any Lodge anywhere, on demand, accompanied by 'sacred' words, and yearly and half-yearly passwords applicable to all the Masonic rites everywhere. All kabbalists indulge in necromancy, the forbidden practice of evoking the spirits 'of the dead', a component of the 'Ancient Mysteries' which the Luciferians seek to have enthroned as the international norm for all mankind.

However since Satan and his demons are the authors of lies and deception, spirits of the dead evoked in Satanic ceremonies or in occult seances are never those of the dead person in question, but are invariably evil spirits masquerading as such. These truths were even recognised by Carl Hackse, who made an extensive study of occultism under the pseudonym Dr Bataille in Le Diable au XIXe Ciecle[32]:

'According to the teaching of the Christian Churches, God allows demons certain limited powers, but they are not permitted to open the Gates of Hell and release a spirit at the request of one who evokes the dead. The dead, even damned, will not show themselves if evoked, nor would evocations be answered by those who had succeeded in attaining the Kingdom of Heaven, but the devils can and do, says the Church, substitute themselves for the deceased. They will impersonate a dead person whose appearance is demanded by invocations'. The Church is correct about this.

The Kabbalah is Occult Science itself, the secret Satanic theology of the initiates. So, when the 'ascending' Mason reaches the Kabbalistic Degrees, he becomes involved in Satanic invocations - as the Kabbalah, the Babylonian secret religion which has polluted Judaism and Freemasonry, teaches magic, or the art of intercourse with spirits and supernatural beings. The rare work by Manly P. Hall to which references have been made contains specific instructions on how to summon the Devil himself. Any such activity, which is typically facilitated by drug-taking, is extremely dangerous, opening the perpetrator to the possibility of demonic infestation, even possession. Once possessed, the victim can only escape by a stupendous excercise of will and through the acknowledgement of the supremacy, with his or her own lips, of Jesus Christ - the one and only Name to which Evil Spirit will respond, and of which it is terrified.

No human being can fully understand why it is that these spiritual phenomena exist. However this Author realised the truth of these matters as soon as he understood what has been stated above - namely, that it is a well-attested fact, acknowledged by all genuine, prayerful exorcists, that there is precisely ONE, and ONLY ONE, means of casting out devils - and that is through the Name and commandment of Jesus Christ. Only those who are 'right with Christ can perform exorcisms in safety.

Likewise, it is hazardous to confront directly those who are driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer'. Precautions have to be taken. For example one should never, ever, accept an invitation to a meal or drinks with any of these 'Dark Actors Playing Games', for fear of suffering the fate of poor, brave Andy Stephenson, Mozart or David Kelly. The involvement of heads of government in sanctioning assassinations today is more widespread than most people realise, reflecting the scale of modern official criminalism.

COMMON SORCERY AND DIVINATION TECHNIQUES

There are two categories of Kabbalistic magic: divining magic, subdivided into several branches, and operative magic. Subdivisions of divining magic include:

- Astrology: Divination of the future by the stars (the Biblical 'host of heaven'), of which the casting of horoscopes is its most prevalent practice.
- Palmistry: Divination of the future by 'reading the hand'.
- Oneirocritics: Divination of the future via the interpretation of dreams.
- Pyromancy: Divination by fire, as intentionally implied by the Psy-Ops Devil in Mark Phillips' Devil-in-the-Smoke, and the CNN image.
- Cartomancy: Divination by playing cards, which themselves carry occult images. 'The first deck of cards was made for Charles of France in 1392. King Charles was insane. It is not generally known by card players that cards have secret meanings. The King card represents the enemy of God, the Devil. The Ten Spot represents the spirit of lawlessness and is in direct opposition to the Ten Commandments of the Bible. Closely associated with the Ten Spot card is the Club card. When cards were invented, the club was the weapon of the murderer; so the Club card stands for murder.. The Jack represents the lustful libertine who lives off the gains of prostitutes. It represents the moral leper. The Queen card represents the Virgin Mary, the mother of Our Lord. In the secrets of cards, she is called the mother of harlots. The Joker in card language represents our Lord Jesus Christ. Joker means fool. Jesus Christ is held up by card players as a fool. And if this is not bad enough yet, the secret language of cards goes further and declares that Jesus (the Joker card) is the offspring of a lustful Jack, and the Queen Mother, Mary'[33].

The best way to consider these diversionary practices is to treat them with contempt as 'enticements' or 'come-ons' - a fascination for which will be liable, and is intended, to lead the prospective victim towards the 'real thing', which is operative magic, of which the following subdivisions are widely noted: Alchemy and Necromancy, both of which, for instance, are found embedded in the Rosicrucian secrets. When the Author mentioned his awareness of the fact that the rare book by Manly P. Hall contains specific instructions on how to raise 'the Devil', the Catholic expert to whom he was speaking commented: 'Yes, and it works, too'. The Author wondered how he could possibly know this. Other operative magic categories include Magnetic Mesmerism, Theurgy, and various miraculous feats (which are usually frivolous but, if healing is involved, do not yield permanent results). Albert Pike, the Patriarch of American Freemasonry, and the founder of the separate Palladian 'higher' occult Masonic rites, used to boast of demonic manifestations with which he had been associated. Addressing the Supreme Council of Charleston on 20th October 1884, he described what happened at a seance at St Louis: 'We operated the grand rites, and through Sister Ingersoll, who is a first class medium [i.e., capable of invoking evil spirits - Ed.], received astonishing revelations during a solemn Palladian session at which I presided, assisted by Brother Friedman and Sister Warhnburn. Without putting Sister Ingersoll to sleep, we saturated her with the spirit of Ariel himself, but Ariel took possession of her with 329 more spirits of fire and the seance from then on was marvellous [sic]. Sister Ingersoll, lifted into space, floated over the assembly and her garments were suddenly devoured by a flame which enfolded, without burning her. We saw her thus in a state of nudity for over ten minutes. Flitting above our heads, as though borne by an invisible cloud, or upheld by beneficent [sic!] spirits, she answered all questions put to her.... Then Astaroth, in person, revealed himself, flying beside our medium and holding her hand. He breathed upon her and her clothes, returning from nowhere, clothed her again. Finally, Astaroth vanished, and our sister fell gently on to a chair, where, with her head thrown back she gave up Ariel and the 329 spirits who had accompanied him. We counted 330 exhalations in all at the end of this most successful experiment'[34]. So nine demons remained.

Like all who play around with sorcery, Pike was himself fooled by such displays, in which evil spirits, summoned by his sorcery, demonstrated that they could possess any of his associates at any time in response to being raised, and could also be self-expelled by the victim. That is almost unheard of, so the particular deception embedded in this description was the lie that, once possessed, the victim can 'turn possession on and off' as he or she sees fit. That lie, in turn, created the illusion that there could be nothing especially hazardous about such activities - whereas the opposite is the case.

True, some people do not realise that they may be partially possessed: the Author knows of one person who is totally oblivious of this fact, but he has heard 'that voice' emitted by the person concerned, in extreme anger. 'That voice' is always the same, worldwide: it can best be described as resembling the voice of a man speaking from down a drain, and is described by Isaiah [Chapter 29, verse 4, as follows]:

'And thou shalt be brought down, and shalt speak out of the ground, and thy speech shall be low out of the dust, and thy voice shall be, as of one that hath a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and thy speech shall whisper out of the dust'[35].

Albert Pike is known to have established the 'high-occult' Palladian Rite, which is allegedly open by invitation only to Masons who have reached 'high' levels (= low levels) in their respective Lodges. A note in Lady Queenborough's study states, though, as follows: 'In his 'Cyclopedia of Fraternities', Stevens writes that the "Order of the Palladium" was founded in 1730 and soon afterwards introduced in Charleston where it remained inactive until 1886', when Albert Pike rediscovered and revived it. 'It blossomed anew under the name of "reformed Palladium" and gave a new impulse to the traditions of High Masonry. Stevens adds that the Palladium is little known as the number of its members is strictly limited and the deepest secrecy surrounds all its deliberations', which have to do with the worst excesses of sorcery and occultism[36].

ALCHEMY AND THE ELEXIR OF LIFE

The Alchemy dimension of operative magic, practiced by Kabbalists and at all the Kabbalistic levels of Masonry, is called Hermetic Science, and has two objectives:

(a) Discovery of the philosopher's stone, a substance capable of converting metals into gold, but also a metaphor for the creation of wealth out of nothing; and:

(b) Discovery of 'drinkable gold' or the Elexir of Long Life, a magic potion endowed with properties capable of prolonging human life indefinitely, or at least of facilitating in old age the facilities of youth. Although some dismiss the importance of these crackpot notions in the Masonic (or any) context, it is a fact that these 'high' Luciferians crave, and often experience, long life. Because they know that their end will be hellish, and that they are on the fast track to perdition, these people have historically craved a reliable means of defying death and of greatly extending the span of human existence on earth. In 2004, George Bush Sr. celebrated his 80th birthday, and he appeared to be endowed precisely with the faculties of youth. The late Congressman and 'high' Illuminist, Strom Thormund, lived to over a hundred years old, before he finally kicked the bucket.

All Skull and Bones alumni are symbolically 'reincarnated' when they rise from a coffin, and Masons are indoctrinated into the acceptance of the bizarre and erroneous notion of reappearing on earth as another creature or human being after death - a device of Satan to convince them that what they are building on earth will be theirs to enjoy in their next reincarnation, which is of course a pagan fantasy borrowed from eastern religions. The Frontispiece of Manly P. Hall's 'The Lost keys of Freemasonry' [see Figure 16, page 45] shows a Masonic candidate being raised from a coffin by a priest wearing the mask of a lion in the 'Pyramid Mysteries'. The Lion is giving the candidate the Lion's Paw' grip [see Addendum 10, page 734]. This symbolic nonsense inculcates the idea of reincarnation, which is universally accepted by the 'Useful Idiots' who have allowed themselves to be enticed by this slow-motion introduction to sorcery and Lucifer; but the caption reads: 'By this grip the spirit in man, long buried in the sepulchre of substance, is raised to life, and the candidate goes forth as a builder entitled to the wages of an initiate'. It's all gobbldegook and worthy of the utmost contempt.

As for the 'philosopher's stone', which calls for the creation of wealth out of nothing, the secret of how to do this has been perfected in recent years, with the (perfectly legal) practice developed among an extremely select community of intelligence financial engineering experts, of generating colossal sums by the exploitation of collateral. This can be done by means of collateralisation and hypothecation, or, at a simpler level, by leveraging a substantial financial asset with Foreign Bank A, from which additional funds are borrowed, and then deploying a proportion of the additional funds as collateral with Foreign Bank B, with which the same process is repeated. Certain intelligence operatives have been doing this using stolen US Treasury assets, such as the Diamond Certificate worth $1.0 billion, shown in Figures 8 and 9 on pages 26-27. The fact that the Diamond Certificate carries serial numbers that devolve to 666, indicating that the issuance was related to the Vatican, reveals the Illuminati status of the 'Holy See'.

Another dimension of alchemy has historically been the creation of toxins for poisoning purposes - poisoning being the method of assassination most favoured by the Illuminati. The Alchemists knew about microbes and toxins long before modern medical discoveries. Satanic bacteriological laboratories were working for millennia on cultures of bacilli or solutions with lethal toxic properties which, even when, like certain of the most demonic modern poisons, administered in infinitesimal doses, could distribute disease and death whenever judged necessary by the self-appointed 'Masters'. Reiterated historical reports and instances of the administration of poison to targeted individuals, mentioned in classical literature, including Mozart and right up to the 19th century, provide ample evidence of this. In 2005, the Author was informed by a close colleague who has exposed some of the evils being perpetrated by certain dark cadres of the US intelligence community, that a US official with whom the subject of the use of poison was being discussed, had remarked menacingly, as though by way of a deliberate, though covert threat: 'Yes, a lot of that is going on'. In the United States, uttering threats is not in itself a criminal offence, contrary to the situation in the United Kingdom. The friend had in mind the poisoning of the activist Andy Stephenson, who exposed the rigging of the 2004 General Election in the United States through software manipulation.

Figure 48 on page 289 opposite: Being a geomasonic Rosicrucian foundation, a consequence of a Masonic putsch, the United States Government advertises this fact in every possible symbolical way. The best-known emblem is that of the President of the United States, and it is seen whenever he stands at a podium to make some pronouncement or other. The emblems shown, for (A) the (privately-owned) Board of Governors of the Federal Reserve System, (B) The US House of Representatives, (C) The US Equal Employment Opportunity Commission, (D) The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms, (E) The (old) US Public Health Service, (F) The Inspector General of the Department of Defense, (G) The US Naval Oceanographic Office and the drug money-funded Federal Emergency Management Agency, are crawling with occult Masonic content. See also Figure 49.

U.S. GOVERNMENT MASONIC EMBLEMS: 1

BOARD OF GOVERNORS OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE SYSTEM

A

U.S. HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

B

U.S. EQUAL EMPLOYMENT OPPORTUNITY COMMISSION

C

BUREAU OF ALCOHOL, TOBACCO AND FIREARMS

D

U.S. PUBLIC HEALTH SERVICE
1798

E

INSPECTOR GENERAL
DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

F

U.S. NAVAL
OCEANOGRAPHIC OFFICE

G

FEDERAL EMERGENCY MANAGEMENT AGENCY

H

Necromancy is partly divining and partly operative magic, and as noted is concerned with the invocation of the spirits of the dead, which as we have seen is a waste of time because what happens is that the spirits evoked are demons playing sick games. Eliphas Levi, a 19th century occultist and author of the hideous image of the goat in Figure 50A, page 297, knew how dangerous these activities are, and was prepared to admit as much:

'The experiences of theurgy and necromancy are always disastrous to those who indulge in them... First giddiness, then catalepsy followed by madness.... the atmosphere is disturbed, the woodwork cracks and doors tremble and groan in the presence of certain persons, after a series of intoxicating acts. Weird sounds, sometimes bloody signs, will appear spontaneously on paper or linen. They are always the same, and are classed by magicians as Diabolical Writings. The very sight of them induces a state of convulsion or ecstasy in the mediums who believe themselves to be seeing spirits. Thus Satan, the Spirit of Evil, is transfigured for them into an Angel of Light but, before they will manifest, these so-called spirits require sympathetic excitement produced by sexual intercourse on the part of their devotees. Hands must be placed on hands, feet on feet, they must breathe in each other's faces, these acts often being followed by others of an obscene character. The initiates, revelling in these forms of excesses, believe themselves to be the elect of God and the arbiters of destiny. They are the successors of the fakirs of India. No warning will save them'[37].

No warning, it might seem, will save participants in the activities alluded to at Bohemian Grove [box, page 161], which replicate, perhaps on a more lavish scale than at any time in the history of human depravity, those described above. There is no difference whatsoever between the picture painted by the 19th century occultist, and what we know about how the elite behave at Bohemian Grove. Eliphas Levi continued:

'Theurgy is the highest Degree of occultism. Necromancy is limited to the summoning of dead souls [sic!], but the Theurgists' of the 19th century 'evoked entities described by them as genii, angels of light, exalted spirits, spirits of fire, etc''. As Bataille wrote: 'In their meetings, scattered throughout the world, they worship Lucifer. The three mysterious letters J.. .B.. .M... that the common initiates see in Masonic temples, are reproduced in the meeting rooms of the Luciferians, but they no longer mean Jachin, Boaz, Mahabone, as in the Lodges, nor Jacques Bourginon Molay as with the Knights Kadosch; in reality, these letters mean: Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus. Theurgy is therefore pure Satanism'[38]. Note that Levy, another Frenchman of Jewish extraction - a.k.a. Alphonse Louis Constant - who was frenetically engaged in propagating the Babylonian Kabbalah, professed to know perfectly well that blaspheming the Name of Jesus Christ was Satanic - by which that occultist author meant that Illuminists believe, as Pike reveals, in Jesus Christ, even if they are Jews.

Kabbalists admitted to the 'mysteries' of Theurgy, never mention the word Satan. 'They look upon certain dissident adepts who evoke the Devil under the name of Satan as heretics, whose system they call 'Goety of Black Magic'. They name their own practices Theurgy or 'White Magic', which is of course a contradiction in terms[39]. We are considering, in brief outline here, the extreme banality of the 'Works of Darkness', which are ALWAYS characterised by lies and deception. Hence the inversion of, for example, Black and White Magic, and the always proliferating confusion to be encountered when seeking to make sense of the innumerable Masonic and non-Masonic Degrees, manifestations, traditions, sects, and auxiliary bodies such as (in the United States) the

Shriners (for men), the youth categories of sub-masonry (De Molay, Job's Daughters and Rainbow Girls), and the auxiliary orders for women: The Order of the Eastern Star, Daughters of the Nile, and White Shrine [see Figure 51, page 299]. Nothing of value is gained from studying the aberrations and perverted teachings and activities of these myriad inventions of Lucifer-Satan, as they all reek of spiritual death and bondage, and all have one purpose: to entice the candidate, initiate or adept further and further down into the pit. In any case, we are enjoined specifically not to be enticed or interested by Works of Darkness and their perpetrators, so that the object of an investigation such as this must never be more than to inform, expose and reprove: we may know of these things, must we must NEVER know them - not least because they are always sterile: 'And have no fellowship with the unfruitful Works of Darkness, but rather reprove them' [Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians, Chapter 5, verse 11][40].

THE PERPETUALLY RELABELLED GNOSTICISM OF SIMON MAGUS

Luciferian occultism is nothing new: it was the work of Satan from the foundation of the world, and thus also from the beginning of Christianity; and it was established by him precisely to undermine and pollute it. Its earliest generic title was Gnosticism, and its refounder was Simon Magus, described by Luke in the Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 8, verses 9-10 and 18-24, as follows: 'But there was a certain man, called Simon, which before-time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one; To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God'[41], whereas in reality, as a sorcerer, the 'powers' he was demonstrating, for his own perverse glory, were those borrowed from devils.

'And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost'.

It is because of this precedent, that the nefarious practice of offering spiritual gifts in exchange for money or reward is called simony; and Peter rounded on Simon as soon as he understood what the 'former' sorcerer was asking: 'But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter; for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity'[42].

The last we hear in Ads of Simon is the next verse, where he asked Peter to pray for him 'that none of these things ye have spoken come upon me' - whereas Peter, in reproving him, had advised Simon himself to repent and to pray for forgiveness, which Luke conspicuously failed to record Simon doing. Note that Peter had in fact cursed him, saying 'thy money perish with thee', meaning that both would perish. In bitterness he reverted to his sorcery and, as indicated, is identified as the founder of the Gnostics - one meaning of the G[43] to be seen on Masonic literature and in Lodges everywhere.

The Gnostics operated at once as a specifically anti-Christian sect - as Simon Magus did not repent, resented being told off by Peter, and set about trying to deploy his 'magic' powers to destroy Christianity. Simon is believed to have founded an early 'Lodge' - a secret council consisting of his own initiates who received Satanic initiation. Gnosticism, like the 'Ancient Mysteries', was based upon spiritism, with the Gnostics' mediums giving instructions purporting to be derived from the gods (spirits).

Simon Magus, who was an adept of the Gnostic sect of the Dosithians, taught that his tame harlot, Helena, was the Holy Ghost (blasphemy against the Holy Spirit) and instituted, one writer cited by Lady Queenborough, says, 'certain foul and infamous Mysteries inexpressibly filthy, and had Assemblies equally filthy to celebrate them, including ceremonies of public fornication. Simon Magus was succeeded, inter alia, by [sorcerers who were named] Basilides, Valentinius, Caprocrates, Marcus, Marcion, Cerdo, Epiphanes, and Montanus. Magus and his disciples purported to be Christians, but celebrated communion through copulation. No wonder Peter excoriated Simon Magus, whose repentance in Peter's presence was false (see also below). One authority even states that Simon Magus' Gnostics and their successors considered themselves 'superior to Peter or Paul or any of Chrisf s other disciples'. With the benefit of this knowledge, it is clear that Peter had confronted a pioneer adept of the House of Lucifer.

The Apostles were given power by Jesus through the Holy Spirit to continue the Lord's great works, which included healing the sick, giving sight to the blind, and other wonderful works which always benefited the afflicted, and were never done for the glorification of the Apostles, who never boasted of these powers, as they were the priceless gifts of God. Gnosticism then, having the seal of Lucifer, was contemporary with the Apostle Peter, and has persisted with no discontinuity into the modern era - changing its mask and labelling from time to time[44], but always promoting the same objective: opposition to Jesus Christ, the Way, the Truth and the Life, and the provision of a substitute false (Satanic) religion masquerading as the true source of wisdom and light.

At different levels of Masonry, candidates and initiates are given different explanations for the prevalence of the letter G within the interlaced square and compass - the five-pointed (occult) star (the pentalpha of Pythagoras) which frames it. This emblem appears on entrances to Masonic Temples, on seals, on Masonic literature, on the rituals, everywhere. In the lower grades, Masons are taught that the G stands for Geometry. Where women are admitted as members, the mystic letter G is said to mean Generation.

But to those found 'worthy' to penetrate into the sanctuary of Knights Kadosch, the enigmatic letter becomes the initial of the doctrine of 'perfect initiates', namely Gnosticism. Kadosch is Hebrew for 'consecrated'. Hence, 'higher' Freemasons dedicate themselves to the glorification of Gnosticism, or deliberate, provocative, relentless and insistent anti-Christianity (the spirit of Simon Magus), which Albert Pike defines as 'the soul and marrow of Freemasonry'[45]. There is no difference between the Gnosticism of the earliest years of Christianity and contemporary occultism - except that, as it was absorbed via German Rosicrucianism and through Bacon's occultic elaborations into Freemasonry, the ancient magic of Simon Magus has been successively relabelled and wrapped in many layers of gobbldegook clothing. As Lady Queenborough explained:

'The fundamental principle of Gnosticism was the double divinity (dual principle) and this is exactly the theological theory of modern occultism. The Gnostics claimed that the good God was Lucifer and that Christ was the Devil, that what Christians call vice was for them virtue, and to the Christian dogma they opposed Gnosticism, a word

Figure 49 on page 293 opposite: Further geomasonic and occult-esoteric symbolism displayed on US Federal Government emblems: (L) US Department of the Army; (M) Peace Corps (occult ying-yang image); (N) The US Department of the Army; (P) The Seal of the Speaker of the US House of Representatives; (Q) The US Department of Education (which, like its British equivalent, abuses its power to indoctrinate and mind-control the young); (R) The General Services Administration, complete with the 13 stars, the Great Pyramid, and an occult Phoenix/Eagle; (S) The Naval Supply Systems Command; and (T) The US Naval War College. The use of occult symbols is replicated by US, British, Italian and French multinational corporations. Certain satrap Latin American countries, e.g. Nicaragua and El Salvador, have emblems with pyramids, sunbursts and stars.

U.S. GOVERNMENT MASONIC EMBLEMS: 2

DEPARTMENT OF THE ARMY
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
1775

L

PEACE CORPS

M

DEPARTMENT OF STATE
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

N

SEAL OF THE SPEAKER
1789
UNITED STATES HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

P

DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Q

GENERAL SERVICES ADMINISTRATION

R

NAVAL SUPPLY SYSTEMS
COMMAND

S

THE UNITED STATES
NAVAL WAR COLLEGE
VIRIBUS MARI VICTORIA

T

meaning human knowledge[46]. Human, not divine, knowledge: in other words, the source of this knowledge was (the Devil working through) Man, not God. Modern humanism encapsulates this perverse spirit, which drives all organisations serving the interests of the implementers of the New Underworld Order. Look in vain for any spirituality in the endless cascade of dry, soulless documents spewed out by the European Commission. Seek it in vain in the output of all compromised institutions, including most churches[47].

A critical impulse to the Works of Darkness proliferated by Simon Magus and his successors (not elaborated upon here) was the fact that dawning Christianity, at the time of the Apostles, was a time of many miracles, since the Holy Spirit had been given to the Apostles so that they were able to continue the great works of Jesus Christ. 'The miracles performed by Jesus Christ bore a distinctive feature, often overlooked, namely that in every case altruism was the source of their inspiration', wrote Lady Queenborough[48]. And when taunted on the cross to save himself, our Lord chose not to use the powers that he divinely possessed, for His personal advantage - choosing death instead. Had he yielded to that last temptation, he would have fallen to the level of a Simon Magus.

The glorious miracles essentially ceased, it is believed, with the deaths or martyrdoms of the Apostles. Peter, who loved the Lord so much, is believed to have refused to be crucified like Jesus, but requested that he should be hung upside down, because he said he was not worthy to be crucified like his Lord. However there is actually no known historical corroboration of this report, which in any case has Peter martyred in Rome, which, as the Bishop of Jerusalem, he never visited.

To fight the 'competition' from the great and wonderful works of the disciples of Jesus, the Gnostics under Simon Magus worked overtime to mobilise occult powers, using sorcery and having recourse to diabolical marvels, which always produce temporary results and are capricious and hazardous. Gnostic 'miracles' like 'weeping statues', revered by misled Catholics, or like the Hindu religious rite of Samadhi which involves being buried alive for a time, have no charitable purpose whatsoever: they are spiritually dead and of zero value. Their main purpose is to create wonderment, curiosity, or fables promoting faith in magic: indeed Catholics addicted to 'weeping statues' call such supposed phenomena 'miracles', notwithstanding that no human being is involved. Failing any altruistic motive, such phenomena are classifiable under the term Black Magic. Catholics who revere such phenomena deceive themselves that they assist their worship, just as they argue that statues (graven images) of saints, the 'Virgin' Mary, etc, are not worshipped, but are merely 'aids to worship'. This convenient lie or excuse is a delusion, and an explicit contravention of God's injunction in Exodus, Chapter 20, verse 4: 'Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above' [i.e., the Virgin Mary - Ed.], or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth'[49]. All Christians are required to avoid giving heed to fables: 'Neither give heed to fables...'[50]. 'And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables'[51].

On 17th October 2005, 'Spiegel OnLine', the Internet version of 'Der Spiegel', carried a lead story entitled POPE BENEDICT XVI CHANNELS JOHN PAUL II, in which it reported that in the course of the first extensive TV interview of his Papacy, the former Cardinal Ratzinger revealed that he 'sees and talks to his predecessor'. In the interview, broadcast by a Polish station a day earlier, the German Pope said that, given the late Pope's abiding presence, 'I hear him and I see him speaking, so I can keep up a continuous dialogue with him'. The Pope is occultically deluded: he is communing with a deceiving spirit.

PAGAN SEX MAGIC CENTRAL TO GNOSTIC FREEMASONRY

Secret Gnostic meetings at which sorcery and magic was practiced, 'needing' sexual activity which was and is integral to evoking demons, were always associated with Bohemian Grove-style depravity - as the adepts indulged in every kind of obscenity, often under the influence of drugs such as Indian hemp (cannabis indica) or opium, the medicinal properties of which, when administered under certain ritual conditions, are 'provocative of mediumistic phenomena'. Thus the grotesquely evil drug-dealing activities of certain elements of British, American, German, French, Spanish, Soviet, Israeli, Chinese and some other intelligence services, in addition to representing crimes against humanity, serve the further Illuminist purpose of maximising the potential for occult practices under the influence of drugs.

'Thus debauched, their moral sense weakened, initiates are ready to work. They work, they fall, and as they fall, the occult power grasps its prey. Their life, henceforth, is subject to the will of the Hidden Masters who, according to their secret designs, will lead their slaves to power, or a semblance of power, or else to their downfall'[52].

The sexual nature of even the first three (Blue) Degrees belies claims by 'worker-bee' 'ordinary' members of these lower Degrees that the exoteric gobbledegook which they are required to absorb is innocent of any tinge of pagan-phallic orientation. According to a book on French Masonry, cited by Lady Queenborough[53], the ritual of Master Mason (Third Degree) is explicitly sexual. It would be tedious to reproduce more than a few sentences of the description of the ritual, which remains symbolic at this Degree level:

'The Master holds the mallet, the two Wardens each hold a roll of cardboard nine inches in circumference by 18 inches long. These rolls represent the membrum virile'.

'In the middle of the Lodge is a mattress, coffin or ditch, which symbolises the bed... upon which are performed the mysteries of generation'.

The fact that these mysteries and his ability to generate, cannot be created by Man, that is to say that he did not make himself, is conveniently and obtusely overlooked by these deluded diversionary occultists. This is a point repeatedly stressed in Scripture, for instance, in the hundredth Psalm, verse 2: 'Know ye that the Lord he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture'.

The phallus is used by the Freemasons in the Degree of Master where it is designated by the word Mahabone (man is 'completed' by the Third Degree of Master'). This fecundation is supposed to take place as follows: In the early period of initiation, the seed of the unfertilised grain is dead. The Candidate, wearing within him this inert seed, is a male as he only wears upon his breast the Compass emblem of the membrum virile. He is stretched upon a mattress, or in a coffin or ditch... Neither the second, nor the first warden can endow him with life. Alone, the Worshipful Master, wearing upon his chest the Square, symbol of the genitalia mulieris, representing the female (the Lodge), can fertilize this seed by leaning over the Candidate, who, representing the male, unites with him by the Five Points of Perfection (originally from Pythagoras' pentalpha five-pointed star). The seed is fertilised by the Union of the male and the female, and the Lodge becomes pregnant of the Candidate, which she brings into the world nine months later, as Perfect Master, Fourth Degree, it being established that nine full months must have passed since the aspirant had received the Degree of Master Mason'. What is being mimicked here is the human pregnancy period of nine months, which is a period ordained by God, not Man: and there is nothing whatsoever that these nutcases can ever do about it.

The obviously homosexual (and utterly repugnant) connotations of the ritual need no elaboration (thank goodness). Figure 50B on page 297, using a 19th century diagram, shows the 'five points of perfection' as applied in high-level Masonic greetings with the two participants standing up; how the 'Five Points of Fellowship' are achieved in the positions described in the ritual cited, disturbs the imagination. It is unfortunately necessary to complete this exercise, though, in order that the reader may understand that Masonic Degrees are sexually oriented from the outset - contrary to the 'sanitised' as opposed to 'Satanised') impression given to the 'profane' (the Masonic word for the 'White') world, leading therefore inevitably at 'higher' (= lower) levels to debauchery and to widespread acceptance of it among the Masonic-political elite such as those who 'network' at the Bohemian Grove, when they are in an inebriated state or engaged in sexual excess. Therefore, the book on French Masonry states that 'the basis on which are founded the first three Degrees of practical ('exoteric') Masonry are as follows:

First Degree, Entered Apprentice: 'That the Apprentice, Bohaz (Boaz), the personification of Osiris or of Bacchus, coming to search for Truth [a lie - Ed.] in the Lodge, finds that he is a Male-God [i.e., he has for this purpose become a god already! - Ed.] and incomplete for the generation of beings'.

Second Degree, Fellow Craft: 'That the companion, Jackin (Jachin), personification of Isis or Venus, the Female-God, completes the Male-God by rendering possible the generation of beings'. In short, the false god cannot function alone.

Third Degree, Master Mason: "That the Master Mahabone or MacBenac is the Hermaphrodite... son of the sun and the earth", made full man in this ritual[54].

LIES AND MAKEBELIEVE AS THE FOCUS OF BLUE DEGREE FREEMASONRY

As we have seen, Albert Pike, the High Priest of contemporary Freemasonry, admitted that The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them, but it is intended that he shall imagine that he understands them'. So the lies begin at once. In the First Degree, the naive candidate is informed that:

- 'All originates by Generation, and not by Creation, which is only the simple induction of Generation'. This is the central lie of Freemasonry: that Creation arises because of Generation alone - an idiotic reversal, a childish and ignorant piece of nonsense which of course overlooks the facts that generation could never have started without a Creator, and that creative forces are needed to enable the act of generation to 'work'. The candidate is further lied to with this nonsense:
- Corruption or destruction follows Generation in all its works. (But Our Lord Jesus Christ teaches, and the Holy Spirit indelibly affirms to those who have allowed themselves, by one single act of will, to be called, that if we 'die' to sin and are 'born again' through repentance for our sins, we have fellowship with Him, a new life, and the hope of life eternal through His Glory and Grace. This is affirmed in Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 5, verse 17: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold all things are become new')[55].
- Regeneration restores, under other forms, the effects of destruction. This is the basis of the false Masonic doctrine, which takes hold of the initiate in 'higher' Degrees, of reincarnation, a totally reprobate invention which lacks credibility or foundation. For these reprobates, 'regeneration' is a Godless, mechanistic phenomenon.

Hand signals are extensively used by secret societies to reveal their affiliations to 'friends'. Addenda 9 and 10 on pages 732 and 734 et seq. provide examples of how Satanic signs are liable to be used these days by anyone from the President of the United States downwards, and illustrate the use of basic Masonic handshakes by prominent world figures, in a selection of pictures from the archives. The primary Masonic handshakes are named after the first three (Blue) Degrees:

- Jakin (Jachin): The Column or the female organ, uterus.
- Bohaz (Boaz): The Column, or the male generative organ, or the phallus: the sacred word of the First Degree, Entered Apprentice.
- Moabone, Mahabone (Ma-Ha-Bone): This demonic word means completed god; the Hermaphrodite: man is completed by the Degree of Master Mason, Third Degree.

Masonry has thus stolen the names of the two special pillars of the Temple for its depraved purposes, confusing Masons in the Lodge accordingly: see the Second Book of Chronicles, Chapter 3, verse 17, describing Solomon's Temple: 'And he reared up the pillars before the Temple, one on the right hand, and the other on the left; and called the name of that on the right hand Jachin, and the name of that on the left Boaz'.

GERMAN JEWISH ORIGINS OF THE AMERICAN SCOTTISH RITE

The 'Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite' originates from the rite called Scottish of Perfection or of Heredom, having 25 Degrees, which was 'worked' in Europe in the 18th century by Masons devoting themselves to occultism. Albert Pike says that 'in 1761, the Lodges and Councils of the superior Degrees being extended throughout Europe, Frederic II (Frederick the Great), King of Prussia, as Grand Commander of the Order of Princes of the Royal Secret, or 32 Degrees, was by general consent acknowledged

A
B
SOLVE
COAGULA
ELIPHA
EVI DEL

Figure 50A: This notorious drawing of Baphomet, by the French-Jewish Mason Eliphas Levi (Alphonse Louis Constant), stresses the Masonic-Satanic emphasis on sex, the creature being androgynous, with the winged staff representing the phallus. The original caption stated that Levi's goat is 'the horned god of the witches, symbol of sex incarnate'. Figure 50B: Performing the 'Five Points of Fellowship', at the Third Degree, replicating the pentalpha of the Kabbalah. The Master whispers 'Mah-hah-bone' in the candidate's ear, after which the candidate whispers the same magick word in the Master's ear. It means: phallus.

and recognized as Sovereign and Supreme Head of the Scottish Rite'[56].

'On the 25th October 1762, the Grand Masonic Constitutions were finally ratified in Berlin and proclaimed for the government of all Masonic bodies working in the Scottish Rite over the two hemispheres; and in the same year they were submitted to the Jew, Stephen Morin, who had been appointed... in August 1761, Inspector General for the New World by the Grand Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret, convened at Paris, under the Presidency of Chaillon de Joinville, representative of Frederick (the Great) and Substitute General of the Order.... The 33rd Degree was not then created; and under Frederic the Great, there was no rank higher than the 32nd Degree...'[57].

This statement definitively affirms the supremacy of Berlin as the central authority governing Scottish Rite Freemasonry in both Europe and America, and its seniority over the Political Action Centre established by Giuseppe Mazzini, of Jewish extraction, in Rome (The Vatican). Morin travelled to Santo Domingo, where he was joined by two fellow Jews, Moses M. Hays and Henry Andrew Francken, who founded a branch of the rite in Jamaica, while Hays was entrusted with founding Lodges in North America. Hays duly established a 'Sublime Lodge of Perfection' in Boston, of which he constituted himself Grand Master, and charged a fellow Jew and Mason, one Isaac Dacosta, who had founded the St Andrew Lodge in Boston, with the mission of introducing Masonry into South Carolina. On 27 th August 1766, Brother Morin's patent was revoked by the Grand Body in Paris for 'propagating strange and monstrous doctrines', and handed to a Brother Martin. [But] Morin continued constituting chapters with Dacosta, a full 17 years after his Freemasonic patent had been annulled. In 1783, he inaugurated 'The Grand Lodge of Perfection' in Charleston, with Dacosta as its Grand Master - this unofficial, unauthorised behaviour thus accounting for the strange, subsequent 'parallelism' of the ideological centre consolidated in 1870 by Albert Pike in Charleston, after the American Civil War, with its countervailing revolutionary Vatican-based Political Action Centre.

Morin was succeeded by another Jew, Joseph M. Meyers. It suited the Jews concerned to continue with the Jerusalem connection, and when the Grand Council of Princes of Jerusalem was established at Charleston on 20th February 1788, Meyers was one of the Deputy-Inspectors who established it. The two Masonic powers at Boston and Charleston created numerous Lodges and inner shrines in the United States, and each gave themselves the titles of Mother Lodges of the United States[58].

A Lodge at Albany, New York, was transmitting reports to Berlin, the seat of the Prussian Monarchy, as early as 1770. It is clear that the Prussians were using the New World's burgeoning Masonic network for espionage operations, and were employing Jews for that purpose. Pope Clement XII had excommunicated Freemasons as early as 1738. But the Jewish Masons, who obviously did not belong to the Catholic Church, continued promoting the cult in the United States in pursuit of their secret Kabbalistic agenda. On 15th May 1781, at a convention of Deputy-Inspectors called by Hays and Meyers at Philadelphia, Moses Cohen was named Deputy Inspector of Jamaica, as Francken, originally appointed by Stephen Morin to found Lodges there, had neglected his mandate. It was not long before another Jewish Freemason, Hyman Isaac Long the son of a Dutch writer called Isaac Long arrived in Jamaica, having derived his 'powers' from Morin. In addition to Francken, Hays and Moses Cohen, there was another prominent Jewish Mason associated with them at the time, called Spitzer. All seemed to be bent on spreading (anti-Christian) Masonry in North America, as though motivated by the 'seething powers' of Lucifer, and driven by them to cut short the Christian heritage of the earlier

Figure 51: The United States is infested with innumerable Masonic and sub-Masonic organisations, almost all of which use the term The Order, revealing that they are 'compartmentalised' components of the Illuminati-Rosicrucian 'Order of the Quest'. The common feature of all these diversionary 'Orders' is that they deny the unique divinity of God and promulgate syncreticism. Some, like participants in 'Cedarism', and the Shriners, wear occultic headgear. All consume private financial resources and time, and divert their victims from the Truth. ■

AUXILIARY U.S. MASONIC BODIES

'ORDERS' SUPPORTING MASONIC DECEPTION OPS. FOR MEN

- THE SHRINERS, or the Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine, are an 'Order' 'appendant' to Freemasonry. Up to 2000, it was necessary to COMPLETE the Scottish or York Rites so as to be eligible for Shrine membership. Today, any Master Mason can join. Although known for lavish and boisterous conventions, their strange 'fez' hat and charitable works (hospitals etc), members take a hideous blood oath during a bizarre Masonic-occultic initiation rite. The sole requirement is that the Shrine petitioner must vaguely believe in a 'Supreme Being'. This is another syncretist trap for the unwary.

- TALL CEDARS OF LEBANON (Cedarism): 'Brethren' appear in occultic conical hats and use a cross+hexagram (sorcery symbol).

- THE ELKS, which began life in North America as the 'Jolly Corks'. Members are 'Brothers' and the network uses the Masonic Lodge system, with a Grand Lodge. The Elks' Lodges maintained guest quarters which were forerunners of modern hotel chains like Holiday Inn. This is a fraternity only, with significant Jewish membership.

FOR WOMEN

- ORDER OF THE EASTERN STAR: A Masonic organisation for women AND MEN which self-proclaims itself to be 'not part of the Masonic institution'. However a published address by a certain Worthy Matron insists:'... yet we are connected with Masonry by intimate and tender ties'. One ritual document reads: 'Ladies, you are connected with Masonry by ties far more intimate and tender than you are aware of, or that I can ever inform you of' - which leaves little scope for doubt as to what was meant. A man must be a Master Mason (+) in good standing, and a woman can only join if she has a dose relative who is a Master Mason. Both sexes must take blood oaths. This 'Order' justifies its existence as a mechanism for enabling certain Masonic secrets to be replicated and perpetuated between the sexes. Detailed investigations reveal that the Eastern Star 'Order' is riddled with familiar Kabbalistic pagan sorcery, rituals, symbols and trickery.
- DAUGHTERS OF THE NILE [Egypt = The Darkness].
- WHITE SHRINE • PINK SERPENTS [Ultra-secret informers],

FOR TEENAGERS

- THE ORDER OF DE MOLAY: Like many sub-groups, open information on this 'Order' disclaims Masonic connections, specifically any links with the Knights Templar. However this is the best-known US 'fishing net' designed to capture naive youth for Freemasonry, and thus to divert their lives towards Lucifer at the earliest feasible age. In the open community, such pressures on young people have been joined by the Illuminati-controlled pagan, sex-oriented pop culture.

- INTERNATIONAL ORDER OF THE RAINBOW FOR GIRLS: Established by the 'Rev'. Sexson in 1922 as a youth organisation for girls from a Masonic or Eastern Star home. The blurb says that while 'The Order' uses some of Christian Scripture, the only membership requirement is 'belief in a Supreme Being', with Christian lessons used just to show 'basic values integral to many religions'. Subtle, subversive syncretism.

- JOB'S DAUGHTERS: A Sub-Masonic Order for girls between 10 and 20, organised into 'Bethels' - like Masonic Lodges.

Deception
Enticement
Disorientation

American fathers. Thus the claims of Samuel Oppenheim concerning the importance of Jews within early US Masonry, cited on pages 274-276, are indisputable.

Isaac Long found his scope for action (subversion) too restricted in Jamaica, so he moved to Charleston, South Carolina, on the 33rd parallel. While the Mother Lodge at Boston failed to prosper, Long created other Lodges and brought in other rites (such as Royal Arch) under obedience to the Mother Lodge at Charleston. In 1775, Isaac Long travelled back to Europe, and did not return to the United States for six years. When he reappeared, he was clutching a plan to create a 33rd Degree rite, which he had developed while in Europe. He presided over the constitution of this rite, aided by the following further Jewish Masons: Dr Frederick Dalcho, Abraham Alexander, Isaac Auld and Emanuel de la Motta, all of whom were Sovereign Princes of Jerusalem, a title they had received from the Grand Master in Europe when receiving instructions to found Lodges abroad. According to Domenico Margiotta (also of Jewish extraction), 'he [Long] constituted this rite, taking twenty-five Degrees of the system of Heredom, six Templar grades in which were merged four Degrees (the 9th, 10th, 11th and 21st Degrees) borrowed from the German Illuminism of Adam Weishaupt, and two grades called Grades of Administration, the last of which supplanted the function of Deputy Inspector (Sovereign Prince of Jerusalem); and took the title of Sovereign Grand Inspector General, 33rd and last Degree. This was his crowning achievement [sic]. Isaac Long gave the institution the name of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, and the first great constitutions were signed at Charleston on May 31st 1801'. Isaac Long was succeeded by Albert Pike as Sovereign Commander Grand Master: so Pike inherited all the consolidated workings and rites of his Jewish colleagues and predecessors[59]. In Chapter 17 of her book 'Occult Theocrasy', Lady Queenborough states unequivocally that the 'Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite (America)' and the 'Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite (England)', founded 1761 is 'of Jewish origin and has 33 Degrees'.

It is of course at Charleston, as noted on the 33rd parallel, that the epicentre of US 'unpatented' Masonry is located, although other key US centres include the overbearingly gigantesque George Washington Masonic National Memorial in Alexandria, and the dark Masonic library located in Cedar Rapids, Iowa.

THE GREAT ARCHITECT, SORCERY, WICKED MEN AND DEVILS IN THE LODGE

Albert Pike, the successor of Isaac Long, was to conspire with Giuseppe Mazzini, the Italian Masonic revolutionary and modern organiser of the Mafia and of organised criminal drug-trafficking to procure the consolidation of what was intended to be a geo-masonic power centre, in parallel with Berlin. As Domenico Margiotta elaborated:

'The Mother Lodge of Boston had ceased functioning for some years but that of Charleston, reconstituted according to the new Scottish System in 33 Degrees, became the root of the tree which was to spread its branches over the entire world'. However, as Isaiah accurately prophesied [Isaiah, Chapter 5, verse 24], 'their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust; because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel'[60]. To complete the statement by the Italian high Mason, Margiotta: 'The Superior Lodge of the Grand Sovereign Inspectors General, in each country, was to be called the Supreme Council, and it is from the Supreme Council of Charleston that all the others were to emanate. It is thus the first Supreme Council of the Globe'. This conveniently 'forgets' that Morin's Berlin mandate had been revoked in 1766.

'Such is the origin of this rite which attracted Mazzini's attention for, during the years which preceded the taking of Rome by the army of Piedmont, he could see that the provisions of Isaac Long [in the United States] had been realised. So it was Pike, the successor of Long, himself the Sovereign Commander Grand Master, that the great revolutionary conspirator [Mazzini] sought as an ally in his work the object of which was the total destruction of the church'.

That we are indeed speaking of the House of Lucifer in the Synagogue of Satan, referred to in Jesus Christ's condemnation in the Book of Revelation, was reconfirmed by another Masonic writer, Blanchard, author of 'Knight Templarism Illustrated', cited by Lady Queenborough[61]: 'Let the authoritative teaching of Dr. Mackey [the Masonic writer Dr Albert Mackey] be continually borne in mind, that 'The mission and object of Masonry is the worship of the Great Architect of the Universe'.

'It follows that the Lodges must have something for their dupes to do, called worship [note this crucial open acknowledgement, like that of Albert Pike, that Masonry permanently and routinely deceives its own adepts, so that they are all what Lenin called 'Useful Idiots' - Ed.]. And what could wicked men and devils invent craftier or better suited to deceive the simple, than this very scheme of 'the Ancient Scottish Rite', which now rules the rites of the world' - and which Isaac Long and his Jewish Masonic co-conspirators, followed by Pike himself, scrabbled and concocted together, drawing from multiple sources - especially the Illuminati, the Templars and Jewish Kabbalism.

Note that Blanchard openly acknowledges that his Masonic 'Brothers' are dupes and 'wicked men and devils', replicating similar such open admissions by other key Masonic writers, including Albert Pike: indeed, to acknowledge that Masons are the scum of the earth seems to be a standard requirement for such authors. One of the most extraordinary features of these people, when they are in their 'right' minds, is that they know perfectly well what is right and wrong; so they fulfil Paul's proclamation that 'knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, [they] not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them' [Romans, Chapter 1, verse 32]. For Paul to have understood this could only of course have been possible through the Holy Spirit, since our rational minds tell us that for someone to recognise what is wrong, to say so publicly, and at the same time to promote what is wrong with the 'seething energies of Lucifer,' is completely irrational: which, of course, even in their 'righf minds, these people, who deceive and lie as a matter of routine, always are, which is just one of many reasons why they are so dangerous[62].

This entirely ersatz, concocted, falsely pretentious and poisonous 'Ancient Scottish Rite', Blanchard calmly concluded, seemingly unperturbed, 'seizes and appropriates all of religion, but its holiness and justice; and all of Christ, but his truth and his atonement. It mixes things sacred with things profane, till the whole compound is profanity; and quoting the Bible as if it believed it true, which notoriously it does not, it has furnished a dark system, which angels flee from and which devils inhabit. Every Lodge is a Synagogue of Satan and its ritual is Sorcery'[63].

Presidents of the United States are routinely 'honoured' by being made 33rd Degree Masons under the Scottish Rites. Let this be rephrased: Presidents of the United States are routinely invited to engage in ritual sorcery.

The 33rd Degree was conferred in the United States upon the son of the late Shah of Persia (Pahlavi), implying that it is intended that he should be restored in due course to his throne. Saddam Hussein was a Mason in the same Grand Orient Lodge of which Jacques Chirac was a member, during an early spell in Paris. Of the parallel Masonic status of Colonel Qadhaffi there is no doubt at all. Writing in 1933, Lady Queenborough, who carried out research for British intelligence, stated without qualification that the 'Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites' runs its own Secret Service which cooperates with the national Secret Services of all countries, thus serving the aims and purposes of Internationalism'[64]. This practice is directly descended from the fact, cited earlier, that, from the outset, the Prussians used the New World's burgeoning Masonic network for espionage operations, and were employing Jews for that purpose[65].

THE ABOLITION OF PROPERTY AND OTHER ABOMINATIONS

The essence of the internationalist revolutionary geomasonic agenda was exposed by another Jewish Mason, Paul Rosen, who in his work, also cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Satan et Cie', explicitly stated that the House of Lucifer seeks the total abolition of private property - that is to say, what follows clearly demonstrates the Masonic origins of Lenin's Communist World Revolution. Rosen, whose polemic entitled 'Satan and Company' (i.e., and his demons) was yet another of these Masons who are fully dedicated to the implementation of Lucifer's agenda, which of course focuses on the whole world, while at the same time exposing the fallacies of the methodology he is using. When the faux-allegorical garbage alluding to the assassinated Hiram Abiff, the make-believe legend invented by Masonry concerning the murder of the architect of Solomon's Temple, is stripped away from the associated verbiage here (it cannot be removed from this passage otherwise the language does not flow), the underlying raw intent to grab the assets of the whole world is exposed:

Official ritual of the 33rd and last Degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites: 'For the Sovereign Grand Inspector General the 33rd is the last Degree of the Rite. The Order is the Great Avenger of the assassinated Grand Master and the grand champion of humanity, for the innocent Grand Master is Man [not God - Ed.], Man who is Master, King of Nature, and who is born innocent and unconscious'.

'Our innocent Grand Master was born for happiness and for the enjoyment of all rights without exception. But he has fallen under the blows of three assassins, three scoundrels have thwarted his happiness and rights, and have annihilated him'.

'The three infamous assassins are Law, Property and Religion'.

'Law, because it is not in harmony with the rights of the individual man and the duties of social man in society, rights which belong to all. Duties are but the immediate consequence of the right inherent in all, for the enjoyment of all rights'.

'Property, because the earth belongs to nobody and its fruits belong to all in proportion as they are required by each for the needs of his own wellbeing'.

'Religion, because religions are but philosophies evolved by men of genius and adopted by the people in the belief that they would increase their wellbeing'.

'Neither Law, Property nor Religion can be imposed on man and as they annihilate him by depriving him of his most precious rights they are assassins on whom we [sic] have sworn to wreak vengeance, enemies against whom we have declared war to the death and without quarter. Of these three infamous enemies it is on Religion that we must concentrate our most deadly attacks on, because no people has ever survived its religion. Once Religion is dead, Law and Property will fall to our mercy, and we shall be able to regenerate society by founding, on the corpses of the assassins of Man, Masonic Religion, Masonic Law, and Masonic Property'.

So, from several Masonic 'horses' mouths, we can now state unequivocally, without fear of Masonic counterattack because it is the Masons' own spokesmen who have made the preceding statements, that:

- Both formal and 'True' Religion are to be replaced by Masonic substitutes, and as has been seen, Freemasonry is sorcery. Therefore all religion is to replaced by sorcery. Note: This is impossible in the case of True Christianity, a fact these people don't 'get'.
- Existing legal systems are to be replaced by an international Masonic legal system. Hence the orchestrated revolutionary confusion in the European Union context, where European Law (manufactured by the European Court of Justice, which does not exist to dispense justice, but specifically to further the interests of the corrupt Collective).
- Private property is to be collectivised. It is intended that a mere 5% of the world's population will own assets, with the rest (to be culled by population reduction measures) reduced to a form of controlled slavery.

It needs to be understood that this is the programme to which 33rd Degree Masons subscribe. They do so even as extremely wealthy owners of private property. Do they seriously believe that in such a destabilised, aggressive environment, they could hang on to their own assets?

MORE ABOMINATIONS FROM A HORSE'S MOUTH

Ralph Anderson, then a 32nd Degree Mason, said as follows in a speech in 1985, in which he mentioned a 'demonic spirit guide' which he called 'the Tibetan':

'A brief word about the future. The Tibetan [sic!] tells us: 'The three main channels through which the preparation of the New Age [of Aquarius, by which they mean after the total destruction of Christianity] is going on might be regarded as the church, the Masonic fraternity and the educational field. All of them are as yet [as of 1985] failing to meet the need and to respond to the inner pressure. But in all of these three movements, disciples of the Great Ones [referring to 'the gods', i.e. demons] are to be found and they are steadily gathering momentum and will before long enter upon their designated task'.

'He tells us further [i.e., Mr Anderson's familiar, or 'guiding spirit', tells him - Ed.]: 'The Masonic Movement when it can be divorced from politics and social ends and from its present paralysing condition of inertia, will meet the needs of those who can, and should, wield power. It is the custodian of the law; it is the home of the Mysteries [i.e., the Ancient Mysteries of divination, sorcery and magick - Ed.] and the seat of initiation [which, for the Christian, is unnecessary and an abomination - Ed.]. It holds in its symbolism the ritual of Deity and the way of salvation is pictorially preserved in its work. The methods of Deity are demonstrated in its Temples, and under the All-Seeing Eye the work can go forward. It is a far more occult organisation than can now be realised, and it is intended to be the training school for the coming advanced occultists. In its ceremonials lies hid the wielding of the forces connected with the growth and life of the kingdoms of nature and the unfoldment of the divine aspects in Man. In the comprehension of its symbolism will come the power to cooperate with the divine plan. It meets the needs of those who work on the first Ray of Will or Power'[66].

This 'high-level' Masonic Illuminist statement - in which the Masonic sorcerer openly acknowledged that the programme of cultural subversion he is proclaiming was spelled out to him at a top-level sorcerers' seance, where it was 'revealed' to him that the Christian churches (rotten of course from within) would be subverted and then converted into instruments of the World Geomasonic-Illuminati Rosicrucian Revolution, ('The Universal Church of Man') - contained the further statement that 'Great Ones', that is to say, corrupt disciples of Lucifer, who are driven by his 'seething energies' -were already operating deep within the churches, Freemasonry and education. With the passage of two decades since that statement was made, we can see how accurate these predictions, promulgated from a 'spirit guide', have turned out to be.

Churches are in confusion and are wracked by apostacy and scandal over female bishops and homosexuality; the Masonic movement, upon which the Illuminati have piggy-backed since the 18th century, controls all the high offices of state, of the judiciary, the intelligence services, the bureaucracies, politics and all the important levers of power; and the education system has been converted into a manipulative mind-personality modification and outcome-based propaganda machine. Additionally, these sorcerers have commandeered the entire entertainment industry, the media, components of the Internet and the broadcasting organisations, by various means (especially corruption), ensuring that children are bombarded with pornography and are taught deviant sex at an early age. There is therefore nothing that Ralph Anderson's demon predicted that has not come to pass. Brought up in this environment, the minds of most British journalists are concentrated on trivia, the corrosive and sterile celebrity culture, gutter journalism and prurient, obsessive-destructive character-assassination reporting.

INCOMPATIBILITY OF MASONRY WITH GOOD GOVERNANCE

Before briefly elaborating on the structure of Freemasonry and especially some of the seats of its administrative centres, a number of findings from our investigation to date are worth summarising at this stage. The Author uses his invented word, Geomasonry, to describe both the open structures of Freemasonry, and the secret societies - composing a global system of synarchy (rule or intended rule by secret societies) - which hide behind it.

Authority for this statement is obtained once again from the writings of Lady Queenborough, who, noting that, to her knowledge, 'the last of the Grand Masters of the Rose Croix' operating as a stand-alone secret society was the Jew, Johann Christian Wolff, who, like many hyperactive Jews operating in intelligence on their own or a sovereign's account, carried the name 'Christian' to disguise his Jewish extraction. According to the Grand Lodge of England, proclamation of a document known as the Anderson Constitution under King George II marked and sanctioned the emergence of British Freemasonry into the open[67]. Anderson was one of seven overt 'founders' of Freemasonry who were all Gnostics and Magi (sorcerers) of the Rose Croix, originally imported from 14th century Germany and elaborated by Sir Francis Bacon. The other six Rosicrucian sorcerers were Theophile Desaguliers (named Chaplain of the Prince of Wales by George II), George Payne, James King Calvert, Lumsden-Madden, and Elliott[68]. These Rosicrucians were heirs of the first sorcerer-gnostic dedicated to rivalry with - and the perversion or destruction of - True Christianity, Simon Magus. Rosicrucianism perpetuates the magick sorcery and mythology of 'the ancients' of the Babylonian Kabbalah, Egypt and the Druids; and it is Jewish. The most interesting mystery of all is encased in the fact that it is also German. Certain power-families operating and competing among themselves behind this screen, for global control, such as the Rothschilds, the Rockefellers and the Bushes, are originally from Germany, or else have deep German connections (historically), and are either Jewish or have intermarried with Jews. Once Freemasonry was out in the open, 'it was to be the universal screen behind which all secret societies, whether theurgic or political, would [come to] operate clandestinely'[69]. Since all intelligence agencies are basically occult secret societies - a fact with which a prominent and distinguished British analyst agreed, when the proposition was put to him - intelligence agencies must be included among the large number of secret societies which function behind the screen of Freemasonry. "Thus it came about, Lady Queenborough asserts, 'that all blows dealt to Christianity and [to] States were prepared by the secret societies, acting behind the veil of Masonry'[70]. Accordingly:

- It is necessary to understand the 'screen function' of geomasonry in order to perceive correctly how the innumerable secret societies relate to it. Secret societies include not only intelligence services, but organised criminal communities with which they cooperate, such as Mazzini's M.A.F.I.A., the Chinese Triads, the Japanese Yakuza, and the myriad drug-running cartels including those established by US intelligence in Latin America and the two drug cartels controlled or facilitated by the British intelligence cadre GO-2 from within the bowels of that broadly treacherous internationalist intelligence organisation called MI6. Collaboration between intelligence communities, their fractions and controlling barons, and organised crime - since all are typically engaged in clandestine criminal operations (although of course there are many 'White-haf intelligence officers, too) - is one of the gravest and most intractable of the poisonous evils that bedevil our crumbling civilisation today; and since all who matter are corrupted, calls for root-and-branch reform, in such a corrupted environment, fall on stone-deaf ears.
- Geomasonry - including of course attached, hidden Rosicrucianism - is the custodian of the Kabbalah, and is indeed a primary component of the faux-Jewish Synagogue of Satan referred to by Our Lord Jesus Christ as twice revealed to John, in Revelation, Chapter 2, verse 9: 'I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan': and in Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 9: 'Behold... them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie'. In order to bring out the 'screening' function of Freemasonry, this Author describes

ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS

'OUTER' MANIFESTATION OF A PARTICULARLY REVOLTING ILLUMINATI SECRET SOCIETY

The repulsive glorying in Satanic exhibitionism perpetrated at the 51st Eurovision Song Contest on 20th May 2006 by a Finnish nutcase calling himself Lordi, represented an open display of what the Luciferians have in mind, and intend. The platform used for this televised display of filth is one of many that has been annexed by Dark Actors Playing Games on behalf of the Illuminati, as a means of spreading Satanism into the public domain. Over nine million brainwashed and misguided Britons watched this TV abomination, which was welcomed by 'Useful Idiot' talking heads as 'a victory for open-mindedness'. The message here is that we should all open our minds to infestation by demons, and that such preoccupations, like pornography, are respectable 'these days'. One of the myriad secret societies pushing such Luciferian filth is Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O), an operation with German illuminati roots which is dealt with more fully from page 456.

This secret society nesting 'behind' Freemasonry and mimicking it for its Satanic rites (it is less secret than it was, as it advertises today for members on the Internet), uses Masonic and occult symbols, including a triangle, sun-rays and the all-seeing eye [see Figure 69, page 457]. A German Jew named Karl Keller founded the Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO) - in German, Orientalischer Templer-Orden - around the turn of the 20th century, as a ritual magick cultural control and transformation organisation which has since acquired immense influence within the US military, intelligence community and the US space progamme. It teaches and promulgates sex-oriented magick derived from Greek mythological, Egyptian and Kabbalah sources. The British intelligence officer, Aleister Crowley, the self-styled 'Great Beast 666' (who stole this title from its rightful owner: see Chapter 6), who was called 'the Wickedest Man in the World' by the old British publication, John Bull, attached himself to the organisation and became head of its British affiliate, and ultimately the head of the organisation - to which the alleged DVD agent George Bush Sr. allegedly belongs.

To the heterosexual Ninth Degree Crowley added a homosexual Eleventh Degree, mingling his amendments to O.T.O.'s gobbledegook with the ritual laid down by P. B. Randolph of the US-based Fraternitas Rosae Crucis [see main text]. Crowley 'perfected' this ritual during three years spent (1920-23) in the Abbey of Thelema in Sicily. In 1922, Aleister Crowley succeeded Theodore Reuss, a Jewish Berlin-based War Correspondent whose mail was held in London for him by Messrs Henry Klein & Co., at their offices in 84 Oxford Street, London. On Reuss's death in 1947, another German Jew, Karl Johannes Germer, succeeded to the outer headship of The Order (as of course it calls itself). Germer had operated with Crowley in England, but had returned to his native Germany in the 1930s, despite his Jewish background. ■

Freemasonry alone as the House of Lucifer. In Chapter 7, the geomasonic sect of the Illuminati is described as the Synagogue of Satan, because this broader penetrating sect, originating in its modern format in Germany and with heavy Jewish content, consists of crime families and Masonic and non-Masonic members of a large number of these secret societies (such as the Black Satanic sect Ordo Templi (Mentis [see box on page 305, and page 456], originally from Germany [Chapter 7]) free-riding behind the Masonic screen.

Both categories recognise each other through the use of secret hand signals, occult phrases and the use of Masonic and occult symbols (as observed in the symbols of different branches of the US Federal Government, displayed in Figures 48 and 49 on pages 289 and 293, and in the logos or Masonic colours of large multinational corporations). Nation states such as Nicaragua and El Salvador, and many other countries, which have long since been co-opted into the 'fraternity', have flags and symbols that are overtly Masonic, with triangles, circles, suns-and-rays, the lot. These symbols are deliberately upheld, to inform 'the interested' that the government department, multinational corporation, or nation state in question orders its affairs in conformity with Masonic norms - meaning that it accepts all the 'standards' proclaimed by geomasonry. Since these include the abolition of private property and the degradation of civilised society, such adherence is completely at loggerheads with the interests of the government department, corporation or nation state concerned - an illogical state of affairs that seems to be accepted as 'normal', because such contradictions come naturally to the 'double-minded'. Whether these glaring contradictions reflect ignorance and confusion in the twisted minds of those responsible for the relevant decisions, or whether they reflect the geomasonic 'secret knowledge' of the tension between the two 'opposing forces' or phanes (the dialectic), is really impossible to say. Who knows what goes on in the confused minds of these certifiably deluded madmen? What can be said is that it should come as no surprise that these contradictions not only exist, but are openly advertised - since the Prince of this World, Lucifer, is the author of all lies and confusion. These people have eyes, but they cannot see.

It will be recalled from page 274 that Dr Isaac M. Wise, writing in 'The Israelite' dated 3rd August 1855, asserted categorically that 'Masonry is a Jewish institution whose history, Degrees, charges, passwords, and explanations are Jewish from the beginning to the end, with the exception of only one by-Degree and a few words in the obligation'. Other authorities, from Samuel Oppenheim to Lady Queenborough, separately concur. The by-Degree to which Dr Wise referred was NOT the Rose Croix. It follows from the assessments of these authorities alone that Rosicrucianism, encapsulating the sorcery of the Kabbalah, is likewise of Jewish origin.

- Geomasonry conducts, in every Lodge, as has been affirmed, the rituals of Kabbalistic sorcery. To cite just one historical provenance of the introduction of overt sorcery into Masonic ritual, Moses Holbrook, the Jewish Grand Master or Sovereign Commander of the Supreme Council of Charleston, had earlier co-formed a project for creating a Satanic rite in which the adepts would be instructed in Black Magic; but Holbrook, who had already composed a suitable ritual and sacreligious mass called the Adonaicide Mass (Adonay being these reprobates' name for Jesus Christ), had died, retarding completion of the project. Albert Pike fulfilled on a gigantic scale the 'dream of the Jew, Moses Holbrook, to subvert Masonry'. So Masonry was further, and irrevocably, impregnated with the full spectrum of Jewish Babylonian Kabbalistic sorcery, thanks mainly to the delusions of the occultist, Albert Pike[71].

Figure 52: In the United States, Freemasonry, which is a slow-motion introduction and enticement to infestation and possession by Evil Spirit and is the road to perdition adopted by large numbers of men (and women} whose ignorance of the purpose of Freemasonry is knowingly exploited by its controllers*, is separated into three groups. The foolish initiate starts by entering into the Blue Lodge (first three Degrees). He can then select either or both the York Rite and the Scottish Rite method of 'advancement' (Luciferian indoctrination). Later he can petition for membership of the Shrine, although this is now open to a much wider group of applicants. An especially committed Mason who has wasted much of his life in these activities can be raised by the [witch]Craft leadership to the 33rd Degree. See Figure 51 on page 299 for details of selected US auxiliary Masonic bodies (of which there is a large number). Most people never look below the surface of anything, or prefer not to be troubled with the facts. But the reality is that several of the Masonic founders of the United States, including Benjamin Franklin and Thomas Jefferson, were 'Deists'. The primary feature of this aberration is that while God (whom Masons start by calling the Great Architect of the Universe) created everything, he then fell asleep or isolated Himself from the entire creation and allowed everything to operate on its own - a heresy which is the very essence of the teachings of Freemasonry. By means of this device, an elite arrogates to itself the 'right', procured by means of occultic initiation rites, to become 'masters' of mankind, ordering its affairs on behalf of the 'Brotherhood of Man', which is code for the fraternity of 'the interested', i.e. those who have undergone the necessary secret initiations. Masons who think they can combine Christianity and Freemasonry are sadly deluded, and lost: 'Ye have forsaken the commandments of the Lord, and followed Ba'alim... How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him, but if Ba'al, then follow him' [1 Kings, Chapter 18, verses 18-21]. 'No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon' [Luke, Chapter 16, verse 13]. Masonic participation is contrived to ensure that this truth is wiped from their minds.

THE STRUCTURES OF OVERT U.S. AND U.K. FREEMASONRY

33 Sovereign Grand Inspector General

*{ Order of the Knights of Malta 13
Order of the Knights Templar 12
Order of the Knights of the Red Cross 11
Super Excellent Master 10
Select Master 9
Royal Master 8
Royal Arch Mason 7
Most Excellent Master 6
Past Master 5
Mark Master Mason 4

Chapter Degrees

* In U.S. listings, Knights Templar = 13

32 Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret
31 Grand Inquisitor Commander [Inspector]
30 Grand Elected Knight Kadosh
29 Grand Scottish Knight of St Andrew
28 Knight of the Sun, Adept [or Prince Adept]
27 Knight [Sovereign] Commander of the Temple
26 Prince of Mercy or Scotch Trinitarian
25 Knight of the Brazen Serpent
24 Prince of the Tabernacle
23 Chief of the Tabernacle
22 Prince of Libanus or Knight of the Royal Axe
21 Patriarch Noachite or Prussian Knight
20 Grand Master of All Symbolic Lodges
19 Grand Pontiff or Sublime Scotch Mason
18 Knight Rose Croix[4]
17 Knight of the East and West
16 Prince of Jerusalem
15 Knight of the East [Knight of the Sword]
14 Perfect Elu [Scottish Knight of Perfection][3]
13 Royal Arch of Solomon [Royal Arch of Enoch][2]
12 [Grand] Master Architect
11 Sublime Knight Elect [Elu of Twelve]
10 Illustrious Master Elect of Fifteen [Elu of Fifteen]
09 Elected Knight of Nine [Elu of Nine]
08 Intendant of the Buildings
07 Provost and Judge
06 Confidential Secretary[1]
05 Perfect Master
04 Secret Master

Notes to Scottish Rite Degrees:
1. Or Intimate Secretary.
2. Or Knight of the 9th Arch.
3. Or Grand Scottish Knight of the Second Vault or Sublime Mason.
4. Or Knight of the Eagle and Pelican, Sovereign Prince Rose Croix of H.R.D.M.

BLUE LODGE
03 MASTER MASON
02 FELLOW CRAFT
01 ENTERED APPRENTICE

'It is not intended that the initiate should understand; but it is intended that he shall imagine that he understands': A. Pike

- 'Geomasonry' runs its own Secret Service which cooperates with the national Secret Services of all countries, thus serving the aims and purposes of Internationalism'. This Author submits, therefore, that not only are intelligence services occult secret societies, as mentioned, but that they are essentially merged with, complementary to, and impregnated with, Masonic networks worldwide, so that any 'Chinese walls' erected within national intelligence services that may be intended cosmetically to preserve national secrets, are easily penetrated, unreliable and vulnerable to being ignored. This means that Masonically-impregnated intelligence services, which are all to a greater or lesser extent interpenetrated by competing domestic and foreign intelligence operatives, do not, and cannot, serve the national interests of the governments formally employing them, but can and must only serve the internationalist agenda. This, in turn, is clearly a Luciferian-Satanic agenda that can never be moulded to suit national interests, as nation states are intended by the geomasonic-Illuminati fraternity, which owes allegiance only to itself (leaving aside its allegiance to Lucifer), to be abolished. Given this state of affairs, it follows that all intelligence services pose a grave threat to the integrity and interests of the national governments to which they are supposed to be loyal. As has already been reported, one veteran senior US intelligence expert told the Author that, when undertaking momentous and hazardous operations overseas on instructions received from the highest levels, he and his colleagues 'did not realise at the time' that they were not actually working for Uncle Sam, but were really working for the Illuminati. This is certainly the most 'illuminating' (and honest) first-hand evidence obtained by the Author to corroborate the assessments contained in this book.
- Illuminised geomasonry is by definition lawless, harbouring an intention to replace all laws with its own - a fact that accounts for the ready, arrogant and self-acknowledged criminality of elements of certain intelligence services. After all, if a primary long-range objective of the geomasonic agenda is to undermine the law, why should we be surprised any longer that the US intelligence community routinely breaks domestic and international laws with relish and impunity, protected behind the barrier of the National Security Act of 1947 et seq.? Why should anyone be interested in the abominable fact that GO-2 controls two drug-trafficking cartels from MI6 headquarters in Lambeth, and with the proceeds supervises the illegal distribution of drug-derived money to the controlled British political parties and schools? So, these secret societies calling themselves intelligence services, which purport to be working for their own governments, break the laws of their own and foreign governments - and yet rely upon the laws of their nation states when they want to enforce their own dark interests. One should never underestimate the vituperative venom and ruthlessly determined anger with which criminalised US intelligence operatives, for instance, rush to the law courts to proliferate false witness against fellow operatives with whom they are in murderous dispute - or against impertinent outsiders who, their paranoid minds imagine, threaten to disturb the criminalised environment which they are accustomed to exploit for their own personal benefit, as well as to enrich the intelligence community generally so that it operates as an untouchable power far beyond the reach and control of the Legislative Branch.
- Geomasonry is determined to procure the abolition of all private property. It is accordingly unsurprising that both Britain and the United States have placed, and are placing, on their respective Statute Books, dictatorial legislation providing inter alia for the arbitrary confiscation of private property without compensation: for that is exactly what is intended, once all levels of the oppressive infrastructure have been put in place,

and Soviet-style Communism (an Illuminati product) is ready to be imposed from above. This is the true Leninist meaning of the Soviet Academy of Leninist Sciences' word 'convergence'. In the United States, bankruptcy laws were overturned with effect from 17th October 2005, so that the authorities acquired the power to seize the assets of those individuals who would formerly have filed for bankruptcy.

- Geomasonry is the ruthlessly determined enemy of True Christianity, and seeks to annexe and reorientate all false and apostate formal religious organisations, not least as one means of undermining the family, which is the key to destroying private property (according to the distorted, brainwashed 'thinking' of these people). Mikhail Gorbachev's reiteration of the geomasonic war on religion, which must be won before 'Communism' can be imposed and consolidated, was summarised in his statement on 15th December 1987 in Uzbekistan: 'There must be no let-up in the war against religion because as long as religion exists Communism cannot prevail. We must intensify the obliteration of all religions wherever they are being practiced or taught'. Gorbachev is a Jew, whose real name is Orbach or Korbach. 'Religion' has to be 'abolished', and yet Masons refer to their gobbldegook as the 'Masonic Religion'- revealing yet again the double-minded Satanic lies, chaos and confusion inherent in their own perverted logic, which is based 100% on cynicism and deception. At the same time, it is clear that, since the intelligence services are united and merged with, and duplicated by, geomasonry, and are de facto servants of the Illuminati, they are by definition likewise anti-religious and thus inherently ill-disposed towards Scripture, and the Way, the Truth and the Life. Certain US intelligence cadres are interested in 'organised religion' solely as yet another transmission mechanism for 'the transformation of humanity'.

- The greatest importance is attached by the 'hidden' Illuminati geomasonic controllers to esoteric preoccupations: At the highest levels, this involves elaborate operations to manipulate the mass consciousness, with a watchful All-Seeing Eye, by means of a network of intelligence-linked organisations and power brokers that were 'described by Walter Bowart in his 1978 classic work, 'Operation Mind-Control', as the "Cryptocracy". The Cryptocracy is not a myth; it seeks to transform humanity through an alchemical processing of the mass consciousness or Group Mind which involves various tests and corresponding responses through channels linked to secret societies'[72] - the same synarchy that operates behind the screen of Freemasonry. 'The result is both psychological and cultural control; but, more importantly, transformation. The Cryptocracy has essentially kept the mind of the masses cooking in a cauldron like a Renaissance alchemist, and occasionally tastes, adds ingredients, and stirs'[73]. The consequences of this relentless offensive can be seen by contemplating the truly appalling condition of the British press, which, within the space of just a few months in 2005, descended almost in unison into the far depths, filling pages with sterile scandal, celebrity 'junk news', salacious gossip, empty editorialising, fatuously superficial argumentation, a sharp reduction of international reporting, open advocacy for the drug culture, and other aberrations too numerous to list - with no diminution of the familiar British journalistic opinionated arrogance.

Two further dimensions of geomasonry remain to be considered. First, as a means of gaining an understanding of the heterogeneous make-up of this false 'religion', and showing how its Luciferian progenitors have cherry-picked occult sorcery rites and inventions from several primary occult sources, a summary of the origins of the 33 Degrees of just the 'Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite' (America) and of the 'Ancient and Accepted Rite' (England), will be helpful. While Freemasonry is, by the admission not only of prominent Jewish historians but on the evidence of history and non-Jewish analysts, profoundly and wholly Jewish, occultic rites have been annexed to 'speculative Masonry' from reprobate sources other than the Kabbalah. Secondly, an outline of the global geomasonic control mechanisms, and their locations in Europe, not the United States, will shed further light on the 'division of powers' between Pike and Mazzini.

Concerning the second point, close advisers of the Author who are in touch with operatives possessing 'the highest clearance' - which means intelligence clearances that are higher than that of the President of the United States, namely occult clearances - are adamant, and the Author agrees, that the primary occult geomasonic controlling power centres are located in Europe, not the United States. This would be consistent with our knowledge that the United States is an experimental consequence of a German-originated Rosicrucian operation originally spearheaded by Sir Francis Bacon whose ultimate loyalty was not to the British Sovereign. It is also consistent with the fact [see below] that the primary geomasonic aclministrative centre was and remains Berlin. This reality is paralleled by the importance of the Vatican as a geopolitical centre of the Illuminati, consolidated since Giuseppe Mazzini assumed total control over 'political action' in Rome. Given the involvement of European current and former Royalty, such sources say that 'the Europeans are fighting it out among themselves' - with the Germans prevailing.

THE STRUCTURE OF JEWISH SCOTTISH RITE ROSICRUCIAN FREEMASONRY

Lady Queenborough provides the following breakdown of the overt 'origins' of the 33 Degrees of the 'Scottish Rite' dimension of geomasonry. She prefaced this breakdown with the statement that 'John H. Cowles, Supreme Grand Commander for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States, 1929, stated that 'this rite, of Jewish origin, has 33 Degrees'[74], which are named as follows:

- Symbolic or Blue Masonry: The Craft Degrees, which are practically the same in the United States as under the Grand Lodge of England, Scotland and Ireland, consist of: 1: Entered Apprentice; 2: Fellow Craft; 3: Master Mason: All of Jewish origin. In these Degrees, candidates are lied to and comprehensively deceived and misled. 'It is not intended that [the Blue Degree Mason] shall understand [the false interpretations]. But it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them': Albert Pike. The overt 'origins' of the subsequent 30 Degrees are indicated in italics where known:

- Red Masonry or Chapters: These Degrees are conferred in a so-called Lodge of Perfection, and the presiding officer must be of the 16th Degree, at least. Although, as has been reviewed, both Jewish and Gentile authorities explicitly confirm that the Scottish Rite Degrees and rituals are of Jewish origin, this origin is technically 'disguised' by intelligence to the effect that a significant proportion of them are asserted to be 'of Illuminati origin': but this 'comes to the same thing', since the Illuminati are also extensively Jewish and wedded to the Kabbalah. The Illuminati set out in the late 18th century to penetrate and piggy-back on open Freemasonry, as well as to use Freemasonry as a screen behind which to carry out their global hegemony 'mission' which German 'forces' have consistently used as cover for Germany's transnational hegemony objective (the Thousand-Year Reich). Jewish Masons 'worked over' all the 'workings' and consolidated the Jewishness of this elaborate trap set for Christians. As will also be noted, a number of the higher Degrees are of Templar origin; but the Templars at times controlled Rosicrucian rituals[75]. It can also be seen that all these sorcery strands are interrelated.

4: Secret Master. Of Illuminati origin.
5: Perfect Master. Of Illuminati origin.
6: Intimate Secretary. Of Illuminati origin.
7: Provost and Judge. Of Illuminati origin.
8: Intendant of the Buildings. Of Illuminati origin.
9: Elected Knight of Nine, or Elect of Nine. Of specifically Jewish origin.
10: Illustrious Master elect of Fifteen. Of specifically Jewish origin.
11: Sublime Knight Elect. Of specifically Jewish origin.
12: Grand Master Architect. Of Illuminati origin.
13: Royal Arch of Enoch, or Knight of the 9th Arch, or Royal Arch of Solomon. Of Illuminati origin.
14: Scottish Knight of Perfection, or Grand Scottish Knight of the Sacred Vault, or Sublime Mason. Of Illuminati origin.

- Council of Princes of Jerusalem:

The next two Degrees are conferred by such a Council of Princes of Jerusalem: 15: Knight of the East, or Knight of the Sword. Of Illuminati origin. 16: Prince of Jerusalem. Of Illuminati origin.

- Chapter of the Princes of Rose-Croix:

The next two Degrees are conferred by a Chapter of Princes of Rose-Croix: 17: Knight of the East and West. Oflllluminati origin.
18: Knight of the Eagle and Pelican, Sovereign Prince Rose Croix of H.R.D.M. (Heredom). Of specifically Templar origin.

- Black Masonry: Also called Philosophical Lodges, or Areopagi:

These Degrees are conferred in a Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret:
19: Grand Pontiff or Sublime Scottish Mason. Of specifically Templar origin.
20: Grand Master of all Symbolic Lodges. Of specifically Templar origin.
21: A Patriarch Noachite, or Prussian Knight. Of specifically Jewish origin.
22: Prince of Libanus, or Knight of the Royal Axe. Origin unknown or unstated
23: Chief of the Tabernacle. Of specifically Templar origin.
24: Prince of the Tabernacle. Of specifically Templar origin.
25: Knight of the Brazen Serpent. Of specifically Templar origin.
26: Prince of Mercy or Scotch Trinitarian. Of specifically Templar origin.
27: Sovereign Commander of the Temple. Of specifically Templar origin.
28: Knight of the Sun or Prince Adept. Origin unknown or unstated.
29: Grand Scottish Knight of St Andrew. Of specifically Templar origin.
30: Grand Elected Knight Kadosch. Of specifically Templar origin.
30: France: Illustrious Knight of the Temple. Of specifically Templar origin.
30: France: Knight of the White and Black Eagle. Of specifically Templar origin
30: France: Grand Elected Knight Kadosch. Of specifically Templar origin.[76]

According to the Jew Paul Rosen, in 'Satan et Cie' [page 142] repeatedly cited by Lady Queenborough: 'The philosophy of the Degree of Kadosch (30°), the apotheosis and real aims of Masonic teaching, can be summed up in the following words:

'I, I alone, All mine, All for me, by any and every means'[77].

This is, of course, 100% the reverse of the Word of Jesus Christ: that we live for Him and by Him, whose Holy Spirit gently leads us to the Way, the Truth and the Life: 'If ye continue in my word' (through Scripture), 'then are ye my disciples; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free' [see page 1]. By contrast, the Kabbalistic 'Tree of Life' that is unfolded to adepts in, for instance, the 18th (Rosicrucian) Degree of the Scottish (Jewish) Rite, is in fact that same Tree of Life that was growing in the Garden of Eden, of the fruit of which Eve ate, which teaches how to evoke evil spirits and Satan himself. Since Satan is the author of all lies, the 'truth' purveyed via the 'Ancient Mysteries' revealed by eating the fruit of the 'Tree of Life' is a lie - leading not to life, as with Christ, but to the opposite: death. The Tree of Life is itself a lie: it is The Tree of Death.

There are, Rosen explained, seven different ways of carrying out the programme of: 'I, I alone, All mine, All for me, by any and every means' - and 'consequently' seven sorcery grades of Knight Kadosch, namely:

30.1: The Jewish Kadosch.
30.2: The Primitive Christian Kadosch.
30.3: The Kadosch of the Crusades.
30.4: The Kadosch of the Templars.
30.5: The Kadosch of the Puritan.
30.6: The Kadosch of the Jesuit.
30.7: The Scottish Kadosch, alone true Freemasonry [sic][78].

• White Masonry, which is Administrative and consists of three Degrees, conferred by the Supreme Councils:
31: Grand Inquisitor Commander. Ostensible Origin not revealed.
32: Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret. Ostensible Origin not revealed.
33: Sovereign Grand Inspector General[79]. Ostensible Origin not revealed.

ASSERTED ORIGINS AND OBJECTIVES OF THE SCOTTISH RITE

The 'Scottish Rite' emerged, according to the French historian Le Forestier, 'from the Chapter of Clermont, as a development of the Ramsay Rite. Its foundation dates from 1748, at which period it was introduced into Germany by Count de Schmettau[80]. However, as with so much Masonic writing, which deals in lies and make-believe, much of which is floated in order to assist the process of obfuscation (since Masons are themselves routinely intended to be deceived, as Albert Pike argues, by fellow Masons), this is contradicted by a separate source, which asserts that 'The Premier Conclave of England, which has existed from time immemorial, gave rise, it is said, to the foundation of the 'Council of the Emperors of the East and West', a body which was established in Paris by Chevalier de Bonneville about the year 1758 and is considered as the parent of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite'[81]. A brief recapitulation of the 'Morin' issue is appropriate here, to show not least how freemasonry thrives amid its own chaos:

In 1761, the Lodges and Councils of the Superior Degrees having by then been extended throughout Europe, 'Frederick II (Frederick the Great), King of Prussia, as Grand Commander of the Order of Princes of the Royal Secret, or 32 Degrees, was by general consent acknowledged and recognized as Sovereign and Supreme Head of the Scottish Rite' [see pages 297 et seq]. On 29th August 1761, Stephen Morin, of Jewish extraction, obtained a Charter from the 'Council of the Emperors of the East and West' a.k.a. the Grand Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret, convened in Paris, under the

THE 'IRON-FIST' MISSION OF THE UNITED STATES

THE 'FUNCTIONING CORE' VS. THE 'NON-FUNCTIONING GAP'

U.S. GLOBAL MILITARY 'LEADERSHIP' ROLE EXPLAINED

Under the dispensation afforded to the United States as the implementer of the 'New World' Order - The Order, to be consummated by the 'New World' in accordance with the United States' original Rosicrucian-occult remit imposed by its European geomasonic Illuminati founders - the United States has 'permission' to develop the world's main military enforcement arm. In March 2003, 'Esquire' magazine published an article entitled 'The Pentagon's New Map', by Thomas P. M. Barnett, of the US Naval War College, the Masonic emblem of which is shown in Figure 49 (T) on page 293. This article, which displayed the map in question, indicated that the Pentagon (on behalf NOT of the United States but of the secret New (Under)World Order-Illuminati remit) has divided the world into two segments. It should be noted that the month in which this article appeared was the same month as the launch of the Second Iraq War which, consequent upon the resistance organised by Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU), has proved disastrous. It is not known whether, as a result of that reckless and illegal venture, US strategy has been appropriately modified, but the likelihood is that it has not, although the chaos in Iraq has delayed implementation of further steps.

- The Functioning Core: Nations that are already functioning within the 'Global System' or which are known to be moving in the intended direction due to past blackmail, bribery and corruption ops; and:
- The Non-Functioning Gap/a.k.a. the Non-Integrating Gap: Countries that are not yet functioning as demanded within the Global System and which are unlikely to do so in the foreseeable future, unless jack-booted into compliance by US (the article adds: 'or European') military forces, or by the threat of invasion.

The clearly inspired article by a US military intelligence officer bragged, ahead of the launch of the invasion of Iraq: 'Our next war in the Gulf will mark a historic tipping-point - the moment when Washington takes real ownership of strategic security in the age of globalization'.

This globalisation offensive was in fact planned in 1776, but no-one today is supposed to understand this central fact underpinning the reality that the United States is an 'irreversibly' revolutionary power, endowed with instructions from its European geomasonic 'controllers' to impose the 'New World' Order that was to be established initially in the United States, ultimately upon the whole world. When this Rosicrucian scheme, borrowed from Germany, was first elaborated by Sir Francis Bacon and associates in the 17th century, Bacon had despaired of any prospect of its anti-church globalist-esoteric 'ideals' being installed in 'old Europe', so they turned their attention to the 'New World' where a New Order, consistent with the aspirations and intentions of members of The Order of the Quest' could, they assumed, be realised: and these instructions were incorporated into the symbology of the Great Seal of the United States. The first part of the 'Esquire' article contained the familiar disinformation, alleging that 9/11 had 'necessitated' a 'war on terror' which had not been 'necessary' previously, even though the Author's files show that a preoccupation with terrorism has been central to US and other Western Governments' 'strategies' for several decades. The rest of the article, though, revealed exactly where future wars were intended to be waged - in order to jump-start 'Non-Functioning Gap' countries into compliance with the 'New (Under) World Order'. The United States has been instrumental in all wars of the 20th and 21st centuries.

The accompanying map identified the 'Non-Functioning Core' as a huge area of the world spanning part (but not all) of Central America, plus Bolivia and Peru, the whole of Africa with the exception of South Africa, much of East Asia, Taiwan, Afghanistan, Bhutan, Nepal, Kazakhstan (obviously not 'integrated' by 2003) and the Soviet Central Asian states, Iran, almost the entire Middle East Turkey and the whole of former Yugoslavia (implying that the Illuminati's odious wars there have not procured the intended outcome). Those countries in Central America such as El Salvador and Nicaragua, with their 'in-your-face' geomasonic flags, and many countries in Africa and elsewhere which use Masonic symbols in their flags such as Ghana and Libya, were, in March 2003, evidently still not considered to have been 'integrated'.

The article actually listed those countries that the Pentagon, secretly implementing the 'New World' Order plan, considered to be 'Non-Integrating' - namely, the Caribbean Rim, virtually the whole of Africa, the Balkans, the Caucasus (which is odd, given the US takeover of Georgia), Central Asia and the whole of the Middle East excluding Israel, plus Southwest and Southeast Asia. Of course, such grandiose plans are doomed to failure. But the article stripped the veil from the Illuminist mentality prevailing in Washington, which reflected the continuing impact of illusions on the basis of which America was founded. ■

Presidency of Chaillon de Joinville, the representative of Frederick the Great and Substitute General of The Order, which authorised him to travel to America as the Grand Inspector General for the New World. It is Morin, as we have seen, who founded the American dimension of the Scottish Rites. Morin claimed to have received his authority from the Comte de Clermont, who at the request of a man called Lacorne, had charged him (Morin) with establishing Masonry throughout the world. Apparently Lacorne derived his 'powers' as a consequence of the negligence of the Comte de Clermont who, in 1744, had ceased to take much interest in the Lodges and had delegated his authority to this dancing master fellow, and to a Jewish banker called Baure (Bauer). Lacorne was evidently a 'dancing master' who sold charters and Degrees to supplement his teaching activities. On 25th October 1762, the Grand Masonic Constitutions were finally ratified in Berlin, seat of Frederick the Great, and were proclaimed as the governing instructions and mechanism for all Masonic bodies working in the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry-sorcery, across two hemispheres. In the same year, the Constitutions were transmitted to Morin[82]. According to the analyst John Yarker, 'He (Morin) probably - ignorant charlatan as he was - mistook Frederick II, Grandson of Barbarossa, an actual King of Jerusalem, for his contemporary Frederick II of Prussia[83]. This narrative indicates that Morin's Masonic 'authority' was much less well-founded than he claimed, which was why it was 'revoked'.

The history of the French line of Freemasonry is equally confused, due to incessant quarrelling; but somehow in 1766, under the auspices of a newly established Grande Loge de France, subsequently renamed the Grand-Orient, a form of representative governance was at last adopted in an attempt to curb the constant bickering (which is the norm among crooks and liars). However the quarrels continued, 'with the Grand-Orient and the original Grand Lodge each being 'supported by a separate Rosicrucian organisation besides its own proper Lodges'[84], revealing the central role exercised by the Rosicrucian source and tradition of sorcery. To this Rosicrucian dimension was soon added Illuminism itself, given that, according to the later Masonic writer D. Margiotta, Adam Weishaupt, 'founder' of the Illuminati, and his favourite, Baron von Knigge, introduced something called 'the organisation of the Holy Vehm as well as certain legends of Illuminism into French Masonry in 1783'. The Holy Vehm appears to have been some kind of variant of the Inquisition, used in a non-Papal context. Lady Queenborough added, begging many questions, that 'the only persons exempted from the jurisdiction of this terrible court of "Justice", the Holy Vehm, were the clergy, women and children, Jews and heathens, and certain members of the higher nobility'[85].

In a revealing passage, Blanchard, who was himself a cynical Mason and called his fellow Masons 'dupes' but managed to discuss his subject accurately, wrote citing the Masonic author Mackey, as follows: 'The one "mission and object" of Masonry is kept steadily in view; which is the worship of the god of this world [= the Prince of this World - Ed.], who is Satan, as the 'Grand Architect of the Universe'; and to accomplish this by inventing a 'religion in which all mankind agree' [pantheism and syncretism: 'The Universal Church of Man' - Ed.]; and this, by putting all earth's religions upon a level, and uniting them together in Masonic worship, which is boldly avowed in rituals, lexicons, and philosophical Degrees. This is (in Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 14) called the image of the beast, made by "them that dwell on the earth", that is everybody; every creed, and no creed; all who join the secret Lodges. But this world-religion must have some form, and shape, to hold together; and be taxed; hence, it takes the form, or image, of the beast. Lodge despotism is as absolute as Romish despotism, and is the image of it...'[this being a reference to the fact that the overall 'pretext' for the creation of this syncretist 'religion' was revulsion at the excesses and dogma of the Roman Catholic Church - Ed.]. 'Note how the Craft, by which this is to be accomplished, viz., Masonry, promises men salvation by ceremonies invented by men, administered by priests, and inhabited by devils. This is the sum and substance of all the false religions on earth, and will ultimately unite them against Christ. But the only opponent Masonry dreads is Jesus Christ, who refused to worship Satan, and his followers'[86]. The importance of this last statement cannot be over-emphasised. For this is not a True Christian writing: Blanchard was an avowed enemy of Christians, a historian of Masonry.

ASSERTED ORIGINS OF THE YORK RITE, DRUGS AND SEX WORSHIP

It will have been observed that ten of the 'higher or Black Masonry Degrees are ostensibly of Templar origin, albeit that, at the same time, all are of Jewish origin, since, as Dr Wise stated in 1855 (and others have reiterated) 'masonry is a Jewish institution whose history, Degrees, charges, passwords, and explanations are Jewish from the beginning to the end...'. Given reports of paedophilia and extreme debauchery at exalted official levels in Britain and America, it is as well to recall that having forgotten their real purpose and embraced Gnosticism while in Palestine, the Templars, who were in touch with the 'Assassins' and thus with their drug-driven culture, degenerated and resorted to organised debauchery. According to Blanchard, the cynical Masonic writer whose work is cited by Lady Queenborough, several of the founders of the Templar Order, established in 1118 by Hugh de Payens with 13 Degrees - as has its modern successor, the York Rite - were initiates of the pagan, drug-dealing sect of the 'Assassins'. Blanchard reported, in 'Knights Templarism Illustrated', that 'During the Middle Ages, the most eminent warriors and noblemen of Europe entered its ranks. The Knights of the Temple became the bulwark of the Holy Land against the Saracens. France, England and other countries formed associations (Priories) of Templar Knights, each with its own Grand Master and other officers. Such great wealth was accumulated in the treasuries of The Order [inter alia and probably mainly through levies on pilgrims to the Holy Sites - Ed.] that in the year 1185 its annual income represented a sum equal to thirty millions of dollars. The Templars were bankers' [more accurately, having accumulated such large surplus, they started lending out their surpluses on usurious terms]. 'But wealth and prosperity naturally led to licentiousness, neglect of Templar law and in the end, destruction'[87].

However their destruction, not reviewed here, was not permanent, as much recent literature has explained. Under the influence of the 'Assassins', the Templars resorted to the practice of Phallicism, or sex-worship, in accordance with the regional tradition, and adopted Satanism, venerating 'The Baphomet', the idol of the Luciferians. The crime of sodomy became a rite of Templar initiation, as is the case in the initiation rites of the Yale-based Skull and Bones sect, one of the Templars' successors [see Chapter 2]. The outline of the Templars' formal 'disappearance', which forms the basis of most modern knowledge, was summarised by a source consulted by Lady Queenborough thus:

'In the year 1307, the Grand Master of The Order, Jacques de Molay, was arrested in Paris with sixty of his knights and imprisoned upon charges of idolatry and other crimes' levied against them by the Papal Inquisition's instructions to the French authorities. 'Shortly afterwards, all the Knights Templar in France were put in prison in Paris. On 10th May 1310, 54 of them were burned alive. On 13th March 1314, the Grand Master, with three of his most eminent officers, suffered in like manner. The great possessions of The Order' - which had invested heavily in the property market - 'were now confiscated and the society [was] suppressed both by the Pope and by the leading monarchs of Europe'[88]. In England, the Knights Templar were dissolved in the reign of Edward II, and after the grant of their properties to the Knights Hospitallers, these in their turn were dissolved by Henry VIII' who got the idea of seizing such properties from his knowledge of the Templar precedent. After the death of de Molay, elements of the Knights Templar fleet stationed in the Mediterranean sailed through the Straits of Gibraltar and found one protector in King Dinis II of Portugal, who reformed The Order in 1317, relabelling them the Knights of Christ. There is a considerable literature which reveals, in much detail, how the Templars also found refuge and freedom in the Kingdom of Scotland, and in Ireland. A large number of place-names all over the British Isles testify to the Templars' extensive property interests and settlements there. But this investigation is beyond the scope and remit of the present work. It has been rudely asserted that [Masonic history is] a department of history which is not only obscure and highly controversial, but by ill luck the happiest of all hunting grounds for the light-headed, the fanciful, the unscholarly, and the lunatic fringe of the British Museum Reading Room[89]. The overt successor network of the Templars, called the York Rite, has, as noted, 13 Degrees, which correspond to those used by the Templars. These are also the stated original source for ten Scottish Rite Degrees. It is confusing to be told by reliable sources that there are various origins for these Degrees, while at the same time all are Jewish. However, this 'problem' disappears when it is recognised that the Kabbalistic content of the Templar Degrees can only have been procured from the Babylonian Jewish tradition, with which the Templars were in the closest contact during their predatory operations in Palestine.

THE DIVISION OF LABOUR BETWEEN PIKE AND MAZZINI

The two later fathers of 'modern' high Masonry, who together established the governing structures, were Giuseppe Mazzini, the Italian revolutionary, M.A.F.I.A. king-pin and friend of Karl Marx, and Albert Pike, who appeared to have been Satanised during the American Civil War, when he was a Brigadier-General in the Confederate Army. As Governor of Indian territory, Pike force-created an army of Indian warriors composed of Chickasaws, Comanches, Creeks, Cherokees, Miamis, Osages, Kansas and Choctaws; and under Pike's command, these Indian hordes indulged in 'an orgy of murder and atrocities so terrible that foreign powers interfered. Representations made by England, threatening intervention in the name of humanity, finally compelled Jefferson Davis to disband his auxiliary Indian troops'[90].

Mazzini had approached Pike, impressed by Pike's success in consolidating and controlling (unofficial) Freemasonry in the United States, and also impressed by the great power that the late Lord Palmerston, the British Prime Minister, who had died in 1866, had exercised worldwide, which Mazzini had attributed to Palmerston's personal influence with Masonic chiefs. However since Giuseppe Mazzini surmised that the way Freemasonry was organised was inefficient, he set about studying how to organise it internationally; and in 1870, Mazzini reached agreement with Pike for the creation of the Supreme Rite. This was to be the supreme, super-secret, controlling mechanism, permeated with and dedicated to occultism - tasting of the 'Tree of Knowledge' (a.k.a. The Tree of Life, a.ka. Tree of Death) and engaged in invoking evil spirits and Satan himself.

Under the accord, Pike awarded himself, and was given, dogmatic authority and the title of Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry, while Mazzini retained executive authority with the title of Sovereign Chief of Political Action. Mazzini pressed Pike to draw up the Statutes and the Grades of the new Supreme Secret Rite, which were intended to provide the liturgical bonds for the members of centralised 'High' Masonry.

Pike named this manifestation of 'The Order', the New and Reformed Palladian Rite, or New and reformed Palladium. Remember that the Masonic word 'Palladium' means, according to another Masonic authority (cited by Lady Queenborough): 'One ruling like a King the Phallus being a universal emblem of Kings; from Pala, Hindoo for the male organ'. As previously mentioned, 'The Order of the Palladium' was orginally founded in 1730, shortly after which year it was introduced in Charleston, where it remained inactive until 1886, when Pike revived and renamed it as indicated, giving a 'new impulse' (i.e., releasing further 'seething energies of Lucifer') to the practice of 'High Masonry'.

The Palladium remains little understood, as the number of its members is strictly limited, and, according to Stevens (cited by Lady Queenborough), 'the deepest secrecy surrounds all its deliberations'[91]. However it is known that among the 'higher' (= of course 'lower' spiritually) Degrees of The Order of the Palladium, as this Rite complex is also called, are 'Adelphos' and 'Companion of Ulysses' for men, and 'Penelope' for women, all with connotations of Hades. According to the cited authoritative 19th century geomasonic author and 'High Mason' Domenico Margiotta:

'It was agreed that the existence of this Rite would be kept strictly secret and that no mention of it would ever be made in the assemblies of the Lodges and Inner Shrines of other rites, even when by accident, the meeting might happen to be composed exclusively of Brothers having the perfect initiation; for the secret of the new institution was only to be divulged with the greatest caution to a chosen few belonging to the 'ordinary' high grades[92]. To recruit adepts, Margiotta wrote, 'they planned to use some members of the other rites, but in the beginning they meant to rely principally on those among the initiates of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites who were already addicted [sic] to occultism'[93]. 'It was particularly the initiates of the Thirty-Third Degree Scottish Rites, who, owing to their extensive international ramifications, were privileged to recruit adepts for Palladism. That is why the Supreme Rite [of Palladism] created its Triangles (the name given to Palladian Lodges) by Degrees, but these were established on a firm base, the lowliest of its initiates being Brothers long tested in ordinary Masonry' (i.e., long since Satanised). For the absolute elimination of all doubt that Palladian Masonry elevates Lucifer to the godhead and equates Jesus Christ with the Devil, Margiotta elaborated:

'Palladism is essentially a Luciferian rite. Its religion is Manichean neo-Gnost-icism, teaching that the divinity is dual and that Lucifer is the equal of Adonay (Jesus Christ), with Lucifer, the God of Light and Goodness struggling for humanity against Adonay the God of Darkness and Evil' (Satanic reversal - Ed.). 'In stating this principle of the secret cult of the Triangles, Albert Pike had only specified and unveiled the dogmas of the high grades of all other Masonries, for in no matter what Rite, the Great Architect of the Universe is not the God worshipped by the Christians'[94].

It is important to emphasise the significance of Domenico Margiotta's statement that, in revealing the essence of the 'secret cult of the (Palladian) Triangles', Albert Pike had 'only specified and unveiled the dogmas of the high grades of all other Masonries'. This statement provides 100% further confirmation that the 'Supreme Being' worshipped by ALL MASONIC MANIFESTATIONS, which is to say, ALL the compartmentalised components of the Illuminist Freemasonic synarchy ('The Order'), is 'that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan', and that theirs is an idolatry of pagan occultic sex.

THE SUPER-SECRET SUPREME GEOMASONIC CONTROL MECHANISM

The super-secret, central controlling power of the Palladian Rite's global network of 'Triangles' was exposed by Margiotta in the following explanation, which confirms that the Palladian Rite is an, if not THE, apparatus of (Satanic) control:

'For other reasons, these precautions were still necessary, in order to render possible the exercise of a supreme central directing power, reaching all the rites through the personal influence of the Elects and Perfect Initiates, these being invested with privileges, and giving the impulse, which emanated from the source of the highest universal authority. If Brothers, not fully initiated, had suspected the existence of this supreme organization, it is evident that, in the ordinary Lodges, there would always have been a tendency to resist the motions of such privileged persons'.

'To ensure the creation and good working of this formidable machine of Palladism, Mazzini had reserved for himself the office of Chief of Political Action, nor had he hesitated in bowing to the will of the Patriarch of Charleston who, by his preponderance in Scottish Rites, could easily penetrate all countries of the globe with this new institution. That is the reason for Mazzini giving supremacy to the dogmatic [i.e., the jurisdiction of formalised Satanic sorcery and the gobbldegook surrounding such activities as the evocation of spirits supervised by Pike - Ed] over the political authority in International Freemasonry'.

'The Holy See of the Dogma for the whole [geo]masonic world was set up in Charleston [on the 33rd parallel - Ed.], the sacred city [sic!] of the Palladium. Pike, the Sovereign Pontiff of Lucifer, was the President of the Supreme Dogmatic Directory, composed of ten Brothers of the highest grades who formed his Supreme Grand College of Emeritus Masons. The Sovereign Executive Directory of High Masonry was established at Rome under Mazzini himself'[95].

The CIA Rezident for Vatican City, the smallest sovereign state in the world, briefs the Pope every Friday. Opus Dei [see Chapter 6] a nefarious 'secret Catholic organisation using the Rosicrucian rose as one of its symbols [see Figure 62, page 395], with intelligence tentacles, authorised by Pope John Paul II even though previous Popes had refused to sanction its 'legality' (not surprisingly, given its focus, at the lowest level, on abuses such as flagellation of the body, which the Lord teaches us is the temple of the Holy Spirit), is extremely influential within the US intelligence community and in Washington DC - where senior spooks take special pride in their membership, perhaps because it provides a convenient 'Jesus' cover for their black personalities and souls. For instance, Robert Philip Hanssen, described as 'the most dangerous double agent in FBI history', delighted in the prestige that his membership of Opus Dei provided him, as well as its 'cover properties'. Mr Hanssen was sentenced to languish as a prisoner for life deep inside an underground bunker beneath special control structures in Denver, Colorado, and it was reported that he would never be allowed out - an indication of the peculiar cruelty meted out by the US intelligence community to its own personnel who go astray. In reality, the Author was informed in 2005 that 'all is forgiven' and he is a free man, living on the West Coast. As his biographer, David A. Vise, wrote on the very first page of his book 'The Bureau and the Mole'[96]:

'The Hanssens... relished the church's [St Catherine of Siena Church, Great Falls, Virginia] close ties to Opus Dei, an elite and influential movement within the Catholic Church, and delighted in praying alongside some of the most powerful people in Washington. More members of Opus Dei attended St Catherine's than any other church in the region. And several of its parishioners sent their boys to the Heights School in

Potomac, Maryland, an Opus Dei academy...'[97]or youth indoctrination centre.

As indicated, the headquarters of Luciferian sorcery ritual dogma for the Palladian control structures governing global Masonry, according to the sources consulted, is based in Charleston, on the 33rd parallel. The executive or administrative headquarters for these structures was established by Albert Pike's European collaborator, Guiseppe Mazzini, in the Eternal City of Rome, the location of the Holy See, the headquarters of Catholicism, which does not faithfully propagate True (Biblical) Christianity, but in part 'another Christ'. As Paul wrote to the church at Corinth [in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 11, verses 3-4]:

'But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit... or another gospel... ye might well bear with him'. And that is what happened.

When Jesus was arraigned before Pontius Pilate [John, Chapter 18, verses 35-36], and Pilate, bewildered, asked the Lord: 'What hast thou done?', 'Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from thence'. It is glorious to read a little further:

'Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice'. Pilate saith unto him, What is truth?' - the most important question in the world, left unanswered: for he was face to face with the bearer of Truth[98].

However Pope John Paul II, for instance, spent his Papacy making pronouncements on the affairs of this world. As a world politician masquerading as the representative of Jesus Christ, and sitting in His place, diverting attention from Him and from from 'the simplicity that is in Christ', Pope John Paul II claimed the right to be at the epicentre of a 'uniting' Europe (even though, on the basis of all non-ideological criteria, the European Union Collective has predictably been a catastrophic failure). In his book, published in 1990, entitled 'The Keys of this Blood', the Author's late friend, Malachi Martin wrote: 'What captures the unwavering attention of the secular leaders of the world in this remarkable network of the Roman Catholic Church is precisely the fact that it places at the personal disposition of the Pope a supranational, supra-continental, supra-trade-bloc structure that is so built and orientated that if tomorrow, by a sudden miracle [sic], a one-world government were established, the Roman Church would not have to undergo any essential change to retain its dominant position to further its global aims'[99].

Given the worldly orientation of the Papacy, behind its facade of false religiosity, and given the history of papal aberrations and debauchery, it is no accident that the executive seat of the Palladian (Phallic) Luciferian control structure was established by the sorcerer Pike's Luciferian associate, the criminal drug-dealer, revolutionary and mafia godfather, Giuseppe Mazzini, at Rome. However the 'seething organisational powers' of Lucifer had not yet completed the Luciferian control framework that was to be put in place, to confuse matters, quite separately from the later establishment of the super-secret Palladian Rite structures. According to Margiotta:

'The two secret chiefs, Pike and Mazzini, finally completed the organisation of High Masonry, establishing four Grand Central Directories for the whole world, functioning thenceforth to gather information for the benefit of their political policy and dogmatic propaganda. These were: The Grand Central Directories for North America located at Washington; for South America, at Montevideo, Uruguay; for Europe, at Naples; and for Asia and Oceania, at Calcutta. Later, a Central Sub-Directory for Africa was founded at Port Louis, Mauritius; and following the death of Mazzini, the Supreme Chief constituted a new Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory at BERLIN which ranked in the hierarchy after the Sovereign Executive Directories and before the four Great Central Directories'[100].

This was, of course, the same central control location as had been confirmed when Frederick the Great, as Grand Commander of The Order of Princes of the Royal Secret, presided over ratification of the Grand Masonic Constitutions on 28th October 1762. So the 'Morin' breach dividing American Scottish Rite Masonry from the authorised European 'line' was finally healed - at the 'High' Masonry Palladian Rite level - by the two evil scoundrels, Pike and Mazzini. Palladism is, however, separated from the administrative functions of the Directories.

THE ORDER OF PRECEDENCE OF THE SCOTTISH AND PALLADIAN CENTRES

The Palladian Rite structures were essentially a super-secret 'add-on' which came into being some time after the consolidation of the main Scottish Rite control centres. But subsequently, for practical purposes, the Scottish Rite and the secret Palladian Rite structures appear to have been directed from the three main de facto geomasonic power centres itemised below. Certainly, the order of precedence of the structure of geomasonry, intended to be the super-secret global control mechanism, was exposed by the 33rd Degree Italian Jewish Mason Domenico Margiotta, and can be summarised as follows:

1. ROME: Sovereign Executive Directory of High Masonry: The seat of the Sovereign Chief of Political Action: The intended administrative centre of the World Revolution. Note: Notwithstanding Margiotta's observation that Charleston is 'superior to' Rome, the Author has placed the Executive Centre ABOVE the Charleston Dogmatic Centre, reversing the opinion the American 'High Masons' have of their own superiority and importance, for a reason that will become very apparent later in this work

2. CHARLESTON: Supreme Dogmatic Directory, seat of the Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry: The Scottish Rite/Palladian Dogmatic Centre. The Supreme Dogmatic Directory, where rituals of sorcery are supervised and from where they are promulgated, was composed of 'ten Brothers of the highest grades who form(ed) the Supreme Grand College of Emeritus Masons', as already explained.

3. BERLIN: Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory: The relationship of the Berlin Directory to the Rome Directory is not elucidated in the literature, but since Berlin ranks in the hierarchy ABOVE the Naples Directory, it is certainly more powerful: indeed, it is believed to be of exceptional importance, having been so ever since the days of Frederick the Great; and, to this day, BERLIN is the locus of Satanic events involving key geomasonic figures including some internationally prominent political operatives. The Berlin Directory functioned by means of a constantly renewed rotating Committee of Seven [see page 321] taken from the 'Supreme Councils, Grand Encampments, Grand Orients, and Grand Lodges of the World'. Two special delegates are permanently attached to the Berlin Directory, one for Finance and the other for Propaganda, both of whom are obliged to live in Germany, and to be in a sufficiently independent position to be able to attend at the seat of the Berlin Directory at a moment's notice. The Finance agent does not actually deal with funds: his task is to maintain a general balance sheet of all

participating rites, in all countries, with the assistance of a Brother accountant sworn to absolute secrecy. The Propaganda agent furnishes intelligence to the Supreme Chiefs in Rome and Charleston. An examination of how his functions are performed provides further fascinating insights into the convoluted decision-making procedures within the European Union structures, which are clearly, on the basis of this solid evidence alone, of German Masonic origin. No-one outside the 'highest' geomasonic levels has ever identified or understood this connection. To explain this accurately, it is best to begin with the description of the sub-procedures by Bataille, replicated by Lady Queenborough:

'The business of the Propaganda agent is to furnish information to the Chiefs at Rome and Charleston.... He receives monthly, by secret messenger from Berlin, the report of all measures formulated at the Sovereign Administrative Directory relating to means and methods judged useful in spreading the principles of the association [sic]'

'After a meeting he examines, coordinates and frames a report of the decisions upon which, three months later, the seven members of the Berlin Directory will vote. Of these seven members, thanks to the system of rotation explained above, there are always at least two who, having belonged to the Directory at the time of the submission of the Resolution under consideration, are able to furnish commentaries and explanations to the newcomers. Only Resolutions having obtained a favourable vote of five or seven voices can be registered by the Delegate Recorder, and these can be finally adopted only on the second following month, if they pass unanimously. In the event of one or more persons opposing a measure, the matter is referred to the Chief at Rome after which, failing its approval, it is settled arbitrarily by the Chief at Charleston, from whose decision there is no appeal'[101].

This implies that Charleston, not Rome, is the very head of the two-headed serpent, and such a deduction may be correct in this context. However, as has been reviewed, the United States has a founding remit, dating from its establishment, which is symbolically represented on the Great Seal of the United States, and which 'obliges' its Luciferian World Revolution implementers to carry out certain global tasks in accordance with European occult Masonic requirements. This framework precedes the establishment of the Supreme Administration by Mazzini and Pike, and cannot be negated by 'imperatives' set up in accordance with their arrangements. The de facto subordination of the United States to the European occult geomasonic powers is, in the Author's opinion, deeply resented by certain informed US Masonic operatives, who may have thought that their country was truly independent; and understandably so. For their part, European sources, and US sources of European origin, confirm that the occult geomasonic 'controllers' in Europe are wary of the genie they released from their Rosicrucian bottle - which they consider to have become too powerful, although the United States is the military enforcement arm of their Revolution.

GERMAN GEOMASONIC SIMILARITIES WITH EUROPEAN UNION PROCEDURES

The origin of the 'rotating Presidency' of the European Union Collective, and of the even more bizarre 'changing memberships' of the European Council structures, is to be found in the arrangements originated for the Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory in Berlin. The constantly renewed membership of the Committee of Seven operates by means of an ingeniously contrived system of rotation, with the representatives having a mandate for three months only. Each of the existing Rites (Scottish, Grand Orient, et al) send two of their members annually, drawn from any country except Germany which, alone of all the countries represented, is entitled to one member all the time.

Indeed, of truly arresting significance is the similarity of these arrangements with the convoluted decision-making processes which bedevil the corrupt operations of the European Union today. The Presidency of the European Commission is rotated every six months (on the Berlin Masonic rotating principle). The European Council is a single body, but its membership changes from meeting to meeting in accordance with the subject category under discussion. Thus the European Council meeting in the format of the Economic and Financial Council (ECOFIN) consists of Economic and Finance Ministers and their entourages, together with the equivalent representatives from the European Commission. In 2006, there were 25 members of this political collective (a realisation of Pan-German strategy elaborated inter alia under Hitler in a collection of essays published in Berlin 1942 entitled 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft': see Chapter 8); and since each EU Minister brings several colleagues, a total of up to or more than 200 people now attends each ECOFIN meeting: there were over 100 before EU 'enlargement' in May 2004, so a doubling of the numbers must be approximately correct[102].

If, say, the European Council must discuss transportation issues, the attendees at the Council are Transport Ministers with all their official hangers-on and subordinates. Since Ministers and their colleagues come and go, subsequent meetings do not consist of the same people. Such arrangements were designed to serve the interests of an autocracy, namely that of the European Commission, which has Hitlerian powers of privilege to originate legislation. Reverting to the Berlin Directory, after five months (the quarterly mandate period plus the two months for final adoption of resolutions), it is obvious that none of the original members who proposed a given resolution would be present; and five months gives plenty of time for the manipulation of nominees pledged to vote according to the dictates of invisible masters. The rotating membership mechanism reveals (a) that the German Masons and their political action colleagues trust no-one; and (b) that the European Union Collective's structures follow the German Masonic model.

In summary, it is clear to the Author that the convoluted decision-making mechanisms employed by the European Union, which are peculiar to that political collective, are indeed of German Masonic origin, given their close similarity to the equally convoluted decision-making arrangements, of a similar character, invented for use by the Berlin-based Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory. Another parallel is associated with the 'permanent' membership in the Berlin Directory of one German delegate. This is replicated in the European Union context by the fact that delegates from the European Commission are uniquely present at, and full privileged participants in, for instance, all sessions of all manifestations of the European Council.

The Author is therefore fully confident of his conclusion that the European Union Collective and its structures are of German Masonic origin and inspired (and directed) by German geomasonry. It is further concluded from this analysis [see also Chapter 8] that German esoteric geomasonry is being and has always been used as cover for the implementation of secret ongoing German geopolitical global hegemony strategy. This deduction leads immediately to another revelation. As has been seen, the Great Seal of the United States contains the top-secret Rosicrucian remit of the United States, applicable from its foundation, which it is required to implement. The most senior of all the geomasonic control centres is the Executive Directory that is located in ROME. This was originally the seat of the gangster Giuseppe Mazzini, the Sovereign Chief of Political Action. Where has 'political action' 'progressed' to the furthest extent? Answer In Europe, with the development of the corrupt Tower of Babel called the European Union. And where was the first European Collective Treaty signed? Answer: In ROME.

THE REST OF THE GEOMASONIC CONTROL STRUCTURE NEXUS

We must bear in mind that the geomasonic Supreme Administration is in control of the whole of Masonry, according to extant intelligence in the public domain. Although it was consolidated a century after the American (Masonic) Revolution when the United States received its secret remit as symbolised on the Great Seal, since the (Nazi) BERLIN centre is in control, it controls the implementation of the United States' secret remit.

The other geomasonic control centres, excluding any that may have been established since before the Second World War, are/were the following [see page 320]:

4. WASHINGTON: Grand Central Directory for North America.
5. MONTEVIDEO, URUGUAY: Grand Central Directory for South America.
6. NAPLES: Grand Central Directory for Europe.
7. CALCUTTA: Grand Central Directory for Asia. Note: Given the rapid evolution of the economic and political environments in Asia, this Directory may either have been relocated or else may have been augmented by one or more Sub-Directories. Given extensive CIA involvement in Thailand, an important drug-money laundering centre, and where the Thai Royal Family has been financially compromised, the Author speculates that a Grand Central Directory or Sub-Directory may have been established in Bangkok. Tokyo is another obvious possibility, as is Peking, where the changes that have taken place since President Nixon travelled there in 1971 appear to conform closely to geomasonic preferences.
8. MAURITIUS: Central Sub-Directory for Africa.

An additional peculiarity is that the Palladian Rite, directed and controlled dogmatically by Charleston, has, as indicated, no share in the functioning of the Sovereign Administrative Directory in Rome: (we are talking here specifically about the Palladian level, with no reference being necessary to the 'separate' Scottish Rite operations at Charleston, which co-exist of course in parallel with the Palladian dimension).

This makes it quite clear that so far as the Palladian structures are concerned, all political action actually originates with the Sovereign Administrative Director in Rome, which almost certainly works to political agendas and instructions formulated by the Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory in BERLIN. (The elevation to the Papacy in 2005 of a German Cardinal is highly significant in this context, especially as the sorcerer-Jesuit ('Black') Pope, Count Hans Kolvenbach - who, in February 2006, announced his retirement in 2008 (this being the first time in this manifestation of 'The Order's 500+ year history, that a 'Black Pope' retires) is supposedly of German origin, but 'just happens' to have a Dutch name). That leaves Charleston's Palladian dimension concerned exclusive ly with the management of its Luciferian false religion. Its administrative functions are concerned exclusively with the Triangles, which have a separate budget.

The issue of Palladian secrecy remains to be addressed. Since Palladism is 'a Higher' hidden geomasonic 'Ancient Mysteries' power, known only to certain 'perfect initiates', Palladism need not unveil itself and its membership even to the permanent but rotating and therefore constantly changing geomasonic committee of the Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory in Berlin, which is the highest expression of the administrative power of this occult internationalist body; and it doesn't, not least because given the frequent changes of the Berlin Directory's membership, any such revelations would soon reach a widening audience: indeed, one effect of the Berlin arrangements may be precisely to provide Charleston with a definitive incentive to maintain secrecy. Obviously, Charleston's membership is known to the Administrative Political Action

Centre bosses in Rome (inside or very closely associated with The Vatican).

Additionally, there are several Masonic countries in which the Symbolic Grand Lodges recognise only the three Blue Degrees, with the highest Degree in such countries being Master Mason. These Lodges, like the others, are entitled to send two delegates from time to time to Berlin. However, having suppressed the 'high' grades for their adepts, these national bodies are 'necessarily' kept in complete ignorance of the existence of Palladism. They may be aware of the Supremos in Charleston and Rome, as earnest and active 'Brothers' and fitting members of the 'Brotherhood of Man' (that is, of the geomasonic fraternity, not the rest of us, you understand); but they are not supposed to have any knowledge of the Palladian dimension whatsoever. The populist French Revolutionary slogan, 'The Brotherhood of Man', possessed, of course, a deceptive hidden meaning - namely that what was secretly meant was 'the Brotherhood of Masons', with manifestly homosexual and paedophiliac overtones: hence Palladism.

THE PLACE AND PARTICIPATION OF WOMEN IN GEOMASONIC SORCERY

Like all these Luciferians, Albert Pike was inclined, on occasion, to boast openly about his prowess in engaging in practical applications of the knowledge gained from the Tree of Life (Death). Remember that Pike had been Satanised during the American Civil War. Pike's address to the Supreme Council of Charleston on 20th October 1884, in which this chief sorcerer of the Luciferians recounted the seance episode [see page 286] during which Sister Ingersoll floated above them in the nude, provides confirmation that pagan rites over which he officiated involved the presence of women[103].

Of Albert Pike, it was also written by one of his contemporaries that 'his reputation as an occultist had overstepped the doors of the Lodges and inner shrines. Everyone knew from hearsay that he gave himself up to Luciferian practices'[104].

His nefarious example has been progressively and recklessly amplified by his successor Luciferian imitators ever since. In founding the New and Reformed Palladian Rite, Albert Pike was not the inventor of Masonic occultism, the origins of which, as discussed, go back to at least Simon Magus. In the 18th and 19th centuries, Anderson, Desagul-iers, Weishaupt, Swedenborg, Lessing, Frederick II of Prussia, Mesmer (hence 'mesmerism'), Pernety, Cagliostro, Martinez Pasqualis and his disciple Saint-Martin, Francia (the dictator of Paraguay), Lord Palmerston, General Contreras, Giuseppe Mazzini and many other 'high' Freemasons practised occultism' and the Kabbalah[105].

When the Jewish Kabbalah-Satanist Eliphas Levi, the author of the demonic picture of Baphomet shown in Figure 50A on page 297, was prevailed upon by his friends, Chevaliers Fauvet and Caubet, who both belonged to the Grand-Orient, to become a Mason, which he did on 14th March 1861, Levi was initiated in the Rosicrucian Lodge Rose Du Parfait Silence, of which Caubet was the Principal. According to a French Masonic author called Chacornac, cited by Lady Queenborough, the ceremony was performed in the presence of 'many Brothers. Chacornac reported that 'in his reception speech, Eliphas Levi, to the great astonishment of his auditors, little inclined to paradoxes, made the following statement: "I come to bring you lost traditions, the exact knowledge of your signs and emblems, and in consequence to show you the aim for the attainment of which your association has been constituted". He then tried to demonstrate to his coreligionists [sic] that Masonic symbolism is borrowed from the Kabbalah. It was time wasted. No-one believed him'[106]. Manifestly, if not even members of a Lodge can understand the provenance of the symbols and actualite of the sorcery that surrounds them, we need not be surprised that the 'profane' world chooses to turn a collective blind eye to the source of all contemporary evils, this intended system of occultic synar-chy, or rule by secret societies. Within this system, powerful families and Satanised intelligence cadres compete for influence and control, always at risk of squabbling like rats in a sack. The fact that these people cannot 'agree' indefinitely, and are always potentially and lethally at loggerheads with each other, is one of the reasons why sensible people, remote or separated from these evils, should never despair, even if they do not know Christ. For the end of these reprobates' turmoil is their own sole product: death.

The 'Sister Ingersoll' description was Pike's own sanitised version of a decidedly unpleasant and dangerous occult event, complete with a touch of gross sick humour on the part of the evil spirits evoked. Since that report is in the public domain, and is the least offensive of many, it is included on pages 286-287, not for the sake of prurience, but so as to convey the reality of 'Works of Darkness' indulged in by these 'high' (low) Luciferians who have eaten of the fruit of the Tree of Life (Death). Once hooked on such activities, the adept becomes more and more 'bound' and addicted, as happens with pornography. Malachi Martin told the Author that Satanic rituals, involving ritual murder, routinely took place 'within four blocks' of the apartment where he lived on East 63rd Street, New York City. The Author is not in a position to say whether the High Luciferians indulge, at the level just discussed, in such activities, since Malachi implied that after initiation through to the 'highesf levels of Scottish Rite Masonry, those progressing further (i.e., for instance, but by no means exclusively, engaged in Palladian Rite sex-activities), are of such an 'elevated' level, and are so comprehensively Satanised, that, as Luciferians and 'perfectly possessed', they are 'above' such behaviour. But some of the extreme practices known to occur at the Bohemian Grove among the very 'highest' of the Luciferian elite, and the excesses described by Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien in 'Trance Formation of America' [see Chapter 4 and Figure 42, page 225] are wholly consistent with these pagan 'Ancient Mysteries' practices. The present account does not describe occultic events, including procedures for occultically procuring the 'throwing of the force into the initiate's bodies and centers'[107], and for evoking evil spirits, because it is enough to allude to such activities and to affirm that descriptions of them, which have never been refuted, are available in the Masonic literature. Christians are enjoined not to 'go there', and mention of these unspeakable activities as has been necessary, has been minimised.

Concerning women it has been noted that they participate in certain male rites, evidence for which has been cited from the seance description by Albert Pike himself. Certain categories of 'sister Masons', probably such as Sister Ingersoll, are called 'Pink Serpents'. These are Luciferian missionaries who are not attached to Lodges, but operate as individuals under conditions of the greatest secrecy. According to the literature, records of the existence of 'Pink Serpents' including financial records, are scarce or non-existent. Many of these women are married, and in the secular context would be available for 'wife-swapping' activities. Lady Queenborough wrote somewhat charmingly of how these women operate: 'In certain cities where Masonic secrecy is less carefully guarded, a part of the Masonic premises is available for the use of the 'profane' public and for daily lectures or instructions by the Brother professors. In these rooms, every evening, accounting, stenography, foreign languages and other popular professional accomplishments are taught [so that] a great activity is thus created around Masonic headquarters, and the entrance of a woman more or less attracts no attention. The sister Masons, however, know to which room they must go and, once past the threshold of the building, it is not to the professorial lecture room that they wend their way'[108].

Albert Pike's formal Masonic attitude to 'the use of women' was summarised in the course of instructions which he issued on 14th July 1898, as Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry, in which he made it abundantly clear that women exist for the perverse pleasure of men, that love and emotion does not enter into the equation, and that they are required to be available on demand:

'To the science of Faust (i.e. sorcery and demonic evocation - Ed.), the real Mason will join the impassibility of Job. He will eradicate superstition (by which Pike meant religious, specifically Christian, reservations against fornication - Ed.) from his heart and cultivate decision of character. He will accept pleasure only when he wishes it (making it plain that he meant not when the targeted woman wishes it - Ed.) and will wish it only when he should do so'.

'We earnestly recommend the creation of Lodges of Adoption. They are indispensable to the formation of Masons who are indeed Masters of themselves. The priest tries to subdue his flesh by enforced celibacy.... The real Mason, on the contrary, reaches perfection, that is to say, achieves self-mastery, by using his zeal in the Lodges of Adoption in submitting to all natural ordeals. Commerce with women, belonging to all brethren, forms for him an armour against those passions which lead hearts astray. He alone can really possess voluptuousness. To be able, at will, to use or else to abstain, is a twofold power. Woman fetters thee by thy desires, we say to the adept: well, use women often and without passion: thou wilt thus become master of thy desires, and thou wilt enchain woman. From which it must perforce result that the real Mason will succeed in easily solving the problem of the flesh. It is evidently not necessary that the man whom you are leading towards the high grades be immediately perfect and have understood our secret on his entrance into Masonry. That which we ask you is first to observe him with the greatest care during his apprenticeship and afterwards, when he enters the Lodge of Adoption as Companion, to use that as your criterion, your instrument of infallible control'.[109]

The same instructions by Pike contained this further paragraph: 'The Lodge of Brothers which has failed to annex a Lodge of Sisters is incomplete and destined inevitably never to produce anything but Brethren, with whom politics are the chief concern, men who will be chiefly preoccupied with intrigue and rivalry, who will do bad work and whose politics will be incoherent'[110]. But further paragraphs outlined elaborately deceitful procedures whereby all open indications or formal admissions of the existence of female Lodges (of concubines) were to be suppressed, and subject to deliberate stratagems to mislead and cause confusion. In many instances where a male Lodge has a female Annexe, the existence of the female appendage is often completely ignored by most of the 'Brethren'. No mutual visiting is permitted at all among the female members of the 'lower' Masonic Degrees, and a 'sister' may only enter Lodges other than her own after she has attained the Fifth Degree. In addition to male General Inspectors on permanent missions, who are in direct communication with Charleston, there are women who provide functions as General Inspectresses - 'high-grade' women Masons belonging to some ordinary Lodge or other who, as Lady Queenborough explained, 'while not necessarily addicted to Palladism, serve the purpose of its leaders - their good offices being much appreciated [sic] when they furnish useful information to headquarters. These women are privileged to enter the Lodges and Inner Shrines of Masonry only, but are not admitted to Palladian Triangles. As for men belonging to an adoptive Lodge where 'Brothers' and 'Sisters' 'work together'

[sic], they must have at least attained the 32nd Degree (Prince of the Royal Secret) or a corresponding grade in another rote...'[111]

As for the precise nature of the Palladian super-rite from which these women are excluded, we have the following summary from Dr Bataille: 'This super-rite, which is Masonic Luciferian spiritism, must not be confused with the machinery of 'High Masonry'. Palladism is the cult of Satan in the inner shrines of a rite superimposed on all the rites. It is a cult, a religion; 'High Masonry' is a supreme administration involving an organisation much more highly developed than Palladism whose secret leaders, some of whom are not Luciferian, act in concert and accept a superior central authority in order that their work may be more effective'[112]. It seems as though Pike and selected colleagues lusted after more intoxicating sorcery and sex-oriented pagan 'fixes' than were available in the 'ordinary' Masonic Lodge and even at the 'highest' levels of routine Masonic debauchery. Hooked on their lust, they developed Palladism - a heightened and rarefied form of sexual depravity which could be shared at the 'highest' levels.

THE EVIL OF MASONIC OATHS • INCOMPATIBILITY WITH GOOD ORDER

The hegemony of Illuminised Freemasonry is a subversive and dangerous dimension of contemporary life, which is impeding good governance, with progressively ever more disastrous consequences for the integrity and survival of our civilisation.

According to 'Henderson's Masonic World Guide' (for 1990), 16 years prior to the completion of this study, there were 5,000,000 Masons in 164 countries, with 3,000,000 Masons in the United States alone - the Rosicrucian Masonic foundation originally established as a geomasonic experiment by European forces, to which America still remains (whether its people like it or not) subordinate at the predominant Illuminati control and occult level. The same source identified 33,700 Masonic Lodges worldwide, with the United States having by far the largest number of Lodges - a total of 15,300. Masonic penetration and influence of these proportions is wholly incompatible with good and reliable governance, given not least the nature of the oaths that Masonic candidates must swear. In varying Degrees, these require the Mason to cover up the crimes of fellow Masons, even at the cost of committing perjury. It is no surprise at all that the United States is perpetually mired, at all levels of governance, in scandals, and that its financial markets are dens of iniquity.

Of course Masonry is also wholly incompatible with True Christianity. 'No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon'[113]. It is also contrary to Christianity to swear at all. As Jesus explained: 'Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shall perform unto the Lord thine oaths; But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by Heaven; for it is God's throne; Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the Great King; Neither shalt thou swear by the head, because thou canst not make one hair white nor black But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil'[114]. ALL Masonic oaths 'come of evil'.

In no context is this more the case than in respect of the successive oaths that the Masonic candidate swears as he progresses 'upwards' (= downwards) towards total control by Lucifer. When taking the oath of the Third Degree, the Scottish Rite Mason promises to conceal all crimes committed by a fellow Mason except those of treason and murder. By the Seventh Degree, the candidate must swear that he 'will assist a Companion Royal Arch Mason when I see him engaged in any difficulty, and will espouse his cause so as to extricate him from the same, whether he be right or wrong'. At the 13th Degree, the oath that the candidate must take requires him to conceal, in perpetuity, all crimes, including those of murder and treason.

Therefore, justice is constantly being impeded, since unscrupulous Masons, of whom there are not a few, believe, with 'good' reason, that their participation not only assists their material advancement in life, but also provides them with a significant and reliable means of protection whenever they 'sail too close to the wind' or take a risk by committing a crime, which serves their own selfish interests. Masons pay lipservice to 'the Brotherhood of Man', but, like all their other lies, in reality this (revolutionary) slogan refers, as we have seen, to the venally self-interested 'Brotherhood' itself, rather than to Mankind generally. Moreover the protection afforded by Illuminised Masonic membership actually encourages venality, risk-taking and criminality.

Further, the attraction of Masonry for evil people is well documented. As Lady Queenborough put it: 'Unfortunately, many corrupt and vicious persons seek Masonic protection and it is to the interest of all such aspirants to power thus to encourage vice and corruption through blackmail, using their votaries in the sect to further their own private ends. This is the fundamental danger inherent in all secret societies, whatever their reputation, where power is the objective'[115].

All Masonry operates on the subversive basis of sectarian assistance - with assistance for fellow Masons usurping the Christian teaching that 'thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself'[116] (love and help everyone to the extent that is practically possible). In other words, Freemasonry is a universally subversive synarchy, the persistence of which is fundamentally incompatible not just with True Christianity, but with good governance at both the national and international levels. It represents a dangerously permissive Fifth Column network which is equipped with its own intelligence system, which intelligence communities find extremely useful, on occasion. Most alarmingly of all, it is host to the complex parasitical Illuminati network of conspiratorial secret societies.

The virus of Luciferian and Satanic Masonry is, as noted, absolutely chronic in the United States. The 15,300 US Lodges, as of 1990, included 220,000 Lodge members in the state of Ohio, where Satanism is so rampant that it is unsafe to enter certain towns at night, 206,000 in Pennsylvania, 206,000 in South Carolina - where Charleston is the Masonic capital, having been the location (on the 33rd parallel) from which Albert Pike achieved geomasonic 'primacy' - 188,000 in California, 146,000 in Illinois, 111,000 in Michigan, 96,000 in Tennessee, 90,000 in Georgia, and 83,000 in Florida. In the extremely Masonic United Kingdom, there were said to be 8,000 Lodges with 600,000 members; in Canada, 1,600 Lodges with 180,000 members; in Australia, 580 Lodges with 30,000 members; in Italy, 560 Lodges with 24,000 members; in Germany, 400 Lodges with 21,000 members; in Cuba, run by that Jesuit Fidel Castro, 300 Lodges with 20,000 members; and in The Philippines, which US intelligence tried, in the 1980s, to convert into the 52nd US State, 200 Lodges with 15,000 members.

And this list, of course, is woefully incomplete. Masonic and esoteric symbols are displayed in the Kremlin and on many national flags. In France, and in all the Latin and Catholic countries, it is the Grand-Orient 'line' of Freemasonry, which is at perennially at loggerheads - confusion and conflict bedevilling all those who follow Lucifer - with the Anglo-American 'Scottish Rite' line of the 'Craft': and in Latin America, the Grand-Orient deliberately, ruthlessly and persistently seeks to exclude the 'gringo' Scottish Rite 'line' altogether. These conflicts are reflected in the US-promoted drug wars there.

HOW FREEMASONIC ILLUMINATI PRINCIPLES DIVERGE FROM CHRISTIANITY

The incompatibility of Masonry with Christianity is not merely self-evident from even a cursory glance at pagan Masonic mumbo-jumbo, let alone from any knowledge of the Degree structure and the system of progressive initiation, swearing and esoteric ritual leading to effective demonic possession, in many cases - but also from any systematic review of the false belief system of Masonic indoctrination. To cite just a few instances of how the two diverge, the false deity, called the 'Great Architect of the Universe' who turns out upon progressive initiation to be Lucifer, can, Masons profess, be worshipped by anyone - Buddhists, Christians, Muslims, Hindus or Jews - without impediment or controversy: a statement of fact, since anyone in the world can indeed worship Lucifer[117]. However, Jesus instructed his disciple Thomas, and all the disciples: 'I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me' . In his first Epistle to Timothy, Paul says: 'There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Jesus Christ'[119]. And in his First General Epistle, John's word on this central issue cuts to the truth: 'Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also'[120].

The entire atmosphere of the Lodge, in which your correspondent once briefly participated without initiation, is always grossly oppressive; and no wonder. A clue to the identity (which is later made much more manifest) of the Masonic deity, is provided in the 17th Degree of the Scottish Rite (The Knights of the East and West). After completion of the initiation, the candidate is given the secret password 'Jubulum', and the 'sacred word' 'Abaddon'. In Christ's Revelation, Chapter 9, verse 11, we are taught: 'They [demons, the workers of darkness from hell] had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Appollyon' (viz., Appollo, namely Satan in Greek)[121]. In 'lower' Degree Masonic ritual, the Lodge is concerned, to keep the 'dupes' occupied, with recovery of a lost word, 'presumed' to be the name of God. According to the gobbldegook invented by generations of these liars, it was supposedly lost through the murder of the architect, Hiram Abiff (not mentioned as such in Scripture, because this is an invention, a fable), during the construction of Solomon's Temple. The 'quest' is initially completed during the ritual of the Royal Arch Degree ('arch' being Masonically symbolic of the female reproductive anatomy). It is here that the 'secret' name of the 'deity' of Masonry is revealed, the fake name being JAHBULON. 'JAH' is the short-form for the Hebrew name of God, 'Yahweh' or Jehovah'. 'BUL' is a rendering of the god Ba'al, or Bel, plural Ba'alim, meaning multiple gods/demons; and 'ON' is the term used in the Babylonian and Egyptian mysteries for the deity 'Osiris', the Egyptian god of the dead. This fact further 'illuminates' the deception, since the True God 'is not the God of the dead, but of the living'[122]. As for Osiris, in addition to being the Egyptian god of the dead, it was also the sun god, images of which are seen in the Lodge, normally in the form of a sun with a face and rays. In Thrace and Greece he was Dionysus, the god of pleasures, partying, wine and group sex. In Rome the same demon-deity was Liber, or Bacchus. The Lysians called him Bassareus and in Persia (as well as Rome), he was Mithras. For the Cretans, he was Zagreus, and 'became an underworld divinity who welcomed the souls of the dead to Hades and helped with their purification'[123]. In other locations, he went by all sorts of peculiar names, such as Deouis, Boy Jupiter, the Centaur, Orion, Saturn, Boy Plutus, Iswara, Winged One, Nimrod, Adoni (same as Adonay), Hermes, Prometheus, Poseidon, Butes, Dardanus, Himeros, Imbors, Iasius, Zeus, Iacchus, Hu, Thor, Bel, Serapis, Ormuzd, Apollo, Thammus, Tammuz, Atus, Hercules, Shiva, Moloch, and Ba'al. In other words, total confusion reigned as this entity was both the god of death and of sun-rays. In Jeremiah, Chapter 35, verse 35, for instance, the children of Israel were condemned for having adopted the post-natal 'contraception' abomination of the local heathen, having 'built the high places of Ba'al' (these were tall columns on top of which stood an idol, often grouped in rows of four) 'which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom' (probably meaning 'the son of perdition, i.e. of Satan), 'to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech (Moloch, which is replicated at the Bohemian Grove, where bacchanalian-Satanic orgies are participated in by members of the US 'high elite'); which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin'[124].

It is on page 321 of 'Morals and Dogma' that the Patriarch of US Freemasonry and geomasonic sorcery, Albert Pike, specifically evokes Lucifer, as noted earlier, as follows:

'Lucifer, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light? Doubt it not!'

In his cited oppressive esoteric work 'Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy', the 33rd Degree Masonic US author, Manly P. Hall, has a chapter providing precise instructions on how to summon up the Devil himself. Generally, in Masonry, the name of God is associated with pagan fertility gods such as Ba'al, and with all the sordid rites and evil abominations against which the children of Israel were constantly warned by their Old Testament prophets. By contrast, True Christianity and Scripture affirm the absolute holiness, separateness and majesty of God's name . And numerous further bizarre characteristics of Freemasonry are diametrically opposite to Christianity (which of course Freemasonry exists precisely to destroy). For instance:

- Freemasons are linked in solemn, spiritual bondage to one another, irrespective of individual members' creeds[126]. However Christianity forbids Christians from being 'unequally yoked' with unbelievers[127]. Likewise, it is an absolute abomination for Christians (and for devout Jews of course) that the so-called 'truth' (which is false) is 'revealed' by the medium of successive secret initiations, which are absolute anathema. For the 'valuable' truths (lies) of Freemasonry that are bound under the most serious of secret oaths, are available only to a very few. Christianity specifically precludes such secrecy, as does, by very clear implication, the Old Testament. For instance, Jesus Christ tells his disciples [Matthew, Chapter 10, verses 25-27]: 'It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub [= the Devil, associated with and present with Ba'al or Be'el, Bel], how much more shall they call them of his household? Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness [= the darkness of the world - Ed.], that speak ye in light; and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops'[128].
- Prohibition on teaching and witnessing Christianity to a 'Brother' Mason: A (misguided) 'Christian' Mason in the Lodge is forbidden to witness Jesus Christ to his fellow Lodge members who are 'lost' and 'unsaved'[129]. By contrast, Jesus commands those who love Him to go and preach the Gospel to everyone, from the housetops: certainly, to be precluded by a Masonic prohibition from fulfilling this commandment of Jesus is a direct negation of His instruction and of His Will. This Masonic precept, too, is therefore an abomination and anathema to the True Christian - although given the dev-

ilish nature of Freemasonry, it would be a contradiction in terms for any True Christian to preach Jesus Christ from within the Lodge, and while he is a Mason[130].

- Freemasons are required to bow down before strange gods: The 'Higher Order' of the 'Mystic Shrine' also requires a blood oath of submission sworn to the Muslim deity Allah, which, as a demon recognised by the Jews, existed long before Mohammed. The oath includes the words: 'And may Allah, the god of Arab, Moslem and Mohammedan, the god of Our Fathers, support me to the entire fulfilment of the same, Amen, Amen, Amen'. The Bible prohibits the believer from bowing down to any other gods, as those who seek to syncretise religion want the rest of us to do. This is the primary commandment among the Ten Commandments: Thou shalt have no other gods but me'[131].
- Freemasons (or should they be called 'feemasons'?) waste a huge proportion of their lives and funds on their sterile and diversionary black activities: They are required to be loyal and to give their time, 'emotions' and spiritual energies to Freemasonry, at the obvious expense of their families, which suffer accordingly and end up sterile and devoid of love. They are also required to contribute financially, mainly for the benefit of 'high' Masons unknown to them: over a lifetime, the amount of money wasted in such activities can be substantial. Furthermore, a Mason is constantly vulnerable to being asked for money and, in order not to displease his fellow 'Brethren' is always under undesirable moral pressure to pay up. This represents an incubus that many could do without, and as they waste more and more of their lives, it begins to dawn on some of them that they are being taken for a financial as well as for a 'spiritual' ride. By squandering loyalties, time, emotional and 'spiritual' resources, as well as their own finances, Masons divert their resources and finances from their families. They also squander time that could be more profitably spent[132].
- Freemasons are required to address their superiors with grovelling titles such as 'Worshipful Master', and to kneel before them[133]: Scripture commands us to call no man Master save Jesus, who uniquely allowed those who recognised who He was, to bow down before Him; and to worship none save God[134].
- Freemasonry asserts that its 'valuable' truths must be bound under grave secret oaths, and be available to only a select few: This is the origin of the globalist Luciferian elite's erroneous notion that they alone are qualified and privileged to reorder the affairs of the rest of Mankind, an illusion which equates to gross power-idolatry. Scripture does not allow for or tolerate such secrecy, and ritual initiation is out of the question[135].
- Finally, the definitive prohibition against Christians being Freemasons is to be found in Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 10, verse 21: 'Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils; ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils'[136]. You cannot serve two masters, God and the Prince of this World.

MASONIC LODGES DESCRIBED IN 594 BC

There is, moreover, nothing new about Illuminati Masonic Lodges. In 594 BC, they were described by the prophet Ezekiel in graphic language, including allusions to animal abominations and that ancient travesty, worship of the sun (Osiris et al: see above):

'He said furthermore unto me, Son of man, seest thou what they do? Even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here, that I should go far off from my sanctuary? But turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations'.

'And he brought me to the door of the court [of the Temple]; and when I looked, behold a hole in the wall. Then he said unto me, Son of man, dig now in the wall: and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. And he said unto me, Go in, and behold the wicked abominations that they do here'. And he saw their double-mindedness:

'So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, portrayed upon the wall round about. And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel... with every man a censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up'.

'Then said he unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? Tor they say, the Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth...'.

'And he brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and, behold, at the door of the Temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east'[137].

All Christian churches face towards the East, which is to say, towards the rising sun. This is a pagan relic, since the Holy Spirit resides within us, not geographically.

NOT FOR NOTHING IS MASONRY CALLED 'THE CRAFT'

Masons refer to Freemasonry as the 'Craft', short, as we have seen, for 'witchcraft'. Some, who know of, and point to, the existence and use of 'masonic Bibles' - such as the Masonic Bible which is routinely brought to US Presidential inaugurations - assume in ignorance that because the book is a 'Bible', Masonry is somehow sanctified. Such a superficial deduction is demolished by reports of former Satanists and witches who have been rescued from the abyss (by the Grace of the Holy Spirit, as true Christians believe, for they could never throw off such bondage on their own). Among a number of influential former sorcerers who have dedicated their lives ever since their rescue, to warning other blind dupes about the dangers of witchcraft, is the American former witch, William J. Schnoebelen. Concerning the deceptive use of the Bible (employing a specially adapted version) in certain Masonic rituals, he has this to say:

'Back in the 1970s, when I first became a witch, a very popular how-to book on magic was Raymond Buckland's 'Popular Candle-Burning'[138]. In this book were 'recipes' for magic spells for everything from healing to love spells, to protection spells. On one set of pages of the book would be a spell for healing, complete with instructions on the burning and movement of certain coloured candles. The spell would be a full-blown witchcraft ritual, pagan to the core....'.

'On the following pages would be the same ritual, with the same candles [and] the same instructions. However, the text of the 'spell' would be drawn from the Psalms or [from] other Bible verses. These were provided for readers who were a little too squeamish to actually do a witchcraft incantation, but still wanted results'.

'Now the question becomes: Even though those rituals were full of Psalms, were they still witchcraft? Of course, the answer would have to be Yes. In similar manner, even though Bible phrases and characters abound in Masonic ritual 'work', the presence of those elements cannot somehow 'sanctify' what is essentially a pagan ritual full of witchcraft overtones'[139]. Masonic rituals are in fact far, far worse than Wicca, which was in fact largely developed by the Freemasons Gerald Gardner and Aleister Crowley.

'For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft'[140]; and Masonry is rebellion in spades. So Mr Schnoebelen has meticulously compared Masonic rituals with the witchcraft rituals with which he was familiar and a key participant for 17 years.

His expert findings and warnings include the following assessments:

- Both witchcraft and Masonry are built upon a foundational system of three Degrees. In Freemasonry, these are the three 'Blue Degrees', with multiple higher Degrees accessible to selected participants later. In Wicca, there are also three basic Degrees, with a few forms of Wicca offering some higher Degrees after the third Degree has been consummated. The Druids had, and retain, three Degrees. When Dr Rowan Williams, the reprobate prelate appointed Archbishop of Canterbury by The Queen on the advice of her Prime Minister, Tony Blair, he attended, shortly afterwards, a Druid ceremony prior to his Enthronement, and was reportedly raised to the 'highest' Druidic Degree. The Druids were associated with Satanic activities, including ritual murder.
- Both categories of witchcraft are secret societies - in that in both, the membership lists are secret, and their secrets are withheld from the general public (although massive leakage has taken place in recent years, as these subversive elements have become increasingly uninhibited and brash). Both usually meet in secret - 'in the dark', as described by the prophet Ezekiel.
- Both use ceremonial initiations, including sworn oaths, by means of which candidates pass from one Degree to another. This method of acquiring 'knowledge' is anathema to True Christians, to whom knowledge and understanding and wisdom is provided as a Free Gift of Grace through Scripture and the Holy Spirit. The Word of God was not divulged in secret. Nothing was done 'in a corner'.
- Both witchcraft and Masonry undertake superstitious ceremonial purgings and purifications of their ritual space before any ritual 'work' is started.
- In both, an immense amount of time is wasted on these sterile activities, which could be devoted to constructive use. Family life suffers and in Freemasonry, constant demands for money deplete personal and family financial resources.
- There are also precise similarities, which include the following:

O Candidates are required to strip off all secular clothing.

O Candidates are required to be divested of all metal (indicative of the asserted magical management of electrical forces).

O Candidates are hoodwinked (blindfolded), and ropes are tied round them ceremonially, signifying that they are to be BOUND by their oaths and by their adherence to the bondage that they have chosen.

O Candidates are required to stand in the Northeast corner of the 'Temple' in the First Degree[141] ritual of Entered Apprentice.

O In both witchcraft and Masonry, the candidate is challenged by having his naked chest pierced with a sharp instrument Witches use a sword, Masons the point of a compass, which also has other (sexual) significance.

O In both witchcraft and Masonry, the candidate is required to swear solemn oaths of secrecy before being given custody of the group's secrets.

O In both witchcraft and Masonry, the candidate is challenged using secret passwords, which are demonic in nature.

O The candidate is led blindfolded, in both forms of witchcraft, in a circumnambulation (walking round) of the Temple.

Mr Schnoebelen further points out that the oaths required to be sworn by a witch are milder and less gruesome than the oaths which a Freemason must swear. For example, the text of a first grade oath according to the 'Witchcraft Book of Shadows' reads as follows: 'I [Name], in the presence of the Mighty Ones, do of my own free will and accord, most solemnly swear that I will ever keep the secrets of the Arte [= 'Magical Arts'] and never reveal the secrets of the Arte, except it be to a proper person, properly prepared and within a Magic Circle such as I am now in. All this I swear, by all my hopes of a future life, mindful that my measure has been taken; and may my weapons turn against me, if I should break this, my solemn oath'[142].

All of which sounds ridiculously mild, when compared even with the First Degree oath that was required (until 1986 in England) to be sworn by the Entered Apprentice Mason. This is too long to be cited in its entirety, but it ends like this: 'All this I most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear, with a firm and steadfast resolution [so as] to keep and perform the same - binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn out by its roots, and my body buried in the rough sands of the sea, at low water mark, where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty-four hours, should I ever knowingly violate this my Entered Apprentice obligation, so help me God and keep me steadfast in the due performance of the same'[143].

So we need not really have bothered to explain, even partially, as has been done, why Christianity is wholly incompatible with Masonry, given that the very first oath sworn by the misguided and ignorant candidate, for his very First Degree, is blasphemous beyond calm description. Not only are oaths forbidden for Christians, but here we have an oath which desecrates the human body - which Christ teaches is the temple of the Holy Spirit - and murders it, while asking for God's help to enable the candidate to adhere to his bloody oath and thus to Satanic threats. How evil is that?

IF IT'S AS BLACK AS THIS AT THE OUTSET, WHAT NEXT?

But this is just the very 'mild', by Masonic standards, beginning. For this gruesome oath is just the first in a series of ever more horrible oaths which the deluded candidate is required to take as he ascends 'upwards' (= downwards), initiation after initiation. The oaths of the three Degrees of Wicca are like a Sunday School lesson, by comparison. Being a Mason, of whatever Degree, means that the duped person is condemned to

THE UNITED STATES OF A
ONE
1
ANNUIT CŒPTIS
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM
THE GREAT SEAL
IN GOD WE TRUST
ONE
110
ONE DOLLA

Figure 53:The image inside the circle is the insignia of the Order of the Illuminati, and is taken from the obverse of the Great Seal of the United States. It was imposed on the $1.0 bill in 1927 - since when Americans have been exchanging coupons displaying allegiance to the Evil One with every petty transaction. Although this is obvious, the failure of subsequent US Administrations to remove this abomination shows conclusively what Force they have all served. Removing this image would be a true counterrevolutionary gesture, and would have immense global consequences.

going through life burdened with an ever-expanding incubus of demonic spiritual baggage weighing down upon him. And the system is merciless.

By the time the deluded adept realises what his Masonic 'life' actually entails, it may be far too late, as he has been so spiritually drained and dumbed-down and infested, that he may lack the strength to rebel, not least because of the enormous burden of peer pressure which binds him. Another source of Masonic disillusionment, though, is that the Mason may come to realise that he is being exploited. For Freemasonry is like a pyramid scheme, or Ponzi game, consisting of a selfish hierarchy that lives and leeches off the lower levels. Those at the top of the scheme draw most of the revenues, thanks to the clueless efforts of countless thousands at the lower levels. The Mason must spend considerable sums of his private money to progress through the myriad Degrees, in addition to paying dues every year to every single body he has joined - which may amount to a sizeable amount, depending upon the level of participation. Mr Schnoebelen is not alone in having observed that there was a great deal of money 'sloshing around' in the upper Masonic ranks of which he had knowledge[144].

Other precise overt practical similarities between witchcraft and the 'Craft' have been authoritatively identified. They include:

- Both have a ceremonial un-blindfolding of the candidate, following his oath, before lighted candles - symbolising his 'illumination'.
- Both witchcraft and Masonry convey to the new initiate the 'working tools' pertinent to the Degree. The use of each tool is explained and taught to the candidate.
- In both witchcraft and Freemasonry, there are explicit ceremonial correspondences to human reproduction, because both are sex-oriented, in conformity with their pagan orientation and origin.
- In the higher Degrees, both witchcraft and the 'Craft' take the initiate through a ritual pagan death-and-rebirth (reincarnation) experience, in which the initiate acts the part of the hero (or heroine) of the Craft.
- Both aberrations cause the candidate to endure, while blindfolded, being picked up, spun around, carried out, jostled, or struck from person to person. This filthy, violent abomination, is supposed to produce an 'altered state of consciousness'. [For an old depiction of this abomination, see Figure 41, page 221].
- Both witchcraft and Masonry are openly referred to as 'the Craft'.

THE EVIL 'ALL-SEEING EYE'

In 1985, Ralph Anderson, a US 32nd Degree Mason, stated in a presentation that 'The Masonic Movement... is the home of the [Ancient] Mysteries and the seat of initiation... Under the All-Seeing Eye the work can go forward. It is a far more occult organisation than can now be realised, and is intended to be the training school for the coming advanced occultists'[1]. This Evil Eye of Masonry represents OSIRIS[2], i.e. Satan/Sun/Lucifer. Albert Pike revealed that the geomasonic All-Seeing Eye is 'the emblem of OSIRIS, the creator'[3]. The symbolic symbol for Osiris and the sun is the point within a circle[4], which is a phallic symbol[5], the symbol of Generation, with which Masonry is concerned and is permanently obsessed. The occultist, Robert Hieronymus, says that 'the single eye, alone or in a triangle, is used extensively by Freemasons and other secret societies'[6]. ■

1. Ralph Anderson, 'Freemasonry: Yesterday, Today and Tomorrow', Arcana Workshops, June 1985, pages 4-6. See also: The Full Moon Story', Rams' Dell Press, Manhattan Beach, CA, 1974. 2: J Edward Decker, The Question of Freemasonry', Issaquah, WA, Free the Masons Ministries, n.d., page 12. 3: Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma': see references, pp. 15-16; 4: Herbert F Inman, 'Masonic Problems and Queries', London, A Lewis Ltd., 1978, page 172; 5: Albert G. Mackey, 'A Manual of the Lodge', New York, Charles E, Merrill Company. 1870, page 56; 6: Robert Hieronimus, 'America's Secret Destiny', Rochester, VT, Destiny Books, 1989, page 81.

On 20th February 2006, The Times newspaper (London) published, on its page 24, an article entitled 'RETIRE AT 85 TO PAY FOR LIVING LONGER'. Adjacent to it was an uncaptioned single human eye which occupied the same large space as the article itself. It was disconnected and out of context - i.e., a signal to 'the interested' that The Times is Illuminati-controlled.

Figure 54: Albert Pike stated that The Blazing Star in our Lodges has been regarded as... the All-Seeing Eye... representing [the] Guardian and Guide [= 'Spirit Guide'] of our souls. Also known as the 'evil eye', it is defined in 'The Complete Book of Witchcraft and Demonology' as 'the power of the glance to harm others'.

THE ADDICTIVE, PAGAN FOCUS ON LICENTIOUS SEX

To complete this analysis, several other pertinent realities (among innumerable others, too numerous to elaborate here) are to be noted:

- In both forms of the 'Craft' there is an unhealthy focus on loveless sex. Given the almost total hegemony of social power wielded by adepts of both forms of witchcraft, it is hardly surprising that modern Western values and life have been completely swamped by sexualisation - to the point at which our schools now openly seek to sex-ualise their pupils, teaching them all about homosexuality and lesbianism at a tender age. In Masonry, the ceremonial Masonic apron is intended to cover the 'Holy of Holies' of Freemasonry, namely the male groin area - a reality which has been extensively documented by many analysts[145].
- The Masonic Two-Ball Cane tie-pin, available from suppliers to the 'Craft', which Masons proudly wear in the United States, often to church, reflects a play on the words Tubal-Cain (with gross pagan Biblical associations), and takes the form of two balls suspended to a cane, which has obviously crude sexual connotations: see Figure 55, page 337. This is the very 'image of jealousy, which provoketh to jealousy[146]. The gods of all the pagan tribes and kings and nations around the Israelites were sexual idols; and at the deliberately-named Bohemian Grove, California, where so many of the high and mighty US geomasonic 'movers-and-shakers' go every summer to indulge in pagan orgies, the night ceremony beneath that huge idol shaped like an owl, called Moloch, is perpetrated before a sexuality-related idol - Moloch having, as already noted, been the image to which the heathen neighbours of the Israelites, and at times the children of Israel themselves, sacrificed their own unwanted children.
- The square and compasses used by Masons, while of course purporting to reflect their mediaeval cathedral-building tools, are representative of the generative organs; and, as also discussed earlier, the G that is set in the centre of these symbols stands not for God as naive initiates are left to believe (so that they can then ignorantly maintain that Christianity is compatible with Freemasonry), let alone even for Gnosticism, but in fact for Generativity or sexual potency. The blazing star at the centre of the Lodge is the familiar witch's pentagram, or Pythagorean pentalpha, widely used for Satanic symbolism purposes, and the basic symbol of the god of Satanism, Set. In Captain Morgan's classic work 'Illustrations of Masonry', published in 1827, for which his Illuminati-Masonic 'Brethren' murdered him, many illustrations of a sun with rays are shown. The sun always has a spooky face.

FREEMASONRY PLUGGED INTO THE GLOBAL WITCHCRAFT NETWORK

To summarise, the 'authorities' of Freemasonry, notably Albert Pike and Manly P. Hall, both of whom were 33rd Degree Masons and black occultists, agreed that the underlying 'philosophies' of freemasonry are Kabbalism and Gnosticism[147]. Kabbalism is the Babylonian system of Jewish mysticism, magic, numerology and so forth, and is considered to be the foundational element of modern witchcraft. Almost all the main witches and sorcerers known to have operated in the 20th century were Kabbalists. As for Gnosticism, it is the ancient, un-Christian heresy of Simon Magus which disseminates the base lie that 'one is saved by acquiring secret, unknown knowledge' (Greek: gnosis). All 'mystery religions', like witchcraft and Masonry, are gnostic in character.

Both witches and Freemasons seek a form of salvation through 'illumination' or receiving 'the light', which is not the true light but the false light emitted by the Angel of Darkness, Lucifer. And both aberrations teach a form of salvation by works, not Grace. The Catholic Church, like modern Talmudic Judaism, follows this heresy, as well. However by no amount of 'works' can we possibly attain justification in the sight of God. True Christians know that they will be saved by the freely-given gift of the Holy Spirit, not by 'works', which is indeed the most ancient of heresies[148]. The occult doctrine and lie of reincarnation is explicitly taught in witchcraft, and implicitly in the Lodge.

We also have it on the authority of Mr Schnoebelen, a former witch and Mason -as well as from others who have managed to emerge from the same spiritual darkness - and from other written sources, that both witchcraft and Masonry deny the unique character and mission of Jesus Christ[149]. Both of course likewise deny the resurrection of Christ[150]. In each of these key respects, the Wicca share the 'theology' of Freemasonry.

Mr Schnoebelen has reported that while he was still deluded by witchcraft and Masonry, he established that all the leaders of his witchcraft groups were Masons, while four of his male witch friends were also in the Lodge. This reflected the fact that Masonry is plugged into a global witchcraft network, a hierarchy of explicit evil which has gained the upper hand in the affairs of men. William Schnoebelen and his wife were members of a Co-Masonic Lodge, which are more openly occult and are controlled by the rite Le Droit Humaine (Human Rights Lodge), which admits both men and women as equals. Co-Masonry is affiliated with the occultic Theosophical Society, and in the United States is headquartered at Larkspur, CO. The progenitor (apart from Lucifer, of course) of the occult Theosophical Society was the notorious sorceress Annie Besant.

The United Kingdom is a hotbed of Masonry, which achieved unprecedented hegemony under the Blair Governments, given the large number of Scots holding high posts in the Government - Scotland being a Masonic state; but even so, British Masonry is a form of the 'Craft' that is less obviously 'in-your-face' than is the case in the United States, which is a Masonic foundation - explaining, as the Author has reiterated, the never-ending scandals and sordid controversies which so routinely bedevil (literally) Washington DC. Americans appear to accept this state of affairs with equanimity, without apparently realising the folly of having Satanic symbols plastered all over the Federal Government's structures. This is all the more extraordinary, given that so many Americans do believe in God. A belief in God necessitates recognition of the existence of Satan and his demons: clearly, the Workers of Darkness believe in them, as anyone who spends more than five minutes inside any of the chain book and music stores in America can immediately recognise. The proportion of floor space given over to the Works of Darkness has spread so extensively, that the 'religion' sections now consist largely of variants of witchcraft and the esoteric.

Figure 55: This image, displayed upon tie-pins obtainable from US Masonic suppliers, is called the Two-Ball Cane pin, a word-play on Tubal-Cain. From the US 'Masonic Quiz Book": Q: Who was Tubal Cain? A: 'He is the Vulcan of the Pagans'. Vulcan was a sun deity associated with fire, thunderbolts and lightning, and at his festival, Vulcania, human sacrifices were offered. Note the deliberately sexual innuendo of the image and its name. US Masons wear this tie-pin in church!

And every day, when making routine purchases, Americans exchange the insignia of The Order of the Illuminati, without often pausing to consider what this repetitive practice implies. They pass around brazen images of Lucifer, which was added to the $1.0 bill precisely because there are more of these bills in circulation than any other bill - meaning that Lucifer's 'All-Seeing Eye' would be seen more often by more Americans than would have been the case if, say, the $20 bill had been chosen for this Luciferian purpose. Imagine: The 'All-Seeing Eye', the most prominent occult symbol in Masonry, an ancient image of Satan, sits perched on top of the uncompleted pyramid on the reverse of the $1.0 bill that is taken from the obverse of the Rosicrucian Great Seal of the United States. This constant, daily circulation and reminder of the 'All-Seeing Eye' and of the god of the United States represents nothing less than a ruthless, arrogant assertion by the United States' Rosicrucian founders - and latterly by the United States' Illuminati leadership - of an intention to impose The Order of the 'New World' upon humanity. According to the 33rd Degree Mason, Albert Mackey, the 'All-Seeing Eye' is 'a symbol of the omniscient and watchful providence of God' (by which he meant Lucifer). 'It is a very ancient symbol, and is supposed by some to be a relic of primitive sun-worship.... In most of the ancient languages of Asia, the eye and the sun are expressed in the same word. Among the Egyptians the eye was the symbol of their supreme god, Osiris, or the sun.. .'[151]. 'The Eye, or Uraeus, was to become the effective ruler of the world, and as such was to to be worn by the Pharaohs as a symbol of their majesty and descent from the sun god'[152].

Lucifer dominates the oppressive controlling Masonic hierarchy that reigns over the network of Masonic Lodges in the United States, and over the nation itself. The trapezoid (unfinished pyramid on both the $1 bill and on the Great Seal) is an especially significant symbol in overt Satanism[153]. And the 1776 in Roman numerals at the foot of the pyramid are not primarily, as is almost universally assumed, indicative of the year in which the Masonic foundation of the United States occurred, but the year in which the lapsed and aberrant Jewish Catholic-Jesuit occultist, Professor Adam Weishaupt, of Ingolstadt University, a keen student of the Jewish Kabbalistic philosopher Mendelsohn and the 'founder' of the 'Illuminati' in Bavaria, published his blueprint for the New World Order, which he had prepared under contract from the Rothschilds. If the dots that are formed by the stars of the 13 original states are joined, one obtains a Star of David.

Freemasonry was penetrated at its highest levels during the 18th century by agents of the Illuminati. They consider their task to be to manipulate the 'mechanistic forces' of 'good and evil' (in which they do not believe) on the model of the later Hegelian dialectic (Thesis, Antithesis), which is a manifestation of the Illuminati's primary double-minded modus operandi. In this model, from which they never deviate, they seek to impose the Synthesis. According to this model, every mechanistic force has a mechanistic counter-force: since these people have become 'gods' in their own eyes through initiation (being 'wise in their own eyes'), they seek to manipulate the 'seething energies of Lucifer' to generate the conflict out of which emerges a new situation, their preplanned Synthesis.The Illuminati make it their business always to be present at the Synthesis.

It is extraordinary that anyone pays any attention at all to Freemasonry. For not only can its assertions and gobbldegook be torn apart and demolished intellectually by anyone with Scriptural knowledge and the patience to grapple with the mad minds of its dead prophets, but its chief dead Patriarch explicitly stated that its policy was always to deceive its own candidates and adepts - or, to borrow the cynical description of Blanchard, its 'dupes'. For it is to be repeated that - on page 819 of his tedious tome 'Morals and Dogma' - the sorcerer and necromancer Albert Pike explicitly revealed, for the whole world to take on board, that Masonry is a fraudulent system built exclusively upon lies (which is quite obvious from even ten minutes' reading of his turgid and deadly text). As he explained, for the benefit of 'the interested': 'The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the Initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them; but it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them'[154].

In closing, let us again reflect grimly upon the misfortune that United States is a Rosicrucian Freemasonic Revolutionary Foundation. Its secretive, aggressive European-implanted remit is described in symbolic terms upon the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States. But Masonry - by the open published admission of the acknowledged Patriarch and dead occult supremo of American world Freemasonry, Albert Pike - is a pack of black lies. Therefore, the United States is founded upon a pyramid of lies. Moreover, Freemasonry, the 'Craft', is witchcraft. The United States is accordingly founded upon lies and witchcraft, a fact that its shoppers acknowledge every day.

No wonder all teaching of Christianity is prohibited in American public schools. It cannot be taught because the secret god of the United States is Lucifer, and its secret religion is Luciferian witchcraft taking the form of Rosicrucian occultic Kabbalistic Illuminati-penetrated Freemasonry, a primary objective of which is to 'destroy' Christianity. This is a vain and foolish objective, since Jesus Christ, Who is above all, explicitly promised that 'heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away'[155].

As has been acknowledged, of course, the United Kingdom has similarly grave problems with this subversive, arrogant and overpowerful, reprobate witchcraft sect. Both countries, sooner rather than later, will have to shed these evil incubi - or they will both be destroyed, not least because, as we have seen, good governance is incompatible with the self-serving and evil oaths that Freemasons have to swear, and with their corrosive consequences. Britain is in any case scheduled for obliteration by the Illuminati controllers of the New Underworld Order, the latest target date for the realisation of which is 2015. The fact that career progress in both countries is substantially dependent, in key sectors, upon Masonic participation and preferment, is indicative of a chronic state of morbidity. And the reality that similar problems exist in many other countries merely goes to show that we are only too right to fear 'that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world'[156]. No wonder that Jesus Christ warned us: 'Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both body and soul in hell'[157] - namely, the Prince of Darkness, the Evil One, the Devil, called Satan, and Lucifer. Paul warned about all this in 65 AD: so we have had the best part of two millennia to understand what he meant:

'Now the Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times, some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron'[158]. ■

Chapter 5: THE HOUSE OF LUCIFER Notes and references:

1. Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', originally published 1923, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc., Richmond, VA, 1976.
2. This cannot be accurate; it is a lie; otherwise why would such people assemble annually for a week of debauchery at the Bohemian Grove at Monte Rio, Sonoma County, California, as discussed in the box on page 161?
3. The 'creative forces' to which he refers are not divine, but are rather 'the seething energies of Lucifer': see main text.
4. Manly R Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', originally published 1923, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc., Richmond, VA, 1976. op. cit., pages 50-51.
5. Albert Pike, 33rd Degree Mason, Palladian Rite founder, occultist and necromancer, 'Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry', 1871, House of the Temple, Washington DC, 1969, page 819. In 1871, Pike undertook a division of labour with his fellow Freemason, criminalist and occultist, Giuseppe Mazzini, with Pike assuming

global responsibility for Scottish (and his subsequently revived Palladian Rite) dogma, and Mazzini continuing with his hyperactivity as head of the geomasonic Political Action Centre. This is discussed later in this chapter.

6. Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', originally published 1923, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc., Richmond, VA, 1976, pages 102-103: 'Recognizing Egypt to have been the cradle of superior culture and most exalted philosophy, and admitting the most undeniable evidence that the Egyptian Mysteries were the progenitors of modern Freemasonry, it is most sad that a critical dissection of the Egyptian theological system is impeded and rendered almost impossible by the comparatively late and incomplete forms of the ancient writings now available on the subject'. In this revealing observation, Manly P. Hall not only confirms that the Egyptian death mysteries were the 'progenitors' of modern Freemasonry, a statement which is of course incomplete since the sorcery of Babylon a.k.a. the Jewish Kabbalah (= Babylon) were of equal importance, but also reveals that the inventers and elaborators of modern freemasonry, meaning primarily Albert Pike, had little information about the Egyptian death cult, and its Works of Darkness - from which the Lord rescued the children of Israel, as related in Exodus. The story of Exodus is a living, historical parable for the truth that the Lord leads out of the darkness and 'the valley of the shadow of death' into the light of His glory. But the reprobate perversity and ignorance of initiated Masons leads them towards the darkness (Egypt) and its menu of abominations.

7. Lady Queenborough (Edith Starr Miller), 'Occult Theocrasy', published posthumously in 1933, republished In Los Angeles by Christian Book Club of America and available from Emissary Publications, 9205 SE Clackamas Road, #1776, Clackamas, OR 97105; page 177.

8. Communication from an ex-Conservative Member of Parliament who wishes to remain anonymous.

9. 'The Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons', by Stephen Knight, Grenada Publishing and Book Club Associates, London, 1984, pages 188-190, and Dorset Press, USA: ISBN 0-88029-113-3.

10. Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', op. cit., pages 47-48.

11. Ibid., page 48.

12. 'Last Trumpet Newsletter', Last Trumpet Ministries, PO Box 806, Beaver Dam, Wl 53916, USA, July 1986. Volume 5, issue 7, page 2. The Minister/Editor, David J. Meyer, is a former Satanist and is an excellent source of reliable understanding about the madness of the occult.

13. Manly R Hall, The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', op. cit., pages 46-47.

14. Albert Pike, 33rd Degree Mason, Palladian Rite founder, occultist and necromancer, 'Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry': Prepared for the Supreme Council of the Thirty-Third Degree (Mother Council of the World) for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States and Published by its Authority, 1871, House of the Temple, Washington DC, 1969, op. cit., page 321.

15. Matthew, Chapter 23, verses 37-39. The importance of this understanding is such that the entire passage has been given in the main text. This book would be pointless if it amended the truth in order to spare certain readers' sensibilities; and for this reason, the Author cannot have cognisance of cultural and organised religious preferences. The interpretation given here is correct, uncomfortable though it is for people of Jewish extraction and faith to acknowledge. The historical failure of the Jews to acknowledge this truth is a great human tragedy, but it is unfortunately their problem to resolve, not the Author's. Instead of recognising where the truth lay and lies, their Rabbis have spent two millennia fiddling around with the sorcery and sterility of the Kabbalah.

16. 'Babylon Mystery Religion: Ancient and Modern', Ralph Edward Woodrow, 1996, 1993 (23rd edition), Riverside, CA: from Chapter 12, Papal Immorality.

17. 'The Catholic Encyclopedia', Volume 4, page 668, article: 'Boniface VIII'.

18. Samuel Oppenheim, The Jews and Masonry in the United States before 1810', reprinted from Publications of the American Jewish Historical Society, New York, Number 19 (1910); citing an editorial by the Jewish Mason, Dr Isaac M. Wise, in The Israelite'for 3rd August 1855.

19. Samuel Oppenheim, 'The Jews and Masonry in the United States before 1810', reprinted from Publications of the American Jewish Historical Society, New York, op. cit. Number 19 (1910), page 2.

20. Samuel Oppenheim, The Jews and Masonry in the United States before 1810', reprinted from Publications of the American Jewish Historical Society, New York, op. cit, Number 19 (1910), page 92.

21. 'An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Kabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy: Being an Interpretation of the Secret Teachings concealed within the Rituals, Allegories and Mysteries of All Ages', Rosicrucian Edition, Manly R Hall, San Francisco, printed for Manly. P. Hall by H. S. Crocker Company, Inc., 1928, pages CXLIII-CXLIV.

22. The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall, the Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA, 1944-1991, ISBN 0-89314-388-X.

23. 'The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall, The Philosophical Research Society., inc., Los Angeles, CA, op. cit, pp. 78-79.

24. 'The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall, The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA, op. cit., page 80.

25. 'The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall, The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA, op. cit, pp. 133-134.

26. Berit Kjos, 'Olympic Myths and Early Magic', 'Christian News', 28 February 1994,, Volume 32, Number 9, page 5. Cited by Dr Cathy Burns in 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated', Sharing, Mount Carmel, PA, page 263. Available through Emissary Publications, PMB 1776,9205 SE Clackamas Road, Clackamas, OR 97105, USA.

27. Texe Marrs, 'Dark Majesty: The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of a Thousand Points of Light', Austin, TX, Living Truth Publishers, 1992, page 212. Cited by Dr Kathy Burns in Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated, Sharing, Mount Carmel, PA, pages 263-264. Available through Emissary Publications, PMB 1776, 9205 SE Clackamas Road, Clackamas, OR 97105, USA.

28. The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall. The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA, op. cit, pp. 130-131.

29. The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall. The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA op. cit., pp. 130-131.

30. The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall. The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA,op. cit, pages 110.

31. The Secret Destiny of America', Manly P. Hall. The Philosophical Research Society., Inc., Los Angeles, CA,op. cit, pages 110.

32. Dr Bataille (Carl Hackse), 'Le Diable au XIXe Siecle', cited by Lady Queenborough (Edith Starr Miller) in her incomparable work, 'Occult Theocrasy', The Christian Book Club of America, Los Angeles, 1933, from which insights in this chapter are liberally taken.

33. 'A Deck of Cards', 'The Gospel Standard', May 1991, Volume 40, Number 11, pages 3-4.

34. Cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theosophy', op. cit, pages 223-224, from Bataille [see Note 32], page 35.

35. Isaiah, Chapter 29, verse 4. The voice of the possessed manifests itself as a deep, almost metallic, droning, grating

voice, which may be speaking words much faster than the possessed person normally speaks, and is identical whether the victim is male or female. The Author and his wife have both separately been at the receiving end of this voice, on the telephone, emitted by two entirely separate and unconnected people. The voice may also manifest itself, as Isaiah also says, in the form of a squeaky whisper, as when the German Dr Henry Kissinger mocked the victims of the 9/11 atrocities during an American television interview, to the disgust of all who witnessed this manifestation of demonic possession.

36. Cited by Lady Queenborough, Occult Theosophy, op. cit., page 215.

37. Batailie, op. cit, page 36.

38. Batailie, op. cit, page 36.

39. Batailie, op. cit, page 34.

40. Ephesians, Chapter 5, verses 11-14. In this passage, Paul not only commands that we 'have no fellowship with' the Works of Darkness, sorcerers and other deluded evildoers, but even says that it is shameful even to speak of these evil things that they do in secret. The Author by no means dissents from this, and makes only the exception that the meaning of the Word through Jesus Christ is revealed more clearly when we 'know our enemy', Satan. It is, obviously, for this reason that throughout much of this book, wherever the Author's knowledge of Scripture helps to heighten awareness of the evils the world faces, the full scriptural reference and context is given. Paul was teaching that those who seek and know Christ do not waste time discussing the banal (and always unchanged) Works of Darkness, since the Works of Salvation are glorious and always worthy of contemplation and discourse. Since Lucifer works within the bounds set by God, his works never vary: hence their dreary banality.

41. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 8, verses 9-10. Verse 11 reads: 'And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries'.

42. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 8, verses 18-24.

43. Lady Queenborough, op. tit, page 34. Note 9 on page 34 of this work reads: The G which the Freemasons place in the middle of the flamboyant star signifies Gnosticism and Generation, the most sacred words of the ancient Kabbala'. See Eliphas Levi, 'Dogme et Rituel de la Haute Magie', Volume II, page 97'.

44. Lady Queenborough, op. tit, page 35.

45. Lady Queenborough, op. tit, page 34.

46. Lady Queenborough, op. tit, page 35.

47. The European Union's structures and documentation are wholly devoid of spiritual content. Investigations by the Author and others into looting and corruption at the European Commission have identified extensive Masonic connections.

48. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, from: Chapter II, The Meaning of Occultism.

49. Exodus, Chapter 20, verse 4. Verse 5 reads: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me' - i.e., those who bow down before false gods (demons, idolatry).

50. First Epistle of Paul to Timothy, Chapter 1, verse 4: 'Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do'. Teachers of fables are condemned by Paul as follows, in 1 Timothy, Chapter 1, verses 6-7:'... some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm'.

51. Second Epistle to Timothy, Chapter 4, verses 3-4: 'For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables'. Look at the clearly prelanned reprobate state of the Anglican Communion.

52. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 38.

53. 'Maconnerie Pratique, Cours d'Enseignement Superieur de la Franc-Magonnerie, Rite Ecossaise Ancien et Accepte', cited by Paul Rosen in 'Satan et Cie', 1888, and by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 177-181.

54. 'Maconnerie Pratique, Cours d'Enseignement Superieur de la Franc-Magonnerie, Rite Ecossaise Ancien et Accepte', cited by Paul Rosen in Satan et Cie, 1888, and by Lady Queenborough, op. cit.

55. Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 5, verse 17: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

56. John Yarker, 'The Arcane Schools', page 480, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 189.

57. H. L. Stillson & W. J. Hughan, 'History of Freemasonry and Concordant Ideas', page 243, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit., page 189.

58. From Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 189-191.

59. From Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 193-194.

60. Isaiah, Chapter 5, verse 24. This follows shortly after verses 20 and 21 in which those who call evil good and good evil, as do Freemasons, are destined for perdition and destruction: 'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!'

61. Lady Queenborough, op. cit., pages 362-363.

62. The Author has noticed, as have colleagues, exactly the same phenomenon among a certain type of US intelligence operative. They agree with everything you say about, for instance, the United States being in the process of destruction due to the 'seething energies' of the reprobate intelligence services, which they acknowledge are in turmoil (although it may suit some project managers for this to be quite widely perceived); and yet they continue to plot behind one's back, to support and work for this rotten system, and even to engage in threats of murder - both against their supposed friends and, especially, against fellow intelligence operatives of whose activities they become insanely jealous or towards whom they suddenly harbour Satanic anger. This is all commonplace, and indicative, in the Author's experience, of the Satanisation of the intelligence community - which is hardly surprising, given its serial and recidivist criminality at home and abroad, and against the American people.

63. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 363, citing Blanchard, 'Scottish Rite Masonry illustrated', 33rd Degree, Volume II, pages 162 and 462.

64. Lady Queenborough, op. cit. Information cited here includes statements by Albert Gallatin Mackey and Blanchard, pages 362-363. Lady Queenborough is kinder to Blanchard (first name not cited) than the Author. She writes on page 362 of 'Occult Theocrasy': 'Blanchard [was] himself a high Mason whose Masonic studies were induced by a keen desire to fathom the truth and impart the result of his discoveries to those whom he feared might also be duped'. This implies that there

is salvation even for 33rd Degree Masons who have participated in Satanic rites; and as a True Christian', the Author must agree that this is indeed of course true. But he differs from the brilliant Lady Queenborough in believing that, on the basis of his other writings, Mackey was cynical, like the rest of them. If he had genuinely wished to save fellow human beings from being crushed by this Leviathan, he would have needed to sever his relations with the Lodge, and put up with the material consequences of their petty vengeance: 'Come out of her [i.e., the great whore], my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues' [Revelation, Chapter 18, verse 4). The Author acknowledges that the insight that the great whore is the reprobate Jewish cabal which (in our context here) fronted the imposition of reprobate Freemasonry in the United States, is that of his friend, Des Griffin, of Oregon, and that his inspiration was undoubtedly of the Holy Spirit - born of his regular reading of Scripture.

65. Lady Queenborough, op. cit., pages 178-181. Sources in this and related sections include: Henri Cauchois, Grand Orateur du Grand Orient de France, 'Cours oral de Franc-Maconnerie symbolique', page 140, Paris, 1863; Clavel, 'Histoire pittoresque de la Franc-Maconnerie', page 43, Paris 1844; Albert Mackey, lexicon of Freemasonry', pages 59 and 241, London, 1873; Richard Carlile, 'The Mysteries of Freemasonry', page 64, London; Comte de Grasse-Tilly, Tableau des grades ecossais suivant l'ordre generate decrete par le Supreme Conseil du 33^{o} degre, date du 22 decembre 1804'; George Olivier, 'History of Initiation', pages 128, London, 1841; Albert Thomas, George Pearson, Grand Master of the Templars of the United States, the Tradition of Freemasonry, New York, 1850.

66. Ralph Anderson, 'Freemasonry: Yesterday, Today and Tomorrow', Arcana Workshops, June 1985, pages 4-6. See also: The Full Moon Story', Manhattan Beach, CA, Rams' Dell Press, 1974 Revised Edition, pages 15-16; Dennis L. Cuddy, 'President Clinton Will Continue the New World Order', Oklahoma City, OK, Southwest Radio Church, 1993, page 18; Alice A Bailey, The Externalisation of the Hierarchy', New York, NY, Lucis Publishing Company, 1957, page 511; cited by Dr Cathy Burns, 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated', op. cit, pages 356-357.

67. Lady Queenborough, op, cit, page 161.

68. Lady Queenborough, op. cit.,page 34.

69. Lady Queenborough, op. cit.pages 161-162.

70. Lady Queenborough, op. cit.,page 162.

71. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 212.

72. Craig Heimbichner, 'Blood on the Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', Independent History and Research, P.O. Box 849 Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816, January 2005, ISBN 0-9703784-3-2, pages 5-6.

73. Craig Heimbichner, 'Blood on the Altar The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', op. cit, page 6.

74. Lady Queenborough, op. cit,page 357 et seq.

75. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 361.

76. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 353-359.

77. Paul Rosen, 'Satan et Cie', page 142, cited by Lady Queenborough, page 361.

78. Paul Rosen, 'Satan et Cie', page 142, cited by Lady Queenborough, page 362.

79. Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, The Speculative Mason, Volume 19, January 1927, Lady Queenborough. op. cit.,p. 359.

80. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 360.

81. 'A Sketch of the Philosophy, Traditions and Records of the Masonic Order of the Red Cross of Constantine', The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record', page 204, Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 359.

82. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 189 and 336.

83. John Yarker, The Arcane Schools', page 480, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 189.

84. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 337, 'Encyclopaedia Britannica', Article on Freemasonry.

85. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 337.

86. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, citing Blanchard, 'Scottish Rite Masonry Illustrated', 330, Volume II, page 451.

87. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 143-144, citing Blanchard, 'Knights Templarism Illustrated'.

88. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 144-145. She cites 'Morris' Dictionary', Article entitled Templar Knight'.

89. This 'wise-guy' quotation, attributed to someone (otherwise unidentified) called Knoop, appears in the Introduction to one of the best books on the subject of The Templars in Scotland. It is followed by the more informative allusion to '... the wealth of old Masonic records in Scotland, so strangely neglected by those who possess it' [R. J. Meekren, a comment in a discussion in 'AQC', 58,1955, page 83]. For a number of years, the British Government has been extremely heavily populated by Scots, most of whom are known to be "high-level' Masons, which accounts for their amorality and cynicism. Many are known to be members of The Speculative Society of Edinburgh, one of the most powerful Scottish secret societies.

90. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 209-210.

91. Stevens (first name uncited), 'Cyclopaedia of Fraternities', cited by Lady Queenborough, page 215.

92. Domenico Margiotta, Adriano Lemmi, op. cit, page 97 et seq., cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 215-216.

93. Domenico Margiotta, Adriano Lemmi, op. cit, page 97 et seq., cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 216.

94. Domenico Margiotta, Adriano Lemmi, op. cit, page 97 et seq., cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 216-217.

95. Domenico Margiotta, Adriano Lemmi, op. cit, page 97 et seq., cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 217-218.

96. The Bureau and the Mole: The Unmasking of Robert Philip Hanssen, the Most Dangerous Double Agent in FBI History', David A. Vise, Grove Press, New York, 2002.

97. David A. Vise, op. cit, page 1.

98. John, Chapter 18, verses 37-38. In the profoundly evil and blasphemous film released in 2004 entitled The Passion of Christ', Pilate's wife answers Pilate's millennial question 'What is truth?' with a frivolous and unscriptural answer. But clearly, the fact that Jesus did not answer Pilate, the personification of evil, who had been responsible for terrible murders ('Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices': Luke, Chapter 13, verse 1), was intentional, since the answer is spoken by the Lord's perfect silence.

99. 'The Keys of This Blood: Pope John Paul II versus Russia and the West for control of the New World Order', Malachi Martin, Touchstone, Simon & Schuster, New York, 1990.

100. Domenico Margiotta, 'Adriano Lemmi', op. cit, page 97 et seq., cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 216-217; the subsequent detailed information is excerpted from Chapter 30 of Lady Queenborough's work, pages 207-240.

101. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, Chapter 30 et. seq.

102. Mobile telephones and telescopes come in handy since on a foggy day one cannot see opposite numbers at the other end of the circular table arrangement, while hearing what they say without an earpiece is out of the question.

103. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 223-224, citing Bataille, 'Le Diable au XIXe Siecle', page 360 et seq.
104. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 226, citing Bataille, 'Le Diable au XIXe Siecle', page 360 et. seq.
105. Charcornac, 'Eliphas Levi', page 191, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 236.
106. Charcornac, 'Eliphas Levi', page 191, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 236-237.
107. Lady Queenborough, op. cit., page 226-227, citing occultist-theosophist Alice Bailey, 'Initiation Human and Solar', p. 106.
108. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 235.
109. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 233-234 citing part of Albert Pike's address to the 23 Supreme Confederated Councils on 14th July 1889, as Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry.
110. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, page 234.
111. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 232-233.
112. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, citing Bataille, op. cit. Volume I, page 346 et seq.
113. Matthew, Chapter 6, verse 24.
114. Matthew, Chapter 5, verses 33-37. James, the brother of Jesus, writes in James, Chapter 5, verse 12: 'But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath; but let your Yea be yea; and your Nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation'. In Masonry, members swear oaths on a Bible, in the name of God, that involve mutilation and murder of human beings [see for instance Malcolm C. Duncan, 'Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor', 1974, pages 224-225 and pages 250-251], But the Bible forbids taking God's name in vain and committing murder: Exodus, Chapter 20, verse 7: Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain', and 13: Thou shalt not kill'; and Jesus himself: Thou shalt do no murder' (Matthew, Chapter 19, verse 18).
115. Lady Queenborough, op. cit, 1933, page 181.
116. E.g. Matthew, Chapter 19, verse 19.
117. Albert Pike, 33rd Degree Mason, Palladian Rite founder, occultist and necromancer, 'Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry', 1871, House of the Temple, Washington DC, 1969, page 226: 'Masonry, around whose altars the Christian, the Hebrew, the Moslem, the Brahmin, the followers of Confucius and Zoroaster, can assemble as Brethren and unite in prayer to the one God who is above all the Ba'alim, must needs leave it to each of its Initiates to look for the foundation of his faith and hope to the written scriptures of his own religion'. The universality of Freemasonry (which seeks to bring all to the worship of Lucifer) is further reiterated by the 33rd Degree Masonic write Albert Mackey in 'Mackey's Revised Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry', 1966, on pages 8-9.
118. John, Chapter 14, verse 6.
119. First Epistle of Paul to Timothy, Chapter 2, verse 5.
120. The First General Epistle of John, Chapter 2, verses 22-23
121. Revelation, Chapter 9, verse 11. The appalling implications of the geomasonic 'sacred word' Abaddon are all the more apparent when one reads into this verse, including part of the preceding verse: 'And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails; and their power was to hurt men...'.
122. Matthew, Chapter 22, verses 31-32: To the Saducees, who did not believe in the resurrection, Jesus said: 'But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living'. Mark, Chapter 12, verses 26-27: 'And as touching the dead, that they rise; have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err'. Luke, Chapter 20, verses 37-38:' Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him'. The fact that Jesus' distinction between the 'gods' of darkness (as in Egypt, where death was worshipped) and the God of life appears three times in the Gospels, is indicative of the importance of what Jesus had to say to all of us on this score.
123. 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated', Dr Cathy Burns, op. cit, page 359.
124. Jeremiah, Chapter 32, verse 35. In verse 33, the Lord said through Jeremiah: 'And they have turned unto me the back, and not the face: though I taught them, rising up early and teaching them' (meaning I taught them BEFORE I taught the Gentiles), 'yet they have not harkened to receive instruction'. (The Lord ALWAYS speaks through living human beings, his prophets, and NEVER through the dead, which is what mediums do at seances, or rather purport to do: what actually happens is that evoked demons mimic the dead supposedly summoned up).
125. Scriptural sources for this statement: Exodus, Chapter 20, verses 2-7; Deuteronomy, Chapter 6, verse 4; Psalm 8, verse 1; and Psalm 29, verse 2: 'Give unto the Lord the glory due unto his Name; worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness'.
126. 'Duncan's Masonic Ritual', op. cit. [Note 21, page 36.
127. Second Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 6, verse 14: 'Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers; for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness; and what communion hath light with darkness?'; and Revelation, Chapter 18, verses 1-4 - which is highly pertinent, given that Babylon (on the 33rd parallel, which the US military occupied during the second Iraq War because of its esoteric associations), and given that Freemasonry derives much of its mumbo-jumbo and magic from Babylon, as well as from Egypt (symbol of the darkness), Greece and other pagan-Satanic and esoteric sources): 'And after these things I saw another angel come down from Heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory; And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird; For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues'.
128. In Matthew, Chapter 10, verse 28, Jesus adds: 'And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell'.
129. Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. cit, page 167: 'No man, it (masonry) holds, has any right in any way to interfere with the religious belief of another'. This should ring bells when we consider the insidious avalanche of 'political correctness' which, in the United Kingdom, is now on the verge of embracing 'religion', with legislation (as of 2006) pending that will prohibit 'incitement to religious hatred' but which will cover a much broader spectrum than is purveyed by this slogan. In other words, Masonic standards are being further superimposed upon the residual Christian underpinning of the nation.

130. Matthew, Chapter 28, verses 18-20: 'And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying. All power is given unto me in Heaven and in earth. Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptising them in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things, whatsoever I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world'. Mark, Chapter 16, verses 15-16: 'And he said unto them. Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptised shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned'.
131. Exodus, Chapter 20, verses 1-5: 'And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt [= the darkness and the worship of death - Ed.], out of the house of bondage [metaphor: bondage to the sterile worship of death; and from sin, which is death - Ed.]. Thou shaft have no other gods but me. Thou shaft not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shaft not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them; for I thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me'.
132. The following New Testament readings will help here: Matthew, Chapter 6, verses 1-4; and Chapter 28, verse 19; Luke, Chapter 6, verse 38; Ephesians, Chapter 5, verses 15-16; and James, Chapter 1, verse 27.
133. Malcolm C. Duncan, 'Duncan's Masonic Ritual', page 13.
134. Matthew, Chapter 6, verse 24: 'No man can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise th other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon'. Matthew, Chapter 23, verses 8-10: 'But be ye not called Rabbi [= Master - Ed,]; for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth; for one is your father, which is in heaven'. Matthew, Chapter 4, verses 10-11, in which Christ commands the Devil to leave Him: 'Then saith Jesus unto him. Get thee hence, Satan; for it is written, Thou shaft worship the Lord thy God, and him only shaft thou serve. Then the Devil leaveth him; and behold, angels came and ministered unto him'. The point is that JESUS SAID NO TO THE DEVIL, AND TOLD HIM TO GET LOST. AND HE DID.
135. Matthew, Chapter 10, verses 26-27: 'Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness [of the world - Ed.], that speak ye in light; and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops'. John, Chapter 18, verse 20: 'Jesus answered him [the High Priest - Ed.], I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing'. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 26: Paul, addressing Festus and King Agrippa: 'For the king knoweth of these things, before whom I also speak freely; for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner'.
136. First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 10, verse 21: 'Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils; ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils'.
137. Ezekiel, Chapter 8, verses 12-16.
138. Llewellyn Publications, St Paul, MN, 1972.
139. 'Freemasonry: The Witchcraft Connection', private paper. William Schnoebelen was deeply involved in both witchcraft as a Wiccan high priest and in Freemasonry for many years. He was a Mason for nine years and a practicing witch for 17 years. In the Lodge, he held the successive offices of Junior Warden in the Blue Lodge, Prelate in the Commandery of the York Rite, Master of the Veil in the Royal Arch Degree, and Associate Patron in the Order of the Eastern Star. He was also a 32nd Degree Mason and a Shriner. He is now a Christian, the author of five books, including 'Masonry: Beyond the Light'.
140. First book of Samuel, Chapter 15, verse 23.
141. In witchcraft, the Temple' is frequently not a building or component thereof, but rather a 'sacred' 'Magic Circle' laid down on the floor of a room, with great ceremony. Some witches have circular carpets or rugs for this purpose. The circle becomes the 'sacred space' of the Wiccans, and serves the same purpose as does the Temple in Masonry.
142. This oath may be found in Stewart Farrar's What Witches Do: The Grimoire of Lady Sheba'Vgrimoire"= 'magic spell book') and in June Johns' 'King of the Witches', according to Mr Schnoebelen.
143. Malcolm C. Duncan, 'Duncan's Ritual Monitor', op. cit, David McKay Co., Inc., New York, pages 34-35.
144. See e.g. Schnoebelen, 'Masonry: Beyond the Light, Chick Publications Inc., China, CA, 1991, pp. 146,155-160; 214-215.
145. Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', op. cit, page 48: When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power [i.e., the power of Satan - Ed.], he has learned the mystery of his Craft. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply energy. He must follow in the footsteps of his forefather, Tubal-Cain...'.
146. Ezekiel, Chapter 8, verse 3.
147. Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. tit, pages 839, 22, 744-745; and Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', op. tit, page 48:
148. For the fact that Masonry teaches a form of justification by works, see: Duncan, op. cit, page 129; and Tennessee Craftsmen or Masonic Textbook', Grand Lodge of Tennessee, 1983, page 17. In the Catholic context, the lie that by saying a given number of Hail Marys one can procure a number of days off purgatory is insane, aberrant and pagan, superstitious, uncorroborated, unbiblical rubbish.
149. R. S. Clymer, The Mysticism of Masonry[1],1900, page 47; and J. D. Buck, 'Symbolism or Mystic Masonry[1],1925, page 57.
150. Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. tit, page 539; and Henry C. Clausen, 'Practice and Procedure for the Scottish Rite', Supreme Council, 33rd Degree, Washington DC, 1981, pages 75-77.
151. Albert G. Mackey, 'The Symbolism of Freemasonry: Illustrating and Explaining its Science and Philosophy; Its Legends, Myths and Symbols', New York, Clark and Maynard, 1869, pages 334-335, and 1901-92. See also: 'Pocket Encyclopaedia of Masonic Symbols', Silver Spring, Maryland, The Masonic Service Association of the United States, 1953, page 7. Dr Cathy Burns lists other sources on page 472 of her monumental work, 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated, op. tit.
152. Veronica Ions, 'Egyptian Mythology', The Hamlyn Publishing Group Ltd., Middlesex, United Kingdom, 1965, page 4.
153. William Schnoebelen and James R. Spencer, Whited Sepulchers', Triple J Publications, Boise, Idaho, 1990, pages 44-450, citing material from the newsletter of the master US Satanist Anton LaVey, The Cloven Hoof, Volume VIII, Number 6.
154. Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. tit, page 819.
155. Matthew, Chapter 24, verse 35; Mark, Chapter 13, verse 31; Luke, Chapter 21, verse 33.
156. Revelation, Chapter 12, verse 9.
157. Matthew, Chapter 10, verse 28.
158. First Epistle of Paul to Timothy, Chapter 4, verses 1 and 2.

CHAPTER SIX

THE ANGELS OF LIGHT

FALSE APOSTLES, DECEITFUL WORKERS

The Apostle Paul, writing his Second Epistle to the Corinthians in around AD60, was alarmed that the flock he had preached to some years earlier, had been suborned and corrupted by false priests, 'preaching another Jesus whom we have not preached'... or 'another spirit which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted'[1]. For he feared 'lest, by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety... your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ'[2].

Specifically, Paul knew that the new Christians in Corinth had been subjected to spiritual attack (which is the fate of all who receive Christ) and that the 'other Jesus', i.e. Satan's substitute, might suborn and entice many of them away from the Way, the Truth and Life which is the Word of God through Jesus (as only they who have accepted His promise through faith know for certain: there is no room for doubt at all). Paul called the teachers of spiritual lies 'false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ'[3]. Such deceivers represent that they are followers and teachers of the Word, using this false clothing to disguise their real allegiance to the Devil: indeed the clever ones can be indistinguishable, to the unwary (and to those unlearned in Scripture), from 'the real thing'. As Paul went on to explain, in one of his most glorious exposures of Satan's lies: 'And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works'[4].

Figure 63 on page 405 features the Rev Dr Robert H. Schuller, who handed over his Crystal Cathedral in Garden Grove, CA, to his son, Dr Robert Anthony Schuller, on 22nd January 2006. Schuller Sr. is shown here performing a Masonic handshake with the head of the KGB Continuum, Mikhail Gorbachev (Orbach or Korbach) in the 1990s. In the United States, a secular state where the Illuminati have procured that 'religion' may not be taught in schools, founding one's own tax-exempt church is an enticing 'opportunity'.

Such 'angel of light' ventures, of course, are nothing new. On 20th September 1870, the army of the King of Piedmont, who already called himself the King of Italy, entered Rome under the command of the Freemason, General Cadorna. On exactly the same day, Giuseppe Mazzini, the Illuminist Masonic evil genius, founder of the modern Mafia (evolved from a tradition of scamming and banditry traceable back to at least the 11th century) and the brain behind idea of using the Piedmontese Kingdom as the instrument for the unification of Italy, confirmed his agreement with his countervailing Illuminati associate, the US General Albert Pike, on the division of dogmatic (false doctrine) and political action (revolutionary agitation) powers between them.

Specifically, Albert Pike obtained, as discussed in Chapter 5, the dogmatic authority over the Scottish Rite 'line' of the 'craft', to mimic the Pope's powers of control over Catholic (as opposed to Christian) dogma - and acquired the title of Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry, with his seat at the headquarters of the US Scottish Rite system and tradition, located for occult-esoteric reasons on the 33rd parallel in Charleston, South Carolina; while Mazzini acquired or retained the crucial executive authority, with the title of Sovereign Chief of Political Action, based in Rome. In the light of the Author's knowledge of colossal financial transfers of Illuminati funds 'redirected' in 1989-92 under George Bush Sr. into the hands of an Opus Dei agent for the Vatican, the Author understands that the Chief of Political Action is resident in the sovereign territory of the Vatican, the 'Open Friendly Society' division of the Illuminati.

666: THE NUMBER OF THE BEAST: IDENTIFIED AS ROME

The Apostle John, writing in Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 18, states: 'Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast' (the 'angel of light' referred to elsewhere in Revelation as the Beast-Lamb, which means the Evil One masquerading as Christ): for it is the number of a man: and his number is six hundred and three score and six'[5]. A pupil of the Apostle John, Polycarp, had in turn a pupil, Irenaeus (Irenius) (probably of Jewish extraction, as the name is close to the Jewish name Ira), a man of understanding, who knew from his teacher (and thus directly from John) that 666 represents the Greek word 'Lateinos', meaning the Latin Kingdom. This is because Kabbalistically-numerologically, Lateinos devolves to 666, as follows: L = 30; A = 1; T = 300; E = 5; I = 10; N = 50; O = 70; S = 200: which if you add the numbers up, comes to 666[6]. Rome is the seat of 'Lateinos', the Latin Kingdom [see box, page 347]. Therefore, 666 refers specifically to Rome[7], as is evident from the fact that Mazzini, the Illuminati drug-dealer and founder of the modern Mafia, was accorded, by joint agreement with the black magician-Illuminati-occultist and necromancer Albert Pike, the title (and therefore controlled the substance) of Chief of Political Action. Papal Rome, effectively the reconstituted seat of the Roman Emperor, made Latin its official language.

As shown in Figures 8 and 9 on pages 26-27, the US Diamond Certificate worth $1.0 billion has serial numbers, which devolve to 666. This implies that the US Treasury issues these instruments on behalf of, in subservience or obeisance to, or in accordance with fundamental understandings with, the Vatican - a deduction that is supported by the curious facts that the Pope receives a briefing every Friday from the CIA Rezident, and that the US Envoy to the Holy See is always of exceptional importance within the highest levels of the US Federal structures. While President Bush Jr. was engaged in delivering his 2006 State of the Union Message, the former US Ambassador to the Vatican was absent, carrying the 'Black Bag' containing the President's nuclear codes.

The so-called Eternal City is the seat not only of the so-called Holy See, the Vatican, but also of the Father General of the Society of Jesus, often referred to as the 'Black Pope' - the semi-secret organisation within the Catholic Church which acquired extraordinary powers from the outset of its existence, and which has understandably been a constant source of anxiety to successive Popes, not least in its recent 'left-wing' years.

The Jesuit 'Order', upon which their dialectical 'right-wing' competitors Opus Dei - currently in the ascendant in the Vatican, and in receipt of substantial US intelligence funds in 1992 - are modelled, was founded by Don Inigo de Loyola (Ignatius Loyola), a Spanish 'nobleman' and soldier of Jewish extraction, on 5th April 1541, at the church of Saint Paul without the Walls, near Rome, under the sanction of Pope Paul III. The

RECONFIRMING THE IDENTITY OF...

666

'Now the weight of gold that came to Solomon In one year was six hundred threescore and six talents of gold' [1 Kings, Chapter 10, verse 14; 2 Chronicles, Chapter 9, verse 13]. These two references clearly establish a link between the number 666 and great riches. 'Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the Beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is: Six hundred threescore and six' [Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 18]. As indicated on page 346, Irenaeus, a pupil of Polycarp, who was in turn a pupil of John, understood the 666 to be derived from the Greek word LATEINOS, in accordance with the kabbalistic-numerological arithmomancy method whereby letters of the alphabet are regarded as numerals. LATEINOS means 'Latin Kingdom', and the Pope retained Latin as the Vatican's official language.

In his book 'Roman Antichrist [1612], Andreas Helwig stated that the Pope's usurped title 'Vicar of Christ has the numerical value of 666. Written as Vicar of the Son of God' in Latin, or Vicarius Filii Dei, the letters with numerical value are: I = 1 (used six times), L = 50, V = 5, C = 100 and D = 500 - which, when counted,, total 666. The original name of Rome was Saturnia, meaning 'city of Saturn', which was the secret name revealed only to the initiates of the Chaldean mysteries which, in Chaldee, was spelled with four letters, STUR. In this language, S was 60, T was 400, U was 6, and R was 200 = 666. Furthermore, the name Romulus, from whom Rome was named, when converted to Hebrew Romiith = 666. LATEINOS in Greek also means 'Latin man'. Unlike the Greeks and Hebrews, the Romans did not use all their alphabet for numbers: in fact they used only six letters, namely: D, C L, X, V, and I. All other Roman numbers were made up from combinations of these. The six numbers which comprised the Roman numerical system, when added up, come to 666: D = 500; C = 100; L = 50; X = 10; V = 5; and I = 1 (the numbers being those with which the six characters were universally identified). [M, which a long time after the Roman era came to be used as a Roman numeral, representing 1,000, was originally written as CI, with another C turned backwards, to make CIC When squashed together this made a symbol which became M: E.W. Bullinger, 'Numbers in Scripture', page 284.].

The wealth of Solomon, which, as indicated, we are told twice amounted to 666 talents of gold 'in one year' which may mean 'annually', played an important role in leading him astray, so that he abandoned his wisdom and wasted his substance with 700 wives and 300 concubines. The letters of the Greek word used in the New Testament for 'wealth', which was EUPHORIA, when translated into numerals according to the Babylonian system, totalled 666. Out of all the 2,000 Greek nouns used in the New Testament there is only one other word that has this kabbalistic numerical value - namely, the word PARADOSIS, which means 'tradition', as used in Matthew, Chapter 15, verses 2,3 and 6: Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders?... But he answered and said unto them. Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?.... Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition' (referring to the elders' corruption of the commandment: 'Honour thy father and thy mother"). So, we have two key-words from the New Testament which, when converted numerologically from the Greek, devolve to 666. Wealth and Tradition were and remain the two main sources of corruption in the Roman Church - Wealth corrupted honourable behaviour and honesty, while Tradition' has corrupted sound doctrine.

Indeed, if one discusses these matters with a Catholic priest he will affirm that Scripture and Tradition are of equal importance and value - which gives rise to multiple fables. The Author was even informed by one Catholic priest at a conference in Hamilton, Ontario in 1999, that 'Mary' said this and that in the year 1603 - referring to some vision of Mary by a saint Such fables, of course, abound, and they provide ample scope for the variation of the Word of God, which was, the True Christian believes, with very good reason, conveyed exdusively through the written word of the prophets, disciples and Apostles.

On a sinister note, Aleister Crowley, the British intelligence officer who became the 'Wickedest Man in the World' and the most notorious open Satanist of his day, referred to himself as The Great Wild Beast or TO MEGA QHIRON in Greek. Translated numerically, this phrase totals 666, as well.

Given that the Babylonian kabbalistic sciences are sorcery, with numerology reflecting arithmetical truths (as well as unsubstantiated assertions), there is nothing further to be gained from investigating 666 beyond what has been summarised here. Occultic kabbalistic numerology was, of course, prevalent among the Jews from the time of the Babylonian captivity (roughly 610 BC) onwards. In Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 18, John is informed of the corrupt beast who is a man; 'and his number is six hundred threescore and six'. Since the cited derivations using kabbalistic numerology devolve, as a matter of objective fact, to 666, the insight that 666 represents the Pope, a man who pronounced in 1870 that The Pope is Christ in office', despite the appallingly degraded and worldly history of the Papacy, is indisputably correct Pope Urban VIII, a 17th century Pope, who became involved in astrology and occult ritual, used a magical seal with three bees arranged in a triangle. The bee has long been the symbol of the harlot of Mystery Babylon. Popes wear costly, Babylonian crowns, and elaborate garments. Our simple Saviour had no such vanity. ■

Jesuits use pagan initiation, contrary to the purity, simplicity and openness (affirmed by the absence of any hidden occult secrets or initiation procedures) of Jesus Christ. According to the 'Encyclopaedia Britannica': 'It (the Company of Jesuits) has six grades. These are novices, scholastics, temporal, coadjutors, professed of the three vows, and professed of the four vows [sic], the latter two grades being the only ones which confer a share in the government and eligibility for the offices of the society (a.k.a. 'The Order'). Its head, virtually a commander-in-chief, is known as The General. He wields absolute power over the members who are pledged to blind obedience. The General claims his authority from the Pope'. Both Mazzini and Pike were of course Generals.

The General has power, written into the Jesuits' statutes, that enables him, at will, to receive candidates secretly and also to conceal their admission (secret membership). Another clause, the 'Encyclopaedia Britannica' states, provides 'for the admission of candidates to the company (of the Jesuits) who are not themselves members of it.... The General, who should by the statutes of the society reside permanently at Rome, holds in his hands the right of appointment, not only to the office of Provincial over each of the great districts into which the houses are mapped, but to the offices of each house in particular, no shadow of electoral right or even suggestion [of it] being recognised'.

JESUITS ORGANISED 'LIKE AN INTELLIGENCE COMMUNITY'

In line with other objective published analyses, the comprehensive study published by 'Encyclopaedia Britannica' reveals the Jesuits to be organised along the lines of an intelligence community, as well as being an occult secret society dealing in Black Magic, as will be revealed shortly. Indeed, it is largely in line with the Jesuitical precedent and in accordance with its blueprint, that modern intelligence communities - which are essentially occultic secret societies - are organised. As the British general literary source states: 'The superiors and rectors of all houses and Colleges in Europe must report weekly to their Provincial on all matters concerning the members of the society and all outsiders with whom they may have had dealings of any sort'. The Provincial, for his part, must report monthly to the General, giving him a summary of all details that have reached him. But, as a check on him, all Superiors of houses in his Jesuitical Province are to make separate reports directly to the General once every three months, and further to communicate with him, without delay, every time any matter of importance occurs, irrespective of any information which the Provincial may have forwarded'.

This is of course a deliberately Satanic recipe for the universalisarion and institutionalisation of suspicion, distrust, secret hatreds, favouritism, nepotism, conniving, deceit and lying, fear, and innumerable other entrapments which could only have been invented by Satan himself. And these evil practices are perpetrated within an organisation named after Jesus himself: could there be any more precise illustration of what Paul meant when he proclaimed: 'And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works'[8].

Did Jesus demand and impose such two-faced secrecy among his disciples? No: everything that Jesus did and said was of course done in the open: 'For this thing was not done in a corner'[9]. The whole point of Jesus Christ is that he leads us out of the darkness into the true light. His mission was To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them that are sanctified by faith'[10].

Figure 56: The work of the Papal Inquisition in Holland: an illustration from 'Ridpath's History of the World' [Volume 5, page 297]. The woodcut shows a Protestant man hanging by his feet in stocks. The fire is heating a poker which will be used to brand him and to blind his eyes. Certain Popes who are today proclaimed to have been 'great', lived and prospered during the Inquisition decades and centuries, during which period the Inquisition was responsible for an estimated 50,000,000 deaths - more than even the highest total ever attributed to Stalin's repression. Why did these Popes do nothing to stop this abomination? If by any chance you imagined that the Catholic Church has truly repented of it, you would be gravely mistaken. The Rev. Joseph Di Noia, the American-born Under-Secretary of the Congregation of the Doctrine of the Faith, so-called 'successor' to the Inquisition, i.e. a seamless continuation thereof, admitted in a four part UKTV History Channel series starting on 30th January 2006 that the 'Holy Terror' and its abominable methods of suppressing 'heresy' were 'explicable in the context of the times, when people believed passionately in Heaven and hell' (the implication being that the modern Catholic Church may believe in neither). Prior to his 'election' as Pope Benedict XVI, Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger was head of the 'Congregation'. The TV series drew on research obtained from Vatican files which were finally opened for scrutiny in 1998 (just like the KGB files, which were 'opened', only to be 'closed' a few years later). The programmes highlighted the Papal persecution that began in the 13th century, and only ended in the late 1800s. Interviewed in 'The Secret Files of the Inquisition', Dr. Di Noia said that 'it was a mistake to torture people. However, torture was regarded as a perfectly justified, legitimate way of producing evidence and was therefore legally justified'. Such Black Luciferian sophistry deserves unqualified condemnation.

The methodology of the Jesuits is indeed that of the darkness of Satan, giving free rein to his usual menu of trickery — mobilising mistrust, secrecy, double-dealing, two-faced behaviour, treachery and lying, always with an underlying implication of the threat or reality of pressure, coercion, harassment and intimidation. It was this secretive, manipulative and instrumental tradition, replicated within the Orthodox Church, from which Stalin (who, though of Jewish extraction, named Djugashvili, started life in a seminary, just as Karl Marx was weaned from Christianity following a Satanic initiation at his German university) learned the science and application of the devilish mechanisms of intimidation, pressure, harassment, coercion and control.

'Nor is this all. An elaborate system of espionage', the 'Encyclopaedia Britannica' article continues,' forms part of the recognised order of every [Jesuit] house, and, in direct contrast to the ancient indictment and confession of faults in open conventual chamber [sic], every inmate of a house is liable to secret accusation to its Superior, while the Superior himself may be similarly reported to the Provincial or [to] The General'.

'Nor is the General [even] himself exempt from control on the part of the Society, lest by any possible error he be unfaithful to its interests. A Consultative Council is imposed on him by the General Congregation, consisting of six persons, whom he may neither select nor remove - namely, four assistants, each representing a nation, an admon-isher or adviser (resembling... a military commander) to warn him of any faults or mistakes, and his confessor. One of these must be in constant attendance on him; and while he is not at liberty to abdicate his office, nor to accept any dignity or office outside it without the assent of the society, he may yet be suspended or deposed by its authority'.

'Such is the extraordinary skill with which the relations of the Society to the Papacy were originally drafted by Loyola, and subsequently worked [on] by his successors, that it has always remained organically independent, and might very conceivably break with Rome without imperilling its own existence. The General has usually stood towards the Pope much as a powerful grand feudatory of the Middle Ages did towards a weak titular lord paramount... and the shrewd Roman populace have long shown their recognition of this fact by styling these two great personages severally [as] the 'White Pope' and the 'Black Pope'. In truth, the society has never, from the very first, obeyed the Pope, whenever its will and his happened to run counter to each other'.

DEVISED AND ESCAPED RESPONSIBILITY FOR THE INQUISITION

This classic survey of the history of the Jesuits elaborates that although they were responsible for the Inquisition - the Satanic, murderous, barbaric, brutal ecclesiastical control mechanism instituted first in Spain - they have always managed somehow to escape censure for it. The Inquisition was an abomination, involving inter alia the perpetration of the lie that, in addition to 'heretics' - namely, those who saw right through the Pope's lies - those burned at the stake included 'witches'. Historians estimate that in the Middle Ages and Early Reformation Era, more than 50,000,000 martyrs perished as the false church made 'war on the saints' [= Christians]: Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 7. The women concerned were labelled 'witches' to disguise the truth, namely that they, too, perceived the lies, deception and Satanic methodology of the Catholic Church and its so-called 'Vicar of Christ' - apostasy that this worldly geopolitical organisation could not tolerate, for fear that its power base would be undermined. And yet, 'the merited odium which has overtaken the Inquisition, usually officered by Dominicans, has induced the Jesuits, whose own controversial methods had been different, to disclaim all connection with that tribunal, and to represent their society as free from complicity in its acts. But, in truth, it was Ignatius Loyola himself who procured its erection in Portugal in 1545-46, and Father Nithard, one of the very few Cardinals of the Society, was Inquisitor-General of that Kingdom [Portugal] in 1655'[11].

It will have been noticed that Loyola 'procured' the introduction of the Inquisition in 1545 - just four years after the Society's foundation. At the very least, the Jesuits were of a murderous disposition from the beginning. Remember that the Lord bracketed murderers with liars together. When reproving the Jesuits' predecessors - the Pharisees, in the most logical and necessarily stern terms - Jesus said: 'Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the Devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it... He that is of God heareth God's words; ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God'[12].

The Jesuits 'were' murderers (witness Loyola's procurement of the Inquisition in Portugal) and liars from the beginning - imposing their own secret pagan initiation ceremonies, contrary to the openness, simplicity and straightforwardness of Jesus Christ, of whom they were and remain false apostles. These people were, and remain, 'angels of light' - but of the darkness of Lucifer. The Author remembers a Jesuit named 'Father Levy' who was 'up' at Christ Church, Oxford, when he was an undergraduate there. This man had a reputation for alleged louche behaviour and heavy drinking - a state of affairs that caused the Author much puzzlement at the time. The Jesuits were recognisably driven, from the outset, by such 'seething energies of Lucifer'[13]. Their supreme talent has been to clothe their lupine aberrations in sheep's clothing - as false 'Angels of Lighf.

SATANIC INITIATION RITES OF THE JESUIT SORCERERS

Of Lucifer, Pike wrote, as will be recalled: 'Lucifer, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light, and with its splendours intolerable binds feeble, sensual, or selfish Souls [of which he, Pike, was one]? Doubt it not!'[14]. Doubt it not, either, that the initiation rites used by Jesuits are Luciferian, celebrating selected elements of the 'Ancient Mysteries', and consisting of components of the very same sorcery that Albert Pike and his occult Masonic colleagues consolidated and 'consecrated' in Illuminised Kabbalistic Masonry. For, far from being in any way related to Jesus Christ, Jesuit rule 'was' always Satanic in character - with its emphasis upon absolute obedience to The Order first, rather than to Christ, and its indulgence in secret Satanic ritual, as is confirmed by a manuscript in the Library at the Rue Richelieu, in Paris, entitled 'Histoire des congregations et sodalites jesuitiques depuis 1563 jusqu'au temps present' 1709)[15]. To provide the necessary irrefutable confirmation of the Satanic orientation of the Jesuits' initiation rites, as practiced in the early 18th century when the German Illuminati were releasing their 'seething energies', it is necessary to quote at length from this source:

'Initiation: Having in nearly all Roman Catholic countries succeeded in becoming the dictators of the young, they were able to mould the youthful mind according to their secret aims. If then, after a number of years, they detected in the pupil a blind and fanatic faith, conjoined with exalted pietism and indomitable courage, they proceeded to initiate him; in the opposite case, they excluded him. The proofs [i.e., testing of the boy -Ed.] lasted twenty-four hours, for which the candidate was prepared by long and severe fasting, which, by prostrating his bodily strength, inflamed his fancy, and, just before the trial, a powerful drink was administered to him'. Thus, in addition to having murder in mind and being masters of deception (lies), the Jesuits administered drugs to their young male initiates: so they were drug-peddlers, and in all probability perverted paedophiles, as well.

'Then the mystic scene began - diabolical apparitions, evocation of the dead, representations of the flames of hell, skeletons, moving skulls, artificial thunder and lightning, in fact, the whole paraphernalia of the Ancient Mysteries'. [Here, the absolute hegemony of the 'Ancient Mysteries' - as is intended to become universal in our own era, if the Illuminati have their way - is plainly confirmed: Ed.]. 'If the neophyte, who was closely watched, showed fear or terror, he remained for ever in the inferior degree; but if he bore the proof [test] well, he was advanced to a higher grade'.

'At the initiation into the second degree (of Scholastici) the same proofs, but on a grander scale, had to be undergone. The candidate, again prepared for them by long fastings, was led with his eyes bandaged' [exactly as in the Lodge, and during Skull and Bones rituals - Ed.] 'into a large cavern, resounding with wild howlings and roarings, which he had to traverse, reciting at the same time prayers specially appointed for that occasion. At the end of the cave he had to crawl through a narrow opening' [replicated by a similar 'narrow opening' in one of the orgiastic loci at the Bohemian Grove - Ed.], 'and while doing this, the bandage was taken from his eyes by an unseen hand, and he found himself in a square dungeon, whose floor was covered with a mortuary cloth, on which stood three lamps, shedding a feeble light on the skulls and skeletons ranged around. This was the Cave of Evocation, the Black Chamber, so famous in the annals of the Fathers. Here, giving himself up to prayer, the neophyte passed some time, during which the priests could, without his being aware of it, watch his every move and gesture. If his behaviour was satisfactory, all at once two brethren, representing archangels, presented themselves before him, without his being able to tell whence they had so suddenly started up... and, observing perfect silence, bound his forehead with a white band soaked with blood, and covered with hieroglyphics; they then hung a small crucifix round his neck, and a small satchel containing relics, or what did duty for them. Finally, they took off all his clothing, which they cast on a pyre in one corner of the cave, and marked his body with numerous crosses, drawn with blood'.

At this point, the hierophant with his assistants entered and, having bound a red cloth round the middle of the candidate's body, the brethren, clothed in bloodstained garments, placed themselves beside him, and drawing their daggers, formed the steel arch over his head. A carpet then being spread on the floor, all knelt down and prayed for about an hour' (which would have been a complete waste of time: the Lord does not hear those who walk in darkness, unless they repent, which these false 'Christian' priests emulating the Satanic sorcery rituals of pagan priests and yet naming themselves blasphemously after the Lord Jesus were not about to do - Ed.), 'after which the pyre was secretly set on fire; the further wall of the cave opened, the air resounded with strains, now gay, now lugubrious, and a long procession of spectres, phantoms, angels and demons filed past the neophyte like the 'supers' in a pantomime'.

'Whilst this farce was going on, the candidate took the following oath: - 'In the name of Christ crucified, I swear to burst the bonds that yet unite me to father, mother, brothers, sisters, relations, friends[16]; to the King, magistrates, and any other authority to which I may ever have sworn fealty, obedience, gratitude or service. I renounce [name] the place of my birth, henceforth to exist in another sphere. I swear to reveal to my new Superior, whom I desire to know, what I have done, thought, read, learnt, or discovered, and to observe and watch all that comes under my notice. I swear to yield myself up to my Superior, as if I were a corpse, deprived of life and will. Finally I swear to flee temptation, and to reveal all that I succeed in discovering, well aware that lightning is not more rapid and ready than the dagger to reach me wherever I may be'.

No special knowledge of Scripture is necessary to recognise the extent to which the oath (let alone the Satanic sorcery surrounding it) which the Jesuit initiate was forced to succumb to, flies in the face of the Word of Jesus Christ, and of 'the simplicity which is in Christ' and indeed of the crucial Commandment: 'Honour thy father and thy moth-

Figure 574 [top]: The Inquisition's 'Iron Virgin', illustrated here, was a hollow instrument made to the size and figure of a woman. Knives were arranged within it under such pressure that the accused was lacerated. This torture device was sprayed with 'holy water' and inscribed with the Latin words for 'Glory be only to God'. Figure 57B [lower illustration): The Inquisition's 'rack', a long table on which the accused was tied by hands and feet, with his back down, and then stretched by a rope wound by a windlass, so that his joints were dislocated and he was 'wracked' with extreme pain. Those who rose up in protest against the Church of Rome did so because they knew it to be a den of corruption and hypocrisy and rejected its false claims, relying instead upon the Lord for salvation and truth. Such people were persecuted as 'heretics'.

er'[16]. Everything that has been described was and is an abomination to the Lord: and the fact that these things 'were' done in the name of Jesus represented (represents) blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, for which the Lord stated unequivocally that no forgiveness is available: 'And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man [Jesus], it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven'[17].

Furthermore, the Lord told those in authority who tried to catch him out in the Temple: 'Render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's'[18] meaning that we submit (not mindlessly, but as a practical matter. Otherwise society would disintegrate: and the Devil is the author of confusion, not of order) to those placed in authority over us, as we submit to the Word of God. We are given free will, which the Jesuit initiate is compelled to surrender, contrary to God's will for us - so that the Jesuit controller can exercise his ruthless, coercive and unlimited abusive power over his victim. As for the undertaking to flee temptation, this does not 'justify' the accompanying aberrations, not least because its purpose is to gratify the lusts of the controllers themselves. They feel more comfortable when those under their control are forced to live in an unreal world, ostensibly devoid of temptation - whereas temptation is a daily hazard, part of the human condition, and a circumstance, which the Lord uses to help us to hear his call. The oath ends with the neophyte's pathetic acceptance of the fact that he will be under surveillance for the whole of his life. He will have no privacy, will be able to form no normal human relationships - contrary to the natural order and the will of God for each of us - and will be reduced to the status of a mind-controlled tool of the sorcerers.

THE FALSE 'EUPHORIA PERIOD' EXPERIENCED BY JESUIT NOVICES

As will be explained, novices experience a 'euphoria period' during which they exult in the fact that they are in the process of 'renouncing the world' and 'giving themselves to The Order'*. But as this early 'euphoria' gradually wears off, they become progressively more resigned and depressed - with many of them acquiring peculiar habits, fetishes and preoccupations evidently arising from the wholly unnatural restrictions, lack of true and loving human relationships, and the environment in which they are required to live and have their pathetic being. In other words, the novice Jesuit's 'euphoric period' is false - akin to the tricks typically played by sorcerers, or magicians, who may, by evoking occult powers, be able to procure 'healing' or other phenomena. Any such 'healing' invariably turns out to be temporary, and when it 'wears off', the victim is left in a worse state than before - whereas true healing through prayer is always complete, permanent and perfect, in response to the healer's true belief in Jesus' Will. One can scarcely imagine with what disillusionment a young male novice comes in due course to realise that he has forfeited a normal life, and normal human sexuality, for this Satanic prison of body and spirit, erected by false 'angels of light' calling themselves by the Name of Jesus.

---

* As previously observed, a significant number of these Luciferian occult entities openly refer to themselves as The Order'. The fact that this appellation is so common among them cannot be a coincidence. Not only do Jesuits talk about membership of The Order', but so do members of Opus Dei, and of the Satanic cult founded by a German and taken over by the British intelligence operative Aleister Crowley, before it was handed back to German custody - Ordo Templi Orientis. So why is this? It will be seen from Figure 62 on page 395 that the symbols of Opus Dei, which ought to be called Opus Luciferis, include (a) a circle with a (misaligned) cross within it, which mimics the esoteric symbol for 'the earth' and (b) a rose - which 'just happens' to be the symbol of the Rosicrucian sorcery-heresy (and of one of its offshoots, the British Labour Party). The Rosicrucians refer to their 'Order', according to the very rare document by Manly P. Hall cited in this book. Since, however disguised, all these organisations specialise in and practice the same sorcery and have the same globalist, worldly aims, it is perfectly clear that they represent manifestations of the same global organisation specialising in the Works of Darkness, and driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer'. One and all are components of 'The Order'.

FROM THE JESUITS' BOOK OF SECRET INSTRUCTIONS

One of the Jesuits' specialities has been, from the beginning, a policy of denying all critical reports about the organisation and its members, with the aim of discrediting such reports, and to take the reckless chance that they may be caught lying. The cynical underlying assumption here is that the veneration in which the Jesuits are mistakenly held, and their alleged closeness to the Pope, can always be relied upon to dampen the enthusiasm of any of their numerous enemies, for pressing ahead with exposures. However the Jesuits have been sensible enough not to deny the following information from a Book of Secret Instructions of the Society of Jesus[19]:

The Preface especially warns Jesuit Superiors not to allow it to fall into the hands of strangers, as it might give them a bad opinion of The Order.

The Chapters are headed as follows:

- How the Society is to proceed in founding a new establishment.
- How the Brethren of the Society may acquire and preserve the friendship of Princes and other distinguished Personages.
- How the Society is to conduct itself towards those who possess great influence in a state; and who, though they are not rich, may yet be of service to others.
- Hints to Preachers and Confessors of Kings and great personages.
- What conduct to observe towards the clergy and other religious orders.
- How to win over rich widows.
- How to hold widows fast and dispose of their property.
- How to induce the children of widows to adopt a life of religious seclusion.
- Of the increase of College revenues.
- Of the private rigour of discipline to be observed by the Society.
- How 'Ours' shall conduct themselves towards those that have been dismissed from the Society.
- Whom to keep and make much of in the Society.
- How to select young people for admission into the Society, and how to keep them there.
- Of reserved cases, and reasons for dismissing from the Society.
- How to behave towards nuns and devout women.
- How to pretend contempt for riches.
- General means for advancing the interest of the Society.

This catalogue shows that, if any further proof were needed, this reprobate organisation, proclaiming the name of Jesus and using it as a cover for its sorcery and worldliness, is interested exclusively in itself (stealing the wealth of rich widows and appropriating their property), and in its intelligence activities (such as obtaining state secrets in confessionals from Monarchs and the highly-placed in Catholic countries). This is not the Society of Jesus, but yet another society of Satan, conforming to Christ's prophecy: Tor many shall come in my name, and shall deceive many'[20]; or: 'For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall show signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect'[21] or: 'And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name saying, I am Christ... and the time draweth near go ye not therefore after them'[22]. Given such explicit warnings from the Lord, how come that these reprobates have been able to deceive themselves and the world for so many centuries?

The authoritative source from which the chapter headings cited above are taken, summarises the extremely bad odour in which the Jesuits have been justifiably held at various times in their history: 'The intermeddling of this society in the affairs political, ecclesiastical and civil, of many countries, is related in numerous works, and repeatedly produced the suppression and expulsion of The Order, though it constantly reappeared with new names. In 1716 the French army was infested with Jesuitical and anti-Jesuitical societies.... They were abolished by Papal Bull in 1773 at the demand of France, Spain, Portugal, Parma, Naples and Austria'. They are, however, 'still to be found everywhere, and they hold considerable property in England. A modern writer justly calls them the 'Black International''.

THE 'MODERN' ILLUMINATI SPRINGING FROM A JESUIT SOURCE

It was from the Jesuit College at Ingolstadt that the evil sect originally known as the 'Illuminati of Bavaria' originated, in its modern and now relevant format (although the Illuminati tradition, and the pagan sect itself, is of much older occultic provenance, not addressed other than in passing here, since a separate volume is needed for that purpose). In its modern manifestation, the sect of the Uluminati was founded, significantly, on the Druidic Festival of Beltane, or Walpurgis Night, the second 'highest' day in the Druidic Witch's Calendar, and the Illuminati's second most 'sacred' day (when human sacrifice is required), namely 1st May 1776. Its founder (in the modern format) was of course Adam Weishaupt, the Professor at the University of Ingolstadt in Germany, who had been educated (indoctrinated and infested) by the Jesuits. The Illuminati - which thus originated both in the 14th century and in their revamped manifestation in Germany, where fascination with the occult was especially rife, having been set alight by emissaries from the occultic Court of the British King James II while in exile in Paris -spawned three classes of adepts, subdivided into degrees, in accordance with the Jesuit initiation system model and as replicated in Freemasonry [see Chapter 5],

Using the Jesuit system of Satanic initiation and degrees, this organisation was thus, from the beginning, as 'Masonic' as the Rosicrucians' Rose Croix (which adheres, like a malevolent limpet, to the ritual progression of the Scottish Rite), the Templars and the other pseudo-ancient, emerging and proliferating Masonic Order manifestations of the tradition of Simon Magus and the 'Ancient Mysteries' which all these 'secret' sex-oriented sorcery societies exist to promote and to recommend to humanity as 'normal behaviour'. Their great 'success' to date is everywhere apparent in modern Britain: for instance, a survey of 1,000 young girls aged 15-19 taken in 2005, found that 63% aspired to be glamour models, that 25% of their number hoped to become pornographic lap dancers, and that 'for many, the erotic lifestyle and look is not seedy but has become aspirational' - a finding indicative of the fast-approaching apparent triumph of the Illuminati's Luciferian agenda[23]. The British gutter (tabloid) press is devoted almost 100% to the degradation of women, pornography and sluttish filth, as the Author discovered anew when he had to compile a mailing list in October 2005, of political correspondents. As the avowed feminist journalist Flic Everett justifiably observed in ''The Guardian'(before it downsized itself into insignificance in the third quarter of 2005), 'the once-concealed symbols and attitudes of hardcore porn are now flooding mainstream 'culture' (in Britain). 'While the Internet and mobile phone services were pivotal in offering easy access, sex-trade terminology is standard even on primetime TV' which is now so filthy and tawdry in the UK that if s unwatchable. Programmes called 'Pimp my Ride', 'Wife Swap', 'Faking It', and 'pop' videos showing lusting rappers groping near-naked girls, are the norm. Shampoo advertisements 'address the product's orgasmic potential'. All this is voraciously consumed by boys, and girls, who have only just graduated from 'The Beano" (a traditional children's comic). The feminist journalist concluded, assisted by her well-honed female intuition, that 'consequently boys are all heading to an adulthood of deeply confused, deeply mysogenist - attitudes to women'. The British tabloid-gutter press, which some 'broadsheet' papers are mimicking, assumes that fornication is the norm and celebrates it with the sterile emptiness to be expected from such a powerful instrument of the Illuminati's assault on civilisation.

For 'public? consumption purposes, Weishaupf s intention, given that he had split from the oppression of the Jesuit environment, was initially to constitute a Protestant organisation to fight Jesuitism (not a Christ-like intention, of course), using Jesuitical methods that he had learned from 'The Order', although in the event Weishaupt accepted instructions provided by Nathaniel Rothschild - with the objective of introducing more extensively than Freemasonry was succeeding in doing, the occult mysteries of the Kabbalah. He was assisted organisationally and doctrinally by a large number of prominent people with time on their hands, including Christoph Friedrich Nicolai (1733-1811), behind whom stood Moses Mendelssohn; and behind Mendelssohn, stood the Kabbalistic Jewish Kahal - that is, the Jewish International World Government appa-rat[24], which is and has been, since Caiaphas saw that Christ had triumphed, bent on the total extirpation of Christianity (True Christianity, that is).

As the Illuminati expanded their influence through publishing and propaganda, their ambitions developed such a broad reach that they culminated in a conspiracy to sub-

Figure 58: A Torture Chamber of the Papal Inquisition, by Picart [1673-1733]. A Papal Bull, 'Ad exstirpanda', issued by the cynically named Pope Innocent IV in 1252 ordered that heretics were to be 'crushed like ven-emous snakes', and formally approved the use of torture (as the US Government has done). According to the 'Catholic Encyclopedia', this Bull remained 'henceforth a fundamental document of the Inquisition.... The civil authorities, therefore, were enjoined by the Popes, under pain of excommunication, to execute the legal sentences that condemned impenitent heretics to the stake. It is to be noted that excommunication itself was no trifle, for, if the person excommunicated did not free himself from the excommunication within a year, he was held by the legislation of that period to be a heretic, and incurred all the penalties that affected heresy' - which meant that non-compliance risked torture and being burned at the stake.

vert Freemasonry and to focus it on the task of secretly agitating for the world dominion of the Kabbalah (the Babylonian derivative of the 'Ancient Mysteries') by all means, including, to anticipate one of the German Illuminati's most demonic operatives, Lenin, 'working by other means'. Various agitators proliferated 'cheap and popular tracts ... and, as well as Nicolai, were in close communication with Weishaupt, carry[ing] on with a most reckless violence, and with weapons of a most shameless ribaldry, the warfare against Christianity'[25]. Since of course they confused the Roman Catholic Church with True Christianity, ribaldry and ridicule came naturally.

CREATIONS OF THE EVIL ONE PROGRAMMED TO FIGHT EACH OTHER

Let us pause here to unravel the web of lies that Satan had by this stage so expertly weaved. Having, as specifically predicted in Revelation, usurped the place of Christ and with a history of brutality and Borgia-style debauchery masked by a false piety, the worldly Catholic Church and its papal 'Angels of Light' give birth to a law enforcement arm blasphemously named after Jesus himself, with the Pope all the while diverting the world's attention from Jesus Christ, as Satan intended, by drawing worship and adulation mainly towards himself and the forbidden 'Queen of Heaven'[26] (the female goddess Astarte who has become Mary, the earthly mother of Jesus, and of many other children, who is deceitfully declared to be 'immaculate' in conformity with the pagan tradition). The new law enforcement arm organises, within four years of its establishment, the scourge of the Inquisition, a plainly Satanic repression apparatus for which modern Catholics are supposed to have 'forgiven' their Church, or towards which they are induced to turn a blind eye.

The Inquisition provides the mediaeval precedent for modern 'population reduction' and genocide episodes - dispensing death on an industrial scale, and using false witness to persecute those with whom it has differences as 'heretics', and many genuine intuitive True Christians, as 'witches'. The law enforcement arm, being a black intelligence organisation, uses Satanic initiation ceremonies, secrecy, oppression, and the 'black arts' to further its own organisational interests, and to enrich itself on the pretext of spreading the Word of God and supporting the Pope's supposed mission - but actually in order to increase, enhance and consolidate its own lustful power.

Since the Devil is the author of confusion, none of these Satanic Illuminist ventures can succeed, and all are perennially and perpetually afflicted by scandal, riven by jealousies, rivalries and controversy, and bedevilled by internal tensions which threaten their continued existence. Tensions and resentments within the Jesuit manifestation of The Order generate hatreds such as that harboured by Weishaupt for his former Society: so he devises a long-term strategy for the destruction of the Jesuits and of the Catholic Church itself. The error in which Weishaupt indulged, in common with all collaborators with the Illuminati sect and its manifestations today, was to confuse the corrupt and usurping Catholic Church, its Pope and its errant dogmas, and the Black Society of Jesus, with the real spiritual church of the fellowship of the Lord Jesus Christ, which has nothing to do with the worldly churches that have sprung up to exploit its legitimate hold on the attention of errant humanity. But from Satan's perspective, this was and remains the best of all possible hells: for, since ignorance about the Word of God prevails, what Satan has actually achieved through these deceptions is his own creations warring against each other - which is what happens, by definition, in all hellish environments.

In late April 1981, Pope John Paul II convened a meeting at the Vatican, which was concerned with the future of the Jesuit Order: whether it should be reformed, or closed down (yet again). The Black Pope at that time was Father General Pedro Arrupe. An extremely detailed description of this meeting, attended by six Cardinals (the same number of individuals required, under the Jesuits' own internal rules, to be present in the event of censure or other action against the Father General), was published in Malachi Martin's book 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church' (1987)[27]. As will be recalled from the foregoing, all Jesuits are required (on pain of being 'reached' by that dagger) to report all details of whom they have been speaking with, meeting, and corresponding with, perpetually.

THE AUTHOR'S FRIENDSHIP WITH THE LATE FR. MALACHI MARTIN

Since Fr. Martin was a very senior Jesuit and Vatican intelligence operative with access to the Pope, it is likely that the source of this leak was none other than the late Malachi himself. Dr Martin, who was of partly Jewish extraction, personally informed the Author of one operation that he undertook for the Pope, which involved the infiltration of Jewish organisations in an attempt to establish the extent to which Freemasonry was being manipulated by militant modern Judaism, and to what extent these forces were as adamant as Caiaphas in their determination to destroy 'Christianity' - which, as previously indicated, is an impossible task since He promises us that 'the Gates of Hell shall not prevail'[28]- and accordingly what approach the Catholic Church should adopt in the face of whatever overall threat Dr Martin could identify.

Malachi further informed the Author that, following the completion of his papal remit, he was invited by the Pope to discuss his future. As it had been necessary for Malachi to function as a layman while engaged in this intelligence operation, the Pope and his advisers were of the opinion that it would be necessary for Malachi to remove himself from the Roman scene altogether, lest his cover was 'blown'. Given this requirement, the Pope had asked Malachi what he would like to do (basically, with the rest of his life). A brilliant linguist (he had mastered a large number of languages, including ancient Greek and Hebrew), Malachi surprisingly asked if he could be allowed to 'disappear' to North America, and write books. The Pope consented, and Malachi subsequently arrived in New York, almost down-and-out, where he undertook a number of jobs, including working as a stevedore. When he began his writing career, he started to reveal what he knew about attacks on the Catholic Church, the Jesuits, and, in a remarkable book called 'Hostage to the Devil', his wisdom on the subject of exorcism. Since some have expressed interest in the Author's opinion as to whether Malachi was a True Christian or not, the Author can say with certainty that he loved the Lord Jesus Christ.

However by the time that the Author was privileged to become one of Malachi's innumerable friends, in 1995, he had long since been granted comfortable, if frugal, accommodation by a great benefactor in an apartment on East 63rd Street, New York City, where he wrote his amazing books in a small, cell-like room, which he shared with a small dog. On the first occasion that the Author met him, during which we enjoyed three hours of conversation and Malachi will have formed a poor view of the Author's grasp of matters such as are being discussed in this book the dog relieved himself and had to be attended to in a somewhat basic manner. After a number of most enjoyable, breakfasts at a nearby Irish hotel, during which Malachi endeavoured to help the Author to understand spiritual, intelligence and Vatican issues, and related interesting information about the Vatican's attacks on the Fatima cult, the Author came to understand that Malachi, while still attempting to be a devout Catholic, despite his Jesuit background, was more or less at his wits' end about the condition of the Catholic Church. Apart from the information that he provided about certain past intelligence work, he never said anything at all about the Jesuits, as he felt that he had revealed all that he had needed to reveal, in his book on the Society[29]. But it was clear that, had he lived longer, he would have had to heed the urgent call of our Lord, echoing Isaiah, in Revelation [Chapter 18, verse 4]: 'Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues'[30].

THE PAPAL MEETING FAILS TO CUT THE JESUITS DOWN TO SIZE

The scene for the meeting in the conference room on the third floor of the Palace of the Popes on Vatican Hill in April 1981 was set by Malachi in the following terms: "The report folders were red damask and emblazoned in gold with the Tiara and Keys. Outside the door, a secretary and two Swiss Guards in traditional uniform were on duty to block all intruders. Seated at the conference table were the Pontiff of the Holy Roman Catholic Church and six of his most powerful Cardinals, the movers and shakers of the Vatican, a cameo of its most formidable strength. And the subject of discussion between them was the life or death of the Society of Jesus: whether, in other words, The Order headed by Father General Pedro Arrupe should be allowed to go on as it was, or be reorganised and reset according to the often-repeated wishes of three Popes, or be officially done to death by the power and under the authority of Pope John Paul II.. .'[31].

'By this early spring of 1981... John Paul had already felt the effect firsthand of the enormous power that had accrued over centuries to the Father General of the Society of Jesus. So great is that power in Rome and in the world at large, and so widely is it recognized, that whoever holds the office of Jesuit General also holds the unofficial title of "the Black Pope"...'.

'At the meeting that day, His Holiness sat in his white robes at the head of the table like a man whose husky and ebullient strength was scarcely caged, barely restrained from bursting forth. At age sixty-one, this first Polish Pope was a personality in powerful ascendancy, breathing enterprise, cloaked in a personal charisma, already a staple figure of the international news media. With the power of the Papacy behind him, most would have said, what prelate of the Church could stand up to him?'

'The meeting ranged over a wide number of issues, focusing especially upon the serial propagation of Marxism by clerics all over the world. The former Bishop of Cuernavaca, Mexico, Mendez Arceo, started his Sunday sermons with the clenched-fist salute of the Communist Internationale and shouted "Soy Marxista" (I am a Marxist!)... Cardinal Evaristo Arns of Sao Paulo, Brazil, took every opportunity to scarify rigid capitalism, and to laud the idea of a redistribution of wealth in order to relieve endemic poverty. And what about those French bishops who insisted on placing the birthday of Karl Marx on the official church liturgical calendar...? And what about the way the Canadian bishops made use of the Marxist analysis of the class struggle...?' One of the Cardinals, the most powerful, 'shared a double persuasion with John Paul: that Latin America must be saved from Marxism, and that there was little to distinguish between the out-and-out Marxists in Latin America and the bulk of Jesuit, Dominican, Franciscan and Maryknoll priests and nuns' in this respect.

However earlier in 1981, the Polish Pope John Paul II had conducted an audience with Anatoly Adamshin, the Soviet negotiator - the second such meeting - in the course of which the Pope had given the Soviets a guarantee that no word or action, whether by the Pope or by the Polish hierarchy or Solidarity's leaders, would violate the Moscow-Vatican Pact of 1962. This was a reference to the outcome of tense negotiations between Eugene, Cardinal Tisserant, who had been despatched by Pope John XXIII to meet Metropolitan Nikodim, a senior KGB officer reporting directly to the Kremlin and masquerading as the head of the Russian Orthodox Church, and who actually represented the Soviet Politburo headed by Nikita Khrushchev. Nikodim eventually obtained a guarantee from the Vatican that the then forthcoming Vatican Council would be issuing no condemnation of Soviet Communism or Marxism, and that the Holy See would make it a rule in future to abstain from all such official condemnation. So it was politely pointed out to Pope John Paul II at the meeting about the future of the Jesuits, who had gone doctrinally off the rails, that it would be inconsistent to take measures against the Jesuits for their Marxist orientation, while continuing to honour the successive undertakings given to the Soviets, to the effect that the Vatican would, contrary to earlier routine practice, utter no condemnations whatsoever against murderous, atheistic Communism and Marxism-Leninism.

But such arguments, and others, did not prevail. The case of the Jesuit Colegio Anchieta in Porto Alegre, Brazil, was brought up. There, Marxist textbooks were used in classrooms, Marxist principles were inculcated into the students, and the sacraments of Confession and Communion were derided as anachronistic. A report on this subject had been filed away deliberately, and forgotten. Another Jesuit, Father Caprile, had written in the official Jesuit magazine, 'Civilta Cattolica', published in Rome, that the standing requirement that Catholics could not belong to a Masonic Lodge was a dead letter (which was not yet the case, although it is now), so that Lodge membership was open to any Catholic (notwithstanding that Freemasonry and (True) Christianity are incompatible opposites). It was put before the meeting that such rebellious behaviour by Jesuits was quite intolerable. Many other examples of scandals concerning doctrine,

Figure 59: The austere wartime Pontiff, Pius XII, proceeds in pomp and majesty to his papal conveyance, to the salute of his chauffeur, while attendant Fascist troops present arms. The contrast between this arrogant behaviour and the gloriously meek simplicity of Jesus Christ is so extreme as to defy description.

always with Jesuits at their centre, were mentioned. 'There were pages of documentation in the red damask folders before their Eminences about the Jesuits' teaching and preaching and acting consistently in ways that not merely departed from, but contradicted, the doctrinal teaching of the Church, as well as the explicit views of His Holiness on the most vital issues'. There was no mention here of what Jesus taught.

It seems extraordinary, given what has long been in the public domain concerning the Satanic initiation practices, for example, of the Society of Jesus, that a meeting discussing such subjects could have been held at all. One possible explanation must be that the Jesuits' standing instruction that all critical reports on its activities must always be denied, had blinded successive Popes to the reality that the Papacy harboured this reprobate intelligence organisation at its bosom. Another, more appropriate, conclusion would be that since the Vatican is itself a key hidden component of the Illuminati, the anti-Christian practices of the Jesuits, though embarrassing, however watered down to conform with modern preferences, were nothing out of the ordinary. The standing intelligence rule - 'Admit nothing; deny everything; make counterallegations' - had enabled the Society to elide over open knowledge of its nefarious practices. Besides, the Vatican considered its intelligence services to be indispensable, given their global reach and the Jesuits' unrivalled ability to penetrate at the very highest levels, not least thanks to the Society's confessional services.

Even so, the meeting did not go well from the perspective of Father General Arrupe, the Black Pope. As Malachi concluded[32]: 'Very soon, Father General Pedro Arrupe would have a blow-by-blow account of the meeting. He would know all that had been said.... It would only be a matter of time before the Holy Father would move in on the Society of Jesus, to reform it from top to bottom, or to terminate its existence, possibly forever. In either case, this time Arrupe, who clung doggedly to his persuasion that he and his Jesuits knew better than the Vicar he served what was good for God's Church, would have to go'.

ATTEMPTED AND ACTUAL PAPAL MURDERS IN THE VATICAN

As previously mentioned (twice), the Vatican Rezident of the Masonically-impregnated Central Intelligence Agency is in the habit of briefing the Pope every Friday. The CIA operative concerned would not have been doing his job properly if he had not procured detailed information about the discussion at that meeting and its uncertain and worrying outcome. On 13th May 1981, within three weeks of the private papal conference, John Paul II was struck by two bullets, not from a Kalashnikov rifle, but from the American-manufactured Browning semiautomatic pistol of the paid hitman Mehmet Ali Agca.

Malachi reported:

'By mistake [sic], as it was later explained, the Pontiff was rushed to the Roman hospital of Gemelli rather than to the special hospital unit organized solely for papal use. He was given blood from the public blood bank; the private supply kept in readiness was never used. In rapid succession, Pope John Paul underwent two major operations and suffered the consequences of the transfusion of impure blood; he contracted a severe case of hepatitis.... It would, as it turned out, take the Holy Father the best part of six months to get back to anything like a full schedule[33].

In 1978, Pope John Paul I, born Albino Luciani on 17th October 1912, had been 'unexpectedly' elected Pope after an abnormally brief Conclave. Although his feet were so swollen that he could not wear the shoes bought for him for the Conclave and his state of health was less than satisfactory, he had made no enemies, controversial or radical statements, and was thought of as just a smiling, gentle pastor. When, to his own horror and disbelief, Luciani was elected, he made several quick decisions - being the first modern Pope to speak in singular form, rather than using the royal 'we', and the first to refuse the sedia gestatoria, until the Vatican machine convinced him that he needed to be carried about so that the faithful could see him - the real reason being that officials felt that his awkward, flat-footed walk was 'unregal' and ungainly, and that they were very embarrassed by it. He also suggested strongly to his aides that he was unfit to be Pope, and 'controversially' refused to undergo the traditional Papal Coronation and to wear the Papal Tiara[34]. He had intended to prepare an encyclical to confirm the lines of the Second Vatican Council, and to enforce the Catholic Church's discipline in the lives of priests and the faithful.

Formally, Pope John Paul I defended Pope Paul VI's contraception encyclical on sexual mores, Humanae Vitae, which restated the Church's opposition to artificial birth control, and which (although it may appear cynical to say so) suited the Church since it facilitated the maximisation of the numbers of the faithful, thus buttressing the global power of the Catholic Church. But this Pope raised concerns inside the Vatican after meeting United Nations representatives who had visited the Vatican in order to discuss the issue of overpopulation in the Third World. This Author believes that it is in part because the Catholic Church has refused to make any concessions on this issue (as Pope John Paul I may in fact have secretly intended) that many voices are heard today calling for population reduction, and that certain Illuminist cadres of international intelligence are content with, and openly discuss, prospects for population culls.

Some observers were disturbed when they noted the pleasure taken by George Bush II in October 2005 at a meeting of global pharmaceutical companies, at which the prospects for a global bird 'flu pandemic were openly discussed. One US operative, speaking to a contact of the Author's who is concerned that the black (Nazi) mentality of some of these people is bent on facilitating (and IS facilitating) population reduction by diverse means, including the use of weather-modification and earthquake-triggering technology, replied, when told that consideration of such policies was an abomination: 'It depends to which part of the population you belong'.

One biographer of Pope John Paul I, John Cornwell, author of 'A Thief in the Night', has said that Vatican officials 'treated him with condescension'. A senior cleric, discussing Luciani, was reported to have said: 'They have elected Peter Sellers'. His sermons mentioned Pinnochio, in contrast to the learned discourses of Pius XII or Paul VI. Luciani's own doubts about his suitability for the Papacy, was manifest in his repeated question to people he met: 'Why did they pick me?' He predicted that his reign would be short and that 'the foreigner' - meaning the Pole, Karol, Cardinal Wojtila, who was sitting opposite him when he made this prediction - would succeed him.

The Pope's Private Secretary, John Magee, revealed that His New Holiness allowed a large loose-leaf Top Secret document to fall from his roof garden and to blow over the Vatican's rooftops, as a result of which the Vatican's fire service was called to retrieve the hundreds of pages that were blowing about. In a particularly uncalled-for revelation, Magee spoke of finding the poor Pope crying, whereupon he advised him to go to bed - later finding him in a foetal position saying the Rosary. If only he had been praying to Jesus Christ instead of to the Virgin Mary (who can do nothing, of course), the poor man might have received the spiritual and bodily support he so desperately needed.

Many visitors spoke of his isolation and loneliness after his unexpected election.

Thirty-three days after his election, Pope John Paul I was reported dead of a heart attack (myocardial infarction). As one account of this assassination tactfully puts it, 'a certain degree of uncertainty accompanies this diagnosis, because no autopsy was evidently performed'. In fact what had occurred was that a nun who served him had brought the Pope a glass of champagne laced with poison (probably digitalis). The source of this information is a close relative of the Official Representative of the Belgian Government posted at the Vatican[35] at the time. Poisoning is of course the method of assassination most favoured by the Illuminati, as poor Mozart found out in his last hours. During the darkest days of the Borgia Popes in the Renaissance years, papal officials or courtiers hired apothecaries working in the cellars of the Apostolic Palace to prepare cantarella, a poison based on arsenic and putrefied viscera, destined for their rivals[36].

As is invariably the case after Satan has provoked murder, the aftermath of this papal liquidation was one of total confusion. The first version was that a papal secretary had discovered that the Pope had died, whereas according to a later version, a nun, who had found the Pope somewhere in the Papal Household, had brought him some coffee, only to find him dead. The Vatican claimed that he had been reading Thomas a Kempis' 'Imitation of Christ', even though Luciani's copy of that devotional work had been left at his home in Venice. The Vatican lied about the time of the Pope's death, and conflicting accounts of his health appeared - including one suggestion that his ill-health had reflected his heavy smoking even though the man never smoked.

Like the murdered Princess Diana, Pope John Paul I was embalmed one day after his death. The Vatican claimed that a papal post-mortem was prohibited under Vatican law, even though a post-mortem was conducted on the remains of Pope Pius VIII in 1830. It has been claimed that close friends of the late Pope John Paul I were ordered away from the corpse while some form of inspection, even a post-mortem, took place. The fact that no results were subsequently released suggests that the Pope's death was not due to natural causes 'but either due to murder or to an overdose that the Vatican might not wish to make public'[37].

CONFUSION OVER MURDER EXACERBATED BY CONFLICTING ACCOUNTS

As this Author has revealed above how the murder was committed, it may seem superfluous reviewing here the findings of two lay investigators - David Yallop and John Cornwell - who, in their respective books 'In God's Name'[38] and 'A Thief in the Night'[39], have advanced competitive explanations of that Pope's death, with Cornwell taking pleasure in debunking all of Yallop's findings. That author was correct in suggesting that Luciano was always in 'potential danger' because he was an innocent who will have become aware, to his undoubted horror, of the stinking corruption surrounding the still murky intelligence-linked and organised crime-ridden scandals associated with Istituto per le Opere Religiose (IOR, Institute of Religious Works, a.k.a. the Vatican Bank). That vortex of corruption involved Freemasonry, Masonic intelligence forces (as has been the case with all such scandals over the past several decades), the Mafia, the dubious banker Mchele Sindona ('St Peter's Banker'), Pope Paul VI, the head of the Vatican Bank, Bishop Paul Marcinkus, Licio Gelli, the P-2 Masonic Lodge, Franklin National Bank, and Roberto Calvi ('God's Banker') of Banco Ambrosiano (found hanging beneath the Masonically significant Blackfriars Bridge in London in June 1982, having been convicted by an Italian court in 1981 for illegal currency transactions). Sindona's financial empire was collapsing by 1974 and the related financial empire run by his protege Calvi, by 1978 - both groups having been scammed; and in 1980, Sindona was convicted in the United States on 65 counts of fraud. He was extradited to Italy in 1984, where two years later he was poisoned in his cell while serving a life sentence for murder. Roberto Calvi, whose nickname 'God's Banker' had been given to him by the Italian press because of his close association with the Vatican, had fled from Italy after Banco Ambrosiano had gone bankrupt under his chairmanship, with debts variously estimated at between $700 million and $1.5 billion. A substantial proportion of these funds had been siphoned off via the Vatican Bank, a.k.a. the 'Institute of Religious Works'. Calvi had belonged to Licio Gelli's secret P-2 Masonic Lodge, an Illuminati operation. The British police, heavily infiltrated with Freemasonry, treated Calvi's death as a suicide, despite evidence to the contrary. Following Calvi's exhumation in 1992, the murder was confirmed. In 1997, Rome prosecutors implicated a member of the Sicilian Mafia, one Pippo Calo, in Calvi's murder, along with Flavio Carboni, a 'businessman'. Also alleged by prosecutors to have been involved in Calvi's murder were Ernesto Diotallevi, supposedly a leader of the most dangerous Roman Mafia syndicate known as the 'Banda della Magliana', and a 'Mafia banker', Francesco Di Carlo.

P-2 (Propaganda Due) appears to have been the Italian Fascist Continuum, a nominally Masonic Lodge which ran Italy from behind the scenes for decades, while the front men traded Cabinet posts back and forth innumerable times to effect 'changes of govern-ment'. With the assistance of the US-born gangster-priest Paul Marcinkus, of Jewish extraction, P-2 ran the Vatican Bank. During the years in question, Istituto per le Opere Religiose was caught red-handed laundering counterfeit paper for the Gambino crime family. The long-term Grand Master of P-2, or cappo di tutti capos, was the veteran neofas-cist and former Mussolini 'Black Shirt' operative and liaison between the Italian Fascist Government and Hitler's Third Reich, leading Gestapo informant and confidante of Hermann Goering Lucio Gelli, who attended the inaugurations of President Gerald Ford (a.ka. Leslie Lynch King Jr., allegedly a top US pornography boss) and of President James Earl Carter, Jr., while also calling himself a friend of George Bush Sr.. P-2's membership 'consisted' of over 1,000 prominent political, financial and Italian Government figures, and the organisation 'had' close links with the Italian intelligence community (including its 'Black' secret intelligence organisation), senior military staff, and key Italian media figures. Four Cabinet ministers and 48 MPs were secret P-2 members, so that P-2 resembled a Fascist 'state within the state', while Gelli was referred to as the 'Puppet Master'.

Yallop's book exposed many of the inaccurate statements issued by the Vatican in the days following Pope John Paul I's death, prompting demands from some clerics for an inquiry into the death (which would have been a waste of time, given the Vatican's tradition of holding its multiple dark secrets indefinitely). 'In God's Name' was then partially 'discredited' by John Cornwell, who proposed a 'benign' series of explanations to account for the many discrepancies in the official versions of the death. After decades of controversy, there were calls in the autumn of 2005 for Pope John Paul I to be canonised, and for a fresh investigation into his death to be initiated.

The contrarian (and contrary) findings of John Cornwell are extremely sordid, but entirely consistent in principle with the long, dark history of papal murders and deaths. The main problem with the relative whitewashing job that he performed was that the information provided by this Author, and published here for the first time, disproves his 'benign' hypothesis. On top of this, Cornwell seems to have been careless and may have bent facts to suit his hypotheses. Cornwell did report, however, that John Magee, who became the Irish Catholic Bishop of Cloyne, spoke on the night of the Pope's death to the nuns in the Papal Household about the possibility of the Pope dying that night. This of course is as consistent with Magee's possible knowledge of a murder plot, as with any benign medical explanation. Mr Cornwell also stretched credulity - and hazarded the integrity of his entire analysis - by claiming that guilt drove the doctors to want to make his death look sudden, so that no blame would fall on them.

According to Cornwell, John Paul I died at around 9.30 pm or perhaps 10.00 pm at his desk and was found on the floor in a foetal position by two priest secretaries. These then (according to Cornwell) moved the body into the bed and placed it in what is an unusual position for a person who has died suddenly, sitting up, eyeglasses in place, and papers in hand, with no indication whatsoever that he had experienced a fatal attack. Cornwell then stretched credulity to breaking point by suggesting that the two secretaries had done this to try to cover up the fact that the Pope had suffered two episodes of acute chest pain consistent with diagnosis of an imminent pulmonary embolism, as well as a severe coughing fit, and that in both instances, the Pope had brushed the doctors off. Cornwell's analysis then goes completely mad, stating that one of the papal secretaries had found the Pope's back and feet still warm when he lifted him. This was inconsistent with the stated fact that the body was found at around 5.30 am (according to Cornwell), by which time rigor mortis would have set in.

As a consequence, the Pope's knee or his back, or both, had to be broken, as the body was forced into a position suitable for a lying-in-state in an open coffin (a disgusting death-oriented practice still adhered to by the Vatican). Interestingly, Pope John Paul I's tomb under St Peter's Basilica is not one that enables voyeurs to look through glass panels at the body (as is the case with many other dead Popes) - another manifestation of the Vatican's death cult. This death cult is further displayed for the whole world to see by the use of the crucifix - or cross on which the dying or dead body of Jesus Christ is affixed. This forbidden graven image depicts Christ in agony, whereas the truth of the gospel necessitates affirmation of the reality that Jesus died for our sins once and for all - not every day, as the graven image of his agonised body portrayed by Catholic crucifixes implies[40].

MURDERS AMONG THE VATICAN'S SWISS GUARD

On 4th May 1988, the Commander of the Swiss Papal Guard, only just appointed by Pope John Paul II, Colonel Alois Estermann, and his Venezuelan wife Gladys Meza Romero, as well as a Lance Corporal, Cedric Tornay, were discovered shot dead in the Estermanns' apartment in the Vatican complex. Five months earlier, Enrico Sini Luzi, a 'Gentleman of His Holiness' - an Order whose members, wearing white gloves and black tails, greet dignitaries visiting the Pope - was battered to death with an antique chandelier in his home, clad only in his underwear, apparently during a homosexual tryst with a Romanian prostitute[41]. That murder, like that in November 1849 of Count Pellegrino Rossi, a lay Prime Minister serving the Papal States, took place outside the Vatican. The murder of the Estermanns, which took place inside the Vatican, appears to have been connected with resentment on the part of Tornay at his lack of promotion, but may have had homosexual overtones; a book by the British-French journalist, John Follain[42], while containing exhaustive research, did not comprehensively unravel the mystery - hardly surprising, in view of the almost (but not quite) impenetrable omerta routine with which the Vatican buries its darkest secrets.

The Vatican's 'line' subsequently was that the Lance Corporal had shot the couple and had then committed suicide in 'a fit of madness' brought on by frustration with the unit's discipline, a conclusion that was reaffirmed after a nine-month official inquiry. However Follain's book shows that the official Vatican report was a travesty, a tissue of suppositions, contradictions and omissions. The author concluded that the Vatican, the oldest and most secretive autocracy in the world, staged an elaborate plot to obstruct justice, and to hide scandals to which it dared not confess. Estermann turned out to have links to the overpowerful Opus Dei, which has a passion for the ungodly practice of self-flagellation [see below], and Cedric Tornay may have feared that Estermann had been instructed to impose Opus Dei rules on the entire Swiss Guard. This would have been appropriate, indicating Opus Dei's intent to achieve total hegemony in the 'Holy See' - given the now consummated ascendancy of Opus Dei in the Vatican, with the consecration of the German Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger as Pope Benedict XVI in 2005.

John Follain's general conclusions were damning. 'Even today, the conspiracy of silence and the refusal to admit any responsibility prevails', he wrote in the epilogue to his book 'City of Secrets: The Startling Truth Behind the Vatican Murders' [2003][42]. 'Although the three victims have long been buried, and the Vatican's enquiry - a shoddy affair that lied by omission - remains closed, the files of that enquiry are still locked away'[43]. When the Vatican decided to go onto the offensive, it chose to revile the Swiss Lance Corporal 'from every pulpit with a virulence worthy of the Holy Inquisition, and dismissed [him] as a drugged paranoiac. The Vatican even violated subjudice rules to leak key evidence... when that suited its purpose'[44]. Shortly after the deaths, an East German newspaper, Berliner Kurier, reported that Estermann had been a STASI operative with the codename 'Werder' who, equipped with a Vatican passport, could pass through border controls unchecked. The East German Communist newspaper revealed that during his first four years with the Swiss Guard, Estermann had sent at least seven files to his STASI (i.e., DVD) controllers, depositing them with the Rome-Innsbruck night train.

It is no purpose of this Chapter to unravel these particular Vatican murders, not least since, unlike the case of Pope John Paul I, this Author does not possess special intelligence concerning that scandal. Interestingly, though, John Follain did have a few words of interest to say about Pope John Paul I's sudden death:

'The official version said that the Pope's body was discovered by his secretary, the Irish priest John Magee.... In fact, as the Vatican confessed later, it was a nun, Sister Vincenza, who had discovered the body when, as every morning, she had entered the bedroom to bring the Pope coffee. The Secretary of State at that time, Cardinal Jean Villot, had lied because it was feared that Catholics would be shocked to learn that a woman was the first person to see their Pope in the morning. The Vatican had also lied in reporting that the Pope had the 'Imitation of Christ', a devotional work, in his hands when he died - a crude attempt to create an aura of sanctity around his passing'[45].

'Oh, what a tangled web we weave, when 'ere we practice to deceive'. The murder of that Pope by a nun who brought him poisoned champagne has been successfully disguised (until the publication of this book) by the familiar technique of floating alternative interpretations which it was intended should remain hanging in mid-air and at loggerheads for eternity. But we can at least note, in passing, how the denial of normal human heterosexual relations to Catholic priests, which is a pagan control mechanism inherited from the heathen traditions of Rome and Greece, 'forces' the perpetuation of lies and deception.

The new Pope Benedict XVI is assisted by a fellow German, Georg Ganswein, from Riedern am Wald, Bavaria. Born on 30th July 1956, Ganswein was ordained in 1984, and obtained his doctorate of canon law from Munich University. He arrived at the Vatican in 1995 and stepped almost at once onto the fast track there. In 1996, he was asked by the then cardinal Ratzinger to join his staff, and he became a Professor of Canon Law at the Pontifical University of the Holy Cross, an institution affiliated to Opus Dei. A Vatican source has said of this Opus Dei operative: 'He understands complicated issues within about 10 seconds and can give a clear and immediate answer'. Daniel Deckers, author of a biography of the leading German 'liberal' Cardinal, Karl Lehmann, says: 'I think he's very dangerous. He's part of a small but very powerful group within the Catholic Church. He will use his power to push Ratzinger in a certain direction'.

Deckers is reported to have elaborated: 'He is very eloquent and can be very charming. But he came right up to us and said: "Oh, you don't like us". He referred to himself and Ratzinger as 'us', as if the two of them were an institution'.

Deckers' reference to the Pope being liable to be pushed 'in a certain direction' has special resonance with this Author because Ratzinger, who also comes from Bavaria where he was born in 1927, was brought up in a deeply Catholic environment within which, according to a special source, the Nazi ethos was considered to be an abomination. This may be hard for some to reconcile with what is known about the central importance of Bavaria as the seat of the 'modern' Illuminati - until we recall that the primary characteristic of all branches and members of Illuminati Orders is double-mindedness, which is of course the twin of confusion.

THE DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS CHARACTERISTIC OF ALL ILLUMINATI

For public consumption, when Benedict XVI 'beatified' a German priest in the autumn of 2005, he pronounced, with considerable emotion, that the German priest had been 'an intrepid combater against the National Socialist neo-pagan ideology'. Specifically the new Pope declared: 'This morning in St Peter's there has taken place the beatification of Klement August von Galen, Bishop of Munster, an intrepid opponent of the Nazi regime. In the name of God, he denounced the neo-pagan ideology of National Socialism'. This was reported to the Author on 11th October 2005, a week or so following the beatification, by a Catholic priest who telephoned from Rome with this information. The possibility therefore existed as this book was being finalised that the new Pope's Bavarian origins could not be assumed to imply that he shared the 'world-view' of the heirs of the Third Reich who have all but achieved hegemony within certain intelligence and power structures in both the United States, and secretly behind official facades in the United Kingdom, and elsewhere, but that he may be susceptible to such an orientation through pressure from Opus Dei. The worst case scenario, though, would be that the Pope's pronouncement concerning the beatified German priest did not reflect Benedict XVI's true perspectives, and that he is in fact, in common with Illuminati tradition, double-minded. Unfortunately, given the millennia of lies and deception surrounding the Papacy, one can never be certain what any Pope really believes, let alone whom he really worships. This consideration is all the more relevant given that Cardinal Ratzinger served as head of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, a.k.a. the 'Holy Office of the Inquisition'. Furthermore, Ratzinger joined the Hitler Youth, as young Germans at that time were 'required' to do, although the Vatican's 'line' is that he was not an enthusiastic member[46]. That is a pointless statement, since all Hitler Youth were compelled to be, 'enthusiastic'. Sensitivity over the new Pope's true 'political' orientation is associated, of course, with the shadow that hangs over the reputation of the austere wartime Pope, Pius XII, and the Vatican's failure to condemn the Nazis' attempted genocide of Jews, gypsies and others (the Holocaust) [see Figure 59 on page 361]. Likewise, in 1940, after Nazi stormtroopers had entered France, the future Pope John XXIII (second manifestation), Mgr. Angelo Roncalli, did not warn about the dark shadow of the German jackboot enveloping Europe, and neither did he fret over the fate of the French Jews who had just fallen into Hitler's trap. What that Pope, known interestingly in Rome as 'Il Papa buono', implying that other Popes had been less than buono, wrote in one document was that German society was made up of 'alert, strong' men who fully deserved their victory over 'worn-out French democracy'. According to Pier Giorgio Zunino, a lecturer in contemporary history at the University of Turin, the Angelo Roncalli of the 1940s was 'fully at home with the majority Catholic culture: aligned with Fascism, opposed to Soviet Communism, but also suspicious of Western democracy'[47].

THE DOUBLE SATANIC BLACK MASS IN THE VATICAN AND SOUTH CAROLINA

In 1996, the late Fr. Malachi Martin informed this Author about what he was about to publish in his new book 'Windswept House'. We were enjoying breakfast at his favourite small Irish Hotel near his adopted home on East 63rd Street, New York. Over fried eggs and sausages, Malachi informed the Author that the Prologue to the new book would describe, in precise detail, 'the Enthronement of the Fallen Archangel Lucifer' that was effected in the course of a dual Black Mass 'celebrated within the Roman Catholic Citadel on 29th June 1963. The abomination took place in the Chapel of St Paul. The Devil's routine is to turn everything inside out and upside down, so that lies replace the truth, good is called evil and evil good[48]. "The sacred must be profaned. The profane must be adored. Guilt must be accepted as innocence. Pain must give joy, Grace, repentance, pardon must all be drowned in an orgy of opposites. And it must all be done without any mistakes. The sequence of events, the meaning of the words, the significance of the [Black Satanic ritual] actions must all comprise the perfect enactment of sacrilege, the ultimate ritual of treachery'[49].

Props familiar to sorcerers were assembled into 'the experienced hands of the Prince [of this World's] trusted Guardian in Rome. 'A past master of the elaborate ceremonialism of the Roman Catholic Church, so much more was this granite-faced and add-tongued Prelate a Magister of the Prince's Ceremonial of Darkness and Fire'[50]. He was unnamed.

Figure 60: Pope Benedict XVI, elected in 2005, with his Opus Dei aide, Georg Ganswein. Both are from Bavaria, the home of the German Illuminati. Der Spiegel reported on 17th October 2005 that the Pope 'channels' his predecessor - i.e., he communes with a lying familiar spirit.

Malachi Martin further explained that 'the immediate aim of every [Black Satanic] Ceremonial, he knew, is to venerate "the abomination of desolation"'[51]. But now the purpose of the imminent Black Mass was to secure the ascent of the Prince of Darkness in the Citadel of the Roman Catholic Church, so as 'to supplant the Citadel's Keeper, to take full possession of the Keys entrusted to the Keeper' [the [Pope] by Jesus. If Malachi had lived beyond July 1999, and had maintained contact with the Author, no doubt we could have discussed the errors contained within this concept. Unfortunately, the Prince of Darkness ascended 'on high' when the Papacy usurped the place of Jesus Himself, calling itself the 'Keeper' of the Faith: it is an article of belief among Catholic priests that, 'had it not been for the Catholic Church, Christianity would not have survived'[52] . In other words, the Catholic priesthood and hierarchy 'take the credit' for preserving the faith - whereas of course the credit and the glory is entirely the Lord's and that of His Holy Spirit, which is responsible for quickening the faith of those who take the simple step of faith that is necessary for understanding and salvation.

SORCERY AND DEVILRY SHARED WITH SOUTH CAROLINA CHAPEL

The master of black ceremonies, whom Malachi referred to as 'the Guardian', saw to it that all the grosser manifestations of devilry would be exported to an 'Authorized Targeting Chapel' in South Carolina. The pentagram, the black candles and the appropriate Satanic draperies were retained for the Black Mass to be held in Rome. But certain other Rubrics - like the Bowl of Bones, the Ritual Din, the sacrificial animals and the human victim - could not be deployed in Rome: that was considered too risky. Hence the need for a Parallel Enthronement, or Concelebration, in an 'Authorized Targeting Chapel'. Over to Malachi, who was now explaining how sorcery is used to eliminate distance: 'Provided all the participants in both locations 'targeted' every element [i.e. every Rubric - Ed.] of 'The Event' on the Roman Chapel, then 'The Event' in its fullness would be accomplished specifically in the target area'[53]. By 'Evenf was meant the evocation and summoning up of the Devil himself. 'It would all be a matter of unanimity of hearts, identity of intention and perfect sychronization of words and actions
between the Targeting Chapel and the Target Chapel..... For a man as experienced as
the Guardian, the selection of the Targeting Chapel was easy. As simple as a phone call to the United States. Over the years, the Prince's adherents in Rome had developed a faultless unanimity of heart and a seamless identity of intention with the Guardian's friend, Leo, Bishop of the Chapel in South Carolina'[54].

As has been be discussed in Chapter 5, Charleston, South Carolina, is the parallel seat with Rome of the Scottish and Palladian Sorcery Rites, established by the sorcerer and necromancer Albert Pike, who assumed total control of Scottish and Palladian Rite ritual and dogma, while Pike's sorcerer-colleague Giuseppe Mazzini, founder of the modern Mafia, assumed responsibility for high-level (global) Political Action. Mafia stands for 'Mazzini Authorises Thefts, Arson, Poisoning' in Illuminist Italian code: ' Mazzini Autorizza Furti, Incendi, Avvelenamenti'(M. A. F. I. A.)[55].

A careful reading of Malachi's Prologue reveals that 'Leo, Bishop of the Chapel in South Carolina' had established this venue 40 years previously: 'In the forty years or so since His Excellency had established his Chapel, the number and the social importance of the Participants he had attracted, the punctilious blasphemy of his Ceremonies and his frequent and ready cooperation with those who shared his point of view [Author: i.e., those who sought or who already manifested demonic possession] and ultimate goals, had so established the superiority of his operation that by now it was widely admired among initiates as the Mother [Satanic] Chapel in the United States.... The news that this Chapel [of Satan] had been Authorised as the Targeting Chapel for such a great event as the Enthronement of the Prince [of Darkness] within the heart of the Roman Citadel itself was supremely gratifying'[56]. When not officiating at Satanic ceremonies, the Bishop of the South Carolina Chapel was an American Catholic Bishop: an 'angel of light'.

To 'The Event' in the Chapel of St Paul, the Guardian invited, or ordered the attendance of, 'high-ranking churchmen, and laymen of substance. Genuine Servitors of the Prince within the Citadel. Some had been selected, co-opted, trained and promoted in the Roman Phalanx over the decades, while others represented the new generation dedicated to carrying the Prince's agenda [i.e., the agenda of the Prince of Darkness, Lucifer] forward for the next several decades. All understood the need to remain undetected; for the Rule says: "The Guarantee of Our Tomorrow Is Today's Persuasion That We Do Not Exist"[57]. In other words, keeping these reprobate Luciferians' wholesale acceptance of Satan secret was of paramount importance, the corollary being that EXPOSURE of their Satanic obsession and possession would have adverse consequences for 'the agenda'. For the Illuminati know that humanity fundamentally rejects their evil prescription.

One prominent US intelligence operative, a man referred to in the late CIA cover author Claire Sterling's 'Thieves' World' as 'Mr X', recently went as white as a sheet when evidence was alluded to in his presence that he, too, had helped himself to funds that did not belong to him[58]: fear of exposure drained all the blood from his head, in the presence of one of the Author's contacts. When the Devil is really serious, he makes himself invisible[59]: but his adherents know that the Devil, Lucifer himself, cannot be trusted, which is why they are paranoid about secrecy and the constant danger of exposure.

Their subsconscious worries routinely entail induced premature ageing as they struggle with the conflicting forces and loyalties competing for their 'cooperation'.

The parallel Black Masses were to be coordinated with the assistance of a telephone link, and the occult ceremonies were to be said in flawless Latin. 'During 'The Event', the pulse of every Participant's heart must be perfectly attuned to make hate, not love', with the Gratification of Pain and the Consummation being 'perfectly achieved' and coordinated. And Malachi described the objective - the summoning up of the Devil himself, as prescribed in the 'Ancient Mysteries' - in the following obliquely colourful language: 'Finally, if everyone did the needful exactly according to the Rule, the Prince would at long last Consummate his Most Ancient Revenge upon the Weakling [Jesus], the Merciless Enemy who had paraded through the ages as the Most High Merciful One for whom the darkness of darkness was light enough to see all'[60].

Lucifer, who turns everything upside down, was to take the place of Jesus, according to the mad and misinformed intention of the false priests who were really sorcerers - the only problem being that, as is always the case, the followers of Lucifer are, quite pathetically, themselves invariably deceived by Lucifer and his minions: for Jesus does not reign at the Vatican at all. How could that possibly ever have been the case? The human body is the temple, or vessel, of the Holy Spirit[61], not the Vatican - where Lucifer has, as the Papacy's sordid and reprobate history [see preceding accounts] proclaims, actually been enthroned all along, ever since its probable foundation by Simon Magus - there being no historical evidence whatsoever that Simon Peter, who was married and served effectively as the Apostle to the Circumcision in Jerusalem, was ever in Rome. No scriptural authority for this obvious fabrication, critical to papal 'legitimacy', exists.

SIMON MAGUS VS. THE GREAT AND BELOVED APOSTLE SIMON PETER

On the contrary, the Simon Peter of Roman Catholicism is clearly Simon Magus, as is evident not least from the following assertion by the leading Catholic historian, Werner Keller, who had this to say about the death and burial of 'Simon Peter', a.k.a. Simon Magus: 'On the night of his death on the cross, Peter's followers buried his body. As in the case of Jesus on the hill of Calvary, it was wrapped in linen and secretly taken to a pagan burial ground on the Via Cornelia, behind the stone structure of the arena. This pagan cemetery lay on a knoll called vaticanus (Vatican Hill): the Latin word vatis means a 'prophet' or 'soothsayer'[62]. In days gone by, there had been an Etruscan oracle on the spot', although a temple of Mithras has since been discovered.

It will be recalled that Peter, an older, married man, who had once employed the two sons of Zebedee as his fishing hands, was outrun by the much younger disciple, John, to the tomb of Jesus. John outran him because he was much younger than Peter, who owned the fishing business. As a much older man, Peter was, after the Resurrection of Jesus, well established in Jerusalem, where he had a home - as is amply confirmed in the Acts of the Apostles - and served the new Christians there. No scriptural or any other authority exists for the Catholic myth that Peter was ever in Rome: on the contrary, it is made plain in Acts that a division of labour was agreed between Paul and Peter, with Paul being sent, and agreeing to be sent by the Lord, to preach the gospel to the Gentiles, while Peter remained based in Jerusalem, where he was subjected to the temptation of conforming to the Pharisaical 'law' and had to be severely admonished for this backsliding by Paul - which admonishment the brave and endearing Peter accepted in humility, before Paul left on his many travels, ending (according to the written record) in Rome. In The Epistle of Paul to the Galatians, Chapter 2, verse 7, Paul states that 'the gospel of the uncircumcision (the Gentiles) was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision (the Jews who had and were to become Christians) was unto Peter'[63].

The other component of this myth - that the Lord told Simon Peter that 'upon this rock I will build my church', and that the 'rock' or (Greek) petra (a rock as well as a 'peter', a word for priest), was Peter himself, is also false. It is perfectly clear from the full context in Matthew, Chapter 16, that Jesus' use of the word 'rock' here was a reference to Peter's extraordinary faith, and that Jesus meant that it would be upon faith as rock-like as that of Peter that his spiritual church would be built. The Catholic Church takes the text out of context in order to sustain its mythology that Peter is the first Pope and the holder of the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, which Jesus said elsewhere is 'within you'[64]. The full Scripture [Matthew, Chapter 16, verses 13-19] is crystal clear:

'When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying Whom do men say that I the Son of man am? And they said, Some say that thou are John the Baptist; some Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And (the simple fisherman) Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ ('the Anointed One'), the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven. And I also say unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock (of your wonderful faith) I will build my church; and the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against if (meaning that the Gates of Hell cannot extinguish our faith in Him, once we cease to know of Him, and know Him instead). 'And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven'[65]. In other words, the key to the Kingdom of Heaven, which is 'within you', is faith: all we need to do to find Jesus and to be encouraged through the Grace of the Holy Spirit to seek salvation, is to give up fighting once and for all, and to accept that the Lord is indeed King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and to believe: one simple, genuine act of faith is all that is necessary.

THE SECOND CONCECRATION OF LUCIFER IN THE CITADEL OF ROME

The Concecration of Lucifer, then, was to be a second coronation for the Evil One in the Rome Citadel, so to speak. On this occasion, as at the beginning, the intention of the Evil One would not be to destroy the (Catholic) Church, but to 'convert' it into an instrument of Satan, or rather, into a more decisive instrument of the Evil One than previously. Just as evil people know and recognise others in a similar state of perdition, so did Lucifer perceive, correctly that the reprobate Vatican could be 'made much better use of, following Lucifer's 'second' Enthronement, which would 'create a perfect covering opaque and velvet smooth, to conceal the Prince (of Darkness) within the official Church membership of the Roman Citadel. Enthroned in Darkness, the Prince would be able to foment that same Darkness as never before. Friend and foe would be affected alike. Darkness of will would become so profound that it would obscure even the official objective of the Citadel's (i.e. The Vatican's) existence.... In time, and at last, the Goat would expel the Lamb and enter into Possession of the Citadel'[66].

The gathering of notables who attended the Black Mass in the Chapel of St Paul represented, according to Malachi, 'the current harvest of the Prince Tradition (that is, of high Satanists and Luciferians) that had been planted, nurtured within the ancient Citadel over a period of some eighty years'[67]. Subtracting 80 years from 1963, we have the year 1883. 'The Order of the Palladium', founded originally in 1730, was introduced in Charleston but remained inactive until 1886, when Albert Pike, who died and descended to hell in 1891, revived it under the name 'Reformed Palladium'; whereupon it gave new, deeply secret, demonic impulse to the 'workings' of 'High Masonry'. As Malachi now explained:

'Though restricted in numbers for a time, the group has persisted in protective obscurity as a foreign body and an alien spirit within its host and victim. It permeated offices and activities throughout the Roman Citadel, spreading its symptoms through the bloodstream of the Church Universal like a subcutaneous infection. Symptoms like cynicism and indifference, malfeasance and misfeasance in high office, inattention to correct doctrine, neglect of moral judgment, loss of acuity in sacral observance, blurring of essential memories and of the words and gestures that bespoke them'[68].

Meanwhile the American Targeting Chapel, a large assembly hall in the basement of a parochial school in South Carolina, the State of the 'Mother Lodge' of the Scottish and Palladian Rites in Charleston, had been prepared for the gruesome parallel Black Mass, with a red-veiled Pentagram flanked by two black candles arranged with a large crucifix pointing north. There was a red sanctuary lamp with its Ritual Flame, and at the east end of the altar a cage, in which sat, terrified, Flinnie, a seven-week-old puppy, mildly sedated for his brief moment of usefulness to the Prince of Darkness. Other accoutrements included the Red and Black Pillars from which hung the Snake Shield and the Bell of Infinity. On the east wall were vials containing Earth, Air, Fire and Water, surrounding a second cage containing a dove. The Bowl of Bones was located on the west side nearest the door. To the east was displayed the Crescent Moon and the usual Five-Pointed Star with the Goat-Points raised upwards.

In the Vatican Chapel of St Paul, the black-robed and black-dressed Participants 'passed by the Bowl of Bones, dipped in their hands to receive small fistfuls, and took their places in the semicircle of chairs facing the Altar. As the Bowl of Bones was depleted and the kneeler chairs filled, the Ritual Din began to shatter the silence. Ceaselessly rattling the bones, each Participant began talking - to himself, to others, to the Prince. To no-one. Not raucously at first, but in an unsettling ritual cadence.... The mumbling cadence swelled from a softly cacophonous susurro. The steadily mounting gibberish of prayer and pleading and bone rattling developed a kind of controlled heat. The sound became angry, as if verging on violence. Became a controlled concert of chaos. A mind-gripping howl of Hate and Revolt. A concentrated prelude to the celebration of the Enthronement of the Prince of This World within the Citadel of the Weakling'[69].

Malachi Martin's book is called a novel: but at the New York breakfast in the Irish hotel, Malachi told the Author that his description of the abominations that took place in parallel in the Chapel of St Paul and the 'Chapel' in South Carolina represented accurate descriptions of what had taken place on that fateful day in 1963, shortly after the conclusion of the Second Vatican Council. In the South Carolina chapel, a young girl, drugged for the occasion but fully conscious, was handed to the sorcerer-in-chief by her cold-hearted father and ritually violated before the attending Luciferians while the frightened puppy, which had wagged its tail as it was taken out of its cage, was vivisected alive.

CHURCH TO BE TRANSFORMED INTO 'THE UNIVERSAL CHURCH OF MAN

After the ritual brutalities, the assembled priests and notables evoked the Devil, chanting to the Ritual Din, a triumphant profanation of the hymn of the Apostle Paul: 'Maran Atha! Come, Lord! Come, O Prince. Come, Come! I believe in the Only Begotten Son of the Cosmic Dawn... And his name is Lucifer... I believe in the Mysterious One... And he is the Snake with venom in the Apple of Life.... I believe in the Ancient Leviathan': invocations and responses followed in cascades. The main part of the Vatican ritual was then brought to a close with the following proclamation by Bishop Leo:

'I believe that the Prince of this World will be Enthroned this night in the Ancient Citadel, and from there he will create a New Community', to which the response was chanted: And Its Name will be the Universal Church of Man'.

In the course of this grisly description - which Fr. Martin, as an accomplished exorcist, was well qualified to write - he pointed out that 'a Prussian fellow', who hailed from Berlin, had arrived just before the commencement of the Black Mass in the Chapel of St Paul. This German was of exceptional significance, then as in 2006:

'Not yet forty, he was already a man of importance in certain critical transnational affairs. Even the light from the black tapers glinted off his steel-rimmed glasses and his balding head, as if to single him out. Chosen as International Delegate and Plenopotentiary Extraordinary to the Enthronement' (of the Prince of Darkness in the Vatican), 'the Prussian carried the leather pouch containing the Letters of Authorization and Instructions to the Altar before he took his place in the semicircle'[70].

Dr Henry Alfred Kissinger, the 'mentor' of George H. W. Bush (Busche) Sr., who advised President Ford to dismiss William Colby and to replace him with Bush Sr., was bom Heinz Alfred Kissinger in Germany on 27th May 1923. He was in fact just 40 when the Double Black Mass Abomination led from the Vatican, took place in 1963.

Letters of Authorization and Instructions? Handed to the sorcerer at the blasphemous Altar of Satan in a Vatican Chapel by a Prussian, honoured with the special title of

'International Delegate and Plenopotentiary Extraordinary to the Enthronement'?

What did this mean? At the end of the Ceremony in the Chapel of St Paul, we read in Malachi's text, as follows: 'Only the Authorization, the Bill of Instructions and the Evidence remained. The Guardian looked up from the Altar and turned cheerless eyes toward the Prussian International Delegate who had brought the leather pouch containing the Letters of Authorization and Instructions. All watched as he left his place and strode to the Altar, took the pouch in hand, removed the papers it contained, and read out the Bill of Authorization in a heavy (German) accent:

"By mandate of the Assembly and the Sacrosanct Elders, I do institute, authorize and recognize this Chapel, to be known henceforth as the Inner Chapel, as taken, possessed and appropriated wholly by Him Whom we have Enthroned as Lord and Master of our human fate. Whosoever shall, by means of this Inner Chapel, be designated and chosen as the final In-the-Line (i.e. the papal line from 'Simon Peter') successor in the Petrine Office, shall by his very oath of office commit himself and all he does command to be the willing instrument and collaborator with the Builders of Man's Home on Earth and throughout man's Cosmos. He shall transform the ancient Enmity' (of Christians) 'into Friendship, Tolerance and Assimilation as these are applied to the models of birth, education, work, finance, commerce, industry, learning, culture, living and giving life, dying and dealing death. So shall the New Age of Man be modelled'.

And the assembled, deluded, worldly fools responded: 'So mote it be!'

Turning to the penultimate item on the agenda, the International Delegate from Berlin read out the oath before the Luciferians assembled in the Chapel of St Paul:

'Do you each and all, having heard the Authorization, now solemnly swear to accept it willingly, unequivocally, immediately, without reservation or cavil?'

And the fools and idiots cried in unison: 'We do'.

'Do you each and all now solemnly swear that your administration of office will be bent to fulfil the [Luciferian, worldly] aims of the Universal Church of Man?'

And they responded: 'We do so solemnly swear'. 'Are you each and all prepared to signal this unanimous will with your own blood, so strike you Lucifer, if you are unfaithful to this Oath of Commitment?' 'We are willing and prepared'.

And finally, the International Delegate from Berlin demanded:

'Are you each and all fully consenting that, by this Oath, you transfer Lordship and Possession of your souls from the Ancient Enemy [Jesus Christ], the Supreme Weakling, to the Ail-Powerful Hands of our Lord Lucifer?'

And the lost, obtuse, perverted, reprobate idiots, powerful Princes of the Catholic Church and from all the world's corridors of power, responded: 'We consent'.

What they consented to with one accord was the immediate launch of the continuing frenzied 'Ritual Din' offensive against the whole of Mankind, which has been accentuated ever since - as abomination follows further abomination in pursuit of the Luciferians' insistence that we must adopt the Nazi pagan New Age of Antichrist and the 'Do as Thou Wilt' 'Ancient Mysteries', opening the floodgates of the Permissive Society, and unleashing upon civilisation the filthy prospectus of the German Illuminati and their foul vices, in toto.

The final demonic ritual, The Evidence, was then performed. As Malachi described this final scene, 'with the two documents positioned on the Altar, the International Delegate from Berlin held out his left hand to the Guardian. With a golden pin, the granite-faced Roman pricked the tip of the Delegate's left thumb and pressed a bloody print beside the Delegate's name on the Bill of Authorization'.

Quickly then, the Vatican participants appended their pinpricked bloody fingers as well. When every member of what Malachi called the Vatican Phalanx had satisfied the last Ritual requirement, a little silver bell was rung in the Chapel of St Paul. And in the American Chapel, the Bell of Infinity rang its assenting response, while both congregations chanted: 'Ding! Dong! Dell • Thus shall the Ancient Gates [of Hell] Prevail • Thus the Rock and the Cross must fail • Forever! • Ding! Dong! Dell!'

Malachi concluded this detailed description of The Evenf by noting that as 'the members of the Roman Phalanx emerged into the Court of St Damascus in the small hours of the feast day of SS Peter and Paul... some of the Cardinals and a few of the bishops acknowledged the salutes of the respectful security guards with an absent-minded cross of priestly blessing traced in the air, as they entered their limousines'.

The obvious question arises: was Malachi himself present at 'The Event' - the Second Enthronement of Lucifer in the Vatican? In the 1960s, Malachi may have been a 'radical priest'. This was not the case when the Author knew him. He told the Author, before his book was published, that he was about to expose this abomination, and he described what the expose would contain. About 18 months later, the Author was invited to a luncheon in New York to which Malachi had been invited, but, at the Author's suggestion, had declined to attend (because, as the Author had surmised, the invitation had been extended for a selfish purpose). On that occasion, the Author fell into conversation with a gentleman, described by Malachi to the Author afterwards as 'a man full of Grace', who recounted the following story. He said that he knew the girl, Agnes, who had been abused on the Altar at the Chapel in South Carolina. At a later stage in her life, she had decided (very riskily) to confront the bishop who had abused her during this unspeakable Satanic ritual in 1963. Accompanied by a priest, she arrived at the bishop's private residence. The reprobate Catholic cleric answered the door himself. On seeing Agnes, whom he could not possibly have seen subsequent to the abomination and whose appearance would have changed as she was now much older, the bishop let out a demonic tirade of obscenities, blasphemies and foul language which was of such demonic force that Agnes and her priest friend had to retreat without saying a word.

The purpose of the foregoing is not to condemn the Catholic Church. In case sterile religious bias is at once alleged, the Author adds here that he considers that Dr Rowan Williams, the present Archbishop of Canterbury, who is a graduate of the Author's own Oxford college, Christ Church, is himself a walking abomination, for having allowed himself to be inducted into a High Degree of the Druids, thereby spreading confusion*.

*This is the appropriate place to cite the Lord's parable of the tares [Matthew, Chapter 13, verses 24-30]: 'Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the household came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? From whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest;: and in the time of harvest, I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn'. Churches rarely explain the meaning of this parable, and for an obvious reason: it is directed against them! The clue as to its meaning is obtained by considering the actual meaning of the word 'tares'. This English word means a weed called darnel, which has the following peculiar characteristic: when it is young, it resembles young wheat, but as it grows its appearance changes, so that by the time of the harvest it is distinguishable from the wheat. The point is that for a considerable period, the tares (darnel) cannot be distinguished from the wheat. We have reached the stage of spiritual understanding at which we can more clearly now distinguish the wheat from the darnel. The wheat are those who 'know His voice' and who, despite the evil we must confront, seek to order their lives in accordance with His Word. These are to be gathered into His barn. The darnel represents all those sorcerers, false priests, reprobate ministers, worldly and money-making charlatans who use the 'Jesus' label [see later in this chapter for more examples] as a convenient cover for their nefarious activities. In the present context, the Author cites this parable in order to make it clear to anyone who may be so concerned, that he is not condemning Catholics, since the reaper will distinguish between those Catholics who indeed 'know the Lord', despite all the distractions the church places in their way, and those who remain blind.

WHAT DID THAT 'M' ON THE LATE POPE'S COFFIN STAND FOR - SERIOUSLY?

The death of Pope John Paul II in 2005 was 'celebrated' by a globally televised funeral ritual on 8th April, which struck many as representing a celebration not of the late Pope, but of death itself. Reuters called that Event as 'one of the most momentous funerals in history' - which could have meant that more human beings were subjected to this gratuitous death-spectacle than had ever been contrived before. The 'Great and the Good' (meaning the allegedly bad and the lost) were assembled from all over the world, to attend a formal religious service at which some of their most prominent number stared with an expressionless, glassy-eyed gaze at the coffin (casket for US readers). The repulsive ritual of showing the dead Pontiff and raising the corpse for the assembled people and the whole world to see, was followed by TV shots of the unusually shaped coffin (casket) taken from above, revealing it to be of trapezoid form, and that it carried an oddly-described cross with the capital letter M - the 13th letter of the alphabet - inscribed in the lower right-hand corner [see Figure 61 on page 379]. The questions arise: why was the cross mis-shapen, and what was the meaning of the letter M? Did it refer to Mary, as of course Catholics were tacitly invited to believe, or to Malta (if the late Pope was a Knight of Malta), or did it, by any chance, actually mean Magus?

The trapezoid shape of the late Pope's coffin diverged, of course, from the normal coffin shape. The late Pope John Paul II had Nazi connections in his early days, and is believed to have been a salesman for Zyklon-B, the deadly gas used in the Nazi gas chambers. An organisation calling itself The Order of the Trapezoid - yet another one of these Illuminati organisations calling itself The Order - has been identified as one of ten 'magickal' Orders loyal to the Temple of Set, based in San Francisco, an organisation of Satanists openly presided over by Dr. Michael A. Aquino, a US military intelligence officer who is notorious in the United States as a perpetrator of Himmlerian US occultic intelligence experimentation. In a response dated 14th November 1990 to criticisms of his activities, Aquino himself described how The Order of the Trapezoid features, along with 'several specialised Orders within the Temple of Set', as a component of its structures 'somewhat analogous to the departments of a university'. The Satanist Aquino continued, revealing the wide range of Himmlerian investigations with which the Order of Set was and is engaged on behalf of US 'Black' intelligence, as follows:

'In actuality, this particular Order is concerned with a great many areas of research, of which North European (including Nazi German) occultism is only one. Others include time/space sciences, proxemics, art and architecture (particularly Expressionism, Art Nouveau/Deco/Moderne), electronics (Tesla et al), film noir, Lovecraftian literature, music and the electromagnetic spectrum, mental sciences etc'. In other words, these - revealingly - are among the areas where intelligence investigators have sought to apply or merge occult skills for secret mind- and personality-control purposes.

THE ORDER OF THE TRAPEZOID: FASCINATED WITH NAZI GERMANY

Aquino then admitted that the Order of the Trapezoid is interested in Nazi Germany, while playing down such interest. In reality, Nazi Germany was the second large-scale Black regime to have been established by the Illuminati in the 20th century, its purpose being to provide the missing dialectical foil (the false 'opposite' mechanistic 'force') to Communism, which had been established following the subversive activities of the German agent Rasputin, and the German agents Lenin and (probably) Leon Trotsky (Braunstein). A primary preoccupation among the Uluminati today is to extend what was learned from the experience of the first two large-scale Black Illuminati regimes - and which was replicated along Jesuitical-Nazi lines in Communist China, Cambodia, Cuba, Libya, Iraq, Iran, Syria and elsewhere - to the whole world.

According to Aquino, 'to the extent that The Order [of the Trapezoid] is interested in Nazi Germany, it is essentially with regard to the very extensive research into occultism conducted by the Ahnenerbe and other groups and individuals during that period'. Aquino, associated with such Himmlerian occult research in the United States, approaches these issues as though the investigations in question represent legitimate areas of research - whereas dabbling in the occult is decisively forbidden in Scripture and is anathema to all who know the Lord Jesus Christ, and also to Jews who adhere to the Torah only. In the absence of such knowledge and understanding, enquiring about, let alone intermeddling with, the occult is to play with fire.

The Order of the Trapezoid has a document in which it explains its behaviour as follows: 'The Order of the Trapezoid extracts the positive, the constructive, the exalted, and the romantic from the Germanic magical tradition - and just as carefully avoids and rejects those excesses, distortions and cruelties which have made this tradition an object of the most extraordinary fear, condemnation, and suppression in the postwar period. The Germanic tradition is also part of the legacy of the Prince of Darkness, hence is appropriate to an Order within the Temple of Set, which embraces all manifestations of the Powers of Darkness in the world'. The truth, for once, from a horse's mouth.

This extraordinary admission reveals, once again, how these deluded fools are themselves fooled by Lucifer himself, whom they purport to revere as God. The notion that an occultist dabbling in Black Magick can pick and choose which element of magick to 'accept' and what is 'unacceptable' or unwise, is disingenuous and fanciful - since the occultist is in severe danger of becoming the possessed, and can never control the dark powers that wind up controlling him or her; and in any case, the let-out in this context is contradicted by The Order's assertion that its membership within the Temple of Set means that it is part of the Germanic Satanic tradition 'which embraces all manifestations of the Powers of Darkness'. Hence, the claim that The Order selects what elements of magick to accept and what elements to reject, is a brazen lie which is contradicted in its own literature. A second paragraph elaborated on this non-sequitur.

'Nevertheless, the care required in any investigation into this [German occult] tradition cannot be overemphasized. Magical and research ability are not enough; ethical sensitivity and social discretion are just as important. The prospects for new and wondrous perspectives on the Black Art [sic] are exhilarating, but success will come only if The Order conducts its affairs with the same dedication and nobility that have made The Temple of Set a legend in its time'. Of course, the word 'nobility' as applied to the foul Temple of Set is an absurdity: for how can anything to do with the pornographic, brutal, murderous, deceitful, lying activities of sorcerers ever contain a shred of nobility?

Once again, we are confronted with the chief characteristic of these deluded people: their chaotic double-mindedness. Most of these people are capable of being perfectly charming, most of the time - and note that the Author has italicised the syllable charm here. A snake-charmer is a sorcerer who casts charms on snakes. The most adept among these people exercise their charm liberally: they seduce targets by being charming to them, so that it is always hard to resist their charming personalities. But if one comes to know such people, several complications are apt to arise. In the first place, a close acquaintance with any of them will soon, or in due course (depending on how

Figure 61: The coffin of the late Pope John Paul II lying in St Peter's Square during his funeral, on 8th April 2005, which was the most lavish and universally observed death-fest in world history. AP. Reuters described the event as 'one of the most momentous funerals in history'. But what, exactly, did the mis-shapen cross and the M, engraved on the lid of the trapezoid-shaped coffin, signify? Would it have meant Mary, Malta, or Magus? Karol Wojtyla, an Illuminati Magus, is featured on a list of alleged mind-control programmers [page 517).

good they are at lying and concealing their split orientation or personalities) reveal that they contradict themselves. A statement made earlier, in a different context, is reversed later, in a new context. Preferences previously expressed are subsequently overturned. Then, one day, without any warning, this charming person switches, revealing the other, nastier, personality masked by the charm. One should perhaps always be on guard against people who suddenly 'come at one' with charm. In the author's experience, this is a danger signal. Excessive charm at the outset of a relationship can be suspect.

Double-mindedness is also reflected, as has been discussed, in the maintenance of opposite perspectives or even personalities simultaneously. In a 'worst case scenario', therefore, this would enable Pope Benedict XVI to pronounce, with fervour, his veneration for Klement August von Galen as an intrepid opponent of Nazi pagan ideology, while at the same time condoning the Nazi pagan ideology that was re-consecrated in the Chapel of St Paul on 29th June 1963.

SECRECY IS A STRAIN: SO THEY DISTRIBUTE CLUES TO THEIR ALLEGIANCE

A peculiar feature of secretive, autocratic and Illuminati-related organisations is their propensity to display clues as to their true allegiance. Almost all the oil multinationals do so by the use of corporate logos which contain esoteric symbols; and the same goes for many multinational pharmaceutical companies: such symbols inform 'the interested' among the Illuminati of the corporations' true 'spiritual' allegiance and geomasonic orientation. A US intelligence software spy bundle called 'Illuminable' is pre-installed on new computers (as of July 2006). A study of papal coats-of-arms will reveal the presence of the same five-pointed stars (Pythagorean pentalphas) that are familiar on the flags and insignia of nation states and supranational organisations such as the United States, the European Union, Iraq, Libya, Ghana and others. Whenever Saddam Hussein was televised for both domestic and international public consumption, he was positioned at a desk adjacent to a large Iraqi flag, arranged so that the single large five-pointed star was prominently displayed to occupy a good third of the television screen; and Colonel Qaddhafy does the same. The purpose of displaying the five-pointed star is always identical: to inform 'the interested' that the principal, country or entity concerned is a fully paid-up member of the globalist geomasonic Illuminist Brotherhood and network.

The trapezoid shape of the late Pope's coffin, and the peculiar M on the coffin lid, were similar examples of this eccentric need to display one's true allegiance. One general supplementary reason for this 'need' is that the occupants of high office are desperately lonely. By 12th October 2005, President George W. Bush Jr. had visited the New Orleans area no less than eight times - so great, cynics suggested, was his occult interest in that place of death, but more probably because his handlers had ordered him to make these depressing visits, in a vain attempt to buttress this lonely man's battered reputation. Left to his own devices, he would have preferred to stay in the White House.

All occupants of high office, having been alternatively enticed by lust for power - Ratzinger certainly made no secret of his ambition to become Pope - find that the downside is desperate loneliness and effective imprisonment in office, with almost all their moves dictated by intelligence handlers. The US President has several handlers and the British Prime Minister likewise. And this, by the way, is also true nowadays of British and US newspaper editors and their key staff: The focus of news providers, on any given day or hour, results from intelligence agency directives, according to reputable authorities including myriad retired news officials and intelligence officers'[71].

A BENEDICT SUPERVISED THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE SATANIC INQUISITION

A contemporary UK Templar, Tim Acheson, told a local newspaper in Hertfordshire, England, in April 2005, that Cardinal Ratzinger had chosen the name Benedict because of its association with the Templars. He reportedly informed 'The Hertfordshire Mercury' newspaper cryptically that 'the Pontiff chose Benedict as his papal title, a name with special significance to the Knights Templar. The Rule of the Templars, which is like a code of conduct for The Order, was originally known as the Rule of Benedict'. Ratzinger, as previously noted, was head of the contemporary manifestation of the Inquisition -the notorious arm of the Church set up by the Jesuits to investigate, persecute or eliminate its enemies. In December 2004, the Knights Templar, who have a base in Hertfordshire, demanded a papal apology by the year 2007 for their persecution by the Papacy 700 years ago*. This demand, which the Vatican said it was 'seriously considering', made world headlines, after being revealed by 'The Mercury', appearing in several British newspapers, including 'The Independent' and ''The Guardian'. According to 'THE Mercury', before his 'election' to the Papacy, Ratzinger contacted a leading Hertfordshire historian and a records officer at Hertfordshire County Hall. An anonymous source told 'The Mercury' that the Bavarian Cardinal approached the local history expert Dr Alan Thompson; and it was also carefully and pointedly emphasised that the Pope's homeland, Bavaria, is 'also the homeland of a mysterious secret society, the Illuminati'.

'THE Mercury's' source also claimed that the former Cardinal telephoned the environmental officer of Hertfordshire County Council, Ms. Alison Tinneswood, who subsequently sought refuge behind the UK 'Data Protection Act' and refused to answer any questions[72]. Why would Cardinal Ratzinger have contacted the County's environmental officer, other than to investigate the possibility of a (Templar) exhumation?

JESUIT SPY-MANIA - THE MODEL FOR MODERN INTELLIGENCE PRACTICES

It is bad enough that the odious Papal Inquisition, a murderous manifestation of Satanic blood-lust, should have been invented and established by the founder of those 'Angels of Light', the Jesuits. Another of the Jesuits' legacies to humanity has been their secret intelligence service blueprint. All intelligence services today, and most of their nefarious practices, are modelled, to a greater or lesser extent, upon the Jesuit precedent. Under the Jesuit Constitutions, the chief occupation of Jesuit spies, or 'syndici', is to watch fellow Jesuits, and to send 'informaciones' about them to the local Provincial, or else to the General himself, at the Jesii, in Rome. Novices are taught the art of official and unofficial spying on their fellow Jesuits, under the rubric of 'manifestation of faults' -the same technique as was and is employed by Moral Re-armament to strip targeted individuals of all natural personality protection mechanisms, and to deprive them of their psychological integrity. Spying is put before Novices as 'a holy and salutary practice'[73]. The necessity for spying is justified by the need for 'progress in humility', 'progress in spiritual perfection', and so 'that the Superior may know them better'[74].

As the author of an expose of the Jesuits wrote in the 1920s: 'Naturally, raw recruits, mostly merely boys, do not fully understand what is involved in the denunciatory sys-

* Although this Author has little time for Dan Brown and his novels, Mr Brown was correct when he made the recorded statement that 'Ratzinger is on record as suggesting that Freemasonry was set up to persecute Christianity, and it is the revenge of the Templars that the Church fears, since the origin of Freemasonry is rooted in the persecution of the Templars by the Church'. Of course 'the Church' is not to be confused with Jesus Christ and His Word, with which the Inquisition has nothing to do, given that it represented the unrestrained Works of Darkness perpetrated in His Name. A further dimension emerges from Ratzinger's statement here. When the great period of cathedral-building had come to an end, the masons' cartels or trade guilds which had been maintained by the builders in order to prevent the Church 'gouging' their price structures, were left without a purpose. So their 'dead' framework was taken over by the Templars.

tern thus explained in a pious homily on Christian charity. Neither have they any conception what secret government means. They are asked if they are willing to have their faults manifested to Superiors, and if they are willing in charity to manifest the faults of others, and they express their consent. They take it for granted that what they have been told is a "holy and salutary religious practice", is quite above-board and honourable. They readily agree to the system without understanding what it entails. If afterwards, as often happens, when they come to see its evils and dangers, they make any protest, they are reminded of their acceptance of the system when it was explained to them in the Noviceship'[75]. It is then that they start to realise that they are trapped.

The Jesuit espionage system is so comprehensive that Headquarters is kept fully informed about every Jesuit in The Order. This is achieved by means of an elaborate reporting system, similar to the endless reports that are routinely generated by the European Commission's corrupt paper-shuffling structures. The first layer of espionage entails a general system of official reports from Superiors, Consultors, Procurators and from special Visitators sent from Rome by the General. Every Provincial is required to send each month to Rome a complete report upon the Province under his charge, which means that he and his staff spend most of their time collecting information on all the Jesuits within the Province. Local Superiors must report to Rome four times a year about all their subjects. Procurators proceed to Rome periodically - carrying with them their innumerable secret reports about members of their respective Jesuit Provinces.

On certain occasions, so-called 'informatores', four in number, are secretly nominated, and are ordered to deliver secret reports about individual Jesuits. This was the number of Jesuits who attended the session with the late Pope in 1981, described by Malachi Martin. The General and his Secretaries preserve these reports in archives, and a full record of the behaviour of every Jesuit in the world is maintained at the Jesu. In addition to all these compulsory spying reports, an immense flow of voluntary documents is despatched to Rome by pious meddlers who spend a great deal of their time writing as they are privileged and enjoined to do, denunciatory letters about fellow Jesuits, and about particular occurrences. These letters are marked 'soli', and they are placed directly into the hands of the General, who in due course acknowledges them personally.

It is clear that Mao Tse-Tung's system of communal denunciation during the so-called Cultural Revolution in China was based upon this Jesuitical system of institutionalised denunciation and reporting. Fidel Castro, a Jesuit-educated terrorist, uses the same Jesuitical procedures. It need hardly be said that such seething activity has nothing to do with the calm peace of Jesus Christ, who displayed 'the peace of God which passeth all understanding'[76]. When Jesus was explaining his mission and purpose to his disciples, in preparation for His Passion, he gave them these comforting words:

'Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid'[77].

And to the consternation of those who are in league with, or possessed by, the Prince of this World, those who accept His peace are not at all afraid of these reprobates.

Manifestly, the gulf between the oppressive control system that the Jesuits institutionalised from the outset, and 'the peace of God which passeth all understanding' is unbridgeable, short of total repentance by the reprobates concerned. The Order - like all other Illuminist organisations calling themselves The Order - is an invention of Satan, and is uniquely responsible for the model of institutionalised Jesuitical espionage and control methodology by criminalised intelligence communities worldwide.

THE CONFESSIONAL AS A SOURCE OF INTELLIGENCE FOR BLACKMAIL

An even greater abomination within the Jesuit Order is the evil system of exploiting the Catholic 'Confessional'. In the Catholic system, priests are intermediaries and confession is made to the priest, who acts supposedly as intermediary with God. This is practice is of course a relic of the pagan and also of the Jewish Pharisaical system, both of which prescribed that the priesthood alone possessed the powers and information necessary to provide absolution or to mete out punishments for sins committed by the supplicant. 'Confession' is thus simply a device to ensure that the priesthood controls its target population and can levy financial demands upon its members. By contrast, Jesus made it plain that no man on earth (with the exception of one's natural father) is to be called father, since only God is Father[78], and that Jesus is the sole intercessor with God for the sins of mankind[79]. 'It is Christ... who... maketh intercession for us'[80]. None other.

In contravention of this simple instruction, the Catholic Pope is the Holy Father and all Catholic priests and male religious are Fathers, consistently with the Catholic Church's reprobate practice of picking and choosing what elements of Scripture it will accept, what is to be elaborated, and what is to be ignored. The commensurately reprobate Church of England has of course taken to doing this as well.

The Jesuits' oppressive 'Common Rules' prescribe that 'he who knows about the grievous temptation of another must give notice of it to the Superior, that he, in his fatherly care and providence, may supply a suitable remedy'. But prescribing remedies, or penances, is none of any human being's business, beyond that of the sinner himself. He has the option to ask for repentance through Jesus Christ, because he has Free Will (of which the Jesuit and other Illuminati Orders seek to deprive their adherents). A fairly full grasp of the Jesuit Constitutions is necessary to understand the full meaning of the word 'temptation' in this context, and to realise what dire penalties the Superior, in his so-called 'fatherly care' as a hyperactive Angel of Light (driven by the 'seething energies' of Lucifer), may in his 'wisdom' decide upon as 'suitable remedies'[81]. In the 'Instructions for Confessors', issued by the Seventh General Congregation of The Order, the fifth section allocates certain additional tasks to the 'syndici, who are appointed in every Jesuit house and college, and among every class of The Order, to watch and send in secret reports to Superiors'. The text reads: 'Let syndici be appointed... who shall watch and report to the Superior about long confessions (prolix confessionibus), and also about protracted conversations in the Church, outside confessions'. 'There was therefore no place sacred, not even the church [building itself], against the activities of Jesuit spies. Nor was confession, which good taste as well as honourable principles, shelters from observation, immune from the watchful eyes of the official syndici of The Order'[82].

'During prayer time in Jesuit houses, that is, three times a day, official spies called "visitors" go from room to room, opening the doors without knocking in order to see if the Fathers are at their prayers. They have to keep records of the number of times each Father is absent at prayer time, or late for prayers. The "Visitors" report to the Superior at stated intervals' .

The Order (that is to say, this manifestation of it) has insisted since the days of Ignatius Loyala upon the absolute importance of its 'denunciatory' system. The Jesuits' need for such an abominable control mechanism illustrates, of course, their fundamental insecurity, and the absence of the Holy Spirit among them - since if this Order were 'of the Holy Spirit', no such abominably repressive control mechanism would be necessary. Significantly, the German Jesuit tradition has always been especially keen on denunciation as a primary component of espionage. An official letter from the Bohemian Principal, a Father Bieczynski, cited by a Count von Hoensbroech, which was found in a Library in Vienna, contained the following injunction:

'How great a value we set on denunciation as the true eye of the Society, must be known to everybody.... Nor do those err who suppose that the greater part of the annoyances to which the Society is subject spring from neglect and disregard of denunciation. It is therefore particularly enjoined on all, as loving sons of the Society, to pay due regard to a matter of such importance, and putting aside all considerations, in accordance with the spirit of our Institute' [which diverges 100% from the Holy Spirit] 'truly and faithfully to report to the Superior everything which they judge in the Lord should be reported. They may rest assured that they are performing an office both grateful and advantageous to the welfare of the Society' [that is to say, to its own self-interest, which diverges from the interests of its members and from the Word of God], if they zealously strive after that which the safety of our Order requires of all in this respecf .

THE PARANOID PSYCHOLOGY OF THE ORDER

In other words, this is all about The Order's perpetual fear, given its manifest idolatry of control and power, that it will be undermined and destroyed from within - illustrating that it lacks faith in its own purpose and that it is not guided by the Holy Spirit, but rather by the spirit of the Prince of Darkness, who is the inventor and source of these components of its black, institutionalised system of internal repression and espionage. One historian has described the atmosphere among Jesuits at times of heightened Jesuit internal dissension, when the 'inmates' were more than usually seized with the spirit of antagonism, as being bedevilled by a 'system of the most abominable espionage and tale-bearing', characterised by 'disorders attendant on secret accusations'. According to Ranke, 'It was made the instrument of concealed ambition and of hatred wearing the mask of friendship'. The historian of the Papacy added this quotation from a Jesuit theologian, Fr. Mariana, who reported as follows: 'Were anyone to read over the records sent in to Rome, he would perhaps not find a single upright man.... Universal distrust prevails'[85]. It came naturally to Fidel Castro, a Jesuit, who makes clandestine visits to 'superiors' in the United States, to install an espionage system in Cuba modelled precisely upon this institutionalised Jesuitical system of espionage and denunciation.

Count von Hoensbroech cited Bishop Palafox's report, in a letter to Pope Innocent X in the mid-17th century, in which the entire truth of this matter was exposed:

'What other Order has Constitutions which are not allowed to be seen, privileges which it conceals, and secret rules and everything related to the government of the Order hidden behind a curtain?' - contrary to the Word of God and the teaching of Jesus Christ, which is open and was given to us all openly: as Paul says: 'This thing was not done in a corner . 'The rules of every other Order may be seen by all the world.... But among the Jesuits there are even some of the Professed who do not know the Statutes, Privileges, and even the Rules of the Society, although they are pledged to observe them. Therefore they are not governed by their Superiors according to the rules of the Church, but according to certain concealed Statutes known by the Superior alone, and according to certain secret and pernicious denunciations, which leads to a large number being driven from the bosom of the Society'[87].

At the sixth General Congregation of The Order, any pretence that Jesuits retain any privacy or personal 'space' whatsoever was stripped bare. Specifically, it was provided that in 'accepting' the principle of denunciation, Jesuit subjects 'thereby renounce their right to their personal good name and reputation in so far as such a right stands in the way of denunciation'[88]. Therefore, The Order snatches such natural rights from the naive boys and young men who have been enticed, or despatched by their deluded parents, into this sterile organisation in their innocence - courting the certainty of rampant disillusionment among their number as the scales fall from their eyes, as happens extensively over the years. A Jesuit is very liable to be denounced falsely by a 'brother' Jesuit, and as a consequence dismissed, without being granted any opportunity to prove his 'innocence'; from which it follows that membership of this demonic Order is actually a precarious existence, lacking any form of security at all. Under modern employment legislation, such terms would be illegal. The diabolical nature of the internal espionage system is illustrated by the following:

'The Superior may, for the improvement of the accused, give him secret warnings and apprehensions; terrify him with threats (terre minis); set spies to watch him; change him from place to place; remove him from office; provided always in so doing he does not violate the secret. This he must avoid doing by putting forward some plausible reasons as a pretext for the treatment he is meting out to the accused'. In other words, the Superior must lie (all the time) about his motives. Lies and deception are the weapons of Satan, not Jesus Christ, after whose name this Order is labelled.

Satan is the Father of Lies, and of murder, his only product being spiritual (through lies and deception) and physical death. As Jesus told the Pharisees: 'Ye are of your father the Devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of if'[89].

To disguise the true reasons for a dismissal so as to preserve the repressive secrecy considered necessary in order to 'protecf the source, the Superior 'may proceed to the dismissal of the accused from the Order, "not, however, in such a way that the crime which has been secretly reported to him may be made known to others in kind or species; but as though the dismissal were for other faults, coming to his knowledge from other sources; faults of a kind calculated to appear in the judgment of others a sufficient reason for the dismissal"'. Of course, the 'dismissed' finds himself a lucky man: for suddenly, he is (relatively) free of the oppressive regime within which he has lived, although he remains vulnerable to further snide denunciations even after leaving The Order.

The author of this Jesuit expose (published in the 1920s) made the same point as this Author - namely, than none of this has anything to do with following Jesus Christ:

'There is, surely, guile enough, equivocation enough, and deception and tyranny enough in all this to justify one in thinking that the government of the Jesuit Order resembles very little Christ's government of his disciples. Yet all this is called "paternal denunciation". What is particularly interesting is the delicate attention and the courtesy shown to the informant. His permission is asked for this, that, and the other thing. He is flattered and consulted. He is protected against any inconvenience, lest he should be unwilling to play the informant again.... Informers are held in the highest esteem in The Order, that is, if they are efficient and accurate informers. They are thought to be loyal to The Order, true children of Saint Ignatius [sic!], and zealous about the Order's highest good'. They are in due time promoted, and they enjoy the confidence of Superiors. If, on the other hand, some' [correctly of course] 'consider it petty, mean, degrading, and the source of far more harm than good, to spy upon their neighbours, they are looked upon as obstinate, independent, indifferent to the interests of The Order, and as being bereft of the true spirit of the Society'. Note the further imperative of having regard for the interest of The Order - that is to say, of this man-made organisation - and the reference to 'the true spirit of the Society', which is of the Devil. Any Jesuit who understands the venal and evil nature of the Jesuit 'spirit of denunciation' also understands, by definition, that this spirit is of the Evil One, and represents the opposite of the Holy Spirit.

THE PECULIAR MAD AFFLICTIONS OF JESUITS

Only a brief impression of the repressive nature of Jesuit rule and of The Order's espionage control system has been given. So oppressive is the system that not many Jesuits pass through their training by The Order without developing some form of eccentricity. The extreme tension of the Noviceship, especially following the exhaustion of the 'period of euphoria' and early years of study, followed by the steady, daily grind of repression in subsequent phases of the Jesuit's life, almost invariably trigger some pathological characteristic or other. According to one account, 'if one is interested in unusual facial expressions, in peculiar forms of abstraction, in strange types of "tic", in subtle manifestations of hysteria or neurasthenia, or in bizarre obsessions, one should secure the hospitality of a Jesuit house and observe the community closely. If one remains long enough, one without doubt will also have an opportunity of witnessing some of those sudden violent storms that burst without warning among men, who live at variance with the laws of nature, and in a high tension of internal repression'[90].

It has further been written that 'many Jesuits suffer from insomnia and headaches; many, especially among the younger members, have "broken heads" (obsessional neuralgia); many are melancholic; many scrupulous, and victims of phobias.... Persecution mania is, as might be expected from our study of the Jesuit espionage system, exceedingly common. A Jesuit tainted with this malady believes that everyone is plotting against him; reporting him to his Superior; watching where he goes and what he does; scheming to deprive him of whatever privileges he enjoys; and in general, determined to ruin him. He suspects every one, and retires more and more into himself.... One Father collected huge stones in his room and barricaded himself against all comers, threatening to kill anyone who should try to enter'[91]. And it gets worse:

'Suicidal and homicidal manias are not unknown in the Society, but naturally the victims of these maladies are sent away, or put into mental homes. The praecox tendency showing itself in "glorified egos" is frequently encountered. Such Jesuits boast of their blue blood; of their prowess as teachers, orators, athletes, artists and theologians; or of the extraordinary amount of work they do. The Order attributes their boastings to pride, and takes no cognisance of the activity of subconscious complexes. There are many forms of cleptomania to be observed, from collecting knives, pins, books and golf balls to incontinently stealing tobacco and other things. One Jesuit... had as a "fetish", white linen. When he vacated his room, an enormous quantity of sheets, pillowcases, towels, and so forth were found accumulated under his bed and in cupboards. The "fetish" cult as practised in The Order usually takes on a pious form, namely the collection of objects of devotion' [which should of course be unnecessary, since the Lord is meant to be the sole object of devotion]. 'Sadism (the torturing of others) and masochism (self-torture) are apparently common in The Order. I have known some Jesuits to lash boys with hard leather straps in a state of passionate excitement, while the boys writhed in agony, and blood flowed from their hands. These sadistic Jesuits, with flushed faces and dilated pupils, seemed to glory in their orgy. As to masochism, I have seen Jesuits invite boys to throw hard balls at them with as much strength as they could; to hit them with sticks; to squeeze their fingers with wrenches until the blood almost oozed from under their fingernails; and to inflict other suchlike tortures upon them. Exhibitionism is, curiously enough, much in evidence in the Order. It may be that it proves to be the most natural reaction against the Rules of Modesty and similar forms of internal repression'.

'When, during vacation time, communities go to the seaside for a brief "villa", Jesuits are as unrestrained in their free-from-clothes sportings as inhabitants of Central Africa. Exhibitionism is seen, too, in senseless feats of daring very common among Jesuits. Some ride down precipitous hills on bicycles devoid of brakes; some roll down the sides of steep heights blindfolded; some swim dangerous channels without an escorting boat. In these and other ways, they give expression to the violent reaction that the enforced restraint of their lives generates'[92].

Unsurprisingly, many Jesuits seize and cultivate opportunities to conduct long, unchaperoned visits to high-born women, and it is commonplace for 'sweet and agreeable words' to be exchanged 'that are tinged with carnal lust and carnal feelings' -which is hardly surprising, given the completely aberrant denial of normal human relationships, the central perverse mechanism of control, that prevails in all such societies of men whose human nature is denied in accordance with the control model derived from the pagan priesthoods of Rome and Greece. This regime establishes a masculine environment devoid of the loving intercession of females, the lack of whom fosters an essentially brutalised, harsh and ruthless mentality such as, for instance, gave rise to the Inquisition, and which may be found replicated in all systems using the Jesuit model.

JESUITS WHO NEVER BATHE, AND JESUITS WHO ARE ALWAYS WASHING

The expose continues: 'There are Jesuits who never take baths, and Jesuits who are eternally washing their hands. There are Jesuits who paste paper over pictures in books that reveal the human figure, and Jesuits who collect pictures of pretty actresses. There are Jesuits who do everything in "threes", in devotion to the Trinity, and Jesuits who write all their notes on bits of torn paper out of love of "Holy Poverty". Finally, there are many Jesuits who crawl like worms, under the urge of inferiority complexes, and as many others who strut like peacocks, under the full blast of superiority complexes'.

The analysis contains descriptions of the hypochondria which grips so many of these poor men: 'Some claim that their stomachs are so weak that they need an altogether special diet; some complain of a lack of vitality and are content to smoke and read the newspapers; indefinite and indescribable pains in the head or heart afflict others; fatigue in all its forms is rampant; and from every community there ascends to heaven an almighty wail of complaints. The only authorised psychotherapy afforded to these numerous victims of neuroses is an increase of pious endeavour, which, as might be expected, is as little efficacious against their mental sicknesses as it would be against gout or gangrene'[93].

Other references to rampant homosexuality, suppressed or overt, and to the existence of pyromaniacs within The Order, abound. The descriptions, in the cited expose, of homosexual activities, cover the usual abuses, with boys spoken of as "a suck of Father So-and-So"; and further nasty detail would be superfluous. Pyromania is, or was, also quite commonplace. Some of these poor imprisoned souls are "candle fiends", always enthused about illuminations. Early in a Jesuit's training, a definite attempt is made to create a 'mother-fixation' on the Society. The Rules abound with repetitious references to 'Our Holy Mother, the Society'. Sentimental 'child-mother' songs are sung in The Order, helping (it is intended) to engender a 'mother-fixation' or attitude of childlike docility and simplicity towards Superiors.

The Jesuit Constitutions are treated as 'irrevocable' - just like certain provisions of the European Union's German DVD-derived Maastricht Treaty [see Chapter 8] - and Superiors refuse at all times to admit that they contain the slightest imperfections. All critical comments and judgments on them are attributed to 'bad faith and wickedness'.

'The sick man is hauled up for treatment as a result of denunciation; he is made use of by Superiors as a source of further information; and he is treated as a child, as one incapable of judging things for himself. A "cure" is expected from this mixture of dialectics, insults, threats, piety, penances and dishonest statements of facts!'[94]. Most disconcertingly, the Jesuit has to accept whatever insults are hurled at him in the 'true spirit of the Society', and not least because harsh and evil words are typically couched in beautifully circumlocutory, elegant language and prose[94].

Particular venom is reserved for Jesuits who commit the sin of 'Disturbance of the Peace, and the Sowing of Discords and Quarrels'. Such people are called 'pests' and are informed that their disease encroaches upon the borders of grave sin. These Jesuits, and others considered 'guilty' of comparable 'sins', are required to be publicly reprimanded in the Refectory before the whole community.

PERVASIVE REGIME OF JESUITICAL 'INFORMANTS' IN THE UNITED STATES

The treatment of renegade Jesuits procured via the pervasive system of oppressive espionage - which has spawned secular equivalents such as the East German system of informants, organised by the STASI operative Marcus Wolf, who arranged that an estimated one-third of the East German population were spying on the other two-thirds (and upon their fellows) - provides, as we have seen, the model for the abuses and organised denunciation fests perpetrated inter alia by the Communist Chinese during the Cultural Revolution (and almost certainly subsequently).

It likewise provides the model for the repressive nationwide system of informants that is being erected 'as we speak' in the United States, partly on the basis of advice procured by the US Department of Homeland Security from its 'consultants', Marcus Wolf and Yevgeniy Primakov (Finkelstein), who shared partial control of Soviet intelligence with his KGB boss, Mikhail Gorbachev, as late as 2005, according to special information passed to the Author[95]. Under this system, nothing that anyone says to a stranger in the United States will, before long, be 'privileged', unless the progressive slide towards the consummation of the Thousand-Year Reich on the ruins of the United States, predicted by the Nazi International in the early 1950s [see Chapter 8], is decisively arrested.

It is also from the Jesuits' centuries-long 'experience' of 'treating' those of their members among whom their repressive regime has triggered psychological and psychosomatic disorders, that modern Satanic mind-control and personality-modification techniques such as those elaborated by the Tavistock Institute and its innumerable related 'offshoots' and the Himmlerian scientists, are originally derived. In such 'treatment', 'the interest of the patient is quite obviously subordinated to that of The Order'[96].

The repressive regime of the Jesuits is so perverse that it has been known to turn men of the finest character into the meanest and most repulsive of creatures - a progression which may help us to understand how certain rulers become devils. The

Order 'gradually demoralises men, who may be naturally of fine and generous tendencies, turning them into weak, cowardly, insincere wrecks of manhood, with enslaved minds and ruined nerves' - just like certain US intelligence officers the Author has known! The author of the expose referred in particular to an Irish Jesuit of his acquaintance whom he described as 'a clever young man full of energy and full of Irish fun and humour. He was a good classical scholar, particularly accurate and exact in his scholarship; and gifted with a nice sense of literary style. He had, I think, the making of an exceptionally good critic, or writer of pungent and thoughtful essays. He might indeed have edited a paper with distinction, or have developed into a distinguished preacher or lecturer. He had great fluency, good judgment in the choice of words, and was possessed with a rich and sweet voice. He was endowed with all the qualities that one considers desirable in a teacher, and had it not been for the mental and moral blight that life in the Society meant for him, he might have become a brilliant Headmaster'.

That was 35 or 40 years prior to the mid-1920s, when this expose was being written. That was 'then'. The same individual 'now' was described by the author concerned, as 'one of the most despicable characters in existence. He is such a craven coward that he almost fears to cough, lest his coughing should be interpreted as a disregard of the Holy Rule. He has no friend whose secrets he is not on the alert to find out, in order to betray them at once to his Superior. There is no form of pretence, hypocrisy, equivocation that he is not versed in. There is no form of flattery in which he is not ready to indulge in order to please a Superior. There is no act of folly or imprudence of any member of his Province that he has not made himself thoroughly acquainted with, in order to have tales to tell to Superiors when names crop up at consultations'.

After he had become a Superior, 'he was the cruellest and most inconsiderate man I ever met. Many [members] of his Province lay to his charge the sad deaths of two young Scholastics' (as young Jesuits are known) 'who, though advanced tubercular cases, were driven to breaking-point by work that he imposed upon them. One of these tubercular Scholastics, whom I knew very well, was sent back by Fr. X to wade about in a half-frozen pond until he should find a skate that he had lost' (since all items in the Scholastics' possession belong to The Order, naturally). When the time of the Public Examinations arrived, Fr. X, who had kept this poor dying boy' (before the invention of appropriate drugs, of course) 'working at classics until 11 pm every night, allowed him to enter for the exams, although the doctor who had seen him the same day had said that there was no longer any hope for his recovery and that at most he could last a few months. But Fr. X wanted' (for himself) 'the credit of the brilliant examination results that were expected of him. The results were forthcoming, but also the boy's death a few months later'[97].

The Jesuit Superior and 'Angel of Light' in question 'was preoccupied eternally with the reputation and good name of his company (house) and of himself: appearances were what he was interested in above all, while he was himself a despicable 'whited sepulchre'[98]. The author correctly compared this institutionalised hypocrisy and tyranny with the life and normal, human conduct of Jesus Christ; and in order to illustrate that this Author is far from being, of course, the only observer who has made this necessary comparison, the following passage will illustrate, finally, how far from Christ is this reprobate and odious man-made institution of oppression:

'One cannot of course conceive of any such reactions to repression as I have been describing, occurring in the entourage of Jesus of Nazareth. The petty rules designed to thwart and crush human impulses that abound in the Jesuit Rule find no authorisation in the teachings of Christ. He had friends; "a beloved disciple", as well as Martha and Mary. He loved his City Jerusalem, and wept when he thought of its sorrows. No "ne tangos" (do not touch) rule prevented him from taking children into his arms. No regulations limiting his visits only to women of noble birth' (as apply to Jesuits) 'kept him from visiting Peter's mother-in-law. When he wanted to talk to the Samaritan woman, he chose an hour when there would be none to overhear what He said. He was not preoccupied eternally with the reputation and good name of his company'.

'There was no prudery about his manner of multiplying the wine at Cana's festive board, nor did he shirk hitting hard and angrily when the traders desecrated the Temple with trafficking. When lonely, he called his friends to keep him company. He made what provision he could for his Mother when he was dying, and he did not fear to look lovingly on her dear face.... He was essentially human, and the self-denial that he taught was not the constant goading to desperation of human feelings and emotions, but the stamping out of that narrow, egotistical selfishness which stands in the way of loving one's neighbour'[99]. Note that 'the constant goading to desperation of human feelings and emotions' 'just happens' to be the regimen demanding the suppression of human emotions required of the Masonic adept as outlined by the Illuminist Manly P. Hall.

JESUITS SPAWNED ALL THE MODERN SATANIC DISEASES THAT PLAGUE US

It is, indeed, by studying the Jesuit model that we can discern the germs of all the modern Satanic diseases with which civilisation today is afflicted, and which are addressed in this book. The institutionalised system of Jesuit espionage has spread throughout North America and the United Kingdom, certainly, so that all telephone calls and emails are liable to be listened to and monitored: indeed, since the mid-1980s, the Author has been aware of his telephone calls being intercepted, and in the case of transatlantic calls, it is frequently the case that when the army of perverse eavesdroppers takes exception to what is being said, they make their repulsive annoyances known by means of rude and unpleasant interjections, jamming or other electronic abuses. The abomination of 'denunciations' was applied extensively in Communist China and other regimes erected by the Dark Forces of the Illuminati, and it features today in show-trials and in travesties of justice perpetrated in American courts, concerning certain instances of which this Author has extensive details. The obsession with the idolatry of brazen power* and, in order to gratify it, with controlling minds, altering personalities, and otherwise interfering with the human mind and body in order to maximise the presumed potential for manipulating populations, can be traced directly to comparable obsessions, at the micro level, applied within the Jesuit houses. Other dubious methodologies developed by the Jesuits are in general use among intelligence communities worldwide, and throughout the European Union's structures. Because of their savage repression, espionage and exposure systems, the cardinal vice of the Jesuit is pretence and make-believe - unsurprisingly, also one of the most conspicuous vices of the corrupt European Commission. Explosions occur as soon as, for instance, Jesuit Novices are released from their false, repressive, make-believe world, for a recreation period. The author of the expose explained what happened on one occasion:

---

*The lust for power and control, of which such repressive espionage systems are a symptom, is the central driving force of the World Revolution. a.k.a. the 'New World' Order which the revolutionary United States was geomasonically established to implement. The 'seething energies' of Lucifer are relentless and ruthless, by definition knowing no rest - with the world now divided into two segments - recently referred to by a US military source [see box, page 313] as the 'Functioning Core' of countries which are fully signed-up to the 'New World' (a.k.a., the 'New Underworld') Order and the 'Non-Integrating Gap' of countries that are to be compelled to participate by all available means, however Satanic. For this purpose, space-based scalar technology, responsible for instance for the tsunami earthquake of 26th December 2004, and for other earthquakes and weather abnormalities, are being deployed, in an extremely dangerous series of confrontations by means of which competing elements of the global control nexus seek to impose their paradigms on non-cooperating or competing elements and governments. After each man-made catastrophe, advertisements and appeals appear in the newspapers and on US and British talk radio programmes, soliciting donations to assist the homeless and the bereaved - and the donations never arrive at their supposed destination zones, because the funds have of course been scammed. There are no depths to which these organised Illuminati crooks will not sink - making money out of the kind-heartedness of people who feel disturbed that human beings on the other side of the world have been made destitute, being no exception. Indeed, the amounts of money that can be raised by such scams are inexhaustible, providing a self-contained motive for scalar and other catastrophe-generating operations.

'At the instant that the warning bell announced the beginning of recreation, and permission to talk, there was a veritable outburst of cries and shouts. Noisy confusion sprang after the heels of holy silence, and delirious uproar banged the door on demure gravity. As often as permission was given for games, and Novices played hockey, roughness and brutality was the spirit of the game. Cuts, blows and bruises were distributed with the utmost liberality and the angelic faces of the Novices were not infrequently distorted with immoderate emotions. When, however, the game was over, and the Novices, covered with mud and bathed in perspiration, bleeding, too, perhaps, and limping, thronged directly to the chapel (no time was allowed for change of clothes), peace and prayerfulness reappeared on their countenances, as if by magic. Repression was in the ascendancy once more'[100]. But since the cardinal vice of the Jesuit is pretence and double-minded make-believe, this renewed appearance of piety was false.

The Order - or this manifestation of it - specialises in the exploitation and elevation of piety as a control mechanism. It therefore perpetrates an abominable deception upon its originally naive recruits - a deception which they may waste their lives coming to terms with, and which dries up their faith and hope of salvation. In a Novice dormitory, the author of the expose heard one of his number, who had left a happy home and had appeared always to be 'very happy in his vocation', talk in his sleep. And what he mumbled in his sleep revealed the terrible proportions of the 'decision' he had taken, or had been compelled by peer or family pressures to take. In his sleep, 'suddenly he raised his voice and these words, laden with deep import, were carried up and down the dormitory, but probably no-one save myself was awake to hear them:

"Oh!" he cried, "Oh, if I only knew before I came"'.

HYPOCRISY, FALSE MODESTY AND FARCE AT THE DINING TABLES

An illustration of how the Jesuits exploit 'virtue' for dehumanising control purposes, causing confusion and deception to prevail among their acolytes, is provided by the following observations of life at an Irish Jesuit House. At table, though perhaps ravenously hungry, the Novice has to eat with the utmost modesty. He may only place small morsels into his mouth at a time, even though always having to 'eat against time', and has to take care at all times to mortify himself by denying the nicest parts of what he gets to eat. He also has to attend to the spiritual reading that is going on, and to derive benefit from it. It is frowned upon to help oneself to anything before offering it to one's neighbour; and the Novice must be constantly on the lookout for any opportunity to satisfy his neighbour's needs before his own. Furthermore, any sign of desire for food or drink is liable to be interpreted, and most probably reported, as indicative of moral failure. Mealtimes are therefore especially tense, and provide ample opportunities for reporting backsliding to the authorities, or for being reported. Ordinary little courtesies become a veritable nightmare. Since one of the rules prescribes passing bread, salt and so forth without being asked to do so, so as to anticipate the requirements of others, the Novice has to watch carefully so as to anticipate the requirements of those beside him. Bearing in mind that one's neighbours are doing the same thing, this leads to extraordinary tension as the Novices vie for the opportunity to pass the bread, salt, or whatever.

From time to time, Jesuit houses have what are called 'wine-evenings', which are usually held after dinner in the Recreation Room. These may be liable to become more exuberant than intended. Another practice is, or was, the provision of beer at dinner. Everyone is allowed a glass of beer and if this is desired, is required to push his glass towards the edge of the table, so that the Novice who has the duty for the evening of carrying the barrel of beer (as was the practice in the 1920s) around the dining room table, knows into which glasses the amber liquid should be poured. According to the author of the expose, it was, however, frowned upon ever to push one's glass towards the edge of the table, since to do so might be interpreted as a sign of self-indulgence. Accordingly, it rarely happened that glasses were pushed to the edge of the table. Notwithstanding this state of affairs, it was routine for a Novice to enter the dining room carrying a barrel 'of beer' on his shoulder, ready to pour beer into appropriately positioned glasses as required.

On one such occasion, a Novice, tired of being deprived for years of beer, after weeks of self-doubt, prayer, contemplation, self-examination and so forth, finally decided that he would push his glass to the edge of the table. He therefore arrived at the dinner table in a state of extreme anxiety, his heart beating at double the normal rate, and in a high sweat. When, finally, his nerve did not fail him, and he had summoned up the courage to push his glass to the edge of the table, a ghastly silence descended upon the room. He sensed that every eye was upon him, especially those of the Superior and his authorised spies. The Novice sat rigidly in his place waiting for the beer to be poured into his glass. When the beer-Novice du jour approached, the next disaster occurred.

He walked straight past the glass that had been pushed to the edge of the table, to the amazed gaze of the Superior and the whole house. The Superior's sidekick promptly ordered him to make the circuit again and to pay attention to the glass that had been proffered. Then the third disaster occurred. The Novice carrying the cask 'of beer' lowered it to meet the proffered glass. But nothing came out. The cask 'of beer' was empty!

In this manner was the charade of lies concerning beer exposed before the entire congregation. For years, it had been a rule that beer could be enjoyed at dinner. For years, Novices had taken it in turns to circumnavigate the dining table with the cask 'of beer'. And for years, the cask 'of beer' had contained no beer at all, to save money. To such mad and hypocritically ludicrous lengths do Jesuit houses go in order to prop up their lies and to sustain the false integrity of their pettily oppressive rules and tiny 'privileges' supposedly granted in alleviation of those rules.

One interesting example of how Jesuits react to the meticulously pettifogging rules and regulations that they are required to follow, concerns so-called 'holy poverty'. This requirement is so oppressive that almost all Jesuits develop subterranean methods for securing pocket-money, even though, according to the author of the expose, 'they are forbidden to have money in their own or another's keeping' (so that they are effectively prisoners in and of their houses). Strictly a Jesuit should go to his Superior to ask for pocket money even to buy a newspaper or to pay a bus fare. In addition to developing devious means of circumnavigating the rules of 'holy poverty', any breach of which is regarded as a grave violation of vows, Jesuits react to these rules by indulging in extreme wastefulness with community property. 'They break things, throw them around, misuse them with the utmost indifference. And when they receive permission to buy clothes or other items with community funds, they always choose the most costly'.

There is an interesting parallel here with the behaviour of Bolshevik apparatchiks. Notoriously, they indulge themselves, maximising their exploitation of collective assets.

OPUS DEI - THE NEW DIALECTICAL 'OPPOSITE' WITHIN THE JESUITICAL ORBIT

Today's world is chock full of organisations masquerading as though they are indispensable for the welfare of humanity - but which, upon closer examination, turn out to harbour chicanery or, at the very least, to be very far from what they seem. One such prominent organisation is the misleadingly named, but today extremely powerful, cult calling itself Opus Dei, which has attached itself, like so many other operations of the Illuminati, to the reprobate Catholic Church. This manifestation of the presence of 'Angels of Light' is clearly modelled according to the Jesuit blueprint, and appears to have achieved total ascendancy within the Vatican. It represents 'the Righf in contrast to the Jesuit 'Left'.

In October 2003, Jose Maria (or Josemaria) Escriva de Balaguer, the founder of Opus Dei, who died in 1975, was 'canonised' at the Vatican - i.e., conferred with 'sainthood' - after one of the shortest waiting periods in the history of the Catholic Church. Although the New Testament teaches that all who believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God are saints, the Catholic Church arrogates for itself the 'right' to confer sainthood. In other words, the label 'Saint' is conferred by man, not by God.

Opus Dei (the 'Work of God') is supposed nowadays to have 85,000 adherents, and senior US intelligence officials cover their multiple sins by aspiring to membership of this peculiar 'right-wing' network. The organisation's many critics accuse Opus Dei of many cult-like practices, such as brainwashing adherents into slavish, repetitious devotion (not exclusively to Jesus Christ, of course), and blackmailing former members to prevent them from revealing the organisation's dark secrets.

Sr Javier Sainz Moreno, who is a finance and tax lawyer at Madrid's Autonomous University, says that Opus Dei 'are a danger to society'. He claims that this organisation has enriched itself by means of a series of murky transactions, which are easy for 'charitable' and 'religious' organisations to mask, since in most Western countries, they are immune from the disciplines applicable to ordinary businesses. Former Opus Dei alumni have reported that members in Opus Dei homes were required to report every element of their personal lives - who they met, whom they loved, what books they read -to 'spiritual directors', in the same way as Jesuits are required to spy on each other and to report on their fellow Jesuits' faults.

Some Opus Dei members strapped their bodies with barbed wire and flagellated themselves with lead-tipped whips until they caused bleeding. One Spanish escapee told the Associated Press (3rd October 2002) that 'the first thing they do in the morning is to kiss the floor and say 'Serviam' ('I will serve', in Latin). It is a dangerous and destructive group that eradicates personality and freedom'.

The question is: whom do these people serve? If they kiss the floor, they are bending downwards, which reveals those whom they really, albeit inadvertently in most cases, worship. Doubtless to the extreme displeasure of both the Vatican and of Opus Dei's controllers, 'The Chicago Tribune' performed an invaluable service on 7th December 2003 by publishing a detailed, though necessarily abbreviated, exposure of Opus Dei, which helps us to answer this question. Bear in mind that, as noted, senior US intelligence officials aspire and belong to this shadowy organisation - which may serve as a means of salving what remains of their consciences. It certainly provides them with a convenient 'God' label, or logo, that can be worn to mask their nefarious mindset and behaviour.

The organisation was founded in 1928, three years after his ordination, by Escriva de Balaguer, after he had seen a vision in which, he claimed, God had revealed Opus Dei's mission. Those who reorder their lives on the basis of visions or 'voices' (like the possessed occultist and 'New Age' exponent, Barbara Marx Hubbard, for instance) need to be on guard that they have not, in fact, been accosted by a force other than that of an angel of God, as is usually the case. President George W. Bush's now notorious assertions that he was instructed by God to invade Afghanistan and then further instructed by God to overthrow the regime of Saddam Hussein in Iraq - interventions which resulted in the murder of perhaps half a million people - are of course especially notorious such examples of people 'getting their gods muddled up'.

In view of the fact that he is alleged to have been engaged in the past in occult practices, the President of the United States at the time this book was being finalised may be possessed, or have a familiar spirit, who orders him to do this or that; for manifestly, God would never have issued such an instruction, as the Lord is not in favour of brutality, the use of fragmentation bombs against innocent civilians, the gross, barbaric abuse of prisoners in concentration camps, and all the other abominations perpetrated by the United States, and by Britain, led by its compromised and blackmailed Prime Minister, Tony Blair, in those two countries[101]. It is in any case known that the United States planned the attack on Afghanistan under President Clinton, and that plans for the Iraqi operation were at an advanced stage within days of President Bush Jr.'s first inauguration[102] [see Figure 94 on page 607]. President Bush's assertions that God told him to perpetrate these atrocities were thus demonstrably false, since the military-industrial complex had been planning these attacks for a long time previously.

Membership of Opus Dei gives operatives like the disgraced FBI traitor, Robert Phillip Hanssen, a false 'Jesus comfort, or 'security blanket', even as they allow their lives to be hijacked by yet another diversionary Luciferian deception - a ruse carrying the name of God, just as the Jesuits conduct their nefarious activities in Christ's name. (Hanssen's 'crimes' in passing secret intelligence to the Russians were supposed to have been so heinous that he was condemned to spend the rest of his life in solitary confinement in Denver, and was described as the traitor who did more damage than anyone in US history. Yet he has allegedly been released, and is living on the West Coast).

In Spain, Opus Dei runs one of the country's two leading business schools, IESE, and also the University of Navarra, which Escriva founded in 1952. In the United States, where the movement is said to have some 3,000 members, it operates 'spiritual retreat' centres, a college and several schools, including the Midtown Educational Foundation located in Chicago. Its influence greatly exceeds the potential of its numbers.

The membership of this Luciferian Illuminist sect consists of three categories:

- Numeraries, accounting for about 30% of members, who live in Opus Dei residences (men and women separately), are pledged to celibacy, attend daily Mass and spiritual readings, and wear a sharp band of wire around their thigh for two hours each day, and whip themselves for minutes every week. Inflicting pain, whether on one's own body (which, as Jesus taught us, is 'the temple of the Holy Spirif) or on someone else's body, is Satanic, and cannot be justified in a True Christian context under any circumstances.
- Supernumeraries, accounting for about 70% of the members, who can be married and live with their families, and who volunteer in Opus Dei centres and schools.
- Cooperators: A third category consists of supporters of Opus Dei who make financial contributions but who are not members. These people are called 'cooperators'.

Opus Dei allegedly recently unveiled a new 17-storey headquarters building in the heart of Manhattan, at 34th and Lexington, using a plot that was left vacant for many years - hardly indicative of a paucity of financial resources.

ROSICRUCIAN OCCULT OPUS DEI

Figure 62: A comparison of the symbols used by Opus Dei with key esoteric and Rosicrucian emblems: The following text appears beneath images A and B shown at the right, in 'Beyond the Threshhold: A Life in Opus Dei' by Maria del Carmen Tapia [Continuum, New York, 1999]: 'The Opus Dei Emblem: The cross in the circle of the world; the rose symbolizing Opus Dei women. The rose represents a gilded wooden rose that Monsignor Escriva found upon the ground near a destroyed church during the Spanish Civil War while fleeing the Republican military. Monsignor Escriva often said that it was a sign sent by the Virgin Mary that his escape was God's will'. Thus, despite her escape from the clutches of Opus Dei, Maria del Carmen remained, as late as 1999, the victim of fables such as the one elaborated by her tyrannical former boss, Escriva. Mary is in no position to 'send signs' to anybody: she is the mother of Jesus and rests in peace in accordance with his Word.

All worship of the Virgin Mary as the Queen of Heaven - which was specifically prohibited in Jeremiah, Chapter 44, as elements of the recalcitrant remnant of the people of Judah decided to return physically towards the Darkness (namely, Egypt) and spiritually (by the burning incense and the baking of cookies to the Queen of Heaven, a.k.a. Astarte, contrary to the Word of God repeatedly conveyed through Jeremiah) - is also condemned in Revelation as an abomination.

Images C and D on the right reveal the real connotations of the two Opus Dei occult emblems, for which Maria del Carmen gives the wrong interpretations:

G is the esoteric symbol for the Earth [Source: Dr Cathy Burns, in 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated', Sharing, PA., op. cit.,1998, page 396]. This symbol is displayed along with esoteric symbols for initiation, false wisdom, cosmic consciousness, the Tree of Death, the Path of Universality, and multiple other diversionary 'New Age' sorcery symbols.

D: This is the Rosicrucian Rose, with its attendant bee - used in sorcery. 'Bees around the rose represent believers receiving (undefined) divine nourishment' [Source: Norman MacKenzie, Ed. 'Secret Societies', 1967, page 143]. Bees are a very ancient sorcery symbol; and the rose has the reverse of phallic connotations. Note: Pope Urban VIII (17th c.) used a magickal seal displaying a triangle of three bees, representing the pagan unholy trinity: Lucifer, his Queen and their son, Antichrist, according to expert sources.

A

B

C

D

OPUS DEI, OR OPUS LUCIFERIS?

It is speculated that members of Opus Dei have reached the highest levels of the US Federal Government, including the Supreme Court and the US Federal Bureau of Investigation, in particular, just as they have reached the highest levels of control in the Vatican. Opus Dei's policy is not to reveal who is or who is not a member. Contrary to Scripture, a pledge of secrecy, similar to the oppressive secrecy of the Jesuits, is written into the rules of Opus Dei; and indeed many Catholics themselves see Opus Dei as a conspiracy aimed at capturing the Catholic Church from within, which has already happened at the highest levels. That idea is somewhat fanciful, since, as the late Malachi Martin and others have revealed, the 'Ancient Mysteries' have long since been allowed into the sanctuary, with the proliferation of Freemasonic membership and ritual among some of the hierarchy - contrary to Pope Leo XIII's rearguard Encyclical 'Humanum Genus' dated 20th April 1884, in which Freemasonry was roundly condemned. Concerning the rules of secrecy and deceit which characterises Freemasonry, and which are replicated among the Jesuits, Opus Dei and within other manifestations of the hydra-like Order, that Pope (even though claiming to be Christ: see page 273) had this to say - revealing the Jesuitical imprint upon Masonry, and the methodology of all manifestations of The Order:

'Candidates are generally commanded to promise - nay, with a special oath, to swear - that they will never, to any person, at any time or in any way, make known the members, the passes, or the subjects discussed.... Moreover, to be enrolled, it is necessary that the candidates promise and undertake to be thenceforward strictly obedient to their leaders and masters with the utmost submission and fidelity, and to be in readiness to do their bidding upon the slightest expression of their will; or, if disobedient, to submit to the direst penalties and [even] to death itself. As a fact, if any are judged to have betrayed the doings of the sect or to have resisted commands given, punishment is inflicted on them not infrequently, and with so much audacity and dexterity that the assassin very often escapes the detection and penalty of his crime'*.

Many critics are disturbed because, as part of their 'devotional regimen', Opus Dei Numeraries inflict pain upon themselves. Supporters respond that mortification of the flesh is, according to the 'Chicago Tribune's' report, 'an ancient and honourable Christian practice that puts them in touch spiritually with the great saints of the past'. This is of course a grossly aberrant, Satanic teaching: not only is inflicting pain on one's body a ruse of the Evil One, but all attempts to 'connect' with the dead represent necromancy, which is a forbidden practice of the darkness, and an activity reminiscent of superstitions associated with the worst of pagan occult practices.

Sharon Clasen, who these days lives in the suburbs of Washington DC, was introduced to Opus Dei as a Boston College 'freshman' (apparently, despite rampant 'political correctness' (mass mind-bending), it is still 'Okay' to refer to a female undergraduate as a 'freshman', even though female 'chairs' of US Congressional Committees are ludicrously referred to as 'Madame Chairperson' - Ed.). The dormitories were full, so a friend recommended an off-campus women's residence called Bayridge, run by Opus Dei. She moved in, was initially attracted by the warm and supportive atmosphere, and eventually succumbed to the pressure to become a member.

'After I joined, they gave me a barbed-wire chain to wear on my leg for two hours a day and a whip to hit my buttocks with', she told the Chicago newspaper.

---

* "Humanum Genus': Encyclical Letter of His Holiness Pope Leo XIII on Freemasonry', 20th April 1884, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc., P.O. Box 424m Rockford, Illinois 61105, USA, 1978.

According to Opus Dei illuminates, the use of privation and pain reflect a sinner's need for physical penance. Because everyone falls into that category, members are expected to sleep on the floor or on a board one night a week. The whip is called a 'discipline', the leg binding is a 'cilice'. Again, these aberrations are wholly contrary to Christian Truth, which provides that all that a sinner needs to do is to pray to the Lord for forgiveness and to repent. Nowhere in Scripture is it laid down that people are required, as a condition for forgiveness, to injure the temple of the Holy Spirit of the Lord, which is the human body. The whole formula is Satanic.

Pope John Paul II gave the movement a unique status within the Catholic Church, by making it a 'personal prelature'. This exempts Opus Dei from the jurisdiction of local bishops, a privilege that Opus Dei had long campaigned for and which earlier Popes had resisted. In Chicago, the late Cardinal Joseph Bernardin - whom the late Malachi Martin in person told your correspondent was a supremely evil man - gave Opus Dei clerics the control of a Chicago parish - St Mary of the Angels - on the Near Northwest Side, a privilege that Opus Dei enjoys in few other places. The movement's 'success' has provoked resentment and envy in certain other quarters of the Catholic Church locally. According to James Hitchcock, a history professor at St Louis University, a Jesuit school, 'in some cases, it's produced paranoia. There are Jesuits who hear you express conservative religious views, who say: "Are you a covert member of Opus Dei?"'

The movement appeals, like so many others (Moral Re-Armament, for instance) to the idealism of youth. New recruits are told that they belong to the 'elite guard of God'. However when the scales eventually fall from their eyes, victims often report that they were isolated from their families, and that their reading matter was censored - even though Opus Dei officials deny using such coercion.

Another Boston College Opus Dei recruit informed 'The Chicago Tribune' that a friend brought her to functions at an Opus Dei house. 'What I didn't realise (at the time) was that I was a target for recruitment. When I joined, they said that you should have 10 to 15 friends that you're working on. You had to fill out forms each month and have meetings to develop strategies to get them to join'[103].

OPUS DEI EXPOSED BY THE BRAVE MARIA DEL CARMEN TAPIA

The best-known defector from Opus Dei is Maria del Carmen Tapia, Escriva's personal secretary and a Regional Director of Opus Dei in South America (where the Grand Orient 'line' of Freemasonry is predominant to the point of virtually excluding the 'Anglo-Saxon' 'Scottish Rite' Tine'). Most Opus Dei members revere their founder. However, in her memoir, entitled 'Beyond the Threshhold: A Life in Opus Dei'[104], Tapia recalls an Escriva who was not at all as imagined by his fervent followers. On the contrary, 'the Founder', in her experience, was dictatorial, and threw temper tantrums. The 'Deus' that is invoked in the organisation's title is not, on the evidence of the very balanced and credible exposure published by 'The Chicago Tribune' alone, and on the basis of a considerable portfolio of other recently published materials, the Lord God of Israel, Jesus Christ the Lord. The most damning expose is Maria Carmen's own calm testimony. On the contrary, Opus Dei is yet another of the multiple deceptions and creations of the Evil One, a component of The Order, that we can read about in the Book of Revelation (Chapter 12, verse 9): 'And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world'. Therefore, the Deus of Opus Dei is in fact, of course, Lucifer. Its name should read: 'Opus Luciferis'.

That this is the case, is definitively confirmed by Maria del Carmen Tapia, who, though in love with a fiance perfectly suited to her, made the fatal mistake of falling for the enticements of Opus Dei. Her unfortunate fiance told her sadly and pathetically, late in their relationship: 'If you were leaving me for another man, I would break his head, but what can I do to a God to whom I kneel every day?'

This was a poignant example of how the Evil One 'deceives the whole world'. This young man faced the loss of his beautiful potential bride because both of them were under the illusion that the sacrifice she was determined to make was for God, whereas she was being entrapped and brainwashed by the Great Deceiver. She spent years of her life coming to that realisation - although Catholics generally have a special problem on this score, because they remain entrapped within the cultural framework of their Church, which mastered the art of indoctrination millennia before any other organisation.

Sects require total detachment from family and friends - a feature which is replicated within modern intelligence communities, membership of which precludes normal outside friendships, since any such relationships are disturbed by suspicions and loyalties to the intelligence community rather than to the friend. Correspondence from the Opus Dei House to which Maria del Carmen was despatched was solely by letter, and all her letters were opened before leaving the premises, as was all incoming correspondence. Other characteristics of life among these particular 'Angels of Light' summarised by the unfortunate Maria del Carmen Tapia included the supremacy of communal life, the absence of any free time, an excessive workload, daily meditation and mortification, prohibition of all outside influences such as music, TV and film, radio, newspapers and magazines, a requirement that Opus Dei and the Father - meaning Escriva, of course, not God - are always the primary topics of conversation, and the sole 'goals'; insistence that one's only family is Opus Dei; and a requirement to love the Father - Escriva, not God - more than one's own parents. This of course is a direct and blasphemous usurpation of the comparable teaching of Jesus Christ. In other words, Opus Dei, as described by Maria del Carmen Tapia, is one massive posthumous ego trip for yet another disciple of Lucifer, another False Christ - the late Monsignor Jose Maria Escriva. She wrote:

'One facet of Opus Dei's brainwashing was to make its members believe that Opus Dei is perfect because it came from God and that every pronouncement of the Founder was by God's divine inspiration. This was emphasized from the start at the center of studies and in the courses of formation. As in a musical theme, the note was given by the first violin, Monsignor Escrivi; repeated immediately by the second violins, the Opus Dei Superiors; and followed by the string and percussion instruments, called fraternal chat, circles of study, days of recollection, spiritual retreats, fraternal correction, and so through all forms of indoctrination that Opus Dei has at its disposal. The indoctrination that we received did not allow us to reflect analytically on anything that we were unable to understand. Any critical thought was an indication of lack of unity and a lack of "good spirit", which we had to report in our weekly chat as a negative moment in our spiritual life'[105]. These restrictions and distortions of truth, of course, precisely mimic those applied for centuries by the Jesuits to sustain control over their dupes.

A milder form of espionage than the oppressive Jesuit system prevails within the Opus Dei network, but the sect displays the same sexual obsessions as the Jesuits: for instance, no woman of any age in an Opus Dei residence may discuss spiritual matters with Opus Dei priests outside the Confessional. 'If, for any reason, a priest has to speak to a woman in a parlour, the door must remain wide open'[106]. Writing obviously from the female perspective, Maria del Carmen described how young female Novices were trapped into giving up their sexuality, and how they behaved in the context of the deviant teaching of Escriva concerning the denial of such a crucial component of their humanity: 'Some (girls) who had joined Opus Dei at a very young age reacted to Monsignor Escriva's words often repeated in meditations: "We have to love Jesus Christ with our heart of flesh", unleashing their repressed sexuality as they kissed the wooden cross in the oratory. That, in my judgment, was more dangerous than having had normal relationships with a young man'[107].

THE ANGEL OF LIGHT TRANSFORMED INTO A RAGING DEMON

The true nature of this tyrannical 'Angel of Light', Escriva, was perhaps most succinctly described by Maria del Carmen Tapia in the following dreadful narrative:

'I entered [the sessions room of the Central Government]. Monsignor Escriva was standing and visibly irate, Father Javia Echevarria and Father Francisco Vives were both on his left, both looking very stern. At the Father's right was the Central Directress, Merceded Morado, the physician, Maria Jesus de Mer, and the Prefect of Studies, Marlies Kiicking. All of them looked furious. I felt terrified at the scene. The interview went as follows:

"'These people have told me", Monsignor Escriva said, pointing his finger at the Central Directress and the other two advisors present, "that you have received the news that you are not going back to Venezuela with hysteria and tears". Beside himself, he shouted at me: "Very bad spirit! You are not going back to Venezuela, because your work has been individualistic and bad! And you have murmured against my documents! Against my documents, you have murmured!"'

'His anger affected his breathing, and he held his clenched fist close to my face. "This is serious! Serious! Serious! I admonish you canonically. Let it be so recorded", he said, directing his words towards Javier Echevarria, who, I insist, had no position whatsoever in the women's Central Government. "The next time", continued Monsignor Escriva, "you are out! Always complications since 1948! You and that other one! Now you come to me with this! And don't cry, because your trouble is that you are proud, proud, proud...". Repeating these words, he went through the chalice room, towards the major sacristy. I stood frozen. I did not budge. The Central Directress said angrily: 'What unpleasantness you are causing the Father!"'

However Maria del Carmen had evidently still not then understood that the best thing that could possibly have happened to her would have been to have been dismissed from Opus Dei then and there - a denouement which was to await her later. But before her final release, she went through several manifestations of absolute hell. For instance, between November 1965 and March 1966, T was held completely deprived of any outside contact, with the absolute prohibition to go out for any reason or to receive or make telephone calls, or to write or receive letters. Nor could I go out for the so-called weekly walk or the monthly excursion. I was a prisoner'[108].

The manner in which lies hide within lies in this mad world of Illuminati-linked sects masquerading as God's work was illustrated by Maria del Carmen when describing an occasion on which an enormous graven image of the Virgin Mary (a.k.a. the Queen of Heaven, proscribed in Jeremiah[109]) was scheduled to be blessed by Pope Paul VI:

'When we arrived at the chapel (in Rome), the huge marble statue of the Virgin occupied the middle of the nave. The Father arrived giving orders to the men about the placement of the Virgin or some such thing. The servants had learned that "for once" they had to applaud the Pope more than the Father (Escriva). The majority of the women who were going to communion wore white veils and were in the central nave. The Mass moved me deeply. Paul VI lauded Opus Dei and mentioned in the homily that he had worked in the neighbourhood as a priest. When he said that one of the tilings he praised most highly within Opus Dei was the "spirit of freedom", I rebelled and wanted to shout out loud: "Lies, Holy Father, lies!" I realized that the world press was there and that my shout in Italian would embarrass Opus Dei but felt that in the final analysis it would embarrass the Church. Although I tried not to cry, I wept uncontrollably, my Catholic loyalty being stronger than the oppression of my soul. I could not help but reflect bitterly, however, on the distorted information that the Work's Superiors must have given to the Holy Father'[110]. When the Lord made it clear that the whole world shall be deceived[111], he included the Pope, one of the arch-deceivers, as well. For those who live lies both recognise, and are deceived by, the lies of others.

Maria del Carmen was later subjected to a series of quite appalling interrogations. 'When I returned to my room after each interrogation, I observed that things kept disappearing. My overnight bag, my academic records, family pictures, addresses, and family dates. They went through everything. I found the closet in disorder, the bed, my pyjamas, even my toiletries such as face cream and toothpaste.... Furthermore, the telephone. .. was permanently watched by a member of the administration's local council. They did not allow me to do anything in the house, not even cleaning, or going to the dining room. I was confined to my bedroom. They brought me up a tray with my meals. I was completely sealed in.... I began to shake almost constantly as a result of my terror. I was afraid they would take me to a mental institution, as I knew they had done to other members of the Work'. Finally, Maria del Carmen was verbally abused again directly by the Angel of Light, Father Escriva, who invented a jumble of obscene lies which he proceeded to deliver in a torrent of rage out of his evil mouth.

As he dismissed her from Opus Dei, he exploded:

'"Don't talk with anybody about the Work nor about Rome. Don't set your parents against us, because, if I find out that you are saying anything negative about the Work to anybody, I, Jose Maria Escriva de Balaguer, have the world press in my hands", and as he said this, he made a gesture with his hands confirming the notion. "I will publicly dishonour you. Your name will appear on the front page of every newspaper, because I will personally see to it. It would bring dishonour on you before men and on your own family! Woe to you if you try to alienate your family from the good name of the Work or tell them anything about this!" He went on: "And don't return to Venezuela! Don't even think of writing to anybody there! Because if you even think of going to Venezuela' (where Maria del Carmen Tapio would be in a position to reveal the true nature of Opus Luciferis), T will assume the responsibility of telling the Cardinal what you are. And it would dishonour you!" Pacing the room, this 'man of God', this 'Angel of Light' continued, 'shouting at me: "I was thinking all night about whether to tell you this or not, but I believe it is better that I should tell you"'.

'Looking at me directly, with a dreadful rage, moving his arms towards me as if he was going to hit me, he added at the top of his voice: "You are a wicked woman! A lost woman! Mary Magdalen was a sinner, but you? You are a seductress with all your immorality and indecency! You are a seductress. I know everything. EVERYTHING! EVEN ABOUT THE VENEZUELAN NEGRO! You are abominable. YOU HAVE A

WEAKNESS FOR BLACKS. First with one and then with the other. LEAVE MY PRIESTS ALONE! DO YOU HEAR? LEAVE THEM ALONE! In peace. Don't meddle with them! You're wicked! Wicked! Indecent! Come on, look at the business of the Negro! And don't ask for my blessing because I don't intend to give it to you!"'.

Monsignor Escriva, the 'man of God', that 'Angel of Light', went away towards the (pagan) Relics Chapel. From there he turned round to shout a final insult:

"Hear me well! WHORE! SOW!"'

It was, of course, at that instant, that the scales fell from the eyes of the 'Father's' former secretary, Maria del Carmen Tapia: 'I stood stock still, frozen to the spot. I saw and heard everything as if in a nightmare. I did not cry. I did not blink. Within me, while Monsignor Escriva shouted his insults, I had only two thoughts: one that Christ remained silent in the face of accusations; the other, that God had liberated me'[112].

OTHER NAZI 'ANGELS OF LIGHT' MASQUERADING UNDER THE 'JESUS LOGO'

Spreading out, this Author believes, from the precedents long since established by the Jesuits, and much later by Opus Dei, of exploiting the name of Jesus and/or God as a subtle nameplate, logo and cover for nefarious operations, other 'Angels of Light' have borrowed this idea - especially in the United States. Beneath the label of 'Jesus', Dark Actors can Play Games and conduct their evil activities while deluding themselves and others that they are actually doing good. In other words, Satan delivers a double-whammy by means of this deception device: first, the 'Jesus' or 'God' label or logo puts almost all observers off the scent, leaving private analysts such as the author of the 'Chicago Tribune' report, and this Author and his collaborators, to lift the veil from the deception, revealing the dark chaos inside the 'whited sepulchre'[113] exposed; and secondly, the Dark Actors adopting these labels are self-deluded into believing that their nefarious activities are hidden from view and exempt from eventual divine retribution. Those concerned may actually believe that God, in whom they profess, for public consumption at any rate, to believe, cannot see what they are up to[14], or else turns a blind eye to their evil acts, thanks to the 'cover' provided by the label reading 'Jesus' or 'God'.

The US intelligence analyst Wayne Madsen, though waging dialectical political warfare, has recently thrown important light on this further dimension of the 'Angels of Lighf phenomenon. In a report disseminated electronically in October 2005, he assembled evidence to demonstrate the existence of an organised US network of evildoers who, both individually and collectively, use 'Jesus' as cover for their scams and Luciferian activities. This research has exposed in particular the exploitation of the false 'Jesus' label as camouflage for Nazi-type attitudes and behaviour, as well as for organised criminal operations. Because the importance of the resulting insights can hardly be underestimated, this Author takes the liberty of appending herewith several pertinent paragraphs from Mr Madsen's exhaustive report (which goes into rather more detail than is necessary for the present analysis).

It identifies the existence of a dubious network calling itself The Fellowship, or The Family, and it identifies a central headquarters for this operation based, inevitably, in Arlington, Virginia, the central location of the US intelligence community. Both the network and the property in question, called The Cedars, are clearly operations of a branch of the vast US intelligence sector, which is more than cynical enough to seek to co-opt the name of Jesus for nefarious purposes. Specifically, Mr Madsen, whose work is considered generally to be of a high quality, even though it is 'inspired', explained:

'After several months of in-depth research and, at first, seemingly unrelated conversations with former high-level intelligence officials, lawyers, politicians, religious figures, other investigative journalists, and researchers, I can now report on a criminal conspiracy so vast and monstrous that it defies imagination. Using "Christian" groups as tax-exempt and cleverly camouflaged covers, wealthy right-wing businessmen and "clergy" have now assumed firm control over the biggest prize of all - the Government of the United States of America. But first, some housekeeping is in order. My use of the term "Christian" is merely to identify clearly the criminal conspirators who have chosen to misuse their self-avowed devotion to Jesus Christ in order to advance a very unchristian agenda. The term "Christian mafia"' [a contradiction in terms, of course - Ed] 'is what several Washington politicians have used to describe the major conspirators, and it is not intended to debase Christians or infer that they are criminals. I will also use the term Nazi - not for shock value - but to tag properly the political affiliations of the early founders of the so-called "Christian" power cult, which is called The Fellowship. The most important element of this story is that a destructive religious movement has now achieved almost total control over the machinery of government of the United States - its Executive Branch, its Legislature, several State Governments, and soon, the Federal Judiciary, including the U.S. Supreme Court'.

THE FELLOWSHIP' OR THE FAMILY' - A 'CHRISTIANAZI' ORGANISATION

'The United States has experienced religious and cult hucksters throughout its history, from Cotton Mather and his Salem witch-burners, to Billy Sunday, Father Charles Coughlin, Charles Manson, Jim Jones, David Koresh, Marshall Applewhite, and others. But none have ever achieved the kind of power now possessed by a powerful and secretive group of conservative politicians and wealthy businessmen in the United States and abroad, who are known among their adherents and friends as The Fellowship, or The Family. The Fellowship and its predecessor organizations have used Jesus in the same way that McDonald's uses golden arches [M - the occultic 13th letter of the alphabet -Ed] and Coca Cola uses its stylized script lettering. Jesus is a logo and a slogan for The Fellowship. Jesus is used to justify The Fellowship's access to the highest levels of government and business, in the same way that Santa Claus' [Satan Claws - Ed.] 'entices children into department stores and malls during the Christmas shopping season'.

"The Fellowship', Wayne Madsen has established, 'has been around under various names since 1935' - that is to say, since the consolidation of Nazi (occult, Illuminati) power in Germany, a factor that gives us a clue as to the pertinence of Mr Madsen's findings. 'Its stealth existence has been perpetuated by its organization into small cells, a pyramid organization of "correspondents", "associates", "friends", "members", and "core members", tax-exempt status for its foundations, and its protection by the highest echelons of our own Government and those abroad'.

The roots of this network calling itself The Fellowship, Madsen has established, 'go back to the 1930s and to a Norwegian immigrant and Jewish Methodist Minister named Abraham Vereide. According to Fellowship archives maintained at the Billy Graham Center at Wheaton College in Illinois' [Billy Graham being a 33rd Degree Freemason -Ed], Vereide, who immigrated to the United States from Norway in 1905, began an 'outreach ministry' in Seattle in April 1935. But his religious outreach involved nothing more than pushing for an anti-Communist, anti-trade union, anti-Socialist, and pro-Nazi German political agenda. A loose organization and secrecy were paramount for Vereide.

Fellowship archives state that Vereide wanted his movement to "carry out its objective through personal, trusting, informal, unpublicized contact between people". Vereide's establishment of his Prayer Breakfast Movement for anti-Socialist and anti-International Workers of the World (IWW or "Wobblies") [targeting] Seattle businessmen in 1935, coincided with the establishment of another pro-Nazi German organization in the United States, the German-American Bund. Vereide saw his prayer movement replacing labor unions'. This operation had all the hallmarks of a German Abwehr (secret Nazi Intelligence) influence-building offensive, which is exactly what it was, and is.

'As a student of the un-Christian' [sic!] 'German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche, Vereide's thoughts about a unitary religion based upon an unyielding subservience to a composite notion of "Jesus", put him into the same category as many of the German nationalist philosophers who were favoured by Hitler and the Nazis. Nietzsche wrote the following of Christianity: "When we hear the ancient bells growling on a Sunday morning we ask ourselves: Is it really possible! This, for a Jew, crucified two thousand years ago, who said he was God's son? The proof of such a claim is lacking"'.

'One philosophical fellow-traveller of Vereide was the German Nazi philosopher Martin Heidegger, a colleague of Leo Strauss, the father of American neo-conservatism and the mentor of such present-day American neo-conservatives as Richard Perle and Paul Wolfowitz. Strauss's close association with Heidegger and the Nazi idea of telling the big lie in order to justify end-goals - Machiavellianism on steroids - did not help Strauss in Nazi Germany. Because he was Jewish, he was forced to emigrate to the United States, where he eventually began teaching neo-conservative political science at the University of Chicago. It is this confluence of right-wing philosophies that provides a political bridge between [so-called] modern-day Christian Rightists (including so-called Christian Zionists, a wing of The Fellowship, based in Arlington, Virginia) and the secular-oriented neo-conservatives who support a policy that sees a US-Israeli alliance against Islam and European-oriented democratic socialism'.

'For the dominion theologists, the United States is the new Israel, with a God-given mandate to establish dominion over the entire planet. Neither the secular neo-conservatives nor the Christian fundamentalists seem to have a problem with the idea of American domination of the planet, as witnessed by the presence of representatives of both camps as supporters of the neo-conservative Project for a New American Century, the neo-conservative blueprint for America's attack on Iraq and plans to attack, occupy, and dominate other countries that oppose US designs'.

Here, Wayne Madsen has alluded, perhaps unwittingly, to the central finding of this book - namely, that German secret intelligence has leveraged the occult heritage of Bavaria and Prussia, and its hijacking of the Illuminati, in pursuit of Germany's own secret global hegemony objectives, exploiting America's 'destiny' as the enforcement arm of the Illuminati. Global hegemony is the primary motivation behind all German covert operations - including its hyperactivism in respect of occult initiatives.

From the perspective of German secret intelligence, 'Jesus' can be used (as under Hitler) as justification for deployment of the 'iron fist' and the perpetration of atrocities.

Discarding all the cloaks behind which the offensive against mankind is being waged, we find two primary conspirators: German Nazis and the Jewish Zionists, both of which powers 'agree' and are of one mind - so much so that the Zionists were content for Hitler's Black Illuminati regime to sacrifice millions of Jews for geostrategic objectives. After all, both parties are united in their visceral hatred of Jesus Christ.

Thus Eichmann, a Jew, was engaged in organising the transportation of Sephardic Jews to Palestine, in an ethnic cleansing operation designed along eugenical lines to ensure the 'purity' of the gene quality of the population of the intended State of Israel. Since Zionism and Nazism 'agree', and given the Zeitgeist of the period, we need not be surprised at the double-mindedness of Jewish Illuminists who were in fact playing with fire by collaborating with the millennial 'Gentile' Forces of Darkness emanating from the Black Forest and from the bleak plains and dark woods of Northern Germany.

According to Madsen, 'what bound all so-called "America First" Movements prior to World War II was their common hatred for labor unions, Communists and Socialists, Jews, and most definitely, the administration of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt. Vereide's Prayer Breakfast Movement, pro-Nazi German groups like the Bund, and a resurgent Ku Klux Klan (KKK), had more than propaganda in common: they had an interlocking leadership and a coordinated political agenda'.

'Not only was Vereide pro-Hitler, he was the only Norwegian of note, who was not officially a Nazi, who never condemned the Norwegian Nazi leader Vidkun Quisling a man whose name has become synonymous with the word traitor and who was executed in 1945. Vereide and Quisling were almost the same age; Vereide was born in 1886, Quisling in 1887. They both shared a link with the clergy, Vereide was a Methodist Minister and Quisling was the son of a Lutheran Minister' - further instances of Dark Forces emerging from ecclesiastical quarters.

MORAL RE-ARMAMENT LEADER THANKED HEAVEN FOR ADOLF HITLER

'Another pro-Nazi 'Christian' fundamentalist group that arose in the pre-Second World War years was the Moral Re-armament Movement (MRA). Its leader was Frank Buchman, a Lutheran minister from Philadelphia. Buchman was a pacifist, but not just any pacifist. He and his colleagues in the United States, Britain, Norway, and South Africa reasoned that war could be avoided if the world would just accept the rise of Hitler and National Socialism, and concentrate on stamping out Communism and Socialism. Buchman coordinated his activities with Vereide and his Prayer Breakfast Movement, which, by 1940, had spread its anti-left manifesto and agenda throughout the Pacific Northwesf. Buchman seems to have had no understanding of the dialectic.

'Buchman was effusive in his praise for Hitler. He was quoted by William A. H. Birnie of The New York World Telegram', as having stated: "I thank Heaven for a man like Adolf Hitler, who built a front line of defense against the anti-Christ of Communism"[115]. Frank Buchman also secretly met with Heinrich Himmler, the head of the Gestapo and controller of the concentration camps. Buchman was at Himmler's side at the 1935 Nazi Party rally in Nuremberg and again at the 1936 Berlin Olympics. The predecessor of Buchman's Moral Re-armament Group, the Oxford Group, included Moslems, Buddhists, and Hindus. Buchman and Hitler both saw the creation of a one-world religion based largely on Teutonic, Aryan, and other pagan traditions mixed with elements of Christianity[116]. Buchman saw Islam, Buddhism, and Hinduism as being compatible with his brand of Christianity' [a total aberration, of course, since no 'religion' is compatible with True Christianity, including modern Judaism: such notions are routinely generated by individuals and intelligence operatives who are knowingly ignorant of Scripture and who refrain from reading it, since they sense that if they were to do so, they would be compelled to abandon their fanciful inventions - Ed.]. 'Hitler, too, had an affectation for Islam and Buddhism, as witnessed by his support for the

Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, the anti-British Muslim Brotherhood, and Tibetan Buddhists. But Frank Buchman had no sympathy at all for the Jews whom Hitler was persecuting. Thus Buchman told Mr Birnie: "Of course, I don't condone everything the Nazis do. Anti-Semitism? Bad, naturally. I suppose Hitler sees a Karl Marx in every Jew"'.

Such global ecumenicalism is a founding principle for today's Fellowship. With total devotion to 'Jesus' but not necessarily [to put it mildly - Ed.] to His principles at its core, The Fellowship continues to reach out to Moslems (including to Saudi extreme Wahhabi sect members), Buddhists, and Hindus. Its purpose has little to do with religion but everything to do with political and economic influence-peddling and the reconstruction of the world in preparation for a thousand-year Christian global dominion'. In the light of this book's principal finding, this Author must elaborate Wayne Madsen's insight here, so that it reads The Thousand-Year Reich', as proclaimed by the 'Madrid Circular Letter' distributed by the Nazi International from Madrid, and intercepted by the Allies, as explained in Chapter 8: and this connection is indeed made by the Author in what follows. Christianity? Forgeddaboudit. This is an operation of secret German Black intelligence; and self-interested US participants in The Fellowship, which is controlled by the German (Nazi) cadre of the US intelligence community, need to wake up from their comfortable, complacent slumber before it is too late. They are dupes, 'Useful Idiots', exploitees in the hands of the Nazi International Continuum.

As Mr Madsen further explains, an ideology has been constructed around the 'Jesus' logo by these 'Angels of Light'. 'Post-millennialist Fellowship members believe that Jesus will not return until there is a 1,000-year 'pure' Christian Government established upon Earth. It is this mindset that has infused the [naive] foreign policy of George W. Bush and his Administration. The desire for a thousand-year political dominion of the world is not new. Hitler planned for a "Thousand-Year Reich", over the planet. It is not a coincidence that Hitler desired, and the so-called Christian Dominionists/recon-structionists now contemplate, a thousand-year reign. The Christian Dominionists are

Dr Robert Schuller and Mikhail Gorbachēv display the basic Masonic handshake, Pass Grip of Fellow Craft. Masonic sources indicate that the clasped hands symbol is a 'symbol of fidelity'. In the lowest Degree of Masonry, the candidate is told: 'The right hand, therefore, we Masonically use to dignify in the strongest manner possible the sincerity of our intentions in the business in which we are engaged'. But since, as Albert Pike himself acknowledges, the Blue Lodge Masons are all intentionally deceived, as the Devil is the author of lies, this averred sincerity is *always* false. In this picture, the Masons perform their Masonic handshake awkwardly for the benefit of Dr Schuller's TV cameras.

Figure 63: The reprobate allegedly false priest, Dr Robert H. Schuller, 33rd degree Freemason, the 'force' behind the Californian Crystal Cathedral, who has all but called himself 'Christ', displays a Masonic handshake with the 33rd Degree Freemason Mikhail Gorbachev, who appeared as Dr Schuller's special 'Hour of Power" guest on 22nd October 2000.

the political heirs of Hitler, the Norwegians Vereide and Quisling, Buchman, Opus Dei founder and Fascist patron saint Jose Maria Escriva, and their political and religious cohorts'. All of which is indisputable, and Mr Madsen has performed a unique service in bringing this material so succinctly together in one place; but this Author adds that these people are not so much 'heirs' to the Nazis, as part of the Nazi International Continuum, which is directed clandestinely from Dachau: see Chapter 8.

The 'Angel of Lighf Escriva is now effectively ensconsed on the so-called 'Throne of St Peter', assisted by his Opus Dei aide, Georg Ganswein. The Estermann murders were associated with an operation directed by the secret German Nazi Internationa] 'Black' intelligence service, hiding behind its handy STASI label, to penetrate and co-opt the Vatican's Swiss Guard corps for Opus Dei/Luciferis. Funds misdirected and scam-med from the giga-financing operation presided over by George H W Bush in 1989-92 were paid over inter alia to Opus Dei, in accordance with Illuminati priorities.

'Vereide and Buchman had important allies on Wall Street', Madsen elaborated. 'According to Marine Corps General Smedley Butler, shortly after Franklin Roosevelt was elected President in 1932, he was approached by a group of wealthy Republican industrialists to lead an anti-Roosevelt Fascist coup against the Government. As with today's Fellowship, Vereide and Buchman were merely front men for anti-Socialist big businesses who hid behind the facade of a Christian 'evangelical' movement'.

'The coup was to be financed mostly by the J. P. Morgan and Du Pont financial empires. General Butler, who had no time for these industrialists since his military forays into Central America and the Caribbean as a foot-soldier on behalf of wealthy capitalists, rejected their overtures. Gerald MacGuire, a Wall Street bond salesman and former Commander of the Connecticut American Legion, was the chief recruiter for the coup plot. Butler informed Congress of the plans for the putsch. However, Congress was owned by Wall Street, and no charges were ever brought against the plotters. Butler was incensed and went public; but he was dismissed as a conspiracy theorist [the usual resort of those who persist in sitting on their brains - Ed.]. Not until 1967, when journalist John Spivak uncovered a secret Congressional report, was Butler's version of the events validated. In the report of the Special Committee to Investigate Nazi Propaganda Activities in the United States, Representative Samuel Dickstein (D-NY) concluded that there was evidence of a coup plot by the right-wing against Roosevelt. However, much to Butler's chagrin, no criminal action was taken against the plotters'.

'Butler said MacGuire's plan was for Butler to force Roosevelt to declare he had become too sick from polio, and to create a powerful new Cabinet position, the Secretary of General Affairs, to run the Government on his behalf. The New Deal, which the US Fascists and Nazis referred to as the "Jew Deal", would have to be scrapped. A comparison between the Secretary of General Affairs and the present Secretary of Homeland Security is striking. If Roosevelt did not agree to the coup plotters' demand, half a million American Legion veterans would march on Washington to remove Roosevelt physically from office. But MacGuire decided that a perception management campaign [Psy-Ops - Ed.] would work, and that an armed force would not be required. He told Butler: "You know, the American people will swallow that. We have got the newspapers. We will start a campaign [to the effect] that the President's health is failing. Everyone can tell that just by looking at him, and the dumb American people will fall for it in a second...". Shortly after his testimony before the House Investigation Committee, Gerald MacGuire died of 'pneumonia' at the age of thirty-seven'.

THE CULTURE OF COUPS AND PLOTS - IMPORTED FROM GERMANY

'The perception management [Psy-Ops] campaign to foster the attempted right-wing coup against FDR was a harbinger of more ruses and lies that were to emerge from the same 'right-wing' elements in the United States: that the first Secretary of Defense, James Forrestal was suffering from mental illness when he threw himself out of the sixteenth storey of Bethesda Naval Hospital in 1949; that John F. Kennedy was killed by a lone, pro-Communist assassin; and that Iraq possessed weapons of mass destruction' [Author: It did, but the GRU removed them]. The coup plotters involved some of the biggest names in American business and politics, including Irenee Du Pont, of the wealthy chemical company family' (which has been reported to believe that it is descended from Pontius Pilate) 'and the founder of the pro-Fascist American Liberty League; the J. P. Morgan bank officials, Grayson Murphy and John Davis; General Douglas MacArthur; the old southern segregationist Governor Eugene Talmadge, of Georgia; and, in what represented a sea-change for the extreme American right-wing, two influential Catholics, the former Democratic presidential candidate Al Smith, who had become very anti-Roosevelt, and John Raskob, a senior Du Pont official and a high-ranking member of the Catholic Knights of Malta' who are always involved in these conspiracies. 'The concordat between right-wing Protestants and Catholics presaged the later alliance between The Fellowship and the proto-Fascist Opus Dei movement'.

'Frank Buchman, who was also involved in creating the psychologically abusive Alcoholics Anonymous (which enticed many converts from booze to "Jesus", which was the course pursued by George W. Bush Jr., through Billy Graham), created an organization called First Century Christian Fellowship. In 1939, while preaching against life's extravagances, Buchman set up his headquarters in New York's extremely posh Waldorf-Astoria Hotel' (a place where, if one gives the cloakroom lady less than a $10 tip in exchange for handing over your coat, she holds out her hand and grimaces at it as though it was something unpleasant - Ed.). 'Buchman also found common cause with right-wing racist groups. In addition to his anti-Semitism, Buchman had no time at all for the civil rights movement. Like Vereide, he rejected women's suffrage and the trade unions. When the United States entered the war in December 1941, many of Moral Re-armament's leaders sought conscientious objector status in the draft, as "lay evangelists". As with today's fundamentalist Christians, Buchman was rejected by his fellow evangelicals and by mainstream religious leaders, including his old evangelical colleague Sam Shoemaker and Dr. Franklin Clark Fry, the leader of the United Lutheran Church in America, who called Mr Buchman's connection with Lutheranism "minimal". After Senator Harry S. Truman received the 1944 nomination for Vice President, he, too, dropped his past tenuous connections to Buchman. Reinhold Niebuhr, the famous theologian, and George Orwell, both labelled Buchman's Oxford Group and his successor Moral Re-armament Movement, as "Fascist"'. They specialised in 'mind games'.

'Meanwhile, Frank Buchman's co-ideologist, Vereide, made his first entree into the U.S. Congress. In 1942', Wayne Madsen recounts, 'he began to hold small and discreet prayer breakfasts for the U.S. House of Representatives. The next year, the Senate began holding Prayer Breakfast Meetings. Vereide's Prayer Breakfast Movement was formally incorporated as the National Committee for Christian Leadership (NCCL). Its headquarters were established in Chicago. In 1944, while Vereide's friends in Germany were being pummelled by the Allies, especially by the Soviet Red Army, NCCL changed its name to International Christian Leadership (ICL) - an indication that Vereide saw an immediate need to extend his influence abroad in the context of a certain Nazi defeat'. Given what we know about the operations of the Nazi International from 1942 onwards [see Chapter 8], the fact that Vereide's altered tactics coincided with the changed tactics and strategies of the Madrid-based German Geopolitical Centre, is significant.

Vereide also made plans to move his headquarters to Washington, DC 'In 1944, his first ICL Fellowship House was established in a private house at 6523 Massachusetts Avenue. In 1945, Vereide held his first joint Senate-House Prayer Breakfast Meeting. In 1945, Vereide quickly put together a group of powerful right-wingers for a prayer breakfast following the death of President Roosevelt, one of the US politicians that Vereide and Buchman had despised most. Roosevelt had not been a President who followed the dictates of "God's Will," a key Vereide and Buchman principle. At the breakfast were Senators H. Alexander Smith (R-NJ), Lister Hill (D-AL), and the World Report publisher David Lawrence. Lawrence was an ardent foe of the New Deal'.

Madsen's analysis continued with details about the 'movement's' intrigues to procure hegemony within American official and political structures, to match the dominant position that was in the process of being established collectively by Nazi operatives and Himmlerian occultic scientists within the Central Intelligence Agency and in the universities. His analysis provided detailed corroboration of the pledges, contained in the 'Madrid Circular Letter' discussed in Chapter 8, that for the Nazi International, 'the war never ended' - and that the German secret globalists remained unswerving in their intention to establish the Thousand-Year Reich - namely, a millennium of GERMAN hegemony - upon the ruins of the United States. That remains the objective and focus of the Nazi International Continuum and of its secret 'Black' intelligence services, to this day.

Wayne Madsen's analysis is relentless in its exposure of the Nazi Continuum hiding behind its false 'Christian' facade: 'After the war, Vereide took steps to consolidate right-wing groups in Europe. His hated Communists and Socialists had taken over governments across Eastern Europe, and were on the verge of achieving power in Western Europe. Winston Churchill had been swept from power by a very leftist-oriented Labour Government headed by Clement Atlee. For the remnants of the Nazi movement in America, an "SOS" was being transmitted from Europe for assistance. Vereide travelled to Norway, Sweden, Denmark, Switzerland, France and Germany. His ICL made an alliance with the like-minded British Victory Fellowship in Great Britain. He also struck up a close relationship with the German Lutheran pastor Gustav Adolf Gedat. The German clergyman had been a leading anti-Semite before and during the war. In the same year that Vereide began his prayer breakfasts in Seattle, Gedat thundered from the pulpit that "God ordered the Germans to hunt down Jews"' - the 'god' in question bearing an uncanny resemblance, no doubt, to George W. Bush Jr's 'familiar'.

'Gedat became an apologist for top Nazi officials. But at the same time, he covered his tracks by actively disowning Nazi war criminals, such as the former UN Secretary General Kurt Waldheim, a personal friend of the current Republican Governor of California and fellow Austrian, Arnold Schwarzenegger. It should be noted that Schwarzenegger's father, Gustav Schwarzenegger, was a volunteer in the Nazi Sturmabteilung (SA), a.k.a. the Brown Shirts, in Austria, and served in the German Army'.

As a member of the West German Bundestag, Gedat brought about the cancellation at the Cannes Film Festival of the showing of a film concerning a family of Jewish refugees from Prague during the Nazi regime. 'At the same time', Wayne Madsen reported, 'Gedat was one of three of Mr Vereide's International Council for Christian Leadership

(ICCL) representatives in Europe. The other two were also Nazis - Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands (who is married to Queen Juliana), and the German Prince, Max von Hohenlohe. This man' - from a prominent IUuminati family - 'served under SS chief Walter Schellenberg and, according to SS documents captured by the Soviets, Hohenlohe engaged in direct negotiations during the war with [the Abwehr agent] Allen Dulles of the OSS. Like Vereide and Buchman, Allen Dulles was a strong anti-Semite who saw Communism and Jews through the same lens'. Through the "Rat Line" programme operated by the OSS, then the CIA and the Vatican, such infamous Nazis as Klaus Barbie (the 'Butcher of Lyon'), the Nazi 'mad scientisf and butcher Dr. Joseph Mengele' (who remained active and served US intelligence for decades), 'the concentration camp vaccine 'tester' Kurt Blome, and SS Commander Adolf Eichmann, escaped from Europe to South America with the assistance of 'Angel of Light' collaborators in the Vatican.

During January 1947, Vereide sponsored the first Washington meeting of the International Council for Christian Leadership, welcoming, representatives from the United States, Canada, Britain, Norway, Hungary, Egypt and China. In 1949, Vereide sent Wallace Haines to represent International Christian Leadership (ICL) at a meeting of German Christians held at Castle Mainau in Switzerland. Haines later became Vereide's personal emissary to Europe. Haines was replaced in 1952 by the virulent Jewish anti-Communist Nazi, Karl Leyasmeyer.

THE 'PRAYER BREAKFAST' MOVEMENT ENTERS THE WHITE HOUSE

In 1953, Vereide 'made his first entree into the White House when President Dwight Eisenhower agreed to attend the first Presidential Prayer Breakfast. By that time, Vereide's Congressional core membership had expanded to include such Senators as Republicans Frank Carlson of Kansas and Karl Mundt of South Dakota. Both were virulent anti-Communists who established close ties with Vereide and his worldwide anti-Communist movement. Vereide also became very close to one of the US Senate's most ardent segregationists, Senator Strom Thurmond of South Carolina, the man who led the Dixiecrat revolt against the Democratic Party in 1948'. Thurmond, an Illuminist who lived to be over 100 years old, 'later became a key implementer of Vereide's strategy to evangelize poor Whites in the South. For Vereide, this initiative was intended to recruit converts to his peculiar brand of Christianity; for Thurmond, it would bring into the Republican Party former New Deal Democrats who saw their Party straying from segregation, and embracing civil rights. As for the United States, the strategy was calculated to bring a radical form of fundamental zealotry closer to taking control of the country'.

Wayne Madsen elaborated that 'Buchman, clearly wishing to obfuscate his pro-Nazi ties before the war, turned his attention towards Asia, particularly Korea. One Korean Presbyterian preacher, who took an interest in Buchman's Moral Re-Armament principles promoting a universal religion and total personal submission, was Yong Myung Mun from Korea. He later changed his name to Sun Myung Moon and, after being expelled from the Presbyterian Church for preaching heresy, he established a right-wing, strictly nominally Christian sect called the Unification Church'.

This 'Church' has nothing, in fact, to do with True Christianity, and is allegedly yet another apostate aberration serving the interests of questionable 'Angels of Lighf. Like Vereide and Buchman, Moon started spreading his influence globally. He was probably recruited by Buchman, an operative (of course). 'The Washington Times' is linked to these people and may be financed by South Korean intelligence (KCIA, i.e. by the CIA).

THE GLOBAL REACH OF THIS FALSE 'CHRISTIAN' NETWORK

By 1957, International Christian Leadership (ICL) had established 125 groups in 100 cities, with 16 groups operating in Washington, DC alone. 'Around the world, it had set up another 125 groups - in Canada, Britain, Germany, France, Northern Ireland, The Netherlands, Belgium, Norway, Sweden, Denmark, Finland, Switzerland, Italy, Greece, Turkey, Lebanon, Ethiopia (where Emperor Haile Selassie provided ICL with property in Addis Ababa on which to build its African headquarters), India, South Vietnam, Hong Kong, Taiwan, South Korea, Japan, Philippines, Australia, New Zealand, Guatemala, Cuba, Costa Rica, Mexico, and Bermuda'. Given his alleged intelligence background, Mr Madsen does not state the glaringly obvious - which is that this nexus of operations was and remains a covert operation of international intelligence - 'Dark Actors Playing Games'. Id's international activities coincided with activities in countries where the CIA was particularly active - an obvious by-product of the close cooperation between Vereide and the CIA's (Abwehr penetration) Allen Dulles and James Jesus Angleton. Angleton and his close associate, Miles Copeland, favoured using private businessmen to conduct operations that the CIA was statutorily barred from undertaking' - this being one of the beginnings of the process of privatisation of US intelligence operations which has led to such disastrous botches and consequences. 'International Christian Leadership fitted the bill very nicely. And although The Fellowship despised homosexuals, that did not stop the [homosexual] FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover, writing a prayer for Vereide'.

Nor does Mr Madsen omit the rather well-known Nazi associations of the Bush family. He notes that 'the grandfather of George W. Bush had witnessed the assets of Union Banking Corporation, on the board of which he served, seized after the beginning of the Second World War by U.S. Treasury agents. It turned out that Bush's bank was operated by Bush and his boss Averell Harriman on behalf of Nazi Germany. Prescott's father-in-law, George Herbert 'Berf Walker, also represented Nazi German interests through his Brown Brothers Harriman investment company and affiliated firms with names like American Shipping & Commerce, Harriman Fifteen Corporation, Holland American Trading Corporation, Seamless Steel Equipment Corporation, the Silesian-American Corporation, and Hamburg-Amerika Line, which were all tangled together in a circuitous spider's web [see Chapter 8]. These arrangements represented a collective blueprint for future Bush family/oil and intelligence enterprises involving election fraud, drug and weapons smuggling, and political assassinations'.

'Charles Lindbergh also had a run-in with the US Government. After being awarded the Service Cross of the German Eagle medal by Hermann Goering, Lindbergh, an ex-Army Air Force Colonel, was not permitted to have his commission as an officer restored - under direct orders from Roosevelt himself. Roosevelt always believed that Lindbergh was a Nazi. Lindbergh became an advocate for the United States avoiding war with Germany, through his activity with the America First Committee - yet another group sprung from the pro-Nazi 'right-wing' in America', Wayne Madsen explained, but actually an operation directly controlled by the Nazi International. According to Lindbergh's biographer, Laura Muha, Lindbergh said that he was suspicious of American Jews because of 'their large ownership and influence in our motion pictures, our press, our radio, and our Government'.

However the Nazi International's heirs and the Zionists 'agree'. Their ideology is identical, as the behaviour of the Likud Government in Israel testifies. Many leading Nazi Holocaust operatives were conspicuously Jewish.

WEARING THE 'JESUS' LABEL, MEMBERS CAN GAIN A FALSE RESPECTABILITY

With consummate skill, Wayne Madsen weaved in most of the 'big names' that have been causing such concern within the huge American 'underground', and internationally, as the aggressive, 'Amerika First' policies of the Bush Jr. Administration have unfolded. One of the subsidiary points he made was that the 'Jesus logo' provided operatives and politicians with more than just the cover they needed: it also enabled them to be 'forgiven for their transgressions because they had submitted to God (The Fellowship). A number of observers of The Fellowship claim that politicians love to get involved with the group because it is a way for them to escape accountability for their actions'.

Mr Madsen's inclusion of this 'advantage' tells us plainly that The Fellowship' is indeed a devilishly subtle control mechanism which has been tailored to suit the 'needs' of German secret Illuminati strategy by expert psychological operatives who, having studied Christianity, are exploiting its 'forgiveness' dimension for nefarious ends. Because members of The Fellowship know that they are liable to be 'forgiven' for any slip-ups or misdeeds, and because few of these people are True Christians (by which is meant, that they read Scripture seriously every day and take Communion), they accept membership with the subliminal knowledge that their fellows can be relied upon to 'forgive' (that is, overlook) any behaviour which falls short of the supposed ideas for which The Fellowship purports to stand. For instance, President George Bush Sr. 'reportedly held a special prayer with El Salvador's President [Alfredo] Cristiani and the death squad leader d'Aubuisson, in a side room at a National Prayer Breakfast'.

Inroads have also been made at US universities, through the related 'Campus Crusade for Christ' (CCC), and within the US military through offshoot entities known as the 'Officers' Christian Fellowship' (OFC), and the 'Christian Military Fellowship' (CMF) among enlisted ranks. The international arm is known as the 'Association of Military Christian Fellowships' (AMCF). A well-publicised incidence of this crude confusion of good with evil was a statement in 2003 at a Baptist church in Daytona Beach, Florida, by US Army Lieutenant General William 'Jerry' Boykin, head of the special intelligence branch serving the US Secretary of Defense, Donald Rumsfeld, that the United States is a 'Christian nation' and that, referring to a Somali warlord, 'I knew that my God was bigger than his. I knew that my God was a real God and his was an idol'.

'Shortly afterwards', Wayne Madsen writes, 'Boykin's intelligence branch was discovered to have been involved with the sexual molestation and torture of prisoners in Iraq, Afghanistan and Guantanamo Bay, Cuba. The sexual molestation of prisoners included male and female teens being held in Iraq'. The OCF operates 'chapters' at locations such as Fort Leavensworth, Kansas, 'the home of the US military's disciplinary barracks and a prime recruiting and mentoring centre for Fellowship members'. It is clear from Mr Madsen's account that 'Christianity' is used for mental management and internal military psychological manipulation purposes. That would be entirely consistent with the 'Heart of Darkness' characteristic of the US intelligence community.

And according to Jeff Sharlet, of the Center for Religion and Media at New York University, writing in Harper's in 2003, internationally the objective of The Fellowship's separate, aggressive 'Youth Corps' is 'to groom young leaders for future positions of leadership in countries around the world'. Sharlet wrote that its target is '"two hundred national and international world leaders bound together relationally by a mutual love for God and the family"'. In Fellowship-speak, the "family" is synonymous with 'The Fellowship', so this statement has a double meaning, typical of the Illuminati.

FRENETIC GOINGS-ON AT 'THE CEDARS', ARLINGTON • CALLING EVIL GOOD

The Fellowship is based at a property, now closely guarded, in Arlington called The Cedars, adjacent to which are two further 'group homes' (dormitories) called Ivanwald (a group home for men) and Potomac Point (a group home for women). Local groups have complained of 'certain VIP limousines constantly speeding through this quiet and residential neighbourhood in North Arlington'. One neighbour has observed that some 80 limousine trips are made to The Cedars per week. A US State Department bus transports foreign and US diplomats to and from The Cedars for what is referred to as an 'Ambassadors' Breakfast' held every Tuesday morning from 7.30 am to 9.30 am, and more limousines arrive at The Cedars every Sunday for another meeting.

Perhaps its importance as an international rendezvous point is why several miles of fibre optic cables have been installed at The Cedars by Verizon and Comcast. 'In one instance', added Madsen, 'The Fellowship requested permission to build an 'underground chapel' on The Cedars premises. Although the facility was never built, neighbors suspected that it was a bomb shelter'. Whether invitees at The Cedars undergo any mind-bending treatment at this facility is so far unknown: in the United Kingdom, a subversive organisation calling itself 'Common Cause', which has links with an office at the centre of government in Whitehall, is reported to be geared to the transformation of the mental attitudes of its targets within the space of 48 hours, using input traceable to the sinister Tavistock Institute. It was reported in October 2005 to have 84,000 members across the United Kingdom and was alleged to be involved in manipulative and corrupt activities in many sectors. A parallel organisation of the same name in the United States purports to be tracking corruption, but has a concealed agenda as well. The widespread infestation of both the British and the American political and social systems by such clandestine influence-building, mind-control and false-flag intelligence operations is a matter for the gravest concern - given the hegemony of the intelligence communities, which are both out of control and in control in both countries.

Quite apart from any other consideration, given the interpenetration of intelligence communities with cadres and operatives having loyalties to one or more foreign powers, such networks, including the extremely sinister 'Jesus logo' networks which provide cover for Nazi-derived attitudes and for corrupt relationships and transactions, are being leveraged as platforms for deep penetration and subversion operations

Summing up the general ethos of the networks of 'Angels of Lighf that he had identified', Wayne Madsen concluded that The Fellowship is an organisation where 'people smile, talk about their commitment to "Jesus", and engage in backroom shady deals', while enjoying 'fellowship' with kingmakers and assassins'. This Author was surprised when a dangerous US intelligence officer offered him various 'Christian blessings'. Making due allowance for the likelihood that Mr Madsen is unsympathetic to 'right-wing' politics, the central point he makes is that 'Jesus' is being exploited by The Fellowship, which is an intelligence operation, for entirely cynical, worldly, and usually nefarious reasons. This practice, as has been seen in this Chapter, is nothing new: it began in Jerusalem and Rome in the First Century AD, and it was elaborated, for instance, by the Jesuits and Opus Dei, to name only two of the most conspicuous perpetrators of such Satanic deception. And for those who do not understand that the labels 'left-wing' and 'right-wing' mask the 'phanes' or 'forces' that the Illuminati and the geo-masonic fraternity believe they can, and possess a right to, manipulate, the existence of a global movement of 'Christians' may seem perfectly acceptable.

But like all other 'Angels of Light', members of The Fellowship are deceiving themselves and everyone else. Those who are not deceived, of course, are the manipulators - who, since this organisation is based in Arlington, can only be elements of the Central Intelligence Agency. True to the 100% cynicism which characterises intelligence communities everywhere, the CIA operatives running this now massive network are cynically exploiting 'Christianity' for political, intelligence and strategic purposes - just as other branches of the same Octopus have for decades been building upon the Works of Darkness inherited and imported from Himmler's scientific death camp experimental operations, and seeking to leverage mind-bending and personality-modification programmes, drugs and the occult for the same purposes.

For, so far as the Illuminati manipulators are concerned, 'Christianity' is just another, extremely promising, instrument for the fulfilment of their global hegemony project Hitler's Nazis cynically exploited 'Christianity' in exactly the same manner.

The obvious scriptural riposte for these people is repeated. It appears in Isaiah, Chapter 5, verses 20 and 21: 'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!'. ■

Chapter 6: THE ANGELS OF LIGHT: Notes and references

1. The Apostle Paul, writing his Second Epistle to the Corinthians in around AD 60, was alarmed that the flock he had preached to some years earlier, had been suborned and corrupted by false priests, 'preaching another Jesus whom we have not preached'... or 'another spirit which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted': Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 11, verse 4.
2. 'Lest, by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety... your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ': Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 11, verse 3.
3. 'False apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ': Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 11, verse 13. Jeremiah, whom the Lord mentioned (indicating the great importance he attached to that most glorious of Old Testament prophets) had provided Paul with many precedents for this insight. For example: 'Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness. They have made it desolate, and being desolate, it mourneth unto me': Jeremiah, Chapter 12, verses 10-11. The spiritual captivity of the wayward children of Israel is mourned by the Lord through Jeremiah: 'My soul shall weep in secret places for your pride; and mine eye shall weep sore, and run down with tears, because the Lord's flock is carried away captive': Jeremiah, Chapter 13. verse 17.
4. 'And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works': Paul's Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 11, verses 14-15. See Jeremiah, Chapter 14, verses 14-15: Then the Lord said unto me, The prophets prophesy in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake I unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.... By sword and famine (metaphorically - Ed.) shall those prophets be consumed'. In other words, quite obviously, there is nothing new about false prophets - as anyone contemplating the utterly abysmal and abominable condition of the decadent Church of England, headed by the Archdruid of Canterbury, can clearly observe.
5. Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 18: 'Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is: Six hundred threescore and six'. See also: 1 Kings, Chapter 10, verse 14; 2 Chronicles, Chapter 9, verse 13: 'Now the weight of gold that came to Solomon in one year was six hundred threescore and six talents of gold'. See box, page 347.
6. Modern attempts to replicate the Pythagorean-Kabbalistic numerical value of a word flounder on the problem that only words of Greek or Hebrew derivation can be successfully analysed by this method, and all words to be analysed must be spelled in their most ancient and complete forms. Therefore, Old Testament words and names must be translated back into the early Hebrew characters, and New Testament words into the Greek. The original Pythagorean system of numerical philosophy contains nothing to justify the practice in vogue today of changing the given name or surname in the hope of improving the temperament or financial condition by alteration of the name vibrations. The system of 'Kabbalistic' calculation in vogue for the English language has no relationship to the Hebrew Kabbalistic system or to the Greek procedure. The fact that Pythagoras used 10 as the basis of calculation, whereas the modern system uses 9, an imperfect number, is in itself almost conclusive. Furthermore, the arrangement of the Greek and Hebrew letters does not agree closely enough with the English to permit the application of the number sequences of one language to the number sequences of the others. Under the prevailing fake Kabbalistic system, the letters A-I are numbered 1-9, J-R 1-9 x 10, and S-Z 1-8 x 100. Using this system one cannot replicate the fact that in Greek, LATEINOS devolves to 666. Manly P. Hall states in his rare work (op. cit.) that 'the number of the beast (666) is an interesting example of the use of Qabbalism in the New Testament and among early Christian mystics'. The four separate Greek names given by Irenaeus (pupil of Polycarp, who was a pupil of John) as meaning Antichrist 'all have 666 as their numerical equivalent'. Remarkably, too the Greek term that signifies the lower mind has 666 as its Kabbalistic numerical equivalent
7. Halley's Bible Handbook, Zondervan, Grand Rapids, Michigan, USA, page 726, Note on 666, the Number of the Beast. The Author is certain that this interpretation is correct, not least since, contrary to the mistaken assessments of many, all such prophetic allusions in Scripture are of a spiritual nature. This also, applies, for instance, to the identity of the

four kingdoms referred to in Daniel, Chapter 8. The Beast-Lamb is John's inspired description of Satan clothed as an 'Angel of Light', and masquerading as 'the Vicar of Christ' when in fact it is the Pope himself who is worshipped and obeyed: he stands in the place of Christ, and accordingly it is no surprise that, through the centuries, the Catholic Church has seen to it that the people receive their 'spiritual instruction' from priests, which means that the instruction is filtered: they have been largely prevented or discouraged from reading Scripture, lest they see through the deception and understand the truth. A Catholic will always say he or she is Catholic, whereas he or she should say that he or she is a follower of Christ (not the Pope) - that is, a Christian. A study of the Catechism shows that it diverges sharply from the true scriptural Word of God through Jesus Christ. Moreover it is unfortunately the case that sincere Catholic priests and other 'religious' people insert make-believe and fables into their accounts of Christ's life. For instance, the Author has a tape in which a very worthy and devoted Catholic religious inserts as 'fact' the illusion that Mary Magdalene delayed at the tomb and 'took' the shroud (= the Turin shroud!) in which Jesus had been wrapped, from the tomb, back to John's home, where Mary, the mother of Jesus, had been received, in accordance with one of Jesus' last words on the cross. This gross lie, uttered in all sincerity, was intended to 'join up' the awkward fact that the Turin shroud (ostensibly carrying a 'photographic' image of Jesus Christ) suddenly 'appeared' in the Middle Ages and has been revered as a 'relic' by naive Catholics ever since. The cloth has been scientifically examined and found to be of mediaeval date. But more to the point, if it had been 'necessary' for us to know what Jesus looked like, we would have been provided with this information from the outset. The idea that it became available to humanity only in the Middle Ages is preposterous rubbish. This is a prize example of what Paul meant when he wrote, in the Second Epistle to Timothy, Chapter 4, verses 3 and 4: 'For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables'. The True Christian is able to discern and to discard the fables, knowing the purity of the truth.

8. See Note 4 above,

9. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 26.

10. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 18.

11. Encyclopaedia Britannica, Ninth Edition, Article on the Jesuits; see also Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pp. 308 et seq.

12. Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the Devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it... He that is of God heareth God''s words; ye therefore hear them not because ye are not of God': John, Chapter 8, verses 43-44 and 47.

13. When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mystery of his [witch]Craft. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply energy': Manly P. Hall, 'The Lost keys of Freemasonry', Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Co., Inc., Richmond, VA, originally published in 1923; 1976, p. 48.

14. Albert Pike, Morals and Dogma, op. cit, page 321.

15.Schaff-Herzog, The Encyclopaedia of Religious Knowledge', article on the Jesuits; and Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 314 et seq.

16. 'Honour thy father and thy mother', Exodus, Chapter 20, verse 4.

17. The words of Jesus in Luke, Chapter 12, verse 10.

18. 'Render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's', Matthew, Chapter 22, verse 21; Mark, Chapter 12, verse 17: 'And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him'; Luke. Chapter 20, verses 25-26: 'And he said unto them, render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and unto God the things which be God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people; and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace'. The fact that these words appear three times in the gospels is indicative of their importance. At the crucifixion, the multitude lied to Pilate, saying that Jesus had taught that tribute should NOT be paid to Caesar. This is revealed in Luke, Chapter 23, verses 1-2: 'And the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate. And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar[1].

19. 'Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries', Volume II, page 302, Charles William Heckethorn, reported and cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 371-318.

20. 'For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many': Mark, Chapter 13, verse 6.

21. 'For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall show signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect': Mark, Chapter 13, verse 22.

22. 'And he said. Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them': Luke, Chapter 27, verse 8.

23. The Sunday Times, London, 18th September 2005, page 7.

24. Samuels, Memoirs of Moses Mendelssohn, page 159, Appendix. Longman & co; cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit., page 371. Note that this original source was Jewish.

25. J. A. Moehlen, 'Symbolism', translated by James Robertson, pages 34-36, Introduction; cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit., page 372.

26. The Queen of Heaven is the pagan goddess Astarte, and is condemned in Jeremiah, Chapter 7, verses 17-19: 'Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. Do they provoke me to anger? Said the Lord: do they not provoke themselves to the confusion of their own faces?' See Jeremiah, Chapter 44, for the denouement, wherein the element of the remnant of Judah who have been displaced by the Babylonian invasion decided that they will go down to Egypt (metaphor for the Darkness) and will defy Jeremiah's warnings, even though he informs them that they will be destroyed (spiritually as well as physically, if they do so). In Jeremiah, Chapter 44, verses 17-19, they defiantly answer Jeremiah as follows: 'But we will certainly do whatever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then we had plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil. But since we left off to burn incense to the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, we have wanted all things, and have been consumed by the sword and the famine. And when we burned incense to the Queen of Heaven, and poured out drink offerings unto her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings to her, without our men?' However the Jews in question perversely failed to take on board that Jerusalem and their homeland had been overthrown precisely in response to their reprobate behaviour in worshipping false gods (demons) for many generations. There was no abomination of the heathen by whom they were surrounded that they did not

adopt, including sacrificing their children to the hideous god-demon Moloch (post-natal contraception). 27. 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church', Malachi Martin, The Linden Press/Simon and Schuster, New York, 1987, pages 79-94.

28. By which Jesus meant that the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against faith in Him. This has been perverted and distorted by the Catholic Church, which erroneously asserts that the Lord meant that the Gates of Hell would not prevail against the Papacy. The interpretation is illegitimate and is a distortion of the truth of the matter, which is obvious by considering the context. Hence the Author will cite the source in its context, from Matthew, Chapter 16, verses 15-19: 'He saith unto them [the disciples], But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ [the Anointed One], the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon bar-Jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against it'. The Greek word PETRA meant rock, the rock being that of Peter's extraordinary faith, expressed when he proclaimed, through the Holy Spirit: Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God'. The Gates of Hell shall not prevail against faith in Jesus Christ, who is God and Lord of all - and the ONLY name to which Evil Spirit responds in exorcism (a fact of profound importance and which provides proof of the existence of God as revealed through Jesus Christ. It is also a fact of which the devils are well aware: cf Acts, Chapter 19, verses 13-17, in which the seven sons of Sceva, Chief of the priests, tried to exorcise demons by calling upon the name of Jesus without any repentance of their sorcery on their part: Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them[selves] to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified'. 29. 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church', Malachi Martin, The Linden Press/Simon and Schuster, New York, 1987, op. cit.

30. An echo of Paul's advice in Second Corinthians, Chapter 6, verse 17: Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you'. Also: Jeremiah, chapter 50, verse 8: 'Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans'; and Isaiah, Chapter 48, 20: 'Go ye forth of Babylon, flee ye from the Chaldeans, with a voice of singing declare ye, tell this, utter it even to the end of the earth: say ye, the Lord hath redeemed his servant Jacob'. In Scripture, much eternal spiritual truth is revealed through historical events and situations. Here, Babylon is literally the ancient regional centre of occultic sorcery to where many of the children of Israel were exiled, and from where they re-acquired habits of sorcery with which their fathers had been familiar in the land of darkness (Egypt), and among the pagan tribes surrounding them in Caanan. The call in Second Corinthians and Revelation for us to 'come out of her' and to be separated from the Workers of Darkness, in order to be eligible for salvation, is pertinent to those entrapped in 'Orders' and false religious organisations masquerading as purporting to teach the Word of God but in reality teaching only 'the commandments and doctrines of men' [see Colossians, Chapter 2, verse 22]. The objective of the Illuminati is to procure the renewed hegemony of 'Babylon', a.k.a. the 'Ancient Mysteries'.

31. 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church', Malachi Martin, op. cit, pages 79 et seq.. All the quotations from Malachi's book on the Jesuits are taken from this section of the book.

32. 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church', Malachi Martin, op. cit., page 94.

33. 'The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church', Malachi Martin, op. cit, pp. 94-95.

34. Romano Pontifici Eligendo, 1975, Pope Paul VI's Apostolic Constitution on the election of the Pontiff, Sec. 92. 35.
Intelligence provided verbally to the Author in 2005 by the impeccably trustworthy relative in question.

36. 'City of Secrets: The Startling Truth Behind the Vatican Murders', by John Follain, Perennial, and HarperCollins Publishers Inc., New York, 2004, page 7.

37. en.wikipaedia.org. Pope John Paul I, page 7.

38. 'In God's Name: An Investigation into the Murder of Pope John Paul I', David Yallop, Bantam Dell Publishing Group, 1984, ISBN 0-5530507-3-7.

39. 'A Thief in the Night: The Mysterious death of Pope John Paul I', John Cornwell, 1989.

40. The Author has rearranged the information contained in this section on the death of Pope John Paul I in accordance with the special intelligence provided to him by the relative of the Apostolic Representative mentioned, using the Wikipedia summary, which is of a very high quality.

41. 'City of Secrets: The Startling Truth Behind the Vatican Murders', by John Follain, Perennial, HarperCollins Publishers Inc., New York, 2004, pages 6-7.

42. 'City of Secrets: The Startling Truth Behind the Vatican Murders', by John Follain, Perennial, HarperCollins Publishers Inc., New York, 2004, page 304.

43. Ibid., page 304.

44. Ibid., page 304.

45. Ibid, pages 29-30.

46. Ratzinger took the chair of dogmatic theology at the University of Tubingen in 1966, moving to Regensburg University in his native Bavaria in 1969, eventually rising to become its Dean and Vice-President. He was named Cardinal of Munich by Pope Paul VI in 1977. He is said to speak ten languages and to be an accomplished pianist with a preference for Beethoven.

47. The Guardian, 6th June 2005, supplement 'Inside Story', page 7.

48. 'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!': Isaiah, Chapter 5, verses 20-21.

49. 'Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, page 7.

50. 'Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, op. cit., pages 7-8.

51. Ibid., page 8. Hence, Malachi confirmed that 'the abomination of desolation' is Lucifer.

52. This fantasy was asserted dogmatically by a Catholic priest attending a conference in Hamilton, Ont„ in October 1999, at which the Author was a speaker. However from the outset, at Pentecost, it was the Holy Spirit of the Lord that visited and sustained the earliest Christians, and which has sustained and watered the faith ever since. 'If it wasn't for us', the priest said, 'Christianity wouldn't have survived'. Thus the Catholic Church arrogates to itself the powers and glory of the Holy Spirit, who is uniquely responsible for the continuation of True Christianity.

53. 'Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, op. cit, page 8.

54. Ibid, page 8.
55. Andrew Varna, 'World Underworld', Museum Press, London 1957, page 58. Mazzini, who was a 33rd Degree Mason, was the founder of 'modern' Italian Freemasonry, a sorcerer, murderer and revolutionary terrorist leader, as well as being a Sicilian gangster. Note that among the three abominations 'authorised' by Mazzini is the familiar Illuminati assassination method, poisoning. This, to this day, is the Illuminati's favoured method of liquidating its enemies. For instance, Andy Stephenson, who exposed the manipulation of electronic voting equipment in the United States, was poisoned with a toxin replicating cancer of the pancreas. He died in 2005.
56. 'Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, op cit, page 9.
57. Ibid., page 9.
58. Claire Sterling, Thieves' World', Simon & Schuster, New York, 1994. The identity of 'Mr X' is known to this Author.
59. 'N'oubliez jamais... que la plus belle des ruses du diable est de vous persuader qu'il n'existe pas!', Charles Baudelaire, 'Le Spleen de Paris'.
60. 'Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, op. cit, pages 9-10.
61. First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 6, verse 19: What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?'
62. Werner Keller, 'The Bible as History', page 368; cited by Des Griffin, 'Fourth Reich of the Rich', Emissary Publications, 9205 SE Clackamas Road, #1776, Clackamas, OR, 97015, USA, 1976, pages 35-35:
63. Epistle of Paul to the Galatians, Chapter 2, verse 7. The fact that Peter was the Apostle serving the Jews in Judaea is reiterated in Galatians, Chapter 2, verse 8: 'For he that wrought effectually in Peter as the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles' (he being the Holy Spirit). Paul was the Apostle to the Gentiles and also to the Jews of the diaspora: hence his Epistle to the Hebrews who were in Rome.
64. Luke, Chapter 17, verses 20-21: 'And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the Kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, the kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! For, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you'.
65. Matthew, Chapter 16, verses 13-19.
66. Windswept House: A Vatican Novel', Malachi Martin, Doubleday, New York, 1996, op. cit, page 10.
67. Ibid, page 10.
68. Ibid., pages 10-11.
69. Ibid., page 12.
70. Ibid., page 10.
71. Dr Leonard G Horowitz, DMD, MA, MPH, 'Avian Flu Fright Commentary', October 2005, page 6 (Internet posting).
72. Information on Cardinal Ratzinger's enquiries in Hertfordshire about the Knights Templar was derived from 'The Hertfordshire Mercury and The Insider' (www.theinsider.org).
73. 'The Jesuit Enigma', B. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, page 105.
74. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 105.
75. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit., page 105.
76. Epistle of Paul to the Philippians, Chapter 4, verse 7. 'And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus'.
77. John, Chapter 14, verse 27. This glorious peace is of course the absolute reverse of the Satanic system of espionage, with its implications of coercion, intimidation, harassment and control, that characterises the oppressive environment of the Jesuits.
78. Matthew, Chapter 23, verse 9; Jesus says: 'And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your father, which is in heaven'.
79. Hebrews, Chapter 7, verses 24-26: 'But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens'. Romans, Chapter 8, verse 27: 'And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God'. The saints are those of us who believe and have faith, securing thereby the grace to grow, learn and understand in the Spirit. Saints are not those who are appointed to be saints by the Pope: beatification is a man-made usurpation of the power of God. All of those, without exception, who accept and know Jesus as Our Lord and Saviour are saints. And intercession is made for us by the Holy Spirit of Jesus Christ.
80. Hebrews, Chapter 8, verses 34-35: Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?'. The intercessor for sinners is Jesus Christ and his Holy Spirit - directly, not through the Confessional which, as is shown here, is open to abuse - and has historically always been abused by the Jesuit Order, for espionage purposes. That is one excellent reason why earthly intercession is precluded: Jesus was the greatest intellect that ever lived, and His logic is always perfection itself.
81. 'The Jesuit Enigma', B. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 106.
82. Ibid., page 108.
83. Ibid, page 108.
84. Official letter of a Bohemian Principal, Fr. Bieczynski, found in the Vienna Court Library, cited by Count von Hoensbroech; 'The Jesuit Enigma', E, Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit. page 108.
85. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 109; citing Ranke, 'History of the Papacy', II, page 82.
86. Acts of the Apostles, Chapter 26, verse 26: Addressing King Agrippa and the Roman Governor Festus, Paul says: 'For the King knoweth of these things, before whom I also speak freely; for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner', meaning that the Word of God was not divulged in secret, revealed through ritual initiation or by other means that are routinely employed by disciples of the Prince of Darkness - but was proclaimed and taught openly.
87. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit., page 109. This letter was written on 8th June 1649, and was cited by Count von Hoensbroech.
88. 'Eo ipso Nostros cedere cuique juri famae quod huic manifestationi obstare posit', 32nd decree of the Sixth General Congregation.
89. John, Chapter 8, verse 44. For the Superior of a supposedly religious Christian Order to lie and invent pretexts is

contrary to the Word of God and wholly inconsistent with Jesus' clear denunciation of all liars, revealing the blasphemously named Society of Jesus to be a lying abomination.
90. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 145.
91. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 145-146.
92. Ibid, pages 146-147.
93. Ibid, page 147.
94. Ibid, page 160.
95. Yevgeniy Primakov (Finkelstein), the most powerful operative associated with the 'former' Soviet structures, who is believed to alternate with Mikhail Gorbachev as the head of the Soviet intelligence continuum, was appointed to a consultancy position with the US Department of Homeland Security in 2004, under Tom Ridge. It later transpired that the high-level, so-called 'former' STASI operative, Marcus Wolf, who organised the pervasive system of informers in East Germany, likewise joined the Homeland Security payroll. The Author knows that STASI operatives who have been collaborating with US intelligence have been using their STASI label as cover for their true intelligence allegiance to the super-secret DVD 'Black' intelligence organisation based in Dachau, near Munich: see Chapter 8. German intelligence has used the Illuminati as cover for global operations for centuries, and the STASI for the same purpose, for decades.
96. 'The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit. page 163. 97. Ibid.,pages 201-202.
98. Matthew, Chapter 23, verse 27: 'Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness' - a description highly applicable to the final category of 'Angels of Light' that we are about to discuss here. See also Acts Chapter 23, verses 1-3: 'And Paul, earnestly beholding all the council, said, men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day. And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him to smite him on the mouth. Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?'
99. The Jesuit Enigma', E. Boyd Barrett, Boni & Liveright, Inc., New York, 1927, op. cit, page 204.
100. Ibid, pages 190-191.
101. In October 2005, Nabil Shaath, who was formerly Palestinian Foreign Minister, reiterated information that had leaked into the public domain two years earlier, but which the UK and US media now, all of a sudden, treated as a brand new story. In a BBC interview, Mr Shaath said that President Bush had told him that he had been on a 'mission from God' when he ordered the invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq. According to Shaath, Bush Jr. had said: 'God would tell me, "George, go and fight those terrorists in Afghanistan". And I did. And then God would tell me, "George, go and end the tyranny in Iraq". And I did'. According to 'The Daily Telegraph' [9th October 2005], 'Saath has since modified his original account of Bush's words during the Israeli-Palestinian Summit at the Egyptian resort of Sharm el-Sheikh in 2004. Both he and Mahmoud Abbas' [a.k.a. the Hamas terrorist operative and leader, Abu Mazen, who has been 'rehabilitated' and repackaged for international public consumption as a 'moderate'], 'the Palestinian Prime Minister and who was also present at the meeting, now say Bush did not claim that he had "felt God's words coming to me". The White House has also denied that Bush said anything of the kind'. Official denials aside, the point to be made here is that there is no way that God would have encouraged Mr Bush Jr.. to murder up to half a million people (and counting). If there was (is) a voice urging the President of the United States to perpetrate atrocities (very likely), it is not that of God, but of a familiar, or possessing demon, who is of course deceiving him.
102. In 'The Price of Loyalty' - the biography or record of Paul O'Neill, President George W. Bush's first Treasury Secretary - Ron Suskind revealed that a Top Secret document was made available to him within a few days of the President's first Inauguration in January 2001, in which advanced preparations for an invasion of Iraq were revealed. Hence, the invasion was far from spontaneous, preparations for it having preceded President Bush Jr.'s elevation to the Presidency by months, and probably years. Likewise, President Clinton met Russian officials in Washington, DC, on 1st and 2nd August 2000, to discuss issues affecting Afghanistan, including a planned invasion of that country. Neither of President Bush Jr's aggressive wars were therefore originally of his making: see Figure 94, page 607.
103. 'Chicago Tribune', 7th December 2003.
104. 'Beyond the Threshold A Life in Opus Dei', Maria del Carmen Tapia, The Continuum Publishing Company, New York, 1999: ISBN 0-8264-1096-0. The late Pope John Paul II published a work entitled 'Crossing the Threshhold'. Both books use the Masonic word Threshhold'. The esoteric illustration facing page 8 of Manly P. Hall's occult book The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', op. cit, carries the title: 'GUARDIAN OF THE THRESHHOLD'. There is no evidence that Maria Carmen del Tapia had, at least by 1999 when her book appeared, progressed beyond having been released from the living hell of confinement within the repressive Opus Dei regime. The use of the word Threshhold in her book title may have been innocent, but to 'the interested', its use has secret Masonic meaning. West German Radio commented: The insights that this book provides into the secrets of the Roman headquarters of Opus Dei - from its secret-service-like membership list to the specific spirit of the founder of Opus Dei - are unique. Whoever gets to know the founder through Maria del Carmen Tapia will also better understand Opus Dei: its rigorous asceticism, its shadowy financial practices, its indoctrination of fourteen-year-olds, and its strict segregation of its celibate men and women'. And Spiegel Spezial added: 'Here, a highly sensitive woman describes in a highly detailed and unusually elegant manner, without hatred and with the distance of over twenty years, a religious madhouse by the name of Opus Dei, which she came to know intimately like few others'. Finally, 'Vereinigung fur Geschicht im offentlichen Leben', Germany, added, in a review of her book: 'Maria del Carmen Tapia offers authentic insight into the personality and work of the founder of Opus Dei. She reveals unsparingly the truth about the churchly 'mafia', from its questionable methods of recruitment to the psychic terror it practices on its members. A truly shocking document of contemporary church history'.
105. 'Beyond the Threshold: A Life in Opus Dei', Maria del Carmen Tapia, The Continuum Publishing Company, New York, 1999, op. cit, page 59.
106. Ibid., page 217.
107. Ibid., page 220.
108. Ibid., page 251.
109. Jeremiah, Chapter 44, verses 15-26, in which Jeremiah the prophet warns all those children of Israel who, due to the political disturbances of the day, have fled back to Egypt and, established there, have reverted to pagan customs, in particular burning incense and making cakes to the Queen of Heaven (the goddess Astarte), that they will be severely punished for this backsliding. The entire passage should be read in order for this prohibition of the worship of the Queen of Heaven (metamorphosed by the Catholic Church into the Virgin Mary) to be properly understood. The reprobate children of Israel retort to Jeremiah that when they worshipped the Queen of Heaven, everything went well for

them, and when they ceased, everything went wrong - an interesting illustration of how Satan metes out TEMPORARY enticements and rewards for those who turn away to from the Lord. However since his only product is DEATH, by definition, all Satan's rewards are strictly temporary, and they fade. Here is the whole of this crucial passage, which reveals that the Catholic Church's de facto worship of the Virgin Mary is none other than the same reprobate worship of the Egyptian goddess Osiris, the Queen of Heaven or, in Canaan, Astarte: 'Then all the men which knew that their wives had burned incense unto other gods, and all the women that stood by, a great multitude, even all the people that dwelt in the land of Egypt' (remember, Egypt is also a metaphor for Darkness), 'in Pathros, answered Jeremiah, saying: As for the word that thou hast spoken unto us in the name of the Lord, we will not harken unto thee. But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem; for then we had plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil. But since we left off to burn incense to the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, we have wanted all things, and have been consumed by the sword and by the famine. And when we burned incense to the Queen of Heaven, and poured out drink offerings unto her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings unto her, without our men? Then Jeremiah said unto all the people, to the men, and to the women, and to all the people which had given him that answer, saying, The incense that ye burned in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, ye, and your fathers, your kings, and your princes, and the people of the land, did not the Lord remember them, and came it not into his mind? So that the Lord could no longer bear, because of the evil of your doings, and because of the abominations which ye have committed; therefore is your land a desolation, and an astonishment, and a curse, without an inhabitant, as at this day' [which was historically at that stage indeed the case - Ed.]. 'Because ye have burned incense, and because ye have sinned against the Lord, and have not obeyed the voice of the Lord, nor walked in his law, nor in his statutes, nor in his testimonies; therefore this evil is happened unto you, as at this day. Moreover Jeremiah said unto all the people and unto all the women, hear the word of the Lord, all Judah that are in the land of Egypt: Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, saying: ye and your wives have both spoken with your mouths, and fulfilled with your hand, saying, We will surely perform our vows that we have vowed, to burn incense to the Queen of Heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her; ye will surely accomplish your vows, and will surely perform your vows. Therefore hear ye the word of the Lord, all Judah that dwell in the land of Egypt; behold, I have sworn by my great name, saith the Lord, that my name shall no more be named in the mouth of any man of Judah in all the land of Egypt, saying, the Lord God liveth. Behold... all the men of Judah that are in the land of Egypt shall be consumed by the sword and by the famine, until there be an end of them'. And indeed, those Jews that had fled into Egypt at that stage of the diaspora (caused by their offences against the Word of God that had been revealed to them exclusively) duly vanished from the record, and were heard of no more.

110. 'Beyond the Threshold: A Life in Opus Dei', Maria del Carmen Tapia, The Continuum Publishing Company, New York, 1999, op. cit., page 262.

111. Babylon is the metaphor used in Jeremiah and Revelation for organised, institutionalised religious sorceries. See Revelation, Chapter 18, verse 21: 'And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more ...... And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee; for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth'. And Revelation, Chapter 12, verse 9: 'And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him'.

112. 'Beyond the Threshold: A Life in Opus Dei', Maria del Carmen Tapia, The Continuum Publishing Company, New York, 1999, op. cit, page 277.

113. Because of the importance of this, the Author repeats here the scriptural references given in Note 98 above: Matthew, Chapter 23, verse 27: 'Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness' - a description highly applicable to the final category of 'Angels of Light' that we are about to discuss here. See again Acts, Chapter 23, verses 1-3: 'And Paul, earnestly beholding all the council, said, men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day. And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him to smite him on the mouth. Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?'

114. There are many references in Scripture to the illusions of those who either say 'there is no God' [Psalm 14, verse 1: The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God'], or who imagine that He is ignorant of what they are up to. For instance, Ezekiel, Chapter 8, verse 12, cited earlier in this book: Then said he unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? For they say, The Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth'.

115. 'New York World Telegram', 26th August 1936, cited by Wayne Madsen: William A. H. Birnie, 'Hitler or Any Fascist leader Controlled by God Could Cure All Ills of World, Buchman Believes'.

116. Expose: 'The Christian Mafia: Where those who now run the United States Government came from and where they are taking us', US intelligence analyst, Wayne Madsen, posted on the Internet in October 2005 at www.insider-magazine.com/ChristianMafia.htm.

117. According to Mr Madsen, one conservative Christian picked up similar notions from George W. Bush's second inaugural speech. Christian commentator John Lofton questioned Bush's praise of the Koran during his speech and his giving the Islamic text equal weight to the Old and New Testaments. Lofton also questioned Bush's failure to mention Jesus Christ in his Christmas address a few weeks earlier. Lofton noted: "Bush failed to mention the name of Christ -yet he honored Ramadan and an Indian holiday that features an eight-legged elephant god". What many evangelical Christians fail to understand is that as a "one world religion" adherent of Vereide and Buchman, Bush only pays lip service to Jesus, while advancing a Dominionist ("Fascist") plan for global control.

Note: The significance of the Muslim Brotherhood is generally understated. Hitler didn't just 'support' this subversive terrorist organisation. The German Abwehr created it, as a means of destabilising British influence in the Middle East. The reasons for the folding of the British Empire include, but are not limited to, ongoing German-inspired subversion. The offensive against Britain and America has continued relentlessly and ruthlessly ever since - with penetrations at the very highest levels in both countries, and German financial interests seizing control over intergovernmental trading. The German 'Black' Nazi strategic Continuum loathes the British even more than the Americans, if that can be imagined. ■

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE SYNAGOGUE OF SATAN

EXPLOSIONS, DEATH AND DESTRUCTION FROM BELOW

On 7th July 2005, 56 people were killed and 700 injured when explosions were triggered on the London Underground and aboard a bus which 'just happened' to be entering Tavistock Square. On 23rd July 2005, a similar terrorist operation which would have resulted in explosions from below was thwarted by elements of the British security services. In August 2005, reports surfaced from San Francisco that explosions had occurred below ground in several parts of the city. On 7th October 2005, The New York Times reported that officials had stated that they had earlier been notified of a terrorist threat that, for the first time, had specifically identified New York City's underground transit system as the target. The report appeared following the sudden closure of the Metro as a consequence of the discovery of a bottle out of which was oozing a green liquid. A few days later, there were reports that explosions had been feared in the Baltimore underground transit system. In April 2006, UK intelligence sources informed the Author that a fifth bomb was 'meant' to have been detonated inside the Northern Line of the London Underground transit system beneath the Thames on 7th July 2005, as a result of which the river would have flooded a vast proportion of the system, murdering thousands.

About a year earlier, the Author, walking in the Amtrak level at Penn Station, New York City, had noticed a doorway opening from the station area to a passageway in which a large number of garbage bags had been stacked, and which clearly represented a terrorist hazard. On reporting this to the Amtrak Police, he was surprised when the matter was treated in a manner suggesting less than urgency.

The Twin Towers and Building Number 7 were not, as the deliberately unresolved controlled disinformation barrage has implied, brought down by aircraft hitting the tall buildings and by some mysteriously unexplained 'aftershock' which caused the third building to implode suddenly at around 5.30pm, but rather by high-tech explosives, such as RDX or C-4, capable of expanding at 1,000 feet per second and of creating extremely hot temperatures (much hotter than aircraft fuel, which when mixed with air, burns at around 1,300 degrees Fahrenheit). Moreover the two tall buildings collapsed in a controlled and peculiar manner which, honest (as opposed to controlled) experts say, would be consistent with the use of modern explosives capable of causing the crystallisation of building materials, while creating a vacuum that could cause the buildings to implode at a faster than normal speed, and leaving a residue of extremely high temperatures.

The North Tower was completely demolished at 10.29 am, one and a half hours after the first alleged aircraft impact, within the space of 8.1 seconds. It fell neatly upon itself and its remains were 'perfectly powdered'. According to the Law of Falling Bodies promulgated by Galileo and still accepted today by scientists everywhere[1], the total distance travelled at the end of any specific time in a total vacuum is calculated by the following formula:

Distance (d) = (32.16/2) x Time in seconds squared.

If there is any resistance, then the speed and time of the falling body slows down in relation to the resistance encountered. The North and South World Trade Center Towers were known to be 1,350 feet tall, so that the following equation would yield the fastest possible time for a total drop in a vacuum (that is to say, an environment where no resistance exists):

1350 = (32.16/2) x Time in seconds squared.

This would yield 9.1627 seconds as the fastest time that these buildings could pos-

Seismic data for the collapse of the North Tower on 9/11.

Seismic data for the collapse of WTC Building #7 on 9/11.

Figure 64: The seismic activity on 9/11, recorded by Columbia University Seismology Group: Top image A: The seismic data for the North Tower; Lower image B: The seismic data for the collapse of Building #7. The South Tower registered a tremor of 2.1 on the Richter Scale and came down in approximately 10.4 seconds. The North Tower registered a tremor of 2.3 on the Richter Scale and came down in slightly over 8 seconds. Explosions from below ground were set off in cadence. WTC #7's seismic signature is that of a conventional demolition.

sibly have fallen in a vacuum. The calculation raises some extremely interesting questions because the South Tower collapsed in 10.4 seconds and the North Tower, as indicated, imploded totally within 8.1 seconds. In both cases, massive resistance 'impeded' the collapses - in the form not least of the massive lower sections of the buildings that were stabilised by over 250 huge interior and exterior steel columns, and thousands of steel trusses. Therefore, the collapses defied the law of gravity. It follows either that the heights of the buildings were inaccurate, the times taken for the collapses were inaccurate, the scientific calculation acknowledged by scientists worldwide for hundreds of years is inaccurate - or something pulled these buildings down at a faster rate. And 'something' caused the delayed implosion of Building Number 7, which only caught fire, in a modest way, at 3.00pm. It collapsed at 5.25pm in what appeared to be a conventional demolition, with the walls falling neatly in on themselves and the rubble being cracked and broken but not pulverised. Neither FEMA nor any other authority published information to explain what had happened to this building, which had housed a CIA Station, offices of the Department of Defense and the Secret Service, and a $13 million 'control bunker' which had been constructed on the orders of Mayor Rudolph Giuliani. As for Building Number 6, a huge explosion appeared to emanate from the centre section of this building, but it only caught fire later - burning for hours at elevated temperatures, raising the so far unanswered question as to what caused the building to explode before it caught fire.

BUILDINGS DEMOLISHED BY HIGH-TECH EXPLOSIVES

The grey cloud that blasted out concentrically from the imploding buildings, as thousands of people (but no employees, for instance, of Morgan Stanley and other organisations 'in the know') were being murdered and billions of dollars' worth of property was being destroyed, which chased thousands of New Yorkers down the Downtown streets, covering the entire area as far as the Author's Midtown Office with a grey sand-like substance, has of course, been analysed. It consisted of crystallised cement and other materials. No blast of jet fuel, mixed with air, could have created this crystallisation, because jet fuel only expands at 208 feet per second, which is not enough speed for the purpose. Nor could a compression demolition have induced such crystallisation, as it would not have created sufficient latent energy: the cement would have cracked and broken, but it would not have pulverised.

The only way that the molecular composition of these materials could have been so scrambled would have been by means of the use of small-scale nuclear devices or high-tech explosives. Although there were reports of 'hot-spots' for many weeks afterwards, unusual readings of radioactivity were never reported (although they could have been suppressed of course); and in their absence, the only alternative cause of the buildings collapsing in breach of the law of gravity would be the use of modern explosives. High-tech explosives such as RDX or C-4 can expand at more than 1,000 feet per second, while creating ultra-hot temperatures. Modern explosives could cause the crystallisation of the building materials, creating indeed a vacuum that would, in combination, induce the buildings to implode at faster than normal speed, leaving a residue of extremely high temperatures. The dust from the explosions, which saturated, for instance, this Author's Midtown Office, had a high mercury content as well as radioactivity from smoke alarm detectors and other poisonous toxins all breathed in by New Yorkers, along with the stench of rotting flesh, which lasted well into 2002. As late as March that year, the smell persisted, although New Yorkers seemed impervious to it.

All 9/11 investigations, or purported independent analyses, that overlook the use of explosives have been cover-up operations, organised 'with malice aforethought' (see below) and designed to confuse the public and to divert attention from any focus upon the demolition of the buildings due to the placement of high-tech explosives inter alia below ground level. Figures 65 and 66 show the scene of the devastation taken from a law office building a few months after the atrocities: note the adjacent upright buildings, with respect to which impact from the explosions was not sufficient to cause more than repairable damage. One further piece of evidence is appropriately included here. On 16th September 2001, NASA flew a special aircraft over the site of the New York atrocity to take measurements and to create a thermal surface map. Within the week since the atrocities, hundreds of truckloads of debris and human remains had already been carried off site, and firemen had sprayed millions of gallons of water on the smoking rubble. The immediate availability of clean-up equipment on such a colossal scale was in itself 'remarkable'.

The results of NASA's investigations revealed (contrary to the interests of cover-up operatives) that there were indeed several 'hot spots' with temperatures in excess of 1,000 degrees Fahrenheit on the surface (never mind the temperatures far below ground level), while there was one hot-spot at the South Tower that recorded 1,377 degrees. New Yorkers, and this Author, noticed that the area continued to smoke for weeks. The Author's Midtown Office was, as noted, covered in dirty grey particles the following October; and as late as February 2002, the stench of rotting flesh, which New Yorkers (as opposed to part-time New Yorkers like the Author) appeared to have become accustomed to, at times made the Author feel nauseous. Figure 67 on page 425 is a photograph of the Twin Towers taken by the Author's youngest daughter, who had just reached

Figure 65: View of the devastation following 9/11 from an adjacent building, taken several months after the Illuminati's 'pearl harbor' defining event for the 21st century. The buildings were demolished by a cadence of computer-controlled bomb explosions triggered deep underground, in accordance with the final paragraph of Protocol 9 of the 'blame-shifting' 'sib' document called 'The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion', which explicitly stated that 'capitals will be blown into the air' from underground subterranean corridors.

New York on a round-the-world trip: the picture was taken from the Staten Island Ferry on the evening of 10th September 2001. Alice and a friend had originally decided to visit the Twin Towers at about 9.00 am on 11th September 2001, but decided on the spur of the moment to do so on the evening of 10th September, which they did before boarding the ferry for a view from the water. That night, Alice could not sleep and was disturbed by an ominous expectation of the catastrophe which duly occurred at the moment when she and her friend had intended to be among visitors to the Twin Towers.

SERIES OF BOMBS DETONATE IN CADENCE

Neither tons of jet fuel, nor a compression demolition, have the potential to create the levels of surface heat recorded by NASA, much less to maintain such heat levels for days afterwards; so any impartial investigator would need to have concluded that there was another explanation for such extreme temperatures. Moreover steel melts at about 2,700 degrees, and the vast steel columns at the base of the foundations, some 70 feet below ground, had been melted. When elaborate preplanned cover-up arrangements were put in place ahead of the atrocities, someone forgot to indoctrinate the Columbia University Seismology Group working at the Lamont-Doherty Earth Laboratory. Figure 64 on page 420 contains (A) the University's seismic data for the North Tower and (B) seismic data for the collapse of WTC Building Number 7. The South Tower registered a tremor of 2.1 and came down in 10.4 seconds, as indicated. The North Tower registered a Richter tremor of 2.3 and collapsed in 8.1 seconds. The pattern registered by Colombia University's Twin Towers seismic data indicates that a series of bombs were detonated in cadence (as directed by the relevant controlling computer software), with the last

Figure 66: The precision demolition of the Twin Towers and other buildings is demonstrated in this further view of the devastation inflicted on 9/11, by the fact that the adjacent building in the picture is still standing as though nothing had happened. A few months after the event, the Author dined in a restaurant close to the site, and noticed that life continued as normal, with no-one apparently discussing the issues surrounding the Illuminati's arrogant 'bold, brazen, Bolshevik' provocation to set their agenda for the 21st century.

explosion being the largest charge. The pattern registered by the collapse of World Trade Center Building Number 7 was significantly smaller in magnitude, and represented the signature of a conventional explosion. The Author hypothesises that Building Number 7 was meant to have been demolished simultaneously amid the confusion of the destruction of the Twin Towers, but that something malfunctioned and that it had to be demolished separately, as soon as possible, by hastily contrived back-up means[2].

Among almost 3,000 people who were murdered in this abomination were 658 employees of the financial firm Cantor Fitzgerald. Maturing derivatives contracts held by that firm were, as a consequence of the atrocity, all of a sudden forgiven. The firm 'dealt with' the aftermath of this matter by dedicating 25% of the partners' profits to the families of the murder victims for five years (ending on 11th September 2006) and providing for medical and welfare costs for the victims's families for ten years.

On the morning of 11th September 2001, a custodian and key-holder at the World Trade Center, William Rodriguez, was late arriving at work, having overslept, and was walking to his office in the tunnel which joined the Twin Towers. This experienced eye-witness, who knew every coiner of the structures, reports that while in this tunnel he heard blasts from the basement area at about 8.30 am, which was significantly earlier than the time at which the first aircraft allegedly hit the South Tower. As the holder of master keys, he was able to rescue a large number of people from certain death, and his testimony is among that of others who have confirmed multiple explosive charges throughout the buildings which occurred quite independently of aircraft collisions. Mr Rodriguez was to have broadcast his account on the Telemundo TV station, a subsidiary of NBC, which is in turn owned by General Electric, an organisation controlled by the Rockefeller family. Commissioned by Telemundo in 2005 to appear in their studios, he was informed at the last minute that the broadcast was to be postponed, ostensibly while the producers sought a witness who would be in a position to put forward a contrary perspective. Naturally, the broadcast never happened.

As has been the case with all the deliberately traumatising mass psychological operations (Psy-Ops) events contrived over the years by the Illuminati, the authors of the 9/11 catastrophe, like the perpetrators of the murders of President Jack Kennedy and Princess Diana, have remained at large. In all these cases, as with 9/11, a vast, preplanned cover-up operation, elaborated by specialist diversion operatives, was in place: in the case of Diana, her obituary was written on the Friday prior to her murder.

THE OFFICIAL INFORMATION WARFARE DIVERSION OPERATION

In the United States, the cover-up team, with unlimited funds at their disposal, acquired immediate control of alternative media perceptions, so that the authorities were able to direct not only the '9/11 Movement', but also the 9/11 issue in the alternative media.

The main device used for this purpose was the creation of fake Internet opposition sites - plus the misdirection of websites, the creation of front organisations (see below), the invention of pseudo-activist groups and the mobilisation of Hogging and web journalism liars, all acting in concert to create an 'impenetrable fog'. These people control a vast amount of the deliberately conflicting 'free' information that is available on the Internet, and many such intelligence community-related 'assets' were put in place long before 9/11. Their primary objective in the aftermath of 9/11 was to ensure that if any truth about the Illuminati mass murders and atrocities committed on 9/11 were to emerge, it would be 'truth' designed and controlled by intelligence agencies - with CIA assets in position (as in the press rooms of the mainstream media) to ensure misdirection, diversion, disinformation and damage limitation.

Another device was the igniting of what have been termed 9/11 Movement 'flame wars', in which different intelligence 'assets' attacked each other in order to undermine their credibility individually and collectively, and to disillusion ordinary grassroots 9/11 truth activists, with whom the United States is richly endowed. In other words, protest at the obvious inaccuracies, lies, diversionary reports and disinformation surrounding 9/11 has been 'successfully' controlled, managed, and defanged by intelligence operatives from the outset[3]. The underlying purpose of this vast damage limitation exercise was to leave the field open for false 'truth seekers' whose real job has been to cover up the corruption, or who belong to rival criminalist gangs seeking to destabilise the organised criminal operatives currently in power. For the perpetrators of 9/11 have everything to lose if they are exposed, and masses to gain if they remain in control. 'Furthermore, 9/11 was not their first crime. Many of them were involved in other crimes that they must cover up'[4] as well. And that's putting it mildly.

The Author was himself witness to a 'fake front' operation controlled by intelligence operatives - which, in this case, went badly wrong. The 9/11 atrocities form part of a litany of criminal operations perpetrated by rival yet cooperating Illuminati criminalists stretching back for decades, at least as far back as President Kennedy's murder, but in reality to years earlier. In June 2002, the Author was invited to a presentation by an organisation calling itself Unanswered Questions, run by an operative named Kyle Hence, which purported to represent the interests of the 9/11 bereaved. Mr Hence collaborated with an independent patriotic activist who contributed 50% of the cost of hir-

Figure 67: View of the Downtown Manhattan skyline with the Twin Towers on the evening of 10th September 2001, taken from the Staten Island Ferry by the Author's fourth daughter. She had intended to visit the Towers at about 9.00am on 9th September with a friend, but they changed their schedule and paid a visit to the Towers on the afternoon of 10th September instead. This is believed to be the last picture of the towers before 9/11.

ing the large room in Washington DC, for the meeting. Not long before the scheduled date, the independent activist received requests from a significant number of people who called 'out of the blue' asking if they could attend.

At the meeting, which was packed, 32 sets of photocopied documents were distributed, all obtained from public domain postings, 'dissident' intelligence sources, the Internet (and all of the above) which included copies of financial and banking transactions relating inter alia to the raising, under President George Bush Sr., of $27.5 trillion from over 200 international banks, the funds to be converted into US dollars, ostensibly for the benefit of a system for sustaining measures to protect what is euphemistically referred to as the 'Global Security Environmenf. The documents showed that for about 18 months in 1989-91, the 'payouts' in dollars were stalled at the Federal Reserve Board, under Dr Alan Greenspan; that colossal sums (calculated in 2005 by the Author to have amounted to $742.5 billion, but now believed to have been much higher) were rifled and diverted to recipients including offshore accounts held on behalf of the Bush Family and a lawyer acting for the Vatican and/or Opus Dei. After the US Secret Service Principal of these funds, Leo Wanta, identified and resisted Presidential demands for corrupt payments, he was framed, and deprived of his liberty for an intended for 22 years on fake charges, so that further looting by corrupt operatives and banks could proceed.

The 32 files were distributed among attendees at this meeting, which was ostensibly about helping the families of the 9/11 bereaved, but which degenerated into sharp exchanges as intelligence operatives masquerading as concerned activists on the platform argued with each other, whereupon one of them seized the microphone from a rival and proceeded more or less to close the meeting. The Author was a recipient of one of the 32 files; and with one exception, all the remaining files were distributed among the many attendees who had suddenly asked to be present. It subsequently transpired that these copies of the files had all been handed to intelligence officers - which meant, of course, that the damning documentary evidence wound up under the control of the CIA at Langley, which meant in turn that it was 'sterilised' and removed from the public domain. Or so the intelligence community believed - until the Author published excerpts from the financial documents in March 2003, followed by a complete exposure of all the relevant Federal Reserve financial transaction documents in February 2005[s]. The other set of documents ostensibly not 'collected' by intelligence operatives on that occasion wound up in the hands of a well-known journal, which had done nothing by this book's press date to publicise the sobering international financial intelligence contained therein.

BLOODLETTING, ATROCITIES AND FRANTIC DAMAGE LIMITATION

On 26th December 2004, a devastating underwater 'earthquake' caused a tsunami that killed at least 300,000 people (100 times more than those killed in the 9/11 atrocities). Two impeccable intelligence sources, backed by separate independent research and supported by advance information provided by a third intelligence source, have confirmed that the devastation in Southeast Asia was induced by the use of satellite-mounted scalar technology. When one of the sources was asked whether the devastating earthquake that occurred in Pakistan in October 2005 was 'natural', the answer was in the negative, augmented by: 'And they know all about it'. This is true of the Indonesians in respect of the tsunami, also. Some idea of the deviousness of the mentality that presides over these deliberately traumatising atrocities can be derived from the following passage by the US intelligence analyst Michael Ruppert (who has since fled to Caracas), referred to earlier, who displays extensive US 'intelligence connections' which naturally places the independent observer on guard for possible disinformation: but in the United States, internal rivalries and tensions within the intelligence community and between its controlled and compromised placemen at the highest levels of government have long since resulted in the exposure of information and assessments which would otherwise never have been revealed, such as Rupert's assessment concerning 9/11 that:

'Within their own mindset and within the parameters of an economic and governmental system that functioned (as it continues to function) in the mode of organized crime - incapable of transparency, riddled with corruption and cooked books, based upon the destruction of life for the sake of net profits and supremacy - these men, led by Dick Cheney, chose what they thought was their only logical option. I believe it seemed to them the "right" thing to do; after all, it was only a few thousand lives' that were lost on 9/11. 'Other rulers have made similar choices in the pasf; and a certain ruler closer to where this Author is sitting has done so more recently, with two fatalities and two targets whose lives were saved by a dissident intelligence intervention. 'But as all empires learn, once the river is crossed there is no turning back. In front of that decision, there lay a continuum of ever more vicious bloodletting, decline, and collapse'[6].

The tensions between different factions within US intelligence or the Illuminati, or both, lead frequently to ugly scenes, such as an occasion in 2004 when, together on a podium, George Bush Sr. was observed pushing on former President Clinton's chest. At the time of President Reagan's memorial service in Washington, a putsch was foiled which had been intended to result in the assassinations of President George W. Bush Jr, Vice President Cheney, and the two most senior figures from the House of Representatives and the Senate - as a result of which Colin Powell would have been catapulted into the US Presidency. A second attempted coup, which was thwarted by British intelligence, was to have occurred when Air Force One was coming into land at Istanbul Airport for a NATO Summit Meeting. Components for an SA-2 missile battery which were to have been fired at Air Force One as it descended into the airport were discovered in a crate of spare parts, and the information was passed on to US intelligence in time to thwart the catastrophe.

Damage limitation and control is such an essential prerequisite for the management of the consequences of intelligence scams, atrocities, abominations and deception machinations, that colossal resources have to be available for deployment in order for cover-up operations to proceed and to be managed in accordance with the perpetrators' intentions. It was noticeable that at the close of 2004, certain known intelligence operatives masquerading as independent analysts with prominent website presence, were telling friends of the Author that the 'phase' of post-9 /11 trauma was 'all over now'. What they meant was that, so far as the controllers were concerned, the volume of sand that had been thrown into the air, and the levels and dimensions of the confusion that had been inserted into and generated within the public domain, had proved more than adequate for what was then the crime of the century (9/11) to have been successfully covered with so many false leads, diversionary enquiries and 'conspiracy theories' that we could now at last all 'move on' -ready to manage the fallout from the next series of revolutionary provocations. So when it came to the scalar attack which generated the freak weather conditions supposedly 'responsible' for the breach of the ancient levees around New Orleans in September 2005, it was only necessary for FEMA (complete with its own pre-installed scapegoat, Michael Brown) to sit and do not a lot (apart from perpetrating such 'mistakes' as deliberately sending trucks with bottled water to the wrong side of the collapsed Mississippi bridge), to ensure that, as usual, commentators competed among themselves to add to the public's confusion about what was happening.

During that crisis, Mrs Barbara Bush was reported to have commented, concerning the poor Blacks who lost everything and were subsequently displaced, that 'they were deprived anyway' - which must have cheered many of those still able to operate battery-driven radios in the filthy Convention Center, or else who found themselves locked up in 'Camp Amtrak', the Amtrak Rail Station which became a Federal prison overnight. And amid the confusion, everyone forgot to report that a resident living close to the main levee had heard a loud explosion at about 4.00am on the night of the hurricane, after it had departed. It later transpired that the levee had been breached at great depth, in a manner that could only have been procured by prepositioned explosives.

The second leading Illuminati 'Black' regime of the 20th century, familiar to all of us as Nazi Germany, perpetrated its satanic atrocities in the perverse knowledge that no-one would believe what was happening, should leaks take place. And indeed, even within the innermost councils of the British Government, hardly anyone in power was prepared to waste time considering what the Nazis' industrialised murder machine was up to. So when Mr Cheney commented, after a belated visit to New Orleans, that 'we are on top of this exercise', no doubt only a handful of alert observers knew what he meant.

ALL THESE ATROCITIES WERE IMPLEMENTED FROM BELOW GROUND

Which brings us back to our starting point. It will have been noticed that the atrocities listed were all associated with below-ground explosions or subterranean upheavals. Immediately following the 7/7 explosions on the London Underground, and the explosion aboard a bus triggered by a terrorist who was thought to have been en route to an Underground Station, the Author identified the following text, which appears as the final paragraph of Protocol Number 9 in the notorious 'sib' document (slanted to implicate the Jews: see below) universally referred to as 'The Protocols of the Elders of Zion':

'You may say that the Goyim [meaning 'Gentile cattle'] will rise upon us, arms in hand, if they guess what is going on before the time comes; but in the West we have against this a manoeuvre of such appalling terror that the very stoutest hearts quail -the undergrounds, metropolitains, those subterranean corridors which, before the time comes, will be driven under all the capitals and from whence those capitals will be blown into the air with all their organisations and archives'[7].

It is guaranteed that no intelligence officer anywhere in the world will have been aware of, or interested in, the existence of this text ahead of any of the underground atrocities listed. However it is upon the basis of this text that the Author has advised certain authorities that the cities that are at special risk from these attacks are those which possess underground railway systems. The Author has done this knowing that the authorities concerned are themselves associated with forces responsible for the orchestration of these atrocities, which are intended to catapult the world into the New Underworld Order.

Before addressing the vexed issue of what 'The Protocols' - which are the Illuminati's instructions to 'the interested', slanted in such a way as to ensure that the Jews receive the blame for the atrocities committed in fulfilment of the instructions, which was how the Holocaust materialised - it is pertinent to draw attention to several other passages from The Protocols of the Elders of Zion which have powerful contemporary resonance:

- Protection against (centrally manipulated) diseases by means of the central control and delivery of vaccines: 'It is indispensable to trouble in all countries the people's relations with their governments, so as to utterly exhaust humanity with dissension, hatred, struggle, envy and even by the use of torture, by starvation, BY THE INCOCULATION OF DISEASES, by want, so that the GOYIM see no other issue than to take refuge in our complete sovereignty in money and in all else'. Protocol Number 10, penultimate paragraph, op. tit. [see Note 7], pages 178-179. Note that the words in capital letters were capitalised in the original. Recall those contaminated flu jabs from the Liverpool factory of Chiron (the name of an odious underworld creature from Greek demonolo-gy) in 2004, and the 'bird 'flu' scare that erupted in the autumn of 2005.

- Creation of fear of catastrophic events as a pretext for the removal of freedom: 'There is another reason also why they [the Goyim] will close their eyes: for we shall keep promising them to give back all the liberties we have taken away as soon as we have quelled the enemies of peace and tamed all parties'. [In the prevailing fake 'war against terror' context, liberties have been, and continue to be taken away, without even the promise of their restoration]. Op. cit., page 180, Protocol Number 11.

- Enticement of targeted elites into Masonic Lodges for indoctrination, diversion, perpetuation and control purposes: [This] 'has served as the basis for our organisation of secret Masonry which is not known to, and aims which are not even so much as suspected by, these Goy cattle, attracted by us into the "Show" army of Masonic Lodges in order to throw dust in the eyes of their fellows'. Op. cit., page 181, Protocol Number 11.

- Geomasonic interpretation of the word 'freedom' • The future of the press • Control of the media • Masonic solidarity in the press of today: The word freedom... is defined by us as follows: Freedom is the right to do that which the law allows. This interpretation of the word will at the proper time be of service to us, because all freedom will thus be in our hands, since the laws will abolish or create only that which is desirable for us according to the aforesaid programme.... [Details of practical methods to be used to control the press]. Among those making attacks upon us will also be organs established by us, but they will attack exclusively points that we have pre-determined to alter.... Not a single announcement will reach the public without our control' [Consider the foregoing discussion about the fake, controlled Internet websites, which are listed in Note 4; and consider the situation prevailing in US newsrooms, where decisions as to which stories are to be covered and given prominence are taken on the basis of daily instructions from intelligence officers, a situation which appears to be replicated in the United Kingdom]. Op. tit., pages 181-182, Protocol Number 12.

- Multiplication of Masonic Lodges • Masonry as leader and guide of all secret societies: 'We shall create and multiply free Masonic Lodges [note the lie here: membership is far from free - Ed.] in all the countries of the world, absorb into them all who may become or who are prominent in public activity, for in these Lodges we shall find our principal intelligence office and means of influence. All these Lodges we shall bring under one central administration, known to us alone and to all others absolutely unknown, which will be composed of our learned elders. The Lodges will have their representatives who will serve to screen the above-mentioned administration of Masonry and from whom will be issued the watchword and programme. In these Lodges we shall tie together the knot which binds together all revolutionary and liberal elements. Among the members of these Lodges will be almost all the agents of international and national police since their service is for us irreplaceable in the respect that the police is in a position not only to use its own particular measures with the insubordinates, but also to screen our activities and to provide pretexts for discontents, et cetera...'. [In Britain, Masonic membership within the police and legal professions is a very grave problem]. Op cit., pages 193-194, Protocol Number 15.

- All plots, coups d'etat and power grabs controlled: 'If there should arise... a plot, then at the head of that plot will be no other than one of our most trusted servants'. [Examples: Lenin, Trotsky, Bela Kurt, Hitler, Mao Tse-Tung]. Op. cit, page 194, Protocol Number 194.

- We shall arrange elections in favour of such presidents as have in their past some dark, undiscovered stain; then they will be trustworthy agents for the accomplishment of our plans out of fear of revelations and from the natural desire of everyone who has attained power, namely, the retention of the privileges, advantages and honour connected with the Office of President'. [People selected for high office (Ford, Clinton, Bushes, Heath, Blair et al.) are operatives or personnel with known secret vices, often paedophilia - the worst vice of all - so that they can be controlled by blackmail. This is standard intelligence community procedure]. Op. cit., page 176, Protocol 10.

- Use of terrorism to force governments into compliance: 'In a word, to sum up our system of keeping the governments of the Goyim in Europe in check, we shall show our strength to one of them by terrorist attempts...'. Op. cit., page 176, Protocol 10. This device was used by the Germans fronted by the French, against the British on 7th and 23rd July 2005. Shortly after that event, the Author was informed that instructions for the atrocities had been confirmed from the highest level of the French Government, with electronic traffic monitored from Singapore (where President Chirac had flown in order to pitch for Paris to be awarded the 2012 Olympics), and later from the Gleneagles meeting of the Group of Eight industrialised countries. Due to the French assumption that GCHQ reports to the Secret UK 'Black' intelligence agency operating within MI6 which in turn reports to DVD, Dachau, Chirac may have assumed that his terror instructions would never be leaked. Due to certain operational mishaps and following forensic analysis, British security authorities discovered the European provenance of the London atrocities and demanded an immediate cessation, with an undercurrent of threat that Britain would leave the European Union if its demands were not met. The upshot of all this was that the IRA and its splinters, controlled by German 'Black' intelligence, was instructed by its German controllers to proceed immediately with full decommissioning of its weaponry, which (for public consumption) took place almost at once afterwards. Following the failed terrorist attacks on 23rd July, or perhaps prior to them, foreign 'Black' intelligence is believed to have ordered the 15 terrorist cells then known by MI5 to be operating in Britain, to cease and desist pending further instructions. It later transpired, as noted, that a devastating fifth explosion was intended to have flooded the Northern Line.

- The expansion of weaponry ['inventors of evil things': Romans, Chapter 1, verse 30]: 'The intensification of armaments, the increase of police forces, are essential for the completion of [our] plans. Op. cit., page 166, Protocol 7.

- Elevation of economics to the highest profile, as a control mechanism: 'We shall surround our government with a whole world of economists.... Around us will be a whole constellation of bankers, industrialists and capitalists and - the main thing, millionaires - because in substance, everything will be settled by the question of figures'. Op. cit., page 168, Protocol Number 8.

- The knowing and deliberate, systematic corruption of all youth: 'We have fooled, bemused and corrupted the youth of the Goyim by rearing them in principles and theories which are known by us to be false although it is by us that they have been inculcated'. Op. cit., page 171, Protocol 9.

- Deliberate complexity of legislation: Above the existing laws without substantially altering them, and by merely twisting them into contradictions of interpretations, we have erected something grandiose in the way of results. These results found expression first in the fact that the interpretations masked the laws: afterwards they entirely hid them from the eyes of the governments owing to the impossibility of making anything out of the tangled web of legislation. This is the origin of the theory of course, of arbitration'. [Note the literary 'style' here which mimics the use of the past tense, familiar to readers of the Old Testament, as substitute for the future tense]. See box below for an example of perverse legislative complexity. Op. cit., pages 171-172, Protocol 9.

- Trivialisation of reality for consumption by the masses, and the deliberate erasure of knowledge of the past (as, for example is imposed upon the British population via the media, with its focus on the 'celebritism', and through coarse and degrading 'entertainment'): The complete wrecking of the Christian religion will not be long delayed. The peoples will be kept distracted by trivial amusements from becoming troublesome and asking questions. History will be rewritten for their delusion, for we shall erase from the memory of men all facts of previous centuries which are undesirable to us, and leave only those which depict all the errors of national governments'.

THE BLUEPRINT FOR THE ILLUMINATI'S AGENTUR

The debate as to whether the 'Protocols of the Elders of Zion' represents a document of the Jewish Kahal, serving as a blueprint for the Illuminati inside Freemasonry is still unresolved in the minds of many analysts. A campaign against all mention of The Protocols has continued ever since the proprietor of 'The Times' of London was certified insane, two

EXAMPLE OF DELIBERATE LEGISLATIVE COMPLEXITY

A UK House of Commons Committee was considering, on 28th October 2005, a small change in the rules governing the fast-track expansion of popular schools. Statutory Instrument 2005 No. 1801, The Education (School Organisation Proposals) (England) (Amendment) Regulations 2005 proposed a two-week reduction in two consultation periods, and applied the regulation to all Secondary Schools, not 'popular' ones only. It had taken 15 months to have this change cleared by Parliament. Even the obscure Minister responsible admitted that she was uncertain whether the new rule applied to Primary Schools as well as to Secondary Schools. Writing in The Times', London, on 29th October 2005, Alice Miles commented:

The regulation gave a useful insight into the bureaucracy that British parents... face. The 'Information to be contained in published proposals' began: "(1) This regulation prescribes for the purposes of Section 28(3)(a), Section 29(3)(a), paragraph 5(2)(a) of Schedule 7 (where the proposals relate to a mainstream school) and paragraph 5(2)(a) of Schedule 23, the information which proposals published under Section 28 or 29, paragraph 5 of Schedule 7 or paragraph 5 of Schedule 23 must contain". Excu...u...u...se me?

Such deliberately obfuscatory gobbldegook can only, of course, be deciphered by expensive and, by definition, unproductive lawyers, whose livelihoods are guaranteed by such perverse legislative drafting. At the European Union level, verbal obfuscation has long since been elevated to the status of a refined art form, with dense and contradictory language guaranteed to enable the bureaucracy to escape responsibility for whatever superfluous legislative aberration may lurk within the parasitical entity's opaque drafting. Some years ago, Brussels officials brazenly celebrated the fact that their structures had released over a billion documents since this political control mechanism was established in response to the imperatives of secret German long-range strategy [see Chapter 8]. But British official legal drafting is just as perversely obfuscatory and therefore deceitful. This behaviour corresponds with the requirement cited above, for the deliberate complexity of legislation: and of course MPs are culpably ignorant of this rule. ■

years after publishing a long article on 8th May 1920, in which he had commented that 'An impartial investigation of these would-be documents and their history is most desirable.... Are we to dismiss the whole matter without inquiry and to let the influence of such a book as this work unchecked?' 'The Morning Post', which was then the most sober and the oldest British newspaper, published 23 articles, also calling for investigation (not acceptance: investigation). Having been certified insane by an unknown doctor from abroad, the publisher of 'The Times' was forcibly removed from control of his publications, whereupon 'The Times' published an article dismissing 'The Protocols' as a plagiarism of an earlier French-Jewish work. In the United States, Mr Henry Ford, who had caused his 'Dearborn Independent' to publish a series of articles on 'The Protocols' of which 1.5 million reprints were sold, was prevailed upon in 1927 to publish an apology addressed to a well-known American Jew. The pressure applied to Mr Ford reportedly came from Jewish car dealers upon whom the fortunes of his concern depended, just as a new model Ford was about to be marketed[8].

However if all Jewish connotations, angles and slants are removed from the text, it reads precisely as a set of instructions to student members of the Illuminati's Agentur. On this construction, some have argued persuasively that this document represents the Illuminati's blueprint for World Revolution, skillfully skewed so that the Jews would receive the blame for the abominations that would follow. Indeed, the Nazi attacks on the Jews, and the Holocaust itself, can be explained as one terrible example of the 'success' of such a diabolical strategy of false witness. As one the British War Correspondent, Douglas Reed, one of the foremost scholars of this subject wrote, in a brilliant posthumous book

'The authors may have been Jewish, non-Jewish, or anti-Jewish. That is immaterial.... Only the denouement remains, fiasco or fulfilment. It is a grandiose plan, and in my estimation [it] cannot succeed. But it has existed for at least 180 years [at the time that Douglas Reed's work was completed in 1956, taking us straight to 1776 - Ed.] and probably for much longer, and 'The Protocols' provided one more proof in a chain of proofs [of the conspiracy - Ed] that has since been greatly lengthened. The conspiracy for world dominion through a world slave state exists and cannot at this stage be abruptly checked or broken off. [Given] the momentum that it has acquired, it must now go on to fulfilment or failure. Either will be destructive for a time, and hard for those of the time in which the denouement comes'[9]. We live in precisely that time.

ISSUE OF WHETHER THE CURSE IS JEWISH OR NOT IS DIVERSIONARY

Some brief recapitulation may be helpful here. As discussed in Chapter 5, Jewish authorities themselves state that 'Masonry is Jewish'. Yet despite the categorical and wholly convincing, authoritative statement by Dr Isaac M. Wise, cited by Samuel Oppenheim (see page 274) that 'Masonry is a Jewish institution', which is supported by so much objective evidence, the respected Rabbi Marvin S. Antelman disagrees, tracing the 'Jewishness' of Illuminised Freemasonry to the malevolent continuing influence of the 17th century false Messiah, Shabbetai Tzvi, who convinced perhaps half of world Jewry that he was the true Messiah and spawned a vast, pagan, permissive 'Sabbatian' movement. However Rabbi Antelman curiously fails to recall what the prophet Ezekiel witnessed the house of Israel doing 'in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery'. The Grand Lodge in Great Queen Street, Central London, has a large so-called 'Star of David' on the far wall, which dominates the dark chamber, even though, until the late 18th century, Jews had been barred from the Lodge. But Masonry is also, in part, Rosicrucian, as also discussed in Chapter 5. Most of all, it is both - being of the Kabbalah, the fountainhead of the poisonous waters of Babylon, seat (or a primary seat) of the 'Ancient Mysteries', which have to do with sorcery, divination, magic, the invocation of evil spirits and, as provided for in the rare Rosicrucian-Masonic book by Manly P. Hall which has also been discussed, the summoning up of the Devil himself, or of demons representing themselves as the Devil. With such Works of Darkness, no-one should ever even contemplate having any dealings, since their end is always the same (as the Devil has only one product): death, both spiritual and physical.

Freemasonry is nothing more nor less than what 'the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery. For they say, The Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth'[10]. This was part of a vision of the prophet Ezekiel, who was shown by the Lord the abominations committed by members of the house of Judah[11] in the Masonic Lodge of the era.

These practices were acquired from Babylon, where men (like the Masons today) were 'girded with girdles upon their loins'[12], from the unreformed pagan Devil-worshipping tribes of Canaan, and from Egypt (the Biblical metaphor for 'the Darkness'). Ezekiel explains, using the metaphor of two young women, Aholah (identified by Ezekiel as Samaria) and Aholibah (identified by Ezekiel as Jerusalem), how the children of Israel went 'a-whoring' after pagan false deities - lusting after their associated abominations (precisely) of sorcery, divination, magic, and the invocation of evil spirits.

At the time of Jesus, the Samaritans were looked down upon by the scribes, the Pharisees and the people of Jerusalem as a mixed race, polluted by intermarriage with Assyrians and other pagan peoples, especially the Babylonians: 'Aholah played the harlot when she was mine' (i.e., the Lord's); and she doted on her lovers, on the Assyrians her neighbours... with all their idols she defiled herself... Neither left she her whore-

THE LEGISLATIVE AND REGULATORY REFORM ACT 2006

As soon as Tony Blair was elected leader of the Labour Party, he removed Clause 4 from the Party's Constitution (that is, he rejected nationalisation), courted big business, embraced the cor-poratist-collectivist European Union (having stood in Beaconsfield in 1983 on a ticket of exit from the EEC altogether), and, in power, passed legislation to control elections and electoral funding (with the exception of funding by trade unions). Blair can be described as a corporatist, in the European tradition. No other Prime Minister in history has attended Parliament so rarely or has exhibited such contempt for the democratic process. This corresponds to the Illuminati's underlying contempt for democracy, which is viewed as simply an interim stage towards the objective of the correlation of forces, resources and assets into the hands of the controlling 'brethren'.

The most brazen of all assaults on the democratic system in Britain was placed before the Westminster Parliament in the first quarter of 2006, called the Legislative and Regulatory Reform Bill. This gives Ministers unfettered power to alter any law passed by Parliament. There are two cosmetic limitations: first, new crimes cannot be 'created' if the penalty for them is greater than two years in jail; and secondly, taxation cannot be increased. But any other law can be changed by regulation, no matter how important. All Ministers will need to do is to propose an order, wait a few weeks: and voila, the law will have been changed. Ministers will no longer need to attend tedious debates in which they have to answer awkward questions. No amendments to the proposed orders will be allowed. The bill replaces an existing law that 'allows' Ministers to relieve regulatory burdens. Naturally, though, the law enables Ministers to create extra regulation, including new crimes, and to change the structure of Government itself. Any body created by statute, including local authorities, the Courts and even companies, will be liable to find themselves reorganised or even abolished. Since the powers of the House of Lords are defined by Act of Parliament even they are subject to the Bill. The Bill even applies to itself.

Under cover of double-minded socialism, the Illuminati arranged for a fascist Government to pass its own Enabling Act as in Nazi Germany in 1933. And the business sector was all in favour. ■

doms brought from Egypt', where the object of worship was death. 'And when her sister Aholibah saw this, she was more corrupt in her inordinate love than she (Aholah)': in other words, those of the City of David, which the Lord had chosen to 'dwell therein' as we are told in Scripture, became more corrupt even than those Jews who had intermarried with their pagan neighbours. And to conclude the imagery which conclusively reveals WHY 'Masonry is Jewish', Ezekiel tells us:' Then I saw that she was defiled. And that she increased her whoredoms: for when she saw men pourtrayed upon the wall, the images of the Chaldeans portrayed with vermillion, Girded with girdles upon their loins... all of them princes to look to, after the manner of the Babylonians of Chaldea, the land of their nativity then my mind was alienated from her, as my mind was alienated from her sister. Yet she multiplied her whoredoms, in calling to remembrance the days of her youth, wherein she had played the harlot in the land of Egypt'[13].

In other words, the abominations that the children of Israel learned and participated in before they were 'led out of the darkness towards the light' (the whole story of Exodus being a giant living 'real life' spiritual metaphor), made them inclined and prone to latch on and vulnerable to the abominations, sorcery and devilry that they were surrounded with during their Babylonian captivity, during and after which many of them learned all about, and practiced, the sorcery of the Kabbalah. So the statement that 'Masonry is Jewish' actually means that Masonry has been permeated, polluted and impregnated with the abominations derived by the Jews from the captivity from Babylon, and elaborated by those Jews who have remained spiritually bound in the same satanic captivity to this day - with extremely shallow lip-service being paid in Masonic ritual to the pre-Babylonian Torah of the children of Israel.

Those Jews, led by Ezra, Nehemiah and other great followers of the Lord, who returned from the captivity to Jerusalem and, as prophesied by Isaiah[14], rebuilt the city, are likewise a metaphor for those whom True Christians refer to as 'the remnant' - who believe in and know the Lord Jesus Christ. The rest of Jewry sank into the diversionary byways of Talmudic (Kabbalistic) Judaism, which knows no truth since every phrase of the Torah and other Jewish literature is subject to, as rabbinical scholars insist, 49 different rabbinical interpretations - which means that there is no truth at all, everything is relative, and 'truth' is whichever rabbinical invention or mental exercise 'satisfies' the 'seeker after truth' at any given point in time[15].

THE SEARCH FOR THE TRUTH LEADS WHERE OTHERS FEAR TO TREAD

Thus Freemasonry is 'Jewish' in the sense specifically and exclusively that it is Kabbalistic, and practices the reprobate sorcery of the Kabbalah. Although there are of course Jewish Lodges and many Jews are Masons (most unwisely, given that, of all peoples, they should know better - so that the punishment they are apt to suffer for such waywardness is always the more painful), Masonry does not have any resonance or affiliation with the revelation of the Word of God; and, as such, it is a false, diversionary and exclusively Luciferian invention which exists to intervene in as many lives as possible so as to preclude the lost souls in question from seeking and finding the Lord.

In this context it is important, for anyone who is 'listening', to be aware that the Devil is not interested in being worshipped (as some deluded lost souls imagine), since he is interested only in death and destruction. If he were interested in being worshipped, he would not be so keen on destroying his targets, since they become unable to worship him. He can create nothing outside the realm of sorcery: he can only destroy.

Since we know not least that the only Name to which Evil Spirit will respond and of whom it (both singular and plural) is terrified, is that of Jesus Christ, we know for certain that Jesus Christ is true and 'as advertised'; and since He is the Way, the Truth and the Life, his enemy, Satan, 'that old serpent', is Death. Satan's preoccupation, apart from delivering his product, is not, therefore, to be worshipped: it is to blight the lives of as many human beings as possible so as to prevent them from seeking, finding, and worshipping the Lord. Those who seek Lucifer and attempt to worship him, find themselves trapped and locked inside the fast train to Hades - which is why it was perversely and tragically logical for Jews to be packed by the Goyim, like cattle, into cattle or goods railcars en route to the gas chambers.

Some analysts assert, not without understandable reason, that Freemasonry itself is and represents the Synagogue of Satan - a momentous description used by Jesus Christ, as revealed to his disciple and Apostle John. This Chapter will show that this interpretation is probably incomplete. Jesus refers to the Synagogue of Satan twice in Revelation, and on both occasions states that those of the Synagogue of Satan 'say they are Jews, and are not'. Specifically, at Chapter 2, verse 9, Jesus says: 'I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are of the Synagogue of Satan'[16]; and at Chapter 3, verse 9, Jesus refers to 'them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie'[17].

THE CURSE OF DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS AGAIN

Part of the explanation of Christ's allusion to participants of the Synagogue of Satan, which 'say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie' is explained thus by Friedrich Nietsche: The Jews are the most remarkable people in the history of the world, for when they were confronted with the question, to be or not to be, they chose, with perfectly unearthly deliberation, to be at any price: this price involved a radical falsification of all nature, of all naturalness, of all reality, of the whole inner world, as well as of the outer.... One by one they distorted religion, civilisation, morality, history, and psychology, until each became a contradiction of its natural significance'. Nietsche could have added that the Pharisees, progenitors of Talmudic Zionist Fascism, demand that 'enemies are to be ruthlessly hated', whereas Jesus Christ teaches 'unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you' [Luke, Chapter 6, verses 27-28].

So who, then are 'them of the Synagogue of Satan'? In the careful words of US analyst Craig Heimbichner, the mentality described by Nietsche 'survived as... a religion of the Double Mind, gradually named Judaism. It gathered European converts from the 8th century Kingdom of Khazaria [see page 473 et seq..), forming the basis of the impostor "Jews' spoken of [by Christ] in Revelation, Chapter 2, verse 9 - the Khazars who say they are Jews and are not. This racial masquerade complements a Judaic mentality of duplicity and falsification which was then carried into Christendom, sewing the seeds [of] the contradictions which are at the heart of... modern culture'.

Jesus Christ expounded against the Jews' habitual double-mindedness, so apparent throughout the Old Testament. This Jewish tradition of deceitful double-mindedness, most conspicuously first manifested when Aaron himself created the Golden Calf in the wilderness for the Israelites to worship and to dance around naked, even while his brother Moses was on Mount Sinai receiving the Ten Commandments from God, has proved infectious and has been spread perversely through Freemasonry, the hegemony of secret societies (synarchy) and the controlling structures of Khazarian Illuminist 'New Ageism', to permeate the whole of society.

A glaring example is the reprobate, double-minded attitude prevailing in contemporary Britain towards homosexuality, which is roundly warned against in Scripture (Leviticus Chapter 18, verse 22; Chapter 20, verse 13; Romans Chapter 1, verse 27; and First Corinthians Chapter 6, verses 9-10). On the one hand, criticism of and opposition to this perverse practice is officially condemned to the point of being considered virtually a criminal offence, while on the other hand the prurient media are in the habit of seeking to expose any politician (and there are many) who seeks vain prominence while disguising his homosexuality from his constituents and the public generally. After such exposure, the argument is then routinely inverted, with the 'line' that a person's private life is their own affair and cannot be deemed liable to affect his or her performance as a Member of Parliament. This flexible morality-cum-double-mindedness, worse than hypocrisy, has become almost universal, in multiple contexts*.

But Jesus Christ taught that 'thine eye be single' (Matthew Chapter 6, verse 22; Luke Chapter 11, verse 34), meaning that we must choose and be consistent in the Word of Truth.

DIGGING DEEPER INTO THE 'PROTOCOLS' CONTROVERSY

This controversial document entitled 'The Protocols of the Elders of Zion' was incorporated in a Russian language work published in around 1905 by a certain Professor Nilus, who attempted to interpret 'The Protocols' by reference to events then materialising in Russia. In a series of articles published ('notoriously') by Henry Ford in his newspaper ''The Dearborn Independent' in 1920-22, the American industrialist, who had studied 'The Protocols', realised that their provenance was wholly uncertain, not least because they carried no indication of authorship or signatures. He argued (correctly) that 'the internal evidence makes it clear that 'The Protocols' were not written by a Russian, nor originally in the Russian language, nor under the influence of Russian conditions'[18], despite the fact that Nilus' edition 'gave [the document] a Russian tinge which has been useful to Jewish propagandists in this country [United States] and in England'[19]. ''The Protocols' 'found their way to Russia and were first published there. They have been found by diplomatic officers in manuscript in all parts of the world'[20]. Using his acute powers of analysis, to try to understand why this wholly unprovenanced document had remained the object of such widespread attention and interest, Henry Ford elaborated:

'Wherever Jewish power is able to do so, it has suppressed them, sometimes under the supreme penalty. Their persistence is a fact which challenges the mind. Jewish apologists may explain that persistence on the ground that ''The Protocols' feed the anti-Semitic temper, and therefore are preserved for that service. Certainly there was no wide nor deep anti-Semitic temper in the United States to be fed or that felt the greed for agreeable lies to keep itself alive. The progress of 'The Protocols' in the United States can only be explained on the ground that they supply light and give meaning to certain previously observed facts, and that this light and meaning is so startling as to give a certain standing and importance to these otherwise unaccredited documents. Sheer lies do not live long, their power soon dies. These 'Protocols' are more alive than ever'.

---

* For instance, faced with confirmation and proof, publicised by the Author and a colleague in October 2005, that the European Union Treaties have been routinely procured by means of corrupt payments and are therefore null and void under Article 49 of the 1969 Vienna Convention on Treaties, the entire British media, which normally exposes corruption in order to fill its pages, having been advised in detail of this abomination through the Author's publication International Currency Review (Volume 30, #4], chose en masse (in accordance with long-standing 'instructions', to keep the British people in ignorance), to ignore the whole matter. In so doing, the journalists concerned robbed themselves of all residual moral standing and credibility, since they demonstrated by their indifference to these scandals that they have no objection to the rampant corruption of governance, which is the primary product of this crisis. Yet the same journalists are indeed forever frenetically and venally digging up dirt on targeted public and private figures to whom they may have taken a disliking, for some ephemeral reason or other. Such double-mindedness corrodes the very fabric of society.

'The Protocols' would not be more worthy of study if they bore the name of Theodore Hertzl [founder of modern Zionism]. Their anonymity does not decrease their power any more than the omission of a painter's signature detracts from the art value of a painting'[21].

Henry Ford's acknowledgment that the Protocols are anonymous, is important. He states that 'The Protocols' are a World Program - there is no doubt anywhere of that. Whose program, is stated within the Articles themselves. But as for outer confirmation, which would be the more valuable - a signature, or six signatures, or twenty signatures. ..?' There are none[22]. This implies that Ford thought he knew who was behind "The Protocols', whereas at the same time he admits to remaining baffled.

In further argumentation, Henry Ford wrestled with the issue of 'The Protocols" authorship, noting the distinction made therein between those referred to in the document alternatively as 'the Gentiles' and as Goyim ('cattle'), and 'we', which appears to mean 'we Jews'. Thus, 'We Jews will do this', but 'The Gentiles will be made to do and think these things'[23]. It is "we" for the writers', says Ford, 'and "Gentiles" for those who are being written about. This is brought out very clearly in the Fourteenth Protocol:

"'In this divergence between the Gentiles and ourselves in ability to think and reason is to be seen clearly the seal of our election as the chosen people, as higher human beings, in contrast with the Gentiles who have merely instinctive and animal minds. They observe, but they do not foresee.... It is clear from this that nature herself predestinated us to rule and guide the world". But who is 'us'?

A copy of this document was deposited in the British Museum on 10th August 1906. On 25th June 1920, Herman Bernstein wrote as follows in 'The American Hebrew':

"About a year ago, a representative of the Department of Justice submitted to me a copy of the manuscript of 'The Jewish Peril' by Professor Nilus, and asked for my opinion of the work. He said that the manuscript was a translation of a Russian book published in 1905 which was later suppressed. The manuscript was supposed to contain 'Protocols' of the Wise Men of Zion and was supposed to have been read by Dr Herzl at a secret conference of the Zionist Congress at Basle. He expressed the opinion that the work was probably that of Dr Theodore Herzl.... He said that some American Senators who had seen the manuscript were amazed to find that so many years ago a scheme had been elaborated by the Jews which is now being carried out, and that Bolshevism had been planned years ago by Jews who sought to destroy the world"[24].

MAKES SENSE IF ALL REFERENCES TO THE GOYIM ARE REMOVED

The document was thought by Henry Ford and others to represent alternatively a collection of lecture notes for students, which Ford said 'probably dated from 1896, or the year' when Dr Herzl made some public observations about his Zionist project. The first Zionist Congress was convened in 1887. 'In their present form, which bears evidence of being their original form, there is no contradiction. The allegation of Jewish authorship seems essential to the consistency of the plan'. And yet, Henry Ford wrote: 'If these documents were the forgeries which Jewish apologists claim them to be, the forgers would probably have taken pains to make Jewish authorship so clear that their anti-Semitic purpose could easily have been detected. But only twice is the term "Jew" used in them'[25].

This consideration brought Henry Ford close to unveiling the hidden truth of the matter, for he was correctly dubious that the documents are of Jewish origin: 'Who was it', he asked, 'that first entitled these documents with the name of the "Elders of Zion", is not known. It would be possible without serious mutilation of the documents to remove all hints of Jewish authorship, and yet retain all the main points of the most comprehensive program for world subjugation that has ever come to public knowledge'[26].

Precisely. If references to the Goyitn are removed, and the questionable assumption that the "we" and the "us" represent the Jews, the integrity of the document remains unvi-olated. In other words, The Protocols' represent THE CLASSIC INTELLIGENCE 'SIB' OPERATION, whereby a target's reputation is 'Blackened', so that the target itself can be blamed for abominations planned for the benefit of 'others'; and when the target has been fully exploited, its can be destroyed ('the Holocaust').

Yet Henry Ford also vacillated between concluding that the document's authorship was Jewish, and that it was not. It seems that his main problem was that he could not imagine whose the authorship could be if it was not that of Jewish forces:

'Yet it must be said that to eliminate all hint of Jewish authorship would be to bring out a number of contradictions which do not exist in 'The Protocols' in their present form . And so, having perceived (correctly) that if all hints of Jewish authorship were removed, the coherence of the documents would remain unaffected, Henry Ford abandoned the search, and fell back, more or less, on the assumption that authorship of 'The Protocols' must be Jewish. The reason he did so has already been revealed: he found himself, in 1927, under extreme pressure from a group of (Jewish-owned) car dealerships to renounce any suggestion that 'The Protocols' were of Jewish origin, on pain of having his marketing operation for a new Ford car sabotaged. Actually, a moment's thought would reveal that this was an empty threat, since the dealers' own livelihoods would have been adversely affected by any such commercial sabotage: but it is reliably believed that, facing the need for an immediate decision so as not to destabilise the marketing plan, he succumbed, and consequently distanced himself from all his earlier conclusions and research.

Had Henry Ford perhaps been more familiar with Scripture in general, and with the Book of Revelation in particular, he would probably not have remained semi-deceived. For Revelation Chapter 2, verse 9 and Chapter 3, verse 9, provide us with the authority to be able to make the following assertion Jewish antagonists have been partially correct to condemn the documents as a 'forgery', from their perspective. But it would have been more accurate to describe 'The Protocols of the Elders of Zion' as a blueprint for world conquest and control slanted, as has been proposed, so that the Jews would be blamed, and in order to provide cover for the true perpetrators - our TRUE enemies, the Kabbalistic Illuminati.

These are they, indeed, who are 'of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews and are not, but do lie'[28]. These are the Nazi-type "we" and the "us", who have never had any problem excoriating the Jews, using the Jews as scapegoats, and ensuring that their own appalling sins, scams and abominations are blamed by the Goyim on the Jews. The logic of this deduction (which will be reinforced later) is of course that the Holocaust would have represented no more than 'collateral damage' for these people. It should, accordingly, hardly surprise us that the mind-set which prescribed that the Jews have plotted for millennia against those whom some of them call the Gentiles, the cattle, should have reaped the perennial vengeance of the Goyim themselves, in the format of pogroms down the centuries, and the Holocaust of the Third Reich. Thus far, therefore, identification of 'The Protocols' authorship as being that of the Illuminati, a collaborative 'cutout' for the Jewish Kahal, seems entirely consistent with the facts.

Moreover Henry Ford could take the argument no further, for the reason already mentioned - namely, that he had no other culprit who could readily be identified as the source of the brains behind 'The Protocols'. Instead, Henry Ford found that he could merely point to 'the people against whom the plan is aimed'. The document 'is aimed against the people of the world who are called "Gentiles". It is the frequent mention of "Gentiles" that really decides the purpose of the documents.... This plan aims at the degeneration of the people in order that they may be reduced to confusion of mind and thus manipulated. Popular movements of a "liberal" kind are to be encouraged, all the disruptive philosophies in religion, economics, politics and domestic life are to be sown and watered, for the purpose of so disintegrating social solidarity that a definite plan, herein set forth, may be put through without notice, and the people then moulded to it when the fallacy of these philosophies is shown'[29].

Does this, by any chance, sound at all familiar? Take the language, cited on page 430, about the corruption of children, from Protocol 9, which explicitly states that, even though the perpetrators know that what they intend is wrong, our children are to be corrupted (contrary to the commandment of Jesus Christ for whom the corruption of children is a sin so heinous that the perpetrators deserve to have a heavy weight tied around their necks and to be thrown from cliffs into the depths of the sea):

'We have fooled, bemused and corrupted the youth of the Goyim rearing them in principles and theories which are known to us to be false although it is by us that they have been inculcated'[30]. History shows that Henry Ford was an inspired prophet.

MORE MANIFESTATIONS OF 'THE SEETHING ENERGIES OF LUCIFER'

Which evil minds thought and wrote this, those of the Illuminati authors, or that of Lavrentii Beria? The question is posed rhetorically, in order to bring us yet closer to the truth. As previously divulged, Beria was a German operative functioning at the highest levels of the first 'Black' Illuminati regime of the 20th century, that of the Soviet Union, which had been facilitated by the German intelligence agent, Rasputin. Hence, it is no coincidence that Beria's prescription for our our children 'just happens' to be identical to the repulsive assertion of evil intent to corrupt Gentile children contained in Protocol 9.

It will be recalled - from page 174 et seq. - that Lavrentii Beria's prescription included instructions such as the following: 'By making readily available drugs of various kinds, by giving the teenager alcohol, by praising his wildness, by stimulating him with sex literature and advertising to him or her practices as taught at the Sexpol, the psychopolitical operator can create the necessary attitude of chaos, idleness and worthlessness.... The psychopolitical operator can instruct, in an optimum situation, the entire nation in how to handle children - and instruct them so that the children, given no control, given no real home, can run wildly about with no responsibility for their nation or for themselves.... Creating a greed for drugs, sexual misbehaviour and uncontrolled freedom... will with ease bring about our alignment' *. This Illuminati strategy has been relentlessly and ruthlessly applied by the British and American educational authorities as a direct consequence of the hidden penetration of German Illuminati Fifth Column operatives.

The consistency of this assessment with the prevailing phase of revolutionary terrorism needs to be considered[31]. As noted, in the 1920s, German intelligence established the Muslim Brotherhood, based in Cairo, as a mechanism for the destabilisation of

---

* From 'Brainwashing: A Synthesis of the Russian Textbook on Psychopolitics', or 'the art and science of asserting and maintaining dominion over the thoughts and loyalties of individuals, officers, structures, and masses, and the effecting of the conquest of enemy nations through "mental healing"', now referred to as 'mental mapping'; with an address by Lavrentii Beria; extracted from the 'Communist Manual of Instructions of Psychopolitical Warfare', used in the training of Communist cadres in the United States in the 1930s, and exposed by the former American Communist, Kenneth Goff. See also Chapter 3. False 'consensus' training was being disseminated in 2005-06 to cadres of 'Useful Idiots' in Britain through a brainwashing operation directed from the Office of the Deputy Prime Minister, the neo-Bolshevik John Prescott, called 'Common Purpose' (the terms of which are left undefined).

British power in the Middle East, and thus as a means of preparing the ground for German access to the oil resources of the Caucasus (Baku, in Azerbaijan) and elsewhere.

The German Geopolitical Centre established by the Nazi International in Madrid spawned other Nazi International Centres, notably in Rome, Buenos Aires and Cairo, from which the Nazis continued and expanded their ongoing destabilisation activities through the Muslim Brotherhood and its clones. Outline details of Adolf Eichmann's secret visit to Palestine in 1936, and its grim consequences, are summarised in the box on page 547. With the exception of the extensive Soviet terrorism training and proliferation operations - spun from the Tricontinental Conference sponsored by the KGB held in Cuba in January 1966, which launched a network of terrorism training camps on the outskirts of Havana that were supervised by a KGB Colonel, Vadim Kotchergine - it is a fact that all radicalised Islamic terrorism organisations are the offspring of the Muslim Brotherhood. German and Russian intelligence work 'competitively' together [see Conclusion, page 617].

These Islamic organisations, and the immense revolutionary infrastructure that supports them with destabilisation propaganda (such as Palestinian Radio and TV which is indistinguishable from overt Soviet-era anti-Western hate broadcasting) feast on hatred of the Jews. That this is so, reflects the poison of anti-Semitism sown by the German Illuminati in the text of their 'Protocols' which, as discussed, are slanted so as to appear having been authored by high-ranking internationalist Jews. It is surely not hard to perceive the demonic attraction and force that such propaganda was calculated to exert in the simple minds of prospective Islamic jihadists whose minds have been prepared for martyrdom by the demonic proposition that they will be rewarded in heaven by the services of 70 virgins. Minds so diverted from reality and the truth by such fairytales, would be equally susceptible to the 'attractive' notion that the usurping Jews, who allegedly control the United States, are the source of all the evils imported from the decadent West that are perceived to afflict the Muslim world. And the decadence of the West is itself a product of the Uluminati, against which the deceived, primitive Islamists are comprehensively indoctrinated to react.

THE 'PERMANENT REVOLUTION' SINCE THE BIRTH OF JESUS CHRIST

For it is indeed as though Lucifer himself had devised the hellish mixture of pressures and deceptions that have engulfed millions of Islamic minds. For, as anyone who has eyes to see knows, Jews are universally prominent throughout the Western 'entertainment' industry, which Muslims rightly identify as an open sepulchre of decadence and filth that is being poured into the minds of people everywhere. Given this prominence, the hate propaganda plotted by the Uluminati, when, to hide their authorship, they skewed their evil blueprint for global control so that it would appear to have been drafted by Jews, 'enjoys' poisonously fertile soil upon which to grow and thrive.

Against this background, the seething hatred for Jews which characterises Islam -a product of the 'seething energies of Lucifer' - is perhaps easier to understand, especially since Muslim culture has remained, until scarcely more than a few decades ago, in many respects rooted in the 7th century AD.

Nor did the 'ownership' of the Russian Revolution by Jews diminish the popular conviction, as much among Muslims as in other communities around the world, that the Jews are the source of all evil. A minority of hyperactivist Jews implemented, both wittingly and unknowingly on behalf of the controlling Uluminati, the horrors of the Russian Revolution and its aftermath - as summarised, in part, in the Author's intelligence publication Soviet Analyst [Volume 29, #s 8-10], which contained a directory of prominent Jewish revolutionary activists. In this context, the Author acknowledges a debt to Dr Henry Mackow who, in a 2005 analysis of 'The Red Symphony' - the text of a Stalinist Secret Police (NKVD) pre-execution interrogation of Chaim Rakover (a.k.a. Christian Rakovsky), a Soviet Ambassador who had formerly been a very close associate of Rothschild's agent, Leon Trotsky - noted Rakover's assertion that 'Communism cannot triumph unless it suppresses the 'still living' Christianity'. This claim was vehemently reaffirmed by the Jewish Illuminist President Mikhail Gorbachev on 15th December 1987, when addressing a group of Communist Party cadres, officials and Soviet military personnel in Uzbekistan: 'There must be no let-up in the war against religion, because as long as religion exists Communism cannot prevail. We must intensify the obliteration of all religions wherever they are being practiced or taught'.

Chaim Rackover then referred to the 'Permanent Revolution' - which was always thought to have been the evil Trotsky's invention - as dating from the birth of Christ, adding that 'in reality, Christianity is our only real enemy since... Christianity controlling the individual is capable of annulling the revolutionary projection of the neutral Soviet or atheist State'. Extracting this statement from its redundant historical context, the crucial truth revealed here is that this late 'Devil' knew who Jesus Christ was - and, moreover, knew that He was 'the enemy' from his birth, rather than from his Crucifixion and Resurrection. To make this distinction requires considerable understanding of the reality that Jesus Christ was and is the enemy of evildoers from the beginning - which Chaim Rakover, though a Jewish Communist friend of the demonic Trotsky, knew perfectly well, not least because he was an educated Jew. And why was this? Because 'the devils also believe, and tremble' [James, Chapter 2, verse 19]. They know, indeed, that 'Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and is come in the flesh' [First Epistle of John, Chapter 4, verses 1-3], but reject what they know and 'confess Him not'. Echoes of Rackover's understanding are replicated by possessed 'High Revolutionaries' today. For instance, Brock Chisholm, a former director of the UN World Health Organisation, pronounced that 'To achieve One-World Government, it is necessary to remove from the minds of men their individualism, their loyalty to family traditions and national identification'. In other words, the natural (divine) order is to be defied, and turned upside down.

Chaim Rakover's acknowledgement that the 'Permanent Revolution' began with the birth of Christ is of immense significance and help to us in our search for an explanation of 'the mystery of iniquity' [Second Epistle of Paul to the Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verse 7]; indeed, this admission justifies Rackover's bad life. That Christianity - the enemies of which choose not to tell the difference between its earthly perversions and True Christianity, of course, since they mistakenly confuse the decadent and compromised Christian churches for the 'real thing' - is 'the only enemy' of all Luciferians, itself confirms the uniqueness of Jesus Christ and why it is only in His Name, that devils are cast out; and if devils can only be cast out in His Name, other names are not of the Lord, but of Satan: 'But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them: Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand; And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his kingdom stand?' [Matthew, Chapter 12, verses 24-26].

The perpetual, incessant virulence of attacks against Christianity, both true and false or reprobate, is therefore self-evidently a manifestation of the 'seething energies of

Lucifer' which provide those infested by them with a relentless, tireless determination and ruthlessness which is seemingly never exhausted, but which is the opposite of normality. Sensible people trying to live their lives constructively do not devote time and resources without end, in seeking to destroy all 'religion' (meaning Christianity): such behaviour is akin to a form of demonic possession. And that is exactly what we are dealing with as we consider the otherwise inexplicable perpetuation of the 'Permanent Revolution' lasting for two millennia so far, which today is driven extensively by the 'Orders' of the Illuminati. To know, from a deceased Communist Jew, that our enemies are well aware that Jesus Christ is the one and only enemy, and has been considered as such since His very birth, is surely a revelation sent to encourage us all. For this statement is not speculative: it was made by the Jew Chaim Rakover as he faced execution. And the fact that this revelation has been brought to our attention by Dr Mackow, who is himself of Jewish extraction, gives it the greater force: as he concluded in his analysis, 'God is more powerful than the satanic forces that hold mankind in their thrall. But His Will cannot be done unless men do it. Whatever the cost, the cost of not doing it will be greater'.

The present work seeks - by exposing and attempting however inadequately and incompletely - to explain the source of the evils we face, to enable others to resolve to face up to these 'Illuminated' Ones. And here is a remarkable fact: if, knowing the truth, you resist them so that they know you see through them, a remarkable thing happens. They shrink from you. Incredibly, 'get thee behind me Satan' is no idle order. It works.

GERMAN JEWISH ROSICRUCIAN ORIGINS OF THE MODERN ILLUMINATI

The foundation of the modern manifestation of the sect of the Dluminati in Germany is well known to have been primarily the work of the lapsed Jesuit priest, Professor Adam Weishaupt, of Ingolstadt University. Not only was Weishaupt a former Jesuit (and therefore Illuminati-trained pupil) of Jewish extraction, but Moses Mendelssohn, head of the Haskalah, or always pre-existing Jewish Illuminati, cooperated closely with the Bavarian Illuminati headed by Weishaupt, as well as with prominent members of the other secret societies aspiring to seize political power. These secret societies, represented within the burgeoning Masonic movement, organised two Great Masonic Conventions in the late 18th century - that held at Les Gaules in 1768, and the Great Masonic Convention, or Convent, of Wilhelmsbad in 1782, at which the delegates voted, in accordance with the demands of their demonic 'spirit guides', we are told, for the death of the King of France. The occult Rosicrucians, who have usurped, conquered and now reside both within and beyond Freemasonry, which has been reorganised several times primarily at their instigation, are central to this investigation. First, these people, sorcerers and alchemists, claimed to be the recipients by tradition of esoteric knowledge from the ancient Egyptians, the Chaldeans, the Magi and the Gymnosophists. Secondly, they rejected the teachings of the Catholic Church, using the understandable revulsion at the Church's abominations and abusive arrogance as their pretext for rejecting Christianity. Thirdly, the Rosicrucians themselves were explicitly called the Illuminati, as was confirmed in the third edition of the 'Encyclopaedia Britannica' of 1797, which stated: 'They [the Rosicrucians] have been distinguished by several names, accommodated to the several branches of their doctrine. Because they pretend to protect [and to extend - Ed.] the period of human life, by means of certain nostrums, and even to restore youth, they were called Immortals; as they pretended to know all things, they have been called Illuminati; and because they have made no appearance for several years, unless the sect of

Illuminated [Ones] which lately started up on the Continent derives its origin from them, they have been called the Invisible Brothers'[32] (see below).

Finally, the same authoritative source from 1797 asserts that they arose, or first emerged into prominence in the modern era, in Germany: 'Rosicrucians, a name assumed by a sect or cabal of hermetical philosophers; who arose, as it has been said, or at least became first taken notice of in Germany, in the beginning of the fourteenth century'[33]. The sect was formally established in England by Francis Bacon, the author of 'Nova Atlantis' (1624), whom Manly P. Hall asserts in his rare work to be Valentin Andrea, who was appointed preacher to the Duke of Brunswick Wolfebbuttel in 1640, according again to the Encyclopaedia Britannica[34] - leaving us necessarily confused as to whether it really seems likely that a man as influential as Sir Francis Bacon would have accepted such a post, even had he still been alive in 1640. This possible confusion provides an interesting example of the problems facing researchers who have to contend with the reality that these people, seized with the 'seething energies of Lucifer', were and remain past-masters of deception and secrecy.

Indeed, it was formally agreed at the Rosicrucians' Convention of the Seven at Magdebourg on 31st October 1617 that the Brotherhood of the Rose Croix must maintain the strictest secrecy for 100 years. The source for this information is a Rosicrucian book entitled 'Themis Aurea', written in 1616-17 and printed in 1618, by Michael Maier, a Jew who called himself Summus Magister, or Sovereign Master, a title used in Rose-Croix documents preserved in the Sovereign Patriarchal Council of Hamburg, which is the Supreme Jewish Lodge identified by Lady Queenborough as being 'secretly affiliated to Masonry'. That expert states unequivocally, as do others, that the Rosicrucians 'conquered Freemasonry, which was officially instituted in 1717'[35] - that is to say, at the end of the hundred-year period of secrecy that the Rosicrucians agreed upon at their Convention of the Seven at Magdebourg in 1617. Why did they go underground for 100 years? Because they calculated that it would take a century to fulfil the task they set themselves of spawning the secret structures that emerged later as Masonic Lodges.

Rose Croix was, all along, 'a medium for the propagation of Gnosticism' - that is to say, for the vehement hatred of and opposition to True Christianity as elaborated first by Simon Magus, and by reprobate successors such as the 17th century false Messiah, Shabbetai Tzvi - 'and a center for political activities'. In an opening chapter to her monumental work, 'Occult Theocrasy', Lady Queenborough linked Rosicrucian and all related and subsequent forms of Gnosticism directly to the apostasy of Simon Magus:

'Luciferian Occultism... is not a novelty, but it bore a different name in the early days of Christianity. It was called Gnosticism and its founder was Simon the Magician. The Gnostics were not ordinary heretics but constituted an anti-Christian sect. To deceive the multitude, they affected disagreement with certain doctrines of the Apostles, and the chiefs selected from among the initiates those [who were] destined to receive, in secret council, the satanic revelation. Gnosticism is marked with the seal of Lucifer. It is contemporary with the Apostle Peter and has continued, without interruption, down to the present day, periodically changing its mask'[36]. Indeed, this practice of frequent 'label-changing' and reorganisation is its official, institutionalised strategy, as laid down in instructions to the seventh Illuminati Degree of Regent [see Figure 78, page 497]:

The great strength of our Order lies in its concealment; never let it appear in any place in its own name, but always covered by another name, and another occupation'.

Given this routine practice, all investigations into the identity of the Illuminati are deliberately hampered by a confused universe of secret societies characterised by innumerable reorganisations and changes of title - such as the sudden emergence (page 456) of Ordo Templi Orientis related to, or mimicking, or as an offshoot of, Albert Pike's evil Palladism; or the secret workings, from an office in Switzerland that functions all the year round, of the Bilderberg Organisation, which coordinates the Illuminati's operations. Since the Illuminati have themselves officially/inadvertently revealed their standard policy of label-changing - the formula adopted by the Soviet Communists in 1989-92, and then by 'New Labour' in Britain, which suddenly emerged as a cover for control-freak Communo-Fastism, and by 'Green Conservatism' under the Illuminati's latest robot, David Cameron - the objective analyst, while seeking the highest possible standard of accuracy, need not be over-concerned that a few threads may not appear to 'tie up'. For 'it is written' indeed that the Illuminati purposely conceal themselves and all their kabbalis-tic occultism and abominations, which they know to be wrong and to represent the certain road to perdition, in order to perpetuate maximum confusion among the 'Goyim'.

EXPLOITATION OF JEWISH ANIMUS AGAINST JESUS CHRIST

Unsurprisingly, therefore, given that we can precisely identify Rosicrucian sorcery with a Jewish/Babylonian source, it is no surprise to find that many hyperactive Jews were associated with the Rosicrucians prior to their takeover or merger with Freemasonry, in addition to Michael Maier - including Cesare Cremonini, Richard Simon and Nick Stone, who influenced the Rosicrucian figure Thomas Vaughan to pursue the idea of subverting the guild of the 'physical' Freemasons, an ancient universal fraternity, to Gnosticism and sorcery, given the phasing-out of church- and cathedral-building. At the Convention of the Seven in Magdebourg, 'The Invisibles' had both sworn to destroy the church of Jesus Christ (which they confused of course with the Catholic Church) and 'to transform the fraternity into an association which would carry on more or less open propaganda, while adopting such measures of prudence as might then be deemed expedient by the sect'[37]. Why an oath was sworn to keep these intentions secret for a century is not entirely clear, which suggests an occultic imperative. In the event, the decision was taken effectively to continue the Rosicrucian tradition of secrecy by means of the takeover-merger with Freemasonry, which enabled the Rosicrucians to spread their sorcery and related abominations through Freemasonry from behind their preferred veil of secrecy even though a publication called 'The Rosicrucian' was flourishing in the second half of the 19th century. The last of the known Grand Masters of the Rose Croix, according to Lady Queenborough, was Johann Christian Wolff[38], of Jewish extraction. And according to a source cited by Lady Queenborough herself, the last Grand Master of Rose Croix, who died in 1750, was another Jew, Brim[39]. Both were German.

German Jews have been at the forefront of the Rosicrucian Illuminati for centuries, right down to the alleged triple or quadruple agent Dr Henry Kissinger, clearly identified by the Author's late friend Malachi Martin as the International Delegate and Plenipotentiary Extraordinary to the Enthronement of the Prince of Darkness at the Vatican [see page 374] - the 'mentor' of George Bush Sr., who is allegedly the head of Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD), Dachau, under Heinz Alfred Kissinger's guidance. Both these men allegedly control vast secretly acquired financial resources.

Apart from the Rosicrucian manifestation of the perpetual 'seething energies of Lucifer', other secret societies bent upon the elevation of Gnosticism, sorcery and revolution to the forefront of the geopolitical agenda, have included:

- The Martinists, established by a Portuguese Marano Jew, Martinez Depasqualy, who indulged in magical practices united with political intrigue, and included among their members the leading political operatives Salvette de Lange, a Jew, William Law (ditto) and Mirabeau, who fomented the French Revolution - just as the Rosicrucian Illuminati separately prepared the ground for the American Revolution.
- The Strict Observance led by Baron Hund und Leucht, of Jewish extraction, who assumed the name of Johnson and several other aliases. This secret society recruited its members from the Lodges and merged occultism with political intrigue, formulating a plan for financial / economic control based on the Babylonian fiat money system.
- The Scottish Rite, the Moravian Brothers, the Alta Vendita (and/or anti-church Carbonarism, into which the Jewish Giuseppe Mazzini was initiated in 1827 and with which he merged his Young Italy Movement which shared the same objective of destroying Papal power, and was headed by a mysterious Jew called Piccolo Tigre), and the Egyptian Rites of Cagliostro (Mizraim), ostensibly founded in 1805 with 90 Degrees. Essentially Jewish, this elaborate system involved long and difficult ritual trials based on records of the Egyptian and Eleusinian occult and death mysteries. The Rite of Mizraim had in fact been amalgamated with the Rite of Memphis in 1775, for use in England.

According to The Rosicrucian' for January 1871: 'We have great pleasure in announcing that this philosophic Masonic Rite (Ancient and Primitive Rite of Mizraim) has been recently established in England under an authority derived from the Grand Council of Rites for France, and that the Conservators General held a meeting at the Freemasons Tavern, on Wednesday, the 28th December. The principal chairs were filled by Ill. Bros. Wentworth Little 90o; the Rt. Hon. The Earl of Limerick 90o; and S. Rosenthal (of Jewish extraction) 90o; by whom the 'Bective' Sanctuary of Levites - the 33rd of the Rite - was duly opened'. In other words, Mr Rosenthal was in charge.

According to Robert Freke Gould, 'The Protocols of the Wise Men or Elders of Zion' were abstracted from a Jewish Lodge of Mizraim in Paris in 1884 by Joseph Schorst, who was later murdered in Egypt. Schorst was the son of a man who had been sentenced in 1881 in London to ten years' penal servitude for counterfeiting. The document was said to embody the complete programme of esoteric Judaism. More extended enquiry, beyond the scope of this analysis, would demonstrate the dialectical linkages between the Liberal Conservatism of Disraeli, and the community of ultimate interests between the Rothschilds, the Goldsmids, Karl Marx, Moses Hess and all the other players of Jewish extraction mentioned in this book which, Lady Queenborough asserts, 'all point towards the establishment of Jewish power. And although their respective activities seem to stand so far apart, yet they are all linked, all tending towards the same end'[40]. Lady Queenborough also explained why historians had failed to identify Illuminism with the unbroken stream of Jewish Gnosticism, sorcery and political intrigue stretching back to Simon Magus:

'Whereas in Gentile life, there is an unbridgeable abyss between Conservatism and Anarchy, Religion and Atheism, there is no such chasm in the Jewish mentality'. This reflects, inter alia, the fact that Judaism is 'religionised law'. 'There, all currents, no matter in what direction they may seem to flow, are finally united and channelled in one unique direction. It has been somewhat difficult for historians of the French Revolution to see the close link between Judaism and IUuminism; [but] we repeat that no such difficulty exists for the student of the 1848 revolutionary period.... The main difference is that the term 'Illuminism' used in the 18th century is replaced by the wide term Freemasonry which embraces all the existent secret societies', represented therein[41].

MASONIC 'DUPES' NEVER INTENDED TO UNDERSTAND

The adepts and initiates of the revolutionary and occultic societies were hardly aware of these broader dimensions, let alone that they were all dupes who were and are, to modify the notorious statement by that prize sorcerer and dupe Albert Pike, not intended to understand but to imagine that they understand[42]. All they knew was that they had shaken off the 'yoke' of Christian principles, and that these were replaced 'by the cult of nature, and in almost all cases by licentiousness'[43].

The modern Illuminati heirs of these people have 'successfully' procured the hegemony of licentiousness through the free-wheeling perversions and license of all modern forms of 'entertainment', the electronic media and (in the United Kingdom) the conversion of the media into transmission platforms for the wholesale purveyance of decadence, the glorification of fornication and sexual perversions of all kinds, and the ridiculing of all serious opposition to this avalanche of filth, which is epitomised by the reptilian repulsiveness of 'The Stones' - not to mention the British technique of hiding dissidents such as this Author behind a 'wall of silence'. The Channel Five TV station broadcasts (usually American) filth of such degradation that it must obviously have been concluded by the Illuminati cells operating within it, that the Goyim have been so anaesthetised that it will now accept any foul provocation without protest. In any case, institutionalised mechanisms exist for decisively deflecting and neutralising all criticism.

Concerning the imagined 'yoke' of Christian principles, which preclude abominations such as the Illuminised Ones' lust after, rejection of burdens imposed by the Catholic Church upon the faithful comes'richly' from Judaic 'prophets' who maintain the Pharisaical system of petty rules and regulations. These dictate, for instance, that when, in 2000, the Author had to attend Beth Israel Hospital in New York (where he incurred a charge of $5,500 for an 18-hour stay), he was instructed to avoid a certain elevator which, given that it was a Saturday, stopped at every floor because one of the Talmudic Jews' 613 'rules' states that pressing an elevator button on the Sabbath is 'work', which is forbidden on that day (superstition, of course) Alternatively, an egg cannot be eaten, according to Rabbinical wisdom, on the Sabbath if most of it was laid before the appearance of the second star in the sky. By contrast, the 'yoke' of Jesus Christ is light indeed: 'Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light'[44].

LIGHT ON THE SUBJECT SHED BY BENJAMIN DISRAELI

At this point, Benjamin Disraeli comes to our rescue. He does so in his novel 'Coningsby', published[45] in London in 1844, in which he drew a picture, from observed life, of Jews ruling the world from behind thrones - a picture as graphic as is suggested by The Protocols'. In one passage, a Rothschild (thinly disguised under the name Sidonia) says: 'You never observe a great intellectual movement in Europe in which the Jews do not greatly participate. The first Jesuits were Jews'. Ignatius Loyola, while a student at Salamanca in 1527, was tried by an ecclesiastical commission (prior to Loyola's own later establishment of the Papal repression apparat) for sympathy with a sect called 'The Illuminati' or the 'Alombrados', founded in about 1520 - but was acquitted with an admonition. This might explain, then, the perverse fervour with which Ignatius Loyola set about developing the Inquisition, which, as a Jew, he would have known would, over time, trigger such accumulated animosity towards the Church that it would become easier to destroy, or else (as was finally decided) to subvert it from within, en route to its conversion into the Universal Church of Man. And Disraeli is enlightening, too, on the intimate connection between Jews and German sorcerers in this endeavour:

"That mysterious Russian diplomacy which so alarms Western Europe is organised and principally carried on by Jews; that mighty revolution (1848)... is entirely developing under the auspices of Jews, who almost monopolise the professorial chairs of Germany; Neander, founder of spiritual Christianity [sic] and who is Regius professor of Divinity in the University of Berlin, is a Jew. Benary, equally famous, and in the same University, is a Jew. Wehl, the Arabic Professor of Heidelberg, is a Jew. Years ago, when I was in Palestine, I met a German student who was accumulating materials for the history of Christianity and studying the genius of the place; a modest and learned man. It was Wehl; then unknown, since become the first Arabic scholar of the day, and the author of the life of Mahomet. But for the German professors of this race, their name is legion. I think there are more than ten in Berlin alone'[46].

Since the famous Victorian Jewish Prime Minister of Great Britain could hardly be a more impeccable source, a further paragraph from 'Coningsby', in which the author talks about Rothschild (Sidonia) criss-crossing Europe to make loans to potentates, and in which he alludes to the 'protective Christianisation' of Jews in Spain, is relevant:

'A few years back we were applied to by Russia [for a loan - Ed.].... I resolved to go to St Petersburg. I had on my arrival an interview with the Russian Minister of Finance, Count Canrin. I beheld the son of a Lithuanian Jew. The loan was connected with the affairs of Spain; I resolved on repairing to Spain from Russia. I travelled without intermission. I had an audience immediately on my arrival with the Spanish Minister, Senor Mendizabel; I beheld one like myself, the son of a Nuevo Christiano, a Jew of Aragon. In consequence of what transpired in Madrid, I went straight to Paris to consult the President of the French Council; I beheld the son of a French Jew...'. [Back in Northern Europe, in Prussia]. 'Count Arnim entered the Cabinet [room], and I beheld a Prussian Jew. So you see, my dear Coningsby, that the world is governed by very different personages from what is imagined by those who are not behind the scenes'[47].

THE EARLIER SPANISH VERSION OF THE PROTOCOLS'

In 1492, the Chief Rabbi of Spain, Chemor, wrote to the Grand Sanhedrin, which then had its seat in Constantinople, asking for high-level advice in the face of a Spanish law which threatened all Jews with expulsion. The reply he received, shown in Figures 68A and 68B on pages 449 and 451, was published in a 16th Century Spanish work entitled 'La Silva Curiosa', with the following explanation: 'This letter following was found in the archives of Toledo by the Hermit of Salamanca, (while) searching the ancient records of the Kingdoms of Spain; and, as it is expressive and remarkable, I wish to write it here'. The text in question represents an earlier version of a Jewish 'draft plan of action' of which, authorities claim, 'The Protocols of the Elders of Zion' is a later manifestation:

"Beloved brethren in Moses, we have received your letter in which you tell us of the anxieties and misfortunes which you are enduring. We are pierced by as great a pain to hear it as yourselves. The advice of the Grand Satraps and Rabbis is the following:

1. As for what you say that the King [Ferdinand] of Spain obliges you to become Christians: do it, since you cannot do otherwise.

2. As for what you say about the command to despoil you of your property: make your sons merchants that they may despoil, little by little, the Christians of theirs.

3. As for what you say about making attempts on your lives: make your sons doc-

tors and apothecaries, that they may take away Christians' lives.

4. As for what you say about their destroying your synagogues: make your sons canons and clerics in order that they may destroy their churches.

5. As for the many other vexations you complain of: arrange that your sons become advocates and lawyers, and see that they always mix in affairs of State, that by putting Christians under your yoke you may dominate the world and be avenged of them.

6. Do not swerve from this order that we give you, because you will find by experience that humiliated as you are, you will reach the actuality of power.

Signed: 'Prince of the Jews of Constantinople'[48].

We may now be closer to understanding why it is possible to delete all Jewish references and connotations from the text of 'The Protocols', as translated from the Russian of Nilus, and to conclude that the text represents the blueprint of the Illuminati for the achievement of global hegemony. The point is that, as with the analogy of rats in a sack, these people invariably work at cross-purposes and fall out with each other. Moreover the Jews are themselves woefully divided, even though they are bound together by a single Messianic idea and also in certain cases by a hatred of Christianity which arises from their deep subconscious awareness that they 'missed the boat' when Christ was crucified, although large numbers of Jews were converted both then and afterwards: for these people are anything but stupid. But the dear Jewess who told the youthful, naive Author that 'a Jew's greatest enemy is another Jew', said it all. For the reality is that while the great idea binds them together, they are often permanently at loggerheads with each other along the way. And since this is the norm, it is no surprise that 'The Protocols' were drafted in such a way that, if all reference to Jewish ideas and language is removed, they read like the prospectus for the Illuminati's World Revolution which those who have not studied the matter might imagine is a venture that is entirely 'free-standing'.

THE PALLADIAN RITE - A GOVERNING GEOMASONIC CONTROL CENTRE

Since the Society of Jesus was indeed founded by a Jew, and the Rosicrucian conquest of Freemasonry was a Jewish operation, the kabbalistic sorcery and Satanism which characterises Freemasonry is indisputably, as key Jewish authorities themselves acknowledge, Jewish. The innumerable recruits to the secret societies in the 18th century, who had de facto abandoned Christianity and had given themselves over to the cult of nature and to licentiousness, were, as their heirs are today, dupes knowingly manipulated by hidden (partly Jewish) forces dedicated to the destruction of Christianity (an impossible task) and to the disruption of States - forces for whom all the secret societies and Orders were simply recruiting grounds. When the power and influence of these secret societies threatened to become uncontrollable, and had grown to such an extent that discipline was judged necessary, the 'Invisible' masters, the mainly Jewish Rosicrucian controllers, took steps to impose 'unity' upon the huge numbers of rats that had bred in the sack of iniquity - a step that was achieved when the secret societies and Lodges were united under the umbrella of universal Illuminism at the Convent of Wilhelmsbad in 1782.

Today, many prominent Freemasons are initiates of parallel Orders and hold multiple Masonic ranks, as well as belonging to one or more parallel secret societies hiding behind Illuminist Freemasonry. As a consequence, a stubborn Luciferian interlocking directorate or nexus has long since developed which this Author believes to represent the single most grievous impediment to peace on earth and the salvation of mankind, and the primary source of corruption, institutionalised double-mindedness, lies and

La Silua curioſa,

ESTA CARTA SIGVIENTE FVE hallada por el Ermitaño de Salamanca en los Archiuos de Toledo, buſcando las antiguedades de los Reinos d España: y pues ella es ſentida, y notable quiero eſcriuirtela aqui.

CARTA DE LOS IVDIOS d'Eſpaña, a los de Conſtantinopola.

IVdios honrrados, Salud y gracia. Sepades que el Rey d'Eſpaña por pregon publico nos haze boluer Chriſtianos, y nos quitan las haziendas, y las vidas, y nos deſtruyen nueſtras Sinagogas, y nos hazen otras vexaciones, las quales nos tienen confuſos, y inciertos de lo que hemos de hazer. Por la Ley de Moyſen os rogamos, y ſuplicamos tengais por bien de hazer ayuntamiento, y embiarnos con toda breuedad la deliberacion que en ello huuieredes fecho.

CHAMORRA Principe de
los Iudios de Eſpaña.

Reſpueſta de los Iudios de Conſtantinopla, a los Iudios de Eſpaña.

AMados hermanos en Moyſen vueſtra carta recibimos, en la qual nos ſignificais los trabajos & infortunios que padeſceis, de cuyo ſentimiento nos a cabido tanta parte como a vototros. El pareſcer de los grandes Satrapas, y Rabi es lo ſiguiente.

Figure 68A: In 1492, Chemor, the Chief Rabbi of Spain, wrote to the Grand Sanhedrin, which then had its seat at Constantinople, for advice, consequent upon the Spanish Monarchy's threat that if the Jews in Spain did not convert to Christianity, they would be expelled. This is the first page of the reply, found in the 16th Century Spanish book 'La Silva Curiosa', by Julio-lniguez de Medrano [Paris, Orry, 1608, on pages 156 and 157]. The text of the advice, in translation, is given on page 447-448 of the present work. See also Figure 68B, page 451.

routine deception in government, the legal profession, the churches, bureaucracies, the political establishment and, regrettably, today, the controlled 'mainstream' mass media.

Glimpses of the scope of the interlocking nexus can be gleaned from the records left by certain boastful initiates. For instance, William Wynn Westcott, an English Mason, was appointed Junior Grand Deacon to the Grand Lodge of England in 1902 and the head of 'Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia'. He was also the head of the subversive 'New Age' Illuminati operation calling itself 'Golden Dawn', as well as being the Secretary of the Rite of Swedenborg, Knight Kadosch of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite, Grand Standard Bearer, Royal Arch, Grand Lodge of England, and Regent of the Illuminati. In addition, Westcott was on intimate terms with one 'Golden Dawn's founders, the German Jewish 'High' Mason, Theodore Reuss (33o, 90o, 96o). For his part, Reuss included the following among his titles: 'Magnus Supremus in Mundo' (meaning Supreme Magus of the World) of the Esoteric Rosicrucians, Frater Superior and Outer Head in Mundo of the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (O.T.O.: see page 456), and Sovereign Grand Master for life of the Ancient Rites of Masonry, Memphis and Mizraim Rites for the German Empire and its dependencies. Such 'elevated Masonic personages' would have been 'perfect' candidates for membership of the super-secret (because super-depraved) Palladian Rite.

This organisation was devised both to provide the most senior selected Masons world-wide with a secret forum in which to practice 'high sorcery' and sexual rites, and also as the Illuminati's infrastructure of global control. Its blueprint was devised by the Jewish sorcerer-criminalist Giuseppe Mazzini, who put forward his control plan in a letter to Albert Pike dated 22nd January 1870, in which he wrote:

'We must leave all the confederations to continue just as they are, with their systems, their central authorities and their diverse modes of correspondence between high grades of the same rite, organized as they are at present, but we must create a super rite, which will remain unknown, to which we will call those Masons of High Degree whom we shall select. With regard to our brothers in Masonry, these men must be pledged to the strictest secrecy. Through this supreme rite' - to be used to impose secrecy by means of occult blood-oaths and their accompanying penalty, probably, of death, for any breach - 'we will govern all Freemasonry, which will become the one international center, the more powerful because its direction will be unknown'.

In other words, the confusion which the present-day analyst faces, in seeking confirmation of the infrastmcture and control mechanisms of the Illuminati, was left deliberately exacerbated - to ensure a perpetual cascade of sand in our faces. The separate identities of the innumerable and always proliferating secret societies, and of the innumerable Masonic rites and their counterparts, were institutionalised, so that future analysts would (they assumed) be unable to work out where the real power lay, and the true source of this devilish cacophony. The Palladian Rite was established as the hidden global control mechanism - in the eyes of Mazzini and Pike, and their heirs, at any rate.

The Author's earlier nominal attempt to separate Weishaupt from the more obviously Jewish strands of Illuminism can therefore be dismissed now, because it can be seen, and authorities have acknowledged, that Illuminism represented the combined secret operations of the heads of the powerful Jewish Kahal [see pages 453-454] which has always striven for political, financial and economic dominance. The 'open' sect of the Illuminati had indeed been '(re)founded' by the lapsed Jesuit and Jew, Professor Adam Weishaupt, in , the year of the American Revolution and three years after the Jewish Kahal ('centre') in Poland had to go underground when Poland was partitioned. Bernard

Libro primero.

A lo que dezis que el Rey de Eſpaña os haze boluer Chriſtianos, que lo hagais pues no podeis hazer otro: A lo que dezis que os mandan quitar vueſtras haziendas, hazed vueſtros hijos mercaderes, para que poco a poco les quiten las ſuyas. A lo que dezis que os quitã las vidas, hazed vueſtros hijos medicos y boticarios, para que les quiten las ſuyas. A lo que dezis que os deſtruyen en vueſtras Sinagogas, hazed vueſtros hijos clerigos y theologos, para que les deſtruyan ſus templos. Y a lo que dezis que os hazen otras vexiciones, procurad que vueſtros hijos ſean abogados, procuradores, notarios, y conſejeros, y que ſiempre entiendan en negocios de Republicas, para que ſujetandolos ganeis tierra, y os podais vengar dellos, y no ſalgais deſta orden que os damos, porque por experiencia vereis que de abatidos, verneis a ſer tenidos en algo.

VSSVS FF. Principe de los
Iudios de Conſtantinopla.

LA generoſa Marfiſa eſtando triſte, y muy afligida por la muerte del paſtor Gelido de Riojo, embio vna carta a Iulio, y por ella entre otras coſas le ruega, que no le eſcriua mas cartas ni verſos que traten de amores, porque paſſó folia, y el mayor conſuelo que agora ella tomaua, era en andar ſolitaria por vn deſierto, cantando verſos triſtes, y lamentables, y eſcriuiendo diuerſos epitaphios por las fuentes y peñas, y ſobre las cortezas de los arboles. Aſſi miſmo eſcriue a Iulio y le ruega mucho que en lugar de las ſentidas Empreſas, y hermoſiſſimas Deuiſas, que otras vezes folia of-

Figure 68B: From the 16th Century Spanish book 'La Silva Curiosa', by Julio-Iniguez de Medrano [Paris, Orry, 1608, on pages 156 and 157]: see also Figure 68A on page 449. The text of the advice, in translation, is given on page 449 of the present work. The text was accompanied by this explanation: The letter following was found in the archives of Toledo by the Hermit of Salamanca, (while) searching the ancient records of the Kingdoms of Spain; and as it is expressive and remarkable, I wish to write it here'.

Lazare, of Jewish extraction, wrote that 'there were Jews behind Weishaupt'[49]. And in a listing of Jewish influences behind the French Revolution, Lady Queenborough lists Adam Weishaupt himself: 'Upon a close study of Illuminism, we find that the destructive forces which culminated in the French Revolution' were financial, intellectual and anti-Christian, and were all Jewish:

Financial forces: 'In the first class, we come upon the names of Jewish financiers such as Daniel Itzig, Friedlander, Ceerfbeer, Benjamin and Abraham Goldsmid, Moses Mocatta [and] Veitel Heine Ephraim'.

Intellectual forces: 'In the second category, we find Moses Mendelssohn, Naphtali Wessely, Moses Hersheim.... Frederick Nicolai, Adam Weishaupt, Mirabeau, l'Abbe Gregoire, the Duke of Brunswick-Wolfenbuttel and Anacharsis Clootz'.

Anti-Christian forces: 'Lastly, the third class is composed mostly of the group known as the Encyclopedists: d'Alembert, Diderot, Rousseau, Voltaire and of all the Kabbalists practicing magic and among whom we find: Martinez Depasqualy, Leucht, the Magus Count of Saint Germain, Falke and Joseph Balsamo surnamed Cagliostro'.

The inclusion in this list of Jewish kabbalists of the Count of Saint Germain is of extreme interest, as certain analysts maintain that the Rosicrucian documents identified as having been composed by Sir Francis Bacon, were elaborated or championed by the Count of Saint Germain (1710-1764), whose other aliases included the Jewish names of Daniel Wolf and Prince Rakosky (Racoczy). A carefully woven and concocted veil of 'mystery' has been erected around this character, who is advertised by deluded Masonic illuminati (who profess to 'believe' in reincarnation) to be a so-called 'ascended master', whose 'service to humanity' goes back more than 150,000 years. According to various 'magickal' sources, he was born out of wedlock to Queen Elizabeth I, and was named Sir Francis Bacon, and wrote the occult plays attributed to William Shakespeare. Bacon became the leading 16th century proponent of Rosicrucianism. His supposed 'magick' existence finds him travelling incognito throughout Europe, winding up as Prince Racoczy of Transylvania (i.e., the Prince of the Jews in that part of the world). Then he transmogrified himself, reappearing as the Comte de Saint Germain in 17th century France. He maintained the same physical appearance throughout the 18th and 19th centuries.

His prolonged 'existence' is, of course, a fable fabricated to provide a rationale for the occultic practice of alchemy and of the vain 'quesf for immortality, in which Rosicrucians notoriously self-indulge. Marie Antoinette's Lady-in-Waiting wrote letters about this, several of which are to be found in The Louvre.

The Emperor Frederick the Great, one of the most important of all evil historical Illuminists, referred to the Count as 'the man who never dies'; even at table, when dining with kings, he was never seen to eat. He also supposedly possessed the ability to transmit himself from, say, Paris to India overnight. Records of St Germain's activities are to be found, allegedly, in French, German, Austrian, Dutch and Danish archives. St Germain was 'last seen' in physical form in around 1822, and these days he works in 'lighter realms', continuing to 'help the world'. (Sources for all such idiocy: a biography by Isabel Cooper-Oakley (Theosophical Publishing House, 1912; and 'Unveiled Mysteries and the Magic Presence', by Godfre Ray King (St Germain Press)). So powerful, seemingly, is the residual urge to believe in lies, fabrications and magick, that books published on such esoteric inventions actually attract a significant readership. Bookstore chains (at least one of which is a drug money-laundering outlet) add to the confusion by displaying esoteric and magick books alongside dwindling Christian shelves.

THE REMIT OF THE WILHELMSBAD ILLUMINATI SECRET LODGES & SOCIETIES

The stated objectives of the secret societies and Masonic organisations originally welded together as the Bavarian Rosicrucian Illuminati which emerged from the Convent or Congress of Wilhelmsbad, were as follows:

1. The destruction of Christianity and of all Monarchical Governments. Explanations: Christianity has to be destroyed (a) because they confuse and misrepresent Christianity with the Roman Catholic Church's past (and certain continuing) abominations; (b) because the perfect truth of the Word of God through Jesus Christ was rejected by many (but by no means all) of their forebears and they cannot admit they were in error, and also because of ethnic peer-pressure; and (c) more to the point, because True Christianity is completely incompatible with sorcery, magick, astrology, necromancy, the invocation of evil spirits and all the other abominations of Babylon to which their hatred of Christianity has driven them. The destruction of Monarchical Governments is a central objective because they cannot abide absolutism (although a Monarchical form of control is easy to penetrate, as the 'success' of Rasputin and the American Jewish female guru sent to destabilise Princess Diana seem to have made clear).

2. The destruction of nation states as such in favour of universal internationalism. Explanation: Impediments in the way of total control are theoretically removed. But in reality, no universal governance system can possibly work, given that all human beings are different - something that irks the Illuminati, who seek by psycho-manipulative, psycho-chemical and social engineering means to create 'universal man' equipped with a 'common mind'. This endeavour is doomed to failure.

3. The discouragement of patriotic and loyal effort which is branded as narrow-minded prejudice, incompatible with 'goodwill to all men' and the slogan of 'Universal Brotherhood'. Comment: This is indeed the fate of those whom in the UK context for instance, see through the European Union fraud [Chapter 8] and seek to extract the United Kingdom from the clutches of this German long-range Illuminati entrapment strategy and systematic coup d'etat by instalments.

4. The abolition of family ties and of marriage by means of systematic corruption. Comment: In the United Kingdom, this process has advanced to the stage at which the young generation lacks all shame and is content to take 'partners' and to shun marriage, with the media constantly braying that marriage has collapsed, and the Masonic Judiciary assisting the process. This is a key objective of the Illuminati, en route to the destruction of private property, which marriage is deemed to sustain.

5. The suppression of all rights of inheritance and of private property. Comment: As indicated in item 4 above, the destruction of the institution of marriage is intended to prepare the way for the abolition of all private property (Communism). Communism by definition implies and intends the abnegation of private property. Many Jews are naturally Communists because, on balance, they prefer money to property.

The progress made by the Rosicrucian Illuminati with their World Revolution was decisively influenced by the history of the European Jewish and Khazarian [see page 473 et seq.] diaspora, which effectively established a 'state within the state' successively in Babylon, Judea (under the Romans), Galilee, Babylonia, Spain and finally Poland in the 1500s, where a Khazarian population of millions came into being and the 'centre' of 'Jewish' diaspora governance (the Kahal) was settled. When Poland was partitioned in 1772, this 'centre' disappeared inside Russia. In the 19th century it re-emerged as the Jewish International, with two dialectical wings - Communism and Zionism (Fascism).

In other words, with no firm territorial 'centre', the Talmudic Kahal resolved finally upon internationalism, facilitated by the parallel Judaicisation of Freemasonry consolidated through the merger of the Illuminati with the Lodges. This is The Synagogue of Satan, driven by 'them which say they are Jews, and are not'[50], which equated the intended destruction of Christianity with global hegemony achieved by financial manipulation. Since nation states and private property (except for the 'Chosen') stand in the way of this agenda, they, along with the very foundations of society such as marriage and the family, are 'legitimate targets' and the 'collateral damage' of this World Revolution. Accordingly:

- The secret societies and Masonic Lodges are recruiting devices calculated to separate continuing Gentile Christians, of whatever denomination, from the revealed truth that is in Jesus Christ, and to replace True Christianity with the Luciferian, esoteric 'New Ageism', magick, spiritism and sorcery in which the Synagogue of Satan specialises.
- These abominations are derived from the Babylonian Kabbalah, and from the Egyptian and Eleusinian mysteries which are foreign to the true Jewish revealed tradition, and echo the final decision of the children of Israel and their Khazarian mimics to abandon the Lord of Hosts in favour of the pagan demon-gods against which they were warned throughout their ancient history - in favour of this Synagogue of Satan.
- Again, as has been seen (Chapter 5), Jewish authorities specifically assert that 'Masonry is Jewish'. It is the primary mechanism for the cynical and duplicitous transmission of Khazarian kabbalistic abominations which have no part in the revealed truth of God as taught in the Torah. The Synagogue of Satan is indeed the habitation of devils.
- The untutored Goy dupes in the Lodge imagine that they are learning the real truth as revealed to the Jews: indeed, they even use a doctored Bible for the purpose. But they have 'no part nor lot' with the truth of the Lord of Hosts. Since they take blood and other occult oaths, pledging their loyalty to Satan in some rituals, they are partakers of the Synagogue of Satan and either blindly or knowingly abandon any hope of salvation. As Disraeli candidly asserted through the words of one of his characters in 'Coningsby', these dupes do not worship the Lord of Hosts, but rather Lucifer himself.

The deepest sense of Christ's condemnation of such people has to do with their knowing confusion of Christ with Lucifer (devilish inversion of the truth). This practice was alluded to by the French 19th century occultist Bataille, in the following passage (remember, crucially, that these practitioners of occult rituals and initiation ceremonies understand spiritual matters better than many so-called Christians):

'According to the teaching of the Christian churches, God allows demons certain limited powers, but they are not permitted to open the Gates of Hell and release a spirit at the request of one who evokes the dead. The dead, even damned, will not show themselves if evoked, nor would evocations be answered by those who had succeeded in attaining the Kingdom of Heaven; but devils can and do, says the Church, substitute themselves for the deceased. They will impersonate a dead person whose appearance is demanded by invocations'.

The 'mystery of iniquity' thrives on and exploits confusion, since human beings have free will and, even when blind and living in the spiritual darkness, retain a sufficient knowledge of good and evil never to be powerless to choose between them. This may seem to contradict the theme of this book, which illustrates how the evil people it describes seem to be predisposed always to take the aberrant course. They 'sit in darkness and in the shadow of [spiritual and physical] death', fearful of breaking away - even though the single step of true repentance and faith they must take, can be easy and simple.

PAPAL NECROMANCY AND THE GNOSTICISM OF SIMON MAGUS

This appears to be what was happening in the Vatican Palace in 2005. Pope Benedict XVI made it quite plain in a Polish television interview on 16th October, according to 'Der Spiegel', that he is in regular touch with a being that he delusionally believes to be Pope John Paul II [see page 294]. However the dead do not communicate with the living, although evil spirits do. Therefore, what Pope Benedict XVI is 'receiving' from his predecessor will necessarily represent distortions of whatever his predecessor may have said and written, whether Pope John Paul II's written statements were spiritually correct in the first place, or not. The new Pope told his superstitious Polish viewers that 'my personal mission is not to issue many new documents, but to ensure that his documents are assimilated, because they are a rich treasure. I hear him and I see him speaking, so I can keep up a continuous dialogue with him. His nearness to me isn't limited to words and texts, because behind the texts I hear the Pope himself. A man who goes to the Lord doesn't disappear: I believe that someone who goes to the Lord comes even closer to us'.

However Jesus Christ was dismissive of such superstitious, pagan ideas, saying sternly: 'Let the dead bury their dead'[51]. He was stern about this in order to leave no room for doubt that the mystery of the Resurrection is not to be confused with pagan fantasies about life after death. Necromancy is defined as 'the revealing of future events through pretended communication with the dead; sorcery'[52].

That passage by Bataille concluded: 'It is also admitted [by the Christian churches] that fallen angels or spirits will often manifest to people without being called. The theological hagiographa cite many cases of diabolical apparitions to saints, apparitions which these saints have been able to repel and conquer... but what skeptics and agnostic Christians [sic!] alike ignore is that beside the drawing room mediums, mediums for diversion, there are occultists whose vile practices are veiled in the profoundest mystery. These men, whose moral sense is absolutely perverted, believe in Lucifer, but they believe him to be the equal of God and worship him secretly', as Ezekiel once saw[53].

They do this secretly in the darkness of the Synagogue of Satan - as was revealed to Ezekiel over five centuries before Christ - where they practice, in addition to satanic rites and invocations of evil spirits at certain levels of initiation, the Gnosticism originally espoused by Simon Magus and Albert Pike, based on spiritism, using mediums.

According to one authority, 'such was the Excellency of their Knowledge and Illumination, who arrogantly styled themselves Gnostics, that they are superior to Peter or Paul or any of Christ's other disciples. They only, have drunk up the Supreme Knowledge, are above Principalities and Powers, secure of Salvation: and for that very reason, are free to debauch women, or indulge in all manner of licentiousness. This knowledge is of itself perfect redemption, and sufficient.... Simon Magus... instituted certain foul and infamous Mysteries inexpressibly filthy and had assemblies equally filthy to celebrate them.... [Certain of their number]... taught incontinence to be obligatory, as a law; and not only lawful, but necessary to salvation; not only compatible with the Saviour's religion, but an essential part of it: and those were the best men, who in common opinion were the most vicious. [These people] grew to that degree of madness, that being unable to conceal their debaucheries, they made incontinence to be a law [teaching that] fornication ought to be open and public, and the use of women common. For which reason, in their feasts, the candles were extinguished, each lay with the women, as chance appointed; and they called this lasciviousness a mystical initiation, a mystical communion'[54]. This louche filthiness is replicated on Britain's Channel 5 TV station nightly.

THE PROLIFERATION OF DEBAUCHED AND REPROBATE MODERN RITES

Further manifestations of this same Jewish madness surfaced in other parts of the world. For instance, Emmanuel Swedenborg, the son of Jasper Swedberg who in turn was the son of Daniel Isaakson of Fahlun, Sweden, was initiated at Lund in 1706 and progressed to the higher Templar Degrees as practiced in Sweden. Swedenborg's Rite, founded in 1721, was introduced into England by the Swedish Consul, Springer, and other Swedes, who set up the first Swedenborgian Society in London, known as the Theosophical Society of the New Jerusalem. The Rite was taken to the Americas by a Swedenborgian Minister, Brother Samuel Beswick, who lived at Strathroy, Canada, where he wrote a book on the Swedenborgian Rite, called 'The llluminati of Stockholm'. What is known as the Rite of Swedenborg was another modification of The Order of the llluminati of Avignon, effected by the Marquis de Thome in 1783[55]. The llluminati of Avignon were founded there in 1760 by Antoine Joseph Pernety, a defrocked Benedictine monk, a kabbalist and an alchemist. A modified version of the Avignon Rite was introduced in Paris at the Lodge Socrates of Perfect Union under the name of Illumines Theosophiques. The Rite became extinct, but the Degree of Knight of the Sun, founded by Pernety, which was divided into two Degrees, became the 27th and 28th Degrees of the (misleadingly termed) Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite[56].

A further secret manifestation of Illuminism, or one of them, was developed by the German Jew Karl Kellner in 1895. After he died in 1905, he was succeeded by the previously mentioned 'high' German Mason, also Jewish, Theodore Reuss, who was the official agent of one of the most active Freemasonic Illuminists ever to have lived, John Yarker. This English Mason, a 33rd Degree Scottish Rite initiate, received over 12 patents of 33° of the Supreme Council in various parts of the world, held high initiated offices in Greece, Ireland, Italy (for which he acted as an organising Masonic ambassador), Spain, and other countries, holding the honour of Hon. Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Germany and Cuba, and was a high priest of the 7th Degree of Knights Templar priests in Manchester. His agent, Theodore Reuss, was the Delegate of the A. and P. Rite of Memphis from Spain and Bulgaria to Germany, and from Germany to England.

ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS

One of Reuss's Masonic patents was signed by fellow Jews Franz Hartmann 33°, 90°, 95°, and Henry Klein, 33°, 95°, the powerful Jewish solicitor based in London. These transnational interconnections are of interest, as they illuminate a curious feature of international intelligence operations noticed by the Author - namely, that foreign intelligence operatives have been known to be appointed Ambassadors to third countries by a client state, to facilitate travel arrangements, the penetration of official structures and the completion of clandestine transactions. This methodology is modelled upon the practice of diplomatic appointments and activity perfected by the Jesuits and the Knights of Malta. In 1902, Theodore Reuss, the German Jewish llluminati operative and agent of John Yarker, named William Wynn Westcott as Regent of the llluminati, thereby establishing or reinforcing the de facto interlocking directorate between the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, and German Illuminism. This organisation remained underground, like so many other manifestations or 'splinters' of 'The Order', until the early 20th century. The resulting reprobate manifestation of 'The Order', Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.), called itself, maximising Luciferian confusion, 'a body of initiates in whose hands are concentrated the wisdom and knowledge of the following bodies and Rites:

Figure 69: At around the turn of the century, Karl Kellner, a German of Jewish extraction, (re)founded the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.), a ritual magick group which taught sex magick, and which is believed to be the 'open' manifestation of Albert Pike's Palladian Rite 'tradition'. [Aleister] Crowley joined the O.T.O. and was made the head of its British affiliate. To the heterosexual Ninth Degree he added a homosexual Eleventh Degree. O.T.O. sexual magick is derived from oriental sources as well as from P. B. Randolph of the American-based Fraternitas Rosae Cruris. It was 'perfected' by Crowley during three years (1920-23) at the Abbey of Thelema in Sicily. Crowley succeeded Theodore Reuss in 1922 as Outer Head of the O.T.O.. Upon Crowley's death in 1947, Karl Johannes Germer succeeded to the Outer Headship of The Order'. Germer had been with Crowley in England, but returned to his native Germany in the 1930s'. The family names Kellner, Crowley, Reuss and Germer are all known to be Jewish family names, but the a main focus of interest is the obvious reality that this satanic Order sprang from the subversive operations of the Illuminati in Germany -from whence, as this work demonstrates, the Illuminati's assault on civilisation is being directed. In 1904, Crowley 'received' The Book of the Lav/ which it is claimed was based on instructions largely 'channelled' to him by 'spirit guides', i.e. evil spirits, during a visit to Egypt (which is metaphorically The Darkness' in Old Testament biblical terms). This so-called 'received' document purportedly 'replaces' Christianity and its 'lav/ of personal sacrifice and overcoming temptation, with the Thelema' of Ordo Templi Orientis - the governing instruction of which is 'Do as Thou Wilt' (modem vernacular: 'Do your own thing'). In the occultic language used in the O.T.O. context, the phrase 'Concealed Child' represents the 'new Aeon' before its 'birth' in 1904; and the ensuing 'age' is called the 'Age of the Child', a.k.a. the 'New Age' and the 'Age of Aquarius'. During the 'Millennium Bug' period, computer users around the world learned, in most cases for the first time, that the 'Date and Time' functions built into the software ALWAYS default to 1st January 1904. Now why was that? Why does computer software not default to 1900, or 1901, or 1960? Why 1904? The answer to this question is that computers and software are essential instruments for the dissemination of the evil 'values' for which Ordo Templi Orientis stands: so they default to the birth of the 'New Age'. Hence the deliberate flooding of our computers via the Internet with pornography, dubious pharmaceutical 'cures', scamming operations and other grotesque inventions of Satan. The accuracy of this assessment was separately revealed to a colleague of this Author by a relative who is a high-ranking Illuminati operative. The source confirmed it is not for nothing that Bill Gates is known as 'The Gatekeeper', and that it is intended that every computer in the world will 'talk to' the Pentagon, the seat of the enforcement arm of the 'New World Order' - that is, The Order to be imposed by the Rosicrucian (Illuminati)-driven 'New World' which is secretly controlled by European Forces of Darkness. The image above is of the O.T.O.'s esoteric emblem.

1. The Gnostic Catholic Church.
2. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Ghost (unforgivable blasphemy]
3. The Order of the Illuminati.
4. The Order of the Temple (Knights Templar).
5. The Order of the Knights of St John.
6. The Order of the Knights of Malta.
7. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Sepulchre.
8. The Hidden Church of the Holy Grail.
9. The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light.
10. The Holy Order of Rose Croix of Heredom.
11. The Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch.
12. The Ancient and Primitive Rite of Masonry (33 Degrees).
13. The Rite of Memphis (97 Degrees).
14. The Rite of Mizraim (90 Degrees).
15. The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Masonry (33 Degrees).
16. The Swedenborgian Rite of Masonry.
17. The Order of the Marinists (who ceased functioning and 'went underground' in the late 1880s, resurfacing inside O.T.O.).
18. The Order of Sat B'hai, and many other Orders. Note that the murdered British bioscientist, Dr David Kelly, was a member of what is now known as the B'hai faith, a manifestation of the Islamic 'heresy' of Sufism (adhered to inter alia by Emirs of Kuwait).
19. In addition, Ordo Templi Orientis is said to be 'in close alliance' with an Order called Atlantean Adepts (AA), a term which, as is typically the case, is not defined.

There is some evidence that O.T.O. existed well before the beginning the 20th century. It is advanced inter alia by Craig Heimbichner, who notes on pages 71-72 of his 2005 book 'Blood on The Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society'[57]:

'Occult sources indicate that Albert Pike was chartered to run a branch of the Societas Rosicruciana in the United States, a Rosicrucian Order which intersected with both the O.T.O. and the Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor (light) - both of which initiated adepts in ritual sex magick'. The O.T.O., then, appears to be an overt manifestation of Pike's Palladism. Several 'gaps' in the existence of the O.T.O. are believed to have materialised at various stages in later years, before a further reorganisation which launched 'The Order', driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer', onto its contemporary 'unstoppable' World Revolution path. Details of a hiatus, in the 1970s, are of little interest, and may reflect a subsequently reversed decision to go temporarily underground.

In any case, we must not lose sight of the fact that what is known of this abomination may simply represent its 'outer' face. Certain detailed information about O.T.O. has been forthcoming from the former 9th Degree O.T.O. initiate and sorcerer, who later became a Christian, William Schnoebelen, whose importance in expanding our understanding of these matters was alluded to in Chapter 5.

According to an edition of 'The Equinox' published in 1919, the Illuminati were reorganised yet again, at the beginning of the 20th century. The reorganisation has had spectacular consequences. Specifically, 'the dispersion of the original secret wisdom having led to confusion, it was determined by the Chiefs of all these Orders to recombine and centralise their activities, even as white light, divided in a prism, may be recomposed'[58]. In this context, the phrase 'secret wisdom', whenever used by Masonic Lodges and secret societies of the Illuminati, invariably means esoteric 'occult knowledge', namely sorcery

'The Equinox' elaborated: 'It was [the German Jew] Karl Kellner who revived the esoteric organisation of the O.T.O. and initiated the plan now happily complete of bringing all occult bodies again under one governance'. In a 'Gnostic Mass' printed in the same issue, it is stated that 'saints' include the adepts Karl Kellner and Theodore Reuss. From notes by Reuss and from correspondence between him and Kellner, the fundamental principles and remit of the O.T.O. have become known, and bear out the following:

- This complex (now powerful) occult organisation was established for the specific purpose of substituting the phallic religion for Christianity. It is nothing less than the means by which the following prophecy of the prophet Jeremiah would be fulfilled:

'As Babylon hath caused the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth'[59]. What this means is that Babylonian kabbalistic sorcery, having trapped those children of Israel who have fallen for its fatal enticements which lead to spiritual death, will likewise entice dupes from all over the world, causing their spiritual death as well. This is a precise prophecy and it should be taken extremely seriously by anyone with 'ears to hear and eyes to see'.

Indeed, with the destruction of residual morality in Britain and the United States, especially, 'anything goes' has become a redundant statement. In February 2006, the Author accidentally turned on Channel Five (known as 'Channel Filth') late at night. The US-sourced programme was so depraved that he needed to pray specially for the filth he had witnessed to be expunged. Imagine the impact on all who have no belief. And this is going on all the year round, with no respite to the avalanche of ribaldry.

THE NEW HEGEMONY OF THE JEWISH KABBALISTIC PHALLIC 'RELIGION'

Since the establishment of the O.T.O. manifestation of the Illuminati, to which George Bush Sr., for instance, allegedly belongs, the phallic 'religion' has overwhelmed almost all public and electronic entertainment, and is the sole focus of the corrupt, drug-ridden and depraved pop and rock industry, which disseminates satanic 'music' globally in pursuit of this Illuminati objective.

There is no doubt that Ordo Templi Orientis was indeed established by the two named German Jews. The German publication of this sect was entitled Oriflamme. Given that Theodore Reuss was the agent of the most powerful geomason of his era, John Yarker, both Kellner and Reuss were, among many other associated Masonic parties, in close, continuing geomasonic relationship with John Yarker, William Wynn Westcott -the Supreme Magus of British occult Rosicrucianism - the Grand Lodge of England and innumerable other manifestations and derivations of The Order.

A document confirming that all concerned (and all those Orders listed) concurred in the formation of the Order of Oriental Templars (German: Orientalischer Templer-Orden) and its esoteric doctrine, is to be found in the Bibliotheque Nationale de Paris. Dated 1917, it contains the constitution and certain information relating to the O.T.O., stating that 'The Ancient Order of Oriental Templars, an organisation formerly known as the Hermetic Brotherhood of Light, has been reorganised and re-constituted'[60]. The Hermetic Brotherhood had operated in the past as a conduit for spreading occultic notions and practices among the masses.

Heimbichner has a detailed summary of the evolution of O.T.O. under Reuss, who developed instructions for the sect from the Kabbalah of the Rabbis, despite allusions to 'Gnostic Christianity', a phrase which is in any case a contradiction in terms. 'Kellner fell terminally ill in 1904, and Reuss, excited by the kabbalistic secrets, began recruiting members of the Scottish Rite and Memphis-Mizraim Freemasonry (also sexual in its advanced Degrees) for a new, emerging Order'. This would appear, as indicated, simply to have been an elaboration or copy of, or substitution for, Palladism reconstituted by Pike as the new and Reformed Palladian Rite, or New and Reformed Palladium, at Giuseppe Mazzini's suggestion, and rescued from a 'moribund' state at Charleston, having originally been founded back in 1730 as 'The Order of the Palladium'.

In a work called 'Cyclopedia of the Fraternities', the author (Stevens) reported that the 'old' Palladium was little known as the number of its members was strictly limited and the deepest secrecy surrounded all its deliberations. 'Kellner', Heimbichner continues, 'died the following year (1905). By 1906, The Order had crystallised into the Ordo Templi Orientis', which seems indeed to have mimicked Palladism with a view to replacing it: we cannot really reach a tighter conclusion on the matter, using open information, than that. 'Soon Reuss's Masonic publication 'Oriflamme' announced the O.T.O. Eventually, Reuss claimed that all of the secret knowledge of High Degree Freemasonry had been distilled by the O.T.O. into a system of Eleven Degrees'.

'The first three Degrees were essentially similar to any Blue Lodge. The Fourth through the Sixth Degrees captured the most important and powerful points of initiation in nearly all High Degree systems: the Royal Arch, Rose-Croix, and Kadosh rituals. The Seventh Degree furnished theory for the Eighth and Ninth Degrees, which consist of sex-magick (the Eighth involves "magickal masturbation" and the Ninth, coitus -the "Sanctuary of the Gnosis")'.

'The O.T.O.'s Tenth Degree confers administration over a country ("Supreme and Holy King"), while the Eleventh - the 'highesf O.T.O. Rite, code-named 'the Eye within the Triangle', or 'Eye of Sef- incorporates a homosexual anal intercourse version of the Ninth'[61]. All this filth is distilled from the Jewish Kabbalah, a truth that is acknowledged by the Jewish Encyclopedia itself, which asserts that 'Jewish Gnosticism unquestionably antedates Christianity... Magick, also... was a not unimportant part of the doctrines and manifestations of Gnosticism, (which) largely occupied Jewish thinkers. It is a noteworthy fact that heads of Gnostic schools and founders of Gnostic systems are designated as Jews by the Church Fathers. Some derive all heresies, including those of Gnosticism, from Judaism'[62]. From his knowledge of the Zohar system of occult integration, Craig Heimbichner identifies Reuss's instructions for the O.T.O. as having been derived from it - as Reuss uses the same language as the Zohar.

'If the youth is mature, then he will complete the first coitus under the direction and instruction of the 'Matrona' (or High Priestess) in a ritual manner and in the form of a "Sacramental Act". Just the same will the virgin be introduced'[63].

And Reuss's foul successor, Aleister Crowley demanded nothing less than the elimination of childhood: 'The Beast 666 [as he called himself] adviseth that all children shall be accustomed from infancy to witness every type of sexual act...'.

Such abominable degradation of innocent children, such gross blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, is simply a perpetuation of the abominations committed by the ancient Israelites against which their prophets warned, as well as representing an explicit rejection of the 'peace of God which passeth all understanding'[64] of Jesus Christ, and 'the love of Christ which passeth knowledge'[65]. Furthermore, the 'seething' purpose of the Jewish Kohal [pages 453-454], through these devious, complex and deliberately confusing secret arrangements, to foist the abominations upon the rest of humanity, not only impoverishes and degrades the rest of the world, but leaves Jews and impostor Khazars themselves spiritually empty, bewildered, lost and desolate: 'Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord'[66].

The Reuss papers confirm that the O.T.O., which as indicated may have existed under Albert Pike, if it was not an alternative name for the Palladian Rite back then, surfaced in 1902, and that prior to 1917, the official year of its formation, it was an underground organisation, acting as a link between the Scottish Rite and various unofficial international groups. In addition to Kellner, Reuss, Yarker and Westcott, other prominent operatives associated with the establishment of the O.T.O. or its manifestation as a new Illuminati instrument were Gregor Mathers, Franz Hartmann and Aleister Crowley, all of Jewish extraction. Crowley's secretary was the Judaic Israel Regudy (a.k.a. 'Regardie'),

Figure 70: The reprobate British intelligence officer and 'high' Illuminati Satanist Aleister Crowley, in full Masonic regalia. According to the extremely perceptive analyst Craig Heimbichner, 'while the Order of Skull and Bones is currently driving the busload of squabbling, dumbed-down 'Goyim', another secret society' (Ordo Templi Orientis, directed for years by the ogre pictured above) 'is processing them, as it processed the 60s generation, and the elite intellectuals since the early years of the 20th century - in the alchemist's beaker known as education'.

a founder of The Order of the Golden Dawn (progenitor of 'New Age' apostasy), the author of such esoteric books as 'The Eye in the Triangle' [Phoenix, Falcon, 1982], 'Gems from the Equinox: Instructions by Aleister Crowley for His Own Magickal Order' (implying that O.T.O. was Crowley's 'personal' organisation) [Phoenix, Falcon, 1986], 'The Golden Dawn: An Account of the Teachings, Rites and Ceremonies of the Order of the Golden Dawn' [St Paul, MN, Llewellyn, 1984], and 'The Tree of Life: A Study in Magic' [York Beach, Samuel Wieser, 1972]. L Ron Hubbard, a US Office of Naval Intelligence operative, Satanist and follower of Crowley, institutionalised many of Crowley's abominations through his Church of Scientology, reviewed earlier, which has been called 'Crowleyanity'. The Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) is among the most lethal and 'Illuminated' of the sub-agencies of the Central Intelligence Agency. One of Crowley's specialities was recruiting into O.T.O. members of 'the Great and the Good'. His most prominent recruit in Britain was Major-General John Frederick Charles Fuller (1878-1966), as his deputy in the AA ('Atlantean Adepts', a.k.a. The Order of the Silver Star). Fuller invented the Blitzkrieg tactic, which Hitler adopted - and the British later implemented over the fabulous Baroque city of Dresden, in one of the most heinous war crimes of the Second World War.

THE MOST DANGEROUS GANG OF RUTHLESS REPROBATES IN THE WORLD

In addition to its secret phallic doctrine, the O.T.O. agitates in innumerable hidden ways for the revival of Gnosticism, the study of the Jewish Kabbalah (hence the pop star Madonna's infatuation with Kabbalism, which is clearly an orchestrated operation to raise its profile among the ignorant youth of the Goyim), other esoteric fantasies and Indian Yogism. Tt seeks to extract from their combined doctrines the practical application of Eastern sorcery and Western witchcraft, wherein medicine and hypnotism occupy a place of prime importance, serving solely materialistic ends'[67]. A list of alleged Illuminati mass mind-control programmers and sorcerers engaged in maximising the leverage obtainable from drug-dealing, satanic rock and other subversive inventions and investments of the Illuminati, is given in the Second Appendix to this Chapter [page 517].

The German Jewish/Khazar origins and continuing derivation and control of O.T.O. are affirmed by all relevant sources. According to the 'Encyclopedia of American Religions', 'around the turn of the [last] century, Karl Kellner, a German [Jew], founded [sic] the Ordo Templi Orientis, a ritual magick group which taught sex magick. [The British intelligence officer Aleister] Crowley joined the O.T.O. and was made the head of its British affiliate. To the heterosexual Ninth Degree he added a homosexual Eleventh Degree. O.T.O. sexual magick seems to have been derived from oriental sources as well as from P. B. Randolph, of the American Fraternitas Rosae Crucis. It was perfected by Crowley during three years (1920-23) at the Abbey of Thelema in Sicily [following which Crowley was ordered to leave the country, as his satanic activities met with general disapproval there - Ed.]. Crowley succeeded Theodore Reuss in 1922 as 'outer head' of the O.T.O. Upon Crowley's death in 1947, [the German Jew] Karl Johannes Germer succeeded to the 'outer headship of The Order. Germer had been with Crowley in England, but returned to his native Germany in the 1930s'[68].

However the American analyst, Craig Heimbichner, in his momentous book published in 2005[69], has described Ordo Templi Orientis as The World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', which is true if indeed O.T.O. is a primary (or even the) current overt ('outer') manifestation of the occult dimension of the Dluminati sect. For it is common knowledge among independent researchers that the Illuminati are indeed the most dangerous, ruthless, and Satanised gang of organised criminals in the world. Their lethality arises from their ingrained Rosicrucian-derived habit of intermeddling with the Works of Darkness and of communing with capricious forces that they foolishly believe they can control but which, being progeny of the Great Deceiver, deceive them instead.

Such operatives have no problem at all, for instance, with the CIA's 'Heart of Darkness' and with the widespread use by the US military and their evil subcontractors of torture methodology which the State Department's respected 'Country Reports on Human Rights Practices' has double-mindedly condemned in all countries with the single exception of the United States itself, for decades.

On 10th October 2005, The Daily Telegraph[70] reported that the Bush Administration was threatening that the President would veto legislation prohibiting the torture of prisoners by US troops, following an overwhelming revolt by Republican legislators. In one late-night Senate vote, a measure forbidding the use of torture was passed by 90 votes to nine. Led by Senator John McCain, who was himself tortured while a prisoner in Vietnam, the amendment would 'prohibit the cruel, inhumane or degrading treatment of prisoners in the custody of the US Defense Department'. In response, the former White House spokesman, Scott McClellan, pronounced: 'We have put out a Statement of Administration Policy saying that [the President's] advisers would recommend that he vetoes it if it contains such language'. Earlier, Vice President Richard Cheney had gone to the Senate to insist that torture must not be prohibited.

The lust to 'inflict pain without flinching' which, as Malachi Martin taught, is among the three darkest consequences of 'high' occult-Masonic initiation, was thus yet again exposed, along with its consequences at Abu Ghraib and elsewhere, as integrated into the Luciferian mentality of the US Federal Government - which should come as no surprise, given that the US Government is a Rosicrucian foundation steeped in the Black culture of the occult. Heimbichner asserts that 'seething energy' for the prosecution of 'Black policy' is imparted to government not least through the Illuminati hiding within the O.T.O. It was, he argues, 'the British Intelligence Office Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) [see Figure 70 on page 461], the self-styled 'Great Beast 666'... dubbed 'The Wickedest Man in the World' by the [defunct] English paper John Bull, who gave this secret society its most potent modern shape and direction, effectively recreating it in his own bestial image. It has since adapted and grown, taking an increasingly decentralised and laid-back outer form...'.[71].

The O.T.O. today has Lodges and what Heimbichner calls 'power zones' across the world, including Israel, Russia and South America, and still claims to be the 'graduate school' for the old prototypical fraternal order and 'service club' known as the Freemasons'[72]. Clearly, this statement corresponds with the documented facts concerning the amalgamation of Illuminati Orders and secret societies, already described.

Throughout this investigation we must of course remain at all times on guard against familiar Illuminati lies, half-truths and diversionary ploys. Heimbichner is well aware of this necessity, as he continues: 'Freemasons would dispute this claim, but we will see that such protests reflect either ignorance or an attempt at deception of the "Cowans" (outsiders), including deception of lower-level dupes within their own system of Lodges'[73]. But it is neither here nor there what Freemasons care to think, since we have seen, from the pen of none other than Albert Pike, that 'it is not intended that [they] should understand...; but it is intended that [they] shall imagine that [they] understand'. Why on earth join a secret society that boasts of deceiving its own membership?

O.T.O.'S COVER AS A 'FRINGE' OR 'IRREGULAR' ILLUMINATI 'ORDER'

Heimbichner goes on to explain, contrary to the impression so far extracted here from the literature, that The O.T.O. is a traditional "fringe Masonic" or "irregular" Order, a special group structure which exists in a fraternal relationship with top members of Grand Lodge "regular" Freemasonry, minus official sanction, enabling convenient public disavowals and denial of the Grand Lodge when incriminating activities of these 'irregular' Lodges occasionally reach public awareness'[74]. This assessment raises the perennial (and since we are dealing with the culture of dark occult secrecy, effectively unanswered) question of whether O.T.O. is a self-appointed 'parallel' outlet and instrument for the dissemination of pagan norms and sorcery throughout controlling elites and through their influence, into society as a whole, or whether it really represents the consolidated secret society and Masonic Palladian forces of the Illuminati, as the serious open literature suggests. Certain 'authorities' insist that O.T.O. is a separate conduit for the promulgation of sorcery and the 'Ancient Mysteries', but the following statement, couched in typically confused and opaque defensive language, by a past Master of both a Masonic Lodge and an O.T.O. 'oasis' (as The Order's 'Lodges' are apparently called) essentially sup ports the assessment that the Author has derived from the respected literature sources. The statement confirms O.T.O.'s formal relationship with Rosicrucian-propelled Freemasonry:

'Freemasons claim that they arose out of the Masonic (i.e., those who build with stone) guilds of the Middle Ages, and intimate that their actual origins stem from the Knights Templar. By the time they fully revealed themselves to the public (at the formation of the United Grand Lodge of England in 1717), they claimed that they had evolved from 'operative' Masons (actual builders/architects), into 'speculative' Masons (pondering the philosophical morality in the symbols of the builders' craft), who derived elaborate ceremonies and morality plays in order to explicate and get the point across, with liberal subliminal doses of qabbalistic symbolism. The way I see it, the evolution of the Masons was from operative to speculative, but I would say that it was in a Rosicrucian sense rather than a Masonic sense. I see in the rituals of Freemasonry an attempt to infuse classical Rosicrucian symbolism into Masonic initiation in such a manner as would not be inflammatory to such as would find it objectionable. The rituals of O.T.O. go a step toward tearing down the veil concealing that additional symbolism... reformulated as a sort of 'new aeon' Freemasonry. However O.T.O. makes no claim to make 'Masons', but rather 'magicians', as a comparison of Degree titles between the two systems would suggest. Similarly, the 'A. A.' [= Atlantean Adepts: see above: - Ed.] is a reformulation of the traditional Rosicrucian model (i.e., Golden Dawn, AMORC etc) with a 'new aeon spin'[75].

Note that the speaker cited by Craig Heimbichner here is himself a sorcerer, and that he is implicitly perfectly content with the sexual and other abominations with which he is necessarily familiar as a participant in both 'streams' of the occult.

Given that he is himself necessarily confused, as are all those who dabble, whether naively or not, in these Works of Darkness, it is hardly surprising that independent outside investigators are in danger of remaining confused by the lies and half-truths that these people utter. This Author has, however, the benefit of access to Manly P. Hall's rare Rosicrucian work[76] which definitively confirms the accuracy of the Rosicrucian engine and dimension of this collective abomination. We can therefore safely suggest that O.T.O. represents, at the least, one of a number of central overt loci of the contemporary Illuminati, as well as providing a more intensive and preposterously decadent kabbalistic outlet for the 'seething energies of Lucifer', beyond even the possibilities provided at the 'highest' levels of Freemasonry through the parallel Scottish and York Rites, and the Palladian (orgiastic fornication) Rite. The O.T.O. goes to the extremes of Talmudic paganism.

Although, as we have seen, blood oaths, treasonable actions, sorcery, the summoning of evil spirits and other abominations are encountered at various levels of Freemasonry, at the lower levels and in the 'Blue Degrees', your regular Masonic dupe can retain a degree of moral integrity by turning a blind eye to what he or she encounters, with 'put-down' generalisations such as 'oh, I only do this because of the dinners, the camaraderie and because I meet interesting people I wouldn't otherwise meet, and if I am honest, because I need the contacts'. Heimbichner is rightly scathing about such people and confirms basically that one cannot make progress within the US official or legal structures outside Masonry - a state of affairs which the Author knows to be true, since the husband of a US contact was approached at a certain stage of his career by two Masons who came to the family home and stated baldly that he would make no further progress in his political career unless he became a Mason.

'Like Al Capone with his Chicago soup kitchens, the Masons cover themselves with many charitable activities, usually performed by... the "Porch Brethren" (Blue Degree 'Useful Idiots'). The Freemasons are the prototype of the service clubs that followed Masonry, such as the Rotary [clubs]. The "Bar association", the US Court and police systems, the Federal Government, the military and the Space Program, are heavily infiltrated with Freemasons.... The average "Knife and Fork" Freemason is a pitiable dupe. He gullibly trades his good name to the Lodge as a member, in exchange for a mess of pottage in the form of a greased career track'[77]. A similar environment in the United Kingdom was first exposed in 1984 by Stephen Knight, in his classic work 'The Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons', shortly after which poor Mr Knight died suddenly and mysteriously a la Mozart[78].

FAST-TRACK PASSPORT INTO A WORLD OF KABBALISTIC DEBAUCHERY

It is an obvious but little-stated fact that just about the only people who have time available to waste in Masonic and occult pursuits are members of the legal profession, which all too often specialises in lying and 'economies with the truth', and those whose livelihood is paid for in the public sector by the taxpayer (or, in the case of US intelligence operatives, to some extent from 'Black Budget' sources). It is these people, who regulate and interfere with our lives, who have time to spare and who wittingly or unwittingly dabble with sorcery through their Masonic activities - instead, for instance, of reading Scripture and praying more often, as one of the Author's most remarkable friends in Britain decided to do in 2005. Those of us who have to make our living commercially in order to pay the swingeing taxes that these people impose, the proceeds of which are so conspicuously wasted on our behalf, have no time for such foolishness. Not all Masons are parasites, but large numbers are certainly public sector employees.

Mr Heimbichner's accurate contention is that the O.T.O. exists in order to bypass the slow-motion ritualistic indoctrination over a prolonged period of time that is provided by the devious Masonic progression process, and to 'plunge headlong' instead 'into the very subjects the High Degree Masons are told are reserved to the core of initiation' [sic]. 'And at the core of these secrets is the embrace of contradiction, of the "elexir of life", and of the power of blood.... Degenerate kabbalistic secrets form the gnosis of the Cult of the Great Beast Aleister Crowley, truly the grandfather of modern Satanism. These secrets may even have formed the basis of the cult led by Charles Manson, who is alleged to have been affiliated with a renegade "Solar Lodge", formerly of the O.T.O.. These secrets also formed the basis of our space program as propelled by O.T.O. leader John Whiteside Parsons, founder of the Aerojet Corporation and co-founder of NASA's Jet Propulsion Laboratory in Pasadena, California'.

Since O.T.O. is of German (Jewish) parentage, it would not be surprising if further deep research into this subject were to reveal direct links between O.T.O. and the occultism of Nazi Germany in general - and associated with the activities of the Himmler scientists, whose two primary fields of interest were space travel and mind-control operations, in particular. Parsons was leader of the California O.T.O. for several years. As previously discussed, those who seek to be 'as gods' have a desperate 'need' to establish that life forms exist externally to the Earth, since for some reason they assume that this would definitively confirm their mechanistic view of the universe and the mad 'God sleeps' fantasy (Deism). However the reality, as mankind will ultimately come to realise, is that there are no life-forms anywhere in the universe except on Earth, which is where the Lord performed His Wonderful Works for His and our benefit. Apparently Parsons regarded his work in laying the groundwork for flights to the moon, as 'an act of ritual magic'.

As Craig Heimbichner elaborates, this kabbalistic, occult 'gnosis has shaped Hollywood and American politics, the Catholic Church and modern culture itself, sparking the spread of Wicca and the modern homosexual movement, ultimately ushering the modern world into what initiates call the era of "Horus the Child", processing our culture, transforming its vestiges of Christianity into deepening layers of Crowleyanity'[79]. Since 2004 was evidently the centenary of this 'New Aeon' referred to by the Mason and O.T.O. operative cited on page 464, the O.T.O. produced a centenary edition of its odious 'holy book' for the occasion. Certainly, in the hundred years or so since the apparent foundation of O.T.O., the foundations of civilised and Christian society have been extensively demolished, in accordance with the revolutionary principle of the Danish philosopher Kirkegaard, that the most successful revolutions are those which take place within the framework of the ancien regime.

The O.T.O. indulges in utter depravity, and has penetrated the highest levels of Western Governments, presupposing the abominations committed among the elite at the Bohemian Grove in California. Crowley and Israel Regudy were primarily responsible for pioneering obsessive focus, on behalf of the Rosicrucian core, in the Kabbalah -from which, as has been mentioned, the contemporary explosion of interest spearheaded by the Illuminati's (Jewish) instrument Madonna, is derived. Britney Spears, Eminem and other satanic pop operatives such as the vile, filthy, degenerate and evil-looking Rolling Stones (an allegedly gangster group much favoured by European Black Nobility), do not belt out hatred lyrics and (in the case of Eminem) wear a Neo-Nazi look, by accident many of the top pop singers emerge from an internship within the Walt Disney Empire called the 'Mickey Mouse Club' and are offered stardom and worldly riches in exchange for what amounts to allegiance to Satan, mind-control and of course losing their souls. Lyrics typically advocate despair, violence, suicide and fake New Age 'spirituality' - all of which are familiar statements of Satan's preoccupations.

Intended effects of pervasive satanic 'noise' (deceitfully called 'music') include of course the spreading of disarray, disharmony, confusion, jealousy, distress, disfunctionality and disorientation among the young separating them from family and home, and leveraging their anger against authority. This is a contrived consequence of the sterile revolutionary 'educational brainwashing' they have received, which denies their individuality.

THE ILLUMINATI'S MASS MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMERS

Madonna appears on a long list of occult Illuminati mind programmers published by web.archive.org - labelled 'Satanist and Monarch slave' - along with Hillary Clinton, who is labelled 'Illuminati witch and mind-control slave handler' (as likewise implied in the Cathy O'Brien/Mark Phillips book, 'Trance Formation of America'), in the company of the late Pope John Paul H (a.k.a. Karol Wojtyla), who was identified as an Illuminati adept and a Freemason (both incompatible with his status as Pope, but in tune with his actual status as late Magus: see Figure 61, page 379). That status in turn reflects the extraordinary background of the late Pope who, in the early 1940s was employed by the I.G. Farben chemical firm to sell cynanide to the Nazi regime for use at Auschwitz, having also worked as a chemist in the laboratories manufacturing the poison gas and malathion. After the war, this salesman, fearing for his life, had the bright idea, as did many other Nazis, of joining the Catholic Church, becoming an ordained priest in 1946. One of Karol Wojtyla's close friends was a Dr Wolf Szmuness, who allegedly masterminded experimental Hepatitis B vaccine trials conducted by the Center for Disease Control in New York, San Francisco and four other American cities in 1978-81, which may have been associated with the release of the AIDS virus. The Zyklon-B salesman was ordained as Poland's youngest bishop in 1958. He was elected Pope after his predecessor in the Vatican was assassinated when a nun offered him poisoned champagne.

Other 'big name' mental 'programmers' - Illuminati operatives who are trained to use special skills to disseminate 'Works of Darkness' and popular acceptance of abominations - on the list, include Winthrop Rockefeller, 'Illuminati kingpin and porn dealer' and alleged father of Bill Clinton; the AD/DC satanic Rock Band; the Grateful Dead satanic cult rock band and alleged Illuminati cocaine distributors; Alex Houston, the CIA Satanist and Monarch programmer exposed in 'Trance Formation of America'; and the German Dr Henry ('Henny') Kissinger (alleged Illuminati and P2 Freemason). The late Francois Mitterrand, who was close to the Rothschilds and was a leading Illuminati operative, as allegedly is President Chirac, appears on the list along with other named alleged Illuminati programmers - including King Juan Carlos I, the late McGeorge Bundy, the late Bob Hope (slave owner and slave handler for intelligence agencies), Shirley MacLaine (actress, author, New Age occultist), Queen Beatrix of the Netherlands, Dr Michael N. Ryan, allegedly one of the Illuminati's cover-up doctors who 'patches up' Monarch sex slaves, and Donald Trump (Illuminati). The list is given on pages 517-518.

Craig Heimbichner's research has confirmed, inter alia, that, as indicated earlier, 'O.T.O. is indeed related to the Palladian Rite, which he calls 'Freemasonry's inner sanctum'. In other words, it is a direct descendant of the abomination established by Albert Pike in collaboration with Giuseppe Mazzini. This being the case, O.T.O. seems likely to be a means not only of spreading sorcery and phallicism more decisively and extensively into society, but also of ventilating the frustrations of Luciferians driven as always by the 'seething energies of Lucifer' at being 'cooped up' within the inner, inner circles of the Halls of Darkness of their own making.

Alfred Kinsey (1894-1956), the 'sexologist' who abused hundreds of children in sex acts connected with his notorious 'research', and whose 'Sexual Behaviour in the Human Male' became the basis of modern corrupting sex education which has compromised traditional morality, acknowledged Crowley, of Ordo Templi Orientis, as among his most important sources of 'inspiration'. He was a guest at Crowley's Abbey of Thelema 'experimental studio' in Italy. In her book, 'Kinsey: Crimes and Consequences', the impeccable analyst Judith Reisman noted that Kinsey 'included observational reports on the speed of reaching orgasm in 1,888 boys, aged 5 months to adolescence who were timed with a stopwatch', and '47 preadolescent girls'[80]. In the Talmudic Book of Ketubot 11b, it is laid down that 'If a grown man has intercourse with a little girl less than three years old, all agree that it is not considered a significant sexual act, for having intercourse with a girl when she is less than three years old is like putting a finger in an eye'. The prescription of Jesus Christ against the perpetrators of such abominations is without mercy.

THE ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS FOCUS ON THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

In the Fifth Degree Rite of the O.T.O. ritual called 'Sovereign Prince of the Rose-Croix', a crucifix (a cross carrying the image of the crucified Christ) is trampled underfoot, without these despicable creatures understanding that what they are actually stamping upon its itself prohibited ('thou shalt make no graven image') and an abnegation of the central Truth of Jesus Christ - namely that he died once and for all, for our sins, so that reiteration of and glorying in His suffering on our behalf by exhibition of his contorted body on the cross is perverse, and prohibited.

One characteristic of the O.T.O. to which Heimbichner attaches exceptional importance is that of its 'double-mindedness', to which extensive reference has been made earlier. This is explained in the context of its approach to the Catholic Church. Specifically, 'the O.T.O. fosters an alchemically double-minded blend of awe for traditional Catholic ritual, and antagonism towards Rome; while keeping highly interested in the direction of the Catholic Church and seeking to influence that direction wherever possible'. The reason for this particular manifestation of double-mindedness is that it is the objective of the Illuminati, as was discussed in Chapter 6, to convert the Catholic Church into the Universal Church of Man. With a Pope who communes with his 'predecessor' on the papal throne, O.T.O. operatives believe that this objective is approaching realisation. After all, the Church of England has been 'successfully' stripped of its spiritual content. So can the Church of Rome be far behind?

In fact the O.T.O.'s focus on the Catholic Church has always been in evidence, according to Heimbichner. For instance, in 1903, following the death of Pope Leo XIII, who had pronounced vigorously against Freemasonry, Cardinal Mariano Rampolla del Tindaro, the Vatican's Secretary of State and a secret member of the Masonic Academy [sic], was ail but elected - when a veto was secured by an alert Catholic expert on occult conspiracy, Monsignor Ernest Jouin (France). He managed to convince the Austrian Emperor, Franz-Josef, assisted by Cardinal Jan Puzyna, Bishop of Cracow, that a veto was essential; so that the Cardinal invoked an ancient law, cancelling the election of Cardinal Rampolla. This was not a new experience: direct, confrontational Gnostic attempts to seize control over the Church - which, being a primary component of the Illuminati, has always remained 'mixed' and 'of two minds', torn between the Truth of Christ and its imposed pagan baggage - had occurred centuries earlier.

Valentinus, an early Gnostic impostor, attempted to become Pope, fulfilling Simon Magus's ambition, while 'various Popes such as Alexander VI and Sixtus V have favoured occultic schemers'[81], as reviewed in Chapter 6.

The Vatican II Council began three weeks before the death of the O.T.O. outer high-priest Karl Germer on 11th October 1952. As it began, the O.T.O. conducted an occult ritual, using Egyptian sorcery, with a view to influencing the outcome of the Council. Heimbichner asserts that the O.T.O. finally 'got not one, but three of their own on the

Chair of Peter [sic], "the Johns and the Pauls" (John XXIII, named after an abominable predecessor for some unexplained and probably occult reason), Paul VI and John-Paul II[82]. That the O.T.O. appears always to have been specifically instrumental in the offensive against the Catholic Church - which the Illuminati consider 'their own' but seek impatiently to 'cleanse' of all remembrance of Jesus Christ - is associated with its specifically Jewish and Swiss/German provenance.

According to Heimbichner, a key operative in the establishment of the O.T.O. was the 'Jewish refugee' and B'nai B'rith activist, Dr Felix Lazerus Pinckus (1881-1947), a major player in the Zionist movement as President of the Zurich Union of Zionists[83]. The exclusively Jewish B'nai B'rith organisation within Masonry was established in 1843 by Jewish Masons and by the leaders of other Jewish secret societies, including Isaac Roenbourg, William Renau and Reuben Rodacher. Pinckus became the 'spiritual mentor' of Hermann Joseph Metzger (1919-90), who later became the head of the O.T.O. in Switzerland and of The Order of the Illuminati, or Ordo Illuminatorum (OI). It seems clear that Pinckus, a Swiss Jew, may actually have been overt head of the Illuminati. This would make perfect sense, since the affairs of the Illuminati are today coordinated by the Bilderberg organisation, based in Switzerland.

BILDERBERG AS THE COORDINATING CENTRE

Researchers are generally agreed (which may be dangerous) that the much-maligned Bilderberg Organisation is either the, or one of the central binding mechanisms serving to unify and coordinate the naturally fissiparous dialectical components of the New Underworld Order movement, that is to say, of the modern Illuminati. However the utmost caution must be reserved in reaching any such judgment, in view of the fact, admitted by Illuminati 'Fathers', that label-changing is routine, to maintain the level of secrecy considered necessary in order for this gigantic conspiracy against humanity not to be 'fatally' destabilised through exposure (which is what this book is all about). The other reason for exercising extreme caution in identifying the seething core of the Black nexus is that, since the component secret societies and groups are criminal organisations or engage in criminal transactions and are the inventions and playthings of the Evil One, they are, by definition, constantly or potentially at loggerheads with one another, since the Devil - as reiterated throughout this book - is the author of all confusion. ('For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace': First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 14, verse 33). Moreover the scope for tension, envy and lethal competition has grown exponentially in recent years, with the non-stop creation out of thin air of fiat money funds running into the trillions of dollars which it is the central focus of some of the most powerful of the component criminalist groups to control and maximise.

The mafia-style culture of omerta and institutionalised secrecy, which presupposes the tell-tale double-mindedness of all members of the synarchical Illuminati system, was verbalised by Weishaupt himself in one his more notorious statements to a corresponding secret colleague: 'One must speak sometimes one way and sometimes another, but so as never to contradict ourselves, and so that, with respect to our true way of thinking, we may be impenetrable'. In reality, these people often take pains to contradict themselves - a particularly fine example having been publicised in 1993 when the former Russian Foreign Minister, the consummate Leninist Andrei Kozyrev, delivered two speeches in Stockholm on the same day, in one of which he ostensibly spoke for the 'peace party' and in the other for the 'war party'. Given their inherent double-mindedness, Illuminists, from whatever component of the synarchy, have no problem speaking out of both sides of their faces. More commonly, it is arranged for one collaborator to say one thing, and for another to say the opposite, so that the public is confused and the truth is therefore deliberately consigned to the realm of speculation.

Nevertheless, it is thought that the Bilderberg office in Switzerland not only provides a crucial coordinating service for the Illuminati generally, but also acts as a strategic planning secretariat. Examination of the lists of participants at its annual meetings, leaked to certain researchers probably in order for the 'debate' surrounding this organisation to remain fragmented and therefore controlled, reveals that those who attend are invariably people with whom this Author, for instance, could never discuss any of the issues raised in this book. Revealingly, attendees are bankers, industrialists, senior officials from international institutions, a few political figures, certain European Royalty and 'Black Nobility' figures (see page 496), as well as 'favoured' entrepreneurs into whose hands opportunities routinely cascade that are not accessible by others, and a sprinkling of left-wing journalists. Some of these dubious characters are in reality 'Fascists' dressed in left-wing clothing. A common feature of all of them is that their minds are closed - that is to say, their minds are governed by what the CIA calls 'slides' - prefabricated, controlled, dogmatic and 'politically correct' 'takes' on issues which preclude further analysis and consideration. The leaders among them use annual Bilderberg meetings, as well as other fora such as the annual January Davos meetings of the Geneva-based World Economic Forum, established and convened over the years by an operative of Germanic Jewish extraction named Klaus Schwab, allegedly in part to vet and interview prospective or actual new recruits to the nexus of the conspiracy, or else to familiarise Illuminati veterans with a broader range of controlled contacts.

The architect of the Bilderberg organisation was a diminutive and scruffy Polish Jew called Dr Joseph Retinger, a 'High' Mason and the eminence grise who, working with Prince Bernhard of The Netherlands, agitated for structures which would foster the emergence of a United Europe. In 1952, Dr Retinger is said to have approached Prince Bernhard with a proposal for a secret conference to involve NATO leaders in open and frank discussions on international affairs behind closed doors. Such meetings would permit participants to speak their minds freely because no media representative would be admitted, nor would any news bulletin be issued about the topics discussed. In the same year, Retinger approached the Truman Administration and briefed US officials about the proposal. Under the Eisenhower Administration, the Director of Central Intelligence, General Walter Bedell Smith, and C. D. Jackson, worked interactively with European counterparts to implement 'Retinger's' plan. From the outset, the US promoters were heavily influenced by the head Illuminati family in the United States, the Rockefellers, owners of Standard Oil, competitors of Royal Dutch Shell. A Bilderberg draft document from 1989 recapitulated: 'Bilderberg takes its name from the Bilderberg Hotel in Oosterbeek, Holland, where the first meeting took place in 1954. That pioneering meeting grew out of the concern expressed by many leading citizens on both sides of the Atlantic that Western Europe and North America were not working together as closely as they should on matters of critical importance' [the 'cover story' for public consumption - Ed.]. It was felt that regular, off-the-record discussions would help create a better understanding of the complex forces and major trends affecting Western nations in the difficult postwar period'. A better understanding, or a deliberately moulded and skewed interpretation of events and aspirations consonant with the Illuminati's agenda?

In his Foreword to 'Joseph Retinger: Memoirs of an Eminence Grise' by Retinger's Polish sidekick, John Pomian [Sussex University Press, Chatto and Windus, London, 1972], Prince Bernhard attributed the establishment of the Bilderberg Group to Retinger, who mysteriously had the entree to Presidents, Prime Ministers and Royalty. At Retinger's funeral in 1960, Sir Edward Bedington-Behrens said: 'I remember Retinger in the United States picking up the telephone and immediately making an appointment with the President, and in Europe he had complete entree in every political circle as a kind of right acquired through the trust, devotion and loyalty he inspired'. Although of Jewish extraction, Retinger was, for public consumption anyway, a Roman Catholic (the Catholic Church being quintessentially Pharisaical) and was considered by many to be a Masonic agent of the Vatican, liaising in particular between the Pope and the 'Black Pope' in charge of the Society of Jesus. Prior to his intensive behind-the-scenes work in helping to leverage the establishment of the Bilderberg Group, Retinger founded the European Movement, which has operated for many years as a 'Fifth Column' network inside the EU 'Member States', undermining residual national sovereignty. His agitation led to the establishment, in turn, of the Council of Europe, on 5th May 1949. This organisation is today one of the main EU engines of socialist collectivisation.

A review of who has been in charge of Bilderberg meetings over the years is instructive. According to the already cited 1989 draft Bilderberg document, 'the first (Bilderberg) meeting was convened under the chairmanship of (the former SS officer -Ed.) Prince Berhard of The Netherlands, who served as Chairman for 22 years. He was succeeded by Lord Home of the Hirsel, former Prime Minister for [sic: not 'of', but 'for'!] the United Kingdom, who chaired the meetings for four years. At the 1980 meeting, Lord Home turned over the meeting to Walter Scheel, former President of the Federal Republic of Germany. In 1985, Mr Scheel resigned, and was succeeded by Lord Roll of Ipsden, President of S.G. Warburg Group Plc. At the 1989 meeting, Lord Roll turned over the chairmanship to Lord Carrington' - architect of the chaos in Zimbabwe. In this connection, the US Treasury's Office of Foreign Assets Control (OFAC) list not only contains the names of President Mugabe and his second wife Grace, but also lists at least a dozen of the large farms which were seized by President Mugabe's thugs; and enquiries have revealed that these 'territories' may be located above rich mineral resources.

With its headquarters in Strasbourg, the Council's Executive Committee provided Retinger with his first prominent platform for the promotion European unification. The widespread opinion that Retinger was inter alia an agent of the Vatican arose after he had suggested to the French Prime, Minister, Georges Clemenceau, that Austria, Hungary and Poland should be merged as a tripartite monarchy under the guidance of the Jesuit 'Order'; but Clemenceau, suspicious that this was a Vatican-inspired proposal, rejected the scheme outright. Retinger also intermeddled in North American politics -having gained the trust of the Mexican Government after playing a key revolutionary role in the creation of a Mexican trade union movement in the 1920s - by double-mind-edly persuading the Mexican authorities to nationalise US oil interests in Mexico, and conducting secret negotiations with Washington on behalf of the Mexican Government.

Given repeated penetration by activists of the meetings' arrangements, though not of its meetings themselves, the Bilderberg organisation has succumbed to the need to explain itself. Its 'line' is that the meetings are simply a simple forum for the sharing of views by prominent people from many countries, without fear of being reported. The privacy of the meetings just 'allows leading citizens to speak their minds openly and freely'.

The former British intelligence agent John Coleman (technically a colleague of the Satanist Aleister Crowley) once asserted that the Bilderberg organisation coordinates the activities and relationships between what he thought were the three strands of the Illuminati - (1) the Communists (sometimes called the Wicca-Masons), (2) the 'Black Nobility', and (3) the Maltese Jesuits/Vatican, each of which component has the occult number of 13 representatives on the 39-member Board of the Bilderberg organisation, a command mechanism of the Bavarian Illuminati. Coleman asserted, with some justification given other evidence advanced here, that the Bavarian Illuminati created Bilderberg, which was established not by Retinger, who acted as coordinator, but by the former Nazi SS Officer Prince Bernhard of The Netherlands himself in 1954. It has its headquarters at 1 Smidswater, Den Haag, Netherlands. Subsequent objective assessments have reconfirmed that the Board has 39 members, consisting indeed of 13 representatives from each of the three main secret groups comprising the Illuminari - but that the three main components consist of the (penetrated) Freemasons, the Vatican, and the 'Black Nobility'. It is this 39-member committee that functions all year round from its offices in Switzerland, from where secret financial transactions can be arranged and monitored as necessary. The committee determines who shall be invited to the annual meeting and what policies, plans and strategies will be revealed there, and discussed. It is believed that every proposal or plan that has ever been discussed at an annual meeting of the Bilderberg Group has come to pass, usually within one or two years following the meeting in question. After Mrs Thatcher voiced her opposition to any further European integration in 1990, it was determined within the bowels of this control organisation that she should be removed from office - a task that was de facto duly undertaken by two of her formerly closest colleagues, the Europhile Lord Howe (formerly Sir Geoffrey Howe) and Lord Lawson. According to a British intelligence source, MI6, which has unhealthily close links with German and French intelligence, has been determined ever since then to rid the UK of the 'last vestiges' of 'Thatcherism' (for which this Author was partly responsible).

Indeed this was revealed to the Author when he confronted the veteran journalist Gordon Thomas, in November 2004 concerning a tissue of lies which the journalist said had been disseminated to the British press about the Author having been associated with Sir Mark Thatcher (whom he has never met) over the curious Equatorial Guinea putsch affair. The rationale given was that MI6 were 'expunging the last vestiges of Thatcherism'.

OBJECTIVE INVESTIGATIONS BEDEVILLED BY LIES AND FABRICATIONS

Care has been taken by the German, American and British Information Warfare specialists to ensure that discussion of these issues is always contaminated with lies and fabrications. These are easily identified, and their purpose is to discredit those who are either brave or foolish enough to 'surface' into the public domain with 'opinions' on them. In order not to contaminate this work with such fabrications, two are mentioned here by way of illustration. The first is the perennially recycled lie that Jesus married Mary Magdalene, and that their progeny is alive, well, and conspiring 'as we speak'. In summary, the fairytale asserts that Jesus survived the cross, married Mary Magdalene who bore him a son, and lived in seclusion in the South of France. During the fifth century, this lineage is said to have intermarried with the royal line of the Franks, giving rise to the Merovingian dynasty, from which today's 'Black Nobility' is descended. These gross fabrications hang, it will have been noticed, from the single lie that Jesus survived crucifixion, which of course presupposes that the Gospel accounts are themselves partial fabrications, or else contain pertinent disinformation. The lie also presupposes that after surviving his ordeal, Jesus abandoned his Ministry altogether in favour of married life. It is not worth expending time and energy researching these lies, not least because the sane analyst will at once discover glaring revisionist discontinuities, non sequiturs and gaps in any narrative using such material. Such analyses are usually devoid of notes and references, which should make the serious analyst suspicious. In short, these, and many related Information Warfare fabrications, may safely and sensibly be rejected as reprobate, diversionary Illuminati impediments to understanding.

A second piece of 'nonsense' to be found in open analyses of these issues is that the Illuminati are cooperating with 'aliens' to bring about their New World Order. Such low assertions are to be found in many sources, and they attract the attention of the unwary. However, in this particular case, the assertion masks a truth that the perpetrators know and seek both to promulgate and to disguise simultaneously. For 'aliens', read 'demons'.

With the orchestrated perversion of the education system, so that Scripture is barely taught to children any more, young people know all about demons from the satanic diversionary materials that the Illuminati's collaborators have developed for them to play with - demonic videos, Black games, hellish 'comics', filthy, death- and pornography-oriented pop 'noise', film noir, and all the other grotesque perversions and evil things that the devils have invented in order to pervert and saturate children with the knowledge of evil. When the Information Warfare specialists' collaborators insert disinformation to the effect that the Illuminati are collaborating with 'aliens', what they mean to convey - since they cannot disclose their evil inclinations - is that they are collaborating with demons. For it must be remembered that these people are not atheists. If they were, they would not believe in devils, and 'tremble' at the Name and power of Jesus Christ.

THE REVEALING ISSUE OF THE KHAZARS*

Given the intensity of the Information Warfare offensive, which is a primary preoccupation, for instance, of certain 'instructed' US intelligence cadres, fabrications and lies like these have been deliberately inserted into analyses, with the objective of maximising scope for obfuscation of the issues that this book addresses. Such fabrications are particles of sand thrown into the air to assist the Illuminati with their obsessive imperative of trying to ensure that the leaking secrets of their conspiracy do not see the light of day. Their dissemination is of course facilitated by the deliberate strategy of exploiting the Internet and the 'New Age' of computer universality for Information Warfare purposes. The foregoing preamble was necessary, partly, in order to introduce the somewhat diversionary but perennially related issue of the descendants of the Khazars, as modern components of Illuminati secret societies. The 'debate' surrounding this ethnic group is bedevilled by accusations that the subject is favoured by anti-Semites and other fanatical and hate groups and organisations in order to undermine the Jewishness of the Jews.

* The information in this section is derived mainly from authoritative Jewish sources, including the work of the Hebrew History Federation, and from Khazaria.com. It is presented exclusively in order to clarify the confusion surrounding the issue of whether people calling themselves Jews really are Israelites, given that if they are not, the Khazars could be identified as those whom Jesus Christ condemned as blasphemers in Revelation Chapter 2, verse 9: 'I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not but are of the synagogue of Satan'; and Revelation Chapter 3, verse 9: Them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not but do lie'. If the Khazars are not Jews, it is then easy to extrapolate that these people are those of the synagogue of Satan. However it is shown here that the Khazars really are largely Jews. So when the Lord spoke of those who are 'of the synagogue of Satan' he was, as always, speaking spiritually, echoing Ezekiel [chapter 8, verses 12-18]: 'Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? For they say. The Lord seeth us not the Lord hath forsaken the earth'. These 'ancients' had 'their faces toward the East; and they worshipped the sun toward the East... Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? For they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger.... therefore will I also deal in fury; mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity; and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them'. These, then, are 'them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews (spiritually and according to the Law), and are not, but do lie'. The Word is always spiritual. The Khazar issue is therefore diversionary- another wave of sand thrown in our eyes.

However the reality appears to be that these people are assimilated within the Ashkenazic Jewish population. The hypothesis that many present-day Jews are not of Israelite origin but are Khazars who adopted Judaism as opposed to the alternatives on offer (Christianity and Islam) is disputed by authorities, but insofar as it has resonance it can evidently only apply to Ashkenazim, who belong to one branch of the Jewish population. Khazar origin cannot be attributed to the Sephardim, or to the Teymani, Mizrachi, Bujharan, Indian, Ethiopic and other branches that constitute the other branches of the Jewish population which are undoubtedly of Semitic, Israelite origin. Jewish observers of this 'debate' assume a malevolent intent to split or otherwise compromise Jewry.

The Ashkenazim are the heterogenous branch of European Jewry, excluding Jews from the Mediterranean area. Their generic name refers to the Jews dwelling in Mitteleuropa, considered to be the land of Ashkenaz, with the term being later extended to different Jewish communities including German, Polish, Scandinavian, Russian and Danubian Jews. The Mitteleuropean Jews lived (or sojourned) long enough in Germany, Austria and Bohemia to have developed their own language, Yiddisch, which in due course became a sort of official tongue of the Ashkenazim Jews, just as the Spanish Sephardim developed a peculiar language by mixing their own tongue with Spanish.

THE KHAZARIAN EMPIRE
RUS'
BULGAR HUNS
Bulgar
Kiev
Sarkel
MAGYAR HUNS
Itil
Samandar
Balanjar
EASTERN ROMAN EMPIRE
ABBASID
CALIPHATE
KHWAREZM

Figure 71: The Kazarian Empire at its height, in the 7th and 8th centuries. It controlled one of the most important trade routes between the Middle East and Northern Europe, and its civilisation influenced Eastern European peoples as far as the shores of the Baltic and the Danubian Basin. But if it were not for a few references in Arabic, Persian and other sources, the existence of the Khazars might never have become known. In this kingdom, which stopped Arab conquests northward, Jews were not persecuted, contrary to the norm elsewhere.

The Ashkenazim were initially well-established in Western countries, but after a series of expulsions, they emigrated eastwards from Germany into Russia.

Genetic tests have revealed that the Ashkenazim are direct descendants of the Israelites, with DNA confirming their ancestry as derived from the Middle East. Such tests have also shown that Ashkenazim Jews are more closely related to Yemenite Jews, Assyrian Jews, Sephardic Jews, Kurdish Jews, and Arabs, than they are to indigenous European peoples, and that scant marriage or conversion has occurred to affect the homogeneity of Jewish groups over the centuries. That phenomenon, in turn, is attributable by all observers to the 'legalised religion' taught by their Rabbis, the underlying purpose of which was always to maintain the people of Israel as 'a people apart', or 'a peculiar people', as commanded by the Lord: 'For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth' [Deuteronomy Chapter 14, verse 2]; 'And the Lord hath avouched thee this day to be his peculiar people, as he hath promised thee; and that thou shouldest keep all his commandments [Deuteronomy Chapter 26, verse 18]. But in later centuries, the Rabbis picked and chose what commandments to follow, maintaining the elements of teaching which served their purpose of preserving the racial purity and homogeneity of the Israelites, but polluting the Torah with wayward Talmudic teaching derived from the Babylonian Kabbalah, the superstitions and perversions of Canaan, and elements of the 'Darkness' inherited from Egypt which the Lord had ordered them to discard.

The Khazar royalty was descended from the Ashina Turk dynasty. In the ninth century, the Khazarian kings and nobility, as well as a significant proportion of the Khazarian population, embraced Jewish doctrines and beliefs, and actually adopted the hallmarks of Judaism, including both the Torah and the Talmud, the Hebrew script, and the observance of Jewish holidays. The presence of Jewish script in Masonic imagery, and the false 'Star of David' (which it is not) on the wall of the Great Queen Street Masonic Temple in London, for instance, are traceable to this historical background.

When the Khazarian rulers converted to Judaism, they attracted persecuted minorities from Europe and Islamic countries into their territory. Besides the Jewish population that was already living in Khazaria, a large number of Jews persecuted in the Byzantine Empire and other areas, fled into Khazaria, which became renowned for its freedom and prosperity - arriving from Central Asia, the Caucasus, the Balkans, Syria, Mesopotamia, Asia Minor, and even from Western Europe, according to Jewish authorities (al-Masudi, Sa'adiyah Gaon and also the Arab writer Dimashqi), who wrote that these refugee wandering Jews offered their religion to the Khazars who 'found it better than their own and accepted if. Jewish immigrants soon outnumbered the native Jews of the Khazar Kingdom. After the fall of the Khazar Empire [see Figure 71, page 474], the Kievan Rus' took its place, ruling over its territory, which meant that a large number of Jews, both Khazars (who had adopted Judaism) and non-Khazars (descendants of immigrant Israelities) became inhabitants of the growing Slavic-Varangian (Russian) state, and the Russians duly inherited most of the social system of the Khazar Kingdom. From the 11th century onwards, the havoc inflicted by the Crusades (which have, as we are all becoming more acutely aware these days, left lasting scars) upon the Jewish communities of Western Europe, induced a stream of German Jews to flee to the comparatively (then) free environment of the Slavs: indeed, Russia was the most desirable place to live in those years.

A further complication arises from the fact that the majority of Jewry which had until the Middle Ages lived under Arab rule, likewise fled eastwards to escape the Church's satanic Inquisition in Spain, reaching Ukraine, Poland and Russia, where they encountered Jews who had been migrating there continuously since the 11th century. Most East European Jews had migrated, as mentioned, from the West to the East of the Continent, and were not descended from the inhabitants of the Khazar Empire.

According to Jewish authorities, they actually represent a fusion of Balkan-Greek Jews from the Byzantine Empire, Babylonian Jews from the Abbasid Caliphate, Yiddisch-speaking Jews from Germany, Sephardic Jews fleeing the Spanish Inquisition, and Khazars. Obviously, all these groups intermarried over the ensuing centuries, so that the Khazar converts disappeared as a distinguishable ethnic entity, and their descendants became more or less fully Jewish, with Israelite ancestry.

THE 'BLACK NOBILITY' AS A COMPONENT OF THE ILLUMINATI

To conclude the matter, the historical reality is that after the fall of their Kingdom, which fell in 1016 under assault from Viking armies (branches of the marauding peoples who attacked the British Isles and within a few generations had re-emerged as the Normans in France, England and Sicily), the Khazars intermixed mainly with the Kipchak (Kuman) populations and lost their character as a distinct people. Several ethnic groups in the Caucasus (Karachays, Kumyks and Dhagestani tribes) have Khazars among their ancestors. A rebel Khazar tribe, the Kabars, of whom many were also Jewish, emigrated to Hungary and were assimilated by their very closely-related kin, the Magyars. In any case, the Hungarian Duke Taksony (955-970 AD) invited Khazar Jews to settle in his realm. For a while, though, Hungarian Jews did promote the proposition that they were themselves of Khazar rather than of authentic Jewish origin, so that they were hence legitimate Hungarians no less than Magyars; and it is possible that it is from this that the muddle over the Khazars originated. In reality, the majority of these people was of original Jewish stock. And it is true that the most strongly Khazar element within the Jewish population is to be found among Hungarian Jews, descendants of the last Khazars who fled into Hungary up to the 14th century, where they were, as indicated, received by their former vassals, the Magyar dukes and kings. Hungarian Jews are therefore definitely a fusion of Semitic German Jews, Khazars, Kabars and Sephardic immigrants who arrived in Hungary via Italy fleeing from the Spanish Inquisition, which (as can be seen) has had extraordinarily long-lasting consequences for humanity.

As for the Jewish communities remaining in the former Khazar territories, they were assimilated by the Slavic-speaking Jews, and later by the Yiddisch-speaking immigrants from Central Europe, who outnumbered native Russian Jews - so that, again, the Khazar origin within Jewry was reduced to minority status and later disappeared through intermarriage. It is therefore concluded that there is indeed a Khazar component among many Eastern European Jews, but that it has been rendered irrelevant today as a consequence of intermarriage with the overwhelming majority of Semitic Ashkenazim. The most authentic descendants of the Khazars are found today among modern Hungarians, including many Hungarian Jews, and to a lesser degree, among Bulgarians in the Caucasus region.

As discussed in the Note on page 473, the issue of the Khazars and their Jewish identity or otherwise is broadly irrelevant to our ongoing investigation into the identity of the Illuminati and the Synagogue of Satan. The confusion surrounding this issue is double-minded: on the one hand, Jewish 'nationalist' protagonists consider that the Khazar issue is an invention wielded by anti-Semites to diminish the proportions of the Jewish diaspora community; while on the other hand, proof that the Khazars are Jews would identify Jews as members of the Synagogue of Satan, which might appear superficially to undermine the integrity of the Lord's condemnations in Revelation Chapter 2, verse 9 -'I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are of the Synagogue of Satan' - and Chapter 3, verse 9. But since Jesus spoke only of spiritual matters, he was of course referring to those double-minded people who, on the one hand, purported to honour every minute detail of the Pharisaical Law (residual Mosesism), while on the other hand secretly engaging in the abominations perceived by the prophet Ezekiel, of sun-worship and perverted sexual and other abominations. Ezekiel's vision [Chapter 5, verses 12-18] is, as we have seen in Chapter 5, of a Masonic Lodge - which holds its meetings at night, faces East, and worships the false 'light' and the sun.

There is a sizeable Jewish (Khazar) element within prominent European royal houses. For instance, the House of Hanover has always appeared to be German, but is in fact Jewish, as are other European Royal Houses, such as those of Hapsburg and Hohenzollern. Prince Bernhard of The Netherlands, whom some say is the head of the 'Black Nobility' families, is alleged to possess veto power over the choice of Pope, a privilege arising from his status as the head of the Hapsburg family, descended from the last Roman Emperor -the Hapsburg Frederick UJ having been the last Emperor to have been crowned in Rome: his great-grandson, Charles V, was the last to have been crowned by a Pope. Charlemagne's crown, a replica of which is part of the Imperial Hapsburg Regalia, is said to have borne the inscription 'Rex Salomon', according to the 'Encyclopaedia Britannica' [14th Edition, 1972, Crown and Regalia, Figure 2]. While remaining on guard against historical invention, revisionism and disinformatiorv one perception is that the Hapsburg House of Orange originated in France. The Hapsburgs were related through marriage with the Merovingians, thought by revisionists to have been descended from the Israelite Tribe of Benjamin, many of whose members went into exile (according to this 'line') following the war with the other eleven tribes described in Judges, Chapter 21. In reality, that chapter makes it perfectly clear that the eleven tribes were reconciled with Benjamin, whose families continued to dwell in their home territories after the reconciliation. Exactly how these distortions arose cannot be ascertained; but the myth of Jesus having married Mary Magdalene and that their offspring engendered the Merovingians is persistent among researchers who do not read Scripture, and who seem to think that the Franks were of Semitic origin. All this, and much more, is typically mixed up with the disinformation surrounding the Khazars.

Another line of enquiry allocates the 'Black Nobility's primary derivation from the oligarchic families of Venice and Genoa, who enjoyed privileged monopoly trading rights in the 12th century. During the first of three Crusades, lasting from 1063 to 1123, the power of the Venetian Black Nobility was established; and the aristocracy had secured complete control over Venice by 1171, when the appointment of the Doge was transferred to a Great Council consisting of members of the new banking and commercial aristocracy, including members of the infamous de Medici family. In 1204, the oligarchic families parcelled out feudal enclaves to their members. The term 'Black Nobility' is derived from this mediaeval elite's routine resort to dirty tricks, secret assassinations, murder, blackmail, the bearing of false witness, the bankrupting of opponents or commercial competitors, kidnapping, child molestation, rape and all the other abominations that are routine among certain intelligence community cadres today. Although sources do not attribute drug-running to these families, it is inconceivable that drugs were not also among their specialities.

The principal 'Black Nobility' families, with extensive Jewish content, as most of their names reveal - due to the pre-eminence of Jewish (Khazar) bankers and monopoly merchants among those who consolidated power in city states and principalities all over Europe during the Middle Ages - are listed as: The House of Windsor (Guelph), Britain; The Belgian House of Wettin; The Swedish House of Bernadotte; The House of Liechtenstein; The House of Oldenberg, Denmark; The House of Hohenzollern, Germany; The House of Hanover, Germany (second in importance to the House of Guelph (Windsor); The House of Bourbon, France; The House of Orange, Netherlands (William of Orange was originally the Jew William Stradholder who was first elevated to the rank of Captain-General of the Dutch Forces); The House of Grimaldi, Monaco; The House of Wittelsbach, Germany; The House of Braganza, Portugal; The House of Nassau, Luxembourg; The Austrian House of Hapsburg; The House of Savoy, Italy; The House of Karadjordevic, Yugoslavia; The House of Wurttemberg, Germany; and The House of Zogu, Albania. All the listed families are connected with the House of Guelph, one of the original Venetian 'Black Nobility' families.

The Guelphs are so intertwined with the House of Hanover that the various connections would take pages to elaborate. Almost all European royal houses originate from the House of Hanover and accordingly from the Guelphs, fountainhead of the 'Black Nobility'. Without reviewing the issue of rights to rule that 'Black Nobility' families continue to claim, the key point for our purposes here is that these people refuse to recognise any government other than what they historically consider to be their own 'divine right' to rule (handed down in the secular realm in parallel with the apostolic succession in the spiritual realm).

ETATS-UNIS d'OCCIDENT

Figure 72: This image appeared in a work attributed to Pierre Plantard de Saint-Clair, identified as the controller of the 'Order' called Prieure de Sion, the existence of which has been publicised in recent years as custodians of the restoration of the so-called Merovingian (Visigoth) dynasty and bloodline (blasphemously associated with the lie that Jesus Christ married Mary Magdalene) to the thrones not only of France, but actually of the whole of Europe. The drawing predicting a united West dates from the very early 1940s. In 1979, M. Plantard told the credulous authors Baigent, Leigh and Lincoln, that the Prieure was in possession of the Treasure from the Temple of Jerusalem, plundered by the Romans during the uprising in AD66.

Therefore, they are said to consider that the United States continues to belong to Great Britain, for instance. Every European royal and so-called noble dynasty, past and present, has a representative on the 'Committee of 300' which, according to Dr John Coleman, was established in the 18th century, although its present form was assumed in 1897.

Dr Coleman was unable to bring forward documentary proof of this Committee's existence, perhaps because of fear of assassination. But writing in a publication printed in Vienna (24th December 1921), the Jewish financial adviser to the Rothschilds and Socialist politician, Dr Walter Rathenau, stated that 'only 300 men, each of whom knows all the others, govern the fate of Europe. They select their successors from their own entourage. These men have the means in their hands of putting an end to [any] form of State which they find unreasonable'. Exactly six months later, Rathenau was assassinated.

Among the old-line 'ruling families' which are not actually 'royal' at all but which consider that their Jewish ('Khazar') or Frankist lineage entitles them to ex officio or, at some stage, co-opted membership of the globalist ruling elite, with some still claiming descent from ancient and 'Holy' Roman Emperors, are the following dynasties: Rothschild, Kuhn, Loeb, Lehman, Rockefeller, Sachs, Warburg, Bush, Lazard, Sieff, Goldman, Schiff, Morgan, Schroeder, Harriman, and Du Pont (who actually consider themselves to be descended from Pontius Pilate). Other such families and patriarchs include the Giustiniani family, 'Black Nobility' of Rome and Venice who trace their lineage to the Emperor Justinian; the Hambro banking family; Pierpaolo Luzzatti Fequiz, with lineage dating back six centuries to the ancient Luzzattos, 'Black Nobility' of Venice; Umberto Ortolani, also from an ancient 'Black Nobility' family; the Doria family, financiers of the Spanish Hapsburgs; the French Rothschilds; the late Baron August von Finck; Franco Orsini Bonacassi, of the ancient Orsini 'Black Nobility' that traces its lineage to an ancient Roman senator; the Agnellis; the Alba family; and Baron Pierre Lambert, cousin of the Belgian Rothschilds. Among these, there is not a single family that is not of Jewish/Khazar descent. The Oltramaire family (Swiss 'Black Nobility'), owners of the Lombard Odier Bank, Geneva, are reported by a US military intelligence source allegedly to finance, historically and to this day, an assassination bureau located in Switzerland. US Amy G-2 records reportedly show this group has been heavily involved in the arms trade to the Middle East, and that it allegedly made no less than 30 attempts to assassinate General de Gaulle, the primary contact man being a certain Jacques Soustelle. He was also identified as the coordinator of the 'governing' Illuminati Committee of 300's transactions and relations with the Sendero Luminoso (Shining Path) guerrilla group protecting the European Illuminati's Peruvian cocaine producers.

In 1815, Jesuit agents and Freemasonic allies among the crowned heads of Europe agreed, at the Congress of Vienna which put an end to the geomasonic depredations of Napoleon (a Masonic operative), that the inviolable neutrality of Switzerland, which had been decreed by the Peace of Westphalia in 1648, would be guaranteed in perpetuity - so that, irrespective of what wars are provoked by the Illuminati in pursuit of their objectives, the funds belonging to the 'Black nobility' lodged in Switzerland, would always remain free from the threat of plunder. This of course is why Switzerland remains in existence. The secret bank accounts of 'Black Nobility' wealth-holders have been joined by their 'successors', the crime families which, especially in the United States, have stolen and created (through fiat money multiplication techniques using stolen collateral) billions, if not trillions, of dollars, and think that they are impregnable from prosecution for all time.

One secret 'Order' to which considerable importance is attached by scholars, the Prieure de Sion [see Figure 72, page 478], has continued to function through the centuries, having been associated with the establishment of the Knights Templar, forerunners of elements of modern Freemasonry. This nexus operates almost exclusively in the shadows, and has orchestrated a number of critical events in history. Its declared objective is the restoration of the Merovingian dynasty and bloodline in France and elsewhere in Europe, and it exerts pressure from behind the scenes for 'more Europe' ('greater' European unity).

Components of the Merovingian lineage, through dynastic alliances and intermarriages, include the noble and royal families of Blanchefort, Gisors, Saint-Clair (Sinclair in Scotland), Montesquieu, Montpezat, Poher, Luisignan, Plantard, and Hapsburg-Lorraine. The Prieure de Sion claims to hold the lost treasure plundered by Titus in AD 70 from the Temple in Jerusalem, even though this treasure was deployed inter alia to construct the Colosseum. Furthermore, Roman Emperors could mint their own money and needed no help, after that example of Financial Warfare, from Jewish financial intermediaries.

At all events, the 'Black Nobility' families, consisting of Jewish money-lenders who over time usurped the thrones which were indebted to them, are prominent 'movers and shakers' among the synarchy. The award by Her Majesty the Queen of an honorary knighthood to George Bush Sr., allegedly perhaps the biggest criminal operative in history, is sadly consistent with this analysis. And one feature of this research emerges time and again, to connect with the 'double-mindedness' characteristic of the Illuminati. It is that 'Black Nobility' figures, and their newcomer associates such as the Bush family, profess Christianity, but may secretly despise it. In a treatise on 'The Order of St John of Jerusalem' (1986), Dr John Coleman wrote that 'as an example, we find the atheist Lord (Peter) Carr-ington, who pretends to be an Anglican Christian but who is a member of the Order of Osiris and other demonic sects, including Freemasonry, installed as a Knight of the Garter at St George's Chapel, Windsor Castle, by Her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth II of England, of the Black Nobility Guelphs, and head of the Anglican Church, which she thoroughly despises'. Dr Coleman is among those who have argued that the 'Christianity' of these people is false, just as was the professed Christianity of the Spanish Jews who 'converted' in order to save their skins in mediaeval Spain, and that they derive their 'spiritual' intake from occult-Judaic Freemasonry. This is hard to square with the evident humility and devotion to Jesus Christ of Her Majesty, but not hard to recognise, possibly, from the behaviour of certain other prominent members of Britain's Royal Family. The reality of its extensive Jewish antecedents (increased by the Bowes Lyon family of which the late Queen Mother was a member) does not, of course, preclude the possibility of members being True Christians, as The Queen appears to be, even though her Anglicanism may perhaps be simple (yet commendable). Not only could Dr Coleman not document the existence of the Committee of 300, but also, likewise, his assertion that The Queen despises the Church of England could never be proven. However given that the Church of England has abandoned its role of instructing the people in the Way, the Truth and the Life, and has gone a-whoring after many of the abominations forbidden by the prophets of the Israelites, this Author would be sympathetic to Her Majesty if she does indeed despise Anglicanism. But supporting Dr Coleman's argument is the sad reflection that the serially reprobate behaviour of Anglican clerics has not, apparently, been corrected by The Queen as Head of the Church. Her Majesty has not appeared to exercise her authority to reprimand them*.

* Indeed, in the course of an interview given in the first quarter of 2006, Dr Rowan Williams, the Archbishop of Canterbury, when asked point-blank whether he believed in God, responded: 'If by believing in God you mean is he sitting in the chair opposite me as you are, no'. That is not the correct answer, which is: 'I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and is come in the flesh' - for which statement Christ promises that all who utter it in sincerity are saved. Dr Williams' first act on being perversely 'selected' for consecration as Archbishop by Tony Blair for confirmation by The Queen, was to attend a Druidic ceremony in Wales, in which he was co-opted into the highest Degree of the Druids. Druidism is of course wholly incompatible with True Christianity, so this man is an impostor.

AN EXPOSE OF ILLUMINATI TRAINING IN THE UNITED STATES

In 2002, an interview with an unnamed 45-year-old female defector from the Illuminati cult named 'Svali', a registered nurse and freelance writer living in Texas, was disseminated on the Internet. Earlier (in March 2000) 'Svali' had started writing a monthly column for survivors of Illuminati programming ritual abuse, which was disseminated at Suite101.com. This site contains a great deal of weird and esoteric material and for this reason cannot be considered a reliable source. In December that year, H. J. Springer, Editor of a separate site, CentrExNews.com. contacted the Illuminati defector and conducted an interview with her by email. On 14th October 2002, Henry Mackow Ph.D. published an article citing excerpts from 'Svali's' comments. Dr Mackow's Internet site is listed (in the author's view, incorrectly) among those suspect websites considered by Finton Dunne (www.BreakForNews.com) in Ireland to be directly or indirectly influenced or controlled by intelligence input. Such sites are usually identifiable by the lack of specifics (names, addresses, locations) and properly referenced source notes, a tell-tale feature of many intelligence sites which exist for the purposes of managing, distorting or confusing public perceptions (mass Psy-Ops). Many of them contain little more than 'rants' and dubious research. But Dr Mackow's work is always of high quality, and clearly in pursuit of truth. Even so, Finton Dunne appropriately implies that he and his colleagues are uncertain which websites are directly and which are indirectly controlled, and that some may be disseminating confusion and diversion entirely unwittingly and innocently [see Note 3]. The usual procedure, given today's officially promoted environment of Information Warfare, is for accurate information to be intermingled with inventions and disinformation. At the same time, it must be borne in mind that intelligence cadres surprisingly exist that rightly consider the planned New Underworld Order, which is micro-managed by collaborating and competing intelligence communities, to be an abomination, and that these people exploit their own propaganda outlets to issue warnings to those capable of disentangling disinformation from fact, concerning what is intended.

Figure 73: From the Arch of Titus in Rome, showing part of the great Treasure from the Temple at Jerusalem being carried to Rome - thus refuting the diversionary myths associated with the false claims of the Prieure de Sion Order and speculative literature culminating in 'The Da Vinci Code'. See also Figure 72.

With these cautionary observations in mind, this Author nonetheless attaches importance to statements by 'Svali' as disseminated by Dr Mackow, because they are corroborated by separate information, including critical admissions by the very senior Illaminati relative of a US colleague. It is unlikely that Dr Mackow has allowed himself to be deceived, and it is probable - not least because of corroborating information in this Author's possession - that the 'Svali' intelligence is genuine. Indeed it could hardly be otherwise, considering the risks always run by 'traitors' to the ruthless Luciferian Illuminists. After considering all available evidence, especially information provided first-hand from a member of a very well-known generational Illuminati family concerning the behaviour of this satanic caste, the Author is certain of the accuracy of the insights provided by 'Svali'. Quite simply, they are corroborated by separate information.

'Svali', according to Dr Mackow et al, was a mind programmer for the Illuminati until 1996, and was ranked as the sixth trainer at the San Diego branch of the Illuminati, in charge of 30 trainers who reported to her. Note that the source speaks directly of the Illuminati as a structured cult, with no reference (anywhere else in her testimony) to any of the other secret societies and sects, such as O.T.O., that we have been discussing. Since we have identified a late head of an occultic entity specifically calling itself Ordo Illum-inatorum (The Order of the Illuminati) in Switzerland, the existence of this organisation, whether under this title or some cover or other, cannot be in doubt. Note the use of Latin, a habit 'borrowed' from the Jesuits and consistent with the practice among other members of The Order. Dr Mackow reported that 'Svali' had risked her life to warn humanity of the Illuminati's covert power and agenda (begging the question, of course, as to whether Dr Mackow's own report might court similar consequences. According to this source (followed by this Author's elaborations where he has something to add):

'She describes a sadistic satanic cult led by the richest and most powerful people in the world. It is largely homosexual and paedophile, [and] practices animal sacrifice and ritual murder. It works hand in glove with the CIA and with Freemasonry'. Crucially, Dr Mackow added here: 'It is Aryan supremacist (German is spoken at the top) but welcomes Jewish apostates.... It controls the world traffic in drugs, guns, pornography and prostitution'[84]. Thus the CIA serves these international criminals.

Author: All the statements here are corroborated by the Author's own research and by knowledgeable sources consulted for this work, including the late Dr Malachi Martin who specifically told the Author in 1996 that ritual murders took place 'four blocks from where we are sitting' every other Sunday on New York's East Side. The primary sources of Illuminati funds are pornography (the potential of which has been leveraged via the Internet, in an intelligence-controlled operation based at Boca Raton, Florida), child prostitution, gun-running, the worldwide hire and sale of assassinations, the provision of mercenaries and military training experts, corrupt banking operations, and drug-trafficking. In this context, 'Svali' confirms that the Latin American cartels established by US intelligence, and spearheaded inter alia by Carlos Lender, the son of the Nazi fugitive Wilhelm Lender, as discussed in Chapter 3, were in fact, from the outset, operations of the Illuminati, fronted by the CIA and other elements of the vast US intelligence apparat. This explains, therefore, why William Colby had to inform his successor, William Casey, that he had continued, long after ceasing to be Director of Central Intelligence, to direct certain hyper-sensitive operations in Latin America. It seems clear from Casey's Affidavit [see Chapter 3] that he may not have understood that this was an Illuminati operation; and since Colby was subsequently 'suicided' in a tributary of the

Potomac, his awareness of Illuminati involvement is unknowable. Since he was engaged, before being liquidated, in publishing an intelligence newsletter, his handlers may have decided that he was liable to reveal secrets which might lead to their exposure. The Iran-Contra murders, orchestrated for this purpose, were blamed on Clinton.

'[The Illuminati Sect] has infiltrated government on a local, state and national level, educational institutions, religion, and the media. Based in Europe, it plans a 'World Order' that will make its earlier attempts, Nazism and Communism, look like picnics. One other detail: These people are not happy'.

Author The 'World Order' that is to be imposed (or rather, we who are not parties to this madness are indoctrinated into believing will inevitably be imposed) is to be The Order imposed by the 'New World' in accordance with the Rosicrucian 'remit' symbolised on the Great Seal of the United States, as envisaged by Sir Francis Bacon et seq. In other words, the United States is the military and occult instrument serving the interests of the European Khazar Dark Forces which relaunched this venture in the 18th century. The Author has encountered unnaturally virulent hatred for Europeans among certain intelligence cadres (members of which have exposed themselves, as these people usually do). Interestingly, this hatred is usually focused either against Britain or else against Germany, often depending upon the ethnic provenance of the Americans in question. The British, it seems, are especially hated: and there may be 'reason' for this. Concerning these Illuminati operatives being 'not happy', that is a consequence of (a) their double-mindedness and (b) the fact that they are (or feel) trapped in their Luciferian hell from which what remains of their 'better selves' would prefer to escape. But Satan is especially adept at setting traps for the unwary: and in the case of these Illuminati dupes, the traps are lethal. The interview elaborated:

'Svali's' courageous testimony explains why our children are no longer taught civic values, why they are being habituated to homosexuality and violence, and why our 'culture' is descending into nihilism and sexual depravity. It raises the possibility that George W. Bush and his Administration are Illuminists...'.

Author: Certainly, they are. As for the depravity that is being taught to children, in defiance of Our Lord's furious warning that those who do these things to His little children should be thrown with a rock tied round their necks into the deep, the perpetrators continue these activities at their peril. Vengeance is exclusively the Lord's; and when it comes, the vengeance that he will certainly reap upon all who have and continue to abuse children, will be terrible indeed.

Mr Springer checked a number of 'Svali's' statements with e-mail messages from people who have been ritually abused, raped, sexually abused people... some of them confirming to me her story'. Further statements from the interview included the following:

'The Illuminati are present in every major metropolitan center in the United States. They believe in controlling an area through its banks, local government, the legal profession, and the local media'. Jobs allocated within the cult include those of: Informers (who are trained to observe details and conversations with photographic recall); Breeders (chosen from childhood to breed and have children, often selected according to bloodlines, whose children are rarely used in satanic sacrifices); and Prostitutes, trained from an early age to give sexual favours to one or more adults: according to 'Svali', 'child prostitution is big business for the cult, and training very young children in this role is taken very seriously. Child prostitutes are also used to blackmail political figures or leadership outside the cult'); Pornography actors (with Illuminati

children being trained in this role from preschool onwards - the parents receiving payment or favours within the cult in return for selling their child); Media personnel - sent to journalism school and trained within the cult to write books, articles, screen plays or whatever, sympathetic to Illuminism, without ever revealing their true affiliation; Helpers at rituals, who 'clean up meticulously after rituals, scouring and raking the site, and are trained to set up tables, cloths, candles and magick paraphernalia quickly, as well as being taught from an early age to dissect animals (and, 'Svali' says, humans condemned for sacrifices); High Priests and High Priestesses, who administer and lead the local cults, coordinate jobs, organize satanic events, report to higher levels, and officiate at ceremonies; trainers, such as 'Svali' herself, who train local group members in their assigned jobs, and report to the High Priest or Priestess; Punishers, who brutally punish and discipline members breaking Illuminati rules or acting outside their authority ~ such 'punishers' being universally despised by other cult members and normally two or three in number per group; such people will employ any method deemed 'necessary' to prevent a recurrence of the undesired behaviour; Trackers, who track down and keep an eye on members attempting to leave their local groups, and who are taught to use dogs, guns, taser, and all modern tracking techniques; they are also adept at using the Internet to track a person's activities - tracking credit card usage, cheques written, and whatever snooping opportunities come to hand; Teachers, who instruct children, to indoctrinate Illuminati cult philosophy, languages, and other areas of endeavour; Child Care specialists (infant care workers) who look after very young children while adults are at local group meetings - described by 'Svali' as 'usually quiet and coldly efficient'; Couriers, who run guns, money, drugs or illegal artefacts across state and national lines, trained to use firearms to get out of difficult situations; Commanding Officers, who oversee military training in the local groups, and control and coordinate military-related jobs; and Behavioural scientists, who are, according to 'Svali', 'intensely involved in data collection and human experimentation in the name of the pursuit of knowledge of human behaviour in the scientific realm' (Himmlerism). 'Svali' adds that these people 'are almost universally cold, methodical, impersonal people who will employ any methods to study trauma and its effects on the human personality. Their main interest centers around implementing programming and cult control in the most efficient and lasting manner'. Concerning the existence of Illuminari groups in larger US cities, friends of the Author have recently confirmed not only the accuracy of this statement, but that the pattern is replicated in smaller towns as well. The Order of the Illuminati literally 'took off' in the United States with the geomasonic American Revolution, although 15 Lodges of the Illuminati are known to have been established earlier in the 13 Colonies. The Columbian Lodge of the Order was established in New York City in 1785.

- 'The Illuminati is a group that practices a form of faith known as "enlightenment'. It is Luciferian, and they teach their followers that their roots go back to the ancient mystery religions of Babylon, Egypt and Celtic Druidism. They have taken what they consider to be the "best" of each, the foundation practices, and have joined them together into a strongly occult discipline. Many groups at the local level worship ancient deities such as 'El', 'Baal' and 'Ashtarte', as well as Tsis and Osiris', and 'Set'. I do know that these people teach and practice evil'. Author: Confirmed.
- Extensive Illuminati mind-control and training takes place at military bases hidden in remote, isolated areas or on large private estates: 'Briefly, each region of the United States has "nerve centers" or power bases for regional activity. The United States

has been divided up into seven major geographical Regions. Each region has its own Regional Council, composed of 13 members, with an advisory board of three elders to each one. The bases are used intermittently to teach and train generational Illuminati in military techniques, hand-to-hand combat, crowd control, use of arms, and all aspects of warfare. Why? Because Illuminists believe that our government, as we know it, and other governments, are destined to collapse... There will be a military takeover, region by region'. The first such 'experiment' occurred in New Orleans in 2005.

Author: The kind of mind-control operations referred to includes Himmlerian Illuminati abominations such as those described in Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips' cited work, 'Trance Formation of America'. Concerning the division of the United States into seven regions, we should not be surprised that this breakdown diverges from the Federal Government's division of the country into ten regions, a device that neatly hides the 'validity' of the seven Illuminati regions. On the basis of the Federal Government breakdown, the New Orleans area is part of Region Six. The Illuminati Region covering New Orleans includes Louisiana, Arkansas, New Mexico, Texas and Oklahoma.

Following scalar-promoted Hurricane Katrina, a large number of pre-prepared Executive Orders were implemented, providing for the seizure of power supplies, personal vehicles, food supplies, water supplies, the banks, transportation equipment and systems, and even the Amtrak station which was converted into a prison. A US Navy ship sat outside New Orleans, jamming communications, in accordance with one of the Executive Orders. Some weeks after this catastrophe-atrocity, Vice President Richard Cheney paid a visit to New Orleans, in the course of which he uttered the following Freudian slip: 'We are on top of this exercise'. With this statement, this top CIA operative and Illuminist blew his and the Illuminati's cover, for the Katrina atrocity provided the pretext for the first regional military takeover - as predicted by the Illuminati defector, 'Svali'. It was significant that Senator Mary Landrieu, of Louisiana, initially supported what the Federal Government were actually 'doing' in her area. However on 28th October 2005, she paid a visit to New Orleans, and appeared on television flanked by four pastors. In the course of her remarks, she criticised the Federal Government multiple times, for its 'criminal' behaviour. In other words, she had become aware that these Illuminati maniacs are actually engaged, 'as we speak', in their progressive region-by-region 'takedown' of the United States - or an 'exercise' to test the programme.

FACT In May 2006, it was announced that Cornell University scientists have discovered 60 billion barrels - three times more than current US recoverable oil of 20 billion barrels - off the coast of Louisiana, bringing US reserves up to 80 billion barrels of oil, on a par with Venezuela. The reserve is twice the size of North Sea oil discoveries.

- 'The Supreme World Council exists as a prototype of the one that will rule when the New World Order comes into being. It meets on a regular basis to discuss finances, direction, policy etc, and to problem-solve difficulties as they arise. On this Council, the Rothschild family in England and in France have ruling seats. A descendant of the Hapsburg family has a generational seat. A descendant of the ruling families of Britain and France have generational seats. The Rockefeller family in the United States holds a seat'.
- The Illuminati leadership state that they are descended from royal bloodlines, as well as unbroken occult heritage. See, there are two definitions of 'royalty'. Open royalty that is currently seen now, and 'hidden royalty' of royal lineage and extreme occult power. I never thought of which country/line held the most power, since I was just a peon busily doing my job. But my understanding was: The Hanoverian/Hapsburg descendants

rule in Germany over the Bruderheist. They are considered one of the strongest lines for the occult as well. The British Royal Family line is just under them. Definitely they rule the UK branch under the Rothschilds in the occult realm, even though Parliament rules the country openly. In France, again, descendants of the royal families are also the power in the occult realm, but the French Rothschilds hold the reins over all of them'.

Author. The participation of royalty and the high-born in this global criminal activity is at first sight hard to reconcile with the stated revolutionary objective of abolishing all monarchies. However one must (a) take account of the fact, yet again, that these people are double-minded; and (b) certain prominent monarchies were already 'cooperating' Illuminati centres, too powerful to be overthrown and much more useful in situ -although the constant sniping at the British Royal Family may imply otherwise. In that context, the pressure comes from the Grand Orient 'line' of Illuminist Freemasonry, which was responsible de facto for the decision to execute the French King; and those concerned have never reconciled themselves to the fact that the British Monarchy has prospered and grown more powerful ever since. This is an interesting example of Illuminist plans going awry or being modified, or abandoned. The British Royal Family is in any case buttressed by both German and Jewish/Khazar bloodlines.

'The United States is considered lower, and younger, than the European branches. Germany, France and the United Kingdom form a triumvirate that rules the European cult The USSR [significantly, 'Svali' continued to refer to the 'former' USSR as 'the USSR'- Ed.] is considered important, and has the strongest military groups. The USSR has been promised fourth position in the New World Order, BEFORE the role the United States would have, because the USSR has been more helpful and cooperative over the years with furthering the agenda.......... The USSR is going to get stronger again. It has too strong a military, both overtly and covertly, to sit quietly on the side. All Illuminati military trainers have visited Russia to learn from them. In the New World Order, they will be stronger than us'.

Author: Aggressive, Nazi-style US behaviour under the Bush II Administration may imply that the United States is jealous of this Uluminati pecking order and seeks clandestinely to reverse it. Otherwise, the statements correspond to what the Author and colleagues have been told by several informed sources, including a very 'high' US occult Uluminati source with very close ties to Germany. This source warned that 'the Europeans are fighting it out among themselves' and that it would be 'unwise to get in their way'. This insight has resonance in view of the tensions known to exist between Britain on the one hand, and France and Germany on the other, which came to the fore after British intelligence intercepted evidence of French (fronting for German) complicity in the 7/7 atrocities. Gerhard Schroder, the outgoing German Chancellor, conspicuously arrived late for a banquet at Downing Street hosted by Tony Blair on 27th October 2005, and arrived half an hour late at an EU conference organised by the British Presidency at Hampton Court during the same visit. His public observations were unhelpful and rude; and even making allowance for the fact that he was leaving the scene, they revealed the irritation of German intelligence at having been 'roughly spoken to' by the British in July - a state of affairs that awaited its possibly dramatic denouement following confirmation that a fifth bomb had been intended to be detonated under the Thames inside the Northern Line Tube tunnel. It is significant that the high-ranking Illuminati cult member who told the Author's contact that the European powers 'are fighting it out among themselves', made this comment following the London atrocities on 7th July 2005.

- In answer to the question: is the Illuminati a Jewish conspiracy? 'Svali' gave the following initially surprising answer, which perhaps fails to take account, for instance, of the backgrounds of many of the Nazi leaders, or that the Holocaust was associated with venal warfare within the Jewish community which was exploited by the German Illuminati leadership - given that there were at least 155,000 Jews who were in the Wehrmacht, and a significant number of leading Nazi officials, such as Eichmann and Wachter, were of Jewish extraction; but 'Svali's' answer is given here to ensure that the context is complete: "Absolutely not. In fact, Hitler and his people, especially Himmler and Goebbels, were top Illuminists. The Illuminati are racist in the extreme, and as a child, I was forced to play "concentration camp" both on my farm in Virginia, and also in Europe at isolated camps in Germany.... There are some very powerful Jewish people in this group. For instance, the Rothschild family literally runs the financial empire in Europe. I have also known people whose parents were Jewish diamond merchants in the group, and at every level. But to rise to power in the Illuminati, a Jewish person at night would be forced to renounce their faith, and to give their first allegiance to Lucifer and the beliefs of the Illuminati. In return for this betrayal, they believe that power (financial) and rewards flow; and in one sense they do, but at too high a price' (losing their eternal soul).

Author 'Svali' fails to understand that Zionism is Fascism. Many make this mistake.

- 'The Nazi/concentration camp mentality is very strong, though, and I was told that Hitler, Himmler, Goebbels and others were high-ranking members of the muminati (Himmler was higher than the other two), and Mengele their paid puppet as well, who later worked as a high trainer of the American branch between his periods of hiding in South America. They honestly believed that they were acting as agents of their 'gods' to exterminate the Jewish race'. Given the climate then favouring eugenics and 'ethnic cleansing', and given also that Zionism (Fascism) is racist, it was satanically logical that these ruthless people saw fit to apply their 'ethnic cleansing' formula to their own.

Author. A system of concentration camps has been in place in the United States since the second half of the 1990s. See the Second Appendix to Chapter 8, page 612.

- As to whether these people are all racist: 'Lots of Illuminists have Fourth Reich programming inside [them]. The Illuminati are racist and have a very "Ayryan" outlook. They believe strongly in the role of the 'pure' and 'intelligent' by their own definitions, and in their ceremonies; there will occasionally be minorities killed in ceremonies'.

Author: One of these people, evidently an American CIA operative working from Dublin, where there is a large CIA colony, telephoned the Author out of the blue in June 2003 and proceeded to discuss Scripture. At first, what he had to say was sound and in accordance with the Author's understanding of the Word. But gradually, this unsolicited intervention veered away from the truth. The operative started insisting that Eve had had sex with the serpent and that the product of that union was all the coloured peoples of the world, whom he implied were inferior. When the Author protested and attempted to close the conversation the operative suddenly asked: 'Can you 'speak in tongues?" Whereupon he started to 'demonstrate'. What came out of his mouth was a stream of unintelligible demonic gobbldegook. He was able to turn this stream of verbal tripe on and off, which he did three times. At the end of these demonstrations, he ordered copies of ALL the Author's publications, shouting: 'I want everything you produce, do you hear me? I don't care what it costs'. There and then, he proffered his Credit Card details. The Author arranged for a large parcel of materials to be sent to him and duly debited his Credit card, as instructed. Presumably all this material was sent to Langley.

• 'Genetics: They are trying to breed a 'genetically superior' race to rule, with their children and descendants. They are also followers of Plato's Republic and believe that they will be the ones to usher in this 'utopia' rule [where] the intelligentsia will rule and the sheeplike masses will follow their leaders. They believe that the occult leaders are 'enlightened and intelligent' [Illuminated], while the average person is a sheep, to be led by the nose'. In the text published on the Internet, 'Svali' explained that 'after the military takeover (for which 800+ US concentration camps, capable of holding up to 15,000,000 people have been established: seepages 612-613), the general population will be given an opportunity either to espouse the cause of the Illuminati, or else to reject it, on pain of imprisonment or other penalties, including death. 'These people very much believe that the intelligent, or "enlightened" or Illuminated, were born to rule. They are arrogant, and consider the general population as "dumb sheep" who will be easily led if offered strong leadership, financial help in an unstable world economy, and dire consequences if the person rebels. Their utter ruthlessness, and ability to implement this agenda, should not be minimised'.

Author: Reports of long-term experiments aimed at the creation of life itself, so that God need no longer exist, which have resulted in the generation of beings with multiple arms and legs that are kept in cages deep underground at certain locations in the United States, have proliferated in recent years, following leaks by appalled intelligence observers. All such abominable 'work' is derived from the Sefer Yetzirah, the oldest text of the Kabbalah, highlighted in a German expressionist film of the 1920s by Paul Wegener called 'The Golem' in which Rabbi Loew (a 16th century Rabbi of Prague) consults the Kabbalah, draws a magic circle and conjures a demon to bring a 'Golem' to life. Craig Heimbichner points out that at Brandeis University 'attempts were recently made, backed by DARPA, the US Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, to create artificial life, beginning with attempts to "evolve" robots. The title of this military intelligence project is: 'The Golem Project: Genetically Organized Lifelike Electro Mechanics'. Other US agencies involved with the Golem Project are NASA, the Office of Naval Research, the Department of Defense, and the National Science Foundation. Portions of this information have been leaked and featured on National Public Radio (NPR), BBC News, and even NBC and ABC. Leaks of such 'information' test the trance state of the public and deepen it if the public submits without protest to the disturbing signals - an observation which this Author considers to be a coherent explanation, also, of part of the rationale for the publication of Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips' awful book, 'Trance Formation of America', in which detailed descriptions of organised abominations and programming operations against innocents, and of the alleged depravity of named senior US officials, is relentlessly described. The search for a Man-controlled key to the creation of life, which would crown Man's usurpation of the place of God, was supervised in the United States by the Satanist and O.T.O. leader of the Agape Lodge in California, John Whiteside Parsons, co-founder of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory (a.k.a. 'Jack Parsons Lives'), who called himself 'Antichrist Belarion'. He was caught in the homosexual rape of a 16-year-old boy in 1942, and invoked the forces of Chaos before each rocket test. For two generations the abominations committed by the United States in dropping nuclear bombs on Japan have been justified as 'hastening the end of the war'. Parsons' crowning achievement was to attempt to create a 'Mannikin', a vision of Crowley's that was to be representative of life created by Man (but one who was demon-possessed). According to two occult investigators cited by Heimbichner, James Shelby Downard and William N. Grimstad, the first

Figure 74: Selected interior views of the George Washington National Memorial, Alexandria, Virginia, with a view of the exterior. This is arguably the most grotesque Illuminati Temple to the Evil One in the world. Its size, viewed from the passing Amtrak railroad, is contrived to belittle the individual and to pronounce definitively that powers of infinitely greater proportions rule the universe. Standing on Shooters Hill just a mile from the brown Potomac River, the memorial, dedicated on 12th May 1932, stands 333ft high. The line' for public consumption is that it stands for the Illuminised 'Masonic Fraternity's' faith in the principles of religious liberty and orderly government'. In reality it shouts: 'We are in control and there's nothing you can do about it'.

(demonic) atomic bomb explosion at the blasphemously-named Trinity Site in New Mexico on 16th July 1945, was accompanied by a huge steel 'bottle' code-named 'Jumbo', weighing nearly 500,000 pounds, and measuring 25 ft in length x 12ft in diameter, about which no official explanation has ever been forthcoming. According to Downard, Jumbo contained an inanimate body, which was inundated with nuclear energy, with a view to creating a real homunculus, an objective of mediaeval alchemy. Heimbichner surmises that foetal tissue will have formed part of this 'Mannikin' or some part of it, given the 'overlapping activities of both Parsons and his government partners'. Note that such activities parallel the horrific experiments on human beings and with the human mind and human tissue, perpetrated by Himmler's scientists - whose reception in the United States complemented Black activities already being undertaken by the US Government.

- On Freemasonry, 'Svali' commented: 'The Freemasons and the Illuminati are hand-in-glove.... Alexandria, Virginia [see Figure 74 on page 489], is named after Alexandria, Egypt [which is to be one of the two centers of global control, the other being Brussels']. 'Svali' says: 'A new system of monetary exchange, based on an international monetary sys tem, and operating between Cairo, Egypt, and Brussels, Belgium, will be set up. There is a center in the Washington DC area for Illuminati scholarship and training'....

Author: Which 'illuminates, does it not, all those otherwise semi-incomprehensible goings-on at 'The Cedars', Arlington, discussed in Chapter 6.

- Are all Masons Dluminati? 'No, especially at the lower levels. I believe that they know nothing of the practices that occur in the middle of the night in the larger Temples' - as was the case in the time of Ezekiel [Ed.]. 'The group helped to create Freemasonry as a front for their activities'. Author: This is supported by research published in this book.
- Concerning Illuminati penetration of the US structures: 'The CIA and the FBI are all infiltrated. So are the Mormons [and other cults). Many of the administrators and directors of the FBI are also Illurninists. The CIA helped to bring over German scientists after World War II. Many of these people were also IUuminati leaders in their own country, and they were welcomed with open arms by the US group. They funnelled all the information from their research to the Illuminati.... This is truly an international group, and its agenda supersedes any nationalist considerations. There is also a lot of trading back and forth in these groups. A Russian trainer might come to the United States for a while, complete a job, and then go back, or vice versa'.
- With reference to Illuminati personnel, 'Svali' explained that 'most of them are wounded, abused victims, who don't realize that it is possible to leave the group. There is a lot of discontent in the ranks, and there would be a mass exodus if the members believed that it were really possible to get out (and live). Many of the trainers I knew (wicked, torturing paedophiles) were NOT happy with what they did. They would whisper quietly, or give a look, to show that they disagreed with what they had to do. They would resignedly do their jobs, in the hope of advancement. Do you know that one of the biggest carrots offered to those who advance up the group is that you don't have to hurt people any more, and that you can't be abused? It's true: only those higher up than you in the group can abuse you, so everybody wants to move up, where the pool of candidates becomes smaller. Of course, people can choose to abuse anyone beneath them, and that motivates. The Illuminati are a very political and back-stabbing group, [having] a 'dog-eat-dog' mentality. Everyone wants to move up. These are NOT nice people, and they use and manipulate others viciously. They cut their eye-teeth on status, power, and money[85] [idolatry, and consequent hell on earth - Ed].

MODERN ILLUMINISM STARTED WITH THE GERMAN ROSICRUCIANS

The testimony of 'Svali' concerning the origins and power centers of the Illuminati also checks out with the detailed research presented in this book. She wrote that 'modern-day Illuminism... started with the German branch of the Rosicrucians', 'spread to England, then came to the United States with the first settlers'.

'The Illuminati have three main branches: The Germanic Branch, which oversees the others - confirming the accuracy of this book's analysis; The British Branch, which handles finances; and the French/Russian Branch. All three of these Illuminati branches are represented in both the United States and Canada, as well as in every country in the world'. The likelihood is that the 'rats-in-the-sack' syndrome applies, as these evil forces are constantly, and inevitably, being servants of Lucifer, at cross-purposes.

According to 'Svali' all Illuminati banking trails 'will eventually lead to Belgium, the Illuminati financial centre of the world' - an insight borne out by the presence in Brussels of the main institutions of the German long-range strategic deception apparat called the European Union, and of the handlers of global control finances.

'Svali' also listed the main 'power centers' of the Illuminati in the United States. Noting that they originally entered America via Pittsburgh, PA, she reports that they spread from there all over the country. In the year 2000, there were 18 US cities that were (and are) used as 'power centers' - meaning both practical and occult power, not just 'power' in the usual political sense of the word, including the following cities/areas: Washington DC, and the surrounding area; Albany, New York; Pittsburgh, PA, Winston Salem, Raleigh 'Golden Triangle' area, North Carolina; Minneapolis; Ann Arbor, Michigan; Wichita, Kansas; Phoenix, Arizona; Flagstaff, Arizona; Portland, Oregon; Seattle; Houston; Los Angeles and surrounding areas; New Orleans; and Springfield, Mississippi. Other cities, adds 'Svali', are important to the Illuminati - funnelling money, conducting research and cooperating with Regional Illuminati Councils.

Given that these 'Dark Actors Playing Games' have given themselves up to Satan, the Great Deceiver - so that none of them can ever trust anything that any of their Illuminati colleagues say or do, which is why they are frequently at loggerheads with each other, and always will be, and why they always make a mess of their Luciferian schemes, as a further corollary of which all their plans will certainly lead to destruction and perdition - an especially revealing feature of these reprobate lost souls and 'self-deceived 'Useful Idiots' is that they usually appear to be charming and perfectly normal, up to a point.

As 'Svali' pointed out, they 'never openly disclose their agenda, or their cult activities, since they are often actually amnaesic to them. These may be well-respected, "Christian"-appearing business leaders in the community. The image in the community is all-important to the Illuminist'. Their Jewish-Kabbalistic inspired 'religion' is, after all, as Craig Heimbichner has taught us, 'a religion of the Double Mind'. 'Svali' continued: 'They will do anything to maintain a normal, respected facade, and they DESPISE exposure. None of the Illuminists that I have ever known had unkind, or evil appearing, personas in their daytime lives, although some were dysfunctional, such as being alcoholics. The dissociation that drives these Illuminists is their greatest cover. Many, if not most, of these people (by day) are completely unaware of the great evil that they are involved in during the night' - just as the elders of ancient Israel who performed abominations in the dark, reported by the prophet Ezekiel and referred to earlier, were probably 'decent' and upright leaders of their communities by day.

Nothing whatsoever has changed, apart from the magnitude of the problem.

THE JEWISHNESS' OF 'THE ORDER' AND 'KOL NIDRIM'

On the face of it, the most problematical issue arising from 'Svali's' testimony concerns her remarks about the key role of the Jews inside the Illuminati. Since, as we have seen, the 'Black Nobility' component of the Illuminati is essentially Jewish/Khazar or with Jewish antecedents, the Illuminati and the penetrated Masonic 'pedigree' and focus that has been described is essentially Jewish (and the further our investigations are developed, the more direct Jewish kabbaJistic influence emerges), why is it that this defector says that this is not a 'Jewish' operation (driven by the 'seething energies' of Lucifer')? The answer to this simple question is complex:

1. In the first place, the Jews are divided amongst themselves.
2. The promoters of diabolical occult kabbalism and sorcery are a small minority among the Jews, who in almost all other respects are entirely compatible with the societies within which they live. Any discussion of these subjects among level-headed, intelligent Jews will expose the absolute revulsion of such sober people for sorcery and the abominations, condemned in their own Torah, that take place in Masonic Lodges and Temples, and in the secret societies of Jewish-inspired Rosicrucian kabbalistic Illuminism.
3. The tendency throughout the centuries has been for sorcery and related abominations to hide behind 'respectable' facades wherever possible: hence, for instance, the self-imposed occult century of secret silence of the Rosicrucian 'line' between 1617 and 1717, and the later penetration and conquest of Freemasonry by the Rose-Croix. The one exception to this tendency appears to have been the establishment of the O.T.O. in 1902/1917. Therefore, a presumption persists that the cherished image of respectability (as discussed above) must be retained at all times. The logic of this would suggest that, since the source of these abominations is Jewish Babylonian kabbalism (arising from the 'wrong turn' that the official Jews took at the time of the crucifixion of Jesus Christ), there must be continuing pressure within the Illuminati to mask this provenance, which 'merges' with the intense desire for the cover or respectability.
4. Betraying their faith and pretending that their oaths, vows and undertakings can be overlooked and rendered null and void, are two specialities of some Jews. They did this in Spain, on the advice of the Constantinople Sanhedrin, when ordered by King Ferdinand to convert to Christianity or to leave the country. They evidently, according to 'Svali', do this in the Masonic Temples when participating in abominable rituals at dead of night, in the manner observed by Ezekiel. As for giving themselves absolution for the sins which they know perfectly well they have committed, they have a Jewish Talmudic prayer called 'All Vows' ('Kol Nidre'). It is based on the following declaration in the Talmud, which is itself a perversion of the provisions for atonement laid out in Leviticus: 'He who wishes that his vows and oaths shall have no value, stand up at the beginning of the year and say: "All vows which I shall make during the year shall be of no value". The logic of this, of course, is that any vow a Talmudic Jew makes to the Lord of Hosts is, by definition, vulnerable to being decapitated by a recitation of 'Kol Nidre', which means that Talmudic Jews can have NO SPIRITUAL LOYALTY TO GOD WHATSOEVER. On the contrary, such a Jew may consider that he can simply recite 'Kol Nidre' in order to escape from any vows he may have foolishly made to Satan in the darkness of the Masonic Lodge at night - only to discover that Evil Spirit binds him so that he cannot escape, as he thinks he can escape from any vows to God.

Originally conceived as a 'backward look' over the failures of the preceding year, 'Kol Nidre' quickly became a forward look anticipating all the deceptions that would be deliberately planned in the forthcoming year. This, of course, is the basis of the Bolshevik-Leninist 'line' that any agreements reached with the 'bourgeoisie' (Goyim) can be breached and unilaterally annulled at any time. In 1919, a more extended version of 'Kol Nidre', for use on the Day of Atonement, appeared in print. It reads as follows: 'All vows, obligations, oaths or anathemas, pledges of all names, which we have vowed, sworn, devoted, or bound ourselves to, from this Day of Atonement, until the next Day of Atonement (whose arrival we hope for in happiness) we repent, aforehand, of them all; they shall be deemed absolved, forgiven, annulled, void and made of no effect; they shall not be binding, nor have any power; the vows shall not be reckoned vows, the obligations shall not be obligatory, nor the oaths considered as oaths'[86].

This tradition of annulling vows and undertakings before they are even consummated was not, as Jewish apologists have argued, a consequence of the abominable treatment meted out to the Jews under the (Jewish) Jesuit-inspired Spanish Inquisition, when they were treated so viciously in the name of the gentle, meek and loving Jesus. On the contrary, a formula to invalidate Jewish vows is found in the Talmudic prayer book of Rabbi Amram Goun, who lived in the ninth century, a good 500 years before the Spanish abominations - although Rabbi Amram's formula was called 'Kol Nidrim' ('All vows and oaths which we shall swear from Yom Kippurim to Yom Kippurim will return to us void'). To be fair, it is NOT the case that all Jews deliberately assassinate their pledged word: but the Talmud and their Talmudic prayer books permit them to so, and advises them how to accomplish the annulment of their undertakings, which presupposes that when drawing up agreements they reserve at the back of their minds the 'right' to renege should they decide that to do so would be in their best interests, and that they can override domestic law in some way or another. This, of course, means that undertakings reached generally with Jews following the Talmud cannot necessarily ever be relied upon - a point exploited by Lenin, who taught his associates that any agreements reached with the 'bourgeoisie' (code for Gentiles, or Goyim) could 'legally' be abrogated unilaterally by the Revolution at any time, should the 'correlation of forces' demand such an annulment in the interests of Leninist revolutionary strategy.

5. As an obvious and pertinent corollary to the above, we find ourselves yet again face-to-face with the primary characteristic of the Illuminati, highlighted by Craig Heimbichner, which provides such an invaluable insight into 'the mystery of iniquity': the double-mindedness of the Illuminati. This is evident from the two-faced behaviour of its members, who present as respectable, even agreeable, citizens 'by day', and as practictioners of evil 'by night'. This double-mindedness is associated with the characteristic that has disturbed this Author most, when observing the behaviour of these people - namely, the propensity of some of them to switch suddenly from open-ended charm, to unabridged nastiness, anger, or both. Such 'switches' often occur in a nanosecond - so that the person you thought you were dealing with has changed in an instant into someone from whose presence it becomes imperative to depart. The 'Kol Nidrim' culture is of course wholly consistent with this malevolent schizophrenia, since, by definition, the Talmudic Jew who enters into an agreement knows, albeit usually subconsciously, that he always has the option to renege on his undertakings. It should not be construed from this that this Author assumes that undertakings with Jewish parties are invariably suspect: but this is a feature of the culture of both Talmudic Jewry and the Illuminati which accounts for the contradictory phenomena encountered in the course of this study. It also, incidentally, accounts for the Soviet Communist literature

on 'contradictions' which may otherwise be inexplicable to students of Leninism: see for example the Soviet compendium 'Foundations of Marxism-Leninism', in which the central role of 'contradictions' in the formulation and 'rolling ouf of strategy is discussed.

Synarchy (rule by secret societies) presupposes double-mindedness, and of course highlights the duplicity inherent in the familiar accusation that investigators such as this Author are 'conspiracy theorists' (although, curiously, the Author has not actually faced this accusation). Lenin himself wrote that the Revolution - an operation of the Illuminati - is a conspiracy. Since secret societies exist, conspiracy is dearly ubiquitous; so the 'conspiracy theorist' insult is yet another diversionary lie promulgated by the double-minded conspirators themselves. Likewise, over-mighty criminalists occupying official positions believe that their own serial criminality (including their drug and money-laundering operations) can conveniently be masked by posing as dedicated crusaders against crime.

PROOFS OF THE CONSPIRACY

No expose of the Illuminati, however incomplete (as this necessarily is) can close without mentioning the first two that were publicly distributed - Professor John Robison's 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', published in 1799, and the Abbe Augustin Barruel's four-volume study, 'Memoirs Illustrating the History of Jacobinism', published in 1799, some months after the first appearance of Robison's book. Both these observers - one a lapsed member of Weishaupt's Illuminati and Professor of Natural Philosophy at Edinburgh University, and the other a French priest - writing in different countries and in different languages, without the one knowing the other - covered essentially the same subject-matter and came to the very same conclusions. As the Introduction to the American Classics Edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy'[87] observes, therefore, 'we have two excellent works which tell us virtually all we need to know about the origins of history's most diabolical, long-range conspiracy'. It is a basic rule of journalism, not always easily realised, that if possible one should have two sources for every statement. Because Robison wrote, of course, in English, albeit necessarily in the 18th century style, English-speaking students have tended to use his analysis, given the added problems of translating stilted 18th century French into plain language (although the Abbe Barruel's prose is in fact easily absorbed). Robison, disillusioned by his encounter with the Illuminati, possessed what is sometimes referred to as a 'hinterland'. For instance, he was a close friend of James Watt, the inventor of the steam engine, who described Robison, at his death in 1805 aged 66, as 'a man of the clearest head and the most science of anybody I have ever known'. In 1783, Robison had been elected General Secretary of the Royal Society of Edinburgh: so he was one of the leading intellects of his time.

The Order of the Illuminati, formally reorganised in 1775 by Adam Weishaupt, a lapsed Jesuit of Jewish extraction and Professor of Canon Law at Ingolstadt University, Germany, was the front man for the 'Dark Actors Playing Games' of the day - a gopher, who, on instructions from 'high adepts', especially including the then head of the Jewish Rothschild (Red Shield) family, elaborated the strategy of promoting Illuminism through Masonic Lodges, which were protected by sworn secrecy, 'grafting the new Order of the Illuminati, at selected points, onto Freemasonry - like a fungus'[88].

The primary working motto of The Order was that the end (ostensibly the happiness of the human race but in fact the control-lust idolatry of 'the Brotherhood') always justifies the means. That The Order of the Illuminati was intended to embrace the entire world, was evidenced by Weishaupt's own definition quoted in the 'Larousse Grande Dictionnaire' published in 1873, in which he was quoted as having said that the goal of

PROOFS
OF A
CONSPIRACY
AGAINST ALL THE
RELIGIONS AND GOVERNMENTS
OF
EUROPE,
CARRIED ON
IN THE SECRET MEETINGS
OF
FREE MASONS, ILLUMINATI,
AND
READING SOCIETIES,
COLLECTED FROM GOOD AUTHORITIES,
BY JOHN ROBISON, A. M.
PROFESSOR OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY, AND SECRETARY TO THE
ROYAL SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH.

Nam tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.

THE FOURTH EDITION.
TO WHICH IS ADDED, A POSTSCRIPT.

NEW-YORK:
Printed and Sold by George Forman, No. 64, Water-Street,
between Coenties and the Old-Slip.
1798.

Figure 75: The cover of the classic 1798 expose of the Freemasons, Illuminati and Reading Societies, by the University of Edinburgh's Professor of Natural History, John Robison. Quite separately, the Abbe Augustin Barruel published, in 1799, a four-volume study entitled 'Memoirs Illustrating the History of Jacobinism'. Neither expert knew each other, but both covered the same subject matter and came to the same conclusion. We therefore have two impeccable contemporary sources for our knowledge of the Illuminati conspiracy.

The Order was to 'unite, by way of one common higher interest and by a lasting bond, men from all parts of the globe, from all social classes and from all religions, despite the diversity of their opinions and passions, to make them love the common interest' - the falsely seductive terms of which, as is standard practice with this revolutionary movement, in all its formats, were not defined - 'and bond to the point where, together or alone, they act as one individual'[89].

The reference to 'diversity' provides confirmation of the origin of the mindless imposition of 'diversity standards' by UK and US Government Departments at all levels of governance and official structures, replicated within multinational corporations worldwide. It explains, for instance, why, at a railway station such as Union Station in Washington DC, one is liable to hear announcements read out by a female Hispanic announcer whose accent and mode of expression are so excruciatingly awful that hardly a single word of what she says can ever be understood. She is employed for that job, despite the fact that she is totally unsuited for it, for 'reasons of diversity'[90].

Weishaupt may have developed his adaptation of the much older concept of an elite cadre of 'Illuminati' from his knowledge of the secret splinter group within the reprobate Jesuitical Order calling themselves the 'Alumbrados' (the 'enlightened ones') created by the founder of the Society of Jesus himself in Spain, Ignatius Loyola. This splinter society taught another form of Gnosticism, asserting that the trappings of formal religion were unnecessary for those in receipt of 'the light'. This would make sense if 'the light' in question was to be that of Jesus Christ; but evidently these reprobates had 'another Jesus' in mind. The Spanish Inquisition, itself designed by Loyola, actually issued edicts against the 'Alumbrados' in 1568, 1574 and 1623. Weishaupt wrote that, with the rationalisation of his new manifestation of the 'Illuminati', he incurred 'the implacable enmity of the Jesuits... whose intrigues he exposed'. No doubt they hated him for this, not least, because this 'act of exposure' consisted of rank plagiarism: the initiation methodology and Degree system that Weishaupt developed for his revamped 'Illuminati' Order was modelled precisely along Jesuit lines, complete with its regime of oath-bound secrecy and its integral internal system of permanent spying on one's 'brethren'. Indeed, Weishaupt was almost certainly chosen for this remit by the Rothschild family because of his Jesuit training and deep understanding of how that 'Order's Luciferian methodology worked. In a letter dated 1794, Weishaupt wrote that 'the great strength of our Order lies in its concealment. Never let it appear in any place in its own name, but always covered by another name, and another occupation. None is better than the three lower Degrees of Freemasonry; the public is accustomed to it, expects little from it, and therefore takes little notice of it. Next to this, the form of a learned or literary society (the Thule Society) is best suited to our purpose.... By establishing reading societies and subscription libraries... we may turn the public mind which way we will. In like manner we must try to obtain an influence in... all offices which have any effect, either in forming, or in managing, or even in directing the mind of man'.

In this passage, Weishaupt confirmed that his Illuminati sect would piggy-back on the 'Blue Degrees' of Freemasonry, for the purpose of absorbing and controlling them and exploiting this penetration in pursuit of its long-range objectives: exactly the method used by the Leninist Communists and, in the United Kingdom today (as of 2006), by the sinister official 'Fifth Column' revolutionary 'mental mapping' organisation run out of a central Whitehall Government office called 'Common Purpose', by a Civil Service Head of Personnel Selection, a Mrs Julia Middleton. She 'moonlights' as head of the enormous

'Common Purpose' personality manipulation network, which is systematically training a brainwashed revolutionary cadre throughout all tiers of Government, the prison service selected components of industry, banking, and other sectors of the political economy.

Members of The Order of the Illuminati were required, John Robison explained, to swear blind obedience and submission to their superiors - exactly as required within the Jesuitical system - with an oath (forbidden by Jesus Christ) that reads in part: 'I bind myself to perpetual silence and unshaken loyalty and submission to The Order, in the persons of my Superiors' (Weishaupt even used the same terminology as the Jesuits); here making a faithful and complete surrender of my private judgment, my own will, and every narrow-minded employment of my power and influence'[91].

To blindly submit one's will to the power of another - in this case, the Evil Force hiding behind the Superiors of The Order - is an act of extreme madness and unmitigated folly, since we were specifically given Free Will by the Lord so that we may exercise it, not least to choose between good and evil. Note the use of the word 'narrow-minded': so-called 'Europhiles' in the United Kingdom, having no intellectual arguments of any validity on their side in favour of their discredited and redundant support for Britain's satrap status within the German-controlled European Union [see Chapter 8], are apt to resort to sloganeering and insults, one of which is that those of us who believe in national independence and self-determination, are 'narrow-minded'.

In addition, 'members were required to spy on one another and to submit reports and autobiographies which could compromise them, should they decide to leave The Order'[92]. In other words, Adam Weishaupt imposed upon his 'new' reprobate Order precisely the same diabolical control mechanisms and spying incubus as that so notoriously employed within that originating, parallel Illuminati organisation, also not coincid-entally calling itself 'The Order'- the blasphemously mislabelled Society of Jesus.

NURSERY			Preparation
			Novice
			Minerval
			Illuminatus Minor
MASONRY	**Sym-bolic**		Apprentice
			Fellow Craft
			Master
	Scotch	***Illuminatus Major***	Scotch Novice
		Illuminatus dirigens	Scotch Knight
MYSTERIES	**Lesser**	**Presbyster, Priest, Prince, Regent**	
	Greater	**Magus Rex**	

Figure 78: Summary of the 'higher Degrees' of the Illuminati as organised by Professor Adam Weishaupt, a reprobate former Jesuit of Jewish extraction, reproduced by Professor John Robison in his classic expose of the Illuminati, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy' [see Figure 77]. Adepts are taken from the first three (Blue) Degrees of Freemasonry. The 'Mysteries' presuppose idolatry, the invocation of demons, and sexual permissiveness.

As the Introduction to the American Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy's' expose further explains, the ultimate despotic purpose of the Order of the Illuminati was kept secret from initiates at the outset, and was only unveiled by means of the usual procedure - initiation Degrees, also bearing a close resemblance to the Jesuit system, named: Preparation, Novice, Minerval and Illuminatus Minor, followed by the 'higher' 'Mysteries' of Priest, Regent, MAGUS, and Rex. (According to Robison, Weishaupt 'created' eight Degrees, but some authorities speak of nine). Each step of the way was carefully plotted and planned by Weishaupt and his colleagues, building on the traditions developed within the earlier versions of the sect, so that the 'squeamish' and gullible never rose higher than the lowest Degrees, while the bold, ruthless and cynical - all who were ready and willing to dispense totally with the vestiges (as they saw it) of Christianity, morality, patriotism and any other hindrances, rose to the top[93]. [Figure 78].

'It was through this process of selection and careful inculcation that Weishaupt, in a mere decade, was able to gather into his Order the cleverest and most diabolical minds in Europe. The true purpose of The Order was to rule the world. To achieve this, it was necessary for the Order to destroy all religions, overthrow all governments, and abolish private property. In order to accomplish this, it would be necessary to convince enough people that religion, governments, and private property were the real obstacles to human happiness'.

Weishaupt organised the Order of the Illuminati within the Lodge Theodore of Munich, as a secret organisation within a secret organisation. Robison 'examined the state of Freemasonry within Germany, where the Illuminati aberration originated. He describes the schisms within German Freemasonry, the great fascination [there] with mysteries [i.e., the occult], the widespread influence of Deism - the philosophy that the universe is creating God, rather than the reverse' (an interesting variation on the Devil's usual trick of turning everything upside down and inside out) 'and such Utopian ideas imported from France as cosmopolitanism, or world citizenship, and finally the strong influence of French Masonic practices and doctrines through the Lodge of Lyons, the mother Lodge of a segment of Masonry known as the Grand Orient de la France'[94]

Given that the revolutionary doctrines pressed by the Illuminati Order were zealously propagated, the existence of this secret society within a secret society (the pattern used by the Illuminati to hide their existence ever since, in one way or another), could not remain hidden for long. In 1783, a Bavarian Court of Enquiry started an investigation into The Order; and much of what is known about the massive conspiracy that Weishaupt fronted, is a consequence of that investigation. The Bavarian Court of Enquiry exposed and banned the Illuminati Order, which then went underground again, emerging as a network of Reading Societies all over Germany.

This operation represented the Illuminati's first attempt to control the media - as the literary Reading Room network sought to monopolise editorial work, publishing reviewing and the distribution of all literature, in order to control the minds of the intelligentsia. At the same time, the Illuminati exploited the printed word to subvert the minds of 'the masses' - a precursor of its later annexation of film, theatre and today the entire entertainment industry, augmented by the electronic leverage potential through the Internet, for the same purpose.

Indeed, the methodology employed by the Illuminati cadres has never changed throughout this 'final' assault by Lucifer - which is intended to achieve a decisive victory over 'the enemy' as the culmination of the 'Permanent Revolution'. It will certainly fail.

CONTROL OF THE MEDIA INTEGRAL WITH THE CONSPIRACY

Independent corroboration of the evil intent of representatives of the Illuminati to annexe and control the Fourth Estate is available, thanks not least to excellent research conducted by Dr Dennis Laurence Cuddy, and published in his book 'Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order'[95]. Dr Cuddy records that on 9th February 1917 - not uncoincidentally the year in which the O.T.O. emerged into the open and the Russian Revolution occurred, resulting in the establishment by the Illuminati of their first large-scale 'Black Regime' - Representative Oscar Calloway inserted the following statement in the Congressional Record:

'In March 1915, the J. P. Morgan interests, the steel, shipbuilding, and powder interests, and their subsidiary organisations, got together twelve men high-up in the newspaper world and employed them to select the most influential newspapers in the United States and sufficient number of them to control generally the policy of the daily press of the United States. These twelve men worked the problem out by selecting 179 newspapers and then began, by an elimination process, to retain only those necessary for the purpose of controlling the general policy of the daily press throughout the country. They found it was only necessary to purchase the control of twenty-five of the greatest newspapers. The twenty-five papers were agreed upon; emissaries were sent to purchase the policy (i.e., control) national and international, of these papers; an agreement was reached; the policy of the papers was bought, to be paid for by the month; and an editor was furnished for each paper to properly supervise and edit information regarding the questions of preparedness, militarism, financial policies, and other things of national and international nature considered vital to the interests of the purchasers'[96].

Dr Cuddy further reports that on 24th March 1917, 'The New York Times' published the text of a telegram from Jacob Schiff describing the Russian Revolution as 'what we had hoped and striven for these long years'. And on 3rd February 1949, 'The New York Journal-American' reported that Today it is estimated even by Jacob's grandson, John Schiff, a prominent member of New York Society, that the old man sank about $20,000,000 for the final triumph of Bolshevism in Russia. Other New York banking firms also contributed'[97]. These references to the financing of the Bolshevik Revolution by New-York based Jewish bankers is included here in order to highlight the parallel relevance of Figure 84 on page 533, in which the signature of Adolf Hitler appears on the same document as that of Max Warburg, the brother of Paul Warburg, who was the chief architect of the Federal Reserve System.

The combination of these two pieces of evidence shows how Western Jewish banking funds were used to finance the first Black Illuminati regime, the Soviet (International Socialist) Union under the German agent Lenin, and secondly, the German National Socialist Black Illuminati regime - thus establishing the two sides of a dialectical process ripe for manipulation to procure the emergence of an environment conducive to the German-Jewish llluminati's mad objective, the establishment of a 'New World Order'. The question is: is this to be the 'Order' imposed by the 'New World' as envisaged originally, under older German influence, by Sir Francis Bacon and the European controllers of the founders of the United States, or the New World Ordnung, or Thousand-Year Reich, which is what the controlling German Illuminati centre has in mind?

In 1928, William Paley established the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) and hired a nephew of Sigmund Freud, the Jewish 'Father of Psychiatry', named Edward Bernays, as his main adviser. Bernays published a study entitled 'Propaganda', which contained this further confirmation that the Illuminati have imposed their grip on the US media - and of course, as is today so glaringly obvious, on the British media as well:

Those who manipulate the organized habits and opinions of the masses constitute an invisible government which is the true ruling power of the country.... It remains a fact that in almost every act of our daily lives, whether in the sphere of politics or business, in our social conduct or our ethical thinking, we are dominated by the relatively small number of persons.... It is they who pull the wires that control the public mind, who harness old social forces and contrive new ways to bind and guide the world.... As civilization has become more complex, and as the need for invisible government has been increasingly demonstrated...'[98].

Given universally heightened concerns today at the perennial failure of the open 'mainstream' media in both the United States and Britain to investigate and report the proportions of institutionalised financial, drug-running and money-laundering criminality and theft that has become routine, and which the Author seeks to expose in his serial publications, it is sobering to learn that these anxieties are nothing new at all.

HOW THEY HANDLE EXPOSURE: 'NO-ONE WILL BELIEVE IT'

The Author experienced at first-hand how the Illuminati seize control of desirable media outlets. In the 1970s, he was in the habit, thanks to the good offices of the then Editor of The Daily Telegraph, the veteran politician-turned-journalist W. H. Deedes, of writing extensive Op-Ed Articles which were frequently published in the centre pages of that newspaper. This continued satisfactorily for a number of years: indeed, the Author was instrumental in helping the Conservative Party to understand that the trade unions were labour cartels; and Bill Deedes told the Author one day that 'you taught me that trade unions are financial corporations'. In March 1979, shortly before Mrs Thatcher came to power, the Author was invited to brief the Shadow Cabinet on this subject, where he encountered resistance from one of the darkest characters who surrounded the incoming Prime Minister, Leon Brittan, and from an accountant ally of Mrs Thatcher who became Lord Wakeham (subsequently allegedly caught up in the Enron scandal).

After some years, Conrad Black bought the newspaper and other titles from the then proprietors, the Berry Family. As is well known, Lord Black, as he duly became, was, many years later, involved in a scandal over the removal of funds within his complex, Maxwellian corporate structures, which were in part presided over by the sinister characters Dr Henry Kissinger, the German Jew with the Soviet codename BOR, and Richard Perle, the man known in Washington as 'the Prince of Darkness'. Within a very short space of time following Black's takeover of the newspaper, all the Op-Ed writers, including the Author, were 'sacked': or rather, it was made crystal clear that further contributions would not be welcome. But these arrogant Illuminists who perpetrate these scams always forget that it can never be guaranteed that their deeds will not become known, since 'nothing is hid'. The experience taught the Author how the Uluminati work, and corroborates, of course, the documented evidence published by Dr Cuddy.

In the course of her interview with Dr Mackow, 'Svali' noted: 'The Illuminists don't care who prints this stuff, or if they are 'exposed' - because they are counting on the majority not believing it, having done a pretty good job with a media blitz campaign: seen any articles in Newsweek or Time lately, that address [any of] this other than as a laughable conspiracy theory?'[99]. However the days when the control-freak Princes and Powers of The Darkness can rely on no-one believing how depraved they are, may be numbered.

THE PRE-POSITIONING OF CONTROLLED ILLUMINATI OPERATIVES

One of the primary methods used over the decades by the Illuminati to advance their conspiratorial objectives has always been to surround leaders by its proteges or advocates - such as Leon Brittan, one of the most evil-looking men the Author has ever seen, who was clearly prepositioned into Mrs Thatcher's entourage before she took power. It will be recalled from our examination of Jesuit methodology that The Order (Jesuit manifestation) concentrated considerable resources on befriending potentates, princes and wealthy women (whom they especially cherish, given their expectation that, in due course, they will become wealthy widows who can be encouraged to hand their wealth over to the Order before their death). Exactly the same (Jesuit) grasping and control methodology is deployed routinely by The Order of the Illuminati. Adam Weishaupt stated plainly that the Illuminati's plan was to surround ruling authorities with members of The Order so that its representatives would be as close to seats of power as feasible and, through close influence and if possible actual occupation of the highest offices, to usurp such power directly. Thus he instructed: 'These powers are despots, when they do not conduct themselves by its [the Order's] principles; and it is therefore our duty to surround them with its members, so that the profane' (that is, Illuminati- and Freemasonic-speak for the rest of us who haven't been initiated into their evil ways and don't go along with their arrogant plans) 'may have no access to them. Thus we are able most powerfully to promote its interests. If any person is more disposed to listen to Princes than to the Order, he is not fit for it, and must rise no higher. We must do our utmost to procure the advancement of the Illuminati into all important civil offices'[100]. To lay long-term plans as devious as this, one must surely indeed be possessed.

THE DETAILED HISTORICAL BACKGROUND ACCORDING TO ROBISON

Robison revealed in his own introduction to his work that the Illuminati survived their 'abolition' by the Bavarian Court of Enquiry, in the following passage:

'... abolished in 1786 by the Elector of Bavaria, [the Order of the Illuminati were] revived immediately after under another name, and in a different form, all over Germany. It was again detected, and seemingly broken up; but it had by this time taken so deep root that still subsists' (as of 1798 when Dr Robison's book was published) 'without being detected, and has spread into all the countries of Europe. It took its first rise among the Freemasons, but is totally different from Freemasonry. It was not, however, the mere protection gained by the secrecy of the Lodges that gave occasion to it, but it arose naturally from the corruptions that had gradually crept into the fraternity, the violence of the party-spirif (i.e., the 'seething energies of Lucifer)' which pervaded it, and from the total uncertainty and darkness that hangs over the whole of that mysterious Association'[101].

Freemasonry originated in England, which has accordingly cursed the whole world by inventing this system of secret Lodges which have been converted into transmission mechanisms for the dissemination of the 'Ancient Mysteries' and the degradation of civilization. Robison observes at the outset that he had detected indications of extensive intermeddling by Jesuits in Masonic Lodges in the 17th century:

'I have met with many particular facts, which convince me that... at this time' (referring to the English Revolution and the Civil War period) 'the Jesuits interfered considerably, insinuating themselves into the Lodges, and contributing to increase that religious mysticism that is to be observed in all ceremonies of The Order'. And Robison had observed, too, that the Jesuits used all sorts of ruses and label-changing tactics to enhance their power and influence: 'This Society is well known to have put on every shape, and to have made use of every mean that could promote the influence and power of The Order' (Jesuit version). 'And we know that at this time they were by no means without hopes of re-establishing the dominion of the Church of Rome in England. Their services were not scrupled at by the distressed Royalists, even such as were Protestants, while they were highly prized by the Sovereign'[102].

When, following the English Revolution, King James II took refuge in France with many of his most zealous adherents, his entourage took Freemasonry over to the Continent, 'where it was immediately received by the French and was cultivated [there] with great zeal. The Lodges in France naturally became the rendezvous of the adherents to their banished King, and the means of carrying on a correspondence with their friends in England. At this time also the Jesuits took a more active hand in Freemasonry than ever. They insinuated themselves into the English Lodges, where they were caressed by the Catholics, who panted after the re-establishment of their faith, and tolerated by the Protestant Royalists, who thought no concession too great a compensation for their services. At this time changes were made in some of the Masonic symbols... which bear evident marks of Jesuitical interference'[103]. This was nothing new, for in an earlier era, 'in all this progressive mummery we see much of the hand of the Jesuits, and it would seem that it was encouraged by the Church'[104].

Lodges held at St Germain's added the Degree of Chevalier Macon Ecossois to the three 'symbolical' or 'Blue Degrees' of English Masonry, providing a connection with the 'alternative theory' that the author of the complex kabbalistic 'mummery' detailed in Manly P. Hall's rare work, cited in Chapter 6, may have been the 'Count of St Germain' - a title sometimes used as an alias of Sir Francis Bacon himself, notwithstanding that Bacon had been dead a good century or more by the time the Lodges were meeting at St Germain. 'It is certain', Robison elaborated, 'that before 1743 ... the Lodges of Free Masons had become the places for making proselytes to every strange and obnoxious doctrine. Theurgy, Cosmogony, Cabala, and many whimsical and mythical doctrines which have been grafted on[to] the distinguishing tenets and pure morality of the [Torah] Jews and Christians, were subjects of frequent discussion in the Lodges', and the ferment in the French Lodges 'fully account for the zeal with which all this patchwork addition to the simple Freemasonry of England was prosecuted in France'[105]. One of the 'daughter Lodges' of the Lodge at Lyons, the Lodge Theodore von der guten Rath, at Munich, a centre of occult activity through to the era of Hitler and beyond, 'became so remarkable for discourses dangerous to Church and State, that the Elector of Bavaria, after repeated admonitions during the course of five or six years, was obliged to suppress it in 1786' along with Weishaupt's Order of The Illuminati[106]. Citing the 'Archives Mystico-Hermetiques', Robison notes the subtlety with which gross heresies and sorcery were alluded to, which 'accord with a general spirit of licentiousness in morals, religion, and politics. Although every thing is expressed decently, and with some caution and moderation, atheism, materialism, and discontent with civil subordination, pervade the whole'[107] - against which a student had marked, in the Author's copy of John Robison's work, 'present situation 2004'.

In seeking the precise source of these abominations, we are assisted by Robison's important statement about Freemasonry in Germany - bearing in mind that the pagan Rosicrucianism elaborated (according to Manly P. Hall) by Sir Francis Bacon, had its or-joins in 14th century Germany: 'But now it is time to turn our eyes to the progress of Freemasonry in Germany and the North of Europe; there it took a more serious turn. Freemasonry was imported back into Germany somewhat later than into France. The first German Lodge that we have any account of is that at Cologne, erected in 1716, but very soon suppressed. Before the year 1725, there were many [Lodges], both in Protestant and Catholic Germany. Those of Wetzlar, Frankfort on the Mayne, Brunswick, and Hamburg, are the oldest.... All of them received their institution from England and had patents from a Mother Lodge in London. All seem to have got the mystery through the same channel, the banished friends of the Stuart Family. Many of these were Catholics, and entered into the service of Austria and the Catholic Princes'[108]. Robison alludes in this context, to the observed German fascination for 'the gross absurdities of magick, exorcism, witchcraft, fortune-telling, transmutation of metals, and universal medicine', and that Germans in the Lodges 'listened with greedy ears to the nonsense and jargon of fanatics and cheats; and though they every day saw examples of many who had been ruined or rendered ridiculous by their credulity, every new pretender to secrets found numbers [of 'Useful Idiots' - Ed.] ready to listen to him, and to run over the same course'[109]. Enter, once again, the Rosicrucians, followed noch einmal by the Jesuits: 'Freemasonry, professing mysteries, instantly roused all these people, and the Lodges appeared to the adventurers who wanted to profit by the enthusiasm or the avarice of their dupes, the fittest places in the world for the scene of their operations. The Rosycrucians were the first who availed themselves of the opportunity... a set of Alchymists. Pretenders to the transmutation of metals and the universal medicine, who, the better to inveigle their votaries, had mixed with their own tricks a good deal of the absurd superstitions of that sect, in order to give a greater air of mystery to the whole.... These cheats... persuaded their pupils that they were the only true Masons. Rosycrucian Lodges were soon established and became numerous, because their mysteries were addressed... to the curiosity, the sensuality, and the avarice of men. They became a very formidable band, adopting the constitution of the Jesuits, dividing the Fraternity into circles, each under the management of its own Superior, known to the President, but unknown to the individuals of the Lodges. These Superiors were connected to each other in a way known only to themselves, and the whole was under one General'[110].

ROSICRUCIANS AND JESUITS WORKING TOGETHER

So here we have, from this respected academic source, confirmation of the intertwined machinations of the Rosicrucians and the Jesuits - a combination that raises the question: were certain Jesuits (Weishaupt for instance) also Rosicrucians? Whatever the truth of the matter, there is no further need to wonder that both the Jesuits and the Rosicrucians used (and use) the tell-tale label 'The Order', for they were truly rats out of the same sewer. When rats emerge from a sewer, no distinction can be made between them: all are brown.

Due to such influences, the 'simple' Lodges adopted the sorcery and alchemy practiced in the Rosicrucian Lodges, many of which overlapped with the "'regular' Lodges in Europe: 'and, in like manner, exorcism, or ghost-raising, magic, and other gross superstitions, were often held out in their meetings as attainable mysteries, which would be immense acquisitions to the Fraternity, without any necessity of admitting along with them the religious deliriums of the Rosycrucians'[111].

Concerning Weishaupt's Jesuit background, Robison explained that: 'Of the zealous members of the Lodge Theodore [in Munich], the most conspicuous was Dr Adam

Weishaupt, Professor of Canon Law in the University of Ingolstadt. This person had been educated among the Jesuits; but the [temporary] abolition of their Order had made him change his vows, and from being their pupil, he became their most bitter enemy'[112], probably because of bottled-up resentment at the oppressiveness of the regime from which he had been released, with its environment of universal espionage and consequent distrust (very similar, unfortunately, to the environment prevalent throughout the colossal US intelligence community, and within British intelligence, as well).... 'In his first fervour and high expectations, he [Weishaupt] hinted to several ex-Jesuits the probability of their recovering, under a new name, the influence which they formerly possessed, and of being again of great service to society, by directing the education of youth... now emancipated from all civil and religious prejudices'[112].

Detailed information about the collective mentality of The Order of the Illuminati that Weishaupt, by now an implacable enemy of the Jesuits, went on to (re)found - on Jesuitical principles - emerged from the Elector of Bavaria's Court of Enquiry, from depositions given in 1783 by four Jewish Professors from the Marianen Academy, named Utschneider, Cossandey, Renner, and Grunberger, plus two others. According to John Robison, their testimonies revealed that 'The Order was said to abjure Christianity, and to refuse admission into the higher Degrees to all who adhered to any of the three (Christian) confessions. Sensual pleasures were restored to the rank they held in the Epicurean philosophy. Self-murder (suicide) was justified on Stoical principles. In the Lodges, death was declared [to be] an eternal sleep; patriotism and loyalty were called narrow-minded prejudices, and incompatible with universal benevolence; continual declamations were made on liberty and equality as the inalienable rights of man. The baneful influence of accumulated property was declared an insurmountable obstacle to the happiness of any nation. Nothing was so frequently discoursed of as the propriety of employing, for a good purpose, the means which the wicked employed for evil purposes [the end justifies the means]; and it was taught, that the preponderancy of good in the ultimate result consecrated every mean employed [i.e., murder and lying are OK if the outcome is deemed 'good' by the perpetrators - Ed.];... [and] the great object of The Order was held as superior to every consideration [viz, all is permitted, in pursuit of the interests of The Order of the Illuminati - Ed.]. They concluded by saying that the method of education made them all spies on each other, and on all around them'[113].

In a later document, written by Weishaupt from 'exile' at Regensburg, he confirmed that Communism was invented and/or elaborated by The Illuminati, and that rulers who belong to the Illuminati must adhere rigidly to its agenda, without deviation. This is an insight of extreme importance, as it explains why, for instance, President Clinton was not ashamed to write, on White House stationery on 22nd June 1993, to the World Federalist Association on the occasion of its Global Governance Award honouring its past President, Norman Cousins, that he (Cousins) 'worked for world peace and world government... Best wishes for an enjoyable reception and for future success'. It explains why certain contemporary rulers, such as allegedly even The Queen, go along with the project for World Government while, in double-minded fashion, purporting nonetheless, to represent exclusively the interests of their nations:

'Rulers who are members must be promoted through the ranks of The Order only in proportion as they acknowledge the goodness of its great object, and [its] manner of procedure' (i.e., what lies in store for nation states and their rulers, namely that they are subordinated to the New World Order scheme and will in due course become redundant). Its object may be said to be the checking of the tyranny of princes, nobles, and priests, and establishing an universal equality of condition and of religion' (a universal tyranny). The pupil was now informed 'that such a religion is contained in The Order, is the perfection of Christianity, and will be imparted to him in due time'[115]. This of course was just another brazen lie. Apart from other considerations, the interests of the state - meaning, of 'the Brotherhood' - are placed permanently above that of the individual; whereas of course True Christianity is exclusively about the reconciliation of the human individual, to a personal God, not to the impersonal, cold-hearted state. Everything the Illuminati propagate and perform represents the reverse of what is good and true - from their devious rationalisations, to the abominations that Illuminised intelligence communities routinely commit in accordance with their upside-down principle that 'the end justifies the means'. In parallel with this Luciferian doctrine, Weishaupt also promulgated the evil principle - espoused by US intelligence criminalists, for instance - that anything is permitted and there is only one sin: getting caught. 'All men are subject to errors, and the best man is he who best conceals them'[116]. As a matter of fact, the modern Illuminati recognise just one other 'sin' - stealing money (even if the money stolen has already been stolen previously). What this means is that sorcery,

W. G. (BILL) HEFNER

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, DC 20515–3308

March 24, 1997

Mr. Zell Setzer
P.O. Box 4198
Salisbury, NC 28145

Dear Mr. Setzer:

Enclosed is the information you requested pertaining to the Army's policy and guidance for establishing civilian inmate labor program and civilian prison camps on Army installations. This information has not yet been published (it is currently at the printers), however, it has been funded, staffed, and does reflect current Army policy. I hope you find this information useful.

With kindest regards, I am

Sincerely yours,

Bill Hefner

BILL HEFNER
Member of Congress

BH/ey

Enclosure

Figure 79: Copy of a letter from Representative Bill Heffner dated 24th March 1997 confirming the establishment of a 'Civilian Inmate Labor Program' and prison camps on US Army installations under the Clinton (Illuminati) Administration. The existence of this letter in the public domain 'illuminates' the partial list of US GULAG concentration camp-like installations given on pages 612-613. 'Democracy' is thoroughly despised by the Synagogue of Satan. Note Hefner's implied approval of this abomination.

fornication, filthiness, brutality, bearing false witness, murder, lying, scamming, routine deception, two-faced behaviour, double-mindedness, ruthless pursuit of enemies, cynicism and uncontrolled anger, are all permissible. The guiding principle of Ordo Templi Orientis is 'Do as Thou wilt'. But if one steals money - which is ironically the root of all evil[117] - then there is 'no forgiveness'. How ironic that if one steals the root of all evil there is no forgiveness among these criminalists! Jesus Christ teaches that there is only one sin that attracts no forgiveness, ever: blasphemy against the Holy Spirit'[118].

The ex-Jesuit Weishaupt also attached special importance to Bavaria as a central source of anti-Christianity. For he wrote: 'I did not bring Deism into (Catholic) Bavaria more than [exists] in Rome. I found it here, in great vigour, more abounding than in any of the neighbouring Protestant states. I am proud to be known to the world as the founder of The Order of Illuminati'[119].

U.S. CONCENTRATION CAMP SYSTEM NAMED THE 'REX PROGRAM'

The Degrees, ranks and progress of Illuminati candidates or pupils were organised by Weishaupt and his collaborators in accordance with the system shown in the diagram on page 497 [Figure 78). From this diagram, it will be seen that the penultimate Degree, and the first of the two Degrees of the Greater Mysteries of the Illuminati is MAGUS, which this Author believes provides the true meaning of that mysterious 'M' on the late Pope's coffin. The second Greater Mystery Degree, and the last of Weishaupt's system, is that of REX. This is the basis for the use of the codename 'Rex 84' to denote the US GULAG prison camp system, elements of which are listed on pages 612-613, also referred to as the Civilian Inmate Program - the existence of which was confirmed as early as 24th March 1997 by Representative Bill Hefner, a Jewish member of the US Congress, to his constituent, of Jewish extraction, Mr Zell Setzer [see Figure 79 on page 505]. The US concentration camp system goes by the name of the 'highest[7] 'Greater Mysteries' Degree or Rank of The Order of the Illuminati, because when the intended US GULAG is brought fully into operation, the Illuminati plan to commit atrocities and crimes against humanity which will leave history to judge that the Holocaust was a mere prelude to what was to follow - as these criminals, driven exclusively by the 'seething energies of Lucifer', implement the full force of their madness against those refusing to go along with their false prospectus and with their ruthless implementation of the New Underworld Order.

The Illuminati cadres driving this project in the United States, occupying the highest positions in the country, are arrogantly certain of their mission, since they are indoctrinated into the knowledge of the Illuminati's past achievements. For instance, well before the establishment, one after the other, of the two 20th Century regimes of darkness, the USSR and Nazi Germany - both of which were established by German Illuminists -Illuminati cadres had brought about the unification of Germany through the destruction of its smaller states: for Weishaupt asserts "that the German Union was, to his certain knowledge, the work of the Illuminati'[120], as was the unification of Italy, presided over by the sorcerer-Mason Jewish Illuminist criminal drug operative, Giuseppe Mazzini.

As to the Illuminati's modus operandi, its secrecy and its Jesuitical manner of operating de facto behind-the-scenes and going underground whenever necessary, or changing labels like underwear, Adam Weishaupt laid down that 'there must (a la Jesuite) not a single purpose ever come to light that is ambiguous, and that may betray our aims against religion and the state'. And in language almost identical to that of the German agent Lenin half a century later, Weishaupt added: 'One must speak sometimes one way and sometimes another, but so as never to contradict ourselves, and so that, with respect to our true way of thinking, we may be impenetrable'.

To this overt acknowledgement of how the Illuminati were to operate, Weishaupt tacked on the principle which is extensively used today in the United States (and increasingly in Britain, also), of testing the 'trance state' of the general population. This is done, for instance, by means of 'limited exposures', which may also serve a diversionary purpose. The principle is contained within the following statement by Weishaupt: 'When our

OSAMA BIN LADEN ALIAS DOCUMENT

[redacted]

JUST A SIMPLE and CONTINUING REMINDER OF .... PREVIOUS USG INTEL FIELD REPORTS ON FILE AND FULLY DOCUMENTED

ITEM 1 ... (TIM OSMAN and RALPH OLBERG / U. S. DEPARTMENT OF STATE - FGHAN DESK, et al. VISITATION w/
USGOVERNMENT PUBLIC OFFICIALS [OSMAN = USAMA/OSAMA N LADIN/OBL]
SITUATION : SSAC TED GUNDERSON, FBI/DD.OPS/LA-
I.TON/SHERMANOAKS/CA/USA [redacted]

EM 2 ... GENERAL DYNAMICS STINGER SALES/TRANSFERS VIA LAMUDJAHEDDIN, JOHN TAYLOR, SCOTT
PARTRIDGE, HERR ANDRAS SZASZ, et al

EM 3 ... PLANTRONIKS GmbH, BUDAPEST, HUNGARY OPERATIONS: RTH KOREA, SINGAPORE, USSR, et al...
VIA HERR PRESIDENT ANDRAS SZASZ, AND THEIR INTEL ERATIONS GROUPE [redacted]

M 4 ... PROMIS UPGRADE / MICHAEL RICONOSCIUTO, et al - BILL MILTON/INSLAW-WSHDC.ops

M 5 ... MANAGEMENT SCIENCES of HEALTH [MSH] - ref. U. S. SENATOR E DURENBERGER, et al
WANTA SENATORIAL SPONSOR FOR U. S. DEPARTMENT of ENSE - INSPECTOR GENERAL [redacted]

EM 6 ... USG APPROVAL and DELIVERY OF :

a. MANPADS / MAN PORTABLE AIR DEFENSE SYSTEMS
b. HNSA PRC-POLYTECH CLONE RED-EYE EQUIPMENT AND TRAINING, i.e., NIC/CONTRAS OPS/DELIVERY
c. IGLA and STRELLA USSR SAM ops/DELIVERY
d. GENERAL AZIZ / WIEN.ops FIELD REPORTS and RED MERCURY 2020 USSR/IRAQI DELIVERY and INTEL OPS REF: IRAQI MILITARY ACADEMY COMMANDANT GENERAL AZIZ and OUR NEW REPUBLIC/USA FINANCIAL GROUP, LTD GES m b H. (AUSTRIU.S.C. 18, sec 6) INTEL SUPPORT and PERSONAL LIFE SAVING FINANCIAL PROGRAMME and HOUSING ALLOWANCES
e. USA SAM COHEN ... A-NEUTRONIC BOMB DESIGN/TESTING/DELIVERY ... USG FIELD REPORTS

PLEASE SEE "AmeriTrust CORPORATION EMBARGO" RELEASE IN USG

[redacted]

[redacted]

Scripted

China

Sherman Oaks

A & ADL
Radar
Hilton
Hotel

Sherman Oaks

FOB

Pivot

Figure 80: Details of US intelligence operations from a primary US intelligence source. The document, which first appeared in the public domain during 2002, confirms inter alia that the CIA operative and asset 'Tim Osman' is Osama Bin Laden, and reveals extensive details of other connections which would have astonished the 'mainstream' media if their investigative journalists had ever conducted the necessary research, instead of specialising in doctored misinformation. George W. Bush Jr. used to 'manage' the Bin Laden family finances.

strongest things chance to give offence, they must be explained as attempts to draw answers which discover to us the sentiments of the person we converse with'[121].

This accounts for the Author's unpleasant experiences over the past three decades, especially in the United States - where serious researchers are liable all too often to be befriended by people who turn out to have an ulterior motive, to be untrustworthy, to be double-minded, and/or to be 'working' for one of the country's innumerable intelligence agencies. The Author feels understandably violated and abused by these people.

'WE SHALL SET ALL IN MOTION AND IN FLAMES'

And in his voluminous correspondence, Weishaupt made it clear that there was intended to be no end to the global machinations of the Illuminati, just as the Jesuits (against whom Weishaupt finally had turned with a vengeance, while all along infecting the Order of the Illuminati's structures with their system of discipline, secrecy and mutual spying) had never ceased scheming with and against potentates and heads of government everywhere. Referring to his overall revolutionary plan, which he maintained is revealed in part through ritual initiation, Weishaupt boasted that 'by this plan, we shall direct all mankind. In this manner, and by the simplest means, we shall set all in motion and in flames. The occupations' (within our Order) 'must be so allotted and contrived, that we may, in secret, influence all political transactions'[122].

It is this secret association of Black Operatives, driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer' accessed by demonic programming and led by Dark Actors Playing Games, that is responsible for destabilising the whole world - inter alia by seizing control of the mainstream and secondary media, by spreading pornography, drugs and confusion via the Internet, by developing and controlling the global drug trade, by rigging the price of oil, by manufacturing and orchestrating, through innumerable cutouts, cynical provocations such as 9/11, 7/11, the East Asian tsunami and the Pakistan earthquake (via satellite-mounted scalar technology), the Madrid bombings and terrorist atrocities in Bali and India, by the systematic infusion of entertainment and all electronic media with their depravity, by the corruption of education, by indoctrinating all levels of government and using its resources to spread their 'New Age' pagan philosophies and false prospectuses, by further corrupting and perverting the already corrupted churches, by commandeering the sciences to develop more and more 'evil things', by the mixing of medicine and pharmacology with alchemical means of decimating or controlling targeted elements of the population through such criminal acts as the deliberate contamination of vaccines or 'flu jabs', by means of the criminalisation of the banking system, through the relentless promotion of occultism starting with the 'in-your-face' display of the Illuminati's actual emblem on the $1.0 bill, by corrupting little children, and by perpetrating such atrocities as the devastation wrought in the New Orleans area as an 'exercise', preparatory to the optional military takeover of each one of the seven Illuminati regions of the United States and the progressive implementation of the intended strategy of herding recalcitrant objectors and 'non-cooperators' onto death trains and buses en route for the 'Rex-84' concentration camps or replicated Nazi-style death chambers.

It is this secret association of Black Operatives, driven by the 'seething energies of Lucifer' accessed by demonic programming and led by Dark Actors Playing Games that has been responsible for such Luciferian suggestions as that put forward by the top Illuminist Zbigniew Brzezinski in his book 'The Grand Chessboard' (1997) that a new 'potential' enemy was needed 'since the end of the Cold War', and that the 'immediate' task would be 'to develop and simultaneously control a "direct external threat" to manufacture an attack "like a new Pearl Harbor"'. Earlier, on 3rd July 1979, Brzezinski had revealed that, unknown to both Congress and the public, President Carter secretly authorised $500 million to be used for creating an international terrorist movement that would spread Islamic fundamentalism in Central Asia to destabilise the Soviet Union -a venture known as 'Operation Cyclone', which fostered the likes of 'Tim Osman' (Osama Bin Laden: see Figure 80, page 507) and eventually cost $4.0 billion. The operation financed inter alia Islamic terrorism training schools in Pakistan. Some of the funds were absorbed by the CIA's very own terrorism training school in Virginia, where Al-Qaeda operatives were trained, with some of the trainees being recruited in the United States. In Pakistan, such operatives were directed by MI6 and SAS. This suggests that British intelligence reports about DVD global terrorism culpability, while accurate, are also motivated in part by the need to cover up nefarious British involvement.

With his Pearl Harbor remark, Brzezinski was, of course, predicting 9/11.

What was required was a credible (at least in the public mind) and well-developed enemy. The need for the same kind of attack (provocation) was mentioned by the notorious 'Project for a New American Century' (PNAC) in its September 2000 report 'Rebuilding America's Defences'. Such an attack would then provide a pretext for massive sequential military intervention to secure the energy supplies of the Middle East and the lesser (but important) oil-bearing regions, including West Africa, Venezuela, Colombia, certain portions of the Southwest Pacific, and any other region with smaller but more readily accessible reserves. The essential thing would be that terrorists or their "allies" must conveniently turn up in each targeted area, on schedule. No problem, argued the US intelligence analyst Michael Ruppert. That's what the CIA, Mossad, MI6, and every other major intelligence agency does for a living'.

'DARK ACTORS' IN THE UNITED STATES, AND SATANIC TRAINING

Nor should anyone underestimate the sizeable numbers at the disposal of these Dark Actors Playing Games. According to 'Svali', 'when I left the flluminati' (which she did very courageously in 1995), 'approximately 1% of the US population was either part of the Illuminati, sympathetic to it, or a victim of Mind Control (and therefore considered useable). [Some authorities place this estimated figure as high as 2% - Ed.]. While this may not sound like many, imagine 1% of the population highly trained in the use of armaments, crowd control, psychological and behavioural techniques, armed with weapons and linked to paramilitary groups'. The psychomanipulative training techniques used to manufacture niuminati killers (of whom the Author has met at least two, whose main observable characteristic was their tendency suddenly to switch from a placid disposition to one of extreme, uncontrollable anger), replicated by the CIA's MK-ULTRA (Manufacturing Killers Under Lethal Trigger Requiring Assassination) programme, plumbs the depths of satanic depravity, as 'Svali' explained:

> 'ASSASSIN TRAINING: HERE IS HOW IT IS DONE (HOW IT WAS DONE TO ME):
>
> 1. When the child is two years old, place it in a metal cage with electrodes attached. Shock the child severely. [This model was confirmed to the Author by an impeccably informed prior source].
> 2. Take the child out, and place a kitten (or rabbit) in its hands. Tell the child to wring the kitten's neck. The child will cry and refuse.
> 3. Put the child back into the cage, and shock it until it is dazed and cannot scream any more.
> 4. Take the child out, and tell it again to wring the kitten's neck. This time, the child will shake all over, cry, but will do it, afraid of torture. The child will then go into the corner and

will vomit afterwards, while the adult praises it for "doing such a good job".

5. This is just the first step. The animals get bigger over time, as the child gets older. The child will be forced to kill an infant at some point, either a set-up, or virtual reality, or in reality. The child will be taught by the age of nine to put together a gun, to aim, and to fire on a target and on command' (Author: which is what Palestinian children have been taught by their Illuminati trainers to do). They will then practice on realistic 'Mannikins'. They will then practice on animals. They will then practice on "expendables", or in virtual reality. They will be highly praised if they 'do well', and tortured if they don't comply.

6. The older the child or teen, the more advanced the training. By age 15, most children will also be forced to do hand-to-hand combat in front of spectators (high people who come to watch the "games"...). These matches are rarely done to the death, usually until one child goes down. They use every type of weapon imaginable, and learn to fight for their lives. If a child loses a fight, they are heavily punished by their trainer, who loses "face". If they win, they are again praised for being "strong" and adept with weapons. By the time they are 21, they are well-trained combat/killing machines with command codes to kill, and they have been tested over and over to prove that they WILL obey on command. This is how children in the German Illuminati are brought up, and I went through it myself.

This Author would not have published this information if the precise procedure outlined above had not been independently explained to him by a member of a known US Illuminati family, whose members seem to alternate between people of the highest moral calibre and intelligence, and reprobates whose lives are obsessed with the evils arising from their family's tradition of Illuminati training or associations. 'Svali's' description of how Illuminati children are trained in Germany is identical to the procedure in question, which is believed to have been applied in the upbringing of the offspring not least of certain prominent and notorious US criminalist intelligence families.

All those participants in the Synagogue of Satan who practice the extreme abominations against children* that have been summarised here deserve the most implacable condemnation, and a fate at least equivalent to that specified by Jesus. Christ's anger against such evil people is reiterated three times in the Gospels - a sure indication of the extreme severity of these offences:

'But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea'.

Matthew, Chapter 18, verse 4.

'And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged around his neck, and [that] he were cast into the sea'. Mark, Chapter 9, verse 42.

'It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones'. Luke, Chapter 17, verse 2.

Nor is it surprising that these evil people are unhappy, and discontented with their situation. They are trapped in the hell of their own and their peers' invention, and by the loathesome oaths they have sworn, and by fear of the ultimate penalty for 'betraying' them. However they - even these Illuminati - could escape, like 'Svali', without fear, if they had the courage to acknowledge the only Name that can rescue them from perdition:

'Behold, I stand at the door and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in unto him, and will sup with him, and he with me'.

Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 20.

---

* The Author knows of a tragic recent case in which it appears that a carefully planned operation was conducted against a target by his estranged wife. Knowing the targeted individual's love for his twin grandsons, the ex-wife appeared for a Thanksgiving holiday, after which the entire family fell seriously ill with some passing infection. A few months later, at a critical time for other reasons, one of the twins fell ill again with a grave sickness, and his vomiting became so bad that he had to be evacuated by helicopter to the nearest specialist hospital. He was falsely diagnosed with a brain tumour, a horrendous operation took place, he died, and the surgeon was heard to exclaim afterwards: 'Why have I done this?' The probable answer is that at some earlier stage of his life, he took a Masonic blood oath. The Illuminati may call upon the services of their operatives - such as surgeons - just once in a lifetime. They are then required to 'cooperate'. Should they refuse, their own children will be targeted. The wrong operation was performed on a Masonic handshake.

GERMAN SPOKEN AT THE HIGHEST LEVEL OF THE ILLUMINATI

German is spoken at the highest level of the Illuminati, because its Germanic Branch is, as 'Svali' has confirmed, the primus inter pares, overseeing the British Branch, which handles the finances - even though Belgium is, also according to 'Svali', the actual financial centre. The French-Russian Branch, consisting of the two European Great Powers that have experienced modern satanic revolutions to date is, with the British Branch, subordinate to the German centre, based in Berlin and Frankfurt. There is extreme tension between the German and the British Branches, in particular. Throughout this investigation, the central importance of the German dimension of the Illuminati has been conspicuous: the overwhelming importance of the German Branch has simply 'fallen out of this analysis'. And in the German context, the central importance of Jewish/Khazar Illuminati has always been undeniable and self-evident. For at the top, the Jewish (Zionazi) and German Illuminati brainwashed mentalities 'agree', and work together. It should surely by now be no surprise that the German-Jewish Nazi Illuminati regime slaughtered millions of Jews, or that the industrialisation of the Nazi slaughterhouse was directed by a Jew called Adolf Eichmann. One of the leading Nazi implementers of the industrialised slaughter of Jews, gypsies and others was SS-Brigadefuhrer Dr Otto Gustav Wachter, the Jewish Nazi Governor of Galicia, Poland. Many other senior Nazis were also of Jewish extraction, as demonstrated in a directory of Jewish implementers of the World Revolution published in the Author's journal Soviet Analyst in December 2005 [Volume 29, #8-10].

The behaviour of the militant Israeli Zionist minority towards their satrap people, the Palestinians, has been indistinguishable from the behaviour of the Nazis in crucial respects - notwithstanding the extreme provocations to which the Israeli people have been subjected. These things should come as no surprise because, clearly, if such people are capable of abominations such this Author has had to allude to (and of many which have been excluded so that we do not waste time in the darkness), why would Jewish Illuminati operatives be distressed at the suffering of their own people?

Why indeed are Illuminati operatives, from whatever background, indifferent to the suffering they routinely inflict upon others and upon their own members who may appear likely to betray the odious blood oaths they have taken? Because they are possessed with the 'seething energies of Lucifer' - that is, they are 'demon-possessed'.

But what gives us certain, lasting comfort and perfect peace, is The Lord's assurance, as he parted from His disciples, that nothing that these despicable, depraved maniacs can inflict upon humanity can ever succeed, other than temporarily. Children and innocents, as well as brave opponents of these evils, will suffer and die either because they are innocents or because of their resolute determination to resist these evils by whatever means may be open to them. But the Gates of Hell shall not prevail.

For 'Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptising them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world'. Matthew, Chapter 28, verses 18-20.

And there is nothing that The Order of the Illuminati can do about it. Given that they are all, in secret, profoundly discontented, longing for a way out, it may help any of them who read this treatise to start by pondering the wisdom expressed in Psalm 14, verse 1 [and Psalm 53, verse 1]: The fool hath said in his heart: There is no God'. ■

Chapter 7: THE SYNAGOGUE OF SATAN: Notes and references

1. 'World Book Encyclopedia', under Falling Bodies, Law of.
2. Technical information concerning the demolition of the Twin Towers and the other two buildings by explosives is derived mainly from the work conducted by George Humphrey of Austin Texas and published in booklet form under the title '9/11: The Great Illusion: End Game of the Illuminati', in which that author managed with great skill and courage to avoid the pitfalls set by certain controlled disinformation websites that he mentions, to concentrate upon the irrefutable technical evidence that the buildings were demolished by explosive devices set below ground.
3. The thinking behind this part of the analysis is derived from a report by Finton Dunne, an analyst based in Ireland, who runs BreakForNews.com, PsyOpsNews.com and Wagnews.Blogspot.com. This Author expresses no opinion (here) as to whether that analyst's conclusions are independently authoritative or whether they may be driven by 'other considerations'. He notes that in the list of websites that BreakForNews.com has published under the rubric 'The CIA Internet Fakes', two of the leading Internet sites, newsMax.com and worldnetdaily.com, were omitted. Finton Dunne prefaced his list of suspect damage limitation and confusion-generating websites controlled by intelligence, with the following note: 'We do not contend that everyone associated with these websites are knowing intelligence operatives' - although this Author has positively, with colleagues, identified and exposed several, confirming Finton Dunne's analysis - adding that: 'Some have been professionally manipulated, others merely misled. In any event these are promoting the PsyOps agendas and disinformation themes of the covert controllers. This is also not meant to be a fully comprehensive listing of all the fake websites' - which may account for the exclusion of the two US websites mentioned. Shortly after its foundation, newsMax.com was employing or contracting with with an alleged 55 people, requiring a huge annual budget. The list of 'CIA Fake Websites' published in August 2005 by BreakForNews.com, which includes aljazeera.net and aljazeera.com, was as follows:

911citizenswatch.org
911forthetruth.com
911truth.org
911truthradio.com
airamericaradio.com
albasrah.net
aljazeera.com
aljazeera.net
almartinraw.com
americanfreepress.net
angleon911.com
antiwar.com
apfn.org
arcticbeacon.com
batr.org
bellaciao.org
bilderberg.org
blackboxvoting.org
bradblog.com
buzzflash.com
cloakanddagger.ca[1]
coasttocoastam.com
commondreams.org
conspiracyarchive.com
conspiracyplanet.com
cooperativeresearch.org
counterpunch.org
cryptome.org
davidicke.com
deepblacklies.co.uk
democracynow.org
dieoff.com
earthfiles.com
ellsberg.net
fromthewilderness.com
globalresearch.ca
halfpasthuman.com
infoclearinghouse.info
infowars.com
inn.globalfreepress.com
internationalanswer.org
jackblood.net
jihadunspun.com
jimmarrs.com
jmccanneyscience.com
johnbuchanan.org
johnkaminski.com
judicialwatch.org
justacitizen.com
justicefor911.org
karlschwarz.com
konformist.com
kurtnimmo.com
larouchepub.com
legitgov.com
letsroll911.org
libertyforum.org
libertythink.com
lovearth.net
madcowprod.com
meria.net
monbiot.com
moveon.org
mysteriesofthemind.com
narconews.com
newswithviews.com
newtopiamagazine.com
nomorefakenews.com
occupationwatch.org
oilempire.us
onlinejournal.com
peakoil.net
plaguepuppy.net
prisonplanet.com
propagandamatrix.com
questionsquestions.net
radioliberty.com
ralphnader.com
rawstory.com
rbnlive.com
recombinomics.com
rense.com
reopen911.org
rigorousintuition.blogspot
riverbend.blogspot
rumormillnews.com
sanderhicks.com
savethemales.ca
septembereleventh.org
skolnicksreport.com[2]
standdown.net
stanley2002.org
team8plus.org
thepowerhour.com
thetruthseeker.co.uk
tomflocco.com
truefacts.co.uk
truthout.org
tvnewslies.org
unansweredquestions.org
uruknet.info
vialls.net[3]
votetoimpeach.org
wanttoknow.info
whatreallyhappened.com
wingtv.net
worldaffairsbrief.com
xymphora.blogspot

Notes: 1: Now cloakanddagger.de. This is a particularly vicious Black website (complete with Black Illuminati background), notorious for its venom against all things British, especially the British Monarchy. As a source of confusion and instrumental disinformation, it has no equal. Its venomous attacks against the Queen reached such a pitch of notoriety that it decamped to a German ISP (hence its new .de suffix). It was probably informed by Canadian authorities that its presence was not welcome, which would have been an understatement. Unfortunately, the late Sherman Skolnik suffered a judgment lapse and became too closely involved with this site, suffering reputational damages as a consequence. 2. Sherman Skolnik, veteran analyst sadly died in May 2006. Although his reports heaped venom on his targets, especially the British, there was a great deal of affection for him, and his presence is greatly missed; 3: The owner of which was murdered in 2005 Australia, it is believed because he revealed the use of scalar technology to induce the tsunami of 26th December 2004 and for weather modification ops).

4. These last comments are from the excellent and honest mind of the independent analyst Eric Hufschmid, of www.iamthewitness.com.
5. See International Currency Review, Volume 28, Number 4, March 2003; International Currency Review, Volume 30, Numbers 2/3, February 2005; Economic Intelligence Review, Volume 10, Numbers 5/6, February-March 2006; and International Currency Review, Volume 31, Numbers 3 and 4, Fourth Quarter 2006.
6. Michael C Ruppert, 'Crossing the Rubicon: The Decline of the American Empire at the end of the Age of Oil', New Society Publishers, Gabriola Island, British Columbia, Canada, ISBN 0-96571-540-8, 2004, pages 574-574.
7. 'Protocols of the Elders of Zion', Translated from the Russian of Nilus by Victor E. Marsden, late Russian Correspondent of The Morning Post', 1934, reprinted by CPA Book Publisher, RO. Box 596, Boring, Oregon 97009-0596, USA, page 172.
8. 'The Controversy of Zion', Douglas Reed, Veritas Publishing company Pry., Ltd., RO, Box 20, Bullsbrook, Western Australia, ISBN 0-945001-38-X, page 213. Isaiah, Chapter 34, verse 8: 'For it is the day of the Lord's vengeance and the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion'.
9. 'The Controversy of Zion', Douglas Reed, op. cit, pages 222-223.
10.Then said he unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? For they say, The Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth'. Ezekiel, Chapter 8, verse 12. See also Isaiah, Chapter 29, verses 15-15: "Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the Lord, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? And who knoweth us? Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? Or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding?'

11. Then said he unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? For they have filled the land with violence... Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them': Ezekiel, Chapter 8, verses 17-18. Scripture clearly and repeatedly predicted what the fate of the Jewish people was liable to be, as a consequence of their deviation from the Lord of Hosts.

12. Ezekiel, Chapter 23, verse 15: see main text for explanation.

13. Ezekiel's metaphors using the two originally virginal sisters Aholah (= Samaria) and Aholibah (= Jerusalem) is intended to explain to us, in simple language, how the children of Israel never wholly cleansed themselves from the abominations that they learned while sojourning for over 400 years in the land of darkness, and how, despite the partial cleansing occasioned as a consequence of their embracing the Word of the Lord and His Holy Spirit, they nevertheless allowed themselves to become doubly polluted by the sorcery that was rife in Babylon - although a remnant saved themselves. Like the entire story of Exodus, this 'real-life' metaphor is spiritual (all Scripture is spiritual) and has pressing relevance for us today, not least because it provides scriptural confirmation and affirmation of the kabbalistic sorcery perpetuated, as of old, in the dark chambers which are replicated today in the form of the Lodge. The passages from Ezekiel using the metaphor of the two wayward sisters are taken from Chapter 23. Note, in verse 4, that the two sisters 'were mine' (the Lord's). We should not be surprised or dismayed at the sexual connotations of this imagery: for sorcery, witchcraft, the Craft (Masonry) and the abominations of the Illuminati are sexual, as the Devil uses sex, especially deviant sex, as his fastest means of corrupting a target.

14. For instance, Isaiah, Chapter 35, verse 10: 'And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy... they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away'.

15. The European Union is quintessentially kabbalistic-Talmudic, since within its universe, there is zero truth. Lawyers are confounded by it, as they wrestle with the meaning or implications of any given Article, subsection, subparagraph, protocol or statute, all of which are (a) transitory (because they may be amended, deleted, merged, adjusted or otherwise intermeddled with at any time, given that the 'rolling' collective treaty is updated and rewritten roughly every four years; and (b) susceptible to arbitrarily confusing rulings by the European Court of Justice, which exists not to dispense justice, but rather to advance the 'cause' and 'interests' of the political collective.

16. In Revelation, Chapter 2, verse 8 (part), John cited Jesus as saying: These things saith the first and the last (Alpha and Omega = Jesus Christ), 'which was dead, and is alive [rose from the dead]'; [verse 9:] 'I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich)' [Masons 'give' to or are taxed by Freemasonry all their lives, so that their families are deprived of some of the Mason's resources; but at the highest levels, the funds paid loyally by the lower orders of 'Useful Idiots', who are despised by their superiors, although the lower orders do not know this, ensure that the fat cats at the top enjoy access to a limitless stream of finance] 'and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews and are not, but are of the Synagogue of Satan'.

17. The second reference to the Synagogue of Satan is found in Christ's instruction to the angel of the church at Philadelphia in Asia Minor - the name of the town where the US Declaration of Independence was signed in that Masonic Lodge that can be visited to this day: indeed, when the Author exclaimed within the earshot of the official guide: 'It's a Masonic Lodge', the guide said: 'Oh, so you're a Mason, too!', which was of course quite untrue. The Declaration of Independence sealed the Masonic coup d'etat which set the United States on the path to perdition as the home of criminal governance that it has become today, by way of great riches (which Satan gives to many of his disciples as they seek in vain to create heaven upon earth (for themselves)). At Chapter 3, verse 7, it is written: 'And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth'; [verse 8:] 'I know thy works; behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it...'; [verse 9:] 'Behold, I will make of them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee'. [And verse 10:] Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth'. In the mysterious passage leading into and including verse 10, we appear to have here a partial unveiling of the mystery that is the United States: for, though founded as a geomasonic experiment, and polluted with Masonry at all levels of its official structures, and though its landscape is defiled with such monstrosities as the Masonic Temple at Alexandria and the vast Masonic edifice in Cedar Rapids, Iowa, the United States is also the home of the largest Christian remnant in the developed world (albeit existing within and alongside myriad false churches). In verse 9, they of the Synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, will be made to 'come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee', a prophesy that began to be fulfilled when Albert Pike consolidated what he purported to be the seat of world Masonry in Charleston in 1870. The prophesy seems to suggest that because those of Philadelphia 'have kept the word of my patience' despite the Masonic coup which Luciferians perpetrated over their heads, the good people of America will be 'kept from trie hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world' to test our faith: and it is manifestly the case that despite the perpetual outpouring of decadent kabbalistic filth and the deliberate proliferation of drugs by the US Illuminati cadres who have hijacked governance, the faith and resolution of many good people in the United States remains unaffected.

18. 'The Protocols of the Meetings of the Learned Elders of Zion' [alternative title], with Preface and Explanatory Notes, Translated from the Russian Text by Victor E. Marsden, formerly Russian Correspondent of 'The Morning Post', 1934: Reprinted by CPA Book Publisher, P.O. Box 596, Boring, OR 97009-0596; available from: Emissary Publications, PMB 1775,9205 Clackamas Road, Clackamas, OR 97015, USA; page 30.

19. The Protocols of the Meetings of the Learned Elders of Zion' [alternative title], op. cit., page 30.

20. Ibid, page 30.

21. Ibid, pages 30-31.

22. Ib/d., page 31.

23. Ibid, page 34.

24. bid., page 27.

25. Ibid., page 33.

26. Ibid., page 32.

27. Ibid., pages 32-33.

28. Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 9, op. cit.

29. Ibid, page 34.
30. Ibid, page 171.
31. The present extended global terrorism phase is consistent with the intent of the Bolsheviks' 'Period of Escalating Violence', as laid down by the Comintern 'wing' of overt Illuminism at its Congress held in Moscow in 1928. For the perpetratrors of terrorist atrocities, the loss of human life that their operations involve (and these people are all, without exception, intelligence operatives), is neither here nor there: it is referred to as 'collateral damage'. A nurse known to the Author's third daughter (who had tended her in the past) had to have both her legs amputated after the atrocity that took place at Russell Square on the Piccadilly Line on 7th July 2005.
32. 'Encyclopaedia Britannica', Third Edition, Volume 16, for the year 1787, Edinburgh, Bell and Macfarquhar, cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 148.
33. 'Encyclopaedia Britannica', Third Edition, Volume 16, for the year 1797, Edinburgh, Bell and Macfarquhar, cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 147.
34. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 152.
35. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy'', op. cit, page 150.
36. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op, cit., page 33.
37. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 153.
38. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy[1], op. cit, page 161.
39. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 161, citing Sedir, 'Histoire des Rose-Croix', page 112.
40. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy'', op. cit., page 408, citing Robert Freke Gould, the History of Freemasonry, Volume II, page 135.
41. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 415.
42. Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. cit, 1871, page 819.
43. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 415.
44. Matthew, Chapter 11, verses 29-30.
45. Benjamin Disraeli, 'Coningsby', London, 1844.
46. Benjamin Disraeli, 'Coningsby', op. cit, London, 1844.
47. Benjamin Disraeli, 'Coningsby', op. cit, London, 1844.
48. Letter found in 'La Silva Curiosa', by Julio-lniguez de Medrano, Paris, Orry, 1608, pages 156-157 [Figs.67A, 67B].
49. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op cit, page 184.
50. See Note 16.
51. Matthew, Chapter 8, verses 21-22: 'And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead'.
52. 'The Concise English Dictionary', Blackie & Son.
53. Bataille, 'Le Diable au XIXe Siecle', Volume I, page 28, cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op. cit, page 25.
54. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy', op cit, pages 118-120, quoting Lavington, The Moravians Compared and Detected', pages xiii, 59,105-109 and 133.
55. Albert Mackey, lexicon of Freemasonry', page 301, cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy'', op. cit, pages 351-352.
56. Joanny Bricaud, 'Les Illumines d'Avignon', page 103, cited by Lady Queenborough, op. cit, pages 355-356.
57. Craig Heimbichner, 'Blood on The Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', Independent History and Research, Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816, USA, 2005, ISBN 0-9703784-3-2.
58. The Equinox', Volume III, Number 1,1919, the official organ of the Atlantean Adepts and of the O.T.O., cited by Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy'', op. cit, pages 571-572.
59. 'Jeremiah', Chapter 51, verse 49.
60. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theosophy', op. cit, pages 573-574.
61. Craig Heimbichner, 'Blood on The Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', Independent History and Research, Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816, USA, 2005, op. cit, pages 87-88.
62. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 88.
63. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 88.
64. Epistle of Paul to The Philippians, Chapter 4, verse 7: 'And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Jesus Christ'. In other words, as soon as we know Him - as opposed to knowing ABOUT him - our hearts and minds are 'kept' in Christ and therefore abhor all the abominations discussed, unfortunately but necessarily, in this book.
65. Epistle of Paul to The Ephesians, Chapter 3, verse 19: 'And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fullness of God'. As the Author was seeking this scripture, it was revealed to him what Paul meant by 'passeth knowledge'. He meant both that we cannot comprehend the breadth and depth and height of the love of Christ for us, because of his joy that we have resisted the wiles and traps of Satan; and also that His love surpasses what Satan has to offer in the form of the abominations perpetrated in the darkness, as described here and by the prophets, including of course Ezekiel, who described the abominations in a 'Masonic Lodge' in the fifth century before Christ.
66. Matthew, Chapter 23, verses 38-39.
67. Lady Queenborough, 'Occult Theocrasy'', op. cit, page 575.
68. J. Gordon Melton, The Encyclopedia of American Religions', Volume 2, McGrath Publishing Company, Wilmington, NC, 1978, p. 256, cited by Dr Cathy O'Brien, in 'Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated', op. cit, p. 219.
69. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit.
70. 'Bush Threatens to veto legislation over torture ban, The Daily Telegraph', 10th October 2005.
71. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 6.
72. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 7.
73. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 7.
74. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 7.
75. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, pages 7-8 citing a past master of a Lodge and an O.T.O. 'oasis'.

76. See references in Chapter 5 to Manly P. Hall's rare Rosicrucian satanic tome.
77. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 10.
78. Stephen Knight, The Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons', 1984, US Edition: Dorset Press, ISBN 0-88029-113-3 [formerly ISBN 0-8128-2994-8].
79. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, pages 11-12.
80. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, citing Judith Reisman, 'Kinsey: Crimes & Consequences'.
81. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, page 103.
82. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, pages 103-104
83. Craig Heimbichner, op. cit, pages 89-90
84. 'Illuminati defector details pervasive conspiracy', Henry Mackow Ph.D, www.savethemales.ca, 14th Oct 2002. 85. 'Illuminati defector details pervasive conspiracy', Henry Mackow Ph.D, www.savethemales.ca, 14th Oct 2002.
86. From 'Festival Prayers', Heber Publishing Company, New York, 1919..
87. 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', John Robison, 1798, Americanist Classics, Western Islands, Belmont, MA 02178,1967.
88. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy[1], op. cit, page 3.
89. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 4.
90. This Hispanic announcer was functioning when the Author was stranded at Union Station for seven hours, waiting for a train from New York to take him to Richmond, VA,. A total of THIRTEEN trains had been cancelled or postponed on the Saturday in September 2005 concerned, as a deliberate measure imposed on Amtrak, to impede the large numbers of war protesters who were scheduled to have descended on Washington to join in an anti-Iraq War rally. Amtrak is of course a key infrastructure organisation which will be used when the Illuminati's diabolical plans to fill the vast FEMA Gulag with recalcitrant 'non-cooperators' - those who, in the face of the military takeover that will abolish the Constitution and ditch 'democracy[1] which the elite considers just a temporary means of keeping the masses under control and confused, have been given an opportunity to 'go along' with the Illuminati's cause, and have rejected it, notwithstanding threats of imprisonment in a concentration camp, or selection for fast-track dispatch to the gas chambers including those located at an Indianapolis Amtrak centre.
91. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 4.
92. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 4.
93. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 4, paraphrase.
94. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 5.
95. Dennis Laurence Cuddy, Ph. D., 'Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order',1994,1995 and 1999, Hearthstone Publishing, Ltd., 500 Beacon Drive, Oklahoma City, OK 73127, USA, ISBN 1-57558-031-4.
96. Dennis Laurence Cuddy, Ph. D., 'Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order', op. cit, pages 27-28.
97. Dennis Laurence Cuddy, Ph. D., 'Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order', op. cit, page 28.
98. Dennis Laurence Cuddy, Ph. D., 'Secret Records Revealed: The Men, the Money, and the Methods Behind the New World Order', op. cit, page 45..
99. Interview with the Illuminati 'defector', 'Svali', posted by Henry Mackow Ph. D. on 14th October 2002, op. cit.
100. Introduction to The Americanist Classics edition of 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op. cit, page 7.
101. John Robison, Proofs of a Conspiracy, Introduction by the author himself, op.cit, page 9.
102. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', op.cit, pages 12-13.
103. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 15.
104. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 17.
105. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, pages 21-23.
106. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 24.
107. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 25.
108. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 35.
109. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 37.
110. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, pages 37-38.
111. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 38.
112. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 59.
113. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 61.
114. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 75.
115. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 75.
116. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 80.
117. First Epistle of Paul to Timothy, Chapter 6, verses 9-10: 'But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil; which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows'.
118. Luke, Chapter 12, verse 10: 'And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven'.
119. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit., page 81.
120. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 115.
121. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 85
122. John Robison, 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Schisms in Freemasonry, op.cit, page 84.
123. An excellent summary of the Illuminati art of provocation by the US intelligence analyst Michael Ruppert, in 'Crossing the Rubicon: The Decline of the American Empire at the End of the Age of Oil', New Society Publishers, Gabriola Island, BC, Canada, ISBN 0-86571-540-8, 2004, page 575, citing The Grand Chessboard', by Zbigniew Brzezinski, Basic Books, Perseus Books Group, 1997, ISBN 0-465-02726-1. Brzezinski's book is a prime example of evil proposals put forward in the typically reasonable and terribly 'sensible' language typical of high Illuminati operatives, It contains the blueprint for the tasks that the Illuminati require to be implemented by the 'enforcement arm'.

JEWISH CONCERN OVER THE PERVERSE AND REPROBATE REVOLUTIONARY BEHAVIOUR OF CERTAIN JEWS

'The terrible fact remains that their actions contributed, each in his own degree, to the Nazis' anti-Jewish and anti-human war machine'.
JERUSALEM POST on the Jews who worked for the Nazis

'What has proved most disturbing is the picture we have of the extent of the betrayal - truly overwhelming in sheer bulk. The fact that many Jewish American radicals participated in espionage for Russia sticks in people's throats.... Spies, spies everywhere. [Recent books about the subject] are invaluable for what they add to our knowledge of the (Cold War] period and may yet spur a bout of soul-searching among the remnants of the progressive community in America, so many of whom were - and are - Jewish. [Such betrayers] allowed the Soviet Union to develop atomic weapons years before it may have been otherwise possible'.
JEWISH EXPONENT, 1999.

'... With the Russian economy in a shambles [in 1999]... even Jews are grumbling that too many Jews stand close to the reins of power and too many Jewish names fill the headlines... All the Jews, I don't understand their motivation, to show they are rich... [to say] "I am an owner, and you are a slave", complained Alexsandr Liberman, the Jewish Director of the Union Council's Russian-American Bureau of Human Rights, "If I were an ordinary Russian and I saw and heard only Jews in the Government... [I would think] 'we are all without money because the Jews have all the Russian money".... People have quite bitter memories of Jews in the Communist Revolution", noted Michael Chlenov, the President of the Jewish Va'ad of Russia'. FORWARD Newspaper, New York, 1997.

A Jewish Russian immigrant living in New York of considerable renown, the novelist Edward Topol, whose work was once banned in Russia, stirred controversy and deep concern in the world Jewish community because of a published letter he had written to a Russian newspaper in which he had referred to prominent Jewish bankers as 'puppeteers' who manipulated Russian politics and the Russian economy. The collective puppeteer, he said, 'has a very long Jewish name - Berezovsko-Goussinsko-Smolensko-Khordrokovsko..., etc.... How come all or most of the money in this country ended up in Jewish hands?' he asked. Mr Topol's main premise... "'is that for the first time in a millennium, Jews have gained real political power and financial control over Russia and can pretty much decide whether to "cast the country down into chaos of wars and poverty, or raise it from the mud"'. FORWARD Newspaper, New York, 1999. [This conveniently omitted to recall that Jewish Communists have been running Russia unhindered and with total control since 1917].

'The capitalist 'restoration' in Russia is a "Jewish Revolution" The practices of Jewish 'oligarchs' had resulted in the "humiliation of the Russian people and [have] provoked hostility among the Russian people to the Jews.... parallel with accusatory statements against Russian patriots, much more aggressive statements by Jews regarding non-Jews are printed in Jewish newspapers published in the Russian Federation.... They try to mask their racism by slapping the charge of anti-semitism (i.e., racial hatred) on all those who do not agree with their immorality, their activities, their wars'. OPEN LETTER TO THE CHIEF PROSECUTOR OF THE RUSSIAN FEDERATION BY PROMINENT FIGURES AND JOURNALISTS, 26TH JANUARY 2005.

'Our beliefs must be adjusted to the truth and not vice versa. Apparently, the truth is that a relatively small clique of Jewish banking families and their non-Jewish allies in the leading families of Europe and America have usurped control of money creation, and with it the destiny of the world.

This overclass owns or controls most of the world's largest corporations, media organisations, intelligence agencies, secret societies, universities, politicians, foundations, think tanks and NGOs. It also appears to dominate organised crime. September 11, the War on Terror and Iraq are part of an inexorable process by which this overclass increases its wealth and control. The end goal is a world police state in which the masses will be deprived of their wealth, freedom and possibly their lives.

US Neo-Cons are really Neo Communists. They jeopardise the security of their fellow Jews (as well as all Americans) by their evil machinations. Jews must follow my example and repudiate them.

The overclass wants us to see it as a 'Jewish problem'. This way it can divert blame onto innocent Jews and dismiss opposition as 'hatred' and 'racism'. The problem is mainly one of money creation (credit) that has led to an untenable concentration of wealth and power in a few hands. Jews are not unique. Almost everyone who is 'successful' in society, Jewish or not, is forced, wittingly or unwittingly to align themselves with the overclass. Our religious, cultural and political institutions have been subverted. This explains the false quality of social life in the West'. DR HENRY MACKOW, prominent Jewish researcher and writer, 2005.

APPENDIX 1 TO CHAPTER 7:

A DIRECTORY OF ALLEGED ILLUMINATI PROGRAMMERS

The following detailed but incomplete information was posted on the Internet and represents an Appendix from 'The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind-Controlled Slave', by Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler. The locations may in some cases be out of date. The labels attached to programmers are as alleged and displayed on the web and in the published document cited. See the revelations by 'Svali' in the text

> '... the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone'. Revelation, Chapter 21, verse 8.

- AC/DC: satanic Rock Band: Morden, United Kingdom.
- Ade, Henry: Alleged CIA and drug dealer and Monarch slave abuser: Indiana, USA
- Aga Khan IV, H.H. Prince Karim: Alleged Satanist and leader of Ismaili Muslims: France.
- Alabama Country Music Group: Alleged Satanists +Monarch slave handlers: Alabama, USA.
- Baily, John: Alleged slave abuser: California, USA.
- Barnes, Don: Alleged slave abuser, sometime in County Sheriff Office: Maryland, USA.
- Benson, Ezra Taft: Alleged Satanist, 'Church of Jesus Cnrist': Utah, USA.
- Bowers, Wilbur D:, Ipsimus in Illuminatus, Alleged Monarch programmer and CIA drug-dealer. Oregon, USA. Telephone number contains EV for 'Evergreen': CIA enterprise.
- Brown, Edmund G. (Jerry). Jr: Alleged llluminati Satanist, CA politician and slave abuser: Los Angeles, Califirnia, USA.
- Brown, Charlie: Air Force Intel., alleged murderer + Monarch slave abuser: Tennessee, USA.
- Bundy, McGeorge: Illuminatus: New York, USA.
- Byrd, Robert C: Alleged Satanist, mind-control programmer; former Senator, West Virginia, USA: Exposed in 'Trance Formation of America', by Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien.
- Clinton, Hillary, Senator Alleged llluminati witch and mind-control slave handler.
- Cochran, Hank: Alleged CIA drug kingpin: Tennessee, USA.
- Cox, Wayne: Alleged satanic High Priest, Monarch handler, serial killer: Louisiana, USA.
- Dante, Michael (Michael Vitti): Alleged Monarch slave abuser + porn maker: CA, USA.
- Day, Brad: Alleged slave abuser, coke pusher: New Mexico, USA.
- Drake, Jim (and son): Alleged slave abusers and porn/drug operatives: Florida, USA.
- Fonda, Peter Montana, USA.
- Fonda, Jane: c/o Fonda Films: California, USA.
- Gavoruhk, John: Police chief allegedly working or worked for the llluminati. Allegedly protects Monarch programmers/handlers: Florida, USA.
- Grace, J. Peter: Business leader and alleged llluminati operative: Washington DC, USA.
- Grateful Dead: satanic cult rock band and alleged Illuminati cocaine distributors: NJ, USA.
- Greene, Jack: CIA and alleged white slavery and Monarch slave abuser and country entertainer: Tennessee, USA.
- Haggard, Merle: Alleged slave abuser and country singer: California, USA.
- Hestbeck, Vaughn: Alleged Monarch abuser and Danish cocaine distributor: Florida, USA.
- Hope, Bob, the late: Slave owner and slave handler with intelligence agencies.
- Houston, Alex: Alleged Satanist and CIA Monarch programmer: Tennessee, USA.
- Hummell, Ed: Alleged Monarch programmer: Oregon, USA.
- Humperdink, Englebert: California, USA.
- King Juan Carlos I: King of Spain; alleged Uluminati: Palacio de la Zarzuela, Madrid.
- KISS: satanic rock band: California, USA.
- Kissinger, Dr Henry: Alleged Illuminati and DVD kingpin, Washington DC, USA. On a TV programme, Kissinger allegedly mocked the victims of 9/11 in a spooky, squeaky voice.

- Kreskin: Alleged occultist: New Jersey, USA.
- Lang, Velton: Alleged white slavery and drug runner: Tennessee, USA.
- Lewis, Jerry Lee: Musician and alleged Monarch slave programmer: Tennessee, USA.
- MacLaine, Shirley: Actress/author/New Age occultist: California, USA.
- Madonna: Alleged Satanist and Monarch slave, Kabbalah promoter: USA and UK.
- Manson, Charles: Satanist, alleged Monarch slave + slave handler: Corcoran Prison, CA USA.
- Martin, Diane: Alleged CIA drug dealer and Monarch slave abuser: USA.
- McKee, Lloyd: Alleged drug dealer, Monarch slave abuser: New Mexico, USA.
- McQuinn, Mike: Alleged slave handler, money launderer: Miami, Florida, USA.
- Meadows, Hal: Alleged Director of CIA near-death mind-control programming center: MO.
- Merritt, Jeff: Alleged CIA drug runner and slave abuser: US Virgin Islands.
- Mitterrand, Francois, the late: Illuminati, close friend of the Rothschilds and President of France, Palais de l'Elysee, 55-57 Rue du Faubourg Saint-Honore, 75008 Paris, France
- Nelson, Willie: Singer and alleged monarch slave handler: Texas, USA.
- Nunn, Sam, Senator: Alleged IlIuminati: Washington DC, USA.
- O'Brien, Earl: Alleged CIA Monarch abuser: Michigan, USA.
- Overstreet, Tommy: Alleged CIA operative and white slavery expert: Tennessee, USA.
- Parton, Dolly: Alleged Satanist:Tennessee, USA.
- Pope John Paul II (a.k.a. Karol Wojtyla), the late: DIuminati and Freemason, Vatican City.
- Pride, Charley: Country singer and alleged slave abuser/white slavery: Texas, USA.
- Prophet, Ronnie: Alleged Satanist and Monarch slave runner: Tennessee, USA.
- Queen Beatrix (Wilhelmina Armgard): Alleged DIuminati; Queen of the Netherlands, Binnen Huf 19, The Hague 2513 AA, The Netherlands.
- Reynolds, Dr. Herbert H: Alleged DIuminati; Baylor University CEO: Waco, Texas, USA.
- Riley, Ken: Alleged CIA, Neo-Nazi, Loretta Lynn's handler/road manager: Tennessee, USA.
- Rockefeller, Winthrop: Alleged Illuminati kingpin, porn dealer and father of Bill Clinton.
- Rorick, David (a.k.a. Dave Roe): Alleged Satanist, white slavery: Tennessee, USA.
- Rose, Ivan: Alleged CIA, White slavery, Monarch abuser: Pennsylvania, USA.
- Ryan, Dr. Michael N.: Allegedly one of the US Illuminati's cover-up doctors who patches up controlled abused slaves: Tennessee, USA.
- Smith, Dan: Car and alleged drug dealer and slave abuser: West Virginia, USA.
- Stevens, Jim: Alleged Monarch slave abuser and drug runner: Florida, USA.
- Tanis, Bob: Alleged CIA and Air Force Intelligence Monarch abuser, Mafia criminalist and pornographer: Michigan, USA.
- Train, Russell: Alleged DIuminati, Club of Rome: Washington DC, USA.
- Trump, Donald: Alleged DIuminati: New York, USA.
- Vanderpool, Darcy: Alleged Monarch programmer: Las Vegas, USA
- Walker, Jimmy; Alleged Monarch save abuser/pornographer: Georgia, USA.
- Warlock, Billy: Actor: Los Angeles: California, USA.
- Westberry, Kent Songwriter, Satanist and aDeged white slavery: Tennessee, USA.

• • •

A VERY SMALL SELECTION OF ALLEGED KNOWN 'OPEN' ILLUMINATI ENTITIES:

- Air America: CIA front airline.
- Berea, O.H. & Jackson, MS: Oklahoma, USA
- CargilL Inc.: Large grain cartel allegedly run by the DIuminati, Minnesota, USA.
- Dungeon Master, Desmodus Inc.: Hard gay porn, s. & m. publisher, San Francisco, USA.
- Eli Lilly & Co.: Alleged DIuminati drug firm: Lilly Corporate Center, Indianapolis, IN, USA.
- Evergreen: Worldwide CIA containerisation/ transportation front.
- Machinery International, Inc.: CIA front: Richardson, Texas, USA.
- Rothschild Paediatric Group: Two locations in Louisiana, USA.
- Southern Air Transport: CIA front: Florida, USA.
- Summit Aviation: CIA front: Summit Airport, Middletown, Delaware, USA.

APPENDIX 2 TO CHAPTER 7:
A DIRECTORY OF ILLUMINATI TRAPS FOR THE UNWARY

The following alphabetical list identifies some of the innumerable traps that lie in wait for the unwary. All are diversionary and deceptive, representing Works of Darkness. The occult traps listed here are generally supplementary to issues discussed in the text to illustrate the obviously broader scope of the conspiracy.

Addictions of all kinds
Aetherius Society
Age of Aquarius
Aikido
Akashic records
Alchemy
Aliens
Allah (a pre-Islamic name corresponding to the Babylonian Bel, also a demon)
All-seeing eye
Almanacs
Altered consciousness
AMORC
Amulets
Ananda Marga
Animism
Anthroposophy
Aquarian gospel
Ascended Masters
Astral projection
Astral travel
Astrology
Atlantis
Augury
Aum
Auras
Automatic drawing
Automatic writing
Autosuggestion
Ba'hai (Sufism)
Babylon
Banshee
Baphomet
Bel, Baal (= Saturn)
Biofeedback
Birth Signs
Bohemian Grove
Brahma Kumaris
Brownie
Buddhas
Cabbala, see Kabbala
Candle staring
Card reading
Cartomancy
Centres Network
Ch'uan-fa
Chakras (prayer wheels twirled for divination)
Channelling
Charismania
Charms and charming
Children of God
Chrystostom Society, The
Church of Scientology, see Scientology
Church pagan connections
Clairaudience
Clairvoyance
Common Purpose
Conjuring of spirits
Corporate logos (energy sector, banking)
Counterfeit tongues
Crop circles
Curses (by you or on you)
Death-oriented games etc (all)
Demonic possession
Demonised souvenirs
Demonology
Deprogramming
Devil dancing
Dianetics (Scientology)
Divination
Divine Light Mission, Elan Vital
Dowsing
Dream interpretation
Drug money laundering
Drug trafficking
Drugs
Druidism
Dryad
Dungeons and Dragons
Eckankar, see Insight and MSIA
Egypt (Biblically, in the sense of The Darkness)
Elan Vital, see Divine Light Mission
Electric shock treatment
Elemental
Elf
Elysium Institute
ESP
Euthanasia
Evil eye
Exorcism
Fairies and pixies
False churches
False messiahs
False religions
Familiar spirits ('familiars')
Fantasy role-playing games*
Faun
Fay (fairy)
Feminism (= advanced humanism)
Feng-shui
Ferris Wheels (installed in key Illuminati cities)
Fetishes
Findhorn Community
Firewalking
Flame Foundation
Fortune telling
Freemasonry
Freud
Gaia
Genie, see Jinn, Jinnee
Gestures, magick, obscene and Masonic
Ghosts (demons)
Gipsy curses
Glass moving
Gnome
Goat
Goat of Mendes
Goblin
Goddess worship
Graphology
Graven images
Hallowe'en
Hand reading (palmistry)
Handwriting analysis (other by law enforcement)
Hapkido
Harpy
Harry Potter (brainwashing operation of British Black intelligence)

Hatha Yoga
Hatif
Hexagrams
Hobgoblin
Hollywood
Holy objects [sic]
Horoscopes
Human Potential Movement, see Transpersonal Psychology
Human potential therapies
Humanism
Humanistic gerontology
Humnanist symbols
Hypnosis
I Ching
Idols of all kinds, including Buddhas
and religious idols (statues) of saints
Ifrit
Illuminati, all manifestations of The Order
Images used in witchcraft (frogs, cats,
owls, bats and night creatures)
Incantations
Incubus
Indian elephants
Initiation ceremonies
Insight, see MSIA and Eckankar
International Society for Krishna Consciousness (ISKCON)
Intuitive arts counselling
Jewellery
Judo
Ju-jitsu
Kabbala, see Cabbala
Karate
Karma
Jesuits (Society of Jesus)
Kissing of idols and statues
Knights Templar
Kobold
Krishna, see International Society for Krishna
Consciousness (ISKCON)
Kundalini (serpent power: sex force)
Kundalini Toga and meditation
Kung-fu
Kything and Tessering
Labrys amulets
Landmark Education
Leprechauns
Levitation
Ley lines
Lucifer
Lucky charms
Magic, 'White'
Magic, Black
Mandala
Martial arts
Mascots
Masonic emblems and symbolism
Mendes, Goat of
Mental Mapping
Mesmerism
Michael Aquino
Mind control
Mirror mantic
MK-ULTRA and similar satanic US intelligence
mind-mapping and personality modification ops.
Monarch slaves
Mormonism
Moving statues
MSIA, see Insight and Eckankar
Mushindo karate
Naiad
Nanbudo
Nat
Necromancy
Nenufaremi
Neo-Paganism, see Witchcraft, Shamanism, Satanism
New Age Movement see also Human Potential
Movement, Neo-Paganism, Witchcraft,
Shamanism, Satanism
New Ageism
New Dawn
Nichiren Shoshu Buddhism, Soka Gakkai
Nivashi
Numerology
Oaths of all kinds
Obelisks
Occultism
Ogres
Old Moore, Old Moore's Almanac
Omens
Opus Dei (a.k.a. Opus Luciferis)
Oread
Organisational logos (geomasonic, Illuminati)
Oriental Ornaments
Orphic egg
Osho Movement, The, see Rajneeshism
Osiris (the male principle), [Isis (the female principle),
Horus (the son, or product)]
Ouija Boards
Pagan celebrations
Paganism
Palmistry (hand reading)
Pan
Parapsychology
Pendulum swinging
Pentagram enclosed within a circle
Pentagrams
Phrenology
Pisky
Pixie, pixy
Point within a circle
Pop music, all categories
Programming
Psychic powers
Psychoanalysis
Psycho-cybernetics
Psychokinesis (PK)
Psychotherapy
Pyramids
Queen of Heaven
Raelians
Raja Yoga, see Brahma Kumaris
Rajneeshism, Osho Movement, The
Rastafarianism
Reflexology
Reincarnation
Religious idols
Rock music, all categories
Rod divination
Rosicrucianism (AMORC)
Rudolf Steiner, see Anthroposophy
Runes
Sahaja Yoga
Salamander
Sanat Kumara (Satan)
Satan
Satanic mass
Satanic videos
Satanism, see Neo-Paganism, Witchcraft and Shamanism
Satyr
Scientology, Church of (Dianetics)
Scrying
Seances
Seiktha
Sensitivity awareness
Sensitivity training
Serpent
Set
Set (Satan)
Shamanism
Shamballla
Shiva (Satan)
Snoods (Subud)
Sokka Gakkai, see Nichiren Shoshu Buddhism
Soothsaying
Sorcery
Soul travel

Sperlls
Spirit combat
Spirit guides (demons)
Spiritism
Spiritual revolution
Spiunkie
Spook, spectre
Spoon bending
Sprite
Sri Chinmoy
St George's Chapel, Windsor
Standing stones
Stargazing
Stonehenge, Avebury, Rollright Stones and other ancient stone circles and sites
Subud, a.k.a. Susila Budhi Dharma
Succubus
Sufism (Ba'hai)
Summer solstice
Summit Lighthouse
Superstitions
Swastikas
Sylphs
T'ai Chi Ch'uan
Table tipping
Taboos
Talismans
Taoism
Tarot and playing cards
Tattooing, defacing of the human body
Teacup reading
Telekinesis
Telepathy
Temple ov Psychick Youth (TOPY)
Tengus
Teraphims
Theosophical Society
Third Eye
Thule Society
Thunderbolt
Tibetan
Toronto Blessing
Transcendental meditation
Transpersonal Psychology, Human Potential Movement,
Triangles
Tribal dancing
Triton
Trolls
UFOs (Unidentified Flying Objects)
Undine
Unification Church (Moonies)
United Nations Meditation Room
Upside down cross
Voices in the mind
Voodoo
Washington Monument
Water divining
Water-sprite
Weeping statues
Wicca
Wild-women (nature spirits of German folklore)
Witch markings
Witchcraft, see Shamanism, Satanism and Neo-Paganism
World Government
World Parliament of Religions
WuShu
Yazatas
Ying/Yang
Yoga
Zodiac signs

*ROLE-PLAYING ABERRATION

On 7th December 2006, The Daily Telegraph' carried a front page article entitled: 'PRIMARY PUPILS ARE URGED TO ACT DRUNK AND 'TAKE ECSTASY'. It stated that 'Pupils as young as seven are being encouraged to act out being drunk at a wedding while 10-year-olds pretend to take ecstasy as part of a new drug awareness campaign'. The script includes the following: 'I think Gary's dead. He's not moved for a week and he's starting to smell'. The text uses current druggie jargon such as "fix", "cutting", and "hyping up". FACT: G-2, a UK 'Black' Intelligence unit, controls two drug cartels and supervises the distribution of drugs in Britain. Illuminati double-mindedness. ■

DEGREES AND MEMBERS OF THE PRIEURE DE SION

The Devil has no new tunes - which means that the myriad Orders of the Illuminati have no new ideas, either. These Orders are all organised along the same lines, exploiting the standard, always unchanged, lie that discernment knowledge and understanding can only be obtained by means of initiation into successive 'Degrees'. Initiation is a device of the Devil, as specifically confirmed by his servant Aleister Crowley: "This serpent, SATAN, is not the enemy of Man, but He made Gods of our race, knowing Good and Evil; he bade 'Know Thyself, and taught Initiation'. [Source: Aleister Crowley with Mary Desti and Leila Waddell, Magick. Liber ABA Book 4, Parts l-IV, York Beach, Samuel Weiser, 1997].

The Prieure de Sion is no different. It has two effective groups - The Legion, charged with managing 'the apostolate'; and The Phalange, the so-called 'guardians' of the (fabricated) tradition. A hierarchy of nine Prieure de Sion Degrees ('grades') is known to exist:

• In the 729 Provinces:	1. Novices:	6,561 members
	2. Croices:	2,187 members
• In the 27 commanderies:	3. Preux:	729 members
	4. Ecuyers:	243 members
	5. Chevaliers:	81 members
	6. Commandeurs:	27 members
• In the Arch 'Kyria':	7. Connetables:	9 members
	8. Senechaux:	3 members
	9. Nautonnier*:	1 member

* The supreme office of Nautonnier, or Navigator, is symbolised internally by the boat of Isis.

- It will be noticed that the number of members of each grade below the ninth is a multiple of three.

There are three times as many Connetables as there are Senechaux, three times as many Ecuyers as there

APPENDIX 3 TO CHAPTER 7:

THE JASON SOCIETY OF THE ORDER OF THE QUEST

The JASON Society is among the least known and best disguised components of the US 'caste' of Illuminati. Weishaupt and his associates laid down that the Illuminati are never to be referred to by that name, so they hide inside innumerable other 'Orders'.

The JASON Society, consisting of 32 members (just as there are 32 European Union specified 'crimes' for which Europol was created), also known as the JASON scholars, represent a branch of The Order of the Quest, a senior Order of the Illuminati. The name JASON, which reflects the Georgian story of Jason and the Golden Fleece, is always spelt in capital letters. However the members shroud their Order in secrecy. The group will not reveal its membership list and its members refrain from mentioning JASON membership on career resumes. It is administered by the intelligence organisation known as the Mitre Corporation (MIT - Massachusetts Institute of Technology). The JASON group is a mainly scientific organisation formed and hired by the JASON Society to 'invent evil things' (Romans Chapter 1, verse 30), having for instance brought together almost every leading physicist to construct the atomic bomb during the Second World War. The group consists mainly of theoretical physicists and is considered to be the most elite gathering of scientific minds in the United States. The JASON group has always been available to provide the US Government with scientific assistance that it cannot find anywhere else, and its members are probably the only group of scientists some of whose members know the true state of the highest technology, which is probably 20 years ahead of information available even in the rarefied components of the public domain. A secret control group operates within the JASON Society called Majestic 12 which in turn is responsible for 'US Majestic Intelligence and Security'. Each department and its head are designated MJ-1, MJ-2 etc. MJ-3 is responsible for coordinating all scientific investigations. MJ-5 conducts highly sensitive operations about which no open information is available. MJ-6 conducts applied research in new technology fields, trying out new gadgets. No open information is available on the other departments. Majestic 12 is also known, for security reasons, as Majority 12.

- Along with the Open Friendly Secret Society (the Illuminati's name for the Vatican, which is the only nation state that does not belong to the United Nations) and the Russell Trust, the allegedly drug-running organisation behind Skull and Bones, the JASON Society and Group are arguably the best disguised components of the Illuminati. Equally well 'hidden' are the Knights of Malta, consisting of parallel European and US organisations with threads weaving through business, banking politics, intelligence communities, organised religion, education, the legal profession, the military sector, foundations, think-tanks, the United States Information Agency, the United Nations and numerous other globalist-oriented organisations. The Knights of Malta's world head is elected for life with the Pope's approval. Both the European and US manifestations of this Order are sworn to work towards the establishment of a New World Order with the Pope as its head. The Vatican is today heavily infiltrated and compromised by Illuminati Orders. Knights of Malta have diplomatic immunity (which is claimed by the parallel US Order as well). This means that Knights can slip across national borders without paying duty or customs charges and can be (and often are) used to carry diplomatic documents and special secret messages to Heads of State. On 27th November 1983, the late Pope retracted all outstanding papal bulls against Freemasonry, allowing Catholics, after several hundred years, again to belong to secret societies without fear of excommunication.

- A veteran US intelligence officer named Bob Curran was reported to be so 'big' in this respect that he has been known to present himself at Buckingham Palace and to ask to see The Queen - without an appointment (inside information to the Author). This is the kind of access that a Knight of Malta may enjoy. The Knights of Malta are organised along Jesuitical 'initiation' lines, contrary to the teaching of Christ that no secrecy or special procedures are ever required in order for Him to 'open the door' to us. ■

*It was significant that George Bush Sr's primary 'gopher', James Baker, appeared in Tbilisi two months after MVD General Eduard Shevardnadze, the former Soviet gauleiter of Georgia known locally as 'Stalin II', was 'parachuted' in from Moscow to take over the Georgian Presidency after the legitimately elected President Zviad Gamsakhurdia had been forced to flee for his life following three attempted putsches by Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) forces secretly assisted or 'facilitated' by the Americans. Mr Baker delivered a speech from the balcony of the so-called Presidential Palace, but was forced by gunfire in adjacent streets to go inside and stop speaking for approximately 20 minutes, while Shevardnadze's brutal forces suppressed some demonstrations. When Baker resumed his speech, it was all about the Georgian legend of Jason and the Golden Fleece. No doubt Masonic members of his audience understood what the former US Secretary of State was saying. US operatives were closely involved in operations to remove Shevardnadze from his pedestal some 12 years later.

CHAPTER EIGHT

THE THOUSAND-YEAR REICH

OBITUARY OF GENERAL REINHARD GEHLEN

On 11th June 1979, The Daily Telegraph reported that 'General Reinhard Gehlen, West Germany's elusive but legendary spymaster from 1946 to 1968, has died aged 77 at his Bavarian mountain resort home. He established what was to become known as the "Organization Gehlen" [sic] and later the BND (Bundesnachrichtendienst), or Federal News Service, West Germany's intelligence agency [which is] directly responsible to the Chancellor. He is credited by many as establishing and maintaining the best anti-Russian spy network during the 1939-45 war, following his appointment in 1942 as head of the Foreign Armies East Department'.

The article, which was accompanied by a photograph of an extremely unpleasant-looking man in a homburg hat and a description of Gehlen as "a terrifying figure with boundless energy and professional ambition", contained the officially sanctioned intelligence which had been cleared for the public domain at the time of publication.

According to this source, Gehlen's task was to evaluate intelligence reports and to assess the intentions of Soviet forces. But in April 1945, Hitler sacked him, saying that his analysis of the Eastern Front situation was "completely idiotic". Presumably this version of events was obtained from the highly unreliable lips of Gehlen himself, after he had approached the advancing US forces. 'They flew him to Washington where he underwent an extensive period of "debriefing". His theories and prognostications on the Russians persuaded the Americans that, despite his days as a "bad guy" serving Hitler, he should now be regarded as a "good guy" and help fight the Cold War against the new enemy, Russia. With a budget of around $5 million a year provided by the Americans, he set up a spy network comprised of many former Nazis'.

In an indication that the material for this article was written by British intelligence, it continued with typically ersatz 'fill-in colour', along these lines: 'He liked organising from the background, rarely making appearances in public without his identity being obscured by dark glasses or some other guise. Even his children attended school under assumed names'. Following these statements, the newspaper article elaborated: 'In 1968, he was forced to retire, mainly because two of his aides were discovered to be Soviet agents'. This particular fact appears to have been expunged from subsequent assessments of Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's career.

The British newspaper article concluded: 'But three years later he stepped into the limelight with the publication of his memoirs, "Der Dienst" (The Service). In them he claimed that he knew about the Berlin Wall before it went up; the Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia before it occurred; and to have correctly predicted the outbreak of the 1967 Arab-Israeli War'[1]. Of course nobody could verify these claims which, in any case, dealt with past events, so that intelligence connected with them could be safely 'burned'. The US intelligence establishment paid far too much intention to this veteran Nazi strategist and operative, who leveraged his privileged 'turncoat' position to facilitate the perpetuation and implementation of the German Illuminazis' long-range strategy. In London, Guy Liddell of MI5 warned, to no effect, that allowing Gehlen's intelligence organisation to exist itself risked the likelihood that Gehlen was in fact engaged in reestablishing the nucleus of a revived Abwehr, This is exactly what happened: Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, the 'Black' intelligence organisation based in Dachau, referred to in greater detail shortly is part of, or the central locus of, the continuing Gehlen organisation, which is the Nazi Abwehr Continuum. The CIA office in Frankfurt (COREA) is believed to be closely allied with German intelligence generally - in contrast to the CIA elements based in Brussels, which, according to the Author's information, are not dominated by Germans or their allies and penetration agents, but see much more clearly the extreme dangers faced by both Britain and the United States as a consequence of the cumulative 'successes' of the long-range strategies pursued by Nazi 'Black' intelligence.

GEHLEN TOLD THE AMERICANS WHAT THEY WANTED TO HEAR

Gehlen fed the gullible Americans with as much disinformation as he could concoct with impunity. For instance, in his self-serving memoirs, he claimed that Hitler's Deputy, Martin Bormann, was really a Soviet agent, who died in the USSR in 1979, even though the 'facts' on which he based these assertions were thin and were dismissed by the large continuing community of 'Bormann hunters' around the world. As a colleague of Dr Josef Goebbels, who is posthumously notorious for his well-known assertion that

Figure 81:The large Dining Room in Hitler's Wolf's Lair, the Fuhrer's headquarters in Berchtesgarten, Bavaria. A Masonic black pentangie, identical to the Red Star, and to the stars on the EU and US flags, is displayed prominently above Hitler's chair at the far end of the room. It is of course the same geomasonic-esoteric star as can be seen used in innumerable contexts in the United States, and on national flags such as those of Iraq, Libya and other countries the elites of which are fully paid-up Illuminati associates and co-conspirators.

if the public is lied to for long enough, it will come to believe any lie that is fed to it, Gehlen was no slouch when it came to making the intelligence fit inadequate facts. Accordingly, to satisfy his new employers, Gehlen realised that he needed to feed them with information that fitted Washington's preconceived 'take' on international affairs.

In the judgment of Victor Marchetti, a former chief CIA analyst on Soviet military capabilities and the author of 'The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', 'The Agency loved Gehlen because he fed us what we wanted to hear. We used his stuff constantly and we fed it to everybody else: the Pentagon, the White House, the newspapers. They loved it'. And Marchetti elaborated: 'Gehlen had to make his money by creating a threat that we were afraid of, so we would give him more money to tell us about it. In my opinion, the Gehlen Organisation provided nothing worthwhile for understanding or estimating Soviet military or political capabilities in Eastern Europe or anywhere else'[2]. The final result of these cloak-and-dagger exercises was a reputed Cold War that lasted for almost half a century, and cost American taxpayers alone over $8 trillion. The author Craig Roberts has elaborated: 'Peacetime intelligence-gathering had become big business -profitable not only to the growing intelligence organizations, but to the defense industry and the investors who financed both it and the government'[3].

Actually, the intelligence organisations learned both from their connections with the Sicilian Mafia (heirs of Giuseppe Mazzini's organised criminal operations) and as a consequence of the mass penetration of US intelligence by German operatives and scientists under the postwar 'Operation Paperclip', how to exploit opportunities for open-ended criminalist operations under the blanket cover of 'national security', both for the progressive enrichment of the agencies themselves, and for the purposes of lin-

Rgure 82: The North Room of the residence of Theodore Roosevelt, 26th President of the United States, at Sagamore Hill, Oyster Bay, Long Island, NY. Note the prominently displayed black pentangle, centre, below the ceiling, which is of course identical to the self-same black pentangle used by Hitler as the backdrop to his Berchtesgarten dining room, displayed in Figure 81. Prominent display of this geomasonic Illuminati symbol signals to 'the interested' where hidden Luciferian control and loyalties actually lie.

ing the pockets of certain integrated criminal political families whose underworld expertise was superior to that of their intelligence associates.

The scale of Gehlen's deception operations against the Americans was mind-boggling. Reportedly more than 70% of reports submitted to Washington on CIA stationery were simply Gehlen's own words. One 'former' CIA operative is reported to have confirmed that 'Gehlen's reports and analyses were sometimes simply retyped onto CIA stationery and presented to President Truman without further comment[4]. As a consequence, President Truman abandoned attempts to curb the military budget, and expanded spending for weapons research ('inventing evil things'), military equipment, aircraft and the Nazi-directed US space programme.

Truman also ordered an expansion of the nuclear weapons production and development programme, and initiated the process of pumping large sums into the intelligence community's 'Black' budget to finance covert operations - a tradition which continues to this day, even though the volume of funds maintained and exploited offshore and off-balance sheet by the US intelligence community grows exponentially by the day and has long since ensured that the intelligence community is a 'stand-alone' state within the US state, directing the affairs of every important department of the Federal Government, self-selecting its own personnel for the highest offices including the Presidency and the Vice Presidency, and self-appointing its own 'handlers' so that its covert appointees do as they are told. Already, over the ten years that followed President Truman's acceptance of Gehlen's lies and distortions at face value, the CIA contrived to consume over $200 million that did not need to be accounted for - equivalent to some $4.0 trillion in today's debauched US fiat 'funny' money.

ABWEHR'S SUCCESSORS PAINTED THE U.S.S.R AS DEADLY MENACE

US funding for the Gehlen Organisation only ceased as late as 1956. In 2000, United Press International (UPI) revealed that the CIA had finally acknowledged its past relationship with Gehlen, in response to an appeal under a Freedom of Information Act request by a US researcher, Carl Oglesby, according to a spokesman for the National Archives. The QA had 'pledged' to release its records on General Gehlen in accordance with the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act, setting up the Nazi War Criminal Records Interagency Working Group (IWG). It started declassifying documents related to the Second World War in 1998, releasing them through the National Archives.

British intelligence sources have informed this author that the Dulles Brothers, like key British intelligence figures, were long-term agents of the German (Nazi) Abwehr. No doubt this was indeed so, explaining why General Gehlen encountered no resistance to the fairytales that he was retailing for the benefit of the Americans' 'innocenf ears. In the decade following the Second World War, the Americans had little understanding of the Soviets' military capabilities; so Gehlen painted as bleak a picture as he could of the Red Menace - which was real enough, but of course represented a dialectical 'threat', as long intended by the Illuminati manipulators. What actually happened was that the postwar scenario did not develop as they may have planned - a deduction that is consistent with information provided privately to this Author from a high-level US source that President Reagan's intention was to terminate, rather than to 'win', the Cold War, because it had been realised (by the Illuminati) that it had become both unproductive and counterproductive, especially given the electronic 'new technology' advances. 'All that Gehlen needed to do was to paint as bleak a picture of the situation as he could, and to continue creating reports that indicated that the scenario was continually deteriorat-ing. The more bad news he gave Washington, the more money he would have to work with. He knew that in peacetime, the only way to justify a large intelligence organization was to make sure there was always an "enemy at the gates'"[5].

HOW GEHLEN EXPLOITED THE EMBEDDED FIFTH COLUMN

By way of quite well-known examples of exaggerations, disinformation or outright lies fed by this long-range Nazi Continuum agent to the gullible and eagerly expanding US intelligence community, the following examples are often cited:

Gehen's organisation reported directly to Allen Dulles, the Director of Central Intelligence (DCI), and thus to President Truman, that the Soviets were poised to attack Western Europe. Specifically, he asserted that Soviet forces in Eastern Europe consisted of 208 crack assault divisions, most of which were high-speed-capable motorised rifle and tank divisions, modelled after the Nazi blitzkrieg precedent. The data accompanying these reports suggested that the Communists outnumbered Western forces by about ten to one.

Early in 1947, Gehlen told the newly established Central Intelligence Agency, which succeeded the OSS and its follow-on Central Intelligence Group (CIG), that his agents had observed subtle changes in Soviet billeting and leave policies, with leave cancelled and troops being recalled for some unexplained reason - from which he purported to deduce that these indications might signal a 'preparation phase' for the suspected blitzkrieg invasion, which was in reality a figment of his cynical imagination.

Gehlen then predicted that the Soviets would move quickly once all their troops and equipment had been activated and made ready for the attack.

In reality, as a number of analysts have pointed out, the Red Army in 1946 was grossly over-extended, under-equipped and exhausted, consisting of units that had suffered severe combat degradation. And it had certainly been the case that many of the Soviet battalions had entered Berlin on foot. The reality was that the Soviets even lacked

Figure 83: Diverse working in the muddy River Plate in Uruguay recovered this heavy bronze Nazi eagle from the wreck of the Second World War German battleship Admiral Graf Spree. The claws of the eagle clasp a wreath within which is a swastika, the occult symbol of Nazism. The design mimics and is derived from the ancient Egyptian symbology of a large bird sitting atop an orb, adopted by the Rosicrucians [see Figures 89,90 and 91 on pages 551,553 and 555]. The Graf Spree sank up to nine Allied merchant ships before being scuttled in 1939.

sufficient motor transport to be able to move one entire division without depriving another of its motorised assets. As late as 1946, almost 50% of the Red Army's transport was still horse-drawn, as at the beginning the century. Also in the public domain is the fact that US intelligence had itself established that most Soviet forces in Eastern Europe were bogged down consolidating Stalin's conquests, rebuilding and establishing repression systems in the Eastern zones, reorganising security structures, and carrying out government administrative functions given the collapse of governing infrastructures. Indeed, US intelligence assessments had confirmed that Soviet ground and air forces would not be combat-effective against the Western powers for at least a decade.

Gehlen and his 'believers' within US intelligence managed somehow to 'confuse with figures'. A Soviet military division was usually one-third as strong as an American or British division, with far less effective leadership, because instead of being able to function flexibly in combat by taking decisions on the battlefield, Soviet officers had to wait for orders from on high before reacting to any change in battle circumstances - a state of affairs which had often caused the Soviets massive losses and defeats in the course of land battles. By contrast, US military doctrine encouraged battlefield decisions during the heat of conflict to be made at the lowest levels. (It may well be the case that some of the atrocities committed by US troops in Iraq may have reflected this doctrine -at least, that is what the officer class has encouraged the jaded outside world to believe).

THE BETRAYAL OF 'PROJECT PAPERCLIP'

Much has been written about President Truman's decision in 1946 to authorise 'Project Paperclip', under which the late President Roosevelt's policy of allowing Germany to experience the bitter consequences of its excesses, was turned on its head - under the influence of the US State Department in general and the Germany-educated George Kennan (see below) in particular. No doubt the information in the public domain on this subject is woefully incomplete. But under the policy, selected German scientists were brought to the United States ostensibly to work on behalf of America in the face of the developing 'Cold War'. President Truman expressly excluded any German scientist or intelligence operative initially 'found to have been a member of the Nazi Party and more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazism or militarism'.

Accordingly, the US War Department's Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA) carried out background investigations of the scientists. In February 1947, the JOIA's Director, Bosquet Wev, submitted the first group of dossiers to the US State and Justice Departments for their review. Samuel Klaus, the State Department's representative on the Board of the JIOA, immediately argued that the dossiers were damning and that all the scientists in the first batch were 'ardent Nazis'; so their visa 'requests' were denied.

Several commentators have pointed out that Mr Wev was furious. He accordingly wrote a memorandum in which he insisted that 'the best interests of the United States have been subjugated to efforts expended in "beating a dead Nazi horse". So far as he was concerned, Nazism was dead - a catastrophic error of judgment that has compromised the United States' future and is well on the way to procuring the destruction of the Republic. As part of his argument, Mr Wev suggested that returning the Nazi scientists concerned to Germany, or leaving them there, would expose them to being exploited by the United States' enemies - a state of affairs which presented a 'far greater security threat to this country than any former Nazi affiliations which they may have had or any Nazi sympathies that they may still have'.

Meanwhile General Gehlen, having formed a close relationship with Allen Dulles, who has recently been exposed by British intelligence as a German Abwehr penetration agent, persuaded the Director of Central Intelligence that it would be in the United States' long-term interests to accept the German scientists. Allen Dulles apparently assured Gehlen that his organisation would survive scrutiny. For his part, Mr Wev evidently prevailed upon Dulles to allow him to have the suspect Nazi scientists' dossiers rewritten, so that incriminating evidence was eliminated. As a consequence of this fraud, over 770 Nazi scientists, initially, entered the United States and were incorporated into the military-industrial complex, the universities and the intelligence community.

Although a similar Nazi penetration occurred in the Soviet Union, the United States 'inherited' a large number of Heinrich Himmler's 'Black' scientists who had been engaged in gross, Satanic experimentation operations, including abominations against inmates in Nazi concentration camps. Most analysts are agreed that the myriad 'Black' umbrella projects later sponsored by the CIA, including MK-ULTRA, Operation ARTICHOKE and Operation MIDNIGHT CLIMAX, were encouraged, if not 'inspired', by this corrosive German Nazi influence inside the CIA's 'Heart of Darkness'.

THE EXPOSE OF THE NAZI MOLES BY LINDA HUNT

Our knowledge that the Nazi scientists' dossiers had been doctored under the German agent Allen Dulles arises mainly from an expose published in 1985 by Linda Hunt, in the 'Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists', in which she said that she had examined more than 130 reports on 'Project Paperclip' candidates, and had found that 'every one had been changed to eliminate the security threat classification'. This must surely rank as one of the most extensive mass penetrations of Western intelligence and structures in history - surpassed only by the mass penetration effected by 'ex'-KGB and Soviet military Intelligence (GRU) officers under the Clinton Administration, which resulted, according to a source with the Wackenhut Corporation, in more than 17,000 GRU operatives being placed as both 'actives' and 'sleepers' all over the United States.

Authorities are also in agreement that President Truman, who had explicitly ordered that no 'serious' Nazis were to be admitted into the United States and its structures under 'Operation Paperclip', was never made aware that his directive had been violated. In other words, the intelligence servants of the President of the United States deceived him - a pattern of behaviour which has become routine, not least given that Presidents are controlled by intelligence 'handlers'. Memoirs of officials from that era, together with US State Department archive materials, confirm that the President was kept in ignorance. Indeed, officials threw a blanket of secrecy over 'Operation Paperclip' and the issues it raised, specifically in order to ensure that the truth of the matter did not leak into the Oval Office. According to an authoritative work by Clare Lasby on this subject, 'Project Paperclip' officials 'covered their designs with such secrecy that it bedevilled and compromised their own President: at Potsdam he denied their activities and undoubtedly enhanced Russian suspicion and distrust'[6].

In the case of the top Hitler missile scientist, who had inflicted death and destruction over southern England with his V-l and V-2 rockets - which the Author remembers struck horror into us when the engine switched off, a signal that the bomb was about to detonate - a report datelined 18th September 1947 stated that 'Subject is regarded as a potential security threat by the Military Governor'. But in February 1948, a 'revised' security evaluation of Von Braun asserted that: 'No derogatory information is available on the subject.... It is the opinion of the Military Governor that he may not constitute a security threat to the United States'. Whether the Military Governor was the same person who had provided the earlier advice is not reported. Even so, the new assessment was still conditional: otherwise the word 'may' would have been 'will'.

Further information on the mass infiltration of Nazi scientists and practitioners of abominations into the US structures after the Second World War was summarised in Chapter 4. One of the worst cases was that of Kurt Blome, the high-ranking Himmler scientist who had told US military interrogators in 1945 that he had been ordered in 1943 to experiment with plague vaccines on prisoners in Nazi concentration camps.

In 1947, this ogre was tried at Nuremberg on charges of practicing euthanasia disguised as the extermination of sick prisoners 'who were going to die anyway', and conducting unconscionable experiments on humans. Incredibly, he was acquitted, but his earlier admissions were common knowledge and it was generally assumed that he had indeed participated in the gruesome experiments. Two months after he was acquitted at Nuremberg, Blome was being interviewed at Camp David, Maryland, on the subject of biological warfare. He was hired in 1951 by the US Army Chemical Corps to work on chemical warfare operations, on the basis of a file that contained no mention of his trial at Nuremberg.

The fate of another leading Nazi scientist, Major General Walter Schreiber, was also reviewed by Linda Hunt in her article. She reported that the US military tribunal at Nuremberg heard evidence that 'Schreiber had assigned doctors to experiment on concentration camp prisoners and had made funds available for such experimentation'.

The Assistant Prosecutor had stated that the evidence would have resulted in Schreiber's conviction if the Soviets, who held him from 1945 to 1948, had made him available for trial. But Schreiber's 'Operation Paperclip' file made no mention of this evidence. Instead, the Americans found work for him at the Air Force School of Medicine at Randolph Field, Texas. When the veteran columnist, Drew Pearson, publicised the relevant Nuremberg evidence in 1952, the resulting negative publicity jolted the JIOA to arrange, according to Ms Hunt, 'a visa and a job for Schreiber in Argentina, where his daughter was living', and on 22nd May 1952, he was flown to Buenos Aires. This departure was just one of a large number of Nazi flights to South America.

According to Craig Roberts, while the 770 or more 'Operation Paperclip' Nazi (Himmler) scientists were boldly establishing themselves in the United States, General Reinhard Gehlen, acting with the tacit agreement of the Abwehr agent Allen Dulles, was busily engaged in rebuilding his intelligence connections and networks - inside West Germany. The so-called Gehlen Organisation rapidly re-established control over the majority of his former agents within the Iron Curtain territories, and, with the help of many members of his former staff, put them back to work. Of course, he double-crossed the Americans, since although he had agreed not to hire any former Gestapo, SS or SD members, this pledge (as he knew perfectly well) was wholly unenforceable. Far from refraining from employing such operatives, he systematically sought them out and placed them on the US-financed payroll, while the already deeply compromised and penetrated CIA did nothing whatsoever to stop this process.

His recruits included Dr Franz Six and Emil Augsburg, both of whom had been participants in an SS mobile Death's Head murder squad - the model for subsequent 'death squads' all over the world - which had hunted down and murdered Soviet Jews, intellectuals and partisans wherever they could be found. Dr Six was known as a

'Streber', or 'Eager Beaver', because of the relentless and ruthless manner in which he pursued his human prey. General Gehlen further recruited the former Gestapo chiefs operating in Paris, and in Kiel, Germany. He also hired the Jewish senior former Gestapo leader in southeastern Europe, Willi Krichbaum.

NOTORIOUS NAZI JEWS AND THE HOLOCAUST ('SHOAH')

This man was far from the only Jew to function at senior level within the Nazi hierarchy. The most notorious of the Nazi Jews who served Hitler at high level was of course Adolf Eichmann, SS Gruppenfuhrer Heinrich Muller's aide and the head of the notorious Department IVD4 dealing with 'emigration and evacuation' under the Gestapo, who epitomised the previously mentioned aphorism that 'a Jew's greatest enemy is another Jew'. This operative was among the most senior Jewish Nazis who presided over both a parallel programme to expatriate and/or 'evacuate' certain Jews (who were primarily Sephardim), and the industrialisation of the Nazi killing apparat, which followed the Nazis' pre-existing T4 'euthanasia' programme* under which 270,000 members of the general population considered to be 'unfit' to continue living were arbitrarily murdered. Among Eichmann's senior subordinates were many other Nazis of Jewish extraction, including a Dr Jacobi, of the General Management, Railway Directorate East, in Berlin, a chief requisitioner of 'special trains' for those destined for the concentration camps and gas chambers, who went under the euphemism 'resettlers'; and the notorious SS-Brigadefuhrer Dr Otto Gustav Wachter, the Nazi Governor-General of Galicia, Poland, who was a key member of special intelligence planning sessions which took place at certain departmental levels in the German Military Transportation Command (Kommandatur) in Akademizca (University) Street, Lemburg [Lvov], where, according to an eye-witness - the Jewish SS Lieutenant General Horst Hoyer - details of the 'final solution' were clearly laid out - by Jews, of whom Wachter was the most senior.

Wachter was thus a also a collaborator of SS Gruppenfuhrer Heinrich Miiller, the Jewish Nazi SS General in charge of the Gestapo and the concentration camps who clandestinely reported to his fellow Jew, Lavrentii Beria, the head of Stalin's MVD (Interior Ministry). Lavrentii Beria was the deepest German Abwehr penetration at the summit of Soviet power - wielded of course by Stalin, whose real Jewish name was Iosiph Viss-arionovich Djugashvili-Kochba, a descendant, like Beria, of Jews/Khazars from Georgia. The success of the Abwehr (secret intelligence) in penetrating Stalin's closest entourage had only been paralleled in the 20th century by the placement of Grigory Rasputin, the demonic semi-literate fake peasant monk and 'mystic', who exercised extraordinary and evil power over Tsar Nicholas and his wife Alexandra, and whose drunkenness, nepotism and sexual excesses, accompanied by accurate rumours that he was a German agent, led to his murder by a group of Russian noblemen in December 1916.

---

* In the recent literature, the Nazis' T4 'euthanasia' programme is mentioned, for instance, on pages 101 and 109 of 'Eichmann: His Life and Crimes', by Professor David Cesarani [William Heinemann, London, 2004], thus: The 'police captain' he [Eichmann] met, and whom he described as 'vulgar' and possibly drunk, was almost certainly Police Commissioner Christian Wirth, who had been transferred from the T4 'euthanasia' programme to [SS Brigadefuhrer Oldilo] Globocnik to design and build a mass murder installation' [page 101]; and: 'In October and November [1941] murder experts from the T4 unit were loaned to him [Globocnik, who was SS Police Chief in the Lublin area] and work began on Belzec' [= Belsen] [page 109]. Concerning the T4 'euthanasia 'programme which preceded the 'Final Solution' operation, Professor Cesarani, of Royal Holloway College, at the University of London, refers to the gassing techniques employed to murder thousands of the physically and mentally handicapped in sanatoria and asylums in Germany and the annexed areas in 1939-40.... [In SS circles at this time, against this background] 'the biological destruction of the Jews was now being seen as a viable alternative or adjunct to deportation' [page 94]. In 2006, the notoriety of the US National Security Agency [NSA] was further aggravated, given controversy surrounding detailed indications of NSA spying not only against foreigners, but also against American citizens, under a vast operation referred to obliquely by intelligence officials simply as The Program'. The actual codename for this operation is 'The T2 Program'. The labelling of this operation presupposes the existence of a T1 Program, and arguably of T3 and a T4 (et al) Programs. Given the clear continuing Nazi orientation, being implemented by the Nazi Fifth Column operating at the highest levels in the US structures, the possibility that these people have replicated the Nazi hierarchy of secret control operations and that a US T4 'euthanasia' Program exists, cannot be excluded.

According to Horst Hoyer, exclusively Sephardic Jews (exiles of Jerusalem) were removed from Galicia under Wachter's watch, with whole families being flown out by the German Air Force and aircraft operated by its Axis allies, so that accordingly only Ashkenazim (to which group most Jews, as discussed earlier, were thought to belong) were to be targeted for annihilation. Hoyer's own testimony on the detailed involvement of certain key Jews with preparations for the 'Shock' (incorrectly labelled 'the Holocaust') was presented to the West German Government in connection with the signing of the German-Israel Peace Treaty in 1952, and subsequently to the Institute for Post-War German History. The intelligence source for this information was published by Grabert Verlag, of Tubingen, in two revealing articles that appeared in a bulletin for researchers and teachers entitled Hochschullehrerzeitung in 1967 and 1968[7]. The translator of Hoyer's material into English was Henning Fikentscher, also of Jewish extraction. Commenting on this intelligence, Professor (Emeritus) Reuben Clarence Lang, M. Theol., MA, PhD, a Christian German of Jewish background, has revealingly stated:

'One must be mindful of the intense inner-Jewish tension and contrasts, above all between the objectives of the nationally-assimilated Jews and those of world Jewry and Zionism. These divisions are much, much deeper than the relationships between believing and non-believing Jews. As one becomes aware of this, many other factors, that are otherwise incomprehensible, about Jewry, become clear - the most important in this context being that one group of Jews (Ashkenazim) fell victim to another, and that, of those Jews who were targeted, few escaped'[8].

HIDDEN JEWISH ETHNIC CLEANSING AGENDA

Seen against this authoritative background, the reality that Nazi Jews such as Adolf Eichmann, Muller, Wachter, Krichbaum, Horst Hoyer and many others of senior rank including certain of Hitler's associates and key operatives - Otto Meissner, Walter Funk, Hans Frank, Alfred Rosenberg, Karl Fiehler, Max Amann, and in the Occupied Territories (Reichskommissar), Wilhelm Frick (Bohemia and Moravia), Karl Hermann Frank (State Minister, Bohemia and Moravia), Robert Wagner (Alsace), Erich Kocherich (a.k.a. Koch) (Bialystock), Friedrich Rainer (working in Carinthia and Carinola) and Gustav Simon (Luxembourg) - together with an estimated 155,000 Jews who served in the Nazi military and repression structures [see Figure 85, page 534] mainly to procure protection for themselves and - they hoped - their families) from the industrialised pogrom, becomes distinctly less problematical to contemplate[9]. (Certain other top Nazi police and SS chiefs not mentioned so far, such as Ernst Kaltenbrunner, Erwin Schultz, Panzinger and Walter Schellenberg, are also believed to have had Jewish backgrounds).

The realisation that cynically heartless and evil Jews sided with the Luciferian German Nazis to exterminate millions of their own race in what amounted to an inter-Jewish civil war and ethnic cleansing operation directed by Germany's Satanic industrialised extermination structures, may be a dimension of the 'mystery of iniquity'[10] that we are not called upon to comprehend. However in view of the ghastly fact that the United States is maturing before our eyes as a monster regime that may make the Hitler era look like a golden age, we will need to factor this paradox firmly into our 'hard disks'. For 'he that now letteth will let'[11].

In summary, a large cadre of Germans were or became 'infested' or even in some cases 'possessed' - and this has to include ALL those who had any part in the industrialisation of mass murder organised and presided over by the likes of Adolf Eichmann and Wachter, aided and abetted by a cadre of senior Nazi Jews who perpetrated a colossal ethnic cleansing operation - the controlling Kahal Jews being in agreement with their German colleagues that the Jewish community was 'polluted' by Khazars (Ashkenazim) who were not really Jews at all - a view which, as this Author showed in Chapter 7, is a lie.

It would even appear that the primary instigators of the 'Shoah' (Holocaust) were Jews. Others named by SS Lieutenant General Horst Hoyer as having planned the minutiae of the 'final solution' at Lemburg included Jews named Walter Sonnenschein, Zuckerhorn, Spitze, Loewenstein, Gregor and Feckler. Hoyer's memorandum also contained the following observation: 'At the time, those Jews [listed as having attended the meetings at Akademizca Street, Lemburg] feared world Jewry, putting me in their confidence, didn't they? They pleaded for my help, knowing full well that I was utterly helpless in the face of these underhand activities'. Two weeks after the ratification of the German-Israel Treaty, an official Jewish approach was made to Horst Hoyer offering him a large sum of money (DM30,000) for his memorandum on Jewish complicity in the 'final solution' which he had handed to the West German Government. The proposal contained a demand that Hoyer was to sign a document to the effect that the memorandum was fictitious. He refused, and was murdered some years later.

On 24th March 1933, the Daily Express, which then cost one penny, and was owned then, as today, by Jewish interests, carried the following headline right across its front page: JUDEA DECLARES WAR ON GERMANY. The only copy of this issue that the Author has been able to obtain consists of the degraded photocopy shown in Figure 86 on page 535. Beneath a picture montage showing four Jewish judges examining a Nazi, the front page announced, coinciding with Hitler's 'coup d'etat by instalments':

auf Grund der heute erfolgten Wahl hiermit vom 17. März 1933 ab auf die Dauer von vier Jahren zum Präsidenten des Reichsbank-Direktoriums ernannt.

Berlin, den 17. März 1933.

Der Reichspräsident.

Der Reichskanzler:

Berlin, den 16. März 1933.

Die Mitglieder des Generalrates

SIGNATURE OF ADOLF HITLER
SIGNATURE OF MAX WARBURG

Figure 84: Facsimile of part of a financial document dated 16th March 1933 and signed on the following day in Berlin by Adolf Hitler, by now Chancellor of the Reich, and the international German Jewish financier Max Warburg. Thus Jewish financiers helped to finance an Illuminati Black regime which set about planning and implementing an ethnic cleansing programme within Jewry which was supported and facilitated by prominent Jews both within the Nazi apparat, and externally - illustrating again the perpetual double-mindedness of the Illuminati and their dupes.

JEWS OF ALL THE WORLD UNITE
Boycott of German Goods
Mass Demonstrations
"Daily Express" Special Correspondent

A strange and unforeseen sequel has emerged from the stories of German Jew-baiting. [Due to a later highlighting or erasure, the next sentences are almost illegible]. All Israel is rising in wrath against the Nazi onslaught on the Jews. Adolf Hitler, swept into power by an appeal to elemental patriotism, is making history of a kind he least expected. Thinking to unite only the German nation to race consciousness, he has aroused the whole Jewish people to a national consciousness'.

JEWISH SUPPORT FOR THE ILLUMINATI'S 'BLACK' REGIME

In the light of the foregoing information on the participation of a ruthless cadre of Jewish Nazis in the subsequently developed mass extermination machine, it is suspected that collaboration along these Luciferian lines between participating Nazi Jews and the German Nazis may have been a feature of this Illuminati 'Black' regime all along. And given the fashion in those days for 'racial purity' considerations (eugenics), this Author does not consider it to be out of the question that there may have been a deliberate intention by certain controlling Israelite cadres to 'purge' the Ashkenazim in order to 'manage' the intended mass emigration of Jews to the planned State of Israel that had been arranged by Chaim Weizmann with the British. Eichmann, too, was extensively involved with operations to transport Jews around Europe and to Palestine. In other words, an underlying explanation for Jewish Nazi collaboration in this gigantic abomination of

Figure 85: Given that Communism and Nazism are two dialectical 'opposites' developed respectively by one of the two Illuminati Karls - Communism by Karl Marx, and Fascism (Nazism) by Karl Ritter, both German Jews - it is not surprising that a large number of German Jews participated in the Nazi war and extermination machine, just as a large number of Soviet Jews participated in the Stalinist war and extermination machines. Comprehensive details about the Jews who belonged to the Nazi intelligence and military apparat were published several years ago, and have appeared in a paperback edition of 'Hitler's Jewish Soldiers: The Untold Story of Nazi Racial Laws and Men of Jewish Descent in the German Military', by Brian Mark Rigg, Modern War Studies, ISBN 0-7006-1358-7. The late 'suicided' CIA Director William Colby agreed with this Author that the Nazis have 'hidden behind' the Soviets since 1945. The pictures above are side and front 'mugshots' of the understandably frightened Anton Mayer which accompanied his application for 'exemption' so that he could stay in the Nazi military ranks, and also to spare his parents, spouse or other relative from incarceration or the death camps. Hitler's own signature is found on may of these 'exemption orders'. The photographs evoke a certain human compassion, given the expression of terror on the man's face. Many Jews worked as spies for the Hitler regime, including Hans Arnheim and Joseph Jakobs, Rudoph Korda, a Hungarian-born Jewish journalist who headed a Nazi spy ring until 1942, Ivan Lissner, a Jewish Nazi collaborator and Nazi Party member, Karl Molnar, the Jewish chief of Hungarian Intelligence in Istanbul, Hans Mosberg, a Shanghai-based Jewish spy who served the Abwehr, and of course the continuing STASI-Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD) operative, Marcus Wolf.

'ethnic cleansing' may have been an intention to ensure that the Jewish gene pool imported into the new state would be as 'pure' as could be arranged - illustrating the perverse and widely overlooked reality that the Nazi and the Zionist mentalities are interchangeable and essentially identical: hence this Author's new name, Zionazis.

That the Hitler regime was supported by the Jewish financial power is confirmed by Figure 84 [page 533] which shows that the appointment of H. H. C. Schacht as Governor of the Reichsbank by Hitler on 17th March 1933, as soon as he had achieved supremacy had to be agreed by the international banking community, whose representative was Max Warburg, the brother of Paul Warburg, the chief architect of the Federal Reserve System, which is 'privately' owned by a majority of European financial institutions

As for Wachter, he is believed to have made his way to Italy, where he was thought to have been murdered by partisans - having intended to take advantage of the Vatican's 'rat-run' route by means of which Nazis on the run escaped to Latin America. His family members survived. Gehlen's new employer, the OSS, working with the Vatican, not only encouraged but financed an escape mechanism negotiated and set up by Gehlen for his Nazi colleagues. Although the Vatican has always been 'blamed' for developing the 'rat-lines', for which it provided ample cover in its monastic and church establishments (enabling operatives like Karol Wojtila to enter holy orders, an alternative option), it was in fact the so-called Gehlen Organisation which established, with OSS assistance, the underground escape network which Nazi war criminals could use to escape prosecution by war crimes tribunals. As a consequence, more than 5,000 Nazis secretly made their way out of Europe, and were relocated all over the world.

With the exception of the Nazi scientists and intelligence officers who flooded to

Ballito STOCKINGS

Daily Express

St Ivel CHEESE Aids digestion

ONE PENNY.

JUDEA DECLARES WAR ON GERMANY

JEWS OF ALL THE WORLD UNITE

BOYCOTT OF GERMAN GOODS

MASS DEMONSTRATIONS

A STRANGE AND UNFORESEEN SEQUEL HAS EMERGED FROM THE STORIES OF GERMAN JEW-BAITING.

THE SOVIET AMBASSADOR ENTERTAINS

AN ALL-RED TALKIE FOR ALL-WHITE DIPLOMATS

Canon Shot At Prayer

Mr. Churchill's Withering Attack On Premier

Officer Describes The Girl

DAYS OF LOVE IN BERLIN

'BROUGHT US NEARER TO WAR'

FOUR YEARS WORK WITHOUT ANY SUCCESS

OUR DON QUIXOTE

Mrs. George Lansbury Dead

STOP PRESS

Figure 86: The Jewish-owned Daily Express served the British Government as a propaganda organ for many years. This shows part of the newspaper's front page on 24th March 1933, shortly after Hitter had double-crossed the Reichstag and had corralled the Reichstag's power for his Cabinet and before he stole the Cabinet's powers for him-self. The newspaper's headline, JUDEA DECLARES WAR ON GERMANY, should be compared with Figure 84 on page 533, which illustrates part of a financial document dated 17th March 1933 signed by Hitler and the Jewish financier, Max Warburg. Other Jewish banker friends of the Fuhrer were gentlemen by the names of Abs and Pferdmenges.

the United States under 'Operation Paperclip' and subsequently, and who were retained within Stalin's new Empire and were put to work for the Soviets, as well as some Nazis who were similarly used by the British authorities, the underground 'rat line' system enabled the Nazi Continuum to establish a global network which, as will be seen, has never ceased to pursue Nazi global hegemony policy. This was always in fact simply an extension, 'by other means' to cite Lenin, of a policy of Germanic expansionism that can be traced back to Frederick the Great, Bismarck (who was Jewish, like his British counterpart, Disraeli), the Kaiser, and German policy following the First World War.

It was, after all, the same German Abwehr that established the cancer of the Muslim Brotherhood, a neo-Masonic organisation, in the Middle East, as an instrument for the destabilisation of British power there. The Iraqi Ba'ath regime which succeeded and displaced British influence in Iraq, represented, in reality, nothing less than the imposition of a disguised Nazi apparatus in Baghdad. On Channel 4 News broadcast on 3rd August 2005, there was a segment on the killing of a New York Times reporter in Basra, three days after he had published a critical report on local developments in his newspaper. The camera accidentally captured a wall poster showing a skull with the following slogan written in large English characters immediately beneath it: NAZI BA'ATH CRIMES.

NAZIS EXPORT THEIR 'TOTENKOPF' DEATH SQUADS

Most of the 5,000+ Nazi war criminals fled to Argentina, Chile, Nicaragua and El Salvador - all of them countries in which the United States has subsequently intermeddled. Within a few years of the arrival of these Nazis in those countries, 'right-wing' 'death squads', modelled on the Nazi SS mobile 'Deaths' Head' (Totenkopf) killing squads that had hunted down and killed Jews, intellectuals and partisans in the Soviet Union and parts of Eastern Europe, made their appearance. Among the Nazi expatriate communities were the notorious 'high' Uluminist Dr Josef Mengele, who collaborated with US intelligence and whose speciality had been to conduct crude experiments on Jewish concentration camp inmates - and the infamous 'Butcher of Lyons', the mass murderer, Klaus Barbie. It is believed that James Jesus Angleton, who worked for the Abwehr agent Allen Dulles and who later in life grew orchids - a plant with occult connotations - for pleasure, was primarily responsible for providing escaping Nazis with new identities prior to their leaving the detainment camps.

On 2nd October 2005, 'The Sunday Express', which these days is owned by the shameless Jewish pornographer Richard Desmond, whose TV offerings routinely plumb new depths of depravity and who is allegedly 'close to Mossad', according to an informed British intelligence source, published details of a renewed global hunt for a notorious living Nazi 'Dr Death', a certain SS Dr Aribert Heim, who carried out hideous experiments on prisoners at Mauthausen concentration camp in Austria in 1941. Prosecutors for the southern German State of Baden-Wurttemberg in Stuttgart were said to have doubled their reward for information leading to this old Nazi's arrest.

A spokesman was reported to have said that Heim 'is top of our list of wanted Nazi war criminals, and has been for more than 40 years. We have intelligence that he is alive - aged 91 - and healthy and competent enough to stand trial'. Heim was also reported to be at the top of the list under Operation Last Chance, which is the operational title for a continuing hunt for Nazi war criminals spearheaded by the Simon Wiesenthal Centre in Vienna, a spokesman for which told the Sunday Express that 'we believe that he is still alive, and we desperately want him because he is the last big fish of the Nazi regime who must answer for his role in the destruction of six million people'. According to Michel Klose, the Baden-Wurttemberg prosecutor, Heim 'operated on people when they were fully conscious. In one case, he removed the liver, spleen and bowels of a patient without anaesthetic. The patient died in agony'. Prosecutors listed Heim as having come second only to Dr Josef Mengele in his capacity for cruelty. A former concentration camp prisoner, Hans Marsalek, said that 'he did not know the meaning of mercy. He injected patients in the heart and had their heads cut off so that he could experiment on their skulls'. Unbelievably, this ogre was known to have been living quietly in the spa town of Bad Nauheim, close to Frankfurt, which is essentially, with Berlin and Dachau, a primary German locus of Luciferian Illuminati operations. In 1949, he married another doctor, and they had two sons, settling in Baden-Baden, where he opened a gynaecological clinic. The Austrian authorities belatedly started an investigation after having collected witness statements from dozens of Mauthausen inmates, and five years later prosecutors in Baden-Baden issued an arrest warrant for him. He vanished shortly before police appeared at his home. It is believed he was tipped off by the organisation of former SS operatives, Odessa, which specialised in providing wanted SS men with papers and funds with which to escape. His wife remained a doctor practicing in Baden-Baden, and was known to be still functioning as a doctor there as late as the autumn of 2005. Heim was believed in 1998 to be living in Spain, but there appear to be traces of him having visited or lived in Egypt (a key Nazi locus, not least because of its occultic connotations.), Venezuela, Brazil - and the United States[12].

STALIN-STYLE PURGE OF U.S. INTELLIGENCE OPERATIVES ET AL

For a number of years, the US 'underground', now dominated by the Internet, has specialised in exposes of the alleged leading American intelligence-political 'crime' families, led by the Clintons and the Bushes. During the Clinton years, observers more or less lost count of the number of intelligence operatives, military officers, drivers, bodyguards and others who had been 'whacked' - to use the intelligence jargon that seems to be in vogue - in the context of a Stalin-style purge of those involved with the nexus of intelligence operations and drug-related scams collectively referred to as Tran-Contra'. The similarity to life under Stalin can certainly not have been lost on Russian observers and intelligence officers working out of the Russian Embassy in Washington, who were carefully monitoring the endlessly burgeoning list of 'Iran-Contra' operatives who were found dead, or who wound up in jail on Stalinesque trumped-up charges.

Since 2000, the focus has been on the alleged nefarious serial criminality of members of the Bush family, with many respectable researchers highlighting such facts as that President Bush's grandfather, like Jewish bankers and steelmakers, was instrumental in Hitler's rise to, and consolidation of, power. Rather than revisit such secondary and occasionally questionable or carelessly researched sources for this damning background information, the Author prefers to rely primarily upon decisive confirmation of all this, published in The Guardian on 25th September 2004, which was based upon 'newly discovered' files in the US National Archives proving that Prescott Bush, the Yale Skull and Bones father of George Bush Sr., was a Director of a firm that was involved with the financial architects of the Illuminati's 'Black' Nazi regime. This had been separately alleged in a number of 'underground' analyses; but now we have the concrete evidence. Today, it is allegedly George Bush Sr. who has been single-handedly directing the Illuminati's push for global control, literally telling Bill and Hillary

Clinton and, reportedly, his son George W. Bush Jr., what to do; and the 'white hatted' component of the US intelligence community has been intimidated into impotence, in the face of this clique's powers. The controller today of the secret financial dimensions of the Bush Family's alleged criminalist intelligence operations and affairs is allegedly the family member who is least heard of, Eddie Bush, operating out of Toronto, Canada.

The Guardian reported that Prescott Bush's 'business dealings, which continued until his company's assets were seized in 1942 under the Trading with the Enemy Act, have led more than 60 years later to a civil action for damages bring brought in Germany against the Bush family by two former slave labourers at Auschwitz.... The evidence has also prompted one former US Nazi war crimes prosecutor to argue that the late Senator's actions should have been grounds for prosecution for giving aid and comfort to the enemy'.

'The new documents, many of which were only declassified last year (2003) show that even after America had entered the war and when there was already significant information about the Nazis' plans and policies, he worked for and profited from companies closely associated with the very German businesses that financed Hitler's rise to power'.

For analysts who have not taxed their brains to unravel how the Illuminati operate - seeking always to place their agents in high places and manipulating both sides of a given dialectic to their own advantage and in the furtherance of the agentur's long-range criminal global hegemony strategy - this revelation may have come as a surprise. It illustrates that at the highest Illuminati levels, the false dialectic does not apply.

PRESCOTT BUSH AND JEWISH SUPPORT FOR THE NAZIS

Specifically, the US banking institution of which Prescott Bush was a Director, Brown Brothers Harriman (BBH), acted as a US base for the German Jewish industrialist Fritz Thyssen, who helped finance Hitler in the 1930s before ostensibly falling out with him at the end of the decade. Supporting allegations reiterated in the secondary sources, 'The Guardian's' analysis confirmed evidence that Prescott Bush was also a Director of the New York-based Union Banking Corporation (UBC), which represented Fritz Thyssen's US interests, and that he continued to work for the bank even after the United States had entered the war. Furthermore, Prescott Bush was on the board of at least one of the corporations that formed part of a complex multinational network of front companies, which enabled Thyssen to move assets around the world.

Thyssen owned the largest steel and coal company in Germany, and grew wealthy from Hitler's rearmament programme between the First and Second World Wars. As one of the primary corporations in Thyssen's international corporate network, UBC worked exclusively for, and was controlled by, a Thyssen-controlled bank in The Netherlands, (which has always been a central locus of Nazi Illuminati funding: hence the alleged prominence today in this context of Dutch banks). Prescott Bush also maintained close links with the Consolidated Silesian Steel Company (CSSC), located obviously in Silesia, which is rich in minerals, on the German-Polish border. During the war, this company made extensive use of Nazi slave labour from the concentration camps, including Auschwitz-Birkenau. Documents declassified in 2004 from the National Archives link Prescott Bush to CSSC, although it is not clear whether he and UBC were still involved with the company when Thyssen's American assets were seized by the US authorities in 1942.

The National Archives are maintained at the University of Maryland, but some of the documents seen by The Guardian were made available for scrutiny by the Library of Congress. The British newspaper cited three sets of documents:

1. The Harriman papers at the Library of Congress: These show that Prescott Bush was a Director and shareholder of a number of companies involved with Thyssen, the Nazi steelmaker, who, as indicated, was of Jewish extraction.

2. The second batch of papers, located in the National Archives, is contained in Vesting Order Number 248, which records the seizure of the company's assets. The files show that on 20th October 1942, the Alien Property Custodian seized the assets of the Union Banking Corporation, of which Prescott Bush was a Director. Having gone through the books of the bank, the authorities made further seizures against two affiliates - starting with the Holland-America Trading Corporation. By November 1942, the Silesian-American Company, another of Mr Prescott Bush's ventures, had also been seized. A Memorandum written by Homer Jones, chief of the Alien Property Corporation's Investigation and Research Division, stated that the stock in UBC is held ... 'solely as nominees for the Bank voor Handel, Rotterdam, Holland, which is owned by one or more of the Thyssen family, nationals of Germany and Hungary. The 4,000 shares hereinbefore set out are therefore beneficially owned and held for the interests of enemy nationals, and are vestable by the APC. Jones recommended that the assets should be liquidated for the benefit of the Government, but in fact UBC was maintained intact and was eventually returned to the US shareholders after the war.

3. The third batch of documents, also located in the US National Archives, was contained in files concerned with the German chemical corporation and notorious manufacturer of Zyklon-B, I. G. Farben. A report issued by the Office of the Alien Property Custodian in 1942 stated, concerning the companies, that 'since 1939, these (steel and mining) properties have been in possession of and have been operated by the German Government and have undoubtedly been of considerable assistance to that country's war effort'.

The Union Banking Corporation was specifically established by Averill Harriman, the wealthy son of the railroad magnate E.H. Harriman and Prescott Bush's father-in-law, George Herbert Walker ('Bert'), whose daughter Dorothy, Prescott Bush had married in 1921, after emerging from World War I as an artillery captain. Averill Harriman was an Illuminati opportunist who squandered a considerable proportion of his inherited railroad fortune trying to exploit raw materials in Soviet Georgia, only to have his assets there confiscated under Stalin's regime, which handed him worthless paper certificates in exchange. Since 1990, many latter-day Harrimans have followed his example.

NAZI MODEL FOR HIDDEN INTERNATIONAL INTELLIGENCE SCAMS

The model for gigantic, ruthless cross-border raw materials and financial warfare transactions with criminalist overtones, which has become the norm at the hidden intelligence and intergovernmental levels today, was thus established in the 1930s, as the following background information reveals. August Thyssen-Bornemisza, Jewish founder of his family's dynasty, had made his money during the First World War, and as a direct consequence of the requirements generated by that conflict. After having contributed extensively to Germany's war efforts, he and his sons Fritz and Heinrich set up a network of overseas banks and corporations so that their assets and funds could be removed offshore, if they were to be threatened by political developments at home. In our own era of money-laundering and drug-trafficking, it is usually forgotten that a primary purpose of offshore accounts is to hide funds from acquisitive, greedy, grasping governments and their penal taxation regimes, which support uncontrolled spending.

By the time Fritz Thyssen inherited the business empire in 1926, Germany was in severe renewed economic difficulties. After hearing the Illuminati's carefully selected Adolf Shicklgruber (Hitler) speak, Thyssen was duly mesmerised. He joined the Nazi Party in 1931. In his autobiography entitled 'I paid Hitler', he admitted backing the Nazi leader when the National Socialists were still a radical fringe party undergoing Illuminati training. In 1928, Thyssen bought the Barlow Palace, Briennerstrasse, in Munich, which Hitler converted into the Brown House and set up as the National Socialist Party's headquarters. Funds for this purchase were obtained from the Jewish Thyssen's Rotterdam-based Bank voor Handel en Scheepvaart.

By the late 1930s, Brown Brothers Harriman, which claimed to be the world's largest private investment bank, and Union Banking Corporation, had bought and shipped millions of dollars' worth of gold, fuel, steel, coal and US Treasury bonds to Germany, thereby feeding and financing Hitler's war preparations. Between 1931 and 1933, UBC bought more than $8 million worth of gold, of which $3 million was shipped abroad. 'The Guardian' saw documents confirming that after UBC had been set up, it transferred $2.0 million to Brown Brothers Harriman accounts, while between 1924 and 1940 the assets of UBC averaged around $3.0 million, falling occasionally to $1.0 million These data need to be multiplied by, say, 4,000 times to approximate current degraded fiat currency equivalents.

NEW REVELATIONS FROM THE U.S. NATIONAL ARCHIVES

Thyssen's partner in United Steel Works was the Jewish steel magnate Friedrich Flick, who also owned part of IG Farben. Flick's plants in Poland made heavy use of Jewish and other slave labour from the concentration camps in Poland. According to a 'New York Times' article published on 18th March 1934, Friedrich Flick owned two-thirds of the Consolidated Silesian Steel Company (CSSC) while 'American interests' held the rest. The Guardian' reported that the released US National Archive documents reveal that Brown Brothers Harriman's involvement with CSSC was more than simply holding the shares in the mid-1930s. A former US Attorney who prosecuted Nazi war criminals in the 1970s, John Loftus, stresses the importance of the cover-up: 'How could it have gone on so successfully for half a century, and does that have implications for us today? This was the mechanism by which Hitler was funded to come to power. This was the mechanism by [means of] which the Third Reich's military industry was re-armed; this was the mechanism by which Nazi profits were repatriated back to the American owners; this was the mechanism by which investigations into the financial laundering of the Third Reich were blunted. The Union Banking Corporation was a holding company for the Nazis, for Fritz Thyssen', Mr Loftus told 'The Guardian', without referencing Thyssen's Jewish background - but presumably knowing that he was telling a British newspaper what cannot yet be published in the United States, given US subservience to interests subject to the evil powers exercisable by the criminalist Illuminati 'families'.

'At various times, the Bush family has tried to spin it, saying they were owned by a Dutch bank, and it wasn't until the Nazis took over Holland that they realized that now the Nazis controlled the parent company, which is why Bush supporters claim that when the war was over, they got their money back' - Prescott Bush having reportedly been able to sell his shares for the then gigantic sum of $1.5 million. But the American Treasury's investigations and the intelligence investigations in Europe completely belie that; it's absolute horseshit. They always knew who the ultimate beneficiaries were'.

'There is no-one alive who could be prosecuted, but they did get away with it. As a former Federal Prosecutor, I would make a case for Prescott Bush, his father-in-law (George Walker) and Averill Harriman [to be prosecuted] for giving aid and comfort to the enemy. They remained on the boards of these companies knowing that they were of financial benefit to the nation of Germany'[13].

Some intelligence analysts have (as of the first quarter of 2006) moved considerably beyond noting glaring comparisons between the behaviour and mentality of the Nazis and those of the Bush Family and the Bush II Administration. The similarities today are obvious. To begin with, the intellectual and information environment has been deliberately and provocatively contaminated by the US Information Warfare apparat with lies, distortions, diversionary red herrings and deception - through maximising the potential of the Internet and the controlled 'mainstream' media to promulgate lies and generate confusion, almost to the point at which all controlled reports and analyses have become counterproductive because the decibel level of deception 'noise' is so great that no-one knows what to believe, clearing the way for lies to become embedded as truth.

To this more sophisticated environment of Goebbelsism is perversely added a streak of ruthlessness, a self-evident absence of any mercy, an official environment of arrogant and opinionated self-regard, and abundant evidence of the 'Heart of Darkness' inadvertently revealed by intelligence sources [see page 2], reignited at intervals by further Abu Ghraib-type revelations and images*. In mid-February 2006, the Australian public television station SBS showed more abominable pictures from Abu Ghraib itself, with injured Iraqi prisoners, an apparently dead prisoner, and sexual abuse. These pictures were broadcast less than a week after the release of video footage showing British troops behaving not unlike the barbarian Americans, kicking and beating Iraqis in the southern city of al-Amarah in 2004. A Pentagon official had the temerity to inform 'The Times' (London) that the Australian broadcast threatened to exacerbate an already tense situation, with the usual cover 'line' that 'the release of these images endangers the lives of US soldiers and in the case of Iraq not just American soldiers'. While that statement was obviously accurate, there was of course no hint from the Pentagon that the pictures would not exist if the grotesque abominations had not been officially sanctioned and taught, in the tradition of Himmler, in the first place. At no stage since the barbarism of the Americans, evidently to some extent copied by the feckless British, became notorious around the world, has any indication ever emerged of a determined intention to obliterate such behaviour from the intelligence services and military units involved - for the simple reason that these abuses are indeed taught and officially sanctioned.

Intermittent broadcasts and print reproduction of these gross atrocities serve the Illuminati's hidden purpose of sensitising the whole world to brutality - which is exactly the way the German Nazis behaved. 'The Times' reported as follows:

'Al-Jazeera and Al-Arabiya aired footage, including video of a man repeatedly banging his head against a wall, photos of a hooded man in his underwear and of a naked figure lying on the floor next to what appeared to be a pool of blood. Other pictures shown on the SBS current affairs programme 'Dateline' included those of a man whose throat had apparently been slit, a group of men being forced to masturbate in front of bloodied Iraqis who had been shot, and prisoners with burns and weeping wounds'.

---

* On 11th March 2006, The New York Times' led its front page with a report about Ali Shalal Quaissi, who claimed to be the Iraqi in the notorious photograph of US Nazi brutality which became iconically symbolic of the United States' officially-sponsored no-holds-barred arrogance and barbarism, in which a hooded Abu Ghraib prisoner was shown standing clad in a blanket on a box with his hands attached to electrical wires. In a follow-up report published in the same newspaper on 18th March 2006, it was ambiguously implied that Quaissi was not the prisoner in question, even though in the same article, the paper reported Mr Quaissi as saying, in tears: 'I know one thing... I wore that blanket, I stood on that box, and I was wired up and electrocuted'. According to Mr Quassi's lawyer, Philadelphia-based Susan Burke, who was representing Mr Quaissi and other former prisoners in a lawsuit against civilian interrogators and translators at Abu Ghraib, 'the sad fact is that there is not only one man on the box.... Haj Ali [Mr Quaissi] is but one of many victims of the torture'. 'The New York Times' 11th March article contained the following unbelievable paragraph: 'A spokesman for the American military in Iraq declined to comment saying it would violate the Geneva Conventions to disclose the identity of prisoners in any of the Abu Ghraib photographs, just as it would to discuss the reasons behind Mr Quaissi's detention'. The reader need hardly be reminded that throughout the period 2003-06, the whole world was treated to the spectacle of US legal officials competing with one another to elaborate reasons why the United States is not bound by the Geneva Conventions in the context of the so-called global 'War on Terror'. Now, all of a sudden, the US military was relying on the Geneva Conventions in order to cover up information of legitimate public interest, not least given the preceding routine official denial that the United States is bound by the Geneva Conventions - a classic example of the double-mindedness of the lluminati and their suckers.

'Although just a handful of the images were leaked in 2004, causing perhaps the worst US public relations disaster since the invasion of Iraq, hundreds more were kept secret by the Pentagon'.

'They are now the subjects of a legal battle in the United States. The American Civil Liberties Union has sued for their release. And the whole matter is before the courts. A spokesman for Dateline declined to say how the programme had obtained the images, but said that SBS was 'confident of the credibility of the source'. A Pentagon official confirmed last night that the images were authentic'[14].

Of course, Baghdadis, who had lived under a Nazi (Ba'ath) regime since 1958, have known all along what kind of occupiers invaded their country. 'Nothing is new to us', Muhammad Shati, 34, a Baghdad telecom engineer, told 'The Times'. 'Those are the Americans we know already. They should stop giving speeches on fighting for freedom: an army of terror cannot defeat terror'[15]. However the Nazi mentality of the US repression machine, disagrees. The United States is accustomed to the 'death penalty culture', given the persistence there of a mediaeval tradition of state revenge at the official level, notwithstanding mounting revulsion among ordinary Americans at this revolting practice. On 22nd February 2006, it was reported in the US press that the execution of a prisoner was cancelled after jail officials in California could not find a doctor or nurse willing to administer the lethal injection; and similar reports are not infrequent. A film by Michael Winterbottom, reconstructing scenes of torture and abuse at Guantanamo Bay Cuba - and who has joined others, led by the UK Conservative Party's Foreign Affairs spokesman of the day, William Hague, in calling for the concentration camp there to be closed - shows prisoners being beaten, manacled to floors and subjected to deafening Satanic 'music' in solitary confinement. These are all practices that 'Svali' would recognise.

NAZI-STYLE ATROCITIES COMMITTED BY U.S. AND BRITISH CADRES

The de facto US Nazis were reported in early 2006 to be paying no attention whatsoever to any criticism of their barbaric behaviour, and actually to be engaged in expansion of the Guantanamo Bay 'facility' so that more prisoners could be housed and abused. However in March 2006, it was abruptly announced, without explanation, that Abu Ghraib - which was, after all, the most notorious of all Saddam Hussein's torture and execution prisons, a tradition that the US 'replacement' Nazis seamlessly perpetuated -was to be closed. A few days later a US intelligence source informed this Author that the Gantanamo Bay 'facility' was also soon to be closed down, but that this hadn't yet been announced. These developments, when considered in the context of certain other setbacks experienced by 'black hats' among the US criminal intelligence classes, suggested the possibility of at least a period of consolidation among the Illuminati - along the Leninist lines of 'one step forward, two steps back'. Perhaps there is even a limit to how much bad publicity the thick-skinned intelligence-criminalist thugocracy can handle. For, as we have seen, it is not exactly keen on its acknowledged 'Heart of Darkness' being revealed.

A number of former prisoners who have managed to obtain release from US Nazi prisons, including several naturalised, albeit seriously deranged or misguided, 'Britons' of

Arab or North African backgrounds, have provided credible reports of the abominations perpetrated at these crude contemporary US Nazi-style concentration camps. Mourad Benchellali, who left France in 2001 for a Taliban camp aged 19, has recounted the sheer, relentless horror of his detention by the Americans at their hellish installations located deliberately (for occultic reasons) at Kandahar on the 33rd parallel in Afghanistan - and later at Guantanamo.

On 16th March 2006, George B. Mickum, a partner with the Washington law firm of Keller and Hackman, who represents Bisher al-Rawi and Jamil al-Banna, two of eight British residents held in Guantanamo, published an extended front-page report in 'The Independent' (London) in which he described the betrayal of these men by the British Government and their degrading treatment at the hands of the CIA and the US military, which models its barbaric behaviour on German Nazi practice. Mr al-Banna was reported to have said: 'When they came and arrested and handcuffed me, they were all wearing black. They even covered their heads black'. The men were taken to the notorious 'Dark Prison' in Kabul, Afghanistan, where they were 'imprisoned underground in isolation and darkness and tortured over [the space of] two weeks. They were held in leg shackles 24 hours a day. They were starved, beaten, dragged along floors while shackled, and kicked. Round-the-clock screams from fellow prisoners made sleep impossible. Subsequently they were transferred to the US Air Force base in Bagram, Afghanistan. Although they were chained hand and foot and hooded, while waiting to be transported, their captors beat them.... In Bagram, they were imprisoned and tortured for another two months. They were beaten, starved and sleep deprived.... Mr Al-Banna has repeatedly refused offers of freedom, money, and passports in exchange for false testimony. Ultimately, both men', Mr Mickum elaborated, 'were transported to Guantanamo, a trip so harrowing that a government informer, who was posing as a prisoner and had to be transported and treated the same as other prisoners, stated in a television interview that, at the time, he wished someone would shoot him. Forced to wear darkened goggles, face-masks, and earphones, chained at the ankles, handcuffed behind their backs with thin plastic that caused incredible pain, and, in some cases, lasting damage, starving and sick prisoners who had been deprived of sleep were forced to maintain a sitting position, legs forward and chained without moving for nearly 24 hours.'

'If they moved, they were beaten, kicked, hit with blunt objects.... During the first month at Guantanamo in which both were kept in strict solitary confinement, the pair were interrogated six hours per day and kept in the interrogation room for 14 hours per day, sometimes in freezing temperatures to induce hypothermia, one of the many techniques approved for use by the Bush Administration. In some cases, they were short-shackled, hand behind heels for the entire time.... Congress voted to ban torture by an overwhelming majority in December 2005, but President Bush signed the bill into law with a clarifying "signing statement" that allows him to ignore it whenever he chooses. Of more immediate concern is Congress's recent legislative reversal of the US Supreme Court's decision to allow prisoners at Guantanamo to file petitions for habeas corpus. In response to the Detainee Treatment Act, the US Government moved quickly to dismiss all of the habeas corpus cases filed by prisoners at Guantanamo, including those filed by Mr al-Rawi and Mr el-Banna. Neither man can return to the UK because their visas have expired. The British Government adamantly refused to reissue them visas or allow them to return home on humanitarian grounds. If the cases were dismissed, the US military intended to transfer Mr al-Rawi to Iraq and Mr al-Banna to

Jordan. There, each will be jailed with the host country's pro-American acquiescence. Recent reconnaissance indicates [that] the US Government is negotiating with foreign governments to jail prisoners from Guantanamo indefinitely'. By this means, the US authorities were, at one stage, preparing the closure of the notorious Guantanamo Bay concentration camp with the unreasonable expectation that, with its closure, the stench of its abominations could thereby be obliterated from the public consciousness.

AN 'IN-YOUR-FACE' ESOTERIC MILITARY SYMBOL ON DISPLAY

On 19th March 2006, The New York Times carried a front-page article entitled 'IN SECRET UNIT'S 'BLACK ROOM', A GRIM PORTRAIT OF U.S. ABUSE'. The 'Black Room' was a component of a temporary detention site at Camp Nama, the secret headquarters of a shadowy military organisation known as Task Force 6-26, but which changes its name regularly to enhance its anonymity (starting out as Task Force 121 when formed in the summer of 2003, and now operating under a different designation again). According to the newspaper's report, in the windowless, jet-black garage-size room, some soldiers beat prisoners with rifle butts, yelled and spit in their faces and, in a nearly area, used detainees for target practice in a game of jailer paintball.... Placards posted by soldiers at the detention area advised: 'NO BLOOD, NO FOUL'. The slogan, as one Defense official explained, reflected an adage adopted by task Force 6-26: If you don't make them bleed, they can't prosecute for it".

'The New York Times' article was accompanied by an illustration of the image on the placard [see Figure 87, page 545], which showed a black triangle with a white hole in the centre along the lines of which were displayed the words NO/BLOOD/NO FOUL. What the newspaper failed to point out, of course, was that the triangle is the primary occult geomasonic Illuminati symbol, and that the fact that it was solid black except for the 'game hole', signified the Black nature of the abominations being routinely committed in this Black environment - where Black is universally emphasised, denoting the enduring 'Heart of Darkness' of the US intelligence community and the military. The abominations at Camp Nama 'were' replicated 'at small field outposts, in Baghdad, Falluja, Balad, Ramadi and Kirkuk.... At the outposts, some detainees were stripped naked and had cold water thrown on them to cause the sensation of drowning'. One of Saddam Hussein's bodyguards 'was forced to strip... was punched in the spine until he fainted, put in front of an air-conditioner while cold water was poured on him and kicked in the stomach until he vomited'. The narrative elaborated: 'Army investigators were forced to close their enquiry in June 2005 after they said Task Force members used battlefield pseudonyms that made it impossible [sic] to identify and locate the soldiers involved', as though the abuses were unauthorised from above (an implied lie). 'The unit also asserted that 70 percent of its computer files had been (conveniently) lost'. The newspaper reported that, imitating the Nazi tactics used by their Nazi Ba'ath predecessors, 'in early 2004, an 18-year-old man suspected of selling cars to members of the Zarqawi terrorist network was seized with his entire family at their home in Baghdad. Task Force soldiers beat him repeatedly with a rifle butt and punched him in the head and kidneys'.

'The New York Times' attributed its research to an examination of declassified documents and interviews with more than a dozen military and civilian Defense Department and other US Federal Government personnel, some of whom 'agreed to speak about their experiences and observations out of what they said was anger and disgust over the unit's treatment of detainees and the failure of Task Force commanders to punish misconduct

In Secret Unit's 'Black Room,' A Grim Portrait of US. Abuse

By ERIC SCHMITT and
CAROLYN MARSHALL

As the Iraqi insurgency intensified in early 2004, an elite Special Operations forces unit converted one of Saddam Hussein's former military bases near Baghdad into a top-secret detention center. There, American soldiers made one of the former Iraqi government's torture chambers into their own interrogation cell. They named it the Black Room.

In the wtndowless, jet-black garage-size room, some soldiers beat prisoners with rifle butts, yelled and spit in their faces and, in a nearby area, used detainees for target practice in a game of jailer paintball. Their intention was to extract information to help hunt down Iraq's most-wanted terrorist, Abu Musab al-Zarqawi, according to Defense Department personnel who served with the unit or were briefed on its operations.

NO
BLOOD
NO FOUL
The High Five
Paintball Club

A placard from Camp Nama in Iraq, where some detainees were used as paintball targets.

The Black Room was part of a temporary detention site at Camp Nama, the secret headquarters of a shadowy military unit known as Task Force 6-26. Located at Baghdad International Airport, the camp was the first stop for many insurgents on their way to the Abu Ghraib prison a few miles away. Placards posted by soldiers at the detention area advised, "NO BLOOD, NO FOUL." The slogan, as one Defense Department official explained, reflected an adage adopted by Task Force 6-28: "If you don't make them bleed, they can't prosecute for it." According to Pentagon specialists who worked with the unit, prisoners at Camp Nama often disappeared into a detention black hole, barred from access to lawyers or relatives, and confined for weeks without charges. "The reality is, there were no rules there," another Pentagon official said.

TASK FORCE 6-26 Inside Camp Nama

The story of detainee abuse in Iraq is a familiar one. But the following account of Task Force 6-26, based on documents and interviews with more than a dozen people, offers the first detailed description of how the military's most highly trained counter-terrorism unit committed serious abuses.

It adds to the picture of harsh interrogation practices at American military prisons in Afghanistan and Guantanamo Bay, Cuba, as well as at secret Central Intelligence Agency detention centers around the world.

The new account reveals the extent to which the unit members mistreated prisoners months before and, after the photographs of abuse from Abu Ghraib. were made public in April 2004, and it helps belie the original Pentagon assertions that abuse was confined to a small number of rogue reservists at Abu Ghraib.

The abuses at Camp Nama continued despite warnings beginning in August 2003 from an Army investigator and American intelligence and law enforcement officials in Iraq. The C.I.A. was concerned enough to bar its personnel from Camp Nama that August.

It is difficult to compare the conditions at the camp with those at Abu Ghraib because so little is known about the secret compound, which was off limits even to the Red Cross. The abuses ap-

Continued on Page 4

Figure 87: The lead story in 'The New York Times' dated 18th March 2006, showing an image of a black triangle used on a placard erected at the US military prisoner abuse centre, Camp Nama, at Baghdad International Airport The newspaper displayed this occult Black geomasonic-esoteric illuminati symbol prominently in the first column on the front page, but failed of course to explain its significance - which was exclusively for the attention of 'the interested'.

more aggressively' - a ridiculous observation, given that the culture of 'Black abuse' flowed from the top and was in any case inculcated into the abusers, many of whom are emotionally damaged angry young men who have experienced a mind-mapping education with zero spiritual content designed to create a nation of spiritually vacant, controllable zombies. In conversation with an expert on how the American educational system has long since been perverted by evil manipulators along German lines (as previously reviewed) into a diabolical social control conveyor belt, the Author was told that 'it's not their fault. They are full of anger' because they have been brought up as though they are animals, with no spiritual dimension at all. It was hardly surprising, therefore, that these young men, once further brutalised by the US military, treat prisoners like the animals they are themselves. The brutalisation and 'animalisation' of American youth has been paralleled by a similar process in parts of the Middle East.

UNDER SECRETARY OF DEFENSE FOR INTELLIGENCE

DATE 6/26/04

MEMO FOR Gerry Boykin

Get to the bottom of this immediately.

This is not acceptable.

I want a fuller report of action taken, etc., by Wednesday.

In particular I want to know if this is part of a pattern of behavior by TF 6-26.

SC

Figure 88: A note written by the Under Secretary of Defense for intelligence, Stephen A. Cambone, dated 26th June 2004, to his Deputy, Lieutenant General William G. Boykin, instructing him to look into and report immediately on US military and intelligence-driven abominations at Camp Nama, adjacent to Baghdad International Airport. This note was displayed with 'The New York Times' analysis on 18th March 2006 of abuses routinely committed by the Americans against prisoners. Its purpose was doubtless to signal that such abominations are anathema to senior officials, notwithstanding evidence of a systematically inculcated Nazi-style US culture of institutionalised brutality.

BAD PUBLICITY PROMPTS SECOND THOUGHTS AT HIGHEST LEVEL

'The New York Times' article just cited conveyed the distinct impression of an officially controlled face-saving 'clean-up' operation, designed to pre-empt further bad publicity by imposing an 'official version' of events and of measures taken to 'correct mistakes' - providing another indication in the first quarter of 2006 that the chaos generated by the Nazi-style Iraq and Afghanistan invasions had exceeded whatever level of global criticism the controlled Illuminati cadres can tolerate. Taken with other indications that the immediate period of US and collaborating British neo-Nazi aggressive foreign adventurism might have been subject to very temporary revision, this report was among several that suggested a belated (insincere) rethink, for public consumption purposes anyway, at the highest levels in the White House, the Pentagon, and in Congress, which is so vulnerable to corruption. "The New York Times" prominent display, accompanying the article, of a

ADOLF EICHMANN AND AMIN AL-HUSSEINI

In the Arab world, the founding father of the Palestinian movement is usually said to be Amin al-Husseini, an associate for the founder of the Muslim Brotherhood, El-Banna. The Muslim Brotherhood was originally an operation of the German Abwehr, its purpose being to destabilise British power and influence in the Middle East. As early as 19209, Al-Husseini instigated a pogrom against indigenous Palestinian Jews. After being convicted in absentia, he was pardoned by the British Mandate Governor, the British Jew, Herbert Samuel. The Governor then proceeded to elevate Al-Husseini as Mufti of Jerusalem, thereby establishing the extraordinary tradition whereby Western leaders prefer extremists over moderates - as, for instance, in the case of the elevation and 'coronation' of the veteran Hamas terrorist Mahmoud Abbas in the context of the Palestinian Authority (the only extenuating circumstance being that Hamas is reliably reported to be controlled by Israeli intelligence - another example of this epidemic of double-mindedness).

In 1936, al-Husseini met Adolf Eichmann, one of the Jewish masterminds of the ethnic deansing offensive and shoah against the Ashkenazim Jews. The meeting took place in Palestine, where Eichmann visited for a few days. As a result of this meeting, Al-Husseini was then put on the Nazi payroll, and received Nazi funds which he used, in part, to instigate the Arab Revolt of 1937-39, according to testimony from the Nuremberg and Eichmann trials transcripts.

In 1941, Al-Husseini played a key role in instigating a pro-Nazi putsch in Iraq. This was the first of three Nazi Abwenr/Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst-sponsored coups d'etat in Iraq, designed to procure German access to Iraqi oil and to weaken the British. The business dealings between Donald Rumsfeld, President George Bush's Defense Secretary, originally of German extraction, and George Bush Sr. on the one hand, and their intelligence client Saddam Hussein on the other, proceeded seamlessly in this context - until the parties double-crossed each other, as criminalists always do. Following the collapse of the Nazi coup in 1941, Al-Husseini - one of the most hyperactive Arab intelligence provocateurs in history - helped to instigate the Fahud, or the murder campaign against the indigenous Jews of Iraq, a campaign that has been compared to the kristall-nacht in Hitler's Germany. The Jews of Iraq, very few of whom remain, are of course among the oldest inhabitants of that country, dating at least from the Babylonian captivity of around 590BC.

In November 1941, Al-Husseini travelled to Berlin to take operational orders directly from Hitler. During his visit Al-Husseini was treated like a head of state. He then spent the remaining war years in Nazi Germany, where he was officially recognised as the Head of State of a Nazi-Arab government in exile - Hitler having promised him that he would be appointed the chief administrator of the Arab world following the Nazi 'liberation'.

While in Nazi Germany, this top Arab nazi operative participated directly in in the Holocaust by preventing the exchange of Jews for German POWs, thereby ensuring their delivery to the crematoria. Al-Husseini also led the operation to train Bosnian Muslim brigades and other Muslim terrorist groups in Europe, who were involved in multiple atrocities. Al-Husseini distributed monies from the Sonderfund, representing funds looted from Jews en route to the concentration camps, sending funds to the Middle East for use in promoting Nazi and anti-Jewish propaganda.

After the war, Al-Husseini escaped to Cairo ahead of indictment at Nuremberg.

This Arab Nazi spent the rest of his life agitating against Israel, and died in Beirut in 1974. ■

peremptory note from the Under Secretary of Defense for Intelligence, Stephen A. Cambone ordering his deputy, the 'fake Christian' Lieutenant General William G. Boykin, to report back to him immediately on allegations of the abuse of detainees at Camp Nama, adjacent to Baghdad International Airport [see Figure 88, page 546], was of course calculated to imply that senior officials were opposed to these abominations - a 'line' that lacks all conviction, given the pervasive culture of abominable conduct that is not merely condoned, but inculcated into the military, and 'permitted' by the CIA's outsourced 'contractors' tasked with giving new meaning to its self-acknowledged 'Heart of Darkness'.

Nevertheless, as 'Svali' informed her debriefer, the Illuminati and their collaborators are usually (but, as may have become the case by the spring of 2006, not universally) indifferent to exposure of their 'Black behaviour'. She elaborated that the reason for this usual pattern of indifference is their knowledge that the general population will always be reluctant to believe abominations that lie so far beyond their own experience. Certainly, the Author found few signs, during discussions in the United States in March 2006, of any general revulsion at US military and intelligence excesses in this context -given the bombings, atrocities and killings of US personnel in Iraq and Afghanistan, which, for most people interviewed, provided a convenient rationale for the appallingly barbaric conduct of their military. A few people seemed uncomfortable when the subject was raised; but the usual response was to change it. Witnessed in parallel was something even more sinister: relative US official indifference to the 'public relations disasters' consequent upon the exposure of past atrocities. A similar syndrome was observable in London.

This indifference reflects the sinister reality that, as already explained, such exposures actually serve the Illuminati's evil purpose - of desensitising the entire world to abominations, death and destruction, which is their sole enduring speciality, and with which they are permanently preoccupied. After all, those who follow Lucifer are, by definition, bound to the force of death and perdition. Their 'Heart of Darkness' ensures that death is their only product. 'As righteousness tendeth to life: so he that pursueth evil pur-sueth it to his own death' [Proverbs, Chapter 11, verse 19] and to the deaths of others.

Having learned nothing from history, if they know any, the new generation of Nazis, spiritual and physical children of the 'Operation Paperclip' scientists, intelligence officers and Himmler cronies, are possessed by the same 'seething powers' as their predecessors - but are far more dangerous because of the immense accumulation of physical and (fake) fiat financial power that they control (or think they control), and because so many of them are personally compromised through blackmail. Because of their own spiritual corruption, they may believe that they have 'no alternative' but to continue with their mad project to consolidate the global hegemony of the self-appointed Illuminati elites whom they serve, and to whom they are allied, and to whom they are often bound by Masonic blood-oaths. So, comparing the Bush II regime's tactics with those of Hitler and documenting connections between Prescott Bush and the Nazis, is nothing like enough to explain why the United States is being transformed into a Fascist police state - even if this process may appear briefly, at times, to be halting or on the verge of being postponed or reconsidered. The mystery is deepened by the curious reality that President George W Bush is himself said to be far from enamoured with his father's German-oriented manipulative behaviour.

However talk of a split between the senior Busche and his son cannot be confirmed, and may represent disinformation, given repeated indications of German (DVD, Dachau) influence at the highest levels in Washington - the appointment of General Mike Heyden, who reports to John Negroponte, who allegedly reports to Bush Sr., being a case in point.

SOVIET JEWISH COMMUNIST-FASCISTS SERVING UNCLE SAMUEL

To help them impose the Fascist model, the US proto-Nazis notoriously invited two 'for-mer' KGB Generals, Oleg Kalugin (the poisoned umbrella expert, of Jewish extraction) and Alexander Karpov, former KGB Rezident at the Soviet Embassy in Washington, to join the consultancy payroll of the Department of Homeland Security in 2004. They were subsequently joined by KGB General Yevgeniy Primakov (Finkelstein), the former head of Russian external intelligence, Gorbachev-era Prime Minister, Supreme Soviet official and top intelligence and Middle East expert, who publicly rejoiced at this opportunity to come aboard the US 'gravy train'. Specifically, the Author's intelligence publication Soviet Analyst[16] reported in April 2003 that 'the appointment of Yevgeniy Primakov as a 'consultanf to the US Department of Homeland Security' was among the most alarming developments to have been monitored since President Bush Jr. came to office. 'The former KGB chief, who of course allegedly has blood on his hands 'in spades', will, among other things, provide the United States with the benefit of his unparalleled population control experience in connection with the development of a State Security (SS) Citizen Threat File, recently set up under the auspices of the US Department of Transportation (because the Transportation Department's budget was raided to finance the purchase of the computer hardware and software that was needed)'.

'Data processed through this equipment will be disseminated to a division entitled the Office of Internal Security - established by and serving the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), the Department of Homeland Security, and several other agencies. This agency, under the previously disgraced, since rehabilitated and dubiously-pedigreed Admiral Poindexter, is coordinating a colossal operation to establish 'Citizen Threat Files' on every citizen of the United States. The resulting database will incorporate credit files, medical files, political and religious affiliations, military histories, attendance at anti-Government rallies, and other dimensions of human existence. When questioned about what personal information the US authorities would actually be liable to access, the Department of Homeland Security replied that it would defeat the purpose of the programme if it were to reveal what kind of information would be sough?.

'Assisting General Primakov in the installation of this US version of the Soviet-style repressive control apparat will be General Aleksandr Karpov, the former KGB station chief (that is, Rezident) in Washington. The two Soviets, who of course continue serving the covert Communist Party of the Soviet Union, will draw substantial remuneration for their 'services'. In a recent interview, Primakov said amid cynical laughter that he couldn't wait to join the 'Pay Corps', and that a large number of 'former' KGB Generals and Colonels were lining up to join the rush to be signed up for their American official pay checks. After all, Khrushchev Jr. works for the Washington-based Heritage Foundation'.

'General Primakov, who personally spearheaded arrangements for the implementation of the GRU's global terrorism 'work' using ignorant and brainwashed Islamic radicals, was voluble when asked what all this was supposed to be about. The establishment of the State Security Citizen Threat File was just one of many steps being prepared by the US Government to tighten security in view of the terrorism threat - of which he failed to remind his interviewer that he was one of the chief Soviet architects. He volunteered that when the National Identity Card Act (NICA) is passed, the Posse Comitatus Act is overturned, and other items of repressive legislation are approved by Congress, the White House will have acquired greater control over the American people than the

Kremlin could exert over the Russian people when Stalin was alive'.

'Primakov thought that was very funny, and laughed. He elaborated that he also found it highly amusing that 'all these right-wing flag-wavers' who were so anti-Communist, were now supporting a state policy involving the introduction of 'internal passports' (his words). Yes, he reiterated that the State Security Citizen Threat File and NICA were among measures being developed in order to sensitise the US population to new kinds of documentation and to the carrying of identity cards, pursuant to America introducing the Soviet policy, as he put it, of 'internal passports'.

Meanwhile the former KGB Chief, who remains a top Soviet strategist, continues to assist the GRU in prosecuting the Party's revolutionary global terrorism sub-strategy'[16]. His knowledge of what is going on in the United States is sufficiently well-honed for him to have understood that Fox News seems like a propaganda organ of the Bush Administration. In an interview in July 2004, Primakov joked: 'We had [sic] Pravda. Your Republicans have Fox News'. In June 2004, Primakov stated in a separate interview that the Bush II Administration was engaged in 'the Sovietisation of America and that when the full provisions of Patriot Act II became law, the authorities would be 'allowed' to establish an American GULAG'. As indicated in Appendix 1 on pages 612-613 the structures for the US GULAG have been in place for some years. The language of Patriot Act II said to be almost identical to that of the 1965 Soviet Internal Security Enhancement Act.

PRIMAKOV AND FRIENDS JOIN UP WITH GENERAL RICHARD SECORD

In yet another interview conducted (in early 2006), KGB General Primakov - whose code-name means that he is the primus inter pares - noted that he, Karpov and Kalugin, had joined the former East German secret police (STASI) chief, General Marcus Wolf, also of Jewish extraction, to run a newly established corporation based in downtown Sophia, Bulgaria. Sources say that the new entity's title approximates Trans-Global Security Consulting Group Limited, and that General Richard Secord, likewise of Jewish extraction, is on the firm's board. Marcus Wolf had further been co-opted as a consultant to the Department of Homeland Security where, according to misinformed or deliberately obfuscating British intelligence sources, he was supposedly being 'debriefed'. Wolf's speciality, while in charge of key components of the East German repression apparat, was to convert an estimated one-third of the population into spies - against each other, their families, and everyone else.

The objective of the Sophia-based organisation, Primakov told an intelligence-connected interviewer, is to provide ongoing training for the heads of the vast new political organisation, linked to and spawned by close associates of George Bush Sr., to be known as the Neighbourhood Watch Association network. Training will also be provided to assist the development of the new Civilian Defense Force (CDF) when fully funded. In the familiar tradition of Leninist 'candour', General Kalugin, who knows what he is talking about, is on record as having said that the intention is to form a new Gestapo in the United States. As will be reviewed again later, the STASI was and still is used as long-range cover by the successor 'Black' intelligence agency to the Abwehr, a.k.a., the Gehlen Organisation, a.k.a. DVD - Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, based in Dachau. For confirmation that the Communist and Nazi lines' are two sides of the same dialectical coin, in the unlikely event that the reader may have momentarily forgotten this, see Figure 89 on page 551. This image provides graphic proof that Nazism (Fascism) and Communism are FALSE dialectical opposites. They were developed by 'the two Karls', as will be explained.

INSTALLATION OF 'NEIGHBOURHOOD CONTROL COMMITTEES'

The former Chairman of the Republican National Committee, Ed Gillespie, boasted in February 2006 that he had already reached his objective of recruiting at least three million 'spies' for the Neighbourhood Watch Association, who will operate Soviet-style 'neighbourhood committees' and will sit in bars and coffee shops across the country, listening for hints of prospective sedition, making notes and finding out people's names and addresses. The organisation he had put together on instructions evidently issued by Republican Party cadres has received funding from the American Freedom Association, which must not be confused with a legitimate organisation of the same name. The Foundation was said to be providing an initial $5.0 million annually to finance this 'free-standing' embryonic domestic spying network. The objective is to establish a 'private' Gestapo in the hands of the globalist criminalist Illuminati cadres who have long since seized control in the United States, but whose decisive grip on permanent power is not yet (as of 2006) 'irrevocably' cemented into place. The spy network is to be 'privatised' in order to separate it from any question of official control, and from any restrictions, in terms of what kinds of people are employed to man this sinister 'fifth column' network, such as gangsters and operatives from the criminal underworld with which the organisers are very familiar. Whether these new 'brownshirts' wearing civilian clothes will mushroom to become a free-standing Interior Ministry in Leninist competition with the Department of Homeland Security, a.k.a. Ministry of State Security, remained, in 2006, to be seen. Under the Patriot III omnibus spending legislation, the Department of Justice was expected to restart its previously suspended 'Inform on Your Neighbour' programme, upgraded to form the nucleus of parallel para-militarised and politicised Neighbourhood

Figure 89: An early Nazi Labour Day Emblem: This piece of Nazi 'memorabilia' definitively confirms that National Socialism (Nazism) was/is twinned with Communism. The emblem illustrates the young Karl Marx, a hammer and sickle, and the spread-eagled bird sitting astride an occult circle inside which is an occult swastika. The bird with its wings outstretched is an occult symbol used by the Rosicrucians [see Figure 90, page 553] and derived from the winged globe of Egypt, illustrated in a rare Rosicrucian geomasonic work by Manly P. Hall [see Figure 91, page 555]. Source: Nazi Regalia, Jack Pia, Ballantine, 1971.

Watch Association and Civilian Defense Force structures, the outlines of which were only emerging as this book was being finalised. Whatever the outcome, the models for all this frenetic secret activity are the Illuminati's Nazi and Communist formulae.

The choice of Bulgaria as the location for the 'Trans-Global Security Consulting Group Limited' was suspicious. Bulgaria is a small, poor, and totally corrupt country and, since the 1980s, has been the primary external seat of Russian, Turkish and other organised criminal enterprises, of which Bulgaria's own KINTEX is a notorious example. The country is an important transit link between 'Heroin Number 4' exports from Afghanistan to Europe - greatly boosted as a direct consequence of the American invasion, which resulted in heroin production soaring from a 'negligible' 100 tonnes under the Taliban in 2001, to over 4,500 tonnes in 2004, in conformity with the Illuminati's greed for drug-related 'pipeline' funding - to Europe and the United States. Deals are usually arranged between the Turkish Mafia intermediaries and Italian Mafia traders, who buy heroin from the Turks and ship it to Europe. They also make extensive use of the Polish port of Gdansk, assisted by Italian Mafia operatives resident in Poland[17]. For any Soviet-US 'security consulting' group to be located in Sophia therefore smells of further intelligence preparations for the proliferation of New Underworld Order corruption, even suggesting that the real purpose of the intended Neighbourhood Watch Association arrangements is actually to provide cover for unimpeded drug-trafficking, and pre-emptive precautionary structures against any official operations designed to disrupt this burgeoning criminalist activity. For make no mistake: the hegemony of the Illuminati, which is still not inevitable and which, in any case, will fail, after wreaking historically unprecedented death, chaos and destruction, presupposes the unhindered primacy of open-ended criminalism in every corner of governmental and 'free-standing' components of society. Why else was the corrupt British 'New Labour' Government engaged, in 2006, in establishing gambling houses in British provincial cities, if the intention was not to provide a bridge into Britain for US organised criminal gangs and further outlets for drug- and organised crime-related money-laundering? The point here is that the new US Reich is built and motivated by corruption, which means that the structures that its progenitors develop will corrupt themselves, as happened in Nazi Germany.

REPUBLICAN PARTY CONNECTIONS WITH THE NAZIS

In the 1930s, the US Republican Party paid for Nazi broadcasts and employed German Nazis to assist with the formulation of election campaigns. Herbert Hoover, of German extraction, reportedly conspired with top Nazi officials in Berlin to unseat President Roosevelt in the General Election held in 1940. When George Bush Sr. was Chairman of the Republican National Committee, he set up ethnic heritage groups within the Party as havens for former Nazis. He also employed known Nazi criminals on his campaign staff. Moreover, in the United States, as in Germany, Nazism has crucial Jewish connections, beyond the Jewish background of prominent figures on the political stage today. One of the most important Jewish influences on the US Nazis and so-called 'neo-cons' (who are almost all Jewish, and whose philosophy is akin to Trotskyism in many respects) was a certain German Jewish Fascist posing as a 'refugee', Leo Strauss. The Zionist mentality and the Nazi-Fascist mentality are identical, being progeny of the same genes; and there has always been a close and sinister association between Zionism and the Nazis, as is implicit in the preceding Chapter. The Zionists actually attempted to limit the choices available for European Jews to two: emigrate to Palestine (under the provisions wrung by

Chaim Weizmann and his colleagues from the British Mandate) or perish in the (intended) Holocaust. This reality 'illuminates' does it not, the suppressed collaboration between senior Nazi Illuminati Jews and the German ethnic Illuminati Nazis over the industrialised mass murder 'ethnic cleansing' abomination. This collaboration was much more extensive than has yet been reported, with new glimpses of what was going on surfacing from time to time. For instance, in 1951, a Jewish doctor then employed in the Tel Aviv municipal hospital, was accused by several witnesses of brutal acts committed at Vlanow camp, where he had acted as 'assistant to the German camp commandant'. A female witness said he had beaten her unconscious, and when she had recovered, she had found her three sons, aged 12, 15 and 18, shot dead. Two weeks earlier, she said, she had seen the accused order the Ukrainian camp police to remove 30 prisoners, including her husband, who were then shot. On 8th May 1948, the Jewish Telegraph Agency reported that 'the verdict in the trial of 23 guards at the Breendouck concentration camp in Antwerp, one of the lesser-known Nazi hells, was announced here yesterday. Among the guards are three Jews, Walter Obler, Leo Schmandt and Sally Lewin. Obler and Lewin have been sentenced to death and Schmandt to 15 years' imprisonment'. Many such reports are believed by researchers to have been 'censored' by intelligence or Jewish-linked cells attached to press rooms.

As a student, Leo Strauss studied Nietzsche, Heidegger, and Schmitt, the philosophers who provided the basis for Fascism - a concept developed by one of the Two Karls' (see page 558), Professor Karl Keller, of Frankfurt University. As his studies progressed, Strauss's views became increasingly Fascist, focusing his thinking on the necessity of totalitarian government. He rejected all principles of international law and believed in maintaining the masses ignorant and in general servitude - which is being

VAY
LOHEJM YEHEE AUR VAYEHEE AUR
THE BROTHERHOOD OF THE ROSY CROSS.
AMORC

Figure 90: Two Rosicrucian symbols that employ the 'spread-eagle' symbol adopted by the Nazis. As Figure 91 on page 555 shows, this symbol is borrowed from the ancient Egyptians. Egypt was and is the Biblical metaphor for 'Darkness', an 'honour' which it shares with Ba-BeAon, where Baalim (demon-gods) were worshipped. Other Rosicrucian occult symbols include a large number of Masonic images, notably one beneath which is inscribed the words: ROSICRUCIAN ILLUMINATI. The secret Rosicrucian network penetrated Freemasonry from 1617 onwards. Weishaupt's consoldiated the penetration at Wilhemlsbad in 1782.

achieved in the United States and Britain 'as we speak' by means of the deliberate confusion fostered through the Internet, the fake and sterile 'celebrity culture', the proliferation of demonic 'music' (demon-noise) and Luciferian games, videos and pornography, the mass sports culture, and the myriad other cynical means of procuring the 'dumbing-down' of the general population in contemporary conditions.

Leo Strauss was one of the most important Nazi agents of influence to have penetrated the US structures, having left Nazi Germany in 1934 with the warm commendation of the Nazi jurist and philosopher, Carl Schmitt, who was personally responsible for arranging, in 1934, a Rockefeller Foundation scholarship for Strauss. This enabled him to leave Germany, to study first in France and then in Britain. Strauss arrived in the United States from England in 1937. After a brief spell as a research fellow in the Department of History at Columbia University, he then became a member of the graduate faculty at the New School for Social Research in 1938, which he infected with some of his weird and sick Illuminazi ideas.

ILLUMINAZI IMPERATIVE TO CONTROL THE 'MAINSTREAM' MEDIA

The New School of Social Research was founded in 1919, a year after Willard Straight, the father of Michael Straight, who was associated with the 'Cambridge Five' (see page 560) had died during the post-First World War influenza pandemic. Straight Sr., who had been a partner of J. P. Morgan, thought that the United States' security depended upon the British fleet, and that it was in the United States' best interests to enter the First World War. Naturally, he also saw the war as a brilliant opportunity for US bankers and industrialists, as always, to make substantial gains inter alia at Britain's expense. In 1915, Straight Sr. had left the Morgan empire for a position within the American International Corporation, which was affiliated with National City Bank. A year earlier, Straight had founded and funded the 'New Republic', a left-wing current affairs magazine which his son Michael was to edit years later. J. P. Morgan became obsessed with the media during the First World War - emulating Lenin's parallel obsession with publishing, newspapers, film and theatre as propaganda vehicles - and willingly helped to finance the journal, for three interesting reasons which typify the thinking of the 'Illuminati'. First, the journal would keep him informed of the thinking in left-wing circles, given the assumed imminent ascendancy of Communism, which he seemed to know all about: he even financed an agent inside the US Communist press. Secondly, Morgan believed that a journal such as Straight's 'New Republic' would allow the Left (component of the Left-Right dialectic) to blow off steam, thereby providing a safety valve. Thirdly, his calculation was that sponsorhip of the journal would give him the power of veto over any plans originated from the Left.

Illuminist J. P. Morgan's sponsorhip and control of the 'New Republic'- an operation remarkably similar to the British Rothschilds' interest in 'The Economist', the Fabian journal, complete with its red masthead, which sells itself as an objective journal of international affairs - was only one of the steps he took to procure control over the media. In 1915, he brought 12 newspapermen together (12 newspapermen + J. P. Morgan = a Council of 13) and commissioned them to determine how the US national press could be brought under control; and his panel decreed that all that was necessary was to achieve control over 25 of the most influential papers. Morgan's immediate response was to send agents to BUY the editorial policies of the 25 selected and targeted newspapers. Morgan also used his deep pockets to finance the American Legion and to craft it into a trade union-busting and agitprop organization of hired thugs who ran amok during the 'Red Scare' of 1919, terrifying and murdering countless trade union leaders and leftists. Of course, these details of the United States' early Nazi/Fascist 'brownshirt' history have been conveniently 'forgotten' and are never mentioned in 'polite society'.

It is usually asserted that the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) is an offshoot of, or 'controlled by' (or both) the Royal Institute of International Affairs (Chatham House), Britain's premier globalist think-tank. This is a remarkably long-lived piece of disinformation. In reality it began as yet another Morgan (Illuminati) front group, aimed at influencing the American population. It emerged specifically during the First World War from the Rhodes Roundtable Group. Most of the earliest members were Morgan employees who had met their British counterparts during the Paris Peace Conference. The CFR was meant to be a bridge between the Morgans and the Rockefellers, with the Rockefellers providing much of the necessary finance. As the Rockefellers' fortune began to outgrow that of the Morgans, the Council on Foreign Relations came to be more dominated by the Rockefellers. The links between the Morgan and Rockefeller dynasties were further promoted by the Yale Skull and Bones 'patriarch' Percy Rockefeller, one of the darkest US Illuminati grandees of his age, who served on the Board of Morgan Guaranty Trust.

Meanwhile Leo Strauss remained at the Morgan-connected New School of Social Research for ten years. In 1948, he accepted a position at the University of Chicago, founded by the Rockefellers, which became the source of the theory of 'monetarism', a mechanism for the 'control' of the expanding fiat money supply. Significantly, this 'economic philosophy' did not 'take off' until after the collapse of the Bretton Woods system, which gave rise to the uncontrolled expansion of the US dollar money supply. It first gained a foothold in the United Kingdom, not least as a consequence of detailed coverage published in successive issues of 'International Currency Review', and became the dominant theme of Mrs Thatcher's Governments.

In the United States, monetarism was preached by Milton Friedman, and his teachings fell on decidedly receptive Federal Reserve Board ears, given the need for an intellectual 'discipline' to govern and control the expansion of the fiat money supply both domestically and internationally. In the event, the expansion of fiat money has been hidden from general public view because it has taken place primarily in the intergovernmental sector, the banking system, and with the use of offshore corporations, banks and accounts - which is where the New Underworld Order of the Illuminati has achieved its most profound impact and where it has sown the seeds of its own destruction.

Figure 91: The Winged Globe of Egypt. This symbol, which appears over the pylons or gates of many ancient Egyptian palaces and temples, is emblematic of the three persons of the Egyptian Trinity. It can thus be seen from Figures 89 and 90 that (a) Nazism is the dialectically opposite 'wing' of Communism and (b) it was/is an illuminati operation deriving its occultic symbology via Rosicrucianism from Egypt (= The Darkness'). Hence, the Rosicrucians launched the 'New World' Order, Communism and Nazism as mechanisms for the prosecution of their global hegemony objectives. The wings, the serpents and the solar orb in the image above are the insignia of Ammon, Ra, and Osiris. This illustration, originally from Maurice's 'Indian Antiquities', was reproduced in the extremely rare Rosicrucian edition of the late (1920s) US occultic Masonic authority, Manly P. Hall's 'Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy', 1928. Only about 100 copies were of this work were printed (by the H. S. Crocker Company Inc., San Francisco). It was intended only for high-level adepts.

Not only was Strauss a fanatical Jewish promoter of Fascist ideology, but his entry into the United States and his work there for most of his life was supported financially by two of the most powerful American Fascist-Illuminati families. The Rockefellers' Fascist credentials are extraordinary. For instance, the Rockefeller-owned Standard Oil Company did business with the Nazis during the Second World War; while it was the Rockefeller Foundation that provided the funding for much of the Nazi regime's research into eugenics, including funding for the occultic research into twins conducted in the concentration camps by Dr Mengele and his colleagues. The German Himmlerian scientists' fascination with the minds of twins is among the most sinister of the Nazis' Luciferian preoccupations, which has long been transferred to the United States.

Leo Strauss's legacy within the ideological intelligence and 'neo-con' communities in the United States is extensive. For quite simply, Leo Strauss passed on his fervent Fascist totalitarianism to a generation of figures who duly achieved positions of influence and power, and whose Nazi mentality is in the ascendant. Many 'neo-cons' serving in the Bush II Administration or in the American Enterprise Organization, which funded the notorious Project for the New American Century (PNAC) which promoted unilateral military intervention in defiance of international law and public opinion, were students and followers of Leo Strauss. It was during Strauss's tenure at the University of Chicago that David Rockefeller and David Ashcroft received degrees from the University of Chicago.

THE CHICAGO SCHOOL AND AN ECONOMIC POLICY OF RUIN

The Rockefeller family not only funded Strauss but have been instrumental in helping to destroy Third World economies. Several respected analysts have concluded that the Rockefellers have used the University of Chicago and their various family foundations to promote what, in the Third World context, has often led to an economic policy of ruin. The laissez-faire economics promoted by the Chicago School has failed numerous times in the past, and was one of the leading causes of the 1929 stock market crash and the resulting Great Depression. Such economic policies only lead to global Fascism and corporate rule, considered objectives of the Rockefeller and other Illuminati families.

One of the most successful operations sponsored by the Rockefellers and their allies fostering a latent Fascist mindset in the United States and Britain, has been their effective control over economic thinking. During the 1920s, the German-speaking Jewish academics Ludwig von Mises and Friedrich A. Hayek, who became well-known economists, rose to prominence assisted by Rockefeller funding. Von Mises toured the United States in 1926, thanks to sponsorship by the Laura Spelman Rockefeller Foundation, and successfully promoted the views of the Austrian (to become the Nazi) School of Economics. Von Hayek personally tutored David Rockefeller in economics, and in 1950, Von Hayek was brought to the United States to teach at the University of Chicago, as Professor on the Committee of Social Thought. One intelligence report states: 'This was an exceptionally dangerous position for a man that held the views Hayek held'. In 1945, Hayek's poorly written book 'The Road to Serfdom' openly attacked the concept of the nation state. Lo and behold, this 'right-wing' tutor was teaching the same doctrine as Lenin - a fact that should come as no surprise to us, given that Leninism and Fascism are simply two dialectical FALSE 'opposites' manipulated and controlled (behind the curtain like the Wizard of Oz) by the Illuminati -just as the so-called right-wing capitalist bankers J. P. Morgan and the Rothschilds financed left-wing publications. Von Hayek argued that the nation state was a hindrance to peace, while socialism presupposed totalitarianism; so he proposed a form of totalitarianism to take the place of the nation state, namely a supranational authority or World Federation consisting exclusively of the (corrupt) financial elite.

In case the governing structures of the existing nation states and even of the institutionally corrupt European Union Collective should fail to advance such a prospect with sufficiently decisive momentum, the 'financial elite' have long since resolved to drive towards this outcome on their own initiative - which explains why so many shadowy new financial networks and structures are springing up and being developed, that have only tenuous relationships with the nation states within which they are being established. These networks, which dispose of and handle flows-of-funds that dwarf the Gross National Products of many nation states, consider themselves to be 'stateless'. They are 'needed', inter alia, to distribute the vast and ever-accumulating flows of secret funds that are being generated by the drug-trafficking sector and as a consequence of clever untaxed exploitation of the Babylonian fiat money banking system. As this hidden process proliferates, centres of financial strength are developing within the framework of existing political structures which command buying and financial distribution powers placing them effectively in a higher echelon than the nation states in which they operate.

THE MALEVOLENT MINDSET OF FRIEDRICH VON HAYEK

In 1947, Friedrich Von Hayek created the Mont Pelerin Society, consisting of members the European financial elite, as a first step towards the realisation of the supranational authority he had written about in his book 'The Road to Serfdom'. This 'wholesale' organisation has, over the succeeding years, created numerous 'retail' 'conservative' think-tanks that promote free-market, laissez-faire policies on behalf of the Establishment (i.e., in the shadows, the Illuminati). Among such 'retail' think-tanks it has spawned have been the Heritage Foundation (1973), which behaves like a mouthpiece for CIA policies, the Fraser Institute (1974), the Manhattan Institute (1977) and the Pacific Institute for Public Policy Research (1978). It is very likely that the London-based Centre for Policy Studies, founded by the late Sir Keith Joseph, Mrs Thatcher's in-house guru, and directed for a time by Sir Alfred Sherman, a former Communist, has a similar origin. Since 1969, most of the Nobel Prizes for Economics have been awarded to promoters of laissez-faire economics - despite its spectacular Third World failures, and its built-in tendency to expand the loan portfolios of the Illuminati-friendly banks.

The connection between the University of Chicago and Fascism was vividly illustrated in Chile, when the 'boys from Chicago', disciples of Milton Friedman, destroyed the economy and reduced Chileans to near-serfdom under President Pinochet's version of the Nazi utopia - where dissent was eliminated by 'death squads'. It is not yet clear, but soon may be, how far away from such a Fascist outcome Britain and America were when this book was being finalised in 2006: but that both countries had moved far down the same road was becoming evident to a widening public as both Governments floundered amid the chaos they created, to begin with, in the former Nazi state of Iraq.

Friedrich Von Hayek's prescription requires corporations to assume effectively the status of sovereign nations, while the underlying nation states are reduced to the standing of quislings of the corporate state and enforcers of the laws that they require. Many powerful US 'Trotskyite' 'neo-cons' linked to the official structures are cloned with the mindset of Von Hayek, due to the fact that they believe in Mandeville. Never heard of him? Von Hayek rejected the truth that Man is created in the image of God[18], and traced his philosophical ancestry to the early 18th century Satanist, Bernard Mandeville.

THE DIALECTICAL WORK OF GERMANY'S 'TWO KARLS'

Two 'rival' but instrumental 'philosophies' were developed by the Illuminati controllers in the 19th century, to assist with the acceleration of their mad plans. At the very same time that Karl Marx (Moses Mordecai Levi) was writing the 'Communist Manifesto' under the direction of one group of Illuminists, the Jewish Professor Dr Karl Ritter of Frankfurt University was developing the Antithesis under instructions from another cadre of the Illuminati - so that those directing the long-range strategy at the highest levels could, in accordance with the perverse logic intended, exploit the differences between these two opposing 'mechanistic forces' to divide larger and larger components of the human race into opposing camps so that they could be armed and then enticed to destroy each other, along with their political and religious institutions. The evil work started by Professor Karl Ritter was continued by the nihilist German Illuminati Magus and philosopher Friedrich Wilhelm Nietzsche (1844-1900), and by Heidegger, and Schmitt, and was elaborated into Fascism en route to National Socialism, thus providing the controlling elite with the desired 'Black Regime' tools for the fomentation of the First and Second World Wars.

Figure 89 on page 551 shows definitively that Nazism and Communism are two gross manifestations of the same Luciferian 'Black' abomination. The early Nazi Labour Day emblem shows a youthful Karl Marx, a hammer and sickle, and a bird with its wings outstretched perched on an orb inside which is engraved a Nazi swastika.

Figure 90 on page 553 illustrates two Rosicrucian symbols that employ the 'spread-eagle' symbol used by the Nazis; and Figure 91 on page 555 reveals the original source of the 'Winged Globe of Egypt', displaying the actual derivation of these occult symbols: they are taken from 'The Darkness'. It was out of 'The Darkness (symbolised by ancient Egypt, where the civilisation was in thrall to the cult of death) that the children of Israel were led towards 'the land of milk and honey' - symbol for the light of the true God, away from and the opposite to, the darkness of Lucifer. According to Professor Rev. Sir Henry Chadwick[19], the 'milk and honey' metaphor would have been easily understood by the Israelites, since it was used in contemporary pagan mystery rites. The 'Exodus' from 'The Darkness' towards the 'land of milk and honey' is a living, real-time historical metaphor for the work of God in leading each of us towards the Truth, if we so wish.

Between 1859 and 1871, the American Satanist and Magus, Albert Pike, who was certainly 'possessed' and was able, as we have seen, to summon up evil spirits, elaborated a 'Blueprint for Global Revolution' involving three massive, successive upheavals or revolutions, which he thought would catapult the Illuminist conspiracy to its final stage during the 20th century. In the event, everything of course went badly wrong - with the possibly unintended Cold War stand-off, for instance, seriously undermining the timetable of his maddened successors; so a catastrophe was launched at the beginning of the 21st century in order to reignite and re-kick-start the World Revolution and to restore it so that it would conform more closely to the Blueprint. The 9/11 attacks were designed to set the agenda for the whole of the 21st century; and given the purported Islamic connection, clearly represent a Luciferian determination by the conspirators to generate the conditions for Pike's 'third conflagration'.

Most of Albert Pike's evil planning work was conducted in a 13-room mansion that he had built in Little Rock, Arkansas, which 'just happens' to have been the seat of the Clintons before Bill Clinton was elevated (by the Illuminati, of which he is a key member) to the US Presidency. Little Rock is also the home town of the Rose Law Firm, which is allegedly a continuing hyperactive servant of the secretive US Illuminati structures.

THE THREE CALAMITIES PLANNED BY ALBERT PIKE

As the episode involving Sister Ingersoll (see page 286) makes clear, General Albert Pike was certainly 'possessed' - a condition brought about by the scale of the slaughter over which he presided during the American Civil War, and by his repeated indulgence in occult seances and the summoning up of evil spirits at Masonic events. Pike concentrated his evil brain on developing practical plans for replicating the slaughter he had generated and witnessed during the Civil War, on the world stage. Experts believe that Pike was actually communicating with evil spirits when he developed these plans; but this Author would go further, suggesting that he was reflecting the intentions of Satan himself. According to his Blueprint, the third and so-called 'decisive' Luciferian conflict was to be fomented by deploying the 'actives' and agentur of the Illuminati to pit the Jews against radicalised Islam, so that these two opposing forces would destroy themselves. Although Pike appears not to have been of Jewish extraction, Giuseppe Mazzini, his partner in global criminality, certainly was: so here we have another extraordinary piece of evidence that a small minority of controlling Jews seem to have 'no problem' when it comes to plans for the partial destruction of members of their own race*.

Today, we can see clearly that much of the residue of Pike's first two calamities, which certainly 'changed' the world beyond recognition, have ostensibly been dismantled - and the dark forces and 'Dark Actors Playing Games' associated with them duly redeployed in preparation for Albert Pike's third, and 'final', intended global cataclysm, through the manipulation and leveraging of the differences between Zionist Jews and that parallel Luciferian invention, Islam. This explains the deliberate exploitation and further mobilisation of Islamic 'terror' and the artificially and instrumentally fomented tensions that are plaguing the world today. Within and behind this framework, the Nazi International intelligence strategists based at Dachau compete or collaborate to leverage their long experience of mobilising the Islamic fanaticism they have evoked, in the interests of long-range Pan-German hegemony strategy, which complements that of the Khazarian Illuminati and may for all practical purposes be at times merged with it.

On 15rd August 1871, Albert Pike informed his revolutionary colleague Giuseppe Mazzini that after the Third World War of global upheaval has ended, those who aspire to undisputed world domination will provoke the greatest social cataclysm that the world has ever known. The letter in which this demonic curse is spelled out is held in the British Museum library, and reads, in part, as follows:

'We shall unleash the Nihilists and Atheists, and we shall provoke a formidable social cataclysm which in all its horror will show clearly to the nations the true effect of absolute atheism, origin of slavery and the most bloody turmoil. Then everywhere, the citizens, obliged to defend themselves against the world minority of revolutionaries, will exterminate those destroyers of civilisation, and the multitude, disillusioned with Christianity (the True manifestation of which cannot be destroyed), whose deistic spirits will be from that moment without compass, anxious for an ideal, but without knowing where to render its adoration, will receive the true light through the universal manifestation of the pure doctrine of Lucifer, brought finally out into public view, a manifestation which will result from the general reactionary movement which will follow the destruction of Christianity and atheism, both conquered and terminated at the same time'. (Note this clear, perverse affirmation that Luciferians are not atheists - Ed.).

---

*Most Jews would be horrified to know this, and rightly so: but the evidence of this destructive Levitical/ Pharisaical/radical Rabbinical mentality is well documented, albeit kept under wraps. It was most abhorrently summed up by Maurice Samuel in the following ghastly 21 words: "We Jews, the destroyers, will remain the destroyers forever... Nothing that the Gentiles do will meet our needs and demands' ['Maurice Samuel: 'You Gentiles', 1924, cited by Douglas Reed, 'The Controversy of Zion', Veritas Publishing Company Ltd., Western Australia, page 107]. Although this statement directs vituperative hatred towards non-Jews, minds and souls that contain such hatred cannot be relied upon not to vent it upon their own people, as well: which is unfortunately what a significant number of Jewish Nazis did during the barbaric Third Reich period.

A direct link between Lenin and Albert Pike, which proves the Illuminist-Masonic origins of Soviet Communism (evident enough from the multiple Masonic symbolism visible in and around the Kremlin) can now be presented. A passage in Lenin's 'Collected Works', which were of course compiled and published before the First World War, reads as follows: 'The World War (i.e., as it turned out, of 1914-1918 - Ed.) will see the establishment of Communism in Russia; a Second World War will extend its control over Europe; and a Third World War will be necessary to make it worldwide'. The central phase of Lenin's forecast was almost fulfilled by the outcome of the Second World War, after the secretly revolutionary American controllers had deliberately permitted the revolutionary Soviets, originally funded by Khazarian Wall Street money, to extend the frontiers of Communism to the middle of Europe. With the removal of the Berlin Wall and the iron Curtain, and subsequent events, the Leninist strategists took 'one step forward, two steps back', to clear the way for preparations for the third intended conflagration envisaged by both Pike and Lenin - two rats out of the same sack.

One of most encouraging features of the bleak picture painted hitherto is that the flluminati are reliably reported - inter alia by 'Svali' - to be unhappy with their situation. Buried within that finding is the reality that, notwithstanding the brainwashing and Satanic abuse that so many Illuminati cadres have suffered in the past, the mind manipulators appear, on the basis of anecdotal evidence, to have been unable to obliterate the consciences of their victims, however dulled they may be. The Author has had personal, direct experience of one such victim, whose 'MK-ULTRA' personality had been deliberately split so many ways, that one had to be permanently on guard that his 'handler' would not 'trigger' a violent reaction on demand, or that a given word or phrase might have the same consequence. This deeply damaged criminal intelligence operative clearly retained a vivid sense of right and wrong, even though, when triggered or drugged, he would always show signs of intending to pursue the aiminal, evil course[20]. In the same way, the offspring of Illuminati figures often come to understand, at least in part, the error of their parents' ways - and are even, as in the case of Michael Straight, the son of Willard, able to attain a degree of belatedly valuable discernment,

MICHAEL STRAIGHT AND THE CAMBRIDGE 'APOSTLES'

Writing in his autobiography 'After Long Silence'[21], Michael Straight reported that in the autumn of 1936, he was introduced to a secret society calling itself the Cambridge Conversazione Society, whose members were known as The Apostles. Straight reported[22] that this secret society - like Skull and Bones, Scroll and Key et al at Yale (and similar secret societies designed to corrupt youth at other US universities) - had been founded in the nineteenth century. 'Its members included most of the University's great men'. The source of this information (about German flluminati penetration at Cambridge) was an undergraduate contemporary of Straight's called David Champernowne. 'I asked if I might be told the names of some of the members of the society. David pledged me to secrecy, then told me that Keynes was its most influential member. Denis Robertson was a member; so were Sir John Sheppard, the Provost of Kings; G. M. Trevelyan, the historian; the novelist. E. M. Forster; and the philosopher. G. E. Moore. Some of my friends were members, David added: Victor Rothschild, for example, and Guy Burgess and Anthony Blunt'. Burgess and Blunt were of course members of the notorious 'Cambridge Five' ring of moles, hitherto always assumed to have been agents for the Soviets. But as will now be revealed, they had 'other roles', as well - just as, in the later historical context, the STASI has provided deep cover for Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD).

Michael Straight then revealed that to join 'The Apostles', candidates had to take the equivalent of a blood oath. In Britain's more refined society, the pagan ritual initiation rites associated with Skull and Bones appear either not to have been de rigeur, to have fallen out of use, or never to have been instituted; alternatively, Michael Straight has not revealed the full extent of the necessary occult pagan rites for initiation into The Apostles. But he did confirm that members were bound by a ghastly oath:

'We met in Keynes' rooms. I held up my right hand and repeated a fearful oath, praying that my soul would writhe in unendurable pain for the rest of eternity if I so much as breathed a word about the Society to anyone who was not a member. It seemed a bit harsh, but Sheppard' [WHO WAS PROVOST OF KINGS, REMEMBER - THUS REPLICATING THE PARALLEL DIRECT AND CORRUPT INVOLVEMENT OF THE GOVERNORS OF YALE COLLEGE IN SKULL AND BONES] who carried a cushion with him wherever he went [sic!], patted me with his free hand and told me not to be alarmed. "You see", he explained, "our oath was written at a time when it was thought to be most unlikely that a member of the society would speak to anyone who was not Apostolic"'.

'I asked Sheppard how he would define the term Apostolic. He beamed at me in his childish way, "One must be very brilliant and extremely nice!" he said'[23].

Straight's subsequent prose leaves no doubt that the reader is expected to understand the homosexual overtones prevalent in this milieu - not least given that the occult ceremony took place in the rooms of John Maynard Keynes, a notorious homosexual. So, IN CAMBRIDGE AS AT YALE, a secret society, established in the 19th century, had been engaged for generations in corrupting young men and binding them together for lifetimes of worldly, self-interested communion, on the basis of ghastly, occult oaths (and in the United States, at least, a prolonged series of abominable pagan rituals). Such oath-taking is forbidden by Jesus Christ in explicit terms:

'Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths; But I say unto you, swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne; Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool; neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil[24].

Michael Straight elaborated that 'one of the Apostles who came back to Cambridge for our meetings was Guy Burgess.... As an undergraduate, Guy had been a member of the Communist cell in Trinity. I did not know that. He had broken with his Communist associates in 1934 in a manner that some of his friends found bizarre. That was also unknown to me. I knew only that he lived in London [and] that he was working for Captain Jack Macnamara, a Right-Wing Member of Parliament who had close ties to the Nazis. In a sidelong phrase, Guy would joke about the homosexual encounters he had taken part in with Macnamara and his Nazi friends. In a moment of elated intoxication, he would hint that he had learned something of importance through the indiscretion of a Nazi diplomat'.

'There was a suggestion that Guy was up to something; but what? He was close to the Rothschilds; were they supporting him? Jews were deeply concerned about the developing ties between Hitler's agents and the Conservative Party. So were others. For those ties were of immense potential significance. If the Conservatives were resolute in resisting German expansion, peace might be prolonged. But if a Conservative Government established secret ties to Hitler...'.

The Anglo-German Link, established by... Admiral Sir Barry Domville, was too disreputable to sponsor an alliance that was in the making. The Anglo-German Fellowship, in contrast, was led by powerful men. The Prince of Wales was known to favor closer ties with Germany. The Cliveden Set shared his views, and it included the hard core of the Conservative Party. Its aims were never discussed in public, but the opposition of students like myself to rearmament stemmed in part from an intuitive sense that the Government was rearming not to resist Hitler's armies but to divert them to the East.... What was Guy really up to? No-one asked him. Most of us were interested in politics; he had to wedge his way to the center of the political stage. Some of us were ambitious; he had to obtain power to satisfy his fantasies. He dreamed of using power for his own, capricious ends'.

'In his guise as Captain Macnamara's secretary, Guy pointed to Fascism as the wave of the future. He voiced no such opinions in the meetings of The Apostles. In any discussion of ideas, he was always ready with an apt quotation, an amusing anecdote, a suggestive analogy, a mocking riposte. If the question before the society was political, he spoke in metaphors that were distant and obscure. If he was challenged to state his own convictions, his bright blue eyes would widen. He would look at the challenger with a beguiling smile, and then speak of other things'[25]. Burgess et al were Nazis.

'CAMBRIDGE FIVE' EXPOSED AS ABWEHR AGENTS

In the autumn of 2005, the Author was informed by a British intelligence contact that elements of MI5 had reached the conclusion that Burgess, Maclean, Blunt and other British traitors, hitherto always believed to have worked for the Soviet Union, were in fact long-term agents of the German Abwehr who had found themselves 'stranded' following Hitler's de facto repudiation of the Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact. According to this interpretation, the British traitors Burgess and Maclean were thrown as a consequence upon the 'mercies' if Lavrentii Beria, Stalin's MVD secret police chief, who has been exposed by British intelligence as a long-term Abwehr mole working at the highest level of the Soviet Government. Beria sought supreme power immediately following the mysterious death of Stalin, but was arrested at Khrushchev's instigation during a risky operation in June 1953. According to a report from the US Embassy in Moscow, on the afternoon of 27th June 1953, 12 armoured personnel carriers, 36 motorcycles, twenty T34 tanks, 23 SU 100 self-propelled guns and 12 maintenance vehicles could be seen moving along Bol'shaia Sadovaia Street'[26]. The reason for this deployment was that Khrushchev and 'the coup plotters, improvising as they went along, were in considerable danger for the next few days, until the Beria forces could be subdued, and any potential challenges resisted. Although they tried to keep the arrest top secret, word was doubtlessly getting around and they could not be sure what the repercussions would be'. Khrushchev could not rely on colleagues in the Praesidium and effectively 'bounced' it into going along with the move against Beria, who may have been shot in June. Accounts of his death vary and have never been clarified, and neither have analysts yet focused upon Beria's long association with the Abwehr - hints of which emerged when the Praesidium of the Soviet

Council of Ministers was shown a document on 2nd June 1953, drafted and signed by Lavrentii Beria, entitled 'Measures to Improve the Political Situation in the GDR' which made the following recommendations to the East German Communist leaders:

'(1) Abandon the policy of forced construction of Socialism; (2) Work for the creation of a united, democratic, peace-loving and independent Germany; (3) Stop forcing the creation of agricultural cooperatives, which have met with great resistance from the peasants; (4) End the policy of eliminating private capital, which is premature, and draw private capital into key areas of the East German economy, including the agricultural sector; (5) Introduce broad steps to improve the financial system; and (6) Take broad measures to ensure individual citizens' rights and put an end to unjust and cruel judicial treatment; review those already in prison'[27]. Implementation of this document would have represented a radical dismantling of overt Communism and therefore a threat to the power structure in the Soviet Union itself, as well as throughout Eastern Europe. In other words, Beria attempted to implement the strategy finally unveiled more than a generation later under the cold eye of Beria's fellow Illuminati Khazarian, Mikhail Gorbachev, believed to have remained in charge of Soviet global intelligence strategy as late as 2005.

Given the Abwehr's penetration of Stalin's structures at the highest level, it would have been extraordinary if similar penetrations had not occurred within the supreme structures of other Great Powers, especially the United States and Britain. In the United States, the Abwehr secured the services of innumerable agents, from the Dulles Brothers and corrupt intelligence officers to the Nazi scientists brought to the United States under 'Operation Paperclip' and in subsequent years. But German influence and penetration of US structures should realistically be traced back at least to the foundation of Skull and Bones at Yale in the early 1830s; while any definitive analysis of it would have to include the activities of the Bush Family and of the academic penetrations by Von Mises, Von Hayek and Leo Strauss, already mentioned.

It would also need to take account of the previously mentioned indications that Dr Henry Kissinger, despite his known Soviet codename BOR, is alleged to be a primary US handler for Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau, as well as occupying a high occult Illuminati status - not least as the 'mentor' of George Bush Sr., and the official who 'persuaded' (ordered?) President Ford (Leslie Lynch King Jr.) to remove William Colby as Director of Central Intelligence, and to replace him with George Bush Sr., affirmed by intelligence sources to be nothing less than the head of DVD. This and other sensational findings were reportedly established when a team of operatives attended the Munich Beer Festival in October 2005, aided by a satellite positioned overhead. Their real purpose was to identify visitors and personnel entering and leaving the nearby DVD headquarters.

GERMAN PENETRATION AT HIGHEST LEVEL IN BRITAIN

In mid-October 2005, 'International Currency Review' exposed the late Sir Edward Heath, the British Prime Minister who died on 17th July 2005, as having been a long-term Abwehr agent. The expose revealed that 'within a matter of days of Heath's death on 17th July 2005 at the age of 89, the Editor of this service received two separate confirmations, both from British intelligence sources, that Edward Heath was a long-term agent of German (Nazi) intelligence. In fact Edward Heath betrayed his country for 60 years - the longest penetration in history. To remain undiscovered for 60 years is an achievement without parallel in the sordid history of geopolitical intelligence'.

'Edward Richard George Heath became a member of the Oxford Ring, based at

Balliol College, consisting of himself, Roy Jenkins, Geoffrey Rippon and Arthur (Madron) Seligman, who were together at Oxford University'.

All were recruited through or by a German intelligence agent working inside the College - Arnold Toynbee. Roy ('Woy') Jenkins (subsequently, Lord Jenkins of Hillhead) later became the Chancellor of the Exchequer in Wilson's Labour Government and thereafter the President of the European Commission (EC), while Geoffrey Rippon was the co-signatory together with Edward Heath of the United Kingdom's Treaty of Accession to the European Communities in January 1972, which led to Britain becoming a member of the EEC on 1st January 1973. Notwithstanding this, in February 1972, the Second Reading of the EEC legislation in the House of Commons was approved by a majority of only eight, 'in an atmosphere that degenerated into fisticuffs'.

'Arnold Toynbee's recruitments became the most successful German intelligence penetration operation ever directed at the United Kingdom, with three members of the Oxford Ring playing central roles in forcing Britain, predominantly against its will, into the German-sponsored European political and economic collective', which, as is partially reviewed on pages 567 et seq., is a hotbed of corruption.

'Both Edward Heath and Geoffrey Rippon received secret payments in exchange for their signatures on the accession document, setting the scene for subsequent corrupt payments for similar services rendered by some of their successors. For the odious intergovernmental system of secret, intelligence-managed 'Black Operations' geopolitical 'facility fees' or special corrupt payments, was already well established at the beginning of the 1970s'. According to (he Author's ongoing researches, it has become the norm.

'Edward Heath was a German (Nazi) agent who became Prime Minister of Great Britain. As soon as he was unexpectedly voted into power in 1970, he immediately set about to fulfil his secret instructions to bamboozle the British people and the House of Commons (which he did by perpetrating a number of gross lies that have since been exposed) into pleading for and accepting membership of the secretly German-sponsored political collective. And the initiators and directors of this project were the superior brains at the Madrid-based Nazi International, a.k.a. the German Geopolitical Centre, reviewed below' [see pages 573 et seq.].

'The Author remembers actually standing inside Downing Street, as it was possible to do in those days, and watching the newly elected Prime Minister entering Number 10 in triumph on the day of his election, 18th June 1970, after securing a narrow victory over the Labour Party led by Harold Wilson, having started at a clear disadvantage in the opinion polls. The so-called 'Conservatives' won office with an overall majority of 30 seats'.

'Heath first entered the Westminster Parliament with a tiny majority of 133 votes in the then marginal seat of Bexley, which he held until he belatedly retired from the House of Commons in 2001. According to the obituary published on 18th July 2005 in 'The Daily Telegraph', 'in his maiden speech[29], he attacked the then Labour Government for its very negative response to the Schuman Plan to create a single European market in coal and steel'. When Harold Macmillan became Prime Minister some 13 years earlier in 1957, he celebrated his victory with Edward Heath over a dinner of oysters and champagne at the Turf Club; and in 1960, Macmillan brought Heath into the Cabinet as Lord Privy Seal, responsible for negotiating the United Kingdom's first application to join the European Economic Communities. Harold Macmillan, like Edward Heath, has now been internally exposed by intelligence sources as a secret agent of the German Abwehr (Department of Defence, or military intelligence apparat)'.

'Heath was an agent of the super-secret German DVD - or Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst - the ultra-covert Continuum of Nazi International intelligence developed from the Abwehr and the Gehlen Organisation, one component of which had established itself as the German Geopolitical Centre in Madrid in 1943, when the leading German Nazi officials realised there was at least a 50% chance that Germany might lose the war. The DVD organisation itself was set up by Admiral Canaris in 1944'.

'The DVD is so secret that its finances are hidden (that is, it is financed by 'Black Operations' resources) and there appear to be no traces at all of this service being funded by the German taxpayer, precisely because it is funded clandestinely'.

'And what will cause very great astonishment outside intelligence services around the world is the location where the DVD is based: DACHAU, the town that gave its name to the notorious concentration and Holocaust extermination camp'.

'While ostensibly visiting the Salzburg (music) Festival in 2003, Sir Edward Heath travelled to Munich and Dachau, where he was alerted by the DVD that his life-long service to Germany's covert Nazi intelligence community had been uncovered by British investigators. A UK intelligence source reports that he literally blew a fuse when this warning was delivered - which is to say, he suffered a pulmonary embolism'.

'Plans to interrogate Heath were blocked at Joint Intelligence Committee (JIC) level and by Number 10 Downing Street'. One of the Author's special friends commented: 'No surprises there' - given that MI6 is headed by an operative allegedly considered to be an asset of French and German intelligence'. It has since been established that this also, in mid-2006, applied to the head of MI5. Like most of his post-war predecessors, the Prime Minister, Tony Blair, was alleged to have been compromised on several levels.

'The super-secret covert Black Nazi DVD acts with the approval of the German Government, and 'owns' the German Chancellorship, beginning with the postwar Chancellor Konrad Adenauer, who was an asset of the German Abwehr before its collapse. It follows that the German Government is, at any point in time, actually the instrument of the secret Nazi International Establishment, the main blueprint of which was intercepted by the Allies in the early 1950s'. (It is also a fact that the 'overt' or 'White' German foreign intelligence service, Deutsche Bundesnachrichten Dienst, reports directly to the German Chancellor, as well).

This has all been covered up as a consequence of the extensive penetration of the CIA and, indirectly through the French connection, of MI6, in later years'.

The Author's International Currency Review report elaborated: 'When the members of the Nazi Oxford Ring were recruited, the Master of Balliol College, Oxford (Lindsay) entertained certain nagging suspicions. It is understood that he was initially tipped off by the College's Head Porter; at all events, the Master reported the members of the Ring to MI5, which 'then' maintained a recruiter (for British intelligence) based at Oxford University, and had become well aware of increased German intelligence activity in the Oxford area during the months prior to the Munich Conference, from which the Prime Minister, Mr Joseph Chamberlain, returned from his fatal meeting with Herr Hitler in premature triumph in 1938'.

'The future British Prime Minister was by then already on the Nazi external intelligence payroll. He is reported by one source to have complained about encountering problems in repaying a loan from the Kent Education Committee, even though as indicated he was already on the German payroll and was initially being paid more than £250 annually, which was a very large sum for a pre-war university student'.

'After the war, MI5 arranged for Master Lindsay to travel to the British Occupation Zone in Germany, where he met the British counterintelligence officers working on the so-called De-Nazification Programme, which was aborted when the already penetrated OSS, parent of the American CIA, reversed its policy under intense pressure from the US State Department led by George Kennan, and commenced the process which led to the importation and resettlement of at least 770 prominent Nazi scientists who had all been working on Heinrich Himmler's Black Satanic experiments and operations - including the development of occult psychopolitical personal and mass psycho-manipulation and personality modification techniques, and on rocket science and space travel innovations'.

'One source believes that Lindsay met with Brigadier Lathbridge, a senior British intelligence officer working in the British Zone. Lathbridge is reported to have been unaware of the continuing Nazi International secret intelligence service DVD, although he is also believed to have suspected the existence of a powerful Nazi organisation that was engaged in the protection of high-ranking Nazis and overseas Nazi intelligence assets who had been left in place in 1945'.

'One of these was Edward Heath. Further enquiries were reportedly blocked in London and by assets of the DVD within the Nazi-penetrated OSS, which controlled access to Munich, to which location Edward Heath's Abwehr (German external intelligence) file had been transferred from the German Abwehr headquarters in Berlin'.

'Today, the London Station of the continuing Nazi International's DVD is shared with the overt German intelligence service, BND (Bundesnachrichten Dienst)'.

It is accordingly clear that both Britain and the United States - jointly 'the Main Enemy'- have been continuously targeted by German 'Black' Illuminati intelligence, and that it is Germany/France who are the 'Main Enemy's' dialectical antagonists.

THE MURDER IN NUMBER 11 DOWNING STREET

In the first quarter of 2006, a former Conservative Chancellor of the Exchequer, Tony Barber, also died. Shortly afterwards, the Author was informed by UK intelligence that Barber had also been an Abwehr agent. The outline information provided was as follows:

1. On being voted into power, Edward Heath appointed Ian Macleod, a highly respected colleague, to serve as Chancellor of the Exchequer.

2. Ian Macleod duly reported to the Treasury Building, where he met his Permanent Secretary. The conscientious Whitehall mandarin proceeded to brief him in detail on the unsavoury consequences of the Euro-centric policies which Heath intended to pursue. He showed Macleod, with the aid of statistics and charts, that membership of the European Economic Communities would, over the medium term, prove a disaster for the British economy, and would inter alia lead to the de-industrialisation of the country.

3. Macleod reported back to Mr Heath what he had been told, said that he would be unable to implement the policies that Heath had in mind, and requested fresh instructions.

4. Shortly thereafter, Ian Macleod dined with a certain Dr Foster, whose identity was not unknown to certain sections of the intelligence services.

5. Not long after dining with this Dr Foster, Ian Macleod died suddenly in Number 11 Downing Street. Having provided this information, the sources described this intervention as 'a murder in Number 11 Downing Street'.

Ian Macleod was immediately replaced by Tony Barber, who proceeded to implement Heath's policy of integration into the European Economic Communities with zeal and to the letter. The British intelligence sources then provided the Author with a few details about Tony Barber's background. It transpired that he had flown a Spitfire, equipped with Britain's latest 'spy-in-the-sky' camera, into Germany, where it had been handed over to the German authorities. He was imprisoned but betrayed his fellow prisoners over the famous 'Wooden Horse' episode. The briefing ended with a categorical statement that this former Chancellor of the Exchequer, like Heath was an Abwehr agent.

CORRUPT 'PAYOLA' PAYMENTS 'FACILITATE' E.U. COLLECTIVE TREATIES

It is troublesome, but entirely consistent, apparently, with British practice, that traitors holding, or who have held, high official positions and are subsequently unmasked, are often left unprosecuted, but are exposed after their deaths. The Author believes this practice to be mistaken, since these people have invariably caused immense damage to the nation and society - and none more so than Edward Heath, whose signature (along with that of his colleague Geoffrey Rippon) on Britain's European Accession Treaty, is actually null and void. This state of affairs was now explained in the special analysis and exposure published in 'International Currency Review', as follows:

'The European Union Collective is without any doubt illegal - a point that the Author put to a very senior US intelligence source, intimately familiar with intergovernmental financial corruption, who immediately responded: 'I know'.

The EU is illegal inter alia because:

1. Britain's Accession to the European Economic Communities was procured by fraud: Specifically, the two signatories, Edward Heath and Geoffrey Rippon, were not only paid Abwehr agents but received corrupt payments in exchange for their signatures on the UK accession documents.

2. British agreement to the Maastricht Treaty was allegedly procured through fraud: Specifically, the Prime Minister of the day, John Major, is alleged by intelligence infonnants to have accepted his 'facility payment' or payments. The documents were signed by Douglas (now Lord) Hurd and Angus Maude, who later became a senior figure in the 'Conservative' Party and, like his father, is very 'sympathetic' to Germany.

3. The European Constitution was procured by means of the distribution of corrupt payments, although following the French and the Dutch Referenda, it cannot be ratified. Specifically, $5.0 billion was set aside to procure completion of the European Constitution Treaty, the funds derived from a 'Black Operations' account in Switzerland called the 'SBC Charcol account. It holds or held at least $470 billion, built up originally from Nazi resources and continuing 'Black' financial operations, hidden 'high-yield investment programmes', and probably scams, with the funds made available for disbursement from a Credit Suisse account.

4. Of this $5.0 billion, $2.5 billion was to be distributed on completion of the Inter Governmental Conference (July 2004), and the second tranche of $2.5 billion was to be distributed on ratification.

The funds were payable in Euros, of course, with $100 million equivalent allocated for each of the 25 EU countries in the first tranche. This had to be distributed to the corrupted politicians and officials on completion of the Inter Governmental Conference (IGC) in July 2004. The Author obtained information about three of these sub-tranches:

- The corrupt 'IGC facilitation' funds allegedly remitted to the (former) Italian Prime Minister, Sig. Silvio Berlusconi: Specifically, the Italian ex-Prime Minister was allegedly paid and accepted a total of €75 million. He could 'get away with' this because his political rival, Sig. Romano Prodi, who became Italian Prime Minister after narrowly 'defeating' Berlusconi in the 2006 General Election and who had been President of the European Commission at the relevant time, also allegedly received 'his' 'facilitation paymenf of €75 million. That is how 'business' is routinely transacted in the corrupt German-dominated European Union Collective.

The corrupt 'IGC facilitation' funds allegedly paid to the British Prime Minister, Tony Blair: An equivalent allocation of €75 million was allegedly paid into a bank account with the Prime Minister as ultimate beneficiary in Belize. A sudden jump of $114.81 million in the foreign exchange reserves held by the Central Bank of Belize was noted in March 2005, perhaps signifying that the alleged corrupt payment was taken into the reserves so that the funds were either in the process of being 'laundered' through the Central Bank, or else had been seized. The local Central Bank would have been entitled to do this.

THE 1969 VIENNA CONVENTION ON THE LAW OF TREATIES

Intelligence sources had not, by the closure of this book, seen fit to furnish the Author with outline information about the corrupt payments made over to 'facilitators' for the 23 other EU countries at the conclusion of the Intergovernmental Conference in 2004, but it is understood that the full $2.5 billion was duly paid out in Euros as arranged. Since these funds were 'never actually paid' - for public consumption purposes - they are de facto non-refundable and have been 'lost' to the controlling 'builders of Europe'.

However, in conformity with the European Union's familiar corrupt and deceitful modus operandi, the institutions provided for by the 'Constitution Treaty' were being implemented anyway, notwithstanding that the Constitution Treaty could not be fully ratified due to the negative outcomes of the French and Dutch referenda on this issue in 2005.

Concerning the second $2.5 billion originally derived allegedly from the 'SBC Charcol account via Credit Suisse, the fate of these funds remained unknown outside the intelligence community. Some of the EU countries have rushed to ratify, and in these cases, the second €100 million tranches will have been 'payable', explaining why certain EU countries ratified so quickly. In the cases of France and the Netherlands, the corrupt respective recipients of second tranche 'facilitation' fees were reported to be angry and disappointed that their enrichment had been delayed or scuppered for ever (as they may not be around when the next collective treaty enters the IGC stage). There is also known to be much covert wailing and gnashing of teeth at the fact that large sums have been squandered on a collective document that cannot be collectively ratified, as all 25 EU satrap Member States must ratify for the (illegal) treaty for it to acquire 'legality' -which, as indicated, is an impossibility since some of/all of the earlier treaties and the Constitutional Treaty were procured corruptly and thus illegally.

Under the 1969 Vienna Convention on the Law of Treaties, there are two key provisions which authorise a signatory power to abrogate a bilateral or multilateral treaty unilaterally, without giving the stipulated notice:

1. Where corruption has been demonstrated in respect of procuring the treaty in the first place, or in respect of any dimension of its implementation. The European Commission (EC) and all its offshoots permit, and are associated with, proven corruption on a monumental scale, while Britain's Accession Treaty was signed corruptly by two paid Abwehr agents.

2. Where there has been a material change of circumstances. A material change of circumstances has surfaced into the daylight, to begin with, following the death of Sir Edward Heath. It has been revealed that he was an agent for a foreign power, accepted corrupt payments for his services, and lied to the British people - and that he did all this on behalf

of a foreign power secretly driven by 'Black' Nazi Continuum intelligence strategists.

An even more disturbing material change of circumstances has arisen as a consequence of the bombing of the London Underground, and of a bus, which took place on 7th July 2005 - and the attempted explosions perpetrated two weeks later. The situation in the weeks immediately following was so serious that the British Civil Contingencies Secretariat had been in the process of drafting, or has drafted, legislation providing for the British Government to abrogate its false international treaty 'obligations' towards the European Union Collective. The subsequent discovery that a fifth bomb was meant to have blown a hole in the Northern Line runnel beneath the River Thames, flooding the Underground and murdering thousands of Londoners, was still being suppressed in mid-2006, but was the subject of extreme unease and anger in certain London circles.

In February 2006, an oil storage depot owned by the French energy corporation Total exploded at Buncefield, in Hertfordshire, outside London. The explosion and resulting fire was the worst conflagration in the United Kingdom since the Second World War. The 'mainstream' media immediately concluded that the catastrophic event was an accident, latching on to disinformation stories to the effect that a smell of petroleum had been noticed by local residents for weeks beforehand. In reality, this explosion was the work of the wholly bogus Al-Qaeda network assisted by the GO-2 British 'Black' intelligence agency resident within MI6 (which it has extensively penetrated), and which 'reports' unofficially to the Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst in Dachau. Although this atrocity was almost immediately hushed up, it hardened the resolve of 'white haf cadres within elements of the British intelligence community which have been fighting German/French penetration of the UK structures, to procure Britain's final exit from the German-sponsored long-range deception operation known as the European Union.

GERMANY'S COVER: HIDING BEHIND THE SOVIETS

Integral with the German-French operation to procure the total submission of the United Kingdom within the European Union Collective - the main purpose of which is to subdue and decapitate Britain, the senior component of the 'Main Enemy', once and for all - is a seamless continuation of the classic deception device whereby the Nazi Continuum hides behind a left-wing mantle. The European Union is a political collective, as Mikhail Gorbachev himself acknowledged during a brief visit to London on 23rd March 2000, when he concurred that the European Union is 'the new European Soviet'. But just as Guy Burgess, Donald Maclean and Anthony Blunt* disguised their German Nazi sympathies and connections behind their supposed Communist fellow-travelling affiliations, and just as STASI operatives such as Marcus Wolf and Eva Teleki (who procured access to colossal funds transferred to her under Powers of Attorney, before allegedly failing to honour any of her obligations under those documents), maintained their STASI labels as their working cover long after the orchestrated 'collapse of Communism', so has German secret manipulation of the European Union been consistently masked by the left-wing, collectivist and manifestly Leninist structure of the EU Collective. Both Marcus Wolf and Eva Teleki were using their STASI backgrounds to

---

* Anthony Blunt was believed to have been an illegitimate son of George V, and thus a half-brother of Edward VIII, the Duke of Windsor, whose Nazi predisposition was the underlying rationale for his {'enforced') abdication. Mrs Wallace Simpson was a German-financed operative, maximising the potential of the long-implemented German espionage device, modelled upon Jesuit and Illuminati practice, of positioning a 'psychopolitician' alongside key targeted figures, for subversion and intelligence purposes - earlier examples being Grigori Rasputin and the Abwehr operative Lavrentii Beria himself, who taught these techniques to foreign revolutionaries. Princess Diana was targeted in a similar manner. The slight problem that this Author has with the allegation concerning Anthony Blunt is that the Author's drawing master at Eton was none other than Anthony Blunts older brother, 'Willie' Blunt, who certainly resembled Anthony Blunt physically except that his frame and build were much heavier. Willie' Blunt was a much-loved art teacher and an Eton 'fixture', who taught boys with talent how to paint, and haunted the somewhat remote Art Schools.

hide the alleged reality that they actually work for Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, in furtherance of the long-range Nazi strategic deception agenda in collaboration with the German-oriented segments of the CIA, including the Nazi-oriented CIA operation based in Frankfurt, with its Gehlen Organisation background.

As this book was being finalised, the Author discovered that GO-2, the UK 'Black' intelligence agency (which is supposed, like the Nazi Continuum DVD, not to exist) controls two drug cartels in Britain, each of which 'services' the financial requirements of the main political parties, with the Liberal Democrats engulfed in comparable financial disarray surrounding dubious financing sources. The financial scandal surrounding the 'New Labour' Government led by Tony Blair which came to a head in March 2006 concerned loans extended secretly 'below the radar' to the Labour Party by a dozen or more big-headed industrialists, bankers, venture capitalists et al which were allegedly financed by the following mechanism. A self-important figure was cornered by Blair's 'financial gopher', Lord Levy, and persuaded to make funds available (for instance, for the 2005 election) on loan, with an unspoken implication that the 'lucky lender' would become eligible for a life peerage. In 1925, following the scandal over the sale of peerages (real, ongoing ones) by David Lloyd George - also a corrupted supporter of German hegemony plans, it has recently transpired - the Honours (Prevention of Abuses) Act was passed forbidding the practice. Under the legislation, it is an offence to take money as an 'inducement or reward' for procuring an honour for someone else, or even attempting to do so. The definition of 'reward' is not confined to money, but includes any 'valuable consideration' which would appear to cover an interest-free loan or indeed a loan at a commercial rate of interest. It is also an offence for a person who 'buys' an honour to give anyone money or a valuable consideration as an inducement for procuring an honour for him or anyone else. The maximum penalty under the Act is two years in jail*.

Following a formal complaint by Angus MacNeil, a Scottish Nationalist MP, to the Metropolitan Police and the Director of Public Prosecutions in mid-March 2006 about disclosures that several 'wealth/ individuals were nominated for peerages after extending large loans to the Labour Party, the Metropolitan Police announced (on 21st March 2006) that its Specialist Crime Directorate was looking into three complaints of alleged breaches of the 1925 law, associated with the secret loans policy run - according to the 'mainstream' media - out of Number 10 Downing Street. Other extraordinary corruption discoveries concerning the Labour leadership were surfacing in mid-2006.

Such corruption is consistent with the system of unfettered secret 'payola' rewards which is the preferred method developed by the DVD as a means of furthering the European Union agenda. Behind the scenes, the GO-2-controlled drug cartel 'attached to' the Labour Party is or was a primary source of slush funds, in a position to channel funds to offshore accounts held in the names of the assorted big-headed industrialists, brokers, venture capitalists etc, considered to be lusting after a life peerage. Thus, in exchange for extending a loan of, say, £1.0 million 'to help Tony win the election', a deposit of £2.0 million would 'replace' the £1.0 million on loan, in an offshore account -which, if repaid, would net the corrupt lender £2.0 million plus interest. Behind this mechanism, both the main political parties were being financed primarily with criminal funds by such means - the 'agreement' or quid pro quo being that this arrangement would remain in place in exchange for neither main political party adopting a strategy to take Britain out of the corrupt European Union. This of course explains why the 'Eurosceptics' in Britain, who flattened the 'Europhiles' long ago with their arguments (an operation with which this Author is closely associated), were never able to induce even a hint of any change of policy within the compromised and corrupted Conservative Party. Heavy penetration of all the UK political parties by Trilateralists' affiliated with the Trilateral Commission, founded as long ago as 1918 as an instrument of, and front for, German intelligence, also predisposed the main British political parties never to question the treacherous secret German policy of national suicide via EU integration. The UK Independence Party (UKIP), seen as a threat by the penetrated and compromised British Conservatives, was penetrated from the outset by agents serving the strategy of GO-2, and thus of the Dachau-based Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst. The first leader of the embrionic version of this Party, a young man known to the Author who possessed all the best leadership qualities and was a person of great integrity and magnetism, died suddenly and quite unexpectedly for no apparent reason in his early thirties, leaving his young wife devastated. This man was of such a high calibre that he would certainly have threatened the programme of the criminal elements in the intelligence services and elsewhere who were controlling the German integration strategy. The next leader, Alan Sked, narrowly escaped death when he was shot at. The Party was taken over by ineffective leadership, and the leader 'elected' in 2006, who has a German wife (from Berlin), was observed during a meeting giving what looked like a Hitler salute.

---

* Further, a seller of honours who has received a gift, money or consideration, may be ordered to forfeit it to the Crown. It was under the 1925 Act that a Mr Maundy Gregory was convicted of selling honours in 1933. He was fined £50 and jailed for six months. Gregory, an intelligence officer and friend of Lloyd George, had been ordered to obtain information on an MP called Victor Grayson, who was believed to be a Soviet agent and who was also enquiring about corruption and the honours system. When he found out that he was being watched, Grayson denounced Lloyd George at a public meeting for selling honours. He said: The sale of honours is a national scandal. It can be traced right down to 10 Downing Street, and to a monocled dandy with offices in Whitehall. I know this man and one day I will name him'. The 'monocled dandy' was the intelligence officer, Maundy Gregory. Grayson was subsequently beaten up in the Strand, and then disappeared. It was believed that he had been murdered, although his body was never found. [Source: The Daily Telegraph, 22nd March 2006, page 4].

ANGELA MERKEL 'DOES NOT WANT A THIRD WORLD WAR'

Wholesale review of Britain's EU membership followed the realisation within certain British intelligence and other circles that the 7/7 and subsequent attacks in 2005, and the Buncefield oil depot catastrophe in 2006, amounted to acts of war against the United Kingdom, and that the foreign powers behind this activity are ultimately controlled by the Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (with collaborating French 'Black' intelligence) from Dachau, the successor organisation to the Abwehr, Nazi Germany's main external intelligence administration. The Nazi regime and its Stalinist dialectical counterpart were both Black Illuminati regimes. The Al-Qaeda operation is an extension of the same Black tradition, and is ultimately controlled, like the ERA (until very recently), by the DVD out of Dachau. In March 2006, a senior UK intelligence source told the Author that Angela Merkel - the German Chancellor - 'does not want a Third World War'. The implication was that this operative, born in Hanover but mysteriously educated in East Germany at the East German Academy of (Leninist) Sciences, is not as enamoured as her predecessors (including Gerhard Schroder, also from East Germany) with the Nazi Continuum and global hegemony strategy directed from Dachau. However this assessment was contradicted by the Buncefield catastrophe, traced subsequently to Al-Qaeda acting as proxy for the DVD. Since that event - again controlled by French 'Black' intelligence which works hand-in-glove with the DVD - was interpreted as an act of war, although hushed up, there seemed, by June 2006, to be no concrete evidence that the arrival in power of Frau Merkel had led to any change of strategy. It is understood that Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst 'informs' the German Chancellor of what it is doing and what operations it may be planning, which strongly implies that it is a power unto itself

- a 'state within the state', like the CIA and its affiliates, not least since DVD is not funded by the taxpayer. It has its own criminalist funding sources, of course. Specifically, it specialises in heroin distribution, while the French and Spanish 'Black' agencies handle cocaine - Spain having become the alleged favoured European outlet for Bush Sr.'s drug operations focused on US/DVD-developed Latin American sources. In the summer of 2006, following exposure by this Author, the Spanish authorities ordered Bush Sr. to leave Spain and allegedly told his people to 'take your dirty money with you'.

Detailed accounts of the European Union's corrupt 'payola' system, and of the recipients of certain corrupt remittances, were published in International Currency Review' in October 2005, in the supplementary service 'Economic Intelligence Review' in December 2005, and again in 'Global Analyst' [2006Q1] [www.worldreports.org]. In addition, a summary of the intelligence concerning the traitor Edward Heath and his British homosexual Abwehr contemporaries, and of the illegality of both Britain's EU membership and of the EU Collective's treaties, has been maintained on the Author's websites' easily accessed permanent Archive. In the December 2005 issue of 'Economic Intelligence Review', a list of all the journalists in the UK 'mainstream' media who ignored the foregoing intelligence was published, in order to highlight the feckless incompetence of the media and that Illuminati financial control of the press and broadcasting is as comprehensive in Britain as has been the case in the United States since J. P. Morgan procured press control almost a century ago.

The reason for mentioning these mundane facts is that not a single denial or refutation of any of the intelligence in question was forthcoming from official or private circles as a consequence if these damning exposures, during this period. On the contrary, British intelligence sources told the Author that no denials have been forthcoming because everything that the Author published is true. Further, given the camaraderie that exists among intelligence officers serving different governments at the professional level, elements of British intelligence have been congratulated, believe it or not, by their German Nazi Continuum (Abwehr-DVD) counterparts on the excellent counterintelligence job performed by 'white hats' in MI5 in establishing and exposing the facts.

Instead of seeking to impose their wayward occult Dluminati will by force, as during the Second World War, the Nazi long-range planners changed their geostrategy and opted for a more gradualist, subtle and corrupt approach, which has basically entailed conquest by open-ended bribery. For what the European Union, planned from 1941 onwards, does is to collect colossal fees from its satrap (bribed) Member States, and to redistribute the proceeds effectively as bribes, in furtherance of its geopolitical objectives.

E.U. DELIBERATELY MODELLED ALONG LENINIST LINES

Since, as we have seen, German long-range strategy deception strategy hides behind left-wing labels when this is considered to be the best cover, the fact that the European Union is modelled along Leninist lines* should not be taken as indicating an incorrect strategic diagnosis on the Author's part. It has already been demonstrated that Communism and Fascism are two controlled ideologies that were deliberately concocted (initially by the 'two Karls') in order to provide the Illuminati manipulators with 'opposing dialectical forces' (Thesis, Antithesis) that could be manipulated in the interests of the self-appointed globalist Illuminati elite to yield their 'Synthesis' of global control. The early Nazi Labour Day emblem shown in Figure 89 on page 551 displays both the Communists' hammer and sickle and the Nazi occultic swastika.

* Governance is duplicated, and decisions are taken collectively, although the weasel word used to mask this is 'cooperation'.

But when we consider this disguise more carefully, it is even more striking. For what has emerged from this study is that throughout the long years of the overt Cold War, and continuing to this day, the long-range strategists within the Dachau-based DVD hid behind the STASI (East German security). This has recently become evident from observation of two key STASI operatives already mentioned - Marcus Wolf, and Eva Teleki (a.k.a. Sturzl). As has been reviewed, Marcus Wolf has been 'advising' the US Department of Homeland Security (although a different version has it that he was being 'debriefed' by them). He has also been seen dining in gentlemen's clubs in London, accompanied by several British intelligence officers. He was suddenly not available in Berlin when he became aware that an intelligence contact of this Author was intending to visit him there, several months after the Author publicised DVD penetration in the information detailed above. As for Ms Teleki, this STASI operative is known to have been working during the 1990s and certainly into the present century in cooperation with US intelligence. She has access to substantial funds repatriatable to the US Government, and was reported to have been resident in London from 2004 onwards, and therefore during the period of the atrocities that took place in July 2005. Intelligence experts on both sides of the Atlantic agree that as noted earlier, Sturzl, like Wolf, is indeed a DVD officer. She has Hungarian connections.

THE GERMAN GEOPOLITICAL CENTRE

To understand the significance of all this, it is necessary to recall that the Nazis established a high-level central planning organisation in Madrid in 1943, called the German Geopolitical Centre (or Deutsche Geozentrale). On 13th December 1944, the Associated Press reported that Heinrich Himmler had initiated plans for the establishment of an underground network at the end of 1943, and that propaganda and related warfare operations were to be carried on 'by some 200,000 Nazi followers in Europe and elsewhere'.

The news report, clearly based on reliable Allied intelligence, asserted that many Nazi Party operatives and members had equipped themselves with double or even triple identities, and that the preplanned Nazi agitprop operations were intended to set the Allies against each other.

The Nazi Geopolitical HQ in Madrid was funded for many years by financial and bullion resources, and doubtless by 'Black Ops' funds, exfiltrated into Spain long before the collapse of the Third Reich[30]. For years it was known that the Nazi headquarters in Madrid operated an international organisation called 'Die Spinne', meaning 'The Spider'.

Related Nazi organisations were and are known by various exotic cover names, such as Edelweiss, Konsul, Scharnhorst, Sechsestirn, Liebwache and Lustiger Bruder, while the covert organisation of the Nazi Elite Guard operated under the name Odessa.

THE 'MADRID CIRCULAR LETTER'

On 29th May 1951, a correspondent for 'The New York Times', Mr C. L. Sulzberger, reported on the existence of an operational group which had 'revived' what he then called the Fascist International, and was functioning in various countries stretching 'from Malmo to Tangier, and from Rome to Buenos Aires'. There were likewise reports in the early 1950s that Hitler's Deputy, Herr Martin Bormann, 'shuttles between Spain and Argentina trying to work for unity and cooperation among Fascist-minded bodies', stated one report[31].

In September 1950, the German Geopolitical Centre in Madrid distributed a secret Memorandum to its many subsidiary centres around the world, including key German covert Nazi continuity circles in Bonn. The document, known as the 'Madrid Circular Letter', which was intercepted by Western intelligence or leaked to an Allied intelligence service, represented a German General Staff plan for a revised German approach to procure the division and conquest of the world.

At the time, UK/US observers realised that the policies outlined in the document coincided remarkably closely with the direction of those being quietly pursued by the Adenauer Government - which was hardly surprising, since before the Second World War, Konrad Adenauer, who became an Abwehr officer, had been Mayor of Cologne and was close to Hitler's favourite German bankers, Jewish gentlemen by the names of Abs and Pferdmenges. Before Adenauer became German Chancellor (and remember, the Chancellorship, we now know, is in the hands of the DVD in Dachau), he told the German Reichstag: 'We must move very cautiously. We ought not to give the impression, either in Germany or in the United States, that we shall collaborate in any way with the Russians' - even though orientation towards Russia was secretly central to German strategy, as had always been the case, beginning with the disruptive operations of the German agent Rasputin in the Tsar's court and the recruitment of Lenin by German intelligence at the beginning of the 20th century when he was living in Munich.

Likewise, Lavrentii Beria, Stalin's odious Interior Ministry police gauleiter, with almost more blood on his hands than Stalin himself, was, as has been discussed, a long-term German Abxvehr agent - a fact reflected not least in his move, immediately following Stalin's curious death, to initiate a settlement with West Germany. As a result, Beria's service to German intelligence was used against him, and he was promptly executed[32] by Stalin's successors who, like Boris Yeltsin and (we understand) also Vladimir Putin, worked hard to exclude or diminish the influence of German intelligence inside Soviet structures. Yet President Chirac was Chairman of a Trilateral Commission', prior to becoming President of France, consisting of France, Germany and Russia - so that any Russian anti-German house-cleaning may have been less than comprehensive.

'FUR UNS IST DER KRIEG NIEMALS VORBEI'

The West failed singularly to penetrate, let alone understand, the clandestine negotiations that proliferated between Bonn and Moscow, even though many statements in the German press suggested that Bonn's ultimate objective, following the establishment of the Adenauer Government in West Germany, was a far-reaching, long-range agreement with Moscow. Two years of secret negotiations between Berlin and Moscow preceded the Rapallo Treaty dated 16th April 1922, which was facilitated by the little understood fact that Lenin was also a German agent, whose original job it was to destabilise Russia in order to relieve the pressure on Germany from the Eastern Front.

The Rapallo Treaty was concluded by a Jewish leader of German 'liberalism', Dr Walter Rathenau. Fifteen years later, when Western statesmen, led by the naive British Prime Minister, imagined that they had purchased 'peace in our time' at Munich, the Germans yet again entered into secret negotiations with the Soviets, culminating in the Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact (Mark I: see page 610 for Mark II) of August 1939.

In 1953, T. H. Tetens, the remarkably prescient author of 'Germany Plots with the Kremlin', elaborated: 'The lightning that flashed throughout the world when Berlin joined hands with Moscow in 1939 is striking again and the ultimate target of the Germans is the USA'[33]. With the destruction of Berlin and the death of Hitler, the West generally assumed that the Nazi threat had ceased to exist - an illusion that arose due to the erroneous identification of the Nazi Party with Hitler, even as the identification of the Iraqi 'enemy' with the image of Saddam Hussein led the Americans to assume, just as erroneously, that the Iraqi Ba'ath Party (modelled along Nazi lines, as it was a direct outgrowth of Nazi anti-British operations in the Middle East), would cease to exist or have any substance with the arrest of Saddam.

But the German Geopolitical Centre saw to it that Nazism and its worldwide idolatry would not merely survive the destruction of Hitler and the loss of the war, but would be strengthened as a consequence of deploying new, much more subtle 'Third Way' psycho-techniques, with additional stress on bribery. The Nazi International further instructed its outlets and cadres that, so far as the Geopolitical Centre was concerned, the war had never ceased, and would continue until complete victory was assured: 'Fur uns ist der Krieg niemals vorbei'. The Geopolitical Centre also boasted that it had successfully duped US policy planners. Thus the 'Madrid Circular Letter' explained:

'Germany has emerged from the Cold War as the chief beneficiary. That is our great asset in the ledger ... since Potsdam. For the first time in the history of nations, it has been proven that clever propaganda, especially when it is camouflaged and directed through other channels, accomplishes far more than the mightiest army or the best diplomatic service of a smoothly functioning state. It is a great mistake to assume that Western Germany recuperated so quickly thanks to America's sympathetic concern for us. We repeatedly encounter, especially as expressed by some politicians in Bonn, the idiotic opinion:

'But the Americans have put us back on our feet, should we therefore not show our gratitude?' To this our answer is as follows: The Americans put us back on our feet, not purely for altruistic reasons but for their selfish interests and on the basis of clever calculations. It must not be our worry, but theirs, if in the last resort their calculations prove to be abysmally stupid. We are not wholly innocent in [respect of] the shift of America's postwar policy[36]'.

'For us the war has never stopped [Fur uns ist der Krieg niemals vorbei'] and, as is well known, in war every ruse is permissible. We cannot repeat too often that Germany has never ceased to carry on the war with political weapons and propaganda, with economic sabotage and other means'.

'In order to protect Germany against total destruction of all its military and economic potentials, as [in due course was] planned at Yalta, we [at the outset of the Second World War] blueprinted a bold plan and created a flexible and smoothly working organisation[35] which, during the first months of the war, provided the pre-condition for all the gains that by necessity emerged for Germany out of the chaos of the postwar period' [compare the Illuminati model of 'Order out of Chaos'].

In other words, the long-range planning undertaken by Nazi planners and perfected by the German Geopolitical Centre in Madrid represented 'Plan B'.

'Today, five years after Potsdam, we can look back with pride on our accomplishments. By no means was the political and military leadership of the Third Reich skidded into the catastrophe [of the Second World War] in an irrational manner, as so many blockheads and ignoramuses often tell us. The various phases and consequences of the so-called 'collapse' (of the 'Zusammenbruch') were thoroughly studied and planned by the most capable experts' ('faehigsten Koepfen'). Nothing occurred by chance; everything was carefully planned. The result of all this planning was that, already a few months after Potsdam, the coalition of the victors went on the rocks'.

In other words, the German long-range planners had judged their enemy correctly, even though they knew that it belonged, at the highest levels, like them, to the Illuminati.

EXPLOITATION OF POSTWAR CHAOS AND THE SOVIET 'MENACE'

The essence of the subtle deception strategy developed by the Nazi planners was to alarm the Americans about the imagined 'Soviet menace' to stability in Europe - seeds of deception that fell on fertile ground because of the scale of the long-term, and recent, penetration, of the US policymaking and intelligence structures by Nazi moles:

'The machinery which we had prepared so carefully in advance, had very consciously brought about conditions and situations after the collapse, which confronted America's leaders with the stark choice of accepting chaos and Bolshevism throughout Germany, or adopting a constructive programme that would save Germany and the whole of Europe. Such a plan and such a bold programme could only be successfully carried out by a political schooling that is now proved to have been of paramount importance'.

It was only necessary to warn of the danger of Communism taking hold in Germany after any collapse by referring to the brief localised experiments with Bolshevism attempted in Germany after its defeat in the First World War. And the central importance of the clandestine Geopolitical Centre in Madrid was now clearly revealed:

'When we take into consideration under what tremendous difficulties and dangers the organisation had to work in an underground manner and directed from abroad without any protection or backing by any state, carefully watched and persecuted by agents of a revengeful enemy, then the successful outcome seems like a miracle'.

The 'Madrid Circular Letter' boasted, therefore, that the Nazi geopolitical apparatus organised Germany's postwar chaos: 'In order to bring the Americans back to reason and away from Potsdam, we organised chaotic conditions in a thorough and systematic manner ('haben wir mit grundlicher Systematik das Chaos organisiert').

'It was', the 'Madrid Circular Letter' continued, 'a very subtle political resistance, seemingly unorganised and seldom visible, but nonetheless having a deadly effect. The peasants were delivering almost next to nothing to the cities; no coal was being brought up from the pits, the wheels of industry were not turning; the people came near to starvation; the monetary system was disintegrating: there remained nothing for the Yankees to do but to give up and scrap the Potsdam program...'.

'Five years after Potsdam, the Yankees are stuck deep in the mud; they are now seeking the advice of our generals whom they formerly called criminals; they come pleading for our help against Russia. That of which we could never convince the world, namely, the injustice of the policy of revenge, was finally accomplished by the Americans themselves who, speculating on German help, have propounded the necessity for a revision of policy towards Germany. They have even convinced the French and the English of this'.

Concerning Germany's geopolitical orientation, this crucial document, which represented a blueprint for covert Nazi policy for years to come, had this to say:

'The policy of orientation towards the West has lost all political meaning or sense. A conscious policy of neutrality, going hand-in-hand with close economic cooperation with the East would, from a long-range point of view, supersede a merely pro-Soviet orientation.... We must not forget that Germany has always considered orientation towards the West as a policy of expediency, or one to be pursued only under pressure of circumstances. Such was the case in Napoleon's time, after 1918, and also after 1945. All our great national leaders have constantly counselled the long-range policy of close cooperation with the East: thus, Frederick the Great, the Count von Stein, Bismarck, von Seeckt, and Brockdorff-Rentzau, and, in over the past 30 years, all our leading geopoliticians...'.

Thus the Nazi experts working out of the German Geopolitical Centre and its offshoots revealed their clear understanding of the Illuminati's dialectical method of creating 'opposing forces' and manipulating them in pursuit of the strategic 'synthesis':

'We must never let ourselves become befogged by Washington's stupid and meaningless slogans about the so-called 'Struggle of Democracy versus Communism'. The so-called American democracy does not deserve the sacrifice of the bones of even a single German soldier. In the age of regimented and militarised economy [sic], the US babbling about democracy and so-called 'free enterprise' is such nonsense that we do not need to squander a single moment in refuting this American propaganda swindle'.

'What Germany needs in the future is not democracy but a system of statecraft similar to that of the Soviet dictatorship which would enable the political and military elite in Germany to organise the industrial capacity of Europe and the military qualities of the German people for the revival of the German race and the re-establishment of Europe as the power centre in the world'.

This statement included a clear indication that German intelligence considers itself to be the power behind the Soviets and Soviet intelligence - a state of affairs that has prevailed since even before the days of Lenin and Rasputin, their agents. German intelligence has been working covertly behind the false Communist red flag, with Britain and the United States always their main targets.

The mentality of this postwar Nazi International blueprint document, and the intentions contained therein, are self-evident. The European Economic Communities [the EEC] were organised covertly by German 'Black' intelligence in accordance with the 'Madrid Circular Letter' blueprint - buttressed in January 1963 by the signing by the Abwehr agent Konrad Adenauer of the Treaty of the Elysee, which is of indefinite duration, with President de Gaulle. That key Treaty provides that Germany and France must 'achieve a common position' in advance of all international conferences, meetings, and consultations and in all international forums, in which they are represented. Specifically, the Treaty lays down in international law that 'the two Governments will consult before any decision on all important questions of foreign policy and, in the first place, on questions of common interest, with a view to reaching as far as possible an analogous position'. Mutual interpenetration of French and German intelligence cadres is sanctioned.

DEER CORRUPTING PENETRATION BY FOREIGN INTELLIGENCE

The ghastly problem faced by both Britain and the United States is that loyalties within their intelligence communities are divided, reflecting deep, long-range foreign penetrations - with competing US intelligence groups fronted by powerful 'barons' owing allegiance, for various penetration, blackmail and other reasons - to foreign powers. The key sources of these tensions are penetrations by German, Soviet, Chinese, Japanese and French intelligence - with the Germans in the driving seat, given their long-established postwar penetration of the CIA. Cadres loyal ultimately to the DVD constantly denigrate the British. The German Geopolitical Centre located in Madrid, with its satellite planning centres in Barcelona and Seville, which developed the postwar covert Nazi blueprints and organised the penetrations of components of the British, French, Canadian and US intelligence communities, operated for years as well-camouflaged commercial enterprises, or alternatively as German relief organisations. According to public domain German press reports[36], the primary Nazi International centres were established in Madrid and also Rome, from which locations control was projected and maintained over an extensive network of intelligence operations in Argentina and elsewhere in Latin America, North America via the CIA, Africa, the Far East, both Germanys, and also the Soviet Bloc. Subsequently a further Nazi International Centre was opened in Cairo, to direct anti-Western activities in the Arab world - resulting in due course in the neo-Nazi regimes established in Baghdad, Damascus and, for a time, Egypt itself.

Egyptian Presidents Nasser and Anwar Sadat were both agents of German intelligence, as the British Prime Minister of the day, Sir Anthony Eden, well understood. But he was himself surrounded by assets of German intelligence, and was double-crossed by General Eisenhower who, given both his military intelligence knowledge and his German origins, must certainly have been aware that Nasser was a key Germany (DVD) asset. It is now more clearly understood that President Eisenhower betrayed Britain and France, prior to the capitulation of General de Gaulle to the Abwehr operative Dr Adenauer in 1963.

Sir Edward Heath, as we have seen, was recruited by the Abwehr, was controlled for six decades by Nazi intelligence (DVD), and was only made to face up to his past in 2003, when he was visiting Salzburg ostensibly for the music festival, but in reality en route to Dachau - where the DVD delivered their warning that British intelligence were about to unmask him (which duly happened internally).

After the end of the Second World War, the US State Department and the British Foreign Office made no serious attempts to smash the vast Nazi geopolitical network, although the US Assistant Secretary of State, Spruille Braden, tried to smoke out these covert Nazi conspirators. But he was blocked at every turn, just as the Joint Intelligence Committee and Number 10 Downing Street prevented the interrogation of Sir Edward Heath, which would have yielded crucial intelligence, not least relevant to the prevailing wave of terrorism attacks. As for the Pentagon, its policy towards Mr Braden's efforts was typically myopic, with General Patton being on record as making the ridiculous - yet Freudian - statement that 'the Nazis are the same as Democrats and Republicans'[37]. Within no more than half a decade, leading pan-German journalists and Nazi officials who had served Dr Joseph Goebbels' propaganda machine, together with experienced Nazi diplomats from von Ribbentrop's Nazi German Foreign Office, were designing Bonn's foreign policy, under guidance from Dachau, in Dr. Adenauer's Government.

NAZI PERSONNEL FAN OUT INTO WEST GERMANY

The main contacts of the German Geopolitical Centre staff in Spain and elsewhere were reportedly with people holding influential positions in West Germany, especially the Bonn Government's Foreign Office. During a debate in the Bonn Parliament on 16th October 1951, the 'former' Abwehr operative, Dr Konrad Adenauer, admitted that 134 'former' Nazi Party officials who had previously served under Ribbentrop in the overt Nazi Foreign Office, now held senior positions in the new Government's foreign service.

Other well-known Nazis and specialist pan-German geopoliticians slid seamlessly into top positions at leading German newspapers, broadcast outlets and magazines. As a consequence, a steady stream of information and instructions flowed between the Madrid Geopolitical Centre and its collaborators in Germany and elsewhere in the world, including inside the CIA, and vice versa.

A careful examination of the entire 'Madrid Circular Letter' reveals an iron determination to achieve realisation of the Nazi Thousand-Year Reich, even if it takes a thousand years to achieve. In the European theatre, the German geopoliticians envisaged the creation of a united Europe under German domination.

In order to achieve this objective, the document elaborated:

'We have placed our confidential agents, observers, and representatives for special assignments in all groups and parties - even among Communist organisations and their fronts. The greater the number of organisations controlled and influenced by us, the more effective will be the results of our work' - code for the massive penetration of Western, including US, organisations, think-tanks, parliaments and intelligence services.

And several of these agents were to become Prime Ministers of Great Britain. For his part, Edward Heath set about immediately to implement the German Geopolitical Centre's plan to neutralise and decapitate British power once and for all. The process had started with the Boer War, when the Germans instigated the Boers to fight the British; and it has been going on ever since, extended subsequently to the United States. Canada has its own problems, with the French DGSE causing endless confusion.

The foregoing statement was accompanied by more boasting about the efficiency of the German Geopolitical Centre in its directing of postwar operations and the worldwide clandestine affairs of the Nazi International:

'Even after the collapse (in 1945), the National Socialist Party continued to work in a camouflaged way ('getarnt') inside dozens of seemingly innocuous societies and groups, in order to keep alive and undiluted the National outlook of the German people. In just the same way as many small brooks go towards making up a mighty stream, the various nationalistic and radical groups in the Zonen-Reich implemented, almost without exception, worthwhile and powerful propaganda. Each of these groups had its special task and had to adjust its work in line with certain situations and circumstances'.

'However, it was of chief importance to direct the underlying trend of the patriotic propaganda towards the identical objective. The more diverse and unconnected that all these groups appeared to be on the surface, the less they were apt to arouse suspicion that they were directed and influenced by a central organisation' - which they were.

THE GERMAN 'MISSION TO LEAD THE WORLD' ['Fuhrermission']

As for the ideological imperative embedded in these instructions from Madrid, it was epitomised by the following ruthless, merciless, hardnosed Nazi assertions, which are identical to the training received, to this day, by special Illuminati cadres, including US intelligence officers whose allegiances diverge from the interests of the American people: 'The future of the world will be decided by the conquering force of political ideology. 'Democracy' is a wishy-washy term.... No German is willing to fight and die for democracy. The German people, well trained and steeled under National Socialist leadership, are dominated by two sovereign ideas: the concept of a German Reich, and Germany's mission in the world ('deutsche Fuhrermission in der Welt'). These two ideas have given our people a powerful driving force for the dynamic execution of their world mission'.

'The mystical element and the religious tradition embodied in the concept of the Reich, sparks our political mission'. Translation:

1. The concept of a German Reich' = The European Union Collective
2. 'Germany's mission in the world' = Projection of global influence and power by clandestine means, as described throughout this book.
3. 'Mystical element' = Interaction with, and impregnation of strategy and behaviour by, the occult, as developed under Himmler, in line with German Illuminati practice.
4. 'Religious tradition' = The orientation of German Catholicism, especially, in the service of continuing German (covert Nazi) strategy, embracing idolatry.

Living comfortably in Spain and working in their plush Madrid offices, the Nazi intellectuals had no day-to-day responsibility for the direction of affairs - just as the underlying covert Communist Party of the Soviet Union (CPSU) now spends 100% of its energies and resources on planning. The Geopolitical Centre likewise devoted all its extensive financial and intellectual resources to planning for the survival and eventual physical realisation of the Thousand-Year Reich - funding its operations by criminal activities. For instance, the paymaster of the 2005 London bombing attacks is believed to have been a 'former' STASI (DVD) operative who moved from the United States to an apartment in London after acquiring access to vast US Government offshore funds.

The 'Madrid Circular Letter' then concluded with the following bombastic flourish, which represented a defiant challenge to the whole world: 'The convulsive effects of the military defeat have not broken the German spirit. The national tradition is carefully fostered among the youth and the veterans. The biological substance of the German people remained unshaken in its foundation'.

'Our people are ready to be called upon for historic decisions.... National training and political schooling have also conditioned the German people as a first-class instrument for the execution of world politics on a grand style. No other people on earth has such political maturity, fanatical faith, such iron-clad willpower and tactical flexibility - not merely to overcome defeat, but also to start again from scratch. German tradition and belief in a world mission uplifts the whole German nation. Everyone senses within his deepest consciousness that the great national task - the struggle for world domination - will ultimately be crowned with victory'.

This makes it clear that the Illuminati's 'project' for global hegemony, which, as has been explained, is directed from Germany, provides deep cover for long-range German global control strategy (Deutschland Uber Alles). Whether the German covert 'Black' Nazi Continuum intelligence establishment at Dachau is 'free-riding' aboard the Illuminati's programme, has hijacked it for its own purposes, or is fully and historically integrated within the Dluminati framework and agenda is, for the time being, a frustratingly unanswered conundrum. Whatever the truth of this vital question, the practical reality is that the United States is plagued by a German-oriented Illuminati Masonic Fifth Column which has spread its poisonous occult influence with ruthless persistence at least since the establishment of Skull and Bones at Yale College in the 1830s - consolidating the geoma-sonic penetration for which it was originally responsible with the very foundation of the Masonic Republic in 1776. This is not a healthy state of affairs; and to begin the arduous process of putting their decaying, corrupted house in order, US patriots could do a lot worse than to initiate a campaign for the removal of the emblem of the Illuminati from the $1.0 bill, together with all the other occult symbols displayed thereon. Such a development would give the Illuminati conspiracy a profound and long overdue shock.

THE SECRET ALLIED 40-YEAR OCCUPATION AGREEMENT

Notwithstanding the decisive differences that indeed opened up within months of victory among the Allies, President Truman's Secretary of State, James Byrnes, suggested that the four occupying powers should enter into an agreement to occupy Germany for 40 years. Secretary Byrnes' proposal bridged the two approaches to the management of postwar Germany - President F D. Roosevelt's assessment that the victors should seize Germany's material assets and should preclude any resurgence of German nationalism and industrialism; and the prospectus advanced by the allies of the pan-German Nazis, led by George Kennan at the US State Department, who peddled the notion that Germany should be converted from a heavily defeated power into an ally of the United States. Of course the people who were pushing this dangerous idea were either Abwehr recruits, or else were beholden later to the secret Nazi intelligence organisation, DVD.

These people became increasingly influential and as a consequence, the rehabilitation of Germany and the mobilisation of its manpower became US policy. When James Byrnes was replaced by General Marshall, with his Plan, and George Kennan then became Chief of the US State Department's Policy Planning Division, the Pentagon's planners, and the political blueprint of the appeasers, achieved hegemony - while the de-Nazification operation was abandoned, and large numbers of Himmler's scientists were transferred to the United States and integrated at once into the US intelligence, scientific and academic communities, and into what Dwight Eisenhower had referred to as the military-industrial complex. All caution was thrown to the winds, and any anxieties surrounding the long-term objectives of the 'surviving' Nazis were abandoned, while the notion that they and their heirs might still be capable of long-term planning, was dismissed out of hand. Moreover the popular impression that the death of Hitler represented the de facto end of Nazism achieved respectability within the US policymaking and, for its own self-interested purposes, the intelligence communities.

Even so, Secretary of State James Byrnes' proposal survived his replacement, and Germany was indeed occupied for a further period of 40 years - which was why the Berlin Wall was pulled down only in 1989 - under the direction of GRU officer, Vladimir Putin, who was bribed and further promised $30 billion of US 'set-aside' funds for his pains. He was pressing for payment of the $30 billion outstanding as late as October 2006, and the Author was instrumental in urging the point that he needed to be paid, given the Bush II Administration's designs on Iran The vengeance of a woman spurned may prudently be assumed to be nothing to that of a Soviet GRU Officer double-crossed by US intelligence.

THE PRINCIPAL TARGET: WASHINGTON

In the 1940s, the pan-German Nazi strategists had calculated that by exploiting the antagonism between Stalin's USSR and the West, the Allies would in the end be left with no choice but to rehabilitate Germany; and their behind-the-scenes campaign to procure this outcome proved brilliantly successful. The entire operation was fronted in Washington by George Kennan, who, like Heath, had been recruited by the Abwehr and/or by Nazi intelligence during his visits to the country before the war. As US News and World Report explained in 1949: 'George Kennan, the No. 1 brain truster in the State Department, has a new [sic!] idea that the US had better put its faith in Germany, rather than in France, as the bulwark against Russia'[38].

In the following month, the secret Nazi Abwehr operative, by now the German Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, was openly asserting that Germany would regain its military power: 'Konrad Adenauer of Western Germany, is crossing up [sic] high Allied officials in Germany with his open talk about the rebuilding of German military power. That subject was supposed to be kept under cover'[39].

And the German strategists rejoiced in the vast input of finance that the United States was pouring into Germany's rehabilitation. In September 1951, the United States News reported that the United States had transferred $9.0 billion into Western Germany and that 'the Germans took it for granted'[40]. That was exactly as the Nazis intended.

From all this it can be seen that the recruitment by Nazi intelligence of Edward

Heath in Britain represented no more than one key penetration - albeit arguably the most sensational intelligence penetration in modern history, if one excludes such penetrations as the KGB's control over the West German Chancellor Willy Brandt, which may have been tied up with the interpenetration of the Soviet and German intelligence communities; or the eastward orientation of Hans-Dietrich Genscher, the long-serving West German Foreign Minister, who shadowed KGB operative Andrei Gromyko (Katz) as Soviet Foreign Minister. Genscher hailed from Hesse, East Germany, which he or his wife visited once a month, even while he served as Foreign Minister.

From the German Geopolitical Centre's perspective, the penetration of US intelligence and its ultimate control by Nazi cadres was a far greater challenge and imperative. Those few, including this Author, who have been suggesting in recent years that 'the Third Reich has installed itself in Washington DC, guided by the pan-German neo-Nazis, with their brutal, occultic Illuminati mentality within the CIA and its subsidiary agencies, have only to re-read the statement by that brilliant American analyst of the early 1950s, T. H. Tetens, to understand that he saw, well over half a century ahead of events, what would happen:

'The Germans intend to build their new world empire on the ruins of what today constitutes the greatness and power of the United States. Whether these professional plotters will help the Soviets destroy America by military means, or whether they will attempt to subjugate us some day through an 'inside job', is of no relevance'.

'The fact that the German planners regard the United States as doomed becomes clearly visible from the writings of the [Nazi] geopoliticians. The schemers in the Madrid Geopolitical Centre have quite openly described how the United States will be thrown onto the rocks. They are dreaming of building up a new Third Power bloc, and they declare that 'this new power combination would plunge the United States down from its dizzy heights', and they boast that it would depend entirely on their "diplomatic and propaganda finesses when and how we would take over an America enfeebled by its foreign and domestic policies"'[41].

THE 'COUP D'ETAT BY INSTALMENTS' MODEL

The heirs of the German Nazi geopoliticians hold such sway in Washington 'as we speak' that a sizeable constituency of observers has concluded that the country is on the verge of slipping into the clutches of a dictatorship. The intention, indeed, is to change the US Constitution and political structures from within. It was on 23rd March 1933 that newly elected members of the German Reichstag met in a Berlin opera house (the Kroll) to review the passage of the 'Ermachtigungsgesetz' (Hitler's Enabling Act), the official title of which was 'Law for Removing the Distress of the People and the Reich'. There were many opponents of this drastic proposed legislation, which those who suspected that Hitler was beyond dangerous, feared would give him the dictatorial powers that he was lusting after - and would remove necessary constitutional protections against tyranny.

The Reichstag members had to meet in the Kroll Opera House because their building had been attacked and set on fire on 28th February 1933 - the Reichstag Fire - which had resulted in Hitler exerting pressure on the rapidly ageing President Hindenburg to suspend Article 48 of the Weimar Constitution - allowing the suspension of constitutional protections and liberties during emergency conditions.

The privacy of postal and electronic communications, the states' rights of self-government, all protections against unlawful searches and seizures, freedom of the press and assembly and property rights, were all suspended, and the so-called 'Enabling Act' was passed shortly afterwards. The staged putsch was part of 'a coup d'etat by instalments'[42] : and many concerned observers see exactly the same pattern unfolding today in both the United States and Britain:

'Only by banning the Communist deputies and by resorting to intimidation and mendacity did Hitler secure on March 23 [1933] the necessary two-thirds vote in the new Reichstag for an Enabling Act that transferred legislative authority to his Cabinet, ostensibly for four years. Waves of Nazi purges followed, as one institution after another was subjugated. Arbitrary rule replaced government by law in what has aptly been termed a 'coup d'etat by instalments'.

'By the summer, all parties except the Nazis had been dissolved, Hugenberg had been forced out of the Cabinet, and Hitler had relegated Papen to insignificance by winning the trust of the President. Even earlier, Goring had wrested from von Papen control over the Government of the largest state, Prussia. Well before the Nazi leader [had] assumed the powers of the Presidency upon the death of Hindenburg in August 1934, he had become the dictator of Germany .

It was Hitler's very close associate Hermann Goring who proclaimed that 'the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is tell them they are being attacked and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger'[44].

Shortly after the London atrocities on 7th July 2005, the American Congress made haste to proceed with renewal of the USA Patriot Act, minus its crucial sunset clause. Furthermore Congress designed to eliminate or nullify the 22nd Amendment to the US Constitution, which would open the door for President George W. Bush to become permanent President (dictator) of the United States[45]. No bill followed, but it will be recalled that during the run-up to the 2000 General Election, George W Bush Jr. pronounced (or 'quipped'): 'If this were a dictatorship, it would be a heck of a lot easier, just so long as I'm the dictator'. In mitigation, George Bush Jr. was reacting to an unreported and failed attempt to assassinate him.

The former, Chicago School-educated US Attorney General, Mr John Ashcroft, defended the USA Patriot Acts, which perform largely the same functions as Hitler's 1933 Ermachtigungsgesetz, with the following warning: To those who scare peace-loving people with phantoms of lost liberty, my message is this: Your tactics only aid terrorists, for they erode our national unity and diminish our resolve'[46].

THE NEW 9/11 'REICHSTAG FIRE' EVENT

It was demonstrated at the beginning of Chapter 7 that the New York Twin Towers were demolished by means of explosives located below ground level - consistently with the Dark Forces' statement in Protocol 9 of 'The Protocols', cited earlier, that 'the undergrounds, metropolitains, those subterranean corridors which, before the time comes, will be driven under all the capitals and from whence those capitals will be blown into the air...'. Following the Underground explosions in London on 7/7, explosions occurred below ground level in central San Francisco (in August 2005), and elsewhere. On 3rd June 2006, 17 people, mainly of Islamic origin, were arrested in connection with a conspiracy which would supposedly have included attacks and explosions in the Toronto Subway System. That the Twin Towers were demolished from below by explosives has been further corroborated by a former Bush Administration official, Morgan Reynolds, the ex-

Chief Economist at the Department of Labor during President George Bush Jr.'s first term, who has been cited by World Net Daily as stating that 'the official story about the collapse of the Twin Towers is 'bogus' and that it is much more likely that a controlled demolition destroyed them and also the adjacent Building Number 7', which, it will be recalled, suddenly blew up at 5.30pm on the day of the atrocities, for no apparent reason.

The Twin Towers were brought down by an 'inside job' (see Chapter 7 and below), which is why the Author and others are justified in referring to 9/11 as a 'Reichstag Fire' event - intended as the catalyst to kick-start the Illuminan's uncontrolled offensives and open-ended aggression against humanity for the 21st century. This murderous provocation facilitated the passage of the USA Patriot Act at lightning speed, even though Congressmen had had no opportunity to read it. Since it is impossible to generate such a complex and lengthy piece of legislation in a matter of days, the draft text had been prepared long in advance, which provides further evidence of pre-planning.

The original USA Patriot Act authorised (and its sequels permit) US officials and agents to conduct arbitrary searches of private homes and businesses, and to search through personal belongings without informing the target or victim and without a court order, while agents can arrest and detain individuals and hold them indefinitely, without them having to be charged with any crime and with no access at all to an attorney - so that Habeas Corpus is a freedom of the past, and the Fourth Amendment protections against illegal searches and seizures, as in Nazi Germany, have been expunged. As for foreigners visiting the United States, no less than 34 items of information about each passenger are furnished to the Department of Homeland Security in advance of flights, including Credit Card details. With the use of PROMIS-derived or -cloned software, US authorities can accordingly track all foreigners' transactions and can look inside their bank accounts, without any accountability or constraints. All new computers are now preloaded with software containing at least four 'trapdoors', as it is the official secret objective that every computer in the world should 'talk to the Pentagon' in due course. All the relevant software suppliers 'work for' the National Security Agency (NSA), ensuring that the US Government can spy permanently on its own dozens as well as on foreigners.

DAVID L. BOREN, GEORGE TENET: COVERING FOR THE DVD, DACHAU?

In March 2006, the Author discussed key 9/11 issues with a certain impeccable source with special connections, located in the United States. The informant confirmed the main outlines of independent research on 9/11 that has appeared on the Internet and in book format. He referred specifically to the 9/11 operation by its codename of 'Able Danger', and mentioned that key implemented allegedly included the former Democrat Oklahoma Senator (1979-94) David L. Boren, subsequently President of the University of Oklahoma, (who was allegedly forced to resign on 15th November 1994 in the context of a homosexual scandal, although this was not revealed to his constituents or his close associates at his home town, Norman, OK); George Tenet whose mentor was David Boren, who reportedly convinced incoming President George W. Bush Jr. to keep Tenet en poste as Director of Central Intelligence (CIA); and Vice President Richard Cheney, who 'interfaced with Operation 'Able Danger'. Some details of former Senator Boren's background will be helpful before the Author's conversation is related.

Boren graduated from Yale University in 1963, having spent his final year being brainwashed as a member of the occult-esoteric 'crash course' for prospective high-flyers, Skull and Bones. He then followed the usual path of the 'chosen' as a Rhodes Scholar at

Oxford University, from which he is said to have graduated in 1965, even though degree courses at Oxford last for three years. He subsequently attended the University of Oklahoma Law School, in his home town of Norman, from which he graduated in 1968, when he was admitted to the Oklahoma Bar. He was elected a member of the Oklahoma House of Representatives in 1967-75, and was Governor of Oklahoma from 1975 to 1977. In the following year he was elected as a Democrat to the US Senate, and was re-elected in 1985 and 1990, resigning four years later, having served as the Chairman of the Select Committee on Intelligence. He became President of the University of Oklahoma in 1994.

According to Professor W. Scott Thompson, of Tufts University, a member of Boren's Rhodes Scholar class at Oxford University, in 'The Price of Achievement' [London, Cassel, 1985], 'I was aware that David [Boren] was gay before I was aware of my own homosexuality, and our scout [Oxford University servant] confirmed it.... His homosexuality was never too far from the surface'. Thompson has also mentioned 'rumours of trouble with page boys at Oklahoma Capitol', during Boren's time as State Legislator, and believes that Mr Boren's surprise resignation in 1994 from his US Senate seat was 'almost surely prompted' by fears of 'a deeper degree of outing'. The same source has also referred in print to 'reasonably well-attested stories of continued gay imbroglios on Capitol Hill'. According to the Norman (OK)-based analyst, Michael Phillip Wright, one of the very best in the business, 'in 1993, 'Queer Nation' activist Michael Petrelis began publicly to accuse Boren of sexually harassing his male staff members. While allegedly concealing this from his constituents in Oklahoma, in 1994 Boren announced his resignation from the US Senate and allegedly leveraged his political influence to have himself appointed President of the University of Oklahoma. A considerable amount of further information on Boren's alleged homosexual predilections exists in the public domain. Michael Wright, who lives in Norman, Boren's home town, implictly linked this orientation to Boren's political affiliations, with which they were complementary, writing as follows in his excellent self-published article entitled 'CIA Support for Bin Laden: Who's Responsible?' [September 2001]:

'The current crisis calls for Americans to investigate the records of all Congress members who approved of any legislation enabling US support for the Afghan rebels during the 1980s. Those who supported this hideous adventure deserve severe judgment' - not least, this Author would like to add, because US intervention hardened the cynical Leninist resolve of the Soviets to prosecute the war in accordance with the Leninist method of proceeding 'by other means'. All of a sudden, Moscow folded its war in Afghanistan, but did so with the clear intention of gaining the upper hand later ('one step forward, two steps back': Lenin). For when the Soviets left, they took with them between 40,000 and 50,000 young Afghani males, many of whom had been seized from their homes at night, and were never seen by their families again - at least, not for many years. It is believed that these youths and boys underwent rigorous 'jihad' indoctrination and training as Islamic terrorists, while being educated in various terrorism training centres all over the USSR and the Communist Bloc, including East Germany, Poland and Hungary; and that the 'graduates' from this pool of rootless young Afghanis surfaced as the radicalised, controlled Islamic maniacs we know and loathe today.

Mr Wright continued: 'As an Oklahoman, I am particularly interested in the record of former Senator David Boren, whose close ties to the CIA are well known. He was appointed to the Intelligence Committee in 1985, and later became its Chairman. Boren' - whom, it will be recalled, served in politics as a Democrat - 'also has close ties to the extreme right. Political Research Associates, a group whose purpose is to expose the threat to democracy presented by right-wing groups, includes Boren as a member of one of the organizations which they have targeted for concern'.

'Boren was co-chairman of the Congressional Division of the National Coalition for Peace through Strength (CPTS), a creature of the American Security Council (ASC). The CPTS believed that the USSR and Communism were the greatest evils in the world'-thus sharing the opinion of Bill Casey on this score, and accordingly tending to downplay or even turning a blind eye to other contemporary evils and abominations. 'Other CPTS members included Ronald Reagan, Phyllis Schlafley, and Jesse Helms. Organizational members have included the American Conservative Union, the American Legion, Citizens for Reagan, Young Americans for Freedom, and Young Republicans. Political Research Associates also says that emigre groups with a history of association with Nazis were included in the CPTS membership'.

'One of the more prominent ASC members was Major General Milnor Roberts, Chairman of the Committee for a Free Afghanistan (CFA). During the 1980s proxy war, the CFA promoted US support for the Islamic militants whose successors are now being accused of the September 11 attack'. Depending upon which dialectical delusion a person entertains, you can therefore take your pick: are today's Islamic terrorists the successors of the militants trained and exploited by the US military and its intelligence aborninators, or are they the Afghan graduates and their successors from the Soviet Bloc terror schools which flourished intensively following the Soviets' exit from Afghanistan, or the thousands of Iraqis transferred to the United States following the First Gulf War? And to what extent are today's terrorists the successors and heirs of the Nazi terror squads and organisations spawned by the German intelligence operation established in the 1920s to destabilise the British in the Middle East, the Muslim Brotherhood?

Welcome to the subterranean world of the Illuminati, whose modern 'refounder', Adam Weishaupt, it will be recalled, decreed that 'there must (a la Jesuite) not a single purpose ever come in sight that is ambiguous, and that may betray our aims against religion and the state. One must speak sometimes one way and sometimes another,... so that, with respect to our true way of thinking, we may be impenetrable'.

DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS, DOUBLE-SPEAK, 'BAIT AND SWITCH'

Double-mindedness and double-speak - replicated in the two-faced, criminalised elements of the intelligence community as 'bait and switch', when 'Mr Nice' abruptly becomes 'Mr Nasty' - is of the essence, spawning the fretting deception methodology of the dialectic, and the practices of speaking out of both sides of one's mouth, supporting opposite causes, working on both sides of any divide, and appearing pleasant and normal during the daytime, but bestial and depraved at night; with a schizophrenic propensity to switch temper suddenly from a pleasant demeanour to, say, hideous, obscene anger. Integrated with this sick mentality and split-personality norm of behaviour is Weishaupt's Jesuitical law that the sect of the Illuminati must always operate under false flags, must always reside within, and piggyback upon, other organisations, and must never allow itself to be 'surfaced' as a 'tangible' organisation (which, however, is exactly what it is). As Weishaupt himself revealed, The Order of the Illuminati appears as an accessory to Free Masonry. It is in the Lodges of Free Masonry that the Minervals are found, and there they are prepared for Illumination. They must have previously obtained the three English [i.e., the

'Blue'] Degrees'[47]. The penetration method is especially relied upon, in accordance with Weishaupt's Jesuit background, to secure control over the levers of power - the preferred method being to place evil personalities and operatives with serious blemishes, who are in bondage to vice and corruption, who have stolen money, whose private life is notoriously a mess and, most of all, who indulge in the vice of paedophilia.

A disturbingly sizeable proportion of legislators, rulers, Prime Ministers, Presidents and other holders of high office are gripped by this heinous Illuminati vice - which is among the very worst that the Evil One has devised. This phenomenon is easily explained in a spiritual context, given that the human body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, and that little children are innocent and by definition unviolated.

Since, as Jesus made explicitly clear, forgiveness is normally unattainable for those who blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, those holders of high office and others who practice paedophilia, perversion and corruption of children are, by definition, beyond forgiveness. Such people, who have almost always themselves been abused in childhood by relatives, but have failed to assert control over their generational vice, are destined for perdition - and probably know it. Their unending despair at their own condition may drive them to ever more heinous behaviour. Given the disproportionately large number of such people holding positions at the highest levels of Government these days, it is hardly surprising that the despairing leaders of the Governments concerned are behaving irrationally and with increasing barbarity, while posing as messengers and implementers of 'democracy' - for instance, in Iraq.

For the Illuminati, 'democracy' and 'freedom' are no more than empty slogans which mask the underlying evil intent that 'democracy' must be controlled (by vote-rigging, electronic voting scams and 'false-flag' political gamesmanship), while 'freedom' is to be provisional, legally delineated, and arbitrarily controlled in accordance with the demands and requirements of the flluminati's elite and their handlers.

GEORGE TENET THANKS 'SPECIAL PERSON' DAVID L BOREN

To revert to the Boren case, the occultically-named 'The Texas Triangle' [14th July 1993, pages 1 and 11] cited a 'Queer Nation activist', Michael Petrelis, who had started publicly to accuse Boren of sexually harassing his male staffers. With a startling lack of ambiguity, W. Scott Thompson wrote that Boren had been referred to implicitly in a book called 'Queer in America' [Random House, New York, 1993, pages 170-182] by a certain Mr Michelangelo Signorile. Michael Wright elaborated in an analysis dated August 2003 that 'with these words, Thompson was allegedly hinting strongly that Boren is guilty of sexually harassing male Senate staff members'.

Wright's analysis elaborated that when George Tenet was sworn in as Director of Central Intelligence in 1967, he used the occasion to thank some very 'special' people, including Boren, whom he described as 'my friend and mentor for whom I have the highest personal regard and affection and without whom I would not be here today' - remarks that were posted on the CIA website. Writing in 'The Washington Post', Dan Balz and Bob Woodward provided a now famous account of the notorious leisurely breakfast that Tenet and Boren were enjoying on the morning of 9/11. Time' likewise reported that Boren and Tenet were having a 'leisurely breakfast' in a Washington Hotel on the morning of the 9/11 attack. Wright added that 'in January 2001, Boren had called Bush and persuaded him to keep Tenet as CIA Director'. 'USA Today' also described Boren as 'Tenet's patron as he rose to the top of the intelligence community'. At the breakfast, Tenet had said to Boren, following news of the first aircraft crash: 'I wonder if it has anything to do with this guy taking pilot training'. But not mentioned by Balz and Woodward was the fact that Massaoui' (the terrorist in question) 'who had been much on Tenet's mind, had spent several months in Boren 's own community at Norman, Oklahoma, where he had attended the Airman Flight School for three months in the spring of 2001'.

In a complex and meticulous analysis, Michael Wright demonstrated that Boren allegedly an operative, allegedly interfaced with, and may have supervised preparations involving, the following 'Jihad' terrorists who spent time in Oklahoma, Boren's State:

Two 9/11 hijackers, Mohammed Atta and Marwana al-Shehhi, who toured the Airman Flight School at the local Westheimer Airport in July 2000. Mohammed Atta and another man thought to be Al-Shehhi met Zacarias Moussaoui (a.k.a. Shaqil, a.k.a. Abu Khalid ad-Sahrawi) in an Oklahoma City motel in August 2001.

Moussaoui, reported by French intelligence to be a high-ranking member of Al-Qaeda, was in Norman, OK, from February to August 2001. He was enrolled in the Airman flight School until May, and lived for part of the time in Oklahoma University housing.

The Wall Street Journal reported that Moussaoui had persuaded the Oklahoma University engineering student Hussein Al-Attas to join the Jihad' in Chechnya, where the Soviets train terrorists clandestinely Al-Attas drove Moussaoui from Norman to Minneapolis to attend another flight school, and Al-Attas subsequently admitted that he was aware of Moussaoui's 'Jihad' activities.

Two 9/11 hijackers listed home addresses in Tulsa, OK. Specifically, Fayez Ahmad gave his home address as the Spartan School of Aeronautics, while Mohammad Al-Ghamdi listed his home address as an apartment complex in Tulsa.

The 9/11 hijacker Nawaf AI-Hamzi visited the Oklahoma Al-Qaeda cell in April 2001 and was cited for speeding on Route 1-40. He also attended an Al-Qaeda meeting held in Malaysia in January 2000.

An unidentified Al-Qaeda member or collaborator bought an airline ticket for one of the 9/11 hijackers on a public computer terminal at the Oklahoma University Library.

Mr Wright's analysis concluded as follows:

'While in Norman, Moussaoui was receiving funds from Ramzi bin Al-Shibh, a key member of the Al-Qaeda cell in Germany' [source: Rohan Gunaratna, 'Inside Al-Qaeda: Global Network of Terror', Columbia, New York]. In September 2001, Wright had written, in an Internet posting, that former Senator David Boren's 'close tie to the CIA is well known. He was appointed to the Intelligence Committee in 1985, and later became its Chairman. Boren also has close ties to the extreme right Political Research Associates (PRA), a group whose purpose is to expose the threat to democracy presented by extreme right-wing groups, includes Boren as a member of one of the organizations which they have targeted for concern'.

'Boren was Co-chairman of the Congressional Division of the [Nazi-sounding] National Coalition for Peace through Strength' (CPTS), a creature of the American Security Council (ASC). The CPTS believed that the USSR and Communism were the greatest evils in the world.... PRA also says that emigre groups with a history of association with Nazis were included in the CPTS membership.... Boren's relationship with former CIA Director Robert Gates [also] deserves critical scrutiny. Robert Gates was essentially allegedly a liar used by Reagan to corrupt the CIA away from its mission of providing the Government with accurate assessments of Soviet strength. Under Gates, the CIA's mission came to be the exaggeration of Soviet strength and expansionist tendencies, while sabotaging the goal of detente. David Boren was an enthusiastic supporter of Gates and helped push through his nomination as CIA Director'.

Hence Boren was the 'mentor' of TWO operatives who became Director of Central Intelligence - Robert Gates and George Tenet. This surely provides ample evidence of Bonesman Boren's exceptional continuing importance - to the German Illuminati Fifth Column operating deep within the corrupted US intelligence structures.

Exaggerating the strength and malevolent intentions of the Soviets was of course merely an extension of that same strategic deception ploy that General Reinhard Gehlen used to deceive the Americans during the years immediately following the Second World War - yet another indication that there has never been any discontinuity of German deception strategy towards the US component of the dual 'Main Enemy'.

'In a speech available online at the CIA website, Gates boasted about CIA success in Afghanistan, where it supported the anti-Soviet Mujahhedin. He admits that the CIA funnelled billions of dollars in supplies and weapons to the Mujahhedin'. Oddly enough, he forgot to mention the notoriously damning fact that that Osama Bin Laden was the CIA's controlled asset and operative whose alias was 'Tim Osman'.

The Author concludes that the 9/11 mass murder cover-up operation was orchestrated in secret collaboration with French and German 'Black' intelligence using DVD-sponsored Al-Qaeda cells, by highly-positioned, blackmailable homosexual Fifth Column Illuminati 'Nazis' buried inside the United States' structures, where their true loyalties were masked by a convincing veneer of 'loyalism' and the 'public service' ethic. This view is also held (independently of this Author's input) by 'white hat' sectors of British intelligence, whose influence has increased markedly since the atrocities committed against British citizens and installations in 2005, were traced promptly to Al-Qaeda cells controlled by French and German 'Black' intelligence. Although, in the circumstances, this came as no surprise to the intelligence investigators concerned, what was new was that certain of their number were finally prepared, out of frustration, to leak such findings to exposure professionals such as the Author of the present work.

'ABLE DANGER' - CODENAME FOR THE REVOLUTIONARY 9/11 PROVOCATION

The informed US source mentioned on page 584 implied that the US authorities were responsible for the murder of around 3,000 people on 9/11. The source independently asserted that the primary figures allegedly implicated were Boren and Tenet:

Author: 'We haven't discussed 9/11'.

Source: 'Able Danger' (codename for the intended provocation and atrocities) knew, and was the 9/11 operation.

Author Who was behind it?

Source: The Department of Defense and the CIA. Boren and Tenet. Moussaoui et al, just like Tim McVeigh, were developed by this operation. They were created by this operation, just like the militias.

Author The militias have disappeared. Why is that?

Source: They have indeed. Absolutely. The rats have gone.

Author: Why is that?

Source: I honestly don't know that they have disappeared. They have just gone off the radar. They are still out there with their guns. [Author: This is correct. Specific anecdotal evidence from several States confirms this. And the following comment confirms the malevolence of the Clinton Administration].... This was part of an operation under

Clinton to create foment and discontent with the militias advocating attacking the US Government - which gave [the clandestine US Government cadres] a pretext for Osama Bin Laden and then the 9/11 attack. Osama Bin Laden was a US asset/operative. George Bush Jr. had an asset management company managing part of his family's assets.

Author: So you are saying that the US Government murdered 3,000 people....

Source: Yes, yes. Shear bombs were used and were placed in the Twin Towers. The planes themselves did not crumple the buildings. [They were destroyed by] charges down in the basement. [This is of course consistent with this Author's findings].

Author: We know this must have been the case, because when the buildings collapsed, they fell faster than the speed of gravity plus resistance. [See Chapter 7],

Source: What amazed me when watching the building collapses was that they seemed so implausible.

Author: Building Number 7 suddenly collapsed at 5.30pm far no apparent reason. So is this is a scandal without historical precedent?

Source: The closest thing would be Pearl Harbour itself....

Author Or more appropriately, the Reichstag Fire model...

Hitler embarked upon pre-emptive attacks against peaceful countries, justifying his behaviour on the basis that such attacks would make his country more secure - just as George Bush Jr. has done. Similar developments are evolving in the United Kingdom, where the Metropolitan Police have adopted the Israeli 'shoot to kill' policy and, on 24th July 2005, openly acknowledged that innocent people would die as a consequence, because the danger of mass deaths was greater than the accidental deaths of a few innocents. The press failed to point out that the underlying principle here was enunciated by Weishaupt on behalf of the Illuminati over two centuries ago: The end justifies the means'.

BRITAIN COULD NEVER PARTICIPATE IN EMU ANYWAY

Some Germans have been unable to contain their pleasure at the sight of the enemies of which they have always been so jealous, in the plight that they are in today. This is what a spokesman for the 'New Europe', emailing with foul language from Germany, saw fit to write in September 2004 to a British website specialising in highlighting the destructive and adverse consequences of Britain's failure to understand that 'Fur uns der Krieg ist niemals vorbei' means what it says: 'You seem to be **** scared [sic] of German expansion. Unfortunately I have to tell you that expansion cannot be stopped. And soon you British will have to pay with Euros and in a few years English will be abolished and you will be forced to speak Germanic. I will not shed a tear for you lot'. And the senior figure who sent this email signed off with a reference to Churchill: 'With blood, sweat and tears'. The curious feature of this venomous mini-tirade is that Britain cannot, in fact, participate in Economic and Monetary Union (EMU) for many reasons, the most important of which is that the City of London is the seat of the International Petroleum Exchange, which of course trades exclusively in US dollars. This is because the US dollar system is based upon the oil (and drugs) standard which was cemented into place in collaboration with the Saudi Arabian Royal Family in the early 1970s. In any political collective, all dimensions of existence must logically be collectivised, since if areas that are 'uncollectivised' persist, they will challenge and 'degrade' (in the eyes of the controllers of the collective) the overall integrity of the collective itself. It is therefore an 'impossibility' for Britain to be integrated further into the European Union's structures - which means that it has finally been realised, in the Foreign Office and in parts of the intelligence services,

Europäische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft

von

Reichswirtschaftsminister u. Präsident der Deutschen Reichsbank Funk;
Professor Dr. Jecht, Berlin; Professor Dr. Woermann, Halle;
Dr. Reithinger, Berlin; Ministerialdirektor Dr. Beisiegel, Berlin;
Staatssekretär i.W. Koenigs, Berlin; Direktor Dr. Benning, Berlin;
Gesandter Dr. Clodius, Berlin, und Gauwirtschaftsberater Professor
Dr. Hunke, Berlin

mit einer Einführung von

Gauwirtschaftsberater Professor Dr. Heinrich Hunke
Präsident des Vereins Berliner Kaufleute und Industrieller

Herausgegeben von dem

Verein Berliner Kaufleute und Industrieller und der Wirtschafts-Hochschule Berlin

Preußische Staatsbibliothek Berlin

Berlin 1942

Haude & Spenersche Verlagsbuchhandlung Max Paschke

Figure 92: The front cover of 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft' ['European Economic Community'], a compendium of lectures by senior Nazis given at a symposium in 1941, and published in book format in 1942 by Haude & Spenersche Verlagsbuchhandlung Max Paschke, Berlin. One copy of this volume is to be found in the British Library, but the copy reviewed here was found in the Staastbibliothek, Berlin, with the stamp of the Preussische Staatsbibliothek. The chapter headings of this work correspond almost precisely to the primary themes of the Maastricht Treaty and its subsequent updates. Corrupt 'payola' payments were distributed to 'facilitators' of the European Union's Maastricht Treaty, just as was the case with the 'aborted' EU Constitution Treaty. In that case, a corruption amount of $5.0 billion was allocated from a Swiss slush fund, to be paid out in two segments of $2.5 billion, divided into 50 payments equivalent of $100 million each.

that Britain's destiny does not lie with the failing European Union Collective.

It is pathetic that such patchy official understanding has emerged four decades after the United Kingdom was betrayed by Abwehr agents, and that this betrayal was hushed up by the intelligence services themselves - a policy to which the entire Civil Service has consistently adhered. The apparent policy of allowing traitors to do their dirty work and only revealing the proportion of their treachery after their deaths, borders on the treacherous itself. One reason for its application in the case of German long-range strategy is that the Conservative Party has always contained a pro-Germen element, traceable back to the likes of Captain Macnamara. It is this traitor element that has sustained the party's disastrous stance over Britain's participation in the European Union which, as has been shown, is a long-range strategic deception and entrapment operation of the Abwehr and its successor 'Black' intelligence agency, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, based at Dachau. The outline plans for this corrupt and corrupting supragov-ernmental edifice were laid out in a Nazi compendium published in Berlin in 1942.

'EUROPAISCHE WIRTSCHAFTSGEMEINSCHAFT'

That the European Union is indeed a long-range DVD deception strategy was exposed by this Author in 1993, in an Occasional Paper published with International Currency Review[48] in which the contents of a compendium of lectures arising from a high-level Nazi seminar held in Berlin in 1941 were examined in relation to the subject-headings of the EU's Maastricht Treaty of 1992 - and were found to be almost identical. The lectures were published by Hauder & Spenersche Verlagsbuchhandlung Max Pashke, Berlin, in 1942 under the title 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft' ('European Economic Community'). Figure 92 on page 591 displays the front page of the copy lodged with the (Preussische) Staatsbibliothek in Berlin. Another copy exists in the British Library, London. The compendium was issued by the Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists [Der Industrie und Handelskammer zu Berlin] in collaboration with the Berlin School of Economics [Wirtschafts-Hochschule Berlin].

'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft' contains a 1942 Nazi Party blueprint of the European Community which is indeed almost identical to the structure of the European Economic Community, now the so-called European Union. This became apparent when the Author translated certain selected passages, and the Index, of this document, having tracked it down in the Reading Room of the British Library. The resulting English translation of the Table of Contents, displayed in Figure 93 on page 593, is given on pages 595-597. It confirms that the Nazis planned the establishment of a European Economic Community - complete with a common agricultural policy, a common exchange rate system and monetary policy, common industrial and trade policies, trans-European networks, and a powerful European Central Bank dominated by Germany. When in 1993, the Author made this straightforward and easily verifiable information widely available, including to the dumkopfs in the London-based media, no-one took any notice. Reasons for this include the fact that both main British political parries rely on 'payola' corruption and on drug-money flows laundered via 'benefactors' through offshore accounts for their survival, in accordance with the standard EU-DVD methodology, while the national newspapers have geopolitical and/or Illuminati axes to grind. For instance, certain newspapers, while ostensibly affecting wall-to-wall British patriotism, have historically belonged to the treacherous wing of the Conservative Party which has German affiliations.

In 1941, an American academic visitor, Allan Nevins, working at Oxford Univ-

Inhaltsverzeichnis

Vorwort 3

Hunke: Einführung 7

Die bisherige Diskussion und ihre Ergebnisse S. 7. — Die wirtschaftliche Praxis S. 10. — Probleme der kontinentaleuropäischen Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft S. 10.

Funk: Das wirtschaftliche Gesicht des neuen Europa 17

Falsche und wahre Wirtschaftsfreiheit S. 17. — Kontinentaleuropäische Zusammenarbeit S. 23. — Das europäische Leistungsvermögen und seine Ergänzung S. 26. — Staatliche Wirtschaftslenkung und zwischenstaatliche Gemeinschaftsarbeit S. 29. — Zwischenstaatlicher Zahlungsverkehr und europäisches Währungswesen S. 32. — Die Sicherung des europäischen Lebens- und Wirtschaftsraumes S. 38. — Der Wille zur europäischen Gemeinschaftsarbeit S. 40.

Jecht: Die Entwicklung zur europäischen Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft 42

Europäische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft und Großraumbildung S. 42. — Das Problem des europäischen Wirtschaftsraumes in der Spätantike und im Mittelalter S. 44. — Wandlungen des europäischen Raumproblems in der Neuzeit S. 48: Entstehung der Staaten und der selbständigen Volkswirtschaften S. 49; Expansion nach Übersee und ihre Rückwirkung auf Europa S. 50; Loslösung Englands vom Kontinent und Entstehung der „freien Weltwirtschaft“ S. 53. — Die wirtschaftliche Neuordnung Europas als Aufgabe der Gegenwart S. 57: Zusammenbruch der bisherigen Weltwirtschaft S. 57; Ziele und Methoden der europäischen Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft S. 60. — Ausblick S. 63.

Woermann: Europäische Landwirtschaft 66

Die Entwicklung der landwirtschaftlichen Betriebsformen und des ernährungswirtschaftlichen Gefüges Europas S. 66. — Ausbildung der weltwirtschaftlichen Arbeitsteilung auf landwirtschaftlichem Gebiet S. 76. — Steigerung der Erzeugung in Deutschland und Italien S. 78. — Die Versorgungslage unter dem Einfluß der wirtschaftlichen Abschnürung und Umstellung S. 81. — Die produktionspolitischen Folgerungen S. 84. — Möglichkeiten zur Steigerung der europäischen Nahrungsmittelerzeugung S. 86.

Reithinger: Europäische Industriewirtschaft 94

Die Entwicklung der Industrie im 19. Jahrhundert S. 94. — Die technisch-wirtschaftlichen Entwicklungsstufen S. 97. — Die politisch-sozialen Aus-

Figure 93: Detail from the first page of the Contents of 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft', the Nazi compendium of presentations by senior Nazi officials and experts giving substance to the German project for a 'unified' Europe under German domination in perpetuity. When the Author published details of this Nazi book in 1993, the brainwashed British media paid no attention - as usual. Yet this work definitively proves that the European Economic Community/European Union project is a long-range strategic operation of the Abwehr. It has been elaborated and directed by the Nazi intelligence Continuum based at Dachau, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, which considers the EU operation to be one prong of a dual strategy to achieve hegemony over Germany's arch-enemies, Britain and the United States. The other prong of the strategy is manifested by the Fifth Column serving German interests at the highest levels of the US Federal structures.

ersity, described precisely what the Nazis were preparing. He had deduced that Hitler was organising his conquests into the United States of Europe as early as 1941. The predominantly industrial Reich had been enlarged by the annexation of The Netherlands, Luxembourg, parts of Belgium, Alsace Lorraine, Northern France as far as the Somme, and Western Poland. To feed this industrial heartland, food was to be conveyed from the outer periphery of Europe, which was mainly agricultural. All European production was to be regulated in minute detail from Berlin, from where Soviet-style central planning was to be directed; and all trade was to be controlled by means of a regional multilateral clearing system which Germany had already established among about a dozen states. But the system was fragile, since not all the annexed states were compliant; while its greatest weakness was a lack of raw materials.

At the Congress of Europe held in Rome between 14th and 20th November 1932, the Nazi Alfred Rosenberg had outlined ideas for the economic restructuring of Europe. These ideas were heavily promoted under the Nazis by the newspaper 'Die Deutsche Volkswirtschaft' ['The German People's Economy'], which campaigned for what one of the contributors to the compendium, Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, called 'the concept of the German economy becoming self-sufficient in a new political sense'. Another influential advocate of a 'New Europe' reorganised economically and politically to meet the 'requirements' of the German Reich, was a German Ambassador, Daitz, whose selected speeches and essays were published in 1938 under the giveaway title Veutschland und die Europaische Grossraumwirtschaft' ['Germany and the Greater European Economy'].

Close attention was also paid by the Nazi leadership and by the Reich's planners to a speech by the prominent leader of the powerful German agricultural community, R. Walther Darre, in the course of a seminar held at Munich in January 1939 on the following subject: 'Market organisation of National Socialist agricultural policy as a pacemaker for a new foreign trade organisation'. So much, then, for the widespread belief that the market-rigging Common Agricultural Policy of today is a 'French ramp'. Paris knows, but conveniently keeps up its sleeve, that the socialist organisation of agriculture in Europe was first proposed by the Nazis.

Addressing the Bertelsmann Forum on 3rd April 1992, former German Chancellor Helmut Kohl confirmed that the German Government was openly promoting the establishment of a United States of Europe. Dr Kohl said: 'At Maastricht we laid the foundation stone for the completion of the European Union. The European Union Treaty introduces a new and decisive stage in the process of European union which within a few years will lead to the creation of what the founding fathers of modern Europe dreamed of following the last war: The United States of Europe'.

Given the behaviour of his country during that war, Dr Kohl was perhaps understandably economical with the truth on that occasion. For it was not the 'founding fathers of modern Europe', meaning the post-war politicians, who developed the scheme and who first attempted to establish a United States of Europe. It was Nazi Germany, and its pan-German predecessors, working behind the deep cover of the German-spawned Illuminati. This is perfectly clear from the Nazi book 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft'.

In order to prove that 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft''contains the precise blueprint of the European Community project as confirmed by the convoluted Maastricht Treaty and its successor variants, it is unfortunately necessary to reproduce some of the Nazi thinking and rhetoric contained in this document. It is no use just taking the Author's word for this: the serious observer needs proof, and this is presented herewith.

CHAPTER HEADINGS OF NAZI 1942 BOOK CORRESPOND TO THE MAIN HEADINGS OF THE EUROPEAN UNION'S MAASTRICHT TREATY

The main Contents Pages of 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgesellschaft', published in 1942 by Haude & Spenersche Verlagsbuchhandlung Max Paschke on behalf of the Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists and the Berlin School of Economics, containing lectures on the subject of the new European Economic Community given in early 1942, reads as follows, as translated below. There is no doubt at all that this document contained the blueprint for the European Union, which is a long-range Nazi deception strategy. It has been directed all along by the Abwehr's successors, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau.

- Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, President of the Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists and of the Institute of the German Economy.

Introduction:
O Economic practice
O Problems facing the Continental European Economic Community.

- Walther Funk, Reich Economy Minister and President of the Reichsbank [Reichswirtschaftsminister und President der Deutschen Reichsbank]:

The Economic Character of the New Europe:
False and genuine economic freedom:
O Continental European cooperation [a.k.a. collectivisation]
O European capacity and how to supplement it
O State direction of the economy and Community work between the Member States
O Payment transactions between States and the European currency
O Securing Europe's living space and economic market
O The will to work for the European Community.

- Dr Horst Jecht, Professor and Nazi economist from the Berlin School of Economics:

The Development of the European Economic Community
O The European Economic Community and the formation of the larger area
O Problems of the European economic market in the late classical period and the Middle Ages
O Recent changes in the issue of the 'European space'
O Creation of states and independent state economies
O Expansion overseas and the consequences for Europe
O The separation of England from the Continent and the creation of the 'free world economy'
O The economic reformation of Europe: a task which must be addressed now
O The collapse of the former world economy [i.e. the 'Anglo-Saxon system']
O Objectives and methodology of the European Economic Community
O Forecast concerning its implementation.

- Dr Emil Woermann, Professor, University of Halle; Nazi agricultural expert:

The European Agricultural Economic Order [= The Common Agricultural Policy]
O Development of farming business methods; fabric of European foodstuffs economies
O The growth of the global economic division of labour in the agricultural sector
O Rising agricultural output in Germany and Italy
O Supply situation under the influence of economic strangulation and transformation
O Consequences in terms of production policy
O Prospects for increasing European production of foodstuffs.

- Dr Anton Reithinger, from I.G. Farben. Berlin:

The European Industrial Economy [= The Common Industrial Policy]
O The development of industry in the 19th century
O Stages in developing a technological economy
O Effects on social policy
O Europe's loss of industrial domination in World War I
O The transition to state direction and planning
O The New Europe and its common aspects
O Differences in regional areas
O Review of the relative industrial strengths of the warring power groups.

- Dr Philipp Beisiegel Director of the Reich Ministry of Labour and author of works on the direction of labour [= forced and slave labour + employment controls]

Employment in Europe
[= The Common Labour Policy, a.k.a. the Social Chapter, a watered-down derivative]
O Density of population and the numbers and structure of people in employment
O People - Europe's wealth
O Exchange of workers on the basis of agreements between Member States
O Principles of worker exchange
O Harmonisation of organisation of employment
O Use of contractors and shifting of orders.

- Gustav Koenigs, a State Secretary:

European Traffic Questions [= Trans-European Networks]
O The Magna Carta of European internal marine traffic
O Motorways and the European traffic community.
O European Community work in the shipping sector
O European Community work in the air transportation sector
[of the common transportation policy].

- Dr Bernhard Benning, Director of the Reichs-Kredit-Gesellschaft AG., Berlin:

European currency issues
[= Economic and Monetary Union as implemented under the Maastricht Treaty]
O The two aspects of currency
O Domestic economic problems of European currencies
O Foreign currency management and reciprocal billing
O Extension of multilateral billing
O The problem of the clearing balances
O Harmonisation of European rates of exchange
O The future form of the European Currency System
O Europe's future currency relations with the other key areas of the world
O What about gold?
O The European Currency Bloc.

- Dr Carl Clodius, Manager of the Foreign Trade Centre in Berlin:

European trading and economic agreements [= The European Single Market]
O The old trading policy
O German economic and trade policy since 1933
O Changes in trading policy brought about by the War
O The transformation of the law of supply and demand
O The question of European employment
O The traffic problem

Section concluded on page 597

O Effects of the English blockade on Europe O Principles of European cooperation
O The European regional principle [forerunner of the current European Regional Policy and the Committee of the Regions - a scheme to break down the constituent nation states and to foster links between the regions and the Euro-centre to render the national centres redundant]
O The economic independence of Europe
O Europe and the world economy
O Internal requirements for the European Economic Community
O Methods of European cooperation [= collective decision-making/collectivisation]

- Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, President, Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists and of the Institute of the German Economy, who added a conclusion:

The basic question: Europe - a geographical term or a political reality?
O Transformation of doctrine and thinking [i.e. into the new 'European' way of thinking]
O The starting point for setting tasks for Europe [by Germany, of course]
O The character of the world economy
O Political weakness of the European Continent: prerequisite for British world domination
O The concept of the modern national economy as monopolised by British opinion
O Setting up the European Economic Community. ■

THE MAASTRICHT TREATY: NAZI CONTROL REALISED

The European Union's Maastricht Treaty- procured by means of fraudulent 'facilitation payments' in 1992, following arm-twisting by the British Prime Minister of the day, John Major, and the betrayal of the 'Maastricht Rebels' in the Conservative Party (amid intelligence community hints of 'payola' corruption, as was confirmed in 2005 when the Author exposed the $5.0 billion of 'Black' Nazi Continuum funds set aside in a Swiss slush fund to 'finance' the European Constitution Treaty) - was the most convoluted demonstration of the Illuminati's trick of manufacturing incomprehensible legalese, that could be devised. Even the British Prime Minister's staff described the Treaty text as 'a can of worms' - on the basis of which remark, the Author commissioned the cartoon shown below.

The main headings of the Maastricht Treaty - which has been updated every four years or so since - a cynical Talmudic technique which procures that what was collectively imposed at the preceding Intergovernmental Conference is liable to be superseded at any time - conform precisely with those of the Nazi compendium dating from 1942 entitled 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft', meaning European Economic Community, reviewed in these pages. Notwithstanding this easily accessible evidence that the EU is modelled on the Nazi blueprint, bribery and corruption prevailed. ■

THE
MAASTRICHT
TREATY
FOREIGN AND SECURITY POLICY
COMMITTEE OF THE REGIONS
COMMON CITIZENSHIP
SOCIAL CHAPTER
THE SEVEN PROCEDURES

'If you open up this can of worms everything comes out':
a Downing Street official on the Maastricht Treaty, 10.2.1993.

BRITAIN STOOD IN THE WAY

According to Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, Great Britain and its European economic hegemony stood in the way of the promotion of European economic and political unification. 'The route and extent of European economic unity', he insisted, 'remained problematical, as long as it was possible for the Fuhrer to hope that he might be able to follow the path of peaceful conciliation with England'. And he added triumphantly that, after the events of 193940, this option was finally excluded.

The Nazis understood that the project of 'Europaische Grossraumwirtschaft' would be unattainable while 'the Anglo-Saxon economic system' remained intact. Thus Professor Hunke, one of the Hitler regime's leading economists, writes in the compendium of 1942:

'...Europe may not be... a market [area] in terms of a reduced world economy, in which... the old structural laws of the Anglo-Saxon world economy apply, but [rather] the European Economic Community must be shaped in accordance with the new political categories and will consequently appear different from the economy of the pasf.

As for the meaning of 'Grossraumwirtschaft', this was identical with that of the familiar slogan 'Lebensraum', which Hunke helpfully described in the following passage:

'By its Lebensraum Germany means:

(1) Sufficient space [for Germany] to be able to live and grow in an enclosed settlement in Europe. ['Europaische Grossraumwirtschaft' would not look outwards].

(2) The remodelling of the German economy along centralised state lines.

(3) Acknowledgment of the development of a Continental European Economic Community, permitting both the utilisation of domestic economic powers [and] furthermore ensuring that the economic capacity of friendly neighbouring states is mutually complementary and accessible [by Germany] in time of need; and:

(4) The development of a colonial economic supplementary area, as is customary and possible elsewhere in the world'.

The Nazi treatise is held together by a peroration attributed to the same Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, Chairman of the German Economic Promotion Council in 1942, who appears to have had the task of summarising the papers. From this section, two passages are worth noting: 'At the turn of the year 1939-40, the main part of Europe was still under the spell of the English concept of economic organisation, whether Europe was aware of this fact or not. But in the course of recent years, this concept has been swept out of the Continental European countries in political, military and economic terms. In political terms [Europe has been reorganised with] every people and every area... living together as neighbours according to the ideals of a new peoples' order. In military terms, the foundation of English economic practice, the doctrine of the balance of power, has been utterly overturned. And in economic terms, as a result of the political and military developments, a revolution has been initiated.... The transformation taking place in our presence must be placed alongside the greatest economic revolutions in history... signifying fundamentally a turning-back by European economies to the time prior to the formation of the English Overseas Europe'.

'Much is owed to the newspaper 'Die Deutsche Volkswirtschaft' for having initially taken up these questions at the Congress of Europe [held] in Rome between 14th and 20th November 1932], for having put the arguments again and again, and for having maintained... with dogged persistence... the concept of the German economy becoming self-sufficient in a new political sense'. So Mazzini's Political Action Centre in the Vatican turns out to have been the guiding hand behind 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft'.

A NAZI EUROPEAN ECONOMIC COMMUNITY

These and innumerable other documented references confirm the direct lineage of the European Union Collective from Nazi Germany. It is nothing less than a classic long-range strategic deception operation - controlled from Dachau. When considered against the background of the contemporaneous deep-cover Nazi Continuum offensive against the United States, we have a classic 'scissors' dual strategic deception.

At the conclusion of 'Europaische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft', Professor Hunke drew together the themes set out in the book by Reichswirtschaftsminister und President der Deutschen Reichsbank, Walther Funk, who expostulated on 'The economic character of the New Europe'; by Dr Horst Jecht, from the Berlin School of Economics, who anticipated the development of the new 'European Economic Community'; by Dr Emil Woermann, a Professor from the University of Halle, who described 'The New European Agricultural Order'; by Dr Anton Reithinger, from I. G. Farben. Berlin, who spoke about 'The New European Industrial Economy'; by Dr Philipp Beisiegel, Director of the Reich Ministry of Labour, who gave details of 'The New Labour Order', with emphasis on the rigging of labour markets, the movement of workers in accordance with inter-state agreements, and the direction of labour; by Gustav Koenigs, a State Secretary, whose paper discussed 'European Traffic Questions' - the Nazi blueprint for the EU's so-called 'Trans-European Networks'; by Dr Bernhard Benning, the Director of the Reichs-Kredit-Gesellschaft A.G., Berlin, who discussed 'European Currency Questions', including: The harmonisation of European rates of exchange', 'The future form of the European Currency System' ['Die Zukunft des europaishes Wahrungssystems'], and 'The European Currency Bloc' - all collectivist concepts which became familiar in the early 1990s; and by Dr Carl Clodius, the Manager of the Foreign Trade Centre based in Berlin, who described 'European Trading and Economic Agreements', touching upon: 'Principles of European Cooperation', 'The European Regional Principle' (the precursor of the EU's Common Regional Policy), 'Internal requirements of the European Economic Community', and finally 'Methods of European Cooperation'.

With the single exception of the chapter on the Common Labour Policy, with its emphasis on the direction of labour, all of these chapter and section headings would be entirely familiar to followers of European Community intrigue and politics today.

THE NEW EUROPE PLANNED BY THE NAZIS

The Nazi Professor Dr. Hunke philosophised thus: 'The ultimate manifestation of the European Economic Community would be as follows: Initially the utilisation of the productive powers of the peoples will initiate a general change in what is produced in terms of its expansion. No longer will there be only that produced which the world market price permits and offers, but that which the forces of the people and of the area make possible. It might very well be possible to say that freedom of labour replaces freedom of the economy. In practical terms, this then means the end of the national mono-cultures, to the extent that they have been determined by price. There is no sense in putting together all European countries by means of a Customs Union just in order to reconstruct for practical purposes a reduced form of the English world economy with precisely the same faults. Customs Unions are the means of eliminating excessive difficulties between two peoples' economies of the same level, and in such cases are necessary. However, any elimination of all Customs restrictions in present-day Europe overnight would only disturb and endanger unnecessarily the natural growing together of the European peoples' economies' (i.e., this Utopian collectivism cannot actually work).

'Secondly, the aim of future economic cooperation is community of living space, i.e. it should not be the task of the new economic policy to destroy mono-cultures only to replace them by impossible insularities. For example, the German Empire has in recent years redirected its economic focus back towards the state sector by means of a considerable degree of self-sufficiency, because this was the political prerequisite for the economic independence of Europe.... In 1932 [at the Rome Congress] Sering correctly pointed out that the power of the American economy would collapse on the day that high Customs barriers were erected at the borders of each of the 48 States of the North American union, as is the case in Europe. But the European States would run the risk of becoming economically overwhelmed and losing their political independence if trade barriers were removed all at once, unless one day a new organic association were to replace the economic impoverishment of the individual States'.

'In this European Economic Community two phenomena will be fundamentally new: full employment and the coverage of essential goods from within the domestic area'. [Author's Unavoidable Note: Experience, as predicted in articles by this Author, Peter Jay and others, has of course demonstrated that these predictions were 100% incorrect].'There can be no doubt that the experiences of the German people of having reached the stage of full employment from their own resources or on the basis of new economic awareness, will provide the other peoples with the means for better employment, and the execution of European tasks made necessary by the development of large portions of the Continent will at the same time employ resources to an extent imagined by only a few people today. In this way the European peoples will... free themselves from the condition of a proletariat without rights, and will build for themselves a new life'. In the event, the European Union experiment has been associated with sky-high unemployment and economic stagnation - demonstrating that Nazi economics was make-believe, as Third World countries encumbered with the formulae preached by the German Chicago School have discovered.

'Exactly the same economic political imperative will require that goods which are essential must also always be attainable; for what could the true meaning of the term Lebensraum be other than that of access at any time to essential goods.... It is accordingly clear that the European Economic Community will initiate an entirely new epoch for Europe. But it is just as evident that the practical implementation of the new principles will have to overcome many hindrances... [especially] difficulties which lie in the minds of Europeans, and not in the world of goods'.

'For example, I recall the problem of the clearing surpluses. One can understand why today there are still people who regard the clearing surpluses with considerable mistrust... What I have stated here in regard to the problem of the clearing surpluses applies fundamentally as regards all phenomena in the New Europe. The importance of German economic power is the prerequisite for the game which has now commenced, for all housekeeping is a form of compensation. But only that person who has the appropriate facilities can balance the books. Over and above this, reorientation of one's way of thinking, and familiarity with the new world of [European] ideas, is the necessary prerequisite for the further implementation and development of the European Economic Community...'. Making maximum use of the Leninist jargon word common, used by Communists and Nazis alike. Professor Hunke concluded:

'So let us not be diverted from initiating the Lebensraum Community by the small hindrances along the way. And as we progress along the path towards the New Europe, we find that we have reached the following unusual position. Common need enabled us to recognise common European problems. From the Congress of Europe [Rome, 1932], which took place at the invitation of the Italian Academy in November 1932 at Rome, to deal with the issue of the 'European Crisis' and to consider the question of Europe's spiritual unity, the economic division of power and Continental cultural issues, up to the Anti-Comintern Pact held in Berlin in the autumn of last year - what a powerful implementation of the biological resources of Europe in a struggle to maintain our European culture and the European peoples these occasions were! There can be no doubt that ultimately no people on the European Continent will be able permanently to refrain from the decision being fought about today'. Note that the Italian Academy fronted for the Political Action Centre, as sponsor of the little-remembered but crucial Congress of Europe.

'But what is more important is that common need not only permitted the recognition of common problems, but allowed above all like-minded spiritual and political movements to be created in the most different countries of Europe... In the meantime, the most important countries have also given a new image to the State...'.

'Harmony goes so far that today the single-party in contrast to the old multi-party system may be regarded as typical of the new political form in Europe. A similar unity is revealed in the field of economic direction.

Not surprisingly, in this state of collapse, in the common emergency, in pursuing our common defence, we recall also more and more our common past. Thus the common cultural foundation will grow slowly into a new European consciousness'.

'However, the decisive event on the path towards a new future for our old Continent will be common work [a.k.a. a Fascist form of collectivism].... I believe... that... the common future work of the European nations... will like nothing else promote and structure the European Economic Community. Much of what European people once created overseas has been lost, never to be recovered. That which fate has left to us, our homeland, our family and our place of work, we are now defending on the Continent. It is now up to us, whether we again construct a New World from the European spirit and from common European blood and thereby ensure for ourselves a new life and a new prosperity. The outlines of this new world are in front of us within our reach. Whether we succeed in building the New Europe ourselves is up to us; it depends upon our will, our development of resources and our use of resources'.

INTERVIEW WITH AN O.N.I. OPERATIVE IN CANADA

In May 2003, the Author interviewed a US Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) operative in Canada, at his suggestion, to discuss various dimensions of what the Author had published in 'International Currency Review', Volume 28, Number 4, issued in March 2003[49], in which aspects of the subversion of the United States by corrupt, penetrated US intelligence cadres with their own agendas aligned to foreign powers driven by their Illuminati obsessions, were reviewed. In the course of this interview, the operative confirmed (paraphrased) that factional warfare within the vast intelligence community 'has been going on for a lot longer than I have been alive. It started with Germany, and the penetration by German Nazi intelligence which has been perpetuated by the children of the original Nazis brought to the United States. The main troubles in the world today are caused by these Nazis and their operations. Their activities are directly related to the world's troubles today'. The US operative, moreover, had no qualms in pointing the finger at George Bush Sr, whom he insisted 'IS THE GOVERNMENT'. He is directing strategy. He told and tells Bill and Hillary, George Bush Jr. and Cheney what to do'.

When the Author asked a question to the following effect - 'how far do these peo-ple intend to go with their programme to establish the Thousand-Year Reich on the ruins of the United States?' - the ONI operative told him: 'All the way'.

And he then drew attention to the special trains which were being constructed % move people out of the way who are going to give them a hard time'. At that stage, the Author had only heard about these US 'death trains' from various 'underground' sources and was exercising his journalistic right and duty to be sceptical. Were these trains associated with the network of concentration camps that has been established in North America [seepages 612-613], he asked. The answer was: 'Absolutely'. 'The Author also asked for and obtained, hard confirmation of the revelation that the Amtrak 'repair' facility in Indianapolis, which will 'take out' 26,000 religious and political prisoners arrested under Martial Law every 24 hours, had been converted to a gas extermination depot

According to persistent reports, Amtrak containers with ceiling fittings have been designed to be connected to gas pipes so that a gas comparable to Zyklon-B can be administered to those held in the container trucks, ready for transportation to disposal areas. This was the technique used by the Nazis in Hungary, Latvia and the Soviet Union during the Second World War. Opponents were shot inside a special train, which stopped to pick up victims in the same way that a normal train picks up passengers. The victims were disposed of inside the train trucks and conveyed by the train for disposal - so that, when the death trains moved on, traces of the mass murders were not left at 'liquidation' scenes.

CONFIRMATION OF THE AMTRAK DEATH FACILITY

Al Cuppett, at the Pentagon, is reported to have been among those who have confirmed the existence and purpose of this industrialised death 'facility'. He is stated to have confirmed that 'it is a gassing/crematory facility where large former 'repair barns' can hold four prisoner boxcars at a time, while deadly toxic gas is released into the barn and the boxcars'. Some of these boxcars contain, according to several eyewitness reports, guillotines imported from Japan and China installed in them. They all have shackles installed for the retention of prisoners, as separately confirmed to this Author by the Office of Naval Intelligence source. One type of container, imported from China, is 40 feet long, equipped with shackles and a modern guillotine at the front end. For all practical purposes, the boxcars appear to be 'normal' Chinese trade cargo containers marked HANJIN, COSCO etc that can be piggybacked on train flatbeds or trucks. According to one report, 20,000 of these boxcars were ordered under secret contract from China.

The model for these Amtrak gas containers was described by Gertrude Schneider, who was deported on 6th February 1942 from Vienna, cited by Dr Martin Gilbert in 'The Holocaust: The Jewish Tragedy '[Fontana Press/HarperCollins Publishers, London, 1987].

Dr Gilbert explained that 'the Viennese transport reached Riga on February 10. It was met at the station by Dr Rudolph Lange, one of the Jewish Nazi officials who had been present at the Wannsee Conference' fwhere the definitive arrangements were made for the 'Final Solution' under Adolf Eichmann]. Gertrude Schneider later recalled how Lange told these latest arrivals that those who were 'unwilling or unable' to walk the seven kilometres to the ghetto could make the journey on trucks which had been especially reserved for them. 'In this way', he said, 'those of you who ride can prepare a place for those who walk'. Gertrude Schneider's graphic account continued: "'It was an extremely cold day - forty-two degrees below zero, to be exact - and so the majority of the hapless, unsuspecting Jews from Vienna took his advice and lined up to board the trucks. They did not know that those greyish-blue trucks had been manufactured at the Saurer Works in Austria especially for the implementation of the 'Final Solution'. These trucks were the gas-vans, which were used from time to time despite the fact that the SS did not especially like them because they always had mechanical problems'[50].

The 800+ prison or concentration camps in the United States today are all fully or prospectively operational, and ready to receive prisoners. By late 2005, there were reports of large numbers of (deliberately) displaced Blacks from the New Orleans area being held in prison camps, while the Amtrak Station in the city was still, as late as June 2006, being used as a prison. According to reports, the camps were to be operated by the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA, financed initially by Illuminati drug money) and since subsumed within the Department of Homeland Security (a.k.a. the Ministry of State Security) should Martial Law need to be implemented. All that would be necessary would be a Presidential signature on a proclamation, and the US Attorney General's signature on a warrant, to which a list of names would be attached.

Associated or integrated with the US concentration camp and prospective 'death train' infrastructure is the previously mentioned 'Rex-84' program, which uses the name of the highest 'Degree' of the Illuminati (see Figure 78, page 497). The rationale for the establishment of this programme, for public consumption purposes, was reportedly that if a 'mass exodus' of illegal aliens were to cross the Mexican/US border, they would be rounded up and detained in 'Rex-84' detention centres by FEMA. It was under the 'Rex-84' Program that many US domestic military bases were closed down with the so-called 'end of the Cold War' and turned into prisons or concentration camp 'facilities'.

MORE ABOUT THE AMERICAN DEATH CAMP BOXCARS

The US Nazis are certainly 'on top of preparations for the confirmation of the Fourth Reich. The equivalent of the Saurer Works in Nazi Austria is Gunderson Steel Fabrication of Portland, Oregon, which is assisted by other boxcar and associated manufacturing companies around the United States. Gunderson, working with Bethlehem Steel, obtained a contract to build 107,200 full-length railroad boxcars, each with 143 pairs of shackles. A total of 11 contractors were reported in 2005 to be involved in the manufacture of these death boxcars. It was also reported in 2005 that mobile prison units had been seen on train flatbeds in Georgia.

According to Michael Maholy, allegedly a veteran of 20 years in the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence, and as confirmed independently by the alleged former CIA assassin, Elaine Knost, the Nazi-Illuminati establishment has a clear idea of who 'the enemy' from their perspective is to be. 'Oh, all of us in the intelligence community know about the concentration camps and their purposes. We all know that they are to terminate the resisters to the New World Order under Martial Law'.

The existence of the concentration camps and death train complex, and their purpose, was separately confirmed to a US intelligence contact of the Author's by General Alexander Haig. And during this Author's interview in May 2003 with the Office of Naval Intelligence operative, the death trains were independently described as providing 'standing room only.... Shackles out of the ceiling... Same principle as Hitler's trains'. The operative referred to a military intelligence officer, known to the Author and colleagues by name, who has 'actually been on the trains'. He added that a train tunnel has already been constructed beneath the Bering Strait, and that prisoners able to work 'will be' exported in such boxcars under the Strait to work in covert Soviet labour camps - joining up the intended American Nazi GULAG with the continuing Soviet GULAG, details of which are given in Appendix 2 to this Chapter [page 614].

It is usually the case that explanations are concocted for public consumption, in order to 'manage' public perceptions and reaction when a strategic intelligence programme surfaces into the public domain, as ALWAYS happens in the end, since 'nothing is hid, that shall not be known'[51]. This routine practice may explain the surfacing of information about the Interhemispheric Bering Strait Tunnel and Railroad Group, reports of which suggest that this is a project for the future - whereas the intelligence operative interviewed by the Author in May 2003 specifically indicated that the tunnel had been completed and was in use; and furthermore, that a veteran known to this Author had actually travelled on the trains and through the tunnel. For public consumption, the Bering Strait Tunnel and Railroad Group is a small, private, non-profit group of individuals from around the world who share the objective of constructing a rail and tunnel line connecting the Western with the Eastern Hemispheres, so that the North American rail system is connected with that of Russia. According to public domain information available in 2003, this was to be done by extending the existing lines, with the construction of about 4,800 miles of additional track, and building a tunnel across the Bering Strait at Wales, Alaska, and connecting at approximately Uelen, in Russia.

'Resisters' to the 'New World Order' - the 'Order' of the Illuminati which is to be imposed by the 'New World'- include Christians who are Bible believers (such as this Author), Constitutionalists, Patriots, US gun-owners who refuse to relinquish their Second Amendment rights, anyone foolish enough to adhere to the notion of national sovereignty and the US Constitution and who rejects the Luciferian ideal and intended reality of World Government, and all unreformed authors, broadcasters, lecturers and clergy (pastors) who are not enamoured of the hell that is thereby intended. Also targeted of course are those who understand that, since this mad 'Permanent Revolution' is born of corruption, the global control apparat cannot fail to manifest itself as the New Underworld Order - characterised by the overflowing of the filthy, stinking underground River Styx from Hades up to the surface, where it is swamping the structures of civilised and orderly governance.

SINISTER ASSOCIATED REPRESSION PROGRAMMES

Two sinister sub-programmes, named Cable Splicer and Garden Plot, will be implemented once the 'Rex-84' Program is initiated for its proper purpose. Cable Splicer provides for the 'orderly' takeover of state and local governments by the Federal Government, while Garden Plot is a programme to control the population, no doubt in part through the unofficial 'privatised' arrangements which were being put in place (as of 2006) such as the new Neighbourhood Watch Association domestic spying system (prop: Marcus Wolf). The concentration and prison camps all have railroad infrastructures as well as roads leading to and from the detention 'facilities', while many also have a local airport nearby -convenient for use by a greatly expanded manifestation of the existing arrangements for the non-stop transportation of prisoners around the country by a fleet of planes operated by J.P.A.T.S. (Justice Prisoner and Alien Transportation System) created under President Clinton in 1995 when the Marshals Service and the Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS) merged their resources. On average, more than 270,000 prisoner and alien movements are handled annually by J.P.A.T.S., extensively by air, out of Kansas City. The relevant air fleet operations are located in Oklahoma City, Alexandria (LA), Mena (AK), Anchorage (Alaska), and the US Virgin Islands.

The largest of US concentration camp is said to be located just outside Fairbanks, Alaska. This is reported to be a massive, Soviet-style 'mental health' facility, capable of handling approximately two million people. Given realities such as these, the remarks by the just-retired US Supreme Court Judge Sandra Day O'Connor at Georgetown University, reported by National Public Radio, the 'Chicago Daily Law Bulletin', and 'The Guardian' [13th March 2006] to the effect that the United States is edging towards a dictatorship, described as 'forceful', were too mild and came almost too late.

THE AVALANCHE OF PRESIDENTIAL CONTROL ORDERS

A large portfolio of US Presidential Executive Orders, which will have been augmented since the 'census' that follows was taken, has been accumulated, associated with FEMA and a prospective suspension of the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. Some of these have been on the US Statute Book for more than 30 years, and could be activated by the stroke of the presidential pen. They include: Executive Orders 10990 (allowing the US Government to take over all modes of transportation); 10995 (allowing the Government to seize and control the communications media); 10997 (allowing the Government to take over all electrical power, gas, petroleum, fuels and minerals operations and resources); 10998 (allowing the US Government to seize all means of transportation, including personal cars, trucks or vehicles of any kind and total control over all highways, seaports and waterways); 10999 (enabling the Government to take over all food resources and farms); 11000 (permitting the Government to mobilise civilians into work brigades under government supervision - that is, Nazi direction of labour); 11001 (allowing the Government to take over all health, education and welfare functions); 11002 (designating the Postmaster General to operate a national registration index of all persons); 11003 (allowing the Government to take over all airports and aircraft, including commercial aircraft); 11004 (allowing the Housing and Finance Authority to relocate communities, build new housing with public funds, designate areas to be abandoned, and establish new locations for populations, exactly as occurred in New Orleans in 2005); 11005 (allowing the Government to take over railroads, inland waterways and public storage facilities); 11051 (specifying the responsibility of the Office of Emergency Planning and giving authorisation to put all Executive Orders into effect at times of increased international tensions and economic or financial crisis); 11310 (granting authority to the Department of Justice to enforce the plans set out in Executive Orders, to institute industrial support, to establish judicial and legislative liaison, to control all aliens, to operate penal and correctional institutions, and to advise and assist the President); 11049 (assigning emergency preparedness functions to Federal Departments and agencies, consolidating 21 operative Executive Orders issued over a 15-year period); and 11921 (allowing the Federal Emergency Preparedness Agency to develop plans to establish control over the mechanisms of production and distribution, of energy sources, wages and salaries, credit and the flow of money in US financial institutions in any undefined national emergency environment. This Executive Order also provides that when a State of Emergency is declared by the President, the Congress cannot review the President's action for six months. The Federal Emergency Management Agency, now buried within the Department of Homeland Security, has broad powers in respect of every dimension of national existence. The Chief of FEMA's Civil Security Division, General Frank Salezo, stated at a conference held in 1983 that he saw FEMA's role as 'a new frontier in the protection of individual and governmental leaders from assassination, and of civil and military installations from sabotage and/or attack, as well as the prevention of dissident groups from gaining access to US opinion, or a global audience in times of crisis'. FEMA's powers were consolidated by President Jimmy Carter to incorporate (a) the National Security Act of 1947, which, in addition to covering official criminal oper-ations under a blanket justification of 'national security', allows for the strategic reloca-tion of industries, services, Government and other essential economic activities, and to rationalise requirements for manpower, resources and production facilities; (b) the Defense Production Act of 1950, which gives the President sweeping powers over all aspects of the economy; (c) an Act of 29th August 1916, which authorises the Secretary of the Army, in time of war, to take possession of any transportation system for transporting troops, materiel, or any other purpose related to the emergency; and finally: (d) the International Emergency Economic Powers Act, which enables the President of the United States to seize the property of a foreign country or national. All these powers were transferred to FEMA in a sweeping consolidation in 1979; but it appears that lines of communication 'broke down' during the New Orleans 'Katrina' crisis, which should have been handled by FEMA, as required by these consolidated Acts. As a consequence of the 'Katrina' crisis, land previously the location of Black housing has been acquired by the authorities for clearance and probably oil sector development. The main levee was breached far below the waterline as a consequence of an explosion, heard by local residents at 4.00 am on the morning of the disaster. The land on which Black housing stood may overlay a large oil reservoir, implying for many analysts that this 'emergency' was contrived - as implied later by Vice President Cheney when he made the cynical comment: 'We are on top of this exercise'.

THE OUTCOME IS NOT INEVITABLE: FAILURE IS A CERTAINTY

In the view of many jaded observers of these developments, the promoters of the New Underworld Order are 'out of the gate' and unstoppable. But there are sound practical reasons for knowing that this resigned attitude is mistaken. In the first place, rival domestic and foreign sectors are competing desperately for control of the New Age of Man - which means that this demented project is certain to fail and collapse: 'A house divided against itself cannot stand'[52]. The furiously competing cadres within the vast US intelligence community are themselves the misguided instruments of European powers which are at loggerheads with each other for the same reason - and for control over the United States. A US intelligence expert adds that 'we underestimate the Japanese in all of this' - an insight with which the Author readily concurs, given the historical links and similarity between the German and Japanese corporate (Fascist) systems.

Secondly, the reality is that 'the Gates of Hell shall not prevail' against the Word of Jesus Christ[53]. These gates are wide open, enticing the unwary in vast numbers to perdition. For that is where they are headed: as Jesus, whose logic was always perfect, warned, 'if the blind lead the blind, BOTH shall fall into the ditch'[54] (an obvious truth). Because they know this, both categories of 'the blind' are riven with hatred against those who refuse to go along with them to keep them company. The 'seething energies of Lucifer' will not leave them alone. 'Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat; because straight is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it'[55]. If we chose the narrow way, rejecting Lucifer's enticements, we have the comfort of Christ's eternal promise: 'And lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world'[56].

MEMORANDUM FOR SECRETARY O'NEILL

FROM: Steve Radelet, Deputy Assistant Secretary
(Africa, Middle East, and South Asia)

SUBJECT: Supplementary Materials for Briefing for Today's 3:00 p.m. NSC Principals Meeting on Gulf Policy

Please find attached supplementary background information on the enforcement of U.S. sanctions on Iraq by Treasury's Office of Foreign Assets Control (OFAC), for today's NSC meeting at 3:00 p.m.

UNCLASSIFIED WITH SECRET ATTACHMENTS
DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
WASHINGTON, D.C. 20220

JAN 3 1 2001

BRIEFING

MEMORANDUM FOR SECRETARY O'NEILL

FROM: Mark Sobel, Acting Assistant Secretary, International Affairs

SUBJECT: Briefing for NSC Principals Meeting on Gulf Policy

DATE AND TIME: 3:00 p.m.-4:30 p.m., Thursday, February 1, 2001

LOCATION: White House Situation Room

PARTICIPANTS: Principals + 1

PURPOSE: To review the current state-of-play (including a CIA briefing on Iraq) and to examine policy questions on how to proceed.

ATTACHMENTS:

Tab A: Agenda and Policy Questions (from NSC) – **SECRET**
Tab B: Economic Background on Iraq (from Deutsche Bank)
Tab C: Executive Summary: Political-Military Plan for Post-Saddam Iraq Crisis (interagency working paper) – **SECRET**
Tab D: Summary of United States Sanctions on Iraq
Tab E: "Iraq Sanctions Regime," State Department, for use in public statements

cc: Kenneth Dam
Joe Engelhard
Steve Radelet

From: 'The Price of Loyalty: George W. Bush, The White House, and the Education of Paul O'Neill', by Ron Suskind, Simon & Schuster, New York, 2004.

UNCLASSIFIED WITH SECRET ATTACHMENTS

Figure 94: A document which proves that the Iraq War was being prepared long before the 9/11 'Reichstag Fire' event. This was among the large cache of documents released by President George W. Bush's first Treasury Secretary, Paul O'Niell, after he was fired. Note especially that the Bush II Government obtained its economic information on Iraq from the German institution, Deutsche Bank, which is de facto the financial implementer of German (DVD) official secret strategy. Observe also the reference to a 'Political-Military Plan for Post-Saddam Iraq', and that the US State Department was to persist with cynical diversionary 'sanctions talk'.

Chapter 8: THE THOUSAND-YEAR REICH: Notes and references

1. 'West Germany's elusive spymaster dies', by Christopher Bramwell, The Daily Telegraph', 11th June 1979, page 17
2. Victor Marchetti, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', Alfred A. Knopf, 1973, cited by Craig Roberts, The Medusa File: Secret Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government', Consolidated Press International, pages 57-60.
3. Victor Marchetti, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', op. cit, page 60.
4. Victor Marchetti, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', op. cit.
5. Victor Marchetti, The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence', op. cit.
6. Clare Lasby, 'Operation Paperclip', Athenaeum, 1975.
7. 'Hochschullehrerzeitung', Grabert Verlag, First Instalment, 1967, Issue Number 4, pages 26-27; and Second instalment, 1968, Issue Number 2, page 35.
8. 'Ein Dokument zur Judischen Mischuld an der Endlosung der Judenfrage' ('A Document on Jewish Mutual Complicity in the Final Solution of the Jewish Question'), translated by Professor (Emeritus) Reuben Clarence Lang, M. Theol., MA, PhD, of Jewish extraction.
9. For an analysis of Jews in the World Revolution, see 'Soviet Analyst', ISSN 0049-1713, Volume 29, # 8-10. World Reports Limited, 108 Horseferry Road, Westminster, London SW1P 2EF, UK, December 2005, page 53.
10. Second Epistle of Paul to the Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verse 7: 'For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way'. This is a most significant verse, which few understand. The 'mystery of iniquity' is clearly a reference to the frequently unfathomable deviousness and subtlety of Satan, his legions of demons working through those he and they control and whom they possess, and his Works of Darkness. It precisely meets our naturally anxious need to grasp what motivates the perpetrators of evil, and why they so often seem to command hegemony. But consider also the second part of Paul's statement: 'only he who now letteth' - Satan who is running wild and 'walking to and for over the earth'* and appears to have little resistance. And look at the words 'already' and 'now' in Paul's statement - meaning, that Satan was 'already', and 'now', since the birth, passion and resurrection of Christ, working overtime with his 'seething energies' to destroy and defeat the Word of the Lord and the reality of the living Christ, who is 'the Way, the Truth and the Life'. So what Paul was actually saying here fully supports what Chaim Rakover told his MVD interrogators, as elaborated so beneficially by Dr Henry Mackow. Paul was telling the Thessalonians (and us) that the ''permanent revolution' spoken of by Rackover was already under way. He concluded his statement by assuring us that he (Satan) will 'be taken out of the way'. That is a promise we must never forget; for if we believe, then of course it is manifestly true (something that no-one who does not yet understand how the living Christ ''works''' in us, cannot understand. (* Job, Chapter 1, verse 7: 'And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, 'From going to and for in the earth and from walking up and down in it').
11. Second Epistle to the Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verse 7: 'For the mystery of iniquity doth already work; only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume by the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming; Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders'.
12. 'Fresh hunt for Nazi Dr Death'. By Michael Leidig, Munich, 'Sunday Express', London, 2nd October 2005, page 23.
13. The main source for the foregoing information is The Guardian', Saturday, 25th September 2004, pages 4 and 5
14. 'Abuse photos reignite scandal of Abu Ghraib', The Times', London, 16th February 2006, pages 24-25,
15. 'The Times', ibid.
16. 'Soviet Analyst', Volume 28, #5, pages 1 and 3; World Reports Limited. See: www.worldreports.org.
17. Privately obtained intelligence furnished to the Author in February 2006.
18. First Epistle of John, Chapter 4, verses 1-3: 'Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God; And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God; and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that ft should come; and even now already is in the world'. See also Note 10, which illuminates (in the true sense) the words: 'even now already is' here.
19. Professor Rv. Sir Henry Chadwick, Regius Professor at both Oxford and Cambridge, former Dean of Christ Church, Oxford, The Early Church', Volume 1, page 260, Penguin Books, 1993.
20. The operative in question cannot be named here for security reasons.
21. 'After Long Silence', Michael Straight, William Collins Sons & Co. Ltd, London, 1983.
22. 'After Long Silence', op. cit, page 92.
23. 'After Long Silence', op. cit, pages 92-93.
24. Matthew, Chapter 5, verses 33-37. Note in this text, the important and overlooked command that we must not swear by the earth, 'for it is His (God's) footstool'. To the mind of the Author, this provides confirmation of his belief, or rather certainty, that there is no life anywhere in the universe except here on earth, and that it was on earth that the Lord performed his great works. This becomes obvious when one considers this statement more closely: if the earth is 'the Lord's footstool', then by definition Mars, Pluto, Jupiter and numerous moons and planets are NOT his footstool - that is to say, the place where the Lord performed all his great works. The search for life among the planets and in outer space, is a delusion descended from and directly linked to the occult preoccupations of astrologers, magicians, the death-oriented Egyptians, and Babylonian sorcerers.
25. 'After Long Silence', op. cit, pages 94-95.
26. 'Beria, Stalin's First Lieutenant'', by Amy Knight, Princeton University Press, Princeton, New Jersey, 1993, page 199.
27. 'Izvestiia TsK KPSS', No. 1 (1991): 143-144; Iurii Shpakov, ''Komanda brat'iam po lageriu', 'Moskovskie Novosti', 15 July 1990, page 8; Georgii Bezirgani, 'Bzlet I padenie Lavrentii Beria', 'Kommunist Gruzii', # 11 (November 1990), pages 84-85; cited by Amy Knight, 'Beria: Stalin's First Lieutenant', Amy Knight, op. cit, page 191.
28. 'The Nazi Agent who became British Prime Minister: Edward Heath: An agent of the Nazi International: German penetration of the U.K. and U.S. structures', 'International Currency Review', Volume 30, Number 4, page 13 et seq.

29. 'Obituary of Sir Edward Heath, the Prime Minister who took Britain into the EEC and presided over constant turmoil at home', The Daily Telegraph', 18th July 2005. This was probably the rudest obituary of a prominent UK statesman ever to have appeared in print. Even so, it omitted any reference to Heath's recruitment by German (Nazi) intelligence. However there were many [coded] references in this obituary, not least the final three telling words: 'He never married', which observers accurately interpret as meaning that he was homosexual, and therefore an obvious recruitment/blackmail target.

30. 'Hitler's Hidden Treasure', 'United Nations World', April 1952, and 'Rebirth of the Nazi International', The Nation', 5th April 1952. The only problem with the second analysis is that there was no strategic discontinuity, so no 'rebirth'.

31. T. H. Tetens, 'Germany Plots with the Kremlin', Henry Schuman, New York, 1953, page 73.

32. Yuri Nosenko, a KGB operative sent to Washington to neutralise strategic revelations by the Soviet defector Anatoliy Golitsyn, has described the execution of Lavrentii Pavlovich Beria in terms which suggest that he himself was the executioner. Beria was described as begging for his life in floods of tears, to no avail.

33. T. H. Tetens, 'Germany Plots with the Kremlin', op. cit., page 9.

34. This is a reference to the devious means by which the German Nazi geopolitical planners managed to contrive a comprehensive US policy U-turn. While President Roosevelt remained alive, the policy in Washington had been to devastate Germany to such an extent that it would never recover industrially. After Roosevelt's death, however, a group of Germanophiles, just like Edward Heath, who had lived in Germany before the war, found themselves with sufficient influence to procure the reversal of the policy. The group in question was led by George Kennan at the State Department, who exploited the emergence of Stalin's USSR as the 'new' enemy, and promoted the idea of rebuilding Germany as a 'bulwark against the East', a strategy which ignored the secret German policy of orientation towards Russia and the penetration of its intelligence and Party structures by German agents. Kennan influenced President Truman and was also instrumental in procuring the effective abandonment of de-Nazification, thereby facilitating the importation of a cadre of 770 top warfare scientists who had been working for Himmler in connection with occult mind- and personality control and manipulation techniques, rocket science, space travel and other programmes. These high-ranking Nazis penetrated the OSS, which became the Central Intelligence Agency, and have been associated with the promotion and exploitation of the occult and with some of the darkest programmes of US intelligence, such as MK-ULTRA. The Nazis are Illuminati and their central locus is Dachau, a place which is associated for all eternity with their 'Final Solution' mass murder apparatus. It is little surprise that the United States, which is today in grave danger of developing into a Nazi-style dictatorship, has constructed a large number of concentration camps: see Appendix 2 to this Chapter, pages 612-613. The Military Commissions Act of 2006 provided for Congress to strip away the Judiciary's jurisdiction over certain areas of law. The dictatorial legislation made citizen dissidents subject to arrest as enemy combatants (determined solely by secret military tribunal), allowing for their indefinite detention, and removing any Habeas Corpus right to demand that the Government must show cause for holding them as a prisoner. So the concentration camps may soon fill up.

35. A reference, obviously, to what became the German Geopolitical Centre, or Nazi International, Madrid.

36. 'Frankfurter-Rundschau', 23rd February 1952, and 'Die Nation', 13th February 1952. The secret of the existence of these Nazi International centres was, therefore, not particularly well kept.

37. T H. Tetens, 'Germany Plots with the Kremlin', op. cit, p.76.

38. 'US News and World Report', 18th November 1949.

39. 'US News and World Report', 30th December 1949.

40. 'United States News', 14th September 1951.

41. T H. Tetens, 'Germany Plots with the Kremlin', pages 137-138.

42. 'Hitler's Thirty Days to Power: January 1933', Henry Ashby Turner Jr., Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., Reading, MA, 1996, page 164, citing Konrad Heiden, 'Der Fuhrer', Boston, 1944, page 579.

43. 'Hitler's Thirty Days to Power: January 1933', Henry Ashby Turner Jr., Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., Reading, MA, 1996, page 164, citing Konrad Heiden, 'Der Fuhrer', Boston, 1944, page 164

44. From Transcripts of the Nuremberg Trials.

45. US House of Representatives, H.J. Res 24, 'Proposing an amendment to the Constitution of the United States to repeal the 22nd amendment to the Constitution', introduced on 17th February 2005.

46. Center for Public Integrity, Washington DC, press report.

47. 'Proofs of a Conspiracy', Professor John Robison, 1798, Western Islands, 1967, page 62-63.

48. 'Germany and Lebensraum: The secret German-Russian carve-up of Europe', International Currency Review Occasional Paper Number 4, September 1993.

49. 'International Currency Review', Volume 28, Number 4, contained preliminary details of the fate of $27.5 trillion which was raised from over 200 banks under George Bush Sr., in 1989-92, and placed in US intelligence offshore accounts (Title 18, Section 6 corporations). The ONI agent got in touch with the Author two months after publication.

50. Dr Martin Gilbert, The Holocaust: The Jewish Tragedy, Collins, London, 1986, Fontana Press, 1987, pages 290-291.

51. Matthew, Chapter 10, verse 26: 'Fear them [the deceivers] not therefore; for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known'; Mark, Chapter 4, verse 22: 'For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret but that it should come abroad'; Luke, Chapter 8, verse 17: 'For nothing is secret that shall not be made manifest neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad'.

52. Matthew, Chapter 12, verse 25: 'And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand'; Mark, Chapter 3, verses 24-25: 'And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand'. The fascinating point here is that the Lord says this in precisely the context we have been considering, namely that followers of the Evil One are always actually or potentially at loggerheads: verse 26: 'And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end'.

53. Matthew, Chapter 16, verse 18.

54. Matthew, Chapter 15, verse 14: 'And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch'; Luke, Chapter 6, verse 39: 'And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?'.

55. Matthew, Chapter 7, verses 13-14.

56. Matthew, Chapter 28, verse 20.

APPENDIX 1 TO CHAPTER 8:

THE MOLOTOV-RIBBENTROP PACT MARK II

The November 1991 issue of 'Politika', a small Czechoslovak newspaper, exposed details of a secret German-Soviet pact to carve up Europe - a second 'Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact'. A translation of the text of this cynical accord, originally written in German, is given on page 611.

TÝDENÍK
politika
ROČNÍK I.
ČÍSLO 42 cena 3.70,-
ČTVRTEK 14.11 - 20.11. 1991
SOUKROMÝ LIST PRO POLITIKU A EKONOMIKU

Důvěrná informace z jednání sovětských a německých expertů o geopolitických problémech střední Evropy-Ženeva, září 1990

- SRN požaduje na SSSR kompenzace za anektované východní Prusko a za prostor východně od Odry - Nisy.
- SRN požaduje odstoupení sovětského vlivu v českomoravském regionu. SSSR nehodlá trpět v blízkosti svých hranic režim ČSFR, který nepřijal gesto SSSR, jímž nechal padnout Husákův režim ČSSR. Vláda ČSFR neustává v agitaci proti SSSR a zlehčuje pozici sovětské vlády a prezidenta. Děje se tak rozdílně od vlád Polska a Maďarska.
- SSSR nebude bránit rozdělení ČSFR pro nedostatek garance politické rovnováhy ve střední Evropě a nedostatek státotvornosti národů Československa.
- Sovětský svaz souhlasí s perspektivním začleněním českomoravského regionu do zájmové ekonomické sféry SRN a s politickým začleněním tohoto regionu do Německa v průběhu 12-15 let.
- SRN vyrovná ekonomické ztráty způsobené tím Sovětskému svazu.
- SRN bude pro možný pokles popularity vedení ČSFR připravovat i pro Sovětský svaz přijatelné garnitury nakloněné Německu, jako alternativu i z levicových stran, bez zjevného zasahování do profilace politických stran.
- Se zřetelem na ochotu Maďarska udržet politickou a ekonomickou stabilitu v podunajském regionu nebudou SSSR a SRN bránit obnovení Maďarska v původních hranicích do trianonské smlouvy. SRN zvýší ekonomickou pomoc Maďarsku, aby se pozvedl standard v Maďarsku nad úroveň Slovenska, aby se tak připojení k Maďarsku stalo pro Slováky přitažlivé.
- SSSR nemá námitek proti zakládání německé university a středních škol v českomoravském regionu a financování těchto škol Německem.
- SSSR nemá námitek proti rozdělení Jugoslávie, a souhlasí s odstoupením Chorvatska a Slovinska do ekonomické sféry SRN.
- Sovětský svaz nemá námitek proti použití prostředků politické destabilizace.
- SRN se nebude angažovat v otázce Ukrajiny, Litvy, Lotyšska a Estonska a nebude je považovat za oblast ekonomického zájmu nad únosnou míru.
- SSSR nebude bránit odtržení Zakarpatské Ukrajiny v případě destabilizující činnosti ukrajinských nacionalistů a její začlenění do Maďarské republiky.
- SSSR nemá námitek proti postupné kolonizaci českých pohraničních oblastí Sověty a Němci.

(pozn. red.: originál faxované zprávy byl redakčně doplněn pouze o interpunkci)

Zasloužená pocta

Prezidentská zlatá medaile za podporu státu Izrael byla při nedávné návštěvě USA udělena zednářskou lóží B'nai B'rith prezidentu ČSFR Václavu Havlovi. Při této příležitosti přednesl V. Havel projev, ve kterém připomněl slib, že Československo zlikviduje antisemitismus, za což se mu dostalo obrovského aplausu.

A za pozornost jistě stojí i fakt, že na zmíněné zednářské fórum uvedl československého prezidenta filmový režisér Miloš Forman.

J. Tomáš

VÝZVA

My, ktorí sme sa prihlásili k iniciatíve Za zvrchované Slovensko, obraciame sa na občanov Slovenskej republiky s touto výzvou:

Slovenský národ má vzácnu historickú a neopakovateľnú príležitosť uplatniť demokratickou cestou prirodzené a neodňateľné právo na vlastnú zvrchovanosť. Najnovšie udalosti v strednej a východnej Európe nás utvrdili v presvedčení, že nastal čas rozhodnúť. Už nie je možné odkladať uskutočnenie základného práva na štátnu zvrchovanosť na základe uplatnenia sebaurčovacieho práva národov.

Vyzývame všetkých občanov Slovenskej republiky bez ohľadu na politické názory, vierovyznanie a národnosť, aby podporili myšlienku demokratickej, svetu otvorenej zvrchovanej Slovenskej republiky.

Vyzývame slovenské politické reprezentácie, aby zasadli za stôl národnej dohody.

Vyzývame poslancov SNR, aby si uvedomili vážnosť situácie, aby sa povzniesli nad úzke stranícke záujmy a vyhlásili v čo najkratšom čase zvrchovanosť Slovenska a v nadväznosti na to prijali a vyhlásili Ústavu Slovenskej republiky.

Len takto sa môže Slovensko ako rovnocenný partner zaradiť do spoločenstva európskych štátov.

Iniciatíva ZA ZVRCHOVANÉ SLOVENSKO

Z významnejších osobností slovenského politického života Výzvu podpísali m.j.: J. Budaj, M. Kňažko, J. Markuš, V. Mečiar, V. Ondruš, J. Prokeš, Š. Kvietik a ďalší.

čas. Slovák 17/91

Figure 95; The front page of the Czechoslovak periodical 'Politika' dated 14th-20th November 1991, giving details of a secret German-Russian agreement to carve up Europe (= Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact II). The original document was faxed to the publication's offices and was probably originally written in German, and was therefore certainly by Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD), Dachau. The main provisions of this secret accord were subsequently implemented to the letter. For instance, Czechoslovakia was divided, and parts of Yugoslavia were taken into the German sphere of influence. See page 611 for this Author's English translation/comment.

The issue of the Czechoslovak newspaper 'Politika' illustrated on page 610, subtitled the 'Private JOURNAL OF Politics AND ECONOMICS' and dated 14th-20th November 1991 contained the 'Heads of Agreement' reached in secret between the Soviet Union and Germany in September 1990, in Geneva. Apart from a summary report by the BBC Monitoring Service dated 25th January 1993, the somnolent UK 'mainstream' media were fast asleep when this carve-up arrangement was exposed. It represented a German-sponsored grab for power and influence undertaken in the context of the Leninist orchestrated 'collapse' of the Soviet Union and financed by 'Black' payments. As will be seen, the main provisions of this cynical accord were implemented shortly afterwards. No-one outside intelligence circles anticipated the break-up of Czechoslovakia, provided for by this accord. Even after the Author published this information in 1993, the British media studiously ignored it.

CONFIDENTIAL INFORMATION FROM A MEETING OF SOVIET AND GERMAN EXPERTS ON THE GEOPOLITICAL PROBLEMS OF CENTRAL EUROPE: GENEVA, SEPTEMBER 1990

- The Federal Republic of Germany demands [Nazi language - Author] compensation from the USSR for annexed Eastern Prussia and for the area east of the Oder-Niesse.
- The Federal Republic of Germany demands the withdrawal of Soviet influence in the Bohemian-Moravian region. The USSR has no intention of tolerating in the vicinity of its borders the Czechoslovak Federal regime, which did not accept the Soviet gesture by means of which Husak's Socialist regime was allowed to fall. The Government of the CSFR persists in its anti-Soviet agitation and is making the position of the Soviet Government and President difficult. The Governments of Poland and Hungary, by contrast, behave differently.
- The USSR will not impede the division of the CSFR because of insufficient guarantee of political stability in Central Europe, and insufficient state-formation by the nationalities of Czechoslovakia.
- The Soviet Union agrees to the eventual incorporation of the Bohemian-Moravian region into the German sphere of economic interests and to the political incorporation of this region into Germany over 12-15 years.
- The Federal Republic of Germany will make [due] compensation for the losses this [i.e., such a transfer -Author] causes to the Soviet Union.
- In the event of a drop in the popularity of the leaders of the CSFR, the Federal Republic of Germany will prepare as an alternative political teams predisposed towards Germany that are at the same time acceptable to the USSR. Members of these alternative political teams [to be set up if necessary in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, if 'cooperation' is not forthcoming from the incumbents there - Ed.] will come from left-leaning parties as well [sic]. The Federal Republic of Germany will do this without visibly affecting the image [Czech: 'profilace'] of the political parties concerned [Author: = Intelligence operations].
- With regard to the willingness of Hungary to maintain political and economic stability in the Danube region, the USSR and the Federal Republic of Germany will not impede the re-establishment of a Hungary within the original borders in accordance with the Trianon Treaty. The Federal Republic of Germany will increase its political assistance to Hungary so that the standard of living in Hungary will be raised above that in Slovakia, so that joining Hungary becomes attractive to Slovaks.
- The USSR has no objections to the establishment of a German University and high schools in the Bohemian-Moravian region, or to the funding by Germany of these schools.
- The USSR has no objections to the division of Yugoslavia. It agrees to the shifting of Croatia and Slovenia to the economic sphere of the Federal Republic of Germany.
- The Soviet Union has no objections to the use of vehicles of political destabilisation.
- The Federal Republic of Germany will not involve itself in the questions of the Ukraine, Lithuania, Latvia and Estonia, and will not consider these to be areas of economic interest beyond an acceptable level.
- The USSR will not impede the separation of the Transcarpathian Ukraine in the event of destabilising activity on the part of Ukrainian nationalists and their incorporation into the Hungarian Republic.
- The USSR has no objections to the gradual colonisation of the Czech border regions by Soviets and Germans.

This text was faxed to the offices of 'Politika'. Having interviewed the Editor at his house outside Prague, a contact of the Author was certain that this document was indeed simply faxed to the paper, which proceeded at once to reproduce it. A close examination of the structure of the sentences and language by a Czech language expert in Prague revealed that the text is unlikely to have been translated into Czech from the Russian. On the contrary, it was originally written in German. This is apparent not least from the opening German 'demands'. Another reason for this conclusion is the use of the Czech word 'profilace', for which no comparable word, in either Russian or English, exists. However the German word 'profilierung' - image - is appropriate in the context. 'Politika' was, at the time of the article's publicatioa a well-known, controversial, small weekly paper selling several thousand copies, available on central Prague newsstands, and widely read by officials and the intelligentsia. The accord provides further evidence of German hegemony ambitions - directed by Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst from Dachau. ■

APPENDIX 2 TO CHAPTER 8:

THE NORTH AMERICAN ILLUMINATI GULAG CAMP SYSTEM

The following directory of the North American Nazi-style concentration camp system has been compiled from open domain sources, but is based upon 'Humint' observation and is incomplete. Some doubts have been raised about Canadian entries by 'field walkers'. The data are arranged alphabetically/geographically. The total number of US concentration camps is estimated at around 800, possibly excluding the comparable camps in Canada.

ALABAMA: Opelika, Aliceville: World War II German/Italian POW camp. Maxwell Air Force Base, Talladega: Civilian prison camps. ALASKA: Wilderness; Concentration camp with estimated capacity of 500,000. Other camps etc. at Elmendorf Air Force Base, Eielson Air Force Base, Fort Wainright.

ARIZONA: Phoenix:World War II prison camp, capacity 3,500. Davis-Monthan Air Force base: Fully operational with prisoners for many years ARKANSAS: Fort Chaffee: New camp with capacity for 40,000. Pine Bluff Arsenal: Holding location for B-Z nerve agent, which causes sleepiness, dizziness, stupor, for civilian control. Blythville Air Force Base: Closed airbase reconstructed as concentration camp, with guard towers, high fences etc. Many other incarceration installations in this key Illuminati State. CALIFORNIA: Vandenburg Air Force Base: Huge internment centre near ocean. Twentynine Palms Marine Base: New camps under construction/built; Oakdale: Camp with capacity for 20,000+. Fort Irwin: Staffed camp. Manzanar: Old World War II Japanese camp, ready for renovation. McLellan Air Force Base: Capacity for up to 35,000.

CANADA: According to reliable Canadian sources, virtually all Canadian military bases, especially those North of the 50th parallel, contain concentration camps. Among these are: Suffield CFB, North of Medicine Hat, less than 60 miles from USA; Primrose Lake Air Range, 70 miles East of Edmonton; Wainwright CFB, between Medicine Hat and Primrose Lake; Fort Nelson, the northernmost point on the British Columbia railhead; Fort McPherson (extremely cold); NW Territories: Fort Providence, located on the Great Slave Lake; Halifax, Nova Scotia, a Department of National Defence Reserve.

COLORADO: Trinidad: World War II German/Italian internment camp being renovated; Granada; World War II internment camp. FLORIDA: Avon Park: Has an 'on-base' correctional facility which was a World War II internment camp. Eglin Air Force Base: 30 miles long: Very high-capacity facility, already holding prisoners. Pensacola: Federal Prison Camp. Everglades: Camp in the wilds. GEORGIA: Fort Benning: Prisoners brought in via the Lawson Army airfield. Multiple detention camps at Fort McPherson, Fort Gordon, Unadilla, Oglethorpe, Morgan, Camilla, Hawkinsville, McRae, Fort Gillem, Fort Stewart [last two are FEMA-designated detention centres]. IDAHO: Minidoka: World War II Japanese camp under renovation (when this 'inventory' was being prepared), ILLINOIS: Marseilles: Concentration camp with high towers, fences and barbed wire: Capacity for 1,400 prisoners. Pekin: Federal satellite prison camp. Chanute Air Force Base, Rantoul: Likely camp location. Marion: Federal penitentiary and satellite prison camp inside Crab Orchard National Wildlife Refuge: fully operational. Greenfield: Two Federal 'correctional' satellite prison camps. Shawnee National Forest: heavy traffic with foreign military equipment sighted; camp location thought to be close to Vienna and Shawnee correctional centres. Lincoln, Sheridan, Menard, Pontiac, Galesburg: State prison facilities equipped for massive expansion of incarceration facilities adjacent to highways and railways. Kankakee: Abandoned industrial area designated as FEMA detention centre.

INDIANA: Indianapolis, Marion County: Amtrak railcar facility (closed). Controversial site of a key alleged death detention/processing centre. Has 3 or 4 large gas mains to large furnaces, railheads for prisoners, and helicopter pads. Red/Blue/Green zones for classifying/processing incoming personnel, one-way turnstiles, barracks, towers, high fences, razor wire etc. Located next to a closed refrigeration plant facility. Many other camps etc.

KANSAS: Leavenworth: US Marshal's Federal Holding Facility, US Penitentiary, Federal Prison Camp. McConnell Air Force Base: Federal death penalty 'facility'. Fort Riley; El Dorado: Federal prison converted into a forced labour camp, UNICOR industries. Topeka: 80 acres converted into a temporary holding camp. KENTUCKY: Ashland: Federal prison camp. Louisville: FEMA detention centre, located near a restricted area US naval ordnance plant. Lexington: FEMA detention facility, National Guard base with adjacent airport. Manchester. Federal prison camp inside Dan Boone National Forest. Fort Knox: Detention centre. Other centres suspected. LOUISIANA: Fort Polk: Main training base for New Underworld Order operations. Livingston:World War II German/Italian internment camp being renovated. Oakdale: Two Federal detention centres. MAINE: Houlton: World War II German internment camp. MASSACHUSETTS: Camp Edwards, Otis Air Force Base. Cape Cod: An 'inactive' base undergoing renovation, capacity unknown.

MICHIGAN: Camp Grayling: National Guard base has several confirmed detention camps (high fences, razor wire, well-built guard towers); multiple compounds within larger enclosures; facility deep within forest area. Sawyer Air Force Base; Bay City: Classic concentration camp enclosure with high fence, guard towers, very close to shipping port at Saginaw Bay, which connects to Lake Huron: could be a deportation point via St Lawrence Seaway. Lansing: FEMA detention centres. MINNESOTA: Duluth: Federal prison camp. MISSOURI: Richards-Gebaur Air Force Base, Grandview: A very large internment facility has been constructed on this base: all base personnel are restricted from coming near it. Fort Leonard Wood, inside Mark Twain National Forest. UN and US training centre, may or may not include camp. Warsaw: Unconfirmed report of large concentration camp. MONTANA: Malmstrom Air Force Base: United Nations combat troops, possible detention facility.

NEVADA: Wells, Pershing County, Winnemucca: Camps. NEW JERSEY: Fort Dix/McGuire Air Force Base: Heavy detention compounds, complete and ready for use. NEW MEXICO: Fort Bliss: Huge detention area.

Holloman Air Force Base (Almogordo): Home of the German Luftwaffe in America and major UN base. former USAF buildings torn down by busy and rapidly expanding German military force stationed here. NEW YORK: Fort Drum: Two compounds; Rex 84 detention camp and FEMA detention facility. Albany: FEMA detention facility. Otisville: Federal correctional. Buffalo: FEMA detention centre. NORTH CAROLINA: Camp Lejeune, New River Marine Airfield: Renovated World War II detention compounds. Fort Bragg: Renovated World War II detention centre. Andrews: Federal experiment in placing small town under siege.

NORTH DAKOTA: Minot Air Force base: Home of Air Group. OHIO: Cincinnati, Cleveland, Columbus, Lima: FEMA detention facilities. Another detention centre identified inside old stone quarry, with railway access, fences etc. OKLAHOMA: Tinker Air Force Base: All base personnel prohibited from access to heavily guarded civilian detention centre. Will Rogers World Airport: FEMA's main detention centre west of Mississippi. All personnel kept out of security zone. Federal prisoner transfer centre. El Reno: Renovated Federal internment facility with current population of 12,000. McAlester: Former World War II German/Italian POW camp designated for future use. Fort Sill, Lawton: Former World War II detention camps. OREGON: Sheridan: Federal prison satellite camp NW of Salem: World War II internment camp ready for renovation; FEMA detention centre. Umatilla: New prison spotted. OVERSEAS: Guayanabo, Puerto Rico: Federal prison camp, capacity unknown; Guantanamo Bay, Cuba: US Marine Corps Base, used to incarcerate terrorism suspects, but also the home of 30,000 Mariel Cubans and 40,000 Albanians. Total capacity unknown. PENNSYLVANIA: Allenwood: Federal prison camp. Current inmate population of 300, but capacity of 15,000 on 400 acres. Indiantown Gap Military Reservation: World War II POW camp held Mariel Cubans. Camp Hill: State prison with ample capacity. Schuylkill Haven: Federal prison camp. SOUTH CAROLINA: Greenville: Unoccupied youth prison camp. Charleston: Naval Reserve and Air Force base: restricted area on naval base. SOUTH DAKOTA: Yankton: Federal prison camp inside Black Hills National Forest. World War II internment camp being renovated.

TENNESSEE: Fort Campbell: Camp; Millington: Federal prison camp adjacent Memphis Naval Air Station. Nashville:Two identical buildings for prisoners, with high barbed wire fence curving inwards. TEXAS: Austin: Municipal airport has restricted-access area off-limits to all. Fort Hood, Killeen: Newly built concentration camp, with towers, barbed wire etc. Reese Air Force Base, Lubbock: FEMA-designated detention centre: Sheppard Air Force Base, Wichita Falls: FEMA-designated detention centre. Mexia: World War II internment camp may be renovated. Amarillo: FEMA-designated detention facility. Fort Bliss, El Paso: Extensive building renovation; surrounded by razor wire.

Beaumont, Port Arthur: Hundreds of acres of Federal camps constructed in accordance with classic design of a large detention centre, complete with double-rows of chain-link fencing with razor-type concertina wire on top of each row. UTAH: Millard County: World War II Japanese detention camp. Fort Douglas: An 'inactive' military reservation with a 'renovated' World War II concentration camp. Migratory Bird Refuge, west of Brigham City: Covers a World War II internment camp, which may have been renovated. Other facilities suspected.

VERMONT: Lake Francis: Renovated World War II camp. VIRGINIA: Fort A P Hill, Fredericksburg: Rex 84 (Federal Emergency Management (FEMA)) facility. Estimated prisoner capacity: 45,000. Petersburg, south of Richmond: Federal satellite prison camp. WASHINGTON: Seattle, Tacoma: SeaTac Airport. Fully operational Federal transfer centre. Okanogan County, bordering Canada: Site for a massive concentration camp capable of holding hundreds of thousands for slave labour. Thought by observers to be likely to be used to hold core patriots who will be held captive for the rest of their lives. Sand Point Naval Station, Seattle: Federal prison camp used actively during the 1999 WTO protests to classify prisoners. Fort Lewis/McChord Air Force Base, near Tacoma: This is thought to be one of several sites that may be used to ship prisoners overseas (to the 'former' USSR) for slave labour. WEST VIRGINIA: Beckley, Alderson and Lewisburg: Former World War II detention camps now used as Federal prison complexes capable of holding seven times their current populations. WISCONSIN: Fort McCoy- Rex 84 facility with several complete internment compounds. Oxford: Federal prison and satellite camp, and FEMA facility. WYOMING: Heart Mountain, Park County, North of Cody. World War II Japanese internment camp ready for renovation. Laramie: FEMA detention facility. Southwest: Large FEMA detention facility. East Yellowstone: Manned detention facility. Investigating US patriots were apprehended by European troops speaking a language that field walkers and researchers could not recognise. Federal officers took custody of the patriots carrying out this investigation and arranged their release. • List compiled from public domain sources.

CONTINUING GULAGS AROUND THE WORLD

The world appears to be almost wholly indifferent to the existence of GULAGs. There has been considerable international shock at the discovery, following the attack in Iraq in 2003, that the United States has erected a system of Guantanamo-style concentration camps around the world, and that the amoral and cowardly US authorities routinely fly people they arrest without trial, to countries where torture is permitted (formally, it is not legal in the United States, although it does take place). This now notorious CIA abomination is called 'Extraordinary Rendition'.

When the Author published detailed information about the continuing and expanding Soviet GULAG under the fake 'non'-Communist regime of Boris Yeltsin, complete with street addresses of the camps and other identifying data, nobody took the slightest notice - perhaps because it was already known that the 'freedom-promoting' US authorities were contemplating the same practices. But few seem to care about the vast GULAGS in China, Burma, North Korea etc, either. ■

APPENDIX 3 TO CHAPTER 8:
THE CONTINUING SOVIET ILLUMINATI GULAG SYSTEM

LABOUR CAMPS IN RUSSIA, UKRAINE & KAZAKHSTAN

The following GULAG institutions were positively identified by sources in Russia and Ukraine, and separately by a Western intelligence source, as being operative in 1995 and 1996. List reprinted from Soviet Analyst: www.sovietanalyst.com.

1. A forced labour camp containing 1,000-1,500 prisoners in the town of Pyatikhatka, Ukraine, located 10-15km North of the railway station, adjacent to the Dnepropetrovsk metallurgical plant.
2. A large camp, containing an estimated 2,000 prisoners, at Bartas on Lake Balkhash, Kazakhstan. This institution serves as a labour pool for elements of the space dimension of the military-industrial complex located there. A colossal explosion occurred at Bartas in 1989, but the number of prisoners who lost their lives on that occasion remains unknown.
3. In Alma-Ata, capital of Kazakhstan, continuing MVD labour camp Number AK-160, for teenagers, provides forced labour for timber plant workshops. The concentration camp complex is located on Tashkentskaya and Seifullina Street.
4. 'Medical City' is located within the compound of the Institute of Biophysics, Moscow. It is accessed via Tram Number 6, Trolleybuses numbers 12 and 14, and via Buses Numbers 23 and 30. This complex is a special department supervised by the 'successors' of the KGB in which various physical experiments are undertaken on prisoners brought in from camps elsewhere in the 'former' USSR, who have been working in the lethal uranium mines. About 500 prisoners are reported to be undergoing such experiments and evaluations at any one time. The purpose, given further confirmation in Russian military spending estimates, that the elite continues the construction of a colossal bunker complex at 'Evil Mountain' in the Urals, is obvious: to assess the prospects of human survival in high radiation and fallout conditions such as will necessarily prevail following nuclear war.
5. Near the town of Kopiesk, in the Urals, is Camp Balandino, which has 2,000 prisoners. At this long-established concentration camp, the forced labour pool is employed at the Cheliabinsk tractor plant, which also produces tanks.
6. A large camp complex (Cheliabinsk-40, Cheliabinsk-60 and Zlatoust-70) has been identified at the town of Zlatoust in the Ural Mountains, some 190km from Cheliabinsk. This camp sends prisoners for secret tasks in the 'closed cities' of the region. The camp complex is controlled by the General Camp Authority.
7. Similar camps are to be found in the towns of Satka, Kusa, Bakol, Ust-Katai, Miniyar and Asha. In each of these camps, there are reported to be between 500 and 800 prisoners.
8. A forced labour camp for 1,500 children is located in the town of Atalian, not far from Zlatoust and Mias. Forced child labour is employed in an automobile plant.
9. An agricultural camp containing about 1,000 prisoners is to be found in the town of Troitsk.
10. A concentration camp holding 1,200 forced labour worker-prisoners is located at Plast in the Urals. Prisoners work in the gold mines.
11. Camp Number 14 located at at Magnitogorsk, which caters for 1,500-1,600 prisoners, supplies forced labour for a military plant producing tanks.
12. Camp Number 78, also at Magnitogorsk, directs 30% of its prisoners, of whom there are about 1,500 in all, to work in conditions lethal for human health.
13. In the Autonomous Republic of Buriatiya, two large military installations are under construction at the town of Gusinoozersk (at construction site Number 1), at which some 2,000 forced labourers from three separate camps are employed. [Information: mid-1990s].
14. In the region of Chitinskaya oblast, a camp is to be found in the village of Chara. It houses 800 prisoners, who were reported to be controlled by one MVD Colonel Taranskiy. These prisoners were engaged the construction of hidden emplacements/silos for ballistic missiles.
15. At the town of Mogocha, in Chitinskaya oblast, two 'strict regime' camps supply 1,200 prisoners for work on the construction of secret military installations.
16. At the town of Baley, also in Chitinskaya oblast, a 'strict regime' camp provides a forced

labour pool to work at a plant producing electrical condensing devices for the continuing Soviet military-industrial complex.

17. At the town of Borzya, Chitinskaya oblast a forced labour camp provides up to 2,000 prisoners for work at a timber goods plant which manufactures wooden buildings for the Soviet military and for the space programme.

18. At the town of Zapocrovka, Chitinskaya oblast, is to be found a 'strict regime' camp for 1,200 prisoners employed in the local uranium mines.

19. At Priargunsk, Chitinskaya oblast, a strict regime camp provides a forced labour pool for hard labour in lead mines and at a refining plant.

20. At Angarsk, Irkutskaya oblast, a camp employs 600 prisoners producing military tents.

21. In Yakutia, a 'special regime' camp located in the village of Svetlii contains prisoners who do not work. This is an especially harsh establishment, designed exclusively for punishment.

22. At Sosva in Sverdlovskaya oblast, there are three forced labour camps. Some 1,500 prisoners are employed at the timber-cutting enterprise 'Lespromkhoz'.

23. A large number of forced labour camps are scattered around the Siberian and Ural taiga, where prisoners are employed in the felling and cutting of wood. The number of prisoners employed in these camps is unknown, not least because some of these camps are moved when the local timber resources have been exhausted. These 'moving camps' are not to be confused with camps, prisons and psychiatric jails the location and addresses of which are moved by the authorities from time to time in order to conceal their existence from the West.

24. At six or seven plants in the city of Kirov, prisoners alone are now employed. So-called 'free workers' are unwilling to work at these locations, given the extremely low wages on offer. The relevant forced labour camps have all been established within the perimeter fences of the plants in question. Between 300 and 350 prisoners work at each plant.

25. In a special secret zone located some 18km from the town of Chernogorsk (Krasnoyarskiy Krai) is a large chemical plant. Since the plant environment is extremely damaging to human health, the plant employs unremunerated forced labour prisoners only. At least 2,000 prisoners are reported to be working there.

26. At Krasnoyarskiy Krai, some 1,200 prisoners and exiled ex-prisoners are also forced to work at a plant in the aluminium town of Sayanogorsk.

27. Concentration camp Number 9, for children, is located in the town of Ust-Abakan, also in Krasnoyarskiy Krai. Between 800 and 1,000 child prisoners were held there when this intelligence was being gathered in 1996. They are employed making wooden formes for use in the aluminium plant at Sayanogorsk.

28. Also located at Ust-Abakan are forced labour camps Numbers 5 and 22. The prisoners at these camps are employed in timber-felling and cutting operations.

29. Concentration camps Numbers 16 and 39 are to be found close to the town of Minusinsk (Krasnoyarskiy Krai). Each contains between 1,200 and 1,500 prisoners - again, all employed in timber-related activities.

30. A prison with the name Butirskaya', located in Moscow, has an average of 200 prisoners in cells originally constructed to house 25 people. The prisoners in this establishment cannot sit down. They take turns to sleep standing up, for three or four hours at a time. Prisoners are reportedly kept in cells like these for up to three years.

INFORMATION ABOUT 'POST'-SOVIET LABOUR CAMPS IN THE RUSSIAN MEDIA

- The authorities do not attempt to hide the existence of the GULAG, and indeed openly display the fact of its continued existence on Russian television. In doing so, they rely, with good reason, upon Western ignorance and complacency, and upon their deep understanding of compromised Western intelligence. Because the existence of the GULAG system, and the nauseat-ingly obscene horrors of life in the prison camps, are so alien to the experience of Western observers, detailed information on the subject is, the Soviet planners recognise, always likely to be rejected in the West - and certainly never talked about in politically correct or polite circles. This is the psychological safeguard on which they rely generally to mask human rights abuses from the West's consciousness. Yet detailed information in our own files concerning the sufferings, since the 'collapse of Communism', of named individuals in Georgia alone who have, since 1992, been tortured and raped, and who have experienced unspeakable abuses - including enforced lack of sleep, being run over by armoured vehicles on purpose, lack of food and water, and electric shock - would necessitate many further pages of analysis.

- A feature film showing the conditions at 'Butirskaya' prison in Moscow, described briefly above, was shown on Russian television in 1995. On 26th March 1996, Russia's TV Channel 25 broadcast a programme about newly constructed GULAG prisons and labour camps. And some years ago, the Russian magazine 'Ogonek' published a series of articles by a certain V. Eremin in which the total number of GULAG prison camps known to exist in the Komi Autonomous Republic was reported to be 250. This total was revised downwards by Soviet Analyst, to 246 camps.
- The late Israeli-Russian GULAG survivor, Avraham Shifrin, reported a total of 36 GULAG camp addresses in Komi A.S.S.R., in a Guidebook, first published in 1980. According to Eremin, 200 of these Komi camps belong to the 'strict regime' category, in which prisoners starve. In some of these camps, prisoners were reported by Eremin to bear tattoos on their cheeks or foreheads carrying inscriptions such as 'Slave of Communism', 'Slave of the KGB', and so forth.

OTHER REFERENCES TO NEW GULAG CAMPS • THE EXPERIENCE OF BRITISH MPS

- In January 1990, Avraham Shifrin reported, in an open letter entitled 'A Performance: Glasnost and Perestroika', that some 2,500 camps were now, under the enlightened President Gorbachev, holding an expanded population of 7 million inmates. In subsequent statements he insisted that many new camps had been constructed throughout the 'former' USSR, in addition to the existing network of GULAG establishments. In 1995, the Russian human rights activist and Duma delegate, Sergei Kovaliov, drew international attention to the existence of what are known as 'filtration camps' in Russia. Mr Kovaliov was supposedly arrested on 27th December 1994 and thrown in the KGB's Lefortovo prison, after visiting KGB Colonel Anatoliy Trofimov to plead for some incarcerated individuals. On 17th January 1995, Trofimov was appointed by Yeltsin's Decree Number 285 to be FSB [KGB] Chief for the City of Moscow and the Moscow region. Given these 'circumstances', it is likely that Kovaliov was a controlled 'human rights activist' whose primary task was to demonstrate the freedom of Russians to protest about such disagreeable matters as prison camps, while also performing the function of deflecting other criticism and reassuring Western observers that there is 'vigorous opposition' to the nefarious camp system. There is, of course, nothing of the kind.
- According to the distinguished German analyst and former Bundestag member, Hans Graf Huyn, Kovaliov said that 'innocent inhabitants of the Chechen Republic are tortured and mistreated in 'filtration camps' [KZs]. We have reason to state that the situation in these camps is more than worrying. People are being beaten and maltreated when arrested, and also throughout their entire time spent in internment'. Graf Huyn further reported that the head of the Institute for Soviet Studies [ISOS] in Frankfurt, Professor Dr. Nikolai Nor-Messek, pointed out in the 7th April 1996 issue of Welt am Sonntag' that in the European segment of Russia alone, there were more than 44 so-called 'filtration camps'.
- A further twelve such camps are located in the North Caucasus region, and this expert's estimate was that these particular camps contained at least 80,000 people. He added: 'How many of those in prison have to date died is not precisely ascertainable. In Moscow human rights circles, however, the talk is already of many hundred deaths, while what is going on is being compared with the establishment of concentration camps in Hitler's Germany. According to the information available, these camps are situated in deep caves in the ground, in former mines, in the operations rooms of Russian partisan bands, and in former silo installations of the Russian rocket forces'. Professor Dr. Nor-Mesek concluded: 'In these places, people taken prisoner are treated like cattle before being transported away to KZs. Many do not get as far as the camps due to exhaustion and starvation. Those arrested are tortured with such methods as electric shock treatment'.
- At the height of 'Gorbymania', when the Western media was prepared to absorb and broadcast any fairytales fed to them by the Information Warfare outlets controlled by international intelligence cadres, a delegation of British MPs travelled to Moscow by invitation to see one or more 'former' Soviet GULAG concentration camps which had been specially emptied for international public consumption purposes. After three days of uncertainty, visits to the Bolshoi Theatre, banquets and similar distractions, they discovered that it had been ordained that no visits were going to take place. One by one, therefore, the party split up and the MPs returned to London, having seen nothing.
- A comparison with the data in Appendix 2 will of course reveal the Luciferian nature of both political regimes.

CONCLUSION

THE SCISSORS STRATEGY

DARK ACTORS PLAYING GAMES AND FACING BOTH WAYS

The hand that slays must lift the fallen, while the lips given to cursing must be taught to pray. The heart that hates must learn the mystery of compassion'[1]. This cynical affirmation of the central characteristic of all who have permitted themselves to become trapped inside the living hell of illuminised (i.e., penetrated by the Illuminati) Freemasonry - two-faced double-mindedness - was written by one of Masonry's most 'illustrious' writers, Manly P. Hall - the author of numerous esoteric and occult Masonic and Rosicrucian works promoting the 'New World Order'[2].

The passage appears on the same page as Manly P. Hall's confirmation that the 'force' with which brainwashed Illuminised Freemasons connect, is demonic. The text, cited before in this work of course, because of its central importance, reads as follows:

'When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mystery of his [witch]Craft. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply energy'[3].

The most brilliantly explicit contemporary description of how the 'seething energies of Lucifer' have been exploited is to be found in Craig Heimbichner's book 'Blood on the Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society'[4] - which he identifies as Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.), driven for many years by the British intelligence officer and Satanist, Aleister Crowley, and to which George Bush Sr. is alleged to belong. This would appear to be the 'open' manifestation of Albert Pike's revived occult Palladian Rite. Heimbichner's analysis of how this demonic force has leveraged the 'seething energies of Lucifer' so that the whole world is deceived, is of unparalleled excellence, and it would therefore be invidious for this Author to add to Heimbichner's study. With consummate skill, he shows how the various strands of Gnosticism dating from the very birth of Christ interconnect and relate to each other, and how witchcraft and lies are today being accentuated in part as a consequence of the Luciferian operations of O.T.O., a branch of the llluminati. The present work shows that the llluminati provide deep cover and an unparalleled global network for the never-ending pursuit of German (Nazi) long-range global hegemony deception strategy, encapsulated in the slogan, foolishly thought by the West to be dead and buried: Deutschland Uber Alles.

Whether German long-range intelligence strategists have hijacked the llluminati, or vice versa, remains, on the face of it, impenetrable. Whatever the truth of this matter, if it is ever capable of being disentangled, it is a certainty that the European llluminati powers are 'fighting it out among themselves', like rats in a sack, all over again - with the 'Black Nobility' divided among themselves and far from comfortable, in many cases, with the ruthless German global hegemony agenda.

Citing the malevolent importance of the French con-man Pierre Plantard (1920-

2000), Heimbichner shows inter alia how the Illuminati's chief characteristic of duplic-itous double-mindedness is capable of infinite variation, by citing Plantard's cynical contribution to the lies about Jesus Christ disseminated globally, most recently, by the reprobate New Age author Dan Brown, through his devilishly effective publishing phenomenon, 'The Da Vinci Code', ten million copies of which were already in print when Heimbichner's book appeared in 2005. With the publication of 'The Da Vinci Code', the primary feature of the underlying strategy of certain Illuminari cadres has assumed global proportions. What is that strategy?

It is almost impossible to describe what is intended without incredulity at the subtle deviousness of Satan. 'Plantard was the 20th century godfather', writes Craig Heimbichner, 'of the fake Prieure de Sion (Priory of Sion) mythos which claims that certain royal families of Europe are the descendants of an invented sexual union between Jesus Christ and Mary Magdalene'. There is of course absolutely zero scriptural foundation for the 'base lie' itself, let alone for the pyramid of lies which rest upon its foundation. In order for the lie to 'work', Jesus Christ needs to have survived His Crucifixion, to have recovered from His trauma, and to have swerved away from His whole Ministry, which would have been left 'dangling in the wind'. Quite apart from the ludicrous stupidity of this lying invention, anyone who studies the New Testament receives irrevocable confirmation of the accuracy of the Gospels, and of the Holy Spirit's inspiration of all the other New Testament books, which could not have survived had Christ abandoned his unique Ministry as is falsely alleged. Nor could the Epistles of Paul, Peter, John and James have been written against such a background.

THE PURPOSE: TO RESTORE THE DIVINE RIGHT OF KINGS

What is the purpose of such ignorant drivel? It is, of course, to enable the so-called 'Black Nobility' to assert a false 'Divine Right' to rule, by claiming that their 'bloodlines' are descended from the Son of God himself. But as has been discussed in Chapter 7, the 'Black Nobility' are Khazars, of Jewish ancestry and Kabbalistic Judaic background. So here we have the very Jewish descendants of these wandering people - whose ancestors were almost certainly Jewish moneylenders who became so powerful that, in the course of time, they actually seized monarchical power themselves (as in the case of Captain Stradholder, a.k.a. William of Orange) - claiming to be descended from Jesus Christ, even though by definition (unless converted) these people deny Jesus Christ and deny that 'he is the Son of God and is come in the flesh'[5]. Can any more cynical and blasphemous instance of Illuminati double-mindedness be imagined? Heimbichner's analysis thus identifies 'the emergence of an organization that would have an authority so divine [that] it could not be resisted by any believing Christian' (except, the Author insists, by those who actually read Scripture, a minority). 'The lure of this hallucination to occultists seeking to impose totalitarian rule is nearly irresistible. Their modern agent in this regard was Pierre Plantard, the supposed [sic] scion of the ancient Merovingian king, Dagobert II' It may be objected that Jews have always been at the forefront of revolutionary destabilisation operations, as for instance in the context of the Russian Revolution and control of the Soviet and fake 'post'-Soviet Empire thereafter - until, of course, the objector recalls that such dialectical antagonism can have 'no problem' coexisting with the lie that Jesus married Mary Magdalene, el seq., since it simply reflects the fundamental characteristic of all components of the Illuminati: double-mindedness. As for Plantard, his false-front network operated 'within both Conservative Catholic and anti-Jewish (Nazi) circles, while also organising and inspiring (Judaic) Kabbalist and "goddess" affiliates'[6]. In other words, Plantard was an 'illustrious', devious implementer of Illuminati two-faced dialectical strategy, a double-dealing Janus deception operative 'par excellence'.

Explaining in greater detail how this double-minded scam has invaded vulnerable and ignorant minds worldwide, Heimbichner elaborates:

'The macabre irony is that the Priory of Sion, the "order of chivalry" allegedly created in 1099 by the "Crusader Godefroy de Bouillon" has become, via the Catholic Pierre Plantard and the New Age Dan Brown, the transmission mechanism for the revival of the witchcraft cult of Isis, the black magic of the Kabbalah and filthy Talmudic sexual libel against Jesus Christ'.

'Perhaps now the reader is beginning to gain insight into the utility of the O.T.O.'s speciality, what Dr Carl Gustav Jung termed Mysterium Coniunctionis (the synthesis of psychic opposites in alchemy). The O.T.O. does not wish to direct only the Left-wing "progressive" drive for "modernization and reform" and leave the Right-wing opposition in the hands of its enemies'. IT MUST CONTROL BOTH SIDES AT ALL TIMES.

As Heimbichner confirms: 'Rather, the O.T.O. is always and everywhere determined to impose the Kabbalistic paradigm by controlling the opposition'- the essence of Leninism. 'The O.T.O. appeals to elite standards of culture and taste [in the Catholic context] in upholding the classic liturgies, even as Vatican agents inspired by the O.T.O. Zeitgeist outlawed these rites for general use'. And continuing his analysis of one of the primary means whereby the 'smoke of Satan' has further corrupted the fallen Catholic Church, Heimbichner elaborates how the double-minded attack has 'succeeded' (for those who believe that the Catholic Church is the appointed guardian of Christian Truth, a proposition from which, of course, this Author dissents): 'In this limited sense, the conspiracy has been quite successful. Tridentine Mass attendance is nowadays limited to small pockets of Catholics who, as targets of occult infiltration, are more susceptible to penetration than a mass movement consisting of millions of believers would be'.

'Here we are reminded of the ancient alchemical dictum' (alchemy of course being one of the preoccupations, for instance, of Rosicrucian Kabbalists and 'higher' flluminised Freemasons), 'Solve et coagula' ("break down and reform") - the standard Illuminati 'order out of chaos' routine and the cynical approach being applied, for instance, to the British Conservative Party by the revolutionary mind-controlled operative David Cameron in 2006. Break everything up ('chaos out of order') prior ostensibly to creating 'order out of chaos', which is the 'public consumption' motto of the flluminati (the hidden motto being its converse).... 'The hundreds of millions of people devoted to [the Catholic Tridentine Mass] were - with remarkable dispatch - stripped away almost in the twinkling of an eye, with the long-term objective of creating a new, much more circumscribed Tridentine Mass movement rigidly controlled by the occult' (a Christian Kabbalah).

In April 2006, rumours began circulating that the Church of England may be moving towards allowing all forms of worship, without reference to truth, in its churches (the Maoist Illuminati trick of 'let a thousand flowers bloom'). As matters stood at Easter, the Author was unable to find a church conducting a Holy Communion Service according to the revered, accurate Book of Common Prayer, which is certainly sanctified by the Holy Spirit -without driving for many miles into the countryside, where a small, ancient church was found to be conducting its service in accordance with it.

The point of revisiting all this here is to emphasise the DUALITY of Illuminism, in ALL its manifestations and formats. Those who CANNOT GRASP THIS, are condemned to remain forever confused by these evil manipulators. The Soviet literature is full of essays on 'contradictions' in Marxism-Leninism - because double-mindedness, pursuing opposite policies simultaneously, is its essence. That is likewise the case with every variant of The Order, and with the 'profane' who are, wittingly or unwittingly, its duped collaborators.

THE TWO-FACED STANCE BREAKS DOWN AS LUCIFER IS REVEALED

Part of the complex recent history of the process whereby the 'smoke of Satan' has entered the Catholic Church' - a process paralleled by the equally 'successful' degradation of the other 'Christian' churches - was unveiled by Malachi Martin (see pages 369 et seq.). Craig Heimbichner has added extensive fresh analysis to what Malachi published, and to what we know about Satan's constant attacks on organised, man-controlled 'Christianity' from the outset. Craig Heimbichner's special contribution has been to demonstrate the exceptional demonic importance of O.T.O., the Eighth Degree of which describes Jesus Christ's True Church - the tiny minority of authentic Christians, the 'saints' who are 'in the Word' and who are not conditioned by the aberrations of diversionary and semi-paganised 'organised religion' - as comprising the 'foul demons of the Christians'[7]. Satan turns all truth upside down. And Heimbichner confirms that 'in spite of the sophistry and rationalisations of Freemasonry's diabolic orientation, truly initiated Freemasonry - even in a mainstream version such as the Scottish Rite - culminates in an embrace of Lucifer as teacher and the serpent of Genesis as Savior'[8]: the reverse of the Truth.

The Catholic Church in any case dispenses at least 48 'dogmas' which diverge from the truth as explicitly revealed by the Word of God in Scripture. To take just one example here, nowhere is there any scriptural support for the invented concept of 'purgatory' - a device that enables the hierarchy to earn fees by selling gullible Catholics indulgences, and deceiving them into the crass belief that remission from purgatory for a certain number of days can be obtained by saying the (pagan) Rosary a stipulated number of times, or praying to Mary, which is also of course contrary to Jesus' teaching that He alone is the sole intercessor with God the Father. That Man has no 'second chance' (as prescribed by the lie of purgatory) is specifically explained in Jesus' words [Luke, Chapter 13, verse 24 et seq.]:

'Strive to enter in at the strait gate; for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know not whence ye are: then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou has taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth...'.

Although the Lord's parable of the tares[9] applies when considering the duplicity and reprobate behaviour of organised 'Christian' churches, the double-mindedness which characterises all dimensions of the Illuminati networks, including the 'Open Friendly Society', is so conspicuous today as to be recognisable even to brainwashed Catholics themselves. For instance, at Easter 2006, considerable publicity was given to official Catholic pronouncements linked to the so-called '14 Stations of the Cross'. This ritual, being an invention of the hierarchy, promulgates descriptions of events leading up to the Crucifixion which, once again, are not reported in Scripture. For instance, nowhere in the Gospels is it stated that Jesus Christ fell to the ground on the way to His Crucifixion: it is make-believe. But in this ritual, at the Third Station, Jesus falls 'for the first time'. At the Eighth Station, Jesus allegedly 'meets the women of Jerusalem'. He does not, of course, 'meet' them, as though he were out shopping. Luke says simply that 'there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning to them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children'[10]. There is no need whatsoever for any elaboration of Luke's always simple account. The women did not 'meet' Jesus at the 'Eighth Station', but rather followed him, with their men, bewailing the terrible injustice they were witnessing - as we should bewail the Church's duplicity today.

PAPAL PRONOUNCEMENTS DEVOID OF ALL HOPE AND SPIRITUALITY

At all events, it was reported that Pope Benedict and his associates attached public pronouncements to each Station of the Cross, of which the following were examples:

'Society is in the grip of a kind of "anti-Genesis" described as "a diabolical pride aimed at eliminating the family". [The Pope prayed] for society to be cleansed of the "filth" that surrounds it" and for the family to be 'restored to purity and freed from "decadent narcissism". The author of the special prayers for the Stations of the Cross, Archbishop Angelo Comastri, Vicar-General at Vatican City, allocated the following prayer to the Third Station (at which 'Jesus falls for the first time', which is not recorded in the Gospels, as indicated): 'Lord, we have lost our sense of sin. Today a slick campaign of propaganda is spreading an inane apologia of evil, a senseless cult of Satan, a mindless desire for transgression, a dishonest and frivolous freedom, exalting impulsiveness, immorality and selfishness as if they were new heights of sophistication'. Yet these accurate statements of reality are attached to a piece of unscriptural make-believe.

Other 'Stations of the Cross' spelled out an equally bleak, hopeless message, providing a clue concerning the nature of the 'spirit' behind these papal assertions. For instance: 'Lord Jesus, our affluence is making us less human, our entertainment has become a drug, a source of alienation, and our society's incessant, tedious message is an invitation to die of selfishness'; or, when Jesus Christ, 'at the Eighth Station', 'meets the women from Jerusalem': 'Rivers of tears shed by mothers, mothers of the crucified, mothers of murderers, mothers of drug addicts, mothers of terrorists, mothers of rapists, mothers of psychopaths, but mothers all the same'; and finally, implying that the Pope himself is faithless: 'Where is Jesus in the agony of our own time, in the division of our world into belts of prosperity and belts of poverty... in one room they are concerned about obesity, in another, they are begging for charity?' The Pope then added a warning against steps that are being made to 'modify the very grammar of life as planned and willed by God', leading prayers against 'insane, risky and dangerous ventures... to take God's place without being God', a reference to genetic engineering experiments and by implication to the diabolical experimentation in the creation of hybrid beings reported to be taking place at secret locations in the United States[11].

What should have been noticed from these papal pronouncements is their total lack of inspiration, hope and promise of forgiveness, redemption and salvation - the truth of Jesus Christ. Instead of uttering these statements of the glaringly obvious, amounting to affirmations of an apparent acceptance of the triumph of evil, Pope Benedict should have read the following passage from the Apostle Paul, who encapsulated every single point made in these papal pronouncements with the authority unique to him as an Apostle of the Lord Jesus Christ (text repeated here because of its central, eternal importance):

'For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth [to reside in] in unrighteousness.... Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools'[12].

'For this cause God gave them up to vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature; and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge [i.e, in their education system], God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful; Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them'[13].

SEEING THROUGH THE FACADE OF DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS

The Catholic Church, or the 'Open Friendly Society' (not to mention the almost totally reprobate Church of England) cannot even maintain the facade of its Illuminised double-mindedness, since even its formal 'spiritual' pronouncements, such as those cited here, no longer disguise the fact that it is actually dispensing the hopelessness of Lucifer: where, in those papal Good Friday pronouncements, again, was there any faith and hope in Jesus Christ, the Way, the Truth and the Life? Clearly, at an advanced stage of decay it typically becomes less and less necessary for the cynical two-faced discipline enunciated by Manly P. Hall ('The hand that slays must lift the fallen, while the lips given to cursing must be taught to pray') to be sustained. Satan then truly appears as an angel of light - as the inversion of the truth is no longer hidden, so that the notorious pronouncement of the lying Satanist Albert Pike, in which he predicted our geomason-ic-dominated future in which rulers, Kings and Popes are selected and imposed by the self-appointed Luciferian Illuminati-Masonic synarchical controlling elite, is affirmed:

'The Occult Science of the Ancient Magi was concealed under the shadows of the Ancient Mysteries: it was imperfectly revealed or rather disfigured by the Gnostics: it is guessed at under the obscurities that cover the pretended crimes of the Templars [sic); and it is found enveloped in enigmas that seem impenetrable, in the Rites of the Highest Masonry.... LUCIFER, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light? Doubt it not'... The world will soon come to us for its Sovereigns and Pontiffs. We shall constitute the equilibrium of the Universe, and be rulers over the Masters of the World'[14].

It is manifest that both Albert Pike and Giuseppe Mazzini were Illuminati first and Freemasons second - and that Pike laboured for many years to invent, elaborate and 'illuminate' US Scottish Rite Masonic initiation rituals so that they could be relied upon to propagate the agenda, secrecy, spying preoccupation, perverse occult focus and World Revolution of the Illuminati within the orbit of the Rosicrucian Order of the Quest - and, with the establishment of the Palladian Rite, of which Ordo Templi Orientis is a 'broader' derivation, to prepare for the advent of the 'New Age' of Aquarius in which, so Pike imagined, 'the foul demon of the Christians' (according to the Illuminist Aleister Crowley) will have been 'permanently' exorcised, so that no further impediments to 'Do as Thou Wilt' would survive. Illuminised Freemasonry, as Heimbichner so succinctly explained, 'is a nursery of Luciferianism from which promising candidates are selected, while others are left forever in the dark, content to exploit their old-boy connections, play their charity charade and exchange arcane hand-signals with judges, lawyers and jurors for mutual benefit of the guilty'[16].

This 'in-your-face' temporary 'supremacy' of occult Masonic Illuminism in the United States is replicated many times daily as Americans handle their $1.0 bills, or travel by train past the gargantuan, monstrous Washington Memorial Temple at Alexandria. The image on the $1.0 bill is the insignia of the Illuminati, containing the 'eye in the triangle', the esoteric meaning of which is the Eye of Set-Sothis-Shaitan (Satan) represented astronomically as Sirius and anatomically as the anus. [Heimbichner, op. cit., page 138].

THE DIALECTICAL METHOD INTEGRATED INTO THEIR PSYCHE

The double-mindedness central to the twisted mentality of members of all components of the ffluminati synarchy is related directly to the dialectical methodology developed for modern consumption by Friedrich Engels, applied with particular rigour by the Illuminist Lenin and his associates, heirs and successors, and extensively employed both by the Nazis and by the US authorities. The classic formula of Thesis, controlled Antithesis, Synthesis, is described by the intelligence and New World Order analyst David Icke (not a source often used by this Author) as Problem, Reaction, and Solution. The essence of this standard ffluminati methodology is, as discussed, the control of all opposition; and the central double-minded initiative which has 'worked' so 'well' for the conspirators has been the conflicting work of the 'Two Karls' - Professor Karl Ritter, 'originator' of the mindset that emerged via Nietzsche as the phenomenon of Fascism, and Karl Marx, author of the 'Communist Manifesto'. The launch of these two poisonous 'philosophies' by the Illuminati, allegedly directed by the Rothschild ('Red Shield') family, established the broad dialectical canvas (Thesis versus Antithesis) ready for manipulation in what the Illuminati consider to be our mechanistic world. The Thesis (Lenin's Communism) was developed in parallel with Nazism (Antithesis), which matured two decades or so later. And the same dialectical pattern is now standard in respect of all contemporary issues.

In the terms used by David Icke, the Illuminati strategists develop the Problem, perhaps by funding, training and assembling an 'opposition' group to stimulate turmoil in an established political context - the evolution of which they intend to manipulate -thereby generating a conflict that the ffluminati themselves have manoeuvred into existence. Control of the opposition forces, central to the Leninist methodology, is in fact applied universally by Illuminati cadres. Typically, both within and outside the Soviet context, controlled 'opposition' groups will be identified by the compliant media as 'freedom fighters' or 'liberators' - an example being the criminalist drug-running Kosovo Liberation Army (KLA). Finance for such operations is derived from 'Black' budgets, funded by drug-trafficking or by 'funny money' banking transactions, which take place at the intergovernmental and inter-intelligence sector levels on a gargantuan scale.

'Freedom fighters' are not infrequently assembled from a local criminal element -in the case of the KLA, from Communist-era mafiya clans running drugs through the Balkans. In conformity with standard Machiavellian ffluminati deception 'principles', the same New Underworld Order Illuminati strategists will likewise be involved in arming and advising the leadership of the existing established power as well - with the added prospect of the Illuminati benefiting by lending money, rearming and supplying all sides in any conflict they have generated in pursuit of their Luciferian objectives.

In the course of such typically cynical operations, controlled allies - such as Saddam Hussein, Slobodan Milosevic, Colonel Qadhafy, et al - may be abruptly dumped and converted into an enemy overnight, having been double-crossed by US intelligence, scammed, or targeted for 'taking out' because they have scammed the Americans or their intelligence cadres. In this rat-riddled sewer, former controlled operatives - like 'Tim Osman' - may either change sides in accordance with altered circumstances following some double-cross or other, or else will be ordered by intelligence cadres to switch sides. This was the case with Osama Bin Laden - whose wealthy family's assets, as we have seen, George W. Bush actually managed at one stage of his career.

Switching sides, treating former friends and allies as enemies, speaking out of both sides of one's mouth, playing 'war' and 'peace' simultaneously, using charm on people one moment and dropping fragmentation bombs on their countrymen next, comes naturally to the double-minded geomasonic Illuminised operative instructed by a 'god'.

LAUNCHING THE CONTROLLED CONFLICT ONTO THE WORLD STAGE

The conflict in question will be coaxed onto the world stage by controlled media outlets using pictures and videotape reports of horrific and bloody atrocities suffered by innocent civilians. This elicits the intended 'something has to be done' response, which is the Planned Reaction. The manipulators then provide the preplanned Solution - for example, by sending in United Nations 'peacekeepers' (in Bosnia), or a United Nations 'Coalition Force' (the First Gulf War), or NATO bombers followed by ground troops (Kosovo). The sustained aggression and bombing of Belgrade and parts of Yugoslavia by NATO was a criminal abomination - not least given that in 1990, when this Author complained that the combined effect of bilateral treaties that the USSR was signing with targeted West European countries would be to neutralise NATO, he was told that this could not be the case since NATO was a 'defensive alliance' [see box on page 625].

The underlying purpose of these Illuminati operations is to have New Underworld Order-controlled forces and structures in all key countries or strategic areas where significant indifference or resistance to the New World Order is expected to be encountered. Having used Milosevic as a financial and trading partner, US intelligence then double-crossed and demonised him, when the Illuminati's strategy changed ('bait and switch').

The standard procedure when it has been decided to demonise the leader of an established power, is to describe him as 'another Hitler'. This point was stressed in an Internet posting on this subject updated on 31st December 2005, by Ken Adachi. In April 2006, President George W. Bush was reported in the British press to be in the habit of referring to President Mahmoud Ahmadinejad of Iran as 'another Hitler'. Given this confirmation of the accuracy of his assertion, it is clear that Mr Adachi's underlying analysis in this connection was correct.

Once installed, the 'peacekeepers' never leave (Bosnia, Kosovo, Korea, East Timor), thereby undermining the 'host' state's integrity, in line with the tired dogma that all nation states are to be replaced by supranational governance in the hands of the 'Brotherhood'. Publicity surrounding the operation is often driven by newspaper articles placed by controlled think-tanks or agitprop organisations with an axe to grind, like Human Rights Watch - allegedly an Illuminati front group, as the Author discovered when he visited their messy Washington, DC offices some years ago.

The fundamental rule that the Illuminati manipulators follow, whatever cover they may be using at any given point in time, is, as has been reiterated, always to control both sides of the dialectical tensions that they establish - so that the two 'opposing' 'phanes', or 'forces', can be 'creatively' manipulated in accordance with their global strategic requirements. This basic rule never varies. Observers of current affairs who 'take sides'are themselves victims of the double-minded deception in question. The model for this modus operandi has been described - especially by the veteran Soviet defector, Anatoliy Golitsyn - as the Scissors Strategy. This metaphor is used because it illustrates very precisely how the Illuminati (whether the Soviet strategists, the covert Nazis, or US intelligence) operate.

In accordance with this model, one hand operates the scissors, but the instrument has two blades. These blades can either be moved away from each other, or else moved towards each other until they join - having cut a swathe through everything that stood between the blades. To an outside observer, the blades appear to be separate forces, since the guiding hand cannot be seen (it is behind the curtain). This model can be applied, obviously, to any environment. Once this simple model is understood, it becomes possible for the observer to stand back from the pressure to 'take sides' - enabling, for instance, the idiocy of British and American controlled 'democracy' - or democratism to use its appropriate Soviet description - to be seen for the farces and cynical deceptions they are.

HOW THE BRITISH MINISTRY OF DEFENCE DEALT WITH THE AUTHOR'S ARGUMENT THAT SOVIET BILATERAL TREATIES WITH TARGETED EUROPEAN COUNTRIES INDIVIDUALLY AND COLLECTIVELY UNDERMINED NATO

At the beginning of the 1990s, the Author argued in print that a series of bilateral treaties, all drafted by Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) and presented to targeted European countries for signature, were all designed to neutralise NATO. Some of these treaties contain 'Molotov-Ribbentrop' clauses, providing that if either party felt threatened by a third party (state or axis), neither party to the bilateral treaty could provide any assistance whatsoever to the third party. This might mean, for instance, that Spain would have to refuse US aircraft access to bases on its territory, as Madrid might fear that Moscow might construe such a development as an actual or potential threat - so that the bases could not be made available to the Americans under the new 'post'-Soviet era Russian-Spanish bilateral treaty. The Ministry of Defence dismissed the Author's arguments inter alia on the ground that they did not apply, since NATO was a defensive organisation. Within a few years, NATO had effectively scrapped its defensive orientation, and embarked upon naked aggression - illustrating that the MOD's response was disingenuous. An excerpt from the official response is shown in below [Figure 96]:

Northern Iraq, both of which were extremely successful. Having taken advice form the Naval staff and the FCO may I provide you with our background thinking on the assumption that the main thrust of Mr Story's argument is that when taken together, the various bilaterals with USSR undermine NATO's raison d'etre.

My first point concerns the general theme of non-aggression pacts and recognition of existing borders. Although the MOD and FCO would not wish to be drawn into commenting on other nations agreements, I differ with Mr Story in believing that the provisions in the bilaterals are fully in line with those in the Helsinki Act - as reaffirmed in last year's Charter of Paris.

My second point concerns the public impression of such agreements. Bilaterals of this nature run parallel to CSCE and NATO in contributing to the political process of improving East-West relations. NATO, which is after all a defensive organisation, has played its part with its positive statements in the 1990 London Declaration and the more recent NAC Communique after the Copenhagen Ministerial.

My final point is that the provisions of such non-aggression agreements do not, in our view, undermine NATO as a political, security and defence agreement. Non-agression treaties are political acts that are effective up until the act of aggression. Thereafter the Washington and Brussels Treaties for NATO and WEU provide for the appropriate military response in self defence. While no one could doubt the political aspirations implicit in a non-aggression pact, history has not been kind to such agreements - NATO can both provide the ultimate reassurance in security terms and, at the same time, contribute politically to the atmosphere that goes with such agreements.

In conclusion, we believe that NATO fits satisfactorily into the present framework of political, security and defence agreements. Further, it is NATO that provides for a collective security that includes USA and Canada in a way that these bilaterals do not.

Figure 96: Excerpt from a Ministry of Defence response to the Author's arguments to the effect that the Gorbachev-Yeltsin bilateral treaty offensive targeting key European countries was designed to neutralise and defang NATO. The MOD said this couldn't be the case because NATO was a strictly defensive organisation. Not when it started serving the Illuminati's purposes by unleashing barbaric bombing offensives against the former Yugoslavia, it wasn't.

GERMAN INTELLIGENCE NO LONGER ABLE TO USE SOVIETS AS COVER

In the US context, so wedded to the 'Founding Fathers' ideology of democracy are the American people, as a consequence of successful indoctrination in the past, that it has become 'necessary' for the controlled dialectical 'opposite forces' to manipulate the outcome of elections by electronic vote-rigging devices (see Addendum 1, page 662) - a cynical ploy since adopted inter alia by the Italians. For the Illuminati, the slogans 'democracy' and 'freedom' are devoid of all content, since their intended democratic arrangements represent controlled dialectical manoeuvres, while the 'freedom' they have in mind is circumscribed by the rules, regulations and circumstances that they intend to control and dictate.

Throughout the Cold War years, the Nazi Continuum and its intelligence community hid behind the cover of the Soviets. In other words, in the intelligence context, the blades of the scissors remained tight shut together (whatever external perceptions prevailed to the contrary). But after the Illuminati's planners, led by President Reagan, had concluded that the Cold War was counterproductive and should be 'closed down', the stage was set for the German Abwehr's deep Soviet intelligence cover to be withdrawn, although this did not become apparent until some years later. Because President Reagan and his controllers decreed that the Cold War must be terminated, US intelligence operatives, using Financial Warfare and bribery techniques and drawing upon colossal 'funny money' resources, cooperated with bribed Soviet intelligence officers such as Mikhail Gorbachev (KGB) and Vladimir Putin (GRU), to activate the phenomenon or illusory provocation of 'collapsible Communism' - orchestrating those successive operations to destabilise the East European countries successively one by one (as TV cameras could not be concentrating on more than one revolution at a time, in the interests of maximum global impact). In 1989-92, US financial operatives orchestrated the largest private placement in history, raising a targeted $27.5 trillion from 200+ international banks, for use by the elite's financial controllers, for the purpose of equilibrating the 'Global Security Environment'. Massive looting of the funds by criminalist cadres within the warring factions inside US intelligence sectors took place during 1989-92 (facilitated thereafter by the orchestrated 'takedown' of the US Financial Warfare operative Leo Wanta) allegedly under the supervision of Dr Alan Greenspan, whose reputation as a 'revered' monetary guru has always reflected only one side of that Illuminist's evidently dark, double-sided nature. The vast financial assets of the 'Global Security' funds, however alienated and dispersed, were believed to aggregate an estimated $70 trillion by the time this book went to press, representing unlimited funds with which those who diverted the giga-funds thought they could continue enriching themselves and set the agenda for global control for the whole of the 21st century.

A separate giga-store of manipulative 'funny money', worth at least $206 trillion, but probably by now, given frantic ongoing 'hidden' financial sector leverage, up to $450 trillion, is, according to financial sector intelligence sources, at the disposal of cadres reporting to George Bush Sr. (alleged DVD). Bribery of officials to keep them quiet after leaving office, or to co-opt their services in pursuit of German Illuminist global hegemony strategy, is accordingly routine. After all, this method 'costs nothing', since the funds used at the intergovernmental level for such purposes have been conjured out of thin air through clever hypothecation and leverage operations exploiting the characteristics of the global fiat money system, and the willingness of the co-opted banks to accommodate such operations. As a consequence, certain institutions have become giants in the space of less than a decade. As this book was being finalised, a red-hot intelligence war was in progress, inter alia over the disposition of these giga-funds, amid a growing danger of open warfare should appropriate settlements fail to be completed.

In other words, ample funding to lubricate the secret German/Illuminati global hegemony project for the whole of the 21st century, has been accumulated. The sums are so large that the mishandling of this situation could destroy the US dollar and in any case might well precipitate the Third World War. The 9/11 atrocity was engineered specifically in order to provide a 'common' and 'lasting' pretext for aggressive intervention operations by the Illuminati's enforcement arm - the United States - for the next 50 years, at least. America's remit, specified on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States, is for the 'New World' to impose its 'Order' on the whole of humanity - on the instructions of the 'Order', which is controlled by the three groups of 13 'Orders' - the Vatican, the Khazar 'Black Nobility', and Illuminised Communism, all operating behind the smokescreen of, or in an environment obfuscated by, Illuminised Freemasonry and myriad secret societies, which are themselves fractions of The Order. It is recognised that this structure may not adequately describe the full scope and potential of the 'Dark Forces playing Games', but it is a largely accurate even though necessarily an incomplete picture.

The Vatican-based Political Action Centre, established by Giuseppe Mazzini, has either delegated operations to Frankfurt and Berlin, or else has been obliged all along to coexist with them, given the pre-existence of the modern Illuminati sect's proliferation in Europe and into North America via the German Masonic Lodges and the networks consolidated by Adam Weishaupt and his associates. The Pike-Mazzini axis was established almost a century after Weishaupt's activities, both as a consequence of them and in accordance with the methodology and imperatives laid down by Adam Weishaupt. Logically, therefore, the Pike-Mazzini axis, and division of powers, may be considered to be junior to the pre-existing German Illuminati control centres - one of many reasons for the incessant tensions and rivalries between European 'Principalities and Powers' that are in evidence today, just as they have persisted at least since the 17th century.

THE FOUNDER OF MODERN GERMAN AND RUSSIAN INTELLIGENCE

Arguably the most influential 'alumnus' of the 19th century German Illuminati was the father of the modern German secret service - Wilhelm Johann Carl Eduard Stieber, who served Bismarck and developed the intelligence and strategic deception principles and methods that were brought to fruition both by the Nazis and, because Stieber later reorganised the Tsar's secret intelligence services, the Soviets. It was Stieber who prepared elaborately for military invasion by planting agents years beforehand on the intended line of march. He used 'Black' funds to buy up newspapers in France, so that they would spread pacifist ideas, while distributing press information in Prussia promoting militarism (double-mindedness in action). Under Stieber, German espionage was integrated into a special service, for which he prevailed upon the Reichstag to grant huge budgets.

Later Stieber became an agent provocateur among Berlin's many revolutionary clubs (modelled along French Revolution lines and backed or spawned by the Lodges). While secretly in the pay of the police and well known to King Frederick Wilhelm himself, Stieber became one of the most zealous leaders of the Berlin crowds. In 1850, Stieber was appointed Polizeirath, with immediate control over the Sicherheizpolizei (public safety police). After falling from grace when King Frederick Wilhelm descended into imbecility, Stieber obtained employment in St Petersburg, organising the Tsar's secret service.

Stieber evidently first came into contact with Russian officials in Berlin when they employed him to suppress a scandal that had arisen in connection with the wife of one of the Russian employees. His services proved so useful that he appears to have been given a sweeping letter of commission - to seek out Russian counterfeiters and lawbreakers who had sought refuge in Germany, and to identify 'demagogues' and political offenders. He accordingly organised large networks of agents in Berlin and other cities, and police officials throughout Germany were ordered to place themselves at Stieber's disposal in respect of all Russian affairs. It was under these conditions that intimate relations developed between the Russian secret service and the Prussian Government. As one 19th century analyst elaborated, 'one can well imagine that little of interest which Stieber discovered as a Russian agent failed to reach the ears of that other person - Stieber, the Prussian agent'[17].

In 1863, Stieber was introduced to Bismarck, who in due course assigned him the task of preparing for the invasion of Bohemia by supplying Bismarck with comprehensive topographical information. Accordingly, Stieber himself toured the region, disguised as a pedlar selling cheap religious statuary and indecent pictures. During the war against Austria, Stieber accompanied the Prussian military as head of what he called the 'Political Police', which he distinguished from ordinary military police guards. Bismarck subsequently authorised Stieber to extend the scope of the Political Police force's operations. He took action against spies (counterintelligence) and established control over letters and telegrams, while also controlling all printed material and newspaper correspondence from the front (censorship). He also organised the distribution to the Prussian military of information about the enemy. At the end of the Austrian War, Stieber laid plans before Bismarck for setting up a Central Information Bureau, which provided the Government with extensive intelligence and controlled the media. Stieber also deployed his honed intelligence skills to guide the outcome of the subsequent Franco-Prussian War.

Stieber's organisation of both the Prussian and the Russian secret services provides a pragmatic explanation of the close intelligence relations between Russia and Germany that have persisted ever since. Because such operatives alternately fall out and collaborate with each other, given that the Devil is the author of confusion, the apparent severance of relations when the Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact collapsed, represented no intelligence discontinuity. In reality, the presence at the highest level of Stalin's con-

VIEWS FROM INSIDE
THE AMERICAN GULAG
CONCENTRATION CAMP
NETWORK OF 600-800
SECRET "FACILITIES'

Figure 97: View of a US concentration camp today, belonging to the Rex 84 Program. The number of such GULAG installations is variously reported at between 600 and 800. INSERT: View of another Rex 84 camp.

trol apparatus of Lavrentii Beria, a long-term agent of the German Abwehr, and the close liaison between Beria and the Nazi General Muller, are among many indications that there was never any discontinuity in the working relationships between the Soviet and German intelligence services, or elements of them. This remains the case.

TWO BLADES OF THE SAME CONTROLLED PAIR OF SCISSORS

The reason for this is that, thanks initially to Stieber, the two intelligence communities were, and remain, the two blades of the common pair of scissors manipulated by the German Illuminati. Why else is it reliably reported by US intelligence contacts of this Author that GRU-President Vladimir Putin, whose wife is on record as having referred to her husband as a 'vampire'[18], allegedly surfaces from time to time in Germany to attend occult ceremonies at Dachau, the seat of the German 'Black' intelligence successors of the Abwehr, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD)?

Finally, and most crucially of all, we can see the 'Scissors Strategy' at work with astonishing 'success' in respect of defeated Nazi Germany's long-term revenge against its two 'main enemies', which are considered to be one - Britain and the United States. The Author is certain that the European Union is a long-range strategic deception operation of German 'Black' intelligence (DVD), designed to subjugate the whole of Europe, and especially the primary European target, Britain, within a German sphere of influence and control.

Germany's main ally in this venture is (Vichy) France, the two countries being bound together under the 1963 Treaty of the Elysee, which is of indefinite duration. Under this Treaty, the two Governments are obliged to reach a 'common position' in respect of all international issues and relations that concern them individually, and must present this common stance at all international meetings in which they participate[19]. It is axiomatic, therefore, that intelligence relations, both 'White' and 'Black', between the two countries are always close. At the same time, Germany and France are bound to Russia by interlocking

SCISSORS STRATEGY SHOWING THE GERMAN/FRENCH-SOVIET DIALECTICAL MODEL
This model presupposes massive long-range German penetration of US structures and the internal corruption and skewing of US intelligence by the DVD: see also page XXXIII.

THE HAND IN THE SCISSORS: THE ILLUMINATI COVER FOR GERMAN LONG-RANGE STRATEGY
GERMAN NAZI CONTINUUM DVD – DACHAU + FRENCH + SPANISH 'BLACK' INTELLIGENCE
THE 'MAIN ENEMY' BRITAIN AND THE UNITED STATES
SOVIET MILITARY INTELLIGENCE [GRU]

Note: For practical reasons, this book does not address the Chinese and Japanese elements of the long-range strategic offensive against the 'Main Enemy'. Including them would necessitate the placement of Japanese intelligence on the upper blade, and Chinese intelligence on both blades of the scissors. Chinese intelligence works closely with German and French intelligence, and always with the KGB and the Soviet GRU.

Figure 98: Diagram showing the application of the 'Scissors Strategy' that has been pursued with no discontinuity since the Second World War by German intelligence from behind its Soviet and Illuminati covers.

bilateral treaty obligations, and by common membership of a Trilateral Commission consisting of representatives of the three countries, of which President Jacques Chirac was Chairman before being elected as President of France. Britain, which is struggling behind the scenes to extricate itself from the EU Collective, has been caught in this Nazi trap, and defanged - and its military class and military-industrial complex semi-collectivised.

The other blade of the German Illuminati's scissors has cut a swathe since the Second World War through the United States' corrupted institutions, installing a Nazi Fifth Column at the highest levels of Government, within the intelligence services, and in the military. At least 32,000 German agents were known to be operating in the United States even before the 1939-45 War. As the Nazi authors of the 'Madrid Circular Letter' proclaimed to their intended recipients, 'For us the War never ended' ('Fur uns der Krieg ist niemals vorbei') and 'We will build the Thousand-year Reich on the Ruins of the United States'. They have made, and are making, stunning progress.

If we overlook the Illuminati dimension momentarily, we can indeed see clearly that this Scissors Strategy has been crowned with 'success'. But when we restore the invisible hand to the scissors, we make the unpleasant discovery that the Illuminati cadres in both countries (Britain and the United States) are secretly collaborating with their German Illuminati associates in pursuit of the idolatrous objective laid out and rationalised by Adam Weishaupt: unfettered global control. And the pivot pin on which the blades of the scissors move is the alleged DVD agent-strategist, George Bush Sr..

BUT A HOUSE DIVIDED AGAINST ITSELF CANNOT STAND

But before we scare ourselves to death, let us take comfort from the following reality. According to a US source at the highest level of the controlling Illuminati cadres there, the struggle for hegemony is indeed being waged by European powers which are at loggerheads with each other. The Author was told, by proxy, to leave these evil powers to fight it out among themselves, and not to get caught in the cross-hairs.

So we can take comfort from Jesus Christ's logical statement that a house divided against itself cannot stand[20]. For it is clear, from this Author's close observations, that the Illuminati cadres are permanently riven with rivalries and hatreds that can never be reliably repaired. Individuals and cadres among them may imagine that they can reach accords, and that trust can be established; but since all these Dark Actors are Playing Games, by definition, none of them can ever be trusted; and not only do they distrust each other, but they are liable at any moment to be at each others' throats and to resort to threats, blackmail and murder in pursuit of their reprobate 'Quest'.

Temporary accommodations are typically reached among the different competing national and international factions; but the hatreds, rivalries, 'bait and switch' mentality and propensity to double-cross, always gain the upper hand. In accordance with the Jesuit principle, everyone spies on everyone else (a horrifying discovery, when one interacts with these people in the United States), US intelligence operatives threaten each other all the time, and nothing most of them say can ever be believed (providing many with a form of Satanic 'cover'). They are also hampered by the rigorously applied system of compartmentalisation, which precludes serious strategic analysis at all times.

Compartmentalisarion is integral with internal spying. The demonic Jesuitical spy system was installed from the outset in order to assure The Order of control over its membership. The idolatry of control and power was paramount from the outset. The lust for control is what underlies the culture of internal spying characteristic of intelligence communities, 'bait-and-switch', institutionalised lying, and back-stabbing.

This is no basis on which to build a house that can survive. And it can't.

WHY WE SHOULD BE OF GOOD COURAGE

Since both domestically and internationally, interpenetration, double-dealing, turmoil, jealousies, threats, lies, internal spying, hatreds, compartmentalisation, scamming, double crossing and 'bait and switch' trickery characterise the hellish world in which these people live and have their stunted being, it is obvious that, no matter what horrors the warring Illuminati synarchy intelligence and other cadres may be planning and have in store for humanity, they can never consummate their evil objective. This is obvious, if one applies rigorous concluding logic to the situation. Just suppose that the muminati were actually to succeed in establishing their lusted-after global dictatorship - in 'consummating their idolatry'.

How could such an edifice possibly survive, given the turmoil which characterises the hell within which these creatures all operate? Would envy and jealousy suddenly be abolished under cover of their mad utopia? Because they fear that they would not, the idea is to brainwash populations so that the whole world is of one mind, while those who refuse to conform and to be 'brought to reason' will simply be eliminated. General Alexander Haig personally confirmed to a US intelligence contact of the Author's that the concentration camps listed on pages 612-613 do exist and that plans for the 'treatment' of targeted components of the population include the designation of troublesome elements by a colour-coding system: Red, destined for immediate liquidation, for instance in gas vans en route or at the alleged Amtrak Indianapolis gassing facility; Blue, destined for 'rehabilitation' (= 'bringing to reason') in the concentration camps; and Green, destined for milder but unspecified coercive treatment Figure 97 on page 628 shows views of US Rex-84 concentration camps readied for such purposes - awaiting, no doubt, instructions from members of the 'highest' Illuminati Degree of REX. The existence of Rex-84 was confirmed during the Iran-Contra hearings in 1987, being subsequently reported in the Miami Herald on 5th July 1987.

The use of the codename Rex-84 has everything to do with the 'highest Degree' of the IUuminati. To suggest the contrary would be tantamount to suggesting that the 'M' on the late Pope's coffin represented 'Mary'. During the 1980s, Diana Reynolds summarised the official Tine' with regard to Rex-84, in language that immediately contains a clue: the use of the word 'Alpha'. The letters of the Greek alphabet are used by Illuminati cadres, especially the mind-control sectors, to denote stages of operations -with 'omega' triggering liquidations (exterminations). According to Ms. Reynolds:

'The Rex-84 Alpha Explan (Readiness Exercise 1984, Exercise Plan), indicates that FEMA in association with 34 other Federal civil departments and agencies conducted a civil readiness exercise during April 5-13, 1984. It was conducted in coordination and simultaneously with a Joint Chiefs exercise, Night Train 84, and a worldwide military command post exercise (including Continental US Forces or CONUS) based on multi-emergency scenarios operating both abroad and at home'.

'In the combined exercise, Rex-84 Bravo, FEMA and DOD led the other Federal agencies and departments, including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Secret Service, the US Treasury, the Federal Bureau of Investigation, and the Veterans Administration through a gaming exercise to test military assistance in civil defense'.

'The exercise anticipated civil disturbances, major demonstrations and strikes that would affect continuity of government and/or resource mobilization. To fight subversive activities, there was authorisation for the military to implement Government-ordered movements of civilian populations at State and regional levels, the arrest of certain unidentified segments of the population, and the imposition of martial rule'[21].

This is the 'pragmatic' explanation for the existence of US concentration camps. But it represents just a statement about past 'precautions', not about what is intended. Contingency planning in the hands of duplicitous operatives is extremely dangerous.

THE INTENDED CLOSURE OF THE BLADES OF THE SCISSORS

For the Rex-84 Program, with Operations Cable Splicer and Garden Plot, anticipate the closure of the blades of the Scissors - representing the triumph of the German Illuminati cadres buried within the US structures, which is to correspond with the final decapitation of British power within the EU. The 'hidden' hand in the scissors is that of the Illuminati, which serves as deep cover for naked German long-range global hegemony strategy encapsulated in the slogan: 'Deutschland uber Alles'. But because the 'hand in the scissors' is, by definition, a collective hand (manipulated by 39 elements), and because the Devil is the author of confusion, the House of the Order of the Illuminati is unavoidably divided against itself. This means that the hand, though violent and ruthless, is also hesitant and afraid....

The aforementioned warning by proxy to the Author from the 'highest' level of the 'Illuminated Ones' in the United States, to the effect that 'the European powers are fighting it out among themselves' rings ominously true. Especially as the veteran person concerned is of German extraction, and is therefore perfectly informed. The geo-masonic source in question further confirmed 'Svali's' revelation' that German is alwavs spoken at the highest levels of the Illuminati. 'What need we any further witness'? [22]

CONCLUSION: Notes and References

1. The Lost Keys of Freemasonry or The Secret of Hiram Abiff', Manly P. Hall, 33rd Degree, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., Richmond, VA, 1923; 176 edition, page 48.
2. Including The Secret Destiny of America', in which the Illuminati are revealed to be just one component of The Order of the Quest, and the rare 'An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy', which contains precise instructions on how to summon up the Devil himself. Less than 100 copies of the Rosicrucian edition of this monstrous work were printed. The printing was organised by the Crocker family (Crocker Bank) and the huge books were sold to 'numerically high-ranking' US Freemasons at a high price. One copy of this document is held in a sensitive section of the Library of Congress.
3. The Lost Keys of Freemasonry, Manly P. Hall, op. cit., page 48.
4. Craig Heimbichner, 'Blood on The Altar: The Secret History of the World's Most Dangerous Secret Society', Independent history and Research, Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816, USA, 2005, ISBN 0-9703784-3-2; op. cit.
5. First Epistle of John, Chapter 4, verses 1-4: 'Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God; And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God; and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is in the world'.
6. Heimbichner, op. cit., page 43.
7. Heimbichner, op. cit. page 62. 6. Heimbichner, op. cit. page 62.
9. Matthew, Chapter 13, verses 24-30.
10. Luke, Chapter 11, verses 27-28.
11. 'Pope condemns geneticists 'who play at being God', The Times', London, 14th April 2005, page 2. The author of this report was Ruth Gledhill, who appears to specialise in 'religious reporting' without Christ.
12. Romans, Chapter 1, verse 18 et seq. The whole of this passage, to the end of the Chapter, should be read and meditated upon, since it contains all the truth that has ever been stated about human behaviour and is of sublime perfection and thus of direct and lasting spiritual value - unlike the sterile pronouncements of Pope Benedict which dispensed no hope and affirmed the supremacy of Satan.
13. Romans, Chapter 1, verses 26-32.
14. Heimbichner, op. cit., page 58, citing inter alia Albert Pike, 'Morals and Dogma', op. cit., 1871, page 321: 'Aleister Crowley informed the Brotherhood (of O.T.O.) that the serpent in the Garden of Eden is the savior of mankind: "This serpent, SATAN, is not the enemy of Man, but He made Gods of our race, knowing Good and Evil; he bade 'Know Thyself, and taught Initiation'. [Source: Aleister Crowley with Mary Desti and Leila Waddell, 'Magick': Liber ABA, Book 4, Parts I-IV, York Beach, Samuel Weiser, 1997.
15. 'Masonic diabolism again came to the fore in 1917, during the bicentennial celebration of the official birth of Grand Lodge Freemasonry (1717), when Grand Orient Freemasons in Italy marched in Vatican City with black banners depicting the Archangel Michael being trodden underfoot by Satan, a satanic reversal of the traditional Christian image of St Michael trampling the Devil' (Heimbichner, op. cit., pages 58-59]. Heimbichner adds the following Note: 'Maximilian Kolbe, a Polish seminarian pursuing his studies in Rome, witnessed this demonic spectacle and was so deeply disturbed by it that after his ordination, he formed one of the largest and most militant anti-Masonic and anti-Rabbinic media networks in the Catholic world.... Imprisoned in Auschwitz as a Polish nationalist, he is alleged to have died of a lethal injection there in 1941', because of his OPPOSITION TO Judaic Kabbalism.
16. Heimbichner, op. cit., page 58.
17. 'Memoirs of the Father of Prussian Spies', monograph by Max J. Herzberg, undated early 20th c. document.
18. Mme Putina is on record, in a public domain interview, as describing her husband as 'a vampire'.
19. The Franco-German Treaty of the Elysee, signed by Dr Konrad Adenauer, German Chancellor, and President Charles de Gaulle of France, on 22nd January 1963, contains, under II-Programme, the following pledge: The two governments will consult before any decision on all important questions of foreign policy and, in the first place, on questions of common interest, with a view to reaching as far as possible an analagous position'.
20. Matthew, Chapter 12, verses 24-26; Luke, Chapter 11, verses 17-18.
21. Diana Reynolds, www.publiceye.org
22. Luke, Chapter 22, verse 71: 'And they said. What need we any further witness? For we ourselves have heard out of his own mouth'. The context is the search by the High Priest, scribes and Pharisees for a pretext to crucify the Messiah they refused to acknowledge.

FROM 'THE HOLOCAUST' BY DR MARTIN GILBERT*

The authoritative account by the world's greatest 'Shoah' expert

Eyewitness accounts of the abominations of hell

'Beginning on May 10, and continuing every Tuesday and Friday, Jews were brought to Minsk from Germany, Austria and Czechoslovakia, then driven by truck towards Maly Trostenets. The trucks were mobile gas-chambers; when they reached the camp all those inside them were dead'.

Page 351.

'Then the march began. Barbed wire on both sides, in the rear two dozen Ukrainians with rifles. They drew near. Wirth and I found ourselves in front of the death-chambers. Stark naked men, women, children and cripples passed by. A tall SS man in the corner called to the unfortunates in a loud minister's voice: 'Nothing is going to hurt you. Just breath deep and it will strengthen your lungs. It's a way to prevent contagious diseases. It's a good disinfectant!'.

Pages 426-427

'Piled up in freight cars, unable to bend or to budge, sticking one to the other, breathless, crushed by one's neighbour's every move, this was already hell. During the day, a torrid heat, with a pestilential smell. After several days and several nights, the doors were opened. We arrived worn out dehydrated, with many ill. A newborn baby, snatched from its mother's arms, was thrown against a column. The mother, crazed from pain, began to scream. The SS man struck her violently with the butt end of his weapon over her head. Her eyes haggard, with fearful screams, her beautiful hair became tainted with her own blood. She was truck down by a bullet in the head'.

Page 427.

'The SS seemed to enjoy this bloody escapade. Just then the youngest of the bunch asked his superior if it was all right to catch one of those 'little Jews' on his bayonet as it was coming down [thrown from a window above]. His superior gave him permission, and the young SS butcher rolled up his rifle sleeve and caught the very next infant on his bayonet. The blood of the infant flowed down the knife onto the murderer's arm and into his sleeve. He tried his talent once more, and again he was successful in catching the wailing child on his sharp bayonet He tried a third time but missed and gave up the whole game, complaining it was getting too 'messy''.

Page 442.

'There, in the valley, three large graves were already waiting for them. They had been dug out that same day. The old, the sick, pregnant women and small children, two thousand innocent Jewish souls, were shot and brutally thrown into those graves, one on top of the other. Many of them were still alive! For most of the children, they didn't even waste a bullet They were just thrown in alive. And together with those who were only wounded, finished their lives under the pressure of the human mass.... The larger grave contained a thousand bodies each. We learned of this massacre from the Polish police themselves. They told Moshe Hersh about it in minute detail, because they themselves had taken part in that slaughter. On the following Sunday, they went to church with their families, as if nothing had happened. They suffered no guilt feelings. After all, they were only murdering Jews, with the blessing of their priests, who inflamed them from their pulpits on Sundays'.

Page 445.

*The Holocaust: The Jewish Tragedy, Martin Gilbert, Fellow of Merton College, Oxford, Fontana Press, HarperCollinsPublishers, London, 1987: ISBN 0 00 637194-9

FROM 'THE PRICE OF LOYALTY' BY RON SUSKIND*

The account of Paul O'Neill's two years as US Treasury Secretary

Across the room, Ashcroft started playing the piano. [Condoleeza] Rice was ushered over.

"Do you know any hymns?"

"Do I know any hymns", Ashcroft said in stagy surprise, and started pounding out "Amazing Grace". Rice sang - she has a lovely voice. For the next hour they all sang as Ashcroft played.

In the corner, O'Neill sat in a wide leather chair, devouring a pile of documents that George Tenet had passed out in the meeting. It laid out a span of covert activity around the globe, including... assassinations - a plan to neutralise people disposed against the US Government by any means necessary. At its core was the enabling provision that there be virtually no civilian oversight.

"What I was thinking is, 'I hope the President really reads this carefully'" O'Neill recalled. "It's kind of his job. You can't give this much responsibility to unelected individuals. But I was sure he wouldn't". ■

* The Price of Loyalty, Ron Suskind, Simon & Schuster Paperbacks, New York, 2004, pages 190-191.

FROM 'THE CONTROVERSY OF ZION' BY DOUGLAS REED*

Virtual identity of Weishaupt's documents and 'The Protocols'

'The resemblance of Weishaupt's documents [to the 'Protocols of the Elders of Zion'] is very strong in the passages which relate to the infiltration of public departments, professions and parties; for instance: 'It is from us that the all-engulfing terror proceeds. We have in our service persons of all opinions, of all doctrines [including] restorating monarchists, demagogues, socialists, Communists and utopian dreamers of every kind. We have harnessed them all to the task: each one of them on his own account is boring away at the last remnants of authority, is striving to overthrow all established form or order. By these acts, all States are in torture; they exhort to tranquillity, are ready to sacrifice everything for peace; but we will not give them peace until they openly acknowledge our international Super-Government and with submissiveness'.

Page 220

'The allusions to the permeation of universities in particular, and of education in general, also spring directly from Weishaupt, or from whatever earlier source he received them: "We shall emasculate the universities.... their officials and professors will be prepared for their business by detailed secret programmes of action from which they will not with immunity diverge, not by one iota. They will be appointed with especial precaution, and will be so placed as to be wholly dependent upon the Government". This secret permeation of universities (which are centres for the spreading of mental confusion and indoctrination, and - for the 'chosen ones' - for infestation with a demonised mentality of double-mindedness [Skull and Bones at Yale, The Apostles at Cambridge])... was successful in German universities in Weishaupfs day... and was very largely successful in our generation' [actually, several generations earlier, as Chapter 2 of the present work shows]'.

Page 220

'Republicanism, too, is to be a "cover" for the conspiracy. The Protocols' are especially contemptuous of Republicanism, in which (as also in Liberalism) they see the weapon of self-destruction forged out of "the mob";'... then it was that the era of republics became possible of realisation; and then it was that we replaced the ruler by a caricature of a government by a President taken from the mob*, from the midst of our puppet creatures, our slaves. This was the foundation of the mine which we have laid under the peoples'. *Interesting use of the word 'mob' here: The reader is supposed to believe that what the anonymous conspiratorial 'Protocols' writer meant was the 'crowd', as in the French Revolution. But the American version of the word 'mob' has a double meaning -namely, the organised criminal dasses (mafia). Note that the President is 'taken from the mob'.

Page 220

'The term "utopian dreamers", used more than once, is applied to Liberals, and its original source probably resides in the Old Testament allusion to "dreamers of dreams" who, with "false prophets", are to be put to death. The end of Liberalism, therefore, would be apparent to the student [provided he reads Scripture! - Ed.] even if 'The Protocols' did not specify it: "When we introduced into the State organism the poison of Liberalism, its whole political complexion underwent a change. States have been seized with a mortal illness, blood-poisoning. All that remains is to await the end of their death-agony.... We shall root out Liberalism from the important strategic posts of our government on which depends the training of subordinates for our State structure".

Page 220

Disraeli, the 19th century British Prime Minister, was among the very large number of Jews who were (and are today) aware of the Talmudic takeover of Judaism, and that it is a disaster both for Jewry and for the whole world, since the Talmud teaches the opposite of the revelation of the Truth made available to the children of Israel as described in the Torah, thus recommending every abomination under the sun - with special emphasis on paedophilia (which, as this Author states elsewhere, is arguably the worst of all crimes, as little children are innocents and vessels of the Holy Spirit in which the Torah Jews of course also believe). Disraeli warned as follows in his 1846 novel Coningsby.

- That mighty revolution which is at this moment preparing in Germany [NOTE, IN GERMANY] and of which so little is as yet known in England, is developing entirely under the auspices of the Jews'.

And in 1852, Disraeli returned to the subject, telling the House of Commons:

- 'The influence of the Jews may be traced in the last outbreak of the destructive principle in Europe. An insurrection takes place against tradition and aristocracy, against religion and property. The natural equality of men and the abrogation of property are proclaimed by the secret societies who form provisional governments and men of Jewish race are found at the head of every one of them". Page 220

---

* 'The Controversy of Zion', Douglas Reed, Veritas Publishing Company Pty, Ltd, Western Australia: ISBN 0-945001-38-X

Author's Postscript

It may be troubling for thinking Americans to have to come to the realisation that their Republic is the instrument of competing European geomasonic Illuminati forces, which are 'fighting it out among themselves'. As mentioned in the main text that this is the situation, was revealed to the Author by an American colleague whose elderly relative is initiated to the highest Illuminati level - and who added: 'Don't get caught in the middle of it'. The source of this advice was not however, a Christian, and so could not see the picture from the perspective of the Author and his US colleague - which is that we have a duty to share what we know about 'the mystery of iniquity' with friends, and to provide, if possible, guidance as to how it may be understood, confronted, and overcome.

The Author has suggested, in passing, that one positive way in which this mystery can begin to be addressed in the US context would be for patriotic and understanding Americans to begin a determined agitation for the removal of the emblem of the Illuminati, and other occult images, from the $1.0 bill. This ought to have happened many decades ago.

Indeed, as an 'honorary American', the Author is surprised that this outrage does not offend ordinary, decent Americans, as it should. Of course, such a campaign would be addressing only a symptom of the Republic's malady, rather than the cause. But it would be most effective, for the following reason. As this study has shown, the Illuminati-Freemasons are obsessed by symbology, using goofy hand signals, esoteric logos and signs as an integral dimension of their secret society system. Their distorted 'truths' are 100% contained within their symbols and emblems.

The placement of the Illuminati's actual emblem on the $1.0 bill represented an arrogant 'in-your-face' assertion by the self-serving synarchical elite that the United States is indeed a revolutionary, 'Illuminised' power, founded by European geomasonic 'Dark Actors Playing Games' to serve their weird, obsessive and idolatrous interests, rather than those of the American people. This is why US Governments are distanced from the people: they are not serving them, but rather the geomasonic Illuminati's crooked agenda. Even to demand the removal of their emblem from the US $1.0 bill would signal to these evil synarchists that 'we, the people' have had enough. For they aren't used to being contradicted, and would be astounded that their standard lies are failing. Their primary fatuous lie, which this study has decisively debunked, is, of course, that there is no such tiling as a conspiracy.

On the one hand, the conspirators have for a century spread the lie that there is no such thing as a conspiracy (even though Lenin specifically, in writing, identified the Revolution as a conspiracy). On the other hand, the Author has been informed by an impeccable source that cadres buried deep within the US Information Warfare bureaucracy specialise in proliferating multiple conspiracy theories in order to procure the following outcomes:

- The escalating discrediting of 'conspiracy theories' and 'conspiracy theorists', so as to maintain the unimpeded 'Right of Way' to which the Master Illuminati Conspiracy arrogantly believes it is entitled on the World Revolution Motorway.
- Realisation of the potential for causing maximum permanent confusion in the minds of researchers so that they follow false, dead-end leads.

So, here we have perhaps the Grandfather of all examples of the Illuminati's routine double-mindedness. There is no such thing as a conspiracy. So they distribute all kinds of false leads, fairytales and fantastic make-believe conspiracies, via the Internet in order to sustain this illusion. The due to discernment is understanding their duality.

Far from being perceived as a threat to the hegemony of the criminalised classes within the official structures, the Internet has been seized upon as an unprecedented, millennial opportunity to confuse all issues, to distort reality, to plant disinformation stories and to manufacture false conspiracy theories in order to pull the wool over the disoriented public's eyes, so that the Illuminati and their agentur can continue with their corrupt geofinancial and geopolitical operations.

Is there a secret community of interests between German Nazi Continuum 'Black' Intelligence, hiding behind the deep cover of the Illuminati, which provides its most comprehensive Fifth Column inside the largest component of the 'main enemy', the United States, and the Talmudic Khazar Jewish interests represented within or served by the three wings of the Illuminati's structures - the Vatican (where Mazzini's Political Action Centre is located), the 'Black Nobility' and the Freemasons: or are these two 'forces' destined ultimately to fall out among themselves? The answer, given that there is reported to be extensive Jewish participation within the Dachau-based Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, is evidently in the affirmative. This book in any case allows of no other conclusion. ■

ADDENDA NEW UNDERWORLD ORDER INSIGHTS

SELECTED ARTICLES ILLUSTRATING NEW UNDERWORLD ORDER DIMENSIONS

The features on pages 662-738 illustrate dimensions of the New Underworld Order in greater depth than the space allocated for them in the main text. The features are of course historical, of an older vintage than the main Chapters of this book. For instance, Addendum 6 elaborates on the ongoing (covert) Soviet criminalism offensive, which US intelligence competes and collaborates with - a Black strategy which is wrong and unwise in principle, and prone to yield catastrophic consequences in practice. The United States, being a key revolutionary power, conducts Financial and Economic Warfare against its enemies, even while, for public consumption, calling them 'friends'. By collaborating with the Soviet criminalists, US intelligence has maximised opportunities for Soviet blackmail, which is the technique that Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU) and the KGB Continuum routinely deploy against their high-level US and Western targets. For in parallel with the unchanged deception strategy of the Dachau-based German 'Black' intelligence apparat, the Soviet blade of the scissors admits of no discontinuity either.

Addendum	Page:	Feature:	First published in:	Date:
One	662	The Stolen Election of 2004	International Currency Review 30, 2/3	Feb 05
Two	675	The Death Education Agenda	Global Analyst 2, 2	Mar 05
Three	679	Cerberus Capital Management	International Currency Review 30, 1	Jul 04
Four	681	Bush on the Couch	International Currency Review 30, 2/3	Feb 05
five	690	Corruption at Harvard	Soviet Analyst 27,2	Feb 01
Six	695	Covert Soviet Financial Scams	International Currency Review 29, 2	Dec 03
Seven	701	US Criminalism Exposed	International Currency Review 29, 2	Dec 03
Eight	705	Soviet Criminalism: The Norex Case	International Currency Review 29, 3/4	Mar 04
Nine	732	Satanic Signals from on High	Global Analyst 2, 1	Feb 05
Ten	734	Geomasonic Handshake Signals	Global Analyst 1, 5	May 04

SUMMARY OF THE APPENDED ARTICLES AND FEATURES IN THIS FINAL SECTION

The following briefs summarise the content and purpose of each of these appended articles / features: 1: The Stolen Election of 2004: Explains how electronic voting machines and software were fiddled in order to ensure a continuation of the Republicans' (dialectical) 'turn' in power. Discusses other means whereby the election was rigged, and shows that for demographic reasons the Republicans can never win an election legitimately again. This in itself is extremely dangerous for the Republic, making an outright abandonment of democracy (which is in fact 'democratism') and the Constitution likely. 2: The Death Education Agenda: Exposes the teaching of death-related subjects in our schools, a dimension of the Illuminati's operations to accustom the population to their speciality - death. 3: Cerberus Capital Management: Exposes one 'hedge fund' operation and the active role of George Bush Sr.'s Vice President Dan Quayle, as he circles the globe seeking out opportunities for 'investment' of the flows of funds that such hedge funds manage. No mention of source of funds. 4: Bush on the Couch: A comprehensive precis of 'Bush on the Couch: Inside the Mind of the President' by the leading US agnostic psychologist, Dr Justin Frank. MD, Regan Books, HarperCollins Publishers, Inc., New York. Dr Frank subjected President Bush Jr. to analysis using standard procedures. 5: Corruption at Harvard: Outlines the lawsuit brought against allegedly corrupt Harvard Professors who saw opportunities for personal enrichment attached to a misguided programme of 'educational' initiatives for the 'former' USSR sponsored by USAID on Congressional instructions. 6: Covert Soviet Financial Scams: This essay is included in order to ensure that it remains well understood that the Soviets have been conducting 'blowback' Financial and Economic Warfare through criminalism aimed at destabilising and maximising financial flows from Western economies, and realising the full potential of their global drug-trafficking operations and drug offensive against the West. 7: US Criminalism Exposed: This report gives outline details of an astonishing lawsuit brought by a Russian intelligence corporation against CIA operatives including the Director of Operations himself. 8. Exposure Document: Soviet Criminalism: The Norex Case: A US Court document that exposes how the Soviet criminalist intelligence underworld functions, and some of its US assets. 9 & 10: Presentations on the widespread use of Satanic hand signals and of geomasonic handshakes. The hand signals are used openly to signal the presence of Satan: the handshakes are secret signals. It is said that 'pictures speak louder than words'. These tell-tale Illuminati pictures are deafening. ■

ADDENDUM ONE: International Currency Review 30, 2/3: February 2005

THE STOLEN ELECTION OF 2004

THE ILLEGITIMACY OF GOVERNMENT

Democratic legitimacy, however decadent, depends upon the perception that the decision of the electorate, however ill-informed (as it usually is), is both valid and sovereign. Likewise, the legitimacy of a currency depends upon the perception that the Government and structures that underlie it are legitimate, and have not usurped power fraudulently.

The dollar has been in free-fall, for reasons which include the serial corruption and frenetic movement of giga-funds implicit in the details exposed in 'International Currency Review'. Other reasons for the US dollar's extreme crisis, and for the concomitant safe-haven escalation of the price of gold, include the accurate perception that the 're-election' of President Bush Jr., followed by so many pending resignations that officials were (we were reliably informed) told not to leave all at once, implies that this Administration's known disregard for fiscal prudence, and its free-spending habits, will continue indefinitely.

On 16th February 2004, a senior US official was reported in 'The Times' (London) to have observed: 'I've never seen any Administration spend money like this... The money is flying out the door.... They give away money on phone calls. No documents, no budget'. In other words, coming from a common intelligence community background where the pipeline of 'Black money[7] is in such plentiful supply that hedge fund-like entities managed or advised by senior intelligence operatives have had to be mobilised to launder and place it, Administration officials from the President down treat the formal Federal Budget in the same profligate manner as they may have been accustomed to do for so long in respect of the vast avalanche of financial resources controlled off-off budget by the free-wheeling US intelligence community. Indeed, knowledge of this non-stop high-yield off-balance sheet financing has made US officials cynical and careless about their stewardsnip of the Federal Government's finances.

And yet another reason for the US dollar's crisis, is that the Rest of the World does not regard the second Bush Jr. Administration to be unequivocally legitimate.

Reasons for this scepticism have proliferated in the underground media ever since, and prior to, President G. W. Bush's signature of the Help America Vote Act [HAVA] on 29th October 2002. This paved the way for the widespread adoption of electronic voting equipment and other mechanisms which, as has proved to be the case, are wide open to surreptitious manipulation.

U.S. MEDIA TOLD TO SHUT UP

The American 'mainstream' media were universally instructed not to cover the many recounts which took place across the United States following the General Election on 2nd November 2004, although some instances - such as the odd announcement very late on 24th November that a Republican Governor of Washington State had been 'elected' after a recount with just 42 votes! - could not be suppressed: your correspondent saw this report on ABC News, rebroadcast in Britain on BBC News 24 in the middle of the night, ahead of Thanksgiving. [A condensed advance report on the dangers of electronic voting was published in International Currency Review Volume 29, Number 2].

It was argued there that HAVA was subliminally or actually predicated upon the pretext provided by the Horida 'chad' fiasco in December 2000, which we and others consider to have been a controlled provocation, organised by intelligence operatives, to provide precisely the pretext needed to persuade the US Congress to approve voting 'reform' legislation, of which HAVA was a subsequent component.

Even so, it was clear, at least from an Op-Ed piece in The New York Times on the eve of the Presidential Election, that the media knew perfectly well that the voting was to be rigged. This was obvious from information the newspaper revealed on 1st November about the pre-election measures that had been taken to preclude large numbers of Americans from being able to vote. As the newspaper explained: 'That people are dying by the tens of thousands in a war that did not have to be fought- a war that was launched by the United States - is mind-boggling'.

'Also mind-boggling is the attempt by Republican Party elements to return the United States to the wretched days of the mid-20th century when many Black Americans faced harassment, intimidation and worse for daring to exercise their fundamental right to vote. A flier circulating extensively in Black neighbourhoods in Wisconsin carried the heading "MILWAUKEE BLACK VOTERS' LEAGUE". It asserted that people are not eligible to vote if they have voted in any previous election this year; if they have ever been found guilty of anything, even a traffic violation; or if anyone in their family has ever been found guilty of anything'.

"'If you violate any of these laws" [details of course unspecified], the flier says, you can get ten years in prison and your children will get taken away from you'".

The New York Times' Op-Ed article added:

'In Philadelphia, where a large vote of Blacks is essential to a Kerry victory in the crucial state of Pennsylvania, the Republican speaker of the Pennsylvania House, John Perzel, is hard at work challenging all Democratic voters. He makes no bones about his intent, telling 'U.S. News & World Report': "The John Kerry campaign needs to come out with humungous voter numbers here in Philadelphia. It's important for me to keep that number down"'.

'That's called voter suppression, folks, and the G.O.P. [the Republican Party] concentrates its voter-suppression efforts in the precincts where there are large numbers of Afro-Americans. And that's called racism'. Given the gratuitous murder of large numbers of Iraqis and Afghanis, and the globally publicised US atrocities at Abu Ghraib and elsewhere, the newspaper concluded that 'these are days of shame for the United States'.

VOTE STOLEN IN ADVANCE

For those with eyes to see, there were indeed plenty of indications of prior intent by the US Administration that, one way or another, the national vote on 2nd November 2004 was always required to yield the 'intended' result. After all, George Bush Sr. had, probably by prior design, 'allowed' his co-members of the 'Box Gang' [intelligence operatives working dialectically together], led by Bill Clinton, allegedly the son of Winthrop Rockefeller, to 'win' the Presidency in 2002. Since Clinton remained in office for two terms, there was never any doubt that the Bush Jr. regime would be 'allowed' two terms by its competing-cooperating 'Box Gang' associates, as well.

But officials nad also put in place a number of initiatives which suggested to many that one or more alternative scenarios existed which were intended to ensure that 'Box Gang fairness' would indeed be forthcoming. Specifically:

The frequency and intensity of official references to and hints of one or more terrorist outrages ahead of or during the General Election (scareism): For instance, five weeks ahead of the election, counterterrorism officials were said to be 'obsessed with reports from multiple sources that terrorists hoped to disrupt the election campaign'.

The perverse intensity of official warnings and the constant references to the prospect of heightened terror alerts put sceptical observers on guard that the authorities were trying to leverage 'scareism' for electoral purposes. A top terrorism official even told Time magazine [of 26th September 2004] that 'nobody can give you a date, time or place, but everyone is absolutely convinced we're going to get hit'. Incredible, isn't it? Of course, given that the United States was not 'hit', nothing has been heard of any of these 'warnings' since.

Earlier, the then Homeland Security Secretary, Tom Ridge, had openly stated that plans did exist for cancelling the election. On 11th July, Newsweek reported that the US Administration was actively investigating the possibility of cancelling the Presidential Election. Specifically, 'Ridge's department last week asked the Justice Department's Office of Legal Counsel to analyse wnat measures would be needed to permit the postponement of the election were an attack to take place. Justice was specifically asked to review a recent letter to Mr Ridge from DeForest B. Soaries [see below], Chairman of the newly created US Election Assistance Commission. Soaries noted that, while a primary election in New York on September 11th, 2001, was quickly suspended by that State's Board of Elections after the attacks that morning, 'the Federal Government has no agency that has the statutory authority to cancel and reschedule a Federal election'.

- A parallel Congressional Research Service (of the Library of Congress) report to Congress dated 14th July 2004, entitled Executive Branch Power to Postpone Elections, which concluded:

'Traditionally, all voting - whether Federal, State or local - occurs in local precinct polling places, and State or local authorities have a significant role in regulating such voting. Congress, however, also has power to regulate elections, and that authority may vary depending upon whether the election is for the Presidency, the House, the Senate, or for State or local offices. While the Executive Branch has significant delegated authority regarding some aspects of election law, this authority does not currently extend to setting or changing the times of elections... Under a variety of possible scenarios that could arise as a result of terrorist attack before or during an election, either the Congress or the States might pass legislation which would affect the timing of these elections'.

'The suggestion has been made, however, that the Executive Branch might have some role in determining whether an election is to occur or whether it can be cancelled. While the Executive Branch does not currently have this power, it does appear that the Congress may be able to delegate this power to the Executive Branch by enacting a statute'.

• Heavy hints that in certain circumstances, the US election might be cancelled or postponed: For instance, Associated Press (which is so close to the intelligence services that it has to be considered their instrument: viz., all enquiries to AP concerning the details surrounding the 9/11 atrocities must be directed to its Washington, DC, bureaucracy), reported on 1st July 2004 that Mr DeForest B. Soaries, appointed by President Bush in 2003 to head the Federal Electoral Assistance Commission, which turned out to be so starved of funds that it could do nothing had pleaded with senior Administration officials for Government guidelines on cancelling or rescheduling elections 'if terrorists strike the United States again'. He said he had written to the then National Security Adviser, Dr Condoleeza Rice, and to the Homeland Security Secretary, Tom Ridge about this matter and 1 am still awaiting their response. Thus far we have not begun any meaningful discussion'. In other words, whether to postpone or cancel the elections was hardly an issue that this minor cosmetic official was allowed to be concerned with, since any such decision would be taken at the highest level on the spur of the moment, depending on the circumstances. But Mr Soaries added the aforementioned interesting fact - that 11th September 2001 was a local election day in New York City (as well, we add, as being the anniversary of (a) the birth of the notorious founder of Lenin's Cheka and (b) precisely the 30th anniversary of the day when the first work started on building the Twin Towers on 11th September 1971).

ELECTION REMAINED 'UP IN THE AIR'

From all of which the following facts were apparent prior to 2nd November 2004:

1. Whether the election would actually be held or not remained 'up in the air' until almost the last moment, since it will have depended upon a high-level Executive Branch decision which, in turn, will have depended upon assessments oi whether measures to ensure 'Box Gang fairness' were going to prove successful, or not.

2. The United States has no unified electoral legislation, and election arrangements vary between the myriad layers of governance and between States and geographical areas. This chaotic state of affairs, which may well be unique among developed political economies, may have been judged highly advantageous from the perspective of would-be election manipulators, as the detailed information provided below would appear to indicate.

What is not widely known is that, in certain circumstances, key political figures featuring in the 2004 General Election may have been targeted for Soviet-style liquidation, depending on the circumstances at the time. For instance, John Edwards, John Kerry's non-Masonic running mate for Vice President, was scheduled to speak in Dubuque, Iowa, in October, when an operative working for the Office of Naval Intelligence was present in the vicinity. This operative may have been, as he claimed to an intermediary, tracking five terrorists at the time; but his handler could have altered the implanted psycho-manipulative 'trigger' message to procure his cooperation in respect of a different outcome. We do not necessarily believe this to have been the intention, but it is an interpretation heard from certain sources. Equally poorly reported was the fact that Vice President Dick Cheney visited the crucial State of Iowa many times during the run-up to the election. Finally, an Israeli-linked source has stated as fact that John Kerry received a substantial allocation of gold in exchange for conceding the election, which he appears to have done prematurely, judging by news from Ohio and Florida. In all probability, Mr Kerry may have been encouraged to concede the election all along knowing that voting tallies would have been 'switched to opposite columns' in accordance with the pre-arranged requirement that 'Box Gang fairness' must prevail. By this we mean that the Republican dialectical component of the intelligence-controlled elements supposedly 'competing' for power and the Democratic elements pre-agree in advance which component is to be in charge for the next four-year period. [The Bush and Clinton cadres work together 'in opposition' and are collectively referred to as 'the Box Gang'].

CYNICISM ABOUT VOTING ABUSES

It stands to reason that with such information and allegations rife preceding, during and following the 2004 US Presidential Election, something must be radically wrong about the management of the US electoral process. At the very least, large swathes of the US population have adopted a cynical approach to the system, with cynicism about vote-rigging and manipulation now commonplace.

The identical phenomenon is developing in the United Kingdom, where, for instance, it is believed that Robert Kilroy-Silk, who has disrupted the UK Independence Party (UKIP), using Communist-style wrecking tactics, may be an intelligence officer, operating on the basis of instructions that UKIP is never to be allowed to gain genuine electoral traction, which it has threatened to do following its remarkable success in the European Parliament elections held in June 2004. Any such intervention by MI5 would be consistent with deep UK intelligence policy, given German (DVD) penetration.

On 4th November 2004, Dick Morris, the former adviser to President Bill Clinton, and a seasoned authority on elections, explained in the influential Capitol Hill journal 'The Hill' why he suspected that the Presidential Election had indeed been rigged. Specifically, he observed:

'By now it is well-known and a part of the 2004 election lore how the exit polls by the major TV networks were wrong.... Exit polls are almost never wrong. They eliminate the two major potential fallacies in survey research by correctly separating actual voters from those who pretend they will cast ballots but never do, and by substituting actual observation for guesswork in judging the relative turnout of different parts of the State. So reliable are the surveys that actually tap voters as they leave the voting places that they are used as guides to the relative honesty of elections in Third World countries'.

'When I worked on Vincente Fox's campaign in Mexico, for example, I was so fearful that the governing PRI would steal the election that I had the campaign commission two US firms to conduct exit polls to be released immediately after the polls closed, to foreclose the possibility of finagling with the returns. When the polls announced a seven-point Fox victory, mobs thronged through the streets in a joyous celebration within minutes, making fraud in the actual counting impossible'.

'But this Tuesday [2nd November 2004], the networks did get the exit polls wrong. Not just some of them. They got all of the Bush states wrong. So, according to ABC-TV's exit polls, for example Kerry was slated to carry Florida, Ohio, New Mexico, Colorado, Nevada and Iowa, all of which Bush carried. The only swing State the network had going to Mr Bush Jr. was West Virginia, which the President won by 10 points'.

'To screw up one exit poll is unheard of. To miss six of them is incredible. It boggles the imagination how pollsters could be that incompetent and invites speculation that more than honest error was at play here. The mistaken exit polls infiltrated all three networks and the cable news outlets and had a chilling effect on the coverage of election night. While all anchors refrained from announcing the exit-poll results, it was clear from the context of their comments that they expected Kerry to win and wondered if Bush could hold any key state.

'The exit pollsters plead that they oversampled women and that this led to their mistakes. But the very first thing a pollster does is weight or quota for gender. Once the female vote reaches 52% of the sample, one either refuses additional female respondents or weights down the ones one subsequently counted. This, dear Watson, is elementary.... so the possibility of biased exit polling, deliberately manipulated in order to try to chill the Bush turnout, must seriously be considered'.

'At the very least, the exit pollsters should have to explain, in public, how they were so wrong. Since their polls, if biased or cooked, represented an attempt to use the public airwaves to reduce the voter turnout, they should have to explain their errors in a very public and perhaps official forum. This was no mere mistake. Exit polls cannot be as wrong right across the board as they were on election night I suspect foul play'.

It is important to bear in mind that Dick Morris, though a key Clinton election engineer, subsequently distanced himself from the Democrats and effectively switched political allegiances. This makes his early post-election protestations all the more credible, which of course they are anyway, given his recognised professional expertise in this area

KERRY WIN EXPECTED ON ELECTION NIGHT

Your correspondent himself went to bed on Election Night in New York convinced, from anecdotal information and broadcast reports, that President Bush Jr. would not be re-elected. So he was astonished when, at not long after 10.00 am on 3rd November, the opposite outcome was being taken for granted. It should be added, in case it might be thought that Mr Dick Morris is biased, that he is the author of 'Rewriting History', a pointed rebuttal of Senator Hillary Clinton's memoir. He also cited, in his article for "The Hill', 'the forged documents that sent CBS on a jihad against Bush's National Guard service, and the planned '60 Minutes' ambush over the so-called missing explosives two days before the polls opened - thereby indicating that he really was reporting objectively for the benefit of Congress, drawing from his deep experience as a manager of election campaigns and as a formidable nit-picking expert and stickler of absolute electoral process integrity.

Mr Morris will surely not have been aware, when he wrote his article for 'The Hill', that John Kerry allegedly instructed his attorney to destroy all evidence of electoral fraud. This information was fed to highly respectable, genuine election integrity actives known to this service, on or about 24th November 2004, by a high-level US intelligence officer, indicating that elements of the US intelligence community are actually themselves outraged by the degradation, manipulation and defrauding of the US democratic process by 'Box Gang' intelligence operatives.

Open reports implying that the Presidential Election outcome on 2nd November 2004 was fraudulent, surfaced briefly but subsequently 'died' - given the edict to the media (enforced by the intelligence cells resident in or attached to every US press room). Not that we ourselves would have been in any way amused by a Kerry victory, you understand: please do not shoot the messenger.

We are talking here about the integrity of the US electoral process and concerning whether the outcome was fraudulent - which is what, on 24th November 2004, the outgoing US Secretary of State, Colin Powell, accused Ukraine of perpetrating. Seen in the broader perspective of the harsh reality that the United States operates its own form of fake 'democratism' akin to the Soviet model, none of this is, of course, in the slightest surprising: but the wall-to-wall fudging and abuse of 'democracy' that is now the norm, needs to be much better understood.

In the United States, as in the 'former' (i.e. currently covert) Soviet Union, it is neither here nor there who wins elections, as the intelligence services always win. In the covert Soviet context, the intelligence services are interchangeable with and indistinguishable from the Party apparat, following the interpenetration of the Party and the intelligence services which was reconfirmed in 1959-61, when the Soviet long-range 'decommissioning strategy' was being finalised

Therefore, in the covert Soviet context, the statement above can be rephrased as follows: it is neither here nor there who wins any election, as the Communists always win. To remind us all of this permanent fact, of which US intelligence cadres themselves may have only recently become aware, The New York Post carried a report on the post election meeting in Chile between George Bush Jr and President Putin - a top Soviet military Intelligence (GRU) operative, who was paid $1.0 billion by US intelligence in exchange for his 'services rendered' in facilitating the orchestrated 'collapses' of the overt Communist regimes in Central and Eastern Europe.

According to the US newspaper, 'in a lengthy exchange with Bush, Putin explained that his goal is 'the creation of a democratic style consistent with Russian history', the official said. We have of course italicised the word style, which is what this is all about, here. Need we further explain that the covert policy is to perpetuate the long-established KGB-Party deception of 'democratism', a Stalin-era word which, translated, means 'the creation and maintenance of the illusion of democracy'?

BRAZEN U.S. HYPOCRISY OVER UKRAINE

We wrote much about 'democratism' throughout the 1990s: here, thanks to 'The New York Post', is final corroboration that this Leninist device to ensure the institutionalisarion of false 'democratic legitimacy' is unsurprisingly being implemented, as in the past, by George Bush's 'friend', the sinister GRU officer and murderer Vladimir Putin. ('I love him, actually', is what the US President said of Putin after he had left Crawford, Texas, during the first Bush Jr. term). It must have amused this hands-on, cynical Leninist GRU operative no end, to have to explain to George W Bush Jr. - who as discussed in this analysis, had just himself stolen his second General Election - that, yes, in the covert Soviet Union, too, 'we steal elections: we know what it feels like'.

Likewise, the corridors of the Kremlin will have echoed on 24th November 2004 with the loud, cynical, hollow laughter, like the sound of brass, of KGB-GRU operatives marvelling at the brazen cheek of the outgoing US Secretary of State, Colin Powell, pontificating to the world about the 'unac-ceptability' of the election 'outcome' in Ukraine - not least because the supporters of the 'legitimate' winner, the intelligence operative posing as 'democratist', Viktor Yushchenko, were filmed waving red banners displaying the standard portrait of Che Guevara.

It is indeed difficult to imagine how much more ridiculous the American State Department could have made itself appear before the international community. No wonder US press rooms were, as revealed above, instructed not to report the disgraceful findings of US election fraud-watchers, such as the information provided in this analysis below.

DISENFRANCHISEMENT OF U.S. VOTERS

On 22nd September, Reuters reported that 'millions of US citizens, including a disproportionate number of black voters, will be blocked from voting in the November 2 Presidential Election because of legal barriers, faulty procedures or dirty tricks. The largest category of those disenfranchised consists of almost five million former felons who have served prison sentences and have been deprived of the right to vote under laws that have roots in the post-Civil War 19th century and were aimed at preventing Black Americans from voting. But millions of other votes in the 2000 Presidential Election were lost due to clerical and administrative errors, while civil rights organisations have catalogued numerous tactics aimed at suppressing Black voter turnout. Polls consistently find that Black Americans overwhelmingly vote for Democrats'.

According to the US Commission on Human Rights, 'there are individuals and officials who are actively trying to stop people from voting who they think will vote against their party, and that nearly always means stopping Black people from voting Democratic'. A field officer for People for the American Way, Vicky Beasley, told Reuters that 'in elections in Baltimore in 2002 and in Georgia last year, Black voters were sent fliers saying anyone who hadn't paid utility bills or who had any outstanding parking tickets or were behind on their rent would be arrested at polling stations. It happens in every election cycle'. In other words, of course, US election fraud is nothing new. But what appears to be new is that it is being directed from the highest level. In the course of a mayoral election in Philadelphia in 2003, people pretending to be plainclothes police officers stood outside some polling stations asking people to identify themselves. There were also reports of mysterious people videotaping voters waiting in line to cast their votes in black neighbourhoods. Mr Spencer Overton, who teaches legal studies at George Washington University, informed Reuters that minority voters might be deterred from voting simply by election officials demanding to see driving licences before handing them a ballot paper, despite the fact that the Federal Government does not require people to produce a photo ID unless they are first-time voters who registered by mail.

Mr Overton added: 'African Americans are four to five times less likely than Whites to have a photo ID'. Mr Courtenay Strickland, for the American Civil Liberties Union, testified to the US Commission on Human Rights in September 2004 that at a primary election in Florida held in August, many people were wrongly turned away when they could not produce identification. In a report published earlier in 2004, the Commission observed that in Florida, where President Bush won the bitterly disputed provocation-election in 2000 by 537 votes, Black voters had been ten times more likely than non-Black voters to have their ballots rejected, and were often prevented from voting because their names were erroneously purged from registration lists.

Florida is also one of 14 US States that prohibit ex-felons from voting. A total of seven percent of the electorate but 16% of Black voters in Florida are disenfranchised. In other swing States, 4.6% of voters in Iowa, but 25% of Blacks, were disenfranchised in 2000 as ex-felons. In Nevada, the numbers were 4.8% of all voters but 17% of Blacks; and in New Mexico, 6.2% of all voters by 25% of all Blacks.

The Commission on Civil Rights added that 13% of all Black men in the United States are disenfranchised due to a felony conviction.

These details raise another issue of immense importance for the future of what remains of the battered American Republic. Digging around for further such evidence, we have found a report by the Advancement Project, which seeks to ensure 'fair multiracial elections'.

This lobby organisation recently confirmed that registrars across the United States 'often claimed not to have received voter registration forms, or else rejected them for technical reasons that could have been corrected easily before voting day if the applicant had known that there was a problem'. Large numbers of voters who had registered comparatively late in 'swing States' reportedly found that their names were not shown on the electoral rolls when they showed up to vote.

REPUBLICANS CAN NEVER WIN LEGITIMATELY AGAIN: THAT'S THE PROBLEM

The underlying theme here is clear to anyone who has not already fallen asleep, given all this detail. The combination of open-ended immigration from Third World countries (a Marxist ploy to mix the races, on the theory that, eventually, all national loyalties become so confused that the nation state becomes redundant: that is the Illuminati's intention), and the much higher birth rates among such immigrants and their communities, implies that the United States now has a permanent majority of voters who, if allowed to vote and the elections were not rigged, would ensure that the left-wing party (of the political dialectic) would invariably win elections for the indefinite future.

The clear prospect, accordingly, is that permanent US election-manipulation is 'the wave of the future' - assuming that it is not replaced by an overt dictatorship. Even in a deceptive 'democratic' environment where manipulation of the results may be taken for granted among the cynical, jaded political establishment, the post-manipulation voting data have to be kept looking 'reasonable', so as to minimise post-election protests and disturbances. But by 2008, the proportion of 'left-wing' Democrats will be much higher than is the case today, so that only three courses will remain open to the 'right-wing' dimension of the political dialectic:

(1) To face medium-term political annihilation, en route to an actual one-party state by that route (which, as previously elaborated, already exists de facto, although few Americans yet realise it);

(2) To ratchet up the wholesale institutionalisation of 'covert election fraud across the board; or:

(3) To impose a de facto dictatorship, presupposing the abandonment of the US Constitution, and to 'refashion' 'democracy' in accordance with the globalist 'New World Order' model.

From these basic considerations, the outlines of a US political community of interests with the 'former' Soviet Union - separate from the well-known US economic greed and envy for access to Soviet energy supplies - begins to emerge clearly into view.

The United States cannot hope to remain a 'democracy' in which there will be any place at all for the Republican Party, which can only hope to survive by institutionalising electoral fraud - a course which, over the medium term, will enlarge the disenfranchised segment of society to such an extent that the consequence (especially given the brutalised, fissiparous tendentiousness of US 'street' culture) will lead to revolutionary upheavals in the streets.

These in turn will be repressed by the burgeoning powers and forces of US repression, which Yevgeniy Primakov and his colleagues are helping the Department of Homeland Security (a.k.a. the developing US Ministry of State Security) to devise and implement.

For its part, the covert Soviet Union has no intention of ever embracing democracy, even as fraudulently defined today by the US State Department - preferring instead the standard Leninist 'style' of democracy as revealed by Putin. This is of course the classical, unaltered Leninist deception methodology, exposed by the genuine Soviet defector Anatoliy Golitsyn, of 'controlled democracy', or 'democratism'. Which just happens to be the stage arrived at by the United States, while most people sleep.

GRADUALIST PATH PROBABLY IMPRACTICAL

It is not the intention of the present pro-active US Republican intelligence-leadership to follow the 'gradualist' path outlined - that is, option (2) above. Waiting for demographic pressures for US electoral fairness to become more and more intense, would be only an interim solution to the Republicans' problem. [It being you understand, a dilemma for those who still do not seem to understand that controlled 'democratism' is just a classical form of the Hegelian dialectic (Thesis: Republican, or 'right'-wing'-label control; Antithesis: Democratic, or 'left-wing'-label control; Synthesis: it being neither here nor there which controlled party is in control, because the same (devious intelligence) forces always win. For, even within their 'Box', the players in this cynical game of 'democratism' really do hate their dialectical enemies' guts (just as rival mafiosi, though often collaborating likewise hate and liquidate their rivals when threatened)].

Hence, we predict that the Bush Jr. II Administration will have been tempted to choose option (3) - namely, the final abandonment of the Constitution and the imposition of a de facto dictatorship control mechanism, either via the ongoing coup d'etat by instalments, or else by means of a further atrocity-provocation, or 'Reichstag Fire' event, representing a 'Great Leap Forward' facilitating the putsch.

THE SURVIVAL LOGIC OF THE COUP D'ETAT

It is easy to see the logic behind this cynical intention, of which so many clues have emerged into view (including the finalisation of the North American GULAG camp system, details of which were published in Volume 29, Number 2 of International Currency Review [see updated list in Appendix 2 to Chapter 8 of this volume]. If our demographic-oriented analysis is correct, this is the last Republican Administration to have gained power by means which it purports to represent as having been 'normal' (and we have already seen just how abnormal George W. Bush's 're-election' has been).

It is already extraordinary enough, both among thinking Americans and to the Rest of the World, that the US is represented to have re-elected a man whose words routinely emerge in mangled format from his lips, as though he's either brain-damaged or else possessed as the result of a Satanic event (as some well-informed Americans insist), or, as his remote psychoanalyst asserts, is chronically dyslexic [see page 681].

If policy is being formulated on the basis of staccato instructions from Mr Bush that confuse even the names of nation states, such as the following verbiage spouted by the President on 13th March 2001, long before 9/11, the world is in for a period of extreme darkness:

'But the true threats to stability and peace are these nations that are not very transparent, that hide behind the - that don't let people in to take a look and see what they're up to. They're very kind of authoritarian regimes. The true threat is whether or not one of these people decide, peak of anger, try to hold us hostage, ourselves; the Israelis, for example, to whom we'll defend, offer our defenses; the South Koreans'.

On the same morning that Gulf War II was launched, George Bush Jr. was caught on the internal White House video feed, punching his clenched fists into the air and pronouncing: 'Feels good, feels good' - a delighted smirk on his face. So, one factor that the financial markets must now be prepared for is that this man may become progressively more irrational and unrestrained (which may be one reason why so many of his top officials were leaving in late 2004, along with numerous leading CIA operatives who were rightly fearful of the anger of the new leadership of the Agency ('peak of anger').

In other words, the sad observation of a female operative, vouchsafed to a US friend of ours in July 2004, makes perfect sense to us. 'Enjoy the Fourth of July: it will be the last' (it wasn't). Considering that General Tommy Franks, the 'victor' of the invasion component of the latest Iraq War, knows a thing or two about the way the holders of power today in Washington think, his notorious warning published in an issue of the surprisingly influential journal 'Cigar Afficionado' in 2003, also makes perfect sense. The General wrote that in the event of a further catastrophic attack or event in the United States, the Government will abolish the US Constitution and will have no choice but to impose a military government.

Now given the scale of the corruption revealed, for instance [in successive issues of International Currency Review] it may be wondered whether the Republic does not actually need a dictatorship in order for the giga-corruption to be addressed. A moment's thought will tell us that any such development will inevitably be associated with the opposite effect, since the power derived from control over off-balance sheet trading is so vast, that financial patronage (bribery) comes with high office; and, in any case, key US military personnel are all 'high' Masons.

Nevertheless, there are those who, having long since understood that the corruption (now including electoral, as well as financial, corruption, of course) has gone too far to be reversed, do take the view that the only solution to this truly millennial crisis of the Republic may be for the military to arrest the primary perpetrators en masse overnight, to impose military discipline for the time being on the nation, and to preside over the process of 'bringing these people to justice', as George Bush Jr. typically says of Al-Qaeda terrorists, for instance. Will this happen? The answer is, probably not - since success in the military is usually dependent, in part, upon Masonic 'justification'; and all Masons serve the 'Brotherhood' (themselves), under cover of serving 'The Brotherhood of Man'. Even so, the gravity of the situation is such that, even within their Masonic number, there may be plenty of generals (as there are of senior officials) who have had 'enough'. [Note: This was written in 2004].

CARELESS TELL-TALE MISTAKES

In preparing to steal the 2004 General Election, the perpetrators slipped up many times. For instance, in mid-October, Associated Press (dubbed 'Associated Propaganda' by one visceral Internet analyst), released a report to the effect that President Bush Jr. had won the November election. When this revealing error was picked up, Associated Press concocted the interestingly ludicrous line that the story had been released as a 'test'.

On 7th November, Mr Thorn Hartmann, a syndicated columnist reported as follows:

'Election night, I'd been doing live election coverage for WDEV, one of the radio stations that carries my syndicated show and, just after midnight, during the 12.20 am Associated Press Radio news feed, I was startled to hear the reporter detail how Karen Hughes (the President's aide) had earlier sat George W. Bush down to inform him that he'd lost the election. The exit polls were clear: Kerry was winning in a landslide. "Bush took the news stoically", noted the A.P. report'.

Why did Mr Bush take this 'bad news' without reacting? Because he knew that the real results were in the process of being manipulated in his favour. How interesting, isn't it, that not even Karen Hughes knew about this scam. Yet, notwithstanding the instruction to the 'mainstream' media not to report the serial electoral fraud which actually occurred, the authorities have been unable to hide altogether the extent to which the General Election was stolen, once again, as in 2000.

For instance, a UC Berkeley campus research team has reported that irregularities associated with electronic voting machines may have awarded between 130,000 and 260,000 or more excess votes to President George W Bush Jr. in Horida in the November 2004 election. Their detailed study revealed an unexplained discrepancy between the votes for President G. W. Bush in counties where the new electronic voting machines were used, versus counties using the traditional voting methods. The research team, led by Professor Michael Hout, stressed that discrepancies this large or larger, rarely emerge by chance, the probability being less than 0.1%.

In the Horida counties which continued to use optically scanned paper ballots, fed into a central tabulator PC and thus vulnerable to hacking, the results contained such extreme anomalies that they lacked all credibility. For instance, in Baker County, which had 12,887 registered voters, 69.3% of them Democrats and 24.3% of them Republicans, the vote was only 2,180 for Kerry and 7,738 for Bush - the very opposite of what was seen everywhere else in the country, where registered Democrats voted for Kerry. On a tour of the United States earlier in the year, a prominent US voting procedure activist and analyst, reported privately that he had observed anecdotal evidence that if the voting was not rigged, there would be a landslide for Kerry.

Yet in locations like Dixie County, Horida, with 4,988 registered voters, 77.5% of them Democrats and just 15% registered as Republicans, only 1,959 people voted for Kerry and 4,433 voted for Bush. In other words, the total number of votes cast for the two main candidates was 6,392, which meant that 1,404 dead people or phantoms cast their votes. It appears that in Horida, the main voting scams took place in counties where the optical scanning process was used. Thus in Franklin County, where 77.3% voters were registered as Democrats, 58.5% of the votes cast were for Mr Bush. In Holmes County, where 72.7% of the voters were formally registered as Democrats, 77.25% of the votes cast were for Mr Bush. This fraudulence is qualitatively indistinguishable from the practice in Shevardnadze's Georgia, where, time and again, ballot boxes were brought, ready pre-stuffed with the pro-Shevardnadze ballot papers, to the polling stations, which were themselves guarded by heavily armed militia.

The prominent voting practices activist, Bev Harris, the Seattle-based grandmother, probably with intelligence connections, appeared on a CNBC television programme nosted by Howard Dean several months before the election. With deliberate care, she 'walked' Howard Dean through a simple procedure in which she proved that the results of a test election using the GEMS software supplied with Diebold touch-screen voting equipment could be reversed using the central (but normal) Windows PC desktop. After demonstrating how computer-based election fraudulence could be achieved, she sat up straight and told the live TV show [check the clip on www.votergate.tv]: 'We just edited an election, and it took us 90 seconds'. Beverly Harris added that the manipulation had left no tracks whatsoever. It would be nearly impossible for the election software, or a County election official, to know that the vote database had been altered.

This brings us back to the article by Dick Morris in 'The Hill', which is read by every political junkie in Washington. His theory, as discussed, was that the exit polls 'were sabotage' so as to induce people in the Western States not to bother voting for Bush (exploiting the time difference), since the networks would 'call' the election based on the exit polls for Kerry. In reality, the TV networks, having had their fingers badly burned in 2000, did not do this, and never intended to do so.

According to Jeff Fisher, a Democratic candidate for the US House of Representatives from Florida's 16th District, who told the FBI on the 6th November that he had evidence that the Florida election was 'hacked'- and of who hacked it, and how - it makes much more sense that the exit polls were right (they weren't done on Diebold PCs), and that it was the vote itself that was 'hacked'. Moreover, Mr Fisher alleged that not only was the Republican Presidential candidate favoured, but that this phenomenon adversely affected him (namely, Mr Fisher himself) and almost every other Democratic candidate for national office in the most-hacked swing states.

It has already been asserted here that the 'mainstream' media were instructed to 'cool if by their in-house intelligence cells. By 6th November 2004, the only 'mainstream' outlet to have come at all close to reporting the truth was a TV show featuring Keith Olbermann, who noted on the evening of Friday 5th November that it was curious that all the voting machine irregularities so far uncovered seemed to favour Mr Bush. As for the other media, one commentator wrapped up as follows: 'In the meantime, 'The Washington Post' and the other media are now going through single-bullet-theory-like contortions to explain how the exit polls had failed'.

The significance of all this is that election fraud on such a colossal scale implies the failure of the Republic, which is why this development is of such millennial importance to the international financial markets. Before elaborating this point, for the elimination of all doubt, let us first reveal the extent to which US elections are manipulated (see pages 671 et seq.), thus further highlighting the extreme hypocrisy of US intelligence 'democracy' intermeddling abroad, under the fashionable guise of displaying an impartial interest in 'helping civil society'.

Everyone knows of course that innumerable elections in the 'former' Soviet Union have been manipulated to an extent which reversed the result - early cases being the successive fiascos in Georgia, Boris Yeltsin's constitutional referendum in 1993 and his re-election in 1996, not to mention the 'festivals' of nepotism in grim places like Azerbaijan. But, as we have seen, the United States is no better than these 'post' -Soviet states - which its intelligence services are engaged, under the current Phase Two of the 'bringing down' of the USSR strategy, in trying to pull decisively into its geopolitical orbit.

We now predict that the continuation of this dangerous, reckless strategy under this headstrong Bush Jr. Administration will lead the world towards the Third World War - which, as noted on page 40 of the preceding issue of 'International Currency Review', a senior Iranian official said in May 2004 'has already begun' in Iraq. The Vice President of the National Iranian Oil Company (NIOC), Mr Ali Samsam Bakhtiari, told the Berlin 'Peak Oil' conference in May:

'The crisis is very, very near. World War III has started. It has already affected every citizen of the Middle East. Soon it will spill over to affect every single citizen of the world. Syria's oil production is in terminal decline. Yemen is following. Major Middle East producers, including Saudi Arabia, will peak soon, or have already peaked'. [Note: peakoil.com is a 'controlled' intel site].

Interviewed after his peroration, Mr Bakhtiari repeated: 'The present war cannot be confined to the Middle East. It will shortly spill over to the rest of the world'. That is perfectly accurate, not least since the Iraq insurgency has been and continues to be directed by cells of Soviet Military Intelligence (GRU), and DVD. It should be recalled that we published this observation in August 2004 - and that in November 2004, a very senior US official specifically confirmed to us that this is 'accurate'.

THE ILLUMINATI'S VIEW OF DEMOCRACY

For the Illuminati, 'democracy' is a means of collectivising decision-making - replacing the rule of autocratic monarchs (in the 18th century), whom they found hard to manipulate. 'Democracy' has the immense advantage from the Illuminati's perspective that control can be exercised 'invisibly' by targeting and recruiting the implementers of democracy - which is what the Bilderberg Group's meetings are all about. At such gatherings, prospective Illuminati implementers and their servants are vetted and selected for high office - or rejected, as the case may be. Elections are reduced, therefore, to personnel changes. ■

THE EPISODE OF THE FLORIDA GARBAGE BINS

We must now tell you what Bev Harris and her colleagues found in some Florida garbage bins. This is a verbatim account filed to the Author under the headline: 'STINKING EVIDENCE OF POSSIBLE ELECTION FRAUD FOUND IN FLORIDA' by the investigator Thorn Hartmann, dated Thursday 18 November 2004:

'There was something odd about the poll tapes. A "poll tape" is the phrase used to describe a printout from an optical scan voting machine made the evening of an election, after the machine has read all the ballots and crunched the numbers on its internal computer. It shows the total results of the election in that location. The printout is signed by the polling officials present in that precinct/location, and then submitted to the county elections office as the official record of how the people in that particular precinct had voted. (Usually each location has only one single optical scanner/reader, so that it thus produces only one poll tape)'.

Bev Harris of www.blackboxvoting.org [another 'controlled' intelligence site: see page 512], the investigator of electronic voting machines, along with people from Florida Fair Elections, showed up at Florida's Volusia County Elections Office on the afternoon of Tuesday, November 16, 2004, and asked to see, under a public records request, each of the poll tapes for the 100+ optical scanners in the precincts in that county. The elections workers - having been notified in advance of her request -handed her a set of printouts, oddly dated November 15th, and lacking [the requisite] signatures'.

'Bev pointed out that the printouts given to her were not the original poll tapes and had no signatures, and therefore were not what she'd requested. Obligingly, they told her that the originals were held in another location, viz. the Elections Office's Warehouse, and that since it was the end of the day they should meet Bev there the following morning to show them to her'.

'Bev showed up bright and early the morning of Wednesday the 17th - well before the scheduled meeting - and discovered three of the election officials in the Elections Warehouse standing over a table covered with what looked very like poll tapes. When they saw Bev and her friends, Bev told me in a telephone interview less than an hour later, "they immediately shoved us out and slammed the door"'.

'In a way, that was a blessing, because it led to the stinking evidence [herewith revealed]. 'On the porch was a garbage bag', Bev said, 'and so I looked in it and, and lo and behold, there were public record tapes [inside]. Thrown away. Discarded. Waiting to be hauled off'.

'"It was technically stinking, in fact"', Bev added, "because what they had done was to throw some of their polling tapes, which are the official records of the election, into the garbage. These were the ones signed by the poll workers. These are something we had done an official public records request for"'.

'When the elections officials inside realized that the people outside were going through the trash, they called the police and one [of them] came out to challenge Beverly Harris'.

'Ms Kathleen Wynne, a www.blackboxvoting.org investigator, was there. "We caught the whole thing on videotape", she said. "I don't think you'll ever see anything like this - Bev Harris having a tug of war with an election worker over a bag of garbage, and he held onto it and she pulled on it, and it split right open, spilling out those poll tapes. They were throwing away our democracy, and Bev wasn't going to let them do if".

'As I was interviewing Bev just moments after the tussle, she had to get off the phone, because "two police cars just showed up"'.

'She told me later in the day, in an on-air interview, that when the police arrived, "we all had a vigorous debate on the merits of my public records request". The outcome of that debate was that they all went from the Elections Warehouse back to the Elections Office, to compare the original, November 2 dated-and-signed poll tapes with the November 15 printouts [that] the Elections Office had submitted to the Secretary of State. A television camera crew from www.votergate.tv met them there, as well'.

'And then things got even odder. "We were sitting there comparing the real [signed, original] tape with the [later printout] ones that were given to us", Bev said, "and finding things missing and finding things not matching, when one of the elections employees took a bin full of things that looked like garbage - that looked like polling tapes, actually - and passed by and disappeared out the back of the building"'.

''This provoked the investigator Ellen Brodsky to walk outside and check the garbage of the Elections Office itself. Sure enough - more original, signed poll tapes, freshly trashed'.

'"And I must tell you", Bev said, "that whatever they had taken out [of the back door] just came right back in the front door and we said: 'What are these polling place tapes doing in your dumpster?'"

'A call on November 18th to the Volusia County Elections Office established that Elections Supervisor Deanie Lowe was unavailable and nobody was willing to speak on the record with an out-of-state reporter. However, 'The Daytona Beach News' (based in Volusia County), in a November 17th article by staff writer Christine Girardin, noted that 'Harris went to the Department of Elections' Warehouse on State Road 44 in DeLand on Tuesday, to inspect certain original November 2 polling place tapes, after being given a set of reprints dated November 15. While there, Harris saw November 2 polling place tapes in a garbage bag, heightening her concern about the integrity of voting records'.

"The Daytona Beach News' further noted that '[the Elections Supervisor] Lowe confirmed on Wednesday [that] some backup copies of tapes from the November 2 election were destined for the shredder, but pointed out that, according to Lowe, that was simply because there were two sets of tapes produced on election night, each signed. 'One tape is delivered in one car along with the ballots and a memory card', the 'Nexus' reported. 'The backup tape is delivered to the elections office in a second car'.

Suggesting that duplicates don't need to be kept, Lowe claims that Harris didn't want to hear an explanation of why some signed poll tapes would be in the garbage. "She's not wanting to listen to an explanation", Lowe told the 'News', speaking of Mrs Harris. "She has her own ideas"'.

'But the action in two locations on two days was only half of the surprise that awaited Bev and her associates. When they compared the discarded, signed, original tapes with the recent printouts submitted to the State and used to tabulate the Florida election winners, Mrs Harris says [that] a disturbing pattern emerged:

"The difference was hundreds of votes in each of the different places we examined", said Bev, "and most of those were in minority areas"'.

'When I asked Bev if the errors they were finding in precinct after precinct were random, as one would expect from technical, clerical, or computer errors, she replied: "You have to understand that we are non-partisan", she said. "We're not trying to change the outcome of an election, just to find out if there was any voting fraud". That said, Beverly Harris added: "The pattern was very clear. The anomalies favored George W Bush. Every single time"'.

'As Bev told me on her cell phone while driving toward their next destination, "We just put Volusia County and their lawyers on notice that they need to continue to keep a number of documents under seal, including all of the memory cards to the ballot boxes, and all of the signed poll tapes"'.

'Why? 'Simple', Mrs Harris concluded. "Because we found anomalies indicative of fraud"'.

DOUBLE STANDARDS

The British press is saying with good reason, that Americans appear to care nothing about the pain they inflict on others, but only about the pain they suffer themselves. Generalisations are odious, but the hideous events in Iraq bear out the reasonableness of this observation. The British press has not so far added that the United States is quite content to pontificate about the need for 'post'-Soviet states to 'accept democracy', while drawing a dark veil over the reality that its own elections are rigged, just like 'post-Soviet' ones. This is one of the multiple reasons why the serial voting fraud surrounding the 2004 General Election in the United States is being covered up by the 'mainstream media', on instructions from the intelligence community.

It is the identical syndrome as applies to human rights abuses: the United States, which maintains a vicious and barbaric prison system (or GULAG), publishes, via the US State Department, the invaluable compendium entitled 'Country Reports on Human Rights Practices', of which we hold a complete set going back to 1977. The only territory (with a few exceptions) not covered by this gigantic document is of course the United States itself. Yet there are 6.1 million people languishing in custody in America.

A huge number of these people work for organisations with close US intelligence community connections, producing a wide range of products needed by the American military-industrial complex, exactly as in the 'former' USSR and China. The vast population of this GULAG is maintained by arrests and incarceration of street drug abusers and traffickers, whose products are supplied inter alia, by cut-outs working for the Central Intelligence Agency and its criminalist Illuminati cadres.

ELECTIONS AND THE 'MECHANISTIC VIEW'

We now, finally, revisit the primary disguised issue which emerges from the finding that both the 2000 and 2004 US Presidential and General Elections were rigged and fraudulent. Power is shared between the controlled dialectical 'opposites', or 'phanes', of the US political firmament. As in the covert Soviet space, it is theoretically and in practice neither here nor there which party wins, since the intelligence services always win.

That is the theory - based upon the old Hegelian dialectical method, which is itself the poisoned fruit of the occult Freemasonic fantasy of the 'orphic egg'. When broken open, out 'fly' three 'forces', or 'phanes' - the (at this stage) undefined overarching presence, the so-called force of Evil and the so-called force of Good. However as the Masonic dupe 'ascends' (i.e., for the Christian, descends) the stages of Masonic initiation, which is an invention of the Devil (unlike the Christian, who needs no initiation of course, since the gift of Grace is Free), he is progressively impregnated with ever more corrupt perceptions, or 'lines', so that he comes to believe, through the progressive brain-washing to which he so foolishly allows himself to succumb, that he has joined or is about to join the elite whose privilege it is to 're-order' the world for the good of 'the Brotherhood of Man', which is a lie since it really means 'the Brotherhood' of the Masonic adepts. It is impossible to begin to understand what is happening without being aware that Freemasonry, then, is a deliberately slow-motion induction into the 'ancient mysteries' and the worship of Lucifer - 'the great dragon... that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world'.

Because we know and must teach this, to those who have eyes to read and ears to hear, the forces of darkness hate us: but we speak the truth. The fact that the ultimate object of worship is demonic is extensively revealed in many geomasonic writings, but one quotation, often cited, is of special importance. It is from 'The Lost Keys of Freemasonry', by the 33rd degree Mason Manly P. Hall [1923], page 48:

'When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mystery of his Craft ['craff of course being shorthand for 'witchcraff - Ed.]. The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward, he must prove his ability to properly apply [Luciferian] energy'.

The fact that this open acknowledgement is surrounded by language implying the need for compassion etc., is irrelevant: the core intention, as is very evident from Masonic Rosicrucian documents containing instructions on how to summon up the Devil himself, is Luciferian.

One dimension of this slow-motion 'coup d'etat by instalments' of the soul is 'the transmutation of personal affection into impersonal compassion' [on page 51 of the above-mentioned Masonic work], which of course induces the misguided adept into denying the God-given miracles of his personality, the very characteristics which should make him lovable and different from every other human being alive and who has ever been born.

After serial initiations, the Masonic adept becomes remote and - if perfectly possessed - completely devoid of any indication of emotion altogether. He becomes spiritually dead while still alive.

The reason for including what may appear to be this diversion here, is to prepare the ground for a reiteration of the basic explanation for the always amoral behaviour of these people which was explained in 'International Currency Review', Volume 28, Number 4, and which explains why they could not care less about the serial scams they perpetrate, believing that they are 'protected'. We refer now to the way this Luciferian elite perceives the world. Dan Quayle, the former Bush Sr. Vice-President, has been touring the United States explaining to selected audiences of financiers and investors how the Luciferian elite intends to re-order the global financial sector, driven by hedge funds. What are these, and where do their open-ended pipelines of money come from? Source of funds is never stated.

The point is that this Luciferian elite, about which more and more is becoming known today, believes (is brainwashed into believing) that its membership of adepts has the unique privilege of re-ordering the whole world. Of Tony Blair and his Fabian associates and the Islington set, it is rightly said that these people have 'solutions for every problem in the world'. They know how to solve every problem. This is why the British Prime Minister was forever coming up with mad hare-brained schemes to solve this or that intractable social problem that has been exacerbated by the negligence, the ignorance of, and the wrong-headed legislation promulgated by, the House of Commons over the years - schemes which squander taxpayers' money and come to nothing.

For instance, four years ago, the British Fabians poured money into a Strategic Rail Authority, paying colossal salaries to largely useless, unproductive employees, in the naive belief that the Authority would be empowered somehow to convert Britain's Third World railway system into a modern integrated transportation network. Now the Authority is to be abolished and replaced by a sub-department within the British Department of Transport: yet another Downing Street Plan which has gone pear-shaped, because the inept 'Useful Idiots' in charge of policymaking sought to 'do something' about an intractable problem, for short-term gain.

The directors of the New Underworld Order elite likewise believe that they are privileged and duty-bound to re-order the whole world in accordance with their own interests. And the world, according to their demonic and therefore inaccurate, misguided perception, is a wholly mechanistic world, since Man is in charge. Man is god: the ancient delusion of the serpent. Lucifer, the author of this delusion, 'allows' this lie to prosper in the hands of the deluded and misguided adept. The 'forces' which these people seek to manipulate are therefore mechanistic forces. Over 100,000 people have died in Iraq, according to 'The Lancet' (the leading British medical journal) [as of the date of this article - Ed.].

Human life, for these evil people, is expendable. They are indifferent to deaths thousands of miles away, given the success of Tavistock Institute mass programming. So, they say that the United States is inflicting pain around the world? They hurt us first and who cares.

Within this mindset there lurks the following related extrapolation. The number of Americans voting Democrat exceeds the number of Americans willing to vote for the Republican Party (GOP), by an ever-growing order of magnitude. A growing population is necessary for economic growth (reversal of the Nazi racial purity 'ethic'). How can the voting bias of immigrants be offset?

'SCRAP THE CONSTITUTION'

One answer has already been provided: dispense permanently with US 'democracy', even the rigged and manipulated decadent version thereof that is currently in place. Organise another 'Reichstag Fire', and scrap the Constitution. Activate the GULAG concentration camps that have been prepared specially for the purpose. Stick two fingers up to the Rest of the World. In other words, the Nazi component of the intelligence community shall prevail. And let's start with the equivalent of 'Die Verordnung des Reichspraesidenten zum Schutz von Volk und Staat' [The Ordnance of the President of the Reich for the Defence of the People and the State] which followed the actual Reichstag Fire set by Goring, and for which the convenient Dutch Communist, Marinus van der Lubbe, was hanged (false witness).

In a most revealing comment, the (compromised) would-be Presidential candidate, Hillary Clinton, said some time before the November 2004 election that 'you'll be freer with us'. What she meant, of course, was that if the country were to elect a Democratic Administration, there would be less need for American freedoms to be destroyed and replaced by a dictatorship. She must certainly have known that George Bush Jr.'s fellow Skull and Bones operative, Senator John Kerry, was selected so that he would deliver 'Box Gang fairness', i.e. a second term for George Bush Jr., following the two terms 'served' by the CIA operative William Jefferson Clinton.

Nor may she have been aware of the terms of the deal which, according to a sensitive source, allegedly included, as indicated earlier, the delivery of a sizeable quantity of gold bullion to accounts in favour of the Kerry family.

And, as we have also revealed, another, high-level intelligence source, alarmed and disgusted by the de facto institutionalisation of election-stealing in the United States, has revealed that Senator Kerry allegedly instructed his attorney and legal staff to destroy all evidence of electoral fraud.

Finally, when a contact spoke, earlier in the election campaign, to John Kerry in person about the prospect of such fraud taking place, the candidate appeared in no way 'phased' by the suggestion - as though he knew that the US Presidential election of 2004 would be thrown, all along.

REPUBLIC IN ITS TERMINAL PHASE?

The message for the international community in general is sombre. It must factor in the likelihood that the Republic is on its last legs and that the second Bush Jr. Administration may be preparing to scrap the American Constitution. How they plan to manage the transition from false, decayed, decadent democracy to the dictatorship they have planned, is hard to discern. But desperate men resort to desperate deeds, and these people - who are driven not merely by the demographic considerations reviewed above, but also by the imperative (from their perspective) that the serial corruption we have explored must 'never come out', as one US operative put it, are desperate indeed. ■

• On 1st December 2004, 'The Guardian' filled in for the controlled US 'mainstream' media with a report headlined 'VOTERS TO CHALLENGE US ELECTION'. The report confirmed Internet postings to the effect that voters in Ohio, dissatisfied with the curious decision by Senator Kerry to concede the overall election by agreeing that George Bush had a margin of 136,000 votes, were engaged in challenges to the outcome. Despite (the more than justified) claims of technical glitches, Mr Kerry decided that the acknowledged voting errors were not substantial enough to affect the result conceding the election on 3rd November.

But the lawyer representing voters challenging the Ohio result, Cliff Arnebeck, claimed that new analyses of various anomalies claimed that the election was rigged. It should be noted that our foregoing analysis was prepared before 'The Guardian's' report appeared on 1st December 2004, and before the recount was duly confirmed on 3rd.

'We'll be calling for a reversal of the result based on evidence developed in the course of litigation', Mr Arnebeck told 'The Guardian' on the 30th November. 'Exit polling and substantial irregularities excluded votes that should have been counted. There is evidence that votes cast for one candidate were moved to the column of the other candidate'.

Mr Arnebeck, representing a group calling itself the Alliance for Democracy, said that the 'contest of election' lawsuit was to be presented to a judge from the Ohio Supreme Court on behalf of dissatisfied voters, and that other voters and organisations were expected to join the case. The Ohio Secretary of State, Kenneth Blackwell, had not certified the result, which had to be completed by 6th December 2004, although his spokesman, Carlo LoParo, told the Associated Press that 'there are no signs of widespread irregularities' - which, translated into the vernacular, meant that 'there are clear signs of irregularities'. Clearly, with the recount ordered to be proceeded with, the authorities had to eat their words. The US lawyer told 'The Guardian' that hearings held in several Ohio cities had brought to light new evidence of malpractice. He said that one operative belonging to a pro-Republican group who had been caught in the act of destroying Democratic registration documents in Nevada before the election, had also been operating in Ohio.

An electronic voting machine in Ohio had been found to have been credited with 3,893 extra votes in a suburb of Columbus where only 638 people had voted, although State officials had said that those votes would not be included in the final certified totals. So the actual outcome of the election in Ohio had not been certified (i.e., finalised) by early December, raising a huge question mark over the sudden decision by Mr Kerry to concede the election. Did Mr Kerry allegedly fancy that he would be a fool to walk away from such a large consignment of gold?

John Kerry, allegedly a 'former' Office of Naval Intelligence agent, and a fellow initiate of the Yale-based occult Skull and Bones secret society with George W. Bush Jr, whose father is the high patriarch of Skull and Bones, is also allegedly a former Vietnam Phoenix Program (genocide) operative - as were/are the former chief of the CIA's Far Eastern Division and later Director of Central Intelligence, William Colby, who 'drowned' mysteriously in the Potomac River while out canoeing, William Casey (who later became DCI and, according to an impeccable intelligence source, committed suicide in hospital 'to protect President Reagan', contrary to the received 'line' that he died of a mysterious brain haemorrhage), Tom Ridge (the head of the Department of Homeland Security, who confirmed his resignation from that post on 30th November 2004), and the Iran-Contra figure Oliver North.

Hence, Senator Kerry was an insider's insider, so that assessments that he allegedly collaborated for reward with the Bush camp to ensure that the election was delivered into their hands, cannot be dismissed as in any way fanciful. On the contrary, such an outcome would be entirely consistent with the controlled dialectical modus operandi of the Illuminati. There are other deep connections in this context that confirm the likely accuracy of this interpretation.

'The Guardian' report elaborated that 'there have also been complaints focused on punch card ballots, of the type which caused chaos in Florida in 2000. In the 68 Ohio counties where these ballots were used in November, vote counters were unable to determine a vote for the President, but registered votes for other offices'. By Christmas, the websites covering the vote scam had been closed down. ■

ADDENDUM TWO: Global Analyst 2,2: March 2005

THE DEATH EDUCATION AGENDA

THE 'SEETHING ENERGIES OF LUCIFER'

'The Craft', as Freemasons call their abomination is short for 'witchcraft' - which, being the invention of the Devil whose 'end-product' is exclusively death, is all about death (both spiritual and corporeal). A primary sub-strategy of the Illuminati who celebrate their hegemony so openly today, is to teach children about witchcraft and death.

Death is the central preoccupation of key members of the Illuminati, whose emblem is the all-seeing eye, to be found in the truncated upper component of the pyramid on the $1.0 bill, symbol of the geo-Masonic origins and entire basis of the United States of America - a political experiment organised the European Illuminati and driven by the Political Administration Centre, established by Giuseppe Mazz-ini in Rome, which is the central locus of Illuminism, with delegations to Germany. It is perfectly evident that, whatever diversionary explanation may be fashionable at any point in time, the single all-seeing eye is the symbol of Lucifer, the god whom Masons are progressively indoctrinated into worshipping.

Because of the lies (of course) surrounding Freemasonry it is appropriate to be reminded of the accuracy of this statement. G. Mazzini's co-occultist and geomasonic conspirator was The Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, Albert Pike, the 'Patriarch' of modern US Freemasonry, who operated from Charleston, South Carolina - which remains of course the central locus of the US 'Scottish Rite' line of Freemasonry and of Pike's own creation, the phallus-oriented Palladian Rite, which links very senior self-selected Freemasons for occultic purposes. Charleston is on the 33rd parallel.

On 14th July 1889, Albert Pike circulated the 23 Supreme Councils of the Illuminati, established by Professor Adam Weishaupt, a renegade Jesuit cleric, pursuant to a contract placed by the Rothschilds in 1770. Albert Pike's letter contained the following passage: To you, Sovereign Instructors of Grade 33, we tell you: you have to repeat to the brothers of the inferior grades that we worship only one god to whom we pray without superstition. It is we, Initiated in the Supreme Grade, that are to keep the real Masonic religion preserving the pure Lucifer doctrine'.

Writing in 'The Lost keys of Freemasonry'[1], the late 33rd degree US Mason and Rosicrucian occultist, Manly P. Hall, explained to Masonic adepts that they are to embrace the 'seething energies of Lucifer'

- the 'energies' which drive the misguided men who have been unleashing mass murder upon defenceless populations, as in Iraq, where the real death toll may be approaching 300,000+. To repeat: 'When the Mason learns that the key to the warrior on the block is the proper application of the dynamo of living power, he has learned the mystery of his Craft (= witchcraft). The seething energies of Lucifer are in his hands and before he may step onward and upward (that is, downward), he must prove his ability to properly apply (demonic) energy'.

TEACHING CHILDREN ABOUT DEATH

Teaching children about death, human atrocities, witchcraft and abominations, is a central preoccupation of the Illuminati and their indoctrinated disciples and cadres, such as those who have taken over the British and American educational structures. Since these people are all influenced or driven by the 'seething powers of Lucifer', it is only to be expected that they are focused on teaching our children all about their specialist subject: death. Since, as indicated, their end-product is death, they no longer, given their view that Satan has been well and truly unleashed, bother to hide their curriculum.

The lovely teenage daughter of a US friend of the Author reports that her child was acting in a play about the Holocaust. What a perfect subject, from the 'Black' perspective of the relevant US State's clearly perverted educational bureaucracy, for a school play.

Acting is of course a highly efficient, and preferred, pathway for introctrination. The friend has reported that her daughter now has a full grasp of the horror of the Holocaust, and that her brain is, as a consequence, chock full of statistics about how many Jews and others were gassed and murdered by other means, in Auschwitz, Belsen, Sachsenhausen and all the other Nazi chambers of hell. Do these schools teach the children scripture? Sorry we asked. No Christian teaching is permitted in American public schools, and the school boards' standard line is that such teaching is 'a matter for parents'. But the real reason is that, as discussed elsewhere, the god of the United States, from its foundation, has always been the Freemasons' god, by their own admission, namely Lucifer.

Some months earlier, this conscientious USparent had protested when her daughter was being asked by the same school to act in a play called The Black Cat, adapted from a work by that dark American author Edgar Allen Poe.

The characters in this play are: Pluto (= the God of the Underworld of course, wearing black tights, leotard, ballet shoes, and a half-mask covering the eyes; A Fiend (wearing a turtleneck shirt, tight pants, socks, jazz shoes, all in greys, black and touches (of course) of red, reflecting himself as the companion of the Demon); Demon (murky red turtleneck shirt; black, tight-fitting (of course) pants; red socks; black shoes; medium length black cape lined in red); Perverseness, a sly destructive spirit (turtleneck top; tights; a flowing skirt; ballet shoes; all in greys, black and touches of red, reflecting herself as the evil companion of the Demon and countering the Fiend); and Black Cat (black tights; ballet shoes; half-mask covering eyes and black leotard with white front).

The stage set was to consist of five black music stands, five black sound scripts, greyness, blackened lighting for gallows with a hanging noose ('gallows with hanging may be a gobo or else an actually constructed set piece'). The play is all about murder, cutting the corpse into pieces, and disposing of the body. The State in which this play was being taught in schools is Iowa.

When American and British children go home, they play video games. Almost without exception, these are all devoted to the works of Satan - witches, wizards, witchcraft, necromancy, divination, vampires, magic arts and spells, murder, warfare, intergalactic garbage (elaborating on the Luciferian lie that there is life on other planets), and other abominations out of the same Satanic sewer.

When we discussed this issue recently with a politically active parent in Britain, she knew all about the current standardisation of the death theme in British schools. She reported that when parents protested locally about a poetry competition on the Holocaust given to pupils in one school, the teacher changed the subject of the poetry class to 'bullying'.

Not to anything pleasant, harmonious, constructive, creative or beautiful: but always to another manifestation of evil. It appears, therefore, that the mentality and souls of elements the public teaching profession in both countries have been systematically invaded by Satanic themes, which is to say effectively by demons, instructing them to teach the culture of death. And no-one who is in authority (in the United Kingdom) cares a damn - or is doing anything whatsoever to staunch this flood of Satanic filth which is demonising our children.

On 25th January 2005, there was a ripple of consternation in London when a UK police document revealed that 25% of boys in the United Kingdom aged between 14 and 17 years had a criminal record - which is to say, 1.7 million youths. This finding was based upon the results of an extensive survey in which teenaged boys were asked inter alia whether they had committed up to six crimes within the preceding year: evidently some 25% of the youths interviewed said that they had, even though many of their crimes were minor. These are not children of God, as used to be the case when the society was at least nominally Christian in the sense that parents feared God, but are called kids - of the goat. A goat's head is one of the symbolic images and worship objects for sodomites, Satanists and Templars - and all witchcraft practitioners.

NO KNOWLEDGE OF GOD

These children have, moreover, been brought up without any clear understanding of the difference between right and wrong, and with minimal, if any, knowledge of God and Jesus Christ. The United States is a paganist, geomasonic foundation, in which the teaching of Christianity in public schools is strictly forbidden - as befits a 'kingdom' founded by disciples of Lucifer. But the United Kingdom is not supposed to be a nation without any spiritual guidance, given that HM The Queen is head of the Church of England - albeit a Church that was founded in sin and now sinking in its own self-generated sewer of filth and decadence.

But instead of being taught about Jesus Christ, and to read Scripture - as we were in our youth, being required to 'search the scriptures', every Saturday evening at school, ready for a test on Sunday morning - British 'kids' are brought up on on Satanic videos and their natural corollary, the witchcraft books of J. K. Rowling, who, as a consequence of her extended supping with the Devil, delivered via her [Tavistock Institute-spawned] Harry Potter books, is reputed to be a billionairess[2]. This figures, indeed: Satan can make life extremely comfortable for those who obey him. By contrast, as one of our dearest US-based friends is in the habit of saying, there is no money in truth.

The deliberate orientation of school teaching, and of materials for 'kids' towards the works of darkness is - like bearing false witness - among the most heinous of all spiritual crimes, and one which the Lord condemns in wholly uncompromising language; which He also used, to teach us all to be humble and of a contrite and tender heart, like the little child he held in his arms as he spoke to His disciples: 'And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them; And said, verily, verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me'.

'But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged around his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea'.

'Woe unto the world because of offences [such as corrupting little ones]! For it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!... Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones... It is not the will of your Father which is in Heaven, that one of these little ones should perish'[3].

AN UNFORGIVABLE OFFENCE

The appropriate fate of those who pollute and corrupt the minds and souls of children with Satanic teachings, death-oriented indoctrination, occult video games, the Goth culture and other related abominations, is the product in which they deal so expertly and with such callous ruthlessness: spiritual and corporeal death. Their spiritual death has of course already occurred.

Jesus prescribed that they should all suffer the fate of being thrown over a cliff into the sea, with a millstone hung around their neck, and drowned, like the herd of swine into which he released those Gadarene demons.

For Jesus Christ to have uttered such an uncompromising statement reveals to us that the sins all these people are committing against our little ones are abominations against the Holy Spirit, worthy of no forgiveness. For the Lord specifically warned us that blasphemy against the Holy Spirit is unforgivable. These evil educational bureaucracies and those elements of the 'teaching' (read: Satanic indoctrination) profession committing and orchestrating these abominations, are eligible for no forgiveness. Obviously, their consciences have long since been 'seared with a hot iron'.

Their guiding principle is clearly that children should be introduced to the works of darkness at the earliest possible age, the objective being that impressionable young people's souls should be seared from the outset by the handiwork of Satan. Thus, they fervently and eagerly anticipate, succeeding generations will be all the more steeped in the occult - hastening the day when the true objective of the Illuminati, and indeed the main purpose of 'One World Governance', will have been achieved: namely, the hegemony of the 'ancient mysteries' of Lucifer, all the works of darkness, the summoning up of evil spirits, spiritism, divination, sorcery, necromancy, and every manner of pagan abomination.

For the perpetrators of all these evils know that they are themselves lost and en route to perdition. They are not atheists: they believe in Lucifer and his angels. Because of this spiritual awareness, their own knowledge of the horrible end that they will be suffering motivates them to try to corral the rest of humanity towards the same destiny of perdition - the crude calculation being, believe it or not, that they will be 'less lonely'. Among the Illuminati, those who practice witchcraft, and the Freemasons, an even more ludicrous delusion prevails: the idiotic lie of reincarnation. This is one of the Evil One's most egregious and fantastic deceptions - the idea that when we die, we are sure to return as someone else, later. The supposedly illuminated ones (who are guided by the false 'light' of the Prince of Darkness), and who specialise in lies for consumption by their 'brethren', actually believe this Satanic lie themselves.

In the meantime, their cadres are hyperactively seeking to corrupt our children, both to enlarge the population of occultists and the numbers of young ones available for molestation, and the overall scope of the kingdom of darkness - and to alleviate the dull, perpetual discomfort they feel as they waste their own lives in the byways of darkness, seeking by all means known to their masters, to destabilise and wreck the lives of the next generation.

In addition to which, the population of the United States alone is estimated to be some 50 million less than would be the case if abortion had not been legalised: in which case, open-ended immigration and the mixing up of the races on today's scale there, would never have become 'economically necessary'.

This Author belonged to the generation - probably the last generation - to have been taught, in his earliest years, from childhood books that rejoiced in beautiful things, both physical and spiritual, one of which contained the following little poem, read to us by our beloved Australian child minder:

'If Jesus came to my house
And knocked upon the door
I'm sure I'd be more happy than
I've ever been before'.

This reflects the words of Jesus: 'Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me'[4].

How can our little ones open the door the Him, and enjoy 'the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him'[5], when their false, deceitful teachers feed them the spiritual food of Lucifer?

Given this abomination of desolation, it is amazing how many of our beautiful children somehow emerge relatively unscathed from the Satanic onslaughts to which they are subjected nowadays from such a tender age, as a consequence of the temporary hegemony of these hate merchants. ■

References and Notes:

1. Manly P Hall, 33rd degree Mason and the notorious author of 'Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy', which contains inter alia detailed instructions on how to summon the devil, in: The Lost Keys of Freemasonry or The Secret of Hiram Abiff', Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., Richmond, VA, 1923-1976, page 48.
2. Yet she, like the rest of us 'brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can bring nothing out': First Epistle of Paul to Timothy, Chapter 6, verse 7.
3. Matthew, Chapter 18, verses 2 et seq.
4. Revelation, Chapter 3, verse 20.
5. First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, Chapter 2, verse 9: 'But as it is written, 'Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him'; quoting Isaiah, Chapter 64, verse 4: 'For since the beginning of the world, men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, 0 God, beside thee, what He hath prepared for him that waiteth for Him'.

DR ALBERT HOFMANN, THE 'FATHER OF LSD'

When Richard Cheney, the US Vice-President, needed to check into a hospital in Colorado, on 24th June 2005, he reportedly gave his name as Dr Hofmann. This was no accident: Cheney was allegedly in charge of the CIA's MK-ULTRA mind- and personality-control and behaviour modification program and/or its successor(s) at one stage of his long intelligence career. So his choice of name for hospital check-in purposes was significant as all these high-level operatives are 'Dark Actors Playing Games', and this would have been considered a dark joke, as well as having another connotation - which might have been that the Vice-President was not ill at all, but that 'Red Alert' conditions suddenly necessitated that he check into hospital. This is an old intelligence community trick: when in danger, you check yourself into a hospital (although the Author would have thought that given the reputation of certain US hospitals for not curing, but deliberately worsening, the physical condition of targeted personnel, this might not always be a sensible move).

The real Dr Hofmann was 37 years old when, on 16th April 1943, in the laboratories of Sandoz in Basle, he was conducting research into the properties of rye fungus, in a search for a cure for migraine. In the afternoon, he began to feel peculiar, and went home to lie down. 'With eyes closed', he wrote, 'I perceived an uninterrupted stream of fantastic pictures, extraordinary shapes with intense, kaleidoscopic play of colours'. Unwittingly, Dr Hofmann had taken the first-ever acid trip - having synthesised lysergic acid diethylamide (LSD) from the fungus, and had absorbed the drug through his fingertips. Cheney's choice of the name of the scientist who discovered this hallucinogen reveals that his hospital visit was an illusion. It was arranged in order to provide a venue for certain top-level secret discussions, given the presence of key intelligence cadres in Colorado. ■

ADDENDUM THREE: International Currency Review 30,1: July 2004

CERBERUS CAPITAL MANAGEMENT

A HEDGE FUND NAMED AFTER THE GUARD-DOG OF HADES

The Editor/Author was happily perusing his favourite newspaper, 'Nihon Keizai Shimbun' [12th July 2004] when his eye alighted upon an interview with Dan Quayle, the former Bush I era Vice President. What was the man who notoriously spelled 'potato' with an 'e' doing featured in this respected organ of Japanese business? The answer surprised us (momentarily), and may surprise you, too.

Dan Quayle, it transpires, is the 'shill' (front man) for yet another US international investment entity calling itself Cerberus Global Investments LLC. According to Mr Quayle, as cited by the Japanese paper, Cerberus has invested $7.0 billion in the Japanese economy over the past seven years, and has 'a long-term commitment to Japan'. The former Vice President added: 'People were sceptical several years ago when I said that. Now they firmly believe it. Because we are still here and we are going to continue to be here'. Leaving aside the implication that such investment firms 'come and go', it further transpires that Cerberus had acquired a 61% stake in the Aozora Bank, presided over by Hirokazu Mizukami, who was formerly with the Sumitomo Trust and Banking Corporation. At a shareholders' meeting held in Tokyo on 29th June 2004, several new directors were appointed, as a result of which Americans and other non-Japanese executives gained a majority of the seats on the Board. Among these are Lawrence Lindsay, President Bush It's former Chief Economic Adviser (who left the White House in tandem, more or less, with the former US Treasury Secretary, Paul O'Neill, whose experiences and sceptical observations were the subject of a biography by Ron Suskind: see Figure 94 page 607). 'We have six official Board Meetings a year - five in Tokyo and one in New York', added Mr Quayle helpfully. So these board meetings are his 'cover' for frequent visits to Japan.

Mr Quayle, the 44th US Vice President, comes from Indiana, having graduated from Huntington High School in 1965, after which he attended the obscure DePauw University. In July 1971, Dan Quayle became an investigator for the Consumer Protection Division of the Indiana Attorney General's Office. But his time beating the streets didn't last long: within months, he was an administrative assistant to the Indiana Governor du jour, Edgar Whitcomb. In 1973-74, he was the Director of the Inheritance Tax Division of the Indiana Department of Revenue. He also served in the Indiana National Guard, during which time he earned a law degree at Indiana University. After receiving his degree in 1974, Mr Quayle worked as an associate publisher of his family's local newspaper, The Huntington Herald-Press', and practiced law with his wife in Huntington. It is interesting to note that this city was, at the time, and has reportedly remained, a notorious centre of occult activity and Satanism.

In 1976, Dan Quayle was elected for the Fourth Congressional District of Indiana to the US Congress. He won re-election in 1978 by the largest percentage margin ever achieved to that date in that district. In 1980, aged just 33, Mr Quayle became the youngest person ever elected to the US Senate from the State of Indiana. He was re-elected in 1986. At the Republican National Convention in New Orleans (August 1988), George H. W Bush (Sr.) called upon Mr Quayle to become his Vice Presidential candidate. It is believed that his electoral success, record and photogenic popularity helped Mr Bush Sr. to win the election, having at the time of the Convention been trailing 15 points behind the Democrats, according to opinion polls taken prior to the Convention.

Throughout his time as Vice President, Mr Quayle was widely ridiculed by the media and some of the general public as a mental lightweight who was prone to verbal gaffes (as was and are George Bush Sr. and Jr.), reflecting (we suspect) the fact that such operatives reach high status only after MK-Ultra-type mind-manipulation. The most notorious of these gaffes was Mr Quayle's correction of a pupil's spelling of potato, to read potatoe, at an elementary school spelling lesson in Trenton, NJ, on 15tn June 1992. When this story is related, it is usually omitted that Mr Quayle was relying upon a spelling card on which the word had been (deliberately?) misspelled by the semi-literate teacher. Another remark that has been attributed to the former Veep is that, when he heard that he was required to travel to Latin America, he exclaimed: 'I knew I should have boned up on my Latin'.

Dan Quayle is styled an 'adviser' to Cerberus Capital Management, according to biographies, whereas the Japanese paper and other sources refer to the company as Cerberus Global Investments LLC (as indicated). 'The Nation', of 3rd April 2003, described Cerberus Capital Management as 'a US investment fund that has spent more than $2.0 billion snatching up bankrupt Asian enterprises, and [that] recently opened a Washington office to invest in homeland security companies'.

Cerberus has been variously described as a 'vulture fund' which specialises in acquiring near-bankrupt companies, and the 12th-largest hedge-fund management firm in the United States, with $9.0 billion worth of assets. It employs Quayle & Associates, based in Scottsdale, AZ, through which the former US Vice President provides his advisory services. According to Craig Whitney, Executive Vice President of Quayle & Associates, Mr Quayle provides strategic advice to Cerberus 'and has the title of Chairman of Cerberus Global Investments' ['Detroit Free Press', 23rd June 2004].

On 19th July 2004, the 'Sacramento Business Journal' reported that GenCorp Inc., of Rancho Cordova, was selling its automobile parts business, GDX Automotive, to Cerberus Capital Management LP for $147 million in cash. The publication asserted that 'Cerberus is a hedge fund that has made or explored investments in a very wide variety of industries, from airlines and media to mobile homes and financial services. A 'Business Week' report last week called it the 12th-largest hedge fund and put its value at $9 billion' which we believe to be a gross underestimate. 'Some have characterised the fund as a "vulture capitalist" for its penchant for swooping down upon distressed companies as investment opportunities. A judge overseeing the bankruptcy case of Air Canada has approved a plan for a unit of Cerberus to buy a 9% stake in the airline for $189 million, pending the approval of creditors. Cerberus is also one of a cluster of investment groups said to be eyeing United Airlines'. The newspaper report continued: 'Cerberus is rumoured to be the investment company with which Lord (Conrad) Black is negotiating over the fate of Hollinger Inc., the Toronto-based newspaper company in which he owns a controlling interest'. ['Business Week' further reported that] 'Cerberus has been among the most active hedge funds in lobbying against new proposals to regulate the industry, including moves that would allow the Securities and Exchange Commission to review their investment strategies and check on whether they are following securities laws'.

Cerberus was reported have hired the politically connected law firm of Patton Boggs LLP to lobby for it in Washington. 'Sacramento Business Journal' added that 'Patton Boggs reportedly arranged a meeting held on 10th June between the Chairman of the Securities and Exchange Commission [SEC], William Donaldson, and former Vice President Dan Quayle, who is the chairman of the hedge fund's private-equity arm, Cerberus Global Investment'.

A separate 'Business Week' report [of 19th July 2004] stated that 'Cerberus, with the help of Patton Boggs, even attempted to persuade the House Appropriations Committee to tie William Donaldson's hands completely' - a reference to the new rules which would require the SEC to review all hedge funds' investment strategies and to evaluate their compliance with the SEC's regulations.

It transpired that in June, Cerberus sought to have a restriction attached to the SEC's fiscal 2005 budget that would prevent the SEC from using tax dollars to enforce the intended new rules on hedge funds. The report noted that the US Senate Banking Committee Chairman, Richard C Shelby, had received $133,000 from hedge funds and their law firms 'in the current electoral cycle', at least $79,500 of it from Cerberus officials and their spouses. The report added that in mid-June, the House Financial Services Committee Chairman, Michael G. Oxley, whose committee oversees the SEC, 'got wind of the manoeuver and fired off a letter to the appropriations panel arguing that it was not right to bypass him on such an important matter. The restriction was never formally proposed, but hedge funds may still try to block Donaldson when the Senate acts on the Commission's budget. Cerberus officials and Patton Boggs did not return repeated telephone calls asking for comment'. So what has been going on?

PLACEMENT, AND NO QUESTIONS ASKED

No-one ever asks what the original sources of these hedge funds' financial streams are. The question should always be asked: What is the source of funds? You will have noticed that any proposed 'regulation' of the funds that has been mooted would not ask that question, either. All the SEC appears to be concerned about is whether investors in these funds use acceptable strategies, and whether SEC rules are adhered to. Even so, it might be most uncomfortable to have US officials crawling all over the books. Suppose the sources of investment flows-of-funds may, shall we say, be of an 'unsavoury nature'. If that were so, then the main consideration governing their management would be placement, not the rate of return. Hence the quality of a given asset would matter less than the 'investment opportunity' itself. The problem facing controllers, e.g., of drug proceeds, is always how to launder the cash as fast as possible.

If we were talking about the placement of underworld flows, then Cerberus would be the perfect name for a conduit suitable for such a purpose. For Cerberus was the monstrous watch-dog with 50 heads and a voice of bronze (that is to say, a voice like one who is possessed with devils) who guarded the hideous gate of the Kingdom of Hades, in Greek mythology. Sometimes Cerberus had only three heads. Sometimes he bristled with serpents and his evil mouth dribbled black venom. Once a visitor had passed Hades' guard-dog, he could never re-emerge. Now why, do you imagine, any sane person would name a hedge fund after such a notoriously hellish underworld monster? Mark Neporent, the Chief Operating Officer at Cerberus, did not respond to questions put to him by 'Detroit Free Press'. ■

ADDENDUM FOUR: International Currency Review 30,2/3: February 2005

BUSH ON THE COUCH

THE CONTROVERSY SURROUNDING BUSH JR.

The truly unprecedented uncertainty into which the whole world has been thrown by developments in the United States, and by the conversion of Britain and America into disturbers of the global peace in stark contrast to the previously received international perception of these two leading nations as paragons of 'democratic virtue', is further exacerbated by controversy surrounding the character of the President of the United States himself.

Since your correspondent has the highest regard for the intuitive capabilities of certain women, it is appropriate here to record that when George W. Bush Jr. was first 'elected', a married female American friend of the Editor expressed extreme dismay and concern, notwithstanding her Republican and Texan roots, indicating her fear that Mr Bush may turn out to be dangerous, or worse. Your correspondent had earlier been impressed by Laura Bush's statement in a pre-election interview in which she had been asked about her husband's 'religion', that 'in 1988 a friend gave him a 'One-Year Bible' (viz., a Bible in which the readings are divided into 365 sessions, one for each day of the year) 'and he has been reading it ever since'. Given the gross, pagan debauchery characteristic of the Clinton period, this seemed to your correspondent to represent a considerable improvement. However it appears that the Editor's friend was much more perceptive.

Work on George W. Bush's personality and psychological make-up has been carried out remotely by an American psychoanalyst and psychotherapist, Dr Justin A. Frank, and presented in his book, published many months prior to the 2004 Presidential Election, 'Bush on the Couch: Inside the Mind of the President' [Regan Books, New York, NY 2004]. Dr Frank's careful and candid analysis of the President's mind concludes that this man displays and has exerted an innate ability and tendency 'to exert his destructive power on the world', and that he may turn out to be extremely dangerous.

THE PRESIDENT'S ALLEGED INTERNAL CONFLICTS

Dr Frank interprets Bush's mentality by reference to an endless internal battle that he perceives the President endures trying to cope with his anxieties. The author is not a Christian: in fact it is clear that he is, as one might expect, an atheist. He therefore excludes altogether any reference to possible occult influences in this President's life - a serious omission, given that open reports indicate that they may permeate the family from which he sprang.

The gravity of this omission is all the more serious given allegations that George W. Bush Jr. was allegedly present at an occultic event years ago at which a number of the participants lost their lives. Nor is there any reference in this work to voluminous evidence of alleged criminal wrongdoing by members of this powerful family, let alone to widely alleged paedophilia and homosexuality.

Among the characteristics of this nevertheless engaging President's background and psychological make-up which Dr Frank highlights, are these:

- The influence of the privileged, secretive family into which he was born, and its decisive impact on his view of the world, including a very simplistic Ariosophist division of the world into good and evil.
- The lasting influence that early fantasies and hurt feelings may have had on his precepts.
- The prevalence of aggressive tendencies, and the sometimes sadistic ways they are unfortunately expressed in his behaviour.
- His attempts to seek escape from his internal turmoil through substance abuse (mainly alcohol in the past), exercise and pre-packaged 'religion'.
- His relationships with authority figures, both individual and institutional.
- Impaired abilities to mourn, to admit responsibility and to know himself, all of which Dr Frank says are necessary for psychological growth.
- His unwillingness to be, let alone to admit to being wrong, or to consider divergent perspectives.
- Inconsistencies between his words and actions.
- Inconsistencies between his words and truth.

President Bush seems to recognise that he is an oddity, as he is on record as having remarked: 'Don't spend a lot of time trying to figure me out... I'm just not into psychobabble'. Much the most commendable characteristic of Dr Frank's book, however, is the clarity of the plain English in which it is written, and thus the absence of psychobabble, which makes it instantly accessible.

THE EARLY BEREAVEMENT

Indicative of George W. Bush's impaired psychological background is what happened after George, who was the eldest child, discovered retrospectively that his little sister, Robin, who had been diagnosed with leukaemia in the spring of 1953, had died. Unaware that Robin was ill, he was simply ordered not to play with the sister to whom he had become close, on her occasional visits home from long, unexplained absences. After Robin had died in New York in October 1953, her parents spent the next day golfing in Rye, and then returned to Houston. There was never any 'closure' for George Bush.

Mrs Barbara Bush has evidently written revealingly about her experiences as both a mother and a child, so that Dr Frank possessed ample information about her history. Referred to by her offspring as 'the Enforcer', Barbara Bush has by her own admission always been the family disciplinarian. Called "the one who instills fear" by a close family friend, she would boldly break up fights between her sons, "bust them up and slap them around", according to a brother-in-law. In later years, Mrs Bush has not lost her willingness to display her own aggressive tendencies before the whole world. For instance, many observers, including Dr Frank, were stunned when she told viewers during an interview in 2004 on the prime-time US TV show 'Larry King Live' that 'you can criticise me, but don't criticise my children and don't criticise my daughters-in-law and don't criticise my husband, or you're dead'.

Sensitive US observers whom we respect most, and your correspondent himself, did not believe this outburst to be a mere figure of speech. In Britain, it is a criminal offence to utter threats. Apparently this is not the case in the United States - a fact which illustrates a telling distinction between the two civilisations. (We all thought she really meant it). The author reveals that Mrs Bush was herself treated harshly by her 'striking beauty' of a mother, who paid little attention to the normal aspects of maternal life associated with traditional nurturing. The impression gained is that of distance between mother and daughter, a condition that Mrs Bush clearly passed on in her own family. (There is evidence that Barbara Bush may be the illegitimate daughter of Aleister Crowley, as not only is her physical resemblance to Crowley striking, but her wayward mother is known to have strayed from the family home and stayed with that ogre in France. This would explain the "cold blood" in her veins).

A LOT TO LIKE ABOUT GEORGE W. BUSH

Dr Frank relieves all the initial gloom by observing that 'there's a lot to like about George W. Bush. Even his detractors during the 2000 campaign praised his humour, humility and general affability. His playful friendliness and informality have often disarmed his many critics and charmed the media; he winks and kids around, jokes with reporters on the campaign trail, and peppers his unprepared remarks with great humour'. The psychoanalyst's own researches suggest that children who lose a sibling may react by taking it upon themselves to cheer up their grieving mother, whose hair turned white during the years after the loss of Robin, and whose pain at the child's loss, Dr Frank believes, was conveyed in spades to George through a stern, restricting facial expression.

George Bush Jr. was known as 'Bushtail', always on the go - a condition that today would arouse suspicions of hyperactivity. This may have reflected, in part, the child's need to externalise his own unintegrated anxieties. 'Complex thinking cannot take place if the child is unable to regulate his feelings. The child [who is] consumed by negative feelings, or distracted by the enormous effort required to handle them with merely primitive psychological tools, can't get beyond his desperate need to manage his unmanageable anxiety; thus overwhelmed, the child may experience any external input as excessive. The premium placed on internal order may thus leave no room for growth'.

Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder (ADHD) ranks today as the most common neurobehavioural childhood disorder, according to the American Academy of Paediatrics. Dr Frank noted 'that much of what we know of the adult Bush's work habits and mental practices conforms to various indicators of ADHD. The two worst problems for adults with this condition are impulsiveness and craving.

'Impulsive behaviour is often mistaken for decisiveness, but in reality the quick decision is often made because the individual is too impatient to sustain his attention long enough to read all the information, or else too uncomfortable at the prospect of complex thought to weigh things sufficiently. A 'U.S. News and World Report' mentioned Mr Bush's aides during his first term as saying that he 'never agonises over decisions, preferring to gather information, make a decision, and move on'.

The psychoanalyst notes that the President 'is known for keeping a strictly regimented daily routine, in which short, heavily scheduled workdays with brief meetings are punctuated by regular breaks for exercise. Some would praise this as evidence of a disciplined mind, but it points equally to a desire to minimise the impact of a short attention span, and to avoid the impulsive behavior that can otherwise result. As the commentators Eric Alterman and Mark Green have both reported, Mr Bush's 'advisors have admitted that the staff usually limits him to just three or four 30- to 45-minute 'policy time' sessions per week, about what Bill Clinton engaged in per day. Then, more often than not, the President sloughs off responsibility with the admonishment, "You guys decide it"'.

STICKING OUT HIS TONGUE

The book has a mass of revealing information about Bush's impulsive behaviour. As Governor of Texas, having summoned a Forestry Service official to the podium to talk about forest fires by shouting 'Tree man, get up here!', Bush looked round at the journalists while he talked, 'stuck out his tongue and made a funny face by puffing up his cheeks like a blowfish'. The author points out that such impulsive, hair-trigger responses to real and perceived threats are common with people with ADHD, who often act before determining whether the threat they perceive is in fact genuine.

They also tend to do the opposite - responding to feeling threatened by choosing to hide or to escape. Thus Bush dabbled in many things before arriving at Harvard Business School, by which time he 'had a taste of many different jobs but none of them ever seemed to fit'.

In his examination of the President's personality, the author stresses that his behaviour is highly relevant because of the political ramifications - which, we would add, the whole world is about to see. 'His defensive measures not only reflect conflicts within his character; they can also cause serious problems that can have a severe impact on the quality of his leadership - and on the quality of our lives'.

People who have known Mr Bush in the past have often said that while he appeared to be affable, in fact his affability hides a distance. 'As an intelligent person whose access to his intelligence was hampered by disabilities, Bush compensated for his flaws by developing other talents, such as his sense of humor and his uncanny ability to memorize names and faces. People with untreated ADHD can have difficulty functioning as members of a social group, because they find it hard to follow substantive discussion and social interaction', as Mr Bush's first Treasury Secretary, Paul O'Neill, discovered whenever he appeared for his weekly briefings with the President. Mr O'Neill noticed at once that Mr Bush was not in the slightest interested in anything he had to say, and that he suffered from EGO (Eyes Glaze Over) throughout their meetings.

Thanks to the diligence of Dr Frank, we now know that Mr O'Neill's experiences with the President reflected Mr Bush's short attention-span associated with his ADHD. The author elaborates: 'Finding it too hard to grasp thoughts coming from multiple directions', ADHD sufferers 'often resort to telling jokes and disrupting the proceedings; they content themselves with being one of a group of fun-loving people, and avoid more serious interaction'. So, as a consequence, Paul ONiell was asked in December 2002 to 'activate' the presigned resignation letter which every high office-holder in the United States is required to sign as a condition of his appointment.

An ambitious child with ADHD has to be a leader in order to be a group member, otherwise he can't be heard, since in a subordinate position no-one would take his outbursts seriously. And indeed, with this man, they need to. Sometimes, it appears that it is not George W. Bush, but something else that is speaking. For instance, on 11th May 2001, he pronounced in Washington that 'there's no question that the minute I got elected, the storm clouds on the horizon were getting nearly directly overhead'. The Author would agree. And on 13th August 2002, speaking at Waco, Texas, Mr George Bush Jr. remarked:'

T firmly believe the death tax is good for people from all walks of life throughout our society'.

Reverting to the child-rearing dimension of nis studies, Dr Frank speaks of the importance of the breaking and repairing of bonds, which is an essential and normal component of child rearing.

'In healthy relationships, a pattern is established where the mother understands the pain and shame she has caused, helping the child to regulate his own feelings over time. But hyperactivity can get in the way of this process. Bush's attitudes suggests that his childhood involved little experience of breaking and repairing; his inability to express contrition, or admit wrongdoing, bespeaks a profound need to deny the possibility of his shame'.

The basic rhythm of 'breaking and repairing' also teaches the child that a negative experience can be followed by something positive; in the process, the child learns to tolerate the bad without having to react violently. But, says Dr Frank ominously, 'this also seems to be missing from Mr Bush's repertoire. When a child doesn't experience relief from his distress, he frequently reacts by defiantly denying outside help or influence, developing a false, grandiose sense of independence'.

GRANDIOSITY AND CARDBOARD FIGURES

Enter the condition of grandiosity which, along with shame, Dr Frank says are symptoms of the learning-disabled person's inability to construct an internal world that reflects the complexities of life. 'Such a child's inner world must be simple, because complexity causes anxiety; when shame is unresolved, compensatory grandiose self-images are allowed to thrive, and magical thinking spawns unrealistic notions that flourish unchallenged'. Accordingly the material world is simplified to conform to the person's internal worldview.

This oversimplified grasp of reality implies that the President's world is populated by cardboard figures who are either enemies or friends ('doing a good job'). Bush's notorious references to GRU-President Putin - a ruthless military intelligence officer - have been alarming. Specifically, the President said that he had seen into Putin's soul when looking into his eyes, as a result of which experience his impression of Putin was positive. However anyone looking into Putin's soul had better beware; and looking into his eyes would probably be ill-advised, as well.

Bush wrapped up this assessment by asserting that Putin was 'willing to wear a cross', the implication being that this covert Leninist liar must be a 'good man' if he's wearing a cross. In fact, wearing crosses is one of the more grotesque mini-deceptions perpetrated by the covert Soviet Leninists who have been masquerading as 'reformed' characters these past 15 years. Thus the late Raisa Gorbachev wore a very large cross, even though she and her husband were professed agnostics, and Gorbachev is a Jew with a family name of Orbach or Korbach. Stalin II, as MVD Eduard Shevardnadze, the Soviet gauleiter of Georgia, was referred to, had himself christened 'St George', for some reason no-one could ever fathom. The false churchman doing the 'christening' was the Catholicos-Patriarch Ilya II of Georgia, who has been a prominent KGB operative since 1962.

An alarming corollary to Mr Bush's habit of gross oversimplification when judging between 'enemies' and 'friends' is that this characteristic was integral with the Ariosophical outlook which formed a key component of the psychological environment within which Nazism took root and thrived. Hitler's early years in Vienna were disturbed by his dislike of the chaotic polyglot capital city of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, where so many minorities and Jews cohabited. The antithesis to that thesis was the 'pure Aryan' Germany across the border.

President George W. Bush has demonised the Iranian Islamic regime, which is [as was the case at the time] controlled by an Azerbaijani (President Khatami), masquerading as an Iranian, just as Tehran has demonised the United States as 'the great Satan'. Hundreds of thousands, if not millions, may die as a consequence of these dangerous oversimplifications.

THE FORMER ALCOHOLIC

Dr Frank next tackles the question of Bush's 'former' alcoholism, beginning with the question: is he still drinking? The author is uncertain about this, noting a number of occasions when the President's speech has sounded slow and excessively deliberate, in the way that certain secret drinkers sometimes talk to hide their inebriation. Just before the start of the Iraq War, Tom Shales wrote in The Washington Post', astonishingly, that 'the President may have been ever so slightly inebriated'. On other occasions, the President appears to have made up stuff (confabulation); and examples are mentioned. Confabulation 'is a common phenomenon among drinkers, as is perseveration, which is evident in Bush's tendency to repeat key words and phrases, as if the repetition helps him to keep calm and stay on track'.

On balance, however, Dr Frank comes to the conclusion that President Bush is what is known in his trade as a 'dry drunk' - someone whose alcoholism has not been treated, but has been supplanted by another addiction. Dr Frank asserts that in President Bush's case the 'replacemenf addiction is 'religion', which Mr Bush 'got' after a walk with the 'Rev' Billy Graham (allegedly a 33rd Degree Mason!) on the beach at Kennebunkport in 1985.

Whether this 'conversion' has any basis in reality we strongly question. Evangelism is ngt the way to find Christ. The Billy Graham way of suddenly committing oneself to Jesus Christ has been found to be almost wholly useless: apparently less than 5% of those who 'choose for Chrisf at Billy Graham-type sessions, remain committed in their new faith. True commitment comes though Faith, leading to Grace, which in turn leads to the reading of Scripture and thence changes in attitude and way of life.

In Mr Bush's case, it is much more likely that the 'born-again' religion that he supposedly clings to represents the replacement addiction for his alcoholism. The fact that as Governor he presided over more executions than any other Governor in US history is entirely inconsistent with True Christianity, even though Texans often justify this behaviour as being authorised by the Old Testament. But in reality, the Old Testament was torn up when the veil of the Temple was rent in twain, and was replaced by the New Testament, or Will - which no more sanctions the taking of human life than do the Ten Commandments. Under any circumstances.

On the other hand, there is nothing inherently unnatural about Mr Bush's reported reliance on his faith for 'protection'. According to the atheist Dr Frank, 'the faith that comes from identification with an omnipotent figure restores a sense of inner peace, protecting the believer from feelings of helplessness or powerlessness'.

This cynical observation is included here merely because it forms part of Dr Frank's diagnosis: as an atheist, he has, of course, no knowledge of 'the peace of God which passeth all understanding' [Philipp-ians Chapter 4, verse 7]. In this crucial respect, his analysis fails to encapsulate or to reveal the full truth about George W Bush and his background. Thus, Dr Frank's refusal to take account of the spiritual dimension ensures that he overlooks the crucial influence of Skull and Bones upon the mentality and inner makeup of all the key Bush males. Given that the Senior Year for 'Bonesmen' consists primarily of a crash course of indoctrination into Luciferianism, risking infestation or possession, this is a serious omission.

TERRORISM - THE REVOLUTIONARY ALIBI

The world of invisible terrorist threats, from a cynical, bogus international intelligence fabrication called Al-Qaeda, lends itself to the kind of grotesque mental oversimplification which Dr Frank diagnoses as characteristic of the President's mentality. It doesn't matter who the enemy is - the 'former' CIA operative 'Tim Osman' morphed into Osama Bin Laden, the spooky scourge of humanity posing in a bathrobe and a beard whose appearance in planted videos made, it is alleged, in Las Vegas, is reiterated whenever the scareism propaganda needs to be ratcheted up to mask a particular nasty incident associated with the global gang warfare called the intensified intelligence war; or Saddam Hussein; or terrorists in general. No matter, Mr Bush Jr. is enabled by his faith to see himself as the force of light against darkness. The problem with this chronic delusion is that the President presides over a regime of pitch darkness, elements of which are re-exposed in this presentation.

No-one who has been exposed to the swirling lies, evasions, barrages of diversionary "lines" and disinformation surrounding 9/11 and the 'war on terrorism' - which was being 'waged' internationally three decades and more ago, after the Soviets relaunched the global terrorism dimension of the World Revolution - believes a word that the US authorities have ever said about Osama Bin Laden.

The President no longer mentions him, of course, because, as Michael Ruppert, a US police and intelligence investigator and author, says, in his book 'Crossing the Rubicon: The Decline of the American Empire and the End of the Age of Oil' [New Society Publishers, Gavriola Islands, BC, Canada, 2004, ISBN 0-86571-540-8], 'Bin Laden was, and remains, a CIA/US Government/Wall Street asset. That would explain why he has never been caught. There are still wars to fight'.

'He can't be caught for a variety of other reasons, including his family's enormous and diverse financial connections to the same elites that control the United States' financial system, and his close interrelationship with a Saudi ruling class that could pull the plug on the US economy.... Osama Bin Laden also knows way too much, and without him, the Bush Administration would have had no excuse for any of what it has done over the last four years. From a strategic point of view, Osama is Dick Cheney's best friend'.

Some 40,000 people did not turn up for work at the World Trade Center on 11th September 2001, unless far more people lost their lives (were sacrificed) than we have been told. Your correspondent discovered in late October 2001 that the smell of rotting flesh was nauseating even as far away as our Midtown Manhattan offices, so there remains a suspicion in his mind that the numbers actually murdered were far larger than reported. Our attempts to obtain a list of the tenants of the Twin Towers from their owners, Silverstein Properties, were unproductive. And did you know that the damage inflicted internally at the World Trade Center in 1993, when the first 'Reichstag Fire' operation at the huge office complex was attempted, was never repaired? On the contrary, the damaged basement area was left unattended, placed out of bounds by a police cordon. Someone had evidently decided that it would be a waste of money to repair the area.

We wonder why. It is extraordinary (though typical of all US political scandals) that the perpetrators of this 'Reichstag Fire' event have succeeded, with impunity, in orchestrating the presentation of events so confusingly, and despite so many 'smoking gun' clues that there was inside official complicity.

NEW LIES FOR OLD: SCIONS OF THE LAW WHO THINK THEY TRANSCEND IT

So far. We need not reiterate here the wealth of open information about the large Bush family's allegedly 'dodgy' background. Dr Frank covers this point well in a single sentence (although he does nave much more to say on this subject): 'Bush was bom into a family that was simultaneously of the law and above it, steadily accruing power to legislate even as its actions moved further from the law'. And the family's true attitude to opposition was encapsulated in the threat uttered by Mrs Barbara Bush during that notorious televised interview on 'Larry King Live'.

Innumerable works have been published which explore the Bush 'crime' family's background. But the US historian Kevin Phillips has summarised all this in his book 'American Dynasty', described by Dr Frank as 'a damning and invaluable historical look at the familial influences on our President's psyche'. 'Four generations of building towards dynasty', Mr Phillips observes, 'have infused the Bush family's hunger for power and practices of crony capitalism with a moral arrogance and backstage disregard for the democratic and republican traditions of the US Government'. Well, of course: if one's primary preoccupation as an alleged hyperactive serial criminalist, apart from the further accumulation of wealth, may be to guarantee one's own protection against arrest, indictment and disgrace, who cares about the United States' traditions or the Constitution?

Several authors have concentrated on this President's inability to distinguish fact from fiction, i.e. his propensity to lie, which has been reviewed in a number of recent books. David Corn (who may be an intelligence operative, representing here an anti-Bush faction), the author of one of them, 'The Lies of George W. Bush', writes thus: 'So constant is [Mr Bush's] fibbing, that a history of his lies offers a close approximation of the history of his Presidential tenure'. Mr Corn says that the President's tendency to be 'economical with the truth' is or was masked by the 'honest-man routine' which characterised his election campaign in 2000: but 'a candidate who rises to power by denouncing the lies of others, warrants more attention when he himself engages in dishonest behavior'.

[Author This is 'rich', coming from an alleged intelligence operative whose own background in US intelligence will have been dominated by the culture of lying which is at the root of all the United States' myriad problems. Moreover all CIA operatives know perfectly well that occupants of the highest positions are controlled operatives, with intelligence handlers who tell them what to do, and what lies to disseminate, and when. President Bush Jr has been observed listening to his handler speaking into a hidden micro-microphone, or reading prompt cards prepared by his handlers].

When Dr Frank looks into this dimension of the President's behaviour, we discover something else disturbing; that he evidently doesn't care -just as he doesn't care about the [now 650,000] Iraqi dead, the untold numbers of dead Afghanis, and the 150+ Texans for whose executions he is responsible.

'The ease and frequency with which Bush misrepresents the truth', writes Dr Frank, 'gain new resonance when seen in the context of a personality that considers itself exempt from the laws that govern others. Why doesn't he tell the truth? Because he doesn't have to. Mr Bush gets away with lying not because he is good at it - he's not - but because in his formulation there's nothing to get away with: the laws of accuracy mean little or nothing to him'.

In this respect, there is of course little to choose in this respect between the lying former President Clinton - his fellow 'Box Gang' operative - and George Jr.

But it gets worse: 'In this light, his simplified worldview is especially important. His capacity to identify and convey the truth relies upon a mental apparatus so primitive and misguided that he may well be unable to recognize his limitations and mistakes. Though there's no way of knowing for sure - even for him - we have seen enough of his personality to suspect that he may actually believe many of his own dubious claims; encumbered by a self-serving, underdeveloped way of seeing the world, he simply lacks the tools to differentiate telling lies from speaking the truth'.

Or, in other words, he 'can't help it'.

The analysis then considers some of the large litany of instances in which President Bush has defied the authority of truth. The author cited the instance of his military service and his profitable sale of Harken Energy stock in 1990, allegedly with the benefit of insider information. 'He compounded his dishonesty by offering conflicting explanations and ultimately misrepresenting the conclusion of his run-in with authority, claiming to have been exonerated in correspondence from the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) that specifically said this was not the case'.

The technique of offering a large number of conflicting explanations to explain an act of wrongdoing appears to have been learned from his own father, George Bush Sr. According to analysts, Mr Bush Sr. used this device following the 'October Surprise' operation, under which the Iranians accepted $35 million in bribes (after some $27 million of the CIA's bribery cash had been stolen by US actives engaged in the scam) in exchange for their agreement not to release the 52 American hostages captured in Tehran on 4th November 1979 until after the US Presidential Election scheduled for exactly one year later (4th November 1980) - in order to guarantee the humiliation and defeat of the then-Democratic President Jimmy Carter, and the victory of Ronald Reagan and George Bush Sr.

The analysts say that Bush Sr. had, by August 2003, offered as many as seven different and conflicting explanations as to where he was during a 'missing' 18-hour period, when he was flown to Paris for the negotiations and returned by supersonic aircraft to the United States before his absence could be noticed (which, however, it was).

INFLICTING PAIN WITHOUT FLINCHING

In a terrifying chapter called 'The Smirk', Dr Frank exposes the President's sadism. 'Long before he led our nation into war, George W. Bush exhibited an appetite for destruction. As a child, Bush inserted firecrackers into the bodies of frogs, lighting the fuses and blowing the creatures up. As President of his fraternity at Yale, he used a branding iron to maim young pledges'. This was, in fact, a reference to the fact that initiates of the occult secret society Skull and Bones at Yale are branded in the small of the back with the letter 'D', which stands inter alia for the Greek occultist Demosthenes, who committed suicide at an altar there in 322 BC (322 being of course the occult kabbalistic number of Skull and Bones - as well as (significantly) the area code for Brussels, the financial seat of the Illuminati, and the home of its invention, the European Union Collective, controlled by the German Nazi Continuum -Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau. The Author holds financial several transaction documentary records for the Illuminati which are distinguished by codes that include the numerals 322.

Bush Jr. characterised the hazing operation of 'branding each initiate just above and in between the buttocks [sic] with the red-hot tip of a wire coathanger' as equivalent to 'only a cigarette burn'.

Dr Frank's findings on this score can be summarised as follows: 'As the Governor of Texas, he was observed smirking over the executions of death-row inmates, many of whom were later found to have received inadequate legal protection'.

'Bush's tendencies toward sadism now play out on a bigger stage, with more resounding results. He orders bombings in Baghdad and proudly shows off the horrifying photographs of the bodies of Saddam's sons - almost daring the world to look away. He gets an even larger audience for the video footage of Saddam Hussein's humiliation in captivity, and then demonstrates a very personal sense of triumph at his capture, and glee at the prospect of his execution'.

The US President's trademark smirk, writes Dr Frank, 'makes his sadism easy to spot. In the Presidential debate of 2000, he displayed pleasure at the prospect of three Texas criminals being put to death: 'Guess what? The three men who murdered James Byrd, guess what's going to happen to them? They're going to be put to death'.

This odious public remark, made without flinching, further illuminates Mrs Barbara Bush's threat to Larry King, doesn't it? At once arrogant and cowardly, that comment, accompanied by the smirk, put the whole world on notice that the act of inflicting pain - and the 'good' fortune of having a job that allowed him to do so within the laws of the State - brought Governor Bush a certain pleasure that he was unable to prevent himself from expressing.

Why then, has there been such surprise at the heinous atrocities perpetrated by CIA operatives and Agency contractors in Abu Ghraib (and in innumerable other locations in Afghanistan, Jordan and on the British territory of Diego Garcia), at the 650,000 deaths in Iraq [updated figure: as of October 2006, according to The Lancet] and at the craven, boastful brutality and barbarism of US forces, as they work overtime to make America more 'feared' around the world? The United States is led by a man who, like all Luciferians, is able to 'inflict pain without flinching', a man of fire and 'peak of anger'.

Dr Frank's verdict is damning indeed:

The Bush smirk conveys both the pleasure he derives from inflicting pain, and the defense he mounts against the discovery of that pleasure - a disclosure of the sadistic impulse, and an attempt to deny the destructive self he cannot bear to acknowledge'.

Dr Frank is fearful, and so is the Author, that this man could lead the world into the Third World War. He will, the psychoanalyst asserts, engage 'the nation both as agent and victim in a perilous psy-chodrama that rages far beyond his control'.

THE MEANING OF HIS 'BUSHISMS': AN OEDIPUS WRECK

As for Bush's 'Bushisms' - his convoluted misuse of language, his malapropisms - they can be and have been extensively mined for laughs: one can buy calendars with a Bushism a day for a few dollars. But Dr Frank says that his verbal gaffes and blunders are 'symptomatic of a patient in dire need of help'. Yet, as noted earlier, some of these verbal faux-pas seem to convey what the President actually means, as in: 'Security is the essential roadblock to achieving the road map to peace'; or: 'There's no doubt in my mind that we should allow the world's worst leaders to hold America hostage, to threaten our peace, to threaten our friends and allies with the world's worst weapons'; or: 'We need an energy bill mat encourages consumption'.

To these Freudian slips the President adds other familiar verbal distortions - the bland repetition of phrases (as noted), techniques to deflect questions, evasive answers, the loss of coherence in tangential speech. Closer inspection 'reveals that Bush doesn't just struggle with language; he perverts it, in ways that reveal a capacity for indifference and contempt that reverberates far beyond the written word'.

And he is not afraid of contradicting himself. On 13th September 2001, the President pronounced: 'The most important thing is for us to find Osama Bin Laden. If s our number one priority and we will not rest until we find him'. But six months later, on 13th March 2002, after rather too many exposures leading to the general knowledge that Osama Bin Laden is none other than a 'former' CIA asset code-named 'Tim Osman', Mr Bush said: 'I don't know where he is. I have no idea and I really don't care. If s not that important. If s not our priority'

Turning to the Presidenf s fraught and dangerous relationship with his father in a chapter headed 'Oedipus Wrecks', Dr Frank identified fear of Bush Sr. and his 'deep rivalrous and aggressive feelings towards his father' which are manifest in bullying, often with sarcasm. Without going into the details of this relationship here, the factor which we find by far the most alarming in this context is the younger Bush's competitiveness - his drive to win at any cost, and his eagerness to be centre stage (similarly to his equally dark accomplice, Tony Blair).

The traditional oedipal dynamic involves the boy's desire to surpass his father in the eyes of his mother. Yet 'a man like George W Bush seeks his father's approval just as much as his defeat'. Elaborating this analysis, Dr Justin Frank reaches the following alarming conclusion:

'George W.'s oedipal aggression toward his father is heightened by a defensive hostility, rooted in his fear of being humiliated for needing his father's love and approval, that he directs elsewhere -often at the weak and needy, who remind him unconsciously of his own unacceptable needs [sic]. The result is an individual who is driven to impress, emulate, and outperform the father he unconsciously holds responsible for his own past and potential future humiliation. At the same time, he is highly motivated to unleash his very considerable destructive resources upon symbolic reminders of his father's strength and his own weakness'. Reports of a rift between Sr. and Jr., evident from the sacking of ancien regime holdovers, bear this out (and have been corroborated since).

NON-ACCEPTANCE OF RESPONSIBILITY

The President told the (CIA-favoured) investigative author Mr Bob Woodward that the US Presidency means that he is no longer accountable to anyone for his actions. No-one tells him what to do. He tells others what to do. Dr Frank attaches importance to the President's first speech to a joint session of Congress after 9/11, which began: 'Why do they hate us?', asking: 'Who is Bush really talking about when he says 'they hate us'? The Professor comes up with a disturbing response to his own question:

'Given what we know about the inattentiveness of his parents - who the young 'Bushtail' understood to have rejected him - if s easy to see how this indifference could have been transposed in his mind into hatred, projecting his unrequited longing onto other targets'. In that first post-9/11 speech, too, Mr Bush spoke of 'sacrifice' - which meant not only the human sacrifice perpetrated on 9/11, and the sacrificing of so many young American lives that the funeral corteges into Arlington Cemetery continue from morning to night, with the newly dug graves now spreading out far beyond the area originally intended for them - but also sacrificing free speech: you're either with us or against us. This attitude reminds us of two young Americans we know who, before the second Iraq war, proclaimed, perfectly seriously, and with great anger, that 'all Iraqis should be killed. Period'.

The President's psychological makeup includes an inability to accept responsibility for his failures - his disregard of the law now, on a global, tragic scale, for example; and its twin, an inability to make reparation for his gross mistakes. His reliance on binary thinking and his consequently limited view of the world impedes his ability to recognise the humanity of others, which in turn makes it easier to project negative attitudes onto them.

This leads to a self-perpetuating cycle: once they are perceived as having negative attributes, it becomes even harder to feel sympathy for them; and so on. Accompanying this grim syndrome is the President's tendency to blame others for the damage he has done. He denies there is any damage for him to take responsibility for. He declared the war ended while the death toll continued mounting, and has since reached ghastly proportions.

And listen to this:

'Unable to accept responsibility for his actions, he can neither learn from his mistakes nor avoid repeating them. Unable to repair, he can only break and deny'.

Even more alarmingly, since the second Iraq war may be considered by the President to have been a form of revenge for the damage done to his family's reputation by the CIA operative William Clinton in 1992, Mr Bush may believe that revenge equates to reparation, even though the avenger's satisfactions are only temporary. But 'revenge is mine, saith the Lord': if the President were a Christian, he would know that policy and behaviour should never, ever be motivated by revenge. 'Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath; for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord' [Romans, Chapter 12, verse 19].

ALARMING DATA FROM MEDICAL RECORDS

The President's medical records, reviewed by Dr Frank, also contain alarming signals. In the report on the President's summer physical in August 2003, a number of spider angiomas were reported to have been removed from his nose. Dr Frank elaborated that, even though there was no indication of liver damage, these are a legitimate source of concern since, while they can appear without any apparent cause, they are most often seen either in pregnancy or in chronic liver damage from excessive alcohol abuse.

A second finding which troubled him is the President's low pulse rate of 35 to 45, which Dr Frank fears may be associated with a suppressed level of arousal to various visual stimuli. 'Hypoarousal is typical of antisocial personalities; unable to perceive accurately the world around them, whenever challenged or attacked, such people tend to overreact in violent ways. They [may] ignore facial and behavioral warning signs - and then exhibit rage reactions out of proportion to the particular insult', whether real or imagined.

When we discussed the President's low pulse rate with a medically qualified expert, she replied, with considerable emphasis, that such a low pulse rate is 'extremely abnormal' and should indeed be a source of grave concern. A third physical characteristic that Dr Justin Frank takes seriously was described by Mr Bush Jr. himself in his autobiography 'A Charge to Keep': 'Laura stays in her own space; I've always invaded other people's spaces, leaning into them, touching, hugging, getting close... I am in perpetual motion, I provoke people, confront them in a teasing way. I pick at a problem'.

Commenting on this, Dr Frank writes:

'In a standard physical exam that serves as part of a proper psychodynamic formulation, such behavior would automatically raise the possibility of a neurological connection. Such impulsive discharges of energy can be seen as symptomatic of Tourette's Syndrome; the line between a mild case of Tourette's and ADHD can be a fine one, or the two may coexist. Most adults with Tourette's who present at clinics for treatment do so because of temper outbursts' - the kind of event with which the President's staffers, like [the former White House Chief of Staff] Andrew Card, are believed to be familiar.

The President's extraordinary lack of curiosity may partly explain some of his 'economies with the truth'. He said after 9/11 that he 'never saw any intelligence that indicated there was going to be an attack on America'. However the CIA were engaged in ten simulations of aircraft crashing into very tall buildings on the very day of the atrocities (raising the likelihood that the simulations were intended as one of the multiple covers for the resulting 'Reichstag Fire' event). At the same time, it is quite possible, according to Dr Frank, that Bush saw plenty of such intelligence, but that it made no impression on him whatsoever. The other possibility, of course, is that he knew what the controlling intelligence services were planning.

Paranoia is another characteristic identified in this President. His strict insistence on absolute loyalty, a demand described by Mr Paul O'Neill among others, suggests that his paranoia runs deep. 'President Bush's continued habit of seeing the world as peopled with threats... is so consistent and unmistakable that it can safely be described as paranoid'.

And the disengagement that Bush so frequently exhibits is the typical escape of the paranoid individual. Bush's behaviour is what psychoanalysts call egosyntonic, which means that his actions -'the lies he tells and the hurt he inflicts on others - don't appear to cause him much anxiety'. Dr Frank also thinks that Mr Bush has spent his life in absolute denial of the many sources of his anxiety, and of his haunting fear of retribution.

HIDING INSIDE THE PRESIDENCY, WITH THE PROTECTION OF THE SECRET SERVICE

For Mr Bush, the Presidency is the perfect refuge: as President he [thinks he - Ed.] is in control of everything and [is] surrounded by people who will protect him' (unless a decision is taken by those who are really in control, to dispense with his services). He is like many CEOs - functioning megalomaniacs who are typically driven to satisfy their grandiose needs through a string of business risks that eventually guarantee failure.

In sum, this man is considered to be extremely dangerous, as Dr Frank's final words indicate:

'Our sole treatment option - for his benefit and for ours - is to remove President Bush from office. It's up to all of us - Congress, the media, and voters - to do so, before it is too late'.

So, it's too late. The damage over which this man is liable to preside could range from the degradation of the dollar arising in the context of perceptions of his Administration's reckless excess spending, to a truly catastrophic series of miscalculations over Iran, Syria and the 'former' Soviet Union.

Don't forget mat President Bush has long since misjudged GRU-President Vladimir Putin, who controls him, according to a senior intelligence officer with whom the Editor held an extensive discussion in May 2004. After Mr Putin had left the President's ranch at Crawford, Texas, on one occasion, Mr Bush suddenly exclaimed: 'I love him, actually'. Your correspondent formed the view that what Mr Bush Jr. actually meant by this was that he is absolutely terrified of GRU-President Vladimir Putin, but that what came out of his mouth was an inversion of this fear.

What Putin really thinks of Bush Jr. is occasionally revealed in off-the-cuff comments - which are always Leninist in character and always contain meanings of relevance to those whom Lenin called 'the interested'. A Reuters report dated 3rd December 2004 quoted Putin, speaking in New Delhi, as having accused the United States of pursuing a dictatorial foreign policy. 'Even if dictatorship is packaged in beautiful pseudo-democratic phraseology, it will not be able to solve systemic problems. It may even make them worse', said the GRU operative, with maximum cynicism, as pointedly as possible. As mentioned, only a few weeks earlier, Putin had told George W Bush in Chile that "his (Putin's) goal is the creation [at home] of a democratic style consistent with Russian history' [The New York Post', 21st November, page 9]. In both comments, Mr Putin was cunningly making it clear to Mr Bush that he knew that both powers cynically promoted not democracy but 'democratism', but that he is scornful of Mr Bash's constant references to how he is bringing democracy' to the Iraqis (that is, to those who have not yet been killed).

At all events, the key point is that George W. Bush has misjudged Putin, so that he may misjudge responses to an intended attack on Iran, Syria, or both, in accordance with the next steps outlined by that that manic geopolitician, Dr Zbigniew Brzezinski in his book 'The Grand Chessboard: America's Primacy and its Geostrategic Imperatives' [1997, Basic Books, New York], wherein it was catastroph-ically recommended that the United States should unilaterally redraw the map of the Middle East and Central Asia to suit its geopolitical and geo-energy interests.

CONCLUSION

If the President is insensitive to the consequences of his actions, this Administration will not only proliferate dangerous military adventures, but will overspend in every component of the budget, especially domestic 'security' and preparations for repression at home. One reason for this endemic free-spending attitude is that since senior officials are aware of the existence of colossal offshore-based financial resources controlled and accessible by the intelligence community, there is an official mindset which pays little attention to the formal budgetary numbers.

The danger of this manifestation of arrogance is that the international financial markets, being in this respect less well informed than key US officials, will continue to adopt a different view. Obviously, with policy in the hands of a man diagnosed by one of the United States' most accomplished psychoanalysts as being as paranoid, unpredictable and dangerous as described, it will be quite futile for analysts to expect that appropriate US financial housekeeping will occur during this troubling Presidency. In addition, all the signs are that the Constitution may be abandoned. The outlook for the US dollar, therefore, could not possibly be bleaker, on the basis of the information elaborated in this section alone. The last time a crisis of these proportions overwhelmed a great nation was in January 1933. ■

ADDENDUM FIVE: Soviet Analyst 27,2: February 2001

CORRUPTION AT HARVARD

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, Plaintiff, Vs.
The President and Fellows of Harvard College, Andrei Shleifer,
Jonathan Hay, Nancy Zimmerman, and Elizabeth Hebert.

On 26th September 2000, the US Department of Justice filed a civil Complaint against the President and Fellows of Harvard University, and against Professor Andrei Shleifer, his wife Nancy Zimmerman, the University's Russian project manager Jonathan Hay, and Hay's girlfriend-turned wife, Elizabeth Hebert. The suit sought damages of at least $40 million which the United States Agency for International Development (USAID) paid to Harvard University in connection with a (misguided) USAID-funded project in Russia. The comparatively modest size of this claim (when compared with the colossal proportions of the off-balance sheet transactions and the billions stolen by other US operatives and intermediaries,) does not make this case a minor one: on the contrary, the fact that the United States alleged that the President and Fellows of Harvard University, as well as the named Professor and individuals, were culpable, shows that there were no 'free-for-all' limits for the US and 'ex'-Soviet intelligence criminalist operatives alike. All Westerners who become involved with KGB and GRU officers trained to masquerade as as 'biznesmen' are vulnerable to being compromised.

In this case, the President and Fellows of one of the world's most famous universities stand accused by the US Government of stealing a large sum of public money due to their involvement in a misguided US official project designed to 'help the Russians' become integrated into the world community. Pathetically, none of the main 'players' in this fiasco, led by the US Government itself, has yet understood that such projects were always going to be a waste of time - since 'the General Staff of the Revolution', of which the KGB and GRU officers concerned are members, have an entirely different agenda which is hidden from the eyes of the West because it fell for the lies perpetrated during 1989-91. But even the remote chance that the Harvard project might achieve some degree of 'transformation' in Russia was cancelled out from the start by the fact that the 'experts' employed by Harvard for this purpose saw their involvement not as a chance to wean the 'former' Soviets from the path of corruption, but rather as a series of corruptly lucrative opportunities to enrich themselves personally, with all expenses being borne by the US Government.

In 1992 and 1995, USATD and Harvard entered into two Cooperative Agreements which required the University to provide impartial and unbiased advice with respect to a USAID-funded project in Russia. The so-called Harvard Institute for International Development, now defunct, was used to implement Harvard's USATD project. The Civil Action (Number 00CV11977DPW) filed in the US District Court, District of Massachusetts, noted that the project included the provision of economic and legal advice concerning the privatisation of Russia's national assets, and the creation of laws and institutions necessary for the functioning of open markets in Russia. Thus the US Government asked Harvard to undertake a task which was fundamentally impossible to achieve, since as noted the KGB and GRU officers into whose hands the assets of the revolutionary state were to be 'privatised' were working to a different remit - namely, to go through the motions of privatisation and establishing Western-style institutions and the rule of law, all for the purposes of international public consumption - while in practice presiding over a system of 'state-controlled capitalism' in accordance with Lenin's model. Underlying this stance was the objective everyone in the West seems to have missed, which is as follows.

The 'former' Soviet Union is not engaged in 'convergence' towards the West. On the contrary, Leninist 'convergence' means that the West must 'converge' towards the East, and that the Easf s convergence towards the West is cosmetic only. In other words, the continuing Soviets are 'marking time' -until the West 'converges' with the East, on the Easf s terms. In the European context, this means waiting impatiently for the European Union Collective - which Gorbachev himself called 'the new European Sovief during a visit to London in March 2000 - to 'converge' and expand Eastwards. The covert Soviets collaborate at the intelligence level with the Nazi Strategic Continuum based at Dachau.

There has been a complete failure to understand this revolutionary reality. And the biggest brains in the West, epitomised by Professors at Harvard University, have failed to analyse the situation objectively in the light of the history and objectives of Leninism. As a result, they fell prey to grandiose illusions about how Russia could be 'changed' in accordance with their academic preferences; while the blind US Government, basking in the glow of its illusory 'Cold War victory', supported these wishful-thinkers in the elaboration of their illusions - at the US taxpayers' expense.

The US Civil Complaint against Harvard pointed out that 'to ensure that the advice provided by Harvard University was impartial and unbiased, the Cooperative Agreements prohibited Harvard employees working on the project from making any investments in Russia'. However a US Congressional investigation into Harvard's activities had to be reassigned to the criminal section of the Boston US Attorney's office, after the staffers turned up disturbing evidence that the University and its staff had been in glaring breach of these requirements. Although the action finally announced was a civil one, the Complaint seems to imply criminal activity on the part of the defendants, noting that 'despite the clear terms of the agreements, Andrei Shleifer, a tenured Professor in Harvard's Economics Department and Jonathan Hay, the University's Moscow-based Representative in charge of the USAID project, were making prohibited investments in Russia in the areas in which they were providing advice'. The complaint further alleged that Shleifer and Hay were using their positions, inside information and influence, as well as USAID-funded resources, to advance their own personal business interests and investments and those of their wives and friends' (the Complaint mentions 'girlfriends').

Commenting on the case, US Attorney Donald K. Stern said that 'the United States paid Harvard for impartial and unbiased economic advice.... Despite clear prohibitions against investing in Russia, Harvard advisors abused their positions and attempted to tip the playing field to their own private financial advantage. We hope that today's complaint will make clear that those who abuse the resources of the United States will be held accountable'.

And that includes the President and Fellows of Harvard University, and their employees, who presided over gross abuses of the trust that the US Government had placed in them - thereby compounding the folly of the US Government itself, in rashly embarking upon this misguided project.

THE DETAIL OF THE COMPLAINT

The US Complaint alleged that while they were acting on behalf of USAID, Shleifer, Hay, Zimmerman and Herbert engaged in various prohibited investments and businesses:

- Shleifer and his wife Zimmerman invested and reinvested $200,000 through Renova-Invest, a US-Russian investment entity, in various Russian companies (all of which, given the system of 'state-controlled capitalism', were in fact in the hands of specially trained intelligence officers), including an aluminium company for which Hay and others funded by USAID provided legal services. Shleifer and Zimmerman also invested $60,000 through Renova-Invest, in Russian Government debt (GKOs).
- Shleifer, Zimmerman and Hay bought several hundred thousand dollars' worth of shares in Russian oil companies (also in the hands of specially trained intelligence officers), and concealed the ownership of those shares by having them registered in the name of Shleifer's father-in-law.
- All four of the named Harvard personnel and their wives (girlfriends) participated in the launching of Russia's first licensed mutual fund, which was started by a company named Pallada, founded and managed by Hay's then girlfriend (now wife) - and/or Russia's first licensed mutual fund depository, the First Russian Specialised Depository (FRSD), started by Hebert's Russian business 'partner', Julia Zagachin.

- Hay and Hebert participated in the creation of a real estate advisory/property management firm to work with Hebert in establishing a real estate mutual fund, and to lease and manage properties for a project to which Hay was a key USAID adviser.
- Jonathan Hay assisted Nancy Zimmerman in her attempts to trade short-term Russian Government bonds (GKOs) and other Government debt, and to repatriate the profits from such trades without paying the required Russian repatriation tax, and used USAID funded staff and offices to set up and operate a Russian trading company to implement this scheme.

The ease with which these Harvard officers were corrupted almost the moment they set foot in Russia, must have caused immense satisfaction and amusement in the bowels of the branch of the Soviet intelligence services tasked with corrupting Western officials and others who had rushed to the 'former' Soviet Union on the basis of their mistaken belief that the 'changes' which had taken place in 1989-91 were genuine.

All in all, Harvard and its employees were alleged to have 'defrauded the United States out of at least $40 million paid to Harvard' by USAID. The Complaint alleged that 'Shleifer and Hay abused their positions as high-level and trusted advisors to and on behalf of the United States in Russia, and misused resources funded by the United States for their own personal benefit and for the personal benefit of their wives, girlfriends and/or business associates'. The action was for the diversion of public money paid under a US Federal grant programme, and included claims for false claims, fraud, and breaches of fiduciary duty. The primary Harvard Representative, Shleifer, was the Principal Investigator and Project Director for USAID-funded agreements with Harvard for work on economic and legal reforms in Russia.

Nancy Zimmerman, married to Shleifer, was operating an investment fund management company entitled 'Farallon Fixed Income Associates' in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Both individually and through this entity, Zimmerman was alleged to have been involved in a number of investments and financial transactions in Russia; and she allegedly used the USAID-funded staff and resources of the Harvard project, to assist her with these investments.

The Complaint stated that 'after the Soviet Union dissolved in December 1991 [sic], the United States began providing limited assistance to support reform. In October 1992, the Congress enacted the Freedom for Russia and the Emerging Eurasian Democracies [sic] and Open Market Support Act of 1992. This Act authorized a program, to be implemented primarily by USAID, to help the states of the former Soviet Union carry out political and economic reform in support of open markets, including "establishment of transparency in regulatory and other governmental decision-making"'.

USAID sought to accomplish this task, in part, through the two cooperative agreements reached with Harvard University. The irony is that the USSR 'succumbed' to US Financial Warfare/bribery.

ASSETS IN THE HANDS OF THE FEW

The mentioned highly critical General Accounting Office report noted that 'Russia's transition path has been made harder by the concentration of power and income in the hands of a few, a process that had begun prior to the transition and that was accelerated by the privatization of the most valuable sectors of Russian enterprise in 1994 and 1995'.

But neither the General Accounting Office nor any other Western investigating agency appears to have asked the most obvious related question: why were the assets of the state 'privatised' into the hands of 'a few', and who were those 'few' - notwithstanding the abundance of evidence that all of the so-called 'oligarchs', without exception, are intelligence officers (note that we omit the usual mealy-mouthed adjective 'former'). One observer, however, appears to have had her suspicions. According to Janine Wedel, the author of 'Collision and Collusion: The Strange Case of Western Aid to Eastern Europe, 1989-98', the 'entire episode' of Harvard University's alleged corruption in Russia should prompt a critical examination of US policy towards Russia over the past decade: 'We need to look at how foreign policy in this very key area of Russian economic development was essentially privatized into the hands of a very small group of players on both sides with very little accountability'.

Well, yes, no doubt the United States' policymakers need to review their entire misplaced pro-Moscow strategy, in all its confused and complex dimensions, as a matter of urgency. But first, they need, along with their counterparts in the West generally, to recognise the reality of the phenomenon we call criminalism. What is criminalism for? Its purposes are as follows:

- To maximise the potential of criminal activity (especially with regard to exploiting Gramscian opportunities for eroding morality, penetration of institutions and blackmail arising from the avalanche of drug-derived proceeds) as an instrument for the advancement of the Revolution by undermining the capitalist system and its institutions, especially the banks.
- To destabilise capitalism generally through the enlargement of the underground economy and by popularising criminal activity, eroding standards, thus undermining governance generally.

- To discredit capitalism by equating it with organised crime, while disguising the revolutionary source of criminalism as a key instrument of Leninist (and German DVD) subversion strategy.

These objectives conflict with familiar Western illusions.

Actually, Professor Andrei Shleifer recently co-authored an article, would you believe, entitled 'Corruption', with a University of Chicago Professor, Robert W. Vishny, in 'The Quarterly Journal of Economics', which began with the following statement:

'We define government corruption as the sale by government officials of government property for personal gain. For example, government officials often collect bribes for providing permits and licenses, for giving passage through customs, or for prohibiting the entry of competitors. In these cases, they charge personally for goods that the state officially owns.... Corruption is both pervasive and significant around the world'. And the authors cited past studies on corruption which 'examine ways of motivating the (economic) agent to be honest'. In response to the US Government's action against Shleifer in the present case, Earl Nemser, who represented Professor Shleifer and his wife, argued when the case was first publicised in September 2000 that the couple had no restrictions on their investment opportunities in Russia because Shleifer was only a consultant to the project.

CYNICAL DISREGARD OF SPECIFIC U.S. GOVERNMENT CONTRACT TERMS

But USAID's Cooperative Agreements, which Harvard had signed, had laid down that Harvard 'must develop the complete confidence and trust of the host government' (an absurd proposition, given the Leninist untrustworthiness of the host Government itself) and that 'a completely neutral third party, void of any vested interest in the contracting process, is required'. The Agreements provided that 'no employee of the grantee (Harvard) shall engage directly or indirectly, either in the individual's own name or in the name or through an agency of another person, in any business, profession, or occupation in the foreign countries in which the individual is assigned, nor shall the individual make loans or investments to or in any business, profession or occupation in the foreign countries to which the individual is assigned'.

'The recipient shall maintain a code of standards of conduct that shall govern the performance of its officers, employees or agents in the awarding or administering of contracts using USAID funds. Conflict of interest situations involving employees, officers or agents or their immediate families shall be avoided.... Harvard Institute for International Development employees and members of their families may engage in no financial transactions or investments within the Project Country.... Such transactions or investments include maintenance of savings accounts or the purchase of savings certificates, holding of debt instruments, maintaining any interest whatsoever in any local business, or making investments of any kind in the Project Country'.

In addition, illustrating how arrogant these high-level advisers who thought they had a sacred mission to establish free enterprise in 'post-Soviet' Russia had become, Shleifer was a member of Harvard University's Faculty of Arts and Sciences, which maintains a conflict of interest policy requiring the disclosure of potential conflicts of interest, including any relationship 'that might enable a member to influence Harvard's dealings with an outside organization in any way leading to personal gain or to improper advantage for anyone'. The University itself even included a Conflict of Interest Statement in its submission to USAID, stating that 'as a non-profit, academic institution, Harvard is committed to maintaining an objective and unbiased role'.

Shleifer and his wife, the US Government alleged, basically ignored these restrictions. They bought stocks through Renova-Invest in many of the Russian entities which were purportedly being privatised under detailed plans for which Shleifer was a key adviser, including Rostelcom, Gazprom, Irkaz, Sayansk, Bratsk, Vladimir Tractor and Chernogorneft - all of which were privatised into the hands of specially trained KGB and GRU officers masquerading as 'biznesmen'. In 1995, $60,000 was allegedly invested by Andrei Shleifer, while the Professor, financed by USAID, was involved in advising the Russian Government on debt policy and the negotiations with the International Monetary Fund concerning further extensions of credit to the Russian Government. Later, Renova-Invest employed Jonathan Hay and other USAID-funded staff to work on merger documents, including documents for an aluminium company, Irkaz, one of the entities in which Shleifer held stock purchased by Renova-Invest. The time spent by Hay and other USAID lawyers working on this 'private' KGB-controlled merger, which had nothing to do with USAID's project, was allegedly charged to USAID.

In July 1994, Shleifer and Farallon Capital agreed to buy oil stocks in Russia, and Shleifer arranged for his investment in these stocks, which were almost all to be bought on the advice of one Igor Tsukanov, a KGB operative, to be held in the name of another - initially Zimmerman, but the shares were later registered in the name of Zimmerman's father. In a Memo dated

28th July 1994, cited in the official Complaint, initial investment was 'anticipated to be $2.0 million, with an increase to $5.0 million if sufficient investment opportunities are available. Andrei will invest 10% of his own capital, with shares to be registered to Nancy Zimmerman'.

Farallon Capital and Shleifer undertook three groups of purchases of oil stocks through an entity called CentreInvest in 1994. On 11th August 1994, Shleifer wired $165,000 from his joint bank account with Nancy Zimmerman to a Channel Islands bank for the purchase of 30,000 shares in the Russian oil entity Purneftegaz, controlled by Soviet intelligence officers.

On 31st August 1994, Mr Shleifer sent a cheque for $99,000 from his own money market account to his father-in-law, who in turn wired $165,000 to a Channel Islands bank account for the purchase of 5,000 shares in the Russian oil entity Yugraneftegaz, stolen and controlled by Soviet intelligence officers [see pages 705 et seq.]. On 20th September 1994, Shleifer deposited a cheque for $66,000 made out by Jonathan Hay to Professor Shleifer into his own individual bank account. On 4th November 1994, Shleifer wired $19,000 from this account to a Channel Islands account for the purchase of 1,000 shares of stock in the Russian oil entity Varieganneftegaz, controlled by Soviet intelligence officers. The Complaint asserted that within this total, about $10,000 of Jonathan Hay's funds were used.

In late 1995 or early in 1996, the defendants and the USAID-financed Russian Harvard employee Julia Zagachin, put together, promoted and/or financed a plan to launch the first Russian mutual fund management company (Pallada) and the First Russian Specialised Depository. These businesses were expected to be quite profitable, and both required licenses from the Russian Securities Commission, an entity that Harvard University, Professor Shleifer and Jonathan Hay had helped to establish, and to which Shleifer and Hay were the advisers.

Both Pallada and the Russian Specialised Depository received the first operating licenses of their kind ever issued by the Russian Securities Commission. Jonathan Hay then actively solicited investments in Pallada and the depository institution from Zimmerman, the Farallon companies and others. He also travelled to Boston for meetings with representative of at least one potential investor.

In March 1996, Elizabeth Hebert separately sent a business plan to an affiliate of the above potential investor, entitled Commonwealth Property Investors, for the establishment of a Russian domestic fund management company to launch one of the first mutual funds in Russia. The Business Plan (for what was to become Pallada and the First Russian Specialised Depository) sought investors to contribute $3.5 million, in exchange for 30% of the proposed companies' equity. The Plan predicted that the company or companies would generate $28 million annually in pretax profits in the first five years of operations.

It stated that the management team would 'consist of a Chief Executive Officer, Elizabeth Hebert, and a Chief Operating Officer, Julia Zagachin'. The Complaint states that 'at the time Zagachin was being paid as a full-time employee of Harvard on the USAID-funded project under Hay's supervision, while in fact working on starting this private mutual fund and/or depository business with Hebert'.

Note throughout all this that the Harvard academics blithely assumed not only that a true free enterprise environment was being constructed in Russia, and that they were among the leading builders thereof, but that massive profits lay in store for lucky investors able to exploit the assets which belong ultimately to the Party-State. The lure of bonanza profits was so great, and the Harvard employees' estimation of their own brilliance so inflated, that they ignored the restrictions set out in their contracts - or else assumed, as US criminalist operatives are apt to do, that the US authorities would never notice, given pervasive self-reinforcing US and Soviet corruption, in a corrupt, 'free-for-all' environment.

For Hebert and Zagachin planned to exploit their close relationship with the Russian Securities Commission, to which Jonathan Hay was a key adviser, to gain a competitive advantage over other funds. The Business Plan stated that 'the timing is critical to ensure the Fund is able to benefit from expected barriers to entry the first of which is an untested licensing procedure for the fund management company. It is expected that the fact that the team is well known to and trusted by the regulators suggests that it will be able to facilitate the issuance of licenses and clear other regulatory hurdles which are expected to be a hindrance to competitors'.

Manifestly, the Jewish Harvard academics/officials saw their deployment to and involvement with the US-promoted 'post'-Soviet privatisation offensive as a golden opportunity for self-enrichment, in blatant disregard for the terms of their contracts and for any ethical considerations. The dangers were anticipated in their contracts, which proved ineffective.

INSTITUTE FOR LAW-BASED ECONOMY

Adding to the ironies surrounding the Harvard team's behaviour, Hebert indicated in the Business Plan that she and Zagachin intended to use the services of the Institute for Law-Based Economy, a Russian affiliate of the Harvard project under the direction of Jonathan Hay and largely funded by USAID. The Plan stated that 'it will also be important to develop solutions in close cooperation with the Federal Commission which intends to carefully regulate these functions. To ensure full compliance, the Institute for Law-Based Economy (the Russian non-profit unit that drafted the Regulations) has already been retained to provide advice in the consideration of various options and to facilitate the development of those options where regulatory assistance is required'.

Working in an environment which they must have recognised to be absolutely corrupt, but which they were being employed to clean up, these Harvard officers threw all caution to the winds, making a mockery of the grandiose pretensions of their University, and of USAID and the US Government itself. In a solicitation Memorandum, Jonathan Hay stated that 'we' are seeking an investment of $1.2 million in the FRSD. The regulations governing mutual funds 'were drafted by the Russian legal team that I manage'. Hay boasted of the probable success of the investment as being attributable to its close relationship with the [corrupt] Russian Securities Commission, stating that 'we are likely to get a license before anyone else, which will give us a significant first mover advantage'. The Memorandum added that 'we are not interested in your investment in the Specialised Depository unless this is helpful to raise the funds needed to start the fund management company' (being created by Hay's girlfriend, Hebert) 'because, among other things, we frankly want to start both of these things at the same time and are tying our futures to this strategy'. In due course, Hay and his father invested the required minimum capitalisation of $400,000 to purchase the FRSD. 'At the same time', the Complaint noted, 'Hay continued to supervise regulations relating to FRSD, and to direct technical assistance funded under separate contracts by both USAID and the World Bank to the benefit of the FRSD'.

Separately, in the spring of 1996, while employed on the USAID-funded Harvard project, Jonathan Hay collaborated with Elizabeth Hebert and with certain USAID and World Bank-funded employees under his direction to start a real estate development and property management business, which was to collaborate with some of the other named entities to create a real estate mutual fund and to develop and manage real properties in Russia. Under a 'Draft Terms of Agreement', Hay stated that the company, named Korona, 'would have the goal of purchasing, developing and managing real estate projects in Russia's regions'.

A senior Harvard employee repeatedly objected to these abuses, writing to Shleifer:

'I can't imagine that you will do anything about this, but I believe that it is not right all round and does not show good faith on anyone's part'.

She also wrote that Harvard would 'rue the day' when USAID found out. Which it belatedly did. ■

ADDENDUM SIX: International Currency Review 29,2: December 2003

COVERT SOVIET FINANCIAL SCAMS

SOVIET FINANCIAL CRIMINALIST-INTELUGENCE-ILLUMINATI OPERATIONS The integration of organised criminal operations with Soviet and false 'post'-Soviet financial sector practice will help to explain how the Soviet structures could seamlessly accommodate the US intelligence 'Financial Warfare' offensive - in pursuit of the fulfilment of the Soviet long-range Leninist deception strategy promulgated at the 22nd CPSU Congress held at the newly constructed, modernistic Moscow Palace of Congresses in October 1961, and ratified at the 81-Party Congress held in Moscow on 6th December that year[1]. The following study will show that the Soviet and post-Soviet financial system is infested with criminal practice, one corollary of which, of course, is that all Western financial institutions and businesses operating in the 'former' USSR need to understand that it is still the case that no 'legal' agreement has any underlying validity, since the concept of 'legality' is still, under covert as under overt Communism, what happens to enter into the heads of apparatchiks or KGB-GRU supremos at any point in time.

Contrary to popular belief, the 1998 Soviet debt default was not the result of 'market reform' - the facile assumption made by the Western financial media. It was a corollary of the criminalised foreign trade system that had prevailed under overt Communism and which Western operatives exploited. This system had been used, certainly since the 1950s, to funnel foreign currency out of the country, for parking in Soviet banks abroad, and in accounts held at innumerable Western banks.

In addition, as explained in 'Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West', by Dr Joseph Douglass Jr. [see: www.edwardharle.org] the Soviets had carefully selected the Western institutions and bankers whom they identified as being the most corruptible, with whom to cooperate in ensuring the successful laundering and placement of the anticipated vast financial accruals they would be generating from the launch of their intensive penetration and consolidation of their own drug-trafficking operations, in the second half of the 1960s. This operation, planned on a global scale, was initially modelled upon the Chinese Communists' early drug-trafficking and distributing operations, which Mao Tse-Tung's cadres had used first against the Chinese population and then, after 1949, had expanded regionally to corrupt regimes and populations in the Far East.

Clearly, the Western institutions selected by the Soviets for drug money-laundering purposes were also used to park and handle foreign currency derived from other activities out of the USSR, for safekeeping. These banks have since been used to handle Western drug money flows, as well.

In parallel with the sizeable flow-of-funds associated with Soviet-supervised and -controlled drug operations - Fidel Castro fell out with Mikhail Gorbachev in the 1980s over Cuba's cut, which he wanted raised to 30%, from a much lower level - the ongoing Soviet-era financial system was heavily skewed towards the illicit sale of domestic raw materials (oil, gas, and metals).

It was accordingly 'no problem' for experienced, expert US 'Financial Warfare' and other operatives to become involved in parallel transactions with experienced Soviet intelligence counterparties using the specially created US Title 18 Section 6 intelligence corporations, mainly based offshore and equipped with offshore bank accounts all over the world. Unfortunately, corrupt US intelligence operatives nave joined with Soviet criminalists in global scamming and corrupt banking practices.

The 'pure' criminalist Soviet method was to dump domestically-produced commodities at below world market prices with 'friendly' foreign, likewise mainly offshore, companies. Some (probably all) of these 'foreign' corporations, like Plantronik GmbH, 'were' (are) in fact controlled by Soviet operatives. Others were controlled by intelligence officers, either employed by the US Treasury's special 'Financial Warfare' cadres, or else working for other components of the vast US intelligence community.

Clearly, when the US counterparty was (is) a 'privatised' entity working under the US Presidential Executive Order 12333 regime, then the scope for embezzlement by the operators of such corporations, was/is prospectively open-ended. A number of US intelligence officers and fake 'lawyers' fell into temptation, but the most distinguished of their number, Leo E Wanta, the senior Presidential intelligence aide, was not among them: so he was deliberately 'taken down' so that the giga-funds could be exploited.

THE OVERT SOVIET CORRUPTION MODEL

In the 'pure' corrupted Soviet model, domestically produced raw materials go through a 'cut-out' chain of offshore intermediaries, with the superprofits generated by such resale operations winding up in offshore bank accounts abroad. It is alleged by some analysts that under overt Communism, these superprofits were redeployed to serve the needs and expenses of the World Communist movement, and in the 'fight against world capitalism', whereas today the superprofits are used for 'other purposes'.

This was the 'view' publicised by the 'financial analyst', Andrei Sotnik, in Moscow News [13-19th August 2003]; however, since 'Moscow News' is an outlet for regime disinformation, one must be on the lookout for lies; and this is one of them.

Since there has never been any true discontinuity of classical Soviet Leninist strategy, the superprofits continue to be required for use by the World Revolution, as before - a fact of life demonstrated by the widely publicised events surrounding Mikhail Khodorkhovsky, the Soviet intelligence-crook and erstwhile Gorbachev-era Minister, into whose hands certain vast assets of the Soviet Party-state were temporarily 'privatised'. True to long-established routine, dating back to Stalin's time, the apparat demands its assets/funds back with compound interest - at a time of its own choosing

No doubt, as is the case with the 'privatised' US operational intelligence cadres and groups, vast amounts of funds have been, and continue to be, stolen and siphoned off into private bank accounts which 'oligarchs' (in fact, Soviet intelligence operatives) may hope cannot be traced by the directors of the World Revolution in Moscow. However the Soviets possess and use cloned PROMIS and PROMIS-derived software, so that belief, if held, would not be soundly based. Fearful that the ongoing Soviet authorities are now indeed capable of tracing their foreign bank accounts, some 'oligarchs' - Messrs. Abramovich and Poltanin, for instance - have resorted to laundering their allegedly ill-gotten funds into the coffers of impecunious but world-famous British soccer clubs.

The money disappears of course from the state budget for good. The network of offshore 'foreign' but controlled companies established by the overt and covert Soviet Communists in and since the 1990s interrelates, mimics and interacts with the parallel Title 18 Section 6 USG corporations, and with similar companies organised by other intelligence communities, and has been a primary focus of foreign exchange operations undertaken by the covert ruling Moscow establishment, and by the 'big business' sector that has emerged since the 'changes' of 1990-92. This sector is controlled by the state, using a rather more sophisticated variant of Lenin's concept of 'state capitalism' which we call 'state-controlled capitalism'.

This 'new firm' of 'state-controlled capitalism' was formally inaugurated in 1990, when the Politburo of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union (CPSU) adopted a resolution 'empowering' the Communist apparatchiks (officials) and of course intelligence officers to set up corporations abroad using assets that belonged to the Party-State. Please note that this resolution was adopted by the CPSU Central Committee, presided over by President Mikhail Gorbachev, and not by President Boris Yeltsin's parallel RSFSR structures. The resolution precisely matched the effect of President Reagan's Executive Order 12333 of January 1981.

CAPITAL FLIGHT FROM THE USSR

Post-war capital flight from the USSR, however, began in the 1950s - although as has been noted, it was always endemic among the Communist Party elite, from the earliest days of the supremacy of this criminal organisation. However it was only apparently in the 1950s that Western intelligence services began reporting the opening of secret numbered accounts at Swiss banks and at banks in some other countries, by holders of Soviet passports.

From the moment that Mikhail Gorbachev was appointed General Secretary of the CPSU, capital flight accelerated sharply. According to French intelligence sources alone, the CPSU controlled 84 external companies, held more than 7,000 bank accounts (as reported in our associated intelligence service, Soviet Analyst, in the early 1990s), and maintained at least $25 billion in offshore deposits and in offshore-based investments. By today's standards, this is minuscule.

Many years ago, in the early 1970s, this service hinted, in an article on Soviet finances, that the Soviets could not necessarily ever be relied upon to meet their formal financial obligations. For this outrageous observation, we were resoundingly reprimanded by Moscow Narodny Bank, an institution that allegedly acted as a primary money-laundering outlet, and which is actually a British-registered institution, located in the City of London. We were belatedly proved right in 1990, when all the assets held in the client accounts of the Soviet Bank for Foreign Economic Activity, known as Vneshekon-ombank (a.k.a. VEB), all of a sudden mysteriously disappeared.

The clients of this Soviet institution (of course many were state entities) were informed that they would not get their money back. Simultaneously, however, Gosbank (the Soviet central bank, under the former head of Moscow Narodny Bank, Viktor Gerashchenko) exploited Vneshekonombank to funnel about $6.0 billion to the Russian banks abroad, ostensibly to enable those institutions to bail out the foreign clients who had lost all their money. As indicated, the funds provided were ostensibly, for foreign public consumption, intended to pay off foreign creditors; yet in practice, these funds were reclassified as resources made available to finance Gosbank shareholdings in, and capital for, Soviet bank affiliates abroad.

In other words, the Soviet bank's creditors never received a single groat - all the money having of course disappeared through a network of offshore companies. All Russian banks operating abroad, just like Vneshekonombank, have a diversified network of dependent foreign structures, consisting of banks, financial and consulting companies, trading houses, production enterprises, and so forth: so the terms Vneshekonombank, or VEB or else 'Russian banks abroad', are essentially interchangeable here, and can be taken as referring to the entire sub-network of affiliated structures.

We will first pursue, in a little more detail, such information as is available about what happened next - before inserting a rather obvious suggestion of our own. It happened that Vneshekonombank received a number of foreign credits through the aforementioned Soviet institutions abroad, without processing them through the country's national budgetary procedures. For instance, during 1990, the Persian Gulf countries actually provided the Soviet Union with a loan worth $1.75 billion. This loan was extended shortly ahead of the Operation Desert Storm. According in fact to Western media reports, Saudi Arabia, Kuwait and also the United Arab Emirates made this sum available to Moscow by way of recompensing the Soviets ostensibly for not vetoing an anti-Saddam Hussein resolution at the United Nations Security Council. By the way, such 'bribery' is common practice at the United Nations, often involving liberal remittances of US 'Black Operations' money, as well.

These funds were remitted through the Paris-based Soviet institution, Eurobank (full title: Banque Commerciale pour l'Europe du Nord) and its many affiliates. The money was never reported or included among the revenues or credits recorded in either the Soviet or the Russian state budgets.

A proportion of this credit was remitted through Eurobank to the Jersey-based offshore company, Financial Management Co. (or FIMACO), which featured prominently in the lurid accounts of the

Russian financial scandals of 1998-99, reported in earlier issues of 'International Currency Review'. Why only a proportion? Because, in addition to the Gulf funds remitted to Fimaco, components of the Gulf countries' loan money were paid out by Eurobank to affiliated Soviet companies, including Eurogrefi (Paris), RTD France (Paris), and also Evrofinance (Moscow). In practical terms, what this meant was that a loan which subsequently became part of the Soviet (and then, for the time being, the Russian) foreign debt, was remitted to foreign Soviet-controlled offshore corporations, and was then used for 'confidential' purposes (namely, stolen, diverted or otherwise compromised).

Of course, the corporations concerned were set up by the Soviet intelligence community, just like Section 18, Title 6 US Government proprietary corporations.

But what of the funds that disappeared suddenly from Vneshekonombank? All enquiries on this score should be addressed, it is suggested, to the 'Financial Warfare' apparatus of the US Treasury and/or to its 'privatised' operatives and cadres.

THE FAKE BANKRUPTCY TECHNIQUE

False bankruptcy 'was' a method also favoured by the overt Communists in past years, and it further remains a preferred scamming method exploited by their covert Communist successors nowadays, for encouraging stolen funds to 'vanish' (the same method as is used by the CIA, which specialises in the raping and folding of targeted banks and trading corporations, such as Enron). For instance, in April 1989, Banca del Gottardo (Lugano) arranged for an enterprise calling itself Interplastika to receive a loan worth $100 million, underwritten by Vneshekonombank, on the ostensible basis that the loan recipient was in fact the Soviet foreign trade association, Tekhnoimport. An operative called Behgjet Paccoli transferred 25% of the bank loan proceeds, which had been made available in 1990, to Tekhnoimport. Interplastika then promptly went bust, and all the rest of the money was 'lost'.

Sounds familiar?

In early 2000, Russia suddenly recognised the Vneshekonombank's financial obligations to Banca del Gottardo, incorporating the amount into its foreign state debt; and this book 'adjustment was implemented without pressure from any known international financial investigation.

What happened to the 75% of the funds made available in 1990? We don't know. But this is what happened next. In November 1994, the Banca del Gottardo granted a loan worth - wait for it - $100 million, to a South African corporation, employing precious metals and gems as collateral: five metric tons of gold coins issued in the years 1928-72 were made available to the South African company by the Russian Federation Committee for Precious Metals and Precious Stones.

The proceeds of the odd loan were used to pay amounts due to a company called Mabatex, the Chief Executive Officer of which at the time was Behgjet Paccoli, from various offshore-based subcontractors for the 'renovation work taking place on of parts of the Kremlin'. Then, the final 'surprise': the South African company itself disappeared without repaying the loan. Hence, the model of crminalism using offshore companies devised and applied for years by the CPSU Central Committee, continued to function perfectly. Moreover the method of making funds 'vanish' - causing the relevant company to go bankrupt - is a standard and fool-proof criminalist-intelligence modus operandi,

THE STATE OBLIGATIONS DEBT FIASCO

According to the 'objective'-sounding Russian Audit Chamber, the Russian Finance Ministry's obligations towards the State Bank of the Russian Federation had risen by 156 times, compared with the amounts outstanding to the bank on 1st January 1993. One factor underlying this fantastic increase was that the issuance of state debt obligations - that is, those obligations known as GKO short-term state bonds - proliferated between 1993 and 1998.

However the GKO financial pyramid or Ponzi Game would have been impossible to invent had it not been for the officially sanctioned offshore company-based financial criminalist rip-off model outlined above. Western clients bought GKOs only if the Russian authorities guaranteed them with matching deposits at their foreign banks. The Western clients were what Lenin would have called 'Useful Idiots' - always very useful to the Revolutioa and idiotically stupid in naively imagining that the precautionary arrangements of the foreign bank deposits could be relied upon, or that the Leninist deceivers they were dealing with could ever be trusted. When Russia duly defaulted on its external debts in 1998, the funds in the precautionary deposit accounts disappeared.

In July 1993, the Russian Central Bank signed an agreement with FIMACO - the main shareholder in which was the Soviet-owned, Paris-based Eurobank, which was about 80% owned by the Russian Central Bank itself- concerning the transfer to FIMACO of financial assets for fiduciary management purposes. The assets in question represented Russia's official foreign exchange reserves (a proportion of them), Interior Ministry credits, and Russian Finance Ministry Securities.

Thanks to its exotic arrangements with the Jersey-based FIMACO (the operations of which were in practice conducted in Paris by Eurobank, albeit being booked through FIMACO), the Russian Central Bank found that it was able to secure substantial profits from the placement of state foreign exchange reserves on the foreign financial markets. FIMACO (managed by Eurobank) was now directed to convert those assets, first, into first class bank deposits within the European Union, and then into GKO-Federal loan bonds (OFZs). Thus in 1996, Eurobank, which had set up Fimaco, received from the Russian Central Bank a total of $855 million, which was employed to create back-up deposits at Eurobank, 'guaranteeing' the repayment of funds invested by Eurobank in Russian GKOs.

LAUNDERING TECHNIQUES IDENTICAL TO THOSE USED BY U.S. CRIMINAL INTELLIGENCE

According to the Russian Federation Prosecutor General's Office, amounts of $37.3 billion, DM9.98 billion, ¥379.9 billion, Ffr11.98 billion and £662.6 million of foreign exchange reserves that belonged to the Russian state were steadily 'transferred' over a five-year period. By the way, 'transfers' is a Soviet weasel word widely used in this underworld to denote scams, transactions, swaps, exchanges, deals and all categories of exotic financial and commodity transactions, without the need for specifics.

FIMACO and Eurobank both held between them a majority holding in the AKB Evrofinance joint-stock commercial bank (Moscow), evidently one of the leading 'players' (i.e. institutional gamblers) on the domestic futures market, accounting for between 10% and 15% of the total volume of trades on the Moscow Interbank Currency Exchange, a mechanism that was ideal for money-laundering on a grand scale. Accordingly, a perception in certain Moscow quarters, and in certain international financial circles, that FIMACO was employed to pump money into the Russian Central Bank's own win-win GKO pyramid Ponzi scheme, plus cream-offs, is quite plausible.

INTERACTION WITH U.S. SERIAL INTELLIGENCE CRIMINALISTS

However, other scenarios can easily be imagined - including collaboration with ongoing US 'Financial Warfare' mopping-up operations. Special mention should also be made of the apparently co-related 'French connection' to the 1998 Moscow meltdown. The US hedge fund, High-Risk Opportunities Hub Fund, filed a lawsuit claiming $1.0 billion against the big French banks, Credit Lyonnais and Societe Generale, charging them with failing to honour their obligations in respect of forward foreign exchange contracts on the Russian foreign exchange market. One could consider this as providing indirect evidence of participation of French banks - in addition to the Paris-based Soviet Eurobank and Evrofinance - on the GKO market.

Evidently, by May 1998, GKOs accounted for as much as 50% of the portfolio held by High-Risk Opportunities Hub Fund. Now consider these facts, concerning Soviet/Russian equivalents of US Title 18, Section 6 intelligence corporations authorised by Reagan's Executive Order 12333.

The following Russian criminalist-intelligence companies involved in the export of Russian raw materials (at below world market prices: see above) 'had' (may still have) accounts at Swiss affiliates of the French banks, Indosuez[2] and Credit Agricole:

- Balcar International Inc., and VAEKO Europe Ltd. (implicated in oil transactions of Balcar Trading a company of considerable notoriety in Russia).
- CROCO Company, of Panama, involved in the misappropriation of receipts from export operations of Kimineft, under the Komilux Finance project.
- Norwood Properties Inc., involved in petroleum shipments to Russian space launch centres.
- Andava and Forus (the Aeroflot affair).
- Kazakhstan: Altay Inc., Orel Capital Ltd., Berkut Holding Ltd., and other companies linked to President Nursultan Nazarbayev of Kazakhstan, a Moscow (Leninist) stooge.

The following very dubious Soviet/Russian intelligence corporations involved in the exportation of Russian raw materials (at well below world market prices: see above) 'had' (may still have) accounts at the Swiss affiliate of Paribas:

- Vitol SA, Geneva, Chechen oil exports.
- Danton Trading, Dublin, Ireland: Purchase of grain in Kazakhstan by way of barter payments towards Russian oil shipments.
- Itera International Energy, Georgia.
- Energo Handels AG, Zug (a special 'inner' tax haven), Switzerland: The diversion of receipts from the exportation of Russian gas outside Russia.
- Firms controlled by the Israeli-Russian citizen, Arkady Gaidamak: The shipment of weaponry to Angola in exchange for oil, in fulfilment of World Revolution strategic tasks.

These details, of course, reflect just the tip of a colossal iceberg of ongoing covert Soviet offshore company operations using Western banks - just like the activities of the American intelligence Title 18, Section 6 firms. In other words, elements of the deeply criminalised intelligence services of the covert Soviet Union and of the United States use the same basic criminalist methodology, and are 'in bed together'. As the 'takedown' of Leo Emil Wanta demonstrated, there is therefore no place for uncorrupt intelligence operatives in this milieu. No doubt it is routinely rationalised in US intelligence circles that Western intelligence has had no choice but to 'get down in the gutter' with the proficient and experienced Soviet offshore criminalists, on the pretext that this is the only way the West can keep 'up to speed' with what the Soviets are doing to disrupt the capitalist system.

This would, indeed, be a comforting thought - if it provided the sole rationale for this corrosive activity. But it doesn't. At least since the promulgation of President Ronald Reagan's Executive Order 12333, certain of the most powerful US intelligence-linked cadres, groups and operatives have succumbed to the obvious temptation to help themselves to vast accruals of funds, just like their Soviet counterparts.

Only the Americans concerned have been doing this on a far larger scale than the Soviets. That's one of the factors that is so alarming. According to several sources, the late veteran US presswoman Sarah McLendon was told by former President George Bush Sr., whom she interviewed in 1992:

'If the public were to find out what we have done, they would chase us down the streets and lynch us'[3]. Another version of this has George Bush Sr saying that 'if the American people were to find out what we've done, they would string us all up from lamp posts'. That in turn gave rise to this Author's quip that we might all do worse than buy shares in street furniture manufacturers. ■

Notes:

1. The US and Western perception that 'we won the Cold War' is completely false. With the benefit of the findings of our recent research, it is clear that this arrogant attitude was adopted by the United States and the United Kingdom, especially, because these two financial powers (the largest in the world) believed that what they perceived to be their 'successful' 'Financial Warfare' operations against the Soviet Union, brought the Soviet Union and its empire to its knees. Documentary evidence in reality shows that 'Financial Warfare' operations were being conducted against the USSR as early as 1988, and that they continued relentlessly to the end of 1991 - and that subsequently such US 'Black Operations' have continued, as though there had indeed never been any actual discontinuity and as though the covert USSR remains 'the enemy', which is actually the case. It should be observed that the United States and other predatory powers regard 'Financial Warfare' as just one element in a whole armoury of means of waging war: 'Financial Warfare' is officially considered unequivocally to be a standard method of conducting warfare - indeed, in many ways a more efficient means than the methods normally representative of modern warfare techniques. Equipped with this mentality, the United States and other Western financial powers (especially the United Kingdom) jumped to the conclusion that the successful 'takedowns' of the Soviet rouble, the Soviet gold reserves, and of other crucial Soviet resources, were directly responsible for the 'collapse' of the USSR.

While this was true, the Western financial powers were creatively double-crossed by the expert Leninist Soviet strategists, who nevertheless collaborated extensively (and continue to collaborate, as do their Chinese Communist counterparts), with Western 'Financial Warfare' intelligence operatives, by accepting their bribes, undertaking transactions with them, and entering willingly and extensively into operations, in which they had for decades been past-masters, knowing every variant of underworld scams invented by reprobate mankind.

Being somewhat unversed in Leninist thinking, the Americans may have failed to realise that the Soviets were in fact just 'going along' with their (US) 'Financial Warfare' projects, as they assisted and accelerated the long-prepared and deliberate pursuit of Moscow's 'collapsible Communism' strategy. It is virtually impossible to assist some American intelligence specialists to understand that they were duped, because they have been so convinced of their own intelligence superiority for so long, that they cannot bring themselves to recognise that they were outsmarted. In other words, they fell victim to the classic trap identified by the ancient Chinese strategist, Sun-Tzu, explained in his treatise The Art of War': 'Make your enemy arrogant'. What is more, US intelligence fell into this trap, notwithstanding the fact that, as in the Soviet Bloc's armed forces, and in the fake 'post'-Soviet military, US intelligence operatives are required to study The Art of War'. Obviously, some of them failed to understood or applied what they were required to read.

2. Indosuez London was a correspondent bank working with Status-Credit Bank Moscow on transactions for a Status-Credit Bank's client which was a Title 18, Section 6 US Government intelligence corporation.

3. Another extraordinary admission - this time by President George W. Bush Jr. - appears in the President's autobiography, entitled 'A Charge to Keep' [William Morrow and Company, New York, 2000], page 47. It reads as follows: 'My senior year [at Yale University] I joined Skull and Bones, a secret society, so secret I can't say anything more, ft was a chance to make fourteen new friends'.

- This admission reminds us, of course, that the President followed his father (year of 1968) as a member of this occult, acquisitive and disgusting, German-originating, Rose Croix-linked network, membership of which is incompatible with the Christianity that President George W. Bush professes. We add this point here to illustrate the curious habit that the Bushes seem to have of suddenly admitting things that, in more sober moments, they would not acknowledge. This habit appears to represent some kind of psychological response to the strain of keeping dark secrets all one's life, which these Illuminati, by their own choice - and because they lack the strength to extricate themselves from the horrors of their existence - have to endure. ■

ADDENDUM SEVEN: International Currency Review 29,2: December 2003

U.S. CRIMINALISM EXPOSED

U.S. 'PRIVATISED' INTELLIGENCE CRIMINALISM REVEALED IN COURT DOCUMENTS

On 5th September 2002, the Colorado US District Judge entered a judgment for $58,394,603, with a post-judgment interest of 1.8% from the date of judgment, against a Defendant calling himself Paul K. Bryan who, the judgment stated, conspired with unknown US Government officials to misappropriate investors' funds and financial instruments, and to convert the services of transaction intermediaries, including Bryan's CIA subordinates. The Plaintiff, a Moscow-based 'enterprise', Vizantia-Exclusive Ltd, alleged that Mr Bryan had promoted himself as a 'Commitment Holder' for the US Government and 18 foreign governments, as a banker and supplier of refined gold to the US Treasury, and as a manager of $335 billion worth of private funds. This information is taken from the website of Parad Law Offices, PC, based in Skokie, Illinois [information gathered on 15th November 2003]. Heini Demmer, et al v. Paul K Bryan, Special Air Operations Group, Inc., et al.

Note: The following analysis contains absolutely shocking, fully documented intelligence.

Via this case, which was adjudicated in the context of RICO (The Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organization Act, 18. U.S.,C. Sec. 1961, et sea.), it emerged that Paul K. Bryan (alternatively known as Lyle Edward Goeringer) 'was' the Director of Operations at the Central Intelligence Agency - one of the highest and most hands-on positions in the organisation. Attempts have been made to intimidate observers who have sought to draw attention to this case, with one 'whistleblower' recently receiving a direct death threat in the event that any further coverage of this material were to surface. However the outline details, in sanitised form, are available on the lawyer's website, and the text of the 'Second Amended Complaint' filed by the lawyer on behalf of Vizantia-Exclusive Ltd, has both been posted on the Internet and is available for inspection under case Number 00-71800 at a Court in another state - the United States District Court for the Eastern District of Michigan, Southern Division. The lawyer's website report states: 'The seven-day Michigan Federal jury trial (which ended on 15th May 2002) resulted in the award of $8,100,000 to the Plaintiff. The verdict amount is 27 times the Plaintiff's $300,000, which was stolen by Bryan's racketeering enterprise'. The suit alleged that CIA operatives defrauded investors in worldwide racketeering schemes under a pretext of investment in secret, high-yielding trading programs'. Vizantia-Exclusive, Ltd. v. Kristar, Inc., Eyeland Traders, Ltd, et al.

The lawyer's posted account of the Michigan Court trial continued:

'Vizantia-Exclusive was a Russian import/export gold mine and real estate development company which claimed to be a growing company. It invested $300,000 in a scheme promoted by Defendants Christenson and Bryan who claimed to have access to a secret, high-yield medium-term note-trading program. Defendants were able to convince the Plaintiff of their alleged high-level CIA positions by revealing to the Plaintiff its own background secrets, that only a few (Russian) Government officials would have known. [In other words, Vizantia-Exclusive was itself a Russian criminalist-intelligence corporation, engaged, like its criminalist US counterparts, in shady deals worldwide]. The Defendant Bryan allegedly convinced other victims of his company, Special Air Operations Group, of their affiliation with the US Government. Bryan misappropriated $2,000,000 (which resulted in the $58,394,604 judgment rendered by the Colorado Federal Court) from an Austrian investor, $3,124,000 from an Arizona company, financial instruments such as North Korea's Foreign Trade Bank Guarantees (valued at $4,645 billion), Bulgarian Bills of Exchange (about $108 billion) and so on Defendant Bryan produced a copy of correspondence and a Contract for the Sale of 320 trillion Iranian Rials (about $106 billion) to him, stipulated that he received about $6,000,000 in cash and admitted that he paid no income taxes from 1980 to the present'.

Vizantia-Exclusive [the Soviet-Russian criminalist-intelligence corporation] alleged violations of the RICO Act, fraud and conspiracy. It claimed that the company collapsed following the $300,000 loss because of its contracts and expected income from the Defendants' scheme; [and] it asked the jury for tens of millions of dollars because of the shocking and sensitive nature of the claims'. [Sic: In other words, the Soviet-Russian intelligence-criminal company represented to the jury that it was 'shocked' by the claims (that its secrets were revealed to it by the Defendants), and the jury 'boughf this fairytale, no doubt appalled by the detailed information concerning CIA 'Financial Warfare' operations and provocations worldwide, revealed in the Courtroom].

The lawyer's website posting concluded as follows: 'Defendants admitted that they took the money. Bryan argued that the scheme was orchestrated by Christenson and that the portion of

Plaintiff's money that Bryan received, $200,000, was payment to him from Christenson for bringing investment programs to Christenson for his investors. Christenson claimed Bryan was to blame'. In other words the two main US CIA operatives just blamed each other.

THE SECOND AMENDED COMPLAINT

The substantive information contained in this Court-filed document [Case Number 00-71800] filed for hearing before Judge Bernard A. Friedman in the Michigan Federal Court provides an eye-opening glimpse into the nature of the provocative, open-ended and relentless 'Financial Warfare' operations conducted internationally by American and other intelligence communities. Informed observers say that this kind of activity is directed 'only against enemies' of the United States. It can only be 'justified', if at all, on the cynical basis of the familiar pretext - namely, that other countries' criminalised intelligence services are also behaving in an equally neinous and irresponsible manner against sovereign governments and countries they consider to be enemies, including the United States.

But even if such a pretext were to be capable of withstanding detailed scrutiny, the kind of nefarious behaviour described in the brief summaries that follow, must invariably exacerbate underlying tensions between national governments, while negating continuing diplomatic attempts to cement relations between the affected countries. In the present case, we have an extraordinary example of a US Court case throwing light upon dark activities involving US and ongoing covert Soviet intelligence.

THE DEFENDANTS

Vizanna-Exclusive Ltd, a Russian company with its office in Moscow, sued the following parties:

- Kristar Inc, Michigan; Eyeland Traders Ltd, foreign; Special Air Operations, Inc., Colorado; David B Christenson, individually and as President of Eyeland Traders Ltd [note the cynical Illuminati use of the word 'Eye' in this title, for the All-Seeing Eye of Set] and Kristar, Inc., and Financial Director of Special Air Operations Group, Inc.; Paul K Bryan, individually, and as President and CEO of Eyeland Traders, Ltd and Special Air Operations Group, Inc.; and Gordon Neil Freese, individually and as CFO of Eyeland Traders, Ltd., and Special Air Operations Group, Inc.

In the Complaint, Paul K Bryan was identified as Lyle Edward Goeringer, associated with Rapid Air Emergency Response, Inc [called REAR], a defunct Colorado Corporation, as well as with Special Air Operations Group (also a defunct Colorado Corporation), called SOAG; Eyeland Traders, Ltd, an offshore company registered in Antigua, the West Indies [ETL]; Bryan Bank International, an offshore bank, also registered in Antigua, an important British Overseas Territory; and a Texas sole proprietorship, Bryan Group International. He resided in Dallas, Texas [the home State of the Bush Family].

The Second Amended Complaint alleged that 'defendant ETL under the Directorship of Bryan, became a Commitment Holder for 18 Governments, purchaser of gold for the US Treasury, and a manager of $160 to $211 billion of private funds, according to Exhibit A filed with the Complaint, an Eyeland Traders summary dated 15th October 1997.

Point 9 under the heading 'Parties' in the Complaint, reads as follows (the phrase 'who personally knows three US Presidents' being almost identical to a phrase used on behalf of Leo E. Wanta in papers made available to observers in the context of his own complaints against the US Government):

'9. Defendants Bryan, the CIA Director of Operations who personally knows three US Presidents, and his subordinate Christenson, worked for the CIA and the Presidential Committee (comprising past US Presidents and Government officials) at all times pertinent hereto'.

This sentence contains some extremely important information, namely:

(1). Confirmation of the existence of the Presidential Committee, which performs the same functions as the Leninist 'Security Council' or the 'Presiden'ts Council' - supragovernmental entities operating above the official structures of all Soviet-style Communist/Leninist Governments.

(2). Confirmation of the ongoing character of such US intelligence operations, of which former Presidents will necessarily have detailed working knowledge.

(3). Confirmation that intelligence (and therefore criminalist financial) operations occupy prominence, if not hegemony, over Government preoccupations at the Presidential level (an exact match with the pattern prevailing in Moscow).

The Complaint also noted that Kristar, Inc, is a 'defunct Michigan corporation', once controlled by David B Christenson, of Dexter, Michigan; and that Freese (Gordon Neil) had been associated with First Berkeley Capital Corporation (a Texas firm) and with Consolidated Trade and Commerce Ltd, registered in Panama City. It stated that 'Unknown US Government officials [who were] associated with Bryan's enterprise promoted him, put him in charge of global financial operations, confirmed Mr Bryan's affiliation with the CIA in response to background inquiries [sic], blocked victims' complaints about Bryan's illegal actions, concealed his felony convictions and psychiatric records, shared the profits with him, and otherwise conspired with Bryan's enterprise in executing its fraudulent racketeering schemes by providing it with logistical, technical, financial, legal, personal, official and geopolitical support'. Which is a 'tactful' way of confirming that the CIA was (is) engaged in global criminal operations [as confirmed in this Author's publications].

SUMMARY OF GLOBAL BLACK OPERATIONS

The Michigan Federal Court Complaint contained the following allegations against Bryan, the CIA Director of Operations, et al, all of which were of course facilitated by the 'privatisation' provisions of Executive Order 12333 [see page 20 of the present work for details]:

1. Fiduciary and common fraud:

Representing to Vizantia-Exclusive Ltd that they were in a position to generate colossal returns on funds, persuading them around 26th September 1996 to sign a one-year 'Agreement for Asset Management Program'. Accordingly, Vizantia SWIFT wired $300,000 into ETL's account with European Union Bank*, St John's Antigua, which had been opened on 17th September 1996. Bryan received the money and 'spent it as he deemed fit'. The defendants then made oral and written representations to Vizantia-Exclusive Ltd, that its funds were leveraged and profitably employed in Bryan's managed transactions involving:

- The repatriation of 1928-1934 Series US Federal Reserve Notes from Southeast Asia.
- The sale of 320,000,000,000,000 Iranian Rials at the rate of 4,200 IRR per US$1.0 held in Bryan's account with Bangkok Bank, Thailand, pursuant to a 50/50 splitting agreement signed by Bryan with the Thai Royal Family.
- R$50,000,000,000 held in Banco do Brazil, Sao Paolo exchanged for USD in Bank One, TX.
- Redemption of 212 million 1982/88 Series Argentine pesos for $180,200,000.

However the Soviet/Russian corporation 'could not verify the veracity of the Defendant's reports, because the Defendants stated that the Government-level transactions and high-yield programs were shrouded in secrecy, and no public records would be available to Plaintiff for confirmation thereof (an absolutely accurate statement).

The Michigan Complaint added that the Plaintiff misrepresented that Vizantia would receive funds after one year as stated in the agreement, lied that banking statements would be provided, induced Vizantia to surrender funds for exclusive control and use by them, failed to set up a trust account for Vizantia, converted the Plaintiff's funds for their own purposes, and deliberately defrauded them. In other words, the CIA ripped off a KGB entity.

2. Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organization Act accusations and death threats:

- Victims of fraud schemes concocted by the defendants were 'intimidated by death threats and invoking their CIA-based authority' - preventing enquiries 'as to actual transactions by shrouding them in secrecy, hurting the inquirers and forcing the victims to abandon their claim to commission or service compensation, or investment in the high-yielding trading programs'. Count 17 asserts as follows, confirming the 100% accuracy of our analysis that the CIA, exactly like the KGB, is a partly criminalised organisation using 'privatised' companies to conduct financial scams and provocations on a global scale:
- The enterprise ringleader. Defendant Bryan, the Director of Operations of the CIA reporting to the CIA Director, set up a series of teams seeking investment [sic] opportunities worldwide and working on a commission basis or pursuant to their CIA assignments'. This is the most important piece of information that the Author has been able to extract from US Court records, indicating that the Central Intelligence Agency wages Financial Warfare against targets all over the world, probably continuously.
- The scamming of North Korea: Messrs Bryan and Christenson boasted of and promised extremely high-yield returns on investments in their secret US Government programs to Dr Helmut Otto Schramm, CEO of the humanitarian organization 'UNIMO GmbH, of Dresden, (east) Germany, who acted as an intermediary for the North Korean Government's humanitarian programs backed by the (North Korean Government's) Bank Guarantees'. Here, Schramm, an East German intelligence (ongoing STASI?) officer [i.e., DVD] posing as a do-gooder, who somehow had contacts with opposite numbers in North Korea, acted as the CIA's cutout. The Count continues: 'Pursuant to... Agreements signed by Bryan, Schramm and North Korean Government officials turned over on January 24, 1996, the eight (8) original Bank Guarantees issued and honored by the Foreign Trade Bank of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea (the DPRK) to Volkskas Bank, Johannesburg, South Africa, which gave a Safekeeping Receipt to Christenson (SOAG)'.

The eight Bank Guarantees, having a market value of $4,645,000,000 and the Safekeeping Receipt 'came under the exclusive control of Bryan for obtaining cash credit lines by pledging the Bank Guarantees as a collateral, using the funds in trading programs and otherwise profiting from these financial assets'. Interestingly, Christenson then fell out with Mr Bryan - as happens in this 'Thieves' World', which probably explains why this case was allowed to proceed, or 'slipped through the net'. Normally what happens is that the US Presidential Committee intervenes, exerts pressure on the judge concerned, and procures that the case is buried, with suitable payoffs as required. Alternatively, this 'falling out' was a feint, to induce paralysis in case of litigation. At all events, the Court document states that 'Christenson advised Schramm by fax that Bryan under false pretenses stole the Safekeeping Receipt and repeated the story given to Plaintiff that Christenson cannot help the victim because Bryan is responsible for the asset theft'.

- The scamming of Bulgaria: Messrs Bryan and Christenson 'made false promises of high-yield returns on investments in secret Government trading programs to the Bulgarian Government'. In response, the ELMAZ 24 Consortium, the hinder of an asset management scheme supposedly benefiting the Bulgarian Government, transferred by mail Bills of Exchange having a face value of $100 million to Christenson for deposit in an account for Bryan's firm SOAG with Colorado National Bank. 'Bryan received these financial instruments issued by the Slavyeny Bank, Sofia, Bulgaria, plus at least $30,000 extracted from the Bulgarians under false promises.... Bryan converted and never returned these Bills of Exchange and money to the Bulgarian company in spite of their requests'. The Bulgarian entity was of course likewise an intelligence-linked enterprise. Therefore, Bulgaria, supposedly 'no longer an enemy' under the terms of the Joint Declaration of 22 States signed with pomp and circumstance by the NATO and Warsaw Pact powers on 19th November 1990, was relieved of $100 million by US criminalist-intelligence operatives under the direction of the CIA Director of Operations [the American-german named Goeringer] - evidently six years after that accord was signed.
- The scamming of a French party: Bryan-SOAG 'asserting to be Commitment Holder, Buyer and Seller of precious metals, financial instruments and corporate debentures, entered into a Joint Venture Agreement with Jean-Louis Vidalo, of France, who relying on Bryan's false promises, gave Bryan his Power of Attorney to employ three Certificates of Deposit for $30 million as a collateral to obtain cash credit lines and subsequent investment in trading programs. Vidalo wire-transferred these CDs issued by the Novacredi Bank, Brazil, for Makarska s.a., a Uruguayan mining company, which deposited $30 million in that bank for a four-year period and signed its rights to the CDs to Vidalo. Bryan converted these financial instruments obtained under false promises through his associates and used the CDs for obtaining cash credit lines or otherwise for his own and his US Government co-conspirators' benefit. [But] Bryan never returned the CDs and paid nothing to the CD owner'.
- The scamming of Iran: Using intermediaries in Thailand, 'Bryan and Christenson with their US Government co-conspirators diverted three Iraqi ships from their course and stole 320 trillion Iranian Rials ($106 billion). 'The Iranian Rials initially stored at the US Navy base in Thailand were deposited into Bryan's SAOG account at Bangkok Bank, Thailand. The Defendant Bryan became the legal owner or the IRR currency, entered into a 50/50 profit-sharing contract with the Thailand Royal Family and similar contracts with the Government of Free Vietnam and China, and sold the IRR as his own' [1996]. The Iranian cash notes were embezzled/misappropriated.
- Prince Hadji of North Borneo: In March 1997, 'Bryan requested Prince Hadji of North Borneo to give his 16 Argentine Peso cash notes to Bryan under a false promise of 'sample evaluation' and payment within four days or the return of the notes, if the exchange was not consummated'. The face value of the 1982-88 series Argentine Notes was 12 million Argentine pesos. Despite the Prince's numerous requests for the Notes' return, they were misappropriated.

According to Bryan's ex-wife Ramona Lee Bryan, who, the document asserted, suffered 'a Bryan-attempted murder in 1980', 'Bryan told Ramona that his boss is George Tenet, the CIA Director'. The fact that Bryan/Goeringer was specifically identified in this Court document as the CIA's Director of Operations - arguably the most powerful and critical of all CIA posts, since this official directs the Agency's world-wide operations - and that he conducted transactions through the European Union Bank* [sic] based in the British Overseas Territory of Antigua is, finally, of exceptional importance and interest. US House of Representatives Banking and Financial Services Committee report described this bank, established in Antigua by Mikhail Khodorkovsky [KGB] as a 'KGB money-laundering operation with stolen funds that were passed through Khodorkovsky of Menatep Bank as a KGB-controlled front firm'. Khodorkovsky, a KGB operative and a minor Government Minister under President Gorbachev was, according to 'Pravda' [18th November 2003] acting all along on KGB instructions. In fact Menatep Bank, which he directed from 1992 to 1998, was the primary channel for the laundering of monies derived from multiple intelligence scams out of Russia, frequently via Citibank in New York, and which provided 'financial services' to KGB-controlled mafiya 'families' and to Bulgarian and Hungarian intelligence. Khodorkovsky was selected by GRU-President Putin to act as the 'example' he needed, to persuade the other KGB-GRU 'oligarchs' to disgorge stolen state assets.

ADDENDUM EIGHT: International Currency Review 29,3/4: March 2004

SOVIET CRIMINALISM: THE NOREX CASE

From the text of the incredible US Court case that follows in conclusion, the intricacies of a KGB-directed operation to seize Russian oil assets and to cream off vast profits into offshore accounts, are exposed. It focuses inter alia upon Simon (Semen) Kukes - an Academician of the Soviet Academy of (Leninist) Sciences, the reputed author of a sizeable number of technical papers on energy issues, who emigrated to the United States at the time of the 'changes', became a prominent US oil man having married an American, and soon, of course, acquired US citizenship - subsequently resurfacing in Russia as a key oil magnate, taking over responsibility for running YUKOS from the imprisoned KGB operative Mikhail Khodorkovsky. In press interviews, Mr Kukes naturally played down his role in the massive nexus of fraud described in this Complaint.

This case provides detailed intelligence on the Soviet dimension of the criminalist intelligence underworld and how it has been interacting with corrupt Western offshore-based Illuminati intelligence structures. It provides a case study on the modus operandi of New Underworld Order cadres.

Here we have a blow-by-blow account of the way oil assets are or have been acquired by controlled operatives in the 'former' Soviet Union. The veil is drawn away from ongoing Soviet criminalist methodology - complete with private armies of thugs who perform 'enforcement' services for their criminalised intelligence 'barons'. And we find that about the only difference between the 'former' USSR and the United States in this context, is that the US intelligence cadres are encumbered by the 'rule of law', which is of course non-existent in the 'former' USSR.

But this case leads us even deeper into the chaos of the New Underworld Order. For a close reading of this Complaint will reveal that it is not just Semen Kukes, of dubious repute, who suddenly 'became' an American citizen.

Other named Russians, resident in the United States, are known KGB operatives who have been performing 'oligarch' services for the covert continuing Soviet strategy collective. So what, exactly, is going on here? It appears that the determined, relentless Western offensive to capture foreign oil resources - whether directly, as in Iraq, or indirectly - has been penetrated. Here we nave arguably the most sophisticated pre-emptive operation that any intelligence community could have devised. Anticipating the global 'grabitisation' free-for-all which is pulling the whole world towards the jungle, the Soviets took steps ahead of the game to position selected KGB/GRU operatives on the ground in the West, from where they have appeared to collaborate closely with Western oil interests in plans to develop Soviet petroleum and gas resources.

But what the Moscow strategists had in mind diverged from the intentions of Western oil interests and their compliant intelligence services (mainly British and American oil interests, which are rampaging around the world in pursuit of 'grabitisation' opportunities and in close cooperation). By inserting their own controlled operatives into the Western energy structures engaged in acquiring practical, management or actual control over Soviet energy assets, the KGB/GRU have ensured that they remain 100% in the driving seat - while the West imagines that, on the contrary, it is in full control.

The text of the case is reproduced verbatim, from the original document filed at the United States Court for the Eastern District of New York, copied by the Author on the Court's photocopier.

Bruce S. Marks (BM 0991), Marks & Sokolov LLP, 1835 Market Street, 28th Floor, Philadelphia, PA 19103. (215)569-8901. Counsel for Plaintiff.

Harris N. Cogan (HC 9313), Blank Rome Tenzer Greenblatt LLP, 405 Lexington Avenue, New York, New York 10174. (212)885-5000. Counsel for Plaintiff.

COMPLAINT. JURY TRIAL DEMANDED UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT SOUTHERN DISTRICT OF NEW YORK

NOREX PETROLEUM LIMITED: Plaintiff. Vs. ACCESS INDUSTRIES. INC.; KGB*; RENOVA INC.; KGB*; LEONARD BLAVATNIK; KGB*;
VICTOR VEKSELBERG; KGB*; ALFA GROUP CONSORTIUM; KGB*
CROWN FINANCE FOUNDATION; CTF HOLDINGS LTD; ALFA FINANCE HOLDINGS; SA;
KGB* CROWN LUXEMBOURG HOLDINGS SA ELLIOT SPITZ; TYUMEN OIL COMPANY;
SIMON KUKES; KGB* JOSEPH BAKALEYNIK; KGB* LT ENTERPRISES LIMITED; SANDWELL
ENTERPRISES LIMITED; EASTMOUNT PROPERTIES LIMITED; and
ASTONS CORPORATE MANAGEMENT: Defendants. * = 'alleged'.

PLAINTIFF NOREX PETROLEUM ["NOREX"] COMPLAINS, AS FOLLOWS:

INTRODUCTION

1. The instant case concerns injuries to the business and property of Norex as a result of a massive racketeering and money-laundering scheme beginning in the 1990's operated and directed by American citizens, residents and companies, including Access Industries, Inc., Renova, Inc., Leonard Blavatnik, and Victor Vekselberg in conspiracy with American citizens Simon Kukes, Joseph Bakaleynik, and Elliot Spitz of the "Alfa Group Consortium" (the "Illegal Scheme") to take over a substantial portion of the Russian oil industry through their control and use of the Tyumen Oil Company and its subsidiaries and affiliates ("TNK") based on an overall criminal structure which is set forth In Exhibit A. [Figure 99, page 711].

2. The Illegal Scheme included the illegal takeover (the "The Illegal Takeover") of Yugraneft, another Russian oil company of which Norex was majority shareholder, which was effected by TNK in the "old fashioned way" - through fraudulent representation, sheer physical force of armed thugs, and corruption of the local government, legal system and law enforcement, which refused to intervene and protect Norex's rights.

3. Immediately following the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, TNK seized its assets, including over $40 million which were held as dollar and rouble cash deposits and savings certificates and in excess of $500 million worth of oil production facilities, reserves, and receivables due from companies controlled by TNK.

4. The Illegal Scheme has been masterminded, operated and directed by Access Renova, Blavatnik, Vekselberg, Kukes, and Bakaleynik, through offices in New York City, and Spitz, through offices in London and New York, and via mail and wire communications originating from and sent to the United States, and travel between foreign jurisdictions and the United States.

5. In furtherance of the Illegal Scheme, Blavatnik, Vekselberg, Kukes, Bakaleynik, and Spitz, through their allies and companies which they control, directly or indirectly, in conspiracy with Alfa Group, committed or attempted to commit numerous criminal acts, including, but not limited to, bribery, extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, violation of the Travel Act, and tax fraud in furtherance of the Illegal Scheme.

6. The Illegal Scheme included, upon information and belief, bribes paid to Russian Government officials in order to enable Access/Renova and Alfa to take and maintain control of TNK during its privatization in 1997 and 1999, and bribes in order to enable TNK to take and maintain control of Yugraneft.

7. The Illegal Scheme included corruption related to the insolvency and eventual bankruptcy and reorganization of Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz ("NNG"), corruption of Russian bankruptcy proceedings of Kondpetroleum and Chemogorneft, which were subsidiaries of the Russian oil company, Sidanco, and legal proceedings related to Yugraneft.

8. During these corrupted bankruptcies, certain Defendants arranged for the sale of oil to TNK and export of oil to Alfa-owned "Crown Group" at well below market prices and then effected rigged auctions of the assets of the bankrupt companies in order to obtain their petroleum reserves, to the detriment of Sidanco and its shareholders, including BP-Amoco and the Harvard University Endowment Fund; as well as Norex, a creditor of both Chernogorneft and Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz.

9. These proceedings were so brazenly corrupted that Madeleine Albright, Secretary of State during the Administration of President Clinton, instructed the United States Export-Import Bank in 2000 not to guarantee loans for the sale of American manufactured equipment to TNK - a restriction only rescinded when TNK agreed to return some of the illegally stripped assets to the beneficial ownership of Sidanco.

10. In addition, in 2001, as reported by The Financial Times, the European Bank for Reconstruction and Development, placed the Alfa Group-owned Alfa Bank* on its "black list" on the basis of its business practices, making it no longer eligible for loans. [*This KGB bank is now the height of respectability. Its 'head of Strategy' in Moscow is a Mr Chris Weafer].

11. The Illegal Scheme included the agreed-upon diversion of profits from TNK to some Defendants, in part through the issuance of invoices for fabricated services by secretly

related offshore shell companies, in order to fraudulently avoid sharing such profits with TNK's other shareholders, including the Russian Government and American interests, and in violation of Russian and English tax law.

12. The various offshore shell companies which were secretly controlled by some Defendants, and operated in part by Astons Corporate Management, and received such funds, include LT Enterprise Limited, Sandwell Enterprises Limited, and Eastmount Properties Limited.

13. Tens of millions of dollars were wired through banks in the United States from the Crown Group to these offshore shell companies to pay invoices for fabricated services in order to create a slush fund, as evidenced by the invoices from Isle of Man based Sandwell and Bahamas based LT Enterprises attached as Exhibit B [not shown here].

14. These funds were then either kicked back to certain Defendants or, upon information and belief, used to bribe Russian Government officials.

15. The Illegal Scheme included a massive tax fraud by which monies laundered through the slush funds were paid to the offshore accounts, i.e. "o/s" of American and UK citizens, who concealed such payments from taxation in violation of American and English tax law, as evidenced by the email attached hereto as Exhibit C. [Revealing document was appended].

16. In addition, some Defendants arranged a scheme by which the Crown Group submitted false invoices to TNK in order to further divert its profits to the Crown Group and then to offshore slush fund companies, as evidenced by the email attached hereto.

17. Russian President Vladimir Putin stated in his 2001 annual address that "We practically are standing before a dangerous boundary, when a judge or other law enforcer can at will choose a rule, which seems to him the most appropriate. As a result, along with the 'shadow economy' we already have a kind of 'a shadow justice' taking shape".

18. President Putin also noted in 2001 that while corruption is the "misfortune of many countries... in Russia, this has reached such a magnitude that the government has no right to ignore it". [In other words, the monster created by the KGB itself, is out of control, as is the CIA in the United States].

19. As a result of the Illegal Scheme and Illegal Takeover, Norex has lost its interest in Yugraneft, which has an estimated value in excess of $500 million.

20. As compensation for its loss, Norex seeks compensatory and treble damages in excess of $1.5 billion for violation of RICO, 18 U.S.C. §1961 et seq., costs, and attorneys' fees.

JURISDICTION AND VENUE

21. Jurisdiction lies in this Court pursuant to 28 U.S.C. §1331 and 1337(a), 18 U.S.C. §1964(c) because this case arises under the laws of the United States, based on claims under the Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organizations Act ("RICO"), 18 U.S.C §1961 et sec..

22. Venue is proper in this District under 18 U.S.C. §1965 and 28 U.S.C §1391 because events and transactions have taken place in this District.

STATEMENT OF PATTERN OF RACKETEERING ACTIVITIES

23. At relevant times from 1997 to date, Defendants conspired with one another to defraud Norex and others and to obtain the property of Norex and others through illegal conduct including extortion, bribery and threatened acts of violence.

24. The complex scheme to defraud and racketeering activities through which the Defendants succeeded in taking illegally the property of Norex and others, consisted of an intricate pattern of individual transactions and group transactions.

25. In carrying out the scheme to defraud Norex and other victims, Defendants engaged, inter alia, in conduct in violation of criminal statutes including mail and wire fraud, 18 U.S.C. §1341 and §1343; interference with commerce by threats and violence, 18 U.S.C. §1951; interstate and foreign travel in aid of racketeering enterprises, 18 U.S.C §1952; laundering of monetary instruments, 18 U.S.C §1956; and money-laundering, 18 U.S.C. §1957.

26. The activities of the Defendants in the formation and execution of the scheme and artifice to defraud, acts of extortion, bribery and threatened violence, caused and con-tinue to cause pervasive and substantial harm to persons engaged in interstate and for-eign commerce, including harm to persons and businesses engaged in the petroleum industry worldwide, including the loss in value of the holdings of numerous Amer-icans who have invested in various companiesadversely affected by Defendants, including J.I.V., LLC, the owner of Norex, BP-Amoco and its American shareholders, the American shareholders of OAO Chernogorneft and numerous American companies which will not do business in Russia because of the conduct of the Defendants.

27. Further, some Defendants apparently corruptly influenced the courts and certain governmental bureaus of the Russian Federation, which, upon information and belief, were manipulated illegally through bribery to achieve the Defendants' ends.

28. During the relevant times, and in furtherance of and for the purpose of executing the scheme and artifice to defraud, Defendants on numerous occasions used and caused to be used interstate and foreign wire facilities as a means to obtain money and property by means of false pretenses, constituting the offense of wire fraud, in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1343.

29. During the relevant times, and in furtherance of and for the purpose of executing the scheme and artifice to defraud, Defendants conspired to, attempted to or did obstruct, delay or affect commerce by extortion as defined in, and in violation, of 18 U.S.C. §1951 (b)(1) and(2).

30. During the relevant times, and in furtherance of and for the purpose of executing the scheme and artifice to defraud, Defendants travelled in interstate and foreign commerce and used the mail, and caused others to do so, with the intent to commit acts of violence in furtherance of unlawful activity and to promote, manage, establish, carry on and facilitate the promotion, management, establishment and carrying on of unlawful activity, in violation of 18 U.S.C §1952.

31. During the relevant times, Defendants knowingly and intentionally transported, transmitted and transferred, and attempted to do so, monetary instruments and funds from inside the United States to or through a place outside the United States, and to a place in the United States from or through a place outside the United States, with the intent to promote the carrying on of specified unlawful activity, in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1956.

PARTIES AND OTHER IMPORTANT ENTITIES

PLAINTIFF

32. Plaintiff Norex Petroleum Limited ("Norex") is a corporation organized under the laws of Cyprus and maintains a representative office and conducts, via affiliates, business transactions in Calgary, Canada and is owned by J.I.V. LLC, which is organized under the laws of California.

33. At the time relevant thereto Norex was the majority shareholder of Yugraneft and lost the value of its interest when Yugraneft was seized through fraudulent representations and physical force and also was harmed by the illegal interference in its contractual relationships with Yugraneft as part of the Illegal Scheme, as described herein.

34. Norex is a "person" within the meaning of 18 U.S.C §1961(3) and 1964(c).

DEFENDANTS THE ACCESS/RENOVA DEFENDANTS

35. Defendant Access Industries, Inc. ("Access") is a company organized under the laws of the State of New York and maintains its principal place of business in New York City.

36. Defendant Renova, Inc. ("Renova") is a company organized under the laws of the State of New York and maintains a place of business in New York City.

37. Defendant Leonid Blavatnik ("Blavatnik") is a citizen of the United States who maintains a residence in New York City and owns and controls, directly or indirectly, Access and Renova.

38. Defendant Victor Vekselberg ("Vekselberg") is a permanent resident of the United States and owns and controls, directly or indirectly, Renova.

39. Access and Renova ("Access/Renova") own and control, directly or indirectly, approximately 50% of the Tyumen Oil Company.

THE ALFA-CROWN DEFENDANTS

40. Defendant Alfa Group Consortium ("Alfa Group") is an unincorporated association of various affiliated companies set forth below.

41. The Alfa Group consists of Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings, SA; Crown Luxembourg Holdings SA; OAO Alfa Bank; Alfa Cap-

ital Markets (USA), Inc.; Crown Commodities Ltd.; Crown Trade and Finance Limited; Crown Resources, AG; Crown Resources (USA), Inc.; OOO Alfa-Eco*; and various other related companies whose identities are yet to be determined.

*OOO stands for a limited liability company in Russian.

42. Defendant Crown Finance Foundation ("CFF") is a "foundation" (similar to a business trust) organized under the laws of Liechtenstein, a country known for its bank secrecy law.

43. Upon information and belief, the beneficial owners of CFF are Russian oligarch Mikhail Fridman ("Fridman"), Alexey Kuzmichev ("Kuzmichev"), and German Khan ("Khan").

44. Defendant CTF Holdings Ltd. ("CTF Holdings") is a company organized under the laws of Gibraltar.

45. CTF Holdings is owned and controlled by CFF.

46. Defendant Alfa Finance Holdings, SA ("Alfa Finance") is a company organized under the laws of Luxembourg and shall include any predecessor company.

47. Alfa Finance is owned and controlled by CTF Holdings.

48. Alfa Finance is the holding company which owns the banking, financial and industrial divisions of the Alfa Group.

49. Defendant Crown Luxembourg Holdings, S.A. ("Crown Luxembourg") is a company organized under the laws of Luxembourg and shall include any predecessor company.

50. Crown Luxembourg is owned and controlled, directly or indirectly by CTF Holdings.

51. Crown Luxembourg is the holding company owning the trading division of Alfa Group.

The Alfa Banking and Financial Division

52. The banking and financial division of the Alfa Group consists of Alfa Bank, Alfa Capital Markets (USA), Inc. and other companies.

53. OAO Alfa Bank ** ("Alfa Bank") is a [KGB - Ed.] bank organized under the laws of the Russian Federation and a member of the Alfa Group. **"OAO" stands for Open Stock Company, a corporate format that provides for the company to have more than 50 shareholders.

54. Alfa Capital Markets (USA), Inc. ("Alfa Capital Markets") is a corporation organized under the laws of the United States, maintains an office in New York City, and is a member of the Alfa Group.

55. Upon information and belief, Alfa Capital Markets is used to structure the laundering of the proceeds of the Slush Fund for investment in the United States, such as the recent acquisition of Golden Telecom, Inc., a publicly held American company, by the Alfa Group [i.e., the KGB had bought a US telecommunications/ technology firm].

56. Alfa Bank and Alfa Capital Markets are owned and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Alfa Finance.

The Crown Trading Division

57. The commodities trading division consists of the "Crown Group" of companies which is owned and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Crown Luxembourg.

58. Crown Commodities Ltd.. ("Crown Commodities") is a company organized under the laws of England and Wales and a member of the Crown Group.

59. Crown Trade and Finance Limited ("CTF Ltd.") is a company organized under the laws of Gibraltar and a member of the Crown Group.

60. Crown Resources AG ("Crown AG") is a company organized under the laws of Switzerland and a member of the Crown Group.

61. Crown Resources (USA) Inc. ("Crown Resources") is a corporation organized under the laws of the United States and maintains a place of business in New York City and a member of the Crown Group.

62. The Crown Group trades oil and other commodities.

63. Defendant Elliot Spitz ("Spitz") is a citizen of the United States who managed and operated the Crown Group.

64. OOO Alfa-Eco ("Alfa-Eco") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation which was used by the Alfa Group for trading purposes, and is a member of the Alfa Group.

The Industrial Division

65. The Industrial Division consists of various companies which own and control, directly or indirectly, industrial companies.

66. Alfa Finance owns and controls, directly or indirectly, approximately fifty percent of the Tyumen Oil Company.

THE TNK DEFENDANTS

67. Defendant OAO Tyumen Oil Company ("TNK") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation and does business in the United States.

68. Defendant Simon Kukes** ("Kukes") is a citizen of the United States and is the President and Chief Executive Officer of TNK.

69. Defendant Joseph Bakaleynik ("Bakaleynik") is a citizen of the United States and is the First Vice President of TNK.

70. German Khan ("Khan") is the First Vice President and Executive Director of TNK.

71. Igor Nam ("Nam") is an officer of TNK.

72. Alexander Berman was an officer of an affiliate of TNK who was illegally instated as the General Director of Yugraneft as part of the seizure.

73. OAO TNK-Nyagan ("TNK-NG") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation which is wholly owned by TNK and was used as TNK's vehicle in the corrupt bankruptcy of Kondpetroleum.

74. OAO TNK-Nizhnevartovsk ("TNK-NV") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation which is managed and controlled by TNK and was used as TNK's vehicle to strip assets from Chernogorneft in the corrupt bankruptcy of Chernogorneft.

75. TNK is operated and managed by Americans [sic!] Simon Kukes** and Joseph Bakaleynik and owned, directly or indirectly, approximately 50% by Access/Renova and approximately 50% by Alfa Groups.

76. During all relevant times, the Chairman of the Board of TNK was the Governor of the Tyumen Oblast, first Leonid Roketsky and then Sergey Sobyanin.

**A Soviet Academician-operative who 'emigrated' to the United States in the early 1990s, married an American woman, became a top oil executive and then resurfaced in Russia in control of key 'US-managed' oil assets.

THE "SLUSH FUND" COMPANIES*

77. Defendant LT Enterprise Limited ("LT") is a company organized under the laws of The Bahamas and is controlled, directly or indirectly, by Spitz and Kuzmichev.

78. Defendant Sandwell Enterprises Limited ("Sandwell") is a company organized under the laws of the Isle of Man and is controlled, directly or indirectly, by Spitz and Kuzmichev.

79. Defendant Eastmount Properties Limited ("Eastmount") is a company organized under the laws of the Isle of Man and is controlled, directly or indirectly, by Spitz and Kuzmichev.

80. LT, Sandwell, and Eastmount (collectively, the "Slush Fund Companies") are some of the companies operated by the Alfa Group which submitted invoices for fabricated services to the Crown Group and in turn received over $100 million wired through banks in the United States during the period of the Illegal Scheme.

One page of the Complaint is missing from the Author's file here...

... Redhill Properties Limited, Wasdale Limited, Watford Limited, Beechville Trading Limited, and Banstead Enterprises Limited.

89. Astons Corporate Management created many of these companies for employees of Access/Renova and/or Crown so that they could open bank accounts at the National Westminster Bank located on the Isle of Man in order to receive secret salary and bonus payments which were concealed from taxation authorities in the United States, United Kingdom and Russia.

90. Astons, through its employees and officers, such as G. Caine, also sent invoices and statements of account for millions of dollars of fabricated services to Crown, as evidenced by Exhibit B.

91. Based on its involvement in creating and operating the Slush Fund Companies and their bank accounts, Astons knew that it was participating in the Illegal Scheme by directly effecting various illegal activities, including money-laundering and tax fraud, so that Access/Renova and the Alfa Group could effect the Illegal Scheme.

92. Each Defendant is a "person" within the meaning of 18 U.S.C. §1961(3) and 1964(c).

*Note: This was the phrase used in the Complaint itself. This information is in the public domain because it is the text of a legal Complaint, reflecting the obvious hazards of criminalism. The 'Dark Actors Playing Games' have a perennial problem living with exposures revealed in Court documents.

THE ACCESS/ALFA KGB MONEY-LAUNDERING SCHEME

ACCESS (BLATAVNIK)
RENOVA (VEKSELBERG)
ALFA Group CONSORTIUM
Crown Finance Foundation (Liechtenstein)
Alfa Finance Holdings SA
50%
50%
TNK (KUKES, BLATAVNIK)
OIL
Illegal takeover
OIL
Crown Resources AG
Crown Trade and Finance Limited
Crown Commodities Limited
$
Sandwell Enterprises (Isle of Man)
LT Enterprise (Bahamas)
Futura (Panama) SPITZ
Eastmount (Isle of Man) KUSMITCHOV
Lamport Ltd (Isle of Man) Salaries
Freebrow Investment
Riverside Cay Limited
Redwood Trading Inc.
Scorpio Res.
Aruba Investment & Trade, SA
Banstead Enterprises Limited
Wasdale Ltd (Isle of Man)
Beechville Trading Ltd
Redhill Properties Ltd. (Isle of Man)
Weststone Investments Ltd (Isle of Man)
Inverforth Properties Ltd (Isle of Man)
Owl Investments Ltd (Isle of Man)

Figure 99: Detailed diagram of the Access/Alfa money-laundering scheme included with the Complaint filed by Norex Petroleum in the US Southern District Court of New York on 25th February 2002. This lawsuit not only throws light on certain precise mechanisms developed for laundering assets by Soviet criminal intelligence, but also describes how Yugraneft once an oil subsidiary of Norex, was stolen by means of fraud, physical violence and local corruption. Above all, it illustrates the criminalism in which the KGB-GRU, like the CIA, specialises. The case illustrates the point that intelligence criminalism, which operates beyond the rule of law (in the sewer) runs the constant risk of ending in recrimination and litigation, which is the one outcome that all parties seek to avoid, because dark secrets leak from the Courts into the public domain. Hence this exposure of Illuminati behaviour.

RUSSIAN VICTIMS OF THE ILLEGAL SCHEME

93. ZAO Yugraneft Corporation* ("Yugraneft") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation, which was illegally seized using fraudulent documents and armed thugs as part of the Illegal Scheme, as detailed here. *"ZAO" stands for Closed Stock Company, which is authorized to have no more than 50 shareholders.

94. OAO Siberian Far Eastern Oil Co. ("Sidanco") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation, which owned the majority interests of its subsidiaries, Kondpetroleum and Chernogorneft, and was harmed by the corrupt bankruptcies of these subsidiaries.

95. OAO Kondpetroleum ("Kondpetroleum") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation, which was stripped of its assets as the result of a corrupt bankruptcy proceeding, which were part of the Illegal Scheme, as described herein.

96. OAO Chernogorneft ("Chernogorneft") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation, which was stripped of its assets, including its shares in Yugraneft, as the result of a corrupt bankruptcy proceeding, which were part of the Illegal Scheme, as described herein.

97. OAO Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz ("NNG") is a company organized under the laws of the Russian Federation, of which 38% was owned by TNK, and over which TNK obtained full control through corrupt proceedings, as described herein.

AMERICAN INTERESTS HARMED BY THE ILLEGAL SCHEME

98. Numerous American interests have been harmed by the Illegal Scheme, including those set forth below.

99. BP plc, formerly known as BP-Amoco ("BP-Amoco"), is a corporation with various subsidiaries and many shareholders in the United States.

100. BP-Amoco was a shareholder of Sidanco at all relevant times.

101. The Harvard University Endowment Fund ("Harvard") is an unincorporated fund owned by Harvard University.

102. Harvard was a shareholder in Kantupan Holdings Co. Ltd.. ("Kantupan"), an investment vehicle which, directly or indirectly, owned 40% of Sidanco, at all relevant times.

103. BP-Amoco and Harvard were harmed by the false bankruptcies of Kondpetroleum and Chernogorneft by which the assets of these companies were stripped as part of the Illegal Scheme, destroying the value of Sidanco's interests therein, as described herein.

104. Upon information and belief, citizens of the United States were shareholders of American Depository Receipts ("ADR's") of Chernogorneft (collectively, the "Chernogorneft American Investors"), which were managed by the Bank of New York in New York City.

105. The Chernogorneft American Investors were harmed by the corrupt Chernogorneft bankruptcy, the illegal diversion of profits from Chernogorneft to TNK and Crown Group and the Slush Fund Companies as part of the Illegal Scheme, as described herein.

106. Upon information and belief, citizens of the United States were shareholders of TNK subsidiaries (collectively, the "TNK American Investors").

107. The TNK American Investors were harmed by the illegal diversion of profits from TNK to the Crown Group and then to the Slush Fund Companies as part of the Illegal Scheme, as described herein.

BACKGROUND

108. Unlike countries with long developed free-market systems, the economic system that emerged in Russia following the dissolution of the Soviet Union in 1992 [sic! - Ed.) was largely unchecked by government laws or agency regulations.

109. As a result of privatization of the petroleum, banking, and other industries, there emerged a group of wealthy and politically influential individuals commonly known in Russia as "oligarchs". [These people are ALL KGB/GRU officers - Ed.].

110. These oligarchs often have direct connections with Russian organized criminal enterprises which they use to extort other businessmen and exert their influence over the Russian legal and bureaucratic mechanisms, which provide special favours to them.

111. In the absence of effective government regulation and law enforcement these oligarchs use their wealth to influence local regional and national officials, including judges, to issue decisions favorable to businesses operated or controlled by the oligarchs.

112. According to the Harvard University's Belfer Center for Science and International Affairs acting in cooperation with the Strengthening Democratic Institutions Project (SDI), "Russia's oligarchic

groups exert considerable control over the country's economic policies, politics in general and the media: politics can be said to have been somewhat privatized during the nation's economic privatization".

113. On September 21,1999, Arnaud De Borchgrave, Director of the Global Organized Crime Project Center for Strategic and International Studies, gave sworn testimony before the United States House of Representatives Committee on Banking and Financial Aid Services on the status of economic crime within the Russian Federation.

114. De Borchgrave testified that according to research conducted by the Russian Organized Crime Taskforce, as published in the Russian Organized Crime Report, Russia's Court system is ineffective, does not consistently enforce established contract and commercial rights, has limited enforcement powers, and has become a de facto adjudicator for companies operated by economic criminals.

115. The report further points out that corruption pervades every level of Russia's bureaucracy and has infiltrated the Russian banking system and financial markets.

116. The report cautioned that "the lack of a formal legal infrastructure which is applied uniformly and publicly to all citizens, foreigners and companies operating in Russia, allows criminal groups to escape due process of the law and legitimate business and citizens to be victimized". [This is what is intended globally, come The New Underworld Order].

117. According to testimony before the Congress of the United States of America, the Russian Government's anti-corruption program has been unsuccessful due to a lack of resources and the fact that salaries of government officials are so near the poverty level, that it is virtually impossible to eliminate corruption at the local levels.

THE ILLEGAL SCHEME

118. As described below, Defendants engaged in an illegal scheme and artifice (the "Illegal Scheme") which is open-ended and which was intended to defraud Norex and other persons.

119. Defendants have conspired together and acted in concert to commit numerous acts of fraud, violence, and other illegal activity in furtherance of the Illegal Scheme.

120. The Illegal Scheme has been used to defraud multiple victims and poses a substantial societal harm, in particular by defrauding persons in the United States.

THE CORRUPT 1997 TNK PRIVATIZATION

121. After the collapse of the Soviet Union in 1992 [sic], the Russian Federation began to privatize the Russian oil industry.

122. In the industry, vertically integrated holding companies were established, each of which included a number of subsidiaries - oil production units, refineries, and marketing units.

123. In 1997, TNK was partially privatized, with a 40% controlling stake purchased by Access/Ren-ova and the Alfa Group [i.e., by the KGB/GRU - Ed.], through joint venture investment vehicle known as ZAO Novy Holding.

124. The 1997 privatization of TNK was corrupt and scandalous, even by Russian standards.

[Note: This is not the Author' statement: it is integral with the text of the Complaint],

125. Rather than providing for the sale of 40% of TNK's shares in a fair auction, the State Property Committee, headed by Alfred Koch ("Koch"), required any bidder to also own a certain refining unit, a controlling share of a company developing submersible oil pumps, and certain patents.

126. Not surprisingly, the companies which owned the refining unit, the controlling share of the submersible oil pump company, and certain patents were controlled by Access/Renova and Alfa Group.

127. A successful bidder was then required to purchase these three assets at a price in excess of $90 million, which was far in excess of their worth, and, further assume the risk that Access/Renova and Alfa, might resist such a sale.

128. In essence, this rigged structure guaranteed that Access/Renova and Alfa would be the winner of the auction at the minimum bid - which included a requirement to invest certain funds in TNK -which was set hundreds of millions of dollars below the true value of such an interest in TNK.

ROUTINE USE OF CRIMINAL BEHAVIOUR AT INTERGOVERNMENTAL LEVEL

Detailed information about criminalist intelligence operations appears quite frequently in Court documents. This is one of the primary ironies of the life led by 'Dark Actors Playing Games'. On the one hand, they operate in a hidden jungle where the Rule of Law does not apply. On the other hand, when they have been double-crossed, scammed or otherwise defrauded, they rely with ruthless determination upon the judicial system and the Rule of Law in defence of their interests. This is of course a manifestation of the double-mind-edness of Illuminati cadres, referred to extensively in the main text. In the context revealed by this Complaint, an additional layer of irony arises from the reality that 'socialist legality' in both the Soviet and fake 'post'-Soviet contexts equates to whatever dominant apparatchiks may arbitrarily decide can be applicable. ■

129. For example, a special investigation by the General Accounting Chamber of Russia determined that the 1997 privatization violated numerous aspects of Russian law and plainly was concluded to favour the successful bidder.

130. Among the sixteen counts of violations of Russian laws and regulations listed by the General Accounting Chamber, was that the State Property Committee responsible for privatization failed to verify the legality of the source of funds used by Novy Holding to purchase its interest in TNK

131. Access/Renova and Alfa remitted bribes by means of the wiring of funds through banks in the United States to Koch and other Russian Government officials in order to obtain their support for the corrupt privatization of TNK in 1997.

132. Such allegation is based on common knowledge that Russian government officials were routinely bribed during privatization of state industries.

133. Such allegation is based on the lack of any other credible explanation for the requirement that the three assets be owned by the successful bidder and, further by the failure of the State Property Committee to compel the fulfilment of all investment conditions - even in violation of an edict by then President Boris Yeltsin that prohibited the transfer of title to the shares in TNK until all investment conditions were fulfilled.

THE CORRUPT 1999 TNK PRIVATIZATION

134. Ultimately, in 1999, TNK was fully privatized, with the remaining portion of its shares sold to Access/Renova and the Alfa Group, this time through ZAO Noviye Prioritety.

135. The 1999 final privatization of TNK was equally corrupt.

136. Once again, the terms of the privatization were set by the State Property Committee in a fashion unduly favorable to Access/Renova and Alfa.

137. The minimum price set for the 1999 auction was so low (and so obviously corrupted) that the Russian Duma even passed a resolution urging the cancellation of the sale.

138. Nonetheless, despite the Duma's resolution, the 1999 auction resulted in Access/Renova and Alfa acquiring the remaining shares.

RUSSIAN BANKRUPTCIES

139. Unfortunately, because of corruption in the Russian judiciary, which is "influenced" by powerful Russian business [KGB] interests, such as Access/Renova, Alfa, and TNK, the Russian bankruptcy process is used as an aggressive weapon by corporate predators to acquire victim companies or their assets.

140. The typical blueprint for "bankruptcy theft" in Russia by a corporate predator is managed in the following manner*:

(a). Arrange for the filing of a petition, placing the corporate victim into involuntary bankruptcy, often through connections with the local Federal or Regional Government, even if the victim is solvent and able to pay its debts;

(b). Arrange for the appointment of a "friendly" external manager (similar to a trustee under American bankruptcy law) of the victim through the corrupt Russian Court system and, thus, take control of the victim from its management and shareholders;

(c). Direct the external manager to cancel contracts for the sale of the victim's product with the existing trading partners and replace them with contracts with the predator's affiliated companies, often at prices well below market, thus diverting profits from the victim to the predator; (d). Obtain control of the creditors' committee, which decides various issues during the bankruptcy either by forcing other claimants to sell their claims to the predator, arranging for the external manager to create sham claims in favour of the predator, or arrangement for the preferential payment of creditors unfriendly to the predator (and thus eliminating them from voting);

(e). Once the profits are stripped from the victim, have the external manager declare that it cannot exist as a continuing entity and then liquidate its assets through a rigged judicial auction by which the predator acquires the assets for a pittance of their real worth.

141. As stated by the Head of the Russian Federal Service for Financial Recovery, Tatiana Trefilova, bankruptcy "is a weapon used against economic and political rivals".

142. According to the Russian Duma Speaker, Gennadiy Seleznev, "bankruptcy has become an instrument for redistribution of property" [back into the hands of KGB-GRU ops].

143. Access/Renova and Alfa followed the above blueprint to the letter in regard to NNG, Kondpetroleum, and Chernogorneft.

*Note: The abuse of bankruptcy arrangements by predatory intelligence entities with access to limitless corrupt sources of funds is not unknown in other contexts and parts of the world. However the practice of forcing targeted victims into bankruptcy when they are solvent is a particular speciality of Soviet criminalists.

Bruce S. Marks (BM 0991)
Marks & Sokolov, LLP
1835 Market Street, 28th Floor
Philadelphia, PA 19103
(215) 569-8901
Counsel for Plaintiff

Harris N. Cogan (HC 9313)
Blank Rome Tenzer Greenblatt LLP
405 Lexington Avenue
New York, New York 10174
(212) 885-5000
Counsel for Plaintiff

DOC #

02 CV 1499

UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT
SOUTHERN DISTRICT OF NEW YORK

NOREX PETROLEUM LIMITED

Plaintiff

v.

ACCESS INDUSTRIES, INC.;
RENOVA, INC.;
LEONARD BLAVATNIK;
VICTOR VEKSELBERG;

ALFA GROUP CONSORTIUM;
CROWN FINANCE FOUNDATION;
CTF HOLDINGS LTD;
ALFA FINANCE HOLDINGS, SA;
CROWN LUXEMBOURG HOLDINGS SA;
ELLIOT SPITZ;

TYUMEN OIL COMPANY;
SIMON KUKES;
JOSEPH BAKALEYNIK;

LT ENTERPRISES LIMITED;
SANDWELL ENTERPRISES LIMITED;
EASTMOUNT PROPERTIES LIMITED; and
ASTONS CORPORATE MANAGEMENT;

Defendants.

COMPLAINT

JURY TRIAL DEMANDED

FILED

***Inset:* Page 50 of the original Court Complaint document obtained by the Author from the United States Eastern District Court of New York, using the Court's photocopying facilities.**

Figure 100: The cover sheet of the Complaint lodged by Norex Petroleum in the US Southern District Court of New York on 25th February 2002. From this case, the Author was able to verify dimensions of the intelligence warfare which rages behind the scenes as the intelligence services of the covert Soviets and the United States and Britain wrestle ferociously, both internally and externally, for control over energy assets in the 'former' USSR. Mr Simon (Semen) Kukes, who emerged as the Chief Executive of YUKOS, following the arrest and incarceration of Mikhail Khodorkovsky, a KGB operative and a former minor Minister in Gorbachev's Government was a Soviet Academician (KGB) who managed to metamorphose into a leading US oil executive (Conoco-Phillips) and was then 'translated' to be CEO of TNK (the Tyumen Oil Company).

THE CORRUPT NIZHNEVARTOVSK NEFTEGAZ PROCEEDINGS

144. Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz ("NNG") is an oil company located in the Khanty-Man-siysky Autonomous District of Russia, which is part of the Tyumen Oblast (Region).

145. In 1997, after acquiring 40% of TNK, Access/Renova and Alfa Group arranged through corrupted governmental officials to divert flow of oil from NNG to TNK.

146. As a result, TNK was able to take over NNG and force it into bankruptcy proceedings which resulted in the stripping of assets of NNG and their transfer to other TNK controlled companies.

147. Norex's interests were thus directly and adversely affected by the corrupt NNG Bankruptcy and Reorganization and stripping of assets, because, Yugraneft, in which Norex was the majority shareholder, did not receive the oil owed to it by NNG.

THE CORRUPT KONDPETROLEUM BANKRUPTCY

148. Kondpetroleum, a subsidiary of Sidanco at all relevant times, is located in the Khanty-Mansiysky Autonomous District of Russia, which is part of the Tyumen Oblast.

149. During tne time of the bankruptcy, the governor of the Tyumen Oblast was Leonid Roketsky, who also was the chairman of TNK's Board of Directors.

150. In September 1998, the Kondpetroleum bankruptcy was initiated.

151. During the bankruptcy, TNK arranged for the appointment of its handpicked candidate, Boris Nuriev ("Nuriev") as Kondpetroleum's external manager.

152. Nuriev immediately cancelled most of the oil sale contracts with Sidanco, and, not surprisingly, replaced them with contracts with TNK controlled entities eventually diverting the oil flows to Crown Group.

153. These sales of oil were at drastically reduced prices, resulting in the diversion of millions of dollars of profit to Crown Group.

154. As a result of these diverted profits, the external manager "found" that Kondpetroleum was insolvent and proposed sale of assets, which was approved by the corrupt Court on December 7, 1998.

155. Bidders other than TNK were wrongfully obstructed from bidding in the auction.

156. As a result, on October 21, 1999, the assets of Kondpetroleum were auctioned to a TNK affiliate created for the purposes of this bankruptcy, at approximately one-third of their appraised value.

THE CORRUPT CHERNOGORNEFT BANKRUPTCY

157. Chernogorneft is also located in the Khanty-Mansiysky Autonomous District of Russia which is part of the Tyumen Oblast.

158. In October 1998, the bankruptcy of Chernogorneft was initiated.

159. During the bankruptcy, TNK arranged for the appointment of its handpicked candidate, Vasily Bikin, as the external manager on May 27, 1999.

160. Shortly thereafter, Bikin was replaced with another TNK ally, Alexander Gorshkov ("Gorshkov") as the external manager on August 3, 1999.

161. In order to acquire control of the creditors' committee of Chernogorneft, TNK arranged for Alfa Bank to lend Chernogorneft $15 million in order to settle a debt owed to the United States Export-Import Bank ("Ex-Im Bank"), providing an illegal preference to the Ex-Im Bank over Chernogorneft's other creditors.

162. Additionally, in order to take control of the creditor's committee of Chernogorneft, TNK arranged for the illegal reduction of the $35 million debt to the European Bank for Reconstruction and Development ("EBRD") to $26 million, providing an illegal preference to the EBRD over Chernogorneft's other creditors.

163. The purpose of this was to remove the Ex-Im Bank and EBRD as creditors, thus strengthening TNK's control over the creditors' committee.

164. At the direction of TNK, Bikin and Gorshkov arranged for the sale of Chernogorneft oil through TNK-controlled entities, which, in turn, directed the oil flows to the Crown Group, at below market prices in order to divert the revenues and profits of Chernogorneft to the Crown Group.

165. Gorshkov later stopped the export of oil in order to cause Chernogorneft to be unable to pay its debts.

166. Following the diversion of profits from Chernogorneft to the Crown Groups, Gorshkov made the determination that Chernogorneft was insolvent and that its assets needed to be sold at auction as soon as possible.

167. The conduct of Gorshkov was so blatantly illegal that his license was revoked by the Federal Service of Russia for Insolvency Proceedings in October 1999.

168. Even though Gorshkov's license was revoked at that time, in October 1999, he presided over the TNK-controlled creditors' committee which approved the terms of the sale of Chernogorneff s assets at a bankruptcy auction.

169. Not surprisingly, the terms of the auction were designed to discourage any persons other than TNK from participating and, in fact, only two bidders attended the auction:

TNK and TNK-NV

170. Furthermore, Gorshkov's actions in preparing the auction essentially precluded other companies from participating in it.

171. For example, despite Sidanco's request for a list of assets to be auctioned, Gorshkov refused to provide such, alleging he did not have enough paper on which to print the list.

172. In fact, no requested documents were provided to Sidanco prior to the rigged auction.

173. Ultimately, the auction was held despite several decisions of Russian Courts prohibiting the sale, and the assets of Chernogorneft were transferred to TNK-NV at below market prices, including its shares in, Yugraneft which violated Norex's right of first refusal set forth in the Yugraneft shareholders agreement.

174. Norex's interests were, thus, directly and adversely affected by the corrupt Chernogorneft bankruptcy because its right of first refusal for Chernogorneft's shares in Yugraneft was violated, and, further, Yugraneft, in which Norex was majority shareholder, did not receive the oil owed to it by Chernogorneft.

SECRETARY OF STATE MADELEINE ALBRIGHT'S INTERVENTION ON BEHALF OF THE AMERICAN INTERESTS TO BLOCK EX-IM BANK'S GUARANTEE OF LOANS TO TNK

175. As a result of the theft of the assets and profits of Kondpetroleum and Chernogorneft through the corrupt bankruptcies, American investors in Sidanco took legal action.

176. An action was filed in the Supreme Court of New York against instant Defendants Blavatnik, Access/Renova, and TNK by an investment fund owned, in part, by Harvard.

177. In addition, BP-Amoco initiated a major campaign in Washington, DC to block Export-Import Bank guarantees of loans to TNK for the purchase of equipment from US manufacturers.

178. Ultimately, by letter dated December 21, 1999, a copy of which is attached hereto as Exhibit E [see Figure 101, page 731] Secretary of State Madeleine Albright directed that it would be in the national interest and clearly and importantly advance United States policy if the Ex-Im Bank did not approve the loan guarantee in response to BP-Amoco's complaint about the transparently corrupt nature of the Kondpetroleum and Chernogorneft bankruptcies.

179. As a result of this, BP-Amoco and aligned interests settled their dispute with Access, Renova and Alfa, which resulted in the return of assets purloined from Chernogorneft to Sidanco, although such action did not remedy the harm to Norex and Yugraneft.

YUGRANEFT'S DISPUTE WITH TNK

YUGRANEFT

180. In October 1991, Yugraneft was formed*.

181. As of 1999, Norex owned 60% of the shares of Yugraneft and Chernogorneft owned 40% of the shares. [Note: Under covert Soviet 'State-Controlled Capitalism', the shares were systematically and by design manipulated into the hands of KGB/GRU operatives ('oligarchs')].

182. In 1999, an audit of the books and records of Yugraneft determined that Chernogorneft had not contributed the full amount of capital to Yugraneft for its 40% share.

183. Ultimately, Chernogorneff s interest in Yugraneft was reduced, based on the determination of the firm's auditors, and, as a result, Norex's interest in Yugraneft increased to 97.3%.

184. During all relevant times, Yugraneft maintained a corporate headquarters in Nizh-Nevartovsk, operating and oil production facilities in the Nizhnevartovsk region, and a representative office in Moscow.

*Note: The timing of this corporation's formation makes it clear that the primary geofinancial/commercial factor driving the 'collapse' of the Soviet Union was energy and the need to upgrade the Soviet oil sector.

THE DISPUTE OVER THE 70,000 TONS

185. In December 1993, Yugraneft lent 300,000 metric tons of oil to Chernogorneft.

186. As of November 1998, the balance of oil owed to Yugraneft was 70,000 tonnes of oil.

187. In October 1998, the corrupt bankruptcy was initiated against Chernogorneft and by May 1999, an external manager of Chernogorneft controlled by TNK had been appointed.

188. Throughout the bankruptcy proceedings, Yugraneft, while controlled by Norex, attempted to enforce its rights for the return of the oil.

189. Such efforts were unsuccessful.

THE DISPUTE OVER THE 102,000 TONS

190. In May 1996. Yugraneft loaned 290,000 metric tons of oil to Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz ("NNG"), and owned 38% by TNK (which was yet to be privatized).

191. As of mid-1997, the NNG owed a balance of approximately 102,000 metric tons.

192. In the fall of 1997, corruption proceedings were initiated against NNG in order to remove its then management in order to facilitate the corrupt privatization of TNK and establish full control over NNG.

193. In January 1998, Yugraneft and NNG executed a verification act confirming the amount of oil owed shortly before TNK obtained effective control of NNG, to be about 20,000 tonnes.

194. Subsequently, a person controlled by TNK was appointed to be the external manager of Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz.

195. During the ensuing two years, Yugraneft attempted to enforce its rights for the return of the oil.

196. Such efforts were unsuccessful.

197. Ultimately, after the illegal seizure of Yugraneft by TNK, this debt was settled for a song.

THE CONVERSATION BETWEEN KHAN AND ROTZANG

198. Alexander Rotzang ("Rotzang"), the Chairman of the Board of Norex, the majority shareholder of Yugraneft, spoke with Khan while in San Francisco, CA in November 1999.

199. Khan demanded that Yugraneft forget about repayment of the oil owed to it and threatened that if Yugraneft did not forget that, TNK "would run over Yugraneft like a steamroller" and that "we eliminate those who go against us".

THE AUGUST 2000 MEETING WITH KHAN

200. In August 2000, Lyudmilla Kondrashina ("Kondrashina"), the General Director of Yugraneft, met with German Khan ("Khan"), an officer of TNK.

201. At that meeting Khan told Kondrashina that Yugraneft should accept 30% of the value of the 70,000 and 102,000 tons of oil as settlement.

202. Khan threatened Kondrashina that if Yugraneft did not accept its offer, then Yugraneft would get nothing because TNK has its "own people at all levels of government".

203. Yugraneft refused and continued unsuccessfully to try to collect the 70,000/102,000-ton debts.

THE JANUARY 2001 MEETING WITH KHAN

204. In January 2001, Kondrashina met again with Khan.

205. Khan warned Kondrashina that unless Yugraneft accepted the offer on the debts of oil that in a few months TNK would take over Yugraneft.

206. Khan also stated that it would be fruitless to pursue litigation because TNK "controlled" Russia's Supreme Arbitration Court where commercial disputes were ultimately decided.

207. In retrospect it is clear that at this point, Access/Renova and Alfa had agreed upon a plan, which was directed by the Alfa Group on the one hand and Access/Renova, including Blavatnik and Vekselberg in their offices in New York on the other, to take over Yugraneft through corrupted Court proceedings and the use of pure physical force.

THE SCHEDULING OF THE YUGRANEFT SHAREHOLDERS' MEETING

208. In May 2001, TNK, through its subsidiary TNK-NV which had purportedly obtained ownership of the shares of Yugraneft from Chernogorneft as a result of the rigged bankruptcy auction, demanded that Yugraneft hold a shareholders' meeting.

209. At the time when the TNK-NV's demand was made, neither TNK nor TNK-NV were registered shareholders of Yugraneft.

210. Norex submitted a demand to Yugraneft to hold a shareholders' meeting.

211. The meeting was then scheduled for June 28, 2001.

THE JUNE 2001 MEETING WITH KHAN

212. In June 2001, Kondrashina met Khan again.
213. Khan bluntly asked Kondrashina to betray the shareholders of Yugraneft.
214. Khan directly asked her how much money she needed to betray Yugraneft.
215. Kondrashina refused the bribe opportunity.
216. Khan then warned her to "stay in the shadows" during the TNK's fight for Yugraneft.

THE ILLEGAL TAKEOVER OF YUGRANEFT: The Ex Parte Court Action

217. Just a few days prior to the scheduled Yugraneft shareholders meeting, on June 25, 2001, TNK, through its subsidiary TNK-NV, filed a complaint in the Russian Courts and petitioned to seize a major portion of the shares of Yugraneft held by Norex.

218. TNK-NV falsely represented that it had obtained legal ownership of shares in Yugraneft from the auction of Chernogorneft's assets - even though the shareholders agreement between Chernogorneft and Norex provided Norex with the right of first refusal to purchase any shares of Yugraneft offered for sale by Chernogorneft.

210. TNK-NV also falsely represented that Norex had been served with the complaint which was required to be filed prior to or with the petition seeking to arrest its shares.

220. On June, 26, 2001, the Russian Court enjoined Norex from voting a major portion of its Yugraneft shares and prohibited Yugraneft from counting a major portion of Norex's shares at any shareholders meeting, even though Norex was never served or notified of the hearing and TNK-NV was not listed as a shareholder of Yugraneft.

221. Upon information and belief, the proceedings were designed to control illegally the shareholders meeting of Yugraneft of June 28, 2001.

THE SHAREHOLDERS' MEETING

222. On June 28, 2001, a Yugraneft shareholders' meeting was held at its offices in Moscow.

223. A representative of Norex attended the meeting.

224. No representatives of Chernogorneft, the registered owner of the remaining shares of Yugraneft, attended the meeting, although it had been duly notified.

225. Norex voted its shares which had not been arrested in favour of re-electing Kondrashina as the general director of Yugraneft.

226. No votes were cast against her re-election.

THE FRAUDULENT TAKEOVER OF YUGRANEFT BY BRUTE FORCE

227. On June 29, 2001, TNK took over the offices of Yugraneft in Nizhnevartovsk.

228. Alexander Berman, an officer of a TNK affiliate, accompanied by six TNK attorneys and at least 16 thugs wearing military-style fatigues and armed with machine guns, invaded Yugraneft's office in Nizhnevartovsk.

229. Their legal authority was a purported shareholders meeting of Yugraneft on June 28 at which Berman was allegedly elected as General Director of Yugraneft, allegedly attended by Norex Petroleum.

230. Such a meeting never took place.

231. On the same day, TNK sent security guards to inspect Yugraneft's field operations and, a few days later, on July 6, 2001, TNK security guards armed with handguns and machine guns took over the oil field and field office.

232. The TNK thugs cut off phone and Internet service in order to prevent the Yugraneft employees from communicating with the outside world.

233. On July 17 2001, Simon Kukes the (American-Soviet Academy of Sciences intelligence operative-turned US oil executive) President of TNK, came to Yugraneft's field operations and informed the employees that Yugraneft had been taken over by TNK.

234. He informed them that they were required either to sign employee agreements with TNK, or leave.

235. Amazingly, after the seizure of Yugraneft, Khan admitted in a media interview that TNK decided to take over Yugraneft because it was unwilling to accept the 30% offer for the return of oil owed to Yugraneft.

THE THREATS BY TNK

236. In July 2001, a Russian Court issued an order enjoining Berman from acting as the General Director of Yugraneft.

237. On or about August 1, 2001, Kondrashina, Alexander Radov, an attorney for Yugraneft (pre-takeover), together with attorney Alexey Timoshkin, came to the offices of Yugraneft with a Marshal in order to enforce the order.

238. When Radov arrived at the Yugraneft office, one of the leaders of TNK's security stated: "We know who you are and where you live. Why do you need problems?"

239. Shortly thereafter, Nam, along with TNK armed thugs, came to Yugraneff s offices.

240. Nam called the local Chief Marshal, who then came to Yugraneft's office, and, instead of enforcing the order, based on the false minutes of the non-existent shareholders' meeting, instructed Kondrashina and the others to leave.

241. During this encounter, Nam picked up the telephone and instructed someone to give orders to J. Paznikov, the chief judge of the Nizhnevartovsk Regional Court to dismiss the Order [verified manipulation of the 'socialist legality judicial' system].

242. Such an order was entered by J. Paznikov the next day.

243. During this encounter Nam told Kondrashina that she should stop fighting TNK, that TNK controlled the local government and that if she came over to their side that she would be offered the position of Deputy Mayor of Nizhnevartovsk.

244. During the initial part of this encounter, Timoshkin arranged for videotaping of the effort to enforce the order.

245. When Nam arrived, security guards of TNK prevented further videotaping.

246. Later, Mr. Sidorov, the head of TNK's local Security Department, demanded that Timoshkin turn over the videotape.

247. A representative of TNK then offered Timoshkin $ 100,000 for the videotape.

248. When Timoshkin refused the offer, the TNK representative stated, "Do you have life insurance? You might need it because anything can happen. It might happen that some drunk will meet you near your house and nobody will be able to trace it to anything".

249. This was an obvious attempt to threaten Timoshkin.

250. Also, after the meeting, Mr. Belevtsov, the chief of a TNK Legal Department, asked Radov to "step outside".

251. Belevtsov then stated, "Why do you need these problems? Let's talk about your working for TNK".

252. This was an obvious attempt to threaten and bribe Radov.

THE STRIPPING OF YUGRANEFT ASSETS

253. Following the Illegal Takeover, TNK stripped Yugraneft of its assets including rouble denominated bank deposits, dollar denominated bank deposits, rouble denominated savings certificates (known as "veksels" in Russia), and dollar denominated savings certificates.

254. The stripped assets included the transfer of $40 million (including $24 million in dollar denominated accounts) to accounts at Alfa Bank for no apparent consideration.

255. The net result was to strip the cash from Yugraneft and transfer it to Alfa Bank for use by the Defendants.

THE FORGED YUGRANEFT CORPORATE DOCUMENTS

256. As part of its justification for the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, TNK-NV produced "minutes" of a shareholders meeting which allegedly took place on June 28, 2001 which was allegedly attended by Norex and TNK-NV at which the shareholders allegedly voted to re-place Kondrashina with Berman as Yugraneft's General Director.

257. The attendance of Norex was critical for such meeting because without Norex's attendance a quorum would not have been present.

258. Such "minutes" were fabricated: Norex never attended such a meeting at which Kondrashina was replaced by Berman as Yugraneft's General Director.

THE USE OF ARRANGED CRIMINAL PROCEEDINGS

259. In order to deter Norex and the legally elected officers of Yugraneft from opposing the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, the Defendants arranged for false criminal proceedings to be brought against Rotzang, the chairman of Norex, and Kondrashina, the General Director of Yugraneft.

260. The use of false criminal proceedings is a typical tool used by corrupt business persons in Russia to wipe out adversaries and is possible because of the generally corrupt nature of Russian Government, particularly at local levels.

261. The false criminal proceedings include an investigation of Kondrashina who was alleged by TNK to be embezzling certain Sberbank Savings Certificates, which were in her possession because she was the legitimate General Director of Yugraneft.

262. The purpose of this "investigation" was both to intimidate Kondrashina and to use the criminal proceedings for TNK to gain control over the bonds.

263. The false criminal proceedings included the investigation of Rotzang for using savings certificates to pay legitimate debts of Yugraneft.

264. The purpose of this "investigation" was to both intimidate Rotzang and to use the criminal proceedings for TNK to gain control over the certificates.

265. The false criminal proceedings were instigated by TNK and were designed to intimidate persons from cooperating with Norex and Kondrashina, the legitimate General Director of Yugraneft.

THE ROLE OF TNK AND THE CROWN GROUP IN REGARD TO THE SALE OF YUGRANEFT OIL AFTER THE ILLEGAL TAKEOVER

266. Subsequent to the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, oil from Yugraneft has been converted and sold by TNK and the Crown Group.

267. Yugraneft oil for the Russian market has been converted and sold through TNK.

268. Yugraneft oil for the foreign markets has been converted and sold through TNK and the Crown Group and substantial revenues [has been] received by them via wires through banks in the United States.

THE SLUSH FUND AND MASSIVE TAX FRAUDS

269. After its takeover of TNK, the Alfa and Access/Renova sides arranged for all petroleum exported by TNK to be sold through Crown Enterprise.

270. The trading between TNK and the Alfa/Crown affiliates was designed for TNK to sell product at a greatly lowered price in order to transfer the profits from Russia to offshore structures controlled by Access/Renova Groups and Alfa.

271. This resulted in a massive tax fraud on the Russian Government and the improper diversion of profits from TNK to Alfa/Crown, to the detriment of TNK's other shareholders, including the Russian Government from 1997 through 1999.

272. In order to effect this aspect of the Illegal Scheme, Access/Renova and Alfa/Crown, through Astons, established offshore companies which were purportedly independent from TNK but which Access/Renova and Alfa secretly controlled.

273. These companies included the Slush Fund Companies.

274. The Slush Fund Companies would send invoices for fabricated services to Crown Group companies.

275. In return, the Crown Group companies wired tens of millions of dollars to the Slush Fund Companies through banks in the United States.

276. One effect of the Slush Fund was to hide the fact that profits were diverted from TNK to the Crown Group.

277. A second effect of the Slush Fund was to create a fund which was used to pay salary and bonuses to members of the Conspiracy, including Spitz.

278. Spitz, through Futura, personally received millions of dollars through the Slush Fund.

279. Upon information and belief, a third effect of the Slush Fund was to create a fund used to pay bribes to Russian Government officials.

280. A critical aspect of the Illegal Scheme was worldwide tax evasion, which permitted some Defendants to keep a much larger portion of the profits than would have occurred if all income was properly declared and all taxes properly paid.

281. Thus, these Defendants accumulated tremendous wealth which was used to effect further acquisitions and, upon information and belief, bribe Russian Government officials, all in furtherance of the Illegal Scheme.

The Crown Commodities UK Tax Fraud

282. Defendants created a plan by which Crown Trade and Finance Limited, which was based in Gibraltar, would purportedly act as a principal in its trading with TNK's oil.

283. In fact, Crown Trade and Finance Limited was a mere shell corporation, as all real trading was done in London by Crown Commodities.

284. Nonetheless, Crown Commodities falsely represented to the Inland Revenue in the United Kingdom that it was merely acting as a service agent for Crown Trade and Finance Limited so that it could limit its profits to 10% of its costs.

285. Crown Commodities, acting as a principal with regard to all trading of petroleum sourced from the TNK, should have been liable in the United Kingdom for taxes on the worldwide income earned from its trading. The activities of the Gibraltar office were limited to literally rubber-stamping contracts with a rubber stamp signature facsimile.

286. As a result of the United Kingdom tax fraud, Crown Commodities avoided over $30 million in taxes and penalties.

287. Ultimately, upon information and belief, Crown Commodities' function may have been replaced with Crown Resources AG, which registered a branch in England in order to continue the same illegal activities, much in the same way as previously conducted.

The Crown Management US and UK Tax Fraud

288. Crown established a system by which it only reported base salaries for its management, such as Spitz and Kuzmichev.

289. Such base salaries were supplemented by periodic bonus payments made to offshore accounts established by Astons and controlled by management, including Eastmount Properties, which was controlled by Kuzmichev, as evidenced by the email attached hereto [included with the documents], and Futura, which was controlled by Spitz.

290. Upon information and belief, such income was never declared for tax purposes by Crown employees, such as Kuzmichev in the United Kingdom or Spitz in the United States.

The Sham Invoice Fraud

291. Pursuant to certain contracts between TNK and Crown, Crown purported to act as an agent for TNK, responsible for accounting for the profits which it made on trading to TNK.

292. In practice, it was intended for Crown to act as a principal and for all trading profits to accrue to Crown.

293. In order to conceal the real trading profits, Crown and TNK adopted a plan called "Rondo" by which Crown would issues sham invoices for the sale of petroleum, as evidenced by [an email attached which, along with other documents, was annexed].

294. This plan involved the initial sale of petroleum received by Crown from TNK to a third party at an agreed-upon lower price.

295. A copy of this sham invoice was then submitted to TNK for institutionalised accounting and tax evasion purposes.

296. In the meantime, Crown arranged for a second transaction by which the third party would resell the petroleum to Crown at this lowered price, and then Crown would resell the petroleum to the third party at a higher, market price.

297. The effect of this plan was to hide the true profit and price actually received by Crown from the sale of petroleum received from TNK to the detriment of its non Access/Renova and Alfa shareholders, including American shareholders of TNK controlled companies and the Russian Government which was a shareholder of TNK.

298. This plan also perpetrated a tax (as well as customs) fraud on Russia because the true profit from the sale of oil was transferred from TNK to a Crown company located outside of Russia such as the UK (and the profit was then transferred to one of the Slush Fund Companies through the invoices for fabricated services).

The Diverted Address Commissions

299. In the oil brokerage business, it is normal business practice for traders, such as the Crown Groups, to arrange for the charter of vessels with shipbrokers.

300. It is also normal for the shipbrokers to pay an "address commission" of a percent of the cost of the vessel charter to the trader, for selecting such shipbroker.

301. Such address commission is normally 1 to 2 percent of the cost of chartering the vessel.

302. In order to divert funds to the Slush Fund Companies, the Crown Group arranged with shipbrokers, such as Simpson Spence & Young ("Simpson"), which has offices in Stamford, Connecticut and

London, England, to strike the "address commission" provision from its agreements and, instead, pay the address commissions to various Slush Fund Companies controlled by Defendants, including East-mount, Ringford Trading Limited and Fulbrook Trading Limited.

303. The diversion of such payments also operated as a tax fraud on the Inland Revenue in the United Kingdom because the true income of Crown was understated and the true incomes of the Defendants, such as Spitz, who received bonus payments from this fund were understated.

304. Upon information and belief, such payments amounted to tens of millions of dollars.

THE ENTERPRISES

305. Each enterprise defined below is an "enterprise" within the meaning of 18 U.S.C. §1961(4) and 1962(c).

Alfa Group Enterprise

306. Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, Crown Luxembourg, Crown Commodities Ltd., Crown Trade and Finance Limited, Crown Resources AG, TNK, TNK-NV, TNK-Nyagan, Alfa Bank, Alfa Eco, LT Enterprises, Sandwell Enterprises, and Eastmount Properties (collectively, the "Alfa Group"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Fridman, Kuzmichev, and Khan.

Alfa Holding Enterprise

307. The Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, and Crown Luxembourg (collectively, the "Alfa Holding Enterprise"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Fridman, Kuzmichev, and Khan, Access/Renova Enterprise.

308. Access and Renova (collectively, "Access/Renova Enterprise"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Blavatnik and Vekselberg.

Crown Enterprise

309. Crown Commodities Ltd., Crown Trade and Finance Limited, Crown Resources AG, and Crown Resources (USA), Inc. (collectively, the "Crown Enterprise"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Crown Luxembourg, Fridman, Kuzmichev, Khan, and Spitz.

TNK Enterprise

310. TNK, TNK-NV, TNK-Nyagan, and NNG (collectively, the "TNK Enterprise"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, Fridman, Kuzmichev, Khan, Kukes, Bakaleynik, Access/Renova, Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

Slush Fund Enterprise

311. LT Enterprises, Sandwell, and Eastmount (collectively, the "Slush Fund Enterprise"), is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, Crown Luxembourg, Fridman, Kuzmichev, Khan, Kukes, Bakaleynik, Spitz, Access/Renova, Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

Astons Enterprise

312. Astons is an enterprise controlled by G. Caine and other persons.

KondPetroleum, Chernogorneft, NNG Enterprises

313. Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, and NNG are each enterprises operated and controlled by Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, TNK, Fridman, Kuzmichev, Khan, Kukes, Bakaleynik, Spitz, Access/Renova, Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

Yugraneft Enterprise

314. Yugraneft is an enterprise operated and controlled, directly or indirectly, by Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, TNK, Fridman, Kuzmichev, Khan, Kukes, Bakaleynik, Access/Renova, Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

Note: The Complaint now reveals the true purpose of all this: to provide a framework, established by Soviet/Russian intelligence, for the 'taking back' of Soviet State oil assets by the KGB/GRU/Party:

Alfa/Access/Astons Enterprise ("AAA Enterprise")

315. Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, Crown Luxembourg, Crown Commodities, Crown Trade and Finance Limited, Crown Resources AG, Crown Resources (USA). Inc., TNK, TNK-NV, TNK-Nyagan, LT Enterprises Sandwell, Eastmount, Futura, Access/Renova, and Astons constitute an "associ-ation-in-fact" enterprise (collectively, the "Alfa/Access/Astons Enterprise" or "AAA Enterprise" or "AAA Association") formed to take over a substantial portion of the Russian petroleum industry.

316. The 'association-in-facf is different from its members in that the 'association-in-facf exists in order to provide a structure for the criminal activities of the AAA Association.
317. Each member of the association has a defined role in regard to the criminal activities of the AAA Association.
318. Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, and Crown Luxembourg provide holding companies which direct the activities of its subsidiary companies and provide a legal and financial framework for the AAA Association in regard to the interests of the Alfa Group.
319. Access and Renova provide holding companies which direct the activities of its subsidiary companies and provide a legal and financial framework for the AAA Association in regard to the interests of Blavatnik and Vekselberg.
320. Crown Commodities, Crown Trade and Finance Limited, Crown Resources AG, and Crown Resources (USA) Inc. provide trading companies for the AAA Association by which oil taken from Russia can be sold in the world market from which the proceeds are then laundered through the Slush Fund Companies, and for the furtherance of communications among the Defendants.
321. TNK, TNK NV, and TNK-Nyagan provide operating companies for the AAA Association for drilling and shipment of oil from Russia to the Crown trading companies.
322. TNK, TNK NV, and TNK-Nyagan also provide operating companies with armed security forces for the AAA Association which can be used to seize other companies in Russia, as occurred with Yugraneft.
323. LT Enterprises, Sandwell, and Eastmount provide offshore slush fund companies by which proceeds from the sale of oil are laundered and transactions are effected as part of the tax frauds on Russia, the United Kingdom, and the United States by the AAA Association.
324. Astons provides administrative, financial, and accounting services in order to manage the various money-laundering and tax fraud programs of the AAA Association.
325. The above enterprises each constituted an enterprise pursuant to 18 U.S.C. §1961(4) which engaged in and affected interstate and foreign commerce in the United States.
326. The above enterprises continue to operate today and to... illegally control Yugraneft.
327. The above enterprises had continuity of structure and personnel because, from 1997 through the current date, they featured a hierarchical structure wherein each of the above- and below-named entities and individuals performed, among others, the following roles:
(a). Alfa Group Enterprise: The Alfa Group is an enterprise consisting of its various, affiliated companies, including the Alfa Holding Enterprise and Crown Enterprise and their various subsidiary companies, which were controlled by the Alfa Holding Enterprise.
(b). Alfa Holding Enterprise (Crown Finance Foundation, CTF Holdings, Alfa Finance, and Crown Luxembourg): The Alfa Holding Enterprise provides an overall legal and financial structure for the control of subsidiary enterprises including the Crown Enterprise, TNK Enterprise, Slush Fund Enterprise, and Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, and NNG Enterprise. All conduct of the subsidiary Enterprises was ultimately directed by the Alfa [i.e., KGB - Ed.] Holding Enterprise. This Enterprise raises capital to fund the Illegal Scheme. [= Soviet version of US 'Enterprise ops.]. (c). Fridman, Kuzmichev, and Khan operate and control the Alfa Holding Enterprise, including the direct involvement of Kuzmichev with the money-laundering and tax fraud activities of the Crown Enterprise and the Slush Fund Enterprise.
(d). Crown Enterprise (Crown Commodities Ltd., Crown Trade and Finance Limited, Crown Resources AG, and Crown Resources (USA) Inc.): The Crown Enterprise provides the trading operations and coordinates money-laundering with the Slush Fund Enterprise.
(e). Spitz: Spitz, along with Fridman, Kuzmichev, and Khan, operates and controls the Crown Enterprise, including its money-laundering and tax fraud activities.
(f). TNK Enterprise (TNK, TNK NV, and TNK-Nyagan): TNK Enterprise provides oil production, oil shipment, oil refining, domestic sales services, and armed security services.

(g). Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, and NNG Enterprise: This enterprise provides oil which is sold at below market prices to TNK and/or Crown and from which the proceeds are then laundered through the Slush Fund Companies.

(h). Kukes and Bakaleynik Kukes and Bakaleynik, along with Fridman, Kuzmichev, and Khan, operate and control the TNK Enterprise, including its involvement in the corrupt bankruptcies of Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, and NNG, and the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, including operation of the arrangement by which oil is sold to the Crown Enterprise from which proceeds are ultimately laundered through the Slush Fund Enterprise.

(i). Slush Fund Enterprise (LT Enterprises, Sandwell, and Eastmount): The Slush Fund Enterprise provides the offshore companies through which the money-laundering and tax fraud is effected and is ultimately controlled by Access/Renova and Alfa.

(j). Access/Renova Enterprise: Access and Renova provides an overall legal and financial structure for Blavatnik and Vekselberg for the control of subsidiary enterprises including the TNK Enterprise, Slush Fund Enterprise, and Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, and NNG Enterprise. All conduct of the above subsidiary enterprises was ultimately directed by Access/Renova, This enterprise raises capital to fund the Illegal Scheme.

(k). Blavatnik and Vekselberg: Operate and control the Access/Renova Enterprise. (I). Astons Enterprise: Astons operates and manages the Slush Fund Companies, including the preparation of the invoices by G. Caine for the fabricated services and coordination and accounting for the money-laundering and tax fraud.

328. The above enterprises were separate and distinct from the pattern of racketeering in which Defendants engaged because, among other factors:

(a): The members of the enterprises were coordinated and directed to such a high degree and were assigned such well-defined roles to execute the complex and far-flung operations of the Illegal Scheme, that they existed separately and apart from the pattern of racketeering,

and: (b): The Enterprises had goals other than just racketeering, including, but not limited to, the continued operation of TNK and the Crown Group as producers and sellers of petroleum and Astons as the managers of offshore corporations.

One further page of the Complaint is missing from the Author's file here...

335. Khan attempted to bribe Kondrashina at the August, 2000 meeting.
336. Khan attempted to bribe Kondrashina at the June, 2001 meeting.
337. Nam attempted to bribe Kondrashina at the August, 2001 meeting.
338. TNK attempted to bribe Timoshkin at the August, 2001 meeting.
339. Belevtsov attempted to bribe Timoshkin at the August, 2001 meeting.

EXTORTION

340. The Illegal Scheme included predicate acts of actual or attempted extortion through threats of physical threat or economic loss as described herein in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1951.

341. The Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy was used to extort economic benefits from Sidanco's shareholders, including BP-Amoco and Kanrupan.

342. The Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy was used to extort economic benefits from Sidanco's shareholders, including BP-Amoco and Kantupan, and from Yugraneft.

343. The Corrupt NN2 Bankruptcy was used to extort economic benefits from Yugraneft.

344. Khan threatened Rotzang in November, 1999.

345. Khan threatened Kondrashina at the August, 2000 meeting in order to extort concessions from Yugraneft.

346. Khan threatened Kondrashina at the January, 2001 meeting in order to extort concessions from Yugraneft.

347. Khan threatened Kondrashina at the June, 2001 meeting in order to extort concessions from Yugraneft.

348. TNK took over Yugraneft in June and July, 2001 through physical force and the threat of physical harm.

349. TNK threatened Radov on August 1,2001.

350. Nam threatened Kondrashina in August, 2001.

351. TNK threatened Timoshkin in August, 2001.

352. Belevtsov threatened Timoshkin in August, 2001.

353. TNK obtained control over Yugraneft through extortion as reflected by the threat presented by the armed thugs.

Mail and Wire Fraud

354. The Illegal Scheme included predicate acts of mail and wire fraud as described herein in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1341 and §1343.

355. Upon information and belief, the predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring funds through banks in the United States in order to bribe Russian Government officials involved in the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt NNG Proceedings, the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy, and the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft.

356. Upon information and belief, the predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included telephone, telefax, and mail communications between persons and entities located in the United States, such as Access, Renova, Blavatnik, Vekselberg, and Crown Resources (USA) Inc. on the one hand, and persons located outside of the United States on the other hand in order to effect the Illegal Scheme, including the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz Takeover and Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy, and the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft through fraudulent representations and the threat of physical force.

357. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included millions of dollars [directed] through banks in the United States in order to purchase a 40% interest in TNK through the rigged auction in 1997 in the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization.

358. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States in order to purchase the remaining interest of TNK through the rigged auction in 1999 in the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization.

359. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States obtained through the sale of oil of Kondpetroleum through the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy in 1998 and 1999.

360. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States in order to purchase the assets of Kondpetroleum through the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy in 1999.

361. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States obtained through the sale of oil of Chernogorneft through the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy in 1998 and 1999.

362. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring approximately $15 million through banks in the United States in order to repay the Ex-Im Bank loan in 1999 as part of the successful effort to take over Chernogorneft thorough the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy.

363. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States in order to purchase the assets of Chernogorneft through the Corrupt Chernogorneft bankruptcy in 1999.

364. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States in order to make payments from the Crown Group to the Slush Fund Companies as part of the Massive Tax Fraud.

365. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States in order to make payments from the Slush Fund Companies to Futura, as part of the Massive Tax Fraud.

366. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States from the sale of Yugraneft oil after the Illegal Takeover.

367. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included wiring millions of dollars through banks in the United States from the illegal conversion of dollar denominated bank deposits and debentures of Yugraneft after the Illegal Takeover.

368. The predicate acts of mail and wire fraud included the conversation during which Khan attempted to extort Rotzang.

369. The predicate acts consisted of mail and wire fraud including Astons arranging for the wiring of millions of dollars through banks in the United States derived from the sham invoicing in order to facilitate money-laundering and tax fraud.

THIS CASE PROVES THAT THE RUSSIAN 'PRIVATISATION' PHASE WAS LENINIST, THEREFORE FALSE

In successive issues of Soviet Analyst from the early 1990s onwards, the Author argued that since the Soviet operatives and Party-State apparatchiks were all steeped in Leninist deception ideology, their 'free enterprise' and 'privatisation' offensive from 1991 onwards could not be relied upon to be genuine. This case proves that there was never any intention for state assets to remain in 'private' hands, even though these hands were KGB/GRU. ■

Money Laundering

370. The Illegal Scheme included predicate acts of money-laundering regarding the transfers of funds as described herein in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1957.

371. As part of the Illegal Scheme, the proceeds of the sale of oil from Kondpetroleum, Chernogorneft, NNG and TNK were laundered through the Crown Group through the payment of false invoices to the Slush Fund Companies in dollar-denominated wires through banks in the United States as part of the Massive Tax Fraud scheme and in order to create a slush fund to bribe Russian Government officials.

372. After the Illegal Takeover, the proceeds of the sale of oil from Yugraneft were laundered through the sale of Yugraneft's oil in the domestic market through TNK and the international market through the Crown Group in dollar-denominated wire transfers through banks in the United States so that Defendants could appropriate the assets of Yugraneft.

373. Upon information and belief, some of the profits of these proceeds were laundered through the Slush Fund Companies as part of the Massive Tax Fraud scheme and in order to create a slush fund to bribe Russian Government officials.

374. The predicate acts of money-laundering of the Illegal Scheme were in furtherance of the following actual or attempted acts of specified unlawful activity: bribery, extortion, mail and wire fraud, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and Travel Act violations, as alleged herein.

Illegal Transactions in Monetary Instruments

375. The Illegal Scheme included predicate acts of illegal transactions in monetary instruments as described herein in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1956.

376. Proceeds obtained from the sale of oil of NNG, Kondpetroleum, and Chernogorneft, pursuant to the Illegal Scheme constitute "criminally derived property" in excess of $10,000 and were wired through banks in the United States.

377. Proceeds obtained from the sale of oil obtained from Yugraneft pursuant to the Illegal Scheme constitute "criminally derived property" in excess of $10,000 and were wired through banks located in the United States.

378. Proceeds obtained from the conversion of Yugraneff s dollar denominated bank deposits and debentures pursuant to the Illegal Scheme constitute "criminally derived property" in excess of $10,000 and were wired through banks in the United States.

379. Some of these proceeds were laundered through the Slush Fund Companies as part of the Massive Tax Fraud scheme and in order to create a slush fund for the purpose of bribing Russian Government officials.

380. The predicate acts of illegal transactions in monetary instruments of the Illegal Scheme were in furtherance of the following actual or attempted acts of specified unlawful activity: bribery, extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, and interstate and foreign travel as alleged in this Complaint.

Interstate and Foreign Travel

381. The Illegal Scheme included predicate acts of interstate and foreign travel in aid of racketeering as described herein in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1952.

382. In order to effect the Illegal Scheme, including the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt Nizhnevartovsk Nefte Gaz Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy, and the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, various Defendants and their agents travelled to and from the United States to Russia, including Blavatnik, Vekselberg, Kukes, Bakaleynik, Khan, Spitz, from 1997 through [to] the filing of the instant action.

383. The predicate acts of interstate and foreign travel in aid of racketeering of Illegal Scheme were in furtherance of the following actual or attempted acts of unlawful activity: bribery, extortion, money-laundering illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and mail and wire fraud, as alleged herein.

THE UNFOUNDED COMPLACENCY OF WESTERN OIL COMPANIES

Having generally fallen for the Soviet lies surrounding 'collapsible Communism', US and British oil corporations assumed that the energy assets of the 'former' Soviet Bloc would be accessible. This was true, but what they did not understand was that this would happen only on Soviet terms, for modernisation purposes.

The KGB/GRU 'oligarchs' predictably controlled this giga-scam in pursuit of long-term strategic objectives, which were always obvious to any observer whose understanding was not blinded by commercial considerations and greed - namely, to entice Western oil companies and peripheral service organisations into the 'posf-Soviet oil sector, so that the West would pay for upgrading the industry. The assets were always certain to be 'clawed back' by the Leninist 'Party-State' - the structures of which remained in place, 'working by other means' [Lenin]. Remember that at the 'higher' Illuminati control level, Marxism-Leninism is simply the dialectical opposite of Fascism, the contrived geopolitical instruments invented by the 'two Karls' in Germany. Of course the 'mainstream' media, financed in part by intelligence-controlled 'funny money', missed the cue. ■

COUNT 1:
Violation of RICO §1962(a)
Norex v. Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Leonard Blavatnik; Victor Vekselberg; Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; TNK; Sandwell Enterprises Limited; LT Enterprises Ltd; and Eastmount Properties Limited

384. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.

385. The above Defendants received income from a pattern of racketeering, as described.

386. The above Defendants received income as a result of the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization, which was effected through bribery, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

387. The above Defendants received income as a result of the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization, which was effected through bribery, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

388. The above Defendants received income from the Corrupt NNG Takeover and Bankruptcy, which was effected through bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

389. The above Defendants received income from the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy, which was effected through bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

390. The above Defendants received income from the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy, which was effected through bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

391. The above Defendants received income from the Massive Tax Fraud, which was effected through mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act.

392. A part of such income or its proceeds were used, directly or indirectly, to acquire an interest in Yugraneft and to operate Yugraneft through the Illegal Takeover within the meaning of 18 U.S.C §1961(1)(B) and §1961(5) in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1962(a).

393. As a direct and proximate result of above Defendants' use and investment of racketeering income in the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft, Norex has suffered material damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

COUNT 2: Violation of RICO §1962(b) Norex V. Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Leonard Blavatnik; victor Vekselberg; Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; TNK; Simon Kukes; and Joseph Bakaleynik

394. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.

395. The above Defendants, through a pattern of racketeering, acquired and maintained, directly or indirectly, an interest and control of Yugraneft through the Illegal Takeover in violation of 18 U.S.C. §1962(b).

396. The pattern of racketeering which enabled these Defendants to acquire and maintain an interest in Yugraneft included bribery, extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act set forth above.

397. As a direct and proximate result of the above Defendants' acquisition and maintenance of an interest and control of Yugraneft within the meaning of 18 U.S.C. §1961(1)(B) and 1961(5) through the Illegal Takeover through their pattern of racketeering, Norex suffered damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

COUNT 3:
Violation of RICO §1962(c)
Norex v. All Defendants

398. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.

Access/Alfa/Astons Enterprise

399. All Defendants conducted and participated in the conduct of the Access/Alfa/Astons Enterprise ('association-in-fact') through a pattern of racketeering activity.

400. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, mail and wire frauds, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard

to the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

401. The partem of racketeering included bribery, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; Kukes; Bakaleynik; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

402. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Corrupt NNG Reorganization effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

403. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings. Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

404. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

405. The pattern of racketeering included mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Massive Tax Fraud effected by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Crown Commodities, Ltd.; Crown Trade and Finance Limited; Elliot Spitz; LT Enterprises; Sandwell Enterprises; Eastmount Properties; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik; Vekselberg, and Astons.

406. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft by the Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Crown Trade and Finance Limited; Crown Resources, AG; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg.

Access/Renova Enterprise

407. Blavatnik and Vekselberg conducted and participated in the conduct of the Access / Renova Enterprise through a pattern of racketeering activity.

408. The pattern of racketeering included the illegal activity set forth above in regard to the Corrupt 1997 TNK Privatization, the Corrupt 1999 TNK Privatization; the Corruption NNG Takeover and Reorganization; the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy; the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy; the Massive Tax Fraud; and the Illegal Takeover.

Crown Enterprise

409. The Alfa Group, Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; TNK; Access; Renova; Blavatnik; Vekselberg; and Elliot Spitz; conducted/participated in conduct of Crown Enterprise via a pattern of racketeering.

410. The pattern of racketeering included the illegal activity set forth above in regard to the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy; the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy; the Corrupt NNG Reorganization; the Massive Tax Fraud; and the Illegal Takeover.

TNK Enterprise

411. The Alfa Group, Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Leonard Blavatnik, and Victor Vekselberg conducted and participated in the conduct of TNK Enterprise's affairs through a pattern of racketeering activity. [Note: The use of the name Alpha is indicative of KGB involvement. In 1993, the troops deployed in Moscow were KGB Alpha troops].

412. The pattern of racketeering included the illegal activity set forth above in regard to the Corrupt NNG Takeover and Reorganization; the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy; Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy; the Massive Tax Fraud; and the Illegal Takeover.

Slush Fund Enterprise

413. The Alfa Group, Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; Crown Luxembourg; Elliot Spitz; Access Industries, Inc.; Renova, Inc.; Leonard Blavatnik; Victor Vekselberg, and Astons conducted and participated in the conduct of the Slush Fund Enterprises through a pattern of racketeering activity.

414. The pattern of racketeering included the illegal activity set forth above in regard to the Corrupt NNG Takeover and Reorganization; the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy; Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy; the Massive Tax Fraud; and the Illegal Takeover.

NNG, Kondpetroleum, and Chernogorneft Enterprises

415. The Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Inc.; Access, Renova, Blavatnik, and Vekselberg conducted and participated in the conduct of Chernogorneft, Kondpetroleum, and NNG Enterprises through a pattern of racketeering.

416. The pattern of racketeering included bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering, illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Corrupt Chernogorneft Bankruptcy, the Corrupt Kondpetroleum Bankruptcy, and the Corrupt NNG Takeover and Reorganization.

Yugraneft Enterprise

417. The Alfa Group; Crown Finance Foundation; CTF Holdings, Ltd.; Alfa Finance Holdings; TNK; Simon Kukes; Joseph Bakaleynik; Access; Renova; Blavatnik, and Vekselberg conducted and participated in the conduct of Yugraneft through a pattern of racketeering.

418. The above Defendants managed, conducted, and participated in the conduct of the above enterprises through a pattern of racketeering within the meaning of 18 U.S.C. §1961 (A) and (B) including bribery, economic extortion, mail and wire fraud, money-laundering illegal transactions in monetary instruments, and violations of the Travel Act in regard to the Illegal Takeover of Yugraneft.

419. Defendants, in combination and concert with others, devised and intended to devise a scheme in order to defraud Norex and to obtain money and property from Norex by means of false and fraudulent pretenses, extortion, and bribery, as described above.

420. As a direct and proximate cause of the above pattern of racketeering, Norex suffered damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

COUNT 4:
Violation of RICO §1962(d) for Conspiracy to Violate §1962(a)
Norex v. All Defendants except Astons

421. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.

422. Pursuant to the Illegal Scheme, the above Defendants conspired among themselves, and with others, to violate section §1962(a).

423. The above Defendants knowingly agreed among themselves to commit or participate in at least two Predicate Acts in furtherance of the Conspiracy.

424. Given the complexity and far-reaching nature of the Conspiracy, coupled with the number of instances in which the above Defendants engaged in the Predicate Acts alleged herein, the Predicate Acts committed by the above Defendants could not have been committed without coordination and agreement among the above Defendants to knowingly participate in the Conspiracy.

425. As a direct and proximate cause of the above conspiracy, Norex suffered damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

A CHAOTIC ILLUMINATI-CONTROLLED WORLD WITH NO BOUNDARIES

In 'The Struggle for World Power", the Russian historian George Knupffer wrote that 'the [Soviet] Revolution was supported first and foremost by certain circles to whom national boundaries were a matter of no importance and who thought and acted internationally at all times'. ■

COUNT 5:
Violation of RICO §1962(d) for Conspiracy to Violate §1962(b)
Norex v. All Defendants except Astons

426. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.
427. Pursuant to the Illegal Scheme, the above Defendants conspired among themselves, and with others, to violate sections §1962(b).
428. The above Defendants knowingly agreed to commit or participate in at least two Predicate Acts in furtherance of the Conspiracy. [So much for the 'conspiracy theory' alibi].
429. Given the complexity and far-reaching nature of the Conspiracy, coupled with the number of instances in which the above Defendants engaged in the Predicate Acts alleged herein, the Predicate Acts committed by the above Defendants could not have been committed without coordination and agreement among the above Defendants to knowingly participate in the Conspiracy.
430. As a direct and proximate cause of the above conspiracy, Norex suffered damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

COUNT 6:
Violation of RICO §1962(d) for Conspiracy to Violate §1962(c)
Norex V. All Defendants

431. The allegations of the above paragraphs are incorporated herein as if set out in full.
432. Pursuant to the Illegal Scheme, all Defendants conspired among themselves, and with others, to violate section §1962(c).
433. The above Defendants knowingly agreed to commit or participate in at least two Predicate Acts in furtherance of the Conspiracy.
434. Given the complexity and far-reaching nature of the Conspiracy, coupled with the number of instances in which the Defendants engaged in the Predicate Acts alleged herein, the Predicate Acts committed by the Defendants could not have been committed without coordination and agreement among the Defendants to knowingly participate in the Conspiracy.
435. As a direct and proximate cause of the above conspiracy, Norex suffered damages in an amount in excess of $500 million.

WHEREFORE, Norex demands judgment against Defendants, as follows:

1. Compensatory damages in excess of $500 million;
2. Treble damages RICO in excess of $1.5 billion;
3. Costs and attorneys' fees under RICO [item 4 in actual document];
4. Such other relief as is just and proper [item 5 in actual document].

MARKS & SOKOLOV, LLC • BLANK ROME TENZER GREENBLATT LLP

DETERMINATION UNDER SECTION 2(b)(1)(B) OF THE
EXPORT-IMPORT BANK ACT OF 1945, AS AMENDED

Pursuant to Section 2(b)(1)(B) of the Export-Import Bank Act of 1945, as amended, and Executive Order 12166 of October 19, 1979, I determine that it is in the national interest and would clearly and importantly advance United States policy in Russia for the Export-Import Bank of the United States (the "Bank") to not approve, for the time being, the financing of exports of goods or services in cases AP070202XX and AP067280XX.

This determination shall be published in the Federal Register.

Madeleine Albright
Madeleine K. Albright

Figure 101: Instruction by Madeleine Albright, US Secretary of State under President Clinton, to the US Export-Import Bank NOT to guarantee loans for the sale of US-manufactured equipment to TNK.

ADDENDUM NINE: Global Analyst 2,1: February 2005

SATANIC SIGNALS FROM ON HIGH

LEADERS AND PROMINENT FIGURES OPENLY SALUTE THE DEVIL

In the following sequence of pictures, first published in Global Analyst, Volume 2, Number 1 [2005], the Author reviews the prevalence of open salutes to the Devil. President George W. Bush's wife and the President himself [see page 23], former US Vice-President Dan Quayle, General Tommy Franks, Silvio Berlusconi, Prince Edward and King Abdullah of Jordan are all shown saluting the Evil One -just like the Satanic rock band, the album cover and the participants at a Satanic event, also illustrated here.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

Numbered pictures above and right: 1: Mrs Laura Bush displays the Satanic hand-signal, known as the 'horned hand', or 'Devil's Salute' signal, at the Inauguration on 20th January 2005; 2: Ex-Vice President Dan Quayle joins in the chorus of salutations to 'that old serpent, the Devil, and Satan, that deceiveth the whole world'; 3: General Tommy Franks, who inflicted mass deaths in Iraq, stands close [continued on page 733]:

8

9

10

11

to his President at a briefing in the Texas countryside, exhibiting the 'Devil's Salute', which comes naturally to him, it seems; 4: Silvio Berlusconi, ex-Prime Minister of Italy, caught in the act. He should know what this hand signal means: it's a 'Devil's Salute' used in Sicily to 'cast out evil spells'; 5: Prince William seems to think that the contrived salute he is delivering is amusing. The point is that it actually takes a moment's thought to extend the two fingers in question, which means that this salute cannot be delivered casually: it has to be a conscious act. It is not known whether Prince William, pictured here by Reuters, knew what he was doing, or whether this was just an instance of youthful silliness. The picture was not understood when first published: now we have the context; 6: Members of the (Satanic) Rock Band Metallica display the old 'Devil Salute', and a related 'in-your-face' acknowledgement of whom they worship and revere. They are an appropriately nasty-looking bunch; 7: The Devil's Salute, or diablo symbol, being displayed en masse at an incantation during a Satanic ritual; 8: Detail from an album cover by a Rock Band called Dio, meaning God. The diabolical graphics of this album cover are not fully shown here: but the rest of the cover displays the word Dio in demonic lettering which, when reversed in the mirror, spells Devil. This reflects the fact that the Devil turns everything back to front, and upside down. The Illuminati have no solution to anything, and their only product is death, procured via open-ended confusion - the Devil being the author of all confusion; 9: King Abdullah of Jordan finds it necessary to display the 'horned hand', or 'Devil's Salute' signal as he greets GRU-President Vladimir Putin; 10: The 'mano figo' a.k.a. 'fica gesture', is both a crude insult called the diablo symbol, and a satanic signal, an imagined defence against the evil eye (of Lucifer, also called the 'All-Seeing Eye'), and additionally, a sexual signal; 11: The 'mano cornuto', a.k.a. the Devil's triad, 'ilcornuto', 'cornuto', the horn, the horned Devil, the twin-horned salute, the horned hand, the 'Devil's Salute', and the 'Devil Horn Salute'. When the 'mainstream' US media actually noticed that the President of the United States, his wife and a daughter had seen fit to display these Satanic hand gestures during the Inauguration on 20th January 2005, a cover story was retailed for public consumption to the effect that the hand signal represents the 'Hook 'em Horns' gesture used by the fans of the University of Texas Longhorns. This 'line' was disseminated by Associated Press (which acts more or less as a US state news agency nowadays) and CNN - despite conclusive evidence, supported by academic authorities, that this gesture represents a celebration of, and a sign of obeisance to, the Devil, Satan, the Evil One. Beyond that, if the Texas University Longhorns perform this signal routinely, they salute the Devil routinely, too. Whether fans do this wittingly or not is irrelevant: that's what they are doing.

In his Inauguration speech, President Bush proclaimed: 'By our efforts, we have lit... a fire in the minds of men. It warms those who feel its power, it burns those who fight its progress, and one day this untamed fire of freedom will reach the darkest corners of our world'. What does this Luciferian statement mean in translation from the language of the hof-Illuminati? It rejoices in setting fires, which is a central preoccupation of the possessed and those in thrall to Lucifer - who, as the Author's late and dear friend Malachi Martin confirmed [page 7] 'have all passed through [initiation] that involves three things: the infliction of pain without flinching, the infliction of death without flinching, and the use of fire'. For initiates, the deaths in Iraq and those in New Orleans are just 'collateral damage'. ■

ADDENDUM TEN: Global Analyst 1,5: May 2004

GEOMASONIC HANDSHAKE SIGNALS

GEOMASONIC HANDSHAKES: THE GRIPS OF THE BROTHERHOOD'

In the following sequence of pictures, taken from old press clippings (as reflected in their quality), some conspicuous geomasonic handshakes ('grips') are identified. A graphic summary of these 'grips' (labelled A-E) is given, with commentary, on page 737. Due to the relative imprecision of a few of these pictures, it is possible that one or more grips may be imperfectly identified: but the message of this presentation should be clear: the Illuminati inhabit their own secret synarchical world apart from the rest of us.

1
E: STRONG GRIP OF
MASTER MASON,
OR LION'S PAW

2
E: STRONG GRIP OF
MASTER MASON,
OR LION'S PAW

3
C: PASS OF FELLOW
CRAFT: SHIBBOLETH

Numbered pictures above and at right: 1: The former US Ambassador to the United Nations, Mr Richard Holbrooke (Skull & Bones; left), greeting UN Secretary General Kofi Annan, pictured at a benefit event held on the 6th May 2004 for Refugees International, in Washington DC, as Queen Noor of Jordan looks on. Holbrooke and Annan perform the Lion's Paw grip; 2: Kim Jong-Il and Kim De-Jung [continued on page 736]:

A: GRIP OF ENTERED APPRENTICE

4

D: PASS GRIP OF MASTER MASON

5

E: STRONG GRIP OF MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW

6

E: STRONG GRIP OF MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW

7

D: PASS GRIP OF MASTER MASON
A: GRIP OF ENTERED APPRENTICE

8

9
C: PASS OF FELLOW CRAFT: SHIBBOLETH

10
E: STRONG GRIP OF MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW

11
E: STRONG GRIP OF MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW

12
E: STRONG GRIP OF MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW

[Continued from page 734]: (of the two Koreas), on 12th September 2000, display a Lion's Paw grip; 3: Tony Blair and Colonel Qaddhafi demonstrate a somewhat lukewarm Pass Grip of a Master Mason, also known as the 'Shibboleth' friendship handshake, on 25th March 2004: this grip is used by Masons who are strangers to each other, to demonstrate their membership of the Illuminati 'Brotherhood'. This picture was accompanied by no less than three handshake close-ups on the front page of 'The Times' of London, as though Rupert Murdoch, owner of the newspaper, wished to make it clear to those whom Lenin referred to as 'the interested' that 'The Brotherhood' is in the driving seat, and orchestrates such rapprochements in accordance with its own agenda (depending on priorities and the 'correlation of forces'); 4: Tony Blair, a 'high' Mason, demonstrating to Mr Nastase of Romania, that he is a Master Mason, with Nastase basically remonstrating with the strength of his grip that he is really 'Mr Nasty'; 5: This extremely revealing picture shows the high-ranking Masonic status of both President Clinton and of the Lenin look-alike, Gerry Adams. This may be a Pass Grip of the Master Mason, or Tubal Cain. In the United States, Master Masons often wear a tie-pin with the image of a cane (walking stick) with two balls, which is a typically cynical Masonic play on words, with obscene overtones: such people routinely wear such tie-pins to church, since they are 'double-minded'. Masonry and Illuminism are wholly incompatible with True Christianity (though not, of course, with paganised Christianity/Churchianity as purveyed, regrettably, by most of the churches); 6: Nelson Mandela and F W De Klerk, 8th August 1990. The handshake-grip used here would appear to be the Strong Grip of

A: GRIP OF THE ENTERED APPRENTICE

B: PASS GRIP OF A FELL

D: PASS GRIP OF A MASTER MASON, OR TUBAL CAIN [TWO-BALL CANE: *INSET*]

C: PASS GRIP OF FELLOW CRAFT, OR: SHIBBOLETH

***E:* STRONG GRIP OF A MASTER MASON, OR LION'S PAW**

F: FIVE POINTS OF FELLOWSHIP*:
MAH-HAH-BONE
WHISPERED IN EACH OTHER'S EAR
According to the old Masonic authority **D. Margiotta** (33rd degree) Mah-Hah-Bone = The Complete God = a hermaphrodite.
A *ruffian, Jubulum* = J.B.M. or **Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus**

the Master Mason, or the Lion's Paw. De Klerk is alleged to have accepted a substantial US-funded 'facilitation payment' for his corrupt part in handing South Africa over to the criminalist South African Communist Party, fronted by the African National Congress. The corrupt monies were allegedly paid into one of his offshore accounts: that's how 'business is done' by the top Illuminati controllers of the New Underworld Order; 7: The late Egyptian President Anwar Sadat and Menachem Begin, with the 'high' Mason President Jimmy Carter looking on: the triple-grip on display here appears to have been a combined Lion's Paw handshake [13th September 19791; 8: Churchill, Truman and Stalin, pictured on 23rd July 1945: Churchill seems to be displaying the Tubal Cain Master Mason's handshake-grip with President Truman, while Stalin appears to be using the Entered Apprentice grip: the old picture is hard to decipher, but it shows quite clearly that all three leaders were key members of the geomasonic Illuminati fraternity, 9: President Pervez Musharraf, President of Pakistan - a leading Illuminati operative - and Atal Vajpayee (of India), on 6th January 2002, doing a 'Shibboleth, denoting new 'friendship', but mass slaughter if it is abandoned, 10-12: Three high-level demonstrations of the Lion's Paw grip [President Nixon and Chou-en-Lai, meeting on 21st February 1972; Yizhak Rabin and Yasser Arafat, with President Bill Clinton looking on: 13th September 1993; and Presidents Reagan and Gorbachev, see also Figure 2, page 10. All these pictures seek to demonstrate that this world is governed by the Illuminati. See Matthew 3, 8-11. ■

*Five Points of Fellowship:
Five is said to represent perfect intelligence, hence Pentagon and the Kabbalistic occult pentalpha. Performing the Five Points necessitates the Worshipful Master and candidate going foot to foot, knee to knee, hand to back, cheek to cheek or mouth to ear, whereupon the Master whispers Mah-Hah-Bone in the candidate's ear, which he then reciprocates. The overtones of this ritual are both obvious and repugnant.

G: SIGN OF A FELLOW CRAFT WITHOUT DUE GUARD, WHICH IS WHAT AMERICANS DO WHEN SALUTING THE FLAG AND STANDING FOR THE NATIONAL ANTHEM

'AS ABOVE, SO BELOW

In the mentally unstable and certifiable Luciferian occult construct in which the Masonic Illuminati operate, when the 'Orphic Egg' [see page XXXI] of 'Ancient Mysteries' mythology in the universe is 'broken', there are found to be three (3) energies, or 'phanes', resident within it. This is all lunatic, fantastic tripe and nonsense; but it is what these idiotic generational occultists 'profess' to believe.

The first of these 'phanes' is called three (or the letter I for Invisible or the Eye of the occultic all-seeing presence, i.e. of Lucifer: see the MI5 symbol in Figure 1 on page 3). Energy supposedly 'released' when the egg is 'broken' (exactly WHO breaks it is left unstated) remains, in the case of three where it is, As Above - while the other two 'phanes' or 'forces' descend to Earth, As Below. This 'As Above, So Below' gibberish is replicated in the common occult notion that God is both good and evil, and that Satan is part of him [see Figure 102 below]. This is ludicrously inconsistent with the parallel gibberish (or clashing lie) called Deism, which postulates falsely that God sleeps, so it is the privilege of the Illuminati to 'manage' the mechanistic universe that God created, before he fell asleep.

On Earth, the 'released' energy has split or metamorphosed into good against evil and evil against good. This is called 322, the presence of the god 3 in harmony ('As Above'), and the 2 mechanistic opposing 'seething energies' (22) released, and fighting for supremacy ('As Below*). When an orchestrated revolution, for instance, has been completed, 3, or harmony, is all that remains on Earth, 'As Above' (although, again, it is left unstated how 3 suddenly 'descends' to earth: presumably it 'fills the gap' left by the two self-destructed mechanistic 'energies', or 'phanes' - which will have fought each other to annihilation).

Translated from this mad nonsense into the contemporary global environment, the two competing 'phanes' that are struggling for power are two dialectical factions within the Illuminati - one being represented by the pan-German Nazi Illuminati 'line' (in geomasonic terms, the Illuminati-penet-rated Grand Orient), and the other being the 'Scottish' Rite Illuminati 'line' espoused by the (hated) and also equally deluded 'Anglo-Saxons'. Other 'dialectics' include the separate German Nazi-Zionazi conflict, and the rivalry/cooperation between the KGB and Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst (DVD), Dachau.

Since the protagonists live in an occult environment at various stages of actual or prospective demonic possession, this Luciferian, invented pyramid of fantastic lies is, for them, reality; and since the factions of the sect of the Illuminati have penetrated the intelligence communities and certain structures of the key governments - on behalf of Satan, father of death - the havoc these evil people are consciously inflicting upon the world appears, for the time being, to have no limit.

Their world is mechanistic although they profess to believe in good and evil, this is a feint, since in a mechanistic world, everything is deterministic, with no distinction between good and evil accordingly being possible. Pursuant to this fundamental lie, they call evil good, and good evil, contrary to the Word of God through Isaiah: 'Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness, that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight' [Isaiah, Chapter 5, verses 20-21]. The sole product of these people is death: they are all themselves spiritually en route to death. Death is what 'they do'.

As they know that they themselves are doomed, their preoccupation is to bring everyone else down to the pit of perdition, with them. The obsession of some of these people with population reduction and mass slaughter - the false rationale being that this is the only way to 'save the planet' - is directly related to demonic infestation. They are indeed the most dangerous people on earth, regarding all casualties as 'collateral damage'.

Since, for the Illuminati, the occult mental state of decay into which they have fallen is reality, everything that is normal is unreal, expendable, ephemeral, transitional, temporary and ripe for 'change'. And having 'ascended' by Luciferian ritual initiations, they claim to have acquired 'authority' to reorder the 'mechanistic' world in accordance with their idea of 'what is best for Man', i.e. for the Brotherhood of the Illuminati. These are the same people who saw that Jesus Christ threatened their hegemony. He always will. Which is why True Christians are the Illuminati's 'Main Enemy', and why Weishaupt and many of his successors have acknowledged that the destruction of (TRUE) Christianity (which is impossible) is the 'top priority'. ■

Figure 102: This occult illustration shows the two interlaced triangles used today by Zionism as the (false) 'Star of David'. The image explains remarks by the Illuminati archivist Albert Lantoine [see below] that Satan is an equal and indispensable part of God, as seen when the revolting picture is reversed. This is the meaning of 'What is above equals what is below', a.k.a. 'As Above, So Below'. This common occult idea that God is both good and evil, so that Satan is part of God, is a kabbalistic lie which suits the Illuminati because it justifies their ruthlessness, covetousness, lies and murderous behaviour generally. It is reported that Lantoine told Pope Pius XII in August 1943 that 'the death of Satan will mark the agony of your God. You must accept alliance with Satan, and admit that he completes God. Source: The Broken Cross; Piers Compton, Veritas Publishing Company Pty Ltd., Australia, 1984, page 76.

THE MYSTERY OF INIQUITY

DOUBLE-MINDED LUCIFERIAN ALLIANCE AGAINST THE 'MAIN ENEMY

'How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God... I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.... Thou art cast out of thy grave, like an abominable branch... That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof, that opened not the house of [the] prisoners'. [Isaiah, Chapter 13, verses 12-15,19 and 17].

Giuseppe Mazzini, the drug-dealing Illuminist founder of the contemporary mafia, and reprobate colleague of the Satanist Magus Albert Pike, referred to the Pope as the 'Papal Caesar'. 'Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred three-score and six' [Revelation, Chapter 13, verse 18]. The beast, whose number kaballistically-numerologically is 666, translates as Lateinos, or 'the Latin kingdom', the number of which (in Latin) is 616 (devolving to 13, the 'magick' number of the Illuminati). As John's follower Polycarp knew, Lateinos stood for the God-Caesar referred to by Mazzini.

Herein lies the essence of the double-mindedness of the Illuminati, of which there can be no doubt that the Vatican is the central locus. For it is in the Vatican - where a man 'representing' Jesus Christ, and at times referring to himself or allowing himself to be worshipped as though he IS Jesus Christ - utters empty, soothing words in a specially contrived manner of speaking, preoccupied with the interests of the worldly church-organisation - that nuns murder Popes with poisoned champagne, as though this procedure were nothing unusual: which is the case, given that Gregory V (996-999), Damasus II (1048), Celesrine II (1143), Leo XI (1605), numerous cardinals and Alexander Borgia all died from poisoning, the Illuminati's preferred liquidation method. Pope John Paul I died in late September 1978 with his mouth gaping so wide in agony, that the four embalming brothers Signoracci from the Medical Institute were unable to close it for the duration of Vatican's usual death-fest - since death is the geomasonic Illuminati's only product. This is proclaimed by one of the Illuminati's own dogmatic assertions: 'Anyone who reveals our secrets, voluntarily or involuntarily, signs his own death warrant'.

103

104

Figure 103: Rochus Misch, a member of Hitler's innermost entourage - who turned out to be the last person to leave the bunker alive - is shown relaxing and enjoying the scenery in the restaurant car of Hitler's train, the name of which was Amerika. That the Fuhrer named his train Amerika reveals the essence of the Nazis' global hegemony strategy. Had the Third Reich conquered Europe, it would have targeted the United States - the total takeover of which remains the German Nazi Continuum's overriding objective. Figure 104: Hezbollah terrorists performing the Hitler Salute in Southern Lebanon in July 2006 [Associated Press]. When this image appeared in the British press, no reference was made to the whole point of the photograph - namely that these terrorists were clones of Hitler's stormtroopers and brainwashed Third Reich supporters. The reason they are all performing the Hitler Salute is that Hezbollah, Iran and Syria are secret operations of Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau - the 'Black' Nazi strategic Continuum.

The renegade Jesuit Jew, Adam Weishaupt, and his associates resolved, with the formalisation of the sect of the Illuminati on the pagan feast of Beltane (1st May) 1776, to put into effect the programme that they had revealed in Munich a year earlier - to form and control public opinion by all means available, to insinuate its adepts into the entourages of rulers and wielders of power and influence, to usurp such power whenever feasible, to covet and procure control over the assets of the wealthy, raw materials, and finance, to degrade and destroy all formal religions and institutions including the family, en route to targeting private property, and finally to take over the Papacy - placing agents of its own in the so-called Chair of Peter (which is itself a deception, since Peter was never in Rome: see Galatians, Chapter 2, verse 7). Just about a century later, the Illuminati Magus Albert Pike developed his diabolical programme for three conflagrations. The third of these, exploiting Islam - the dialectical Antithesis of the formal religion of God-Caesar - is being leveraged for the Illuminati's agentur by criminalised elements of intelligence communities, which are implementing the Dluminati's mad, anti-nation state, global hegemony programme. Masking their abominations behind the cover provided by the Illuminati and its 'sib' 'Protocols' blueprint (which, not least the 'explosions from below' confirm is being implemented today, to the letter), the Dachau-based German Nazi occultic Continuum, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, with its serpent's head resident on the territory of the 'Main Enemy'*, the United States, makes common cause with the 'beas' in pursuit of its idolatry of global control.

But the 'Availing Time' is very short. 'For the mystery of iniquity doth already work only he who now letteth, will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders. And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause, God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness' [2 Thessalonians, Chapter 2, verses 7-12]. So the global control clique, riven by jealousy and hatred, cannot succeed

Those who persist with this global hegemony idolatry, who covet control of vast financial resources, all who pervert and corrupt little children - those maddened fools who have said in their heart 'there is no God', save Lucifer - need to be reminded that 'the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone' [Revelation, Chapter 21, verse 8]. This, rather than the idiocy of reincarnation, is what awaits these creatures.

As for the rest of us, we need to remind ourselves of the wise words of David, the Psalmist: 'Fret not thyself because of evil doers, neither be thou envious against the workers of iniquity. For they shall soon be cut down like the grass, and wither as the green herb' [Psalm 37, verses 1 and 2]; and: 'I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree. Yet he passed away, and, lo, he was not: yea, I sought him, but he could not be found' [Psalm 37, verses 35 and 36]. And to prevail, we must 'put on the whole armour of God, that [we] may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places' [Ephesians, Chapter 6, verses 11 and 12] - as illustrated in this work. ■

---

* Following the Second World War, the German Geopolitical Centre which had been established in the 1940s in Madrid, perfected and implemented its 'Blowback' operation against 'the Main Enemy', Britain and America. While Britain was enticed and entrapped in the Nazis' long-range strategic deception operation now calling itself the European Union, the United States was targeted via 'Operation Paperclip' and the consolidation of a massive Nazi penetration of US intelligence, the universities and military-industrial/official structures. The head of the Abwehr, Admiral Canaris - protected by the disinformation lie that he had been hanged naked on 9th April 1945 at Flossenburg - surfaced with a large contingent of Nazis in Oklahoma, using the alias Samuel Randall Pittman, or Pittmann. The records of this Nazi penetration were destroyed in the Murrah Building as a result of the Oklahoma Bombing. After Canaris fell ill in 1976, his place as head of the 'Gehlen Organisation', by now the secret Nazi 'Black' agency, Deutsche Verteidigungs Dienst, Dachau, was temporarily taken by the alleged multiple operative Dr Henry Kissinger, who allegedly ceded it to George H. W. Bush (real name ?: Scherff) in 1978. The DVD has ruthlessly adhered to the principles enunciated in the 'Madrid Circular Letter' of 'building the Thousand-Year Reich on the Ruins of the United States' and 'fur uns der Krieg its niemals vorbei'. ■

The Murder of Time

MAKING AND UNMASKING A SLEEPER

By Matthew Pauly

The Murder of Time: Making and Unmasking a Sleeper

By Matthew Pauly

Seventh Edition

Edited by Ann Diamond.
Cover art by anonymous

ISBN 978-0-9781961-4-1

Copyright © 2016 Matthew Pauly. All rights reserved.
This book or any portion thereof may not be reproduced or used in any manner whatsoever without the express written permission of the publisher except for the use of brief quotations in a book review or scholarly journal.

This is a non-fiction memoir. Where noted, the names of characters and organizations have been altered.

Special mention must be made of one of the employers of Mitch, the antagonist in this non-fiction book. He reported to the author in January 2015 that the 1945 CIA Operation Paperclip resettled his Nazi mind-control scientist grandfather to America. Mitch is an American accented, senior military and intelligence officer and expert in MK-ULTRA mind-control. In May, 2015 Mitch did tell me the institution he works for, in addition to the military. For legal reasons his other employer will be referred to as CICA.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I thank my loving and dedicated wife, son, brother-in-law and his family, and my parents-in-law for their incredible love and support during the decade of difficulties that necessitated writing this book.

Special thanks also to:

Dr. Ira B., family physician, who has provided excellent professional care and support.

Ruth J. M. G. a professor of social work and her student Norm M. who cared for my wife and I in person during and following the very stressful events of 2015.

Ann Diamond for finding my postings online and asking to edit this book. She also provided heartfelt support to the author.

A close neighbour Carla L. reached out to support my family and me like no other.

Dr. Colin MacPherson, a Psychiatrist specializing in treating Psychological Trauma (and PTSD), for his outstanding dedication, medical care and humanity over 250 hours of therapy. Colin has moved near a Canadian Air Force base and leads a team that has treated many veterans of the Afghanistan war.

Lorna Milne, Psychotherapist at The Centre for Psychotherapy in Toronto for expertise in treating Psychological Trauma in over 250 hours of therapy.

Yvette C. (sister) for her editing of the first manuscript version in 2006.

Ellen R. and Vanna P. for providing edits to early versions of the manuscript.

Vladimir of the Russian Martial Art School for his teaching and patience.

Sean Stone, filmmaker, actor, and documentary interviewer for interviewing me on his show “**Buzzsaw**” at TheLip.TV, Episode 208 “Scopolamine: The Devil’s Breath and Confessions of an MK ULTRA Sleeper Assassin[1]”.

Adam Finnegan of the Indie/Alternative Rap Band ‘**Foreign Policy**’ for writing and producing “Scopolamine Sleepers[2]” a song inspired by the above-mentioned interview. Adam then created a stunning music video promoting the song and this book: Scopolamine Sleepers Video[3]

Adam gave much support, helping me traverse rapids of worry and fear

to complete the book, and became a friend.

---

[1] http://thelip.tv/episode/scopolamine-devils-breath-confessions-mk-ultra-sleeper-assassin/
[2] https://itunes.apple.com/us/album/scopolamine-sleepers/id1068574219
[3] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=shLMgiI9BuUat

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated first to those who have been tortured, under any circumstances. Second, this book is dedicated to those who suffer Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD), which includes most in the first category. This book is especially dedicated to MK-ULTRA Monarch test subjects, including super soldiers, all of who, by definition, have been tortured, and suffer from PTSD.

Besides time, accelerators to healing need to include:

a) Psycho-dynamic psychotherapy, and

b) Mindfulness-based therapy, and

c) For some, adjunct medication therapies

There is no replacement for talk therapy with psychotherapists and those few psychiatrists specializing in Post-Traumatic Stress disorder.

This book is especially dedicated to the hundreds of Canadian Forces soldiers upon returning from Afghanistan had PTSD and have not received the help they deserve in a timely manner, or at all. More loss of life has occurred upon their return from lack of access to PTSD treatment than in the war. This is shameful to all Canadians.

These young, courageous men and women were injured in combat through no fault of their own and deserve prompt, top-quality, on-going treatment.

This is also dedicated to the innocent in Mitch's MK-ULTRA mind control experiment in 2008.

INTRODUCTION

A Canadian academic reviewing this book before publication insisted that before telling my story I must explain how it fits into the power dynamics of society.

On a family vacation in China in 2012 by chance I met several Chinese dissidents in their late twenties. One showed me an English translation of the essay he wrote and published which put him in the cross hairs of the government. His was a brave criticism. He was literally on the run, not staying long in any one place. I was shocked for the first time meeting someone who legitimately feared for their safety based on something they had written.

I told him of my book effort. I explained my non-consensual involvement since 2005 as the subject of mind-control research by the US Military Joint Task Force (JTF) and CICA with Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP) support. I said I was considering publishing as fiction since the violent black operations by professionals left very little evidence, and I feared retaliation.

He said emphatically: “This is an important story! You must publish this as non-fiction, otherwise it will mean nothing!” I agreed with the Chinese dissident then, and I completely agree now after my subsequent whistleblowing has resulted in life-shortening retaliation. This retaliation suggests my story illuminates an important mechanism of the power dynamics of society.

Recently in Dallas, Texas radio host Alex Jones interviewed Vivian Kubrick, daughter of the great filmmaker Stanley Kubrick. Vivian Kubrick had held a pro-constitution sign in a peaceful protest, exercising her first amendment rights and police told her she had to move away. As she walked away the police repeatedly pushed her with their fists in the center of her back[4].

Jones asked, “What was your dad, with his great artist mind, what would he think of what America has turned in to, because his films predicted it?” She replied, “My father was very haunted by those factions on our planet that try to manipulate humanity…I think the films that he made, he wanted people to think for themselves, experience for themselves, whatever it meant to them…”

This book, not nearly so artfully, tells of the mind-control mechanisms used by some intelligence agencies, on behalf of greater societal forces, to manipulate humanity with manufactured hate crimes, assassinations and terror events. I ask people to read this book and make up their own minds.

US intelligence agencies, and military have been working since at least WWII on human experimentation, including mind-control, with the goal of forcing people to do things against their will and interest, such as carrying out missions as spies, assassins[5], couriers and sex slaves.

Canada historically has been a CIA MK-ULTRA mind-control research site of the USA. MK is thought to be an abbreviation from the Latin Germanic 'Mentale Kontrolle', or mind-control in German. In 1945, the CIA resettled many thousands of Nazi scientists, in rocketry and mind control, to America in 'Project Paperclip' seeding NASA, CIA, and the military with Nazism[6].

In 1940 secret letters between George Estabrooks of Colgate College in New York tantalized Ernest Bavin, head of RCMP intelligence with a plan of making hypnotically programmed spies.[7] After some back and forth, Bavin finally declined. Estabrooks had a successful career consulting to the CIA, military and did develop hypnotically controlled, non-consensual spies. However from the significant RCMP involvement in my case documented herein, it is evident they do support the CICA with mind-control R & D on Canadians. The report from another victim to me in 1981, (see Preface) suggests they have been at it for many decades.

The Canadian government and the CIA funded Dr. Ewen Cameron's mind control research on thousands of unsuspecting patients at the Royal Victoria Hospital and the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal in the 1950s and 1960s. Thousands were disabled, and some died from horrors done to them. Very few were compensated as hospital records were destroyed. Still today Psychiatrists are not taught of this in Canadian medical schools. This Subproject 68 was one of over 100 CIA MK-ULTRA subprojects, many done in the USA.

In testimony before the US Senate Church Committee hearings in 1975, the CIA asserted this MK-ULTRA mind control research stopped. A former CIA deputy director Victor Marchetti said that "is a cover story." A CIA deep insider in 2014 reported this program was still active, only covert[8].

Few are aware that a method exists using torture, hypnosis and a rare Voodoo drug called Scopolamine, to turn a person into a robot, so they can be controlled to do anything. “I can give you a gun and tell you to go kill someone and you will do it,” said a leading expert on the drug, Dr. Camilo Uribe, head of the Toxicology Unit at San Jose University Hospital.[9]

The ability to anonymously mind-control an actor to be violent is a powerful aphrodisiac to those who lust for more power using deception. I have seen it with my eyes.

First the target is tortured until they dissociate. To dissociate means ones dominant personality goes to sleep to protect the psyche. Once dissociated, resisting hypnosis becomes very difficult. *Anyone* given enough torture-trauma conditioning will dissociate and can be turned into a “sleeper” to be activated later by the programmer.

Victims are hypnotically programmed to perform a newsworthy assassination, hate crime, mass-shooting or just hang around a crime scene after shooting a few rounds, acting as a ‘patsy’ to be caught after the professionals leave the scene without a trace.

After the first programming event, I had no conscious memory of what happened for four years and five months due to dissociative amnesia. I was handicapped in gathering evidence like seeking medical attention or calling the police.

For years after the programming, the anonymous handler can activate the ‘sleeper’ at any time through post-hypnotic triggers (signals) both visual and audible. ‘Plausibly deniable’, state-sponsored hate crimes, assassinations and terror events can be directed using non-consensual citizens who will have no memory of the event for years. While my mind was disabled by Scopolamine, torture-trauma to dissociation and hypnosis my body was used in such an event in 2008.

The political-security apparatus serve the uber-powerful.

News media ownership is highly concentrated in America and elsewhere. The owners exert enormous influence on what does and does not appear in the news by their power to choose editors and executives, and to dictate editorial policy.

Cherry picking news stories to create a preferred news reality is not enough for the uber-powerful. They go further to knowingly sell intelligence-agency-manufactured, false-flag terror events as authentic to deceive and usually terrify the public. A fearful citizenry is easier to control, for maximum profit.

Once the public is *full* of fear, terrorized, from ‘lone wolf/ideological’ terrorist events hyped by the media, they are more inclined to give up their rights to privacy, freedom of speech, freedom from arbitrary search and seizure, and so on ‘to be protected from the terrorists.’

The terrorized population is more accepting of wars waged to ‘get the terrorists’ usually in places with oil, opium, or geo-political interest. In short, deception and fear (terror) is used to control the citizenry, and to extort more profits from afar. If we delve deeper into who funds the overseas terror groups, we come full circle.

As of November 2015, 50% (14 of the 28) of the worst mass shootings in the USA[10] since 1949 had happened in the last decade. The expected percentage based on an equal time distribution is only 15% (10 years/65 years). The actual percentage is 233% higher than expected (35%/15%). Criminals had Thompson sub-machine guns before 1949. The US population in the last decade has not increased anywhere near 233%.

This clustering of US mass shootings in the last decade happens to coincide with my experience of being trained as a non-consensual, hypnotically programmed assassin in 2005, and later abducted to the US and non-consensually tested in 2008. The total mind-control training time was less than five hours in two sessions by a JTF and CICA mind-control expert descended from, according to his own words, a CIA Project Paperclip Nazi mind-control scientist grandfather.

Mass shootings were attributed to ‘lone wolf gunman/terrorists’ have brought about the most draconian, rights-reducing legislation ‘to protect us from the terrorists’ in the USA, Canada and Britain, since WWII.

The Canada Anti-Terrorist Act, Bill C-51, and the US P.A.T.R.I.O.T. Act and National Defense Authorization Act are prime examples. Two of these were passed right after 9/11. The citizen’s ability to participate in their democracy, i.e. to speak freely, to have freedom of religion, to have freedom of assembly, to have privacy, freedom from arbitrary search and seizure, were curtailed. The Pro-War, Big Oil, Corporatist agenda (e.g. TPP) is now nearly unopposed.

In summary, the covert mind-control R & D reported herein is a smoking gun in a covert war which benefits a select group in the political-security apparatus and a powerful few families whose banking, media and other interests benefit from wars and a more fear-controlled, servile citizenry. It would be naïve to assume other powerful countries lack this technology.

Except for a few paragraphs in the Conclusion there will be no more politics or agenda.

---

[4] http://www.infowars.com/infowars-com-exclusive-vivian-kubrick-on-the-insanity-of-tyranny-2/

[5] http://www.wanttoknow.info/mind_control/cia_mind_control_experiments_sex_abuse

[6] http://www.wanttoknow.info ‘mind control’ topic containing declassified CIA documents

[7] “Manchurian candidates of our own: When RCMP flirted with brainwashing”, Jim Bronskill, The Ottawa Citizen, 12/28/97

[8] http://www.wanttoknow.info/mind_control/cia_mind_control_experiments_sex_abuse

[9] “‘Devils Breath’ could be world’s scariest drug”, John Otis, The Toronto Star, 09/02/13

[10] ‘28 Deadliest Mass Shootings in U.S. History Fast Facts’ – CNN.com

PREFACE

It was Christmas break of 1981. I had just returned home to my parents in Regina, Saskatchewan, after an exciting, intellectually stimulating and challenging first semester of Liberal Arts and Sciences at Trent University in Peterborough, Ontario. During the break I socialized a lot with friends, including attending a large party at the house of a friend of a friend. I was eighteen years old.

I had drunk a fair amount of beer, and began spouting revolutionary ideas. My father was a somewhat radical Cultural Anthropologist and Sociologist who had taught me to shake off the shackles of Prussian style education, to think critically and discover my own truths.

The worst that had happened to my father for being an activist and free thinker was getting a death threat by postcard. He had also had his teaching contract at York University not renewed after his stinging critique of York's administration at a national students conference ended up on page A6 of The Globe and Mail. He moved the family to Regina, Saskatchewan where he co-founded the Social Sciences department of the University of Saskatchewan, Regina campus.

The death threat happened in about 1968 after he asked his friend Barbara Frum, known from his activist years teaching at York University, to have CBC national news cover a case of at least excessive force. The Regina Police shot a young First Nations man in the back, dead, while he fled a convenience store robbery carrying a knife that had not been used.

My father then organized a protest of mostly students in front of the Regina Police headquarters, after which the police chief said to the press, "I hate hippies." I watched as the CBC national news team set up lights and cameras in our house. The whole house had gone dark just before the interview was to start when they overloaded the old wiring with their bright studio lights. Upon replacing a fuse, my father was interviewed.

The threatening anonymous-type postcard from Weyburn, Saskatchewan followed shortly after the story aired on the CBC National News. "Keep your big nose out of other people's business. Shut your mouth or someone will shut it for you." The return address was fake, and the Regina Police told my father they could not investigate further.

I was less than five years old. My mother was supposed to keep the postcard from me, but she left it out on the living room coffee table. I learned to read quite young and although I did not understanding some of the message, I memorized part of it and later asked my father about it later. He apologized for my mother leaving the card out, and gave me an honest explanation. He downplayed the threat completely so I would not worry. That was the worst retaliation for my father's decades of activism that I knew of.

After ten minutes of spouting revolutionary rhetoric at the house party in 1981, a man in his late thirties, probably the oldest at the party, approached me. I cannot remember exactly what I had been saying to a crowd but it was something along the lines of getting pitchforks and torches and marching to parliament.

The observer had been listening to me from a distance holding his beer and motionless except to sip his beer slowly. He wore glasses, long hair by today's standards, and side burns.

He approached me and said, "I've been listening to you talk. You're quite a talker."

"Thank you!"

"I want you to talk with you for just a minute."

"Sure," I said.

"Come with me over here where it's quieter," he said as he led me to a quieter corner of the living room.

He backed into the corner and gestured me to stand close. I approached taking a sip of my beer.

He said, "I want to let you know something for your own good."

"What's that?"

He continued, "If you continue talking the way you just did, one day you will get in a lot of trouble."

"What do you mean?"

"You will be picked up by the authorities, I don't want to say who, and they will make you an experimental subject. "

"What?"

"They will do horrible things to you… they'll use torture and drugs," he said now leaning in close.

"You'll tell your friends and they won't believe you, no one will believe you."

"But," I interrupted to no avail as the mature man continued.

"They will make you kill someone!" he said emphatically, and finally.

Seeing disbelief in my expression his speech became more rapid, “You will lose your friends, and family! Your life will be wrecked forever.”

“No! That can’t be true, this is Canada! We are a *democracy*,” I countered.

Without losing a beat he replied, “It *is* true. I was just like you at your age. Look into my eyes! It happened to me, it *is* true!”

I looked in his eyes and they were unflinching, he seemed to be telling the truth. I was flabbergasted and shocked. How could this be? This flew in the face of everything I believed about my country.

Awkwardly I extricated myself, “Um, I will think about that, I need to talk to someone,” I said as I gestured towards someone in the crowd and walked away.

From the age of two years old, I grew up in Regina, Saskatchewan, the birthplace of the New Democratic Party, originally the Co-operative Commonwealth Federation (CCF.) Tommy Douglas was the leader and brought in Universal Health Care and an Old Age Pension Plan, both of which were later adopted federally for all of Canada. This more compassionate society was distinctly different from our big brother to the south.

Every Sunday morning my parents took the family to ‘The Unitarians’ , where often an old gentleman in a wheelchair attended with his family. He had been present at the founding meeting of the CCF; it was held at his farm.

Canada had free speech among many other rights being enshrined in the Charter of Rights and Freedoms around that time. Prime Minister Pierre Elliot Trudeau had the intestinal fortitude to keep Canada out of the Vietnam War. Then my conception of our national identity came from my school textbooks; our culture was distinct from our big brought next door, something to be proud of.

Just before attending university I had spent nine months in Katimavik, a federal government sponsored, youth volunteer work program analogous to the US Peace Corps, but decidedly different. Participants lived in groups of twelve with a group leader, in three-month stints in different regions of Canada where they did physical labour for one dollar a day, to help the community. The group represented Canada’s demographics. We were taught many life skills, a second language and good citizenship.

I believed in the fundamental freedoms of our country. I believed we were a democracy. I could not believe Canadians could be selected “by authorities" based on their beliefs or speech for non-consensual mind-control experiments in which they were tortured, drugged and forced to kill.

I had not heard of MK-ULTRA, and its main goal to develop mind-control to force people into doing things against their interest including killing others, with no memory of the event for many years. I did not know that a former CIA deputy director, Victor Marchetti, had rebuked the CIA's assertion at the 1975 Church Committee Senate hearings that the program had stopped saying this was "a cover story."

I had never heard of MK-ULTRA Subproject 68, a CIA and Canadian government funded mind-control research effort led by Dr. Ewen Cameron at Royal Victoria Hospital and Allan Memorial Hospital in Montreal in the 1950s and 1960s.

To believe this man at the party would have crushed much of my worldview. I was experiencing Cognitive Dissonance but I did not know what that was. Once home a few hours later, I remember standing in my bedroom, thinking over what the man had said. I decided I could not believe him. To believe him would be too unsettling.

Over twenty-five years later, I have painfully come to know he was right.

Since I report what I did not believe of a stranger years ago, I am attaching a supportive doctor's letter so others may not make the mistake I did. I have since changed my pen name to Matthew Pauly to nearly match my Facebook profile http://facebook.com/matthew.pauley99 referenced later in the book.

camh
Centre for Addiction and Mental Health
Centre de toxicomanie et de santé mentale

April 26, 2011

Re: [redacted] (alias Malcolm Pauly),
D.O.B. [redacted], 1964

To whom it may concern:

This is to certify that I have known [redacted] (alias Malcolm Pauly) since the spring of 2006, and I have been meeting with him regularly in psychiatric follow-up since that time. He initially presented with symptoms consistent with PTSD, associated with vivid memories of having been tortured by government anti-terrorist forces in a van on or about November 26, 2005.

Since his initial presentation he has had trials of three different antipsychotic medications due to my concerns that these memories may be false. This includes a trial with clozapine, well known to be an antipsychotic with superior efficacy. He retains full memory and certainty of the events in question despite these trials. He has not been diagnosed with a Delusional Disorder.

He has never presented with suicidal ideations, intentions, or plans.

Sincerely,

Colin Macpherson M.D. FRCPC
Staff Psychiatrist, CAMH

Transforming Lives - Transformer des vies

CHAPTER 1: 2007 Q3 - Electroshock as Mind-Control

"Three things cannot be long hidden: the sun, the moon, and the truth" - Buddha

It was a cool, overcast, early autumn evening in 2007 as I walked east on the north side of King Street in Toronto towards the Yonge street subway. The distance from my workplace in the Holiday Inn building to the subway was about six blocks. It was early evening with sunset less than an hour away. The Broadway style theaters had canopies with hundreds of light bulbs that illuminated the sidewalk out front and radiated heat onto passers-by. The shows had already started, so there were no line-ups.

I worked as a senior computer programmer of on line trading systems. I had been a programmer for two decades and had returned to my career only six months earlier, after taking a year and a half off recovering from Post Traumatic Stress Disorder. Previously my longest time off work from sickness was two weeks in my twenties when I caught chicken pox. Although not yet back at the top of my game, I felt great relief at being back at work in my field.

I stand about 6' 1" with an average build, and what others have said is a 'Scottish look'. Given the huge influx of Scots into Canada a century ago, I could blend into a crowd, but there was no crowd this evening; the streets were almost bare.

Only two weeks earlier, I had received an edited version of my manuscript by un-encrypted email. My first editor, a relative with a graduate degree in English Literature, had spent several months editing a first draft of a tell-all book.

I knew my interrogators in November 2005 had made me promise to tell nothing about the van-based torture interrogation. The American officer 'Mitch', a US Joint Task Force (JTF) officer, and the Canadian JTF2 officer 'Red' had said my face would appear in the paper if I started talking about what was done to me. "It won't look good," Mitch had added. The taller, heavier, dark-haired Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP) officer 'Burly', who spoke with a slight French accent, had said very little during the interrogation, but played a central role in hooking up the torture devices and obtaining a forced confession.

I thought of myself as someone who stood up for human rights. It had felt good to write of the experience, despite the personal risk. I knew that sending the manuscript to my editor by un-encrypted email was a risk, as the authorities in the van had said I was going to be kept under surveillance.

What would they do when they read my manuscript exposing the torture? But had I sent encrypted email I might have led them to believe I was hiding something sinister: perhaps they would think I really was a terrorist, perhaps they would interrogate my relatives. Besides, how could I teach my stepsister-editor to send PGP encrypted email from over one thousand miles away? There was nothing to be done now anyway, the action was taken. I was glad to see the manuscript making progress but I felt a little unnerved, my caution combined with a sense of foreboding.

Mitch had threatened that I might also be taken to Guantanamo Bay if I started talking about the coercive interrogation. But the most serious consequence of talking was only hinted at by an odd question. Mitch had asked, “What side of the bed do you sleep on, inside or outside?”

After I told him “the outside,” Mitch responded: “Just to make sure we’re clear on this, Matthew, by outside do you mean the side closest to the door?”

“Yes,” I responded.

This odd question would remain unremembered, rolling around in my unconscious for three more years. When it finally surfaced into my conscious mind it would erupt like a red-hot jet of lava from a volcano. A single question by an officer can have a profound effect on one’s sense of safety and security at home.

However, on that night in 2007 as I walked east along the north side of King Street toward the Yonge subway, the ominous question was still repressed, not yet in my conscious mind just as memory of my sleeper agent training was still repressed.

There were few pedestrians that evening, as the weather was partially overcast, partly sunny, with occasional sprinkles of rain. Up ahead, half a block away, I saw an off-white van parked facing me on the north side of King Street, my side. I continued walking east with caution, having become leery of parked vans since 2005.

Coming closer, I saw this van was not as big as the tall, boxy, dull mono-colour, armoured five-ton military van in which I was interrogated in 2005. Instead it was about the size of a Ford Econoline van, with a sliding side door and a slightly taller roof, similar to an ambulance. When I was a quarter of a block away, I could see the unmarked van had a driver and passenger inside. I started to feel nervous. My instinct was to run, but that was irrational. I couldn't run every time I saw an unmarked van parked on my side of the street.

A shorthaired, man in a dark suit walked towards me about an equal distance on the other side of the van ahead of me, but he his path was to my left, further from the curb. Curiously, at twenty paces from the van he veered towards the curb, towards me. To avoid colliding with him I veered to my right, which meant I was going to be closer to the curb parked looming van.

I willed myself to act normally and just keep walking towards and past the van. A car's length from the van, again the man veered to me, almost cutting me off. To avoid him I veered right to within two feet of the parked van and slowed my pace, as this erratic pedestrian appeared ready to sandwich me against the van. To my alarm, he also slowed down.

One pace after I passed the passenger door, I heard someone call "Matthew!" just behind me, in a loud voice from the passenger side window. I stopped in my tracks. I knew that voice. Time slowed down.

About six feet away stood another man with a big umbrella blocking the view to the west in case anyone was walking behind me. The man in the van who had just called my name remained facing forward; only the back and side of his head was visible revealing short, blond hair and an unsmiling mouth. The passenger window was half rolled down and I saw dust and smearing on the windshield, backlit from the orange glow of the sun, which was setting behind scattered clouds.

I recognized the man in the passenger seat. It was my torturer, Mitch. I heard a "clunk" that sounded like the van's side door unlatching beside me. Before I could turn towards it, I felt a damp, inhalant-soaked cloth being pressed over my nose and mouth as I was put into a headlock from behind. Uselessly, I tried to pull away; I was being dragged backwards into the van through the side door. I stepped backwards to release the pressure on my neck and avoid losing my balance. Just before I lost consciousness, I smelled fumes.

In a far-away voice, almost like in a dream, I heard my name being called: "Wake up, Matthew!" Now louder, the voice commanded, "Wake up, Matthew!" I realized I was not dreaming. I felt a sting on my cheek as someone slapped my face: "Wake Up, Matthew!! Wake Up!!" I opened my eyes. I did not know how long I had been out.

I was strapped down to a portable gurney in the van, the same kind found in ambulances. It was lowered so I was close to the floor. In terror, I recognized both officers from the 2005 torture interrogation: Mitch (JTF) and Burly (RCMP). I felt an apple sized, smooth, round, rubbery object in my mouth.

Mitch continued, “Matthew, you've been a bad boy... A very bad boy...” I looked back quizzically, faking innocence. “You've talked to people; remember you were warned about that... we warned you.”

“Nooooo” I tried to say, but it sounded like “nnnnnnnaaaaaaaaa” through the ball gag.

“Don't lie to me, Matthew...we know you’ve talked to a lot of people....” Mitch said and added gravely: “You were warned.” Then from the side Burly leaned in closer, holding an apparatus that looked like headphones, with metal tips in place of speakers.

I felt the metal ends rested close to my temples. I can still remember the cold of the metal against my skin. I realized what the device was. I tried to scream, but the rubber ball gag plugged my mouth. Realizing electro shock was imminent I screamed “nnnnaaaaaaaaaaaa” as loud as I could but my scream was almost completely silenced by the ball gag. My only hope was that someone outside the van might hear my muffled cries.

Mitch picked up a box with wires leading out of it, a remote control of some sort. He was not going to give me any time to try and alert others. Hunching over as he stepped back, he announced: “Clear!” and a second later flipped the switch. The sensation was like an extremely loud buzzing for a fraction of a second before everything faded to black.

Sometime later I heard, “Matthew, wake up! Matthew, wake up!” It was still far off and dreamlike. Then louder: “Matthew, wake up!!” I realized I was not dreaming, and opened my eyes. The ball gag was gone, and so was my memory. I was sitting on a bench in a van that I did not remember getting into. It was as if I had suffered a stroke and awoken in an ambulance whose attendants did not wear uniforms and lacked medical equipment.

The blond man on my right was the smaller of the two. Another taller man with dark hair, sat about six feet away on a bench. They both looked oddly familiar and I felt deathly afraid of them. My mind was very blank, and my consciousness blunted.

"Look at me, Matthew!" the blond haired man said. Feeling spaced out, I slowly turned to look at the other man seated on my left. I was embarrassed that I did not know what was going on. The man asked, "Do you know where you are?" I was eager to appear able to function so I would be let go.

"Yes, I'm inside a van." I tried to sound matter of fact.

"Good, now what are you going to do?" the blond man asked.

"I'm going home," I responded hopefully.

"Good," the man responded, somewhat relieved, and he added, "How are you getting there?"

"I'm taking the subway." The blond man managed a half smile.

The dark haired, taller man sitting on the bench interjected, "And where is your home?"

"400 Walmer Road"

The dark haired man covered his face with his hands and slowly shook his head back and forth. I couldn't understand why he appeared despondent.

The shorter, blond man seemed annoyed. "No, Matthew! Your home is on the Yonge subway, on a street just north of Eglinton a few blocks."

"Oh yes, right." I was incredulous at my own mistake.

"Are you sure you know where your home is?"

"Yes, I remember now."

The blond haired man studied me for a moment. "The Yonge subway is two blocks in that direction." He pointed towards the back of the van. "Are you sure you understand?". The van was now on the south side of the street, as if it had done a U-turn since picking me up, but likely it had travelled many blocks in between.

"Yes," I responded, slightly annoyed at being treated like a child.

"Good, now go directly home, Matthew. Do you understand?"

"Yes," I responded mechanically. The tall man with the dark hair and moustache seemed ready to stand up. As I started to get up from the bench, the blond haired man motioned me with his hand to sit back down.

"Matthew, listen to me for a minute." Pausing for effect, the blond haired man looked directly into my eyes. I noticed his eyes were blue, and cold. "Don't talk to anyone about this!"

"About what?"

"About all of this!" he said as he made a sweeping gesture with the palm of his hand towards the walls of the van, himself and the other man.

"Yes, OK." My mind was fuzzy, confused, and compliant. I wondered what had happened that I was supposed to keep quiet about. I wondered why I had forgotten where my own home was. How did I come to be inside this van? What had occurred before I awoke sitting on a bench? Who were these men? Why was I feeling so spaced out? I felt a life threatening need to get far away as soon as possible.

The blond haired man stood up, and said, "All right, let's go." At 6'4" the taller, dark-haired man had to stoop over half bent to open the side door of the van. He stepped out and down onto the sidewalk. He scanned the surroundings in a slow arc before turning back to the blond haired man. "We're good to go."

I stepped down and turned around to face the blond haired man who remained inside the van. He bent forward and pointed east, towards the front of the van, and said, "The Yonge line subway is that way."

"Yes." I was eager to show that I could function on my own. I did not want to say 'Good Bye' as I felt deep antagonism towards these men. So I said, "I'm going now," and then turned and started walking towards the subway.

I would not remember what had happened in that van until several years later. This incident in the theatre district in autumn of 2007 damaged my memory and left me with amnesia. The torture interrogation they were trying to keep me from writing about had occurred in a military van in mid-town Toronto in November 2005, two years earlier.

CHAPTER 2: 2005 Aug 2 - Watching a Plane Crash

STOP: Unless you are interested in the extraordinary events leading to my selection as a mind-control R&D test subject, skip to Chapter 6. Many readers are interested only in the state actor events and some stop reading in chapters 2-5. You can always return to these chapters later.

“You must never be fearful about what you are doing when it is right.” – Rosa Parks

August 2, 2005 was my second day at my new job as a Team Leader and Senior Developer at a company Red Hand Software[11], a software vendor directly facing the Toronto Pearson airport. The company name was based on the name of a type of tarantula. There was a live one in a terrarium on display in the lobby and it was creepy.

The software vendor had hired me quickly, based on my extensive record as a team leader and systems architect designing and building complex software systems. I had been laid off from a previous position after getting into a disagreement with my manager. My career had been in decline ever since 2002, when I began having flashbacks and partial recall of severe childhood trauma, which my psychiatrist would not allow me to discuss with him in therapy.

Up until these memories surfaced, in my late thirties, I had had a near stellar seventeen-year career in software development, which began after graduating from university.

In the dot-com craze of 2000, I had been Chief Scientist of a publicly traded software development tools company, and for two years I was worth several million on paper. In 2002 the start-up failed as funding completely dried up during the dot-com crash. In that year, I involuntarily recalled previously inaccessible memories of severe childhood trauma/abuse and found it hard to keep my emotions under control. From then on, it became hard to keep a job or get contracts renewed.

The flashbacks were terrifying, and included waking from nightmares sweating and yelling, with arms and legs flailing. However my psychiatrist (Dr. R. G. C. at the then Clark Institute of Psychiatry, hereafter Dr. C.) refused to allow me to talk of this remembered trauma that involved severe abuse by Ray V., then a family friend. He cited the risk of “falsely accusing another” due to recovering false memories.

I have since done some research. In the USA in the 1980s a number of grown up children sued their parents for childhood abuse. A common defense of parents was that the child was having false memories. Justice being what it is in the USA, highly paid lawyers (parents often had more money than their children) used this “false memory” defense to defeat the litigation and also to sue the child's psychiatrists, sometimes successfully.

Therefore, starting in the early 1990s, psychiatrists began refusing to let a client discuss childhood trauma, lest it lead to a wrongful conviction due to a false memory. A wrongful conviction could lead to psychiatrists getting sued, which would increase their insurance rates.

Not being able to talk about severe childhood abuse to psychiatrists has led to a whole generation of patients not getting the therapy they need to recover from Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD).

Every time I raised my newly recovered childhood abuse memories to Dr. C., he would tell me: “I'm sorry Mr. Pauly, but I can't let you continue on this topic.” Once when I pushed the point, Dr. C. answered, “This interview is over.”

By late 2002 I had started to loathe Dr. C. My undiagnosed PTSD condition was becoming serious. To get to sleep at night, I sometimes fantasized a series of painful ways of inducing his demise. One scenario was dangling Dr. C. by his ankles out of his office window.

I had remembered severe childhood abuse (rape.) Parts of this event were repressed for 27 years to protect the psyche. What was still repressed was that after I was raped, I was taken to a remote location where I was shown the naked corpse of a young person dug up from a shallow grave. My attacker said this was what would happen to my mother and me if I told anyone.

Perhaps the reader might understand the rage I felt towards a psychiatrist who refused to let his patients speak of such memories “lest an innocent be wrongly prosecuted.”

I never had any plan to harm Dr. C.; I understood this imagining was simply a way to get to sleep for two months. In early 2003 I stopped my regular visits to Dr. C.

At the same time, I began to have trouble dealing with authority figures at work. I now suddenly found it a challenge to get a contract renewed or stay at one employer for a lengthy period.

In 2004, my manager at a government media-conglomerate's web division would throw temper tantrums and hurl papers across the table. I could barely contain my fear and anger during these eruptions, even though most of the time the focus of the bosses' temper would be another team leader who cowered in fear.

I told a colleague that this work environment triggered me and I was not sure I could handle my emotional response. Apparently my colleague reported this, as within a few days I found my contract assignment changed. For the duration of the contract, I reported to another team leader and my contract was not renewed. The colleague got my old position.

After several such career-'non successes', in mid-2005 I accepted the team leader position the software firm near Toronto Pearson airport. I was determined to break the career bad-streak, and try my hardest to make this position a success. I owed it to my family to have a stable career and income.

Unfortunately, sometimes putting the lid back on an over-boiling pot of trauma memories is impossible. With my memories partially recalled, I was like a ticking time bomb.

Software occupied the top three floors of a five-story steel and glass office building with 1980s-style tinted windows on Matheson Boulevard East in Mississauga. All that lay between the airport's runways and our building was the 401 highway (North America's busiest), with an unobstructed view of the airport. This perfect viewing point was half a mile directly south of the airport, very near the mid-point of the east-west runways (24R, 23L), and only five degrees off center of the northwest - southeast runways.

Having worked at dozens of client sites and employers in nearly two decades in the software development business, on my second day I was already feeling reasonably comfortable with the new job environment. The first impressions were good: the people seemed very bright, full of energy, friendly and helpful. Management appeared hands off. This was cause for optimism.

My cubicle was on the fifth (top) floor where most of the software development took place. Perhaps because of close proximity to Pearson Airport, the senior management occupied the lower storeys, and rank-and-file worked in the top-most floors.

At around four PM on my second day, I had successfully navigated to the fourth floor kitchen for the first time without asking for directions along the way. I felt proud considering I easily lose my way in a new building.

The previous business day, from the fourth floor kitchen, I had watched with wonder as shimmering heat waves rose from a mirror-like mirage on a runway that extended just over a mile towards the horizon. As the heat waves arose off the runway the outlines of the speeding planes became gradually distorted by wobbly, rotating jet wash while the planes grew smaller and smaller and took off into the sky.

From that distance, they seemed the size of remote controlled toy cars. It was fascinating to watch these big jets line up in a little row and wait their turn to take off, and then disappear into the hazy sky. Almost simultaneously, incoming aircraft landed into the wind on the east-west runways where the predominant wind pattern was south-easterly.

On this day, August 2, 2005, there were severe thunderstorms, with heavy rain, lightning and gusty winds. I had heard earlier in the day from co-workers that flights were stopped from taking off and landing due to the weather. As I walked into the kitchen to get a coffee, a white aircraft was coming in for a landing across the field of view of the window.

This was surprising, as I had heard that landings and take-offs were cancelled due to the thunderstorms. Having observed planes landing the previous day, I knew the aircraft needed to be on the runway by the time they passed the kitchen window, which was almost at the mid-point of the east-west runways. But this jet was not even close. I thought, ‘Oh great, a plane crash on my second day.’ Secretly I admonished myself for such a paranoid and very improbable thought. Several programmers were chatting while they looked out the window.

I drew closer to the window and recognized the jet had the familiar bloated airframe of a Skybust[12]. It was no more than a few meters above runway 24L as it passed the halfway point heading west.

I had monitored the safety history of this government-consortium-designed, first fly-by-wire commercial airliner since 1988, when it had crashed at its air show debut in France[13]. I had read that the computer programmers writing the control software were non-pilots and used functional specifications that did not take into account that pilots must ‘land hard’ during heavy rainstorms to prevent the wheels from hydroplaning.

The Skybust software-based control systems, at least initially, allegedly prevented pilots from landing hard; they insisted on a gradual descent to the runway. However, allegedly due to a design flaw, when landing hard in heavy rain, sometimes the control systems prevented pilots from applying wheel or air brakes and these aircraft would careen down the runway resulting in overshoot crashes.

I was so informed (and worried) about Skybust safety that in 1996 I had demanded to be let off one when it stopped for repairs in Mexico City en route from Toronto to Costa Rica. In the middle of the night, on the airport tarmac, the pilot announced a delay while a maintenance crew replaced a computer system in the underside of the front fuselage.

I got up and moved to the back of the jet where the washrooms were. I talked with a stewardess about my dislike of Skybusts. The stewardess lowered her voice and shared her dislike. She said her husband was a pilot, and he called them “SCUDs”. “Because you never know where they were going to land.” The SCUD was an inaccurate missile system used in a Middle East war at that time.

Allegedly some of the Skybust crashes were allegedly due to the computer getting into a fight with the pilots about whether it was time to land or not, and so the aircraft would decide to land on its own in the wrong places, like in a forest when the Skybust crashed at its air show debut in 1988.

On that night in 1996 in Mexico City, I decided I had reached my threshold. I informed my then girlfriend of the poor safety record. I explained we could get off the flight and catch a different flight the next day. She agreed, and we told the stewardess, who informed the pilot.

The pilot called me into the flight cabin. He was polite at first as he explained, “This maintenance is routine; there is no reason to worry.”

I declined his reassurance, “I have followed the Skybust safety record from the start and I don't want to take any more chances than I have to.” The pilot become annoyed and reiterated that the plane was safe. I mentioned one of his own flight crew shared his concern for the safety of Skybusts. The pilot was not happy upon hearing this. I insisted that my girlfriend and I be let off the flight. The pilot tried more reasoning to no effect, and then he gave up. He reluctantly called in the situation on the radio to the control tower.

Several minutes later, an army jeep pulled up, and a machine-gun toting Mexican soldier stepped out. A truck with a staircase drove up against the side of the aircraft. A stewardess opened a door and the co-pilot stepped out first and beckoned my girlfriend and me to follow. We walked down the portable stairs. Passengers could be seen nervously peering out the windows as we disembarked.

The co-pilot said something to the soldier, and then the baggage handlers that had appeared. The baggage handlers loaded many of the bags onto large baggage carts beside the aircraft. The staircase bearing truck shone a spotlight on the carts, and the soldier's jeep was positioned so its headlights shone on the baggage carts. The solider asked us to identify our bags. We found our bags in a few minutes, and after signing a declaration, the machine gun toting soldier drove us back to the terminal.

We spent a pleasant night and part of the next day in Mexico City and caught a connecting flight to Costa Rica in the evening.

On August 2, 2005 my coworkers and I watched as the plane glided by our window in a severe thunderstorm. Three programmers were already at the window and I walked over to join them.

One of the three said, "He's overshot the runway! He'll never be able to stop!"

Still in denial about what was unfolding, I thought these younger programmers must just be unaware of how rare a plane crash was. "No, there must be more runway down at the end there," as I pointed towards the west end of 24L.

"No, there isn't." Sure enough, putting my nose to the glass to get a better view toward the west end of the runway, I saw a row of lights protruding on eight foot high metal stands. After that, there was nothing but grass, disappearing down a slope.

Time slowed down. All four of us were silent at the rare event unfolding outside. The speeding jet had now touched down and was rolling down the runway with less than 25% of the runway left. There was a curious sight: two huge 'rooster tails' of high pressure water spray were driven back and up from each set of rear wheels, and reached into the sky about 100 feet above the aircraft. The water jets were what one would expect from high pressure fire hoses pointed back and up at a 60-degree angle from the rear wheels of the jet. A wake of water followed the aircraft down the runway like that seen following a high-speed motorboat on a lake

One of the others said, "See those rooster-tails of water spray? He's hydroplaning, he can't stop. Have you ever seen anything like that?" he asked the rest of us.

“No,” someone said. The room that minutes before had been filled with the din of conversation, was eerily quiet.

As the speeding plane approached the last 5-10% of the runway, it was still traveling at about 100 mph, too fast to stop in time. Sickened, I looked away. Another person at the window turned away from the window as well. The probability that many people were about to perish in an overshoot air crash, was too shocking to watch.

I felt my heart race and I knew I was breathing too fast. I made my way to the kitchen counter on the east wall, where I grabbed the countertop, leaned my body weight onto my arms, and took deep breaths to avoid hyperventilating.

One of the programmers at the window gave a grim play-by-play as at a sporting event: “He’s almost there… He's almost there... There he goes... He’s almost there… That’s it; he’s at the end… He’s knocked over one of the light stands…. He’s going over the grass…. There he goes on the grass... still on grass… wait -- he’s going towards the slope… there he goes… he’s going down the slope… He’s disappearing down the slope…. There he goes… There he goes… He’s gone... He’s gone... and --”

There was a pause of 30 seconds and then the play-by-play resumed “Smoke… Yes, I see smoke!” After listening to over a minute of grim commentary, I went back to the window and looked out at the smoke and made a dash for the kitchen door. A younger man followed me into the hallway and called after me: “I haven’t seen you here before. What's your name?”

“I just started yesterday.” I was purposefully avoiding his question.

The Good Samaritan said “You’ve just seen a plane crash. Are you all right?”

“Yes, I think so, I just need some air.”

“HR is on the on the third floor, if you want to talk to them.”

I descended the deserted gray concrete stairwell towards the ground level as I imagined the almost certain deaths in the crash and resulting fire. I was horrified. I felt incredibly guilty at having argued with the people at the window, insisting that there was more runway at the end, and that the jet was not going to crash. I had denied the almost certain deaths of many passengers. I now realize this was irrational, but that is how I felt in that moment of psychological trauma.

I thought, “It doesn’t matter if I’m Christian or Buddhist -- I’m going to hell for denying their deaths." Although I was not religious, this thought frightened me. By the time I reached the last flight of stairs, I had imagined two rows of faces, six in each row: the faces of grandparents, children, mothers, fathers, business people all screaming in pain as flames licked at their heads, and even a dog's howling face too. It was a hellish vision; the faces were more like gargoyle faces, animated and very scary looking. (Later, a psychiatrist specializing in PTSD said this could happen to anyone during a Psychological Trauma.)

By the time I exited the stairwell, I was hyperventilating, my heart was racing and I was in mild shock. As I stumbled through the emergency exit door and onto the grass outside, I took a few deep breaths of air. From the direction of the crash site I saw black smoke rising. My stomach felt nauseated; I lit a cigarette.

I thought of running to the crash site to try and help people. Then I thought how certainly I would lose this job if I disappeared from work on my second day. Firemen and ambulances would arrive at the site faster than I could jog there. In my panicked state, what good would I be to the victims? I decided not to run to the crash.

I did not understand how I could be so freaked out. I distinctly felt the experience of hallucinating in the stairwell had changed me, that I was not the same person I had been before. I was right. I hauled heavily on the cigarette pulling the smoke deep into my lungs.

After a few minutes, the same Good Samaritan employee came out the door onto the grass and faced me. He said, "I am disappointed that you're smoking. You told me you were going to get fresh air."

I replied testily, "Give me a break, I did breathe deep a few times. I just saw a plane crash and I need a cigarette!"

The Good Samaritan said "Calm down."

It was not fair to be angry at this man, and so I said "Yah, sorry, I guess I'm just upset at what I saw."

"I understand, but let's go back now."

I reluctantly threw my cigarette butt down, and ground it into the grass with my right foot. I entered the stairwell first and as I climbed the stairs I remembered the vision of burning passenger faces.

I had never had such a realistic imagining in my mind's eye before, and it frightened me. The thought that I might be losing my mind made me fearful and angry. I blurted out what I was thinking: "I don't need this shit!"

“What?” said the Good Samaritan.

“Sorry, I know it’s not your fault the jet crashed… It’s just that I only came here to program” I said.

“Then just do it!” the Good Samaritan repeated the Nike slogan, like a motivational speaker. I think he was stunned by my outburst and didn't know how to handle it.

When I returned to my cubicle, over a dozen employees were crowded around the windows as large plumes of black smoke rose from the crash site a kilometer away. I looked for a few seconds, but it made me feel sick.

Within a half hour, a programmer behind me reported in a loud voice “The CNN web page says everyone on board the aircraft died!” Reportedly a shoeless passenger from the crashed jet ran into the nearest terminal and shouted out that everyone aboard had been killed.

Again I felt that I should be running to the crash site to help; it took every ounce of my strength to hold myself back. It seemed completely wrong to be programming computer software when people were likely dying so close by. But it was only my second day on the job, after a bad career streak, and I felt a duty to my family to keep my job.

Large plumes of black smoke rose from the burning plane in the ravine and dispersed slowly. People were still gathered around the windows to watch. The stench of burning plastic and jet fuel became even stronger.

Again, I had to hold myself back from jogging to the crash site. I could not understand why we were not helping. After two hours, someone announced, “CNN’s web site says everyone survived!” A cheer went up in my section of the floor as people repeated: “They all survived!” But it was too late for me; I was already affected. I wondered if the news report was correct, since after all an earlier news report stated that everyone perished.

Ten minutes later, a woman walked onto the floor and announced, “I am from HR Everyone come over here.” People gathered in a crowd around the HR women. I couldn’t see her face, only that she was short. She said, “I don’t want to interrupt your work, but I know you are aware of the plane crash, and I just wanted you to know that everyone on board survived the crash.”

Surprisingly this gave me little comfort. I didn’t totally trust HR since they did not organize any rescue effort in the intervening hours. I wanted to see the information directly from CNN/CBC on TV at home.

For the rest of the afternoon I was startled and anxious. I had great difficulty concentrating as in my mind's eye I kept seeing the scene from the kitchen window of the jet speeding out of control towards the end of the runway, followed by smoke rising out of the ravine. It kept replaying in my mind, over and over. The HR lady asked if anyone had seen the crash in progress, but I did not want to admit to it. It was only my second day on the job, and I was still in the probationary period. I probably did not even have benefits yet, and if they found out I had PTSD they probably would just lay me off. I had some recall of the overshoot crash, but it was rapidly disappearing.

I decided to leave an hour early, on my second day on the job. I purposefully stopped by my team leader and said, "I sure hope all those people survived." As soon as I got home, I turned on CNN and CBC where it was confirmed that all had survived. That night I tried to calm myself down. I told myself that everything was all right, although I knew something was not right. For several hours after the crash, I continued believing that everyone had died. Something had snapped in my psyche; particularly while fleeing through the stairwell right after watching the overshoot.

In those few hours following the crash, I had felt terribly guilty for arguing and denying the certain deaths of the passengers. I also felt guilty for selfishly choosing to stay at work to keep my job rather than running the one-kilometer to the crash site to help the victims. But as the evening wore on, the events of the day were becoming fuzzy and hard to remember. I had disassociated. The crash was becoming a forgotten splinter lost in traumatized time.

I remembered the telephone conversation with the recruiter who had found me the position, about ten days previous. He had asked me whether I would be okay working right across from the airport. "Yes, of course, why not?" I replied.

"Well, I know someone who started a job there but had to leave as they could not stand working right across from the airport," the recruiter responded.

"My dad used to take us to a road next to the airport when I was a kid so we could watch planes landing and taking off," I said. The recruiter seemed satisfied I could handle it, as did I.

Now I was not so sure I could work facing airport runways. I tried to visit HR the following morning, but the third floor receptionist said no one in HR was available. "One person is on vacation for the week and the other is sick. What is it about?” she inquired.

“I have some new employee forms that contain confidential information and I don’t have a locked drawer yet, and also I wanted to speak with someone,” I responded.

“Here give them to me. I’ll see someone gets them.’

I handed her the forms. “I also wanted to just talk with an HR person,” I repeated.

“About what?”

“I’ll wait to talk with an HR person when one is available.” Then I added, “I’m disappointed that no one from HR is available,” and I left. I did not feel like disclosing my inner turmoil to a non-HR employee.

By the end of that third day, I had completely repressed the memory of seeing the plane crash and the event of running down the stairwell and the vision of people dying in flames.

On that afternoon, two people asked me if I had seen the crash, including my team leader. By ‘seen the crash’ they meant had I watched the jet land past half way and run off the end off the runway, knock down a light stand, race over a bumpy field and descend into a ravine where smoke erupted within 30 seconds.

I told him, “No, like everyone else, I only saw the plumes of black smoke rise from the crash site.”

My vice-team leader interjected: “Someone could get into trouble for lying about such a thing.”

Repressed Psychological Trauma memories can be dangerous to one’s health and sometimes even to the health of others.

---

[11] Name obscured

[12] Not the real aircraft company name

[13] http://catless.ncl.ac.uk/Risks/7.10.html#subj1

CHAPTER 3: 2005 Aug 19 - Tornado Warning ‘Partial Evacuation’

“From out there on the Moon, international politics look so petty. You want to grab a politician by the scruff of the neck and drag him a quarter of a million miles out and say, ‘Look at that, you son of a bitch.’” -- Edgar Mitchel, Apollo 14 astronaut

Two weeks later, on Aug. 19, 2005 a severe storm hit Toronto with Environment Canada issuing a Tornado Warning for the Toronto area, the highest severe weather alert possible.

Here is an image of the super cell storm: http://upload.wikimedia.org/wikipedia/commons/8/8d/1903_hookdb_smooth_

DBZ
80
75
70
65
60
55
50
45
40
35
30
25
20
15
10
5
0
-5
-10
-15
-20
-25
-30
Orangeville
Bolton
Richmond Hill
CYKZ
Vaughan
CYZD
Brampton
CYYZ
Mississauga
CYTZ

Figure 1: Supercell nearing Toronto airport, Aug. 19, 2005

On this day, a tornado caused severe damage in nearby Fergus, Ontario and a severe storm destroyed 50 meters of Finch Avenue in north Toronto, a major thoroughfare. An unconfirmed tornado was spotted where I worked in northwest Toronto directly across from Pearson Airport.

At noon Jean, a French-Canadian member of my fourteen- person “Version 6” team, announced a big storm was coming and that he was going to work from home. I did not like the sound of that, but as I had barely been on the job for three weeks, I knew it would not be wise to ask to work from home.

By 2:30 PM four or five members of the team were clustered around a workstation displaying an Environment Canada web page. All were excitedly discussing the situation in both Mandarin and Cantonese. The sky outside was dark.

At around 2:45 PM the vice-team leader (who spoke fluent English) asked me to come over and review the storm situation. He added, "It seems serious." This was an understatement. The sky had become near black, so dark in mid-afternoon that the streetlights had come on. The only time I could remember such a dark mid-afternoon was when Toronto experienced a full solar eclipse in 1994.

My Chinese wife had instructed me in Chinese culture, and I knew it was politically unwise to do or say anything that might cause a Chinese-Canadian boss to 'lose face.' I responded to the vice-team leader, "You have five people on it already so you probably don't need me." I believed we should have evacuated hours earlier but since I was still in the probationary period of the new job, I was not going to give my frank opinion. Five or six senior team members remained around the workstation, heatedly debating.

At 3:12 the vice-team leader told me, "We're going to have a partial evacuation… only the Version 6 team." He added, "The team lead of the Version 5 team has already been told, so you should not talk to the other team's members. Only we are evacuating."

I was incredulous at the callousness of such a decision and I asked "What do you mean partial evacuation? That doesn't make sense."

The vice-team leader responded, "Just our team is evacuating. Talk to the team lead if you have questions." Most of the team had already left via the closest door, which was across a divider from my cubicle.

I stood up and peered over at my team leader who was at the door waiting for the stragglers. "What do you mean by *partial* evacuation? If there is a Tornado threat to the building, then we should evacuate everyone!"

By now panic showed in his eyes; he was clearly in a hurry to exit. Except for me, one other non-Chinese speaker, the vice team lead, and the only woman member of the team, everyone else had evacuated. The team lead's English failed him and he froze for a few seconds unable to manage a response. Then he found the words:"We're leaving, there is no time, and if you disagree you are on your own…. Do you understand? You are on your own! I want you to say 'Yes' you understand!"

I was incredulous at the thin veneer of civilization, and shocked at the choice of either silently joining an evacuation of only 14 out of 120 employees, or staying by myself. I said, "Yyyyeeeeesssssss" as a strange smile spread across my face. Compliance was a survival technique I had learned in early childhood traumas, which did not serve me well as an adult. I was in full panic at this point.

The team lead turned to the vice-team leader and said, "You heard him, he said 'Yes'!".

The vice-team leader started to object: "Both of you are acting and talking irrationally."

The team leader found this impertinent and said, "Be quiet!"

A Mexican-Canadian team member (the only other non-Chinese speaker) was told to leave but said, "It's okay, I'll stay with him," gesturing towards me. This man was sacrificing himself, out of concern for me. Perhaps he also felt it was morally wrong for only part of the fourteen person Version 6 team to evacuate while the rest of 120 employees were expected to work.

The vice-team leader took another look out the window, carefully cupping his hands against the side of his face and the window to block out reflection. It was like looking out of a window at night. "Oh my god…" he said. He backed away from the window and announced with alarm, "It's coming!" He hurried past the cubicles and out the door to the area by the elevators where the stairwell entrances were.

The sole female member of the team walked calmly past my workstation and said, "If you're looking for us, we'll be in the basement."

"Basement?" Until this point I did not know there was a basement, nor the quickest route to it. I heard the hallway door close.

I looked at my watch and it was 3:15 PM. On the other side of the fifth floor other employees were still working, but their windows faced in the opposite direction from whatever was coming. Likely their supervisors were afraid they would get in trouble with their managers for evacuating their teams to the basement. Obviously the managers showed little leadership in this emergency.

Two to three minutes later, the world outside the window became even darker, almost like midnight. The Northwest bank of windows started emitting a hissing sound, as one would expect from a pit of snakes. The low-pressure tornado was sucking air through the window vents to equalize the air pressure.

I peered over my cubicle wall at the blackened windows but couldn't see anything outside. The computers around my work station all suddenly rebooted, emitted beeps, and their screens flashed. The ceiling fluorescent lights were dimming as a dark area of unlit bulbs moved slowly across the ceiling at walking speed. I have since read an explanation for this: tornadoes push a strong electromagnetic field in front of their angle of attack.

I heard a knocking sound coming from the windows. Sand, dirt and vegetation were striking windows on the northwest side creating a swishing, knocking sound. The effect of all the flying litter and rocks was not unlike the experience of riding in a car through a car wash when the whirly mops traverse the windshield of the car, but more ominous.

After a minute a loud 'crack!' rang out from one of the windows. It sounded almost like a muted gun shot, as if a window had been hit by something very solid, rock gravel or a hailstone moving at high speed.

Having grown up in Regina, Saskatchewan, the site of the worst tornado in Canadian history, an F4, I had an especially deep fear of tornados. My elementary school, the library, and all major buildings had "1912" prominently chiseled onto their facades since much of the city had been rebuilt after the 1911 tornado killed hundreds. I had a schoolmate who had grandparents that survived the event. I asked him to ask them for stories about it. He returned to school the next day and told me it was so bad they didn't want to talk about it. They were superstitious and believed talking about it might bring it about again. My dad had shared frightening stories of tornadoes in Oklahoma where he did his Cultural Anthropology fieldwork.

Upon hearing the gunshot sound, the other remaining member of the team and I hit the floor under our desks with a simultaneous 'thud.'

A few seconds later the window emitted another loud 'crack!' and again I wondered if the windows were going to shatter. Loud cracking sounds kept coming from the windows. I lost count after about twenty. I just wanted to get away.

From my vantage point under the desk, everything was beige: the underside of the desk, the fabric on the dividers, the floor. No matter whether I lay down, crouched or sat, there was nothing I could do to feel safe, nothing to relieve the panic. I didn't dare try to make it to the hallway door, as I would have had to walk, exposed, down an aisle that ran parallel to the window area cubicles.

The cracking sounds started coming farther apart, and less loud. I heard a loud “Thunk” almost directly above me from the roof of the building. Crouched under my desk, I hugged my knees as the shower of sudden hard impacts thundered against the glass, threatenting to break it. Time slowed down.

As a distraction I started thinking about my colleague whose desk was a row closer to the windows. I stood up briefly and asked in a loud voice, “Are you under your desk over there?”

“Yes,” he called back.

“Good, stay there! It’s safer.”

I lay back down under my desk, and realized I was in shock. Then things went all weird. Time seemed both to stand still and go by faster than it usually does.

People from the Southeast corner of the 5th floor (and other floors) were still working. A twenty-something woman came down the center aisle and saw me lying on the floor under my desk. A few minutes later she returned with a twenty-something man. She pointed to me crouched in a daze, under my desk. I was breathing irregularly although they might not have noticed that. The man said, "He's just sleeping" which seemed to satisfy her concern. They disappeared in the direction from which they had come.

Sometime later, a woman manager from HR came and asked me, “Are you afraid of the storm?”

I responded, “Yes, there were rocks hitting the windows.”

“There aren’t any rocks hitting the windows now. Do you want to come out?”

“No, I’ll wait for my team.”

Another management woman (whose office was beside the CEO's) approached me. “Hi Matthew. I was given a call by HR who were phoned by your team that is in the basement. I’m going to help you get out of there. I’m going to ask you to hold my hand.”

Like a child, I took her hand, with some difficulty stood up, and let her lead me slowly to the exit that opened into the building’s inner hallway where the elevators and stairwell doors were. She seemed to know I was in shock.

Once there, we started heading for the stairwell doorway. Suddenly the memory came flooding back of fleeing through the stairwell just after the crash, along with my horrific vision of the dead passengers.

As soon as I realized she was heading for that exit, I broke her grip. “No, I can’t go to that stairwell!”

“Why not?”

“The plane crash is in there,” I said, irrationally.

“What -- another crash?” She started pulling me in that direction.

“No, the one from before. The people are there now. They need help more than me. Help them. I’ll be under my desk.”

I headed back to my desk. I knew this was irrational, but I could not come up with a better explanation.

After a few minutes she came back with her father. In his seventies, Gary handled the coffee supplies, office furniture and various odd jobs, but I suspected his greatest value was to be eyes and ears for the CEO who treated him like a father. I had liked Gary when I met him only a few weeks earlier.

Looking at me, he said, very collectedly (but cryptically): “We missed another one, eh?”

Gary was also a WW II veteran and former member of the “Devil’s Brigade,” an esteemed WW II-era multi-nation special operations force. He had informed me of this when we chatted in the kitchen soon a few days after I was hired:

> “Were you in World War II?” I asked of the elderly gentleman I had just met.
>
> “Yes, I was.”
>
> “Air Force, Army? What unit?” I asked.
>
> “The Devil’s Brigade” he replied.
>
> “What was that?”
>
> “We were a multi-nation special operations force.”
>
> “Wow, so what did you do?” I asked.
>
> “I blew up bridges and that kind of stuff.”
>
> “Wow that’s incredible, that must have been dangerous. Thank you for your service.”

Gary beckoned, “Matthew, grab my hand and come out of there.” I trusted him, and did as he said. I was surprised at the difficulty I had in standing up. “Good, keep a hold of my hand, and now let’s walk together this way.” He led the way through the door to a hallway near the elevators. Reluctantly, I followed.

He started to lead me toward the same exit door, the same stairwell.

"No!" I said, "I can't go down those stairs…"

"Why not?" said Gary, letting go of my hand.

"They're not safe!" I turned around and returned to safety under my desk.

Gary regrouped after a few minutes and calmly beckoned me out from under my desk a second time. "Matthew, I need you to hold my hand again and get up." I reached up to grab his hand and with my other arm I pushed myself up off the floor. Again he led me through the door to the elevator area, and again I became uneasy. Before approaching the stairwell door, his wrapped his arm around my waist. His daughter was waiting by the door and on command -- "Ok, open it" -- she opened the stairwell door and inserted a wooden wedge to keep it open.

"Now get down to that landing!" She clip-clopped in her high heels down the cement stairs and waited on the first landing looking up. Gary started pulling me closer against him and towards the threshold of the door. I started to resist. "It's okay, come on." He tightened his grip on me and pulled harder.

I realize in hindsight Gary was trying to save my life. But then my oxygen-deprived, in-shock brain thought descending the stairwell equalled death.

First Aid web sites say that one never should try and physically force someone who is in shock. There is a good reason. My oxygen-starved brain thought Gary was trying to kill me.

As he tried to push me through the door I suddenly snapped. I broke Gary's grip, grabbed him by the lapels of his jacket, and pushed him backwards from the doorway with force. He was only five feet from the stairs and as he stepped back trying to catch his balance, he fell backwards on the stairs.

Gary grabbed the far handrail with his right arm, and landed on his posterior on the fourth stair. I stood in the doorway and growled like a dog, "GRRRRR!" and I have no idea why.

Everyone was stunned by what I had just done. Gary's daughter broke the silence. "WELL, THAT WAS A GOOD IDEA! Dad, are you all right?"

"Never mind, just stay there." He straightened up. "Nothing's broken."

I started to turn away. "Matthew, you sit down." That direct order subdued me. I sat down on the top stair.

The daughter said, "Should I call someone?"

"No, but keep everyone out of this stairwell. I want you to stand by the door down below and stop anyone from entering. Get someone else to stand outside the door up here. I want everyone kept out, do you understand? Now go on…"

Turning to look up at me, he said, "Matthew, why did you push me?"

"I don't know… I'm sorry. I don't know what I'm doing."

"Matthew, you are in shock and you don't look well. I'm going to sit beside you. You're not going to push me again, are you?"

"No."

Holding the handrail he climbed the four stairs and sat down with me on the top stair.

"Matthew, let me look at your eyes, look at me."

I looked at him and he peered into my eyes.

"Your eyes look like lasers, Matthew. That's not good. You need to get to a hospital, Matthew. You need to come with me down these stairs so we can get help for you."

"I can't go down the stairs, no way." I said.

"But why?"

"I don't know why, I just can't." It was a stairway to hell. I only knew that descending the stairwell might kill me.

Sitting next to me, he continued. "Your breathing is too shallow and rapid, Matthew, try and breath slower and deeper. Your eyes look like lasers."

I have since read when a person is dying of shock, the cells in the fovea give off luminescence as they die off from lack of oxygen.

CHAPTER 4: 2005 Aug 19 – Involuntary Childhood Trauma Recall

"Don't judge yourself by what others did to you" – C. Kennedy

My shock was worsening, and my vision had become only black and white. The knowledge that I might die very soon opened a window to an acute painful memory. It had been unconscious and inaccessible for nearly thirty years but now it was clear as I faced death.

I told Terry about the black and white part and the dark hole growing from the middle where I had a blind spot. Again he looked into my eyes. "Now one is much larger than the other," Gary commented.

I now recalled a disturbing detail from when I was sexually assaulted at age eight. Ray, a seventeen-year-old family friend in Argenta, B.C. (a Quaker community of 500) had invited me for a canoe ride, with only one paddle in the canoe. This was about one month after Ray's eleven-year-old sister (C.) had slept with me together in a sleeping bag during a sleep over. She knew too much about sex for an eleven year old.

I had bonded strongly with her after that night together despite obvious physical limitations to coitus. The bonding was more powerful as my mother had abandoned the family for three months when I was five (she was quite ill and unable to make sane decisions), and I had emotionally detached from her from that moment on.

Unfortunately, I made the mistake of sharing the details with a friend my age in Argenta, who had told someone else, and somehow it got to Ray.

About a week later, Ray approached me on the mountain road that ran past his house, the only road in this small community. "Would you like to go for a canoe ride?" he asked. At the time it seemed very cool for a seventeen-year-old to take an eight-year-old boy on a canoe ride so I accepted.

Ray appeared happy. "Wait here, I'll get the paddles and life jackets." He returned in a few minutes with the jackets and one paddle. "The other paddle is broken," he explained. As we walked down the mountain on the winding, dusty, gravel road towards Kooteney Lake, Ray said, "I've heard that you slept with my younger sister."

"Yes, we had a sleepover."

"But I heard that you had sex with my sister, Matthew."

"We love each other, and we're lovers," I responded innocently.

"First, you're only eight – you're too young. You shouldn't have done it. Second, you told Paul," he added. I felt cornered. "Paul has a big mouth, and now the whole community knows. You've harmed my sister's reputation, and my family's reputation."

"What does reputation mean?"

"It's bad for people to know an unmarried girl had sex! Do you understand now?"

I was unaware how serious an affront this was but I could tell Ray was angry. "OK, I'm sorry, I won't tell anyone else."

"It's too late for that now -- everyone knows."

We walked mostly in silence down to the dock by the water's edge. Ray stooped under some trees and turned over the red canoe. He pulled it out over the rocks and into the water. "Get in," he said.

I stepped in, and moved to the front. "Where are we going?"

"I'm not sure, just a little trip, maybe we'll stop on an island."

He took me to a tiny island, no more than about fifty square meters, with thick brush to obscure the view. He pulled up the red canoe up and turned it over. He had me lean over the hull while he pulled off my swimming trunks. During the rape, I tried to resist by shouting, but Ray slapped me. I disconnected, disassociating as I stared at the round, baseball sized green and gray rocks that lay in the depths of the hazy water around the island.

Now in the stairwell, in severe shock and believing death was imminent, I suddenly remembered what came next.

Ray said he was taking the canoe out for a while to decide what to do with me. "If you start to scream, I will come back and kill you." He pulled the canoe out from the brush, turned it over into the water, and got in.

He disappeared into the distance toward the lake's east side. After an hour or two, I felt abandoned and frightened. The sun was getting closer to the mountain horizon. I thought I might die of exposure if he didn't come back. I started screaming "HEELLLLP!!!" and could hear my voice echoing "heelllp!!" from the shoreline opposite. "HEEEEEEELLLP!!" I shouted again, over and over. Fifteen minutes later, Ray appeared, canoeing quickly to the mini-island. I stopped shouting.

Ray was furious. "Shut up!!!" he said as he pulled up. He ordered me to jump in and started canoeing quickly to the east shore of the lake where there were no cabins, just solid bush and forest.

A few minutes later we reached the shore. Ray dragged the canoe out of sight and ordered me to stay with it while he disappeared into the brush. After fifteen minutes he reappeared and forced me to march ahead of him into the bush where there were no cabins or paths. We were in a remote area. We came to a place in the forest where something was sticking out from the ground that did not look like a tree stump.

As I got closer I realized it was an unclothed, teenage female recently unearthed from a shallow grave. I became hysterical.

The burial was hidden in the bush, a few kilometers north of Argenta and its Quaker community. The only access was a long walk through bush from the road, or a shorter walk by canoeing to the nearby shoreline.

I tried to back away, but Ray pushed me to walk to within five feet of the corpse until I was about three feet away. "Look at it!!" he shouted. "This is what will happen to you and your mother if you tell anyone about today."

I screamed uncontrollably. Then the memory went blank, and resumed again when Ray's father showed up a few hours later. Ray must have gone back and fetched his dad, and they must have driven on the abandoned road that was close to the site. I recalled Chuck led me off the road into the bush. But I did not want to leave the road and I started screaming, "I don't want to go!!" Chuck reassured me by promising not to show me a body. Only then did I agree to walk into the bush with them.

The three of us came to where the body of the young woman had been before. This time there were fist-sized rocks piled perhaps a foot high where her head would have been. Chuck leaned down so his face was at my level and apologized for his son. He said he didn't know why Ray would do such a thing, as show me a corpse.

He told me Quakers bury their dead in this way in a shallow grave without a coffin, or clothes. He said if I spoke about it, and if my father found out, then he would alert the nearest RCMP detachment. They in turn would come and start poking around because these cops didn't know Quaker burial rituals. Of course, there is no such Quaker ritual, but I didn't know that at age eight.

He pleaded with me never to tell my mother or father, or anyone about what I had seen. Withholding my consent, I watched the desperation in his eyes turn from fake concern to a dark coldness. Chuck and/or Ray had likely murdered this young woman, and no one knew where I was at this moment.

I decided to lie to survive. “Yes, I promise. I'll never tell anyone”.

“Are you sure?” Chuck asked.

“Yes, I'm sure, I promise.” I willed myself to appear genuine. Chuck was noticeably relieved. Years later I learned that Chuck had later gone to jail for sexual assault of a minor.

I now related this event with perfect recall to Gary in the stairwell on Matheson Boulevard East in Mississauga, Ontario on August 19, 2005.

Further, I remembered and explained that less than one week after these events, I had caught Ray with a pair of wire cutters working under the front of the Jeep that my mother had borrowed from a friend. It was parked outside Ray’s family home, and the adults were inside the house. By then, I had already repressed all memory of the rape and the corpse in the woods.

I remember asking Ray, “What are you doing under there?”

“I'm working, and you're distracting me. Go away!”

The trauma of only a week earlier had led to a complete compartmentalizing of the memory to a split, smaller personality to preserve the main personality from what it could not handle. I had no recall of the rape, but feeling hurt (and frightened) by Ray's tone of voice, I walked back to the entrance of the house. Soon after, Ray crawled out from under the Jeep and went into the tool shed. When my mother came out a little later, I seated myself in the passenger’s seat. I said, “Ray was really mean to me just now.”

“You just stay away from Ray,” she said in a steady serious tone. She headed the Jeep south on the main gravel road, which had a steep grade all the way to Johnson's Landing, a tiny community only a few kilometers south.

We hadn’t gone far when the brakes suddenly failed. My mother pumped the pedal and thankfully kept her cool, geared down, and directed the jeep into a stand of small saplings along the road which slowed us down. We stopped abruptly as the front axle hit a stump and broke. My mother had the presence of mind to hold her arm in front of me so I didn’t hit my head on the dashboard.

I overheard the men at the crash site speaking very quietly about the brake lines, which were not rusted out. So Ray was also guilty of attempted murder.

Back to the stairwell on Aug. 19, 2005:

When I related the part about the body, Gary asked, “Are you sure there was no coffin?"

"Yes," I said firmly.

"Jeeze, Matthew, now I'm going to have to do something about this." He had his daughter bring him paper and pen, and he wrote down the details with names, dates and the postal code of the isolated community.

Meanwhile in the stairwell my physical condition continued to worsen; I was having trouble breathing, and my vision that had already turned black and white was starting to fade from the middle outwards. It was the same sort of blurry, gray fading vision that I had once when I fainted in a Sunday school choir in a tiny church basement.

One of my pupils was fully dilated, while the other pupil was pinned small. My eyes still had the 'laser' effect. Gary offered to call 9-1-1 but in this severe weather it would be at least one hour before an ambulance would arrive. I had other health complications, and doubted I would last long.

From family in-law experience, I knew those raised in Chinese culture had a remedy for shock: a multiple-person, rapid massage of torso and head. I told this to Gary and asked him to summon the (Chinese) team from the basement.

"Matthew, I have to think of the team's safety too. What if they come up from the basement and another tornado hits the building and kills them?"

Despite my severe shock condition, my thinking was briefly clear at this life and death moment. "Their death from a tornado is a small possibility, but I will very likely die soon." After a pause, Gary agreed.

He asked his daughter to summon the team from the basement. Looking at her, he pointed to his eyes, with his forefinger and middle finger forming a V. "Look at my eyes!! I mean get the team RIGHT NOW!"

(This pointing at the eyes was a hypnotic technique. Could it be that the Devil's Brigade in WW II was trained in hypnosis just as Special Forces are now?)

She rapidly disappeared down the stairs and I returned to the perceived sanctuary under my desk. Now I was fully reliving my childhood sexual assault, and I remembered a new detail. When Ray had returned to the island in the canoe after I had defiantly started yelling for help I shouted: "You left me for dead, you BASTARD!"

CHAPTER 5: 2005 Aug 19 – Workplace Interrogation while in Shock

“It is better to keep your mouth closed and let people think you are a fool than to open it and remove all doubt” – Mark Twain

When I heard the team coming out of the stairwell from the basement, I crawled out from under my desk and stood shakily gripping my desk for balance. The team leader was walking in front.

"You left me for dead, you BASTARD!” I shouted as I lunged for him. The vice-team leader gave me a martial arts chop to a pressure point in my arm, and I fell to the floor like a sack of potatoes. They picked me up and put me in my chair.

I pretended to look at my monitor, which I could not even see properly nor read as my vision was so blurry. The team lead said, “I am sorry that we left you behind.”

“Yaaah…. Yaaaah… Yaaaaah.” I said, my voice dripping with sarcasm.

The vice-team leader immediately recognized what my condition was. He turned to the team lead and said, “He is in shock.”

“But, he’s so, so…” the team lead responded, but before he could finish his sentence, the vice-team interjected: “That’s how they get when they are in shock.” “They” (I believe) referred to Westerners.

The team lead vacillated for a minute unsure what to do, and then vice-team leader said, "YOU are the team leader! HE is in shock! YOU have to do something!!” The team lead asked what to do, and the vice team lead told him.

The team lead asked me to turn my chair toward him. I complied. Next, the vice-team leader asked me, “To assess your condition, we need you to stand, and walk towards me.” I rose unsteadily to my feet and collapsed after the first step.

Frantic shouting erupted in Cantonese and Mandarin as the whole team gathered around my cubicle. They wanted me to remain lying prone on the floor, and the vice-team leader forcibly held me down. Confused, I resisted and tried to sit up. The vice-team leader enlisted four others to brace his as I tried to sit up with all my strength and got half way towards a sitting position.

A voice behind them said, “They have the strength of five men, I’ve seen it before.”

”They” may have referred to people in shock.

The vice-team leader asked me to stop resisting so they could help me. I went limp and stopped trying to sit up and my back hit the floor. The vice team lead told the others “now slowly let go of my back, slowly...”. The four others stopped bracing the vice-team leader’s back, and slowly the vice-team leader let me go. I did not try and sit up even though no longer restrained. The vice-team leader joined the others at a workstation where they appeared to be reading a First Aid web page.

A female programmer who had once been a nurse said, “I’ve seen this violent behaviour before; he is acting psychotic now. He will need to be questioned later.”

“I'll take care of that,” said Gary.

They removed my belt, loosened my shirt collar and took off my dress shoes. Gary said, “He’s got good shoes, he can’t be all bad.” This was one example of many where Gary tried to not only save my life, but preserve my reputation, as he knew I was sick with both shock and PTSD.

Some others started looking through my wallet/day-timer and found my membership card and photo ID for a medical marijuana supply organization. This photo ID was for patients of doctors who recommend such treatment for a specific serious illness.

They asked me if they could photocopy the card, and I said “Yes.” I was on the ground without my glasses, barely able to see, without my shoes, after being overpowered by five people. I was in severe shock; I doubt I could have supplied informed consent for anything.

Another of those looking through my wallet asked, “Matthew, what is your address?” I told them my street address. “Is that in Toronto?” he asked.

“Yes,” I replied, “Why?”

“Because you are a dangerous man, Matthew, we need to warn your neighbours,” he stated. “Is that okay?”

Public “shaming” is a form of social control in the Mao era Chinese culture, and apparently still is.

Very tentatively with a maladaptive, passive response I replied “Yyeeeessss” in a slow drawn out way just as when I answered the team lead on whether I understood I was “on my own” in the partial tornado evacuation.

The vice-team leader observed, “That’s the same way he answered before, when we were going to the basement.”

Referring to the First Aid website, the team asked me some medical questions including whether my bladder felt full, empty, or partially empty. I responded “empty.” After a few more questions, they announced my condition was "severe shock.”

They told the non-Chinese programmers to leave the area as they might find the sight disturbing. They asked for and got my consent to perform rapid massage over my entire torso and head. Twelve people rubbing hands on one's body, at once, is an intense experience; I was fearful so I repeated aloud the name of Buddha, “Amitoufu”, “Amitoufu” over and over. The vice-team leader told the team he knew I was Buddhist. Three times they paused to assess my condition by asking me questions.

At the first pause the team leader asked, “Are you still mad at me, Matthew?”

“YES!!” I responded. The rapid massaging resumed.

A few minutes of massage later the team lead asked, “Matthew, how do you feel now?”

“You have a karmic obstacle,” I responded.

The team lead asked the vice-team leader what this meant and he responded: “I don’t know, but I don't think it’s good.”

I added, “It’s okay, I have one too.”

The vice-team leader said: “Matthew, you’re not making this easy, you know?”

“I’m sorry, I’ll shut up,” I said, and the group resumed the rapid massage.

“Are you still mad, Matthew?” the team lead asked after a few more minutes of massage.

“What would I be mad about? You saved my life,” I said as I sat up and looked at the team leader: “And so did you.”

“We all saved your life,” the vice-team leader said as he opened his arms to include the whole team surrounding me on their knees. Some of the team, and myself, were in tears.

Though still in mild shock, I was no longer in severe shock. Everyone rejoiced as I started acting more normal. At this point, a Chinese member of the team said to me in an angry loud voice, “Matthew, the Buddha’s name is pronounced Amie-Toe-Fwa, NOT Ami-Tofu!”

The female member of the team objected to his tone said, “He’s English-speaking, he’s not expected to know that!”

A day or two later, that same individual told me “Matthew, you can’t be a programmer if you are a Buddhist.” “Why not?” I countered.

“Right Livelihood of the Noble Eightfold Path means not working on military technology and computer software is military technology and it takes jobs away,” he said. “Are you sure being a programmer is not allowed?” I asked. “Yes, that’s why I’m not a programmer any more, I work on help documentation.” This was a shock to me – it didn't make sense to me that writing civilian software was inherently bad, nor that writing help documentation would be any different.

Next, two team members helped me walk to a kitchen area by supporting me as I wrapped my arms around them; I could not walk a step unaided. I had to take a sitting break after only twenty steps. I had no physical strength. Once in the kitchen, they sat me down and gave me an orange soda purchased from a vending machine.

Gary entered the kitchen and explained he was going to interrogate me, as soon as his nephew arrived. I was staring off in the distance with a “1000 yard stare,” disoriented and still in mild shock. Surprisingly, Gary arranged for someone to take a group picture with the entire Version 6 team, with Gary and me kneeling in the foreground. The thirteen-person Version 6 team was clustered in 2 rows behind us, like in a formal group photograph. In the photo, I stare vacantly.

After the first flash went off, Gary leaned over and whispered, “Matthew, I told some other people about you pushing me, so it would be good if you smiled and put your arm around me for this picture.” I did what Gary said, once again stunned by the selflessness of his actions.

Later I realized the taking of this photograph was to gather a piece of propaganda counter-evidence to dispute my claim if ever I attempted to sue the company for their mishandling of the evacuation, and their contractual obligation to arrange for emergency medical care.

Gary's tall, 200-lb. nephew arrived half an hour later. It was clear the nephew was there only for protection in case I was violent. The young nephew appeared frightened, but he put up a good act of being tough. Gary led us to an unfurnished meeting room on another floor. It was so large it could have accommodated a dozen cubicles.

There were only three chairs; one was larger, padded and comfortable. The others were small folding chairs. Gary arranged the most comfy chair so it faced the wall. I offered him the more comfortable chair but he asked me to sit in that chair.

There was only one small window far off on the right side of the wall. Gary sat behind me with his nephew, three feet back, and dimmed the lights. He clearly knew how to conduct interrogations.

He asked if I had ever thought of harming myself. I told the truth. Yes, having suffered clinical depression in my youth (then undiagnosed and untreated), I had once attempted suicide at sixteen years old.

“What did you do?” Gary asked.

“I took a bunch of pills,” I replied.

He asked if I had ever thought of harming others. I told him a decade earlier, when a certain Ontario Premier was in power, I and a fellow programmer friend had once, for entertainment value only, spent a few hours discussing an idea for damaging the Premier’s office. Both Alain and I had the word scientist or researcher in our professional titles at some point and viewed this as no more than a mad scientist diversion for recreation. I exaggerated this event from my past, telling Gary it was a discussion over weeks, and then settled on hours of discussions over a few weekends, still much of an exaggeration.

“Matthew, there is a lot of difference between a few weeks and a few days,” Gary said. “Which is it?”

“It was a few days only,” I answered, still exaggerating.

Gary asked how we planned to do it. I responded that there was never a plan, just a ludicrous idea of exploring tunnels under Queens Park for sewer mains possibly leading to the Premier’s office.

It was a way of blowing off steam as we both were quite annoyed at some of the Premier’s mean-spirited actions, which had resulted in the deaths of mostly poor Ontarians including seven residents of Walkerton. I was trying to distract Gary from my recent violent behaviour, and so I exaggerated this event significantly making it sound much more serious.

Gary responded, “That idea would never work.”

“I know that. It was never meant to work.”

Gary asked if there was any other time that I had thought about harming someone. I admitted feeling strong resentment towards my psychiatrist who refused to let me discuss my early childhood abuse. I told him my fantasy of dangling Dr. C. by his ankles out of his window. I also admitted that one day while driving in north Toronto, I had noticed a fuel depot, and had the fleeting thought that a truck of fuel might take out a building such as the one where Dr. C. worked.

Gary angrily pointed out how many innocent deaths that would cause. I agreed with him and pointed out that I never intended to act on this fleeting thought, years ago.

Gary would not take no for an answer.

With some anger he demanded, “But why did you never do it?”

I had to invent a reason as he did not believe this was just an idle thought, so I did.

“I could never threaten someone with a weapon to hijack a fuel truck.”

Gary prodded further: “If you had the stolen keys to a tanker truck of fuel, then would you have done it?”

“I don’t know.” I was stringing him along, knowing I never would do it.

I knew I would never wilfully commit such violence, but I wanted to leave the door open with Gary, as then perhaps he might be so focused on this that he might be less likely to pursue an assault charge.

Having even had a discussion ten years earlier (1995) with my friend, Alain about the former Ontario premier was a maladaptive way of coping with our shared dislike of a neo-con politician. Hate in itself is toxic. Having had thoughts of harming my psychiatrist in 2002 was also maladaptive. Admitting both of these thoughts in 2005 to a former member of the Devil’s Brigade, after having pushed him in in a stiarwell, (during PTSD trauma and severe shock) was very unwise.

Later I learned unequivocally that Gary did report my answers to “the authorities.” Had I been completely out of shock, I probably would not have attempted to give consent to a workplace interrogation by a professional.

Once the interrogation was complete, I was taken back to the kitchen area. Still in mild shock I stared off into the distance at nothing, which caused some programmers to comment that I looked strange. One said I looked like the guy in, “War of the Worlds.” They asked me if he had seen the movie. I could feel the memories of the afternoon slipping from my conscious mind.

I said, “No, I don’t remember seeing the movie,” adding, “I remember hearing the original Orson Wells story on the radio."

They asked me what I wanted to do right now.

"I feel like digging a hole … to be safe," I added.

It was nearing four-thirty PM, and the vice-team lead and team lead guided me to my car. The vice-team leader held my forearm. As I stepped off the curb into the parking lot, I heard the HR woman shouting, "I'll take you to the hospital, Matthew!"

I knew the vice-team leader was skilled in martial arts. I had felt him accurately chop my arm when I had earlier lunged at the team leader, and he showed expertise in holding a person down without harming him. I was in a headspace where I did not feel it safe to disagree with him.

"You don't want to go with her, do you?" the vice-team leader asked rhetorically as he guided me toward my car. I thought it pretty evident that the man holding my arm did not want me to go with her.

I answered "No," in a soft voice, in my now mechanical, maladaptive passive response.

"Tell her," he responded, gesturing in her direction.

I shouted out to the HR woman: "No, thank you!" As we approached my car, the vice-team leader let go of my arm, and the team lead walked me the rest of the way. I asked if it was okay to drive on the 401. The team lead said it was okay, but just to take it slow. The vice team-lead had joined the conversation and added, "But you must not smoke." "Why?" I asked. "Just because, you need to not smoke this trip," the vice-team leader said. He obviously did not want me to remember the failed Tornado evacuation, which was already becoming fuzzy and hard to recall.

I had already forgotten much of the afternoon, but I realized I was probably not in good shape to drive. Still I continued following the orders of the vice team lead. I started my car, backed out, and drove out to the 401. It was harrowing, but I white-knuckled it home safely. My wife was very concerned when she saw me come in.

The next day I came in to work and had no memory of the previous day – I had completely repressed it. My team member Jean said: "I heard the storm was a big problem for you."

"What? I was sitting here working all day," I countered.

"That's not what I heard." Jean withdrew to his cubicle. I was stunned. What was he talking about?

People in the hallways and kitchen were staring at me strangely. I had no memory of the failed tornado evacuation and did not know what was going on. Four days later, I felt compelled to write an email letter to the Severe Weather Meteorologist at Environment Canada to complain of their web site not properly explaining what to do in the event of a Tornado Warning.

I told them that at my workplace the staff worked all day on Aug. 19, while the Environment Canada workers were taking shelter in their basement. (I had learned this from a friend who worked at Environment Canada.) I had repressed what actually happened on the day of the severe storm.

To my surprise, the Chief Severe Weather Meteorologist responded that he agreed the web site did not adequately advise what course of action to take. He agreed it should, and said he'd instructed the web designers to make changes. I copied this response and my original email to my manager.

Sensing something was amiss with the way people were looking at me, I decided a proactive measure would be to arrange a meeting with my manager to see if anything was wrong. This was my first meeting with my manager after my first day of work. I asked the manager if my work was okay.

The manager responded, "Yes."

Then I asked if there could be a Safety Committee that could arrange to better handle such events as Tornado Warnings. The manager responded, incredulously: "What could we have done differently?"

"At least someone could be assigned to a bank of windows to watch for an approaching tornado so others could safely continue working at their desks." The manager paused, and said he'd think about it.

A few days later when Gary came in sporting an arm sling, and a bandaged wrist, I asked, "What happened to your arm, Gary?"

"I sprained it," he answered.

"How did you sprain it?"

"You did it, don't you remember?" He looked directly into my eyes. I was flabbergasted, I did not remember. I awkwardly withdrew from the coffee room/kitchen.

Another day Gary asked, "Did you see the plane crash on August 2, Matthew?"

"No, I did not," I said. "I only saw the billows of black smoke from the crash site like everyone else."

"Are you sure about that, Matthew?" Gary asked with a quizzical look, studying my eyes.

"Yes," I responded perfectly naturally.

He looked deep into my eyes for an uncomfortable few seconds, then withdrew his stare. "Battle Stress! That's what you've got!" Again I awkwardly retreated from the 4th floor kitchen area.

At every opportunity when Gary ran into me he would tell me to see my doctor immediately. The problem was I did not know what to tell my doctor, as I could not remember the events that Gary was talking about.

Gradually Gary turned up the screws with such statements as: "The Company can't wait forever, Matthew," and, "You are a danger to yourself and others until you see your doctor, Matthew."

He made it sound like I was a ticking time bomb.

In the week following the tornado, I found myself "disconnecting" in team meetings. The first meeting was in the usual corner meeting room with windows on two walls. Occupants could see planes going back and forth. I could not help but track the planes landing and taking off; I could not turn my head away. I was worried they might crash.

The female programmer, a former nurse, observed to the team lead, "He's watching the planes." I had just ignored something the team lead had said to me. The next team meeting a day or two later took place in a room with no windows. In this meeting I was much more present and focused, but I had nothing to say.

At one point there was laughter. But I had not listened carefully enough to understand what they were laughing at. I thought perhaps I had done something to make them laugh.

I found it illogical and disrespectful to be laughing with one team member still in an injured state of mind, even if that team member did not fully understand why. In short, I resented their merry making. Perhaps the team detected my mood.

They also noticed I was not responding to my name. I had drifted into a daydream while holding my glasses frames in my hands and was bending them back into alignment, almost in a trance. The former nurse said to the team leader, "He's not listening to you." At that moment I realized I had been tuning out the meeting. The team leader said "Matthew, you can fix your glasses after the meeting?"

"Sorry, I'm sorry, yes, okay."

The very next day after the meeting, it was announced in an email that I was being moved off the Version 6 team, to the Version 7 team, which had yet to be formed. I was told to go ahead and work through the on-line tutorials for the advanced software development environment that the vendor developed internally. I was now without a real team, although I did have a team leader. I felt awkward with my former version 6 teammates who were seated around me.

Also about this time, my only workplace friend, an individual who started on the same day, took me down to the HR department for what he described as a meeting with an HR person. I saw him talking with the team leader and vice-team leader first. It seems they had arranged an appointment for me with an HR employee, having realized that I was one of the walking wounded, with great missing chunks of recollection for the events of Aug. 2 and Aug. 19.

The friend walked me down to the third floor and found the office of the HR person. We were on time but the HR person was not there. We waited a few minutes, asking others, but the HR person was nowhere to be found. When we returned to the fourth floor after fifteen minutes of waiting, I overheard the team lead complaining about how HR had let the team down.

Meanwhile there were two incidents in the parking lot where team members and strangers said shocking things to me. The first happened two days after August 19.

I had parked in the outermost row away from the building. Several young Asian men walked to the Acura parked beside my car. One of them turned to me and asked, "Hey, are you Matthew Pauly?"

"Yes," I responded as the friends of the man waited and watched.

The unknown employee said, "What you did to Gary was wrong, you're a crazy man." I realized I must have done something violent to Gary as I had seen the arm sling and he had told me I sprained his arm, but I couldn't remember any details.

"I was in severe shock… people can be violent when in shock," I replied, defensively.

"I've read all about severe shock, and I've never heard of anything like that before. You should get a different job and leave." He got into the car with the others.

I did not answer. I got into my car. I was shocked that strangers in the company knew what had happened, and were approaching me in the parking lot. I had only flashes of partial recall for the events of Aug. 19, or Aug. 2.

A few days later, in the parking lot, I noticed a gathering of about a dozen young Asian programmers in front of a minivan just two parking spaces over from my car. It was a surreal scene as they were standing in a perfect group photo configuration, facing me as I tried to unlock my car. I recognized them as my old Version 6 team.

In near perfect unison they all called out “REMEMBER!”

An awkward two seconds passed. “Remember what?” I countered in a loud voice.

Someone shouted back, “You beat up an old man!” Immediately the team lead, or vice-team leader turned to the speaker and said, “Don’t say that!”

I had to bend over and pick up my keys, which I had dropped as I’d been startled by their shouting in unison. Some of what happened on August 19 began to come back to me. But I desperately wanted not to remember.

I shouted “Nooooo!!!!” as I struggled to unlock my car door. What was it that this team felt so strongly that I should be remembering? My mind was vacillating between partial and zero recall of the evacuation. I was confused, disoriented and very fearful.

A few days later at the end of a workday I got into my car and discovered it had been searched. Things that were in the side pockets were now in the center console pocket, and front seat things moved to the backseat and vice versa. It was clear the car had been thoroughly searched, and the searchers didn't care if it was obvious.

I suspected they were looking to see if I had any medical cannabis in my car, which they could conceivably use to get me into trouble. Thankfully I did not keep pot in my car. Nevertheless, I felt my personal space had been violated.

Towards the end of August, I was walking with my Chinese-Canadian wife and our dog at about seven PM, on our way to the nearby Eglinton Park. As we rounded the corner on Montgomery Avenue to walk north on Edith Drive we saw a shiny, new Acura car with three young, professionally dressed, Chinese-Canadians inside. They appeared to be in their mid-twenties. The backseat passenger was female.

When I looked at them, they studied a map on their laps in the driver’s console area between the two front seats, so their features were hidden. The whole scene looked suspicious.

At least one of them looked like one of the individuals that had approached me in the parking lot at work. Ten minutes later, the Acura was gone. I was reminded of people at work who might be transplanting a cultural punishment from China to Canada, namely public shaming by visiting one's neighbours. After all, on Aug. 19 some members of the team went looking through my wallet to get my home address and said they intended to "warn your neighbours because you are a dangerous man."

Seeing my wife and me, and realizing they had been seen, perhaps they chickened out for fear of being identified. Both my wife and I were left with a creepy feeling. This event would be the first of several events that year that led to my wife suggesting we move to China where the rest of the family is, for safety. Imagine a Canadian considering moving from Canada to China because of human rights concerns!

In early September, I was pulled into a meeting without notice. In the small meeting room were gathered my manager, the director of HR, another HR person, the CEO, Gary, and Gary's daughter whose office was beside the CEO's office. In his opening statement, the CEO mentioned that he considered Gary "like a father" to him.

The CEO pointed out he was concerned for the safety of his staff. I tried to speak but found myself getting very emotional. The CEO asked me what I remembered of Aug. 19. I completely lost my composure and said, amid sobs: "I can't remember anything!!!"

Gary turned to the group. "He's not ready yet."

I took leave of the meeting and was told I could take the rest of the day off.

The next day Gary persuaded me that it was absolutely imperative that I see a doctor right away, regardless of my not wanting to miss work. This gave my unconscious mind permission to remember at least some of what happened on Aug. 2 and 19. Soon after I saw my family doctor, and my psychiatrist a few days later.

The previous night I stayed up all night trying to think what I would say to my family doctor the next day. Still feeling acutely stressed, and now sleep deprived, I showed up with my wife to meet the family doctor about eleven AM.

Dr. Ira B., my family doctor listened carefully to my story plane crash and botched tornado evacuation, and ordered me to take at least the next three days off. He also gave me a note for the HR department. The family doctor gave every indication that he had no doubt I had experienced psychological trauma.

My family doctor would later tell me that during that meeting, he noted the intense fear as I described my inability to sleep after two severe psychological traumas at work, that I had all the major signs of Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD.)

On the third day off, my wife took time off work to take me to an appointment with Dr. R. G. C., the Psychiatrist. By then I had partial memories of both the jet accident and failed Tornado evacuation. I explained that while in severe shock I had pushed an elderly man down some stairs. I explained that I was expected back at work but did not feel ready -- I was too afraid. Dr. R. G. C. responded: “Get back on the horse that threw you. Sometimes these things cure themselves.”

This sounded unreal to me: only two weeks earlier I had pushed an elderly man down a concrete stairwell, and this doctor wanted me to just walk back into the workplace and pretend nothing had happened, and no therapy required?

This was the last straw. However, the doctor was head of a department at the regional specialist health hospital. I followed Dr. R. G. C.'s advice and returned to work the next day, despite the fact that it felt all-wrong.

I remember Gary's surprise upon seeing me. “You're back so soon?” he asked. I told him what the doctor had said.

The psychiatrist was wrong. It would be one year and a half before I would be well enough to return to work, elsewhere. With the fresh memories starting to flood back, I fell apart on the first day back and left work early.

I felt myself acting strange around Gary. Like the predator that attacked me when I was eight years old, I felt a compulsion to scare Gary. This was 180 degrees from what I felt in the executive part of my brain. My behaviour scared me as much as it must have scared Gary. I knew by the end of the day that there was no way I could return to work for a long time, if ever.

My wife was very concerned and took another day off work to accompany me to an appointment with my family physician, Dr. B. who read the cues when I tried to explain what was going on at work. I told him what happened after I followed the (reckless) psychiatrist’s advice to, “Get back on the horse that threw you'. Dr. B. gave me a note to fax to Human Resources, explaining I needed to be off from work for medical reasons until further notice.

I used the company's Short-Term Disability benefit from mid-September to mid-January, 2006, and then went on Long-Term Disability only to May 2007, eight months short of the automatic two–year coverage. I did it by practicing meditation to heal faster.

Dr. B. was surprised.

I fired Dr. R. G. C., and instead enrolled in a Psychological Trauma Unit program at Mount Sinai hospital where I attended weekly meetings with a psychiatrist Dr. Colin M., following a month of weekly meetings with a specialist nurse to gather the trauma details. Before meeting Dr. Colin M, I met with the then head of the program Dr. Alex T.

Dr. T. read my trauma report about the torture by the military. He said, "Matthew, I am from South America, I know about torture." In that moment he crossed his legs so his sock-less ankle was visible from his low-cut loafer shoes. There was a giant round scar between his Achilles tendon and his ankle, right where a hook could have suspended him upside down. He said anti-psychotic drug trials were recommended. He told me, "Matthew, no one will believe you until you do." The idea was to test if I had a delusional disorder.

Shortly thereafter Dr. Colin M. started me on Zyprexa, the first of three drug trials I would undergo over the next five years, each drug stronger than the last and having more side effects. The latter two were Risperdal and Clozapine. None of the drugs had any effect on my recall or certainty of the events reported.

I struggled unsuccessfully to get through Phase I of PTSD recovery (there are 3 phases.) During this early phase I was completely occupied by recalling the traumas of Aug. 2 and Aug. 19 plus related childhood traumas that were surfacing for the first time.

I was Hyper Vigilant: Any cues in my environment that reminded me of the traumas would trigger life-threatening fear. Sleep was horrible with vivid nightmares where I would awake screaming and kicking.

Whenever I communicated these traumas to friends or family, I would become very scared and agitated. They in turn would turn away and not be interested in visiting, or emailing me anymore. Most of my friends and family distanced themselves. This marked the low point of my recovery.

CHAPTER 6: 2005 Oct - The Devil's Brigade Calls

"Fiction is obliged to stick to possibilities. Truth isn't." – Mark Twain

One day in early October, while I was at home alone during the day trying to cope with PTSD, I got a strange phone call. When the caller said "Hello," I immediately recognized Gary's voice on the other end.

"Hello, Matthew. Sorry to bother you..."

"No problem, Gary."

"Matthew, have you been interrogated yet?"

I paused for a moment to take than in and then responded, "By whom?"

"By the Authorities!" said Gary in an annoyed tone.

"No."

"Aw, Jeeze... Those..." He was going to curse but caught himself and said, "Okay, Matthew, thanks... I've got to go, bye."

"Bye," I said.

This left me with little doubt that something bad was going to happen soon.

CHAPTER 7: 2005 Oct - Target Monitored

"In Canada, you are more likely to be killed by a Moose than a Terror plot" – Lead Now

One afternoon two weeks later, in late October 2005, I noticed two young men in their early to mid-30s seated in a car on the North side of Montgomery, a half block east of my house. As I approached and observed them closely, they appeared awkward. My gut told him these "dress-casual" clothed adults with short hair and "the cop look" were not sitting there in a car in the middle of the afternoon for nothing.

They were not contractors: their clothes told me that, and the van was very clean without the marks of a contractor, or the paperwork usually strewn about the dashboard. If they were canvassers, salesmen, or real estate agents, they would not have appeared awkward as I stared at them when I walked by.

They were parked one block east from a house which Bell Canada later informed me had a 'foreign drop' of my telephone line. They were close enough for radio-relayed, real-time telephone monitoring from a parked car. A Bell supervisor technician later gave the address of 'an old' foreign phone drop as X8 Montgomery. A supervisor pulled the wire from that address, and Bell customer service gave me a credit on my phone bill for the privacy breach.

Later that day, just before 7 PM, I left the house and walked briskly south toward the library where the Mood Disorder Institute of Ontario[14] (MDIO) had its offices. A fit man in his late thirties with a red complexion was proceeding north at a brisk walk. We met on the same sidewalk adjacent to the side of the library building. Somehow it was timed so that "Red" met me at the most quiet and private part of the walkway. Red was bustling north, while I proceeded south.

I tried to avoid Red by changing direction three times in total, but each time he swerved in my direction. He stared at me with cold, unblinking eyes suggesting aggression. Finally Red bumped into me although there was plenty of room for both of us to pass on the sidewalk. I felt pressure against my left side at waist level. In true Canadian fashion I said "Sorry," and continued on. Red did not say anything but continued walking north. I thought that was rude and unusual.

Later, after more severe events unfolded, I had reason to believe Red's collision with me was planned and I had been surreptitiously frisked for a weapon.

---

[14] name obscured

CHAPTER 8: 2005 Nov 19 – Survey Target's Basement

"If you tell the truth, you don't have to remember anything." – Mark Twain

On the afternoon of Nov. 19 a man calling himself an Enbridge Gas sub-contractor rang my doorbell and offered me a free, consumer energy conservation program. To enrol me, he needed access to my basement.

He said his name was Jerry and he showed me an Enbridge Gas invoice. "Jerry" had no ID tag attached to his overalls, only a first name 'Jerry' stitched onto the front. A gas sub-contractor's van was parked out front. He explained how he and a number of gas contractors delivered the free T.A.P.S. program, which provided energy-saving, flow-reducing aerator facet attachments, and that they also would down-tune my hot water heater.

He said there would be no cost. I fell for it.

After leading him to the furnace room, I watched as he started to work on the hot water heater; he acted anxious and furtive. When he asked me to turn on the hot water in the bathtub, I said "Sure, just a sec," and walked into the basement bathroom beside the furnace room.

Before I could get the water on, Jerry shouted, "Oh, you have a bathtub down here then." This gave me an eerie feeling. Why did Jerry sound disappointed that I was not going to the second floor? Why did he want time alone? Did he need time to survey the area?

After turning on the hot water, I stood in the basement bathroom wondering what to do. I decided to play along (my 'learned passivity' response) and left Jerry alone in the furnace room for perhaps two minutes.

When I returned, Jerry was affixing a 'T.A.P.S.' program sticker to the hot water tank. He had just finished applying the pipe insulation to the heater's output hot water pipe.

Then Jerry entered the bathroom and replaced the showerhead with a new, flow-reducing showerhead. In somewhat of a hurry he handed me two more flow-reducing heads in plastic bags, for use on other taps and showers in the house.

We moved to the upstairs to the breakfast bar counter to do the paperwork. Jerry signed the triplicate, zero-total invoice and asked me to fill out a few particulars, and sign it. The half-page invoice had the Enbridge Gas logo in black and white in the top right corner. There were three copies, pink, yellow and green. I filled in the blanks with my address, postal code, phone number, name in block letters and then signed the form. Jerry tore off my copy and handed it to me before exiting somewhat unusually.

When he first rang the doorbell (perhaps ten minutes earlier), I was napping upstairs and it took me a minute or more to get to the door (PTSD messes up sleep.) When I opened the door, Jerry's contractor van was parked in front of my house, and Jerry was at my neighbours front door.

He had opened their screen door and was pretending to knock. I couldn't hear the knocking sound. Further, there was a doorbell, so why knock? As soon as he saw me open my door, he waved to me and darted over. Yet on exiting, he returned directly to his van, and drove away hastily.

It was only after Jerry left that I noticed the three 500 ml bottles of Hydrogen Peroxide sitting on the furnace room floor, right beside the hot water heater, in the bottom shelf of an aquarium stand. The aquarium was empty except for a few inches of Diatomaceous earth. I had used the peroxide as a disinfectant.

I vaguely remembered hearing that Hydrogen Peroxide could be used to make an explosive. What if Jerry was a law enforcement officer on reconnaissance? Had Gary repeated to the authorities what I had divulged when he interrogated me at work?

My use of Hydrogen Peroxide was benign. A few years previously, I had used the aquarium to grow a mushroom with medicinal properties. The peroxide was used as a disinfectant. My wife's migraine headaches were then resistant to conventional drug therapies, and she suffered at least three times a month for up to several days at a time. Through Internet research I learned that Central American Indians had been using a fungus to treat migraines for thousands of years. After three tries, I finally successfully grew the fungus. (A municipal horse barn supplied free horse manure for gardening.)

Later that evening, following Jerry's visit, I used Google to find cannabisnews.com where I read that a 'free, energy-conservation program' offered by an unsolicited gas company visitor is sometimes a ruse for police to survey a house without a search warrant, perhaps because they lacked probable cause.

I had reason to be worried about possessing what might be construed as the building blocks of explosives. Gary had called only two months earlier asking if the authorities had interrogated me yet. That meant he likely had reported from his interrogation of me, while I was in mild shock, that a decade earlier I harboured hatred of the then Ontario premier, and worse, from my purposeful exaggeration of a talk with a friend about that. Would he also have reported my untoward thoughts of Dr. R. G. C. only a few years earlier?

Six months later a real gas company technician ‘Mat’ told me that Jerry’s installation of insulation on the hot water pipe was unprofessional, leaving less than one half inch between the combustible insulation and the chimney for the hot flue gases; the house could have burned down. The minimum clearance in the building code is six inches.

Jerry was anything but a trained gas technician. “The first rule of gas work is not to burn the customer’s house down,” said Mat. By putting combustible insulation within a half inch of the chimney flue of the hot water heater, Jerry had violated that rule.

Mat added that in his twenty years of gas contracting he had never heard of a T.A.P.S. energy conservation program, and filed a complaint on my behalf with the Technical Standards and Safety Council (TSSC).

CHAPTER 9: 2005 Nov 22 – Health Support Group Infiltration

“Make yourself sheep and the wolves will eat you.” – Benjamin Franklin

The weather on the evening of November 22, 2005 in Toronto, Ontario, Canada was hovering around zero, leaving no doubt that winter had arrived. Relatively calmly, at a few minutes after seven, I walked the three blocks to the Northern District Library; I looked forward to attending the support group on the second floor of the library. Depression is a symptom of PTSD, and these drop-in groups were helpful.

It was dark out and the streetlights illuminated frozen footprints lightly covered with a brushing of snow on un-shovelled sidewalks. These footprints were like temporary memories of a person’s tread. The frozen footprints last a day or two, then melt, and are gone forever, like a memory never to be recalled again; what a pleasant notion that was. I felt a bit jumpy and scared about being picked up by the authorities ever since the unsolicited gas company visitor a few days before.

That evening a new self-identified 'observer in training' showed up at the Depression support meeting, the only free group therapy I could find for my PTSD. This was ‘Red’ -- the same person that collided with me on the library sidewalk a few days earlier. Now his skin appeared cosmetically lightened, and he sported a red moustache that was trimmed so perfectly it looked like a paste on.

The interloper imitated the actions of a legitimate (co-) facilitator in training, including drawing a large circle on an 8 1/2” by 11” sheet of paper, and noting the first names and diagnosis as people introduced themselves around the circle. Co-facilitators have a form with a pre-printed circle for this purpose but Red the interloper did not.

The interloper was most interested in my part of the circle, and specifically me. He repeated my name in a questioning way and nodded to me. I automatically nodded back confirming my name. He did not nod to the others as they introduced themselves, except the only man of Middle Eastern background. The observer in training asked my diagnosis, and I replied “depression.” PTSD was not supported in these groups so I kept that quiet.

The following week, I drew a composite sketch of Red and had it confirmed by group members who agreed it matched the ‘observer’. Below is a much less accurate rendition using face design software. If one adds 7-10 years age to the picture then it approximates Red in 2005. Red has aged considerably in the six years since this composite picture was made.

After going around the circle of eighteen attendees asking each their first name and diagnosis, there was a one-hour break in which Red spoke with the Middle Eastern man. Neither Red nor the Middle Eastern man showed up again at subsequent meetings that I attended. In my later inquiries with the facilitator, they had no record of a person matching Red’s appearance attending, but they admitted they do not record the attendance of co-facilitators in training.

I was told co-facilitators self-identify as a shadow, or observer. Other co-facilitators are supposed to ask for their sign-up form, but in my experience they never did, they just trusted the stranger.

It was unethical, an invasion of privacy, and likely broke several Charter rights when 'the authorities' practiced “group infiltration” on a Mood Disorders support group. It was not a legitimate training exercise. All one had to do is have one officer attend once to get the simple protocol required of the co-facilitator (as two RCMP looking officers did two weeks earlier,) and then have another attend later and pretend to be a co-facilitator. No validation, no ID, nor any special knowledge was required.

Red stuck out like a sore thumb. He looked like an officer. I switched seats at the break to be farther away from him. At other meetings I had talked about having used medical marijuana in the past, and I worried Red could use this information against me. He significantly triggered my suspicion.

After the support group meeting ended, I followed Red into the men’s washroom on the second floor but waited a minute before going in. He was at the sink when I entered. After relieving myself, I washed my hands while

Red washed his face.

He gave me a look that indicated he recognized me. Automatically I looked away and pretended not to notice as I continued washing my hands and wiping them with paper towel.

When I next looked at him, his appearance had changed. The moustache was gone; the white cosmetic powder was washed off and revealed acne scarring. Red continued to stare at me piercing and menacingly for a few seconds. I applied myself to throwing out the used paper towel, and pretended it was normal for Red to be removing a fake moustache and washing cosmetics off his face after the meeting.

I could not process this information in real-time, and preferred to act in denial. I just stuffed the memory and continued on to the coffee shop with my support friends after the meeting, as I often did.

Five or six members of the support group and I always gathered after our meetings at Tim Horton's coffee shop at the corner of Yonge & Broadway, two blocks north. I told one of them about what Red had done at the sink in the men's washroom.

Several of us noticed a large van parked on the wrong side of the street just across Yonge street on the south side of Montgomery facing west. I was embarrassed to mention it for fear of appearing paranoid, until Carry said: "What's bothering me right now is that van across the street…" Exhaust was coming out of the tail pipe, the headlights were on, and the two back doors featured unusual vertical rectangular windows with 'square-edged' one-way, mirror glass (as on armoured vehicles).

"Just because you are paranoid doesn't mean they're not out to get you," Stevie observed in an attempt at humour that fell flat.

The large van was unmarked and facing west but parked on the south (wrong) side of the street, with the back door, one-way windows facing Tim Horton's to the east.

"It might be a postal van," I said since it was beside the post office.

"No, it's unmarked and missing the logo," Carry replied.

Then someone got into the van from the passenger side. A moment later it began moving away.

"It's moving, thank God for that," I thought but after twenty feet it came to a stop on the west side of the post-office driveway.

"No, see it stopped again. That is not a normal van," said Carry.

There was a row of lights across the back and sides, not unlike a larger courier truck, but with single rear wheels. The fact that the engine was running made it look unusual.

Our coffee group broke up 30-40 minutes earlier than usual. At 9:32 I checked my watch as I always did, knowing my wife expected me home at 10 PM. Only Stevie and Susan stayed behind in the coffee shop, engaged in a conversation.

After walking my friends to the subway I bid them good night, crossed over to the west side of Yonge, and started walking back to the library with Carry who had forgotten a book in the support group room and planned to get a security guard to let him to retrieve it.

Dropping Carry off, I reasoned I could still avoid the van on Montgomery Avenue by continuing walking north to Helendale Avenue. I was wrong.

CHAPTER 10: 2005 Nov 22 - Van Coercive Interrogation and Mind Control

"The enemy is not Muslims, Christians or Judaism… The real enemy is Extremism" - Unknown

At 10 meters south of Helendale, on the West side of Yonge Street, as I walked north past the bars where people were smoking on the sidewalk, two plainclothes officers approached from the north and stopped me about five meters south of Helendale.

The blond one asked, "Are you Matthew? Matthew Pauly?"

"Yes," I replied.

"We are 'peace' officers," said the blond one with an American accent as he gestured to the tall, burly, dark-moustached man to his right.

"We want to know why you have three bottles of Hydrogen Peroxide in your basement, and what you are planning on doing with it?" he asked as he looked into my eyes.

Realizing the gas company visit three days earlier was a ruse, and that hair bleach could be used for nefarious purposes, I understood they thought I might be a terrorist. I decided to tell the truth, so they would let me go. After all, I was not a terrorist.

"I used it to grow some mushrooms."

"What for?" Mitch asked.

I explained I had read that Central American Indians had a natural cure for migraines, so I grew medicinal mushrooms in my basement for my wife's migraines and used the Hydrogen Peroxide as a disinfectant.

"I like mushrooms!," Burly said with a laugh and asked "Do you have any left?"

"No."

"Why not?" Burly countered in a barely perceptible Quebecois accent.

"Never mind that now," Mitch interrupted in an American accent, turning to me. "Matthew, we really need to ask you a few questions, and it's cold. Come to our van for a few minutes, it is parked just up here," he said as he gestured over his shoulder north.

I thought it best to humour them; clearly they thought I was a terrorist and since it was all based on a miscommunication surely they'd realize that after a few questions, and leave me alone. “OK,” I responded.

I expected Mitch to lead the way so I waited.

“Just walk in front us,” he said. I thought that was an unusual request.

“Walk across the street to the post-office driveway,” Mitch commanded.

I stopped at the yellow and black, diagonal striped boom at the parking lot south entrance since it indicated private property.

“Is this okay?” I asked.

“Never mind, go around it,” Mitch said from behind.

It was eerie as the lot was uncharacteristically dark; it was usually well lit by three high-intensity, orange Sodium vapour, automatic lights. On each side were at least two-dozen darkened postal vans.

I had walked past about ten vans and I said, “Is it one of these?” playing dumb. I feared going to the strange, large van the group of us spotted minutes earlier from the coffee shop.

“No, it’s not one of these. It is straight ahead on the other side of the lot. Just keep walking,” Mitch commanded.

I was feeling uncomfortable with proceeding so I stopped walking. 'Burly' shouted from behind: “KEEP WALKING!!!” I felt afraid and threatened. I complied.

At the north end of the lot was the same van we had seen from Tim Horton's only ten minutes ago. It had not moved from the south side of Montgomery and faced west as before, with the rear at the west side of the parking lot north entrance.

A young officer opened the van door from the inside. In his late twenties with roughly cut hair, he had black hair, a round face and stood about 5’9” and 175 pounds, with a bit of a belly paunch under an olive coloured T-shirt with a cigarette burn hole near the bottom, and drab, dark pants with extra pockets just above the knees.

The T-shirt with the burn hole suggested he was a Canadian soldier, as I knew they were underpaid. He greeted me warmly: “Matthew! Come on in!”

A second young officer with light brown hair stood with his feet spread wide apart blocking my escape west. He was about 5’10” and 165 pounds.

A third officer lurked to my right about five meters away – he was older, and resembled Red whom I had seen in the men’s washroom an hour earlier. A fourth officer stood on the North side of Montgomery. Two officers were behind me. I was completely surrounded.

The man inside the van was holding the door open and had to move aside as I stepped up into the van.

"Watch your head," said the doorman as I stepped in. The door closed behind me. It was quite dark. I asked the doorman officer why the other officers had not entered.

"They'll be along in a few minutes," he replied.

The interior was about a foot or two taller than an ambulance. There were fold-down roof cupboards like in an aircraft, and fixed benches in the back running half the length to the front. There was a reverse-facing, throne-type chair bolted to the floor near the front.

Soon Burly stepped inside. A light was switched on. I became aware there was someone in the passenger's seat up front besides the doorman. Everyone was quiet.

"Where's the other officer?" I asked, referring to the blonde haired officer. Burly said, "Oh, he's coming. He'll be here in a minute."

When Mitch entered, he said they were waiting for one more officer, who should arrive in a minute or two.

After a minute the red-haired, acne-scarred Red entered. "All taken care of," he said to Mitch. (I later deduced he likely removed a temporary flashlight that had been rigged to the light-sensor for the three Sodium lights in the post-office parking lot to keep them dark for the operation.)

Someone radioed, "Target in custody" and the receiver radioed back a confirmation.

"Matthew, why don't you sit here on the bench while we get started?" Mitch said. I got out of the throne chair and sat on a bench at a fold-down table in the back of the van. I sat between two officers on one side bench as instructed.

The officers, who were standing on the sidewalk when I approached, now entered into the van from the front passenger door and stepped into the back area. They joined the group at the folded-down table (from the wall on the driver's side), in the very rear of the van.

The benches along each sidewall could accommodate eight in a squeeze. There were no windows except the thick, one-way, bulletproof windows in the rear doors.

One officer I recognized as Red, but I said nothing about recognizing him.

"Matthew, list any medical conditions you have?" said Mitch, who appeared to be the one in charge. I told him.

Mitch asked what medications I was on. I listed them but forgot to mention one. They appeared to know my medical history but were surprised to learn I also had a liver ailment. I said, “It’s okay, It’s not active.”

The blond-haired interrogator, Mitch, asked in surprise, “What do you mean, not active?”

“I mean my liver is not enlarged.”

“But your blood is still toxic!” He sounded annoyed.

“Yes,” I said. Mitch, Burly and Red all donned white vinyl gloves at this point.

They removed my jacket and searched it thoroughly, including reaching inside the lining through a tear. “Where is your cell phone?” Red asked.

“I don’t have one,” I said.

“You’re a computer guy, why don’t you have one?”

“If a client or employer wants me to have one, they give me one.”

“But why don’t you have your own?”

“Because in 1993 I had a cell phone when consulting to a cell phone company. I used it for an hour a day and I started getting headaches, and little bumps growing on my skin where I held the phone to my head,” I said.

They looked at each other with concern as if it had never occurred to them that cell phone radiation could be dangerous.

Mitch turned to the burly officer and said, “Could you do it?”

“I don't know, let's see,” said Burly.

“Place your hands on the table, and spread your fingers!” Red ordered. I complied. Burly was holding a modified single-holed puncher that he opened and closed.

I asked, “Is that a single-hole punch?”

Burly replied, “Yes, but it’s modified.” The metal curved flange that holds down the paper had been removed.

Burly inspected my fingernails one by one holding the single hole punch against each fingernail. Each time Mitch would ask, “Can you pull that one?”

“I’m not sure, it’s short,” Burly said, and then he would move on to the next fingernail.

Periodically all three senior officers would look up at my face. I maintained a stoic resolve. Burly said, “Well, they're too short.”

“Could you get the pinkie finger?” asked Mitch.

“Maybe,” said Burly, as they all looked in my face with sadistic grins. I was horrified. What country or century did they think they were in?

Mitch said, “Matthew, did you know we were coming for you? Is that why your nails are so short?”

“No, I bite my nails,” I said.

Next Mitch ordered me to spread my fingers even wider. They joked amongst themselves as Red pulled out a sharp, pointed knife and another officer held my wrists so I could not move my hands. Red proceeded to rapidly stab the table in between each finger, moving first slowly across both hands, and then picking up the pace so I heard the rapid ‘tap, tap, tap’ as the knife missed my fingers by millimeters.

They stopped once he’d reached his maximum pace after a few cycles on both hands. They all looked at my face to see how scared I looked. Next Mitch pulled his own not-street-legal knife, and proceeded to stab the table between my fingers. He went considerably faster and the other officers exclaimed: “wow, ooohh, aaahh.” Again they looked at my face, but I had turned away earlier. As a computer programmer and touch typist, losing a finger would be debilitating. After a few more minutes of terror it was over. They asked me to take a seat in the large throne chair at the front of the van where I had first sat. It was bolted to the floor about three feet behind the front cabin area, and faced the rear of the van.

They folded the table back up into the wall on the drivers’ side. It was time to learn what the mysterious and intimidating throne-type chair was for.

The chair had a frame of five-inch diameter, round aluminum tubing on both sides of each armrest, leg rest, and on all sides of the seat and back. There was a sub-frame below the chair of square-steel tubing about one inch wide, which was bolted to the corrugated style, aluminum floor using hexagonal headed, shiny steel bolts.

The back was so high that my head did not reach the top where a frame member was, and my hands did not reach a frame member at the end of the long armrests. All the points where my body, including legs, touched the chair were constructed of tightly woven, three-inch wide, black nylon seat-belt material. This was obviously to lessen bruising which would create evidence. This was a 21st century, professional torture-chair.

Burly leg-cuffed me to the two front-leg supports and slid handcuffs around my wrists and armrests. Before locking the last cuff, the left one, he said, “This is voluntary”.

I said, “Yah right!”

"You don't believe me?" He unfastened the left handcuff. I made a split second decision. I was already ankle cuffed and surrounded. My gut told me that trying to assert my rights would result in violence to me. I was intimidated and afraid to resist.

Severe childhood traumas played a part in my learned passivity. I had used compliance as a child to survive horrific trauma.

"Jacket OFF!" Mitch ordered.

Burly pulled my three-quarter-length leather coat forward and down over my wrists but the handcuffs made it impossible to remove the coat. It was almost comical.

"No! Remove the cuffs to take off the coat," Mitch ordered.

Burly unfastened the handcuffs, removed my coat, and then refastened the handcuffs.

He approached my left arm while holding a large needle and syringe. I asked: "Sodium Pentothal?"

Burly replied: "Have you ever been given Sodium Pentothal before?"

"No."

"Then how do you know its Sodium Pentothal?" he demanded.

"I didn't. I just thought it might fit."

He continued, "Why do you know about it?"

"I had seen a video of prisoner in the USA interrogated under Sodium Pentothal."

I knew it was a truth serum. It was one of the drugs that came out of MK-ULTRA research in the post-war period, and was experimented with on unsuspecting patients of Dr. Ewen Cameron at the Royal Victoria Hospital and the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal in the 1950s and 1960s.

Before inserting the needle, he paused. "OK?" he asked.

"Whatever…" I said.

"I need you to say 'OK'! We can wait all night if you want," he said.

I was starting to be frightened.

"If you refuse, we can hold you for three days on a security certificate, without access to a lawyer."

"Would I be able to contact my family?" I asked.

"No!" said Mitch. I imagined the severe worry my disappearance would cause my family.

I thought if I said no, what options would they resort to next? Would they pull out my fingernails?

"OK!"

My left forearm was facing up. Burly jabbed the needle into a vein opposite the elbow. I grimaced. The jab hurt much more than needles usually do, probably because it was such a large needle.

Using white medical tape Burly taped the 150 cc (or larger) syringe on the underside of my left forearm. He pushed the plunger in just a bit. Within five seconds I felt drunk, four-very-quick-beers drunk.

NOTE: From this point forward I was drugged against my will. I was in no position for informed consent. Inaccuracies may be present in the order of the different events that occurred in that van. The events are accurate but due to the drugging I missed some dialogue and the order may be incorrect. Only the military recordings will show what inaccuracies there are, if any.

I knew it must be a 'truth serum' like Sodium Pentothal or another Phenobarbital cocktail. The prisoner in the video being interrogated acted and looked as drunk as I felt.

Next, Burly applied a heavy cuff around my upper right arm, not unlike a blood pressure cuff, except it felt heavy, and had wires connected to it. I was horrified as I guessed what it might be for. He asked if it was comfortable.

This was such a weird question. I replied "Yes... What is this for?"

"This is so you tell the truth." Then it dawned on me what the cuff was for.

Burly removed my glasses. Everything was out of focus from this point forward. Burly then started taping my eyelids open with such skill and rapidity that he'd clearly done it many times before. My right eyelid hurt from the tape. I said "Ouch!"

"OK then," Burly said as he pulled the tape off and refastened it slightly looser so it pulled a bit less. "Is that better?"

"Yes, thanks." I could not blink my eyes. I asked again: "What is this tape for?"

"So you can see better."

"I can see better with my glasses on."

"You don't need to see that well! I'll put in eye drops in every once in a while."

Three floodlights materialized near the ceiling, about three feet from my head adjusted to shine directly into my face. Since I hadn't noticed them before, I could not tell if these were actually mounted on the ceiling or on floor stands.

The lights were absolutely blinding and I could not make out any shapes behind them. With my eyes taped open, I could not see anything but bright light.

Interrogation – Pre-seizure Questions:

Burly dropped very cold eye drops into my eyes, causing me to jump in pain. The bottle had probably been stored in the unheated compartments of the van and it was near freezing outside. Still I was dependent upon those eye drops to blink and lubricate my eyes. Then I heard, “awiie mm yourrr inlrtergoatr. Lissstnnn tooo mmy voozce.” It was electronically altered so the voiceprint of the speaker would be indistinguishable.

Although I was listening carefully I couldn’t understand what was said. “What?”

The speaker repeated, “awiie mm yourrr inlrtergoatr. Lissstnnn tooo mmy voozce.”

“What?” I asked again.

The interrogator discarded the electronically altered voice machine. “I am your interrogator. Listen to my voice,” he said. It sounded like Red.

“What terrorist organizations do you belong to?” he asked.

“None.”

“Not any?”

“Not any.”

“Anytime in your life have you belonged to a terrorist organization?”

Again I replied, “Never.”

“What about earlier in your life? Have you ever belonged to a terrorist organization ever in your life?”

“No, none ever.”

“What terrorist organizations have you belonged to in the past?”

“None.”

“In the past what terrorist organizations did you belong to?”

“None.”

Red re-framed the question slightly and posed it again. Each time I answered “No.”

“Answer yes or no: Have you ever been a member of Hamas?”

I was born in Canada of American parents, Christened an Anglican

(I’m a WASP) and raised first a Quaker and then a Unitarian. I was thinking, “Can he be serious?”

“What about Al Qaeda? Have you ever corresponded or met with them?”

“No.”

“Are you sure?”

“Yes, I'm sure.”

“Do you know anyone who might belong to Al Qaeda?”

“No.”

“What about Hezbollah? Have you been a member of that?”

Again I responded, “No.”

“Not ever?”

“Not ever.”

The blond officer, Mitch, took over and continued this line of interrogation for at least twenty minutes with a list of terrorist organizations with Arabic names I’d never heard before.

Mitch would repeat the same question over and over about half a dozen times with slight variations until he was satisfied with my answer. Then he would move on to the next group. If I delayed too long before replying, I was given a jolt of electricity.

“Matthew, I can take you to Guantanamo Bay tonight. I have a jet waiting, so you better tell the truth.”

“Are you a member of PETA?”

“What does that stand for?”

“It’s animal rights people.”

“Oh, you mean the People for the Ethical Treatment of Animals?”

“Yah, that’s it, are you a member?”

“No.” I couldn’t believe this was a terrorist organization.

“Have you ever been a member?”

“No.”

“Do you know anyone who has been a member?”

“No.”

“Have you ever been a member of The White Panthers?” Mitch asked.

“I thought it was the Black Panthers.”

“No, there’s white panthers now,” Red clarified.

The extensive terrorist organization list was likely from the American State Department’s list of “Foreign Terrorist Organizations.”[15]. This going through the long list of terror organizations took about twenty minutes.

“What political organizations do you belong to?” asked Red.

“None,” I replied, relieved at a change in topic.

“What political organizations have you belonged to in the past?”

“I was a member of the Liberal Party of Canada once.” There was a pause.

“Is that supposed to be a joke?” Red asked slowly in a monotone, serious way with unblinking eyes staring at mine.

“No, I'm being honest,” I said. “I was a member of the NDP once too.”

“Now we're getting closer!” said Red enthusiastically, since the NDP is Canada’s democratic left party. He leaned closer, and Mitch also leaned forward.

I couldn’t name any more organizations I had belonged to, besides the Regina Aquarium Society when I was eleven years old.

“Any organizations that had a purpose or goal of some sort?” Red asked.

“No, none.”

Then the interrogation took a very strange and abrupt turn.

“Who is the Prophet?” Red asked.

I countered, “Which one?”

“You know,” Red said in a tired tone. “The Islamic one.”

“Mohammad,” I said.

“Say it together with me: Mohammad is the Prophet,” Red commanded.

“No,” I said, knowing this was a setup. Someone gave me a shock with the power turned up, so now my whole arm stung. I decided to comply and said, “Mohammad is the Prophet.”

The tall burly officer with the black moustache and greying hair now broke in for the first time since he’d applied the torture-device. “Matthew, I have just one question for you.”

“OK, go ahead,” I replied.

“Why do you sing to your dog?” he asked deadpan.

“What?!!” I said with embarrassment.

“Don’t deny it, I've heard it,” Burly said.

“Moving along,” said Mitch.

“By the way, you need a new fridge,” Burly added.

I did a few times did sing a few lines to my dog and I needed a new fridge. The hourly clunk when the compressor shut off could be heard throughout the house and startled visitors and guests. However, I only had sung to my dog on the first floor of my house when others were out and I wanted to perk up the dog.

I would take an already known tune, perhaps a Christmas carol and substitute in my dog's name and some lyrics of praise. The dog got a kick out of hearing its name, and it added some levity to my days at home alone recovering from PTSD.

Aside: Later when I was tortured to dissociation this officer asked me about an ongoing RCMP Major Crimes investigation in Alberta. Someone I knew briefly in Alberta about fifteen years earlier had been the victim of a major crime. About a decade earlier an RCMP officer visited my residence in Toronto and asked me questions. I cooperated fully and gave a statement in writing. Unfortunately they were unable to convict the accused, so when I was completely tortured to submission in this van, I was again asked about this investigation. I had no information beyond what I'd reported a decade earlier. This is how I know for certain that this Burly officer was RCMP.

A stranger had approached me a few months earlier in the Yonge-Eglinton shopping center near the entrance to Radio Shack. He was of East Indian descent, about 5' 7", 150 pounds, and maybe forty-five years old.

"Sir, I want to buy a cordless phone, but I don't know which one to buy. "

"You look like a man that knows about electronics," he added.

"Any name brand will be good," I advised.

"But which one do you have?"

He was too insistent. I detected subterfuge but I couldn't see how this information could be used against me. I wanted to get rid of him.

"It's a Motorola cordless with a base station and two handsets."

"What model?"

"I don't remember the model. It is the expensive one with the 'room monitor' feature."

Now I realized my phone must have been hacked, and my singing and all private conversations observed. This explained the recent loud feedback squeal heard when my wife or I would pick up the phone.

The interrogation continued, "What is your Arabic name?" This question was asked many, many times until time itself seemed to blur.

They kept repeating the question. I kept replying negatively. "I don't know my name in Arabic.“ I kept getting shocked, randomly. They pushed the plunger of the syringe in more, and I felt drunker than ever. I could not supply them an Arabic name because I did not have one. Red tried saying something to me in what sounded like Arabic, or maybe Farsi, but I did not speak either language. They shocked me again.

After going back and forth for at least ten iterations, in frustration, I said, "I don't have a fucking Arabic name!" Then there was a pause.

Red said, "Matthew, your Arabic name is Mohash."

I purposefully tried to not remember it.

"Now say it!" he commanded.

"No," I replied. I knew that announcing my new Arabic name was not only misleading, but in the post 9/11 political climate, it was not a good idea. Surely the van was wired for sound. Red repeated the command. I stayed silent.

Next I felt the stinging slap of a pair of vinyl gloves across my face. I felt very vulnerable in this van full of military men who were behaving sadistically. I was virtually blind, handcuffed to a chair and now I was being assaulted. I could not even blink my eyes for protection.

I flashed back to the recently remembered rape trauma from thirty years earlier when I was eight years old, in which my attacker slapped me when I was not obedient. I wept. My voice quivering I said to Red, "Please do not slap me, I'm flashing back to thirty years ago when I was attacked."

"Why are you going all the way back there for?"

"Because I have PTSD!!!!" I shouted at him through sobs.

One of the two regular Canadian Forces officers sitting in the front of the van asked what PTSD was. Red paused for a few seconds.

Red then said, "Matthew, I won't slap you again, but you've got to do something for me. I want you to repeat your Arabic name and then we can move on."

"OK," I said amid sobs.

"Go," he said.

"My name is Mohash," I said with a quivering voice that broke.

"That was good, Matthew, but do it once again without crying," Red said.

I focused and repeated, "My name is Mohash".

"Good, Matthew, now we can move on," Red said.

Mitch was explaining some no-mark torture techniques to Red. He said, “Matthew, close your right eye, but keep the left open.”

Impaired by the Sodium Pentothal and never being good at opening one eye, I just shut both eyes. “No, I want you to open your left I so you can see me,” he said and I complied.

Mitch explained to Red that he needed to flick his finger just hard enough, but not too much. He demonstrated the force to use by flicking his finger against Red’s forearm. Red cautiously approached, hesitated and then flicked his finger against my shuttered right eye. It was very painful, as the eyeball was knocked back hard against the eye socket.

“Oouch!” I shouted. “Don’t do that!”

“That was right,” the American told Red.

Next Mitch explained to Red how to use the second joints of the fingers (first below knuckles) to push into my cheek right where the upper and lower teeth touch, and then twist the wrist so the finger joints and jam the inside cheek membranes against the crowns of the teeth.

“Matthew, clench your teeth together,” said Mitch, and I complied. Red pushed the second joints of his closed fist into my cheek and twisted back and forth.

“STOP, that hurts!”

Again Mitch asked, “What is your other Arabic name?”

“Mohash”

“No, tell me your *other* name!” Mitch demanded.

The interrogation was taking an unpredictable turn. I was now getting an electrical shock even when I tried to cooperate by answering the name question. There was no way out of the pain. This was scientific, Nazi-style, sadism causing a predictable personality meltdown.

It appeared to be a 'teaching' question (for Red the student), as Mitch was showing Red how to get a subject into a complete state of surrender: the 'ideal state' he called it. They brought me to a mental state of complete and utter helplessness.

Dissociation is a normal human response to excessive Psychological Trauma. The dominant personality goes to sleep (and has amnesia afterwards.) What is left is an infantile, very malleable consciousness that is easily hypnotized.

---

[15] List found at http://www.state.gov/s/ct/rls/other/des/123085.htm

CHAPTER 11: 2005 Nov 22 - Creating a Sleeper Agent

“There’s a plot in this country to enslave every man, woman and child. Before I leave this noble office, I intend to expose this plot.” – Pres. John F. Kennedy, 7 days before his assassination

I was asked over and over, “What is your name?”

When I answered “Matthew,” Mitch would say “No! Your other name?”

I tried replying, “Matt?”

“No, I want your other name!”

I offered my childhood nickname, “Boo Boo.”

“Where did that come from?” Mitch said.

“It was my childhood nickname, from the Yogi Bear cartoon.”

“No, I want your other name!” Mitch demanded.

“But I don't have one!”

“TELL ME YOUR OTHER NAME!” Mitch shouted.

I didn't answer, and I was shocked severely. This was a question that there was no right answer to, as I had no other name. I knew they wanted an Arabic name, but I knew no Arabic beyond what they had taught me.

I tried answering “Mohash” as they had taught me, but they gave me another shock. Again Mitch asked, “What is your other Arabic name? Your other name?” I tried inventing a name, and got shocked again.

“What is your name?” Mitch repeated. I decided to remain silent. Another shock. There was no pattern. No behaviour would stop the random shocks.

“What is your name?” Over and over. Time became elastic. I arbitrarily said nothing or invented a name, and was arbitrarily shocked. There was no other sound except “What is your name?”. Sometimes I would hear Mitch say “now” and then the shock would hit me. I realized Red must have been holding the controller.

The session became silent and Mitch used hand signals, which I could not see, so I could not know when the shock was coming.

“What is your name?” In such a perverse situation, the mind cannot avoid the electric shock, and random answers to avoid the shock result in random electric shocks. There is no way out of the pain. Within ten to twenty minutes, the mind shuts down, regressing to that of a traumatized, captured small animal. This is what happened to me.

For the next six years, it was rare for a day to go by when I did not hear the question "What is your name?!!!" in my mind, whenever I was stressed or tired.

I remember Mitch telling Red how to recognize when the desired surrender, dissociation state had been reached. “You see how his eyelids are flickering constantly against the taping?” Mitch asked.

“Yes,” Red replied.

“That’s one of the signs. Also watch this,” and he motioned his hand between the floodlights and my eyes causing a fast moving shadow. I recoiled away in fear to the full extent of my restraints. “That's another sign the state has been reached. You have to stop when they reach this stage or they will go into shock,” Mitch explained.. “Matthew, slow down your breathing!”

I breathed slower.

Starting from this regressed, dissociative state, the subject can easily be hypnotized. “Look at this, Matthew,” Mitch said as he pulled something out from under his jacket. It was a cube of plastic or glass about two and a half inches on each side, and illuminated from inside by gradually pulsating, warm coloured LEDs.

It contained a hologram depicting two scenes.

The first scene in the top right of the cube, was a detailed, exquisite 3D image of a mountain vista with an eagle perched on a tree. The second scene in the bottom left of the cube, was of the Apollo 13[16] spacecraft next to an American flag on the moon.

“Wow,” I exclaimed, “It's beautiful! What is it?”

“Never mind” Mitch said, “just look at it.”

The hologram was slowly changing as the LEDs pulsated, causing a colour shift among green, blue, red, and yellow. The Eagle appeared to take flight as the colour lights illuminated different aspects of the hologram, and the spacecraft simultaneously lifted off the moon.

I was literally mesmerized. “Can I touch it, just once, please?”

”Just once” said Mitch as he held it close to my right hand, which was still handcuffed to the metal torture chair. I touched the surface with two fingers. It felt just like a cube of hard plastic.

Mitch held it back at my eye level, and said, “Matthew, I want you to focus on this, and do exactly as I say.”

“Okay.”

Mitch continued, “You are going to sleep now, even though your eyes are open, and you are going to do everything I ask. Relax.”

I immediately slumped in the chair.

Mitch started to put the cube away. I said, “Can I look at it more, please?”

“No, no, no, Matthew,” Mitch said with a chuckle. “That's enough,” and he put it away. He continued: “Matthew, you will repeat exactly what I tell you to repeat, out loud.”

“Do you understand?” he asked.

“Yes.”

“Now say it, I will repeat everything I am told to.”

“I'll repeat everything I am told to,” I said.

MIND CONTROL PROGRAM #1

I was now fully in a hypnotic trance.

“Repeat after me “If I find a gun in my jacket pocket I WILL go to the nearest closet, without delay’.”

I repeated word for word: ““If I find a gun in my jacket pocket I WILL go to the nearest closet, without delay.” Something happened inside me as I said this.

I did not like the sound of “gun” and “go to the nearest closet.” I had always been afraid of guns and rifles. It started when I was an eight-year-old kid in Argenta, B.C. one summer when I visited a ten-year-old kid who lived about half a mile up the mountain road from where I was staying with my mother and brother in that Quaker community.

The kid met me on the road out front, and showed me his .22 rifle and demonstrated shooting it while aiming up the road. I objected that he might accidentally hurt someone. “It won't hit anything but trees!” the kid said angrily. Then he pointed the loaded rifle at my chest and I froze. “If I pull this trigger here right now,” he said as he wiggled his finger, “you'll be dead.” He smiled sadistically. I was speechless and terrified. After a few moments, the kid pointed the rifle in another direction.

The mention of the gun in my pocket brought back another memory. At fifteen years old I’d read three books on hypnotism, and I realized that

Mitch was in the process of implanting a dangerous post-hypnotic suggestion.

Post-hypnotic suggestions are harmless enough as part of a Stop Smoking program, or when a show hypnotist makes people act like children or animals on stage.

As anyone schooled in hypnosis will say, it's difficult to forcefully hypnotize someone if they wilfully resist. A prelude of torture anti-conditioning to cause dissociation makes it nearly impossible to resist. If I had not read those three books on hypnotism, I would not have had any knowledge to attempt to resist.

My fear of the words "gun" and "go to the nearest closet" made me feel resistant. My knowledge of how hypnosis works came back to me. This allowed an inner voice to rebel even under hypnosis. I knew I had to hide this – I absolutely could not handle more torture anti-conditioning. I did my best to secretly will the opposite of what they forced me to say out loud, over and over.

"If I find a gun in my jacket pocket I WILL go to the nearest closet, without delay," Mitch intoned, and I repeated it out loud word for word. Inwardly I repeated the same sentence substituting "WILL NOT" for "WILL".

There was a diversion from the programming as Mitch taught me how to turn the safety off on a handgun.

"Have you ever used a handgun?"

"No."

"Have you seen one before?"

"Yes." (I'd seen police on the street carry them).

"Do you know what a safety is?"

"Yes. I had a pellet gun as a kid and it had one."

Mitch turned to Burly and said, "Do pellet guns have a safety?"

"Yes, I believe they do," Burly answered in an uncertain tone. Clearly Mitch was a city-raised kid. He pulled out his own chrome-plated handgun and the younger Canadian officers sitting in front said "Wooo hooo!!" as the expensive looking, shiny handgun glimmered in the floodlights.

Mitch then lamented, "Well, it won't look like this one."

Burly said, "Here, use mine," as he pulled his black Glock out from under his jacket and handed it to Mitch. "It's loaded." Glocks are standard issue for RCMP officers.

“Yes, I know,” said Mitch annoyed as he accepted the weapon for the demonstration.

“OK, Matthew. To turn the safety off, you just press this little button here.” He held the gun just outside my reach, midway between my face and my handcuffed right hand.

“OK, I understand,” I said. It was a button just in front and above the trigger. The programming continued.

“Repeat after me: ‘After stepping inside the closet but before closing the door, I WILL turn the safety OFF on the handgun,’” I repeated the sentence word for word, while silently negating the command in my mind.

“I WILL then close the door to the closet without delay and then immediately put the barrel of the gun to my head.” I repeated it aloud while silently repeating the opposite statement in my mind.

“I WILL pull the trigger in one smooth action. I WILL NOT delay in pulling the trigger,” Mitch said, and I repeated after him.

5. “I WILL NOT shoot my family, or anyone else.” I repeated it aloud, still keeping up with the demanding pace but I was slowed as I had to break the pattern and not negate the logic of this program.

6. “I WILL NOT remember this program until a gun is found in my pocket.” As I repeated it, I told myself : “I WILL remember this program until a gun is found in my pocket.”

“Matthew, don't hesitate!” He started over and had me repeat statements 1 through 6 again, one after another. He repeated the whole program, and I repeated after him. This went on for ten to fifteen repetitions.

MIND CONTROL PROGRAM #2

After the umpteenth time repeating program #1, Mitch moved on to the next program. “Matthew, do you know what a controller is?”

“Kind of,” I replied.

“A controller is someone you treat specially. You treat them as your best friend, and you answer any questions with a straight answer, and you do anything they ask.“

Mitch had me supply an already memorized elementary school friend’s last name for the controller so I would more easily remember. He said it was important I chose a person I would not have contact with in the future.

I chose "Smith" after my elementary school girlfriend. I suggested "Larry" for the first name, after the dunce in the same classroom.

“I don’t know, Matthew. Larry Smith is too common. Choose something else,” Mitch ordered.

“Look, I am the one who has to remember this for years, so let me pick the name,” I said assertively despite being in a trance, dissociated from torture anti-conditioning.

Mitch considered it for a few seconds and finally agreed.

“Repeat after me,” said Mitch.

1. “When someone introduces themselves as Larry Smith, I will treat them as my best friend.”

“When someone introduces themselves as Larry Smith, I will treat them as my best friend.”

In my mind I tried to negate the logic with my inner voice.

2. “I will tell Larry Smith the straight answer to any question he asks of me.’” Again, I repeated this out loud while trying to remember to inwardly negate it.

3. “I will do everything Larry Smith tells me, including kill.”

There was a brief dead silence in the van.

“I will do everything Larry Smith tells me, including kill.” I responded, terrified.

Mitch then taught me the method to use to kill in case Larry Smith asked me to kill.

“Matthew, you will run towards the target. At full speed run you will impact the target with your hands on their torso to knock them down. You will jump on them and roll them on their back. You will squeeze their chest with your knees. You will clamp their throat with your hands, and lean forward putting all your weight on your hands. But don’t cross the thumbs, Matthew.”

“Your long arms are perfect for this technique, Matthew. “Repeat the method back to me.”

“I will run at them full speed, knock them down with my hands impacting their torso. I jump on them, get them on their back, squeeze their chest with my knees, and clamp my hands around their throat, and lean forward putting all my weight on my hands.”

“Yes, that's close but you need to remember not to cross your thumbs.”

He clarified the killing technique by demonstrated the choking technique on an imaginary victim without crossing the thumbs.

In retrospect, I realize this technique would leave plenty of forensic evidence. But since a sleeper agent – which I was being programmed to become -- doesn't know anything about his controller other than a made-up name, and has amnesia for years after, I would appear to be just another crazed killer with blood on my hands.

"Repeat after me," Mitch went on: "I will do for Larry Smith anything he asks, including kill." Terrified, I repeated this, and tried to repeat the opposite in in my mind.

4. "Repeat after me," said Mitch: "I will not remember this instruction until a person introduces himself in person as Larry Smith."

I was aghast but compliant, and I repeated this out loud, while I silently repeated the opposite in my mind.

Then Mitch started over from step 1 coaching me through step 2, 3, and 4, each time ordering me to repeat it exactly. I complied.

As with post-hypnotic program #1, this whole program was repeated ten to twenty times. I strained to keep up while secretly willing the opposite. Mitch would praise me when I repeated the steps correctly without delay, but berate me if I hesitated and threaten me with a shock.

It would be four years and five months before I remembered the mind-control programming. What a perfect murder scheme by anonymous state controllers; what tragic implications for democracy.

MIND CONTROL PROGRAM #3

After repeating all the steps of program #2, Mitch went on to the next program.

"Repeat after me," said Mitch:

1. "If I find myself in a Psychiatric hospital or Psychiatric ward of a hospital, the first time I am alone in a room with doctor or nurse wearing a stethoscope, I will strangle them with it."

Again I repeated the program out loud, and silently repeated the reverse in my mind.

"Good, now this is how you'll do it," Mitch said.

Mitch pulled out a real stethoscope and taught me to hold it a certain way to most efficiently strangle the victim. "You fold it in half like this," he said. He held the stethoscope folded in half, with one hand holding the rubber cord folded in the middle, while his other hand held the metal ends.

"Again, repeat after me" Mitch said, "If I find myself in a Psychiatric hospital or Psychiatric ward of a hospital, the first time I am alone in a room with a doctor or nurse wearing a stethoscope I will strangle them with it."

I repeated the instruction out loud, and silently repeated the reverse in my mind.

2. "Repeat after me," said Mitch:

"I will not remember this instruction until a person introduces himself in person as Larry Smith."

These two post-hypnotic suggestions were repeated between ten and twenty times.[17]

Creating Alpha

Then Mitch took me to other states for demonstration purposes, like a puppet.

"I am going to introduce you to two new names just for you Matthew, Alpha and Beta, I want you to remember."

"I had two cats named Alpha and Beta once."

"Good, then you will have no trouble remembering," Mitch said.

"Matthew, who got you really angry when you were a kid?"

"My older brother."

"How did he do it?"

"He would tease me, and then call me chicken over and over."

Mitch started insulted me, making fun of my physical characteristics: glasses, bent baby fingers, and teeth.

"What you going to do, four eyes freak?"

"What's wrong -- are you chicken?"

I tried to resist being affected.

"Chicken, chicken, chicken." Red joined in the name-calling.

I started to get angry after a few minutes. Mitch continued goading me, until finally I exploded with a threatening rant.

I yelled: "You're lucky I'm restrained, you short motherfucker, or I'd rip your head off!" Mitch was 5'11", a few inches shorter than I.

Once in this state of rage, Mitch told "Stop, listen, Matthew… the rage you feel right now, I want you to remember this. You are Alpha now, remember the way you feel now. This is your Alpha personality (alter), Matthew. Remember it."

Then he said something to make me laugh that I don't remember. He said things to cool me down.

Sexual Assault, Humiliation

Mitch said, “Go out in the neighbourhood and get me a clean garbage can, the large kind.”

OK,” Burly said deferentially.

“I want an aluminum one, not a plastic one and it has to be clean.”

“OK.” Burly seemed slightly worried at the tall order. Burly’s absence provided a respite from the torture interrogation and mind control programming. The previous several hours had given me not one minute to rest.

“What is taking him so long?” Mitch asked Red.

Burly returned with a garbage can and Mitch asked, "What took you so long?!!"

“I’m sorry but I had to walk four blocks to find the kind you wanted.”

“It took you long enough,” Mitch said as he lined the large can with a clean black garbage bag.

Mitch then placed 3-D goggles on me, which I could not look away from since my eyelids were taped open. He also put headphones on my ears.

I watched a series of disturbing videos shown, each a few minutes long, depicting violence of all types, including sexual. Various types of pornography were also shown to me. At the end of the sexual-content segments Mitch instructed Burly to “test whether he's hard.”

The Mitch groped my genitals several times announcing “hard” or “not hard” to the entire van of officers. The 3-D goggles were briefly removed. The floodlights were now off.

Again Mitch asked Burly to check whether I was hard. At this third groping Red lost his cool and said to Burly, “You better stop that!”

“But he's saying to,” Burly pleaded, nodding towards Mitch.

“That doesn't matter, he can charge you!” Red said nodding towards me[18].

Next the DVD player played horror-show flicks. Under the influence of drugs, torture and not being able to look away because ones eyelids are taped open, they were truly horrifying. The soundtrack featured a death metal band screamed murderous rage in my ears.

I do not care for this music genre, and this terror-inducing use of it was a perfect example of why. The hate spewed towards women and other humans was horrific. Later I found the music on Youtube, it by a band Cannibal Corpse.

Next came a twenty-second black and white film clip showing officers bulldozing dead bodies into a large open pit. The bodies were in such a state of decomposition that they fell apart as they bounced off each other as they were pushed into the pit. It was the most sickening thing I had seen in my life.

That the US military would force me to watch this was outrageous and implied they were holocaust supporters.[19] I screamed in horror, "Noooooooooooo Nooooooooooo."

Mitch shouted back in my ear, "Shut up! Don't scream!"

Another horror video at first appeared as a car commercial. A shiny European car passes along a gently winding road and disappears behind trees. The eye anticipates the car emerging from the trees. It does not. The mind starts to wonder what happened. Then some sort of monstrous humanoid creature jumps into the front of the frame. I later found this video on Youtube under 'Scary Car Commercial'.

I screamed again. The headphones were removed and I was told to stop screaming. Once I stopped screaming they were placed back on.

Next I was shown what would have been very scary 3-D content except that I recognized it from a video game called 'Battle Zone' I had played as a teenager. It was the part where the 'buzzing missile' weaves into and obliterates the player, ending with the simulated cracked windshield in the tank. I chuckled and said, "This is from a video game I once played."

Slightly annoyed, Mitch said, "Okay then, we'll fast-forward past this part." The video jumped ahead past the video game.

Next I was shown such terrifying content that I screamed at the top of my lungs. I remember dismembered corpses and a flaming skull. There was occult imagery. When I screamed, Mitch screamed in my ears, "Shut up," but I would not. They took the headset off so I would stop screaming.

The 3-D headset was put back on.

Mitch instructed Burly, "On my mark I want you to pull off the goggles so Matthew doesn't mess them up." He added, "Ready... on my mark, 6…, 5..."

I watched as the camera did a close up of a girl's Raggedy Ann doll lying on a perfectly cut green lawn sloping down a hill. There was soft, relaxing music... "4…, 3…, 2…" it was calming, and peaceful as the camera lowered to doll level.

"1…" In an instant a wave of computer-generated animation enormously large ants crawled across the screen in 3-D in an undulating wave and quickly started biting and eating the doll lying on a green perfectly cut lawn. The mark was reached and Mitch said, “NOW, pull them off!” Burly did as told.

Exactly at this point I leaned forward and vomited into the garbage bin that Mitch had tilted towards me. Mitch asked, “Is that all, Matthew? Are you sure?”

“Yes, that's it,” I responded.

“Wow, that's impressive... most empty their entire lunch.”

Next Mitch announced, “This is to demonstrate how obedient Matthew is to me.“ With a grin on his face, he poured the vomit into a white, plastic washbasin. Then he announced I would drink it. Some officers were heard mumbling disagreement. Mitch replied, “He's not going to drink the whole thing. He’ll only be taking one gulp.”

He added, with a slight lisp, "This is to demonstrate Matthew's compliance and willingness to follow my instruction." He held the washbasin to my lips and tipped the basin up. Vomit sloshed down both of my cheeks, and when Mitch said, “Swallow now!” I did as told. One of the Canadian officers could be heard retching behind me. It tasted a bit like hot and sour soup, but decidedly less tasty. I did not retch. I was too frightened of disobeying Mitch.

The other officers went silent. Mitch was happy. "See, I told you Matthew would drink it if I told him."

Red rushed in with paper towel and for the first time he knelt down on one knee as he wiped the vomit off my face. He actually apologized: “I'm sorry Matthew... I didn't see this coming.” I believed him.

I believe the American officer underestimated the effect some of these actions would have on the morale of the Canadian officers in this joint training exercise.

Creating Beta

Next Mitch asked the Canadian officers to step out of the van. A new officer entered and followed Mitch’s orders. He had an American accent. Using further torture, he took me to a very compliant, passive state.

“Matthew, I am going to adjust your restraints and I want you to stand on your knees just in front of the chair,” Mitch commanded. Mitch removed some restraints and re-adjusted others so I could kneel with my back against the front of the chair. (This must have been the reason for backup.)

"Don't sit, stand on your knees," Mitch ordered.

"I need to lower your pants and underwear to put something on," Mitch explained.

"What for?"

"Never mind, it will not hurt, you will like it. You'll see," he explained.

While I was still restrained Mitch pulled my pants and underwear down. He strapped an artificial, rubber coated, pre-lubricated, electrically controlled, artificial vagina on me. He put 3-D goggles on and headphones and a short pornography scene was shown. The device undulated and squeezed. I reached orgasm in a few minutes. He pulled off the goggles and headphones.

"Matthew, the way you feel right now passive and sexual, you are Beta now"

"Remember this is your Beta personality, Matthew."

After the sexual event, he wiped me with paper towel and pulled my underwear and pants back up, and stowed the artificial vagina in one of the overhead storage bins after stuffing paper towel into the orifice. He adjusted the restraints so I could sit back in the torture chair. He stepped out to tell the Canadians they could come back in the van.

He used torture and anti-conditioning to get me back into the particular dissociative state he wanted for more interrogation and mind control. It took me nearly five years to recall the mind control programming, sexual assault, and humiliation that night, and I did not want to remember. I feel for the prisoners in Guantanamo Bay.

---

[16] Thanks to Mitch for correcting this from Apollo 11 to 13. He also edited this manuscript in an Oct 2015 home invasion. This Fifth Edition has now removed every edit of Mitch's that I could find.

[17] How many Canadian doctors or nurses have been strangled by CICA mind-control subjects over the last few decades? Does the RCMP realize that by helping CICA in this MK research that they are guilty of conspiracy to commit murder?

[18] Red demonstrated leadership to stop a crime being committed

[19] In a home invasion, Mitch insists this footage was from the Armenian holocaust

CHAPTER 12: 2005 Nov 22 - Pre-Forced Confession Interrogation

"In keeping silent about evil, in burying it so deep within us that no sign of it appears on the surface, we are *implanting* it, and it will rise up a thousand fold in the future. When we neither punish nor reproach evildoers, we are not simply protecting their trivial old age, we are thereby ripping the foundations of justice from beneath new generations." – Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

Mitch removed a handcuff on my right arm. "Matthew, hold your elbow out and back," Mitch ordered. I complied.

Mitch grabbed my arm near the elbow. He started moving my arm back and it started to cause pain.

"What are you doing?"

"Be quiet!" Mitch ordered.

In one swift movement, he dislocated my shoulder. The pain was excruciating.

"My arm, my arm!" I cried.

The van was quiet. I could not move my arm at all.

I felt a tendon or ligament pulled tight like a banjo string between my arm and my shoulder socket. It felt like it might snap and my arm would just fall away.

"What have you done to my arm?" I asked as tears welled up in my eyes from the pain.

"I dislocated it. I'll put it back in a few minutes," Mitch said.

"Don't be such a baby! It doesn't hurt that much."

Mitch moved from behind me to right in front and he stood facing me.

"Now listen to me, Matthew. I am going to ask you some questions and I don't want any guff from you, none at all. You are going to cooperate fully. Say 'Yes, I will cooperate fully.'"

"Yes, I will cooperate fully."

Mitch walked to behind me, and in one swift motion put my arm back in its socket.

My shoulder was very sore, but the extreme pain had stopped.

He cuffed my right wrist back to the armrest.

Mitch asked, "What do you know about bomb making?"

Eager to play along after being tortured, I said: “I could blow up this van with a bag of flour and an electric fan.”

Mitch looked at Red. Red stepped forward and said, “What he is describing is an IED.” (Improvised Explosive Device.)

Mitch asked, “From what experience do you know so much about bomb-making?” I told how both my best friend Luke and I had received chemistry sets for our sixth birthdays. We combined sets and began a long study in Chemistry at a young age.

I related some of the stories of making simple explosives for fun between the ages of eight and twelve years old. At one point Red asked, “Where were your parents when you and you friend were making these bombs?”

“At home,” I said, “We would tell them we had gone to the library when we were really testing explosives in unoccupied green spaces.”

“Can you explain how to make a dirty bomb?” Mitch asked.

“Yes, take a conventional explosive like witches brew, and then spike it with a radioactive isotope.”

Red asked, “Where would you get the radioactive material from?”

I paused a moment and responded, “A XXXXXXXXXXX in a dump would be a source.”

“That’s a pretty good guess!” Red interjected. I only knew of such a source because I'd been an anti-nuclear activist and had a book that detailed nuclear disasters including one where some dump workers exposed their families accidentally.

Red asked, “How would you cut XXXXXXXXXX containing the radioactive material?”

“I would use a welder to cut through the steel.”

“Do you know how to weld?”

“Yes, I took welding in high school.”

“Electric or flame welding?” Red asked.

“Both,” I lied as I was now eager to play the role to please my torturer. I was briefly trained only in electric welding. I heard an audible groan by Red.

“What do you know about detonators?”

“Electrical ignition is best and XXXXXXXX wire used to ignite hobby rocket motors does just fine,” I said.

Mitch asked Red, “Would that work?”

“Yes,” Red responded.

“How would you trigger the explosion?” Red asked.

“I’d use an old fashioned mechanical clock.

“Not an electronic remotely operated RF device?” asked Red.

“No, that would be too complicated, and error prone,” I answered.

“Have you ever used the word CIGARETTE to mean ELECTRONIC DETONATOR?”

“No, but I know a cigarette can be used as a crude, time-delayed detonator by stuffing the unlit end into a package of matches,” I said.

“That’s not quite what I mean, Matthew. I mean specifically the word cigarette to refer to an electronic detonator.”

“NO,” I said after searching my memory.

“Are you sure about that, Matthew?” Red asked.

“Yes, I’m sure,” I replied truthfully. Six months later I would read in coverage of a UK bomber’s trial that cigarette was a code word used by a terror cell to refer to an electronic detonator.

Red asked, “Have you made a pipe bomb?”

“Yes, at age 11, my friend and I made copper tubing based pipe bombs for an experiment.”

“Did you detonate it?”

“Yes.”

“Was anybody injured or was there property damage?”

“No, we lowered it down a manhole cover before detonation so no one was injured, and there was no property damage.”

“That was good thinking. Did you ever make a large pipe bomb?”

“Yes, we once made a pipe bomb with five or six copper pipes.

“Did you detonate it?”

“No, we gave it to a friend, and he turned it over to the RCMP.”

Burly, who had been quiet for virtually the entire interrogation (besides the humiliating 'why do you sing to your dog?'), now stepped into the light and asked, “What year was that again?”

Mitch and Red chuckled at Burly's sudden keen interest in the interrogation.

I replied, “It was in about Grade 8.” They did the math and worked out the date and Burly made a note before stepping back into the shadows.

Wal-Mart Missing 10,000 Exit Signs

Next the van became very quiet as Red led into a new and bizarre line of questioning. “Matthew, have you ever stolen an exit sign from Wal-Mart?”

“What do you mean, exit sign?” I asked.

“You know, those signs near exit doors that are lit up like neon signs.”

“First I don’t steal, and no I have never stolen one.”

“Are you sure, Matthew?”

“Yes, I'm sure.”

“Do you know anyone who has a stolen Wal-Mart exit sign?”

“No, I don't,” I responded. “Why would someone steal one?”

“Never mind that, but tell us if you know of anyone who has such a stolen sign.”

“I don’t know anyone who stole a Wal-Mart exit sign,” I repeated. There were several more questions of a similar nature until they were satisfied I knew nothing of stolen Wal-Mart exit signs.

I would later learn these signs were not filled with neon gas, but Tyranium[20] gas a radioactive element. Further, 10,000 such signs were missing. Later research by my friend Ian indicated that Tyranium was a critical part of making a high-yield atomic weapon.

About half time in the drugging period in the van, they asked: “Have you ever harmed someone?”

Since having been diagnosed with Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) two months earlier, I had recovered memories that had been repressed for decades. Among these time-bomb memories, most of which involve being assaulted or threatened, I remembered one where I had assaulted someone as a teenager.   They repeatedly asked the question: “Have you ever harmed someone?”

Not wanting to self-incriminate I answered each time with “NAME, RANK, SERIAL NUMBER”. I had seen a movie where WW II POWs replied this way. The movie told the story of the Japanese military capturing an American submarine and interrogating the captured.

With each uncooperative reply I was shocked with a stronger jolt. The first shocks scared me, but soon I realized it was not harmful at the lower levels. However, the shocks became more and more painful each time and I still avoided the question with “NAME! RANK! SERIAL NUMBER!” each time. In turn I started shouting louder and louder with each shock delivered.

Red shouted: “STOP YELLING!” He leaned forward to the driver’s side and said, “Driver, can we move forward a block, so we do not attract attention from neighbours?”

“Yah, sure,” a young voice responded, and the van started moving. Once the van was parked a block or so away, the red-haired interrogator continued with the same question. I continued shouting “NAME! RANK! SERIAL NUMBER!”.

Frustrated, Red pushed the plunger in on the 150 cc syringe. I saw it jump forward more than ever before. I started to lose consciousness and heard Mitch say, “Grab his tongue! Pull his tongue out so he doesn’t bite or swallow it!” Red’s vinyl gloves grabbed my tongue pressing into it with his fingernails.

I choked as my tongue was pulled out at least two inches. It felt like something in my throat was being torn, as a burning pain seared deep down. I could not see. I yelled out in pain, more of a loud shrieking, humming sound. Red let go an inch or so. He seemed a professional at this, like he had been a rancher or something - perhaps he grew up on a farm.

Then there was a fade to black. My next memory was the last ten seconds of the seizure. I remembered Mitch's voice shouting at close range in my face “ARE YOU TRYING TO BREAK FREE?” I was still seizing involuntarily when this question was put to me and I could not see anything.

I finally awoke with a pair of hands holding each leg and arm straight out while my head was being jammed against the headrest. Mitch was shouting: “Matthew! Look at me! Don’t roll your eyes back in your head like that! Look at me!”

As I heard this statement the seizure stopped. Mitch looked at me, and then he instructed the other officers to let go of me slowly, which they did.

Then using paper towel, Red started wiping away foam, which during the seizure had erupted from my mouth and over my chin, neck and shirt.

Red said, “You messed yourself up.” Someone said something about the foam on the shirt being possible evidence.

Burly appeared and said in an understated tone, “Let’s remove this now,” as he unplugged the IV and put a band-aid over the wound.

Establishing Jurisdiction of the van

During the seizure, my watchband had partially opened, and the face of the watch had slipped under my wrist, where it was hammered while sandwiched between the underside of the tighter fitting, steel handcuff and the solid metal, tubular, armrest frame as I thrashed my arms when seizing. They had to undo that handcuff to remove my watch. Red noticed a star fracture on the underside crystal and said “possible evidence” as he showed the watch to Mitch.

Mitch asked, “Matthew, was this crack here before?”

Desperate for evidence, I lied for only the second time in 3.5 hours, “It has been there a long time.”

Red said, “Can’t we just keep it?”

Mitch replied, “I don’t know…this looks like a very expensive watch. He’s a computer guy, it’s probably real. That would be ‘theft over $500’.”

Red replied, “But we don’t have that law here.”

Mitch, the American said, “That doesn’t matter!” He pointed a finger to the van floor: “In this van, we operate under my rules!”

Mitch asked’ “Matthew, how much is this watch worth?”

“Fifteen hundred dollars,” I responded truthfully.

“See, I told you,” Mitch remarked to Red. They put my watch back on my wrist, and then they put the handcuff back on.

Questions about former Premier H.

Red made use of my ‘brain reset’ from the seizure to move into another area of questioning: former Premier H.

“Why did you hate H. so much?” he asked.

“He cut welfare by 20% to the poor, and it hurt single mothers most.”

“Why do you care so much about the poor?” Red asked.

“My mother was poor and on welfare once.”

“That’s not enough reason to want to kill somebody! Why else did you hate H.?”

At the beginning of the interrogation I was told never to say, “I never planned to kill H.” because they said they knew otherwise, and they didn't want to hear me disagree. All three senior officers said this in unison, as if threatening me if I dared dispute it. I have never intended or planned to kill anyone in my life, but my explanations about my interrogation by Gary August 19, 2005 at work were forbidden at the outset and I was intimidated.

So I acted and played along as people do under torture and drugs. “He killed Dudley George!” I said aloud.

There arose groans, and disagreeing utterances from several of the officers. “We’re not going there again!” Mitch commented. The Ipperwash inquiry about Dudley George's murder was making weekly news stories at this time.

To his credit, Mitch had memorized the history and pointed out my talk with a friend about H. in 1995 was actually several months before Dudley George was shot by the OPP.

When asked again why I cared so much about Indians I replied: "Well, I know all of you were trained in Regina, (RCMP training headquarters) so I know you don't care about Indians." I was testing to see if they were RCMP: Regina has lots of racism.

There was a pregnant three-second silence, then a dissenting voice from the front of the van commented, "Not all."

This was Ben, the doorman and driver.

Red said, "SHHHH!!!" He repeated the question, "Why do you care so much about Indians," turning toward Ben and adding, "No disrespect intended."

In a slurred voice (from the Phenobarbital), I told them I had grown up on Indian reserves during the summer, as my father was a Cultural Anthropologist.

"A what?'" Red asked.

"He was a professor who specialized in North American Indian culture." I explained I had spent summer months at Indian reservations as a child.

This was just after the seizure, and my speaking was becoming very slow and laboured, as I was so drugged from the Phenobarbital overdose, I was on the verge of blacking out. Red realized this and called for a break.

10-minute Briefing of Senior Officers Outside Van

The senior officers (Mitch, Red and Burly) decided to take a 10-minute briefing (and smoke) break outside the van. Before stepping out, Red opened his palm to reveal a white pill, and said, "Take this, you'll feel better." He had retrieved the pill from one of the overhead bins.

"What is it?"

"It's an amphetamine, it will wake you up." I opened my mouth; Red popped in the pill and held a water bottle to my lips. I swallowed a mouthful of water with the pill. Red joined the other senior officers outside the van.

---

[20] Name obscured for security reasons

CHAPTER 13: 2005 Nov 22 - Two Canadian Forces acted heroically

"We all have the seed of love and compassion within us." – His Holiness the 14th Dalai Lama

The two regular Canadian Forces officers who had been sitting up front had now moved into the rear. One of them told me: "Our job is to keep you from falling asleep."

My wrists and ankles cuffed, an electric shock cuff on my right upper arm and in a very drugged state with my head dangling forward, I was very close to losing consciousness. The two regular CF officers (whose names were Ben and Jim) shouted repeatedly to keep me awake. "WAKE UP Matthew!!... Lift your head up!"

At some point, I ignored their orders and dozed off again. I was rudely awakened by a powerful shock and screamed in pain, "Aaahhhhh!!"

The shock-cuff controller had been on the highest setting. Red opened the back door, looked in, and asked Ben, "Did you use that thing?"

"You said not to let him fall asleep."

"Never mind! Don't do that again!!"

For a moment, Red was protecting me.

After Red re-joined Burly and Mitch outside, I came up with a plan to leave electronic evidence. I said: "You guys busted my mother for pot possession a long time ago!"

"Really!? What's her name?" asked the junior officer (Jim) who was back sitting in the passenger side front seat where he had a laptop. "Spell it."

"E-N-D-L P-A-U-L-Y." He typed it into a keyboard and said, "Holy Crap, we did! That was a long time ago!"

"Yah, 1974," I replied.

"No, 1975 actually," Jim, the Caucasian officer, corrected me. He added, "The charges were dropped."

"I didn't know that."

"Are you saying this record is wrong and the charges were not dropped?"

"No, I'm saying I was just a kid when it happened."

I knew that their typed queries to a nation-wide police information database would be recorded, leaving evidence.

Ben had got out of the driver’s seat and moved around to where I could see him easily. He told me, "Matthew, my friend and I are regular Canadian Armed Forces. My name is Ben, my friend here is Jim and we don't agree with what they did to you back there.”

“Why don’t you tell them that?” I drunkenly nodded my head toward the side of the van, outside of which the senior officers were meeting.

“Because I’d lose my job.’

“At least you have a job. I’m on short term disability.”

“Matthew, I am Aboriginal.”

“You’re Aboriginal?” I said in disbelief. “I thought you might be Greek.”

“Greek! You thought I was Greek?”

“I had some friends on the Danforth (a Greek area in Toronto) that looked like you.”

“No, I’m aboriginal, and if you want to find me, ” he lowered his voice, “my name is Ben E., and I’m from Oneida Nations, Turtle Clan”.

“Isn't that in Quebec?” I asked.

“No, in Quebec are the Mohawk nation, I'm from the Oneida nation here in Ontario near London.”

“Well, you can’t be half-bad then. What are you doing here?” I asked.

“It’s better than hanging out on the reserve.”

“I understand.”

“You really lived on a reserve?” Ben asked.

“Oh, yah, as I kid I spent summers on reserves in Montana and Morley, Alberta, to attend the Indian Ecumenical Conferences with my dad” I replied.

Gesturing to the light-brown haired officer with the keyboard in the passenger’s seat, Ben said, “Me and my friend Jim here are regular Canadian forces. We don’t agree with what they did to you. Matthew, I’m going to help you.”

“Are you going to let me go?” I asked as I pulled at the handcuffs.

“No, I can’t do that, but I’m going to tell you something not to forget….” He continued slowly: “J-T-F-2”.

“I’ll never remember that!” I protested.

“Say it Matthew, J-T-F-2.”

“J-T-F-2” I repeated.

Jim, the other young CF officer, interrupted: “Shouldn’t we also tell him JTF?”

“No, he doesn’t need to know that,” Ben corrected him. “Just remember JTF2, Matthew.”

JTF referred to the American’s outfit, the Joint Task Force.

“What’s JTF2?” I asked.

“JTF2 are the people that did this to you…remember it, Matthew: J-T-F-2.” He broke off quickly as the van door slid opened.

Special operation forces in Canada since the WW II Devil’s Brigade in Canada have not been so esteemed. A former Canadian Airborne Regiment veteran I met when walking my dog confirmed that after disbanding of the CAR, many of the Airborne’s former members later joined JTF2 when it was formed in 1993. JTF2 is Canada’s primary special operations force, and it is based (reincarnated according to the history page on the JTF2 website) on the WWII “Devil’s Brigade”. Both JTF and JTF2 are experts in clandestine warfare, counter-terrorism, interrogation, general subterfuge, etc. JTF2 shows up under the radar at First Nations blockades and other events in Canada, and were active in Afghanistan.

In 1993 Joint Task Force 2 (JTF2) was formed when the Canadian Forces Airborne Regiment was disbanded following several members of the Airborne torturing and killed a civilian in Somalia. JTF2 considers the “Devil's Brigade” to be the elite unit it is conceptually based upon, as documented on their web site at least in the period 2006-2010.

The acronym had to be JTF2 instead of JTF since the Americans already had that, and both forces trained together and sometimes deployed together.

JTF2 was caught using torture during a training exercise in Quebec, which resulted in civil litigation.[21]

Interrogation Part II – Post Seizure, Post Briefing Break

The senior officers re-entered the van and Red announced: "Matthew, we're going to make a movie and you’re going to be the star!" I had to validate the intelligence I had been given. Was it disinformation, or were Ben and Jim telling the truth?

"Great,” I said. “What's JTF2?"

Red's face turned ashen and everyone in the van stopped moving. He looked gravely at me and said "WHO TOLD YOU THAT WORD?!" He pointed at the white soldier. "THIS ONE?" and then pointed to Ben. "OR

THIS ONE?" Then he changed his mind. “No, I want YOU, Matthew, to point to who told you this.” I tried to ignore the question, but Red grabbed the electroshock controller and repeated the question and I knew a strong electric shock was imminent if I did not comply.

Slowly I lifted the forefinger of my handcuffed right hand to toward Ben. Red replied, "That’s what I thought." To Ben, he said: "I'll deal with you later!"

I felt significant remorse at having not believed Ben at first and having turned him over to his superiors. I hope his punishment was not too severe. I commit one half of my royalties of this book if Ben will testify of the events of that night. I will even throw in a portion of the movie rights.

JTF Interrogator THREAT 1

Mitch interjected: "Matthew, what you just heard and seen here, you're going to have to forget this. Because if you remember it, I can have you sent to Guantanamo Bay. I have a jet waiting at Pearson and believe me, it's not nice there."

The red-haired JTF2 interrogator added, "Afghanistan is a hole, I've been there, you don't want to get sent there either."

I promised them I would forget hearing the word JTF2. (And I did repress this memory for a full five months.)

Unmasking the Torturers

I later learned by a license plate trace by Julia-Ann G. of Service Canada that this van plated 250002 was registered to a military vehicle, according to her RCMP source.

Since Mitch was American accented, and since Ben the driver was First Nations from Oneida Nations near London, Ontario, the puzzle starts to fit together about Mitch’s comment: “In this van, we play by my rules!”

In 2006, the DND web site posted a summary of Joint Task Force Two (JTF2) activities in 2005 including a joint-training exercise with the American Joint Task Force (JTF) titled: “Joint Control, Unified Command 2005 (JC UC 05) that involved: “Group infiltration, and enhanced interrogation” in Southern Ontario. (This title and description were altered after appearing in my manuscript in 2007 that was sent on the Internet unencrypted.)

One would expect the US JTF to want some ownership in the Canada based training exercise, so they may have rented the van from the Canadian Military, like the black site on the island of Diego Garcia which is rented by the US Military from Britain. This would explain Mitch's American-accented statement: "In this van, we play by my rules!" regarding American laws like "Theft over $500" if taking my watch.

A Canadian soldier was driving the truck/van, and we know American military vehicles are not allowed to operate in Canada, so it had to be a Canadian military van.

Further, a Canadian Forces soldier approached me anonymously on Yonge street in 2010 to correct my Internet-posted specification on the truck/van. He said he had a correction for my manuscript, but he could not say his name. "It's five ton, not two ton and it is armored. I know because these vans are dozens of years old, and are hard to maneuver. I drive them."

He would not take questions. He said, "It's too risky for me to be seen with you, I have to go." The services of the Canadian Forces driver Ben, and navigator Jim were likely supplied as part of the deal with the US JTF in renting the truck/van since it was so old and difficult to drive.

Given that:

a) Red's scolding of Burly's behavior in the van when he touched my groin, and

b) Burly's complete obedience to of the American officer, and

c) Burly ran the telephone surveillance (Why do you sing to your dog?), and

d) Burly noted a Regina event when I was in junior high school and the RCMP gathered a small incendiary device, that Luke and I had built for an experiment

e) Burly asked me about an ongoing RCMP Major Crimes case that I could not help him with,

it is reasonable to conclude Burly was an RCMP (National Security department) officer.

The senior officers then were: Mitch (JTF), Red (JTF2), and Burly (RCMP). Ben and Jim were regular Canadian Forces by their own admission, and they were heroes. Although Red did some horrible things, at times he acted bravely, and he made penance to me after the event.

---

[21] "Canada's Elite Secret Army", Paul Worthington, The Sunday Star, July 15, 2001.

http://www.hackcanada.com/canadian/freedom/secretarmy.html For RCMP torture references, simply Google RCMP torture and read plenty of documented cases.

CHAPTER 14: 2005 Nov 22 - Forced Confession as Terrorist

"The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is that good men do nothing" – Edmund Burke

Severely drugged, recovering from the recent accidental Sodium Pentothal (Phenobarbital) overdose and subsequent Grand Mal seizure, and threatened with further electric shock, I now acted out just about everything they asked me which included learning how to pronounce "Allahu Akbar", and to say with great fervour and fist-shaking (against my restraints):

"My name is Mohash!
"Mohammad is the Prophet!
"Allahu Akbar! Allahu Akbar! Allahu Akbar!
"I know how to make bombs!
"I am going to blow up the CN Tower!"

Here is how they arrived at that forced confession. They had removed the IV-Phenobarbital after the seizure, but the electroshock cuff was still on. They threw my long leather coat loosely over my body to hide the electroshock cuff. They also insisted I pull against my restraints and act like a crazed man and open my eyes wide so the whites showed.

These scripted lines had to be re-shot several times as whenever I shook my fists with fervour, the leather jacket would fall from my shoulder and reveal the electroshock cuff. In fact I purposefully shook my shoulders and arms to cause the jacket to fall away each time and to expose the electroshock cuff, but each time Burly the cameraman noticed, stopped recording and came over to pull the jacket back up over the electroshock cuff. On about the third re-take, Burly said, "Matthew, now you did not do that on purpose, did you?"

"No," I replied with a lie. In these circumstances I did not think it was unethical to lie.

Again I shook the electroshock cuff, while pulling at the restraints. Finally convinced I was doing this on purpose, Burly removed the electroshock cuff for the last scripted line.

Now with no imminent threat of electroshock I refused to say "I'm going to blow up the Parliament buildings of Canada.”

Mitch instructed Red: “Don’t lose compliance.”

Red let me bargain the target down to the CN Tower. I agreed to the negotiated threat and the scripted line. Why? For the same reason tortured people the world over do: I was afraid for my life, and cooperation seemed the way to survive.

Both interrogators and cameraman were smiling and happy once the VHS ‘terrorist tape’ was completed. Red said “Matthew, do you know what a Section 38 is?”

“No.” I was trying to sound disinterested.

Again they asked, “Come on, Matthew, don't you want to know?”

“OK, what is it?” I replied.

“It means if you try to sue the federal government for what happened here tonight, then with this tape we’ll get a Section 38 on you, and then you’ll never be able to talk about any of this.”

Mitch nodded agreement and added, “It's true.”

“Surely I could still just talk to a friend about it”,”

They corrected me: “No, you’d go to jail if you did.”

I have since read Section 38 of the Canada Evidence Act, and this fascist piece of legislation actually exists. It opens a legal loophole and enables the security establishment to get away with torture, as long as they get a forced confession so the victims have no chance to be in court and defend themselves when the video is shown to a federal court judge. It turns out that getting a forced confession is easy using torture, which is why it’s used in autocratic countries for this purpose.

The two lead interrogators were whispering between themselves, and each turned to me, held a forefinger to his lips and said “Ssshhh”.

Mitch added, “Forget this part, Matthew. This conversation just now. Forget it.”

“Okay,” I responded, but secretly I willed otherwise. Those drunk with power show their cards.

CHAPTER 15: 2005 Nov 22 - Post Forced Confession Questions

“How can you make a war on terror when war itself is terrorism?” – Howard Zinn

The following questions were repeated over and over, until a satisfactory answer was supplied, either negative or positive. Getting them to accept a negative answer was very difficult and repetitive. I can’t be sure of the exact ordering of these questions and whether they were posed before or after I had the seizure. The recordings in JTF2 or RCMP SECRET files may someday reveal all these details.

Mitch asked, “Matthew, how long can you be out before your wife panics, before she contacts someone... someone with power?”

“What do you mean someone with power?” I asked.

“A friend with connections or the police, how long before she would contact the police?”

“I don't know -- 2:00 or 2:30 AM?” I was deliberately misleading them.

“That long?”

“OK, maybe not that long, perhaps 1:00 or 1:30 AM.”

The questioning continued. Red asked, “Have you ever harmed small animals?”

I responded, “When I was about eight years old, my friend and I were cruel to a guinea pig. We threw it in the air so it did a somersault just to make it squeal.”

“What?” said Mitch. Red explained guinea pig behaviour to Mitch who obviously never had one as a pet.

“Have you ever behaved sadistically?” Red asked.

“Yes,” I replied. I told them a brief story of something that was not sadistic, but bordered on drunk and disorderly behaviour. The officers all laughed.

Red asked, “Have you ever started a fire?”

“Oh yes, I set fires when I was a kid,” I answered.

“What damage was there?”

“Very limited property damage. Part of a back-yard fence was destroyed,” I answered.

They asked a few more psychological questions. Then they took a pause to tally up some numbers.

After perhaps thirty seconds, Mitch announced, “Congratulations, Matthew! You are a psychopath! Do you know what that means?”

“Yes,” I said but I strongly disbelieved the accuracy of their test. Since then, my doctors have fully refuted the conclusion of that test.

Now Red asked the familiar question, “Matthew, what time must you be back by before your wife calls the police.”

“I don't know, maybe 12:30” I responded. Red turned to Mitch and Burly.

Mitch said, “OK then, let’s not waste any more time.”

Topic: Atomic Weapons

Post seizure and post forced confession; Mitch was noticeably in control of the interrogation. There were many more questions about bomb making. Apparently the little bit I knew from childhood study (age 8-12) was a real concern.

Mitch said, "Matthew, you seem to know a lot about bomb making and rockets. When would you ever use this knowledge?”

I thought a moment. "Never.”

Mitch persisted, “Come on, when might you ever use this knowledge if you had to?”

I reflected and answered, “Well, it would have to be something really major.”

“Major, like what?” Mitch asked.

After a pause, I said, “Maybe if the US invaded Canada."

Mitch raised his voice. "You can't seriously believe that we would do that!!!??" Anger showed in his voice and in his facial expression.

"You did it before," I replied.

"What? Are you talking about the Fenian Raids?" he asked, and then answered his own question, "That was over 250 years ago!"

Mitch's American history was better than mine.

I thought carefully and then said slowly, since I was intoxicated on a Phenobarbital: “Don't you have a saying in this business that the best predictor of future behaviour is past behaviour?"

Mitch was furious. Breathing hard, he was speechless and livid. Red intervened: “Calm down!” But Mitch was mortally offended that a Canadian would respond in such a patriotic way.

Red now asked, “Did you ever research making a fertilizer based bomb?”

“No, I've never made one,” I responded elusively.

“I'm asking did you ever look it up on the Internet or in a book?” Red asked.

“Yes, once I looked it up on the Internet,” I answered. In the aftermath of the Oklahoma bombing, the scale of the violence stunned me. I saw an article about McVeigh and I could not understand why someone would do such a horribly violent act. I also wondered how such a deranged person could have built such a powerful bomb. I did a five-minute Internet search on fertilizer bombs.

“Where?” Red asked.

“On the Department Of Mines web site.”

“Ours or theirs?” Red asked.

“Theirs,” I responded. This us-and-them language by Red gave me some hope. This divisiveness might have been genuine felt sentiment considering the Canadian officers had been forced to watch one of their countrymen be:

a) Drugged, tortured with: electricity, physical assault, forced viewing of 3-D horror video content specifically to terrify the subject, and sexually assaulted
b) Hypnotically programmed to commit suicide
c) Hypnotically programmed to obey future orders by his controller including orders to kill
d) Hypnotically programmed to murder a Canadian doctor or nurse
e) Forced to drink his own vomit to show his compliance to the American JTF officer.

Suddenly Mitch jumped in: “That must have been before 9/11!” implying they must have removed that Internet content after 9/11, and placed search ‘traps’.

“Yes, it was,” I responded. Then I asked Red, “But did you know that half the diesel fuel could be replaced by used motor oil?” proving I had actually looked it up.

“Yes, I knew that,” Red responded calmly.

Mitch asked, “Do you know how to make an atomic bomb?”

Playing my role, I told them the little I knew that Luke had showed me from a science book when we were eleven years old.

Red asked, “But what about the thing that makes the charges ignite simultaneously.”

“Yes, I forgot about that part,” I responded and added defensively, “I was eleven years old.”

Mitch started interrogating me along a new line, with noticeably more seriousness. "Matthew, I advise you to listen very, very carefully to the next question and think before you answer." He paused for effect, and the van was quiet. “Have you ever heard of Tyranium?[22]” His American accent was showing.

I thought to myself where I may have heard of it. I remembered it was a radioactive isotope, and it was in the fallout of an atomic bomb. “Is that like Strontium 90?”

“What?”

“Since the atomic weapons testing of 1950s and beyond, everyone in the world has Strontium 90 (fission by-product) in their bones.” I had learned that viewing Helen Caldicott's film “If You Love This Planet.”

“No that's not it. Tyranium.” Mitch continued gravely, “What do you know about it?”

“It’s a radioactive element.”

“But how could it be used?” The van was absolutely quiet.

“I don’t know,” I answered.

“Think, how to you *think* it might be used?” Mitch demanded.

“I don't know, maybe it’s part of the bomb somehow,” I replied.

Mitch shook his head and said to the others, “He knows about it.”

Mitch, it seems, had made a decision. Next, Mitch placed his arm on my shoulder as if to pronounce something important, like that he was taking me into custody.

Red interrupted. “He said he doesn't know what it’s for!”

Ben interjected: “Yah, he didn't know!” and his partner Jim chimed in too, “He didn’t know.”

Some of the Canadians cleared their throats for effect. There was a perceptible shift in the politics of this multi-nation operation. The Canadian officers must have known Mitch's assertion, “He knows about it,” was a preparation to justify taking me into custody, transporting me to the airport, and off to Guantanamo Bay which is run by the JTF.

This radioactive element is used to increase the yield of an atomic bomb by several orders of magnitude. Even knowing what it is used for is apparently enough to tip the scales, so that a terrorist suspect could be taken away to Guantanamo Bay or some other foreign country where torture is permitted.

In those few seconds, the energy in the van became polarized between Mitch, the lone American officer (JTF), and Red (JTF2), and the two CF officers, Ben and Jim; Burly remained silent. Burly was a hardened, skilled torturer, and the one who hooked up the medical equipment. He was also the one who "showed the tools of torture" at the start by making a big deal of inspecting my fingernails with a fingernail pulling device. His deft skill at applying eyelid tape gave away his considerable experience. He assisted in the forced vomit consumption event. He never showed remorse, not once. He always did what Mitch told him, even if it violated the Criminal Code of Canada, Geneva Conventions and was not in our national interest.

Burly had been only too happy to hand Mitch his Glock 9 mm after Mitch had commented his all-chromed gun was not what I would find in my jacket pocket. Burly was also the only non-American recognized later in the 2007 forced ECT (chapter 1,) and the lone Canadian officer presenting himself as 'Larry Smith' a few months after the 2005 torture interrogation and again one year later. After nine months living with Quebecois in Katimavik when I was seventeen, I detected Burly's barely detectable Quebecois accent that night, so he was a traitor to a founding nation within Canada as well as Canada.

Several Canadians cleared their throats, as if to remind Mitch he was outnumbered. Red, Ben, and Jim knew I was not a terrorist.

Mitch detected this shift, and that's when he backed down, but he was angry and frustrated. He kept his hand on my shoulder and said, "Fine then... By the powers vested in me, I declare you an enemy of the People of the United States of America."

Mitch must have felt that team cohesiveness had dissolved, and was at a tipping point.

"Matthew, tell me your full name!" Mitch ordered. "I want your full name exactly as it appears on your passport!"

I repeated my full name as it appeared on my passport: Matthew Kevin Pauly.

"Is that exactly how it appears on your passport?"

"Yes, exactly."

Burly pulled my driver's license and birth certificate from my wallet, and showed it to Mitch who said, "Matthew, I advise you to never approach the US border."

Since my parents are American and many of my relatives are in the USA, I asked, "What will happen if I do?"

"If you do," Mitch said as he looked directly into my eyes, "You will answer to ME!"

I got the picture; I would likely be indefinitely detained, tortured, and possibly killed if I ever tried to cross the US border.

Mitch said, "One more question, Matthew. Which side of the bed do you sleep on, the outside or the inside?"

I considered what this question was for. "What does that have to do with anything?!"

"Never mind, just answer the question!" Mitch demanded.

"The outside," I responded.

"Let's be clear, Matthew: by outside do you mean the side closest to the door?"

"Yes!" I said, knowing there was only one reason this information was sought. Someday, if I were unlucky, I would hear the creak on the wood stairs in the night. It would be unlucky because resistance would be futile. The assassin will have a silenced, powerful automatic pistol with a large magazine. There would be no defense. The wood door would be splintered to pieces if necessary to gain entry. I would know for perhaps ten seconds of my impending death, rather than having it occur in my sleep.

Mitch said, "Matthew, we are not comfortable with you continuing to live in the Pearson Airport flight path with your knowledge of rockets and explosives. We want you to move. Will you do that?"

I was indignant and said, "No, my wife and I love our house. Move the flight path!"

For the first time I was feeling and showing my anger.

"OK, Matthew, if you do not move, then we have no choice but to continue to monitor you," Mitch said.

"Fine."

Red asked, "Are you sure you are OK with us monitoring you, Matthew?"

"Do what you want," I said.

"Have you ever harmed anyone?" Again this question came up and again I resisted by replying “NAME, RANK, SERIAL NUMBER.”

---

[22] Name obscured for security reasons

CHAPTER 16: 2005 Nov 22 - The Breaking of Resistance

"The media's the most powerful entity on Earth. They have the power to make innocent guilty and guilty innocent, and that's power. Because they control the minds of the masses." – Malcolm X

After continued to reply, "NAME, RANK, SERIAL NUMBER" to their question on whether I had ever harmed someone, the electric shocks were very frequent, and at the highest setting. I was screaming. But with each question I shouted the same reply, "NAME!, RANK!, SERIAL NUMBER!".

After over ten iterations of my getting shocked and shouting "NAME! RANK! SERIAL NUMBER!" I heard Mitch comment to Red, "He's been trained (in torture interrogation resistance)." This was false; I had watched a movie.

Mitch and Red turned my statements into questions. "What is your NAME?" Red asked.

"Matthew."

"Good, what is your RANK?" Mitch asked.

"Underling." They chuckled.

"What is your SERIAL NUMBER?" Mitch asked.

I blurted out a random sequence "4728125" that sounded forced, not memorized.

"He's lying," Burly blurted out.

They continued asking if I'd harmed someone. I continued replying, "NAME, RANK, SERIAL NUMBER."

Again Mitch said to Red, with disgust, "He's been trained."

But they continued.

Gradually my strategy started to fail, as my body became more affected by the electricity as the electro-shock cuff was on maximum power. My heart was racing, skipping beats and beating irregularly. This frightened me as it never had happened before. I did not want to die.

I pleaded, "STOP!! My heart is beating irregularly; you're going to cause me a heart attack! I'm a smoker you know!"

"Yah, we know." (At the beginning they searched my coat and found a pack of cigarettes.)

Then a young voice to my left said in a genuinely concerned tone: “Can’t we just give him a break for a minute or two?” It was Ben, who deserves a medal for standing up for the rule of law in that van.

“SHHH!” said Red. “Matthew, if your heart is bothering you, then I advise you right now to tell me what I want to know.”

After pausing a few moments I realized Red was ready to kill me if he had to. A torturer is only a heartbeat away from being a murderer. I realized that if I had a heart attack, they might not take me to the hospital as it would compromise the operation. They very well might dump or destroy my body. I wanted to live.

I told them I assaulted another teenager when I was young. They asked for the location, the year and any victim particulars, which Burly (RCMP) wrote down. Mitch, the JTF interrogator asked, “Have you got anything more recent?”

“No, that’s it,” I replied.

The van started moving. I wondered if they were taking me away somewhere. I asked, “Where are you taking me?”

Mitch said, “We're taking you home.”

“Which home?” I asked, as I wondered if jail or Guantanamo Bay was my new home.

“Your house, we’re taking you to your house,” Mitch said. “Don’t park in front of my house,” I said, foolishly worried about what the neighbors might think about a five-ton, armored military van. “We won't, we’re going to park a half block away,” Mitch replied. Then they parked the van on the north side of Montgomery, about ½ block east of my house.

Then the ‘cool-down’ started.

The Interrogation Cool-Down:

“How did you come up with the NAME, RANK, SERIAL NUMBER stuff?”

“I saw it in a movie,” I responded.

“Which movie?” asked Mitch.

“I can't remember the title. It was about a US submarine crew that was captured by the Japanese in WW II.”

“Do you remember the title?”

“No, I don't but it had scenes of the soldier's resisting interrogation by the Japanese.”

“That was pretty cool how you did that,” said Mitch and Red added, “Yah, that was pretty good!”

They undid the restraints, tentatively. After having me sit on one of the benches that ran along the back half of the van on each side Mitch and Red started saying nice things like: “Matthew, you’re not such a bad guy,” and, “Your wife is nice!”

“How do you know my wife?”

“I don’t, I just saw her. We’ve been watching you.”

I remembered many times seeing two men sitting in a parked car on the north side of Montgomery in late October and early November.

Mitch said, “So, we heard you saw that plane crash at the airport… That must have been fun.”

“Yah, right,” I replied sarcastically in turn. I did not want to talk with them about the Psychological Trauma I experienced watching the Air Flunk Skybust crash.

They folded the table down from the wall again.

Next they took a picture of me with my back against the rear wall, both with glasses on and off, again without permission. Red produced a tray in front of me with three items on it, a smaller plastic tray, and two cotton balls, one on the tray and the other beside it. “You are right-handed, correct?”

“Yes,” I responded.

“Pick up the cotton ball that is beside the tray and wipe your right forefinger with it.”

I picked up the cotton ball. It felt wet, and my finger was cold afterwards so it must have been soaked in alcohol.

“Now place it beside the tray, not on it,” Red ordered. I complied.

“Now pick up the other cotton ball, and wipe the inside of your cheek, and then put it back on the tray,” Red ordered. I knew this must be to gather a DNA sample. My glasses were off, and men who had tortured me for three hours surrounded me. I did not for a moment consider resisting. I wiped the inside of my cheek and placed the cotton ball on the tray as instructed.

I later consulted a doctor who said this would have been an unreliable DNA sample. Perhaps they were afraid of me poking them in the eye if they'd given me a Q-Tip.

Red turned away and started putting away the tray and the objects on it in the overhead bins. The table now was folded down in the back of the van between the two seat benches on either side. Red placed a legal-length document in front of me on the table. He then placed a pen beside it and said, “Sign right here” and pointed to a part at the bottom of the form.

I picked up the paper. Red then presented me with my glasses, which I put on. I squinted my eyes at the eight-point font, and noticed there was printing on both sides. I could not read any of it. After three hours of having my eyelids taped open, with three bright floodlights focused on my face for much of that time, being drugged, electrified, and suffering a Gran Mal Seizure, my eyes simply could not focus on anything close, and eight-point font was impossible to read.

I said, “I can't read it, any of it. Something is wrong with my eyes. What does it say?”

Mitch answered: “It says all of this was voluntary,” and he smiled.

“What happens if I don't sign it?”

Mitch gestured to Red to be quiet, as he responded to me, “We will not let you go until you sign it!”

I paused to think.

The van was by now parked only half a block from the safety of my house. I had thought I was going to die at many points during the time I was captive and now I was almost free. I thought that if I did not sign, that they would compel me with more torture and violence. I knew my body and mind simply could not handle one minute more. I thought there was no way, after three hours of torture, that signing the form could possibly be considered as consent to what they did to me. I reluctantly and resentfully decided to sign it. I picked up the pen. As I signed, I purposefully signed something that looked quite unlike my signature.

Red picked up the document and examined it. The other two joined him to study it. One of them produced a document that was the same size and colour as the gas company invoice I had signed in triplicate three days previous, after the fake gas company technician “Jerry” had surveyed my furnace for the energy conservation ruse.

Red and Burly were concerned about the signature mismatch.

“Look at this part here, then look at this other signature. They’re different!” said Red.

“Yah, they're a bit different, but it’s no big deal,” said Mitch.

Then Burly said, “Look at this other part here, then look at this one over here, they're completely different!"

Again Mitch said, "Yah, they're a bit different, so what? It's no big deal. We don't have time. Let it go."

After all, Mitch the Joint Task Force officer could just slip across the American border to evade prosecution. The American government would never extradite a military officer to Canada to face torture chargers, and the Canadian government would never ask unless they were both completely cornered, that is, unless they faced losing the consent of the people to govern.

The International Criminal Court in The Hague has bigger fish to fry. Red and Burly could be culpable in civil suit or criminal action for torture on Canadian soil. But Mitch was the teaching and therefore dominant officer of this torture-trio and Red and Burly had to acquiesce into accepting my purposefully bad signature.

Red told me, "The best thing for you and your family, Matthew, is for you just to forget this whole thing…." He opened his hand to reveal a pill bottle and he added, "And these pills will help you forget."

"What are they?" I asked.

"Propranolol," he replied, "You take one a day before bed until they are done." (Propranolol inhibits the nightly storage of short-term memory into long-term memory.)

I was shocked. I had been tortured for over three hours, coerced into making a false confession, held against my will until he signed a consent form, and now I was being ordered to take further drugs to forget.

But I knew was so close to freedom. I knew this was going to be the last demand. There simply couldn't be anything left. I would be free soon. I recognized the drug name since my wife had taken the same drug, a beta-blocker, for migraine headache prevention years ago. I thought it would have little effect. "Okay, I will take it," I said.

I held out my hand as Red poured the pills into my hand. I asked for some water. Red handed me his half-empty water bottle. I asked what was in the bottle, and Red replied defensively, "It's just water, my water."

I popped the entire handful of pills into my mouth (seven, a whole week's worth) and quickly swallowed all the water and the pills.

Mitch looked at me in amazement. "What did you do that for?"

"How else will you know I have taken them?"

Mitch had forgotten how compliant he had made me become through torture, drugs and hypnosis. [An unintended side effect of not taking the drug as directed was that it did not work to prevent the conversion of short-term memory to long-term memory.]

JTF Interrogator - THREAT 2

Mitch repeated his warning, “Matthew, if you remember any of this and start talking about it, I GUARANTEE your picture and name will be in the paper, and it won’t look good.”

“Why not?”

“Look at what you have told us here tonight!”

In truth, I was having trouble remembering much of what I had told them. The Phenobarbital, torture-trauma dissociation, and hypnosis had made the memory foggy and disjointed. It was like the previous three hours were like a foggy, surreal nightmare

Seeing me unsteady on my feet outside of the back of the van, Burly asked, “Do you want me to help you walk to your house?”

This offer only made me angrier. “No, I'll do it on my own!” Before departing, I steadied my gaze at the license plate of the van.

Ben said, “He's looking at the plate!!”

“It’s not a problem,” Mitch replied. The plate was 250002 with different colouring than regular Ontario plates, and without the usual label.

Before I could get moving Mitch stepped out of the van and asked, “Matthew, are you an Epileptic?”

“No. Did I have a seizure?”

“I don’t want to say…. But you might want to ask your doctor about that,” Mitch added.

Before they drove away, I yelled ‘Hey!’ to get their attention while the back doors were still open, and then added, “Leave My Family Alone!”

Mitch said, “Don’t worry, we’ll leave your family alone.”

I slowly walked the fifty meters to my home. I was aware they were watching me. When I was within twenty meters of my sidewalk on Montgomery Avenue, I heard the van move, and I turned to catch a glimpse of it reversing into a driveway, and then turning east on Montgomery.

When I reached my front walk, I ran back out into the street and caught a glimpse of the back of the van one block away as it turned south on Duplex Avenue. It was going to drive right by Toronto Police Services, 53 Division.

I stamped my foot in the snow and said out loud to myself, “REMEMBER!” This was a self-hypnotic technique I invoked, anticipating it might be difficult later to remember. The three books on hypnosis I had read as a fifteen year old were becoming useful.

I stared at the snow on the ground amidst the trees in front of the Montgomery apartments. I had to figure out a way of remembering the plate 250002. Right then I created a mnemonic. First term (25), times second term (0002) = Labatts 50, the beer referred to in the racist OPP recording before they killed Dudley George, one day after Premier H. urged them to “Get the Fucking Indians out of the Park!” This racism and urge towards violence is reflected in the OPP's own words.

A handful of Ontario Provincial Police officers posing as a media crew, were caught on tape having a shocking conversation:

"Is there still a lot of press down there?" one officer says.
"No, there's no one down there. Just a great big fat fuck Indian," replies another. “The camera's rolling, eh?" "Yeah." "We had this planned, you know. We thought if we could get five or six cases of Labatts 50, we could bait them." "Yeah." "Then we'd have this big net at a pit." "Creative thinking." “Works in the South with watermelon."

As the reader can see, it's a conversation rife with racist remarks, recorded just a day before the land dispute ended in the fatal shooting of First Nations activist Dudley George. It was only released after an access to information request by a producer with The Fifth Estate.”[23]

The racist recording of OPP chatter at an Aboriginal roadblock caused enough revulsion when I first heard it, that it served as an ideal mnemonic to remember the license plate of the van used on or about Nov. 22, 2005 to torture-interrogate Matthew. (25 X 0002=Labatt's 50).

My wife was asleep when I reached our bedroom, and I was thoroughly exhausted from over three hours of torture. I was intoxicated from both the Sodium Pentothal and now the Propranolol was kicking in.

I did not want to wake my wife, and cause her trauma on learning what her husband had just been through. She had immigrated from a communist country only seven years earlier, and I did not want her to be traumatized by what Canadian and American federal officers had done to her husband. I feared she might want to return to China. I fell directly to sleep.

The following morning, November 23, 2005 on my left inside arm, just opposite the elbow, I found a dime-sized dark bruise with a tiny scab in the middle indicating a large needle had roughly inserted. I had no memory of what caused it. I remembered nothing from the moment I left Tim Horton's at 9:32 PM the night before and when I walked in the front door of my house later. I did not want my wife to think I was an IV drug user, so I hid it.

My wife said, "Where were you last night?"

"I left the Tim Horton's at 9:32 and I was home in ten minutes," I said.

"No, I woke up at 11:30 and you still were not home."

"That's impossible," I said. I had no idea how that could be. Later in the day I checked her bedside clock and it had the correct time.

I was so exhausted I slept the entire day. Upon returning from work my wife was furious at my sloth, and I could not explain why I was so exhausted. [A friend later researched Propranolol and learned seven doses of even the smallest pill was in the fatal overdose range. Those JTF, JTF2, and RCMP officers in the van ought to have known that, but they did not intervene. I was incredibly lucky not to have died.]

The second night after the coercive-torture interrogation I had a seizure in my sleep including urination.

About seven nights later I had another seizure in my sleep featuring a bleeding tongue. I saw my family doctor immediately. He ordered an EEG, which thankfully indicated I did not have epilepsy so I could keep my driver's license. The seizures were likely related to the Phenobarbital or other drugs administered on Nov. 22, 2005, but I had no memory of that yet.

In the next few weeks I started getting flashbacks, poignant memories, to being tortured in a van by military people. It was real memory, and it was getting more complete. The incremental partial recall was exactly the same pattern as what happened after the failed tornado evacuation on August 19, 2005.

When I remembered I had been brutally tortured and interrogated at length, I made an appointment with my family doctor. My wife came along. I related everything I could remember in a taped interview with him on December 22, 2005.

He listened carefully and made notes of what I reported. He said that my PTSD symptoms appeared to be getting much worse. It was true, I reported that now I was having nightmares not just about the plane crash, and failed tornado evacuation, but about being confined by military people in a van and torture-interrogated for hours. I remembered I had been drugged in the van.

I was becoming more hyper-vigilant than I had been before. The sight of a large mono-colour van would bring out a fear of death. Seeing people parked in cars on my street would also make me very frightened.

In the week of Dec. 22, I checked with several toxicologists into the possibility of gathering forensic evidence of the drugging. Both toxicologists reported that Phenobarbitals are excreted within a few days; hair/nail samples will only show chronic, not one-time, use.

By 2009 I believed I had remembered the vast majority of the interrogation, but I was wrong. It was not until late April of 2010, after 500 hours of therapy by two PTSD experts, that my unconscious was willing to reveal the mind control programming that accompanied the torture interrogation. One's unconscious mind never lets one recall more than one can handle.

I found that even five years after the event, I was still occasionally remembering details that escaped my earlier recall. That's how Psychological Trauma memories are recalled; they don't all come at once. The memories come in waves, in the order of least traumatic to most traumatic. Over time the frequency diminishes but the amplitude of each wave does not.

---

[23] http://www.bcrevolution.ca/ipperwash.htm

CHAPTER 17: 2006 Q3 - The RCMP Theft

"There will be in the next generation or so a pharmacological method of making people love their servitude and producing dictatorship without tears so to speak. Producing a kind of painless concentration camp for entire societies so that people will in fact have their liberties taken away from them, but will rather enjoy it, because they will be distracted from any desire to rebel by propaganda, or brainwashing enhanced by pharmacological methods. And this seems to be the final revolution." – Aldous Huxley

In the late summer of 2006, I was at home on long-term disability, recovering form PTSD. I knew the police were not going to take me seriously when I reported my experience of being subjected to a bi-lateral Special Forces, black-op torture-interrogation and mind-control session inside a van parked on a Toronto street.

I began a letter writing campaign to the Lieutenant Governor of Ontario. The Lieutenant-Governor of Ontario (most populous province) reports to the Governor General of Canada who in turn reports to the Queen of England. As such this office is arguably the third highest in Canada.

I had read two autobiographical books by Mr. Bartleman and I was impressed. I knew he was half aboriginal, which made me trust him more. I knew he had grown up from humble beginnings to become a very senior Canadian diplomat. I trusted him immediately. He was the first very senior official in Canada who in an effort to reduce the stigma of mental illness, admitted to suffering from Depression, and PTSD. I greatly admire this man.

I also read that he had suffered a horrific Psychological Trauma while on a diplomatic trip to South Africa. A robber with a gun held him at gunpoint in his hotel room and beat him for several hours. Because of this torture, he contracted Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). He would know exactly what I was going through.

All told I wrote him six letters, detailing the trauma I had suffered in 2005, including the torture. At that time I had not recalled the mind control programming, which I would not remember for another four years. Had I remembered it in 2006 and included it in my letter to the Lieutenant Governor, he might have dismissed me as delusional.

As it was he didn't dismiss me.

After sending the letters I started calling his office and spoke with his staff. Finally I received a letter addressed to me from the Lieutenant Governor of Ontario. It was short and went something like this:

"Dear Mr. Pauly,

I have received and read your letters. You should immediately get a lawyer. Please call the Lawyer Referral Services at 1-800-XXX-XXXX

I'm afraid due to the nature of my position I cannot offer further help.

Sincerely,
<his signature>
<his name>
The Lieutenant Governor of Ontario."

I had never seen such fancy letterhead. I hoped the gold leaf was not real. I was gushing with happiness after receiving the letter. He didn't tell me to see a Psychiatrist, nor to check-into a hospital. Neither did he ignore me. He wrote me to give me the best piece of advice he knew of: "Get a lawyer immediately." He even implied he would have preferred to be of more help.

Before showing the letter to my sceptical friend Ian, I read it to him over the telephone -- the same land-line that Mitch had said was going to be monitored after the 2005 torture interrogation.

A few days later, in the daytime when my wife was at work, someone knocked at my door. I opened to Burly the RCMP officer.

Burly said, "Hello Matthew, I'm Larry Smith. Remember?"

"Yes," I said, already in shock and moving into a hypnotic trance just as I had been programmed to do.

"I hear you got a letter from Bartleman?"

"Yes," I responded uneasily.

"Can I see it?"

"Yes," I responded, "Just a minute I'll go get it."

As I turned away, Burly stood holding the screen door open from the outside. He did not ask permission to enter. I walked down the hallway past the living room, through the dining room and kitchen to the basement stairs. I descended the stairs to my basement office where my filing cabinet was situated. As I opened the sliding drawer, I heard a creak on the stair. I turned. There was Burly, stooping over at 6'4" and 235 lbs. Burly, who was known to carry a loaded Glock 9 mm under his jacket, had let himself in.

I was terrified. I quickly pulled the letter from my hanging vertical file and held it up to him so he could read it. He took one glance at it and said: “Where's the envelope?”

“I don't have it.”

Burly held the letter and said, “I'll take that.” He backed away from me and turned around and started up the stairs, and I followed slowly behind him. I rounded the corner at the top of the stairs just as he opened the front door and let himself out.

That letter demonstrated a very senior official believed I wasn't crazy, and needed a good lawyer. Burly stole it to cover up the torture and other crimes in which he had participated.

Burly could use that letter to blackmail the Lieutenant Governor. He could show him the (forced) confession video ‘proving’ I must be a terrorist. [24]

Burly, in his collusion with and absolute deference to American authority, and his willingness to use torture, and now to steal the Lieutenant Governor’s letter to a victim of RCMP crimes, was helping his superiors protect the RCMP.

The RCMP has clearly not followed their 1981 revised mandate, which was to stay out of security service work. Their involvement in hooking up the torture equipment including non-consensually taping my eyes open, putting on an electro-shock cuff, and failing to get adequate consent for the drug injection in the November 22, 2005 van-interrogation was a significant violation of that mandate, The Charter of Rights and Freedoms, and Geneva Conventions.

---

[24] The RCMP had helped throw the 2006 election to the Harper Conservative government (J. Travers, ‘An Eloquent Plea for Democracy’, The Toronto Star, 2009) This government subsequently introduced mandatory prison terms and built many new jails despite Canada’s falling crime rate, and also later introduced the draconian ‘anti-terror’ Bill C51, which turned the RCMP into a secret police and suspended many civil liberties.

CHAPTER 18: 2008 Q3 – MK-ULTRA Sleeper Assassin Test in USA

“When we decided to take up arms, it was because the only other choice was to surrender and submit to slavery” – Nelson Mandela

Two years went by. I did not work and stayed home for 2006, and the first quarter of 2007 collecting Long Term Disability benefits from Red Hand software and trying to heal from Complex PTSD.

PTSD manifested primarily with a) horrible nightmares based on the traumatic events where I awoke shouting, sweating, and kicking, and b) ‘Hyper Vigilance’.

My shouting and kicking in bed was so bad my wife had to sleep in a different bed. During waking hours when I would see something that reminded me of the traumas like an unmarked van, or a car with occupants inside parked near my house, I would become hyper alert, and full of life-threatening fear.

The HR department head communicated to my wife that I was not welcome to return. Further he denied I could have been affected by the plane crash, which he said had not been visible from the building. He also denied there had been a failed tornado evacuation.

I attended two hours a week of therapy for PTSD during this period, one hour from a Psychiatrist specializing in PTSD (Dr. Colin M.), and another through a private psychodynamic psychotherapist (Lorna M.), both mentioned on the Acknowledgment page of this book.

I was concerned the Mood Disorders Institute of Ontario (MDIO, name slightly obscured) had been so easily infiltrated by Special Forces (including Red, JTF2, and what appeared to be two RCMP officers two weeks earlier), I decided to form my own therapy group, on a volunteer basis.

I met with the MDIO managing director to see about collaboration but she was noticeably annoyed with my plan and somewhat hostile. I put up notices in the North Toronto Library in the same hallway as the MDIO offices. I held an information session in a rented library room, and had people sign up. I found a volunteer therapist willing to lead the group therapy, an Ellen R. I collected dues enough to cover the room rental cost, and personally covered the costs of another group member who could not afford to pay.

The group therapy was three months in duration and was helpful to all. Some of us are still in contact to this day. However, it was only in early 2007 when I started to practice meditation for one half hour per day at the encouragement of my psychotherapist that was able to put the fear aside long enough to start to heal.

Still on benefits in May, 2007 I went through a gruelling interview process to get hired as a senior programmer at a large Internet based foreign exchange trading company on King Street in Toronto. I was still eligible for nine more months of LTD coverage but I wanted to work and resume my career. My doctor had never seen anyone resume working when nearly half of the automatic two-year LTD coverage remained to be paid.

The job went well. One of the co-founders was a computer-engineering professor and most of the staff had a master or doctorate degree in Computer Science/Engineering. It was a pleasure to work with so many talented peers I could learn from, in an environment that valued creativity and high performance.

As always, I threw myself into my work and would often stay until 7 or 8 PM. Of the just over one hundred employees, mostly programmers, very few would work as late as me. It was not uncommon for me to be the last person to leave.

I signed off of my computer, and put on my jacket and got up to leave. I was walking through the programmer and reception areas to the magnetically locked glass doors that featured a card reader on the elevator side. Alone in the premises, I pressed the door release button, passed through the doors, and pressed the elevator down button.

The doors opened to an unusual sight: three men in very dark, virtually identical suits, all with dark, wrap-around sunglasses, all within an inch or two of each other in height, and all with an athletic build. Since the offices were inside the Holiday Inn on King Street in downtown Toronto, sometimes hotel guests would enter the wrong elevators that served the office part of the building. These were not tourists. They did not look like employees of other companies in the building either. They stood out, like a well-dressed team of agents, and closely resembled the so-called “Men in Black.”

I felt the danger, as I realized I’d never make it back through the card swipe doors since my card was tucked away. Whatever was going to happen would happen. This was before I studied Russian Martial Art. Now I would make a run for it, and in retrospect, that would have been the right thing to do, as at least I would have been on camera. I had forgotten that the reception and elevator area had a video camera trained on it from the office side of the glass walls and doors.

I stepped back into the elevator and they all stood still, one on my left, and two more on my right, each occupying a corner. The doors closed. Immediately the lights went off, and I felt the stabbing pain of a needle on the left side of my neck. I lost consciousness.

I awoke seated in a three-bench row utility van with bucket seats up front for the driver and passenger. There was a driver up front. Judging by the light, it was now early morning.

I was seated towards the left side of the middle row bench. Mitch was seated in the first row on the left, giving instructions to another officer seated behind me. The officer behind me rolled up the long sleeve of my dress shirt and gave me an injection in my left arm, near the shoulder.

I felt like I had just chugged four 5% alcohol beers in about one minute, which I can only estimate as I'd never chugged beer before. I felt impaired. My head felt heavy. Scopolamine is made from a plant native to Columbia, a member of the deadly Nightshade family of plants. Among its most significant uses is as a "Zombie" drug[25] for societal control in Voodoo cultures.

Mitch said, "Matthew, lean forward and put your arm over the bench."

I put my left arm over the bench. Mitch lit a cigarette. He grabbed my wrist and pulled my arm down so my armpit was clamped overtop the first bench back support.

"Matthew, hold still."

He held the cigarette in his right forefinger and thumb, parallel to the skin on my left upper arm about 1/8 inch from the skin. I felt searing pain.

"OOWWWWWW! That hurts!! Stop that!"

Mitch was moving the cigarette very slowly down my arm, at a quarter of an inch per second. I screamed, "Stop!!! Why are you doing that? Please stop! Stop!"

Mitch had a smile on his face. It was clear he was taking pleasure in causing me pain. He was a sadist.

"Matthew, do you know why I'm moving it slowly like this?"

"No!" I shouted.

"Because this way, it doesn't leave a scar, yet it still causes maximum pain!" He had a smile on his face. I was in excruciating pain. That he took pleasure in it communicated that it might not end.

Within a minute or two, something happened. I became silent and detached. I had dissociated, i.e. my dominant personality had gone to sleep and what was left was an infantile, highly vulnerable and suggestible subconscious persona, just like in the van during the November 2005 interrogation when I had been randomly shocked incessantly for twenty minutes no matter what answer I gave to the question "What is your name?" which they repeated over and over.

Lifting the cigarette away from my skin, Mitch said, "Matthew, I am Larry Smith. You know me as Larry Smith, do you understand?"

"Yes," I replied, instantly triggered to program #2 from the November 2005 torture-trauma-dissociation, hypnosis-mind-control programming event. I was now in a hypnotic trance.

"Matthew, I need you to terminate a target. They will be coming along shortly from that way," he said as he pointed towards the left side of the van.

There was a radio mounted on the dashboard. The driver was doing a radio check with a portable radio, testing it communicated with the dashboard radio.

Mitch ordered the officer to take his position about 100 yards to the left with a handheld radio. The driver opened his door, got out and walked away.

"Matthew, the target always comes by this place at exactly XX:XX o'clock every morning," said Mitch with a smile, proud of having good intelligence on the target, and looking forward to a certain kill.

Then Mitch proceeded to run me through the mechanics of the termination technique, to be certain I'd not forgotten the programming. He got up and sat in the passenger's side front seat of the van to wait. After a few minutes, he commented, "Matthew, you stink!"

In this dissociated, hypnotized state I felt awkward about smelling bad. "If I had a toothbrush I could brush my teeth," I offered.

"No, it's not your teeth, Matthew, it's the drug."

Mitch was obviously knowledgeable about Scopolamine, otherwise known as "Devil's Breath." Since Scopolamine wipes free will, it is used as a date rape drug, and to rob people. MK-ULTRA programmers also use it for mind controlling their victims to do false-flag hate crimes, assassinations, and terror events.

Mitch looked at me and said, "Matthew, you know you are an enemy, right?" He was referring to the fact he'd sworn me an "Enemy of the People of the United States of America" while in a rage because Red the Canadian JTF2 officer and Ben and Jim of regular Canadian Forces, refused to let him take me to Guantanamo Bay[26]. They knew I was not a terrorist and it was my talking back to Mitch that led to his attempt to take me into custody.

Mitch rolled down his window, lit a cigarette and held it outside the window. I asked, "Hey, can I have a smoke please?"

"No, Matthew. No smoking in the van."

Now in the Alpha (dominant aggressive) alter after being drugged with Scopolamine, tortured to dissociation, and hypnotized via post-hypnotic suggestion, I was becoming assertive.

"Listen, you are smoking, and you're forcing me to do something I do not want to do that will affect me for the rest of my life, so I think you should give me a cigarette."

Mitch thought for less than a second and replied, "OK, I'll give you one but you have to smoke outside the van."

It's tragically ironic that for Mitch, adhering to the no-smoking policy in federal government vehicles was more important than abiding by Geneva Conventions, the US Constitution, or the Criminal Statutes of the State and Federal government.

Mitch ordered the officer behind me to open the sliding door of the van. I was stunned to see the lush state of the greenery. We were definitely far south of Toronto; and since all three of the officers spoke with American accents, I assumed we were in the USA. Our white van was parked on the grass in a green area with sparse trees and hilly terrain. Since we were in a depression I could not see any building, or know if this place was in a city or not.

I shimmied to the right side of the middle bench and for a fraction of a second stood in a crouch with one foot on the threshold. I was surprised that I was so weak; my legs were quite heavy.

I exited the van and placed one foot on the long grass. As I stood up I almost fell down. It felt like Earth's gravity had just doubled. It took considerable effort to raise myself to my full height keep my balance. Scopolamine intoxication impairs the mind and body.

My upper eyelids were droopy enough to block a bit of my vision. I could not seem to keep them up to their normal position, another signature symptom of Scopolamine intoxication "Hey, I'm having trouble with my eyes here, my eyelids are not staying fully open," I said to Mitch.

“Get used to it.” Mitch replied.

He clasped the lighter flame with his cupped hands and lit my cigarette. His cigarettes were much stronger than I was used to, and it had been over eight hours since I’d smoked, so there was big nicotine relief in those first few inhales.

Mitch un-holstered a black handgun, not the all-chrome one he had shown us during the November 2005 abduction. Longer than a normal handgun, it had a silencer attached.

Mitch proceeded to explain the triangulation he wanted me to use to intercept the target. His voice sounded stressed upon learning that I did not know the mechanics of triangulating a target. He quickly explained what this meant. I was half way through my cigarette when the radio in the van squawked. The officer in the driver’s seat reported the target was in sight.

Mitch ordered, “Matthew, put out your cigarette.”

I butted out.

“When the target is within fifty yards, you will start your pursuit. I will tell you when, so get ready.”

I considered my options. Even in that hazy, drugged into submission, dissociated, hypnotized state, this went against every moral fibre in my body. I was baptized an Anglican, raised a Unitarian, and already had a leaning towards Buddhism. I had been a very active and noted Peace Activist in University. I had been raised by a Pacifist father, and had talked my way out of fights all my life with a speech about non-violence. Now I was being coerced into terminating another and it repelled me.

Despite the Scopolamine, I considered my options in a fleeting moment.

Mitch had just reminded me that I was “an enemy” of the most powerful country in the world, on whose soil I now stood (non-consensually.) I was surrounded by Special Forces of the US Military, excellent marksmen, and highly skilled in killing and covert operations. Mitch held a silenced handgun. They also had my wallet with my ID, credits cards, and cash – on Scopolamine I could not run very well and had no free will. I did not even know where I was. And I had insider knowledge of this extra-judicial murder setup.

If I tried to run away, or simply fell to the ground and refused to act, there was a high likelihood I would be killed, along with the target, and the scene arranged to look like a murder-suicide or the bodies simply disposed of. These US Special Forces would be heroes for killing me since Mitch had sworn me an Enemy of the People of the USA.

I would have been too much of a liability to keep alive if I did not perform.

My only chance of survival was to be valuable enough to keep alive.

"Go, Matthew, go now!" The target was approaching at a jog from about forty yards away.

My Alpha alter was full of conditioned rage as I started running towards the target from their two o'clock position. The target did not seem to notice at first and kept on running as my Alpha was closing in at their three o'clock position and accelerated to a full-out run for the last ten yards, closing in from the target's four o'clock position.

The target turned, looking surprised and very afraid as they were knocked to the ground with full force rolled onto their back. I followed the instructions from the 2005 hypnotic programming in the van, including no crossed thumbs, and the target stopped struggling, and was unconscious within twenty seconds.

After another minute or two, Mitch walked quickly over and after scanning both directions, said in an urgent tone, "Matthew, stop! It's over. Come to the van now. We have to leave!"

I got up and had one last look at the target. They were not moving at all. As I approached the van tears streamed down my face and I shouted at Mitch, "There, are you happy now!!"

"I'm not happy, I'm just doing my job," Mitch said in a subdued voice.

In the years of non-consensual drugging, torture, mind-control, abductions, and worse before and after that event, Mitch never expressed a guilty emotion once, except that day. He knew what he had done was wrong.

I got in the van and sat on the second row bench again. From behind, the assisting officer injected me again on the left arm below the shoulder. I lost consciousness and awoke some hours later, in a different van in front of my house.

It was early morning perhaps an hour or two after sunrise. Mitch's fellow JTF officers were present, but not Mitch.

"Where is Mitch?" I asked.

"He's busy now, it's just us," the officer said.

The leader of this group of more junior officers acted drunk with power. "We want you to kill that old lady two houses over there," he said pointing east.

“What? That’s Mrs. Porter’s house, she’s a friend!” I said. “I will not!”

I was no longer dissociated, no longer hypnotized, and most of the Scopolamine had worn off. I was shocked and horrified they would suggest such a thing.

“OK, Matthew, now what are you going to say to your relative about why you have been out all night?” the lead officer asked. My wife and son were on vacation, and a close relative was staying with us.

“I will tell him: I was out at Ian’s all night playing with computers,” I said.

“Will he believe you?” the officer asked.

“Yes, I have stayed out really late at Ian’s playing with computers lots of times,” I replied.

“OK, tell him that then. Now Matthew, I want you to go to go bed and sleep the whole day,” the officer said.

“Ok, but shouldn’t I call work?” I asked.

“No, Matthew, do not call work. They will know you are sick. Do NOT call.” They let me get out of the van, and I didn’t look back.

I walked up to the door and discovered my keys and wallet were back in my possession. I unlocked the door and stepped inside. My close relative was pale, and looked very concerned, as if he had not slept much. “Matthew, where were you last night? Were you at Ian’s?”

“Yes, I was at Ian’s playing with computers and it was really late so I stayed over, and I didn’t want to call and wake you,” I said flatly.

“That’s what I thought,” he said, looking at me with concern. “Are you sick?”

“Yes, I feel sick, I’m going to bed,” I said. I must have looked sick after coming down a high-dose of injected Scopolamine, knocked out with some other drug twice, abducted across international boundaries.

I went upstairs and slept immediately. I awoke once or twice during the afternoon and evening to use the washroom, and drink some water. I don’t recall eating. I only got out of the bed the following morning when my alarm went off. The Scopolamine and other drugs had fully worn off. I had no memory of what had happened.

I got ready for work, had coffee, ate some breakfast, walked to the subway and got on. I arrived at work, sat in my pod seat, and started logging into my computer. My team lead, who sat to my left, turned to face me angrily. “Matthew, next time you are going to be away for a day, at least send me an email!”

I had no memory of missing a day of work, as far as I was knew the previous day I had been at work programming.

I could tell from his anger that I should just play along. “Ah, OK,” I said.

Normally I would have said “Sorry,” but I did not want to admit to something that as far as I knew was not true.

I was missing time.

---

[25] Traditional Voodoo employed Scopolamine. When a person was found to be very disruptive to the community perhaps a rapist or murderer, the medicine man of the community would dose them with Scopolamine, specifically a dust of the dried plant, which can be easily blown into someone’s face for immediate effect as it lands on the mucous membranes of the eyes, nose, mouth and throat. The victim would immediately lose all free will power. Their breathing would become shallow and infrequent causing them to lose consciousness and appear dead. They would be placed in a coffin and buried in front of family and friends. In the early morning hours the coffin would be dug up and the living person inside would be sent off to another island, given a daily dose of Scopolamine and kept as a slave until their death.

In Medellin Columbia in 2013, 50% of Emergency room admissions were due to Scopolamine. It’s a favourite way of getting tourists to be mind-controlled to go the nearest Automated Teller machine and withdrawal their limit and hand it over to the criminal who dosed them.

[26] In a 2015 Oct home invasion Mitch claims Guantanamo Bay was a threat only. He said he would have taken me to the USA. He’s a spy so I don’t think that’s necessarily true.

CHAPTER 19*:* 2009 Q3 – Penance from a Patriot

“The only difference between the Republican and Democratic parties is the velocities by which their knees hit the floor when the corporations knock on their door. That’s the only difference.” – Ralph Nader

One year later, I had absolutely no recall of being exercised in the USA in 2008. I was still trying to reach Stage III of recovery from PTSD, and martial arts were part of that. Having recalled the violent 2005, 2007 events, I wanted to be able to protect myself.

I had studied Asian martial arts before, as a novice. I earned the first belt in three martial arts. But that was years ago. With none of those arts would I have been able to handle five mostly armed officers of the 2005 van interrogation, or the five men involved in the 2007 snatch-and-grab with forced electroshock in a van.

On January 2 of 2009, I decided to study the latest of the Chinese martial arts, developed only 500 years ago. The special-operations forces of several countries are trained in this very effective Kung Fu style, as was Bruce Lee. Sunny Tang, the proprietor of the studio had actually trained with Bruce Lee in his youth in Hong Kong. I had been training for about six months when one winter morning I was uncharacteristically ten minutes late for class.

When I arrived, I immediately noticed there were two new, middle aged men who appeared 'four square' like officers with the short haircuts, and appropriate physique and general attitude. They were training together.

The senior student instructor of that day also had an officer-like appearance himself. When I arrived he broke the two new men apart and assigned me to one of the new men as my training partner, while pairing his officer-looking friend with someone else.

I thought I recognized Red by his red complexion, acne scarring, intense eyes, 6’ height, and developed chest, with very little fat at about 180 pounds. His nose and chin were the same as Red’s. His cheekbones were slightly wider than I remembered from 2005. In the four years since I last seen Red, he looked to have aged about ten years. I was not positive it was Red only because it was so out of context and it would be risky for Red to be there.

The teacher had us start a training drill.

I asked my partner, “When did you start training?”

“Today, I’m just here with my friend to try it out.” We were starting a basic hand-to-hand combat training exercise in which one of the pair forward punched as he marched, and the other back stepped and blocked with a 'Pak-so' (a simultaneous block and punch.) When we reached the end of the mat area, we would reverse roles and return from the other direction.

Red was not performing the complicated footwork properly. I started instructing him, but surprisingly the student teacher said, “No, they don't need to learn the footwork”. That was unprecedented as the basic drills were not negotiable; there is only one way to do them. We resumed and when Red and I reached the edge of the training mat and proceeded to switch roles, Red held his hand up like a target and said, “Hit me!”

I was familiar enough with Wing Chun to know that this holding up the open fist as a target and saying, “Hit me!” was not part of the training. It was from Western boxing. The student teacher did not correct Red, which was also strange. I ignored Red’s request.

He did it again when next we reached the end of the Gym. This varying from the training was unprecedented in the six months I had trained, and the presence of what looked like Red made me doubly flabbergasted and stressed. Again I ignored him.

I was not sure what was going on, but I became increasingly agitated as Red said repeatedly, “Hit me!” Perhaps the fact that I was facing one of my torturers was starting to sink in.

Finally on the third or fourth pass I could take it no more. I wound up all my energy and made to punch Red’s open hand as hard as possible. The student instructor, as if expecting trouble, lunged forward to intervene and shouted, “Noooo!” but it was too late. I punched Red's hand, as hard as I could.

Red paused and shook his hand. “Ouch, that hurts!” Then he stepped back from me and said, “Good, now we're even!”

Then he stepped even further back, perhaps expecting an attack. I froze, realizing now it had to be Red, but unable to process that.

The student instructor then paired Red and me with different partners.

I had learned from a Canadian Broadcasting Corporation (CBC) documentary that by the age of 40, almost all JTF2 members are retired from the unit due to its extreme physical requirements. Red had appeared 38 or 39 years old in the 2005 van interrogation. This was four years later so he was definitely over 40 and likely out of JTF2. His purposeful visit to me was risky, as there is no certainty how a 'former target' might respond. Had I lost control and an incident happened, that went public, he could have been in trouble with the DND. Bringing a friend along was a good idea.

I believe that Red's conscience had suffered dearly for his participation in my torture. He needed me to punch him to satisfy his conscience.

That Red had aged so much in the intervening four years, and that he felt so compelled to have me hit him showed he was a man of conscience. I could tell that the end of the interrogation in November 2005 that Red was disgusted with the event, and his involvement, he had a conscience.

For example he had admonished Burly (RCMP) for groping me several times, he had apologized after watching me being forced to drink my own vomit, and he started using divisive “us or theirs” language when asking which Dept. of Mines web site (US or Canada) that I had visited. Finally it was Red who refused to let Mitch take me to Guantanamo Bay after I had answered the question about Tyranium with too much knowledge for Mitch’s comfort.

For these reasons, I forgive Red.

CHAPTER 20: 2010 Q1 - Internet Posts Response: Bumper lock Surveillance

"Our lives begin to end the day we become silent about things that matter"--Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr., Civil Rights Leader

I felt I owed it to my countrymen and countrywomen to tell them about the perilous state of Canadian democracy and sovereignty regarding the 2005, 2007 events. I had not yet recalled the 2008 test in the US.

But I felt very afraid to continue working on my book. Since I had not yet recalled the forced electroshock, and the ominous question about what side of the bed I slept on, I did not know why I was afraid. My conscious mind did not remember these threats.

I reasoned that it would be safer if I found a sympathetic on line community, and started posting my story there.

By telling my story online I could reach the public to expose the MK-ULTRA mind-control programming, and get interest in the developing book. I found rabble.ca was a good community for this. I posted in a Babble forum/topic I created:

> **Torture in Canada**
>
> "January 31, 2010 – 2:46 am
>
> This topic will address the issue of human rights in Canada, specifically crimes by the state against its citizens, both pre-9/11, and post 9/11, from a first person perspective. I will be drawing from an existing manuscript, and writing new material. This all tells of my unfortunate intimate experience with this topic."

By February 7, 2010 I had posted details of the torture-interrogation (2005) with the forced confession dialog. I also posted an earlier version of the psychiatrist's letter attesting that I had gone through drug trials to test for a delusional disorder and none was found (see Preface for last version.)

There was a regular group of rabble.ca readers who were receptive to the story. Initial responses were positive with one exception, someone who admitted he was a reserve Canadian Forces (CF) officer. He repeatedly attacked my postings. I defended myself and pointed out that as a CF officer, he owed it to his country to defend the truth about how its laws are being broken.

Others started posting defenses of my story. Then something happened. As I started posting each day from the book, I started to feel better, and my unconscious mind decided it was time to remember more.

I started to remember the mind-control programming for the first time. On March 2, 2010 at 8:18 pm I posted my first recollections of the self-termination program. The posting began with “Oh God, Oh God, Oh God!!!” This was just so depraved, despicable and terrifying. I posted the memories as they came in.

March 21, 2010: I remembered and posted program #2: to carry out any instruction by my controller “Larry Smith” including murder, and how I was to do it. The rabble.ca/babble on line community was hooked. By this point my thread “Torture in Canada - Part 3” was the number one most frequently viewed thread on rabble.ca's “babble forum”. It also had among the highest viewings to postings ratio.

View History Bookmarks Tools Help
http://rabble.ca/babble/current-events/national-news
Started Most Visited Latest BBC Headi...
Search Save Video Translate Stumble! Facebook
profs condemn fre... Auto Dealer Killer "Set off... Torture in Canada - Part 3... Internet Web Mail - Read ... national news | rabble.ca
babble
Learn More
Read it watch it live it discuss it.
post new forum topic
mark all topics read
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 ... next › last »

babble is rabble.ca's discussion board but it's much more than that: it's an online community for folks who just won't shut up. It's a place to tell each other — and the world — what's up with our work and campaigns.

Topic	Replies	Views	Created	Last reply
Regina profs condemn free tuition program for children of dead soldiers	64	1355	by Unionist Mar 25 2010 - 1:14am	by PrivacyRules 48 sec ago
Free Trade with Colombia	78	1286	by jeff house Jul 24 2007 - 9:04am	by PrivacyRules 11 min 32 sec ago
Torture in Canada - Part 3	55	1570	by PrivacyRules Mar 3 2010 - 8:39am	by PrivacyRules 2 hours 58 min ago
New head of CSIS: Stop treating terrorists as "romantic revolutionaries"	50	1268	by N.Beltov Oct 29 2009 - 5:09pm	by PrivacyRules 2 hours 59 min ago

At about this time, specifically after writing the actual text of the post-hypnotic suggestions or ‘mind-control’, I noticed I was being followed.

It started as intimidation. My on line postings revealed more and more about what the RCMP, JTF and JTF-2 had done. I had become emboldened, and the court of public opinion in the online community was starting to turn my way. The lone resisting CF officer now was supporting my posts and me.

GMC Suburban Intimidation

March 24, 2010: I stepped out on my front porch with the dog. A Black GMC Suburban was waiting at the corner and suddenly accelerated full throttle. It 'burned rubber' for about ten feet, the engine roared as it sped past me and continued roaring until it stopped at a stop sign.

The driver's side window was tinted as dark as the back and rear side windows. This tinting is not legal in Ontario as a police officer must be able to see inside well enough to recognize a face. I had seen several such over-tinted GM Suburbans circling around the US Consulate on University Avenue when I marched with other activists during the G7 meetings in Toronto about twenty-five years ago.

After stopping at the stop sign, the driver continued at full throttle for the next block and came to a halt at Yonge Street. For eight years I had been living with my family in a quiet, upper middle class neighbourhood, which has the lowest rate of violent crime in Canada. This had never happened before.

Bumperlock Surveillance

The rabble.ca babble community posted supportive messages, which said in effect “They're only trying to intimidate you.” I thought intimidation was something I could live with. At this point, I had not yet recalled the question in the van, “What side of the bed do you sleep on, inside or outside?” I didn't yet recall that they had hinted they were prepared to kill me, perhaps if I went public.

Then something frightening started. I noticed I was being followed regularly. I would see the same face in a car that followed me across the city at times. There were at least three different people and as many cars involved. One tail was a middle-aged woman (wearing what looked to be a blonde wig) with large sunglasses, who followed me to the Toronto Star building at 1 Yonge Street, but turned off one block before I got there. At one point a Liberian diplomatic, long, black Cadillac was following me across the city complete with a little Liberian flag waving from a tiny mast.

I did a 'find the tail' manoeuvre known as a Surveillance Detection Route (SDR). I turned into a side street then quickly changed direction, turned my car around and waited parked around the corner. The blond women looked aghast as she rounded the corner and saw me waiting for her.

At one point I was on a highway and I noticed four cars were boxing me in. I had been driving since I was sixteen years old, and was skilled enough to manoeuvre aggressively to escape. I ended up behind a Google camera car and my tails disappeared suddenly. I continued following the Google camera car for another half hour.

The final straw came on April 12, 2010. I was driving on a small street with a speed limit of 40 KM/hour when a Range Rover suddenly pulled out of a street parking spot and nearly clipped my bumper. The car behind me honked furiously. The late model Range Rover had a blue 'Emergency' sticker on the driver's side windshield (see below). The driver was a middle-aged man with what looked like a wig of curly hair and large sunglasses.

I did something I'd never done before, or since. I was so certain this man was tailing me that when I stopped at the next red stop light, I jumped out onto the road. With my driver's door swung open, I knelt down on one knee and snapped a picture of the driver and car. I had been carrying a camera for the past few weeks, and I intended to at least try and record the overt surveillance. But I was wearing a knee length black leather coat, and to reach the camera, I had to reach into my long coat. It seems the driver of the Range Rover thought I was pulling out a gun.

I got back in to the car and left. I was panicked. I took a day off work, and followed a trail of recommendations from different security storeowners. I told them my life was in danger, and I needed the best counter-surveillance technology available. These vendors could have sold me equipment but they believed my situation was serious and so they recommended a man said to be among the best counter surveillance experts in Ontario, if not Canada.

Sean D. of Spy Toped[27] was a very tall and heavy man. He boasted of having high profile clients like Conrad B., and claimed to have been interviewed in a BBC documentary on security and counter-surveillance. This Canadian 'expert' in counter-surveillance examined my photo of the follower, and reported, "Oh no, you have real trouble… he looks like Mxxxxx." He added, "They use 800 MHz for their radios."

Around the world, the "dirty work" of surveillance, control, and assassination is contracted out by allied intelligence agencies. The home-grown agencies cannot be caught illegally monitoring, intimidating, or doing worse to their citizens.

There is a large array of cellular-frequency antennas near Ottawa pointed towards nearby US cities to monitor their cell phone traffic. The Americans have similar arrays of antennas that point at nearby Canadian cities. In this way they exchange the cell phone traffic so they can monitor communications without a warrant, and without technically breaking laws.

Since Bumperlock Level 5 surveillance can easily lead to an encounter with police, it is especially suitable to contracting out to a foreign intelligence agency.

Intelligence agencies contract out everything from overt surveillance to assassination. If the USA were caught running Level 5 Bumperlock Surveillance, or even assassinating a citizen of their closest ally, it would be a public relations disaster.

This is a textbook case where contracting out to another foreign, friendly intelligence agency would offer the lowest risk. The Mxxxxx have a worldwide reputation as meticulous, if ruthless, operators. So Sean's assessment of the threat I faced as 'something serious' was believable.

On April 13, 2010 I posted the following pictures of the pursuer on rabble.

www.hansacanada.com
AHFL 799

In the first picture, notice the driver's window is half rolled down. In the enlargement (2nd picture) notice the 'Emergency' blue sticker to lessen the chance of being pulled over by police. Also notice in the middle right what looks to be the end of the front barrel of a gun pointed towards the camera, but raised slightly to left.

He must have thought it was not a camera that I was pulling out of my knee length black leather coat. It may have been he just wished to scare me, which would fit in with Level 5 Bumperlock surveillance.

Posting these pictures on line (they have since been deleted) at rabble.ca within 24 hours had some impact. I cried foul in a posting and wrote a pleading letter to Canadian politicians including PM Harper, and journalists. I telephoned CSIS and said there would be a question in the House of Commons in one week's time if they didn't get the pursuers off their mark[28]. The female CSIS agent repeated my threat in a mocking tone and referred me to local police.

Within 48 hours of the posting, the same man appeared in a vehicle going the opposite direction instead of following me. He had ditched the expensive Range Rover, a picture of which with plate I had posted. This time he drove an old van.

He was still wearing the ridiculous wig and sunglasses, and after flashing his lights several times to get my attention, he emphatically waved his right arm in a sweeping motion away, above the dashboard, and mouthed the word "OFF" with each sweeping gesture. But the surveillance was not totally off, just made less obvious, as I was to find out.

The day after the Range Rover incident, Sean of Spy Toped identified the gunman in the photo as appearing to be Mxxxxx, the Ixxxxxx Institute of Special Operations and Intelligence. They are the most feared assassins in the world. He told me, "You have big trouble." Sean then sold me the most expensive item he had in his store, a $4,300 bug sweep device called the CPM-800. In hindsight what I needed was a $600 bulletproof vest and a $100 car camera.

I discussed with my wife a plan to get protective custody from the police. First I called my best friend Ian to drive us to his apartment. From there I called the police. My friend refused to have the police come into his apartment, so my wife and I waited out front. It was getting dark.

When the police arrived, they were quite perplexed. They knew nothing of my story. They did not know how to spell Mxxxxx. The Toronto Police 42 Division officers separated my wife and me. The female officer interviewed my wife, and the male officer interviewed me.

For over ten minutes I pleaded for protective custody. The officer explained protective custody was difficult to arrange, and would take days. I asked if I could stay in the police station until then. The officer said no. The officer said that the quickest way to be protected would be to get into a locked hospital ward.

As they spoke I noticed a van parked one block south on Poplar Plains

Road; we were on the sidewalk on the East side of Poplar Plains just a few addresses South of St. Clair Avenue. The van had its lights on and was not moving. As I was explaining the danger I was in, the van slowly started moving towards us.

I directed the officer's attention to the van, which was slowly creeping towards us and was less than a half block away. The officer said, “Could that be one of them?”

“Yes,” I said. The officer held his right hand above his hip holster, as officers do when they feel threatened.

[I later learned from an article at stratfor.com that the hostile surveillance I experienced matched the definition of Level 5 ‘Bumperlock’ surveillance. This is the highest on the 1-5 surveillance hostility scale. It is designed to make a target think they are going to be murdered so they will seek sanctuary in a locked hospital ward and discredit themselves.].

Now the van slowly drove by, its markings indicating it was an ambulance. The passenger side occupant opened his arms in a welcoming gesture as if to say, “Do you want us to take him?” The police officer and I just stared. The 42-division officer looked at the license plate and commented, “That is an out-of-province ambulance.”

Out of province ambulances do not have jurisdiction to troll the streets of Toronto looking for people to pick up.

Given the appearance of the vehicle and its passenger, the surveillance from one block away, the slow drive-by, the gesture of offering to take me, and the fact that this was an “out of province” ambulance, it seemed suspicious. A medical cover pattern emerges; the pursuer with a gun had a medical emergency sticker on his Range Rover. Now an ambulance was part of the operation that was cruising by slow and gesturing to offer their services to take me to the hospital.

I had never been admitted into a Psychiatric hospital, or the Psychiatric ward of a hospital. I knew that self-admitting into the locked ward of a hospital might strain my credibility, but given the alternative of possible death, it was the lesser evil. I also realized that straining my believability by self-admitting to a locked ward might make me less threatening to JTF, CICA or whoever had hired the pursuer with the gun in the Range Rover.

Once I agreed, the female 42 division Toronto Police officer demanded my license plate number, even though my car was not present, nor involved. Before letting me into the back of the police cruiser they insisted I wear handcuffs, but the officer said I was lucky as usually those in the back had their hands cuffed *and* chained to the floor of the car.

During the admissions process at Centre for Addiction and Mental Health (CAMH), I was alone in a room with a female doctor wearing a stethoscope who was giving me a physical examination. I found myself staring at the young doctor's stethoscope dangling around her neck.

I felt myself start to fall into a trance. For the first time I recalled the third mind control program and felt a compulsion to harm the woman doctor. I was horrified and demanded that the security guard in the hallway be called in. I reported the third post-hypnotic suggestion program exactly as recalled, and notes were hurriedly made in my medical chart. Never again in that hospital was I left alone with a doctor or nurse wearing a stethoscope.

I insisted on being treated with the third and final drug in the test for delusions by Dr. Colin M. Clozapine is among the very strongest of anti-psychotic medicines available. Dr. MacPherson said it was not necessary, but I wanted to prove my case. This was my third trial of an anti-psychotic drug to prove my recollections were not delusional, despite the fact I had never suffered delusions in my life. Clozapine was the big hammer.

I had agreed to these treatments because the head of the Psychological Trauma Unit at Mount Sinai Hospital, Dr. T., said no one would believe my story until I took the drugs. With each drug Dr. MacPherson would ramp up the dosage over weeks until I reached therapeutic range of each drug.

After about a month at the effective blood level of the drug, Dr. M. would question me about the 2005 van interrogation. If it were a delusional illness, the anti-psychotic would remove the delusion and the memories ought to be gone. My answers to these questions every time included full recall, and certainty of the details.

While I certainly felt safer during the stay in a locked ward, it did not affect my memory of the events of 2005, and 2007 one iota. The 2008 event was not yet remembered. Later in 2010 I would start to get the first flashbacks about the 2008 event.

Just to allay the doctor's concern that my beliefs might have been delusional, I stayed on Clozapine for a full six-month trial after being discharged. It was debilitating, as were the strong side effects.

Again, the drug made no difference with my recall and certainty of the earlier events, just as with the previous trials on two other powerful anti-psychotics. See the letter from the doctor at the end of the Preface.

Since I had voluntarily admitted myself into a Psychiatric hospital, my credibility was lessened and I was less of a threat to the opposition. I believe that any sane person would have done the same thing under the observable threat I was under, knowing it would take the Toronto Police days to arrange for protective custody if they did at all.

I noted no obvious surveillance or tails once I came home from the hospital in the early summer of 2010.

September 20, 2010 at 17:45 on rabble.ca, I posted the 2006 telephone recording of the Service Canada employee Julie-Ann G. reporting that the plate 250002 from the van in 2005 had been identified by the RCMP as belonging to a military vehicle.

On the same day at 18:02 Rabble.ca moderators "catchxxx" and "mayxx" froze my active (open) thread, and disabled my account. In private messages it was explained that I had compromised the identity of a government employee, and that this violated a privacy policy of Rabble.

Apparently Rabble editors weighed a government employee's right to privacy as more important than a citizen's right to post part of a voice telephone recording with a government employee as supporting evidence of a federal torture-based interrogation on Canadian soil in 2005.

I had already posted my real name on Rabble in the same thread, in an earlier effort to increase my safety. Therefore I negotiated with Rabble to have my entire five threads removed. This was done within a few days. One false start thread remains.

In October 2010, for the first time I sent an email to a journalist. In the email I mentioned Mitch (then known to me only as "Blondie") and gave a description of him. About forty-five minutes later, I stepped out onto my front porch and was about to walk my dog east on Montgomery.

Mitch suddenly drove by from the west to the east, very slowly, in a Cadillac. He smiled at me as he went by. The hair rose on my neck. This seemed to confirm what Mitch had promised in the Nov 2005 van torture-interrogation and mind-control event, that I would be under surveillance forever: physical surveillance, not just phone and Internet. Not only that, but this event again indicated Mitch was reading my email in near real-time[29].

Since the RCMP would have the wiretap, this was the first indication they were sharing the intercept with the Joint Task Force in real time. The US Consulate on University Avenue is about 15-20 minutes by car in non-rush hour traffic, and logically where the JTF would reside. I would later confirm the US Consulate is where Mitch worked. I ceased further contact with journalists for a time after.

---

[27] Company name obscured

[28] The gun was almost certainly pulled in reaction to a ‘false positive’ perception of a threat.

[29] In the 2015 Oct home invasion, Mitch asserts this was not him, and I had a false positive id of him

CHAPTER 21: 2014 Jun 21 – Scopolamine Aerosol Fog Weapons Test

“Darkness cannot drive out darkness: only light can do that. Hate cannot drive out hate: only love can do that” - Martin Luther King, Jr.

Over the next four years, I repaired my career. First I worked at an aircraft point-of-sale system vendor for six months on salary. I had a great manager, and established myself as a significant contributor in complex systems analysis, design and programming.

I resigned to take a lucrative contract with the Foreign Exchange department of the computer systems organization of a major Canadian bank. After only a month or two I was promoted to researching a new project, and after prototyping parts, I assisted in writing the requirements and design of the new system with others. Then I team-led the delivery. It was a success. That took me to end of 2012. In 2013 I consulted to a cellular telephone company for part of the year.

I took a break to return to my book project. I also decided to help a city councillor candidate who was also a neighbour. On June 19, 2014, I completed the audio-visual work for councillor candidate’s launch party. This lawyer, newspaper columnist, and neighbour impressed me. She had done advocacy work on relations between the police and marginalized communities. It was not my best work. The taping did not go perfectly as the camera shut off right in the middle of the campaign speech.

I had just read “The Art of War,” by Sun Tzu. In this over one-thousand-year-old classic book on military strategy, he writes something like: “If you don’t know where your enemies are, you must flush them out by whatever trickery will work.”

I felt confident that I had rebuilt my career and life after the terribly intimidating Bumper-lock surveillance in 2010, which happened after I had posted word-for-word the post-hypnotic, sleeper assassin programs on rabble.ca. The Bumperlock surveillance had driven me into the hospital for safety as I thought I was going to be murdered, the exact intention of this type of surveillance.

In short, after four years, I was feeling a bit cocky as I felt I had recovered my life. I had just completed a major contract for a bank’s capital markets department where I led the architecture, design and delivery of a successful million-dollar project.

I wanted to follow Sun Tzu's advice. I wanted to know how much I was still being targeted in order to know where I stood. I did a "bait test." I pointed my browser to the Russian Consulate web site in Toronto, and navigated to "hours of operation" at 10 PM on June 20. If I were still under surveillance (as they said I would be in 2005), the reaction of the listeners (RCMP, JTF) would indicate how much I was being targeted.

The next morning June 21, the day was briefly normal. My wife arose early and left for work. We had slightly different schedules and I remained asleep in the second floor bedroom of our semi-detached home three blocks from the geographical centre of Canada's largest city. The bedroom faced Montgomery Avenue, a small residential street that ironically was the site of Canada's first rebellion in 1837. The bedroom window was open only a few inches.

I awoke to a male voice: "Matthew, wake up!" Again the voice commanded, "Matthew, get up!" The voice continued, "Get up and walk the dog, Matthew!" These phrases were repeated several times at regular volume, not shouted. The voice sounded familiar. I sat up and looked out the window. No one was on the sidewalk on either side of the street, nor was anyone visible sitting in a parked car.

The voice continued: "Matthew, wake up! Walk the dog." It sounded like Mitch. I knew immediately something was amiss. It was impossible for a soft-spoken voice to enter through the street facing window and be so clearly audible, doubly so since there was no one standing on the street outside. I pulled on my clothes, leashed the dog, and stepped outside to investigate. It was 7:00 AM. I turned left (east) on the public sidewalk and walked towards the public green area in front of Montgomery Apartments only 80 meters away so my dog could do his business.

At about 75 meters I reached the Montgomery Apartments street driveway on the North side of the street. These are rare, quaint, low-rise apartments in a neighbourhood of single-family dwellings and high-rises. I crossed the driveway and continued walking on the public sidewalk.

There was a three-meter area of grass, and then a private sidewalk that ran alongside a parking lot, and led north to the Montgomery Apartments entrance. On one side was a dense hedge, about four feet high and three feet wide and twenty feet long (oriented north-south). Cody, our nine year old family Golden Retriever, sniffed at the hedge and pulled at his leash to investigate a curious scent. I pulled him back towards the public sidewalk and around the hedge to the public lawn with trees on one side.

As I passed the hedge the same voice started again: “Matthew, this way!” I looked to where the voice came from. It was emanating from the middle of the hedge about three meters to the north. There was no room for a person to hide in that dense hedge, and no sign of anyone sitting when I scanned the top of the hedge. The voice abruptly jumped to a small, perfectly trimmed hedge, about three feet high and eight feet long, running East-West four meters north of the public sidewalk.

In the hundreds of times I had walked the dog in this area, I had never seen this perfectly trimmed hedge before. On the other side of this hedge was yet another parking lot for an adjacent high-rise apartment building.

In the previous week I had seen a round-faced, dark-haired man in his late twenties, with slightly heavy build, perhaps 5’11”, standing beside a van parked in the corner of that parking lot closest to where I now stood. The man had watched me and turned briefly to speak to someone inside the van as I walked by. He had grinned at me and his direct staring startled me because it was out of place. He seemed to enjoy intimidating me. The van was not marked as a service van, and the man was too well dressed to be a tradesman. I now realize this prior visit was to “scope out” the operation.

Behind the new, small, perfectly trimmed hedge was a van parked sideways to the parking lines, so it blocked the view of the area from the apartments to the North and East. It looked like the van I had seen in the week prior. Meanwhile the voice continued: “This way, Matthew, past the tree!”

The ground was uneven and rough with tree roots. I tentatively walked towards the voice. The leash tightened in my hand and Cody would go no further. I was drawn to the voice, but I did not know why. I dropped the leash. I walked to the tree and stopped. Seeing no one, and getting frustrated, I said, “Now what??!!”

“Behind the tree, Matthew. Come around behind the tree.”

To this day I regret and do not understand why I ignored the danger signs. Probably I had fallen into a trance, as it was Mitch, my controller’s voice I heard. I stepped around the tree and was now facing the newly appeared, small, perfectly trimmed hedge.

“Now what?!” I said in a loud voice, feeling frustrated.

A man appeared on his knees facing me, dressed in black. He had just performed a very rapid and well-executed, “lying-down to crouching-position” military roll. Crouched behind the small hedge he held a black hose with a fire-extinguisher type nozzle pointed at me. The black hose disappeared behind him and led to the van.

A white fog poured out of the nozzle as the man stood up, and the fog continued erupting. I was blinded, and froze. It billowed from the ground to above my head and I could not see anything but fog. I held my breath.

Gradually over about ten seconds the fog sunk to lower than my eyes.

I hoped it was simply a gardener spraying pesticide.

The man-in-black now attempted to step over the small hedge but his right boot went into the hedge. As he pulled at his boot the hedge started to roll forward. He shook his military boot to free it from the hedge.

A real hedge does not appear overnight. A real hedge does not roll forward along its length. The hedge was a fake, mounted on a board.

The military roll, the all-black clothes, military boots, and gas mask were proof enough. I had been purposefully lured with V2K, mind-controlled by hearing a certain voice, and fogged, and it had to be Mitch (JTF). This was an MK-ULTRA chemical weapons test.

Fog blasted all around me forming a cloud. I was holding my breath and feeling stunned. As the fog settled to below my eye level, I recognized Mitch by his body shape.

I said, sarcastically: "Thanks!"

Mitch stepped back from the fog area, back into the parking lot. He pulled off the gas mask from chin to over his head and responded, "Anytime, *Matthew*!" with heavy emphasis on my name, dripping with contempt. This was exactly how the Neumann character on the TV comedy “Seinfeld” used to greet Jerry with “Hello, *Jerry*!”

As I spoke I inhaled some of the aerosol. My eyes, nose, lips and throat burned and I turned to run. My legs became very heavy; I recognized this intoxication effect of Scopolamine from the 2008 USA event, which I had started remembering as flashbacks four years ago in mid-2010.

This was the first time I had been dosed by an aerosol fog of anything. I would later learn that NASA had developed an aerosol of Scopolamine in 2013 “for medical purposes.” I would argue they developed a chemical weapon for no good reason.

The intolerable risk of criminals spraying an aerosol into an innocent person’s face and them mind-controlling them to things against their interests had been ignored all to provide an alternate dosing technique for the limited medical uses of this deadly Nightshade plant family drug.

Since this was only a year after NASA announced its new product, I may have been a Guinea Pig tester for the US Military on the outdoor effectiveness of Scopolamine fog delivery. Would it work or would it kill the subject?

I had just said “Thanks” to Mitch and accidentally inhaled a bit of the fog. I literally could not breathe, almost as if my diaphragm was anesthetised. I could feel consciousness slipping. I knew I had only seconds before I was unconscious. I turned and jogged south towards the most public piece of grass nearby which was in front of Montgomery Apartments. Time slowed down.

Jumping the real hedge in front of Montgomery Apartments was not an option as my legs were so heavy and the hedge was tall. I reached the public sidewalk and skirted this hedge to the public grass on the other west side where I collapsed face down. I had covered the twenty-foot distance without taking a breath since my first inhale of the aerosol. I fell unconscious.

The next thing I felt was my lips and nose being licked by a long, floppy, wet tongue. I opened my eyes and took a breath. Cody, our Golden Retriever had revived me briefly by licking my lips and nose, as a mother dog does to her puppies at birth to get them to breathe. After one or two breaths I went unconscious again.

The next time I awoke, Cody was gone. I briefly raised my hand and waved for help saying, “I can’t breathe, I can’t breathe!” before I fell unconscious again.

The final time I awoke a man in his late twenties with dark hair was standing over me, videotaping me with his smart phone. “Have you been drinking?” he asked

“No,” I replied.

“What are you doing then?”

“I am walking my dog.”

“Where is your dog?”

“I don’t know.” I lifted my head and looked around. I sat up and shouted “Cody! Cody!”.

I saw Cody running towards me from a point about 2/3 of the way to our house and about 80 meters west. His leash was dragging behind him. The videotaping man narrated, “Here is the dog coming now, trailing his leash," as he aimed the camera at Cody running towards us. Cody was very happy to see me and licked my face and hands.

"Has this happened before?" the man asked.

"No," I said.

"You should go home and rest," the man said.

"Yes, I will go home and sleep now" I said compliantly. Intoxicated on Scopolamine one does whatever they are told. I grabbed the leash, stood up and led Cody home. Once inside I took off his leash and went straight to bed. Upon waking up a few hours later I had no memory of the event.

It took three days to start having flashbacks that started with being twigged every time I walked Cody by the site of the event. Within five days I had full recall. As with the other events I reported this one to the Toronto Police Services. They noted it was odd the person did not suggest I seek medical attention, or even call 9-1-1 for me. I agreed.

About a week or two later, Cody started limping. After a few days we were concerned and called the vet but since there was no obvious fracture it was deemed low priority and the appointment was set for about five days later. After another three days Cody stopped limping, and tragically we cancelled the appointment. We have since learned that dogs instinctually hide their injuries, and will adjust to not limp.

A few months later a large bump formed on his ankle. Tests were done and the vet announced he had bone cancer. An x-ray indicated Cody had a previous injury to his anklebone.

The vet said in front of another witness, “In this breed bone cancer starts in the knee not the ankle. This prior injury is where the inflammation started that caused the bone cancer. It looks about four or five months old.” That was in October. Four months would have been June when the Scopolamine Fog test occurred.

When Cody licked my lips and nose to get me to breathe, as I lay helpless on the grass after being gassed by the Scopolamine Fog, he interfered with the JTF’s MK-ULTRA chemical weapons test. They needed to test if the fog would kill me or not. Likely they want to use this fog on peaceful protesters. It looks like they hit him in the ankle with a metal rod or gun barrel so he would flee for his life, which he did. His thick fur coat had masked the resulting injury.

In the voice-to-skull (V2K) transmission that woke me up just before the test, I was instructed to walk the dog so they were expecting the dog’s presence and would have had a suitable weapon ready. No dog, especially a Golden Retriever, voluntarily leaves their owner unconscious, not breathing on the grass, especially after successfully reviving them once. Below is a photo of our shrine to Cody, a very loving a loyal Golden Retriever.

CHAPTER 22: 2014 Jul 9 – Poison Marker Weapons Test Trap

"Citizens of the democratic societies should undertake a course of intellectual self defense to protect themselves from manipulation and control, and to lay the basis for meaningful democracy." – Noam Chomsky, *Necessary Illusions: Thought Control in Democratic Societies*

I could have had American citizenship at 18 but I declined. My American lineage goes back to 1630 when the "John and Mary" arrived from Scotland, where my ancestor John P. came from the lowlands.

Once I recovered my trauma-dissociated memory of being gassed on Canadian soil by Special Forces of our closest ally, the country my parents were born in, I was shocked and degraded.

I felt I needed to do some symbolic act to regain my dignity.

On July 9, 2014 I performed twenty minutes of street theatre by playing loud rock music in my car with windows down while parked across the street from the back entrance of the US Consulate. A security guard pointed me out to another guard, and one of them went inside. Fifteen minutes later, two marked police cars drove slowly by but did not talk to me even though I was parked at a stop sign with engine running.

I drove home about five minutes later. Two watchers in different cars appeared on Montgomery Avenue. One was on Montgomery Avenue near the site of the Scopolamine Fog test; the other was in the parking lot near where the fake bush was laid out during the experiment. When I walked towards them with a walking stick (this is legal) they drove away.

An hour later there was a new car. An athletic looking man with a professionally calm but serious demeanour in a red car, seen in the video[30], had left his passenger side window all the way down, tempting me to poke my walking stick inside, which I would never do.

He would have grabbed and pulled the stick in, and with my arm within reach he would have swiped the poison marker pen on my skin. I read in the CIA invented this covert, lethal weapon for agents to build across enemy lines in the 1950s. The agent needs only a marker pen, some DMXX (a liquid that penetrates biological membranes immediately), and an indigenous plant or animal poison to mix it with.

In the video notice the poison-laden marker is held in his teeth, cap end first for a quick draw. There is no paper visible in the video. The agent lowers his arms once I pass by. Later that evening he jogged back and forth in front of my house in the pouring rain for a full hour, soaked, holding up an umbrella, just to demonstrate his athleticism and to intimidate.

One might ask “Why the exotic weapon?” MK-ULTRA has always had not just mind-control, but chemical, biological and radiological weapons experiments. Since the RCMP is supporting this work, there must be an agreement between Canada and the USA. It’s reasonable to assume that since mind-control experimentation is permitted, which involves torture and drugs, that they also allow weapons testing, as MK-ULTRA projects allowed in the past.

CICA is likely not allowed to overtly assassinate a test subject. They must instead test a fatal weapon on the test subject to adhere to the agreement. It is still an assassination, as the target is being murdered for political reasons, they have become a whistle blower. The poison in this particular pen was probably a new type. Thankfully I did not fall for the trap.

It turns out puffing one’s chest at Godzilla is not such a good idea.

In the January 2015 home invasion Mitch confirmed my analysis about the poison marker pen with: "You figured all that out huh?"

In a later home invasion not in this book timeline Mitch negotiated with me to change the Facebook post of the single-frame picture to non-public visibility, while I was torture-trauma dissociated and high-dosed on Scopolamine. He explained the clandestine officer in the red car could not work as long as his picture was publicly available according to ‘the rules’ of their employer.

---

[30] https://www.facebook.com/matthew.pauley99/videos/vb.100003146953870/627035507411342/?type=2&theater

CHAPTER 23: 2014 Q3 – Busting a US JTF Covert Operation

“The two most important days in your LIFE are the day you are BORN and the day you find out WHY.” – Mark Twain

A Mercedes Benz 2500 Sprinter, all black van appeared parked at the “perch” outside my house at about 9 PM. A perch is a counter-surveillance term describing the closest place where physical surveillance is run, as close as possible to your residence, or even your workplace. The most frequently used perch for watching me was on street parking on the north side of Montgomery Avenue, about two addresses east of my house.

I found this presence unnerving. Looking through the windshield I saw a three panel, fold-down divider behind the driver and passenger bucket seats blocking my view to the large rear of this two-ton van. I looked in the driver’s side window and saw a six-inch LCD color computer display with rows of numbers being updated in real time.

It would be foolish to have that computer display draining the battery if there were not officers in the rear of that van at that moment. I photographed the van, and the display. The photo of the display did not show the numbers legibly as the LCD display was specially designed so that off-angle viewing is distorted.

The van was parked under a streetlight. I know all my neighbours, and they know me as the guy that has knocked on their door giving out the resident’s association newsletter. Most neighbours know me personally. The houses were originally built in about 1929, so there are no garages out front like in the suburbs. The living rooms look out on to the street. The chances were good that I would not be shot by the US military on the street.

I decided this was a rare opportunity to make a statement that I would not tolerate a two-ton surveillance van full of Special Forces watching my house. I walked up to the five-foot wide sliding door facing the sidewalk. I wound up a back fist using my right arm and with significant force delivered the back fist strike into the center of the sliding door producing a loud “BANG!” that echoed off of the front of the nearest houses.

From inside the van I heard a “thud,” followed by a shout of “NOOO!!!” in what was remarkably similar to Mitch’s voice. I walked home.

My interpretation is that the tall JTF officer from the July 9 Assassination Trap event had pulled out his weapon and was about to leap outside and shoot me, but Mitch ordered him to stand down, knowing there was no imminent risk to justify it. Such an action would have terminated his MK-ULTRA Monarch research subject in Toronto that he had spent a lot of time and money on.

Then I went to my computer and looked up the number for the Canadian Security Intelligence Service (CSIS) to report a National Security Threat. I called and told them I had a van full of US Military Special Forces out front doing surveillance and that they were likely armed. I pointed out that they had set an Assassination Trap for me on July 9, and that I was a non-consensual MK-ULTRA test subject. They said the usual thing, "If you are in danger, contact your local police." The call lasted one minute or less.

By the time I returned to the front window, the van had pulled away. I have no doubt they heard every word of that phone call. Mission accomplished.

Twenty-four hours later, the motion-detector floodlight on my back deck was dead. Replacing the floodlights made no difference. I tested the circuitry with a multi-meter. The power to the light sockets was gone. Only the motion detector red LED was lit. Either this was an incredible coincidence, or sabotage payback by the JTF for causing their hearts to flutter when I hit their surveillance van and caused a loud "BANG" as they huddled in silent mode knowing I was just outside.

I posted to Facebook a quick summary of the sabotage and let the JTF know I will add the $69.95 + tax replacement cost of the motion-detector light to the millions of dollars I will be seeking in compensation someday.

That posting and the posting with the photo of the van, and the headliner mounted LCD display inside the van were all deleted, during a home invasion by Mitch a few months later, in January of 2015.

CHAPTER 24: 2015 Jan – Home Invasion-Search for a Double- Agent

“Peace cannot be kept by force; it can only be achieved by understanding” - Albert Einstein

My wife had left for work at about 7:00 AM, early as usual, on a winter morning, and I was asleep. I awoke to the sound of Mitch’s voice from behind me as I lay on my stomach with my face on my pillow facing away from him. “What, no alarm system, Matthew?”

“It was costing money each month, and we knew you’d get through it anyway.”

“You figured that out, huh?”

I heard the “SHHHHH” sound of a spray can and it was just enough to intoxicate me without knocking me unconscious. I recognized the cognitive blunting effects of Nightshade.

This was the first time I had been dosed by Scopolamine via an aerosol spray can. Given I had been a test subject back in June 2014, I may have been among the first test subjects for the aerosol spray can, too.

I had no free will now that I was intoxicated with Scopolamine.

Mitch asked, “Matthew, where is the alarm system central panel?”

“In the south bedroom closet.”

He left the bedroom and called out from the south bedroom: “Why are all the lights off?”

“Because it’s unplugged,” I yelled back.

“Come here and show me!”

I got up, walked in to the south bedroom, and pointed to the power bar where the alarm power adapter lay unplugged. “See -- we disconnected it a month ago to save money.”

He pulled out a smart phone and took a photograph of the alarm system panel that had the manufacturer name label on it. Satisfied, he led me back to the middle bedroom and told me to lie down.

I lay down on my stomach on the bed[31]. Mitch now had one knee in the middle of my back, and the other on the back of my arm on the elbow, which was painfully hyperextended into the soft mattress. “Ow, ow, ow!” I screamed.

"You're hurting me!!"

"I know I am hurting you," Mitch replied in an unemotional monotone voice.

"Ow, ow, stop!" I shouted. Thinking that he might value my Russian Martial Art training I shouted, "You'll screw up my training!"

"You won't let that happen!"

The excruciating pain continued and within one minute I dissociated.

"Matthew, you are a lucky man. You know those videos you have on your YouTube channel, the Russian Martial Art ones?"

"Yes," I replied in the compliant tone.

"I watched them all!" he said. "You are so fucking lucky to be training with him!"

"Yes, I know."

Now Mitch started to apply no-mark torture, using a joint manipulation.

"Oow!" I screamed in pain.

"Did your Russian trainer program you Matthew?"

"No, he did not."

Mitch applied pain again.

"Ahhhhh No!!"

"Come on, Matthew, what did he do when you told him about me?"

"Nothing, I told him only some of what I've posted on Facebook."

"What was his response?"

"He did not want to talk about it. If I talked more than five minutes, he would kick me out of his office."

"He's a smart man," said Mitch. "Is there a Russian accented voice in your head Matthew?" he demanded, as he applied more pain.

"No. That hurts!" I shouted.

He applied more pain, "Come on, Matthew, is there a Russian-accented controller in there?"

"No, I swear no."

He kept this up for about half a dozen times, using pain each time from joint-manipulations (elbow, shoulder, fingers) to ensure my compliance with a truthful answer. I would shout in pain. "No, stop!" Finally he stopped, satisfied I had not become a double-sleeper-agent.

"I have not seen your body in a few years, Matthew. Turn over so I can take a look, but before you do my face will be uncovered, but you will not see my face. Instead you will see a black region where my face is, you will not see my face, and you will not remember it," Mitch said. "Now turn over," he commanded.

I sleep wearing only my underwear and I turned over. Mitch's face lit up, "Wow, you're bigger than the last time I saw you," as he noticed what a year's worth of training can do. "Look at you!" he exclaimed noticing significant core, chest, shoulder and arm muscle development.

"Now sit up Matthew, I have a something special for you."

"What is it?" I asked as Mitch pulled out a needle from his knapsack.

"Its special, Matthew. It's called Adrenochrome. Have you heard of it?"

"I think I've heard of it," I said, although I recognized only the adreno part of the name.

"No, Matthew you've never heard of this," he said almost chuckling, knowing how rare a drug it is, and how eager a subject is to please the mind-controller. He knew I was stretching the truth.

As I sat on the edge of the bed, he grabbed my left arm, found a vein opposite my elbow, inserted the needle and pressed the plunger.

"Now turn over on your hands and knees."

I did as he said. In that moment, I remember exclaiming, "Oh my God!". This was unlike any drug I had ever experienced. There was a sudden mind-altering effect, not unlike a spiritual, 'in touch with the universe' type of feeling.

"You know what it's made from?" Mitch asked. "They make it from dead people, Matthew."

That was horrible news. I was speechless.

"I'm going to pull these down," Mitch said, as he slid my underpants off. Not since I was eight years old had been raped, then by a family 'friend'. Dissociated to the compliant 'sex slave' Beta alter, I had no ability to stop what Mitch was doing.

He said, "I can tell by the length of hair on your legs, that you've trimmed your back side hair. Did you do that for me?" he asked.

"No, that was for cleanliness," I responded, surprised he would expect me to predict the rape, and to wilfully make it easier by trimming the area.

As he started to enter me he said, "You're my Russian Beta." Mid-way through he was having trouble and asked, "Give me something to work with here. Can you flex your back muscles?" I flexed my back muscles and he accelerated.

When he was done he kissed me on an area where my back muscles were most pronounced, and then pulled out and said “I’ll be back in one second,” as he left for the bathroom down the hall.

In two minutes, I heard him say, “Nice bathroom.” The bathroom has a marble sink and floor tiles.

“My wife designed it,” I replied in the Beta alter. He wiped my backside once and took the tissue back to the bathroom and I heard a flush. Then Mitch returned and said, "You know if you tell anyone I will kill you, right?”

“Yah, I know that,” I replied.

Mitch stood over me, consulting notes on his smart phone. He had clearly read all of my Facebook postings.

“Matthew you wrote ‘Blondie is a SADIST’. You got the emphasis wrong, ‘I AM a sadist.”

“Right, OK.”

“Matthew, stop calling me Blondie in your writing, I don’t like it. Use Mitch as my first name.” He continued reading.

“Matthew, I am 5’11 inches tall, not 5’10.”

“OK,” I said.

“My eyes are Blue, not Blue-Green.”

“OK.”.

“Also, I am not from the Virginias, I’m from Oklahoma.”

“Oklahoma, really?”

“What’s that supposed to mean?” (Having grown up on the prairies I recognized his defensiveness about growing up in the mostly rural part of his country.)

“Nothing, it’s just that’s where my father did his graduate thesis with First Nations,” I clarified.

“Matthew, my friends say I look like Michael Phelps, the Olympic swimmer.” He must have wanted to be remembered correctly, to be famous?

Then he got really personal, “When is your son leaving to study abroad?”

“What does that matter?” I asked.

“Never mind, tell me when!”

“Around February 15,” I replied.

“But what is the exact date?”

"I am not certain, but it's within two days after that date."

"You don't even know when your son is leaving to study abroad?"

"I did not make the reservations, so I don't know the exact date."

Mitch persisted, "Never mind I'll find it myself, was the reservation on Quantas?"

"Yes, probably," I replied.

"Matthew, remember you wrote on Facebook you thought I lived in a condo?"

"Yes."

"I live in an apartment, Matthew," he said.

"Really?"

"Matthew, the military doesn't pay well."

"What part of town?" I asked tentatively.

After a pause he said, "In the Annex," an area in downtown Toronto adjacent to the University of Toronto and full of large, old, redbrick homes rented out mostly to students.

"I don't have the things that you have, Matthew, like a house, a family, good-paying job skills."

"That doesn't seem right," I replied.

"You know people think you're crazy wearing that bullet proof vest. Why do you think I'm going to kill you?"

"Last July you sent that tall JTF officer in a red car with a poison marker pen just after I scared away the two followers you sent after I played loud music outside the US Consulate."

He said, "You figured that all out huh?"

I had read online the CIA developed the poison pen in the 1950s so an agent could make a lethal weapon across enemy lines with a bit of DMXX and a local plant or animal poison.

"Why did you send an assassin?"

"Matthew, you were coming after my guys with a stick while wearing a bullet proof vest!"

"I was walking down the sidewalk with a walking stick, it's legal. I would not have hurt them."

"It was a Kung Fu stick!" Mitch exclaimed and repeated, "You were coming after my guys!"

He moved on.

"Matthew, why do you drive around often with your windows down playing loud rock music?"

"I don't do it all the time. I want people to notice and remember me in case my car is in a staged accident with a semi-tractor or blows up a block later."

"What you did on June 20 last year -- Matthew, you really surprised me with that."

The night before the Scopolamine Fog test of June 21, 2014, I had navigated my browser to the Russian Consulate web site, specifically to the 'Hours of Operation' link as a bait test. How they responded would indicate the extent of my targeting.

Being gassed with a fog of Scopolamine the following morning was a positive test result that my RCMP wiretap was being shared in real-time to the US Consulate, the third such positive bait test over the past decade since November 2005.

"Matthew, you know how you wrote on Facebook that you thought my father might have been German and came to America in 1945 in 'Project Paperclip'?"

"Yes," I replied.

"It was not my father, it was my Grandfather. Everything I have done to you, he did to me."

"I'm sorry to hear that," I replied in my Beta-conditioned sex-slave alter, which is compliant, and even sympathetic to the torturer-controller.

Mitch went on, "We both have blond hair and blue eyes. Your grandfather is German, Matthew. We could be brothers."

My grandfather was a lawyer and then for over twenty-five years a Judge in Antrim County, Michigan. Never in the times I visited, all as a child, did he ever make intolerant remarks. He was not a Nazi, only a staunch Republican.

"You're not my brother!"

"Matthew, I want you to write in your book that I was only five years old when my grandfather got his hands on me, maybe younger,"

"Oh, that's terrible, I'm sorry! Okay."

"I want you to contrast that with the age of Omar Khadr when he entered Guantanamo Bay at fifteen years old," he commanded, adding: "Everyone seems to have sympathy for that guy."

"OK," I replied.

"Matthew, I want you to use the term… no –" He paused, and then continued. “Yes, I want you to use the term ‘Geneva Conventions’ about me.”

“OK, I will.”

“Matthew, do you have problems with any major organs, like your heart for example?”

“No, well, I do have a slightly dialled Aorta.”

“What’s that exactly?” Mitch demanded.

“Nothing really, it’s just a connective tissue problem I have, similar to Marfan’s Syndrome, so I have a slightly dilated Aorta.”

“Dilated Aorta, huh….” Mitch said.[32]

Mitch was likely looking for health vulnerabilities to exploit for a plausibly deniable assassination. Many intelligence agencies have all manner of poisons to cause heart attacks for example. The drugs are designed not to show up on routine blood tests when a person is admitted for a fatal heart attack.

MK Experiment #1 – Mind-control subject to suicide

“Matthew, that anti-depressant you take is bad for you. You have to stop taking that. You have to get off that stuff.” He repeated this order with slightly different wording about six times. “Matthew, you have to get off of the anti-depressant, it’s bad for you.”

Then he said, “And Matthew, when things get bad and too much to take, just go down to one of those piers on Lake Ontario.”

“You mean like the one on Cherry Street by the sugar refinery?” I asked.

“Sure, that will do, just find the longest one you can, and just walk off the end, Matthew, and it will all end painlessly, there will be no more pain.”

“OK.”

“Matthew, how much time do you need to finish your book?”

“Two or three months,” I replied, not realizing I’d have so much PTSD illness following the home invasion that I’d be unable to write for months.

“I can give you six months Matthew, no more,” he answered.

“That’s plenty of time,” I responded, optimistically.

“One more thing, stay OFF Facebook!”

“OK,” I replied, but I knew this would be impossible; this was not a totalitarian country. We have free speech as a fundamental right.

“Matthew, on Facebook you wrote: ’Next time he tries to pick me up it will get messy.' What did you mean by that? Do you have a knife Matthew?"

I truthfully said, "No."

"Come on Matthew, do you have any knives?" he asked, applying torturous pain with a joint manipulation.

"No, I don't have any knives!"

He applied more pain.

"No, I swear I don't have a knife!"

"Come on, Matthew -- do you have any knives?"

"The only knives are in the kitchen."

"Then what did you mean by that statement?"

"I meant I would resist."

There was perhaps one second of silence as I willed myself to resist.

Even in my dissociated state, I remembered promising myself during martial arts study that I would resist next time Mitch attacked. I also remembered my martial arts study.

Suddenly I started violently rocking Mitch off my back, left, right, left, right. I felt a blunt hard object pressed against the back of my skull. I froze.

"Do you know what this is, Matthew?" he asked in a deadly serious tone.

"Yes, it's all shiny," I remembered him pulling out his all-chromed handgun in the 2005 event. "That's right, you remember! I ought to blow you away right now," Mitch said in a clipped, stressed voice.

There were a few terrifying moments of silence as Mitch decided his next move. Then he got off me, and I heard a "click" (safety on.) At first I thought it was the trigger but the bullet would be in my brain before I heard the click of the trigger. I heard the "SSSHHHHHHHH" sound of the spray can of Scopolamine behind me.

I turned my head back from the pillow and called out, "You Bastard!" not knowing if I would ever wake up.

MK Experiment #2 – Measure how long a subject can be mind-controlled to forget a threat to the health of his family

On awakening I was tortured until I dissociated into the Beta (compliant) alter once again.

Mitch said, "Come with me," as he led me downstairs to the kitchen. I was looking around. "No, come here and watch me." He held the microwave door open. He pulled out a penknife and peeled the corner of the polycarbonate film off the inside of the door glass.

As he started to peel it back with his fingers, I protested, “But that protects us from radiation!”

“No, trust me, you don’t need this,” and he continued peeling it off in one piece. “Trust me, you do not need this.” When he was done I offered to put the film in the recycling bin and he said, “No, I will take it,” to hide the evidence.

Then he said “Repeat after me: I will not remember this,” and I did. “Keep repeating that over and over.”

I kept repeating, “I will not remember this,” over and over, as I was high on Scopolamine, and torture-trauma dissociated.

Next Mitch led me to my computer on the dining room table. “Sit down, log in. Open your book,” he ordered and I opened the book in MS Word on my MacBook Pro. “Show me the chapter on the USA event.”

I did.

“Now delete it Matthew, all of that chapter.”

“Why?” I asked.

Just do it!”

I selected the entire chapter, and deleted it. “Now, let’s go through the other versions,” he said. “Choose two old versions to keep, and delete the rest,” he said.

I did.

“Now open each of the backup versions, and delete the same chapter,” he said. One by one I did.

“Show me the pictures on your phone,” Mitch said.

I pulled out my phone, entered the pass code, and choose the photo application. “Find the pictures you took of my Mercedes surveillance van last fall in front of your house,” he said. I pulled up the several photos of the van (the one I hit with a backfist.) “Do you have iPhone backups?”

“No,” I said, and added, “It was getting complicated as I retired an old machine and the iPhone refused to back up to a new one.”

“What no iPhone backups Matthew? Tisk, tisk...Delete the van pictures, Matthew.”

“But why?” I asked.

“It’s not allowed, Matthew, delete them,” he said.

I deleted them.

“What about the picture of the data display?” he said, knowing I had one since I had posted it on Facebook. I showed him the picture. “Delete that too,” he said.

“But the display writing is not visible!” I protested.

“It does not matter, delete it, Matthew,” and I did.

“Log on to Facebook. “Go back on your timeline to last fall where you posted the van pictures,” he ordered.

It took a few minutes of paging backwards but I found the post. “Delete the post, Matthew,” he ordered. I deleted it.

MK Experiment #3 – Mind-control subject to almost harm a loved one upon hearing an audio signal

He led me back upstairs to the bedroom and had me lie down. Then he said, “Matthew, repeat the following ten times over: ‘When I hear the air horn sounded twice below my bedroom window, I will squeeze my wife’s neck for ten seconds, and then let go.’

“You are not going to strangle her, just squeeze her neck for ten seconds, enough to interrupt her breathing,” he clarified. “Now repeat it!”

I did. He counted for me as I repeated it about ten times.

“Matthew, stop. Now I want you to listen to this air horn.” He pulled out an air horn from his bag.

“Listen, I’m only going to sound it once.”

He tooted a hand held air horn once so I would know the pitch and tone.

Within two weeks, in the middle of the night he sounded the air horn twice below my bedroom window. Upon barely grasping my wife's neck with one hand while in a hypnotic trance, I heard her shouting "Matthew!!" and I stopped, and fell back asleep.

She told me what happened in the morning. I believe the intent of this was not just an MK-ULTRA experiment, but to establish a pattern of homicidal violence so useful in a last resort. A staged murder-suicide would silence this whistle blower, and take out his family as collateral damage.

---

[31] As with any of the events involving dissociation, the order in which the events happened while dissociated is difficult to pin down and may be presented here slightly out of order.

[32] Confirmed with a Dr. N., a Doctor of Genetics at North York General Hospital in November 2015 that I do not have Marfan’s syndrome. A follow up heart ultrasound indicated this minor aorta dilation did not increase since it was first detected years ago. There is no risk.

CHAPTER 25: 2015 Jan - MK-ULTRA experiments and consequences

"If someone thinks that peace and love are just a cliche that must have been left behind in the 60s, that's a problem. Peace and love are eternal." - John Lennon

MK Experiment #4 – Mind control subject to keep doing a location-based behaviour and measure how long this overrides their fear of an introduced tailored-threat

Mitch's last item in the January home invasion was to start a 'community based' MK-ULTRA mind control experiment.

"Matthew, you know that gas station your buy your cigarettes at?"

"Yes," I replied.

"Say its name."

"Petro-Canada at Eglinton and Avenue Road."

"That's a good place to buy smokes, you should keep buying your cigarettes there."

"OK," I said. He repeated the instruction again *five* times in the next three minutes while I was intoxicated with Scopolamine, and torture-trauma dissociated to the passive Beta alter.

Starting near the end of the first week of January 2015 the Petro-Canada gas station and convenience store on the southeast corner of Eglinton and Avenue Road had their window shot at. It started with one hole.

I preferred buying my cigarettes there as I had come to know the owner. He was about my age. He grew up in Montreal. He was a conscientious small business owner, always trying to improve his large convenience store with an A&W Burger co-location and gas station. He was always giving tips to his staff on how to do their jobs better. He had shared with me his plans to open a video vending machine a few months earlier, and his intentions to make a seating area, which he did.

I was impressed with his drive and attention to his staff and business. When I saw a bullet hole in his window facing Eglinton, I was dumbfounded. This area has the lowest rate of violent crime in Toronto. There were no drug dealers hanging around on corners. It did not fit.

Since I bought one pack of cigarettes at a time, I would be in there almost every day. After a day or two another bullet hole appeared in the window. Then another appeared about a day later. There were nearly ten bullet holes when I sat down with the owner and asked him about it.

He pointed out he had met with the police several times, and he had a binder with plastic encased pages detailing steps to follow when it happened. He flipped through the pages to show me how prepared he was, how committed he was to helping the police find the shooter. I felt sorry for his staff, and him. Who would do such a thing to his employees and his business?

Then one day I used the self-service coffee bar to get a coffee, which faced the window. As I reached forward to drop an empty sugar packet into the hole in the counter that was for garbage I noticed a bullet sitting right beside it.

It was copper coloured, with a silver coloured scratch near the front running at an angle to the length axis for the first half of the bullet. The rounded front of the bullet was flattened about 3 mm perhaps from going through several panes of thick glass. I was stunned and a bit terrified.

Mitch knew I was afraid of guns as during a Scopolamine, torture-trauma dissociation event he interrogated me about things I was afraid of. My fear was from having a loaded, .22 calibre rifle, with safety-off, pointed at my heart by an unbalanced eleven-year-old in British Columbia when I was about eight years old. The boy said, “You know if I pull this trigger you are dead.”

This was a small calibre bullet. It may have been a bit larger than a .22 but it was not as big as a .38. I was shocked and fearful. I walked over to the counter where the young male cashier was serving a line-up three or four deep of people. I walked towards the cashier counter and said, “Come here and see this.”

I walked back to the coffee area, spread my hands wide above the counter, and said, “Look at this.” There were a few sugar and coffee creamer containers lying about with sugar spilled on the stainless steel countertop, and the bullet.

The cashier from ten feet away said, “Oh that, don’t worry I’ll clean that up in a few minutes,” and he turned away and returned to serving the waiting line up of about five customers waiting to buy gas, lottery tickets, and cigarettes. He must not have seen the small bullet. He must have thought

I was complaining about the counter not being in a clean state.

A few days later I met with the owner and explained finding the bullet, and the staff failing to understand what I was drawing their attention to. Since I reported seeing the bullet on the counter to the staff, the owner said the police were told I'd seen a bullet. The police never interviewed me.

I believe the purpose of Mitch's MK-ULTRA experiment #4 of the January home invasion was to frighten me with a threat matching my fear to measure how long before the mind-control to keep attending the location would wear-off once a tailored threat was introduced.

It was a significant coincidence that in the weeks following Mitch's programming to keep buying my cigarettes at the very same gas station and convenience store that these were repeatedly shot up by a professional that despite nearly ten shots never seemed to be caught.

I told the police that Mitch had almost certainly had been the shooter. The police are not trained to deal with Special Forces black ops. Without evidence they assume the complainant must be delusional and even a suspect. They did not even appear to even make a note.

MK Experiment #1 Result

In the weeks following I found myself compelled to stop taking the anti-depressant. I explained to my wife that I needed to go off it. She disagreed. I started ramping down the dosage anyway.

She insisted I meet with my family doctor. I told him:

"I want to stop taking my anti-depressant."

"Why?" my doctor asked.

"I don't know why exactly, I just think it's time I stopped," I said and then added, "Mitch said I should stop taking it."

Dr. B. is one of the few family doctors that have witnessed a MK-ULTRA Monarch mind-controlled patient under mind control.

He asked, "Mitch?"

"Yes, the American JTF mind-control guy I told you about that home invaded in January; the one who was in the 2005, 2007, 2008 events, etcetera."

He asked, "Does it occur to you that you're being mind-controlled right now?"

"No, I just think I need to stop it."

He did not approve but could not stop me.

The abrupt self-tapering off the medication that followed ended with me admitting myself, upon my wife's insistence, into a hospital for three days in late February, 2015 to get my dosage back up to the point where I felt normal again.

I conclude that an MK-ULTRA test subject in a strong marriage is less likely to fall prey to implanted self-destructive programs.

The doctor that admitted me, a Dr. M., said she had never heard of MK-ULTRA or Dr. Ewen Cameron. I pointed out Dr. Cameron was once head of the Canadian, American, and World Psychiatric Associations.

She did not flinch and said, "I have been 38 years a Psychiatrist, and I'm telling you mind-control does not exist. To think it does exist is delusional and I could have you formed (involuntarily committed) for that." It's scandalous that the Psychiatric profession keeps its own members in the dark about the professions involvement in MK-ULTRA mind-control research.

Instead I voluntarily entered the hospital for three days to resume my anti-depressant.

MK Experiment #2 Result

Regarding the RF-blocking film being removed from my microwave oven, it took nearly six months for the mind-control to wear off.

For some reason, nearly six months later, I bought a good microwave RF meter ($250) and measured about a 250% increase in microwave leakage compared to a neighbour's microwave with film intact, same brand, same wattage. Upon seeing our oven had been tampered with (no RF blocking film on inside glass of door), I started to recall what happened.

Since it was my wife who stood in front of the microwave oven in the six months following the tampering, it was she who absorbed the excessive microwave leakage. The short-term effects were nightmares, and some depression. Most disturbing was that Mitch was now targeted my family in his mind-control experiments. We don't know the long-term effects.

We unplugged the microwave but kept it as evidence. After reading about how the negative impacts of microwave ovens on the nutrition of food, we decided not to replace it.

The oak shelf in the kitchen that used to house the microwave has been converted to a shrine for Cody, the loyal Golden Retriever who was mortally injured for starting his owner breathing again.

MK Experiment #3 Result

My dear wife was frightened the night Mitch triggered the hypnotic behaviour by blasting an air horn beneath our window twice and I grabbed her neck with one hand. I was shocked and angry that Mitch targeted my family. I was also shocked that a violent mind-control program could be triggered by a non-verbal, audio-signal.

MK Experiment #4 Result

All of the 18-22 year old gas station/convenience store employees, about five, were traumatized. Who would not be traumatized working at the counter with your back to a window that was getting regularly penetrated by bullets? Some will have needed counselling. I expect some quit.

The business owner was affected psychologically, and financially by staff turnover.

I stopped buying cigarettes there when I realized it was me the shots were for.

CHAPTER 26: 2015 Jan - Road trip to Hell

“War is over ... If you want it.” - John Lennon

One early January early evening, Mitch home invaded and took me for a ride. I have a third party confirmation (a bank) of an activity that occurred, so I know it was January 2015.

Scopolamine had been sprayed on me in my sleep. I awoke to Mitch torturing me with no-mark joint manipulations. I dissociated, i.e. my dominant personality went to sleep. I was in the compliant Beta alter.

“Matthew what would you do if I came in the middle of the night, and you heard me?”

“I would go out the South bedroom window,” I said without hesitation, as I’d already come up with the plan.

“But you’d fall,” Mitch said.

“No, there is a slanted rooftop there. I’d jump on the neighbours roof, and keep jumping a few houses before dropping down.” My neighbourhood is semi-detached houses, with about three feet between rooftops.

“What about your shoes?”

“I don’t need shoes, I’d go barefoot,” I said.

“You’d do that?” Mitch asked, and then answered his own question, “You would do that wouldn’t you?” he said smiling.

“Yes I would.”

“Matthew, put your pants, shirt and socks on. We’re going downstairs,” he said. I dressed while he waited.

Mitch motioned for me to walk in front of him. I reached the main floor front hallway.

“Now put on your shoes Matthew. We are going out for a ride, I will bring you back after.” “Ah, OK,” I said tentatively. I sat down on the footstool in the front hallway, tied up my shoes and then stood up and said, “I’m ready.”

Mitch paused for a moment, smiled and said, “Its cold outside Matthew, put on your coat,” as you would say to a child. I put on my coat.

“Matthew, we are going to get into my van just out front.”

“I am going to walk first, and you are going to follow behind me. I’ll open the side door for you but once you get in, you’re going to slide it closed behind you. There is a handle just inside the door.” This plan would give the appearance of a voluntary departure to any neighbours or passers by.

“Do you understand?”

“Got it,” I said.

We stepped outside and I locked the door. I walked behind Mitch to the van parked right out front. He opened the sliding door and I got in.

I fumbled for the handle, and Mitch pointed and said, “Its hard to find, do you want some help?”

“I got it,” I said slightly annoyed at being treated like a child. I closed the door.

The van was already running. The van pulled away within seconds. I was riding in the first bench of a van, middle seat, and Mitch was seated in the front passengers seat. Someone else was driving but they had a hood on so I could not see the back of their head.

“Matthew, I need your cell phone.”

I passed it to him.

“Turn your pockets inside out,” he commanded.

I did, revealing only my keys and some coins.

Mitch asked, “Do you have anything tucked in your socks?”

“No,” I said.

“I have to see, pull up your pant legs so I can have a look,” he commanded. Oddly I felt hurt he didn’t believe me.

I pulled up my pant legs, and pushed my feet forward “See!” I said. I knew Mitch wanted to see if I was hiding a weapon or a recording device.

There was no conversation as the van pierced the night along Eglinton Avenue East.

Nearing out destination, Mitch announced, “Matthew you and I are getting out here,” he said as the driver parked the van. He got out first and opened the sliding door. I stepped out.

He walked me about ten paces on the sidewalk from the van. “You’re going to open a bank account at this CIBC branch,” Mitch commanded.

“My wife and I do all our banking at XXXXXX, I would never open an account at CIBC, I don’t like that bank. I had an account there many years ago.”

“Matthew, it has to be CIBC. You are going to open an account at this branch,” he said as he pointed out to a building with a big CIBC sign only twenty feet away. “Matthew you are going to use this ID,” as he reached into his pocked and showed two plastic covered pieces of ID.

“Your name is Matthew Palk, that’s P-A-L-K” Mitch said. “Now say it back to me, spell it,” Mitch commanded. “My name is Matthew Palk, P-A-L-K” I repeated. Palk is only a few letters different from my real last name so even though Scopolamine impaired I was be able to reliably repeat it.

“Good, now I have to go inside for just a few minutes, I want you to stand right here and wait for me.” “How long are you going to be?” I asked. “Just five minutes or so Matthew, stay here until I’m back,” Mitch assured. “OK,” I said.

I looked around. I was lost in a Scopolamine fog, not wanting to walk more than ten paces in either direction.

As promised Mitch returned in about five to ten minutes. He walked up to me and said, “OK Matthew, all the forms are filled in.”

“Just go in to the Customer Service counter, straight ahead through the doors. Say ‘I am here to open a checking account’. Then show your ID, say ‘My name is Matthew Palk’, and give them the ID,” Mitch commanded.

“OK,” I said.

Mitch handed me the two pieces of ID he had shown me earlier. “Now remember Matthew, your name is Matthew Palk, say it again,” he commanded. “My name is Matthew Palk, P-A-L-K,” I said.

“Good, now go in, and come right out after you’ve signed the forms,” Mitch said.

I opened the door of the brightly lit bank, and proceeded to the counter that was straight ahead. A professionally dressed woman was sitting behind the counter, and looked up at me. “Hello, I’m here to open a checking account, my name is Matthew Palk, P-A-L-K” I said.

“Yes, I need two pieces of ID please,” she announced and added, “One with a picture.”

I placed the two pieces of ID on the counter top.

“Thank you,” she said.

After a minute she said, “Mr. Palk, the forms are all ready.”

“Good.”

“Just one thing Mr. Palk, is your phone number 647-234-5678?”

“No,” I said annoyed, “My residential number is 416-482-XXXX.”

“I’ve had it for twelve years,” I reported.

The woman said, “Oh, well that’s not what it says on the form, I’ll change it then.

“Good,” I replied.

She printed out another version of the form, and presented the document on the counter top. “Please sign here Mr. Palk,” she said.

I signed the form with my new last name. She gave me a confirmation document back.

“Its all done Mr. Palk, thank you for choosing CIBC,” she said.

I opened the doors and walked into the night up to Mitch who was standing on the sidewalk twenty feet away.

“How did it go?” he asked.

“I did it,” I said.

“Good Matthew, now I need this ID back,” he said as he pulled the ID out of my hands along with the confirmation document handed to me by the bank employee.

He led me back to the waiting van. Again he opened the side door and I got inside. This time he closed the door for me. After sitting on the same bench row I asked, “Can we go home now?”

“Matthew, that was just a stop on the way, we have one more place to go,” Mitch said. “Then can we go home?” I pleaded. “Yes, then I’ll take you home Matthew,” Mitch said.

I thought of the wrong phone number issue, “Just…” I said cutting myself off. “What’s that?” Mitch asked. Somewhere beneath the fog of Scopolamine I knew that telling Mitch about the phone number change was a bad idea. “Nothing,” I said. I sat back as a passive passenger in a Scopolamine haze.

We were driving on a highway. On the right was a horizon lacking city lights indicating we were heading east along the edge of Lake Ontario. I was concerned how far we were headed.

“Where are we going? To the USA again?”

“No, we will be going to a warehouse Matthew, we’ll be there in a few minute.”

Bad things happen in warehouses I thought to myself.

After fifteen to twenty minutes the driver pulled the van into a multi-vehicle sized garage in a warehouse.

Mitch unlocked a door to the building from the garage. He held the door open and said, “Through here.”

Mitch led me down a passageway to a ‘torture room’. There was what looked like a doctor’s examination table, and a bright floodlight just above it. He ordered me to lie down on the table.

Mitch pulled out a spray can and sprayed Scopolamine in my face. He then grabbed my arm and did a finger joint manipulation to cause extreme pain. I screamed, "No, stop!" but there was no one in this industrial warehouse space to help me. After a few minutes of torture featuring elbow hyperextension, I dissociated, again.

I was now in the Beta slave alter.

Scene end. Self-censored.

It is not in my interest, nor in the interest of those who wish to stop human experimentation, to write here how a reputation smearing video was produced.

If the this video is leaked, my designate, or I will disseminate to the media my ten-page account of how this CICA produced smear film was made using torture, dissociation, Scopolamine drugging and gunpoint coercion.

I believe there may be another smear video from a few years ago, which I have also documented the production of. If this second video is leaked, my full account will be disseminated to the media of how this CICA produced video was made with torture, dissociation and Scopolamine drugging.

Nowhere else in this book will I withhold.

In November, CIBC telephoned my wife and I in a routine marketing call about this account. They were quick to hang up when I denied having an account there as I still lacked recall. Within thirty minutes I called back as I started to remember. My wife and I escalated to a supervisor 'Luke'.

I informed this account was opened under duress after being home invaded, drugged with a date-rape drug, and tortured. They said they had a mailing address for the account different from my own. My wife and I met with an officer at Toronto Police Services, 53 Division that same night and reported all in incident report #1843431.

I begged them to go to that address and interrogate Mitch for the January, May home invasions and gave them a full physical description. The officer left to confer with a detective and returned in a few minutes saying the account opening is all they would investigate. The next day I called E. P. in CIBC Client Care Escalation and relayed the incident number to her voice mail twice, but she never called back. There has been no report back from the police or CIBC.

CHAPTER 27: 2015 Feb - Luring Mitch into a Photo Op

"If the media were honest, they would say, 'Look, here are the interests we represent and this is the framework within which we look at things. This is our set of beliefs and commitments.' That's what they would say, very much as their critics say. For example, I don't try to hide my commitments, and the Washington Post and New York Times shouldn't do it either. However, they must do it, because this mask of balance and objectivity is a crucial part of the propaganda function. In fact, they actually go beyond that. They try to present themselves as adversarial to power, as subversive, digging away at powerful institutions and undermining them. The academic profession plays along with this game." – Noam Chomsky, from Lecture titled "*Media, Knowledge, and Objectivity*," June 16, 1993

By the first week of February I started to have flashbacks from the January home invasion. It started with a flashback of the mind-control experiment where Mitch programmed me to grab my wife's neck for ten seconds at the sound of two toots of his hand-held air horn. The Special Forces of Canada's closest ally had conspired to commit violence against the family member of a non-consensual Canadian test subject. I was shocked and angry that Mitch has escalated his violence to include my family.

After another day I recalled more of the dialog in the experiment. I was angry.

In a few more days I started to recall another of the experiments.

Then I remembered the rape. I felt degraded.

I felt violated and livid.

I knew I should report it to the police, but I knew they'd never believe me unless I had evidence.

When I drove my wife to work every day downtown, I passed within about six blocks of the US Consulate, where I believed Mitch must have been situated based on his response to my bait tests. I had told her some of what I recalled. She was upset hearing of this.

The sense of degradation I felt was similar to how I felt after being gassed with Scopolamine Fog on June 21, 2014 during a fatal weapons test. I felt I had to do some symbolic act to regain my dignity. This time, Mitch had come after my family with two of his mind-control experiments.

I decided to drive by the US Consulate on my way back home after dropping off my wife. I drove north on University Avenue from Queen street, and the US Consulate was on left, on the west side of University Avenue.

As I approached the consulate I unrolled my window half way, and gave a thumbs down sign as I drove by with my hand still in the car. I noticed an unmarked white van followed me for a few blocks to College Street.

The next morning, I rolled down my window all the way, and extended my arm outside the window and held my fist high with a thumb down sign as I drove by. I noticed an SUV outfitted with emergency lights followed me further than the day before, to Wellesley Street. The driver had a ball cap on, and a blue T-shirt.

The next morning, February 16, I held my arm out of the window and gave the finger to the consulate high above the roof of my car.

This time immediately a Black, overly tinted, GMC Suburban followed me. A civilian car turned in behind me within two blocks and joined the pursuit. It was a white Nissan Altima with overly tinted windows. It followed me past College, past Wellesley seeming to take over from the Black, overly tinted, GMC Suburban, which fell back.

Just after Bloor Street where University turned into Avenue road, the white Nissan pulled to my right at a stoplight. I had seen Mitch drive by my house as I was walking my dog, in a more expensive Nissan sports car about 2007.

I realized my drive-bys of the US Consulate with hostile hand signals were triggering security concerns, and I was considered to be Mitch's asset-liability. Mitch was getting into trouble. He needed to scare me away.

Since it was only 8:10 AM he was likely on his way into work when the call came about my drive-by. He likely didn't have time to get a US Consulate staff car.

I had a hunch it was Mitch. It was eerie having him in a car beside me. I had to wonder if he would pull out a weapon and shoot me.

I pressed a button to roll down the passenger's window, and used my iPhone to snap a picture of the driver in profile. Once enlarged the full-face profile is visible on a Retina display after turning up brightness to maximum or digitally enhancing the photo.

Enlarging the picture shows a slightly elongated chin to lip distance, like Olympic swimmer Michael Phelps, whom Mitch described himself as having likeness to during the January 2015 home invasion. A large brow is also evident. I had seen Mitch enough times to recognize him in profile.

Mitch (alias)
US Military JTF
39 years old in Jan 2015
5’11”
Slim build
170 pounds
Short blond hair
Blue eyes
Oklahoma origin.
His Nazi mind-control scientist grandfather immigrated to the US using CIA Project Paperclip.

He turned off following me about St. Clair Avenue, thankfully. I stayed away from the US Consulate after that. I felt I had reclaimed a bit of dignity.

I had to report the home invasion, as serious crimes were committed, even though I had little evidence. In the spring I called the police. I explained the home invasion, the whole story since 2005. Predictably the police were baffled.

Covert black ops by Intelligence Agencies and Special Forces that leave very little or no evidence are designed to be impossible for the police to decipher. Police are not trained to deal with state actors specialized in covert operations leaving no evidence. The police lack capabilities to investigate these crimes. I showed the above photo without the annotation, to two Toronto Police Services, 53 Division at my house in early summer.

One officer ran the license plate from another photo I took of Mitch’s car on that February 16, 2015, but he reported it was registered to a woman, which would be ideal cover when he does an operation cross-dressed. Upon hearing of the rape, and other events of the January home invasion, a conscientious officer, about thirty years old said, “This Mitch, I think he’s trying to control you.” I had to bite my tongue, as I thought “No shit Sherlock?” “Show him you’re someone not to mess with,” the officer advised.

A few days later I went to the station and met with a higher rank officer who interviewed me with a pair of colleagues. He stated they could not do much. (I don’t have enough evidence.) He added, “I am not saying I don’t believe you.“

“My advice is: First, finish the book. Get the book done.”

“Second, be aware of your surroundings at all times. This is important, be aware of your surroundings at all times, and get some pinhole cameras in your house.”

The January home invasion rattled me. It was an escalation in Mitch’s actions against me. The battle to control this MK-ULTRA test subject had come to my house and family. What might be next? Would I be used in a false flag terror event?

I thought up a way to prevent myself from being used in a false-flag operation. I got this tattoo to try and save my life, and others. If I were ever found as an actor at a terror event, dead or alive, this tattoo would indicate the event was a false flag. It’s my first, and only tattoo.

[redacted], CANADIAN. AKA:
MALCOLM PAULY. FB: MATTHEW
PAULY. NON-CONSENSUAL, MKULTRA
SLEEPER ASSASSIN TEST SUBJECT.
DOCTOR/CORONER: TEST FOR
SCOPOLAMINE & POISONS.
CONTACT: THE TORONTO STAR,
NEWS COLUMNISTS.
SEARCH: 'MALCOLM PAULY SLEEPER'

To match my Facebook profile my pen-name is now Matthew Pauly.

CHAPTER 28: 2015 May – Home Invasion: Termination Interview, Poisoning, RCMP

"Control of thought is more important for governments that are free and popular than for despotic and military states. The logic is straightforward: a despotic state can control its domestic enemies by force, but as the state loses this weapon, other devices are required to prevent the ignorant masses from interfering with public affairs, which are none of their business…the public are to be observers, not participants, consumers of ideology as well as products." – Noam Chomsky, from article "*Force and Opinion*" in Z Magazine

Never in all Mitch's mind-control experiments did he say a non-work-related sentence. Everything he said to me was in the context of a mind-control experiment.

I awoke in bed, lying on my stomach, to the sound of Mitch saying, "It's just me again, Matthew."

My wife and I had restarted the burglar alarm monitoring service after the January home invasion so my first words were: "But what about the alarm?"

Mitch said, "Yah, sorry about that." Having photographed the alarm control panel in the January home invasion, he had obviously looked up the vulnerabilities of the particular system and circumvented it

I heard the "SHHHHH" sound of Scopolamine being sprayed on me from an aerosol spray can. When I awoke I was tortured for a few minutes, until finally I dissociated. Again I was put into the compliant Beta alter. "How's the book going, Matthew?" Mitch asked.

"Well, it's taken longer than I expected since my PTSD symptoms became much worse after the January home invasion, I'll need another month or two."

Mitch did not respond to that. He changed the subject. "Matthew, you're going to see me sometime in the next while walking in the neighbourhood, dressed as a woman. Do you know what I mean, Matthew?"

"Yes," I replied.

"So, you have trans-sexual friends, Matthew?"

"No, but I once had one twenty five years ago."

"Good, so when you see me, I will REALLY be a woman, Matthew."

"OK," I said.

"You will recognize me by my same hair, and a hole beneath my left knee."

"Your haircut? I'm supposed to recognize your hair cut?"

"Yes, and a hole beneath my left knee. Study my hair cut now so you will remember."

I moved around to the side to study the cut in particular from the temple down to the neck, noticing the slightly rounded edging around his face. "What if the hole below the left knee is too small and I don't see it?"

"Don't worry, it's a big hole, Matthew."

"OK," I said.

"Matthew just so we're clear, when I am walking towards you and you are driving, the left knee will be the one farthest away from you."

"Yes, I got it," I said, annoyed he thought he needed to remind me of basic geometry.

"Now repeat this a dozen times, Matthew, 'When I see you dressed as a woman walking towards me on the street in my neighbourhood, I will recognize you by your same hair, and a large hole beneath your left knee. I will open my sunroof, pull over my car, get out and walk to you."

I repeated these two sentences over about ten times until he told me to stop.

Next Mitch said, "Now wait here, and think up some terror plots."

He walked downstairs, and I heard the front door open. He stood and talked with another man downstairs for a few minutes. I continued thinking of terror plots. He came back upstairs and I heard small talk with another officer who stood in the hallway just outside the open bedroom door, out of my view.

Mitch said: "Matthew, give me some terror plots."

In my drugged and dissociated state, I answered "You could take a fiberglass panel van, and with an EMP device in the back you could drive by the Front Street Internet hub and shut down much of Canada's Internet at the push of a button without hurting anyone."

Mitch turned toward the RCMP officer. "Is that place shielded?"

"I believe so," the officer answered.

"Check."

The officer spoke into a radio: "Central, is the Internet center on Front Street EMP shielded?"

Someone at the other end said, “Yes, it is.”

Mitch turned toward me and said, “What do you think about that, Matthew?”

“Good, one less thing to worry about. Right?”

“Give me another, Matthew.”

I said, “One could load up a bunch of cardboard tubes with hobby rockets carrying explosive payloads and park just outside the US Consulate and open the back door and fire them.”

“Could you do that, Matthew?” he asked.

“Yes,” I said eager to please.

In fact, I would never do that, as I don’t believe in violence except in self-defence. Firing rockets is not self-defence; it is an act of war. I don’t believe in war. It would be suicide to do that; anyone doing so would be shot in a matter of seconds by forces at the embassy. I have not made gunpowder since I was eleven years old, and I have no desire to do it again. All of my telecommunications, visa and banking transactions, and travels are monitored. If I made one move to acquire any of the components I would be charged with a terrorist offence. So the answer is “No, I could not do that.” But torture-trauma dissociated to a slave Beta alter, and high on Scopolamine, a slave is very eager to please his torturer[33].

“That’s good, Matthew, you just keep thinking up those terror plots,” and he chuckled. He walked downstairs with the officer, and let him out. It was perhaps ten minutes before he returned. He may have faked his own exit to the officer, and let himself back in.

“I’m back.” He was back in the bedroom. I sat up on the edge of the bed as he stood in front of me. ”Take your shirt off.”

I did. He turned and pulled a small bottle out of his knapsack on the floor. He knelt down and unscrewed the cap revealing a stick with a tiny brush at the end. He started moving it toward me.

“What are you doing?!”

“Be still, be very still.” I froze. He dabbed some dark liquid substance about an inch below my left Pectoral. “There, I was good to you Matthew. I put it where your doctor will see it. Now don’t touch it until you take a shower, Matthew.”

I knew it had to be a carcinogen, but thought that at least skin cancer can be treated successfully if caught early. If it were a biological poison I’d probably be dead by now.

Next Mitch pulled out a metered inhaler, the kind people with Asthma or COPD use. “Matthew, I will hold this to your lips and I want you to inhale when I press the button.”

I knew that this was dangerous. “No, I won’t do it!”

He pulled out his gun, the black one he showed in 2008, from behind and held it in his hand, angled slightly up. “You will do it!”

“OK,” I said fearing imminent death.

He held the inhaler against my mouth, between my lips and said, “OK, I’m going to press the button and you inhale at the same time.” He pressed the button, and I inhaled, as shallowly as I could. I felt the spray in my throat, and upper lungs.

“What was that for?”

“Matthew, you wrote on your tattoo design, ‘Blondie, Kiss my Canadian Ass.’”

“What are you talking about?”

“Downstairs in your china cabinet drawer you have a piece of paper with a tattoo design with that written on it.”

“But that was a *draft* of the design, I never got that sentence on my tattoo!”

“It doesn’t matter, it was the intent. Put on your shirt, and come downstairs with me.”

I got up off the bed, put on my short, and followed him downstairs. I knew then it was a slow-kill assassination test, probably a carcinogen.

Termination Interview

He pulled out one of the dining room chairs, the South one at the end, and said, “Let’s sit down and just talk, Matthew.”

Recall that those about to be executed by firing squad are sometimes offered a cigarette and even a chance to exchange a few words with the person who lights their cigarette. That is exactly what this was. Mitch knew I was going to be terminated in a fatal weapons test in June, and this was a termination interview.

This report is only due to a tradecraft technical error by Mitch (JTF) in the June 4, 2015 assassination-fatal weapons test event, and my own resisting mind control.

Mitch pulled out the chair and said, “Have a seat, Matthew.”

“OK,” I said hesitantly but I only leaned the chair towards me instead of pulling it out. I was stuck in indecision, as I was afraid of sitting down with him. I feared this man like no other. He was pulling out the chair to my right, the one that is at the south end of this north-south oriented, hardwood dining room table.

He saw my indecision and said, “Matthew, it’s all right. I won’t hurt you. We’re just going to talk.”

“All right.” This was the first time in 10.5 years he ever said to me “I won’t hurt you.”

There is no question I have suffered from Stockholm syndrome, the tendency for those held captive to become sympathetic with their captors.

There is a related phenomenon where victims become admiring of their torturers after repeated torture that causes dissociation. In the WW II concentration camps some of the victims of the twisted, Nazi war criminal Dr. Jusuf Mengele’s reported referring to him as “Beautiful Joseph.” I understand that.

The torturer is the only one who stops the pain. The mind is tricked by repeated torture, and the torturer is seen as the liberator from pain.

Mitch asked, “Can we smoke?” He was reaching into his jacket left pocket for a pack of cigarettes.

“No, my wife will kill me if she smells any smoky smell in the air,” I said. On Scopolamine and torture-trauma dissociated, it is nearly impossible to lie. Of course I did not mean she would kill me literally, just that she would be very upset.

“Well, we’ll keep this short then,” he said in an annoyed tone suggesting I was rapidly using up whatever goodwill or peaceful intent he was attempting to show me (for his own conscience perhaps.)

“What do you think of life, Matthew? Just any thoughts on life?” he asked.

“Well, I believe life is short, and so it’s about making a difference in the time we have, to make the world a better place.”

“Interesting,” he replied.

I had read Victor Frankl’s “Man’s Search For Meaning” in my twenties, and having a solid meaning in life is one of the few reasons I have survived so far, the other being my incredible wife of fifteen years. Mr. Frankl narrowly survived the Concentration Camps of WW II.

Mitch asked me to name my favourite sports team.

“I’m not into sports.”

"Your Facebook page says you like the 'Roughriders.'"

"Yes, I grew up in Saskatchewan. I might watch the Grey Cup if they play, but that's about it." There was a pause.

I interjected: "What your grandfather did to you at five years old was awful. Mitch."

"Yes, it was," he agreed.

"Matthew, I'm CICA."

"What? I thought you were JTF."

"Why did you believe I was in the JTF?" Mitch asked.

"The Canadian soldier in the van said so, in 2005."

"The Indian one?" Mitch asked.

"No, he only said JTF2, the white soldier said JTF."

"Oh," Mitch said.

"I'm both. Matthew."

"I didn't even know that was possible."

"Well it is."

He walked over to the bookcase at the southwest corner of the living room. He said, "Let's have a look at your books." He said "hmmm" a few times as he scanned the book spines, not pulling a book out.

One book caught his attention -- it had a Swastika on the spine.

He smiled and said enthusiastically: "What is this?"

He pulled out the only book in the house with a Swastika on the binding and read the back cover notes silently for about ten seconds: "A team of British commandos parachute into the high peaks of the Austrian alps in the depths of winter. Their mission: steal into a seemingly impregnable alpine castle—headquarters of the Gestapo—and rescue a captured American General before he reveals the Allies' plans for the invasion of Europe."[34] It was a spy novel, "Where Eagles Dare" by Alistair MacLean.

"Ohhh," Mitch sighed with disappointment realizing it was an anti-Nazi book.

He placed it back in its place on the bookshelf.

"Let's sit down again." His tone was friendly.

He led me back to our designated seats at the dining room table.

"Do you have any questions for me?"

I strongly suspected he might be a Nazi given his grandfather's influence and the behaviour with the book, and this was a rare opportunity to find out.

"Yes, what do you think of Jewish people?"

His face filled with loathing, and his mouth became a flat line as he pursed his lips. His voice was low, steady, monotone and slowed down as he measure each word, "I don't want to talk about that, Matthew." I had never seen this side of Mitch before. It was like a different Mitch, an alter.

Then I have a blank in memory.

The next thing I remember is pain.

I was in my bed on my stomach, with Mitch kneeling over me in torturer mode twisting an arm, hyperextending an elbow or finger joints.

"Matthew, who are your Jewish friends?!" he demanded angrily.

"Who are your Jewish friends!?"

I knew this was dangerous territory. I beg readers to understand that Scopolamine wipes free will.

First I said, "There is a professor I know that lives a few blocks away who is Jewish."

"What's his name?"

"He is really an acquaintance."

"What's his name?!"

"I don't remember his name."

More pain.

"Honestly, I don't know his name, I met him when we were both children in Regina. I had attended his brothers Bar Mitzvah. I ran into him at a resident's association social a year ago.“

"What other Jewish friends do you have?"

"That's about it, I think."

More pain.

"Come on, Matthew, which of your other friends are Jewish?" he demanded.

He made a motion to hurt me more.

"Diane Yusuf[35]." She is a neighbour and friend.

"What does she do for a living?"

"She's a lawyer and newspaper columnist, not an active lawyer though," I told him.

He thought for a second and announced "No."

"Give me another name!"

"George Bernstein[36]." He is a community activist, leader and friend on the board of my residents' association.

"Is his wife Jewish?"

"I think so."

"What's their address?"

"I don't know the number, they live two blocks south on Orchard View, they're in the book"

"I'll find it," he said.

Mitch marched me downstairs to the dining room table.

He was calming down, his voice became more normal, and his facial expression.

"Matthew, sit down in front of your computer, and log in."

He stood behind me as I typed my password, then he walked over to the living room.

"Matthew, I need all your banking passwords."

"I don't know any of them. My wife does all the banking."

Mitch walked around the couch to face me in the dining room (open concept layout.) He leaned against the couch and gestured with his hands. "I need your banking passwords!"

"Honestly, I don't know any of them"

"Are you sure!"

"My wife is a banker, she does all the banking. I don't even know the usernames."

Mitch sighed as he lowered his head.

Clearly Mitch had been counting on stealing some money. He probably does this to all his MK-ULTRA test subjects just before lethal weapons tests. That means he must regularly need money laundry bank accounts to transfer the funds to.

He had given me six months to get the book out in order to plead his case, or make him famous. I was a liability only being kept alive long enough to make him famous, but I had missed the deadline. I did not know it, but my time was up.

He told me to stay at the dining room table while he went upstairs and searched. After a few minutes he returned with a skeleton key.

"What does this open?"

"That looks like the safety deposit box key."

"What's in the box?"

"Just papers, and a bit of gold."

"How much gold?"

"One ounce, or two at the most. It's a family member's gold, not mine."

"How many ounces exactly?"

"Two, I'm sure," I said assertively.

"Hmmmm," he thought for a few seconds. "Not worth it." He put the key back upstairs where he found it. Then he left. (The key has since been safely located off-site.)

Threatened by RCMP over Forced Terror Confession

About ten days after this home invasion in May, my wife was busy and I did the weekly grocery shopping on my own. I did not yet recall the May home invasion.

It was a sunny, summer mid-afternoon as pushed my cart of groceries to my car. I unlocked my car at The Great Canadian Superstore on Don Mills Road and Eglinton Avenue East in Toronto at about 12:30 PM.

A man approached me from behind just as I opened the driver's door and said, "You know we can seize your vehicle." I turned to a see a man with short hair, a slightly tall and trim body consistent with that of a plain-clothes officer.

"Why?"

"Because you are a terrorist, and we are allowed to under Anti-Terror Law (C-51.) We can seize all of your assets as proceeds" (of terrorism.)

"I am NOT a terrorist!" I said. I got in my car, started the car and drove away.

The RCMP and CSIS use Bill C-51 to work the anti-terror file. But only the RCMP have a history of in my case of collaborating with Mitch.

In the May home invasion a Canadian officer was ordered by Mitch to "check" the shielding status of the Front Street Internet centre. The officer used a radio to call 'central' and with one question he determined the Front Street Internet center was EMP shielded. The same officer recorded my forced confession to terror plots after being drugged and torture-trauma dissociated by Mitch.

The RCMP used information obtained from drugging and torture in Canada by a CICA officer, to tag me this whistleblower a terrorist, and to threaten to seize all my property. This is at least partly the result of a former PM Harper policy that allows Canadian federal officers to use information obtained by torture, by other countries forces.

I'm not sure the Harper approved policy is meant to allow torture on Canadian soil, but once he approved federal agents/enforcement using information by torture by other forces, he must have known that forced confessions are trivial to obtain with torture. That is why torture is used around the world by autocratic regimes. He should have known a judge reviewing a recording could not tell in what country the recording was made. Such policy and laws are ripe for abuse and violate human rights.

Anyone in my position cannot sue the federal government for abuse because Section 38 of the Canada Evidence Act allows federal agents to show a federal court judge in private a taped confession of a suspected terrorist. The video actor cannot be present, or their lawyer to challenge the forced video confession. They have forced confessions from me dating from November 2005, and now May 2015.

The judge has no way to determine that the person was drugged and tortured. The actor appears dangerous and the judge grants a Section 38 to make the entire trial a national secret along with all the evidence presented. The media could not report on it. A Kangaroo Court proceeds and the claims of torture would be ignored. Those present could not talk to anyone about the court evidence or they would go immediately to jail.

This law invites abuse. That's not the level of democracy Canadians deserve and expect in 2015, and it is inconsistent with The Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms, and Geneva Conventions.

---

[33] This paragraph was re-introduced in the Fifth edition. Mitch had removed the earlier version of this paragraph during a home invasion in October, 2015, and it was not noticed during the final editing phase. In so doing, he set me up to be classified “as a grave threat to the USA” useful for an extra-judicial killing, legal under recent Presidential Orders

[34] I had picked it up from someone’s curb dump of books. It is labelled property of Lawrence West library. I prefer John LeCarre for this genre.

[35] Not real name

[36] Not real name

CHAPTER 29: 2015 Jun 4 – Nicotine Gun Fatal Weapons Test

"Indifference is Injustice's Incubator - Canadian Supreme Court Justice Rosalie Silberman Abella

I had just run a few security-related errands on a sunny June afternoon. I had visited two security companies regarding home alarms, and pinhole cameras.

I was almost home as I turned off Eglinton Avenue and drove northbound on Edith Drive in mid-town Toronto. I noticed a spectacle ahead. A woman dressed in white, with sparkles glinting off her sequined jacket in the sunlight, was walking south on Edith on the East side only two blocks from my house.

As I got closer I realized it was a gay or transgender man in high-end, very convincing 'drag' including fake breasts. There was a large hole below his left knee, and he had the same blond haircut as Mitch.

I went into a hypnotic trance. My eyes blinked very little. I was fixated on the visual trigger, a transsexual drag Queen with a large hole beneath his left knee, and the same hair cut as Mitch.

He was swinging a very large purse, open at the top, the handle looped over his left shoulder and wore professional makeup, large tinted glasses, a gold necklace and tight, pre-faded-to-white, blue jeans. Swinging his hips from side to side as he drag-walked, he successfully impersonated a seductive woman worthy of a role in a movie.

Strangely in my conscious mind I did not recognize Mitch. I only felt an overwhelming urge to stop the car and talk to the transsexual drag Queen.

Curiously, one end of an aluminum tubular object rose to the top rear of the purse as he swung his hips while cross stepping in my direction south on Edith. The aluminum glinted in the sun. He noticed and reached across his body with his left arm and tried to stuff the aluminum object deeper in the bag, but he could not force it back down. A scowl showed on his face: no time to repack the bag.

He resumed smiling as he lifted his shoulder and pulled his left elbow up and back to try and hide the aluminum tube object from me as he continued his drag walk.

This overt subterfuge of hiding a metal object was a danger cue I picked up on even in the hypnotic trance I had slipped into.

I was driving slowly northbound and as programmed, upon identifying the trigger I immediately opened my sunroof, and pulled over. For some reason I could not then understand, I felt compelled to approach and say hello.

I stepped out, but did not walk towards him as I detected danger. I stood in the middle of Edith Drive between my open car door and my Honda SUV. Mitch was about 15 feet behind on the sidewalk.

I stood in the middle of Edith Drive with my driver's door open for perhaps ten seconds trying to resist the post-hypnotic suggestion (the program) to approach him.

My dominant personality in a trance did not recognize this person as Mitch, but was compelled to approach them. I told myself, "With all the dangerous mind-control experiments I have been through in the last ten years, it would be risky to follow an urge to do something so out of character like stop my car and approach a complete stranger just because of their appearance, leaving alone that they were in drag."

I decided to break the impulse; I aborted the post-hypnotic program. As I turned to get back into my car, I noticed my seat was covered with a clear liquid that had dripped in from the sunroof. There was a tree branch above me, so I thought perhaps it was rainwater fallen from the overhanging tree branch, wet from an earlier rain, on this sunny day.

I brushed the liquid aside with my hand not knowing what it was and sat in the seat. More liquid fell through the sunroof and soaked into my right pant leg, and in that moment I saw a spurt of clear liquid land diagonally across the hood, coming from the direction of the transsexual drag Queen.

That completed the risk analysis. I knew I was in danger. A liquid-firing gun was being used on me. I closed the sunroof as more liquid was fired and a few more drops fell through. I drove the two blocks home, parked, went inside and quickly changed my jeans.

I sat in a Muskoka chair on my back deck. In my panic I took one drag from a cigarette and felt nothing. It was like inhaling air. There was no Nicotine blood level elevation from the inhaled smoke as is always the case after a smoker has gone at least 30-45 minutes without a cigarette. Realizing my bloodstream was dangerously saturated with Nicotine already, I butted out. That aluminum tube must have been part of a Nicotine laden liquid heart attack gun.

The CIA had displayed a Nicotine frozen crystal Nicotine gun in a public hearing back it the 1970s.

My heart was banging loudly in my chest like never before, at less than sixty beats per minute, “BANG, BANG, BANG.” Still partly in a trance, I remembered and used special breathing techniques and mental work from Russian Martial Art study to direct blood, and oxygen to my heart.

With each in breath through my nose, I exhaled slowly through my mouth imagining the air coming out through my heart. The next thirty minutes were terrifying as my heart banged. I believed I might die. After about twenty minutes, my heart was still banging but interrupted with normal beats. After another twenty minutes it was beating almost normally.

I saw an aluminum tube sticking out of Mitch’s purse in the black op. I saw him try to hide it. I saw the liquid on my drivers seat. I saw the liquid then fall through my open sunroof, and onto my pants. I saw it land in a diagonal line on my front hood from the direction where Mitch stood on the sidewalk. I witnessed no nicotine blood level elevation when inhaling from a cigarette afterwards, like never before. I witnessed my heart banging in my chest, slowly, continuously for many minutes, like never before.

This had to be a fatal weapons test. By resisting the mind control urge to approach Mitch, I suffered only an indirect hit from a medium-length, Nicotine-laden liquid, heart attack gun. This fatal weapons test was the first obvious assassination attempt; I was very frightened of what might follow. As usual, since I dissociated from the moment I saw the hypnotic trigger (Mitch in drag) I had no memory of it when the event I got out of the Muskoka chair on my back deck.

CHAPTER 30: 2015 Jul 1 – Canada Day for a Whistleblower

“The reason people awaken, is because they finally stop agreeing to things that insult their soul.” -- Anonymous

TO: "thomas.mulcair" <thomas.mulcair@parl.gc.ca>, communications <communications@broadbentinstitute.ca>, lpapp <lpapp@thestar.ca>, gbarthos <gbarthos@thestar.ca>, Andrew Phillips <aphillips@thestar.ca>, "paul.samyn" <paul.samyn@freepress.mb.ca>, lchodan <lchodan@edmontonjournal.com>, newsroom <newsroom@globeandmail.com>, news <news@theprovince.com>, letters <letters@ottawacitizen.com>, jknox <jknox@timescolonist.com>, rharris-adler <rharris-adler@timescolonist.com>, ernesto <ernesto@nytimes.com>, info <info@theccf.ca>, mail <mail@ccla.org>, fifth <fifth@cbc.ca>, jfiorito <jfiorito@thestar.ca>, rob@robwipond.com, amurphy@globeandmail.com, postnow@washpost.com
CC: "stephen.harper" <stephen.harper@parl.gc.ca>, "joe.oliver" <joe.oliver@parl.gc.ca>, "justin.trudeau" justin.trudeau@parl.gc.ca

53 Division Toronto Police Service came to my house tonight to talk with my wife and me at my request. The senior officer took my report quite seriously. The junior officer could not help but be influenced.

In my early June meeting with a Detective and another officer at the police station, again the senior officer took my report quite seriously. I got some good security tips tonight, but most importantly advice on dealing with terror tactics (rape, death threats, torture), “let him know you are not someone to mess with,” i.e., to not give in to threats.

This morning about 10 AM I shared a summary of my story with a major US TV network, and the CBC via Facebook messaging. The ‘manifesto’ summary did make an impression. Of course while the major US network person expressed how sorry they were about what was done to me, they could not report on it.

“Yes no kidding” I replied. They are part of the 80% of TV media with majority control by one wealthy family. I asked them to at least report on it if I am terminated. Now that the polls show the Conservatives will not win, I hope the CBC will start standing tall again.

Within about an hour of these communications, the JTF officer from the US Consulate conducted an unprecedented attack. Note that none of this exchange was posted on Facebook. Thus, this is a third ‘bait test’ indicating my phone line is not only wiretapped by the RCMP, but also shared real-time with “Mitch” the USA JTF officer in the USA Consulate.

… (Book: Mitch told me in a subsequent home invasion that what I edit out here was incorrect)

At 8:00 PM tonight I saw what looked like Mitch the JTF officer from the USA Consulate, in the same colour car, make, model as I photographed him in February after I lured him out of the Consulate to get his picture. He had just pulled over on the north side of Montgomery in front of us as my wife and I drove by. He looked down at his phone to hide has face.

I said nothing to my wife but upon getting home (two blocks,) I put on my protective gear (no lethal weapon) and took a route to approach from behind. I noted a vehicle that is one of several that have been keeping me under surveillance on my way around the block to reach him from behind – he was gone when I arrived. (He carries an all chrome automatic handgun, which he put to my head in the January home invasion when I tried to resist. He also showed it in the 2005 event.)

At 8:18 pm my wife picked up the phone and the caller hung up. The caller's number was the same exchange as my neighbourhood (416) 482-XXXX, which was tactical as we would be more likely to pick up for a neighbour - I am on the board of my neighbourhood association. Calling the number yielded “This number is not in service.” That's when I called the police. As a computer professional I know it is quite possible to falsify caller-ids, but it takes specialized software, equipment and know-how. 99% of the population cannot do it, but covert, USA Military Special forces have all such technology at their fingertips.

My wife survived the trauma of being a top targeted family under Mao's Cultural Revolution in China for 10 years. This last 10.5 years of targeting of her family IN CANADA she finds much more stressful, and fearful. This is getting too much for her, and she may have PTSD now too. I believe it was the microwave tampering that did it.

Now it is Canada Day. Let’s review the situation here in mid-town Toronto, three blocks from Canada’s first rebellion:

- A US Special Forces (JTF) officer out of the US Consulate has been allowed to terrorize my family and I for 10.5 years, including yesterday.

- His June 21, 2014 chemical weapon covert test mortally injured our dog, and easily could have killed me as I stopped breathing several times. In Jan, 2015 he home invaded our house; I was drugged with Scopolamine, tortured-to-dissociate, raped, and interrogated. He sabotaged our microwave to cause harm to my family and me for an experiment.

- The RCMP National Security department refuses to help, as in fact they are enablers, and referred me to local police.

- CSIS has had more than a half dozen communications from me, and has done nothing but refer me to local police.

- Community police do not have the training and equipment to deal with foreign country, Special Forces, covert activities on Canadian soil. Since the pros never leave evidence, all is “Plausibly Deniable.” [If they left evidence, they wouldn’t be pros]

…

The best assassin for secret police (National Security department of RCMP are secret police) is one who can be directed to kill and have no recollection of the event afterward for years, and thus be unable to finger the state security apparatus orchestrators. That is what was used in the Parliament Hill shooting terror event.

I was an R&D sleeper assassin, and I know how to spot the signs. It was false flag event, to justify ramming through C-51 which massively removes Canadian’s civil liberties, and charter rights.

Our country has imported the Nazi tactics (burning of Reichstag by the Nazis to justify suspending civil liberties,) direct from the USA. They in turn perfected this technology by importing 500 Nazi mind control scientists to America in 1945 in the CIA 'Project Paperclip', see wanttoknow.info.

The recent Charleston shooting also has strong indications of being such an event, since the video of him entering the police station shows his pupils dilated, and his eyes blinking slowly just as Scopolamine causes. I was hit with Scopolamine 3 times in non-consensual tests. There are many other events in the US going back 60 years that have indications of mind-controlled assassins that were tarted up as 'Marxist', 'Islamist' or 'Anti-Government' types.

If North Americans, and Europeans wish to clean up/sanitize our democracies, they have no better an opportunity currently than helping this recovered MK-ULTRA R&D sleeper-assassin get his tell-all book out. I believe I am the only R&D sleeper assassin that has managed to get this far public. There may never be another.

The tactic being used now is to traumatize my family and I so much that we separate (PTSD causes lots of divorces,) whereupon it will be much easier to take/murder me to stop the book from coming out, or even movie.

The RCMP Commissioner Bob Paulson should resign. Mr. Harper plucked him from the National Security department AFTER I wrote him in April 2010 telling him that the RCMP played a pivotal role in the 2005 torture-interrogation, and mind-control demonstration between JTF and JTF2. He promoted the man who signed off on RCMP involvement in crimes against humanity for the reward of getting the very latest and greatest sleeper-assassin (mind-control) R&D training.

Perhaps Mr. Harper's decision was by design, as only a few years later we see sleeper-assassin, false flag event on Parliament Hill just as the Harper caucus was sitting down to plan the implementation of C-51, rights removing legislation. How convenient to terrorize the house members, and the public to accept C-51 being rammed through. Look also at the spate of 'terror' events that followed within 6-8 weeks.

This would explain why despite my numerous emails to/cc Mr. Harper, he still permits this continued TERRORISM by a foreign military, special-forces operator of a law-biding, Canadian civilian and his family. We saw these terror tactics in dictatorships with secret police (i.e. STASI) before the Iron Curtain fell. We also saw them in CIA propped-up dictatorships with their secret police in the Middle East, Central American, Africa and elsewhere, in fact we still do.

To quote the G20 police officer "this is not Canada anymore."

Is there not one newspaper publisher with Katherine Graham's grit and guts that understands the importance of this, and would be willing to permit a story to be written? Even one story could significantly enhance the safety of my family, co-author and I.

With such protection (plus better physical security), my family can stay together and get this important work complete. This book will educate the public on how to spot false flag events by sleeper (mind-controlled) actors. This should help cleanse our democracies fairly fast.

As for Mitch, the JTF Officer's very real threat of a painful and possibly life-debilitating/ending response to my continuing email campaign:

Its Canada Day, get together with some friends, put on some music (Rush, The Guess Who ‘American Woman’) and drink some beer.

Peace,
Matthew PXXXX
Montgomery Avenue
Toronto

There was no response from the email but there was some satisfaction in telling the politicians and media what is going on so they could not deny it later.

The first week of July, my wife went on holiday to help close family with a newborn. I was getting flashbacks of the May home invasion, but had not remembered the part about Mitch confessing to being CICA.

As I drove around town doing errands, I noticed surveillance.

I started to recall for the first time the June 4, fatal weapons test, which had been masked out due to dissociative amnesia.

AFTERWARD

"Its not just what you stand for, but what you stand up for" – Canadian Supreme Court Justice Rosalie Silberman Abella

When you are the target of escalating violence while writing a tell-all book about being a test subject of CICA mind-control R & D black operations, there comes a point where the risk of death or setup incarceration and not getting the book done outweighs the risk of not getting the latest events properly documented.

There have been many violent events, including life shortening ones, in 2015 after July 1 that I would have liked to have properly covered here.

I have reached the 200-page limit for a manageable read. I am out of pages, out of editor budget, nearly out of health, out of time, and this is why the timeline of the body of this book ends in July 1.

Spies are professionals in leaving no evidence, in having all actions plausibly deniable. Police investigate little of reported black ops for lack of evidence. Newspapers won't write stories for the same reason. Clandestine activity thrives in the darkness.

An intelligence agency victim's true report is from the darkness and therefore contrasts starkly with the white and shades of grey of mainstream media reports. This makes if difficult to accept, and Cognitive Dissonance rears its ugly head. The public simply does not know how devious intelligence agencies can be.

The best a whistleblower can do is to get the word out and let the public be the judge. I am indebted to those MK-ULTRA Monarch survivor-whistleblowers who trod this path before me including Cathy O'Brian, Kathleen Sullivan, Carol Rutz, Brice Taylor and Fritz Springmeier.

CONCLUSION

"We must never forget how the world looks to those who are vulnerable" – Canadian Supreme Court Justice Rosalie Silberman Abella

Despite the suffering experienced, I still have some faith in my country and humankind. The actions of a few brave female Canadian intelligence officers did protect me from some foreign threats this year, but unfortunately not all. After the torture, drugging and forced confessions by the RCMP, to see other Canadian agents helping a Canadian (running interference surveillance) did move me and led me to hang a big Canadian flag on my porch.

In 2011 an anonymous, off-duty, Canadian soldier provided a correction to the tonnage of the truck/van used in the 2005 event. He had seen my manuscript posted on rabble.ca in 2010, since removed. This gives me hope.

I am also hopeful with the new Prime Minister Trudeau and his gender-balanced cabinet.

Bill C-51

If the Trudeau Liberals do not repeal Bill C-51 they will be abandoning the civil rights concerns well established as a Liberal Party traditional value going back to when Trudeau's father was Prime Minister.

C-51 benefits those in the security-apparatus, and the uber powerful, not the Canadian electorate. C-51 is designed to stifle dissent by enabling virtually anyone to be tagged a terrorist suspect because they sign petitions, protest against pipelines, against proroguing of parliament, for indigenous rights, or whatever. Once tagged, the citizen is subject to unending invasions of their privacy and communications, approaches from entrappers or agent provocateurs, all to effect more societal control.

While the Prime Minister repeals C-51, he should also repeal former PM Harper's policy allowing information to be used that is obtained from torture. It violates everything Canada stands for. Reliable information is not gained from someone under torture. Torture has been used for centuries to get forced confessions and still today that is its function; every regime that allows it is autocratic.

Of course the Prime Minister should also withdraw former PM

Harper's new policy of allowing foreign country officers to carry their guns in Canada.

I also have faith from the many Americans, Canadians, Commonwealth citizens and citizens of Norwegian countries who have reached out to me and offered not only support, but also a helping hand with crowd source campaign editing, and donations to my modest book crowd source campaign.

Summary

There is a significant economic and human cost to the CICA mind-control R & D done in Canada with RCMP assistance. The human cost of the program is staggering to the direct and indirect victims, their families, friends, neighbours, and even the businesses they frequent and their staff.

The taxpayer cost of medical care for those affected, and police investigations of crimes committed by CICA, which are never solved, and lost productivity to all involved is not insignificant.

America's CICA has shown little regard for the health, wealth and safety of the civilians of their closest ally, neither has that ally's own paramilitary, in fact they enabled it. There is no regard for the test subjects themselves, or for the 'collateral damage' to families and communities.

The RCMP has supported CICA with my telephone intercepts throughout, as confirmed with numerous 'bait tests'. The RCMP physically assisted in 2005 Nov JC UC 05 torture interrogation and mind-control training exercise, 2007 Q3 van abduction with forced electroshock, and 2015 May home invasion forced confession.

This is not the Cold War era. These are crimes against humanity. The RCMP should be stripped of all national security and intelligence work. If the Prime Minister or any reader does not understand the systemic problems with the RCMP, and why they need massive reform, they should read Paul Palango's excellent, informed analysis in "Dispersing the Fog: Inside the Secret World of Ottawa and the RCMP". They have always lacked effective oversight. The PM's new global civilian review agency should immediately be implemented for direct supervision of the RCMP.

Security Intelligence agencies of America cannot be caught experimenting on their own citizens. This is why citizens of their closest ally are used as Guinea Pigs with RCMP support.

Since the RCMP is an organ of the Canadian government, the government is complicit in law-biding Canadians selected by the RCMP to have their lives devastated as CICA mind-control, and weapons test experimental subjects. If after a decade a test subject continues to whistle blow, we become the subject of repeated lethal weapons tests until we die.

If we don't die quick enough from fatal weapons tests, the CICA forces us during home invasions to inhale from inhalers unknown substances (carcinogens?) at gunpoint, unknown pills and injections and worse. How long will the Canadian federal government continue to allow Canadians to be used as Guinea Pigs?

This is cold war thinking. That dated security-apparatus pseudo-ethic of utilitarianism goes something like this: "Weapons need to be tested on someone. That's the price of defense. If some get hurt, that's for the greater good." Utilitarianism is a slippery slope. How many is too many to sacrifice? 5, 500, 5000? How many do you say is okay to write off, for the 'greater good'?

The knowledge gained from the CICA mind-control experiments on Canadians is useful only for nefarious, Geneva-convention violating activities: creating non-consensual spies and sex slaves, and creating actors and patsies for manufactured false-flag hate crimes, assassinations, and terror events to manipulate public opinion.

The public is terrorized and deceived into supporting Orwellian suspensions of their civil rights, and the waging of wars overseas to 'get the terrorists'. Is this R & D really in Canada's interest? No, it is a relic of Cold War ideology and it should be stopped, to quote the Prime Minister as to why he has a gender-balanced cabinet, "Because its 2015".

In Canada, on the very day the Conservative caucus was sitting down to work out the implementation of Bill C-51 in 2015, a Michael Zehaf-Bibeau burst into the Canadian Parliament with a rifle after shooting Corporal Nathan Cirillo at a war memorial out front. Zehaf-Bibeau was shot 31 times. The legislators and public were so terrorized that PM Harper easily rushed the rights-suspending Bill C-51 through parliament.

In his 'Jihad' confession video shot on his cell phone five minutes before the shooting, Zehalf-Bibeau could not keep his upper eyelids higher than his pupils, a Scopolamine signature. The RCMP commissioner Bob Paulson announced to the media the drugs Zehalf-Bibeau had been tested for, and it did not include Scopolamine. Paulson was the head of the National Security department in November 2005 when the RCMP assisted my torture-interrogation in JC UC 05.

My Cultural Anthropologist and Sociologist professor father (American by birth) frequently wrote about American and Canadian cultural differences. At his memorial in 2009 another professor recalled that as a Ph.D. student he asked my father to help him understand the relationship between America and Canada.

My father replied, “To understand this relationship you need to study the historical relationship between England and Scotland.” The professor reported that this greatly increased his understanding, and felt it was a profound observation.

For those who forgot this history, I recommend viewing the movie “Braveheart” (1995). Also see “Conspiracy Theory” (1997) featuring torture-interrogation scenes quite close to what I endured. (I do not endorse Mel Gibson’s past off-screen, drunk, intolerant rants.)

My father once said, “Matthew, don’t ever wrap yourself in the Canadian flag and be a patriot of Canada…. They will kill you for it.” July 1, Canada Day I hung a four-foot Canadian flag over my front porch, and I have not taken it down since. It’s a symbolic act of sovereignty, not a war-mongering one.

The primary damage of this human experimentation is the mostly US based, false-flag terror events. A dozen or more innocents, often students, are executed in school or a public place, by a ‘lone wolf terrorist’ whose body is never tested for Scopolamine.

The actor(s) leave a message attributing their act to the bogeyman ideology of the day. The latest was in San Bernadino. Now this has spread to Canada with the Parliament Hill 2014 event, and the unusual stabbings in Toronto in the last half of December 2015.

Those charged with terrorism, hate crimes and random murders must be tested for Scopolamine so we may stop the deception. Since NASA recently developed the aerosol form of Scopolamine, it’s dangerously easy to mind-control anyone using a single spray to the face.

Since I have witnessed a consistent working relationship between the RCMP and CICA in performing MK-ULTRA mind-control, drug, and chemical weapon tests on non-consenting Canadians, there must be an agreement to define this partnership. By definition this activity violates Geneva Conventions. The new Liberal government must cancel that agreement forthwith. The RCMP must be stripped of the National Security Service role again, since its obvious they have crept back into it, and abused their powers horribly.

RCMP and Cognitive Dissonance

Some readers may believe the RCMP is beyond reproach. That was certainly what we were taught in school. To lessen the Cognitive Dissonance here is a small subset of documented RCMP wrongdoings.

1971: RCMP Theft of dynamite. In April a team of RCMP officers broke into Richelieu Explosives, and stole dynamite. A year later, officers hid four cases of dynamite in Mont Saint-Grégoire, in an attempt to link the explosives with the FLQ.[37]

1972: RCMP Burned down a barn. They were concerned separatists might have a meeting with Black Panthers there. A judge would not give them a warrant to bug the place. They burned it down.[38]

1973: RCMP Committed a break-in, and stole the PQ membership list. Operation HAM. They stole and then hid it away secretly for years, then burned it.[39]

1974: RCMP Security Service Corporal Robert Samson was arrested at a hospital after a failed bombing. Sampson claimed he had done worse things than plant bombs.[40]

1978: RCMP Break-ins and bombing. Director of the RCMP criminal operations branch, admitted the RCMP has entered more than 400 premises without warrant since 1970.[41]

1981: Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau's Liberal government exposed Operation HAM it in the 1977-1981 McDonald Commission into the RCMP's dirty tricks campaign. This led to the force being *stripped* of its security service duties and the creation of the civilian Canadian Security Intelligence Service (CSIS).

2002-2007: Torture Scandal: The stories of Ahmad El Maati, Abdullah Almalki and Maher Arar

"On September 26, 2002, during a stopover in New York City en route from a family vacation in Tunisia to Montreal, Maher Arar was detained by the United States Immigration and Naturalization Service, acting upon information supplied by the RCMP. Arar was sent to Syria where he was imprisoned for more than 10 months, tortured and forced to sign a false confession that he had trained in Al Qaeda camps in Afghanistan….

Like Arar, Ahmad El Maati, Abdullah Almalki and Muayyed Nureddin are Canadian Muslim men who were detained and tortured overseas while under investigation by Canadian investigators. They were all detained when they arrived in Syria and taken to the same Syrian detention centre — the Far' Falastin, or Palestine Branch — of the Syrian Military Intelligence. All were tortured. All were interrogated by the same Syrian interrogation team, who accused them all of links to terrorism using information and questions that could only have originated with Canadian agencies."[42]

2006: The RCMP helped throw the 2006 election to the Conservative government as so well written by James Tavers, Toronto Star Columnist in "An Eloquent Plea for Democracy" in 2011[43]. The new government subsequently introduced mandatory prison terms and built many new jails despite Canada's falling crime rate, and later introduced the draconian 'anti-terror' Bill C-51, which effectively turned the RCMP into a secret police and suspended many civil liberties, i.e. The RCMP manipulated the political process for their gain.

2009: "RCMP bombed an oil installation as part of a dirty tricks campaign in their investigation into sabotage in the Alberta's oil patch… Their lawyer produced evidence that the RCMP bombed a well site and that they did it with the full support of the energy company that owned it. The Crown admits the allegations are true." - "RCMP bomb oil site in 'dirty tricks' campaign" - CBC News Canada, 01/30/99[44]

2015: "Monty Robinson Sentence: Disgraced B.C. Mountie Jailed For Perjury"[45] A Polish immigrant Robert Dziekanski was stranded in an airport for ten hours upon arriving in Canada. He was worried and upset. He could not speak English. He died after he was tasered many times by a group of RCMP, because he had a stapler in his hand. Several officers then lied during a Public Inquiry and two-served jail time.

In my case, they used torture on a civilian, and drugs to get a forced terror confession twice, staring in Nov 2005 in JC UC 05 as an Arab Muslim Extremist terrorist complete with a script I was forced to repeat.

In the May, 2015 event the RCMP officer was careful to only enter the house once Mitch had already drugged and tortured me. This CICA officer let the RCMP officer in to a crime scene in progress, and the RCMP officer took advantage to get a forced terror confession as I lay drugged and tortured on my bed. Then an officer threatened me two weeks later based on this torture-confession. This is not democracy.

While these events happened three blocks from the geographical center of Canada’s largest city, this is not the Canada that many Canadians gave their lives for in WW II, and in other wars.

I submit its been proven twice now that the RCMP should not be involved in security service work. First by P.E. Trudeau’s 1977-1981 McDonald Commission into the RCMP's dirty tricks campaign, and second, with this report.

There is an idiom: “Fool me once, shame on you; fool me twice, shame on me.”

We allow foreign intelligence officers to carry their guns in Canada thanks to a new policy by former PM Harper, but our own intelligence officers (CSIS) are not allowed to. Our paramilitary (RCMP) carry guns, but they help foreign forces in Geneva Convention violating human experimentation on Canadians.

Several times I have seen RCMP officers defer to the CICA officer. In the van in Nov 2005, only the JTF2 officer asserted Canada’s interests, never did the RCMP officer; he was more of a gopher boy to the CICA officer.

We need to clean up our own backyard. We cannot blame the USA for entering into an agreement with us during the Cold War. We must focus our efforts on cleaning up our own act regarding the Canadian actors in this Geneva Convention violating human R & D.

I know there are at least three others like me in Toronto through my own investigations, and by extrapolation likely a dozen. A country that turns a blind eye to systemic Geneva Convention violations is not a just society.

If politicians are afraid of the RCMP, then they should do something proactive, use their legislative powers accordingly. We need a special armed intelligence unit made up of cross-trained JTF2 and CSIS agents to take over what security service duties the RCMP currently have, to dovetail into CSIS and JTF2.

If we do not stop MK-ULTRA R & D, we Canadians will continue to be partly responsible for the deployment of torture-trauma, Scopolamine mind-control slaves in false-flag operations, mostly in the USA. Thousands more innocents will die, all the for sake of terrorizing the population with ‘lone wolf gunman’ ideological terror events to achieve nefarious public opinion manipulation.

The best and brightest peaceful leaders in politics and art will continue to be ‘plausibly deniably’ assassinated by dark forces. John F. Kennedy and John Lennon’s official killers were nothing more than MK-ULTRA patsies with no motivation to kill. Both targets were anti-war, disregarded secret societies, had enormous positive sway of public opinion and were seen as threats to the uber powerful. Martin Luther King Jr., Malcolm X, the list goes on.

Even when we halt MK-ULTRA R & D in Canada we still require a regulation that all those charged with hate crimes, assassinations, and terror offences are tested for Scopolamine. That needs to be our litmus test for the authenticity of crimes designed to frighten the public. Journalists should be asking the police on camera whether Scopolamine has been tested for when reporting on these crimes.

If we fail, our democracies will continue to crumble through deception and manipulation. Those that profit from war will continue to consolidate power. We will slide into a single global government ruled by the uber powerful enslaving all.

"Our lives are summarized on our gravestones with two dates with a dash in the middle. Make the most of the dash." - unknown

---

[37] http://faculty.marianopolis.edu/c.belanger/quebechistory/chronos/october.htm

[38] http://faculty.marianopolis.edu/c.belanger/quebechistory/chronos/october.htm

[39] http://canadalibre.ca/en_anglais/divers/rcmp-flq-and-state-terrorism/canadas-watergate/

[40] http://victoria.tc.ca/~d.piney/RCMP-lawlessness.htm

[41] http://faculty.marianopolis.edu/c.belanger/quebechistory/chronos/october.htm

[42] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_controversies_involving_the_Royal_Canadian_Mounted_Police

[43] http://www.thestar.com/news/canada/2011/03/04/an_eloquent_plea_for_democracy.html

[44] http://www.cbc.ca/news/canada/rcmp-bombed-oil-site-in-dirty-tricks-campaign-1.188599

[45] http://www.huffingtonpost.ca/2015/07/24/monty-robinson-sentence_n_7866924.html

APPENDIX I - Signs of a Sleeper

These are all based on my own experience as a non-consensual MK-ULTRA Monarch mind-control, R & D test subject. I have been high-dosed on Scopolamine at least four times.

1. High-dosage Scopolamine is required to remove free will in the subject. The signs of Scopolamine impairment are:
    - a. Dilated pupils
    - b. The victim will want water as they will have a very dry mouth
    - c. Droopy eyelids: The upper eyelid rests lower on the eye than normal, almost obscuring the top part of the pupil
    - d. Very foul bad breath: Scopolamine clearing in the body causes foul gases to be released by the lungs, ergo the Indigenous name for Scopolamine from Columbian First Peoples "Devil's Breath"
    - e. Heavy legs: loss of strength in the legs requiring extra will power just to stand up right, walk, and run
    - f. Heavy head: The subject may have trouble keeping their head held up straight, e.g. they might be slightly "bobbing" their head while seated
    - g. Loss of willpower: subject will do virtually whatever they are told with no resistance, including acts of violence especially when combined with torture-trauma dissociation and hypnosis
    - h. Post-event amnesia: Scopolamine intoxication in itself causes amnesia for 3 to 5 days following the time period the person was intoxicated (will be at least several hours.) Usually a subject is torture-trauma dissociated concurrently, which in itself causes amnesia from months to many years, and even decades
2. The Scopolamine intoxication is combined with torture-trauma to cause dissociation, and finally the subject is put in a hypnotic trance. Signs of a hypnotic trance:
    - a. 'Clear Eyes' is the intelligence community code for an active sleeper. The subject's eyes are vacant, and staring blankly
    - b. There are abrupt changes in behaviour when previously programmed triggers (through hypnosis) are present. If changes include personality change, even voice change, this is known as an 'alter'. Triggers can include hearing a person's name, or a sentence spoken, and even non-verbal including hearing a particular air-horn sounded a specific number

of times, being shown a fabric of a certain colour or pattern, and even light shone in their eyes of a rare color signature. For triggers to invoke dangerous behaviour, two of the above are layered to prevent accidental triggering. The audible triggers can even be effectively delivered by a phone call. This last point is just a repeat of declassified MK-ULTRA CIA documents, see http://wanttoknow.info ‘mind control’ topic

APPENDIX II - Time Line of Events

2005
Q3 Q4
2006
Q1 Q2 Q3 Q4
2007
Q1 Q2 Q3 Q4
2008
Q1 Q2

11/22 - 9:35 PM
Coerced into Van on Montgomery Avenue, Toronto for Training Exercise (JC UC 05): Restraints, electricity, eyelid taping, flood lights, physical and sexual assault, Drugs X 3, Torture-to-Dissociation w/electricity, Hypnosis, lethal post-hypnotic suggestions, Forced Confession as Arab terrorist, Warned not to talk ('Mitch' JTF&CICA, 'Red' JTF2, 'Burly' RCMP, Two heroic regular CF)

7:00 PM
"Snatch and Grab" into Van On King Street, Toronto: Headlock, Inhalant soaked Rag over nose & mouth, Forced electroshock, Warned never to tell anyone ('Mitch' JTF&CICA, 'Burly' RCMP, In van, other JTF in black op)

8:00 PM
"Snatch and Grab" from elevator at work on King Street. Awoke in another country. Drugs X 3, Torture-to-Dissociation w/burning cigarette, Hypnosis + post-hypnotic suggestions, Coercion with loaded weapon, test ('Mitch' JTF&CICA, plus two JTF)

Ten days of Bumperlock Surveillance including handgun pointed at me after posting the 2005 three lethal post-hypnotic suggestions on rabble.ca (CICA-contracted Agency X)

21st 7:00 AM
Montgomery Ave, Toronto
Scopolamine Fog
Weapons test, Did lay false-trail (bait) in Web browsing 06/20
('Mitch' JTF&CICA, and other JTF)

9th 3-4:00 PM
Montgomery Ave, Toronto
Poison-marker pen test (weapons test/trap) JTF officer 'Lanky'

2015
Jan
Feb
Mar
Apr
May
Jun

First week,
1. Daytime
Home Invasion:
Physical torture,
Drugs X 1,
Torture-to
-dissociation,
Hypnosis,
Interrogation,
Experiments,
Sex. Assault
('Mitch'
JTF&CICA)

2. Evening
Abduction to Bank
then Warehouse:
Torture-to-
dissociation,
Hypnosis,
Drugs X 1,
Coercion w
Experiment w/other
('Mitch' JTF&CICA +
One JTF)
[Bank records of chq
acct opening]

Daytime
Home Invasion:
Phys. Torture,
Drugs X 1,
Torture-to-
Dissociation,
Hypnosis,
Experiments,
Forced
Confession,
Mitch's Nazi alter
interrogates
about Jewish
friends jobs,
home addresses
('Mitch'
JTF&CICA, RCMP
present for
Forced
Confession)

4th ~3:15 PM
Edith Drive,
Toronto
Weapon
Test/
Assassination
attempt:
Heart-attack
Nicotine liquid
gun ('Mitch'
JTF&CICA,
likely other
JTF)

The Most Dangerous Book in the World

9/11 as Mass Ritual

By S.K. Bain

THE MOST DANGEROUS BOOK IN THE WORLD – 9/11 AS MASS RITUAL
COPYRIGHT © 2012 S.K. BAIN. ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.
PRESENTATION COPYRIGHT © 2012 TRINE DAY, LLC

Published by:
Trine Day LLC
PO Box 577
Walterville, OR 97489
1-800-556-2012
www.TrineDay.com
publisher@TrineDay.net

Library of Congress Control Number: 2012944885

Bain, S.K.
The Most Dangerous Book in the World– 9/11 as Mass Ritual—1st ed.
p. cm. (acid-free paper)
Includes references.
Epud (ISBN-13) 978-1-937584-19-1
Mobi (ISBN-13) 978-1-937584-18-4
Print (ISBN-13) 978-1-937584-17-7
1. September 11 Terrorist Attacks, 2001. 2. Psychological warfare -- United States -- History -- 21st century. 3. Occultism -- Political aspects -- United States. 4. Secret societies -- United States. 5. Conspiracies -- United States. 6. Political corruption -- United States. I. Bain, S.K. II. Title

FIRST EDITION
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Printed in the USA
Distribution to the Trade by:
Independent Publishers Group (IPG)
814 North Franklin Street
Chicago, Illinois 60610
312.337.0747
www.ipgbook.com

PROLOGUE

KNOCK, KNOCK

It was inevitable that this book would be written.

There is, among conspiracy afficionadoes, a kind of brotherhood. (I use the gender-specific term "brotherhood" deliberately.) It is a brotherhood buried alive. What does that mean?

Imagine a person buried alive. Imagine yourself. You are equal parts alive and dead. You are in your own tomb; you feel the sensations of mortality with a keenness you never did before. Death approaches. Or maybe it has already arrived and you just don't know it yet. Edgar Allen Poe wrote about it.

More importantly, such premature burial is an essential part of the Masonic initiation ceremony of the third degree. To be ritually and symbolically slain, buried, and raised again is a feature of many initiatory programs around the world, from Siberian shamanism to quaint nineteenth century English secret societies. It is a liminal event: you are on the threshold of living and dying, and in that sacred spot you can see in both directions.

Conspiracy theorists are kind of like that. They have one foot in the world of mainstream history and culture, what Robert Anton Wilson used to call "consensus reality." That's the world where most of us live. We are all products of that world, and of the ideas and worldview it represents. We are trained in this world virtually from birth: school, church, government, media all conspire to present an image—a picture—of reality that will result in the development of perfect citizens in an easily-managed society. There is a social contract: we contribute to this society with the expectation that we will receive goods and services in return. We obey the laws that are created by other people, believing that our best interests are being addressed thereby. We fight in wars declared by our governments in order to preserve our society: this carefully-structured, albeit artificial, society.

And all is right with the world.

But conspiracy theorists have their other foot … well, somewhere else. Not everyone is asleep to the darker mechanisms of reality. In fact, everyone becomes aware of them at some point in their lives. Everyone questions. The very nature of reality itself is at times so hostile to human life that human institutions must be challenged for their inadequate protection of their constituents. Conspiracy theorists seize on this inadequacy as evidence of the tenuousness of consensus reality. There are other forces at work, forces that are unacknowledged by the state, the church, the media because to admit their existence is to admit failure. Thus, when things go wrong terrorists are blamed, or communists, or witches. This serves to rally the citizens around the government once again, instead of stopping to insist that explanations be given, that evidence is properly analyzed, that the guilty are apprehended and punished. And we once more go to war, against … someone, somewhere.

Paranoia becomes institutionalized. It is appropriated by the government as its own prerogative. The state determines the nature and quality of the paranoia: it creates intelligence agencies whose sole purpose is to give a form to paranoia, to enshrine paranoia as one of the necessary qualities of an observant and caring state. To prove that paranoia is an acceptable characterisic of the paternalistic regime.

The citizens are not allowed to become paranoid unless it is at government direction and sanction. Individual cases of paranoia are frowned upon. The state tells us that if we are not paranoid the way it is paranoid—and about the same things—it's because we don't have all the facts: about terrorism, fundamentalism, communism, foreign countries, weapons of mass destruction, sleeper cells. The state has all the facts: classified documents, wire-tap transcripts, intelligence feeds, high-altitude reconnaissance images, none of which the citizen is permitted to see.

It does not realize that the logical conclusion of all this paranoia is suspicion of the state apparatus itself.

What the conspiracy theorist often fails to realize, however, is that those working for the state are often just as clueless as the average citizen when it comes to the origin and function of the forces at work to subvert it. The strength of a conspiracy, after all, rests in the limited number of persons who are aware of its existence and parameters. No one has the entire picture. Each member of the state apparatus only has possession of a single piece of an enormous jigsaw puzzle. Putting together all these disparate pieces—particularly when one does not have the original picture to work from—is a soul-destroying enterprise that consumes decades of work and years of one's life. This is especially true when the state has in its arsenal of lies the techniques of disinformation and misdirection, of false testimony and planted documents.

Anyone who works with this material eventually comes to that realization. But the motivation to keep digging is still alive; the urge to uncover one more piece of the puzzle, one more document, is perhaps a central characteristic not only of the conspiracy theorist but of human nature itself. The more intelligent of the theorists soon come to realize that Hansel and Gretel have left breadcrumbs everywhere, in no discernible pattern. Thus, the inclination among some of the best to stop looking for the children and start looking for the Witch.

The deeper one delves into the conspiracy literature, the more one is struck by the tendency of some theorists to look beyond the documents and the tangible evidence of government malfeasance or political conspiracy to more transcendental sources of power. One begins with the government agents, the spies, the politicians, the military and soon gravitates towards the secret societies: the Freemasons and the Illuminati (among so many others). This involves studying their texts, their social structures, their stated goals, their secret conclaves, their antinomian beliefs and practices.

One comes face to face with the Occult.

A strange journey, indeed, from a presidential assassination to an interview with the Devil.

Yet, once one has made the leap from BU-Files and documents stamped LIMDIS and NOFORN to grimoires and magical diaries, it all seems to hang together… for awhile. New sources of evidence become available. New testimony appears. Weird cults are seen linked to secret government machinations. George Washington was a Freemason. So was Simon Bolivar. And Gerald Ford. What does it *mean*?

It would take a 21st century Kabbalist to figure it out. Someone with knowledge of codes and decoding. Someone like the author of this book, S.K. Bain. Someone who was observant enough to notice the details most of us ignore, since we have not been trained that way. Since we have not done the reading.

It needs someone who is as versed in Kabbalah as in conspiracy, in gematria as in government. It requires a new science, a new art, a new approach to the old material. Furthermore, it requires a sense that conspiracy may be transcendental, may have its origins in the unconscious mind of the state. The numerology alone is significant: someone, somewhere is pulling these particular quantum strings. The numbers are consistent, insistent. They are either the result of a conscious and deliberate series of acts by agents so powerful and so unknown that a belief in an ultimate Secret Society is our only option, or they are evidence of the workings of an even Darker Force … and no one is in charge.

This is where S.K. Bain comes in. He notices things. He sees patterns in the dates, names, places, and documents that most of us either ignore or can't see on our best days. I have stayed away from 9/11 conspiracy theorizing since there are already a lot of people doing that and I have nothing of value to add to the conversation. That is not true of S.K. Bain. What the author adds to the ongoing dialogue about 9/11 transcends the hideous events of that day and extends into other times, other spaces. This is new material, a new approach to the conspiracies and cover-ups that surround the day that—in the view of the mainstream media—"changed everything" (although many of us know better, know that nothing had changed, know that it was the twentieth century taken to its logical conclusion).

What is more, Bain develops his thesis with a rare sense of humor and style. This is not merely another angry diatribe about government complicity and corruption. This is not the work of a man who sees reptiles in human form, or Jewish-Masonic plots hatched in Czech cemeteries. Bain doesn't scream at you. He doesn't try to shout you down. Instead, his prose is written with a sense of astonished discovery that invites us in, to share in his startled and startling conclusions.

Bain may very well be the 21st century Kabbalist we have been waiting for, and this—*The Most Dangerous Book in the World*—may prove to be his *Sepher Yetzirah*, his *Zohar*, his *Liber 777*.

As someone who writes about the link between magic and politics, between ritual and conspiracy, I can recommend this text for its revolutionary approach to the central political event of our recent history. Many times during reading I found myself thinking of other connections, other links to earlier events, all suggested by Bain's Kabbalah. Whether or not you believe in a conspiracy surrounding 9/11 is not really important. The nature of Bain's argument is such that you will find your mind expanded by the new possibilities, the arcane potentialities lurking behind political and historical events. By choosing to see 9/11 as a ritual on a massive scale, we paradoxically may better be able to understand it, to accommodate it's message on a psychological—even spiritual—level as we approach the end of 2012 and the birth of a new aeon.

You may be mystified by Bain's work. You may be frustrated, exalted, annoyed, confused, even relieved … but you will not be bored. Read it alongside the newspaper, the blog, and the television news and see how much the reality around you begins to shift and change in ways you would never have foreseen, all because Bain has challenged you to look at the details, to notice the numbers, to see beyond the official statements and the spin, to the unseen patterns behind the great Dramaturgy of our times.

Good luck.

Peter Levenda – July 2012

"All the News
That's Fit to Print"

The New York Times

Late Edition
New York: **Today**, sunny, a few afternoon clouds. High 77. **Tonight**, slightly more humid. Low 65. **Tomorrow**, sun then clouds. High 81. **Yesterday**, high 81, low 63. Weather map, Page C19.

VOL. CL . . No. 51,874 — NEW YORK, WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 12, 2001 — 75 CENTS

U.S. ATTACKED

HIJACKED JETS DESTROY TWIN TOWERS AND HIT PENTAGON IN DAY OF TERROR

A CREEPING HORROR

Buildings Burn and Fall as Onlookers Search for Elusive Safety

By N. R. KLEINFIELD

It kept getting worse.

The horror arrived in episodic bursts of chilling disbelief, signified first by trembling floors, sharp eruptions, cracked windows. There was the actual unfathomable realization of a gaping, flaming hole in first one of the tall towers, and then the same thing all over again in its twin. There was the merciless sight of bodies helplessly tumbling out, some of them in flames.

Finally, the mighty towers themselves were reduced to nothing. Dense plumes of smoke raced through the downtown avenues, coursing between the buildings, shaped like tornadoes on their sides.

Every sound was cause for alarm. A plane appeared overhead. Was another one coming? No, it was a fighter jet. But was it friend or enemy? People scrambled for their lives, but they didn't know where to go. Should they go north, south, east, west? Stay outside, go indoors? People hid beneath cars and each other. Some contemplated jumping into the river.

For those trying to flee the very epicenter of the collapsing World Trade Center towers, the most horrid thought of all finally dawned on them: nowhere was safe.

For several panic-stricken hours yesterday morning, people in Lower Manhattan witnessed the unexpressible, the incomprehensible, the unthinkable. "I don't know what the gates of hell look like, but it's got to be like this," said John Maloney, a security director for an Internet firm in the trade center. "I'm a combat veteran, Vietnam, and I never saw anything like this."

The first warnings were small ones. Blocks away, Jim Farmer, a film composer, was having breakfast at a small restaurant on West Broadway. He heard the sound of a jet. An odd sound — too loud, it seemed, to be

Continued on Page A7

A Somber Bush Says Terrorism Cannot Prevail

By ELISABETH BUMILLER
with DAVID E. SANGER

WASHINGTON, Sept. 11 — President Bush vowed tonight to retaliate against those responsible for today's attacks on New York and Washington, declaring that he would "make no distinction between the terrorists who committed these acts and those who harbor them."

"These acts of mass murder were intended to frighten our nation into chaos and retreat, but they have failed," the president said in his first speech to the nation from the Oval Office. "Our country is strong. Terrorist acts can shake the foundation of our biggest buildings, but they cannot touch the foundation of America."

His speech came after a day of trauma that seems destined to define his presidency. Seeking to at once calm the nation and declare his determination to exact retribution, he told a country numbed by repeated scenes of carnage that "these acts shattered steel, but they cannot dent the steel of American resolve."

Mr. Bush spoke only hours after returning from a zigzag course across the country, as his Secret Service and military security teams moved him from Florida, where he woke up this morning expecting to press for his education bill, to command posts in Louisiana and Nebraska before it was determined the attacks had probably ended and he could safely return to the capital.

It was a sign of the catastrophic

Continued on Page A4

AMERICAN TARGETS A ball of fire exploded outward after the second of two jetliners slammed into the World Trade Center; less than two hours later, both of the 110-story towers were gone. Hijackers crashed a third airliner into the Pentagon, setting off a huge explosion and fire.

President Vows to Exact Punishment for 'Evil'

By SERGE SCHMEMANN

Hijackers rammed jetliners into each of New York's World Trade Center towers yesterday, toppling both in a hellish storm of ash, glass, smoke and leaping victims, while a third jetliner crashed into the Pentagon in Virginia. There was no official count, but President Bush said thousands had perished, and in the immediate aftermath the calamity was already being ranked the worst and most audacious terror attack in American history.

The attacks seemed carefully coordinated. The hijacked planes were all en route to California, and therefore gorged with fuel, and their departures were spaced within an hour and 40 minutes. The first, American Airlines Flight 11, a Boeing 767 out of Boston for Los Angeles, crashed into the north tower at 8:48 a.m. Eighteen minutes later, United Airlines Flight 175, also headed from Boston to Los Angeles, plowed into the south tower.

Then an American Airlines Boeing 757, Flight 77, left Washington's Dulles International Airport bound for Los Angeles, but instead hit the western part of the Pentagon, the military headquarters where 24,000 people work, at 9:40 a.m. Finally, United Airlines Flight 93, a Boeing 757 flying from Newark to San Francisco, crashed near Pittsburgh, raising the possibility that its hijackers had failed in whatever their mission was.

SECOND PLANE United Airlines Flight 175 nearing the trade center's south tower.

There were indications that the hijackers on at least two of the planes were armed with knives. Attorney General John Ashcroft told reporters in the evening that the suspects on Flight 11 were armed that way. And Barbara Olson, a television commentator who was traveling on American Flight 77, managed to reach her husband, Solicitor General Theodore Olson, by cell phone and to tell him that the hijackers were armed with knives and a box cutter.

In all, 266 people perished in the four planes and several score more were known dead elsewhere. Numerous firefighters, police officers and other rescue workers who responded to the initial disaster in Lower Manhattan were killed or injured when the buildings collapsed. Hundreds were treated for cuts, broken bones, burns and smoke inhalation.

But the real carnage was concealed for now by the twisted, smoking, ash-choked carcasses of the twin towers, in which thousands of people used to work on a weekday. The collapse of the towers caused another World Trade Center building to fall 7 hours later, and several

Continued on Page A14

Awaiting the Aftershocks

Washington and Nation Plunge Into Fight With Enemy Hard to Identify and Punish

By R. W. APPLE Jr.

News Analysis

WASHINGTON, Sept. 11 — Today's devastating and astonishingly well-coordinated attacks on the World Trade Center towers in New York and on the Pentagon outside of Washington plunged the nation into a warlike struggle against an enemy that will be hard to identify with certainty and hard to punish with precision.

The whole nation — to a degree the whole world — shook as hijacked airliners plunged into buildings that symbolize the financial and military might of the United States. The sense of security and self-confidence that Americans take as their birthright suffered a grievous blow, from which recovery will be slow. The aftershocks will be nearly as bad, as hundreds and possibly thousands of people discover that friends or relatives died awful, fiery deaths.

Scenes of chaos and destruction evocative of the nightmare world of Hieronymus Bosch, with smoke and debris blotting out the sun, were carried by television into homes and workplaces across the nation. Echoing Franklin D. Roosevelt's description of the attack on Pearl Harbor as an event "which will live in infamy," Gov. George E. Pataki of New York, a Republican, spoke of "an incredible outrage" and Senator Charles E. Schumer of New York, a Democrat, spoke of "a dastardly attack."

But mere words were inadequate vessels to contain the sense of shock and horror that people felt.

As Washington struggled to regain a sense of equilibrium, with warplanes and heavily armed helicopters crossing overhead, past and present national security officials earnestly debated the possibility of a Congressional declaration of war — but against precisely whom, and in what exact circumstances? Warships were maneuvering to protect New York and Washington. The North American Air Defense Command, which had seemed to many a relic of the cold war, adopted a pos-

Continued on Page A24

MORE ON THE ATTACKS

RESCUERS BECOME VICTIMS Firefighters who rushed to the trade center were killed. PAGE A1

SEARCH FOR SURVIVORS Some people trapped in the rubble for hours were rescued. PAGE A1

OFFICIALS SUSPECT BIN LADEN Eavesdropping intercepts after the attacks were cited. PAGE A13

TERRORISTS EXPLOIT WEAKNESS Investigators had criticized precautions against hijacking. PAGE A17

CASUALTIES IN WASHINGTON An unknown number of people were killed at the Pentagon. PAGE A5

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PROLOGUE – Knock, Knock ....by Peter Levenda v

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS xiii
INTRODUCTION 1
FOREWORD 9

SECTION ONE – The Production

CHAPTER ONE – Author, Author 13
CHAPTER TWO – Man and His Symbols 17
CHAPTER THREE – Playbill 21
CHAPTER FOUR – *The Pet Goat* 29
CHAPTER FIVE – Action! 39
CHAPTER SIX – Ritual Murder as Mind Control 49
CHAPTER SEVEN – "Let's Roll" 53
CHAPTER EIGHT – Moving Mountains 61
CHAPTER NINE – Kansas? 67
CHAPTER TEN – Epilogue: Over But Not Finished 75

SECTION TWO – The Producers

CHAPTER ELEVEN – *Pièce de résistance*: 9/11—"Evil Magic" 79
CHAPTER TWELVE – The Astrological Foundations of the 9/11 MegaRitual 83
CHAPTER THIRTEEN – Silent Overseer of the 9/11 MegaRitual 87
CHAPTER FOURTEEN – Connecting the Dates: A *Sirius* Affair 91
CHAPTER FIFTEEN – New Year's Day and the Malevolent Mega-Talismans 97
CHAPTER SIXTEEN – Are you Sirius? 101
CHAPTER SEVENTEEN – The Gates of Hell: Satanic Sacrificial Mega-Altars 103
CHAPTER EIGHTEEN – A Massive Ceremonial Complex 107
CHAPTER NINETEEN – The Millenium Hilton: An Inspired Creation 115

SECTION THREE – The Book and Score

CHAPTER TWENTY – Pike's Palladian Rite and Dem Bones 121
CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE – The Reconstructed Script for the 9/11 Occult MegaRitual 127
CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO – Two Final 11s, and the Question of Time 131
CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE – The Red Pill 135
CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR – A Final Insult 143

BONUS CHAPTERS

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE – The Face of Ahriman 145
CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX – Yet *More* 9/11 Crowley References? 149
CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN – "Historical Precedents" for the 9/11 MegaRitual 153
CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT – Continued Use of the Ceremonial Complex: One World Trade 157

APPENDIXES

APPENDIX A: The Usual Suspects in the Quest for World Domination 163
APPENDIX B: Excerpt from "Symbolic Literacy" (Part Two) 171
APPENDIX C: The Mohamed Atta Myth 175
APPENDIX D: (Satire) 9/11: A Conspiracy Theory 181
APENDIX E: Excerpt from "The Bush Family's 'Project Hammer'" 183

ADDENDUM from Hell …

The Next 9/11?

2012: Black Christmas

NOTICE TO STUDENTS 193

PROLOGUE – Are We There Yet? ....by Peter Levenda 195
FOREWORD 199

SECTION ONE – Black Christmas
CHAPTER ONE – Ho, Ho, Holy Sh*t 203
CHAPTER TWO – UnHoly War 207
CHAPTER THREE – The New Ground Zero 211
CHAPTER FOUR – The Occult Script for Black Christmas 213
CHAPTER FIVE – 17 Reprised, Washington's Surprise,The Trident (Again) & The Shocker 215
CHAPTER SIX – Route 93, The Return of Mr. Crowley, and Black Rain in the Land of Az 219

SECTION TWO – Meet the Cast
CHAPTER SEVEN – Secretary of Homeland Insecurity 225
CHAPTER EIGHT – Captain America 229
CHAPTER NINE – The Radiological Technologist Governor 233
CHAPTER TEN – America's Toughest Sheriff 241

SECTION THREE – The Ritual Proper
CHAPTER ELEVEN – Aleister Crowley's Liber44: The Mass of the Phoenix 255
CHAPTER TWELVE – The 2012 Galactic MegaRitual 263
CHAPTER THIRTEEN – A Hidden Biblical Prophecy, The Triple Cross and the Prophecy of the Last Pope .. 267
CHAPTER FOURTEEN – The Return of the Mahdi and World War III 273
CHAPTER FIFTEEN – Winning the War on Christmas 277
CHAPTER SIXTEEN – A Companion Ritual 281
CHAPTER SEVENTEEN – Amen Ra is Back 285
CHAPTER EIGHTEEN – The Astrology of Black Christmas and It's the Thought that Counts 287

SECTION FOUR – Public Rituals 'R' Us
CHAPTER NINETEEN – Shifting Gears 293
CHAPTER TWENTY – Killing Gabriel 295
CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE – The Joke's On Us 305
CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO – *Coup de Gras*: The Phoenix and the 33 315

BONUS CHAPTERS
CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE – Prescott Bush, Geronimo and Skull & Bones 329
CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR – Born Under a Bad Sign: The Year of the Serpent 333
CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE – The 2012 London Illuminati MegaSpectacle 339
CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX – The Illuminati End-of-Days Code 347

EPILOGUE – A Painful Remembrance 351

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This book represents a collaborative effort with dozens of contributors whom I've never met or corresponded with: countless bloggers and independent researchers who, like most of those captivated by the attacks of September 11, 2001, could only grope blindly in the dark and feel a small part of the humongous beast, not realizing its true dimensions—or its true nature.

I am no different—I simply managed to flail around in the darkness longer than most and encounter more, discover more... and begin piecing the together a fuller picture. This is not *my* book, it belongs to everyone who knows that 9/11 was a dark charade: I am merely the aggregator and interpreter, the storyteller.

Where I have failed to give proper attribution, acknowledgement or credit, know that it was unintentional. Any shortcomings, mistakes, errors, omissions or the like are my responsibility.

* * *

I would be remiss not to acknowledge the contributions of two researchers-authors in particular:

William Ramsey, author of *Prophet of Evil: Aleister Crowley, 9/11 and the New World Order*, whose work provided valuable insights; and Michael Hoffman, author of *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, whose prescient book helped make sense of the monstrosity that is 9/11.

Thanks to Kris Millegan at TrineDay for taking on this project—for encouraging me to write it, for key editorial suggestions and insights—and for his own writings and other publishing ventures that contributed to the development of this book.

Thanks also to Bobby King for his support and encouragement, and for understanding that just because you're paranoid doesn't mean they're not out to get you. (Well, what would you think if your mother's condominium burned to the ground the very morning you filled out a publishing contract for a book such as this?)

Lastly, I would like to express my deepest regrets to Nermal, the "forever kitten," who didn't survive the writing process due to a massive failure of patience on the part of the author late one night. PETA notice: animals *were* harmed during the production of this work.

* * *

It is my sincerest hope that this book will help bring the true perpetrators of 9/11 to justice, but after researching and writing this material I no longer believe that doing so is a viable possibility. The best we can hope for is to expose and to resist—and even this may play into the hands of those responsible for the attacks.

Abandon all hope, ye who enter here. (Not really, I just wanted to use that line.)

S.K. Bain

* * *

Excerpt from *None So Blind* (a lament):

> …the terror state Pollyanna class—blushing moderate, fatuous conservative, meretricious liberal and the theory-fatted poseur who casually squawks 'maybe they let it happen'—cower in their mutually-supporting antagonisms, sissy-slapping each other from their prescribed niches in a cultural circle-jerk necessarily excluding forensic analysis of 9/11. For that would confront each with something they simply don't wish to imagine, an agency whose cold-bloodedness they are not intellectually, emotionally nor spiritually equipped to confront. Thus do our wan Narcissuses parade as skeptics, assuring the fallible conspiracies just don't happen, that they can't be covered up, that people aren't that organized and the world is 'more complicated,' that those who think 'that way' are foolish really, a bit tardy mentally or not up to snuff…often lonely, perhaps deranged, even dangerous sometimes.[1]

THE BOOK OF THOTH
(Egyptian Tarot)

by
THE MASTER THERION
(Aleister Crowley)

Invocation of Thoth
(excerpt)

by Aleister Crowley

… I invoke Tahuti, the Lord of Wisdom and of Utterance,
the God that cometh forth from the Veil.
O Thou! Majesty of Godhead!
Wisdom-crowned Tahuti!

Lord of the Gates of the Universe
Thee, Thee, I invoke…
Behold! I am Yesterday, To-Day,
and the Brother of To-Morrow!
I am born again and again…
I see by mine own inward light: Lord of Resurrection;
Who cometh forth from the Dusk,
and my birth is from the House of Death.

I am Eternal; therefore all things are as my designs;
therefore do all things obey my Word.

Therefore do Thou come forth unto me
from Thine abode in the Silence:
Unutterable Wisdom! All-Light! All-Power!
Thoth! Hermes! Mercury! Odin!

By whatever name I call Thee,
Thou art still nameless to Eternity:
Come Thou forth, I say,
and aid and guard me in this work of Art.

Weather
Today: Sunny, pleasant. High 82. Low 60.
Thursday: Mostly sunny. High 82. Low 56.
Details, Page **B10**

The Washington Post

FINAL
25¢

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 12, 2001

Terrorists Hijack 4 Airliners, Destroy World Trade Center, Hit Pentagon; Hundreds Dead

Bodies Pulled From Pentagon; Troops Patrol District Streets

By Steve Twomey and Arthur Santana
Washington Post Staff Writers

Rescuers fought through tons of debris in quest of victims at the Pentagon last night after terrorists seized an airliner outbound from Dulles International Airport and plunged it into the heart of American military power, killing an estimated several hundred people.

Hampered by fires that still raged as evening fell, emergency teams had carried out only six bodies, but they were preparing to remove many more, and rescuers were using dogs and listening devices to search for people they believed might be trapped alive.

Precise figures were hard to come by because portions of the building were under construction, and many of the military and civilian personnel had been temporarily relocated, according to Arlington Fire Chief Edward P. Plaugher.

Coming less than an hour after two hijacked passenger jets slammed into the twin towers of New York's World Trade Center, the assault on the Pentagon began an unprecedented day of office and school closings, panicked phone calls, wild rumor and extraordinary security in the Washington area.

Last night, downtown streets were largely deserted as D.C. National Guard units joined police in patrolling the city. D.C. Mayor Anthony A. Williams (D), Maryland Gov. Parris N. Glendening (D) and Virginia Gov. James S. Gilmore III (R) declared states of emergency that broadened their power to govern without legislative authority.

Most of the region's school systems will be closed today, although President Bush announced that the federal government would reopen, after having shut down within an hour of yesterday's Pentagon attack.

At a late-evening news conference, D.C. Police Chief Charles H. Ramsey said that the attacks here and in New York would forever change security operations in Washington and that there was no longer such a thing as "business as usual" here.

Originally headed for Los Angeles, the American Airlines Boeing 757—carrying 64 people and loaded with 30,000 pounds of fuel for the long flight to the West Coast—

See PENTAGON, A18, Col. 1

Minutes after an American Airlines plane crashed into the World Trade Center in New York City, a United airliner is about to hit the complex.

Firefighters battle blazes at the Pentagon, which was hit by a plane that had been hijacked after taking off from Dulles International Airport.

Bush Promises Retribution; Military Put on Highest Alert

By Michael Grunwald
Washington Post Staff Writer

Terrorists unleashed an astonishing air assault on America's military and financial power centers yesterday morning, hijacking four commercial jets and then crashing them into the World Trade Center in New York, the Pentagon and the Pennsylvania countryside.

There were no reliable estimates last night of how many people were killed in the most devastating terrorist operation in American history. The number was certainly in the hundreds and could be in the thousands.

It was the most dramatic attack on American soil since Pearl Harbor, and it created indelible scenes of carnage and chaos. The commandeered jets obliterated the World Trade Center's twin 110-story towers from their familiar perch above Manhattan's skyline and ripped a blazing swath through the Defense Department's imposing five-sided fortress, grounding the domestic air traffic system for the first time and plunging the entire nation into an unparalleled state of anxiety.

U.S. military forces at home and abroad were placed on their highest state of alert, and a loose network of Navy warships was deployed along both coasts for air defense.

The terrorists hijacked four California-bound planes from three airports on the Eastern Seaboard; the airliners were loaded with the maximum amount of fuel, suggesting a well-financed, well-coordinated plot. First, two planes slammed into the World Trade Center. Then an American Airlines plane out of Dulles International Airport ripped through the newly renovated walls of the Pentagon, perhaps the world's most secure office building. A fourth jet crashed 80 miles southeast of Pittsburgh, shortly after it was hijacked and turned in the direction of Washington.

None of the 266 people aboard the four planes survived. There were even more horrific but still untallied casualties in the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, which together provided office space for more than 70,000 people. At just one of the firms with offices in the World Trade Center, the Marsh & McLennan insurance bro-

See ATTACK, A17, Col. 1

Washington

On Flight 77: 'Our Plane Is Being Hijacked'

By Marc Fisher and Don Phillips
Washington Post Staff Writers

There was not even the grace of instant death. Instead, there was time to call from the sky over Virginia, fingers punching cell phones, terrified passengers talking to loved ones for one final time.

Herded to the back of the plane by hijackers armed with knives and box-cutters, the passengers and crew members of American Airlines Flight 77—including the wife of Solicitor General Theodore Olson, a Senate staffer, three D.C. schoolchildren and three teachers on an educational field trip and a University Park family of four headed to Australia for a two-month adventure—were ordered to call relatives to say they were about to die.

About an hour after takeoff from Dulles International Airport yesterday morning, Flight 77, a Boeing 757 headed for Los Angeles with 64 people aboard, became a massive missile aimed at the White House. The target would change suddenly, but the symbolism was equally devastating.

By about 9:40 a.m., when the diving plane carved out a massive chunk of the Pentagon, its passengers had experienced unspeakable terror, hundreds died, and the nation's greatest symbol of security lay shattered, thick plumes of smoke camouflaging a gaping hole in its heart.

Barbara K. Olson, the former federal prosecutor who became a prominent TV commentator during the impeachment of President Bill Clinton, called her husband twice in the final minutes. Her last words to him were, "What do I tell

See FLIGHT, A11, Col. 1

Shaken Pentagon worker Tracy Williams watches the flames.

U.S. Intelligence Points To Bin Laden Network

By Dan Eggen and Vernon Loeb
Washington Post Staff Writers

The U.S. government has strong evidence from multiple sources that the suicidal terrorists who carried out yesterday's catastrophic attacks in New York and Washington were connected to Saudi fugitive Osama bin Laden, who previously was linked to the 1993 bombing of the World Trade Center, senior officials said.

One senior official said the possibility that bin Laden is behind the deadly assaults is in "the high 90s," while another U.S. official said investigators gathered evidence "strongly suggesting" that bin Laden's organization, al Qaeda, was involved.

The evidence pointing to bin Laden was gathered following the attacks in a joint effort by the CIA and the FBI, with information from domestic and overseas sources, a senior official said.

"It is more than just the analytical surmise that it would take an organization with incredible command-and-control capability, which bin Laden's has, to stage an attack like this," one U.S. official said. "There is other information that has been obtained after the attack against the World Trade Center pointing in the direction of bin Laden."

Unprecedented in scope and sophistication, the coordinated assault on the world's financial and political capitals caught the United States completely off guard—despite a massive intelligence and law enforcement network devoted to detecting and thwarting such attacks. With efforts focused largely on guarding against bomb threats to overseas targets, U.S. authorities conceded they were ill-prepared for hijacked jetliners purposely crashed on American soil.

Sen. Orrin G. Hatch (R-Utah), a member of the Senate Intelligence Committee, said he was told in a briefing that electronic intercepts yesterday showed "representatives affiliated with Osama bin Laden over the airwaves reporting that

See TERRORISTS, A20, Col. 1

ATTACK ON AMERICA

- Guide to coverage, A2
- Latest updates, www.washingtonpost.com

New York

'I Saw Bodies Falling Out—Oh, God, Jumping, Falling'

By Barton Gellman
Washington Post Staff Writer

NEW YORK, Sept. 11—Valerie Johnson stared, transfixed, at the inferno a thousand yards to her south and west. Tears streamed furrows through a film of ash on her face. Her mind tried to grasp what her eyes beheld: a blazing gash across the tower of wealth that symbolized New York for her all her life. The fire marched downward, floor by floor, windows bursting out ahead of the flames.

Then Johnson screamed a guttural, wordless wail. A sound like nothing she ever heard—low as thunder, but louder and longer—pressed in on her chest for ten seconds or more, resounding through Centre Street at Foley Square. The northern tower, the taller of the two, was gone. It was 10:29 a.m., an hour and three quarters after the first of two jetliners ripped through New York's twin emblems of global prestige.

"Oh God, oh God, my niece works in that building," Johnson breathed. "Oh God."

Where we stood there now came a rolling cloud—smoke and ash, ten stories tall, building speed as they reached the canyons of Manhattan's southern tip. Survivors streamed, choked and gagging, behind the cloud. Among them, stumbling blindly toward the fountain at Foley Square, were Elizabeth Belleau and Melissa Morales, strangers grasping hands with all their might as they ran. Belleau plunged her head into the cooling waters and retched, coughing out ash and phlegm. The fountain enclosed a sculpture: "Triumph of the Human Spirit."

Belleau had been running for nearly two hours. Her morning commute on the BM5 bus had stalled,

See SCENE, A17, Col. 1

Two women hold each other as they watch the World Trade Center burn.

INTRODUCTION

DAZED AND CONFUSED

> *"There are so many gaping holes in the official accounts of 9/11 that no plausible coherent narrative remains, and until now we have been staggering forward as if the truth about these traumatic events no longer mattered."*
>
> —Richard Falk, human rights lawyer

A MAZE OF CONSPIRACY THEORIES

There are so many conspiracy theories surrounding 9/11 that it's impossible to keep track of them all, much less sort through and make any real sense of them. Which ones have possible merit? Which ones sound plausible, but have in fact been effectively debunked?

From the patently false statement that "nobody imagined that terrorists would use planes as weapons," to suspicious insider trading in the weeks and days leading up to 9/11; from the inordinate number of military drills taking place on 9/11 (and a much-delayed response from the Air Force), to the unheeded warnings from multiple nations regarding suspiciously high levels of terrorist activity leading up to the event; from Bush family members in key positions in corporations responsible for providing security to the World Trade Center and Dulles Airport, to documented instances of the FBI failing to follow up on field agents' warnings—there are in fact so many suspicious circumstances, unexplained anomalies, misleading statements (official and otherwise), and outright fabrications surrounding 9/11 (the detailed chronicling of which is far beyond the scope of this work) that it is easy to understand why a veritable 9/11-Conspiracy-Theory cottage industry has developed over the last ten-plus years.

"SET UP TO FAIL"

Millions of Americans—and concerned citizens around the globe—have serious questions about the events of 9/11, and why shouldn't they, when even the individuals in charge of the National Commission on Terrorist Attacks Upon the United States, a.k.a. the 9/11 Commission, have no confidence in the process or its outcome, *The 9/11 Commission Report*.

WITHOUT PRECEDENT
THE INSIDE STORY OF
THE 9/11 COMMISSION
THOMAS H. KEAN
AND LEE H. HAMILTON
CO-CHAIRS OF THE 9/11 COMMISSION

Thomas Kean, former Republican Governor of New Jersey, was the Commission Chairman, and Lee H. Hamilton, former Democratic U.S. Representative from the 9th District of Indiana, was its Vice-Chairman.

Months after the commission issued its report and ceased functioning, Chairman Kean and other commissioners toured the country to draw attention to their recommendations, claiming that some of their findings and suggestions were being ignored. Co-chairs Kean and Hamilton subsequently co-authored a book about the constraints they faced as commissioners, entitled *Without Precedent: The Inside Story of the 9/11 Commission*.

Released in 2006, the book chronicles their work, and in it, they charge that the 9/11 Commission was "set up to fail," writing that the commission became so frustrated with repeated misstatements by Pentagon and Federal Aviation Administration officials during the course of the investigation that it considered a *separate* investigation into possible obstruction of justice by these officials.

John Farmer, Jr., senior counsel to the Commission, stated that the Commission "discovered that...what government and military officials had told Congress, the Commission, the media, and the public about who knew what when—was almost entirely, and inexplicably, untrue." Farmer continues: "At some level of the government, at some point in time… there was a decision not to tell the truth about what happened.... The (NORAD) tapes told a radically different story from what had been told to us and the public." Commission head Kean concurred: "We to this day don't know why NORAD told us what they told us, it was just so far from the truth."[1]

More Questions Than Answers

Former high-level officials have made serious allegations concerning the involvement of elements within U.S. intelligence agencies.

Richard Clarke, who was the White House counter-terrorism czar at the time of the attacks, has accused the CIA of deliberately suppressing information before 9/11, information that might have prevented the attacks. Clarke claimed: "There was a high-level decision in the CIA ordering people not to share information." And who made this decision? "I would think it would have been made by the director (George Tenet)."[2]

Similar accusations have been leveled at federal law enforcement. According to various sources, no fewer than 14 countries attempted to warn the U.S. about the impending attacks, to no avail. Then there's Robert Wright, the top bin Laden financial tracker at the FBI's Chicago office, who through tears of frustration and anger told a National Press Club audience, "The FBI allowed 9/11 to happen." Come again? "FBI management intentionally and repeatedly thwarted and obstructed my investigations into Middle Eastern terrorist financing."[3]

And what could explain the lack of an effective response by the military, the Air Force, in particular, on 9/11? According to Webster Griffin Tarpley, the morning of September 11 saw "the greatest density of drills in US military history." With names like 'Vigilant Guardian', there were reportedly up to 46 military exercises taking place—some involving scenarios uncannily similar to the actual events that would unfold that day (a happenstance that would be repeated in the London 7/7 bombings)—which diverted resources, manpower and attention away from the real threats and resulted in understandably considerable levels of confusion as the actual attacks unfolded.[4]

A range of foreign officials have also questioned the official government version of the events of 9/11.

Andreas von Bülow, a Social Democratic Party member of the German parliament from 1969 to 1994, was on the parliamentary committee on intelligence services, a group that has access to classified information. Von Bülow was also a member of the Schalck-Golodkowski investigation committee which investigates white-collar crime. He has estimated that inside trader profits surrounding 9/11 totaled approximately $15 billion. Von Bülow told *The Daily Telegraph* "If what I say is right, the whole US government should end up behind bars." Further, he said, "They have hidden behind a veil of secrecy and destroyed the evidence…they invented the story of 19 Muslims working within Osama bin Laden's al Qaeda in order to hide the truth of their own covert operation." He also said, "I'm convinced that the US apparatus must have played a role and my theory is backed up by the [Washington] government's refusal to present any proof whatsoever of what happened."[5]

With domestic intelligence, defense, and law enforcement agencies like these, who the hell needs foreign enemies? Well, one could rightly point out that *these agencies do*—and one might also point to volumes of evidence that they go to great lengths to ensure the existence of aggressive, well-motivated and sufficiently-funded adversaries…all the better to justify their enormous budgets and scare the pants off the civilian population.

Is it even possible to determine if there were indeed conspirators within our own government, and, if so, their identities? Repeated calls for a new official investigation have been ignored—not that anyone should expect to have any more confidence in the results of a new investigation than the original one. Is there, then, a path on which to proceed, an explanatory framework that can help us make sense of all this?

Psych Warfare

What if the ongoing confusion surrounding 9/11, and the persistent lack of clarity ten years on, is not the residual result of the "fog of war," but rather compelling evidence of something altogether different—psychological warfare.

The U.S. Department of Defense defines psychological warfare as "the planned use of propaganda and other psychological actions having the primary purpose of influencing the opinions, emotions, attitudes, and behavior of hostile foreign groups in such a way as to support the achievement of national objectives." However, psychological warfare tactics can be employed by any adversary against any opponent or intended target, including a domestic population, for instance. Such as in Orwell's dystopian novel, *1984*.

In their article "9/11, Psychological Warfare & the American Narrative," authors Elizabeth Gould and Paul Fitzgerald write that "the state's use of psychological warfare to bend the population to war is as old, if not older than the existence of states themselves." They continue, "But it was perhaps Nazi Reichsmarschall Hermann Goering whose statement while on trial at Nuremberg best summed up the cynical simplicity of the logic:

> Of course people don't want war. But after all, it's the leaders of the country who determine the policy and it's always a simple matter to drag the people along whether it's a democracy, a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communist dictatorship. Voice or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders, that is easy. All you have to do is tell them they are being attacked, and denounce the pacifists for lack of patriotism and exposing the country to greater danger.

Gould and Fitzgerald explain that "psychological warfare in the form of propaganda comes in all shapes and sizes as well as shades of black, grey or white." The United States government's coordinated use of psychological warfare on its own citizens "began in earnest during World War II and ever since has grown and expanded into public relations, advertising, cinema, radio and television, electronic video games and now social media. Its pro-war boosterism extends over sports, religion, education, news and entertainment (and of course the military) to form a seamless electronic cocoon-like web."

Gould and Fitzgerald conclude that psych warfare "is employed on an ever growing list of those deemed as enemies of America as well as on a confused and agitated American public—whose corporate news networks frame and manage an increasingly shallow narrative while engaging in a kind of Orwellian Kabuki Theatre of fairness and balance." Could this be an accurate assessment of what is taking place within our country, and, if so, does it help explain what happened on 9/11?

In his book, *Psychological Warfare and the New World Order,* Servando Gonzalez confirms this suspicion, describing "a long, protracted war against the American people. It is not a conventional war waged with tanks, battleships and planes in conventional battlefields—at least not yet." Gonzalez continues, "It is a secret, insidious type of war whose main battleground is the people's minds. Its main weapons are propaganda and mass brainwashing mostly by using disinformation, deception, and lies in a large scale not used against the people of a nation since the end of Nazi Germany. Though important, those elements are just part of a series of carefully planned and executed long- and short-term psychological warfare operations. In synthesis, it is a psychological war."

Servando Gonzalez
Psychological Warfare and the New World Order
The Secret War Against the American People

A 9/11 Black Op?

9/11 is often referred to by conspiracy theorists as a "false flag" operation, which are covert operations designed to deceive a target population in such a way that it appears as though the action is being carried out by an entity other than the one actually responsible. False flag operations are not limited to war and counter-insurgency operations, but are also used in peace-time.[6]

False flag events are a type of black operation (op, for short), a covert action typically involving activities that are highly clandestine and often outside of standard military protocol or even against the law. Black ops missions often fit into the plausible deniability category, in which there is no claim of responsibility for the action, and/or a false flag operation is used to give the appearance that another actor was responsible. Black ops frequently involve extensive arrangements so as to be able to hide the fact that the black operation ever occurred.

The methods used in black operations are also used in unconventional warfare, in which civilian populations and political parties are targeted directly. Black ops may include such things as assassination, sabotage, extortion, spying on allied countries or one's own citizens, kidnapping, supporting resistance movements, torture, use of fraud to obtain funds, use of child soldiers, human experimentation, trafficking in contraband items, as well as false flag operations.[7]

It certainly seems that false flag or black op, or both, might be an apt description of what occurred on 9/11, and that this could well have been part of a broader domestically-focused psychological warfare campaign. But, if true, this raises more questions than it answers.

SOMETHING WORSE?

What if the many conflicting official accounts surrounding the events of September 11, 2001, are not just bureaucratic incompetence, or mistakes made under intense media pressure to produce information quickly, but part of a deliberately designed campaign in which obfuscation, misinformation and disinformation play key roles in deceiving and manipulating the public?

We are bombarded with such volumes of conflicting information that our ability to meaningfully process it is overwhelmed. Out of necessity, we give up trying to figure it out. Self-preservation kicks in and we shut down before we blow a fuse. There are so many things that just don't add up, that don't make sense and are genuinely suspicious, and the lack of any real answers on so many fronts after such an extended period of time might in itself be viewed as evidence of an active and ongoing conspiracy.

Was 9/11 a black op on the American public by their own government, or rogue elements from within? If so, what were the objectives? To build public support for going to war in Iraq and Afghanistan? Was the U.S. government/military manipulated or "hijacked" by extremely sophisticated and powerful international actors?

What if the above were all true, but this wasn't even the half of it? What if the truth were even more disturbing?

STRONG EVIDENCE OF A 9/11 CONSPIRACY

There is an aspect of 9/11 that has largely gone unexplored, and been completely ignored by the mainstream media. It represents a new avenue of investigation, one that has the potential to produce conclusive evidence of the existence of a conspiracy.

Many conspiracy theories have been effectively debunked, while others have seen experts weigh in on both sides of the issue with equal effectiveness and remain an open question—leaving the general public with a sense of unease but precious few hard answers to allay their fears or confirm their suspicions one way or the other.

What would hard evidence of a 9/11 conspiracy look like? If such exists, it would have explosive potential, the power to ignite a furor among 9/11 Truth groups at home and abroad, and among the public at large. Many people already suspect foul play on 9/11, but they don't feel they have proof conclusive enough to warrant action. Others do believe conclusive proof already exists, and new hard evidence would further radicalize their attitudes.

Conclusive proof of a 9/11 conspiracy could possess the ability to ignite a global firestorm, to generate unimaginable levels of public distrust of government, to incite civil unrest and calls for revolution.

A RECONSTRUCTED OCCULT SCRIPT

An as yet unexplored avenue of investigation does in fact exist.

9/11 wasn't simply a black op; it was that, and more. Highly compelling evidence shows beyond a reasonable doubt that the perpetrators of this massive criminal act not only employed a broad range of sophisticated psychological warfare tactics but, even more disturbingly, incorporated a wide variety of occult symbols and other esoteric elements into multiple levels of the event.

This implies the ability to manipulate, to control, on such an enormous scale that it is beyond what most people are prepared to accept. It so strongly conflicts with our perception of reality that we dare not even contemplate it.

Unfortunately the evidence points to a worst-case scenario. In a real-life CSI-meets-Dan-Brown, the picture that emerges is that of 9/11 as an ultra-powerful mind-control and propaganda weapon—a psychological warfare tool of enormous proportions—infused with techno-sorcery and deep-level occult programming. 9/11 was a global MegaRitual, and the painstakingly reconstructed occult script for the event contained herein convincingly shows this.

We instinctively reject such conclusions, even if they are supported by solid evidence. However, we must have the courage to let the evidence tell the story, because, as the reader will learn, what is at stake is not simply our view of reality. Whether or not our worldview is challenged, or shattered, by the revelations in this material, doesn't change the truth of the matter, which is that the conspiracy that generated 9/11 is real, that it is ongoing—and that September 11, 2001, was just a prelude to what they have planned for 2012/2013.

WHAT TO EXPECT

As serious a topic as this is, however, don't expect a dry, academic discourse in the pages that follow. The script for the 9/11 MegaRitual is dripping with the dark humor of its occult authors, and even if one wanted to, there'd be no way to write about it in a serious fashion. What ensues might be compared to a combination of *The DaVinci Code* and an episode of *South Park*; unfortunately, it is neither fiction nor fantasy.

Author's Note: Those unfamiliar with the concept of a "New World Order," the "Illuminati," or Freemasonry may want to refer to Appendix A on page 163.

FOREWORD

"Let us never tolerate outrageous conspiracy theories concerning the attacks of September the 11th; malicious lies that attempt to shift the blame away from the terrorists, themselves, away from the guilty."

—President G.W. Bush, at the United Nations, November 10, 2001

If there were an Emmy Awards category for this type of production, it would have swept the nominations that year, and the Academy would have probably created an Unrivaled Achievement Award to bestow further honors, as well. Best Drama, Best Live Action, Best Visual Effects, Best Original Screenplay, Best Technical Direction, Best Choreography—it would have taken them all, and more (including, if *dark* humor counts, Outstanding Comedy Special).

It was, in fact, the grandest, most sophisticated production of its nature that the world had ever seen. It was an instant global sensation, generating untold amounts of commentary and analysis, and ten years on, the global public still can't seem to get enough of it. Like Elvis, who has long departed the building but whose work only continues to gain in worldwide popularity and influence, this highly-orchestrated event has lost none of its caché with the passing of time—quite the opposite.

SECTION ONE

THE PRODUCTION

CHAPTER ONE

AUTHOR, AUTHOR!

Ritual murder is mind control.

—Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

ACT ONE, SCENE ONE:
AMERICAN AIRLINES FLIGHT 11 AND THE NORTH TOWER

September 11, 2001. 8:43 a.m. The Boeing 767 descended rapidly through the cloudless sky, its intended target looming larger and larger in the cockpit window. 1500 feet. 1400. 1300. JFK International Airport was 10 miles away—to the southwest. In any case, the plane was moving far too fast to be coming in for a landing. 1200 feet. 1100.

As the plane sped purposefully at the North Tower, the immense concrete-and-steel manifestations of the archetypal Pillars of Hermes topped the Manhattan skyline as they had for three decades. 1000 feet. 900.

The New York Fire Department personnel conducting a hydrant test five blocks from the World Trade Center couldn't see the plane as it flew in, their view was blocked by surrounding buildings. They turned their heads as they heard the roar of jet engines, way too fast, way too low, and way too close.

800 feet … the firefighters whipped their heads around as they heard, then felt, the enormous explosion. "Holy shit!" they yelled in unison.

The top of the tower swayed a full ten feet to the south immediately following impact. Those on the upper floors felt it rock slowly, slowly, finally stop, and then sway gently back in the opposite direction. Perhaps no more than a fifteen-foot swing altogether, but some found themselves wondering, if ever so briefly, whether the tower would simply keep going and fall over on its side.

Many never felt the swaying. Some people were on the lower floors where the motion was less pronounced. Some had died instantly as the jet-fuel laden craft had exploded through the building in a giant ball of flame, glass, metal and fire; others were too busy trying to escape the flames and smoke to notice.

This symbol of America's financial might again stood motionless, clouds of dark smoke billowing upward, a gaping plane-shaped silhouetted maw in its side. Brilliant orange and yellow flames licked the sides of the building, slithering upward.

A tragedy of historic proportions, but merely the first of that day. An attack, but only the initial wave. The assault on America had just begun … and with this act of terror and destruction, the largest occult ritual in the history of the world commenced.

"A HORRIBLE ACCIDENT"

"There's one terrible pilot," President George W. Bush would later claim was his initial response upon seeing the impact of the first plane. Leaving aside whether or not Bush actually saw the impact when and where he claimed (before entering a Florida classroom), how could anyone viewing footage of the incident have concluded—again, as Bush himself claimed to have said—"It must have been a horrible accident."

Bush, a former Texas Air National Guard pilot, was no Top Gun (actually he went AWOL), but even he, upon viewing footage of a jetliner flying directly into a skyscraper in perfectly clear skies, could not have possibly thought that it was the result of pilot error.

Why would America's Commander-in-Chief potentially lie about his first reaction? Perhaps he had more important things on his mind, things he doesn't want to disclose to us. Perhaps he was using humor to divert attention away from this fact. Perhaps he was mocking us.

ACT ONE, SCENE TWO:
UNITED AIRLINES FLIGHT 175 AND THE SOUTH TOWER

Within minutes every major network was covering the scene live: "The North Tower of the World Trade Center has been hit by a commercial airliner." The world watched transfixed as smoke poured out of the building. Very few notice the second plane until almost immediately before its impact into the South Tower.

A huge pyrotechnic display bloomed onscreen, rolling upwards and morphing into a roiling black cloud as the vaporized fuel was consumed. Screams, gasps… "a second plane has just hit the World Trade Center."

The planes that hit the North and South Towers would be identified as American Airlines Flight 11 and United

Airlines Flight 175 respectively. Initially, the flight numbers meant nothing to anyone except those who had family members on those planes, but over time the numerical identifiers would come to represent the lost, and become almost synonymous with 9/11.

There were those, however, to whom these numbers, and the ancient symbols represented by the Twin Towers, meant much, much more…those who were waiting, watching, applauding as the grim script for the day's events unfolded brilliantly and flawlessly. These individuals were not Muslim extremists, not motivated by hatred for the "Great Satan," but paradoxically by a love for Satan himself.

Independent researchers and conspiracy theorists would later question whether or not those flights were even scheduled on 9/11, whether they were in fact the planes that struck the towers, whether they ever took off, whether they were in the air long after supposedly crashing into the towers … a swirling stew of unending theories about fake passenger manifests, remote-controlled drones, fictitious passengers, still-living hijackers, and on and on. But the official story, and the script, was all that really mattered. People in fear will believe what they are told to believe.

XVI
THE TOWER.

CHAPTER TWO

MAN AND HIS SYMBOLS

Symbols are oracular forms—mysterious patterns creating vortices in the substances of the invisible world. They are centers of a mighty force, figures pregnant with an awful power, which, when properly fashioned, loose fiery whirlwinds upon the earth.

—Manly P. Hall, *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*

In order to understand the occult script for 9/11, one must possess at least a rudimentary knowledge of occult practice, and learn the basic language and grammar of occult communications and operations. Any good investigator will also seek to get inside the criminal mind, to occupy their psychic space, to see the world through their eyes, to understand how they think and why they act as they do.

THE OCCULT SCRIPT FOR 9/11: A GRIMOIRE

The numbers and symbols involved with the 9/11 MegaRitual, as well as the "order of services," constitute a grand Magickal Operation, as the reconstructed script will show. Indeed, the completed script could be thought of as a contemporary grimoire, or textbook of magic.

> Such books typically include instructions on how to create magical objects like talismans and amulets, how to perform magical spells, charms and divination and also how to summon or invoke supernatural entities such as angels, spirits, and demons. It is most commonly believed that the term *grimoire* originated from the Old French word *grammaire*, which had initially been used to refer to all books written in Latin.[1]

"Effectively a grimoire is a book of black magic, and just as grammar describes a fixed set of symbols and the means of their incorporation to properly produce well-formed, meaningful sentences and texts, a grimoire describes a set of magical symbols and how best to properly combine them in order to produce the desired effects. True grimoires contain elaborate rituals,"[2] which, as will be seen, 9/11 most certainly was.

OCCULT PRACTICE

In Chapter 18 of Manly P. Hall's *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, entitled "Ceremonial Magic and Sorcery," he states that "Ceremonial magic is the ancient art of invoking and controlling spirits by a scientific application of certain formulæ." 9/11 was the largest-scale occult ritual in history, a globally-televised hideous act of ceremonial magic.

Powerful numbers and symbols played key roles in this global ceremony. Co-founder of the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, William Wynn Westcott (1848-1925), writes, "The followers of Pythagoras ... referred every object, planet, man, idea and essence to some number or other, in a way, which to most moderns

Symbol Illiteracy

In an insightful piece entitled "Symbolic Literacy," author Michael Tsarion observes that we suffer from "chronic symbol illiteracy" and are subjected to subliminal and subtextual persuasion that constitutes what he refers to as a psychic dictatorship. This dictatorship, Tsarion says, "involves the deliberate and subversive manipulation and public purveyance of words, images, numbers, colors, rhythms, and symbols which are subsequently directed, via ubiquitous media oracles, toward the limbic areas of the human brain," which, he continues, "produces an elaborate and insidious cryptic language specifically designed to stimulate conflict between fantasy and reality."

Tsarion rightly believes that we will remain subject to mass manipulation until we "become lucidly cognizant and profoundly educated concerning the power of symbols, not only as transcendental portals, or mathematical devices, but as weapons in the hands of plutocratic elites, with occult agendas, laboring to arrest the mental, emotional, and spiritual maturation of the underclasses."

"Subliminal messages," writes Tsarion, "permeate television programs, computer games, magazines, billboards, products, and musical productions," foisted upon us by "technological witch-doctors and cyber-space sorcerers." He continues, "Their particular concoction of spells are cast via techniques that go by names such as Tele-hypnosis, Metacontrast, Hemisync, Synaesthenia, and Embedding. New techniques, yes, but with the same deadly effect as any past voodoo, sorcery, or telepathy."

Tsarion also reminds us of the high stakes:

> Cynics who continue to doubt whether symbols and images have any lasting negative affect on consciousness should remember and study the most recent example of mass control, that of Nazi Germany. The Nazis openly used ritual choreography, ancient symbols and rallying chants, powerful mystical logos and regalia, and so on, to force men into a hive mentality. We now know that Hitler and his cronies were deeply involved with powerful occult societies and were fascinated by ancient mysticism. Hitler sent agents throughout the world, to visit tribes and sects in order to procure occult works and doctrines, and to learn how to employ magical arts.

A lengthier excerpt from "Symbolic Literacy" can be found in Appendix B.

must seem curious and mystical in the highest degree.… ‘The numerals of Pythagoras,’ says Porphyry, who lived about 300 A.D., ‘were hieroglyphic symbols, by means whereof he explained all ideas concerning the nature of things.’”

Reinforcing the importance of numbers in occult thought, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky (1831-1891), one of the founders of the Theosophical Society, writes in *Isis Unveiled,* “Numbers are a key to the ancient views of cosmogony—in its broad sense, spiritually as well as physically considered and to the evolution of the present human race; all systems of religious mysticism are based upon numerals. The sacredness of numbers begins with the Great First Cause, the One, and ends only with the naught or zero—symbol of the infinite and boundless universe.”

“Numbers,” echoes Carl Gustav Jung in *Man and His Symbols,* “are not concepts consciously invented by men for purposes of calculation. They are spontaneous and autonomous products of the unconscious.”

XVI
TRUMPS
פ The Tower ♂

CHAPTER THREE

PLAYBILL

"We stand for things."

—George W. Bush, Davenport, Iowa, 2004

11: "The essence of all that is sinful, harmful and imperfect"

ACT ONE, SCENE ONE INTERPRETED

September 11th, American Airlines Flight 11 … Of the number 11, William Wynn Westcott writes, "This seems to have been the type of a number with an evil reputation among all peoples. The Kabalists contrasted it with the perfection of the Decad, and just as the Sephirotic number is the form of all good things, so *eleven is the essence of all that is sinful, harmful and imperfect*" [emphasis added]. Thus, we can understand the repeated incorporation of the number 11 into the ritual. As "the essence of all that is sinful, harmful and imperfect," 11 was the number of choice with which to initiate the ritual and declare its true nature.

PILLARS OF HERMES

The 11 could also be seen as symbolizing the Twin Towers, which were themselves powerful modern versions of the ancient Pillars of Hermes.

> These splendorous columns are mentioned by numerous credible sources down through history. The Greek legislator, Solon, saw them and noted that they memorialized the destruction of Atlantis. The pillars were what the historian Herodotus described in a temple he visited around 450 BC: "One pillar was of pure gold," he wrote, "and the other was as of emerald, which glowed at night with great brilliancy." In *Iamblichus: On the Mysteries,* Thomas Taylor quotes an ancient author who says the Pillars of Hermes dated to before the Great Flood. The mysterious pil-

> lars are also described by Achilles Tatius, Dio Chrysostom, Laertius, and other Roman and Greek historians."[1]

In addition to being known as the God of Trade and Commerce, the Greek god Hermes was the patron of roads and boundaries, and rectangular pillars of stone or bronze, called herma, were often used as road and boundary markers. The Twin Towers were not only modern concrete-and-steel re-creations of the famed Pillars of Hermes, but also symbolically marked the boundary between this realm and the next—between our world and that of the dead. Associated with the crossing of boundaries, Hermes, also the god of doorways, was a fitting psychopomp, or conductor of the dead to the Underworld, as he was known—a role that was certainly invoked on 9/11.

> Homer and Hesiod portrayed Hermes as the author of skilled or deceptive acts; in the Iliad, he was said to be "excellent in all the tricks." The Homeric hymn to Hermes invokes him as the one "of many shifts (polytropos), blandly cunning, a robber…a thief at the gates." Among the functions commonly linked to him in Greek literature are intrigues and covert reasons, fraud and perjury, wit and ambiguity. Thus he was a patron of speakers, heralds, ambassadors and diplomats, messengers and thieves.
>
> In mythology, and in the study of folklore and religion, a trickster is a god, goddess, spirit, man, woman, or anthropomorphic animal who plays tricks or otherwise disobeys normal rules and conventional behavior.[2] According to prominent folklorist Yeleazar Meletinsky, Hermes is a deified trickster.[3]

A Gateway

Whether as the god of commerce, the psychopomp, or deified trickster, multiple aspects of Hermes' character were invoked on 9/11 by those conducting the ceremony, and the destruction of these modern representations of the fabled Pillars of Hermes, signified—fittingly for the god of doorways—the opening of a metaphysical doorway.

The Twin Towers, and the space between them, represented a gateway and their destruction signified the rending of the barrier between worlds, the symbolic tearing of the Veil of Isis—creating a portal, unveiling the Holy of Holies. The idea of the Twin Towers as gateways further links to the Zodiacal sign of Gemini, the Twins, and its position as a celestial/heavenly gateway (see page 83 for additional discussion on this topic), a prime example of the key principle of "As Above, So Below."

THE TWO PILLARS OF FREEMASONRY, SACRIFICIAL ALTARS

Not to be ignored is the tradition of the Freemasons in regard to the two pillars, which are a prominent emblem of their Craft. They represent the pillars Jachin and Boaz, which Hiram of Tyre made for Solomon, and set one on either side of the entrance to the Temple, to commemorate the pillar of cloud by day and of fire by night which guided the Israelites in their forty years' wanderings in the wilderness.[4]

Thus, the Twin Towers not only represented the Pillars of Hermes, but also evoked the Freemasons' Jachin and Boaz. Beyond what they represented, however, is what the towers became on 9/11—altars, massive sacrificial altars, for sacrifice by fire.

"THE NUMBER OF MAGICK IN ITSELF"

Before moving on to interpret Scene Two, there is one other occult authority we must meet, one who considered the number 11 as "the number of Magick in itself… [and] therefore suitable to all types of operation," as well as "the sacred number par excellence of the new Aeon [the Aeon of Horus]." This person is Aleister Crowley. In his best known writing, entitled *The Book of the Law*, Crowley states "My number is 11, as all their numbers who are of us." (Crowley used the spelling "magick" to distinguish ceremonial magic from ordinary sleight-of-hand trickery.)

THE
BOOK
OF THE
LAW
LIBER
AL VEL
LEGIS
SUB FIGURÂ
CCXX

The repeated use of the number 11 (and it will make further appearances throughout the script), then, not only characterized the nature of the act, but also signaled the commencement of a magical operation.

"THE WICKEDEST MAN IN THE WORLD"

"I was not content to believe in a personal devil and serve him, in the ordinary sense of the word," Aleister Crowley once said about Satan. "I wanted to get hold of him personally and become his chief of staff."

> Born Edward Alexander Crowley, Aleister Crowley (1875-1947), also known as both "Frater Perdurabo" and "The Great Beast," was an influential English occultist,

astrologer, mystic, poet and ceremonial magician, responsible for founding the religious philosophy of Thelema. In this latter role, Crowley came to see himself as a prophet entrusted with informing humanity that it was entering the new Aeon of Horus.

Aleister Crowley, proponent of a New World Order

To the eyes of a god, mankind must appear as a species of bacteria which multiply and become progressively virulent whenever they find themselves in a congenial culture, and whose activity diminishes until they disappear completely as soon as proper measures are taken to sterilize them.

—Aleister Crowley

> Crowley's vision of a New Aeon coincides with the Illuminati's age-old plan for a secular world order ruled by an enlightened elite. The wording might be different, but the hermetic philosophical background is the same. Crowley and the Establishment see eye-to-eye on the subject—and this eye is the Eye of Horus.[1]

Author William Ramsey observed that Crowley "wrote numerous books detailing his vision of the ideal society: the strong over the weak, the maintenance of a patriarchal aristocracy ruling over a slave state, and the Darwinian killing of the unfit. According to the Great Beast, a small elite must rule over the masses: 'You will observe that I am advocating an aristocratic revolution. And so I am!'"

---

1. http://secretarcana.com/influentialfigures/aleister-crowley-and-his-legacy/

Born into a wealthy upper-class family, as a young man he became an influential member of the esoteric Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. Subsequently believing that he was being contacted by his Holy Guardian Angel, an entity known as Aiwass, while staying in Egypt in 1904, he "received" a text known as *The Book of the Law* from what he believed was a divine source, and around which he would come to develop his new philosophy of Thelema. He would go on to found his own occult society, the A:.A:., and eventually rose to become a leader of Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO), before founding a religious commune in Cefalù known as the Abbey of Thelema, which he led from 1920 through 1923. After being evicted from Cefalù he returned to Britain, where he continued to promote Thelema until his death.

Crowley was a bisexual, a recreational drug experimenter and a social critic. In many of these roles he was in revolt against the moral and religious values of his time, espousing a form of libertinism based upon the rule of "Do What Thou Wilt." Because of this, he gained widespread notoriety

> during his lifetime, and was denounced in the popular press of the day as "the wickedest man in the world."
>
> Crowley has remained an influential figure and is widely thought of as the most influential occultist of all time. A Cambridge-educated world traveler, Crowley associated with the artistic and cultural luminaries of his era, including such noted figures as Ernest Hemingway, W. B. Yeats and H. L. Mencken.[5]

References to him can be found in the works of numerous writers, musicians and filmmakers, and he has also been cited as a key influence on many later esoteric groups and individuals.[6]

> Today, Crowley is regarded as either a misunderstood mystical genius or a depraved charlatan, a prophet for an era of spiritual enlightenment or a Satanic harbinger of the Anti-Christ, an agent for the sexual liberation of mankind or drug-addicted pederast. As a youth, Crowley wished to become a celebrity and to change the course of history and, in his own way, he accomplished both objectives. Not only did his peculiar character make him something of a cult icon, his philosophic and esoteric works are today a major force influencing mainstream culture, values and spirituality.
>
> Unlike most historical figures who lose their relevancy as the years go by, Crowley's influence is steadily increasing in the 21st century. This is not only a result of luck or natural evolution, however. Crowley and his OTO maintained ties with high-level members of the British and American governments, as well as with influential figures in science, law and culture. The world's elite, predominated by Illuminist values, are in perfect accord with Crowley's Thelema. These connections facilitated the dissemination and acceptance of his works in popular culture. Crowley not only predicted society's abandonment of traditional religions and the embrace of the Aeon of Horus, he was part of the motor that made these changes happen.[7]

Excerpt from *Hymn to Pan* by Aleister Crowley

Goat of thy flock, I am gold, I am god,
Flesh to thy bone, flower to thy rod.
With hoofs of steel I race on the rocks
Through solstice stubborn to equinox.
And I rave; and I rape and I rip and I rend
Everlasting, world without end.

Excerpt from *The Wizard Way* by Aleister Crowley

Once to rave, and once to revel,
Once to bow before the devil,
Once to swing the thurible,
Once to kiss the goat of hell

Deciphering the 9/11 MegaRitual Script

Seen by some as the "Godfather of Modern Satanism," Crowley is the key to deciphering the script for the 9/11 global megaritual, because on one level, the entire day's events are an 'Ode to Aleister Crowley', as will be clearly demonstrated in the next section and subsequent sections.

Act One, Scene Two Interpreted

LIBER
ABA
LIVRO
QUATRO
SVB FIGVRA
IV

Two towers, two planes, the first aircraft bearing "the number of Magick in itself," signaling the commencement of the ritual. And the second plane? "There are three main methods of invoking any Deity…The 'First Method' consists of devotion to that Deity … a perfect instruction exists in *Liber 175,*" writes Aleister Crowley in "Magick" from *Liber ABA*.

"This is the book of Uniting [Oneself] to a particular Deity by devotion," reiterates Crowley in *Liber 175* itself. "Concerning the ceremonies… prepare a powerful Invocation of the particular Deity… let it be known that this method is adaptable to the necessities of all. … let him take anything soever, and consecrate it … let him consecrate each thing that he useth to the service of that particular Deity."

Meaning: *This is a ceremonial invocation* (the act of invoking or calling upon a deity, spirit, etc., for aid, protection, inspiration, or the like). Flight 11, consecrated with the number of magic and declaring the commencement of a magical operation; Flight 175, invoking *Liber 175,* stating the intent and purpose of the operation, ie. invoking and uniting with "a particular deity."

Few deities would approve of such cruel and destructive methods of invocation, but Crowley provides direction to the supplicant on that very point: "Yet also may he deliberately practise cruelties, where the particular Deity manifests His love in that manner; as in the case of Kali, and of Pan." Crowley also provides a warning, which clarifies the intent of those engaged in this ritual: "Nevertheless, forget not that this practice is dangerous, and may cause the manifestation of evil things, hostile and malicious."

A Powerful Combination

The act of combining a number of power with a potent symbol will be repeated in Act Three, but before we learn of this, we continue to Act Two, which is really an extension of this Act—or, more precisely, a partial fulfillment of the invocation. The 11 marks the commencement; the 175 states that the entire ceremony is an act of devotion, unity and invocation; and very soon we learn *to whom* the orchestrators of the 9/11 MegaRitual sought to bind themselves. Do I smell sulphur and brimstone?

XV
ע
TRUMPS
The Devil
♑

CHAPTER FOUR

THE PET GOAT

In the end, what we have is a highly symbolic, ritual working broadcast to millions of people, a Satanic inversion; a Black Mass, where the "pews" are filled by the entire nation and through which humanity is brutalized and debased.

—Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

ACT TWO: BUSH AND *THE PET GOAT*

On the morning of September 11, 2001, President Bush waits outside at Emma E. Booker Elementary School in Sarasota, Florida, and by his own account (on two separate occasions, no less) says he sees Flight 11 hurtle through clear skies, slam into the North Tower and then remarks, "There's one terrible pilot."

Minutes later, Bush sits before a group of predominantly African-American second-grade school children listening to a recitation of *The Pet Goat*, when Chief of Staff Andrew Card whispers in his ear, "A second plane hit the second tower. America is under attack." Bush continues to sit in front of the class listening to the reading for an additional seven minutes.

FAIR ENOUGH

Andrew Card's recollection of the sequence of events that morning varies from Bush's. He recalls a National Security Council staffer telling himself and the president, "Sir, it appears there's been a small twin-engine plane crashed into one of the World Trade Center towers in New York City." If this version of events is accurate, and Bush did not in fact see the crash of the first plane on television before entering the classroom, this would explain why he initially assumed pilot error (but not why he failed to accurately recall the correct sequence of events on two separate occasions or subsequently clarify the issue for posterity). He didn't see footage of a passenger jet, or visibility conditions in New York City at the time, and having been told it was a small twin-engine plane, assumed it was a minor incident, probably accidental. Fair enough.

But why did Bush sit there for a full seven minutes after being told that "America is under attack"? He would later claim in his own book that he didn't want to alarm the children by getting up abruptly during their reading. A bit weak, but fair enough.

In the end, however, these may be about the only things concerning Bush's presence in Sarasota that fateful day which can potentially be explained away.

The Pet Goat Black Mass in Paradise

> *Let him say: "I read this book that I may study the nature of my Deity, that further knowledge of Him may inspire me with deeper devotion to Him."*
>
> Aleister Crowley, *Liber 175*

The Satanic Bible
Anton Szandor LaVey
The Satanic Rituals
Companion to The Satanic Bible
Anton Szandor LaVey

When Anton Szandor LaVey published his *Satanic Bible* in 1969, he wrote that: "A black mass is essentially a parody on the religious service of the Roman Catholic Church, but can be loosely applied to a satire on any religious ceremony." He went on in *Satanic Rituals* (1972) to present it as the most representatively satanic ritual in the book.[1]

A satirical ceremony, a Commander-in-Chief that wouldn't leave his seat until the reading of a story about a pet goat was completed ("*I read this book that I may study the nature of my Deity*"), during which time hundreds of his fellow Americans were in harm's way, many of them meeting horrific ends as they burned alive or plunged to their deaths from the towers ("*Yet also may he deliberately practise cruelties*")—conjuring the image of The Tower tarot card (variously referred to as "the Devil's house," "the house of the damned" and "Inferno," or "Hell")—all taking place in … "Paradise," the city of Sarasota's unofficial yet widely-used and acknowledged nickname. Well, how about that?

PARADISE LOST

Of course, the reference here is not to the Biblical paradise of heaven, and not simply to the Devil's paradise, Hell, although that is certainly part of it. There is a more serious occult-philosophical point they're aiming at: that of a Man-made/Masonic Paradise, their version of paradise on earth, created by them, ruled by them, and not-altogether too different from hell for the masses who have to live there.

This speaks to the heart of their enterprise, "perfecting creation": taking God's imperfect creation and, through their human wisdom bringing it into a state of perfection. Historian John Michell states: "…it is their immediate concern, having eaten of the tree of knowledge, to apply all their newly acquired arts to constructing a facsimile of the Garden, a model paradise." Echoing this, Michael Hoffman writes in his book *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* (the subject of Chapter Six), "If Chronos-Saturn destroyed a divine Eden, Saturn being the force of time, decay and the progress of matter… man will recreate a true Theleme, a better Eden than God. And that, in sum, is the masonic cover story that maintains cachet to this day."

Serious stuff for a parody, you may be thinking. True, and unfortunately there's more weighty discussion ahead, because although a black mass may be a satire on a religious ceremony, the underlying precepts are deadly serious, and in this context a story about a pet goat is no laughing matter.

GET YOUR GOAT

According to a research monograph on the *Dionysian Artificers and Early Masonry* edited by mystic Manly P. Hall, the symbolism of the goat relates to the pre-Christian God Pan, Dionysius. Pan is represented as being half-human, half-goat with horns, and would later be used in medieval times to represent the devil.[2]

Manly P. Hall

The Goat of Mendes, or Baphomet, is a goat-headed deity, being formed of both male and female principles, with Mercury's Caduceus for its phallus. One arm points up and one down, with the Latin "Solve et Coagula" (solution and coagulation) written on them. This is not the Christian devil but a symbol of the ancient alchemists representing the fact that nature and nature's God is a combination and balance of male and female forces, light and darkness, moisture and dryness. The very principle of Hermes Trismegitus, "As Above, So Below," is symbolized by Baphomet.[3]

SOLVE
COAGULA
ELIPHAS

Since 1855, the name Baphomet has been associated with a "Sabbatic Goat" image drawn by Eliphas Lévi. Lévi called his image "The Goat of Mendes," presumably following Herodotus' account that the god of Mendes—the Greek name for Djedet, Egypt—was depicted with a goat's face and legs.[4]

Eliphas Lévi

The Baphomet of Lévi was to become an important figure within the cosmology of Thelema, the mystical system established by Aleister Crowley in the early twentieth century. In *Magick (Book 4)*, Crowley asserted that Baphomet was a divine androgyne and "the hieroglyph of arcane perfection":

> This serpent, SATAN, is not the enemy of Man, but He who made Gods of our race, knowing Good and Evil; He bade 'Know Thyself!' and taught Initiation. He is 'The Devil' of the *Book of Thoth,* and His emblem is BAPHOMET, the Androgyne who is the hieroglyph of arcane perfection... He is therefore Life, and Love. But moreover his letter is ayin, the Eye, so that he is Light; and his Zodiacal image is Capricornus, that leaping goat whose attribute is Liberty.[5]

A Child's Guide to the Luciferian Doctrine

Ostensibly a children's story about a girl and her goat, *The Pet Goat* was in reality a strategically employed device used to introduce this key occult element into the 9/11 MegaRitual; yet, it is more than this. A deeper reading of the text reveals that this children's story is an allegory of the Luciferian Doctrine: The Father is an overbearing hyper-authoritarian, and the goat—whose initial poor behavior is, in broader context, relatively benign—saves the day. Praise the Goat.

The goat's aggressive behavior and destructive tendencies at first appear problematic, but in the end render the goat uniquely qualified to serve as savior …the All-Devouring is not the bad guy after all. It is Lucifer, the light-bearer, who seeks to set humanity free.

> Luciferianism constitutes the nucleus of the ruling class religion and represents a radical reevaluation of humanity's ageless adversary: Satan. It is the ultimate inversion of good and evil: Luciferian mythology caricatures Jehovah as an oppressive tyrant; Satan, who retains his heavenly title of Lucifer, is the liberator of humanity.
>
> Masonry, which acts as the contemporary retainer for the ancient Mystery religion, reconceptualizes Satan in a similar fashion. In *Morals and Dogma,* 33rd degree Freemason Albert Pike candidly exalts the fallen angel:
>
> > LUCIFER, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light, and with its splendors intolerable blinds feeble, sensual, or selfish Souls? Doubt it not.
>
> He makes man aware of his own innate divinity and promises to unlock the god within us all.[6]

FULL OCCULT INTERPRETATION

In the class's reading of *The Pet Goat,* the Direct Instruction method was utilized. The teacher pounded out the syllables with a pen on her book and read in unison with the children, the overall effect being not unlike the ritualistic chanting of a religious ceremony. (You really need to see the YouTube video to get the full effect.)

So, there sits Bush as the Satanic High Priest in Devil's Paradise, listening to little black children (yes, skin color does matter to the occultists…what, you thought they were politically correct?) chant out a humorous story about a pet goat—which is actually a thinly-veiled simplification of the Luciferian Doctrine—while people burn to death in the North Tower and UA175 slams into the South Tower in New York City. Crowley's *Liber 175*, "the book of Uniting to a particular Deity by devotion," outlines precisely what the perpetrators are seeking to accomplish at that exact moment through their sadistic, homicidal ritualistic acts—unite themselves with Satan. And although the locations for these two events are separated by hundreds of miles, the two acts are bound together in an ingenious and sophisticated manner by a cohesive ritual unity.

ATTA BOY

There is yet another, potentially more disturbing aspect to the selection of Sarasota as the backdrop for the Bush-Baphomet Black Mass. Roughly ten miles south of Sarasota is Venice, Florida, and the Venice Municipal Airport, home to Huffman Aviation, where Mohamed Atta and another purported 9/11 conspirator allegedly undertook flight training. Subsequently, both individuals trained for a brief time at Jones Aviation in … Sarasota.

Of the hundreds of flight schools in the United States, Mohamed Atta, the ringleader of the 9/11 terrorists and the hijacker-pilot of the first plane to hit its target on the morning of September 11, 2001, attended a school located in the very city President Bush was visiting that same fateful morning, where he was presiding over the Pet-Goat Ritual Reading. Bush was in his Devil's Paradise while Atta (so we are led to believe) was busy gaining entry into the Islamic Paradise of Martyrs.

This is neither coincidence nor synchronicity; rather, it is yet another example of the twisted humor and sophisticated logistics employed in the 9/11 MegaRitual.

WELCOME TO TERRORLAND

There is, however, even more to the Sarasota-Bush-Atta story. Venice Municipal Airport is reported to be a long-time base of operations for the CIA, with allegations of a 60+ year history of "Company"-sanctioned drug running. In fact, some investigative reporters refer to Florida as "Terrorland" (see *Welcome to Terrorland: Mohamed Atta & the 9-11 Cover-up in Florida* by Daniel Hopsicker) and tell of CIA training camps, banks used to launder drug money, and flight schools/airports used for discreet arms-drugs-cash transfers.

There are obvious implications here that the CIA (or elements within in) was involved on some level with the events of 9/11—a theory supported by many other pieces of evidence. Bush's presence in Sarasota on 9/11 could then be viewed as a tip-of-the-hat to the CIA's historical activity in that area (keep in mind, too, that Bush Sr. was head of the Agency in 1977-78). And let's not forget that on 9/11 the governor of Florida—where the 2000 Presidential election was allegedly "stolen"—was none other than Jeb Bush. (For more on this topic, see Appendix C, "The Mohamed Atta Myth," on page 175.)

Mohamed Atta's Flying Circus of Death: The Greatest Show on Earth

Yet another highly attractive aspect of Sarasota from an occult perspective is that, in 1919, Ringling Brothers Circus established its winter home there, and performers and staff members began to settle in Sarasota, as did some of the seven Ringling Brothers, all of whom were Masons. Decades later in 1968, the Ringling Brothers and Barnum & Bailey Clown College located there, as well, and new CIA recruits were reportedly sent to the college from Langley to learn sleight-of-hand.

Clowns are modern incarnations of the trickster deity—of which Hermes, Pan and Satan are all prime examples. The trickster-clown is a Jungian archetype, and the most ancient clowns have been found in the Fifth dynasty of Egypt.

Through inverted speech, illogical actions, mimicry of spirits and animals, and ludicrous acrobatic stunts, clowns perform functions attributed to Tricksters in mythology, blurring boundaries, toying with social and sexual rules, and mixing the obscene with the sacred.[7]

There has emerged a much darker contemporary image of the clown, however—the evil clown, in which the playful trope of the clown is rendered disturbing through the use of horror elements and dark humor. Cultural critic Mark Dery has theorized the postmodern archetype of the evil clown in "Cotton Candy Autopsy: Deconstructing Psycho-Killer Clowns."

Tracking the image of the demented or deviant clown across popular culture, Dery analyzes the "Pogo the Clown" persona of the serial killer John Wayne Gacy; the obscene clowns of the neo-situationist Cacophony Society; the Joker (of "Batman" Fame); the grotesque art of R.K. Sloane; the sick-funny Bobcat Goldthwaite comedy Shakes the Clown; and Stephen King's *It.*

Using Mikhail Bakhtin's theory of the carnivalesque, Jungian and historical writings on the images of the fool in myth and history, and ruminations on the mingling of ecstasy and dread in the Information Age, Dery asserts the evil clown is an icon of our times.[8]

Clowns, especially evil clowns, are often depicted as murderous psychopaths, an apt description of the occult perpetrators of the 9/11 MegaRitual, who used pseudo-Islamic-extremist patsies to pilot planes full of terrified passengers through the skies into buildings (and into the ground, where Flight 93 disappeared completely in an astonishing vanishing act), in what one could call a Flying Circus of Death—the Greatest Show on Earth, with performances in New York, Washington and Shanksville, and 'ringleader' Mohamed Atta as ringmaster.

THE INFAMOUS SEVEN MINUTES REVISITED

In light of all we have learned about Bush's seemingly innocent little trip to Sarasota, we return to those troublesome seven minutes. Film maker Michael Moore observed that, "Not knowing what to do—with no one telling him what to do—and no Secret Service rushing in to take him to safety, Mr. Bush just sat there and continued to read 'My Pet Goat' [sic] with the children," the obvious implication being that Bush was simply too stupid and/or indecisive to do anything else. Bush himself would have us believe that he simply didn't want to startle the little tykes, and most people readily accepted that explanation, as if in collective agreement that the entire classroom of second-graders would have all shit their pants if he'd gotten up and walked out.

Now, however, Bush's actions, or rather his temporary inaction, makes more sense. Andrew Card's timely delivery of the message regarding the impact of the second plane may or may not have been a scripted element of the MegaRitual (although having the High Priest visibly acknowledge the receipt of news confirming the successful execution of a companion ritual hundreds of miles away *is* a nice touch), but in any case, Bush sure the hell wasn't going to get up and interrupt an ode to the Goat.

Bush's immobility even caught the eye of his arch nemesis, Osama bin Laden, whose alleged comments on the matter are reproduced below from the full transcript of a videotaped monologue sent to Al Jazeera in 2004:

> And for the record, we had agreed with the Commander-General Muhammad Atta, Allah have mercy on him, that all the operations should be carried out within 20 minutes, before Bush and his administration notice. It never occurred to us that the commander-in-chief of the American armed forces would abandon 50,000 of his citizens in the twin towers to face those great horrors alone, the time when they most needed him. But because it seemed to him that occupying himself by talking to the little girl about the goat and its butting was more important than occupying himself with the planes and their butting of the skyscrapers, we were given three times the period required to execute the operations—all praise is due to Allah.[9]

"…the goat and its butting was more important than occupying himself with the planes and their butting of the skyscrapers"… Osama had a sense of humor? Who the hell knew? He has the world's largest military and most-formidable intelligence services scouring the earth for him, and he's cracking jokes on Al Jazeera. Or, perhaps those who say that Bin Laden was a CIA asset/scapegoat/boogeyman are right, and it's not Osama mocking us, but the Shadow Government and the orchestrators of the 9/11 Global MegaRitual.

It is certainly worth noting that Bin Laden initially denied involvement with the attacks. On September 16, 2001, three years before turning comedian, Bin Laden issued a statement that was broadcast on Al Jazeera in which he said emphatically, "I stress that I have not carried out this act, which appears to have been carried out by individuals with their own motivation." (Last time I checked, terrorist masterminds weren't in the habit of denying responsibility for acts of violence.)

Whatever the case may be, strap yourselves in, because you've only gotten a taste of the mockery that lies in store.

CHAPTER FIVE

ACTION!

> *Mystical toponomy and alchemical cant language are part of a process which hinges on a marriage between action in time [or recorded history] and physical locations on the earth regarded as "places of power" by the cryptocracy's magical-geographical vision of the earth as a giant chess board, symbolized by the tessellated floor of Solomon's Temple and the masonic lodge.*
>
> —Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

ACT THREE: AMERICAN AIRLINES FLIGHT 77 AND THE PENTAGON

The floor in the right half of her office disappeared beneath her. Along with it, a large section of the exterior wall in her third floor Pentagon office simply vanished as the sunlight burst in, only for a moment, as it was immediately followed by a rush of intense heat, fire and thick smoke. She knew she would die. She could feel her skin melting, then, blackness.

A FLYING DUNCE HITS THE JACKPOT

In order to hit the west face of the Pentagon, American Airlines 77 performed what more than one experienced pilot has called an extremely difficult, if not almost impossible, aerial maneuver—despite the fact that, according to his former flight instructors, hijacker-pilot Hani Hanjour of the Flying Circus of Death could barely perform the most basic tasks.

Writing in *Newsday* on September 23, 2001, in "Tracing Trail of Hijackers," Thomas Frank reported, "Hanjour began making cross-country flights in August to test security, and tried to rent a plane from Freeway Airport in Maryland; though he was declined after exhibiting difficulty controlling and landing a single-engine Cessna 172."[1] Arizona JetTech flight school managers reported him to the FAA at least five times because his English was inadequate for the commercial pilot's certificate he had already obtained … a JetTech manager said, "He could not fly at all."

SEC. RUMSFELD

Interestingly enough, on September 10, 2001, Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld had announced that huge sums in Pentagon spending could not be accounted for. “According to some estimates we cannot track $2.3 trillion in transactions,” Rumsfeld admitted. And where was DoD’s accounting division located? In the west wing, which was in the final stages of renovation at the time, and into which those responsible for conducting the related investigation had recently been relocated.

Now, to some crackpot types, this might all sound a tad suspicious—throw in the fact that the groundbreaking ceremony for the Pentagon was held on September 11, 1941, 60 years *to the day* before 9/11, and we’ve got ourselves a genuine conspiracy theory.

77: “Magical Power in Perfection”

Flight 77 strikes the Pentagon, which sits on the 77th Meridian West and is 77 feet tall.

Anton Szandor LaVey, founder of the Church of Satan and author of *The Satanic Bible,* lists the 77 “infernal names” of the “Gods and Goddesses called upon, which make up a large part of the occupancy of the Royal Palace of Hell.” The number 77 is also a Masonic signal, the number of the Revenge of Lamech, ancestor of Hiram Abiff the Master Mason.

Written in 1941 and originally entitled “the Book of the Goat” (*The Pet Goat,* anyone?), Aleister Crowley’s *Liber OZ* (or *Book* 77) is a single page purporting to declare mankind’s basic and intrinsic rights according to Crowley’s philosophy of Thelema, and he considered it as a sort of manifesto for OTO.

And in *The Book of Lies,* Crowley writes:

> The sublime and supreme septenary in its mature magical manifestation through matter…
>
> 7, the septenary; 11, the magical number; 77, the manifestation, therefore, of the septenary. Through matter, because 77 is written in Hebrew Ayin Zayin (OZ), and He-Goat, the symbol of matter, Capricornus, the Devil of the Tarot; which is the picture of the Goat of the Sabbath upon an altar, worshipped by two other devils, male and female.

LIBER
CCCXXXIII
THE
BOOK
OF
LIES
FALSELY
SO CALLED

LIBER LXXVII

OZ:

"the law of
the strong:
this is our law
and the joy
of the world."
— *AL. II. 21*

"Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law."
— *AL. I. 40*

"thou hast no right but to do thy will. Do that, and no other shall say nay." — *AL. I. 42–3*

"Every man and every woman is a star." — *AL. I. 3*

There is no god but man.

1. Man has the right to live by his own law —
to live in the way that he wills to do:
to work as he will:
to play as he will:
to rest as he will:
to die when and how he will.

2. Man has the right to eat what he will:
to drink what he will:
to dwell where he will:
to move as he will on the face of the earth.

3. Man has the right to think what he will:
to speak what he will:
to write what he will:
to draw, paint, carve, etch, mould, build as he will:
to dress as he will.

4. Man has the right to love as he will: —
"take your fill and will of love as ye will,
when, where and with whom ye will." — *AL. I. 51*

5. Man has the right to kill those who would thwart
these rights.

"the slaves shall serve." — *AL. II. 58*

"Love is the law, love under will." — *AL. I. 57*

Aleister Crowley

And in Crowley's *Gematria* we find:

> 77. OZ, the Goat, *scil.* of the Sabbath of the Adepts. The Baphomet of the Templars, the idol set up to defy and overthrow the false god—though it is understood that he himself is false, not an end, but a means. Note the 77 = 7 x 11, magical power in perfection.

Again we discover, as in Act One, a number of supreme occult significance, ceremonially coupled with a potent super-sized occult symbol, in this case, the Pentagon.

PENTAGON: POWERFUL SYMBOL

Symbols don't kill people; people with symbols kill people. The pentagram is not universally held to be a symbol of evil—some cultures have considered it as a sign of protection and good fortune. However, it also has a long history of association with the dark arts. As with firearms, the difference is the intent of the user.

The antiquity of the pentagon's use as an occult symbol is well demonstrated by the following quote from Friedrich Nicolai (1733-1811), a bookseller, Freemason and member of the Bavarian Illuminati. Writing in 1782, he stated:

> What properly was the sign of the Baffomet, 'figura Baffometi,' … cannot be exactly determined... I believe it to have been the Pythagorean pentagon (Fünfeck) of health and prosperity ... It is well known how holy this figure was considered, and that the Gnostics had much in common with the Pythagoreans … it appears that these serpent-worshippers believed they must produce a token that they had been clean on earth. I believe that this token was also the holy pentagon, the sign of their initiation.

However, the idea of causing damage to a symbol of protection is also attractive to practitioners of the dark arts. Writing in *Magic: White and Black*, Franz Hartmann, writing about the pentagram, observes, "The spiritual knowledge of the Five-pointed Star is identical with its practical application. Let us beware that the figure is always well drawn, leaving no open space, through which the enemy can enter and *disturb the harmony existing in the Pentagon*" [emphasis added].

According to *The Donning International Encyclopedic Psychic Dictionary*, the pentagram is the "most powerful symbol of all ceremonial rites," and among the powers ascribed to it is the notification of "etheric world intelligences." The

pentagram, which contains a pentagon at its heart, is widely used to evoke spirits, and the *inverted* pentagram, a universal Satanic symbol, to summon demons and even the Devil himself.

The pentagon and the 77 go together like a lock and key—and, actually, this is more than a simile. A number of power combined with a symbol of power … a ceremonial vessel numerically consecrated and filled with living sacrifices violently penetrates into the inner sanctum of a five-ring jumbo-sized heart-of-a-pentagram in a spewing eruption of flame, glass, steel, flesh and blood … this diabolical ceremonial act was designed as a key to unlock the powers of hell (symbolically, or perhaps more literally than we care to imagine), unleashing them on the denizens of earth.

HAPPY BIRTHDAY, MR. OLSON

Theodore Olson served as United States Solicitor under President George W. Bush from June 2001 to July 2004. Previously, Olson had successfully represented then presidential candidate George W. Bush in the Supreme Court case *Bush v. Gore*, which ended the Florida recount in the 2000 Presidential election, effectively handing Bush the Presidency.[2]

As fate would have it, Mr. Olson was born on September 11, 1940, and, as fate would also have it, Olson's third wife, Barbara, just happened to be a passenger on hijacked American Airlines Flight 77—which, on September 11, 2001, crashed into the Pentagon, for which the groundbreaking ceremony was held on September 11, 1941.

A string of Satanic synchronicities? A cruel cosmic joke played on a poor soul unfortunate enough to have been born on September 11th? Or, perhaps, something altogether different…

On 9/11, Barbara Olson—a lawyer and conservative commentator who worked for CNN, Fox News, and other outlets—was on her way to Los Angeles for a taping of *Politically Incorrect*, on which she was a regular guest. Under normal circumstances, she would have departed the previous evening, but stayed home to be with her husband on the morning of his birthday.

According to Ted Olson, his wife phoned him after the hijacking had commenced and informed him that the hijackers had knives and boxcutters (shanks), a key detail in the overall 9/11 scenario. Again according to Ted Olson, this call was cut off, as was a second call, during which Olson claimed to have informed his wife of the two crashes at the Twin Towers.

Those researching this incident on the internet will find claims that Ted Olson's version of events reportedly changed several times, with him first claiming that his wife had called him from her cell phone, and later, a seatback phone. Researchers will also find conflicting reports regarding whether or not 757s had seatback phones in 2001, and whether or not it was possible to make cell phone calls from an airplane in flight.

Then there are related claims that the calls Mrs. Olson placed from the seatback phone were collect calls, and also that an official FBI report stated that there was only one call placed to the Justice Department and it lasted 0 seconds.

There is even online speculation that Ted Olson's fourth wife (but who's counting), Lady Evelyn Booth, is actually a still-very-much-alive Barbara Olson after plastic surgery, which, given all of the other "peculiarities" surrounding this incident, is in fact quite intriguing, as is the following little detail.

Lady Evelyn Cobbold (1867-1963) achieved celebrity at the age of 65, in 1933, when she became the first British-born Muslim woman to perform the pilgrimage to Mecca. Taking into consideration the radical-Muslim cover story employed by the orchestrators of the 9/11 MegaRitual, as well as their propensity towards dark humor and outright mockery of the victims and general public (as well as the remarkable facial and other physical similarities between Barbara and Lady Evelyn), one could draw the conclusion that the entire incident was a ruse.

The 9/11 birthday boy may or may not have knowingly and selflessly endured the sacrifice of his beloved third wife (but who's counting) so that America, nay, the world, could have a play-by-play via cell phone of Flight 77's doomed journey to the Pentagon, and learn the method by which the hijackers took control of the plane(s). Barbara may or may not in fact have been on that plane, and Lady Evelyn may or may not be Ted's third and fourth wife.

Was what happened, whatever that may be, all simply the cruel hand of fate? Or, was this the case of a Washington insider chosen for a special task in the 9/11 MegaRitual because of a personal connection to this highly-significant occult date? And, perhaps, one helluva reward—in the form of a major supporting role in the star-studded cast of the Greatest Show on Earth—for his participation in what many believe to be the theft of the American Presidency in 2000?

As Below, So Above …

On the morning of 9/11, a white "mystery plane" was spotted in the skies over Washington, DC. In the minutes immediately following the attack on the Pentagon, it was seen circling in the restricted airspace above the White House, further alarming already tense Secret Service agents.

As Mark Gaffney details in his book, *The 9/11 Mystery Plane*, the aircraft turned out to be an E-4B, the world's most advanced communications platform and state-of-the-art airborne command center. The $800 million aircraft is a modified Boeing 747-200, and is characteristically painted white with its most distinguishing feature being a pronounced pod located directly behind the cockpit.

Mark H. Gaffney
The 9/11 Mystery Plane
and the Vanishing of America
Foreword by
Dr. David Ray Griffin

Let's put this bit of information in context: the Air Force, which couldn't manage to get a single interceptor fighter-jet in the air that morning until it was too late, had its aptly-named "Doomsday Plane" aloft in the skies above Washington at the very moment the Pentagon was supposedly struck with pin-point accuracy by a flying dunce (after he performed a 330-degree downward spiral that lasted over 3 minutes, mind you).

Even though the airspace above Washington is the most heavily monitored on the entire planet, the Pentagon never ordered an evacuation of the building, and as a result 125 servicemen and women died—again, as with the victims in the Twin Towers, amidst flame and smoke. "The Pentagon was simply not aware that this aircraft was coming our way," one official is quoted as saying in David Ray Griffin's foreword to Gaffney's book—which is a patently absurd statement given the blanket, overlapping ground radar coverage of the area, and even *more so* considering the presence of the E-4B.

We are to believe, then, that not only did Hani Hanjour perform one hell of a feat of kamikaze barnstorming, but *snuck up* on the nerve center of the most formidable military in the world as well, right under the watchful eye of its most sophisticated surveillance aircraft? (Any suggestion that bureaucratic paralysis or lack of real-time information or adequate threat analysis or protocol was to blame strains credibility to the breaking point.)

And just when you think that you've heard it all, that the entire scenario couldn't get any more ridiculously suspicious (or suspiciously ridiculous), this little fact emerges: in information obtained from the FAA in 2008 under a FOIA request, we learn the call sign of the doomsday plane circling in the skies above DC on 9/11 …VENUS77.

That's right. *Yet another* 77 (apparently you just can't have too many), and, wouldn't you know it, *yet another* pentagram reference: the successive inferior conjunctions of the planet Venus against the Zodiac form a pentagram, thus in occult thought this geometric form represents Venus, and Venus invokes the pentagram…just Google it. (The Romans designated the morning aspect of Venus as Lucifer, literally "Light-Bringer": Venus = Lucifer.)

Here again, the 77 and the pentagram/pentagon, in the air, *combined* together in magical union. We knew that they're big on the As-above-so-below thing, but sheesh.

It's more, more of the amazing Flying Circus of … oh, hell, nevermind.

Just Typical

As a case study in the purposely-generated information fog that exists around all aspects of 9/11, the Flight 77-Pentagon element is particularly instructive. The obviously conflicting theories are typical of the entire event. There are claims that the doomed flights of 9/11 were never in fact scheduled for that day; that they never took off; that there were fake passenger manifests and/or fictitious passengers; that the planes which were claimed to have crashed were airborne well after the time they were reported down; that some of the hijackers are still alive, and on and on.

One report claims that Flights 11 and 175 appeared to have crossed paths at precisely the same time over Stuart Air Force Base, but in actuality they shut off their transponders, landed and were replaced by already-airborne drones which then began broadcasting counterfeit signatures and were then used in the attacks on the Twin Towers.

Many, if not all, of the components of the 9/11 script were *designed* to confuse, to distract, to mesmerize, to appear suspicious on second glance and thus suck investigators and conspiracy theorists alike down a bottomless rabbit hole of misinformation and disinformation.

GIMME FIVE: THE HOUSE OF DEATH

As has been far more than duly noted, occultists believe that numbers contain inherent spiritual and temporal power, and that to launch a plan without incorporating the proper occult power numbers could doom the plan to failure.

The Pentagon is a 5-sided building, with 5 concentric rings and 5 above-ground floors (5-5-5), *and* a 5-acre central plaza, which, interestingly enough, is also referred to as "ground zero," a nickname that originated during the Cold War with the logical assumption that the USSR would target the Pentagon in the event of nuclear war. According to the official version of events, there were 5 hijackers onboard Flight 77, and the Pentagon sits just across the Potomac River from the Washington Monument, which is 555 feet tall (a fact mentioned four times in Dan Brown's *The Lost Symbol*).

If this last sentence strikes you as over-zealous piling on, recall the intentional (and zealous) piling on of the number 77, and consider this: modern occultists hold 5 to be the Number of Death, and the number five, according to some, is sacred to the hoariest of secret societies —the Illuminati.

In basic terms, the number five symbolizes the five points of the pentagram and all that it connotes—death, in particular, in this instance. Some occultists would contend that the greatest intensification of a number of power is its triplicate, with 555 thus yielding "Highest Death"; the U.S. Military may disagree slightly with this interpretation, however, as the rank of their most senior operational commanders is that of "five-star" (five 5-pointed stars).

So, as many would argue is the case even without reference to five as the number of death, the Pentagon is a House of Death (or, if you take this line of reasoning to its logical extent, The House of *Highest* Death, and who could really argue with that)—as it most certainly was to those soldiers who lost their lives within its walls on 9/11 in what by all appearances was a self-inflicted wound.

5 myths What you don't know about Dick Cheney **OUTLOOK**

How Snyder landed Shanahan Desperation, subterfuge in hunt for a new Redskins coach **SPORTS**

A hammer, not a handout D.C. program helps the homeless build better lives, one nail at a time **METRO**

Court date Men's and women's finals set at U.S. Open **SPORTS**

The Washington Post

Thunderstorms 82/63 • *Tomorrow: Partly sunny 88/67* • DETAILS, C12   SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 11, 2011   washingtonpost.com • $2

WHEN EVERYTHING CHANGED

SEPT. 11, 2001, PHOTO BY [illegible]

STORY BY JOEL ACHENBACH

For Karen Hughes, counselor to the president of the United States, Sept. 10, 2001, was a day of celebration and relief. It was her wedding anniversary. She and husband Jerry dined at a favorite restaurant in the Watergate and reviewed the drama and chaos of the previous months.

There'd been the long presidential campaign, the disputed election, the move to Washington. They had to move a second time when the first house didn't work out. Then a freak summer rainstorm had flooded their basement, soaking their possessions.

All that was finally behind them. And so she could say: "We've survived the worst."

And: "Things can only get better from here."

That Monday — call it 9/10 — was the last day of a certain kind of American innocence.

"Eye on America investigates danger in the air — hot-dog military pilots in civilian airspace," CBS News anchor Dan Rather said in his introduction that evening.

The top story of the night: Senate investigators crack down on scams involving dietary supplements.

The nation perceived itself to be at peace, unchallenged as the world's only superpower. There were, to be sure, bad guys lurking here and there. There were random fanatics and Unabomber types. Pennsylvania Avenue had been closed in front of the White House to prevent truck bombs like the one that hit the federal building in Oklahoma City.

At the airport, travelers were asked: Did you pack your bags yourself? Has your bag been in your possession at all times?

X-ray machines at the security checkpoint were calibrated to detect a gun or large knife. A computer program flagged suspicious travelers, and their checked baggage would get extra screening. The bags wouldn't be loaded onto the plane until the travelers had boarded the flight. The system assumed that no one would blow up a plane while flying on it.

There was a template for terror, a paradigm for how an attack would unfold. An airline hijacker would want to divert the plane to some unintended destination. Flight attendants were trained to discourage passengers from attempting heroic acts in a hijacking.

America was good at preparing for the imaginable.

Monday the 10th was the start of Acquisition and Logistics Excellence Week at the Pentagon. Defense Secretary Donald H. Rumsfeld used the occasion to give a barnburner of a speech in which he declared war on the Pentagon itself — on its bureaucracy, its waste, its crusty

INNOCENCE CONTINUED ON A12

Security is heightened in D.C.
More officers are on patrol, and some gates at Dulles airport are briefly closed. **A16**

Then and now
Ten readers who wrote to The Post after 9/11 reflect on what the attacks mean today. **C8**

Special section
Nine lives, 10 years later: recovering from the attacks on Washington. **Section AA**

Turkey seeks to host U.S. drone base

REQUEST COMES AS IRAQ WITHDRAWAL NEARS

Ankara depends on American planes to fight Kurdish group

BY CRAIG WHITLOCK

The Obama administration is considering a request from Turkey to base a fleet of Predator drones on Turkish soil for counterterrorism operations in northern Iraq, a decision that could strengthen a diplomatic alliance but drag the United States deeper into a regional conflict.

The U.S. military has flown the unarmed Predators from Iraqi bases since 2007 and shared the planes' surveillance video with Turkey as part of a secretive joint crackdown against fighters from the Kurdistan Workers' Party, or PKK. Unless a new home for the Predators is found, however, the counterterrorism partnership could cease by Dec. 31, when all U.S. forces are scheduled to withdraw from Iraq.

The Obama administration has not yet made a decision on the Turkish request, according to senior U.S. military officials.

Previously undisclosed diplomatic cables show Turkey has become highly dependent on the Predators, U-2 spy aircraft and other U.S. intelligence sources in its conflict with the PKK. The Kurdish group, which is fighting to create an autonomous enclave in Turkey, has launched cross-border attacks from its hideouts in northern Iraq for years. Turkey has responded with airstrikes and artillery attacks but has also sent ground troops into Iraq, further destabilizing an already volatile area.

Turkey's request to host the Predators on its territory is an unexamined consequence of the U.S. withdrawal from Iraq, which some countries fear could leave a power vacuum in an unstable region. It also underscores how U.S. unmanned aircraft have swiftly become the leading tactical weapon against terrorist groups around the world, as well as a favored instrument of foreign policy.

In addition to deploying armed drones in Afghanistan, Iraq and Pakistan, the United States is expanding drone missions over Yemen and Somalia. It has sent surveillance drones into Mexico for counternarcotics operations and supplied small surveillance drones to the Colombian military for counterterrorism missions.

TURKEY CONTINUED ON A10

Crying out for a historic role

With tricorn hats and hand bells, eager Alexandria contestants shout 'Oyez!'

BY J. FREEDOM DU LAC

Gentle mistresses and most distinguished gentlemen:

Whereas the people of Alexandria, in the Commonwealth of Virginia, in these United States of America, are generally obsessed with their city's long history; and

Whereas Alexandria, founded in 1749, celebrates its heritage like there is no tomorrow; and

Whereas a bellowing bell-ringer in a tricorn hat, breeches, jabot and waistcoat almost always gets the party started right, or at least with a Colonial flair;

Now, therefore, the Office of Historic Alexandria does declare that the time is nigh to name a new town crier.

And so it was that Wednesday night, in the historic Lloyd House on historic Washington Street in historic Old Town, a dozen wannabe Founding Father types — most in period clothing, some holding scrolls, one even wearing proper period spectacles — proffered their best oyezes at an open tryout for the unpaid position of Alexandria town crier.

TOWN CRIER CONTINUED ON A11

MATT McCLAIN FOR THE WASHINGTON POST

Ben Fierro-Walker dressed the part as one of 12 people who tried out for the position of Alexandria's town crier. He says he's obsessed with the city's heritage.

Security crackdown in Egypt tests new government's hold on streets

BY MICHAEL BIRNBAUM AND JOEL GREENBERG

CAIRO — Israel scrambled its diplomatic staff out of Egypt early Saturday after protesters tore down a wall and broke into the Israeli Embassy. As thousands more protesters torched police vehicles and clashed with security forces, an Egyptian commando squad rescued six embassy guards trapped inside the building.

Israeli officials who tracked events during the night described tense hours in which Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu spoke by phone with President Obama and the chief of Egyptian intelligence while monitoring events over a direct link to the besieged guards.

Israel's defense minister, Ehud Barak, also called his U.S. counterparts during the night to ask them to press the Egyptians to do more to protect the embassy.

"Our assessment was that they had 20 minutes to hold out, and in those 20 minutes the Egyptian commandos would arrive," Foreign Minister Avigdor Lieberman said in a television interview Saturday. "Those were perhaps the longest minutes."

In response to the crisis, Egypt's ruling military council announced a security crackdown Saturday, saying it would make full use of the country's emergency law to ensure safety. It was a move that exposed the fragility of the new government's control of the streets.

Under President Hosni Mubarak, Egypt's police force kept a tight lid on the population, and improved civil liberties were a key demand for protesters who ousted their leader in February. Since then, much of the police force has remained off the streets, and other security forces have sometimes struggled with how to respond to protests. On Friday, a small crew of soldiers stood back as crowds massed outside the embassy.

The incident underlined the altered relationship between Israel and post-rev-

EGYPT CONTINUED ON A8

Rebel chief lands in Tripoli
Mustafa Abdel Jalil was mobbed in the Libyan capital as anti-Gaddafi fighters met stiff resistance from loyalists 100 miles away. **A6**

Arab League in talks with Assad
The head of the group meets with the Syrian president to discuss ways of ending the bloodshed in the country. **A6**

APARTMENTS	[illegible]	COMICS	[illegible]	LOTTERIES	[illegible]	STOCKS	[illegible]
ARTS	[illegible]	EDITORIALS/LETTERS	[illegible]	OUTLOOK	[illegible]	TRAVEL	[illegible]
BUSINESS	[illegible]	JOBS	[illegible]	OBITUARIES	[illegible]	WORLD NEWS	[illegible]

Printed using recycled fiber

PostPoints DAILY CODE Details, C2 9 9 2 7

CHAPTER SIX

RITUAL MURDER AS MIND CONTROL

> *… a clown-like, grinning mockery of the victim(s) as a show of power and macabre arrogance. When this is performed in a veiled manner, accompanied by certain occult signs and symbolic words and elicits no meaningful response of opposition or resistance from the target(s), it is one of the most efficacious techniques of psychological warfare and mind-rape.*
>
> —Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

Before moving on to Acts Four, Five and Six (and then on to the 'framework' of the 9/11 MegaRitual), we're going to pause and consider whether we're really on the right track. Could this *really* be what it appears to be? Is there any historical precedent for this type of thing?

THE PROPHET OF 9/11

Michael Hoffman is a former reporter for the New York bureau of the Associated Press, and the first edition of his *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* was published in 1989, well before September 11, 2001. His work was prescient not in that it actually predicted 9/11, but in that it clearly defined the motives and *modus operandi* of those ultimately responsible for the terror attacks—and this would *not* be Osama bin Laden or Al Qaeda.

SECRET SOCIETIES
and
Psychological Warfare
Michael A. Hoffman II

Much of *Secret Societies* reads as though it were written specifically about 9/11, and Hoffman notes in particular the difficulty we have accepting the idea that we could be manipulated on a mass scale:

> The issue of controlling humanity with esoteric words and symbols encoded within a play, a media spectacular or a

> ritual is one of the most difficult for people to comprehend.… Even as [modern man] dances to the tune of the elite managers of human behavior, he scoffs with great derision at the idea of the existence and operation of a technology of mass mind control emanating from the media and government.[1]

Hoffman further observes that "ritual murder is mind control," and refers to the machinery of manipulation as "a technological tyranny so immense it is difficult to grasp. It is both a physical, technological tyranny as well as a tyranny of the mind."[2]

Like Clockwork

Hoffman describes modern existence as "life in an open-air mind control laboratory":

> In the study of mind control and psychological warfare, it is not enough to simply review the latest technology of coercion, the most recent gadgetry and techno-junk littering the hardware and supply depots of governments and cults.
>
> Far more dangerous than these appliances is the praxis behind them, the underground current which informs the modern project and this modern era. For life in our modern era is little more than life in an open-air mind control laboratory where a form of human alchemy has emerged to transform the mass of targeted percipients—targeted merely by virtue of their being urban dwellers plugged into the electronic and digital pageantry of the Establishment's system-of-things.[3]

"The induction of terror into the mass mind of Americans in association with certain key-words and key-symbols or 'sigils' in connection with control-symbols" Hoffman states, "is the most efficacious means of ensuring a brain-dead and mind-controlled, subject population."[4] He continues, asserting that "ritual murder is mind control…symbolism embedded within terrorism and achieved with seeming invincible accomplishment by 'invisible' principals, is a great way to control and process people."[5]

Hoffman explains that it is the subconscious mind that is being targeted in occult ritual. "In occult crimes the objective is not linear," he states, "that is to say, is not solely bound to the achievement of the immediate effects of the attack on the victim, but may in fact be a part of a larger, symbolic ritual magnified by the power of the electronic media, for the purpose of the alchemical processing of the subconscious Group Mind of the masses." Hoffman continues, telling us that "it is the subconscious that is being addressed in occult ritual, in a process CIA behavioral scientist Dr. Ewan Cameron termed, 'psychic driving.'"[6]

"The Black Arts adepts," he concludes, "are not simply 'crazed', nor are such intensely publicized ritual murders merely superstitious sacrifices to some kooky devil-god." They are in fact "a brilliantly orchestrated ritual whose ceremonial aspects were as precise and detailed as the internal workings of a clock."

Tick-Tock.

THIS MEMORIAL IS IN MEMORY
OF THE BRAVE MEN AND WOMEN
WHO GAVE THEIR LIVES
TO SAVE SO MANY OTHERS.
THEIR COURAGE AND LOVE
OF OUR COUNTRY WILL BE
A SOURCE OF STRENGTH AND COMFORT
TO OUR GREAT NATION.
GOD BLESS AMERICA.

CHRISTIAN ADAMS
FLIGHT ATTENDANT LORRAINE G. BAY
TODD BEAMER
ALAN BEAVEN
MARK BINGHAM
DEORA BODLEY
FLIGHT ATTENDANT SANDRA W. BRADSHAW
MARION BRITTON
THOMAS BURNETT
WILLIAM CASHMAN
GEORGINE CORRIGAN
PATRICIA CUSHING
CAPTAIN JASON DAHL
JOSEPH DELUCA
PATRICK DRISCOLL
EDWARD FELT
JANE C. FOLGER
COLLEEN FRASER
ANDREW GARCIA
JEREMY GLICK
KRISTIN GOULD
LAUREN GRANDCOLAS
FLIGHT ATTENDANT WANDA A. GREEN
DONALD GREENE
LINDA GRONLUND
RICHARD GUADAGNO
FIRST OFFICER LEROY HOMER
TOSHIYA KUGE
FLIGHT ATTENDANT CEECEE LYLES
HILDA MARCIN
WALESKA MARTINEZ
NICOLE MILLER
LOUIS J. NACKE
DONALD PETERSON
JEAN PETERSON
MARK ROTHENBERG
CHRISTINE SNYDER
JOHN TALIGNANI
HONOR ELIZABETH WAINIO
FLIGHT ATTENDANT DEBORAH A. WELSH

UNITED FLIGHT 93
SEPTEMBER 11, 2001

CHAPTER SEVEN

“LET’S ROLL”

… humor is all-important and the most appalling crimes may be committed under its cloak … ghoulish murders with a Puckish sense of fun.

—Stephen Knight, *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution*

ACT FOUR: UNITED AIRLINES FLIGHT 93 AND SHANKSVILLE

“Let’s roll,” were the last words she heard him say as he put down the phone and joined a group of fellow passengers as they prepared to attempt to regain control of the airplane from the hijackers. As the heroes of United Airlines Flight 93 fought to break into the pilot’s cabin, the cockpit voice recorder captured the hijackers chanting, “Allah is the greatest!” Moments later, in Shanksville, Pennsylvania, the aircraft struck the ground with such force that the only thing visibly remaining was a smoking crater.

NO GUTS, NO GORY

The official version of the crash of Flight 93 is that the aircraft was traveling at such a high speed and steep angle as it struck the ground at a reclaimed coal mine in Pennsylvania that it was completely swallowed up by the earth. One could surmise that the soil itself might have been loosely compacted as a result of excavations, and thus would have been a contributing factor in the total disappearance of the plane.

ATTACK ON AMERICA
AP: BLACK BOX FOUND IN PENNSYLVANIA CRASH SITE
MSNBC

As the local coroner surveyed the impact site shortly following the crash, he found scarce evidence of the aircraft or its occupants: the largest human remains he initially recovered was a section of five vertebrae.

"Disappearing Act"

Conflicting reports swirled around the crash. The Vice-President had authorized the Air Force to shoot down the aircraft: was that what actually brought the plane down? There were reports of a wider debris field, with wreckage strewn about in other locations. If the entire plane had gone in nose first at such a high rate of speed that it left a practically wreckageless Wile-E.-Coyote silhouette in the ground, how could there be debris elsewhere?

So, here again, before we even get started dissecting this component of the MegaRitual to expose its grisly innards and occult inner-workings, something already stinks to high heaven.

Shanksville

According to official accounts, on the morning of 9/11, Islamic radicals forced their way into the cockpits of four separate airplanes using box-cutters, with which they injured or killed a number of persons. In colloquial terms, the victims were "shanked" (see the *Dictionary of American Slang and Colloquial Expressions*, published by McGraw Hill), and the whole affair might be insensitively referred to as "shanksville."

Now, if even after all of the other instances of the use of morbid humor that have been elucidated thus far (and remain to be exposed in further chapters) you still find it difficult to accept this idea—the notion that the orchestrators of the MegaRitual engineered the real-or-faked crash of a jetliner in a specific location because its name provided another instrument for the mockery of the victims and of the public at large—well, it won't come as any comfort to you to learn that manipulating the circumstances surrounding rituals so as to create "meaningful coincidences" (involving place names, the names of victims, etc.) is a common practice among occultists.

And it may further disrupt your sense of reality to learn the following: one Bill Crowley was the field director in the Pittsburgh Office of the FBI, which has jurisdiction at Shanksville. Certainly, you may be thinking at this point, the author is not insinuating what he appears to be: that the planners of 9/11 somehow pre-positioned an individual (either uninvolved and unsuspecting or complicit in some fashion) with the Crowley surname in this law enforcement position so that the name Crowley would be connected with the event in media reports. That would be absurd…

Perhaps, except for the fact that they turn right around and do almost exactly the same thing in Act Five, ingeniously engineering circumstances so that the Crowley surname appears in numerous media reports connected with the incident. And, on top of that, the name of the location for the next component of the MegaRitual is, like Shanksville, slang—and to top it all off, slang famously connected with Aleister Crowley himself.

As Michael Hoffman astutely observes, "Coincidence can be summoned. It's a matter of attention and timing." All too true, and we haven't even gotten to the numbers, symbols and other occult elements yet, where we'll find more Crowley and more mockery.

FLIGHT 93: AN AIRMAIL GREETING TO THELEMITES WORLDWIDE

It shouldn't surprise the reader at this stage in the reconstruction of the script to learn that 93 is of great significance in Aleister Crowley's Thelema. The central philosophical concepts of Thelema are encapsulated in two phrases from Crowley's *Liber AL*: "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law" and "Love is the law, love under will." The two key terms in these sentences are "Will" and "Love"; in Greek, Thelema and Agape. Employing isopsephy, which is the Greek practice of assigning a numerical value to the letters of a word and then adding them to obtain their sum (similar to gematria), the value of both these words equals 93.

It is common for Thelemites to greet each other with "93" in person as well as in the opening and closing of written correspondence. This custom derives from Crowley's instruction that Thelemites should greet each other with the Law of Thelema by saying, "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law." Since saying the entire Law can be cumbersome, using 93 has become a kind of shorthand.

In informal written correspondence, one often finds the number singularly at the head of a letter and in the form "93/93" at the end. In this case, the initial "93" stands in for "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law," and

"93/93" stands for "Love is the law, love under will." Crowley often used this form within his own letters, and wrote thusly on the matter:

> I am often asked why I begin my letters this way. No matter whether I am writing to my lady or to my butcher, always I begin with these eleven words. Why, how else should I begin? What other greeting could be so glad? Look, brother, we are free! Rejoice with me, sister, there is no law beyond Do what thou wilt![1]

The Confessions of
Aleister Crowley

Writing in *The Confessions of Aleister Crowley,* he further states that, "The matter is of extreme importance; because Aiwass in dictating *The Book of the Law* repeatedly makes use of correspondences in Greek, such as Thelema, Will, 93 – Agape, Love, 93 … his own name spelt in Hebrew has the value 93." Elsewhere in *Confessions,* Crowley adds, "93 is also the number of the Secret Word of the Neophyte of A:. A:., a word indicating symbolically the whole course of existence."

Well, son of a bitch. Flight 93 was a flying airmail greeting to Thelemites around the globe… and they're not even done yet.

Let's Roll (or, maybe not)

Just as alleged Flight 77 passenger Barbara Olson's supposed call to husband Ted gave us the crucial detail concerning the hijackers' use of box-cutters, Flight 93 passenger Todd Beamer's supposed in-flight phone call to customer service supervisor Lisa Jefferson at GTE Airfone's Chicago call center gave us the battle-cry for 9/11.

According to Jefferson, these were the last words she heard Beamer say after he laid the phone down to join a passenger revolt against the terrorists. As the *Washington Post* reported, by May 2002 "Let's roll" had been "embraced and promoted by President Bush as a patriotic battle cry," and was "now emblazoned on Air Force fighter planes, city fire trucks, school athletic jerseys, and countless T-shirts, baseball caps and souvenir buttons." The *Post* further noted, "It's also commemorated in popular songs."

The *London Evening Standard* called Beamer's final words "a symbol of America's determination to fight back," and Rowland Morgan, author of the book *Flight 93 Revealed,* concluded: "Truly, the Let's Roll slogan had become a call to arms—just at a time the White House needed it most."

LET'S ROLL!
Ordinary People, Extraordinary Courage
LISA BEAMER
WIFE OF 9-11 HERO TODD BEAMER
with Ken Abraham

Beamer was able to talk to Jefferson for 13 minutes, even though many calls were being dropped due to high call volume. In her 2002 book, *Let’s Roll!: Ordinary People, Extraordinary Courage*, Todd’s wife Lisa Beamer revealed that Jefferson had informed her that “it was a miracle that Todd’s call hadn’t been disconnected.” Due to the incredible number of calls being placed that morning, Lisa explains, “the GTE systems overloaded and lines were being disconnected all around [Jefferson] as she sat at the operator’s station outside of Chicago, talking to Todd. [Jefferson] kept thinking, This call is going to get dropped! Yet Todd stayed connected … all the way to the end.”

In her own 2006 book, *Called* (now that’s funny, I don’t care who you are), Jefferson wrote, “[H]is voice was devoid of any stress. In fact, he sounded so tranquil it made me begin to doubt the authenticity and urgency of his call.” Jefferson told Beamer’s wife: “If I hadn’t known it was a real hijacking, I’d have thought it was a crank call, because Todd was so rational and methodical about what he was doing.”

This would be an observation echoed by Lyz Glick, wife of another Flight 93 passenger Jeremy Glick, who, in describing a call from her husband recalled, “He was so calm, the plane sounded so calm, that if I hadn’t seen what was going on on the TV, I wouldn’t have believed it.” She continued, “I was surprised by how calm it seemed in the background. I didn’t hear any screaming. I didn’t hear any noises. I didn’t hear any commotion.”

Similarly, concerning passenger Lauren Grandcolas’ voice message to her husband Jack, journalist and author Jere Longman recounts, “It sounded to Jack as if she were driving home from the grocery store or ordering a pizza.” Jack Grandcolas later states, “She sounded calm. There is absolutely no background noise on her message. You can’t hear people screaming or yelling or crying. It’s very calm, the whole cabin, the background, there’s really very little sound.”

An entire plane-load of cool, collected frequent flyers and hijacker-battling heroes, one of whom just happens to utter forth the phrase that becomes the rallying cry for the all-hell-unleashed, shock-and-awe retribution heaped upon the heads of Islamic radicals and their supporters, enemies far and wide, real and imagined? Certainly not impossible, but in context of everything else we know (and suspect) about the falsehoods of 9/11, this very much sounds like more of the same old chicanery and force-fed propaganda.

Bizzaro-world

Several witnesses in and around Shanksville reported seeing a white corporate jet flying low and fast in the vicinity of the crash site immediately before and after the stated time of impact. Eye-witnesses were very clear that what they saw was not the doomed Flight 93—which yet other witnesses claimed to have seen flying not at the steep angle that would've been required for the craft to disappear entirely into the soil, but at a much lesser angle.

Compellingly, USGS aerial photography of the mine site dating to well before 9/11 shows a narrow trench in the landscape of exactly the same width, depth and length, and in precisely the same location, as the supposed Flight 93 crash site. The only difference in the before and after images—the central crater where the fuselage reportedly burrowed completely out of sight, a simple round feature easily enough added with a bomb, missile or other explosive device.

There was an additional eyewitness report, however, that added even further intrigue to the incident. One local resident stated on camera that while stopped at an intersection in a rural area near the location of the crash, her van was overflown by what appeared to be a white aircraft so low to the ground that she dove to the floorboard of her vehicle.

The most interesting aspect of her account, though, was that she claimed that the "plane" made absolutely no noise whatsoever, had no markings whatsoever (as well as no distinguishable details, such as would be readily visible from that distance, appearing to have been created as a solid unit, the result of a molding process perhaps), flew underneath telephone wires, and, as the flying vehicle banked hard upwards to avoid the tree line, produced no discernible wake. That's either some really creative b.s. generated by psyop experts or evidence that the orchestrators of 9/11 have access to some mind-blowing technology and are using it against the American public.

Adding (Further) Insult to Injury: "The Crescent of Embrace"

According to the official government version of events, Islamic terrorists bring down Flight 93, killing all aboard … and the memorial designers propose a crescent-shaped design highly evocative of the Islamic crescent and named "The Crescent of Embrace." There are even claims that the Crescent of Embrace, as it was originally proposed and would have been oriented in the landscape, pointed directly to Mecca, a common practice in Islamic architecture. (One researcher has taken this concept a major step further by making

a quite compelling case that the entire memorial was actually designed as the world’s largest open-air mosque.)

This is either further mockery of the victims of the tragedy, or the damndest instance ever of tone-deafness and insensitivity in the design process of a major American memorial.

The approach at Whitehorse.

CHAPTER EIGHT

MOVING MOUNTAINS

There is a sense of existing in a palace of marvels manipulated by beautiful but Satanic princes possessed of so much knowledge, power and experience as to be vastly superior to the rest of humanity. They have been everywhere. They have done everything.

—Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

ACT FIVE: KOREAN AIRLINES FLIGHT 85 AND WHITEHORSE

The confusion in the pilot's voice was audible as he asked the air traffic controller to repeat the request. The orders had come directly from Washington, and were so out of the ordinary that the controllers had waited more than 20 minutes before relaying them to the plane…

A LOUD SQUAWK

The pilot of Korean Airlines Flight 85 was being instructed to change its transponder code to 7500, an unequivocal hijacking distress signal. Just before the plane entered Canadian airspace, FAA controllers in Alaska ordered it to squawk a code that only hijacked planes would broadcast—even though ground control had spoken to the plane's pilot, who reported all was well.

At 8:09 a.m. on September 11, 2001, a text message containing HJK, the international code for hijacking, had passed between the cockpit of Flight 85 and Korean Air's ground control—although it was, and still is, unclear which end was sending the message. The Boeing 747 was on its way to New York City, and FAA officials had been informed of the HJK text message, the only such message sent that fateful day.

NORAD, the North American Aerospace Defense Command, was tracking KA Flight 85, and the 230 souls on board had no idea that they were being shadowed by two fighter jets with shoot-down authorization. NORAD officials rerouted the plane from Anchorage, Alaska, and directed the airliner to land at Whitehorse International Airport, over 1,000 miles further east, even though the plane was running low on fuel.

On the morning of 9/11, no other community in the world was under an evacuation order, and in no other community were emergency authorities instructed to prepare for a mass casualty incident involving a hijacked airliner. Parents in Whitehorse who had learned of the attacks in New York and Washington that morning and thought to themselves, “Thank God we live in the Yukon,” were now rushing to pick up their children at school and fearing the worst was about to happen to their families.

Suspicious Minds

Again, from the outset, suspicious circumstances, unanswered questions, and we haven’t even begun peeling the onion. Once we do, we will of course find Crowley (both Aleister and Tim), as well as the Egyptian god Thoth, whom you’ve actually already met in his other incarnation as the Greek god Hermes. But before that, let’s listen to a little Ozzy Osbourne.

“White Horse”

John Michael “Ozzy” Osbourne’s 40+ year career was launched when he rose to prominence as lead singer of the pioneering English heavy metal band Black Sabbath, during which time he became known as the “Prince of Darkness” (he has since become known as the “Godfather of Heavy Metal” if that’s any improvement).

SPEAK OF THE DEVIL
OZZY OSBOURNE

Recording albums with titles such as “Speak of the Devil” in his subsequent solo career, Osbourne was accused of Satanism, and more than one commentator has compared the controversy surrounding Osbourne to accusations leveled against Aleister Crowley. Both men were certainly demonized by the media and religious groups and enjoyed the infamy associated with being labeled Satanists.

In 2002, Osbourne and wife Sharon were invited to the White House Correspondents’ Association dinner, where President Bush noted his presence by joking: “The thing about Ozzy is, he’s made a lot of hit recordings—‘Party with the Animals’, ‘Sabbath, Bloody Sabbath’, ‘Facing Hell’, ‘Black Skies’ and ‘Bloodbath in Paradise.'" He continued (again jokingly one would hope, but after all we've learned here, who knows), "Ozzy, Mom loves your stuff."

Osbourne abused drugs and alcohol most of his life, and his excesses led to, among numerous other things, getting himself banned from the city of San Antonio for an entire decade for drunkenly urinating across from the Alamo while wearing his future wife's dress.

Likewise, Crowley had been a notorious heroin addict, and in his 1980 song, "Mr. Crowley," Osbourne made reference to this fact, singing, "Mr. Crowley, won't you ride my white horse? Mr. Crowley, it's symbolic of course." White horse—slang for heroin. *You fooled all the people with magic, (Yeah) You waited on Satan's call… Mr. Crowley…*

Ozzy
Osbourne
Blizzard of Ozz
Mr. Crowley
Stage

Three for the Price of One

Leaving the mouth of a metal god, we now turn to the mouth of an Egyptian god. Thoth, Hermes and the Roman god Mercury were all held to be one-and-the-same. Of particular relevance in relation to 9/11 is that Thoth is heavily associated with the art of magic and the judgment of the dead (Certain of Thoth's other aspects, particularly as the God of Time, will come into play later.)

Various scholars hold Egyptian religion to be primarily henotheistic, where all the gods and goddesses were aspects of the sun god Ra, similar to the devas in Hinduism. In this view, Thoth was considered to be the heart—which, according to ancient Egyptians, is the seat of intelligence or mind—and tongue of Ra, the means by which his will was translated into speech.

The Opening of the Mouth Ceremony

Described in various funerary texts, the Opening of the Mouth ceremony was an ancient Egyptian ritual involving the symbolic animation of a statue or mummy by magically opening its mouth so that it could breathe and speak. The Book of the Dead also contains a spell for this process, and this text reads in part, "Thoth has come fully equipped with spells, He looses the bonds of Seth from

my mouth…" This ritual essentially gives life after death, focusing on the mouth in order to allow the spirit to spring forth from the body.

The Number 85

Gematria is a system of assigning numerical value to a word or phrase, in the belief that words or phrases with identical numerical values bear some relation to each other, or bear some relation to the number itself as may apply to a person's age, the calendar year, etc.

According to *Strong's Concordance,* the transliteration of the Hebrew word for mouth is "peh." Peh is the 17th letter of the Hebrew alphabet, and as symbolic of the mouth, Peh represents the capacity for speech and self-expression. The letter Peh spelled in full, Peh Heh, equals 85 through gematria and correlates with the tongue as an organ of speech. The sound "peh" is made by the air bursting forth from the mouth, and is thus related to the Opening of the Mouth ceremony.

Peh and the Tower Card

Peh is attributed to The Tower by the Golden Dawn, in which the card symbolizes the destruction of old structures and could be thought of as a form of purification. The illustration for The Tower in Aleister Crowley's *Book of Thoth* shows the eye of Shiva opening at the top: reality is the dream of Shiva, and when he awakens, all is destroyed.

XVI
LA·MAISON·DIEV

In "Gematria," from *777 and Other Qabalistic Writings of Aleister Crowley,* we find: "85. PH, the letter P, 85 = 5 x 17: even the highest unity, if it move or energise, means War." Flight 85, the 85 in motion, engergized—9/11 would indeed be used to facilitate war, multiple wars. Further, Peh is connected to The Tower, to destruction, and is thus a reference to the demolition of the Twin Towers, the basis for those wars … and all of this takes place under the auspices of Thoth-Hermes, in Whitehorse.

Yet Another Crowley

Black Sabbath, Ozzy (*Liber Oz,* anyone?), Egyptian gods, magic spells—what else could you ask for in one act? How about one more big fat Crowley reference, just like the Bill Crowley connection in Act Four? We don't have to search far for it, because there he sits in the tower at Whitehorse International Airport on the morning of 9/11: one Tim Crowley, air traffic controller, on duty and at his post, yet again insuring the name Crowley is connected with this component of the MegaRitual in media reports far and wide. Shanksville, Whitehorse; Bill Crowley, Tim Crowley—hey, baby, if it works for you, go with it.

World Trade Center
① 8:45 a.m. American Airlines Flight 11 crashes into North Tower.
② 9:05 a.m. United Airlines Flight 175 crashes into South Tower.
110 floors
110 floors
Building 6
U.S. Custom- house
Floors: 8
Building 7
Floors: 47
Collapses late afternoon
Building 3
Marriott Hotel
Building 4
Commodities Exchange Building
Floors: 9
Building 5
Dean Witter Building
Floors: 9
0
MILES
BROOKLYN
NORTH
CHAMBERS ST.
GREENWICH ST.
MURRAY ST.
WEST BROADW
CHURCH ST.
PARK PL.
BARCLAY ST.
VESEY ST.
PARK
FULTON ST.
ANN ST.
JOHN ST.
GOLD
WEST SIDE HIGHWAY
WASHINGTON ST.
GREENWICH ST.
TRINITY PL.
LIBERTY ST.
BROADWAY
NASSAU ST.
MAIDEN LANE
PINE ST.
WALL ST.
EXCHANGE PL.
BATTERY PL.
Battery Park
STATE ST.
WHITEHALL ST.
BROAD ST.
BEAVER ST.
PEARL ST.
WATER ST.
F.D.R. DRIVE
Lower
East River

CHAPTER NINE

KANSAS?

"The sum of the square roots of any two sides of an isosceles triangle is equal to the square root of the remaining side. Oh, joy! Oh, rapture! I've got a brain!"

—The Scarecrow in *The Wizard of Oz,*
reciting a mangled version of the 47th Problem of Euclid
(otherwise known as the Pythagorean Theorem)

ACT SIX: WORLD TRADE CENTER 7

Some conspiracy theorists see the collapse of WTC 7 as the smoking gun of 9/11. The building was not hit by an aircraft, yet, just like both towers, collapsed into its own footprint in what for all the world looked like a classic controlled demolition. The footage most commonly seen of the building's implosion shows what appears to be a fully intact structure dropping downward at free-fall speed in a huge cloud of dust.

However, this footage shows the side of the building that faced away from the Twin Towers—the opposite side of WTC 7 sustained major damage from falling debris during the collapse of the North Tower. Due to the severity of the damage and low water pressure in the vicinity, firefighting efforts were greatly hampered and fires on multiple floors burned uncontrolled for hours.

The North Tower had collapsed at 10:28 a.m., and WTC 7 remained standing until 5:21 p.m. Writing in the *New York Times* in November of 2001, journalist James Glanz said of WTC 7: "By 11:30 a.m., the fire commander in charge of that area, Assistant Chief Frank Fellini, ordered firefighters away from it for safety reasons." End of story? Not hardly.

GIULIANI'S SKYBOX BUNKER

After the 1993 World Trade Center attack, an Emergency Operations Center (EOC) was created to coordinate local, state and federal efforts in the event of a disaster like 9/11. Naturally, the EOC was located in 7 World Trade, directly adjacent to the target of the 1993 attack. Even better, the EOC was housed on the 23rd floor.

Numerous parties, including George Marlin, then executive director of the Port Authority of New York and New Jersey, which owned the WTC, urged Rudolph "America's Mayor" Giuliani not to locate the EOC at the Trade Center. And in 1998, *New York Times* columnist Bob Herbert called Giuliani's EOC a "skybox bunker"—with a heckuva view on 9/11, one might add—and questioned the wisdom of locating a supposedly secure facility 23 stories above ground in a building shared by numerous private tenants and requiring elevators to reach.

But that wasn't the half of it. To keep the EOC and elevators operational in the event of a power outage, backup generators were installed along with large storage tanks for the diesel fuel needed to run them. Yep, that's right—the Emergency Operations Center for the City of New York was not only located yards from one of the most attractive terrorist targets in the entire world, was not only 23 floors in the air, but was sitting on top of thousands of gallons of flammable liquid.

As the *New York Times* reported, "Fire Department officials warned the city and Port Authority of New York and New Jersey in 1998 and 1999 that a giant diesel fuel tank for the mayor's $13 million command bunker in 7 World Trade Center…posed a hazard and was not consistent with city fire codes." Ya think?

Investigators would later determine that the burning fuel weakened a transfer truss that allowed the skyscraper to be built atop multistory underground electrical transformers and was critical to the structural integrity of the building. (Interestingly, a failure of the same type of truss contributed to the partial collapse of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City when it was bombed in 1995.)

Dr. John Osteraas with Exponent Failure Analysis Associates in Menlo Park, California, was quoted in the *Times* in 2002 concerning the collapse: "Without the fuel, I think the building would have done fine."

"PULL IT"

A high-rise Emergency Operations Center that provided front-row sky box seats to the most spectacular terrorist attacks in history…fuel storage tanks to run backup generators and elevators that, according to various assessments, were at least partially responsible for the collapse of the building itself…one can begin to understand why some have theorized that the EOC

BARCLAY ST
Verizon
WTC 7
U.S. Post Office
CHURCH ST
VESEY ST
WTC 6
WTC 5
WTC 1
World Trade Center Plaza
North Bridge
WTC 3
WTC 2
WTC 4

was in fact the command center for the attacks on the Twin Towers, and take more seriously the idea that WTC 7 was intentionally brought down after all.

Ironically, weighing in in apparent support of the latter notion was none other than the owner of the building, Larry Silverstein, who stated in a 2002 *PBS* documentary entitled 'America Rebuilds': "I remember getting a call from the, er, fire department commander, telling me that they were not sure they were gonna be able to contain the fire, and I said, 'We've had such terrible loss of life, maybe the smartest thing to do is pull it.' And they made that decision to pull and we watched the building collapse."

After two years of stonewalling, Silverstein Properties finally responded to numerous questions concerning what Mr. Silverstein meant when he used the phrase "pull it," which most people would assume to mean "bring down by controlled demolition." Their explanation? He meant pull the firefighters from the building. And exactly which firefighters would those be?...the ones that had withdrawn at 11:30 a.m., over five hours earlier?[1]

Seconds:
0
1
2
3
4
5
6
6.5

Déjà Voodoo

On September 11, 2001, WTC 7 and the entire staff of the EOC were evacuated after United Airlines Flight 175 struck the South Tower. The director of the EOC at the time made the poignant observation that the center was out of commission "at the moment when it was needed most." The evacuation of the EOC further hampered communication and rescue coordination efforts, which had been already compromised by a malfunctioning radio system that had been known to be faulty as early as March 2001. The deaths of some 121 firefighters in the North Tower, which collapsed second, were attributable to their not being able to hear the evacuation orders.

If the primary objective in selecting the location for the EOC had been to create additional chaos and confusion in the event of a disaster, with regards to 9/11 specifically, they sure couldn't have made a better choice than the 23rd floor of WTC 7 … hey, wait a minute…

Here we are again, confronted with circumstances that are beyond suspicious—absurd seems to be the norm—and we haven't even begun to consider what occult kookiness may be waiting around the corner for us. But it's there all right, you can count on it.

SALOMON'S TEMPLE

Completed in 1987 and constructed with a trapezoidal design, the 47-story World Trade Center 7, situated directly beside the Twin Towers, was known as the Salomon Brothers building. Recalling from Chapter Three that the Twin Towers represented the Two Pillars of Freemasonry, Jachin and Boaz, it shouldn't surprise you to learn (if you didn't already know) that according to tradition these pillars were located on the porch of, you betcha, King Solomon's Temple.

Noted English scientist, mathematician and theologian Sir Isaac Newton studied and wrote extensively about the Temple of Solomon, dedicating an entire chapter of *The Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms* to his observations regarding the temple. Newton was intrigued by the temple's sacred geometry and believed that it was designed by King Solomon with divine guidance.

Solomon's Temple is intimately intertwined with the story of Hiram Abiff, who some consider to be the Freemason's Messiah. According to Masonic legend, Hiram Abiff was a man of Tyre, the son of a widow, and the chief architect of King Solomon's Temple. Abiff, Masonry teaches, was the only person on Earth who knew the secrets of a Master Mason, including the most important secret of all, the "Grand Masonic Word," the ineffable name, the name of God. To make a long story short, Hiram was killed for refusing to reveal this word, and then brought up out of the grave and restored to life.

There *is* a Hiram from Tyre mentioned in the Bible in connection with the construction of the Temple, but not as chief architect: scripture is actually quite clear that God Himself was the designer and architect of the Temple. But that's really neither here nor there, because the legend of Hiram Abiff is not based on an historical character but rather on the myth of the Egyptian Sun-god Osiris.[2]

Writing in *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, Manly P. Hall tells us that

> The efforts made to discover the origin of the Hiramic legend show that, while the legend in its present form is comparatively modern, its underlying principles run back to remotest antiquity. It is generally admitted by modern Masonic scholars that the story of the martyred CHiram is based upon the Egyptian rites of Osiris, whose death and resurrection

> figuratively portrayed the spiritual death of man and his regeneration through initiation into the Mysteries.

Hall continues, stating, "CHiram is also identified with Hermes through the inscription on the Emerald Table. From these associations it is evident that CHiram is to be considered as a prototype of humanity; in fact he is Plato's Idea (archetype) of man. As Adam after the Fall symbolizes the Idea of human degeneration, so CHiram through his resurrection symbolizes the Idea of human regeneration."

Pretty deep stuff, and there's more where that came from, but you get the point: Solomon's Temple and Freemasonry go together like terrorists and hijacked airplanes.

THE 47TH PROBLEM OF EUCLID

According to the Bible, the Lord gave King David very exact measurements and specifications for Solomon's Temple, an idea that must have struck the fancy of those responsible for the design of WTC 7, because the building was a deceptively-simple yet powerful modern occult-Masonic construct. Its trapezoidal shape and 47 stories were an architectural embodiment of the 47th Problem of Euclid, more widely known as the Pythagorean Theorem.

The Pythagorean Theorem has attracted interest outside mathematics as a symbol of mathematical abstruseness and intellectual prowess; popular references in movies, literature, plays, musicals, songs, stamps and cartoons abound. There are a range of mathematical proofs for the theorem, but one is of particular interest: it was published by future-U.S.-President and Mason James A. Garfield, and instead of the customary square it utilized a trapezoid.

The essence of the Pythagorean Theorem concerns the importance of establishing an architecturally true or correct foundation based on use of the square, an ability of great value to real masons, but there are of course deeper related symbolic meanings as well (one having something to do with the Philosophical Male, Female, Offspring and the Theosophy of the Trinity…if you want to know any more than that, you will need to look it up yourself).

Writing of the significance of the Pythagorean Theorem to Freemasonry in general, this unnamed Masonic author states that "The 47th Problem of Euclid represents such a perfect symbol of Freemasonry... encompassing both art and science, that the simple knowledge of it demands a breathtaking awe to which we may only bow our heads in reverence at the perfection, the universality and the infinite wisdom of that which has been given to us by God."[3]

One really couldn't put it any more strongly than that, and it'd be a waste of time to try. But before we leave Salomon's Temple, it'd be negligent to fail to note the following: In the 1960s, Church of Satan founder Anton LaVey formed a group which later became the governing body of the church. Its name? The Order of the Trapezoid.

Church of Satan
Order of the Trapezoid

Reprise: Author! Author!

It's getting late in the day, and with the fall of WTC 7 we come to the end of the final act and the 9/11 MegaRitual proper. One might consider the collapse of the tower as the dropping of the curtain at the close of the production.

With the swift disappearance of Salomon's Masonic-Luciferian Temple of the Trapezoid in a cloud of smoke and dust, it is finished. But to whom is the credit for this spectacularly-diabolical production owed? Might the very nature of the object of the last act bear testament to the authors of the work? We shall see.

Choke on it

"As caustic and alkaline as Drano" is how EPA scientist Dr. Cate Jenkins described some of the dust at Ground Zero in a 2006 interview on CBS, claiming that EPA officials had known about the toxicity of the air and lied about it.

On September 13, 2001, then-EPA head Christine Todd Whitman told reporters at Ground Zero, "We have not seen any reason—any readings that have indicated any health hazard." And on September 18, Whitman told the public via press release, "We are very encouraged that the results from our monitoring of air-quality and drinking-water conditions in both New York and near the Pentagon show that the public in these areas is not being exposed to excessive levels of asbestos or other harmful substances," and that "given the scope of the tragedy from last week, I am glad to reassure the people of New York … that their air is safe to breathe and the water is safe to drink."

Time magazine's 2001 "Person of the Year" Rudy Giuliani echoed this assessment, claiming shortly after the attacks that "the problems created…are not health-threatening" and that "the air quality is safe and acceptable."

Yet, an August 2003 report by the Office of the Inspector General of the EPA said the Bush administration pressured the EPA to remove cautionary information from statements about the air quality at Ground Zero. Language used to describe excessive amounts of asbestos in the area was altered drastically to minimize the dangers it posed.

Described by one air pollution expert as "wildly toxic," the thousands of tons of dust and debris from the collapsed towers contained more than 2,500 contaminants, included asbestos, lead, mercury and a range of carcinogens, as well as other substances that can trigger kidney, heart, liver and nervous system deterioration.

Back to Work

The Giuliani administration seized control of the cleanup operation from federal agencies and subsequently failed to enforce federal requirements requiring use of respirators, simultaneously threatening companies with dismissal if cleanup work slowed. New York Committee for Occupational Safety and Health industrial hygienist David Newman said, "I was down there watching people working without respirators." He continued, "Others took off their respirators to eat. It was a surreal, ridiculous, unacceptable situation."

Critics assert that government officials—notably Bush, Whitman, and Giuliani—downplayed health risks and rushed to reopen the area around Ground Zero, although this posed a grave danger to emergency personnel and cleanup workers. Subsequent investigations would suggest that the Bush administration pressured Whitman and Giuliani to provide reassurances ostensibly in order to allow Wall Street to resume business-as-usual.

It is certainly worth noting that on September 12, 2001, Christie Whitman issued a memo directing that "All statements to the media should be cleared through the NSC (National Security Council in the White House) before they are released," and that the following sentence was added by White House officials to a September 16 EPA news release: "Our tests show that it is safe for New Yorkers to go back to work in New York's financial district."

A Legacy of Misery

Several square miles were blanketed by the fine dust resulting from the collapse of the Twin Towers, dust which, as previously noted, contained asbestos fibers from pulverized fire-proofing material as well as numerous other contaminants. An ever-increasing number of first responders (reportedly as high as 70% for this group), recovery workers and members of the public are developing debilitating illnesses, serious respiratory ailments in particular. Some estimates indicate that as many as 70,000 people might have long term health problems due to the dust. Hundreds of rescue workers are now on "permanent respiratory disability," and there are ongoing concerns regarding negative effects on fetal development.

Hell of a price to pay just to make a buck…but, then again, maybe all this misery was not just "collateral damage" but rather a desired outcome, adding to the purposefully-inflicted suffering and death on 9/11 itself and in the wars that followed.

AD

CHAPTER TEN

EPILOGUE: OVER BUT NOT FINISHED

With the close of Act Six, the production mercifully comes to an end, and although the show may be over, there will be spin-offs ("Where in the World is ~~Carmen Sandiego~~ Osama bin Laden?") and reruns (A gazillion 9/11 History Channel-National Geographic-Discovery Channel documentaries and counting) for years to follow.

And what a script it was: heroin-addicted Aleister "The Great Beast" Crowley (and his long lost relatives Bill and Tim), Baphomet the Pet Goat, the 9/11 Birthday Boy and Lady Evelyn-Barbara, black comedian Osama, Thoth, a monumentally insulting memorial, ancient Egyptian spells, the House of Death, Salomon's Temple and, tah-dah, the Flying Circus of Death, featuring a Flying Dunce, a magically-disappearing airplane that doubled as the world's largest ever piece of airmail, a plane with no hijackers aboard ordered to squawk the international code for hijack while trailed by armed fighter jets with shoot-down orders, and … the Doomsday Plane. The Greatest Show on the Face of the Earth, all as a mercurial tribute to the Prince of the Power of the Air. Not to be forgetten, also, were the props and sets: super-sized Pillars of Hermes, the Holy Pentagon, "Paradise," Shanksville and Whitehorse, with special appearances (Sesame Street style) by 11, 77, 93, 85 and 175.

But don't get out of your seat, because we aren't closing the pages of this grimoire yet—this awards ceremony for the biggest occult production in history isn't finished. We've met the characters, seen the sets and grimaced through all six acts, but there are more props and backdrops to look at, as well as the performance date itself—which, ingeniously and diabolically is part of the production.

Stay tuned, because if you didn't think the plot could get any thicker or any uglier, you're in for a big surprise.

SECTION TWO

THE PRODUCERS

THE CITY OF
NEW YORK
OFFICIAL WORLD TRADE CENTER BOOK
$2
LIBERTY, FREEDOM and PEACE through WORLD TRADE

CHAPTER ELEVEN

PIÈCE DE RÉSISTANCE: 9/11—“EVIL MAGIC”

All systems of religious mysticism are based upon numerals.

—Helena Blavatsky, *Isis Unveiled*

9-1-1: PRE-PROGRAMMING FOR 9/11

September 11, 2001—“9/11” has become shorthand for not only the date, but for the acts of terrorism themselves and all they involved and implied: death, fear, uncertainty. On a profound level, the numerical combination 9/11 has become synonymous with “terror” over the last decade.

Given the scope and scale of the Global MegaRitual and the mind-numbing level of planning that obviously went into scripting the occult aspects of the event, it is of far more than passing interest to note that, in the thirty years prior to 9/11, 9-1-1 had become the universal code in the United States for “emergency.”

In light of all else that has been revealed, and the supreme importance of numbers in this megaritual, it strains credibility to suggest that this is mere coincidence. Other than being an “engineered synchronicity” designed to make people do a double-take and scratch their heads before falling back into a media-induced trance, though, what would the purpose be? One might suppose that the intended meaning or message is that 9/11 was a gigantic 9-1-1, an emergency of global proportions, which it was intended to be perceived as.

However, this would be the conscious message—the intended subconscious message was one designed to inflict further psychic and emotional injury on the public, and was thus the true motivation behind this aspect of 9/11. The number sequence 9-1-1 had come to mean help is on the way. The sudden reversal of meaning, which is a key tactic of occultists, was designed to induce psychic stress and mental anguish, to create additional inner conflict and fear.

“9/11,” then, was a weapon used to inflict further trauma on an unsuspecting public. By pre-programming the public consciousness for decades with the formulation that 911=help, a form of subconscious injury was inflicted through the abrupt reversal of 911=terror.

As diabolically ingenious as it may be, in the end, this is just one of numerous pieces of evidence indicating that elaborate and sophisticated psychological warfare tactics were employed against the American public on 9/11. Yet, there's a deeper level still…

THAT OLD BLACK MAGIC

NUMBERS
WYNN WESTCOTT

In his book *Numbers: Their Occult Power and Mystic Virtues,* William Wynn Wescott writes that the number nine holds great significance among many secret societies. "The number nine is the number of the earth under evil influences," he states. Our constant companion in the exploration of this megaritual, Aleister Crowley, concurs with Wynn, revealing in *Gematria*: "9. Most Evil, because of its stability. AVB, witchcraft, the false moon of the sorceress."

Yet, as with many occult matters, the meaning of the number nine is multi-layered. Crowley continues in *Gematria,* "9. The Ennead, Stability in Change." The Ennead (derived from Greek, meaning the nine) is a grouping of nine related deities, most often used in the context of Egyptian mythology, including Osiris, Isis and Set, whose lineage and functions were arranged and explained by the theologians of Heliopolis. As three threes, the number was considered of great carnal power, and the groupings of the nine gods were very significant. The term is also used to describe the great council of the gods as well as a collective term for all the gods.

Nine, then, is not simply "most evil," but further invokes deities of supreme importance to occultists. Eleven, as we already know, has a bit of an evil reputation in its own right, but, more importantly in this context, is "the number of Magick in itself," and "the sacred number par excellence of the new Aeon," as well as "My number" according to Aleister Crowley, to whom the entire 9/11 MegaRitual is in part dedicated. Writing again in *Gematria,* Crowley reiterates, "11. The great magical number, as uniting the antitheses of 5 and 6 etc. and the magic force itself."

Thus, the Crowleyian formulation—9, "Most Evil," 11, "the magic force itself"—yields: 9/11 = Evil Magic. Not simply numerical shorthand for the day or its proceedings, but communicating the nature of the event itself, a digital combination whose very meaning is "Evil Magic."

The untold number of times that the phrase "nine eleven" has been spoken or written in the past ten plus years…that it has appeared in print or on screen, been uttered on the airwaves in news reports and documentaries, been said by countless millions in private conversation—every time it is used, we unknowingly participate in the MegaRitual, repeating "Evil Magic" over and over. *That old black magic…*

But you don't even have time to catch your breath after this nauseating revelation, because there's more you must understand to fully comprehend the hideous occult monstrosity that is 9/11, to fully contextualize the Six Act Theatre of Cruelty. September 11, 2001, was not simply a special date or a day of infamy, it was an auspicious occasion. Next, it's the astrology of 9/11.

XIII
נ
TRUMPS
Death
♏

CHAPTER TWELVE

THE ASTROLOGICAL FOUNDATIONS OF THE 9/11 MEGARITUAL

As a method for securing blessings for their undertakings, occultists employ the practice of selecting favorable dates and times for their endeavors, which is called electional astrology. This is a branch found in most traditions of astrology in which a practitioner decides the most appropriate time for an event based on its "astrological auspiciousness." The most commonly used and distinctive form of election is the ephemeral election, which involves selecting a date based on the position of the celestial bodies in the sky at the moment of the event. The horoscope for any given moment shows the general trends, alignments, planetary strengths and weaknesses, etc., and whether success or failure is indicated.

Astrology-speak sounds like absolute gobbledygook to most people, but many occultists swear by the use of astrology for their purposes. Saying, then, that on the day of the attacks "transiting Pluto was within seventeen minutes of an exact conjunction to the U.S. ascendant at 12 degrees Sagittarius" doesn't mean jack-shit to most people, and fortunately we don't have to figure out what this statement means. But we do have to push forward into the astrology of 9/11 and try to make some sense of it.

THE LORDS OF DEATH

Apparently, astrologers, bless their hearts, had worried for months in advance about the opposition of Saturn to Pluto that was in effect at the time of the attacks.

Saturn and Pluto are both considered 'Lords of Death', with Saturn having played that role alone before the planet Pluto was discovered. Indeed,

Saturn has been associated with death since ancient times, and related to Saturn are the color black and the element lead. Writes one observer, “Where there is light Saturn brings darkness, where there is heat Saturn brings cold, where there is joy Saturn brings sadness, where there is life Saturn brings death, where there is luck Saturn brings misfortune, where there is unity Saturn brings isolation, where there is knowledge Saturn brings fear, where there is hope Saturn brings skepticism”…you get the picture.

The god Pluto was known in both the Greek and Roman traditions as the ruler of the underworld, and became casually interchangeable with Satan as an embodiment of Hell. The planet of the same name is thus viewed as a fairly nasty character.

Modern astrologers don’t find Saturn as evil as the more traditional astrologers do, but “the stress between the restriction of Saturn and the transformative power of Pluto can be difficult at best,” whatever the hell that means.

One gathers that when these two guys get close to each other, it means something bad is going to happen. And on 9/11, *where* they had their confrontation apparently wasn’t a good thing, either, as there was a “sensitive and critical placement of the Pluto/Saturn opposition,” with Pluto, “the planet of death/rebirth/transformation” in the 12th house, “which rules darkness, secrets, imprisonment” and Saturn, “the planet of death and limitation” in the 7th house, “which rules our country’s relationship with others.”[1]

The astrological interpretation, then, would go something like this: the two Lords of Death came too near each other in a couple of astrological houses that amplified their malevolent characters (or whatever), which made it a great day to sacrifice 3,000+ people to the Prince of Darkness (and I don’t mean Ozzy).

UP NEXT

As bad as dealing with the Deadly Duo may have been, there's still more astrology to absorb—in fact, we haven't even gotten to the best part yet. But before we continue with the stars, let's visit a star of another sort, the nation's largest and most beloved public monument, the Statue of Liberty.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

SILENT OVERSEER OF THE 9/11 MEGARITUAL

9/11—Evil Magic carried out under the auspices of Saturn-Pluto, Lords of Death. If you're a child-sacrificing cultic globalist freakshow, it don't get no better than this. Or, then again, maybe it does, considering that the Twin Towers weren't the only massive "ceremonial objects" involved at the ritual at Ground Zero. For overwatching the slaughter at the towers was a colossal statue, not of Libertas, but of Lucifer.

THE STATUE OF LUCIFER

"This gigantic gilded figure, with its crown of solar rays and its upraised torch, signified occultly the glorious Sun Man of the Mysteries, the Universal Savior," wrote Manly P. Hall in his book, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*. Hall was not writing about the Statue of Liberty, however, but rather the Colossus of Rhodes, an enormous bronze statue of the Greek god of the sun, Helios, and one of the Seven Wonders of the Ancient World.

With its own crown of solar rays and upraised torch, the Statue of Liberty, the original name for which was "Liberty Enlightening the World," signifies occultly the Light Bearer, Lucifer, the Illuminati savior. (Worth noting is the title of the sonnet by Emma Lazarus mounted inside the Statue of Liberty: "The New Colossus.")

THE TORCH OF ILLUMINATION

"Thus Lucifer—the spirit of Intellectual Enlightenment and Freedom of Thought—is metaphorically the guiding beacon," writes Helena Blavatsky in *The Secret Doctrine*, v. II, "which helps man to find his way through the rocks and sand banks of Life, for Lucifer is the Logos in his highest."

Lucifer as the guiding beacon is symbolized by the "torch of illumination," one of the key symbols of the Illuminati, representing the illumination of Lucifer—a fact that French Freemason Frederic Bartholdi, designer of the Statue of Liberty, would have been well aware of.

TEACHER IN EVERY ART BROUGHT
ROVED TO MORTAL A MEANS TO MI

Prometheus: the Original Torch-Bearer

The torch is an ancient symbol: in Greek mythology, the original "torch-bearer" was Prometheus, the Titan who stole fire from the gods in order to give it to humanity. Writing in *The Secret Doctrine*, it is again Blavatsky who tells us of "the allegory of Prometheus, who steals the divine fire as to allow men to proceed consciously on the path of spiritual evolution, thus transforming the most perfect of animals on Earth into a potential god, and making him free to take the kingdom of heaven by violence." She continues, "Hence also, the curse pronounced by Zeus against Prometheus, and by Jehovah against his 'rebellious son,' Satan."

Master Freemason Manly P. Hall makes similar observations in *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy*: "Man wandered hopelessly in the gloom of mortality, living and dying without light or understanding in his servitude to the Demiurgus and his host of spirits. At last the spirit of rebellion entered the creation in the form of Lucifer, who in the guise of a serpent tempted man to revolt against the mandates of Jehovah (the Demiurgus). In Greece this character was known as Prometheus, who brought from the gods the impregnating flame that would release the life latent in this multitude of germlike potentialities."

IDENTITY "DECODED"

Brad Meltzer's investigative series, *Decoded,* which airs on the History Channel, devoted an entire episode in its 2010 season to the occult identity of the Statue of Liberty. In the end, the investigators discovered that, in fact, the statue has a strong historical occult association with Lucifer—but in a good way. The last interviewee in the program reported that, indeed, the statue does represent Lucifer, but purely as light-bringer, as the illuminator and savior of humanity—asserting a non-existent uniformity of thought within the historical and contemporary occult communities. Again we hear, *That Lucifer, he's not such a bad guy after all.*

In reality, the *Decoded* investigative team demonstrated a truly profound ignorance of occult beliefs and traditions, and missed some of the most compelling evidence pointing to the statue's true occult identity.

Lucifer
Theosophical Monthly
H. P. Blavatsky and Mabel Collins

MARIO RAPISARDI
LUCIFERO

A POWERFUL LUCIFERIAN PRESENCE

There is in reality much evidence to support the contention that occultists view the Statue of Liberty as a representation of Lucifer—not exclusively so, to be sure, as there are also esoteric connections to Isis, among others. But in the final analysis there is little doubt that the deity invoked on 9/11 was Lucifer, and that the Statue of Liberty was intended to serve as a powerful manifestation of the Luciferian Presence during the 9/11 Occult MegaRitual.

In the end, though, the concept of Liberty *is* in fact applicable—but only in a very narrow sense. To the engineers of 9/11, liberty means the freedom to do whatever they wish, to whomever, whenever they so desire. Liberty to them is freedom from all constraints, moral, legal and otherwise. Recall Aleister 'Do what thou wilt is the whole of the Law' Crowley writing on Baphomet, "that leaping goat whose attribute is Liberty"—it's *that* Liberty they're invoking.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

CONNECTING THE DATES: A SIRIUS AFFAIR

INDEPENDENCE DAY?

The tablet held by the Statue of Liberty is inscribed in Roman numerals with July 4, 1776, which is widely recognized as the date of the adoption of the Declaration of Independence. The year 1776 is also the year that the Illuminati was founded; however, there is an even deeper significance behind the date on which our Independence Day falls, as we will soon discover.

A COMMON FOUNDATION

The cornerstone for the pedestal of the Statue of Liberty was laid in a Masonic ceremony on August 5, 1884; eighty two years later, on August 5, 1966, the groundbreaking ceremony for the World Trade Center was conducted. Was this merely a means employed to connect the two locations through time and space in preparation for the 9/11 MegaRitual? Or is there even more to the story?

A COMMON DENOMINATOR

The birthday of the United States of America and the date inscribed on the Statue of Liberty's tablet; the cornerstone laying for the Statue of Liberty's pedestal and the groundbreaking for the World Trade Center; the groundbreaking ceremony for the Pentagon and the attacks in New York and Arlington/Washington—why were these dates used by occultists in repeated fashion, and what do they have in common?

The dates in question are all connected to the brightest object in the occult pantheon (as well as the brightest star in the night sky), Sirius, the Dog Star. "It would be difficult to exaggerate the fanatical degree of attachment the priesthood of Egypt and all subsequent related Hermetic traditions had for Sirius," writes Michael Hoffman in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*. "The entire calendar year of the Egyptians was based upon the rising times of this star."

Indeed, Sirius was of unique importance to the Egyptians, and is recorded in the earliest astronomical records. During the Middle Kingdom, Egyptians based their calendar on Sirius' heliacal rising, the date on which a star or other celestial body first becomes visible above the eastern horizon just before sunrise after a period of being absent from view. In ancient Egypt, Sirius' heliacal rising originally occurred just before the annual flooding of the Nile River and the summer solstice, after a 70-day absence from the skies.[1]

Sirius in Antiquity

The Greeks and Romans knew Sirius well. Writing in the *Iliad,* Homer, the greatest ancient Greek epic poet, said this concerning Sirius:

Sirius rises late in the dark, liquid sky
On summer nights, star of stars,
Orion's Dog they call it, brightest
Of all, but an evil portent, bringing heat
And fevers to suffering humanity.

Homer elaborates, referring to Sirius as the star "whose beams blaze forth in time of harvest more brilliantly than those of any other that shines by night; brightest of them all though he be, he yet bodes ill for mortals, for he brings fire and fever in his train."[2]

Sirius is part of the constellation Canis Major, which Roman myth referred to as Janitor Lethaeus, the watchdog of Hell. Canis Major (Latin for 'greater dog') is one of the dogs following Orion the hunter, and Sirius is recognized as the dog's nose.

"An evil portent," the nose of the watchdog of Hell—now there's a pretty bad historical reputation.

The Blazing Star

Sirius occupies a unique position in more contemporary occult thought, as well. Writing in *Morals and Dogma* concerning the preeminence of the star within Freemasonry, Albert Pike states, "The Ancient Astronomers saw all the great Symbols of Masonry in the Stars. Sirius glitters in our lodges as the Blazing Star." He continues:

> In Freemasonry, it is taught that the Blazing Star is a symbol of deity, of omnipresence (the Creator is present everywhere) and of omniscience (the Creator sees and knows all).

> Sirius is therefore the “sacred place” all Masons must ascend to: It is the source of divine power and the destination of divine individuals.
>
> To achieve perfection, the initiate must successfully understand and internalize the dual nature of the world (good and evil; masculine and feminine; black and white, etc.) through alchemical metamorphosis. This concept is symbolically represented by the union of Osiris and Isis (the male and female principles) to give birth to Horus, the star-child, the Christ-like figure, the perfected man of Freemasonry—who is equated with the Blazing Star.

E
N
S
W
© thehiddenrecords.com

Here, again in *Morals and Dogma,* Pike reiterates the last point: “The sun and moon … represent the two grand principles … the male and the female … both shed their light upon their offspring, the blazing star, or Horus.”

Elsewhere in the book, Pike states, “[The Blazing Star] originally represented SIRIUS, or the Dog-star, the forerunner of the inundation of the Nile; …It was HERMES, also, the Master of Learning, whose name in Greek is that of the God Mercury.”

Writing in her *Theosophical Glossary,* Helena Blavatsky records a similar observation:

> The dog-star: the star worshipped in Egypt and reverenced by the Occultists; by the former because its heliacal rising with the Sun was a sign of the beneficient inundation of the Nile, and by the latter because it is mysteriously associated with Toth-Hermes, god of wisdom, and Mercury, in another form. Thus Sothis-Sirius had, and still has, a mystic and direct influence over the whole living heaven, and is connected with almost every god and goddess.

Sirius, the Freemasonic Blazing Star, their ‘sacred place’, equated with the perfected man, Horus; yet, also representing Thoth-Hermes-Mercury, exercising “a mystic and direct influence over the whole living heaven.”

However, as many are aware, there are various levels within Freemasonry, and there is often more to a story than first meets the eye. Helena Blavatsky, in her book *Isis Unveiled,* provides a crucial clue to Sirius' occult alter-ego: "... Hermes, the god of wisdom, called also Thoth, Tat, Set, Set, and Sat-an; and that he was, furthermore, when viewed under his bad aspect, Typhon, the Egyptian Satan, who was also Set." The plot thickens…

The "Silver Star" of Aleister Crowley and others

Sirius was called the "Argentinium Astrum," or Silver Star, by the Masons and Rosicrucians, and in 1907, Aleister Crowley started his own occult order, called the A:.A:.. British occultist, novelist and poet Kenneth Grant met Aleister Crowley in 1944 and was initiated into the A:.A:. in 1946. In his book, *The Magical Revival,* Grant writes,

A∴A∴ SIGILLUM SANCTUM FRATERNITATIS

> First and foremost is the energy or force emanating from the sun Sirius. If it might be so expressed, the energy of thought, or mind force, in its totality, reaches the solar system from a distant cosmic centre via Sirius. Sirius acts as the transmitter, or the focalising centre, whence emanate those influences which produce self-consciousness in man.

But in his 1973 book, *Aleister Crowley & the Hidden God,* Grant provides a decidedly different perspective, informing us that "The Silver Star (A:.A:.) is Sirius. …the key to the present aeon of Horus, for it represents the energy of Satan that will permeate the earth during the present cycle."

Ah, yes, the energy of Satan … Sirius, then, according to sources ranging from Homer to Crowleyite Grant, is a fairly nasty character, a fact that others will readily attest to.

The Devil of Darkness, the Dwelling of Lucifer

In her 1971 book, *Woman's Mysteries: Ancient and Modern,* New Age author M. Esther Harding states that Sirius is portrayed by Black Magick Satanists as the "Devil of Darkness" and the "Lord of the Underworld."

In addition to this sinister characterization of Sirius, Christian author Texe Marrs reveals that Sirius is also viewed as the dwelling of Lucifer, stating in his 1990 *Book of New Age Cults and Religions*: "Throughout the centuries, Sirius has been recognized by most occultists and esoteric teachers as the location where Lucifer and his hierarchy dwell. In Christian terminology, Sirius is simply a secretive codeword for 'hell.'"

A SIRIUS AFFAIR

So now we've come to it … Although certainly not viewed as purely evil by all cultures and esoteric traditions, it has been well established that a considerable consensus exists across a broad spectrum of occult thought regarding Sirius' malign influence. At this point in the examination of the occult script for the 9/11 MegaRitual, it would be safe to assume that the orchestrators of the event were, to put it mildly, intently focused upon Sirius' negative aspects.

Confirming this suspicion, the late James Shelby Downard argues in "Sorcery, Sex, Assassination, and the Science of Symbolism" that a Sirius cult exists today at the highest levels of US military intelligence. Downard goes so far as to say that the viewing chamber of the Palomar Observatory is used for its rituals, which evoke those of ancient Egypt, and are performed in the star's focused light.[3]

But how, exactly, does this relate to Independence Day, the Twin Towers, the Pentagon and the Statue of Liberty/Lucifer? Recall the discussion in an earlier chapter on auspicious dates, electional astrology and ephemeral elections, and make sure you're properly strapped in, because just when you think that there couldn't possibly be anything else left to learn, the bottom drops out of the ride and you can see there's still a long way to go.

More of Sirius in Antiquity: Hesiod, Virgil, Statius and Manilius on the Dog Star

"Their souls passed beneath the earth and went down into the house of Haides; but their bones, when the skin is rotted about them, crumble away on the dark earth under parching Seirios."

—Hesiod, *Shield of Heracles*

"And now Sirius (the Dog Star), fiercely parching the thirsty Indians, was ablaze in heaven, and the fiery Sun had consumed half his course; the grass was withering and the hollow streams, in their parched throats, were scorched and baked by the rays down to the slime."

—Virgil, *Georgics 2*

"Twas the season when the vault of heaven bends its most scorching heat upon the earth, and Sirius the Dog-star smitten by Hyperion's [the sun's] full might pitilessly burns the panting fields."

—Statius, *Silvae 3.1.5* (trans. Mozley)

"The brilliant constellation of the Dog: it barks forth flame, raves with its fire, and doubles the burning heat of the Sun. When it put its torch to the earth and discharges its rays, the earth foresees its conflagration and tastes its ultimate fate. Neptune lies motionless in the midst of his waters and the green blood is drained from leaves and grass. All living things seek alien climes and the world looks for another world to repair to; beset by temperatures too great to bear, nature is afflicted with a sickness of its own making, alive, but on a funeral-pyre: such is the heat diffused among the constellations, and everything is brought to a halt by a single star. When the Dogstar rises over the rim of the sea, which at its birth not even the flood of Ocean can quench, it will fashion unbridled spirits and impetuous hearts; it will bestow on its sons billows of anger, and draw upon them the hatred and fear of the whole populace.

—Manilius, *Astronomica*

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

NEW YEAR'S DAY AND THE MALEVOLENT MEGA-TALISMANS

9/11—HAPPY NEW YEAR!

The Egyptians' New Year was originally marked by the first dawn rising of Sirius, which at that time occurred in June on the summer solstice. However, over time the heliacal rising of Sirius drifted forward from the solstice.

Today's Coptic calendar (also called the Alexandrian calendar) is based on the ancient Egyptian calendar and is still used in Egypt, and also by the Coptic Orthodox Church. The first month of the year is named Thout, after Thoth, and thus the first day of the New Year is the 1st of Thout.

On the Gregorian calendar, this date coincides with September 11th—so that date is not only New Year's Day, but, more importantly, it is the symbolic, or observed, date of Sirius' heliacal rising. (September 11 = 1/1; yet another 11, of sorts.)

We already know Thoth as the Egyptian God of Magic and as the precursor/counterpart to the Greek God of Commerce, Hermes—with the pair having jointly played key roles thusfar in the MegaRitual—yet Thoth was also known as "the reckoner of times and seasons," a god of the measurement and regulation of events and of time itself. Thoth was credited with making the calculations for the establishment of the heavens and everything in them, and was said to direct the motions of the heavenly bodies.

Thus, the entire 9/11 Global MegaRitual unfolded on the first day of the New Year on a calendar derived from the ancient Egyptian calendar, in a month named for Thoth, the Egyptian God of Time (the full significance of which will be made clear soon).

Even more significantly from an occult perspective, this date is tied directly to Sirius in a most powerful fashion, with the intent being to bring the entire day's events under the dark energies of Sirius, and to invoke the blessings of Lucifer, who resides there.

However, the utilization of this malign occult strategy wasn't confined to September 11, 2001…

MAGICAL ELECTIONS

Talismans represent the logical extension of a spiritual world view and have been a part of Western culture for thousands of years. Renaissance Magi like Marsilio Ficino and Cornelius Agrippa saw the entire Cosmos as one great, interconnected Being, a system based on intricate harmony, sympathy and correspondence, both spiritual and material. Astrology, alchemy and magic were seen as the preparatory studies for Hermetic Gnosis, a practical way of experiencing the unity of the Cosmos.[1]

Talisman comes from the Greek *telesma*, meaning consecrated or sacred object, and unless a talisman is created at an astrologically auspicious time and ritually consecrated, it is nothing more than a piece of jewelry with astrological designs, lacking any magical or spiritual charge.

The key to astrological talismans, then, is the timing of their creation as determined by electional astrology. Although astrology is not inherently connected with magic, ephemeral elections have been used in ancient and modern times to make talismans and seals (in such instances, the term "magical elections" is used). *These items are seen to be imbued with the qualities of the auspicious date on which they are made…* [2]

Armed with this last little bit of information, let's revisit two dates: July 4th, and August 5th.

THE FOURTH OF JULY

"Conjunction" is a term used in positional astronomy and astrology, and means that, from a particular geographic location (say, New York, for instance), two celestial bodies appear near one another in the sky. In the modern era, the date on which Sirius conjuncts with the Sun, which esoterically is considered the embrace of our physical and spiritual Suns, is … July 4th. The inscription on the Statue of Liberty's tablet is not, then, simply a reference to the founding of America (or even of the Illuminati), but, far more importantly, is an encoded tribute to Sirius.

AUGUST 5TH

If 9/11 is the observed date of Sirius' heliacal rising, then the date of the "initiation" of both the Statue of Liberty and the Twin Towers corresponds with … wait for it … the *actual* date of Sirius' heliacal rising. Writing in *Secret Chamber: The Quest for the Hall of Records*, researcher Robert Bauval notes, "Precession has since caused that date to shift 45 days, and now the heliacal rising of Sirius occurs on the 5th August." (August 5 = 8/5 … Flight 85 … just sayin')

Best Wishes

In light of the significance of August 5th, you have to wonder if the following widely-known quote from President George W. Bush—taken from remarks he made in Washington, D.C., on August 5th, 2004—is just another Bushism, or perhaps something much more intentional and deliberately spoken: "Our enemies are innovative and resourceful, and so are we. They never stop thinking about new ways to harm our country and our people, and neither do we." Making the comment even more compelling is that he was reading closely from prepared remarks when he made it, during a speech at the signing ceremony for a $417 billion defense spending bill (The Department of Defense Appropriations Act of 2005). Interesting, too, is that no one in the audience of military brass or Pentagon chiefs reacted in the slightest. Maybe Bush wasn't quite the bumbler everyone thought he was, and maybe he meant it when he said in 2009: "I'm telling you there's an enemy that would like to attack America, Americans, again. There just is. That's the reality of the world. And I wish him all the very best."

MALEVOLENT MEGATALISMANS

September 11th, July 4th, August 5th—all directly connected with the abode of Lucifer—and we now see that the Statue of Liberty, the Twin Towers and the Pentagon were all intended to be imbued with the seething energies of Sirius/Lucifer—and are/were, in effect, malevolent MegaTalismans.

Work on the Pentagon mega-talisman started on September 11th, and then the structure was attacked on that very same day exactly 60 years later in an act of synergetic magickal destruction saturated with Sirian/Luciferian energies. In similar fashion, the August 5th commencement date for the Statue of Lucifer and the Twin Towers mega-talismans brought them under the spell of the Silver Star, with the towers being born on 8/5 and destroyed on 9/11 under the watchful eye (and torch) of the Illuminated One.

Indeed, marked with both August 5th and July 4th, we can be doubly assured that our beloved Statue of Liberty has a dual identity, and that its hidden occult persona is that of none other than Lucifer.

Sirius
Canis Major
POLICE K9 SIRIUS
BADGE #17
POLICE
"ALWAYS HONORED, NEVER FORGOTTEN, PAPD SEPT 11, 2001"

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

ARE YOU SIRIUS?

Satire is quite important in the occult scheme, especially as epilogue. Mockery is the ne plus ultra of ceremonial murder.

—Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

This installment of the 9/11 occult script falls squarely into the you-can't-make-this-stuff-up category…

We've met Sirius, the Dog Star, the shining light of the occultists, whose pernicious presence is ubiquitous throughout the 9/11 MegaRitual. Now, meet Sirius, the Police Dog, the only such animal to be killed in the attack on the Twin Towers, who died in his kennel in the basement of Tower Two when it collapsed.

Sirius, a four-and-a-half-year old, ninety pound yellow Labrador Retriever, was an Explosive Detection Dog with the Port Authority of New York and New Jersey Police Department. It just so happens that Sirius' badge number was 17, and the 17th card in the Tarot is…wait for it…The Star, which, according to many occultists, depicts (what else?)—Sirius.

Adding to the occultists' delight is that K is the 11th letter of the alphabet (hooray, another 11), thus K-9 is the reverse of 9/11: K-9, 9/11…oh, who cares.

The intended outcome of the death of this specially-named creature was, of course, that through all of the related news coverage, memorials and tributes, the name Sirius would be heavily intermingled with 9/11, spreading like a memetic virus into people's consciousness…9/11→Evil Magic, Sirius…9/11→Evil Magic, Sirius…

SOMEWHERE OVER THE RAINBOW BRIDGE…

The memorial website created for Sirius featured the following tribute (with "Somewhere Over the Rainbow" from the *Wizard of Oz* soundtrack playing in the background):

Sirius ...

Dazzling sparkle in the distance
Brightest star on earth
Closest to our heart.

You came and shared your light for such a little while
Brought such brightness, gave such joy ...
Now you shine above and watch from distant skies
As the guardian you were, as the guardian you are still.
Companion, guide, protector, friend
Partner and pal on constant alert.
Courageous and cautious,
Patient and obedient,
Strong in spirit, gentle in design,
Quick to defend, eager to follow,
Disciplined for action, poised for careful command.

Sirius ... Brilliant in the night,
Star of the first magnitude,
Hero of the same
Nine light years away,
Held here in our hearts for eternity.

Run free across the Rainbow bridge and in green pastures;
You have done your job well, friend!

One might be tempted to think that, beyond being offensively sappy, the poem is an essentially harmless tribute to a dead dog—until, that is, you learn that the "rainbow bridge" is an essential occult concept referring to the psychic connection between the heart, where the emotions lie, and the mind, where spirituality and intellect reside. (It's also the name of a 1972 New Age hippie film starring rock legend Jimi Hendrix.)

The rainbow bridge, also called the Antahkarana, can refer to this internal connection, or to the bridge between Heaven and Earth—which, apparently, is still under construction—and some New Age spiritualists believe that Sirius is a major guiding force in the building of this bridge between worlds.

One could, then, draw the conclusion that those inclined to do so, such as the occult scripters of 9/11, would pervert the concept and envision the building of a Rainbow Bridge to Lucifer (and you'd be correct). So, whether the author intended it or not, this seemingly innocent little tribute has Luciferian colorings, and, intentionally or inadvertently, before or after the fact, this becomes yet another element of the occult script for 9/11.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

THE GATES OF HELL: SATANIC SACRIFICIAL MEGA-ALTARS

> *The secret services of all nations are directed or influenced by personalities which are marked by a criminal, a perverted, a criminal-pathological, or in any case, an exceedingly vulgar imagination. … But the worst perversion of the secret services—and how could there be a worse one—is that of human sacrifice.*
>
> —Hans Habe, *Agent of the Devil*

Even though the Twin Towers no longer exist, we are methodically and painstakingly reconstructing them, not literally of course, but as the gigantic occult monstrosities they were—a reality that is just now beginning to come into plain view. The full hideousness of these diabolical constructs, however, has yet to be revealed.

THE TWINS AND THE GATES OF DEATH

The idea of the Twin Towers as dual Siriusly-consecrated mega-talismans only does partial justice to their true nature. Into our magical formulation we must combine The Tower of the tarot as the Devil's House, the House of the Damned, the Fire, Inferno—Hell. As we ritually prepare these immense Pillars of Hermes, we invoke his presence as the god of gateways.

XVIIII
LE · SOLEIL

And it isn't until this moment that we see our old friend Saturn, the Planet of Death, in Gemini on 9/11: Gemini, the Twins, one of two celestial gateways where the ecliptic intersects the Zodiac, gateways that represent entrances to the Otherworld. Thus we have Gemini, not only symbolized in the Twin Towers, but through a powerful sympathetic As-above-so-below correspondence, energizing the towers as the mundane counterpart of the celestial gateway to the Next Realm, as earthly representations of heavenly gates—or, far more appropriately in this instance, as the Gates of Death.

The Lord of Death, Saturn, in Gemini, in conjunction with Pluto (Hades), all bathed in the Luciferian energies of Sirius: under these potent astrological conditions sit the Twin Towers, as the Devil's House, as the Gates of Death … but not simply of death. What emerges from this esoteric construction process are the very Gates of Hell, with this dreadful occult creation being birthed into existence on the morning of September 11, 2001, as the towers and their occupants were engulfed in flame and smoke, as victims burned alive or jumped to their deaths in the streets below, and as the airwaves around the globe became saturated with these images.

Yet, the Twin Towers were not merely imbued from their beginning with evil energies, or transformed through astrological and magickal means into symbolic, then literal, Gates of Hell. The very buildings themselves were constructed of symbols, symbols of steel that stated plainly and on a monumental scale to whom these towers were dedicated, and, in hindsight, foreshadowed the ultimate use to which they would be put on 9/11.

THE KEY ARCHITECTURAL ELEMENT OF THE TWIN TOWERS

So immense that they were simply overlooked, or seen by eyes unaware—either way, hiding in plain sight—there they were, massive tridents, the primary architectural element of the Twin Towers. Dr. Cathy Burns, writing in *Masonic and Occult Symbols Illustrated,* illuminates us as to the significance of this fact: "Mythologist Joseph Campbell reminds us that the 'trefoil or trident is the symbol of Shiva, Poseidon, Satan'. The Trident is also a fire symbol."

Indeed, in Christian iconography, the trident is the weapon of the Devil. It might come as a surprise to some, but that's not a pitchfork ol' Pip is carrying—and the Twin MegaTalismans were literally wrapped in a Satanic symbol. (Just for the record, Dealey Plaza in Dallas, where President Kennedy was assassinated, is laid out as a trident. More on this other great American megaritual later.)

Super-sized Sacrificial Altars

As you attempt to process the implications of this revelation, consider this: combined with the other evidence, it now becomes extremely difficult to escape the conclusion that these buildings were designed and constructed with their ultimate purpose in mind. It seems that these structures were preordained to become twin towering infernos, the gates of Hell, Hell on earth—filled with tormented victims, innocents, heroes, whole sacrifices, human sacrifices, sacrificed by fire. They were, unmistakably, Satanic MegaAltars.

Fresh What?

If the idea of the victims of the attacks on the Twin Towers as living sacrifices is as offensive to you as it should be, this next bit may leave you retching on the floor.

After 9/11, about two million tons of material from Ground Zero was taken to a nearby landfill for sorting, where thousands of detectives and forensic evidence specialists worked for over 1.7 million hours to recover remnants of those killed in the attacks. More than 1,600 personal effects were retrieved, and over 4,000 human remains recovered, and from those remains, 300 people were identified. The remaining debris, which in all likelihood contains fragmentary human remains, was buried in the landfill.

And the name of this place where the pieces of what we now understand to be sacrificial victims were taken? (Prepare yourself for the most egregious instance of mockery in the entire script for the 9/11 MegaRitual…) Fresh Kills Landfill on Staten Island.

GARBAGE BARG
FRESH KILLS

And Don't You Forget It…

On 9/11, the day of "Evil Magic," the Statue of Lucifer overlooked the ritual sacrifice of thousands of innocents and heroes in twin vessels built, consecrated and symbolically marked for that very purpose. And just in case you didn't get the point, two remaining tridents from the towers are being prominently incorporated into the WTC Memorial. (For future reference, some of the steel from the Twin Towers was used in the building of the USS *New York,* which, given the perverse innerworkings of the minds of these evil sorcerors, may at some time be destroyed in another false flag attack.)

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

A MASSIVE CEREMONIAL COMPLEX

The connections between the Statue of Liberty and the Twin Towers have been fully explored: there's the obvious geographical proximity, as well as multiple esoteric ties. However, there is more at Ground Zero and in the general vicinity than first meets the eye—much more. Stepping back and taking a look at the broader environment, we discover the presence of other objects of occult/ritual significance.

Consider the temple complexes of the Greeks and Egyptians, with their many buildings, statues and ceremonial and sacrificial areas: these individual elements are properly viewed as working parts of a collective whole.

The ancients honored their deities with monumental architecture, and modern practitioners of the Great Mysteries have done no less, only their honorific constructs are hidden in plain view. Could it be that the entire area around Ground Zero is a massive ritual occult ceremonial center?

THE WORLD FINANCIAL CENTER: ELEVATED SYMBOLS

The World Financial Center lies directly adjacent to the World Trade Center on the west side, and atop its four tallest buildings are four incredibly powerful occult symbols: 1.) an unfinished pyramid; 2.) a stepped pyramid; 3.) a square pyramid; and, 4.) a dome.

There is no way to know for certain what these symbols represented to the planners of the 9/11 MegaRitual, or whether they served an active role in the ritual or simply were a part of the ceremonial setting. What is for certain is that they are all of significance to occultists, and their presence at this location cannot be a coincidence.

THE UNFINISHED PYRAMID

Each of these four symbols has multiple meanings. The unfinished pyramid might be said to superficially represent our ongoing pursuit of perfection as individuals and as a species; or, the Founders' still-incomplete task of building America. Writing in *The Secret Destiny of America*, Manly P. Hall states, "On the reverse of our nation's Great Seal is an unfinished pyramid to represent human society itself, imperfect and incomplete. Above floats the symbol of the esoteric orders, the radiant triangle with its all-seeing eye."

That which is not present, the capstone, also has significance. Again, Manly Hall, in *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*: "As a rough and unfinished block,

Photo By
Det.Greg Semendinger
NYC Police Aviation Unit

man is taken from the quarry and by the secret culture of the Mysteries gradually transformed into a trued and perfect pyramidal capstone." Hall continues, "The temple is complete only when the initiate himself becomes the living apex through which the divine power is focused into the diverging structure below."

Referring back to the "radiant triangle" Hall mentioned, James Davis Carter, in *Masonry in US History—Background, History and Influence to 1846*, observes, "The triangle also represents the capstone of the unfinished pyramid and reminds the Mason of the immortality of the soul and that in eternity he will complete the capstone of his earthly labors according to the designs on the trestle-board of the Supreme Architect of the Universe." Davis concludes, "The unfinished pyramid cannot fail to remind him of the unfinished condition of the Temple when tragedy struck down its Master architect."

Interpretations with darker meanings exist, however, and are more applicable in this context. If the capstone could in a positive sense represent the transformation of the initiate into a perfected being, under a more sinister interpretation the unfinished pyramid represents the mass of humanity, as "a rough and unfinished block ... taken from the quarry and by the secret culture

of the Mysteries gradually transformed" into their image of perfection—into a posthuman, transhuman collective hive awaiting the bidding of its masters.

The orchestrators of 9/11 would not have had a utopian vision of the physical and spiritual evolution of mankind in mind. To them, the unfinished pyramid infers an artificially-accelerated, technologically-and-pharmacologically-induced synthetic evolution of humanity, directed by their hand for their own nefarious purposes.

The 9/11 MegaRitual was indeed part of that very process, one designed to utilize fear and terror to force the transmutation of human society, of our very consciousness, individual and collective.

The Stepped and Square Pyramids

Pyramids are viewed as "stairways to heaven," symbolic stairways to the stars, and the stepped pyramid of the World Financial Center might well represent a Stairway to the occult-Masonic heaven, Sirius.

The square pyramid is symbolic of a mountain, with its corners representing the four corners of the world and the four cardinal directions. More significantly, it is a path between Heaven and Earth, with its peak rising into the sky. In occult lore, the pyramid is considered to be the ultimate symbol of the Mysteries, representing the transition from the material plane to the spiritual world. From the square base of the pyramid, representing the material world, rises—in mathematical perfection—four triangles, representing divinity. According to many occult researchers, the pyramids of ancient

Egypt were used for the purposes of initiation, where candidates were led to the path of illumination.

Albert Pike, writing in *Morals and Dogma,* concurs, stating that "The more the great Hierophants were at pains to conceal their absolute Science, the more they sought to add grandeur to and multiply its symbols. The huge pyramids, with their triangular sides of elevation and square bases, represented their Metaphysics, founded upon the knowledge of Nature."

There may be no singly-important meaning of the pyramid in this context, as it is "the ultimate symbol of the Mysteries." For certain, it represents the path of illumination, and we have well seen that the inspired source of illumination from the perspective of the 9/11 script writers is the Light-Bearer, Lucifer.

The Dome

Last but certainly not least, the dome is often associated with both Isis and Sirius, and is in fact a component of the hieroglyph for Sirius. The image invoked is of a womb, birthing a new humanity, giving rise to a new aeon, Aleister Crowley's Aeon of Horus.

Interpreting the Complex

The Twin Towers were sacrificial altars or vessels, and were themselves 'sacrificed' as part of the 9/11 MegaRitual. The mass human sacrifice and the destruction of the sacrificial vessels (recalling the burning of the Wicker Man) were performed in the presence of these four over-sized occult symbols—each of which bears its own significance and meaning.

More than one of these symbols invokes the Blazing Star, Sirius, and it is also possible that these four symbols together constitute a coherent occult statement. Perhaps they are a three-dimensional explication of what could well be the ultimate goal of the MegaRitual itself: the transmutation of human consciousness through fear and terror.

As nasty a thought as this is, though, we won't dwell on it any longer, because there is yet another element of the massive 9/11 Satanic Ceremonial Complex that we've thusfar ignored.

CHAPTER NINETEEN

THE MILLENIUM HILTON: AN INSPIRED CREATION

Directly east of the World Trade Center lies the Millenium Hilton (the misspelling of "millennium" was intentional on the part of the hotel owner). Google this phrase and on one of the many New York travel pages that are returned on the search, you'll likely find the following statement:

"The hotel is a high-rise black glass building which pays homage to Arthur C. Clarke's vision of the Monolith in *2001: A Space Odyssey*."

This sentence apparently once appeared on the Millenium Hilton's website (although it's no longer there), and in looking at the building there's no question that the fictional monolith was the inspiration for it. It is certainly a striking piece of architecture, but surely it's just a harmless architectural tribute to an iconic piece of science fiction…

A Monolithic Presence

In the film *2001*, the black monolith not only stood witness to, but facilitated the creation of a new world. On September 11, 2001, this massive facsimile sat directly to the side of the Twin Towers as they were destroyed, and the Millenium Monolith likewise stood witness to the creation of a new world: fear of terrorism in the homeland as a new part of daily life in America; the erosion of civil liberties and the establishment of a domestic police state; wars in Iraq and Afghanistan.

That's all, though, right?, we want to tell ourselves. We're exhausted—No more dark secrets, no more mockery. Yet, as with every other ugly aspect of 9/11, wishing it weren't true doesn't make it so.

The Sentinel

Clarke's film was based on an earlier short story he'd written, entitled "The Sentinel," which is precisely what the Millenium Monolith was intended to represent. It was an intentional occult construct, an over-sized real-life dark sentinel designed to stand witness to a monumental act of Evil Magic.

Oh…no… Oh, yes, says trusty guide Michael Hoffman, again in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*: "The mute monolith of *2001* is harbinger of what Clarke calls…the Overlord. It is the ashlar of the secret societies. The monolith represents the shaping function of the occult magus, who tames and tampers with the natural world." *No, no, no…* Shut up, replies Hoffman, continuing, "This Freemason's radiating ashlar, this transmitter monolith, is

a sentinel that we allegedly trigger with our awareness—a 'progressive development' which is in turn conveyed by the sentinel to the 'higher powers' ('dark gods')."

9/11, *2001*—Evil Magic…and this massive black evil big brother of the monolith from *2001* has ringside seats to the Greatest Show on Earth, sitting there, in plain view, conveying all that he sees to the dark powers, and mocking us… YOU CAN'T SEE ME!

Wrapping Up

Surely that's all, surely we're done with this place… Yes, we're done with Ground Zero (although those with the stomach for it can revisit this locale in Bonus Chapter Twenty Eight to see what is going on there now.)

You can't get out of your seats, yet, though, because we still have to bring everything together and reconstruct the full occult script for the 9/11 MegaRitual and reflect upon it, in all of its hideous glory.

But before we do that, we need to look at a couple of logical suspects, and afterwards we'll ask the question, "How long was this maniacal production in the works?"

SECTION THREE

THE BOOK AND SCORE

33

CHAPTER TWENTY

PIKE'S PALLADIAN RITE AND DEM BONES

If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.

—Dr. Joseph Goebbels, chief propagandist for the Nazi Party

See, in my line of work you got to keep repeating things over and over and over again for the truth to sink in, to kind of catapult the propaganda.

—President George W. Bush, Greece, N.Y., May 24, 2005

This is not a whodunit and we're not here to figure out how the conspiracy that generated the 9/11 occult script worked, or precisely who (with an exception or two) was involved.

The world of conspiracy theory is a dark, murky place, and when it comes to the usual suspects in these sorts of affairs (of which 9/11 is just the grandest example thus far, but by no means the only one), it is easy to get mired down in a bubbling stew of unsubstantiated rumor, disinformation, hogwash and bullshit.

The New World Order, Illuminati, Freemasons, Council on Foreign Relations…there are plenty of books available on these and many related topics, and good luck to you if you decide to spend half your life trying to determine which authors and sources are credible and which are not. The truth may be out there, but it's encrusted in a layer of crud a mile thick. (See Appendix A, "The Usual Suspects in the Quest for World Domination.")

However, before moving on, we are going to take time to look at two possible suspects, the first entity for what it appears to be but is not, and the second because the organization in question and those affiliated with it fit the 'criminal profile' in this case so well that it's almost comical.

THE PALLADIAN RITE

Albert Pike, who lived from 1809 to 1891, was a prominent Freemason and author of *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*. Pike was elected Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite's Southern Jurisdiction in 1859, a position he held for the remainder of his life.

Pike was also reportedly the Grand Master of an organization known as the Order of the New and Reformed Palladian Rite, which was a resurrected version of an earlier group founded in Paris in the 1700s called the Order of the Palladium. According to legend, the Order had been brought to Greece from Egypt by Pythagoras in the fifth century, and it was said that this "cult of Satan" was aligned with the Palladium of the Templars and introduced to the inner circle of the Masonic lodges.

Pike's Palladium Rite was said to be an international Luciferian alliance of key Masons, and in her book, *Hidden Secrets of the Eastern Star*, Dr. Cathy Burns writes,

> Knowing of Pike's admiration for Lucifer, we shouldn't be astonished to find out that Pike created a Palladium Rite which was a secret rite that openly worshipped Lucifer and practiced blatant occultism. This rite was to be kept secret at all costs and only a chosen few were selected. The Palladium, we are told, would be an international alliance of key Masons. It would bring in the Grand Lodges, the Grand Orient, the 97 degrees of Memphiz-Mitzraim (the Ancient and Primitive Rite) and the Scottish Rite. The name, Palladium, was taken from a Masonic order founded in 1720 which died out, only to re-emerge in Charleston under Pike.
>
> The Palladian Rite was to be a supreme, universal rite of Masonry that would over-arch all of the other rites, and centralize all high Masonic bodies in the world under one head, that head being Lucifer with Pike as his human agent.

The "H" Word

As described, the Palladian Rite certainly sounds like a logical suspect on which to pin the blame for the 9/11 Global Occult Monstrosity. An ultra-powerful, ultra-secretive (okay, perhaps not so secretive given that you're reading about it here) Luciferian core of worldwide Freemasonry? Man, that fits the bill—that's it, cased closed, get the torches and pitchforks.

There's just one problem. Pike's Palladian Rite probably doesn't even exist, and was almost certainly a hoax perpetrated by one Léo Taxil (originally Marie Joseph Gabriel Antoine Jogand-Pagès). Taxil, a French writer and journalist, wrote a series of pamphlets and books in the 1890s denouncing Freemasonry and charging their lodges with worshipping the devil—which, as it turned out, was only one of a series of hoaxes he'd concocted.

The ultimate truth of the matter may be more complicated than that, and just because Taxil's writings may have been a hoax, doesn't mean there's not a Luciferian core at the heart of Freemasonry—but good luck proving it. Regardless, our next suspect, although it may be a familiar one to some, certainly warrants closer scrutiny in light of what we've learned about the 9/11 occult framework.

LES MYSTÈRES
DE LA
FRANC-MAÇONNERIE
par
LÉO TAXIL
LETOUZEY & ANÉ, Éditeurs, 17, rue du Vieux-Colombier, Paris

Dem Bones

The 9/11 Occult MegaRitual was by all appearances the work of extremely powerful Black Magick Satanic secret societies, and the President at that time, George W. Bush, is a publicly-acknowledged member of Skull & Bones, a Yale undergraduate society that has been characterized by conspiracy theorists as, well, a Black Magick Satanic secret society … what a coincidence.

President Bush on *Meet the Press,* February 8, 2004:

> Russert: You were both in Skull and Bones, the [Yale] secret society.
> President Bush: It's so secret we can't talk about it.
> Russert: What does that mean for America? The conspiracy theorists are going to go wild.

"Skull and Bones has the characteristics of a death cult," writes John W. Whitehead of the Rutherford Institute in his 2004 article, "The Secrets of Bush and Kerry: What Are They Hiding from Us?," in which he continues, "and most of the lore surrounding it centers on its death fixation. In fact, the entire secret society revolves around death-centered imagery. The initiates are told that they must 'die to the barbarian world' and be born again in the company of the elect or, as they call it, The Order."

Whitehead also tells us that,

> Some critics point to the fact that Skull and Bones is similar to other powerful secret societies such as the Thule Society, which emerged in Germany in the early 20th century. Much like its modern counterpart Skull and Bones, the German Thule Society initiated its members with elaborate rituals that mimic those of black magic—replete with sexual practices, blood orgies and communicating with spirits such as the devil. And, in fact, both groups use identical symbols to identify their respective group—the nefarious skull with two crossed bones.

Skull & Bones is a regular feature in many conspiracy theories, some of which assert that the society plays a key role in a global cabal bent on world domination. It has been alleged, for example, that the society—informally referred to as "Bones" (and its members as "Bonesmen")—is a branch of the Illuminati and controls the Central Intelligence Agency.[1]

"Bonesmen are like a cross between Forrest Gump and Zelig," writes *Washington Post* Staff Writer Don Oldenburg in a 2004 article, "always in the picture at major historical crossroads: Bonesmen oversaw development of the atomic bomb and influenced the decision to use it on Japan. They managed the postwar occupation of Germany. They helped shape U.S. Cold War policies. They were pol-

A Skull & Bones Calling Card

In 2000, the year in which Bonesman G.W. Bush was elected, the Republican logo was changed from its original configuration, left, to the one shown on the right—with three inverted pentagrams—which is still in use.

It took them a while (2008), but hell, even Mother Jones took note.

Mother Jones
HOME
POLITICS
ENVIRONMENT
CULTURE
PHOTO ESSAYS
BLOGS
POLITICAL MOJ
KEVIN DRUM
BLUE MARBLE
TOM PHILPOTT
MIXED MEDIA
THE RIGHTS ST
Tweet

Must Reads: Newt in '84: Soviet Union Will Last Forever! | Shell Oil Messes Off Two Coa

POLITICAL MOJO

Is There Satanic Symbolism in the GOP's Log

By *Mother Jones*

Something's wrong with the Republican logo. The stars are upside down. Five-sided stars that point upwards—like those on the Democratic donkey and the American flag—traditionally symbolize the forces of good. An overturned pentagram, however, represents the goat's head of Satan and the forces of evil—and there are three on the Republicans' elephant.

The GOP's stars weren't always upside down; some say the change occurred around icymakers during the Vietnam War. They have ties to the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission—two hot-button organizations for conspiracy theorists." Oldenburg continues, saying that conspiracy theorists "have a field day over the fact that Bonesmen were among the founders of the Central Intelligence Agency. They love to point out that statues of the patriot spy Nathan Hale, Yale 1773, stand on both the university's campus and the CIA's headquarters in Langley."

John Whitehead adds further detail: "Known for its celebrity membership, Skull and Bones' alumni include numerous power-wielding individuals such as former President William Howard Taft, Henry Luce—the founder of *Time* magazine, U.S. Supreme Court justices, mega-corporation founders and leaders and such recent luminaries as former President George H.W. Bush, President George W. Bush and Sen. John Kerry."

MULTI-GENERATIONAL BUSH BONESMEN

George W. certainly wasn't the first or only member of the Bush family to join Skull & Bones. Writing in the May 2000 issue of the *Atlantic* magazine, Alexandra Robbins states,

> Bush men have been Yale men and Bonesmen for generations. Prescott Bush, George W's grandfather, Yale '17, was a legendary Bonesman; he was a member of the band that stole for the society what became one of its most treasured artifacts: a skull that was said to be that of the Apache chief Geronimo.[2] Prescott Bush, one of a great many Bonesmen who went on to lives of power and renown, became a U.S. senator. George Herbert Walker Bush, George W.'s father, Yale '48, was also a Bonesman, and he, too, made a conspicuous success of himself. Inside the temple on High Street hang paintings of some of Skull and Bones's more illustrious members; the painting of George Bush, the most recently installed, is five feet high.
>
> There were other Bush Bonesmen, a proud line of them stretching from great uncle George Herbert Walker Jr. to uncle Jonathan Bush to cousins George Herbert Walker III and Ray Walker. So when George W.

was "tapped" for Skull and Bones, at the end of his junior year, he, too, naturally became a Bonesman.

THE SMELL OF SULFUR

A proud line of Bush family Bonesmen, steeped in black magic ritual—author and publisher Kris Millegan, in his definitive book *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones*, asks, "Do we find in New Haven a multi-generational cult that uses conspiratorial tactics and ritualistic magic in its drama for control...that believes in the power of death to bring about change, a group of Zeitgeist initiates believing that the ends justify the means, and using massive deaths to feed their necromancy"?

Maybe George W. Bush himself provided a partial answer of sorts to this question when he remarked in 2008, "I'll be long gone before some smart person ever figures out what happened inside this Oval Office."

Or, perhaps Venezuela's President Hugo Chávez was more on target than anyone realized in a 2006 address to the United Nations General Assembly when he made the following remark concerning President Bush's presence there the day before (and then made the sign of the cross, brought his hands together as if in prayer and glanced toward the ceiling):

> *El diablo está en casa. Ayer estuvo el diablo aquí, en este mismo lugar. Huele a azufre todavía.*
>
> The devil is in the house. The devil was here yesterday, in this very place. Smell the sulfur even now.

(Not that it matters, but the *New York Times* translated this: "Yesterday, the devil came here. Right here. Right here. And it smells of sulfur still today, this table that I am now standing in front of.")

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

THE RECONSTRUCTED SCRIPT FOR THE 9/11 OCCULT MEGARITUAL

> *"I think we are farmed," Charles Fort said of humanity. It was Fort who also suggested that man deliberately invented the dogma of materialism in order to shield himself from the evidence of what was being done to him by means of psycho-spiritual warfare methods hyped by "coincidence," symbolism and ritual.*
>
> —Michael Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*

> *Never allow anyone the luxury of assuming that because the dead and deadening scenery of the American city-of-dreadful-night is so utterly devoid of mystery, so thoroughly flat-footed, sterile and infantile, so burdened with the illusory gloss of "baseball-hot dogs-apple-pie-and-Chevrolet" that it is somehow outside the psycho-sexual domain. The eternal pagan psychodrama is escalated under these "modern" conditions precisely because sorcery is not what 20th century man can accept as real.*
>
> —James Shelby Downard with Michael A. Hoffman II, "King Kill 33"

2001: September 11—a most auspicious date for a ritual undertaking, New Year's Day on the occult calendar, a date connected to the heliacal rising of the occultists' Spiritual Sun, Sirius, the Dog Star; a date that also pays homage to the Egyptian Lord of Time, Thoth, through the name of the first month of the new year, Tout, highly fitting for a ceremony focused heavily on timing and time itself…

On this date imbued with occult meaning, winged Mercurial messengers of death take to the skies, filled with sacrificial victims unknowingly awaiting their fate. Nineteen individuals believing themselves to be Islamic jihadists (evidence suggests that perhaps not all of them were true believers)—soon-to-be-martyrs receiving their rewards in Paradise—readied themselves to take control of four airliners with boxcutters.

Let the Games Begin

The ceremony officially commences as American Airlines Flight 11 (AA11), ritually marked, consecrated with the number of magic itself, slams into the North Tower of the World Trade Center, declaring the initiation of a magical operation.

President and Bonesman George W. Bush arrives at Booker Elementary School in Sarasota, Florida, the state which had given him the presidency in 2000 and where his brother Jeb is governor—and where the 9/11 ringleader and hijacker-pilot of AA11, Mohamed Atta, had received part of his flight training. The Commander-in-Chief as High Priest is in "Paradise," presiding over a Black Mass, complete with little black children chanting out the words of "The Pet Goat" (about which Osama bin Laden will later crack jokes on Al Jazeera, saying that Bush was more occupied with "the goat and its butting" than "the planes and their butting of the skyscrapers"), invoking Baphomet, even as United Airlines Flight 175 slams into the South Tower, an act designed to invoke Aleister Crowley's Liber 175, the "book of Uniting…to a particular Deity by devotion." They are stating their intentions and declaring their devotion, not simply to Satan, but also to Crowley—as has been made evident, the entire day's proceedings constitute no less than an "Ode to Aleister Crowley" (not to be confused with Ozzy Osbourne's literal ode to Crowley).

Thus, the two concrete and steel re-creations of the fabled Pillars of Hermes, the God of Commerce and Trade (and also of thieves and robbers), stand mortally wounded, as Hermes himself prepares to undertake his traditional role as psychopomp, escort of the souls of the dead to the Underworld. In the Tarot, the Tower card has been known as the House of the Damned, and the Twin Towers have become enormous sacrificial altars. Very soon, the doorway between the two pillars will be opened and the veil of Isis will be symbolically torn asunder as the towers come crashing to the ground and a gateway to hell esoterically created.

More Public Sorcery

In Arlington, Virginia, American Airlines Flight 77 (AA77)—piloted by a hijacker who according to one flight instructor "couldn't fly at all"—performs near-impossible aerial acrobatics in order to hit the west face of the Pentagon. This part of the building had been recently renovated and the Office of Naval Intelligence had just been moved in. The direct pin-point strike on their office conveniently destroys records related to the investigation regarding $2.3 trillion in transactions which Donald Rumsfeld had announced on September 10, 2001, could not be accounted for.

A massive version of an ancient and powerful occult symbol, the Pentagon sits on the 77th Meridian West and is 77 feet tall. AA77 was marked with this same number, which according to Aleister Crowley is the number of "magical power in perfection," and also conjures the 77 infernal names from Anton Lavey's Satanic Bible. And what is that in the sky? It's a bird, it's a plane, it's the Doomsday Plane to be exact—call sign VENUS 77.

Groundbreaking for the Pentagon began 60 years to the day prior to 9/11/2001, which also happens to be former U.S. Solicitor General Ted Olson's birthday. Olson supposedly receives two cell phone calls that fateful morning from his third wife Barbara, who was enroute aboard AA77 to a taping of *Politically Incorrect*—and who may also be one-and-the-same as Olson's fourth wife, Lady Evelyn.

THE FINAL THREE ACTS

In Shanksville—shank, shanks-ville, get it?—United Airlines Flight 93 is an air mail greeting to Thelemites around the world, and in this installment of the Flying Circus of Death, the plane performs a perfect disappearing act, leaving not much more than a Wile E. Coyote silhouette in the loose soil of an abandoned strip-coal mine. The investigation is overseen by one Bill Crowley from the Pittsburg office of the FBI, and the initial design for the Flight 93 Memorial, the "Crescent of Embrace"—shaped as an Islamic crescent—creates such an uproar that it is finally changed.

A less commonly known aspect of the MegaRitual involves Korean Airlines Flight 85— with the number 85 invoking both Thoth and the Tower tarot, as well as conveying "this means war" (which, of course, 9/11 did). Flight 85 was directed to land in Whitehorse, Yukon, and "white horse," as Ozzy Osbourne could tell you (and did, in his 1980 song "Mr. Crowley"), is slang for heroin, to which Aleister Crowley was painfully addicted. And speaking of Crowley (yet again), one Tim Crowley, air traffic controller, was on duty in the control tower on the morning of September 11, 2001, at the Whitehorse International Airport.

Rounding out the MegaRitual proper—the closing of the curtain, one might say—was the dramatic late-in-the-day collapse of Salomon's Temple, otherwise known as the trapezoidal-shaped 47-story World Trade Center building 7 (a massive three-dimensional reference to the 47th Problem of Euclid, sacred to Freemasons), home to Rudy G's skybox bunker. Let's have a couple of minutes (or years) of silence while Larry "Pull It" Silverstein tries to come up with a plausible excuse for using controlled-demolition terminology, and last but not least we bid adieu to Anton Lavey and his Order of the Trapezoid.

SOME SIRIUS BLACK MAGICK

If all of this strikes you as some sort of Evil Magic, you're on the right track, as 9 is almost universally recognized as a number of evil, and the number 11 as, well, you know—yielding 9/11 as a mathematical sigil for Evil Magic. And no, it's not coincidence that in the U.S. the universal number for emergency services is 9-1-1. The diametrically opposed meanings are intended to create psychic distress; it's all part of the psychological warfare programming for 9/11.

Astrologically, the Lords of Death and Hades, Saturn and Pluto, stand watch over 9/11, as does the Statue of Lucifer/Liberty in a much more literal fashion. References to the Masonic Blazing Star (and Crowley's Silver Star), Sirius, abound, invoking in particular the role of this star as the abode of Lucifer.

Sirius was also the name of the only police/search-and-rescue dog killed on 9/11, who died during the collapse of one of the towers, which, incidentally, were literally wrapped in massive steel tridents, marking them as Satanic MegaAltars. The towers were, at the time, the key features in a broader Occult Ceremonial Complex, complete with a gigantic replica of the Monolith from *2001* and other massive occult symbols on the rooftops of the World Financial Center buildings.

CONCLUSION

As an overview of the overview, then, Bush the High Priest sits in Paradise on New Year's Day overseeing a Global Satanic MegaRitual which features winged messengers of death as a tribute to the Prince of the Power of the Air. These flying harbingers of doom deliver their payloads of human sacrifices to their MegaTalisman targets, invoking all sorts of astral hell in the process. The number of magic is everywhere, including an 11-year countdown to 9/11 (see next chapter), and the entire MegaRitual takes place "in plain sight."

(For another humorous overview of the events of 9/11, see Appendix D on page 181.)

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

TWO FINAL 11S, AND THE QUESTION OF TIME

"Boy, they were big on crematoriums, weren't they?"

—President George H.W. Bush, during a tour of Auschwitz in 1989

Given the breadth and depth of the occult script underlying 9/11—and the amount of time, energy and resources that it took to pull the entire production off—the question logically comes to mind, My God, just how old is the 9/11 Conspiracy, how far back does it extend?

A 30-YEAR-OLD CONSPIRACY?

Former U.S. Senator and 9/11 Commission Member Bob Kerrey has stated in an online interview that 9/11 is a "30-year-old conspiracy."

> Kerrey: "…the problem is it's a 30-year-old conspiracy."
> Interviewer: "No, I'm talking about 9/11."
> Kerrey : "That's what I'm talking about."

And although that notion may come as a surprise to some (hopefully not after reading this material), Kerrey may actually be off only by a millennia or two.

Michael Hoffman informs us that "the process of Hermetic cryptocracy is not stagnant. It is engaged in a remarkable project set into motion millennia ago, an operation which has accomplished most—if not all—of its chief goals with masterful dispatch." Synchromystic blogger Mark LeClair expands on this point, writing,

> Any open-minded meditation upon Sept. 11, 2001, floods the mind with at first incomprehensible riddles. The brave seek answers and begin to connect the dots. A shape begins to appear. The seeker can stop with

> a complete hypothesis: evil men, shadow men, bankers and oilmen, a secret one-world power. Some seekers go deeper into the woods: Satanic Goofball Cultists and their midnight rituals. Nazi connections. The Fourth Reich steps out from behind the American Flag. Not satisfied, a few scrabble onward: an at least rudimentary knowledge of Occult Technology is a *must have*. Occult science is that of metaphor and the big truth of 9/11 is that it is a Heirophantic event, planned for two-thousand years by the priests of On and Tibet and altogether inevitable. Beyond this third degree, aspirants court the Abyss itself, gaze into the yawning yaw of Yah-weh and cry out: More Light!

Whether the truth is a conspiracy that's decades old, or centuries old, or millennia old, the reality is one that blows to smithereens the notion of 9/11 being merely an "inside job" by the Bush administration. (The involvement of members of the administration seems a foregone conclusion, but the weight of the evidence doesn't support the idea that they were the masterminds ... not by a long shot.)

The 11-year Countdown to 9/11

It should, then, come as no surprise that there would have been a countdown to 9/11—an 11-year countdown, as you might have guessed—which was initiated by none other than President George H. W. Bush in an address to a joint session of Congress on September 11, 1990, in which he referenced the "new world order" that 9/11 would be highly instrumental in bringing about:

> We stand today at a unique and extraordinary moment. The crisis in the Persian Gulf, as grave as it is, also offers a rare opportunity to move toward an historic period of cooperation. Out of these troubled times, our fifth objective—a new world order—can emerge: a new era—freer from the threat of terror, stronger in the pursuit of justice, and more secure in the quest for peace. An era in which the nations of the world, East and West, North and South, can prosper and live in harmony. A hundred generations have searched for this elusive path to peace, while a thousand wars raged across the span of human endeavor. Today that new world is struggling to be born, a world quite different from the one we've known.

George Sr. announces and, 11 years later to the day, George Jr. presides: another episode of our All in the Family Bush special.

AN 11-YEAR COUNTDOWN TO THE END OF THE AGE

September 11, 2001, not only marked the culmination of one 11-year countdown, but also marked the initiation of a second 11-year countdown—to one of the most significant dates on the occult calendar and one of the most auspicious dates in human history, December 21st, 2012.

This date marks the end of the current age and the beginning of a New Age—a perfect date on which to bring into full view their New World Order. They have been constructing the foundations of this new order for decades/centuries/millennia, and 12/21/2012 is the End of the Age—there could be no better time than 2000+13 to fully implement their "New Order of the Ages."

Thus, we go one level deeper still, with the destruction of the Pillars of Hermes-Thoth on Thout 1 invoking Thoth as the Lord of Time and initiating an 11-year countdown to the End of Time…

Prophet of Evil

Aleister Crowley, 9/11 and The New World Order

93rd Floor
Fl. 11
77th Floor
Fl. 175

by William Ramsey

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

THE RED PILL

> *"Thousands of lives were suddenly ended by evil, despicable acts of terror. The pictures of airplanes flying into buildings, fires burning, huge structures collapsing, have filled us with disbelief, terrible sadness and a quiet, unyielding anger."*
>
> —George W. Bush, September 11, 2001

The Pentagon was attacked to cover up evidence of financial crimes, and, as it turns out, so were the Twin Towers (if you want to read more on this topic, see page 183). The locations/floors of the companies involved? You guessed it—right where the planes hit.

Flight 11 hit the north face of the North Tower directly above floor 93, and Flight 175 hit the south face of the South Tower directly above floor 77. But wait, those aren't just the areas where the companies in question were located—north face, North Tower, south face, South tower... more seemingly-purposeful repetition... 93, 77... the presence of all four key numbers in the first act alone... how could there possibly be more to discover about this 9/11 techno-sorcery?

There is more to learn, but this may be all you can handle right now (if you think otherwise, head on over to the Bonus Chapters beginning on page 145). You've just swallowed the red pill, which, in the 1999 motion picture *The Matrix* allows the main character Neo to see the world as it really is, to see past the illusory digital creation in which his mind is entrapped. You need time to adjust, to come to terms with your new reality and the implications (and responsibilities) associated with your new-found knowledge.

THE UGLY TRUTH

We can now grasp the enormity of the conspiracy and understand the conspirators' almost omnipotent power—power to manipulate our reality, to manipulate us, to manipulate the institutions of government and media and to suppress official inquiry at any level.

Those with the ability to successfully play out such an ambitious multi-act occult script on a global stage under our very noses without fear of detection obviously possessed the logistical and technical expertise to accomplish all of the related practical tasks necessary to make it "The Greatest Show on Earth."

This would include the controlled demolition of the Twin Towers—not that we have to show one way or the other whether they were in fact destroyed in this manner. The occult script *proves* the existence of a massive conspiracy beyond a shadow of a doubt. Exactly who did it is another matter, and exactly how they did it yet another still. And while the former question remains open and screams for further investigation, the latter—how—doesn't matter anymore (except in determining who-all's asses to execute or put in jail).

The ugly truth is that the conspirators could have done—and did—anything and everything they wanted to. Bringing down two skyscrapers under our noses? Child's play, easily enough accomplished from a technical perspective, however it was done. The beautiful truth, however, is that we can now basically ignore all the pesky little details because we can see the big picture.

The apparently-fireproof jet-fuel-soaked passport of one of the Twin Towers hijackers that supposedly survived the crash and was found on the ground by a passerby? Who cares. Mohamed Atta's luggage—reportedly containing the 9/11 hijackers' names, assignments and al-Qaeda connections—which conveniently failed to make it onto his plane and not only allowed the FBI to quickly identify the hijackers but also amounted to "the Rosetta stone of the investigation"? Who cares. The airline passenger manifests that strangely didn't include any of the hijackers' names? Who cares. The Bush family member on the board of directors of Securacom/Stratesec, the company that provided security for the World Trade Center and Dulles Airport? Who cares. The power outages in the towers in the weeks leading up to the attacks? Who cares. The presence of nanothermite in the dust at Ground Zero and the discovery of pools of still-molten steel more than a month after 9/11? Fuhgedaboud-it. To use a slightly modified cliché, Don't miss the MegaRitual for the burning buildings.

A Total Fabrication

In the context of the occult script, all of the inconsistencies, suspicious facts and blatant lies make perfect sense—it was a huge multi-faceted operation involving so many different working parts that the conspirators never expected to be able to cover it all up, or even cared about doing so. In many instances, they didn't even try, or, worse still, were so bold and arrogant that they mocked us to our faces by leaving clues in plain sight.

All of the maddeningly suspicious details and inconsistent official accounts that merely left us confused and befuddled now lose their power over us. In context of the MegaRitual, we see that it was all theatre. In many instances, they didn't even attempt to hide their stagecraft, because they know we can't see something that we don't believe exists.

We can now explain why everything about 9/11 seemed suspicious—the entire event was engineered and the entire official story is a fabrication. Every official explanation for every aspect of 9/11 is now suspect, and, in fact, we can and should assume that the official explanation for every single element of 9/11 is a falsehood.

But what can we do about it, against unseen actors with practically omnipotent power? Is it even possible to hold such people accountable—are they not untouchable?

With certain knowledge of conspiracy, we must act, and Michael Hoffman tells us why: if we don't, we enable our own enslavement.

The Hoffman Lens

Hoffman reminds us of the purpose of the 9/11 MegaRitual: "This theater of death began as a ritual for the cult members themselves and ended as a giant magical ceremony for the processing of the entire nation… This is the alchemical psychodrama for the transformation of humanity. We are processed just by reading or watching 'the news.'"[1] Hoffman continues,

> The French adept Antonin Artaud, architect of the "Theater of Cruelty" with its transformative power, and the prophet of the extreme sex-and-death media of our time, had this to say about the processing of the Group Mind:
>
>> "Aside from trifling witchcraft of country sorcerers, there are tricks of global hoodoo in which all alerted consciousnesses participate periodically…That is how strange forces are aroused and transported to the astral vault, to that dark dome which is composed above all of…the poisonous aggressiveness of the evil minds of most people…the formidable tentacular oppression of a kind of civic magic which will soon appear undisguised."
>
> "… which will soon appear undisguised." Artaud wrote those words in the 1940s. The public sorcery he forecast is here, now.

Theater of death, global hoodoo, civic magic, public sorcery… "What we are witnessing in the wake of the public enactment of these alchemical psychodramas," writes Hoffman, "whose spiritual consequences for mankind are far more momentous than most have thus far guessed, is a process of global occult initiation. These are open-air masonic ceremonies which produce awe in the wake of the physical and technical accomplishment of their time-lost objectives."[2]

Alchemical psychodrama, global occult initiation, open-air masonic ceremony—the 9/11 Global Occult MegaRitual was all of these, and more. But the secrets contained therein, the "secrets of the script," were not meant to be kept secret forever.

Hoffman describes how the occult secrets buried within the rituals are meant to be revealed eventually, and calls this

> … "the Revelation of the Method"…the process wherein murderous deeds and hair-raising conspiracies involving wars, revolutions, decapitations, secret archaeo-astronomic deity cult-worship, and every manner of horror show are first buried beneath a cloak of secrecy…and then, when finally accomplished and secured, slowly revealed to the unsuspecting populace who watch…deep-frozen…as the hidden history is unveiled.[3]

Hoffman explains the Method further, and reveals its purposes:

> The alchemical principle of the Revelation of the Method has as its chief component, a clown-like, grinning mockery of the victim(s) as a show of power and macabre arrogance. When this is performed in a veiled manner, accompanied by certain occult signs and symbolic words and elicits no meaningful response of opposition or resistance from the target(s), it is one of the most efficacious techniques of psychological warfare and mind-rape.
>
> This ceremonial nose-thumbing, this perverse jesting and clowning is taken to the highest level of intensity by the Truth or Consequences principle which ultimately hinges upon the issue of consent.
>
> It is one thing for the media, the police, the judiciary and the killers themselves to commit terrible acts without our knowledge or consent. It is quite another matter, with grave repercussions in the realm of psychodrama, public ritual and advanced mind control, when these crimes are committed with our consent. It is an ancient rule of both the moral

> and common law that silence connotes consent—silence and a lack of meaningful action constitute consent in the face of these crimes.
>
> They brag to us about what they've gotten away with and we're thrilled by it. That's our only significant response, that and the anticipation of the next thrill.[4]

ALL PART OF THE PLAN

A clown-like, grinning mockery; a show of power and macabre arrogance; ceremonial nose-thumbing; perverse jesting and clowning…sound remotely familiar? This is exactly what we found throughout the 9/11 MegaRitual script, and now we must face the conclusion that the conspirators in fact wanted us to eventually discover what they'd done.

Hoffman shares further insight into the Revelation of the Method, and explains the "game plan operant":

> …the after-the-fact revelations are as much a part of the…plot as the murder and its initial cover-up. It's a deliberate psychological process they're taking us through, a psychodrama of enormous scale.[5] … The following is a statement which comes from within the British-intelligence wing of the Cryptocracy:
>
> > This demonstrates one of our simpler methods. Realizing that our activities will sooner or later come to light, we structure our activities so that as conspiracy researchers unravel them, they will release information into the public consciousness in such a way that it mirrors our initiatory procedure. In this way, the more we are investigated, the more masses of people are psychologically processed by the very people who seek to expose us. The meme that constitutes our essential structure is then successfully mimicked within the consciousness of those who investigate us. Success can then be measured precisely to the extent that our work is "exposed."
>
> …the one-two punch repeatedly conveyed in these highly symbolic murders, which transmit alchemical cant language command phrases and trigger-words over the airwaves and into the news racks.
>
> One: the ritual murders are successfully accomplished. The principals get away, the scapegoat conveniently takes the blame. Two: later we learn the truth but no one is prosecuted. We are mocked, disoriented and demoralized. Occult prestige and potency is heightened.

> This is what simplistic researchers miss: the function of macabre arrogance thumbing its nose at us while we do nothing except spread the tale of their immunity and invincibility further. That is the game plan operant here.

Enabling Our Enslavement

So, is that all we're doing here, is this all we've accomplished: spreading the tale of their immunity and invincibility? Hoffman goes on to discuss the motive behind the Method, and reminds us that ""silence and a lack of meaningful action constitute consent in the face of these crimes." And the consequences of consent?...

> Why would the perpetrators want their secrets revealed after the fact—even if it is years later? …secrets like this were rarely revealed in the past because traditional people had not yet completed the alchemical processing. To make such perverse, modern revelations to an unprocessed, healthy and vigorous population possessed of will, memory, adherence to their deepest inner intuition and intense interest in their own salvation… [would] have proved fatal to them.
>
> But to reveal these after-the-act secrets in our modern time, to a people who have no memory, no will-power and no interest in their own fate except in so far as it may serve as momentary titillation and entertainment actually strengthens the enslavement of such a people. [6]

We strengthen our own enslavement? Hoffman reiterates, repeating that consent is key:

> If the truth of what the cryptocracy has perpetrated is grasped and acted upon, the consequences for the conspirators will be annihilation. But if the people fail to perceive the truth or fail to act on their perception, thus rendering unto the Process a kind of tacit consent born of apathy, amnesia and abulia, the consequence for the conspirators will be a giant step in the advancement of their system of control, that is to say, ever tighter bonds of enslavement for humanity.
>
> Why does the cryptocracy bother to gamble so much by going public with what it is doing to us? Because consent fuels their control like no other form of energy.[7]

If we fail to act on our perception, thus rendering tacit consent, we are complicit in our own bondage—and merely spread the tale of their immunity and invincibility. Knowledge is power, and with power comes responsibility.

Twin Towers Demolition Multiple Choice

The Twin Towers were completely destroyed on 9/11:

a) For dramatic effect
b) All the better to sell you the deadly-Islamic-terror-attacks cover story with, my dear
c) To fully execute this critical component of the MegaRitual
d) To destroy evidence of financial wrongdoing housed in the Towers
e) To get rid of the aging, asbestos-infested structures and avoid costly environmental remediation
f) To get Larry Silverstein his damn insurance money
g) All of the above (and then some)

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR

A FINAL INSULT

I will screw him in the ass.

—President George W. Bush, according to Israel's 11th Prime Minister, Ariel Sharon, who, in speaking to Israeli reporter Uri Dan, claimed that Bush said this when asked what he would do if he caught Osama bin Laden. See Uri Dan, *Ariel Sharon: An Intimate Portrait*

After all we've learned, after reconstructing the occult script and contemplating the incredible time, energy and effort that the orchestrators of 9/11 put into creating their Occult Masterpiece, there's yet another potentially devastating blow—the possibility that they do not actually believe what they've invested so much treasure in convincing us they do believe.

Again, it's Michael Hoffman guiding us through the maze: "Aleister Crowley, in a statement to OTO initiates concerning one of his books, describes the underlying epistemology behind the glamour and enchantment which causes the occult con-game to become the weird reality we inhabit in America today:

> 'In this book it is spoken of the Sephiroth, and the Paths, of Spirits and Conjurations; of Gods, Spheres, Planes, and many other things which may or may not exist. It is immaterial whether they exist or not. By doing certain things certain results follow; students are most earnestly warned against attributing objective reality or philosphic validity to any of them.'"

Hoffman concludes, "Here Crowley admits that the OTO is a vehicle for imposing an artificial reality based on nothing but lies and promoted by liars initiated into the art and science of illusion."

So, in the end, is Aleister Crowley himself delivering the most devastating blow of all? Is this the final insult added to massive injury: despite all the symbols and astrology and hocus-pocus, it's all just a game?

Hoffman once more confirms our fears: "According to Fortean philosopher William Grimstad: 'It is the implantation of this illusory picture of the world into our minds… (a) process of widespread—indeed, virtually universal—hallucination emerging from extremely circumscribed and elusive sources…that forms the major activity of the hidden powers.'"

They may or may not be true believers in their own occult system, and this may be the biggest psyop of all—that we'll never know for sure whether they're Satanically-empowered practitioners of evil, or just damn-smart hucksters using our own ignorance and fears to help them facilitate their goals and consolidate their power.

Chapter Twenty-Five

The Face of Ahriman

"Your reality is already half-hallucination. If you're not careful it will become total hallucination."

—From David Cronenberg's motion picture, *Videodrome*

Is this the
face of evil?

SOME see not only the hand b
also the face of the devil in
Tuesday's attacks on the World
Trade Center in New York.

No sooner had US papers
printed this picture of the atroc
than they received calls — at le
70 — from readers saying they
could see a face with horns in th
smoke.

Was the photo manipulated,
they wondered.

A Physical Manifestation of Evil ... or Photoshop?

Did the face of Evil appear in the smoke billowing from the Twin Towers on 9/11? While it is certainly true that anthropomorphic images can appear in clouds and smoke, given all of the other trickery that went into creating the 9/11 MegaSpectacle, it is unlikely that the appearance of the image above is mere coincidence.

The likelihood of it being coincidence is even smaller when one compares the face in the smoke to a famous carving of Ahriman by Austrian esotericist Rudolf Steiner (1861-1925).

The head of Ahriman carved by Dr. Rudolf Steiner.

Ahriman was the god of evil and darkness in Persian mythology and in Zoroastrianism, a religion that attracted a large following in Persia around 600 B.C. Often called Druj ("the Lie"), Ahriman was the force behind anger, greed, envy, and other negative and harmful emotions. He also brought chaos, death, disease, and other ills into the world. In the Islamic religion, he is identified with Iblis, the devil.[1]

Ahriman is the all-destroying Satan, the source of all evil in the world. Rudolph Steiner, the initiator of the anthroposophy movement, has published detailed and elaborate studies on the Zoroastrian Ahriman. He claims that Ahriman and the Hebrew demon Mephistopheles can be considered as the same spiritual entities, with the biblical demons Mammon and Beelzebub as his associates. Ahriman's assignment is to alienate humanity from its spiritual roots and to inspire materialism and heartless technical control. As such, his influence is highly relevant to present-day Western culture.[2]

Ahriman's acolytes seek a kind of "immortality" in the slag-earth-surrounded-with-Old-Moon-forces, but an immortality with egotistic, earthly consciousness instead of the cosmic consciousness of the individualized spiritual Ego. The deeper, Ahrimanic aim of the Anglo-Americans is to defeat the Gods' plan for Earth-evolution, by turning the earth into a heap of dark, frozen, cosmic slag, haunted by an earth-bound mankind of ghostly homunculi — and to secure for themselves a privileged place in this Ahrimanic world-order: an Ahrimanic immortality, with earthly consciousness and with power over the uninitiated.[3]

A DIGITALLY-CREATED TRIBUTE

It is most certainly possible that the 'face in the smoke' was created using digital image editing software such as Adobe Photoshop, and intended to be not simply "The Face of Evil" (providing yet further evidence of occult psychological warfare tactics) but also a tribute to Ahriman and Steiner for those in-the-know.

Ahrimanic Purpose

The central rite of "Satanism" or "black magic"—sometimes crude, sometimes sophisticated—is the deliberate, ritual torture and killing of animals and, at a more advanced level, of humans. When done in a precise way, this practice confers knowledge and power upon the practitioner; also, it affects the whole earth, hardening and rigidifying it, to the characteristic Ahrimanic purpose.[4]

XVII
TRUMPS
ה The Star ♒

CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX

YET MORE 9/11 CROWLEY REFERENCES?

"I hope you leave here and walk out and say, 'What did he say?'"

—George W. Bush, Beaverton, Oregon, Aug. 13, 2004

Given the level of planning that went into the other elements of the MegaRitual, the following is worthy of consideration…

SIGILS

A sigil (lat. sigillum, diminutive of signum, "sign") is a symbol designed for a specific magical purpose. They are designed to represent a glyph, composed of a variety of symbols or concepts with the intent and inherent iconic meaning. Essentially, sigils are symbolic icons that are condensed representations of more complex ideas or information.

A sigil may have an abstract, pictorial or semi-abstract form. It may appear in any medium, physical or virtual, or only in the mind. Visual symbols are the most popular form, but the use of audial and tactile symbols in magick is not unknown.[1]

"9/11" is not technically a sigil, in that it is not purely a symbolic icon (it can be read at "face value")—unless you consider numbers themselves as symbols and assign ultimate importance to the character of these symbols. 9 is evil and 11 is magic; further, the 11 simultaneously represents the Pillars of Hermes and the Twin Towers.

In light of the above, consider the following: The A:.A:. was the magical order created in 1907 by Aleister Crowley and George Cecil Jones after they left the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. The acronym, A:.A:., has been assigned many meanings (see table, next page)

Language	Possible Name	Translation
Latin	Argentium Astrum	silver star
Greek	Ἄστρον Αργυρόν (transliteration: Astron Argiron)	silver star
Latin	Arcanum Arcanorum	secret of secrets
Aramaic	ןיפנא ךירא, (transliteration: Arikh Anpin) countenance (meaning Kether)	vast countenence
English	Angel and Abyss	Angel and Abyss

[2]

The planners of 9/11 were highly intentional and very sophisticated in developing their "occult script" for the events of that day. They chose specific things for very specific reasons, as has been well documented.

It is indeed possible that they chose American Airlines for a specific reason, i.e., knowing that the name of the airline would in many instances be shortened to AA and linked with the flight numbers: AA11 and AA77.

These alphanumeric combinations have appeared over and over in print and on the web in relation to 9/11. Those knowledgeable about Aleister Crowley and his legacy are fully familiar with AA as an acronym for his order, and AA11 and AA77—especially considering the well-established significance of the 11 and 77—appear to constitute yet two additional "hidden" symbolic references to Crowley. In light of all the other Crowley elements in the 9/11 MegaRitual, it seems unlikely that this one would be unintentional or purely coincidental.

A∴A∴
SIGILLUM SANCTUM FRATERNITATIS
7
77
77
7

The seal of the A∴A∴. Note the AA and 77.

What about United Airlines Flights 175 and 93, UA175 and UA93? The significance of the 175 and 93 having been thoroughly elucidated, consider this:

> The name Crowley may derive from the Irish or the English. The Irish Crowleys are more numerous and are known in Irish as "O Cruadhlaoich" or "Ua Cruadhlaoich," a Gaelic name meaning "descendant of the hard hero" or "descendant of the hardy warrior," and which was anglicised to "Crowley" or "O'Crowley." The English "Crowley" means "wood of crows."[3]

Although Crowley was English, his distant ancestors may have been Irish, but it really doesn't matter—it's the association that's important. "Ua" is connected with the surname Crowley, and UA175 and UA93, the latter in particular, would carry deep significance for Crowleyites and Thelemites the world over.

If real, these "sigils" would constitute one of the more sophisticated, subtle and obscure tributes to Crowley—but in the realm of the occult, major points are awarded for exactly this type of thing.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN

"HISTORICAL PRECEDENTS" FOR THE 9/11 MEGARITUAL

I call upon all nations to do everything they can to stop these terrorist killers. Thank you. Now watch this drive.

—George W. Bush, in a statement to reporters on a golf course, August 4, 2002

Have the occult symbols and practices found in the 9/11 Occult MegaRitual been used in other rituals? You bet they have.

DALLAS-WACO-OKLAHOMA CITY AND U.S. ROUTE 77

There is an historical precedent of sorts for certain aspects of the 9/11 MegaRitual, keyed to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

President Kennedy was shot on Elm Street, which forms one of the forks of the trident design of Dealey Plaza, site of the first Masonic Lodge in Dallas (the site also features an obelisk and a reflecting pool). The significance of the trident and the number 77 having already been discussed, one should not be terribly surprised to learn that, upon leaving Dealey Plaza, Elm Street runs directly under US Route 77 (John Hinkley bought the .22 caliber pistol he shot President Reagan with at Rocky's Pawn Shop on this same Elm Street, but that's another story). In some of the amateur footage and photographs taken on November 22, 1963, road signs bearing the number 77 are clearly visible.

From Dallas, Route 77 extends almost due North to Oklahoma City and passes within several hundred yards of the former site of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building, which was partially destroyed by a blast from a truck bomb on April 19, 1995. Route 77 also travels South from Dallas, and passes within miles of the site of the Waco Massacre, which took place on April 19, 1993.

The Mount Carmel Center, referred to by the media as the Branch Davidian compound, was originally a 941-acre property, but by the time of the massacre, it had been reduced to (I'm not making this up) 77 acres.

Mount Carmel is west of US77, and only a short distance to the east of the roadway is Crawford, Texas. George Bush's Prairie Chapel Ranch is located seven miles northwest of Crawford and was acquired by Bush in 1999.

In case you were wondering, April 19 is a Satanic holy-day, requiring sacrifice by fire, most preferably involving the sacrifice of children, and, indeed, multiple children perished in both Waco (more than 20) and Oklahoma City (19 under the age of 6). So, to summarize, in this instance we have three separate geographic locations, physically connected by a roadway bearing the number 77, and also linked by a highly-important occult date—on which, in two of those locations, mass ritual sacrifices appear to have been performed (if you've never examined the suspicious circumstances surrounding both the OK City bombing and the Waco massacre, you should).

We would do well to remember Michael Hoffman's wisdom on this point: "Mystical toponomy and alchemical cant language are part of a process which hinges on a marriage between action in time [or recorded history] and physical locations on the earth regarded as 'places of power' by the cryptocracy's magical-geographical vision of the earth as a giant chess board, symbolized by the tessellated floor of Solomon's Temple and the masonic lodge."

Mr. 77

Apparently the Bushes have a great affinity for the number 77 (or it has a great affinity for them, or both). The USS George H.W. Bush is the U.S. Navy's tenth and final Nimitz-class supercarrier, and Bush's daughter Dorothy Bush Koch was the ship's sponsor. The ship's designation is CVN-77. (Bush Sr. was director of the CIA in 1977, and was 77 years old on 9/11/01 ... *Pleased to meet you, Hope you guess my name ...* ?)

Kennedy, again, and Crowley, again

A second "historical precedent" connected to the Kennedy assassination and involving the integration of Aleister Crowley references into a national occult MegaRitual is outlined in Peter Levenda's *Sinister Forces*:

> One of the most mysterious of the many Aleister Crowley mysteries is that of a section of his famous *Book of the Law*, specifically Book Two Verse 76. This verse reads,
>
> 4 6 3 8 A B K 2 4 A L G M O R 3 Y X 24 89 R P S T O V A L
> What meaneth this, o prophet? Thou knowest not; nor shalt thou know ever.
>
> The verse is commonly referred to—by Thelemites—as "R P Stoval" after the last group of letters. No one knows what it means, although many have claimed to decode the enigmatic phrase.
>
> A photograph found at Ruth Paine's home—a photograph of a '57 Chevrolet in the driveway of General Walker, the man Oswald is supposed to have fired upon and missed in the weeks leading up to the assassination—was mutilated. The license plate had been removed from the photo so that it would be impossible to identify. The Dallas detective who seized the photo from the Paine home and put it into evidence claimed that it was already mutilated; Marina Oswald denied this and later evidence—a photo of the photo, to be precise—shows that Marina was telling the truth. The photograph when it came into custody of the Dallas police was intact; someone in the department must have chopped the license number out of the picture.
>
> The Dallas police detective who confiscated the photo and who subsequently lied by stating that it arrived in his possession in its mutilated state was one R. B. Stoval. In addition, Oswald worked for a photographic firm in Dallas that had Defense Department contracts: Jaggers-Chiles-Stovall. The job had been arranged for Oswald by George de Mohrenschildt.

> In de Mohrenschildt's entire existence, as with so much else surrounding Oswald, we seem to be looking at a kind of voodoo.
>
> —Dick Russell, *The Man Who Knew Too Much*

Is any of this data meaningful in a forensic sense? Does it reveal the truth about what happened in Dallas in 1963? Perhaps, perhaps not. But if, in some future decade, the evidence given above is shown to be not

> relevant to the actual murder of the President, then to what is it relevant? For it challenges every definition of cause and effect to ignore the above relationships and call them "coincidence." The point is that these mechanisms cannot be ignored: they are the spoor of some darker mechanism of history, of what we call reality; and an understanding of world events is impossible without acknowledging their existence and seeking their underlying meaning.

Indeed, one could view the Crowley connection related to 9/11 as almost a form of voodoo, but we must also keep in mind Michael Hoffman's astute observation: "Coincidence can be summoned. It's a matter of attention and timing."

CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT

CONTINUED USE OF THE CEREMONIAL COMPLEX: ONE WORLD TRADE

After the 9/11 MegaRitual, the Twin Towers were commemorated with twin pillars of light, and, finally, the Ground Zero Memorial has opened. (There is most likely occult significance tied to the twin pillars of light, as well as to the memorial itself, but at this point, I don't care.)

The site has not gone inactive as a ritual center, however—far from it. The former Freedom Tower, now called One World Trade, is an architectural alchemical statement, a concrete-steel-and-glass expression of transformation and unification.

The two four-sided towers were destroyed in part to make way for a single hexagonal creation, the design of which also conveys that most singular of occult principles, As above, so below. The alternating upward and downward triangular sides—pointing symbolically toward heaven and earth—unify the previously separate rectangular twins and esoterically symbolize the merging of Heaven and Earth, spirit and matter, signifying the union of opposites (male-female, positive-negative, yin-yang, franks-and-beans; if you really have a lot of extra time on your hands and are not already sick-to-death of this crap, Google "the middle pillar"... there are also the Three Great Pillars of Freemasonry if you're a real glutton for punishment).

Computer rendering of the completed One World Trade Center.

Not to be overlooked is the height of the completed One World Trade building: 1776 feet, recalling the year of the founding of the Illuminati. God only knows what they have planned for us next.

"Let us never tolerate outrageous conspiracy theories concerning the attacks of September the 11th. … There's one terrible pilot … They never stop thinking about new ways to harm our country and our people, and neither do we. … There's an enemy that would like to attack America, Americans, again—and I wish him all the very best. … I call upon all nations to do everything they can to stop these terrorist killers. Thank you. Now watch this drive."

THE END

(FOR NOW.)

APPENDIXES

APPENDIX A:

THE USUAL SUSPECTS

Enterprises, organizations and individuals suspected of involvement in 9/11.

THE NEW WORLD ORDER

Conspiracy theorists claim that a group of elite globalists continue to aggressively pursue the creation of a New World Order (NWO), an enterprise that has been underway for decades, perhaps centuries (if not millennia). The conspiracists further claim that these globalists planned 9/11 and used it to further their NWO agenda, to implement key components of their strategy for global domination by: facilitating wars in Iraq and Afghanistan; decreasing civil liberties through the enactment of the Patriot Act; and enabling the development of a domestic police state and massive new domestic surveillance infrastructure (the Washington Post did a major investigation and published a series of articles on this infrastructure, which include numerous "threat fusion centers" and so on); etc.

The Wikipedia entry for the New World Order reads in part:

> In conspiracy theory, the term New World Order or NWO refers to the emergence of a totalitarian one-world government. The common theme in conspiracy theories about a New World Order is that a secretive power elite with a globalist agenda is conspiring to eventually rule the world through an authoritarian world government—which replaces sovereign nation-states—and an all-encompassing propaganda that ideologizes its establishment as the culmination of history's progress. Significant occurrences in politics and finance are speculated to be orchestrated by an unduly influential cabal operating through many front organizations. Numerous historical and current events are seen as steps in an on-going plot to achieve world domination through secret political gatherings and decision-making processes.

In his book *Psychological Warfare and the New World Order*, Servando Gonzalez describes the NWO as

> "… a sort of neo-feudalism incorporating some characteristics of totalitarian fascist and communist regimes as well as modern techniques of mass mind control. … New World Order…conspirators…are mostly Wall Street bankers, oil magnates, CEOs of transnational corporations, and senior members of the military-industrial-academic complex…. Most of them are members of the Council on Foreign Relations or some of its parasite organizations like the Trilateral Commission, the United Nations…the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund, just to mention a few.

THE ILLUMINATI

Many conspiracy theorists believe that a group called the Illuminati is behind the push for a New World Order. Again, from Wikipedia:

> The Illuminati (plural of Latin *illuminatus*, "enlightened") is a name given to several groups, both real (historical) and fictitious. Historically the name refers to the Bavarian Illuminati, an Enlightenment-era secret society founded on May 1, 1776. In more modern contexts the name refers to a purported conspiratorial organization which is alleged to mastermind events and controls world affairs through governments and corporations to establish a New World Order. In this context the Illuminati are usually represented as a modern version or continuation of the Bavarian Illuminati.

It's hard not to be at least a tad suspicious of the group, given the following quote attributed to Illuminati founder Adam Weishaupt: "By this plan we shall direct all mankind. In this manner, and by the simplest means, *we shall set all in motion and in flames* [emphasis added]. The occupations must be so allotted and contrived, that we may, in secret, influence all political transactions."

Some researchers assert that not only are the Illuminati incredibly secretive and powerful, but also inherently evil. In *The Illuminati Conspiracy Against God*, Henry Makow writes:

> The Illuminati consist of the Jesuits and some of the world's richest families, including the Rothschilds, the Rockefellers and the Windsors. While they pay lip service to religion, they worship Lucifer. Their agents

> control the world's media, education, business and politics. These agents may think they are only pursuing success, but success literally means serving the devil. Prisoners of their wealth, the Illuminati prefer hatred and destruction to Love… They pretend to be moral while working behind the scenes to degrade and enslave humanity in a "new world order." Hiroshima, Dresden, Auschwitz, Cambodia and Rwanda were sacrifices to their god Lucifer. They are responsible for the two World Wars, the Depression and the Cold War. Sept. 11, the War on Terror and the Iraq War are their latest achievements.

THE FREEMASONS

Freemasons are a standard fixture in New World Order conspiracy theories, and are often associated with the Illuminati. The Wikipedia entry reads:

> Freemasonry is a fraternal organisation that arose from obscure origins in the late 16th to early 17th century. Freemasonry now exists in various forms all over the world, with a membership estimated at around six million, including approximately 150,000 under the jurisdictions of the Grand Lodge of Scotland and Grand Lodge of Ireland, over a quarter of a million under the jurisdiction of the United Grand Lodge of England and just under two million in the United States. … Conspiracy theorists have long associated Freemasonry with the New World Order and the Illuminati, and state that Freemasonry as an organization is either bent on world domination or already secretly in control of world politics. Historically, Freemasonry has attracted criticism—and suppression—from both the politically extreme right (e.g. Nazi Germany) and the extreme left (e.g. the former Communist states in Eastern Europe).

Stephen Knight, in his book, *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution*, gives us the following very compelling insight:

> Freemasons applaud violence, terror and crime providing it is carried out in a crafty manner. One section of the (masonic) notes says humor is all-important and the most appalling crimes may be committed under its cloak…ghoulish murders with a Puckish sense of fun. If Masonic supremacy appears in jeopardy, it is re-established by a show of strength, by crimes of violence, perpetrated to demonstrate... the far-reaching power of Freemasonry to initiates the world over.

And writing on Infowars.com, Mark Dice observes:

> It is often doubted that the Illuminati are still operating within the cover of Freemasonry. It is often dismissed that any kind of "inner circle" exists within Freemasonry, but Manly P. Hall, one of Freemasonry's greatest philosophers and recognized as such by the official magazine of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, wrote in his book, *Lectures on Ancient Philosophy* on page 433, that,
>
> > "Freemasonry is a fraternity within a fraternity—an outer organization concealing an inner brotherhood of the elect…the visible society is a splendid camaraderie of 'free and accepted' men enjoined to devote themselves to ethical, educational, fraternal, patriotic, and humanitarian concerns. The invisible society is a secret most august fraternity whose members are dedicated to the service of a mysterious arcanum arcanorum (secret of secrets.)"

The "Bible" of Freemasonry, *Morals and Dogma*, written by Albert Pike, explains Masonic philosophy, and is read primarily only by dedicated Freemasons. Part of this philosophy, Pike explains, is,

> Masonry, like all the Religions, all the Mysteries, Hermeticism and Alchemy, *conceals* [emphasis in original] its secrets from all except the Adepts and Sages, or the Elect, and uses false explanations and misinterpretations of its symbols to mislead those who deserve only to be mislead; to conceal the Truth, which it [the Mason] calls Light, from them, and to draw them away from it.

Council on Foreign Relations (CFR)

The CFR and its members make frequent appearances in NWO conspiracy theories. "The Council," reads Wikipedia, "has been the subject of debate…partly due to the number of high-ranking government officials (along with world business leaders and prominent media figures) in its membership, its secrecy clauses, and the large number of aspects of American foreign policy that its members have been involved with."

Former member of the FBI Headquarters staff Dan Smoot writes in *The Invisible Government,*

> I am convinced that the Council on Foreign Relations, together with a great number of other associated tax-exempt organizations, constitutes

> the invisible government which set the major policies of the federal government; exercises controlling influence on government officials who implement their policies; and, through massive and skillful propaganda, influences Congress and the public to support its policies. I am convinced the objective of this invisible government is to convert America into a socialist state and make it a unit in a one-world socialist system.

Carroll Quigley, in *Tragedy and Hope*, elaborates, writing,

> There does exist, and has existed for a generation, an international Anglophile network which operates, to some extent, in the way the radical Right believes the Communists act. In fact, this network, has no aversion to cooperating with the Communists, or any other groups, and frequently does so…. The Council on Foreign Relations is the American Branch of this network … and … believes national boundaries should be obliterated and one-world rule established.

And in *Psychological Warfare and the New World Order*, we find:

> In 1975, Admiral Chester Ward, a former Judge Advocate General of the U.S. Navy and a member of the CFR from 1959-1977 who broke with the organization, wrote that the CFR's stated goal is the "submergence of U.S. sovereignty and national independence into an all-powerful, one-world government." Furthermore, Admiral Ward warned, "… this lust to surrender the sovereignty and independence of the United States is pervasive throughout most of the membership."

THE ROCKEFELLER BROTHERS

The Rockefeller Brothers are by no means the only individuals implicated in the New World Order scheme, but they are certainly worthy of being singled out for special attention.

David Rockefeller was chairman of the Council on Foreign Relations from 1970 to 1985 and the founder of the Trilateral Commission. In his 2002 autobiography *Memoirs*, he writes,

> For more than a century, ideological extremists at either end of the political spectrum have seized upon well-publicized incidents…to attack the Rockefeller family for the inordinate influence they claim we wield over American political and economic institutions. Some even believe we are

> part of a secret cabal working against the best interests of the United States, characterizing my family and me as 'internationalists' and of conspiring with others around the world to build a more integrated global political and economic structure—one world, if you will. If that's the charge, I stand guilty, and I am proud of it.

And in an address to the Trilateral Commission in 1991, David Rockefeller stated:

> We are grateful to the *Washington Post,* the *New York Times, Time* magazine and other great publications whose directors have attended our meetings and respected the promises of discretion for almost forty years. It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had been subject to the bright lights of publicity during those years. But, the world is now more sophisticated and prepared to march towards a world-government. The supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers is surely preferable to the National auto-determination practiced in past centuries.

Peter Levenda, writing in his book *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft,* shares the following:

> In 1976, Congressman Larry P. McDonald pointed to the true source of the conspiracy:
>
>> The drive of the Rockefellers and their allies [is] to create a one-world government combining super capitalism and Communism under the same tent, all under their control … .the Rockefellers and their allies have, for at least fifty years, been carefully following a plan to use their economic power to gain political control, first of America, and then the rest of the world. Do I mean conspiracy? Yes I do. I am convinced there is such a plot, international in scope, generations old in planning, and incredibly evil in intent.

Again from *Psychological Warfare and the New World Order:*

> In 1973, [John D. Rockefeller III] described the coming "humanist revolution" in great detail in a book he titled *The Second American Revolution* in which he disparaged "old fashioned nationalism." …
>
> Contrary to the overt, violent communist revolution advocated by Marx and Lenin, or the coup d'etats preferred by fascists, the new Amer-

> ican Revolution has been a disguised, covert one. The new American Revolution has not used (at least, not yet) rifles and cannons to enforce its rule, but stealth, cunning, deception, lies and psychological warfare. The ideology of the new American revolutionaries who conspire behind our backs to impose it upon the rest of us is a mixture of fascism and communism, which they euphemistically call the New World Order. However, the techniques they are using to implement it are not the ones preferred by Fascists or Communists, but have been copied from the British Fabians and the Italian Marxist intellectual Antonio Gramsci.
>
> The British Fabians advocated communism as conceived by Karl Marx, but contrary to Marx, Lenin, Trotsky and other Communist ideologues, they believed that the right way to do it was gradually, by infiltration, capturing the existing institutions from inside and putting them to work for their goals.

Writing in their article "9/11, Psychological Warfare & the American Narrative," authors Elizabeth Gould and Paul Fitzgerald share insights that are particularly compelling in context of the discussions in this book:

> The creation of the World Trade Towers by Rockefeller brothers Nelson and David had been steeped in psychological symbolism from their start in the early 1960s. As the most well known scions of American business, the Rockefeller family brought more than just money to their endeavors, they brought a vision for the future of the planet and a philosophy to guide it.
>
> Begun as a massive undertaking to revitalize lower Manhattan, Chase Manhattan Bank Chairman David and New York Governor Nelson pushed hard for the project and each tower stood as a symbol of their respective power. As metaphor, the towers were more than just two of the tallest buildings in the world. It might be said they were as important as the two pillars Joachim and Boaz which stood at the entrance to Solomon's Temple; mystical gates to a Cathedral of wisdom in which all could worship under one religion; the religion of business, Capitalism.
>
> The Rockefellers were no strangers to the power of psychological warfare and its impact on American opinion. During World War II Nelson had headed the U.S. government's intelligence agency for Latin America, the Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs (CIAA). CIAA's film division guided the 1942 production of

Walt Disney's *Saludos Amigos* to promote pro-American sentiment in South America. In 1954 Nelson was appointed as President Eisenhower's White House special assistant on Cold War tactics and psychological warfare. Nelson Rockefeller played a central role in formulating domestic propaganda programs throughout the 1950s as chairman of the Planning Coordination Group which, in addition to its propaganda work, oversaw all CIA covert operations. His 1956 Special Studies Project directed by Rockefeller protégé Henry Kissinger produced many of the domestic policy recommendations that came to be known as President Kennedy's New Frontier. His family's philanthropic support of the arts had been carefully coordinated with the CIA and was both overtly and covertly propagandistic.

APPENDIX B:

EXCERPT FROM "SYMBOLIC LITERACY"

(PART TWO)

By Michael Tsarion

Due to chronic symbol illiteracy, we live our lives largely unaware of a great poison in our midst, something that has a profoundly negative effect on our conscious and unconscious selves. This is the use of subliminal persuasion in media and advertising. Subliminal and subtextual persuasion of this pernicious kind constitutes nothing less than a psychic dictatorship. It involves the deliberate and subversive manipulation and public purveyance of words, images, numbers, colors, rhythms, and symbols which are subsequently directed, via ubiquitous media oracles, toward the limbic areas of the human brain.

The artifice of the Media Persuaders produces an elaborate and insidious cryptic language specifically designed to stimulate conflict between fantasy and reality. It also serves to stimulate the compulsive urges of man's base appetites, and a plethora of mundane and dissonant drives that conflict with our higher aspirations and intentions. Constant exposure to subliminal content serves to undermine man's healthy drives. It subverts our natural moral sensibility and ultimately arrests our spiritual maturation. The devastating effects of such subversion on our selves, as well as on our children, has rarely been explored in great depth. It has yet to be recognized by the public at large, who, being victims of chronic "symbol illiteracy," are unshielded against the constant barrage of subliminal information entering their minds causing, over time, a nightmare list of physical and psychic disorders.

In the mind of this author, there can be no question of positive social change, no question of national or global healing, until human beings (particularly those in the western world) become lucidly cognizant and profoundly educated concerning the power of symbols, not only as transcendental portals, or mathematical devices, but as weapons in the hands of plutocratic elites, with occult agendas, laboring to arrest the mental, emotional, and spiritual maturation of the underclasses.

The alarming existential chaos which the young presently experience, though mostly deplored and ignored, serves as a direct indictment of the symbolic subversion I seek to expose. The young are, by definition, closer to the creative force than the average adult. They are also more influenced by the limbic brain and, therefore, respond with greater zeal to the erotic and even perverse symbolic messages which have become increasingly pervasive in their life- and think-space. The invasive, clandestinely directed, content has been adroitly designed to bypass their moral conscience and rational filters. The results of this psychic dictatorship are devastating.

Subliminal messages permeate television programs, computer games, magazines, billboards, products, and musical productions. They are, however, not limited to the ambience of the young. They are just one of the weapons in the arsenal of psychopathic corporations whose entire *modus operandi* concerns profit and dehumanization. All that is truly aesthetic, traditional, cultural or substantial, merely stands in the way of their monopolistic stratagems, their aggressive, relentless efforts at reducing the entire human race to a body of narcissistic, sense-infatuated, desensitized, amoral, immoral or actively criminal "smiling depressives."...

We have technological witchdoctors and cyber-space sorcerers. Their particular concoction of spells are cast via techniques that go by names such as Tele-hypnosis, Metacontrast, Hemisync, Synaesthenia, and Embedding. New techniques, yes, but with the same deadly effect as any past voodoo, sorcery, or telepathy.

> *The man who understands a symbol not only opens himself to the objective world but at the same time succeeds in emerging from his personal situation and reaching a comprehension of the universal...thanks to the symbol, the individual experience is "awoken" and transmuted into a spiritual act.*
>
> — Mircea Eliade

In fact, the only way to really comprehend the complete ramifications of their insidious work, is for each person to become familiar with the manner in which symbol affect the mind. Eventually, the student must also begin to study occult subjects. He must study subjects such as Tarot, Alchemy, Astrology, and Astro-Theology.

By studying the nature of consciousness and how it is affected or disaffected by colors, symbols, numbers, and words, we discover what is going on around us. We are also able to take back the power that was stolen from us.

Symbols have been used by all major cultures and, naturally, there could be no true advance to higher forms of language and communication without them. Symbols are higher forms of communication. They transmit archetypal ideas that words are unable to convey.

> *Among the ancients, who dealt largely with psychical sciences, there seems to have been a common language which could be used to explain the invisible world and its inhabitants; but we of this age have not yet developed such a language. Consequently, men who deny human immortality, as well as men with religious faith who have not… transformed that faith into a fact, nowadays… in attempting to explain psychic fact, call it mysticism*
>
> W. Y. Evans Wentz *(Fairy Folklore in Celtic Countries)*

Cynics who continue to doubt whether symbols and images have any lasting negative affect on consciousness should remember and study the most recent example of mass control, that of Nazi Germany. The Nazis openly used ritual choreography, ancient symbols and rallying chants, powerful mystical logos and regalia, and so on, to force men into a hive mentality. We now know that Hitler and his cronies were deeply involved with powerful occult societies and were fascinated by ancient mysticism. Hitler sent agents throughout the world, to visit tribes and sects in order to procure occult works and doctrines, and to learn how to employ magical arts.

> *The twenty-first century will be the era of the World Controllers… The older dictators fell because they could never supply their subjects with enough bread, enough circuses, enough miracles, and mysteries. Under a scientific dictatorship, education will really work… most men and women will grow up to love their servitude and will never dream of revolution. There seems to be no good reason why a thoroughly scientific dictatorship should ever be overthrown*
>
> Aldous Huxley (*Brave New World Revisited*)

Tragically, that which man consumes also consumes him. Sickened and desperate in his own soul, and knowing next to nothing about his own essence, he charges back and forth vainly with a thousand and one ideas and plans, pathetically administering to the maladies of his equally debilitated neighbors and fellow humans. His mind is plagued with "media viruses" and his libido rages within from all kinds of toxic programming. By divorcing ourselves from our center and losing our once natural sense of interior life, we become a generation who must *have* but cannot *be,* who know *what* but not *how* to think. Persona-drives and limbic-drives predominate and compel us to live on the periphery of Being, on the surface of ourselves. We do not own our *own* thoughts and yet believe ourselves capable of "independent" thought and choice. True, thought *can* be creative, but thoughts can also be created and *implanted* by agencies that seek to enslave the soul and confound the natural intelligence. Pestilence and injustice ride their steeds through our world, but they go unseen, sowing the seeds of doom among the innocent and pure, within hearts and minds unprotected and without awareness of what is happening to them.

The subversive forces that operate as described, and which deal so contemptuously with the underclasses they fear, can be sanctioned, penalized, and even overthrown, once we return to the "Symbolic Literacy" that was natural to our forebears. When the "inner eye" is opened and when Pattern Recognition becomes as natural as breathing, the tables *will* be turned on the subversive malefactor and tyrants.

Appendix C:

The Mohamed Atta Myth

http://www.911truth.org/article.php?story=20050519154200725

Of the four alleged 9/11 suicide-pilots, three had been in attendance at two flight schools at the tiny airport in Venice, Florida: Huffman Aviation and Florida Flight Training. Both were owned by Dutch men who purchased the schools within months of each other, in 1999. Soon after they took over, the schools began training unprecedented numbers of Arab flight students. Yet Huffman Aviation and Florida Flight Training, along with the dubious characters who ran them, have so far avoided any serious investigation or media attention. One man who has tried to make up for this is investigative reporter Daniel Hopsicker, who spent two years following the attacks in Venice, examining the training of the alleged hijackers. He reports his findings in his book *Welcome to Terrorland: Mohamed Atta & the 9-11 Cover-up in Florida*. As well as describing evidence of large-scale illegal activity going on in and around the Venice Airport, this book casts serious doubt upon the official account of who the hijackers really were.

We have all heard how these 19 alleged hijackers were Islamic extremists. Yet evidence uncovered by Hopsicker, particularly regarding alleged ringleader Mohamed Atta, depicts unlikely personalities and lifestyles for a bunch of religious fanatics. For example, almost totally ignored by the mainstream press is that Atta had an American girlfriend for over two months whilst in Venice, with whom he would go out clubbing almost every night. At the time, this attractive young woman—Amanda Keller—had spiky pink hair and was working as a "lingerie model" for an escort service called Fantasies & Lace. Atta is known to have been a heavy drinker who snorted cocaine. Local newspapers reported how in February 2001, along with Keller, he went on a three-day binge of drinking and drug taking in Key West.

Welcome
to
TERRORLAND
MOHAMED
ATTA
& THE 9-11 COVER-UP IN FLORIDA
DANIEL HOPSICKER

Just days before 9/11, Atta and Marwan al-Shehhi (another of the alleged suicide-pilots) spent the evening drinking heavily at a bar in Fort Lauderdale. The bar's manager later told reporters that the men "got wasted," drinking "Stolichnaya and orange juice, and Captain Morgan's spiced rum and Coke." Bartender Patricia Idrissi concurred, saying: "Atta drank Stoli vodka for three straight hours. They were wasted." Amanda Keller describes a typical night out at a club with Atta: "Marwan [al-Shehhi] was in the reggae room drinking with a bunch of women at the bar, there were a lot of women around him, and he was just flaunting money." As Hopsicker points out: "It's one thing to hear Atta described as living it up with wine, women and song. But Marwan flaunting money at the bar pretty much puts the lie to the 'Islamic fundamentalist' tag."

Hopsicker suggests that, rather than being a fundamentalist Muslim, Mohamed Atta better fits the profile of a member of Arab society's privileged elite and also a spy. Amongst many oddities contradicting the 'fundamentalist' label is the fact that his e-mail list included the names of several employees of U.S. defense contractors. More alarming, he and as many as six of the other alleged 9/11 hijackers appear to have trained at U.S. military bases. Hopsicker writes:

"On the Saturday following the Tuesday attack, the *Los Angeles Times* broke the story in a long article on their front page.

"A defense official said two of the hijackers were former Saudi fighter pilots," reported the paper, "who had studied in exchange programs at the Defense Language School at Lackland Air Force Base in Texas and the Air War College at Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama."

The story went wide the next day, Sunday, September 15th. *Newsweek*, the *Washington Post* and the *Miami Herald* all reported as many as seven of the terrorist hijackers in the September 11th attacks received training at secure U.S. military installations.

"Two of 19 suspects named by the FBI, Saeed Alghamdi and Ahmed Alghamdi, have the same names as men listed at a housing facility for foreign military trainees at Pensacola. Two others, Hamza Alghamdi and Ahmed Alnami, have names similar to individuals listed in public records as using the same address inside the base," the *Washington Post* reported.

"In addition, a man named Saeed Alghamdi graduated from the Defense Language Institute at Lackland Air Force Base in San Antonio, while men with the same names as two other hijackers, Mohamed Atta and Abdulaziz Alomari, appear as graduates of the U.S. International Officers School at Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, and the Aerospace Medical School at Brooks Air Force Base in San Antonio, respectively," the *Post* said.

Newsweek detailed how U.S. military facilities routinely trained pilots for other countries: "A former Navy pilot told *Newweek* that during his years on the base, 'we always, always, always trained other countries' pilots. Whoever the country du jour is, that's whose pilots we train.' Candidates begin with 'an officer's equivalent of boot camp,' he said. 'Then they would put them through flight training.'"

Hopsicker explains how this crucial story came to be dismissed:

"Someone was going to have to answer for a lot.

"But Atta is a fairly common surname in the Middle East," the *Post* quoted Laila Alquatami of the Arab-American Anti-Discrimination Committee as saying, and the suspected hijacker's first name is "probably the No. 1 name that is given to babies, in honor of the prophet Mohamed."

The *Boston Globe* reported the Pentagon's denial: "Some of the FBI suspects had names similar to those used by foreign alumni of U.S. military courses," said the Air Force in a statement. "Discrepancies in their biographical data indicate we are probably not talking about the same people."

How easy was it to tell the Pentagon was lying? Think about it. It is neither plausible nor logical that the reports were false because of seven separate cases of mistaken identity. One or two, maybe. But seven? No way.

None of the newspapers retracted the story, yet it disappeared. One person who sought answers was Senator Bill Nelson, who faxed Attorney General John Ashcroft, demanding to know if the story was really true. However:

"The Senator has still not received a reply, we heard from his spokesman, when we called his office eleven months later.

"In the wake of those reports, we asked about the Pensacola Naval Air Station but we never got a definitive answer from the Justice Department," stated the Senator's press spokesman.

"So we asked the FBI for an answer 'if and when' they could provide us one. Their response to date has been that they are trying to sort through something complicated and difficult."

Deciding to investigate for himself, Hopsicker phoned the Pentagon and spoke with the public information officer who helped write and disseminate their original denial of the story:

"Biographically, they're not the same people," she explained patiently, using the same language contained in the Air Force's press release. "Some of the ages are twenty years off."

Was she saying that the age of the 'Mohamed Atta' who had attended the Air Force's International Officer's School at Maxwell Air Force Base was different than that of 'terrorist ringleader Mohamed Atta?'

Not exactly, she admitted. She could not confirm that—in this specific instance—they had different ages. What she could do was once again deny that the International Officer's School attendee named Mohamed Atta had been the Mohamed Atta who piloted a passenger plane into the World Trade Center.

However, she could offer no specifics for her assertion, and repeatedly declined requests for biographical details about the Mohamed Atta who had trained at Maxwell Air Force Base.

After Hopsicker's persistent questioning, she finally said in exasperation: "I do not have the authority to tell you who attended which schools." Hopsicker reflects: "It was hard to read this as anything other than a back-handed confirmation. When she said that she didn't have the authority, the clear implication was that someone else does? Somewhere in the Defense Dept. a list exists with the names of Sept. 11 terrorists who received training at U.S. military facilities. She just didn't have the authority to release it." Furthermore, Hopsicker spoke to a woman who works at the Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama:

"I have a girlfriend who recognized Mohamed Atta. She met him at a party at the Officer's Club," she told us.

"The reason she swears it was him here is because she didn't just meet him and say hello. After she met him she went around and introduced him to the people that were with her. So she knows it was him."

Saudis were a highly visible presence at Maxwell Air Force Base, she said. "There were a lot of them living in an upscale complex in Montgomery. They had to get all of them out of here.

"They were all gone the day after the attack."

Despite it being a key 9/11 crime scene, there has been a surprising absence of investigations into the goings on in Venice, Florida. In fact, to the contrary, "the FBI's full attention seemed to have been engaged—not in investigating what had happened—but in suppressing evidence and even intimidating the witnesses who had seen and heard things that fly in the face of the 'official story.'" For example, Mohamed Atta's former girlfriend Amanda Keller says that even after she left Venice, the FBI called on her every other day for several months, telling her not to talk to anybody. Similarly, a woman called Stephanie Frederickson who lived next-door to Atta and Keller in Venice reported how she and other residents at the same apartment building were harassed and intimidated by FBI agents, to prevent them from talking to reporters. According to Frederickson:

"The question [the FBI] asked was always the same. You aren't saying anything to anybody, are you?

"At first, right after the attack, they told me I must have been mistaken in my identification. Or they would insinuate that I was lying. Finally they stopped trying to get me to change my story, and just stopped by once a week to make sure I hadn't been talking to anyone."

What is more, the FBI arrived in Venice just hours after the 9/11 attacks. A former manager from Huffman Aviation said: "They were outside my house four hours after the attack." He added: "My phones have been bugged, they still are. How did the FBI get here so soon? Ask yourself: How'd they get here so soon?" Within 24 hours of the attacks, records from Huffman Aviation, where Atta and al-Shehhi attended, were escorted aboard a C-130 cargo plane to Washington by Florida governor and brother of the president Jeb Bush. Similarly, according to a sergeant with the Venice police, the FBI took all their files and flew them to Washington with Jeb Bush aboard. (Presumably this was on the same flight as the Huffman records.) Hopsicker notes: "The important point was that taking files was a lot different than copying them. The FBI wasn't taking any chances." He concludes: "There is a demonstrable, provable, and massive federally-supervised cover-up in place in Florida."

As this and my previous evidence shows, there are countless unanswered questions about 9/11 that at some point are going to have to be properly examined. Even an investigation into just a few of these questions, such as those around the war games on 9/11, could be enough to start a major scandal. However, as numerous writers and independent researchers have found, there are so many suspicious circumstances that the truth could be very different to what we have been led to believe. The human rights lawyer Richard Falk has written: "There are so many gaping holes in the official accounts of 9/11 that no plausible coherent narrative remains, and until now we have been staggering forward as if the truth about these traumatic events no longer mattered." But if the mainstream press start investigating properly, it could lead to a completely unprecedented '9/11 scandal.'

APPENDIX D:

9/11: A CONSPIRACY THEORY (A SATIRE)

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yuC_4mGTs98&feature=colike
Uploaded by corbettreport on Sep 11, 2011

TRANSCRIPT: On the morning of September 11, 2001, 19 men armed with boxcutters directed by a man on dialysis in a cave fortress halfway around the world using a satellite phone and a laptop directed the most sophisticated penetration of the most heavily-defended airspace in the world, overpowering the passengers and the military combat-trained pilots on 4 commercial aircraft before flying those planes wildly off course for over an hour without being molested by a single fighter interceptor.

These 19 hijackers, devout religious fundamentalists who liked to drink alcohol, snort cocaine, and live with pink-haired strippers, managed to knock down 3 buildings with 2 planes in New York, while in Washington a pilot who couldn't handle a single engine Cessna was able to fly a 757 in an 8,000 foot descending 270 degree corskscrew turn to come exactly level with the ground, hitting the Pentagon in the budget analyst office where DoD staffers were working on the mystery of the 2.3 trillion dollars that Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld had announced "missing" from the Pentagon's coffers in a press conference the day before, on September 10, 2001.

Luckily, the news anchors knew who did it within minutes, the pundits knew within hours, the Administration knew within the day, and the evidence literally fell into the FBI's lap. But for some reason a bunch of crazy conspiracy theorists demanded an investigation into the greatest attack on American soil in history.

The investigation was delayed, underfunded, set up to fail, a conflict of interest and a cover up from start to finish. It was based on testimony extracted through torture, the records of which were destroyed. It failed to mention the existence of WTC7, Able Danger, Ptech, Sibel Edmonds, OBL and the CIA, and the drills of hijacked aircraft being flown into buildings that were being simulated at the precise same time that those events were actually happening. It was lied to by the Pentagon, the CIA, the Bush Administration and as for Bush and Cheney…well, no one knows what they told it because they testified in secret, off the record, not under oath and behind closed doors. It didn't bother to look at who funded the attacks because that question is of "little practical significance." Still, the 9/11 Commission did brilliantly, answering all of the questions the public had (except most of the victims' family members' questions) and pinned blame on all the people responsible (although no one so much as lost their job), determining the attacks were "a failure of imagination" because "I don't think anyone could envision flying airplanes into buildings " except the Pentagon and FEMA and NORAD and the NRO.

The DIA destroyed 2.5 TB of data on Able Danger, but that's OK because it probably wasn't important.

The SEC destroyed their records on the investigation into the insider trading before the attacks, but that's OK because destroying the records of the largest investigation in SEC history is just part of routine record keeping.

NIST has classified the data that they used for their model of WTC7's collapse, but that's OK because knowing how they made their model of that collapse would "jeopardize public safety".

The FBI has argued that all material related to their investigation of 9/11 should be kept secret from the public, but that's OK because the FBI probably has nothing to hide.

…Osama Bin Laden lived in a cave fortress in the hills of Afghanistan, but somehow got away. Then he was hiding out in Tora Bora but somehow got away. Then he lived in Abottabad for years, taunting the most comprehensive intelligence dragnet employing the most sophisticated technology in the history of the world for 10 years, releasing video after video with complete impunity (and getting younger and younger as he did so), before finally being found in a daring SEAL team raid which wasn't recorded on video, in which he didn't resist or use his wife as a human shield, and in which these crack special forces operatives panicked and killed this unarmed man, supposedly the best source of intelligence about those dastardly terrorists on the planet. Then they dumped his body in the ocean before telling anyone about it. Then a couple dozen of that team's members died in a helicopter crash in Afghanistan.

This is the story of 9/11, brought to you by the media which told you the hard truths about JFK and incubator babies and mobile production facilities and the rescue of Jessica Lynch.

If you have any questions about this story…you are a batshit, paranoid, tinfoil, dog-abusing baby-hater and will be reviled by everyone. If you love your country and/or freedom, happiness, rainbows, rock and roll, puppy dogs, apple pie and your grandma, you will never ever express doubts about any part of this story to anyone. Ever.

This has been a public service announcement by: the Friends of the FBI, CIA, NSA, DIA, SEC, MSM, White House, NIST, and the 9/11 Commission. Because Ignorance is Strength.

APPENDIX E:

EXCERPT FROM "THE BUSH FAMILY'S 'PROJECT HAMMER'"

By Deanna Springola

In September 1991, George H. W. Bush and Alan Greenspan… financed $240 billion in illegal bonds to economically decimate the Soviet Union and bring Soviet oil and gas resources under the control of Western investors, backed by the Black Eagle Trust and supported later by Putin who, for the right price, purged certain oligarchs. The $240 billion in illegal bonds were apparently replaced with Treasury notes backed by U.S. taxpayers. …

SEPTEMBER 11 — BLACK OP COVER-UP

Three top securities brokers had offices in the World Trade Center, Cantor Fitzgerald, Euro Brokers and Garbon Inter Capital. Flight 11 struck just under the floors where Cantor Fitzgerald was located. Cantor Fitzgerald, with possible connections to the U.S. Intelligence apparatus, was America's biggest securities broker and apparently the main target. Within minutes, an explosion in the North Tower's vacant 23rd floor, right under the offices of the FBI and Garbon Inter Capital on the 25th floor caused a huge fire from the 22nd through the 25th floors. At the same time, there was an explosion in the basement of the North Tower. A vault in the North Tower basement held less than $1 billion in gold, much of which was reportedly moved before 9/11. However, the government had hundreds of billions of dollars of securities which were summarily destroyed. The Federal Reserve, untouched by the crisis at its downtown offices (as they had everything backed up to a remote location), assumed emergency powers that afternoon. The $240 billion in securities were electronically cleared. Then, at 9:03, Flight 175 slammed into the 78th floor of the South Tower just below the 84th floor where Euro Brokers were located. Brian Clark, the manager at Euro Brokers, heard numerous explosions, apparently unrelated to what he referred to as the oxygen-starved fire caused by the plane crash.

The September 11 attacks related to the financial improprieties during the preceding ten years which spurred at least nine federal investigations which were initiated in 1997-1998, about the same time that Osama bin Laden, after twenty years as a CIA asset, announced a fatwa against the U.S. The records of many of those investigations were held in the Buildings Six and Seven and on the 23rd floor of the North Tower. … Building Seven, not hit by a plane, collapsed at 5:20 p.m. but was vacated as early as 9:00 when evacuees claimed to see dead bodies and sporadic fires within the building.

By 2008 and even earlier the covert securities were worth trillions. The securities used to decimate the Soviets and end the Cold War were stored in certain broker's vaults in the World Trade Center where they were destroyed on September 11, 2001. They would have come due for settlement and clearing on *September 12,* 2001. The federal agency investigating these bonds, the Office of Naval Intelligence, was in the section of the Pentagon that was destroyed on September 11. Renovations at the Pentagon were due to be completed on September 16, 2001. However, the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI), the entity that often monitors war games, was hurriedly moved. If they were monitoring the simultaneous war games that morning, they would have realized that the games were used as a distraction from the actual assault. Whatever hit the pentagon struck the Navy Command Center and the offices of the Chief of Naval Operations Intelligence Plot (CNO-IP). There were 125 fatalities in the Pentagon; thirty-one percent of them were people who worked in the Naval Command Center, the location of the Office of Naval Intelligence. Thirty-nine of the forty people who worked in the Office of Naval Intelligence died.

On September 10, 2001 Rumsfeld announced that the Pentagon couldn't account for $2.3 trillion, "We are, as they say, tangled in our anchor chain. Our financial systems are decades old. According to some estimates, we cannot track $2.3 trillion in transactions. We cannot share information from floor to floor in this building because it's stored on dozens of technological systems that are inaccessible or incompatible." It was forgotten the following morning. Accountants, bookkeepers and budget analysts who were in the section of the Pentagon being renovated met their unexpected deaths. The destruction of accounting facts and figures will prevent discovery of where that money went.

…hundreds of innocent people were in the World Trade Center towers and the Pentagon. Their deaths were presumably required to conceal the existence of the Black Eagle Trust, along with the numerous illegal activities it had funded for over 50 years. This massive destruction, and the lost lives, constitutes a massive cover-up and continued lawlessness by the brotherhood of death, Skull and Bones, and their accomplices, the Enterprise. The Enterprise was established in the 1980s as a covert fascist Cold Warriors faction working with other groups like Halliburton's private security forces and the Moonies. Citibank is connected to the Enterprise, along with all the CIA front banks, Nugen Hand and BCCI.

http://www.renewamerica.com/columns/spingola/100208

Notes

Acknowledgments

1. http://abdielsroom.blogspot.com/

Introduction

1.http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/9/11_Commission
http://globalresearch.ca/index.php?context=va&aid=26529
3. http://www.alternet.org/story/45726/?page=entire
4.http://globalresearch.ca/index.php?context=va&aid=26529
5.http://www.renewamerica.com/columns/spingola/100208
6. Wikipedia
7. Wikipedia

Chapter Two

1. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Grimoire
2.http://www.library.usyd.edu.au/libraries/rare/witchcraft/spellbooks.html

Chapter Three

1. http://www.alchemylab.com/hyper_history.htm
2. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Trickster
3. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hermes
4.http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/history_of_the_two_pillars.htm
5.William Ramsey; http://www.henrymakow.com/september_11th---the_occult_co.html
6. Wikipedia
7.http://secretarcana.com/influentialfigures/aleister-crowley-and-his-legacy/

Chapter Four

1.http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_mass
2.http://mastermason.com/callendar588/html/the_goat.html
3.http://mastermason.com/callendar588/html/the_goat.html
4.http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Goat_of_Mendes#Goat_of_Mendes
5. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Baphomet
6. Phillip D. Collins, "Luciferianism: The Religion of Apotheosis," http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/Commentary/Luciferianism.htm
7. http://www.trinity.edu/org/tricksters/trixway/current/Vol%203/Vol3_1/Durwin.htm
8. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evil_clown
9.http://english.aljazeera.net/archive/2004/11/200849163336457223.html

Chapter Five

1. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hani_Hanjour - cite_note-23
2. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theodore_Olson

Chapter Six

1.http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/93_%28Thelema%29

Chapter Seven

1. Hoffman pgs. 67 and 19
2. Hoffman, p. 50
3. Hoffman, p. 19
4. Hoffman, pgs. 172 and 173
5. Hoffman, p. 128
6. Hoffman, pgs. 172 and 173

Chapter Eight

1. http://www.thelogos.co.uk/pe.htm

Chapter Nine

1. http://killtown.911review.org/wtc7/fire.html,
2.http://archive.newsmax.com/archives/articles/2004/5/23/204909.shtml
3. http://www.elijahproject.net/abiff.html
4. http://www.masonic-lodge-of-education.com/47th-problem-of-euclid.html

Chapter Twelve

1. http://www.astrowisdom.com/sept11.htm
Chapter Fourteen
1. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sirius
2. http://classiclit.about.com/library/bl-etexts/homer/bl-homer-iliad-22.htm
3.http://www.redicecreations.com/specialreports/2006/03mar/amdogstar.html

Chapter Fifteen

1. http://www.renaissanceastrology.com/astrological-talisman.html
2. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electional_astrology

Chapter Eighteen

1.http://vigilantcitizen.com/sinistersites/the-occult-symbolism-of-the-los-angeles-central-library/

Chapter 20

1. http://www.holygrail-church.fsnet.co.uk/Freemasonry.htm
2. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Skull_and_bones the code name for the Bin Laden raid was Geronimo

Chapter 23

1. Hoffman, p. 66
2. Hoffman, p. 92
3. Hoffman, p. 52
4. Hoffman, p.78
5. Hoffman, p. 77
6. Hoffman p. 77
7. Hoffman, p.56

Chapter 25

1.http://www.mythencyclopedia.com/A-Am/Ahriman.html
2.http://www.book-of-thoth.com/thebook/index.php/Ahriman
3. http://www.adventofahriman.com/2010/09/the-advent-of-ahriman-part-two/
4. http://www.adventofahriman.com/2010/09/the-advent-of-ahriman-part-one/

Chapter 26

1. Wikipedia
2. Wikipedia
3. Wikipedia

THE ADDENDUM FROM HELL …

THE NEXT 9/11?

A Work of Predictive Fiction

The Most Dangerous Book in the World lays bare the *real* 9/11. Now, S.K. Bain takes the occult script developed in that book and uses it as a criminal profile to predict the next mass ritual. However, he doesn't play "What If?" He doesn't write in hypothetical terms about this attack—he's so confident in his prediction that he's written about it in past tense. Just as *Most Dangerous* was a backward look at September 11, 2001, "The Next 9/11?" is an after-the-fact, in-depth analysis of an event that could well come to pass before the end of this year (2012).

A BACKWARD LOOK

Completed in August 2012, "The Next 9/11?" takes readers into the not-too-distant future for a hypothetical look back at December 2012—in order to describe a reality that appears all-too-unlikely to unfold—and exposes what by all indications are the machinations leading up to a nuclear 9/11.

September 11, 2001 was merely a warm-up for December 25th, 2012. Forget the Mayan Apocalypse of 12/21/2012—it's Christmas Day you should be worried about. Although written as a backward look from a future vantage point, dissecting this hypothetical event and piecing together the occult script for "Black Christmas," this is no Dan Brown novel but rather a hard-hitting, true-to-life pre-crime exposé of the predictive programming and sophisticated psychological warfare tactics employed before, during and after the attack.

The hulking machinery of tyranny constructed upon the foundations of 9/11 only needs one thing to roar to life: a spark of ignition. Author S.K. Bain predicts what this source of ignition will be, and it's far more than a mere spark to be sure. And even if he's wrong in his prediction, "The Next 9/11?" is still a highly-informative exercise in analyzing occult-driven false-flag terrorism. *The long march toward global tyranny ends on Christmas Day 2012.*

The Next 9/11?

The 2012 Black Christmas
XXX Galactic Megaritual

NOTICE TO STUDENTS

Unfortunately, due to lack of time, Occult Scripting 201, 301 and 401 have been cancelled and we are now only offering the Graduate Course. Be sure to review your textbook from the first course, however, as we will refer back to it frequently. This class will be fast moving and may require homework, vomit bags not included.

PROLOGUE

ARE WE THERE YET?

by Peter Levenda

This is like no story of 2012 you have ever read.

The Mayans gave us the year 2012 as a deadline, a drop-dead date if you will. Now there has been a lot of mystification about 2012, an insistence that it signals the end of an era, or the end of the world. But we've been through this before.

We had the Y2K phenomenon, when everyone "knew" that the computer systems of the world—including those running power grids, nuclear plants, and military defences—would go off-line at midnight on December 31, 1999/ January 1, 2000 to accompanying global chaos.

It didn't happen.

And we have had generations of believers in various Christian denominations believing that the world would end—and that Jesus would return—on all sorts of dates throughout the last two thousand years of history. Apocalyptic cults have been with us for centuries, and they always make for interesting reading. Of course, maybe the Rapture did happen and we are all that's left.

I wouldn't be surprised.

But why should we pay attention to the Mayans culture no one really knows very much about, and whatever they had to say about the end of their own calendar?

The short answer is: we shouldn't.

After all, the Mayan End-of-the-World-2012 meme may be the most potent form of misdirection on the planet right now. It implies that if there is some kind of major disturbance in December 2012 that it was inevitable, that it was cosmic, that it was written in our stars.

In other words, that it wasn't the act of some power-mad, insanely megalomaniacal political or military or corporate cabal bent on driving the last nail into the coffin of all that is right and good with the world, the hemisphere, the country.

The Mayan astronomers created their elaborate calendrical system—one of the most sophisticated in history—in the employ of the state. This was a time when church and state were one, as they have been for millenia of western and eastern history. We in the United States of America have grown up believing that there is no crossover between these two institutions: that our political lives and our religious lives are separate and do not "bleed" over from one side to the other. That, of course, is nonsense. You don't need to be a forensic analyst with a can of Luminol to see that the blood is everywhere.

While the legal separation of church and state—enshrined in our Constitution and most specifically in our Bill of Rights—is a fact, it is one of those things that looks better on paper than it does in real life. We live in one of the most spiritually frantic eras of all time, when abortion rights, gay marriage, and other "social" issues divide the country along what seem to be political lines but which are, in reality, purely religious boundaries. For instance, the arguments concerning abortion rights and gay marriage really boil down to the question of the soul and its relation to the human body: when does the soul enter the developing foetus? Does that make it a person? If gay people cannot procreate—and thus provide material basis for more souls—should their unions be blessed? Or even tolerated?

But these are questions for philosophers, theologians and talk radio hosts. The manipulation of religious sentiments for political purposes is a mainstay of American life. We know that. But right now the survival of our individual human bodies may seem more immediately important than fuzzy theories about the nature of the soul, the spirit, or life after death. The New Age Mayan "prophecies" answer both needs, by framing human survival in almost mystical terms. The rebirth of the planet. The illumination of the masses. Cosmic consciousness.

Which is not to say that some form of spiritual advice—some Kabbalah, for instance—would not be relevant (and welcome) to the matter at hand.

Which brings us to this, the addendum to S.K. Bain's *Most Dangerous Book in the World*. It is, in a sense, the climax to the long build-up in volume one. It's the punch line, but no one is laughing.

Readers will be shocked at what Bain has to say about 2012. This has nothing to do with Mayan prophecy or Biblical millenialism, which are only window-dressing for the actual event. It has everything to do with political events as mega-rituals, and with the conscious application of ritual technology to the manipulation of mass psychology. Isn't that what the Mayans were all about? If the Mayan astronomers painted the veil in the millenial Temple full of stars, Bain's book is about the Man Behind the Curtain. (This seemingly gnomic statement will make a great deal of sense to those who have already read volume one and who are eager to rush through volume two to see what Bain—not the Mayans—predicts for us all.)

I just hope that Bain is wrong. I pray that he is just another millenialist in a long tradition of millenialism, chiliastic panic and eschatological angst.

But I have my doubts.

Bain's Konspiracy Kabbalah is internally consistent, and the numbers are infernally insistent. He knows that we are being worked up into some kind of fever over the end of 2012, with everything from History Channel documentaries on aliens and ancient astronauts to New Age mystics and their groupies burning sage bundles in airless New York City apartments. Everyone is pointing everywhere else … except at where it matters. For if the world is coming to an end in 2012 do we have any doubt at all that the Powers That Be—that Freemasonry of fratricides, homicides and genocides—have already fueled their space shuttles and wire-transferred their Cayman Island account holdings to a Savings and Loan on Mars?

More likely, according to Bain, they have orchestrated a magnificent tragedy for us to witness on the winter solstice, some cinematic devastation that will finish what 9/11 only started. It will be an event replete with arcane symbols and ritual gestures, something that would make a semiotician blush with shame or lust: Earth-shattering explosions. Destruction of biblical proportions.

Human sacrifice.

Martial law.

This is not a book for the nervous. It is, after all, the *Most Dangerous Book in the World*. It should come with a warning, like a pack of cigarettes or an R-rated movie. But aren't we tired of being protected by the state? Haven't we finally realized that taking our shoes and belts off at airports is nothing more than theater? *And isn't the root of theater ritual itself?*

So throw caution to the radioactive winds. Open this book and start in. Unless, that is, you move your lips when you read. In which case close the book now. We don't need another voice chanting the evocations that will bring Apocalypse even closer than the December 25, 2012 drop-dead date.

And let the Powers That Be realize that Bain is on to you. He knows where the bodies will be buried. He has counted the numbers of the Beast—all of them—and has calculated the odds and hedged our bets with a view towards balancing the books. So no matter what happens on December 25, 2012 … you're screwed.

Stand down.

Peter Levenda – August 2012

FOREWORD

If only … The criminal profile established in *Most Dangerous* is employed herein to uncover and reveal the grotesque innerworkings of the recent Mega-9/11 ritual carried out on 12/25/12. As with the events of September 11, 2001, nothing is what it seems nor what it is claimed to be, and the longer you look at it, the uglier it gets.

This newly-reconstructed Occult Script is every bit as twisted, every bit as sophisticated as that for the 9/11 Global Luciferian MegaRitual—yet, the horrific nature and global scope and scale of 12/25 pushes this MegaRitual to an entirely new level altogether.

In hindsight, we can see that 9/11 was just a warm-up for the Main Event, just a preview, a foretaste of what was to occur in 2012. If only we had been able to use the occult script from 9/11 to decode their plans sooner, in advance… maybe, just maybe, this might have allowed us to stop their next act of false flag terror. *If only…*

SECTION ONE

BLACK CHRISTMAS

CHAPTER ONE

HO, HO, HOLY SH*T

DECEMBER 25, 2012. PHOENIX, ARIZONA. *The unmarked white lorry-style delivery van traveled south down Interstate 17, taking the Capitol exit and then turning onto 17th Street, again traveling south until it stopped directly in front of the Arizona State Capitol building at 1700 West Washington Street. The driver sat motionless, eyes tightly closed, repeating "Allahu Akbar"—"God is Great"—over and over to the 9-1-1 operator…*

In Paradise Valley and in other communities all across the Valley of the Sun, as the Phoenix metropolitan area is often referred to, children and their parents were awakening to a beautiful Christmas morning. The sun had risen about forty-five minutes earlier and was slowly warming the crisp morning air. Children were unwrapping their presents, families anticipating a day full of gifts, fellowship and food—the joys of Christmas. Peace on earth and goodwill toward men.

8:15 A.M. *The sun glinted off the circular stainless-steel band that was the primary element of Arizona's 9/11 Memorial, situated in the park directly in front of the Capitol. Then, a brilliant instantaneous flash, appearing as a second sun, superheating the air around it. The fireball travelled outward at unimaginable speed, incinerating almost everything in its path. Less than ten miles away, the windows at the Hall of Flame Fire Museum and the National Firefighting Hall of Heroes shook violently as the blastwave hit them and the intense light reflected off their tinted glass.*

The first new reports began to appear only minutes later on Fox and CNN, soon followed by footage from local stations showing the specter of nuclear terror realized, a mushroom cloud towering over a major American city.

The nation, the world, was in a state of complete shock, far beyond anything experienced on 9/11. Some screamed in fear for loved ones in Phoenix, many sat stupefied staring at their televisions, repeating "Oh my God" again and again. Parents shouted at children to leave the room or clutched them close to comfort them.

Those living in towns surrounding Phoenix could look out their windows and see the massive pillar of smoke rising into the sky. Many were awestruck, unable to move; others, realizing the danger they were in, rushed to their basements or began packing frantically.

There was no hope for those at ground zero … in the surrounding blast zones, the horror was unspeakable: the suffocating heat, the smoke-filled air; the screams of the injured, the moans of the dying. Those nearest the blast who had survived and managed to make their way out of the burning buildings couldn't get their bearings—all familiar landmarks had disappeared. They wandered aimlessly in a choking sea of smoke, a literal hell on earth.

Who would do this to America, *on Christmas Day*?

A Christmas to Forget

As the morning wore on, many couldn't pull themselves away from the non-stop coverage of the disaster, while others were forced by emotional fatigue to turn away.

When news anchors first began breaking in with other news alerts, many of those glued to their televisions initially thought, What the hell could be important enough to interrupt *this* for? But it quickly became clear that although this was the biggest story of the day, it was not the only major breaking news that morning.

More attacks, not nuclear, thankfully, but clearly related, clearly part of a pattern—a truly global new 9/11. The Church of the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem—the traditional site of Jesus' crucifixion, burial and resurrection—destroyed by a massive blast. Reports from the Vatican in Rome of an assassination attempt on the Pope.

It was becoming obvious to many that the terrible events of that morning were something new altogether—not simply a new 9/11 or a Mega-9/11, not simply a nuclear terrorist attack or a globally-coordinated attack—but a worldwide assault on Christendom itself. An attack on the United States and Israel, the Muslims' "Great Satan" and "Little Satan," as well as on the head of the Catholic church, God's representative on earth to the faithful…an attack on one of Christianity's holiest sites, on the most holy day of the year … this was clearly the launch of an all-out Islamic jihad against Christianity.

This was no "New Pearl Harbor," as 9/11 had come to be known—this was the American Hiroshima, an American holocaust, and there would be hell to pay. Iraq? Afghanistan? These would look like humanitarian missions compared to the New Crusades that were sure to follow.

The celebration of the birth of Christ had been brought to an abrupt halt that morning, the holiday seemingly forever marred by the carnage. The day of the Savior's birth had in an instant been transformed into a day of death—Black Christmas. The long nightmare was just beginning … and, as on 9/11, all was going according to plan, but not the plans of Muslim extremists.

CHAPTER TWO

UNHOLY WAR

AN ATTRACTIVE TARGET

Although not New York City or Washington, DC, Phoenix was certainly a logical and attractive terrorist target by any measure. The largest city in Arizona and the largest capital city in the nation, Phoenix was at the time of the attack the sixth most populous city in the United States, home to almost 1.5 million people according to the 2010 U.S. Census—the only state capital with over 1,000,000 residents. The Phoenix metropolitan area was the 14th largest in the nation by population, with about 4.2 million people in 2010, and Phoenix itself one of the largest cities in the U.S. by land area. (To top it all off, Phoenix is also the county seat of Maricopa County.)

Arizona's 389-mile-long border with Mexico had long made it a point-of-entry into the U.S. for illegal immigrants, drug runners and gangs, as well as terrorist organizations. Mexican gangs, including the notorious MS-13, had reportedly been cooperating with al Qaeda and Hezbollah in moving equipment and personnel across the border. With its resources stretched thin, the U.S. Border Patrol couldn't begin to keep up with the ever-increasing volume of cross-border incursions.

THE TRIGGER

The immediate response to the attacks had been predictable for anyone who had access to the History Channel in the last decade: Americans had been fed a steady diet of programming on "continuity of government" and nuclear-disaster-response protocols. The declaration of emergency powers and martial law had come as a surprise only to those who had no idea what these phrases meant. A substantial number of Executive Orders put in place by President Obama and past Democratic and Republican administrations were invoked, and the majority of Americans welcomed these measures: Do anything, just keep us safe.

Dramatically-restricted civil liberties, drastically-increased domestic surveillance and police powers? *Don't let another Phoenix happen!* Muslim internment camps? A small price to pay for increased security. The burning of Mosques by vigilante mobs? That's what happens when you mess with America.

After several months had passed and no additional attacks had occurred, one might have expected the usual calls for a full Congressional investigation. With the billions spent on increased intelligence gathering and threat analysis capabilities since 9/11, how could this have happened?

There was no new 9/11 Commission, though, no Patriot Act II. They were unneeded. The government's power was absolute, and it exercised that power fully. The apparatus of control that had been constructed in the wake of 9/11 had been so complete, so all-encompassing, all that was needed to bring this vast machinery to full power was a new and improved terrorist attack, and Phoenix was just that—the trigger that activated a massive engine of domination.

THE OFFICIAL STORY

The official government story was that, with the assistance of Iranian-Guard-backed terror cells already in the U.S., al Qaeda and Hezbollah operatives smuggled a nuclear device containing Iranian-enriched uranium across the Arizona-Mexico border and transported it to Phoenix.

There was no variation of Bush's patently-absurd "We never imagined that terrorists would use planes as weapons," no need for the President to say "We never imagined that terrorists would bring nuclear weapons across the Mexican border." If 9/11 had been a failure of imagination, as it was repeatedly asserted, then Phoenix was a failure of intelligence—the government needed more information, more power, more authority and it needed it now. No questions asked, no excuses offered: If you want us to keep you safe, give us everything we demand, give us the rest of your freedoms.

Despite the post-9/11 creation of the massive Department of Homeland Security, despite the numerous new threat fusion centers and hundreds of private corporations devoted to "national security"—chronicled in the *Washington Post*'s 2010 investigative reporting series, "Top Secret America"—Phoenix happened. The problem was obviously not a lack of intelligence-gathering infrastructure or analytical capacity, it was a lack of actionable information, a result of too many protections of privacy and personal information. Big brother can't protect you if you don't feed him.

HOLY WAR

Questioning the government under these circumstances was not just tantamount to treason—it *was* treason. Conspiracy theories weren't just subversive, they threatened national security. George W. Bush's admonishment to "never tolerate outrageous conspiracy theories" had been taken to heart, and they were no longer tolerated.

The official version of Black Christmas was the Gospel Truth, used to evangelize at home and abroad. There was no questioning it, this bedrock upon which old freedoms were sacrificed and new wars of righteous reprisal were launched. A new civic "religion" was born, this one much more powerful than the 9/11 Testament, the pages of which had worn thin and the masses had begun to question.

Tens, hundreds of thousands of Americans had lost their lives in this vicious unprovoked attack rooted in religious hatred, hatred of the faith of our fathers. Doubting the government's official story was far beyond unpatriotic, it was unChristian. There was no room in America for those who had any question about the justness of our cause and the rightness of our actions. This was a new Holy War, and you'd better make perfectly clear where your loyalties lie. If you're not with us, you *are* the enemy.

CHAPTER THREE

THE NEW GROUND ZERO

THE PEOPLE'S HOUSE: SOLD (AND BOUGHT BACK)

Trying to look on the bright side (if there is such a thing in the wake of a nuclear terrorist attack), the destruction of the Arizona State Capitol buildings, all things considered, hadn't been that much of a loss. The Old Capitol Building, which had been converted into a museum in the 1980s, had been built on the cheap in the first place and was one of the least impressive state capitols in the entire nation. Arizona was the last of the 48 contiguous states admitted to the Union; perhaps this had somehow dampened their enthusiasm when it came to the construction of their capitol.

The two identical Senate and House annexes that had been added in the '60s were the typical featureless architectural garbage common to the era, and were inadequate in practically every way. So little affection had lawmakers for the buildings that they in fact sold them in 2010 to raise money (under a 99-year lease-back arrangement)—only to turn around and consider buying them back 2 years later just in time for the state's centennial celebration in 2012. (One supposes they figured that it'd be better to have a capitol that no one could be proud of than no capitol at all.)

Although no one ever said as much, state officials, who had been looking at proposals for a new capital complex for some time, probably experienced somewhat the same sense of relief that Twin Towers owner Larry Silverstein felt upon realizing that he wouldn't have to pay for costly asbestos remediation on the aging buildings.

YET ANOTHER MONUMENTALLY-INSULTING MEMORIAL

Truth be told, the annihilation of the Arizona 9/11 Memorial was no great loss, either. Like the original design for the Flight 93 Memorial in Shanksville, Pennsylvania, initially entitled "The Crescent of Embrace" you might recall, the design of this memorial generated controversy from the very beginning. Some took offense to its distinctly crescent shape (sound familiar?), others to several of the self-flagellating blame America inscriptions, such

as “Foreign-born Americans afraid,” “You don’t win battles of terrorism with more battles,” and “Fear of foreigners.”

Although she had no say in the final design, former Arizona Governor Janet Napolitano heartily endorsed the monument, stating, “This Memorial is unique, bold, dynamic, educational and unforgettable. The thoughts and remarks etched in stone will serve as learning tools for all of us, our children and our children’s children.” Or, maybe not.

Aside from being offensive, the memorial was just plain ugly, although it did complement the plain-Jane Old Capitol in a weird sort of way. Viewed from above, the memorial looked like a big zero, which, in terms of its aesthetics, it certainly was. Ironically, it was as if this oversized symbol had somehow marked that spot as the next Ground Zero…

Okay, here we go.

CHAPTER FOUR

THE OCCULT SCRIPT FOR BLACK CHRISTMAS

Christmas Morning, 2012. Giant smiles crept over their faces, Grinch-like, as they stared transfixed at their TV screens, their adult diapers barely containing the expressions of glee issuing forth from their bowels. They'd done it, again, bigger and better, and the only thing that made the moment any more enjoyable was the certainty that they'd get away with it, again. For sure, 9/11 had changed the world, but it was simply preparation for this blow—September 11, 2001 had merely been the warm-up routine for a really Big Show.

INDUSTRIAL-STRENGTH IMMOLATION

As with the Occult Script for 9/11 (discussed in *The Most Dangerous Book in the World*), we will show level upon level of subterfuge, designed to draw us hoi polloi into a never-ending three-dimensional maze of dead-end questions and all-too-suspicious clues left tantalizingly out in the open. Make no mistake, though, this was no 9/11-Part II, no mere occult ritualistic theatrical production with a few thousand sacrificial innocents thrown in for good effect—this was major-league mass sacrifice, industrial-strength immolation, the likes of which would make Moloch pass out from ecstasy.

DON'T TELL ME

Not understanding that their government had been co-opted by globalist bankers and multinational corporations, most people couldn't grasp the concept of the United States Government and its institution as a weapon wielded against them, or as merely public theatre shielding the wholesale looting and pillaging taking place backstage.

The very notion that their institutions of government could be manipulated like so many hand puppets scares average folk to such an extent that they simply wouldn't look any closer—they refuse to see the strings and obvious props, refuse to acknowledge the contrived plotlines and out-in-the-open insults to their intelligence. *Don't tell me that, I don't want to know.*

For those who pick up on and manage to process the not-so-subtle hints, the message is abundantly clear: Yes, we did it, do what you're told, or else. But most people simply lack the ability to grasp who they are dealing with: fantastically powerful psychopaths who view the vast bulk of humanity as a bunch of useless eaters, as sacrificial pawns to be disposed of at their pleasure, slain to honor the god of the week.

STILL HIDING IN PLAIN SIGHT

The horror of the event—the sheer magnitude of the loss, suffering and terror—made a more elaborate public cover story completely unnecessary. The elite programmers knew that the average citizen couldn't see past the scenes of mass devastation to even begin to look for clues that didn't fit into the official story, for the signs and symbols through which they communicate in plain sight—and take much pleasure in doing so.

They had ruled the past decade with the spectre of a few passenger airplanes crashing into buildings and a couple of imploding skyscrapers—they would likely dominate the next half-century with the non-stop replay of images of a mushroom cloud rising into the skies over American soil.

The Occult Script for Black Christmas was in no danger of being exposed, least of all in any way that could pose any sort of serious threat to them. Even if some armchair-conspiracy-theorist jackass happened to piece together any part of it, what was he going to do? Put up a website? He'd be thrown in the Guantanamo Bay detention camp so quickly it'd make his head spin.

Just like on 9/11, there was real destruction, there were real dead people, real Muslims (or at least Muslim-looking) involved—it didn't matter who the actual producers of the show were, the production itself was reality, end of story…but not for us.

CHAPTER FIVE

17 REPRISED, WASHINGTON'S SURPRISE, THE TRIDENT (AGAIN) & THE SHOCKER

Rather than start off with the *pièce de résistance,* we're going to follow a trail of lesser clues to the heart of this MegaRitual, and because there exists such definitive evidence—revelations so jaw-dropping, so astounding—that to start with it would do the reader a great disservice, leaving them feeling as if the rest of the book were all downhill. To reveal all at the outset would erase any misgivings in the reader's mind, eliminating the essential element of uncertainty that drives one forward in search of the answer to the most essential question—could this really be true?

So, we start off following threads, loose ends, and drawing comparisons to that other infamous MegaRitual performed on September 11, 2001. Don't think you're going to get off easy or be spared the torment of exploring the deepest recesses and innerworkings of the perverse occult-driven elitist mind. And don't fool yourself that, at the end of it all, you won't find yourself back in that same familiar place, head in hands, muttering "My god, what have they done?"

BACK TO THE BEGINNING

Of course, the New Ground Zero had in fact been purposely marked by the Big Zero Memorial, and, as with the Flight 93 Memorial, it was intentionally designed to be not just offensive but insulting as well … hot damn, it's that same old mockery, right off the bat.

Our old friend 17— recall the 17th tarot ("The Star") and Sirius the Police Dog's badge #17—returns for a reprise role, making a special appearance at the outset in Interstate 17, 17th Street and 1700 West Washington Street, constituting a triple-marking of the Arizona Capitol with a number whose occult significance we know from *Most Dangerous*. Not to be overlooked however, are these additional facts: 1717 was the year of the formation of the first Freemason Grand Lodge, and, according to tradition, Osiris was killed on the 17th of Athyr (this last point will make more sense later on). Another Sirius affair. The Washington reference is not a coincidence, either, as our first President was himself a Freemason, and his own surprise attack on Christmas Day, at Trenton, New Jersey, is such a delicious historical connection that it's difficult to put into words.

The Trident Returns

Approaching Arizona's capitol from the east, West Washington Street (before it was vaporized) became part of a roadway configuration directly in front of the capital complex that was tantalizingly similar to a classic trident design—such as that found at Dealey Plaza in Dallas or encasing the Twin Towers—and although it fell short of the mark, one has to believe that the similarity sent a shiver up the spine of more than one globalist freakazoid. Such an important symbol would never be shortchanged in this fashion, though, and indeed the trident was employed in all its full glory in the weeks and months following Black Christmas.

Arizona State University's downtown Phoenix campus had been obliterated by the nuclear blast, and the Sun Devil Stadium—aptly named "The House of Heat"—located on the main campus at Tempe less than ten miles away, had become a primary triage point for the tens of thousands of wounded.

ASU's mascot, Sparky the Sun Devil, carries a trident, and the indelible image of this trident-toting imp became engrained in the public consciousness as the character was included in all manner of national and international media coverage surrounding Black Christmas.

The icing on the cake was that the general public began using the hand sign for the trident—a tradition with fans of the school's athletic teams—as a show of sympathy and support for the Sun Devils, and over time, this practice expanded and became a means of demonstrating support for the residents of Phoenix and the recovery effort in general, and rapidly exploded into a national phenomenon. (With the trident hand gesture, the three extended

fingers are said to represent the three prongs of the trident, or, alternatively, the index finger and middle finger form the horns of the Devil, with the pinky finger representing the tail.)

Americans of all walks of life flashed the sign *en masse* at events of every sort, from football games to Black Christmas fundraising concerts. Huge, shouting hordes of people, all over the nation, yelling patriotic slogans, chanting "USA, USA!" or "Phoenix will rise!," all enthusiastically throwing the trident hand sign … to the occultists, these were scenes of incredible meaning and beauty, bringing a tear to the eye.

A Real Shocker

Now, it's not quite clear if this next aspect was somehow intentionally engineered as part of the MegaRitual, or just happened, a fortuitous byproduct of the elitists' devotion to the black arts—perhaps a reward for being bad.

As Americans are wont to do, many never paid too much attention to the details involved with forming the hand sign, with significant numbers of well-intentioned folk throwing around sloppy facsimiles. And it just so happens that the trident hand sign is very, very similar to one called "the shocker" and known colloquially as "two in the pink, one in the stink."

To make the shocker, the thumb is used to fold the ring finger downward while the other fingers are extended, as with the trident. The only difference between the trident and the shocker is that with the latter, the index and middle fingers are kept together and the back of the hand faces outwards, away from the gesturer. This gesture of course has a sexual connotation, referring to the act of inserting the index and middle fingers into the vagina and the little finger into the anus—hence the shock. (Alternate phrases that refer to the shocker include "two in the goo, one in the poo," "two in the mush, one in the tush," and "two in the gum one in the bum.")

An unfortunate percentage of Americans persisted in enthusiastically mis-forming the trident, with the result that at any given event, hundreds if not thousands of persons in the crowd would be unknowingly slinging around this pornographic hand gesture, with everyone else flashing the trident—the sign of the devil himself. Such scenes surely sent many a globalist into near cardiac arrest with glee.

Clark
93
Mohave
40
Coconi
93
Yavapai
17
La Paz
60
93

CHAPTER SIX

ROUTE 93,
THE RETURN OF MR. CROWLEY,
AND BLACK RAIN
IN THE LAND OF AZ

Following the shock of that last revelation, we'll clean things up a bit, but just for a while, because there's more perversity where that came from.

CALLING NUMBER 93

Given the massive (and well-documented in *Most Dangerous*) importance of the number 93 to Thelemites—particularly to those involved with creating the occult script for 9/11 and subsequently Black Christmas—we would naturally expect it to make a prominent re-appearance in this latest and greatest production, and indeed it does.

Various roadways served as key evacuation routes following the attack, and connecting Phoenix with Las Vegas—one of the key initial evacuation destinations (all the hotels were filled to capacity and beyond) and temporary relocation cities—is none other than US Route 93.

"Route 93" was repeated over and over again in wall-to-wall media coverage…news alerts, news bulletins…verbally and visually it was 93, 93, 93. *Mmm, hmm*.

And for a nice little historical connection involving 93 (sort of): 8:15 a.m., the precise moment that Christmas in America died, was the exact time that the atomic bomb "Little Boy" was dropped on Hiroshima by the 393rd Bombardment Squadron's *Enola Gay*.

Victor 77

Bockscar, sometimes called Bock's Car or Bocks Car, is the name of the United States Army Air Force B-29 bomber that dropped the "Fat Man" nuclear weapon over Nagasaki on August 9th, 1945. The name is a pun on "boxcar" after the name of its aircraft commander, Captain Frederick C. Bock. The airplane's Victor number, painted on the tail: 77.

HELLO AGAIN, MR. CROWLEY

Speaking of gay, it seemed somewhat strange, even at the time that, of all the affected businesses in Phoenix, of all those that were completely or partially destroyed or deeply impacted in one way or another, the media focused such an inordinate amount of attention and reporting time on the OZ Gay & Lesbian Bar.

Now a nuclear blast isn't good for anyone's business, but the bar was well outside the secondary blast zone and hadn't received that much actual damage. It certainly wasn't a vital public service or critical to the proper functioning of the community (well, that would depend on who you asked). The bar did sponsor several small support rallies after it reopened, but nothing that would warrant the amount of coverage devoted to it.

The bar seemed to become somewhat of a cause célèbre, which, given the media and popular culture's obsession with all things homosexual, wasn't really that big of a surprise, but still, if one suspected that there was perhaps a deeper agenda at work, well, they'd have been dead on the money.

Not only was this component of the occult script a tribute of sorts to the star of the 9/11 MegaRitual, Aleister Crowley, and his favorite sexual activity, which involved the "infernal entrance," but obviously it was also a quite crafty means of repeatedly blasting out "Oz" to the entire planet—which, of course, further invokes Crowley, 77 and all the other crap. (There's an even deeper reference here to the act of sodomy as a means of accessing hidden spiritual power, particularly in young boys, but that's about all I care to say on the matter.) However, that's not all…

THE LAND OF AZ

As any sixth grader can tell you, the two-letter postal abbreviation for Arizona is AZ, which when pronounced is "ahz," as in the Land of Oz. And if you think that it was just a coincidence that the bar was named the OZ Gay & Lesbian Bar or that it's just some sort of gay thing, think again. There's a strong association between the Land of AZ (and Phoenix specifically) and *The Wizard of Oz,* as evidenced by the U.S. theatrical run of the motion picture "Dorothy and the Witches of Oz" having been launched at a premiere event in Phoenix on February 17, 2012. Prior to that was the Arizona Broadway Theatre's 2010 production of "Christmas in the Land of Oz" (the theatre itself being located at 7701 West Paradise Lane), and making his anticipated appearance in this latest MegaRitual is none other than our old pal Ozzy Osbourne, who held the very first Ozzfest in Phoenix in 1996. The Land of Ozz.

Ah, yes, and it would be remiss, and just poor form in general, not to make reference at this point to Ozzy's 2007 single "Black Rain" from his ninth studio album of the same name. When asked by an interviewer who came up with the song, he replied:

> Me. I was watching—I like to watch the news channels. I like to watch the documentary channels. And I got this—somebody gave me a DVD of when we dropped the atom bomb on Hiroshima. And after it blew up and killed everybody like that, it carbon—it evaporized (ph) some people, but it carbonized other people, not unlike charcoal and when the bomb—it sucked all these things up in a cloud, and it rained black rain, but they thought it was just regular rain there. And there were people catching it on their tongues and it kind of stuck on my head. I go, wow, I hope we never see black rain, you know?[1]

Yeah, Oz, we know.

The Flag of Oz

The Flag of AZ

Section Two

Meet the cast

SEAL OF THE STATE O
DITAT DEUS
1912

CHAPTER SEVEN

SECRETARY OF HOMELAND INSECURITY

We've been forcibly reintroduced to some familiar faces and symbols, but before proceeding into uncharted territory—new symbols, new numbers—or delving deeper into the occult underpinnings of the event, we're going to take a bit of a breather and meet the cast of this MegaRitual, and in the process begin to get a feel for just how extensive the pre-programming for Black Christmas was.

In hindsight, it is plain to see the main characters and plotlines being established well in advance of the attack. The pre-programming/pre-scripting was everywhere, in fact, so obvious and brazen it's amazing that we didn't see it—right there, under our noses, just like in the lead-up to 9/11.

THE POLITICS OF FEAR

Playing the lead female role was of course Janet Napolitano, head of the Department of Homeland Security (DHS), who was the governor of Arizona when President Obama tapped her for the position (and it must be said here at the outset that the notion of having the capital of the home state of the top dog at DHS play host to Black Christmas possesses an unmistakable twisted beauty).

The creation of DHS in response to the attacks of September 11th constituted the most significant government reorganization since the Cold War, and the most substantial reorganization of federal agencies since the National Security Act of 1947, which placed the different military departments under a secretary of defense and created the National Security Council and Central Intelligence Agency. DHS also constitutes the most diverse merger of federal functions and responsibilities, incorporating 22 government agencies—including the U.S. Coast Guard and Secret Service—into a single organization.

DHS is the third largest Cabinet department, with more than 200,000 employees and a fiscal year 2011 budget allocation of almost $100 billion, and its stated goal is to prepare for, prevent, and respond to domestic emergencies, particularly terrorism.

In addition to having served as Governor, Napolitano had been a lawyer (serving as attorney for Anita Hill) and Arizona's Attorney General, and in 1993 was appointed by President Bill Clinton as United States Attorney for the District of Arizona, in which capacity she was involved in an investigation connected with the Oklahoma City bombing.

Despite having that level of experience, though, Napolitano, in retrospect, may not have been the best pick to head a massive federal agency whose single greatest responsibility and challenge was thwarting another major attack on the United States by Muslim extremists.

From the outset, Napolitano seemed far more concerned about right-wing extremism (which in her opinion might well have been fueled by the election of the first African-American president) than Islamic terrorism. Worse still, displaying an almost insane politically-correct mindset, she even refused to use the word "terrorism," telling the German news site "Spiegel Online" in a 2009 interview that she preferred the term "'man-caused' disasters." She continued, "That is perhaps only a nuance, but it demonstrates that we want to move away from the politics of fear toward a policy of being prepared for all risks that can occur."[1] *Move away from the politics of fear*…into the reality of a nuclear holocaust. Nice job!

In what should have been viewed as an equal cause for concern, Napolitano, again in 2009, trying to defend her plans to strengthen U.S.-Canadian border security, claimed incorrectly that September 11 perpetrators had entered the United States from Canada—her comments understandably provoking an angry response from the Canadian ambassador, media, and public.

Despite having been governor of a state that borders Mexico and seeing first-hand the immediate and growing threats presented to national security by a porous southern border, in response to the above criticism Napolitano stated, "Nonetheless, to the extent that terrorists have come into our country or suspected or known terrorists have entered our country across a border, it's been across the Canadian border. There are real issues there." In other words, *Watch the little birdie*…

SEE SOMETHING, SAY SOMETHING

Perhaps we should have known better than to expect more from someone whose big ideas for protecting Americans were a feckless "See something, say something" Big-Brother-style campaign, complete with a "partnership" with Wal-Mart, and "enhanced pat downs," which effectively amounted to federally-sanctioned groping, practiced with particular enthusiasm on small children, quadruple amputees and grandmothers with colostomy bags.

We might also have been clued into Napolitano's self-blinding and zealous adherence to the religion of radical political correctness by her actions as governor of Arizona, where she: (as governor-elect) instituted interfaith prayer breakfasts before the start of every session; gracefully accepted the sprinkling of holy water from the Ganges on her forehead along with blessed garlands from Hare Krishna; stopped by to greet Hare Krishna devotees who were singing the Holy Names of the Lord during the Sankirtan in Phoenix; and, became the first-ever government official in the world to issue a proclamation for Krishna Janmashtami, the largest Hindu festival celebrating the appearance of Lord Krishna.

SYSTEM FAILURE

Despite the only thing preventing Northwest Airlines Flight 253 from being blown out of the sky on Christmas Day 2009 having been Umar Farouk "Fizzlepants" Abdulmutallab's inability to ignite the explosives hidden in his underwear, Secretary Napolitano initially asserted that "the system worked" (we won't even get into the suspicious "sharp-dressed man" observed by other passengers who apparently possessed enough authority to get Umar on the plane without a passport). In an interview with CNN's Candy Crowley (oh yeah, baby), Napolitano stated:

> What we are focused on is making sure that the air environment remains safe, that people are confident when they travel. And one thing I'd like to point out is that the system worked. Everybody played an important role here. The passengers and crew of the flight took appropriate action. Within literally an hour to 90 minutes of the incident occurring, all 128 flights in the air had been notified to take some special measures in light of what had occurred on the Northwest Airlines flight. We instituted new measures on the ground and at screening areas, both here in the United States and in Europe, where this flight originated. So the whole

> process of making sure that we respond properly, correctly and effectively went very smoothly.

Napolitano later appeared on NBC's *Today Show* with host Matt Lauer and admitted the truth, sort of. Napolitano said that her earlier statement had been, ahem, "taken out of context," but acknowledged that "our system did not work in this instance" and that no one "is happy or satisfied with that." When asked by Lauer whether the system failed up until the moment the bomber tried to blow up the plane, Napolitano answered, "It did."

SYSTEM FAILURE 2.0

Our fearless Secretary of Homeland Security—focused on the wrong enemy, the wrong border—ignoring and denying a critical system failure on 12/25/09 that foreshadowed an exponentially more massive system failure on 12/25/12 … did we really ever stand a chance? Well hell no, because this was all part of the mockery-laden script for Black Christmas.

CHAPTER EIGHT

CAPTAIN AMERICA

Starring in the lead male role was, naturally, Arizona's own U.S. Senator John "Maverick" McCain, war hero, ranking member of the Senate Armed Services Committee and Barack Obama's opponent in the 2008 Presidential race.

ALL THE RAGE

That Sinking Feeling: How to Survive The Recession
Creating Life: Craig Venter's Big Breakthrough
Stallone Again, Naturally: Rambo Returns
TIME
The Phoenix Can John McCain Keep Rising?
BY JAMES CARNEY

"I am older than dirt and have more scars than Frankenstein," John McCain used to joke about himself on the campaign trail. McCain was well known for his sense of humor, which sometimes went spectacularly awry, as with the following 1998 joke widely deemed unfit to print: "Do you know why Chelsea Clinton is so ugly? Because Janet Reno is her father." Ouch.

McCain was also known for his temper, profanity and fits of shouting, to the extent that long-time colleague Thad Cochran, senior U.S. Senator from Mississippi and a fellow Republican, once remarked about the possibility of a McCain Presidency: "The thought of his being president sends a cold chill down my spine." Not wishing to be misunderstood, Cochran added, "He is erratic. He is hotheaded. He loses his temper and he worries me." Ouch.

In his bid to become the Republican nominee in the 2000 Presidential contest, an anonymous smear campaign was initiated against McCain, delivered by push polls, faxes, e-mails, flyers, and audience plants. The smears claimed that McCain had fathered a black child out of wedlock (the McCains had adopted a daughter from Bangladesh), that his wife Cindy was a drug addict, that he was a homosexual, and that he was a "Manchurian Candidate" who was either a traitor or mentally unstable from his North Vietnam POW days (or both).

Although George W. Bush's campaign strongly denied any involvement with the attacks, McCain would say of the rumor spreaders, "I believe that there is a special place in hell for people like those." (Not to worry, John, the Bushes already have reservations.)

Unbelievable

If you wanted to create a character for a novel to serve as arch nemesis for the pre-ordained President of the World and champion of a state devastated by nuclear terrorist attack, you couldn't invent a character like McCain—he'd be too unbelievable. The man is practically a real-life "Captain America."

McCain had been a ubiquitous presence inside the beltway—and a household name—for decades, but especially so in the years leading up to Black Christmas, from his participation in the historic first Presidential Debate to include an African American—fittingly held in Oxford, Mississippi, where Civil Rights hero James Meredith's bid to enroll at the University of Mississippi resulted in riots and the mobilization of the National Guard—to the endless interviews following the Phoenix attack.

In the wake of the national tragedy, Captain America McCain was everywhere, much like Rudy "America's Mayor" Giuliani after 9/11. But if anybody ever *earned* a role in a MegaRitual, it was McCain.

American Hero

After surviving a major conflagration on the *USS Forestall* that nearly cost him his life, John McCain was subsequently shot down and held as a prisoner of war in North Vietnam for five and a half years, two of those during which he was in solitary confinement. McCain turned down an offer of early release from captivity and suffered years of brutal torture as a result.

McCain's capture and resulting imprisonment began when his A-4E Skyhawk was shot down over Hanoi. During ejection from the aircraft, both of McCain's arms and one of his legs were fractured, and he nearly drowned after parachuting into Truc Bach Lake. The North Vietnamese pulled him ashore, then crushed his shoulder with a rifle butt and bayoneted him before transporting him to the infamous "Hanoi Hilton."

Although he was badly wounded, McCain's captors refused to treat his injuries, beating and interrogating him, only providing medical care after discovering that his father was a top U.S. admiral. McCain spent six weeks in the hospital receiving marginal care: entombed in a chest cast, he lost 50 pounds and his hair turned white.

In December 1967, McCain was transferred to a different camp on the outskirts of Hanoi, where he was placed in a cell with two other Americans who didn't expect him to live out the week. Beginning in August 1968, McCain was subjected to a program of severe torture, forced to endure rope bindings and repeated beatings every two hours—during this same time he was also suffering from dysentery. His extensive injuries eventually led to a suicide attempt, and he later wrote, "I had learned what we all learned over there: Every man has his breaking point. I had reached mine."

McCain and other POWs cheered the 1972 "Christmas Bombing" campaign carried out by the US Seventh Air Force and US Navy Task Force 77 (yes 77), believing it to be an effective means of forcing North Vietnam to end the conflict. McCain was released in 1973.

LISTEN, PAL

After returning to the states and settling in Phoenix, McCain went to work for Hensley & Co., his new father-in-law's large Anheuser-Busch beer distributorship. In 1982, McCain ran as a Republican for an open seat in Arizona's 1st congressional district. A newcomer to the state, McCain was accused of being a carpetbagger. Responding to one voter making such an allegation, McCain replied with what a *Phoenix Gazette* columnist would later describe as "the most devastating response to a potentially troublesome political issue I've ever heard":

> Listen, pal. I spent 22 years in the Navy. My father was in the Navy. My grandfather was in the Navy. We in the military service tend to move a lot. We have to live in all parts of the country, all parts of the world. I wish I could have had the luxury, like you, of growing up and living and spending my entire life in a nice place like the First District of Arizona, but I was doing other things. As a matter of fact, when I think about it now, the place I lived longest in my life was Hanoi.

Ouch.

CHAPTER NINE

THE RADIOLOGICAL TECHNOLOGIST GOVERNOR

COMIC-IN-CHIEF

"We all know what happens in Arizona when you don't have ID—adios, amigos," President Obama joked at the 2010 White House Correspondents' Dinner. Arizona Governor Jan Brewer failed to find the humor in the remark, elsewhere responding, "It's fair to ask whether he intends to be the Commander-in-Chief or the Comic-in-Chief." She continued, "Since the president's joke was so inappropriate, I suppose, if I wanted to join in the comedian game, I could suggest that he should not give up his day job." Then she added the punch line: "Unfortunately, though, he isn't doing very well at that one, either."

Brewer was likewise unamused when President Obama stood at the U.S.-Mexico border and joked that Republican lawmakers who wouldn't support an overhaul of the immigration system until the border was secured weren't going to be satisfied until they got a moat with alligators along the border:

> All the stuff they asked for, we've done. But even though we've answered these concerns, I've got to say I suspect there are still going to be some who are trying to move the goal posts on us one more time.
>
> You know, they said we needed to triple the Border Patrol. Or now they're going to say we need to quadruple the Border Patrol. Or they'll want a higher fence.
>
> Maybe they'll need a moat. Maybe they want alligators in the moat.

"I think he should get back to business being the president of the United States," Brewer responded on *Fox News*.

FORGET WHAT I SAID

Before becoming governor, Brewer was elected as Arizona's Secretary of State, and prior to this she served in both the state's House of Representatives and Senate. As state senator, she'd sought legislation to create an office of lieutenant governor, arguing that holding the office of Secretary of State does not qualify one to become governor, and that the office should be filled by a member of the same party, should a vacancy arise. Despite her earlier objections to the line of succession, however, Republican Brewer was readily sworn in after Janet Napolitano resigned from her position to become Secretary of Homeland Security. (Brewer was elected to a full term in 2010.)

ARIZONA V. UNITED STATES

The "Support Our Law Enforcement and Safe Neighborhoods Act" (introduced as Arizona Senate Bill 1070 and referred to as SB 1070) was at the time of its passage in April 2010 the broadest and strictest anti-illegal immigration measure in recent U.S. history, receiving national and international attention and sparking considerable controversy.

Thousands of people staged protests in Phoenix after Governor Brewer signed the bill into law, with some calling the measure racist, and tens of thousands demonstrated against the law in over 70 U.S. cities on May 1, 2010, International Workers' Day. (Some demonstrators, however, used the opportunity to express their frustration with what they saw as President Obama's lack of action on immigration reform, carrying signs displaying messages such as, "Hey Obama! Don't deport my mama.")

The legislation drew sharp criticism from civil rights groups, who asserted that it would encourage racial profiling. President Obama called the law "misguided" and warned that it could be applied in a "discriminatory fashion." Obama's Justice Department filed suit to stop the law from being implemented, which prompted a countersuit by Brewer, who alleged that the federal government had failed to protect her state from an "invasion" by illegal immigrants. As the *Arizona Republic* reported,

> The countersuit alleged that the federal government has failed to gain "operational control" of the border, is not enforcing federal immigration law, has not adequately reimbursed Arizona for more than $760 million in costs for the state to incarcerate illegal immigrants, and has tried to pre-empt the state from protecting its citizens by filing a lawsuit to halt the enactment of SB 1070.

> The state asked the court to require the federal government to finish building 700 miles of fence along the U.S. border with Mexico, provide enough federal immigration officers in Arizona to respond to local law-enforcement needs, allow Arizona to enforce federal immigration laws, and fully reimburse states for incarcerating criminal illegal immigrants.
>
> Arizona also argued that because the federal government isn't adequately enforcing immigration laws, the state incurs additional costs to provide public services such as education and health care.

The countersuit was later dismissed and the matter eventually wound up at the Supreme Court in *Arizona v. United States*, where in late June 2012 three out of four provisions of the Arizonia law were held to be preempted by federal law.

Sound Strike

In response to SB 1070, boycotts of various types were organized, including a boycott by various musicians called the Sound Strike, which failed to gain much support within the industry. Some musicians even opposed the boycott, with singer Elton John remarking at a concert in Tucson: "We are all very pleased to be playing in Arizona. I have read that some of the artists won't come here. They are #@!%wits! Let's face it: I still play in California, and as a gay man I have no legal rights whatsoever. So what the #@!% is with these people?"

Fingergate

The ongoing feud between Obama and Brewer erupted into full public view as Gov. Brewer "welcomed" Obama upon his arrival at the Phoenix-Mesa Gateway Airport on January 25, 2012. Meeting on the tarmac, the two immediately engaged in an intense conversation, talking over each other, the President abruptly walking off with Brewer in mid-sentence.

During the exchange, Brewer pointed her finger in Obama's face, and photos of the encounter immediately went viral and dominated TV news and the blogosphere for days, with some referring to the incident as "Fingergate."

FINGER-
POINTING

"He was a little disturbed about my book," Brewer told a reporter after the incident. Obama reportedly objected to a description in Brewer's book of a prior meeting at the White House, which at the time Brewer had referred to as "very cordial," whereas in print she had described Obama's behavior during the meeting as patronizing and condescending. "I felt a little bit like I was being lectured to, and I was a little kid in a classroom, if you will, and he was this wise professor and I was this little kid, and this little kid knows what the problem is and I felt minimized to say the least."

KEEP YOUR FINGER

Naturally, the Rev. Jesse Jackson saw fit to weigh in on the matter, calling on Brewer to apologize and "put her hand in her pocket." "Even George Wallace never put his finger in Dr. King's face," Jackson said. "She should not get away with that. She knew the cameras were rolling. She knew what she was doing."

Jackson encouraged people to flood Brewer's office with calls and emails, calling her gesture "the ultimate insult." He gave out an 800-number for Brewer's office and urged those calling to say, "We don't need her finger," and later reiterated, "Tell Ms. Brewer, 'Keep your finger in your pocket.'"

Whether at Jackson's urging or otherwise, Brewer's office did receive more than 12,000 letters and emails from people across the nation, most of them condemning the governor's actions. While many of the writers were upset with the governor, some calling her "trashy" and "tasteless," others offered etiquette tips on welcoming a head of state.

"If you approached me like you did the president I would have taken great comfort by poking you in the nose," wrote Eleanor Tafolla from Cathedral City, Calif. "You might want to work on you (sic) prissy attitude you project. Whoa lady you did not deserve a talk with the president or anyone else for that matter." Chuck Bower of Indiana, meanwhile, congratulated the governor, writing, "The only thing you did wrong was wave the 'wrong' finger in his face."

Brewer herself attempted, unsuccessfully, to downplay the incident, telling Greta Van Susteren on Fox, "When I talk I am animated and I talk with my hands," continuing, "The picture was probably shot when I was moving my hands around."

CAPTAIN AMERICA TO THE RESCUE

Senator John McCain defended Brewer by saying that she had a "legitimate point" to make concerning the president's immigration policies. "He has been to Arizona on many occasions," McCain said. "He's never been to the U.S.-Arizona border where Fast and Furious took place, where we had a Border Patrol agent killed, where we've got drugs are flowing into Arizona, into Phoenix, and around the country.... The cartels have people sitting on mountaintops in Arizona, guiding the drug runners up to Phoenix, which are distributed all over the country. It's a big issue with our governor, and it should be."

McCain's former Vice-Presidential running mate Sarah Palin was a little more blunt in expressing her views on Obama's border policy, saying that he lacked "the cojones" to deal effectively with illegal immigration and border security.

SCORPIONS FOR BREAKFAST

While campaigning for President in 2008, former Arkansas governor Mike Huckabee adopted a lighter tone on the border issue in one of his commercials, saying, "My plan to secure the borders—two words: Chuck Norris." Norris later recalled this in a column he wrote for *World Net Daily*, following up with, "Well, I join millions of others by saying that Arizona's remedy for securing the borders is three words: Gov. Jan Brewer."

Chuck also commented in his column, "I commend Gov. Brewer not only for her courage and tenacity, but for doing what the federal government refuses to do: protect Americans from more border invasion," and shared several of his favorite "Jan Brewer facts," including these two:

> Jan Brewer flosses her teeth with barbed wire from the border.
> Jan Brewer eats scorpions for breakfast and burps up rattlesnakes.

Thanks for sharing, Chuck. As it happens, "Scorpions for Breakfast" is the title of Brewer's 2011 book, the subtitle for which was "My Fight Against Special Interests, Liberal Media, and Cynical Politicos to Secure America's Border." Released in November, the book ranked 276,665th in sales on Amazon.com before the airport showdown, but quickly shot to No. 21 on the "Best Sellers in Books" category and No. 2 on the site's "Movers and Shakers." Asked whether the spat with Obama had been a ploy to sell more books, Brewer told CNN, "Absolutely not, that's absolutely ridiculous."

JAN BREWER
SARAH PALIN
SCORPIONS FOR BREAKFAST

HITLER'S DAUGHTER

Inevitably, Brewer became the focal point of much of the criticism of the SB 1070's opponents, with an unfortunate percentage of the personal attacks directed against her attempting to paint her as a Nazi, to which Brewer responded, "Knowing that my father died fighting the Nazi regime in Germany, that I lost him when I was 11 because of that... and then to have them call me Hitler's daughter. It hurts. It's ugliness beyond anything I've ever experienced."

Very unfortunate indeed, except for the fact that her father died ten years after World War II ended from lung cancer, believed to be the result of his exposure to chemicals while working as a civilian supervisor at the Hawthorne Army Depot in Nevada. But that wouldn't have made as good of a comeback now, would it?

SNUBBED

Governor Brewer also felt insulted at having not been invited to a 2011 White House meeting on immigration reform, even though the guest list didn't include any current governors or members of Congress. "You would have thought one of the governors would have been invited, since we are on the front lines fighting for security there," Brewer observed, a fair comment given that the Rev. Al Sharpton and former Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger had been in attendance. "I wish I would have been invited," Brewer told Fox News. "It was a little bit of a snub, if you will," she continued, later clarifying her feelings with, "not having been invited today was truly a snub. It was a snub."

Perhaps this was one reason Brewer skipped a White House dinner honoring the nation's governors—considered a highlight of the annual National Governors Association conference—saying that she didn't want to participate in a "social" event.

CRYING WOLF

Speaking on illegal-immigration-related crime in 2010, Brewer made the statement that "law enforcement agencies have found bodies in the desert either buried or just lying out there that have been beheaded."

A Fox News team subsequently investigated this claim, and concluded that in the previous two years only one human skull had been found, and it had been determined to be related to animal activity. Medical examiners in six of the southernmost Arizona counties confirmed that they had no records of decapitated bodies.

Brewer later retracted her previous statement, saying, "That was an error, if I said that. I misspoke, but you know, let me be clear, I am concerned about the border region because it continues to be reported in Mexico that there's a lot of violence going on and we don't want that going into Arizona."

ANNIE GET YOUR GUN

The Obama-Brewer feud made for tantalizing political theatre and helped accomplish in effective fashion a key objective of focusing national and international attention on Arizona and Phoenix in the years leading up to the attack. It helped put firmly in place the terrorists-crossed-the-border scenario, and engrained this specific location and the public leaders associated with it firmly in the global public consciousness.

Governor Brewer had been transformed into a national political figure through her famously-antagonistic relationship with President Obama, becoming the "Wicked Witch of the West" for the Left and a modern-day Annie Oakley for the Right, blasting away at the Usurper-in-Chief. (Brewer is after all a member of the National Rifle Association as well as the Arizona Rifle and Pistol Association.)

Not bad for someone who only attended community college (Glendale), where she received a certificate (but not a degree) as a—and this a really nice touch, mind you—radiological technologist.

"I LOVE THIS COUNTRY"

Once when asked what she would have hoped to address during a potential meeting with Obama (that ended up not taking place), Brewer replied, "I thought we probably would've talked about the things that were important to him and important to me, helping one another," continuing, "I know again that he loves this country and I love this country." Don't we all, Jan, don't we all.

CHAPTER TEN

AMERICA'S TOUGHEST SHERIFF

When the one law enforcement official in the entire country willing to investigate the Obama eligibility question—an issue of vital importance to the whole nation, and to the world as well—turns out to be a sheriff from the Old Wild West, who assembles a "Cold Case Posse" to look into the matter at the request of the Tea Party of Surprise, Arizona, if you're not already at least a tad suspicious that there might be a staged "real-life" sitcom unfolding before your eyes, well, then, you might as well have them shut. You just can't make this stuff up—well, actually, *they* can, and did.

While the American citizenry (and ever-bourgeoning non-citizenry) were completely, and by design, absorbed in race politics, and taking themselves so seriously that they couldn't see out of the corners they'd been goaded to paint themselves into, the globalists and their minions were having so much fun out in the Arizona desert mocking everyone that you would think someone would have noticed. But, as the perpetrators suspected, no one did.

ARPAIO V. OBAMA

Depending on your politics, Sheriff Joe Arpaio was either a modern-day Wyatt Earp, representing "America's last line of defense against illegal immigration" as the organization "Americans for Sheriff Joe" sought to brand him, or a real-life Buford T. Justice, the bungling foul-mouthed sheriff in *Smokey and the Bandit* played by Jackie "I'm gonna barbeque yo' ass in molasses" Gleason, engaged in yet another grand publicity stunt (which was simultaneously an attempt to divert attention away from a Justice Department investigation into allegations of racial profiling) by launching an official inquiry into the supposedly long-settled question of President Obama's eligibility.

CERTIFICATE OF LIVE BIRTH
61 10641

As is generally the case in these situations, the truth would likely have lain somewhere in between, except for the fact that the Arpaio-vs.-Obama plotline was a highly-intentional component of an even larger script, one designed to captivate the American public and focus their attention on Phoenix, all part of a sophisticated subconscious psychological preprogramming regimen.

Still, even given that it was all part of the lead-up to a nuclear attack on innocent civilians, one has to admit that, in retrospect, this second ongoing feud between an Arizona official and the President of the United States made for damn fine entertainment.

Elvis has left the police station

Sheriff Joe once told the listening audience during an interview on a Las Vegas radio station that "my best arrest was Elvis Presley," a story he is ever-so-fond of repeating, "but I let him go. I took him down to the police station. I guess he conned me out of giving him a ticket. That was in 1957." When asked by the interviewer if Elvis had comped him some tickets to The King's Vegas act, Arpaio retorted, "No, but he gave 10 Cadillacs to narcotics detectives around the country, but I never got one."

The arrest reportedly happened when Arpaio was a rookie cop with the Las Vegas Police Department, Joe recalling that he stopped Elvis for speeding on his motorcycle, with a beautiful blonde on the back of the bike hanging on to the King.

"Maybe because I was young… I let him talk me out of giving him a ticket," Joe relates. Then, as the story goes, Presley followed Joe down to the station house where he signed autographs and even asked if the police garage could tune up his bike.

Interestingly, there are no photos of the incident (maybe all of the cameras in the police station were broken), and since Elvis didn't get a ticket, there's no paper trail. And although Arpaio's fellow officers supposedly got autographs, Arpaio didn't. When asked about this at one of his book signings, Joe snapped, "Why did I need his? He should've asked me for my autograph." Alrighty, then.

Jailhouse Rock

Fast forward over half a century from 1957 to 2011, and we find Sheriff Joe in what many Arizonans could only wish were another Elvis tall-tale, with Maricopa County's top law enforcement officer—and an Elvis impersonator (actually it was one of the detention officers dressed as Elvis)—singing

Frank Sinatra's "My Way" as a duet to female inmates in "Tent City," at a ceremony celebrating the makeshift jail's 18th year, all the while being pelted with the pink panties that are standard issue at the facility.

In a statement that just about tells you all you need to know, the *Phoenix New Times* observed,

> If you'd told us last week that one day we'd be sweatin' it out in a makeshift, outdoor jail in the Arizona desert as the 79-year-old sheriff of one of the largest counties in the country sang a duet with an Elvis impersonator—as female inmates threw pink panties at him—we honestly wouldn't have been too surprised; this *is* Maricopa County under the Joe Arpaio regime/reality show.

Arpaio naturally took the opportunity to point out that he'd once busted the real Elvis in Las Vegas, and, as the story in the *New Times* continued,

> At first glance, the inmates seemed to be having a blast—several served as dancers who swayed behind "Elvis" as he sang "Jailhouse Rock" and many laughed along as the sheriff joked about the heat. However, when the inmates lined up to get a piece of cake and a cup of ice cream (the ice cream cups expired a year ago, as one deputy nervously pointed out. "That's alright, though" he then said) we had a chance to speak to some of the gals when they weren't under the sheriff's watchful eye.

"We don't want cake and ice cream," one inmate then told the *New Times*, "we want some f*cking air conditioning." *Hunka hunka burnin' love*.

SHUT YOUR MOUTHS

Living conditions were certainly an ongoing concern in Tent City, which Arpaio himself described as a concentration camp, especially in 2011 when the temperature in Phoenix hit 118 °F and Arpaio measured the temperature inside Tent City at 145 °F. Some inmates complained that their shoes were melting from the heat, which didn't seem to matter much to Sheriff Joe, who had told inmates complaining of the heat in 2003 (when the temperature outside was a mere 110 °F), "It's 120 degrees in Iraq and the soldiers are living in tents, have to wear full body armor, and they didn't commit any crimes, so shut your mouths."

In 1997, Amnesty International published a report on Arpaio's jails which found that Tent City is not an "adequate or humane alternative to housing inmates in suitable … jail facilities," and in 2008, Federal Judge Neil Wake ruled in a lawsuit brought by the ACLU that the Maricopa County jails violated the constitutional rights of inmates in medical and other care-related issues. The suit alleged that "Arpaio routinely abused pre-trial detainees [housed in Tent City] at Maricopa County Jail by feeding them moldy bread, rotten fruit and other contaminated food, housing them in cells so hot as to endanger their health, denying them care for serious medical and mental health needs and keeping them packed as tightly as sardines in holding cells for days at a time during intake."

PINK UNDERWEAR, GREEN BOLOGNA, PLAYBOY AND NEWT

Pink underwear was standard issue not only for women in Sheriff Joe's jails, but for men, as well. The Maricopa County Sheriff's website cited the pink undies as "world-famous," and Arpaio sold customized pink boxers (with the sheriff's logo and "Go Joe" printed on them) as a fund-raiser for his Sheriff's Posse Association.

Limiting meals to twice daily, Arpaio served inmates surplus food (including green bologna)—with meals costing just 40 cents, a fact of which he was most proud—for which each person incarcerated was charged a dollar a day. "It costs more to feed our police dogs than our inmates," Arpaio boasted, continuing, "The dogs never committed a crime, and they're working for a living."

He cut out smoking, and when he eliminated coffee, inmates complained loudly, to which he responded, "This isn't the Ritz-Carlton. If you don't like it, don't come back." He also banned possession of sexually-explicit material, including *Playboy* magazine, and limited prisoners' viewing to G-rated movies and a select few television channels, including Disney and the Weather Channel. Why the Weather Channel? "I think my chain gang deserves to know how hot it is when they hit the streets."

Arpaio took away weight-lifting equipment and reinstituted chain gangs for men. In 1996, he created the nation's first chain gang for women, saying "I don't believe in discrimination in my jail system. Crime knows no gender and neither should punishment."

In February 2007, the sheriff instituted an in-house radio station called KJOE, which broadcast classical music, opera, Frank Sinatra hits, patriotic music and educational programming. Speaking of which, in 1995 Arpaio purchased then-Republican House speaker Newt Gingrich's 10-part, $150 video lecture series to show to inmates through the prison video system. When asked whether he'd also be providing a lecture series done by a Democrat, he replied in the negative, saying, "For one thing, I don't know of any," then added, "and some people might say these guys already got enough of those ideas."

Round up the Insane Clown Posse

In 2010, Arpaio created an armed "illegal immigration operations posse" to assist his deputies with enforcing immigration law. "Law enforcement budgets are being cut and agencies are losing personnel and yet the battle to stop illegal immigration must continue," Arpaio said in a news release. "Arizona is the busiest port of entry for people being smuggled in from Mexico, Latin and South America. So asking for the public's help in this endeavor makes sense."

Commenting further on the posse, Arpaio said, "People from all walks of life have contacted my office saying they want to help me in this fight in some way." He continued, "This is how they can do that—by being members of a volunteer posse with the specific aim of fighting illegal immigration and lending their particular expertise to the fight." Those sworn in as members of the posse by the sheriff included pilots, attorneys, former law enforcement or military officers, truckers, business owners, computer programmers, financial advisers and real estate experts. "Let's face it," Arpaio said, "my deputies are outnumbered so the more volunteers we can get trained and out on the streets to fight illegal immigration, the better off we will be to fight it."

Interestingly, those joining the posse included one Wyatt Earp, a local resident whose uncle, so it was claimed, was the famous lawman of the same name, and a former Chicago police official who had retired to Arizona, named, no kidding, Dick Tracy.

Also sworn in as illegal immigration fighters and part of the posse: martial-arts master, movie star, and former sheriff's deputy Steven Seagal; body-builder and actor Peter Lupus, best remembered for the role of strongman Willy Armitage on the 1960s *Mission: Impossible* television series; and, fellow body-builder, actor and deputy with the Los Angeles Sheriff's Office, Lou Ferrigno, best known for portraying Bruce Banner's green muscled-up alter ego in *The Incredible Hulk* CBS television series … Sheriff Joe's own personal Insane Clown Posse (a hip-hop act from Detroit, also referred to by the acronym I.C.P).

OH, JESUS

In late 2008 and early 2009, Arpaio was featured in the three-episode Fox Reality Channel series, *Smile…You're Under Arrest!*, in which individuals with outstanding warrants were tricked into presenting themselves to authorities.

Apparently this must've only whetted Sheriff Joe's appetite for reality TV, because in 2011 he found a way to get himself back on the air in an incident best described by Pete Kotz of the *True Crime Report* (truecrimereport.com). In "Joe Arpaio, Steven Seagal Take Down Cockfighting Ring…With a Tank?," Kotz writes,

> Maricopa County, Arizona Sheriff Joe Arpaio fancies himself as "America's toughest sheriff." But he may have outdone himself this time by pulling off a rare politician's trifecta of utter shamelessness, self-aggrandizement, and wholesale government waste...
>
> When we last left this one-man lawsuit machine, he was busy running up huge settlements against his department, which covers greater Phoenix. He also has a history of using his department to spy on political enemies. But this time Arpaio went for the gold.
>
> It seems alleged actor Steven Seagal was in town filming for his alleged-reality TV show, *Lawman*. And since Arpaio is to television cameras what shit is to stink, the good sheriff gladly offered to help him out with some dramatic crime-fighting footage.
>
> The problem was that when you're more showman than working man, you're not very good at catching actual bad guys. So Arpaio was a little short on quality criminals to film getting bagged. That's when these two dopes came up with the comical idea to raid Jesus Llovera's cockfighting ring.
>
> Llovera raised chickens at his home. He also has a previous misdemeanor bust for attending a cockfighting match. But there's no record supporting anything that would imply he was armed or dangerous.
>
> Nonetheless, when the sheriff's department raided his house, they arrived with dozens of SWAT team members, a bomb robot, armored vehicles and, yes, even a tank [actually it's a self-propelled howitzer, not that that's any less absurd]. Deputies blew out the windows of the home and used the tank—commanded by Seagal—to smash down a wall.
>
> When it was all over, they found 115 chickens—which they mysteriously euthanized on the spot. They also found Llovera, unarmed.
>
> The sheriff's department claims it had info that Llovera was armed. It just won't say what that info is. But others are suspecting that Arpaio merely staged the entire event to grab some beloved air time on Seagal's

> cable show. After all, this kind of manpower is usually only used against terrorists and cartel kingpins.
>
> The operation is estimated to have cost tens of thousands of dollars. But in the end, all they have to show for it is lowly Jesus Llovera, who was pinched on suspicion of cockfighting.

Oh, Jesus.

DISNEYLAND ON THE PUBLIC DIME

An analysis by the Maricopa County Office of Management and Budget completed in 2011 found that Arpaio had misspent almost $100 million in taxpayer dollars over the previous five years. Among the findings was that Arpaio had used a detention fund to pay for investigations of political rivals, and the analysis also showed a number of inappropriate spending items, including a trip to Alaska where deputies stayed at a fishing resort, and, of course, the obligatory tax-payer funded excursions to Disneyland.

Separate investigations by the *Arizona Republic* uncovered widespread abuse of public funds and county policies by Arpaio's office, including high-ranking employees routinely charging expensive meals and stays at luxury hotels on their county credit cards.

MAKING HISTORY

In June 2008, the Civil Rights Division of the U.S. Department of Justice began an investigation of Arpaio's office amid accusations of discrimination and unconstitutional searches and seizures, in response to which Arpaio subsequently held a press conference to announce that he would not cooperate with the investigation. DoJ then filed suit against him, with a spokeswoman stating that Arpaio's refusal to cooperate was unprecedented and that this was the first time DoJ had been forced to sue an agency to compel access to documents and facilities.

In December of 2011, the Justice Department released the findings of a 3-year investigation of Arpaio's office amid complaints of racial profiling and a culture of bias at the top level of the agency. DoJ accused Arpaio of engaging in "unconstitutional policing" by unfairly targeting Latinos for detention and arrest, and retaliating against critics. The report concluded that Arpaio oversaw the worst pattern of racial profiling in U.S. history. Based on the report, the U.S. Department of Homeland Security revoked the Maricopa County Sheriff's Office's (MCSO) federal authority to identify and detain illegal immigrants.

In a separate action that same December, a U.S. District Court Judge enjoined Arpaio and the MCSO from "detaining any person based only on knowledge or reasonable belief…that the person is unlawfully present within the United States," thereby halting anti-illegal immigration enforcement by MCSO as it was then practiced.

Reign of Terror

In connection with an FBI inquiry, a federal grand jury investigated Arpaio's office on criminal abuse-of-power allegations, and in February 2010 Judge John Leonardo found that Arpaio had indeed "misused the power of his office." The Mayor of Phoenix, himself a target of Arpaio's alleged politically-motivated legal actions, called the sheriff's long list of questionable prosecutions "a reign of terror," with other of Arpaio's targets including: his 2004 and 2008 opponent for the office of Sheriff of Maricopa County; the Arizona Attorney General and Maricopa County Manager; the Maricopa County Board of Supervisors; the current and former Maricopa Superior Court Presiding Judge; an attorney for the ACLU; the former Maricopa County School Superintendent; and the editor of the *Phoenix New Times*.

Arpaio's partner-in-crime in these matters, Andrew Thomas, Maricopa County's top prosecutor, has since been disbarred, and criminal investigations are ongoing.

Protecting America

News of a corrupt sheriff is about as surprising as stories of an unscrupulous attorney; a corrupt sheriff under investigation by the Department of Justice for charges relating to immigration enforcement who turns around and launches an investigation of the President of the United States for possibly being, well, an illegal immigrant (or constitutionally ineligible to hold the presidency at the very least), now that's a different story altogether.

When Arpaio wasn't singing Sinatra, or serving as a judge for "Maricopa County Jail Idol," or smashing through the gates of chicken farms with Steven Seagal, or having dinner with Motor City Madman Ted Nugent, or filing some bogus legal action against one of his perceived rivals, one would have hoped that he'd have been up to the business of protecting the good citizens of Maricopa County.

Apparently, however, Arpaio felt that his law enforcement duties *by extension* included the safeguarding of the entire American public from illegal immigrants, and as such, the sheriff saw fit to take action regarding what an ever-growing number of concerned citizens in Arizona and all across the country viewed as President Obama's failure to provide proof of citizenship (natural born or otherwise), and, by extension, his ineligibility to hold the highest office in the land.

BREAD AND CIRCUS

Arpaio launched himself smack into the middle of a side-show tent already filled with too many quirky characters to list, although we really must acknowledge on-again off-again ringleader Donald Trump, who for quite some time seemed no more able to make up his mind whether Obama was eligible/ineligible than whether or not he was going to run for President himself.

For those following the story closely during those years, it certainly seemed probable that, if not for the birther issue in general and Sheriff Joe in particular—a saga complete with suspicion-generating birth certificates and oddly-missing records—internet news site *World Net Daily* (WND) would have gone slap out of business, as the birther nerve-center featured stories on one related topic after another in a never-ending torrent of coverage. (WND's CEO Joseph Farah even went so far as to encourage people to donate to Arpaio's investigation of Obama.)

There was so much fodder left lying around (Obama's long form birth certificate, for example, released in electronic format supposedly contained all-too-obvious evidence of digital fakery). WND and other conservative alternative media outlets grew fat on the bounty, and provided the faithful with nigh-daily evidences of a usurper in their midst. "Patriots" everywhere were washed in the digital ink of conspiratorial enlightenment and nourished by the truth of subversives revealed.

However, it is all simply scripted entertainment: polarizing the masses.

SHOWDOWN AT THE AZ CORRAL

As one might have expected, Arpaio's Cold Case Posse turned up evidence of forgery, among a number of other issues which in their assessment warranted further investigation, and the only thing less surprising than these results was the mainstream media's complete blackout of the findings—yet more evidence of a vast left-wing elitist conspiracy to protect the Usurper-in-Chief, many would claim.

And thus the showdown was set, the good-ole-boy racist sheriff vs. the minority President, with the fact of Arpaio being the first law enforcement official in the entire county willing to take on the commander-in-chief on this matter qualifying as genuinely newsworthy in itself. But regardless of whose side you came down on, if you were fixated on the fight you missed the bigger picture—the set, the props, the lighting and the cameras, all revealing that it was just one big Wild West extravaganza—and if by now you're not thoroughly familiar with the employment of the profoundly absurd as a cover for clandestine operations, hell, just quit reading, because we can't wait for you to catch up.

Nickel-Bag Joe

A former U.S. Army military policeman, Arpaio served as a cop in D.C. and Vegas before being appointed as a special agent with the Federal Bureau of Narcotics (precursor to the DEA). During his 25-year tenure with the DEA, Arpaio was stationed in Argentina, Turkey and Mexico, advancing through the ranks to become head of DEA's Arizona branch.

While working for the DEA, Arpaio earned the nickname "Nickel Bag" for the small-time drug busts he became well-known for, which, for those with inquiring minds, raises the question of how an agent with such a reputation got to be head of operations for the state of Arizona in the first place.

As we quietly contemplate this conundrum, we spot them, lurking in the shadows, in the dark recesses of the internet—unsubstantiated allegations, rumors that Nickel-Bag Joe was in reality a CIA asset, assigned to the DEA and ushered upward to top management to help insure non-interference with the Company's drug-running operations in Arizona.

The blurry picture becomes a little clearer—Sheriff Joe, former DEA, perhaps not-so-former CIA, a bumbling dupe that could be counted on, as always, to do the bidding of his handlers; or, perhaps, a shrewd operator hiding behind a façade of illicit activity and enshrouded in a veil of corruption (which somehow never seemed to catch up to him), designed to shield covert activities—maybe a combination of the two.

A Walking Smokescreen

Recall from our previous 9/11 investigations that some of the hijackers trained in flight schools in Sarasota ("Paradise") and Venice, Florida (referred to by some as "Terrorland" due to the extent of illicit CIA activity in the state), with the Venice Municipal Airport having well-known ties to CIA drug-running operations. Well, what do we find in Phoenix ("Paradise Valley")—the training-ground of Hani "The Flying Dunce of Flight 77" Hanjour— but CIA drug-running activity yet again (Google "Greycas and CIA" if you want to dig into the subject further).

Sarasota, the location of High-Priest Bush's Black Mass in Paradise, and Phoenix, the New Ground Zero, both at the heart of their respective MegaRituals, both locations where 9/11 hijackers trained, both connected to CIA drug-running operations ... aside from being yet another intentional linkage between these occult rituals, and aside from being a tip-of-the-hat to areas historically connected with illicit Company operations, is there something more going on?

The 9/11 hijackers trained at facilities in areas where the CIA had an established presence, and the two Great American MegaRituals intimately involved these same locations. This drugs-terrorists nexus created a murky black hole where anything and everything could get sucked into the void, each serving to provide cover for the other. And all of this provided perfect cover for the orchestrators of 9/11 and Black Christmas as they

Top Ten Reasons *Not* to Vote for Arpaio

In stark contrast to "Americans for Sheriff Joe"—of which, by the way, John Philip Sousa IV, the great grandson of "America's March King," was chairman—stood the "Overthrow Arpaio" campaign, started by a former lieutenant in the sheriff's office who was banished to the graveyard shift in an empty office in the basement of the main jail after criticizing Sheriff Joe.

This group polled citizens and employees of the Maricopa County Sheriff's Office and compiled a list of Top Ten Reasons NOT to vote for Arpaio, which included rather obvious—but serious nonetheless—allegations such as, "With Arpaio, real law enforcement takes a backseat to publicity stunts," and, "Millions of tax dollars have been wasted on lawsuits."

Each of the points was backed up with further details, and as support for the contention that Arpaio was "responsible for a critical and dangerous shortage of personnel in both the jails and patrol," the following evidence was given:

> …Arpaio has created a critical and dangerous shortage of deputy sheriffs needed to perform fundamental law enforcement services in the unincorporated areas of the County. Deputies that could be assigned to patrol, are assigned instead as personal bodyguards for Sheriff Arpaio.
>
> Detention officers, desperately needed in the jails, are assigned to the labor-intensive, publicity-producing chain gangs in order to get Arpaio on more TV news programs. Projects that bolster Arpaio's ego, satisfy his need for publicity, and insure his personal safety are all fully staffed. Unfortunately, at the same time on the streets and in the jails of the county, lives are placed at risk by Arpaio's self-serving abuse of authority.
>
> Also Sheriff Arpaio has the largest executive staff of any police agency in Arizona and perhaps the United States. By comparison, the Los Angeles County Sheriff's Department, the nation's largest, has half as many on the executive staff. The millions spend on excess executive positions should be used to hire employees that could be assigned where really needed.

The list also included the fact that "Hundreds of current sheriff's office employees, represented by a number of employee organizations"—reportedly including the State of Arizona Fraternal Order of Police, Fraternal Order of Police Lodge Five, Maricopa County Deputies Association and others—"have expressed a vote of no confidence in Sheriff Arpaio."

Considering the source, still kinda makes you wonder how he got re-elected four times.

toyed with the nation's national security apparatus like a child with Legos on Christmas morning.

Our infamous Sheriff Joe was, then, not just a circus act, not just part of the entertainment, but, more importantly, part of the smokescreen—and yet another ingenious element in the sophisticated psychological-conditioning campaign preceding the attack in Phoenix.

No Country for Old Men

In the Cohen brothers' screen adaptation of the Cormac McCarthy novel, *No Country for Old Men* (the title of which was taken from the opening line of William Butler Yeats' poem "Sailing to Byzantium"), Sheriff Ed Tom Bells, played by Tommy Lee Jones, and his deputy come upon a gruesome scene in the desert, with bloated bodies scattered around in the hot sand. "It's a mess, ain't it, sheriff?" remarks the deputy, to which Bells coolly replies, "If it ain't, it'll do till the mess gets here" … not, in fact, a bad way to characterize Arpaio's tenure in the lead-up to Black Christmas.

* * *

Let's get ready to rumble! In tonight's bout, we have, in corner one, the tag team of Joe "America's Toughest Sheriff" Arpaio and Jan "The Wicked Witch of the West" Brewer, versus, in corner two, the deadly duo of Barack "No-Denyin'-I'm-Hawaiian" Obama and Janet "The Man-Caused Disaster" Napolitano, refereed by John "I am older than dirt and have more scars than Frankenstein" McCain…

SECTION THREE

THE RITUAL PROPER

CHAPTER ELEVEN

ALEISTER CROWLEY'S LIBER 44: THE MASS OF THE PHOENIX

The phoenix is a mythical sacred firebird found in the mythologies of numerous cultures around the world, including the Egyptians and Greeks. Depending on the myth, the lifecycle of the phoenix varies from 500 to 1,000 years, at the end of which it is fully consumed in a self-generated conflagration (sometimes the bird is said to build a nest, a funeral pyre of sorts, other times not). Up from the ashes, so the cliché goes, a new phoenix arises.

The Phoenix

Although physical descriptions of the creature vary considerably, writing in his book, *The Phoenix: An Illustrated Review of Occultism and Philosophy*, author and mystic Manly P. Hall describes it thus:

> Among the ancients a fabulous bird called the Phoenix is described by early writers ... in size and shape it resembles the eagle, but with certain differences. The body of the Phoenix is one covered with glossy purple feathers, and the plumes in its tail are alternately blue and red. The head of the bird is light in color, and about its neck is a circlet of golden plumage. At the back of its back the Phoenix has a crest of feathers of brilliant color.[1]

THE BENNU, RA AND MURDER

The Bennu was the Egyptian version of the phoenix, thought to be inspired by the now-extinct Bennu heron. Associated with the rising of the Nile, resurrection and the sun, the Bennu represented creation and renewal and was connected with the Egyptian calendar.

Sic igitur exemplum nob quia auctor

The titles of the Bennu included "Ascending One" and "Lord of Jubilees" (Arizona's 100th anniversary in 2012!), and the name itself is related to the verb "weben," meaning "to rise brilliantly," or "to shine." According to legend, it was the Bennu bird's cry at the creation of the world that marked the beginning of time, and the Bennu helped oversee the regulation of time and its divisions: hours, days and nights, weeks and years (more on the relationship between time and the phoenix in Chapter 22).[2]

Known from the *Book of the Dead* and other Egyptian texts as one of the sacred symbols of worship at Heliopolis, the "City of the Sun," the Bennu was closely associated with the rising sun and was considered the soul of the Egyptian sun-god Ra. (In some variations of the myth, the reborn phoenix embalms the ashes of its former self in an egg and deposits it in Heliopolis.) Due to its association with rebirth, the Bennu was also believed to be a manifestation of the resurrected Osiris and the bird was often depicted perched in his sacred willow tree.

The Greeks envisioned the bird more as a peacock or eagle—both Hesiod and Herodotus referenced the mythical bird in their writings—and related it to their word for the color purple-red/crimson, *phoinix,* also meaning palm tree, or its fruit, dates. Other related Greek words include *phoinós,* "blood-red," and, interestingly, *phonós,* "murder."

A SYMBOL OF RESURRECTION AND INITIATION

The phoenix became popular in early Christian art and literature as a symbol of Christ, representing resurrection and the life ever-lasting. Christians, however, were not the first or only group to adopt the symbol by any stretch of the imagination: the ancient Mystery Schools also used the phoenix as a symbol of immortality.

Again, writing his book, *The Phoenix,* Manly P. Hall informs us,

> The Phoenix is generally regarded as representing immortality and resurrection ... The Phoenix is one sign of the secret orders of the ancient world and of the initiate of those orders, for it was common to refer to one who had been accepted into the temples as a man twice-born, or reborn. Wisdom confers a new life, and those who become wise are born again.[3]

A Symbol of Lucifer

During a 1988 interview with Barbara Walters while on the presidential campaign trail, George H.W. Bush seemed caught off guard when asked by Walters if he was a Christian. After fumbling around for a moment, he answered shrewdly, "If by being a Christian, you ask if I am 'born again', then yes, I am a Christian."

Like all Bonesmen, Bush *had been* reborn during a Satanic initiation rite at Yale, emerging from a coffin after a perverse ritual (during which they reportedly pleasure themselves while recounting their sexual exploits, among other things) in a blasphemous mockery of the Resurrection which signifies the initiates' rising to new life in Lucifer.

Satanists often utilize well-known Christian symbols, inverting their meaning to suit their own dark purposes. The idea of the phoenix as a symbol of Lucifer is not new, and many occultists see the firebird as appropriately representing the fallen angel who was cast down in flames, and who, they believe, will one day rise triumphant (or, perhaps that day was in fact Black Christmas).

Crowley's "Mass of the Phoenix"

The "Official Instructions of the A:.A:." give a basic description of the Mass of the Phoenix, referring to it as "an instruction in a simple and exoteric form of Eucharist" and "A Ritual of the Law." This indicates that the ritual is considered a true Mass by Thelemites in that it celebrates the Blessed Sacrament: this is not, however, your father's (or your Father's) Eucharist.

Liber Aleph
Wisdom or Folly

In *Liber Aleph*, Crowley puts the Mass of the Phoenix on par with the Gnostic Mass, stating, "Neglect not the daily Miracle of the Mass, either by the Rite of the Gnostic Catholic Church, or that of the Phoenix"—the "Miracle of the Mass" being the process of transubstantiation, in which the bread and wine are held to be transmuted into the literal flesh and blood of Christ/the god of your choice.

Without going into too much unpleasant detail, it can be said that certain ingredients used in the making of the ritual's wafer, or "Cake of Light," are nontraditional to say

LIBER XLIV
THE MASS OF THE PHOENIX

The Magician, his breast bare, stands before an altar on which are his Burin, Bell, Thurible, and two of the Cakes of Light. In the Sign of the Enterer he reaches West across the Altar, and cries:

Hail Ra, that goest in thy bark
Into the caverns of the Dark!

He gives the sign of Silence, and takes the Bell, and Fire, in his hands.

East of the Altar see me stand
With light and musick in my hand!

He strikes Eleven times upon the Bell 333 - 55555 - 333 and places the Fire in the Thurible.

I strike the Bell: I light the Flame;
I utter the mysterious Name.
ABRAHADABRA

He strikes eleven times upon the Bell.

Now I begin to pray: Thou Child,
Holy Thy name and undefiled!
Thy reign is come; Thy will is done.
Here is the Bread; here is the Blood.
Bring me through midnight to the Sun!
Save me from Evil and from Good!
That Thy one crown of all the Ten
Even now and here be mine. AMEN.

He puts the first Cake on the Fire of the Thurible.

I burn the Incense-cake, proclaim
These adorations of Thy name.

He makes them as in Liber Legis, and strikes again Eleven times upon the Bell. With the Burin he then makes upon his breast the proper sign.

Behold this bleeding breast of mine
Gashed with the sacramental sign!

He puts the second Cake to the wound.

I stanch the Blood; the wafer soaks
It up, and the high priest invokes!

He eats the second Cake.

This Bread I eat. This Oath I swear
As I enflame myself with prayer:
"There is no grace: there is no guilt:
This is the Law: DO WHAT THOU WILT!"

He strikes Eleven times upon the Bell, and cries

ABRAHADABRA.
I entered in with woe; with mirth
I now go forth, and with thanksgiving,
To do my pleasure on the earth
Among the legions of the living.

He goeth forth.

the least: blood, preferably menstrual, and semen. As if that weren't bad enough in itself, Crowley, writing of the ritual in *Magick in Theory and Practice*, includes references to "human sacrifice," and in Chapter 3 of *The Book of the Law*, in the recipe for the Cakes of Light, he refers to "the fresh blood of a child," although supposedly these are cryptic-symbolic references to bodily fluids … go figure. (Frankly, it's not worth taking the time to figure out for certain what in the hell is being discussed.)

UNHOLY COMMUNION

One can also find instruction on performing the Mass of the Phoenix as a sex magick ritual, which essentially involves the initiate taking steps to add a fresh portion of an aforementioned ingredient to the wafer while visualizing "the proper sign" (many Thelemites prefer the Mark of the Beast, the sigils of the Sun and Moon conjoined).

The bottom line is that the Mass of the Phoenix is designed as a perverse counterpart to the Lord's Supper, one of the most holy sacraments in all of Christendom, and the sick bastards that orchestrated Black Christmas took enormous pleasure in invoking The Mass of the Phoenix through their actions *in Phoenix* on the traditional day of the celebration of the Savior's birth—in *yet another* repugnant tribute to the Great Beast, Aleister Crowley. Oh, but it ain't over yet.[4]

FORTY-FOUR

The abominable Mass of the Phoenix was first printed as Chapter 44 in Crowley's *The Book of Lies*, and later as *Liber 44*. In the ritual, a bell is rung a total of 44 times, 44 also being the gematria value of the Hebrew word for blood, *dam* (*damn!*)—with blood playing, as we're all-too-aware, a major role in the mass, as well as, unfortunately, in Black Christmas.

Liber 44 invokes Ra, the Sun God—with the sun beginning its annual upward journey on December 25th—and wouldn't you know, 44 is also the sacred number of Horus, son of the aforementioned Osiris, the green-skinned Egyptian god of the Underworld. Furthermore, in what might to the uninitiated seem an unrelated coincidence, Barack Obama is the 44th President of the United States, but you'll have to wait until Chapter 16 to learn more about the Illuminati's Sun King.

Make no mistake, however, in the occult worldview, the spilling of blood is absolutely necessary for regeneration and renewal, and the New World Order was born out of the blood, and ashes, of Phoenix—a mass sacrifice to the one true bringer of illumination, Lucifer.

44 MONROE

Naturally, the scripters of Black Christmas sought to tie the number 44 to the MegaRitual in a tangible way, which they were readily able to accom-

A Lament for Black Christmas

"Forty-Four" or "44 Blues" is a blues standard popularized by Roosevelt Sykes in the 1930s. His lyrics played on the differing use of the phrase forty-four: a .44 caliber revolver, train number 44 and, presumably, prison cell number 44:

Well I walked all night long, with my .44 in my hand (2x)
Now I was looking for my woman, found her with another man

Well I wore my .44 so long, Lord it made my shoulder sore (2x)
After I do what I want to, ain't gonna wear my .44 no more

Now I heard my baby say, she heard that 44 whistle blow (2x)
Lord it sounds like, ain't gonna blow that whistle no more

Now I got a little cabin, and it's number 44 (2x)
Lord I wake up every morning, the wolf be scratching on my door.

Speaking of the Wolf, in 1954 Howlin' Wolf recorded his version of the song in the Chicago blues style, with Willie Dixon on the bass and an insistent "martial shuffle on the snare drum plus a bass drum that slammed down like an industrial punch-press." Wolf retained Sykes' handgun reference and added, "Well I'm so mad this morning, I don't know where in the world to go." With Wolf's usual gruff and overpowering vocals, the overall effect was menacing.

Given the repeated use of the number forty-four in this MegaRitual, 44 Blues might not be a bad lament for Black Christmas, particularly considering that "Blue Christmas," most notably performed by Elvis Presley, is out of the running. (In the interests of sensitivity and good taste, we should also rule out the Insane Clown Posse's tunes "Red Christmas," "Santa Claus is a Fat Bitch," "Santa Killers," and "Murder City Christmas.")

45 RPM
ELVIS
BLUE CHRISTMAS

plish in an ingenious manner that yielded even further insider-baseball jollies.

Located at the northeast corner of Monroe Street and First Avenue in downtown Phoenix, and well within the primary blast zone, 44 Monroe was Arizona's tallest residential structure. Although the building was not toppled by the blast, and didn't collapse from the resulting fires (hmmm, must've been the lack of jet fuel), it naturally sustained massive damage.

Reporters and commentators far and wide used the building's hulking skeleton as a visual reference-point in the alien post-blast downtown landscape, with the phrase "44 Monroe" likely being uttered nearly as many times as "Route 93," although who knows for sure.

What really gave the occultist insiders the giggleshits, however, was the fact that 44 Monroe included a direct reference to President James Monroe, after whom the street was named, Monroe of course being one of a number of Masons to hold the highest office in the land. (If you're really up on your 9/11 fruitcake trivia, you'll recall from *Most Dangerous* that President James Garfield was a fellow Mason, and submitted a proof for the 47th Problem of Euclid that utilized a trapezoid…oh, go look it up.)

No More Mr. Nice Guy

Pioneer shock rocker (which has nothing to do with the shocker, thankfully) Alice Cooper—whose four-decade-plus career has included stage shows featuring guillotines, electric chairs, boa constrictors and bloodied baby dolls—grew up in Phoenix, AZ, where, interestingly enough, he was a member of the Order of DeMolay.

Also known as DeMolay International, the Order derives its name from Jacques DeMolay, the last Grand Master of the Knights Templar. Founded by a Freemason and modeled after Freemasonry, it is an international organization for young men ages 12-21, and the DeMolay Hall of Fame includes such luminaries as former President Bill Clinton, Walt Disney and John Wayne.

Cooper is regarded as being the first artist to introduce horror imagery to rock'n'roll and is credited with helping shape the sound and look of heavy metal. Cooper's 1976 album "Alice Cooper Goes to Hell" featured the classic tune, "I'm Always Chasing Rainbows," also sung by *Wizard of Oz* star Judy Garland in the 1941 movie *Ziegfeld Girl*.

Although the majority of his career was marked by substance abuse and debauchery, in his later years Cooper became a born-again Christian, holding an annual charity event in Phoenix for the Solid Rock Foundation called "Christmas Pudding."

Yet, following Black Christmas, some began to wonder if Cooper's conversion had actually been of the Christian variety, in particular because of the lyrics from one of the songs on his 2000 album entitled *Brutal Planet*. In his song of the same name, the final lines are as follows:

Down here is where we hung ya
Upon an ugly cross
Over there we filled the ovens
Right here the holocaust.

"Right here the holocaust"— got anything you'd care to tell us, Alice?

Benediction

A city named after a mythical creature used as a symbol for Christ, maliciously destroyed on Christmas Day, and ceremonially connected through a Crowleyian ritual with the Hebrew word for blood, *dam*—one can't help but feel that the entire affair was, to use the British vernacular, a bloody damn mess (wait, is that redundant?).

We close this chapter with the immortal words of Clark W. Griswold, played by Chevy Chase, from National Lampoon's holiday classic *Christmas Vacation*, who, in speaking of his yuletide wishes regarding his employer, eloquently expresses sentiments we might wish to direct at the globalist nutjobs responsible for Black Christmas:

> Hey! If any of you are looking for any last-minute gift ideas for me, I have one. I'd like Frank Shirley, my boss, right here tonight. I want him brought from his happy holiday slumber over there on Melody Lane

> with all the other rich people and I want him brought right here, with a big ribbon on his head, and I want to look him straight in the eye and I want to tell him what a cheap, lying, no-good, rotten, floor-fleshing, low-life, snake-licking, dirt-eating, inbred, overstuffed, ignorant, blood-sucking, dog-kissing, brainless, dickless, hopeless, heartless, fat-ass, bug-eyed, stiff-legged, spotty-lipped, worm-headed sack of monkey shit he is! Hallelujah! Holy shit! Where's the Tylenol?

Where's the Tylenol, Jesus, where is the thorazine?

BENEDICTION POSTSCRIPT

From Paul Weston's *Aleister Crowley and the Aeon of Horus*:

> [Robert Anton] Wilson stated that his entry to Chapel Perilous began when he was reading Crowley's *The Book of Lies* in 1971. It is a work full of codes and riddles, Zen-type epigrams, poetry, jokes and magick. Crowley had stated that somewhere within it was concealed the inner secret of Freemasonry and Illuminism.… Wilson was inspired to make major use of the symbol of the eye in the triangle, treating it as a motif of the secret brotherhood. He knew that its portrayal on the dollar bill had been linked to Freemasonry. Gradually he came to know that it connects with the Egyptian Eye of Horus design and was used on ceremonial headgear by Crowley. The Beast referred to his work as 'scientific illuminism', and occasionally to himself as 'Epopt of the Illuminati.'… On July 22nd Wilson performed a customised Crowleyan ceremony involving 'Tantric sex-trance'. The next morning he 'awoke with an urgent message from Dreamland'. It stated that 'Sirius is very important'. Looking for relevant information in his occult books, he struck gold in Kenneth Grant's *The Magical Revival*. Wilson was impressed to read that:
>
> > 'Phoenix was Crowley's secret name in the Ordo Templi Orientis ... The Phoenix was also an ancient constellation in which Sothis, or Sirius, was the chief star.' 'Crowley identified the heart of his magical current with one particular Star. In Occult Tradition, this is "the sun behind the sun," the Hidden God, the vast star Sirius.'

CHAPTER TWELVE

THE 2012 GALACTIC MEGARITUAL

Black Christmas quite obviously involved Phoenix, AZ, but if you think that this city was the sole focus of the megaritual, well, you'd only be off by about 26,000 light years … literally. (Yes, the megaritual also involved Jerusalem and the Vatican; that's addressed in the next chapter.)

THE MAYAN NON-APOCALYPSE

Despite the decade-long best efforts of the History Channel (and too many authors to count) to whip the entire planet into a frenzy, December 21st, 2012, the long-awaited and much-hyped date of the supposed Mayan apocalypse was—apart from the hundreds of hyperventilating New Agers sitting atop stone temples in South America awaiting the return of Quetzalcoatl—as calm a day as the world had seen in the past two millennia.

This was not surprising, given that mainstream Mayan scholars had *never* supported the notion that the culture had viewed this date as anything other than the end of one block of time and the beginning of another. The Mayans created a sophisticated system of interlocking calendars marking various increments of time, and December 21st, 2012 merely corresponded to the end of "13 baktun," a baktun being a period of 144,000 days.

GALACTIC ALIGNMENT

The Mayans were also highly competent astronomers, and had been able to calculate the dates of solstices far into the future, including the date for winter solstice in the year 2012.

Various researchers, including John Major Jenkins, contended that the Mayans were further aware of an astronomical alignment occurring during this same general timeframe, which Jenkins called "galactic alignment." This term simply refers to the sun's alignment (as viewed from earth, obviously) with the center of the Milky Way Galaxy, which lies some 26,000 light years from our solar system. (Actually, the phenomenon of galactic alignment occurs over about a sixteen-year period, but that doesn't sound very urgent or dramatic, so very few 2012ers pointed this out).

It was thought that, to the Mayans and other ancient cultures, this apparent return of the sun to the heart of the galaxy—viewed as the womb of creation—marked a grand re-birth of the sun, the beginning of a new age; actually, *not* of a "New Age" (as in "the dawning of the Age of Aquarius"), but rather of a new *Great* Age.

THE CYCLE RESTARTS ANEW

The cycle of precession is the amount of time, estimated at roughly 26,000 years, that it takes the earth's axis to complete one full rotation as our planet wobbles slightly in its orbit of the sun year after year. During this cycle, the earth's axis is oriented towards, or pointing at, one of the twelve (now thirteen) zodiacal signs for approximately 2,000 years. Each of these 2,000-year periods is viewed as an Age, with the entire cycle being referred to as the Great Age.

In occult thought (not universally so, but certainly for those behind Black Christmas) and on the occult calendar, December 21st, 2012, was not only the annual winter solstice, with the sun at its lowest point in the sky—marking the yearly "death" of the sun—but also marked the end of a Great Age. It was the most auspicious date in human history, or at least in the last 26,000 years of it.

DIES NATALIS SOLIS INVICTI, ON STEROIDS

The Zodiac is a near-universal artifact found in practically every great civilization around the globe, used to keep track of the passage of the ages. For the purposes of this discussion, if you want to think of the earth's axis as one hand (pointing to one of the Zodiacal signs) of a giant cosmic clock, the other hand would be formed by a line running from the earth through the center of the sun. When this hand, sweeping through the heavens, pointed at

Galactic Center on the Winter Solstice 2012, this marked the resetting of the Great Clock.

So 12/21/12 was the death, the final setting, of the sun of the prior Great Age; yet, it was not this occasion that the globalists were intent upon commemorating in grand fashion. Rather, the orchestrators of Black Christmas were fixated upon greeting the *first rising of the re-born sun* of the new Great Age.

After reaching its lowest point in the sky on winter solstice, the sun remains “in the depths of the earth” for three days before beginning its annual journey upward through the heavens on December 25th (previously commemorated by the Roman festival of *Dies Natalis Solis Invicti*, or “Birthday of Sol Invictus”)—and it was this event, the inaugural appearance of the Sun of the New Great Age, that was the focus of the Great American Holocaust.

The Great Wedding

There is another visual phenomenon (again, solely from earth’s perspective) in which the Milky Way Galaxy has been drifting slowly closer towards the earth’s horizon over the past several thousand years. Supposedly ancient cultures were aware of this astronomical fact, as well, and integrated it into their myth-making as a prophecy of a future time when the Milky Way—which was often viewed as a heavenly abode—would join with earth, i.e. the fabled union of Heaven and Earth, which is indeed occurring in our era.

This, too, informed occult thought on the importance of the 2012 timeframe, making it all-the-more attractive to practitioners of the dark arts as an appropriate period during which to engineer a modern-day slaughter of the innocents.

Lots of Lead Time

Now, we could sit here and discuss this subject all day, or all week, or for as long as you’d like, because there has been so much written on these topics that to produce a reference volume alone would be a monumental undertaking.

If you don’t fully understand all this astronomical-astrological, as-above-so-below stuff, don’t worry. All you really need to take away is that occultists the world over had been looking toward December 2012 for centuries, if not millennia, and thus had one hell of a long time to plan the surprise party.

Nuclear Power

To be sure, the globalists took indescribable pleasure in forever marring Christmas Day for young and old alike, and in the deep dark symbolic value of striking Phoenix on the day of the Savior's birth. Successfully blaming the whole affair on Islamic radicals, well, that was just the icing on the cake.

Yet, despite all the jokes about nuking Christmas and the like, there was, in their black minds, an unmatchable beauty in using the power that fuels the sun to make a most fitting mass sacrifice by immolation to the true Light Bearer upon the dawning of the New Great Age, the Age of Lucifer.

The Bennu, the Shen-shen and the Rech

The ancient Egyptians identified the phoenix, or bennu, with the soul of Osiris, "the rising god." According to tradition, the mythical bird connected the morning star (Venus)—"the heart of the renewed sun"—with the sun itself, which represented light, life and consciousness.

The bennu reflected this synthesis of creative impulses in the form of a bird which is actually two birds. The Theosophical Glossary describes the bennu in terms of both the Shen-shen (heron) and the Rech (a red bird), both of which were sacred to Osiris:

> It was the latter that was the regular Phoenix of the great Mysteries, the typical symbol of self-creation and resurrection through death—a type of the Solar Osiris and of the divine Ego in man. Yet both the Heron and the Rech were symbols of cycles; the former, of the Solar year of 365 days; the latter of the tropical year or a period covering almost 26,000 years. In both cases the cycles were the types of the return of light from darkness, the yearly and great cyclic return of the sun-god to his birth-place, or—his Resurrection.

Hmmm… A 26,000-year cycle, associated with a red bird. Kinda like this one?

Go Big Red! (Oh yes they did, too...headquartered in Tempe, a suburb of Phoenix…playing home games in the University of Phoenix Stadium…now that's funny, I don't care who you are.)

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

A HIDDEN BIBLICAL PROPHECY, THE TRIPLE CROSS AND THE PROPHECY OF THE LAST POPE

> *"The Christian religion is a parody on the worship of the sun, in which they put a man called Christ in the place of the sun, and pay him the adoration originally payed to the sun."*
>
> —Thomas Paine

A MOST HOLY PLACE

As the traditional site of Jesus' crucifixion and resurrection, the Church of the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem was a logical target for Islamic terrorists—but even more so for the scheming Luciferians who orchestrated the 12/25/12 attack on one of Christianity's most holy sites.

True, there was historical precedent for Muslims attacking the structure, when in the year 1009 Fatimid caliph Al-Hakim bi-Amr Allah ordered the complete destruction of the church—Christian writer Yahya ibn Sa'id reported that everything was razed "except those parts which were impossible to destroy or would have been too difficult to carry away."

And, yes, of course as on 9/11 there were actual Muslims (or at least Muslim-looking people) involved in carrying out the Christmas Day attack, but those for whom the site had an even greater appeal as a target for destruction harbored *multiple* reasons for selecting this particular site.

There's the quite obvious thrill of blowing up Calvary and the Lord's Tomb to be sure, an act which tore at the hearts of every living Christian soul on the planet; but, deeper yet, were the connections to the Galactic Megaritual…

THE SUN-GOD MYTH

For many occultists and Luciferians (as well as less notorious groups to be sure), it is viewed as common knowledge that the story of Christ is just that, a story—an ingenious anthropomorphic tale built upon the now not-so-secret secrets of the Mystery religions of the East. Christ played the part of the sun, the twelve disciples represented the twelve signs of the zodiac, and the entire yarn unfolded around the Sea of Galilee, with galilee meaning "the circuit" (or path of the earth through the ecliptic).

The writers of the gospels had taken the as-above-so-below correspondence to its ultimate extent, linking every setting in their version of the classic sun-god myth to a real location (Bethlehem, "the House of Bread," Virgo… forget it)—and contending that all of the characters in the story were, in fact, real people, with Jesus Christ as the living Son of God.

Now, for those who don't buy the take-it-on-faith argument that a flesh-and-blood redeemer ever walked the earth, certain facts become obvious during critical analysis of scripture. First is that the early church fathers went to great lengths to strip the canonical books of every last bit of their Jewishness, replacing YHWH with LORD in hundreds of instances, and altering the spelling of names so as to remove references to the Jewish god, Yahwey.

"Yah" was used as a shortened version of the Jewish deity's name, and attached to the beginning and end of many personal names. In numerous instances in the Bible where names today end with "iah," they originally ended in "yah," so that a person's very name referenced their god.

The person referred to as Jesus Christ was, in the original scriptures, called Yahshua Messiah, Yah-shua meaning "Yah saves" and Messiah meaning "the anointed one." (There was even an Old Testament Yahshua. Hint: there was no letter "j" in Hebrew— Yoshua becomes Joshua, the spelling of which, as you might have guessed, was a liberty taken by early translators in the first place.)

Thus do many non-believers contend that not only was there never an historical "Jesus Christ," as the name analysis yields, but that neither did a real "Yahshua Messiah"—the Sun, excuse me, Son of God, excuse me, Son of Yahwey—ever exist.

SKULL HILL

What the hell has all this got to do with the megaritual, you might be thinking. Well, the second fact that becomes obvious in a critical analysis of scripture is that the life of Christ does indeed unfold according to a heavenly design, only not some mysterious "plan of god," but rather according to the life of the sun as it journeys through the sky.

And here is where the tie-in to our Galactic MegaRitual occurs… The cross is an ancient symbol, by no means exclusive to Christianity, and quite often used in connection with the sun. A heavenly cross, or Great Cross, is said to be formed by the ecliptic, or the path of the sun through the sky, and the visible band of the Milky Way, or the Galactic Equator, the plane of our galaxy's rotation around Galactic Center.

Multiple symbols were used for Galactic Center, one being, as previously mentioned, a womb (the Womb of Creation, which, at least in our galaxy, it truly is), and another being a cosmic mountain—both owing to the mounded or domed shape of the center of the Milky Way Galaxy. Yet another symbol used for Galactic Center was, not surprisingly, the skull, with the celestial feature looking very much like a skull cap.

"Calvary" is Latin for "Golgotha," which according to scripture means "Skull Hill." The sun being suspended upon the Great Cross at Skull Hill, then, points to a very specific time: that in which our sun is aligned with the heart or center of the Milky Way—which by the way also has a visual feature that ancients likened unto a cave, or tomb.

Christ's crucifixion at Calvary, and subsequent burial in the tomb, is accordingly viewed by many modern practitioners of the ancient Mystery religions as a mythical anthropomorphic prophecy of Galactic Alignment—that very same phenomenon of which the Maya, and many others, were reportedly well aware.

So at the heart of Christianity, one of the world's greatest religions, is not only a myth, the Black Christmas conspirators would argue, but a prophecy as well, one fulfilled in *our time*, and which *only they* could fittingly commemorate. OMG.

THE TRIPLE CROSS

As the Gospels record, two criminals were crucified with Jesus, one on either side, thus the three crosses often associated with Christianity. Astronomically, in addition to the Great Cross, there is: Cygnus (the Latinized Hellenic Greek word for swan), lying on the plane of the Milky Way, which contains the Northern Cross; and, Crux (Latin for cross), with contains the Southern Cross—both of which are in close proximity to Galactic Center and lie on either side of the Great Cross.

Compellingly, the Mayans also recognized two cross-shaped constellations in this same region (although they are not identical with Cygnus and Crux): "Xic," the Hawk (hawk, swan, whatever) and The Thieves' Cross (criminals, thieves, whatever)—both of which figured into Mayan myths focused on telling the unfolding story of the heavens, past, present and future.

Thus, again we find that the basis of the crucifixion story is rooted in the stars, but lest you get the mistaken impression that the ancient Biblical writers and Mayans were the only ones interested in these things, consider that the long-awaited year of 2012 also brought the London Olympic Games, the 30th Olympics, the XXX Olympiad, the Olympiad of the Triple Cross.

XXX Olympiad London 2012

Indeed, just as Black Christmas marked the year of the Sun's Crucifixion on the Great Cross—the middle of the three celestial crosses—so did the XXX Olympics commemorate this once-in-a-26,000-year occurrence. Also, for added effect, the "triple cross" might also be thought of as referring to the alignment of three other "crosses" involved in the alignment process: the three crosses formed by the equators and axes of the earth, sun and Milky Way, which all aligned in 2012. (Don't think for a minute, either, that the triple-X pornographic connotation was overlooked or that great pleasure was not derived from the widespread use of the XXX label on everything from baseball caps to children's lunchboxes.)

Why in the world, then, didn't the globalists roast up several hundred thousand Olympic spectators in honor of the occasion? Well, that would've spoiled the biggest Christmas Surprise in history, now, wouldn't it? Come on, where's your sense of timing, of theatre? (Not that there wasn't a major psyop to convince the public that a nuclear strike on the Olympics was immiment, however, but that's the subject of Chapter 25.)

THE PROPHECY OF THE LAST POPE

The Roman Catholic Church represents one-sixth of the world's population and over half of all followers of Christ, and the assassination of the head of the largest Christian institution on the planet on one of the two most holy days on the church calendar, well, come on, you've got to at least acknowledge the tremendous appeal of the act from the Luciferian perspective.

Lucifer in the Vatican

In Dan Brown's *Angels and Demons*, protagonist Robert Langdon confronts an Illuminati plot to take control of the Vatican. As it turns out, Brown's plot—minus the anti-matter explosive device—might not have been too far off the mark.

In *Apollyon Rising 2012*, author Tom Horn writes of "secret satanic 'Illuminati-Masonic' influences" within the Vatican, orchestrated by a "modern multinational power elite, the occult hierarchy operating behind current supranatural and global political machinations."

Horn tells of former Jesuit priest Malachi Martin—retired professor of the Pontifical Biblical Institute, eminent Catholic theologian and close personal friend of Pope Paul VI—who claims that "an Illuminati-Masonic group made up of Western plutocrats called 'The Assembly' or the 'Superforce' had infiltrated the highest levels of Vatican administration and were working to bring about a New World Order."

In *The Keys of This Blood*, Martin wrote:

> Most frighteningly for John Paul, he had come up against the irremovable presence of a malign strength in his own Vatican and in certain bishops' chanceries. It was what knowledgeable Churchmen called the "superforce." Rumors, always difficult to verify, tied its installation to the beginning of Pope Paul VI's reign in 1963. Indeed Paul had alluded somberly to "the smoke of Satan which has entered the Sanctuary." . .an oblique reference to an enthronement ceremony by Satanists in the Vatican."

According to Horn, Martin had concealed greater detail of this luciferic 'enthronement ceremony' in his novel, *Windswept House*, in which Martin wrote that "the Enthronement of the Fallen Archangel Lucifer was effected within the Roman Catholic Citadel on June 29, 1963."

Horn further relates that "Martin stated publicly on more than one occasion that the enthronement of Lucifer in Rome was based on fact, and that to facilitate the black magic, a parallel ceremony was conducted simultaneously in the United States in Charleston, South Carolina." Horn continued:

> The reason this location was selected has remained obscure to many, but given what Malachi said about the Masonic connection, it makes sense that South Carolina was chosen: It is the site of the first Supreme Council of the Scottish Rite Freemasonry in the United States, called "the Mother Lodge of the World," where in 1859, champion of luciferian dogma for the Masonic-Illuminatus, Albert Pike became Grand Commander of the Supreme Council, where he served the Order of the Quest until his death in Washington DC on April 2, 1892.

Malachi Martin, again writing in his novel *Windswept House*, provides further details concerning the parallel enthronement ceremonies:

> Such unobtrusive elements as the Pentagram and the black candles and the appropriate draperies could be part of the Ceremonial in Rome. But other Ruberics—the Bowl of Bones and the Ritual Din, for example, the sacrificial animals and the victim—would be too much. There would have to be a Parallel Enthronement. A Concelebration could be accomplished with the same effect by the Brethren in an Authorized Targeting Chapel. Provided all the participants in both locations "targeted" every element of the Event on the Roman Chapel, then the Event in its fullness would be accomplished specifically in the target area. It would all be a matter of unanimity of hearts, identity of intention and perfect synchronization of words and actions between the Targeting Chapel and the Target Chapel. The living wills and the thinking minds of the Participants concentrated on the specific Aim of the Prince would transcend all distance.

Wow. A Concelebration in which *the living wills and the thinking minds of the Participants concentrated on the specific Aim of the Prince would transcend all distance***.** Sort of like what President Bush, et al, did with The-Pet-Goat Ritual-Reading Black Mass in Sarasota in conjunction with Flight 175 slamming into the South Tower in New York, thereby invoking Crowley's *Liber 175*, "the book of Uniting to a particular Deity by devotion." I get it.

However, this wouldn't be the only time that a Concelebration for a major Luciferian event was held in Charleston, SC, home to the "Mother Lodge of the World." . . . you'll have to wait until Chapter 22 to learn more about that.

To be certain, it played brilliantly into the global jihad storyline—payback for the Crusades and all that—but the real genius in the Christmas Day killing of the Pope was that it paved the way for the fulfillment of the "Prophecy of the Last Pope." (Incidentally, the last pope to die on Christmas Day was Pope Adrian I in 795; other individuals of note who passed away on this day include W.C. Fields, Charlie Chaplain, Dean Martin, Denver Pyle and James Brown.)

According to St. Malachy's "Prophecy of the Popes," first published in 1595, the pope following Benedict XVI is the final pontiff, whose reign will mark the beginning of the great apostasy, which will be followed by the great tribulation. So bringing about the conditions which Catholics world-wide anticipate will accompany the apocalypse, or at least the *beginning* of the end, creates exactly the kind of atmosphere of tremendous fear and anticipation that the globalists are so adroit at exploiting to their great advantage.

And wouldn't you know it, the nuclear strike on Phoenix played directly into the Muslim eschatology involving the return of the 12th Imam and the End of the World—the subject of the next chapter.

One day, three acts of false-flag terror, and two—actually three and counting—of the world's greatest religions are primed for Armageddon and the Great Return. Priceless.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

THE RETURN OF THE MAHDI AND WORLD WAR III

The storyline played out beautifully: them damn Muslims had blowed up Phoenix, blowed up the Church of the Holy Sepacur (as the pronunciation came to be frequently mutilated by the American public), killed that feller that wears the funny hat . . . Jesus *must* be on his way back, but until he gets here we'll mop the place up with them towelheads.

The Islamic sheeple's response was no less predictable: enthused to the point of insanity by what they believed to be a global victory for Islamic jihad carried out by blessed martyrs of Allah, they took to the streets by the millions to celebrate (only to get mowed down in droves by pissed-off Predator drone operators) and carried out untold acts of violence against Christian churches and businesses worldwide.

Two global groups of religiously-inflamed mouth breathers ready to fight to the death in the name of God, be it Allah or Yahwey—just what the doctor ordered to create absolute chaos and help usher in a New World Order.

THE TWELVERS

What the death of the Pope had signified to Catholics (and Fundamentalist-Christian end-timers) was perfectly paralleled by what the entire set of Black Christmas events meant to radical Islamists—the time of the apocalypse is nigh.

Then-Iranian-President Mahmoud Ahmadinejad belonged to a group known as the "Twelvers," the apocalyptic Hojjatieh sect, a branch of Shia Islam so radical it was banned in 1983 by none other than Ayatollah Khomeini. The Twelvers believed that the return of the Twelfth Imam, or Imam al-Mahdi—the prophesied redeemer of Islam—was imminent, even though he'd apparently gone missing hundreds of years ago.

Twelver eschatology held that global chaos and bloodshed must precede the return of the Mahdi, and that it was their divine responsibility to create these necessary pre-conditions. It was their *duty* to facilitate the 12th Imam's reappearance, which would bring about the institution of Islamic government worldwide and the annihilation of all competing faiths.

Blood for Peace

Now, whether Ahmadinejad was a true believer—as evidenced by his praying to Allah before the U.N. Assembly to "hasten the arrival of the Imam al-Mahdi"—or simply playing a key role in a carefully orchestrated multi-faith Illuminati psyop, we'll never know for certain, but the fact remains that he played his role as the post-bin-Laden Islamic boogeyman to the hilt, threatening to wipe Israel off the map and flippantly disregarding repeated international demands for Iran to cease its nuclear-weapons development program.

As the Head Twelver, intent on creating planet-wide bloodshed and chaos for the purposes of ushering in the rule of the Imam al-Mahdi and his divine reign of Peace and Justice—blood for peace, baby—the eyes of the enraged Western world immediately fell upon ole Mahmoud, and although it at first appeared that he might pull a bin Laden and initially deny any involvement, he quickly manned up and communicated to the Christian nations, in so many words, *Merry Christmas, Mother F*ckers.*

A (Good) Recipe for Disaster

Depending on whether you believe he was a genuine religious zealot or a globalist-in-wolf's-clothing, Mahmoud had either seized the apocalyptic moment and gone with it, claiming full responsibility regardless of whether he'd actually had a hand in the execution of the plot or not, *or,* he was simply reciting his lines like a good New World Order puppet, either way further enraging the Western powers and further radicalizing supporters of radical Islam.

It was on, and in this super-charged environment, Christian conspiracy theorists (and others, including Glenn Beck), who had been more-or-less quietly pointing out the striking similarities between the Mahdi and the Biblical anti-Christ in the years leading up to Black Christmas, went ballistic with their warnings of the impending arrival of the Son of Perdition (or Man of Sin, take your pick).

The Biblical *and* Islamic Apocalypse, the imminent emergence of the anti-Christ *and* the Mahdi … my, oh my. This isn't just a recipe for World War III, it's got all the makings of the End of the World. But was it all just scripted from the beginning?

PIKE'S PEEK

Giuseppe Mazzini

In a letter purportedly from prominent Freemason Albert Pike (1809-1891), whom you'll remember from *Most Dangerous,* to Italy's Giuseppe Mazzini (who conspiracy theorists claim was a 33rd-degree Mason and became head of the Illuminati in 1834 and founder of the Mafia in 1860), Pike wrote:

> The Third World War must be fomented by taking advantage of the differences caused by the "agentur" of the "Illuminati" between the political Zionists and the leaders of Islamic World. The war must be conducted in such a way that Islam (the Moslem Arabic World) and political Zionism (the State of Israel) mutually destroy each other. Meanwhile the other nations, once more divided on this issue will be constrained to fight to the point of complete physical, moral, spiritual and economical exhaustion…

Pike continued,

> We shall unleash the Nihilists and the atheists, and we shall provoke a formidable social cataclysm which in all its horror will show clearly to the nations the effect of absolute atheism, origin of savagery and of the most bloody turmoil. Then everywhere, the citizens, obliged to defend themselves against the world minority of revolutionaries, will exterminate those destroyers of civilization, and the multitude, disillusioned with Christianity, whose deistic spirits will from that moment be without compass or direction, anxious for an ideal, but without knowing where to render its adoration, will receive the true light through the universal manifestation of the pure doctrine of Lucifer, brought finally out in the public view. This manifestation will result from the general reactionary movement which will follow the destruction of Christianity and atheism, both conquered and exterminated at the same time.[1]

Ah, yes, the true agenda is revealed; unfortunately, however, as with Pike's almost-certainly fictitious Satanic "Palladian Rite," this letter is also a confirmed hoax. Yet, here again we must observe that just because it's fake doesn't mean it's untrue: just because Léo Taxil claimed credit for the Palladian Rite hoax doesn't mean there's *not* a Luciferian core at the heart of Freemasonry; likewise, just because Pike's letter to Mazzini is a forgery doesn't mean that it does *not* contain the Illuminati strategy for fomenting World War III, taking control of the entire planet and creating a One World Religion rooted in the worship of Lucifer.

Vigilant Guard

Black Christmas was successfully pulled off in Fortress America, with its bloated, hyper-vigilant, post-9/11 national security infrastructure. Not only that, it took place in the home state of the Secretary of Homeland Security, under the nose of America's Toughest Sheriff, in Captain America's back yard. Even better, Arizona's other U.S. Senator, John Kyl, was the Chairman and Ranking Member of the Senate Judiciary Committee's Subcommittee on Terrorism and Homeland Security.

Not to mention that pre-B.C., Arizona itself ranked eighth of 50 states in the number of domestically-focused counterterrorism and homeland security organizations, and 10th overall in organizations established or newly involved in counterterrorism since 9/11.

Oh, and this should have been a tip off if anyone had been paying attention—remember on 9/11 that multiple military exercises were taking place, with one of the largest being "Vigilant Guardian"? Well, in 2011, Phoenix was the location of a drill simulating a nuclear terrorist attack. Its name? Vigilant Guard. (We won't even get into the pre-9/11 FBI "Phoenix Memo" or the 2010 exhibit sponsored by the Phoenix office of the FBI entitled, "Enduring Eyes: Remembering the Holocaust to Protect the Future.")

Actually, in hind sight, the letter seems pretty spot on, doesn't it?

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

WINNING THE WAR ON CHRISTMAS

Nothing takes place in a vacuum, and Black Christmas was in significant respects the culmination of the perpetual War on Christmas, which was itself but one front in the larger assault on Christianity and in the even-broader global effort to remove God not only from the public square but from the face of the planet.

A SATANIC MASS SACRIFICE IN PARADISE VALLEY

The Phoenix Holocaust had been the Pearl Harbor (the *new* "New Pearl Harbor," as 9/11 was often referred to) in the world-wide Luciferian war on the Christian faith—the biggest Christmas Day Surprise in history, an unprovoked attack that everyone again blamed on Muslim extremists. For the real perpetrators, it was truly "The Greatest Gift of All," to themselves.

Recalling from *Most Dangerous* that a black mass is, according to Church-of-Satan founder Anton LaVey, essentially a parody of a traditional religious service, and remembering President Bush's Pet-Goat Black Mass in Paradise, we can better understand Black Christmas as the ultimate inversion of the Catholic Dawn Mass traditionally celebrated on Christmas Day—and see it for what it was, a Satanic Dawn Mass Sacrifice in Paradise Valley on X-Mas morn. It was a *red hot* Christmas…boy, talking about Santa leaving ashes for the children.

A STROLL DOWN BAD-MEMORY LANE

Flashback from the carnage of Phoenix for a moment to the 2004 White House Correspondents' Dinner, where a slide show featuring quirky photographs from inside the White House accompanies a portion of President Bush's remarks. One photo shows the president looking under furniture in the Oval Office while Bush jokes, "Those weapons of mass destruction have got to be somewhere. Nope, no weapons over there … maybe under here?"

Democrats of course immediately seized upon his remarks, calling them "astonishingly insensitive." Terry McAuliffe, then chairman of the Democratic National Committee, told ABC's "Good Morning America," "It's inappropriate to the thousands of people obviously who have been wounded over there," continuing, "This is a very serious issue. We've lost hundreds of troops, as you know, over there. Let's not be laughing about not being able to find weapons of mass destruction."

The threat posed by Saddam Hussein's alleged WMDs was cited by Bush administration officials, including Colin Powell, as one of the primary justifications for going to war in Iraq—which resulted not only in thousands of American killed, wounded and permanently maimed, but hundreds of thousands of dead Iraqi civilians.

That no weapons were ever in fact discovered was blamed on "faulty intelligence," but the real inside joke was that this supposed bad intelligence had been manufactured in the first place by those who stood to benefit from the war and had orchestrated 9/11 itself.

When Mark Katz, a former speechwriter for President Clinton (who also wrote jokes for the former President's own Correspondents' Dinner appearances), told CNN in response to Bush's comments, "sending American troops to war to find weapons of mass destruction, that's a joke that's playing out on the world stage," he didn't know the half of it.

Bush wasn't just making a highly-insensitive or inappropriate remark, he was mocking the press—and everyone else—to their faces.[1]

"I will win the war on Christmas"

Now fast forward eight years from 2004 to the 2012 White House Correspondents' Dinner in April, a mere eight months before Black Christmas, and we find President Barack Obama engaged in a little mockery of his own, only in this instance it was *mockery-in-advance*, part of the extensive predictive programming for the American Holocaust.

Although no one at the time took much notice of the comment, in retrospect it was one heckuva hint—actually, it was an outright declaration of his intentions. During his monologue, Obama joked, "Now, if I do win a second term as President, let me just say something to all the — (applause) — let me just say something to all my conspiracy-oriented friends on the right who think I'm planning to unleash some secret agenda: You're absolutely right."

More applause. He continued, "So allow me to close with a quick preview of the secret agenda you can expect in a second Obama administration."

"In my first term," Obama began, establishing the joke's rythym, and followed up with "In my second term," setting up the punch line. After waiting for applause, he cues up another one: "In my first term," Obama began, "we ended the war in Iraq"; then, "In my second term," he paused, "I will win the war on Christmas."

I will win the war on Christmas…

Some Heads Are Gonna Roll

Judas Priest was one of the premiere heavy metal acts of the 1970s and 80s, performing such head-banging classics as "Living After Midnight," one of the bands most popular songs. Starting out with the oft-repeated lines, "Livin' after midnight, rockin' to the dawn. Lovin' till the mornin', then I'm gone, I'm gone," the tune thrilled millions upon millions of leathered-up biker types and tough guys the world over for decades.

It was quite interesting, then, when former lead singer Rob Halford came out of the closet in 1998 as the first openly-gay heavy metal star, and subsequently revealed that "Living After Midnight" had actually been written as a cryptic tribute to San Francisco's gay bar scene.

Halford, who lived in Paradise Valley, AZ, just outside Phoenix, had earlier in his career—and quite deliciously—sung for the bands Lord Lucifer *and* Hiroshima, and thus it was a logical development that Judas Priest's classic "Some Heads Are Gonna Roll" became a sort of anthem for Black Christmas, a very-much intentional parallel with 9/11's official battle-cry, "Let's roll" (Priest's "Screamin' for Vengeance" came in a close second).

"Some Heads Are Gonna Roll" lyrics excerpt:

The power-mad freaks who are ruling the earth,
Will show how little they think you're worth.
With animal lust they'll devour your life,
And slice your world to bits like a knife.

One last day, burning hell fire.
You're blown away…

You know, though, you sort of get the impression that maybe this song isn't what everyone thought it was, either. It sounds less like the "we're gonna kick some ass" that the title seems to imply and everyone infers, and more like the "you got your ass kicked" mockery we keep getting in one form after another. Shit, yet another perfectly good Judas Priest classic ruined for posterity.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

A COMPANION RITUAL

It was the only good news of the day that fateful Christmas morning: President Obama would live—not only that, he would make a full recovery. He had looked increasingly thin in the months leading up to Black Christmas, and rumors swirled about his health. Was it simply the stress of campaigning for reelection?

Then, on December 21st, 2012, had come the news reports: the President had been rushed to Bethesda Naval Hospital and was in a coma; there was even speculation that he might even be brain dead.

Yet, only three days later, in the midst of wall-to-wall coverage of the Phoenix attack, had come the unexpectedly positive report from Obama's doctors. It was a ray of hope on an otherwise dark day—a miracle some called it. Obama had been resurrected, reborn like the Phoenix … *hey, wait a minute… that, too, was part of the Black Christmas Galactic MegaRitual?*

AN ELECTION OF BIBLICAL PROPORTIONS

In the lead-up to Obama's 2008 election and immediately afterwards, many seemed to lose all perspective, if not their grip on reality altogether. On *MSNBC,* Chris Matthews exclaimed, "This is bigger than Kennedy.… This is the New Testament! I felt this thrill going up my leg."

In *Politico,* Jesse Jackson Jr. remarked that "The event itself is so extraordinary that another chapter could be added to the Bible to chronicle its significance," and in *The Free Liberal* Micah Tillman predicted: "He won't just heal our city-states and souls. He won't just bring the Heavenly Kingdom—dreamt of in both Platonism and Christianity—to earth. He will heal the earth itself."

With such Messianic rhetoric, it was no surprise when an inaugural parade in Des Moines, Iowa, featured a re-enactment of the triumphal entry of Christ with a facsimile of Obama riding on a donkey and onlookers waving palm branches.

As things would turn out, though, these folks couldn't have been any more mistaken.

THE OBAMA PSYOP

The person of Barack Hussein Obama and his Presidency may have been one of the biggest on-going psyops ever mounted against the American and global public, filled to the brim with that same familiar always-present mockery, more out-in-front than ever. The clues and cues were so robust it's ridiculous, rivaled only by the general public's refusal to even take notice, despite the fact that they were hit repeatedly in the face with one absurdity after another.

From the millions spent on attorneys' fees to keep all his records—kindergarten through college—sealed from public view, to Obama's not placing his hand over his heart during the singing of the National Anthem (on more than one occasion), from the suspicion-generating elements of his birth certificates), to an equally suspicious selective service registration form and the apparent use of multiple social security numbers, one could surmise that the man was, *by design*, a walking, talking conspiracy-theory generator.

KARMA CHAMELEON

Was the Obama image an ingeniously media-crafted chameleon, created to be many things to many groups? For Christians, there was ample evidence that he was a closet Muslim (in one interview, he supposedly misspoke, using the phrase "my Muslim faith," whereupon the interviewer corrected him, "Your *Christian* faith," which Obama merely parroted, "My Christian faith"); for patriotic conservatives, ample evidence that he was a socialist-communist subversive; for Christian apocalyptics, evidence that Obama was in fact the long-awaited anti-Christ.

Having been fed a steady diet of political-correctness indoctrination for decades, had Americans been in such a rush to elect an African American as president that they had unwittingly—and with immense enthusiasm and total consent—installed a socialist-communist-Muslim-non-citizen in the highest office in the land?

And then the dark beauty of using a constitutional law professor—especially one held to be closely affiliated with communist, serial-bomber and co-founder of the Weather Underground, Bill Ayers—to destroy the Constitution would be an act of genius unto itself.

COMEDY CENTRAL

If you were fortunate enough to be in on the joke, it was a source of non-stop entertainment:

Shared Inspiration: Obama gave his famous 2008 "The World that Stands as One" speech in Berlin, Germany, in front of the Berlin Victory Column, which was designed as part of Hitler's new World Capital where he had planned to enthrone himself in the Welthauptsadt Germania upon winning World War II. Obama later gave his acceptance speech for the Democratic Party's nomination on a stage that some believed to be inspired by the Pergamon Altar, which Obama had reportedly visited while in Berlin. This altar had been the model for the *Zeppelintribüne*, the Tribune at Zeppelin Field in Nuremberg that Hitler used for his Nazi rallies.

Take Two: After Chief Justice John Roberts "accidentally" flubbed the words to the oath of office during the swearing-in ceremony, the ceremony was repeated in the Map Room of the White House, only the second time it was conducted without the use of the Holy Bible— and directly in front of a portrait of Freemasonic architect Benjamin Latrobe. (Interestingly enough, the William R. Singleton-Hope-Lebanon Lodge No. 7 in Washington, D.C. held the first-ever Masonic Inaugural Ball in honor of the 44th President of the United States.)

Man o' war: After less than two weeks in office, Obama was nominated for and subsequently received the Nobel Peace Prize, when obviously at the time of his nomination he hadn't done anything to deserve the prize—particularly ironic, given that this Man of Peace proceeded to continue existing wars and order new acts of aggression by the military, not to mention *to win the war on Christmas*...but that was all ... an inside joke?

A REINFORCING RITUAL

Obama's staged illness and miraculous Christmas day recovery had been a companion ritual to the Mass Sacrifice of Black Christmas. The President of the World, the globalists' Sun King—the earthly counterpart of the sun itself—for all intents and purposes died, mirroring the death of the sun occurring on Winter Solstice (when the sun reaches the lowest point in the sky during its annual journey through the heavens), and he had remained in death for three days before being resurrected on December 25, exactly as the sun remains at its lowest point for three days before beginning its upward journey.

The location of Obama's "death" had been symbolically significant, as well, with his collapse occurring directly underneath the Capitol Dome, which represented the Cosmic Womb of Galactic Center—an earthly reenactment of the heavenly demise of the sun in the heart of creation, prelude to the ultimate regenerative act. And, speaking of regeneration, don't forget the Washington Monument, standing opposite the Capitol, a massive modern-day representation of the phallus of Osiris, magically imbuing the Womb of Isis and the entire ceremony with supernatural procreative vitality. (Another XXX megaritual!)

This was not simply a ritual mirroring the annual rebirth of the sun, and it didn't concern entry into a new Zodiacal house. No, this was the Birth of the Sun of the New Great Age, and the resurrected Obama-Osiris had been reborn in all his full glory as its flesh-and-blood representative.

LUCIFER ASCENDED

Chosen in part for his physical characteristics and looking for all the world like an Egyptian Pharaoh, Obama was on one level transformed into Osiris resurrected. Lest you balk at the idea, recall Obama's own words as he toured Egyptian archaeological sites accompanied by Dr. Zahi Hawass, former Egyptian Minister of State for Antiquities: looking at a hieroglyph of a large-eared individual, who was in fact non-royalty, the President remarked, "That looks like me. Look at those ears."

However, moments later, Dr. Hawass made the key comparison, commenting on Obama's resemblance to the most well-known Egyptian ruler of all: "Mr. President, you look like King Tut," he said, to which Obama replied, "I've been told." Dr. Hawass punctuated his observation—"It's true." (Egyptians were so inspired that they created plaques inscribed with "Obama: New Tutankhamon of the World.")

On a deeper level still, to the hard-core Luciferians behind the B.C. MegaRitual, the New King Tut also represented the embodiment of the spirit of the New Great Age, the Age of Lucifer: the resurrected Obama was on one level the anti-Christ himself. They had ritually accomplished the ultimate sacrilege: The Birth of the Anti-Christ on Christmas Day.

Publicly, of course, the ritual was all perfectly believable for the vast majority of the unwashed masses: Obama's illness had caused a change in his personality, and not for the better.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

AMEN RA IS BACK

WHAT'S IN A NAME?

Obama-Osama, Saddam Hussein—if you think it's mere coincidence that Obama's full name mirrors or incorporates the names of the two biggest boogeymen in the 9/11 fiction, well, then you're probably experiencing your own "failure of imagination," as 9/11 was ludicrously claimed to have been. As with the abrupt reversal from *Most Dangerous,* 9-1-1=help → 9/11=terror, here you have an equally-clever subconscious reversal of meaning intended to create cognitive dissonance: Osama=bad guy → Obama=good guy + Saddam Hussein=bad guy → Barack Hussein=good guy. With this double whammy, our poor little subconscious minds never stood a chance.

Americans' artificially-induced obsessive desire to elect Obama was so blinding, so overwhelming that it not only caused them to ignore heaping, steaming mounds of suspicious circumstances but to overcome the not-insubstantial psychological barrier created by Obama's name itself. And his name was certainly a not-inconsequential aspect of the whole MegaRitual, as we shall find further evidence of next.

WHAT'S IN A NAME, PART II: HE IS WITH US

Writing in his book *Apollyon Rising 2012,* author Thomas Horn states:

> A Hadith (tradition) sacred to Shiite Islam from the seventeenth century contains a prophecy from Ali ibn Abi-Talib, which predicts that just

> before the return of the Mahdi (the end-times redeemer of Islam) a "tall black man will assume the reins of government in the West."
>
> This leader will command "the strongest army on earth" and will bear "a clear sign" from the third imam, *Hussein*. The prophecy concludes that: "Shiites should have no doubt that *he is with us*."
>
> Does this Islamic prophecy identify Obama as the "promised warrior" who comes to help the savior of Shiite Muslims conquer the world? Amir Taheri asked this very question for *Forbes Magazine* in October 2008, pointing out how "Obama's first and second names—Barack Hussein—mean 'the blessing of Hussein' in Arabic and Persian" while his "family name, Obama, written in the Persian alphabet, reads O Ba Ma, which means 'he is with us,' the magic formula in Majlisi's tradition."

"He is with us," eh? Very interesting, if true, considering that the name of the Messiah as prophesied by Isaiah was Immanuel, "God is with us." (And worth noting is that Al-Burāq, meaning "lightning," is the name of the mythological steed that carried Muhammad from Mecca to Jerusalem and back during his famed "Night Journey.")

WHAT'S IN A NAME, PART III: AMEN RA IS BACK

In the end, perhaps what awakened the greatest number of people to Obama as the creation of the globalists and his role as their Sun King was the timely revelation of what had obviously been an intentional formulation, one that had clearly played a role in the selection of the name for this CIA-Hollywood-created character in the first place.

Ingeniously, "Barack Hussein Obama" contained an anagram which was an outright statement that he was indeed the occult Sun King reborn:

> "Amen Ra is back BHO USA"

. . . Obama's name was a big, fat joke on all of us.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

THE ASTROLOGY OF BLACK CHRISTMAS, SATURNALIA AND IT'S THE THOUGHT THAT COUNTS

CAPRICORNUS AND THE LORD OF DEATH

For those of you who are *really* paying attention and who took careful notes on book one, you might find yourself saying at this point, *Okay, all this is other stuff is great, but where's the goat?* Where's the goat, indeed, as on 9/11 we encountered "The Pet Goat," a veritable ode to Baphomet, whom we might consider as the mascot of the September 11th, 2001 Occult Olympics—and, truly, what good megaritual would fail to utilize such a vital symbol?

Certainly not the Black Christmas Galactic Luciferian MegaRitual, which incorporated the goat in a most creative fashion, as will be detailed in a moment. Of course, the goat was *already* invoked on one level by virtue of December 25th falling under the astrological sign of Capricorn, which covers December 22nd to January 20th, and originates from the constellation of Capricornus, which is generally depicted as a goat with a fish's tail. (One myth pertaining to Capricornus says that when the goat-god Pan was attacked by Typhon, he dove into the Nile, with his upper body remaining that of a goat while the submerged lower half transformed into that of a fish.)

CAPRICORNUS
AQUARIUS
ANTINOUS
PISCIS AUSTRALIS
BALLON AEROSTAT
MICROSCOPIUM

Capricorn is said to be ruled by the planet Saturn, who you'll recall from book one, along with Pluto, as one of the Lords of Death, and pointing out the appropriateness of this fact as it relates to the American Holocaust would almost seem distasteful at this point—but only almost, given everything else we've been subjected to by now.

IO SATURNALIA

While we're on the subject of Saturn, Saturnalia was the ancient Roman festival honoring the deity of the same name, originally held on December 17th and later expanded with unofficial festivities through December 23rd, the poet Catullus calling them "the best of days."

Characterized overall by social role reversals, behavioral license, drunkenness and gluttony, Saturnalia featured a day of gift-giving on December 23rd, often involving gag gifts, of which Julius Caesar Augustus, the first emperor of the Roman Empire, was particularly fond. Such gifts might be expensive or quite cheap, and included items such as toothpicks, spoons and sausages.

In the spirit of Saturnalia, then, one supposes, and seeking to incorporate the glorious goat into the Galactic Megaritual in some darkly-humorous and fitting manner, the conspirators chose to have delivered anonymously via FedEx on December 24th to the homes of numerous U.S. and Arizona public officials—including Joe Arpaio, Jan Brewer, John McCain, and Jon Kyl—the cutest damn cellophane-wrapped straw Yule Goats you've ever seen.

ATOMIC
FireBall

Enclosed with these oversized Christmas ornaments were, quite oddly, thought many of the recipients, packs of Atomic Fireball Hard Candy, boxes of dates (from the date palm tree, *Phoenix dactylifera*), and boxes of Hanukkah candles (44 to a box).

There had been much discussion about including packets of Phoenix mushrooms, but it was decided that this would just be too damn weird—but they couldn't let the mushroom thing go (had to have a mushroom cloud reference, you know), and ended up throwing in a little miniature red-and-white felt toy mushroom, complete with a silk green bow, with each package. (It was similarly decided that bottles of Vicks Formula 44 would be too peculiar to include, and might be a bit of overkill anyway.)

Also included with each gift set, and this was sheer genius, really, was a CD of Jimmy Buffett's 1996 collection of Christmas-themed music entitled, *Christ-*

Jimmy Buffett
christmas island

mas Island. Now, the first thing that made this such a smart touch was that Jimmy's birthday was December 25th, 1946, (here's a shout out to the 9/11 Birthday Boy, former U.S. Solicitor General Ted Olson) but what made this an absolutely brilliant pick was the CD's title, which is also…you gotta love it…the name of an island in the equatorial Pacific that played involuntary host to a series of nuclear test explosions conducted by the British and U.S. militaries in the late 1950s and early 60s. *Badda bing, badda BOOM.*[1]

CHRISTMAS ISLAND
H-BOMB Tests
1957-58

X M A S
The Beast.

And although the gifts were sent anonymously, they *had* included a small holiday card; actually, it was a reproduction of a card designed by Aleister Crowley, which read "I bring you season's greetings from" and bore a facsimile of his signature that read "The Beast." It's the small touches that really matter.

* * *

DETOUR AHEAD

There's one last really big smelly package left to unwrap—saving the worst for last, one might say—that puts an absolutely *unmistakable* signature (much like Crowley's monicker on the card above) on Black Christmas, one so plain and bold you could read it from the moon. But before we pull the bow off that box of Christmas jeer, we're going to look at two events, two pre-cursor rituals if you will, which—again, if we'd been paying attention—could have tipped us off as to what was in store for the country, and the world, on 12/25/12.

Before the finale, then, we visit Tucson, Arizona, and Aurora, Colorado, separated by hundreds miles, but connected to both 9/11 and Black Christmas through perverse occult rituals you'll have to pick apart to believe…but, sadly, we're used to that by now, aren't we?

SECTION FOUR

PUBLIC RITUALS 'R'US

Chapter Nineteen

Shifting Gears

I think it's safe to say we're all a little weary in general, and just plain sick of occult symbols, numbers, and everything else to do with rituals, mega or otherwise. So in the chapters that follow, I'll be as concise as possible, which unfortunately will still leave us exposed to the toxic environment for far too long, like so many buck-naked Fukushima cleanup workers.

The truth is that the public occult rituals that we delve into are full-blown ceremonies in their own right, and although they may be merely pit-stops on the road to Phoenix, their orchestrators cut no corners, in fact taking great pride in their dark works, as per usual.

I'll say what needs to be said, but without providing the level of documentation or "proof" presented in *Most Dangerous* or in the first part of this Addendum, because if by now I haven't built up a little credibility with you—and you don't trust that, generally-speaking, I know an in-plain-sight occult ritual when I see one—well, then, we probably ought to part ways.

There are enough occult elements and references to support quite-lengthy analyses, which I neither want to write nor you to read. What follows are not exactly Cliff Notes, but the main goal in examining these rituals is primarily to cast light on the dark path leading from 9/11 to Black Christmas, and to reveal the occult infrastructure that supported the long march to absolute global tyranny.

How could we possibly have known what was coming on December 25, 2012? Well, if we'd been smart enough to know what to look for, *they all but told us what they were going to do.* Don't believe it? I hate to tell you, but you will, *you will.*

Aue

CHAPTER TWENTY

KILLING GABRIEL

January 8, 2011. U.S Representative Gabrielle Giffords is holding a "Congress on Your Corner" event in front of the Safeway supermarket located at 7110 North Oracle Road (Arizona Highway 77) in La Toscana Village mall in Casas Adobes, Arizona, an unincorporated town near Tucson.

Approximately 30 people are gathered around the Congresswoman's table or are standing in line to visit with her, when, at 10:10 a.m., 22-year-old Jared Lee Loughner pulls out a 9mm Glock 19 semi-automatic pistol—with a 33-round magazine—shoots Giffords in the head, and proceeds to shoot 18 others, six of whom will die, including Arizona District Court Chief Judge John Roll, Congressional staffer Gabriel Zimmerman and 9-year-old Christina-Taylor Green.

President Obama called the shooting an "unspeakable tragedy," adding that "such a senseless and terrible act of violence has no place in a free society," and Arizona Governor Jan Brewer called the attack "senseless and cruel violence."

Numerous politicians and public figures issued statements, including Arizona's Senators John McCain and Jon Kyl, and U.S. Supreme Court Chief Justice John Roberts, who couldn't accurately recite the Presidential oath of office in 2009, managed to issue a coherent statement of his own, noting, "we in the judiciary have suffered the terrible loss of one of our own," referring to the death of Chief Judge John Roll.

NEVER MIND THAT RIFLE

Various foreign officials, including Fidel Castro, commented on the incident, and the French newspaper *Le Monde* said that the attack seemed to confirm "an alarming premonition that has been gaining momentum for a long time: that the verbal and symbolic violence that the most radical right-wing opponents have used in their clash with the Obama administration would at some point lead to tragic physical violence."

Thus began yet another scripted round of heated recriminations in the perpetual left-right mock battle for the public's fickle affections (in itself mere theatre, to wit, the whole Sarah-Palin-and-the-crosshairs routine, which, if you're unfamiliar with it, isn't worth going into detail on), and thus was more fuel spewed upon the ever-smoldering gun-control controversy, reigniting it into a full-blown conflagration once again.

With all of the script elements kicking into full play, then, no one really took any notice when, despite the mainstream media's relentless billing of the shooting as yet another senseless lone-wolf killing in America, Pima County Sheriff's Deputy Rich Kastigar told reporters that a rifle with an extended magazine had been found at the scene of the shooting spree.[1]

Details? Who the hell wants details that don't fit into the pre-established storyline? Shut the hell up, Rich.

A DEEPER LOOK

Whether the rifle was a second weapon that Loughner brought to the scene but didn't use (which wasn't part of the reporting, by the way), or a weapon left behind by a second shooter (unconfirmed reports indicated that the weapon had been found on the *roof* of the Safeway), or a prop planted to generate confusion and suspicion (as we see time and again in our investigations), this detail matters in that it's exactly the kind of incongruent factoid that we have come to recognize as potential-probable evidence of sophisticated psychological warfare tactics being employed against the unsuspecting public. While not definitive in and of itself, it says, *Look deeper.*

And look deeper we will, but even without the ownerless rifle, if, after everything we've been through together and all the occult-laden mockery we've encountered, you read about an assassination attempt on a U.S. Congresswoman that takes place in a Safeway parking lot along Highway 77 and your Spidey senses aren't already tingling, man, there's just no hope for you.

A TWO-FACED RITUAL

We might as well bring the guest of honor forward in the beginning, because there's no real advantage in concealing his identity until later on, so please join me in welcoming Janus—after whom the month of January is named—the two-faced Roman god, who simultaneously looks backward to the past and forward to the future.

And that's just as fitting as it could possibly be, because, as you'll discover, this is precisely what the Gifford's public ritual is all about—looking backward to 9/11 (a 9/11 redux, of sorts) and forward to Black Christmas, foreshadowing the holocaust in nearby Phoenix.

Indeed, this ritual was a warm-up performance designed to focus national and international attention on Arizona in general and the Tucson-Phoenix area specifically—a means of generating mass sympathy and empathy tied subconsciously, perhaps psychically, to this geographic location, and intended, if it were possible, to compound the psychological trauma of the holocaust to come—a dress rehearsal involving the key players for 12/25/12 (whether all of them knew it at the time or not). It incorporates elements and themes from 9/11 and points symbolically toward Phoenix.

A BEING FROM OF OLD AM I

Janus was the animistic spirit of doorways (*januae*) and archways (*jani*), the god of gates as well as the guardian deity of non-physical boundaries, especially the threshold between one year and the next. He was the god of beginnings and endings, transitions and time (recall the similar functions of Hermes and Thoth from the 9/11 Occult MegaRitual).

In *Lawful Days* (Fasti), Book 1, Ovid quotes Janus as saying "The ancients called me Chaos, for a being from of old am I … all things are closed and opened by my hand. The guardianship of this vast universe is in my hands alone."[2]

Janus is the first of the gods and thus their father. Men must invoke Janus first, regardless of the god they want to pray to or placate. Janus as the Gatekeeper has jurisdiction over every kind of door and passage and the power of opening or closing them. Janus is at the origin of time as the guardian of the gates of Heaven, and possesses mastership over time—he is the initiator of new historical ages.

Nothing could have been more fitting than to invoke Janus at the doorstep of Phoenix on the cusp of the roll-over to the Next Great Age.

JANUARY 8: THE EVE OF AGONY

An Agonalia or Agonia was a religious observance celebrated in ancient Rome several times a year in honor of various divinities, and the January 9th Agonalia was the Festival of Janus, during which sacrifices were made to the god. Also known as the Agonium, it was a celebration of doors and gateways symbolized by Janus in ascendancy after the winter solstice. January 8th (which fell on Saturday in 2011) was the eve of the Agonium (the word agonium also referred to the sacrificial beast or victim, or, in this instance, victims).

THE ARCH OF JANUS AND THE ROYAL ARCH OF FREEMASONRY

THE ROYAL ARCH
G

Befitting of the god of gateways and archways, there is a literal Arch of Janus in the Forum Boarium in Rome, the only remaining example of the quadrifrons triumphal arch preserved there.

The arch is also a highly significant symbol in Freemasonry as evidenced by their Royal Arch (or Holy Royal Arch) degree, which derives its name from the "Royal Arch of the Ages of the Zodiac," where the twelve Zodiacal constellations—representing the twelve ages in the Precession of the Equinoxes (or the Great Age)—appear to arch their way across the sky as if in royal procession.

The Royal Arch ritual purportedly attempts to convey a picture of the life hereafter, of our re-integration with the Supreme Being, but it's highly doubtful that our idea of the Most High is in line with the upper-echelon Freemasons' God (whether that be the Mason's "Jahbulon," who incidentally is depicted looking a lot like Yoda from Star Wars, or Lucifer himself).

January, named for the God of Archways … the eighth day, the eve of the Agonium (the Festival of Janus), invoking Janus' blessings in preparation for the Great Shift of 2012 … and, would you look at that Safeway storefront, it's got more arches than a McDonald's. No, it's certainly not the Twin Towers or the Pentagon—the MegaSymbols of 9/11—but, hey, it'll do as a makeshift sacrificial altar.

And is it just me, or does that Safeway logo look a helluva lot like the Freemasonic Grand Master lapel pin?

WHERE ARE THE TWINS?

Even though this Safeway is no match for the Twin Towers, never fear, because this public ritual has twins alright, identical twins, both of whom are NASA astronauts. Rep. Giffords' husband, Mark Kelly, and his brother Scott are, in fact, the only twins (the only siblings, for that matter) to have both traveled in space.

At the time of the shooting Scott Kelly was serving as commander aboard the International Space Station, from which he led a National Moment of Silence for the victims of the Tucson shooting. At 220 miles above the Earth, this went from being a global public ritual to an Outer Space MegaRitual, quite fitting given that Black Christmas was to be in essence a Galactic MegaRitual.

PAGING DR. BOWMAN

Scott Kelly's first spaceflight was as pilot of the Space Shuttle *Discovery*, which was also the name of the spaceship on which Dr. David Bowman made his fateful journey in Stanley Kubrick's *2001: A Space Odyssey* (recall the Millennium Monolith from the first book) on his way to crossing through the stargate (Janus!) and becoming the Starchild.

Bowman's character appears in the sequel to *2001*, entitled *2010: The Year We Make Contact*, as well as in two additional books by Arthur C. Clarke, *2061: Odyssey Three* and *3001: The Final Odyssey*. In the forward to *2061*, Clarke points out that the plots of the movies and books do not follow a linear arc and take place in parallel universes. Consequently, there are apparent inconsistencies in Bowman's character throughout the series, and his dual identities are referred to, albeit infrequently, as being "twin astronauts" (identical twins perhaps?).

Speaking of *2001* and twins, be careful not to confuse the fictitious Dr. Bowman with Dr. David Bowman the Tucson physician, who was picking up a few items in Safeway when the shooting began, and rushed out to help tend the wounded. "Bowman," by the way, is an encoded reference to the constellation Sagittarius, the bow-man or archer, one of the guardians of Galactic Center (along with Scorpio), whose arrow points directly at the center of the Milky Way.

THE 9/11 BIRTHDAY GIRL

One of those who unfortunately didn't survive the shooting was 9-year-old Christina Taylor-Green of Tucson, newly elected to the student council at her school.

Christina was the granddaughter of former New York Yankees and Mets manager Dallas Green (who achieved notoriety for his profanity-laced tirades: "I'm a screamer, a yeller and a cusser. I never hold back.") and daughter of John Green, a scout for the Los Angeles Dodgers; she was also the niece of actress Sophia Bush. She had not only been born on September 11, 2001, but was featured in the book, *Faces of Hope: Babies Born on 9/11*. (Ted Olson, the 9/11 Birthday Boy, and now Christina Green, the 9/11 Birthday Girl.)

As reported in the *Arizona Republic*, Christina's uncle, Greg Segalini, stated that a neighbor had invited the young girl to the event simply because she thought Christina, new member of the student council and all, would enjoy it.

Turns out that this neighbor who took the 9/11 Birthday Girl by the hand and led her off to her slaughter was one Susan Hileman, a 1973 graduate of Cornell University's College of Human Ecology and member of the Human Ecology Alumni Association Board. (Giffords was also a Cornell alum.) Hileman was shot three times but survived and was one of the main victims treated by Dr. David Bowman.

Also turns out that there are ties between the field of Human Ecology and MK-Ultra/CIA mind-control programs. (There is a Susan Hileman who has assisted with research on the dissociative trauma of young children, but that's a different person.) Interesting link, whether it be an actual coincidence or yet another artificially-engineered nod to the brainwashing maniacs who orchestrate these despicable mass rituals.

Paging Dr. Green

Operation Paperclip was the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) program designed to recruit Nazi scientists to the United States after World War II. Those recruited under this program included rocket engineer Wernher von Braun, the chief architect of the Saturn V launch vehicle that propelled the Apollo spacecraft to the Moon.

Also brought to the United States under Operation Paperclip was Dr. Hubertus Strughold, a German-born physiologist and prominent medical researcher, who played a pioneering role in the study of the physical and psychological effects of manned spaceflight and became known as "The Father of Space Medicine."

Following his death, Strughold's activities under the Nazis came under increased scrutiny, and allegations of involvement in human experimentation—in which camp inmates were immersed in freezing water, placed in pressure chambers and forced to drink seawater—at the Dachau concentration camp greatly diminished his reputation. In May 2006, Strughold's name was removed from the International Space Hall of Fame by unanimous vote of the New Mexico Museum of Space History's board of directors. (Strughold even made a post-humus appearance in The X-Files as the character of Victor Klemper in the 1995 episode "Paper Clip.")

So, as you can see, things didn't always go so well with this Employ-a-Nazi program, and there could be a much worse, yet generally unknown, case involving the U.S. government's utilization of a former Nazi doctor.

Mind-control programming is often called Monarch programming and is sometimes referred to interchangeably as "Green programming." Thousands of mind-control victims in the U.S. report having a "Dr. Green" as their chief programmer, and at least some of these subjects indicate that certain experiments were conducted at facilities in the desert surrounding Tucson (others say Cornell University, as well).

Dr. Green also purportedly went by the names Dr. Greenbaum, Greentree, Greenberg, etc., and may or may not be one-in-the-same with Dr. L. Wilson Greene, the one-time Scientific Director of the Chemical and Radiological Laboratories at the Army Chemical Center. Tad Szulc, in "The CIA's Electric Kool-Aid Acid Test" (*Psychology Today*, November 1977), writes that the "man whom the CIA documents credit with inspiring the program is Dr. L. Wilson Greene of the Army Chemical Corps, who had long urged the United States to embark upon psychochemical warfare."[1]

Whether Dr. Green is Dr. Greene or not, one very interesting theory surrounding the development of the United States governments' mind-control program is that Dr. Green's true identity is that of ex-Auschwitz doctor and "Angel of Death" Joseph Mengele. Mengele (who incidentally had a particular interest in identical twins) conducted one of the first methodical studies on trauma-based mind control and is thought by some to be one of the principle developers of Monarch Programming and the CIA's MK-Ultra program. Hell, he certainly has the credentials.[2]

Writing in *The Relationship Between Mind Control Programming and Ritual Abuse*, Dr. Ellen P. Lacter further defines what we're talking about here:

> Trauma-based mind control programming can be defined as systematic torture that blocks the victim's capacity for conscious processing (through pain, terror, drugs, illusion, sensory deprivation, sensory over-stimulation, oxygen deprivation, cold, heat, spinning, brain stimulation, and often, near-death), and then employs suggestion and/or classical and operant conditioning (consistent with well-established behavioral modification principles) to implant thoughts, directives, and perceptions in the unconscious mind, often in newly-formed trauma-induced dissociated identities, that force the victim to do, feel, think, or perceive things for the purposes of the programmer. The objective is for the victim to follow directives with no conscious awareness, including execution of acts in clear violation of the victim's moral principles, spiritual convictions, and volition.
>
> Installation of mind control programming relies on the victim's capacity to dissociate, which permits the creation of new walled-off personalities to "hold" and "hide" programming. Already dissociative children are prime "candidates" for programming.

To achieve this objective, programmers use a variety of horrific means, including forced sodomy, which in children can produce vaso-vagal shock and aid tremendously in splitting their personality.

And while we're on the subject of the horrible things adults do to children, would it be—given everything else we've discovered about this ritual and the others regarding name games, tributes, tips-of-the-hat, and pure mockery, as well as the use of mind-control techniques—too inappropriate to ask whether Christina-Taylor Green's last name was a purposeful reference to "Dr. Green," and, perhaps, the "Angel of Death" himself, Joseph Mengele?

One argument that absolutely cannot be raised against this line of inquiry is that it's too sick or twisted, because, as we've learned by now, there's nothing these baby-killing, child-raping sadistic Satanists won't do.

---

[1] http://cognitiveliberty.tribe.net/thread/2ed1e3fb-e9d6-4e73-8363-ec2bd94e0ab0

[2] http://secretarcana.com/hiddenknowledge/monarch-programming-mind-control/#fn-197-1

LEASHING THE ASSASSIN

On the subject of birthdays, shooter Jared Lee Loughner was born September 10, 1988 (can't have *two* 9/11 Birthday Boys—oh, wait, yes we can: Columbine gunman Dylan Klebold was born September 11, 1981); Loughner was reportedly obsessed with mind-control, and there might've been a real good reason for this, as we've already encountered solid evidence of psychological warfare tactics being employed throughout other aspects of this public ritual. (Interesting, that in his mug shot following the shooting, Loughner looked like he'd been on the receiving end of a massive dose of some psychotropic drug.)

There is other potential evidence that Loughner might have been the victim of a mind-control operation, but in the interests of keeping this as brief as possible and to avoid the tedium of having to sort through it all—in the end, there's no *definitive* proof, anyway, as is many times the case in situations like this—ask yourself this: if you were planning an occult public ritual and needed to make sure that your assassin showed up on location, on time and able to put bullets on target, would you not use whatever pharmacological and behavior-modification tools and techniques were at your disposal to insure a flawless performance? You bet your ass you would.

GABE AND GABBY

Another of Loughner's victims that morning was congressional aide Gabriel Zimmerman, Gabby Giffords' community outreach director and the first Congressional staffer killed in the line of duty.

Gabriel and Gabrielle, Gabe and Gabby—now, isn't that cute? And if you think it's just a coincidence, think again. Although referred to as a male in the Bible, the Archangel Gabriel is portrayed by New Agers as female or androgynous, so Gabriel, Gabrielle, what's the difference? *We'll shoot 'em both.*

The intended sacrilege: killing the exalted Messenger of God (oh, *Christ*ina was a bonus, too). Gabriel, whose name means "the strength of God," is one of three archangels mentioned in scripture and is variously identified as the archangel of Annunciation, Resurrection, Mercy, Revelation and Death. Christians and Muslims alike believe him to have foretold the births of John the Baptist to Zacharias and Jesus to the Virgin Mary. Muslims further believe that Gabriel was the medium through which God revealed the Quran to Muhammad over a period of 23 years—and also accompanied the Prophet on his "Night Journey"—and hold that Gabriel sent messages to most, if not all the prophets revealing their obligations.

In Jewish belief, Gabriel, as the Power of God, is regarded as the angel of judgment, and many Christians likewise believe that Gabriel will blow a sacred trumpet to signal the Last Judgment (quite appropriate, as 2012 was held to mark the End of the Age). Thus, although the primary affront was intended for the followers of Christ, this aspect of the Tucson Outer-Space MegaRitual in the end turned out to be an equal-opportunity insult to all three of the world's great religions.

To recap, then, the globalists popped a cap in the Messenger of God, who delivered the good news to Mary and is supposed to blow the Trumpet of the Apocalypse: this was the symbolic Killing of Gabriel, prefiguring the symbolic Killing of Christ affected on 12/25/12.

XX
JUDGEMENT.

The Janus Factor

Janus was also known as Janus Bifrons (Latin for "two-faced"), Bifrons later becoming the name of a demon known as the Earl of Hell, as well as one of the names reportedly given to Baphomet, whom you'll remember from *Most Dangerous*.

Christian author Texe Marrs refers to the "Janus Factor," which he asserts is the "Illuminati secret formula for world revolution and deceit"—"Satan's hidden method." (According to others, there also supposedly exists a super-secret organization called the Janus Group that utilizes highly-trained psychic assassins to eliminate enemies of the Illuminati—good luck confirming that one.)

Marrs contends that "throughout history, Janus operatives … have successfully employed the Janus method to psychically and culturally churn global events and overturn all standards of morality and human dignity." Janus-faced, two-faced: deceitful, treacherous, devious; saying one thing and doing another (Orwell's Newspeak, doublespeak), altering meanings to confound and confuse—you know, the standard operating procedure of the globalists. War is peace. Slavery is freedom. Ignorance is strength.

By reversing social norms and bringing society into chaos, a New World Order can thus emerge from the ashes. *Ordo Ab Chao.*[3]

ORDO
AB
CHAO
SPES MEA IN DEO EST
DIEU LE VEUT
Ex Oriente Magno

ONWARD AND DOWNWARD

Janus the two-faced is not the only, or even the primary, symbol signifying domination through deception. No, there is another two-headed icon—and we're already familiar with the core underlying symbol—that holds the top spot as the signature of the Freemasonic-Illuminati elite, and we're about to makes its introduction.

They're on a Roll

There were rumors that Gabrielle Giffords may have been targeted for assassination due to her success in obtaining substantial funding to protect the Arizona border against incursions from Mexican drug cartels, or that Judge John Roll, named to the federal bench by President George H.W. Bush in 1991, may have been likewise targeted for opposing measures to ban gun ownership, purportedly a key feature of the New World Order's plans to disarm the population. Other rumors contended that Roll was killed barely 72 hours after making a critical ruling against the Obama administration.

There were also media reports indicating that Jared Loughner practiced Santa Muerte (Saint Death) cult rites as part of his practice of Grim Reaper Black Magic, and related speculation that Giffords and Roll were viewed as enemies of the sect and thus targeted for assassination.

Whether there is any substance to any of these allegations or not (can you say "information fog"?), you can be sure of one thing—the planners of the Tucson Ritual were on a roll, as in "Let's roll" and "Some Heads Are Gonna Roll," and they weren't about to let this opportunity to incorporate yet another reference slip through their fingers.

DAILY NEWS
EXCLUSIVE

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

THE JOKE'S ON US

"The more we do to you, the less you seem to believe we are doing it."

—Hauptsturmführer SS Dr. Josef Mengele

Friday, July 20th, 2012. Exactly one week before the London XXX Olympics' Opening Ceremony— wherein a 100-foot inflatable effigy of the Janus-inspired Lord Voldemort would tower over the participants and be broadcast to the four corners of the earth—Americans awoke to news of the worst mass shooting in U.S. history.

Former neuroscience doctoral candidate James Eagan Holmes (born December 13, 1987), dressed in full-body protective armor and a gas mask, had allegedly entered a midnight screening of the latest Batman film, *The Dark Knight Rises,* let loose with a couple of tear-gas grenades, and then opened fire on the audience with a variety of weapons, including an assault rifle and a shotgun—shooting or otherwise injuring over seventy people, killing 12 of those (13 if you count the fetus of the victim who miscarried as a result of her injuries).

Holmes was apprehended at the scene, and reportedly told police that he was "The Joker." Holmes' mug shot showed an orange-mop-topped, bug-eyed, expressionless individual whom most everyone was perfectly willing to believe was

BALE CAINE OLDMAN HATHAWAY HARDY COTILLARD GORDON-LEVITT FREEMAN
A FIRE WILL RISE
THE DARK KNIGHT RISES
THE LEGEND ENDS
JULY 20
EXPERIENCE IT IN IMAX

the purported crazed lone-wolf gunman. But before the smoke had even cleared, it was becoming abundantly evident—at least to those for whom the techno-hypnotic spell of media-driven false-flag terrorism and mass ritual had previously begun to wear off—that something, actually quite a few things, were amiss.

Crazy Talk

Now, certainly not every mass shooting that occurs is a public ritual or shadow-government-run, mind-control operation (or both). Sometimes individuals—deranged or otherwise—just lose it, and people die. The idea that some nutjob believed he was a villain from a comic book and went to a theater and shot a bunch of people is not terribly difficult to accept as an event that could occur without outside provocation or assistance. Crazy people do crazy things.

Sure, they do, but when Holmes told police he was the Joker, he wasn't talking about the comic book character—and the Dark Knight Rises alright, but it ain't Bruce Wayne in a bat costume.

Son of Aurora

If more Americans in those years had studied classical literature and mythology instead of watching endless hours of "Dancing with the Stars," "American Idol" and "America's Got Talent," the entire episode would've been exposed rather quickly for the occult charade it was. As things stood, however, practically nobody got the reference—as bold as it was and as obvious as it should have been.

The shooting had taken place in Colorado, in a city named Aurora (which, by way, is

the birthplace of Skull & Bones member and 2004 Democratic Presidential Candidate John Kerry, as well as the home of Buckley Air Force Base). Unfortunately, many Americans would only have recognized that name as belonging to the Marvel Comics character who is the sister of Northstar and the former lover of Sasquatch (she has also had a relationship with Wild Child)—or, God forbid, as the title character from Disney's *Sleeping Beauty*.

Aurora, however, is also the name of the Roman goddess of the dawn. In Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet* (I.i), Montague says of his lovesick son Romeo

But all so soon as the all-cheering sun
Should in the furthest east begin to draw
The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,
Away from the light steals home my heavy son…

More pertinently to our discussion, though, is that Aurora was also known as the Mother of Lucifer (the Latin word for Venus), the dawn star—Lucifer, the Light Bearer, born of the dawn, *the Son of Aurora*.

He's Such a Joker

Likewise, if more Americans pre-Black-Christmas had put their comic books down long enough to actually read something of substance, they might have learned that The Joker is not just Batman's arch nemesis, but is also a prime example of the evil clown—which has been called an icon of our times—whose roots lie in the archetypal trickster figure (think Thoth or Janus). They might have understood the relevance of this occult reference and properly viewed it as an invocation of these deities and their malevolent nature.

And if they'd really been serious about removing their heads from their backsides, who knows, our fellow citizens might have even discovered that The Joker[1] is also a persona, or alter (short for alternate personality), utilized in advanced mind-control programming. They might have even come to the realization that the entire incident had nothing whatsoever to do with Batman, and everything to do with keeping them in a state of constant fear and confusion. But such was not to be.

No, Seriously

In retrospect, it probably would have been just *way too much* to ask of the general public to get their faces out of their iPhones and iPads and consider the date on which the slaughter occurred. Having already missed the Mother of Lucifer and the Trickster, why would they have bothered to notice that July 20th is, on the Satanic calendar, the start of the Grand Climax, which, among other things, requires human sacrifice? I mean, there are all the ingredients for a nice public ritual sitting out on the table, and everyone just walks right past asking, What's for supper?

Since they didn't have a clue about The Joker as a mind-control programming tool, they had no idea that when James Holmes told police that he was The Joker, he was entirely serious. He wasn't referring to the Batman villain, or even

Suspicious Minds

Holmes was allegedly dressed as a police SWAT officer—the bad guy dressed as one of the good guys, an intentional and purposefully-harmful reversal of expectations and meaning (where have we seen that before?)—except that the assailant was also wearing a gas mask. *No one actually saw his face as he did the shooting.*

In any case, movie goers had at first assumed that the figure dressed in black battle gear was part of some special gimmick related to the movie, until, that is, he began firing live rounds. *Confuse them, defy their expectations, then slaughter them*.

Of course, the classic reports of multiple shooters emerged almost immediately from eyewitnesses, conflicting with official accounts of a lone-wolf assassin. How ironic, too, various observers commented, that the worst mass shooting in U.S. history took place less than 20 miles from Columbine, site of the deadliest shooting at an American high school. *Yeah, what a f*cking coincidence.*

It was probably just happenstance, too, that the shooting took place less than 20 miles from the Denver International Airport, which with its bizarre murals and Masonic symbols, plays a key role in many New World Order conspiracy theories (according to some, there are miles of secret tunnels and numerous well-appointed bunkers beneath the airport). *Aurora, gateway city to Denver, Capitol of the New World Order?*

Finally, recalling the multiple drills on both 9/11 and 7/7 that involved wildly-similar, if not identical, scenarios to those which unfolded (and, in a number of instances, the actual locations where the real events occurred), you won't be at all surprised to learn that on the same day that the Aurora massacre took place, Rocky Vista University College of Osteopathic Medicine in nearby Parker, Colorado, held specialized classes in disaster life-support for 150 second-year medical students that included the scenario of a mass shooting at a movie theater. "The irony is amazing, just amazing," commented Rocky Vista Dean Dr. Bruce Dubin in an interview following the shooting. *Amazing, my ass—there's always a drill.*

to The-Joker-as-Trickster—he meant exactly what he said: "I'm the Joker." Holmes persona was that of the programmed alter called "The Joker," which was activated either to perpetrate the worst mass shooting in American history, or to serve as the innocent patsy for the same.

INVOLUNTARY PARTICIPANTS?

As with Jared Loughner, the alleged shooter in the Gabby Giffords incident, the suspect in this case didn't simply look psychotic, but had the appearance and behavior of someone who'd been pumped full of a cocktail of psychotropic drugs. In his police photo and in subsequent court appearances, Holmes appeared to be completely dissociated from reality.

He had reportedly been seeing a psychiatrist, Dr. Lynne Fenton, to whom Holmes sent a notebook containing all sorts of incriminating writings and drawings (how convenient). The doctor herself apparently had an interesting background, as well, with some conspiracy researchers claiming that she had connections with government mind-control programs. (If you'll recall, Loughner was near-obsessed with the subject of government mind control and appeared to be drugged out of his gourd in his own mug shot.)

In light of these observations, it is of particular interest that in November 2011, lawyers for alleged assassin Sirhan Sirhan argued in federal court that he "was an involuntary participant in the crimes being committed because he was subjected to sophisticated hypno programming and memory implantation techniques which rendered him un-

CG-5-68 LOS ANGELES POLICE
J
BK 495 139
-68

Movies and Mind Control: A Brief History

L. Frank Baum, author of *The Wizard of Oz*, was an ardent occultist and an initiate in the Theosophic Society, and his tale of Dorothy and Toto was rich in esoteric references and occult symbology. So much so, in fact, that if conspiracy theorists' descriptions of U.S. intelligence mind-control programs (such as MK-Ultra, Project Bluebird, etc.) are accurate, the film was one of a number of motion pictures chosen to provide a thematic foundation for their trauma-based mind-control experiments in the 1940s (and beyond).

The *Wizard of Oz*, and other similar films such as *Alice in Wonderland*, are reportedly used by programmers to create a "common programming matrix" utilizing the movies' themes, imagery and music. Often referred to as Monarch programming, this approach allows handlers to create triggers in subjects' minds enabling access to multiple levels of their personality, which have been split through a process known as dissociation—the result of systematic and highly-traumatic physical and psychological torture, often involving terrifying occult rituals. "Over the rainbow," or "through the looking glass," is where the subjects must go in order to escape the unbearable pain being inflicted upon them. Once a split in the core personality is achieved, alter personas can be programmed through audio and visual aids.

able to consciously control his thoughts and actions at the time the crimes were being committed," according to court papers.

So if Loughner or Holmes wants to lodge a complaint about being forcibly subjected to mind-control techniques, they'll have to get in line behind Sirhan, who's been there quite a while. *Please pass the Haldol.*

CONSPIRACIES'R'US

The plethora of conspiracy theories that have already cropped up around this incident is seemingly indicative (as with other black ops, including 9/11) of misinformation and disinformation campaigns associated with psychological warfare. Sure, there probably *are* genuine tantalizing and ingeniously-devised connections to a variety of suspicion-arousing government agencies and educational institutions, but the sheer number of the conspiracy theories would also tend to support the presence of an active nonsense-dissemination program.

Without attempting to determine the validity or significance of the following claims in any way, we can note in advance the presence of numerous pieces of information that *do* seem to fit within the pattern of evidence and/or disinformation surrounding similar events:

- James Holmes had been a research intern at the Salk Institute at the University of California at San Diego, which had previously partnered with DARPA (the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency) on projects related to DARPA's "Peak Soldier Performance Program." Some consider this "Super Soldier" program as part of a broader, secretly-coordinated effort that is moving the world ever-closer towards an era of trans-humanism.

- Holmes' paternal grandfather had connections to the CIA through the Army Language School, now the Defense Language Institute.

- Dan Oates, Aurora's chief of police at the time of the massacre, worked as head of intelligence for the New York Police Department up until almost immediately before the attacks of September 11, 2001.

- Holmes went to tremendous effort to rig his entire apartment with numerous explosive devices (including more than 30 homemade grenades and 10 gallons of gasoline), then very uncharacteristically left loud music playing, ostensibly to annoy neighbors and attract the authorities, who would then be blown to smithereens. Yet, when apprehended, Holmes *told* police that he had booby-trapped his apartment (he shoots 70 people and then has a change of heart?)

- James Holmes' father, Robert, was involved with fraud investigation, loosely paralleling a plotline in *The Dark Knight Rises* in which the character Bane secures software that he uses to expose Wall Street fraud. Robert Holmes was supposedly scheduled to testify before Congress on a major banking scandal (pphhht), and also worked earlier in his career for HNC, a company with DARPA connections (hmmm).

- Holmes reportedly told police that he'd taken 100mg of the painkiller Vicodin before the shootings. This same drug was found in the blood of actor Heath Ledger, who portrayed The Joker in *The Dark Knight*, following what was officially determined to be an accidental overdose in 2008 (conspiracy theorists think otherwise, but of course they would, wouldn't they?).

Last but not least, James Holmes was reportedly awarded a $26,000 stipend by the National Institutes of Health to help cover graduate school expenses. Some conspiracy researchers have claimed that Holmes used these funds to purchase all of the necessary equipment for his shooting rampage—an unlikely assertion, but good fodder for the rumor mill just the same (and isn't that what really counts?).

WHAT'S IN A NAME? (AURORA EDITION)

Lee Harvey Oswald and Jared Lee Loughner, Sirhan Sirhan, Jack Ruby—sometimes within the names of the alleged perpetrators of infamous crimes (that in many instances turn out to have been the result of active conspiracies), we find odd similarities, interesting clues and seeming hints. Sometimes our intuitions about these things turn out to be nothing after all, and sometimes this line of inquiry leads us places we'd never expect.

James Eagan Holmes—nothing sinister-sounding or terribly odd about that name. So why bother dissecting it? Given that we already suspect that Holmes was a patsy, it's interesting to note that James means "he who supplants (takes the place of)." Eagan as a boy's name is Irish or Gaelic in origin and means "fire," and Holmes is a variant of the surname Holme, which is derived from a name for someone who lived next to a holly tree (from the Middle English *holm*).

Holmes was either set up to take the fall for the real shooter(s), or was subconsciously coerced into undertaking the task himself. The entire incident has all the hallmarks of the type of occult ritual frequented upon the American public by the Illuminati, whose symbol is the Torch of Illumination (or the Fire of Prometheus, take your pick). The whole thing looks like any number of other media-generated occult affairs/illusions—a Hollywood creation, if you will, with the name "Hollywood" deriving from the traditional use of the wood of a holly tree in the making of magic wands.

Holmes was a patsy, set up by the Illuminati, who brought us this dark Hollywood production—we already knew that much. Having the patsy's name spell it out for us and using *his* signature as an Illuminati signature? That's a real nice touch.

FORESHADOWING BLACK CHRISTMAS

On July 27th, 2012, one week to the day after the Colorado shooting, a giant inflatable Lord Voldemort *did* rise quite literally at the Opening Ceremony of the London Olympics. Considering this fact, the hidden message conveyed by the Colorado shooting, "Born of Aurora, the Dark Knight Rises," might seem to have a dual meaning.

As an occult statement, Lucifer Rises is fairly straightforward; yet, it raises the question, When? Are we to understand that Lucifer arose on July 20th, 2012, or that the Aurora tragedy foreshadowed or foretold the rising of the Inflatable Dark Lord a week later—or both? And what the hell does any of this have to do with Black Christmas?

Shooting up a theatre full of innocent civilians is all sport and fun and racks up points with the Big Guy to be certain (as does sending aloft a Super-Sized Blow-Up Beezlebub in front of a global television audience of billions), but neither of these acts is by any means a fitting manner in which to welcome the very presence of the Dark Lord into our world. *That* requires far more thought and planning, and a far greater sacrifice—along the lines of a nuclear holocaust.

So, where's the connection to Black Christmas? Where do we often find these figurative connections but encapsulated in real connective structures, roadways: U.S. Route 77, Arizona State Highway 77, U.S. Route 93. And just what happens to run almost directly in front of the Century 16 Theater—Interstate 225, I-225.

I-225? Come on. To get 12/25 out of that, you have to drop the dash and make the capitalized "i" a one: I-225→I225→1225→12/25. Not exactly algebra, but a bit of a stretch all the same, isn't it? Actually, it's not that much of a stretch—I-225 as a symbolic marker for 12/25, the biggest date in Illuminati history…I mean, unless you're grading super-strict, you have to give points for that. If you know the answer is 12/25, and the question is, What does I-225 represent?, you'd have to be an absolute dipshit not to get that one right. (Hey, if you want another Aurora-Christmas connection, try this one: Christmas Carols have been utilized quite extensively in the programming of Monarch mind-control subjects…*Jingle bells, shotgun shells, shoot 'em in the face...*)

The Joker

The Joker is based on the Tarot card, the Fool, one of the 22 Trump cards that make up the Major Arcana. The Fool is often numbered as zero (logical associations: counting down to zero, Ground Zero.)

So, we're supposed to believe that the full message conveyed by this occult ritual was: the Son of Aurora, the Dark Lord, rises on 12/25? *Well, he did, after all, didn't he?*

Not Believing is Not Seeing

Aurora was a mass sacrifice, it was a shadow-government-orchestrated mind-control operation, it was dark satire and blatant mockery—it was everything we've come to expect, and yet, we never put the pieces of the puzzle together for a lack of real knowledge, and, as importantly, for a lack of belief in the existence of *real* evil.

We cannot see the New World Order if we do not believe it exists: it is this truth wherein our adversaries rest completely assured of their victory.

> *"The best political weapon is the weapon of terror. Cruelty commands respect. Men may hate us. But, we don't ask for their love; only for their fear."*
>
> —Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler

I Love You

The Century 16 Theatre where the shooting took place in Aurora is located at 14300 E. Alameda Avenue. Century 16…100, 16…116—if you were so inclined, you might see that as the inverse of 911. But that's a stretch if you ask me, and in any case you're missing the real message here.

According to *UrbanDictionary.com*, 143 means "I love you': 1 represents the single letter "I", 4 represents the four letters in "love", and 3 "you". American R&B/soul singer-songwriter Musiq even wrote a song entitled "143":

> …'Cause listen
> There aren't many more ways and words that I can say
> So I chose to tell you how I feel in a numerical way
> Got so tired of trying to find the most complicated ways
> To say it to you so I simplified and broke it down in 143
> And that means I love you
> Sugar, you know, yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah yeah

Interestingly enough, the origin of using 143 as numerical shorthand for "I love you" lies in *Mr. Rogers' Neighborhood*, where Fred Rogers first demonstrated the concept. According to a *TV Guide* article, Rogers was so taken with the idea that he maintained his weight at exactly 143 pounds for the last thirty years of his life.

143, "I love you". 14300, "I love you" x 100. *It's a beautiful day in the neighborhood …*

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

COUP DE GRAS: THE PHOENIX AND THE 33

You can't have this kind of war. There just aren't enough bulldozers to scrape the bodies off the streets.

—Dwight D. Eisenhower, remarking on the use of nuclear weapons

We're all exhausted and running low on patience: the road to Phoenix has been a long and ugly one, littered with bodies and ill omens galore; yet, if there's a single ounce of doubt in your mind as to who's responsible for the 2012 Black Christmas XXX Galactic MegaRitual, this one image will put you out of your misery—although not immediately, and not for the reasons you might expect.

At this point, you may be feeling a little like poor Ralphie Parker in the holiday classic movie, *A Christmas Story*, who drinks gallons of Ovaltine so that he can get his Little Orphan Annie secret decoder pen, only to decipher the encrypted message and discover that it's *"A crummy commercial? Son of a bitch!"*

You work all the way through this perverted grimoire with the promise of revelation—of absolute proof—and all you get is a lousy two-headed eagle? Patience.

TWO HEADS ARE BETTER THAN ONE

The eagle itself has been used from time immemorial to represent such ideas as nobility and just rulership, and the double-headed eagle is a common symbol in heraldry and vexillology (the study of the history, symbolism and usage of flags), being most closely associated with the Byzantine Empire, the Holy Roman Empire and Russia.

The symbol of the double-headed eagle has been in use for millennia, and has been found in the archaeological remains of both the Sumerian and Hittite civilizations. In Byzantine heraldry, the two heads of the eagle represent the dual sovereignty of the Emperor (secular and religious) and/or the dominance of the Byzantine Emperors over both East and West. In the heraldry of the Holy Roman Empire, the heads represented the Church and the State.

Use by Freemasons

32
FREEMASONS

The Double-Headed Eagle of Lagash, as it is known within the Craft, is used as an emblem by the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. Some researchers believe that Masonic use of the double-headed eagle derives from an early European rite of degrees called the Order of the Royal Secret, from which the Scottish Rite descended, which used the symbol as a heraldic device, having likely appropriated it from the Roman Empire.

Writing in *The Chain of Union: Journal of Symbolic and Masonic Studies*, Pierre Mollier informs us in his article entitled, “The Double-Headed Eagle: Iconographic Sources of the Masonic Symbol,” that “the double-headed eagle, an image of chivalry and sovereignty belonging to the shared imagery of Western symbolism … appeared in Masonry in France in the early years of the 1760s with the degree of Knight Kadosh or Grand Inspector Grand Elect (G.I.G.E.).”[1]

But this tells us nothing of why they selected the symbol or what it represents to them.

Two Heads are Worse than One

It would be easy to understand the eagle’s appeal to the Freemasons as a sign of rulership, particularly in its two-headed form signifying dominance over East and West, church and state. But we must be careful not to confuse the symbol and its exoteric (public, outer) interpretation with its esoteric (inner, secret) interpretation and what it means within the context of Freemasonry.

What the double-headed eagle represents to the uninitiated may be different from what it represents to rank-and-file Freemasons, which may again be different from what it signifies within the highest degrees of Freemasonry—which may be *yet again* different from what it means to the orchestrators of

Black Christmas, who have not yet been proven beyond a reasonable doubt to be one-and-the-same with the previous category.

Birds of a Feather?

We are already familiar with the Egyptian bennu, which was that ancient culture's representation of the mythical phoenix. Do we find here a similar substitution of the real for the mythical, of a real bird for a mythical one: have we any *contemporary* sources of support for drawing such a conclusion? To be certain—none other than Manly P. Hall in his book, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, tells us that, "The American eagle upon the Great Seal [of the United States] is but a conventionalized phoenix."

The Freemason's double-headed eagle could in actuality then be a double-headed *phoenix*, and we are well aware of the symbolic significance of its single-headed cousin: as a sign of immortality in the ancient Mystery Schools, as a "sign of the secret orders of the ancient world and of the initiate of those orders" (Hall, *The Phoenix*), and as a sign of one "twice-born"—even, to some, as a sign of Lucifer himself (and his followers, those twice-born of hell).

Yet, before drawing any firm conclusions, let's examine additional elements of this symbol.

33
DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

The 33 and the Triangle

Writing in *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, Manly P. Hall asks the reader to "… consider the number 33. The first temple of Solomon stood for thirty-three years in its pristine splendor… Also King David ruled for thirty-three years in Jerusalem; the Masonic Order is divided into thirty-three symbolic degrees; there are thirty-three segments in the human spinal column; and Jesus was crucified in the thirty-third year of His life." (There were also 33 passengers on Flight 93…which departed from Gate A17.)

The number 33 having tremendous occult significance and the highest degree of Freemasonry being the 33rd, we find the number emblazoned upon the emblem of that degree. Not only that, but we also find it contained within a triangle, representative of the pyramid, which, if you'll remember from *Most Dangerous*, may be considered as the ultimate symbol of the Mysteries, and as a symbol of illumination.

DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

33
DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

Above the bird's two heads we observe a crown, and in its claws, a sword, which would seem to have the obvious connotations of sovereignty and rule-by-force. We also find a banner bearing the phrase, *Deus Meumque Jus*, which is generally translated as, "God and my right" or, less frequently, as "God and my moral rightness."

Freemasons would assert that this refers to their right to worship and respect God in any manner they so choose, as well as to their duty to defend and respect the religious beliefs of others.

Yet, might an alternative interpretation be, *My rights are granted by my god*; or, much more sinisterly, *My rights are granted by my god, Lucifer, who gives me license to do whatever I wish*? This would certainly be in keeping with the distorted concept of liberty we encountered in *Most Dangerous*: not "liberty and justice for all," but rather the liberty to do as we damn well please—freedom *from* God, granted by the light-bearer who frees us from the unnatural constraints of artificial morality. *"Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law."*

THERE WILL BE BLOOD

A double-headed phoenix, the number 33 … Phoenix, Arizona, *lying along the 33rd parallel* … Charleston, South Carolina, birthplace of the Freemasonic "Mother Lodge of the World," (and the site of the beginning of the Civil War at Fort Sumter in Charleston Harbor, as well as of the Concelebration of the enthroning of Lucifer in the Vatican) likewise at the 33rd parallel … the Trinity nuclear test site in the Jornada del Muerto ("Journey of Death") desert of New Mexico, on the 33rd parallel … Harry S. Truman, 33rd Degree Freemason and 33rd President, who authorized the use of nuclear weapons on civilian populations … Nagasaki and Hiroshima, straddling the 33rd parallel …

Freemasons, nuclear weapons, and the 33rd parallel—they go together, well, like Christmas and Santa Claus, a notion reinforced by former Sirhan Sirhan attorney Day Williams, who writes in "Masons and Mystery at the 33rd Parallel": "If a life is taken close to the … 33rd Parallel, this fits with the Masons' demonic mythology in which they demonstrate their worldly power by spilling human blood at a predetermined locale."

Yet, before we grab the torches and pitchforks and impugn the entire venerable institution of Freemasonry, we must still answer the question: is that damn bird a double-headed phoenix or not? Because if not, our whole line of reasoning begins to break down.

The Symbol's True Identity

In "The Two-Headed Eagle of the Ancient and Accepted Rite," Masonic writer Dr. Chetwode Crawley reaffirms the antiquity of this symbol, writing,

> This Double-headed Eagle of Lagash is the oldest Royal Crest in the world. As time rolled on, it passed from the Sumerians to the men of Akhad, from the men of Akhad to the Hittites, from the denizens of Asia Minor to the Seljukian Sultans, from whom it was brought by Crusaders to the Emperors of the East and West, whose successors to-day are the Hapsburgs and the Romanoffs, as well as to the Masonic "Emperors of the East and West," whose successors to-day are the Supreme Councils, 33°, that have inherited the insignia of the Rite of Perfection.[2]

Others, including the illustrious Albert Pike, held the view that the origins of the two-headed bird ultimately derived from the arcane symbolism of alchemy, which portrays a wide variety of two-headed beings often symbolizing the union of opposites. (One might also think of the symbol as representing two-birds-in-one, such as the Shen-Shen and the Rech from Chapter 12, but I just sorta made that up so you shouldn't put a lot of stock in that interpretation.)

> The double-headed eagle as an alchemical symbol illustrates the hermetic and alchemical axiom SOLVE et COAGULA," writes 32° Masonic author Gregory H. Peters in "*Solve et Coagula*: Alchemical Symbolism of the Double-Headed Eagle," which is, "the process of separating the elements and then bringing them together after purification and consecration.[3]

Peters continues, highlighting the ultimate aim of alchemy, the transmutation of man: "The double headed-eagle, as the ensign of the Alchemical Rebus or Stone of the Philosophers, symbolizes this process, the magnum opus or Great Work of spiritual regeneration. Through its unification of opposites and association with alchemical Fire, the path of regeneration and ascent up the Tree of Life is indicated."

The double-headed *black* eagle, to be precise, was indeed a principal motif in early alchemical literature, at times being equated with the Philosopher's Stone and thus properly viewed as a symbol of the Great Work itself—and the two-headed bird of the Freemasons is, in fact, a double-headed black eagle, *not* a double-headed phoenix, despite Dan Brown's repeated assertions in *The Lost Symbol,* in which he references the double-headed phoenix as the emblem of the highest degree of Freemasonry a reported 13 times. (The Freemasonic bird, particularly in the United States, is frequently represented as a two-headed bald eagle for obvious reasons—don't get hung up on it.)

So, *if the glove don't fit* ... not so fast.

A Dark Design

The symbolism is too perfect, the design too darkly beautiful, too brilliant—this is not by chance.

The phoenix and Phoenix, the 33 and the 33rd parallel: this was a symbol *brought to life*. We can be certain that the double-headed eagle represented a double-headed phoenix—but if not to the Freemasons, then to whom?

The phoenix is a symbol of illumination, of the illumined ones, the Illuminati, long rumored to have taken shelter within the upper echelons of Freemasonry to escape persecution and detection by cloaking themselves within the fraternity's hierarchy of secrecy: A Luciferic elite existing among the highest

Das hailig Römisch reich
mit sampt seinen glidern.
Gedruckt zů Augspurg durch
Dauid de Necker Formschneider

degree of the Craft (though not involving all 33rd degree Masons by any means)—just as was said to be the case with Albert Pike's supposedly-fictitious Palladian Rite, and just as is said to be the case within the highest levels of the Vatican.

The two-headed phoenix is *their* symbol, with its own meaning, distinct from that of the double-headed black eagle that is its exoteric identity. It is a symbol within a symbol.

It bears the intent of two-faced Janus, domination by deception, with a twist: rule by duplicity *through* violence, and, more specifically—particularly with relation to 9/11 and Black Christmas—*through fire*. Fire is the transformative agent responsible for the demise of the phoenix at the end of its life-cycle, which prepares the way for the creature to rise anew. Fire is light and heat, the gift of Prometheus to mankind: it represents the true light of illumination bequeathed to mankind by Lucifer, the true universal savior.

The Handwriting's on the Wall

The double-headed phoenix might also be considered as a signature in both space and time, with a formulation along these lines: the phoenix –> Christ –> Phoenix, AZ; 33 –> the number of Christ, his age at death–> 33rd parallel…or something like that. In any case, both the phoenix and the 33 reference Christ, and they both reference Phoenix, AZ: Christ/Christmas + Phoenix. Oh, and fire: phoenix –> fire; thus, Christ/Christmas + Phoenix + all-consuming fire. Think of it as shorthand for psychopathic slaughterers of the innocent.

Considering the above, and that we already know this to be a XXX MegaRitual, what are we to make of this piece of graffiti, found in numerous locations throughout downtown Phoenix in the aftermath of Black Christmas: "PhoeniXmas"?

First, who the hell goes around scrawling graffiti in a nuclear hot zone? Second, it doesn't on the surface seem to say anything—what's the point? What anarchist punk is going to risk his life to scrawl meaningless messages on blackened concrete walls?

Who, then? You know who, because this is no pointless spray-painted adolescent brain fart: PhoeniX + X-Mas = PhoeniXmas, pinpointing the location of Black Christmas, again in both space and time…*X marks the spot!* (Oh, and by the way, you can X Christmas off the calendar for the foreseeable future.)

As the Luciferic Illuminati pervert and distort all religious symbols to serve and reflect their sinister intentions and purposes, here, too, have they subsumed the emblem of the Freemason's highest order, the double-headed eagle, employing it as the ultimate symbol of death and destruction.

The Not-So-Great Work

In the legend, out of the flames arises a new phoenix, and out of the flames and chaos of Phoenix has arisen the long-awaited New World Order: this is not the redeeming Biblical resurrection, but a resurrection of evil in its full hideous glory.

They invoke the opposite of the Great Work, the inverse of the spiritual transformation of mankind: they seek to thwart God's plan for the progressive enlightenment of man's soul. This concerns the resurrection of man all right, but the re-creation of mankind as technologically-, pharmacologically-, genetically-manipulated mind-controlled slaves, awaiting the bidding of their dark masters. This is the demonic transmutation of the species through fear, terror, torment and torture, the establishment of a mechanistic Ahrimanic paradise.

Theirs is a supernaturally-informed scientific system of oppression that could actually be viewed as an advanced form of witchcraft, rooted in alchemy and magic, designed for a single unified purpose: full-spectrum dominance, total control of humanity's physical, psychological, emotional and spiritual selves.

THY WILL BE DONE

According to the age-old plan of the Illuminati, God shall be diminished and Lucifer exalted in the minds of man, which is only fitting from their perspective, as the Bible is a fiction, and in truth, Lucifer *is* God. It is they who are the true light-workers, setting mankind free from the tyranny of the mind Christianity has held them under for 2,000 years.

They offer us a new take on the hermetic wisdom, As Above, So Below. Their interpretation is more readily understood by reversing, as is their practice, this sacred formulation, yielding: As Below, So Above—as in hell, so on earth. *Thy will be done, on earth, as it is in hell.*

THE MASCOT OF BLACK CHRISTMAS

The emblem of the 33rd degree of Freemasonry was ingeniously employed by the Illuminati, hiding behind a veil of tradition and secrecy, as an in-plain-sight signature of authorship, an in-your-face claim of responsibility for the heinous crimes of Black Christmas.

To them, the Double-Headed Black Eagle of Lagash—as it represents a monstrous two-faced, ill-tempered, self-immolating, self-resurrecting rapacious beast of prey—is truly a fitting symbol for Lucifer, the Light-bearer, reborn, newly ascendant after having been unjustly cast down from heaven in the days of old.

The Black Phoenix, if you will, was the mascot of Black Christmas, a celebration of the Dawning of the Age of Lucifer, involving a mass sacrifice by fire—and not just any old fire, but rather the fire of creation, the fire at the heart of all matter, the fire at the heart of the sun, *nuclear* fire. Using the power of the sun to perform a ritual mega-sacrifice in honor of the first dawn rising of the sun of the new Great Age—and, more importantly, in honor of the True Illuminator of Mankind, for which our sun is merely a symbol, a pale representation of the full glory of Lucifer—now *that's* occult genius.

The phoenix, once a symbol of Christ, was destroyed in the "person" of Phoenix, Arizona, and born anew as the black phoenix, the symbol of Lucifer and the New World Order. This was the Killing of Christ, without the subsequent resurrection and ascension; the message: there is no hope in Christ, Lucifer is the re-born Savior.

Universal Motion, the Great Secret and the Royal Secret

In regard to the "Sublime Mysteries of the Illuminati's Double-headed Eagle," Texe Marrs wrote that "Illuminists refer to the 'Universal Motion' of forces that will annihilate the world as we know it, giving rise to the New Age New Order led by Satan and his Illuminati chiefs."

The long-held "Great Secret" of the illumined ones is, in fact, that the God of the Mysteries, the God of cunning, lies and deceit, the two-faced deity, is Lucifer in disguise; and the exalted "Royal Secret," the Illuminati's core doctrine, their cardinal teaching, is that out of bloody, universal chaos will ultimately arise equilibrium and the Holy Empire of the Illuminati, to be ruled by the cabalistic Messiah, the Anti-Christ.[4]

Have we not, God help us, witnessed the fulfillment of these things in our time?

No Way Out

What now, fellow travelers? Just because we brave few have pulled back the curtain on the wizard in the Land of AZ doesn't mean he's lost any of his power.

Reality, harsh reality, dominates—our precious, hard-won knowledge has no audience, and no means to reach them even if there were one. No one now cares, or is able to care, who did what or knew what when, who's responsible and who's not. *Just protect us.*

Absolute uncertainty and total fear grip the mass mind. Black Christmas was a massive trauma-based Monarch-Green mind-control operation, psychological warfare on a global scale. And it was a complete success: the collective consciousness has been splintered into so many parts that it could never form a coherent thought, much less a thought of resistance; it's many individual split

Now We Are All Sons of Bitches

J. Robert Oppenheimer, often called the “father of the atomic bomb” for his key role in the Manhattan Project, recalled that while watching the first test of a nuclear weapon at the Trinity site in New Mexico, he was reminded of a line from the Bhagavad Gita, a Hindu scripture: *Now I am become Death, the destroyer of worlds*.

After witnessing the incredible explosion, test director Kenneth Bainbridge turned to Oppenheimer and established a legendary saying of his own, commenting, “Now we are all sons of bitches,” which Oppenheimer later stated was the best thing anyone said immediately following the test.

“Trinity” was the project code name for the first detonation of a nuclear device, and although the exact origin of the name is somewhat unclear, it is often attributed to Robert Oppenheimer as a reference to the poetry of John Donne. In 1962, in his response to a letter inquiring about the matter, Oppenheimer wrote,

> *Why I chose the name is not clear, but I know what thoughts were in my mind. There is a poem of John Donne, written just before his death, which I know and love. From it a quotation: “As West and East / In all flatt Maps—and I am one—are one, / So death doth touch the Resurrection.” That still does not make a Trinity, but in another, better known devotional poem Donne opens, “Batter my heart, three person’d God.”*

Now, you can take the man at his word if you want to (I personally can’t make a whole lot of sense out of his comment), but it is certainly worth noting that it was Oppenheimer himself who recorded for posterity his thoughts at the moment of the explosion itself: “Now I am become Death, the destroyer of worlds.”

This fact is of more than mere passing interest, considering that the third person of the Hindu “Great Trinity” is Śhiva the destroyer, whose symbol, like Satan, is the trident, a fire symbol. Remember, too, from *Most Dangerous*, that “The illustration for The Tower [tarot card] in Aleister Crowley’s *Book of Thoth* shows the eye of Shiva opening at the top: reality is the dream of Shiva, and when he awakens, all is destroyed.”

Could the Father of the Atomic Bomb truly not remember where he got the inspiration for the project name, or perhaps he just thought it better to keep it to himself. Might Oppenheimer have been drawing on the same source of inspiration as the planners of other “major projects”: Dealey Plaza is less than 3,000 feet from the Trinity River; Trinity Church (on Trinity Place) in downtown Manhattan is less than 1,000 feet from where the Twin Towers stood; and, wouldn’t ya know, the Trinity Cathedral at 100 W. Roosevelt Street in downtown Phoenix was well within the blast radius (although it was not completely destroyed and, again, as with 44 Monroe, its hulking shell was frequently used by the media as a visual reference point in the now-unrecognizable cityscape).

In the end, after all the mockery, all the pain and suffering, all the occult devices and rituals, all the carnage, perhaps Trinity test director Kenneth Bainbridge’s immortal words are in fact the best that we can hope for in describing our own situation: *Now we are all sons of bitches.*

Jörg Dauerer

The tower of the Trinity Church framed by the twin-towers of the World Trade Center in downtown Manhattan, New York. This photo was taken on October of 1998.[1]

---

[1] http://www.dauerer.de/nae_/ny_downtown/ny_trinity_wtc.html

selves, created through mass trauma, now individually await their instructional programming—*I'll do whatever you say, just don't let them hurt me.*

As enlightening as our post-apocalyptic journey of discovery may have been, it gains us nothing. The machinery of tyranny is running full tilt—it will grind us up and spit us out if we dare open our mouths. At this point, mere knowledge is worthless: resistance *is* futile.

All that we can do now that we could not do before is to call our masters by name. We have once again participated in the after-the-fact "Revelation of the Method," further enabling, as Michael Hoffman warned us about in *Most Dangerous*, our own enslavement.

Foreknowledge: would it have done us any good? Likely not, but it would have been nice to have the opportunity to find out. Now it's too late. *We have no ruby slippers.*

BONUS CHAPTERS

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

PRESCOTT, GERONIMO AND SKULL & BONES

Less than 100 miles north of Phoenix lies Prescott, Arizona, named in honor of prominent 19th century historian William Hickling Prescott. In 1869, James G. Sheldon, a settler from Maine, was killed by Apaches at Camp Willow Grove, located west of the town of Prescott.

During World War I, six young men from Yale University were serving as Army volunteers at Fort Sill, Oklahoma, which is home to the Apache Indian Prisoner of War Cemetery. During their time there, it is alleged that they stole the skull, and at least one bone (along with a few other items) of famed Apache warrior Geronimo. Remembered as one of the last Native American leaders to hold out against the US government, Geronimo evaded capture for years and eventually surrendered in Skeleton Canyon, Arizona, in 1886.

These six men were all members of the Yale secret society Skull & Bones, among them a purported distant relative of William Prescott himself: his name, Prescott Sheldon Bush, who later became a U.S. Senator and was the father of President George H.W. Bush and the grandfather of President George W. Bush, both Bonesmen themselves.

While it is not known whether Prescott Sheldon Bush was also a distant relative of James Sheldon (after whom a major street in Prescott was named), avenging his death decades after the fact, what is known is that Geronimo's great-grandson, Harlyn Geronimo of Mescalero, New Mexico, appealed to Prescott Bush's grandson, George W., while he was President, requesting his help in securing the return of his relative's remains. Speaking to a reporter covering the story, Mr. Geronimo said,

> I am requesting his help in getting the remains—the skull and the femur—returned, if they were taken. According to our traditions the remains of this sort, especially in this state when the grave was desecrated ... need to be reburied with the proper rituals. To return the dignity and let his spirits rest in peace ... is important in our tradition.

Sorry, Harlyn, but Skull & Bones reportedly has a tradition of its own, and it involves kissing a skull, referred to as "Geronimo."

TRUE OR FALSE

In 2009, a lawsuit was filed on behalf of individuals claiming to be Geronimo's descendants—against, among others, Barack Obama, Robert Gates and Skull & Bones—requesting the return of Geronimo's remains, although the plaintiffs' attorney acknowledged that he had no hard proof that the story of their theft was even true.

Various investigators have rejected the story as false, and a Fort Sill spokesman stated, "There is no evidence to indicate that the bones are anywhere but in the grave site." The chairman of the Fort Sill Apache tribe of Oklahoma also calls the story a hoax.

However, in 1986, a former chairman of the San Carlos Apache had received an anonymous letter with a photograph and copy of a ledger claiming that Skull & Bones was indeed in possession of the remains. The Bonesmen's attorney denied the claim and said the ledger was a hoax, and then, quite oddly, offered to return what appeared to be the skull of a child, which was refused.

Then, in 2006, a letter written in 1918 by a Skull & Bones member was discovered which appeared to openly claim credit for the theft:

> The skull of the worthy Geronimo the Terrible, exhumed from its tomb at Fort Sill by your club... is now safe inside the [society's] tomb and bone together with his well worn femurs, bit and saddle horn.

An Outrageous Insult

Regardless of whether Skull & Bones has Geronimo's remains or not, in 2011 the U.S. military decided that "Geronimo" would be a fitting codename for the raid to capture yet another highly-elusive fugitive from American justice, Osama bin Laden (some reports stated that the name referred to the overall operation; others, to bin Laden himself; and, yet others, to the act of killing or capturing the terrorist leader).

Many Native Americans understandably objected to the selection of the name for the operation, with the president of one advocacy group observing, "It's how deeply embedded the 'Indian as enemy' is in the collective mind of America," and Harlyn Geronimo telling the Senate Commission on Indian Affairs that it was an "outrageous insult."

The End of the bin Laden Fairy Tale

What no one realized was that "Operation Geronimo" was designed as an "outrageous insult" to *all of us*, and represented the closing of one of the main chapters in the whole 9/11 work of fiction, that of Osama bin Laden as the Islamic-radical boogeyman (CIA-trained, nonetheless, with family connections to the Bushes), whom the combined decade-long efforts of the largest and most-sophisticated intelligence services in the world had somehow failed to locate.

The partially-botched raid had all the tell-tale signs of being yet another made-for-reality-TV production, complete with continually-changing details and lies within lies (as well as related follow-up drama), from bin Laden being buried at sea "according to Muslim tradition," which it's sure the hell not, to Secretary of State Hilary Clinton claiming to be covering her mouth as she sneezed in a photo taken in one of the White House's situation rooms, when it was obvious she was somewhat aghast at something she was viewing.

UNITED STATES
SECRET SERVICE

Whether bin Laden was actually killed during the raid, or, as some conspiracy theorists assert, has been dead for years, the only thing that you can be sure of is that nothing was what it seemed to be, and you'll never know the real truth.

And if you start flapping your gums about it, you might end up like some of the members of Seal Team 6 that conducted the raid, who paid the price for their team members running their mouths about the inconsistencies in the official story, and found themselves—against normal operating procedure—on board an Army National Guard helicopter in Afghanistan, sent out on a mission (first it was fire-support for pinned-down soldiers, then it was search-and-destroy) during which their aircraft was hit by a rocket-propelled grenade, killing all aboard.

Not Worth Counting

Despite their cultural differences, one has to think that hard-core anti-illegal immigration champions Governor Jan Brewer and Sheriff Joe Arpaio would have gotten along fairly well with Geronimo, at least on this particular issue. Geronimo had his own problems with our south-of-the-border neighbors, and wrote in his 1905 autobiography (which you get the impression he may have titled himself), *Geronimo, My Life: the Autobiography of Geronimo*,

> I have killed many Mexicans; I do not know how many, for frequently I did not count them. Some of them were not worth counting. It has been a long time since then, but still I have no love for the Mexicans. With me they were always treacherous and malicious.

Apparently Geronimo wasn't big on political correctness, either.

So, keep your mouth shut, and remember: Operation Geronimo was just the end of one chapter in a fairy tale that doesn't end happily-ever-after, and those who brought us the production don't give a shit about offending Native Americans or anyone else.

"Geronimo," the idea of using the name of one slippery character to refer to another—that's just window dressing. The real purpose in the selection of that name, if you hadn't figured it out by now, was as yet another tip-of-the-hat to Skull & Bones and the Bush Family Crime Syndicate.

I Should Have Never Surrendered

In February 1909, Geronimo was thrown from his horse while riding home, and lay in the cold all night before being found the next day. He contracted pneumonia as a result, and while on his deathbed, expressed regret to his nephew over his decision to surrender to U.S. forces years earlier. His last words were reported to be, "I should have never surrendered. I should have fought until I was the last man alive."

So should we, by god, so should we.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR

BORN UNDER A BAD SIGN: THE YEAR OF THE SERPENT

BLACK FRIDAY

Thirteen, considered by many as the unluckiest of numbers, and by others as the number of the Devil himself. There are thirteen coils in a true hangman's noose and thirteen witches in a coven, sometimes referred to as a "Devil's dozen"—12 witches plus Satan. There are 13 stripes on the U.S. flag, and there were of course 13 original colonies.

In the Great Seal of the United States, both sides of which are reproduced on the reverse of the one-dollar bill, there are:

13 steps in the unfinished pyramid,
13 letters in "*E Pluribus Unum*,"
13 stars above the eagle,
13 bars on the shield,
13 leaves on the olive branch (as well as 13 olives), and
13 arrows.

There is even an officially-recognized phobia for the fear of the number 13, "triskaidekaphobia."

Of course, we're all familiar with Friday the 13th (fear of which is "friggatriskaidekaphobia"), the basis for which is supposedly rooted in an event involving the Knights Templar, a notion popularized in Dan Brown's *The Da Vinci Code*. As the tale goes, on Friday, October 13, 1307, France's Philip IV, who was deeply indebted to the Templars, executed a warrant against the Knights, hundreds of whom were arrested; Pope Clement V was also implicated in the scheme.

The Knights' Grand Master (their 23rd and last), Jacques de Molay, was among those arrested, and he and many of the others were tortured into making false confessions. When de Molay later retracted his confession, Philip had him slowly burned upon a scaffold on an island in the River Seine in Paris. Philip then used the previously-forced confessions to sentence 54 Templars to be burnt at the stake.

In *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry* by John J. Robinson, it is proposed that the Templars, who had been officially abolished by papal decree, subsequently went underground among masons in England and later developed into the Freemasons; regardless of whether this is true, the story of de Molay's defiance of his captors has been well-incorporated into Masonic lore.

So, Black Christmas as partial payback for Black Friday—who knows? But keep your eye on that 13.

THE 13TH SIGN

The first of the year 2011 saw a flurry of news coverage concerning the addition of a 13th Zodiacal sign, Ophiucus, the serpent-bearer. Various explanations were offered for this new sign, but the truth of the matter is that Ophiucus has been a recognized constellation for centuries. It's been right there all along, between (and slightly above) Sagittarius and Scorpio, the guardians of Galactic Center.

Now that fact alone should make your ears perk up, as we've just finished (well, not quite) dissecting the inner workings of a Galactic MegaRitual centered upon the Womb of Creation, or Skull Hill, or whatever you want to call it.

The addition of a 13th sign to the traditional Zodiac *at* Galactic Center, just in time for Galactic Alignment and the birth of the New Great Age—on the cusp of the 13th year of the 21st century, the first full year of the Great Age of Lucifer? *Now you're talkin'.*

BORN UNDER A BAD SIGN

The foot of Ophiucus stands upon the Cosmic Mountain and is one of the markers of Galactic Center. Ophiucus' true identity is that of Asclepius, the Greek god of healing, and Ophiucus ostensibly protects us from the harmful effects of the great snake, embodied in the constellation of Serpens (he also supposedly mitigates the injurious qualities of Scorpio). In traditional astrological iconography, Ophiucus appears to carry the great serpent, but, technically, Serpens is a completely separate constellation said to run behind the great healer (thus Serpens is the only split or two-part figure in the heavens).

Picture the sun being reborn in the Womb of Creation at the center of the Milky Way—between Sagittarius and Scorpio and beneath Ophiucus—

giving rise to the New Great Age of the Light-Bearer, and what do we see: the Luciferian Sun, birthed under Serpens (forget about the great healer) … *born under a bad sign*.

Ophiucus? He was merely a stooge: *here, hold this snake*. The Luciferians weren't invoking the god of medicine, for Pete's sake; the real job of the snake-bearer from their point of view was merely to provide a means for a hidden reference. As with the 'symbol-within-a-symbol' Two-Headed Black Phoenix, here we find a symbol *behind* a symbol, literally.

THE VELVET BULLDOZER: DIED UNDER A BAD SIGN?

Born Albert Nelson on a cotton plantation in Indianola (some say Aberdeen), Mississippi, blues legend Albert King occasionally referred to himself as "B.B. King's half-brother," although they were unrelated. The iconic blues tune "Born Under a Bad Sign" was originally recorded by Albert King as the title track for an album of the same name released in 1967, and it became one of the most popular and influential blues albums of the late '60s.

STEREO
FRIDAY
13
ALBERT KING
BORN UNDER A BAD SIGN
stax

Bands or performers who subsequently recorded covers of the song include the British rock group Cream and rock legend Jimi Hendrix, who, if you'll remember from book one, starred in the 1972 New Age hippie film, *Rainbow Bridge*—also the name of Hendrix's posthumously-released fifth album.

Known as one of the "Three Kings of the Blues Guitar" (along with B.B. King and Freddie King), 250-pound Albert stood an intimidating 6-foot 4-inches tall and was known as "The Velvet Bulldozer." The "velvet" part of his nickname arose from his smooth voice and laid-back singing style; the "bulldozer" part from a time early in King's career when he worked as a bulldozer operator during the day before hitting the stage at night.

King shuffled of his mortal coil on December 21st, 1992, and although I don't even think we're even remotely off into the realm of conspiracy or synchronicity here, then again, perhaps that assessment is a failure of imagination on my part.

Born under a bad sign
I been down since I begin to crawl
If it wasn't for bad luck, I wouldn't have no luck at all.

Amen to that, brother.

Serpens, the *real* 13th sign of the Zodiac—a notion with which at least some would seem to agree: 2013 in the Chinese Zodiac is, you guessed it, the *Year of the Snake* (the last Year of the Snake was in 2001).

Both, Please

There's tropical astrology, most commonly used in the West, and sidereal astrology, each of which have their own method for determining when the sun falls under a particular sign of the Zodiac. Although December 25th is generally accepted to lie within Capricorn, *observably* the sun is still in Sagittarius on that date, and underneath Serpens. The point? You can have your cake and eat it, too—born under the goat, born under the serpent, same damn difference. You don't have to choose.

The Dawning of the Age of Aquarius?

Determining when one "New Age" (*not* New Great Age) ends and another begins depends on establishing in what time frame earth's axis could be said to cease pointing at one constellation and start pointing at another. If this strikes you as being fraught with all sorts of difficulties and room for disagreement, you couldn't be more correct.

Astrology is not an exact art by any stretch of the imagination, and there is little consensus within the astrological community about the beginnings and endings of ages. Although the "Age of Aquarius" is typically used to refer to the heyday of the hippie and New Age movements of the 1960s and 1970s, as the opening song from the 1967 musical *Hair* tells us, "This is the *dawning* of the Age of Aquarius"—the full manifestation of the Age will not occur until sometime in the future.

Actually, though, there's not even agreement on this point. Writing in *The Book of World Horoscopes*, Nicholas Campion shares that he has collected over 90 dates provided by researchers for the start of the Age of Aquarius, with a range of over 2,000 years and beginning in the 15th century: from 1447 to 3621.

All this is a moot point, anyway, because the globalist Luciferians weren't laying claim to one puny little age, they were playing for all the marbles, establishing the New Great Age *from its birth* as their own—claiming the entire new Cycle of Precession as belonging to *their* god. Aquarius, regardless of when his wimpy age actually begins, has the sigil of Lucifer branded on his ass, as does every other denizen of the Zodiac from Libra to Leo.

The 13th Tarot

Isn't it just beautiful how things work out for those strongly committed to their beliefs? The real 13th sign of the Zodiac, Serpens; the first year of the Great Age of Lucifer, 2013; and the 13th card in the Tarot … *La Mort*, Death.

Some would point out the diversity of the characters within the card, implying that all are subject to death. Others would emphasize that although the skeleton outwardly signifies death, on a deeper level it speaks to us of our ultimate absorption back into the Eternal Waters in which we existed before entering into this illusory universe (note, too, the twin towers in front of the

Uncle Toby!

Writing in the *New York Observer* in April of 2001 in an article entitled "At Skull and Bones, Bush's Secret Club Initiates Ream Gore," Ron Rosenbaum (the self-described Ahab of Skull & Bones) recounted his successful attempt to surveil the secret society's initiation ritual.

Rosenbaum and several accomplices—using three night-vision-capable digital-video cameras, on tape recorder, a stepladder and two walkie-talkies—managed to record the occult pyscho-drama, which included "Patriarchs," or Bonesmen, playing the parts of various characters, including the Devil and President George W. Bush (to clarify, two *separate* characters).

As Rosenbaum recounts, the dialogue was most interesting:

> Then someone—one of the initiates?—called out "Uncle Toby!" (Many Bone ritual personae are taken from Laurence Sterne's *Tristram Shandy*—you gotta give them credit there for good taste.)
>
> "Uncle Toby!" the cry repeated.
>
> "Shut up, neophyte."
>
> "Take that plunger out of my ass, Uncle Toby."
>
> Presumably, this mocking [Abner] Louima reference was a ploy to scare initiates into thinking Uncle Toby was going to give them the plunger treatment.
>
> That cheerful rectal theme was followed up by:
>
> "I'm gonna ream you like I reamed Al Gore!" from the George W. imitator.
>
> Followed by "Help me! It's the devil!"
>
> And then "George W." really getting into it: "I'm gonna kill you like I killed Al Gore."
>
> Silence. Then a door opened. Voices—half of them, it seemed, women—were screaming:
>
> "Run! Neophyte! Run, neophyte!" (The neophytes are, of course, the new initiates.)
>
> From my post, I could only see hooded figures racing about in the darkness above my head, accompanied by cries of:
>
> "Run, neophyte!"
>
> "Find the femur!"
>
> And (again): "Take that plunger out of my ass, Uncle Toby!"
>
> Then silence for awhile. The neophyte seemed to have gone back inside the Tomb. After which one of the Patriarchs complained, "We ought to get better blood than this fuckin' syrup, man." It was only later that I learned what the blood was for: the whole throat-slitting "barbarian" tableau after the skull-kissing.
>
> But first there was a different kind of kissing being referred to. There were cries of "Lick my bumhole, neophyte!" "Lick my ass, neophyte!" "Do you like my bum, neophyte?" (Despite these heartfelt pleas, we did not witness any of those acts being consummated.)
>
> The bumhole tribute was followed by more cries of "Get the femur!" and at least part of the death mantra I'd heard before: "DEATH EQUALS DEATH."
>
> Following which, "George W." chimed in with "I'm the President of the motha-fuckin' U.S.A."—apparently just for the sheer pleasure of saying it. (He was sounding more like the real George W. all the time.)
>
> It began to be clear that what was going on outside in the courtyard was the climax of an initiation ceremony that began inside the Tomb. There, it's reputed, the initiates must first enter into a coffin and "die to the barbarian world," to the world of "savages" (all but the Skull and Bones elect), in order to be reborn as a member of "The Order." Then comes the skull-kissing and the throat-slashing. … A ritual three Presidents, a few Supreme Court justices, maybe a dozen Senators (including 2004 Democratic Presidential contender John Kerry—which would mean a head-to-head, Skull-to-Skull smackdown with George W.), several Secretaries of State, literary and cultural luminaries including John Hersey and William F. Buckley, had all undergone.

Poor Geronimo… that sounds like that could have been a warm-up routine before the performance of the filth-laden script for Black Christmas. *Run, neophyte, run.*

sun and behind the waterfall). This card represents the continual regeneration of being: we experience disintegration so that we may be reintegrated on a higher plane of existence.

And yet still others, particularly those who orchestrated Black Christmas, would invoke the last line of one of Skull & Bones' key mantras* and simply say to us, *"Death equals death."*

*Used as part of their initiation ritual, the full wording is:

The Hangman equals death!
The Devil equals death!
Death equals death!

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE

THE 2012 LONDON ILLUMINATI MEGASPECTACLE

At this point in our investigations, all I should need to give you regarding the next subject is one piece of information and you'll just about be able to guess the rest: the date of the 2005 London public transport bombings—July 7th, 7/7.

We're only going to spend a brief moment on this event, though, because as Great Britain's 9/11, there's far too much to explore to go into any real detail here at the end of our journey on the road to Phoenix. We'll stop just long enough to note that the fourth of four separate attacks that day took place aboard a double-decker bus in Tavistock Square, which was a tip-of-the-hat to the Tavistock Institute, an organization up to its ears in mind-control projects in both the UK and US and a pioneer in the field. (Also, I would be remiss if I didn't at least mention in passing that the third bombing took place near Russell Square, opposite the British Medical Association, which is headquartered in a building originally constructed for Madame Helena Blavatsky's House of Theosophy.)

"OUTRIGHT TERROR...
BOLD AND BRILLIANT"
THE

Although there are many similarities between 9/11 and 7/7, the key shared ingredient is one we're all-too-familiar with: mockery. And, lest you doubt it, a picture is worth a thousand words…actually, the picture is *of* words, so I'm not sure how you figure that, but in any case, all you really need to know about 7/7 can be seen in these photos of the attack at Tavistock Square.

"OUTRIGHT TERROR...
BOLD AND BRILLIANT"
THE

"Outright terror, bold and brilliant"…my god, you've just got to love that British sense of humor, don't you?

And, with that brief stop, we're off to the London 2012 Olympics, which, by the way, were awarded to the city by the International Olympic Committee on… July 6th, 2005. Those Brits sure know how to celebrate a win.

Too Obvious

We're only going to stay a few minutes at the Olympics, too, primarily because it was such a blatantly obvious Illuminati affair that it presents a relatively minor challenge compared to all the muck we've already waded through … that, and I suppose I'm a little biased in believing that we Yanks do put on a much better MegaRitual.

We've already explored the origin of the XXX in the 30th Olympiad in Chapter 13, so there's no need to repeat that here. We've also noted that the rationale—or at least part of it—behind the lack of a terror spectacular at the Games: they didn't want to spoil the surprise of Black Christmas, didn't want to preempt the The Big Show.

In addition to that, there's the obvious fact that many of them were in attendance in London, as it was, after all, designed as an Illuminati MegaSpectacle, with some of the most awe-inspiring and in-your-face monumental symbols of Illumination of the 21st century.

Spooks: Code 9

Another reason for the lack of an attack during the London Olympics was that it was just too obvious a target—what's the use in killing a bunch of people if the world is expecting it? Really, where's the fun in that?

That's not to say, however, that the Illuminati didn't derive great satisfaction from gaming the public for years in advance on the likelihood, nay, the practical certainty, of a nuclear terrorist strike during the Games of the 30th Olympiad.

Hell, the Brits even made a TV series in 2008 centered upon the idea, *Spooks: Code 9,* which ran on BBC and was set in 2012 just after a nuclear attack during the opening ceremony of the Summer Olympics.

[spooks] CODE 9

A Dirty Little Secret

The massive amount of predictive programming was by no means targeted only at the general public, however. There were plotlines integrating blatantly suspicious elements designed specifically for consumption by armchair conspiracy theorists, as well.

One of the best featured main-stream-media reports concerning sizable quantities of radioactively contaminated soil stored in a containment unit 250 meters from the north end of the Olympic Stadium. The area reportedly used to be an industrial dump site, as well as home to a small nuclear reactor used for research purposes, and officials allegedly chose not to remove the radioactive material because of concerns about transporting it through such heavily populated areas.

Another of the best stories served up for conspiracy theorists concerned the existence of, no shit, unexploded Nazi ordnance on the property; some experts said the bombs might actually be located underneath the stadium itself.

Radiological material, conventional explosives—last time I checked, those were the two key ingredients of a "dirty bomb," both already on-site and in close proximity to one another. Even without the Nazi bombs, there were plenty of explosives around, with a warship sitting in the Thames River and anti-missile batteries all around, part of the most sophisticated, all-encompassing, comprehensive security shield ever erected.

In truth, there was no way in hell that any terrorist organization could have gotten a dirty bomb, or even a container of expired yogurt, through the massive security ring; but it was made to look for all the world like a *false-flag*-terrorist strike was imminent.

GLORIOUS SYMBOLISM

The *true* glory of the XXX Olympics lay not in the pomp and circumstance of the opening ceremony—the opening music for which was scripted by the group *Underworld*—but rather in the magnificent (unparalleled, really) display of Illuminati symbols in and around Olympic Stadium, and elsewhere. From the world's largest congregation of all-seeing-eyes (incorporated into the construction of the stadium and incarnated as the two All-Seeing-Eye mascots) to the world's largest torch of Illumination, it was truly a sight to behold.

Ah, yes, children as a living Torch of Illumination. Would someone please dial 9-1-1? Moloch just passed out in the corner.

The official 2012 London Olympic mascots, Wenlock and Mandeville—featuring the All-Seeing-Eye of Horus just for the kiddies. Their design was understandably greeted with some disdain, with one columnist calling them the product of a "drunken one-night stand between a Teletubby and a Dalek." The pair was featured in several animated productions, including "Out of a Rainbow" and "Adventures on a Rainbow."

WE'RE MARCHING TO ZION

Several years before the London Olympics, one bright young chap named Rik Clay happened to notice that the hideous official logo (pictured below, left)—which seemed to defy all standards of aesthetic acceptability—spelled out, when properly rearranged, the word "Zion."

Rik wasn't the only person to take notice: in February 2011, Iran submitted a formal complaint to the IOC and threatened to boycott the Olympics, describing the logo as "racist" and asking both that it be withdrawn and that the logo designers be confronted. The IOC quietly rejected the demands; Iran eventually announced that it would not boycott the games.

The question of whether or not there was any substance to the allegation that this was an intentional aspect of the logo design was never actually answered. Had the London Olympics somehow been intended to facilitate the creation of an earthly Zion, or the arrival of the "New Jerusalem" from the Book of Revelation?

Those in favor of such theories cited William Blake's short poem (printed c. 1808) "And did those feet in ancient time," from the preface to his epic poem, *Milton*, one of a collection of writings known as the Prophetic Books. Blake's poem was inspired by the apocryphal story that a young Jesus, accompanied by his uncle Joseph of Arimathea, travelled to what is now England during Christ's so-called "lost years," and reads:

And did those feet in ancient time,
Walk upon England's mountains green:
And was the holy Lamb of God,
On England's pleasant pastures seen!

And did the Countenance Divine,
Shine forth upon our clouded hills?
And was Jerusalem builded here,
Among these dark Satanic Mills?

Bring me my Bow of burning gold;
Bring me my Arrows of desire:

Bring me my Spear: O clouds unfold!
Bring me my Chariot of fire!

I will not cease from Mental Fight,
Nor shall my Sword sleep in my hand:
Till we have built Jerusalem,
In England's green & pleasant Land.

"Till we have built Jerusalem, In England's green & pleasant Land" … Were there powerful hidden interests whose agenda this poem reflected and for whom these verses served as a source of inspiration? Well, the famous hymn based upon the poem, called "Jerusalem," *has* been featured in many television programs and movies, including *Monty Python's Flying Circus*.

Perhaps more to the point, however, freelance journalist David Hambling, writing in the *Fortean Times*, informs us in his article, "City of Symbols," that

> To the builders of the new London, the city was to be the New Jerusalem. Rome was in the hands of Catholics, so London must succeed it as the capital of the true faith. This was reinforced by a popular theory that the English were the descendants of the Lost Tribe of Israel, who disappeared into the West after the destruction of the kingdom in 722 BC. Londoner William Blake—who had a tendency to employ Masonic imagery—was merely echoing this idea when he wrote of Jerusalem being "builded here" decades later. This belief was a help to those who believed that Britain should be a global empire, a true successor to Rome, with a temporal and religious capital to match it.[1]

The London 2012 XXX Olympics as a Church-of-England conspiracy then? Not so much. As an Illuminati MegaSpectacle? To be sure. But was the logo in fact intended to spell "Zion," just for kicks or otherwise? Who the hell cares, because look what else it spells just as convincingly:

That's right—*Ozzy*! The British "Prince of Darkness," the Wizard of Ozz, the embodiment of the True Spirit of the *XXX* Olympiad. Incidentally, speaking of August 12th, the closing date of the 2012 Games, was the same day that the *Wizard of Oz* premiered way back in 1939. *Crazy Train!*

In Closing

The closing ceremony of the 17-day-long London Olympics, and what do we find but a 20m-wide illuminated, flaming phoenix, rising atop the Olympic flame which has been fanned out into a dome representing the creature's burning nest—with the British pop band Take That singing "Rule the World," in which the lyrics "we can rule the world" are repeated six times.

But it gets better still. This was the 30th Olympiad, the XXX Olympics, the Olympics of the Triple Cross, the significance of which has been thoroughly explained. The message is that the phoenix rises at the time of the triple crossing—and the phoenix at the closing ceremony rises before a stage laid out in the shape of the Union Jack, a triple cross. (The current design of the flag of the United Kingdom dates from the union of Great Britain and Ireland in 1801. The flag consists of: #1, the red cross of Saint George, patron saint of England, edged in white and superimposed on #2, the Cross of St Patrick, patron saint of Ireland, which are superimposed on #3, the Saltire of Saint Andrew, patron saint of Scotland. Three crosses, aligned.)

The stage floor itself is covered in oversized newsprint with headlines pulled from British literature. As one observer noted, "Oddly morbid, if not inappropriate choices" included the following: "To die will be an awfully big adventure" (*Peter Pan*); "This is the way world ends" (T.S. Eliot, *The Hollow Men*); and "The rest is silence."

This last line consists of the final words spoken by Shakespeare's Hamlet just before he expires. In Shakespeare's day, belief in an afterlife was near universal, and the reality of Heaven, and Hell, was accepted unquestioningly. But Hamlet, a child of the philosophical Renaissance, seems to question the certainty of Heaven with his final line. Hamlet speaks of death throughout the play, in one scene staring into the eyes of a freshly-unearthed skull in search of meaning. As he lays dying, he utters the words, "the rest is silence," in which context the word "rest" could have a dual meaning: it could be read as "the remainder is silence", he dies and will speak no more; or, "rest" could refer to eternal rest, the sleep of death. "For in that sleep of death," Hamlet asks himself earlier in the play, "what dreams may come?" As he slips into death, does he find the answer to his question? What dreams may come? None, the rest is silence. There is no Heaven, just the silence of the grave. *Death equals death.*

CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX

THE ILLUMINATI END-OF-DAYS CODE

The precise time for the winter solstice in 2012, as listed on the U.S. Naval Observatory's website *for years* in advance, was 11:11 Universal Time. Given that 2012 was the year of "Galactic Alignment," New Agers and spiritualists went absolutely bonkers over this seeming super-synchronistic Message from the Matrix.

The exact moment of the 2012 winter solstice, and thus Galactic Alignment itself, they believed, was 11:11—*the Universe was speaking to us*. Entire books were written on the subject and there were more 11:11 YouTube videos than you could shake a stick at.

Nobody stopped to consider the alternative explanation: that, as opposed to being a loving message from the Creator indicating the impending ascension of mankind, this was yet another indicator of the exact depth of the tyranny humanity was now living under—a tyranny so pervasive that it extended into every aspect of our lives, of our existence, including *time* itself.

ZERO HOUR

Winter solstice: December 21st. 12/21. 11:11. If that looks strangely like a code to you, you're instincts are correct, and if you remember 11 from *Most Dangerous* as "the number of magick in itself," you're starting to put the pieces together.

2012, the year of the Triple Cross, the year of the Great Wedding (Heaven/MWG meets Earth/horizon). December 21st, the death of the sun, in this instance, the final demise of the sun of the old Great Age. 11:11 UT, the precise moment when this grand cosmic convergence culminates—the Zero Hour.

Do you not think that, being the insane control freaks they have repeatedly shown themselves to be, the Illuminati had some ingenious scheme for counting up (or counting down) to this most momentous of occasions—of defining time itself, according to their own designs?

THE MATH STRUCTURE OF THE ORDER OF THE AGES

To what, exactly, am I referring? This—11:11 UT December 21st, 2012, was not simply a time and date. It was a *code*, one that reflected the very mathematical structure of the order of the ages:

11:11, 12/21
11 x 111 = 1221

Intriguing, you might be thinking, *but what does that really tell us?* For one thing, it hints at an ability to manipulate our reality that defies what most of us are willing to accept. But only *hints,* because that's not the full code, not by a long shot.

You'll recall that the Cycle of Precession is *approximated* at 26,000 years by astronomers—that's just not good enough for the Global Controllers. Their mastery of our reality is total, and their knowledge of its secret inner workings complete (at least by their own estimation): some would call it magic, some would call it super-knowledge…others would call it occult bullshit, but I'd say we'd better pay close attention to what the folks calling the shots actually believe.

The Mayan long-count calendar, consists of 13 baktun (there's our thirteen again), a baktun being comprised of 144,000 days. December 21st, 2012, corresponded to the end of 13 baktun, to the end of a period of 1,872,000 days.

The Mayans maintained a complex set of interlocking calendars, tracking sets of 260, 360 and 365 days. Dividing 1,872,000 by 360 yields 5,200, and in the Western tradition, a 360-day year is known as a "prophetic year" (p.y.). The Mayans divided the Great Age into five sub-ages, versus the traditional twelve (thirteen, whatever), each consisting of 13 baktun. So, each Mayan age equaled 5,200 p.y., and the Great Age equaled *exactly* 26,000 p.y.; a Great Age that is 26,000 p.y. in length contains exactly 9,360,000 days.

Now, *that's* the kind of precision occultist control-freaks can dig, baby; yet, never satisfied with the status quo, they desired a time-keeping system all their own, one just as perfect, or, better still, more perfect. And their wishes were fulfilled.

Mathematical Shorthand for the Apocalypse

As a side enterprise, the Illuminati took great pleasure in devising "mathematical shorthand" for the End of the Age (not that it had any practical use whatsoever):

- The number of prophetic years in the Great Age: 26,000= 360 x 72.2 repeating
- The number of days in the Great Age: 9,360,000 = 360^2 x 72.2 repeating

Fascinating—pointless, but fascinating, yet again I say, it's damn hard to argue with mathematical perfection.

THE ILLUMINATI SUPERNUMBER

Bringing the beginnings of our date code forward, we commence the operation:

11 x 111 = 1221
1221 x 21 = 25641
25641 = 777 x 33 = 77 x 333

Now, anybody that knows numerology or Crowleyian gematria will immediately recognize the significance of the 333 (the number of the demon Choronzon) and the 777 (often viewed as the number of God, too much other stuff to even go into), and we of course recognize at least the superficial importance of the 33 and 77 from our own investigations.

Yes, but again, what does this tell us? 25641 is the Illuminati SuperNumber: a mathematical alchemical formulation capable of transmuting its very nature, much like the mythical phoenix. It is 777 and 33, the number of God and the number of Christ, and simultaneously 77 and 333, the number of Satan and the number of Choronzon. Or, would you rather invoke the Biblical anti-Christ, whose number is listed in the Book of Revelation as 666? 25+641 = 666. But wait, some Biblical manuscripts list the number of the Beast as 616. That's okay: 641-25 = 616. 25641 mathematically represents the synthesis of all things, the reconciliation of opposites. It speaks of Unification, of Union.

LIBER
777
vel
PROLEGOMENA
SYMBOLICA
AD SYSTEMAM
SCEPTICO-MYSTICÆ
VIÆ EXPLICANDÆ
FUNDAMENTUM
HIEROGLYPHICUM
SANCTISSIMORUM
SCIENTIÆ SUMMÆ

That's not all, however. Recall that the number of days in the Great Age is 9,360,000, and divide this by 25641: the result, 365.04036. The Illuminati SuperNumber is also the number of 365-day years in the Great Age. (Yes, I know that the length of a year is currently 365.242 days—we have no way of knowing what the actual average length of a day is over the last twenty-five thousand plus years, and, besides, it's damn hard to argue with the mathematical perfection above.)

To fully comprehend this, let's examine further:

11 x 111 = 1221 x 21 = 25641

A total of 25641 "Illuminati years," broken down into 21 sets of 1221, the final set of which came to an close on 12/21 at exactly 11:11 UT—the literal End of Days (9,360,000 days, to be precise). Now *that* is mathematical genius, and, I dare say, *real* magick.

POSTSCRIPT: REVELATION

Lest you leave with the false impression that the Illuminati date code was based upon Mayan calendrical wisdom alone, I will briefly point out that there are tremendous similarities between the astrotheological teachings of that South American civilization and those of certain ancient Hebrew priests and writers, in particular the author(s) of the Book of Revelation.

Although the authorship of the book is traditionally attributed to John, *who* wrote it is not nearly as important as *what it contains*—which is something far different than what most Christians and Biblical scholars conceive of.

In Chapter 21, Revelation describes the New Jerusalem, the purported City of God, in considerable detail. These details include a variety of items, including 12 gemstones, which are in fact the gemstones associated with the 12 signs of the Zodiac. Revelation is replete with zodiacal symbolism, and what we find in the twenty-first chapter is an encoded calendar very similar in certain respects to the Mayan long-count calendar.

Hebrew writers sometimes used distance as a metaphor for time, and without getting into all of the measurements and the math, this is precisely the case in this instance. These ancient keepers of wisdom utilized a geometric construct as a means of encoding specific numerical information concerning the passage of time, lots of time. *The New Jerusalem Zodiacal Calendar.*

EPILOGUE

A PAINFUL REMEMBRANCE

Toward the end of *Most Dangerous,* I reconstructed the Occult Script for the 9/11 Global Luciferian MegaRitual. Here, I'm not going to repeat that process in quite the same manner, because if you haven't read this entire book, a summary is not going to do anything but make your head ache. And if you *have* read this book, I'm sure your head is already aching, and a full recap wouldn't do anything but make it worse—so I'll mercifully keep this as short as possible. Like federal officials riding high above the carnage following a major nuclear attack, we're just going to skim over the surface, picking out the major details in the landscape… reminding ourselves where we've been and what we've seen (just when you thought you might be able to forget it).

'TWAS THE NIGHT BEFORE BLACK CHRISTMAS…

We started out in Paradise Valley, in the Valley of the Sun, where we witnessed the birth of a second sun, a nuclear-fueled conflagration that was at the very heart of the 2012 Black Christmas XXX Galactic MegaRitual, and the *New* Ground Zero. We found yet another monumentally-insulting memorial to match the one in Shanksville, PA, and were paid a visit by our old friend 17, who, like a bad rash, seemed to be everywhere. We then witnessed the Return of the Trident and visited with Sparky the Sun Devil in "The House of Heat," but the real shocker was, well, "the shocker" (hand sanitizer, anyone?).

We took a bad trip down US Route 93, the favored roadway of Thelemites in the Land of AZ and, now, around the globe, and we made a pit stop at the OZ Gay & Lesbian Bar before being treated to some "Black Rain" in the Land of Ozz.

We met a cast of *real* characters, including Joe "America's Toughest Sheriff" Arpaio (*aka* Nickel Bag Joe) and Jan "The Wicked Witch of the West" Brewer (Arizona's Radiological-Technologist Governor), as well as the deadly duo of Barack "No-Denyin'-I'm-Hawaiian" Obama (the Comic-in-Chief, or, Usurper-in-Chief) and Janet "The Man-Caused Disaster" Napolitano (the Secretary of

Homeland Insecurity)—and, last but not least, John "I am older than dirt and have more scars than Frankenstein" McCain (Captain America).

Actually, we didn't meet John last, and the five above weren't the entire cast by any means. There was Elvis Presley (or, maybe not—Sheriff Joe was a little sketchy on the details), commentator Chuck Norris and fellow toughman Steven Seagal, who helped the Sheriff lead a daring daytime raid on unarmed Jesus Llovera and his chickens in a self-propelled howitzer. Hero that he was, Seagal turned out to be just one member of Arpaio's Insane Clown Posse (actually an armed "illegal immigration operations posse"), but one could be forgiven for making such a characterization given that the bunch also included Wyatt Earp and Dick Tracy, as well as the actors who played Willy Armitage from the *Mission Impossible* TV series and CBS's *The Incredible Hulk*.

Somewhere along the way, we learned about Hitler's Daughter being involved in "Fingergate," as well as some things we didn't really want to know about Sheriff Joe's pink underwear and green bologna. We became intimate with Aleister Crowley's *Liber 44*, the Mass of the Phoenix, as well as the number 44 in a variety of other incarnations. We did a little bird-watching, sighting the Bennu, the Shen-Shen and the Rech—*Go Big Red!*—and were serenaded by shock-rocker and DeMolay International member Alice Cooper.

We witnessed the Mayan Non-Apocalypse and gazed upon the Galactic Alignment, occurring primarily in the minds of New Agers, attended the Great Wedding, and contemplated the use of nuclear power. We discovered a hidden Biblical prophecy, sighted the Triple Cross and watched the fulfillment of the Prophecy of the Last Pope.

On Jerusalem's Skull Hill, we sifted through the pile of rubble formerly known as the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, and in the heavens, we peered into the Womb of Creation, and saw a hawk, or a swan, and the crosses of two criminals, or the Thieves' Cross… shit, I get confused.

And just when we thought we'd seen one cross too many, here came the XXX Oympiad, followed by the 12th Imam, the Superforce, "the Mother Lodge of the World" and the Ayatollah Khomeini. We watched Barack "I will win the war on Christmas" Obama drop a big one on the public unnoticed, and then grimaced as the Biggest Christmas Day Surprise in history was unwrapped. It was a red hot holiday, a Satanic Dawn Mass Sacrifice in Paradise Valley, and Santa left ashes for all the little boys and girls.

Our journey took us further into the Obama Psyop, past the *Zeppelintribüne* and the Bible-less re-swearing ceremony, past the Nobel-Peace-Prize-for-Absolutely-Nothing and into the President of the World's secret occult identity as the globalist's Sun King (*Amen Ra is back BHO USA!*), or, if you prefer, the

New Tutankhamon of the World, or, if you prefer, the Anti-Christ. (Attention parents, if there were any kids present on the tour, which I hope to god there weren't, and you made the mistake of letting them look at the Capitol Dome and the Washington Monument as we went past, you're going to need to have the birds-and-the-bees discussion with them all over again. Why the hell do you think I called it a *XXX* MegaRitual?)

High above, accompanying us on our travels was Capricornus, as below we celebrated Saturnalia, "the best of days"—please pass the leftover Atomic Fireball Hard Candy, and put *Christmas Island* back on, would you?

Natural Born, Two-Faced Killers

Next, we found ourselves wandering around out in the Arizona desert along Highway 77, counting bodies at a Safeway. Gabby Giffords was among the wounded, and the 9/11 Birthday Girl was among the dead, along with Let's Roll, excuse me, Federal Judge John Roll, and Gabe Zimmerman.

The main target of the attack that morning, however, was the Messenger of God, Gabriel, who was symbolically struck down on the Eve of Agony—under the watchful eye, as well as the Arch, of Janus, or, if you prefer, the Royal Arch of Freemasonry.

Identical twin astronauts came into play somehow, but I keep getting them confused with Dr. David Bowman from the movie *2001*, who I in turn get confused with the fellow of the same name who tended the wounded that morning in Tucson. One of the twins was Gabby's husband, and one was in the International Space Station at the time of the shooting, and one of them was a pilot on *Discovery*, no, wait, that was Dr. Bowman … oh, screw it.

At this point, quite frankly I feel like I've been subjected to mind control, Monarch programming perhaps, or Green programming, or whatever. This is one far out (outer space, to be more precise) megaritual, and, speaking of mind-control, maybe Jared Loughner wasn't just plain nuts after all.

That's No Joke

The Dark Knight Rises—and we learned that it wasn't Batman, and it wasn't the inflatable Lord Voldemort from the Olympics' opening ceremony. The only hint we really needed? He's the Son of Aurora, which as we discovered is one heckuva coincidence, considering that Aurora, Colorado, was the site of the worst mass shooting in U.S. history. Alleged gunman James Eagan "Fire" Holmes played The Joker—actually, he wasn't playing—and really he represented the Trickster in disguise.

With Columbine just down the road a piece, it wasn't too surprising to learn that Holmes had a fair amount in common with both Jared Loughner and Sirhan Sirhan. And as we travelled on down I-225, we figured out that the road led right to Black Christmas.

NOW WE ARE ALL SONS OF BITCHES

I'm really not feeling that well, as a matter of fact—I'm seeing double… a double-headed eagle, which turns into double-headed phoenix… 33s and triangles everywhere… phrases repeated over and over… *Deus Meumque Jus*… this is a Jornada del Muerto. *Dr. Green?* I'm not feeling myself anymore, *who am I*? That's right, I remember—*Now I am become Death*…

Seriously, though, we've all been the subjects of one massive trauma-based mind-control operation, a XXX Galactic MegaRitual, and, speaking of rituals, split personalities, psychological warfare and trigger words, how about the historical personality behind the codename for the bin Laden raid, Geronimo? Maybe he was just born under a bad sign, like the sun of the New Great Age of Lucifer, who was birthed of Serpens, the true 13th sign of the Zodiac (and perhaps Uncle Toby will tell us whether it is in fact Geronimo's skull that is kissed while the Bonesmen chant *"Death equals death"*).

That's almost it, thank god. We're basically going to skip the Olympics, the not-so-dirty (bomb or otherwise) XXX Illuminati MegaRitual that it was, teeming with huge all-seeing-eyes and featuring a super-sized Torch of Illumination—and a logo that spelled Ozzy. We're not going to say much else about the Illuminati End-of-Days Code or their SuperNumber, either—what *can* you say when you've been shown that you're nothing but a rat in a maze, under the stopwatch of ultra-villainous lab technicians?

DREAM ON

Now, here at the very end of our journey, after all we've been through together, there's still no relief and no reason for hope. We are not the brave souls of the Fellowship of the Ring, standing at the wrecked Black Gates of Mordor, celebrating the extinguishing of the All-Seeing Eye of Sauron. We have not successfully returned the ring to Mount Doom, and we have not saved Earth, Middle or otherwise, from anything.

There is probably only one thing that is safe to say at this point, and that is that we will all be dreaming of a White Christmas for a very long time to come.

XX
ש
TRUMPS
The Aeon
△

NOTES

CHAPTER SIX

1. http://www.cuttingedge.org/news/n2210.cfm

CHAPTER SEVEN

1. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Janet_Napolitano - cite_note-26

CHAPTER EIGHT

1. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_mccain - cite_note-74

CHAPTER ELEVEN

1. http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/symbology/2o5.htm
2. http://www.phoenixcremationjewelry.com/Mythology.html
3. http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/symbology/2o5.htm
4. http://hermetic.com/osiris/analysismotp.htm

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

1. http://www.threeworldwars.com/albert-pike2.htm

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

1. http://articles.cnn.com/2004-03-26/politics/bush.wmd.jokes_1_president-joke-television-correspondents-dinner-weapons-program?_s=PM:ALLPOLITICS

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

1. http://www.salon.com/2008/08/31/christmas_island/

CHAPTER TWENTY

1. http://www.humanevents.com/article.php?id=41067#
2. http://thriceholy.net/Texts/Fasti.html
3. As many are aware, this is a Latin expression meaning “Order out of Chaos.” It is a motto of the Thirty-third Degree of Freemasonry, and its invention is attributed to the Supreme Council of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish petite at Charleston, S.C.—the significance of which will become abundantly clear in the very next chapter.

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

1. In context of mind-control, The Joker is an elusive, chameleon-like persona—a wild card within the psychological programming system that can imitate anything and take any form necessary. Jokers will manifest when a mind control victim attempts to study the codes and programming that direct their actions. In victims who have been extensively programmed and subsequently seek help with deprogramming, Jokers are one of the mechanisms that the deep level (Omega) programming can use to regenerate itself and rebuild any damaged parts of the general operating system.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

1. http://pierre.mollier.perso.sfr.fr/articles/PM-12-Double-Headed-Eagle.pdf
2. http://www.freemasonry.bcy.ca/aqc/double-headed_eagle.html
3. http://www.freemasons-freemasonry.com/double-headed-eagle.html
4. http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/codex_magica/codex_magica12.htm

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE

1. http://www.forteantimes.com/features/articles/2350/city_of_symbols.html

THE MEROVINGIAN MYTHOS

And the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau

ALBERTVS
DVRER
NORICVS
FACIEBAT
1504

TRACY R. TWYMAN

The Merovingian Mythos

And the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau

By Tracy R. Twyman

© 2004
Quintessential Publications
All rights reserved

No part of this publication may be reproduced in any for or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Acknowledgements

I would like to extend thanks to Brian Albert, Martin Lunn, Nicholas de Vere, Amy Keller (for the *Le Serpent Rouge* translation), George Moshanas, Tim Madison, the producers of Fox Television, and everyone else who kindly lent their assistance.

All graphics were retouched by Brian Albert.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Illustrations ____ **7**

Chapter One: The Enigma ____ **24**
- The Accursed Treasure ____ 24
- What is the Holy Grail? ____ 39
  - A Stone ____ 40
  - A Cup ____ 42
  - Mystical Union ____ 43
  - Bodily Secretions ____ 44
  - The Ark ____ 46
  - Blood Royale ____ 48
- The Albigensian Crusade ____ 56
- The Knights Templar ____ 60
- The Templar Conspiracy ____ 79
- The Priory of Sion ____ 84

Chapter Two: The Underground Stream ____ **99**
- Nicolas Flamel ____ 99
- Rene d'Anjou ____ 104
- Iolande de Bar ____ 111
- Sandro Filipepi ____ 112
- Leonardo da Vinci ____ 113
- The Campaign Against the House of Valois ____ 115
- Nostradamus ____ 116
- Robert Fludd ____ 118
- The Fronde and the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrament ____ 120
- Johann Valentin Andrea and the Rosicrucians ____ 124
- Chateau Barberie ____ 128
- Nicolas Poussin and Nicolas Fouquet ____ 128
- Robert Boyle ____ 133
- Isaac Newton ____ 137
- Charles Radclyffe and the Scottish Rite ____ 141
- Charles de Lorraine ____ 147
- Shugborough Hall ____ 149
- Charles Nodier ____ 151
- The Catholic Modernist Movement ____ 156
- Victor Hugo ____ 159
- Claude Debussy ____ 161
- The Protocols of Sion and the Hieron du Val d'Or ____ 165
- Jean 23 ____ 171

Chapter Three: A Hermetic Freemasonry ____ **188**
- Pierre Plantard de Saint-Clair ____ 193
- *Vaincre* and the French Resistance ____ 197
- Charles de Gaulle and the Committees of Public Safety ____ 204
- C.I.R.C.U.I.T ____ 209

The United States of Europe 212
The Knights of Jerusalem and the Knights of Malta 218

Chapter Four: The Golden Age 227
The Ancient Origins of Christianity 227
The Gods of the Sea 232
The Divine Battle 238
The Origins of Civilization 247
The Legacy of Cain 269
The Jehovahite Cover-Up 276
The Luciferian Legacy 279
The Secret Doctrine 295

Chapter Five: Descendants of the Devil 302
An Attempt at Antediluvian History 302
The Fallen Race 327
The Heresies of Christ 335
The Merovingian Mythos 362

Chapter Six: The Hidden Stone 370
V.I.T.R.I.O.L 370
Et in Arcadia Ego 386
The Venusberg and the Tomb of Hercules 396
The Lord of the Mountain 400
House of God, Gateway to Heaven 405
The Language of Light 417
Jacob's Ladder 433
The Stone, the Ark, and the Temple 439
Jacob's Stone, Judah, and the British Connection 443
The Satanic Secrets of Rennes-le-Chateau 449

Chapter Seven – The Enigma Decoded 467
Unanswered Questions 467
The City of the Alpha 475
Dagobert II: The Return of the King 487
Sauniere's Saga Revisited 491
The Priory of Sion: The Next Generation 513
Only for the Initiated 521

Appendix A: The Satanic Calendar 524

Appendix B: Le Serpent Rouge Interpreted 544

Appendix C: Le Hieron du Val d'Or 578
The Devotion of the Sacred Heart 582
Notes from the Translator 584

Bibliography 590

6

Illustrations

Figure 1: The symbol for "Ormus" used by the Priory of Sion.

Figure 2: Parchment One.

Figure 3: Parchment Two.

Figure 4: The statue of Asmodeus at Rennes-le-Chateau. Photo by Tracy Twyman.

Figure 5: The Tour Magdala. Photo by Tracy Twyman.

Figure 6: The design on the tomb of Marie de Blanchefort.

Figure 7: *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, by Nicolas Poussin. (c)Louvre/(Museum)/Paris/France. Reunion des Musees Nationaux/Art Resource, NY.

Figure 8: The Black Sun in Cocteau's Notre Dame mural. Photo by Tim Madison.

Figure 9: The Nazi symbol for the Black Sun.

Figure 10: Illustration from *Vaincre* depicting the "United States of the West."

Figure 11: The ancient fish-god Dagon.

Figure 12: Dagon wearing the fish hat upon which the papal miter is based.

Figure 13: The Sumerian god-king Ea enthroned in the "Absu, or "Watery Abyss."

Figure 14: The Fibonacci Spiral.

Figure 15: The Emerald Tablet of Hermes engraved on the side of a mountain. From Henry Khunrath's *Ampitheatrum Sapientiae Aeternae*, 1609.

Figure 16: Horus entombed within a mountain or pyramid lit by an inner sun.

Figure 17: The alchemical seal featured on Sauniere's bookplate.

Figure 18: The Sacred Heart, as illustrated in *Secret Dossiers*. It is said to depict an "Egyptian amulet" that can be seen at the "Museum at Rennes."

Figure 19: The illustration of "le Poulpe" ("the Octopus"), from *Secret Dossiers*.

The Statue of Asmodeus at the church in Rennes-le-Chateau. *Photo by Tracy Twyman.*

The Nazi symbol for the Black Sun

P-S
E
T
I
N
A
*
PX
REDDIS
RÉGIS
CÈLLIS
ARCIS
A
Δ*I
A
E
Γ
Ω
PRÆ-CUM

The design on the tomb of Marie de Blanchefort.

The Black Sun in Cocteau's Notre Dame mural. *Photo by Tim Madison.*

Dagon wearing the fish hat upon which the papal miter is based.

The Sacred Heart, as illustrated in *Secret Dossiers*. It is said to depict an "Egyptian amulet" that can be seen at the "Museum at Rennes."

The Sumerian god-king Ea enthroned in the “Absu, or “Watery Abyss.”

The Fibonacci Spiral.

Horus entombed within a mountain or pyramid lit by an inner sun.

ETATS-UNIS d'OCCIDENT

Illustration from *Vaincre* depicting the "United States of the West."

The illustration of “le Poulpe” (“the Octopus”), from *Secret Dossiers*.

The symbol for "Ormus" used by the Priory of Sion.

ETFACTUMESTEUMIN
SABBATOSECUNDOPRIMO A
BIREPERSCCETESDISCIPULIAUTEMILLIRISCOE
PERUNTUELLERESPICASETFRICANTESMANIBUS + MANDU
CABANTQUIDAMAUTEMDEFARISAEISDT
CEBANTEIECCEQUIAFACIUNTDISCIPULITUISAB
BATIS + QUODNONLICETRESPONDENSAUTEMINS
SETXTTADEOSNUMQUAMHOC
LECISTISQUODFECITDAUTDQUANDO
ESURUTIPSEETQUICUMEOERAT + INTROIBITINDOMUM
DEIETPANESPROPOSITIONIS REDIS
MANDUCAUITETDEDITETQUI BIES
CUMERANTUXUO QUIBUSNO
NLICEBATMANDUCARESINON SOLIS SACERDOTIBUS
PS

Parchment One.

JESVSEVRGOANTCESEXDTVESPASCSHAEVENJTTBETHQANTAMVRAT
JVERAOTLAZA•VVSMORTYVVSQVEMMSVSCTYTAVITIYESVSFEACERVNT
LAVIEM•TTCAENAPMTBTETOMARTHAHMINISTRRABATLHAZARVSO
VEROVNXVSERATTE•DTSCOVMLENTDTLVSCVJMMARTALERGOACBCEP
TILRTBRAMYNNGENTTJNARDTPFTSTICIQPRETIOVSTETVNEXTTPE
DPESTERVAETEXTEJRSTICAYPIIRTSNSVISPEPDESERTPTETDOMBESTM
PLFTIAESTEEXVNGEINTTODAEREDIXALTERGOVRNVMEXDGTSCTPVHL
TSETVTXTVDDXGCARJORTISQVIYERATCVHMTRADTTTVRVSQTVAREHOCCVN
HENVTVMNONXVENÜTTGRECENPDTSDENAARÛSETDAATVMESGTE
GENTÉS?DIXINVFEMHOÉENONQVSTADEEGAENTSPERRTINEBÊAT
ADCVTMSEDQVHIAFVRELRTETLOVCVLOSHCAHENSECAQVAEMVTIIEBA
NMTYRPOTRABETEDTXTTEJRGOIESHVSSINEPILLAMVNITXDIEMS
EPVLGTVRAEMSEAESERVNETILLQVDPAVPJERESENHTMSEMPGERHA
BEMTTSNOBLTISCVMFMEAVTETMNONSESMPERHAVBENSCJOGNO
VILIEROTZVRBAMVQLTAEXTMVDACTSTQVTATLOLTCESTXETVENE
ARVNTNONNPROTEPRTESV•ETANTV•MMSEDVTLVZARVMPVTDER
EH•TQVEMRSVSCTAOVITAMORRTVTSCPOGTTAVRERVNTAHVTEMP
RVTNCTPEJSSACERCDOTVMVMTETLAZCARVMTNATERFTCTRRENTQ
LVTAMYLVTTPROPQTERTLHXVMAHTHGNTCXVGTAZETSNETCRCD
DEBANTTINIESVM

JÉSV. MEDÈLA. VVLNÉRVM + SPES. VNA. PŒNITENTIVM.
PER. MAGDALÆNÆ. LACRYMAS + PECCATA. NOSTRA. DILVAS.

Parchment Two.

VERBA SECRE
TORUM HERMETIS
VERUM SINE MENDA
CIO CERTUM & VERISS
MUM, QUOD EST INFERI, EST
SICUT QUOD EST SUPERIUS, & QUOD
PERIUS, EST SICUT QUOD EST INFERIUS
MIRANDA MIRACULA REI UNIS, ET SICUT OMNES RES
AB UNO, MEDITATIONE UNIUS, SIC OMNES RES
FUERUNT AB HAC UNA RE, ADAPTATIONE. PATER EI
SOL, MATER EIUS LUNA, PORTAVIT ILLUD VENTUS IN VENTRE
TRIX EIUS TERRA EST. PATER OMNIS TELESMI TOTI MUNDI
EST HIC. VIS EI INTEGRA EST. SI VERSA FUERIT IN TERRAM SEPARABIS
TERRAM AB IGNE, SUBTILE A SPISSO, SUAVITER CUM MAGNO INGENIO. ASCEN
DIT A TERRA IN COELUM, ITERUMQUE DESCENDIT IN TERRAM, & RECIPIT VIM
SUPERIORUM & INFERIORUM. SIC HABEBIS GLORIAM TOTI MUNDI. IDEO FUGIET
A TE OMNIS OBSCURITAS. HIC EST TOTIUS FORTITUDINIS FORTITUDO FORTIS
QUIA VINCET OMNEM REM SUBTILEM, OMNEMQUE SOLIDAM PENETRABIT. SIC MUNDUS
CREATUS EST. HINC ERANT ADAPTATIONES MIRABILES, QUARUM MODUS HIC EST. ITAQUE
VOCATUS SUM HERMES TRISMEGISTUS, HABENS TRES PARTES PHILOSOPHIÆ TOTIUS MUNDI.
COMPLETUM EST QUOD DIXI DE OPERATIONE SOLIS.
Auff Deutsch:
MERCURIUS TRISMEGISTUS in PIMANDRO.

The Emerald Tablet of Hermes engraved on the side of a mountain.

The Shepherds of Arcadia, by Nicolas Poussin.
(c)Louvre/(Museum)/Paris/France. Reunion des Musees Nationaux/Art

TRIA SUNT MIRABILIA · DEUS ET HOMO · MATER ET VIRGO · TRINUS ET UNUS
CENTRUM IN TRIGONO CENTRI
B. S.

The alchemical seal featured on Sauniere's bookplate.

The Tour Magdala. *Photo by Tracy Twyman.*

Chapter One: The Enigma

"When Lucifer and the Trinity began to war with each other, those who did not take sides, worthy, noble angels, had to descend to earth to that Stone which is forever incorruptible. I do not know whether God forgave them or damned them in the end: if it was His due He took them back. Since that time the Stone has been in the care of those whom God appointed to it and to whom He sent His angel. This, sir is how matters stand regarding the Grail."

- Wolfram von Eschenbach's *Parzival.*

The Accursed Treasure

In Latin, the word "sacrum", from whence we derive the English word "sacred" has two apparently opposite connotations. One is "holy", or "consecrated", and the other is "accursed, horrible, detestable." You have to look at the context in which the word "sacrum" is used to determine whether the object being referred to is blessed by the powers of good, or cursed by the powers of evil. In the case of the object known as the “Holy Grail”, however, and the related mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau, France, the determination is far from straight-forward.

As a researcher into the subject, I have often felt the spine-tingling sensation of the Devil himself breathing down my neck, and the presence of praeterhuman intelligences guiding me down the path towards revelation. That revelation was, for me, akin to the taste of the Tree of Knowledge Adam and Eve purportedly enjoyed in the Garden of Eden, giving them insight into the mind of God, a true divine illumination. As I continued down this path, following the twists and turns of the Holy Grail mystery wherever it led me, I discovered the answers to age-old questions, and revealed ancient secrets that have lain untouched in the dusty catacombs of dead history for thousands of years. Most of those secrets, I knew, would be of incalculable value to scholarship, and to humanity as a whole, once I was able to publish them. Other secrets I have learned are, as the saying goes, meant “only for the initiated.” They are “to keep and conceal, and to never reveal”, according to the well-known Masonic oath. For the legacy of the Holy Grail is the legacy of a forgotten race: the fathers of kings, builders of civilizations, and keepers of an arcane tradition meant only for an exclusive elite - the rightful inheritors of the secret doctrine of the Grail. To the initiated, a glimpse of the Grail is illumination, the sum of all desires, but to the profane unbeliever it is poison. Was I up to the perilous challenge of the Grail quest? Could I avoid the tricks, pitfalls and false roads that would greet me at every turn, and solve the riddle that hundreds of previous seekers had failed to? This book describes my adventurous quest, and the incredible results that it led me to.

The primary impetus for my interest in this mystery was, as it is for many Grail researchers, the publication of the best-selling *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, by Michael Baigent, Henry Lincoln, and Richard Leigh. This book presented a radical new theory: that Jesus Christ did not die on the cross, but lived on to father children, whose descendants intermarried with what became the Royal House of France. And it all started with Henry Lincoln's investigation in the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau.

The region of Southern France in which Rennes-le-Chateau is situated, called the Languedoc, has a long and fascinating history. During medieval times, It had been an important headquarters for the famous fighting monks known as the Knights Templar, the battle ground for the Catholic Church's crusade against the heretical Cathar sect, and the site of the capitol for France's first royal dynasty, the Merovingians - all subjects that I shall get to in due course. The tiny mountaintop village known as Rennes-le-Chateau had once been home to the Merovingian king-de-jure Sigisbert IV, and was quite possibly the home of his mother, Giselle de Razes, herself a Visigothic Princess. This village's central feature was, and still is, a little Catholic parish dedicated to Saint Mary Magdalene. To this quaint little church came, in 1885, a new cure, Berenger Sauniere, then 33, quite a learned man to be receiving such a seemingly lowly position. At that time, only about 200 people lived in Rennes-le-Chateau, and Sauniere's salary was a mere pittance - only a few dollars per year in today's rates.

In 1891, borrowing funds from the township, Sauniere began a restoration project for the church, on the encouragement of his friend, Abbe Henri Boudet, cure of a church at nearby Rennes-le-Bains. During these renovations, he had the altar stone lifted, which rested on two ancient Visigothic pillars. It was inside one of these pillars that Sauniere discovered four parchments, sealed inside wooden tubes, apparently written and deposited there by the parish's former cure, Abbe Antoine Bigou. Two of these parchments contained genealogies detailing the lineage of Dagobert II, the last effective king of the Merovingian dynasty. The other two parchments consisted of passages from the New Testament. But these were not mere pieces of scripture. They were written with deliberate spelling errors, misplaced truncated letters and spacing anomalies which revealed a clever coding system. Sauniere was sent by Monsignor Felix Billard, the Bishop of Carcassonne, to have the parchments interpreted by Father Bieil, Director of Saint Sulpice in Paris, as well as the priest‘s nephew, Emile Hoffet - an ecclesiastic scholar, closet occultist, and expert in cryptography. However, once deciphered, the parchments still did not make much sense, at least to the lay reader. The first one, which I will hereafter refer to as Parchment One, said:

“To Dagobert II, King and to Sion belong this treasure and he is there dead.”

Parchment Two was much more cryptic. It read:

“Shepherdess - No temptation that Poussin and Teniers hold the key; Peace 681 by the cross and this horse of God I destroy this dæmon of the guardian at midday blue apples.”

After the parchments had been deciphered, Father Bieil gave Berenger Sauniere copies of two paintings: one, an unspecified work by David Teniers, and the other, a work by the prolific Nicolas Poussin called *Les Bergers d’Arcadie - The Shepherds of Arcadia*. These facts help us to understand the reference in the parchments which reads: “Poussin and

Teniers hold the key." Poussin's painting, although once thought to have been a figment of his imagination, is now known to have depicted an actual tomb that existed near the village of Arques at the time, six miles from Rennes-le-Château. In fact, Rennes-le-Chateau itself can be seen in the corner of the painting. The inscription on the tomb reads: "Et in Arcadia Ego", and is the title of an earlier work from 1618 by the painter Guercino, as well as another Poussin painting on the same theme made ten years previous. Often translated "Even in Arcadia I am", and taken to be a reference to the pervasiveness of Death, it means, more literally: "And in Arcadia I...", like an unfinished sentence. This sentence would take on an increasing significance as my investigation continued

When Sauniere returned from his trip to Paris, he is said to have exhibited strange behavior, continuing to renovate his parish, but now in a very strange bizarre fashion. For instance, he installed depictions of the Stations of the Cross on the church walls bearing some marked irregularities. Station XIV showed Christ's body being installed in the tomb at nighttime, in contrast to the traditional daylight depiction, causing the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* to question whether it was actually being *removed* from the tomb instead. Sauniere erected a large, Satanic-looking statue inside the doorway: a depiction of the demon Asmodeus, keeper of secrets and hidden treasures (and, according to cabalistic tradition, the true architect of Solomon's Temple). Above the door Sauniere placed a sign that read "Terribilis est locus ist", meaning "This place is terrible." He erected a Gothic-looking tower called "Tour Magdala" to house his library in, and a villa named "Bethania", after one of Christ's other disciples, Mary of Bethany. Sauniere could often be found up late at night, walking the grounds, digging in the graveyard and making excavations underneath the parish foundation. One interesting excavation involved lifting what was called "the Knight's Flagstone", which stood before the altar. No one knows exactly what he found under there, but he immediately told his workmen to put everything back, and had the stone (which bore a depiction of two knights riding the same horse, the seal of the Knights Templar) paved over.

Sauniere's behavior extended to the church's graveyard, where, without regard for the sanctity of human remains, he proceeded to desecrate a grave. It was that of the noble Marie, Marquise de Blanchefort, a descendant of the Merovingian kings, whose family had been deeply involved with the Knights Templar, providing them with their fourth Grand Master. The tombstone and plate had been designed by the parish's former cure, Abbe Bigou, who had been the Blancheforts' personal chaplain. The text of the tombstone's inscription contained spelling and spacing anomalies that turned out to be yet another code.

When deciphered, it was found to be an exact replica of the coded text on Parchment Two, “Shepherdess - No temptation...” The plate was inscribed with a strange mixture of Greek and Latin letters that formed the words “Et in Arcadia Ego”, along with a bizarre depiction of a spider, and again, the letters “PS.” The inscriptions were removed by Sauniere, clearly in an attempt to cover up the “terrible” secrets he had learned from the parchments, but he did not realize that somebody had already made engravings, which remained in the town’s archives.

At about this time Sauniere began receiving a large cash deposit from Archduke Johann von Habsburg, a cousin of Franz Josef, Emperor of Austria, and he proceeded to spend extravagantly - on food, wine, clothes, parties, trips to Paris, and more church renovations, using, at times, extremely rare and expensive materials. He was then, it seems, hired by Jean-Stephane Habsburg specifically to search for secret documents within the church. He also started carousing with a circle of occult initiates which included Emile Hoffet, opera singer Emma Calve (his suspected lover), and composer Claude Debussy. To all appearances, Sauniere had been converted to some strange occult sect, presumed by many to have been a Masonic-oriented secret society. But at the time, no one knew the name of this group. However, the answer may perhaps be found in an inscription placed on the Calvary in the church courtyard, “AOMPS” -

which, as author Henry Lincoln theorizes, could stand for Latin words that translate to, “Ancient Mystical Order of the Priory of Sion.” This is perhaps also the meaning of the two letters, “PS”, which can be found at the bottom of one of the parchments, along with the word “Sion”, which is written backwards at the bottom of Parchment Two.[1]

Sauniere continued his lavish spending and strange behavior for his remaining years, apparently keeping his secret within his circle of occult friends, including his friend Abbe Boudet, and his housekeeper, Marie Deneraud. Then on the 17th of January, 1917, the “Feast Day of Saint Sulpice”, and the same date of death found on the tombstone of Marie de Blanchefort, the sixty-five-year-old Sauniere had an unexpected stroke - quite unexpected, considering that just five days previous, his parishioners had been noting how healthy he seemed for a man his age. Strangely, Marie Deneraud had already ordered a coffin for Sauniere.

For the next five days he lay on his deathbed. A priest from a nearby town was called in to hear his confession and administer Last Rites. But as witnesses state, the priest emerged from the bedchamber moments later, stricken with terror, and having refused to give Sauniere Extreme Unction. According to one witness, he “never smiled again”, and his inexplicable state of mental anguish lasted for several months. On January 23, the day after his death, Sauniere's body was seated upright in front of the Tour Magdala, dressed in a red ceremonial robe with long tassels, which his parishioners proceeded to pluck off of his garment as they filed past, one by one, giving their respects. The meaning of this ceremony has eluded most researchers, but as I will later demonstrate, its roots are quite ancient.

---

[1] Another word found in that parchment was “Rex Mundi”, meaning “King of the World.” Rex Mundi was considered by the heretical Cathars who had once occupied the area to be the evil demiurge that had created existence. The significance of this will soon be understood.

When Sauniere's will was read, there were more surprises in store, for he was declared to be penniless, having given all of his accumulated wealth to Marie Deneraud. She continued to live off of this wealth until 1946, when a new French currency was issued. Frenchmen were required, while exchanging old franc notes for new, to give a basic account of how they had acquired their money. Rather than give any explanation, Madam Deneraud chose to burn all of her old francs in a bonfire outside of the Villa Bethania. This villa she then sold, and lived off of the proceeds for the next seven years. The villa's new owner, Neil Corbu, became her best friend, and she promised him that before she passed, she would reveal to him a secret that would bring him not only wealth, but "power." Unfortunately, she herself suffered a stroke before she could reveal it, and spent the rest of her short life in bed, having been rendered mute.

Over the years, much has been made of this mystery. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* have suggested that the "he" referred to in the second parchment ("and he is there dead") might have actually been the big "He" - Jesus Christ, who, according to this theory, survived the crucifixion, faked his death, and was smuggled out of the Holy Land, allowing rumors of his ascent to Heaven to gather in his wake. Indeed a long-standing tradition embraced for generations in rural Southern France attests to this being the case. As the legend tells us, Jesus was not alone, but accompanied by his *wife* in this story - Mary Magdalene, the "reformed whore" of Catholic theology whom Jesus, to the consternation of his other disciples, loved above all others. She was also, of course, the patron saint of Rennes-le-Chateau. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* argues, Christ was a flesh and blood being, the biological son of his father Joseph, not some "Holy Ghost" merely inhabiting a human body. Furthermore, in the Gospels his disciples refer to him as "Rabbi", and rabbis were required to be married, encouraged to have families so as to set a proper example for the rest of the Jewish people. As the theory goes, Christ was no peasant, no mere beggar, but literally the King of the Jews, with a rightful claim to that title through his descent from King David. And as it happens, the local French legends state that Mary was pregnant at the time with Christ's child, the royal heir to the throne of Jerusalem. Southern

France already included a large Jewish population that would have welcomed them. Thus the legends state that "Mary Magdalene brought the Holy Grail to France" - the Holy Grail, in this context, being a symbol for Mary's womb, pregnant with the royal blood of the Holy Family. This blood became, through Christ's descendants, intermingled, they say, with that of local nobility, and eventually ended up flowing through the veins of the Merovingian kings of France.

This tale, along with a number of other, more ancient mythological elements, eventually evolved into the Grail myths of the Middle Ages. One of the most convincing pieces of evidence for this is that fact that the French word for "Holy Grail" - "Sangreal", is remarkably similar to the French words for royal blood, "Sang Real." As perhaps confirmation of this, the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* did receive, while researching their book, information from a priest with connections to Emile Hoffet stating that that treasure which Sauniere discovered, and which led to him receiving cash payments ensuring his secrecy on the matter, consisted of "incontrovertible proof" that Christ survived the crucifixion, only to die years later in Southern France. Presumably, therefore, Christ's body would be interred there, perhaps elaborately so, by his loyal Visigothic subjects, who would have passed down the story in allegorical form to the generations that followed. Was this, then, the meaning behind the allegory of the tomb in Poussin's painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*? Did it, perhaps, depict an actual tomb clearly visible near Rennes-le-Chateau while at the same time pointing metaphorically to another, more important tomb that still lies hidden within the region's voluminous mountains?

In fact Henry Lincoln has discovered an amazing correspondence between *The Shepherds of Arcadia* and the landscape of Rennes-le-Chateau - specifically, a pentagram which he found implied in the painting's geometry.[2] The same pentagonal geometry can be found on a map of Rennes-le-Chateau, formed by five mountain peaks that make, seemingly against all odds, a mathematically perfect pentagram. Perhaps this pentagram acts as the proverbial "X" marking the spot of the sacred tomb. Thus the painting, which may be a coded message from a Renaissance painter clued in to the mystery, could actually be a map to buried treasure, the remains of the most popular man in history (Jesus) and the link between the French Merovingian kings and the biblical House of David. Could Poussin have known all this, enough to encode such a message in his picture? As it turns out, in 1656, Poussin was visited in Rome by Abbe Louis Fouquet, brother of Nicolas Fouquet, Louis XIV's superintendent of finances. After the meeting, while still in Rome, the Abbe sent a letter to his brother saying:

---

[2] The pentagram, of course, is a symbol of Venus, and one of the most recognizable symbols of the occult.

"He and I discussed certain things, which I shall with ease be able to explain to you in detail - things which will give you, through Monsieur Poussin, advantages which even kings would have great pains to draw from him, and which, according to him, it is possible that nobody else will ever discover in the centuries to come. And what is more, these are things so difficult to discover that nothing now on this earth can prove of better fortune nor be their equal."

Shortly after receiving this, Nicolas Fouquet was arrested, imprisoned, and held "incommunicado" for the rest of his life. The letter was confiscated by Louis XIV, who later went to great efforts to obtain *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, which he hung at his private apartments in Versailles. But what was it that Poussin and the Abbe discussed? What had he discovered "which even kings would have great pain to draw from him"? Was it, perhaps, "incontrovertible proof" of the tomb of Christ in France?

But why, many have asked, if he was not the son of God, and did not die on the cross for our sins, should his bloodline be so important? If the people who ascribe to this theory do not believe in his divinity, why should they care about his descendants? And why did Sauniere erect that demonic statue in the doorway of his church, with the inscription outside that said “This Place is Terrible?” Why was it that when Sauniere lay on his deathbed, the priest assigned to administer Last Rites refused him Final Unction, and exited his bed-chamber white as a ghost, terrified out of his wits? What secret was it that Sauniere divulged on his deathbed which caused this priest to be thereafter a changed man, who reportedly “never smiled again?” It is illogical that the prospect of Jesus Christ being married and having children would, at the close of the 19th century, illicit such a response. Such an idea is heretical, but certainly not demonic, and not the kind of thing that would cause a person to lose his sense of humor for the remainder of his life. Furthermore, why would the Catholic Church and the hidden hierarchy of Europe be willing to kill, as they purportedly had in the past, to keep a such a secret, the implications of which would seem to be purely theological and academic? It did not make sense to me when I first to write a book about this mystery. But as I discovered, throughout history, the Holy Grail has played a pivotal role, and the powers of the Grail are both sacred and demonic.

What is the Holy Grail?

As I have shown, it was the position of the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* that the “Sangreal”, or “Holy Grail”, as described in the stories that emerged from the courts of Europe in the early part of this millennium, is actually a veiled reference to the bloodline of David, a play on the words “Sang real”, or “royal blood.” In the Grail stories of the Middle Ages, the custodians of the Grail are the “Grail family”, headed by the Fisher King. They trace their lineage back to Joseph of Arimathea, who, along with Mary Magdalene, was supposed to have brought the Grail (often a cup filled with the “blood” of Jesus) from Jerusalem after the crucifixion. The Grail family, in the Grail stories, is romanticized as being chosen directly by God to guard the Grail (just as King David was chosen by God to rule over the Kingdom of Judah) and one of its members, Sir Galahad, is described as “a scion of the House of David.” Galahad is traditionally said to be the grandfather of a real-life character, Godfroi de Bouillon, who led the First Crusade and in 1118 founded, as we shall soon relate, the Order of Sion and the Knights Templar. The Grail guardians are described in the romances specifically as Templars. The Knights Templars were also at that time very influential in the French royal courts that commissioned most of the romances, so it is possible that they might have had an indirect effect on the content of the stories. Wolfram von Eschenbach states explicitly in the Grail romance *Parzival* that the Grail is the source of kingship. “And if anywhere a land loses its lord”, he writes, “if the people there acknowledge the Hand of God, and seek a new lord, they are granted one from the company of the Grail.”

However, there are many different versions of the Grail myth, and many different interpretations of what the Holy Grail actually was. But I do not see these interpretations as conflicting with one another. Rather they fit together to form a pattern, revealing that the Holy Grail is not merely a single object, but a network of related traditions as old as history itself.

A Stone

In Eschenbach’s *Parzival*, the Grail was a magic stone that could create things out of nothing, bring the dead back to life and cause those who looked upon it to never age another day. It also communicated. Written messages would appear on its surface detailing the names and lineages of those chosen to seek the Grail, and Parzival actually talked to it. It is called "*lapsit exillis*" - "stone from the heavens." Indeed, in the story it states that angels had "left it on earth and then rose high above the stars, as if their innocence drew them back." There are also versions of the story where these are described specifically as "fallen angels" who descended to Earth after the biblical "war in Heaven."

The Grail is sometimes identified as the "stone of light" knocked from Lucifer's crown during this war in Heaven. Others have claimed that the stone from Lucifer's crown was actually a meteorite, perhaps the one revered by Muslims at the Dome of the Rock in Jerusalem, a sacred black stone which they believe "fell from Heaven" as well. In fact, the Koran says that Muhammad stood upon this stone when he was taken to Heaven on a "ladder of light" by the Angel Gabriel. (This "ladder of light" will take on greater relevance later on in this book.)

Another candidate for the "Grail as stone" is the Emerald Tablet of Hermes, a slab of crystal engraved with ancient wisdom by the Greek god of writing. The stone upon which it is written supposedly "fell from Heaven", and the wisdom it contains is alchemical in nature, detailing a ten-step process, both chemical and spiritual, that results in the creation of the "Philosopher's Stone." Also called the "Elixir of Life", this "stone" bestows enlightenment and immortality upon those who partake of it. It is symbolized in alchemy by the Sun, and in equated with the Grail.

The stone from Heaven upon which all of this alchemical wisdom was purportedly engraved is often specified as the stone from Lucifer's crown. In these versions, Hermes is equated with the biblical prophet Enoch, and is said to have passed the Tablet on to his grandson Noah, who took it with him on board the Ark.

A Cup

As previously mentioned, the Grail is traditionally thought of as the cup that caught Jesus Christ's blood as he hung upon the cross. This legend was first found in Chretien de Troyes' *Perceval*, written in 1182. The Grail is also said to be the cup used by Christ at the Last Supper. One popular candidate for this artifact is a crumbling hunk of olive wood which rests at the Nanteos Mansion in Glastonbury, England, supposedly brought there by Joseph of Arimathea. Richard Wagner visited the mansion once and there conceived the idea for his opera *Parsifal.*

But there are many other stories surrounding the Grail cup. Some have said that this is the same cup used by the priest Melchizedek while serving Abraham bread and wine on Mt. Moriah. From the Grail cup, sometimes described more as a bowl or a serving dish, one could obtain whatever kind of food one wished, in limitless abundance. In this way the legend is obviously based on ancient Celtic myths about Bran the Blessed's "cauldron of rebirth" and the magical "Horn of Plenty." This accords with earlier prototypes of the Grail story from Mesopotamian cultures that refer to a mystical bowl which, coincidentally, is covered with sacred writing. The word "grail" is said by some scholars to come from the Old French word "gradale", a dish used to serve successive courses in a meal, but I have discussed in a later chapter how this word could have a much older antiquity. When not filled with blood or food made from thin air, the Grail was empty, and its emptiness was heavily stressed, perhaps because emptiness is the supreme state of being and enlightenment - the annihilation of the ego.

Mystical Union

This brings us to another point of view concerning the Grail: a spiritual experience. It is described as the most worthy thing that one can seek, and those who embark upon the quest for the Grail must be completely pure of heart. One does not merely "find" the Grail: one "achieves" it, and at that point is initiated into its secrets. Just seeing it causes an overwhelming, trance-like state of awe and reverence, and the experience brings a complete transformation of the soul. “Upon a green achmardi she bore the consummation of heart’s desire”, writes Eschenbach, “its root and its blossoming - a thing called ‘the Gral’, paradisal, transcending all earthly perfection!” In the story of *Parzival* the Grail has been lost, causing a state of infertility called “the Wasteland.” The Fisher King, Parzival’s uncle, is wounded in the crotch, and the festering sore, along with the Wasteland, cannot be cured until the Grail is found - an obvious metaphor for spiritual redemption. This is the redemption that, mystics relate, occurs when one’s inner polarities (male/female, light/dark, etc.) are aligned, equalized, and transcended, creating a feeling of sublime nothingness that leaves one receptive to divine influence. It is union with God, the Great Void, the state of Samadhi that is the goal of yogic meditation.

Bodily Secretions

Famed magician Aleister Crowley had quite a different take on the meaning of the Grail. Noted for his work in the field of sex magic, he combined Tantric theory learned in India with methodology learned from the German Ordo Templi Orientis. He believed that sex performed ritually could result in transcendence of the ego and union with the Godhead. This was possible if one was "in conversation with the Holy Guardian Angel" at the moment of orgasm, and the process for reaching that state is detailed in *The Book of the Unveiling of the Sangraal.* Afterwards, all fluids created during sex must be consumed in full by the magician, so as to retain their potency (in the same way that Tantrics retain their semen so as to prevent a loss of energy). Crowley referred to semen as "red tincture", vaginal secretions as "white tincture", and the mix of the two, the Elixir of Life. He also called it significantly, the "Magnum Opus" or "Philosopher's Stone." The holy vessel (vagina) from which one drinks the Elixir of Life he called "the Sangraal." This is an important connection, because according to my research, sex magic appears to have been part of a long-standing tradition in which many members of the Grail family and their close associates participated. Interestingly, when Crowley wrote about his own sex magic rituals he referred to himself as "the Great Beast" and his consort as "the Whore of Babalon." I am reminded of a passage in Saint John's *Revelations* describing the Whore of Babalon thusly:

"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication" (Revelation, 7:4-5).

Does that golden cup symbolize the same idea as the Holy Grail? As I was soon to find out, the concept of a "Scarlet Woman" is directly related to both the practice of sex magic and the Holy Grail tradition, so the answer to that question is most probably "yes."

The Ark

In his book *The Sign and the Seal*, Graham Hancock argues that the Grail might have actually been the Ark of the Covenant, the revered Judaic relic designed by Jehovah and built by the Hebrews to absolute geometric perfection. This was the 1 cubit x 1 cubit x 2 cubit wooden cedar box into which Moses placed the Tablets of the Testimony: tablets of stone engraved by the finger of God.[3] It was overlaid with the purest of gold, and crowned with two mysterious winged objects called cherubim who each had two faces: of a lion and eagle, a man and an ox, respectively. Between their outstretched wings stood the Mercy Seat, where God would literally sit and talk to the priest. In fact, God was referred to as actually *living in* the Ark. "The Lord reigneth; let the people tremble: he sitteth between the cherubim; let the earth be moved."[4] The prophet Samuel was said to have seen and conversed with a "form", which he took to be God, in the vicinity of the Ark. Later, King Solomon had a temple built for it, in which he used the Ark to conjure up not only Jehovah, but a host "demons" and "archangels." The Ark "smote" those who touched it, moved objects at will and produced "manna" for the Israelites to eat while they were starving in the desert - all attributes shared by the Grail. The Ark had to be obscured by a veil at all times lest those who looked upon be killed, and only the sons of the High Priest Aaron were allowed to actually see it, protected by a "breastplate of judgment" made from gold and precious stones.

---

[3] *(Exodus 31:18.)*

Graham Hancock bases his argument on the fact that the Knights Templar, "guardians of the Grail" according to tradition, were believed to have excavated a treasure from the caverns underneath Solomon's Temple which made them extremely rich and powerful. They were rumored to have taken this treasure to the mountain of Montsegur in the Languedoc region of France, which was the prototype for the setting of most of the Grail romances, “Montsalvat.” It is also quite close to Rennes-le-Chateau.

---

[4] *(Psalm 99.)*

Each of these explanations of the Grail is equally intriguing. I eventually came to the conclusion that they may all be correct, and that the Grail is really a combination of all of the above, each providing a piece of the puzzle known as the “Grail mystery.” This mystery, I believe, has now finally been cracked, and one of the first keys that helped open up the mystery to me was the existence of the “Grail bloodline.” My study of this subject began with the legendary Merovingian kings.

Blood Royale

It is not known when the Merovingian dynasty began, for their rule over the Frankish kingdom seems to have already been well-established by the time of Meroveus - the source of the line’s name and the first king of that line to have made his way onto the historical record. Before this there is no other line of Frankish kings whom the Merovingians would have usurped: they simply had always been the royal family as far back as anyone could remember. Meroveus was, however, worthy of being called the progenitor of the dynasty, for his conception was in no way natural.

Meroveus was, according to the legend, the spawn of two fathers: one, the Frankish King Clodio, the other, a mysterious sea creature called "the Quinotaur." This beast raped his mother, already pregnant, as she was swimming in the ocean, and managed to magically inject his own seed into the developing fetus, co-mingling his own inhuman blood with that of the Frankish kings. This is why Meroveus' name bore within it the French word for "sea", and why his descendants, the Merovingian kings, were believed to possess magical, super-human powers. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states:

"According to tradition Merovingian monarchs were occult adepts, initiates in arcane sciences, practitioners in esoteric arts - worthy rivals of Merlin, their fabulous near-contemporary. They were often called the sorcerer kings or thaumaturge kings. By virtue of some miraculous property in their blood, they could allegedly heal by the laying on of hands; and according to one account the tassels on the fringes of their robes were deemed to possess miraculous curative powers. They were said to be capable of clairvoyant or telepathic communication with beasts and with the natural world around them, and to wear powerful magical necklaces. They were said to possess an arcane spell that protected them

and granted them phenomenal longevity - which history, incidentally, does not seem to confirm.”

Other rumors about the Merovingians were very specific. For starters, each supposedly bore a birthmark that consisted of a red equilateral cross, either above the heart or between the shoulder blades. They were called “the long-haired kings”, because they refused to cut their hair, which purportedly contained the essence of their magical powers. At death, it would appear that they partook of the ancient ritual of trepanation, allowing the “soul” to escape to the afterlife through a hole drilled in the deceased’s skull. They were also ritually entombed with strange, occult artifacts, much like the Egyptian Pharaohs. In the tomb of Meroveus’ son, King Childeric, there was interred a severed horse’s head, a golden bull’s head, a crystal ball, and three-hundred golden bees - a symbol of the Merovingian line. (These bees were later attached to the coronation robe of Napoleon Bonaparte, who had married a Merovingian princess, in order to connect himself symbolically with the ancient kingly line.) There was another similarity between the Merovingians and the Egyptian Pharaohs: both were considered to be priest-kings, and living incarnations of the divine. This was seen by the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* as evidence for a Merovingian descent from Christ, and a long-standing local tradition does indeed link them with said blood, making them, by definition, a "Grail family."

The knowledge of this remarkable ancestry was purportedly the impetus behind the pact made between Meroveus' grandson, King Clovis I, and the Roman Catholic Church in the year 469, bestowing upon him the title "New Constantine", and control over a vast kingdom which provided the prototype for the "Holy Roman Empire." This title was, according to the pact, to be passed down to his descendants from that moment on, in exchange for his conversion to the faith. (Yes, the presumed "children of Christ" were themselves, until that time, not Christians.) The idea, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, was that by employing the Merovingians and allowing them to spread their empire, the Church could keep the priest-kings "under their thumb", so to speak, and silent about their divine lineage, which could be devastating for the hegemony of the Roman faith. For several generations, this agreement was observed, and the baptism of Clovis was a fondly remembered event, commonly depicted in ancient seals with the king being submerged in a Grail-like cup. But in the year 679, the Church broke their very own pact, in the most devastating of ways.

By the time the Merovingian King Dagobert II was born, in 651, the power of the throne had already been weakened, with authority increasingly being usurped by court chancellors known as “Mayors of the Palace.” On the death of his father, the five-year-old Dagobert was kidnapped by then Palace Mayor Grimoald, who tried to put his own son on the throne instead. Human compassion saved young Dagobert from death, and he was exiled to Ireland, only to return years later and reclaim the throne in 679. But the problems of the Mayors of the Palace continued. Apparently displeased with Dagobert’s lack of allegiance and devotion to the faith (a problem noted in previous Merovingian kings as well), the Roman church entered into a conspiracy with Mayor Pepin the Fat. On December 23, supposedly while on a hunting trip in the haunted and sacred wood called the “Forest of Woevres”, Dagobert was lanced through the eye, on Pepin’s orders, they say. With Roman Catholic endorsement, Pepin passed political power onto his son, Charles Martel, thus beginning the Carolingian dynasty that would later become so famous. After that, the Merovingian bloodline faded into obscurity. All subsequent Merovingian kings were essentially powerless, and they were officially thought to have died out with one of Dagobert’s grandsons, Childeric III. Forty-nine years later, Charles Martel’s grandson, Charlemagne was anointed Holy Roman Emperor. The church had finally washed its hands of the Merovingian problem, or so they thought.

And what was the problem, exactly? According to the claims, the Merovingians, as his blood descendants, knew the truth about Jesus and his actual significance as King of the Jews. They knew that the Roman church had stolen their birthright, usurped their role as the priest-kings of the "True Church", co-opted the idea of Jesus and created a fictionalized version of the messiah to further their own agenda - world domination, both secular and spiritual. The Merovingians knew that the fantasy of Christ as a virgin-born deity who suffered willingly for our sins and ascended to heaven was just that - an "opiate of the masses" used by the Romans as an excuse to set themselves up as the arbiters of God, and thus perpetuate their faltering empire. And with the death of Dagobert II, they thought they had eradicated this threat for good.

But according to the sources used in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, the Merovingian bloodline continued on in secret, via Sigisbert IV, son of Dagobert II and his second wife, Giselle de Razes. Historians have assumed Sigisbert to have been another casualty of his father's assassination, but there is actually no record of this. Legend says that Sigisbert IV was taken by his sister after his father's assassination and sent to the Languedoc, then ruled over by his mother. This occurred in the year 681, a possible explanation for the use of this number in one of the coded messages from Sauniere's parchments. He also took on the name of

"Plantard", meaning "ardent flowering shoot", a reference to the continuation of the Merovingian line, and took on his uncle's titles "Duke of Razes" and "Count of Rhedae." From this, the family names Plantard, Plantavelu, and Plantagenet (the name of one of Britain's most famous royal lines) can be traced. It is also likely that Sigisbert's descendants were the rulers of a independent kingdom encompassing the region of Razes and Rennes-le-Chateau that came into being in the 8th century. The rulers of this land included Theodoric, Guillem de Gellone (a famous figure of his time who was mentioned in Dante's *The Divine Comedy*) and Prince Ursus, listed by some genealogies as Dagobert II's grandson, Sigisbert VI. Somewhere around 879, he was declared "King Ursus" by his supporters, who attempted to usurp King Louis II and place Ursus on the French throne. Although the insurrection failed, Ursus married into the Breton ducal house, and his descendants took on the duchies of Brittany and Aquitaine. They also brought the bloodline to England, beginning the Planta family line that eventually resulted in the Plantagenets. One member of this Planta line was Bera IV, also called "the Architect." There is a possibility that he and his descendants may have been involved in the formation of Freemasonry. Interestingly, according to Masonic scholar Albert Pike, the Craft is sometimes referred to as "*Frankmasonry*."

Genetic descent is not the only way in which the Merovingians have passed on their heritage to future generations. The other was in the form of a cult - a cult which cherished Christ and, in particular, Mary Magdalene, as progenitors of the Merovingian “Grail blood”, which they deemed sacred. This cult also recognized another divine ancestor, represented by the Quinotaur, whose genetic essence was intermingled with that of the blood of Christ in the bodies of the Grail kings. Essentially, it was what we would call the cult of the Holy Grail. Certainly this cult was responsible for the way Dagobert II’s relics were treated after his death. While the Roman Catholic Church and the Carolingian hierarchy were attempting to excise Dagobert II and his heirs from the history books (so much so that any chronicle of French kings written before 1646 fails to even mention him), Dagobert’s body was exhumed in 872 from the royal chapel of Saint Remy in Stenay and moved to a new church, where it became the center for the worship of “Saint Dagobert”, for he had been canonized by a local “metropolitan conclave.” The relics were believed by the local cult to protect the town against intruders, and they began to observe a feast on every “Saint Dagobert’s Day” - December 23, the anniversary of his martyrdom. The Pope later canonized Dagobert in 1159, not the last time the Church would mark for sainthood a person who had been martyred by the Church itself.

Years later, the Church would turn martyring those of the Grail cult into a full-time job.

The Albigensian Crusade

In the year 1209, the Catholic Church began its first and only crusade against fellow Christian Europeans, the Cathars. The word “Cathar” came from “Cathari”, meaning “the Pure Ones”, although they were also called “Albigensians” because they had first been publicly condemned by an ecclesiastical council at the Languedoc town of Albi. The Cathars were a heretical Christian sect who believed that one could commune with the True God through the spiritual experience of “gnosis” - direct knowledge of the divine. They did not believe in the crucifixion or honor the cross. They also believed that the “Jehovah” of the Bible was actually a demiurge: “Rex Mundi”, the King of the World, who had created the corrupt world of matter in order to entrap men’s souls. The goal of gnosis, then, was to free oneself from the bonds of creation, much like the Buddhist concept of “nirvana.” They were fish-eating vegetarians, and practiced birth control to prevent innocent children from being brought in to the corrupt world of matter. Oh, and one other thing: they were rumored to have possessed a vast treasure that included the "Holy Grail."

The Languedoc region of France was a bastion of Cathar thought, where it had threatened to become the dominant religion. Nearly 30% of all Cathar priests were drawn from Languedoc nobility, and even non-Cathars in the region usually maintained a cold attitude towards the Church of Rome. The Languedoc was at that time an independent principality, with a distinct culture of esoteric thought and higher learning. So when the "Albigensian crusade", as it came to be called, began, even many non-Cathar locals defended their home-grown heretics to the death.

For the next forty years, the Church attempted to wipe out the Albigensian menace. The destruction of Catharism, which tended to run in families, was so complete that the Crusade is now considered by historians to be Europe's first genocide. Those who were not killed in the fighting were arrested and tortured by the Dominican Order's Holy Inquisition. The Church's army spared no one, not even non-Cathars, who stood in the way of their stated goal. When Pope Innocent III was asked how the soldiers should know the heretics from the true Christians, he responded with the oft-quoted line, "Kill them all. God will know His own."

And that they did. The Cathars and their defenders fought bravely, but in the end it was no use. Some of the few remaining Cathar strongholds, towards the end, were those in Arques, Narbonne, Toulouse, Carcassonne, and Rennes-le -Chateau. But the final fortress to capitulate was that of Montsegur, “poised”, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* relates, “like a celestial ark above the surrounding valleys.” It was besieged by the invaders for ten months, and finally fell in March of 1244.

On the first of March, the less than 400 remaining defenders, 180 of them actual Cathars, and the remainder mercenary soldiers, were offered terms for surrender. The soldiers would receive full pardon, and the heretics would only have to renounce their beliefs and make a full confession. The Cathars agreed to a two-week truce while they considered the terms, with the understanding that if anyone tried to escape, they would be immediately executed. They took the whole two weeks, but in the end, the Cathars refused, and were immediately burned to death.

Yet according to the legends, the night before the end of the ceasefire, a small group of Cathars managed to sneak out of the fortress carrying some unnamed treasure - one quite separate and distinct from the famed hordes of gold and other booty the heretics possessed, which had been smuggled out safely much earlier in the siege. Given the importance of the date, which was Easter, March 14, the day of the Spring Equinox, the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* assumed that the "treasure" must have been some sort of holy relic, which they had needed to hold onto until that point for use in their Spring Equinox ritual. Records indicate that an equinox ritual did indeed take place. Whatever it consisted of was in all probability the reason why at least twenty of the mercenary soldiers who were defending the Cathars converted to their religion at the last moment, thus sealing their death warrants. The writers of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* have theorized that the ritual had more to do with the equinox than with the Christian Easter, since Easter celebrated Christ's resurrection after the crucifixion, and the Cathars did not believe that Christ had died on the cross. But could it not have been both an observance of the equinox *and* an Easter ritual - one that actually repudiated the crucifixion? A letter written by Jean de Joinville, friend to French King Louis IX during the 13th century, stated that , "The king once told me how several men from among the Albigenses had gone to the Comte de Montfort... and asked him to come look at the body of Our Lord, which had become flesh and blood in the hands of their priest." Perhaps the Cathars did possess the true Body of Christ, and perhaps something about that body provided proof that Christ had not been crucified. Then again, as we were later to discover, Christ was not the only being whom the Cathars may have called "Lord." Nor were they the only possible possessors of the Holy Grail and the secret traditions of Christ whom the Catholic Church would decide to root out in the coming years.

The Knights Templar

According to chroniclers of their early years, the Knights Templar were founded in 1188 by Hughes de Payen, a vassal of the Count of Champagne. This occurred after they had presented themselves to Baldwin I, King of Jerusalem, whose older brother, Godfroi de Bouillon had led the crusaders to victory in the Holy Land almost twenty years previously. They proposed themselves as a order of fighting monks, who would protect the roadways for pious pilgrims journeying to Jerusalem. They were immediately given an entire wing of the royal palace as their headquarters - a wing that had been built upon the foundations of the Temple of Solomon. Thus they received their name, the Knights of the Temple.

For the next nine years they admitted no new members to their order - strange since the nine founding members hardly seem like they would have provided an adequate number of staff to protect all of the roads to the Holy Land. Furthermore, there is no evidence from contemporary chroniclers indicating that they even engaged in such activities. Guillame de Tyre, the chief chronicler of the age and an intimate associate of King Baldwin, does not even mention them, causing the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* to suspect that he had been silenced by the royal muzzle to cover up for the Templars' actual activities - excavating the Temple Mount. The authors speculate that when the Roman legions sacked the Temple in 70 A.D., they took only the most obvious loot, unwittingly leaving behind the most valuable treasure, chief among which would have been the Ark of the Covenant, and perhaps, the artifact which came to be known as the Holy Grail. This could have been secreted away by the Temple priests in any of the numerous tunnels known to exist beneath Solomon's Stables on the Temple Mount - stables which the Templars made use of during their nine-year stay. This could have, in fact, been the purpose behind the foundation of their order - a mission based upon knowledge that had been passed down from Christ's descendants to the Merovingians, and then on to the Templar founders. The main figures involved in the Templars' foundation (King Baldwin, the Count of Champagne, Andre de Montbard, Hughes de Payen, Bertrand de Blanchefort and Godfroi de Bouillon) were all descendants of Merovingian blood, and if they had been in on the family secrets, that could explain why they willingly pledged themselves, their money, and in the king’s case, the royal quarters to the cause. If they had been successful in their mission, it could explain how they acquired the capital with which they eventually created a vast empire.

During their first nine years they became famous throughout Europe as the selfless “Militia of Christ.” By 1127, most of the knights had returned to Europe, and in the following year, Saint Bernard of Clairvaux, Andre de Montbard’s uncle, published a pro-Templar tract entitled *In Praise of the New Knighthood.* At the Saint Bernard-inspired Council of Troyes, the Church officially recognized the Templars as a religious and military order dedicated to the defense of Christendom. Saint Bernard then assisted in the drawing up of their rules of conduct, based upon those of the Cistercian order of monks, another group upon whom Bernard had much influence. Templars were sworn to poverty and celibacy. They wore white mantels to symbolize their purity, emblazoned with the red cross patee. And just as the Merovingians were forbidden to cut their hair, the Templars were likewise forbidden to cut their beards. The Templars’ reputation for bravery was well-earned. They were not allowed to retreat from battle unless the odds outweighed them three to one, and when they were captured they were obliged to fight to the death rather than beg for mercy or ransom. They were also pledged to secrecy about the orders workings, and were inducted with a strange initiation ceremony about which there were many rumors. A few years later, there was another interesting development in their rule. In 1139, a former student of Saint Bernard's, Pope Innocent II, issued a papal bull stating that the Knights Templar would owe allegiance to none except the Pope himself, making them immune to the political whims of all authorities, both religious and secular.

As their fame grew, so did their ranks, and thus, their property holdings. The sons of European nobility swelled their membership, and the vast amounts of money and property donated by the new recruits swelled their territory and their coffers - for new recruits, as per their vow of poverty, were required to relinquish all property upon admittance to the order. Soon they stood at the helm of a huge, international empire over which they held complete independent sovereignty. During Christendom's Second Crusade, the Templars accompanied France's King Louis II into battle, and played a decisive role in preventing the war from becoming a total disaster. Over the next century, they secured their important role in international politics by utilizing their influence upon a number of kings, nobles, and ecclesiastic authorities. Many of these kings were financially indebted to the Templars, and some actually resided with them. The Grand Master of the Temple even stood by England's King John as he signed the Magna Carta. At times, it appeared that the

Templars possessed the power to make or break a monarch's career according to their desire.

Their political influence spread in direct proportion to their huge banking operation. In fact, the modern institution of banking, in which money can be deposited in one location and withdrawn in another, is a Templar invention, along with the "cheque", likely named after the "chequerboard" pattern that was one of the Templars' most well-recognized motifs. This made it possible for pilgrims and travelers to journey safely without fear of roadside robbers, and the cheques were unforgable, as they were written in sophisticated secret codes for which the Templars became known. Almost every king or queen in Europe banked with them, as well as a number of Muslim leaders whom they dealt with on a regular basis. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* puts it, "The Templars thus became the primary money changers of the age, and the Paris preceptory became the center of European finance."

The Templars' enterprises put them in the position of being conduits for new forms of art, science, and craft, as well as new forms of thought and belief. They had access to new advances in agriculture, armaments, surveying, mapmaking, and navigation, and they were one of the first groups of people to employ the magnetic compass in their seafaring. They ran their own hospitals to treat wounded soldiers, and were at the forefront of modern medicine, bringing to the field a scientific point of view unusual among their contemporaries, including an unprecedented understanding of the principals of hygiene. They even made medical use of mold extracts, similar to the widespread use of penicillin as an antibiotic today. Their mastery of architectural principles, including the understanding of advanced mathematics (such as was used in the building of the Giza pyramid, for example), along with their patronage of the stonemasons' guilds, led to the development of Gothic architecture.

They were equally influential in bringing new religious and philosophical ideas into vogue throughout Europe, including blends of Islamic, Judaic, and Gnostic threads of thought, setting the stage for Europe's cultural Renaissance, which followed the medieval era and incorporated these same themes. Their ambiguous relationship with the Saracen enemy in the Holy Land, with whom they maintained a respectful peace whenever possible, led to the incorporation of a number of these new thought systems and scientific techniques, for Arab culture was still, at that time, a high civilization. There were even rumors of a close relationship with the Order of the Assassins, called by some authorities the Islamic equivalent to the Knights Templar. Like the Templars, they took oaths of secrecy, conducted strange ceremonies, and were obliged to fight with the same fanatical bravery.

But when their relationship with the Muslims began to deteriorate, the Templars' foothold in Jerusalem began to slip. King Baldwin IV of Jerusalem died in 1185. In the battle over the succession that resulted, the current Grand Master of the Knights Templar, Gerard de Ridefort, was said to have betrayed some oath made to the deceased king, initiating a near-civil war amongst the Europeans living in the Holy Land. He also managed to destroy the long-established truce between the Christians and the Saracens, and led the Christians into a battle at Hattin in 1187 that resulted in the end of their 100-year-long reign in Jerusalem. By 1291, almost the entire Holy Land was under Saracen control. The last Christian fortress, Acre, fell dramatically in May of that year.

The Templars set up new headquarters in Cyprus, but without the Holy Land to protect, or new territory to capture on behalf of Christendom, they lacked any clear-cut goals. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* suggest that at this point, the Knights Templar turned their attention towards a new ambition: creating their own independent European state. Other authors, such as Alan Butler and Stephen Dafoe, have suggested that Switzerland is a likely candidate for the planned Templar state, and even suggest that the Swiss nation is a direct result of this. Evidence they give includes the extensive Templar holdings that existed there, the Templar-style equilateral cross on their national flag, and the well-established role that Switzerland plays as a center of European finance. Also, in Valais, Switzerland, the capitol is called “Sion”, and is the center of a modern-day Templar order (the Grand Swiss Priory) dedicated to controlling the world by controlling its finances. However, the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* believe that the land which the Templars had picked to be the “New Jerusalem” was, in fact, the Languedoc region of Southern France - land of the Merovingian kings, whose descendants included the Templars’ founders. It was also the realm of the Cathar heretics, who, as it turned out, were closely associated with the Knights Templar as well.

It has been written that one of the Templars’ founders was a Cathar, and that their fourth Grand Master, Bertrand de Blanchefort, was from a “Cathar family.” So too were many of the order’s dignitaries. And although the Templars were officially neutral in regards to the Albigensian crusade, they did accept a number of Cathars into their ranks at that time, providing them with immunity from prosecution. They even allowed Cathar refugees to take shelter in their preceptories, and on some occasions did defend them militarily. According to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, “In the Languedoc, Temple officials were more frequently Cathar than Catholic”, and, “The Grand Master at the time... declared there was in fact only one true crusade - the crusade against the Saracens.”

But the Catholic crusade against heresy would soon be turned against the Templars themselves, and the Holy Inquisition, which had been formed to deal with the Cathar problem, would soon be torturing their knights. For by 1306, the Templars had made a most powerful enemy: King Philippe IV of France. He did not merely resent them because they owed no allegiance to him, being obliged solely to the Holy See, and constituted a military threat greater than his own armed forces. He also owed them a lot of money, which he could not afford to repay, but which he knew they held in great abundance. Furthermore, they had insulted him in the past by refusing him admittance to their ranks. Perhaps he had even heard about the treasure from Jerusalem that they supposedly possessed. Whichever the case, he had decided that he would do away with the Templars, not only in his own domains, but everywhere altogether. And the only other power he knew of that held the amount of international clout needed to execute the plan was the only power that held command over the Templars: the Papacy. But manipulating the Papacy was nothing new to King Philippe the Fair. He had already, as most historians will attest, played a guiding role in the kidnapping of Pope Boniface VIII and the poisoning of Pope Benedict XI. The current pope, Clement V, owed his very throne to Philippe, who had been responsible for his election. Even as the son of Ida de Blanchefort, from the same family as the Templars' fourth Grand Master, Clement V still could not resist pressure from Philippe the Fair. Philippe wanted to persecute the Templars for heresy.

The drama which unfolded thereafter gave rise to numerous legends, including the superstition surrounding "Friday the 13th." Philippe had drafted a list of charges, largely based on evidence gleaned from spies, and from a defected Templar who agreed to be a witness. He then issued secret orders to his seneschals throughout France, sealed, with instructions that they were to be opened at dawn on Friday, October 13, 1307, and implemented immediately. All Templars were to be arrested at once, and all of the order's property seized.

Despite the trouble the king went through to keep the plan secret, the Templars still seemed to have received some sort of warning, for the vast majority of their wealth, along with whatever holy relics they presumably possessed, had already been spirited away into trusted hands far from the king's reach. (Most of this could be achieved through their highly sophisticated network of banks.) The order's current Grand Master, Jacques de Molay, had just had all of the order's books burnt for no apparent reason. And one Templar who left the order had been told by the treasurer that this was a "wise" move, as danger for the order lurked around the corner. Also, a memo had been given to all of the Templar preceptories in France warning their members not to divulge any information to anyone about the order's customs and rituals. The Templars who were arrested went without struggle, as if they had been instructed to submit.

However, not all Templars were arrested. It is known that a group of them, all closely associated with the treasurer, escaped, taking with them, presumably, all the wealth and treasure they could carry. According to the legends, the Templars loaded the loot onto wagons, which they then transported to the coast, where eighteen ships awaited them at the Templar naval base at La Rochelle. These ships vanished without a trace shortly before the arrests.

The fate of the arrested knights varied. All were interrogated, and many were tortured into confessing. The confessions, as well as the accusations, all revolved around similar themes. A list of charges drawn up by the Inquisition on August 12th, 1308 reads:

> *"Item, that in each province they had idols, namely heads.*
> *Item, that they adored these idols.*
> *Item, that they said that the head could save them.*
> *Item, that it could make riches.*
> *Item, that it could make the trees flower.*

Item, that it made the land germinate.

Item, that they surrounded or touched each head of the aforesaid idol with small cords, which they wore around themselves next to the shirt or the flesh."

They were also accused, among other things, of homosexual rites, of baby sacrifice, of committing abortions, and of ritually trampling upon the Christian cross during their initiation ceremony. A widespread interpretation of this ritual, repeated often throughout the confessions, is that they were expressing their denial of the crucifixion, presumably because they had come across evidence that Christ did not die on the cross. This ritual could also have served as an introduction to a spiritual discipline that was older than Christianity. One aspirant, during the initiation ceremony, was supposedly told that he should not believe in Christ, but in a "higher God." A crucifix was then displayed, and he was told, "Set not much faith in this, for it is far too young." The accusations regarding this ritual, however, had been floating around the rumor mill since at least 1249.

The most widespread and consistent aspect of the confessions, however, involved the worship of one head in particular, specifically an idol named "Baphomet." Some said it was a man's head, some a woman's head. Some said that it was bearded, some that it was made of glass or crystal, and some said that it had two faces. A popular tale held that it was the head of the Templar's first Grand Master, Hughes de Payens, or that of John the Baptist. The latter seems a likely rumor to have been circulating amongst the Templars, for one of the theories surrounding the order is that they ascribed to the Johannite belief that John the Baptist was the true messiah, and Jesus a false prophet. Some even said that Baphomet was not a mere head, but a demon, perhaps the Devil himself - half male, half-female, half-human, and half-beast. This was the source for the 19th century occultist Eliphas Levi's well-known depiction of Baphomet, now incorporated into the Waite tarot deck as "the Devil." This popular image, sometimes referred to as "the Sabbatic Goat", was made to embody symbols of conflicting dualities. Thus the beast bears the breasts of a woman and the sex organs of a man. He is shown poised between the waxing and waning moon symbols with his right and left hands pointing up and down, respectively. Levi designed a sigil depicting an inverted pentagram with Baphomet's goat face super-imposed onto it, and called it the "Goat of Mendes." This symbol was later used by Anton LaVey's Church of Satan.

Yet there was another idolatrous head found during the raid on the Templar's Paris preceptory which presents an intriguing possibility about

Baphomet. According to the written account, it was, “a great head of gilded silver, most beautiful, and consisting of the image of a woman. Inside were two head-bones wrapped in a cloth of white linen, with another red cloth around it. A label was attached, on which was written the legend “Caput 58 M.” Given the evidence that the Templars knew of and believed in the Grail family, descendants of Christ, and Mary Magdalene, some think that this idol contains the relics of Magdalene herself. After all, 5 +8 = 13, and M is the 13th letter of the alphabet, so “58M” could be a code signifying the name “Mary Magdalene.” However, there is another important detail to consider as well. The “M” was actually written as “□”, the astrological sign for “Virgo.” There is a symbolic connection between the figure of Mary Magdalene and the figure of Virgo. There is also a connection between Mary Magdalene and the goddess Venus, or Isis, upon whom “Virgo” is based.

As it turns out, Isis figures into a popular legend regarding the origin of Baphomet. According to the tale, a Templar called “the Lord of Sidon” was in love with a young woman named Yse (possibly derived from “Isis”) who died suddenly. On the night of her burial, he dug up her body and copulated with it. Nine months later a voice “from the Void” told him to go back to the grave, where he would find his son. There he discovered a head resting on a pair of legbones (perhaps the origin of the

Templar’s famous skull and crossbones symbol.) The voice told him that if he was careful to guard the head, it would be “the giver of all things.” He took it with him and for the rest of his days it protected him. Later on, the tale relates, the Templar order got a hold of it and incorporated it into their rituals.

Despite the severity of the charges leveled against them by the Papacy, most Templars were able to confess and go on with their lives. A number of them escaped persecution altogether. In England, for instance, King Edward IV (Philippe’s son-in-law) took a protective stance towards the Templars, only pursuing them under extreme duress from the Pope, and then after most of them had already escaped. Those that were arrested often received light sentences involving a few years of penance in a monastery - not unlike the life they were used to living anyway. Their lands were given to the Knights Hospitaller of Saint John, now known as the “Knights of Malta”, and the military wing of the Vatican. It was an order that reportedly had much in common with the Templars, perhaps even certain belief systems, and there is evidence that some of the escaped Templars simply joined this rival order.

Where did the escaped English Templars go to? Most likely, Scotland, which provided a haven for renegade Templars from all over Europe. Scotland was at war with England at the time, so pressure from

King Edward would have been useless, and Scottish people at that time did not care much what the Pope thought of them either. Escaped Templars played an integral role in the history of Scotland, where the order was never officially dissolved. They are said to have fought by the side of Robert the Bruce during 1314's Battle of Bannockburn. They purportedly survived in Scotland at least until 1689, when, during the Battle of Killiecrankie (part of a revolt against the deposition of Scottish Stuart king James II by William of Orange) an ancient Templar device was found on the body of John Claverhouse, Viscount of Dundee.

In the province of Lorraine, which was then part of Germany (and now part of France), the region's duke exonerated all Templars of heresy, instructing them to array themselves in the clothes of common people and blend in with the populace. The Templars were openly defiant in both Germany and Spain, where they were proclaimed innocent by their judges, and went on to live normal lives in other orders, such as the Teutonic Order, or the Knights Hospitaller. In Portugal, the order itself was cleared of all charges, and merely had to change its name, becoming the Knights of Christ.[5] This order was devoted specifically to sailing, and sponsored a number of history's most well-known explorers. Vasco de Gama was a member of the order, and Prince Henry the Navigator, speculated as having been among the few to explore (albeit secretly) the New World prior to Christopher Columbus, was a Grand Master. Most importantly, however, Christopher Columbus himself was the son-in-law of a Knight of Christ, and may have used his relative's maps to navigate his way to America, where his ships sailed under flags bearing the order's insignia, the red equilateral cross. The Templars also reputedly used their influence in the Teutonic Order to exact a measure of revenge against the Catholic Church, when they decided to support the Protestant Reformation of Martin Luther.

---

[5] For a number of years, most of Portugal's early kings were Grand Masters of this order.

Revenge was something that was definitely on the minds of escaped Templars, especially in regards to what happened to their last known Grand Master, Jacques de Molay. Although he had confessed to the charges, he later repudiated them, claiming that the confession had been made during torture, and was therefore not valid. He was thus consigned, in March of 1314, to be slow-roasted upon an open fire in a public square. Before he died, de Molay is said to have called on both Pope Clement and King Philippe to join him in death within a year. Clement died of dysentery within a month, and about eight months later, Philippe died of unknown causes. This, of, course, lent credence to the rumors that the Templars were adept at witchcraft.

Nor did the revenge end there. In 1789, the dying curse of de Molay re-emerged in the actions of French Freemasons, heirs to the traditions (and perhaps the secrets) of the Knights Templar. These Freemasons were responsible for orchestrating the French Revolution against both the Catholic Church, and the current political state. King Philippe's descendant, Louis XVI, was beheaded before a cheering crowd. As the king's head rolled off the guillotine, a man reportedly leapt onto the scaffold and flung Louis' blood all over the crowd, shouting "Jacques de Molay, thou art avenged!"

In many other ways, too, the Templars lived on. Their secrets and traditions were taken up by the Order of Freemasons, a secret society, derived partially from medieval stonemasons' guilds, which has included many of Europe, England and America's most influential political figures from the seventeenth to the nineteenth centuries. They have largely been given credit for both the French Revolution and the American Revolution, and are thought by many to constitute an international conspiracy that continues to this day. The Freemasons do indeed seem to have embraced ideas that would tend to be associated with the Templars, including "secrets" regarding Solomon's Temple, the Ark of the Covenant, the Holy Grail, and alternative interpretations of both the Old and New Testament, embracing a lot of so-called "apocryphal" legends. They also use a number of the same symbols that the Templars used, including the skull and crossbones, the equilateral cross, and the double-barred Cross of Lorraine. And of course, the Freemasons' approach in general tends to be "occult" and "Gnostic", just like the Templars, derived from secrets that have purportedly been passed down from ancient Egypt and even earlier, just as the Templar wisdom is said to have been derived. The Freemasons even have entire degrees dedicated to the mythos of the Knights Templar.

Through the aforementioned stonemasons' guilds, which eventually evolved into Masonic lodges, the Templars communicated to the world the secrets they had learned from their excavations of Solomon's Temple - secrets involving sacred geometry and architecture. This resulted in the stunning array of Gothic cathedrals that sprung up across Europe during the Middle Ages and immediately afterward. These cathedrals are like music expressed in architecture, based upon the principle of the Golden Mean, nature's most perfect mathematical proportion, which will be discussed at length later in this book. Within the dimensions of the cathedrals were contained, so they say, the ancient secrets of alchemy, and by the looks of them one can easily imagine that to be true.

Because of their renowned esoteric wisdom, the legend of the Templars has been utilized by a number of other occult groups throughout the centuries. The Rosicrucian Order, an influential element of the Renaissance soon to be discussed, based its own mysteries upon theirs, as did the "Order of New Templars", a neo-pagan white supremacist organization that played a part in the rise of the Third Reich, before being obliterated by that Reich's ironic anti-occult efforts. Even the inner order of the S.S., known as the Black Sun, was patterned after the Templars. Other, more innocuous occult figures have embraced the teachings of the Templars as well, such as H.P. Blavatsky and Rudolf Steiner. Then, of course, there are the numerous neo-Templar orders that proliferate throughout the Western world, mostly social clubs for middle-aged men, all of whom claim a direct pedigree derived from the original order. Without a doubt, the legend of the Templars will live on to seed the fertile plain of the human imagination well into the twenty-first century.

The Templar Conspiracy

For a number of reasons, several books, including *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, have suggested that a conspiracy has contrived to distort the historical facts regarding the Knights Templar, and indeed, that the creation of the Templars themselves was the result of a conspiracy. One of the facts that seems to have been distorted is the date of the Templars' foundation: 1118. If the historians are correct, the Templars started in that year with nine knights, and did not add to their membership for another nine years. But it is known that by 1126 they had added four new members, so either the date of their foundation is wrong, or the bit about them admitting no new members for nine years is wrong. If the last piece of information is correct, then they would have actually been founded in 1111 or 1112. And there just so happens to be much evidence supporting that idea. For instance, in 1114, the Count of Champagne is known to have received a letter from the Bishop of Chartres regarding his intention to join "The militia of Christ", a nickname for the Templar order. Clearly, then, the existence of the Templars was already well-established.

This count of Champagne seems to have been at the center of the social circle that created the Templars. One-third of the nine knights who founded the Temple were vassals of the Count of Champagne, including Hughes de Payen, their first Grand Master. When the Count himself finally joined in 1124, he was therefore, in a reversal of traditional authority roles, pledging allegiance to one of his own vassals. There are other strange inter-connections as well. The Count also demonstrated his patronage to the Templars' sister order, the Cistercian Monks of Saint Bernard, when in 1115 he donated the land onto which Saint Bernard's

Abbey of Clairvaux was built. Saint Bernard was also the nephew of one of the Templars' original nine knights: Andre de Montbard. The court of Champagne, located in Troyes, was furthermore the location of a number of activities with which the Templars were also associated. It was a center for cabalistic studies throughout the Middle Ages, birthplace of the earliest versions of the Grail romances, and the site of some of the Templars' most important holdings.

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* indicate that this conspiracy revolved around the treasure of Solomon's Temple - a treasure that they suspect included the so-called "Holy Grail" - and that this conspiracy was primarily composed of descendants of the Grail family, the Merovingians. These are the people who may have been in possession of hereditary secrets regarding the location of the treasure, which must have been the main purpose behind creating the Templars. It was also the reason why King Baldwin II gave them quarters on the Temple Mount, and why they kept so few members for the first nine years - so that it would be easier to protect the secret. The suggestion seems to be that the conspiracy officially began in 1104, during a meeting between the Count of Champagne and a number of nobles from the Brienne, Chaumont, and Joinville families, as well as the "liege lord" of Andre de Montbard. It was immediately after this that the Count of Champagne left on his first trip to the Holy Land. He made another such trip in 1114, apparently desiring to join the Templars, who were already in existence. Upon his return, he donated that land to the Cistercian order mentioned previously. Following this, the holdings of both the Templars and the Cistercians expanded exponentially. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* theorized that a conspiracy had been behind the formation and rapid growth of both orders, and that this conspiracy in fact constituted a third order in itself.

This third order, they surmised, seems to have been preoccupied with the Languedoc region of Southern France (where Rennes-le-Chateau is located), and around the Templar preceptory in nearby Bezu. Templar activities in this region came to a head at around 1153 with Bertrand de Blanchefort, whose ancestral home was located in that region. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* describe Blanchefort as "the most significant of all Templar Grand Masters", and as a protege of Andre de Montbard. Under Blanchefort's leadership they became highly-trained and organized, as well as a force to be reckoned with in European finance and politics. It was Blanchefort who donated to them the lands near Rennes-le-Chateau and Bezu upon which they built their preceptories. And in 1156, under Blanchefort's direction, a group of Germans were imported into the region by the Templars, purportedly to work in the region's numerous gold mines. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states, "These workers were supposedly subjected to a rigid, virtually military discipline. They were forbidden to fraternize in any way with the local population, and were kept strictly segregated from the surrounding community." But what was all of this secrecy actually for - especially since the gold mines that they were supposedly working in had been emptied by Roman miners during the previous millennium? According to Cesar d'Arcons, an engineer hired to write up a report on the region's mineral deposits some time later, these Templar-employed German miners were not actually mining anything, but were excavating a subterranean crypt.

Whatever it was for which they were digging, they continued to take great pains to preserve the secret for many decades. By the end of the next century, the Templars had been invited by the lord of Bezu and Rennes-le-Chateau to dispatch a special contingent of Templars from Rousillon to Bezu, where they built a lookout post at the top of the mountain. No one knows why, however, since the pilgrim routes that ran through the area were already adequately protected. But as the locals will tell you, even unto this day, the Templars were actually there to guard a treasure - one clearly connected with what those German miners had been doing nearly a century earlier.

It is curious to note, with this in mind, that for reasons unspecified, the Templars stationed at Bezu and Rennes-le-Chateau were the only ones in France who went completely unpersecuted during the raid of 1307. Obviously, these knights had something up their sleeves that rendered them untouchable - a secret of some sort. And this secret was undoubtedly shared by that third, hidden order which I previously mentioned. That order is called the Priory of Sion.

The Priory of Sion

The “Prieure de Sion”, or “Priory of Sion (Zion)” first began publicizing itself, in modern times, at least, in 1956, when an explosion of written material regarding Rennes-le-Chateau, the Templars, and the Merovingians began to appear in France. The majority of this material appeared to the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* to have originated from the same group of people - although credited to divergent and supposedly unrelated authors. Most of these authors appeared to have inside knowledge of the Rennes-le-Chateau affair, and this information was leaked systematically through tantalizing tidbits that served to whet the reader’s appetite, and increase the aura of mystery already surrounding the whole affair. In short, it appeared to be “propaganda” which promoted the subject of Rennes-le-Chateau and the Merovingian monarchy on the part of this shadowy organization.

Some of the material appeared in mainstream books, newspapers, and magazines. For example, there was a series of best-selling paperbacks by Gerard de Sede, including *The Accursed Treasure*, written by a man who turned out to be an agent of this shadowy organization. His books were largely based on an informant named Pierre Plantard, the organization's leading figure. The rest of this explosion of materials, which are referred to in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* as the "Priory Documents", took the form of papers, pamphlets, and privately-published limited edition books and magazines deposited quite purposefully in France's national library, the Bibliotheque Nationale in Paris. Each of these would provide certain pieces of the puzzle which, when put together with the others, would begin to form a fuller, albeit still bewildering picture. Many of these were authored under obvious pseudonyms of symbolic significance, such as Antoine l'Ermite, named after Saint Anthony the Hermit, or "Madeleine Blancassal", derived from the French spelling of "Magdalene" and the names of the "Blanque" and "Sals" rivers, which converge at the village of Rennes-le-Chateau. The work of Ms. Blancassal was said to have been published by Switzerland's foremost Masonic lodge, Grand Loge Alpina. Strangely, the lodge itself denies this, although a researcher hired by the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* spotted it on the lodge’s library shelves.

Other “Priory Documents” (as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* refers to them) were published under the names of actual people, some of whom died mysteriously shortly after their publication. For instance, there was *Dossiers Secrets* (*Secret Dossiers*), a strange collection of purported data pertaining to the Merovingians and the Priory of Sion. It contained genealogies, letters, newspaper clippings, and other scraps all thrown together, along with commentary from the author, “Henri Lobineau”, and some other unnamed commentator. However, within the *Dossiers* themselves it was revealed that “Lobineau” was a pseudonym, and it was claimed that the real author was one Leo Schidlof, who died in 1966. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* talked to his daughter, who denied that he had written the *Dossiers*, but said that during his life and especially on the day of his death a number of people had tried to contact him on the subject, which he swore he knew nothing about. Yet *Secret Dossiers* asserted that he had not only written or compiled most of the material in the book, but had also possessed a leather briefcase filled with secret documents pertaining to the Rennes-le-Chateau between 1600 and 1800. The *Dossiers* claimed that shortly before his death M. Schidlof passed the briefcase onto a courier named Fakhar ul Islam, who was supposed to meet in East Germany with an "agent delegated by Geneva" in February 1967, in order to transfer the briefcase to him. However, it is claimed that Fakhar ul Islam was expelled from East Germany before this could occur, and went back to Paris to "await further orders." His body was found on February 20 on the railway tracks at Melan, France, having been thrown from an express train. The details of Mr. Fakhar ul Islam's death turned out to be true, as the discovery of his decapitated body had been reported in the papers the following day. The briefcase, of course, was gone.

One of the most significant "Priory documents" is *Le Serpent Rouge*. This consists of a prose poem, thirteen stanzas in length, each dedicated to one of the houses in the thirteen-house zodiac system used by the Priory of Sion (which we will discuss more later on.) It also contained a Merovingian genealogy, two maps of medieval France, and a map of the grounds of the Seminary of Saint Sulpice. The poem, although cryptic, made clear allusions to Rennes-le-Chateau, Mary Magdalene, January 17th, Freemasonry, alchemy, and a host of other subjects pertaining to the mystery at hand. It appeared to provide, in coded language, step by step instructions for discovering the secret of Rennes-le-Chateau. The authors were purported to be named "Louis Saint-Maxent, Pierre Feugere, and Gaston de Koker", three men who, just days after the poem was deposited in the library, were found hanged without explanation.

According to the “Priory Documents”, especially those found in the Bibliotheque Nationale, there was indeed another order behind the foundation of the Knights Templar: the Priory of Sion. The purpose of the Priory, which has continued, unlike the Templars, intact unto the present day, was and is the preservation, support, and eventual restoration to the throne of the Merovingian bloodline. In fact, not only are the Merovingians considered by the Priory to still be the rightful kings of France, they are also considered to be eligible for other thrones throughout Europe, as well as that of Jerusalem. This is by virtue of the fact that they passed their divine lineage on, though dynastic intermarriage, to many of Europe’s leading royal and noble houses, and most especially to a certain few, including the lines of Blanchefort, Gisors, Saint-Clair/Sinclair, Plantard, Hapsburg, and Lorraine. The Priory, according to the documents, possessed in its day a great deal of clout in the realm of international politics, and it still does today, secretly commanding the allegiance of a number of key individuals in politics, diplomacy, banking and finance - especially in Europe, and especially in France.

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* found that there was in fact an Ordre de Sion which resided in Jerusalem at least as early as the turn of the twelfth century - a mere ten years after the supposed foundation of the Order, according to the documents, in 1090. Furthermore, their headquarters was the Abbey of Notre Dame du Mont Sion, an Abbey founded by Godfroi de Bouillon. The Priory Documents state that the Knights Templar were created specifically by the Ordre de Sion, with the help of guiding lights Hughes de Payen, Bisol de Saint Omer, Hughes, Comte de Champagne, and Andre de Montbard (said to have been made a member of the Ordre de Sion, in 1111, the same year in which *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* speculated the Templars to have actually been founded). In 1117, Sion supposedly had Baldwin I, who, they say, "owed his throne" to the Ordre de Sion, negotiate the constitution of the Knights Templar. But as we know, the Templars had already existed in a rudimentary form prior to that.

Baigent, et. al. did find evidence that the historical Ordre de Sion had connections to the Templars, including charters bearing the signature of Hughes de Payen along with those of known members of Sion. Even more convincing, the list of Templar Grand Masters included in *Secret Dossiers* was even more complete and correct than any previously published list, as if drawn from inside information. The authors also found evidence that the group which eventually became the Ordre de Sion had a hand in starting the Crusades in the first place. This group consisted of monks from the Southern Italian region of Calabria who in 1070 migrated to the Ardennes forest, then owned by Godfroi de Bouillon. This same group is mentioned in the works of Gerard de Sede as having been led by the Merovingian Prince Ursus. They were patronized by de Bouillon's aunt and foster mother, Mathilde de Toscan, duchess of Lorraine, who gave them land at Orval, near Stenay, and the site of Dagobert II's assassination. But then in 1108 they vanished completely, and nobody knows where they went. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail,* however, speculates that they may have followed Godfroi de Bouillon on his crusade to the Holy Land, where "he is known to have been accompanied by an entourage of anonymous figures who acted as advisors and administrators." Further, Gerard de Sede wrote that Peter the Hermit, de Bouillon's tutor and one of the main figures behind the undertaking of the Crusades, was a member of the Calabrian monks.

In the *Secret Dossiers*, there is a quote from historian Rene Grousse stating that the kingship of De Bouillon's brother, Baldwin I, rested upon a "royal tradition", itself "founded on the Rock of Zion", which was described as "equal" to that of all European dynasties. This is strange, considering that at that time, Baldwin's office as "King of Jerusalem" was an elected position. But if Baldwin was indeed a descendant of the Merovingians, and thus Christ and King David, this would explain the allusion to the "Rock of Zion", a reference to the sovereignty of David's god-ordained kingship and the divine right of his bloodline to rule. Further, if Baldwin had in fact been installed in his office by an organization which represented that bloodline, it would explain how he "owed his throne" to the Ordre de Sion. This is certainly what it sounds like when contemporary chronicler Guillame de Tyre writes that as soon as Jerusalem had been captured, a secret group of unknown men, one "a certain bishop from Calabria", met to offer the throne of the new kingdom to Godfroi de Bouillon. For whatever reason, he declined the "King" title, but accepted that of "Defender of the Holy Sepulcher", and when he died in 1100, his brother Baldwin gladly accepted the crown.

After this point, the Ordre de Sion is not mentioned again in history until 1152, when King Louis VII of France brought them ninety-five new members and gave them the priory of Saint-Samson at Orleans. Says *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, of these new members, "twenty-six - two groups of thirteen each - are said to have entered the 'small Priory of the Mount of Sion', situated at Saint-Jean le Blare on the outskirts of Orleans."[6]

In 1188 there was a rift between the Order of Sion and the Order of the Temple. The Templars' current Grand Master, Gerard de Ridefort, had recently lost the Holy Land to the Saracens, and had also committed some kind of unspecified "treason." So in that year, during a ceremony called the "Cutting of the Elm", the Order of Sion officially disavowed the Templars and cut themselves off from them. As the Priory documents state, an event known as the "Cutting of the Elm" did occur at Gisors during that year, although the historical record of this event does not contain any reference to either the Order of Sion or the Knights Templar. It also does not appear to have ever been fully explained. Supposedly, there was an elm tree located in the "Champ Sacre", or "Sacred Field" at Gisors. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* write that, "According to medieval chroniclers the site had been deemed sacred since pre-Christian times, and during the twelfth century had provided the setting for numerous meetings between the kings of England and France." The Elm was, as the story goes, the only source of shade on the field. It was more than 800 years old, and "so large that nine men, linking hands could barely encompass its trunk." In 1188, during one of those historic meetings between the French monarch, Philippe II, and the English monarch, Henry II, a skirmish broke out between the two men's armies over the shelter provided by this tree. After three days of negotiations, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states that a "full-scale onslaught" ensued. The English "took refuge within the walls of Gisors itself, while the French are said to have cut down the tree in frustration. Philippe II then stormed back to Paris in a huff, declaring that he had not come to Gisors to play the role of woodcutter." Other accounts of the story include some other bizarre details. They say that Philippe announced to Henry that he intended to cut down the tree, and Henry's response was to reinforce the trunk with bands of iron. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* tells us that:

---

[6] See Appendix A for the significance of the numbers 26 and 13.

> *"...the following day the French armed themselves and formed a phalanx of five squadrons, each accompanied by a distinguished Lord of the realm, who advanced on the elm, accompanied by slingsmen, as well as carpenters equipped with axes and hammers. A struggle is said to have ensued, in which Richard Coeur de Lion, Henry's eldest son and heir, participated, attempting to protect the tree and spilling considerable blood in the process. Nevertheless... the tree was cut down."*

After the Cutting of the Elm, the Order de Sion selected a new Grand Master, Jean de Gisors, changed their name to "Prieure de Sion", and adopted an odd nickname, "Ormus", again with the "M" written as the sign for Virgo, with the other four letters written inside of the symbol. "Ormus" is also the name of an Egyptian sage from Alexandria, who in A.D. 46 created an initiative order with the Rose Cross as its insignia. It is significant, then, that in that same year of 1188, the Prieure de Sion also adopted the subtitle “Order de la Rose-Croix Veritas.” They kept that bizarre nickname, Ormus, until 1306, the year before the downfall of the Knights Templar in France. In that year, 1307, Sion’s Grand Master, Guillaume de Gisors, received the golden head called “Caput 58 □” from the Order of the Temple. Apparently then, there was still some degree of cooperation between the two orders. However, it is strongly implied in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* that only *some* members of the Temple at that time continued to receive Sion’s support, and that the Priory may have actually been involved in the persecution of the Templars. Guillame de Gisors was also close friends with Guillame Pidaye, who participated in King Philippe’s raid, indicating that he may have been acting as a double-agent, facilitating the raid on the one hand, and tipping off select Templars in time to escape on the other.

As the years progressed, the Priory itself became the target of Roman Catholic hostilities, albeit in a far less drastic fashion. In 1619, the Priory of Sion was evicted from their house at Saint-Samsom. They had incurred the wrath of the Pope and the King of France for spending extravagantly, boycotting Catholic services and being generally irreverent towards all authority. From that point on, they disappear from the pages of history, at least apparently, until their reemergence in the twentieth century. But in the meantime, the Priory of Sion, according to their own literature, experienced an illustrious series of Grand Masters, or "Nautonniers" (Navigators). Some of these names may be quite familiar to you. The list published in *Secret Dossiers* is as follows:

Prior to "Cutting of the Elm"

Hughes de Payen	1118 - 1131
Robert de Bourgogne	1131 - 1150
Bernard de Tremblay	1150 - 1153
Bertrand de Blanchefort	1153 - 1170
Janfenders Fulcherine	1170 - 1171
Francois Othon de Saint Arnand	1171 - 1179
Theodore de Glaise	1179 - 1184
Francois Gerard de Ridefort	1184 - 1190

After the "Cutting of the Elm"

Jean de Gisors	1188 - 1220
Marie de Saint-Clair	1220 - 1266
Guillaume de Gisors	1266 - 1307
Edouard de Bar	1307 - 1336
Jeanne de Bar	1336 - 1351
Jean de Saint-Clair	1351 - 1366

Blanche d’Evreux	1366 - 1398
Nicolas Flamel	1398 - 1418
Rene d’Anjou	1418 - 1480
Ioland de Bar	1480 - 1483
Sandro Filipepi	1483 - 1510
Leonardo da Vinci	1510 - 1519
Connetable de Bourbon	1519 - 1527
Ferdinand de Gonzague	1527 - 1575
Louis de Nevers	1575 - 1595
Robert Fludd	1595 - 1637
Johann Valentin Andrea	1637 - 1654
Robert Boyle	1654 - 1691
Isaac Newton	1691 - 1727
Charles Radclyffe	1727 - 1746
Charles de Lorraine	1746 - 1780
Maximilien de Lorraine	1780 - 1801
Charles Nodier	1801 - 1844
Victor Hugo	1844 - 1885
Claude Debussy	1885 - 1918
Jean Cocteau	1918 -

One can see that this list consists of a mixture of noblemen and women, some famous, some not, all of whom possessed Merovingian blood, along with a number of well-known artists, intellectuals and occultists, some of whom are among the most important in history. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* were able to identify in each purported Grand Master strains of unorthodox religious thought, as well as other activities consistent with Priory membership, and were also able to establish definitive personal links between each Grand Master, his predecessor, and his successor. According to the Priory's statutes, published in the "Priory documents", the grand mastership is hereditary by default, and electoral in case of vacancy, explaining how even non-bloodliners could obtain the office. However, it is also possible that we do not know the true family history of each of these individuals, and that there may indeed be some "Grail genes" residing within their blood, for it seems unlikely to us that they would have chosen leaders completely outside of the family. This perhaps explains why some of the Grand Masters are listed as having taken office at ages as young as six, and why, of the famous ones, many assumed office prior to achieving their fame. Perhaps it is worth considering whether or not the Priory may have had a hand in the accomplishments that made these people famous. Perhaps these men allowed themselves to be used as pawns in the Priory of Sion's strategic plot for world domination. Once the light of the Holy Grail is shined upon the works and activities that encompassed these men's lives, we can see that behind the familiar facade of history are the unseen hands that have guided the destiny of civilization, manipulating hearts and minds in accordance with some obscure grand plan.

Chapter Two: The Underground Stream

"Beneath this marble shaft, as black as coal rises the Fountain of Fortune. He who drinks of it will suffer dire misery. For this spring was brought forth by the sorcerer Vergil, who laid his curse upon it.

- Rene d'Anjou

Le Coeur d'Amours Espris

Nicolas Flamel

The first figure on the list of Grand Masters who is not known to have had royal blood was Nicolas Flamel, owner of a small Parisian bookshop who became one of the fifteenth century's most renowned alchemists. Flamel was intrigued by the concept of alchemy, and longed to get his hands on the fabled *Sacred Book of Abraham the Jew, Prince, Priest and Levite to that Tribe of Jews Who by the Wrath of God were Dispersed Amongst the Gauls* - a book which purported to disclose the secret of the Philosopher's Stone. One night he dreamt that an angel came to him and bequeathed him this book, with the promise that he would "see in it that which no man will be able to see." Shortly afterwards, a cash-strapped student walked into his shop and offered to sell him a copy of the very book in question. Flamel, of course, snapped it up right away.

At first he did not know what to make of it. Bound in copper plating and covered inside and out with symbols completely foreign to this advanced master of the occult, it proved, at first, indecipherable. It remained so for the next twenty-one years, torturing the aging bookseller, until he finally resolved to seek out a Jew conversant in the Cabala who would be capable of reading it. Jews had been expelled from France at that point, so he went to Spain, then a safety zone for both Jewish and Muslim esotericists, under the guise that he was taking a pilgrimage to the Cathedral of Saint James of Compostela. He found no help there, but on the way back, he met a Jewish Cabalist named Maestro Canches, who was able to elucidate for him the key to the book's code. Flamel had not brought the entire book, however, but only a few pages, and agreed to bring the old Jew back with him so that they could decode the rest of the book. Flamel even had him converted to Christianity so that he would not technically be guilty of smuggling a Jew into France. Unfortunately, Maestro Canches died on the trip to Paris. But he had given Flamel the information he needed to be able to decode the rest of the book, and on January 17th (there's that date again) Flamel is said to have transmuted mercury into gold with the use of the Philosopher's Stone.

From that moment on, Flamel lived a comfortable, but not extravagant lifestyle, well beyond the means of most small bookshop owners, obviously having discovered in the Philosopher's Stone the source of perpetual wealth. He and his wife Pernelle opened a new store and founded a number of churches and hospitals, which they decorated with strange, occult symbols derived from *The Book of Abraham the Jew*. He spent the remainder of his life writing treatises on alchemy. But it was only to his wife and his nephew Perrier that he left his testament revealing the secret of the Philosopher's Stone, and then only after his purported death at age 80, in 1418. He was buried at Saint Jacques la Boucherie, where his bookshop was located. On his tombstone were carved a sun, a key, and a closed book. These, along with the other alchemical symbols represented on his various properties, were removed over time by treasure hunters, who attacked his grave and former domains searching for his secrets. One of these persons was said to have found, beneath the foundations of Saint Jacques la Boucherie, vials full of red "projection powder."

As the generations passed, one of the descendants of Flamel's nephew, "Dubois", came into possession of the projection powder, an used it in a magic show he put on for King Louis XIII in which lead balls were changed into gold. Immediately afterwards he was interrogated by an important historical personage named Cardinal Richelieu, who was trying to wrench from him the secret of alchemy. All this resulted in was Richelieu's frustration and Dubois' execution, whereupon Richelieu seized all of his property, as well as that of his illustrious ancestor. Richelieu had Flamel's houses turned inside out in search of secrets and treasure, even opening the man's coffin - which, according to rumor, was found empty. (Indeed, "Flamel sightings" occurred numerous times throughout the centuries following his death.) Richelieu successfully got his hands on *The Book of Abraham the Jew*, and built an alchemical laboratory in which he tried out various experiments. But he was unable to fully interpret the book, and failed to transmute anything. After that most of the text of *The Book of Abraham the Jew* became lost, leaving only the diagrams, which have been published numerous times since.

What is there to indicate that Nicolas Flamel was in fact a member of the Priory of Sion? Well, for one thing, the manner in which he *just happened* to come across *The Book of Abraham the Jew*, which he had been searching for his entire life, and then *just happened* to run across the right man to help him interpret it, is indicative of involvement in a secret society. It was rather like the way in which Berenger Sauniere came across the parchments, and then had them interpreted at Saint Sulpice, after which he, like Flamel, became inexplicably wealthy. Then there is the title of the book itself, *The Book of Abraham the Jew, Prince, Priest and Levite to that Tribe of Jews Who by the Wrath of God Were Dispersed Amongst the Gauls*. This indicates a Prince of a Jewish tribe that became *dispersed* in Gaul, now France. Jesus supposedly fled to Gaul after the crucifixion partially because there already existed a large Jewish and semi-Jewish population in that region, perhaps the remnants of one of Israel's lost tribes. Then there is the fact that Flamel learned the book's secret on a pilgrimage to Saint James of Compostela, the purported burial place of Jesus' brother James. More interesting is that fact that the pilgrim route to Saint James of Compostela passes very near Rennes-le-Chateau. Then, of course, there is the date of the first presumed alchemical transmutation, January 17th - the date of Sauniere's stroke, Marie de Blanchefort's death, and the Feast Day of Saint Sulpice. Then there is the absolute secrecy with which Flamel guarded the key to the Philosopher's Stone, only divulging it to family - his wife and his nephew. And finally, there are the actions of Cardinal Richelieu, indicating that he knew for a fact that Flamel was in the possession of a real secret.

Interestingly, Cardinal Richelieu is discussed extensively in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*. During the 1600s, he constituted the real power behind Louis XIII's throne. And in 1633, out of a desire to wrench Southern France from the influence of Spain and Austria, he brought France into the

Thirty Years War against those two nations (who represented the Catholic side of the conflict), in favor of the Protestant armies of Sweden and Germany (whose leader, Elector Frederick, Palatinate of the Rhine, was strongly supported by the Rosicrucian thinkers of the time). This is a strange position for a Catholic Cardinal to take, and the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* indicate that Richelieu may have been a Rosicrucian himself – which might mean that he was connected with the Priory of Sion for whom the Rosicrucian order may have been simply a front. Perhaps when Richelieu raided Flamel's domains, he was just acting as an agent of the Priory, attempting to repossess property that was rightfully theirs. Or perhaps he was a double-agent.

Rene d'Anjou

The next *Nautonnier* on Sion's list worth examining is Rene d'Anjou. Though little known today, Rene d'Anjou was one of the most influential figures of the Renaissance, and came to assume a huge collection of titles, including: Count of Bar, Provence, Piedmont and Guise, Duke of Calabria, Anjou, and Lorraine, and King of Hungary, Naples, and Sicily, Aragon, Valencia, Majorca, Sardinia, and Jerusalem;

the last being titular, inherited from his ancestor, Godfroi de Bouillon through the House of Lorraine. Rene has been credited with inventing the double-barred Cross of Lorraine, associated with his ruling house and later the French Resistance movement, but the Templars were known to have used it at least 200 years earlier, and it can probably be traced back further as well. Rene was born on January 16, 1408, in the Lorraine castle at Angers. In 1419, at the age of ten, he was married to Isabel of Anjou, then nine. It was also at this time that Rene was installed as Grand Master of the Priory of Sion. Given Rene's Angevin ancestry, it is natural that he would have been chosen for such an august position, even at a tender age. His uncle, Louis, Cardinal of Bar, was his regent for another ten years, until he was ready to become the helmsman of the order than would become the most influential factor in his hugely significant life. Rene also belonged to some other fraternal orders, including the Order of the White Greyhound, the Order of the Fidelity, and his own self-created chivalrous Order of the Ship and Double Crescent (a revision of the Order of the Crescent created by Louis IX) - which for some reason was suppressed by the Pope.

In 1415, Rene's sister Mary was married to the Dauphin of France, later King Charles VII. Charles' father had been recently overthrown by King Henry V of England, who then proclaimed himself Regent of France and married the Dauphin's sister, Katherine de Valois. The French were under the domination of the English, but a ray of hope came in the form of Jeanne d'Arc.[7] She first appeared in 1429 at the fortress of Valcouleurs, announcing her divine mission to deliver France from the English overlords, thereby fulfilling an old prophecy by Merlin about a maid from Lorraine who would be sent by God to liberate France. This, she claimed, would require her to visit the Dauphin at his court at Chinon. Instead of requesting that the commandant at Valcouleurs escort her there, she specifically asked for Rene d'Anjou, entreating his father-in-law, the Duke of Anjou, for "your son, a horse, and some good men to take me into France." This implies that she already had Rene in mind. It was Rene's mother, Iolande d'Anjou, who took Jeanne d'Arc under her wing, convincing the court and the Dauphin that she was in fact the prophesized "Maid of Lorraine." Iolande even officiated over the examination to ensure her virginity, which made a very dramatic scene in the Joan of Arc film, *The Messenger*. In the end, it was Rene who accompanied Jeanne to Chinon, and he is said to have been by her side at the siege of Orleans. He also led the main battle at Senlis and was one of Jeanne's captains at the siege of Paris. Some contemporary chroniclers even wrote that the two were lovers. It was Rene whom King Charles VII sent to inform a deflated Jeanne that the siege of Paris was being withdrawn. Afterwards she was captured, sold to the English, convicted of heresy for claiming to speak to God, and then burnt at the stake. It is said that she clutched a Cross of Lorraine at her breast as she prepared to die. All of this seems to indicate that the appearance of the Maid of Lorraine was something orchestrated by the House of Lorraine from the very beginning, with full consent from all parties. But as the authors Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln write, "In the centuries that followed, a systematic attempt seems to have been made to expunge all trace of Rene's possible role in Jeanne's life."

---

[7] A statue of Jeanne d'Arc can be found on the grounds of Sauniere's church at Rennes-le-Chateau.

In 1431, Rene inherited the Duchy of Lorraine from his father-in-law, but was imprisoned in Dijon when the Duke of Burgundy staked a rival claim to his inheritance. He was eventually freed with the help of his wife, Isabel, but not before leaving his own two children behind as hostages for the next three years! Rene developed an interest in painting that would last a lifetime, and is known to have decorated one of the rooms in the castle that was his prison. Later, when Rene and Isabel became the Duke and Duchess of Lorraine, court was held at their castles throughout Anjou and Provence. These courts included Jewish cabalists, astrologers and even the physician Jean de Saint-Remy, grandfather of Nostradamus. In fact, Christopher Columbus was a member of the court for a while, and Rene was the person who gave him his first ship's commission to Tunis.

Rene's court would hold constant soirees, poetry readings, mystery plays, and "allegorical" knightly tournaments called "pas d'armes", a combination of battle and pre-scripted play. Rene established rules and traditions for knighthood, chivalry and jousting which are still observed by chivalrous orders and anachronistic societies today. He wrote a couple of books on the subject, one being *Livre des Tournies,* or *Manual for the Perfect Organization of Tournies,* which includes things like how to make a challenge, how to correctly display banners, and how to show ladies proper respect. The other was called *Battles and the Order of Knighthood and the Government of Princes*. Today this rests in the library of Lord William Sinclair and bears the names "Jesus - Mary - John" on the cover - names, we now know, of some of Rene's biblical ancestors. The court manifested a fairy tale-like legend around itself, as it perpetuated the stories of the Holy Grail, King Arthur, Tristan and Isolde, etc. Rene was preoccupied in particular with the Grail story, and is known to have collected "Grail cups." His favorite possession was a red crystal goblet of Egyptian origin which he believed had been used by Jesus and Mary Magdalene during their wedding at Cana. An inscription on the side of the cup read: “He who drinks well will see God. He who quaffs at a single drop will see God and the Magdalene.”

Rene d’Anjou’s influence on the European culture of the Renaissance was so great that we might wish to call it the “Rene-sance.” He befriended Cosimo de Medici while in Italy, and many believe him to have been the impetus for a number of important decisions made by de Medici during this time. These include: the founding of Europe’s first public library in San Marco in 1444, which was loaded with rare manuscripts on neo-Platonic, Pythagorean, Gnostic and Hermetic thought; the instruction of the University of Florence to begin teaching Greek; and the creation of an academy for the study of Pythagoras and Plato, which sparked a number of other, similar institutions. Rene is also credited with introducing into this intellectual renaissance the theme of “Arcadia”, the Greek Paradise. In his court at Tarascon, Rene staged *The Pas d’Armes of the Shepherdess*. The Shepherdess in the play was his mistress at the time, who, according to Baigent, et. al in *Holy Blood Holy Grail*, was, “an explicitly Arcadian figure, embodying both romantic and philosophical attributes.” She presided over a tournament fought by knights who represented conflicting ideals which must be reconciled - a very Hermetic concept. Rene also displayed other Arcadian themes in his famous paintings, depicting himself standing next to a tombstone.[8] The presence of a tomb is also implied in his painting *Le Fountaine de Fortune*, which was an illustration from his illuminated manuscript, *Les Coeur d'Amours Espris* (*The Book of the Heart Possessed by Love.*) In this picture, the "fountain" mentioned in the title looks distinctly like a tombstone, and it is the source of an "underground stream", Alpheus (from the Greek for "source"). Alpheus is a real river in Arcadia, Greece, and it really does go underground, re-emerging at the Fountain of Arethusa in Spain. Hermetically, this river represents an "underground stream" of secret knowledge passed down through the "subterranean" Grail families and the organizational offshoots of the Priory of Sion.

Rene married his second wife, Jeanne of Laval, in 1454, and stayed with her until he died at Aix-la-Chappelle on July 10, 1480, leaving behind a huge and carefully organized library. The tombstone that he had chosen for his burial at the Church of Saint Maurice was rather odd, as it was surmounted by a painting he had made showing a dying, half-skeletal king sitting on a throne, holding a scepter and orb, his crown slipping off of his head as it leans to the side. It is fitting that a man who had much worldly power, and yet was so spiritually adept, was so comfortable with his own inevitable mortality.

---

[8] Recall that a tomb, a shepherdess and Arcadia are the main elements of the Nicholas Poussin painting *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, mentioned in the parchments found at Rennes-le-Chateau.

Iolande de Bar

Rene’s daughter, Iolande de Bar, followed him as Grand Master of the Priory. She had married Ferri, Lord of Sion-Vaudemont, who was also a member of Rene d’Anjou’s Order of the Crescent. Iolande turned Sion-Vaudemont into a holy site for the region of Lorraine - or rather, she returned to it the holy status it had enjoyed since pre-Christian times. It had once been the location of a statue of the Teutonic goddess Rosemerthe, and during the early Christian era it was known by the Judaic-sounding name Mount Semita. During the reign of the Merovingians it had housed a statue of the Virgin, and this statue had once been declared “Sovereign of the Comte de Vaudemont”, as well as the “Protectress of Lorraine.” A festival for the “Queen of Heaven” was held there every year, and at least as early as the 14th century there was, centered in Sion-Vaudemont, a secret society called the “Confraternity of Chevaliers of Sion”, which originated at the abbey on Mt. Sion in Jerusalem, and would appear to be the same as the Priory of Sion.

Sandro Filipepi

Following Iolande on the list of Nautonniers is Sandro Filipepi, better known as the artist Botticelli. He is most famous for his much-copied depiction of *The Birth of Venus*, garbed with nothing but her flowing red hair, rising from the half-shell. One of his biggest patrons was Georges Antoine Vespucci, tutor to Rene d'Anjou's grandson Rene. He also studied under two masters whom Rene d'Anjou had patronized, Filippo Lippi and Mantegna - as well as under Verrocchio, an alchemist and Hermeticist whom Leonardo da Vinci (the Grand Master who followed Botticelli at the Priory) would himself study under. And although Botticelli is not known to have had Merovingian blood, those who patronized him did, including members of the Medici and Gonzague families.

Botticelli was part of the "neo-Platonic" movement popular during his age, which sought to resurrect classical aesthetics and revitalize the myths of ancient Greece and Rome, as well as the ancient precepts of Hermeticism and sacred geometry, by incorporating them into new art forms, often depicting them under the guise of Roman Catholic symbolism. He also repeatedly featured the theme of the "underground stream" in his work. In the center of *Madonna of the Magnificat* is a winding river issuing from a clearly subterranean source. Similar streams are prominently displayed in *Celestial Annunciation*, and hidden in the background of *Adoration of the Magi*. Botticelli was clearly an occultist, and based most of his paintings on a pentagonal grid. He is also a likely candidate for the designer of the first deck of tarot cards - the other being his tutor, Mantegna.

Leonardo da Vinci

One of the most audacious claims made on the list of Priory Grand Masters is that Leonardo da Vinci followed Botticelli in the assumption of that office. As one of the most brilliant minds in known history, this accomplished painter, sculptor, sketch artist, architect, scientist and inventor embodied the definition of the term "Renaissance man", and would make a proud addition to any organization's membership. He had been friends with the previous Grand Master, both having been apprenticed to Verrocchio and patronized by the Medici, Este and Gonzague families. Leonardo also had a patron in Francesco Sforza, a founding member of Rene d'Anjou's Order of the Crescent, and one of Rene's best friends.

It is now known, and was known at the time, that Leonardo was a bit eccentric in his religious and philosophical beliefs - heretical, even. He appears to have endorsed an old Christian heresy stating that Jesus had a twin brother named Thomas. This belief would seem to be illustrated in Da Vinci's *The Last Supper*, where one of Christ's disciples is depicted bearing an uncanny resemblance to Christ himself. Also, the depiction of Saint John sitting next to him looks decidedly female, perhaps a covert acknowledgement of Christ's marriage to Mary Magdalene. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* also felt that this theme was illustrated by a sketch of Da Vinci's called *The Virgin with Saint John the Baptist and Saint Anne*. In the book *The Templar Revelation*, authors Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince further ascribe to Leonardo a belief in the Johannite heresy, which states that John the Baptist was, in fact, the true Christ, and Jesus a usurper. This cult they identified with a gesture, made with the right index finger pointing skyward and the palm facing inward, which can be found depicted in numerous works of Da Vinci's, and in the works of other Renaissance artists as well, always associated with John. In the same book the authors theorize that Leonardo may have, in fact, created the famed relic the Shroud of Turin as a hoax, using a then unknown photographic technique which he may very well have invented.

The Campaign Against the House of Valois

During the sixteenth century, the Priory of Sion and the Grail families, including the houses of Guise and Lorraine, embarked on a conspiracy to oust the ruling Valois dynasty and reclaim the French throne for Merovingian blood. The conspiracy spanned three generations, and the terms of three Priory of Sion Grand Masters: Connetable de Bourbon (a.k.a. Charles de Montpensier), Ferdinand de Gonzague, and Louis de Nevers. The plot came closest to fruition between 1550 and 1570 due to the efforts of Charles, cardinal of Lorraine, and his brother Francois, duke of Guise. They were both cousins of Connetable de Bourbon and relatives of the Gonzague family, each of which provided financial and moral support for the Lorraine cause. Although historians have characterized the two brothers as cruel and fanatical Catholics, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* describes them as opportunists who took advantage of both Catholic and Protestant factions whenever it suited them. As the book describes, "In 1562… the Council of Trent, the cardinal of Lorraine launched an attempt to decentralize the papacy - to confer autonomy on local bishops and restore the ecclesiastical hierarchy to what it had been in Merovingian times.”

By the following year, Francois de Guise was within reach of the French throne, when he was quite suddenly assassinated. The cardinal of Lorraine died a dozen years later, but the conspiracy continued with the next cardinal of Lorraine and the next duke of Guise. At the helm of this conspiracy was Priory of Sion Navigator Louis de Gonzague, duke of Nevers, and the banner they employed was the Cross of Lorraine. The conspirators succeeded in exterminating the Valois line, but ironically, by that point the House of Guise was itself near extinction, and could not bring forth a legitimate candidate for kingship.

Nostradamus

Besides the known members of the Priory of Sion, there were others who throughout the generations lent their hands in assistance to their cause. According to the Priory documents and Gerard de Sede, this included the famous prophet Nostradamus, astrologer to the French court, and an advisor to Catherine de Medici (the mother of Mary, Queen of

Scots). He most certainly would have been in a position to: (a) pass along sensitive information to the Priory that he may have been told or overheard, and in particular (b) provide the French court with faulty astrological predictions that would have worked to the conspirators' advantage. In fact, Nostradamus' famous quatrains may not even have been prophecies, but instead secret messages for the Priory of Sion, descriptions of past events, or plans for future machinations pertaining to their conspiratorial plot. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* puts it:

"...there is no question that some of Nostradamus' prophecies were not prophecies but referred, quite explicitly, to the past - to the Knights Templar, the Merovingian dynasty, the history of the house of Lorraine. A striking number of them refer to Razes - the old comte of Rennes-le-Chateau. And the numerous quatrains that refer to the advent of 'le Grand Monarch'... indicate that this sovereign will derive ultimately from the Languedoc."[9]

Nostradamus seems to have been admitting that there was more than met the eye in regards to his gift of prophecy when he described it as,

---

[9] The importance of this reference will become obvious later on when I discuss in greater detail the concept of the "King of the World."

"An emotional tendency inherited from a line of ancestors." Perhaps his ancestors and the ancestors of the Merovingians were one and the same.

Gerard de Sede had a number of details to add regarding Nostradamus' relationship with the Grail families and the Priory of Sion. He says that before Nostradamus became famous as a prophet, he spent a great deal of time in the Lorraine region, and that this was a sort of probationary period, following which he was initiated into the Priory's secrets. As the story goes, he was shown a very secret, very ancient book, which provided the basis for his subsequent "prophecies." This book was shown to him at the Abbey of Orval, which had been donated by Godfroi de Bouillon's foster mother, and which, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, was the birthplace of the Priory of Sion. Up until the period of the French Revolution, books of prophecies attributed to Nostradamus continued to issue from Orval.

Robert Fludd

The next Nautonnier on the list after Louis de Nevers was Robert Fludd, known as the "John Dee of the 15th century."[10] He was one of the more formative influences on the body of esoteric thought that is now called "Western magic": including alchemy, cabala and Hermeticism. Although not publicly known to have been a member of the then-developing Rosicrucian brotherhood, he did write that that the "Magia, Cabala and Alchymia of the Brothers of the Rosy Cross" was of the "highest good." He was a prominent member of the London College of Physicians, and was patronized by both James I and Charles I, from whom he rented land in Suffolk. And perhaps most amazingly, Fludd was on the committee that determined the translation of the King James Bible.

---

[10] John Dee, inventor of "Enochian magic", is one of the most influential figures of

Robert Fludd's father had been friends with the Priory's previous Grand Master, Louis de Nevers, and had sent Robert to study at Oxford, which John Dee had attended and there formed a secret society of student occultists. After Oxford, Fludd traveled the continent, and met with a number of influential members of the Rosicrucian movement. Then in 1602, he was commissioned to tutor Henry of Lorraine's sons, especially Charles, duke of Guise. He continued his relationship with Charles for the next twenty years. By then Charles had married Henriette-Catherine de Joyeuse, whose possessions included Couiza and Arques, right near Rennes-le-Chateau.

Western occultism

It was during and immediately after this time that the Priory plot to seize the French throne for Merovingian blood took a new turn - with the new claimant to the office issuing not from Guise, but from its sister house: that of Lorraine. Their candidate was Gaston d'Orleans, Louis XIII's younger brother, who had married the duke of Lorraine's sister. Among his supporters was Charles, duke of Guise. Although the attempted deposition of King Louis failed, the monarch confronted another problem, which favored his opposition - his inability to produce a child. But then in 1638, twenty-three years into a childless marriage, his wife, Anne of Austria, suddenly became pregnant. According to both contemporary and subsequent rumors, the true father was also the true power behind the throne: Cardinal Richelieu, mentioned previously in the section on Nicolas Flamel. Another theory states that it was Richelieu's successor, Cardinal Mazarin, and that he and Anne were secretly married after Louis XIII's death.

The Fronde and the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrament

The birth of the "king's son" ruined Gaston d'Orleans' bid for the throne, but it sparked the beginning of a civil war that would continue off and on for the next decade, known as the Fronde - an attempt to remove Cardinal Mazarin and Louis XIV from their positions. This civil war, consisting largely of highly-orchestrated "popular uprisings", was sponsored by the same families associated with the Grail blood and the Priory of Sion that have consistently been the instigators behind our entire story. And for their headquarters these "frondeurs" chose the ancient Merovingian capitol of Stenay, near the location of Dagobert II's assassination, as though they were making the statement that the ultimate aim of the plot was in fact the avengement of Dagobert's death.

The "Priory documents" state that during the Fronde years, the Priory "dedicated itself to opposing Mazarin." As the documents say, it did so under the facade of another fraternal organization, one acknowledged by history to have been at the forefront of the Fronde - the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement. The documents state that the Priory of Sion *was* the Compagnie de Saint-Sacrement.

History tells us that the Compagnie was formed around 1629 by a close associate of Gaston d'Orleans, although he is the only founding member who is known. The rest of the group's upper hierarchy were anonymous, and even the low-ranking members did not know who they were. Of these lower-ranking members, some of them have been named: the duchess of Longueville's brother, the bishop of Alet (near Rennes-le-

Chateau); Charles Fouquet (brother of the Superintendent of Finances, whose other brother wrote that letter to Nicolas Poussin mentioned previously); Saint Vincent de Paul (to be discussed later); and Jean-Jacques Olier, founder of the Seminary of Saint Sulpice, which was used as the Compagnie's headquarters. The members did not understand or question the orders they were given, and they were not permitted to communicate with one another. The main thing that bonded them together was a mysterious and elusive secret, what chroniclers referred to as "the Secret which is at the core of the Compagnie." The order's own statutes state that, "The primary channel which shapes the spirit of the Compagnie, and which is essential to it, is the Secret."

The purpose behind the Compagnie has been, to historians, completely confusing. On the surface, it claimed to be devoted to charitable work, but underneath the surface, it was much more devoted to spying on behalf of the frondeurs, and infiltrating the upper echelons of government, nearly dominating, at times, the parliament, judiciary, and police, as well as holding key positions in the king's cabinet. Saint Vincent de Paul was made confessor to Louis XIII, and Anne of Austria was, for a period, completely malleable in the hands of the Compagnie, who managed to turn her against Mazarin for a brief span.

Another ambiguous aspect of the Compagnie was their religious affiliation. Historians present the Compagnie as representing rigidly conservative Catholicism, and as being devoted to eliminating "heresy." Yet many of the group's known members were Protestants. Furthermore, why should such an organization be opposed to arch-Catholic Mazarin? And if it was heresy they were against, why did the Catholic hierarchy of the time refer to the Compagnie as heretical it itself? They were charged, quite reminiscent of the Templars, of "impious practices", and bizarre, unnatural initiation ceremonies. Some of them were even threatened with excommunication, a threat which did not seem to faze these supposed "arch-Catholics."

Even though Cardinal Mazarin and Louis XIV had rallied against them for years, the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement carried on as normal, well past 1660, when the king finally ordered their dissolution. But in 1665, they concluded, according to the "Priory documents", that they could not continue in their "present form", and withdrew from public light, recalling all of their official documents and sealing them away in Saint Sulpice. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* point out that these documents would then have been available to the decoder of the Rennes-le-Chateau parchments, Emile Hoffet, later on. But in one form or another, the Compagnie is known to have operated into the next century, tormenting Louis XIV, and some say it continued into the 1900s. They were mentioned in a negative context by the royally patronized writer Moilere in his play *Le Tartuffe*, and the Compagnie actually used its conspiratorial ties to have the play suppressed for the next two years. Meanwhile, the Compagnie had its own literary propagandists in La Rochefoucald and La Fontaine, both known members of the Fronde and the Compagnie who used allegorical satire to attack the king. And in the case of La Fontaine, the king attacked back, attempting to bar his entrance to the Academie Francaise, the French literary academy. Interestingly, La Fontaine was patronized by the duke of Guise, the duke of Bouillon, and Gaston d'Orleans' widow.

Johann Valentin Andrea and the Rosicrucians

Holy Blood, Holy Grail theorizes that the Compagnie may also have been connected to the then-developing Rosicrucian brotherhood, which was at that time being led by current Priory of Sion Grand Master, Johann Valentin Andrea. The flames of Rosicrucianism were then being fanned by Andrea's *Rosicrucian Manifestos*, and *The Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz*, both published anonymously, although Andrea later confessed to writing them "as a joke." *Chemical Wedding*, however, reads less like a joke and more like a complex web of Hermetic, alchemical and astrological symbolism, coupled with veiled allusions to political and religious conflicts then occurring. Written from the perspective of the Rosicrucian brotherhood's legendary namesake, it incorporates neo-Platonic allegory, elements of the myths of Osiris, Venus, Deucalion, Atlas, and many others, as well as allusions to a mysterious "Princess" whose office must be restored. And like the Knights Templar, Rosenkreutz supposedly wore a white tunic and mantle with a red cross.

As a whole, the *Rosicrucian Manifestos*, which allegedly issued from an "invisible" secret society in France and Germany, predicted a new golden age of Heaven on Earth, an Arcadian paradise worthy of Rene d'Anjou's imaginings - a world order reflecting harmonious cosmic laws in which the spirit of man would be freed to pursue its God-given destiny. They also, sometimes allegorically, sometimes not, railed against the Roman Catholic Church and its worldly kingdom, the Holy Roman Empire. For this reason, Rosicrucianism was hated and suppressed by the Catholic hierarchy, while the Protestant movement embraced it.

Rosicrucianism was embraced by another figure associated with Protestantism. whom Johann Valentin Andrea was related to by blood:

Frederick of the Palatinate, a man whose genealogy tied in with those of the Grail families, and whose ideals would seem to be identical to theirs. After marrying Elizabeth Stuart, daughter of James I of England, he established a court in the capitol of Heidelberg, which was formed, shall we say, along “Hermetic lines.” Frances Yates, as quoted by *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, explains what developed from this:

> *“A culture was forming in the Palatinate which came straight out of the Renaissance but with more recent trends added, a culture which may be defined as ‘Rosicrucian.’ The prince around whom these deep currents were swirling was Friedrich, Elector Palatine, and their exponents were hoping for a politico-religious expression of their aims... The Frederickian movement... was an attempt to give those currents politico-religious expression, to realise the ideal of Hermetic reform centered on a real prince... It... created a culture, a ‘Rosicrucian’ state with its court centered on Heidelberg.”*

It was Frederick’s actions on behalf of the Rosicrucian movement, becoming the monarch of the rebelling nation of Bohemia, against the wishes of the Holy Roman Empire, that led to the Thirty Years’ War between the Catholics and the Protestants - a war which would devastate

Europe. It was in the midst of all of this that Johann Valentin Andrea organized a network of “Christian Unions”, made up of groups of thirteen individuals per union. Each member was expected to be an expert in one or another field of knowledge. The aim of the Unions was to preserve science, philosophy, Hermeticism, and other knowledge threatened by a Catholic church then busy persecuting heretics. They also provided safe houses for the heretics themselves, and acted as smuggling rings, helping those Protestants, freethinkers and esotericists then fleeing the Inquisition escape to England. There they found a refuge, for British Freemasonry was just then in its formation, and many of the exiled heretics fell in with the “Invisible College” of occultists, including Robert Moray, Elias Ashmole and Robert Boyle, which is yet to be discussed. There is even evidence that Freemasonry itself was partially derived in structure from the Christian Unions, and in substance from the Rosicrucian mysteries. To this day there is a degree in Scottish Rite Freemasonry called “Knight Rose Croix.”

Chateau Barberie

Another bone of contention that the Grail families had against Cardinal Mazarin, according to the “Priory documents”, was his razing of Chateau Barberie, near Nevers, in the Nivernais region. It had been the official residence of the Plantard family after Jean de Plantard, a direct descendant of Dagobert II, married Marie de Saint-Clair of the aforementioned Saint-Clair/Gisors family in 1548. But by 1659, Mazarin, who had an unexplained obsession with possessing Nevers, finally bought the entirety of Nivernais on July 11, the date on which the “Priory documents” state that Chateau Barberie was burned to the ground. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* found evidence to substantiate this story, but they also found evidence to suggest that Mazarin had taken lengths to remove these facts, and the existence of Barberie itself, from the historical record.

Nicolas Poussin and Nicolas Fouquet

Cardinal Mazarin found another enemy in the figure of Nicolas Fouquet, the aforementioned Superintendent of Finances to Louis XIV who, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, was "the wealthiest and most powerful individual in the kingdom", and "was sometimes called the true king of France." He also planned to take over Brittany and become the duke of an independent duchy. His mother and brother Charles were both members of the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement, and Charles was the archbishop of Narbonne, located in the Languedoc. In 1656, Nicolas Fouquet, for some unknown reason, sent his brother Louis, a priest, to Rome. It was on this occasion that Louis wrote the letter quoted previously, alleging that he had learned a secret from Nicolas Poussin which "even kings would have great pains to draw from him."

Whether or not kings managed to draw the secret from him, King Louis XIV certainly caught wind that something was up, and that it had something to do with Nicolas Poussin. For in 1661, he had Nicolas Fouquet arrested on murky charges of "sedition", and "misappropriation of funds." He seized all of Fouquet's property, and insisted on solely, personally, privately going through Fouquet's papers and documents himself.

Meanwhile, the prosecution of Fouquet became the "trial of the century", lasting for four years, with public opinion split, during which time the brother, Louis Fouquet, died. The Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement used all powers available to them, including the membership of one of Fouquet's judges in their order, to try to get the charges dismissed, or the sentence demanded (death) diminished. The court finally decided on eternal banishment as an appropriate punishment. King Louis, furious, had the entire panel of judges replaced with those he found more compliant. They still refused to put Fouquet to death, and sentenced him instead to life in prison. The king then dictated the conditions. He was kept in what we would now call "solitary confinement", where he could neither write nor speak, and the soldiers guarding him were forbidden to talk to him on penalty of death. Some authors theorize that Fouquet was in fact the "Man in the Iron Mask."

Coincidentally, in 1665, the same year in which Nicolas Fouquet was imprisoned, Nicolas Poussin died. For the next twenty years, King Louis jockeyed for possession of what he regarded as Poussin's most important work: *The Shepherds of Arcadia*. When he finally got a hold of it, he did not put it on public display, but hid it away in his private quarters, and let no one view it without his expressed permission.

Curiously, although Nicolas Fouquet went down in disgrace, his grandson became the Marquis of Belle-Isle and, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* puts it, "the single most important man in France." In 1718 he traded Bell-Isle to the King of France, and received in return the duchies of Longueville and Gisors, both locations associated with families of

Merovingian blood. Twenty-four years later, Gisors, with Fouquet as its duke, was declared a "premiere duchy."

Not far from Gisors is Les Andelys, the small town in which, in 1594, Nicolas Poussin was born. Early in his career he moved to Rome, only returning once to France, in the 1640s, under orders from Cardinal Richelieu, who had hired him to do a special job. Poussin's correspondence and papers reveal that, from the safety of Rome, he was heavily involved in the Fronde. He was also a keeper of secrets. His personal motto, with which he would sign his autograph, was "Tenet Confidentiam."

The Poussin work in question, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, did not just spontaneously generate. It was based on an earlier painting of his, *Et in Arcadia Ego*, containing the same elements, which was itself based on a painting also called *Et in Arcadia Ego* by Giovanni Francesco Guercino, dating from 1618. Poussin's version of *Et in Arcadia Ego* includes the river god Alpheus, also the name of the "underground stream" of Rene d'Anjou's Arcadia, which set the precedent upon which both of these artists had designed their paintings. All three works - the two *Et in Arcadia Ego*s and *The Shepherds of Arcadia* - contain the shared elements of a tomb, shepherds, and the phrase "Et in Arcadia Ego."

In his own illustrations Rene d'Anjou had depicted the underground stream in Arcadia issuing from something that looks somewhat like a tomb. The skull in Guercino's painting is a motif used, among other things, in the mysteries of the Knights Templar and the Freemasons. Interestingly, in the painting, the skull appears to have been trepanned in the manner of the Merovingian kings. It is also interesting to note that Masonic themes can be found throughout Guercino's other works, even though Masonry as a formal institution was not yet in existence. One, called *The Raising of the Master*, even depicts the story of Hiram Abiff, architect of Solomon's Temple, who is such an important figure in Freemasonry.

The phrase "Et in Arcadia Ego", seemingly ambiguous in meaning, would appear to have been a sort of code during this time period for those "in the know" - members of the Priory of Sion and those with knowledge of their secrets. The concept of Arcadia as a Hermetic ideal seems to have been implicit, symbolizing the hope for a new order based on cosmic principles of divine order, the kind of world of which the Rosicrucians spoke. It is always associated with a mysterious ancient tomb of unknown import, as if the world for which they hoped was in fact the rebirth of a world that had once existed in the far-distant past, the "golden age" of which the ancients spoke. The phrase "Et in Arcadia Ego" has also been, according to the “Priory documents”, on the official device and family crest of the house of Plantard since around the 13th century, when Jean de Plantard married Iodine de Gisors.

Robert Boyle

Johan Valentin Andrea’s grand mastership was followed by that of Robert Boyle. He was the so-called “father of modern chemistry” who was among the earliest to theorize upon the existence and structure of the atom, and who was one of the most renowned intellectuals of the Age of Enlightenment. His father was the Earl of Cork, and he himself was offered peerage, but turned it down. His provost at Eton College, which he attended, was part of the circle surrounding Frederick of the Palatinate. After completing school, Boyle toured Europe, including the Medici-dominated city of Florence, then a haven for esotericists, scientists and philosophers persecuted in more Catholic-dominated lands. He also spent nearly two years in Geneva, where he studied demonology and occultism. There he acquired a book called *The Devil of Mascon*, which he hired his friend Pierre du Moulin, son of Catherine de Bar’s personal chaplain, to translate.

When his European tour was completed, he returned to England, and there fell in with a social set surrounding Johann Andrea's good friend, Samuel Hartlib. It was at this time that he began to write letters to friends referring to the "Invisible College", which sounded, from his description, like a powerful secret society of initiates into the occult mysteries, much like the Rosicrucians. He even specified in one letter that, "the cornerstones of the Invisible College or (as they term themselves) the Philosophical College, do now and then honour me with their company." It is entirely possible that this was a reference to his induction into the Priory of Sion.

In the 1650s, Robert Boyle spent much time at Oxford with Frederick of the Palatinate's former chaplain, John Wilkin. In 1660, with the dismantling of Oliver Cromwell's anti-monarchist Protectorate, the monarchy was restored and the Stuarts of Scotland, direct descendants of Merovingian blood, were once again the kings of both Scotland and England. It was around this time that, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* theorizes, the Priory of Sion might have transferred the bulk of its efforts and loyalties away from the French branches of the Grail family, like the House of Lorraine, and onto the House of Stuart. When Charles II came to power, Robert Boyle was one of his first and most outspoken supporters. Charles II also became the Head of the Royal Society, a conclave of scientists and intellectuals with official royal patronage. Most of the members of the Royal Society were Freemasons, and most coupled their scholarly pursuits with esoteric ones, making the Royal Society appear to be much like the "Invisible College" which Robert Boyle, one of the society's most prominent members, had previously described. He became an even more prominent member of the society after 1668, when he moved permanently to London, residing with his sister - wife to one of Johann Valentin Andrea's good fiends, John Dury. Here, Robert Boyle entertained some very important guests, such as Cosimo III de Medici, soon to be ruler of Florence and grand duke of Tuscany.

But Boyle's most frequent visitors were the philosopher John Locke and the scientist Isaac Newton, the latter of whom would follow him as Grand Master of the Priory of Sion. With Newton, the relationship revolved largely around alchemy, which Boyle had supposedly taught Newton the secrets of. For John Locke, commonly thought to have been a member of the Rosicrucians, meeting Boyle inspired him to take a long vacation in Southern France. He specifically visited Carcassonne, Narbonne, Toulouse, and perhaps even Rennes-le-Chateau. These were all important sites in the history of the Cathars, which Locke was particularly interested in studying there, as well as the legends in Southern France about Mary Magdalene and the Holy Grail. He even visited Saint Baum, where Magdalene was supposed to have lived, as well as the graves of Nostradamus and Rene d'Anjou. He also consorted, while in France, with none other than the duchess of Guise.

Boyle, on the other hand, was busy exchanging letters with a fellow alchemist in France, Georges Pierre. These letters reveal Boyle's involvement in an occult fraternal order to which also belonged the duke of Savoy and Pierre du Moulin. Boyle published a couple of alchemical texts called *Incalescence of Quicksilver with Gold* and *A Historical Account of the Degradation of Gold*. Then in 1689 he announced in writing that he would no longer entertain guests on certain days that he had scheduled to conduct alchemical experiments, which he described as, "less simple and plain than those barely luciferous ones I have been wont to affect... though the full and complete uses are not mentioned, partly because, in spite of my philanthropy, I was engaged to secrecy."

The details of Boyle's experiments were never publicly revealed, but when he died in 1691, he left to his friends John Locke and Isaac Newton all of his papers, as well as an unknown "red powder" which was integral to his experiments - perhaps the same red powder mentioned previously in the account of Nicolas Flamel.

Isaac Newton

If Robert Boyle was the father of modern chemistry, Isaac Newton was certainly the father of physics as a serious study. He is known mostly today for his Theory of Gravity, Theory of Light, Laws of Motion and Laws of Thermodynamics, as well as the invention of the Calculus. He claimed to be a descendant of "ancient Scottish nobility", and as benefits an aristocratic Brit, he attended school at Cambridge. He was inducted into the Royal Society in 1672 at age thirty, where he met Robert Boyle in 1673. He met their mutual friend, John Locke about sixteen years later. It was around this time that he also encountered a Genevan aristocrat named Nicolas Fatio de Duillier, a former spy against Louis XIV. According to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, de Duillier "appears to have been on intimate terms with every important scientist of the age", and he immediately struck up a close friendship with Newton that lasted for ten years.

Six years after meeting de Duillier, Newton was made warden of the Royal Mint, and was therefore involved in fixing his country's gold standard, an interesting occupation for a practicing alchemist presumably capable of creating gold at will. He was elected president of the Royal Society four years later, and also became acquainted with a Frenchman and Royal Society member named Jean Desaguliers - whom, as I shall soon discuss, was instrumental in the spread of Freemasonry across the continent.

Although I have no proof that Isaac Newton was a Freemason, he did belong to a quasi-Masonic organization called the Gentleman's Club of Spalding, to which the poet Alexander Pope also belonged. And Newton was clearly interested in the subjects to which Freemasonry addresses itself. For instance, he considered Noah to have been a far more important source of God's wisdom than Moses - a common theme throughout Freemasonry and a detail that will assume greater importance when I later discuss the relationship between the biblical Flood and the mystery of the Holy Grail. He also wrote a very interesting book called *The Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms Amended*, which traced the origins of the institution of monarchy, especially the Jewish monarchy of King David. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* describes it, Newton "attempted to establish... the primacy of Israel over other cultures of antiquity." Like many Freemasons, Newton believed that the ancient Jewish mysteries contained true revelations and divine secrets, but that they had largely been corrupted over time by the editors of the Torah and the Holy Bible. He had great interest in the theories of Pythagoras, especially the "music of the spheres", which he considered to be an analogy for his own gravitational theories. He was interested in the Masonic and Pythagorean science of sacred geometry, and believed that there were numerological connections between music and architecture. In fact, an even more overtly Masonic belief he held was that the secrets of alchemy were embedded into the precise dimensions of Solomon's Temple. His favorite alchemical metaphor was the myth of the Quest for the Golden Fleece. He believed this story to be key to properly dating the events described in both classical and biblical myth, which he considered (as I do) to be real historical records. Newton's library contained copies of *The Rosicrucian Manifestos* covered in his own scribbled notes, and over a hundred books on alchemy. One of these alchemical texts was written by none other than Nicolas Flamel, and had been hand-copied by Newton himself. Newton continued to correspond with his friends Robert Boyle, John Locke, and Nicolas Fatio de Duillier about alchemy for the remainder of his life, even at times writing these letters in cryptic codes.

As if it was not obvious from what I have already discussed, Newton was an enthusiastic embracer of heresy. He denied the existence of the Trinity, the divine nature of Jesus, and the veracity of the New Testament. He also avidly studied and wrote about Gnosticism, rejecting the mechanistic theories of the universe held dear by his fellow scientists in favor of a material world that derived itself from the spirit. There was another Gnostic-oriented, Cathar-like group in whom Newton, along with his friend Fatio de Duillier, held considerable interest: the Camisards, also known as the "Prophets of Cevennes." This group had arisen out of the same areas of Southern France as the Cathars, and just like their predecessors had been driven out by the Vatican with military force, escaping into Geneva and London in the early part of the eighteenth century. They too hated the Catholic church and denied the divinity of Jesus, and just like both the Cathars and the Knights Templar, they dressed themselves in white tunics.

As interesting as Isaac Newton's life was, his death was, perhaps, even more so. Sensing his impending doom weeks ahead of time, he and his closest friends set about cremating large portions of his private papers, presumably to preserve the secrets of alchemy, as well as the secrets of the Priory of Sion. And in an eerie parallel to the death of Berenger Sauniere, who was refused Last Rites, Newton specifically requested that he not receive Last Rites.

Although there is little doubt about the depth of Isaac Newton's genius, there are some, shall we say, "interesting" circumstances surrounding his two greatest discoveries: the Theory of Gravity, and the Calculus. We are all familiar with the story of the apple that supposedly fell on Newton's head as he sat under a tree, providing the inspiration for his Theory of Gravity. Is this story a metaphor for divine inspiration, or for receiving the "forbidden fruit" of secret knowledge? The apple is certainly emblematic of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge consumed by Eve in the Garden of Eden, and the story of it falling from the tree onto Newton's head brings to mind the story of the Grail stone falling from Heaven. The tale surrounding Calculus is even more suspicious. As it turns out, Newton had been working on the Calculus for some time, and he was not the only one. He was in a neck-and-neck race with a German mathematician named G.W. Leibnitz. In either a bizarre twist of fate or a bizarre conspiratorial plot, he and Leibnitz completed their formulas for the Calculus on the same day. To Leibnitz's great dismay Newton went down in history as the man who "invented" Calculus. However, the German may have gotten the last laugh, for it is his far more simply expressed equations which are used in mathematics today.

Charles Radclyffe and the Scottish Rite

Following Isaac Newton as the Head of the Priory was Charles Radclyffe, son of an illegitimate daughter of the Stuart King Charles II. Radclyffe was, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, from "an influential Northumbrian family", who since the time of James II had been the earls of Derwentwater. He was thus cousin to both Bonnie Prince Charlie, the Stuart king de jure who never made it to the throne, and to the Earl of Lichfield, George Lee, also the son of one of Charles II's bastards. Charles Radclyffe and his older brother James became key figures in the "Jacobite movement." After Charles II's successor, James III was sent into exile, this movement attempted to reestablish and secure the Stuart throne.[11] That year, in 1715, there was a Jacobite Scottish rebellion in which both Charles and James Radclyffe participated, and there were arrested and imprisoned. James was executed, but Charles managed to escape, and fled to the protection of Jacobite sympathizers in France. He immediately became secretary to James II's successor as king-in-exile, Bonnie Prince Charlie. It took thirty years, but finally Bonnie Prince Charlie and his ranks arrived in Britain in an attempt to retake the throne. Charles Radclyffe was captured on his way to join them, and the following year, when the Jacobite attempt was crushed, he was beheaded at the Tower of London.

But there was more than just Jacobite politics on the minds of Charles Radclyffe and his compatriots. They were also deeply involved in Freemasonry, particularly Scottish Rite Freemasonry, believed to have been inherited from the rituals of the Stuart dynasty. This brand of the

---

[11] Interestingly, while James III was in exile, he resided with the duke of Lorraine at Bar-le-Duc.

Craft included many more degrees than regular "York Rite" masonry, which of course meant that it contained greater, deeper and more voluminous secrets. These mysteries were supposedly derived from Scotland, and from there, some even older source. The Scottish Rite rituals included more overtly "occult" material - Hermetic, cabalistic, Rosicrucian and alchemical material - and initiates were taught specifics about the origin and history of their organizations' practices. Furthermore, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* blatantly states, "It is probable that Scottish Rite Freemasonry was originally promulgated, if not indeed devised, by Charles Radclyffe." Charles also founded the first European Masonic lodge in Paris. He was shortly thereafter declared "grand master of all French lodges", which he remained for at least a decade more. Therefore the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* state that, "The dissemination of 18th-century Freemasonry owes more, ultimately, to Charles Radclyffe than to any other man." But Radclyffe did not work alone, nor did he accomplish everything hands-on, but worked through middlemen and accomplices, such as Chevalier Andrew Ramsay.

To a large degree, Ramsay associated with the same crowd as Isaac Newton, including Jean Desaguliers, who was one of the Royal Society's "two curators of experiments" and one of the age's leading proponents of Freemasonry in Europe, as well as a friend of Charles Radclyffe's.

Ramsay was further the master of the lodge at the Hague, where, in 1731, under his leadership, the first European prince to join Masonry was initiated: Francois, duke of Lorraine, soon to be Holy Roman Emperor through his marriage to Maria Theresa of Austria. Ramsay also studied math under Newton's best friend, Nicolas Fatio de Duillier. As for Newton himself, Ramsay practically worshipped him, regarding him as the era's leading sage. And like both Newton and de Duillier, Ramsay had a keen interest in the heretical Camisards. He was also a member of a Masonic-like secret society called the Philadelphes.

Ramsay moved to Cambrai in 1710, where he became part of the close circle surrounding Fenelon (the former cure of Saint Sulpice who was famous as an occult philosopher, and whose name pops up repeatedly in regards to this mystery). He became a dedicated Jacobite shortly after meeting Charles Radclyffe, and even worked for a period as tutor to Bonnie Prince Charlie. Although he was a known enemy of the presiding government in England, he returned there in 1729 with no problem, and almost immediately joined the Royal Society, as well as the aforementioned "Gentleman's Club of Spalding."

The following year he returned to France to campaign for Freemasonry. Here he was patronized by relatives of Frederick of the Palatinate, the House of Tour d'Auvergne, viscounts of Turenne and dukes of Bouillon. The duke of Bouillon in particular was a cousin of Bonnie Prince Charlie and an outspoken champion of Freemasonry. Ramsay became his son's tutor, and was given property to live on by the duke. However, Ramsay's greatest contribution to the growth of Masonry came in 1737, when he delivered his *Oration*, which specifically detailed the origins and history of the order. This *Oration* later became incorporated as an official Masonic document, and its claims have become part of Masonry's basic tenets. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states, "On the basis of this *Oration*, Ramsay became the preeminent Masonic spokesman of his age." But, they continue, "Our research convinced us ... that the real voice behind Ramsay was that of Charles Radclyffe." It was, after all, Charles Radclyffe who, as master of the lodge at which Ramsay gave his *Oration*, presided over the event. It was also Radclyffe who acted as chief signatory at Ramsay's funeral in 1743. And there was another contribution to Masonry, particularly the Scottish Rite, that Radclyffe was to make as well.

In 1742, four years before Charles Radclyffe's death on the chopping block, a German-born man named Karl Gottlieb von Hund was initiated into the mysteries of Freemasonry. But this initiation was far from ordinary. According to Von Hund, it was presided over by three "unknown superiors" who conferred upon him a new system of Masonry as yet unrevealed called “the Strict Observance”, so named because of the stringent oath of obedience it required. These unnamed initiators claimed that the Strict Observance was a direct inheritance of the Knights Templar, specifically the ones who had escaped King Philippe’s persecution and settled in Scotland. Moreover, Hund had been a large contributor to the Scottish Jacobites, and he believed until the end that the man in charge of his initiation had been either Bonnie Prince Charlie himself, or one of his close associates. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* concluded that the man in question was in fact Charles Radclyffe, which would mean that the Rite of the Strict Observance, derived from the rituals of the Knights Templar, was installed in the degrees of Scottish Rite Freemasonry by none other than the Priory of Sion.

Unfortunately for Von Hund, no one in his own time believed his tale about the “unknown superiors”, who, although they had promised to contact him in the future and initiate him further, never did so. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* theorized that what had actually happened was that the Jacobite cause had collapsed, and that his initiators, Charles Radclyffe and friends, had all been either killed, imprisoned, or sent into exile.

But there is more evidence to confirm Baron von Hund’s story, and the involvement of the Priory of Sion. One of the few pieces of information von Hund did manage to obtain from his sole contact with the "unknown superiors" was a list of the Grand Masters of the Knights Templar - a list identical to the one provided in *Secret Dossiers*. This list, as I have said, was established by the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* to be more accurate than any other list of Templar Grand Masters they had previously seen. But Von Hund's list was written when most of the vital documentation on the Templars that would have made such a list researchable was still hidden away in Vatican vaults, proving that Von Hund's sources had access to inside knowledge.

Charles de Lorraine

After the Jacobite cause was put to rest, Von Hund was patronized by the current Holy Roman Emperor, Francois, duke of Lorraine. And Francois' own brother, Charles de Lorraine, became, according to the "Priory documents", Grand Master of Sion following Charles Radclyffe's death. It was Francois whom I mentioned previously as the first European Prince initiated into Freemasonry. Not long after his initiation, he went for a lengthy visit to England, where he promptly joined the Gentleman's Club of Spalding.

Thereafter Francois de Lorraine was one of continental Freemasonry's leading figures, and, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* puts it, "His court in Vienna became, in a sense, Europe's Masonic capitol and a center for a broad spectrum of other esoteric interests as well." As per example, Francois had an alchemical laboratory installed in the Hofburg, his imperial palace. When he inherited the title of grand duke of Tuscany from the Medicis, he became instrumental in protecting the Freemasons of Florence from harassment by the Inquisition.

However, in order to receive the archduchy of Tuscany, Francois had been forced to abdicate his claim to Lorraine, which was ceded to the French crown. His brother Charles, however, refused to recognize this, and instead presumed to take on the mantle of the duke of Lorraine himself. In 1742, he raised an army and marched on Lorraine in an attempt to reclaim it. Only the distraction of a French invasion of his territory in Bohemia prevented him from doing so.

Charles' chief military adversary was Frederick the Great, himself somewhat of a mystic who, despite their differences, maintained considerable respect for Charles, about which he was very outspoken. Nevertheless, Frederick defeated Charles at the dramatic Battle of Leuthen in 1757, marking the end of Charles de Lorraine's military career.

After his retirement, Charles set up court in Brussels, where he became the region's chief patron for the arts. His court very much reflected that of his esteemed forefather, Rene d'Anjou. He also became, in 1761, Grand Master of the Order of Teutonic Knights. Nine years later, he appointed his favorite nephew, Maximilien coadjutor of the Order. Maximilien was as close to his uncle as could be, and when a magnificent equestrian statue of Charles was unveiled in Brussels, on the specifically chosen date of January 17, Maximilien was in attendance. Not surprisingly, then, Maximilien followed his uncle as Grand Master of the Priory of Sion.

Shugborough Hall

There is another connection to Charles Radclyffe which has left a significant mark on the mystery of the Holy Grail and Rennes-le-Chateau. It pertains to the House of Anson, present earls of Lichfield. When Radclyffe escaped from Newgate Prison in 1714, avoiding the fate of his brother, James, his escape was assisted by his cousin, the earl of Lichfield. Although that particular line became extinct later in the 1700s, the title of earl of Lichfield was bought by the Anson family, and is retained to this very day. Their family seat currently rests at Shugborough Hall in Staffordshire. It had once been the home of the brother of George Anson, who was famous for circumnavigating the globe. And when the old "nautonnier" George Anson died in 1762, a curious poem was read aloud by in Parliament by friends of his - one which appeared to refer to the very elements of Poussin's painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*. It read:

> "*Upon that storied marble cast thine eye.*
> *The scene commands a moralising sigh.*
> *E'en in Arcadia's bless'd plains,*
> *Amidst the laughing nymphs and sportive swains,*
> *See festal joy subside, with melting grace,*
> *And pity visit the half-smiling face;*
> *Where now the dance, the lute, the nuptial feast,*
> *The passion throbbing in the lover's breast,*
> *Life's emblem here, in youth, and vernal bloom,*
> *But reason's finger pointing at the tomb!"*

What makes the connection to Poussin even more explicit is that right there on the Shugborough Hall property stands a marble bas-relief bearing a mirror-reversal of Poussin's *The Shepherds of Arcadia*. Called "the Shepherd's Monument", it was made by Peter Scheemakers in the 1700s, and beneath the relief we find written a code which, until recently, had not been deciphered. It said:

O.U.O.S.V.A.V.V.

D. *M.*

The likeliest explanation has come from an 18th century poem by Anna Seward called *The Swan of Lichfield*, which contains two lines that, apart from a single letter, the above code is a perfect abbreviation for. They read:

> "*Out your Own Sweet Vale, Alicia*
> *Vanisheth Vanity Shepherds of Arcadia*
> *'Twixt Deity and Man thou Shepherdeth the Way."*

Charles Nodier

The next to take the helm of the Priory of Sion was Charles Nodier, a prolific and hugely famous writer during the nineteenth century whose fiction has been compared to that of Edgar Allan Poe. Nodier was the son of an apparently orphaned girl named Suzanne Paris, who married a solicitor in Besancon. His father was also a member of the Jacobite Club who later, during the French Revolution, became the town's mayor and president of their revolutionary tribunal. He was also a known and outspoken Freemason.

Nodier was something of a child prodigy, and had achieved celebrity status as a writer by age eighteen. He continued to write on a non-stop basis for the rest of his life. In addition to his fiction, he also wrote nonfiction on a wide variety of subjects, including art, literature, law, travel, etymology, zoology, psychology, archeology, and of course occultism, as well as a body of personal musings. Esoteric subjects, however, appear to have been a distinct preoccupation of Nodier's.

In Nodier's prodigious eighteenth year, he was made the chief librarian at the Arsenal Library, which was, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, "the major French depository for medieval and specifically occult manuscripts." These included a large collection of works by Nicolas Flamel, as well as Cardinal Richelieu's entire library, which was rich in Hermetic and cabalistic texts. There were also a number of manuscripts taken from French monasteries during the Revolution, and a large portion of the Vatican's archives, which had been plundered by Napoleon. This contained numerous records pertaining to heresies, the Inquisition's information on the Knights Templar, and books on a variety of occult subjects.

It was to this material that Nodier, along with his friends Eliphas Levi and Jean Baptiste Pitois devoted much of their attention. Levi, whom I have mentioned previously, was then and is still now one of the most highly-regarded authors on the subject of the Western magical tradition, whose contributions include the modern conception of the Devil as the Templar idol, Baphomet. Pitois has a similar reputation, and his *History and Practice of Magic* is still cherished by occultists today. (It also includes a dedication at the front to Charles Nodier.) It was to these three figures that the "occult revival" of their age can be attributed.

One of Nodier's published works during this time was a series of books about interesting historical sights in France, in which he includes a considerable amount of material pertaining to the Merovingian era, as well as the Knights Templar, and Gisors. He was especially intrigued by the cryptic "Cutting of the Elm" event which took place there and purportedly constituted a ceremonial separation of the Templars from the Priory of Sion.

Nodier gathered around him a flock of young disciples, or "aesthetic potentates" as he called them, to whom he played the role of mentor. This group included Balzac, Delacroix, Dumas, and Victor Hugo. It was Hugo who was Nodier's closest friend, and Hugo followed him as Grand Master of the Priory of Sion. His friends also included a man with the curious name of Francois-Rene de Chateau-briand, who had visited Nicolas Poussin's tomb in Rome and there placed a stone reproduction of *The Shepherds of Arcadia*. The writings of Nodier's salon set bear specific references to the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau and related subjects, such as a book from 1832 by Auguste de Labouisse-Rochefort called *A Journey to Rennes-le-Bains*, which, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states, "speaks at length of a legendary treasure associated with Blanchefort and Rennes-le-Chateau." This person also wrote a book called *The Lovers - To Eleonore* which bears the phrase "Et in Arcadia Ego" on the title page.

Like everything else in his life, Charles Nodier became involved in secret societies at a very early age. By the time he was ten, he had joined the Philadelphes, and created his own version of the group at age thirteen. It was to this group that one of its members, a close friend of Nodier's, addressed an apparently coded essay which exists in the archives of the Besancon Library, titled *The Arcadian Shepherd Sounds the First Accents of a Rustic Flute.* Later, in 1802, Nodier admitted belonging to a secret order which he in writing described as "Biblical and Pythagorean."

Fourteen years later he wrote an anonymous text called *A History of Secret Societies in the Army Under Napoleon*, in which he attributed a number of historical events to the covert action of these organizations, including Napoleon's fall. Nodier wrote in this book that all secret societies were under the control of a single, supreme secret society, which he names as being none other than the Philadelphes. He also wrote, though, about an "oath that binds me to the Philadelphes and which forbids me to make them known under their social name", indicating that this may have been just another front for the Priory of Sion. In this book he quotes a speech that he claims was made at a meeting of the Philadelphes by one of the leading plotters against the regime of Napoleon - interesting because Nodier's self-made group of Philadelphes from his childhood supposedly included a young man who would later become one of Napoleon's biggest enemies. The quoted individual, speaking in regards to his newborn son, purportedly stated:

"*He is too young to engage himself to you by the oath of Annibal; but remember I have named him Eliacin, and that I delegate to him the guard of the temple and the altar, if I should die ere I have seen fall from his throne the last of the oppressors of Jerusalem.*"

Nodier's book succeeded in fanning the flames of an already-persistent secret society paranoia that abounded during the post-Napoleonic era. In fact, Nodier seems to have gone out of his way to establish a reputation as a dangerous conspiratorial plotter himself. He had at first, because of his family's affiliations, had a favorable attitude towards the French Revolution, but later changed his mind, and had the same transformation of attitude about Napoleon. In 1804 he wrote an anti-Napoleonic satire call *Le Napoleone*, then made great efforts to try and gain attention from the authorities for having written it. They were sluggish to react, and only after much prodding, including a letter to Napoleon himself by the guilty party declaring his deed, did they arrest and imprison him for a month, leaving him to continue his actions against the emperor. He at once became involved in the anti-Napoleonic plots of 1804 and 1812.

The Catholic Modernist Movement

Charles Nodier's disciples continued his writing tradition after his death. Take, for instance, Jean Baptiste Pitois, who in 1833 went to work as an administrator in France's ministry of education. The ministry immediately undertook a plan to publish all documents pertaining to French history that had, up until that point, been censored. Two committees were formed for the occasion, upon which sat none other than Victor Hugo, as well as two influential authors, Jules Michelet and Baron Emmanuel Rey. Under the ministry's auspices Michelet published a compendium of records from the trials of the Knights Templar by the Inquisition, called *Proces de Templiers*. Also under the ministry of education Baron Emmanuel Rey published books about the Crusades in which he presented, for the first time, the Priory of Sion's original charters. More charters were printed in the *Revue de l'Orient Latin*, the official journal of Baron Rey's archeological foundation, the Societe de l'Orient Latin, published from their headquarters in Geneva.

The ministry of education instigated a fresh approach to scholarship that spread throughout Europe, especially Germany - an approach that relied on rigorous analysis and the comparison of multiple source materials to establish clear facts. This approach had led to such philosophies as Darwinism and atheism, which became serious threats to the church. Even more threatening was when such scholarship techniques were turned on the Bible itself, the result of which was a veritable crisis of faith among many of the Church's former devotees.

To combat this, the Church sponsored the "Catholic Modernist Movement", an attempt to train a new breed of clerics who could strike down anti-biblical arguments with the same rigid reliance on fact that the arguments themselves purported to be based on. But the results of this attempt actually worked against the Church. When armed with the techniques and background knowledge of 19th-century scholarship, these "Modernist" clerics could see for themselves the flaws in the Church's traditional interpretation of the scriptures. By the turn of the century, Modernism had itself become the heresy it had been formed to combat. Modernists were placed on the Vatican's official watch list, and all clerics forbidden to associate with the movement, even forced to take an oath not to embrace any Modernist ideas. The Modernists were even, interestingly enough, accused of being "Freemasons" by the Roman authorities. But Modernism continued to proliferate, spreading throughout Europe and Britain as it grew fashionable with the era's intelligentsia. And the center for the dissemination of Modernist thought was the Seminary of Saint Sulpice.

Victor Hugo

There are some other details about the life of Victor Hugo, besides what we have already gone over, that are worth mentioning. Best known for his plays *Les Miserables* and *The Hunchback of Notre Dame*, Hugo came from a purportedly "aristocratic" lineage stemming from Lorraine. He was born in Besancon, home of the Nodiers and center of post-Revolutionary occult conspiracies. His father appears to have been acting as a double agent during Napoleon's reign, serving a general under the emperor while at the same time consorting with those who plotted against him. One of these consortees was, in a bizarre and kinky twist, his wife's adulterous lover, who lived with the family and was godfather to young Victor.

As a teenager, Victor Hugo became one of Charles Nodier's proteges, from whom he appears to have acquired an appreciation for Gothic architecture, which would later figure into his writing. At age seventeen Hugo, along with his brother and Charles Nodier, started a publishing house that produced a magazine which Nodier edited. He was later married at none other than Saint Sulpice. In 1825, Hugo and Nodier took their wives on a lengthy tour of Switzerland and then attended Charles X's coronation. Hugo continued to model his life on Nodier's, even forming his own salon in the Nodier tradition which included many of the same people. At Nodier's funeral in 1845, Hugo was one of the pallbearers.

Hugo's esoteric interests and heretical beliefs were undeniable. Like his predecessor Isaac Newton, he rejected both the Trinity and the divinity of Jesus. And of course, as a disciple of Nodier, his thinking was saturated with Gnosticism, Hermeticism, and cabalistic concepts. He even joined a version of the Rosicrucians to which Eliphas Levi also belonged.

It is interesting to note that Victor Hugo was, throughout his life, a devoted monarchist, although he maintained an affection for Napoleon, who had married into the Merovingian bloodline, and who had attempted to link himself to that dynasty by attaching King Childeric's golden bees to his coronation robe. Although Hugo supported the restoration of the Bourbons to the throne, this would appear to have been merely an outgrowth of his desire for the trappings of monarchy. His attitude towards the Bourbons themselves was a bit wishy-washy, and in the case of Louis XIV, downright negative. He did, however, support the cause of the so-called "Citizen King", Louis Philippe, who had married the niece of Maximilien de Lorraine.

Claude Debussy

The Grand Master to follow Hugo at the helm of the Priory was also the Grand Master who led them during the years of the Berenger Sauniere saga - the renowned composer, Claude Debussy. From humble beginnings, Debussy nonetheless achieved fame, like many Priory Grand Masters, at an early age, and was performing for the mistress of the President of France by the time he was a teenager. He had already established contact with the President himself, as well as a number of other powerful people and well-known socialites. At age eighteen, a female aristocrat from Russia who had also patronized Tchaikovsky decided to adopt him, and took him on tours throughout Italy, Russia and Switzerland. He won a much esteemed music award in 1884, and then continued his travels throughout the continent. During this time, he established an inner circle consisting of men and women from noble families whose names he went to great lengths to keep secret.

However, a greater turning point in his life was meeting Victor Hugo, to whom he was introduced by the poet Paul Verlaine, and he shortly afterwards put to music a number of Hugo's best works. At this time, Debussy also fell in with a group of "symbolists", then one of the dominant art movements in Paris. Among this circle: Berenger Sauniere's mistress and dedicated occultist, opera singer Emma Calve; Emile Hoffet, the cleric from Saint Sulpice who deciphered Sauniere's parchments, and who introduced Sauniere to Debussy; poet Stephane Mallarme, who wrote the poem upon which Debussy based one of his most famous works, *L'Aprês-Midi d'un Faune* (*The Afternoon of a Faun*); Maurice Maeterlinck, who wrote a "Merovingian" play called *Pelle et Melisande*, which Debussy transformed into a hugely successful opera; and Comte Philippe Auguste Villiera de l'Isle-Adam, who wrote *Axël*, a play of "Rosicrucian" content that was warmly embraced by the symbolists and which, originally, Debussy had planned to turn into an opera as well. Also included: famous writers Oscar Wilde, Stefan George, Paul Valery, Andre Gide, Marcel Proust and W.B. Yeats; the founder of the Cabalistic Order of the Rose-Croix, who was also friends with Emma Calve; Satanist Jules Bois, again friends with Emma Calve, who helped S.L. MacGregor Mathers establish the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn; and the famous mystic Papus, spiritual advisor to Nicolas and Alexandra of Russia.

Papus was also involved with Jules Doinel, a librarian at Carcassonne who started a "neo-Cathar" church that included both he and Papus as bishops, and which was situated in the Languedoc. He declared himself to be "Gnostic bishop of Mirepoix and Alet", counting both the parishes of Montsegur and Rennes-le-Chateau among his domains. The church was consecrated at the home of Lord James Sinclair's wife. Their "neo-Cathar" movement raised alarm at the Vatican, and the Papacy even issued an official condemnation of the church for promulgating "the ancient Albigensian heresy." Doinel was well-acquainted with Emma Calve, as well as the cure of Rennes-le-Bains, Abbe Henri Boudet. He was also a frequent visitor to the region of Rennes-le-Chateau, so he may indeed have known Berenger Sauniere.

Debussy had a friend in Josephin Peladan, as associate of Papus and Emma Calve who, towards the close of the 19th century, proclaimed that he had discovered the true tomb of Christ while visiting the Holy Land. The location he gave was not the Holy Sepulcher, which is the traditionally acknowledged site, but underneath the foundations of the Mosque of Omar, which had at one point been under the control of the Knights Templar. Of Peladan's discovery, one of his disciples wrote that it was, "so astonishing that in any other era it would have shaken the Catholic world to its foundations", indicating that something about the tomb itself revealed some earth-shattering secret. Perhaps it provided the basis for Peladan's insistence that Jesus had been a man, not divine.

Peladan founded his own Hermetic order in 1890, which he called "The Order of the Catholic Rose-Croix, the Temple, and the Grail." He also decided to embark upon a career as an artist, playwright, and composer. He summed up his artistic approach as that of “a knight in armor, eagerly engaged in the symbolic quest for the Holy Grail.” The theater company which he created specialized in particularly Arcadian themes, including, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states, “Orpheus, the Argonauts, and the Quest for the Golden Fleece, the Mystery of the Rose-Croix, and the Mystery of the Grail.” Claude Debussy was one of the company's chief patrons. Peladan also initiated a series of annual art exhibitions titled “Salon de la Rose + Croix.” His mission with these salons was, “to ruin realism, to reform Latin taste, and create a school of idealist art.” Certain styles and themes were explicitly disallowed at these salons, including, “all landscapes except those composed in the manner of Poussin.”

Finally, another friend of both Peladan and Debussy was Maurice Barres, who had once belonged to a Rosicrucian order with Victor Hugo. Barres’ most successful novel was *La Colline Inspiree* (*The Inspired Mount*), which, it has been theorized, is partially allegorical of the story of Berenger Sauniere. Interestingly, though, the actual location in which the story takes place is the aforementioned village of Sion in Lorraine.

The Protocols of Sion and the Hieron du Val d'Or

Around the turn of the century, a controversial document was published, the effects of which reverberated well into the middle of the next century: the notorious *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, long held by scholars to have been a hoax. As the czar and czarina's involvement with the occult and reliance on mystical advisors grew, so too did the paranoia in Russia about secret societies and their influence on national politics. The mystical advisors in question - Rasputin, Papus, and a mysterious figure named Monsieur Philippe - also had a powerful enemy: Grand Duchess Elizabeth, who wished to see her own hired puppets acting as advisors to the throne. One such puppet was Sergei Nilus, who in 1903 presented to the czar *The Protocols of Zion*. These were documents purporting to be the minutes of the World Jewish Congress, a Jewish conspiracy that supposedly intended to take over the world. Unfortunately for Nilus, the czar recognized it as a fraud, declared that all copies of the document were to be destroyed, and banished Sergei Nilus from the court.

Over the years, however, the document was published again and again, becoming a cult classic among anti-Semites, who fervently believed in the document's authenticity. The *Protocols* were used to fuel the fire of anti-Jewish hatred after the Russian Revolution of 1917, as well as by the Nazis a few years later. Although at times a bit over-dramatic, there is something inherently believable about the *Protocols*. They lay out in straightforward rhetoric the Machiavellian steps which an international conspiracy would go through to take control of the world's governments and institutions, and to maintain power, largely through the manipulation of the masses, as well as those already in power. It recommends the proliferation of dangerous creeds, philosophies, religious and political ideas such as Marxism, Anarchism, Atheism, and Darwinism, all to sow discord and cause the breakdown of traditional institutions, clearing the way for the new hierarchy of which the *Protocols* speak. It is bone-chilling to read such a document as this, written in the 19th century, which predicts perfectly the results of a conspiracy that in every way resemble the world in which we currently live.

But what the *Protocols* outline is much more than your typical paranoid New World Order scenario. They speak of a global monarch, the "King of the blood of Sion", of "the dynastic roots of King David", who as ruler of a new "Masonic kingdom" will be both the "King of the Jews" and "the real Pope", acting as "the patriarch of an international church." Of him, the *Protocols* state, "Certain members of the seed of David will prepare the Kings and their heirs... Only the King and the three who stood sponsor for him will know what is coming." Finally, the *Protocols* end with a curious postscript: "Signed by the representatives of Sion of the 33rd Degree."

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* presented a theory regarding the *Protocols* with which I overwhelmingly concur. They proposed that the "Learned Elders of Zion" were in fact the Priory of Sion, and that this document had been, originally, the minutes of one of *their* meetings, which fell into the wrong hands and was subsequently transformed into a weapon for anti-Semites. It certainly bears all of the earmarks and catch phrases for a "Priory document", and overall the goals that are set forth within, as well as the methods proposed for achieving them, fit my conception of the Priory's own objectives, although I imagine that in certain sections of the document the original version might have been phrased more delicately. Furthermore, there is circumstantial evidence to indicate that this was indeed the case. The earliest known version of the *Protocols* was actually written in French, and most scholars believe it to have been partially based on a political satire written by Maurice Joly against Napoleon II which was published in Geneva in 1864. Maurice Joly was also a member of the Rose-Croix order, and good friends with Victor Hugo. But perhaps it was the other way around. Perhaps the *"Protocols of Sion"* and the anti-Napoleon satire were themselves based on the same Priory of Sion document, which Joly, as a potential member of the Priory, could possibly have had access to. We cannot know for sure, but it is known that in 1884, copies of the *Protocols of Zion* were found circulating amongst the members of a Masonic lodge to which Papus himself belonged - the lodge where the aforementioned legend of the wise Egyptian sage named Ormus (whom the Priory of Sion called themselves after) first surfaced.

Furthermore, there was during this period in time a secret society with stated goals very similar to those enumerated in the *Protocols of Zion*, and they were in fact, apparently, an auxiliary order of the Priory of Sion. They were called "The Hieron du Val d'Or", which, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* notes, contains an anagram of the place-name "Orval", a location that frequently crops up throughout this mystery. Notably, the word "Orval" contains the syllables which, in French, mean "gold" and "valley." Thus "Val d'Or" means "Valley of Gold." In his 1979 book *Le Tresor du Triangle d'Or* (*The Treasure of the Golden Triangle*), Jean-Luc Chaumeil (a one-time spokesman for the Priory of Sion) states that the Hieron practiced a version of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, and the upper degrees of this order constituted the lower degrees of the Priory of Sion itself. Chaumeil describes the group's disposition as "Christian, Hermetic, and aristocratic." They proclaimed themselves to be Catholic, even though the Church of Rome condemned them. Their mystic teachings contained, according to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, “a characteristic emphasis on sacred geometry and various sacred sites... an insistence on a mystical or Gnostic truth underlying mythological motifs”, and “a preoccupation with the origins of men, races, languages, and symbols... .” The order was, “simultaneously Christian and ‘trans-Christian.’ It stressed the importance of the Sacred Heart... sought to recognize Christian and pagan mysteries”, and “Ascribed special significance to Druidic thought - which it... regarded as partially Pythagorean.” The Hieron du Val d’Or was also unabashedly pro-monarchist, and sought a restoration of the Holy Roman Empire. But this one would be built, unlike the previous one, on an ultimately spiritual basis - a vision specifically echoed in the Priory of Sion’s own literature, which I will soon discuss. The new empire would have been a reflection of Heaven on Earth, that specifically Hermetic Arcadian ideal. Jean-Luc Chaumeil described the Hieron’s ideal state as:

“...a theocracy wherein nations would be no more than provinces, their leaders but proconsuls in the service of a world occult government consisting of an elite. For Europe, this regime of the Great King implied a double hegemony of the Papacy and the Empire, of the Vatican and of the Habsburgs, who would have been the Vatican’s right arm.”

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* were quick to point out that this envisioned scenario accords with the Nostradamus prophecy about the "Great King" who would issue from Lorraine, since the Habsburgs essentially *were* the House of Lorraine. At the same time, though, this vision accords with that shared by numerous other cultures throughout the world and throughout history who have embraced the myth of the King of the World, an archetypal quasi-divine global monarch who appears in many ancient legends. It further accords with the "King of the blood of Sion" image discussed in the *Protocols of Zion.*

Perhaps even more shocking, Chaumeil claims that Berenger Sauniere, Abbe Henri Boudet, Emile Hoffet, and the Bishop of Carcassonne were all members of this organization, and that it was a political scuffle within this organization which led to Sauniere's premature death. Chaumeil describes Sauniere as a pawn in the Priory of Sion/Hieron du Val d'Or's bizarre plot regarding Rennes-le-Chateau and the surrounding area. According to this version of the story, Sauniere had been involved with the order since before his arrival at the parish of Rennes-le-Chateau, and had actually been dispatched there by them for the purpose of finding the parchments. But in 1916 he is said to have had a falling out with the order, which supposedly explains his mysterious death the following year. Chaumeil states that Sauniere’s “handler” with regard to lodge business was actually the cure of Rennes-le-Bains, Abbe Henri Boudet, who is said to have orchestrated all of Sauniere’s activities, including the remodeling of his church and the surrounding domains. Boudet was also purportedly the middleman who passed along Priory of Sion hush money - not to Sauniere, but to his housekeeper, Marie Deneraud, who was also in their employ and to whom all checks were made payable. She also, says Chaumeil, was the agent through which Boudet transmitted all of his highly specific instructions for Sauniere. And Chaumeil tells us that Sauniere did not even know true nature of the “treasure” and “secret” which he protected until 1915, one year before his supposed falling out with the order, when Boudet made a deathbed confession to his fellow cleric and conspirator. What exactly that was we may never know.

Jean 23

Following Claude Debussy, the next Grand Master of the Priory of Sion was Jean Cocteau (1889-1963), an influential poet, playwright, novelist, artist and filmmaker from the early half of the twentieth century.

He was a contemporary of people like Pablo Picasso, Igor Stravinsky, and Marcel Proust. He was born on July 5, 1889[12] in Maisons-Laffitte, a Parisian suburb, to a cultured, aristocratic family. As *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states: "Cocteau was raised in a milieu close to the corridors of power - his family was politically prominent and his uncle was an important diplomat." His father, a painter, shot himself when Cocteau was only nine years old, and so he clung to his mother, maintaining an unusually close relationship with her for the rest of her life. As is the case with many geniuses, Cocteau did poorly in school, and dropped out in the equivalent of high school. He ran away from home at age fourteen, and spent his time in Venice, as well as the "red light district" of Marseille. He was soon ingratiating himself with the salon crowd of Paris, impressing some of the world's most well-known artists and intellectuals with the brilliance of his work. He presented his first poem to his salon friends at age fifteen.

Before long, Cocteau was patronized by some of Europe's most wealthy and respected nobility. His fame and reputation grew, and by the latter part of his life, he had been elected to the prestigious Academie Francaise, inducted with a ceremonial sword that had been designed by

---

[12] Cocteau's full name was Clement-Eugène-Jean-Maurice Cocteau, but he enjoyed using "Jean Cocteau" because it could be initialized as "J.C.", the same initials as "Jesus Christ."

Picasso. He had also been named “Poet of the Year”, made a “Chevalier of the Legion of Honor”, and was invited to Oxford to become an honorary Doctor of Letters. Once, he was even invited by Charles de Gaulle’s brother to give a national address on the general state of France. Though some think otherwise, there is no doubt in my mind that Jean Cocteau had every attribute required to be the Priory of Sion’s Grand Master, and had accomplished everything necessary to be listed among the greatest poets and artists of all time.

Cocteau consorted with a number of people who, if they were not actually members of the Priory of Sion, made superb candidates. Picasso, for instance, to quote John Richardson, “was of noble lineage; what is more, his uncle Salvador had married into the Malagueño aristocracy. ‘I’ll dine with the duke’ is how he ends one of his notes.” In 1917, he even had an audience with the King of Spain. His art, too, shows his interest in Hermetic subjects: his obsession with the bull symbol, his use, on more than one occasion, of the alchemical symbol of the Black Sun, and his undeniable use of pentagonal geometry in many, if not most of his cubist paintings. Another candidate was Salvador Dali, whose “surreal” and “cubist” works often centered around strangely Hermetic religious themes, and the two films that he worked on, *The Andiluvian Dog* and *The Golden Age,* both used the classical Grail-themed works of Richard Wagner as a soundtrack. They were even financed by the same noble family - the Noailles' - that financed Cocteau's first film, *Blood of a Poet*. Furthermore, Dali's bust was once sculpted by the same artist - Arno Breker - who also sculpted a bust of Jean Cocteau. But besides these two, Cocteau had connections to people who were almost undeniably members of the Priory. Cocteau was good friends with Jean Hugo, grandson of the Priory's twenty-first Grand Master, Victor Hugo. He was also on close terms with Jean's wife Valentine Gross Hugo, whom he called "my swan." Together they collaborated on countless projects. Cocteau was quite enamored with the late Victor Hugo himself and even made a film adaptation of Hugo's *Ruy Blas*. Cocteau also had a direct, public relationship with the man who purportedly preceded him as Grand Master of the Priory of Sion: composer Claude Debussy. In 1962, one year before his death, Cocteau was commissioned to design the set and costumes for a production of *Pelle et Melisande*.

In addition, Cocteau maintained a life-long respect for Leonardo da Vinci, the Priory's ninth Grand Master, and quoted him often. It was from da Vinci that Cocteau obtained his theory of the use of line in his artwork, which was one of his main methods for communicating the secrets he had learned from the Priory of Sion, using sacred geometry and symbolism.

Cocteau's lines were often subtle, implied - which, he believed, made the statements encoded in them all the more powerful.

Although he displayed a lifelong interest in Hermeticism and pagan mythology, and although he had never been particularly pious, Cocteau re-converted to Catholicism, the religion of his birth, in 1925. With a seemingly libertine lifestyle saturated by opium and young boys, Cocteau might have seemed an unlikely convert, but, in a way, that might have been part of what drove him back in the first place. Then again, it could have been something far more complicated.

Cocteau's 1925 re-conversion came he when met the poet Jacques Maritain, a Catholic who "sought a reconciliation between Christianity and the twentieth century." Maritain had first become acquainted with Cocteau's work when a disciple named Charles Herion gave him a copy of Cocteau's pamphlet *Le Coq et l'Arlequin*. Herion soon became ordained as a priest, and it was from him that Cocteau took the sacraments for the first time since his childhood, during the Feast of the Sacred Heart. This "Sacred Heart" symbol played a large part in Cocteau's passionate conversion. According to William Emboden, when Cocteau was introduced to Father Herion, he:

> *"...looked at the swarthy priest wearing a cloak with a red cross above a red heart - the symbol of his order - and all but swooned as he dropped into the arms of the church. When he wrote afterwards of Father Herion as an angel in costume, we cannot help but look back to the opium drawings of only months earlier with the theme of the angel with the heart on his chest. ...Cocteau was now in the same 'club' as Picasso and Stravinsky; he had converted back to Catholicism."*

Indeed, it would appear that Cocteau was already a member of a club that included those two - specifically, the Priory of Sion. The Sacred Heart symbol which so attracted him, and which had been a theme of his art even prior to his conversion, was a symbol used by the Hieron du Val d'Or, and would appear to be an adaptation of the rose-cross.

Cocteau's beliefs were, and always had been, highly unorthodox - much like those beliefs held by other members of the Priory of Sion. For instance, the Priory of Sion reserves a special reverence for the biblical figure of Mary Magdalene (or "Madeleine" in French), who seems to have significance for them both as the mother of Christ's children and as an embodiment of the Venus goddess archetype. Cocteau, too, seemed to bear a similar reverence for this figure. As William Emboden writes, "[Cocteau] spoke of a mystical effluvium of the Madeleine Church [in

Paris], like the emanations from some antique temple, that kept him in the region of that edifice." The Priory of Sion has, in the past, purposely used the letters "MM", or sometimes just "M" to symbolize Magdalene, and Cocteau used them as well. In the Church of Notre Dame de France ("Our Lady of France") in London, which Cocteau decorated with fantastic murals, this letter "M" is mysteriously placed on the altar, directly beneath the depiction of the crucifixion.[13] To the left are depicted the dice thrown by the Roman soldiers, who according to the Gospels, cast lots to determine who should get Christ's clothing after he died. The number of dots that are shown on the dice is fifty-eight, a significant number. The skull of Baphomet, which the Templars and were said to have possessed was referred to cryptically as "Caput 58M", and I have already shown how this could be a coded reference to Mary Magdalene.

The same statement is being made in Cocteau's mural at Notre Dame. This statement is further reinforced by the fact that the "M" on the altar is directly below a rose that Cocteau has placed on the cross, precisely beneath Christ's feet. Not only does that make it a "rose-cross", but the rose is directly above the initial "M" for "Mary." The term "Rosemary" is used in occult parlance to refer to the female consort of a

---

[13] Another, similar-looking and oddly-placed M. can be found on Cocteau's glass sculpture entitled *Stele*, and numerous Ms have been found in his mural at the Chapel of Saint Peter.

God or demon (thus the title for the film *Rosemary's Baby*.) This is exactly what Magdalene's symbolism entailed. The fact that the rose, as well as the blood drops beneath it, are colored both red and blue may indicate the "blue blood" of the Grail bloodline. Given all this, the Church's title "Notre Dame De France" is interesting. Most would assume this to be a reference to the Virgin Mary, who is referred to by Catholics as "Our Lady." But the true "Lady of France" is the goddess Marianne, their national symbol. Perhaps "Marianne" and "Magdalene" are representations of the same archetype. Cocteau did indeed make a number of drawings and sculptures featuring Marianne. One of the drawings even ended up on a national French postage stamp.

Notre Dame de France is located in London's red light district. Cocteau had always, for some reason, held a special place in his heart for prostitutes, who had taken him in when he ran away to Marseille at age fourteen. William Emboden writes of Notre Dame that: "This church was dear to Cocteau because it was French and because it was in an area frequented by prostitutes and the poor of London. After his mural was completed, the local prostitutes took up a collection and bought a blue rug in honor of the Virgin and as a tribute to Cocteau's work." The irony of a group of pious Catholic prostitutes paying homage to a *virgin* cannot be ignored, and perhaps someone was making a veiled reference instead to

Mary Magdalene (the real "Notre Dame" honored in Cocteau's mural) under the guise of the Virgin Mary.

Another heretical belief posited by the Priory of Sion seems to be present in Cocteau's work: the idea that not Christ, but a substitute died on the cross, while the real Jesus went on to raise his royal family in the south of France. This concept is illustrated in the Notre Dame mural, where only the feet of the crucified man can be seen, leaving his identity undetermined. Looking on, with a scowl on his face, and tears of blood dripping from his eye (which has been made to resemble a fish) is a man who is unmistakably Christ - the real one. On the opposite side of the cross, Cocteau has depicted himself, with his back turned to the crucifixion, as if to show that he rejects the orthodox version of the story. The theme is picked up at the Chapel of Saint Blaise, which Cocteau decorated and was buried in. Here we see two Christs depicted. We see only the head of the central one, wounded with his head slumped over as though he has just died on the cross. Above him, however, is another Christ, wounded in the hand, but perfectly alive. On either side of the two figures are two identical crowns of thorns, repeating the "dual Christ" theme. Finally, in the Chapel of Saint Peter that he painted, Cocteau has made another unorthodox statement on the nature of Christ. In his own words: "I concealed the image of Christ in a curve of the Roman vaulting.

You can't see it as you enter the chapel. You have to get close to the altar to spot it. The construction of the vaulting reveals it only to the Priest, unless you go up and look." In other words, the true nature of Christ is concealed to all but the initiated, and is not to be found in the man who died on the cross.

The belief that John the Baptist was the true messiah, and not Christ, is one that, it has been posited, is also held by the Priory of Sion. Because of the special reverence that they seem to hold for him, all of their Grand Masters since the Cutting of the Elm have taken the title "Jean (or, if female, "Jeanne") upon assumption of the office. It has been noted by authors Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince that a hand signal associated with John the Baptist (a raised forefinger) can be found at the mural at Saint Blaise being made by Christ.

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* have also made the point that Jean Cocteau, as the twenty-third Grand Master of the Priory of Sion since the Cutting of the Elm, would have been "Jean 23." In 1958, during Cocteau's Grand-Mastership, a new Pope came to power - Angelo Roncalli - who also called himself John XXIII. It was this Pope that finally revoked the ban on the practice of Freemasonry for Catholics, making members of the Priory of Sion (which has described itself as a "Hermetic Freemasonry", legitimate Catholics again. What is more, the

1976 book *The Prophecies of Pope John XXIII*, allegedly written by the Pontiff himself, stated that he was secretly a member of the Order of the Rose-Croix, with whom, to quote *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, "he had become acquainted while acting as papal nuncio to Turkey in 1935." Stranger still, in *The Prophecies of Malachi*, written by a 12th-century Irish monk, the assumption of the papacy by a "John XXIII" was predicted, and the descriptive motto he gave to this Pope was "Shepherd and Navigator." Well, "Navigator", of course, is the official title given to the Grand Masters of the Priory of Sion. Furthermore, Jean Cocteau identified himself with the Greek mythological figure of Orpheus, who was the subject of many Cocteau paintings, drawings, poems, plays and films. Orpheus was, traditionally, both a shepherd and a seaman. This tends to indicate that Pope John XXIII was a member of the Priory of Sion, and had a very close relationship with Jean Cocteau. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* suggest that, "Cardinal Roncalli, on becoming Pope, chose the name of his own secret grand master - so that - for some symbolic reason, there would be a John XXIII presiding over Sion and the papacy simultaneously." What could this symbolic reason possibly have been?

The Priory of Sion, as we know, has always been presumed to be at odds with the Catholic Church for a number of reasons. First, there is the fact that the Church had stolen the mythos of Christ for its own use, and the way the Church had purged the Bible of any reference to Christ's marriage, children, or real patrilineal ancestors. Then there is the fact that the Church has censored any interpretation of Christ other than its own faulty version, and "cleansed" the Bible of all texts that presented evidence to the contrary. Then, of course, there is the pact that the Church made with the Merovingian descendants of Christ, making them the perpetual heirs to the title "New Constantine" in exchange for their silence about their divine lineage. This pact was broken when the Church conspired to assassinate Merovingian King Dagobert II, and drove the Merovingians virtually out of existence.

But the Priory has often been composed of members who were nominally Catholic, and many of them have even been clerics. Furthermore, the Priory had, by Cocteau's time, begun calling itself "an order of Catholic chivalry", and Cocteau had taken care to make a public show of his re-conversion to Catholicism. The Priory had also recently announced its intention to create, through covert manipulation, a United States of Europe - much like what the European Union is becoming, and what the Holy Roman Empire (which the Merovingian bloodline first presided over) used to be. Such a feat would be as impossible today as it was back then without an alliance with the Catholic Church, which still holds the allegiance of much of Europe's citizens.

Yes it would - an alliance, or a coup. Evidence indicates that such a coup was attempted with the placement of John XXIII on the papal throne - a coup for which that other John 23, Jean Cocteau, was at the helm. Chillingly, John XXIII died in the same year as Jean 23 - 1963 - a mere five years into his papal reign, indicating that the attempted coup was snuffed out by the Vatican before it accomplished its ultimate goal: a reform from the inside of the corrupt Church of Christ, by those who possessed his true teachings, and his blood. But they certainly tried. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* state that:

> *"...more than any other man, Pope John XXIII was responsible for reorienting the Roman Catholic Church - and bringing it, as commentators have frequently said, into the twentieth century*[14] *... And in June 1960, he issued a profoundly apostolic letter. This missive addressed itself specifically to the subject of "the Precious Blood of Jesus." It ascribed a hitherto unprecedented significance to that blood."*

---

[14] The second most influential figure in liberalizing the Church was Cocteau's other friend, Jacques Maritain.

This would be the blood whose bearers, in the form of the Grail family, the Priory of Sion was sworn to protect

It is interesting that both John 23s were thought of as prophets. Pope John XXIII's papacy had been predicted by the prophecies of Malachi, and there were a set of prophecies attributed to John XXIII as well. Cocteau had also been named "the Prophet" by the sculptor Arno Breker, for reasons that remain unexplained. But there is a clue in the first syllable of Cocteau's name - a symbolism which Cocteau himself emphasized in his work. He called himself "le Coq" ("the Cock"), and published a folded broadside of the same name with Raymond Radiguet in 1920. According to William Emboden, "Cocteau liked the concept of a bird alter ego. ... It is a symbol of the soul's flight." Cocteau referred to changes in his artistic style as "moltings", and his young disciples were referred to by others as "geese." The poet Apollinaire characterized Cocteau in writing as, "The bird that sings with its fingers", a line that was later used in Cocteau's film *Orpheus*. But it was the cock specifically, Emboden writes, in which Cocteau saw himself, "as a bird that calls the morning hour, and calls his name in part." A cock is an announcer of things, just like a prophet,[15] and thus he used the crowing of the cocks in his films *Blood of a Poet* and *Testament of Orpheus*. He also used the cock in the murals of the Chapel of Saint Peter, where the bird watches the Denial of Saint Peter from atop of a ladder.

---

[15] In this sense, then, "Jean the Birdman" could be code for "John the Prophet." In other words, Cocteau was again identifying himself with Saint John the Baptist, and all that he represents.

Recall that it was Peter who was said to have denied Christ thrice, by the third crow of the cock, on the morning of the Crucifixion. There is a further symbolic significance here. Saint Peter is regarded by the Catholic Church as the first Pope, and yet he denied the true Christ, as the Church still does today. They consider Peter (who was consumed with jealousy for Mary Magdalene's relationship with Christ, and who mischaracterized them both in his teachings) as their rock of foundation. Indeed, Peter's name means "rock", and it is also very close to "Pater" ("Father"), the title assumed by all Catholic priests upon ordination. In another mural at Saint Peter, entitled *Saint Peter Walking on Water*, Christ is shown standing with his right foot upon a white rock, presumably the "Rock of Zion" upon which he said his messiahship was founded (i.e., the bloodline of King David). Yet Christ also called Peter "my rock." On the left side of the picture is Saint Peter supposedly "walking on water", with the help of heavenly angels. But examination shows that he is not walking on the water so much as being held aloft by the angels while his feet are dipped into the water. The rites of baptism as practiced by the likes of John the Baptist involved the immersion of the feet in water - not the entire body, as is practiced today. This mural, completed in 1957, one year before John XXIII's assumption to the throne of Saint Peter, may have been Cocteau's way of prophetically announcing a reconciliation between the Rock of Zion (the Priory of Sion) and the Rock of Saint Peter (the Catholic Church), pronouncing that the Church, symbolized by Saint Peter, was about to be re-baptized.

But what exactly *were* Cocteau's religious beliefs, if they were not orthodox Catholic? To explain, I will quote a letter from one of Cocteau's friends, Jean Bourgoint (a monk also know as "Brother Pascal") to another of Cocteau's friends, Madame Jeannette Kandaouroff, apparently in response to a letter she had written him after Cocteau's death in 1963. He wrote:

*"... I want to correct your mistake concerning Cocteau's death, which - quite the opposite of what you think, touched me profoundly... One thing I should like to clear up at once is the word **Satan**, which you think you remember and which I do not remember having used concerning him. Isn't there confusion here? Didn't I speak of **Lucifer**, bright name of the 'most beautiful of the Angels' before his fall? (In fact, don't you have a magnificent photograph of him, part of my 'estate', signed by him with that name?)"*

Perhaps this identification with Lucifer is the source of what William Emboden calls, "Cocteau's preoccupation with angels, and the belief that all persons are angels in borrowed costume." Cocteau also repeatedly drew a figure called the "angel of flaming cheek", which could easily be identified with Lucifer. And of course, we should consider Cocteau's signature, with which he always included that perpetual symbol of Lucifer, the pentagram, complete with a little dot in the middle. Cocteau's explanation of his use of this star was that it represented a head wound that Apollinaire had received during the Great War. This may be a lie, but it represents an interesting metaphor: that of the divine ray of Lucifer entering into the brain of one who has just become enlightened. Henry Lincoln has pointed out that there is a geometrically implied pentagram in the mural at Notre Dame de France which radiates from the center of Cocteau's forehead. Does this represent a Luciferian epiphany? What, then, were Cocteau's plans for reforming the Church? Whatever these plans were, his work on them ended with his death in 1963. But they were to be carried on by his successors – among them Pierre Plantard de Saint-Claire.

Chapter Three: A Hermetic Freemasonry

"The Candidate must renounce his personality in order to devote himself to a higher moral apostolate."

- Article 7, Statutes of the Priory of Sion

In the year in 1956, during the grand mastership of Jean Cocteau, the Priory of Sion underwent considerable change. The order's statutes were rewritten, and the order's structure revised. The membership was increased five times, and they officially registered themselves with the French government. Their stated objective, according to the government's *Journal Official*, was "studies and mutual aid to members." At this time they took on the subtitle of "C.I.R.C.U.I.T.", which stood for "Chevalierie d'Institutions et Regles Catholiques d'Union Independente et Traditionaliste" (Chivalry of Catholic Rules and Institutions of the Independent and Traditionalist Union). *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.* was also the name of a magazine published by the order for its members.

It was at this point that the Priory began publishing the aforementioned "Priory documents" which, fifteen years later, had fomented into a firestorm of gossip about the Priory of Sion and Rennes-le-Chateau that proliferated throughout the country's popular magazines and newspapers. For instance, a 1973 article from *Midi Libre* purported that the Priory had chosen a candidate for the throne of a future Merovingian France by the name of M. Alain Poher. He had been the Provisional President of France both after the resignation of President Charles de Gaulle and after the death of President Georges Pompidou. He does have a possible connection to the Merovingian bloodline via an ancestor named Arnaud, Count of Poher, who married into the Plantard family. He was also a decorated hero of the French Resistance. As we shall see, members of the Priory of Sion played a number of key roles during the German occupation of France, and their true loyalties were not always clear-cut. Furthermore, the Priory of Sion would seem to have been manipulating French politics to a very high degree during this tumultuous period, in an apparent effort to further their long held goals of remodeling Europe according to their divinely-inspired ancient plan: a new Holy Roman Empire, or, as they now called it, a "United States of Europe."

At the head of this new empire would be a "Grand Monarch", a king whose throne had always been in existence, recognized by those who had been initiated into his secret, and was soon to make his power externally recognized as well. According to one Priory document:

"*The King* *is* *shepherd and pastor at the same time. Sometimes he dispatches some brilliant ambassador to his vassal in power, his factotum, one who has the felicity of being subject to death. Thus Rene d'Anjou, Connetable de Bourbon, Nicolas Fouquet... and numerous others for whom astonishing success is followed by inexplicable disgrace - for these emissaries are both terrible and vulnerable. Custodians of a secret, one can only exalt or destroy them. Thus people like Gilles de Rais*[16]*, Leonardo da Vinci, Joseph Balsamo, the dukes of Nevers and Gonzaga, whose wake is attended by a perfume of magic in which sulphur is mingled with incense - the perfume of the Magdalene."*

If the Priory documents are correct, the Priory of Sion used such vassals as these throughout the twentieth century to manipulate affairs of state, across Europe and all over the world, to bring about their "United States of Europe." In accordance with the blueprint laid out in the *Protocols of Zion*, and in accordance with the Priory's past behavior, the Priory documents indicate that the Priory has been playing all sides of the political spectrum, sewing the seeds of discord by promoting not only monarchist sentiments, but also Socialism, Communism, Fascism,

---

[16] Gilles de Rais, a noble who was instrumental in the campaign of Jeanne d'Arc, was later convicted of raping and killing dozens of young boys in Satanic rituals.

Catholicism, anti-Catholicism, and Freemasonry. A document written by S. Roux in a self-published pamphlet asserts:

"*One cannot say that the Church is ignorant of the line of the Razes* [the Merovingian line from Dagobert II]*, but it must be remembered that all its descendants since Dagobert have been secret agitators against both the royal line of France and against the Church - and that they have been the source of all heresies. The return of a Merovingian descendant to power would entail for France the proclamation of a popular monarchy allied to the USSR, and the triumph of Freemasonry - in short, the disappearance of religious freedom."*

Another Priory document, called *Le Cercle d'Ulysse* by Jean Declaude, declares that since the death of Jean Cocteau, an Abbe Ducaud-Bourget had been at the helm of the Priory, and that the order had since become, "a power capable of confronting the Vatican in the days to come. Monsignor Lefebvre is a most active and redoubtable member, capable of saying 'You make me Pope and I will make you King.'"

Abbe Ducaud-Bourget had been trained as a priest at Saint Sulpice. He was both a conventual chaplain of the Vatican's Templar-like Sovereign Order of Malta, and a well-known Resistance hero. He was an accomplished poet who had been admitted, like so many other members of Sion, to the Academie Francaise. But he was also known to lean to the right politically. He liked Mussolini and once voiced his desire for France to "recover its sense of values under the guidance of a new Napoleon."

As for "Monsignor Marcel Lefebvre", that would be Archbishop Marcel Lefebvre, a fanatically traditionalist Catholic who openly defied Pope Paul VI, labeling him as too liberal, resulting in a brush with excommunication. Abbe Ducaud-Bourget was a member of Lefebvre's Traditionalist camp, and even led protests against the current leadership of the Church. He was also threatened with excommunication. Lefebvre had been a member of Action Francaise, considered to be an extremely right-wing organization, and had complimented Argentina's fascist regime publicly. However, in 1976, when Lefebvre appeared to be on the brink of excommunication, the Pope changed his mind. According to an article from London's *Guardian*, on August 30, 1976:

"The Archbishop's team of priests in England... believe that their leader still has a powerful ecclesiastical weapon to use in his dispute with the Vatican. No one will give any hint of its nature, but Father Peter Morgan, the group's leader... describes it as being something 'earth-shaking.'"

Later, around 1980, an article ran in the popular French magazine *Bonne Soiree* linking both Ducaud-Bourget and Lefebvre with the Priory of Sion, and claiming that they had both recently visited the site of Chateau Barberie, which was so precious to the Priory.

Pierre Plantard de Saint-Clair

Another article in *Bonne Soiree* from 1981 stated that Pierre Plantard had been elected the new Grand Master of the Priory of Sion in 1981, by a "Convent" of the Priory's 121 dignitaries. As the article described it, "The 121 dignitaries of the Prieure de Sion are all *eminence grises* of high finance and of international political or philosophical societies." It also stated that Pierre Plantard was the direct descendant of Dagobert II, which:

> *"...has been proved legally by the parchments of Queen Blanche of Castile, discovered by the Abbe Sauniere in his church at Rennes-le-Chateau (Aude) in 1891. These documents were sold by the priest's niece in 1965 to Captain Roland Stansmore and Sir Thomas Frazer, and were*

deposited in a safe deposit box of Lloyd's Bank Europe Limited of London."

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, in an interview with Plantard associate Philippe de Cherisey, were told that, "Francois Ducaud-Bourget had not been elected by a proper quorum." One possible explanation for this is a rift that occurred in the Priory around 1956, centered on Cocteau's new statutes. In addition to increasing the order's membership by five times, these articles, among other things, required that members provide the order with a notarized copy of their signature and birth certificate, and that they always admit to their membership with the Priory upon being asked about it by an outsider. Failure to do so would be considered resignation from the order. Many members were enraged because they felt that they were being "deprived of their anonymity." Perhaps Bourget was elected by a segment of the Priory that had broken off from the main group in protest, and which was no longer recognized by that main group. Indeed, such a schism does seem to have occurred, one which assumed proportions similar to the Cutting of the Elm, but which "was averted by the diplomatic skill of Pierre Plantard.

M. Plantard's biography is nothing short of fascinating, and more than a bit confusing. In addition to being a direct descendant of Dagobert

II, he is also a direct descendant of the owners of Chateau Barberie, and in an interview with Gerard de Sede once mentioned an "international secret" that is hidden at Gisors. In fact he seems to have been de Sede's main source of information for his books about Rennes-le-Chateau and the Priory of Sion. Plantard's grandfather was purportedly a friend of Berenger Sauniere, and Pierre Plantard owned a great deal of land near Rennes-le-Chateau, such as the ruins of the Blanchefort Chateau, and the land upon which the Church of Saint Dagobert once stood. A bizarre little biography of Pierre Plantard, which was written by his first wife, Anne Lea Hisler, in *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.* reads as follows:

"Let us not forget that this psychologist was the friend of personages as diverse as Comte Israel Monti, one of the brothers of the Holy Vehm, Gabriel Trarieux d'Egmont, one of the thirteen members of the Rose-Croix, Paul LeCour, the philosopher on Atlantis, the Abbe Hoffet of the Service of Documentation of the Vatican, Th. Moreux, the director of the Conservatory at Bourges, etc. Let us remember that during the Occupation, he was arrested, suffered torture by the Gestapo, and was interred as a political prisoner for long months. In his capacity as doctor of arcane sciences he learned to appreciate the value of secret information, which no doubt led to his receiving the title of honorary

member in several hermetic societies. All of this has gone to form a singular personage, a mystic of peace, an apostle of liberty, an ascetic whose ideal is to serve the well-being of humanity. Is it astonishing therefore that he should become one of the eminence grises from whom the great of this world seek counsel?"

A researcher working for the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* contacted writer Jean-Luc Chaumeil, another associate of Pierre Plantard, on the Priory's political intentions. As they described it, he told them that:

"…in a few years... there would be dramatic change in the French government - a change that would pave the way for a popular monarchy with a Merovingian ruler on the throne... Sion was ... intent on presiding over a restoration of true 'values' - values, it would appear, of a spiritual, perhaps esoteric character. These values ... were ultimately pre-Christian..."

Chaumeil also said something very peculiar, making the abrupt and unsolicited comment that "not all members of the Prieure de Sion ... were Jewish", implying that the majority of them in fact were.

***Vaincre* and the French Resistance**

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* arranged a series of interviews with Pierre Plantard himself. In the first interview he claimed that the Priory possessed the treasures of Solomon's Temple, which would be "returned to Israel when the time is right." He also repeated Chaumeil's assertions about the coming political changes in France. Over a series of subsequent meetings, dealt with extensively in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* and *The Messianic Legacy*, the authors learned much about both Plantard's intentions and those of the Priory of Sion. They also undertook their own investigation of Pierre Plantard. They discovered that he had indeed been very active in the French Resistance. Between 1941 and 1943, he had edited what purported to be a "Resistance journal", a strange little magazine called *Vaincre*. Between 1943 and 1944, he had supposedly been imprisoned by the Gestapo in Fresnes, although the authors were not able to confirm this.

They did, however, manage to track down copies of six issues of *Vaincre*, which they described as "printed on high-quality paper, which was difficult to obtain in France at the time." It was published by the company of Poirier Murat, a French Resistance hero and friend of Plantard. The first issue had a press run of 1,379, which had grown to

5000 by the sixth issue. “On the whole”, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* concluded, “*Vaincre* represented a venture that could not possibly have been undertaken without some knowledge on the part of the authorities. It also represented a venture with substantial money behind it.”

Although *Vaincre* proved to be an actual publication, it was not what one would think of as a “Resistance journal”, and more of a new age publication, dealing with mythology, mysticism, Hermeticism, cabalism, etc. There were articles about Atlantis, the fabled underground city of Agartha, lost races, and talk of “secret masters” hidden in the mountains of Tibet. Most of these themes, interestingly enough, were also those embraced by the secret societies that spawned the Nazi movement. And there was indeed a secret society behind the publication of *Vaincre*: Alpha Galates.

Alpha Galates purported to be a chivalric order. It promoted the value of chivalry as a means for revitalizing spiritual values, and creating a new spiritual order throughout the world. As *Vaincre* stated, “...chivalry is indispensable because our country cannot be reborn except through its knights.” It also emphasized the need for chivalry, including the bestowal of knightly titles, to be based on spiritual and moral achievements, as they had been in the beginning of the chivalric era. Honors should not, as they later were, be handed out in return for political favors. *Vaincre* declared that, “The chevalier cannot live without the spiritual ideal, which is the reservoir for moral, intellectual, and spiritual force through coming generations.”

Vaincre reveals some direct links between Alpha Galates and the Priory of Sion, indicating that, if they were not the same order, they were at least sister organizations. *Vaincre* states that the order is divided into the “Legion”, who conduct “philosophical research”, and the “Phalange”, who train future members. This is exactly the divisional structure given to the Priory of Sion in Cocteau’s 1956 statutes. However, Plantard had previously stated that his membership in the Priory began in 1943, and his involvement in Alpha Galates began a year earlier. Yet one would think he had already been involved for some time by 1942, as he was already editing their official magazine, billed in the first issue as “Pierre de France.” By the fourth issue he had lengthened his name to Pierre de France-Plantard, and was named in *Vaincre* as the Grand Master of Alpha Galates, which was now headquartered at his own address in Paris.

Vaincre states that Alpha Galates had been registered with the *Journal Official* in 1937, but this was not recorded, and the French Ministry of Defense denies any knowledge of the order, as did the French Prefecture of Police, even though they did in fact have records showing that they had investigated the group. They definitely had reason to investigate, for the political bent of *Vaincre* would seem, on the surface at least, to be considerably right-wing. For instance, one of its frequent contributors was Professor Louis le Fur, who had been a well-known writer and journalist during the Occupation, and was appointed by Petain to a prominent educational post. Le Fur states in one of his articles in *Vaincre* that he has belonged to Alpha Galates for eight years.

Even more damning is the content of the magazine itself, which extols the virtues of Petain and the Vichy government. A romantic and patriotic hymn to Petain was even published in the first issue, and the Order of Alpha Galates was proclaimed to be “in the service of the homeland.” Also, what would a right-wing journal be without anti-Semitism, of which *Vaincre* contains plenty. One line reads, “To restore our homeland to its rank... it is necessary to eradicate... false dogmas ... and the corrupt principles of the formerly democratic Jewish-Masonry.”

The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* theorized that this might have been just a front, a cover for *Vaincre*’s real intentions. And Pierre Plantard, when confronted, told them the same. As they described it, “He hinted that beneath its pro-Vichy Petainist patina, *Vaincre* contained coded messages that would have been decipherable only to the Resistance.” Indeed, it is hard to reconcile the exoteric messages of *Vaincre* with the fact that so many of its contributors, and so much of the membership of

Alpha Galates, including Pierre Plantard had been closely allied with the Resistance, along with Abbe Ducaud-Bourget, who may have presided over the Priory of Sion and is said to have inducted Pierre Plantard into the group. Furthermore, Pierre Plantard later served as an assistant to Charles de Gaulle, who is on record as having refused to work closely with former collaborators. Also, in November of 1942, a pro-Vichy and pro-Nazi publication called *Au pilori* published an attack on Pierre Plantard, Alpha Galates, and *Vaincre*, which would have been unlikely had they in fact been on the same side.

The commentary from *Au pilori* was obviously taken very seriously, for *Vaincre* dedicated an entire issue to rebutting it. It was announced that a member of Alpha Galates had been removed from the order, apparently for leaking information to *Au pilori*. *Vaincre* also clarified its mission: a "United States of the West."

This idea is one of the predominant themes throughout *Vaincre*, and is illustrated by a drawing that ran in the first issue. This drawing depicts a mounted knight riding down a road upon which is written "The United States of the West." This road divides areas labeled "Brittany" and "Bavaria." The horse is galloping towards a rising sunset marked with "1946" and the sign of Aquarius, indicating that the birth of the United States of the West will be the dawn of a new age.

For Alpha Galates, this was not merely a dream. It was a plan. Alpha Galates member Louis le Fur later founded a group called "Energie" that included Robert Schuman, another man who dreamed of a United States of Europe, and who later became an instrumental figure in the drafting of the plans for the European Economic Community. And it was not only the men of Alpha Galates and the French Resistance that were dreaming of a United Europe. The dream was alive in Germany, with both the Nazis *and* with the German Resistance.

The German Resistance movement was largely centered on an aristocrat named Claus von Stauffenberg, a nobleman and monarchist with a large and loyal following of acolytes called "the Kreisau Circle." Stauffenberg was responsible for the famous "Bomb Plot", the attempt to assassinate Hitler on July 20, 1944, now celebrated as Stauffenberg Day in Europe. Among his circle were his cousins Count Helmut James von Moltke and Hans Adolf von Moltke, the latter of whom was apparently a member of Alpha Galates. In the article in *Vaincre* in which it is announced that Pierre Plantard has been elected Grand Master, Hans Adolf von Moltke, who is described as "a great German, one of the Masters in our Order", is quoted as stating:

"I have the pleasure to say, before my departure for Spain, that our Order has at last found a chief worthy of it in the person of Pierre de France.

It is therefore with total confidence that I depart to perform my mission; for while not deluding myself about the perils I run in discharging my duty, I know that until my last breath my watchword will consist of recognition of Alpha Galates and fidelity to its chief."

Von Moltke had been the German ambassador to both Poland and Britain, and had just been appointed ambassador to Spain. His cousin Helmut James von Moltke had been attempting to circumvent Hitler by negotiating a peace deal with the Allies himself through associates in Sweden, and it is likely that Hans Adolf von Moltke was on a similar mission in Spain. Von Moltke died in Spain later that year, and although the Allies won the war, the peace that followed was not at all what the Kreisau Circle had in mind. Had they been successful in negotiating their peace deal, Europe may well have turned out much differently that it is today.

This link between the Kreisau Circle and Alpha Galates represents the first definitive link between the French and German Resistance movements yet known. And the relationship between the two groups seems not to have begun until 1942, the same year that *Vaincre* began publishing. Like the members of Alpha Galates, the Kreisau Circle became involved in the planning of the EEC through their associates in the Swiss branch of the British Foreign Office, and through Allen Dulles, then head of the Swiss station of the OSS - which later became, with Dulles at the head, the CIA. As I shall discuss, the Priory of Sion appears to have a special relationship with the CIA as well.

Charles de Gaulle and the Committees of Public Safety

During the mid-1950s, about the same time that a schism within the Priory of Sion was occurring, France was brought to the brink of civil war as a result of the fact that Algeria, which was under French control, was jockeying for independence. Coalition governments were collapsing at an alarming rate, and the situation, which lasted for eight years, appeared dire. Within the French Army stationed in Algeria, a network of secret societies was formed with the aim of keeping Algeria under French control. They were called the Committees of Public Safety, named and modeled after a similar network of secret societies formed during the French Revolution. These groups, which included a number of former

Resistance leaders, embraced Charles de Gaulle (alleged by the Priory documents to be a pawn of the Priory of Sion) as the only man they felt could lead France out of the mire towards victory.

In the Spring of 1958, the French government decided that it would cut its losses with Algeria and grant their independence. In reaction to this, the Committees of Public Safety staged a coup d'etat, declaring their own government, meanwhile pleading with Charles de Gaulle to seize the French government and reunify the country. Within a couple of months, Committees of Public Safety began to appear in mainland France. One Committee took control of Corsica by force while another based in Algeria busied itself propagating a peculiar message: that the citizens of France must "choose between the star of Moscow and the Cross of Lorraine." In this brewing conflict former Resistance fighters and Vichy collaborators found themselves on the same team: French nationalism

Then all of the sudden, their dreams came true. In fear of a widely spread rumor that a coup was being planned in Paris, the ruling government simply resigned on May 28. The following day, the Committees of Public Safety organized marches throughout Paris in support of De Gaulle. Hours later, De Gaulle accepted the Presidency, and began forming a government that included many of the key figures in his rise to power. Among them was Andre Malraux, an associate of Jean Cocteau and an alleged member of the Priory of Sion.

But now that De Gaulle was in control, he was expected by the Committees, who had orchestrated his rise to power, to maintain Algeria's colonial status. Yet what they did not know was that he had no intention of doing so. As soon as they caught wind of this, many members of the Algerian Committees, feeling betrayed, formed the OAS (Organisation de l'Armee Secrete - Secret Army Organization), which for years afterward staged numerous assassination attempts on De Gaulle. However, none of them were successful, nor was this group considered a serious threat. The French Committees, though, *were* a threat, and De Gaulle feared that, like the Committees of Public Safety during the French Revolution, they might turn on him at any time and march him off to the guillotine. What De Gaulle wanted was for the Committees to be disbanded entirely. And with that, we once again come to the subject of Pierre Plantard.

According to Plantard himself, he had been asked by Charles de Gaulle to take control of the Parisian Committees, see to it that they completed their task of installing De Gaulle in power, and then dissolve them once this had been done. Presumed confirmation of this appears in a pamphlet by Anne Lea Hisler which was deposited in the Bibliotheque Nationale in 1964. In this she states that the headquarters of the French

Committees was in the Parisian suburb of Aulnay-sous-Bois, directed by Michel Debre, Andre Malraux, Marshall Alphonse Juin, and Pierre Plantard, whom she calls "the Way.", she states). She then quotes a letter purportedly written by De Gaulle to her husband on August 3, 1958. It says:

> *"My dear Plantard,*
>
> *In my letter of 29 July, 1958, I said to you how much I appreciated the participation of the Committees of Public Safety in the work of renewal I have undertaken. Now that the new institutions have been established, which will enable our country to rediscover her rightful status, I believe the members of the Committees of Public Safety can regard themselves as released from the obligations they have until now assumed, and can demobilize."*

Further confirmation came from the Institut Charles de Gaulle. Although they were unable to find any mention of Pierre Plantard in their own archives, they did manage to scrounge up some references to him in France's leading newspaper, *Le Monde*. One article, dated June 6, 1958, quoted a communique that had been issued from the headquarters of the French Committees of Public Safety, stating:

“The Committees of Public Safety must express the wishes of the people, and it is in the name of liberty, of unity, and of solidarity that all French citizens must present today to aid Charles de Gaulle... Patriots, to your posts, and have confidence in the man who has already saved France...”

The author of this statement was signed as “Captain Way”, one of Pierre Plantard’s pseudonyms. Then two days later, another article appeared quoting another communique about the Committees, which was signed by “M. Plantard”, who also said that he could be called on his home phone by dialing “WAY-PAIX” (Way-Peace). Finally, on July 29, the day that de Gaulle wrote the aforementioned letter to Plantard, another article ran in *Le Monde* quoting yet another communique signed by “Captain Way”, this one announcing the dissolution of the committees. The article goes on to say that Captain Way is, in fact, “M. Pierre Plantard... who, together with certain friends, took the initiative of establishing this Committee.” It further states that Plantard will be “secretary in charge of propaganda” for “the ‘Movement’ which will comprise the successor to the Committee.”

C.I.R.C.U.I.T

Following *Vaincre*, Pierre Plantard lent himself to another publishing venture, the aforementioned *C.I.R.C.U.I.T*, which first appeared in 1956, that crucial year for the Priory. Actually, this was only the first series of *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.*, the second of which appeared in 1959. The first series does not mention either Pierre Plantard or the Priory of Sion, and on the surface, at least, reflects little of the interests of either. Other than an article about a thirteen-house zodiac system used by the Priory (which I discuss in Appendix A of this book), the rest of the magazine appears to have been published by a low-cost housing association. It contains unremarkable articles about housing, and other seemingly extraneous materials such as, according to *The Messianic Legacy*, "crossword puzzles, contests for children on a housing estate, advertisements for pencils." The meaning of this is unclear, but it is quite possible that, like *Vaincre*, *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.* was operating on two levels at once, and that secret messages were being communicated through cryptic words inserted into otherwise uninteresting articles.

The second series of *C.I.R.C.U.I.T*, which began in 1959, while not at all straightforward, was at least an obvious organ of the Priory of Sion. Pierre Plantard is listed as Editor, though the Priory of Sion is not specifically mentioned. Instead, the magazine purports to be published by an organization called “The Federation of French Forces”, for which an address and phone number is provided. Unfortunately, researchers have determined that neither the address nor the phone number were correct, and they have not been able to find any information on the Federation of French Forces. But the street name mentioned in the address, “Aulnay-sous-Bois”, is the same street from which the central command of the Committees of Public Safety operated, indicating that the Federation of French Forces were somehow a continuation of the Committees. As if to verify this, the second issue of the 1959 *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.* series mentions yet another letter that Plantard supposedly received from Charles de Gaulle.

The second series of *C.I.R.C.U.I.T* resembles *Vaincre* in many ways, and even makes reference to the other magazine. Like *Vaincre*, it covers topics related to the occult, mysticism, chivalry, French nationalism, and European unity. Many of these articles are written by Pierre Plantard, who here, as in the pages of *Vaincre*, uses the pen name “Chyren.” Some articles are also, as in *Vaincre*, written by his wife Anne Lea Hisler. There is again an emphasis on the importance of a thirteen-house zodiac, and Pierre Plantard uses this system to predict France’s destiny for the next few decades.

There are other, more cryptic topics discussed in *C.I.R.C.U.I.T* as well. There is an entire article dedicated, seemingly out of place, to the details of viticulture and wine selling. Particular emphasis is put on something called “the grafting of vines”, which apparently is a coded reference to the intermarrying of royal bloodlines. Another peculiar line from one of Plantard’s articles is worth quoting, and its importance will become clear in the pages to follow. Philosophizing about the destiny of human civilization, he writes:

“...all is accomplished in accordance with well-determined cycles. A ‘Nautonnier’ guides the ark (‘arche’) in the flood.”

In regards to the politics of state, *C.I.R.C.U.I.T* does not confine itself to mere statements of opinion. They predict what they believe will inevitably occur. They argue for the abolition of the French system which carves the country’s geography into departments. They then lay out their own blueprint for the restructuring of the French government. It would include nine sections: “Council of the Provinces; Council of State; Parliamentary Council; Taxes, Work, and Production; Medical; National Education; Age of Majority; and Housing and Schools.” This doesn’t seem terribly radical. But then, in another article by Plantard, he enunciates plans for the restructuring of the entire world:

> *"...the creation of a Confederation of Lands becomes a Confederation of States: the United States of Euro-Africa, which represented economically (1) an African and European community of exchange based on a common market and (2) the circulation of wealth in order to serve the well-being of all, this being the sole stable foundation on which peace can be constructed."*.

The United States of Europe

One of the most consistently-stated goals of the Priory of Sion, and those associated with it, is a United States of Europe. According to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*: "The Prieure de Sion seeks a United States of Europe partly as a bulwark against the Soviet imperium... a self-contained and neutral power bloc capable of holding the balance of power between the Soviet Union and the United States."

The idea of a united Europe was, as we know, popular amongst the French Resistance. It was espoused by people such as Andre Malraux, who advocated a "European New Deal" allied against the USSR. In 1942, Winston Churchill was quoted as saying, "I trust that the European family may act united as one under a Council of Europe. I look forward to a United States of Europe." Organizations such as Pan Europa, founded by Count Richard Coudenhove-Kalergi, began to pop up in the 1940s. Pan Europa included Jean Cocteau's friend Paul Valery, and is currently directed by Otto von Hapsburg. They employ a Celtic cross as their insignia.

Other groups that were interested in seeing European unity were the Western intelligence agencies, especially British and American intelligence, who sought to build a pro-European network amongst militant Catholic and right-wing political groups. When the OSS (Office of Strategic Strategies), precursor of the CIA, was under the control of William Donovan, they attempted to infiltrate the Vatican and put priests in top positions on their payroll. They made use of Father Felix Morlion, founder of Pro Deo (For God), a European Catholic intelligence agency which the OSS funded and installed first in New York, then in the Vatican itself. They also made use of the Society of Jesuits, which had been involved in Catholic espionage for years.

In 1948, the same year that the Congress of Europe met at the Hague, the OSS became the Central Intelligence Agency. Immediately the

CIA began funding European political parties, particularly the Christian Democrats, in an attempt to manipulate European governments and pull them to the right. The following year, the ACUE (American Committee on a United Europe) was formed, and William Donovan was made its chairman. Allen Dulles, former head of the OSS in Switzerland, friend of the Von Moltke cousins and future head of the CIA, was Vice-President. The Director of the Council on Foreign Relations, and the future coordinator of the Trilateral Commission, George S. Franklin, was the Secretary. They even had another CIA agent, Thomas Braden, as their Executive Director. It was because of these men that the decision was made for the State Department to fund the European Movement. Following this, Joseph Retinger proceeded to collaborate with Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands and others to create the now infamous globalist think tank, the Bilderberg Group.

Meanwhile, the CIA busied itself funding organizations and newspapers all over Europe that were pro-Catholic and anti-Communist. A major recipient was Italy's Christian Democrat party, which had been started by the father of future Pope Paul VI, who was also on their payroll. He had been working as a spy and liaison for the OSS, then later the CIA, since during WWII. It has also been said that Pope John Paul II has been receiving weekly intelligence briefings from the CIA since 1978, although it is unknown whether that continues to occur given the Pope's current state of deterioration.

It was during the 1960s that the CIA began distributing funds to its favored groups through the Vatican's own bank. This was done with the help of a shadowy, pro-Catholic, anti-Communist Masonic lodge known as "P2", which allegedly had lodges not only in Italy, but also France, Portugal, Switzerland, the United States, Nicaragua, Bolivia, Paraguay, Argentina, and Venezuela. As author David Yallop has written:

"[P2] interlocks with a number of the military regimes of Latin America, and with a variety of groups of neo-Fascists. It also interlocks very closely with the CIA. It reaches right into the heart of the Vatican. The central common interest of all these elements is apparently a hatred and fear of Communism."

All of this came out in the Italian press when a massive banking scandal broke involving the official Vatican bank, Banco Ambrosiano, and P2. The main figures implicated were P2 members Michael Sindona (a high ranking official in the bank and P2's financier) and the lodge's Grand Master Licio Gelli. Gelli was a man with far-right viewpoints who, after the scandal broke, was found hanging from the Blackfriar's Bridge in

London in 1982, in a manner consistent with Masonic ritual.[17] It also led to the murder of an Italian investigator, Giorgio Ambrosoli, and later that of Michael Sindona himself, who was the chief suspect in the other two killings.

It is known that P2 was under the direction of an even more powerful organization, which one former member, Mino Pecorelli, named as being the CIA. (Pecorelli was murdered after making this acknowledgement.) But there is another possibility as well. Supposedly, “P2” is short for “Propaganda Due”, the meaning of which is not elaborated on. However, we have received one suggestion from an informant that “P2” simply means “Priory 2”, and that it is a break-off group of the Priory of Sion.

Certainly it is interesting to note that P2 began in the 1960s, just about four years after the “schism” within the Priory caused by Jean Cocteau’s new statutes. Perhaps P2 is made up of part of that group which never got reintegrated into the order after the schism was resolved. This idea is further corroborated by a bizarre book called *Scandals of the Prieure de Sion*, written under the pseudonym “Cornelius.”

Cornelius states unequivocally that the murder of Giorgio Ambrosoli was ordered by a well-known Italian politician who was also one of the senior dignitaries of the Priory of Sion. He states that both Michael Sindona and a number of banks in the US have been involved in questionable financial deals with the Priory of Sion. He says that the Priory was intimately involved with the Italian Mafia, and with P2. Another person Cornelius alleged to be involved was Cardinal Jean Danielou, who was, according to *The Messianic Legacy*, "the Vatican's chief spokesman at the time on clerical celibacy." He was found dead in a scene that involved a female stripper and a large amount of cash - purportedly killed by a heart attack. Interestingly, Danielou had been a friend of Jean Cocteau, and had made a Latin translation of his play, *Oedipus Rex*. Cornelius implicates Danielou in the financial transactions between the Vatican, P2, and the Priory of Sion, and intimates that the Cardinal's death was somewhat less than natural.

---

[17] (When initiated, the Masonic candidate takes an oath swearing his loyalty and secrecy, on penalty of ritualized murder such as this.)

Finally, Cornelius says that in 1981, Pierre de Plantard, having recently been elected Grand Master of the Priory, had a meeting two days later with P2 Grand Master Licio Gelli at a cafe called "La Tipia" in Paris. This just so happens to be the same place where Plantard insisted on meeting the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* for some of their interviews.

The Knights of Jerusalem and the Knights of Malta

When the P2 scandal broke in 1981, and Licio Gelli's property was raided, they discovered links between P2 and other organizations that were very highly ranked within the Vatican. These included a Vatican intelligence agency called "Opus Dei", which controls Vatican Radio, and another group that actually claims descent from the Knights Templar: the Sovereign Military Order of the Temple of Jerusalem. This order, which dates back at least to 1804, claims to have been created by the Templars' last Grand Master, Jacques de Molay, who purportedly drew up a charter prior to his execution which named his successor. They are a genuine continuation, they said, of the original order, and they were now dedicating themselves to "antiquarian interests." However, when the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* met with one of their representatives in 1982, and then did some research on their own, a much more complicated picture emerged.

The representative told them that they had just undergone a schism in which members of their group broke away to form their own, now headquartered in Switzerland. From this another group had spun off calling itself "Grand Prieure de Suisse", led by a man named Anton Zapelli, which made its headquarters in the Swiss city of Sion. This organization included a number of members who also belonged to the Grand Suisse Loge Alpina, and Zapelli had been named by one of the informants interviewed for *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* as being, “The real power behind the Prieure de Sion.” In their subsequent research, the authors came across internal documents from the Grand Prieure de Suisse. They dealt largely with two themes: international banking and European unification, specifically “the role of modern Templars in the reunification of Europe.”

If the ancient order of Templars lives on in the Sovereign Military Order of the Temple of Jerusalem, so too does their ancient rival, the Knights Hospitaller, live on in the Sovereign Military Order of the Knights of Malta. They were first organized as the Order of Saint John in Jerusalem in 1070, three decades before the Crusades began, to provide medical care for pilgrims to the Holy Land. Over the next 60 years they transformed themselves into an impressive military and financial power on par with the Knights Templar and the Teutonic Knights, both of whom they had an antagonistic relationship with. Even while the other two orders, which both practiced similarly “heretical” rituals, were being persecuted by the Church, the Hospitallers were favored by the Pope, and were given many of the Templars’ former holdings after their dissolution. Over the years they moved their headquarters from Cyprus to Rhodes, which, as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* describes, "they governed as their private principality." It was later transferred again to the Isle of Malta. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states that, "In the mid-sixteenth century, they were still one of the supreme military and naval powers of the Christian world, with strength and financial resources comparable to most kingdoms."

They were ousted from Malta by Napoleon in 1798, but reestablished themselves in Rome, taking on the name "the Knights of Malta" to avoid confusion with other organizations in Germany and Britain that were called "The Knights of Saint John", but were actually Protestant. They still held a considerable amount of political power as the world entered the twentieth century, and they were actually named as potential candidates to take control of Jerusalem after WWII. Today they maintain, from their seat in Rome, a prominent organization that spans the globe. Further, they are still recognized by international law as presiding over "an independent sovereign principality", as states *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*:

"The Grand Master is recognized as a head of state, with a secular rank equivalent to a prince and an ecclesiastical rank equivalent to a cardinal. The Order maintains formal diplomatic relations with a number of

countries, especially in Africa and in Latin America, and in those countries its ministers enjoy standard diplomatic privileges."

The leadership of the Knights of Malta is in no way democratically chosen. All members of the upper degrees must come from an aristocratic family with a coat of arms that is at least 300 years old. The membership includes not only high-ranking members of the Church, but also high-ranking members of international business and politics. Not surprisingly, they are deeply entangled with Vatican intelligence units, and are described in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* as being "one of the primary channels of communication between the Vatican and the CIA." Its membership is saturated with people from intelligence agencies the world over, and the American contingent is rather substantial. Among its ranks have stood CIA directors John McCone and William Casey, as well as Alexander Haig, Colin Powell, William Bennett, and William F. Buckley. CIA director William Colby was invited, but responded, "I'm a little lower key." Also among the Knights of Malta have been a number of members of the P2 lodge: Licio Gelli, Umberto Ortolani (Gelli's closest associate), Chiefs of the Italian Secret Service General de Lorenzo and General Allavena, General Giuseppe Santovito, once Chief of Italian Military Intelligence, and probably many others.

One of the Knights of Malta's primary activities in the last 20 years has been the fight against Communism in South and Central America. It is through them that the CIA has often funneled money to right-wing military groups in these areas to help them crush the left. As it just so happens, the one-time head of the Knights of Malta in the US, J. Peter Grace, also ran the Americares organization. This group was dedicated to the same right-wing cause. They are suspected of having funded the World Anti-Communist League with money provided by the Knights of Malta and, ultimately, the CIA.

Acknowledgement of a relationship between the Knights of Malta and the Priory of Sion came from Pierre Plantard himself, who admitted that a number of his order's members were also Knights of Malta. Abbe Ducaud-Bourget, the man who had brought Plantard into the order originally (and who has been cited by some authors as Grand Master of the Priory after Jean Cocteau), was Magistral Chaplain of the Knights of Malta for fourteen years.

A series of events surrounding some falsified documents which pertained to the present location of the Sauniere parchments convinced the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* that the Priory's relationship with the British and American intelligence network did indeed exist. It also led to yet another schism within the order. At one of the authors' many meetings with Pierre Plantard at La Tipia, he told them that this schism was caused by an "Anglo-American contingent" within the order who were trying to move the Priory's focus away from restoring monarchy in Europe and towards more practical and immediate goals. They were led to believe that this "Anglo-American contingent" consisted of spies from the CIA, MI5, and the Knights of Malta. Then he appeared to - almost - make an astounding proposition. As they described it:

"...M. Plantard paused and began to muse. There were, at present, two vacancies in the Order, he said reflectively. It would be a great advantage to have those vacancies occupied by 'foreigners' who would be sympathetic to the French and continental position. That would serve to counterbalance the influence of the 'Anglo-American contingent.' There was a long and pregnant pause. We said nothing. The conversation drifted to a different topic. But for a moment, it actually appeared as if M. Plantard had been about to offer us membership in the Order."

The offer was never accepted, however, and to my knowledge, the "Anglo-American contingent" was never defeated. At the authors' last meeting with Plantard, he expanded upon the Priory of Sion's political goals for the immediate future. He remarked, according to *The Messianic*

Legacy, that “Mitterand... had been a necessary stepping stone”, but, “had served his purpose, and was expendable.” He said that for some of the Priory’s members, their ultimate aim was a United States of Europe, to balance the power exercised by the Soviet Union and the United States. They also desired a larger “common market” of the Occident, which would include both Europe and the United States. About the involvement of the Vatican in this grand plan, Plantard said that Rome was “cooperating” in accordance with their “ongoing policy” on such matters, a policy “to which individual popes were bound.” Also, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, he said, had “caused quite a few ripples” within the Vatican.

Compared to the carefully-scripted trickles of information that they had received from the Priory thus far, Plantard was practically spilling his guts. A few weeks later, they learned why. They received a letter from him, addressed to the membership of the Priory, and dated two and a half months prior to the authors’ last meeting with him, stating that he was resigning not only his grand mastership, but his membership in the order. This was done “for reasons of health”, and “for reasons of personal and family independence.” Furthermore, his resignation was prompted by “certain maneuvers” made by “our English and American brethren”, and because of the numerous “false or falsified documents” about him that had been published "in the press, in books, and in duplicated pamphlets deposited in the Bibliotheque Nationale."

With Plantard's resignation, the Priory of Sion apparently went into hiding again. But the exposure of its mythos to pubic consciousness has caused the Priory of Sion's legend to expand exponentially in popularity. The primary reason is this: within the saga of the Priory, the Merovingians, the Grail, and Rennes-le-Chateau resides a mystique that all of us subconsciously relate to. Deep within or ancestral memory, we can all recall a time when the sacredness of certain bloodlines was innately understood, and the concept of a king as an incarnation of God needed no explanation. In our subconscious minds, we all know that there is a pattern to the events of history; that this is no random collection of occurrences, but rather, in many instances, the result of a highly-orchestrated plot perpetrated by the unseen hands of the elite. Within ourselves, we know that there must be some reason why the elite are who they are, and why they do what they do. Most of all, every one of us responds on an instinctive level to the religious and mythological symbolism, including the diabolical symbolism, employed by the Priory of Sion, which is the key to understanding their mysteries, as well as their grand political plan. In order to fully comprehend the enigma surrounding the Priory of Sion, we must begin by understanding their heretical religious beliefs.

Chapter Four: The Golden Age

"...When a stream is polluted it is necesary, if you are to find pure water, to go back to the source. It's the same with tradition - it only remains pure at its origin."

- Paul Le Cour, *The Age of Aquarius*

The Ancient Origins of Christianity

The membership list of the Priory of Sion and its related auxiliary orders is about as heterodox as one can imagine. It has included devote Catholics, Protestants, Christian heretics, occultists, atheists, even avowed Satanists and Luciferians, as well as adherents of some of the most extreme right and left-wing political causes of history. But despite their wide differences, they all seem to hold certain elements in common – namely an infatuation with the mythology of the Grail, and an insistence on the importance of certain royal bloodlines, most especially the Merovingian. The authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* determined that the Priory revered the Merovingians because they believed them to be descendants of Christ – carriers of his sacred royal blood, and guardians of the true teachings of Christ. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* implied that the true Christian church, perpetuated by Christ's offspring, held religious beliefs shockingly heretical when compared with the dogma of the Catholic Church. In short, they asserted that the heresies which the Catholic Church persecuted throughout the Middle Ages were in fact the True Church – the Church of the Holy Grail.

An essential part of the secret doctrine of the Grail is the belief in the humanness of Christ. When the Catholic Church deified Christ, they stripped him of all family connections. The Church established the doctrine of the "virgin birth" to disconnect Jesus from the genealogy of his father, Joseph, a descendant of King David, and for a while tried to maintain that the Virgin Mary had herself been conceived in the same manner, thus disconnecting Jesus from her side of the family as well. They tried to establish the *perpetual* virginity of Mary, thus claiming that Jesus had no biological brothers or sisters, and maintained that the many "brothers" of Jesus mentioned in the Gospels were either children of Joseph from a previous marriage, or merely "brothers" in spirit. They then insisted that Jesus had remained chaste his entire life as well. The numerous passages in the Bible proclaiming Jesus as "King of the Jews", "the son of David", and "the Messiah" (a title bestowed traditionally upon the rightful king of Judah) have all been held by the Church to be metaphorical. Christ's real kingdom is in Heaven, the Church has always maintained - not in Israel. Pilate referred to Jesus as "King of the Jews" *mockingly*, they say. After all, how could he literally be king when he had no ancestors, no father, no brothers, no wife, and no heirs? Thus began a smear campaign and a genocidal persecution that has continued for approximately 2000 years. This then is the real reason why the Church deified Christ – to hide his lineage and descent. This is also the reason why they squelched all knowledge of his wife, Mary Magdalene.

But at the same time, while the Grail church revered the historical figure of Christ as a flesh-and-blood human being, allowing him a dignity that the Roman church robbed him of, they also understood the significance of Christ on a very deep symbolic level. It is no secret that the imagery with which the Church presented Jesus is identical to that of earlier pre-Christian Sun gods. The Christian cross, and the many variations of it, are all based on earlier versions from ancient cultures, where it was used to symbolize the Sun. The haloes seen behind the heads of Christ, the saints, and the angels in Catholic art are an old motif that can be traced back to ancient Sumer, where it represented the crown of the Sun god. The crowns worn by royalty throughout the ages, a practice that goes back at least to Sumer, represent the same thing. Their use signified the concept that the king was an incarnation of the Sun god. Throughout Egypt, Sumer, and Greece, deified kings have been referred to as “sons of the Sun”, or “the son of God.”

In fact, every mythical detail of Jesus’ life is identical to the myths of ancient sun gods such as Tammuz, Krishna, Mithras, Prometheus, and many others, including being born of a virgin on December 25, and dying on a cross at Easter. Christmas and Easter were originally pagan holidays, and this mythical tale symbolized the “death” and “rebirth” of the Sun throughout the course of the solar year.

While it is generally agreed that the Roman church shamelessly grafted pagan elements into the story of Christ in order to convert pagans to their dogma, the Grail church also seemed to revere the ancient symbolism of Christ as an incarnation of the Sun god. His wife Mary Magdalene was likewise seen as an incarnation of the goddess Isis or Venus. It is believed that adherents of the Grail church in France paid homage to the figure of Mary Magdalene in the form of “Black Madonnas.” These are identical to traditional Catholic idols of the Virgin Mary, but are simply black in color, and this is believed to be veiled reference to Christ’s hidden, secretly revered consort. Statues of the Black Madonna can be found throughout France and in other areas of Europe as well, usually inside Catholic churches or cathedrals. It has been remarked that Catholic depictions of the Virgin Mary resemble depictions of Isis or Venus also, and that Black Madonnas appear to be an even more overt depiction of this goddess. It has been speculated by authors such as Margaret Starbird and Nicholas de Vere that Jesus and his wife were the high priest and priestess of a sex magic cult, in which they personified the god and goddess in sacred sex rites, and that Christian heretics later perpetuated these rites. Indeed, several authors have posited that the original cult lead by Christ practiced Hellenistic mystery rites that would have been considered totally heretical by the prevailing Jewish orthodoxy. This perhaps explains why Jesus was viewed by the scribes and priests as a sorcerer, as recorded in the Gospels and in other chronicles.

But the Grail church does not revere Jesus because he was merely a perpetuator of these rites and traditions. It is clear from the mythos of the Grail family that the blood is the key. Jesus is perceived not only as a symbolic representation of the Sun god, but as a literal "son of the Sun god" – a blood relative. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* attempts to explain the significance placed on the bloodline of Jesus by chalking it up to the fact that he was the rightful king of the Jews, and a descendant of King David, who in the Bible was anointed by God himself. But what would Jewish heretics care for King David? It may have been necessary for Jesus to assert his descent from King David in order to boost his claim for the kingship of Israel. And perhaps his descendants could use this to claim a right to control the Holy Land, which apparently he did. But the importance placed on Jesus' bloodline, and on the sacredness of his blood, cannot be credited solely to a connection with King David. There has to be another reason why the blood of Jesus, and thus the blood of his Merovingian descendants, was considered divine.

The Gods of the Sea

A most important clue pointing towards an explanation of this lies in the story of the Quinotaur, the "beast of Neptune" who purportedly raped the mother of Meroveus, the first Merovingian king. Thus insemination provides Meroveus with an ancestry which is partially human and partially divine. For the Quinotaur appears to be a Frankish permutation of the myth of the fish-god Dagon, who was known by many other names throughout history and throughout the world.

Dagon was a sea god worshipped throughout the ancient Middle East, described in the Bible as the patron god of the Philistines, and a constant source of antagonism for the Hebrew god. The root word "Dag" means "fish", and Dagon was portrayed in ancient bas reliefs as a creature part-man and part-fish. This could indeed be the source of the mythical Quinotaur creature, as well as the source of the Merovingian King Dagobert's name. "Dagon" is also the root of the word "dragon", and thus it is interesting that Dagobert's name is sometimes spelled "Dragobert." Dragons were originally viewed by the ancients a being sea creatures, such as the most famous biblical dragon, Leviathan. Albert Pike writes in *Morals and Dogma* that:

> *"The Dragon was a well-known symbol of the waters, and of great rivers; and it was natural that... the powerful nations of the alluvial plains... who adored the dragon or the fish, should themselves be symbolized under the form of dragons."*

Though often shown as a bearded merman with a Phrygian cap, as he is in Assyrian and Babylonian reliefs, other depictions show Dagon as a man wearing a fish for a hat, with the mouth on top of his head, pointing up, and the tail of the fish hanging down his back. These depictions have been said by many to be the source of the fish-like miter now worn by popes and other Catholic priests.

Dagon was said to have been a being who came out of the sea during the day to teach primitive people the arts of civilization: including writing, agriculture, architecture, astronomy, metalsmithing, winemaking, shipbuilding and navigation. At night, after dispensing his wisdom, Dagon would return to the sea, only to come once again the next morning. Because of this and other reasons, Dagon was perceived as an incarnation of the Sun, dispensing wisdom as the Sun dispenses light, and Dagon's name became the root of our modern word "day." Indeed "Dag", or "Tag", still means day in many languages.

Dagon seems to be quite similar to a figure named by the historian Berosus as "Oannes the Annedotus", whom he lists as one of the early Chaldean kings – a god-king. According to Berosus:

"In the first year there appeared, from that part of the Elyrian Sea which borders upon Babylonia, an animal endowed with reason, called Oannes, whose whole body (according to Apollodorns) was that of a fish ; that under the fish's head be had another head, with feet also below, similar to those of a man, subjoined to the fish's tail. His voice and language was articulate and human, and a representation of him is preserved even unto this day. This being was accustomed to pass the day among men, but took no food and he gave them an insight into letters and arts of all kinds. He taught them to construct cities, to found temples, to compile laws, and explained to them the principles of geometrical

knowledge. He made them distinguish the seeds of the earth, and showed them how to collect the fruits; in short, he instructed them in everything which could tend to soften manners and humanize their laws. When the sun set, this being, Oannes, retired again into the sea, and passed the night in the deep, for he was amphibious. After this there appeared other animals like Oannes."

However, from the Chaldean depictions of Oannes, it appears that he was simply a man wearing a fish costume, and there followed after him a race of god-kings called the Annedoti that were all fish-gods, sea-kings, and dispensers of wisdom.

These stories are later versions of the older Sumerian myths. Sumeria, the original Mesopotamian empire, is the oldest civilization acknowledged by historians, and in many ways was more advanced then the civilizations that followed it. We are told that this was the birthplace of writing, architecture, agriculture, astronomy, math, writing, etc. However, their civilization seems to have arrived almost overnight, with no previous stages of development having yet been discovered. One obvious explanation for this is that their civilization might have come from somewhere else. The Sumerians must have been taught these arts by an outside race that conquered and ruled over them. Since Sumeria itself is the oldest civilization of which there is accepted historical proof, this means that there must have been a previous civilization, from which these conquering kings came, the remains of which were mostly destroyed, perhaps through some terrible cataclysm. Indeed, this is exactly what the Sumerian legends tell us.

In the Sumerian story, Oannes is called Anu, and the race of god-kings he spawns is called the Annunaki, a pantheon of gods including Anu's sons Enlil and Enki. In this version, apparently the gods had their own civilization here on Earth, but grew tired of working for their own livelihoods. So they created the race of mankind to work as slaves for them, with Enki being largely responsible for the task. But humans multiplied so rapidly that they became a nuisance. Enlil in particular was annoyed, and devised a series of cataclysms, culminating in a massive flood, to rid the Earth of the problem.

Enki and Enlil had been involved in an ongoing rivalry pertaining to seniority. They were both sons of Anu, king of the gods, and both had a claim to the inheritance of this crown. As author Nicholas de Vere describes in his book *The Dragon Legacy*:

> *"Enki was the younger son of Anu's senior wife, Antu. Enlil was the elder of the two sons, but was born to Anu's second or junior wife, Ki.*

In Annunaki culture, the female was the source of sovereignty, and by rights Enki… was therefore the rightful heir to his father.”

As the rightful heir, and as the original father of the human race, Enki objected to his brother’s decision to destroy humanity, a usurpation of his authority. He therefore conspired to help a remnant of humanity escape the catastrophe, by enlisting a single man to build a large ship, loading it up with his family, and with an assortment of animal life. After the Flood, Enki, along with other gods who took his side in the conflict with his brother, helped those humans who had survived by teaching them the arts of civilization, enabling them to build their own societies. And he passed on his royal, divine seed through this remnant as well, creating a race of human kings who carried the bloodline of the king of the gods.

Understandably, then, Enki became one of the chief deities of the subsequent Sumerian, Akkadian, Babylonian, and Chaldean civilizations. Also called “Ia” or “Ea”, he was known as the “Lord of the Earth”, “Lord of the Flood”, “Lord of the Deep Waters”, and “Lord of That Which is Below.” His seat of rule was believed to be the “Absu” – the Abyss, described as the waters beneath the Earth. Ancient bas reliefs show him seated in the Absu, holding pots overflowing with water and fish. A temple dedicated to him in the Babylonian city of Eridu – a staged ziggurat called the "Esaggla" or "lofty house" – was the site of ceremonial rites to Enki that featured water as their main focal point. The name "Ia" brings to mind the Hebrew "Jah", or "Jehovah." Indeed, certain characteristics of Enki were apparently appropriated into the character of Jehovah by the Hebrews, such as him being portrayed as the true father of humanity, and as the one who saved humanity from the Flood. However, certain characteristics of Enlil were incorporated into Jehovah as well, such as having caused the Flood in the first place. Like Jehovah, Enlil was a storm god, king of the heavens, and the element of air. It is with the figure of Jehovah that the legacy of Enlil now resides, and I believe that they are essentially the same figure.

The Divine Battle

In Greek myth Ouranos (believed by scholars to be the Greek version of Oannes, or the Roman Uranus) fathered a race of primordial gods called the Titans. As author Edith Hamilton describes it:

"The Titans, often called the Elder Gods, were for untold ages supreme in the universe. They were of enormous size and of incredible strength… They most important was Cronus, in Latin Saturn. Cronus…

was the Lord of the Universe, with his sister-queen Rhea. Finally one of their sons, the future ruler of heaven and earth, whose name in Greek is Zeus and in Latin Jupiter, rebelled against him… There followed a terrible war between Cronus, helped by his brother Titans, against Zeus with his five brothers and sisters – a war that almost wrecked the universe."

When it was over, Zeus was victorious, and had the Titans imprisoned within the Earth, upon the infernal Mount Tartarus:

> *"Bound in bitter chains beneath the wide-wayed earth,*
> *As far below the Earth as over Earth is Heaven…*
> *…Tartarus, the brazen-fenced"*

This war was won partially because one of the Titans' own, Prometheus, sided with Zeus and assisted him, although he later regretted it. And it was Prometheus who, in the Greek view, was largely responsible for creating the human race. Says Hamilton:

"He fashioned them in a nobler shape than the animals, upright like the gods, and then he went up to heaven, to the sun, where he lit a torch and brought down fire."

In this way, a divine spark of light from Heaven was passed down from one of the gods to enlighten man's consciousness. And in a more literal since, fire became the basis of a metalsmithing technology on which man was able to build his civilization. Zeus, however, was not happy with this, and punished Prometheus by sending him to the center of the Earth and chaining him to Tartarus as well. As he did this, he lectured Prometheus:

"Such fruit you reap for your man-loving ways.
A god yourself, you did not dread God's anger,
But gave mortals honor not their due."

In another Greek story, Prometheus again comes to man's aid, thus time helping his human-god hybrid son Deucalion and his wife, Pyrrha, to escape a global deluge. Once again, Zeus (the Greek equivalent of Enlil or Jehovah) brought about this flood because human beings were multiplying too rapidly. Prometheus, savior of mankind, warned Deucalion ahead of time, and had him build an ark, in which they floated to safety atop Mount Parnassus. In the Biblical story of Noah, when Noah finally comes down from the ark, he builds an altar on the mountain and performs a ceremony giving thanks to god for being spared. In the story of Deucalion and Pyrrha:

> *"They found a temple all slimy and moss-grown, but not quite in ruins, and there they gave thanks for their escape and prayed for help in their dreadful loneliness."*

It is then that they heard a voice instructing them to throw stones behind their backs, which they did, and as each stone landed, a human sprang up in its place. The Greeks believed that this is where our current human race came from – a race of stone people.

However, as with all cultures, there are many different versions of Greek myths. In Plato's *Critias*, he tells the story of the empire of Atlantis, which he had heard from the philosopher Solon, who in turn had heard it from an Egyptian sage while visiting that land. So the story is really a late Egyptian one viewed through late Greek eyes. But within the extraordinary details of this fable we glimpse an inherent truth – a memory of something that may have actually happened.

The Egyptian sage described an island continent ruled by god-men, with a magnificent civilization that colonized neighboring lands, creating a vast, mighty empire that greatly outshone that of Zeus and the Olympian gods of Greece. Plato reports that the Egyptian told Solon:

"Many great and wonderful deeds are recorded of your state in our histories. But one of them exceeds all the rest in greatness and valour. For these histories tell of a mighty power which unprovoked made an expedition against the whole of Europe and Asia, and to which your city put an end. This power came forth out of the Atlantic Ocean, for in those days the Atlantic was navigable; and there was an island situated in front of the straits which are by you called the Pillars of Heracles; the island was larger than Libya and Asia put together, and was the way to other islands, and from these you might pass to the whole of the opposite continent which surrounded the true ocean; for this sea which is within the Straits of Heracles is only a harbour, having a narrow entrance, but that other is a real sea, and the surrounding land may be most truly called a boundless continent.

Now in this island of Atlantis there was a great and wonderful empire which had rule over the whole island and several others, and over parts of the continent, and, furthermore, the men of Atlantis had subjected the parts of Libya within the columns of Heracles as far as Egypt, and of Europe as far as Tyrrhenia. This vast power, gathered into one, *endeavoured to subdue at a blow our country and yours and the whole of the region within the straits; and then, Solon, your country shone forth, in the excellence of her virtue and strength, among all mankind. She was pre-eminent in courage and military skill, and was the leader of the Hellenes. And when the rest fell off from her, being compelled to stand alone, after having undergone the very extremity of danger, she defeated and triumphed over the invaders, and preserved from slavery those who were not yet subjugated, and generously liberated all the rest of us who dwell within the pillars.*

But afterwards there occurred violent earthquakes and floods; and in a single day and night of misfortune all your warlike men in a body sank into the earth, and the island of Atlantis in like manner disappeared in the depths of the sea. For which reason the sea in those parts is impassable and impenetrable, because there is a shoal of mud in the way; and this was caused by the subsidence of the island."

According to Plato, Atlantis was ruled over by god-men, the descendants of the sea-god Poseidon and a mortal woman, Cleito. It was for her and their family together that Poseidon literally sculpted the island from clay, dividing it up into ten portions, each given to one of their ten sons (five pairs of twins) to rule over. As Plato relates:

“Poseidon fell in love with her and had intercourse with her, and breaking the ground, inclosed the hill in which she dwelt all round, making alternate zones of sea and land larger and smaller, encircling one another; there were two of land and three of water, which he turned as with a lathe, each having its circumference equidistant every way from the centre, so that no man could get to the island… He himself, being a god, found no difficulty in making special arrangements for the centre island, bringing up two springs of water from beneath the earth, one of warm water and the other of cold, and making every variety of food to spring up abundantly from the soil. He also begat and brought up five pairs of twin male children; and dividing the island of Atlantis into ten portions, he gave to the first-born of the eldest pair his mother's dwelling and the surrounding allotment, which was the largest and best, and made him king over the rest; the others he made princes, and gave them rule over many men, and a large territory. And he named them all; the eldest, who was the first king, he named Atlas, and after him the whole island and the ocean were called Atlantic. To his twin brother, who was born after him, and obtained as his lot the extremity of the island towards the Pillars of Heracles, facing the country which is now called the region of Gades in that part of the world, he gave the name which in the Hellenic language is

Eumelus, in the language of the country which is named after him, Gadeirus."

The empire they created was grander than any that had existed before, or since:

"Now Atlas had a numerous and honourable family, and they retained the kingdom, the eldest son handing it on to his eldest for many generations; and they had such an amount of wealth as was never before possessed by kings and potentates, and is not likely ever to be again, and they were furnished with everything which they needed, both in the city and country. For because of the greatness of their empire many things were brought to them from foreign countries…"

Plato then went on to describe, in magnificent detail, the culture, empire, agriculture, architecture and religion of Atlantis. Not surprisingly, theirs was a sea and water-based religion devoted to the worship of their father Poseidon. It was their descent from him that allowed them to live as gods and rule as kings. But over time, their human nature got the best of them. Plato writes:

"For many generations, as long as the divine nature lasted in them, they were obedient to the laws, and well-affectioned toward the gods, who were their kinsmen... but when the divine portion began to fade away in them, and became diluted too often, and with too much of the mortal admixture... human nature got the upper hand, then, they being unable to bear their fortune, became unseemly, and to him who had eyes to see, they began to appear base, and had lost the fairest of their precious gifts; but to those who had no eye to see the true happiness, they still appeared glorious and blessed at the very time when they were filled with unrighteous avarice and power. Zeus, the god of gods, who rules with law, and is able to see into such things, perceiving that an honorable race was in a most wretched state, and wanting to inflict punishment on them, that they might be chastened and improved, collected all the gods into his most holy habitation, which, being placed in the center of the world, sees all things that partake of generation. And when he had called them all together he spake as follows:"

It is at this point that Plato's text breaks off abruptly, and was never completed. However, we know what fate befell Atlantis. Zeus sparked a war against its divine-human sea kings, and somehow this war resulted in the sinking of Atlantis. As Plato had stated earlier in the text:

“…the consequence is that, in comparison of what then was, there are remaining in small islets only the bones of the wasted body, as they may be called, all the richer and softer parts of the soil having fallen away, and the mere skeleton of the country being left."

The Origins of Civilization

The most essential text for understanding the myth of Atlantis is Ignatius Donnelly’s 1882 classic, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World.* It starts out by analyzing Plato’s account of Atlantis both mythologically and archeologically. It explores myths of catastrophic floods from cultures all over the world, showing them all to be different versions of the same story. According to Donnelly, the myth upon which these are based is that of the destruction of Atlantis. He argues that in ancient times, far more ancient than recorded history, there was a highly advanced global culture made up of Atlantis and its colonies, a primordial “golden age” that preceded our current epoch, and was destroyed by a cataclysm of worldwide proportions, analogous to the biblical Deluge. It was from this Atlantean culture that all of our languages, symbols, customs, arts and sciences were derived. During their heyday, writes Donnelly, the Atlanteans went about spreading these advancements throughout the primitive world. They created civilizations on every continent and, according to Donnelly, it was the kings of Atlantis that provided the first mythical god-kings reported in the histories and legends of virtually every ancient culture on earth. For proof that there was a vast and highly advanced global civilization in ancient times, Donnelly shows the similarities of plant and animal species across widely separated continents, many of these species having been domesticated and cultivated by man for so many thousands of years that no trace of the original "wild species" can be found anywhere on Earth. He also shows that species of animals and plants which are absent on certain continents - for instance, in the Americas - can nonetheless be found depicted in the artwork of these continents' natives, proving that there was a time when these species did exist there, or else, at least, the people of that continent acquired knowledge of them through trade. South American Indian tribes have carvings, for example, of elephants and horses, neither of which are native to the region. Donnelly also shows similarities between the gods of various world cultures, arguing that these gods were, in fact, based on the actual historical kings of Atlantis. Donnelly's book was indeed the first of its kind, and all subsequent books on Atlantis have been based on his.

Another interesting aspect of Donnelly's work is his insistence that the kings of Atlantis are the same as the Titans, and the fall of the Titans the same as the fall of Atlantis. This, he asserts, is one and the same as the biblical deluge, as well as the "fall man" from the "Garden of Eden." All of these, he insists, are mythological traces of the same ancestral memory hidden in the antediluvian mists, beneath the waves that cover a long-dead era – the golden age of the gods.

Donnelly's identification of the Titans with the Atlantean kings does make some sense. In both stories, the mighty kings of a magnificent empire are crushed by Zeus, who ignites a cataclysmic, earth-shaking war. The Titans were sent down to the center of the Earth; the Atlanteans sank down to the bottom of the ocean. And Atlas, the foremost king and namesake of Atlantis, is named in other Greek myths as being one of the Titans. But that would put Poseidon in the position of being the same figure as Ouranos.

Indeed, the two deities are both very similar, both being sea gods. Poseidon is the patron deity of navigators, while Ouranos was credited as being the inventor of the mariner's compass. Ouranos, or Oannes, has been identified with Dagon, also called "Daonos", and Poseidon was also called "Poseidaon." Also, in another legend, Poseidon fathered a race called the “Tritons” who were described as “fish-men”, and who some think are the same as the Titans.

However, it is Kronos who seems to be remembered as the great, and later fallen, king of Atlantis. It was also quite literally believed by historians at one time that after he was deposed from the throne of Atlantis, rather than being imprisoned in the center of the Earth, or dying in a Flood, Kronos simply moved to Italy, then inhabited by primitive folk, and spread the Atlantean civilization to them, initiating a golden age there. Ignatius Donnelly states:

“In the first place, Berosus tells us that the god who gave warning of the coming of the Deluge was Chronos. Chronos, it is well-known, was the same as Saturn. Saturn was an ancient king of Italy, who, far anterior to the founding of Rome, introduced civilization from some other country to the Italians. He established industry and social order, filled the land with plenty, and created the golden age of Italy. He was suddenly removed to the abodes of the gods. His name is connected, in the mythological legends, with ‘a great Saturnian continent’ in the Atlantic ocean, and a great kingdom which, in the remote ages, embraced Northern Africa and the European coast of the Mediterranean as far as the peninsula of Italy, and ‘certain islands in the sea’, agreeing, in this

respect, with the story of Plato as to the dominions of Atlantis. The Romans called the Atlantic ocean 'Chronium Mare', the sea of Chronos, thus identifying Chronos with that ocean. The pillars of Hercules were also called by the ancients 'the pillars of Chronos.'"

Donnelly then quotes *Murray's Mythology*:

"Saturn, or Chronos, came to Italy. He presented himself to the king, Janus, and proceeded to instruct the subjects of the latter in agriculture, gardening, and many other arts then quite unknown to them: as for example, how to tend and cultivate the vine. By such means he at length raised the people from a rude and comparatively barbarous condition to one of order and peaceful occupation, in consequence of which he was everywhere held in high esteem, and in the course of time, was selected by Janus to share with him the government of the country, which thereupon assumed the name of Saturnia – a land of seed and fruit. The period of Saturn's government was sung in the latter days by poets as a happy time when sorrows were unknown, when innocence, freedom, and gladness reigned throughout the land in such a degree as to deserve the title of the Golden Age…"

Donnelly connects Saturn’s “golden age” to the ancient pagan festival of Saturnalia, which begins more or less around the same time as the Winter Solstice, Christmas, and St. Dagobert’s Day:

“The Roman Saturnalia was a remembrance of the Atlantean colonization. It was a period of joy and festivity; master and slave met as equals; the distinctions of poverty and wealth were forgotten; no punishments for crime were inflicted; servants and slaves went about dressed in the clothes of their masters; and children received presents from their parents or relatives. It was a time of jollity and mirth; a recollection of the Golden Age. We find a reminiscence of it in the Roman ‘Carnival.’”

There is a great deal of confusion about the exact familial relations within the royal houses of Olympos and Atlantis. Even the Greek accounts vary, but when you begin to compare them with the mythologies of other cultures, it becomes even more confusing. It is certain that the closest thing we have to “antediluvian history” is in the legends of the world. Details get blurred horribly. We read from Donnelly that:

"…In the Phoenician mythology, Chronos raised a rebellion against Ouranos, and, after a great battle, dethroned him. In the Greek legends it is Zeus who attacks and overthrows his father, Chronos."

And elsewhere:

"Poseidon, the first king of Atlantis, according to Plato, was, according to Greek mythology, a brother of Zeus, and a son of Chronos."

It seems likely that in addition to the simple fact that we are dealing with legends that have been passed around through various cultures for upwards of 9000 years, surviving a devastating global cataclysm, some of the variations in the details of these stories are due to the effect of propaganda. If Zeus overthrew Kronos, he and his descendants may have reigned over Atlantis for some time before the disaster that befell it. According to Donnelly, this was indeed the case, and that is why Poseidon, his son, ruled it at the time of the disaster. It thus would have been Zeus and his subjects who reported the fall of Atlantis, and what had preceded it. The usurping kings undoubtedly took on some of their predecessors' legends of heroism as if they themselves had enjoyed such adventures. Such confusion occurred *within* family lines as well, with the son taking on the mythical attributes of the father. Thus titles like “Lord of the Earth”, “Lord of the Four Quarters”, “Lord of the Abyss”, “Lord of the Flood”, etc., were passed on from generation to generation, and could be taken over by rivals, as in the case of Zeus and Kronos. The deeds, mythical associations, and symbolic correspondences (such as with the Sun or the Moon, the sea, dragons, serpents, fish, bulls, goats, etc.) were passed along as well. All of this leads to the confusion and seeming incongruity we find when trying to compare and interpret ancient history and mythology.

However, regardless of this, all of these gods thus described seem to be representations of the same mythos. All are associated with the sea, with the creation of a vast empire based on the sea, with navigation, and with the spreading of human civilization. All of them are linked with the Flood, and with the revival of civilization after the Flood. All are also said to have passed their divine seed onto humans, who ruled as kings after the Flood.

The Flood is a tale common to almost all cultures throughout the world, and in so many versions, the overpopulation of humans was the cause of the Flood. In many versions, too, the god synonymous with Enki, Oannes, Dagon or Kronos is responsible for rescuing humanity from the Flood and helping them rebuild their civilization.

Many similar versions of this story have been told about other gods worshipped throughout the ancient world. For instance, there is the story from Hindu culture of the god Vishnu, who took the form of a fish, and warned a figure named Manu about an impending flood. The story can be read in the "Catapartha Brahmana" of the *Rig-Veda*, translated by Max Muller:

"One morning water for washing was brought to Manu, and when lie had washed himself a fish remained in his hands, and it addressed these words to him.

'Protect me, and I will save thee.' 'From what wilt thou save me ?' 'A deluge that will sweep all creatures away; it is from that I will save thee.' how shall I protect thee ?' The fish replied, While we are small we run great dangers, for fish swallow fish. Keep me at first in a vase; when I become too large for it, dig a basin to put me into. When I shall have grown still more, throw me into the ocean; then I shall be preserved from destruction.' Soon it grew into a large fish. It said to Manu, 'The very year I shall have reached my full growth the Deluge will happen. Then build a vessel and worship me. When the waters rise, enter the vessel, and I will save thee.'

After keeping him thus, Manu carried the fish to the sea. In the *year indicated Manu built a vessel and worshipped the fish. And when the Deluge came he entered the vessel. Then the fish came swimming up to him, and Manu fastened the cable of the ship to the horn of the fish, by which means the latter made it pass over the Mountain of the North. The fish said, ‘ I have saved thee; fasten the vessel to a tree, that the water may not sweep it away while thou art on a mountain and in proportion as the waters decrease thou shalt descend.*

Manu descended with the waters, and this is what is called the descent of Manu on the Mountain of the North. The Deluge had carried away all creatures, and Manu remained alone.”

Another derivation of this mythos is found in the Syrian goddess “Atargatis”, another half-fish, half-human deity believed to have come from the sea to teach man wisdom and the arts of civilization. Atargatis is thought by some to be the inspiration for the goddess Ashtoreth, Astarte, or Ishtar worshipped throughout the ancient world, also depicted as half-fish, and as the consort of Dagon. Atargatis is, interestingly, sometimes depicted as hermaphroditic – possessing both male and female sex organs. In his book, Ignatius Donnelly quotes an unnamed author from a treatise called “On the Syrian Goddess”, which connects Atargatis (here identified as the same as the Greek goddess Hera, wife of Zeus) with the Greek story of Deucalion and the Flood:

"The generality of people tell us that the founder of the temple was Deucalion Sisythes - that Deucalion in whose time the great inundation occurred. I have also heard the account given by the Greeks themselves of Deucalion; the myth runs thus: The actual race of men is not the first, for there was a previous one, all the members of which perished. We belong to a second race, descended from Deucalion, and multiplied in the course of time. As to the former men, they are said to have been full of insolence and pride, committing many crimes, disregarding their oath, neglecting the rights of hospitality, unsparing to suppliants; accordingly, they were punished by an immense disaster. All on a sudden enormous volumes of water issued from the earth, and rains of extraordinary abundance began to fall; the rivers left their beds, and the sea overflowed its shores; the whole earth was covered with water, and all men perished. Deucalion alone, because of his virtue and piety, was preserved alive to give birth to a new race. This is how he was saved: He placed himself, his children, and his wives in a great coffer that he had, in which pigs, horses, lions, serpents, and all other terrestrial animals came to seek refuge with him.

He received them all; and while they were in the coffer Zeus inspired them with reciprocal amity, which prevented their devouring one another. In this manner, shut up within one single coffer, they floated as long as the waters remained in force. Such is the account given by the Greeks of Deucalion.

But to this, which they equally tell, the people of Hieropolis add a marvelous narrative: That in their country a great chasm opened, into which all the waters of the Deluge poured. Then Deucalion raised an altar, and dedicated a temple to Hera (Atargatis) close to this very chasm. I have seen it; it is very narrow, and situated under the temple. Whether it was once large, and has now shrunk, I do not know; but I have seen it, and it is quite small. In memory of the event the following is the rite accomplished: Twice a year sea-water is brought to the temple. This is not only done by the priests, but numerous pilgrims come from the whole of Syria and Arabia, and even from beyond the Euphrates, bringing water. It is poured out in the temple and goes into the cleft, which, narrow as it is, swallows up a considerable quantity. This is said to be in virtue of a religious law instituted by Deucalion to preserve the memory of the catastrophe, and of the benefits that he received from the gods. Such is the ancient tradition of the temple."

Donnelly then connects the character of "Deucalion", here called "Deucalion Sisythes", with the Sumerian Flood hero, Xisuthros. And it is interesting that this temple is in Heiropolis, now in Turkey, the country where the supposed location of Mount Ararat is found.

Atargatis/Astarte is also believed to be the same figure as the Egyptian Isis, another goddess associated with the teaching of wisdom, and also depicted at times as having the tail of a fish. Here husband Osiris appears to be the Egyptian manifestation of this same primordial, civilizing god-king figure that he have already identified in other cultures. And in this version of events, the goddess is very much his partner and equal. As Albert Pike relates in *Morals and Dogma*:

"To Osiris and Isis, it was held, were owing civilization, the discovery of agriculture, laws, arts of all kinds, religious worship, temples, the invention of letters, astronomy, the gymnastic arts, and music; and thus they were the universal benefactors. Osiris traveled to civilize the countries which he passed through, and communicate to them his invaluable discoveries. He built cities, and taught men to cultivate the Earth. Wheat and wine were his first presents to men. Europe, Asia and Africa partook of the blessings which he communicated, and the most

remote regions remembered him, and claimed him as one of their great gods."

Osiris, like so many gods of the ancient world, was a sun god, and associated with serpents, a symbol of the sun. The solar/serpent symbolism is interchangeable with that of the fish and the dragon. Osiris' brother Set (called "Typhon" by the Greeks) was a serpent-dragon, and the two had a war in which Osiris ended up getting chopped into fifteen pieces. These pieces were then dumped in the Nile River. However, Isis came along and collected all of the pieces, and reconstructed his body. The only part that was missing was his penis, which had been swallowed by a fish. Isis has a substitute penis crafted and impregnated herself with the god Horus. This same god archetype has been traced to the Norse sun-god Woden, also associated with serpents, and with the spreading of wisdom. His wife, Freya, is believed to be the same as the goddess Isis, and is likewise represented as being part-fish. Woden, also called "Odin", is said to have descended from Heaven to give his people civilization. He is credited with having invented the Norse alphabet, the runes, as well as the cabalistic system of magic that goes along with them. The Norse myths compiled in the epic poem called *The Eddas* tell us that Odin created the first kingdom on Earth, in the city of “Urd”, very similar to the prime Sumerian city of “Ur.”

Historians have long agreed that the city of Ur is most likely the original source of Sumerian civilization, and thus, of the civilizations that followed. The prefix “Ur” even means “primeval” in German. According to authors such as Donnelly and L.A. Waddell, this city was begun by the same colonizing race of god-kings I have discussed. Their race was known as the “Ur”, “Ar”, or “Ir”, and the Sumerian pictograph denoting this syllable is none other than the pentagram, also called the “plough sign” by Sumerians, to whom the word had a number of translations. The prefix “aur” means “light” in many languages, and so it is interesting that these people were called “shining ones.” Donnelly and Waddell claim that they are none other than the “Aryans”, a name given to a race of colonizing civilizers known to have spread their culture and language (Indo-European, once known as “Indo-Aryan”) all over Europe, the Indies, and the Middle East. The name of the nation Iran, as well as the name of Mt. Ararat, comes from this. It should not be surprising then that the pentagram is referred to in modern occult texts as “the sign of the Aryan race.”

Donnelly believes that the Atlantean empire not only spread their civilization far and wide through colonization, but that after the Flood which destroyed their homeland, they fled to the far-flung places of the earth spreading civilization to those who had survived the cataclysm. One of the titles these god-kings were known under, according to L.A. Waddell, was "Kad", "Gad", or "Khat."[18] Says Waddell, this title meant literally "King of the World", and was written in Sumerian pictographs as a double-barred cross, just like the Cross of Lorraine associated with the Angevin kings of France, descendants of the Merovingians. The sea-faring navigators of Phoenicia were also known as "Kads". Indeed, Waddell believes that the word "God" is rooted in this word, as well as many words in modern languages that begin with "Cad" and relate to sea creatures. The title "Kad" was used by the most famous Sumerian king, Sargon the Great, whose royal capitol, which he had constructed, was "Agade", rumored by the Sumerians to have been a dwelling place of the gods. Agade, or "Accad", was the source of "Akkadia", the name of the post-Sumerian empire that dominated Mesopotamia. This syllable can in fact be found all over maps of the ancient world. The pillars of Hercules were, at one time, called "the Firth of the Gads", and were located nearby cities named "Gades" and "Agadir." Ignatius Donnelly connects this syllable to Atlantis:

---

[18] An individual I spoke to at Rennes-le-Chateau, who was writing a book on the language of Atlantis (which he believed to be the root of all languages) mentioned the ancient word "Khat", and said that it was the root of the word "Cathar."

“Plato tells us that the dominion of Gaderius, one of the kings of Atlantis, extended ‘toward the pillars of Heracles (Hercules) as far as the country which is still called the region of Gades in that part of the world.’ Gades is the Cadiz of today, and the dominion of Gaderius embraced the land of the Iberians of Basques, their civilization taking its name from a king of Atlantis, and they themselves being Atlanteans.”

The words “Akkad” and “Ar”, I believe, may have been the roots of the Greek word “Arcadia”, the name of a region in Greece which housed, according to Greek myths, an “idyllic paradise ruled over by the Greek gods.” For this reason, the word “Arcadia” has been a code word among occultists for centuries, denoting the “golden age” of the long-distant past, when, occultists believe, the gods ruled kingdoms on Earth. The gods who ruled Arcadia were depicted in Greek myths as shepherds. It is interesting, then, that the god-kings I have examined in this chapter were often known under titles denoting them as “shepherds” of the people. Poussin’s painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, definitely alludes to many hidden secrets, which I will soon explore.

It is worth noting, too, that the mythical Eden-like kingdoms of other mythologies also have names that may have been derived from

"Agade." The name "Asgarde" is given to the kingdom of the gods in Norse mythology, and in certain Eastern traditions, the "Lord of the Earth" is believed to reside in a subterranean kingdom known as "Agartha", its name so amazingly similar to the name of the goddess Atargatis. Another root word that appears to be important to our study is "Merou." From Donnelly we read:

"Lonormany insists that the human race issued from Upa-Merou… Theopompus tells us that the people who inhabited Atlantis were the Meropes, the people of Merou."

And earlier, Donnelly says:

"For the inhabitants of the Isle of Cos, the hero of the Deluge was Merops, son of Hyas, who there assembled under his rule the remnant of humanity preserved with him."

Interestingly, Eastern traditions tell of a primordial mountain of the gods, the "Axis of the World", named "Meru." Donnelly believes the name of the ancient people known as "Amorites" comes from this word also. And of course, the prefix "mer" means "sea" in Europe. Thus the word "Merovingian" means "Vine [or bloodline] of the Sea." It could also mean "Vine [or bloodline] of Atlantis."

Perhaps this explains Middle Eastern myths relating to an angel named "Marut" who descended on a golden rope from Heaven to teach people the arts of civilization. The same is said of the god "Mura" in Southern Afghanistan; the Mesopotamian god "Martu" (also called "Amurru"); and the Northern Arabian god "Marnas" (also called "Mura and believed to be the same as Dagon). Ignatius Donnelly also suggests:

> *"Do the laws which control the changes of languages, by which a labial succeeds a labial, indicate that the Mero or Merou of Theopompus, the name of Atlantis, was carried by the colonists of Atlantis to South America… and became in time Perous or Peru?"*

Indeed, many of these ideas seem to have been transplanted to South America. For there, we find tutelary deities almost identical to those of Dagon, etc., being worshipped as the chief gods. Moreover, they are depicted as bearded, fair-haired white men, sometimes with bodies that are half-serpent or half-fish. The depictions of these gods show them clearly with Caucasoid features not native to South America, and facial hair, which native tribesmen do not naturally have. This indicates that, just as Donnelly and Waddell have suggested, the survivors of Atlantis – the race of god-men recorded in Eastern cultures – also colonized and spread their civilization to the Native American tribes. It was this race of gods whom the natives were awaiting, and whom they believed had returned, with European explorers arrived on their shores. Unfortunately for them, they were sorely mistaken.

The detailed stories of these “gods” told by the natives leave no doubt that this was the case. For instance, the Incas believed that the enormous pyramid complex in the mountain city of Cuzco (made of stones so huge that scientists still are not sure how it was built) was in fact constructed overnight by a white-fleshed giant with a half-fish body named “Viracocha”, whose name means “foam of the sea.” He supposedly was able to bring down “fire from the heavens”, which was used to make the stones which built the complex at Cuzco “light as a cork”, so that he was able to build it quickly and easily. Like Dagon, Viracocha is credited with imparting all of the arts of culture to the Native Americans.

Another version of this figure is the Incan deity Manco Capac, who is described in *The Royal Commentaries of the Incas* by Garcilaso de la Vega,:

“After the waters of the Deluge had subsided, a certain man appeared in the country of Tiahuanaco... In the life on Manco Capac, who was the first Inca, and from whom they began to boast themselves children of the Sun... they had an ample account of the Deluge. They say that in it perished all races of men and created things insomuch as the waters rose above the highest mountain peaks in the world. No living thing survived except a man and a woman who remained in a box and, when the waters subsided, the wind carried them... to Tiahuanaco, where the creator began to raise up the people and nations that are in the region...”

The exact same figure is named in by other tribes as “Noach Yum Chac”, “Quetzalcoatl”, “Con Tiki”, “Kukulkan”, and “Votan.” I should note that Quetzalcoatl was credited by the Aztecs with building their massive pyramids, and with inventing their incredibly complex calendar, as Kukulkan is credited with inventing the Mayan calendar. He was half-serpent, and was sometimes known by just the last syllable of his name, “atl”, the South American word for “water” - an obvious connection to Atlantis. I should note also that “Noach Yum Chac” sounds like “Noah”; “Con Tiki” and “Kukulkan” could both be linked to the Biblical name of “Cain”; and “Inca” sounds like the Sumerian god “Enki”, as well as “Enoch”, the grandfather, according to the Bible, of Noah.

L.A. Waddell believed (and he is neither the first not the last to say so) that these same civilizing kings (whom he identifies as "Sumerian" or "Sumer-Aryan") morphed into the mythology of Jehovah, Satan, and the patriarchs of the Old Testament. In his work he extensively compared the names, titles, and mythological elements of all ancient kings, gods, and god-kings, including the biblical patriarchs, and he believed that the same main pantheon of god-kings was recorded in all of these myths. For instance, the Sumerian, Babylonian, and Chaldean kings lists all contain, at their beginning, a number of kings whose reigns were said to have lasted for tens of thousands of years. The names and attributes of these kings, Waddell found, link up with the names and attributes of gods worshiped by these same cultures, and by other cultures as well, including the characters in the Hebrew Bible. For instance, the Chaldean kings list contains, in this order, names similar to Abraham ("Irarum"), Isaac ("Asahk"), Jacob ("Akhab"), and Judah ("Gudia"), four of the main patriarchs of the Bible.

The Legacy of Cain

Waddell believed that one biblical figure in particular had a far-reaching effect on civilizations all over the world: the vilified figure of Cain. According to the Bible he was Adam's first-born son, and was said to have gone bad when he murdered his brother, Abel. But instead of being executed for his sin, he was exiled "to the land of Nod." Waddell identifies the first Sumerian king, Ukusi, with Adam, and the second Sumerian king, Qin, with Cain. Qin was said by the Sumerians to have built the cities of Erech, Lagash, Ur, Agade, and Babylon. He is also said to have taught the Sumerians agriculture, especially the growing of grain, and the brewing of alcohol. Cain's name actually means "grain" in Hebrew, and *The Book of Genesis* tells us that the source of Cain's jealousy of Abel was that God had accepted Abel's fleshy sacrifices, and rejected Cain's sacrifices of fruits and grain.

Waddell also identifies Cain with another biblical figure: Nimrod. Waddell says that one of Cain's titles was "Lord of the Tree of Life", which, in Sumerian/Babylonian language, was written as "Nimarrud", or sometimes "Maru or "Marud." (This may link up with the word for "sea" – "mer" – and the word for Atlantis – "Merou" – discussed earlier.) Nimrod was, historically, a Babylonian king, and there is very little in the biblical record to connect him with Cain. Instead of being the son of Adam, he is one of the descendants of Noah's son, Japheth, and instead of being a "tiller of the soil", as Cain was, Nimrod was called "a mighty hunter before the Lord." However, Nimrod was credited with building Babel, Erech, and Accad, Qin's cities, and was even believed by historians to have built the Tower of Babel. Also, the "Nim" in Nimrod's name can mean "fish." Many of Nimrod's associations seem to have contributed to the mythos surrounding Cain, Dagon, Oannes, etc. Nimrod's historically recorded wife, Queen Semiramis, was associated with fish symbolism, as well as with doves, and was labeled the "Queen of Heaven." Thus she seems to have contributed a lot to the image of the goddess Ishtar/Isis/Astarte, as well as the idolatry of the Virgin Mary.

The Sumerian king Qin was succeeded by his son, Enu, whom Waddell identifies with "Enoch." There are two Enochs in *Genesis*, and one is the son Cain supposedly had after his expulsion from Eden. In *Genesis 4:17* it states:

"And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch."

This city is identified by Waddell, and by other authors, with the Babylonian city of Erech, also said to have been built by Nimrod. This, then would be more evidence linking Nimrod with Cain.[19] Waddell believes that the names "Erech" and "Enoch" are interchangeable. "Erech" is now the root of the name of the country of "Iraq." Waddell further identifies Enoch/Erech with the Greek figure of "Erechtheus", or "Erichthonius." He was, in Greek mythology, the father of Cecropes, the first king of Attica. Edith Hamilton describes "Cecropes" as being half-dragon from the waist down. She writes that "He had no human ancestor, and he himself was only half-human." Cecropes is known to have created some offense to the god Poseidon that caused the god to punish the Earth with "a disastrous flood." However, Hamilton also says of Cecropes:

"Most writers say that these events happened before the Deluge, and that the Cecropes who belonged to the famous Athenian family was not the ancient half-dragon, half-human creature but an ordinary man, important only because of his relatives. He was the son of a distinguished king…

His father, King Erechtheus of Athens, was usually said to be the king in whose reign Demeter came to Eleusis and agriculture began."

---

[19] Enoch City, by the way, is now a city in Arizona, built by the Mormons, who believe that "Enoch City" is synonymous with "Zion" or "the Kingdom of God."

What is more, Hamilton concurs with the opinion that Erechtheus is the same figure as that of Erichthonius, said to be:

"…the son of Hephaestus, reared by Athena, half-man, half-serpent. Athena gave a chest, in which she had put the infant, to the three daughters of Cecropes, forbidding them to open it. They did open it, and saw in it the serpent-like creature… When Erichthonius grew up he became the king of Athens."

Waddell believed that both Enochs in *Genesis* were in fact the same person, and that Enoch is also the same figure personified as the biblical Noah – that is, that it was he who piloted the ark during the Flood. Waddell stated with certainty that "Enoch… is regarded by biblical authorities as being identical with Noah of the Flood myth." Waddell demonstrated that the names of both Enoch and Noah have both been written as "Noach", and also as "Hanuk", in ancient texts. This theory is seconded by author Joseph Reiss in *Language, Myth, and Man*. Furthermore, Chaldean legends of the Flood do involve the Sumerian king Enu. Enu's son was "Ia-Patesi" – ("Priest-King of Ia"). Waddell points out that "Ia-Patesi" could easily be transliterated into the name of Noah's son in the Bible: “Japheth.” In addition, Waddell found an example of a title being applied to King Enu which translated as “Shepherd of the Vessel.”

This brings an interesting twist to certain legends surrounding Enoch, stating that he was a wise prophet and scribe, who inscribed a stone tablet with the wisdom of the ancient world, which was carried on board Noah’s Ark. This same tablet has been equated by occultists with the famed “Tablet of Hermes”, also inscribed with pre-diluvian wisdom from the age of the gods, and thus Enoch is equated with the Greek Hermes, or the Roman Mercury. Hermes was worshipped in Egypt as Thoth, the god credited with the invention of writing, and with the giving of hidden gnosis. This same wisdom of Thoth, Hermes, or Enoch was sometimes said to have been inscribed onto two pillars, one of stone, and one of metal. Such pillars were said by Plato to have been placed in the Temple of Poseidon in Atlantis. The two pillars of Enoch play an important role in the rites of Freemasonry, and similar pillars were said to have stood outside of Solomon’s Temple. The pillars of Enoch were apparently made in anticipation of the Flood, and were meant to ensure that some record of the knowledge of the old world would pass into the new. It is from these pillars that, some assert, a great deal of known history is derived. As Albert Pike writes in *Morals and Dogma*:

“Manetho extracted his history from certain pillars which he discovered in Egypt, whereupon inscriptions have been made by Thoth… in the sacred letters and dialect: but which were after the Flood translated from that dialect into the Greek tongue, and laid up in the private recesses of the Egyptian temples. These pillars were found in the subterranean caverns near Thebes, and beyond the Nile, not far from the sounding statue of Memnon, in a place called Syringes; which are described to be certain winding apartments; made, it is said, by those who were skilled in ancient rites; who foreseeing the Deluge, and fearing lest the memory of their ceremonies should be obliterated, built and contrived vaults, dug with vast labor, in several places.”

But if Enoch’s tablet/pillar was, as we are led to believe, the sole record of antediluvian history, then such a record could also be edited, misrepresented, and faked, either after Enoch’s death, or during his life, if he was either compelled to lie under duress, or seduced into willfully lying, by people with political motives for spreading propaganda.

There certainly does seem to have been some tampering with the records of Enoch’s birth. *The Book of Genesis* claims that when Abel was killed, and Cain was exiled, Adam had another son: Seth, to whom he passed on his inheritance. It is this figure, Seth, whom Enoch the scribe is supposedly descended from, according to Judeo-Christian tradition. But we know that Cain's own son was also called Enoch, and that he named a city after him. Now notice the peculiar similarity between the descendants of Cain that are given in the Bible (the last biblical record of Cain's activities, by the way), and those of Seth:

Cain's descendants are: Enoch, Irad, Mahujael, Methusael, Lamech..

Seth's descendants are: Enos, Cainan, Mhalaleel, Jared, Enoch, Mathuselah, Lamech.

Clearly, the descendants of Seth are just a muddled version of the descendants of Cain. This leads one to believe that Enoch's genealogy was altered to conceal his descent from Cain. The name "Cainan" has been added in as a hint of this, and two of Enoch's descendants, "Mahujael" and "Irad", are listed as his ancestors instead. Whoever compiled this list was definitely trying to cover something up.

The Jehovahite Cover-Up

Given that several generations of men (people said to have lived several hundred years each)were easily moved around in the Bible's pre-Flood narrative, it is not hard to believe that the Flood itself could have been inserted out of sequence, and thus that Enoch really could have piloted the Ark, instead of his supposed great-grandson, Noah. Remember that Eden and Atlantis are purportedly the same.[20] That must mean that Eden's rightful rulers were at one time overtaken and expelled, just as the Titans were by Zeus. And recall that Zeus is likened to the Sumerian Enlil, or the biblical Jehovah, the "Jove" of the Romans. Adam and Eve's expulsion would most likely symbolize this, and the Deluge which followed would be the same as the sinking of Atlantis. The Flood would have erased all knowledge of the previous history, including the history of the previous dynasty of kings "the elder gods." When the new dynasty ("the younger gods"), headed by Zeus/Jehovah and his chosen rulers took over, they would have rewritten the records to suit their own ends. They would have also gone to great lengths to destroy any true records that may have survived, or to silence anyone who may have known better.

---

[20] In one version of the Grail romance, *Perceval li Gallois*, the Grail castle is named "Eden."

We know that Cain's parents were expelled from Eden/Atlantis, and settled elsewhere. And we know that Cain was later exiled from that place too, purportedly for killing his brother Abel (whom L.A. Waddell believes is actually the ancient god-king Baal, a son of Enlil/Jehovah). He then apparently traveled around the world, building cities and spreading civilization to primitive people. Enoch did likewise, apparently following in his father's footsteps, and the cities they built, as well as accounts of the deeds from the people whose lives they touched, can be found in countries and cultures the world over. But as for the biblical record, none of this is reported beyond the exile of Cain, and the building of one city named after his son Enoch. Cain's life and descendants are almost entirely omitted from the rest of the biblical narrative, and the grandest thing Enoch is said to have done was to "walk with God." For this, he was rewarded by being taken to "Paradise" while still alive, something that does not happen to many other men in the Bible. But note how the description of the event is phrased in *Genesis 5:24*: "And Enoch walked with God: and he was not; for God took him."

If by "God" they mean Jehovah/Enlil/Zeus, who took over Eden/Atlantis unlawfully, and who was the enemy of Enoch's father, Cain, then he was not taken to Heaven as a reward for his good behavior. Perhaps he was kidnapped, or somehow seduced or hoodwinked into going back to Atlantis. Perhaps he had inscribed his wisdom onto tablets which were meant to survive a deluge which he foresaw. On these tablets could have been written the true history of what had happened in Atlantis. His kidnappers, wishing to alter that history, thus took control of the person who made that record, and were able to change that record. This included creating a false genealogy of Enoch that made him one of their own, not a child of Cain. And while they recorded the story of the Flood, it was highly garbled, and placed out of sequence. The new historians began their history with post-Flood figures, but grafted onto them the legends and titles of pre-Flood figures. Thus is is almost impossible now to determine which is the true chronology, or the true genealogy, of these god-kings and their deeds.

It is interesting to note that *Genesis* hints repeatedly that Adam and Eve were neither the first nor the only human beings on Earth. Obviously there were women for Cain and Seth to marry. And if Cain was a "builder of cities", obviously someone had to occupy those cities. Prior to the creation of Adam and Eve in Chapter 2 of *Genesis*, the text states in Chapter 1, verse 27 that "God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." In the second chapter, he creates Adam in paradise, and after a while he creates Eve by using material in Adam's body. That is not the same creation story as the one from the first chapter. They seem to be two separate creations. And in the first, God tells them to “Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the Earth.” This seems to indicate that the Earth have been depopulated, perhaps because of the Flood, and needed to be repopulated. In other words, that this first creation story is placed out of sequence, and describes something that really occurred *after* the Flood. There are many parts of *Genesis* that seem to be similarly misplaced.

The Luciferian Legacy

It would appear that the Garden of Eden story is, in part, an allegory for Atlantis. The way Plato describes Poseidon as having constructed Atlantis sounds very similar to the way in which the construction of Eden by “God” is described in *Genesis*. Both appear to have been artificially constructed, as there is nothing natural about the way they were formed. Both also appear to be, in a sense, a petrie dish for divine-human breeding experiments. Recall that in Plato’s Atlantis story, Poseidon sired a race of kings for Atlantis with a mortal woman, Cleito, and bestowed kingship on his firstborn son, Atlas. Thus was the place named Atlantis, and its people Atlanteans. In *Genesis*, God creates a race of kings to rule over Eden. We can perhaps see a phonetic connection between Eden (or "Edin", as it is spelled in Sumerian) and Adam (or Adami, as the race of man is called in Sumerian), as well as a connection to Atlantis, or "Ad-lantis." The title "Ad" means "Lord" in Sumerian", as does the Egyptian title "Adon", and the Hebrew "Adonai", a word used for "God" in the Bible.

Adam and Eve's "fall from grace" on Eden, and subsequent loss of the kingdom (for that is what their expulsion symbolizes) was precipitated by their defiance of God. They were told specifically not to eat of the "Tree of Knowledge", which was guarded by a "serpent", believed by modern theologians to be "Satan." But they *did* eat from that tree, and they then obtained "knowledge of good and evil." Afterwards, Adam and Eve, who until that point had been living without clothes, suddenly became aware of their nakedness, and clothed themselves. They were shortly expelled from the Garden of Eden as punishment, and Eve was further punished by being cursed with "the pains of childbirth", which have purportedly haunted women ever since. (Even menstruation has been blamed on Eve's sin.) Soon after this, Adam and Eve had reportedly "known" each other, and had two sons, Cain and Abel. But Cain was the eldest.

However, there are apocryphal versions of this tale that tell it quite differently. They state that Cain is in fact the son of the serpent, who is named as Samael. This would mean that the "knowledge" which Eve obtained was *carnal knowledge*. She then shared this "knowledge" with Adam. This would explain why they were suddenly aware of their "nakedness." They had just learned what their generative organs were for, and afterwards, they naturally wished to keep them covered. Eve was pained with childbirth afterwards because she had just been impregnated by Samael. Since the serpent is called "Satan" today, and "Satan", is believed, is related to the name of Saturn, or Kronos, it is clear that Cain was fathered by Kronos, or Satan. Author Nicholas de Vere elaborates, referring us to the Sumerian version of the tale. He concurs that the story of the battle between Enki and Enlil is the Sumerian legends is the same as the battle between Zeus and Kronos in the Greek legends, or Jehovah and Satan in the Hebrew. He refers to this pre-diluvian race of gods as the "Dragon race", and states that:

"The story is repeated in the Greek tale of Zeus' hatred of Mankind and the war for supremacy and control of man waged between the elder gods, the Titans…and the Olympians, lead by Zeus.

It is repeated again in the tale of the war between Satan and Jehovah. In all these stories it is the son of the elder queen who is the rightful heir, and this is Enki-Samael-Prometheus-Satan, the friend, savior, and supporter of mankind.

Enlil or Zeus-Jehovah further objected to the idea of investing in man the right to kingship and self-rule, as this was, by tradition, the sole prerequisite of the Annunaki alone. A compromise was reached… and it was decided that an Annunaki queen would incubate a human ovum fertilized by Enki or Samael-Satan. The resulting child would be the first king or queen of the race of men, being mostly Annunaki. Several attempts were made at producing a suitable child by adopting varying permutations of the Annunaki-human interaction. Samael inseminated a Bijo woman, resulting in the birth of Adam...

The second experiment was between Enki-Samael and Eve, his daughter. The child they produced was Cain, who was mated to Lilith Lulluwa, the pure-bred Annunaki daughter of Lilith the Beautiful and Samael.[21] *To Lilith Lulluwa, Cain and their sacred offspring was given… the Tiara of Dragon (not moral) kingship from the hand of their father*

---

[21] This character of Lilith, who in cabalistic traditions was the lover of Adam before Eve was made, has been said by some to be the namesake of the word "lily", which denotes a type of flower that has been considered sacred since ancient times. The Old Testament makes numerous references to the "Lily of the Valley", which symbolizes the goddess. It seems likely that the royal device known as the "fleur-de-lys", which was originally associated with the Merovingians, is named after the flower of Lilith

Enki-Samael, the rightful overlord of the Gods, whilst Adam and his children were still considered by Enlil to be serfs. However, upon them the usurping Enlil conveyed his own kingship without the authority of the council of the Dragon Gods, the Annunaki. This he did in an attempt to gain support from humanity for his illegitimate claim to the leadership of the council…

Prometheus the Titan is the "elder god." He is Enki, later called Satan. Therefore the two stories, originating from a common source, attest to the idea that the holy, Draconian, otherworldly origin of the blood of kings ultimately derives from Satan or Samael-Enki, and Lilith. It does not come from their rival, the usurper Jehovah-Zeus or Enlil, and the race of Adam from whom is derived the origin of the later Tinker Kings, the false monarchies…"

So Cain was the first *rightful* human king, according to De Vere, carrying the divine royal blood of his father, Satan, Saturn, or Kronos, the true King of the World, and by right, of Atlantis, or Eden. But when Kronos and Cain were both exiled, they went about civilizing the rest of the world, which was full of primitive peoples, and he and his descendants became their kings. De Vere believes that Cain's name is even the source of the word "King", and there are words in other languages, such as

"Khan" in the East, which mean exactly the same thing. This is why the names of Cain and Enoch show up in the lists of both gods and kings of cultures all over the world, and in their place-names as well. Being exiled from Eden may have been part of what saved Cain's royal race. Ignatius Donnelly tells us:

> *"The race of Cain lived and multiplied far away from the land of Seth, in other words, far away from the land destroyed by the Deluge. Josephus, who gives us the primitive traditions of the Jews, tells us that 'Cain traveled over many countries before he came to the land of Nod.' The Bible does not tell us that the race of Cain perished in the Deluge. 'Cain went out from the presence of Jehovah'; 'he did not call on his name; the people that were destroyed were the 'sons of Jehovah.'"*

So it was supposedly the race of Adam and his son Seth, the sons of the usurper Jehovah-Zeus, who died in the Flood, not the sons of Cain? Plato tells us that the kings of Atlantis, just prior to their "fall", and the destruction of Atlantis, had allowed their half-human, half-divine royal blood to become ignoble by breeding outside of their race with normal mortals. They became grotesque, and their behavior tyrannical. This is the reason why their race was exterminated via the Flood. This is the same story told in so many mythologies, where the cause of the Flood is, in some way or another, the miscegenation of a royal-divine race and a mortal one – breeding a grotesque and tyrannical race of giants that need to be exterminated.

Donnelly tells another pertinent story:

> *"Mr. George Smith, in the Chaldean account of the Creation deciphered from the Babylonian tablets, shows that there was an original race of men at the beginning of Chaldean history, a dark race… who were called Ad-mi, or Adami, they were the race 'who had fallen', and were contradistinguished from 'the Sarku', or 'light race.' The 'fall' probably refers to their destruction by a deluge, in consequence of their moral degradation and the indignation of the gods."*

But in the distorted record compiled by the so-called descendants of Seth, they blamed the cause of the Flood on the tainting of the pure line of Seth by the descendants of Cain. Albert Pike states:

> *"Cain slew his brother Abel, and went forth to people parts of the Earth with an impious race, forgetters and defiers of the true God. The other descendants of the common father of the race intermarried with the*

daughters of Cain's descendants: and all nations preserved the remembrance of that division of the human family into the righteous and impious, in their distorted legends of the wars between the Gods, and the Giants and Titans. When, afterward, another similar division occurred, the Descendants of Seth alone preserved the true primitive religion and science, and transmitted them to posterity in the ancient symbolical character on monuments of stone: and many nations preserved in their legendary traditions the memory of the columns of Enoch and Seth."

In the apocryphal *Book of the Cave of Treasures*, Adam and his children are shown as living upon a lofty, holy mountain. When Adam dies, after the murder of Abel by Cain, Adam's body is placed inside a very special tomb within this mountain called "the Cave of Machpelah", or "the Cave of Treasures" (the name of a real monument in Jewish legend which has been located near Jerusalem). After Adam's burial, it is then that Cain and his descendants are exiled, but not to some faraway location. Rather they are sent to the plains below the mountain. As the text states:

"And after the families and peoples of the children of Seth had buried Adam, they separated themselves from the children of Cain, the murderer. And Seth took Anosh, his firstborn, and Kainan, and Mahlalail,

and their wives and children, and led them up into the glorious mountain where Adam was buried; and Cain and all his descendants remained below on the plain where Cain slew Abel."

Generations later, when Anosh (one of the falsified ancestors of Enoch) is dying, he makes his descendants swear an oath not to interbreed with the Cainites:

"… and he prayed over them and commanded them, and spake unto them, saying, 'I will make you to swear by the holy blood of Abel that not one of you shall go down from this mountain to the plain, nor into the encampment of the children of Cain, the murderer; and ye shall not mingle yourselves among them. Take ye good heed unto this matter, for ye well know what enmity hath existed between us and them from the day whereon Cain slew Abel.' And he blessed Kainan, his son, and commanded him concerning the body of Adam, that he should minister before it all the days of his life, and that he should rule over the children of his people in purity and holiness."

But sometime later, they break their oath, and the results are disastrous:

“And lasciviousness and fornication increased among the children of Cain, and they had nothing to occupy them except fornication--now they had no obligation [to pay] tribute, and they had neither prince nor governor--and eating, and drinking, and lasciviousness, and drunkenness, and dancing and singing to instruments of music, and the wanton sportings of the devils, and the laughter which affordeth pleasure to the devils, and the sounds of the furious lust of men neighing after women. And Satan, finding [his] opportunity in this work of error, rejoiced greatly, because thereby he could compel the sons of Seth to come down from that holy mountain. There they had been made to occupy the place of that army [of angels] that fell [with Satan], there they were beloved by God, there they were held in honour by the angels, and were called ‘sons of God’, even as the blessed David saith in the psalm, ‘I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you sons of the Most High.’

Meanwhile fornication reigned among the daughters of Cain, and without shame [several] women would run after one man. And one man would attack another, and they committed fornication in the presence of each other shamelessly. For all the devils were gathered together in that camp of Cain, and unclean spirits entered into the women, and took *possession of them. The old women were more lascivious than the maidens, fathers and sons defiled themselves with their mothers and sisters, sons respected not even their own fathers, and fathers made no distinction between their sons [and other men]. And Satan had been made ruler (or prince) of that camp. And when the men and women were stirred up to lascivious frenzy by the devilish playing of the reeds which emitted musical sounds, and by the harps which the men played through the operation of the power of the devils, and by the sounds of the tambourines and of the sistra which were beaten and rattled through the agency of evil spirits, the sounds of their laughter were heard in the air above them, and ascended to that holy mountain.*

And when the children of Seth heard the noise, and uproar, and shouts of laughter in the camp of the children of Cain, about one hundred of them who were mighty men of war gathered together, and set their faces to go down to the camp of the children of Cain. When Yared heard their words and knew their intention, he became sorely afflicted, and he sent and called them to him, and said unto them, 'By the holy blood of Abel, I will have you swear that not one of you shall go down from this holy mountain. Remember ye the oaths which our fathers Seth, and Anosh, and Kainan, and Mahlalail made you to swear.' And Enoch also said unto them, 'Hearken, O ye children of Seth, no man who shall transgress the *commandment of Yared, and [break] the oaths of our fathers, and go down from this mountain, shall never again ascend it.' But the children of Seth would neither hearken to the commandment of Yared, nor to the words of Enoch, and they dared to transgress the commandment, and those hundred men, who were mighty men of war, went down [to the camp of Cain]. And when they saw that the daughters of Cain were beautiful in form and that they were naked and unashamed, the children of Seth became inflamed with the fire of lust. And when the daughters of Cain saw the goodliness of the children of Seth, they gripped them like ravening beasts and defiled their bodies. And the children of Seth slew their souls by fornication with the daughters of Cain. And when the children of Seth wished to go up [again] to that holy mountain, after they had come down and fallen, the stones of that holy mountain became fire in their sight, and having defiled their souls with the fire of fornication, God did not permit them to ascend to that holy place. And, moreover, very many others made bold and went down after them, and they, too, fell."*

Shortly afterwards, the Deluge comes. Although it is not specifically linked to the interbreeding of the Cainites and the Sethites, the connection is certainly implied. The biblical version of this saga can be found in *Genesis 6*:

"And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.

There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown."

It is uncertain whether the "giants" were the same as the sons of God, or if they were the same as the "mighty men of renown." For the Hebrew word that has been translated as "giants" is "Nephilim", which also means "those who were cast down", and thus it has been thought that the "sons of God" are the same as the Nephilim – that is, that they were fallen angels. Others identify the "Nephilim" with the progeny of the "sons of God", for that imagine that, when angels bred with humans, genetic deformities caused by the mixing of divine and human blood produced monstrous giants. However, the text does appear to be distinguishing between several different races: (1) the giants, Nephilim, or "those who were cast down"; (2) the "sons of God"; (3) the "daughters of men." However, we must remember that everything in the Bible is a muddled, distorted, and misremembered record of something, which has further been greatly mistranslated and misinterpreted.

At any rate, it is immediately after this story that "God" becomes frustrated with the "wickedness" of mankind, and the Flood narrative begins, with a distinct connection implied between the interracial/interspecies mating of the sons of God with the daughters of men. It also seems that the Lord made good on his promise to shorten the lifespan of man to 120 years. Prior to the Flood, the ages of the biblical patriarchs at death push the 1000-year mark. But after the Flood, the ages of the patriarchs at death gets gradually shorter.

The apocryphal text known as *The Book of Enoch* is a lengthy work written sometime between 2 BC and 3 AD. It deals entirely with this episode of divine-human miscegenation, and the Flood that followed. It states explicitly that the "sons of God", were angels, called "the Watchers" in this book, and that the offspring they produced were giants. It portrays this miscegenation as being an act of defiance against God, and hints that this was perhaps the spark of the "war in Heaven" of *The Book of Isaiah*, in which a third of God's angels, led by Lucifer, were cast out of

Heaven for defying God. Now in *The Book of Enoch*, the defiant angels are quite aware that their transgression might bring about divine punishment from God, and so they swear an oath to one another before they begin, promising to go through with the act:

"It happened after the sons of men had multiplied in those days, that daughters were born to them, elegant and beautiful. And when the angels, the sons of heaven, beheld them, they became enamoured of them, saying to each other, Come, let us select for ourselves wives from the progeny of men, and let us beget children.

Then their leader Samyaza said to them; I fear that you may perhaps be indisposed to the performance of this enterprise; And that I alone shall suffer for so grievous a crime.

But they answered him and said; We all swear; And bind ourselves by mutual execrations, that we will not change our intention, but execute our projected undertaking.

Then they swore all together, and all bound themselves by mutual execrations. Their whole number was two hundred, who descended upon Ardis, which is the top of mount Armon.

That mountain therefore was called Armon, because they had sworn upon it, and bound themselves by mutual execrations."

"Mount Armon" is also called "Mt. Hermon", and it has been said to mean "Mount of the Curse", because the angels took their oath, and thus cursed themselves, upon that mountain. This, I believe, is connected to the name of the god "Hermes", who was apparently the Greek equivalent of the figure of Enoch.

As states previously, the progeny produced by the angels turned out to be monstrous giants, who destroyed the earth with their ravenous appetites, and warred against men:

"And the women conceiving brought forth giants, Whose stature was each three hundred cubits. These devoured all which the labor of men produced; until it became impossible to feed them; When they turned themselves against men, in order to devour them; And began to injure birds, beasts, reptiles, and fishes, to eat their flesh one after another, and to drink their blood. Then the earth reproved the unrighteous."

But this was not the only sin of the angels. They also sinned against God when they, at this time, began teaching mankind certain knowledge that God had apparently forbidden them to have:

“Moreover Azazyel taught men to make swords, knives, shields, breastplates, the fabrication of mirrors, and the workmanship of bracelets and ornaments, the use of paint, the beautifying of the eyebrows, the use of stones of every valuable and select kind, and all sorts of dyes, so that the world became altered.

Impiety increased; fornication multiplied; and they transgressed and corrupted all their ways. Amazarak taught all the sorcerers, and dividers of roots: Armers taught the solution of sorcery; Barkayal taught the observers of the stars, Akibeel taught signs; Tamiel taught astronomy; And Asaradel taught the motion of the moon, And men, being destroyed, cried out; and their voice reached to heaven.”

Another quote from *The Book of Enoch* demonstrates this amply. Referring to the iniquity and rebellion that caused God to bring about the Flood, Enoch tells Noah:

"They have discovered secrets, and they are those that have been judged; but not thou, my son. The Lord of Spirits knows that thou are pure and good, free from the reproach of discovering secrets."

The "secrets" taught by the angels, which God apparently did not want man to know, include both the secrets of sorcery, and also the basic arts and sciences of civilization. Clearly, "God" was deliberately keeping mankind in an enslaved, ignorant state, and these angels wanted to teach these secrets to mankind, presumably out of love for their children, so that their descendants could thrive. The motivation for this, however, was more than just altruistic, as we shall see. It was a political move, really. The angels who mated with humans, and who taught them this forbidden knowledge, did so because it gave them an advantage against Jehovah, with whom they were struggling for seniority in Heaven. Passing their lineage onto humans gained them allies, and it secured heirs for royal titles and positions of power which Jehovah was trying to control. And passing on these “secrets” empowered them, so that they could stand on their own without any need of help from Jehovah.

The actions of these angels are most definitely portrayed in *The Book of Enoch* as an act of rebellion against Jehovah. And the punishment he metes out is dire indeed:

“Again the Lord said to Raphael, Bind Azazyel hand and foot; cast him into darkness; and opening the desert which is in Dudael, cast him in there. Throw upon him hurled and pointed stones, covering him with darkness; There shall he remain for ever; cover his face, that he may not see the light. And in the great day of judgment let him be cast into the fire.”

Interestingly, even though the instigator of the sexual crimes committed by the angels is said to be Samyaza, the teaching of secrets was instigated by Azazel. So Jehovah decided to lay the blame most heavily upon him. *The Book of Enoch* quotes “God” as saying:

“All the earth has been corrupted by the effects of the teaching of Azazyel. To him therefore ascribe the whole crime.”

As for the “giants” born of angels and men, Jehovah decides to bring about the Flood in order to rid the Earth of them. But he also decides to thin their population as much as possible first, by sending his angels to instigate violence amongst the giants, so that they kill each other off.

“To Gabriel also the Lord said, Go to the biters, to the reprobates, to the children of fornication; and destroy the children of fornication, the offspring of the Watchers, from among men; bring them forth, and excite them one against another. Let them perish by mutual slaughter; for length of days shall not be theirs.”

Then the Watchers and their children are to be cast into the pit under the earth, where they shall suffer and await the Final Judgment:

“To Michael likewise the Lord said, Go and announce his crime to Samyaza, and to the others who are with him, who have been associated

with women, that they might be polluted with all their impurity. And when all their sons shall be slain, when they shall see the perdition of their beloved, bind them for seventy generations underneath the earth, even to the day of judgment, and of consummation, until the judgment, the effect of which will last for ever, be completed.

Then shall they be taken away into the lowest depths of the fire in torments; and in confinement shall they be shut up for ever. Immediately after this shall he, together with them, burn and perish; they shall be bound until the consummation of many generations."

Interestingly, it is hinted in *The Book of Enoch* that Enoch himself was a human-angel hybrid. His birth is described thusly:

"She … brought forth a child, the flesh of which was white as snow, and red as a rose; the hair of whose head was white as wool, and long; and whose eyes were beautiful. When he opened them, he illuminated all the house, like the sun; the whole house abounded with light."

Noah's father Lamech is concerned that this is not his biological offspring. He goes to his father Methuselah, and says:

"I have begotten a son unlike to other children. He is not human, but resembling the offspring of Heaven, is of a different nature, being altogether unlike us. His eyes are bright as the rays of the sun; his countenance glorious, and he looks not as if he belongs to me, but to the angels."

In this story, Enoch is taken up to Heaven, speaks to the angels, and is forewarned about the Flood. He then passes the information on to his descendant, Noah. In the text, it is clear that the cause of the Flood involves a shift of the Earth's axis. The book states that "In those days Noah saw that the earth became inclined, and that destruction approached." However, it is unlikely that anyone but the gods, and those whom they chose to inform, were aware of what this implied.

L.A. Waddell believes that the Watchers in *The Book of Enoch* who bred with human women were lead by Cain, because "Azazel" is similar to "Azaz", or "Azag", a title sometimes used by the Sumerian king Qin. Also, in Persian mythology, the descendants of Azazel are called the "Djinn", similar to "Gin or "Gan", an alternate way of saying "Cain." Also, the arts and sciences that Azazel and his Watchers supposedly taught mankind are also associated with Cain and his children in many other traditions. The biblical figure of Tubal-Cain[22], who is probably Cain's descendant (if the Seth genealogy in *Genesis* is seen as erroneous) are both quite specifically said to have invented metalsmithing, and to have taught men to make weapons, as are the Watchers in *The Book of Enoch*, and the Djinn in Persian mythology. However, the whole thing may be a bit more complicated, as I am about to explain.

---

[22] "Tubal-Cain" is an important figure in Masonic ritual, and his name is even used as the password for one of their grades.

Chapter Five: Descendants of the Devil

"…it is but natural… to view Satan, the Serpent of Genesis, *as the real creator and benefactor, the Father of Spiritual mankind."*

- H.P. Blavatsky, *The Secret Doctrine.*

An Attempt at Antediluvian History

With so many different and conflicting versions of this saga to choose from, I felt it was necessary to boil the recurring myths down to their essentials and, isolating the most common elements, construct a rudimentary outline identifying what seems to be the likeliest order of events. Although this rough sketch is pure speculation, and although it is, admittedly, dangerous to try to reconstruct history based on mythology, what you read below is the model in which, I feel, all of the available data (from myths, history, archeology and anthropology) falls most snugly into place. And the picture thus painted is quite surprising.

If we take the myths to be based on truth, then we would have to agree that long ago, the earth was ruled by an entirely different order of beings, which I will call, for the purposed of this model, “gods.” While apparently related to the human race genetically, they were also, apparently, far more advanced in their development. The descriptions of them possessing horns, wings, fish tails, or reptilian features are most likely the result of elaborate costumes worn by the gods, symbolizing metaphysical concepts with which they wished to identify themselves. Such costumes were worn by human royals in ancient times, and the most common items of regalia used by royals have their origins in this golden age of the gods, as for example, the crown, inspired by the solar disc.

Their other most famous attribute was their ability to “shine.” They were called the “Ellu” in Babylonian myths, and “Elohim” in the Bible, both of which translate as “shining ones.” In fact, the name of the land of “Sumer” or “Shinar”, which they were responsible for civilizing, is related to the words “shine”, “shimmer”, and “summer.” These beings possessed not merely white skin, which most of their human descendants most certainly did, but in fact shined “like the Sun”, and just looking at them could blind a man or kill him. The light was especially known to radiate from their powerful, glowing eyes, which is why they were known as “the Watchers.” It seems that they were able to manipulate the properties of light, which is what their technology is based upon, and what made them so vastly superior to mortals, giving them powers which appeared to humans to be “magical.” They had access to higher dimensions than those which we currently experience.

These beings had a highly advanced and massive global civilization, the center of which was, most probably, the island of Atlantis. At the point at which we shall enter the story, the King of the Gods was Anu, Oannes, or Ouranos, the father of the Titans in Greek mythology. Their civilization relied very heavily on sea power, and thus their kings identified very heavily with sea symbolism. They also identified with the planets, the Sun, and the stars, most likely because of their vast knowledge of astronomy, and because of their ability to “shine.”

The next ruler of Atlantis, and of the world of the gods to follow Anu, was his son, the Sumerian Enki, the Greek Kronos, the Roman Saturn, and the Christian Satan. We will use “Satan” for the purposed of our model. It depends on which myth you believe whether Anu died, was killed by his son Satan, or simply retired. At any rate, Satan ruled Atlantis at length, and was renowned for both his wisdom and his ingenuity. Zecharia Sitchin refers to Enki as “the chief scientist among the gods.”

At this time, the Earth was probably populated by primitive forms of humanity as well, which also seems to be consistent with the mythological record. These people had not yet evolved to the status of present-day homo-sapiens, and lived savagely in the wild, largely ignored by the more highly-evolved “gods.”

At some point, however, the gods decided to breed a more advanced humanoid species, possibly a slave race. This would have bee the race of the Adami, and it is likely that the figure of “Adam” in the Bible is largely fictional, but in fact stands as a symbol of this pre-diluvian human race. The figure personified in the Bible is a replacement actor, meant to stand in as the prototype of the first divinely ordained human king (to supplant the real one, the maligned and largely excised figure of Cain). The word “Adam” is related to the word “Eden” (or “Edin”, as it is written in the Sumerian myths.) Eden was the location in which the breeding experiments took place, where the Adami were raised like livestock and taught to perform manual labor. Eden supposedly resided in “the center of the Earth”, which I here take to mean “in the heart of Atlantis.”

It was Satan who was ultimately in charge of the Adami breeding experiments. And it seems that, in his naturally scientific curiosity, he wished to see what would happen if these beings were endowed with a bit of the natural wisdom, understanding, and ingenuity that the gods themselves possessed. There may have been other motives as well, for he sensed an impending power struggle with his brother, the Sumerian Enlil, the Greek Zeus, and the biblical Jehovah. In order to maintain his power, Satan needed a race of beings to act as foot soldiers – beings with a bit more going on upstairs than the sheep-like Adami race. So he and his friends, including his wife (called in the Sumerian legends "Inanna"), interbred with Adami women to create a royal race among them that was half-god. This move was very controversial amongst the gods, and Jehovah was especially angered. One man in particular Satan created to be his royal heir: Cain. Satan bestowed the tiara of divine kingship upon him, and intended for him to become the first king of Eden, ruling over the rest of the Adami. It is uncertain whether or not he ever held this title de facto, or whether he ascension to the new throne was prevented by what happened next.

It was at this point that Jehovah launched his first offensive to take over Satan's royal throne. To make a long story short, he succeeded in accomplishing just that. Satan was exiled, and Jehovah declared himself the King of Atlantis - the Lord of the Earth. He installed his own appointees to all the official positions of government. This is the revolution of the "younger gods" over the "older gods", as reported in Greek and Sumerian mythology.

In exile, Satan perhaps fled to Iberia, as the legends report Saturn did, and formed a base of operations there amongst the primitive Iberians, whom he civilized, and turned into his loyal subjects. Indeed, he, may have traveled to many lands doing this. He also began consolidating a support base amongst the other gods who wished to see his return to the throne.

Back in Atlantis, Satan's son Cain, now deprived of the throne, continued to live, now ruled over by a new order of gods. As an insult to Satan, and because he felt threatened by Cain, Jehovah elected a new man to the throne of Eden: the Canaanite Baal-Moloch, known as "Abel" in the Bible. According to some versions, Baal was the son of the Canaanite god El, who is the same as Jehovah. So after criticizing Satan and his fellow gods for interbreeding with men, Jehovah engaged in it himself, not only breeding a royal heir, but an entire race of hybrid beings. However, not being as expert in the process as Satan was, Jehovah's sons lacked the noble nature of Cain, and they became more and more deformed with each successive generation.

Nonetheless, Jehovah raised Baal to the throne of Eden, and made all of the inhabitants bow down to him. But Cain, knowing himself to not only be the rightful ruler, but a much more highly evolved being than Baal, refused to pay homage to this false lord. For this he was sent into exile as well, an event that is memorialized in the Judaic and Islamic traditions which state that Satan was cast out of Heaven for refusing to "bow down to man."

When Cain was exiled, it is most likely that he hooked up with his father. He probably joined his campaign to overthrow Jehovah and reclaim the thrones that had been stolen from them both. They continued to civilize the primitives they conquered throughout the world, perhaps even working with a number of Adami and other hybrid races at that point, attempting to create an empire that would rival the one which Jehovah had stolen from Satan. This is how both Satan and Cain first gained their reputations as the great civilizers of mankind. And when they had created enough bases of operations, and amassed a large enough army, they attacked.

Thus began the "Edenic wars" that both L.A.Waddell and Ignatius Donnelly have written about: Satan fighting Jehovah for control of the Atlantean empire, and Cain fighting Abel for control of Eden within that empire. During the ongoing battles, Abel was killed, and Satan was somehow incapacitated as well. Many legends indicate that he was "imprisoned within the center of the Earth", either dead, or in a "death-like sleep" from which he is forever unable to awake. However, it is difficult to tell how to interpret such myths in a literal way.

Having done away with Satan, Jehovah naturally assumed that his struggle for power was over, and his throne was secured. But Cain continued to plot revenge. Furthermore, he himself had bred a royal heir, called in the Bible "Enoch" (after his grandfather, Satan, who was also called "Enki"). As discussed earlier, at some point Enoch was kidnapped by Jehovah, who probably feared his status as a royal heir, and was forced to live near Jehovah's royal capitol in Atlantis, where he was easier to control.

This is where the major turning point in the Edenic wars came: the Flood. Cain became aware of the impending disaster by watching the stars, and realizing that the Earth's axis was shifting. Cain knew this would result in a Flood, and that the disaster would wipe out a large portion of life on Earth. He thus began making preparations to preserve those elements of it which he considered worth saving. He somehow managed to get word to Enoch warning him about what was going to happen, and Enoch (going with the hypothesis that he and Noah are the same) then had a ship built in which to escape, upon which he placed "the seed of all living things", by which was probably meant genetic samples. He also supposedly brought on board a tablet, written on a special stone, upon which he engraved the most important secrets of the antediluvian world. We will discuss in the next chapter what may have been meant by this.

Biblical and other records depict Enoch/Noah as building the Ark and then waiting for the Flood to start. The boat only became seabourne in these stories when the Flood waters came to *it*. This makes sense if Enoch was unable to leave Atlantis because he was being restricted by Jehovah, and he had to wait for the chaos of the disaster to begin in order to slip out unnoticed. It is possible, though, that Enoch set out well before the Flood, and met up with his father. They then would have then moved the contents of the Ark into a “safe area” that Cain had already established, perhaps at the top of, and perhaps even inside, a tall mountain peak, as the legends suggest.

All of the other gods, including Jehovah, were well aware of the impending disaster, and many were able to find or construct a place of refuge. But, apparently on the direct orders of Jehovah, they neglected to tell the Adami, and all related races of humans and hybrids, about the Flood. Jehovah had apparently become annoyed with all of them, and wanted to wipe the slate clean. By retreating to his own place of security and giving his human subjects no warning, Jehovah allowed Mother Nature to take care of the problem for him. The Flood wreaked havoc all over the world, and Atlantis was completely engulfed in Flood waters, never to return.

Plato puts the Flood at around 10,500 years ago, which jibes with the estimate of researchers like Graham Hancock and Colin Wilson, who have used not only mythological records, but also the findings from modern archeologists and other scientists to reach this conclusion. The Bible puts it at 4000 years ago, but of course, the Biblical chronology is highly flawed. We cannot be certain when the Flood actually occurred, or how long it too for the Earth to become largely inhabitable again. Cain and Enoch may have stayed in their mountain retreat for some time, perhaps even hundreds of years. And when they re-emerged, they began once again on the project that had occupied them previously: creating a global empire. Although most of humanity had been wiped out, Cain and Enoch had undoubtedly saved a number of the Adami, and maybe members of other hybrid races as well. There also would have probably been pockets of survivors all over the world, both primitives who lived in places that were not affected by the Flood, and Atlanteans/Edenites of the hybrid races who managed to escape to these unaffected places. After the Flood waters subsided, Cain, Enoch, and their brethren came out and started rebuilding civilization all over the world. This is what, more than anything, gains them their reputation as having been the inventors of every art and science, and the gods who taught wisdom to primitive mankind. Although this had been going on before the Flood as well, after the Flood, they were teaching these sciences to men who had never even seen them before, having been born in a post-diluvian world. These human-god hybrids were now the overseers of all primitive humanity, and to these primitive humans, their overseers seemed like the highest form of life on Earth. They thus became deified by their subjects, and were the objects of cult worship. “Man” had literally become “god”, a concept that has remained dear to occultists ever since.

As for the real gods, they were still around, but they seemed somewhat less accessible than they had before. The descriptions of human contact with the old antediluvian gods seem to take on a different tone after the Flood. They no longer ruled the Earth directly, but for the most part remained hidden, and could be seen except through veils. It was as if a dimensional shift of some sort occurred at the same time as the Flood, and they now spent most of their time occupying those upper dimensions that man could not access. They used their human-god hybrid descendants as conduits acting on their behalf. Their descendants became priest-kings, and were known as sons of the gods: indeed, as incarnations of the gods – the only ones capable of contacting the gods and acting on their behalf. This is the tradition that has defined human kingship ever since. And the first one to set the precedent was Cain.

Cain's apotheosis, according to my theory, occurred in a very interesting way. Having been cast out of Atlantis by Jehovah, and then having survived the Flood, Cain went about perpetuating a myth that he had died, descended to the underworld, and then been reborn as a god. He made people believe that he had become an incarnation of his father, Satan. He renamed himself Seth (or "Set"), a word derived from his father's name, and took on the sea-goat imagery that his father had been associated with.[23]

The story of Cain's death, according to Jewish mythology, is very interesting, as it contains elements very similar to the death of Dagobert II. He was killed in a hunting accident in the forest by "his great-grandson, Lamech", who, interestingly, shares the same name as the father of Noah, only that figure was purportedly a descendant of Seth! Anyway, the Cainite Lamech accidentally killed his great-grandfather Cain because when he saw the horn on Cain's head (which God had placed there as a "mark" supposedly so that he *wouldn't* be murdered), he mistook Cain for an animal, and shot him with an arrow. The imagery of a horned Cain living in the forest reinforces the idea that he actually took on a new identity as a goat-headed deity.

---

[23] Author Julius Evola wrote that Seth's name could be interpreted to mean "ruin" or "upheaval", but also "foundation" or "pole", "having an essential relation with the regal function generally conceived as an emanation of the power of the center."

After Cain's rebirth as the horned figure of Seth, he, with his son Enoch, and other family members, built a global empire in which the human-god hybrid races acted as the overseers of society, directing it with the Solomonic wisdom inherent in their blood. From the Bible, as well as other records, we gather that Seth-Cain and Enoch succeeded in forming a united world, which all spoke one language – the proto-Sumerian or Aryan language. If we believe the legends, the inventor of this language was Enoch, who was also responsible for teaching the upper castes of humanity how to read and write. The so-called "Tower of Babel" built in Mesopotamia was a monument to this unity. It was so tall, and so magnificent, and symbolized an accomplishment that was so massive, that Jehovah and his faction found it threatening. They launched a massive attack on the structure, and the Tower was destroyed. In addition to the Judaic myth, there are versions of this story in other cultures, too. And we know from both historical and archeological records that the Tower of Babel did once exist.

It is likely that the attack on the Tower marked the beginning of a renewed conflict between the Satanic and Jehovahite bloodlines, in which control of the post-diluvian human world was the prize. The destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah was probably another act of the Jehovahites. And it seems that Jehovah must have gained a great deal of ground, because after the Tower of Babel incident, the world’s languages were no longer united, but “scrambled.” Jehovah probably took over many or most of Cain and Enoch’s territories. He then instituted a different language in each region, so that the inhabitants would be more easily subdued, more ignorant, and less likely to be able to organize a rebellion. It was also easier to construct a false history in which Satan and Cain were portrayed as villains, while “Seth”, instead of being Cain himself, was portrayed as his brother, and as the true ancestor of Enoch. Eventually, Seth and Enoch became, in the Jewish tradition at least, Jehovahite heroes, and were portrayed as the ancestors of all the biblical patriarchs. The Cainites were accused of trying to *steal* the genealogy of Seth, when in fact it was there’s all along. Louis Ginzberg writes:

“Unfortunately, at the time of Methuselah, following the death of Adam, the family of Seth became corrupted after the manner of the Cainites. The two strains united with each other to execute all kinds of iniquitous deeds. The result of the marriages between them were the Nephilim, whose sins brought the Deluge upon the world. In their

arrogance they claimed the same pedigree as Seth, and they compared themselves with princes and men of noble descent."[24]

But the true ancestry of the Hebrew, Jewish and Israelite kings was Satanic and Cainite in origin, and there is evidence that forces loyal to Satan continued to jockey for influence on them. Thus the history of the Hebrews, Jews and Israelites shows Jehovah constantly struggling to keep these people loyal to him, even his anointed priests and kings. It was probably a known secret amongst the priest, scribes, and nobles what their true heritage was. And it even seems that, at times, when the priests thought they were channeling messages from Jehovah, they were in fact contacting other gods from rival factions, which explains why "God" takes on radically different names and personalities throughout the Bible.

Outside of this strain, other cultures were heavily influenced by Jehovah's son Abel or Baal, who appears to have been put in charge Mesopotamia, and several other Middle Eastern territories. For in these cultures, Baal was remembered as one of the great god-kings who ruled over them in ancient times. His father Jehovah had always been thought of as a "storm god", associated with warfare (for obvious reasons). In this capacity he took on the imagery of a bull, and was known to wear bull horns on his helmet. His son Baal took on the bull imagery as well, and took it further, for he was actually remembered as a creature with a bull's head. He quite openly encouraged his subjects to worship him as a god, and it was his descendants who instituted bull and cow worship in the ancient world. King Nimrod claimed to be a descendant of Baal, and took on his title "Lord of the Earth." He also took credit (falsely, I believe) for building the Tower of Babel. He forced his subjects to worship him as an incarnation of Baal, and insisted that they sacrifice babies, a trait that has always marked Baal worship.

---

[24] According to Freemason and occult expert Albert Mackey, Cain and Seth are the sources of two separate systems of cabala – the Jewish science of numerology based on the mystical Hebrew alphabet.

L.A.Waddell believed that many words used in the ancient world were derived from Baal's name, which came to mean simply "Lord" in Middle Eastern languages. For instance, Waddell wrote that the Norse God Baldur was the same as Baal, and that the pagan holiday of Beltane was named after him. Also, his title, "Moloch", came to mean "king" in the ancient world, and developed into the Hebrew world "Malkuth", for "kingdom." It is thus at the root of the name "Melchizedek", the priest-king that Abraham paid homage to in the Bible. And it is perhaps related to the word "Michael", the lead angel that opposed Satan in the Christian story of the war in Heaven.

Waddell also thought that stories of heroes slaying bulls, such as Mithras slaying the World Bull, represent Cain killing Abel, or Baal. Likewise, stories about heroes such as Michael, or St. George, slaying dragons represent Jehovahites killing the descendants of Satan. Indeed, bull sacrifice was practiced in Crete, and in the rites of Mithras (a figure most certainly derived from Cain). Also, Plato said that bull sacrifice was practiced in Atlantis. And Zeus often took the form of a bull when he had intercourse with human females, such as in the case of his rape of Europa.

The story goes as follows. The young lady Europa was playing on the beach one day when a beautiful bull, Zeus in disguise, appeared from out of the sea. Europa was so enchanted by it that she climbed up on its back. He immediately carried her off into the sea and raped her. It has been speculated that the continent of Europe was so named because it was once populated by the descendants of those spawned by this union. The parallels to the story of the Quinotaur who raped the mother of Meroveus while she swam in the sea are startling.

A similar story involved the birth of the monstrous bull-headed man called the Minotaur, who lived underground at the center of an elaborate labyrinth on the island of Crete, imprisoned there by his father, King Minos. Remember, Crete was known for its famous bull sacrifice rituals, but in this case, it was the Minotaur to whom sacrifices were made, as young men and women were sent down there regularly to feed his insatiable appetite for human flesh. In the end, the Minotaur was slain by the hero, Theseus (son of Neptune), which is perhaps what the bull sacrifices of Crete were in commemoration of. The Minotaur was not the son of Minos biologically, though. According to fact-index.com:

"Before Minos became king, he asked the Greek god Poseidon for a sign, to assure him that he, and not his brother, was to receive the throne. Poseidon agreed to send a white bull on condition Minos would sacrifice the bull back to the god. Indeed a bull of unmatched beauty came out of the sea. King Minos, after seeing it, instead sacrificed another bull, hoping that Poseidon would not notice. Poseidon was very angry when he realised what had been done so he caused Minos' wife Pasiphae to be overcome with a fit of madness in which she fell in love with the bull. Pasiphae went to Daedalus for assistance, and Daedalus devised a way for her to satisfy her passions. He constructed a hollow wooden cow covered with cowhide for Pasiphae to hide in and allow the bull to mount her. The result of this union was the Minotaur. In some accounts, the white bull went on to become the Cretan Bull. In Greek mythology, the Cretan Bull was either the bull that carried away Europa or the bull Pasiphae fell in love with. Heracles had to capture it."

Given the similarities between the Minotaur and Baal, the conclusion reached by author Nicholas de Vere is almost obvious:

"The Minotaur has been said to be a version of the Phoenician bull-headed god Baal-Moloch, the son of Enlil… sacrifices were made to the Phoenician King enacting the ritual role of the god by wearing a bull's head as a mask."

As the Jehovahite cult gained supremacy amongst the Hebrews, Jehovah became jealous of the worship of his son Baal, or of any other gods, for that matter. The incident that occurred when the Hebrews were caught worshipping the golden calf in *Exodus* demonstrates this amply. "Baal" and "Moloch" were now considered "false gods" worshipped by "heathen nations." Nevertheless, the practice of idolatry was rampant amongst the Israelites and Jews, most especially the priestly caste, and was even performed by King Solomon within the Temple, using the Ark of the Covenant. Archeologists have found the bodies of hundreds of infants slaughtered in sacrifice to Baal. His name eventually morphed into the name of the demon Beelzebub.

Also, although "Seth" is remembered in Judaism as the forefather of the biblical patriarchs, the imagery of the goat-headed god which Seth really was became the prototype image for the Devil in Judaism and Christianity. Goat sacrifice became central to old Judaism. It was part of the observance of Yom Kippur, the Day of Atonement. On this day, two goats were sacrificed. One was killed as a "sin offering", atoning for the sins of the Israelites, and taking their punishment for them in their steed. Upon the head of the other goat were placed "the sins of all Israel." This goat was then sent off into the desert to die of thirst, taking the curses of the sins with him, away from the people. But each goat was a separate sacrifice: "one for the Lord, and one for Azazel", as the text of *Leviticus* stipulates. The priests would choose two of the finest goats that they had for this, and then draw lots to see which one would be offered to Azazel.

It has been suggested by some that this ritual symbolism was used in defiance of the religion of Egypt, in which their goat-headed god, Ammon, was highly revered, and the sacrifice of goats was forbidden. The name of "Egypt" was originally "Egopt", sometimes just called "Gopt" or "Copt." (Thus the word "Coptic" is used to describe things that are Egyptian.) L.A. Waddell believed that "Gopt" was a title of Cain, a permutation of "Gad" or "God", and was thus the source of the name of the "Goth" tribe in Europe, and of course, the word "goat." Perhaps this word is also related to the name “Capricorn”, the sea-goat of the Zodiac, and thus “Cecropes”, the ancestor of Erichthonius who was half-dragon.

The name of Cain mutated not only into the words “king” and “queen”, but also “gentry” (meaning “nobility”). This includes the word “genetic”, and that entire family of words indicating bloodlines, such as “genealogy”, or “generation”, “genesis”, and even “genital” – all words denoting the idea of passing on seed. The related word “gan” meant “garden” in Hebrew, and “gan” meant “vessel” in old Egyptian. The race of the “Djinn” (demonic beings that are part of Islamic lore) were named after Cain, and were considered to be descendants of Azazel, one of Cain’s titles. From “Djinn”, or “Gin” comes words like “genie” (another word for a demonic spirit). Even “genius” comes from this root. It initially meant “an indwelling spirit”, and literally suggested that a person was possessed by a demon. Also, “Gin” is probably related to “John” and “Jeanne”, the names taken on by all Priory of Sion Grand Masters since the Cutting of the Elm.

His name of “Seth”, I believe, is not only the basis for the Egyptian character of Set, but also the name of the race known as “Scythian”, which author Nicholas de Vere identified with the Aryan. H.P. Blavatsky connects Seth’s name with “sod”, which she says means “mystery” or “arcanum.”

The name “Azazel” may be related to another title that L.A. Waddell ascribed to Cain: “Azag.” He believed that Cain was identical to the Sumerian king Sargon the Great, whom he identified also with an ancient Indian king, Sagara. This title “Sag”, “Zag”, or “Azag” he said, meant “seer”, and was thus the root of the English word “sage” or “sagacious”, indicating a wise and holy visionary. Waddell wrote that “Sag” was sometimes shortened to “Ag”, which is Egypt came to mean “fire within”, a testament to the fact that Cain’s race was one of metalsmiths and alchemists. Interestingly, the word “ageia” came to mean “goat”, and “aegis” came to mean “to rule.” “Ag” is probably also related to the word “agriculture”, which Cain purportedly taught mankind. This word may further be linked to “Aegaea”, the region around the Aegean Sea, as well as, again, Egypt. Also, “Agei” is the name of a Hindu fire god, and “Agathodaemon” is the name that was used by some Gnostic sects for their “savior”

There is reason to believe that this word mutated further yet into our word for the number “eight”, also called “og” or “oct” in other languages, resulting in words like “octopus and “octagon.” The figure eight looks much like the caduceus staff (entwined with two serpents) which Hermes or Mercury is always holding.[25] You will recall that Hermes or Mercury is the same as Enoch. This same figure was called "Thoth" or "Azag-Thoth" in Egypt, incorporating the "Azag" title of his father, Cain. And Azag-Thoth, Hermes or Mercury is believed in certain occult legends to have been the inventor of chess, which is played on an 8 x 8 board. This may be related to the Chinese I-Ching, which is made up of 64 "hexagrams."

The name "Enoch", as we know, is related to the Sumerian name of this figure's grandfather, "Enki", or Satan. Also written as "Kenoch" or "Hanuk", this name was probably the source of the word "Anakim", a race of giants who, according to *Genesis*, lived in Canaan, and who may very well have been descendants of Enoch. "Enki", "Enoch", and the name of the father god "Anu" are all sources for the Sumerian word "Annunaki", their name for the original race of gods, and probably the South American tribe of the Inca, who were civilized by these same god-kings. The word further mutated into "ankh", the Egyptian sun-cross which was also used, oddly enough, by the Cathars in medieval France, and which mutated into the Celtic cross. As "Enoch" was sometimes spelled "Anag", it may be related to the French place-name "Anjou", from whence came the Angevins, an offshoot of the Merovingian family.

---

[25] "8" also looks like the DNA double-helix, and an infinity symbol.

However, Enoch's other name of "Erech", after which the Sumerian city of "Uruk" (or sometimes "Warka") was called (and thus the country of Iraq) was just as influential in our language. As we have said before, the word "Ur" (related to "Ar") has come to mean "primeval" in European language. It is not hard to see how the word "Erech", "Uruk" or "Warka" could transform into "Ark", as in the one that Enoch may have navigated during the Flood. Given the idea that civilization supposedly died during the Deluge, the Ark could then be the *origin* of all renewed civilization. Thus the word "arche", like "ur" in German, means "original" in Latin, and provides us with words like "archetype." Enoch was, like his father, an "architect", a science named after its fundamental building block, the "arch." And "arch" also denotes political rule, as in "monarchy", "anarchy", or "oligarchy."

The names of the other figures I have discussed in this chapter have many other linguistic connections as well. Anu, of course, is the same as Oannes, Ouranos, Uranus, and Enu, and he is the source of the race names "Annunaki" and "Annedoti." Also, as he was viewed in his time as the god of the heavens, the inventor of astronomy, and an incarnation of the Sun itself, the solar year was named after him in Sumeria, which is where we get our word "annual."

“Satan” is obviously related to the word “Saturn”, which is related to “satyr”, a form of goat-headed man who in Greek mythology occupied Arcadia. Their race was headed by Pan, who seems to be based on the goat-headed figure of Cain/Seth. Pan was seen as a “trickster god”, a malicious joker, and from the word “satyr” we get the word “satire.” This same figure of Satan was Kronos in Greek myth , or Cerrunnos in Celtic mythology, seen in those cultures as the inventor of farming. He was especially associated with wheat, or “corn”, as it is called in England, a word derived from his name. Of course, “Kronos” or “Chronos” was associated with the concept of time, and thus the word “chronology” was formed. It is also probably the root of the word “crown”, the headgear worn by a king.

This same figure’s Sumerian title of “Ia” was later absorbed into the name of “Jah” or “Jehovah”, who hijacked much of his rivals’ imagery. “Ia” contributed to the formation of the word “eye”, and the eye became a symbol for the world kingship that was once wielded by these god-kings. The eye symbol was used as a glyph for kingship in India, where it was called “the Royal Eye of Gopta”, and in Egypt, where it was “the Eye of Horus.” The symbol of the All-Seeing Eye was then adopted by Freemasons, who incorporated many Egyptian mysteries into their rituals. It was Freemasons who designed the Great Seal of the United

States, in which the All-Seeing Eye replaces the capstone of the Egyptian Great Pyramid. This is supposed to symbolize the ideal political *world order* envisioned by Freemasons – one of autocratic global hegemony, a return to the world empire of the golden age of the gods.

The Fallen Race

Both the god-kings who descended from Satan and Cain, as well as those who came from Jehovah and Baal, have played monumental roles in human history, to say the least. If not for them, "humanity" as we know it would not exist, much less civilization, and the Earth would be populated by nomadic hordes of primitive mongrelized subraces. But the battles between the Satanic and Jehovahite factions, as well as the numerous subfactions, have wreaked havoc on our ancient history. We now have only echoes of truth in fragmented form, sprinkled throughout our mythologies and religious doctrines. Most so-called "occult" doctrines are no less a mixture of truth and falsehood. It is as if a veil has fallen over the light, and now we "see through a glass darkly."

One of the reasons for this, perhaps, is that almost all of the god-human hybrid races have died off. We know that they continued to live for a long time after the Flood. Although their ages at death gradually drop from hundreds of years before and immediately after the Flood, to more normal age ranges by the time of Moses, the patriarchs of the Bible, all the way up to and including the twelve sons of Jacob, are all reported in Jewish legends to have been giants, and to have been exceedingly beautiful, with captivating eyes, as well as being capable of superhuman feats of strength. The historian Eusebius wrote that "Abraham traced his ancestry to the giants. These dwelt in the land of Babylonia. Because of their impiety, they were destroyed by the gods." There were also other races of giants reported in the Bible, such as the "Anakim" and the "Rephaim", who were said to live in lands outside of Israel. These giants all seem to have been carriers of the blood of the pre-diluvian god-kings. Similar things (extraordinarily long lives, beautiful skin, and giant bodies) are reported about the kings of other ancient cultures, such as Sumeria, India, Egypt and Greece.

Nicholas de Vere details in his book *The Dragon Legacy* how races of divine-human hybrids acted as the "overseers", or "Dragons" (a word that he says comes from "derkesthai", which means "to see clearly") of ancient human societies. He depicts this as a harmonious, interdependent caste system headed by the Dragons, who served their "client races" with care. He believes that all legends of fairies, elves, dragons, vampires, devils, demons, and angels are remembrances of these creatures, or of their forefathers, the gods.

However, De Vere believes that these “Dragon” races, particularly those descended from Jehovah, eventually allowed themselves to interbeed outside of the Dragon family, to the point where their blood lost all of its divine potency. These people, now mere mortals, then began a systematic effort to exterminate those who remained “of pure Dragon blood”, and to take over the human societies they directed. De Vere details the chronology of this “genocide” in a chapter of his book called “The Thousand-Year Elven Holocaust.” It is because of this largely successful campaign that the world is, in De Vere’s eyes, now run by ignoble “robber barons” with selfish motives, still aspiring to the titles, prestige and power originally wielded by those whom they had hatefully eradicated. In this group De Vere counts also the majority of royalty born in the last several hundred years, whom he regards as nothing but the degenerate remnants of a fallen race. On this subject, he writes:

“It is known that in antiquity the Nephilim, the Elven sons of the Annunagi, interbred with humans… However it is recorded that these half-breeds were destroyed… and the slate was wiped clean.

The next experiment produced a lineage of pure-bred Elven queens and kings who were to supervise a race of quarterbreeds who were originally created for manual labor. The quarterbreeds, nevertheless, were eventually to gain their freedom and elect their own chieftains. They were helped by the Elven dynasty, the people whom Christians now think of as the spawn of Satan…

These people interbred with anyone and we know them now as the biblical race of Adam whose Elven blood today is so dluted as to be infintessimal. The pure Elven Queens and Kings, however, bred with no one but themselves and so throughout the past five or six millennia, the blood was kept more or less pure in several unbroken lines of descent until as late as the 8th century A.D. From that time, however, only one bloodline descent is recorded as being pure and unbroken."

But really, in terms of which race is "fallen" because of miscegenation between humans and gods, both the descendants of Jehovah and Satan"fell", in the sense that they both watered down the royal and divine blood in their veins by mating with common humans generation after generation. However, the mythological record seems to suggest that the Adamites, or Edenites, had polluted their blood prior to the Flood, and it was the monstrous and deformed race which resulted that was wiped out in the Deluge. It was because of the ignoble nature of what their race had become that Jehovah abandoned them. Interestingly, De Vere refers to the "Nephilim" as being lead by Jehovah, not Satan.

The fall of Eden may be the real source for the Hebrew myth regarding the "Fallen Kings of Edom", the ten "Children of Before" who "ruled before there were kings in Israel", until their kingdom was destroyed by God because of their evil nature. The Kings of Edom are now used in Cabala to signify the fallen kings of the "Kingdom of Shells", the "Qipploth" or dark shadow of the Tree of Life that, in this system, exists in the underworld. And the head of these ten "demon kings" in this system is named "Moloch", thus representing Baal, or Abel. Indeed, the first "Moloch" of the Edomites is listed in the Bible as "Bela", a derivative of Baal or Abel.

But regardless of who deserves the label of the "fallen race", the fact remains that, largely because of the propaganda spread by their enemies, the descendants of Satan were characterized as evil beings, bent on leading humanity to sin and then dragging their souls down to never-ending torment in the bowels of the Earth. Cain, or "Azazel", became "Asmodeus", the King of the Demons, but still retaining the title "Rex Mundi", or "Lord of the Earth" - this time in a pejorative sense, the Earth being seen as the Devil's domain. The entire noble race was cast as wretched, hate-filled, grimacing, ugly monsters. At best, they were depicted by the establishment as charming and harmless, but entirely fictional elves and nymphs – ridiculous, supernatural, and highly improbably creations of the human imagination, like Tinkerbelle and the Tooth Fairy. But numerous traditions continue to relate that Satan and his "devils", "demons", or "Djinn" descendants were in fact the harbingers of all the *good* things that civilization has brought to mankind. Indeed, they are remembered as the forefathers of modern humanity itself.

Surprisingly, the word "demon" was originally never meant to be a negative term, but really meant "wise one", and indicated the race of Satan or Kronos, the benefactors of mankind. As Ignatius Donnelly explains:

"Plato says, speaking of the traditions of the Greeks, 'There is a tradition of the happy life of mankind in the days when all things were spontaneous and abundant. . . . In like manner God in his love of mankind placed over us the demons, who are a superior race, and they, with great care and pleasure to themselves and no less to us, taking care of us and giving us place and reverence and order and justice never failing, made the tribes of men happy and peaceful . . . for Cronos knew that no human nature, invested with supreme power, is able to order human affairs and not overflow with insolence and wrong.'

In other words, this tradition refers to an ancient time when the forefathers of the Greeks were governed by Chronos, of the Cronian Sea (the Atlantic), king of Atlantis, through civilized Atlantean governors, who by their wisdom preserved peace and created a golden age for all the populations under their control--they were the demons, that is, 'the knowing ones,' the civilized.

Plato puts into the mouth of Socrates these words: 'My notion would be that the sun, moon, and stars, earth, and heaven, which are still the gods of many barbarians, were the only gods known to the aboriginal Hellenes. . . . What shall follow the gods? Must not demons and heroes and men come next? . . . Consider the real meaning of the word demons. You know Hesiod uses the word. He speaks of 'a golden race of men' who came first. He says of them,

'But now that fate has closed over this race,
They are holy demons upon earth,
Beneficent averters of ills, guardians of mortal men.'

He means by the golden men not men literally made of gold, but good and noble men; he says we are of the 'age of iron.' He called them demons because they were (knowing or wise)."

This is why, as the religions of Judaism and later Christianity coalesced, “Satan” and his “fallen angels” or “demons” became associated with the spreading of “forbidden knowledge.” Thus the story of Faust developed in Europe as a cautionary tale about a man who sold his soul to the Devil in exchange for obtaining ultimate wisdom. And although originally the wisdom that Satan, Cain and Enoch were said to have given mankind included all arts and sciences, as time wore on, the “forbidden” wisdom was narrowed down to all things “occult”: divination, alchemy, astrology, sorcery, necromancy, etc. – all of which became known as the “dark arts”, the practice of which was believed to damn the practitioner’s soul to Hell. Also included among these was the perpetuation of secret doctrines and heresies regarding God and the history recounted in the Bible. These are the things that constitute the “underground stream” of Hermeticism and Gnosticism later perpetuated by groups like the Knights Templar, the Freemasons, the Rosicrucians, and the Priory of Sion. Traditionalist philosopher Julius Evola wrote, using the historian Tertullian as a reference, that:

“…the works of nature, the secrets of metals, the virtues of plants, the forces of magical conjurations, and ‘all those alien teachings that

make up the science of the stars' - that is to say, the whole corpus of the ancient magico-hermetic sciences was revealed to men by the fallen angels."

In the same vein, the following quote has been attributed to an ancient Hermetic sage from Egypt who called himself "Hermes Trismegistus":

"The ancient and sacred books teach that certain angels burned with desire for women. They descended to earth and taught all the works of nature. They were the ones who created the Hermetic works, and from them proceeds the primordial tradition of this art."

The Heresies of Christ

These Hermetic and Gnostic traditions were becoming quite popular and influential throughout both the East and the Hellenistic West by the time that Jesus Christ was born. At that time many Gnostic sects held that Jehovah was in fact the "Demi-Urge", the Devil, and that Satan or Lucifer was "the light bringer", the god (or sometimes goddess) of wisdom. There is reason to believe that Jesus himself was initiated into such a sect, and later started one of his own with his disciples, which became the first and true Christian church (the one purportedly represented by the Merovingians and the Priory of Sion).

We know that the first (and perhaps only) sect which Jesus joined before starting his own was that of John the Baptist – whose cult was mystical in nature, and is thought by some historians to have been an Essene offshoot, although nobody knows for sure. However, there is a Gnostic sect called the Mandeans (still existing in Iran) who claim their teachings were given to them directly by John the Baptist. They honor John as their true prophet rather than Jesus, and consider John to have been the spiritual son and incarnation of the goddess Sophia, which means "wisdom." Interestingly, a sub-sect of the Mandeans, called the Yezidis, take Gnosticism all the way to full-fledged Satanism and worship the goat-headed "Shaitan" as the bringer of wisdom.

This brings us to the goat-headed deity of Baphomet revered by the Templars, the Freemasons, and many other Satanic or occult traditions. His name has been said to be the result of encoding the word "Sophia" or "wisdom" in the Hebrew Atbash cipher used by the Knight Templar. This link with a female goddess of wisdom may explain why this otherwise male deity is sometimes depicted as hermaphroditic. But it has also been translated by Eliphas Levi (who provided us with the depiction of Baphomet most familiar to us) as meaning "Baptism of Wisdom." And of course, it is the very un-Jewish rite of baptism that John the Baptist was most well-known for. So if the head or skull that the Templars worshipped as a representation of Baphomet was, as has been claimed, really the skull of John the Baptist, perhaps it was because he was actually a priest of, and considered an incarnation of, Baphomet. But his disciple Jesus was seen that way as well, as we shall see.

Another interpretation of Baphomet's name is that it means "Father Mithras." As discussed earlier, Mithras appears to be yet another god based on the figure of Cain or Seth. He was known for slaying the "World Bull", as Cain purportedly slew Abel or Baal. He was also known for allowing himself to be sacrificed around the time of Easter, only to be born anew, just as Cain pretended to die and be reborn as Seth. There are many other similarities as well, and many similarities also between Mithras and Jesus. The rites of Mithras appear to be the major inspiration not only for the early Christian church, but for the rites of Freemasonry as well.

The rites of Mithras were perhaps the most influential cult in the ancient world at that time. Beginning in Persia, they spread to Rome, Asia Minor, India, China and Babylon. The original Persian strain inspired the first monotheistic religion of Zoroastrianism, which mutated in Babylon and there influenced greatly the development of Judaism while the Jews were in captivity in Babylon, which is when their earliest scriptures were written. In Rome the Mithras cult mutated into that of "Sol Invictus" – "the Invincible Sun." It is this cult which the Roman Emperor Constantine truly converted to when he instituted Christianity as the official religion of Rome.[26] During that period in Rome, the Sun was often called "the eye of Mithras."

The reported life of Mithras looks like a veritable blueprint for the story of Jesus. As author Ellie Crystal reports on crystalinks.com:

> *"According to Persian traditions, the god Mithras was actually incarnated into the human form of the Saviour expected by Zarathustra. Mithras was born of Anahita, an immaculate virgin mother once worshipped as a fertility goddess… Anahita was said to have conceived the Saviour from the seed of Zarathustra preserved in the waters of Lake Hamun in the Persian province of Sistan…*
>
> *…The God remained celibate throughout his life, and valued self-control, renunciation and resistance to sensuality among his worshippers.*

---

[26] Called the "thirteenth apostle", some authors state that Constantine's royal lineage included the blood of Jesus himself.

> *Mithras represented a system of ethics in which brotherhood was encouraged in order to unify against the forces of evil….*
>
> *…In Armenian tradition, Mithras was believed to shut himself up in a cave from which he emerged once a year, born anew."*

In the end, Mithras ascended to Heaven in a "Sun chariot", but before he did so, he shared a ritualistic "Last Supper" with his disciples in which bread and wine was served. This ritual became part of the practices of the cult of Mithras, in which the participants believe that they were consuming the blood and body of their deity – just as in Christianity! It is from the rites of Mithras that baptism comes as well, in which it was used to "wash away the sins" of the new convert. The priests of Mithras also wore fish-like miters just like Catholic bishops (a tradition that extends from the Syrian rites of Dagon as well), and it is likely that the word "miter" comes from "Mithras." Mithraic priests were called "Father", wore special rings, and carried a shepherds staff as well, just like Catholic bishops. They celebrated Mithras' birthday on December 25 (around the Winter Solstice, Saturnalia, and St. Dagobert's Day), and held services to the god every Sunday.

Even more amazing is that the ultimate purpose of Mithras' existence was similar to that which the Church has ascribed to Christ. It was believed that when Mithras died in sacrifice, he obtained freedom for his followers from the wages of their sins. And when he rose again, he obtained for them eternal life in Paradise. The curator of a website called “Borndigital” (http://www.borndigital.com/tarsus.htm), comments further:

> *“It was believed that the partaking of the sacrament (of communion) ensured eternal life, the immediate passing, after death, to the bosom of Mithras, there to tarry in bliss until the judgment day. On the judgment day the Mithraic keys of heaven would unlock the gates of Paradise for the reception of the faithful; whereupon all the unbaptized of the living and the dead would be annihilated upon the return of Mithras to earth. It was taught that, when a man died, he went before Mithras for judgment, and that at the end of the world Mithras would summon all the dead from their graves to face the last judgment. The wicked would be destroyed by fire, and the righteous would reign with Mithras forever.”*

Although a good deal of this imagery was probably added on to the cult of Christ by the Roman Catholic Church in an attempt to make their new religion palatable to the pagan populace of the Roman Empire, it cannot be doubted that much of it was quite consciously taken on by Jesus himself, and that the import of what he was trying to do was recognized at the time. The Zoroastrians even saw in Jesus a prophesized incarnation of Mithras, which is why magi were sent at his birth. Borndigital.com continues:

"Zarathustra had predicted a Messiah, and Jesus' birth was thought perhaps to be his arrival. In the Persian 'Avesta' (their religious writings), this Messiah will appear at the end of time to bring the triumph of good over evil. They call him the 'Saushyant', and according to the Bundahishn he will slay a magnificent bull, and make a potion of immortality for mankind from its fat, mixed with Hamoa juice."

As stated, many elements of Mithraic ritual made their way into Freemasonry. Mithraism was a highly secret mystery cult, in which only initiates were allowed to know the wisdom of Mithras, revealed to them in several stages, or degrees. In one degree (quoting Ellie Crystal again), "The neophyte wears a veil and carries a lamp in his hand. He is unable to see the 'light of truth' until the 'veil of reality' is lifted." In another degree "the neophyte had to kneel (submission to religious authority, naked (casting off old life), blindfolded with hands tied. He was then offered a crown on the point of a sword. Once crowned, his binds were cut with a single stroke of the sword and blindfold removed… He would then remove the crown from his head and placing it on his shoulder, saying: 'Mithra is my only crown.'"[27] In another rite, the initiate was given honey to anoint his hands and tongue. Honey and bees later became important symbolism to the Freemasons, and to the Merovingians.[28] All of these elements became part of Masonic rites.

Another element of Masonic ritual that originated with Mithraism was the secret handshake, and in fact, the handshake itself, which initially was used in their rites to symbolize the covenant that was made between the initiate and Mithras, as well as the friendship that existed between them. (In China, Mithras was actually called "the Friend.") The handshake was a symbol of one of the most essential concepts of Mithras. He was the god of contracts. In fact, Mithras' name is said to have come from the Persian word for "contract." As crystalinks.com explains:

"In The Avesta, the holy book of the religion of Zarathustra, Ahura-Mazda was said to have created Mithras in order to guarantee the authority of contracts and the keeping of promises… The divine duty of Mithras was to ensure general prosperity through good contractual relations between

---

[27] The same author states elsewhere that "Mithras was 'The Great King' highly revered by the nobility and monarchs, who looked upon him as their special protector. A great number of the nobility took theophorous (god-bearing) names compounded with Mithras."

[28] The highest degree of the Mithraic rites was dedicated to Saturn.

men. It was believed that misfortune would befall the entire land if a contract was ever broken."

Obviously, this is significant because contracts, particularly oaths of secrecy and fidelity, have a particular importance in Freemasonry.

It was because of his association with contracts that Mithras came to be thought of as a wise judge, and as mankind's judge in the afterlife. He took on the title "the Mediator", and was thought to literally mediate between the Zoroastrian deities of Ahura-Mazda[29] and Ahriman (light and darkness, or Satan and Jehovah) as they struggled to influence the world and to defeat one another. In this sense Mithras is equal to Baphomet, or the Gnostic deity Abraxas, both of which were thought to be embodiments of the unity of opposites, including good and evil, as well as male and female.

There is evidence that Jesus saw himself as an incarnation of Mithras, and wished to do a little contract negotiation of his own between Jehovah, Satan, and humanity. As a royal scion of David, and rightful King of the Jews, he knew that he was a descendant of both Jehovah and Satan quite literally. But if he were to truly represent the Jewish people, he would have to uphold the many contracts that those people had made with Jehovah over the generations, the breaking of which could lead to curses afflicting multiple generations. Such contracts had been made between Abraham and "God" on behalf of the Hebrews, and then later between Moses and Jehovah. Numerous clauses had been added on to these contracts over the centuries also. The Bible makes it quite clear that Jehovah took these contracts very seriously, and the Jews and Israelites were very aware of this. The Jewish and Israelite people were essentially in bondage to Jehovah, crippled by their obligations to him, and yet he had delivered little in the way of property or power to these people beyond their supposedly "special" relationship with him, and their relatively small "land flowing with milk and honey": the Holy Land. While this land was apparently nothing to sneeze at, coveted by all surrounding nations as well, the Israelites and Jews could never hold onto it for very long without being captured and enslaved by their many enemies – curses purportedly placed on them by Jehovah for not observing their contract with him strictly enough.

---

[29] Ahura Mazda, the good god, would be, in a Gnostic world view, equivalent to Satan or Lucifer, the light bringer. This deity's name is the source of the name "Ormuzd", or "Ormus", whose name combines words meaning both "light" and "serpent." "Ormus" is, of course, the nickname taken on by the Priory of Sion after the Cutting of the Elm.

Yet the kings of Judah and Israel were not only anointed by, contracted by, and ultimately in some ways genetically related to Jehovah. They were also ultimately descended from Seth, or Cain, and thus Satan. Moreover, it does seem when one examines the Old Testament that Satan and Cain had their own influence on the kings of Judah and Israel, and may have had their own contracts with them. Officially, the Jewish kings were anointed by Jehovah, but secretly, many of them were “Dragon kings” allied with Satan. As a scion of this lineage, and an initiate into the Satanic mystery traditions that had been passed down from his forefathers, Jesus was no doubt aware of this situation. And I believe that he wished to break the contracts that the Jews and Israelites had with Jehovah, and release them from spiritual bondage.

The first part of his plan involved converting the consciences of the people. Jesus essentially went about preaching that people should ignore the letter of Jehovah’s law and concentrate instead on the spirit of goodness and virtue. These are values that are unique neither to Judaism or Christianity, but in fact, widespread and ancient, originating with the laws observed by the gods in their antediluvian civilization, and passed down to post-diluvian human society through Cain. Jesus encouraged them to worship the true God who created the universe, and whose essence can be found in all things, rather than remaining enslaved to a tribal demiurge that had essentially attached itself to the bloodlines of their forefathers for personal gain. He preached that they should love one another, including uncircumcised gentiles, rather than declaring that they should hate anyone outside of their own limited gene pool, or anyone who had not sealed a covenant with Jehovah by mutilating his penis. Jesus, and his mentor, John, baptized men in the name of “the Father” (Mithras), and washed away their sins, i.e., the guilt that they had carried all their lives because of their covenant with Jehovah. And for his closest disciples, Jesus allowed them to be initiated into the Mithraic mysteries. The wedding at Cana, the death and rebirth ritual played with Lazarus, the Last Supper, and finally the death and resurrection ritual enacted by Jesus himself, were all part of the Mithraic rites which he and his disciples were enacting. All of this worked to turn the hearts and minds of his followers away from Jehovah.

Jesus’ wedding to Mary Magdalene was also part of the plot. Many authors have asserted that Magdalene was a member of the Israelite tribe of Benjamin. And although they were a *royal* tribe, having provided Israel’s first king, Saul, they were also an accursed tribe. *The Book of Judges* tells the story of the “outrage at Gibeah”, in which Baal-worshiping Benjamites raped the wife of a Levite, instigating a war against the Benjamites by the eleven other tribes of Israel which decimated them, reducing the number of male Benjamites left to less than 300. After the war, the other tribes swore before Jehovah that they would not give their daughters to marry Benjamite men, and thus the remaining males were forced to marry women outside of Israel – outside of the covenant with Jehovah. The entire race of the Benjamites became associated with the worship of strange gods, the marrying of foreign women, and the curses of Jehovah. As a descendant of Benjamin (and possibly a Benjamite princess), Mary Magdalene embodied this symbolism by default, even though there was no injunction against marrying Benjamite *women* per se, but only the men. However, if at any point in Mary Magdalene's genealogy there was a union between a Benjamite man and a woman from one of the other tribes of Israel, and if this union had occurred *after* the "outrage at Gibeah" occurred, then her bloodline would definitely be cursed, as would anyone who married her, or any children born of her.

But there may have been something else about Mary that earned her a reputation as a "whore", and made her unfit for marriage in the eyes of the rabbis. There is a belief among Catholics that she was an "adulteress" - specifically that she was the same adulteress whom Jesus saved from public stoning and absolved of her sins. However, "adulteress", like "whore", is a versatile word, and would have applied to a woman who had been divorced as well. In the book *The Legend of Thomas Didymus*, James Freeman Clarke suggests that Magdalene had once been one of King Herod's wives, but had been divorced by him. In his version of the story, Magdalene was a high noble woman, and that was why Herod married her. But when he tired of her, he turned her out of his house, and married Herodias, the wife of his brother, making her his wife instead. According to James Freeman Clarke, it was on the grounds of Herod's previous marriage to Magdalene that John the Baptist objected to his new marriage to Herodias, and thus ended up getting beheaded. If Magdalene had been married previously, this alone would have made her a "forbidden woman", although she was probably the perfect candidate in many other ways to be Jesus' bride priestess. Jesus may have decided to go through with the marriage despite this, so as to intentionally commit a "sex crime" for ritual purposes - a sex crime that spawned a royal race, as that of Satan had done.

However, if this were true, John the Baptist would have objected to the marriage, as he would have believed that the marriage would bring a curse upon Jesus' royal line of descendants. (This may explain why Jesus' relationship with John turned chilly towards the end, as the Gospels seem to indicate.) So too would most other priests and rabbis, which may be one of the reasons why this community disdained Jesus so much. Even some of Jesus' own disciples may have felt that he was bringing shame to their movement by marrying Magdalene. Thus they may have chosen not to acknowledge Jesus' marriage or progeny, and to malign the memory of the Magdalene in their writings. The Roman Church followed suit later on for other reasons.

But at the same time, there were undoubtedly many advantages of Jesus and Magdalene getting together. As many authors have suggested, Mary might have been the chief royal heir of her tribe, a descendant of the first King of Israel, Saul. And although Saul's line was usurped by that of David after his death, "the Lord" did make promises to Saul that, in Jesus' time, had yet to be fulfilled - the promise that his seed would also provide a second king to Israel - the last king! For Jesus, connecting himself to the line of Saul may have been integral to meeting the expectations of the prophesized Messiah.

Occult traditions hold that Jesus and Mary Magdalene may have been the leaders of a royal sex magic cult, with Magdalene performing the role of a "temple priestess" or "sacred prostitute." Obviously, if this were true, then the belief system that Jesus represented was well outside of mainstream Judaism. Indeed, he and Magdalene were most likely followers of strange Satanic gods, the worship of whom involved sexual magic. The wedding at Cana may have been at once both a proper marriage ceremony and a sex magic ritual, the purpose of which was to (a) unite the King of the Jews with his royal dynastic bride; (b) anoint him ritually as the king, and; (c) to ritually conceive a royal heir. Thus, the metaphor of Jesus turning water into wine may have symbolized using sex magic to “graft the vines” of two powerful royal bloodlines. Mary Magdalene’s status as a Benjamite princess may have made her especially qualified to act as a sacred prostitute, as the Benjamites were associated specifically with the performance of rituals for strange gods. In Hebrew culture, such practices were equated with harlotry, and the women involved in these practices were thought of as being responsible for corrupting their husbands. This is yet another reason why Magdalene may have been seen as a “whore.” Such women were viewed as “foreigners”, i.e., outside of the covenant with Jehovah, and so were their children. When Israelite men married such women, it was believed that they brought onto the bloodline of their descendants the generational curses of strange gods.

This may impart yet another purpose to the marriage between Jesus and Mary Magdalene. Jesus was the qualified king of the Jews, and his son would have been the qualified king of all Israelites. But perhaps he aspired to something more than that. Perhaps he wished for his descendants to be the kings of foreign lands as well. But in order to set himself up to be king of the Jews, while at the same time setting his son up for something larger, he may have needed to simultaneously fulfill Jehovah’s messianic promises, and at the same time, break his family’s covenant with Jehovah. The "new covenant" had to be created - a covenant which those of gentile races could join into. He needed to break the exclusive hold that Jehovah had on his bloodline, and open it up to the blessings of other gods – gods who, as we now know, were probably his ancestors. Taking Mary Magdalene to wife and breeding the royal heir with her may have fulfilled this purpose.

If Mary Magdalene was indeed Jesus' wife, and indeed was the mother to his messianic heir, then the blessings and curses, the rights and inheritances that she carried in her blood were just as important as his in defining the characteristics of the Merovingian bloodline of France that descended from them. This would have especially been the case if she was a Benjamite, from a tribe practicing matrilineal inheritance. This would explain why she was so revered by the mystery cults of Southern France. But it also explains why they represented her in the form of the Black Madonna. For in the eyes of the Jewish priests of Christ's time, and in the eyes of the later Christian church. the Magdalene's marriage to Jesus would have been seen as bringing a curse upon the bloodline that descended from them. This is one of the reasons that the Church insisted that the bloodline's very existence be kept secret. I have written a book on this subject entitled *The Choice Vine: Mary Magdalene, the Sacred Whore, and the Benjamite Inheritance*, which is due out in late 2004.

The other act which Jesus committed in order to free his people from their obligations to Jehovah was, of course, his final known act – his supposed death on the cross. In the Gospels, Christ lays out in plain language the purpose of his death. He knew that the people of Israel were heavily laden and oppressed by numerous curses that had been laid on them by Jehovah, both as individuals and as a people, because of "sins" that they or their ancestors had committed against Jehovah. Jesus believed that he could somehow "take on their sins", as the scapegoat did at Yom Kippur, and that by being sacrificed on that day, he could take on their punishment himself, instantaneously breaking all of Jehovah's curses on them.[30] But more than that, he believed that this would atone not only for sins committed up until that point, but for any sins committed afterwards as well. Thus, the stranglehold that Jehovah had on these people would be broken. Free from the fear of curses as punishment (including the big curse, eternal damnation in Hell), the Israelites were free to act on their own consciences, instead of according to the strict, nonsensical, and seemingly arbitrary laws of Jehovah. The "New Covenant" which Christians speak of regarding Christ was formed, this time not between Jehovah and the Jews, but between Christ and all mankind, and those who served God were no longer obliged to observe the same restrictions on diet, marriage, etc., as the Jews had done. Now they merely had to follow the simple and enlightened rules of conscience outlined by Jesus in his sermons, which were timeless and universal.

---

[30] Galatians 3:13 states: "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree."

But as a royal scion of the House of David, perhaps aspiring to an even greater throne for his son, would Jesus have sacrificed himself at age thirty-three, even for such a lofty goal? Perhaps not, which is why I am inclined to believe the theory briefly explored in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, which is an old and persistent heresy, stating that Jesus had a substitute die in his place. That way, the same sacrificial purpose of breaking the Jehovah covenant was fulfilled, and Jesus could live on to organize his church (while hiding in exile, of course), and to pass on his royal lineage.

Some of the earliest Christian scriptures have posited that this was the case. The idea is backed up by Jewish and Islamic sources as well. Moreover, the name of the unfortunate victim has been put forth also, and the answer is almost obvious: Judas Iscariot. Of course, if Jesus were to choose one of his disciples to die in his place, he would probably choose the one whom he knew was about to betray him.

The Gospel of Barnabas tells us that when the moment came for Jesus to be arrested, “God” changed the face of Judas into a likeness of Jesus. Thus, the Roman soldiers were tricked into arresting Judas in Christ’s stead.

But there was another disciple of Christ, also names Judas, who is said in apocryphal legend to have been Jesus' actual twin. That apostle is Judas Didymus Thomas, also known as "Doubting Thomas" and "Thomas the Twin." Although biblical scholars, and even the authors of the gospels themselves, have gone to great lengths to stress that Iscariot and Thomas were separate people, there is a great deal of subtle and circumstantial evidence to suggest that they were actually the same figure.

If Christ's own twin brother was sent to die in his place, the symbolic significance of the crucifixion can be seen in an entirely different light. The death of one twin brother in place of another, or the murder of one twin by another, is not an uncommon mythical archetype. The Christian myth would then resemble, even closer than it already does, the myths of Rome, Greece, and Babylon. And the crucifixion, then, can also be seen as a reflection of the Jewish scapegoat ritual of Yom Kippur - in which one goat is sent off into exile to carry the curses of sin away from people, while the other one is sacrificed to atone for sins.

Furthermore, such a hypothesis explains the otherwise inexplicable smear campaigns that were waged via the scriptures against the figures of Judas Thomas and Judas Iscariot - one identified as a "faithless doubter", the other a "betrayer." Also, if Thomas did indeed die at the crucifixion, one cannot ignore the possibility that the recorded sightings of Thomas in

India and elsewhere after the crucifixion were in fact sightings of Jesus impersonating his brother. It is possible, then, that the scriptures attributed to Thomas, including *The Acts of Thomas* and *The Gospel of Thomas*, are instead the only Christian scriptures actually written by Jesus himself.

If such a tradition did exist within the Grail family, it might explain why the Knights Templar purportedly conducted rituals in which they spat upon or urinated on the Christian cross. If they believed this idea, then they undoubtedly rejected the symbol of the cross as a symbol of the lies that had been told about Jesus' death.

With this in mind, new light can be shed on a mysterious bas relief that can be found at the back of the Church of Mary Magdalene at Rennes-le-Chateau, France. It depicts Jesus making his "Sermon on the Mount", as a quote beneath the relief proves. But strangely, at the bottom of the hill he stands on is a little money bag, out of which an object, long presumed to be gold, protrudes. Nobody has ever satisfactorily explained the presence of this money bag on this bas relief. Most of those who have commented on it have claimed it to be a clue left by the church's abbot, Berenger Sauniere, regarding a buried treasure he supposedly found on the church grounds. But it would seem now that this must certainly be Judas' purse. He is always depicted with a moneybag such as this, because he was the treasurer of the twelve apostles, and also because the bag symbolizes the thirty pieces of silver he received from the Sanhedrin in exchange for betraying Jesus. And why is it placed in such a peculiar spot? Judas himself is not even depicted in the relief. But the church confessional is positioned directly under this mural, and a wooden crucifix is set on top, so that, when viewed from a few feet away, the crucifix and the money bag appear to stand right next to one another. Was Sauniere hinting at his belief that it was Judas, not Christ, who hung on the cross? If so, why is the purse shown at the bottom of a hill covered with flowers?

A prevailing theory about the treasure Berenger Sauniere supposedly found is that is somehow constituted "incontrovertible proof" that Christ did not die on the cross, and many think that this proof consists of Christ's own body entombed not in Jerusalem, but in Southern France. Yet if Judas had died in Jerusalem in the place of Jesus, where was he buried? The most obvious answer is what *Acts* and *The Gospel of Matthew* seem to be hinting at: the potter's field, the "field of blood." After all, it is specifically stated in *Matthew* that this field was used for the "burial of strangers." In other words, it is a field of unmarked graves. If the secret of the crucifixion of Judas were to be kept, Judas' grave would have to go unmarked. Perhaps the hill covered with flowers in Sauniere's bas relief represents Judas' grave. If so, then by showing Jesus preaching atop this hill, he is showing that Christ's ministry is built upon the sacrifice of Judas. By placing this directly above the confessional, Sauniere was *confessing* his knowledge of this secret.

Another clue can be found in one of the Stations of the Cross at the church, in which Christ is shown being carried into the tomb at *nighttime*, contrary to scripture. According to *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, this station may depict Christ's still-living body being removed from the tomb by his fellow conspirators. But if my theory is correct, then it was Judas' body, not Jesus', which was stolen away from the tomb by Christ's closest disciples. This is the scene depicted in this Station.

In addition to hinting at his belief in the heresy of Judas' crucifixion, Sauniere also demonstrated his belief in twin Christs. At the front of the church, on either side of the altar, are statues of Mary and Joseph, each holding an identical Christ child, although one appears to have slightly darker hair than the other. A recurring theme in the church involves the multiple depiction of two twin angels, identical in look to the aforementioned twin Christ children, both emerging out of a seashell. And one of Sauniere's unsolved clues that he embedded in his redesign of the church grounds involves the repeated use of the number 22. Could this be indicating "two-two", "double-double", or "twin-twin." This would have to be a reference to Judas Thomas Didymus whose name "Thomas" means "twin" in Hebrew", while "Didymus" means "twin" in Greek.

If Sauniere believed this proposed idea that Judas Iscariot was Christ's twin, and that Christ had tricked his rival brother into dying on the cross in his place, it would have shattered his Christian faith, but it could have also turned him in the direction of Gnostic Christianity and other, even more damnable forms of occultism. Such beliefs would have been regarded by his clerical peers as the highest heresy. These topics are the subject of yet another forthcoming book by me called *The Judas Goat*, also scheduled for release in late 2004.

So in this Gnostic interpretation of the mission of Christ, he saw himself as an incarnation of Cain (Mithras, Seth, etc.), who allowed himself to be symbolically sacrificed in order to free his people from bondage to Jehovah. It is interesting, then, that a common alchemical icon used since the Middle Ages has been a Christian cross with a serpent upon it, identifying Jesus with Satan! This identification is further supported by the concept embraced by Christian cabalists that the cross of Christ is symbolically connected to the Tree of Life or Tree of Knowledge in the Garden of Eden, leading one to conclude that the serpent who lived in the Tree is then the symbolic equivalent of Christ on the cross.

The Satanic, Luciferian, and Baphometic nature of Christ, and of the early Christian church, is a notion supported in Nicholas de Vere's *The Dragon Legacy*. For instance, he writes that, "In *Revelation 22:6*, Jesus…

proclaims himself the bright and Morning Star… a priest-king of Lucifer...” De Vere even tells us Christ’s teachings inspired the witches of medieval Europe:

> *“Witchcraft in Europe and Britain was run by the Templars and Cathars, and provided the groundswell of support at the grassroots level for the Fairy… Grail… Dragon families and the doctrines which made them distinct. Witchcraft is original Christianity, practicing Christian Gnostic Dualism and providing, in their tens of thousands, an army of support for the scions of Christ…”*

According to De Vere, real witchcraft is “Baphometic.” De Vere claims that modern Wicca, which he considers illegitimate, has its origins in the “Baphometic Orders” of Britain, to which, he claimed, British nobles of the Dragon blood belonged to up until the twentieth century, and perhaps still do. They “trace their lineage back through the Templars to Jesus’ original teachings and the culture of the Druids.” In these witchcraft cults, “The central figure was the Baphomet, and the highest sacrament of the ‘Sabbat’ was the Black Mass.” De Vere continues:

"… Royal Witchcraft, or Witchcraft proper, from the early Dark Ages onwards owes as much to its clearly Christian as it does to its direct Druidic, origins. Both, in their original form, and in the publicly disseminated opinion of the Catholic popes, were and are Satanic. Jesus' heredity, and the descent of the Druidic dynasties both derived from an identical Dragon nascence that the Roman Catholics decided was devilish, because the descent of both bloodlines was from the Sumerian Enki who was the Akkadian Samael; the Roman Lucifer and thus the Catholic Satan.

In Jesus' case the Roman church, as do all outsiders who know they are onto a good thing, sanitized his rituals and concealed his descent. All those who continued to follow Jesus' original teachings – like the witches – they burned as 'heretics'… To call a witch a heretic meant that the witch was a heterodox Christian… Witches were 'original Christians' whose knowledge of the true, Druidic nature of Jesus' liberating Christianity had to be quashed at any cost if the Church were to achieve the political and pecuniary supremacy they desired by replacing it with their own enslaving dogma."

In De Vere's worldview, the Black Mass is:

"…the original mass of Jesus which the Catholics later stole and sanitized for public consumption…. The Black Mass had its roots in the ancient alchemical lore of Solomon and was simply a memento of teachings long past and an aide memoire for future generations, a mnemonic which was intended to remind those to come from whence the power and the wisdom derives…

…The Sabbatical Goat of the Black Mass was Chem-Zoroaster [another name for Baphomet], one of the early ancestors of the Dragon families. His symbolic presence at the Mass reminds one that Royal Witchcraft was strictly a family affair.

Witches actually called their 'god' the Antecessor, meaning 'the Ancestor.' This illustrated to later generations of readers that 'Satan', also called by the Witches 'Christ, son Dei', or Jesus Christ, Son of God', was in fact a flesh and blood being…

In the witches of the Royal covens honored Jesus as an ancestor-god, than they must have been Merovingian by descent and thus custodians of the Sang Royale."

On the subject of Baphomet specifically, De Vere writes that:

"Baphomet is a Nephilim… Baphomet is a type of Chem-Zoroaster who is the Quinotaur associated with Meroveus. Baphomet and the Mendes pentagram are genealogical badges."

The Merovingian Mythos

Like Baphomet, the Quinotaur represents the union of opposites. His name includes both the name of Cain ("Quin") and the name of Abel or Baal (the bull, "taurus", or "taur"), perhaps indicating a line of descent stemming from both figures. His aquatic qualities represent not only the sea associations of Satan and Cain, and the entire family of sea-gods and sea-kings from which the Merovingians ultimately descended, but also the fish associations of their more recent and illustrious ancestor, Jesus. Thus the Merovingian blood was connected not only to a figure representing archetypal evil (Satan), but also a figure representing archetypal good (Jesus). This is reflected in the dualistic symbol of the Cross of Lorraine, used by Merovingian descendants of the royal house of Lorraine, and by the Knights Templar. As discussed previously, it is a symbol that can be found in ancient Sumeria symbolizing the word "Kad" or "Gad", meaning

"Lord of the Earth." As a famous poem by French poet Charles Peguy declares:

"The arms of Jesus are the Cross of Lorraine,
Both the blood in the artery and the blood in the vein,
Both the source of grace and the clear fountaine;

The arms of Satan are the Cross of Lorraine,
And the same artery and the same vein,
And the same blood and the troubled fountaine."

The French word "Lorraine" comes from the German word 'Lothringen", which is itself a corruption of "Lohengrin", the name of the "Swan King" who makes an appearance in the Grail legends of France, England, and Germany. His identifying characteristics were that he traveled the world in a magic "swan boat", with a Cross of Lorraine emblazoned upon his shield. Wherever he would land, he would stay for as long as possible, ruling over the local inhabitants, bringing peace and prosperity to the kingdom. But all who knew him were forbidden to ask about his place of origin or family line of descent. When this happened, he would immediately depart in his Swan Boat, never to return again.

Obviously, there was something in his lineage, something perhaps divine or Satanic, which he was forbidden to discuss with those outside of the family.

Some similar mythical elements appear in the story of Lohengrin's descendant, Melusine. This woman was purportedly the daughter of Godfroi de Bouillon, who listed Lohengrin in his genealogy, and who was the man responsible for making the Cross of Lorraine an official insignia for the Knights Templar, which he was one of the founders of. Godfroi de Bouillon was also the "Defender of the Holy Sepulcher" of Jerusalem, and was succeeded by his brother Baldwin, who took on the title "King of Jerusalem." This title was then passed onto Fulk the Black from the French Angevin dynasty[31] (Merovingian descendants), who married Godfroi's daughter, Melusine.

As the story goes, Melusine insisted that Fulk should allow her to sleep alone one night a week, in which she was not to be disturbed. However, curiosity got the better of Fulk, and he burst in on her one of these nights, only to discover that her bottom half had transformed into the tail of a serpent. Upon realizing that she had been discovered, she slithered off, never to be seen again. But she remains in the genealogies of many prominent noble families in Europe, and her son Geoffrey d'Anjou became the first Plantagenet king of England. Geoffrey, and indeed all of the Plantagenet kings, were known for their hot temper, and thus it was said of Geoffrey that "From the Devil he has come, and to the Devil he'll return."[32]

---

[31] In some versions of the Grail romance, Parcival specifically proclaims that he is of Angevin descent.

The Satanic imagery associated with the Angevins and Plantagenets is just a continuation of the Satanic imagery associated with the Merovingians, which, according to this theory, is a tradition that they inherited from their ancestor, Satan himself, through their descent from Jesus Christ, as well as other collateral lines of Satanic descent. Perhaps this explains why the capitol of the Merovingian empire was once called "Satanicum", and why, even though the town's name has now been changed to "Stenay", their coat of arms still bears this image of a horned devil. Perhaps this also explains the Satanic imagery found at Rennes-le-Chateau, including the statue of Asmodeus in the church. There are also nearby landmarks called "the Devil's Armchair" and "the Devil's Fingerprint", and hundreds of years worth of local legends pertaining to the Devil.

So in the course of my research, I have confirmed the true origin of the "divine" and "infernal" nature attributed to the Merovingian bloodline. This was why the Merovingians were considered kings by right of their blood, and not by coronation of the Pope. This is why they were thought to have magical powers. This is why they were said to have been spawned by a semi-divine aquatic creature called the "Quinotaur." This is why Charles Peguy wrote that they carried the blood of both Christ and Satan. This also explains why the Priory of Sion, which purports to be continuing the true and original traditions of Christ, focuses so heavily on things seemingly occult and Hermetic, as Berenger Sauniere and his associates did also. And this would certainly explain why, if Sauniere had stumbled upon this secret, it would have changed his understanding of Christ, Jehovah, and "God" forever.

---

[32] I have already noted the similarity between an alternate spelling of Enoch's name "Anag", or "Ang", and "Angevin", which could then mean "Vine of Enoch."

It does not seem too far-fetched to believe that one of the secrets which Sauniere was initiated into when he joined Emile Hoffet, Abbe Boudet, and Emma Calve's occult group was about the true ancestry of Christ stemming from Cain and Satan. Perhaps, upon learning of the "true Christian", Satanic traditions, he decided to use his parish to set up a "true Christian" Satanic church, perhaps one practicing the old Black Mass of which Nicholas de Vere wrote. We know that Sauniere's parishioners were all royals and nobles, mostly from Merovingian-related bloodlines, and that the peasants in the area went to another church altogether. And if he were true to the traditions of the ancient world, he would have been charging his parishioners a tithe to participate in each mass, as well as any other priestly service he performed. This tithe would not be optional, as it is in Catholic Christian rites, and according to the traditions of the ancient world (including old Judaic traditions), the priest was to use these funds for his own livelihood and enrichment, as well as church business. There was no separation of the two in this more traditional approach. Given the stature of Sauniere's parishioners as noblemen, these tithes were no doubt of significant size. This explains his sudden wealth, and also explains why the church later suspended him as punishment for "selling indulgences." When Sauniere was banned from practicing in his church, he and his parishioners simply took their rituals to another building on the property.

Evidence that this was the source of his wealth can be found in certain letters he sent and received, quoted in *The Templar Legacy*, by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince. These letters also indicate that these were not part of a normal tithe to the Catholic church. When the Bishop of Carcassonne demanded to know the source of Sauniere's income, he wrote in reply:

"I am not obliged… to divulge the names of my donors… To bring them into the open without permission would run the risk of bringing discord to certain families or households… the members of whom gave without their husbands', childrens' or heirs' knowledge."

And in a letter he received from a friend and fellow priest, it said:

"You have had the money. It is not for anybody to penetrate the secret that you keep. If someone has given you the money under natural secrecy, you are obliged to keep it, and nothing can release you from this secrecy…"

If Sauniere set up a Satanic church practicing the Black Mass, and believed that Jesus was a descendant and avatar of Satan, then it is no wonder why his deathbed confession warranted him refusal of Final Unction.

So now we know the significance of the Grail as the "Sangreal", or "royal blood" of Christ, the Merovingians, and their antediluvian, Satanic ancestors. But what of the notion that the "Grail" is in fact a stone – specifically a "stone of light" that fell to Earth from Lucifer's crown as he was tossed out of Heaven? And what of the notion that it was a sacred cup or vessel of some sort? The Grail cannot simply be a bloodline. It cannot even be reduced to a symbol of the secret doctrine of Satan, although it is that as well. It has to be associated with some physical object. And the particular significance of Rennes-le-Chateau has not been explained yet.

This I will do, but first, we must take a look at the concept of the Grail as "the Hidden Stone."

Chapter Six: The Hidden Stone

"Jesus said, 'Show me the stone that the builders rejected: that is the keystone.'"

- *The Gospel of Thomas*

V.I.T.R.I.O.L

We have talked previously about the symbol of the Grail as the "Lapsit Exillis": the "stone that fell from Heaven", knocked out Lucifer's crown during the battle with Jehovah. The stone seems to represent something that was *passed down* from the gods to Man, and preserved from the waters of the Flood. There is even a cathedral in Geneva, Switzerland that purports to house the plate and cup used by Jesus at the Last Supper, which was supposedly carved from the stone from Lucifer's crown. These items were discovered in a chamber underneath the Cathedral, hidden by a mosaic depicting the symbol of the Black Sun. The legend connected to these items, and the stone they came from, relate that that the stone bounced off of Cain's head as it fell to Earth, leaving a scar on his forehead in the shape of a red serpent: the Mark of Cain, supposedly. Other Jewish legends relate that the “mark” was really a horn, bringing to mind the horned crowns that were worn by the ancient god-kings. Thus we may surmise that the story of the stone fallen from Heaven represents the descent of kingship from Heaven to Earth, from god to man, from Satan to Cain, and from the antediluvian world to the post-diluvian world. This is what the Grail as stone represents.

Another permutation of this idea is the image of Lucifer as a star fallen from Heaven, the “Morning Star”, or so he is called. Freemasons represent this in their symbol of the “Blazing Star” that shoots from Heaven. Even today, shooting stars are considered lucky, a fond remembrance of their association with Satan and Cain, the benefactors of mankind.

The story of the Emerald Tablet of Hermes appears to be yet another incarnation of the Grail as stone. Hermes, as we know, was the Greek trickster god credited with inventing writing, mathematics, and alchemy – the equivalent of the Egyptian Thoth. He is said to have inscribed the secrets of alchemy upon an Emerald Tablet, which was then passed down to select mortal initiates. Many authors have equated this story with an apocryphal tale about the biblical prophet Enoch, who is said to have copied down the esoteric secrets of the Watchers from the “Tablet of Heaven” onto a sacred stone tablet given to him by the Watchers.

Therefore, just like the jewel from Lucifer's crown, Enoch's tablet was a "stone from Heaven." This makes perfect sense, seeing that Lucifer's stone is believed to have fallen from his crown during the war with Jehovah, which, according to my thesis, Enoch was a participant in and witness to. Enoch's tablet is said to have been carried on board the Ark during the Flood, and according to my theory, Enoch is the same as Noah. Therefore it was Enoch who created the "Tablet" out of the "Stone" that his father Cain inherited from his father, Satan. He then built the Ark to bring it safely through the Flood. *The Legends of the Jews* tells us that the Tablet was actually a "Holy Book" from Heaven, given to Adam by the angel Raziel. This was passed on generationally to Noah, who used the wisdom he acquired from it to build the Ark.

In the post-diluvian world, the wisdom inscribed on this tablet was, say the ancients, essential for the rebuilding of human civilization, and for the perpetuation of the ancient occult mysteries. One such "mystery" which Enoch's tablet undoubtedly contained the keys to is the science of alchemy. It is interesting to note that in *The Book of Enoch*, it says that the Watchers gave Enoch some sort of food or drink which caused him to be able to live forever[33], just like the alchemical "Elixir of Life", made from the Philosopher's Stone.

Amazingly, the alchemical Philosopher's Stone is also called the "Lapsit Exillis", as well as, sometimes, "the Hidden Stone." This last term refers to the notion that the Philosopher's Stone is hidden underground, literally in "the center of the Earth." This is the meaning behind the alchemical motto "V.I.T.R.I.O.L.", an acronym for Latin words that translate to: "Visit the Interior Parts of the Earth; by Rectification Thou Shalt Find the Hidden Stone." Rectification is the process of dissolving the "Prima Materia", supposedly the original matter from which all other forms were made, and extracting the Philosopher's Stone from it. The Stone represents the divine spark that brings life to material existence, and is thought to be "hidden" within matter (thus, metaphorically, "in the center of the Earth.") The Prima Materia is signified in alchemy either as a skull and crossbones (the "Death's head"), or as a "Black Sun", which after rectification becomes white (the same metaphor as turning lead into gold.)[34]

---

[33] The Sumerian Flood hero Upnapishtim, who was the pilot of the Ark in their version of the story, was also given the "Bread of Immortality" by the gods, further evidence of the identity of Noah and Enoch.

[34] In more than one tradition, the stone that fell from Heaven was originally a white stone, but became corrupted and turned black at the moment that Abel's blood hit the ground after being slain by Cain. Such a story surrounds the Muslim Kaaba stone, for instance.

This is very interesting, for it links up with the “Hollow Earth” theory that has been proposed by numerous people throughout the last few hundred years (and which is itself based on ancient legends.) Generally speaking, this is the belief that the Earth’s crust is actually a great deal thinner than modern scientists claim, beyond which exists not a mantle or a core, but a vast hollow space within which civilizations unknown to history have built great cities, foremost of which is supposedly called “Agartha.” These stories are based upon mystical Tibetan traditions which speak of such a subterranean city. And within the center of Agartha, at the very center of the Earth, supposedly resides the Black Sun, a ball of energy which allegedly radiates artificial light to illuminate the inner world. This light is called “the Green Ray”, linking it symbolically with the Emerald Tablet.

An interesting quote from the magazine *Vaincre* (published by Pierre Plantard and his pre-Priory of Sion mystical group Alpha Galates), demonstrates that they also believed in the Green Ray, and of the significance of green in general. In *A Ray of Light*, by “Alpha Rene”, it says:

“That we have received letters written in green ink is already in itself very significant, but that our copies of this periodical have been sent

to us with a green crayon mark upon them serves to explain the interest that certain people have been taking in our activities. Since that is the way things are, let us shed a ray of light on this famous green mark: allow me to quote here two paragraphs from the volume La Grand Verite (The Great Truth) *by Pierre de France:*

'The Green Dragon Cerberus is the Order of Lucifer created by the new alliance that the Dragon has forged with the Reckless Princes *through the mediation of the Cerberuses... Such is the supreme apex of the Pyramid, the three sides of which (symbolizing the three heads or flames) - the Christic, the theosophical and the Masonic - are only so many mirrors that reflect, from three different angles, the same summit: the Ram*[35]*, that is to say the head of the Green Dragon.*

The green line that acts as a link between the nations is therefore only the expression of the supreme apex... ."

The inhabitants of Agartha are called by some authors "Children of the Black Sun", and are said to worship this luminary as their divine ancestor. The Black Sun is equated by many with Saturn. The inner hierarchy of the Third Reich believed in the Hollow Earth and worshipped the Black Sun. (In fact, the inner order of Himmler's S.S. was called "the

---

[35] The ram is, again, a symbol of Baphomet, or Cain/Seth.

Black Sun.") So too, perhaps, did the Merovingian kings, for at least one author, Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, has documented Nazi claims that the Black Sun was a "Merovingian symbol." Perhaps the Merovingians, like the Agarthans, believed they were carrying the blood of the "Black Sun", Saturn or Satan.

In this way, the Lapsit Exillis can be seen as a representation of the divine seed that was passed down from the Watchers to their human descendants. The "descent" of the stone from Heaven to Earth can be likened to the "descent" of the Grail blood from the divine kings to the mortal kings. In many accounts the Grail stone, or Philosopher's Stone, it is described as being alive, and as having descendants. In Nicolas Flamel's *Original du Desire*, he writes: "There is an occult stone, concealed and buried in the depths of a fountain… This stone… is animated, having the virtue of procreating and engendering…" Likewise, Wolfram von Eschenbach's *Parzival* opens with the line, "This is the book of thy descent. This is the book of the Sangreal." In this story, the Grail stone is covered with writing describing the names of the members of the Grail family who have been called to serve the Grail. There is, in the same vein, a Masonic tradition regarding a perfect "cubic stone" (obviously analogous to the Grail) which issues forth blood. And in the

New Testament, Christ is said to stand upon the "Rock of Zion", which is thought to represent his descent from King David.

In many cases the stone is credited with giving life to the inanimate, as in the case of the Philosopher's Stone. This "death and resurrection" symbolism appears to refer to the Grail blood being carried through the Deluge by Cain and Enoch. According to my theory, it was they who nursed civilization back to "life" after it had all but "died" during the Flood, and Cain took on this resurrection symbolism when he allowed his old image to die and be reborn as Seth. So that is why the "stone from Heaven" is thought to be able to raise the dead. As Ignatius Donnelly writes:

> *"We find that Ouranus, the first god of the people of* Atlantis, *devised Baetulia, contriving stones that moved as having life, which were supposed to fall from Heaven. These stones were probably magnetic loadstones; in other words, Ouranus, the first god of Atlantis, devised the Mariner's compass."*

Furthermore, earlier in the same chapter Donnelley says that the Egyptians referred to the lodestone as "the bone of Hareori", and iron "the bone of Typhon." Hareori and Typhon were both descendants of Rhea, the goddess of the Earth. Donnelly continues:

> "*Do we find in this curious designation of iron and loadstone as 'bones of the descendants of the Earth' an explanation of that otherwise inexplicable Greek legend about Deucalion 'Throwing the bones of the Earth behind him, when instantly men rose from the ground, and the world was repeopled [after the Flood]?"*

Perhaps we can now begin to understand the Masonic notion of the "stone from Heaven", which in their rituals is said to have been lost in ancient times. Sometimes this is implied to have occurred during the Flood, while at other times it is indicated that it was lost upon the death of Hiram Abiff (whose name is a permutation of Hermes.) Thus they use a "substitute" stone in their rituals, made in the likeness of the original, but not "perfect", as the original stone is said to be.[36] Could it be that the stone represents Satan and the Titanic gods, who were cast from their thrones, but who passed their seed onto their mortal descendants, so that those descendants could act in their place – as substitutes?

---

[36] The same is said about the "Lost Word of Freemasonry", the real Masonic password, for which a substitute is also used in their rituals.

In this context, the stone easily morphs into a phallic symbol, as in the story of Osiris. You may recall that after being murdered by his brother Set (a corrupted version of the Cain and Abel story), Osiris was chopped up and dumped in the Nile. Later, all of the parts were rediscovered by his sister-wife Isis, except for the penis, which was substituted. She then used his dead body to conceive the child Horus. Julius Evola, in *The Mystery of the Grail*, sees in this post-mortem coitus a hidden reference to the repopulation of the Earth after the Flood.

In Greek myth, prior to the fall of the Titans and the usurpation of kingship by Zeus and the Olympian gods, there was another revolution that preceded it. This was when Kronos (whom we know is Satan, or Enki) purportedly dethroned his own father, Ouranos (a.k.a Anu, Oannes, Uranus, etc.) During the battle between them, Ouranos was castrated. The penis was cast into the sea and, as the story goes, created a cloud of sea foam from which the goddess Aphrodite (the same as Isis or Venus) emerged.[37] Up until that point, Ouranos had been the king of Heaven, but as Edith Hamilton writes in *Mythology*, “From that time on, for untold ages, Cronus… was lord of the universe.”

---

[37] Some authors believe that this is a muddled remembrance of Zeus castrating Kronos.

The descent of the flood waters from Heaven to Earth is also representative of the descent of the divine seed. In *The Book of Enoch* we read of the Flood:

"In those days shall punishment go forth from the Lord of Spirits; and the receptables of water which are above the heavens shall be opened, and the fountains likewise, which are under the heavens and under the earth. All the waters which are in the heavens and above them, shall be mixed together. The water which is above heaven shall be the male; And the water which is under the earth shall be female; and all shall be destroyed who dwell upon the earth, and who dwell under the extremities of heaven."

Clearly the Flood itself is being likened to this insemination, when the waters from above meet the waters below. The sky was literally falling. Heaven and Earth were becoming one. The divine wisdom (symbolized by the celestial waters) poured down onto Satan's human offspring, as his seed had poured into the human womb. Also, in *The Book of Enoch*, the Flood is sent as divine retribution for the sins of the Watchers, who bred with mortal women unlawfully. From the description of his birth in this text, where he is described as being "like the angels", it is clear that Noah (whom we know is Enoch) is one of the products of this unlawful breeding. In fact, in all of the flood myths throughout the world, the pilot of the "Ark" that saves humanity is a son of the gods (or daughter, in some cases). And in many of these instances, the god from which he descends is that culture's equivalent of either Satan or Cain, which is why H.P. Blavatsky described the biblical Noah as a "Saturn archetype", giving him the same associations as his father and grandfather. Because Saturn/Satan was the forefather of Cain and Enoch, who were responsible for preserving the royal seed through the Flood, and because he was the true ancestor of the first human kings, Saturn was sometimes called "the Forgotten Father." It is fitting, then, that in his book *Aion*, C.G. Jung associated Kronos, or Saturn with the Fisher King in the Grail stories. In some versions of the tale, the king's genital wound is especially sore when Saturn is high in the heavens. Like Kronos or Cain, the Fisher King represents the Forgotten Father, whom all the characters in the story are related to, but they are not aware of it.

We have examined the concept of the Grail as "that which descends." But as a cup or vessel, the Grail is also the container which receives and preserves that which descends. As the cup of Christ, the Grail preserved the blood of the Savior that dripped from his wounds. As the womb of Mary Magdalene, the Grail preserved the seed and bloodline of Christ . Like the Emerald Tablet, the Grail cup is sometimes said to bear ancient inscriptions, making it also the carrier of esoteric secrets, “passed down”, just like the bloodline, from gods to men.

Author Howard Buechner believed that the Grail cup was analogous to the cup of Melchizedek, the priest-king of Salem, who used that cup to share bread and wine with Abraham in the Bible. Buechner said that this cup was “handed down by God”, and inscribed with the hieroglyphic language of ancient Sumer. The message it bore said: “This is the cup of El, the One God whose name is Yahweh or I am that I am.” This statement would seem to be verified by L.A. Waddell, who writes that the Holy Grail was originally a trophy stone-bowl that was engraved with “the earliest known specimen of Sumerian writing.” He suggests that this bowl was the center of religious worship in Eden while it was being ruled over by Baal or Abel, but that Cain stole it from Eden at some point during the war with Abel. If this has any kernel of truth to it, then perhaps the bowl was in some way a symbol of kingship or sovereignty, which was being unlawfully wielded by Abel, and rightfully belonged to Cain.

The Grail is sometimes depicted as a stone within a cup, making it a hermaphroditic symbol – both male and female, womb and seed. One can see this depicted on the walls of Chartres cathedral, in which a stone is depicted protruding from a chalice, and on the altar of the church at

Rennes-le-Chateau, where the Sun (a Grail symbol) is shown descending into a chalice (with waves of water bubbling up underneath). This is fascinating, because the word "Grail" can be translated as either "cup" or "stone" in a very literal way. Nazi Grail researcher Otto Rahn believed that the word "Grail" came from "gorral", which he claimed was an ancient term. He said that "gorr" meant "stone" and "al" meant "a splinter or stylus with which to write." Together they meant "precious engraved stone." But having looked at the Sumerian syllables, I have found another definition as well. The word "gar" in Sumerian means "vessel" or "bowl." This is the basis for the Egyptian word "qar", meaning "drinking pot." The syllable "al" means "all" or "totality", and that of course is where we get our word "all." It was also the root for "Allah", or "El", meaning "Lord." So the term "Graal" in Sumeria would mean "Cup of All" or "Cup of El" – that is, "Vessel of God."

The Egyptian symbol for the word "qar" brings to mind some interesting connotations. It is written as an inverted omega symbol. "Omega", of course, is the final letter of the Greek alphabet, and has been used in common parlance for centuries to signify "the end" of something, just as "alpha", the first Greek letter, signifies "the beginning." If an inverted omega symbol signifies a vessel full of water, then the omega symbol could be thought to represent the Flood – the vessel being overturned. Then it would truly signify “the end” – the disaster which ended civilization for a time. Since the letter “alpha”, or “A”, resembles a mountain peak, perhaps it can be thought to symbolize the Mount of Refuge that the Ark landed on during the Flood. This mountain would then symbolize the “alpha” – the point from which life, and civilization, sprang anew. Incidentally, these two symbols can also be seen to represent the Grail both as a stone (the “alpha” symbol, the mountain), and as a cup (the “omega” symbol, the vessel). The concept of the Grail as a stone within a cup has led author Graham Hancock to theorize that the Ark of the Covenant may in fact be the Grail, as it is a sacred vessel (a box) with magical powers which holds sacred stones – the Tablets of Testimony supposedly handed down by God to Moses. In occult lore, these tablets are equated with the Emerald Tablet of Hermes. There is a legend stating that Moses acquired the Emerald Tablet from the Priests of Egypt prior to the Exodus, and later passed it on to his sister Miriam. This brings to mind some interesting facts about the word “Ark”, and the concepts with which it is associated.

Like “Grail”, the word “ark” means “container and preserver.” We see the word “ark” being used this way not only in reference to the Ark of the Covenant, but also the Ark of Noah, which purportedly preserved the seed of humanity, divine kingship, and civilization from the Flood (as well as the Emerald Tablet). The word "ark" seems to have been used by many cultures throughout history to refer to a divine sea-going vessel. Sometimes it also referred to heavenly luminaries, which ancient man equated with boats, for they saw the night sky as an extension of the ocean, and called it "the waters of Heaven." "Argha" was the celestial boat of the Hindus, while the heavenly Boat of Ra was called the "Bark." Hercules, who sailed the night in the "Cup of Helios" (the Sun-boat), was sometimes referred to as "Arkaleus." "Argo" was the name of another mythological ship in which the Greek gods sailed (most notably, Jason and the Argonauts), and which itself was said to be made from the "guiding timber" of the "ark" of Deucalion, the Greek Flood hero. And quite notably, in other instances, "arks" are referred to as containers of divine seed. In the Masonic ritual of the "Prince of the Tabernacle", a box called an "ark" is proceeded around the room which is said to contain "the organs of generation of Osiris." Likewise, in the Grecian "Mysteries of Samothrace", a similar myth was re-enacted. As Albert Pike described it, "The Diosairi, tutelary *Deities of Navigation*, with Venus, were invoked." [Emphasis added.] Pike also wrote that the ceremony involved the mimicked the death of someone "slain by his brothers, who fled into Etruria, carrying with him the chest or Ark that contained his genitals: and there the phallus and the sacred Ark were adored."

Et in Arcadia Ego

We are now led to yet another meaning of the word "ark": a tomb, specifically the tomb of a long-lost father god. In Hebrew, the word "ark" means "coffin", which is strange, considering that the Bible describes Jehovah as actually living inside the Ark of the Covenant. But in some Jewish legends, the Ark of Noah was said to contain the body of Adam, making it a floating tomb.

This story is related in the apocryphal Christian text, *The Book of the Cave of Treasures*. In this embellished retelling of the biblical narrative, "Paradise" or "Eden" appears to be, in general, a region of mountains said to be located "in the center of the earth", and more specifically, one mountain in particular. In fact, the "Garden of Eden" in which Adam and Eve live in this story appears to actually be a subterranean cavern inside of this mountain. The text speaks of Adam and Eve's "expulsion… from the regions of Paradise to the Earth that is outside it: …and when Adam and Eve had gone forth from Paradise, the door of Paradise was shut."

But the place in which they are exiled to is just yet another cave within this same holy mountain, which is “in the center of the earth.” The location was christened “the Cave of Machpelah”, or “the Cave of Treasures.” Adam and his son Seth build a temple there to worship God. They and their descendants worship there, and are buried there, for the next several generations. When the Flood occurs, Noah is instructed by God to put the body of Adam into the Ark (so that it doesn’t wash away in the Flood). Afterwards, Noah instructs his son Shem:

“When I am dead, go into the Ark, wherein thou hast been saved, and bring out the body of our father Adam... and place it in the center of the earth... and let no man have knowledge of what thou doest... take heed that this story is never mentioned again in all your generations...”

Inside this same cave other biblical patriarchs were purportedly buried, up to and including Jacob. *The Book of the Cave of Treasures* says that the “secrets of the Church” were also buried therein. This may be the mythological equivalent of the Tablet of Enoch/Hermes, which supposedly now resides in a similar location.

The Emerald Tablet’s current whereabouts are most often described as being hidden within Hermes’ tomb. Hermes is said to never die, but to fall into periods of prolonged sleep, from which he is awakened at regular intervals by the periodic rediscovery of his tomb.[38] The same is said of the tomb of the mythical namesake of the Rosicrucian brotherhood, Christian Rosenkreutz. The details of the Rosenkreutz tomb can be found in the Adeptus Minor ritual of the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. Here the tomb is described as "within the mountain of Albi-Genos" which is "in the center of the Earth." The tomb is "lit by an inner sun", just as the Black Sun lights the inner world in the Hollow Earth theory. The tomb is said to be symbolic of the tomb of Osiris, and indeed, the Egyptians described Osiris' tomb as being illuminated by a subterranean sun.[39] The walls of the Rosenkreutz tomb are covered with strange hieroglyphs, and it contains "mystery writings" detailing alchemical secrets (reminiscent, obviously, of the Tablet of Hermes). Within the tomb, Rosenkreutz' body lies undecayed, sleeping but not dead, and when his tomb was supposedly discovered in 1484, 120 years after his alleged death, it was not only Rosenkreutz, but the Hermetic secrets contained within that were resurrected. To quote Christopher Macintosh in *The Rosicrucians*, "This is more or less the time in which the Rosicrucian movement begins to be known in history, as if it literally sprang from beneath the ground."

---

[38] Ranked among the purported discoverers of the Hermetic tomb are both the alchemist Paracelsus and Alexander the Great.

[39] A fascinating Rosicrucian seal exists demonstrating this concept. It features a man within a rose, which is itself within a sun, all of which is further shown to be placed within the center of a pyramid structure.

It should not be surprising that this notion finds an analogy in the Grail legend, where it is symbolized by the "Dolorous Stroke" that wounds the Fisher King in his genitals. At this point the king loses the ability to properly perform his regal function (which is symbolized by his loss of virility, i.e., ability to pass on his royal blood), and the entire kingdom falls into a deathless sleep which is known as "the Wasteland." This may connect with the archetype of the fall of the Garden of Eden, or the fall of Atlantis via the Flood. The king thereafter must continue to nurse his festering wound, which will not heal, and no matter how much he wants to, he can never die, until the chosen knight comes to liberate him by learning the secrets of the Grail and taking up the mantle of kingship himself. His kingdom exists in a similar state of perpetual malaise, until the coming of a chosen hero, who will liberate the dying king and resume the proper function of kingship, thus bringing stability and equilibrium to the land. Again, these are common themes in world mythology. Most notably similar to the story of the Fisher King is that of his Greek mythological counterpart, Kronos, who, writes Julius Evola:

> *"…after having been the Lord of this earth, the King of the Golden Age, was dethroned and castrated (that is, deprived of the power to beget, to give life to new stock). He still lived on, though asleep, in a region located in the Far North, closer to the Arctic Sea, which was also called the Cronic Sea."*

It is also noteworthy that Kronos is sometimes called "the Hidden One", thus alluding perhaps to his seclusion inside of the Earth, in which he was purportedly imprisoned by Zeus.[40]

Thus, the sleeping, half-dead gods who inhabit the subterranean tombs of Kronos, Hermes, Osiris, and even Christian Rosenkreutz could all metaphorically represent the same fallen kingdom, which, having lost the Grail and its mandate to rule, has occulted itself, gone underground, become invisible, or fallen asleep, until such time as the proper individual shall come along to liberate it. Then the sunken kingdom shall rise, the dreaming lord shall awake, the phoenix emerge from the ashes, and the proper universal balance be restored. In the meantime, the secret royal doctrine is kept alive by the initiates/descendants of that sleeping god (the same doctrine that is written upon the Grail in its form as the Emerald Tablet, or “Gorral”).

---

[40] Author E. Richmond Hodges states that the names "Kronos" and "Saturn" both comes from root words meaning "to flee into hiding." The Egyptian god Osiris was also sometimes referred to as "the Hidden One."

The idea of the sacred tomb comes up again in regards to the concepts of “Arcadia” and “the underground stream”, so central to the Grail saga. Nicolas Poussin, in his painting *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, depicted a group of shepherds pointing to a tomb that was inscribed with the phrase “Et in Arcadia Ego.” This was believed by Henry Lincoln to depict a tomb that, until recently, still existed in the region of Rennes-le-Chateau. But the authors of *The Tomb of God* (Richard Andrews and Paul Schellenberger) think that the real tomb which Poussin was alluding to is not the one that Henry Lincoln found, but one that they say is buried between the twin peaks of nearby Mt. Cardou, which they believe to be the tomb of the one and only Jesus Christ. Their interpretation of the word “Arcadia” - specifically in the context of that phrase - is reached by breaking the word down phonetically, and then translating not just the letters, but the sounds from the Latin, thereby arriving at the result, “the tomb of God.” They write:

“It is not too difficult to imagine how Arcadia (arcar-deear - the contemporary pronunciation, not the modern one) could be identified with the sound of Arca Dei (arcar-dayee), thus suggesting an anagram. Arca

Dei would mean 'Ark of God'... This, combined with the quite excessive emphasis of the idea of 'tomb'... convinces us that we are to interpret 'ARCA' as 'tomb'; this would be another legitimate translation of the word."

Using similar methods, they translate the entire phrase, *"Et in Arcadia Ego"* into an anagram which phonetically means, in Latin, "I touch the tomb of God." By adding the Latin word "sum" at the end of "Et in Arcadia Ego", which they believe to be implied by the sentence, and creating another anagram from that, they further render it, "I touch the tomb of God, Jesus." This tomb, they believe, can be found at Rennes-le-Chateau.

I concur with their interpretation of the word "Arcadia" as "Ark of God." But is it really the tomb of Jesus that lies at the heart of Rennes-le-Chateau? Is this the secret which has been preserved by some of the world's most elite and powerful secret societies for millennia? The mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau, and for that matter, the roots of Southern France's esoteric tradition would appear in fact to be much older than 2000 years. References to Jesus and his presumed wife, Mary Magdalene, are almost always coupled with or superimposed over images of other, far more ancient figures.

Is there any evidence that “Et in Arcadia Ego” is a signpost pointing towards the tomb of a much older god? To find such evidence, it might be helpful to examine the word “Arcadia” in another light. We are familiar with the use of word plays in regards to the Grail mystery, often with multiple layers of meaning. Since most languages, including Latin and Greek, have their ultimate roots in a form of proto-Sumerian, many words from languages both ancient and modern still retail the intrinsic meaning of the Sumerian syllables from which they are derived. Given that the Priory of Sion and the Grail families have been, I believe, the preservers of ancient traditions going back to Sumeria and, even further, to Atlantis, it is not inconceivable that members of the Renaissance “underground stream” may have been aware of these intrinsic meanings. The word “Arcadia”, then, can be thought of as containing the Sumerian syllables “Ar” and “Kad.”

When viewed in this way, patterns begin to unfold. “Ar” is symbolized in Sumerian hieroglyphs by, of all things, a pentagram. From this word came the name of the Sumerian city-state, Ur. From “Ar” the words “Aryan” and “Iran” were derived. Now the “Ar” sign, sometimes just referred to as “the Plough Sign”, actually has two very specific definitions. One explains the translation of “Plough”, and it literally means “to cause dirt to go up”, indicating digging in the earth. Of course, the plough was something that we are told was invented by Cain. Yet "Ar" has another meaning in Sumerian - one that is very pertinent to our examination, and that is "To shackle, to imprison."

In the stories of both Kronos and Satan, after they lost the heavenly battle, they were imprisoned in the underworld. So Kronos' tomb, in which he lies not dead but sleeping, is also a prison. Esoteric legends state that Kronos was shackled and bound to the underworld within a pentacle. It can hardly be a coincidence that the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau, which so many people believe contain a sacred tomb, form the shape of a pentagram (as will soon be discussed), or that this shape also shows up in the geometry of *The Shepherds of Arcadia.*

With this in mind, it is worthwhile to examine the prefix "Arc" in Latin a bit more. In a Latin dictionary, the first word we encounter in the "Arc" family is "Arca", which Andrews & Schellenberger have translated as "tomb." It does indeed mean that, but it also means "a cell for close imprisonment." This is amazing: "Arca" means both "prison" *and* "tomb." Kronos' title of "the Hidden One" and his burial within this secret prison/tomb may relate to the Latin word "arceo", meaning "to protect, keep safe", or "to hinder, prevent." From this we get the word "arcane", which literally means "concealed." In *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, one suggested interpretation of "Et in Arcadia Ego" was an anagram, "I

Tego Arcana Dei", which means: "Begone, I conceal the secrets of God." Interestingly, one of the meanings of the Sumerian king title "Kad" (the root of the second syllable in "Arcadia") is "be strong, protect, save", remarkably similar to the definition of the Latin word "arceo."

Thus, the intrinsic Sumerian root meanings of the syllables in the word "Arcadia" seem to contain a message pertaining to the prison/tomb of Kronos. "Et in Arcadia Ego" could then be interpreted to mean: "And I am in the tomb (and prison) of a god." The use of this phrase in conjunction with Rennes-le-Chateau a la *The Shepherds of Arcadia* seems to be indicating that this tomb is somewhere within that region's pentagonal mountain structure.

In this context it is essential to note that according to a Jewish legend, Cain and his descendants were imprisoned inside of a subterranean realm called "the Arka", which, although entirely underground, still "receives some light from the Sun." The legend states that the Earth literally "opened up beneath Cain, and the four generations sprung from Cain", and swallowed them up. Louis Ginzberg writes in *The Legends of the Jews* that "The Arka was surrendered to the Cainites forever, as their perpetual domain."

The Venusberg and the Tomb of Hercules

In the South of France there are a number of mountains in which gods or semi-divine heroes are purportedly buried. During WWII, when France was occupied by the Nazis, a young German author, researcher and SS Lieutenant named Otto Rahn was sent by the Reich to Southern France to look for the Holy Grail, which many in the Nazi hierarchy were eager to possess. The Nazis, it will be recalled, also believed whole-heartedly in the theory of the Hollow Earth, and sent expeditions down to Antarctica looking for the entrance. Furthermore, the Nazis had great admiration for the heretical Cathars, especially their disciplined lifestyle, vegetarian diet, and sophisticated Gnostic theology. In fact, there were elements within the Nazi hierarchy who were hoping to resurrect the Cathar religion. So it was only natural that Otto Rahn would go looking for the Holy Grail at the place where the Cathars were said to have left it - Montsegur. He also knew that in the Grail romances of the Middle Ages, the Grail is said to reside in a castle at the top of “Montsalvat”, which Rahn believed to be the same as Montsegur. One of the reasons for this was the similarity of the names. “Montsegur” means “mountain of security” and “Montsalvat” means “mount of salvation.” So Rahn stayed in Southern France for a number of years, off and on between 1928 and 1931, exploring the caves of Montsegur and the tunnels of the surrounding Languedoc, even Rennes-le-Chateau. Interestingly, another group of people were also exploring Montsegur at this same time. This group was known as the “Polaires”, a secret mystical society (influenced by Rosicrucian and Martinist teachings) that at one time included the author Rene Guenon.[41] And what were they looking for at Montsegur? Why, none other than the tomb of Christian Rosenkreutz, which according to a local newspaper, they suspected to be in the nearby ruined castle of Lordat.

More details on this can be found in Colonel Howard Buechner’s *Emerald Cup - Ark of Gold: The Quest of S.S. Lt. Otto Rahn of the Third Reich.* According to Buechner, Otto Rahn did discover something in the caves around Montsegur, just as Parzival had discovered the Holy Grail in a cave near Montsalvat. Buechner says that Rahn found the landscape to parallel exactly that of Montsalvat in Wolfram von Eschenbach’s *Parzival*, and Buechner writes: “The grotto and certain other rock formations in the story bear the same names as those in a massive cave near Montsegur.” It was the clues in Eschenbach’s book which, according to Buechner, led Rahn to make his first awesome discovery. Writes Buechner:

---

[41] Guenon wrote a book called *The Lord of the World* about the legendary kingdom of Agartha at the center of the Earth.

"He explored the grottoes of an area known as Sabarthez, notably the grottoes of Ornolac and the massive cavern of Lombrives. Here he found a huge chamber which was known to the local mountain people as the 'Cathedral' because it had served as a meeting place for the ancient Cathars. In the main hall was a great stalagmite known as the 'Tomb of Hercules.' In a third grotto, that of Fontenet, was a stalagmite which was white as snow. It was called the 'Altar'... Deep within the grottoes of the Sabarthez he found chambers in which the walls were covered with characteristic symbols of the Knights Templar, side by side with the well-known emblems of the Cathars... One very interesting image which had been carved into the stone wall of a grotto was clearly a drawing of a lance. This depiction immediately suggested the bleeding lance which appears over and over again in Arthurian legends, and which is, of course, the Holy Lance which pierced the side of Christ at the crucifixion."

Curiously, there is a line in *Le Serpent Rouge* that appears to be referencing the very same cave - albeit in a much more cryptic way - complete with the emblems depicted on the wall. It reads:

"It is not by the magical strength of ***HERCULES*** *that one deciphers these mysterious symbols engraved by observers of the past."*

The idea of the tomb of Hercules being located within Montsegur is interesting, for the tomb of Christian Rosenkreutz, said to be located "in the center of the Earth", is specified in the Golden Dawn ritual as being inside the "mountain of Albi-genos." This is amazing, considering that the Cathars were called "Albigensians." Clearly, the myths of the tombs of Hercules and Christian Rosenkreutz are connected in some way.

Pyrrha's name is related to the root word for fire: "pyr." Fittingly, both Deucalion and Pyrrha are directly related to Prometheus, who first brought fire to Earth. Pyrrha is said to have been named so because of her fire-red hair. Because "pyr" means "fire", the word "pyramid" has been translated to mean "fire in the middle." There is a much older, Sumerian word which also means "fire within", and it was a title used by Cain (as well as his son Enoch). This title was "Ag", and as I discussed earlier, it became incorporated into the name "Azag" used by Cain, which is related to his other name, "Azazel."

The Lord of the Mountain

This association of Cain with fire, specifically with "fire within", has to do with the association of the Djinn (descendants of Azazel or Cain) with volcanoes, and with blacksmithing. The Djinn were said to have emerged from the volcanic mountains inside which they lived to teach metallurgy and other crafts to mankind. In fact, in Cappadocia (modern Turkey) there are a series of so-called "Fairy Towers", which are conical, volcanic rocks, inside which temples have been carved, that were believed to have housed the Djinn. These and other similar volcanic structures, which can be found throughout Turkey, Iran and Kurdistan, are still used by members of the Yezidi sect when performing their rituals to "Shaitan."

In this same location, in an ancient city called Derinkuyu, there is a vast network of tunnels connecting thirty-six "underground cities", as they are called, which are believed to have been built by and resided in by Djinn. These tunnels and "cities" span miles underground, and it is estimated that they could have housed up to 200,000 people. It is evident that someone did live in them at one point, but no one is sure who.

Another permutation of the myth of Cain as a blacksmith god is the Roman figure of Vulcan, sometimes spelled "Vulcain", who lived inside of volcanic Mr. Ertha. Indeed, it is from his name that we get the word "volcano." Vulcan, like Cain, is said to have invented metalsmithing, and to have spawned a race of giants called Cyclopeses whom he used to work on his metallurgy projects, and when building massive monuments. His consort was Venus.

The closest Greek equivalent of Vulcan is Hephaestus, possessing identical attributes. He is said to have fathered a race of "blacksmith gods" called the Kabiri, who are almost universally considered to be identical with the Djinn. You may recall that one of Hephaestus' sons was Erichthonius, the first king of Athens, and obviously the same figure as Enoch. It is fitting, then, that Enoch is associated with the science of alchemy. The root word "chem." comes from "kham", meaning "black", and originally referred to the forging of metals (among other things, perhaps). It is for this reason that magic and alchemy are called "the black arts."

The idea that Cain and his descendants might have actually lived inside of a mountain or mountains for a period of time, as they lived in the Arka in Jewish legend, may explain certain elements recurrent in world mythology. In addition to the Djinn and Kabiri, there are quite a number of gods, or races of gods, or fairies, or elves, etc, who have been said to live inside of mountains. Even Jehovah was depicted as actually living inside of Mt. Sinai when he and Moses visited together. Thus he was called “El Shaddai”, the “Lord of the Mountain.” Perhaps he literally did live inside the mountain. Perhaps he and the other gods *had* to do this in order to escape the climactic conditions on Earth that immediately followed the Deluge. It is possible that, when Enoch/Noah parked his Ark on top of Ararat, Parnassus, or whatever mountain he landed on, he was met by his father Cain, who had already been hard at work creating a subterranean complex within that mountain for him and his descendants to live in while they waited out the Flood.

I have discussed how it seems that the “gods” who inhabited the Earth before the Flood largely went “underground”, figuratively, after the Flood, and were thereafter only seen by humans on special occasions, although they still continued to influence the world greatly. Perhaps they indeed went underground literally, because whatever Earth catastrophe caused the Flood changed the environment in such a way that the “gods” could no longer tolerate being on the surface for too great a time. However, their half-human descendants, such as the Cainites, would have been able to come out, once the flood waters had subsided and the Earth recovered enough, and then rebuild civilization on the surface. As they did so, Cain and Enoch instituted religions practices within their civilizations which honored their forefathers, who still lived within the mountains and “in the underworld”, or “in the center of the Earth.”

If civilization had actually been saved by Cain and his descendants living inside of a mountain both during and after the Flood, then they probably did have, within this mountain, a temple of some sort, just as Adam and Seth supposedly had inside the Cave of Treasures, according to *The Book of the Cave of Treasures*. After they emerged from the mountain to rebuild civilization, the mountain would have become a powerful symbol, and a center of worship. It would have been a symbol of death and rebirth, giving way to stories of a primordial womb or egg from which mankind emerged. (Such stories are replete throughout world mythology.) The Ark bears the same symbolism, and it is possible that the story of the "Ark" is less a remembrance of someone surviving a flood while on a boat than it is of someone surviving within the recesses of a mountain which is almost entirely submerged in water except for its peak, as Ararat supposedly was when Noah landed on it. After all, "Arka" is the name given to the subterranean world which Cain and his descendants lived in. Perhaps it was actually inside of a mountain.

Around the world, almost every culture has a myth about the sacred World-Mountain, where the peaks reach to the heavens. It is symbolically placed in the "center of the Earth", the world axis, marker of the celestial pole about which the world turns. This mountain is also often remembered as having been a refuge for both gods and men during the

Deluge. According to many versions, the mountain was so high that the floodwaters could not submerge it, and those who occupied it (the gods) remained safe. It is possible that there is one true "Ararat", and all of these other myths are copied permutations of the original. It is also possible that, during the Flood, the same scenario occurred numerous times in various places, in which gods and/or people retreated within a mountain, and reemerged later when it was safe.

The first "world mountain" upon which all these archetypes were really based is the one which purportedly existed on Atlantis. This mountain was said to be "at the center of the Earth", and to provide the "world axis", just like those that followed. It is likely that this mountain provided some of the stories attributed to Mt. Olympus, which Greek legends say was tall enough to reach Heaven. Indeed, the whole idea that the "gods" came from "Heaven" may simply be a memory of them living at the peak of a very tall mountain. But after the Flood, it became this new mountain, the "Ararat" mountain, which was now at the "center of the Earth." It became the new "abode of the gods", and the new womb of civilization.

It would not be surprising, then, if Cain and his descendants were in fact buried within this mountain, or if they deposited the body of Cain's father there as well. But we know that this would have been Satan, not

Adam. This, then, would have been the real "Cave of Treasures" in "the center of the Earth", upon the Mount of Refuge - the new world mountain. If Enoch's tablet were deposited there as well, that would complete the symbolism of the "Grail stone" being buried within the "Grail cup" – the "Gar-Al" or "vessel of the Lord." The mountain itself would then be the vessel – the Ark! On this note, I should point out that the Grail has been depicted as a stone within a mountain before. Legends surrounding Montsegur in Southern France state that the peak of the mountain opened up, and a dove from Heaven carried the Grail stone in its beak, dropping it within the heart of the mountain, which then closed itself up again.[42]

House of God, Gateway to Heaven

When Cain and his descendants began rebuilding civilization, they created monuments that embodied the concept of the world-mountain: both the antediluvian and post-diluvian concepts of it. These monuments are the pyramids and ziggurats (stepped pyramids) of megalithic times – huge cyclopean structures, found on every continent, associated with different cultures and times, but all with very similar elements to them. Many of them are so huge, complex, and magnificent that nobody knows how they were built. Such can be said of the Great Pyramid in Egypt, and certain Aztec pyramids in Mexico, for example. And in every case the indigenous cultures were primitives who claimed that the "gods" came and built these structures in a long-lost era. As we know, the likely architects of the more early structures were probably Cain and Enoch. Others could have been made by those who followed them. They were probably built on the blueprint of a similar temple said to have towered over the heart of Atlantis.

---

[42] Otto Rahn believed that Montsegur had been the site of a battle between the armies of Lucifer and God over possession of the Grail. The armies of Lucifer supposedly wished to gain control of the Grail so that they could place it back in their leader's crown.

Both the pre and post-diluvian conceptions of the primordial mountain included the idea that the peak of the mountain was a "gateway to the abode of the gods", either in "Heaven", or within the mountain, depending on how the culture telling the myth envisioned it. The same concepts were embodied by the ziggurats and pyramids which became the religious temples of the post-diluvian ancient world. The primordial mountain in Atlantis had been on an island, surrounded by water, and the "Ararat" mountain had been surrounded by water during the Flood. This is why ziggurats and pyramids were often built on an island, or surrounded by a moat, or connected to an elaborate system of fountains (as some in Egypt and Sumer were). They also often had a sacred fire burning at the temple's peak, symbolizing the volcanic nature of the sacred mountain it represented – the "fire within" the pyramid. In this way the temples embodied the alchemical concept of the union of fire and water.

This conceptual union is a symbol also central to the practice of "sex magic", or "sexual alchemy", an ancient art as old as religion itself, in which the participants ritually embody the archetypes of a god and a goddess, then unite sexually to symbolize the union of male and female energies. These rituals, not surprisingly, took place in the inner sanctum of the pyramid and ziggurat temples. It is quite likely that these rituals were partly ceremonies commemorating the hierogamy (divine intercourse) that spawned the royal race of Cain, and it is quite possible that Cain was the first high priest to officiate these rituals. It is also likely that the figure on whom Venus is based was the first "high priestess" or "temple prostitute", for Venus has been called in ancient literature "the mother of harlots", which is another symbolic connection between her and the figure of Mary Magdalene.

In Europe, there are myths that the goddess Venus lives inside of a magic mountain, the well-known "Venusberg" tale upon which Wagner's *Tannhauser* is based, and which is connected to the tales of Melusine. Here she lived with her attendant gnomes and fairies, who occupied the numerous caverns and underground rivers that honeycombed the inside of the mountain. In *Myths of the Middle Ages* by Sabine Baring-Gould, this mountain is described as having, "its own mirror-world within, where trees and vaults grow, rivers run, and stars shine out from the hidden vaults of the roof."

In the Venusberg tale, the preferred habit of the mountain's mistress is to seduce some hapless young man into her abode and hold him there under a spell of sexual magnetism, sometimes for years at a time, the immortal goddess wasting the poor man's life away in orgiastic debauchery. In these legends, she is said to still be buried there today, lying in her tomb, not surprisingly, "in a deathless sleep", from which she can only be raised by the embrace of a new young man. Thus arose the primordial tale of "Sleeping Beauty", a myth referred to repeatedly in *Le Serpent Rouge*. An account of the discovery of the tomb of Lady Venus, and the undecayed body within, can be found in *The Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz*, in which the tomb is found by Rosenkreutz himself.

The Venusberg tale may relate to a legend regarding the Pyrenees mountains. As it turns out, the Pyrenees were named after the goddess said to be buried within one of their mountains - "Pyrene", who, like the similarly-named Pyrrha, was the consort of another famous ark navigator - another god supposedly buried within a nearby mountain: Hercules. In fact, the figures of Pyrrha and Pyrene would appear to be the same, as would the figures of Hercules and Deucalion. This brings to mind the tantalizing notion that the words “Parnassus” and “Pyrenees” are in fact the same word expressed in two different languages. This would mean that the tale of Pyrrha and Deucalion landing their Ark on the Greek equivalent of Ararat actually took place somewhere near Rennes-le-Chateau! I will explore this idea in greater detail later on.

According to author Julius Evola, the sacred sex rite of hierogamy was once known as “pyr” – “magic fire.” Evola claimed that this ritual was secretly referred to by alchemists with the Latin phrase: “Rex igne redit et coningo gaudet occulto” (“The king returns with fire and rejoices in his hidden bride.”)[43] Given the connection between ancient temples and sacred fires, it is no coincidence that the ancient word for fire, “pyr, or “pir” - is related in Sumerian to “par”, “per”, “bar” and “ber”, all root syllables meaning “house” or “temple.”

The first ziggurat temple built after the Flood, according to the Bible, was the Tower of Babel. This, as I have said, was a magnificent structure, and is believed by many to have been built by King Nimrod. However, the story of the “Tower of Babel” and much of what is written about “King Nimrod” is the result of Jehovahite and Baalite propaganda, pasted on top of the true story of Cain and one of his most magnificent architectural creations.

---

[43] Undoubtedly there is also a connection to the myth of the phoenix, which rises from the ashes of the sacred *pyre*.

According to information provided by both Jewish and Babylonian lore, the Tower of Babel consisted of seven steps (seven being the number of godly perfection), and each step was painted with one of the seven colors of the rainbow, forming a "rainbow bridge" to Heaven, which was indeed what the temple represented. In fact, the Sumerian word for "ziggurat" is "duranki", which means "the binding of Heaven and Earth", and the word "Babylon" (where the Tower was located) means "Gateway of the Gods." Furthermore, Julius Evola claimed that in the Pyr ritual which was once performed in a temple's inner sanctum, the priestess was referred to as "Ianua Coeli" ("Gateway to Heaven.") This proves once again that the ritual which took place inside the temple represented the same concept as the temple itself. Traces of this function performed by the priest and priestess in ancient times can be found in the Latin word for "priest" ("pontifex"), which literally means "builder of bridges" - to Heaven, of course.

The Tower acted as a gateway to the gods, not only because its peak reached high into the sky, but because, like the original holy mountain (or mountains), which it commemorated, gods were believed to live inside of the Tower, or at least, to be able to access it from wherever they did live. If the gods did indeed live underground and inside of mountains after the Flood, then they may have been able to visit the Tower, perhaps through a network of tunnels underneath the structure. Many if not most ancient temples and ziggurats did have tunnel systems built underneath them, sometimes incredibly large and complex. There are tunnels spanning many miles, for instance, underneath the structures in Cuzco, Peru, connecting them all.

Imagine what it would be like to participate in a ritual inside such a structure, in which a "god" is summoned, and a literal, physical being climbs up from the depths of the Earth into your ritual chamber! That is exactly what was said to have occurred in the sex magic rituals inside these ancient temples, when human "priestesses" or "temple prostitutes", often as young as twelve, were sent into the temple to be impregnated by one of these gods. This took place at the Tower of Babel for sure. One ancient chronicler, quoted by *Horizon Magazine's Book of Lost Worlds*, wrote of "the temple at Babylon that:

"On the summit of the topmost tower stands a great temple with a fine large couch on it, richly covered, and a golden table beside it. The shrine contains no image, and no one spends the night there except (if we may believe the Chaldeans, who are the priests of Bel) one Assyrian woman,

all alone, whoever it may be that the god has chosen. The Chaldeans also say (though I do not believe them) that the god enters the temple in person and takes his rest upon the bed."

This probably actually describes a later structure in Babylon, perhaps one built to imitate the original, although it could not have been as grand. Nonetheless, it demonstrates the concept that the ancients had of the hierogamy that went on inside the Tower. But there was more purpose to this structure than just the hosting of sex rituals.

Since according to the biblical narrative, the Tower of Babel was built relatively soon after the Flood, most of the people on Earth were essentially of one stock, and all of one culture. The Bible makes it sound as though the people who built the Tower were just arrogantly attempting to create a replica of the holy mountain on which the gods lived, as part of some narcissistic, self-serving effort to be more god-like. But subtle details in the relevant passage from *Genesis* make it clear what the original purpose was. *Genesis 11:4* states: "And they said, "Go to, let us build a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make a *name*, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth."

At the time in which the Tower of Babel narrative took place, the event which was at the forefront of every man's mind was the Flood, which had completely destroyed civilization, and done so relatively recently. Civilization had only survived because of the mountain that the Tower was created in commemoration of. Logically, then, the Tower of Babel was built to withstand another Flood. Just as the Ark (of Noah/Enoch) had purportedly carried Enoch's tablet through the flood waters, and just as the "Ararat" mountain acted as the new "Ark" for the tablet while Cain and his descendants lived in it, so the Tower would act as a new house for the tablet.

In Plato's description of the holy temple on Atlantis, it states that the entrance to the temple was marked by two pillars: one made to be imperishable by fire, the other imperishable by water. Onto these pillars was written the most valuable knowledge they had attained, so that, no matter what kind of cataclysm occurred, their knowledge, and their "name" (their identity, their culture and traditions) would be preserved for future generations. The Tower of Babel appears to have served the same purpose: the temple itself was a monument containing and preserving this sacred knowledge, most specifically the details of this original language. And if Enoch's tablet was in fact a pillar (remember that Masonic ritual talks about "the pillars of Enoch and Seth"), then it is not hard to see how it could have been incorporated into the architecture of the Tower of Babel. It is said that the Great Pyramid at Giza was once covered with

Egyptian hieroglyphs, and it may be that the Tower of Babel was also covered with the written characters of this original language. If so, it would be an appropriate echo of the concept of the Emerald Tablet of Hermes. In some depictions of the Emerald Tablet, it is shown as a mountain covered with hieroglyphic symbols, fire issuing from its top.

In the case of the Tower of Babel, the Bible says that Jehovah and his allies saw fit to prevent this establishment of a "name", supposedly fearing that if mortals could build a mountain "reaching Heaven", then "nothing [would] be restrained from them."[44] In fact, this was simply an act of aggression on Jehovah's part against Cain/Seth and Enoch, who had created a global empire after the Flood and were instituting a common language. Jehovah and his allies were afraid that Cain was creating a powerful coalition that threatened their own power base. Jewish legends tell us that the creators of the Tower were planning on "taking Heaven by storm" and attacking Jehovah in his very own abode.

The Tower symbolized the unity of the empire, and the achievements of Cain and Seth. It also symbolized their identity, their "name." Jehovah's goal had been all along to take over the empire of Cain as he had the empire of Cain's father, Satan. Once he had done so, he wanted to either obliterate or distort all memory of them and their accomplishments. So the tower was smashed by the might of Jehovah, the true identity of the Cainites was lost to history, and their unified language scrambled into the multitude that we know today. Thus does our English word “babble”, for nonsense language derive from this story. The archetypal tale of the Tower of Babel, including the tower that reaches to Heaven and the bizarre, inexplicable connection with a universal language that got dispersed when the tower was destroyed, is common. It is confirmed in the records of other cultures, even as far away as Central America, indicating that the story is perhaps factually based.

---

[44] That there is more than one "god" involved in this story is made explicitly clear in that passage from *Genesis* which states: "…let *us* go down, and there confound their language…"

However, the word translated as “name” in “let us make a name” was actually the Hebrew “shem”, which other authors (Zecharia Sitchin and Laurence Gardner) have translated as “shining (or fiery) stone”, specifically, the capstone to a ziggurat temple! Such a “shem” is depicted in *The Victory Stele of Naram-Sin* from Akkadia, c. 2280 BC, where it is shown covered in Sumerian hieroglyphs. Interestingly, “Shem” is also the name of one of Noah’s sons in the Bible, and Shem’s descendants are listed immediately after the end of the Tower of Babel narrative. It is Shem after which the “Semitic” race is named, further linking the word “shem”, or “name” with the concept of a race – the race of the “fire stone”, or the stone from Heaven. The destruction of the Tower and the disintegration of the language represent the loss of that race and their heritage via the Flood. Symbolic similarities can be found in the later biblical tale of the twelve tribes of Israel, ten of which were "dispersed" and lost to history, again as part of a divine punishment. This led to the God-imposed captivity of the Israelites in Babylon. According to *The Book of Jeremiah*, God's purpose for the punishment of the Babylonian captivity was to scatter the Israelites across the globe, to cause them to lose their identity, and especially, their *language.* It is the same story as the loss of the Stone from Heaven, or the Lost Word of Freemasonry. The Stone, the Tower, and the Word are all manifestations of the same symbol. In Freemasonry, when both the Stone the Word were lost, substitutes had to be created.

This symbolizes the way in which the stories and genealogies found in the Bible were largely concocted as substitutes for the true heritage of Cain and his descendants. Examples of this, many of them already discussed in this book, can be found throughout the Bible. The Tower of Babel story represents the same destruction of truth: the moment that a veil was rent over our perception of reality. It seems that this story is a shortened version of a longer battle between Cain and Jehovah (and Baal), in which Jehovah eventually got the upper hand. And although the Cainite bloodline continued having influence on various societies throughout history, they often had to stay quiet about what their heritage really was, and perpetuate their secrets in an underground fashion. All the while, Jehovah and those he controlled waged a never-ending campaign of genocide against Cainite blood, until he had all but exterminated them. Yet certain remained, and do to this very day.

The Language of Light

But what was the nature of this language that the entire world, unified under Cain, spoke and wrote in the years following the Deluge? And how could the secrets of the antediluvian world be inscribed upon a single tablet or pillar? Well, the unified language spoken by mankind was probably the "proto-Sumerian" language which linguists believe is at the root of all languages – the "Aryan" language of which L.A. Waddell wrote. I have mentioned that the word "Ari' (the root of "Aryan") is related to the word "ur", which means "original." But when referring to a particular people, it meant, specifically, "shining ones." This is because the "Aryan" race was begun by Cain and Enoch, whose skin "shone" with light because they carried the genetic traits of their divine ancestors, the gods. Thus the word "Aryan" came to be attached to the royal, divine bloodline of Cain, and the race of his descendants, who became, after the Flood, the overseers of human society. This is why "Aryan" is now synonymous with the word "noble." But its connection with the concept of shining and light is important, and here's why.

If the secrets of Enoch were inscribed on a single stone, pillar, or set of pillars, they were probably written in the language of the gods – the language that preceded the Aryan language commemorated at Babel. Now we know that these "gods" were associated with light – that they seemed to have an almost supernatural control over the force of light, the highest and fastest form of energy in the universe, of which, it has been said, all other forms of energy are but lower permutations. It was this ability to control light, and to convert energy from one form to another, which gave them their seemingly "supernatural" powers over their environment. This is how the creation of the alchemical "Philosopher's Stone" is described by the sages. It really involves taking substances and transmuting them by bringing them up into a higher energy state through the application of heat and distillation. In other words, turning it back to light, the original, and most pure, form of energy, and then transmuting them into another, lower energy state that is nonetheless different than the first.

This was the alchemy that the “gods”, as well as Cain and Enoch, were adept at. Now interestingly, according to the alchemist Fulcanelli (and many others), learning to perform alchemy involves learning to speak the “alchemical language”, which he calls “the language of the birds”[45], or “the green language.” (Recall that Pierre Plantard made allusions to the green language within the pages of *Vaincre*.) But elsewhere, this language is called “the language of light.”

It is easy to see how an extremely complex language could be made from different wavelengths of light, or even digital “on/off” interspersions of light and darkness. In fact, a “light language” is already an integral part of our modern computer and telecommunications technology. In an article on spacedaily.com called “World will See Computers in Whole New Light”, dated January 22, 2002, the unnamed author writes that:

> *“Computers created within the next two decades could revolve around a technology in which laser beams converge inside crystals the size of sugar cubes, forming holographic images for processing huge amounts of information, says the author, Purdue University physics Professor David D. Nolte.*

---

[45] The “bird” reference probably just indicates that this is a “higher language”, made for a consciousness that soars above that of normal humans.

In his book, Mind at Light Speed: A New Kind of Intelligence, Nolte describes how optics-based computer technologies may evolve over three generations during the next century.

The first generation, which is well under way, has seen the Internet transformed by fiber optic cables, optical switches and other devices that are based on photonics, or using visible light signals to transmit data.

The second generation, perhaps by the year 2020, will revolve around new types of optical processors. These 'holographic computers' might use crystals that receive and manipulate data-laden images, processing information much faster than conventional computers.

Perhaps after 2050, a network connecting such computers might achieve intelligence, Nolte says.

'Imagine luminous machines of light made from threads of glass and brilliantly colored crystals that glow and shimmer, pulsating to the beat of intelligence', Nolte writes...

The third generation, possibly during the second half of the 21st century, could use 'quantum optical' technologies to create computer networks capable of solving problems that currently are 'uncomputable.'

Photonics is the optical equivalent of electronics: Instead of using electrons to transmit and process information, photonics uses photons, or tiny units of light…

The human eye is a good model for an optical machine, he says.

'Light is an intrinsically parallel data structure', Nolte says. 'Your eyes have a huge data-receiving capacity. Streaming into your eyes right now is about a gigabit, or a billion bits of information, per second.'"

We know that in Jewish legends these pre-diluvian gods were called "Watchers", from the Hebrew "ayin", meaning "to look", from which we get the English word "eye." It seems that this may point to these gods being able to use their eyes as their primary form of communication. This is why their eyes in particular were said to shine "like flaming fire." This is why both they and their half-human descendants could put a person under a spell, or communicate "telepathically" using their eyes to give and receive information in the form of light. As I have speculated, this is why the "All-Seeing Eye" became a symbol associated with divine government. Nicholas de Vere writes that the gods possessed a "hive mind" that they could all tune into if they wished, and thus could understand each other's thoughts. This came from their ability to "see with the same eye" – the All-Seeing Eye.

In the Great Seal of the United States, which was created by Freemasons, the All-Seeing Eye is shown replacing the missing capstone on the Great Pyramid of Egypt (which has been missing since ancient times, by the way, and nobody is sure what it actually was). R.T. Rundle Clark writes that:

> *"The Eye is the commonest symbol in Egyptian thought… Originally it had been sent out into the Primeval Waters by God on an errand to bring back Shu and Neftut [the Egyptian equivalent of Adam and Eve] to their father [for they had become lost and could not see in the mire]… When it returned, it found that it had been supplanted in the Great One's face by another – a surrogate eye. This is the primary cause for the wrath of the Eye and the great turning point in the development of the universe, for the Eye can never be fully or permanently appeased."*[46]

So the Eye represents the "stone that was rejected", and that was substituted. Later the Eye was said to have caused a Flood on Earth by its crying. The Eye morphed into the “burning eye of Horus”, which was gouged out by Set, supposedly, and which was taken apart, but reassembled:

---

[46] In this story, the Eye was temporarily appeased by being allowed to transform itself into a crown for God. It took the form of a cobra, wrapped itself around his forehead, and protected him from enemies from that point forward. All Egyptian kings thus wore a crown in the shape of a cobra.

“Seth flung it away beyond the edge of the world, and Thoth, the moon’s genius and guardian, went and found it lying in the outer darkness. Apparently he discovered it lying in pieces. He brought them back and assembled them again to form the full moon.”

He goes on to demonstrate how the Egyptian symbol for the Eye of Horus can be broken down into sixty-fourths, and intimates that it represents a mathematical puzzle of some sort. This same idea is apparently referred to in the Priory of Sion poem *Le Serpent Rouge*, which talks about a “stone” consisting of “64 pieces” which must be “reassembled.” I discuss this at greater length in Appendix B of this book. It represents the idea of reacquire ancient knowledge by learning to speak the original language of the gods, and learning to *see* the way they were able to.

Undoubtedly, the gods and human god-kings were able to see and communicate using wavelengths of light that we do not have access to. It is worth noting that planets put out waves of energy, including light, on a constant basis, which can be "tuned into" with modern electronic devices. How much more so could the gods and the god-kings, who associated themselves with the stars and planets, understand the language which the heavenly bodies spoke? Enoch purportedly learned from the Watchers how to read the "tablet of Heaven", and how to interpret the stars and planets. Mediums often say that they can tune into and speak with the stars and planets, which they say are living beings with tremendous intelligence. Perhaps there is more to this concept than just superstition.

Of course, human beings are not capable of sensing or interpreting light on such a subtle level, which is why we use an oral and written language. On a quantum level, sound is just light on a lower frequency, or a lower state of existence. This illustrates a cabalistic concept of creation which holds that before the universe as we know it existed, there was only the "Ain Soph Aur": the "Limitless Light." Then God created the current universe by "speaking the Word." As the cabalistic text *Sepher Yetzirah* states, "With 32 mystical paths of Wisdom he engraved Yah[47], and created his world." *The Book of Genesis* starts out by saying that God's first act of creation was to speak the words "Let there be light." The Gnostic *Gospel of John* tells us, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God… In him was the life; and the life was the light of darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not." Gnostic traditions elaborate further and state that this universe was formed by the speaking of "the Word", or "Logos." But it was "Wisdom", or "Light" (Lucifer) that gave birth to "the Word."

---

[47] Recall that "Yah" originated with Satan's Sumerian title of "Ia", also related to the word "eye."

In an analogous way, the pure language of light used by the gods devolved after the Flood into an oral language used by humans. H.P. Blavatsky wrote that "the Adami" were not really the first human race, but the first race of *speaking* men, as their predecessors had communicated using pure thought. The Sumerian version of the Flood tale says that Enlil (Jehovah) brought about the Deluge to wipe out "the Adami" because their speech made too much noise and disturbed him. In reality, the "human language" probably consisted of non-distinct grunting, much like primates in the wild, until Enoch invented the oral and written Aryan language, and taught the most evolved specimens of humanity how to use it.

The Tower of Babel, then, would have been a monument to this new language. And the tablet of Enoch was perhaps inside of this monument at one time, either as its keystone, or its capstone, or a pillar, or set of pillars, within it. Perhaps something about the Tower itself contained the key to understanding the language of light – perhaps something about its *geometry*. We know that the Knights Templar, the Freemasons, the Pythagorean philosophers, the Egyptian priesthood, and the Jewish cabalists have all been preoccupied with the science of communicating cosmic secrets through "sacred geometry", and particularly three-dimensional geometry through architecture. This formed an integral part of the Hermetic science taught by Enoch/Hermes.

Geometry really involves the use of different "angles of light." So we are to understand, I think, that the Enochian/Hermetic tablet was probably a crystal in which the "secrets" were encoded using light. This links it to the Grail stone as well, a so-called "stone of light" chipped from the crown of Lucifer, the light bringer. Perhaps the Tower of Babel interacted with it somehow to translate its message into the Aryan language, so that it could be understood by all.

In order to explain how this might work, I would first need to explain how things such as light, geometry, and both oral and written language are intrinsically connected. The thing that holds them together is their *mathematical* relationship to one another, specifically a mathematical constant that they all embody. That is the Fibonacci sequence.

Also known as "the Phi ratio", the golden section is formed when a given length is divided into two portions, so that the first portion's relationship to the second mirrors the second portion's relationship to the whole. Each line of the pentagram is defined by the Phi ratio, also known as the Fibonacci sequence, the basic growth pattern of nature. Expressed in whole numbers the sequence begins with 0 and 1, mimicking the creation of the universe, in which the whole of existence emerged as the undivided monad out of the unmanifested void. Then, another 1 is added, making 2, the next stage in the creation of the universe, in which the undivided monad split into the duality of two opposing aspects (such as light and dark, male and female). From there, the sequence continues, adding the next number to the previous number in the sequence to create the one following. 2+1 = 3, 3+2 = 5, 5+3 = 8, and 8+5 = 13. Thus the sequence goes: 0,1,1,2,3,5,8,13... This sequence could go on and on indefinitely. When the numbers are divided by one another to form ratios (1/1, 2/1, 3/2, 5/3, 8/5, 13/8), the results, graphed on an x/y axis, form an undulating wave that starts out large and flattens out at an exponential rate towards an asymptote (a place approached but never reached) of 1.6180339…, with an endless series of decimals at the end.

In what is known as a "golden rectangle", this ratio can be expressed by dividing the rectangle into one-third and two-thirds sections.[48] Then you construct a larger golden rectangle around that, with the first golden rectangle constituting the smaller, one-third section of the larger golden triangle. Keep doing this for several steps. The whole of each rectangle, when divided by the larger, two-thirds section, will always equal the same ratio as the large part divided by the small part. After you have constructed a series of golden rectangles within golden rectangles, draw a line curving from the inside bottom corner of the larger section of the first rectangle to the upper left-hand corner of that box, then continue that through the larger section of the second rectangle, then the third rectangle, and on and on. This curved line will quickly develop into what is known as the Fibonacci spiral.

---

[48] The "Golden mean proportion" in geometry has long been known by visual artists as that which is most aesthetically pleasing to the eye, and paintings, photographs, etc. are often purposely constructed with the most important visual element located at the 2/3 mark for this reason.

As I have explained, the Fibonacci sequence of numbers represents the growth pattern of all living things in nature: the growth pattern of the embryo as it becomes a fetus, then a baby, then a child, then an adult, or of a seed that becomes a seedling, then a plant. The horns of a ram, the spiraling bracts of a pine cone, the whirlpools in the ocean and the storms in the sky also contain this pattern. The golden spiral, sequence and ratio can be found in the visual color spectrum, and in the thirteen-note musical scale. The vibration of each note is the sum of the vibrations of the two notes previous. The structure of a piano keyboard reflects this, with eight white keys, representing whole tones, and five black keys, representing sharps and flats, arranged in groups of threes and two, for a total of thirteen notes in a full octave. This contains the Fibonacci sequence of 2, 3, 5, 8, and 13. The most pleasing pieces of music are those which take full advantage of the Fibonacci relationship, striking a familiar cord with the Fibonacci spiral shape of our own ears, while music that sounds "off" does exactly the opposite. The syntax of words in poetry, in which some combinations of words are more pleasing than others, undoubtedly follows the same principles.

Indeed, the Fibonacci sequence may have been the basis for the original "Aryan" language. A California theoretical physicist named Stan Tenen discovered way back in the 1960s that the Fibonacci spiral is the apparent basis for the Hebrew alphabet, as well as the Greek, Arabic, and Sanskrit alphabets, making it, he theorized, the root of universal language. It all started when he discovered a pattern in the original Hebrew letters of the first sentence of *Genesis* - a pattern that appeared when he counted the letters in base three. He then placed these letters into geometric shapes based on that pattern. When put into a square shape, with like letters placed next to each other in concentric square rings, the result was what looked like a "bird's eye view" of a seven-stepped ziggurat like the Tower of Babel. When this was then placed upon a torus or "doughnut"-shaped surface, and the excess space stripped away, what Stan Tenen had was a three-dimensional representation of the Fibonacci spiral. This somewhat snakish, flame-like shape Tenen then placed inside of a crystal tetrahedron - a four-sided prism or pyramid. When light was shined through the object in a shadow-box, Tenen found that he could form every single letter of the Hebrew alphabet - in order - just by changing the position of the shape relative to the crystal. With a slightly different orientation, he was able to produce the letters of other alphabets as well. Appropriately, Tenen named the shape the "flame letter."

The name of Stan Tenen's research group, "the Meru Foundation", confirms the relationships between the concept of the world mountain (which Babel was a representation of), the alphabet, and the Golden Mean. "Meru" is the name of the world mountain in Eastern mythology, and it is depicted as forming a perfectly geometric stepped pyramid shape - as though it were artificially made. As Tenen points out in his videotaped lecture entitled *Geometric Metaphors of Life*, the word "Meru" is also used in Eastern India as a title for the number sequence known here as "Pascal's Triangle" - a whole number representation of the Fibonacci sequence. But most amazingly, Tenen also says that the Hebrew name for their sacred alphabet is none other than "Meruba."

Of course, this connects with the word "Merou", which purportedly was another name for Atlantis; "mer", a word meaning "sea" in many languages; and "Merovingian." It even connects with the name "Mari", a title that was applied to Isis by the Egyptians, and to both Jesus' wife and mother. The word "Magdalene", by the way, comes from the

Hebrew “migdol”, which means “tower.” At Rennes-le-Chateau, there is a statue of the Magdalene with four towers on top of a crown upon her head – just as the goddess Cybele was depicted by the ancients. [49]“Cybele” is the same as “the Sibyl”, a figure whose mythos reflects that of the Melusine and Venusberg stories. It is interesting to note that, in 1627, a Sicilian witch interrogated by the Inquisition confessed that she had seen “Sybil” emerge with her fairy entourage from “a cave in the Tower of Babylon.” This connects Cybele, or Venus (the goddess who “lives within a mountain”) to the Tower of Babel.

Stan Tenen also claims that the Great Pyramid at Giza was called “Mera” by the Egyptians. Furthermore, he purports that it was once covered with brilliantly-colored tiles of limestone, also hued in seven bands that matched the seven colors of the rainbow, arranged from top to bottom in order of their temperature: with yellow, orange and red at the top, being warmest, the most “fire-like”, and green, blue, indigo and violet down at the bottom, being the coolest, the most “water-like.” Thus, the pyramid would have been like a massive standing representation of the world mountain reaching up out of the flood waters with fire at its peak. If so, this would make it very similar to the Tower of Babel, for which, according to Jewish legend, each of the seven steps had a different color, arranged just like the rainbow. This again links the Tower of Babel with the idea of a “rainbow bridge to Heaven.” And it is also easy to see how it could have been linked with the language of light, interacting with the stone of light that resided within its recesses.

---

[49] He also housed his library in a building called the “Tower of Magdala”, and *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* says that “Shortly before his death he was allegedly planning to build a massive Babel-like tower lined with books, from which he intended to preach.”

This, then, is another permutation of the image of the Tablet of Hermes within the tomb of Hermes – within the world mountain at the center of the Earth – and lit by an inner sun. The stone is the “sun”, the source of light – the “fire within.” That is the nature of the Grail stone, the “hidden stone” of the alchemists. And the Tower of Babel containing it is analogous to the holy mountain containing it, or the Ark containing it during the Flood, making them all symbols of the “Arca” – the “Grail cup” which contains the “Grail stone.” In the case of the Tower of Babel, the stone was perceived to be integral to the structure itself, and when it was removed, the structure collapsed. So the destruction of the Tower of Babel symbolizes the same concept as the loss of the Grail stone, and the loss of the original language. It is the loss of the kingdom of Cain.

Jacob’s Ladder

It seems that certain mythical elements of the Tower of Babel story reappear later on in *Genesis*, in the story of Jacob and his temple at Bethel. As the story goes, God sent Jacob to a place called “Luz” (“Light”), which was “in the land of Canaan.” Apocryphal tradition says that this was the same spot where his ancestor Abraham had once built “an altar to the Lord”, and where, according to certain Jewish traditions, he had attempted to sacrifice his son Isaac.[50] In *Genesis 22:14* it says that Abraham “called the name of that place Jehovah-jireh: as it is said to this day, “In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen”, identifying this location with “the mountain of God.”

The Legends of the Jews tells Jacob’s story in greater detail.:

“Jacob took twelve stones from the altar on which his father Isaac had lain bound as sacrifice, and he said: ‘It was the purpose of God to let twelve tribes arise, but they have not been begotten by Abraham or Isaac. If now these 12 stones unite into a single one, then I shall know for a certainty that I am destined to become father of the twelve tribes.’ At this

---

[50]

point a ... miracle came to pass; the twelve stones joined together and made one, which he put under his head, and at once it became soft and downy like a pillow... He dreamed a dream in which the course of world history was unfolded to him."

The content of Jacob's dream about "world history" involved a ladder that reached to Heaven, with "angels" (or "Watchers", in extra-biblical versions of the tale) ascending and descending upon it. At the end of the dream, the "ladder", which is also called a "temple", is destroyed, just like the Tower of Babel. As Louis Ginzberg explains:

"From this wondrous dream Jacob awoke with a start of fright, on account of the vision he had had of the destruction of the Temple. He cried out, 'How dreadful is this place! This is none other but the house of God, wherein is the gate of Heaven through which prayer ascends to him."

A similar story is told in *Genesis 28:17*. These words from Jacob are the same words written above the front door of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau: "This place is terrible! This is none but the House of God, and this is the gate of Heaven."

After he awoke, Jacob then took the stone which he had used for a pillow and "set it up as a pillar", consecrating it with oil that magically poured from Heaven. We read in *The Legends of the Jews* that after he had set up and anointed the pillar, "God sank this anointed stone into the abyss, to serve as the center of the earth, the same stone, the Eben Shetiyah, that forms the center of the sanctuary, whereof the Ineffable Name is graven..."

However, there is a great deal more evidence to link the story of Bethel with the Tower of Babel. First of all, consider the "ladder to Heaven" which he witnessed. As Freemasonic expert and author Albert Pike wrote in *Morals and Dogma*, "The word translated 'ladder' is 'salem', from 'salal', raised, elevated, reared up, piled into a heap... a pyramid with seven stages." Other biblical scholars share in this consensus: the "ladder to Heaven" which Jacob saw in his dream was a seven-staged ziggurat reaching to Heaven, just like the Tower of Babel. Even the word "Bethel" is phonetically similar to "Babel." Yet there's more. The word "Beth-El", or "Beith-El", has been translated from the Hebrew as meaning "House of God", and also "Gateway to Heaven" - exactly what the word "Babel" is also said to mean.

Bethel, then, seems to represent much the same thing as the Tower of Babel – a representation of the world mountain, inside of which is a cavity containing the stone from Heaven, the Grail, located in the center of the Earth. And like the Tower, Bethel was thought to be a ladder upon which gods or angels could ascend and descend. Thus, like the world mountain and the Tower of Babel, Bethel's peak (if made in the likeness of the ladder in Jacob's dream) would have "touched Heaven." Perhaps this myth is the source of Judaism's most preeminent symbol, the six-pointed Seal of Solomon. The upward-pointing triangle could represent the mountain or tower, and the downward-pointing triangle could represent the cavern leading to the center of the Earth, and the stone. There is even a common alchemical emblem that seems to confirm this association: a six-pointed star with an "inner sun" drawn at the center of it.

It seems pretty clear then that the ladder to Heaven which Jacob dreamed of was the Tower of Babel. "Bethel", then, perhaps, was the original name of the Tower, before the name was changed in the scrambling of the languages. According to author Rene Guenon in his book *The Lord of the World*, "Bethel" is also related to "betyle", which he said means, "a stone believed to be the dwelling-place of the deity... Thus this stone must be the true 'divine habitation', the seat of the Shekinah." This concept is further elaborated on in his colleague Julius Evola's *The Mystery of the Grail*, where he writes: "lapis betillis, or betillus... may be a reference to baitulos, the stone fallen from the sky according to Greek mythology." Jacob built a temple upon his stone, and if he believed that the spirit of God actually lived inside that stone, then his temple would quite literally be a "House of God."

Indeed, there is a Judaic tradition stating that Jacob's pillow stone is none other than the "Rock of Sion" that served as the holy cornerstone for Solomon's Temple. The word "Sion" has been translated as "capitol", or "a sign or landmark"[51], and now is a generalized term for Jerusalem, the Temple Mount, and god himself. But originally it referred to the stone, in which God was believed to live.[52] One author specifically identified it as a "touchstone" which "tests the genuineness and purity of precious metals", a definition which makes Sion sound like the alchemical Philosopher's Stone. There can be no doubt that "Sion" is the stone from Heaven, the Grail stone, and that this is what the Priory of Sion named itself after. This is also the stone which Masons allude to in their rituals, "the hidden stone", the "Lost Stone", or the "stone that was rejected." Jesus identified himself with this "rejected" stone in the Gospels.

Furthermore, there is a cabalistic tradition that the place where Jacob built Bethel, and where Abraham built his altar, is the exact same spot of land where the Temple of Solomon – another "House of God", in which Jehovah Himself was believed to have lived - was later built. In fact, these apocryphal traditions purport that virtually everything of importance in the Old Testament took place in this very spot. As Louis Ginzberg relates:

---

[51] The word "Sion" is probably related to the word "sign", as well as the words "scion" (meaning "a royal heir"), "son" and "Sun", embodying the idea of the stone that represents the royal Grail bloodline of the "son of the Sun."

[52] In Chretien de Troyes version of the Grail romance, Perceval claims to have been born in Sinadon, which they connect with Valais, Switzerland, the capitol of which was once called "Sidonensis", and is now called "Sion."

"The place on which Abraham had erected the altar was the same whereon Adam had brought the first sacrifice, and Cain and Abel had offered their gifts to God – the same whereon Noah raised an altar to God after he left the ark; and Abraham, who knew that it was the place appointed for the temple, called it Yireh, for it would be the abiding-place of the fear and service of God. But as Shem had given it the name of Shalem, Place of Peace, and God would not give offence to either Abraham or Shem, He united the two names, and called the city by the name Jerusalem."

So not only was Jerusalem identified with the "center-point of the Earth", and said to be the land upon which all of these blessed events took place; it is actually *named* after a seven-stepped ziggurat – a "salem", such as the Tower of Babel, or Jacob's "ladder" to Heaven/Temple of Bethel. These were all erected as monuments to the stone from Heaven, which is apparently the same as the rock of Sion and the “Lost Stone” of the Freemasons.[53] Perhaps it would be worth looking into the lore surrounding Solomon’s Temple.

The Stone, the Ark, and the Temple

Despite the very specific dimensions detailed in the Bible regarding how many cubits high and wide it was, we really do not know what the Temple of Solomon looked like - only that it was built according to the specifications of Jehovah himself. However, most experts agree that it was built on the foundation of a much older, megalithic-style temple, obviously to another god. Although we do not know for certain that this previous temple took the form of a ziggurat, it would certainly seem to be implied by the name “Jerusalem”, containing that word “salem” which indicates “a seven-stepped pyramid.” Jerusalem was believed to be quite literally the center of the Earth, and throughout the middle ages was depicted on maps as being in the exact mathematical center, with all of the other land masses clustered around it evenly. And just as the Lord was believed to literally be living inside the cornerstone at Bethel, God was believed also to literally reside within the Ark of the Covenant, the Jews' most famous treasure, for which the Temple was supposedly built in the first place. The Temple was built with three concentric chambers, and the Ark was placed in the exact center of the Temple's inner chamber, the "Holy of Holies", right where the "Kaaba stone", supposedly the very Stone from Heaven of both Judaic and Islamic legend, is now placed inside the Dome of the Rock. Interestingly, it is upon this rock that the prophet Mohammed supposedly stood when the archangel Gabriel brought him to Heaven on a "ladder of light."

---

[53] The prophet Jeremiah, when addressing the Babylonians, said “they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations”, a clue hinting that the Tower of Babel story is illusory, a mask for the story of the *real* temple erected to the stone from Heaven.

The story of the loss of the Ark of the Covenant, and later of the Temple of Solomon being sacked is, it would seem, yet another manifestation of the archetype of "the Lost Stone", just like the destruction of the Tower of Babel. The rebuilding of the Temple of Solomon later on in the Bible represents the "substitute" concept. The ruined Temple of Solomon is, like the Lost Word, a powerful symbol in Freemasonry.

Jewish legends tell us that King Solomon conscripted the demon Asmodeus, and his entire host of fallen angels, to help him build the Temple of Solomon. Asmodeus is a permutation of Cain/Seth, as well as Satan, and it is interesting that he is here depicted as being the Master Mason behind the creation of this holy shrine. Such mythical elements link it further to the idea of the Tower of Babel/Bethel. The Tower had housed the tablet of Enoch, and the world mountain which preceded it had contained the "Arka" in which the tablet had been kept. The Temple of Solomon was created to house something eerily similar: an Ark (the Ark of the Covenant), which itself contained two tablets, supposedly inscribed by Jehovah himself.

According to the story, Jehovah inscribed "the law" (purportedly the Ten Commandments) with "his own hand", while Moses was meeting with him inside of Mount Sinai. During their meetings, the entire mountain was covered with a cloud described as "the glory of the Lord", and nobody but Moses was allowed into the mountain, for it was said that they would die if they approached it. "And the sight of the glory of the LORD was like devouring fire on the top of the mount in the eyes of the children of Israel", the text of *Exodus* states. Interestingly, Moses was not allowed to see Jehovah's face, for he would die if he saw it, although he was allowed to look at the Lord's "back parts." And when Moses descended from the mountain, his face was glowing. All of this serves to indicate that Jehovah was still a light being, and still using an ancient alchemical process to inscribe a message onto the stone using the language of light.

However, when Moses came to present his two divine tablets to his people, he found them in the middle of a Baal-worship ritual, something which Jehovah had forbidden. (It was actually one of the laws written on the tablet!) Upon seeing this, Moses purportedly became so angry that he "sprouted horns" and threw down the tablets, breaking them. Later, Jehovah made him a new set of tablets which he was able to present to the people.

The whole story seems allegorical of the loss of the original tablet of Hermes/Enoch, which, coincidentally, was said to also contain a set of ten laws, these ones pertaining to alchemy. The breaking of the tablets represents the destruction of the Tower of Babel, and the true stone from Heaven becoming occulted or hidden. The new tablets forged by Jehovah represent the false history and religious beliefs promoted by Jehovah and his cultists – the "substitute stone."

At any rate, after the second set of tablets is given to Moses, Jehovah gives him specific instructions for how to create the Ark of the Covenant to put the tablets in. Moses was then told how to build a tabernacle for the elite Hebrew priesthood, in which the Ark could become an object of worship, for Jehovah himself was believed to reside inside that box. But more than that, the Ark, with its tablets inside, and placed in a precise position at the center of the tabernacle, which itself had very precise dimensions, was for the priesthood a way of actually communicating with their God. It worked in conjunction with two objects called the "Urim and Thummin", made out of a very specific array of precious stones, and a "Breastplate of Judgment" worn by the High Priest that was also arrayed with precious stones. These different colored stones would light up in various ways to communicate Jehovah's message to them. In other words, he was speaking to them via the language of light![54]

Jacob's Stone, Judah, and the British Connection

Crystals and other special stones have been used as oracular devices throughout human history. Part of this stems from the idea that a deity might be able to actually reside inside of the stone. Part of it stems from the idea that stones can be used by a deity to communicate, either visually, or even auditorially (for crystals are components in radio transmitters and receivers). From the Middle Ages unto present time, crystal balls have been used for "scrying", or having "spirit visions." Every Merovingian king is known to have used them. And Dr. John Dee, one of the forefathers of modern Western occultism, famously used a crystal ball to divine the "Enochian" or "angelic" alphabet and language, upon which he based his system of "Enochian magic."[55] Dee was instructed to lay out the alphabet, which consisted of strange angles, upon a "Great Table" which resembled a chessboard. This was John Dee's version of the "tablet of Enoch." Perhaps the angles of the letters in this alphabet look so strange because this was Dee's attempt to represent the three-dimensional angles of light that he saw in his scrying stone upon a two-dimensional surface.

---

[54] Joseph Smith, the founder of Mormonism, claimed to have discovered the Urim and Thummin hidden underground in New York state. He purportedly used them to translate the golden plates of *The Book of Mormon*, which he also discovered, with the help of the angel Moroni.

This brings to mind a strange possibility that would otherwise seem unthinkable. The being which John Dee contacted dictated to him what was called an "angelic" language made of strange angles. It makes one think about a possible connection between the words "angel" and "angle." The word "angel" comes from a Hebrew word meaning "messenger" – as in, one who speaks the language of light, and can communicate it in verbal language. "Angel" may also be related to Enoch, a.k.a "Anag", or "Ang." The people known as the "Anglos", the English, may be Enoch's descendants. Thus the language of English, or "Angel-ish", would be directly related to the light language.

---

[55] Incidentally, John Dee is known to have made the search for the Urim and Thummin a lifelong pursuit of his.

A similar opinion was put forth by Berenger Sauniere's friend from Rennes-le-Bains, Abbe Henri Boudet in *Le Vrai Langue Celtic* (*The True Celtic Language*), and seconded by modern-day author Jean-Luc Chaumeil in his book *Alphabet of the Sun*. Chaumeil, as you may recall, was at one time a spokesman for the Priory of Sion. His opinion seems to be backed up by L.A. Waddell, who in *The British Edda* wrote:

> *"I have shown… that the civilized ancient Britons, Anglo-Saxons, Normans and Scandinavians were 'Goths', and that the English language is directly derived from the Gothic… the ancient Swedish language still retains the title of 'sueo-Gothic', and the old name for Denmark is 'Goth-land', and its dialectic 'Jut-land.'"*

Amazingly, another name that was once given to Denmark was "Anglin."

The possible identity of the words "gad", "god", "got", "goat", "goth", or "kad", "khat", and "cat" with "jut" or "jud" beings to mind interesting correspondences with the word "Judah." The ancestors of the Anglo-Saxon kings supposedly included Biblical figures such as Judah, Jacob and Isaac, as well as Scandinavian gods like Odin, and the legendary kings of Troy. And you will recall that figures with names and life stories similar to those of Judah, Jacob and Isaac show up on the

Chaldean kings' lists. Indeed, there are a lot of Hebrew-sounding words in Old English, on maps of old England, and in the genealogies of its rulers. Author Herbert W. Armstrong has even interpreted the word "Saxon" to mean "Isaac's sons", and "British" to come from the Hebrew "berith", meaning "of the covenant" – referring purportedly to the Israelite covenant with "God."

Jacob in particular is important to the Britons, because it is purportedly this pillow stone – the stone from Heaven which he slept upon, and later founded "Bethel" upon, that the British now use to coronate their kings and queens. They believe it was brought to Ireland some years ago by the prophet, Jeremiah. It eventually migrated to Scotland, where it was used in the coronation of their monarchs, before it was stolen by the English and taken to Westminster Abbey, where it purportedly rests to this very day, inserted in a cubbyhole beneath the British throne. [56]

However, any patriotic Scot will tell you that this stone, which literally looks like a block of masonry, is merely a substitute – a red herring purposely left for the English to take. The real stone (called the

---

[56] In Ireland there is a myth regarding a mythical race of beings called the "Tuadhe Danaan" who came to Earth bearding a magical stone, "the stone of the legitimate kings." They interbred with humans to create the race of Irish kings, bestowing all manner of wisdom and science upon the people. This same mythos also involves a magic cauldron called the "Cup of Dagda" that resembles the Grail cup.

"Stone of Scone" or "Stone of Destiny") is actually much more magnificent, and was hidden away somewhere by its protectors. It will not come out of hiding, they say, until Scotland has her independence. Once again, we have the symbolism of the Grail stone being hidden away and substituted by a fake.

The symbolism is fitting, for the figure of Jacob appears to be a bit of a fake himself. In another famous encounter in *Genesis* between Jacob and one of the Watchers, he got into a wrestling match with the angel for some reason, and actually managed to overcome him. On that day, he was given a new name: "Israel", meaning "he who has overcome." His previous name of "Jacob" meant in Hebrew "usurper." This alluded to the fact that he had usurped the birthright of his elder brother, Esau, who was starving at the time, by convincing him to sell his birthright for a bowl of porridge. This story mirrors the stories of Jehovah's usurpation of Satan, and Baal's usurpation of Cain. Interestingly, author E. Richmond Hodges writes of the figure of "Kronus or (Saturn), whom the Phoenicians call Israel ...."

It seems to me that this story represents the way that the Jehovahite, "Judaic" bloodline, and the false lineage of kings created by it, usurped and substituted itself for the original heritage and history of Satan, Cain and Enoch. It consists of muddled and corrupted accounts of several different events, all connected by the same mythic essence. There definitely seem to be some allusions to the ongoing battle between Jehovah and Satan, Baal and Cain. Recall that I have likened the Judaic and occult legends of the "fallen kings of Edom" with Baal and the fallen Adamite kings of Eden. The purported father of the Edomite kings is Jacob's brother, Esau, although the most well-known Edomite king was "Bela", Baal, or Abel. The figure of Esau is in every way a Baalite figure, the exact antithesis of Jacob, who in this instance is a Cainite figure. Louis Ginzberg writes in *The Legends of the Jews* that "it was the angel of Esau who had measured his strength with Jacobs's and had been overcome." And as it just so happens, during Jacob's vision of the ladder to Heaven, at the top of the ladder he saw, according to Ginzberg:

"…Edom mounted very high, saying 'I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High'; and Jacob heard a voice remonstrating, 'Yet thou shalt be brought down to Hell, to the uttermost parts of the pit.' God himself reproved Edom, saying 'Though thou mount on high as the eagle, and though thy nest be set among the stars, I will bring thee down from thence.'"

Thus, the Jewish scribes attempted to blur the story of the fall of Eden/Edom with the fall of Lucifer from Heaven, and the fall of the Tower of Babel/Bethel – typical of Jehovahite propaganda.[57] It is also typical of Jehovahite propaganda that the eldest son (Esau) is cheated out of his birthright, as occurred in the case of Jehovah and Satan, as well as Baal/Abel and Cain. An interesting detail is that, according to *The Legends of the Jews*, Jacob conned Esau out of another part of his birthright at a later date, in which he purchased Esau's portion of the Cave of Treasures with a large amount of gold. Immediately after the transaction was completed, "God" reimbursed Jacob for what he had paid for it.

The Satanic Secrets of Rennes-le-Chateau

There is another miracle which "God" supposedly performed for Jacob, according to Jewish legend, right before his vision of the ladder to Heaven. This detail is perhaps key to understanding how this story links up with our current inquiry regarding the Merovingians and Rennes-le-

---

[57] Other angels Jacob saw on the ladder included "the two angels who had been sent to Sodom. For one hundred and thirty-eight years they had been banished from the celestial regions, because they had betrayed their secret mission to Lot."

Chateau. For when Jacob came to Luz and found the stone upon which he was destined to fall asleep, “God” made the sun go down immediately, even though it was “high noon”, so that Jacob could fall asleep and dream his vision. High noon, when the Sun is at its zenith, seems to be an important time of day, as it has come up more than once in my study of these subjects. Hiram Abiff, architect of Solomon’s Temple according to Masonic legend, was said to have been murdered at high noon. Dagobert II was supposedly killed in the woods at high noon on December 23. And in the parchments purportedly found by Berenger Sauniere in his church at Rennes-le-Chateau, the second parchment ends with the words “I destroy this demon guardian at noon.”

The “demon guardian” referred to has always been thought to be the statue of Asmodeus in the church. And Asmodeus, you recall, was the demon who is said by Jewish cabalists to have built Solomon’s Temple (just as the Masons say Hiram did). By placing the demon directly inside of the front door of his church, it is as if Sauniere is likening his church to the Temple of Solomon. And indeed, other actions on Sauniere’s part appear to make this link as well.

Shortly before his death, Sauniere commissioned a custom-made topographical relief map of Rennes-le-Chateau. This item was only discovered recently by author and Grail researcher Andre Douzet, who writes about it in his book *Sauniere's Model and the Secret of Rennes-le-Chateau*. The author discovered that Sauniere never even saw the map he had commissioned, because he died just before it was finished. Strange indeed. But even stranger are the custom alterations that Sauniere specified on the map. Instead of applying the traditional, known names to all of the landmarks on the map, he had them all changed to reflect the names of prominent landmarks in the Holy Land, such as Gethsemane, the Tomb of Christ, the Tomb of Joseph of Arimathea, and Golgotha. We know that the circumstances of Sauniere's death were suspicious. Perhaps he sensed his fate beforehand, or even planned it, and commissioned this map as a posthumous message to future researchers regarding the nature of the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau.

The word "Golgotha" means "place of the skull", and usually refers to the place where Christ was crucified, which supposedly was littered with the remains of others who had been executed before him. But according to apocryphal tradition, the place was already so named because it was the place where Adam's body, or particularly his *head*, was placed "in the center of the Earth" after the Flood. The symbol of a skull has turned up repeatedly in this mystery. Mary Magdalene is often shown holding a skull, and is depicted with it twice within the church at Rennes-le-Chateau. On the altar, she is seen sitting with the skull inside of a *cave*.

A skull (and a particularly large one) is shown in Guercino's original version of *Et in Arcadia Ego*. The skull in this painting appears to be trepanned, just like the skull of Dagobert II, which is on display in a French museum. Of course, the skull worshipped by the Templars comes to mind as well, revered as an idol of "Baphomet", which represents Cain's reincarnation as Seth. And there is an ominous-looking skull and crossbones over the entrance to the graveyard at Sauniere's church.

Also, on the gate to the graveyard, there is also a strangely altered Masonic symbol, a winged hourglass. Usually depicted with angelic wings, it is meant to represent the ever presence of death, and the fleeting nature of time in one's life. But here it is shown with bat-like, demonic-looking wings. The combination of the time imagery with the Satanic imagery seems to point to Kronos, "Father Time", who is also Satan. The fact that this symbol is shown on the entrance to a graveyard points to the idea of *Satan's grave*.

Sauniere invoked the imagery of the Tower of Babel as well. As I stated earlier in a footnote, he housed his library in a building called the "Tower of Magdala." Considering that Magdala comes from the Hebrew "migdol" which means "tower" as well, this is a bit like calling it "the Tower Tower", which is a bit odd, unless you consider that he may have been implying the idea of two towers: one the real article, and one a false historical substitute concocted as Jehovahite propaganda. Sauniere again connected Mary Magdalene with the idea of towers when he had a crown containing four of them placed above a statue of her in the courtyard of his church. He intended to create more towers on his property as well, for *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* says that "Shortly before his death he was allegedly planning to build a massive Babel-like tower lined with books, from which he intended to preach."

According to some researchers, Sauniere and his cult used the Tower of Magdala for sex magic rituals, just as the Tower of Babel had been used. In *The Templar Legacy*, by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, the authors state that:

> *"During one of our trips to the area in 1995 we took with us Lucien Morgan, a television presenter and Tantric authority, who was amazed to discover that the Tour Magdala and ramparts were built according to the ancient principles of a certain kind of sex rite. He believes that Sauniere and his secret circle practiced occult sexual rituals that were designed to facilitate clairvoyance, put them in contact with the gods…"*

This is exactly what the Tower of Babel, the Temple of Bethel, and the Temple of Jerusalem were built to do.

There seem to be a number of clues linking Rennes-le-Chateau and the surrounding area to various mythical mountains, tombs, and temples said to be located “in the center of the Earth.” The clues discussed in this chapter link it to Solomon’s Temple, Jacob’s ladder and Bethel temple, the Tower of Babel, the tomb of Christian Rosenkreutz (and thus the tombs of Hermes and Osiris), the Cave of Treasures (where all of the biblical patriarchs were buried), and “Golgotha”, where Adam’s skull was purportedly buried after the Flood. All of these places are said to be “in the center of the Earth.” The entire mythos surrounding this area also seems to be saturated with imagery pointing towards Atlantis and Eden, which were, again, said to be in the center of the Earth. I suggest that this is not merely the result of confusion, but of change over time. I submit that this is the result of the migration of something sacred, symbolized by the “Grail stone” which “fell from Heaven.”

As an object of value, and one that, apparently, bestowed power upon those who possessed it, the stone was coveted by all, and thus it had to be moved periodically over the millennia. Sometimes this was done for safety reasons, because it was in danger of being captured or destroyed. Sometimes it *was* captured, and hidden away by the enemy. Wherever the stone found its home, that place was called "the center of the Earth." It was not the location itself that was important, but what was located there.

According to Julius Evola, the "stone from Heaven" represents the seat of global sovereignty, the foundation stone of the empire of the "Lord of the Earth", Kronos, or Satan. And wherever it was located, that place became the capitol of the empire, the symbolic pole or axis of the Earth. Significantly, while visiting Rennes-le-Chateau several years ago, I was told by the town's mayor that "this place is the center of the Earth."

If the Grail stone *were* indeed hidden within a mountain at Rennes-le-Chateau, where would it be? In *The Book of the Cave of Treasures*, the mountain that the Ark of Noah lands upon, and within which the body of Adam is placed, is called "Kardo." Amazingly, this is the name of the tallest mountain in Rennes-le-Chateau – Cardou! This mountain has been the focal point of much Grail hunting, and has been suggested by the authors of *The Tomb of God* to be the final resting place of Christ. Certain documents published by the Priory of Sion, some written by Pierre Plantard himself, suggest that something called "the Roseline" runs through Mt. Cardou - something which they insinuate was once the "prime meridian line" of the ancient world.

In fact, this is what the word "Kardo" or "Cardou", apparently means. In Ignatius Donnelly's *The Antediluvian World*, we read:

"The Romans and the Persians called the line of the axis of the globe cardo, and it was to cardo the needle [of the compass] pointed. Now Cardo was the name of the mountain on which the human race took refuge from the Deluge… the primitive geographic point for the countries which were the cradle of the human race. From this comes our word 'cardinal', as in the cardinal points."

The idea of linking Rennes-le-Chateau with the Flood, and with the landing-place of the Ark, seems substantiated by the fact that, as I have discussed, the pilots of the Ark in Greek legend, Deucalion and Pyrrha (a.k.a. Hercules and Pyrene) are purportedly buried somewhere within the mountain range that runs through the area, and that the word "Pyrenees" is probably a corruption of "Parnassus", the mountain upon which Deucalion's ark landed.[58] Also, Rennes-le-Chateau used to be called "Rhedae", and was named after Rhea, who was the mother of both Deucalion and Pyrrha.

This idea receives further support from yet another Priory document, the previously-mentioned poem *Le Serpent Rouge*. The setting of the poem clearly takes place in Rennes-le-Chateau, and the main character is a mysterious “friend” whom the author describes as “...like the pilot of the imperishable Ark... .” As the poem continues, it makes two mysterious references to “the line of the Meridian” (the “Roseline”). There is also a repeated use of the phrase “deliver me from the mire, so that I do not sink”, another seeming reference to the Flood. Then, towards the end, the narrator states that the sky “opens its floodgates”, a clear allusion to the biblical Deluge. The poem seems to be saying implicitly that Noah landed near Rennes-le-Chateau. This is a document written by the Priory of Sion itself! It is worth noting here the fact that one of the townships near Rennes-le-Chateau, spelled “Arques”, is actually pronounced just like “ark.” Then there is that painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, which depicts a mysterious tomb within the landscape of Rennes-le-Chateau. In it, the mountain of Cardou is featured prominently.

---

[58] There is actually a section of Paris called "Montparnasse."

Does this imply that Cardou is the “Arca-Dia” – the Ark (vessel, prison, or tomb) of “God” (the lord Satan)? Notably the word “Cardou” can, like “Grail” (“Gar-Al”), be broken down into syllables that in certain languages mean “vessel” (“Car”) and “god” (“dou”, which sounds like “dieu”, the French word for “god”). And if Cardou is the location of the sacred tomb supposedly lit by an “inner sun” (the Grail Stone), which Rosicrucians symbolized as a “rose”, this may explain why the meridian which purportedly passes through it is called the “Roseline.”

As I discussed earlier quite briefly, Cardou is but one of five mountains in Rennes-le-Chateau that form, as the research of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* co-author Henry Lincoln has proven, a perfectly mathematical pentagram when their peaks are traced on a map. The odds against this occurring naturally are, as one would imagine, astronomically high. However, no one has yet been able to explain how this could have occurred, although, according to the myths of ancient man, the gods of old were quite capable of moving mountains using their light-based technology.

The pentagram has been a sacred symbol for ages, and was the central geometric figure of the Pythagorean mysteries. Its angles embody the Phi ratio and golden mean geometry, and as such this figure appears a great deal in nature, including the human body, which is why Priory of Sion Grand Master Leonardo da Vinci used it as a symbol of the divine proportion in man. The planet Venus, called “the Morning Star” and associated with Lucifer, actually forms a perfect pentagram from the perspective of the Earth as it cycles through its orbit, the only planet in our solar system to display such properties. Given its association with the Luciferian “Morning Star”, and with the hidden mathematical mysteries of nature, we can understand how this symbol has become linked in the modern mind with Satanism.

But recall that the pentagram can be traced back to ancient Sumeria, where it was called the “Ar”, “the Plough Sign”, and was linked to “Aryan” race spawned by Cain and Satan. Furthermore, recall that the word “Ar” also has the secondary meaning of “to shackle or imprison”, which the word “arca” in Latin came to mean as well. Then recall the legends of Satan being imprisoned underground by a pentagram, and the legend that Cain and his descendants were later jailed within an underground realm called “the Arka.”[59] The word “ark” or “arca” also means “tomb.” This prefix is further linked to words regarding secrecy, and digging or hiding things underground, as I have established earlier in this chapter. And Henry Lincoln has found that the tomb in the painting *The Shepherds of Arcadia* is set within an implied geometrical pentagram.

Is the pentacle of mountains at Rennes-le-Chateau the one that “imprisoned” these figures, and entombed them, occulting their hidden wisdom, written on the stone from Heaven?

In regards to this possibility, I should note something about the phrase “This place is terrible”, written above the door of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau, right next to an etching of a star shooting down from Heaven.[60] This is most definitely a quote from the story of Jacob’s ladder, for above the doorway is also written “This is the house of God and the gateway to Heaven”, which are the same words that follow “This place is terrible” in the Jacob story. However, there is another instance in which the phrase “This place is terrible” appears. In *The Book of Enoch*, Chapter 21, Enoch is taken by the Watchers to a place where there were:

---

[59] Even in modern times, pentacles are used in ritual magic to “contain” ethereal entities while evoking them.

[60] This is a Luciferian image used by Freemasons, called “the Blazing Star.”

“…stars of heaven bound in it together, like great mountains, and like a blazing fire. I exclaimed, For what species of crime have they been bound, and why have they been removed to this place? Then Uriel… answered… These are those of the stars which have transgressed the commandment of the most high God; and are here bound, until the infinite number of the days of their crimes be completed. From there I afterwards passed on to another terrific place; Where I beheld the operation of a great fire blazing and glittering, in the midst of which there was a division. Columns of fire struggled together to the end of the abyss, and deep was their descent. But neither its measurement nor magnitude was I able to discover; neither could I perceive its origin. Then I exclaimed, How terrible is this place, and how difficult to explore!

riel, one of the holy angels who was with me, answered and said: Enoch, why are you alarmed and amazed at this terrific place, at the sight *of this place of suffering? This, he said, is the prison of the angels; and here they are kept for ever."*

So Enoch said "This place is terrible" when he saw "the prison of the angels." And what does one see as soon as one passes through the door of Sauniere's church, marked by the words "This place is terrible"? Why, an image of the fallen angel Asmodeus bound in chains.

In Andre Douzet's *Sauniere's Model and the Secret of Rennes-lee-Chateau*, the author discusses the purported last words of Berenger Sauniere: "John 23." He suggests several possible Bible references that this might correlate to. One of them was *The Revelation of St. John the Divine*, Chapter 20, verses 1-3, which reads:

"Then I saw an angel coming down from Heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while."

Recall that in *The Legends of the Jews*, Louis Ginzberg described how Cain and his descendants purportedly wound up inside the "Arka", writing that "The earth opened her mouth an swallowed up the four generations sprung from Cain – Enoch, Irad, Mehujael, and Mathushael." Five generations. Five kings of the Cainites. Five mountains in the pentagram at Rennes-le-Chateau. Are these things all coincidences?

I submit that the five mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau contain the royal tombs of Cain and the four generations of kings that succeeded him. The tomb of Enoch also contains the tablet of Enoch, which was written on the stone from Heaven – the Holy Grail. It was believed that this stone somehow contained the living essence of Cain's father, Satan, and thus, the Arka was his tomb as well. It was also the "Arka-dia", the "Grail cup", the "Vessel of God" (the true God, Satan). Because of the legend that Satan and the Cainites were imprisoned in the center of the Earth by the other "God", Jehovah, the "Arka" became remembered as a prison as well.

The stone was believed to contain the wisdom of Enoch, and this is the source of the stories about the tombs of Hermes and Christian Rosenkreutz, both of which purportedly contained this treasure. The stone was associated this the alchemical "Philosopher's Stone", and thus the symbol of the “Black Sun”, the “inner sun”, or the “rose” came about - said to light the inner world of Agartha, the tomb of Osiris, and the tomb of Rosenkreutz.

Because this location became the repository of items and people associated with the Flood, the area itself became associated with the Flood, and with Mt. Ararat. It later became a royal capitol[61], and a sacred site, revered by the people who lived in that area, especially those who could trace their ancestry back to the divine kings buried within – the Grail bloodline of the Merovingians. That is how Rennes-le-Chateau became steeped in imagery of holy temples, such as the one in Bethel. And because it was the repository of the “foundation stone”, it became associated with the polar axis, or the “center of the Earth.” This is why the “Roseline” meridian was based upon it.

We know that the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau contain vast networks of mines and other tunnels throughout their interiors, created over thousands of years, many of which have never even been explored in modern times. Many more have been added by treasure seekers looking for a secret passageway to hidden riches. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* suggests that Berenger Sauniere may have found, beneath Rennes-le-Chateau

---

[61] The idea that it was a capitol is strengthened by the fact that it is marked by a pentagram. The capitol of the United States, Washington D.C., has been laid out according to pentagonal geometry by the Freemasons who were put in charge of designing it. Recall that the word “Sion” means capitol also, and Rennes-le-Chateau has been identified with “Sion.”

"… an underground crypt… under a manmade pool ... In fact, a manmade pool does exist near Rennes-le-Chateau – near a site called, appropriately enough, Lavaldieu (the Valley or Vale of God). This pool might well have been constructed over an underground crypt – which, in turn, might easily lead via a subterranean passageway to any of the myriad caves honeycombing the surrounding mountains."

Digging of any kind has been forbidden in Rennes-le-Chateau for decades. It is my belief that if exploration were to continue, someone would eventually find the network of tunnels that leads to the tomb of the Cainites, and to the Grail stone. One is also likely to find an underground shrine or temple built into the mountain by those devoted to Cain and Satan. Furthermore, this network of tunnels probably links up to a larger network spanning the entire region of mountains, including Montsegur, in which one is likely to find other ancient treasures in the same vein.

I believe that many of the locals, including those of Merovingian blood, as well as the Knights Templar and the Priory of Sion, have been aware of the existence of this fantastic underground treasure the whole time. For all these years they have essentially constituted a loosely-linked cult dedicated to revering and protecting the sacred treasure. They are also dedicated to making it once again a foundation stone for an empire ruled by the Grail blood of Cain and Satan. No wonder, then, that they do not want anybody to know about it. No wonder also that groups like the CIA and the Vatican have wanted to control it, for it really could bestow omnipotent worldly power on the right person, if used in the right way.

I realize that most of what has been proposed in this book will seem fantastic to many of you, and of course, it is impossible to prove any of this at the present time. But I do believe that, regardless of the truth or falsehood of the theory itself, I have made a convincing case that this, or something like this, is what the Templars, the Priory of Sion, and the Merovingians have *believed* about Rennes-le-Chateau and the Grail. I have also proven that there is a consistent theme running through occult lore, through the Bible, and through world mythology. This theme revolves around a royal, divine bloodline that can only be described as Satanic, and an underground repository for a sacred "stone from Heaven" which somehow contains that bloodline's right of sovereignty. This repository is said to be a mountain located "in the center of the Earth." There is sufficient evidence that the south of France has been the repository at one time, and may continue to be.

Whether you believe it or not, this theory, or something very similar, is embraced by the Priory of Sion, an organization that has counted some very elite people amongst its membership, and is purportedly a hidden but significant force behind European politics. To corroborate their belief in these ideas, we turn to the writings of Pierre Plantard, and the publications of his Priory-linked fraternal order, Alpha Galates.

Chapter Seven – The Enigma Decoded

“Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.”

- Matthew 7:7 – 7:8

Unanswered Questions

When I began my investigation, I was dealing with a mystery that had been explored ad infinitum by hundreds of previous authors, and yet it seemed to me that few of the most fundamental questions had been satisfactorily answered. What secret did Berenger Sauniere stumble across at Rennes-le-Chateau that not only made him fabulously rich, but caused an untimely death, and caused him to be refused Final Unction at his death? What could possibly have captured the devotion of men like Godfroi de Bouillon, Nicolas Flamel, Rene d’Anjou, Botticelli, Leonardo da Vinci, Robert Fludd, Robert Boyle, Isaac Newton, Charles Nodier, Victor Hugo, Claude Debussy, and Jean Cocteau, holding these diverse figures in a common bond of brotherhood stretching over an entire millennium? Why were men like Cardinal Mazarin, Louis XIV, Philippe the Fair, and Pope John XXIII so obsessed with this secret? Why did the bloodlines stemming from the Merovingian kings appear to consider themselves sacred, with a divine mandate to rule, and why would others, apparently not themselves of the bloodline, share this conclusion? Why are there, and exactly how is it that there are, five mountains at Rennes-le-Chateau in the shape of a perfect pentagram? And what does the secret of Rennes-le-Chateau have to do with the traditions of Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism, or heretical sects of Christianity? Then add to these questions the numerous other riddles, coded messages, strange bits of imagery and metaphor associated with the Rennes-le-Chateau saga that had never been properly explained when I first began my research. Twenty years after the publication of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, I believe I have made much more substantial progress towards answering these questions than anyone else in this field of research, except, of course, for the originators: Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln.

Most of the authors who have written on this subject since the publication of Baigent, et. al.'s monumental classic have chosen to focus their efforts on picking apart minor details of the theories presented in that book, while never offering any convincing counter-explanations for the phenomenon that is Rennes-le-Chateau. Many are desperate to somehow "prove" that Pierre Plantard and company are charlatans, that the Priory of Sion is a hoax, and ergo, there is no mystery to be found at Rennes-le-Chateau. Even Henry Lincoln himself has chosen now to ignore all aspects of the mystery which pertain to the Priory of Sion or the Merovingians, and to focus solely on the pentagonal geometry that he has discovered (although he also refuses to speculate on the meaning, purpose, or origin of the geometry).

However, I have chosen not to share in what I consider to be a pseudo-intellectual pursuit: debunking. And while I have maintained a healthy amount of skepticism throughout my research, I see no gain in obsessing over minutia or trying to impress my scholarly colleagues with how critical I can be. I do not pretend to know for a fact whether or not the modern Priory of Sion really does possess the ancient pedigree or political connections that it has boasted of, but I do think that they must be the bearers of some genuine secret pertaining to Rennes-le-Chateau. After all, they *were* the keepers of the parchments in which Lincoln first discovered the geometry that he later applied to the landscape of Rennes-le-Chateau - the only aspect of the mystery which Lincoln considers to have any value. Whether they concocted it themselves or whether they had been preserving it since Sauniere's time, the fact remains that they *were* the possessors of these documents.

Furthermore, I cannot ignore the inner logic of the theories presented in the "Prieure documents" discussed in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, which largely formed the basis for the hypothesis presented in that book. The theories linking the Merovingian bloodline with the Judaic line of Christ and King David, and then linking the Merovingians' descendants with the Knights Templar, the Ordre de Sion, the Rosicrucians, the Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement, the Hieron du Val d'Or, the Freemasons, the French Resistance, and the modern Priory of Sion - these theories are too logical and well-argued to ignore. I think that the authors of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, prompted by the material published by the modern Priory of Sion, properly identified a cult of heretical Christianity, linked with various secret hermetic societies throughout the centuries, and linked politically with the same influential European families throughout the centuries. They clearly established at least one facet of what the cult believed: that certain European noble bloodlines were derived from Christ, King David, and the patriarchs of the Bible. They also clearly established the connection between this cult and the region of Southern France surrounding Rennes-le-Chateau.

Those less critical souls who have chosen to pursue the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau (as opposed to those who see no mystery in it at all) have still elected to go with the theory presented in *Holy Blood, Holy*

Grail, that the body of Christ is the treasure buried beneath Rennes-le-Chateau. In this view, the secret which has been the cause of so much angst for over a thousand years is this: that Christ did not die on the cross, and that he wed Mary Magdalene, fathering with her a royal bloodline in what is now Southern France. These people further assert that this was the impetus behind all of the heretical cults and secret societies associated with the saga of Rennes-le-Chateau. While this theory does explain how the secret of Rennes-le-Chateau could have been considered heretical in the time of the Templars, and even, to a lesser extent, in Sauniere's time, it does not explain why such ideas would be considered so now, and thus, why they would need to be kept secret. Why then, do none of the people who clearly know the secret reveal it? In an era where Christ has been called gay, Black, female, a non-existent archetype, and everything else, the suggestion that he may have been married, or that the story of his death might diverge from the biblical narrative seems mild indeed. Extremely conservative Catholics and Protestants might get upset for a short time, as they did when *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* was first published. But in the larger scope, this is not the kind of thing at which the general public would bat an eyelash. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, and the many books that followed, have over the years presented numerous clues contained within the Rennes-le-Chateau mystery, including the Priory of Sion documents, hinting that Christ's tomb can be found at Rennes-le-Chateau. It does appear to me that this is one of the conclusions Berenger Sauniere and Pierre Plantard wanted us to come to. But it also appears to me that this is not an end in and of itself, but merely another clue pointing towards something larger.

Many chroniclers have written about the cult of Mary Magdalene, and the statues of the Black Madonna that they believe represent her, claiming that she was revered in secret as the wife of Christ. These same writers also link Magdalene and the Black Madonna to the goddess Isis, or Venus. They then go on to state that Christ and Magdalene were the high priest and priestess of a sex magic cult continuing the mysteries of Isis - one that has since been corrupted into the form of modern Christianity. The association of Rennes-le-Chateau with this cult is, some believe, further indication that Christ and Mary Magdalene are buried in the village.

I have no reason to disagree with this. It does seem that Christ and Mary Magdalene were the leaders of such a cult, and that they shared a sort of alchemical union, embodying the ancient principles of hierogamy and sex magic. The alchemical nature of their wedding ceremony at Cana, where water is transformed into wine, is obvious. And the notion that Christ and Magdalene were laid to rest together at Rennes-le-Chateau is not one that I can or would wish to refute. But if Christ and Magdalene patterned their own images after Cain and Venus, taking on the exact same symbolism, does it not seem then that the iconography of Christ and Magdalene could be used as a coded reference for older gods? In other words, when we see clues at Rennes-le-Chateau indicating that Christ and Magdalene are buried there, could these clues really be saying that ancient god-kings and queens are buried there? Such an idea would explain the extreme secrecy that has surrounded this mystery, the controversy that it has sparked, and the interest that it has held for some of the world's most powerful men for the last 1000 years. It would explain why it is considered "heretical" and dangerous even by modern standards. This is truly a "secret which kings would have pains to draw." The discovery of this secret could have colossal consequences for the entire civilized world.

To find the remains of gods, or semi-divine descendants of gods, who have features different than what we would call "human", would cause us to reevaluate our entire understanding of things like: biology, anthropology, archeology, history itself, and of course, our religious beliefs. We would then have no doubt that all which we know as "civilization" has a common antediluvian origin – that it was brought to us by these gods and their descendants. It would be especially shocking to learn that the true heritage of Jesus "Christ" and the "Grail blood" was actually Satanic in nature; or to learn that Satan's descendants, the Cainites, and their descendants, the Grail family, have played a very decisive role in shaping the course of history. It was they who brought civilization, as well as every kind of wisdom and enlightenment, to mankind, so many years ago. I can only assume that the tradition is being carried on by their descendants, those of the Grail blood, in a secret, obscure fashion. The Priory of Sion would appear to most definitely be a manifestation of this.

Furthermore, the discovery of a vast underground realm, such as that proposed, of which these tombs would be but a part, could hold secrets beyond our wildest dreams. There we would find remnants of a world that dates back to the gods themselves. We would learn all about their technology, their beliefs, their customs, their history, things which eventually became our technology, beliefs, customs, and history. If we can actually find and decipher the Grail stone there (the "Gor-al", or "precious engraved stone", which is also the tablet of Enoch/Hermes), we will be able to read this history as one reads a book. Perhaps we, like our ancestors before us, could actually use the stone to communicate with the deities themselves. Who knows: there could even still be Cainites living underground, the source of the myths of elves, fairies, Djinn, and the like.

I was satisfied with my hypothesis. Although there was no way of proving it, I thought I had done the best job of any Grail/Rennes-le-Chateau researcher so far at penetrating the heart of the mystery. The final step involved simply reviewing one more time (and in some cases, for the first time) the numerous clues left by the Priory of Sion, Berenger Sauniere, and other secret initiates, to see if I could now interpret these clues in the light of my hypothesis.

The City of the Alpha

As I entered the final stages of my research into the mysteries of the Grail, the Merovingians, and Rennes-le-Chateau, something was still troubling me. Although I had followed the clues to what seemed like an obvious conclusion regarding these matters, it bothered me that many of the subjects that I had linked to the Grail and Merovingian mythos had not even been mentioned in those textbook tomes *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* and *The Messianic Legacy*. If the subjects of Atlantis, subterranean realms, and the Black Sun were indeed connected to the Grail lore and the Rennes-le-Chateau mystery, would not the Priory of Sion have at least hinted at it somewhere along the line?

The answer to this question came when I discovered, on the website of Mr. Paul Smith[62], his excellent translations of the articles that appeared in *Vaincre*, the wartime journal published by the Order of Alpha Galates and edited by their Grand Master, Pierre Plantard, supposedly before he joined the Priory of Sion. However, as I have said, it is apparent that the Priory and Alpha Galates were one and the same. *Vaincre*, therefore, is a Priory document. And what these articles said confirmed my suspicions beyond my wildest imaginings.

Alpha Galates, as revealed by *Vaincre*, obviously believed in Atlantis, and in the Atlantean origin of the French race. In fact, Alpha Galates claimed to be perpetuating the Atlantean tradition, which was also practiced, they said, by the Druids. In an article by "Le Comte de Moncharville" entitled *The East and the West*, it is written that:

"...France, through Brittany, was also familiar with the Atlantean tradition, of which the Druidic cult (with its sacrifices to the Sun, the ceremony of mistletoe, menhirs and dolmens, and institutions of chivalry) is merely the survival. ... When Catholicism chased the Druids out of Gaul, some of the monks collected together the Atlantean traditions and formed the Alpha, which then split into two branches: the Cistercians, who

---

[62] Source: http://www.priory-of-sion.com/

adopted Christianity, and the Chivalric Order of Galate, which preserved the Atlantean tradition."

De Moncharville's assertions match those expressed in a book called *Preadamites*, cited by Ignatius Donnelly's *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World* (although the author of the book is nowhere mentioned.) The passage cited reads:

"The Gauls possessed traditions upon the subject of Atlantis which were collected by the Roman historian Timagenes, who lived in the first century before Christ. He represents that three distinct people dwelt in Gaul: 1. The indigenous population, which I suppose to be Mongoloids, who had long dwelt in Europe; 2. The invaders from a distant island, which I understand to be Atlantis; 3. The Aryan Gaul."

The source of the word "Galates" in "Alpha Galates" probably has to do with the word "Gaul", the ancient name for the area that is now France. "Alpha Galates" would then probably mean "source of the Gauls", with "Alpha" indicating the "beginning" or "source." The source of the Gaulish race, they claimed, is Atlantis, and is Druidic as well. Interestingly, the same claim was made by the psychic Edgar Cayce, who said that Atlanteans fleeing the Flood had escaped to the Pyrenees. The word “Gal”, by the way, means “navigator” in Hebrew.[63] And “navigator” is the title given to the grand masters of the Priory of Sion.

Another article from *Vaincre*, entitled *The ‘Southern Cross’ - Rallying Point for the Pure of Heart*, by Auguste Brisieux, connects Atlantis directly to France, specifically the province of Brittany, and describes in fantastic terms Atlantean civilization, as well as its downfall. It states:

“Lemuria, a small country situated on the ancient continent on Atlantis, of roughly the same size as our Brittany, and which is now no more than the vestige of a thousand years of history, rich in spiritual, moral and intellectual glory, of which the Southern Cross was the national emblem, appears to us today to be shrouded in mystery, a mystery that many legends have helped preserve. In reality, however, this was the Land of Initiates, and whereas we ourselves are still in our infancy the Lemurians already knew about the power of the waves, the laws of the Cosmos and karmic cycles - they knew both how to govern and how to obey... This great continent collapsed into materialism, fell prey to the dark forces, rejected the rule of law, destroyed its temples and [its people were]

---

[63] It can also be translated as “wave.”

massacred in large numbers, although those who survived succeeded in establishing themselves on our present continent, in our Brittany. But for men, as for nations, the law of karma exists - Atlantis, submerged beneath the putrefying flames, suffered the penalty for its sins. However, the Southern Cross, a constellation of the Southern Hemisphere... remained the happy insignia of the great initiates of the West.”

The symbol of the octopus, which appears on the tombstone of Marie de Blanchefort in Rennes-le-Chateau, and also within the pages of the Priory of Sion’s *Secret Dossiers*, is another symbol of Atlantis, it seems. It can be found at the end of an article about the Hieron du Val d’Or (translated in an appendix to this book), and is actually lifted from a book by Paul le Cour called *The Age of Aquarius*. The article is dated June 24th, 1926, which is the same date upon which the French Magazine *Atlantis* was founded. This was a magazine edited by Le Cour, which, it is said, the Priory of Sion published.[64] In *The Age of Aquarius*, the octopus is referred to as “a symbol of the primitive tradition.” By “primitive”, they probably just mean “original” or “primordial”, for they saw the Atlantean tradition as the most pure. In one of the issues of *Vaincre*, a quote from Paul le Cour is included which states: “...When a stream is polluted it is necesary, if you are to find pure water, to go back to the source. It's the same with tradition - it only remains pure at its origin." This "stream" of tradition is the "underground stream" of the Grail lore.

---

[64] This date is also St. John’s Day, a high holy day in Freemasonry. Recall also that the Priory of Sion grand masters take on the title “John” upon assuming office.

And it is underground where the publishers of *Vaincre* see the remains of the Atlantean tradition, preserved in subterranean cities populated by an advanced race who use an advanced light-based technology.[65] In *The East and the West*, by Le Comte de Moncharville, is a most astounding passage:

"During the mission to Tibet I succeeded in making contact - while I was in Lhasa, in the Forbidden City of Agartha, which is the seat of the Government of the Living Buddha, the 'Dalai Lama' - with several monks of the great monastery there. During the several years that my mission to Lhasa lasted I managed to win the confidence and friendship of them all, and I learned what probably no other initiate of the West has ever known, compared to which the famous Secret Doctrine *of H.P. Blavatsky seem only a fragment of the truth. When I was on the point of leaving, the monks led me along seemingly interminable staircases carved into the mountain into a veritable underground town located underneath the*

---

[65] In the novels of Rosicrucian Edward Bulwer Lytton, the underground world was run by "Vril", an energy containing limitless power, which the underground dwellers derived from the inner sun that lit their subterranean world.

temples. And there they gave me a glimpse of the collection of objects that had been brought from Atlantis before the catastrophe there.

Then I visited the Sanctuary of the Dragon, where, for the first time since the Orient, I attended a ceremony of a Superior Rite, and finally, during my last few days there, I had the opportunity to contemplate electrical machines of a kind unknown today, which had been brought from Atlantis and which made it possible to impart to the subterranean rooms a light and atmosphere that was exactly the same as that of the open air, which had so surprised me during my first visit to the heart of the mountain. These machines were also used by the 'Dalai Lama' to erect around the Forbidden City of Agartha magnetic barriers that prevented undesirable strangers from penetrating therein."

De Moncharville even hints that the Sanctuary contains the key to an ancient and universal language:

"What most caught my eye was a collection of indecipherable signs covering the largest part of the granite walls of the 'great work'. Seeing my perplexity, one of the Masters of the Secret hastened to explain to me, to help me understand, that only three symbols were sovereign, and that these formed the unity of all symbols."

The symbols which he then shows are a plus sign, a zero, and a closed parenthesis, which he says correspon to "atom, spark, and wave."

This massive underground structure, "the Sanctuary of the Dragon", was, according to Le Comte de Moncharville, constructed by "Galatean knights", precursors of the Knights Templar who were the preservers of the Atlantian tradition, and the originators of chivalry. He writes:

> *"...they worked the But-Or ('the Gold Mines') and constructed below-ground the city of the Alpha, the biggest city in the world, and completed ... the Sanctuary of the Dragon on one of the Mounts of the Dragon. Then, in the year 812, they suddenly disappeared. Some days later, amid a rumble of thunder, the sea covered the places where the last Atlanteans had lived. From this time onward, only one of the Mounts of the Dragon, towering above the waves, remained to provide evidence, through the existence of its sanctuary, of the activities of the Galatean*[66] *knights."*

Le Comte de Moncharville reveals the location of the Sanctuary to be, once again, the French province of Brittany, and the "Mounts of the

---

[66] Galatea was a sea nymph in Greek mythology, who began as a statue who was turned to life by Venus. She may be seen in this context as a personification of the Gaulish race.

Dragon" are actually located on the site currently known as Mount St. Michel, where Saint Michael supposedly defeated "the Dragon", who is Satan. You will recall that I have suggested that this story is based upon the ongoing battle between Jehovah and Abel on the one hand , and Satan and Cain on the other. Michael, of course, represents Jehovah and Abel, whose title of "Moloch" (as in "Baal-Moloch") is the root of the name "Michael." The Dragon, of course, represents Satan and Cain. And what did Michael do with the Dragon after he defeated him? Well, he chained him up and imprisoned him within the bottomless pit, of course. Once again, the idea of Satan's underground prison is evoked in regards to a mountain in France. And here it is being written of in a magazine published by Priory of Sion Grand Master Pierre Plantard.

What's more, Mt. St. Michel is just one of several mountains which form what one author has called "the Saint Michael line": a series of sacred sites (all named after Saint Michael) that can be connected in a straight line. They are located in Jerusalem, Greece, Brittany and Cornwall. Those in England and France are placed far enough off the coast that they constitute islands. English legends state that the coastal island of Saint Michael's Mount was actually *constructed by giants* long ago.[67] According to the Priory of Sion's *Secret Dossiers*, Mont. St. Michel in Brittany once served as one of their commanderies.

Brittany is also the location of a site of megalithic standing stones, in a place called Carnac, very similar to the name of an ancient Egyptian city, Karnak. According to H.P. Blavatsky, "The Egyptian Karnak is twin brother to the Carnac of Bretagne, the latter Carnac meaning the Serpent's Mount."

At any rate, Moncharville continues his amazing description of this underground temple in Brittany which he called "the Sanctuary of the Dragon":

> *"The Sanctuary of the Dragon was not abandoned - a new monastery was constructed on its site. And so, beneath the crypt located underneath the flagstone of the Galatean Knights, a crypt more ancient still, dating from this period, gives access to the old Sanctuary. It was through the Sancutary of the Dragon that the first knights passed to meet with the subterranean dwellers, who led them to the heart of the Breton crypts 379 meters down, in the City of the Alpha, where the Temple of Aga*[68] *was*

---

[67] This site was purportedly visited by Jesus and his uncle, Joseph of Arimathea, and was the location of the first Christian church in Britain.

[68] Remember that "Ag" was a title used by Cain and Enoch.

located. Is this still the only entrance to the City of the Alpha? No, but it is very certainly the oldest."

When I first read the above-quoted passages, I was absolutely astounded. For whatever reason, Baigent, et.al. had chosen to ignore this information completely.[69] But now I had corroboration directly from the publications of the Priory of Sion that they believed in underground cities like Agartha, the fabled city located in the center of the Earth, which they maintained was built by Atlanteans, and that *the oldest* entrance to this vast underworld was located in France. This passageway was thought to reach to the *center* of the Earth, and not just far underground, as indicated by a line from Moncharville's article which reads:

"Finally, in the Round Table, my guide pointed something out to me. I immediately approached it, as I had racognized the small round altar of Lhasa, but here there were some voices that I had already heard, nonetheless muffled, as if they came from the center of the earth."

---

[69] When asked, Henry Lincoln told me that they excluded mention of these subjects in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* because they exist in "realms of pure speculation, wishful thinking and fantasy."

So then, I thought, if such a thing exists in Brittany, many miles to the North and on the other side of France, why could there not be something similar at Rennes-le-Chateau? From the above-quoted passages, one line in particular struck me as odd: “And so, beneath the crypt located underneath the flagstone of the Galatean Knights, a crypt more ancient still, dating from this period, gives access to the old Sanctuary.” For in the Church of Saint Magdalene in Rennes-le-Chateau, it was underneath “The Knight’s Flagstone” that Sauniere discovered, soon after finding the parchments, an underground crypt. He was extremely secretive about it, and would not allow the workmen who helped him lift the stone to see what was underneath it. It is believed that the “Knight’s Flagstone” depicts Templar Knights because two of them are seen seated on the same horse, an earmark of the Templars. But the flagstone is badly damaged, and the knights are very crudely depicted anyway, making it unclear exactly what sort of people they are. Perhaps the “Knight’s Flagstone” was placed there as a clue, mimicking the flagstone of the Galatean knights in Brittany. Perhaps, like its Breton cousin, it conceals an entrance to a subterranean realm – one that includes the Grail stone and the graves of the Cainites. Such a conclusion definitely seems to be hinted at here, in the text of literature published by the Priory of Sion’s own front organization.

Dagobert II: The Return of the King

The life and death of Dagobert II seems quite ritualistically significant in the context of my hypothesis. Like Christ, Dagobert appears to have modeled every aspect of his image upon that of mythological heroes from the past. His entire life, as historically recorded, is mythological and archetypal. The word “dag” means, in ancient languages, “fish”, while “ber” can mean “priest”, or “house, temple.” Therefore “Dagobert” could be rooted in syllables meaning “Priest of Dagon”, “Priest of the Fish”, or “Priest of the Temple.” That he was also called “Dragobert” evokes the image of Satan as “the Dragon.” Indeed, from the very beginning his life embodied the mythos of a fallen king who has returned – an archetype based upon the prototype of Cain dying and being reborn as Seth. You will recall that his father had been assassinated when he was five, and that he had been kidnapped by his family’s enemies. They sent him into exile in Ireland, while an elaborate ruse was concocted to make everyone believe that he was dead. There he lay in wait for the opportunity to reclaim his father’s throne.

This opportunity showed itself in the year 671, when he married Giselle de Razes, daughter of the count of Razes and niece of the king of the Visigoths, allying the Merovingian house with the Visigothic royal house. This had the potential for creating a united empire that would have covered most of what is now modern France. The marriage was celebrated at the Church of Saint Magdalene in Rhedae, the same spot where Berenger Sauniere's Church of Saint Magdalene at Rennes-le-Chateau now rests. It is said that Dagobert found something there: a clue which led him to a treasure buried in nearby Montsegur. This treasure supposedly financed what was about to come: the re-conquest of Aquitaine and the throne of the Frankish kingdom. As Baigent, et. al write in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, "At once he set about asserting and consolidating his authority, taming the anarchy that prevailed throughout Austrasia and reestablishing order." The fallen king had risen from his ashes, born anew as Dagobert II, and had come to once more establish firm rule and equilibrium in his country. The similarities to the Parsifal/Grail story, where the Fisher King dies and the Grail knight becomes the new king, are fairly clear.

I have discussed, since the time of the Merovingian King Clovis I, the Merovingian Kings had been under a pact with the Church, in which they had pledged their allegiance in exchange for Papal backing of the their united empire of Austrasia. They would forever hold the title of "New Constantine", a title that would later morph into that of "Holy Roman Emperor." But that allegiance on the part of the Merovingians towards the Church began to wear thin after a while. Obviously, given their infernal and divine origin, their spiritual bent was slightly different from that of organized Christianity. In addition, as direct descendants of Jesus, they would have possessed access to the secret teachings of Christ, no doubt shockingly different from the ones promoted by the Church, and reflecting more of the "secret doctrine" of Satan and the Cainites that I have talked about in this book. Any public knowledge of this would have been disastrous for the Church. Seeing in Dagobert a potential threat, they conspired with his enemies to assassinate him on December 23. He was stabbed through the left eye, purportedly by his own godson.

There are many aspects to this event that appear to be mythologically significant. For one thing, it may have taken place on a hunting expedition in the "Forest of Woevres", long held sacred, and host to annual sacrificial bear hunts for the goddess Diana. Indeed, the murder may have taken place on such a hunt. This bears a close similarity to the purported death of Cain, who according to Jewish legends died in a hunting accident in the forest, killed by his descendant, Lamech. The forest that Dagobert died in was located near the royal Merovingian residence at Stenay, a town that used to be called "Satanicum" (perhaps named after Dagobert's ancestor, Satan). We must also consider the date itself, which is close to the Winter Solstice, the shortest day in the year, when the ancients believed the Sun died and turned black, descending into the underworld. That date was also almost precisely at the beginning of the astrological period of Capricorn, and traditionally marked the beginning of the pagan festival of Saturnalia, a debaucherous ritual celebrating the powers of Saturn (Satan) that were believed to rule during the time of Capricorn. The murder is further said to have taken place at the ritualistically important time of midday.

The fact that the murder was committed by a family member is significant too. Not only does this match the circumstances of Cain's death, but it is also similar to the "Dolorous Stroke" that wounded the Fisher King in the Grail story, something which also took place at midday and was inflicted by the king's own brother. In this story, the brother who wounds the Fisher King is known as the "Dark Lord", and during the fight he is wounded in the left eye, precisely as Dagobert was wounded. The same thing happened to Horus in Egyptian mythology, fighting his uncle, Set. The "Left Eye of Horus" came to symbolize the hidden knowledge of the gods, and, as I have shown, represents the Grail stone. Thus, Dagobert's death appears to follow the same patterns as many other fallen kings or murdered gods whose deaths are considered ritualistically symbolic, and who it is believed will one day rise again. These deaths are meant to symbolize the concept of the lost or fallen kingdom (the golden age), just as the Dolorous Stroke does in the Grail story.

Clearly, Dagobert's death meant the end for the Merovingian kingdom. All subsequent Merovingian kings were essentially powerless, and they were officially thought to have died out with Childeric III. But as we know, in 872, almost 200 years after his death, Dagobert was canonized as a Saint, and the date of his death, December 23, became "Saint Dagobert's Day." Like the skull depicted in Guercino's *Et in Arcadia Ego*, Dagobert's skull was ritually trepanned, and became - like the skulls of Adam, Cain (Baphomet), and John the Baptist, a religious idol - believed to have fetishistic powers of protection.

Sauniere's Saga Revisited

Seen in the light of what I have so far gleaned, mysterious tombstone of Marie de Blanchefort gives forth new meaning. On the sides of the stone, as we know, the message "Et in Arcadia Ego" is inscribed, using a mixture of Greek and Latin letters. I have already discussed how this can be seen as a reference to the "Arka" - the tomb of the Cainites which I believe to be beneath Rennes-le-Chateau. I have also discussed how the term "Arcadia" applied to the Greek notion of Paradise. Furthermore, the word "Etin" (the first four letters in the phrase) was once an alternate spelling of "Eden", the Judeo-Christian notion of Paradise. Both of these things symbolize "the center of the Earth", and the golden age of the gods. But on the Blanchefort tombstone, the message actually reads: "Et in Arx Adia Ego." The words "Arx" and "Adia" are separated so as to emphasize "Arx." This word, in Latin, means "a fortress, citadel, or stronghold." This points to the idea that there is an entire subterranean complex built around the tombs beneath Rennes-le-Chateau, which at one time had multiple functions, and that this location may once have been the capitol of an empire. This leads us directly to the message "Reddis Regis Cellis Arcis" in the center of the stone. The word "Reddis" is supposed by most researchers to be derived from the old name of Rennes, which was once called "Rhedis", "Redis", or "Rhedae", named after the goddess Rhea, who was the mother to the two Greek Flood heroes. Meanwhile, "Rennes" means "reins" in French, and may perhaps be a name derived from the belief that the Cainites and Satan were imprisoned or shackled within his tomb. But "reddis" is also a Latin word meaning "you return" or "you restore", from which the French "rendre" and the English "render" are derived. "Regis" means "royal, "Cellis" means "a basement or cave", and "Arcis" means the same thing as "Arx": a fortress, or an "ark", in the sense of a box or enclosure. Thus the statement being made here is "Return to (or Restore) the Cave of the Royal Ark." The words at the bottom of the stone, "Prae-Cum", imply the notion of "the time before", indicating the antediluvian golden age. The octopus symbol below it, as we have learned, represents "the primitive solar religion of Atlantis" - that it, the primeval religious tradition that defined the Golden Age. Even the person whose grave the stone was supposedly made for, Marie de Negre de Blanchefort, whose name means "Black Marie of the White Fort", appears to be used in this context as a symbol of the goddess archetype of Isis or Venus, queen of the Golden Age. But we know that this was not Marie de Blanchefort's real grave, which was actually located in the crypt beneath the church at Rennes-le-Chateau. The faux gravestone was simply a clue left for Berenger Sauniere by his predecessor, Abbe Bigou, as a clue about the sacred tombs within the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau.

The letters "P" and "S" are at the top of the stone, surrounded by a Fibonacci spiral. The same "P", "S", and spiral can be found at the bottom of the first parchment found by Sauniere. These letters, presumably, stand for "Priory of Sion." At the bottom of Parchment Two, the word "SION" is spelled backwards, and the "O" has a dot in the middle, causing it to resemble the astrological sign for the Sun – which points again to the idea of a hidden sun within the sacred tomb. As I looked at these clues again, with the benefit of all of the research I had already done, I began to see the secret which these clues pointed to. A pertinent line from *Le Serpent Rouge* reads: "I pivot, looking from the rose from P to that of the S, the from the S to P…" I began to wonder if this line, the "P", "S", and spiral, as well as the word "SION" spelled backwards were all clues telling me to transpose the letters in the words "Prieure de Sion." I eliminated the article "de" and with little effort, came up with "Pieurrenois", which, when pronounced with a French accent, would sound very much like "Pyrenees." The first syllable in "Pieurrenois" - "Pieurre" - is similar to "Pierre", the French word for "rock." Of course, the first syllable of "Pyrenees" – "Pyr" - means "Fire." This indicates that the "rock of Sion", the "fire-stone from Heaven", can be found at Rennes-le-Chateau.

The message of the second parchment also took on an enhanced meaning now that I knew what I did. The words "Shepherdess - No Temptation, that Poussin and Teniers hold the key" would seem to be, perhaps, the most straightforward aspect of the message. "Shepherdess" and "Poussin", as we know, refer to Poussin's painting, "*The Shepherds of*

Arcadia." However, the translation of the words "gardent la clef" as "hold the key" could perhaps be more accurate. "Gardent" really means "guard", rather than just "hold", and while "clef' does mean "key", it is a word also used to mean "keystone." So the parchment really tells us that "Poussin and Teniers guard the keystone", meaning they know the location of the stone from Heaven, which has been used as the keystone to a sacred temple at least once, if not several times (including the Tower of Babel, the Temple of Bethel, and the Temple of Solomon). Poussin's painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, seems to point not only to the golden age of the gods, but to the "Arka-dia", the tomb of the forgotten God (Satan) and his children (the Cainites). The Poussin painting shows the tomb to be located in Rennes-le-Chateau, within the pentacle of mountains.

The David Teniers painting mentioned by the parchments is assumed by Henry Lincoln to be *Saint Anthony and Saint Paul*, the only Teniers painting featuring Saint Anthony which does not show him enduring his famous temptation by demons - thus the words "no temptation." In this painting, the two saints are sitting in front of an altar upon which stands a crucifix and a skull. This, again, points toward the location of the sacred tomb, "the place of the skull", or Golgotha. The painting shows one saint pointing up towards a descending dove that is carrying the holy host, a representation of the Grail stone.

The words "peace 681" proved more difficult to decipher. I could only note that 681 was the year that Sigisbert IV, Dagobert's son, was purportedly smuggled into the Languedoc region to perpetuate the Merovingian bloodline in exile, and to become the first of the Plantard line. It is suggested that Sigisbert stayed with his mother Giselle de Razes at Rennes-le-Chateau. Perhaps, I thought, this date was associated with "peace" because it signified the end to the turmoil that Dagobert's assassination had brought, as the continuity of the royal line was now secured, even if it was no longer on the throne.

"By the Cross and this Horse of God" I found difficult to interpret as well. The cross was, like the octopus, an ancient sun symbol dating back to Atlantis, and was also used to denote the pole, or center-point of the Earth. The horse was a symbol of Poseidon, the sea god and purported king of Atlantis. And in some cultures the Sun was viewed to be a chariot drawn by celestial horses.

However, a tip that I have received from a party purportedly "in the know" on these matters has suggested an interesting new take on these parchments. The informant in question contacted me by email, claiming to be involved with a group called "the Order of the Blue Rose", which he said had been started by Jean Cocteau's close friend, Jean Marais. It was also strongly hinted that this group was really a front organization for the Priory of Sion. Anyway, the informant suggested that the parchments found by Sauniere were never meant to be viewed as instructions for locating a buried treasure. Rather, they had been left there by Berenger Sauniere's predecessor as priest of Rennes-le-Chateau, Abbe Antoine Bigou, as part of Sauniere's initiation into a mystery cult.

In an earlier chapter of this book, I discussed the possibility that Sauniere was initiated into a quasi-Masonic order, the "Hieron du Val d'Or" ("The Sanctuary of the Valley of Gold"), which itself may have been a front for the Priory of Sion. Then in yet another chapter I suggested that this may have been a part of something larger – that most of the nobles in Rennes-le-Chateau and the surrounding area were all part of an essentially Satanic cult, revering the Grail bloodline descended from Cain and Satan. If Rennes-le-Chateau really does stand over an underground structure containing the tombs of these figures, then it makes sense that Rennes-le-Chateau would be the center of this cult, and Sauniere would have, when fully initiated, have become its high priest, as Bigou had undoubtedly been before him. This church would have probably operated along the lines of the underground "true Christian" cults described by Nicholas de Vere, which were Satanic in nature and celebrated the Black Mass as the "true Christian" mass.

My mysterious informant from the Order of the Blue Rose seemed to corroborate this idea. He claimed that the parchments contained the formula for a ritual that was to be performed by Sauniere, regarding a curse that has for centuries afflicted the Grail bloodline. He said that this curse could not be abolished, but only appeased, by periodic "blood sacrifices." Two of the most significant sacrifices that had been made in this regard were those of Jesus Christ and of Dagobert II. But in the case of Jesus, my informant insisted that a substitute was able to die in his place. He said that the line "by the cross and this horse of God" referred to this substitute.

As astounding as this claim was, he also stated that the remains of these sacrificial victims were treated as holy relics, which were believed to ward off the ill effects of the curse on the Grail bloodline. One of the goals of the "Grail cult in Southern France", as he called it, was to collect as many of these relics as possible and deposit them beneath Rennes-le-Chateau. This is the reason, he claimed, why the first parchment refers to Dagobert II being "here dead" - buried there at Rennes-le-Chateau. This is also the reason why the second parchment refers to "681", the year that Dagobert's remains arrived at Rennes-le-Chateau, brought along with

Sigisbert IV. “Blue apples”, my informant wrote, is a code meaning, simply, “blood sacrifice.” This idea was also symbolized by Cocteau in the blue rose that he placed beneath the feet of the crucified man in his mural at Notre Dame de France, which they had named their order after. The two genealogies that Sauniere found along with the other two parchments were there because they listed the line of the curse’s descent, which was passed down intergenerationally.

I wrote back to my informant asking him several questions. Among them: In what way is “horse of God” a code for the substitution of Christ on the cross? Was that substitute Judas? How exactly does “blue apples” translate as “blood sacrifice.” And what about the lines “I complete this demon guardian at noon”? However, the email message immediately bounced back to me. My informant had disappeared.[70]

Although I could not confirm any of the information this man had given me, it did put an interesting spin on things. The term “blue apples” has been explained by previous authors as an idiom used locally in Southern France to refer to grapes, and therefore, its use in the parchments is a reference to the symbol of the vine, representing the bloodline of the Grail. And royal blood is often called “blue blood.” But there is perhaps another level of meaning as well. The fall from the Garden of Eden was supposedly caused by Eve eating a forbidden fruit, usually depicted as an apple, from the Tree of Life. As I discussed in an earlier chapter, this whole story is a metaphor for the breeding that occurred between Satan and a human female (Eve), resulting in the bloodline of Cain. Jewish and Christian legends make it clear that Cain's bloodline *was* cursed by Jehovah because of this. So perhaps "blue apples" is a code for this cursed bloodline, and for the blood sacrifices that were necessary to alleviate this curse.

---

[70] A few months earlier I had been contacted by another self-proclaimed member of this order, who similarly vanished after a few emails.

Furthermore, I already suggested that Jesus' supposed death on the cross was an effort to break a curse placed upon the Jewish and Israelite people by Jehovah. But I also suggested (as confirmed by my informant) that Jesus had another (I suggest his twin brother Judas Thomas) die in his place, as a "sin atonement" in the Jewish tradition. I suggested that he himself played the part of the scapegoat, taking the weight of the sins upon himself and away from the people, by going into exile. However, if this act did not fully remove the curse, then it would remain attached to the bloodline of Jesus, and perhaps, as my informant suggested, this curse would require more blood atonement from his descendants.

It is interesting that my informant's "Order of the Blue Rose" was purportedly connected to Jean Marais, Jean Cocteau, and the Priory of Sion. Cocteau demonstrated in his mural at Notre Dame de France that he believed in the crucifixion substitution theory. And in his mural at St. Blaise, he showed his belief in the “twin Christ” theory”. Sauniere also demonstrated his belief in both of these theories in some of the decorations he placed in his church – something I have discussed elsewhere in this book. This makes sense if Sauniere and his parishioners (cult members) performed rituals that pertained to this curse, and the sacrifices that were made to control it.

If the curse in question really was passed on to Jesus’ descendants, this might explain why Dagobert II’s death seems so much like a ritual sacrifice, and why it was considered to be a martyrdom by those who believed that Dagobert’s remains contained magical powers. Perhaps these remains were moved secretly to Rennes-le-Chateau, and the ones on display at the convent at Mons, France are fake.

If we are willing to consider these possibilities, perhaps we should also consider the possibility that Berenger Sauniere was also sacrificed for the same reason – and that he may have willingly allowed this. Perhaps this is why his stroke occurred on the Feast Day of Saint Sulpice, which may have been sacred to the cult. After all, the Priory of Sion, which the cult was undoubtedly derived from, operated a base at the Chapel of Saint Sulpice in Paris. And as we know, his housekeeper had ordered his coffin just a few days prior to his stroke.

The fact that his dead body was placed on display so that his parishioners could pluck the tassels from his robe also points to a ritualized death. This is a practice that took place in Merovingian France, ancient Israel, and even ancient Mesopotamia, where for those of royal blood, the tassels of their robes were symbols of their nobility. To take the tassels from a nobleman's robe meant that you were taking for yourself some of his royal power.[71] *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* states that for the Merovingian kings, "the tassels on the fringes of their robes were deemed to possess magical curative powers." Likewise, there is a story in the Gospels of Jesus instantaneously curing a woman of an illness when she tugged upon the end of his robe.

As for the lines "I complete this demon guardian at noon", this might be explained in the context of this sacrificial ritual. First of all, the "demon guardian" would have to be Asmodeus, who seems to guard Sauniere's church from the doorway. As the builder of Solomon's Temple, he is analogous to Hiram Abiff, who according to Masonic ritual was murdered at noon, just like Dagobert II. This may have been the prearranged time for Sauniere's death. Finally, the words translated "I complete" are really "J'acheve", which might be better translated "I achieve", or "I become." The message then reads: "I become the demon guardian at noon." High noon was probably the time that the sacrifice occurred.

---

[71] This information came from John V. Collyer on bibletopics.com.

So Sauniere may have, in a ritual sense, achieved an apotheosis in which he *became* Asmodeus – who represents both Satan and Cain. This would be the equivalent of "manifesting the Baphomet", as the Templars purportedly did. Compare comments made by Templars during their confessions to the Inquisition with the description given in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* of the priest who attempted to take Berenger Sauniere's final confession right before his death. In Julius Evola's *The Mystery of the Grail*, we read:

> "*The central ritual of Templar initiation was kept very secret. From one of the proceedings of the trial we learn that a knight who underwent it returned as pale as a corpse, and with a lost expression on his face, claiming that from then on he could never be happy again. Shortly after, the same knight fell into a state of invincible depression and died… What produces an extreme terror in some knights and causes them to flee… is the vision of an idol… the Baphomet.*"

And in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, we read:

"As Sauniere lay on his deathbed, a priest was called from a neighboring parish to hear his final confession and administer the last rites. The priest duly arrived and retired into the sickroom. According to eyewitness testimony he emerged shortly thereafter, visibly shaken. In the words of one account he 'never smiled again'… the priest, presumably on the basis of Sauniere's confession, refused to administer Extreme Unction."

Perhaps Sauniere, at the moment of death, became the demon that he and his Satanic church had been honoring the entire time at Rennes-le-Chateau, and then was sacrificed according to the family tradition, like Dagobert and Jesus before him. The Satanic cult theory explains everything. The obscure symbolic decorations which Sauniere placed throughout his church may not have been messages to future treasure hunters as much as they were simply there for the worshippers, participating in rituals that pertained to those symbols. The cult is the reason why all of Sauniere's parishioners seemed to be "in" on his secrets. And I have already explained how Sauniere's riches could have come simply from the sale of indulgences in his Satanic church.

Furthermore, there is evidence that a Satanic cult practicing human sacrifice was active in that area during Sauniere's time. A friend of his named Antoine Gelis, who worked in the parish in nearby Coustassa, was murdered on November 1, 1897, killed by several blows to the head. Before the murder, he had been in constant fear, keeping his door locked and refusing to see anybody. He had also come into a large amount of money for some unknown reason, all of which was found still in the house, having been left untouched by the assailant. In *The Templar Revelation*, by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, we read that the murder seemed ritualistic in nature:

"…[The murderer] had ritualistically laid out the body, crossing the arms across the chest, and leaving a piece of paper with the words "viva Angelina" written on it. No motive was ever discerned behind the crime.

There are a couple of particularly strange elements interwoven in the Gelis murder. His gravestone, in the churchyard at Coustassa, has been positioned – alone of all the graves – so that it faces Rennes-le-Chateau, which is clearly visible on the hillside opposite. The grave also bears a rose-cross insignia. And, although this brutal murder of an elderly and fragile priest shocked the local populace, the diocese seemed to have wanted the matter forgotten as swiftly as possible. When Gerard de Sede tried to investigate it in the early 1960s, he found no record of the murder in the diocesan archives at Carcassonne. It was not until 1975 *that two lawyers reconstructed the story from local police and court records."*

The arrangement of the body is a pose used in Freemasonry, in the ritual reenactment of the death of Hiram Abiff. It has its origins it Egypt. Jean Cocteau took this pose when acting in his own film, *The Testament of Orpheus*, in a scene in which he descends to the underworld, dies and is reborn.

Now that I had possibly deciphered the messages of the parchments, I noticed other clues on the parchments, besides the messages themselves, which needed deciphering as well. For instance, the words "Rex Mundi", meaning "King of the World", a title held by Satan and Cain, are embedded into Parchment One. Then there are the words "Redis Bles" and "Solis Sacerdotibus" written beside the main message of Parchment One. The way Henry Lincoln and other authors choose to interpret this, "Redis" means "Rennes", and "Bles" means "corn", which is what wheat was called in Europe and England prior to the discovery of maize (now also called "corn") in the New World. "Bles" ("corn") is also a local idiom for "money" or "treasure", like "bread" is in English. "Solis" means "solely", and "sacerdotibus" means "initiated." Lincoln thus reads the message as saying, "The treasure of Rennes is only for the initiated." But as I have said, "Redis" also means "return", and wheat ("corn") was also a symbol of Cain, who was thought to be the inventor of the plough, and the first to introduce the crop's cultivation. In fact, Cain's name actually means "grain." Furthermore, wheat, and the bread that is made from it have been important icons in religious rituals throughout history, ranging from the Greek and Babylonian mysteries to ancient Judaism and modern Christianity. Catholics celebrate communion by eating a wafer that represents Christ's body, and the ancient Jews had a special "shewbread" that was only administered to the Levitic caste of priests during certain rituals. "Solis" also means "Sun", and "sacerdotibus" specifically means "priesthood." Thus, "Redis Bles Solis Sacerdotibus" could be translated in any of the following ways: "Return the corn to the priesthood of the Sun"; "The corn of Rennes is for the priesthood of the Sun"; "The corn of Rennes is only for the priesthood"; or "Return the wheat solely to the priesthood."

I do appear to be on the right track with my interpretation, for the very text into which the code of Parchment One has been inserted is a conglomeration of quotes from three of the Gospels describing a scene in which Jesus and his disciples are walking through a cornfield, eating corn! As *The Gospel of Saint Matthew* describes it:

“At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn and to eat.

But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day.

But he said to them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungered, and they that were with him;

How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?

Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?

But I say to you, that this place is one greater than the temple.”

So this is the “corn” that is “only for the priesthood.” But what lies beneath the symbolism of this story, and what statement is being made by connecting it with the phrase “Redis Bles Solis Sacerdotibus”? Is the parchment’s creator saying “Return the sacraments of the church (the true church in the tradition of Atlantis) to its rightful priests”? And what of the last line in the passage from *Matthew*: “This place is one greater than the temple”? If its use in the parchment is a reference to Rennes-le-Chateau and the treasures hidden beneath, this could mean that Rennes-le-Chateau is a much holier place than the remains of the temple in Jerusalem.

This may all help explain another curious message which is buried in the text of the second parchment: “Panis ΛΩ Sal” – the Latin words for “bread” and “salt” separated by the Alpha and Omega symbols. We know that bread used in Christian ritual, in the form of the communion wafer, represents the body of Christ. If used in a ritual performed by Sauniere and his cult, however, it probably represents the body of Cain, whose cult of Mithras was the first to use communion as a ritual. But more than that, bread and salt were once used in the rituals of Welsh country pagans, before they were fully Catholicized. When a wealthy person was dying, their family often paid a poor person to come and eat bread and salt in the same room as the dying person. They believed that by doing so, he was consuming, and taking upon himself, the sins of the dying person. The process was called “sin eating.” A popular British film from 2003 called *The Sin Eater* suggested the possibility that an elite and secretive order of Catholic priests was continuing this practice. If the principle upon which sin-eating is based is held to be real, one would think that a willing person could even absorb the sins of another while they are still alive. Instead of simply confessing your sins to your priest every Sunday, you could lay them upon his head, and be free of them, just as the sins of the Israelites were laid upon the head of the scapegoat at Yom Kippur, and just as Jesus took on the sins of his people. Now, this is exactly the sort of ritual that Sauniere's parishioners would have paid significantly to participate in. If Sauniere had absorbed all of the sins of his parishioners before his death, this would mean that he was truly following in the tradition of Christ. And this could have been yet another aspect of Sauniere's final confession that was horrifying to the officiating priest.

The code of Parchment Two is made using a passage from *The Gospel of Saint John*, Chapter 12, verses 1-7. Shortly after Christ raises Lazarus from the dead, he is having dinner with Mary Magdalene, Martha, Lazarus, and his disciples. Mary takes "a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly", and anoints Christ's feet with it, "wiping his feet with her hair." Judas Iscariot, disgusted at the waste of something so valuable, remarks, "Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?" The passage continues:

"This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

Then said Jesus, Let her alone; against the day of my burial hath she kept this.

For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye not have always."

The scene this passage describes is also illustrated in a stained glass window on the ceiling behind the altar of Sauniere's church. What could its significance be in this context? The anointing of Christ's feet by Mary has been described by some authors as the ritual anointing of a king by his bride and queen, which we find perfectly reasonable. But Jesus specifically says that, "against the day of my burial hath she kept this", indicating that it was meant to anoint his dead body before it was placed in the tomb. Thus, this passage describes the events that preceded the crucifixion, and demonstrates how Judas' rude behavior beforehand foreshadowed his betrayal, and made him expendable to Jesus – who then, according to my theory, plotted Judas' death.

Another clue to the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau which began to take on new meaning as my research continued was Sauniere's personal bookplate, now on display in the Berenger Sauniere museum right next to the church at Rennes-le-Chateau. At the top, we see an angel holding Asmodeus in chains, a symbol of Satan and Cain's supposed imprisonment in the center of the Earth. Below is an alchemical seal which Sauniere quite clearly copied from Henricus Madathanus' *Aureum Seculum Redivivum*. The main feature of the symbol is the Seal of Solomon, formed by two triangles, one black and one white. I have already demonstrated how this shape can be thought to represent the sacred mountain reaching up to Heaven, with the sacred tomb in its bowels, reaching down into the center of the Earth. And on this alchemical seal, at the exact point in the bowels of the symbolic "mountain" where you would expect to find the sacred tomb, the astrological sign of the Sun has been drawn in, like the Black Sun in the center of the Earth, and the "hidden sun" which lights the tomb of Osiris. Placed over this is an inverted symbol of Venus, the cross surmounted by a circle. In this version, the cross is pointing upward, near the top of the hexagram, as if it is meant to represent the cavalry cross of Golgotha where Christ was crucified, directly above the "Cave of Treasures", according to Christian apocrypha. The part of the Venus sign that forms a circle is surrounding the "hidden sun" symbol. And written on the circle are the Latin words "Centrum Trigono Centri" ("The Center in the Triangle of the Center.") In other words, "the cave within the mountain which is in the center of the Earth." On either side of the cross are the letters "BS", just as they are found throughout Sauniere's church. For some reason, all past authors have assumed these to be Berenger Sauniere's initials, and no one has thought to compare this seal to the alchemical manuscript it was copied from. These letters are part of the original. So the "BS" decorations Sauniere placed throughout his church are not just his initials. They are undoubtedly an abbreviation for some alchemical motto, but one which, unfortunately, I have yet to deduce.

Around the hexagram just described is another circle (representing the Earth, of which the hexagram represents the center) upon which are written the words “Tria Sunt Mirabilia: Deus et Homo; Mater et Virgo; Trinus et Unus.” This translates to: “Three are the Marvels: God and Man; the Mother and the Virgin; the Three and the One.” It speaks to the alchemical union of symbols represented by the center of the Earth. At the four corners of the seal are four cherubim, like those which guard the Garden of Eden, or those which flank the Ark of the Covenant. They are the guardians of the treasures at the center of the Earth.

The Priory of Sion: The Next Generation

“Today, in the shadows there lurk the ‘eminences grises’, who form the backbone of all political states or religious entities. Without them the ‘star performers’ that actually make all the headlines (be they Popes, Kings or Presidents) would simply not exist. Here and there we find them, initiates

of high degree, entrusted with secret missions by the Grandmasters of the occult orders that rule the planet."

- Pablo Norberto, "The Origin of the Priory of Sion"

Le Cercle, 1992

It seems that virtually every aspect of the enigma surrounding Rennes-le-Chateau, the Priory of Sion and the Merovingians can be explained now in the context of this book's main thesis. When I finally reached this point in my research, I was proud to have been able to unravel so many mysteries. And it was just when my hypothesis was almost fully formed that I began to realize the extent to which my ideas were corroborated by documents written and published by the Priory itself. I have already talked about *Le Serpent Rouge* quite a bit, and a full interpretation of this poem can be found in Appendix B of this book. As I neared the end of my research, a friend sent me another Priory document that backed up my theories. It was a chapter from the *Secret Dossiers*, supposedly compiled by Henri Lobineau. This document (which I have fully transcribed in another appendix) is about the Hieron du Val d'Or, the strange cult which is believed to have been a front organization for the

Priory of Sion, and to which Sauniere was believed to have belonged. The chapter describes the symbols employed by the organization, such as the Sacred Heart, and offers an esoteric interpretation of Christianity as a sun cult. The author of this chapter, who calls himself "Le Poulpe" (The Octopus) ends his piece rather evocatively:

> *"It is in France, in Paray-le-Monial, that they have given birth to the devotion towards the Sacred Heart, which is the entitlement of the Hieron du Val d'Or. In Autumn of 1893 someone found, on the tomb of a Christian woman dating from the VI century, an inscription in Greek letters (it was said that Druids wrote in Greek letters). It comprises eleven lines, and the first letter of the first five form the word* ICHTUS.
>
> *Here is part of this inscription: 'O divine race of the celestial fish, receive with a respectful heart in immortal life among the mortals the waters of the divine ones. Friend, remake your heart with the eternal flood of the wisdom which gives treasures. It is a reservoir of nourishment, soft like the honey of the Savior of the saints. Eat with hunger: you hold the fish in your hands.'"*

It seems that "the divine race of the celestial fish" would have to be the race descended from Satan, Cain, and the Atlanteans, who associated themselves with fish and, just as the passage states, the Sun as well. Also note the words "flood of wisdom", similar to the interpretation of Baphomet's name as "baptism of wisdom."

By far the most corroborative evidence for my theory is the articles in *Vaincre*, which I have already described in great detail. But not long before completing this manuscript, I received some shocking news, from the same person, Paul Smith, who originally translated the *Vaincre* articles into English. As Smith reports, a new series of *Vaincre* magazines began to be published in 1989. The new issues listed Pierre Plantard's son Thomas Plantard as the "Managing Editor", and one of them featured an interview with Pierre Plantard. A completely new list of Grand Masters was produced, in which many of the names have been changed, and it now only dated back to 1681 (the date the Children of Saint Vincent were created). The Priory of Sion now claimed to be completely disavowing any direct descent from the Knights Templar, and their Grand Masters were not listed. However, there was a complete listing of the Grand Masters from Jean Cocteau's death onwards, which had before remained a completely unanswered question.[72] Now it was claimed that Cocteau was followed by Francois Balphagon until 1969, and then a fellow named John Drick took over. In 1981, the office was assumed by Pierre Plantard, who as we know resigned in 1984. *Vaincre* now claimed that Plantard was followed by Philippe de Cherisey, who was quickly replaced by someone called Patrice Pelat in 1985. This person died in 1989, and then at the "Convent of Avignon", on March 9, 1989, Pierre Plantard was reinstated as Grand Master, just long enough to pass the title on to his son four months later, at "10 o'clock solar time", as its described in *Vaincre*.

---

[72] It is surprising to me that Jean Cocteau's heir, Edward Dermit, is not mentioned in this list as succeeding him, but then again, something about the list seems altogether faulty.

Many aspects of the Priory's new claims in this magazine appear to be attempts at obfuscation. They wanted the Priory of Sion to be at the forefront of everyone's minds once again, but they wanted to spread some confusion, to increase the intrigue. This series of *Vaincre* appears to have later morphed into *Le Cercle*, which was still subtitled *Vaincre* and still edited by Thomas Plantard. Its logo featured a cock crowing, a favorite motif often used by Jean Cocteau. Both *Vaincre* and *Le Cercle* are very queer in their phrasing, as all Priory documents are, and appear to contain many code words recognizable only to initiates, many of which are written in all caps for emphasis. And in one of these issues, a reprinted letter from Pierre Plantard purported to reveal the Priory of Sion's main secret. Plantard wrote:

"Our TREASURE, that of the PRIORY OF SION, is the SECRET of the BLACK ROCK ('ROC NOIR').

Revered since remote antiquity by those who believed in its immense power, it was confused with the DEVIL, and even LABOUISSE-ROCHEFORTE wrote, in a poem intended for the initiated:

'The Angel of the bastard race,
In a tone at once dry and crazed,
Keeps constant guard over
This immense income...'

and only the initiated could understand that the treasure was not gold, but the considerable energy that the MASTER of the genie - he who knows the secret - has at his disposal."

So in other words, Plantard was saying that that "Devil" is really a black stone that contains "energy" or power, and that there is a "bastard race" which descends from this stone. This is exactly what I submitted earlier regarding the Grail stone and its identity with Satan. I suggested that this stone might be buried at Rennes-le-Chateau, in an underground tomb or temple. The same was hinted at by Plantard, who wrote that the "Roc Noir" is in Rennes-le-Chateau.

Then, in another article called “The Dubosc Affair”, it was claimed that a mining shaft was sunk through the “Roc Noir”, the true purpose of which was to “re-establish a communicating ‘way’ between the old underground passages of the former Celtic sanctuary known as the TEMPLE ROND (Round Temple.)” Once again, the documents of the Priory itself completely confirm the main thrust of my hypothesis – that there is an underground temple (and sacred tomb) beneath Rennes-le-Chateau which is connected to a network of tunnels, and which contains the Grail stone. According to Pierre Plantard himself, the real “secret of the Priory” pertains to an underground temple beneath Rennes-le-Chateau which is associated with the Devil: the “angel of the bastard race” and “MASTER of the genie.” Yet another article, this time in *Le Cercle*, appears to link this temple with a 13-based numerical system[73], and claims that Priory of Sion meetings actually still take place there, specifically meetings of their inner order, the “Arch of the thirteen Rose-Croix.” In “The Arch – It’s Symbolism”, author Jacques d’Arthuys writes:

“For [the Priory of Sion] the ARCH placed on the surface of the waters seemed like the sign of PEACE and WISDOM amid the torment. This was the sign of alliance, the guardian of the very essence of the Great

---

[73] Read Appendix A for the significance of the number 13.

Tradition. Its shape was the true representation of the Hebrew letter [Cheth], the engine of life, its number was 8, it was the last line of defense, while the sum of its three sides was 22 and its centre was the path that guides the ARCH towards the STAR.

he ARCH was the origin of the foundation of the PRIORY of SION and in our own times represents its pinnacle. It is composed of 13 members. The ROSE+CROIX meets in the round temple of the Roc Noir which, according to legend, was formerly a temple of MITHRAS. It has the shape of a semicircle… having 13 seats of stone. Each seat is engraved with a letter, namely: AB URBE CONDITA On the ground is a GOLDEN SUN… bearing these letters: MM CD XXX IV, or 2434[74] *in Roman numerals. It seems to be recent, no doubt engraved by a HAUTPOUL towards the end of the 17th century. The former entry is obstructed over a distance… but a drilling has opened up an entry to the south. In our own time the ARCH extends over a large part of the world. It is from its summit that the heads of state will come to search for PEACE."*

Amazingly, this passage seems to confirm that the chamber which holds the Grail stone is also the "Ark", and seems to equate this with the

---

[74] Note: 2+4+3+4 = 13.

Ark of Noah as well! A similar quote was found in the Priory of Sion's *C.I.R.C.U.I.T.* magazine, and was quoted earlier: "A Nautonnier [Grand Master of the Priory] guides the ark ('arche') in the flood."

Only for the Initiated

Perhaps the most evocative lines in this new *Vaincre* article are the last two: "In our own time the ARCH extends over a large part of the world. It is from its summit that the heads of state will come to search for PEACE." To me, this indicates that the Priory of Sion considers the "Holy Land" of Rennes-le-Chateau to be the foundation-point of an empire that not only existed in the past, but also one that will exist again in the future. The use of "Ab Urbe Condita"[75] by the Priory, referring to the foundation of Rome, says to me that they are, as they have stated in their own documents, planning a resurrection of the Holy Roman Empire through the United States of Europe. But in order for this to occur, I assume, the treasures of Rennes-le-Chateau would have to be revealed to the world. This would no doubt have a shocking impact upon the collective psyche of mankind, for it would cause us to re-evaluate not only our understanding of history, but our political, religious, and philosophical tenets as well. It would be especially shocking if it was proven that direct descendants of Satan are alive today, many of them in positions of power, using their positions to bring about a resurrection of the antediluvian golden age and the empire that ruled over that epoch.

---

[75] The words "Ab Urbe Condita" are usually translated as "From the founding of the city", and refer to the date of Rome's foundation, which was used in the dating system of the Roman and Julian calendars, in the same way "Before Christ" is used in our own dating system.

The thing most consistently said about the Holy Grail, whether it is depicted as a cup, a stone, a bloodline, a secret doctrine, or an ancient tomb, is that it contains the secret of earthly power, either for good or for evil. He who controls the Grail controls the world. He becomes the "Rex Mundi", the inheritor of Satan's title "the Lord of the Earth", and the embodiment of the Priory of Sion's "Grand Monarch" concept. It is no wonder, then, that groups like the Priory, the Templars, the Freemasons, the Nazis, the Vatican, MI5 and the CIA have struggled over the centuries to possess it. When the secret of the Grail is finally revealed, it will unleash a force as mighty as any the Earth has ever seen.

The power of the Grail is, as we know, a boon to the elect, and a curse to the uninitiated. It is therefore not to be trifled with. The unveiling of the Grail could be the most glorious event in known history. It could also be one of the greatest disasters. Let us hope, then, that whoever controls this power now, or whoever will control it in the future, uses it wisely.

A passage from *The Chymical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz* captures the essence of this perilous dynamic. It describes a Hermetic fountain of wisdom (the underground stream), whose waters contain the Elixir of Life. According to the story, the fountain was erected by Hermes (Enoch) himself, who inscribed its edifice with the following words:

"I, Hermes the Prince,
After so much injury
Done to the human race,
Through Divine Council
And the help of the arts
Made wholesome medicine
Flow here.

Drink from me who can: wash in me who likes: trouble me who dares.

Drink, brothers, and live."

Appendix A: The Satanic Calendar

"We do not subscribe to the conventional and erroneous astrology. The stars in themselves exert no influence. They are but reference points in space."

Pierre Plantard, *C.I.R.C.U.I.T. Magazine*

In the magazine called *CIRCUIT*, published in the forties and fifties by the Priory of Sion, a thirteen-house zodiac system is described, with the insertion of the constellation of Ophiuchus - "the Serpent-Holder", constituting the extra house. The Priory also published a poem called *Le Serpent Rouge* (*The Red Serpent*), written, as I have theorized, by their twenty-third Grand Master, Jean Cocteau. This poem (which is discussed at length in Appendix B) consisted of thirteen stanzas, each dedicated to one of these zodiac houses, starting with Aquarius and ending with Capricorn, the sign under which King Dagobert was killed.

In Chapter Eight of *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, the structure of the Priory of Sion is examined in detail. According to the statutes published in *Secret Dossiers* prior to 1956, the order consisted of seven grades, with a total of 1093 members, whereas the post-1956 statutes had it broken down into nine grades, totaling 9841 members. In addition, a set of twenty-two statutes written and signed by Grand Master Jean Cocteau describes a structure of five grades. However, in all three versions of the structure, the number of members in each grade is three times larger than the number of members in the next grade, and all of the numbers, except for one 1 and 3, are divisible by nine. It would appear that the only difference between the three versions of the structure is that the pre-1956 statutes are not counting the members of the lowest two grades. Also, the Jean Cocteau statutes have one-third as many people listed in each grade, with 243 members of a fourth grade that are considered part of an outer order, or laity, called the "Children of Saint Vincent."

In the post-1956 statutes, the structure is also broken down into provinces (each of which contains forty members), commanderies, and the "Arch Kyria", the name for the top three grades, which consists of a total of thirteen members. The structure, as quoted from *Dossier Secrets*, is as follows:

"The general assembly consists of all members of the association. It consists of 729 provinces, 27 commanderies, and an Arch designated "Kyria."

Each of the commanderies, as well as the arch, must consist of forty members, each province of thirteen members.

The members compose a hierarchy of ***9*** *grades.*

a) in the ***729*** *provinces*

1) Novices: ***6, 561*** *members*

2) Croises de Saint-Jean: ***2,187***

b) in the ***27*** *commanderies*

3) Preux: ***729*** *members*

4) Ecuyers: ***243*** *members*

5) Chevalieres: ***81*** *members*

6) Commandeurs: ***27***

c) in the Arch 'Kyria':

7) Connetables: ***9*** *members*

8) Senechaux: ***3*** *members*

9) Nautonnier: ***1*** *member"*

The total number of members, then, according to these statutes, would be 1093. Meanwhile, the statutes written by Jean Cocteau state the following:

"The hierarchy of the Prieure de Sion is composed of five grades:

1st Nautonnier, number: ***1***
2nd Croise, number: ***3***
3rd Commandeur, number: ***9***
4th Chevalier, number: ***27***
5th, Ecuyer, number: ***81***
*total number :**121**"*

The first two levels are part of a substructure called "the Arch of the **13** Rose-Croix." The other levels are part of a substructure called "the **9** commanderies of the Temple." In addition, Article 19 states that: "There are **243** Free Brothers, called 'Preux', or, since the year **1681**, Enfants de Saint Vincent, who participate neither in the vote, nor in the Convents, but to whom the Prieure accords certain rights and privileges, in conformity with the decree of **January 17, 1681**."

While most of the numbers here (which I will hereafter refer to as the "Priory of Sion numbers") are, as I have stated, divisible by nine, the total number of members according to each version of the statutes is not. However, attempting to divide them by nine reveals some interesting relationships. For instance, the total number of members, according to the post-1956 statues, is 9841. 9841/9 = 1093.44444... - the same number, minus the decimals, as the total number of members according to the pre-1956 statutes. Then notice that 1093/9 = 121.44444... - the same number, minus the decimals, as the number of dignitaries (ranked members) according to the Cocteau statutes. 364, the number of total members according to Cocteau (including the 243 Children of Saint Vincent), when divided by nine, gives us 40.44444... - the same number, minus the decimals, as the number of members in each commanderie. And 121 (again, the number of dignitaries in the Cocteau statutes), when divided by 9, equals 13.44444... - the same number, minus the decimals, as the number of members in the "Arch Kyria", or "Arch of the Thirteen Rose-Croix."

I wondered if these numbers from the Priory of Sion might somehow relate to the thirteen-house zodiac. I decided to subtract thirteen from each of the numbers that would not divide evenly by nine, and then try the division again:

9841 - 13 = 9828

9828/9 = 1092 (Just one less than 1093, the total number of members pre-1956.)

1093 - 13 = 1080

1080/9 = 120 (Just one less than 121, the total number of dignitaries in the Cocteau statutes.)

121-13 = 108

108/9 = 12 (Just one less than 13.)

And:

364-13 = 351

351/9 = 39 (Just one less than 40, the number of members in each commanderie.)

And 39 is also 3 x 13.

Then I noticed another thing:

1+0+9+3 = 13

and:

3+6+4 = 13

But even more importantly:

364/13 = 28

“What exactly is going on here?”, I wondered. 364, number of total members according to the Cocteau statutes, not only consists of digits which add to 13, but is also evenly divisible by 13. And 364 is very close to the number of days in a year.

It was at this point that the meaning encoded in the Priory of Sion numbers came flooding into my mind. 28 is the average number of days in a lunar cycle, and there are thirteen lunar cycles in a solar year. 364 is not only close to the number of days (365.2424) in our current solar year, but is also the exact number of days it takes for the Moon to travel through the zodiac.[76] I decided to speculate: What would happen if we actually did observe a 364-day calendar? What would happen if, at some time in the past, the solar year had corresponded precisely with the lunar year?

---

[76] 28 is an interesting number because it is the sum of the numbers 1-7, and is equal to the sum of its divisors (1+2+4+7+14 = 28).

The answer is that then we could have a perfect calendar, consisting of thirteen months of twenty-eight days, each a complete lunar cycle, and each dedicated to one of the thirteen houses of the Priory of Sion's zodiac. Also, we could still have seven days in a week, *exactly* four weeks in each month, and *exactly* fifty-two weeks in each year. In our current system, the number of weeks in a month, and in a year, is neither exact nor consistent. But in this system, all months would begin and end on the same day of the week, matching each other perfectly. All floating holidays, such as Thanksgiving and Easter, would occur on the same day every year. The menstrual cycle of each woman would begin on the same day and end on the same day of each month, also making periods of high fertility easier to calculate. Since each zodiac sign would correspond to a single month, all zodiac periods would be of equal length, with no "cusps", and everyone could easily determine which sign a person was born under simply by knowing the month of their birth. One could even break down the hours in a day into a thirteen-based system. We could split the day into twenty-six hours, each consisting of fifty-two minutes, which would in turn consist of fifty-two seconds each. That would give you a total of 25, 590, 656 seconds in a year.

Before long I discovered that the calendar which I had proposed actually does exist, although it has not been put into use in the Western world. It is called the "Fixed Lunar Calendar", and it consists of the same 364 days and thirteen months that I have just described. It was first proposed in the late sixteenth century, during Pope Gregory XIII's counsel to reform the Julian calendar (although it was used by other cultures as well throughout the ages). But the Fixed Lunar Calendar was rejected, one reason being that it does not accurately represent the solar year, which is the true definition of a year.

For thousands of years, men have been trying to create an "aliquot calendar": a perfect system that would synthesize both the solar and lunar cycles with exact, whole numbers. But as Duncan Steel remarks in *Marking Time: The Epic Quest to Invent the Perfect Calendar*, "We have been stymied by the fact that the solar day and the lunar month are not an aliquot part of the year. That is, there is not an exact integer number of days in the year defined by Earth's orbit, nor lunations in that year." However, he also remarks that, "it has not always been this way. About 1.5 billion years ago there were precisely fourteen lunar months in a year, each lasting for thirty-one solar days, but there was no one around to notice the fact and construct a calendar based upon it." The number of days in a year has varied substantially over time, due to a number of factors. One of the most significant factors, however, is called "tidal drag", a force caused by the ocean tides, which are in turn caused by the gravitational attraction of the Moon. This is causing the rotation of the Earth to slow down, making it probable that we will reach a 364-day solar year at some point. Whether or not the number of lunar cycles in a year will synchronize with it at that point is, however, a matter of speculation, and probably a long shot.

But perhaps the Fixed Lunar Calendar could still be put to use, through the insertion of leap days. Historians tell us that ancient man used to regard the last few days of the year (varying in number from one through five, depending on the culture) as “non-days”, which were not observed as part of the year. No work was done on these days, and they were occupied with rituals of fasting instead. Is this what the Priory of Sion’s system is meant to include at the end of the calendar year? As soon as I considered this possibility, the next piece of the puzzle fell into place. For as I discovered, the larger Priory of Sion numbers, including 729, 1093, 2187, 6561, and 9841, all form a pattern when divided by 364. 729 = 2 x 364 + 1. 1093 = 3 x 364 +1. 2187 = 6 x 364 + 3. 6561 is 18 = 364 + 9. 9841 = 27 x 364 + 13. I thought that this might represent a system in which a 364-day year is used, and a leap day is added every two years, so that in twenty-seven years, thirteen leap days have been added.[77] This yielded a system which revealed a great many astounding numerological

---

correspondences. For instance, after 243 years (the number of "Children of Saint Vincent" in the Priory of Sion), 117 leap days have been added.

The following chart demonstrates how the numbers encoded into the Priory of Sion structure (based on all three versions of the Priory's statutes) indicate cycles of 364-day years, with a leap day added every two years. The largest number in the Priory's structure is 9841, but I have extended the numerical pattern out a few steps for demonstration purposes. I have also shown, on the right-hand column, how all of the larger Priory numbers reflect the other numbers mathematically.

Priory of Sion #	# of 364-day years indicated	# of leap days added to the cycle	# of 28-day months in the cycle	Relationships with other Priory of Sion #s
729	2	1 (728 + 1= 729)	26	364 + 243 + 121 +1 (364 x 2) + 1 9 x 81
1093	3	1 (1092 + 1=1093)	39	729 + 364
2187	6	3 (2184 + 3 = 2187)	78	(1093 x 2) + 1
6561	18	9 (6552 + 9 = 6561)	234	3 x 2187
9841	27	13 (9828 + 13 = 9841)	351	6561 + 2187 + 729 + 243 + 81 + 27 + 9 + 3 + 1
29523	81	39 (29484 + 39 = 29523)	1053	9841 x 3
88569	243	117 (88452 + 117 = 88569)	3159	29523 x 3
265707	729	351 (265356 + 351 = 265707	9477	9841 x 27
797121	2187	1053 (796068 + 1053 = 797121)	28431	9841 x 81
2391363	6561	3159 (2388204 + 3159 = 2391363)	85293	9841 x 243

I have reason to believe that the 364-day calendar was introduced by Enoch to humanity after the Flood, as their first sacred calendar. It has been observed and revered secretly by his descendants (such as those in the Knights Templar and the Priory of Sion) ever since. Perhaps the Priory of Sion numbers hint at a system they have created whereby they observe a 364-day calendar, which they attempt to synchronize with the current solar calendar as well through the insertion of leap days. This theory is discussed at length in my essay "The Cutting of the Orm", to be published in late 2004 in the book *The Arcadian Mystique: The Best of Dagobert's Revenge Magazine*.

There is evidence linking Enoch to the 364-day calendar. In *The Book of Enoch*, when Enoch is taken to Heaven and told by the angels that a flood will occur, they instruct Enoch on how to count the days of the year – a year that consists of 364 days. Perhaps this is why the sect known as the Essenes, who made use of *The Book of Enoch*, observed a 364-day calendar as well.[78] Also, the extra zodiac house used in a thirteen-based system is Ophiuchus, the "Serpent Holder", symbolized by the Caduceus. This is also a symbol of Hermes or Mercury, and thus of Enoch.

---

[78] Interestingly, Enoch is said to have lived exactly 365 years, and to have written a total of 366 books within this lifetime.

There is also evidence linking the Knights Templar to the 364-day calendar. Several authors have suggested that the Templars were responsible for introducing playing cards into Europe – the precursors of the mystical tarot. As it just so happens, hidden within the fifty-two cards of the standard playing deck is the Fixed Lunar Calendar! In *The Playing Card Oracles*, Ana Cortez and Charles Freeman demonstrate how the fifty-two cards correspond to the fifty-two weeks of the years, the four suits to the four seasons, and the thirteen cards in each suit to the thirteen months in each year, as well as the thirteen weeks in each season. If all of the values of the cards in each suit are added up, they equal 91, the number of days in each season. But perhaps most amazing of all, the total value of the cards in the deck is 364, the number of days in the lunar calendar.

It is fitting that the Templars would have been involved in concealing the 364-day calendar within the playing cards. The entire corpus of superstition surrounding the number thirteen, the basis of this calender system, has been attributed to the mystique surrounding the Knights Templar (although the superstition is probably older than this). The association supposedly exists because the Templars were arrested by Philippe the Fair's seneschals on Friday, October 13, 1307. But the Templars would appear to have already been associated with the number thirteen. As I have previously mentioned, it was encoded into the name of their idolotrous head, Caput 58M. (5+8 = 13, and M is the thirteenth letter of the alphabet). Some say that this was the same head they called "Baphomet", which they represented with their symbol of the skull and crossbones, also called the "Death's head", a symbol of death and rebirth in Hermeticism.[79] Later, this symbol was employed as the basis for the "Jolly Roger" flag used by pirates (many of them Freemasons), which featured, underneath the symbol, the number thirteen.

In addition, Friday is a sacred day in many traditions. It is the Sabbath of the Muslims, the beginning of the Sabbath for the Jews, and the day in which Christians are instructed to eat fish instead of meat.[80] This day is named after Freya, the Norse Venus/Isis figure, sometimes depicted with fish, or as partially a fish herself. Assuming that the number thirteen was held in reverence by the Templars, the date of Friday the Thirteenth may have been doubly sacred for them. Perhaps, then, this date was purposely chosen for their arrest by their enemies for ritual purposes.

But as I have said, there is much more to the superstition surrounding the number thirteen then just its association with the Templars. We are told that thirteen is an unlucky number. The number 13 has been shunned for centuries. In the past the thirteenth floor has been purposely omitted from office buildings. 13 is considered so baleful by some that there is actually a name - triskadekaphobia - for the psychological condition of the fear of 13.

---

[79] Interestingly, the phrase "Death's head" itself implies both a beginning ("head") and an end ("Death").

[80] We are also encouraged to "Thank God it's Friday."

But to the descendants of Satan, it appears to have been a sacred number. One of the reasons for its sacredness is that, like the Phi ratio, this number appears oddly integral to the patterns of nature. For instance, there are thirteen major joints in the human body. There are, as I have stated, thirteen lunar cycles in a solar year, and the moon travels thirteen degrees across the sky every day. Six circles placed around a seventh central circle form a model of geometric efficiency and perfection in the second dimension that has been known to mathematicians for ages. But this same configuration in three dimensions consists of twelve spheres arranged around one central sphere, making thirteen in all - the most compact three-dimensional arrangement recurrent in nature. A commentator writing about the Aztec calendar once said that, "Thirteen is a basic structural unit in nature. It means the attracting center around which elements focus and collect."[81] Is this, then, the reason for Christ's twelve disciples, or King Arthur's twelve knights?

---

[81] Taken from the website: http://www.dayofdestiny.com.

The number 13 is also important to the founding of the United States, which began with thirteen colonies that turned into the first thirteen states. These states were represented on our first flag as thirteen hexagonal stars. (The stars were later changed to pentagonal shapes.) The number thirteen is all over the American one-dollar bill also, and on the Great Seal of the United States, created by Freemasons, who were heavily involved in the foundation of this country. On the backside of the seal, there is an eagle holding thirteen arrows, and an olive branch with thirteen leaves. His shield contains thirteen stripes, and above his head are thirteen pentagram stars formed into the shape of one large hexagram. In his mouth he holds a banner that says “E Pluribus Unum” - “Out of Many, One” - a phrase containing thirteen letters. The word “One” (or the number “1”) is also written on the dollar twelve times, unless you count the Latin word “Unum”, which would make thirteen. On the front side of the Great Seal are the words “Annuit Coeptis” and “Novus Ordo Seclorum.” “Annuit Coeptis” contains, again, thirteen letters, and is usually translated, “He [meaning God] agrees with the cause which we have started.”

However, this translation appears to have no basis in reality. All one needs is a simple Latin dictionary, and a little intuition. “Annuit” means “circuit” - like the circuit of the zodiac in the night’s sky, and the precession of the equinox. This meaning is further encoded into the word "Annuit" itself. "Annu" relates to "Anno", which means "circle", and "year", while "Nuit", which means "night" in French, is related to the Egyptian word for "night": "Nut." "Coeptis" means "new beginning." This goes along well with the words at the bottom of the Seal, "Novus Ordo Seclorum", which mean "New World Order." So the statement being made here is, perhaps, that at the beginning of the new astrological age - Aquarius - we will have a new secular order on Earth, symbolized by the eye and the pyramid.[82]

The dawn of this new age is symbolized by the tale of Dagobert II's death, which took place on December 23. Since "dag" means "fish", and "bert" means "house", this story could be thought to symbolize the death of the "fish house", the Age of Pisces, at the dawning of the Age of Aquarius. Interestingly, the Mayan calendar (which was invented, the natives say, by a "white god" whose description sounds strikingly similar to Enoch) ends on December 23, 2012, right on the brink of the Age of Aquarius, and on the anniversary of King Dagobert's death. The Mayan calendar is also, like the Fixed Lunar Calendar, based on the number 13. This point is made rather abundantly by Jose Arguelles, the author of *The*

---

[82] Recall that one of the illustrations in the Priory of Sion publication *Vaincre* depicted a man mounted upon a white horse and bearing a flag of the "United States of Europe" riding towards a sunset, upon which was inscribed the sign for Aquarius

Mayan Factor, who has also written another book, *Time and the Technosphere*, proposing the adoption of the 364-day Fixed Lunar Calendar as a way of harmonizing the spirit of man with the cosmos.

The Aztec calendar is based upon 13 as well, with 364-day years, and "long years" consisting of 52 years each. Like the Mayan calendar, theirs spans thousands of years, and counts the days until the "end of the world", supposedly. A hieroglyph at the top of the calendar which marks both its beginning and its end is called, significantly enough, "13 Cane."

Like many ancient cultures, the Aztecs (or rather, the god-kings who created their civilization) embedded the principles of their calendar into the architecture of their sacred temples. The Pyramid of Kukulkan in Chichen Itza, Mexico has four sides, each with ninety-one steps leading up to the top, for a total of 364. On the solstices, a trick of light and shadow produces the image of a gigantic serpent crawling down the sides of the pyramid, which then appears to join itself to the stone image of the serpent Kukulkan at the base of the pyramid. Once again, we have the imagery of Satan and Cain linked to the number 13 and the 364-day calendar.

Interestingly, in both the Latin and the Hebrew alphabet, the thirteenth letter is "M" (which is Hebrew is also a symbol meaning "water"). In both alphabets, "M" marks the center of the alphabet. In the original Runic alphabet, the thirteenth letter was "Eiwaz." It also marked the center of the alphabet, and symbolized the union of light and darkness. When the Runic alphabet was revised, this letter was taken out – perhaps as an act of triskadekaphobia.[83]

The number 13 has most definitely become associated with Satan in modern times. It is to be expected, then, that fear and hatred of the number 13 has been transferred by modern cabalists onto the mythos of Cain and his progeny. (Or perhaps, their fear and hatred of Cain is the true source of the superstition surrounding this number.) In *The Pattern and the Prophecy*, James Harrison, points out that that the names of the four generations of Cain's descendants mentioned in the Bible, when converted into cabalistic numbers, add up to 2223, which is divisible by 13. Bullinger then relates that the cabalistic value of the Hebrew word for "Satan" is 364!

The nature of this Satanic number, and the Satanic Calendar based upon it, will be explored in future writings.

---

[83] In Tarot, the thirteenth card is always "Death", which links up to its association with the Death's head by pirates.

Appendix B: Le Serpent Rouge Interpreted

As I discussed earlier in the book, the poem *Le Serpent Rouge* consists of thirteen stanzas, each dedicated to one of the thirteen houses of the Priory of Sion‘s zodiac system. The authors are purported to be Louis Saint-Maxent, Pierre Feugere, and Gaston de Koker, who were all killed shortly after the poem was published. Strange and frightening as this may seem, these men may not have in fact been the authors, for the poem does not appear to be the work of a committee, but rather a single quixotic mystic. My theory is that the true author of the poem was Jean Cocteau. One only needs to read Cocteau's known work, or view his film *Orpheus,* to recognize the style of writing and the symbolism employed. Also, it was published just a few years after his death, and it was during Cocteau's grand mastership that the publication of "Priory documents" such as this one began

Assuming that Cocteau was probably the author, and working with the conclusions about Rennes-le-Chateau that I have expounded upon in this book, I am now able to understand certain key phrases used within this queer poem. It is my belief that this poem is written from the point of view of someone following the occult clues that have been left by past initiates to discover the sacred tombs beneath Rennes-le-Chateau, and the "Ark" that contains the "Grail stone." The narrator likens his journey to the symbolic journeys of mythological heroes from numerous ancient legends. Several veiled references are made to Noah/Enoch and his ark; to the Grail stone and the mysteries it contains; and to the discovery of the tomb of Venus or Isis.

Let us now examine *Le Serpent Rouge*, as translated by Amy Keller, for its hidden meaning:

Strange are the manuscripts of this Friend, great traveler of the unknown.

I think that these "manuscripts" represent the wisdom of the tablet of Enoch. It is Enoch, as Noah, Deucalion, or Hercules, who is the "great traveler of the unknown." Hercules is mentioned later in the poem, and his tomb is said to be located in a cave within Montsegur. He was the pilot of the boat called the "Cup of Helios" (the "Sun-ark"). That would make Hercules (also called "Arkaleus") another manifestation of the archetype of Noah (whom I have identified as being the same as Enoch). Hercules is famous for enduring a series of twelve trials, all of which clearly represent the houses of the zodiac. *Le Serpent Rouge* may be presenting us with a strange allegory for the Labors of Hercules: one in which there are thirteen trials, and thirteen zodiac houses, instead of twelve. The "unknown" through which he travels, then, would be the zodiac - the Celestial Sea, also represented by the serpent.

They reached me separately, nevertheless they form a whole for him who knows that the colors of the rainbow give a white unity, or for the Artist, who, under his brush, is able to, from the six hues of his magic palette, make the night spurt out..

This passage refers to the peculiar property of the seven colors of visible light, which, when combined, form a pure white light, the radiance of divine illumination. This may be an allusion to the alchemical language of light. When all of the major pigment colors are added together, they form the opposite - black. The Grail has always symbolized, in part, the essential unity of diverse aspects of the universe in this manner, including the unity of opposites such as black and white. The author of this poem seems to be saying that that Grail has been broken into disconnected pieces and scattered about, like the pieces of Osiris' body, or the original language of the Tower of Babel.

This friend, how does one present him? His name remains a mystery, but his number is that of a famous seal.

"His name remains a mystery" because the true Enoch is hidden behind many veils of myth, and is given many names. The "seal" is the six-pointed seal of Solomon, which is associated in the occult with Saturn (Satan). I have discussed how this symbol also represents the "Arka" and the world-mountain.

How does one describe him? Maybe like the pilot of the imperishable Ark...

This is a direct reference linking the main character to the Flood hero.

… impassable like a column on a white rock, scanning towards the South, where the black rock is.

Here we have a reference to a white rock and a black rock. The Grail stone is said to be both white and black, and this will have a very particular significance later on in the poem.[84] The Ark's pilot standing "impassable" upon the white rock may also refer to the mountain that the Ark rested upon when the Flood subsided, like Mount Ararat in the Bible.

In my arduous pilgrimage, I was tempted to clear for myself, with a sword, a way towards the inextricable vegetation of the woods. I wanted the reach the mysterious house of the Sleeping BEAUTY in whom certain poets see the QUEEN of a fallen kingdom.

This describes the "Herculean" task of finding the tomb of the goddess-queen said to be buried in the Pyrenees. She embodies the goddess archetype of Venus, the Sleeping Beauty. The symbols of the labyrinth and the dense woods are identical and are often combined in other versions of the Tomb of Venus tale. Nicholas de Vere writes in *The Dragon Legacy* that, "Labyrinths were often placed in the center of groves. Sleeping Beauty, Diana and Rapunzel's tower were all located in the middle of groves or thick woods." And as the poem says, Venus was indeed a queen during the golden age. That kingdom is now "fallen", and it is that "fallen kingdom" which the Priory of Sion wishes to revive.

---

[84] Albert Pike stated in *Morals and Dogma*: "The Ancients adored the Sun under the form of a black stone, called Elagabalus, or Heliogabulua. The faithful are promised, in the Apocalypse, a white stone."

Worried about finding the way again, the parchments of this Friend were for me like the thread of Ariadne.

Here we have a direct reference to the aforementioned labyrinth, specifically the one built on Crete which is the center of the famous Greek myth of Theseus and the Minotaur, discussed earlier in this book. This labyrinth symbol repeatedly comes up in connection to the Venus myth and the Holy Grail. The labyrinth is often located inside the caverns of Venus's enchanted mountain, or, as in the Rapunzel story, can be entered through a tower that represents a mountain. In fact in Scandinavia labyrinths are referred to as "Babylons", indicating that perhaps a labyrinth was located underneath the Tower of Babel, like the labyrinths that have been found underneath South American ziggurats and the pyramids of Egypt. There may then be one underneath the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau. As Nicholas de Vere states, "The labyrinth, like the pyramid and its collaterals, is thought to be a development of the idea of the mountain cave."

De Vere also sees the labyrinths as a feminine, vaginal symbol, and the Sleeping Beauty story as a metaphor for sex magic. He points out that the word "labyrinth" very likely comes from "labia", and that, "On at least two occasions in England labyrinths have been euphemistically referred to as 'fishtraps'", bringing to mind not only a vaginal connotation, but one specifically associated with Venus, who was represented in myth by the fish, and who came from a race of "navigators", all of whom were associated with fish and water. In some versions of the myth of the Melusine - that half-woman, half-fish who was the spawn of Satan (clearly a representation of the Venus archetype), and who spawned the Angevin kings - de Vere says that Melusine is depicted as residing in the midst of a labyrinth. "The center of the maze", he writes, "incorporated a black cubic stone, from which spurted the waters of life, La Fontaine de Soif, and the blood of the Virgin Womb." This relates to de Vere's theory that the Grail kings of the ancient world regularly participated in a vampiric ritual that involved drinking the menstrual blood and female ejaculate of so-called "Grail maidens", the foremost of which was Venus herself, "the Queen of Harlots", and head of the temple prostitutes.

This ritual would have been cause itself for the Grail kings to observe a 364-day lunar calendar based on thirteen lunar (and menstrual) cycles of twenty-eight days each. Such a calendar would seem to be represented by the labyrinth on the floor of the Chartres Cathedral in France, of which de Vere writes that, "The radius of the maze is 21 feet, which is 3 x 7, representing the three fallow weeks of the menstrual cycle.

The week of menstruus would be represented by the point at the center of the maze, which is, on certain days, illuminated red." This is accomplished by use of a stained glass window through which sunlight shines upon the center of the maze. Here also can be found, according to de Vere, a "six-petaled Plantagenet or wild rose, carved into which there seems to be an M figure reminiscent of the symbol of Virgo."

In the myth of the Minotaur, the thread of Ariadne is what allowed Theseus to escape from the Labyrinth after slaying the beast. Every nine years, the Minotaur required a sacrifice of seven youths and seven virgins, who were placed as hapless victims inside the labyrinth, where they were torn apart and eaten by the monster. This state of affairs is what Theseus was sent to rectify by slaying the monster. As de Vere writes, "...by the time Theseus is said to have turned up, the tribute to the Minotaur in youths' and virgins' blood had been paid twice in 18 years. Gematrically this gives us a total of 28 victims, on one lunar cycle of 28 days."

Ariadne, while depicted as human in some versions of the tale, would appear to represent a spider who spins a magic thread. Note the similarity between the name of "Ariadne" and that of "Arachne", from whence we get the word "arachnid", denoting an eight-legged creature, such as a spider.[85] Arachne was a Greek goddess, the master spinstress of Olympia, who hung herself after she lost a web-spinning contest to the goddess Minerva. Her competitor then felt sorry for her, and reincarnated her in the form of a spider. This web-spinning goddess figure would seem to have a link to Sleeping Beauty, who, if you will recall, fell into a deathless sleep after pricking her finger on an enchanted spinning wheel. Theseus entered the labyrinth with the magic thread of Ariadne tied around his waist, like the cable tow of the Freemasons that is worn while "groping for light" (akin to traversing a labyrinth) during their initiation ceremonies. De Vere compares the story to that of Rapunzel, writing that, "In Rapunzel the golden thread is her hair, and the maze is substituted by the equally daunting but related structure, a Tower."

Thanks to him, from now on with measured steps and with a certain eye, I can discover the sixty-four dispersed stones of the perfect cube…

The "sixty-four dispersed stones" which form a "perfect cube" must be a crucial part of this mystery. There are sixty-four squares on a chessboard, and a perfect sixty-four-square chessboard is formed by the black and white tiles on the floor of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau, facing both the statue of the demon Asmodeus, and the statue of Saint Germain, as if they were opposing players in a game of chess. In addition, the cipher used in one of the Sauniere parchments is based upon the chessboard, specifically the “Knight’s Tour.” This is a mathematical puzzle, to which there are numerous solutions, the goal of which is to have the knight visit each square on the chessboard once only, using the L-shaped knight’s move. The Knight’s Tour was also used to form the encryption system used in the code found on one of Sauniere’s parchments.

---

[85] Cocteau decorated the ceiling of the Notre Dame de France with a spiderweb motif.

The chequered pattern, and the game of chess itself, is associated with the Knights Templar, who purportedly acquired knowledge of these things through their extensive contact with Eastern mystics during the Crusades. The game of chess not only represents the eternal battle between the forces of good and evil, light and dark; it also represents something astrological. First of all, the board’s outer ring consists of twenty-eight squares, which, as Michael Schneider acknowledges in *The Beginner’s Guide to Constructing the Universe*, represents the twenty-eight days of the lunar cycle. The king and queen are solar and lunar symbols, as Schneider elaborates:

“The king, the most important piece, represents the Sun of this solar system... traveling only one step at a time, along both square and triangular lines, in any of eight directions. The king is virtually hidden from the action, yet the entire game revolves around it...The queen is the most powerful piece on the board, having unlimited movement in any of eight directions of manifestation... In another sense she is Regina Coeli, Queen of the Heavens, the widely traveling moon which always reflects the light of the Sun, the king.”

Besides the king and queen, other pieces on the board also have special significance. The four rooks, or towers could represent the “four watchtowers” that divide the zodiac into four cardinal points, and which were incorporated into the headdress of the goddesses Isis and Diana, as well as Mary Magdalene. (In fact, a statue of Mary Magdalene crowned with four towers can be seen just outside in the courtyard of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau.) The black and white squares could be considered alternating periods of day and night. The chessboard itself, made up of four concentric rings of squares, resembles a “bird’s eye view” of a four-stepped ziggurat, and thus represents the world mountain that in the eyes of the ancients provided the axis along which the cosmos metaphorically rotated.

In the belief system of ancient man, it was the cosmos, and the heavenly bodies contained within it, that controlled man's fate. The chessboard symbolizes an astrological mosaic of fate's possibilities. On the board there are six different types of pieces, and these six types of pieces can move in any of eight directions (the four cardinal points, and the four diagonal points). That there are sixty-four possibilities is fitting, since there are sixty-four six-part "codons", or "genetic words" in human DNA. There are also, notably, sixty-four hexagrams in the Chinese divination system known as I-Ching. The relationships between the pieces on the chessboard form, as Michael Schneider suggests, "...lines of force composing an energy web", like the web of the spider goddess Arachne, whose eight legs can be likened to the eight directions on a chessboard, as well as the eight squares that are on each side of the chessboard's outer ring. Schneider writes that, "The chessboard, the spider's web... and the I-Ching each in its own way represents the world's opposite forces weaving the eight-fold 'elements'... the warp and weft of matter's web." The Web of Arachne, or the "Web of Fate", was also likened by Nicholas de Vere to the Buddhist eight-spoked Wheel of Life, and to the Tarot's eight-spoked Wheel of Fortune, which both seem, in this context, to be not unlike Sleeping Beauty's spinning wheel, which controlled the fate of an entire kingdom.

There is another important connection as well. I discussed earlier how the Egyptian symbols of the Eye of Ra and the Eye of Horus represent the "Grail stone", the "stone that was rejected" and the "substitute" stone. Well, according to R.T. Rundle Clark's *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, the Eye of Horus consists of "64 parts" that have been scattered and need to be reassembled! He writes:

"It will soon be seen that if each part of the [Eye of Horus] represents a fraction of the descending geometric series 1/2, ¼, 1/8, etc., put together, they make 63/64… So Thoth[86] *can say 'I came seeking the Eye of Horus, that I might bring it back and count it!*'"

The Eye of Horus is a representation of the Grail stone as the "All-Seeing Eye" of Satan, with which all of his direct descendants are able to see as well. This would have to be the "Third Eye" of Hinduism, called the "Ajna" (which comes from "Az", a title used by both Cain and Enoch). Is this, then the "certain eye" which discovers the "sixty-four dispersed stones of the perfect cube"?

The "perfect cube" is also an important symbol in the ancient mysteries, being representative of the "Philosopher's Stone" of the alchemists. Albert Pike wrote that the Emerald Tablet was a cube. The cube contains, in its angles, magic numbers. As Pike wrote:

---

[86] Remember that Thoth is the same figure as Hermes, or Enoch.

"If we delineate a cube on a plane surface thus, we have visible 3 faces, and 9 external lines, drawn between 7 points. The complete cube has 3 more faces, making 6; 3 more lines, making 12; and 1 more point, making 8. As the number 12 includes the sacred numbers 3, 5, and 7, and 3 times 3, or 9, and 3 times 3, or 9, and is produced by adding the sacred number 3 to 9, while its own two figures, 1,2, the unit, or monad, and duad, added together, make the sacred number 3; it was called the perfect number; and the cube became the symbol of perfection."[87]

The "scattered stones" of the cube mentioned in this poem may also refer to the ruined Temple of Solomon, a building whose dimensions, delineated to the architects specifically by "God" himself, formed a perfect cube. Albert Pike writes of this: "The Holy of Holies of the temple formed a cube, in which, drawn on a plane surface, there are 4+3+2=9 lines visible, and three sides or faces..." Perhaps this is why the unit of measurement used by the Hebrews for the construction of the Temple was called, by Englishmen, the “cubit.”

---

[87] Aleister Crowley insisted that his student magicians construct their altars with two perfect cubes stacked atop one another, "symbolizing the Great Work... The height of the altar is equal to the height above the ground of the navel of the magician. The altar is connected with the Ark of the Covenant, Noah's Ark, the nave (*navis*, a ship) of the Church, and many other symbols of antiquity."

Given what we know, we can now look at one of the mysteries surrounding Jean Cocteau, the presumed author of the poem *Le Serpent Rouge*, with fresh insight. In the mural he created at the Notre Dame de France in London, he signed his name with the mysterious initials “D.D.D.” - a code which has never been explained. But if you consider that “D” is the fourth letter of the alphabet, and then *cube* the number 4 (4x4x4, or 4 to the third power), you get 64 - a perfect cube.[88]

… that the Brothers of the BEAUTY of the black woods, escaping the usurpers pursuing them, disseminated while they were fleeing the white Fort.

If the “beauty” is Isis, or Venus, then her “brothers” are the Cainites, who literally were her brothers. Also note that there is a woman whose grave, located on the grounds of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau, is very important to the whole mystery, and whose name, “Marie de Blanchefort”, means literally, “Marie of the White Fort.” Clearly her grave stone, and her name, are clues pointing to the grave of Venus, the real “Marie of the White Fort.”

---

[88] In this context, it is also worth noting that Cocteau was one of the major participants in Hans Richter’s film *8x8: A Chess Sonata*, and he created one of the film’s most bizarre segments.

Reassemble the scattered stones, and work with square and compass to put them back in regular order;

The Freemasons’ most well-known emblem is the L-shaped, right-angled square and compass, and this reassembly of “scattered stones” indicates re-acquiring “that which was lost”, i.e., the Grail stone, by using the L-shaped, right-angled moves of the knight in the Knight’s Tour to “reassemble the scattered stones.”

…search for the line of the meridian that goes from the Orient to the Occident, then look from the South to the North, and finally in every direction to obtain the sought solution, stationing oneself before the fourteen stones marked with a cross.

This indicates using the “Roseline” meridian discussed previously. It has been suggested that the “fourteen stones marked with a cross” may actually refer to the fourteen Stations of the Cross within the church, each of which is surmounted by a Celtic-style cross with a circle. However, I am not certain that this is the correct interpretation.

The circle was the ring and the crown, and that was the diadem of this QUEEN of the castle.

This passage associates the Venus figure with the written symbol of Venus: a cross surmounted by a circle - the queen crowned. This sign is related to the Celtic cross mentioned above, and to the Egyptian Ankh, which was also used by the Cathars, who referred to it as “the Albigensian cross.” This imagery may further be related to that of the constellation Virgo, who is depicted in iconography as crowned with a circle of stars, as are Isis and the Virgin Mary.

The stones of the mosaic pavement from the sacred place are alternately white or black, and JESUS, like ASMODEUS, observes their alignments.

This again is the black and white chessboard tiling on the floor of the church at Rennes-le-Chateau, which both the statues of Jesus and Asmodeus are staring down on. Perhaps we are meant to observe the alignment of the chessboard with other items in the church, and/or to project these alignments outward through the wider surrounding landscape.

My view seemed incapable of seeing the summit where the Sleeping Beauty lay hidden.

Again, we have a reference to the goddess buried within the mountain: the Venusberg tale, upon which the story of Sleeping Beauty is based.

It is not by the magical strength of HERCULES that one deciphers these mysterious symbols engraved by observers of the past.

This is a reference to the cave known as the Tomb of Hercules (a.k.a Enoch), which is covered with hieroglyphic symbols, just as the tomb of Hermes (Enoch) supposedly is.

In the sanctuary, nevertheless the font of benediction, fountain of love of the believers, reminds us of these words again: "BY THIS SIGN YOU WILL CONQUER."

The holy water stoup at Rennes-le-Chateau is marked with the phrase, “By this sign you shall conquer.” This phrase was used by Constantine when he saw his vision of the sun-cross in the sky. The cross above the stoop is of the Celtic type described previously. However, it has been suggested in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, and in the literature published by the Priory of Sion, that the sign which Constantine really envisioned was the Chi Rho. This is a symbol made out of the first two Latin letters in the Latin word for “Christ.” It is pre-Christian in origin, but is now a common Catholic symbol.

From her who I wish to free, steams of perfume that impregnated the sepulcher climbed towards me. Formerly some called her ISIS, queen of the beneficial spring, COME TO ME ALL OF YOU WHO SUFFER AND WHO ARE AFFLICTED, AND I WILL COMFORT YOU. For others: MADGALENE, of the famous vase full of healing balm. The initiates know her true name: OUR LADY OF THE CROSS.

Here the author associates Isis, Venus, Virgo, and Mary Magdalene with the vase full of balm which all of these characters were supposed to have carried, and which can also be linked with the Holy Grail. The use of the term “Our Lady of the Cross” again associates the goddess with the Celtic circle and cross symbol. The idea that she needs to be “freed” from something indicates that she, like her brothers, the Cainites, is imprisoned within her mountain tomb, trapped “in a deathless sleep”, like Sleeping Beauty.

I was like the shepherds of the famous painter POUSSIN, perplexed in front of the enigma: “ET IN ARCADIA EGO…”!

It goes without saying that this is a reference to Nicolas Poussin’s painting, *The Shepherds of Arcadia*, which was mentioned in the Sauniere parchments, and which depicts the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau. The painting is a clue indicating the sacred tombs located within the mountains.

The voice of the blood made me form an image of an ancestral past. Yes, the lightening flash of genius cut across my thinking. I saw it again, I understood! I knew now this fabulous secret.

The author is perhaps experiencing ancestral memories pertaining to the secret of the Grail, for he may be of the Grail blood himself.

One must marvel that, during the jumps of the four horsemen, the hooves of one horse left four imprints on the stone.

The mention of horses brings to mind the "horse of God" that was mentioned in the Sauniere parchments. However, these "four horsemen" are the four knights on the chessboard, and their "jumps" are once again a reference to the Knight's Tour. They are also reminiscent of the four horsemen of *The Revelation of Saint John the Divine*.

There is the sign that DELACROIX had given in one of three tableaus in the Chapel of Angels. There is the seventh sentence that a hand had traced: DELIVER ME FROM THE MIRE, SO THAT I WILL NOT STAY HERE SINKING. Twice IS, embalmer and embalmed, miracle vase of the eternal White Lady of the Legends.

"Twice IS" is, of course, Isis, or Venus, the "Eternal White Lady of the Legends." Here, her vase is associated with the embalming of corpses, both her own and someone else's. Of course, Mary Magdalene's balm was supposedly used to "anoint" Jesus for burial. "Deliver me from the mire" is perhaps a prayer from the Ark navigator, asking to be saved from the Flood, to keep him from sinking into the mud that was swallowing up creation all around him. It also may link up with the story of the children of God, Shu and Tefnut, who in Egyptian mythology got lost in the Primeval Waters, and were saved by God's eye, which was sent out to find them. In the myth, the Eye was personified as female, a precursor to the idea of the goddess Isis.

Begun in darkness, my journey could only be completed in Light.

Here is yet another reference to the opposing but equal powers of good and evil, light and dark.

At the window of the ruined house, I contemplated the trees made bare by the autumn.

This "ruined house", like the story of the ruined Temple of Solomon, or the ruined Tower of Babel, represents the loss of the Grail wisdom after the cataclysm.

At the summit of the mountain, the cross detached itself from the crest under the midday sun. It was the fourteenth and highest of all with 35 centimeters!

I have already discussed the significance of the time of midday, or high noon, in regards to the Rennes-le-Chateau mystery. As for the rest of this passage, I have been unable thus far to decipher it conclusively.

Here I am, thus, on my knight's tour, on the circuit of the divine horsemen of the abyss.

Here is an even more overt reference to the Knight's Tour. The words "divine horsemen" would also seem to correlate with the "horse of God" reference in Sauniere's second parchment. "Crossing the Abyss" may be analogous to discovering the tomb, and "reassembling the scattered stones" – regaining the Grail.

Celestial vision for him who remembers the four works of E. M. Signol regarding the meridian line;

Emile Signol was a painter who produced four paintings of the old Paris meridian line, which the Priory documents suggest has some geometric relationship to the "Roseline" meridian. Signol also painted a famous portrait of King Dagobert II. All of these works are now on display in the Saint Sulpice church in Paris.

…at the choir of the sanctuary from where this spring of love radiates towards one another, I pivot, looking from the rose from P to that of the S, then from the S to the P…

I believe this line refers to the tombs hidden beneath the mountains of Rennes-le-Chateau: the "sanctuary." The word "choir" comes from "core", indicating the inner chamber of that structure, the "heart of the sanctuary." The word "heart" in French, is "coeur", and it comes from the Latin "cor" or "cordis", from whence we get the word "cardia", designating the heart organ   These words are also related to the ancient words "kar" and "gar", the key syllables in the words "Garral", or "Grail", and "Kardo", the name given in *The Book of the Cave of Treasures* for the mountain upon which the Ark landed, which I have equated with Mt. Cardou in Rennes-le-Chateau. I have already discussed the idea that Cardou/Kardo may have been, as indicated by the Priory of Sion's own writings, the "zero point" for the ancient prime meridian referred to by the Priory as the "Roseline", and thus was literally the "center of the Earth" in ancient times.

The “rose” mentioned may be the “hidden sun” said to be within the tomb, which is referred to metaphorically in occult ritual as a rose. It may represent, in this instance, the “heart” of Mt. Cardou. If the prime meridian of the ancient world passes through this point, this may explain why it is called “the Roseline.” The reference to the “heart” which “radiates the source of love for one another” identifies this “rose” with the Sacred Heart symbol as well, which was used by the Priory of Sion under their guise as the Hieron du Val d’Or, and which is discussed in Appendix C. The Sacred Heart symbol is further linked with the rose-cross, the Celtic cross, the ankh, and the Venus symbol. All of these represent this concept of the center of the Earth and the prime meridian.

The “P” and “S” represent the Priory of Sion, but also have another meaning regarding bread and salt, as explained previously.

…and the spiral in my mind becomes like a monstrous octopus expelling its ink. The tentacles absorb the light, I am dizzy.

The tomb of Marie de Blanchefort, which in its inscription reveals the coded words “Et in Arcadia Ego”, also has the figure of an octopus etched down at the bottom. The octopus is, according to Priory of Sion member Paul LeCour, a solar symbol used in Atlantis. It also contains the same symbolism as Arachne, the spider goddess, in regards to the number eight and the chessboard.

"The spiral in my mind" may signify the Fibonacci spiral. On the tombstone of Marie de Blanchefort, at the top, we find the letters P and S, linked by a Fibonacci spiral. Furthermore, when an octopus expels ink into water, the ink makes a perfect Fibonacci spiral, another peculiar property of nature. Spirals in general, however, can also be seen as yet another representation of the labyrinth, or maze.

I put my hand to my mouth, instinctively biting my palm, maybe like OLIER in his coffin.

This is the Masonic "Sign of Horror", made by raising the hand over the mouth and biting the palm, a perfectly apt sign to be made if, for instance, one has just discovered a tomb. In fact, this sign is used in Masonic ritual when reenacting the discovery of Hiram Abiff's tomb. Jean-Jacques Olier was the founder of the Seminary of Saint Sulpice. "Olier in his coffin" may just be a reinforcement of the image of the divine tombs, and the involvement of the Priory of Sion in this mystery.

Curses, I understand the truth, HE HAS PASSED in doing good, as did he of the flowery tomb.

"He has passed" is reminiscent of the phrase "he is there dead" from the Sauniere parchments, which in that case referred to the remains of King Dagobert being buried at Rennes-le-Chateau. As I have said, they were probably laid there alongside those of his ancestors, going all the way back to the Cainites. The "flowery tomb" reference is in regards to the supposed "rose (or "hidden sun") within the tomb of Enoch/Hermes.

There is a grave in the church graveyard at Rennes-le-Bains which appears to links up with this line as well - or rather, two graves. For in this yard there are two gravestones bearing the name of Paul-Urbain de Fleury, grandson of Marie de Blanchefort.[89] Henry Lincoln believes that the reason for the gravestone duplication is to draw attention to the man's name, which sounds a lot like "fleurie", the French word for "flowery."

But how many have plundered the HOUSE, leaving nothing but embalmed cadavers and metal objects that they could not have taken. What strange mystery is concealed within the new temple of SOLOMON, edified by the children of Saint VINCENT?

---

[89] Remember that Marie also had two graves attributed to her.

This is clearly a reference to the sacking of Solomon's Temple, the loss of the Grail, and the "ruined house" concept discussed earlier. The "new" Temple of Solomon reference alludes to the concept of regaining that which was lost. But it may also refer to Rennes-le-Chateau, linking it symbolically with the Temple of Solomon. In other words, Rennes-le-Chateau is the *real* "Holy of Holies", where the *real* "stone from Heaven", and the bodies of the *real* "holy patriarchs" are buried: the *real* "center of the Earth", and the ideal location to build a sacred temple, which I believe also exists within the mountains. The writer seems to be describing a tomb that has been partially plundered except for the bodies, and other objects that were too heavy to carry. This may indeed be the case with the tombs beneath Rennes-le-Chateau.

The "Children of Saint Vincent" are a subsection of the Priory of Sion mentioned in the statutes written for the order by Jean Cocteau, who, according to him, number 243, and who "participate neither in the vote, nor in the Convents, but to whom the Priory of Sion accords certain rights and privileges." This subgroup was created, Cocteau claimed, on January 17, 1681.

Cursing the profaners in their ashes and those who follow their ways, I leave the abyss where I was plunged while making the gesture of horror.

Here we have another reference to the Masonic "Sign of Horror" upon discovering a tomb. The "profaners" are those who have plundered the tombs.

Here is the proof that I knew the secret of the Seal of Solomon, and that I had visited the hidden houses of this queen.

Another reference to the six-pointed star, and to the "Sleeping Beauty" hidden inside of a mountain.

Take heed, dear Friend. Do not add or remove one iota; think and think again.

This indicates that clues are hidden in the precise wording of this poem, which you will understand more clearly every time you examine it. These are the same words used at the end of the *Revelation of Saint John the Divine*, which may not, in fact, be that last words of that book in its original form. A rumor persists that the Priory of Sion (and, I suspect, specifically Jean Cocteau) was in possession of a twenty-third chapter to *The Revelation of Saint John the Divine* that contained unknown secrets about the Apocalypse which the Vatican wished to remain secret. This theory is presented in Andre Douzet's book *Sauniere's Model and the Secret of Rennes-le-Chateau*, in which he links it to the mysterious phrase "John 23" uttered by Berenger Sauniere at his death. Just a few years later, Jean Cocteau assumed the title "John 23" when he took office as the Grand Master of the Priory.[90]

The base lead of my writing contains the purest gold.

These words imply that the tomb which the poem describes contains the secrets of alchemy, which it would if it contained the tablet of Enoch (Hermes).

Returning to the white hill, the sky has opened its floodgates.

In the Bible, the "floodgates" of the "firmament of Heaven" were opened to let loose the catastrophic Deluge.

---

[90] Remember that, since the Cutting of the Elm, all Priory Grand Masters have taken on the title "John."

There seemed to be a presence nearby, its feet in the water like him who comes to receive the mark of baptism.

Following the Flood reference, here we have yet another reference to water, specifically baptism. This could symbolize the cleansing of the Earth via the Flood, or the "baptism of wisdom" represented by the name "Baphomet" that was taken on by Seth/Cain. It could also refer in part to Christ's baptism by John the Baptist. In those days, the ritual was performed not by an emersion of the entire body, but only the feet. Note that Jean Cocteau's mural at Notre Dame de France in London shows only the feet of Christ. But there is another mural of Cocteau's that illustrates this principle even more clearly. It is the mural in the Chapel of Saint Peter entitled *Saint Peter Walking on Water*. The painting shows Peter being held aloft by an angel while his feet are dipped into the water, as though he were being baptized.

I turn again towards the East. Facing me I see rings unrolling without end, the enormous SERPENT ROUGE cited in the parchments. Salty and bitter, the enormous unchained beast became, at the feet of this white mountain, red in color.

This passage could conceal a hidden message regarding the combination of red and white powders in alchemy. The reference to the snake being “bitter” reinforces the association with the sulfurous red element used in that process.

My emotions were rising. “Deliver me from the mire!”, I said, and awoke immediately. My dream is over. I have omitted from telling you in effect that this was a dream I had this JANUARY 17th, feast day of Saint SULPICE..

January 17, as we know, is a date that recurs frequently in this Rennes-le-Chateau mystery. It is the day Marie de Blanchefort is recorded to have died, and the date on which Berenger Sauniere fell ill with a stroke, from which he died five days later. It is also the date on which Nicolas Flamel, one of the Grand Masters of the Priory of Sion, is recorded to have successfully completed his first alchemical transformation of base metal into gold, and the date upon which the Priory of Sion‘s “Children of Saint Vincent“ were created. Furthermore, it is, as the poem notes, the Feast Day of Saint Sulpice, and we know that the

Priory of Sion took headquarters in the Seminary of Saint Sulpice for some time.

Recently I have discovered even more interesting connections regarding this date. *The Birthday Book of Saints*, by Sean Kelly and Rosemary Rogers, says that January 17th is also the feast day of St. Anthony the Hermit, the patron saint of buried treasure has cropped up elsewhere in the Rennes-le-Chateau mystery. But even more astounding is that, in addition, this date marks the feast day of "St. Roseline", whose name contains an obvious connection to the "Roseline" meridian (which, incidentally, runs through St. Sulpice in Paris). According to Kelly and Rogers, she was:

"… the mind reading prioress of Provence. When she was exhumed in 1334, four years after her death, her body was perfectly incorrupt. The astonished cleric in charge was so impressed by the beauty of her eyes that he scooped them out and took them home."

The details of this story clearly mimic the legend of Venus lying incorrupt within her tomb. The bit about the eyes being taken out connects with the idea of the "Watchers", and with the story of the missing eye of Horus.

Afterwards, my trouble persisting, I wanted after some reflection to tell you a fairytale by PERRAULT.

Charles Perrault, a seventeenth century French writer and poet, was the author of the book *Sleeping Beauty*.

Here then, dear reader, in the pages that follow are the result of a dream that cradled me in the world of the strange and the unknown. To him who PASSES BY, DO GOOD!

Here the writer seems to be suggesting that we use the clues embedded in the poem to explore the "world of the strange and the unknown", and to "do good" by solving the mysteries of the Grail, and of Rennes-le-Chateau.

There are many riddles still left to be solved within this poem. This may form the basis for a forthcoming book on the subject.

Appendix C: Le Hieron du Val d'Or

From *Secret Dossiers* by Henri Lobineau (attributed).

Translated by Tracy Twyman

The Greek philosophers were ignorant of the source of the knowledge contained in their mythology. Aristotle said that it came from the barbarians, and holy Clement of Alexandria expressed the same opinion. The word "barbares" is without a doubt closer to the Hebrew word "Ber." It is remarkable then that the Hebrew root "BER" means "source", an idea which is associated with that of an "origin."[91]

Cesar notes that the Welsh Druids used writing of a Greek nature. We are thus incited to see in Greek the writing of those who, along with bronze, brought to the Mediterranean basin their worship and their gods. It is also on these premises that they would have conceived of the myths collected by the Greeks.

The men of prehistory had, to our knowledge, been inclined towards the constellations of the North, and to the Great Bear (Grand Ourse)[92], the one named and illustrated by the ancients. However, the word “Aour” means light in Hebrew. The Great Bear is the great light, but what word is it in our language? The answer is rather unexpected and I give it without any reservations. Indeed, in Hebrew, as always, the name of the animal called “the Bear” is “CHR TZ”, where one discovers the word Christ.[93] The astonishing mystery is a source of constant admiration when one sees the relationships between the words, or the words by which the verbs manifest!

---

[91] In this translation, "Dagobert" would mean "source of the fish." The word "source" also indicates a stream in French.
[92] "Ourse" means "she-bear."

Is it not already obvious that to speak a poor French dialect that originated elsewhere will not make mankind become one single family, and that it is the call to transformation alone which must bring together the people into a single herd, led only by a single pastor?

As for the red flag, it is that of the Sacred Heart. Previously, a red cloth was thrown derisively on the shoulders of Jesus in front of Pilate, who then scoffed at his alleged office of King of the Jews. And in the *Apocalypse, XIX, 13*, it is covered in a red cloak that Christ returns in royal majesty. Red is indeed the crimson color of the kings, this primitive race having given to the world its rules and its laws, because all the people of Europe living on the banks of the Atlantic Ocean can claim the priestly heritage.

---

[93] Recall the sacredness of the bear to the Merovingian kings, who worshipped it as part of the cult of Diana. Dagobert II was probably killed during a ritual bear hunt as part of this cult, on a date very close to Christmas. Ursa Major, the Great Bear who accompanies Polaris, the pole-star, was also called “Arktos”, of which the root word is, notably, “ark.”

Red is the color of the primitive solar religion. If the skeletons of the Celtic epoch were buried in red earth, then the Peaux-Bouges, who polish the body in red in certain instances, are presently heirs to the Celtic tradition.

The color red is that of Hermes (that of the kermes). The black color (of anarchy) must, in the transformations of the substance principle, transform itself into a red color. The red flag has, besides other things, a long history which is connected to the universal Tradition in general and with that of France in particular.

When the Roman Empire extended itself down into Scotland, a red standard called the "vexillum" or "cantabrun" was used as the exclusive insignia of the more venerated armies. During battle, it was carried at the head of the troops. The guard was entrusted to fifty Praetorians chosen from among the strongest and bravest men. This standard consisted of a crossed lance made from a stick, from which fell a crimson veil with fringes of gold. The pole was surmounted with an eagle made of gold. After the famous vision of the monogram of Christ (not the cross like they mistakenly say) and his apparition in the Sun - a vision of that place surrounded by Autumn, which was accompanied by a voice saying to him, "By this sign you will overcome" - the emperor Constantine placed this monogram at the top of the pole of the red standard, consequently giving it the significant name of "labarum."

In fact, the monogram of Christ, about which they little question themselves, contains the necessary elements and symbolic systems sufficient to penetrate the labyrinth. A red flag was thus the first French flag, and this idea brings to mind the famous oriflamme (golden flame) preserved in the basilica of Saint-Denis, which on many occasions led the French to victory with the cry of "Montjoie Saint-Denis"[94], and which was a red banner cut out in points at the bottom, spangled with lily of gold, and bordered with a fringe of gold

This standard was originally the banner of the Abbey of Saint Denis. Its color indicates that of the wine devoted to Dionysus, because between Saint Denis and Dionysus there is an etymological relationship. The holy Denis lost his head, having been decapitated. Dionysus lost his heart. However, he who discovers the relationship which exists between the two legends has penetrated one of the mysteries of esotericism.

Dionysus is the divine spirit of evolution throughout the universe, the radiant spirit, alive with intelligence. We know that he was torn apart by the Titans, who devoured his members and interred his heart, but that Minerva (Athena) carried this heart into the sky, captioning an entire teaching of the Orphic tradition. The word Orpheus contains “Or- phos.” It is it a word composed of two words, the one Hebrew and the other Greek, and significantly both mean “light.”

---

[94] This phrase originated with Merovingian King Clovis, who is said to have shouted: "Mon Jou Saint Denys!" ("My Jove shall be Saint Denis!") while charging into battle. It became the battle cry of all French kings. (Source: *The Lives of the Saints* by Sabine Baring-Gould.)

The Devotion of the Sacred Heart

In reality, the devotion towards the Sacred Heart is nothing more than a popularization of a very old cult, that of the Heart of the Sky (the Sun). It is by a radiant heart that we represent the heart of Christ, that within which we do not see a gross materialization. The Church, in its psalms, glorifies it “*In sole posuit tabernaculum suum*.”[95] They thus regarded it as the gate to the vault of divinity, and, as in the famous credo, “that which is Lumen of Lumine.”[96] With far less devotion to Him, such consideration gives a considerable breadth and antiquity to Him, and unites with something larger the one and single Tradition to which belongs the Christian religion.

---

[95] This quote, from *Psalm 18,* translates, “He hath set his tabernacle in the Sun.”

[96] “Light of Light.”

The crowned heart figure on megalithic monuments is part of the religious tradition of solarism. It was carried to Crete on vases dated several millennia ago, and it is not without some emotion that I have seen, in the windows of certain museums, Egyptian amulets representing a heart surmounted with a cross, identical to the modern badges of the Sacred Heart.

Templars, attached to a very old Tradition, held great honor for the crowned heart. A radiant heart in front of which a character is in worship is reproduced on one of the walls of the keep of Chinon, where there were imprisoned a certain number of Templars who covered the walls with graffiti. The image of the radiant heart can be seen also in their English commanderies.

The association of the heart of Christ with the Sun appears clearly in certain marble engravings dating from the XIII century and coming from Carthusians from Saint Denis-of-Orques. The wounded heart is indeed reproduced on this marble surrounded with the planetary signs, and signs of the zodiac.

It is in France, in Paray-le-Monial, that they have given birth to the devotion towards the Sacred Heart, which is the entitlement of the Hieron du Val d'Or. In Autumn of 1893 someone found, on the tomb of a Christian woman dating from the VI century, an inscription in Greek letters (recall that the Druids wrote in Greek letters). It comprises eleven lines, and the first letter of the first five lines form the word ICHTUS.

Here is part of this inscription:

"O divine race of the celestial fish, receive with a respectful heart in immortal life among the mortals the waters of the divine ones. Friend, remake your heart with the eternal flood of the wisdom which gives treasures. It is a reservoir of nourishment, soft like the honey of the Savior of the saints. Eat with hunger: you hold the fish in your hands."

Paray-le-Monial, February 5, 1926.
Le Poulpe (The Octopus)

Notes from the Translator

This exerpt from *Secret Dossiers* was given to me by an acquaintance. The copy was very poorly produced, and the letters very small, so it was therefore very difficult to read. Any errors or omissions in translation are due to the inferior quality of the source material.

There are also many lines in this excerpt that do not entirely make sense. This document was undoubtedly written for initiates, who would have been familiar with the code words and esoteric references made throughout. However, in spite of these difficulties, there is much to be gleaned from this piece.

One of the most interesting things is the emphasis the author places on the ancient roots of words in modern languages, seeing a somewhat cabalistic symbolic connection between words that sounds similar but appear to have totally separate meanings. This shows that the approach I have taken to interpreting the language and word plays which have cropped up throughout my study was indeed the proper one. It is notable that the author seems to liken this root understanding of language to going back to the "source" of religious and mythological traditions.

That "ber" could mean "source" is an interesting idea, since this is a word that I have shown means "house" or "temple" in other languages. This brings to mind the concept that a temple, such as the Tower of Babel, could somehow embody the "source" or original language. The author's repeated emphasis on "light" and illumination indicates that he may be familiar with the concept of the language of light, and with the idea that the Grail bloodline originated with a "light race."

The author seems to see this original "source" religious doctrine of which he writes as being a "primitive solar religion", and interprets the symbol of the Sacred Heart in these terms. As we know, the Sacred Heart is essentially the same symbol as the Egyptian ankh, the rose-cross, the Celtic cross, and the sign for Venus. Such a connection seems to be drawn in these *Secret Dossiers*, where a version of the Sacred Heart is reproduced and labeled as "an Egyptian amulet." (This is also discussed in the text of the exerpt.) The image is said to have been taken from the "museum at Rennes." This links up with the assertion made by several authors that the Cathars used the Egyptian ankh symbol, and called it "the Albigensian cross." Also, it is interesting that he refers to this as a symbol of the "gate to the vault of divinity", or a gate to Heaven, as the Tower of Babel and Jacob's Ladder were seen to be.

According to Nicholas de Vere, the original Aryans descended from Cain had red hair, and many central figures that I have examined in this book, including Venus, Pyrrha, and Mary Magdalene, have had red hair. I have also discussed the importance of the association between the color red and the idea of (alchemical) "fire" which the Cainites were linked with. The link between the color of fire and the "black art" of "alchemy" (which is named after the word "khem", meaning "black") is made by the author also when he writes:

"The color red is that of Hermes (that of the kermes). The black color (of anarchy) must, in the transformations of the substance principle, transform itself into a red color."

That fact that blood is red is significant also in relation to the idea of a royal bloodline. The author's assertion here that "Red is indeed the crimson color of the kings, this primitive race having given to the world its rules and its laws" shows that he is fully aware of the royal, red-haired Aryan race, and the fact that they are responsible for civilizing the humanity.

The emphasis on Saint Denis is important as well. Denis is famous because when he was martyred, his head was chopped off. Yet like the proverbial decapitated chicken, he did not die right away, but ran madly about, for miles, they say, carrying his head in his hands. To this day, the seal of Saint Denis is a bishop holding his head, on a red field. The author of *Secret Dossiers* likens Denis to Dionysus, and indeed, other authors have suggested that Denis might have been "a Greek philosopher named Dionysus."[97] In fact, Saint Denis is "invoked against frenzy"[98] by superstitious French Catholics, and the cult of Dionysus, of course, was known for its frenzied, drunken, orgiastic rituals. Surely, there must be a connection. *Secret Dossiers* further links these myths with that of Orpheus, for just as Denis was decapitated, and Dionysus had his heart ripped out, Orpheus "was torn apart by the Titans…" This represents the same concept as the "scattered stones" or "that which was lost" – the Grail stone, and the Grail kingdom.

---

[97] From *The Birthday Book of Saints*, by Sean Kelly and Rosemary Rogers.
[98] Ibid.

Finally, the excerpt could not have ended on a better note. The author connects the cult of Christ and the solar symbol of the Sacred Heart with "the divine race of the celestial fish." He also mentions "the waters of the divine ones", and "the eternal flood of wisdom which gives treasures", seeming references to the underground stream and the secret doctrine of Satan, which is here also likened to honey. This honey then appears to be representative of the Elixir of Life, as well as, of course, the Merovingians, whose royal symbol was the bee. Clearly, my theories linking Christ and the Merovingians to the race of Atlantean sea-gods, and to the water/fish symbolism thereof, were right on track. The link between the "eternal flood of wisdom" and Baphomet (Cain/Seth), whose name means "baptism of wisdom", has already been noted.

In addition, there is a line here which appears to shed further light on certain mysterious lines from the poem *Le Serpent Rouge* (discussed in Appendix B). That poem contains references to Constantine's vision of a sign of Christ, and the message he received: “By this sign you will conquer!” It also mentions, at an entirely different point in the poem, that the narrator “contemplated the trees made bare by autumn.” Although these two things are not connected in the poem, they *are* connected in this passage from *Secret Dossiers*, where it discusses the “famous vision of the monogram of Christ (not the cross like they mistakenly say) and his apparition in the Sun - a vision of that place surrounded by Autumn, which was accompanied by a voice saying to him, ‘By this sign you will overcome.’” So Constantine’s vision, then, took place in Autumn, something that is apparently significant to the Priory of Sion, and something that apparently has some bearing on the meaning of the poem *Le Serpent Rouge*. I have not, however, been able to fully interpret it thus far.

Bibliography

Andrae, Johann Valentin. *The Chymical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz*. Edmonds, WA, 1991.

Andrews, Richard, and Schellenberger, Paul. *The Tomb of God: The Body of Jesus and the Solution to a 200-Year-Old Mystery*. New York, NY, 1996.

Arguelles, Jose. *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology*. Santa Fe, NM, 1987.

Arguelles, Jose. *Time and the Technosphere: The Law of Time in Human Affairs*. Rochester, Vermont, 2002

Baigent, Michael, and Leigh, Richard. *The Elixir and the Stone: Unlocking the Ancient Mysteries of the Occult*. London, UK, 1998.

Baigent, Michael, and Leigh, Richard. *The Temple and the Lodge*. New York, NY, 1989.

Baigent, Michael, Leigh, Richard, and Lincoln, Henry. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*. New York , NY, 1982.

Baigent, Michael, Leigh, Richard, and Lincoln, Henry. *The Messianic Legacy*. New York , NY, 1986.

Baring-Gould, Sabine. *The Lives of the Saints*. Edinburgh, UK, 1914.

Baring-Gould, Sabine. *Myths of the Middle Ages*. London, UK, 1996.

Barnstone, Willis. *The Other Bible: Ancient Alternative Scriptures*. New York, NY, 1984.

Besson, Luc, and Jovovich, Milla. *The Messenger: The Story of Joan of Arc*. Culver City, CA, 2000.

Blavatsky, H.P. *The Secret Doctrine*. Pasadena, CA, 1999.

borndigital.com/tarsus.htm. 2004

Brown, Frederick, *An Interpretation of Angels: A Biography of Jean Cocteau*, London, UK, 1968.

Budge, E.A. Wallis. *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt.* New York, NY, 1988.

Buechner, Col. Howard. *Emerald Cup - Ark of Gold: The Quest of S.S. Lt. Otto Rahn of the Third Reich*. Metairie, Louisiana, 1991.

Butler, Alan, and Dafoe, Stephen. *The Templar Continuum*. Belleville, ON, Canada, 1999.

Cameron, Ron (editor). *The Other Gospels*. Philadelphia, PA, 1982.

Chatelain, Maurice. *Our Cosmic Ancestors*. USA, 1996.

Chaumeil, Jean-Luc. *L'Alphabet Solaire : Introduction à la Langue Universelle, avec des Textes Inédits de l'Abbé Boudet*. Paris, France, 1985.

Chaumeil, Jean-Luc. *Le Trésor des Templiers*. Paris, France, 1984.

Chaumeil, Jean-Luc. *Le Trésor du Triangle d'Or*. Nice, France, 1979.

Childress, David Hatcher. *A Hitchhiker's Guide to Armageddon.* Kempton, Illinois, 2001.

Church, J.R. *Guardians of the Grail*. Oklahoma City, OK 1989.

Clark, R.T. Rundle. *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*. New York, NY, 1959.

Clarke, James Freeman. *The Legend of Thomas Didymus*. New York, NY 1881.

Collins, Andrew. *From the Ashes of the Angels: The Forbidden Legacy of a Fallen Race*. Rochester, Vermont, 2001.

Collyer, John V. *Fringes and Snails*. http://www.bibletopics.com/biblestudy/14.htm. 1999-2003.

Cooke, Jean, Kramer, Ann, and Roland-Entwistle, Theodore. *History's Timeline*. London, UK, 1977.

Cortez, Ana, and Freeman, Charles. *The Playing Card Oracles: A Source Book for Divination*. Denver, CO, 2002.

Cory, Isaac Preston, and Hodges, Edward Richmond. *Cory's Ancient Fragments of the Phoenician, Carthaginian, Babylonian, Egyptian and Other Authors.* London, UK, 1876.

Cozarinsky, Edgardo, and Cocteau, Jean. *Autobiography of an Unknown*. Chicago, Illinois, 1983.

Crowley, Aleister. *Book 4*. Dallas, TX, 1969.

Crystal, Ellie. crystalinks.com. 2004.

d'Anjou, Rene. *Livre du Coeur d'Amours Espris*. Vienna, Austria, 1924.

Davidson, Marshall B. (editor). *The Horizon Book of Lost Worlds*. New York, NY, 1962.

Deal, David Allen. *The Day Behemoth and Leviathan Died*. Vista, CA, 1999.

De Givry, Emile Grillot. *Illustrated Anthology of Sorcery, Magic and Alchemy*. New York, NY, 1973.

De la Vega, Garcilaso. *Royal Commentaries of the Incas, and General History of Peru*. Austin, TX, 1966.

De Sede, Gerard. *The Accursed Treasure of Rennes-le-Château*. Worcester Park, UK, 2001.

De Troyes, Chretien. *Arthurian Romances*. London, UK, 1987.

De Vere, Nicholas. *The Dragon Legacy: The Secret History of an Ancient Bloodline*. San Diego, CA, 2004.

Donnelly, Ignatius. *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World.* New York, NY 1976.

Douzet, Andre. *Sauniere' s Model and the Secret of Rennes-le-Chateau.* The Netherlands, 2001.

Eco, Umberto. *The Search for the Perfect Language.* Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1995.

Emboden, William. *The Visual Art of Jean Cocteau.* New York, NY, 1989.

Ephraim, and Budge, E. Wallis. *The Book of the Cave of Treasures: A History of the Patriarchs and the Kings, Their Successors, from the Creation to the Crucifixion of Christ.* London, UK., 1927.

Evola, Julius. *The Mystery of the Grail: Initiation and Magic in the Quest for the Spirit.* Rochester, Vermont, 1997.

Evola, Julius. *The Metaphysics of Sex.* USA, 1983.

fact-index.com. 2004

Fifield, William, *Jean Cocteau*, USA., 1974.

Filsinger, Tomas J. *The Aztec Cosmos: The Great and Venerable Mechanism of the Universe*. Berkeley, CA, 1984.

Frazer, Sir James George. *The Golden Bough*. New York, NY, 1958.

Freud, Sigmund. *Moses and Monotheism*. New York, NY, 1967.

Fulcanelli. *Le Mystere des Cathedrales*. Albuquerque, NM, 1984.

Gardner, Laurence. *Bloodline of the Holy Grail: The Hidden Lineage of Jesus Revealed*. Rockport, Massachusetts, 1996.

Gardner, Laurence. *Genesis of the Grail Kings*. Boston, Massachusetts, 2000.

Ginzberg, Louis. *The Legends of the Jews, Vol. 1 and 2*. Baltimore, Maryland, 1998.

Godwin, Joscelyn. *Arktos: The Polar Myth in Science, Symbolism and Nazi Survival*. Kempton, Illinois,
1996.

Godwin, Malcolm. *The Holy Grail: Its Origins, Secrets, and Meaning Revealed*. New York, NY 1994.

Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas. *The Black Sun*. New York, NY, 2002.

Gregory of Tours. *The History of the Franks*. New York, NY, 1974.

Guenon, Rene. *Le Roi du Monde*. Paris, France, 1958.

Hall, Manly P. *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*. Canada, 1976.

Hamilton, Edith. *Mythology: Timeless Tales of Gods and Heroes*. New York, 1969.

Hancock, Graham. *Fingerprints of the Gods*. New York, NY, 1995.

Hancock, Graham. *The Sign and the Seal*. New York., NY, 1992.

Hapgood, Charles. *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*. Kempton, Illinois, 1996.

Harrison, James. *The Pattern and the Prophecy: God's Great Code*. Petersborough, Ontario, Canada, 1995.

Hauck, Dennis William. *The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation*. New York, NY, 1999.

Helgeland, Brian. *The Sin-Eater*. USA, 2003.

The Holy Bible: King James Version. Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1989.

James, Geoffrey. *The Enochian Magick of Dr. John Dee*. Saint Paul, MN, 1994.

Josephus, Flavius. *The Works of Josephus*. USA, 1982.

Jung, C.G. *Aion: Researches into the Phenomenology of the Self.* Princeton, NJ, 1978.

Jung, Emma, and von Franz, Marie-Louise. *The Grail Legend*. Princeton, NJ, 1998.

Kaplan, Aryeh, (translator). *Sefer Yetzirah: The Book of Creation.* Northvale, NJ, 1995.

Kelly, Sean, and Rodgers, Rosemary. *The Birthday Book of Saints: Your Powerful Personal Patrons for Every Blessed Day of the Year*. New York, NY, 2001.

Knight, Christopher, and Lomas, Robert. *The Hiram Key: Pharaohs, Freemasons, and the Discovery of the Secret Scrolls of Jesus*. Michigan, 1996.

Knight, Christopher, and Lomas, Robert. *Uriel's Machine: Uncovering the Secrets of Stonehenge, Noah's Flood, and the Dawn of Civilization.* Gloucester, Massachusetts, 2001.

LaVey, Anton Szandor. *The Satanic Bible*. New York, NY 1969.

Laurence, Richard (translator). *The Book of Enoch*. San Diego, CA, 1976.

Levy, Dan. *The Alchemy Website*. http://www.levity.com/alchemy/home.html. 1996-2003.

Lincoln, Henry. *The Holy Place: Discovering the Eighth Wonder of the Ancient World*. New York, NY, 1991.

Lincoln, Henry. *Key to the Sacred Pattern: The Untold Story of Rennes-le-Château*. New York, NY, 1998.

Lobineau, Henri. *Dossiers Secrets d'Henri Lobineau*. Paris, France, 1967.

Maccoby, Hyam. *Judas Iscariot and the Myth of Jewish Evil*. New York, NY, 1992.

Mackey, Albert G. *The History of Freemasonry*. USA, 1998.

Mathers, S. Liddell MacGregor (translator). *The Key of Solomon the King*. York Beach, Maine, 1989.

Mehler, Stephen. *The Origin of the Word Pyramid.* http://www.gizapyramid.com/mehler-originword.htm. 200-2003.

McIntosh, Christopher. *The Rosicrucians: The History, Mythology, and Rituals of an Esoteric Order*. York Beach, Maine, 1997.

Michaelson, Scott (editor). *Portable Darkness: An Aleister Crowley Reader*. New York, NY, 1989.

Oates, Joan. *Babylon.* London, UK, 1979.

Patton, Guy and Mackness, Robin. *Web of Gold: The Secret Power of a Sacred Treasure*. London, UK, 2000.

Picknett, Lynn, and Prince, Clive. *The Templar Revelation: Secret Guardians of the True Identity of Christ*. New York, NY, 1997.

Pike, Albert. *Morals and Dogma*. Richmond, VA, 1927.

Plato, Taylor, Thomas, and Taliaferro, R. Catesby. *The Timaeus, and the Critias, or Atlanticus*. New York, NY, 1944.

Raqq, Laura Maria Roberts, and Raqq, Lonsdale (editors). *The Gospel of Barnabas*. USA, 1994.

Ravenscroft, Trevor. *The Spear of Destiny*. York Beach, Maine, 1992.

Regardie, Israel. *The Golden Dawn*. Saint Paul, MN, 1994.

Reiss, Joseph. *Language, Myth, and Man*. USA, 1963.

Rest, Friedrich. *Our Christian Symbols*. Philadelphia, PA 1959.

Richardson, John. *A Life of Picasso*. New York, NY, 1991

Roberts, J.M. *A History of Europe*. New York, NY, 1996.

Roberts, Paul William. *In Search of the Birth of Jesus: The Real Journey of the Magi*. New York, NY, 1995.

Savedow, Steve. *Goetic Evocation: The Magician's Workbook, Volume 2*. Chicago, IL, 1996.

Schneider, Michael S. *A Beginner's Guide to Constructing the Universe: The Mathematical Archetypes of Nature, Art, and Science*. New York, NY 1994.

Scholem, Gershom Gerhard. *Zohar: The Book of Splendor*. New York, NY, 1963.

Schonfield, Dr. Hugh J. *The Passover Plot*. New York, NY, 1965

Simpson, D.P. *Cassell's New Latin Dictionary*. New York, NY, 1959.

Sitchin, Zecharia. *The Twelfth Planet : Book I of the Earth Chronicles*. USA, 1999.

Springmeier, Fritz. *The Bloodlines of the Illuminati*. Westminster, CO, 1999.

Smith, Paul. *The Rennes-le-Chateau Papers of Paul Smith*. priory-of-sion.com, 2003.

Smith, Morton. *Jesus the Magician*. San Francisco, CA, 1981.

spacedaily.com. “World will See Computers in Whole New Light.” 2002.

Starbird, Margaret. *The Woman with the Alabaster Jar*. Rochester, VT, 1993.

Steegmuller, Francis. *Cocteau: A Biography*. Boston, Massachusetts, 1970.

Steel, Duncan. Marking Time: *The Epic Quest to Invent the Perfect Calendar*. New York, NY, 2000.

Stewart, Prince Michael of Albany. *The Forgotten Monarchy of Scotland*. Dorset, UK 1998.

Still, William T. *New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*. Lafayette, Louisiana, 1990.

Talbott, David N. *The Saturn Myth*. Garden City, NY, 1979.

Tenen, Stan. *Geometric Metaphors of Life*. Sharon, MA, 1989.

Thompson, James. *Nicolas Poussin*. New York, NY, 1992.

Urwin, Kenneth. *Langenscheidt Standard Dictionary: French-English, English-French*. Berlin, Germany, 1968.

Von Eschenbach, Wolfram. *Parzival* (excerpt). From *Transformations of Myth Through Time: An Anthology of Readings*. Orlando, FL, 1990.

Waddell, L.A. *The British Edda: The Great Epic Poem of the Ancient Britons on the Exploits of King Thor, Arthur or Adam and His Knights in Establishing Civilization, Reforming Eden & Capturing the Holy Grail About 3380-3350 B.C.* London, UK, 1930.

Waddell, L.A. *Egyptian Civilization: Its Sumerian Origin and Real Chronology, and Sumerian Origin of Egyptian Hieroglyphs*.

Waddell, L.A. *The Makers of Civilization in Race and History*. London, UK, 1929.

Waite, Arthur Edward. *The Rider Tarot Deck*. Stamford, CT, 1971.

Waite, Arthur Edward. *A New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*. USA, 1970.

William Collins Sons & Co. Ltd. *Collins Gem German-English/English-German Dictionary*. UK, 1978.

Wilson, Colin, and Flem-Ath, Rand. *The Atlantis Blueprint.* New York, NY, 2000.

Wood, David. *Genisis: The First Book of Revelations*. Illinois, Tunbridge Wells, UK, 1985.

Wood, David and Campbell, Ian. *Geneset: Target Earth*. Sunbury-on-Thames, UK, 1994.

Woodrow, Ralph. *Babylon Mystery Religion*. USA, 1966.

Index

13, significance of.... 87, 91, 127, 544
  and Sionic Calendar 534–35
  and thirteen-house zodiac 209
64 scattered stones 423, 552
Ab Urbe Condita........... 520, 521
Abel................. 373, 379, 434–38
Abel, biblical figure 269, 274, 277, 280, 285, 286, 287, 289, 307, 308, 316, 318, 331, 337, 362, 382, 448, 449, 483
Abiff, Hiram................. 132, 378
Abraham, biblical figure 42, 328, 344, 382, 433, 437
Abraham, biblical figure of... 268
abyss, the.............................. 435
Action Française 192
Adam, biblical figure 25, 280, 305, 330, 372, 385, 387, 438, 451, 491
Adami, the.... 280, 285, 305, 306, 308, 310, 311, 425
Agartha. 198, 264, 374, 375, 480, 485
Ahriman 343
Ahura-Mazda 342, 343
Akkad, and Akkadians.. 262, 415
alchemy.... 41, 78, 112, 119, 143, 148, 173, 388, 401, 407, 419, 472, 557
  and Isaac Newton 140
  and Nicolas Flamel...................... 99–104
  and Robert Boyle......................... 135–36
  and Sauniere's bookplate 511–13
  and the Philosopher's Stone......... 371–74
Alexander the Great 388
All-Seeing Eye..... 326, 421, 422, 556
Alpha Galates 198–203, 203, 476
Alpheus 110, 131
Alpina, Grand Suisse Loge ... 219
Ambrosoli, Giorgio......... 215–17
American Committee on a United Europe 214
Anakim......................... 324, 328
Andrea, Johann Valentin96, 124–27, 133–35
Anjou, house of....... 324, 363–65
Anjou, House of............. 104–12
ankh, symbol......... 324, 568, 586
Ankh, symbol of........... 560, 586
Anne of Austria............... 120–22
Annedoti....................... 235, 325
Annuit Coeptis 540
Annunaki236, 237, 282, 324, 325
Antarctica............................. 396
Anu.. 236–37, 304, 324, 325, 379
Aphrodite 379
Apollinaire 184
Aquarius........ 201, 479, 524, 541
Ar, meaning of word... 261, 393–94, 393–95
Arachne. 555, *See* spider, symbol of
Ararat 259, 261, 404, 409, 548
Arcadia, concept of109–10, 131–32, 391
Arch Kyria 519, 525, 528
Ardennes, forest of................. 89
Ariadne........................... 549–52
Ark of Noah .. 42, 211, 273, 384–85, 408–9, 403–9, 438, 545–48
Ark of the Covenant... 46–48, 61, 77, 320, 384, 386, 440, 441, 442, 513, 557
Ark, meaning of word. 325, 391–96, 493
Arka, the....................... 395, 403

Arktos 579
Arthur, King 108, 539
Aryan 393, 477
Aryans 261, 268, 314, 322, 417, 418, 425, 426, 429, 459, 587
Ashmole, Elias 127
Ashtoreth 256
Asmodeus 7, 29, 331, 365, 440, 450, 461, 502, 503, 491–511, 553, 560
Assassins, Order of 65
Astarte 256, 270
Atargatis 256–59, 264
Athena 582
Atlantis 195, 198, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 241–54, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 269, 273, 276, 277, 276–80, 283, 284, 304, 305, 306, 307, 309, 310, 313, 318, 333, 377, 389, 393, 404, 406, 413, 430, 454, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 481, 493, 496, 508, 568
  and the Priory of Sion 195–98, 370–485, 496–508
Atlas 244–45
Au pilori 201
Azazel 295, 297, 298, 300, 321, 322, 323, 331, 399, 400
Baal 277, 307, 316, 317, 318, 320, 327, 331, 337, 346, 362, 382, 409, 416, 442, 447, 448, 449, 483
babble, origin of word 415
Babylon, and Babylonians 328, 416, 549
  origin of word 410
  religion of 507
Baldwin I, King 60–62, 89–91
Baldwin II, King 81
Baldwin IV, King 66
Bannockburn, Battle of 75
Baphomet 71, 73, 153, 177, 336, 337, 343, 359, 361, 362, 375, 452, 491, 503, 516, 538, 574, 588
Baring-Gould, Sabine 408, 581
Barrés, Maurice 164
bee, symbol of 50, 160, 588
Bennett, William 221
ber, meaning of word 409, 578
Bethel, temple of 433, 435, 436, 437, 438, 440, 441, 446, 449, 454, 463, 495
Bezu, France 82–84
Biblioteque Nationale 85–88, 206, 225
Bigoue, Abbe Antoine 27–30
Black Madonna, the 230, 472
Black Mass 359, 360, 361, 366, 368, 498
Black Sun 7, 79, 173, 370, 373, 374, 375, 373–76, 388, 463, 475, 512
Blancassal, Madeleine 85
Blanchefort Chateau 154, 195
Blanchefort, House of 30, 88
Blavatsky, H.P. 79, 381, 480
Blood of a Poet 174, 185
blue apples 499
Boat of Ra 385
Bonnie Prince Charlie 144, 142–46
Book of Abraham the Jew 99–103
Book of Enoch 380, 536
Book of Genesis 269, 274, 414
Boudet, Abbe Henri 32, 163, 170, 171, 445
Bourgoint, Jean 186
Boyle, Robert 96, 127, 135, 133–39, 467
Bran the Blessed 43

Breker, Arno 174, 184
Brittany 201
Brittany, France. 54, 129, 476–79
BS, significance of................ 512
Buckley, William F............... 221
Buechner, Howard 397–98
bull, symbol of................ 50, 173
C.I.R.C.U.I.T... 188, 195, 209–12
cabala 29, 81, 100, 107, 119, 143, 160, 198, 437, 585
Cain.................. 269–71, 274–75
Cain, biblical figure 267, 269, 270, 274, 275, 277, 278, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 300, 301, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 321, 322, 323, 324, 326, 327, 331, 334, 337, 344, 345, 358, 362, 366, 370, 371, 372, 373, 375, 377, 381, 382, 394, 395, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 410, 413, 414, 416, 417, 418, 419, 432, 438, 440, 447, 448, 449, 452, 459, 462, 464, 465, 473, 483, 484, 487, 489, 490, 491, 497, 500, 503, 506, 507, 509, 511, 515, 542, 543, 556, 574, 586, 588
Cain, or Qin....... 487, 506–7, 522
  and Bethel 416–37
  and Kronos 381
  and Mayan calendar 541
  and Osiris 379
  and the number 13 543
  consort of....................................... 404–8
  tomb of..................................... 492, 570
Calve, Emma................ 162, 163
Camisards, the............... 140, 144
Canaan.................................. 433
Capricorn............................... 524
Captain Way......................... 208
Caput 58 M 73, 94, 177, 538
Carcassonne 27, 58, 162
Cardou, Mount 391, 455
Casey, William...................... 221
Cathars 26, 32, 56–60, 67, 68, 135, 139, 140, 162, 163, 558–60
Catholic Modernist Movement 156–58
Cave of Treasures, the.. 286, 386, 387, 403, 405, 449, 454, 455, 512, 491–513, 567, 570–72
Cecrops 271
Celtic cross... 213, 324, 560, 562, 568, 586
center of the Earth, the ... 373–74, 388, 399, 403, 437–39, 485, 491–513
Cerrunnos............................. 326
Chapel of Saint Blaise... 179, 180
Chapel of Saint Peter .. 177, 179–80, 185–86, 574
Charlemagne 52
Charles I, King...................... 119
Charles II, King..................... 141
Charles VII, King............. 105–7
Charles, cardinal of Lorraine 115–16
Charles, duke of Guise.......... 119
Chartres cathedral ... 80, 382, 550
Chateau Barberie..... 128, 193–95
Chaumeil, Jean-Luc 197
chess, chequerboard 64
Cheth, Hebrew letter 520
Chichen Itza, Mexico 542
Childeric III, King............ 52–53
Childeric, King........ 50, 160, 491
Children of Saint Vincent 525, 528, 534, 571, 575
Christ
  and John the Baptist............. 72, 114, 574
  and Saint Peter.................................. 185

  - and twin brother Thomas.................. 114
  - children of....................... 34–35, 38, 381
  - crucifixion of.26, 34–36, 42, 59, 71, 103, 176–80, 398, 471, 512
  - marriage of26, 37, 55, 73, 108, 114, 176–79, 381, 392, 472–75
  - tomb of......29, 34–37, 163, 391–92, 455, 470–75
- Christian Unions 127
- Christianity............................ 334
  - ancient roots of.............. 227–32, 335–61
  - occult roots of.............................. 577–89
- Churchill, Winston................ 213
- Chyren.................................. 210
- CIA... 204, 213–16, 222, 221–23, 465, 522
- Cistercians........... 62, 80, 82, 476
- Clovis, King............ 51, 488, 581
- cock, symbol of....... 184–85, 517
- Cocteau, Jean ... 96, 191–94, 199, 206, 213, 217, 222, 467, 516, 544, 558, 569–74
  - life of... 188
  - Priory statutes of 524–30
- Colby, William...................... 221
- Columbus, Christopher ... 76, 107
- Committees of Public Safety 204–8, 210
- Compagnie du Saint-Sacrement 120–24, 470
  - and Nicolas Fouquet.................... 129–30
- Con Tiki 267
- Constantine 562, 581
- Corbu, Neil............................. 33
- Cornelius...................... 216, 217
- Council of Troyes 62
- *Cronic Sea*............................ 390
- Cross of Lorraine 78, 105–7, 116, 205, 262, 362
- Crowley, Aleister...... 44, 45, 557
- Crusades................ 39, 56, 57, 63
- cube, symbol of............ 376, 558
- Cup of Helios 385, 545
- Cutting of the Elm, the..... 92, 93, 91–94, 95, 153, 180, 194, 322, 343, 573
- Cuzco, city of........................ 266
- d'Anjou, Iolande 106
- d'Anjou, Rene........... 96, 99, 467
  - life of.. 104–11
- d'Evreux, Blanche................... 96
- da Vinci, Leonardo... 96, 112–15, 174, 190, 458, 467
- Dagobert II, King . 27, 28, 51, 53, 54, 55, 51–55, 90, 121, 128, 182, 191, 193, 195, 191–95, 233, 313, 450, 452, 487, 488, 491, 487–91, 498, 501, 502, 524, 541, 567, 578, 579
- Dagon..... 232–35, 249, 254, 256, 265, 266, 339, 487, 588
- Dalai Lama...................... 480–82
- Dali, Salvador 173, 174
- Danielou, Cardinal Jean........ 217
- David, house of..................... 353
- David, House of............... 36, 39
- David, King of Judah . 34, 39, 90, 138, 166, 185, 228, 231, 377, 382, 470
- de Bar, Catherine 133
- de Bar, Edouard 95
- de Bar, Iolande 96, 111
- de Bar, Jeanne 95
- de Blanchefort, Bertrand.. 61, 67, 82–83, 95
- de Blanchefort, Ida.................. 68
- de Blanchefort, Marie .. 103, 570, 575
  - tomb of............ 30, 32, 491–93, 558, 568
- de Bouillon, Godfroi . 60–61, 88–91, 105, 118, 467
- de Bourbon, Connetable. 96, 115, 190
- de Bourgogne, Robert............ 95
- de Cherisey, Philippe 194, 517

de Duillier, Nicolas Fatio137–40, 144
de Fleury, Paul-Urbain.......... 570
de Gama, Vasco 75
de Gaulle, Charles173, 189, 201–10
de Gisors, Guillaume 94–95
de Gisors, Iodine 133
de Gisors, Jean 93, 95
de Glaise, Theodore 95
de Gonzague, Ferdinand . 96, 115
de Gonzague, Louis 116
de Lorraine, Charles.... 96, 104–8
de Lorraine, Maximilien 96, 149, 160
de Medici, Catherine............. 116
de Medici, Cosimo 109
de Medici, Cosimo III 135
de Molay, Jacques69, 76, 77, 218
de Montbard, Andre .. 61–62, 81–82, 89
de Nevers, Louis 96, 115, 118, 119
de Payen, Hughes. 60–61, 80, 89, 95
de Ridefort, Gerard 66, 91, 95
de Saint Arnand, Francois Othon 95
de Saint-Clair, Jean 95
de Saint-Clair, Marie....... 95, 128
de Sede, Gerard 85, 90, 116, 118, 195
de Toscan, Mathilde................ 90
de Tremblay, Bernard 95
de Tyre, Guillame 61, 91
de Valois, Katherine............. 106
de Vere, Nicholas... 231, 548–52, 555
Death's Head . 50, 70–74, 78, 93–94, 132, 177, 373, 491, 495, 538, 581, 587
Debussy, Claude 31, 96, 171, 174, 467
  life of 161–64
December 23, significance of 52–56, 252, 339, 489, 513
Dee, John................. 118–19, 443
Deneraud, Marie 32–33, 171
Dermit, Edouard.................... 516
Desaguliers, Jean........... 137, 143
Deucalion . 125, 240–41, 257–59, 378, 385, 240–41
Devil.... *See* Lucifer, Satan, or the Devil
Diana, goddess 489, 548, 554
Dionysus 581, 587, 588
Diosairi.................................. 385
Divine Couple, the 392
Djinn 300, 322, 332, 400, 401, 474
DNA 555
Doinel, Jules................. 162, 163
Dolorous Stroke, the 389, 490, 491
Dome of the Rock 41, 440
Donnelly, Ignatius 247, 248, 256, 261–63, 264–65, 378, 477
Donovan, William........... 213–14
d'Orleans, Gaston 120–24
Drick, John 516
Druids... 169, 359, 476, 515, 578, 584
du Moulin, Pierre 133–36
Ducaud-Bourget, Abbe Francois 191–94, 201, 222
Dulles, Allen 204, 214
Dury, John............................. 135
Eden 249, 263, 270, 276, 277, 279, 280, 283, 305, 306, 307, 308, 331, 358, 382, 386, 389, 448, 449, 454, 492, 499, 513

Eden, Garden of 25, 141, 389, 491–500
Edom, fallen kingdom of 331, 448, 449
Edward IV, King 74
Elixir of Life ... 41, 373, 523, 588
Elohim 303
Emboden, William . 174–78, 184, 187
Emerald Tablet of Hermes 41, 371–74, 384, 385, 387, 391, 414, 557
Energie 202
Enki 236, 237, 236–38, 254, 267, 281, 282, 283, 304, 309, 324, 360, 379
Enlil 236–37, 238, 240, 276, 277, 281, 282, 283, 305, 320, 425
Enoch, biblical figure 42, 267, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 270–75, 276, 277, 278, 284, 286, 287, 289, 290, 292, 293, 294, 296, 297, 299, 300, 301, 309, 310, 311, 314, 315, 324, 325, 334, 365, 371, 372, 373, 377, 381, 387, 399, 401, 402, 405, 406, 413, 414, 417, 418, 419, 424, 425, 426, 441, 442, 444, 447, 460, 461, 462, 474, 484, 523, 536, 541, 545, 547, 556, 561, 570, 573
  and the Watchers 380
Erech, city of . 269, 270, 271, 325
Erichthonius 272
Essenes 536
Este, House of 113
Et in Arcadia Ego29, 31, 131–33, 154, 391, 392, 393, 394, 391–95, 452, 491, 563, 568
Eve, biblical figure . 25, 141, 280, 500
Evola, Julius . 379, 389, 409, 410, 436
Eye of Horus 326, 422, 423, 490, 556
Fall of Man 389, 499
Fénelon 144
Fibonacci sequence 426–30
Filipepi, Sandro 96, 112–13
fish, symbol of 179, 487, 541, 550
  and ancient deities 538
  and the Priory of Sion .. 515, 584, 588–89
Fisher King39, 44, 381, 389, 488, 490–91
Flamel, Nicolas 96, 120, 136, 139, 136–39, 152, 376, 467, 575
  life of 99–104
Flood, the 138, 211, 266–98, 370, 403–9, 403–9, 547, 564, 573
flowery tomb, the 570
Fludd, Robert 96, 118–20, 467
Fouquet, Charles 122
Fouquet, Louis 36
  trial of 128–30
Fouquet, Nicolas 36, 190
  life of 128–31
Francois, duke of Lorraine 148
Frederick the Great 148
Frederick, Palatinate of the Rhine 104, 125–27, 133, 134, 144
Freemasonry ... 25, 31, 54, 77–78, 85, 127, 132, 135, 137–39, 142–48, 152, 158, 166–68, 180, 191, 200, 215, 326, 375–76, 378, 385, 413, 416, 440, 468, 540, 552, 559
French Resistance .. 105, 189–91, 197–205, 212, 470
Freya 538
Friday the 13th 69, 537–38
Fronde, the 120–24, 131

Fulcherine, Janfenders 95
Gelli, Licio 215–17, 221
Gentleman's Club of Spalding
.... 138, 144, 147
Ginzberg, Louis..................... 438
Gisors, France 92–93, 130–31, 153, 195
Gisors, House of...... 88, 128, 130
Giza, Great Pyramid of .. 65, 327, 406, 413, 410–14
Glastonbury, England 42
Gnosticism . 56, 65, 78, 109, 139, 160, 162, 169, 323, 335, 336, 343, 358, 359, 396, 424, 425
goat, symbol of....................... 72
Golden Age, the ... 125, 132, 173, 247, 390, 491, 492, 493, 522, 559
Golden Dawn, Hermetic Order of
.... 162, 388
Golden Fleece, the 139, 164
golden mean, or golden ratio, or phi, or Fibonacci spiral 78, 493, 569
Golgotha............................... 512
Gonzague, House of........ 112–16
Gospel of Thomas, The 370
Gothic architecture..... 30, 65, 78, 159
Grand Loge Alpina 85
Grand Monarch, concept of . 117, 189, 522
Grand Prieuré de Suisse........ 218
Great Bear, the 578, 579
Great Seal of the United States
.... 327, 422, 540
Green Ray 374
Grimoald, Palace Mayor 52
Guenon, Rene............... 397, 436
Guercino, Giovanni Francesco29, 131–32, 491
Guise, House of115–20, 124, 136
Haig, Alexander 221
Hapsburg, House of 88
Hartlib, Samuel 134
Henry II, King......................... 92
Henry the Navigator, Prince ... 75
Henry V, King...................... 105
Hercules 385
  tomb of 408–9, 561
Herion, Father Charles .. 175, 176
Hermes . 8, 41, 42, 273, 294, 324, 335, 371, 378, 384, 387, 390, 414, 426, 432, 442, 454, 462, 474, 523, 536, 556, 561, 570, 573, 580, 587
Hermeticism . 109, 119, 125, 126, 132, 143, 152, 160, 162, 163, 168, 169, 173, 180, 198, 335, 366, 388, 426, 523, 538
  and Emerald Tablet 371–74, 374, 381–89
  and Rene d'Anjou....................... 109–10
  and the Hermetic fountain 523
  and the Palatinate of the Rhine 125–27
  and the sacred tomb 390–96
Herod, King.......................... 348
Hidden One, the 390, 394
Hieron du Val d'Or176, 470, 479, 514, 568, 577–89
Hisler, Anne Léa 195, 206
Hitler, Adolf..................... 202–3
Hoffet, Emile...... 28, 31, 35, 123, 162, 170, 195
Hollow Earth, the . 374, 375, 388, 396
Holy Blood, Holy Grail .. 24–187, 180–84, 188–226, 228, 231, 394, 468–72, 488, 524–27
Holy Grail
  and Cathars.. 57
  and Freemasons 77
  and sex magic 44–46, 550
  and Templars 61, 81
  and the Ark of the Covenant.......... 46–48
  as bloodline 34–35, 48–51, 184

  as cup 42–43, 382–85, 405, 562
  as mystical experience 43–44
  as stone 40–42, 141, 370–79, 376–82, 436, 496, 547
  cult of 55–56
  Luciferian elements of 522–23
  romances 39–40, 81, 488–91
Holy Roman Empire 51, 125, 126, 169, 182, 189, 521
Horn of Plenty 43
Horse of God 496, 564
Horus 379, 490
Hugo, Jean 174
Hugo, Valentine 174
Hugo, Victor 96, 154, 157–64, 167, 467
I Ching 555
I Tego Arcana Dei 395
Ianua Coeli 410
Ichthys 515, 584
Inca 267
inner, or hidden, sun 388, 512, 568, 570
Inquisition, the 57, 68, 70, 127, 148, 153, 157, 431
Invisible College 127, 134–35
Isaac, biblical figure 433, 445
Isaac, biblical figure of 268
Ishtar 256, 270
Isis 73, 231, 259, 260, 270, 379, 430, 472, 493, 537–38, 545, 554, 558, 560, 562, 560–64
Jacob, biblical figure 446–47
  ladder of 421–40
Jacob, biblical figure of 268
Jacobites 142–47, 152
James I, King 119, 126
James II, King 75, 141
James III, King 142
James, brother of Jesus 100
January 17, significance of 32, 87, 100–103, 149, 527, 571–76
Japheth, biblical figure 270
Jared 275
Jason and the Argonauts 385
Jean 23, significance of 180–85
Jean the Birdman 184
Jeanne d'Arc 106–7
Jehovah 46, 47, 56, 238, 240, 268, 276, 277, 281, 282, 283, 284, 296, 297, 298, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 313, 314, 316, 320, 326, 327, 329, 330, 335, 343, 344, 345, 346, 350, 352, 353, 358, 366, 370, 382–86, 401, 414, 416, 425, 433, 438, 439, 441, 442, 447, 448, 449, 462, 483, 500
Jerusalem 41, 88, 90, 111, 155, 509
  and Order of Sion 88–92
  and the Knights Templar 219–20, 60–68, 88–92
  geometry of 483
  throne of 34, 88–91, 104
Jesuits 213
Johannites 72, 114
John the Baptist 72, 114, 180, 184, 185, 336, 337, 346, 348, 491, 574
Jolly Roger 538
Joly, Maurice 167, 168
Josef, Franz 31
Joseph of Arimathea 39, 42, 451
Judah, biblical figure 445
Judah, biblical figure of 268
Judas Iscariot 354–58
Julian calendar 532
Kabba stone 440
Kad, or Gad, or Cat, title of 393, 395
Knight's Flagstone 30, 486
Knight's Tour 553
Knights Hospitaller 74–75, 219
Knights of Christ 75

Knights of Malta 74, 191, 218–23
Knights Templar .. 26, 30, 39, 47, 105, 117, 123–25, 132, 140, 153, 157, 163, 177, 218–20, 398, 452, 464, 516, 553, 583
  and Baron von Hund 145–47
  and the Priory of Sion.................... 88–94
  history of 60–84
Koran, The 41
Kreisau Circle 202, 203
Krishna.................................. 230
Kronos.... 238, 250–54, 281, 390, 389–94
Kukulkan....................... 267, 542
l'Ermite, Antoine 85
La Fontaine 124
La Rochefoucald................... 124
La Tipia......................... 217, 223
labyrinths......... 552, 548–52, 581
language of light 417–26
LaVey, Anton.......................... 72
Lazarus................................. 510
Le Cercle....... 191, 514, 517, 519
Le Coeur, Paul 195, 479, 568
Le Comte de Moncharville . 476–85
Le Cour, Paul 227, 479
le Fur, Louis.................. 200–202
Le Serpent Rouge ... 87, 398, 408, 423, 456, 494, 514, 524
Lefebvre, Monsignor Marcel 191–93
Lemuria................................ 478
Levi, Eliphas ... 72, 153, 160, 337
Lhasa, Tibet.................. 480, 485
Lincoln, Henry ... 26, 32, 36, 107, 187, 391, 468, 469, 495, 506
Lippi, Filippo 112
Lobineau, Henri 86, 514, 578
Locke, John 135–39
Lohengrin............................. 363
Longueville, House of... 121, 130
Lorraine, France. 75, 105–6, 111, 118, 164
Lorraine, House of 88–90, 104–8, 115–20, 134, 142–44, 147–49, 159–60, 170
Lost Word, the 378, 416, 440
Louis II, King.................... 54, 63
Louis IX, King 59, 105
Louis VII, King....................... 91
Louis XIII, King.. 101–4, 120–22
Louis XIV, King 37, 120–24, 128, 129, 137, 160, 468
Louis XVI, King 77
Louis, Cardinal of Bar........... 105
Lucifer, Satan, or the Devil.... 25, 375
  and Baphomet........................ 71–72, 153
  and Kronos, or Saturn................. 390–94
  and Melusine 550
  and Satanicum 490
  and the Grail .24, 29, 40–42, 372, 518–19
Luciferianism 227
Luther, Martin 76
M, significance of 73, 93
Madathanus, Hendricus......... 511
Mafia, the 217
Magdalene, Mary . 27, 34, 35, 55, 73, 85, 87, 108, 109, 114, 135, 136, 176, 177, 178, 179, 185, 190, 229, 230, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 355, 381, 392, 407, 430, 431, 451, 453, 471, 472, 473, 486, 510, 554, 562, 564, 586
Magna Carta............................ 63
Malraux, Andre 206, 212
Man in the Iron Mask, the..... 130
Manco Capac 266, 267
Mandeans 336
Mantegna........................ 112–13
Manu 255–56
Marazion, England............... 484

Maria Theresa of Austria 144
Maritain, Jacques 175
Martel, Charles........................ 52
Martinism.............................. 397
Mary, mother of Christ .. 178–79, 270, 560
Mary, Mother of Christ......... 228
Mary, Queen of Scots 117
Mathuselah............................ 275
Mazarin, Cardinal .. 120–23, 128, 468
McCone, John 221
Medici, House of.... 112–13, 133, 148
Melchizedek.................... 42, 382
Melusine................ 407, 431, 550
Mercury................. 273, 324, 536
Meroveus, King......... 48–51, 232
Merovingians . 26–30, 35–36, 61, 81–91, 97, 111–20, 130–34, 160, 182, 189–91, 196, 227, 232, 351, 362–65, 449, 464, 470, 489, 588
  history of................................ 48–54, 88
Messianic Legacy, The. 197, 209, 217, 224
Michelet, Jules 157
midday, significance of.. 28, 490, 565
Minerva......................... 552, 582
Minotaur, the 318, 319, 320, 549, 551
Miriam, biblical figure.......... 384
Mithras . 230, 318, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 346, 358, 509, 520
Moloch .. 307, 317, 320, 331, 483
Monsalvat................................ 48
Mont. St. Michel 484
Montsalvat....................... 396–97
Montsegur 47, 58, 163, 396, 397, 399, 405, 464, 488, 545
Moon, the 530–33
Moray, Robert....................... 127
Morning Star, the .. 359, 371, 458
Moses, biblical figure..... 46, 138, 328, 344, 384
Muhammad 41
Mussolini, Benito................. 192
Napoleon Bonaparte 50, 152, 159, 160, 220
  and Charles Nodier...................... 154–56
Napoleon II 167
Navigator, title of............ 95, 181
Nazis 79, 166, 198–203, 375–76, 383, 396–98, 522
Nephilim 291, 315, 329, 331, 362
New Constantine, title of 51, 182, 489
New Jerusalem, or New Zion, concept of............................ 67
New World Order, the... 166, 541
Newton, Isaac... 96, 135–44, 160, 467
Nimrod 270
Noach Yum Chac.................. 267
Noah 42, 138, 240, 267, 270, 272, 273, 276, 296, 299, 300, 309, 313, 372, 373, 381, 384, 386, 387, 402, 403, 413, 415, 438, 455, 457, 521, 545, 557
Noah, biblical figure 372
Noailles family...................... 174
Nodier, Charles . 96, 151–60, 467
Nostradamus .. 107, 116–18, 136, 170
Notre Dame de France ... 177–79, 187, 552, 558, 574
Novus Ordo Secorlum........... 540

Oannes.... 234, 235, 234–36, 236, 238, 249, 254, 270, 304, 325, 377, 379
octopus, symbol of479, 493, 496, 515, 568–69, 584
Odin.................................... 260
Olier, Jean-Jacques 122, 569
Ophiuchus 524
Ordo Templi Orientis............. 45
Orleans, France 91, 106
Ormus................. 7, 93, 168, 343
Orpheus......... 164, 181, 582, 588
Orval, France.......... 90, 118, 168
Osiris 125, 259–60, 379, 385–90, 512
OSS 204, 213–14
Ouranos 238, 249, 253, 304, 325, 379
Pan................................ 213, 326
Pan Europa 213
Panis ΛΩ Sal......................... 509
Papus 162–68
Paracelsus............................. 388
Paradise 109
Paris Meridian....................... 559
Parnassus, Mount 240
  and the Pyrenees........................ 409, 456
Parzival 24, 40–44, 397, 488
Peaux-Bouges 580
Peladan, Josephin........... 163–64
Pelat, Patrice 517
Pelle et Melisande......... 162, 174
pentagram 72, 113, 173, 187, 540
  and Rennes-le-Chateau.. 36, 458–59, 468
  Sumerian origins of.................... 393–96
Pepin the Fat 52
Perrault, Charles.................... 577
Peter the Hermit 90
Philadelphes 144, 154
Philippe II, King..................... 92
Philippe le Bel 68–70, 74–77, 94, 146, 468, 537
Philippe, Louis 160
Philosopher's Stone ... 41, 45, 99, 100, 101, 103, 373, 376, 377, 418, 437, 462, 556
Picasso, Pablo 171–73, 176
Picknett, Lynn, and Prince, Clive 114, 180
Pidaye, Guillame.................... 94
Pike, Albert .. 233, 273, 385, 435, 548, 557
Pisces.................................... 541
Pitois, Jean Baptiste 153, 156
Plantagenet rose 551
Plantagenet, House of 54
Plantagenets 365
Plantard family... 53–54, 88, 128, 133
Plantard, Pierre85, 189, 375, 455, 469, 476, 524
  life of.. 193–225
Plato 109, 241–47, 413
playing cards 537
Polaires................................. 397
Pope Benedict XI 68
Pope Boniface VIII 68
Pope Clement V 68, 76
Pope Gregory XIII 532
Pope Innocent II...................... 63
Pope Innocent III.................... 57
Pope John Paul II 214
Pope John XXIII 180–86, 468
Pope Paul VI 192, 214
Pope, Alexander.................... 138
Poseidon. 243–45, 245, 249, 253, 271, 273, 279, 319, 496
Poussin, Nicolas... 28–29, 36, 37, 122, 128–31, 150, 154, 164, 263, 391, 494, 563
Powell, Colin........................ 221
Prima Materia....................... 373

Priory of Sion. 32, 176, 179, 227, 334, 343, 393, 423, 464, 467–72, 493–94, 501, 514, 531, 534, 544, 548
  and "Priory Documents" 513–15
  and Atlantis 370–485
  and Sionic Calendar 534–35
  and the "Priory Documents" 513–15
  and the Green Ray 374–75
  future of....................................... 521–23
  history from 1090-1307................. 88–94
  history from 1956-1984............ 188–226
Pro Deo 213
Prometheus...... 230, 239–40, 399
Propaganda Due 215–21
Prophecies of Malachi 181
Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion 165–70, 190
Proust, Marcel 162, 172
Pyr, meaning of word...... 404–10
Pyrene 408
Pyrrha 241, 399, 404–9, 456, 586
Pythagoras.................... 109, 138
Quetzlcoatl 267
Quinotaur 232, 233
Quinotaur, the ... 49, 55, 232, 366
Radclyffe, Charles..... 96, 141–50
Radclyffe, James 142, 149
Radiguet, Raymond.............. 184
Rahn, Otto 383, 396–98
Ramsay, Chevalier Andrew 143–45
Rapunzel 548, 549, 552
Reddis Regis Cellis Arcis 492
Rennes-le-Bains 27, 154, 163, 171, 570
Rennes-le-Chateau ... 83, 87, 117, 135, 154, 163, 170, 195, 355–58, 383, 391–97, 449–66, 467, 486, 488, 491–95, 509, 491–511, 517–21, 552, 554, 560
  history of....................................... 26–35
Rephaim 328
Revelation of Saint John 45, 564, 572
Revelation of St. John ... 358, 461
Rex Mundi 32, 56, 331, 506, 522
Rey, Baron Emmanuel.......... 157
Rhea 378
Rhedae..................... 54, 488, 492
Richelieu, Cardinal .. 102, 101–4, 120, 131, 152
Richter, Hans......................... 558
Rock of Zion, the ... 90, 185, 186, 377
rose, symbol of 177, 551, 567–70
rose-cross, symbol of..... 93, 176, 177, 527, 586
Roseline, the........... 463, 566–68
Rosemary 177
Rosenkreutz, Christian. 124, 125, 124–25, 388, 390, 399, 408, 454, 462, 463
  tomb of 391, 397, 399
Rosicrucians..... 79, 94, 104, 119, 124–27, 132–35, 139, 143, 160–67, 181, 195, 388, 397, 470
Royal Society, the .. 134–38, 143, 144
S. Roux................................. 191
sacred geometry 36, 78, 112, 139, 169
  and Rennes-le-Chateau 469
Sacred Heart. 169, 175, 176, 515, 568, 579, 586, 582–88
Saint Anthony the Hermit....... 85
Saint Bernard of Clairvaux 62
Saint Michael line 483
Saint Michael's Mount.......... 483
Saint Peter 185–86
Saint Sulpice, Paris .. 28, 87, 102, 122–23, 144, 158–62, 191, 501, 567, 569, 576
Saint Vincent de Paul........... 122

Saint-Clair, House of 88, 128
salem, origin of word 435–39
Salon de la Rose + Croix 164
Samael..................... 281–83, 360
Samothracian mysteries 385
Sargon the Great 262
Satan....*See* Lucifer, Satan, or the Devil
Satan, Lucifer, or the Devil.... 72, 186, 268, 280, 281, 282, 283, 288, 289, 302, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 313, 315, 316, 317, 318, 324, 326, 327, 330, 331, 332, 334, 335, 343, 344, 345, 348, 358, 360, 361, 362, 363, 365, 366, 368, 371, 372, 376, 378, 379, 380, 381, 394, 404, 414, 424, 440, 447, 448, 449, 452, 455, 457, 459, 461, 462, 464, 465, 474, 483, 489, 490, 495, 497, 500, 503, 506, 511, 515, 518, 522, 539, 542, 543, 547, 556, 588
Satanicum.............................. 365
Satanism................ 227, 336, 458
Saturn .. 238, 250, 251, 252, 250–54, 281, 283, 304, 306, 326, 342, 376, 381, 390, 447, 490, 547, *See* Kronos
Saturnalia 252, 339, 490
Saul, King 349
Sauniere parchments .. 27–34, 53, 102, 123, 162, 170, 193, 222, 469, 486, 549, 553, 570
Sauniere, Berenger35–38, 102–3, 140, 161–64, 193, 195, 355–58, 467, 486, 515, 575
  bookplate of.............................. 491–513
  life of... 27–33
Secret Dossiers. 86–98, 147, 484, 514–15, 524–27, 577–89
serpent, or dragon, symbol of 233, 328, 487, 546, 574–75
  and the Green Ray 375
  and the Sanctuary of the Dragon . 481–85
Set 260, 313, 490
Seth, biblical figure...... 274, 275, 278, 284, 285, 286, 288, 289, 290, 301, 313, 314, 315, 316, 321, 322, 326, 337, 344, 358, 375, 377, 387, 403, 413, 414, 423, 440, 452, 487, 574, 588
sex magic .. 44–46, 409, 472, 549
Sforza, Francesco.................. 113
Shem 415, 438
shepherd, symbol and title of131, 181, 190
Shepherd's Monument, the ... 151
Shepherds of Arcadia. 28, 35–37, 130–32, 150–54, 263, 391–95, 457, 495, 563
Shroud of Turin..................... 115
Shugborough Hall 149–51
Sigisbert IV 26, 53
Sign of Horror 569–72
Signol, Emile......................... 566
Sinclair, Lord James.............. 163
Sindona, Michael .. 215, 216, 217
Sionic Calendar519, 534–35, 542
  and playing cards.............................. 537
Sleeping Beauty 408, 548–52, 555, 561, 572, 577
Smith, Paul.................... 476, 516
Solomon
  Seal of....................................... 511, 572
  temple of..................................... 570–71
  Temple of 30, 47, 60–62, 77–81, 132, 139, 197, 438, 557–58, 565
Solomon, King 320, 361
Solomon, Seal of................... 436
Solomon, Temple of 439–42, 450
Solomon's Temple 273
Southern Cross 478

Sovereign and Military Order of the Temple of Jerusalem . 218–19
spider, symbol of....... 31, 551–52
square and compass............... 559
Stations of the Cross 29, 559
Steiner, Rudolf........................ 79
Stenay................ 55, 90, 121, 490
Stone of Destiny.................... 447
Stravinsky, Igor............. 172, 176
Strict Observance.................. 146
Substitute, concept of...... 378–79
Sumerians262, 268, 382, 393–95, 409, 415
Sun, symbol of234, 266–67, 383, 385–88, 476, 513–15, 520, 545, 562, 568, 570
  and alchemy 41, 101
  and Berenger Sauniere's bookplate.... 512
  and chess 553–54
  and Christianity 231, 580–83
  and the octopus symbol 568
  and the Sauniere parchments...... 493–94, 496–508
sun-cross 562
Tammuz 230
tarot 72, 113, 537
Temple Rond......................... 519
Teniers, David... 28–29, 494, 495
Teutonic Order.. 75–76, 149, 219
Theseus 549–52
Thomas the Twin 354–58
Thoth.... 273, 274, 324, 371, 423, 556
Timagenes............................. 477
Titans....... 238–39, 378, 582, 588
tomb of God, the 391, 392
Tour Magdala.................... 30, 33
Tower of Babel 270, 314, 315, 317, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 425, 426, 429, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 409–35, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 449, 452, 453, 454, 495, 546, 549, 565, 585, 586
Tree of Knowledge, or Tree of Life, or World-Tree.... 25, 141, 358, 500
Typhon 378
Underground Stream, the..... 110, 113, 131, 132, 334, 391, 393, 480, 523, 588
underworld, the 394, 485, 490
United States of Europe 182, 189–90, 202, 212–14, 224, 521, 541
Ur, city of...................... 261, 393
Uranus.................. 238, 325, 379
Urim and Thummin....... 443, 444
Ursus, Prince 54, 90
V.I.T.R.I.O.L, alchemical motto 373
Vaincre.. 197–204, 209–10, 476–85, 516–21, 541
Valéry, Paul.................. 162, 213
Valois, House of............. 115–16
Venus 36, 73, 112, 125, 176, 231, 379, 385, 401, 407, 408, 431, 458, 472, 473, 512, 538, 545, 548, 549, 548–50, 558, 560, 562, 564, 568, 576, 586
Venusberg, the 407, 408, 561
Verlaine, Paul....................... 161
Verrocchio...................... 112–13
Vichy government. 200, 201, 205
Villa Bethania 30, 33
vine, wine, grape, symbolism of 211, 499, 581
Viracocha 266
Virgo 73, 93, 551, 560
  symbolism of.............................. 562–63
Vishnu 255
von Eschenbach, Wolfram..... 24, 38–44, 376, 397

von Hapsburg, Otto 213
von Hund, Karl Gottlieb 145, 146, 147
von Moltke, Count Helmut James 202–3, 214
von Moltke, Hans Adolf .. 202–3, 214
Votan 267
Vulcan 400–401
Waddell, L.A... 262, 268–71, 382
Wagner, Richard 42, 173
Waite, Arthur Edward 72
War in Heaven, the 41, 292, 317, 372
Watchers, Nephilim, Fallen Angels, or Giants
  and Agartha 467–75
  and the Stone from Heaven ... 41, 370–79
Watchers, the 292, 298, 300, 301, 303, 371, 372, 376, 380, 421, 424, 434, 447, 460, 576
Whore of Babalon 45
Wilkin, John 134
Woden 260
Woevres, forest of 52, 489
World Anti-Communist League 222
World-Mountain . 403, 431, 491–513, 554
Yallop, David 215
Yates, Francis 126
Yezidis 400
Yom Kippur .. 321, 352, 354, 510
Zapelli, Anton 218, 219
Zeus...... 239, 240, 242, 246, 249, 253, 257, 258, 276, 277, 281, 282, 283, 284, 306, 318, 379, 390
ziggurats. 405, 406, 411, 409–15, 549, 554
  and Jacob's Ladder 435–40
Zodiac, the87, 209–10, 524, 528–30, 531, 544, 545, 546, 583

THE MEDUSA FILE II

THE POLITICS OF TERROR AND THE OKLAHOMA CITY BOMBING
(LARGE PRINT EDITION)

CRAIG ROBERTS

The Medusa File II

The Politics of Terror and the Oklahoma City Bombing

Craig Roberts

An Original Publication of Consolidated Press International

Copyright © by Craig Roberts

Cover art copyright © by Craig Roberts

All rights reserved, including the right to reproduce this book or portions thereof in any form whatever except for the purposes of review, research in limited quantity, quotes limited to one page or less, and portions originally derived from official U.S. government (public domain) sources.

ISBN-13: 978-1547084555
ISBN-10: 1547084553

First Consolidated Press printing: May 2017

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2

Consolidated Press International (CPI)

Printed in U.S.A.

Books by Craig Roberts

Police Sniper (Pocket Books, 1993)

Combat Medic—Vietnam (Pocket Books, 1991)

Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza (CPI, 1994)

The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government (CPI, 1997)

The Walking Dead; A Marine's Story of Vietnam (Pocket Books, 1989 and Grafton Books, London, 1989) (With Charles W. Sasser)

One Shot—One Kill; America's Combat Snipers (Pocket Books, 1990)

(With Charles W. Sasser)

Crosshairs on the Kill Zone (Pocket Books, 2007)

(With Charles W. Sasser)

Hellhound (Avon, 1994)

(With Allen Appel III and Allen Appel IV)

JFK: The Dead Witnesses (CPI, 1995)

(With John Armstrong)

The New Face of War Series, Time-Life books, (contributing author)

The Dragunov Solution (CPI, 2012)

The Hind Heist (CPI, 2012)

Medusa

In Greek mythology Medusa was a monster, a Gorgon, generally described as a winged human female with living venomous snakes in place of hair. Gazers upon her hideous face would turn to stone. The titles of this book, and its predecessor, *The Medusa File—Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government*, are taken from the story of Medusa. The head of Medusa in this context is a government that has many branches—the snakes—many of which are dangerous to the citizens of America, or are corrupt beyond the point of usefulness. Our "snakes" have not only covered up crimes, deceived the people, and participated in all kinds of evil enterprises, but have resisted numerous attempts of honest people to expose them and their activities. This book brings to light such events that were involved in the Oklahoma City bombing of the Alfred Murrah Building on April 19th, 1995, and expose those who would use fear and terror to accomplish their venomous agendas.

The sword that destroys Medusa in this case has a name: Truth!

This book is dedicated to the 168 Americans who perished in the Alfred P. Murray Federal Building in Oklahoma City on April 19th, 1995, and more than 650 who were injured.

Contents

Acknowledgements

Introduction

Foreword

Chapter 1 Day One 9:02 a.m., April 19th, 1995, Oklahoma City

Chapter 2 Day One—It Becomes Personal

Chapter 3 The Assignment—Why Me?

Chapter 4 Things Don’t Add Up

Chapter 5 Never Let A Tragedy Go To Waste 34

Chapter 6 Blaming the “Militia” and the Right Wing

Chapter 7 Elohim City and White Separatists

Chapter 8 Lee Harvey McVeigh: the Comparison of Tim McVeigh and Lee Harvey Oswald

Chapter 9 Square Pegs in Round Holes: Facts, Lies, and Damage Control

Chapter 10 The Baker Street Irregulars

Chapter 11 The Middle Eastern Connection

Chapter 12 Terry Nichols and the Philippines Connection

Chapter 13 Colombian Drugs, Mexican Bag Men and Mena

Chapter 14 Midwest Bank Robbers—Connection Or Diversion?

Chapter 15 Death in Federal Custody—The Trentadue Case and OKBOMB

Chapter 16 The Strange Death of Sgt. Terry Yeakey, OCPD

Chapter 17 Federal Denial—“Never let the facts stand in the way of a good story—or “good” investigation.

Chapter 18 *Sed quit custodian apses custodies?* (“Who watches the watchers?”)

Chapter 19 The Federal Bureau of Intimidation and the Witnesses

Chapter 20 More Dead Witnesses—The Body Count Grows

Chapter 21 Hoffman Indicted and Sued

Chapter 22 Rabbit Trails and Mind Control—Was McVeigh a Manchurian Candidate?

Chapter 23 Odds, Ends, and Dead Ends

Chapter 24 The Uphill Battle

Chapter 25 Never Let the Truth Stand In The Way

Chapter 26 It All Comes Together

Chapter 27 Where Do We Go From Here?

Epilogue Time To Retire—My Oklahoma City Police Report

List of Victims

Bibliography

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

There were many good patriotic Americans who knew that what the controlled media was putting out concerning the Oklahoma City Bombing was not true. The story generated by the government and media changed on an almost daily basis. At first the bombing was blamed on a station wagon bomb, then because that was not powerful enough, a bomb in a pickup truck, and when bomb experts said that wouldn’t work, they increased it to a moving van filled with explosives.

On Day One, there were several witnesses who saw two men get out of the Ryder truck. Then, according to the media, it was just one. Even though witnesses described a John Doe 1 and a John Doe 2, and sketches were made of each, a few weeks later there was no John Doe 2 and McVeigh had delivered the truck all by himself.

There were, and still are, many of the good people who got on-board the investigation and formed loose relationships, often sharing information. All were only interested in two things: the Truth, and apprehending everyone who was involved.

Both goals have been elusive, but America needs to know what really happened on that fateful April day.

Those who went to the edge and beyond, Truth Warriors all:

David Hoffman (d)
Don Browning OKCPD, Ret.
Jimmy Rothstein, NYPD Ret.
Hoppy Heidelberg (d)
Avi Lipkin
Dale Phillips
LtCol Roger Charles
Glenn Wilburn (d)
Mike Spencer
Tom Risienger
Lisa Guliani
Pat Shannon
Rep. Charles Key
William Jasper
Gene Wheaton (d)
Gen. Ben Partin
Michael Johnston, esq
Ted Gunderson (d)
Stephen Jones, esq
Kathy Wilburn
Col. Larre Draper
V.Z. Lawton (d)
Victor Thorn (d)
Harmon Taylor, Esq.
LtCol George Wallace
Pat Briley
Jayna Davis
Jane Graham
Bob Bickel
J.D. Cash (d)
Ramona MacDonald
Tonia Yeakey
Alex Magnus (d)
Chris Emery
Jesse Trentadue, esq
Dave Pflueger

(d) denotes “deceased” (David Hoffman, Victor Thorn, and Ted Gunderson’s death ruled “suicide”)

And “others unknown” to the author. If I have left anyone out it’s due to the passage of time and my memory, and for that I apologize.

I also want to thank Dr. Tony Madeira, Mr. Paul Hollrah, Michael Johnston, Mr. Jesse Trentadue, Mrs. Pat Baker and Mrs. Joan Thurman for their help in editing, input and suggestions.

INTRODUCTION

It has taken more than 20 years for me to finally sit down to begin writing this book. On April 19th, 1995 I was a veteran Tulsa, Oklahoma police officer. That terrible day was a Wednesday. On Friday afternoon my pager alerted me to a phone number that I would need to call. It was the local office of the FBI. Because the SAC (Special Agent in Charge) knew me and had read at least one of my investigative works, *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza,* and for other reasons, he asked me if I would be willing to do what I could to assist in the Oklahoma City bombing investigation. He also knew that I knew various patriotic groups around the state and certain individuals that I had interviewed in the past that would talk to me but not to "the Feds".

It was only 2 weeks since I had returned from Washington D.C. where I testified the House's Sub-committee on Crime on behalf of the Law Enforcement Alliance of America (LEAA) in support of the Second Amendment and against the so-called "assault weapons" and high capacity magazine ban. I was one of six police officers who testified, and two of us testified wearing the uniforms of our departments. This did not sit well with my chief of police at the time who, I found out when I returned home, was a closet liberal who hated the NRA, guns in the hands of citizens, and, by the time I got home, wasn't very fond of me either.

I spent the following week being attacked by our local liberal newspaper, *The Tulsa World* (which took every opportunity to attack anyone who had the audacity to say that the bombing suspects and plot concerned more than just Tim McVeigh and Terry Nichols). In my testimony before Congress I mentioned that I had spent three years on our department's Bomb Squad, that no matter what federal laws they pass, they had little impact on local law enforcement unless we requested a federal agency to help. Of the 52 bomb calls I had handled I never saw the ATF at any except one, and who never even asked for my reports.

Then Representative Charles Schumer (D-NY), appeared not to like anything I said in my 20 minute testimony, never addressed me directly or even asked me a single question (probably because I had a huge file on my table that was very impressive, but actually had only two pages of notes and the rest was blank paper! Large files are more impressive than thin ones).

Before I could return to Tulsa, Schumer had the ATF in Washington call the ATF office in Tulsa to complain that I said "they never did anything and didn't support the Tulsa Police Department" which was a total spin on what I said.

By the time I got home the SAC of the ATF (by then "upgraded" in name to the BATF and later the BATFE—Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, Firearms and Explosives) had angrily visited the chief to lodge a complaint. Within a day the media was involved and I spent the next 12 days in a back-and-forth duel in the newspapers, AP and UPI, with the chief (primarily his Administrative Sergeant who was at that time running the Bomb Squad on the side, of which I was no longer a member and had not been a bomb tech for several years). The thrust of their attack was that I lied to Congress! They said that I was *never* a Bomb Tech, contrary to what almost every officer who served on our department between 1971 and 1974 knew. I was on the first squad, years before either the chief or his assistant were on the job with TPD. I grew tired of fencing with the chief in the media—we had gone back and forth in the newspapers every day for a week with "he said, but he said" articles—and called the chief's office. I said "Chief, you're the chief. I work for you. Instead of all the media garbage, call me in and we'll get this taken care of face-to-face."

He agreed and said he'd get back to me. (I was working as a helicopter pilot in the Air Support Unit and my office was at an airport north of Tulsa). His assistant, who by then I knew was driving the inquisition, had already contacted several officers who later told me that he had called them fishing for "evidence" that I was never on the Bomb Squad. Even my former Bomb Squad partner, Roger Harmon, who had since retired, was called by the Chief's office. Then, an Internal Affairs sergeant called to say that Internal Affairs had been ordered to dig up anything they could against me to support their position. This in spite of the fact that he could remember me as one of the original three members of the Bomb Squad, and there was no case. He advised the Chief's office of this, but they were told to keep digging.

Meanwhile I went to police personnel and pulled my personnel file. I knew that the orders from the chief at the time assigning me to the squad, and the travel documents and school records of Bomb School which we all attended in Dade County, Florida were in my file. I knew all of that was there, but when I pulled the file all documentation of my attending the school and being assigned to the bomb squad by then-chief Jack Purdie was missing! Someone had removed the orders, memo and documents.

I knew who that someone was. The Weasel, the chief's Admin Sergeant himself. No one else would have done this.

Fortunately my military training taught me long before to keep every record that was important. I had copies of all of the above and more in a file at home.

The meeting was to occur the following Monday, April 17th. But that morning the Weasel called and said it was postponed to the next day at 1 p.m.

When I arrived at the chief's office and entered the outer office where his secretary was located, our SID (Special Investigations Division) tapping and bugging specialist was just leaving—with his bag of tricks and tools. He grinned at me and winked as he passed me. He wanted me to know that he had bugged the chief's office so that whatever I said would be on tape.

I entered the chief's office and was told where to sit in a specific chair at a round table in the corner. He and the assistant chief seated themselves opposite me and the chief laid down a thin file in front of him on the table. I knew by the seating arrangement where the microphone would be. And I was right. I opened my briefcase, pulled out my very thick file (all full of pertinent documents and statements) and my bug detector's needle in my brief case pegged out on the RF meter and the "I sense a transmitter" light turned red. No problem.

A short conversation ensued in which the chief said he had evidence and witnesses that said I was never on the bomb squad.

I knew better. So I called his bluff.

"No you don't," I said.

“I don’t what?”

“You don’t have any such witnesses, and you don’t have any evidence.” I said.

He countered with “we checked your personal file and there is no record of you attending any bomb training.”

“That’s because someone took the records out. Maybe you should ask your little Admin Sergeant to take a polygraph on that!”

He then said “Well, Sergeant Guss Jones, the supervisor at the time for the Bomb Squad, doesn’t remember you.”

I chuckled and replied “Guss is in a nursing home in Texas and he has Alzheimers disease, and can’t remember what he had for breakfast.”

“We checked with Roger Harmon, who we know was on the Bomb Squad then and he said that you weren’t.” I knew the Chief was fishing and trying a very amateurish method of ambushing me with nonsense.

“That’s not true, Chief, and you know it. I talked to Roger this morning and he said if I needed him here to give him a call and he’d come up to your office. I also know that several officers, including sergeants in IAD, told you they remember me on the squad and answering bomb calls. Plus, I have all my reports and color slides of all the devices I dealt with in case you’d like to see them.”

He turned red, stammered a bit, and that’s when I laid out copies of the missing records.

His case went downhill from there. As he was mulling this over. I said “Chief, let’s cut to the chase. Was I on the bomb squad or not? Yes or no. When I leave this office I have to call D.C. and let the LEAA know the status of this. The LEAA is waiting and so is the NRA.

He almost choked as he cleared his throat and stammered “Okay, how would you suggest we deal with this?”

“Simple. You, or your media relations folks, get hold of the newspapers, and AP and UPI reporters that keep calling and tell them that I was on the bomb squad, and the mistake is because the department was missing the records—but I produced copies and cleared up the matter.”

His “apology” came out the next day, Wednesday, but ended up as a couple of paragraphs at the bottom of a back page of each newspaper. The headlines and the main story that day was “Oklahoma City Building is Bombed!”

It was April 19th, 1995.

I received a page that Friday afternoon at 5 pm, just after I had returned from patrol and had put one of our helicopters back into the hangar. I was on my way down to my office in the airport building, and was ready to do my fuel logs and report, then head home.

The assistant SAC at the Tulsa office of the FBI answered and said “You know about the bombing in Oklahoma City? We’re really trying to develop leads now. We have this McVeigh character in jail down there, but there’s got to be more people involved than just him. We were wondering if you might help us with the case by putting your feelers out—and we know you know and can talk to people that we can't—and see what you can find out about any Oklahoma connections. We'd also like to know if McVeigh is known by anyone in the State, and maybe find out about every place he might have been."

I said "I'll be glad to do what I can, but first there is one thing. I need you to call the Chief's office and have him assign me to help you. I'm sure you've seen the newspaper articles of my trip to D.C. and what happened when I got home, so I want to make sure he's the one who orders me to do it."

"No problem. I'll call right now."

In ten minutes the phone on my desk rang. It was the Weasel.

"Roberts, the FBI called us and requested your help in their Oklahoma City case. The chief has authorized it, but you still have to do all your duties here. Anything you do on that is on your own time, got it?" sneered the Weasel. I knew it was killing him to even have to talk to me, but obviously the chief didn't want to do it himself.

"Okay" I said. "I'll keep the Chief's office and my supervisor advised.

He hung up. Not very gently.

Getting assigned by the chief was the smartest thing I ever did. As it turned out I was the only Tulsa Police Officer assigned to the Oklahoma City bombing investigation.

We thought we ranked above the chance of ill.
Others might fail, not we, for we were wise—
Merchants in freedom. So, of our free-will
We let our servants drug our strength with lies.
The pleasure and the poison had its way
On us as on the meanest, till we learned
That he who lies will steal, who steals will slay.
Neither God's judgment nor man's heart was turned.

Rudyard Kipling
The Covenant
1914

FOREWORD

People often ask me why I'm still alive. They say I know too much about too many things and too many people, and that I should have been taken out by now. It's a good question. I never hid from the truth, and was not shy about telling what I and others discovered during our months of investigating the bombing. I've done many radio talk shows, have videos on YouTube, I'm mentioned in other books, and during the investigation turned in many reports to the FBI, most of which probably went into the proverbial "Black Hole," never to be seen again.

I guess the simple answer goes back to what my grandfather told me just before I shipped out to Vietnam. I was visiting my grandparents and other kin in east Tennessee on the family farm outside of Maryville, at the base of the Smoky Mountains. I was sitting on the steps of his front porch and he was in a rocking chair, whittling on a piece of wood. He was a Primitive Baptist preacher as well as working at Alcoa Aluminum in nearby Knoxville. He had worked at the Oak Ridge lab during WWII when they were developing the atomic bomb, and, like so many others who worked there, he eventually developed Leukemia. But at this time, 1965, he was a tough Tennessee farmer and "hardshell Baptist," fire-and- brimstone preacher.

"Son," he said as he carved, "you're gettin' ready to go to that Vietnam place, aintcha?"

"Yes sir," I responded. All of us "kids" called him "sir" as that was the Southern gentlemanly way we were taught, just as we called Grandma "Ma'am."

"Well, them Vietnam boys, they gonna be tryin' to kill ya," he said, barely looking up from his carving.

"Yes sir, I know."

"Well, ya don't have to worry none," he said, as if it was no big deal.

"I don't?"

"No sir. When the good Lord calls you home, no one can stop it, and if He ain't ready, no one can rush it."

I lived my whole life, including the 11 months I spent as a Marine rifleman in I Corps, Vietnam in 1965-66, being a commercial diver on Catalina Island for four months, spending 27 years as a police officer in which I served on the TAC Squad (Tulsa's first version of SWAT and the predecessor to the current Special Operations Team), 3 years on the Bomb Squad, 14 years and over 3000 hours flying police helicopters (including 2 engine failures, one which totaled out a Hughes 500) and over 600 hours flying airplanes and seaplanes (with three emergency landings). Then after retiring in 1996 contracting colon cancer the following year and even flat lining on the table at St. Francis Hospital in August of '97. That was the closest I ever came to making that trip to the graveyard. But last year, 2016, I was hit with pulmonary embolisms in both lungs, sending me to the cardiac intensive care unit of a local hospital for four days.

I knew that being a 1946 model I wasn't going to live forever, so if I was ever going to write the OKC book, using all my files that I've preserved, and all my knowledge of what we discovered during our independent investigation which lasted over five years, the time was now or never.

It was not long after I entered the investigation in earnest shortly after the bombing that I discovered that there were others in Oklahoma City that were becoming involved in their own unofficial investigations. (The reader needs to know that Oklahoma City is 100 miles southwest of Tulsa, so it took me several trips down there to accomplish many of the various aspects of my investigation). It was during the ensuing months that I met several Oklahoma City folks that were also trying to uncover the truth that they all knew was different from the “official” version that the mainstream media kept spewing. They called it the Clinton-Reno-Freeh lie. For the younger readers who weren’t around then, Bill “Slick Willie” Clinton was in the White House, his FBI Director was Louis Freeh, and the Attorney General was Janet Reno, a woman picked by Hillary Clinton. Freeh seemed a good sort, but Clinton and Reno both had sordid pasts.

Their version that was shoved down the FBI’s throat (much to the chagrin of many good and honest FBI agents) was that McVeigh acted alone in bringing the Ammonium Nitrate/Fuel Oil, or ANFO-laden Ryder Truck to Oklahoma City, parking it in front of the Murrah Building, and then escaping in a yellow Mercury that had been prepositioned nearby and his buddy, Terry Nichols, helped him build the bomb. The only remaining problem with their case was that there was still the problem of dealing with a second person described as having been in the truck with McVeigh: the elusive John Doe.

There was also a loose team of civilians that had begun working together to find the truth and volunteered to help Oklahoma State Representative Charles Key, who questioned both the government version of events and the conduct of the manipulated Grand Jury. In my opinion, as I met them all over a period of a few weeks, they were doing more to get to the truth than the official government investigation, which by then had turned into a huge political spin to reinforce the story of the “Lone Nut With A Truck, Right-Wing Fanatic, Anti-Government Militia Wacko did it.”

It reminded me of my previous investigation into the Kennedy assassination when I was working on my book *“Kill Zone” A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza.”* In that case, the government did everything it could to pin the entire assassination on Lee Harvey Oswald. The parallels between the cases became more apparent every day that passed. It was as if this was an off-the-shelf spin job by the government. That worried me.

Those who turned over the stones and looked into the dark corners of the bombing events that I was to investigate, some of whom were also working with State Representative Charles Key (who formed a bombing investigation committee) were George Wallace, Vietnam veteran and former “Thud” pilot during the Vietnam war and by then a retired lieutenant colonel; Bill Jasper, editor and reporter for *The New American* magazine (John Birch Society); Pat Briley, an Oklahoma City resident and former Navy officer who served on nuclear submarines; Don Browning, an Oklahoma City police sergeant who, along with his K9 dog were some of the very first to arrive at the tragic scene; and Jayna Davis, a resilient report for KFOR-TV, Channel 4, in Oklahoma City who was the first to develop the Middle Eastern Connection—which is one of the most important parts of the case, but denied by the Justice Department and Bill Clinton.

On Day Three, the FBI raided Terry Nichols' brother, James Nichols farm in Decker, Michigan. The news that night had Clinton emphatically stating "There is NO Middle Eastern connection, period."

And from that point forward, the FBI, no matter what the witnesses said or saw, refused to look in that direction.

But we didn't.

It wasn't long before I met another individual who traveled to Oklahoma City from Berkeley, California, to investigate the case. His name was David Hoffman, and he was the editor of the *Haight Ashbury Free Press.* David was a leftie, by his own admission, and was just the opposite of me, a dyed-in-the-wool conservative. But we hit it off and began to correspond almost daily through emails (back then all there was was AOL, Genie and CompuServe!). I did my writing on a PC and he did his on an Apple II, so we couldn't exchange anything we wrote via computer. We had to retype everything we sent each other. Not efficient, but it was the only way we could do it.

Dave was Jewish. He had some contacts that I didn't via some Israeli connections including a few in Israeli intelligence. My main contacts were in the law enforcement sphere. Working together on many areas, we made a good team.

Dave was working on his book about the bombing, which when published was titled *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror.* When the book was finally published it immediately ran into problems. He stepped on a lot of toes (which I've also been accused of doing), and one, former FBI Associate Deputy Director Oliver "Buck" Revell sued him for liable. That case would make a book in itself. The end result was that Dave's lawyer, Oklahoma City attorney Mike Johnston, defended David all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court. Revell lost the case, but the publisher, afraid of what might happen and what legal representation would cost, removed the references to Revell out of subsequent printings. The book eventually went out of print. The only references to Revell were in the first printing and very few copies remain.

Tragically, David's depression deepened over the months of the investigation and the years that followed. He decided next to investigate sex trafficking, first in California and then in the Czech Republic, where the Russian Mafia connection to sex trafficking in California led him. He moved to Prague and lived there for a year or so, but when he got close to those in power in the sex trade there (all Russian Mafia), all of a sudden the Czech secret police took an interest and arrested him. He spent several months in a Czech prison before being released and deported back to the U.S.

He settled in Boston, and would contact me occasionally, mostly in a depressed or not-to-sober state. I felt he was wearing down with too many years of fighting one-man battles and not seeming to get anywhere. As time went on even his emails became jumbled and incoherent.

I'm not sure exactly when it happened, but one day his father called and told me that Dave, who I had dubbed "The Rabbi," had committed suicide!

I was shocked. I couldn't believe it. I was always available during the months in Oklahoma City during the investigation to cheer him up and point him in a given direction. But not after he left for California. He was on his own then.

However, before he left Oklahoma, he gave me some disks with his files for his book and said "if anything happens to me, use all of this or whatever you need. Keep the truth out there!" I have in my files a letter verifying this. The letter, starting out with information concerning one of the strange deaths of witnesses to the Oklahoma City bombing, was accompanied by a disk of the draft of his chapters. He wrote: "Copy the book chapters onto your own disk, and keep them as a back-up for me. If something happens to me, use them as needed. Would you also let me know what you think? [about the chapters]."

At the time, I didn't think much about that as I was so involved in other writing projects and deadlines, and then came cancer which really set me back for months. My wife and I moved out of the city to the country in 1998 (after the Oncologist sent me home to die and told me I wouldn't last six months!). During the move, many things ended up in boxes and were never unpacked. They all went into storage.

About a month ago, after I was back on my feet from dealing with pulmonary embolisms in both lungs, I knew that if I was to ever write this book it had to be now. And, when digging through all my old files and disks and OKC records, I found Dave's disks. By this time I too was using an Apple computer. I was able to import the files of his manuscripts and go over them. I knew that I really needed to use many excerpts from them, so you will see excerpts and sections and even a chapter from the original manuscript of David Hoffman's *Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror.* You will also read excerpts from my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Governmen*t. Hence the title for this book *The Medusa File II: The Politics of Terror and the Oklahoma City Bombing*. I don't intimidate very easily. It's the old Marine in me.

So here's to you, Rabbi. May God be with you. Here's to the truth, and to all my fellow Truth Warriors.

CHAPTER 1

Day One 9:02 a.m., April 19th, 1995, Oklahoma City

It was like a scene from a war movie, or a horror movie. It was utter chaos. The television reporting showed a building that looked like a giant meat cleaver had taken off the whole front, leaving open floors, shattered concrete, bent steel rebar, and rubble everywhere. Victims were streaming out of the building covered with blood, fires burned cars that were parked outside and across the street, sirens were wailing, and police, firefighters, and ambulance personnel were racing into the carnage and rubble

As black smoke curled high above downtown Oklahoma City, no one could understand what had happened. At first it was reported as a "gas leak" that exploded, then, in less than an hour, it was a car bomb. Then, when bomb techs said a car bomb could not have done that amount of damage, it became a truck bomb, then finally a bomb in a "moving van truck".

The fires were being fought, first aid stations were being set up to treat victims, and everyone that could be evacuated was being shepherded out of the area. People were on the ground, requiring assistance to move or even stand up. Too many victims were still trapped on the various floors of the building, some pinned under rubble, all requiring rescue.

Damage was not limited to the Murrah Building. The shock wave of the explosions (that's with an "s" since there were more than one) shattered windows and damaged buildings for several surrounding blocks. A U.S. post office building was located northwest of the Murrah Building, the Journal Record newspaper building was located north, across the street and just beyond a parking lot. The Water Resources Board building was located just northwest across the street, the Regency Towers apartments were west of the post office. To the east was the YMCA. To the south, behind the building, was the Federal Courthouse. A block north, behind the Journal Record building, was the Southwestern Bell telephone building. All of these and more sustained damage.

In the vicinity were several surveillance cameras. Some of which looked directly at the Murrah Building and would bear witness to exactly what happened that morning.

Or would they?

Pat Baker was an employee of Southwestern Bell Telephone company and was attending a supervisor's meeting at the SWB headquarters building just a block north of the Murrah Building. She remembers quite vividly what happened that day:

"April 19th, 1995, was a typical Wednesday in mid-April, seasonably warm for early spring. I worked for (and retired from) Southwestern Bell Corporation (aka, formerly Southwestern Bell Telephone, currently AT&T) in Norman, Oklahoma, but I had a meeting that morning at "headquarters" at 8th and Harvey in Oklahoma City at 9AM. I didn't want to attend this meeting for some unknown reason, and in fact, I'd put it off three times before.

The drive into Oklahoma City was as normal as could be for morning rush hour traffic. I exited I-235 onto 6th Street and drove the few blocks to Harvey. I drove by the

Murrah Building as I had done hundreds of times. The time was approximately 8:50 a.m. I was running a bit late and didn’t particularly notice anything out of the ordinary when I drove by the Murrah Building. I parked in a small corner lot at 7th and Harvey and ran across the street to headquarters. I made it to the meeting on the second floor in a room located on the south side before 9 a.m.

“The building had originally been Central High School before SBC purchased it and converted it to our headquarters location. Many of the exterior walls were huge thick paned tinted glass. The exterior wooden doors were large enough to hang in a castle and extremely heavy. The room I was in didn’t have any windows so we weren’t privy to see anything outside.

“We had just sat down and begun our meeting when there was a loud rumbling noise and the building shook. Wide eyed we all looked at one another and quickly slid from our chairs onto the floor under the huge wooden table. *We had just made it under the table when another rumble came. The second was much louder and shook the building much harder*. After a few moments, which seemed like hours, we emerged from under the table. Ceiling tiles had dropped from the ceiling onto the table and dust was everywhere. It was a little difficult focusing with all of the dust. I immediately advised the others we should leave the building as soon as possible. We opened the door to see massive destruction in the hallway. All of the windows were blown out and glass piled up 1 to 1 ½ feet tall. I stepped over a pile of glass going through what used to be a door onto a balcony. I tried being careful but ended up cutting my foot on the glass. The smoke that was rising and the debris that was falling from the sky was blocking the sun, making it look almost like nighttime.

“We all evacuated the building at approximately 9:15 a.m. and were told to stay outside while some officials were inspecting it for safety. We could then leave to work elsewhere or simply go home after advising our supervisors. Since I worked in Norman I planned to leave just as quickly as I could.

“While waiting I decided to walk around to see if I could see what had happened. I went to the north side of the SBC building and saw the glass was broken. The huge wooden door was still somewhat attached, but very crooked. It would take some major work to fix that one. As I rounded the corner and went on down towards where I could see a commotion, I noticed that debris was still raining from the sky.

“I made it outside and looked where the Murrah Building was and saw a sight that looked like a war zone. Strange thing that I remember everything being in black and white, except for the blood which was bright red. People were walking around in a daze clutching themselves or others. People were running for their lives. I realized that I didn’t belong there. I would just be in the way and I didn’t know what to do. So, I left and went back to SBC.

“While waiting for the okay to go back inside the building I saw a man walking at an extremely fast pace toward me. This would have been at approximately 9:30 a.m. His eyes were dazed and as “big as saucers.” His face had puncture marks dripping blood. The collar and front of his shirt was blood soaked. I began to get concerned when he came to within 15 feet of me, because I wasn’t sure if he was going to knock me down and run over me or attack me. I was beginning to build myself up for whatever was going to happen when another man ran up from behind him, grabbed him and led him off up the street. A few minutes later I saw them both leaving in a pickup truck with no windshield left.

"Once we'd been given the okay to return to the building at approximately 10 a.m. to gather what we needed, I didn't have to be asked twice. I immediately went to the room for my brief case and purse and took the time to make a few phone calls. I first called my husband, John, and told him I was okay. He hadn't heard of anything happening yet so I had to tell him there was some type of explosion but I was okay and would be home soon. I then called my secretary and told her the same. She'd not heard of anything yet either but would contact our District Manager to let him know.

"In the next few days our building was converted to a temporary command post for the rescue personnel.

"I gathered my belongings and left to go to my car. I was abruptly stopped by an OKCPD officer who was blocking the intersection and redirecting traffic. He told me I would have to go back from where I'd come. I couldn't go any further. I told him I couldn't go back and pointed to my car. I told him I just needed to get to my car and I was leaving. We had quite a discussion. He wasn't going to let me cross the street and I wasn't going to go back. He asked me if I heard the hissing sound. He pointed to the huge gas meters on the northwest corner and shouted there was a leak and could blow anytime. That was all I needed. I proceeded and succeeded in crossing the street. When I arrived at my car it was covered in dust and grime. I quickly ran around to make sure all four tires were up. I was good-to-go so I got in, started it up and proceeded to leave downtown Oklahoma City. What would normally take just a matter of minutes seemed to take forever. I can't even recreate the route I took because streets were beginning to be barricaded by the police. I finally made it back to I-235. My adrenaline was pumping so fast I probably had the strength of King Kong. I looked down at my speedometer and was shocked to see I was driving 95 MPH. I thought I'd better slow down but realized it didn't matter. All of the police were going the other direction.

"I made it home and pulled into the garage. John rushed out and looked at my car and asked me how I'd driven it. I looked and wondered the same thing. The windshield was pitted tremendously. I don't know how I saw anything through it. The top was rippled like water white-capping on the lake. The hood was nowhere near the bright red that it was just a few hours ago. I quickly ate lunch and returned to my office in Norman. John called the insurance company and arranged for my car to be repaired the next day. Lucky he acted so quickly, because in about two weeks State Farm would refuse to pay for any further claims because all were classified as 'terrorism.'

"A few months passed and I was contacted by the Audiology Department of the University of Oklahoma Health Department. They were performing a hearing study for those involved in the bombing. I agreed to do the study. I went every quarter for a hearing evaluation. The results determined that I have 60% hearing loss in my left ear which was the side that the blast occurred, and about 25% loss in my right ear.

"My car faired just as well. The electronics were somewhat fried and couldn't be repaired. The speedometer didn’t work correctly, showing a much lesser speed than I was actually traveling. So, when I was going 95 according to the meter, I was actually driving over 100 mph.

“I asked the health center if I would be able to obtain the results of their study but was advised they didn’t know who would be able to get a copy. I was told I would be contacted but have never heard from them again. “

Excerpt from David Hoffman’s *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*

“The entire façade of the nine-story superstructure had been ripped away, exposing its innards — dangling chunks of concrete, tangled strands of cables and bent pieces of rebar —into the choking, blackened sky. Now it stood smoking and eerily silent, except for the muffled cries of its few remaining inhabitants and the wailing of the sirens off in the distance.

“One man, n former Marine, likened it to carnage he had witnessed in war-torn Lebanon. Another veteran, Thu Nguyen, who had his five-year-old son Christopher in the Day Care Center, said, “I’ve seen war…. I’ve seen soldiers I fought with in Vietnam cut this way, cut in half, heads cut off. That was war. These are children. This is not a war. This is a crime.”

“The scene was surreal—almost too horrific to bear. There were bodies—and pieces of bodies — strewn about, along with children’s toys and workers’ personal effects—tragic reminders of what had moments before been the meaningful mementos of someone’s life. One passerby had been wrapped around a telephone pole, her head blown off. Workers who had been sitting at their desks were still sitting there… lifeless, morbid, like eerie figures out of a wax museum of horrors.”

Police detective Jay Einhorn remembers one scene: “There was a guy—a black guy—on the second floor, just sitting there. I knew he was dead. He’s looking at me, and I’m looking at him… if you don’t think that’s scary. We just said, man we gotta go up there and cover that guy up.”

“Daina Bradley, who was trapped under a slab of fallen concrete, was still conscious. With no way to remove her without upsetting the huge piece of concrete, doctors were forced to amputate her leg. As Bradley lay screaming in a pool of water, surgeons, using scalpels and saws, and without anesthesia, amputated her leg below the knee.”

The federal office building, home to over 550 workers, had also housed a day care center. Nearby, a makeshift morgue had been set up in what had once been the children’s playground. Refrigeration trucks lined up to haul away the dead bodies. Sheriff Clint Boehler, from nearby Canadian County, recalled, “We went flying down there at about 110 miles an hour… you never saw so many services running over each other.” As hundreds of volunteers poured in from all over the country, fireman, police and medical personnel began laying out the victims for identification. Shirley Moser, a nurse, began tagging dead children. “Their faces had been blown off, “ said Moser. “They found a child without a head.”

Those who were lucky enough to escape the carnage were wandering about, dazed and confused. One man, his face bloodied, wandered down the street, saying he was headed home, except that he couldn't remember his name or where his home was. Another man who was entering the building had his arm blown off, but was in such a state of shock that he didn't notice it as he went about trying to help others.

People who lived or worked nearby had been blown out of their chairs. Trent Smith, 240 pounds, was tossed seven feet into the air and through the window of his hotel room. Several blocks away, a bus filled with people was nearly blown on its side. The force of the blast extended for nearly 30 blocks, blowing out windows and heavily damaging dozens of buildings, causing damage to almost 400 more.

When it was all over, more than 169 people, including 19 children, lay dead, and more than 500 were injured. The damage was estimated in the hundreds of millions.

Federal authorities were calling the bombing the single largest terrorist attack in the history of the United States. Yet it was difficult to discern whether the bombing was some ominous precursor to an as yet undeclared war, or the result of some criminal plot gone horribly awry.

As rescue workers continued the difficult task of searching for bodies, and hospital workers began attending to victims, law enforcement agents began searching for clues. What was clear as law enforcement personnel descended upon the scene, was that the blast had left a 30 foot wide, 8 foot deep crater in front of the building. Fortunately, an ATF agent who had recently attended a course on the identification of car and truck-bombs just happened to be in the federal courthouse, located south behind the Murrah Building. This agent was able to identify the cause of the blast immediately. He telephoned his superiors in Dallas and told them that an ammonium nitrate truck-bomb had just blown up the Murrah Building.

Hoffman went on to write: "Investigators were busily searching the wreckage for clues that could lead them to the perpetrators. It didn't take long for investigators to find what they were looking for—a piece of axle and a license plate—believed to have been part of the truck used in the bombing. After FBI agents ran the VIN (vehicle identification number) and the plate through their Rapid Start computer system, they discovered the vehicle belonged to a Ryder rental agency in Florida. A check with the agency revealed that the truck, a 1993 Ford, was rented out of Elliott's Body Shop in Junction City, Kansas. Elliott's said that they had rented the 20-foot truck to a Bob Kling on April 17th, and gave the FBI artist a description of two men who had rented the truck, known as Unsub #1 and Unsub #2. McVeigh would use several alias's over a two year period preceding the bombing: Tim Tuttle, Robert Kling, Shawn or Sean Rivers, and Daryl Bridges.

"Kling—McVeigh—had listed his address as 3616 North Van Dyke Road in Decker, Michigan. The address was the home of James Douglas Nichols and Terry Lynn Nichols. A quick check of that address with the Michigan Department of Motor Vehicles revealed a driver's license in the name of Timothy James McVeigh.

The photos of the alleged axle from the Ryder truck showed a part number, not a VIN number. The number shown was EQ HT 5993 AB, unlike any VIN numbers in the U.S. VIN numbers in the U.S. start with the number "1" and include several numbers, and are 17 digits long. There was no way to trace this number to anything, much less a Ryder rental truck. The only way the FBI could know where the truck was rented was if they had the actual VIN number.

Hoffman continued: “FBI agents interviewing James Nichols and other relatives in Decker quickly learned that Timothy McVeigh was a friend of Nichols, who possessed large quantities of fuel oil and fertilizer. Armed with a search warrant, agents found twenty-eight 50-pound bags of fertilizer containing ammonium nitrate, a 55 gallon drum containing fuel oil, blasting caps, and safety fuse.

“Interviews with neighbors revealed that the Nichols brothers and McVeigh had experimented with explosives, using household items to produce small bombs using bottles and cardboard cartons, which they would detonate on their property for fun. Witnesses also claimed that in December of 1993, McVeigh and one of the Nichols brothers had visited Thumb Hobbies, Etc. to inquire about purchasing 100% liquid nitro model airplane fuel. One of these witnesses had reported that James Nichols had repeatedly blamed the U.S. government for all the problems in the world.

“Federal agents then decided they had enough evidence to arrest James Nichols, and to put out a warrant on his brother Terry, who was living in Herrington, Kansas. On April 22, Terry Nichols, wondering why his name was being broadcast on television, walked into the local police station in Herrington.

“In the meantime, witnesses at the scene of the bombing had given FBI agents a description of possible suspects. While interviewing people in Junction City, agents spoke to the manager of the Dreamland Motel who recognized the composite sketch of the suspect the FBI called Unsub #1. The man had registered at the Dreamland from April 14 to April 18 under the name of Tim McVeigh, had driven a yellow Mercury, and provided an address on North Van Dyke Road in Decker, Michigan.

“On April 21, Carl E. Lebron, a former co-worker of McVeigh’s, recognized the composite sketch of Unsub #1 on TV and called the FBI. He said that the man was named Timothy McVeigh, and that he was possessed of extreme right-wing views, was a military veteran, and was particularly agitated over the deaths of the Branch Davidians in Waco, Texas in April, 1993. The man told the FBI that McVeigh expressed extreme anger towards the Federal Government. The man gave the FBI the last known address he had for McVeigh: 1711 Stockton Hill Road, #206, Kingman, Arizona.

“Back in Perry, Oklahoma, McVeigh was still sitting in a cell at the Noble County Courthouse, waiting for his arraignment. After feeding McVeigh’s name into the National Crime Information Center, the FBI discovered their suspect sitting quietly in the Noble County jail on a traffic and weapons charge. Just as McVeigh was about to be set free, District Attorney John Maddox received a call from the FBI telling him to hold on to the prisoner, that he was a prime suspect in the bombing of the Federal Building in Oklahoma City.

“So, by good luck, diligent work, and an amazing series of coincidences, federal law enforcement authorities solved the most heinous crime in the history of the United States —all within 48 hours.”

Or did they?

By the second day, the FBI had removed all video cameras and video equipment, including tapes, from the surveillance cameras in the area. Like the Zapruder film that recorded the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, these tapes would show who got out of the Ryder truck (and how many), the explosions, and exactly the sequence of events showing the pattern of destruction of the building. Was there just one explosion? Or two? Or more?

The video tapes would tell.

But they never did. Not one tape was released to the media or the public. Why take the cameras? Why fill up even the holes in the walls where the cameras had been mounted and paint over them? And why did the agents who removed the cameras also pull out the wire in the walls? Who was trying to make it look like as if the cameras were never there?

(As of this writing, the video tapes have never been released. And after lawsuits demanding them, the first excuse is that they were evidence in an ongoing investigation. So, we asked, if the investigation was closed with the conviction of McVeigh and Nichols, and the execution of McVeigh, then how could it be "ongoing"?)

Eventually, two years later, the FBI said they could not find the tapes. After all, at this late date who cares? Then "we don't have any tapes."

I could see it forming at this stage (two years later)… The Black Hole.

Chapter 2

Day One—It Becomes Personal

The smoke had not even cleared from my altercation with the Chief over my trip to Washington D.C. and my testifying on behalf of the Second Amendment before Congress when it happened.

It was the morning of April 19th, 1995, and I had stopped at a barber shop on my way to work. I was a patrol pilot and Chief of Maintenance for the Tulsa Police Department's Helicopter Unit and was in my flight suit. As I sat in the barber chair the television interrupted the morning programming with a news flash.

There had been a huge natural gas explosion in Oklahoma City. The images on the TV screen showed downtown Oklahoma City with a huge black smoke cloud billowing up from somewhere downtown in a view from a camera that was probably in a tower or high building. Ambulances were rushing to the scene as were the Police and Fire Departments, and an Oklahoma City MD 500 helicopter flew overhead in a wide circle. The sight of the helicopter captured my attention as we flew the same type aircraft and I knew some of the OKCPD pilots and mechanics.

It was a bit after 9 a.m. Within about 30 minutes the story changed from one of a natural gas explosion to a car bomb, then by 10 p.m. it was thought to be a bomb in a pickup truck, then by noon it was determined (probably with the aid of video cameras on nearby buildings and witnesses) to be a Ryder moving truck that had to have been packed with explosives.

By the time I got to work everyone was watching live TV of the scene and descriptions of the event were unfolding. Then, just after 10 a.m. a panic ensued wherein everyone was told get get back, away from the building and the area where cars in the street and parking lots still burned and smoke still rose from the half-collapsed building. They were told that there were other bombs still inside!

Although many victims were still trapped inside the rubble on the various floors, the FBI and ATF would not let any rescue workers back to the building after it was declared that additional explosive devices were not found (though no actual search had taken place yet). However, several "agents" dressed in black, along with what appeared to be a military ambulance (some reports say two such trucks), were seen removing file drawers and boxes of records and putting them into the vehicles. Other witnesses said later they saw what appeared to be missiles being taken out of the building on stretchers.

When asked why rescuers could not go back to the building, an FBI "spokesman" said "It's unfortunate, but no one is allowed back until the files are secured."

The problem with that statement is that it was unlikely there were records in that building that were sensitive enough to compromise national security, or any other reason at that point. With the exception of the small ATF office located on one of the floors, the main areas had been offices of HUD, Social Security, Secret Service, a military recruiting office, and a day care center. What "files" were so important to save that it risked the lives of those who still survived, trapped in the building?

For the next two days my sergeant, Ron Moulton, and I speculated on the news. What had happened, how it had happened, why had it happened, and most important who did it?

The more information that came out, the more I began to suspect that this was more than just some cranks that had issues with one of the offices or personnel inside the building. Instead it began to develop in my mind as a possible terrorist attack.

Besides being a police officer and police helicopter pilot, I was also in the military. After my active duty from 1964 to 1968, including 11 months in Vietnam as a U.S. Marine infantryman, I continued my military involvement by joining the Army National Guard in Tulsa, an infantry battalion, and served in the Scout Platoon as a sergeant, then later staff sergeant. Then in 1975 I applied for Officer Candidate School and a year later graduated as a second lieutenant. I served as a rifle platoon leader, rifle company executive officer, detachment commander, TAC officer at OCS, and as a company commander (captain). By 1981 I had transferred to the Army Reserve where I served as a basic training company commander and then battalion staff officer as a major (S-2, S-3 Air, and S-4—Intelligence, air operations, and logistics and supply).

Then in 1986 I moved to a very unique position in the IRR as a GLO, a Ground Liaison Officer for an Air National Guard A-7 unit, working in the Intel Section. I served as an Intel and Liaison officer until I retired in 1999 as a lieutenant colonel. As a GLO my responsibilities including advising and assisting in base security, counter-terrorism, Intel analysis, battlefield and tactical intelligence. I also had the task of serving as flight crew briefing and debriefing officer for missions our pilots flew in support of ground troops, then reporting back to the ground commanders we supported with close air support and ground attack missions on the results of the missions.

In my counter-terrorism assignment I was trained and spent large amounts of time studying the various global terrorist organizations, their methods, abilities, strengths, weapons, supporters, chains of command, ideology, and history.

One of the things I learned is that there are only six types of terrorist targets: An airliner or other aircraft, a ship at sea, mass ground transportation, a public building, a private building and a large gathering of people (the “Black Sunday” scenario).

The *Achille Lauro* Italian cruise ship in the Mediterranean is one, the 1968 Munich Olympics was another, highjacked airliners and trains were more, and the Oklahoma City bombing fit the “public building” category. The 1993 World Trade Center Bombing was a private building.

Could this act of terror be one that was caused by a known terrorist organization?

As the day progressed, more information began to emerge. Hundreds of people were dead, hundreds more critically injured, half of the Murrah Federal Building was collapsed, people were still trapped inside, buildings in the surrounding areas were heavily damaged, and several witnesses of various things before and during the event came forward.

The news media were reporting constantly, and TV video showed just how bad the damage was, many victims that were bloody and needed help, and various organizations with the jacket identification of various agencies arriving to do whatever could be done.

But one thing stuck out to me. The damage that was being shown on TV did not add up to what was now described as an ammonium nitrate-fuel oil bomb even if it filled the entire back of a standard Ryder truck. There were too many cut columns with cut rebar visible, and according to witnesses later much of the building was blown outward, not inward. Also the building had originally been built to be bomb proof from outside explosives.

I later found out from OCPD officers that the biggest damage notable as a possible center of explosion was not the small crater where the Ryder truck was parked, but a much larger hole and collapse in the rear of the building in what would later be referred to as "The Cut." That could only mean explosive charges inside the building.

I felt at the time that by the time the FBI, ATF, OCPD Bomb Squad, and Oklahoma County Sheriff's Bomb Squad completed their investigations, and the video tapes from the surrounding buildings were reviewed, it would show exactly what had happened, which would lead to several things: who had the expertise to do it, who had the material, who had access, and maybe who had motive.

I was wrong. Within a few days instead of the above, the story was locked down to the single truck with one—possible two—occupants who fled the scene after parking in front of the building.

This really bothered me. I happened to know a bit about explosives and their effects. I had served on the Tulsa Police Department's first bomb squad, and I had been trained in the use of Composition C-4 plastic explosive, Comp B, and TNT when I was in the Marines. Later when I took the Special Forces Explosives and Demolitions course, then again at Fort Benning, Georgia when I went through "Engineer Week" during the Infantry Officer's Basic Course. There I learned even more about various explosives, shaped charges, cutting charges, and something called "brisance effect" which is the shattering effect of explosives on rock, concrete and other hard materials that shatter when blown up. I finally underwent further training at the Dade County, Florida, Sheriff's Department bomb school under Captain Tom Brodie who was an expert in all kinds of home-made and manufactured devices having dealt what many that were built by Mafia and Cuban groups over the years.

The damage in the video images just didn't make sense to me in relation to the explanations emanating from the press releases and talking heads.

But, I didn't have a dog in this fight. Yet.

When I reached the Helicopter Unit office at Tulsa North Airport, the phone was already ringing. We seldom received a call out for police work with a helicopter that early in the morning unless we had cars in a pursuit, or an armed robber on foot.

When I answered the phone the dispatcher asked if we could transport the department's bomb robot to Oklahoma City in one of our aircraft. Since our MD-500s were designed for speed and maneuverability and not for carrying much in the way of cargo, I had to advise the dispatcher to call over to Tulsa International Airport to the Army National Guard helicopter company based there. Their big Sikorsky UH-64 Blackhawks were big enough to haul the robot and several bomb techs if needed. I later heard that OKC PD let our guys know that they wouldn't be needed, nor the robot as the dust had pretty well settled on the event by that time.

Shortly after the bombing, Oklahoma Highway Patrol trooper Charlie Hanger had been assigned to help in Oklahoma City, but while enroute was told to disregard and stay in his area. A short time later he spotted a yellow Mercury speeding north on I-35. He slowed down to let the car pass, then, noting it was also missing its license tag, pulled the vehicle over.

Instead of walking up to the car, Trooper Hanger called for the driver, the lone occupant of the car, to step out. He then ordered the driver to walk toward him and stop between the vehicles. He asked for the man's driver's license, and when the driver reached for it Hanger could see the impression of a weapon under his jacket. The driver stated that he had a pistol and it was loaded.

"So is mine," said Hanger. He handcuffed, and then searched the subject. By then the trooper knew his name: Timothy McVeigh. Hanger recovered a loaded .45 caliber Glock semi-auto pistol, an extra magazine, and a knife. He then searched the car and found a copy of "The Turner Diaries," a small pamphlet-size book of fiction about a world in chaos where black gangs roamed the country attacking Whites, and Whites having to defend themselves. The fictional diary describes a racist's vision of a nightmare world, in which "The System"—African-American enforcers led by Jewish politicians—attempt to confiscate all guns in the United States. A secretive organization known as "The Order" rises up to take back the country for White Supremacists, eventually winning an apocalyptic insurgency and nuclear war;

The Turner Diaries was created in the 1970s by William Luther Pierce, leader of a neo-Nazi group called the National Alliance. *The Turner Diaries* helped inspire dozens of armed robberies and more than 200 murders in the decades since its publication.

When Hanger searched his own unit later, he found a business card for a military surplus store in Wisconsin. Written on the back of the card by McVeigh were the words, "Will need more TNT—$ a stick."

11
Arkansas
95
PTA 811
The Natural State

The tag that never was. It disappeared from the registry shortly after I began enquiries concerning it. I ran it the first week of May 1995, and it didn't expire until the following November.

Two weeks later, a license tag was found in the bar ditch a mile before the point where McVeigh was stopped, possibly thrown out a window. The tag, Arkansas PTA 811, showed an expiration date of November, 1995. When I ran it, it came back stolen in Fort

Smith, Arkansas. Since it was possible that this tag was on McVeigh's car, but either had fallen off, or was discarded by McVeigh, I wanted to trace it to see if there was any connection. One witness had stated that the tag on the yellow Mercury that fled the scene was held on by only one bolt.

I ran the tag number through our dispatcher and received a "hit" on a stolen tag. I then called the owner and the man that answered told me the tag was taken from his daughter's car in their driveway a week before the bombing. I called back a week later to try and get more information and was told by the same man that he didn't know what I was talking about and hung up on me. I then ran the tag again to ascertain that I had copied all the information down correctly—and I received no hit. That number had disappeared off of the registry and the computer system. Yet, Jayna Davis, a reporter for Oklahoma City's KFOR-TV Channel 4, told me they had the tag at KFOR. She then told me that the FBI wanted to come by and pick it up. I told her to photograph it and make them sign for it. But as with so much other evidence, it disappeared in the Black Hole of the FBI.

Hanger transported McVeigh to the Noble county jail and when he was booked in for Carrying a Concealed Weapon, then a crime in Oklahoma, he gave an address in Michigan that was the address of the brother of his accomplice, Terry Nichols. McVeigh could have easily been bonded out the next day, but as luck would have it the judge he was to appear before was out on a family issue. That meant McVeigh would have to wait out the weekend in jail, but, by then a sketch had been released of John Doe #1, and it bore a striking resemblance to McVeigh. And McVeigh was stopped heading North away from Oklahoma City. He had lost or removed the license tag from his car, and he was armed. It all made enough sense for Hanger to notify the FBI. It was not long before McVeigh was taken into federal custody by FBI and ATF agents and escorted out of the jail. In the famous video clip of McVeigh being led out by several federal officers, one, Lowell Sprague, who can be seen to the right of McVeigh (McVeigh's left), wearing a mustache, was one of our eight Fugitive Warrants Squad officers in Tulsa when I served on the squad. He had left to join the ATF.

Within days McVeigh was transferred from the Oklahoma County Jail to the U.S. Federal Penitentiary in El Reno, Oklahoma, just west of Oklahoma City.

Meanwhile in Oklahoma City, witnesses had described several things that they had seen that might prove advantageous to investigators. Besides the two John Doe sketches (and more from other witnesses), an "attempt to locate" went out on police radios to look for a white car occupied by what was described as dark skinned, or Middle Eastern males that left the area and were thought to have a connection to the bombing. It later was quickly cancelled for reasons unknown to me or to anyone else.

Within an hour of the bombing several "Arabs" showed up at Will Rogers World Airport in Oklahoma City, and from security camera videos, appeared to be hovering around one Middle Eastern-appearing male in his late twenties who appeared very nervous. It was obvious that his group was guarding this person until he could board a flight.

Just after the bombing, some witnesses had described two Middle Eastern males, wearing blue jogging suits and standing near the front door of the Murrah Building, and after a UPS truck left, they held the parking place next to the curb for the yellow Ryder Truck. When it drove up, the two ran east and jumped into a brown GMC pickup truck with a plastic bug shield on the front over the hood. They left at a high rate of speed.

Other witnesses recalled seeing two males exit the Ryder truck, but only one was seen running across the street. Another witness saw the Yellow Mercury drive through the alley by the *Journal Record* newspaper building, located across the street North of the Murrah Building. This witness stated that the car almost ran him down as he stood outside the building taking a smoke break. He noted a dark skinned individual and a man resembling McVeigh. He said that the dark skinned individual had a look of hate on his face and scowled at him when they sped by. A few minutes later an explosion across the street collapsed the front of the Murrah Building.

At 2:29 p.m. an All Stations Oklahoma teletype was transmitted regarding suspects in the OKC bombing:

“ATTEMPT TO LOCATE POSSIBLE SUSPECTS AND VEHICLE INVOLVED IN BOMBING OKLAHOMA CITY 04/19/95 0900 HRS.

******************* USE EXTREME CAUTION *******************

STOP AND CHECK ALL VEHICLES MATCHING THE FOLLOWING DESCRIPTION:

BLUE SMALL TO MEDIUM SIZE GM PRODUCT POSSIBLE CHEVROLET CAVALIER OR BLAZER. VEHICLE MAY BE A RENTAL CAR FROM NATIONAL CAR RENTAL SYSTEMS DFW TEXAS. POSSIBLE TAG OF PTF54F TEXAS.

SUSPECT INFORMATION:

OCCUPIED BY **MIDDLE EASTERN MALE SUBJECT OR SUBJECTS**

NEED TO I.D. ALL SUBJECTS AND USE OWN DISCRETION IN DETAINING SUBJECTS.

AUTH: CHIEF’S OFFICE OKLAHOMA HIGHWAY PATROL OKLAHOMA CITY

DPS COMMUNICATIONS CENTER—OKLAHOMA CITY TIME: 14:21

(Emphasis mine re: Middle Eastern males)

Within an hour of that transmission Airport Police at Will Rogers World Airport in OKC reported (and video taped) a group of “Middle Eastern males” near a departure gate. One seemed extremely nervous and the rest were hovering around him in a hostile and protective manner. But with no more information to go on the one traveler was allowed to continue his journey. American Airlines personnel suspected that these individuals might be involved in the bombing and reported it to their security office in Dallas, who in turn notified the Chicago Airport Police at Chicago O’Hare Airport. When the subject arrived, the Airport Police detained him for several hours but did not detain his luggage. He was identified as Abraham Ahmad, and he told them he was on his way to Jordan to work on his parents house who were both too sick to do it themselves.

When Ahmad was released he caught a flight to London Heathrow where he was to board a connecting flight to Athens. But the British police stopped him there and turned him around, sending him back to the U.S. and notifying U.S. authorities that he was a suspected terrorist. His luggage arrived in Athens where it was searched by Greek police and found to contain wire, electrical tape, and other “bomb making materials.”

Ahmad was released when he arrived in the U.S. and made his way back to Oklahoma City. He evidently felt confident that he was in the clear, so now he had no need to go to his “sick parents.”

Many witnesses described 2 to 3 explosions, with the first one creating a sizable rumble, followed by the huge one. Pat Baker, who worked at the Southwestern Bell building located northeast of the Murrah Building, said there were two or more explosions, and the last one so loud it effected her hearing. She suffers hearing loss to this day.

Seismographs that monitor earthquakes in the area showed three distinct “events” that shook the needles.

But we were to find in the ensuing weeks and months how evidence and witness statements would be ignored, denied, and manipulated, and how a cloud of political manipulation from the highest levels would change, then control, the investigation into an “official truth.”

But not to me. I had been a police officer too long, and a pit bull when it comes to an investigation. And I didn’t realize on Day Two, Thursday, April 20th, 1995, that the next day I would be one of the investigators—officially assigned.

CHAPTER 3

The Assignment—Why Me?

I had just returned from a routine patrol flight and was in the process of putting the helicopter back in the hanger until the night crew showed up when my pager went off.

I thought “Oh no. Not now!” It was Friday afternoon, April 21st, and I had just put in an hour and a half in the left seat boring holes in the sky. My partner, Sgt. Ron Moulton, had just left, and all I had to do was close up the hanger, fill out our log and fuel sheet, lock up the office and head home. I had day shift most of the time since I also was responsible for maintenance of our two helicopters, and my seniority didn’t hurt (I was the senior officer in the squad), so I normally had weekends off unless I had to fill in for a night shift pilot who was sick or on vacation.

During my previous 25 years in the department I had served as a patrol officer, TAC Squad (SWAT) officer, Bomb Tech, Police Community Relations media officer, Court Liaison Officer, Fugitive Warrants Squad officer, and finally a pilot in the Helicopter Unit, later to be renamed the Air Support Unit.

That afternoon had me winding up one more day behind the badge when a phone call would change my life forever.

I walked down to the office and settled behind my desk. I dialed the number on the pager and it was answered by Senior FBI agent Pete Rickel. He and I and the SAC, Marty Weber, knew each other from previous cases, and I had given Marty a copy of my book *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza.*

The conversation went something like “Craig, this is in relation to the Oklahoma City Bombing. We have this McVeigh guy in jail, but he’s not saying much, just stuff about him now being a POW, and he won’t talk until he gets a lawyer. We don’t know much about him at all, so we were wondering if you could give us some help?”

“Well, Pete, what kind of help could I provide?”

“You have contacts around the State in circles of folks that won’t talk to us but might talk to you. If you could put some feelers out and see if anyone knows McVeigh, or of him, or where he might have been here, we’d appreciate it.”

Having just returned from Washington D.C. after testifying before Congress against the far left “Omnibus Crime Control Act of 1995”, including certain provisions that included the so-called “Assault Weapons Ban” and “Large Capacity Magazine Ban”, which infuriated my Chief of police, Ron Palmer, I told Pete that the only way I could get involved was if they cleared it through the chief, and I was *assigned* to the case.

I hung up the phone and waited. I wasn’t sure the FBI would be able to get the Chief on the phone that late in the day, but within 20 minutes my phone rang and it was headquarters. The chief’s Amin Sergeant was on the line. A person who was not one of my favorite people since he was one of the main instigators of the attacks on me for my trip to Washington.

“Roberts, the FBI requests you to help them. The chief has authorized it, BUT whatever help you provide, it has to be when you are not doing department work. Got it?”

“Yeah, no help when I am doing department work.”

In my mind, I knew that if I got involved in this case, I would be more involved than simply trying to discover any of McVeigh’s travels or associates in Oklahoma. I’m what some of my cohorts describe as a “pit bull” that would not let a case go unless it was solved or I ran out of leads. Though of all my department assignments to various jobs and divisions over the previous 26 years, I had never been assigned to Traffic Division or the Detective Division. However, when I was with the TAC Squad many of our assignments were undercover or plain clothes, including stake outs, high crime area penetrations and our own investigations. And when I was in the Fugitive Warrants Squad for two years, we did a lot of plain clothes operations and investigated our own cases, including old warrant “cold cases.” I was also currently involved in investigative journalism and had just finished authoring *Kill Zone* and co-authoring *JFK: The Dead Witnesses*.

And to me, not working on the case when I was “doing department work” meant when I was flying, working on the helicopters, or doing the admin paperwork. I took that to mean I could work on this case whenever I had dead ground time. That would often give me 2-3 hours a day, and if I was following up on leads, more hours at home in the evenings and weekends.

So, the “assignment” was to find out what I could about McVeigh. But how was I going to do that? Fortunately the Internet, though in its infancy, did provide some advantages. Because I was finally divorced from typewriters and had graduated to the very early word processor software (Wordperfect 5.1 in DOS!), and had an internet account via a dial-up modem—all space-age stuff then. The Internet was a huge advantage in police work and I found it useful for not only email capability but doing research. I had my own PC in the office (that I bought out of my own pocket because headquarters didn’t think the Helicopter Unit *needed* a computer), so I was able to access certain parts of the Internet and Bulletin Board Services (private computers known as “BBS’s”) connected to the Internet full-time that allowed individuals and groups to post messages and hold ongoing conversations.

Also, fortunately, I had taken two years of typing in high school over thirty years before on the old manual typewriters. Then years later, on the department, I had access to IBM Selectric electric typewriters, and finally to word processors. So being able to communicate with a keyboard without “hunt-and-peck” constraints was a huge plus.

I began the following Monday by sending out messages and emails to various areas of the Internet, but I knew that I was not very effective at that point. I explained who I was, and that I was not a Fed, but a local cop here in Oklahoma, and that I was asked to help with the OKC bombing investigation, I wrote that if anyone had any information to share I would like to be contacted, especially if it had to do with McVeigh, and by then, Terry Nichols.

By Tuesday I had a few responses from people who wanted to help, but didn’t know how or what to do. But one response was from someone whose email handle was “Spiker.” I wondered if he was a former member of a Special Forces Vietnam “Spike Team”. When I queried that he gave me a vague response and said “that’s not important.”

He went on to say that he had a “pretty good” knowledge of the Internet and knew how to research various data bases. He said to keep in touch and that he would also be “checking around” on anything he could find out about the bombing. He never gave me his real name, or where he was located, or his background. But he proved to be a valuable asset over the next two years until one day his emails stopped and he never responded to my messages to after that.

In those days we had CompuServe and Genie. I had both and developed contacts on both networks. It was during the following two weeks that I was contacted by various members of local “militias” from various parts of the country, concerned “patriots” and assorted conspiracy theorists. Some had even read some of my books.

Some advised me to buy and listen to shortwave radio and gave me some frequencies of “Patriot” talk shows. Others wanted to know my mailing address and fax number. I responded with my mail suite address I used for my publishing business, knowing better than to give out my home address. I used my personal fax machine at home instead of the department-issued fax at work since that was the line my computer modem was connected to. I also gave my personal office number for the line that rang on my desk. I had voice mail on that line if I was out of the office or off work when a call came in, and I could call and check voice mail from home if needed,

In the second week after which I had put out feelers the following call came in:

“Air Support, Roberts,” I answered.

“Are you the one looking into the bombing case in Oklahoma City?” It was a male voice.

“Yes,” I answered. “What can I help you with?”

“It’s what I can help *you* with that counts. I won’t tell you who I am, but I’ll tell you that I’m a federal agent, and I don’t work for the FBI or ATF. I’m in Little Rock and my office has been involved in an investigation of the Clintons here before the election and before they went to Washington. We knew that if we were to save the records for future use we’d have to move them, basically put them somewhere safe. It was decided to move them to the Federal building in Oklahoma City for storage. I think that’s why that particular building was destroyed…to get rid of the records.”

“That is extremely interesting information. Can you tell me what was in those records, what the status of the investigation was?”

“All I can tell you is that there was enough in them to put a lot of people in jail. I can’t say more than that.” He hung up.

My phones were not recorded, and we did not have Caller ID then. I hoped that if this guy was legit, he’d call again.

I mulled over the conversation. He said he was not FBI or ATF. That basically left DEA and IRS since he said he was a Federal agent and the investigation was obviously criminal. But if some dastardly villain wanted to destroy or simply remove those records, then why didn’t they just send some “official government people” to the building and take them?

The only answer could be that anyone who wanted to find them didn't know where to look, and didn't want to alert anyone who might be involved in hiding them in the first place. If there was a basement in the Murrah Building, could they be there, hidden in stacks of boxes of old records? Would a retrieval team have to comb though boxes and boxes to find them? And wherever they might be stored, did it look like the secret warehouse in the closing scenes of *Raiders of the Lost Ark*?

My mind raced. I felt the call was legitimate. It might be of help, but it was only a clue, and possibly a motive. And the most important part: Why Oklahoma City? Why the Murrah Building?

By then, it had been put discussed in the media, the Department of Justice (Janet Reno) and the White House, that those involved (McVeigh, Nichols, and possibly an Arizona resident, a former Army buddy of McVeigh named Michael Fortier) hit the Murrah Building in retaliation for the FBI assault on Waco that resulted in the death of 74 men, women and children. The media was also launching a massive attack on "the militias," Right Wing talk radio shows, the NRA, and any conservative organization as being anti-government.

To me this was strange because when I was in Washington just two weeks before the bombing all of the politicians and government people I talked to did not have a clue that outside the beltway such organizations as "militias" existed. Now, it was the fault of the militias!

I had interviewed several members of various "militia units," mostly local folks who were not only angry with the direction the government was going under the Clintons and the Democrat-controlled Congress, but were especially concerned about their Right to bear arms to protect themselves and their communities at the local level. These were not people who would blow up a federal installation, they would instead be happy to guard it and protect it against any terrorist attempt. That said, I had the feeling that if it was the United Nations building in New York, that might be a different scenario. The militias hated the UN, globalism, opening our borders, and politicians who subverted the Constitution and their oaths of office. Many were ex-military and were drawn together to organized local defense forces in case "foreign troops" were brought into the U.S. for "peacekeeping."

It would be much later that I discovered that most of these organizations had been infiltrated by government CI's (Confidential Informants), and that some informants were actually working for more than one agency.

Whenever I got any leads that sounded plausible, I would type up a memo and hand carry it to the FBI office in Tulsa and turn it over to Pete Rickel. He was my contact point. I knew from past experience that dealing with federal agencies—especially the FBI—we seldom got any information back unless they were desperate for something local police had. We considered the FBI a "Black Hole". You put stuff in, and it disappeared. I also knew that the FBI was known by local police for taking credit for what local police did if they could. One example is a bank robbery that I and other officers responded to in which we made two apprehensions. Reports were sent to the FBI immediately, but when the newspaper article on the catch came out the next day it was "FBI Apprehends Two

Downtown Bank Robbers.” At the very bottom of the article it mentioned “with the help of local police.”

They say that you need to toot your own horn because you know the tune better than anyone else. I’ve often wondered if that was taught at the FBI Academy.

I was given a mission, and being a Marine and a military man, the mission comes first. So, the hunt was on!

CHAPTER 4

Things Don’t Add Up

It was only a few minutes after the phone call from the “agent” in Little Rock that I remembered something that I saw occur on Day One, something that just did not make any sense to me. About an hour after the explosions, all of a sudden, right in the middle of rescue efforts for those trapped inside the building, people began yelling that there was another bomb in the building. Everyone had to get back, move away from the building as far as they could.

Bomb technicians began to search the building and shortly it was announced “they have found another device and are deactivating it now.” Over the next two days the report changed from barrels of Fulminate of Mercury to a dummy TOW missile that had been used as a recruiting aid in the U.S. Marine recruiting office located in the building. Even though other “devices” were found in the building and were disarmed, the FBI never officially admitted they existed. Doing so would show that others besides McVeigh and John Doe #2 were involved. That would not fit the “official version” of the event.

Excerpt from “*The Winds*” internet article on Oklahoma City:

“During extensive live coverage, several television news reporters gave an exhaustive running chronology of the disaster. One reporter said, “There were more bombs set to go off, according to Bureau of Alcohol Tobacco and Firearms (ATF)”. The Justice Department is reporting that a second explosive device has been found in the A.P. Murrah Building in downtown Oklahoma City.” Another stated, “What we were told at the scene a few minutes ago was that in fact two different explosive devices were found in addition to the one that went off, a total of three bombs. You see the utter devastation that the one explosion caused, here’s what we’re starting to learn about the succession, or what someone obviously hoped would be a succession of explosions.

“The first bomb that was in the federal building did go off. It did the damage that you see right here. The second explosive was found and diffused, the third explosive was found and they are working on it right now as we speak. Both the second and third explosives are larger than the first.

“Through the good work of munitions experts and explosive sniffing dogs, further tragedy has almost certainly been averted here.”

“Oklahoma Governor Frank Keating, in a live telecast stated, “One device has been deactivated, apparently there is another device. Obviously, whatever did the damage to the Murrah Building was a tremendous…a very sophisticated explosive device.” Another reporter said, “They are saying that this is the work of a sophisticated group. This is a very sophisticated device and it had to have been done by an explosives expert.” Other reports revealed “the one and one-half-hour delay in the rescue work was due to the second and third bombs being discovered.” Firemen wept after having to abandon individuals whom they were endeavoring to pull from the rubble when the area had to be evacuated due to the discovery of additional explosive devices. One rescue worker said the woman he had been trying to extricate from the collapsed building had expired before he was able to return.

"Dr. Randall Heather, a terrorism expert, says, 'We should find out a lot when the bombs are taken apart. I think it was a great stroke of luck that we actually have diffused bombs. It is through the bomb material that we will be able to track down those who committed this atrocity.'"

These reports were made during the first few hours after the blast. Given a little time the story was carefully altered. Instead of a sophisticated explosive devise, it was a crude fertilizer bomb. Instead of a sophisticated group with experts in explosives, it was a single individual with nondescript skills, acting independently."

More than one blast

On top of this, there were many reports from individuals in the area and victims who reported more than one blast. And even more interesting is the fact that the seismograph service station for the Oklahoma Geological Survey located in Norman, Oklahoma, south of Oklahoma City recorded THREE "events" Seismometer graph shows three distinct events starting at 9:02 a.m.

RVEY ID:4053257069 APR 24'95

OKLAHOMA GEOLOGICAL SURVEY
ENERGY CENTER
100 E. BOYD ST, RM N-131
NORMAN, OKLAHOMA 73019-0628

FAX TRANSMITTAL SHEET

Their report states "…recorded a Lg surface-wave "train" at 9:02 and 13 seconds shortly after the explosion at the Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. The seismometer is located approximately 4 miles north of Norman and 16 miles from downtown Oklahoma City. A second Lg surface-wave was recorded at 9:02 ad 23 seconds a.m. The location and source of the second surface-wave recording is unknown. Detailed investigations at the building site may offer an explanation as to the cause of the second event."

One witness/victim interviewed stated that "I was upstairs in the ladies room when I felt a rumble and wondered if it was an earthquake, then there was a bigger, sharper blast and that's the one that blew the windows out."

Many other witnesses said that they thought there were two or three different shocks or events as well as the main explosion. One described a "chain of rumbling 'bangs' like smaller explosions, one after another." That could describe explosives on the columns inside the building detonated by "det" cord, which is how derelict buildings are brought down by professional demolition experts!

At the time of the blasts, a meeting was being held a block away at the Water Resources Board. A transcript from the meeting tape contained this excerpt:

"There are four elements that I have to receive information regarding…

BLAST

"Everybody, let's get out of there now!

BLAST

"Watch the electricity lines…out the back door…all the way to the right! Hurry!"

The audio tape of the minutes of the meeting clearly shows two blasts, not one.

Rushing to the Murrah Building were several Oklahoma City police officers and other first responders. OCPD Sgt Don Browning described damage inside the building that had nothing to do with the small crater out front in the street. He told me that "the major damage I saw was in what we later called 'the pit', which was a huge collapse of floors in the back of the building behind the 'cut', and it went down at least two floors into the sub-basement."

OCPD Sgt Terrance "Terry" Yeakey, a large Black officer who had just been nominated for "Officer of the Year" later told others that he had seen what appeared to be charges on some of the columns that did not go off. Yeakey later followed up this sighting with an investigation wherein he obtained what were described as computer generated graphs of radioactivity in the area of the Murrah Building, showing a day-by-day depiction of radiation levels, rising two days before 19 April, and peaking on 19 April, then lasting in a daily decreasing amount for several days afterwards. He had several copies of the computer disk he had obtained made and distributed them to "safe places." It has been speculated that these disks or files were what his killers were looking for when he was murdered ("suicided") a few weeks after the bombing. (More on that later)

Right in the middle of efforts of police officers, firefighters, doctors, nurses and EMT personnel trying to rescue trapped victims, everyone was called back and told to clear the building because "more bombs have been found!"

But as soon as the area around the building was cleared beyond a perimeter, witnesses describe a "military box type ambulance" pulling in and backing up to the building (some witnesses describe two trucks). Then "federal agents" dressed in black raid jackets with no lettering on the back began entering the rubble and bringing out file boxes.

If there were other devices in the building, why would those men be there before the building was declared safe? What was so important in those file boxes that they had to be retrieved right then?

When asked by the media what was happening when it was pointed out that rescue workers had been restrained while files were being brought out, the FBI spokesman, Gene Pogue, stated that it was "unfortunate," but otherwise refused to comment.

Then, hours later, after the rescue efforts resumed, they were again ordered to stop searching for survivors again while federal officials removed more boxes of documents. According to the *New York Daily News* of May 1, 1995, "You'd think they would have let their evidence and files sit at least until the last survivor was pulled out," one angry rescue worker told the News. "They had guys carrying out boxes while the rescue workers were forced to sit on their hands," said the worker, a member of the canine rescue squad who requested anonymity.

"The rescue worker and an Oklahoma City firefighter, who also asked that this name be withheld, offered similar accounts in separate interviews.

"The two said about 10-12 hours after the 9 a.m. blast, the federal officials began limiting the number of rescue workers allowed in the building to about a dozen, confining them largely to the lower right side of the battered structure."

Meanwhile, groups of 40-50 federal agents (all in unmarked raid jackets) spent much of the night searching for and carrying out dozens of boxes from the seventh and ninth floors. These floors are where the offices of the DEA and ATF were located. The first files that were retrieved earlier that day were in the lower areas or basement.

According to reports "the content of the files are unknown, but federal sources said they were looking into the possibility that alleged bomber Timothy McVeigh and his accomplices had targeted the nine-story building in an effort to destroy DEA or ATF investigation files."

As soon as I heard this I knew that this was a huge lie. McVeigh would not know about any files in either office that would be of interest to him. And why would he care about destroying them in the first place?

Weeks later rumors began to circulate that the building contained the files on the Waco raid, or the government "secret" files on the Gulf War disease, or similar files on Agent Orange, the defoliant sprayed in Vietnam that caused so many ailments and deaths of Vietnam veterans.

None of this was true. The night-time removal of files of active cases from the DEA and ATF might be plausible, but telling rescue workers to stop looking for surviving victims while they did their search for paper was not. Unless that "paper" happened to be what the "federal agent" described to me on the phone! IF they were the files on the investigations of the Ft. Smith DEA or IRS into the Mena drug smuggling, the Arkansas "Mafia," the "Dixie Mafia," and the Clinton connections to this and Iran/Contra, plus the money laundering of the drug money through the Rose Law Firm and the Bank of North Little Rock as described in Terry Reed's book *Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA*, it would make sense that such files would be of paramount importance to the Clintons and their accomplices in Arkansas and Washington.

Oklahoma City Fire Chief Gary Marrs said “Since day one, the federal agents have been in there with us and have had free run of the building.” He didn’t explain why the search “seemed scaled back.”

Were the Mena files there? Is that why it was so important to let people die while agents retrieved such files? This could not have happened if they were just standard investigatory files on gun crimes or drug investigations…unless the drugs were the ones that went through Mena!

From *Final Report: On the Bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building April 19, 1995*—sequence of Day One events pages 164-169

More things that happened on Day One did not match events later reported by the media. By Day Three the media was reporting that McVeigh, alone, drove the Ryder truck to the Murrah Building, parked in front, escaped in the yellow Mercury, and then was apprehended by OHP trooper Charlie Hanger north of Oklahoma City as he sped away toward Kansas.

They left out a lot.

Only by reconstructing events according to eye witnesses do we find an entirely different scenario. By piecing together events as they unfolded chronologically with the bits and pieces witnessed by those who the FBI either refused to talk to, or ignored, or took their reports and filed them in the Black Hole, we can see what happened that morning.

One of the first things that surfaced was a sighting of McVeigh and one other male in the Ryder truck when it pulled into the parking lot at Johnny’s Tire Store at 401 NW 10th at 8:40 a.m.. Mike Moroz, an employee, walked out to the parking lot to see if they needed help. Inside he saw McVeigh behind the driver’s wheel and a dark skinned male passenger who wore a white baseball cap with blue or purple “flames”. McVeigh asked for directions to the Murrah Building, which is very suspect since he had personally cased the building several days before.

The next sighting in the same time frame was across the street from the Regency Tower apartment building, a block west of the Murrah Building. McVeigh was seen inside by Danny Wilkerson who sold McVeigh a pack of cigarettes and two sodas (McVeigh didn’t smoke). This was at 8:45 a.m., only five minutes after leaving the tire store. Meanwhile a second Ryder truck occupied by two male subjects was seen driving around the downtown area, and in Bricktown, a warehouse district southeast of downtown turned into a tourist area of restaurants and bars, in the same time frame.

McVeigh and the second man then drove around the block and parked once again across from the Regency Tower, where McVeigh parked the truck next to the curb and used a pay phone. The second occupant appeared to be dark complected and wore a baseball cap.

Leroy Brooks, who was at the post office, saw the Ryder truck and the yellow Mercury on the same street as Wilkerson, but described it as having moved up several spaces toward the Murrah Building. Both occupants got out of the truck and appeared to exchange a small object.

At this same time a UPS truck had pulled up to the front of the Murrah Building and was making a delivery. What were described as two “Middle Eastern males” in blue jogging suits were at the front door and a brown GMC pickup truck with a smoked glass bug shield was parked a few parking places farther down the street to the east. (author’s note: I later saw a blow up of a sheriff’s department surveillance shot of the UPS truck in front of the building taken a few minutes before 9 a.m., proving that the building *was* staked out in advance. *Someone* had foreknowledge of the threat!).

When Brooks returned to his car he noticed the Ryder truck had moved up and parked in front of the Murrah Building where the UPS truck had been. It is evident that McVeigh had to park across from the Regency Tower until a space became available in front of the Murrah Building. That happened when the UPS truck left. The spot appears to have been “saved” by the two men in jogging suits, who immediately left, ran down the street to the brown pickup truck, then drove off at a high rate of speed.

McVeigh and his cohort exited the truck, and his cohort walked to the rear of the truck for a minute. Then both hurried across the street to the north and then east, with one witness saying McVeigh “strutted like he was quickly marching.”

Path of the Ryder truck according to witnesses. First, it stopped in front of the post office at 5th and Harvey streets where McVeigh and John Doe 2 exited and had an animated conversation on the sidewalk while the UPS truck was parked in front of the Murrah Building. Then they drove the truck to the front of the building. The two Middle Eastern Males who wore blue jogging suits that had saved the parking spot after the UPS truck left, ran west to the brown GMC pickup truck and made their exit. McVeigh and JD 2 then crossed the street and left through the Journal Records building parking lot, almost running over an employee who got a good look at both occupants.

Journal Records Building
Alley
Witness #2
Water Resources Board
Yellow Mercury
N
Apt. Bldg.
Witness #1
Post Office
NW 5th St.
One Way
Witnesses #3 & #4
Murrah Federal Building
Harvey
Robinson
Federal Courthouse

Path of Ryder truck. It stopped across from the post office, then moved to the front of the Murrah Building when the UPS truck left. McVeigh and John Doe #4 exited and crossed the street to the yellow Mercury Marquis and left through the Journal Record parking lot northbound.

Gary Lewis, a Journal-Records employee, had just stepped out into the alley between his building and the parking lot north of the Murrah Building, when he was almost run over by the yellow Mercury. Inside were McVeigh and a dark complected male in the passenger seat. He described the passenger as “Middle Eastern.” Lewis said the passenger had a look of “hate” on his face. As the car passed him he noted a white license plate dandling on the rear bumper by one bolt. What is interesting is that the license plate on the escape vehicle put out on our police teletype was a “brown Arizona tag.” But when Charlie Hanger stopped the car north of Oklahoma City the passenger was gone, and the license plate was missing.

A few minutes after the explosions, Kay Clark was crossing Broadway near the Murrah Building when she was almost hit by two men driving a brown pickup truck. She stated that they looked “Middle-Eastern,” and the driver’s expression was a “chilling look of fear or anger.”

Even after the explosion several witnesses said they saw “Middle Eastern men in the vicinity of the Murrah Building. Also, McVeigh was witnessed in several other locations at the same time. This is impossible ,but leads one to believe that “look-a-likes” were used to confuse the issue.

David Hoffman, in an email to me in August, 1995, summed up several points. He wrote “two trucks were involved. Maybe both came from Junction City—the one seen at Geary Lake on the 14th, and the one rented by McVeigh and two others on the 17th. Two trucks were seen in OKC on the 19th—one in Bricktown and one at the Post Office and then the Murrah Building at the same time. McVeigh and JD#2 were in the one that pulled up in front of the Murrah Building, and two others were in the one seen in Bricktown as a diversion to witnesses.”

Hoffman, myself, and several other members of what I would originally call Team Rebel (then later, as the team grew, “The Baker Street Irregulars” after the Sherlock Holmes stories), worked various aspects of at least two Ryder trucks, and possibly up to four!

The *Journal Record* building, located across a parking lot north of the Murrah Building, was also heavily damaged during the blast. One employee said that he saw a “tall Arab-looking man” standing at the intersection of NW 6th Street and Harvey, looking at the Murrah wreckage with a “big grin” on his face.

A woman named Germaine Johnston had left the Murrah Building and was on her way to the Kerr-McGee Building north of the Journal Records building to find her husband. She encountered two men in the alley between the two Southwestern Bell buildings, a block north of the Journal Records building. She said that one was tall and one shorter and darker. They were leaning against an older model, faded-yellow, four-door Mercury Marquis. She knew the make and model because her husband had owned one. The taller man asked her “What happened? How many people were killed?” Later, when she saw McVeigh on TV, she knew that he was the man she had seen in the alley. The shorter man, according to her description, was approximately 5’8” and 165 lbs.

Jack Cornett, a former Oklahoma City Councilman, was standing at Hudson and Kerr Avenues in downtown Oklahoma City waiting for family members at 9:45 when a man came up to him and said “maybe they got all the inspectors.”

Cornett did not know what he meant, but he decided to follow him and see where he went. The man headed west on Kerr, and when Cornett reached Walker street he happened upon a police officer named Gore. He asked for help regarding the man but Gore ignored the request. Cornett continued to follow the man and came up on another OCPD officer, who also ignored his request. Shortly after that he lost the individual, and saw a white four-door car race out of an alleyway and turn onto Kerr at a high rate of speed.

Cornett contacted FBI agent Joe Gray and relayed what he saw. No interest was shown. He then made an appointment wth the head of the Oklahoma City FBI office, Bob Ricks (who was a key FBI player at Waco). After Ricks retired he was appointed by Governor Frank Keating to the post of Commissioner of the Oklahoma Department of Public Safety with the responsibility for the Oklahoma Highway Patrol.

Cornett provided his information to Ricks. He was never contacted by the FBI again.

Cornett described the man as “about 30 years old, 5’ 6” to 5’ 7”, had dark features, which appeared to be Arabic…wore no hat or tie, had an open shirt and a brown leather jacket vest with blue trim. The man’s hair was dark and he may have had slight facial hair.” Police officers seldom get such detailed descriptions from witnesses and it is amazing that the FBI would not follow up on this lead.

The big question at that time, which still remains, is exactly how many John Does were there?

We’ll probably never know exactly who and how many got out of the Ryder truck with the explosives inside, or any other video taped activity that morning because the FBI confiscated all the surveillance video tapes in the area. They not only removed the cameras, they patched up the holes where the mounts were. Then within a day or two, and they even pulled out the wiring from the walls to remove all traces that video cameras even existed. These spots were then painted over. Why would they do this, and, exactly *who* ordered it and why?

To this day, no one has been able to gain access to these tapes. These “Zapruder Films” have been described as “still part of an ongoing investigation (17 years later, and after the FBI said the case was closed with McVeigh’s death?), or when sued with FOIAs, “we just can’t find them.”

At least on one occasion the excuse was “it’s a matter of national security.”

CHAPTER 5

Never Let a Tragedy Go to Waste

One of the main, if not the main issue, that State Rep. Charles Key (R-Oklahoma City) was concerned about was “did the government have foreknowledge of the possibility of the bombing, and if so, why didn’t they stop it?

Within a few days of the bombing Rep. Key was contacted by several concerned citizens and victims’ family members who felt that they were not receiving all the facts from the federal investigators, and that many of them who were victims or witnesses knew that the government and the media were not telling the whole truth and were leaving out many facts that did not fit the government scenario put forth by the mainstream media.

Rep. Key began to ask questions, then, not receiving honest or believable answers, formed a group to look into the bombing and try to ascertain the facts. What became the Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee, made up of volunteer citizens at no cost to the taxpayer, established a foundation for what would grow into a joint effort by many concerned individuals. Investigative journalists like David Hoffman of *The Haight Ashbury Free Press* (left wing publication) and William Jasper of *The Free American* magazine (right wing publication), law enforcement officers such as myself from Tulsa PD, NYPD retired detective Jimmy Rothstein, and Sgt. Don Browning of the Oklahoma City Police Department would all work together to battle for the truth and would coordinate our findings with Key’s committee. The original four members of the OBIC committee were Rep. Key; V.Z. Lawton, who was at his desk in the Murrah Building when the explosions occurred; Dale L. Phillips, a concerned Oklahoma City resident; and Lt. Col. George Wallace (USAF Ret), a Vietnam war fighter pilot who became very concerned when he felt the government, was being dishonest about the events surrounding the bombing.

Eventually several others joined in to help with the investigation, sharing their discoveries and enquiries with the Committee. This included Ken Blood who served as chairman to the petition drive to impanel the Oklahoma County Grand Jury, Brig. General Benton K. Partin (USAF Ret), who was an Air Force explosives expert, Lt. Colonel Roger Charles (USMC Ret), Pat Briley (former US Navy nuclear submarine officer), Jayna Davis (KFOR TV reporter), and many others.

In Charles Key’s own words: “I was serving in the Oklahoma Legislature as a State Representative at the time of the bombing. Almost immediately, survivors and relatives of victims of the bombing began contacting me to express concerns they had about the manner in which the federal government was conducting the investigation. Within two months of the bombing, several explosives experts had come forward to present evidence that the destruction to the building could not possibly have been caused by one ammonium nitrate fuel oil (ANFO) bomb.

Quoted from *The Report*: “On the very day of the bombing, survivors were interviewed by the media who stated that they had felt the building shaking, similar to experiencing an earthquake, just prior to the explosion. Some of them even stated that the shaking sensation allowed them enough time to seek shelter underneath their desks, which they credit with saving their lives. This certainly supports the evidence that more than one bomb caused the destruction to the Murrah Building.

“Within hours of the bombing, sightings of suspicious characters seen in downtown Oklahoma City early that morning were reported, and ‘all point bulletins’ were immediately circulated by law enforcement. Curiously, the APBs were withdrawn once Timothy McVeigh was apprehended slightly over an hour after the bombing.

“All of these facts came to my attention within days of the bombing. So many broken-hearted families affected directly by the bombing had unanswered questions and implored me, in my capacity as an elected official, to pursue further investigations into the case. This resulted in the formation of the Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee by private citizens, which was funded solely through the private sector.”

The OBIC, over the next year and beyond, accumulated enough evidence to prove the original contention that the Federal Government (under Bill Clinton, Janet Reno, and Louis Freeh) had prior knowledge of the bombing. They also determined that Timothy McVeigh did not act alone, and besides having help from Terry Nichols, they also determined that several “John Does” were involved.

For example, they found that the Department of Justice had received a phone call 24 minutes *before* the bombing saying that “The federal building in Oklahoma City has just been bombed!” No action by the DoJ was taken. The OBIC also had witnesses who said that Oklahoma Representative Ernest Istook mentioned advance knowledge. Oklahoma County Deputy Sheriff David Kochendorfer said that Istook told him at the scene that, “Yeah, we knew this was going to happen.” Another deputy, Don Hammonds, said Istook told him “yes, we knew this was gong to happen.” Istook later did a media briefing and denied any prior knowledge.

Other witnesses saw the Oklahoma County Sheriff’s bomb disposal truck with “Bomb Squad” on the doors and pulling a large “bomb bucket” trailer parked in the church lot across the street from the Federal Court House building, located just behind the Murrah Building on the south side earlier that morning. Bombing victim Jane Graham told reporters later that when she went to work earlier that morning she saw two ATF agents standing in front of the main entrance to the building wearing their ATF lettered raid jackets. She had never seen anyone from their office in those jackets before that day.

But no matter what was determined, the Committee could not get the various government entities, from the mayor and chief of police of Oklahoma City, to the FBI, to the U.S. Department of Justice, to listen to the Committee, take their findings, or do anything except deny, discredit, debunk and stonewall the Committee.

The Committee had crucial eyewitnesses who could have testified that they saw McVeigh in the company of others. Dozens of eyewitnesses, according to the Committee’s *Final Report* “were led to believe that they would be called to testify in the federal trials, but when they were not, they were dismayed and insulted to learn that not only was their testimony going to be ignored, but federal prosecutors were labeling them as ‘not credible.’”

By the end of the Committee’s investigation it became apparent that all the work that was done was being ignored by the Federal Government. In the words of the Bombing

Report: “Our committee is realistic enough to know that all legal avenues have been exhausted. By the time this Report is published, Timothy McVeigh will have been executed. For some, that will provide the closure they need. However, the scope of the “‘worst terrorist attack in American History’ demands answers to questions that remain….”

From *The Final Report*: “Over the past six years since the bombing, much of the evidence we have accumulated has been ignored or derided by the mainstream media. We are not the enemy. We are not anti-government. It is because we love our country that we demand and have the right to expect the best possible government…It is our belief that the bombing in Oklahoma City will not be the last terrorist attack on U.S. soil (*author's note: this was written long before the World Trade Center attacks of 9/11*). Since all of the perpetrators have not been caught, they are still free to continue their work. This will happen again.”

As to the key question of “foreknowledge,” several facts stand out. During my investigation it was determined that the Oklahoma County Sheriff’s bomb squad was on site that morning and had been witnessed searching the area, as were bomb dogs. The building had been staked out all night, but those involved in the stake-out went home around dawn when nothing had transpired, according to witnesses.

But something that I personally saw struck home on this subject. I saw, in court in Tulsa during one of the hearings, a blown-up poster-size photo of a UPS truck in front of the Murrah Building, and the time log on the photograph showed a time just before 9 a.m., April 19th! The photo had to have been taken from a stake-out car belonging to either OCPD or the Oklahoma County Sheriff’s Department! That means they had prior knowledge that something was going to transpire. Also, previous to seeing this poster-size photo of the UPS truck, I had received two separate emails that simply said “It wasn’t a Ryder Truck! It was a UPS Truck!” Those that sent these emails to me evidently saw the UPS truck in front of the building just before the Ryder truck arrived, or saw the photograph taken by the stake-out unit at the scene.

This melded with another informant who contacted me saying it was a UPS truck and not a Ryder truck that held the bomb. That would make sense if that is what they saw just before the Ryder truck pulled up. But the court refused to pay any attention to that display in the back of the courtroom, and ignored those individuals from Oklahoma City that brought it. Such inaction by the “official investigators” would be the case throughout the aftermath and the following so-called “investigation.” It was clear that the official government investigators, the courts, and the media were all being directed and manipulated to avoid any discovery of others that were involved. The question was *why*?

While victims, witnesses, and independent investigators were seeing bizarre twists in the investigation in the days following the bombing, it was becoming rapidly apparent that a huge coverup was in progress. At the same time, a political agenda was unfolding that had no actual relationship to the bombing. It was becoming obvious that high level politicians, including the then-resident of the White House, were not letting a “good tragedy go to waste”.

Clinton and his leftist cohorts in and outside government circles, saw an opportunity to piggyback on the event to get other things done that would not have passed muster with the American public, but now would, due to what is known as The Hegelian Dialectic.

Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel was a 19th century German philosopher who devised a particular dialectic, or, method of argument, for resolving disagreements—or accomplishing political agendas by making the general population want the changes that they would not previously accept. It was a matter of Thesis, Synthesis, and Antithesis. The *Thesis* is an event that captures the attention of the masses such as a terrorist attack, the *Synthesis* is a “solution” to the event that the people would never have considered but now will, such as loss of freedoms for more security, and giving the government (elitists) more power. Finally *Antithesis*, which in the case of examples such as the *Reichstag* Fire, the Oklahoma City Bombing—and later 9/11, achieves the final goal and in many cases turns a nation into a police state.

In the case of the Oklahoma City Bombing, the “Antiterrorism and Effective Death Penalty Act” in Congress was stalled. And the “Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act of 1994” (sometimes referred to as The Omnibus Crime Control Act) was a huge bill that had just passed and became Public Law 103-322. The printed copy was an inch thick and covered dozens of topics in the proposed laws. But the main area of interest is how much gun control was in the Act. Of special concern was *Title XI—Firearms, Subtitle A—Assault Weapons.* In section 110102 it stated “It shall be unlawful for a person to manufacture, transfer, or possess a semiautomatic assault weapon.” (This sunsetted ten years later, much to the consternation of liberals in government and media). Congress was clueless on what an “assault weapon” was except that in the hands of the citizenry it was a threat to a tyrannical government. In other words, liberal globalist politicians wanted to reduce the firepower of the American people and their ability to resist tyranny (which is exactly why the Second Amendment exists in the first place). So if the liberals could not totally ban all firearms, they could at least ban them incrementally until nothing was left, as what had happened in England, Canada and Australia.

The stalled *Antiterrorism and Effective Death Penalty Act of 1996*, which had stalled in Congress, thanks to the Hegelian Dialectic effect was passed in response to the Oklahoma City bombing. It created 60 new death penalty offenses under Title 41: These included federal capital statutes for crimes related to acts of terrorism, murder of a federal law enforcement officer, civil rights-related murders, use of weapons of mass destruction resulting in death, carjackings resulting in death, and drive-by shootings resulting in death. In other words, the Federal Government, in passing this act and getting it signed into law, created its own jurisdiction in crimes that occurred in a State. These previously were not federal crimes. Up to that point such crimes had nothing to do with the federal government, nor interstate jurisdiction which was previously the only jurisdiction the federal government had.

Next, the suspicious records that were removed from the building within hours of the bombing (while victims were still trapped inside) could have possibly been the files referred to by my mysterious federal agent caller that involved drug smuggling through Mena, Arkansas while Bill Clinton was governor. If so, they may have included reports of probes into the money laundering that was also involved, where the money went, and the names of the players who were involved in the Arkansas end of Iran/Contra. The FBI admitted that the 50 agents involved in the file removal took files from the offices of the 9th floor offices of the ATF and DEA! The reference to the DEA would make sense because the DEA would have been one of the primary agencies that would have been investigating the Mena drug smuggling, with the IRS being the second. The Clinton administration would have been determined to see such records never see the light of day, especially since he was up for re-election.

After the 1996 elections, Clinton told a pool of reporters, according to *The Secret Life of Bill Clinton*, that he "owed his political revival to the Oklahoma bombing. He was in a reflective mood, looking back at the ups and downs of his turbulent presidency. As so often, his thoughts lingered on those first painful months after the Republicans captured both Houses of Congress for the first time in almost two generations. It had been a stinging rebuke for the White House. But then that bomb went off. It broke a spell in the country as people began searching for our common ground again."

Had the bombing been carried out by foreign radicals, the impact on the national psyche would have been far less. But this was an alleged homegrown conspiracy. Clinton used that to his advantage.

In April 1995 the Republican Congress was completing its one hundred-day march; the Contract with America was being rushed through the House; the Education Department was going to be abolished, the Commerce Department would follow, Housing and Urban Development would be next, and the Environmental Protection Agency was going to be eliminated—not to mention that the BATF was under fire and being considered for elimination.

Now, due to the bombing, those things fell by the wayside. Right Wing talk radio was being demonized as "extremist" and evil, and the militia movement was perceived to be an onslaught against the government. All of these were cast in the government-controlled "mainstream media" to be, in the mind of the public, as one vast Right Wing conspiratorial movement of extremism—and totally "anti-government." From that point on, the militias—which no one in Washington seemed to notice or even realize existed two weeks earlier when I testified before Congress against the so-called "assault weapon ban"—were now referred to as "The anti-government militias" in the media.

Clinton, seizing the public's attention, lambasted talk radio—especially Rush Limbaugh—for broadcasting "a relentless clamor of hatred and division." The Right, he said, "was sowing distrust of government institutions and creating a climate that fostered recourse to violence." The media, in turn, made the connection for the leftists in government. They insinuated Tim McVeigh was the military extremist extension of the Republican agenda and the Republican Party was as guilty as McVeigh, as were the radio talk show hosts and the various "militia" organizations. Some Republican politicians dared to mention that it was the FBI's killing of Randy Weaver's wife and son at Ruby Ridge, Idaho, and the deployment of tanks and APCs by the FBI against women and children in Waco that had most influenced American opinion of the current administration and their political appointees. But most "weak sister" Republicans were too intimidated to offer a defense or any resistance to the onslaught of propaganda. Sen. Phil Gramm said "I think we all need to be very careful that we keep politics out of this thing," but even that caused him to be harshly criticized for his "mean streak."

The fears of the average American and especially of the “Constitutional Militias” was being realized.

CHAPTER 6

Blaming the Militias and the Right Wing

Within three days the national media began pointing fingers. With the blame-game coming out of the White House press room and the Department of Justice's public affairs office, along with the "help" of the liberal far-left Anti-Defamation League in Washington, and a "law office" in Birmingham, Alabama founded by an opportunist left wing lawyer named Morris Dees, it didn't take long before the major networks began helping with the propaganda misdirection that "it was the militias!"

After all, wasn't McVeigh a right wing nut? Wasn't he anti-government? And what about him being seen and photographed at Waco? And he goes to gun shows! And just look at him, he looks *military*! Obviously he was a deranged war veteran who became angry over the tragedy in Waco and wanted to do something about it. And he had been seen at militia meetings!

Never mind that he was thrown out of those meetings, in Florida, Michigan and Texas, and no so-called "militia" took credit for the bombing or helping McVeigh in any way. Forget objective journalism. The "modern day" media is inhabited not by honest journalists and reporters, but political spin doctors who do little more than advertise their agenda through what they try to convince us is "news."

It is well known in intelligence circles that most media around the world are little more than extensions of the regimes in those countries. Any dissenting opinions or actual news that counter media broadcasts are quickly condemned as lies, and fall victim to the Five "D's": Deny, Debunk, Discredit, Demonize, and Destroy.

In the case of some reporters who tried to investigate the case and expose its discrepancies and total falsehoods, the penalty was loss of their jobs—and in some cases death. KFOR reporter Jayna Davis, who was the initial investigative reporter who followed the Middle Eastern connection eventually lost her job. Her station was bought by the *New York Times*, and all stories on the OKC bombing were highly edited and directed away from actual facts. Ms. Davis had been relegated to what she describes as "cub reporter" assignments and she felt that it was the New York Times way of forcing her to quit. Any new information on the bombing never saw the light of day outside Oklahoma, and often not out of Oklahoma City.

In Jayna Davis's words "Scorching winds of change whipped through the Channel 4 newsroom in the summer of 1996. The jet stream blowing in from the east coast carried a stormy forecast for my professional future when the media giant, the New York Times Corporation, purchased KFOR-TV. The new ownership immediately spiked all stories on John Doe 2 and the Middle Eastern connection. My most loyal supporters, the news director and station manager, found employment in other television markets. I, too, moved on, tendering my resignation on the eve of Timothy McVeigh's federal trial in March 1997." She went on to write a best-selling book *The Third Terrorist: The Middle East Connection to the Oklahoma City Bombing* that exposed in great detail the Middle Eastern Connection and several of those involved.

Other reporters from various news outlets who went after the truth and asked too many embarrassing questions were also chastised and labeled “conspiracy theorists.” Facts developed by these individuals were immediately changed to “theories.” It was obvious that anyone who went against the government’s official line was “off the reservation” and not to be believed.

One has to keep in mind, however, that during that time period of American history, American citizens had become very concerned by the antics of the federal government under Bill Clinton and his left wing liberal team players in Washington. The public was horrified by the way the ATF and FBI conducted the Ruby Ridge, Idaho, tragedy which resulted in the death of reclusive Randy Weaver’s wife, Vicki, and son, Sammy. The story of what led up to the event began when the ATF attempted to recruit Randy Weaver via an undercover informant. They first had an “asset” go to Weaver and talk him into sawing off the barrels of two shotguns, making them illegal. When that happened the ATF threatened Weaver with prosecution unless he agreed to infiltrate the nearby compound of the Aryan Nations. When Weaver refused the ATF filed gun charges on him. Weaver failed to appear in court and a bench warrant was issued. When US Marshals clandestinely approached the Weaver cabin to arrest him, one of the agents shot Weaver’s dog. Nearby, Weaver’s son, Sammy, who had a rifle, saw that and thought he was under attack and shot back, then began running to the cabin to warn his father, He was shot by another marshal’s M-16. In what ensued, Weaver’s friend, Kevin Harris, fired a shot that struck and killed U.S. Marshal William Degan.

The situation immediately turned into a standoff, and eventually the Marshals were called back to be replaced by the FBI’s “Hostage Rescue Team” and their snipers. During what ensued, Weaver’s wife, Vicki, was shot and killed by Lon Horiuchi, an FBI sniper, when Horiuchi was attempting to shoot Kevin Harris as he ran toward the door of the cabin. Eventually, Weaver and his friend Kevin Harris were talked into surrendering. After being jailed and enduring court hearings, Weaver was sentenced to 18 months with credit for time served, and Harris was acquitted. The federal government eventually was proven in the courts of being in error for many reasons and the Weaver family was awarded $100,000 to Weaver and $1,000,000 each to his three daughters.

Following this, in 1993, the federal government again shocked the public with the siege at Waco, Texas, of the Branch Davidians religious sect. The leader of the sect, David Koresh (real name Vernon Wayne Howell) believed himself to be a prophet and that the world was in the End Times, as prophesied in the Book of Revelation in the Holy Bible. His followers were also convinced of this and the group took measures to protect themselves “when the forces of Satan finally came.” The Branch Davidian sect was an offshoot of the Seventh Day Adventists, whose majority of sermons concern Bible prophecy, the New World Order, and the Tribulation period described in The Book of Revelation.

When a UPS driver dropped a box while delivering it to the Waco compound, and it broke open, exposing what he thought were hand grenades—which later turned out to be legal empty grenade bodies—he notified federal law enforcement. The case was quickly taken up by the ATF, who planned and executed a raid on the compound on February 28th, 1993. The raid was possibly a much-needed media stunt as the ATF was on the chopping block in Washington for several reasons, one of which was being considered a “rogue out-of-control agency." It should also be noted that the media was invited along and brought their cameras. The plan was to remove all the weapons found inside the compound and lay them out for the TV crews to film, showing that the ATF disarmed a bunch of radical opponents of the government. It didn't work out as planned. The raid met fierce resistance and the ATF suffered casualties and had to withdraw. The situation was then turned over to the FBI who began a 51 day siege ending when the buildings caught fire during a high wind while being attacked with gas from an armored M88 tank retriever, and burned to the ground on April 19th 1993—the same day and month that the Murrah Building would be bombed.

Four ATF agents and six Branch Davidians were killed in the initial raid, and 76 people were killed in the final assault, including David Koresh. Eleven Davidians who managed to survive were arrested.

What the American people witnessed in both events was an overbearing federal government and its agencies using extreme force to attack American citizens. There were those who said "they got what they deserved." But most thinking people could see that in Weaver's eyes, he and his wife had bought land in the mountains of Idaho to be left alone and safe from the world's collapse. What he feared might happen to him and his family did happen. In David Koresh's mind and teachings that the attack on him and his followers was the fulfillment of prophecy, the government had not only over-reacted, but now was showing that it would not hesitate to use maximum force against the people. Oddly, the FBI, who is famous for profiling criminals, during the entire siege, never called upon any Christian religious scholars to try and figure out what the Branch Davidian mindset was all about. If they had, they would have realized that they were "proving" Koresh's warnings about the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse and the sounding of the trumpets in Revelation. If they had called in religious scholars, there may have been an entirely different ending to the disaster. As it was, the Davidians were determined to "fight evil" to the death. The ATF and FBI's arrival became a fulfillment of prophecy.

Though there had been people who had come together in like-minded groups to form militias since the beginning of this country, mostly for self-protection, the years throughout the Cold War and up to the 1990s saw such organizations grow in number and sophistication. The "Minutemen" of the Cold War were groups who feared invasion by the Soviet Union, or occupation of our country by UN troops, or even a government that had been subverted by Communism and subsequently fallen to control by Moscow. Eventually that organization faded away and is not related to the later Minutemen border militia of Arizona.

By the 1990s, mostly due to the gun seizing/gun control agenda of the Democrats in Congress and the Clinton administration, several militia organizations began to appear and train with weapons and military tactics. They feared the U.S. government and what it would and could do after witnessing the above events coupled with the overbearing federal agencies such as the Bureau of Land Management, the Federal Emergency Management Agency (who they suspected of building concentration camps for resisters), the Environmental Protection Agency (who they felt had no reason to have its own SWAT teams), the IRS, the FBI and ATF, and left-wing politicians in general.

When I was in Washington to testify before Congress (the House Sub-Committee on

Crime) on April 5th, 1995, none of the politicians or bureaucrats I visited with over a three day period had any idea that there were such things as “militia units” out in “fly-over land” who not only distrusted the government, but feared the government. After Ruby Ridge and Waco, these units were growing in number and expanding in membership.

But within three days of the bombing, just 14 days after I had left D.C., all of a sudden the government and the media were blaming “the militia” as if there was one parent organization that stretched across the country and posed a real threat to the might of the U.S. Government. They were painted as anti-government zealots who were more akin to the KKK than a neighborhood watch program.

In actual fact, most militia meeting attendees were average people who were concerned with the direction this country was heading and were preparing to try and defend themselves, their families, their land, and their communities against any threat that might come. One had to remember that environmentalists had created laws that effected people’s rights to their own property. And many other aspects of daily life had become a deep concern for families. Such things as government control of our schools and textbooks, invasion of private business, such as bank accounts, and even the seizing of private property.

Then, after the Oklahoma City bombing, The Democrats’ “Anti-terrorism Bill,” which had been stagnant until then, all of a sudden shifted to the fast track to give the government even more power. Clinton, seeking to expand the government’s power after the Oklahoma City bombing, stated that “I don’t think we have to give up our liberties. [But] we do have to take more seriously threats to our liberties.”

He then put all federal buildings on high alert and immediately “urged” the formation of a counter-terrorism unit headed by the FBI. He ordered a presidential directive authorizing further steps to “combat terrorism.” The Oklahoma City bombing was the thesis, or catalyst, in the best Hegelian Dialectic, for what was to follow.

Senate Judiciary Committee Chairman Orrin Hatch drafted provisions calling for expanded FBI authority to track international and *domestic* terrorism; House judiciary Committee Chairman Henry Hyde began writing legislation that included Clinton’s proposals, which when re-written, would combine several bills on a fast track to passage in both houses. They included:

Establishment of a Domestic Counter-terrorism Center headed by the FBI gave the FBI increased authority to search phone logs and hotel and motel registers, and greater access to credit card records; created a federal crime of “international terrorism committed within the United States punishable by death”; expanded federal wire tapping and surveillance powers; forbade fund-raising by organizations the president designated as “terrorist”; permitted evidence from secret sources to be used in deportation proceedings; permitted federal agents to seize and search library records; and allowed the Justice Department to investigate *crimes based on political beliefs and associations of suspects.*

Another bill that was proposed directly attacked the militias just 28 days after I testified in Washington. It was short titled: “The Domestic Insurgency Act of 1995” introduced by Rep. Jerold Nadler (D-NY). In it he proposed fining and imprisoning participants in a paramilitary organization for a period of ten years. The text of the Bill was as follows:

HR 1544 To prohibit the formation of private paramilitary organizations.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the

United States of America in Congress assembled,

SECTION 1. SHORT TITLE.

This Act may be cited as the ”Domestic Insurgency Act of 1995”.

SEC. 2. PARAMILITARY ORGANIZATIONS.

(a) In General.—Chapter 115 of title 18, United States Code, is amended by adding at the end the following:

“Sec. 2392. Paramilitary organizations

“(a) Whoever knowingly participates in a paramilitary organization shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than 10 years, or both.

“(b) As used in this section, the term ‘paramilitary organization’ means two or more individuals acting together, organized in a military or paramilitary structure, who knowingly—

“(1) possess firearms, explosives, incendiary devices, or other weapons or techniques capable of causing injury or death to individuals; or

“(2) provide or participate in training in the use of any such weapons or techniques; with the intention that such weapons or techniques be used unlawfully to oppose the authority of the United States or of any State or for any other unlawful purpose.”

(b) Clerical Amendment.—The table of sections at the beginning of chapter 115 of title 18, United States Code, is amended by adding at the end the following new item: 2392. Paramilitary organizations.

Actions such as this only reinforced an “us against them” attitude with people who were already fearful of an overreaching and overbearing out-of-control federal government that simply ignored the restraints put upon it by the Constitution. To the militia members and many others it seemed that laws and constraints on the federal government and its agencies no longer existed, but those same laws could be used against anyone else. Some politicians went so far as to call anyone who disagreed with them or their antics “resisters,” “threats to the nation,” and “terrorists,” thereby designating and demonizing people and groups who could be prosecuted for simply meeting, possessing firearms, and training with them to be in violation of the law. Hunters dressed in camouflage shooting at a rifle range could fall victim to such a law.

Needless to say, due to the pressure and demonizing of negative media reporting, militia groups began to disintegrate. Some disbanded altogether, some went underground, some lost membership but stayed quietly intact, and some members elected to continue with a few friends to form “lone wolf” cells. The latter was what the government feared most and such cells would grow in number over the ensuing years when liberal socialist politicians such as Clinton, and later Barrack Obama, were at the helm. That said, they also counted George H.W. Bush as a threat when he, on several occasions, announced a

"New World Order."

What came to be known as "the Resistance Movement" gained momentum not in men in camouflaged fatigues running around the woods practicing military maneuvers, but instead on radio talk shows, articles by journalists, and authors writing about the evils that existed and grew within our own body politick. The Pen was replacing the Sword.

For all of this to have occurred, there had to be a catalyst. What one finds is that the FBI and other agencies had little information of the scope of any militia movement. That would not stop the media onslaught that would follow the bombing due to two specific organizations which were not government agencies: the Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC) which claimed to track "hate groups" and all of a sudden was an authority on militias, and the Anti-Defamation League (ADL), a radical Jewish organization with Marxist roots that allegedly tracks "hate groups" and anyone suspected of anti-Semitism. These two organizations, then run by Abe Foxman of the ADL and Morris Dees of the SPLC, worked hand-in-hand to "inform" the FBI and media about "militia hate groups" that they insinuated would try and overthrow the government. Neither had any expertise in this area, both had similar leftist agendas, and both feared such groups as well. It stood to reason that both would work together to influence government decisions and actions and the news coming out of the media. They considered militias to be their common enemy, and what better way to deal with them than to use the media and the powers of the government against them.

Another left-wing "journalist" who provided anti-militia material to the media and government agencies was one Chip Berlet, a self-proclaimed "expert" on the Right Wing—and conservatives in general. He represented the "Political Research Associates," an organization I had never heard of prior to the bombing. Wikipedia gives a bio that states: "John Foster "Chip" Berlet (born November 22, 1949) is an American investigative journalist, research analyst, photojournalist, scholar, and activist specializing in the study of extreme right-wing movements in the United States. He also studies the spread of conspiracy theories. Since the 1995 Oklahoma City bombing Berlet has often appeared in the media to discuss extremist news stories. He was a senior analyst at Political Research Associates (PRA), a non-profit group that tracks right-wing networks. Berlet, a paralegal, was vice president of the National Lawyers Guild."

The National Lawyers Guild is a left-wing "progressive" organization that was originally founded by the Communist Party in the 1930s as an alternative organization to the American Bar Association. Berlet, when quoted in the media, was espousing and reinforcing the claims of both the SPLC and the ADL.

A huge issue to honest journalists who did what they could to weed out the facts from the propaganda, was that the FBI and other agencies actually used "information" from these agenda-driven organizations. To those who were in, or who had been in the militias, it was more proof that the Devil himself was in charge of the powers in this country.

Such groups as the Michigan Militia, the Militia of Montana, the Oklahoma Militia, The Texas Light Infantry, the Arizona Militia, and others too numerous to list, withered under the onslaught of the press and fear of the new laws being enacted.

But they did not all go away. Instead of remaining a paramilitary organization, some became more survivalist (“preppers”), and others became involved in local politics and media. The adage of “the pen is mightier than the sword” became a catch phrase for new tactics of government resistance. Books and expose’s were written, calling the government to task for every injustice that was perceived. Others began using the court system to not only defend themselves, but to attack those who had attacked them.

In politics there is an unwritten rule similar to Newton’s Law. Newton said “for every action there is an equal and opposite reaction.” In politics, it is “for every action, there is an opposite reaction that can be more powerful than that the original action.” This holds true when people use the law against injustice—*provided the court is just*. Many political attacks have unintended consequences, and often such attacks produce collateral damage to those who least expect it. One example is the ability for an American citizen to sue a public official under United States Code:

42 USC S. 1983 states to wit:

“Civil Action Deprivation of Rights: Every person who, under color of any statute, ordinance, regulation, custom, or usage, of any State or Territory or the District of Columbia, subjects, or causes to be subjected, any citizen of the United States or other person within the jurisdiction thereof to the deprivation of any rights, privileges, or immunities secured by the Constitution and laws, shall be liable to the party injured in an action at law, suit in equity, or other proper proceeding for redress, except that in any action brought against a judicial officer for an act or omission taken in such officer’s judicial capacity, injunctive relief shall not be granted unless a declaratory decree was violated or declaratory relief was unavailable. For the purposes of this section, any Act of Congress applicable exclusively to the District of Columbia shall be considered to be a statute of the District of Columbia.”

This law scares the hell out of public servants and politicians, but is little known by the citizenry. Still, such laws are a method of using lawful means to address grievances and government overreach.

Fear of the government, the citizenry arming themselves, indications of the End Times prophesied in the Bible for those that were religious, and more and more expose’s of government crimes and coverups that surfaced influenced the mind-set of the time.

This division in trust went both ways. On Saturday, the 22nd of April, 1995, just four days after the bombing, a national teletype went out to all law enforcement agencies warning of reprisals from the militias. The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms sent the following:

“Request national broadcast. Subj: Warning to all law enforcement personnel: ATF intelligence information suggests that the Oklahoma City Bombing may have heightened paranoia levels among various militia groups across the United States. Information suggests that this bombing may be seen as a staged terrorist attack by the federal government as part of an overall plan to declare martial law and suspend the Constitution. In addition, many groups will be extremely despondent over the arrest and investigation of militia members and may consider the situation desperate. Many of these members feel that an attack on them is imminent and have already gone into an alert status. These groups have been known to mobilize and arm themselves for the purpose of obstructing law enforcement action against other militia members. Due to this, all law enforcement personnel are warned to take extreme caution when contacting any known militia members or affiliates."

No conservative organization would be left out either. The Clinton/Reno/Freeh cabal painted anyone who was a conservative or considered themselves a "Constitutionalist" with a broad brush. Everyone who was not a left-wing supporter of the "Progressive" movement in this country was considered a threat to the Establishment. Even the National Rifle Association was under attack. In an article by Neal Knox in *Shotgun News*, he wrote, regarding the Antiterrorism bill "The House Judiciary Committee today approved—by 23-12—a version of Chairman Henry Hyde's anti-terrorism bill, which is generally better than, but still too similar, to the Senate-passed bill and the original proposal of the Clinton administration.

"Both bills include so many expanded powers for the Federal law enforcement agencies that many Liberal Democrats and Conservative Republicans are nervous about potential civil liberties abuses. President Clinton's original bill would have given him sole authority to declare what constituted a 'terrorist organization,' allowing the group to have been covertly infiltrated, wiretapped and investigated under other provisions of the bill. Even donating to a designated 'terrorist group' would be an offense."

Thankfully, parts of the Bill were not passed, but those parts had to do with outlawing certain types of ammunition that were proposed by then Representative Charles Schumer (D-NY) and in the Senate, Senator Diane Feinstein (D-CA)—both rabid Second Amendment opponents.

In a strange turn of events, I had various individuals with affiliation to self-described militia units contact me regarding the bombing. They all offered to help if they could, and promised if they heard or found out anything of value they'd pass it on to me. There was no way these people would even talk to the FBI, but they would talk to me. This was partly because many had read my book *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza* about the Kennedy assassination in which I exposed a huge government coverup and lists of lies told by those in power at the time. And, with the grapevine being what it was at the time, the word had gotten out that I was a "cop that could be trusted".

The more I looked into the militia movement, the more I was convinced that the majority would have guarded a federal building, not blown it up. That might not be the case for the UN building in New York, which many considered to be the globalist shadow government that was formed to destroy all nations and to form their New World Order of one global government over all. Nor would they protect the Council on Foreign Affairs (CFR) headquarters in New York City, which they knew was the very organization that created the UN in the first place and also controlled many areas of our government with an agenda to make the U.S. a nation-state of the NWO. But the more I looked at it, no militia group or member was involved in the OKC bombing. That meant that the media redirection that was overwhelming the airwaves was shielding someone or something else.

In fact, on Sunday, April 23rd, 1995, it became known that the Michigan Militia had informed the FBI and ATF that McVeigh was dangerous months before the bombing, and that the Michigan Militia meetings that McVeigh had attended were described in records that were made available to the FBI and ATF. The Michigan Militia members felt that McVeigh was essentially a dangerous lunatic, and informed the FBI and ATF of this belief long before the bombing. But this was never brought out by the press, nor followed up on by the FBI or ATF.

While the liberal politicians and bureaucrats in Washington were busy passing laws and rules as fast as their pens would move, the so-called “resistance” was morphing into something entirely different than armed paramilitary groups. Short Wave radio became a main conduit of information with more shows springing up by the week. Though gun and ammunition sales skyrocketed, so did hoarding large quantities of food, medical supplies and other necessities that many people felt compelled to do (and this was before the Y2K scare).

As the investigation progressed no evidence of any ties to the militias ever came to light. There was not one shred of evidence that any militia group or member was involved in the Oklahoma City bombing. But the seeds had been planted in the mind of the public. The militia leaders and their groups had been castigated and threatened and basically defanged. But all of this misdirection by the ADL, the SPLC, and PRA did nothing but waste time and effort of those trying to accomplish a legitimate investigation and get to the true facts. The whole militia gambit was nothing more than a rabbit trail that led nowhere as far as the bombing was concerned. But it it did succeed in getting the so-called anti-terrorism laws passed, increased the powers of the federal agencies, and misdirected the investigators to give the real villains time to disappear.

CHAPTER 7

Elohim City and the White Separatists

”It is suspected that members of Elohim City are involved either directly or indirectly through conspiracy…”

FBI Memo written on 4/20/1995

”I don’t doubt Tim’s role in the conspiracy. But I think he clearly aggrandized his role, enlarged it, to cover for others who were involved.”

McVeigh’s defense attorney, Steven Jones

“I think you have too many coincidences here that raise questions about whether other people are involved. The close associations with Elohim City and the earlier plan [of Elohim City residents] to do the same Murrah Building all suggest the complicity of other people.”

Danny Coulson, FBI’s scene commander for the Oklahoma City investigation

”If I were still in the bureau, the investigation would be reopened.”

Dan Defenbaugh, retired FBI Chief of the Oklahoma City bombing investigation (2003)

By July of 1995 I was ready for a vacation. My wife and I decided to fly out to California to visit my father and step-mother in Laguna Beach where they had a home overlooking the ocean. My dad had retired in 1987 as president of B.J Hughes Oil Tool Manufacturing Company. He had begun working there in 1946 just after he was discharged from the Marine Corps. He, like so many other servicemen at the end of World War II, needed a job—any job.

Luckily, as he was canvassing possibilities he ran into a man who was a supervisor on the shipping dock of Byron Jackson Oil Tools in Los Angeles. A fellow Marine, he told my dad “if you don’t mind starting out on the shipping dock, I’ll hire you.”

My father stayed with Byron Jackson for over 40 years, worked all over the world, and when B.J. merged with Hughes Tool Company and became B.J. Hughes, he was by then International Managing Director of Operations. He has traveled all over the world, and by the time he retired he had filled up six passports, and was by then the president of BJ Hughes!

Anyone who knows about American corporations with international offices knows that many of them have people who do “odd jobs” for the CIA and FBI. My father was no different, and over a period of time had been debriefed by the CIA, the FBI and others that he never mentioned to me. Because of his extensive background rubbing shoulders with the intelligence branches of government he had made many “interesting contacts.” And when I was working on my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government* his resources were invaluable. I would email him or call him and ask a question about various cases I was working on in the book and later would receive plain brown envelopes with no return address or faxes with no headers with bits and pieces of information or “where to look” on certain subjects.

I didn’t think he would be of any help with the OKC case, but wanted to bounce some ideas off him and maybe get some guidance.

A few days before we left Pete Rickel called me and asked “Do you know where Elohim City is?”

“No, never heard of it. What is it?”

“It’s in Oklahoma somewhere and we have a lead there may be some connection,” he explained.

“No, I’m clueless on that but I can check around,” I responded.

Little did I know at that point that the FBI and ATF both knew exactly where “Elohim City” was. For some reason, Rickel was fishing, but I didn’t know it at the time.

I spent some time on the internet and putting queries out but didn’t get any responses. I did find out that Elohim (pronounced E-low-heem) was a Hebrew word for God in the Old Testament, and used in the Christian Covenant churches. I did a memo on that and sent it off to Rickel, then left for California.

I couldn’t believe it! In the two weeks I was in California there was hardly a word in the news on the Oklahoma City investigation (which was still much in the news in Oklahoma). It was as if it never happened!

I spent quite a bit of time with my dad, which is a good thing because I knew that he was suffering from emphysema from smoking unfiltered cigarettes during WWII. Then, even after quitting in the 1960s, it came back to effect him in the late 1970s while he was living in the damp air of London. Unfortunately his hearth deteriorated over the next 20 years and he passed on in August 2001. The only good thing is that he never saw the carnage of 9-11.

But his advice was, basically, “where there’s smoke, there’s fire. And one thing to watch for is when the government is caught lying.” I already knew that, but it is always good to be reminded. When I told him what I could, with what we had discovered so far, he was amazed at the lengths the government and media were going to with so much disinformation. His advice: “Looks like smoke to me son, and maybe smoke and mirrors.”

When I returned to Oklahoma I found out from some of my “militia” sources who responded to my initial query that they had found out that Elohim City was a small community, more like a cluster, of houses with a meeting hall on the Oklahoma/Arkansas border, somewhere south of Stillwell, Oklahoma, in Adair County. This part of Oklahoma is known for being very remote, with rugged terrain, and inhabited by folks who don’t have or want much outside contact. Eventually research would show me that it was a Christian Identity community, founded by a Reverend Millar, who came from Canada. Most residents were family, but at the time they had been open to other people coming in who were accepted by Millar or one of his senior sons.

I had lived in Oklahoma since 1957, and except for my Marine Corps service and a year working in the Los Angeles area, later. I knew of, or had heard of, about every town and small town in the state, at least in the eastern half. But I’d never heard of Elohim City.

Over the ensuing weeks more came to light from both Rickel (who I had to prod to get anything) and an old partner who was with the ATF. The feds had not only known about this place when Rickel asked *me* if I knew where it was, but they had informants there. I was later to discover that each of the main players, Andreas Strassmeir, Carol Howe, and Dennis Mahon, were all confidential informants (CI's) for either the FBI, ATF or CIA! Strassmeir, or "Andy the German" in my, and others, opinion, worked for the CIA, and probably a covert military intelligence agency as well, and was on loan from the German government. Dennis Mahon, who I knew personally and who I considered to be a big blowhard and rabble rouser with no backbone to actually do anything, had to have been a CI for the FBI as he had been in the past and, probably still was protected. Howe, a Tulsa Debutante and runner up for Miss Teen Oklahoma, was a CI for the ATF! All of that being said it was obvious to me that all three intelligence-gathering organizations each had their assets inside Elohim City.

Whatever went on in Elohim City, the FBI and ATF and probably the CIA all knew. And we later discovered that Strassmeir was also reporting to the Southern Poverty Law Center, and most likely to an attorney named Kirk Lyons, who facilitated bringing Strassmeir into, and later moving him out of the country. Rev. Millar, the spiritual leader of Elohim City, later told investigators for McVeigh's defense team that "Andy was sent to us by Kirk Lyons, and I still believe Kirk is a fine patriot, but we're not so sure about Andy anymore."

The Elohim City Connection

According to the federal government, they had no idea whatsoever that the Alfred P. Murrah Building was going to be bombed on April 19, 1995. And, to convince the American public, Attorney General Janet Reno swore that there would be no stone left unturned in their investigation. So, 2000-plus federal agents were placed on the case. And according to them, 20,000 people would eventually be interviewed. In addition, the investigators checked 43,000 tips, journeyed from Arizona to Las Vegas, and from upstate Michigan to the Philippines in search of answers. In all, they would generate more than one *billion* documents and spend over one million investigative hours on this case. There would be enough piles of files and paperwork to keep anyone who probed into the investigation busy for years.

And what, ultimately, did the government conclude after this exhaustive investigation? Answer: that there was no evidence of *anyone* involved in the OKC bombing other than Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols.

However, the government, including the FBI, ATF, Department of Justice, and CIA, among others, lied about having no foreknowledge of the Alfred P. Murrah bombing on April 19, 1995. Specifically, events at the 400-acre compound called Elohim City held many of the keys to OKC, and elements within our federal government were certain that the horrific events of that day would take place. Regrettably, of the 2,000 federal agents, not one agent was dispatched to Elohim City. In fact, *Associated Press* writer Paul Query quoted an unnamed law enforcement official who had this to say on the subject: "Elohim City is not a current subject of interest."

Elohim City is not only ground zero for one of the gravest miscarriages of justice, but an investigation into its activities at that time would have revealed in painstaking detail how intimately and directly they were involved in the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah

Building.

Andreas Strassmeir, officer in the German Panzer Grenadiers, Intelligence Section, and sources say also the German anti-terrorist group GSG-9

Andreas Strassmeir: Many roads led to Elohim City

To understand the Elohim City/Andreas Strassmeir/Dennis Mahon connection, one must follow, in chronological order, the movements of a German national named Strassmeir, as well as a fascinating cast of characters surrounding him.

To begin, we need to introduce Strassmeir. Strassmeir was a German national who entered the United States for a lengthy stay in 1991, during which he eventually became the head of security at Elohim City. Strassmeir is the son of Gunter Strassmeir, who was the architect of German reunification and a top aide to German chancellor and Bilderberg luminary Helmut Kohl. In addition, Strassmeir's grandfather was a founding member of the Nazi party, which, immediately after WWII had direct ties to American intelligence via SS General Reinhard Gehlen. Gehlen was recruited at the end of the war by OSS Station Chief Allen Dulles to become head of West German Intelligence. Gehlen also was involved in creating the "Ratlines" network for escaping Nazis. The Strassmeir name is one of the most respected and influential in Germany. In all, the Strassmeir family was connected to the power elite in every sense of the word.

Strassmeir himself spent seven years in the German Army as a *Bundeswehr* officer, where he served as a lieutenant with the Panzer Grenadiers, in their elite intelligence unit. Strassmeir's area of expertise was none other than *disinformation*. This point is extremely important because, even though Strassmeir is portrayed as an ardent neo-Nazi, he spoke fluent Hebrew (Israel's state language), and the *London Times* reported that he had a Jewish girlfriend who served in the Israeli Army. Not exactly what we would expect from a notorious "Jew-hater!"

Though Strassmeir migrated to the United States in 1991, his first visit here was on April 7, 1989 when he flew to Washington, D.C. What makes his arrival peculiar is that, in the Immigration and Naturalization Services (INS) computers, Strassmeir was given a special status of AO. And even though determining what this status means has been difficult for many researchers, his AO reference was completely scrubbed from his computer files a few years later. AO is "Asylee applicant without work authorization." That means he was granted immigration status because he was "seeking asylum," which is interesting since there was no reason for Strassmeir to fear living in Germany. Also, at that time, and to this day, Nazism is illegal in Germany, as are all symbols, badges, flags, armbands, and signs. Anyone trying to organize a Nazi or neo-Nazi group or organization is also breaking the law. The German government is keen on discovering anyone preaching Nazism, showing Nazi symbols or propaganda, and especially importing into Germany any of the above.

It would make perfect sense to the U.S. government and its agencies to agree to assist the German government in discovering any links between American neo-Nazi groups and individuals and their German counterparts.

What better way than to infiltrate a trained German agent into the neo-Nazi underground of America?

To officially bring Strassmeir to America, an attorney named Kirk Lyons entered the picture. Lyons himself is an interesting character. He served as the lawyer for Aryan Nation head Louis Beam in the sedition trial of 1987, and managed to get Beam and 17 others cases dismissed; represented Randy Weaver in the Ruby Ridge debacle; and also represented the survivors of the Waco massacre. Lyons has had several connections to various neo-Nazi and offshoot Christian Identity organizations through the years, so it is no surprise that he would know and help Andreas Strassmeir—who represented himself as a true German embodiment of Nazism.

The late Michael Collins Piper, author of *Final Judgment* and a veteran reporter for the *American Free Press*, wrote in an unpublished article that, "For many years Kirk Lyons functioned in some way as a federal undercover agent and/or informant in a movement in which he put himself forward as a legal advocate and spokesman for its cause." Piper went on to conclude that he thought Lyons was Strassmeir's handler. Lyons even visited Strassmeir's parents at their plush Berlin residence in 1991.

In fact, Lyons was the person who orchestrated Strassmeir's relocation to America. He also obtained for him a driver's license by providing Strassmeir with an address in Knoxville, Tennessee, and he is quoted as saying, "I'm the reason that Andy was at Elohim City. I put him there. So if there was a plan, I guess I'm part of it." Not only did Lyons introduce Strassmeir to everyone at Elohim City, but on April 18, 1995, but according to Victor Thorn, author of *The OKC Bombing—Elohim City Connection*, one day before the OKC bombing, Lyons' law firm received a fifteen-minute phone call from a very important person in this scenario—Timothy McVeigh.

Lyons has had an extensive history in the Sons of Confederate Veterans (SCV), which also has many members who are Civil War Re-enactors.

Once Strassmeir arrived on our shores in 1991, he quickly gravitated toward, of all things, the Civil War reenactment crowd. *The London Times* reported that when Strassmeir first arrived in the United States, he was befriended by retired Army officers, CIA veterans, and Civil War reenactment history buffs. These men were part of a network that is very powerful in this country, and one that stretches into the Pentagon and other federal agencies.

According to Victor Thorn, one of these men was Lt. Col. Anthony Vincent Petruskie III, USAF Ret., who was a special agent for the Air Force Office of Special Investigation (OSI) from 1954-1975, and who also knew Strassmeir's father in Berlin. Petruskie was also a *foreign intelligence officer* in Vietnam, a member of the 1131st U.S. Air Force Special Activities Squadron, a Special Projects Officer in the Special Activities Branch of the *counter-intelligence* division in Washington, D.C., and was also reactivated during the Gulf War to fulfill a sensitive assignment.

Needless to say, Petruskie was connected to deep intelligence sources for decades, and allegedly interacted with a cabal of ex-military men and former and current CIA employees who were involved in gun running, mercenary actions, espionage, drug trafficking, blackmail, subversion, and money laundering. These were off-record, black budget operatives, and Vincent Petruskie allegedly made a career out of soliciting and deal-making with these shadowy figures.

So, when Andreas Strassmeir arrived in America and needed a place to stay, who opened his doors to him? None other than Vincent Petruskie of Petruskie Associates in Manassas, Virginia; a man who was making at the time $1.6 million/year by working out of his house. How did Strassmeir know Petruskie? In his own words, Strassmeir described his ally as "a former CIA guy my father had known." But Petruskie's friendship didn't end at mere lodging. In addition, he tried to get Strassmeir a job at the DEA, the Treasury Department, the INS, and also the Department of Justice.

However when McVeigh's attorneys later interviewed Petruskie in July of 1996, he denied any involvement other than being a friend of the Strassmeir family. The report from McVeigh's legal team said:

"On the date listed above, I met with Mr. Petruskie at his home. He explained that he had first met Andy Strassmeir when a group of approximately 4-5 Germans traveled to the US to attend a Civil War reenactment. Petruskie's son had previously attended a reenactment in Germany along with an instructor from Texas A&M college. The instructor later contacted Petruskie asking if he would assist the German group when they came to the US. Petruskie agreed and allowed them to stay at his home where they stayed for several days. Later, Strassmeir's mother in Germany called Petruskie asking if he would help Andreas out and "give him some direction" if he returned to the US. Petruskie agreed, and Andreas stayed with him briefly during this subsequent trip. Petruskie explained that Strassmeir was supposed to be coming to the US to attend school, but that he now understands that never occurred. While Strassmeir was staying there with Petruskie, he did little in the way of beginning his schooling and just sat around. With pressure from Petruskie and Strassmeir's parents, Strassmeir eventually moved to Houston, TX, where he was supposed to be getting a landscaping job and attending school. Petruskie says that was his last contact with him.

"Because Strassmeir was merely hanging out and goofing off for the following period in the US, Petruskie said he 'came up with a story to tell his father. The story was one that his father could not "check out."' because *it alleged that he was doing undercover work for the U.S. government.* This, Petruskie believes, was complete "BS." He commented that he didn't believe that any agency would seriously consider Strassmeir for an type of undercover work. Petruskie explained that Strassmeir's father is very strict and would not approve his goofing off here in the States. Petruskie added that Strassmeir was the only one of several siblings that had "done nothing." He also believes that Strassmeir has had to maintain this story or else his father will throw him out of their German home.

"Petruskie maintains that these two occasions were his only contact with Strassmeir, totaling several days. He says that he didn't know of Strassmeir being at Elohim City until much later. He was unaware of anyone that Strassmeir may have associated with here in the U.S. and did not recognize Mike Bresha's [sic] name.

"Also, he didn't believe that Strassmeir had the guts to point a gun at someone much less be involved in the Okbomb."

This is hard to believe considering Petruskie's past, and the fact that Strassmeir's father was the Chief of Staff to German Chancellor Helmut Kohl, and Petruskie and Andy Strassmeir were working out a deal to buy Boeing 747s from Lufthansa (which as a side note, would be a tremendous asset to drug or gun smugglers). During the investigation we had information that Strassmeir had a contact—"the Colonel"—at Fort Bragg, North Carolina. Could this contact actually be Petruskie?

While Strassmeir was at Elohim City, serving as chief of security, he loaned his station wagon to another Elohim City resident who subsequently was stopped by the Oklahoma Highway Patrol at a road block. The license plate was out of date and the driver had no driver's license. The car was impounded—then all hell broke loose. According to Mike Vanderboegh, who wrote in a newsletter titled *The John Doe Times*, and who researched the OKC bombing:

"In February 1992 Strassmeir's maroon station wagon was impounded by the Oklahoma Highway Patrol for a traffic violation. The police found in his briefcase a collection of documents, some of them in German. According to the tow-truck driver, Kenny Pence, Strassmeir soon brought heavy pressure to bear. 'Boy, we caught hell over that one,' he said. 'The phone calls came in from the State Department, the Governor's office, and someone called and said he had diplomatic immunity. He was just a weird cookie.'"

When Strassmeir's station wagon was impounded Peace said that immediately after this event he started getting a flurry of calls from an attorney (allegedly Kirk Lyons). Then from a *"general or major" at Fort Bragg,* North Carolina (possibly Petruskie), the Highway Patrol's district office, the State Department, and the Governor's office all telling him to immediately release the vehicle. They also said that Andreas Strassmeir had *full diplomatic immunity* even though his visa had expired. Nothing in the AO category granted such immunity.

Furthermore, the contents of Strassmeir's briefcase held a copy of *The Terrorist's Handbook* (including how to build ANFO bombs and detonators with delayed fuses), job applications for the INS & DEA, foreign bank statements which showed he was by no means an impoverished pauper, and suspected government classified documents in both English and German. But most bizarre were the classified papers detailing negotiations by Strassmeir on behalf of Petruskie and Associates to buy 747s from Germany's Lufthansa Airlines to begin a transport business out of Costa Rica! Considering that Petruskie was involved with a shadow-group of black-budget operatives at the height of the cocaine craze. For what does one think these airliners flying out of South America were going to be used?

After Strassmeir's early adventures with Vincent Petruskie, he aligned himself with a citizen's militia called the Texas Light Infantry Brigade. The only problem was the members of this group quickly became suspicious of Strassmeir's motives and loyalty, so they followed him late one night to a federal building. There, they saw Strassmeir approach an electric lock on the door, upon which he punched in the code on an electronic keypad. And just like that, Strassmeir gained access to the building. What makes this scenario relevant is that the federal building conveniently housed an office of the ATF. After witnessing this transgression, the TLIB gave Strassmeir his walking papers for being a suspected undercover agent.

At this point we must ask: who was Andreas Strassmeir? On July 14, 1996, *The McCurtain Gazette* reported that, according to a highly-placed source at the FBI's intelligence division, he was *a paid ATF informant or asset sent to infiltrate Elohim City*. This sentiment was echoed by Timothy McVeigh's lawyer, Stephen Jones, during a 1998 interview on KTOK radio in Oklahoma City. Jones said Strassmeir was a German national recruited by FBI director Louis Freeh to do deep undercover and intelligence operations for the FBI in the United States. He also said that he discussed Strassmeir's FBI connection to the German government with U.S. prosecutor Beth Wilkinson. There is also an FBI form 302 which has been unearthed stating that Strassmeir *was a CIA asset on loan from the German government.* That makes three different agencies that have been mentioned: the FBI, ATF, and CIA in relation for whom Strassmeir was working. Until our government is more forthcoming with information, we can't be certain of any more precise details other than that he was a shared asset on loan to the U.S. government.

After being outed by the Texas Light Infantry Brigade, Strassmeir, under the tutelage of attorney Kirk Lyons, migrated to Elohim City, a 400-acre compound in rural Oklahoma near Muldrow. This enclave became, according to *Time* magazine, the Who's Who of the radical right because it housed members of the Aryan Republican Army; the Covenant, Sword, and Arm of the Lord (CSAL); the National Alliance; the KKK; and Aryan Nation, as well as many other militia and/or neo-Nazi style groups.

The Elohim City crowd was also prone to violence, as was revealed by Assistant U.S. Attorney Steven N. Snyder of Fort Smith, Arkansas, who said that a plot was hatched as far back as 1983 to blow up the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building. The prime movers in this conspiracy were Richard Wayne Snell, James Ellison, and Kerry Noble, all of the CSAL, who wanted to use plastic explosives and rocket launchers to topple the building. The authorities took this plot seriously enough to raid Elohim City in 1985, where they arrested Covenant founder James Ellison.

Despite its notoriety, Kerry Noble, former Covenant member, said of Elohim City: “It has the potential, down the road, of being the most dangerous group in the country.” It was never again raided. The big question is why? Even an FBI report called *Project Megiddo* addressed the phenomenon surrounding Elohim City-style compounds when they said that right-wing Christian terrorists posed the gravest danger to our country, and would be the most likely to incite violence in the months and years ahead.

To understand the mind-boggling sense of immunity that was given to Elohim City, we need to look at Robert Millar, who founded this community in 1973. Despite his status as a spiritual leader of the militant right, senior FBI agent Peter Rickel (who asked me in July, 1995 if I had ever heard of or knew where Elohim City was) testified on June 31, 1997 that *Millar was in regular contact with the agency in the years* ***before*** *the bombing.* Millar actually confirmed these words on July 1, 1997 when he told the *Tulsa World* newspaper that he *repeatedly shared information with the FBI, DEA, and other law enforcement agencies*.

This is why *The McCurtain Daily Gazette* reported on July 1, 1997 that, Millar’s position as a mole for the FBI could explain why the compound has never been raided. Despite its use as a hideout for gun-runners, drug dealers, bank robbers and suspected members of the conspiracy that bombed the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City, Elohim City has enjoyed a reputation as a place where fugitives can live without fear of arrest.

Of the Elohim City residents, it is mind boggling how many informants and outlaws were there. Robert Millar wasn’t the only individual at Elohim City who was speaking with the authorities. There were plenty of others, including:

James Ellison, former Covenant, Sword, and Arm of the Lord member who was married to Millar’s granddaughter and who testified against The Order.

Peter Langan, the son of a retired U.S. Marine intelligence officer and leader of the Aryan Republican Army. After being arrested for robbing a Georgia Pizza Hut, the U.S. Secret Service intervened and had him released!

Gary Hunt, paid informant of the ATF who was videotaped in the company of two other ATF agents at the Grand Continental Hotel in OKC a full-week before the bombing. He was also videotaped, along with a companion, on April 19, 1995 by an OKC television station right after the bombing. Both men were carrying transmitters and walking rapidly from the Alfred P. Murrah Building. Hunt was even videotaped as a pall bearer at the funeral of an ATF agent.

Dennis Mahon, former Grand Dragon of the Oklahoma KKK and high ranking member of Tom Metzger’s White Aryan Resistance (WAR), and friend of Louis Beam of the Aryan Nation in Idaho. He was evidently *also a paid informant to the Iraqi*s according to his own admission, and never arrested or bothered by the FBI.

Dennis Mahon sent me this photo when I was a regular guest on a talk radio show in Tulsa. Carol Howe, when she was dating Mahon on right.

Carol Howe on maneuvers with others at Elohim City. One of my CI’s gave me a video tape of the event showing her, Mahon, Strassmeir and others moving, shooting and practicing assault tactics. I loaned it to the FBI and it was never returned.

Andreas "the German" Strassmeir who, according to research, worked for the CIA, ATF, Military Intelligence, German Intelligence, and a shadowy group that McVeigh and Nichols belonged to that was, according to McVeigh, "a special operations unit that did illegal things." When Strassmeir arrived in Elohim City he talked Millar into letting him take over security. Then he took up all the deer rifles the residents had, sold them and replaced them with "assault rifles." One source at Elohim City later stated that "Every few months, 15 to 30 individuals from around the U.S. would show up for a few weeks of military style training. The recruits were primarily members of the Aryan Nation. One of them was Timothy McVeigh who was a regular visitor to the compound."

Peter Langan

Peter Langan, known as "Commander Pedro," who planned and executed 22 different bank robberies in seven states which netted over $250,000. This spree extended over two years, and explosives were used in many of the heists. Oddly, even though Langan was wanted in six states, there wasn't even one crime scene arrest or fatality at any of the robberies, and never did the robbers encounter any bank guards or law enforcement officials.

Peter Ward, FBI informant and McVeigh's roommate at the Dreamland Motel in Kansas when McVeigh rented the Ryder Truck. Ward was probably the second man seen with McVeigh in the office of the motel and at the Ryder truck rental agency.

Michael Brescia

Michael Brescia, one of those suspected of being an actual bomb-planter inside the Murrah Building, was arrested on January 30, 1997 in Philadelphia for his participation in a number of bank robberies. He moved to Elohim City in 1994 and was a roommate of Andreas Strassmeir. Brescia has also been identified as John Doe # 2 by Dennis Mahon, ATF informant Carol Howe, and Timothy McVeigh's girlfriend, Catina Lawson.

Richard Guthrie

Richard Guthrie, the son of CIA parents and a Navy veteran, he was also arrested for bank robbery, but not before frequently visiting Tim McVeigh in Arizona when McVeigh was living near Michael Fortier's place.

McVeigh's Army buddy Michael Fortier

Other shady characters of note were *Michael Fortier*, who Robert Millar admitted had lived at Elohim City shortly before the bombing, and *Dennis Mahon*, who got his start in The Order, which was founded by Robert Matthews, a self-proclaimed terrorist who burned to death during an intense gunfight with approximately 75 federal law enforcement agents who surrounded his house on Whidbey Island, near Freeland, Washington. Mahon then went on to become third in line in the White Aryan Resistance (WAR) and was described by Andreas Strassmeir as a good friend. Equally important, Mahon admitted to meeting Timothy McVeigh several times, and said that Michael Brescia "was up to his ass in the Oklahoma City bombing." Mahon was also personal friends with Tom Metzger, founder of WAR and the Skinhead movement and former Grand Wizard of the KKK in the 1970s.

In one of my memos written during the investigation I wrote:

1. Dennis W. Mahon and his twin brother Daniel Wallace Mahon, who are both involved in the KKK and WAR, now live at 1448 North College (Tulsa).
2. Daniel W. "Dano" Mahon is connected to a German national named Andreas STRASSMEIR (DOB 5-17-59 Berlin), who is an agent for the German national anti-terrorist police, GSG-9. Strassmeir lived for four years in this country after arriving on 5-9-91 without being documented by the INS, had no job during the entire period, and lived on a credit card provided by sources unknown.
3. STRASSMEIR, whose father is Gunther STRASSMEIR (Asst Secretary of State for Germany under Helmut Kohl, lived at Elohim City where he preached violence, and that the people there who were isolationist (and defensive when he arrived) resisted his influence until national events led them to form a "militia," which "Andy" Strassmeir recruited and trained. According to sources, Strassmeir is a German military intelligence officer who was recruited by U.S. intelligence personnel to infiltrate "the Klan" or patriot groups. This appears in line with a shared-assets sting operation.
4. While Strassmeir was at Elohim City, McVeigh made two telephone calls to the site, one the day before, and one the day after renting the Ryder truck in Kansas. It is probable that the recipient was Strassmeir.
5. Elohim City is geographically close to the area frequented by the Covenant, Sword and Arm of the Lord (CSA). A CSA leader named James Ellison turned state's evidence at a sedition trial in Fort Smith in 1984 and stated that he and a CSA leader named "Snell" (Richard Wayne Snell) planned to blow up the Murrah Building. Snell was executed for killing an Arkansas state trooper on April 19th, 1995, the same day the Murrah explosion occurred. Ellison is now back in Elohim City and married to the granddaughter of EC leader Millar.
6. Dennis Mahon told Kirk Lyons (CAUSE foundation lawyer who represents the KKK, White Aryan Resistance and etc.) that he would probably be indicted soon for the OKC bombing.
7. Ray Lampley and his followers were connected to Elohim City. Lampley subsequently was arrested for bomb making and threats made to blow up federal

buildings, tax offices, and leftist organizational headquarters. Lampley allegedly made such statements at one of Mahon's WAR meetings. Mahon supposedly "informed" the FBI of Lampley's statements and recruiting efforts. It was probably the "recruiting" efforts that turned Mahon against Lampley, and subsequently influenced Mahon to inform on Lampley (if such an event occurred). (*Author's note: Ray Lampley was an individual very much like Rev. Millar and had ties to Elohim City. He was later arrested when an informant, possibly Mahon, told the FBI that he had pipe bombs and was ready to act*).

8. Possible Connections: If the members of the CSAL and the residents of Elohim City are connected, then it is possible that Strassmeir, posing as a neo-Nazi radical, enlisted the aid of the Mahon brothers and possibly Ellison in working with or providing McVeigh equipment or bomb materials and further motivation. it is known that the Tulsa Police Department staked out a Ryder truck in Tulsa right after the bombing at the Coppermill apartments, which was done on information provided by the FBI—after they admitted now believing their "source" that warned them previously about the Murrah Building prior to the explosion. (*Author's note: This was probably the Ryder truck seen before the bombing at Lady Godiva's, and was driven by Mahon and one other person—most likely Strassmeir— in Bricktown on the morning of the bombing*).

There are some official disinformation sources that say McVeigh had never even visited Elohim City. But we now know that McVeigh and Terry Nichols drove from Fayetteville, Arkansas, to Elohim City to meet with Andreas Strassmeir on October 12, 1993. Also in attendance were bank robbers Richard Guthrie and Peter "Commander Pedro" Langan.

We can also connect McVeigh to the Elohim City coterie through the following:

– A hotel receipt dated September 13, 1994
– A speeding ticket he received in 1993 a few miles from the compound
– Phone records – McVeigh called Strassmeir at Elohim City on April 5, 1995 a few minutes after reserving a Ryder truck
– Prisoner interviews
– His participation in military maneuvers directed by Strassmeir at Elohim City on September 12, 1994
– Informant reports: Carol Howe directly linked McVeigh (using the name Tim Tuttle) to Strassmeir, Dennis Mahon, and Peter Ward at Elohim City

With this information in mind, one can conclude that Timothy McVeigh was at Elohim City in the months and years before the Oklahoma City bombing.

On the other hand, to further link McVeigh to the Elohim City criminal element, FBI documents show that they strongly suspected McVeigh of participating in a December, 1994 Ohio bank robbery with some Aryan Nation members, including Michael Brescia. This seems to make sense, because McVeigh's sister testified later that he wanted her to launder some money for him in December, 1994. This would also at least partially explain how McVeigh, with no job and a sporadic work record, would have the money to travel around the country and buy cases of *The Turner Diaries* which he sold at rented gun show tables.

More proof of McVeigh’s Elohim City links comes from a highly documented April 8, 1995 event (a mere week-and-a-half prior to the OKC bombing) at which McVeigh, Strassmeir, and Michael Brescia were videotaped by security cameras at Lady Godiva’s strip joint in Tulsa, Oklahoma. Their visit was verified by the *Fifth Estate*, Canadas version of *60 Minutes*. Of special note is McVeigh bragging to one of the dancers “I’m a very important man. You’ll remember me for the rest of your life.”

In the parking lot was a yellow Ryder truck!

The Tulsa Police Department had officer’s that, at the request of the local office of the FBI, had staked out a yellow Ryder truck at a Tulsa apartment complex that week. They later received information of the Godiva’s encounter. On the night in question there were four to five males at a table, including McVeigh, when one of the dancer’s, (stage name “Shawn Tea,” also known as Shawn Tea Ferrans), spoke to them.

A surveillance video tape in the dressing room in the club, a copy of which was provided to *McCurtain County Gazette* reporter J.D. Cash, showed that at approximately 11 p.m., one of the girls is heard in the tape telling other women in the room that one of her customers told her she would never forget him “come April 19th.” Cash went to the club and showed the dancer some pictures. “When we showed her some pictures, she identified McVeigh, [Michael] Brescia, and [Andreas] Strassmeir.”

The dancer was not identified, but if it was Shawn Tea, she was found dead in her apartment a few weeks after the bombing. Though it was ruled a suicide (there was a note and empty pill bottles) when I studied the crime scene photos I found what appeared to be a bloody hand print on one wall next to the patio doors! In my opinion she was murdered and the scene was made to look like she took her own life.

But to truly understand McVeigh’s role in the OKC bombing, we need to dig even deeper. David Paul Hammer, who spent 23 months with McVeigh on death row in Terre Haute, Indiana, says that McVeigh told him about meeting with three shadowy men with close ties to the U.S. military shortly after he “left” the Army in 1991. McVeigh also added that these men only went by code names, and that one of the meetings (with someone known only as “the Major”) took place at Camp McCall, which was on the grounds of Fort Bragg, North Carolina. Could this once again be Vincent Petruskie? Also, I received letters from an inmate in the Super Max federal prison in Colorado, who knew Nichols and who said that he swept out Nichols cell when Nichols was in the yard by himself each day for exercise. He said he read a partial letter Nichols was writing to someone and one sentence caught his eye. It said “Sarge is going to take care of us.” Again, a reference to someone military. Were the “Major” and “Sarge” part of a covert military ops team, as described by McVeigh?

At this meeting with the Major, McVeigh was told that he was passed over for a spot in the elite Army Special Forces so that he could be recruited into a black budget Department of Defense project *where he would gather intelligence for the government on members of the radical right, including specifically the Aryans, KKK, and militias*—like the groups that inhabited Elohim City. In effect, then, McVeigh, like Strassmeir, would become a pseudo-agent for the United States government.

I realize that such a scenario sounds fantastic, almost unbelievable, but in a letter that was read in 1995 before a grand jury, Timothy McVeigh's sister said that he thought McVeigh was going into a Special Forces covert tactical unit to fight against evil-doers. Author David Hoffman confirms this sentiment in his book *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*:

"McVeigh wrote his sister Jennifer while he was still in the Army telling her that he had been picked for a highly specialized Special Forces Covert Tactical Unit (CTU) that was involved in illegal activities. The letter was introduced to the Federal Grand Jury. According to former grand juror Hoppy Heidelberg, these illegal activities included *protecting* drug shipments, *eliminating the competition*, and *population control*."

The Associated Press also reported that the government had been closely monitoring those who came to show their support for the Branch Davidian's prior to the Waco siege. McVeigh, of course, was in attendance handing out anti-New World Order literature.

Could it be that Timothy McVeigh had been sheep-dipped in the exact same manner as Lee Harvey Oswald prior to the John F. Kennedy assassination? Those who've studied this subject know that former FBI agent Guy Bannister and CIA operative E. Howard Hunt made sure that Oswald was photographed handing out pro-Castro leaflets in New Orleans, and they even got him on a local television show to secure the connection, declaring "I'm a Marxist." Could McVeigh also have been reinvented as a racist revolutionary who would play a "Manchurian Candidate" role in some later black-ops project?

Before ruling out the possibility, lets return to another quote from David Hoffman's book:

"In an illuminating series of phone calls to Representative Charles Key, (head of the Oklahoma Bombing Investigative Committee) an anonymous source stated that McVeigh was present at several meetings with ATF and DEA agents in the days immediately preceding the bombing. The meetings took place in Oklahoma City at different locations. The ostensible purpose of these meetings was to provide McVeigh with further instructions, and to facilitate a payoff. David Hall of KPOC-TV uncovered information that McVeigh had met with local ATF agent Alex McCauley in a McDonalds the night before the bombing. The ATF agent was seen handing McVeigh an envelope."

Adding another element to the espionage angle is Terry Nichols' brother James Nichols, who in his book *Freedom's End* stated that McVeigh was met in prison by the notorious MK-ULTRA mind-bender Dr. Jolyon West, who not only pronounced Jack Ruby insane after killing Lee Harvey Oswald, but also handled Sirhan Sirhan following the Robert F. Kennedy assassination. Moreover, McVeigh also stated that he thought he'd been implanted with a computer microchip while serving in the Army, and many have declared that he was under the influence of mind-control drugs during his incarceration after the bombing. Dr. West worked for CIA "Dirty Tricks" Chief Dr. Sidney Gottlieb who headed the CIA's "Technical Services Division" in the 1960s and '70s. Gottlieb, who died in 1999, was head of the infamous MK/ULTRA mind control project that was designed to, among other things, program assassins and "super soldiers." He also pioneered mind control experiments using LSD.

A further insight into McVeigh's personality was provided by a woman named Lynda

Haner-Mele, who worked with McVeigh at Burns Security in early 1992.

“Tim wasn’t the type of person who could initiate action. He was very good if you said, Tim, watch this door — don’t let anyone through. The Tim I knew couldn’t have masterminded something like the OKC bombing. It would have had to have been someone who said, ‘Tim, this is what you do. You drive the truck’.”

All of this leads us once again back to Andreas Strassmeir, who admitted that he met Timothy McVeigh in the late spring of 1993 at a Tulsa gun show, and that he was in possession of McVeigh’s Desert Storm military uniforms. This is not someone who merely enjoyed a passing acquaintance with McVeigh. Furthermore, ATF infiltrator-informant Carol Howe has unequivocally stated that Andreas Strassmeir was the OKC prime instigator of the bombing, and McVeigh was merely his protégé. She also said that Strassmeir exerted extraordinary influence over McVeigh.

Anyone familiar with the deep secrets of the OKC bombing realizes that Carol Howe’s role as an informant, along with her subsequent testimony, are the incriminating smoking guns that completely shred the governments credibility. For starters, official sources denied that Howe was even employed by them. But now, years later, we know for a fact that Ms. Howe’s Confidential Informant number was: 53270-183 (or, for short, CI-183).

After being caught in this lie, the government said that Howe was dropped from their employ in June, 1995, after the OKC bombing. But an ATF report dated January 31, 1996 stated, “It is required that CI 53270-183 be retained as an active informant.” Plus, under cross-examination, Howe’s superior, Angela Finley (Angela Finley-Graham), admitted that Howe was an *active informant* until December 18, 1996.

We have further proof of Howe’s status as an informant via internal ATF documents, specifically Finley’s preliminary report, which had an ATF Investigation Report Number of 53270-94-0124-B, and was recorded on form #3270.2. This form was signed by not only Finley, but also David E. Roberts (Resident Agent in Charge of the Tulsa field office who I personally knew and worked with when he was a Tulsa police officer) and Agent Tommy Wittman, and was forwarded to Lester D. Martz, Special Agent in Charge of the Dallas Field Division of the ATF. In this report Howe’s work was described as sensitive and significant according to ATF official Robert Sanders.

Aerial views of Elohim City taken by OHP Trooper Ken Stafford during ATF investigation (photo: Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, Firearms and Explosives)

Furthermore, on February 22, 1995, Ken Stafford, an Oklahoma Highway Patrol pilot who had flown photo missions over Elohim City, told Angela Finley that the FBI had an informant inside Elohim City in addition to Howe. In true spy-versus-spy fashion, though, the ATF and FBI did not know of the other's existence or identity. In my opinion the FBI informant was Dennis Mahon as I felt sure the CIA informant was Strassmeir.

What type of information did Howe feed to the ATF? To answer this question, we can start with ATF Special Agent Angela Finley's testimony on April 24, 1997:

Question: Ms. Howe told you about Mr. Strassmeir's threats to blow up federal buildings, didn't she?

Finley: In general, yes.

Question: That was before the OKC bombing?

Finley: Yes.

Question: Now, Ms. Howe actually took some of these people from Elohim City at your direction to Oklahoma City, didn't she?

Finley: She went with them. She probably didn't drive.

Question: This trip to OKC by Elohim City residents occurred before the bombings, actually by a few weeks, didn't it?

Finley: No, it would be months, in the fall of '94.

Question: Are you sure? So, it wasn't the third week of February?

Finley: Oh, I'm sorry, we did send her back.

Question: The very next day, you asked Ms. Howe to take you to Oklahoma City and show you the places they visited, didn't you?

Finley: I don't know if it was the next day, but yes, I took her to OKC and asked her about the places.

With this incriminating testimony in mind, lets cut to the chase. To begin with, in the months prior to the OKC bombing, Carol Howe submitted over 70 reports to Angela Finley, her BATF control officer. She was also polygraphed at least a dozen times to check her reliability, and each time she passed with flying colors. Also, ATF reports described Howe as a key witness, along with being stable and capable.

Why, then, wouldn't the ATF want Ms. Howe's testimony to be heard? It all boils down to foreknowledge and direct complicity. Howe told her superiors in no uncertain terms that Andreas Strassmeir and Dennis Mahon were the primary instigators of the OKC bombing. She also reported that Strassmeir and Mahon made three trips to OKC to case various locales, one in November 1994, the next in December 1994, and finally in February 1995—a few weeks before the bombing. Howe even accompanied them on one of these trips. Plus, these assertions were corroborated by Agent Finley under oath on April 24, 1997. Finley even accompanied Howe to OKC to see the exact areas cased by Strassmeir and Mahon.

The ATF *knew* that Strassmeir and other Aryan Republican Army members had discussed blowing up federal buildings in OKC. They knew that the Alfred P. Murrah Building was a target, just like it was in 1983 when other Elohim City residents plotted to destroy it. They knew that Timothy McVeigh and others had spoken of bombing the building because Carol Howe notified her superiors of this fact. Even Robert Millar, Elohim City founder, called for a preemptive strike against the government several months before April 19th.

During Carol Howe's trial, ATF Agent Finley testified that the FBI, as well as her agency, *had the information in advance of the bombing of the Murrah Building. She also admitted that Howe warned them of bomb threats against federal buildings before April 19, 1995*. In addition, during her own trial, Carol Howe was asked by her lawyer, Tulsa attorney Clark Brewster, if she thought she had provided sufficient information for the ATF to conduct an investigation that would have confirmed the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Building would take place. Howe answered yes. She is also quoted as saying, "It is the indisputable truth that the government had *detailed prior knowledge* of the plot to bomb the building, but somehow failed to stop it."

Ms. Howe's words are confirmed by an event which took place on February 7, 1995 when Angela Finley and other ATF agents flew with Oklahoma State Highway Patrol pilot Ken Stafford over Elohim City to photograph and videotape the complex to gather intelligence for a possible raid to arrest Strassmeir and others. They were specifically targeting Strassmeir because Howe told ATF officials that he kept declaring "It's time to go to war, and it's time to start bombing federal buildings." For an investigator, the question about this statement would be "why would a German national want to become so involved in politics and violence in this country, unless he was working for someone else?"

This type of inflammatory rhetoric alarmed the authorities to such an extent that a raid was scheduled for February, 1995. *But, in that same month, the invasion of Elohim*

City was scrubbed after senior members of the ATF, FBI, and U.S. Attorney's office met!

The ramifications of this decision cannot be overemphasized, as former Oklahoma State Representative Charles Key stated to *World Net Daily* on May 22, 2001 "It's fair to speculate that the FBI got the ATF to call the raid off, or told them to, or someone with higher authority did." He also added, "If they had not called that raid off, it alone may have stopped the bombing of the Murrah Building."

How much the Elohim City crowd played in the actual event is questionable in lieu of other leads we followed, to be discussed later. However, the week before the bombing the Tulsa office of the ATF had enough to arrest Strassmeir and put out a BOLO (Be On the Look Out) for Strassmeir to the Oklahoma Highway Patrol:

"ANDREAS STRASSMEIR, W/M, 5/7/59, heavy German accent. Black hair/blue eyes. 1" scar on chin, wears cammo fatigues. Possible Tennessee driver's license. Came to USA in 5/91, passport was good until 8/91. He never left the country. INS says he does not have an extension of his VISA. Possibly in a blue Chevy, late model, tag BHX 346 (not in file), usually has someone driving him. Carries a .45 auto pistol at all times. He is an illegal alien. ATF wants to be notified if he is stopped and has a gun on him. They will file the charges. Contact: Agent Angela Finley, ATF."

It should also be noted that the Immigration and Naturalization Services (INS) cancelled the FBIs notice to detain Andreas Strassmeir, and that the State Department wouldn't assist in getting Germany's cooperation to question Strassmeir, after the bombing, when he had returned to Germany. Lastly, even though Carol Howe, who provided mountains of information to the ATF, urged them to raid the Elohim City arms bunker, and who was taken to the basement of the old PepsiCo Building in downtown Oklahoma City for debriefing only hours after the bombing, was prohibited from testifying at Timothy McVeigh's trial. The reason? Judge Richard Matsch said that her testimony *might confuse the jurors.*

During Terry Nichol's Trial in Oklahoma, the following transcript shows relationships between Howe, Mahon, Strassmeir and McVeigh at Elohim City. Carol Howe was being questioned by Nichols' defense attorney, Adam Turschwell. a well-known government-assigned defense lawyer:

Q. Now, are you familiar with what Timothy McVeigh looks like, Ms. Howe?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you seen photographs of Timothy McVeigh?

A. Yes, I have.

Q. Did you ever see Timothy McVeigh at the Elohim City compound?

A. I believe I did.

Q. All right. When did you see him?

A. It was in July of 1994.

Q. Okay. And where did you see him?

A. He was at a section of the compound walking across a lawn near the church building.

Q. And was he accompanied by any other individuals who you know?

A. Yes, he was.

Q. And who were they?

A. A man named Peter Ward and a man named Andreas Strassmeir.

Q. About how far away were you when you believe you saw Timothy McVeigh?

A. Approximately 70 feet.

Q. At the time that you saw him, did you know his name was Timothy McVeigh?

A. No, sir.

Q. You subsequently came to learn his name was Timothy McVeigh?

A. Correct.

Q. Now, did you have occasion to—did Mr. Mahon— strike that. Did Mr. Mahon have an apartment in Tulsa, Oklahoma, during this time period?

A. A house, yes.

Q. A house. And did you have occasion to spend time there during the time period we're talking about, fall, 1994?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did Mr. Mahon in your recollection—did he ever receive any phone calls while you were in the house with him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recall Mr. Mahon ever saying or mentioning the name

"Tim Tuttle"*?

MS. WILKINSON: Objection.

THE COURT: Overruled.

THE WITNESS: Yes, I do.

Q. Okay. Could you tell the jury—not any contents of the phone call that he related to you—but how you came to hear his name? That is, Tim Tuttle's name?

A. Mr. Mahon received a phone call. We were sitting in the living room. He went into the bedroom to answer the phone, and I heard his statements from where I was sitting.

Q. And what did you hear him say?

A. I heard him say, "Tim Tuttle, Tuttle, Tuttle, Tuttle, Tuttle," and laughed.

Q. And you subsequently had a conversation about that phone call that he had received?

A. Yes. When he came back.

U.S. Attorney Beth Wilkinson, it should be noted, was a federal prosecutor that had a tendency to support the McVeigh and Nichols version as the "lone gunmen" in the case, even though reliable witnesses provided information of more individuals involved. Her mission, it would appear was to limit the investigation to just McVeigh and Nichols, which would lead one to believe that others involved were being protected. If Mahon was working for the FBI, and Howe was working for the ATF, and Strassmeir was working for the CIA and the SPLC (and attorney Kurt Lyons), and a covert colonel at Fort Bragg, all at the same time, it would make sense to have Janet Reno's DoJ, and Deputy Assistant Attorney General Jamie Gorelick control the scope of the prosecution. Gorelick has a very sordid past, and was and still is a key supporter of Hillary and Bill Clinton.

In 2005, *American Free Press* investigative reporter Victor Thorn (real name: Scott Robert Makufka) wrote a 39 page expose' booklet titled *The OKC bombing-Elohim City Connection.* Sadly, Victor (who I knew personally) was "suicided" in August, 2016. AFP had this to say:

"Prolific author, *American Free Press* writer and seasoned Clinton researcher Victor Thorn was found at the top of a mountain near his home, the apparent victim of a gunshot wound. Family and some close friends contend Thorn took his own life on his birthday, August 1. Thorn would have been 54.

"At the peak of his writing career, the author of some 20 books and 30 chapbooks—books with 75 or fewer pages—Thorn had reported for this newspaper for over a decade, writing thousands of articles on myriad subjects from conspiracy to health-related topics. Best known for his investigative research on the Clinton's, Thorn wrote the Clinton trilogy—three definitive works that delved into the history of the powerful couple including their sordid scandals, Bill Clinton's sexual assaults of multiple women, and the drug running out of Mena, Arkansas while Clinton was governor of the state."

The problem with the media-reported "suicide" is that Victor Thorn had stated on many occasions that "I will never ever commit suicide! If anything happens to me, it was murder!" *Conservative Post* stated " …Thorn was just 54 at the time of his death and during [a recent} radio interview, he stated: "…if I'm ever found dead, it was murder. I would never kill myself."

The most pressing question at this point is: "why would those at the highest levels of government, all the way up to the Department of Justice, call off this raid?"

According to Robert Sanders, a top ATF official, Elohim City was under *intense scrutiny* by federal agencies at the *top levels of management.* The reports given to these individuals about the activities at Elohim City included: illegal explosives and firearms, illegal immigration, planned terrorism, a history of violence, and incendiary rhetoric. Worse, this information went to the FBI, ATF, Treasury, Department of Justice, National Security Council, and even to Bill Clinton's White House.

Plus, most everyone included in this sordid Elohim City saga were either operatives, spooks, or informants, including Andreas Strassmeir, Kirk Lyons, Vincent Petruskie, Robert Millar, James Ellison, Peter Langan, Timothy McVeigh, Carol Howe, Dennis Mahon, and others.

The foreknowledge of an April 19 bombing was so widespread that Richard Wayne Snell, a member of James Ellison's "Covenant, Sword, and Arm of the Lord" bragged about this catastrophe on the day of his execution, coincidentally on April 19, 1995.

Arkansas prison official Alan Ables said of Snell: “He repeatedly predicted that there would be a bombing or explosion on the day of his death. When his prophetic words about the OKC bombing came true, he knowingly chuckled and laughed before being put to death.” Snell’s body was later buried at Elohim City.

Similarly, Chevie Kehoe, another Aryan Republican Army (ARA) bank robber associated with the Elohim City crowd, showed-up at a Spokane motel about 45 minutes before the bombing to watch the event on CNN. The hotel manager told *The Spokane Review* that Kehoe had been talking about it for days. “Its about time,” he eventually proclaimed with manic excitement. Also, as a side-note, Elohim City founder Robert Millar admitted that Kehoe and his brother *had lived at the compound*.

Could it be that the entire OKC bombing was a covert government cover-up? Considering all those on the inside who were funneling data to the authorities, plus the totally hands-off immune status that these men enjoyed, what else can we conclude? Was a cabal within our federal government actually scapegoating those at Elohim City by enticing them into committing illegal acts, or a conspiracy to do so, all the while being egged-on by paid provocateurs?

The McCurtain Gazette reported in a July, 1996 article by the late J.D. Cash that the ominous words of a former government undercover agent who said “It is typical for agencies such as the CIA, FBI & BATF to place multiple moles inside a place like Elohim City and play one resource off the other, without either one knowing the others identity.”

Mike Vanderboegh, editor of *The John Doe Times*, echoed this sentiment on July 4, 1997: “Not even in Czarist Russia did the secret police send paid provocateurs to provoke the other paid provocateurs. Elohim City can thus be seen in its true light — not as an operation infiltrated and suborned by infiltrators — but rather as a wholly-owned subsidiary of the FBI/ATF.”

Which brings us back to Andreas Strassmeir. ATF Agent Angela Finley said in an ATF report on November 29, 1994: “His [Strassmeir’s] plans were to forcibly act to destroy the U.S. government with direct actions and operations such as assassinations, bombings, and mass shootings.” She also informed her superiors that Strassmeir was a huge weapons dealer, and his status as of December, 1994 was that of an illegal alien.

Dennis Mahon, had this to say of the situation: “If a person wanted to know about the bombing, then they should talk with Andy Strassmeir because he knows everything”.

Similarly, *Media Bypass* reported in September, 1996 that high-level FBI sources said, “ATF computer indices reflect substantial intelligence-gathering activities in which Strassmeir participated.” They continued, “either Andy is their snitch or he is under investigation and has been for a long time.”

Ultimately, we have to ask ourselves, who did Strassmeir work for? Quite telling is the fact that when Timothy McVeigh’s attorneys wanted Strassmeir’s files, *they had to ask the CIA for them!* Also, it is now known that FBI Director Louis Freeh was aware of Strassmeir and had been monitoring his activities, and that he was a “subject of interest” to the State Department’s Counter-terrorism Division of Diplomatic Protective Services.

More incredibly, even though Strassmeir and Mahon were the subjects of investigations in the days after the OKC bombing, they were subsequently dropped from any follow-ups. Why? Is this a case of one hand not knowing what the other was doing, or something more sinister? After all, if Strassmeir was arrested and started to sing, where would that lead? But the ATF office, who had been working the Elohim City caper, *was told to stand down by higher ups in Washington.*

British journalist Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, an investigative journalist in his own right (and author of *The Secret Life of Bill Clinton,* which does an in-depth investigation of the OKC bombing (case-named by the FBI as OKBOMB) described the scenario as such: "The plot was hatched at Elohim City in the fall of 1994 under the guidance of Dennis Mahon and Andreas Strassmeir, two men *who were clearly enjoying the protection of the FBI* [italics mine]. McVeigh was undoubtedly part of the movement, and the bombing was probably part of a sting operation that went disastrously wrong." The problem with this statement was that Evans-Pritchard was only seeing the first layer of the onion concerning a "sting operation gone wrong." There were several researchers who stopped at that presumption and, like "The Mafia Did It" scenario that some writers cling to concerning the Kennedy assassination, there are more layers underneath that required probing. That supposition ignores all the other evidence, leads and questions that had to be answered.

Still, despite the incriminating evidence pointing to Strassmeir's involvement in the OKC bombing, in May of 1995, an Oklahoma news service took film footage of Andreas Strassmeir still residing at Elohim City! Another clip shows him together with Michael Brescia, one of the Midwest Bank Robbery gang. They were still living there, even after Carol Howe, during her debriefing by the FBI on April 20, 1995, identified Strassmeir as one of the primary perpetrators.

Even a member of the mainstream media – retired US Marine officer Roger Charles – a former *20/20* producer, told *Soldier of Fortune* magazine in July, 2001 that there was compelling evidence that Strassmeir had access to prior knowledge regarding the bombing. He also noted that in subsequent interviews, Strassmeir said that:

(a) Two yellow trucks were connected to the bombing, not just one;

(b) Federal authorities put tracking devices on the trucks as they approached OKC that day.

The biggest question now is: where did Strassmeir get his information, and why wasn't he immediately arrested as a suspect? Instead, Strassmeir remained in this country until January, 1996. According to Victor Thorn, "Strassmeir was whisked out of the country. And guess who facilitated this departure. First in line was the infamous attorney Kirk Lyons, while the actual dirty work was performed by Germany's elite counter-terrorism group, the GSG-9."

As for the number of Ryder trucks involved, one was rented in Kansas by McVeigh and a John Doe, another was seen at Lady Godiva's in the parking lot in Tulsa when McVeigh, Strassmeir, and two other unidentified males were inside drinking and flirting with the dancers, and one was seen by witnesses on the day of the bombing driving around downtown Oklahoma City and Bricktown (the old warehouse district turned upscale restaurants and tourist attractions) around the same time McVeigh and John Doe 2 were parked across the street from the post office northwest of the Murrah Building, waiting for a parking place at the bomb site. Some witnesses describe a male driver of the decoy truck in Bricktown as resembling Dennis Mahon!

Panzer Grenadier Lieutenant Andreas Karl Strassmeir in his own words:

After Andreas Strassmeir fled the country in early 1996, he began speaking out in various interviews. Here are a few of his more revealing quotes. One has to ask "was Strassmeir a simple neo-Nazi klutz, or was he elaborating as someone with deep knowledge from inside the intelligence world?"

Quote 1: "Its obvious that it [OKC] was a government op that went wrong, isn't it? The ATF had something going with McVeigh. They were watching him. Of course they were."

Quote 2: "McVeigh knew he was delivering a bomb, but he had no idea what was in the truck. He just wanted to shake things up a little; ya know, make a gesture." Again, we need to ask: where was Strassmeir getting his information?

Quote 3: When asked by British journalist Ambrose Evans-Pritchard if an informant could ever speak out about Oklahoma City, Strassmeir replied, "How can he? What happens if it [the bombing] was a sting operation from the very beginning?" He continued, "What happens if it comes out that the plant was a provocateur? What then? Of course the informant can't come forward. He's scared stiff right now." When Pritchard was asked if he thought Strassmeir was referring to himself as the plant, he responded, "of course. There's no doubt that is exactly what he meant to convey. He was stating it as plainly as he could without admitting criminal culpability on his own part."

At this stage, we need to ask once again: were Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols lone-nut bombers who acted alone to plan, coordinate, orchestrate, execute, and cover-up the OKC bombing? An overwhelming amount of evidence proves that not only were others involved in this cataclysmic event, but various federal agencies had infiltrated and monitored many of the groups which gravitated to Elohim City. In fact, CNN reported in June, 1995 that two years before the bombing, McVeigh was already being surveilled by undercover agents at an Arizona gun show. Then, on June 3, 1995, *The Washington Post* stated that it was actually a McVeigh associate who tipped-off the FBI that he was involved in the bombing. This point is crucial, because it irrefutably contradicts the official story that McVeigh only became known to them after he was arrested by a vigilant Oklahoma Highway Patrol officer during a traffic stop following the bombing.

Considering that McVeigh (in building his "Legend") associated with known hate groups, and their involvement in the OKC bombing is undeniable, why would organizations such as the Anti-Defamation League (ADL) and Morris Dees' Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC) do everything imaginable to deflect blame *away* from known Aryans, KKK'er's, and racists—but not the militias? In other words, why were they so vociferously *supporting* the lone-nut theory when there was an unabashedly militant neo-Nazi enclave at Elohim City? One would think groups such as the ADL and SPLC would want to nail them to the wall all at once?

The ADL's behavior can only be explained when we realize that the ADL is an arm of the *B'Nai Brith* – which has secret files on over 10,000 American citizens and over 600 different organizations, and regularly shares data with the Mossad, the FBI and the CIA. It became apparent that the SPLC and ADL were hiding something. And what, pray tell, could they want to keep from public scrutiny? Quite simply, the ADL, and possibly the SPLC, was directly involved in tailing or monitoring Timothy McVeigh in the weeks and years preceding the bombing.

One of the best-known authorities on this subject was the late Michael Collins Piper, author of *Final Judgment* and *The New Jerusalem*. In an interview with Tom Valentine of *Radio Free America*, Piper stated very directly, “Although a lot of people like to talk about government foreknowledge of the OKC bombing plot, the fact is that much of that government knowledge actually came to the FBI and BATF, and probably even the CIA, from ADL informants active in the right wing.”

A perfect example of how intricately the ADL had become entwined with McVeigh came about through the most unlikely of scenarios. On April 21, 1995, two days after the OKC bombing, *The Washington Post* ran a story about McVeigh in which they claimed that he had placed a series of ads in *The Spotlight*, a populist newspaper that Piper wrote for. The source for this tip was none other than the ADL, and the article said that the ad was placed by McVeigh using the alias “T.Tuttle.” In addition, it also named the dates upon which these ads ran, what he was selling (they mistakenly said rocket launchers when in fact they were flare guns), and that he had also placed calls on a *Spotlight* phone card under the name “Darryl Bridges.”

This article ran only two days after the bombing. After Piper read this reference to the publication for which he was employed, he and others began a painstaking process to see if these assertions were true. It should be noted that *The Spotlight* wasn’t computerized in those days, so the employees had to engage in a laborious, time-consuming search to even find these ads in question, let alone verify them. They simply couldn’t punch a few keys and have it instantly pop-up on their computer screens. Thus, they had to dig through file cabinet after file cabinet to locate these “T.Tuttle” ads.

Mysteriously, though, the ADL had no difficulty in forwarding this information to *The Washington Post*. How could this be, especially when McVeigh didn’t even use his real name? The odds of stumbling upon such a find seems astronomical. Or, could it be attributed to the ADL’s highly sophisticated data bases with all its intelligence apparatus? Or, could it be that this information was already at their fingertips because they had been trailing McVeigh for quite some time—or even placing the article themselves?

This is reminiscent of the FBI in 1963 being able to track the infamous Carcano carbine allegedly used by Lee Harvey Oswald to him: 1. from the importer, 2. to the sporting goods store it was ordered from, and 3. to an “Alex Hidell” at a post office box in Dallas, then 4. connect it to Oswald in two days! On a weekend! Without use of computers!

The peculiarities get even more bizarre. For starters, the dates upon which the ADL told *The Washington Post* that “T. Tuttle’s” ads ran in *The Spotlight* were wrong! Allegedly “McVeigh” had originally contracted for the first of four ads to run the week beginning August 9, 1993. But due to some type of production problem at the newspaper, the first ad didn’t actually run until the following week August 16, 1993.

Something was awry. How could the ADL have known so much about these specific ads when McVeigh was using an alias, and *The Spotlight* records weren’t even computerized? Plus, this was only two days after the bombing, so if one figures in contact time, writing time, pre-production set-up time, printing time, and distribution time, the data had to have come to the ADL immediately. This seems *impossible* unless they had someone very close to McVeigh—or the ADL ordered the ads!

Michael Collins Piper even went so far as to say of this high-level connection that the ADL knew that "McVeigh" had advertised in *The Spotlight.* The ADL had to have had a guy in McVeigh's inner circle, close to McVeigh. That might just have been Strassmeir or Mahon, which means one of them could have reported this to their handlers, the FBI, or the CIA. More than likely it was Strassmeir since Strassmeir, we later determined, had also been informing to the Southern Poverty Law Center, who in turn worked hand-in-hand with the ADL.

The real clincher, though, resulted from a very peculiar reaction by *The Washington Post* and the ADL. Upon realizing that the information they had run in their morning edition about the dates of McVeigh's ads was off by a week, and that such a disclosure would undeniably blow their cover, the *Post* completely scrubbed all references to *The Spotlight* ad and T.Tuttle in their afternoon edition. Worse, they even erased all references to this advertisement in their microfiche records! (Note that the *Washington Post* has been a CIA asset since at least the 1950s). One only needs to research Operation Mockingbird, the CIA's infiltration and control of all media outlets, for further—and shocking—information.

Despite the preponderance of evidence, Joseph Hartzler, the chief prosecutor at Timothy McVeigh's trial, said, "At no time did the FBI consider Andreas Strassmeir a subject of the OKC bombing investigation".

Mr. Hartzler had to have known this statement was untrue. On April 27, 1995, FBI Special Agent Hudspeth made a background check on Andreas Strassmeir through German police intelligence. This report was eventually returned to the State Department's Counter-terrorism Division, Office of Deputy Secretary of State Strobe Talbott. It must be understood that many good FBI agents who were trying to do a good investigation were not included in the compartmentalized cell of the FBI that was running the informants or participating in the coverup of the facts of the bombing. Hence a background check on Strassmeir by an FBI agent.

Incredibly, in light of all the direct evidence linking Strassmeir to the OKC bombing, the FBI didn't interview him until April 30, 1996, over a year after the bombing, and this wasn't even done in person, but via telephone after he had returned to Germany. Such a blatant miscarriage of justice is even more damning when we consider that Strassmeir remained in the United States for *eight months* after the bombing, and didn't depart for Germany until January, 1996.

During these crucial eight months when Strassmeir remained in the U.S., our government had time to review over 70 reports filed by informant Carol Howe, along with 38 audio cassette tapes and two videotapes. The source of these figures was ATF official Robert Sanders. And what was contained in Ms. Howe's recordings and reports? The information pertained to the identity of the Elohim City residents, those who visited the compound, their organizational structure, family trees, telephone numbers, license plate numbers, explosives, guns, and even their tattoos.

Yet Elohim City was never raided once, even though the ATF and FBI knew that Dennis Mahon had been setting-off 500-pound ANFO bombs in the months before April 19, 1995. Why didn’t our government even question Mahon about his role in the OKC bombing?

In addition, one released FBI document, which was obtained by Timothy McVeigh’s attorney, stated “There was evidence withheld by the government that another person could well have been the mastermind behind the bombing.” That could have easily been referring to Andreas Strassmeir, or someone even higher up than him. Or, it may have been McVeigh’s “Covert Action Team” commander. (We would not have the identity of McVeigh’s handler until 2016).

We also know that other relevant information was covered-up after the bombing, because on May 10, 2001, the Department of Justice turned over 4,000 previously undisclosed FBI investigative documents. Furthermore, Chairman Dan Burton’s House Government Reform Committee uncovered the whereabouts of numerous confiscated videotapes and photographs that most certainly would have refuted the official version of events. These very same videos have also been cited by the Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee, yet the Department of Justice absolutely refuses to release them, even under the Freedom of Information Act.

Though the FBI, ATF, and CIA were undeniably complicit in the OKC cover-up, the ultimate responsibility leads directly to the doorsteps of Janet Reno, former President Bill Clinton, and Ms. Jamie Gorelick. Millar’s family members at Elohim City were not the ultimate *driving* force behind the Oklahoma City bombing disaster on April 19, 1995. Findings showed they were simply a cut-out used to cover for much more sinister forces that controlled the players on stage at Elohim City.

CHAPTER 8

Lee Harvey McVeigh: The comparison of Timothy McVeigh and Lee Harvey Oswald

> "So I'm the patsy."
> Lee Harvey Oswald, Nov 23rd, 1963

Was it an off-the-shelf blueprint, or a coincidental pattern?

It was as if I'd seen it before. It was like history repeating itself, but this time I was there to witness what I'd only read about in the Kennedy assassination. It was the crime of the century, and I was one of the investigators. But as I worked the case I could see that too many things were falling into place that eerily reminded me of what, prior to April 19th, 1995, was considered "the Crime of the Century," the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

I had a distinct advantage over the other investigators. I had spent four years immersed in an investigation into the Kennedy assassination, resulting in my book *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza*. In researching the facts surrounding the Kennedy murder, and the Warren Commission's assertion that a lone nut with a gun named Lee Harvey Oswald was responsible, I had delved into Oswald and the mysteries surrounding him prior to November 22, 1963. Now, as one of the assigned investigators of the Oklahoma City bombing, I began to witness a series of events transpire that so closely matched the events in Dallas that it was chilling. I could almost tell what would happen next on a day-by-day basis. Beside the entire "investigation" turning into a massive and blatant coverup before my eyes, I noticed that the two "lone nuts," McVeigh and Oswald, seemed to have a lot in common. So much so, that one could draw the conclusion that OKBOMB was an off-the-shelf operation that was taken from a blue print first drawn up in Dallas 32 years before—or maybe even earlier at a building in Germany called the Reichstag.

Let's examine the "coincidences."

At 9:02 a.m. Oklahoma time on 19 April, 1995, a huge explosion rocked the downtown area of Oklahoma City. Within minutes, during the evacuation of what remained of the building, the searching for casualties, the arrival of police, fire, and rescue personnel, and the mass confusion, two more "devices" were found inside the building. Bomb squad personnel had to deactivate at least one of the devices and remove them from the area for safety. Within the hour the media stated that they were "ATF training devices, not actual bombs." If this were so, why were they placed in strategic locations inside the building, on floors away from the ATF offices?

In Dealey Plaza, a scenario quickly developed wherein a lone shooter, from the 6th floor of the Texas Schoolbook Depository, allegedly fired three shots which amazingly created over a half dozen wounds (including one missed shot) and then escaped the scene undetected. Later investigation showed that only two empty 6.5mm shell casings were found on the 6th Floor and turned in, along with a rifle and one live round. Yet these documents were altered during the Warren Commission hearings to reflect that three empty cartridges were found to fit the FBI version of the number of shots fired, and the

“Magic Bullet” theory.

Oklahoma City: Two seismic events transpired according to the University of Oklahoma Seismic Center. The tape, which actually shows three near-equal events, is quickly debunked by the government as being “the initial explosion, followed by the building collapsing” (ignoring the first event entirely). Yet, when the entire remaining building was demolished by controlled demolition, the event recorded on tape was barely noticeable. Still, the investigators insist that only one bomb was used: the Ryder truck bomb allegedly delivered by McVeigh.

Within twenty-four hours the Ryder truck grows from a small van to the larger box-truck that contained an ever growing amount of ammonium-nitrate explosives required to create the damage done to the building. Yet, according to sources outside the government, very little indication of nitrate deposits at the scene are found—indicating a different type of explosive. Even witnesses and victims described the smell of “sulphur,” and not ammonia. If Ammonium Nitrate was used, Ammonia gas would have been present, and in itself would have been a serious choking agent, and often fatal. Also an Ammonium Nitrate fertilizer bomb, using racing fuel as a catalyst, would have left a “mild, fruity, but disagreeable order,” but not the smell of sulphur which is the smell left after the ignition of black powder.

In Dallas, following the ambush of JFK, damage control seemed to begin immediately with the focus of attention being directed away from the Grassy Knoll to the Book Depository building—and a lone shooter on the sixth floor. In OKC, the first two leads indicate that two “Middle-Eastern males” were seen hanging around the scene and were probably involved, while an all points bulletin was broadcast by OKC Police Department to search for a brown pickup truck with a smoked-plastic bug shield. Within a few hours, the FBI cancelled both leads—and told the police that they had not issued an “attempt to locate” on the pickup truck. But the OCPD had the original release from the FBI asking for the APB, and it had been duly noted in their radio logs.

McVeigh is picked up for speeding, in a car with no license tag, for doing 85 mph in a 70 mph zone, by the Oklahoma Highway Patrol. Oswald was picked up, for allegedly shooting Dallas officer J.D. Tippit, after entering the Texas Theater without buying a ticket. In each case, the FBI was notified within a short period of time that a “suspect” was in custody. In Oswald’s case, items “linking” him to the Kennedy assassination were “found” in various locations: photos of him with the same Mannlicher-Carcano carbine found on the 6th floor, etc. For McVeigh, copies of “subversive material,” such as a small-press radical book titled “The Turner Diaries” is found in his car. Also, the alleged Ryder truck axle that was found was used as a means of tracking who rented the truck because we are told it had the vehicles VIN number on it. This later proved false as no VIN number was on the axle, and it is impossible to track a vehicle with a part number on the part unless a serial number is present.

For Oswald, the Carcano was traced to him by the FBI, who, before the advent of computers and data bases, managed to track the weapon from its entrance into the U.S., to an importer, to Klein’s Sporting Goods, to a sale to “A.J. Hidell,” to Lee Harvey Oswald. All in two days. Over a weekend!

For McVeigh, the rear axle of the Ryder truck was discovered, wherein an ID number was allegedly discovered, which was supposedly traced from the manufacturer, to Ryder, to a truck rental in Kansas—all within hours. Interviews with the rental agent produced two sketches: McVeigh and John Doe #2. The media did not report that a third person was present, who waited outside in a car, and who appeared to be dark complected. And John Doe #2, as a lead, evaporated when the FBI stated that there was a mistake, and that he was a soldier from Fort Riley who rented a truck the previous day, and was not involved with McVeigh. But media outside of Oklahoma did not report that another John Doe #2 was discovered by KFOR TV in Oklahoma City, and that he matched the suspect sketch; was seen by six eye witnesses in a bar with McVeigh and Nichols only days before the bombing; drove a brown Chevrolet pickup with smoked plastic bug screen; and was an Iraqi officer who had fought against us in the Gulf War! It also was not reported that over 5,000 Iraqi POWs had been brought into this country for "humanitarian reasons," and a large segment of them ended up being settled in Oklahoma City.

In Oswald's case, it is interesting to note that he had connections to the White Russian community of Dallas-Fort Worth, and that these people had been settled here by the OSS when Allen Dulles brought the SS Galizien Division of anti-Stalin White Russians out of Europe at the end of World War II, to Greece, then Canada, then finally to New York City and Dallas/Fort Worth. The teenage children of the Galiziens were later utilized as CIA assets for infiltration into Russia—they spoke Russian and had relatives inside who might provide support after infiltration. (This makes one wonder about the "Oswald" who, during his time in the Marine Corps in Japan, "taught himself" Russian within a few short weeks).

The investigation of the Kennedy assassination rapidly focused on the "lone nut" scenario. Witnesses who did not support this rapidly-building case against Oswald as the lone participant were intimidated, debunked or misquoted in reports. Most who saw something other than a man in the 6th floor window were not subpoenaed to testify before the Warren Commission. In McVeigh's case, anyone who brought forward information that there had to be more than one bomb, that there were higher powers involved in the bombing, or that more than just McVeigh and Nichols involved, was quickly debunked, discredited or ignored. For the OKC bombing, anyone who heard or felt more than one explosion or saw more than one person get out of the Ryder truck was discredited or not permitted to testify before the Grand Jury. In fact, no one was permitted to testify in person before the jurors. All questions that were asked by the jurors in one room, were asked of the Prosecutor, who then went out into another room to ask the witnesses, before returning with the answer! (At least an answer that, to me, would have created suspicion because of the fact that I did not hear the witness directly). Such actions infuriated Jurist Hoppy Heidelberg who eventually was dismissed from the Grand Jury because he objected to the way it in which it was being run. Heidelberg later said that, "It was our right as jurors to not only hear the witnesses but to question them directly in person. But that did not happen. How could we tell what the witness really said if they didn't say it under oath in front of us?"

Within twenty-four hours of the bombing the mainstream media, *en total*, slanted the dagger of suspicion to "far right radicals," such as the burgeoning militia movement. In particular, the Michigan Militia was targeted as being "tied" to McVeigh. In actual fact, though two members of the Michigan Militia stated that they thought they saw McVeigh at one of their open-to-the-public meetings, McVeigh himself said he never attended. Still, even if he was seen at a meeting, it could easily have been part of a setup to develop manufactured connections to a group already under scrutiny by certain bureaucrats.

Lee Harvey Oswald handing out “Fair Play for Cuba” pamphlets in New Orleans to build his “legend.”

For Oswald, a radical background or legend (this time Left Wing) was built in the press long before Dallas. He was filmed handing out “Fair Play for Cuba” pamphlets on a New Orleans street corner, and was interviewed on television wherein he declared himself a “Marxist” for public consumption. The media has maintained ever since that Oswald was a Marxist by his own admission, and killed Kennedy for radical political reasons. For McVeigh’s “legend”—the term used in the intelligence community when one play-acts a bogus background for influencing the public perception—it was handing out The Turner Diaries to fellow employees at Calspan Incorporated in Buffalo, New York.

McVeigh selling bumper stickers and handing out Turner Diaries at Waco

The media’s attack on the militia—who had absolutely nothing to gain and everything to lose in the aftermath of the bombing—resulted in new “anti-terrorism” laws being ram-rodded through Congress in the wake of media-generated public emotion. These laws had been laying stagnant for months, having been written following the New York City Twin Towers bombing of 1993, but delayed due to their conflict with Constitutional rights.

Interestingly, one major result of the Kennedy assassination was the “Firearms Control Act of 1968,” the first major legislation regarding governmental control of citizens firearms since the 1930s where private ownership of automatic weapons had to be licensed by the federal government—another restriction on Constitutional rights. One result of the bombing in Oklahoma City was passage of the stagnated “Crime Control Act of 1995” which contained several anti-Second Amendment provisions, included “large capacity magazine ban” and attempts to limit or prohibit so-called “assault rifles.”

Then there are the “Wild Goose Chases” of the national investigation. During the Kennedy investigation, hundreds of FBI agents were sent hither and yon to interview, question, and report on even the most obscure leads and conduct interviews with “witnesses” who had not witnessed anything. The agents, all trying to do as sterling a job as possible, then sent their reports to FBI headquarters for screening and absorption. Few agents ever saw the “big picture,” could compare notes, or even knew just why they were following up on a given “lead.” The same happened with the OKC bombing investigation. Hundreds of agents have followed up on even the most obscure leads, but, like their predecessors who investigated the Kennedy assassination, they are left out of the grand scheme of things and are only privy to certain pieces of the puzzle. It is also interesting to note that the main question was not being asked or answered concerning the motivation behind any crime: Who Benefits?

FBI agents who attempted to follow the money and the powers behind the murder of JFK were quickly redirected by Washington to other activities. The agents who smelled a large rodent with the Oklahoma City bombing found themselves subject to the same circumstances. It appeared once to again be a system of directed investigation, ignoring or debunking anything that does not fit the mold of a predetermined outcome (“A Patsy Gets The Blame”) and disassociation with the idea that higher powers are involved. After all, what agent wants to be re-assigned to Coldville, North Dakota?

Also, ever since the days of J. Edgar Hoover, the FBI agents’ two main missions were to “Protect the FBI no matter what,” and “Don’t embarrass the Bureau.” Following that was the instruction to do what you are told and to never question why. All of these and more held true during the FBI’s OKBOMB investigation.

The television coverage of the transfer of McVeigh from jail to the holding facility at Tinker Air Force Base, outside of Oklahoma City, was quite reminiscent of Oswald’s transfer attempt from the Dallas PD jail to the county jail. The only difference was that there was no Jack Ruby to intervene. However, it should be noted that McVeigh was dressed in bright orange, and wore no bullet proof vest! It makes one wonder if an opportunity was not being presented by design. I’m sure the scenario of Jack Ruby shooting Oswald in the parking garage of the Dallas Police Department was in the mind of the agents who had to move McVeigh out of the Perry County jail. There had to have been layers of security since McVeigh wore no ballistics vest, like Nichols when he was moved from jail to jail.

I wrote in September 1995: “Until the investigation begins to follow leads concerning “Who Benefits?” it is unlikely the Oklahoma City bombing case will ever progress to a full, believable, conclusion. If the case against McVeigh and Nichols, whom the government maintains acted by themselves, was so iron clad, then why did the government prosecutors have to ask for a ninety day extension on their investigation before attempting to present McVeigh for indictment before a Federal Grand Jury? The FBI and Department of Justice still maintain the case is “ongoing” and that there are “others unknown,” but in actual fact no one is working the case, and any new evidence that is presented is either refused or shunned. This also holds true in the JFK case, as the small group of dedicated JFK assassination researchers have discovered over and over when new material comes to light. No U.S. Attorney will touch it, or wants to even know of it. It muddies the water, and is bothersome. After all, Oswald acted alone, didn’t he?”

In Oklahoma City, there’s one more element to consider: the video tape. In 1963, Abraham Zapruder’s film recorded the events that transpired in Dealey Plaza. It was seized by the FBI, obtained by Life magazine (who employed former OSS and CIA personnel such as senior editor Charles D. Jackson), and not released until much later. When it was released it had been altered. In Oklahoma City, the media reported that the camera on an automatic teller machine (or the Southwestern Bell building security camera, or a camera on the Regency Tower apartment building a block west) recorded McVeigh parking the Ryder truck, then walking away from it to get into a vehicle to speed away. The federal authorities seized the tapes for evidence.

Why have we not seen those tapes? If they were being kept secret until trial, then they should have been released after being exhibited in a court room. No tapes were produced, even though they were asked for by the defense.

Shortly after Oswald's arrest in Dallas he exclaimed: "So I'm the patsy!" One can only wonder if McVeigh and Nichols felt the same.

CHAPTER 9

Square Pegs for Round Holes: Facts, Lies, and Damage Control

"The problem with pounding a square peg into a round hole is not that hammering is hard work, but that it's that you are destroying the peg"

Phil Collins

As the investigation progressed it became more apparent by the day that the facts of the case were being distorted or completely left out by the media—and worse, much of the investigation that was being conducted by the federal agencies was going nowhere. It was amazing to see how what we had found and what eye witnesses saw, was being twisted, spun, or ignored.

Additionally, I was again seeing a repeat of what had happened in Dallas in November and December 1963: FBI agents were being directed by Washington, and by none other than FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover himself, in collusion with then president Lyndon B. Johnson to create masses of paperwork, but nothing that exposed anything other than Lee Harvey Oswald being the lone assassin. Thousands upon thousands of 302 reports were being generated, but it would later be next to impossible to weed through them all to obtain any actual facts of the case that did anything but reinforce the official version. This would later be backed up by the bogus Warren Commission. I could see the same pattern taking shape in the OKC investigation.

By the third week of the investigation the local offices of the FBI were virtually side-lined from the case as the main investigators. The main thrust of the case was being handed to "specialists" from Washington and New York. When this happened the local offices were ordered to hand over everything they had accomplished to the OKC command post of the "Anti-terrorist Team." From that point forward any attempt to shed light on anything other than the "official script" was futile. Still, I and the others in the "Irregulars" continued to march.

One morning when I was hand-carrying some memos to the Tulsa FBI office I asked my contact, Pete Rickel, a question: "Pete, am I wrong or am I seeing a repeat of Dealey Plaza 1963 all over again?"

"What do you mean?" he asked.

"After the Kennedy assassination the Dallas PD and Texas DPS were basically shoved aside or told by the FBI and Secret Service what they could investigate and from what to stay away. Then, the local agents and others brought in were sent hither and non to interview insignificant people simply to make it appear like it was a massive investigation and to generate paperwork. Is that what is happening here?"

Pete looked at me and I could detect a look of seriousness and concern when he answered "pretty much." That's all he said and would not elaborate further.

"Well, I'll keep on marching and continue to give you reports of what turns up."

He nodded, but said nothing,

Clinton, Freeh and Reno controlled all aspects of the OKC bombing investigation. FBI agents were prohibited from doing any probes into any area that was not assigned to them. I know that there were many leads at the time, and I also knew that McVeigh, Nichols, and to an extent Michael Fortier were not the only ones involved. The Tulsa office of the ATF felt very strongly that Strassmeir and Dennis Mahon were involved, and possibly several more that were in or connected to Elohim City. There were FBI agents who knew that McVeigh and another dark complected man were together when they rented the Ryder truck in Kansas, while another man sat outside in a car (probably the yellow Mercury). FBI agents who descended on Kingman, Arizona and raided Fortier's house knew of McVeigh staying nearby and that he and Mahon exploded home-made explosives in the desert. I was told later that some FBI agents even knew about some of the "Middle Eastern" players and connections but were prohibited from probing that aspect. If they had not been stopped, the investigation would have progressed to the Philippines at an early stage, but due to constraints from Washington it didn't get beyond a few cursory probes by a few agents sent to the Philippines to basically "cover that base."

It soon became apparent that the "investigation" was turning more into damage control and misinformation than a true and proper handling of the case. The facts, anomalies, and lies outweighed the official version and press releases by the boxcar load. Still, almost all of what transpired or was later discovered was either ignored or glossed over by the media. The more inconsistencies and glaring facts that came to light, the more the media and government ignored them or attacked them as conspiracy theories. It was easy for one who knew what to look for to see the Four "D's" being employed: Deny, Debunk, Discredit, or Destroy. This was the attack mode of the media used against anyone who went public with facts or information relevant to the case that the media and the government didn't support. But as time would eventually show, the Four D's would become the Five D's: Debunk, Discredit, Defame, Destroy, and *Demonize*,—with Destroy including intimidation, threats, destruction of evidence and reports and even murder.

Nor could Representative Charles Key's Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee be dissuaded, or the handful of our little team of Baker Street Irregulars. But, in the media we were all under constant attack, with the OBIC taking the brunt of it. As an example, the *Tulsa World* newspaper, (well-known as a left-wing bird cage liner to Tulsans), constantly took anything the OBIC said or published as conspiracy theory by a bunch of wackos who refused to believe the Official Truth of the Government version. The editors delighted in their efforts to discredit, debunk and defame the Committee—and especially Charles Key. One political cartoon showed Key dressed up as the Mad Hatter complete with top hat and wild expression. It did not matter what we, or the OBIC, exposed or questioned. The *World* was hell-bent on demonizing us as a lot of far Right loonies. After a few letters to the Editor of the *World* (often referred to as the Tulsa *Pravda*), I became *persona non grata*. Nothing I sent them would see ink, even though when I served as Press Release Officer for the Tulsa Police Department on a two-year tour of duty, they relied on me for all crime information they needed for their articles. It became apparent that since I did not toe the official line I was relegated to be one that was "off the reservation." I actually had to agree with that. I simply would not stay on the government reservation when I could smell the smoke of truth in the distance.

On July 17th, 1995, I wrote a memo to Pete Rickel over at the local FBI office that mentioned just one major discrepancy in the government's version. In it I said "I had dinner with a gentleman from England two nights ago who mentioned something very interesting. He said that the IRA in London a few years back parked a huge truck loaded with 45,000 pounds of ammonium nitrate in front of a bank building in the City of London's financial district and exploded it. There was only superficial damage to the front of the building and the main damage was confined to broken windows." I received no response to this memo.

To continue with a list of facts:

1. The Ryder truck, even if filled with ANFO, could not have by itself caused the damage that occurred.
2. The crater was very small, maybe no more than 8-12 feet across, and not consistent with similar truck bombs and car bombs in other parts of the world.
3. The damage to the building indicates explosives that detonated inside the building, as well as columns and steel rebar cut by shaped charges or plastic explosives on the columns.
4. The building was demolished very shortly after the incident. The remains were trucked off and buried, and the ground fenced off and guarded by armed Wackenhut security guards. Why? (Wackenhut is known for its covert government contracts and black operations).
5. All evidence of other explosives in the building could not be evaluated by architects or engineers or explosives experts, and even those who did arrive early enough to see the damaged building could not enter or approach the wreckage and had to evaluate from 200 feet away!
6. The "crater" was covered over by a few sheets of plywood. Not exactly a crater like that seen at the Khobar Towers in Saudi Arabia.
7. Witnesses saw two "Arab" men wearing blue jogging suits standing outside the front door of the Murrah Building prior to the Ryder truck arriving. There was a UPS truck there (photographed by a surveillance car) a few minutes before 9 a.m, proving that "someone" had advance knowledge that something was going to happen even though that has been officially denied. The parking place was held by the two Middle Easterners until the Ryder truck arrived a minute or two later. The *bombs* went off at 9:02 to 9:03 a.m.
8. Witnesses heard and felt a rumble and some inside the building thought it was an earthquake, so they took cover under their desks. They then felt and heard a larger sharper explosion. The "rumble" would indicate a controlled detonation such as used to implode a building, and the larger explosion would be the Ryder truck exploding.
9. At least two significant seismograph events occurred and were recorded at the Geological Survey station in Norman, south of Oklahoma City at the time of the explosions. The graph actually shows three. Later, when the building remains were blown down with several large charges, the same seismic survey station showed a very small event on the tape that was barely noticeable.
10. Bill Clinton, himself, allowed some Middle Easterners "free passage" out of the country. People who should have been detained and questioned.

11. Witnesses saw what they said was an “Arab male” with McVeigh in the Ryder truck before its arrival in front of the Murrah Building. Mike Moroz at Johnnie’s Tire Store where McVeigh stopped to “ask directions,” even described the passenger, saying that he was wearing a white ball cap with blue or purple “flames.” He even described the tattoo on his arm (which matched the tattoos worn by members of Saddam Hussein’s Republican Guard).
12. All video tapes of the event were seized by the FBI and classified. The video cameras were then removed and the mounting holes in the walls puttied up and painted over. No one has seen the tapes outside of a very small number of high ranking FBI officials. The tapes now are “lost”. They would show who, and how many, got out of the truck. They would be the “Zapruder film” of the OKC bombing. But it has been recently discovered, and covered up, that an FBI agent had copies of some of the tapes and had offered to sell them to a Los Angeles television station for $800,000! We also know that Oklahoma City resident Charlie Rose, who worked for a tape duplication service in Oklahoma City, was employed by the FBI to make copies of the tapes that had been seized. He told the producers of *A Noble Lie,* a documentary on the bombing by Freemind Films, that he made over 400 copies of the tapes that were taken by the FBI and that the FBI had two agents in his studio at all times to make sure he didn’t keep any copies for himself. Yet, to this day, the FBI tells Jesse Trentadue that they can’t find any tapes.
13. Some government workers were paged not to go to work that day. Evidently it was up to each office whether to go to work or not if a threat warning had been disseminated.
14. The Oklahoma Country Sheriff’s bomb squad was at the Federal Courthouse early that day “conducting training.”
15. Witnesses said they saw men on roofs of nearby buildings all night, but they left around dawn. Could they have been on a stakeout then decided to go home in the morning? It has been said that McVeigh was supposed to have delivered the truck at three a.m. but ran late. If he had done that there would have been no one in the building.
16. Why were the files that were taken from the building on Day One more important than rescue efforts?
17. Both police and firefighters testified that they saw federal agents removing unexploded devices.
18. General Benton K. Partin, former head of Air Force weapons development program, who held multiple engineering degrees and had over 30 years experience, was barred access to the site after he pointed out that the asymmetrical damage could not have happened with a single explosion externally generated. Partin agrees with me that internal charges had to have been attached to the support columns to have done the damage indicated.
19. Jane Graham, who worked in the building, witnessed three men, two dressed in government GSA coveralls, attaching “putty and wires” to the columns of the parking garage two days before the event. She thought they were hooking up a temporary

phone or computer line. The third man was wearing a black western outfit, black cowboy boots and black western hat. She described him, and later said, after looking at photos, that it was Andreas Strassmeir.

20. The passenger in the Ryder truck was described has having black, curly hair and was dark complected. He was later identified as a former Iraqi former Republican Guard named Husseini al Hussein, AKA al Husaini Hussain, who was taken as a POW during the Gulf War and brought to the U.S. with over 3500 other Iraqi POWs.
21. An Oklahoma City paramedic named Tiffany Bible testified in an affidavit that she had seen ATF agents in full gear that morning right after the bombs went off. She asked if they were injured and was told "no." She said they told her that the ATF agents were called and told not to come in that morning.
22. The local media and witnesses reported that two other devices were found, disarmed, and removed from the rubble. Oklahoma Governor Frank Keating, himself a former FBI Special Agent, State Attorney General, and later head of the Treasury Department which (at the time) included the BATF, also acknowledged that devices were found and would provide valuable information about who may have built them. After that he never mentioned this again.
23. Witnesses saw another Ryder truck with two white males in it in Bricktown just east of the downtown area of Oklahoma City, driving around "like they were trying to be noticed." It was felt, by their descriptions, that the driver was Dennis Mahon and the passenger was Andreas Strassmeir.
24. General Partin deduced that "the building appears to have been destroyed by the detonation of explosives carefully placed at four critical junctures on supporting columns within the building. Blast through air is very inefficient against heavily reinforced concrete beams and columns. There had to be contact explosives in the building. The total incompatibility with a single truck bomb lies in the fact that either some columns collapsed that should not have collapsed or some of the columns are still standing that should have collapsed and did not.
25. As part of a lawsuit filed by an Oklahoma journalist the DoJ revealed that there were 23 original videotapes in July 2001. The tapes showed footage of the area around the building from April 15th to April 19th, 1995 at 9:02 a.m. The tapes are still classified.
26. I was briefed on Day Two by a former member of the Jerusalem Institute for Western Defence, who stated that the bombing had all the earmarks of a Hezbollah or Hamas hit. He showed me a video tape of several other instances, including the bombing of the Marine barracks in Beirut, the American and French embassies, and other "truck bombings" that the Islamic Jihad and others had done. More telling, he said "when they want to get rid of something inside a building, they destroy the building."
27. McVeigh was arrested in the middle of nowhere, doing 85 mph in a car with no license tag. He surrendered without resistance even though he was armed and had just killed over a hundred people.
28. At least two Ryder trucks were rented in Kansas, one by McVeigh, and one by a "Middle Eastern male" (John Doe #2). This was not reported by the media.

29. The Ryder truck was identified after the bombing by a partial VIN number on an axle found a block away—by Governor Frank Keating! It was traced through Ryder in Florida to Junction City Kansas, checking to a GM truck. Then a GM employee told the news media that GM did not put VIN numbers on rear axles, so the truck then changed to Ford. Tracing the truck appeared similar to tracing the Carcano carbine found in the Texas Schoolbook Depository by serial number over a weekend before computerized records of gun importation and sales existed. After obtaining photos of the axle/differential, we could see the number was a part number, not a VIN.
30. Five eye witnesses placed McVeigh in a Ryder truck with John Doe #2 on the day of the bombing. John Doe #2 was described as a Middle Eastern male with black curly hair.
31. Eye witnesses saw two Middle Eastern males dressed in a blue jogging suits or jump suits near the front door of the Murrah Building prior to the arrival of the Ryder truck. They walked away quickly when the truck parked, then got into a brown GMC or Chevrolet pickup truck parked a few spaces down the block. They then saw McVeigh and John Doe #2 get out of the Ryder truck, cross the street to a parking lot (Journal Records Building) and get into a yellow Mercury Marquis. (Other witnesses later said the Mercury was parked in an alleyway).
32. Another eye witness was almost hit by the Mercury Marquis as it hastily left the parking lot, heading north. He got a good look at both McVeigh who was driving, and John Doe #2 in the passenger seat. He also saw a license tag on the car hanging loosely by one screw, dangling as the car sped off. He described it as a white tag, not a brown Arizona tag, which was reported by the media. Later, an Arkansas tag, which is white with red letters, was found beside the road a mile from McVeigh’s Marquis was stopped. The tag, Arkansas PTA-811, had been stolen in Fort Smith, Arkansas, not far from Elohim City a few days earlier.
33. Some witnesses verified that two “bombs” were found inside the building. One had to be defused and was seen being removed from the scene. It had ten minutes to go when the timer jammed.
34. No ties to any “militias” were ever proven, though the government and major media made a huge issue of “Right Wing Extremists and Militias” being the culprits behind McVeigh. McVeigh himself stated that he was not a member of a militia, and had never even attended a militia meeting—which was a lie as he had been “asked to leave” a meeting in Florida, and later in Michigan due to his vocal anti-government rhetoric.
35. A two million dollar reward was posted by the FBI for information regarding anyone involved in the bombing, including identity of John Doe #2, but no leads offered were followed up and the reward was eventually cancelled.
36. 3500 (and more later) POWs from the Iraqi Army were brought to the U.S. under George H.W. Bush and later Bill Clinton, which were settled all over the country in government-provided housing. They formed 10-12 man cells and quickly became suspected of organizing terrorists events. Just prior to the Oklahoma City bombing, HAMAS held a huge rally in Oklahoma City. The Muslim population in Oklahoma City is significant and includes members of the Palestine Liberation Organization,

HAMAS, Islamic Jihad and other terrorist groups.

37. A report from a former DOE nuclear site monitoring technician stated that the site indicated a subnuclear blast—not ammonium nitrate. If this is so, then the possibility of a SADM (Sub-Atomic Demolition Munition, or “back pack nuke”) may have played a part. They are in the military inventory and used by Special Forces and SEALs to take out enemy bridges, buildings and road junctures. Could McVeigh have had access to such munitions, or work for someone who did? In my opinion a SADM would have caused much more damage unless it was very small and designed to work in a contained area.

38. If McVeigh wanted to “strike back” for the government attack on Waco, then why pick Oklahoma City? Why not Waco, or New Orleans where the ATF office that initiated the Waco raid was located?

39. Jayna Davis, a TV reporter for KFOR TV in Oklahoma City, traced down a group of Iraqis living in Oklahoma City, former soldiers for Saddam Hussein in the Gulf War. They managed to enter the U.S. under our State Department granting special entrance permission without going through the proper immigration channels or procedures. One of these men was seen with McVeigh two days before the bombing. He matched the description of the individual spotted in the Ryder truck with McVeigh on the morning of the 19th. Further investigation by TV reporters showed that the alibi that this person had for the day of the bombing was fabricated and totally untrue. They also determined he worked, along with several other Iraqis and Middle Easterners, for a man who renovated HUD houses, and was himself linked to the PLO. This “boss” had his daughter fabricated time cards for those involved to show they were at work that morning when they were not.

40. When Hussein al Husseini, AKA al Hussaini Hussain, was interviewed on TV in Oklahoma City, he allegedly could not speak English and had to have an interpreter. His “interpreter” was a Jordanian, Abraham Ahmad, who had left Oklahoma City in haste from the Will Rogers Airport the morning of the bombing, was detained in Chicago and let go. Upon arriving at Heathrow Airport in London, he was immediately turned around and flown back to the U.S. by British law enforcement as they identified him as a probable suspect in the OKC bombing!

41. Federal officials, within a month of the bombing “identified” John Doe #2 as one Army private Todd Bunting, who they said rented a Ryder truck the day after McVeigh at the Kansas body shop, and that the people in Junction City who rented the truck to him were mistaken about any John Doe #2 being with McVeigh when he rented his truck. They never changed their story about the three men who rented the first truck, and one of them was *not* Bunting. But the Bunting story stuck with the media and John Doe #2, and the search of him, faded away.

42. A leg that did not belong to any of the bombing victims was found in the rubble. It was clad in a military style boot and olive drab trouser leg, and was identified by the medical examiner at first as “probably belonging to a light skinned man under thirty with dark hair.” That later changed to a female. No one ever claimed the leg, and it did not belong to any of the bodies that were recovered.

43. People on the scene of the bombing reported *no* ANFO residue at the scene. If this is

true, what was used? C4? Or possibly PETN or PDTN explosives? Some victims described the smell in the air afterwards as smelling like sulphur, which smells like rotten eggs. That is not the odor of exploded ANFO, or Ammonium Nitrate mixed with Nitro-Methane, or "racing fuel."

44. One eye witness who arrived early to work that morning recounts seeing the bomb squad as she hurried into the building shortly after eight o'clock. An attorney who worked in the area also attested to seeing the bomb squad in the same area.
45. The Oklahoma City Fire Department also appeared to have advance warning of a terrorist attack. Glenn Wilburn had heard several reports concerning FBI tip-offs to the fire department before the blasts and decided to check them out. When he asked Assistant Chief Charles Gaines about the matter, he was met wth denial. He then went down the hall to Chief Dispatcher Harvey Weathers 'office and asked the same question. "Harvey said yes, they had received a message from the FBI on the Friday before the bombing that they should be on alert." Wilburn then told Weathers, "Well, you're going to be surprised to learn that Chief Gaines memory is failing. He says it never happened." According to Wilburn, Weathers responded, "Well, you asked me and I'm not going to lie for anybody. A lot of people don't want to get involved in this." According to Wilburn, two other dispatchers corroborated Weathers' story. All members of the Oklahoma City police and fire departments were quickly ordered not to speak to anyone concerning events surrounding the bombing unless it had first been cleared through official channels.
46. Federal Judge Wayne Alley, whose office was in the Federal Court House behind the Murrah Building, later stated that he "felt lucky that he didn't go to his office on Wednesday." He said the bombing came just a few weeks after security officials had warned him to take extra precautions. He was told that "information has been disseminated that indicates concerns on the part of people who ought to know that we ought to be a little bit more careful," he said. He was told to "be on the lookout for people in the courthouse who shouldn't be there." He said he was not given an explanation for the concern.
47. Another hint of prior knowledge came from the U.S. Marshal Service. On March 22nd, just three weeks before the bombing, the Newark, New Jersey *Star-Ledger* reported that "U.S. law enforcement authorities have obtained information that Islamic terrorists may be planning suicide attacks against federal courthouses and government installations in the United States. The attacks, it is feared, would be designed to attract worldwide press attention through the murder of innocent victims." The memo, issued by U.S. Marshals Service Director Eduardo Gonzalez, warned that attacks may be designed to "target as many victims as possible and draw as much media coverage as possible" to the fundamentalist cause.

These are just a few of the long list of anomalies, contradictions, key points and outright lies that surround the tragic attack on innocent civilians in Oklahoma City on April 19th, 1995. But no matter what the federal government and media said, twisted, ignored or tried to cover up, the truth cannot be buried for long. And for me and a few other stalwarts, we were just getting started….

MURRAH BLDG.
PARKING
FEDERAL COURTHOUSE
OLD POST OFFICE
KERR
COMPLEX
PARKING
PARKING
ROBERT S. KERR
COUNTY OFFICE BLDG.
COUNTY COURTHOUSE
LEADERSHIP SQUARE
SKIRVIN PLAZA
HOTEL
PARK AVE.
1ST OKLA TOWER
AMER. 1ST TOWER
PARKING
LIBERTY TOWER
MAIN
MIDAMERICA TOWER
CENTURY CENTER

As for the men seen by Jane Graham putting "putty on the columns," speculation from some was that they, or possibly someone else, later gained access to the building from one of the utility tunnels that run beneath the streets in almost every major city. Oklahoma City is no exception. Map of tunnels under downtown Oklahoma City. Murrah Building is at top. Federal Courthouse is below the Murrah Building, located just to the South.

CHAPTER 10

The Baker Street Irregulars

“When you have eliminated all which is impossible, then whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth.”

Sherlock Holmes quote
The Blanched Soldier

Within three weeks of the bombing I could see that the federal government’s “investigation” was no investigation at all, but instead had turned into a political football for the current administration. The actual leads that were developed were either debunked or ignored by the “experts” in the FBI who had arrived from back east and taken over the investigation from the local offices.

It was not long, after a few trips to Oklahoma City that I crossed paths with a handful of concerned Oklahoma City citizens and law enforcement officers who were not buying-off on the official storyline, and for good reasons. Besides the damage to the building compared to the alleged amount of ANFO in the Ryder truck, the eye witnesses knew that what they saw did not match what was being put out by the federal investigators or the controlled media.

During my trips to Oklahoma City I met people who were more involved in actually getting to the bottom of the case than most, if not all, of the FBI investigators who only paid lip service to many of the leads developed and witness statements. Among those were:

David Hoffman, editor of the *Haight Ashbury Free Press* in San Francisco. He had travelled to Oklahoma because he felt there was something to look into because what he was getting from his sources was that the national media was not forthright in their reporting. And there was something else, much larger, in the actual story. He also had connections to factions of Israeli Intelligence and, I suspect, the Mossad;

William Jasper, investigative journalist for *The Free American* magazine, which is the publication of the Right Wing John Birch Society, the total opposite of Hoffman, which made for an interesting combination;

George Wallace, an Oklahoma City resident and a retired U.S. Air Force lieutenant colonel and fighter pilot who flew missions during the Vietnam war, and was an avid “John Bircher.” He graciously provided his home as an *ad hoc* headquarters for a number of investigators;

Rep. Charles Key, who formed the Oklahom Bombing Investigation Committee, or OBIC, assembled his own crew, and shared information with those of us who were working the case from our various perspectives;

Hoppy Heidelberg, an Oklahoma City resident who served on the Grand Jury until being excused for basically asking questions, and demanding answers. these ran afoul of Oklahoma County District Attorney Bob Macy. Macy was more interested in keeping the “investigation” contained to McVeigh and Nichols than crossing the official line to get to the truth.

William Northrop, an Israeli intelligence contact of David Hoffman's, who was sent to Oklahoma City two days before the bombing because the Israeli's "felt" that something big was going to happen. (I never personally met Northrop, but Hoffman kept me apprised of his findings in the weeks following the event. (I later found that Northrop had a very questionable past).

Pat Briley, an Oklahoma City resident and former nuclear submarine officer who was a real fearless bull dog in tracing leads to their bitter ends, then writing about his findings. Pat took me on two "tours" of the scenes of various events that occurred before, during, and after the bombing.

Jayna Davis, Oklahoma City TV station KFOR investigative reporter who first developed the Middle Eastern connection leads. She interviewed several witnesses who saw the two dark-complected men in blue jogging suits in front of the building. These were the men that held the parking place for the Ryder truck when the UPS truck left. They then left the area in a brown GMC or Chevrolet pickup truck with atinted bug shield on the front.

Roger Charles, a retired US Marine Corps lieutenant colonel who had worked as a reporter for a major network until his stories did not agree with the official line;

John David "J.D." Cash, who along with Roger Charles, pursued the Midwest Bank Robber and neo-Nazi leads. Cash was an investigative reporter for the *McCurtain Daily Gazette*, a small rural newspaper located in southeast Oklahoma. I would find out more on Cash when much of what he "exposed" and what he ignored and debunked raised red flags to me.

Jimmy Rothstein, a retired New York City police detective. Rothstein and a friend, Jimmy Vasilos, came to Oklahoma City at the bequest of one Alex Magnuss, a wealthy Chicago building owner who wanted to "get to the truth" of the bombing. Magnuss later helped Hoffman financially when Hoffman ran out of funds.

Don Browning, an Oklahoma City Police Department sergeant who was one of the first officers to search the building on Day One and refused to ignore what he saw, and refused to *not* talk about what other officers had told him.

There were others that came and went, but the above named individuals are those who stayed with the case for months, and in come cases, years.

As we began to share information, follow leads, and coordinate our own investigations, I had to walk a tightrope between keeping the "Team" on one side, and the FBI office that I also had to report to on the other. But as time went on it was easy to see that there would be no progress to get to the truth and the actual perpetrators on the FBI end, which was day-by-day being more controlled from Washington.

Our *ad hoc* team, which could be described as "Team Rebel," grew, and over time, to me, as an old Sherlock Holmes fan, it would be more of a modern day version of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle's "Baker Street Irregulars." To me, the name fit.

Discovery Outside the Political Bounds

The first thing that we knew we had to do as we organized was to ignore the federal "official lie." There were just too many discrepancies and anomalies to look into. First was the myth of “no John Doe #2.” We knew, verified by witnesses, that there was another man in the Ryder truck with McVeigh. He was seen when they stopped at Johnnie’s Tire Store to ask directions, then by people in the post office a block west of the Murrah Building when McVeigh stopped, got out and had an animated conversation on the sidewalk with a “dark complected man.” Witnesses then saw two men got out of the Ryder truck at the Murrah Building, and the passenger walked to the rear of the truck—possibly to initiate the bomb sequence, then walk away with McVeigh. He was then seen seconds later leaving the parking area of the Journal Record building as a passenger in McVeigh’s Mercury, almost hitting a bystander. At the truck rental in Junction City, Kansas, witnesses saw McVeigh with another man when the truck was rented, and meanwhile another man was sitting outside waiting in a car. The official line of John Doe #2 being chased down and turning out to be Pvt. Todd Bunting, who rented a truck the day after McVeigh, did not hold water. The people that rented the truck to McVeigh were sure of the two men who did rent the truck, and neither was Bunting, even though the FBI tried to convince them otherwise.

Then there was the ever-changing cause of the explosion(s), first being a car bomb, then a bomb in a pickup truck, which grew to a larger Ryder truck. No matter what anyone else saw inside the building, or the damage to the back of the cut, or how many floors downward the damage existed, the official explanation resided in only the Ryder truck being the culprit.

As the days turned into weeks more questions arose due to our various areas of interest. Why were explosives experts ignored or debunked when they concluded what it actually would have taken to bring down the building? Was there a Middle Eastern connection as alluded to by the Israeli intelligence information which we were provided and that Jayna Davis uncovered? Were there two or more explosions, and if so what caused them? Why was the APB on the brown pickup truck not followed up on, then later cancelled altogether and denied to exist by the FBI? Why wasn’t Jayna’s John Doe #2, the Iraqi Republican Guard officer, who eye witnesses picked out, not followed up on by the FBI?

There were so many more questions, none of which were satisfactorily answered by the government. In the words of Winston Churchill in describing Russia, our case was becoming “…a riddle, wrapped in a mystery, inside an enigma.”

No matter what we or others came up with, we were continuously being attacked or ignored by the media, while I was basically “humored” by the FBI in my efforts. All of my memos, turned in to attempt to knock the FBI investigation off high-center and get someone to check out the leads we developed, seemed to all go into the infamous “Black Hole.” Known throughout law enforcement, the Black Hole is where the FBI or other government agencies, send memos, reports, and leads that they do not want, but are afraid *not* take, end up. We never knew where if any of our efforts were taken seriously, but we did know that “you give it to them, you get nothing back.”

I wasn’t concerned, knowing that would might be the case as after 25 years as a police officer. I was accustomed to it and expected it. But I always did hope that maybe there would be an agent, somewhere, that did take interest in my efforts and do some follow-up work. Unfortunately, as the case progressed, it became more and more apparent that would not happen.

There were so many leads to follow, and so few of us with so few resources, that to follow all of them to a satisfactory conclusion was not possible. The more we found out, the more needed exploring.

Imagine a building with one entry door. You go inside and you discover that the interior is a maze of hallways. You pick a hallway and follow it, and along the sides are more doors. You open a door and the room is empty, or maybe it does have a clue or a bit of evidence. Then you go further down another hallway and open another door and inside is…another hallway of doors! Inside the some of the rooms are clues, others contain bogus diversions, and still others are empty.

That is what it is like to investigate major crimes that have been covered up by "official investigations" bent on establishing one outcome to the exclusion of any other evidence or group of facts. Others might compare it to peeling the layers off an onion. The more you peel, the more you find out, but there are still other layers to peel. And with so many leads and so many different areas to investigate, the investigation would almost become disjointed at times. This investigation was and is one of the most difficult in which to "connect the dots."

As time went on over the ensuing weeks and months each of us gravitated toward following our various leads: Davis on the Middle Eastern Connection, Cash and Charles on the Bank Robbers and neo-Nazis, Rothstein and Vasilos on the bigger picture regarding military and CIA and possibly even Mafia connections, Briley on various discrepancies and hot leads, Wallace and Jasper on every weakness they could find in the official story, and Hoffman and I on a myriad of leads from foreign connections to rogue agents to crooked politicians.

But no matter where each of us was on the map, we shared info and over time gathered so many facts of the case that it began to form a picture.

In the military intelligence world of Battlefield Intelligence, the gathering of intel is a process of finding pieces of a puzzle, putting them all up on the wall to see what fits, filling in the blanks with more pieces as you find them, then in the end, see what the whole picture looks like.

When Arthur Wellesley, 1st Duke of Wellington, was asked after he retired from the British Army "how would you sum up your military career," he responded "All the business of war, and indeed all the business of **life**, is to endeavor to find out what you don't know by what you do; that's what I called "guessing what was at the other side of the hill." He is also noted as saying "I've spent my entire military career wondering what the fellow on the other side of the hill is up to."

As we followed our various leads, our investigation diverged into chasing down information and more leads on the various players: the Iraqis and the Middle Eastern connection, the Philippines/Nichols connection, Drug Cartel connection, CIA rogues, military covert operations described by McVeigh and Nichols and alluded to by Strassmeir, the Mid-West bank robbers, Elohim City, and any other lead that any of the above linked to or exposed. And for me personally, I was drawn more and more to the files in the building and their possible connection to Mena and the Clintons.

One can only imagine how difficult such a task would be with our limited resources and various skill sets, some of which were amateur and some professional, but still all working together for a common goal.

The key questions to be answered were first, what really happened? Next, who was behind it? Then "why Oklahoma City," followed by why it was important to the FBI and Washington to mislead the public, spin the news, fail to follow-up on our leads, and in general muddy the waters and mess up the investigation.

But above all, as I reminded the various team members that the three main questions we had to answer, as with all crime scenes, concern three things: Means, Motive and Opportunity.

Who had the means to pull it off? Behind this is the logistics of money, equipment, and capability. Then, who had the motive? This would address the alleged motive of McVeigh's "revenge for Waco"—which had nothing to do with Oklahoma City but was a good red herring for the general public, and finally, who had the opportunity? This last question was answered as soon as McVeigh was arrested and did not deny participation in the bombing. But who else had the opportunity, especially in regards to the mysterious characters seen in the basement of the building placing "putty" on the columns.

But could McVeigh, even if helped by Nichols, plan, build a truck bomb big enough to do the damage, and then expect to get away with it? And just where did they get the resources—the money? Who paid for it? It wasn't Nichols as he had no job, and it wasn't McVeigh as he had no job either. The government's excuse for this was that they'd stolen some guns from a gun dealer in Arkansas, and took his gold and silver as well. But "this dog doesn't bark" as they say in the South. Selling a few stolen guns would not provide enough funding by themselves due to the amount of money it would really have taken to accomplish all that had to be done. These things included Nichols' trips to the Philippines and McVeigh's travels around the country, plus their living expenses.

There were so many leads to follow and so many questions to answer that it seemed like "Mission Impossible."

But as the fictional FBI agent, Fox Mulder, in The X-Files said: "The truth is out there." And we were determined to find it.

CHAPTER 11

The Middle Eastern Connection

Oh, East is East, and West is West, and never the twain shall meet,

Till Earth and Sky stand presently at God's great Judgment Seat;

Rudyard Kipling
Ballad of East and West
1889

At the end of the first Gulf War thousands of Iraqi soldiers surrendered in and near Kuwait. Those that did not were either killed in the ensuing attack into Kuwait and Iraq by American and allied forces, or managed to make it out of the country and back to Baghdad. Of the various Iraqi units that were either obliterated or forced to retreat were armored columns, trucks, light vehicles, artillery (with most abandoned in their positions), mechanized infantry in their armored personnel carriers, and troops of soldiers from the conscripts to the elite forces of Saddam Hussein. One of these groups, and his most capable, were the Republican Guards Division. The Republican Guards originally were the palace guards and personal security for Saddam Hussein, but grew over the years to become a large elite army unit.

Right after Operation Desert Storm ended thousands of Iraqi POWs were smuggled into the U.S. by the State Department. Information was leaked and some publications exposed the influx of enemy soldiers. The American Legion magazine stated that over 3500 former Iraqi soldiers who had been captured or had surrendered had been brought in and settled all around the U.S. We later determined that this was not a one-time deal, and eventually thousands were allowed entry—in excess of 35,000!

What we discovered during our investigation was that they had been settled, at taxpayer expense, in 6-12 man groups in houses provided to them by the government. Many of these areas where they were initially settled included New York City, Chicago, Denver, Oklahoma City, Dallas-Fort Worth, and other cities and towns across the country. Having those who fought against us now living among us was not only problematic, it was dangerous. None of them had been "vetted" as to their loyalty or backgrounds, and the State Department, under President George H.W. Bush, knew it. And when Bill Clinton entered the White House the influx continued and grew. It was as if someone wanted to create a domestic foreign terrorism problem on purpose.

The week following the bombing I was briefed in Tulsa by an Israeli intelligence operative who was visiting a local religious organization. One of my contacts arranged the meeting and said that I would find the information this man had very useful. During the meeting he stated that what he saw in the media of the damage to the Murrah Building was typical of a HAMAS, Hizbollah, or Islamic Jihad bombing. He showed me photographs of buildings in the Middle East that had suffered very similar damage, then explained how much the jihadis used truck and car bombs to do their work. He reminded me of the Beirut Marine barracks bombing that destroyed the building, and showed me photos of other government and private buildings that were either rubble, or missing much of the building nearest the initiating explosive device.

At the conclusion, he advised me to keep my mind open to a possible “Arab terrorist” connection, and to look for a motive that would involve jihadists in the Oklahoma City bombing. Then he said something else. He said “You need to find out what was in that building. The terrorists, if they cannot access something in a building, they destroy the building and its contents.”

This raised some red flags for me when I considered the Day One event of “feds” stopping rescue efforts to retrieve files. But if McVeigh was the culprit, and nothing else indicated any others involved, other than John Doe #2, then the idea of “Arabs” being involved was at the time, to me, remote. Still, as a military officer trained in Intel, it was a piece of the puzzle, if not a clue, to remember and put up on the wall with other pieces that would eventually show up over time to form a more complete picture.

As more and more information was developed and witnesses gave their stories of what they saw before, during, and after the bombing, more pieces of the puzzle emerged. Some very credible witnesses stated that they saw two Middle Eastern men in blue jogging suits (some said blue coveralls) standing in front of the Murrah Building, acting nervous before the bombing. These two were who saved the parking space for the Ryder truck when the UPS truck pulled away. Others saw a “swarthy man” with McVeigh, talking on the sidewalk beside the truck across from the post office a block west of the building just minutes before the bombing, evidently parked by the curb waiting for the UPS truck to leave. Others saw the two “dark complected men” in the blue jogging suits run east and get into a brown GMC or Chevrolet pickup truck with tinted windows and a smoked plastic bug shield on the front, then leave the scene at a high rate of speed. And before McVeigh arrived at the Murrah Building he was seen by Mike Moroz, an employee of Johnnie’s Tire Store, along with a dark skinned individual with a blue and white baseball cap with blue flames on the side, and an “S”-shaped tattoo that looked like a snake (one of the symbols of the Republican Guards division). Though it is considered a sin in Islam to “deface” a body with a tattoo, it was common practice among many Iraqi soldiers, and those in elite units, to get a tattoo that would identify their body in case of death.

Lastly, one witness outside of the Journal Record building, across the street north of the Murrah Building, saw a dark skinned man with McVeigh in the yellow Mercury who had a “look of hate on his face.” He described “almost being run over” as the vehicle left through the alley next to the Journal Records building at a high rate of speed.

The Israeli intel agent’s information made me remember the 1993 World Trade Center bombing in New York City. Ramzi Yousef—real name believed to be Abdul Basit Mahmoud Abdul Karim—was, according to the FBI, the planner behind the attempt to bring down one of the Twin Towers with the hope it would strike and topple the other.

Another Islamic terrorist who appeared to be connected was Abdul Hakim Murad, Yousef’s roommate in the Philippines. On the day of the bombing, Murad claimed responsibility for this terrorist act from his jail cell in New York. He bragged to his prison guards, verbally and in writing, that the bombing of the Murrah Building was the work of the “Liberation Army.”

Then when leads from the investigation of Terry Nichols and his complicity in the bombing began to come in, more information regarding possible “Middle Eastern” involvement became apparent. Nichols, according to investigators and the FBI, made several trips to the Philippines in the 2-3 years leading up to the bombing. He was married to a Filipina, Marife Nichols, (pronounced “Mary Fay”) and had one son by her. As it turned out, as the Philippine investigation progressed, Nichols, Ramzi Yousef, and Murad were in Cebu City at the same time. (More on this in a separate chapter).

Ten days after the bombing I was contacted by Oklahoma City television station KFOR (Channel 4) investigative reporter Jayna Davis. Jayna wanted to meet with me and compare notes on what she and I had so far. She travelled to Tulsa and sat down in my home office for most of a day and we reviewed her and my notes. She also had a television video tape of a computerized reenactment of what happened the morning of the bombing that showed the positions of the Ryder truck, the brown pickup truck, McVeigh and the John Doe in the truck across from the post office, and the two “ME’s” in the blue jogging suits in front of the Murrah Building.

As the day progressed she told me of what she had discovered using a private investigator and surveillance photos and video tapes of who she believed these Middle Eastern subjects actually were. On that day she had a few names but as time passed she would discover more names and for whom they all actually worked. But one name that she felt was John Doe #2, the passenger in the Ryder truck with McVeigh was one al Husseini Hussein, one of the Iraqi POWs that had been brought to this country after Desert Storm and who was then living in Oklahoma City.

Over the next few weeks I found out that there had been, and still was, a significant concern in military intelligence and federal law enforcement circles about the influx of these Iraqis—and others from other Middle Eastern countries who piggy-backed in with them. I also found out through various civilian and law enforcement sources that there was a house in Fort Worth that served as a communications center for what was thought to be a growing terrorist organization. I was told that it was what was called a “phone bounce,” a place that an Iraqi (or PLO or HAMAS etc.) operative could call, then the call would be “patched through” to another number (possibly another “bounce), then on to the number and person actually for whom the call was intended. It was in this way that information, intelligence and orders could be passed that would be hard to trace at that time and almost impossible to find on a phone bill.

It was not long before Jayna called and said that she now knew who al Husseini Hussein was, and who he worked for. He actually had several aliases, and over time I found that a great number of Islamics entering this country developed many aliases and several IDs. His actual name eventually proved to be as well as we could tell Hussain al Hussaini, but we weren’t sure about the actual spelling. He was a member of the Republican Guard who had been captured (did not surrender) near Basra, an Iraqi city located just north of Kuwait in the southeastern province of Iraq. This was the direction toward which the Republican Guard attempted to retreat before being cut off. Some information even gave him the rank of lieutenant, and if that was so he was a dyed in the wool Saddam supporter. When captured he told the American soldiers that he had escaped from a jail in Baghdad after being incarcerated for passing anti-Saddam posters and handbills. He said he had walked all the way from Baghdad across the desert, by himself, with no supplies, after escaping jail just to find Americans. This was quickly determined to be false, but he was still taken as a POW and later brought into the U.S.

Further investigation produced aliases such as Hussain Al hussaini, Al-Hussaini Hussain, Hashem al Hussain, and Hussain Hashem Jassem Alhussaini. To a police officer such as myself, the only reason to have aliases is to disguise your true identity, and that means one has a reason to avoid being identified through a false identity by law enforcement. To me only a terrorist living here would have so many aliases.

Jayna went on to tell me about one Samir Khalil, who was a Palestinian living in Oklahoma City who owned a property company that bought and restored HUD homes to resell or rent out. He had two companies: Samira Properties and Samira Investments. Khalil had hired several Iraqis to paint and refurbish various run-down HUD houses in the Oklahoma City area, and on the day of the bombing Hussain and several others were allegedly, according to Khalil, working on a house. But neighbors who were later interviewed stated that no one worked that morning on that house which was located across the street from them. Further investigation showed that the time cards for these workers had been falsified. David Hoffman sent me an email that said in part “Khalil asked his daughter, Heather, to falsify work sheet reports for al Hussaini to demonstrate his supposed employment on the morning of 4/19.”

Hoffman also stated in the same email “…al Hussaini may have driven the brown pickup that the witnesses saw speeding away from the bombing with the Middle Eastern driver. The truck was later found at the Woodscape Apartments after the bombing where it had been abandoned. The witness said a middle-Eastern man dropped it off. It had been painted yellow when eventually found and the VIN numbers had been removed. Khalil owns a body shop (Route 66 Auto Collision) that may have re-painted the truck yellow and dropped it off at Woodscape. This body shop is approx 2 miles directly west of the Woodscape Apartments. One of my contacts watched the body shop for five days and never saw anyone come in for an estimate.” We later determined that Hussein matched the “swarthy man” in the yellow Mercury that was seen leaving the scene, and identified another Iraqi that probably worked for Khalil as one of the two men leaving in the brown pickup.

David Hoffman then sent me a list of names of sixteen of Khalil’s employees, and of aliases for each. Khalil’s aliases alone included such names as Samir Sharif Khalil, Samir Kahlil, Samir Abdul-Ghani, Sam Samara, Omar Kalif, Omar Khalif, Omar Kahlif, Sam Kabbib and Samir Sharif Abdul Ghani.

Khalil, according to Hoffman and a 1990 Grand Jury pre-sentence report/brief is a Jordanian with Palestinian ties. He has relatives in Baghdad, Iraq; Amman, Jordan; Dharhan, Saudi Arabia; and even in Jerusalem, Israel; Palestine; and Oklahoma City. He came to the U.S. in 1968 and was naturalized in 1975. Upon further investigation we found that he had two felony convictions: Grand Larceny in 1973 and defrauding insurance companies in 1975-88. The Grand Jury “Response to Pre-sentence” states “Over the past fifteen years, Samir has acquired and managed well over one hundred properties for companies owned by he and his family. most were run down properties acquired at depressed prices in high crime areas. Under his management, the properties were refurbished and a good level of occupancy was achieved and maintained. According to the Prosecution Version, from 1995 through 1988, 140 insurance claims, allegedly totaling

$450,000.00, were made with regard to these properties, 80% of which were for vandalism, wind and hail damage…some were substantial losses. Four were fire losses… Investigators believe that most of the claims were fraudulent in nature…[and] on one occasion a witness observed Khalil breaking windows at a property on which he later submitted a claim…Samir denies this allegation."

On the next page of the brief is the statement "An employee of Kahlil's (sic) told investigators he was instructed to set fire to four of his properties. Khalil subsequently submitted loss claims on three of these properties."

One employee of Khalil, Robert Kulick, was arrested on December 13th, 1987, by the Oklahoma City Police Department and charged with arson, in conjunction with a fire at 1137 N.E. 28th Street. Then on April 8th, 1988, FBI Special Agents Edward Herbert and Gary Dagan interviewed Kulick at his residence concerning his employment with Samir Khalil. In their written report the agents noted: "On this occasion, he claimed to have set fire to four vacant buildings at Samir's request. he allegedly said Samir had told him to set fire to the premises at which he was arrested because the insurance was about to expire."

Hoffman exposed more about Khalil as time went on. In one email he said "According to Israeli contacts, Khalil had been investigated for PLO fund raising activities by the FBI, but he plea bargained it down to one year in federal prison. He was pulling in various size checks from insurance companies for vandalism and related property damage. This is a classic PLO fund-raising technique."

So, if Khalil was buying run-down houses, painting them, fixing them up, then vandalizing them or burning them down to raise insurance money that he then forwarded to the Palestinian Liberation Organization, and the FBI knew it, why did he not get more than one year? The obvious answer would be that he eventually turned confidential informant for the FBI because nothing else would have allowed him to remain free or even in this country.

Finally, something else involving Khalil stuck out like the proverbial fly in the ointment: Khalil's ex-wife, Carole, to whom he was paying alimony, worked for the Department of Agriculture in the Murrah Building and was at her desk when the explosions occurred. She died there.

The more Jayna Davis, David Hoffman, myself, and others dug into the "Middle Eastern Connection," the more we discovered. Hoffman and I chased one lead with some help from his Israeli contacts regarding Khalil and the Middle Eastern phone bounce. One report that I received stated, "Israeli intelligence reports that they secured telephone records of Khalil's and Hussain's long distance calls. Both show several calls to a house in Mesquite, Texas, which is a Hamas relay (cut out). A call to Boston, for instance, would go to this house then be relayed so that the end number and/or originating number would not be reflected on the bill." Later in the same report, "Hussain has moved out of Oklahoma City and is now supposed to be living in the DFW area, or possibly Houston. This would match the fact that Khalil owns several properties in Texas, but mainly Dallas and Fort Worth." And most important regarding this phone number is the statement that "*Another party who used this same number is Ramzi Yousef, the Twin Trade Towers* *bomber who planned to blow up 10 American 747s over the Pacific!*"

Further investigation, provided by retired NYC detective Jimmy Rothstein, who researched county records in Tarrant County, Texas, showed two interesting properties in Texas that were flagged during the telephone network investigations: one in the South Ridge Addition in Fort Worth belonging to one Botros Said (a name we were not familiar with) and one in the Lakewood addition of Fort Worth belonging to Samir Khalil!

In a report that I forwarded to my FBI counterpart I wrote "Our investigation has revealed that there are at least seven "John Does" still at large that were involved at the first (bottom level) bombing operation. This information has been determined due to eye witness statements at the scene, both before and after the explosion. One of the John Does, who we suspect as being John Doe #2, and who rode with McVeigh in the Ryder truck (due to the eye witness statements at the scene both before and after the explosion) was an Iraqi national named Al Husseini Hussain [actual spelling of his name in the report]. Hussain is a former Iraqi soldier who was brought into this country as part of a covert "humanitarian" relocation project by the State Department and CIA along with 750 other Iraqi soldiers who had fought for Saddam Hussein during the Gulf war and who were captured or surrendered. Hussain's story is that he escaped from an Iraqi prison, made his way across the desert, and asked for asylum when picked up by American forces. This is the version the media later reported. Investigation, however, tells the following story: Hussain was a lieutenant in the Hammurabi Division of the Republican Guards. He assisted in blowing up the oil fields in Kuwait, then was trapped when he tried to escape back to Baghdad and was captured by the 4th Infantry Division on Highway 89, near Bhasra. He told the Americans that he was a conscript, and that he wanted asylum. He was then incarcerated in a POW camp and finally added to a shipment of Iraqis who were admitted to the U.S. and relocated in several specific areas—most of which happen to be co-located with 28 known Hamas cells. The most likely scenario is that he located and began attending a local mosque, where he was approached by Hamas or Hizbollah types and recruited."

The report went on to state that "Israeli intelligence reports that they secured telephone records of Khalil's and Hussain's long distance calls. Both show several calls to a house in Mesquite, Texas, which is a Hamas relay."

The more Jayna Davis pursued her leads and those provided by others, the more heat she stirred up. Besides her own television parent network, NBC, killing her stories at the national level, she and her OKC station, KFOR, was attacked by Hussain al Hussaini himself when he was exposed during the investigation as a "person of interest" in the bombing. A report in the *Oklahoma Daily*—the University of Oklahoma student newspaper— headlined, "Iraqi refugee sues local television station," with a subtitle "Lawsuit—A man claims KFOR-TV has ruined his reputation."

"An Iraqi refugee filed a lawsuit Thursday against KFOR-TV, Oklahoma's Channel 4. Al-Hussaini-Hussain is suing the television station for its reports implying he assisted in the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building.

"In a June 7 broadcast, KFOR linked Hussain's digitized likeness with that of John Doe No. 2. At the time, it was believed that John Doe No. 2 was connected to the bombing suspect Timothy McVeigh.

“Hussain’s attorneys claim he was indirectly identified, and his reputation was harmed by false statements.”

“‘Some people chase him, spit in his face and beat him up,’ said Samir Khalil, translating for Hussain, who only speaks Arabic. ‘He feels like his life was damaged forever.’”

“KFOR has limited its response to the lawsuit in a short statement. ‘We’re confident in our reports and confident KFOR will prevail in the case,’ Melissa Klinzing, the station’s news director, said. Klinzing would not comment further, saying the station’s staff and lawyers needed more time to study the lawsuit. Earlier this summer reporter Jayna Davis told the *Oklahoma Gazette* she stood behind her story ‘150 %.’“Brad Edwards, also named in the suit, contributed to KFOR’s report.“Hussain and Khalil, who was also Hussain’s employer, maintained that Hussain was working April 19, the morning of the bombing that killed 168 people and injured more than 500. His attorneys said the FBI has assured them that he was never a suspect.

First day sketch of John Doe #2 (left). Hussain al Hussaini in 1995 (right). Photo: Jayna Davis

“The lawsuit claims defamation, invasion of privacy and intentional infliction of emotional distress.”

Hussaini al Hussain spoke English and had served as a translator for other Iraqis previous to the law suit. But all of a sudden he had to have an interpreter, and none other than Samir Khalil.

KFOR was not only under attack in the courts, but by other competitors as well. Joyce Reed, KWTV Channel 9 news director said her station was concerned when its competition aired the piece. “It was not what we would have considered to be a strong news story. It wasn’t ethical at all. If it caused innocent people to suffer and it misinformed the public, it is an incredible disservice,” she said, according to the *Oklahoma Daily*.

World Net Daily reported “Davis also was sued by the Iraqi she accused of being convicted bomber Timothy McVeigh’s partner. Although the Iraqi’s Aug. 24, 1995, defamation lawsuit was dismissed, he refiled the suit six months later…Some local media, including other TV stations, came to the man’s defense. One weekly newspaper said Davis embellished the story. However, U.S. District Judge Timothy Leonard vindicated Davis’ reporting on the Iraqi national by awarding KFOR a Summary Judgment motion and ruling that the plaintiff had presented no evidence to refute Channel 4’s stories about him.”

John Doe #2 sketch by FBI on Day One (left) and Hussain al Hussaini (right). Photo: Jayna Davis

The investigation of the Middle Eastern Connection to the Oklahoma City bombing didn’t stop in Oklahoma City. Even though the Clinton administration, Department of Justice, and FBI went to great lengths to confine the outcome to McVeigh and Nichols and *no* Middle Eastern connection, U.S. Representative Dana Rohrabacker of California took interest in the case and began his own investigation, relying much on what Jayna Davis discovered. In his Chairman’s Report from the Oversight and Investigations Subcommittee of the House International Relations Committee titled “The Oklahoma City Bombing: Was There A Foreign Connection,” the report states:

“Another key piece of evidence that Jayna Davis used to build the case in her book for Middle Eastern involvement was the fact that Hussain Al Hussaini “was one of a group of Iraqis hired to do odd jobs for a Palestinian landlord, Samir Khalil, who owned properties throughout the area. Khalil hired the Iraqi newcomers, supposedly refugees from the first Gulf War, to maintain his rental properties. Khalil himself served time for insurance fraud in the early 1990s. Hussaini resembles John Doe Two and was identified by witnesses on the scene.”

“The connections by Davis in her book linking McVeigh to Murad, Yousef and the former Iraqi soldiers was made not only through Terry Nichols connection in the Philippines, but by the suspected John Doe 2, Hussain Al Hussaini, to Samir Khalil who according to “the discovery of a published list of un-indicted coconspirators from the first World Trade Center bombing that includes the name Samir Khalil.”

The Rohrabacker Committee’s report went on to say:

“Another possibility of Islamic terrorist involvement in the Oklahoma City bombing was pursued by Jayna Davis, a local Oklahoma City television reporter. Davis did extensive research in the immediate and long term aftermath of the crime and concluded that a small group of recent Iraqi Émigrés living in the Oklahoma City area helped McVeigh bomb the Murrah Building. She documented multiple witnesses who placed Timothy McVeigh with a foreign-looking person (and/or persons) in the days leading up to, as well as the day of, the Oklahoma City bombing. Her witnesses offer substantial support to the theory of a Middle Eastern connection and relate directly to the existence of John Doe Two. The FBI, much to the frustration of some of its own investigators, discarded the possibility of the existence of John Doe Two, two months into the investigation. There are a number of factors, including information provided by Davis, indicating the existence of John Doe Two and a possible Middle Eastern connection.

Note: at the outset of the subcommittee’s investigation, former Oklahoma governor Frank Keating personally requested that the investigation be called off. During his meeting with the subcommittee chairman, *Governor Keating mentioned that then-President Bill Clinton had called him only hours after the bombing. According to Keating, President Clinton’s first comment to him after the bombing was “God, I hope there’s no Middle Eastern connection to this.”* (author’s emphasis)

This mindset, described by Governor Keating, may or may not have influenced the original Oklahoma City bombing investigators. There were many reasons to believe that there might have been a foreign connection and that is not something that should have been shied away from.”

The report’s last page ended with this:

“Within minutes of the Oklahoma City bombing, local television reporter Jayna Davis was at the scene of the crime interviewing witnesses. In the weeks and months afterward, she continued to investigate the bombing and, in her television broadcasts, asked viewers with information to come forward. She was particularly focused on the FBI’s original sketch of John Doe Two. There are multiple witnesses in Oklahoma City who placed Timothy McVeigh with another person at the scene of the bombing. The description of this accomplice offered by the witnesses at the scene closely resembles the sketch made of McVeigh’s companion when he rented the Ryder truck. The hard fact remains that witnesses saw McVeigh with a man leading up to and on the day of the bombing. Authorities still contend that McVeigh was alone. The belief that the FBI dropped its search for John Doe Two prematurely appears justified.

“Davis has presented evidence that John Doe Two, who was with McVeigh in the Ryder truck on the day of the bombing, was a recent Iraqi immigrant who lived and worked in Oklahoma City. The Iraqi in question, Hussain Al Hussaini, was one of a group of Iraqis hired to do odd jobs for a Palestinian landlord, Samir Khalil, who owned properties throughout the area. Khalil hired the Iraqi newcomers, supposedly refugees from the first Gulf War, to maintain his rental properties. Khalil, an Oklahoma City businessman, himself served time for insurance fraud in the early 1990s. Hussaini resembles John Doe Two and was identified by witnesses on the scene. Adding to the suspicion, Hussain Al Hussaini was less than forthcoming about his whereabouts the morning of the bombing. His alibi, brought out in civil court depositions, is contradictory and unconvincing. One more disturbing revelation of this investigation is that *Hussain Al Hussaini was never interviewed by federal law enforcement.*

“More alarming is the discovery of a published list of un-indicted coconspirators from the first World Trade Center bombing that includes the name Samir Khalil. This subcommittee asked the Department of Justice to determine if the man’s name on the un-indicted coconspirators World Trade Center bombing list is the same man in Oklahoma City. A letter responding to this request stated that such a task would be too “burdensome.” This unwillingness on the part of the Justice Department to look into a possible solid link between the Oklahoma City bombing and the first World Trade Center attack is extremely disappointing, bordering on dereliction of duty.

“To this day, federal law enforcement cannot explain what, if anything was done to examine these possible links or scrutinize Khalil’s activity related to terrorism in his hometown. Justice officials should at least show some curiosity about the subcommittee’s request as to whether there is circumstantial evidence linking two major domestic terrorist attacks. As a result, our investigation into this matter is incomplete.”

It was obvious that Janet Reno’s Justice Department, under orders from Clinton, was not interested in pursuing or exposing anything to do with a Middle Eastern connection.

The more we got into the Iraqi “Middle Eastern Connection” the more we found out about those involved in groups that ranged from Iraqis to Palestinians to Egyptians and other Middle Eastern nationalities. It was like the building with all the hallways and doors that led to nowhere, or somewhere.

One report I received from a retired Army Criminal Investigator, Gene Wheaton, provided the following regarding what he obtained from his CIs (Confidential Informants):

“A 56-year old Palestinian, Khalil was born Samir Abdul-Ghani Sharif Khalil and emigrated to the U.S. from Kuwait in 1968. He received his M.A. from Oklahoma City University in 1995, his PhD. in psychology from O.U. in 1979, and went on to teach at public schools and at nearby Tinker Air Force base. He also did a brief stint in the Oklahoma Department of Human Services. Khalil claims to have relatives in Jordan, Saudi Arabia and Iraq, who provided the money for his education and real estate investments. Khalil quit teaching in 1982 and devoted himself full-time to his real estate business. By 1995 he had acquired over 500 properties, mostly through HUD, the federal agency besieged with corruption in the late ‘70s and early ‘80s.

“C.I. #3 said ‘in the 70s this son-of-a-bitch did not have a dime to his name. He couldn’t survive. He used to ask me for money. Where did he get 500 properties?’

“C.I. #3 who worked as an FBI informant, believes Khalil is a money launderer.

‘Khalil should be a millionaire with that much property, but he lives in a dilapidated shack on 32nd Street,’ the C.I. said. C.I. #3 believes Khalil is just an ‘errand boy’ or ‘cut-out’ and someone else actually owns the properties.”

“CI #5 says the money to fund his real estate empire came from the PLO, which instructs him on how to live for appearance sake.

“C.I. #5 also said that Khalil travels to Israel at least once a year and avoids any contact with the PLO, but communicates through a ‘cut-out’ member of his family.”

When I asked Wheaton how reliable his C.I.s were, he said “very reliable.” He then said he believed Khalil was a bag man taking money he made from insurance scams and on rent houses and giving it to the PLO when he “visited Israel.” When I asked him why he didn’t just wire transfer it he said “that would be too easy to trace.”

Within a week of digging into the Middle Eastern connection, I had indications that my phones were tapped, as was my fax machine. I had some equipment that tested the lines and gave a warning if they were interfered with by phone taps or someone listening in somewhere on the line.

I knew a friend who was a lot more savvy with computers and the internet than I. Other than research, emails, and writing, my computer expertise was limited. I contacted her, the wife of a good friend, a retired Marine Corps major and fellow Vietnam vet, and she said that she could see where my emails were going and where they were coming from. She had software that traced the “pings” and “bounces” and “redirections” to trace the path of communications. As it turned out my outgoing emails were redirected from Tulsa and CompuServe to Langley, Virginia, then somewhere in South Dakota before going on to their destination. To me that meant CIA. But why would the CIA be interested in the information that I was already providing to the FBI, unless they felt that I was not providing *all* the information that I was sharing, or more importantly, getting. That would make sense. Especially if the CIA was worried that any connections we established to the OKC bombing might involve the CIA! I would eventually find that the CIA was very interested in my progress, and not for legitimate reasons. I knew that the CIA would be more than interested in what I discovered about the Mena operations, Iran/Contra, and even more in what I would eventually find out about McVeigh and Nichols.

Also, I knew if the FBI tapped my phones and fax, it would be done locally.

I took my “snitch box” to work at the police department and scanned my office. It lit up when it got to the air conditioning vent above my desk. I then hooked it up to my phone line and dialed another line in the building and it indicated that this phone, the one with my personal desk number, was also tapped. I began to wonder if my police car was bugged too, so I checked it out in the parking lot but got no indication. However, I did not have any gear to show whether or not a GPS tracking device was hidden in the car somewhere. I didn’t really care because the car was only driven between the office, headquarters, and home. I also felt that our own department’s SID—Special Investigations Division—might be involved as they would have access to my office. In support of that theory was a visit from the lieutenant from the SID who stopped in one day to ask some very basic questions about what I knew about militias. A week or so later an officer who worked for the SID came to my office and asked me to help him do some research on the

Internet since at that time even his office was not online outside of the department's computer network. His name was Randy, and after spending several meetings with me at work and later at home, he became a believer himself and proved to be an asset when I needed information about any of the Tulsa connections that SID had discovered. (It was Randy who showed me the photos of the Shawn Tea "suicide" crime scene).

On one of my days off I was working in my home office, which at the time was an upstairs office of our two-story house. There was a park across the street, and between the street and the grass was a small parking lot. On that particular winter morning I saw a plain white unmarked van parked there facing my house. Inside were two men. Steam was coming from the exhaust pipe so I knew the engine was running, probably to keep the heater going.

I checked every few minutes for about 45 minutes and the van didn't move. I decided to check it out. I went out our back door, over the back fence, then around the block until I was in the north end of the park. The van was still there.

I approached from the rear, walked up to the passenger side and tapped on the window.

The man inside just about jumped out of his skin. He looked at me with an "oh crap!" look. I motioned for him to roll down his window, but he didn't comply. He said something to his friend, then looked back at me like they were trying to decide what to do.

I said "You guys don't have to stay out here. Why don't you shut the engine off and come in. I've got coffee on, so no reason to freeze your butts off."

The window rolled down part way and the passenger said "I don't know what you're talking about. We're just taking a break."

From what I could see in the van I could not observe any tools, and both were dressed casually and not in work clothes. Also, both were in good physical shape, clean cut, and of military age. All were indicators of either law enforcement, military, or spooks.

I couldn't resist. I had worked too many stakeouts myself, and did a much better job than these two clowns, so I ruled out "law enforcement." "Look, I know who you are and what you're doing here. If you want to know anything about me, just ask."

The passenger said something to his partner and they started to back up to leave. I said as they began to move "Listen. If you are going to do stakeouts, you need to shut off your engine. You might get cold, but at least you won't give yourselves away."

He gave me a dirty look, and as they pulled out I waved bye-bye and stood there until they were out of sight. I never saw them again, nor any other car doing a stakeout on my house. I always wondered what was in the back of the van, and berated myself for not looking for obvious antennas.

It was time to deal with my phone tap. For this I decided to use the "give 'em more than they want" tactic. As it happened I had two phone lines to my house. One for the house and one for my office. Being a good Christian I thought it my duty to give the third party that wanted to hear what I said on my phone something they needed. Bible preaching.

Sometimes when I was home, but mostly if I left to run errands or go to work, I would use my office line to call my home line, then pick up the home line. With both receivers off the hook I would start a tape recorder on my office line that contained one or more hours of sermons or Bible lessons. I'll never know if it did anyone's soul any good or not, but I'm sure it used a lot of tape and caused someone to listen to it all.

Then came the fax machine. In the mid-1990s most faxes were called "thermo-faxes" because they used a 90 foot roll of fax paper. When you received a fax the machine would print the pages and cut them at the end of a standard sheet when, and only when, it detected a page break from single sheets being used to send a fax. But if they didn't detect that break, the receiving machine would continue to pump out a long line of paper until it ran out. All 90 feet.

I was pretty sure I knew who was intercepting the faxes and I had their office fax number. I decided that that night at midnight I'd send a fax. A long one.

Precisely at midnight I hit the "send" button and watched as a new roll of fax paper, all blank, was sent. I didn't think anyone would be in the office at the other end so I figured that first thing the next morning someone would come into their office and see a pile of blank fax paper on the floor. Back then you had an option of programming your machine with your name or business name and fax number that would appear at the top of each page as a convenience to a receiving party. I never figured out how to do that—I never liked to read manuals, so disregarded a lot of unnecessary functions. So, with no caller ID (even though I was sure they would know exactly who did it) all they had was paper. I figured they'd think their fax machine was broken and would have to call tech support or have it replaced.

I waited three days and did it again. I would love to have had *their* office bugged to hear the reaction the next morning!

The next step in my plan was to print out a long banner with a message. The printer I had was a dot-matrix printer. For the younger folks this type of printer that was common then used a type of typewriter ribbon and printed on paper using a print head that had small pins that struck the ribbon to the paper forming letters, numbers and characters. I just happened to have a software program that would print huge letters sideways on the paper making a banner.

I typed "If you quit tapping my fax machine I'll stop sending you nice banners." I put it in the fax and sent it at 1 a.m. the next morning since I figured they might have had someone in the office at midnight to stop their machine from wasting paper.

The next day my equipment showed my fax line and phone line, which were both the same number, clear.

As I left for work early that morning I saw a white telephone company truck a few doors down. I stopped my police car and went into the backyard where I saw a man working on a telephone junction box where the phone pairs of the phones up and down the street were located. I walked up behind him and said "having problems?"

It surprised him, and when he turned around and saw me standing there in my police flight suit complete with badge and shoulder holster, he said "uh, yeah, but it's fixed now."

He was obviously staring at my name tag and recognized who I was. I said “then I guess my phone lines will be clear from now on?”

“Yeah, I fixed the static.”

“I don’t know about static,” I said, “but tell your boss that if any of you guys want to know about anything I’m doing, just ask.”

“I don’t know what you’re talking about” he responded, standing up.

“Look. That truck out there is the FBI phone tapping truck. It looks like a Southwestern Bell truck, but it stays parked in the parking lot at our police radio shop. Everyone knows what it is and who owns it. And another thing, you need to talk to those two clowns who tried to surveil my house last week. They need more training.”

He got a blank look on his face and before he could catch himself he said “that wasn’t us!”

I could tell by his reaction he was telling the truth. So, it if wasn’t the FBI, then who was it? The answer to that, to me, was our friends at Langley where my emails were being redirected. And since the CIA was allegedly prohibited from spying on American citizens (which they violate all the time) I felt that their interest would be because we were looking into international connections to the bombing—-or, then another thought hit me—Mena!

Or both.

I was not the only one who was being watched, or worse. David Hoffman, working from his apartment in Oklahoma City, suffered several incidents of vandalism and threats that were obvious attempts to scare him off of the story and the investigation. He assumed his phone was bugged and would often complain of not having enough volume to be able to hear a conversation well, and of static at times. I tried to reassure him by telling him that “Dave, you get the most flack when you’re over the target!” I never had any problems with receiving or sending faxes to him, but I’m sure, as he was, that his emails were also being read, as were mine, and in my opinion, everyone we emailed or received emails from.

On advice from my techie friend who served as my computer consultant I obtained a program called PGP, or Pretty Good Privacy. With PGP you could write an email, then, using the program, encode it with 64 bit military encryption before sending it. Only someone who had the key at the other end could decode it. Pretty cool!

But since, as Sherlock would say to Watson, “The game is afoot,” I had no reason to hide anything in my emails, or any communication for that matter, but since someone was playing a one-sided game, I’d have to get off the bench.

To fire my shot down range and see who stuck their heads up, I began writing nonsense emails that were gobbledegook. Even decrypted they would still look like code. Messages such as “The lilacs are on the piano,” and “Backstreets run North,” or in some cases “Page 334 para 4 line 16 word 8,” which would actually further be shortened to “334,4,16,8.” Only the receiver who had the other end of the “code book” could decrypt the message.

I knew this last one would be a real challenge as I knew that even if NSA could decrypt the PGP message, they have to figure out the ancient "book code" message—and they could not do that without a copy of the book being used by the sender and the receiver.

This method is as old as books themselves, but was used extensively in Europe on the 1800s and during the American Civil War by spies on both sides. The way it worked was that you and I have a copy of the exact same book. I need to write a sentence that you can read, so I pick the words out of the book first by finding the word I need, then writing down the page number, then paragraph, then line down from the top, then word to the right. You can then find that page, then the paragraph and line in that paragraph, then read to the right to find the word. It's labor intensive, but fool proof.

Even John Wilkes Booth used the book code by using, according to legend, a first edition copy of Robert Louis Stevenson's *Treasure Island*." And of major interest, the same code and book was found, along with messages, in the effects of Edwin Stanton, Lincoln's Secretary of War, and a Democrat who hated Lincoln. A few years back it was discovered that Booth worked as a spy for both sides, which allowed him to cross the borders between North and South forces with the cover of being a merchant that traded bales of Southern cotton for barrels of salted pork from the North. Both sides needed one or the other so they let him pass freely. Hence the name "Pork Barrel Politics."

Many researchers still question whether or not Booth was actually killed by Union Army soldier Thomas "Boston" Corbett, or if that was simply a ruse to let the real Booth get away by killing a look-alike decoy. And there are many now who question if Timothy McVeigh was actually executed, or simply chemically knocked out to appear dead so that he would be spirited away to live life under an assumed name. There *is* some evidence to lead to this conclusion.

Other PGP messages that I sent to Hoffman and others who were in on the game were often just random letters and gobbledegook that, in themselves, would have to be "decrypted" such as "HDLL YUU 132kj fVMnn 489 56ffh." Good luck with that one! I wonder if NSA is still trying to crack the codes? In the end it was all great fun, but all the listeners had to do was ask and I'd have given them all the info I had if I felt they were as legitimately trying to solve the case as I was.

Hussein, Khalil, and Yousef were not the only Islamic or Middle Eastern names that surfaced during our probe. Names such as (last names only due to privacy issues): Ahazd (with three AKAs), Al Saidi (with two AKAs), Almoswai (with one AKA), Al Mosully (with one AKA), Al Hesawi, Al Sadoon (with one AKA), Osman (with four AKAs), Al Homsi, Alamiri (with one AKA), Rousan, Ahaad, Jabar, Hussain, Al Siidi, Haider, and Bassam. All worked for Khalil.

My file notes from sources including surveillance photos and videos, mention that Osman was the paymaster for Khalil and was "the boss of the workers" and responsible for paying them. Haider was the muscle man and enforcer. A big brawny man with the build of a pro wrestler, he was obviously Republican Guard, as in our opinion were all the rest on the list. How many were actually involved in the bombing or support roles? We never discovered the answer to those questions as with any case of eye witnesses, very few could actually identify "foreigners" by looking at surveillance photos. Most simply stated “that could be him, but I’m not sure. It happened so fast.”

How many times have police officers and detectives heard this phrase from witnesses.

During the investigation into the Middle Eastern connection, I found out more about Abraham Ahmad, the Jordanian who fled the country the morning of the 19th from Will Rogers World Airport, only to be returned from England by Scotland yard.

The O’Hare airport security personnel and the FBI detained and questioned Ahmad for six hours when he arrived in Chicago. FBI agents eventually released Ahmad and bought him another plane ticket, this time to London. But upon his arrival at Heathrow, he was intercepted by Scotland Yard Special Branch where he was strip-searched and his luggage inspected. His luggage contained what were described as “bomb making tools and materials.” When confronted with the items—pliers, hammer, cables, silicone caulk, a telephone and electrical wire and tape—he said it was for “working on his house in Jordan.” The Special Branch officers put a handcuffed Ahmad on a plane and sent him back to the U.S., to Washington D.C. They also notified the FBI that Ahmad was a suspected terrorist. That, evidently didn’t mean much in the FBI’s opinion, as they allowed Ahmad to return from D.C. to Oklahoma City.

Ahmad, now having “been checked out and released,” all of a sudden didn’t need to fly to Jordan to check on sick relatives, as was his first story. Instead he returned to his house in Oklahoma City where the *Tulsa World* described in a puff piece article: “He said he returned home to find camera crews camped on his lawn and his ‘100% white neighbors’ bad-mouthing him to the media.’”

When Ahmad did talk to the media, he alleged he couldn’t speak English and had to have an interpreter. The interpreter who showed up and spoke English *was none other than Hussain al Hussaini, who in the past had to have Samir Khalil interpret for him because he didn’t speak English.*

The *World* went on to say in the article that was written a bit over a year after the bombing that “More than a year after being cleared, Ahmad said he ‘still feels the suspicion…It’s not easy to live in this neighborhood’” and that he planned on moving back to Jordan. He eventually sued the U.S. government for $1.9 million, but was offered only $10,000 to settle the suit by the Justice Department, which he refused. The article, printed August 15th, 1996, said that Ahmad would refile the suit when he was ready to leave the country.

In finding my file on Abraham (AKA Ibrahim) Ahmad (and others) during this writing I found an email from Hoffman that said that he had the names of the two Middle Eastern males who wore the blue jogging suits that were seen in front of the Murrah Building, then leaving in the brown pickup truck: “Omar and Ahmad/two ‘ME’ males running from the scene in blue jogging suits—I think ‘Ahmad’ is really Abraham Ahmad, who split for the airport, then Chicago, then London—*with his blue jogging suit which he changed out of at the airport and put in his luggage before checking in.*”

A blue jogging suit was found in his luggage at O’hare, but no mention of finding it in London. As for “Omar,” I don’t have that name on my lists of suspects and Hoffman did not elaborate in the email.

In an email dated 8/13/96 Hoffman wrote “If Ahmad had been cleared by U.S. authorities for the worst terrorist attack in U.S. history, why did British authorities refuse his entry into the country? Did they know something the U.S. did not or something the U.S. didn’t want to admit…What is even stranger is why the FBI allowed Ahmad to leave the country in the first place. In FBI agent Henry Gibbons’ affidavit, special mention was made of the items in Ahmad’s suitcase, and his coincidental April 19, 10:43 departure time, and Gibbons stated that he considered Ahmad’s testimony in front of the [Oklahoma] Grand Jury *vital*. Yet Ahmad was simply allowed to go on his way, and like so many other suspects and witnesses, was never called before the Grand Jury. Moreover, Ahmad was apologized to by no less than President Clinton himself! Why would President Clinton go to the trouble of apologizing to a likely suspect in a routine investigation? This is interesting coming from a president that failed to apologize to the Branch Davidians… obviously there is a political motive at work here.”

Re-reading David Hoffman’s email while writing this book reminded me of Clinton assuring the world on Day Five, a Sunday, “there is no Middle Eastern Connection.”

Nevertheless, that statement would not deter our investigation in that direction, and it would not be long before we began receiving intelligence from the Philippines regarding Terry Nichols’ trips there and with whom he met.

There were so many strange characters who surfaced during the initial stages of the investigation that it was hard to keep track of them all. One such person was named Cary Gagan. Gagan had a very shadowy background that ran the gamut from drug running to meeting with various Middle Easterners (he said “Iranians”), to being in contact with Soviets while being a DEA informant. But in 1983 Gagan was blacklisted by the DEA due to allegations that he provided false information to the benefit of certain drug dealers. Hoffman was able to find and interview Gagan over a period of time. What he discovered was what appeared to be a definite connection between the bombing and Middle Easterners.

In June of 1986, the Soviets contacted him and asked him to obtain and provide false identification for certain illegal Iranian (Middle Eastern) immigrants. But, when Gagan met with a counterfeiter, a man named Hamid who worked at Stapleton International Airport in Denver, the conversations were recorded and turned over to the FBI and the Denver Police Intelligence Bureau. Not long after that, Gagan wound up in jail on the charge of insurance fraud. However, the FBI was more interested in turning Gagan into an informant for the FBI, but Gagan, according to Hoffman, refused. Then in January of 1987, Gagan agreed to assist in the investigation of stolen technology being shipped overseas to front companies that then shipped the goods to Cuba, which was embargoed. The operation was code-named Operation “Aspen Leaf,” and in August, 1987, the sting operation netted four West Germans and one Austrian in charges of illegally exporting technology to Cuba, North Korea and Bulgaria.

Gagan alleges that in May of 1994, while working as an informant for the Justice Department with a letter of immunity, he was put in contact with two Arabs named Omar and Ahmad. While the deal began under the guise of drug trafficking, the Arabs, who had been paying him with counterfeit money, wanted him to take part in a plot to blow up a federal building in Denver. This is important in that we received information early on that the original target was supposed to be in Denver, but it was changed to Oklahoma City.

Gagan said that they would be using a mail truck packed with explosives. He said “I was going to be part of it because I could move through the building because I’m Anglo and I’m a U.S. citizen and you know, I wouldn’t draw attention in and out of the federal building every day.”

The truck, purchased from a government auction, would be painted to resemble a working mail truck. On January 14, 1995, Gagan picked up the truck at the Metro Bar & Grill near the airport, then drove it to the Marriott Hotel near Golden, Colorado. “Omar came with me,” relates Gagan. “He showed me where the truck was and said ‘just get in and drive down I-70, and here’s where you park it.”

Gagan did as he was told, and after parking the truck, he went into the bar and had a drink. When he came back out the truck was gone. He said that in the back of the truck were approximately thirty duffle bags of ammonium-nitrate marked “U.S. Mail,” and several boxes from Sandex Explosives in Las Vegas marked “High Explosives.” Gagan had to catch a bus home.

Most interesting was Gagan’s statement to the FBI that said “in the back of the truck was a Lely cement mixer.” Gagan recalls that the mixer was approximately four feet high, two feet across, and “shaped like a diamond.”

This may very well have been the device seen later at the Dreamland Motel where McVeigh and one of the John Doe’s were staying that was seen by a motel witness, David King, who said he recalled seeing a Ryder truck with a trailer attached to it in the parking lot on April 17th. Inside the trailer was an object secured by a canvas tarp. According to King, “It was squarish shape, and it came to a point on top, about three or four feet high.”

In May of 1995, I had a call from one of my sources who asked that I meet him in a restaurant in Tulsa and that he had “something of interest.”

When I arrived and sat down, he produced an 8x12 envelope and extracted some large color photos. “I took these over Camp Gruber last November during deer season. I thought it was something interesting going on but didn’t know exactly what it was. But after the Oklahoma City bombing and the description of the Ryder truck and a fertilizer bomb, it hit me that this might be relevant.”

He handed me the photos, and in them, taken from an airplane, was a strange looking fenced compound with four green military GP medium tents, some other vehicles, and a Ryder truck. Also easily seen was a dirt truck loading ramp and something looked like a mixing machine. On the ground were patches of some yellow substance—possibly a chemical compound that had spilled.

I later contacted one of my friends who was stationed at Camp Gruber, our local National Guard training base located east of Muskogee, Oklahoma, and he said that it was a secret project and that he didn’t know much about it, but that the base personnel were ordered to stay away from it.

There were other photos, some showing some small trailers that looked like monitoring stations parked around the perimeter of a large field, and a set of bleachers. It appeared that something was going to happen in the field and there would be spectators.

What that was, no one knew. Whether this had anything to do with the Oklahoma City bombing was anyone's guess. But it was definitely strange concerning the timing, the Ryder truck, the location, and the equipment shown in the photos.

Hoffman interviewed Gagan and sent me a fifteen page transcript of the interview, dated 3/8/97. Gagan answered questions about his drug running and moving explosives to and from various parts of Colorado, Arizona and Nevada—usually Las Vegas. He also referenced in several places in the interview meeting with Colombians regarding moving cocaine, and with "Iranians" and Arabs in moving explosives. When Hoffman asked if he had ever heard of Juan Garcia Abrego he said that he didn't remember that name, but he knew of several of the Colombians and at least three Arabs.

The odd temporary installation at Camp Gruber in Nov, 1994, five months before the bombing. (Photo Carl S.)

Gagan said at one point the Arabs asked him if he would agree to being involved in terrorism, and he asked "what does it pay?" The answer was a quarter of a million dollars. Gagan told Hoffman that that was the money that he was living on, and would not have to work for a long time. He said that the money as far as he could tell came out of the Cali cartel in Colombia.

Several things stood out about the interview with Gagan: the connections between the Iranians, Arabs and Colombians, and the drugs and explosives and the mention of terrorism. I knew that several anti-American factions in the Middle East had linked up with drug cartels to infiltrate the U.S., and that the cartels were also selling arms to the various terrorist groups. And it was by then common knowledge due to Iran/Contra arms dealing, that we, through Israel, had provided arms, HAWK missiles and airplane parts among other things to the Iranians to raise funds to support the Contras in Nicaragua.

In the interview Gagan related that on April 10th, 1995, he received a note instructing him to meet a man in the law library of the U.S Court House in Denver. Gagan's contact was dressed in a blue Nike cap and jumpsuit. "I just gave the U.S. Marshals a bomb warning," said Gagan, "and they didn't call me back." I had to go somewhere to cover my ass. I came back, and I got a note saying 'we need to see you; come to the U.S. Law Library.' I thought it was the U.S. Marshals or FBI. I get there and say, 'Hey, you got the shit?' referring to the information about the planned bombing. He says 'Hey, we got everything taken care of. We need you to do this.'" The new contact wasn't one of Gagan's Arab counterparts or a Colombian. "He was government," recalled Gagan. "He was probably CIA."

The mystery figure asked Gagan to drive a trailer to Junction City, Kansas. In the back was the same Lely mixer that Gagan had driven to Golden, Colorado on January 14th at the behest of Omar. This mixer was now on its way to Junction City at the request of a government agent!

Gagan did as he was told. The date was then April 11th, three days before McVeigh checked into the Dreamland Motel in Junction City. It was also the same time that witnesses described seeing a Ryder trucked parked at Geary Lake where authorities allege the fertilizer bomb was mixed.

Gagan had given the FBI a lead after hearing about the two Middle Eastern males in blue jogging suits who ran from the front of the Murrah Building when McVeigh parked the Ryder truck, to escape in the brown GMC pickup truck. But three months later, when Gagan met with an FBI agent behind the Sahara hotel in Las Vegas, the agent told him "we're not interested in pursuing the lead." Gagan told Hoffman "These two Middle Eastern dudes that were seen running from the scene, that's the same description I had given, you know—Omar and Ahmad—to the FBI on September 14th!"

Could "Ahmad" be Abraham Ahmad who worked for Samir Khalil, and was seen catching a flight out of Oklahoma City on the morning of the bombing, only to be returned to the U.S. by the British authorities at Heathrow? And could "Omar" be another one of Khalil's Iraqi employees? Since the FBI would not follow up on Gagan's information we'll never know.

Gagan, with no protection from the government, suffered several threats on his life, and in one instance was beaten so badly he ended up in the hospital with multiple injuries. In 1997 he filed a law suit in Denver against the federal government. In his lawsuit, filed in January of that year, Gagan asserted that he told the FBI in September 1994 that he had information on a plot to blow up a federal building, but that the FBI ignored his information.

The Denver *Rocky Mountain News* reported on August 11, 1995 that McVeigh's attorney, Stephen Jones said his team was contacted by a former FBI informant and told of the facts that Gagan provided to the bureau, specifically that a Midwest federal building was going to be bombed in April 1995, that the conspirators were Arabs, Latin Americans and Americans and that he was recruited to carry a detonator in a truck by these people.

Gagan claimed that the FBI covered up the bombing because *highly-placed government officials and others are linked to the drug operation for which he worked.*

He claimed that the international drug operation was supervised by a "Jack DeVoe."

Jack DeVoe was someone whose name had come up in my various investigations into the drug trade. He owned an airplane charter service in Miami, Florida, that was implicated in drug smuggling. One of his pilots, in court testimony when DeVoe and others were arrested, said that "we flew over 250 loads of marijuana and cocaine into this country in one year, and never got caught!" This particular pilot said that they bribed police officials in South America and the Bahamas, but never had to in the U.S.. Asked how that was possible, he said "We never needed to. We never saw any."

Also, one of my contacts mentioned a "Jack DeVoe who was a Mossad agent." Coincidence?

I could understand this because when Bill Clinton was in office, U.S. drug enforcement aircraft (DEA and Coast Guard) were often grounded when large shipments aboard drug smuggling airplanes were inbound. I was once at the Air National Guard base in Gulfport, Mississippi, on military duty, and noticed several DEA turboprop airplanes on the ramp near our fighter jets. I walked down to their office and had a chat with the pilots, since I, too, was a law enforcement pilot in my civilian job. In the conversation I mentioned that I had not seen any of their airplanes take off since I had been there (about a week), and the reply shocked me. "We have to stand down when Washington tells us to."

I asked what would make Washington tell them when to fly and not fly, and the reply was "you'd have to ask them."

No wonder planes could come and go into and from Mena, and Florida, the Gulf Coast and across the Mexican border uninhibited. It was one more case of those at the top being highly involved in the drug smuggling and profiteering.

One thing is sure: from all that Hoffman and I could find out, Cary Gagan was a wealth of valuable information and a useful CI, but he was, on purpose or not, totally mishandled. He simply had too much information to be ignored, and from what Hoffman and I could determine, much of it matched what we either already knew, or would find out in the future.

CHAPTER 12

Terry Nichols and the Philippine Connection

"Although Philippine authorities advised American authorities of the alliance between the Abu Sayyaf, Osama bin Laden's al-Qaida, and the American neo-Nazis, the US appeared to ignore the warnings; until Sept. 11."

The Manila Times
February 15, 2002

In March of 1994 I wrote a letter to then U.S. Senator David Boren, one of our two senators from Oklahoma, complaining about the influx of Iraqi POWs and so-called refugees. I did this in response to a short article in *VFW* magazine in February of that year titled "Update on Iraqi POW Resettlement." The short article was a letter written by Representative Elton Gallegly of the U.S. House of Representatives in response to an earlier article titled "Enemy Ex-POWs in our Midst." The article read "I am still strongly pushing legislation to bar former Iraqi POWs from entering the United States. The State Department continues to insist that the U.S. has a *moral* obligation to accept Iraqi soldiers, in particularly deserters. This is an insult to every American veteran. I hope your readers will join me in working to stop this offensive practice at once.

"So far as I know, the promised review of our screening process—if it ever began—has not been completed. Despite passage of my amendment, the State Department is determined to get its way: It plans to admit at least 750 more former Iraqi soldiers during 1994. I strongly urge your readers to let Congress and the White House know their feelings on this issue. If Americans voice their outrage, maybe even the State Department will hear it."

After reading this, and having been one of the reservists who had prepared for deployment to Kuwait during Desert Shield (but orders were cancelled at the last minute because Desert Storm was initiated before I could receive my travel orders) I was incensed that the idiots in the State Department were bringing in enemy soldiers to this country, which would not only be costly to American taxpayers, but would pose a huge security risk if any were still loyal to Saddam Hussein.

I wrote Senator Boren, a liberal Democrat and avid Clinton supporter, a letter complaining about the State Department's actions, which were obviously supported by President George H.W. Bush to a certain extent, then by William Jefferson Clinton for many more ex-POWs in an ongoing influx two years after the Gulf war ended.

Boren's response to me read:

Dear Mr. Roberts,

"Thank you for taking the time to share your views with me. It was good to hear from you. I appreciate knowing your thoughts regarding the resettlement of Iraqi refugees in the United States. The war and postwar rebellions against Saddam Hussein created a flood of Iraqi refugees, including 39,000 Iraqis in camps in Saudi Arabia. The Bush Administration agreed to participate in a multinational resettlement program for these refugees recommended by the United Nations. In 1992, the United States accepted about 3,440

Iraqi refugees, of which about 300 were former Iraqi soldiers, anti-Saddam rebels, and their families. About 4,600 Iraqis will be accepted for 1993, of which about 650 will be former Iraqi soldiers, anti-Saddam rebels, and their families."

The letter, dated March 14, 1994, closed with the typical form letter salutations and signature block. But it was easy to see that I was not the only letter writer to complain about this horrible decision to allow un-vetted enemy soldiers into the country as what was written was clearly a form letter. You could tell because it said "About 600 Iraqis will be accepted for 1993…", and both my letter and his response were written long after that, in 1994.

Considering the fact that the dozen or so former Iraqi soldiers that worked for Samir Khalil in Oklahoma City were "refugees" brought in under this program, and that more cells existed around the country, one could only imagine how may cells would be out there out of about 50,000 Iraqis that were resettled in the U.S.! And that would just be the Iraqis. Other Muslim nations were also represented in the influx of Islamics to the United States, and very few of them cared about assimilating into our culture or communities, but instead formed enclaves of entire neighborhoods consisting of only Muslims, Muslim shops, schools and mosques. This was (and remains) a recipe for disaster.

Prior to the Oklahoma City bombing, one indicator of imported Islamic terrorism occurred in California. In December of 1994, just four months before the Oklahoma City bombing, an "Arab" businessman named Mohammed Jamal Khalifa was arrested in Santa Rita, California for falsifying a visa application. Immigration and Naturalization Service spokesman Greg Gaghne said he was being held without bond in San Francisco pending deportation. But the following month Khalifa was convicted in absentia in Jordan of plotting terrorism and was sentenced to life imprisonment—if he was deported to Jordan.

At the same time authorities here discovered that Khalifa, a Saudi national, was being investigated in the Philippines for attempting to import Islamic terrorism to the mostly Catholic country.

Philippine Interior Secretary Rafael Alunan said Khalifa was believed to be a key figure in efforts to bring Middle Eastern-style Islamic extremism to the country's six million Muslims. He described Khalifa as an associate of six Muslim extremists, all "Arabs," who were arrested on April 1st in a Manila suburb in a raid on an apartment leased by al-Qaida operative Abdul Hakim Murad and World Trade Center bombing suspect Ramzi Yousef after a chemical fire drew first the fire department and then the Philippine National Police. The police found Yousef's lap top computer and managed to glean reams of information from it. Philippine intelligence discovered Yousef and others were involved in a plot to blow up United Airlines passenger jets over the Pacific between Los Angeles and Hong Kong in what was called Operation Bojinka. a large-scale, three-phase attack planned by Ramzi Yousef and Khalid Sheikh Mohammed, for January 1995. Khalid Sheikh Mohammed, known in the Intel world simply as "KSM", was one evil character, but more importantly he was the right hand man of one Usama bin Ladin, later referred to as *Osama bin Ladin*.

Philippine police also disclosed that the two conspirators were also planning to kill Pope John Paul II during his upcoming January visit to the Philippines. But police raided the apartment a week before the arrival of the Pope and arrested Murad. But they missed Yousef, who managed to get away and flee to Pakistan—where he was arrested in February and finally deported to the United States to stand trial for the 1993 World Trade Center bombing.

Khalifa was a key figure in efforts to recruit members for the Abu Sayyaf group, a Filipino extremist movement that plotted numerous terrorist attacks in the Philippines and abroad. In one attack alone, a raid on a southern Philippine town named Ipil, Abu Sayyaf guerrillas killed 53 people. Abu Sayyaf, whose name translates into "Father of the Swordsmith," eventually in later years adopted the black flag of ISIS and pledged allegiance to Abu Bakr al-Baghdadi.

In an article in Japan's Kyodo News Service, it was reported that a highly classified report stated "Khalifa's network had links with extremists in Iraq, Jordan, Turkey, Russia, Malaysia, the United Arab Emirates, Romania, Lebanon, Syria, Pakistan, Albania, the Netherlands and Morocco."

There is no way one person at Khalifa's level could run such a network. It had to go much higher than that, but it was obvious that with this many countries infiltrated by Islamic terrorists, that even more had to be subject to the same—which would include beyond a doubt, the United States.

When one examines the list of countries, one can see that eight are Muslim countries, and the rest have significant Muslim immigrant populations. The United States, in 1994, also had several Muslim enclaves that were growing in various parts of the country, with Oklahoma City being high on the list.

One of our main areas of interest in investigating the Oklahoma City bombing was Terry Nichols. It was freely known that Nichols was a friend of McVeigh's, and that they served together in the Army, and that Nichols turned himself in after McVeigh was caught when McVeith's name was broadcast on television news. But who was he, and what part, if any, did he play in the bombing?

We discovered that Nichol was married to a Filipina, Marife, that he met in the Philippines during a trip there, and that her father was a Philippine police officer, but not much more was known until McVeigh's defense attorney, Stephen Jones, following leads, sent investigators to the Philippines to see what they could dig up on Nichols. This resulted in a treasure trove of information that led us to discover even more connections in both the Philippines and in the U.S.

Sometime in 2002, five years after I retired from the Tulsa Police Department and was deep into my second career as a writer, publisher and investigative journalist (and still deeply involved in the OKC investigation) I came into contact with a former Texas oil engineer named Robert "Bob" Bickel who was also investigating the bombing. At the time he was working for Oklahoma City attorney Mike Johnston, who also worked to get to the truth of the event, and was David Hoffman's attorney in the Revell case. Bickel had been an informant and undercover agent during the Iran/Contra affair, and had been a good friend of reporter Danny Casolaro who was murdered in a motel room before he could meet with a source just days before being able to complete his book on government corruption titled "The Octopus." Bob was very dedicated to finding out what actually happened in the OKC case and who was involved, and he was like a bloodhound.

After comparing notes and resources we fielded the idea of eventually writing a book on the subject that would expose what had really happened, who was involved, and the secrets behind the scene of one massive government coverup. By then I no longer lived in Tulsa, and if my phones were again tapped I didn't care. The bottom line is that if Bickel was ready to pursue a joint effort to write such a book, then so was I. Unfortunately, the book project did not materialize and Bickel went on to other projects. I have since lost track of him.

Over the ensuing weeks and months we maintained constant contact. Bob would fax me documents he came across and I would do the same.

At the same time an old friend and fellow *Soldier of Fortune* magazine article writer and staff writer for SOF, Tom Reisinger, began providing me with reams of information and documents concerning what SOF was finding out about the bombing through their contacts. SOF owner and editor Lt. Col. Robert K. "Bob" Brown had myriad contacts in the "spook world" and with special operations folks in various places. I had contacts they didn't have, and they had contacts I didn't have. As the Brits would say, "it was magic!"

As all this was happening more and more information came to light about Nichols. It seemed that he was not the quiet Kansas farmer that he appeared to be. Instead, if anything, he was more important than McVeigh. Probing into his background showed that he had made several trips to the Philippines, costing over $100,000 when all his costs were considered, and then adding in purchases he made such as gold and a large stash of cash. But he didn't have a job. No income. No employer of record. So how did he manage to do this?

Information developed that he had taken trips organized by a "travel agency" in Arizona that specialized in "sex trips" to the Philippines. This agency was run by one "Tom Shelton" who also used the name John Lepney which we felt was his real name.

But what was Nichols doing in the Philippines, and why did he go back so many times?

The answer came in the form of information developed by Philippine intelligence in a report dated November 26th, 1996. It was the transcript of a Philippine interview with a confidential informant conducted on November 24th of that year. Though somewhat hard to read, what follows is what was written (some typos and misspellings and punctuation corrected by me for clarity but translational context remains):

"Serafin Uy: is a wealthy businessman, who incurred in lumber & hardware business, he is uncle of Edwin Uy who has a criminal record of various kidnappings in Catabato.

"They were also able to establish businesses in many places in Mindanao to wit: the Artimco in Suragao del Sur, is owned and managed by Serafin and a certain Serafin Lim who is a company associate in this business venture. Later Serafin Lim was kidnapped and is missing as of this writing. The link of Edwin Uy to the dreaded Abu-S Group was established through the help of Jacaria (Jack) Sapil, who is a business associate of *John Lepney*, an American citizen and a friend & business partner of *Terry Nichols*, an American citizen who is incurred both with Lepney in smuggling from Taiwan to Davao

City.

“John Lepney’s association with Terry Nichols had been able to widen their organization to a jointly held business of dealing with Pedophiles and white slavery by transporting women from the Philippines to Taiwan & some other parts of the world to include Australia. A certain Mark Nicholson or Anthony Dutroux, who is a close associate of Terry Nichols also is connected to the illegal activities here in the Philippines. Later in 1991 on December 17, we were able to meet with Abdul Hakim Murad, Wali Khan, and a certain Abdul Basit, which I later knew to be Ahmed Youssef (*author’s note: This would be Abdul Basit Mahmoud Abdul Karim, or Ramzi Ahmed Yousef, the World Trade Center bomber*). Through a certain Zacaria [Moussaoui] in Davao City Terry Nichols was introduced together with John Lepney and we talked about organizational alliance by helping the Arabs to procure FA (*firearms*) from Cebu and Manila, and explosive chemicals. After that meeting three Arabs were escorted by (E. Angeles) to Basilan Province to see ASG Leader (*Abdurajik Abubakar Janjalani*). After our meeting with ASG leader we go to Zambo City to meet a certain Bob, a US citizen and talked about Granite tilling used to making steel in Zamboanga del Sur.

“In Davao City, KM 11, Sasa, we were able to meet with a certain Willy, a Maguindanaoan, with Abdul Hakim Murad, Wali Khan & (blacked out) to meet Terry groups. That time I was already elected as Operations Officer of ASG so my presence is much needed, and they talked and promised to support the ASG—in connection with bombing activities, which they knew Terry Nichols will be responsible for procuring bomb chemical through Jimmy Chlong of Quezon City, Manila.

“Where Terry assured us it that to make it symbolical it must be together with the USA, Pakistan & some other places for our organization’s objectives. That was also the time when they handed me a Philippine file of terrorist activities, time and month & it will be done also through out the world through Murad & Khan. *In the U States it will be Terry, who will also help the group to find strategic targets with impact,* for the organization also to protect their objectives.

“Fe Villacorta, who her husband name is Zeidler—a German national—is a friend of Business partners Mark Nicholson and Anthony Dotroux, a German national also. The involvement of Zeidler and Villacorta is through Dotroux…in these activities Tom Shelton, which I only met once, has mentioned his involvement in this operation. *Dotroux & Zeidler is financially aided by a certain Timothy, who were introduced by Terry Nichols as his close associate in the United States.”*

The document went on to describe the affiliation with a mysterious organization called The Solar Temple of Light being the umbrella organization. Neither I, nor Bickel or Reisinger knew of such an organization’s existence and we never were able to track it down. The transcript mentioned that it was an occult organization and “is bound with the spirit of secrecy” and at one “ceremony of inductions” described by Edwin Angeles of Abu Sayyaf: “John Lepney, Terry Nichols, Omar Ibri Mahmoud, Ashidoto Oshigawah of Japan representing AUM, Jimmy Lee KUI of the Moonies in Taiwan, Ahmed Youssef, Wali Khan and myself, who represented the Judullah of the Philippines were initiated. This was on March 20, 1989 in Davao City. Five days later I was sent to the Middle East for further study about Fundamentalism & Extremism, and infiltration.” There was much speculation regarding this so-called “Temple.” Questions surfaced regarding whether or not it was associated with Aquino’s “Temple of Set,” or Anton LeVey’s “Temple of Satan.” Some people wondered if such an organization would consider the lives lost at the Murrah Building were also considered a sacrifice! Research will show that April 19th, besides being the anniversary of Waco, and of the FBI assault on the Covenant, Sword and Arm of the Lord in Arkansas, it is the beginning of the week of sacrifice for Satanists. Whether any of this has to do with this “ Solar Temple of Light” is unknown.

Further investigation brought up another name: Mohammed Khalifa, the same Khalifa that was arrested in California in December of 1994. According to news reports in the Philippines Janjalani “was provided some funding by a Saudi Islamist, Mohammed Jamal Khalifa, who came to the Philippines in 1987 or 1988 and was head of the Philippine branch of the International Islamic Relief Organization foundation. A defector from Abu Sayyaf told Filipino authorities, ‘The IIRO was behind the construction of Mosques, school buildings and other livelihood projects’ but only ‘in areas penetrated, highly influenced and controlled by the Abu Sayyaf.’” According to the defector “Only 10 to 30% of the foreign funding goes to the legitimate relief and livelihood projects and the rest go to terrorist operations”

On reading and de-cyphering this I made hand written notes in the margin of my file document. The key players of interest to the case are Ramzi Yousef, Mohammed Wali Khan, AKA Mohammed Wali Khan Ahman Shaw, Abdul Hakim Murad, and of most significance Khalid Sheik Mohammed! I also noted one of the aliases was Zacaria Mousawi (correct spelling is Zacarias Moussaoui—Moussaoui, who was a French citizen, born in France to immigrant parents, was the 20th co-conspirator to the 9/11 attacks on the World Trade Center, but he had been arrested by the FBI before he could board an aircraft and remains in federal custody).

This would not be the only intel that would come out of the Philippines. There was yet another transcript of an interview with Edwin Angeles’ widow after he was assassinated. Edwin Angeles was second-in-command of the Abu Sayyaf Group (ASG), but was also a confidential informant for the Philippine government. We believe he is the “CI” who gave the above information.

Due to the efforts of Attorney Mike Johnston, who represented the Oklahoma City bombing victims, and Bob Bickel who was working at the time with Johnston as his Senior Investigator and Legal Analyst, more information was obtained by a contact they developed in the Philippines, *Manila Times* correspondent Dorian Zumel Sicat. Some of the information was given to Insight magazine’s reporter Kenneth Timmerman.

In a 2002 article in the now defunct “Insight On The News” magazine written by Kenneth R. Timmerman we find this excerpt:

INSIGHT has learned that the widow of Philippine-government intelligence agent Edwin Angeles has provided audiotaped testimony to an investigator working for the American victims’ families that directly ties Iraqi intelligence agents to Terry Nichols, the man sentenced in 1998 to life in prison for his role in bombing the Alfred P. Murrah Building seven years ago.

Elmina Abdul is the 27-year-old widow of Angeles, one of the cofounders of the Abu

Sayyaf group, a Muslim terrorist organization in the Philippines whose members trained in Osama bin Laden's camps in Afghanistan. Her astonishing story, revealed in this exclusive story for the first time, could blow the lid off what a growing number of people believe is a U.S. government cover-up of vital evidence in the Oklahoma City bombing case. It also exposes an alleged plot by former Philippine president Fidel Ramos to manipulate Abu Sayyaf as a means of enhancing his personal political power.

With the knowledge that she was dying of liver disease, Elmina agreed to meet with Dorian Zumel Sicat, a *Manila Times* correspondent serving as an investigative liaison in the Philippines and the Pacific Rim for Oklahoma City lawyer Mike Johnston, who represents the victims' families. "I want to tell the truth of what I know of my late husband," she said in a taped audio statement.

Angeles was "what they call a 'deep-penetration agent'" who was working for "some very powerful men in the DND," the Philippine national defense-intelligence agency, Elmina said. Angeles was arrested in 1995 after he had negotiated a deal to turn himself in to the Philippine authorities. By that point, the Abu Sayyaf he had helped create in 1991 with bin Laden protege Abdurajjak Abu Bakr Janjalani had carried out a series of terrorist attacks. These included a failed assault on a U.S. Information Agency library in Manila in January 1991 that was part of a worldwide terrorist campaign against U.S. interests orchestrated by Iraq during the Persian Gulf War.

"Does the name 'Ramzi Yousef' mean something to you, Mr. Sicat?" Elmina asked. Angeles had extensive meetings with Yousef and two Americans, including one whom he called "Terry" or "The Farmer," she said.

Angeles ultimately was cleared of terrorism charges at trial when documents proving he was working as a government agent were produced. He was released from prison in 1996, but not before he provided astonishing details during a videotaped interrogation by Philippine police authorities of his activities with Abu Sayyaf, including the secret meetings with Iraqi intelligence agent Yousef, Nichols and the second American identified in the document as John Lepney.

The earliest meetings took place at a Del Monte canning plant in Davao City in late 1992 and early 1993 — just prior to the first World Trade Center bombing. Later meetings with Nichols, Yousef and the second American — whose name has never been revealed until now — took place at Angeles' house in late 1994, according to a report on that interrogation which has been obtained by investigators working for attorney Johnston, who has been joined by Judicial Watch in representing families of those murdered in the Oklahoma City bombing.

Angeles also revealed the meetings to Elmina, who became his third wife in 1997, "because he knew that he would soon be killed," she said in her audiotaped statement with Sicat, which was witnessed by a Philippine-government official. "He wanted me to know everything so that if anything happened to him I could tell others." Also present at those meetings was a half-brother of Yousef, who was using the pseudonym Ahmad Hassim, she said.

Edwin Angeles widow's interview presented in exact wording and format that we received from the Philippines:

The following interview with ELMINA ABDUL, widow of EDWIN ANGELES, one of the cofounders of the ABU SAYYAF GROUP (ASG), and deep cover agent for the Defense Intelligence Group (DIG) of the Department of National Defense (DND), of the Republic of the Philippines, was taken on March 10, 2002, in the presence of CHRISTOPHER M. PUNO, Information Officer of the Province of Basilan, at BASCOM Hospital, in the general ward.

TRANSLATED TRANSCRIPT OF INTERVIEW WITH ELMINA ABDUL, WIDOW TO EDWIN ANGELES TAKEN AT BASILAN COMMUNITY HOSPITAL GENERAL WARD, ISABELA CITY, PROVINCE OF BASILAN, REPUBLIC OF THE PHILIPPINES, BY DORIAN ZUMEL SICAT (DZS), A NEWS CORRESPONDENT FOR MANILA TIMES, OMEGA NEWS SERVICE (USA)

(After introduction to ELMINA ABDUL by Provincial Information Officer Christopher Puno)

NOTE: I interviewed ELMINA in Tagalog, she answered me in Chavacano and Cebuano, two of the local dialects spoken in Basilan. She did not speak in the indigenous dialect because she knew that I do not speak or understand that dialect.

DZS: Good morning Ms. Angeles

DZS: How are you feeling this morning?

EA: Not very well.

DZS: Do you feel like talking with me?

EA: Yes, but not so long. I am tired.

DZS: I will try to be as short as possible. Did Chris tell you what I am here to talk to you about?

EA: Yes. And I am the one who asked him to look for you after I was told that you are interested in the truth about my husband.

DZS: Good. Okay. You are not Edwin’s first wife, is that true?

EA: Yes. I am his third wife. For Muslim men, they can have even four wives, if each of the other ones approve.

DZS: How, when and where did you meet Edwin?

EA: We met when he was in the Provincial Jail here in Isabela, in 1995. I was then working for the government radio station, dxOS (Philippine Information Agency)/PIA.

DZS: That was after his capture?

EA: Yes.

DZS: When did you marry him?

EA: In 1997.

DZS: I am going to ask you some very sensitive questions now. Is that all right with you?

EA: Yes. I want to tell the truth of what I know of my late husband.

DZS: Did you know that he was one of those who founded the ASG, along with the late Abdurajak Abubakar Janjalani, in 1991?

EA: Yes. I know also why he was one of them.

DZS: Can you tell me why?

EA: Yes, I want to tell you why. I want now to tell the truth about my husband. I will die soon. I want you to know the truth. Will you write the truth, Mr. Sicat?

DZS: Yes. I will. I promise.

EA: You are not afraid?

DZS: More than you know, Mrs. Angeles.

EA: Good. Maybe you will stay alive and safe because of your fear. I will tell you that Edwin was ordered to do that.

DZS: Can you explain please.

EA: He was what they call a deep penetration agent or DPA.

DZS: Can you explain please?

EA: As I told you, he was given orders.

DZS: By whom?

EA: Some very powerful men in the DND.

DZS: Did he tell you why?

EA: No. Only that he was ordered to help to organize the ASG and to report all developments.

DZS: Did he tell you who it was?

EA: Not by names. But he told me only at the highest levels.

DZS: Did he ever tell you about his activities in the ASG before he met you?

EA: He told me everything. I do not believe that he would hide anything from me when we were talking alone.

DZS: Please do not be offended, but how do you know that?

EA: Not only because I was his wife, but because he knew that he would soon be killed. He wanted me to know everything so that if anything happened to him I could tell others.

DZS: Can I ask you about some things that happened back in the mid-90s? 1993, 1994?

EA: Yes. I will try to answer what you ask.

DZS: Did he ever talk to you about meetings with Arabs or Americans?

EA: Yes, once he had met with some Arabs and Americans in 1994, in Davao (City), or General Santos (City).

DZS: Did he tell you who they were?

EA: Does the name Ramsey Yousef mean something to you Mr. Sicat?

DZS: Ahmad Hassim. Does that mean something to you?

EA: *He had met with them. And an American who he called Terry or the Farmer, and another American whom he did not name*.

DZS: Was the American he named as Terry, Terry Nichols?

EA: He did not mention the surname. Only Terry.

DZS: Did he tell you why and how many times they had met?

EA: *They met almost every day for one week.* They met in an empty bodega (warehouse). They talked about bombings. They mentioned bombing government buildings in San Francisco, Saint Louis and in *Oklahoma.* The Americans wanted instructions how to make and to explode bombs. He (Edwin) told me that Janjalani was very interested in *paying them much money to explode the buildings. The money was coming from Yousef and the other Arab*.

DZS: Did he tell you when the bombs would explode; when they exploded?

EA: *He told me that the Americans exploded one bomb in Oklahoma in 1995, after he was arrested and after we first met.*

DZS: Did he ever tell you who was supplying the money for the bombing of the building, I mean who Yousef was working with or for?

EA: Mr. Sicat, you are the mediaman. *Do you not know that Yousef was representing Iraq and Saddam Hussein?* Do you not know that?

DZS: Did Edwin tell you that?

EA: Not only Edwin, but others that were close to us, before he was killed. One time, a soldier (Philippine Army) and Edwin were talking secretly. I was there because Edwin demanded. The soldier ordered Edwin never to tell anybody about the Iraqis.

DZS: Did you ever see that soldier before or after that time?

EA: Only two times before. He was the one who would talk to him for information.

DZS: Mrs. Angeles, do you know who killed your husband, Edwin?

EA: The ones who used him and then betrayed him, Mr. Sicat. (She grows visibly weaker). I want to rest now.

DZS: I understand. I'll let you rest now. Thank you so much, Mrs. Angeles. You have told me so much. I will try to see you tomorrow if you are up to it.

NOTE: I was not able to speak with ELMINA again. She became too weak and incoherent the following day. A few days later, the doctors had diagnosed that she was terminal. She needed to be transferred to Davao City to the Regional Hospital (government) for treatment. A few days later, while I was in Davao, arranging for her admission to the Regional Hospital, Chris told me that she could no longer be moved. She would die in transit. Since Muslims require burial within 24 hours of death, I understood the reasoning. The following day, Chris contacted me to say that ELMINA ABDUL, widow to EDWIN

ANGELES (killed by unknown assailants in 1998), died in the pre-dawn hours Saturday March 30. She was the last one to talk with her husband before he was killed. I was the last and only reporter to talk with her about her husband before she died.

(sgd) DORIAN ZUMEL SICAT

News Correspondent

Manila Times /Omega News Service (USA)

Investigative Liaison to Law Office of John Michael Johnston

Robert Bickel, Sr.

Senior Investigator and Legal Analyst

Law offices of John Michael Johnston

Elmina Abdul Angeles Statement

In late July 2003 I received an extensive interview transcript from Tom Reisinger that was from an interview that was conducted in the Philippines on November 27th, 1996 in the office of the provincial Warden of Basilan with Edwin Angeles (Informant #3) while he was still alive (and had been serving as a confidential informant for Philippine Intelligence and Philippine National Police (PNP). The interview was conducted by private investigators employed by McVeigh attorney Stephen Jones, the PNP, and agents of the National Bureau of Intelligence (NBI). The document is 22 pages long, but as I waded through it several important statements stuck out.

To save the reader the tedious task of reading a typical interview transcript of “ah’s” and “uh’s” and standard lead questions, I will only provide the questions and answers here that are relevant to this case:

INTERVIEW CONDUCTED NOVEMBER 24, 1996 WITH EDWIN ANGELES, SECOND IN COMMAND OF ABU SAYYAF AT BASILAN, PHILIPPINE ISLANDS.

(Beginning on page 9 regarding the meeting that Nichols had attended with Abu Sayyaf)

Interviewer: Did Terry Nichols plan a specific target or did he name a specific target during those…during the meeting you had with him?

#3: Yes.

Interviewer: What was…his specific target?

#3: The Israeli Embassy in Manila, one, and …World Trade Center bombing, that was accomplished, the federal building, the…Murrah Federal Building, the Murrah Federal Building, and…the…some flag carriers of the American and Philippines.

Interviewer: How about Ramzi Youssef? Did he have a specific target?

#3: Yes, he was the one…he was the person whom Terry Nichols ordered to do so.

Interviewer: So, we are made to understand that it was Terry Nichols who was directing Ramzi Youssef?

#3: Yeah.

Interviewer: So Terry Nichols was the handler, as you…we may call it, of…Ramzi Youssef at that time?

#3: Yes.

Interviewer: So we can attribute that Terry Nichols was the mastermind of the World Trade bombing?

#3: Yes, including the…the so-called…American plane. I wasn't able to remember if that happened in 1989 [blank], he did mention that as an example to us.

The conversation then changed to the Abu Sayyaf planned attack on Pope John Paul II, then to what BOJINKA stood for:

Interviewer (regarding the raid on Ramzi Youssef's apartment): In those items that you mentioned that were seized by the police, was the name of Terry Nichols listed in that?

#3: No, ah…a codename.

Interviewer: What was the code name?

#3: BOJINKA.

Interviewer: What is the name BOJINKA?

#3: Ah…J is for John, N is for Nichols, K is for Kala, and A is of Abdul Basit. B is as… BOJINKA operation. Meaning BOJINKA operation and then JNKA, BOJINKA.

(Author's note: Again we see the reference to the mysterious "Kala" cult or organization that Nichols was credited with founding—and in some references McVeigh was a co-founder, and more than likely the "John" referred to was John Lepney).

The next several pages go into various meetings and who attended them, which in itself is a wealth of information for not only the Philippine law enforcement and intelligence personnel, but our own FBI and CIA. But did the FBI or CIA receive this information?

We find an answer on page 18 of the transcript:

Interviewer: In the raid of the PNP in Manila, during the visit of John Paul II, you said that there were items seized. Were you with the raiding team at that time?

#3: No.

Interviewer: How did you know there were items seized?

#3: …I was already with the Special Investigation Group in February 1995.

Interviewer: Who raided he place? What particular…unit in the PNP?

#3: Special Branch of…Technical Special Branch of the Intelligence Command and the Western Police District.

Interviewer: The Western Police District? So…the Western Police District and the Technical Branch of the Intelligence Command of the PNP were brought together during the raid and they were the ones who conducted the raid?

#3: …a certain Major Angeles and a Major Albert Farro.

Interviewer: Were there investigators from the Western Police who also investigated the case after the raid?

#3: Yes, *even the Federal Bureau of Investigation*, a certain Dick [blank].

Interviewer: After the raid?

#3: Yeah. In 1995 I met Dick [blank] from the Federal Bureau of Investigation. He's investigating the case.

Interviewer: So, the Federal Bureau of Investigation agent, did he become party to or did he become privy to the evidence confiscated?

#3: Yes.

Interviewer: He saw all the evidence?

#3: Yes.

Interviewer: Did he take notes of the evidence?

#3: Yes.

Interviewer: Can you name a few of the items of evidence confiscated?

#3: Yes, like material used for ah…explosives, diskettes for ah…computer…computer disks and reading materials.

Interviewer: How many diskettes, computer diskettes did the raiding team seize?

#3: I wasn't able to count but there were many.

The interview transcript continued for three more pages, but most of it was shutting down the interview session. The three things that really caught my attention were the reference that Nichols was the handler and not the handled regarding Abu Sayyaf and Ramzi Youssef, including the reference to the World Trade Center bombing of 1993 and some reference to an "American airplane" that was bombed. The second was another reference to the Kali (Temple of Light) that would bear more investigating, and finally that the FBI had much if not all of this information before the Oklahoma City bombing. And to add to that when I was involved with working with them in Oklahoma no one was interested in any Middle Eastern connection, and how determined Clinton, Reno, Freeh, Keating, and the mainstream media insisted that there was no Middle Eastern connection. It was a case of "don't confuse me with the facts, my mind is made up." Or, it was a simple basic cover-up of the Nichols/Philippine/Abu Sayyaf/Osama bin Ladin connections altogether.

In June of 2003 I received another piece of the puzzle regarding the Muslim connections in the Philippines. Tom Reisinger faxed me three separate messages. The first was a photo of Tom Shelton, AKA John Lepney, and the caption below the photo was the notation "This photograph was taken of Tom Shelton, (AKA John Lepney, AKA Agusto "Guz" Berino), with one of the Shelton Tour Guides, Daisy Legaspi. Shelton was identified by the interviewee who was shown this photo as John Lepney who had attended meetings in 1992/93 with the interviewee and others in which terrorist activities were discussed and planned. Shelton was identified in interviews with daisy Legaspi as Agusto "Guz" Berino."

Below that was a physical on Shelton/Lepney/Berino, and notations about Paradise

Shelton Tours, Shelton's tour business in Scottsdale, Arizona. It described the type of operation as "Sex Tour Operation 1986 through 1996—The operations were advertised through videotapes and solicitations through print ads."

The information, in the form of a law enforcement "Information and Location Inquiry," went on to describe the operations of Shelton, who he was associated with in the Philippines and in Asia, and stated "Shelton is closely associated with several known organized crime personalities and was also involved in trafficking in other commodities… Shelton is implicated in having the ability to move throughout the Asia Pacific region with a great deal of ease due to his association with various organized crime individuals or groups. It has been determined that Shelton was known to associate with known terrorists from the late 80s through the early 90s."

In the next fax from Reisinger were a list of names of "persons of interest," and some locations in the Philippines that needed to be checked out. But one notation caught my eye: "John Lepney (AKA Tom Shelton, a partner in Shelton Paradise Tours with Nichols when Nichols came to the P.I.) This guy's bad news, so watch your 6!"

While building my Philippine Connection case file three things stuck out: Nichols was more than a farmer in Kansas, the Abu Sayyaf was involved, and they were tied to Osama bin Laden in Pakistan, so we had definite Muslim/Islamic connections to the Oklahoma City bombing from overseas, and a third American had entered the picture that I had not heard of. The question then was, why would some organized crime sex trafficker be involved with terrorists? His only motive must have been money. But what else struck me in the information Tom sent was that Shelton and Nichols *were partners* in the Tour business!

And we thought Nichols didn't have a job.

Digging through my case files further I came across another fax from Reisinger. In it was this: "Through Nichols and/or Lepney, Angeles asserts that he met with Abdul Basit (aka "Ramzi Ahmed Yousef/Youssef"), Jack Sapii (a Filipino from Tibunco), Mark Dutroux, (a German or Belgian), Mark Abji (an Iraqi or Iranian), Abdul Hakim Murad, and Mustafa Jamal Khalifa, *bin Ladin's brother-in-law who was said to be establishing front companies for Osama bin Laden,* and last, Wali Khan."

Osama bin Ladin's brother-in-law? This was a huge find! How could it be that his name had not come up in all the years since the Oklahoma City bombing and 9/11? Surely he would be in the news and on wanted lists all over the world!

But he was not the only one who should have been high profile but wasn't. I would find out in the first six months after the bombing how another character that had connections to the bombing was not showing up on our radar—had it not been for a contact that I developed in Texas.

To end this chapter, we now have established that Nichols traveled to the Philippines several times, all through a travel service he was in which he was a partner, and his partner was a huge person of interest on many fronts—and not only shady, but dangerous. What is remarkable is that we had discovered that Nichols had renounced his American citizenship in March of 1994 at the Marion Courthouse in Kansas, so how did he, or could he, have a passport? Unless someone becomes a citizen of another country, they would not be able to obtain a passport, or travel abroad or return to this country—unless they had some kind of "special privileges" recognized by our government and U.S. Custom's and Border Patrol.

We know that Nichols, referred to as "the farmer" was tied into a Muslim terrorist organization, which in turn was directly connected to Osama bin Ladin (through his brother-in-law and Sheik Khalid Mohammed, his right hand man). We know that Nichols received bomb training from Ramzi Yousef, and was possibly financed by both his dealings in the sex trade and by al Qaida.

And there was more. He was not the only American that slipped in and out of the Philippines. According to the Manila Times, the U.S. government released a list of 25 international terror suspects believed to have been in the Philippines. The names were Christopher Hamel (American), Michael Colleto (American), Michael Abbot (American), Mark Anthony Finnigin (American), Clifford Mogg (American), *Andreas Strassmeir* (German), Sharon Toval (Israeli), *Michael Harare* (Israeli—and rogue Mossad agent), Don Wassall (American), Ronney Lee Atkins (American), *Mahylon Andrews* (American), Ron Tyler (American), Kadar Kareem (undetermined), Zacarias Moussaoui (French), Chris Chapula (American), Donovan St. Claire (American), Daniel Spiegelman (American), Craig Wesley Hasseltine (American), *Juan Garcia Abrego* (Mexican), John Bangerter (American), Hashem Alhussaini (Iraqi), *Al Husseini Hussain* (Iraqi), Mark Strum or Strumm (American).

Several of these names stuck out to me. There was Andreas Strassmeir on the list! Then I saw Michael Harare who, along with his partner Amiram Nir, both Mossad agents, were Manual Noriega's body guards and helped train his elite military guard during the time Noriega was skimming profits from cocaine shipments coming out of Colombia enroute to the U.S. by way of Honduras, Mexico and Mena, Arkansas! According to my sources, the Israeli cut was used to help fund nuclear research in Dimona, Israel. Nir was killed in a plane crash in Mexico, but Harrare disappeared.

And then I saw Mahylon Andrews. I had received enquiries about him from Reisinger and found that Andrews had used three bogus addresses in Tulsa that were nonexistent. And when the thought struck me that he might be tied in with Dennis Mahon, then that would tie him in with Strassmeir! But before I could corner Mahon, he disappeared and later turned up in Arizona where he was eventually convicted of a bombing there and received 40 years in federal custody.

Lastly, there was Juan Garcia Abrego. A man that my FBI contact had told me in 1996 didn't exist.

CHAPTER 13

Columbian Drugs, Mexican Bag Men and Mena

“The Real Rulers in Washington are invisible and exercise power from behind the scenes”

Felix Frankfurter, US Supreme
Court Justice

On April 18th, 1995, the day before the bombing, a hotel employee at the Radisson Hotel in Oklahoma City noticed two men dressed “like Arabs, who actually were not Arabs” check in. Then, at the same approximate time, two more men, who did seem to be Middle Eastern, checked in at the Plaza Inn and told the desk clerk they were Mexican. Then the next day, early, another man was seen leaving his room in an Arabic style robe. The first two at the Plaza Inn were witnessed leaving the night before the bombing, and it was reported that there was a Ryder truck in the parking lot witnessed by a security guard.

When I emailed Hoffman with this info, which I received from some of my contacts in Oklahoma City, he wrote back “This is weird. Arabs claiming not to be Arabs, and non-Arabs claiming to be Arabs. It almost sounds like the two groups are trying to set each other up”.

It was a bit much for me too. And there were so many leads and tips that kept coming in that I had to put this one on the back burner by putting the print-out in a new file named “The Mexican Connection.” All two pages of it.

Then, in May, I received a call from one of my state law enforcement contacts in Texas. It had to do with what he had heard through his sources that there was a Mexican connection to the Oklahoma City bombing and that it had to do with cocaine smuggling, money laundering, and the CIA’s Iran/Contra operation. I made notes of everything he told me. The information brought in international connections that stretched all the way to Colombia by way of Mexico, Guatemala, Honduras, and Panama.

Once I had the information, I wrote an Intel Memo for both my files and my FBI contact. It would be the first of two memos, with the second being even more detailed. What really got my attention was the reference to the files in the Murrah Building!

My memo, dated May 9th, 1995, with the subject line “Possible lead in the OKC bombing” read:

(Source #1 is my Texas contact—whose identity I never revealed, not even to the FBI. Source #2 is his informant)

1. Source (#1) reported that he “had heard” what he believed to be good information regarding a new angle on the OKC bombing. The original contact/source (#1) is in Texas and it appeared to #1 that his source (#2) was knowledgeable—and frightened—concerning the information he was relaying. Motivation for relaying the information appeared to be “citizen concern” and not reward money as no mention was made of reward, recognition, or other motivation.
2. Source #2 told #1 that he had information that an Arbigo GARCIA, reputed to be a

"Chief in the Mexican Crime Cartel," had both foreknowledge of the OKC bombing, and was involved. Proper spelling of "Arbigo" is not verified. Source #2 told #1 that "everyone in the underground and criminal network in Mexico knows Garcia. Nothing big goes down without him knowing about it, authorizing it, or being involved in some manner.

3. Source #2 related that the Federal building in OKC was destroyed to "get rid of sensitive records." Source #2 stated that during the Whitewater investigation in Arkansas, the investigative records were considered at risk to destruction or theft. Therefore they were moved to Oklahoma City to get them out of Little Rock.
4. Source #2 alluded to the records being buried since they could not be compromised or destroyed by other means.

Speculation concerning the above:

According to published sources, the Columbian cocaine cartels moved drugs into the U.S. during the 1980s by the following route:

1. Shipments were transported from Medellin by small transport aircraft to a Panamanian Air Force base where Manual Noriega's personnel "skimmed" a percentage for personal profit. The remainder was then flown to an American-owned ranch in Honduras, then on to Illopango air base (El Salvadoran Air Force) in El Salvador, where the shipment was divided and put on Southern Air Transport cargo planes and flown via three routes into the U.S., one entering the U.S. in a corridor in Arizona, then carried on to an unknown location in Southern California. From there it was divided again for Los Angeles and San Francisco. The second route flew at low level up the Mexican coastline and arrived in the U.S. at Mena, Arkansas. A third distribution took place at Illopango and was transported to Oaxaca, Mexico, then to a town near Guadalajara where it entered Mexican cartel hands. The Mexican cartel then shipped it in crates marked "Machine Tools" across the Texas border, with some shipments eventually being discovered by Customs, but most getting through due to Customs agents being paid off by this Arbigo Garcia.
2. The cocaine that arrived at Mena was offloaded into smaller aircraft for redistribution to other points, with the profits being taken to Little Rock for laundering. The money was used as payoffs for activities that provided non-serial numbered M-16 rifles, built by Iver-Johnson in Little Rock. These were subsequently delivered to the Contras in Nicaragua by way of Guatemala and Honduras.
3. According to recent publications, subsequent investigations by the U.S. Attorney's office in Little Rock, the FBI, DEA and IRS produced investigative documents concerning high ranking politicians, corporate executives, lawyers and certain law enforcement officers (state level) involved in the profits, manufacture of arms, money laundering and drug distribution.
4. These documents eventually tied in with the Whitewater affair and subjects involved in same.
5. #2 stated that "Arbigo" sent two "bag men" to OKC to help finance the bombing to

> get rid of the documents in the building since reports other than the Whitewater material were part of what was stored there and that would expose those involved in the cocaine smuggling network in both Mexico and Arkansas.

I finished the last page of the memo with seven questions that needed to be answered by the FBI. One of them was to see if they could find out anything about this "Arbigo Garcia," and I specifically said to try different spellings.

A week after submitting this report I went over to the FBI office in Tulsa and asked my contact "did you ever come up with anything on the Mexican drug lord memo I gave you?"

His answer, and I'll never forget it, was "No, it's all hokum. No such guy exists in any of our records or investigations."

I had to find out more from Texas. My jungle sense told me there was something there, especially when the sources mentioned the records!

I called my Texas law enforcement friend and asked if there was anyone in Texas that I might be able to talk to more about this possible connection between cartel money and the OKC bombing. He thought for a moment then said "I have just the guy. How would you like to talk to Sheriff David Williams, the sheriff of Tarrant County?"

Not knowing much about the counties in Texas other than Dallas County and Bexar County (Houston, where my father lived at one time) I assumed Tarrant County must be on the Mexican border. I mentioned to my friend that it would be more than a day's drive from Tulsa to the border, maybe more. Texas is a big state!

"Why would you need to go to the border?" he asked. "Tarrant County is Fort Worth."

The Dallas-Fort Worth area was only 5 hours away.

"When can I meet with him?" I asked.

"How about next week?"

"That'll work," I responded. I felt like I was on a good trail so the trip would be worth it.

"I'll set it up. Also, I have the actual name of the Mexican drug lord. It's Juan Garcia Abrego, and he's mixed up with the Sinaloa Cartel in Mexico and is a conduit for the Medellin Cartel in Columbia. Some say he even works with the Cali cartel, but not much info on that since the Medellin and Cali's are competitors."

I quickly wrote a memo to the FBI that gave them the actual spelling of Abrego's name. I figured that the spelling error was the reason that they did not get a hit on him with my first report. I would eventually find out that there was more to it than that.

When I travelled to Fort Worth for the meeting with Sheriff Williams I was impressed at what a wonderful person he was. He was a good Christian "straight shooter" and a very concerned law enforcement officer. He not only met with me, but brought in his Undersheriff and Chief Criminal Deputy to go over the Mexican information.

Sheriff Williams bio was very telling: “David E. Williams was born and raised in Norman, Oklahoma. His first contact with law enforcement was in the military. He began his civilian law enforcement career in Oklahoma as a patrolman. Williams came to Texas to work as Security Director with the Kenneth Copeland Ministries. His career continued at the Haltom City Police Department where he served as a patrolman, crime prevention officer, and DARE officer.”

In the meeting I found out that there was a definite interest in Abrego by both Sheriff Williams and his Chief Deputy. His chief deputy’s brother had been killed by one of Abrego’s hit men and if there was any way to get to Abrego they were game.

I explained the sketchy information I had so far, and about the “Mexican bag men” who were reported to have come to Oklahoma City to help finance McVeigh and the bombing. Their response was that nothing would be beyond what Abrego could and would do. But their question was why would they bother to dress as Arabs? Would it be to shift suspicion away from Mexicans? Neither of us had the answer to those questions.

I would keep in contact with Sheriff Williams in the ensuing months, and returned to Fort Worth two more times while he was in office. Now I had more information about Abrego to work with—and about cocaine smuggling.

Again, after returning home, I wrote a more extensive report and hand carried it to the FBI office. I handed it to Pete and said “now you might be able to come up with more info on this guy.” I even named other people, including a Texas National Guard Colonel who was in Joint Task Force 6 which was responsible for assisting in guarding the border—and who was on the take. I also listed others in various positions in Texas who were involved in taking payoffs for the cocaine smuggling.

I waited a week, and again after no answer, called him. “Nope,” he said, “nothing on him that I can find.”

In January of 1996 I and my sergeant, Ron Moulton, flew out to Phoenix to pick up a new helicopter from McDonnell Douglas in Mesa. We spent a week there doing acceptance test flights, tracking rotor blades, and having new avionics equipment installed. On one particular flight, while flying with the doors off, we encountered a huge dust storm followed by rain while returning to base from a flight over the mountains northeast of Phoenix. By the time we made it to the field, mostly on instruments, we were soaked with sweat and dust, and our flight suits were caked with splotches of mud. We couldn’t wait to get to the motel to get a shower and get cleaned up.

I turned the TV on just as I was taking my flight suit off. The news was on, and right there in front of me were two FBI agents in raid jackets at the Houston airport walking on each side of, and holding the arms of, one Juan Garcia Abrego, who had just been extradited from Mexico!

We flew home over that weekend and landed in Tulsa on Sunday, January 21st. On Monday morning I started to work, but had to stop at the post office to mail some bill payments. As I was putting stamps on envelopes at a table I looked up, and on the wall were wanted posters. One, right in front of me, was of Juan Garcia Abrego—and he was on the FBI’s Ten Most Wanted Lists! In fact, as I read the poster, it listed his crimes as “Conspiracy to possess with intent to distribute cocaine; money laundering; possession with intent to distribute; conspiracy to import cocaine; continuing criminal enterprise; and filing false 8300s.” Filing false 8300s were IRS forms required to be filed if a person received cash payments over $10,000.00.

At the bottom of the poster was a “Caution” section. It read “Juan Garcia-Abrego, known leader of an international drug-smuggling enterprise, is responsible for the importation of multi-ton quantities of Colombian cocaine as well as marijuana into the United States from Mexico. (Abrego) is known to be in possession of weapons, utilized body guards for his protection, and has ordered the murders of his rivals in the drug business. Consider armed and dangerous.”

Juan Garcia Abrego being escorted by FBI agents off an airplane in Houston, Texas.

WANTED BY THE FBI

CONSPIRACY TO POSSESS WITH INTENT TO DISTRIBUTE COCAINE; MONEY LAUNDERING; POSSESSION WITH INTENT TO DISTRIBUTE; CONSPIRACY TO IMPORT COCAINE; CONTINUING CRIMINAL ENTERPRISE; FILING FALSE 8300s

JUAN GARCIA-ABREGO

FBI No. 979 306 RA4

Photographs taken 1985

Aliases: La Muneca, El Senor, El Ingeniero, Pierudo, El Director, El Paciente, Juan A. Garcia

DESCRIPTION

Date of Birth Used:	September 13, 1944	**Hair:**	Brown
Place of Birth :	La Paloma, Texas	**Eyes:**	Brown
Height:	6' 0"	**Complexion:**	medium
Weight:	200 pounds	**Race:**	White
Build:	Medium	**Nationality:**	American

The Wanted Poster I received from the Post Office.

Then I saw the small print below. It said “A federal warrant was issued on September 24th, 1993, in the Southern District of Texas, Houston, Texas charging Juan Garcia-Abrego with (the above charges). September 24th, *1993*! And, he had been added to the Ten Most Wanted List in March of 1995, a month before the bombing!

The picture in my mind of the newscast in Phoenix was bad enough. But when I saw this poster, and especially the date, I was past angry. I was furious. I hate being lied to, and to be lied to by federal agents whom I’m trying to help added fuel to the fire. It is especially maddening to know that to lie to a federal agent is a felony, but for a federal agent to lie—even to other law enforcement officer—is no crime.

I asked the postmaster if I could have the poster as the subject had been arrested, and he agreed to let me take it. I immediately went home and pulled my thin file with the memos I had given to Pete to check out, and which he had told me that this character wasn’t in their system and references to him were “hokum.”

I then drove directly to the FBI office in Tulsa and asked to see Pete. He was always very friendly and cordial when we met—as are all FBI agents who are taught that honey catches more flies than vinegar—and we sat down in the conference room. I opened my file and pulled out the first memo on Abrego with the misspelled name “Arbigo.”

“Pete, do you remember this memo?” I asked as I slid it across the table.

He looked at it and said “Yeah, I checked it out and didn’t find anything.”

I then shoved the second memo across the table, the one with the correct spelling and more information—three pages of it. “And do you remember this memo on the correct spelling of the guy?”

He looked at it and again said, “Sure. There was nothing on him in our system.”

Having done more than my share of police interrogations I knew how to work an “interview” type meeting. I wanted to make sure that Pete would understand what would happen when this meeting ended.

“Then can you tell me why this very individual that I asked you to check out had a wanted poster from the FBI on every post office wall in the country? After all, he’s on the Ten Most Wanted list, and you told me he wasn’t in the system.” I opened the poster and handed it across the table.

Pete didn’t even pick it up. He just stared at it for a moment then said “what can I say?”

I wanted to say “you can say you lied to me and I want to know why?” But instead I said nothing. I also wanted to ask why he, or his Bureau, was afraid to let a local cop know about Abrego and follow a lead that was extremely important. But I didn’t ask that, and right then I thought I understood why. There would be only two reasons: following the Mexican connection would lead away from the government story of McVeigh and Nichols being the only ones involved, and following the Abrego-Garcia trail would lead to cocaine smuggling, and that would lead to Mena—and Bill and Hillary Clinton!

My reaction as I gathered my memos and folded up my file was “Pete, from this moment on I won’t be ‘helping out’ with the investigation as far as your office is concerned. Your boss asked me if I could help out right after the bombing since I had contacts that you guys didn’t have, and I agreed. But you can’t have a team effort if there is no team. And working together cannot be a one-way street.”

I left the FBI office and never went back. But I didn’t drop the investigation. Instead I became even more determined since I could see where it was going.

It was known as “The Enterprise.”

I continued to investigate, with the help of some very interesting contacts in the right places. Abrego and the drug smuggling network, to me, had to tie in with the records in the Murrah Building. I didn’t feel any Whitewater records would have been important enough to attack the building, but ties to cocaine smuggling and money laundering of millions in drug profits would. By the following January I had built an extensive file and library of international drug smuggling and who was involved. A case file that went back to World War II!

During World War II, the OSS (Office of Strategic Services) sent an OSS team to Southeast Asia, specifically to the Golden Triangle of Burma, Laos and Indochina (now Vietnam) to train guerrilla fighters from the local population and Chinese Nationalist Kuomintang soldiers of the KMT army of General Chiang Kai-shek to fight the Japanese.

To provide support and funding for this, the team utilized the only cash crop in the area: Opium. The team itself would have members whose names would appear again and again over the next forty years in clandestine circles, especially those involving drug smuggling and assassinations. Here is an excerpt from my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government:*

"This OSS team, which operated in Kunming in China—the very center of KMT drug trafficking during World War II—consisted of E. Howard Hunt, Paul Helliwell, Lucien Conein and Mitch WerBell. According to the Wall Street Journal, OSS payments at this base often consisted of five-pound bundles of opium. Lucien Conein, otherwise known as "Black Luigi" went on to be the CIA's liaison with the Corsican Mafia of Saigon and had intimate knowledge of drugs being shipped to Europe by the Corsicans."

Of note in this lineup is E. Howard Hunt, a career CIA operative involved in the anti-Castro efforts of the Agency in the 60's, and was also involved in the Watergate hotel bugging of the Democratic Party headquarters during the Nixon era. He later surfaced as one of the "tramps" in Dealey Plaza on the day of the Kennedy assassination.

Lucien Conein, AKA "Black Luigi" had contacts with the Corsican Mafia during and after World War II and was responsible for the opium that was sent to France during and after the war, and then to the United States in what later became known as the French Connection case.

Mitch WerBell later became a mercenary, then a covert government contractor, an arms dealer, and was the inventor of the Sionics Sound Suppressor used by our troops during the Vietnam war and after.

Paul Helliwell In 1943, with the rank of Colonel, became head of the Secret Intelligence Branch of the OSS in Europe. William Casey eventually replaced him in 1945. Helliwell then became chief of the Far East Division of the War Department's Strategic Service Unit. In 1947, Helliwell joined the CIA. Later Helliwell worked as a lawyer in Miami and served as legal counsel to a Panamanian holding company that controlled a Bahamian gambling casino connected with Mafia Don Meyer Lansky.

When the war ended in 1945 there was no longer a need for the OSS. However, then-president Harry Truman was convinced that with the threat of Soviet Russia becoming stronger each month, he needed an intelligence service to replace and expand the OSS.

In 1946, with the encouragement of former senior OSS officers such as Allen Dulles and other former OSS members. Many suggestions were put forth for the creation of a national intelligence system. The competing plans came to a deadlock. Truman called in Admiral Sidney Souers in December 1946 for his input, and the Central Intelligence Group (CIG) was created. Truman then selected Souers to serve as the first Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) of the CIG. Souers helped create the DCI's authorities and organized CIG. He also authorized CIG's acquisition of the OSS's operational and analytic elements, which meant that the covert actions element would continue to exist as well as the intelligence gathering.

In 1947 several changes occurred in the national defense structure. One change was removing the Air Corps from the U.S. Army and creating a separate branch, the U.S. Air Force. The next was to change the name of the CIG to Central Intelligence Agency, which elevated it from Group size and stature to full-blown Agency status.

As this was happening the French had come back to Indochina, their former colony which consisted of Cambodia, Laos, Tonkin, Annam, and Cochinchina. This was much to the chagrin of the Cochinese, Cambodians, Annamese, and Tonkins. The two things the French wanted to control besides natural resources such as oil and minerals were opium and rubber.

The French occupation lasted until 1953 when the French military forces were defeated at Dien Bien Phu. Shortly thereafter Vietnam was divided into North and South Vietnam, with Ho Chi Minh’s communists controlling the northern section.

That was when the opium production once again became available, and certain old “Southeast Asia” hands in the CIA saw a means of financing black operations without having to go to Congress or announcing what they were doing to anyone outside those with a “need to know.”

In the ensuing years after the division of Indochina into separate countries the CIA once again began drug smuggling operations out of the Golden Triangle. This continued through the Vietnam War years and beyond, and to this day opium enters the U.S. from the same region, and also from Afghanistan among other countries where opium poppies are cultivated.

Opium was not the only “easy money” for financing covert operations. Cocaine use had been around for over a century, and in fact was a legal across-the-counter “medicine,” as was Heroin (named for it’s “heroic” properties in pain relief). In the Western hemisphere, cocaine was much easier to get and just as easy to process. Both were huge cash crops, but with cocaine from South America, and with the popularity of cocaine spiraling upwards during the late 1960s and 70s, and the difference between the cost of production and the profit margin of sales in the U.S., it was a perfect solution for clandestine government financing.

Two main cocaine cartels emerged: the Cali Cartel and the Medellin cartel. The Cali Cartel was first according to Wikipedia: “The Cali Cartel was a drug cartel based in southern Colombia around the city of Cali and the Valle del Cauca Department. Its founders were the Rodríguez Orejuela brothers, Gilberto and Miguel, and José Santacruz Londoño, also known as “Chepe”. They broke away from Pablo Escobar and his Medellin associates in the late 1980s.”

From that point onward the Cali Cartel and the Medellin Cartel became competitors, and both were used by the CIA in what was to become the financial end of the Iran/Contra operation.

The cocaine network developed into a vast spider web of associates, lines of transport and lines of communication that included government officials in all countries involved being bribed—or killed—from senior politicians right down to border guards and airport security.

To refresh the reader’s mind concerning the line of transport, we can start in Colombia, then follow the air transport to Panama, where Manual Noriega served as the first political stop, and where he skimmed drugs from the shipment before they were then flown to a Central American country such as Honduras, Guatemala or El Salvador. From Central America the shipments were either flown directly into the U.S., or smuggled across the border by land routes from Mexico. One of the main transshipment points was through the Texas border, then on to Dallas/Fort Worth, Oklahoma City, New Orleans, and other cities.

The air route, which flew cocaine north and then flew arms south to arm the Contras, entered from various locations, but many flew through Arizona to California, and through Texas and Louisiana to end up at Mena, Arkansas.

On January 20th, 1996, two months before I was to retire from the police department, I wrote a memo for record which I also disseminated to members of the Baker Street Irregulars, and to my "security stash" of files and reports that was located out of state, and that would be released to various outlets in case of my death. It concerned Juan Garcia Abrego AKA Garcia Abrigo. it was titled:

Arrest of Above and Possible OKC Bombing Connections

"Shortly after the Murrah bombing information was received (May 8, 1995) from sources in Texas that a subject named 'Arbigo Garcia' or 'Garcia Arbego' (spelling unknown at that time) was involved in the bombing as a 'cash provider' for the event. The source said that 'Arbego' sent two Mexican nationals to Oklahoma City with a satchel full of cash to finance the bombing. 'Arbego' was allegedly a Mexican mafia chieftain involved in the cocaine and heroin trafficking through Mexico from Guadalajara to Texas. And he allegedly was the ground transportation link during the Iran/Contra/Mena affair.

"This information was forwarded to both the FBI and the DEA, both of which were asked to check their files and/or computers, using various spellings, to see if they had heard of such an individual. Neither replied back that they had any knowledge and no further action was taken.

"On May 9th, 1995, the above information was followed up with a memo containing all the information received from the source, who was relaying it from a former Texas law enforcement officer who had investigated 'Arbego' and several high ranking Texas government officials, and who subsequently testified against them. These officials included a Texas National Guard colonel, and two relatives, all of whom had extensive special ops training.

"Later information arrived, with source now using proper spelling, that (quoting) 'Abrego's contact in Texas was a former colonel. There are three brothers in this particular family. all three had special ops training, were involved in Project Phoenix, one or more involved with the Company. One or more were on a Wet Team. One is or was a professor at Rice University. Two are, or were, fugitives. These three men are the link to Abrego and Texas. Very bad. Abrego was probably set up to silence him like they silenced Noriega. He was part of the same drug importation ring during Iran/Contra and after. Clinton's boys and committee followers have got to get rid of the main contacts to the Mena mess and anyone so associated.

"On Tuesday, January 17th, Juan Garcia Abrego, 51, was extradited from Mexico to Houston to face federal charges of smuggling billions of dollars worth of cocaine into the U.S.. He now faces a 20 count indictment and will be arraigned on February 2nd. He was arrested Sunday, January 15th, in Monterrey, Mexico.

"Abrego was involved in the Iran/Contra drug smuggling operation that had termination points in Los Angeles (Marina Del Rey), Mena, Arkansas, and other cities in the midwest (via the Abrego land route) such as Houston, Dallas, Oklahoma City, etc.

"Abrego, who took over much of the Mexico-to-USA cocaine trafficking after the arrest of Miguel Angel Felix-Gallardo in 1989, is a member of the Colombian Cali Cartel, which shipped in 30% of cocaine used in the U.S., which is estimated at $20 billion a year, and expended $50 million in bribes to U.S. and Mexican officials.

"Abrego, who is related to the governor of Tahulipas Province, worked directly under Amado Carrillo-Fuentes, Mexico's top drug lord. Abrego's territory will probably fall to his second-in-command, Oscar Malherbe De Leon. De Leon, like his predecessor is expected to work with Carrillo-Fuentes, who is based in Juarez, Chihuahua. With a possible power vacuum being formed with the extraction of Abrego, the other main cocaine trafficking gang under the Tijuana-based Arello-Felix organization may attempt to take the lead roll in the new U.S. importation dealings. Should this happen, it is expected that border 'drug wars' will erupt, possibly spilling over to the U.S. side. The area effected will be the Southwest border from Matamoros to Tijuana.

"Abrego was at the top of the FBI's Ten Most Wanted List since March of 1995, a month before the Murrah bombing and almost two months previous to the original enquiry which received no response from the FBI.

"It has been alleged that the records in the Murrah Building that were salvaged for reasons of 'national security' on Day One may have tied Abrego in with the Mena drug smuggling along with other players (see 9May95 Intel Memo note 3).

"It should be noted that former CIA Chief of Station Theodore Shackley, (who with his assistant Thomas Clines) set up the Laotian opium smuggling operation in Laos during the war in Southeast Asia, now lives in Bogota, Columbia, and is rumored in intelligence circles to have set up or helped organize both the Cali Cartel and the Medellin Cartels for the purpose of smuggling cocaine and marijuana into the U.S. to support certain compartmentalized CIA covert operations with a source for black funding. The route of smuggling cocaine and marijuana by the 'Enterprise' as it was called at the time, was from Bogota, to Panama (where Manual Noriega and Mossad agents Michael Harrare and Amiram Nir took their respective cuts, to Illopango Air Base in El Salvador where it was divided into three routings. These routings took the drugs via Southern Air Transport to the Los Angeles area, to Mena, and to Guadalajara, where they were taken by truck in crates stenciled 'machine tools" to Matamoros, Mexico, then across the border to Brownsville, Texas. Abrego handled this latter route."

The memo included the last caveat at the end "See Compromised: *Clinton, Bush and the CIA by Terry Reed and John Cummings*." Reed was a CIA contracted instructor pilot who trained Contra pilots at Mena and other Arkansas airports. He later turned informant against many high ranking Arkansas businessmen and politicians including Bill Clinton. The book goes into minute detail and provides supporting documents to his claims, many of which matched my own investigation among others.

Another book that came out that was of extreme interest is titled *The Clinton Chronicles* by Citizens for Honest Government. In that book I found reproduced a most interesting DEA Form 6 report that mentioned the Tulsa Police Department, and a detective I knew well.

The DEA report specifically named Don Tyson, owner of Tyson Foods in Springdale, Arkansas, and stated that Tyson smuggled cocaine into Arkansa inside race horses! This sounded a bit silly to me, but I had another DEA report that stated that Tyson had requested from the FAA special permission to fly into Arkansas without stopping at the border and dealing with Customs. That didn't make sense until I put two-and-two together. The excuse could have been that since he was bringing in expensive race horses from South America that it would be too hard on the horses to make an "unnecessary stop." That's the only excuse I could think of for Tyson to be able to bypass border security.

It was about this time that I received a flow chart in the mail in a plain brown envelope with no return address. The stamps were cancelled "Little Rock," and I couldn't help but wonder if it was from the "federal agent" who first gave me the information of the files being sent to the Murrah Building. The flow chart looked like s spider web of lines connecting various names and entities in several directions. Of most interest was the top name in a diamond-shaped box: "Gov. Bill Clinton."

Close to that was Bill's brother's name, "Roger Clinton." Then to one side "Tyson Foods." Below, following the various boxes and circles were such names as:

Dan Lasater (Little Rock businessman and millionaire)

Arkansas Development Finance Authority (front from Whitewater and money laundering)

Worthen Bank (who gave a $2 million line of credit to the Clinton campaign)

Rose Law Firm (Webb Hubbell's law firm where Hillary and Vince Foster worked)

Webb Hubbell

Buddy Young (Clinton's chief of security)

Jim and Susan McDougal (Whitewater Development Corporation)

Stephens Inc. (Jackson Stephens' company that allegedly used PROMIS software to launder money through various savings and loans and banks)

Park On Meter (parking meter manufacture and secret defense contractor that built non-serial number M-16 receivers for the Contras that was owned by Seth Ward, Web Hubbell's father-in-law)

Jackson Stephens (Worthan Bank chairman and major Clinton backer, and Jimmy Carter's roommate at Annapolis when they were at the Naval Academy)

BCCI (The Bank of Credit and Commerce International, an international bank founded in 1972 by Agha Hasan Abedi, a Pakistani financier that laundered millions in drug money.

Abdullah Taha Bankhsh (BCCI investor with $10 million in Worthen Bank)

BCCI figures and investors: Mochtar Riady, Aga Hassan Abede, Bert Lance (and his National Bank of Georgia), Gaith Pharoan.

Madison Guaranty (later closed by federal regulators)

Felix Rodriguez, AKA "Maximo Gomez" (CIA, key link to Contras, drug smuggling and

Vice President George H.W. Bush)

Larry Nichols (Contra veteran and ex-Clinton aide)

Mena, Arkansas (base for Contra and drug operations)

Barry Seal (CIA pilot who dropped duffel bags full of cash on the Triple S Ranch near Hot Springs, Arkansas that contained an estimated $9 million that was picked up and laundered by Hillary Clinton, Webb Hubbell and Vince Foste at the Rose Law Firm and ADFA—the Arkansas Development Finance Authority)

The last reference to Mena could be expanded to Rich Mountain Aviation which was a company that modified airplanes to fly long distances by adding extra fuel tanks and removing unneeded weight. My friend and former CID Investigator Gene Wheaton provided a lot of information (since he was one of the whistleblowers on Iran/Contra) about Mena and Rich Mountain Aviation. He had even managed to access the place and take telephoto pictures of some of the operation. Some of the photos were of surplus C-123 transport airplanes on the ramp along with C-130s. Wheaton was on the trail of the C-130s that had been acquired from the U.S. Forrest Service, Davis Monthan Air Force Base (airplane storage and graveyard in the Arizona desert), and some foreign countries who had surplussed the planes. (On a side note, when I attended a weekend Army Intelligence class in Waco, Texas, which was located on the Waco airport, there was a camouflage-painted C-123 on the ramp outside the Intel building. I wondered why such a plane would be there, but later deduced that it was somehow tied in with CIA operations that also had access to the Intel school).

One C-130 Wheaton was following was N4469P, originally a Royal Australian Air Force C-130, but was then registered to “Airline Marketing Consultants, Inc.” of Miami, Florida (the same city where the Southern Air Transport airplanes were registered). I looked up the N Number this year and the FAA registration file says “Lockheed C-130A, Serial Number 3215: Destroyed.”

There is no explanation beyond that on whether it was scrapped or crashed somewhere. But the notation of “destroyed” was dated 1998, a convenient year for getting rid of evidence from the Iran/Contra days.

Wheaton’s photos showed several things, and one showed a mechanic changing the N Number on the fuselage of a small twin engine aircraft. We could not make out by the photo what it was being changed to, whether a U.S. N number or a foreign registration number. Nevertheless it was obviously “changing identity” as far as visual recognition, but if the plane was found later crashed or abandoned it wouldn’t take much for an investigator to discover the last registered identity by the number on the data plate and even the serial numbers on some of the equipment or engines if log books could be found.

In one of my files I found a document that mentions Wheaton. One paragraph stuck out: “One trail of blood drops in Oklahoma leads to Bill Clinton, and the principals of CIA’s Mena drug scandal. Gene Wheaton offers that Agency official Cord Meyer recruited Clinton when he was a Rhodes student in the UK. The dimpled spy and current resident of the White House has since been dragged into the mud at the Mena airport. Mena is among the largest aircraft refitting facilities in the country, situated just across the Oklahoma border, and doubtless figured in the interagency probe of regional drug operations., Clinton failed to investigate allegations of cocaine running in Mena, and since the Iran/Contra operation was exposed, has become a cut-out, possibly to distance certain Republicans from the scandal." Certain Republicans would include members of the National Security Council, CIA and the then-vice president, George H.W. Bush. If Ronald Reagan knew of the operation, no one knows. He was entering the stages of Alzheimer's at that point and Bush was basically running the operations without Reagan's knowledge.

The document went on to say "The federal agents in Oklahoma City were not the only ones investigating drug movements in the southwest. Wheaton recently investigated the theft of 32 military aircraft and was drawn to familiar territory. 'The same people,' he said, 'who flew in massive cocaine shipments to Mena under Reagan in the '80s were running things now. And it's a continuation of Iran/Contra. Everybody thinks Iran/Contra quit with Ollie North and Secord being exposed. But it's actually got bigger because the media stopped looking at it.'"

But how did Abrego manage to get his shipments across the border by the truck load? An article by Beatriz Johnston Hernandez dated February 12th, 1996 explains that Abrego's network bribed U.S. border agents with large sums of cash.

"Transcript's of the 1993 trials in Brownsville and Houston of four of Abrego's underlings reveal how INS drivers would transport undocumented agents caught in Houston south to the INS detention centers close to the border. On their way back north, the agents would load the empty buses with Abrego's marijuana and cocaine worth millions of dollars.

"Testifying at a 1991 trial in Corpus Christi of accused Abrego hitman Miguel Botello and again in the 1993 money laundering trial of Maria Lourdes Reategui and Antonio Giraldi in Brownsville, Rivas explained how the gang was able to transport between 1000 and 1400 kilos of cocaine *each week* past U.S. Customs checkpoints."

But in 1993 one delivery went wrong:

"Graciel Contreras and Juan Bananas were in the truck…the one agent at the checkpoint had been paid off, and Juan Bananas was the one who knew him, so he was the one to give the signal so the truck with the coke could pass. But something went wrong and the shipment was confiscated."

Houston FBI agents knew that INS agents were involved in the drug trade since early 1991, but only two INS agents were arrested. One was tried and sentenced (10 years without parole). One other failed to appear in federal court to stand trial on charges of drug conspiracy, money laundering and bribery.

Abrego's corruption of officials went way beyond INS. Customs officials were very nervous during the one trial because they knew it might identify others that were much higher in the chain of command.

The bottom line is that with enough drug money, Abrego and others like him could "arrange" border crossings with large shipments of drugs.

The so-called "War on Drugs" was, and still is, a joke.

Some of my hand-written notes in the Mena file taken during phone conversations with various informants mention that in 1985 alone $40 million a month went into Mena and was laundered through banks in Little Rock, and through ADFA. Besides that, $109 million was laundered through Dan Lasater's "Company," meaning his bond business, and even more drug money was laundered by Clinton associate Bert Lance of the National Bank of Georgia. Lance was also connected to BCCI, a criminal enterprise bank set up to launder drug profits.

Ambrose Evans-Pritchard did a great deal of investigative journalism during the 1980s and 90s. In an article in *The London Telegraph* he wrote concerning a DEA report he uncovered that "…a key Arkansas figure and backer of Clinton "smuggles cocaine from Colombia, South America, inside race horses to Hot Springs."

"Basil Abbott, a convicted drug pilot, says that he flew a Cessna 210 full of cocaine into Marianna, (a small town in eastern Arkansas, not to be confused with Mena which is in western Arkansas near the Oklahoma border) in the spring of 1982. The aircraft was welcomed by an Arkansas State Trooper in a marked police car. 'Arkansas was a very good place to load and unload' he said.

"IRS agent William Duncan and an Arkansas State Police investigator took their evidence concerning drug trafficking in Mena to US Attorney Asa Hutchinson. They asked for 20 witnesses to be subpoenaed before the grand jury. Hutchinson chose only three. According to reporter Mara Leveritt, "The three appeared before the grand jury, but afterwards, two of them also expressed surprise at how their questioning was handled. One, a secretary at Rich Mountain Aviation, had given Duncan sworn statements about money laundering at the company, transcripts of which Duncan had provided to Hutchinson. But when the woman left the jury room, she complained that Hutchinson had asked her nothing about the crime or the sworn statements she'd given to Duncan. As Duncan later testified, 'She basically said that she was allowed to give her name, address, position, and not much else.' The other angry witness was a banker who had, in Duncan's words, 'provided a significant amount of evidence relating to the money-laundering operation.' According to Duncan, he, too, emerged from the jury room complaining 'that he was not allowed to provide the evidence that he wanted to provide to the grand jury.'

"According to I.R.S. criminal investigator Duncan, secretaries at the Mena Airport told him that when Seal flew into Mena, there would be stacks of cash to be taken to the bank and laundered. One secretary told him that she was ordered to obtain numerous cashier's checks, each in an amount just under $10,000, at various banks in Mena and surrounding communities, to avoid filing the federal Currency Transaction Reports required for all bank transactions that exceed that limit. Bank tellers testified before a federal grand jury that in November 1982, a Mena airport employee carried a suitcase containing more than $70,000 into one bank. 'The bank officer went down the teller lines handing out the stacks of $1,000 bills and got the cashier's checks.' Law-enforcement sources confirmed that hundreds of thousands of dollars were laundered from 1981 to 1983 just in a few small banks near Mena, and that millions more from Seal's operation were laundered elsewhere in Arkansas and the nation."

The second week of May, 1995, I received a one-page Memorandum for Record from a trusted source I'll refer to as "The Colonel." It was dated May the 8th, which was only 19 days after the bombing. I had asked him to put out feelers on the possible content of the files that were taken from the Murrah Building. Here is his response:

“Today, 8 May, 1995, I received an update from D.F. in San Antonio. The following information is confirmed as ‘hard’ (received from his cartel CIs). The records containing information about the WHITEWATER fiasco and the MENA drug operations were moved from the Little Rock location to the Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City for safe keeping. Also, within hours after the bombing, Oklahoma City fire fighters reported, that from their positions looking down from several floors up, where they were working to hunt for survivors, they saw two army ambulances back up to the building and carry several stretchers into, then out of the building with what looked to be bodies on them. But, from closer inspection, it was not bodies but long cases. Leaks from the BATF confirmed that Stinger missiles were being stored in the basement of the Murrah Building by the BATF for safe keeping, unknown to many federal authorities. There was also an unexploded canister of fulminate of Mercury found at the explosion site. This substance is very volatile with an ignition rate of some 35,000 fps. It is used to ignite many types of military explosives and is not part of a terrorist’s inventory

“It is very hard to get hold of unless you know a manufacturer personally or you are authorized by a government contract, i.e., a security clearance.”

The document went on to question why so many personnel were used to retrieve documents when people were still trapped in the building, and the building itself was not safe to enter or explore except for rescue efforts. The Colonel says in closing “The name Arbigo (sp) Garcia comes into play in this operation with his possible expertise and connections. He is a number one cartel man in Mexico. His front is in the drug trade, but his real involvement is in arms deals. According to my Mexican sources nothing is done or is pulled off in the area of North American drug terrorism without his knowledge. His connections in the U.S. Government go very high.”

Of course, Manual Noriega’s connections to the CIA and U.S., government went very high as well. But he, too, ended up in prison and like Abrego, has not been heard from since.

The pieces of the puzzle that we were putting on the wall were beginning to form a picture. The revelations that were appearing were very significant and the seriousness, and the danger, of the investigation was becoming more apparent each week.

The questions that we began to ask went beyond McVeigh and Nichols, beyond the Middle Eastern connection, and beyond the Elohim City diversion. We had to ask the question “If the records were about the Mena drug smuggling (and even Whitewater), was the Clinton administration so concerned that their discovery would reach to the highest levels of our government on both sides of the aisle that the Murrah Building had to be destroyed? That didn’t make a lot of sense since all they had to do was to send a team of trusted federal agents (or “mercenary” agents) to the building to search for and retrieve the records. That is, unless, however, bringing down the building would serve more than one purpose, such as shutting down the militias, attacking the right wing and radio talk shows, and passing the stalled Omnibus Crime Bill. THEN it might make sense.

And more, would discovery of such records lead to exposing what was beginning to look like an international conspiracy involving billions of dollars of drug profits that fell into the pockets of politicians and political leaders of countries all over the world? For such ivory tower villains, to ensure their safety destroying a building in the middle of Oklahoma would be a small matter.

As Lewis Carrol wrote in “Through A Looking Glass” “It gets curiouser and curiouser…”

CHAPTER 14

Midwest Bank Robbers—Connection or Diversion?

“It is a capital mistake to theorize before one has data. Insensibly one begins to twist facts to suit theories, instead of theories to suit facts.”

Sherlock Holmes (Sir Arthur
Conan Doyle)
A Scandal in Bohemia

The first time I met J.D. Cash was at a meeting in Oklahoma City with Representative Key’s Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee. There were about a dozen people there who were doing their part in trying to get to the truth about the bombing and who, and how many, were behind it, and also if the government had foreknowledge that could have saved lives or stopped the bombing.

Cash, a thin grizzled man who obviously was a heavy smoker which effected his voice and the number or wrinkles in his face, was across the table from where I sat. I had heard his name through David Hoffman but until then had not met him. To my right, two chairs down, wearing a black leather jacket, was a retired Marine Corps lieutenant colonel named Roger Charles. Roger had worked as an investigative journalist for *Sixty Minutes* until the network shut down all reports that went outside of the official McVeigh/Nichols line. He and I were the only Marines on “the team,” and in my mind I felt he would be a good asset because we both shared the same *esprit d’corps*.

We all took turns sharing what we had developed so far. When it came to J.D. Cash, he was introduced as an investigative reporter for the *McCurtain Daily Gazette*, or as Cash sometimes referred to it as the *McCurtain County Gazette*. The *Gazette* was a small town rural farm newspaper located in Idabel, Oklahoma, which is in the far southeast corner of the state just a few miles from both Texas and Arkansas. Not exactly a newspaper that would pay a reporter to spend a full time assignment on one story for such a small circulation newspaper. Idabel, population just over 7000, was a town I had heard of but never visited. All I knew in my previous 44 years in Oklahoma was it was that “down there somewhere near Louisiana or Texas,” and that it was in a part of the state famous for organized crime including the infamous Dixie Mafia, marijuana growing, and a place where a lot of desperadoes hid out from before statehood up to the present time.

When Cash began his “briefing” it was all about the Midwest Bank Robbers who he and Roger Charles were following in their investigation. Cash was positive that was the direction the entire investigation should take and was determined to make the case that the gang was tied in with McVeigh, militias, and white supremacists.

This raised red flags to me as I personally knew that no one in any Oklahoma “militia” was involved in the case. In fact I had met a few militia leaders in my investigation who felt they were being set up “by the feds” to take the blame and that it all had to do with attacking the Right Wing using the militias as scape goats. In fact, I had traveled to Eufala, Oklahoma, to meet with Ross Hullett, leader of the Oklahoma Citizens Militia, a small group that was mainly concerned with the direction the country was headed under the Clinton administration. Hullett told me that he knew several militia leaders around the country in such states as Arizona, Michigan, Montana, Texas and Alabama. They all agreed that the bombing was being used as a witch hunt against what Washington politicians now feared was a citizen's uprising. He said "Look, if we had known that the bombing in Oklahoma City was going to take place, we'd have guarded the building, not blown it up!"

But did Cash have a line on "others unknown" in regards to the bank robbers who, like Nichols' Philippine/Muslim connections, may have provided funding?

It was becoming mind boggling. Money and training from the Philippines (all the way up to Osama bin Ladin), Money from the Mexican drug cartels, and now more money from bank robbers? Just how much money would be needed to finance one truck bomb?

It might take a lot. Not just for the materials, but for payoffs to anyone involved. If McVeigh and Nichols had gotten away, and if others were involved (and I was sure there were several), then how much would it cost to pay them all off—or to relocate them with false identities out of the country and provide for their future expenses? And was cash flowing into such places as Elohim City? Only time would tell, but there was something about the demeanor of J.D. Cash that to me just didn't add up. I put him on the "I gotta watch this guy" list.

Another person at the meeting was a lady named Cate McCauley who was a recent arrival from out of state who came to help in the investigation. Charles Key was impressed with her and made her the Executive Director of the Committee. But like Cash, my old Vietnam-acquired "jungle sense" and my police "street sense" both raised a red flag. There was something about her that I didn't trust either.

As it did turn out later, she was a mole. She was sent to Oklahoma City to "infiltrate" the investigation, then debunk and discredit everything we and the Key committee discovered. It was as if she tried to take over the entire investigation, and then, as time went on, to "prove" that McVeigh and Nichols were the only ones involved. It was journalistic sabotage pure and simple. She especially went after Jayna Davis (who was not part of the Committee and did not attend any of the meetings that I attended), and especially after Jayna's findings concerning Hussein al Husseini and the Middle Eastern/Iraqi connection were brought up. Cate refused to cross swords with me, however, probably because at the time I was a law enforcement officer assigned to assist the FBI, but she did everything else over the following months to refute all of our findings. She didn't help develop any leads, but instead tried to debunk and discredit the leads and evidence we had. When Key finally had enough of her, she "resigned" and upon leaving, which we discovered later, took computer copies of all the records and reports the Committee had developed.

She later stated to CNS News "It became apparent that [members of Key's committee] refused to look at certain evidence that didn't fit their theories," McCauley explained. "In March 1999, I resigned from Key's committee because they were going to publish falsehoods, which I flatly refused to take part in."

The only falsehood was Cate McCauley, who later turned up on McVeigh's appeal defense team. Quite a change from "McVeigh did it by himself" to helping with McVeigh's appeal.

After she left I had contact from some of my sources from whom I had requested info about her . One short phone call said simply “She’s a government plant. She reports to the FBI.”

The second time I met John David Cash III was when Tulsa attorney Larry Oliver called me and asked if I could meet with him regarding the Oklahoma City bombing. Oliver was representing some of the OKC victims and their relatives in a law suit against Timothy McVeigh and against the government.

I had known Oliver for years during my time on the Tulsa Police Department. My first wife was the Tulsa City Attorney’s secretary at City Hall, and I had met Larry during some of the various joint holiday parties held by the Tulsa City Legal Office, as well and various judges and lawyers around town. Larry was a good guy and what I would call a pretty basic Okie. He was Tulsa’s answer to Gerry Spence, a self-described “country lawyer” in Wyoming who had served as both a prosecuting attorney and a defense counsel. Spence was famous for not having ever lost a criminal prosecution or defense case—some of his cases included Randy Weaver, Karen Silkwood’s family, and even Philippine First Lady Imelda Marcos, who in federal court in New York had been accused of racketeering. Spence was also famous for his attire: buckskin jacket with leather fringes and cowboy boots. His office was decorated with game trophy heads and western art. Oliver’s office was the same, and he also wore the western clothing and a buckskin coat on many occasions.

Larry was also a life-long friend of former Tulsa County Sheriff Frank Thurman, who I knew well and who had told Oliver that I had a lot of knowledge about the bombing and was one of the investigators. This was also reinforced by former Tulsa Police lieutenant Bill “Tank” Thompson, who was now Undersheriff of Tulsa County and had been my lieutenant when I was on Tulsa P.D’s TAC squad, (Tactical Squad—our version of SWAT). Thompson had called me and asked if I could help Oliver with his Oklahoma City investigation in relation to a law suit.

When I arrived I could see how much Larry liked Western art. He had great old west paintings and bronze sculptures in his office, along with steer horns and leather western furniture.

I sat across from him at his desk and he explained that he had been retained to represent the Wilburn family in a lawsuit against Timothy McVeigh and against the government. The suit claimed that the government had foreknowledge of the event, and that if the government had warned others then, the Wilburn’s grandchildren, Chase, age 3, and Colton, age 2, who were in the day care center in the Murrah Building, would not have died in the bombing.

I was briefing Larry on what I knew so far, and that there was much more involved in the case than just McVeigh and Nichols. I explained that we had other witnesses of the events before and after Day One that he could talk to, when all of a sudden I saw J.D. Cash walk by just outside Oliver’s office. What was *he* doing in Tulsa?

By this time I had come to distrust Cash, and I had feelers out to see what his background was and why he was so interested in the case. I asked Oliver “what’s Cash doing here?”

“Oh him? He’s helping with the Wilburns’ case. He came up from the City to fill me in on what he’s found out so far. Do you know him?”

Instead of saying anything that might be overheard, I leaned forward, looked at Oliver, and gave him my best “don’t trust him” face. He looked at me, then past me to the door. Cash was standing there.

“J.D.,” Oliver said, “I think you might have met Craig Roberts before. He’s a Tulsa police officer that stopped by to fill me in on what he’s been finding out about the case.”

Cash did not look happy that I was there. He said “Yeah, we’ve met. Finding out anything new, Craig?”

“Oh, a little here, and a little there,” I said. Then, I just had to fire a shot down range with “You found out anything on the Middle Eastern connection yet?”

He got a sour look on his face, and I knew he wouldn’t want to get into that in front of Oliver. He said “No, I don’t think there’s anything there. I’m more interested in the connections to Brescia, Elohim City, Thomas, McCarthy and their crew.”

I knew right then that my suspicions about Cash had been right. Not only did he believe the case should focus on the bank robbers, but away from any other direction that might lead to more than what he wanted known by the public. All of his articles for the *Gazette* focused on the Midwest Bank Robbery gang (which the FBI had codenamed BOMBROB), and not on the other areas we were following as a group.

So we had J.D. trying to divert the investigation, and McCauley trying to derail it. I just didn’t know how much at the time.

Cash was not totally wrong in following the Midwest Bank Robbers, as they became known. There was some meat there, and as time went by we began to see more of a connection to the case. The main connection seemed to be in the various individuals involved, and a few possible contacts of some of the suspects with McVeigh and Strassmeir. There was also a gun show connection, and we knew that McVeigh and Strassmeir both frequented gun shows as did some of the robbers who we discovered claimed to be in what they called the Aryan Republican Army, or ARA. The robbers, according to FBI reports, funded their anti-government ARA operations with loot from the robberies. To me, these so-called operations were just an excuse to rob banks and an attempt to legitimize their crimes to a gullible portion of the public.

As more and more information came in, with a significant amount of credit to J.D. and Roger Charles, who was also determined to pursue the bank robber leads, the members of the gang were identified.

At the time the main members were Michael William Brescia, Mark William Thomas, Richard Lee Guthrie Jr., Peter Kevin Langan, Kevin McCarthy, and Scott Stedeford. Eventually we could tie in brothers Chevie and Cheyne Kehoe. There were even a few references to McVeigh being involved in some of the robberies, which over time netted more than $250,000.

Brescia and Guthrie at one time resided at Elohim City at the same time Strassmeir was “security director” there and Dennis Mahon had a travel trailer on the property.

During that time McVeigh visited Elohim City at least once, and was seen there by Carol Howe.

Michael William Brescia, born to a firefighter father and accountant mother in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, was both a member of the ARA and a part-time student at Lasalle University. It would be much later when we would discover that he also was an informant for the FBI and that the FBI knew of many of the robberies, and who was involved, and even when they would happen in advance. However, as in many FBI cases, they allowed the robberies to continue until they could manage to "catch much bigger fish." One example of this was the Roger Wheeler murder case in Tulsa, in 1981, in which two Boston Irish-mob hitmen of "The Winter Hill Gang," Johnny Martorano and Stephen "The Rifleman" Flemmi murdered Tulsa businessman and president of Telex, Inc., Roger Wheeler as he was getting into his car at Tulsa's Southern Hills Country Club. Wheeler had been responsible for stopping the payoffs to the mob when he acquired World Jai Alai in Florida. Also killed in the same time frame in Florida was the Jai Ali Federation president John Callahan. Both killings were on order of the Winter Hill Gang boss, James Joseph "Whitey" Bulger, Jr.

Bulger was also an informant for the FBI, and for decades after the Wheeler murder when Tulsa detectives, spearheaded by Sgt. Mike Huff, were working the case, the FBI protected Bulger simply to keep him on the "inside" as an informant regarding mob activities in Boston. A movie about Bulger was made in 2016 titled "Black Mass." It depicted his activities, including the Wheeler murder. Johnny Depp does a very realistic job playing Bulger.

The Smith-Wilburn lawsuit that Larry Oliver filed was based on the assumption that Brescia was the John Doe #2, and was thought to have helped McVeigh orchestrate the bombing. The *Daily Telegraph* also ran an interview with a witness named Connie Smith who said "I kept telling them that the man in the (John Doe #2) sketch that came out after the bombing was that Mike guy, a nice-looking guy, dark-skinned. But the FBI made me feel guilty, then ignorant, as if I didn't know what I was saying. Then, later, I tried to call in with more information and they wouldn't even talk to me."

Brescia did bear a resemblance to one of the John Doe sketches, but so did Hussein al Husseini. I didn't want to rule him out, but it would take more than a resemblance to a sketch to make the case for me. Cash needed to tie him in with McVeigh to satisfy Oliver and the Smith's.

Richard Lee Guthrie Jr., one of the four main characters in the gang, and of the ARA, had participated in several of the robberies. According to Dennis Mahon, who knew Guthrie, Guthrie had given much of the money from the robberies to the Aryan Nation. Guthrie had also been a suspect in the multiple murder of an Arkansas family named Mueller, whose guns, cash and gold had been stolen. Eventually the actual murderers were found to be two brothers, Chevie and Cheyne Kehoe, two self-proclaimed white supremacists and friends of Terry Nichols, who had sold guns to Nichols. After Guthrie was arrested he admitted to being a member of the ARA and to having robbed banks. He also insisted that there was more to the story. But before he could relate it, which he said he was prepared to do, both to a grand jury and in a future book he was planning to write, he was found dead in his jail cell, hanging by a sheet.

In one report of the death of Guthrie he “was found dead of an apparent suicide Friday morning in a county jail in Kentucky, jolting a growing federal investigation into white supremacist violence. The death of 38-year-old Richard Lee Guthrie Jr. came little more than a week after his pledge—according to a sealed plea agreement in U.S. District Court—to provide authorities with information about organizations “whose goal was the overthrow of the U.S. government and to engage in domestic terrorism.”

The report went on to state: “Guthrie had confessed his involvement with the Mid-Western Bank Robbers, who taunted the FBI for nearly two years, wearing fanciful costumes, leaving pipe bombs at crime scenes and stealing more than $250,000. He pleaded guilty in April to three bank robberies in Ohio and last Wednesday to 16 more in seven states, as well as to weapons charges and credit card fraud.

“In his last known interview, a 10-minute phone call on Thursday, Guthrie said he was planning to write a book that goes ‘a lot more deeper’ than the robberies, about his life and the white supremacist movement. ‘It’ll all come out,’ he said.”

It appears that Guthrie was ready to spill his guts on more than just the robberies. He had been involved in the Aryan Nations movement and had been a frequent visitor to Hayden Lake, Idaho, headquarters of the Aryan Nation and a place also frequented by Dennis Mahon and his friend, White Aryan Resistance leader Tom Metzger.

The report went on to say: “Two other men, Kevin McCarthy and Scott Anthony Stedeford, also members of the ARA, are being held in connection with the robberies. Guthrie said he met Stedeford through Aryan Nation leader Mark Thomas.

McCarthy lived in a trailer on the property Thomas rented. According to another former follower of Thomas, McCarthy had *also lived at Elohim City,* an Oklahoma compound of believers in Christian Identity, a white supremacist religion.”

Richard Guthrie fell victim to the adage “Dead Men Tell No Tales.” On July 12th, 1996, Guthrie was found dead in his cell. He was in a solitary confinement cell and it was immediately declared suicide. But there was more to the story than that, and having studied the numerous “suicides” of those who fell astray of the Clintons—and the Janet Reno “Justice” Department, I had my doubts. According to his public defender, W. Kelly Johnson, Guthrie had recently been told he would soon be transferred from the Kenton County Detention Center in Covington, Kentucky, in preparation for testimony at a Columbus, Ohio, hearing for fellow ARA member, Peter Langan. And according to jailers’ logs, nothing was amiss in Guthrie’s cell, where he was kept in isolation and when he was checked at 5:22 a.m. Then, at 6:06 a.m. a guard discovered the body, hanging from a ceiling air vent. If one were to believe the “suicide” story, Guthrie, who was planning to “tell all” decided to kill himself, then accomplished that in 44 minutes.

Two notes, one addressed to his lawyer and one to a family member, were found. Guthrie’s younger brother, Nicholas, said that he thought the death was suspicious. “What bothers me is he was looking to the future,” he said.

Indeed, Richard Guthrie told *The Los Angeles Times* on the day before: “I got a lot to do in the next few weeks. I got a couple of grand juries to present to.” Guthrie’s death would stop any of his testimony, and any effort at a “tell-all” book.

Peter Kevin Langan Jr., one of Guthrie's cohorts, was an asset to the Secret Service in 1993 when he was released from jail in Georgia after agreeing to infiltrate the Aryan Nation. But sometime that year he disappeared and was not found until he and others were arrested in 1996. According to a January 1995 FBI memo, Langan, when being interviewed by FBI agents, admitted to the ARA having a "hit list." When asked who was on the list, he said "Bill Clinton, (FBI director) Louis Freeh, (Attorney General) Janet Reno, and Senator Howard Metzenbaum." He said that they had been tried in absentia, and had death sentences handed down against them. Langan, like Guthrie and others, had all visited or stayed at Elohim City one or more times.

I wondered why Metzenbaum was on the list. When I looked into Metzenbaum's career three things stuck out: He was a liberal anti-gun senator, he helped author and push through the anti-gun Brady Bill, and he was a Jew. Any one of those would put him on the hate list of the ARA, WAR and The Order among others.

Mark Thomas, head of the Aryan Nations Eastern Command, was instrumental in forming an additional cell known as "Unit 7." Unit 7 would be responsible for killing judges and others in courtrooms in what they called "a massacre" that would start the next revolution.

Thomas also stated in 1997, when he was arrested, that ARA member Kevin McCarthy assisted McVeigh in the bombing. He did not say how, but it was possible that it was either Brescia or McCarthy that was seen in the second Ryder truck with Dennis Mahon in Bricktown the day of the bombing—*if* that second John Doe was not Strassmeir.

Then, there is the statement of Tim McVeigh's sister, Jennifer, who told federal investigators that her brother told her that he was involved in robbing banks, and that she had laundered some of the cash for them. She also at one point said that her brother admitted to being part of a special operations unit that did illegal things for the government.

In my file on McVeigh, which was growing bigger all the time, I remembered the part where early on I had traced McVeigh, during his Army active duty service, from Fort Riley to Fort Bragg to attend Special Forces training. Then according to the Army, he went AWOL, or disappeared. No one seemed to know where he was. That is, no one except those for whom he worked for at Calspan, Inc. as a security guard which required a security clearance! (Also, McVeigh's received an honorable discharge from the Army in 1991, allegedly because he failed his Special Forces qualification tests, but was video-taped in 1993, in uniform, at Camp Grafton, North Dakota, almost two years after he was "discharged"!).

What is hard to understand is that the ARA was adamant, according to its members, about overthrowing the federal government. But the ARA was full of federal informants who knew everything that was going on. Still the gang continued to rob banks, and according to what little information we were able to glean, the FBI knew in advance of the robberies but still let them occur. Or maybe that was one part of the FBI, but not the part that was chasing bank robbers. Sort of like the FBI in Boston protecting the Winter Hill Gang while the Tulsa FBI was trying to help solve the Wheeler murder. That, in the intelligence world, is called "compartmentalization."

Besides the ARA bank robbers, there were other individuals who came to light later in the game. The others that surfaced involved robberies of two different Arkansas gun dealers, and the murder of one of them and his family.

The first was the robbery of a gun dealer named Roger Moore who lived in the Royal, Arkansas vicinity. Royal is located in south central Arkansas, west of Hot Springs. In that robbery, which occurred on November 5th, 1984, Moore was bound with duct tape while his house was searched and his guns, gold and silver coins were taken. Moore lived to tell about it, and he told authorities that he suspected a former house guest named Timothy McVeigh was involved. He had shown McVeigh his guns and bragged about saving gold and silver. Later, a federal grand jury would report that the robbery was indeed linked to McVeigh, Nichols and Michael Fortier, an Army buddy of both McVeigh and Nichols. Thirty three of the guns taken in the robbery were later recovered beneath the floor of Nichols home in Kansas.

The second was William Mueller. Mueller was a gun dealer who, along with his wife, Nancy, and her 8-year-old daughter, Sarah, lived in a cabin near the tiny community of Tilley, Arkansas, located in northwest Arkansas, just east of the Ozark National Forest. In other words, “in the middle of nowhere,” as people in this part of the country describe. It is heavily wooded and rural, and you would have to know exactly how to get there to find the Mueller cabin.

William Mueller had done very well at gun shows as he had a very large and expensive collection of guns. He also saved and hoarded cash, gold, and silver for the “End Times” of Bible prophecy. His unforeseen problem, however, was the company he kept. Somewhere along the way he had run into some of the ARA bank robbers, and also Timothy McVeigh (some reports say Mueller even knew Nichols but I’ve not seen evidence of that). However he met them, it seems logical it may have been at Elohim City. This had become a gathering place for like-minded radicals (many of whom were proving to be FBI or ATF informants, with even the SPLC having contact with Strassmeir while he was there). Or they could have met at gun shows, the largest in the nation being the Wanenmacher show, held by Tulsan Joe Wanenmacher, in Tulsa twice a year.

Because of his accumulation of guns and money, Mueller became a target for his “friends” who he thought could be trusted. But instead, his “friends” decided that Mueller would be an easy target for a robbery. On January 5th, 1996, the Mueller’s were preparing to attend a gun show in Springdale, or the huge Wanenmacher show in Tulsa, but never left their cabin. Neighbors became concerned and went to check on the family which they had not seen leave as expected. They noted that the Mueller’s animals were locked up and had not been fed.

Mueller had foretold this. In February 1995 Mueller, a Special Forces veteran and no pushover, reported that his home had been broken into and some $35,000 to $50,000 worth of silver bars, gun parts and ammunition had been taken. He later told friends that he thought he knew who the burglars were and that they would be back, and they would kill him. (The ammunition was later found in a room in a motel in Missouri that Terry Nichols had rented. It was traced by lot number, comparing it to the records that Mueller kept).

Meuller told a friend, George Eaton, a fellow “patriot” who lived in Union Town, Arkansas, across the border from Elohim City, that he thought he was the target of an assassination but was not home when the robbery occurred. He told Eaton this because he “had been having trouble with the ATF concerning the type of products the family was selling at gun shows.”

The “products” that the Mueller’s were selling at gun shows were more than just guns. Mueller was selling gun parts, ammunition, and anti-government video tapes, books and other literature, and passing out George Eaton’s “Patriot Report”—a home-generated anti-Clinton government and anti-UN newsletter.

Mueller told an Arkansas news reporter, Gene Wergis, that they had written a letter to their congressman detailing their feelings about the ATF’s harassment and told Wergis that the promoters of the gun shows ordered him to stop selling the literature and video tapes because the ATF had threatened the show promoters that it would “cause them problems.”

Mueller showed Wergis a spiral binder in which he kept his notes. He told Wergis that he was especially concerned about two men who had given him trouble at one show. He believed they were ATF agents. They were incensed at Mueller because of the literature he was selling, and the two names he had written down were…Andreas Strassmeir and Michael Brescia! This would be totally out of character for both Strassmeir and Brescia. They, or their “legend,” would be anti-government and to maintain this cover they would have bought literature from Mueller, not condemned it.

When neighbors called the authorities to check on the family, Mueller, his wife, and his daughter were not at their home. It was believed that they were killed there and their bodies moved to an unknown location, or that they were abducted and killed elsewhere. No one knew for sure. An investigation by neighbors reported that much of the Mueller’s property was missing.

On June 28, 1996, the bound and badly decomposed bodies of the Mueller’s were finally found by a fisherman in a swampy bayou in Pope County when he saw a leg floating on the water and called the county sheriff. One of the divers who helped recover the remains of the Mueller’s was Ron Stokes, one of my dive team divers when I ran the Mayes County, Oklahoma, Emergency Dive Recovery Team. He told me that “they were bound with duct tape and plastic bags were over their heads. It looked to me like they probably suffocated.”

One of my Arkansas sources sent me a copy of a letter written by George Eaton on his “Patriot News: A Christian Patriot Newsletter” letterhead to someone named “Bobby.” Bobby had evidently written George asking if he knew anything about the missing Mueller’s. Eaton’s typewritten letter said “I haven’t as much [information] as you have about the Muellers. I was never told by anyone on the mountain about their theory. The name you mention was the first time I’ve heard any names mentioned. Until I’m shown otherwise I still believe it was a professional hit squad. The theory about Strassmeir and Brescia is not possible. Brescia was in Penn[sylvania] at the time of their disappearance, and Strassmeir didn’t have a car and didn’t know where they lived. Strassmeir is a patriot the same as Bill. He had no motive to do him harm. The Mueller deaths is a complete mystery to me. Did they ever release the autopsies?”

Eaton later told a reporter from the *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* “I don’t think there was any involvement with the Oklahoma City bombing or the other robbery, but it’s a big coincidence that there were two big robberies like that in Arkansas.” Eaton said Mueller told him that at the last militia-oriented church service they attended in December of 1995 that Mueller said “he might be robbed.”

Mueller’s white Jeep Cherokee and trailer in which they carried precious metals and guns was found abandoned on a country road 17 miles north of Dover, Arkansas, in February. Their bodies were recovered 27 miles away from that location.

The actual murderers on the second Mueller robbery were not the original suspects. It took months, but in 1997 two men were charged with the murders: Chevie Kehoe of Colville, Washington, and Danny Lee of Yukon, Oklahoma. They would have gotten away with it but Chevie’s little brother, Cheyne Kehoe, broke the case.

Both had ties to the ARA, and to Elohim City, and therefore had knowledge of the Mueller’s and their possessions.

Cheyne Kehoe, then 22, said he and his brother were touring the South with their families, going to gun shows, when Chevie Kehoe told him about killing gun dealer William Mueller and his family.

“He said that Danny and him had decided to do a hit on the Mueller’s due to the fact that, for one thing, he thought that they were government informants, and he knew that they had a large amount of gold and silver stored at their house.” Asked by prosecutors about Chevie Kehoe’s attitude about the killings, Cheyne replied at the plea-bargained trial, “It was a braggart-type attitude, a macho attitude.”

Cheyne Kehoe said he continued traveling with his brother out of fear that he would be killed if he tried to leave him. They eventually camped in Ohio and were returning from a gun show in Cincinnati when their vehicle was pulled over by police on Feb. 15, 1997.

The Kehoes on that date engaged in two shootouts. One with an Ohio state trooper and a Clinton County sheriff’s deputy, and with two Wilmington police officers in the second. The first one was taped by video camera mounted in an Ohio State Highway Patrol cruiser. The shootout was televised nationally.

Cheyne Kehoe later told law enforcement that he was unaware of the Muellers’ deaths when he left on the trip with his brother shortly after Thanksgiving 1996. The brothers and their families went to Arizona, where Chevie Kehoe sold a gun that he said had belonged to the Muellers,

The Kehoe brothers in custody (US Marshal’s Service)

A short while later, while preparing for another gun show in Galveston, Texas, Chevie Kehoe told his brother how he and Lee had dressed in police gear, broke into the Muellers’ cabin and surprised the family. This version is questionable because Mueller, a former Green Beret who was a survivalist and well-armed would have been ready for such an eventuality. But whatever really happened that fateful day, Cheyne Kehoe would be the undoing. After the Ohio shootout, the Kehoes fled separately and met up in Utah, where Cheyne, fearing for his own life, and after seeing the video tape of the shootout on “America’s Most Wanted” turned himself in to authorities and revealed where his brother could be found.

Chevie Kehoe went to prison, receiving three life sentences without the possibility of parole, and Daniel Lewis Lee received the death sentence. Cheyne received 24 years in prison, but that was reduced in 2000 to 11 years due to evidence problems in Cheyne’s original trial. With credit for time served, Cheyne was released in 2008. Cheyne, along with his father, were arrested in Arizona in 2013 for possession of “a hoard of weapons,” which is a felony for both of them, having been convicted felons. On June 24th, 2014, Cheyne was sentenced to 3-4 years in prison. Daniel Lewis Lee, as of this writing, is on death row in the federal penitentiary in Terre Haute, Indiana.

Though there were several indicators that the ARA was involved on the edges of the Oklahoma City bombing, and even that Michael Brescia may have been with Dennis Mahon in Oklahoma City that day, it was obvious that they were not the main players, or the reason the Murrah Building was bombed. Even though Carol Howe and Mahon had cased the building when they stayed at Elohim City, and even though Chevie Kehoe bragged about having a hand in helping McVeigh, the most that I could find that linked them directly to the bombing beside the above items was the 33 guns found at Nichols' house. these were identified as coming from the Roger Moore robbery. Selling those guns would have raised some cash when needed. But they were not sold prior to the bombing, which leads me to believe Nichols was hoarding them for his own gain at a later date if needed.

Knowing all of this, I came to the conclusion that a lot of time and effort was being directed toward the bank robbers instead of following the Middle Eastern and Mexican cartel leads. For some reason J.D. Cash was adamant about the bank robbers being the thrust of the investigation to the exclusion of other leads.

I found it surprising when I was told by Hoffman that Cash had moved in with Glenn Wilburn and his wife Kathy "to help them investigate the bombing." Glenn and Cathy were the grandparents of two of the children killed in the Day Car Center in the Murrah Building. They were convinced that the government had advance knowledge of the bombing, and Cash had promised to help them. When they hired Tulsa attorney Larry Oliver, on the recommendation of Cash, who had taken law school classes under Oliver at Tulsa University, Cash was more than happy to be Oliver's investigator.

The day I had my meeting with Oliver in his office, and Cash was there, I made it a point to pin Cash down in front of Oliver and ask him "Okay, J.D., but what about the Middle Eastern connection?"

He turned red, hem-hawed a bit, then nervously said "that's not going anywhere. I'm following hard leads and that's where the case is going."

If Cash thought the bank robber trail was "hard leads," and that the Middle Eastern connection was not, I knew that something else was going on. Cash said "I've got some phone calls to make," and left the hallway where he had been standing outside the office door. I turned to Larry and said "Where did he come from?"

"He's a friend of the Wilburns' and they hired me on his recommendation."

"Larry," I said, "don't trust him. I have a bad feeling about him. In fact, I've got some feelers out on him so let's see where that's going."

Who was J.D. Cash? That was the big question running through my mind. My gut told me that he was a plant because he refused to listen to, or look into, any of the leads other than those he was writing about in his articles in the McCurtain newspaper. To me, he was trying to direct the thrust of the investigation—at least in the minds of the public—away from our other efforts.

When you follow leads, you follow them until the trail ends. Sometimes they work out, sometimes they don't. *But you follow them!*

I called Dave Hoffman and voiced my concerns. Dave said “I know what you mean. It’s like J.D. wants us to drop looking in any direction other than his bank robber stuff. I personally don’t think the bank robber gang had a lot to do with the bombing, but I think there are enough ties to check it out and put it to bed one way or another.”

I agreed to use my resources to see what I could find out about Cash, and Dave said he’d do the same.

I retired from the Tulsa Police Department on the last day of March, 1996, with over 26 years, 7 months service. My active duty war-time military service add-on put me well over 30 years, and 30 years was the maximum we could draw in retirement pay. By retiring I knew I would have more time to devote to the investigation. As it was I was still receiving numerous leads and clues. I spent the following months running down leads, writing memos to others on the team (and myself for record), and traveling.

Unfortunately, in May of 1997, when I was doing some research for a talk radio show, I felt a stabbing pain in my right abdomen. It quit momentarily, then hit me again a few minutes later. This was on a Friday, and the pain came and went all day and all night, finally subsiding around 3:00 a.m.

I managed to make it through the weekend, but had grown very weak, and when I climbed the stairs to my office, I ran out of breath and had to rest on a landing. I decided to see my doctor on Monday. After I arrived at his office he had me go to the lab and do blood work. The results came back that my “C” count was high. I didn’t know what that meant, but the doctor told me to go immediately to St. Francis hospital in Tulsa, and they’d be waiting for me. The doc said “you need a transfusion!”

I still didn’t know exactly what was going on, but I had a good idea when they put me in a wheel chair at the ER and took me up to the Cancer floor. Within minutes I had an IV in my arm and a unit of blood hanging over me in bed. I didn’t realize it at the time but I was hemorrhaging internally.

By nightfall I was diagnosed with a Stage II tumor in the right side of my colon. They would operate Wednesday.

The operation went well. I lost the right side of my colon and my appendix (two-for-one!). It would be four months of trying to work on the case, take chemotherapy, and handle other writing projects, but the chemo was killing me, literally. In August of 1997 I was rushed to the hospital by ambulance after collapsing at home and not having the strength to get up. I flat-lined that night at the hospital due to internal bleeding because of a massive internal infection. The chemo had killed my immune system, allowing the infection to set in. The doctor later told me that I was “gone” for three minutes, but when they began to pronounce me dead, the monitor began to show a heart beat. When I got out of ICU a week later, and after 30 days of physical therapy at home and not undergoing any more chemo, I decided to stop chemotherapy and put my trust in God and natural healing. After a month of slowing growing stronger, I had to tell the oncologist in Tulsa that I would no longer take his chemo. When I told him that he looked at me—his face turning almost demonic—and said “if you stop my chemo you’ll be dead in six months and no one can stop it!”

I said something to the effect that I’d be around to water his grave, and walked out.

That was twenty years ago from this writing, and I'm cancer free. It just goes to show that my grandfather, a Primitive Baptist preacher in East Tennessee, was right when he told me just before I was going to ship out for the Western Pacific in 1965 with my Marine battalion that I'd be all right, one way or the other.

"If the Good Lord calls you home no one can stop it," he said. "And if He don't, no one can rush it." When he was not preaching, he was a man of few words.

It was during this time that David Hoffman and others from Oklahoma City called to tell me that Glenn Wilburn had died of pancreatic cancer on July 15th, three weeks before my near-fatal stay in the St. Francis ICU in August. I knew he had been battling the disease, but had hoped for the best for him and Kathy. I knew exactly what they were going through.

After I got out of the hospital and was confined to my home during physical therapy I found out that J.D. Cash was still living at the Wilburn house. Was he still trying to help Kathy Wilburn and Edye Smith, or was he up to something else? I just hoped that Cash was on the straight and narrow.

As some of our probes into Cash began to show "items of interest," we began to find out more and more about the small-town reporter. Hoffman called me one day and asked "Have you heard anything about Dennis Mahon visiting Cash at this cabin in Idabel?"

"No, I hadn't heard that. How did you find out about it?"

"Cash told me that Dennis Mahon had visited him allegedly for an interview. He said they sat around drinking whiskey, and that he, Cash, was trying to pry information out of Mahon about Elohim City, Strassmeir and McVeigh."

"Did he get anything?" I asked. I had tried to pin Mahon down in the past and he was always very elusive in his answers.

"I don't know. Cash wouldn't say. But I just can't help but wonder if he did find out anything we don't already know."

"Well," I said. "If he did, he won't tell us, but I'm sure we can read about it in his newspaper articles."

Dave and I and a few others started to wonder if Cash was really trying to work the case or was doing what he could to divert the investigation away from other areas. He was never part of our team, and none of us trusted him. We weren't too surprised when information began coming in.

We had asked various sources if anyone had anything on a John David Cash III. We wanted to know where he came from, what he did in the past, who he's worked for, and most important, why was he on this case?

I had information that Cash had once lived in Tulsa, and that he claimed to have been a banker. One good source of basic information can be found in the records of a County Courthouse.

I went to the Tulsa County courthouse and began pulling records on all I could find on John David Cash III. What I discovered was that he had been married to one Mary Jean

Little on August 8, 1984, but the marriage ended in divorce in November 1990. Between those dates Little filed an emergency protective order against him on October 28, 1988, and a final protective order on November 3, 1988, but it was dismissed when Little failed to appear at the second protective order hearing.

When the divorce was filed, according to the petition, Cash worked for Metro Title Company in Tulsa, and owned or was invested in two condominiums in Tulsa, five houses in Tulsa, one house in Sapulpa (just west of Tulsa), one house in Broken Arrow (just southeast of Tulsa), three houses in Muskogee (50 miles southeast of Tulsa), and four lake lots in Eufala, a lake town about 75 miles south of Tulsa. The question was how did Cash manage to come up with the money to buy all of these properties? To me, there had to be money coming in from somewhere else at the time.

One paragraph stuck out in the divorce decree. Paragraph 7 said "Plaintiff (Little) further alleges that she fears the Defendant may attempt to return to the above described residence to harm, harass, embarrass or molest her and that she will thereby be caused to suffer physical and mental anguish and emotional distress by reasons thereof; and that the Court should enter an order commanding the Defendant immediately and forthwith to remain away from said residence during the pendency of this action; that the Defendant should be restrained and enjoined by order of this court from any manner, either by actions or words, interfering with the Plaintiff at any place she may be."

It was apparent that Mrs. Cash had been abused physically by J.D. to the extent that she had to file two protective orders and then have the above language in the divorce petition.

And now he was living with Kathy Wilburn.

I began to dig further. The next place to look was McCurtain County courthouse where Cash currently lived when he wasn't at the Wilburn residence. I'm sure he had to travel back and forth to Oklahoma City to retrieve his mail and pay his bills. The trip would be approximately 350 miles, a four hour drive from Oklahoma City.

In the McCurtain County Court House I found a General Warranty Deed dated August 22, 1991showing that Cash's father, John D. Cash, Jr., had bought property from Jesse and Ina Bunch. J.D. built a cabin on the property (or his father did—depending on the version told) and Cash used this cabin as his "official" residence, and was using a mail drop in Yukon, just west of Oklahoma City. I later discovered that Cash's father was deceased.

The property J.D.s father bought consisted of two acres of rural property, and the nearest town that had a post office, and to where Cash changed his mailing address, was Battiest, Oklahoma, an unincorporated community of about 250 persons. But when anyone asked where exactly Cash lived in McCurtain County, Cash said "Powder Ridge." The question to me is why J.D. would have such a remote place after having so many properties elsewhere, if indeed he still owned them.

I gave Hoffman what I had and he did some more checking. He faxed me this:

"Inquiry at the U.S. Post Office in Idabell disclosed that there is no known town in McCurtain County identifiable as Powder Ridge, Oklahoma. The postmaster at Battiest advised that there is no community or town named Powder Ridge. The Idabel postmaster said further that Cash used his (Idabel) post office for much of his mail because no one knew how to pronounce "Battiest."

Either Cash wanted to retain the family property and have a "safehouse" no one could find, or maybe he wanted to keep it as a good place to use to convince others he was a right wing separatist or survivalist. Either way, he picked a place that "you'd have to know how to get there to find it."

As David Hoffman and I, along with others on the Team worked on Cash, more and more came to light. We discovered that he had told people that he was a member of the Council on Foreign Relations, the globalist group of high ranking businessmen and politicians headquartered in New York. I checked two decades of CFR rosters and found no "John D. Cash."

One of Hoffman's contacts was Leslie Jorgensen, a freelance writer in Colorado who was also following the Oklahoma City case. In one email from Jorgensen in January 1997 concerning Cash, she wrote that when she was interviewing Cash about his stories in the *Gazette* she said: "I should mention that Cash was reading *The Silent Brotherhood* (a book about the Aryan Nation, KKK, and militias) and was reading passages to me over the phone. He suggested I buy it. I had read it already. I thought it was odd that he was educating himself on The Order and seeing a blueprint that tied the white supremacist movement into the case. It fed my belief that this was a cliche conspiracy he was outlining."

On another occasion Cash told Jorgensen when she was working on an article for *Newsweek* that he was an attorney that worked for HUD in the mid-1980s, and also an AP reporter, and that he sold properties in Tulsa with Tulsa attorney Larry Oliver, who had handled some of Cash's real estate deals. He said he at one time had a private plane, and had a townhouse in Florida. He used the plane to ferry people to Mexico and the Bahamas.

When Jorgensen traveled to Oklahoma to interview Cash in person, she said, according to the fax Hoffman sent me, that Cash and Jorgensen got into some kind of disagreement and that Cash threatened her. "He was Livid," said Jorgensen in the fax. "He drove me to my hotel and talked about gouging a guy's eye out with a broken bottle and said 'I've been known to use a gun.' He constantly tried to ascertain my Jewish status…I thought he was going to push me out of the Jeep."

He then told Jorgensen, who mentioned Cash taking her to Elohim City, "I'm not taking some Kike to Elohim City. Jews are OK to talk to, but you don't want to mate with them." (Jorgensen's husband is Jewish). Cash had told Jorgensen about "draping his Jeep with Nazi flags." "He's anti-Semitic," said Jorgensen. "He's a big Nazi collector."

But was he really? Or was that a front to aid him into getting into the neo-Nazi and skinhead movements? Such an outward appearance would ingratiate him with likes of Mahon and the Aryan Nation, not to mention the White Aryan Resistance, Mahon's good friend Tom Metzger's organization. Jorgensen summed it up with "I think Cash is an alcoholic and has a schizophrenic mentality."

The same email I received from Hoffman cleared up how Larry Oliver got into the case. "Cash convinced Wilburn to hire his (Cash's) former law professor from Tulsa

University, Larry Oliver, to represent the Wilburn's in their law suit against the government and McVeigh."

David ended the email with "Cash threatened Pat Briley (one of our Oklahoma City investigators) with a death threat, hung up on me when I asked about Gary Hunt (suspected CIA asset), and hung up on Gene Wheaton when Wheaton asked for his resume."

In another email dated May 22nd, 1997, Hoffman had asked one of his Israeli intelligence contacts about Cash and if they had anything on him. The contact got back to David and said "Cash worked for the FBI and CIA as a stringer in the early 1980s. He helped a doctor named Osher form a limited partnership for a clinic, which opened ancillary branches in Guatemala and Nicaragua at the behest of the Iran/Contra gang. The purpose was a cover for running drugs. The asset said Cash was a money launderer. His nickname was 'J.C. Cash Dollars.' He knew Barry Seal, Larry Nichols and others."

Hoffman went so far as sending a list of eleven pointed questions to Cash. He asked Cash if he owned an airplane, and did he fly to Mexico and the Bahamas? How did he get involved in the investigation,? What his opinion was of the Middle Eastern connection? And if he worked for the FBI.

Cash never responded. Maybe David should also have asked if Cash worked for the CIA.

These revelations were beginning to form a very disturbing picture. The pieces of the puzzle on the wall started to possibly make more sense. I could now see where Cash might fit into the whole Iran/Contra and drug cartel/money laundering scene, not to mention spending so much time in Eastern Oklahoma not far from Mena. Was Cash's investigation actually more than a diversion, and more like damage control? The whole Cash scenario to me became more suspicious as I found out more.

On February 25th, 1997 David faxed me a copy of a letter he had received from one of his Israeli contacts, Juval Aviv (who was one of the Pan Am 103 investigators after the plane blew up over Lockerbie, Scotland). Aviv ran an international investigative organization from his office on Madison Avenue, in New York City. Dated February 21st, the letter said:

INTERFOR, INC.

Dear David:

I am following with great interest the Oklahoma City bombing case and it seems that you are on target in your predictions since we began talking on this subject.

You are right that there is a lot of similarity between the Pan Am case and the Oklahoma case. One of the important links is the FBI lab. You asked me to look into J.D. Cash. First, I must say that I had never heard of him, but once I started checking around, the few people who had come across him suggested that he was bad news, and a "government asset." His job is to get friendly and close to investigative reporters to try and find out what they're working on so that the government can quickly counter the reports or stop them from being printed at all. Best wishes, Juval Aviv, CEO

Mr Aviv reinforced my opinion of Cash, and he also mentioned the FBI Lab. The FBI lab, during the Pan Am 103 investigation, was caught falsifying evidence and helping to build a case that diverted the investigation away from the actual perpetrators. A huge shakeup caused the lab's explosives expert at the time, Tom Thurman, to resign. We had little faith in the FBI lab coming to any proper conclusions on the evidence from the Oklahoma City case, especially when it came to the explosive residue.

J.D. Cash was subpoenaed to testify before the Grand Jury for which Charles Key and the Oklahoma City Bombing Committee had petitioned, and appeared on January 14th, 1998. The article in the *Daily Oklahoman* said that "A free-lance reporter who has written several articles about conspiracy theories in the Oklahoma City bombing spent more than six hours Wednesday testifying before an Oklahoma County grand jury…Cash, who has written stories for the *McCurtain Daily Gazette* and other publications, has said he wasn't asked to bring notes or tapes of his sources before the grand jury. Had the material been subpoenaed, Cash said, he would have sought to have the subpoena quashed."

Cash did not discuss what he had been asked or testified to. But the Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee said that "the testimony of these witnesses opens up new questions about who in the government knew there was a threat to the federal buildings before the Murrah Building bombing."

What we discovered about J.D. Cash was not good, and my old street sense had proven to be correct once again. Cash, in my and Hoffman's opinion, backed up by others, had a mission, and that mission was to derail the investigation and side track it to chasing rabbit trails away from the main perpetrators. To me, the question was why he would do that, and the answer was that whoever he was really working for had given him his mission.

But he didn't reckon on gunslingers like me and Hoffman, and to a certain extent Bill Jasper at *The New American*, and Leslie Jorgensen, and Pat Briley to be in the picture.

To me and to Hoffman, Cash was a plant and an asset of someone. The question was "who?"

I was reminded of what William Colby, former director of the CIA said:

"The Central Intelligence Agency owns everyone of any significance in the major media." -

CHAPTER 15

Death in Federal Custody—The Trentadue Case and OKBOMB

"There's a lot of things that happened in this case that are very, very troubling. There's a very strong possibility of a homicide."

Senator Don Nichols, December 1st, 1995

Very early in the morning of August 21st, 1995, prison guards at the U.S. Bureau of Prisons Federal Transfer Center in Oklahoma City reported finding one of the temporary inmates hanging in his cell, an apparent suicide—in a "suicide proof" cell.

The inmate was Kenneth Michael Trentadue, a 44-year-old prisoner who was being held for a parole violation after being arrested in California. Prisoners being held in the Federal Transfer Center (FTC), located on Will Rogers World Airport in Oklahoma City are only there for a few days before being flown to the Bureau of Prisons facility where they would serve their time. But Trentadue's next stop would not be a federal prison.

It was approximately 3:00 a.m. when, according the prison records, a guard passing Trentadue's cell said he saw Trentadue in the cell hanging by a bed sheet from the vent above the sink. The guard, according to the Department of Justice Office of the Inspector General Report, "immediately called on his radio for help, but the radio malfunctioned. The other SHU (Special Housing Unit) officer conducting the (head) count called on his radio that an inmate was hanging. A Third SHU officer immediately came to the cell."

According to the OIG report, "these officers did not enter the cell and bring Trentadue down. The first SHU officer said the said that when he reached the cell, he was about to open the cell door but he was told by another officer that the FTC lieutenant on duty had called and instructed them to wait for him before entering the cell. The lieutenant and the other officers did not remember this instruction. The Lieutenant said that when he was in the FTC's Control Room, monitoring operations throughout the FTC, he heard a radio transmission that an inmate was hanging in the SHU. He told Control Room staff to notify FTC executive staff and then went directly to Trentadue's cell. While on his way to the cell, the Lieutenant radioed to SHU staff to get a video camera. The lieutenant said that when he arrived at the cell, several correctional officers were standing outside the cell door. He said he then radioed for a FTC physician assistant to come to the cell. The lieutenant said that at that time he looked through the cell door window and observed Trentadue hanging, with his head slumped down, his hands at his side, with no movement at all. The lieutenant said he believed that Trentadue was dead and therefore decided to document the scene with the video camera before entering the cell."

No one attempted to cut Trentadue down and ascertain if he was actually dead, or attempted to do CPR or any life saving measure. According to the guards they instead decided to wait until a video camera could be found and used to record the scene.

According to the OIG report "A video camera was located and brought to Trentadue's cell. As a correctional officer began filming the scene, the Lieutenant introduced himself on camera and gave a brief description of the situation, stating that they had an inmate hanging in the cell. After this introduction, which we were told took anywhere from twenty seconds to two minutes, the officers unlocked the cell door.'

A physician's assistant, not a doctor, arrived, entered the cell, checked Trentadue's pulse and said he detected nothing. Then using a stethoscope, he declared Trentadue dead. Trentadue was then, according to the OIG report, cut down and placed on a gurney.

Trentadue's body was taken to the FTC infirmary where EMSA—the Emergency Management Services Authority (ambulance) was called. When the paramedics arrived at 3:32 a.m., one of the paramedics spoke with the PA, who said that Trentadue was dead and there was no reason for the paramedics to stay. The PA mentioned to the paramedics that Trentadue had hung himself and that *he had lacerations on his neck*. The paramedic asked if the PA had pronounced he victim dead, and the PA responded "yes." The paramedics, no longer needed to transport a victim to a hospital, left the FTC.

The Associate Warden arrived at the FTC at approximately 4:00 a.m., and upon arrival requested that EMSA return to the FTC. When the paramedics arrived the second time the Associate Warden asked them to examine Trentadue's body and pronounce him dead. The paramedic later stated that Trentadue's skin was gray and he was not breathing. He also said that Trentadue's head was bloody, with trauma to his forehead. The PA used a heart monitor to pronounce him dead according to the OIG report. The problem here is that only a doctor can pronounce someone dead. A paramedic can have a "professional opinion" that someone is clinically dead, and note the time. But a qualified physician has to pronounce death in Oklahoma.

EMSA did not take the body, so the FTC staff called the Medical Examiner's Office (MEO) in Oklahoma City, headed by Dr. Fred Jordan. An MEO investigator arrived at the scene and examined Trentadue's body in the infirmary. According to her opinion, " she had never seen a hanging accompanied by a cut neck and head trauma," and she became concerned about the cause of Trentadue's death. She did not elaborate in her report about the amount of head trauma she saw, or any other damage to the body at that time.

She asked questions about how the victim was found and then viewed the cell through the cell door window, but did not enter the cell. She then left the FTC with Trentadue's body to return to the Medical Examiner's office.

The Federal Transfer Center in Oklahoma City was constructed in 1989-1994. It is located on the West side of Will Rogers World Airport on land owned by the Oklahoma City Airport Trust Authority and leased to the Federal Government. It holds 1700 transient prisoners, with an influx and outflow of about 300 prisoners daily. It is constructed so passenger planes from "Con Air) can taxi up to a fully enclosed ramp to enter the facility, and board outbound airplanes the same way. The facility was almost new when the tragedy occurred one year after opening. But the guard staff consisted of some new personnel, and several "seasoned" guards transferred in from other prisons. From what Dr. Jordan, the Medical Examiner could see, it would appear that some of the "experienced"guards might have had a hand in what he discovered when he examined the body. An article from *Western Journalism,* an online news magazine, would describe what happened:

"Medical Examiner Fred B. Jordan who examined the battered body of Kenneth Trentadue, while his assistants filed in and out to vomit, being sickened by the condition of the body. There were two dozen wounds to the body, including three skull fractures, *his throat cut ear to ear,* a broken hyoid bone (indicating strangulation, not hanging), fingertip wounds on his biceps (that is, *from being held down*), *bruising on the anal verge (from being repeatedly kicked with hard-soled shoes)*, and others."

Though not a qualified medical examiner, as a career police officer I had seen situations where such damage was exhibited on people, living and dead. This, to me, was an obvious beating. A simple hanging would not explain the damage done, even to the most inept observer. I would find, the more I looked into this case, that there would be more than just the physical damage to the body that would show that Trentadue had been murdered in federal custody.

For one thing, I found it very disturbing that when Acting Warden Marie Carter telephoned Trentadue's mother, whom he had listed as next-of-kin, she said that she was ordering Trentadue's body to be cremated "at no cost to the family." She did not ask his mother what her wishes were, but instead almost demanded that the body be cremated. But Trentadue's mother, and to the lasting chagrin of the federal government, his brother Jesse, insisted that the body instead be sent to them for disposition. This would prove to be the beginning of the exposure of a coverup of massive proportions involving government officials at the highest levels.

Jesse Trentadue was more than just a relative of the deceased. He was and is a very experienced attorney in Salt Lake City, Utah, and just as important, a Marine like me. And when we Marines get on a mission, we don't stop until the mission is completed.

When Jesse saw his brother's body and the damage that was done, he know immediately that Kenneth had been beaten, tortured and strangled to death in federal custody, and that the prison and its personnel were responsible. He also knew that he would investigate this case himself, and with the aid of others who would seek justice, get to the bottom of it. And he would try to answer the question of "why" his brother was targeted for torture, and ultimately, death.

As Jesse dug into the case, pursuing leads and filing FOIA law suits with the DoJ and FBI, one of the things that he felt he had discovered was that Kenneth's death may have connections to the Oklahoma City bombing case. The more he found out about the OKC bombing, and then the FBI's interest in the Midwest Bank Robbers, and the fact that his brother, who had done time for bank robbery in the past, looked like John Doe #2, or like Richard Lee Guthrie, one of the ARA robbers, the more he began to see a possible connection to the Oklahoma City bombing case. With that being the case, was there a tie-in to what the killers of Kenneth had in mind just four months after the Murrah Building was bombed?

The more Jesse and some of his colleagues and friends looked at it, the more it looked as if there might be a connection. What they needed to do was contact some of the people who were involved with the bombing investigation and compare notes. I was one of those contacted.

Jesse also contacted, or was contacted by, a former U.S. congressman from Utah, George Hansen, who ran an organization called U.S. Citizens Human Rights Commission, headquartered in Salt Lake City. Rep. Hansen became very involved in digging into the case, and eventually contacted me. I shared everything I had about which they asked about and the more they told me about the Trentadue case, the more I was sure it was a huge coverup of what was probably an interrogation that went wrong. And whatever happened that fateful night, it had to have happened in less than 30 minutes.

When I found out about the damage to the body, including bruises on the bottom of the feet and the condition of the cell before it was cleaned by prison trustees, it was obvious that Mr. Trentadue had a case. But, would he be able to get more action on his case than we had been able to get on the Murrah bombing case? Considering who was in office then, and the problems we faced with the lies and coverups of federal agencies in the bombing case, I doubted that anything would happen that would bring the perpetrators to justice. But we had to try.

Over the next 24 months Jesse Trentadue and George Hansen gathered more and more information in their investigations. Rep. Hansen knew Oklahoma County District Attorney Bob Macy from, as Hansen wrote in one letter, from their "Washington days." Hansen contacted Macy by phone and letters over a lengthy period attempting to get Macy to bring the Trentadue case to the Oklahoma grand jury that was impaneled at the time. There would be some action on this, but not enough to make a difference.

What is alarming is the information that Hansen provided to Macy in one letter dated July 23, 1997 of which Jesse faxed me a copy:

"In a deposition taken by Jesse Trentadue from Jordan, the Medical Examiner stated unequivocally that many of the injuries his brother sustained could not have been self-inflicted. In an amended autopsy report, Jordan outlined numerous injuries to Kenneth Trentadue's body, including three head wounds and a partially severed throat. Numerous abrasions, contusions and other signs of blunt trauma are observable on both sides of Kenneth Trentadue's body."

Kenneth Trentadue, by the appearance of his body, put up a huge fight in defense of himself. He was a very strong man and in good physical condition. It would take several men to hold him down for him to have sustained such a beating. And as the investigation by Jesse and George continued, the case grew in size and scope and made its way to Washington. Senator Orrin Hatch, Chairman of the Senate Judiciary Committee, chastised Attorney General Janet Reno about the Bureau of Prison's handling of the investigation into Trentadue's death, and stated that "it's apparent to me that not only are these facts suspicious, but it looks as though somebody in the Bureau of Prisons, or having relationships with the Bureau of Prisons, murdered the man."

Jesse Trentadue and Hansen, in due course also found out that as soon as Kenneth's body had been removed from the cell, trustees were ordered to clean the cell and make is "spotless." The reason, according to the Acting Warden, was that she told trustees that Kenneth Trentadue had HIV and they didn't want anyone getting infected. That was not true and there is no record of trustees or guards being tested afterwards for HIV. The actual fact is that, according to one of the trustees, the cell had blood on the floor, the ceiling, and the walls! When questioned about this, the excuse was that Kenneth had basically "gone mental" and tried to beat himself to death by banging his head against the walls, then slashing his throat and wrists with a toothpaste tube. Then, when all that failed, he tore up a bed sheet, secured it to an air conditioning vent, and hung himself.

One of Hansen's letters to Macy went into detail:

"The chief medical examiner for the State of Oklahoma—who along with the brother of inmate Kenneth Michael Trentadue, claim federal authorities have continually hampered their efforts to investigate the circumstances surrounding his death—alleged last week that he was threatened with physical violence by two guards at the federal correctional facility while conducting an investigation of the holding cell where inmate Kenneth Michael Trentadue died almost two years ago. He told the *Oklahoma Eagle* he was denied access to the holding cell where Trentadue was found for five months after the man's death which occurred August 21, 1995. When he finally gained access to the cell and was conducting tests, Jordan said a Federal Transfer Center guard walked by and said 'You can stick it up your fucking ass.' Moments later another prison guard walked by the cell and said 'You may find some evidence in there, but you'll never leave here with it.' Jordan said there was no doubt in his mind he was being threatened."

The tests that Dr. Jordan was conducting scared the prison officials because they thought that the cell would hold no evidence after being cleaned, and after that much time had passed. Instead, they found that there are chemical substances that can be used to show blood stains and blood spatter long after an event has occurred. Known as "Luminol" the chemical agent can be sprayed around a crime scene, and under black light, show the presence of blood stains. According to the Minnesota Bureau of Criminal Apprehension, "The search for the presence of blood at a crime scene is normally done by close visual examination. The possibility exists, however, that blood may be present in amounts too little to see with the unaided eye, or that the blood at the scene had been "cleaned up" prior to arrival of the crime scene team. Scientists can take advantage of the Luminol reaction to locate potential blood evidence that would be undetectable through visual examination."

When Dr. Jordan sprayed Trentadue's cell, he said "it lighted up like a Christmas tree!"

In George Hansen's July 22nd letter to Macy, he went on to say "Informed sources close to the investigation have told us that inmate Steven Cole has signed sworn affidavits that when he entered Kenneth Trentadue's cell it resembled a 'blood bath.' Cole told federal investigators blood was splattered all over the walls and at one location in the cell, there was blood in such large amounts, he was forced to use a mop to clean it. In the affidavits, Cole also stated that the sheets on Kenneth Trentadue's bed were folded and undisturbed. He added that the bed had not been disturbed. He also pointed out there was no blood on the light fixture and air vent—the location the BOP officials said the inmate hanged himself—only thick dust."

When we analyze the statements of Cole, what comes to light is that no bed sheet or anything else was tied to the air vent as described by the prison guards. It would have been too much trouble to hold the dead body up to tie it to the vent, and it was obvious Trentadue didn't do that to himself, so that part of the story was made up and the only witnesses were those involved in the coverup. Further, in Hansen's letter: "Cole said he approached investigators with this revealing information because he believed he was being used to cover up Kenneth Trentadue's murder."

In a deposition taken by Jesse Trentadue from Dr. Jordan, the medical examiner stated unequivocally that many of the injuries his brother sustained could not have been self-inflicted. Asked if Trentadue's death resembled any other suicides he had investigated, Jordan stated "not any suicide I have ever witnessed."

Jesse Trentadue obtained the services of Oklahoma City attorney Scott Adams. Adams obtained sworn affidavits from nine inmates at the El Reno penitentiary and the Federal Transfer Center describing in detail being beaten and tortured by guards at those institutions. In fact, in 1993, six federal marshals from the El Reno penitentiary were indicted by a grand jury and pleaded guilty to charges they beat and kicked an inmate while he was in leg irons and handcuffed. one of the marshals received a one-year prison sentence for attempting to prevent another marshal involved in the beating from talking to the FBI.

Hansen's letter also exposed even more damning information:

"Jesse Trentadue said he was contacted by an inmate in a Pennsylvania prison who was, at the time, in the cell next to his brother's at the time of this death. The inmate, who said he read about Kenneth Trentadue's death, informed Jesse Trentadue that he observed *eight guards wearing black uniforms and complete riot gear enter Kenneth's cell* and heard the screams of an inmate pleading for mercy from an obvious assault. The inmate said he observed the guards dragging a bloodied inmate on the floor shortly after he heard what he described as a man being severely beaten."

It turned out there were witnesses, some that were not intimidated enough to keep their mouths shut. More from *Western Journalism*:

"An inmate at the time of Trentadue's murder, Alden Gillis Baker, would state that he heard Trentadue being beaten and tortured to death and named the perpetrators as prison guards Robert A. Garza and Wiley Creasey. He later asked for protection from the Government. That same Government found his claims of murder baseless, along with his call for protection. Conveniently, Baker would follow the same fate as Trentadue: *he hung himself*. This would be the second suspicious death. The third suspicious death was forensic audio-video expert Norman I. Pearle, who would state that the video recording of Trentadue's body and cell taken by Roger T. Groover (a guard at the prison) did not, as reported, "malfunction," but had been erased. Pearle would escape being hung and instead quietly die of a "heart attack." Conveniently, for the Government, the audio-video forensic expert next in line had a contrary opinion of the blank videotape.

"For almost three years, Medical Examiner Fred B. Jordan would fight an almost single-handed battle to find the truth, contacting the Bureau of Prisons, the FBI, and finally the Department of Justice, working his way up to Deputy Attorney General (later Acting Attorney General) *Eric Holder."*

This is the same Eric Holder who Barrack Obama appointed U.S. Attorney General, and who covered up Operation Fast and Furious, the ATF alleged sting operation that actually provided thousands of guns to Mexican drug gangs in Mexico!

Jordan was told Holder wasn't available.

“What was found out later was that Eric Holder was indeed available, but not to Jordan. Holder would become the “point man” in the cover-up. He would orchestrate what the media would be told and would stave off a congressional investigation. As Jessie Trentadue, Kenneth’s older brother, would state in a letter to Congress in December of 2008 while Holder was going through confirmation hearings as Obama’s choice as Attorney General, Holder was not only the DOJ ‘point man.’ He also had developed a ‘roll out plan,’ beginning with lying to the court in order to file gag orders to keep the case out of the media so that the DOJ had time to develop a strategy to quash both the grand jury and the Trentadue family’s wrongful death lawsuit proceedings.”

Jesse Trentadue and George Hansen would eventually discover some of the names of those involved in the “black uniformed SWAT team” that entered Kenneth’s cell. The prison staff knew all along who, by name, those officers were as there is always a roster of who has the reaction or riot team assignments and who was on duty that night.

Another official document or Declaration was obtained that was given by one Nick Arcabasso, a federal prisoner who was in “the Hole,” which is slang for the solitary confinement cells in the Special Housing Unit, that he was there 30 days as an orderly. He stated “I had several opportunities to witness the guards in the Special Housing Unit abusing inmates. It was common to see the Special housing Unit guards spit in inmates food, beat handcuffed prisoners, as well as destroy inmates personal property and mail.”

Arcabasso stated that one particular officer in the SHU, Rodney De Champlain, was missing for several days during the FBI investigation, and when they were gone De Champlain returned to duty. Arcabasso said “De Champlain told me (after he had heard I had conversations with a black inmate about Trentadue) that he was aware of my conversations, and if he ever heard his name come out of my mouth again, that I would be ‘a dead mother’…he told me that he could make things real hard for me…and that if I couldn’t keep my mouth shut ‘I will kill your sorry ass just like I killed Trentadue.’ For several days after that incident, whenever I would see De Champlain, he would look at me then drag his fingers across his throat in a cutting motion.”

In May of 1997, Arcabasso was brought back to Oklahoma City to testify before the Federal Grand Jury that was investigating the case. While there he noticed an inmate spending a lot of time speaking with the guards. The inmate asked Arcabasso if he was going to get time off for testifying about the Trentadue case, and Arcabasso said “no, it doesn’t work that way.” Arcabasso, probably fearing for his life, told the inmate, who he knew would tell the guards, “I’m planning to lie.”

On August 11, 1997, Mr. Hansen wrote a letter to Larry W. Andrews, Chief of Staff for the Oklahoma County District Attorney’s Office concerning the case and the Oklahoma City bombing, which more and more seemed to tie together in regards to why Kenneth Trentadue was beaten. It was the day that Rep. Charles Key’s Oklahoma County Grand Jury convened to investigate the bombing had re-convened after a recess. In the letter he mentioned General Ben Partin, USAF, Retired, who was an Air Force explosives expert that had requested to testify to the Grand Jury. He then mentioned my friend and former US Army CID investigator Gene Wheaton, and following that he mentioned me.

In the letter Mr. Hansen says “General Partin…is looking forward to providing early technically useful testimony to assist the Grand Jury in its deliberations. General Partin also provided Mr. Macy with the name of Gene Wheaton, long-time experienced criminal investigator with a strong Oklahoma background and inside knowledge of the bombing situation, as a potentially useful witness. I provided Mr. Macy with Wheaton's new phone number during our later conversation. An associate of Mr. Wheaton's, a recently retired long-time Master Officer on the Tulsa Police force who worked closely with the FBI through the initial stages of the Bombing Investigation, has a 30-page technical and professional report on the bombing he would like to present and discuss with the Grand Jury. His name is Craig Roberts and I believe he can be very useful. He's having a bout with cancer at the moment and undergoing chemotherapy, but feels that he can appear with no difficulty with some accommodation of schedule. I hope you share this letter with Mr. Morgan (First Assistant District Attorney) on these Grand Jury matters."

I was never called.

Even though the letter of that date went on to state that Jesse Trentadue and George Hansen had witnesses and testimony, and could identify twelve killers, nothing more came out of it. And worse, Dr. Jordan, in July of 1998, changed his mind and "ruled the manner of death of Kenneth Trentadue was a suicide." Someone had gotten to him, and some of our sources reported that it was "investigators" from the Oklahoma County District Attorney's office—Macy's boys.

But for Jesse Trentadue, such a change in Jordan's findings was ridiculous. In an article in the *Tulsa World* newspaper dated July 11th, 1998, Trentadue said "When I got him home, his head was split open. His knuckles are huge and black. There were still fingerprints under his biceps where he was probably held. His legs are beat up badly. Why would anyone looking at my brother conclude his death was a suicide?"

Then, several years later, Jesse Trentadue finally received some photos of his brother that were taken shortly after his death. The photos showed a caved in skull and ligature marks on his neck that matched the marks of Flex-cuffs! Flex-cuffs are nylon strips that form loops that are used as temporary handcuffs. Once applied they cannot be removed or slackened and have to be cut off with wire cutting pliers. In the mechanic's world, they are called "tie wraps," and "wire wraps." Only guards would have had them, and if they were secured around someone's neck, and the neck swelled, they could not be cut off even with wire cutters and the victim would die due to carotid artery blood being cut off and possibly by asphyxiation at the same time.

And what about motive? Kenneth was only facing a few months for a parole violation. He had a wife and new son waiting for him, and according to his brother and mother, he "was looking forward to the future."

Kenneth Michael Trentadue was tortured and murdered in August, 1995, while incarcerated at the Federal Transfer Center in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. He was strangled with plastic handcuffs or "Flex-cuffs." Kenneth Trentadue's family believes that he was murdered by agents of the Federal Bureau of Investigation or guards at the Federal Prisoner Transfer Center in Oklahoma City. Above is a partial close-up photograph of part of Kenneth Trentadue's neck. This photograph depicts the groove or furrow left on Kenneth's neck by a ligature and clearly shows "railroad track" marks of the cuffs. (Photo: Courtesy of Jesse Trentadue)

The way the case was handled by the FBI was not only inept, it was purposely mishandled. The Oklahoma City office of the FBI, which investigated the case, not only spent very little time on it—allegedly because they were so short-handed due to the bombing case—but mishandled the evidence and the chain of evidence. The agent who took Trentadue's bloody clothing left it in the trunk of his car until it was so contaminated that it was useless for lab tests to determine if all the blood was Trentadue's or also prison guard attackers. The prison operations lieutenant, Kenneth Freeman, took about 30 photos of Trentadue's body after he died, but the negatives could not be found. The videotape taken when Trentadue's body was found had been erased. The Acting Warden did all she could to destroy forensic evidence on the body by attempting to have the body cremated. The Justice Department, after an 11-month Janet Reno/Eric Holder investigation, found no evidence of foul play. Even Oklahoma Senator Don Nichols, who went through the Federal Transfer Center on December 1st, 1997, said that "There's a lot of things that happened in this case that are very, very troubling. There's a very strong possibility of a homicide."

December 9, 1999. Jesse Trentadue received a call from inmate Alden Gillis Baker, from USP Lompoc, California. Baker told Trentadue that he had occupied he same cell as Kenneth even though prison records did not support that. In fact such records disappeared. Baker was doing time in Lompoc and called Jesse. Jesse Trentadue wrote “Baker telephoned Jesse to ask for help because he was being threatened by guards at USP Lompoc. During that conversation, Baker told Jesse that he had called DOJ Attorney Peter Schlossman, one of the attorneys representing the government against my family’s civil law suit, to tell Schlossman about the threats he was receiving from BOP staff and to ask for help. Baker went on to say that upon hearing this, Schlossman asked Baker whether Baker was willing to say that his deposition testimony about having witnessed Kenneth Trentadue’s murder was a lie. In response to that question, Baker told Schlossman that his deposition testimony was the truth. Upon hearing this, Baker said Schlossman responded, “I have nothing further to say to you,” and hung up the telephone.

“August 3, 2000. Baker was found hanging by a bed sheet in his SHU Unit cell at Lompoc. The DOJ contends that Baker’s death was a suicide, but will not release any documents or evidence on the matter. That telephone call was recorded by the BOP and it still likely exists, but the DOJ will not turn over the recording to Trentadue’s family. Not only does Baker’s death mirror Trentadue’s, but it is exactly what another inmate, Nick Arcabasso, was told would happen to him if he told anyone about having heard guard Rodney DeChamplain say that “he killed Trentadue.” Arcabasso was told if he said anything about that admission, he would “just be found swinging from a bed sheet.”

Attorney Jesse Trentadue has continued to fight for the truth, filing suit after suit against the FBI and DoJ, including suits concerning the Oklahoma City bombing, which include demanding to see the video tapes of the Murrah Building scene taken by security cameras on April 19th, 1995 and removed by the FBI (including the cameras that took them). He has been denied every time, even after receiving court orders from a judge ordering the FBI to find and turn over the video tapes.

One rebuttal to providing information to Trentadue by the FBI was sixteen pages long and went into detail point-by-point why (and how) the FBI could get away from not honoring the FOIA’s and court orders due to everything from “it’s an ongoing investigation” (it’s not) to “privacy rights (probably not wanting to identify the BOP personnel involved even though as government employees they are not protected by privacy rights concerning their official duties and how they attended to them).

Jesse Trentadue, with the help of others, gleaned enough information to name some of the names involved in a law suit he filed on behalf of the Trentadue family on May 22, 1997 in federal court. The suit named the defendants: The United States of America (the governing body of those involved), U.S. Department of Justice (under which falls the Bureau of Prisons), Federal Bureau of Prisons, Federal Bureau of Investigation, Kathleen M. Hawk, Wallace H. Cheney, Charles Turnbo, Michael D. Hood, Robert Guzik, Thomas R. Kindt, Marie J. Carter (Acting Warden), Kenneth Freeman (prison guard), Stuart Lee (prison guard), Rodney De Champlain (prison guard), Bryan Donnelly (prison guard), Carlos Mier (PA on the night Kenneth was killed), and John Does 1-10 and Jane Does 1-4.

The disposition of the law suit is best explained by Jesse Trentadue:

“December 15, 2000. The jury returns a verdict against Stuart A. Lee for having violated Trentadue’s civil rights under the Eighth Amendment to the United States Constitution. The case against the United States for assault, battery, conspiracy, spoliation [destruction of evidence] and infliction of emotional distress was taken under advisement.

“January 12, 2001. *The Court enters a Judgment against former BOP employee Stuart A. Lee* for having violated Trentadue’s civil rights. A similar ruling is expected from the Court with respect to the assault, battery and conspiracy claims against the DOJ.

“May 1, 2001. *The Court enters a judgment against the DOJ* and in favor of Trentadue’s family in the amount of $1.1 million. The judgment was for the intentional infliction of emotional distress upon Trentadue’s family by the DOJ. *Because of perjury and destruction of evidence, however, the Court was unable to find that Trentadue’s death was a homicide.* But in that judgment, the District Court gave a scathing criticism about several DOJ employees who testified at trial:

“The testimony of PA Mier, Lt. Freeman and BOP Guard Robert Garza raise serious questions as to their truthfulness and reveal a lack of respect for the solemnity of sworn proceedings. From the time of Trentadue’s death up to and including the trial, these witnesses seemed unable to comprehend the importance of a truthful answer.

“The Court’s assessment of Mier, Freeman and Garza’s testimony was entirely accurate. Yet that same assessment could have been made with respect to the testimony of numerous other DOJ employees, such as Roger T. Groover. At trial, Groover admitted that although he had testified under oath before the federal Grand Jury, the Office of the Inspector General, and the BOP, that he saw and videotaped Trentadue hanging in Cell A-709, these statements were not true. Groover confessed that “he did not see Trentadue hanging” and that he “did not videotape Trentadue hanging.”

Perjury is a felony, but I have not found any disposition where Groover was held accountable by the federal government.

Altogether, *the DOJ expended in excess of $5 million fighting the Trentadue family’s lawsuit.*

But the truth of what actually happened that night remains untold. Kenneth Trentadue, probably because of mistaken identity, was beaten, tortured, and murdered. But a question I have is how any BOP personnel became involved in the first place. If Kenneth Trentadue was suspected to be one of the Midwest Bank Bobbers, or possibly a John Doe in regards to OKBOMB, it would have been an FBI team that would have been involved since the Oklahoma City and bank robber cases were in their sphere of investigations, not the BOP guards.

What does remain true is that none of those who were involved ever paid for their crimes and still remain at large.

While going though my files I noticed a mention by one of our Baker Street Irregulars investigators, Pat Briley concerning the Trentadue case. In one page of notes Briley wrote “Timothy McVeigh named Richard Lee Guthrie as John Doe 2. Guthrie was part of a bank robbery team. Kenneth Trentadue, Richard Lee Guthrie and Alden Gillis Baker all died in Federal Custody.”

Whether McVeigh ever named anyone as John Doe #2 is debatable. Guthrie may have been in the second Ryder truck with Dennis Mahon, but we don't have anything to substantiate that other than conjecture and sketchy witness descriptions.

But one thing remains true. Kenneth Trentadue would not be the last death due to circumstances pointing to federal agents.

Kenneth Trentadue's body showing massive damage. A closer inspection shows the ligature mark on the throat to match the locking grooves of "flex cuffs," which are carried by law enforcement officers as spare handcuffs and ankle cuffs. No bed sheet did this.

Slash mark on side of throat over jugular vein. (Photos: Oklahoma City Medical Examiner's Office)

CHAPTER 16

The Strange Death of Sgt. Terrance Yeakey, OCPD

"We know that when the government lies, we have an onion to peel. First, we peel off the top layer (the first lie), then expose the second layer (the "okay, here's the truth" lie), then the next layer, and the next until we get to the truth. This is the formula I used on all the cases I've worked. I peeled onions."

Craig Roberts to Chris Emery
(Freemind Films), 2007

One of the first Oklahoma City police officers to enter the building on April 19th, shortly after the blasts, was Oklahoma City police sergeant Terrance "Terry" Yeakey. Sergeant Yeakey, an African-American officer with a large stature and sometimes known as a "gentle giant," would see things inside the building minutes after the blasts that would prove to be fatal to him. On May 8, 1996, only three days before Yeakey was to receive the Oklahoma City Police Department's Medal of Valor, he "committed suicide." The 30 year-old officer was found in a field near El Reno, west of Oklahoma City, by a Canadian County Deputy Sheriff. Yeakey's wrists were slashed in numerous places, as was his neck and throat. Apparently not satisfied with his initial attempt to take his own life, he got out of his car, which was parked on a country road nearby, crossed over a barbed wire fence, walked almost a mile-and-a-half over rough terrain, then pulled out his gun, and shot himself in the head. His body, according to the medical examiner's sketch, showed imprints on his wrist that appeared to be where handcuffs had been. And the bullet trajectory entered his skull from the top right side several inches above the ear, then traveled and a downward angle to exit his lower left cheek! No typical striations were around the entrance wound, no powder burns described by the ME, and it was an apparent small caliber due to the size of the entry and exit wounds. There were large circular indentions in the skin around the wound which, to me, would describe a silencer was used. It definitely was not a 9mm pistol like Yeakey was issued since the exit wound was small caliber and there was no "blow out" from the skull. Having seen my share of suicides and homicides and gunshot wounds, the above description matches that of an execution style murder. The explanation for the path of the bullet wound alone would indicate Yeakey was on his knees and his assassin stood above and to his right side, put the barrel/silencer to Yeakey's head on a downward angle, and pulled the trigger. One shot.

To justify Yeakey's death and motive for suicide in the mind of the public, and the media, his chain of command at the police department, claimed Sergeant Yeakey "was wracked with guilt" over his inability to help more people that fateful morning. They also claimed he led a "troubled family life," having been recently divorced from his wife, Tonia, and separated from his two daughters, aged two and four, whom according to the *Daily Oklahoman,* he was not permitted to see due to a restraining order.

Other accounts from some in the upper echelons of the OCPD suggested that Yeakey was reluctant to receive the Medal of Valor, which he was to be awarded, due to his "guilt" over being injured in the Murrah Building. "He didn't like it," said his supervisor Lt. Jo Ann Randall. "There are some people that like to be heroes and some that don't. He was not one that wanted that."

“He had a lot of guilt because he got hurt,” added fellow officer Jim Ramsey.

Apparently, there was much more behind Terrance Yeakey’s reluctance to be honored as a hero.

“He kept telling me it wasn’t what I thought it was,” said his ex-wife, Tonia Rivera-Yeakey, “that they were only choosing officers who were not even at the site, you know—who didn’t see anything—to take public rewards, recognition, that sort of stuff.

“They started pressuring them into taking [the rewards],” added Rivera. “There came a time about mid-year, when they were forcing him to go to these award ceremonies. As in, ‘Yes, you could *not* go, but we’ll make your life hell’”.

The story of the reluctant hero, she added, was nothing more than a “real thin veil of truth” which covered up a “mountain of deceit.”

“Terry wanted no part of it.”

His sister, Vicki Jones, agreed. “Terry hated that stuff. ‘I’m no hero,’ he would say. ‘Nobody that had anything to do with helping those people in that bombing are heroes. We just couldn’t do enough.”

Shortly after Terry’s death, a good friend of Yeakey, and herself a bombing survivor, Ramona McDonald shared a letter that Yeakey wrote her about his concerns and fears regarding what was happening to him on the police department, and because he kept trying to tell people that what happened to the building was not what everyone was being told. And concerning his statement to his sister, why would the Medal of Valor recipient make such a bizarre-sounding statement? In the letter he wrote Ramona McDonald, Yeakey tells the real reason for his reluctance to be honored as a hero:

“Dear Ramona,

“I hope that whatever you hear now and in the future will not change your opinions about myself or others with the Oklahoma City Police Department, although some of the things I am about to tell you about is very disturbing.

“I don’t know if you recall everything that happened that morning or not, so I am not sure if you know what I am referring to.

“The man that you and I were talking about in the pictures I have made the mistake of asking too many questions as to his role in the bombing, and was told to back off.

“I was told by several officers he was an ATF agent who was overseeing the bombing plot and at the time the photos were taken he was calling in his report of what had just went down!

“I think my days as a police officer are numbered because of the way my supervisors are acting and there is [sic] a lot of secrets floating around now about my mental state of mind. I think they are going to write me up because of my ex-wife and a VPO.

“ I told you about talking to Chaplain Poe, well the bastard wrote up in a report stating I should be relieved of my duties! I made the mistake of thinking that a person’s conversation with a chaplain was private, which by the way might have cost me my job as a police officer! A friend at headquarters told me that Poe sent out letters to everyone in the department! That BITCH (Jo Ann Randall) I told you about is up to something and I think it has something to do with Poe. If she gets her way, they will tar and feather me!

“I was told that Jack Poe has written up a report on every single officer that has been in to see him, including Gordon Martin and John Avery.

“Knowing what I know now, and understanding fully just what went down that morning, makes me ashamed to wear a badge from Oklahoma City’s Police Department. I took an oath to uphold the Law and to enforce the Law to the best of my ability. This is something I cannot honestly do and hold my head up proud any longer if I keep my silence as I am ordered to do.

“There are several others out there who was [sic] what we saw and even some who played a role in what happened that day.

[*Two Pages Missing at this point, but they may have contained the part where the officers at the scene of the bombing that morning were “threatened by federal agents to keep their mouths shut about everything they had seen and heard there that morning,” and information of death threats to those who couldn’t. This was related to me by several OCPD officers who were on the scene that day.*]

“My guess is the more time an officer has to think about the screw up the more he is going to question what happened… Can you imagine what would be coming down now if that had been our officers who had let this happen? Because it was the feds that did this and not the locals, is the reason it’s okay. You were right all along and I am truly sorry I doubted you and your motives about recording history. You should know that it is going to one-hell-of-a-fight.

“Everyone was behind you until you started asking questions as I did, as to how so many federal agents arrived at the scene at the same time.

“Luke Franey (a ATF agent who claimed he was in the building) was not in the building at the time of the blast, I know this for a fact, I saw him! I also saw full riot gear worn with rifles in hand, why? Don’t make the mistake as I did and ask the wrong people.

“I worry about you and your young family because of some of the statements that have been made towards me, a police officer! Whatever you do don’t confront McPhearson with the bomb squad about what I told you. His actions and defensiveness towards the bombing would make any normal person think he was defending himself as if he drove the damn truck up to the building himself. I am not worried for myself, but for you and your group. I would not be afraid to say at this time that you and your family could be harmed if you get any closer to the truth. At this time I think for your well being it is best for you to distance yourself and others from those of us who have stirred up too many questions about the altering and falsifying of the federal investigation’s reports.

“I truly believe there are other officers like me out there who would not settle for anything but the truth, it is just a matter of finding them. The only true problem as I see it is, who do we turn to then?

“It is vital that people like you, Edye Smith, and others keep asking questions and demanding answers for the actions of our Federal Government and law enforcement agencies *that knew beforehand and participated in the cover-up.* (*Author’s emphasis*)

"The sad truth of the matter is that they have so many police officers convinced that by covering up the truth about the operation gone wrong, that they are actually doing our citizens a favor. What I want to know is how many other operations have they had that blew up in their faces? Makes you stop and take another look at Waco.

"I would consider it to be an insult to my profession as a police officer and to the citizens of Oklahoma for ANY of the City, State or Federal agents that stood by and let this happen to be recognized as any thing other than their part in participation in letting this happen. For those who ran from the scene to change their attire to hide the fact that they were there, should be judged as cowards.

"If our history books and records are ever truly corrected about that day it will show this and maybe even some lame excuse as to why it happened, but I truly don't believe it will from what I now know to be the truth.

"Even if I tried to explain it to you the way it was explained to me, and the ridiculous reason for having our own police departments falsify reports to their fellow officers, to the citizens of the city and to our country, you would understand why I feel the way I do about all of this.

"I believe that a lot of the problems the officers are having right now are because some of them know what really happened and can't deal with it, and others like myself made the mistake of trusting the one person we were supposed to be able to turn to (the chaplain) only to be stabbed in the back."

Sgt. Terry Yeakey in uniform (Left). At the bombing scene (Right). Inset is photo of Tonia and their daughter. (Photos: *The Daily Oklahoman* and Tonia Rivera)

Yeakey's letter finished with "I am sad to say that I believe my days as a police officer are numbered because of all of this."

Shortly after the bombing, Yeakey appeared at his ex-wife's residence. "About two weeks before his death, he'd come into my home at strange times," said Rivera, "two-thirty in the morning, four in the morning, unannounced—trying to give me life insurance policies.… He kept telling me we needed to get remarried immediately, or me and the girls would not be taken care of.

"I mean, why would a guy tell you to take a life insurance policy, knowing damn well it wouldn't pay for a suicide? He obviously knew he was in danger."

Yet Sergeant Terrance Yeakey was not the type of person to easily show his feelings. He didn't want to tell his family anything that might get them hurt.

"He told me enough to let me know that it was not what they were making it out to be," said Rivera, "and that he was disgusted and didn't want any part of it, but he never went into detail.… It scared me."

Within days of the bombing, according to a sympathetic government source who has spoken to Rivera, Yeakey began receiving death threats. He was at his ex-wife's apartment when the calls came. Afraid for his family, he got up and left.

"When he came to my apartment two weeks prior, trying to give me these insurance policies," said Rivera, "he sat on my living room couch and cried and told me how he had a fight with [his supervisors] Lt. Randall and Maj. Upchurch. He did not tell me what that entailed, but he was scared—he was crying so badly he was shaking.

"He wouldn't totally voice whatever it was," recalled Rivera. "It was like he'd be just about to tell me—he'd want to spill his guts—and then he stopped, and he just cried. And that's when he kept insisting that I take the insurance policy."

Although Yeakey was concerned for his family, the marriage was not without abuse. Rivera had filed a VPO (Victim's Protective Order) against him slightly over two years before. In a fit of temper, Yeakey had once threatened to take his life and those of his wife and children.

"I think it was said in the haste of, well, he's going to kill all of us kind of thing—cop under pressure," said Rivera.

But that was over a year and-a-half prior to Yeakey's death. Yeakey had spent considerable time with his wife and children since then, including taking them on family outings.

Nevertheless, the Oklahoma City Police Department (OCPD) attempted to use the incident to claim that Yeakey was suicidal. It was on the day of his death, around 1:30 p.m., that they called Rivera, trying to get her to file a VPO violation based on the two-year-old report. "They wanted me to come down and make some statements against him," Rivera said. This was before his body was found.

On the same afternoon, in-between messages on his answering machine from his sister, Vicki Jones and his supervisor Lt. Jo Ann Randall, Yeakey had a message from Tonia. "The message was like at 5:30 in the afternoon," recalled Rivera. "I sound like I'm whispering, and I'm apologizing for waking him up—at 5:30 in the afternoon—on Wednesday."

It seems the intent behind this cleverly-crafted deception was to convince the family and potential investigators that Rivera was an “evil person,” who was sleeping with him the night before, but “went down and filed a VPO the next day.”

“That tape was planted,” said Rivera. “I never called his house.”

It seemed some individuals in the OCPD were playing an elaborate game to sow confusion and mistrust, and create the appearance that Rivera was responsible for her ex-husband’s death.

“So it comes out in paper after paper how he’s having problems with his ex-wife, how he’s not allowed to see his children. “They’re trying to play up the story of the bitch-ass wife whose trying to get him fired.”

Yet Rivera claimed she never filed a VPO violation. “The OCPD wanted to file one,” said Rivera. “But I never signed it.” Rivera claimed she had gone to the police station, but simply out of concern for her ex-husband, who had been acting strangely.

“Nobody ever said, ‘Mrs. Yeakey, Terry’s missing. Do you know anyplace he might have gone to? They never told me that they weren’t able to locate him, that they were concerned, you know—nothing. I never knew he was missing.”

If Officer Yeakey’s death was anything more than a suicide, the OCPD didn’t go to any great lengths to find out. While his death occurred in El Reno—not far from the federal prison where McVeigh was being held—the OCPD took over the crime scene, squeezing the El Reno Police Department out of the picture. The OCPD’s Media Relations officer, Cpt. Ted Carlton, explained, “It was our police officer who was killed. It’s not uncommon [to take over the investigation] in the case of a smaller police agency.”

Although forensics are also standard procedure in the event of a violent or suspicious death, especially that of a police officer, Yeakey’s car was never dusted for prints. “And the next day, they gave us the damn car!” said Mrs. Jarrahi, Yeakey’s mother. “It was full of blood.”

When Yeakey’s Brother-in-Law, Glenn Jones, inspected the dead man’s car, he discovered a bloody knife stashed underneath the glove compartment. Yet according to the responding officer, Yeakey had apparently used a razor blade. Where did the knife come from? Since no forensic investigation was conducted, this remains unclear. And if it was Yeakey’s knife, and he was intent on committing suicide, why would he hide the knife in the first place.

To make strange matters even stranger, no autopsy was ever conducted. The ME’s office took photographs of the body, and did two sketches on a standard “body form” which is a simple drawing of a male body with front and rear views, and another sketch on a form showing a human skull. The person who sketched in the wounds did note the several places on the wrists and inner elbows and side of neck that were lacerated, and showed the bullet entrance and exit wounds on the skull. But no toxicology was reported to the public as having been performed, and no internal standard autopsy was conducted.

“There were common sense things that were wrong about the whole thing, that makes it so weird,” added Mrs. Jarrahi. “It just doesn’t seem right. Why would policemen and the authorities make such common mistakes that would leave questions? It’s just really weird.”

If Yeakey’s death was a suicide, he left no note. Although he was upset over his divorce, according to the family, he was not suicidal. It is also unlikely that he abused drugs, as he was an instructor at DARE, a program designed to keep children off drugs.

Former Canadian County Sheriff’s deputy Clint Boehler, who claims to have known Yeakey, doesn’t concur with this analysis. Boehler said that Yeakey showed up at his house in El Reno on the afternoon of his death, his car stopped at an angle in the middle of the road. When Boehler and his girlfriend, Kate Allen, a paramedic, ran outside, they found Yeakey virtually passed out.

“He couldn’t tell us his name initially,” said Allen. “He was ill, and he was very anxious. His heart rate was rapid; he was sweaty.… He told us he had been having concentration problems, he hadn’t slept. He had all the appearances, my first guess would be, of someone who was having emotional problems. And my second guess would be, of some kind of substance abuse problem. But that’s a pure guess.”

Or it could have been that he had been given drugs that day without his knowledge.

Boehler added that Yeakey said he hadn’t eaten, and was “throwing up, taking medication, and incoherent. He was taking medications for his back,” said Boehler. “He had four or five medications in the car.”

Boehler and Allen didn’t know that Yeakey had Sickle-Cell Anemia—a blood-sugar-related condition that caused seizures. It was these seizures, Rivera explained, that would occasionally cause her ex-husband to act “out-of-sorts,” or even to slip into unconsciousness.

In spite of his medical condition, Rivera insisted that Terrance Yeakey was a health fanatic. The prescriptions were for his condition, she said, but he used only the minimum amounts.

According to Canadian County Sheriff’s Deputy Mike Ramsey (no relation to OCPD Officer Jim Ramsey), who drove Yeakey home, Yeakey was not suicidal. “He didn’t give me any indications that he was out to do harm to himself,” said Ramsey. “He seemed more disoriented, tired.”

There are many things about Officer Yeakey’s death that remain a mystery. While Boehler described a man on drugs, the Medical Examiner claims they didn’t bother to conduct a drug test because it “costs too much.”

The ME’s field investigator, Jeffrey Legg, also reported that Yeakey “had been drinking heavily” the day before, based on statements made by OCPD Homicide Detectives Dicus and Mullinex. Yet Terrance Yeakey didn’t drink, and their own report concluded that there was no alcohol in the body at the time of death.

Canadian County Sheriffs discovered the abandoned car, filled with blood, about two and-a-half miles from the old El Reno reformatory. The OCPD was notified, and Police Chief Sam Gonazles flew out by helicopter. Using dogs, they followed a trail of blood, and found the body in a ditch, about a mile and-a-half from the car. (Legg reported the body was 1/2 mile south of the car, when in fact it was 1 1/2 miles north-east of the car.)

As if this weren't strange enough, Yeakey's diet-related condition would have made him too weak to walk the mile and-a-half from his car to where his body was found—especially after losing two to three pints of blood.

Nevertheless, the OCPD ruled it a suicide on the spot. Their investigation remained sealed. David Hoffman tried to get a copy, but was unable to obtain it, and not even the family was allowed to see it.

"There were so many things that were weird," said Mrs. Jarrahi. "My daughter kept going back to the Police Department. She said, 'Well what about this… we knew he had a camcorder, we knew he had a *briefcase*…'

"These are things we never got back. The kid always carried camera and film. [He] never went anywhere without his camera and briefcase. He had all his important papers in there.… We got the camera back. We never got the film back. We never got the briefcase. They said they never saw it."

In regards to Yeakey's videos, Detective Mullinex, who "investigated" the case for the OCPD, told Vicki Jones, Yeakey's sister, "I really don't think you'll want to see those; they contain pornography." Jones didn't believe him and didn't care. "I want those tapes!" she demanded.

The Homicide detective finally told her she'd get them back after they had "examined the evidence."

"One minute the guy would say he had them," said Jones, "the next minute he'd say 'we don't have anything.'"

According to Jones, Mullinex then said, "Now, we all loved Terry. I hope you understand that, but I'm not going to let you see any pictures. And I don't know anything about a briefcase, but if there's anything back there, I'll give you a call, and you can come back and get them."

"And I just sat there and looked at him, and said to myself, 'You're doing a great performance, but it's not working.' Then he got really uptight and said, 'Well, some of us hated Terry.' [Then] he kind of grabbed his face and said 'oh shit.'"

For his part, Mullinex had "no comment either way." He then told Hoffman when Dave interviewed him, "I don't remember what I said to the lady, but I certainly was not rude to her. This comes as a big shock to me, because he was a police officer and a friend of mine. It was a hard thing and hurt me to have to work it."

OCPD Cpt. Carlton likewise feigned shock at Jones' rebuffs, and said he would have to know who the officer was who made those statements. He then asked Hoffman to have the family contact the OCPD directly (as though they hadn't already done so numerous times), and he would meet with them and discuss the case, but that Cpt. Danny Cockran, Chief of the Homicide Squad, would have to make the decision about whether or not to let the family see the files.

Yet Carlton's statements fly in the face of the experiences of not only Yeakey's mother and sister, but those of his ex-wife. In a letter to Police Chief Sam Gonzales dated September 4, 1996, Rivera writes:

“Needless to say, I have many questions regarding the investigation. What type of weapon was used to inflict the gunshot wound to his head? Who located the body? How could the cause of death be determined with such confidence with the multitude of injuries to his body and how did he walk the distance indicated in *People* magazine with the great loss of blood from razor cuts not only to both wrists, but both his forearms as well as two razor cuts to his neck? Not only did he walk this distance, but he struggled with a barb wire fence to reach his chosen destination to die, then inflicted the gunshot wound to himself? I request that a copy of the investigative report of his death be made available to me.”

Gonzales didn’t respond.

Police officials eventually responded to Vicki Jones’ complaints by telling her she needed to see a psychiatrist. “They said, ‘We’re just trying to protect you.’”

Exactly what were they trying to protect her from? When Hoffman called Mrs. Jarrahi, the telltale signs of a tapped phone were clearly present. If Terrance Yeakey’s death was a simple suicide, why would law-enforcement agencies be tapping the family’s phones?

The OCPD soon began conducting surveillance on the dead man’s family.

“There was always an officer out there in front of our apartment,” said Jones. Anywhere we went, we had an officer or someone in a marked car following us around. It started right after I started going to the Police Department quite a bit.”

They also tailed Rivera. When she confronted the officers, they ignored her, hid their faces, or sped off. Cars were parked outside her children’s’ school. When she spoke to school officials about the surveillance one afternoon, she went to work and was startled to find the conversation on her office answering machine! Rivera had spoken to the school principal in person. How did the conversation wind up on her answering machine?

The harassment against Officer Yeakey’s family wasn’t limited to mere surveillance. After Rivera met with Charles Key, her car was broken into and her house was broken into twice.

She finally moved to Enid, a town near Oklahoma City, when the heat became too hot. “I lived in an apartment on the third floor with a security alarm in it,” said Rivera. “I’d come home and the alarm would be off. I’d notice things out of place. There’d be cabinets open that I’d have no reason to have opened.”

About two weeks after Terry’s death, Rivera went downstairs around 6:30 one morning to do some laundry, “and there was a man downstairs with huge headphones on, at 6:30 in the morning, right behind my apartment.…”

The individual, who was wearing a jogging suit—wasn’t jogging, and was not doing laundry. “He looked startled when I came around the corner,” said Rivera. “I came back down at 8:30 and the guy was still there.”

One day Rivera came home to find her front door open and off its hinges. When the frightened single mother walked into her bedroom, she found a balloon tied to her door. It read: “Get well soon. This will keep you busy until you do.”

It seems the OCPD and the FBI thought that Officer Yeakey had passed off some incriminating documents concerning the bombing cover-up to his ex-wife, and were intent on obtaining the documents.

The surveillance, break-ins, and thinly-veiled threats soon escalated into more serious incidents. Right before Yeakey's murder, the couple's Ford Explorer began getting mysterious flats. "And when I'd roll it into a shop," said Rivera, "they'd pull out like six or seven nails." This occurred between eight and ten times, she said.

Rivera explained that once during a quarrel, Terry had removed some fuses from her car to keep her from leaving. The police knew about the incident, said Rivera, who thought the subsequent events were created by the OCPD to sow mistrust and provide a convenient trail of evidence to prove that Yeakey led a troubled family life. Yet while Yeakey admitted to removing the fuses, he repeatedly and adamantly denied that he had damaged the car—a car that was registered in his name and carried his children to and from school.

On April 24, two weeks before he was found dead, the Explorer began acting strangely. When Rivera pulled it into the local Aamco Transmission Center, she found that it had been tampered with. "Somebody who knew what they were doing pulled hoses from your car," said Todd Taylor, the chief mechanic. "I'm sorry to tell you this ma'am, but this is not just something you can pull randomly." Taylor also said he thought Rivera's brakes had been tampered with.

About two weeks later the Ford's brakes went out suddenly while Rivera was traveling at 40 mph. "I went to brake," said Rivera, "and guess what? No brakes!" The SUV slammed into the back of a smaller car, damaging it badly. "The message is 'we can get to you if we want to,'" she concluded. Or, someone was trying to kill her.

Officer Jim Ramsey also began making his presence felt. "All of a sudden, when we moved to Oklahoma City [from El Reno]," said Jones, "there was Ramsey. When we joined a new church, Ramsey was there. Ramsey was everywhere. You turn the corner, there was Ramsey.… Everything we did, he was like the helpful old guy. This went on for two months."

"He was keeping tabs on everyone," added Rivera. "He was showing up in a lot of places… just casually, in fact, places where he knew that people knew me just as well as they knew Terry, and weren't buying into the 'it's Tonia's fault' routine.

"[Ramsey] tried to claim it was Terry's ex-wife and love for his children he couldn't see that made him commit suicide," she added. He would talk to her friends. "'How's she taking it? What does she think, blah, blah, blah.'"

Both Rivera and Jones felt the OCPD officer was sent to "baby-sit" them—to maintain an ever-present watchful eye. "When he showed up," Jones said, "I looked at him and said, that is not a friend of Terry's. He was never at the house. I never met him before."

Ramsey, who told *People* magazine that Yeakey was his "dear friend," also told the press that he was Terry's partner.

"That was a lie," declared Jones.

Rivera concurred. The ex-wife said that not only was Ramsey never Yeakey's partner, but that the two men didn't even get along. "Terry hated Jim Ramsey," said Rivera. "He put on a real good performance," she added. "He's hiding something, I believe. It burns me up."

For his performance, Ramsey was promoted to Detective, and made "Officer of the Year."

If Terrance Yeakey did have many friends in the Police Department, they were among the beat patrolmen, not the upper echelon. While Detective Mullinex said everybody "loved Terry," according to Rivera, the brass "hated his guts." "Him and [Maj.] Upchurch had a hate-hate relationship," she said.

For his part, Mullinex claims he was "totally unaware" of any problems Yeakey was having in regards to what he knew about the bombing. "It is my opinion as a fourteen-year homicide veteran that it was a suicide," said Mullinex. If we thought it was anything [other than a suicide] we would have pursued it to the ends of the earth. We're not hiding anything."

Really?

According to Rivera, three government sources, including a U.S. Attorney and a U.S. Marshal, hold a slightly different view. As relayed by Rivera, the events on the morning of Officer Yeakey's death transpired as follows:

At 9:00 a.m., Officer Yeakey was seen exiting his Oklahoma City apartment with nine boxes of videos and files. He then drove to the police station where he had a fight with his supervisors.

He was told to "drop it" or he'd "wind up dead."

Yeakey was also due for a meeting with the heads of some federal agencies that morning. He apparently decided to skip the meeting, instead, driving straight to a storage locker he maintained in Kingfisher.

What he didn't realize was that the FBI—or "someone"—had him under surveillance, and began following him. The six-year OCPD veteran and former Sheriff's Deputy easily made them and then eluded his tail. Once at his storage facility, he secured his files, tapes, and photographs.

That morning Yeakey told a friend, who he planned on meeting for lunch, that (paraphrasing) "the feds have been watching me, and I need to get to my storage locker and drop some stuff off after I shake whoever is following me, then I'll head back to town." Yeakey's intention, as described, did not match the later official story of his actions that day.

What was in the files? According to one of Rivera's sources, incriminating photos and videos of the bombed-out building. Perhaps more.

On the way back, whoever was then following him in a plain unmarked car caught up with him just outside of El Reno. "He had nothing on him," at that point, said Rivera, "just copies of copies."

While it is not known exactly what transpired next, Rivera's confidential source "described in intimate detail," the state of the dead man's car. The seats had been completely unbolted, the floor-boards ripped up, and the side panels removed, all in an apparent effort to find the incriminating documents or other items. Would Yeakey have done this to his own car?

There were also burn marks on the floor. Apparently, the killers had used Yeakey's car to destroy what little evidence they had discovered.

At approximately 6:00 p.m. that evening, Canadian County Deputy Sheriff Mike Ramsey was cruising the area near the El Reno reformatory when he noticed an abandoned vehicle on a rural road. "Immediately [the] hair stood up on the back of my neck," said the deputy. Ramsey came upon the empty car which he immediately recognized as Yeakey's. There was blood on both seats, and a razor blade lying on the dash. Yeakey was nowhere to be found.

The deputy immediately called for a homicide investigator, and taped off the scene. It wasn't until several hours later that police dogs finally located Yeakey's body in a ditch, a mile and-a-half away.

Ramsey's official Crime/Incident report notes (actual wording and spelling):

"On this date at 1810 hours while in route to a burglary call, I observed the above described vehicle parked on the west edge of Fort Reno Rd. approximately 100 yards north of Jones Rd, I advised the dispatcher of the tag number displayed on the vehicle and exited my unit to check the vehicle. I looked through the drivers door window and observed what appeared to be blood on the drivers seat and center console. I also observed the vehicle to be locked and the windows rolled up. I advised the dispatcher to send an investigator to my location and notify CPT. MCCOLUM and SHERIFF HAWKINS. I then secured the scene with barricade tape. At 1821 hours Investigator LT. RECTOR arrived and assumed control of the scene."

An Oklahoma Highway Patrol trooper. Jerry Rigg, arrived after Ramsey at 2350 hours (11:50 pm) and Lt. Rector noted in his report:

"OHP Trooper JERRY RIGG arrived a short time later followed by Sheriff LEWIS HAWKINS. We began looking along the roadside and found two razor blades approximately fifteen to twenty yards apart. Just across the small bridge north of where YEAKEY'S vehicle was parked and east into the ditch about six feet, I found a small white plastic razor blade dispenser which also had blood on it. A few feet east of the razor blade dispenser near the top of a round wooden fence post, was a large blood smear, where it appeared the subject may have tried to climb over the fence, or possibly may have leaned up against said post, At that point, we cleared the area to wait for personnel from the Oklahoma City Police Department to arrive. Sheriff HAWKINS had also requested our canine unit to be contacted and he also was enroute. I marked the above mentioned items of evidence with yellow flags. After the arrival of the various Oklahoma City Officers, the scene was turned over to them, and we remained on the scene to assist them as needed."

So far, reading these reports and their descriptions of the scene at this point, my "cop sense" told me that Yeakey, who could have killed himself anywhere and made it easier for his body to be found, was actually running from a threat. If he had pursuers, that would explain why there were blood stains in various places, and why he would attempt to get over a fence. He was fighting for his life as he attempted to escape across the field after he had been stopped on that road. After he was killed the killers then went back and tore his car apart searching for something. It is possible that whoever did this are the ones who found and took his briefcase and other materials.

OHP Trooper Legg’s report has some telling items that bring more questions to the case. The report is typed in all capital letters, so I have taken the liberty of using standard case for reading purposes:

“Dec. was an OCPD officer that worked in the D.A.R.E. program. He reportedly had been having serious domestic problem with his ex-wife. Both the dec. and ex-wife had VPO’s against each other. These domestic problems had been going on for about 2 years. Over the last several weeks the dec. has been in some trouble with the department and has claimed that he has been having flashbacks of the bombing. Reportedly the ex-wife filed a complaint against him violating the VPO order and the police dept. was getting ready to start an investigation into the charges.

“Dec was last seen on 05-07-96 between 2330 and 2400. The El Reno P.D. had picked him up and took him to his sister’s house that lives in El Reno because he had been drinking heav[ily]. The sister reports putting him to bed and waking up the next morning and finding him gone. The car of the dec. was found about 0700 on 5-8. They found the body about 1/2 mile south of where the car was found. P.D. found razor blades and a good amount of blood inside the car. Dec. had several cuts on his wrists, forearms, and neck. Dec. shot himself with a 9mm Smith and Wesson semi-auto in the head with an exit to the cheek. The OCPD has no suspicion concerning the death.”

When I read this report I saw several glowing errors, and had more than a few questions. First, Legg did not arrive until almost midnight, and by that time the scene had changed. Legg had to have gone by what he was told, which would have been by the OCPD personnel who arrived to take over the scene, including OCPD chief Sam Gonzales and FBI Senior Agent Bob Ricks (known to some as “Waco Bob” because of his media handling during the Waco tragedy). Legg reports that Terry and Tonia were having trouble, but she states otherwise as already noted. He says in the report that these domestic problems had been ongoing for about two years. Again, that is disputed by Tonia. He writes that Yeakey “has been in some trouble with the department and has claimed that he has been having flashbacks of the bombing. The only trouble I have been able to discover was the trouble he was having with his chain of command who kept telling him to back off and keep his mouth shout about what he saw at the bombing scene. He never said to anyone he was having flashbacks. If that were true, everyone who was there, and every law enforcement officer and emergency responder in the country would have flashbacks from every gruesome scene to which they had been.

Legg’s report stated that Tonia filed a complaint against Terry for violating the protective order and that the police department was “getting ready to start an investigation into the charges.” That is a blatant lie, according to Rivera, as she had not filed any such complaint, but the OCPD personnel she was dealing with attempted to talk her into filing one. The only way the trooper would have put this in his report is because OCPD personnel on the scene said this to him.

The report goes on to say that Yeakey had been taken to his sister's house in El Reno "because he had been drinking heavily" and that she put him to bed. Another lie in the story concocted by OCPD hierarchy. The M.E.s later toxicology report reported NO alcohol in the body, and according to friends and relatives Yeakey didn't drink. His sister, Vikki, said that he was in good shape that night and had not been drinking.

Finally, the kicker. I had been waiting to find out about the gun that was "found at the scene." The first reports said that there was no gun found. But this was corrected later and subsequent reports said that his service pistol was found at the scene, and was taken by the OCPD investigators and turned in as evidence. IF that is so, then the pistol found at the scene was a Glock 9mm semi-auto. Chris Emery, one of our Baker Street Irregulars and a producer for Free Mind Films (who later did the documentary on the bombing titled *A Nobile Lie*), obtained the graduation information from Yeakey's academy class and it mentions that the OCPD had just changed to the Glock 9mms and they are what was issued. I double checked with OCPD sergeant Don Browning, who was one of the first officers on the scene along with Yeakey on the morning of the bombing and he said they indeed carried the Glocks.

However, in Legg's report, it specifically states "Dec. shot himself with a 9mm SMITH AND WESSON! Already discussed is that the bullet wounds to Yeakey's skull were small caliber and not a 9mm. And if the shot was indeed at a downward angle, the bullet would have been found in the earth within feet of the body by a metal detector, but no such search is ever mentioned.

Further, the Yeakey family asked to have, or to see the gun that was turned in but that was denied. If it was a Smith & Wesson, then it was Yeakey's personal gun (and no one ever reported seeing any gun with Yeakey except his PD issue), then it should have been returned to the family along with any other personal property.

Also, Legg's report states that the body was found 1/2 mile from the car. That is erroneous too as the actual location was almost two miles to the northeast.

It is obvious to me that Legg wrote what he was told at the scene of where the car was found.

After obtaining the Medical Examiner's report, Yeakey's head wound is described as "Thru & thru gunshot to the head-hard contact entry (barrel imprint & soot). Multiple superficial incised wounds to the wrists and neck & antecubital fossa. Early decomposition (skin slip)."

A sound suppressor, or silencer, is notorious for leaving a dirty contact wound. The suppressor tends to accumulate a large amount of soot or burnt powder when a shot is fired as it is the last part of the firearm the bullet traces through when exiting the barrel. The contact wound in itself is a sure indicator that, because it was fired from a downward angle, could not have been fired by Yeakey. If he were to shoot himself, it would have been from one side to the other, or upwards under the chin, or front to back through the mouth. Friends who knew Yeakey well said that "Terry would never do anything to his head or face. He was not one who would commit suicide, and if he were, he'd shoot himself in the heart to preserve his face."

While it is true that a bullet can alter its trajectory once inside the skull, a pathologist in the San Francisco Medical Examiner’s office told Hoffman that a 9mm or other large caliber weapon—the type commonly used by police officers—usually tends to travel in a straight line.

But perhaps the most revealing evidence was that the wound did not have a “Stellate,” the tell-tale star shape caused by the dissipating gases from the gun’s muzzle. At the close range of a suicide weapon, such markings would clearly be present, unless of course, the shooter apparently used a silencer held against the skin.

ENTRANCE
EXIT
1
2
3
1
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
10
HEAD – SURFACE AND SKELETAL ANATOMY, LATERAL VIEW

Angle of bullet path on left showing downward angle. Right: ME’s diagram. (Skull diagram showing bullet path: Craig Roberts; Autopsy head diagram Oklahoma City’s Medical Examiner’s Office)

While Dr. Larry Balding, Oklahoma City’s Chief Medical Examiner, quickly ruled the death a “suicide,” another Medical Examiner’s report would, according to Rivera, surface like an eerie, prescient message from the grave. This other report, quickly redacted and hidden from public view, showed a face that was bruised and swollen; blood on the body and clothes that was not the dead man’s blood type; and multiple deep lacerations filled with grass and dirt, as though the body had been dragged a distance.

Yet according to Rivera, Maj. Upchurch denied that Yeakey’s throat was slashed at all. Rivera was later told by a sympathetic police dispatcher that his throat was indeed slashed—deeply.

Dr. Larry Balding, who signed off on the Yeakey report, is adamant. “I can tell you unequivocally and without a doubt that there was no other ME report.”

Yet while attending a social function, Rivera claims her sister had a chance encounter with the mortician who worked on Yeakey’s body. She was discussing the strange inconsistencies of his death with someone at the party, when the mortician, not knowing the woman was Rivera’s sister, spoke up. “That sounds just like a police officer we worked on in Oklahoma City,” he said. When asked if that man happened to be Terrance Yeakey, the mortician “freaked.”

When pressed, he told the shocked relative that the dead man’s wrists contained rope burns and handcuff marks. A former FBI agent and police officer, the mortician said that Yeakey’s lacerations were already sewn up when the body arrived from the Medical Examiner’s office. Dr. Balding’s response to this was that the marks were merely “skin slippage,” resulting from the natural decomposition of the body. The funeral director also informed Rivera that the cuts that had been sewed up had contained dirt and grass in them, as if after being cut he was dragged over the ground. Or, maybe he was crawling after being cut trying to get away from his attackers.

Yet stranger still, the body was not supposed to go to this particular funeral home at all, but to one in Watonga. While the OCPD was supposed to pay the expenses of the funeral, no funds were ever allocated, according to Rivera. “Vicki had to pay off the burial to Russ Worm [Funeral Home]. So I wonder if we paid somebody off to do the job.”

Was that job to clean up Yeakey so that his manner of death wouldn’t appear suspicious?

962053color.jpg
Zoom
Move
Select
Annotate
Sidebar
Search
MEDICAL EXAMINER
LAHOMA CITY, OKLA.
9 6 2 0 5 3 5 09 96
5 9 '96

Sgt. Terry Yeakey's body showing damage to face and head (Photo: Oklahoma City Medical Examiner's office, courtesy of the Yeakey family)

This incident is similar to the murder of President Kennedy, whose body was taken to Bethesda Naval Hospital (by way of Walter Reed for a brief stop) instead of being examined by the Dallas Medical Examiner as is standard procedure. Once there, military pathologists and those controlling them were able to skew their findings to the satisfaction of the murderers. The chief pathologist burned his notes, and years later, when researchers went to examine Kennedy's brain, which was kept in a stainless steel lidded bucket, it was found missing from the National Archives. However, one of the Navy corpsmen who was at the autopsy at Bethesda insists that when Kennedy's body arrived there, the skull was empty. He swore "there was no brain! His skull cavity was empty!"

Apparently, Terrance Yeakey's murderers and those covering up his death had not counted on this particular mortician's story to Rivera.

Was Terrance Yeakey tortured? Was he murdered, then made to look like a suicide? Did he know something he wasn't supposed to know, or was he simply despondent over life's circumstances?

Said friend Kimberly Cruz, “I don’t believe he would have done something like that. He was always happy and joking a lot.”

Another friend, Karen Von Tungeln, said, “[Terry and I] talked about a friend in high school who had committed suicide, and how stupid and selfish he was for having done so. ‘I just can’t understand it man,’ said Terry. ‘It makes no sense to me.’”

PHONE NO. : [redacted]

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION BY MEDICAL EXAMINER

TERRANCE YEAKEY	30	11-[illegible]-1965	BLACK	MALE	DIVORCED

4020 S. DOUGLAS, OKLAHOMA CITY, OK — POLICE OFFICER

TYPE OF DEATH: (Check one only)
- While in penal incarceration ☐
- After unexplained coma ☐
- During therapeutic procedure ☐
- Death possible threat to public health ☐
- Unattended stillbirth or by midwife only ☐
- Unattended during fatal illness ☐
- Found dead without obvious cause ☐
- *Under suspicious circumstances ☐
- *Violent, unusual or unnatural ☒
- *Means: GSW

If motor vehicle accident, check one of the following: DRIVER ☐ CYCLIST ☐ PASSENGER ☐ PEDESTRIAN ☐

LT BOYLE, OCPD			05-08-96	2315
2 MI W. OF EL RENO REFORMATORY	EL RENO	FIELD	05-08-96	1800
2 MI W. OF EL RENO REFORMATORY	EL RENO	FIELD	05-08-96	1800
901 N. STONEWALL	OKLAHOMA CITY	MORGUE	05-09-96	OBW

DESCRIPTION OF BODY — EXTERNAL PHYSICAL EXAMINATION

Rigor: Complete ☒ — Livor: Color: MAROON — Clothing ☒ — Hair: BLK — Circumcised: NO — Eyes Color: BRN — LENGTH 73" — WEIGHT 115#

THRU & THRU GUNSHOT TO HEAD ĉ HARD CONTACT ENTRY (BARREL IMPRINT & SOOT). MULTIPLE SUPERFICIAL INCISED WOUNDS TO WRISTS & NECK & ANTECUBITAL FOSSA. SEE CME 186 & 15 : EARLY DECOMPOSITION/SKIN SLIP

GUNSHOT WOUND TO HEAD

Manner of death: (Check one only)
- Natural ☐ Accident ☐
- Suicide ☒ Homicide ☐
- Unknown ☐ Pending ☐

Case disposition:
Autopsy: Yes ☐ No ☒
Authorized by
Pathologist
Not a medical examiner case ☐

MEDICAL EXAMINER
LARRY E. BALDING, M.D.
901 NORTH STONEWALL
OKLAHOMA CITY, OKLA. 73117
(405) 239-7141

I hereby state that, after receiving notice of the death described herein, I conducted an investigation as to the cause and manner of death, as required by law, and that the facts contained herein regarding such death are true and correct to the best of my knowledge and belief.

Signature of Medical Examiner

County of Appointment: OKLAHOMA — Date: 05-09-1996

9602053

FULL BODY, MALE – ANTERIOR AND POSTERIOR VIEWS (VENTRAL AND DORSAL)

SHORT DARK HAIR
SUPERFICIAL INCISIONS
SKIN SLIP - GREENISH DISCOL.
BLK T SHIRT
BL JEANS
ATH SHOES
W SOX

Name YEAKEY, TERRANCE 115# 73" Case No. 9602053

CME-186 (Series 1978) Date 5-9-96

Yeakey's "Report of Investigation by Medical Examiner (Left). Diagram showing cuts and ligature marks (Right). Report shows cause of death "gunshot wound to head."

If the officer was bent on taking his life, it would appear strange, since he had spent most of the previous month taking entrance exams for the FBI. Yeakey and best friend Barry McCrary were looking forward to becoming FBI agents. Perhaps if he had known the role that the FBI played in the bombing, perhaps even in his own death, he would have changed careers.

Terrance Yeakey was one of the first rescuers in the Murrah Building on April 19. Had he seen something he wasn't supposed to see? Had he heard something he wasn't supposed to hear?

One afternoon, while the family was at Police Headquarters, an officer who Rivera described as Yeakey's "only true friend," pulled them off to the side, and whispered "They killed him."

David Hoffman wrote to then-chief Sam Gonzales, who attended the scene of Yeakey's death on February 6th, 1997, asking for "all investigative case files on the death of Office Terrance Yeakey, which occurred in early May of 1996." Writing as a journalist on *Haight Ashbury Free Press* letterhead, he stated that "the case is not a juvenile matter, an internal affairs matter, or an ongoing investigation, so no legal reasons existed that the OCPD would not produce the records."

Gonzales' response in a letter dated February 14th, 1997, stated that Title 51, Oklahoma State Statutes, Section 1991, "mandates the release of official offense information by law enforcement agencies, but does not (highlighted) mandate the release of subsequent police investigative reports…For this reason, your request…is denied." Actually, there is no "Section 1991 in Title 51 of the Oklahoma State Statutes. The section dealing with disclosure of public records is 24A.8, "Law Enforcement Records—Disclosure." Police departments are mandated to provide the "original offense report(s), but not supplemental investigative reports (or any juvenile crime reports). In the Yeakey case, there should have been provided all original offense/investigation reports by the various investigators, whether one page or more. That didn't happen.

Gonzales (or a staff member) attached the initial form, a one page Crime Report by an officer Timothy Brown. The report is not the initial crime report, and there would have been initial "first page" crime reports by other officers at the scene. This report, which had been carefully cherry picked for lack of content, only read in the synopsis:

"On 5/08/96, 2025 hours [9:25 pm] I was advised by Capt. Armer V-2 to meet major Upchurch at the above listed location in reference to a signal 7. Upon arrival. 2120 Hours., a crime scene log was made. 2200 Hrs., Brown's wrecker arrived and moved the victim's vehicle to the city garage for homicide units. Impound sheet #210899."

What happened to the first OCPD officers to arrive reports? There had to be several that were releasable to the public, and for sure to representatives of the media. But Gonzales would not release anything other than the above. What was he hiding?

Hoffman also wrote the FBI asking for information on Yeakey, if they had any. The response in a letter dated February 19th, 1997, from Supervisory Agent Richard R. Baker on behalf of SAC Thomas M. Kuker was simply "We will be unable to respond to your inquiry due to current U.S. Department of Justice media policies and guidelines."

In other words, the Janet Reno/Eric Holder DoJ had issued instructions, not referring to any laws as such, to the FBI to have the discretion of what not to release in any case nationwide. It would take a FOIA lawsuit, which is seldom adequately responded to, to make the FBI give up any records.

After Gonzales retired in 1998, the police department got a new chief of police, M.T. Berry. I decided to follow up on Hoffman's request with this new chief, except what I would do instead is formally request that the investigation into Yeakey's death be re-opened. I wrote the letter on Consolidated Press International letterhead, which was the publishing company I started when I retired in 1996 from Tulsa PD. The letter, dated June 12, 1998, after detailing inconsistencies with what I and others discovered in the original investigation, asked that the case be looked into again. I didn't expect much, but I did want to see what the reply would be. There's an old saying in the military "fire a shot down range and see who looks up!"

I wrote in the letter "On April 21, 1995, I was requested to assist the FBI in investigating the bombing of the Murrah Building. This was due to my contacts in the intelligence community and other contacts established during my various investigative journalist endeavors. In the following 12 months I became very disenchanted with the manipulations of various so-called law enforcement agencies. I personally witnessed or was advised of situation wherein witnesses were intimidated, evidence was lost or destroyed—or ignored, certain suspects were protected and not arrested, and various coverups were initiated. One of the cases involves Terrance Yeakey's death.

"I am writing to officially request that you reopen the investigation in the death of Sgt. Terrance Yeakey. I am doing so as I am sure that you and I both know that it is a blatant case of homicide involving torture, intimidation, and finally death. It is a very weak attempt by the perpetrators to make it appear a suicide."

The letter went on to list ten facts about the case that proved it was not what was determined to be a suicide, and also asked if a gun was found at the scene when the body was first discovered, what kind of gun and what caliber it was?

The three page letter went on to reconstruct what probably did happen that day in my opinion:

"Yeakey had documents or information that someone wanted to remove from him. He was followed out of town, but he lost his followers until he dropped off the evidence at some undisclosed location. He was removed from his car, taken out into a field, and threatened and tortured (some of which occurred in the car before removal, leaving blood). He was handcuffed sometime during the event, a rope was put around his neck, and he was helpless to defend himself. He was then dragged further into the field, sometimes regaining his feet, sometimes being dragged—hence the mud and grass in the slash wounds). Eventually his captors either found out what they wanted to know (where the evidence was secreted) or decided that he had to be eliminated. It was then that he was executed by gunshot. It appears that he was on his knees and someone stood to his right side, placed a silenced small caliber handgun against his temple and shot at the downward angle. He was left at the scene."

Since I wrote that letter and description of the scenario, I've since began to think that Yeakey was stopped on the road while trying to get away from pursuers, attacked in his car before he could get out, or refused to get out, then dragged out of his car at which time he was chased into the field, to the fence, then beyond until they caught up with him. At that time they handcuffed him and forced him to his knees (not an easy task since he was 6'3" and weighed in at about 250 pounds). It was there he was slashed over and over and asked questions—if his captors didn't care about getting information from him and simply wanted to silence him, they would have shot him in his car and made THAT look like suicide. When they got what they wanted, or failed to get it, they shot him execution style through the head—but at the wrong angle probably because he moved his head away from the barrel of the gun and then they held his head to fire the shot. This is the only scenario that makes sense to me and matches the evidence.

If Yeakey did indeed have a gun with him, why didn't he use it to defend himself when he was stopped on the road or attacked in his car? We'll never know.

If there was a Smith & Wesson 9mm pistol at the scene, but no gun was found until after Chief Gonzales and FBI agent Ricks arrived, then it was probably what is known as a "throw down," a gun left at the scene as "evidence" when there was none previously.

The letter I got back from Chief Berry was almost insulting, accusing me of distorting the facts of a simple, but tragic, suicide of a police officer. No action be taken. It was terse and not very professional considering that it was from one law enforcement officer to another. In it he wrote:

"I received your letter dated June 12, 1998. After careful review of its contents, I found it to contain a number of allegations and unsupported claims. The citizens of Oklahoma City along with the employees of the Oklahoma City Police Department have suffered through one of the most devastating events in American history…I have reviewed the investigative records surrounding the death of Officer Terrance Yeakey. I, along with the on scene investigators believe that Sergeant Yeakey's death was nothing more than a tragic suicide of a police officer…If you have any eye witnesses or supporting evidence contrary to our findings, or information which support the allegations listed in your letter, please come forward with them. We will be more than willing to interview witnesses or examine any new evidence." It was signed M.T. Berry Chief of Police.

He knew that neither I, nor anyone else, could provide "eye witnesses." There was plenty of supporting evidence in the OCPD files—if it had not been destroyed. There was nothing else I could do at this time so I filed the letter—and posted it on my website.

Not one to let a sleeping dog lie, when Berry retired in October 2003, Oklahoma City got a new chief, William Citty.

In May of 2006, after getting re-settled in a new home, I had the desire to attempt one more time to re-open the Yeakey case under the new chief. In May of that year I wrote another letter detailing basically what was in the first letter to Berry, and ended it with "I know that your homicide investigators have many current cases to work. But this victim is one or your officers, and I know that in the Tulsa Police Department, we would not rest until we got to the bottom of the officer's death and put all questions to rest. This is my last request to the OCPD to look into this case, and I am doing so to ease my conscience of what I believe to be an unsolved homicide of a police officer and a subsequent cover-up. There are just too many discrepancies and unanswered questions in this case that need to be addressed honestly. Perhaps you might take more interest in this matter than your predecessor." I ended with "Thank you for taking the time to read this letter, and I wish you the best as Chief of a very fine police department."

I sent him autopsy drawings, showing the path of the bullet, and the ten questions/facts that I had previously sent Gonzales.

Citty's return letter to me was even more terse than Berry's. Citty wrote:

"Dear Mr Roberts,

"Please be advised I received your letter dated May 1, 2006. As your letter indicated this is not the first time you have written the Oklahoma City Police Department regarding your concerns about Sergeant Yeakey's death. As a result of your first letter dated June 12, 1998, Chief M.T. Berry requested a review of the investigation. On June 19, 1998, he wrote you a letter and advised the review had not changed the final disposition of Mr. Yeakey's death. Further, he requested you provide proof of your allegations or have the alleged eyewitnesses come forward. your current correspondence does not provide further proof of your allegations nor does it identify any potential witnesses. After receiving your most recent letter, I once again had Sergeant Yeakey's case reviewed by my staff. I find nothing in the investigator's case file or from the information you have provided that changes the finding of suicide. Again, if you have any proof of your allegations or additional witnesses, please provide me with the information." It was signed William Citty, Chief of Police.

Again, the top brass at OCPD was not only not interested in reopening the investigation, but was hostile in their reply.

Back when I was traveling to Oklahoma City to interview people and attend meetings, I had occasion to meet several OCPD officers. In one particular meeting, over breakfast at a Pancake House, where about ten officers and one chaplain (not Poe) attended, the conversation was about what really happened on April 19th and the following weeks and months. We also discussed the Yeakey death. What I was told by the officers was that everyone in the lower ranks felt it was a homicide, and it was a huge coverup at the highest levels.

I asked them why they didn't come forward with their accusations and mentioned that if it happened in Tulsa, I and others I know would be all over the case. The response was that everyone was told to keep their mouths shut on the bombing, and also on the Yeakey case.

That would not have stopped me or my department. In fact, it would have added fuel to the fire. I don't intimidate and I don't scare, and I know of few others on the Tulsa Police Department that would drop a case like this. It was hard for me to imagine what it would take to so intimidate the rank-and-file of the Oklahoma City Police Department.

Upon leaving the meeting I was approached by one of the officers in the parking lot who I won't identify. He said that he thought he might have what the killers were looking for besides documents, reports, and photos. He handed me a computer disk that Yeakey gave to him for safe keeping. He said “I can’t tell what’s on this disk because I don’t know how to open the files. But whatever is on it might have been the reason Terry was killed.”

Needless to say, I couldn’t wait to “crack the code.” After I returned home I put the disk in my computer and brought up the files. The extension was something I didn’t recognize, and for some reason none of the files would open. But, not to be discouraged, I did have another mode of attack. I had a life-long buddy with whom I went to high school with, a computer guru with Los Alamos National Laboratory who, if anyone could, would know how to open the files.

I called him on the phone and explained the situation. He took it as a challenge and asked that I copy the disk and send it to him as a precaution to having it getting lost.

About a week later he called me. “You say this is from someone that’s involved in the Oklahoma City bombing investigation?”

I affirmed it was.

“Well, that is most interesting. What you have are daily and hourly graphs from nuclear monitors that record any radioactivity in the area. They’re mostly used by FEMA and the EPA. The detectors let FEMA and EPA know if there is any radiation in the air. These graphs spike on April 18th, 19th and 20th.”

Radioactivity? How could that be? But I couldn’t help but wonder if there was some kind of mini-nuke or “back pack” nuke, a military SADM (Special Application Demolition Munition) used that would have been responsible for the large crater in the back of the “cut” in the building that no one could explain. The military had them for use by Special Forces to demolish bridges, road intersections and other structures in case of war.

As soon as I was told what the disk contained I made several copies and put them with trusted people all over the country in envelopes that said “in case of my death open and distribute—a full report is inside.”

If the scenario of a sting operation gone bad was true, there would be no reason for a mini-nuke, if indeed there was one—to be in the building. But if the scenario of the Mena Iran/Contra/Clinton/Bush records were in the Murrah Building, as I was told, that would open up a whole new scenario.

We may never find out what happened to Terry Yeakey on that fateful day. But one thing is for sure. It wasn’t a suicide.

According to the Oklahoma City Police Department Terry Yeakey was fired from the department the day before his “suicide.” I wonder if he even knew that.

Two of the graphs on Yeakey’s computer disk. Graph on the left shows little activity on April 6th, 1995. Graph on the right shows huge spike on April 19th, 1995. Time at bottom of graph is elapsed time of event. Was this computer disk what Yeakey’s killers were looking for?

MEDICAL EXAMINER

CERTIFICATE OF DEATH

STATE OF OKLAHOMA – DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH

TERRANCE E. YEAKEY
05-08-1996*FOUND*
MALE
BLACK
30
11-9-1965
CANADIAN
EL RENO
☐ ☒
2½MI W. OF EL RENO REFORMATORY
OKLAHOMA
U.S.A.
☐ ☒
445-66-0453
POLICEMAN
OKLAHOMA
OKLAHOMA
OKLAHOMA CITY
☒ ☐
4820 S. DOUGLAS
ZARAKOV YEAKEY
JUANITA NICHOLSON
VICKIE JONES
533 S. FRANCIS EL RENO, OKLAHOMA 73772

GUNSHOT WOUND TO THE HEAD

9602053

☐ ☒

SUICIDE
FOUND
05-08-1996
UNKNOWN
SELF INFLICTED
☐ ☒
FIELD
2½MI W. OF EL RENO REFORMATORY
315
1800 FOUND*
LARRY E BALDING M.D.
05-09-1996
901 N. STONEWALL OKLAHOMA CITY OK 73117
BURIAL
MAY 11, 1996
EL RENO CEMETERY
EL RENO OKLA
RUSSWORM FH WATONGA OKLA 73772
KENNETH RUSSWORM
MAY 13 1996
MAY 13 1996

State Department of Health
State of Oklahoma
OKLAHOMA CITY, OKLAHOMA 73152

ROGER C. PIRRONG
STATE REGISTRAR OF VITAL STATISTICS

CERTIFIED COPY MUST HAVE EMBOSSED SEAL

I hereby certify the foregoing to be a true and correct copy, original of which is on file in this office. In testimony whereof, I have hereunto subscribed my name and caused the official seal to be affixed at Oklahoma City, Oklahoma this date.

Sgt Terry Yeakey's Death Certificate, obtained by producers of the documentary "A Noble Lie" in 1996. Note cause of death was gunshot wound to head and was "self inflicted."

CHAPTER 17

Federal Denial With Media Reinforcement

If you repeat a lie often enough, it becomes the truth. If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people wil eventually come to believe it.”—Joseph Goebbels, Nazi Propaganda Minister

”We are going to impose our agenda on the coverage by dealing with the issues and subjects we choose to deal with.” —Richard M. Cohan, Senior Producer of CBS News

There is an old saying in the news media: “Never let the truth stand in the way of a good story.” Another version, more in line with the law enforcement and judicial systems is “Never let the facts ruin a good investigation.” In the Oklahoma City bombing case, both statements have rung true.

From the very beginning the case changed from an “investigation” to one of damage control. Beginning with the Day One news releases stating that the explosion (singular) was a car bomb in a station wagon, then progressed to a pickup truck, then finally a Ryder truck as more and more explosive experts came forward to declare that the massive amount of damage could not have been accomplished with such a small amount of ammonium nitrate and diesel fuel in the smaller vehicles. Then, broadcasting all-points-bulletins (APBs), and attempt-to-locate bulletins (ATLs) to all law enforcement organizations, cancelling such bulletins shortly afterwards. Finally, having a John Doe #2 that was described on the scene as Middle Eastern, then quickly changing that on Day Three when AG Janet Reno and President Bill Clinton stated to the media (and the FBI agents) that “there is no Middle Eastern connection to the bombing.”

In the following days and weeks the government version, casting McVeigh and Nichols as the only villains (with the exception of Michael Fortier who played a small but ancillary role), was carried on by most of the media with few exceptions. The national main-stream networks were on board with the Clinton government press releases without question, and by June of 1995 almost all media reporting outside the state of Oklahoma regarding the bombing case ceased to exist.

Add to that the fact that none of the voices of people who lived here, witnessed the event, were victims of the bombing, or were investigating all the real leads would not only not be heard, but would be attacked—if not ignored completely.

All of us who, over time, discovered there was more to the story than what the public was being fed by the government and the media, suffered various parts of the “Five D’s”: Deny (or Denounce), Debunk, Discredit, Demonize and/or Destroy.

First, anything that turned up that was important to the case that should have been a major media story was denied to be of value or factual by the media and by federal law enforcement. Next, if those entities had to address the information at all, they did what they could to Deny anything that was not in the script. Next, Debunk it. Say that a particular lead was followed and proved irrelevant, or that such-and-such information was incompetent or immaterial. Make it not real. Give an alternate version or a different explanation. Do whatever it took to shove the information or the story aside or bury it.

Failing that, or along with it, Discredit the source. That is the major tool of the propaganda machine disguising itself as the "media." Seldom did any federal officials directly attack any one individual or group that contested the government version, but instead they had the media do it for them. The main thrust of this tactic was to discredit the individual or group (such as Key's OBIC and efforts to form a Grand Jury).

Almost from the very beginning the major Oklahoma newspapers and some of the television stations accepted the government version of the event without question and ignored any other information to the contrary. The only news that was reported as it changed was the question of what to do with the Murrah Building, McVeigh's and Nichols current locations and status, and most of all any attacks that could be mounted against those who asked questions or demanded answers.

As an example, there was one (of several) political cartoons in the *Tulsa World* that showed Rep. Charles Key in a negative light. One even depicted him as the Mad Hatter and those around him in various wacko outfits. It did not matter that the main issue with Key and the OBIC was to ascertain if the government had foreknowledge of the bombing or not—no matter what evidence for that scenario existed. The mission of the newspaper editors was to publicly discredit him and other members of the Committee, and debunk anyone's evidence that would reinforce Key's findings.

The next tactic that was employed early-on was to Divert the investigation, both in the government efforts and in the minds of the public. The main culprits in this were Morris Dees' Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC), a very left wing organization that makes its money not from practicing law, but by selling fear and hate via its newsletters and the "intelligence information" it provides the media and government agencies. They, and the Anti-Defamation League, were the first ones to blame the militias and the Right Wing. They were quickly followed by the so-called Political Research Institute, a left-wing propaganda group that fed anti-Right Wing rhetoric to the media. The main "journalist" involved was one Chip Berlet who describes his work as "Scholarly study of right-wing social and political movements and trends in the United States."

All three of these worked endlessly to divert the investigation by the FBI and DoJ to the Right Wing, from various militias to Right Wing talk radio hosts, and even organizations such as the NRA, Gun Owners of America, and Jews for the Preservation of Firearms.

What really stood out to me was the apparent connection between Morris Dees, who is anti-Christian, (but not Jewish—claims to be Unitarian), and Abraham Foxman, who was at that time head of the Anti-defamation League of the *B'nai B'rith*.

Dees made his fortune in selling fear. According to discoverthenetworks.org : "Dees is known to be the architect of one of SPLC's most effective—and most controversial—tactics: exaggerating the prevalence and capabilities of racist and extremist rightwing groups operating in the United States in order to frighten supporters into donating money to SPLC.

"Many critics charge that this fundraising revenue, instead of bankrolling SPLC's civil rights work, is funneled disproportionately into the coffers of SPLC officers like Dees. Several studies conducted in the 1990s indicated that Dees and other top SPLC figures earned significantly higher salaries than the leaders of most non-profit organizations.

"Because SPLC perennially disburses twice as much on fundraising as it does on legal services (while skimming off substantial amounts of revenue for its own endowment), Dees' income has provoked accusations of fraud. Stephen Bright, a director of the Southern Center for Human Rights, a leftwing Atlanta-based group that opposes the death penalty, put it bluntly in a 1996 letter to Dees, in which he denounced the latter as a "a fraud and a con man," and upbraided Dees because "you spend so much, accomplish so little, and promote yourself shamelessly."

"JoAnn Wypijewski, who writes for the far-left *Nation* magazine, says: "No one has been more assiduous in inflating the profile of [hate] groups than [SPLC's] millionaire huckster, Morris Dees, who in 1999 began a begging [fundraising] letter, 'Dear Friend, The danger presented by the Klan is greater now than at any time in the past ten years.'" To put Dees's claim in perspective, the Klan, by that time, consisted of no more than 3,000 people nationwide—a far cry from the 4 million members it had boasted in the 1920s. Nonetheless, Wypijewski notes, "Dees would have his donors believe" that cadres of "militia nuts" are "lurking around every corner."

The Clinton administration, including Janet Reno, as well as key personnel in the media knew Dees was a con man and a huckster, but he was a source of Discredit and Destroy information that could be credited to the SPLC, thereby giving him and his organization national attention, credibility, and most of all free advertising. It would be a huge revelation later in the investigation when we discovered links between Andreas Strassmeir and the SPLC.

In 2000, the SPLC coffers exceeded $120 million. Dees hate mongering has been very successful.

Abraham "Abe" Foxman, whose real name when he was born in Russia was Henry Stanislas Kurpi, was head of the Anti-Defamation League from 1987 to 2015. Shortly after the Oklahoma City bombing one of the organizations that quickly began diverting the national attention in the media to the Right Wing and militias was the ADL. Originally founded after the Leo Frank lynching case in 1915 by the Jewish *B'nai B'rith* organization, the ADL has opposed groups and individuals it considered to be anti-Semitic and/or racist, including: Nazis, the Ku Klux Klan, Henry Ford, Father Charles Coughlin (leader of the Christian Front), the Christian Identity movement, the German-American Bund, neo-Nazis, the American militia movement and white power "skinheads." The ADL publishes reports on a variety of countries, regarding alleged incidents of anti-Jewish attacks and propaganda. The functions of the ADL and SPLC quickly become apparent, and so is their means of financial support. Without being able to peddle misinformation or inflated information, neither could function.

Representative Charles Key's Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Commission, truthful and accurate media, legitimate law enforcement, and groups such as our Baker Street Irregulars didn't stand much of a chance against the money and influence these organizations could muster.

It has been said that a lie, repeated often enough, is accepted as the truth. That is actually a quote by Vladimir Lenin, later taken up by Nazi propaganda minister Josef Goebbels, who is quoted as saying:

"*If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.*"

This is exactly what we were up against with both the national media, much of the local media, and the Clinton administration. They had the Big Lie(s), and we were like Agent Mulder in the fictional television series *The X-Files*: "The Truth is Out There…."

It was code-named *Operation Mockingbird*. It is the CIA operation in which the Agency has placed its own personnel, or those individuals considered "friendlies" to the Agency, into carefully selected positions in the news media. From newspapers to magazines, TV networks to book publishers, and even in advertising agencies, the CIA has the means to manipulate what is presented to the public. Even though the CIA is prohibited by law from operating inside the United States, that law is totally ignored. I know this because on two occasions I discovered that they even had agents in Tulsa. I stopped one when I was on patrol in downtown Tulsa and a car turned left onto a one-way street in the wrong direction. The driver obviously didn't know Tulsa very well. When I stopped the car, the driver was somewhat irate, but very anxious. As soon as I walked up to the car I saw him talking into a hand-held radio saying "I've lost him."

I knew all the FBI and ATF agents in Tulsa at that time and knew this was not an agent from any of our local offices. I also had the license plate come back to a leased car that could not be traced to anyone in particular.

When I asked for a driver's license the driver, who was alone in the car, he instead showed me his credentials and said "I'm in a hurry." The card in the leather case said "Central Intelligence Agency." I said "I thought you guys were not supposed to operate inside the country. His response was "I'm not here."

Naturally I got him turned around and let him go. I don't know who he and his team were following, or why, but as a military officer with a Top Secret security clearance, I knew better than to ask. I didn't have a "need to know."

The second occasion was when I tried to explain to Pete at the FBI office about the possible connections to Mena and drug smuggling to the case, his response was "do you want to talk to a CIA agent about this? I can give them a call."

Obviously that would be the last person I'd want to talk about drug smuggling to, so my answer was "not necessary."

Agents of Operation Mockingbird, (now under another code name), attempted to keep two of my books from being published or distributed. *Kill Zone—A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza* was the first. Then when I wrote *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government*, my agent in New York City could not find a publisher who would take the book. I knew it was at that time the best book I'd ever written. I had already published, through Simon & Schuster, four books, but even they turned down the manuscript. My agent said that he'd tried ten different publishing houses, including two small ones in Washington D.C., and none of them "would touch it."

It was about two weeks later that I received a call from the editor at Pocket Books who I had dealt with in the past. He called on a Saturday, from his home, and said "You need to get that book in print! This is a book that the American people need to read!" I asked "If it's so good, why don't you take it?"

"I'd lose my job. The government has agents in every publishing house of any size, and every magazine and newspaper to make sure that certain things are never published."

"So you mean the CIA?" I asked.

"You said it, I didn't," he replied.

I knew of Mockingbird. It had been around since the 1950s, and I knew that if that was what was standing in the way of publishing *Medusa*, I'd go another route. I did it by forming my own publishing company, Consolidated Press International, which proved very successful after I retired from the police department. It was through CPI that I not only published seven of my own books, but three books for other authors.

Carl Bernstein, the investigative journalist from the Washington Post, who along with Bob Woodward, using their informant "Deep Throat," was partly responsible for bringing down the Nixon administration 1n 1974. Deep Throat came forward years later, shortly before his death, and admitted to being the informant. He was Mark Felt, who during the 70s, was second in command at the FBI! Bernstein describes the CIAs involvement in the media and Mockingbird:

"The use of journalists has been among the most productive means of intelligence-gathering employed by the CIA. Further investigation into the matter, CIA officials say, would inevitably reveal a series of embarrassing relationships in the 1950s and 1960s with some of the most powerful organizations and individuals in American journalism.

"Among the executives who lent their cooperation to the Agency were Williarn Paley of the Columbia Broadcasting System, Henry Luce of Time Inc., Arthur Hays Sulzberger of the *New York Times,* Barry Bingham Sr. of the *LouisviIle Courier-Journal,* and James Copley of the Copley News Service. Other organizations which cooperated with the CIA include the American Broadcasting Company, the National Broadcasting Company, the Associated Press, United Press International, Reuters, Hearst Newspapers, Scripps-Howard, *Newsweek* magazine, the Mutual Broadcasting System, the *Miami Herald* and the old *Saturday Evening Post,* and *The New York Herald-Tribune.*

"By far the most valuable of these associations, according to CIA officials, have been the *New York Times,* CBS and Time Inc."

William S. Paley of CBS worked hand-in-glove with the CIA during the anti-Castro and Bay of Pigs invasion operations. Henry Luce had Life Magazine when JFK was assassinated, and was the man responsible for buying the Zapruder film of the assassination "for news purposes," then having it altered by removing key frames before it could be viewed by the public.

After my books *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza* and *The Medusa File: Crimes and coverups of the US Government* were printed, they kept disappearing off the book stores computers from the “books in print” files, and if they did appear, the notation was “no longer in print” or “not yet in print.” I had to personally call R.R. Bowker, the Books-in-Print company that serviced the bookstores and on several occasions over a three month period explain that “yes, it is in print and it is available.” Operation Mockingbird, or its follow-on, wanted to make sure that neither book “saw the light of day.”

As this book is being written it has become apparent in an on-going basis how much the media has become nothing more than a propaganda organ for the socialist, globalists, and left wing in general. It did not seem so much so in 1995, but it did not take long for us to see that the media was on one side of the aisle in the bombing story, and truth was on the other.

“The business of the New York journalist is to destroy the truth, to lie outright, to pervert, to vilify, to fawn at the feet of Mammon, and to sell his race and his country for his daily bread.”

-John Swinton,
CEO, New York Times,
New York Press Club April 12, 1953

CHAPTER 18

*Sed quis custodiet ispsos custodies (*Who Watches the Watchers?)

"There is a principle which is a bar against all information, which is proof against all arguments and which cannot fail to keep a man in everlasting ignorance—that principle is contempt prior to investigation.

Herbert Spencer
English philosopher
1820-1903

Where do you go when the very people who are supposed to protect you refuse to acknowledge you, or the facts, or the evidence, or the real bad guys?

As our investigation continued we began to see more and more that no matter what we discovered, who we interviewed, what evidence we gathered, the people and the organizations that should have had the responsibility for listening to us, taking our reports, and doing their best to get to the truth, solve the case, and apprehend the actual perpetrators, refused to do so.

The ATF was pretty much out of the case once the FBI took over early on. The local Tulsa office of the FBI under Supervisory Agent Dave Roberts was ordered to turn over everything they had to the FBI, and to stop all investigative efforts in the case.

The FBI answered to not only the FBI Director, in this case Louis Freeh, but to the Attorney General, Janet Reno, then ultimately to the president, Bill Clinton. After the debacles at Ruby Ridge and Waco, the FBI was manacled and brought in with a choke chain. The conduct of the federal investigation and the findings in this case would be strictly controlled by the White House, then down the chain of command through DoJ, then FBI, and even the CIA and Department of Defense. Laterally, the media was controlled—and used—as well. This would therefore not only limit the information given to the public, but would hinder any outside investigations.

One can add to this what happens when the Five D's are used on innocent witnesses and victims. Sadly, not only did the federal investigators and prosecutors aid in the coverup of the bombing, but so did local government individuals and bodies from Governor Frank Keating, to the Oklahoma County District Attorney Bob Macy, then to the Medical Examiner's office and local media. David Hoffman sent me the following regarding how much of this was happening in Oklahoma City as we were fighting to get to the truth and expose the real villains.

Excerpted from the original disk that Hoffman sent me from his book manuscript *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*:

"Eight months after the bombing, Oklahoma State Representative Charles Key, dissatisfied with the 'official' investigation, attempted to form a state oversight committee. House Speaker Glen Johnson ridiculed Key's efforts, stating his satisfaction with the Justice Department's official fantasy tale. Anyone who subsequently attempted to challenge the government's official line was publicly discredited by Governor Frank Keating, sneered at by Oklahoma State Attorney General Drew Edmondson, and laughed at by the mainstream press.

“The local media provided a convenient platform for Governor Keating to dismiss critics of the government’s handling of the case, including Edye Smith, the mother of a child killed in the day care center of the Murrah Building, Hoppy Heidelberg, who was dismissed from his position on the Grand Jury impaneled to investigate the bombing, and Oklahoma State Representative Charles Key. In an attempt to discredit Heidelberg, Keating headed a carefully orchestrated chorus of media pundits, stating that Heidelberg was “off the reservation.”

“ Keating also joined Oklahoma City TV station KWTV in attacking KFOR’s coverage of the Middle Eastern connection, stating that they lacked integrity.

“He labeled Jim Levine, an attorney who represented several victims *pro bono* in an attempt to release money from the Governor and Mayor’s Victims Relief Funds, a “bottom-feeding” lawyer.

“ For his courageous efforts in uncovering the truth, Keating said Representative Key was ‘baying at the moon.’

Along with bombing victim Glenn Wilburn, Key attempted to impanel a County Grand Jury. Such a jury, operating outside the scope of the federal investigation, would not only have the power to investigate facts ignored by the federal grand jury, but have the power to level criminal obstruction of justice charges against anyone whom they believed might have impeded the investigation. Given the allegations of wrongdoing in the federal investigation, such charges could conceivably be leveled against everyone from the ATF to the Justice Department. The government knew that they had to effectively control and silence any honest agent who wished to step forward with facts and truthful information. The only way to do this would be to control or inhibit the Grand Jury. (In the Oklahoma County grand jury that Representative Key managed to impanel by petition, the government was able to do this by using DA Bob Macy, and not by informing the Grand Jury of their powers and rights. Not only that, it was conducted by keeping many witnesses outside the jury room. Jurors would ask a question, Macy would walk outside to “get the answer,” and then come back and deliver the answer. We discovered later that his answers were not often the same as those he was given by the witness, or the witnesses did not get the same questions that were asked by the jurors).

In one newspaper interview Key explained, “Indisputable proof exists now that the federal grand jury was purposely shielded from witnesses who saw Timothy McVeigh *with other suspects*, both prior to and immediately after the bombing. They may have a good motive for this, but thus far it escapes me—and, I might add, several members of the federal grand jury who witnessed this farce.”

Keating’s response, quoted in *The Daily Oklahoman* was: “I don’t think a legislative committee would contribute one whit of intelligence to this process.”

The Daily Oklahoman and the *Tulsa World*, the state’s two largest dailies, which should have led the pack in ferreting out the truth of this terrible tragedy, instead led the local media chorus with editorials such as one in the *The Daily Oklahoman*, titled, “Drop It, Mr. Key.”

The Daily Oklahoman had opposed Key's mission from the beginning: "State Rep. Charles Key's quest to prove that a government conspiracy played some role in the Murrah Building bombing is a weird and misguided exercise…Oklahoma County District Attorney Bob Macy is correct in appealing a court ruling that allows Key a free hand to seek a county grand jury probe of his 'conspiracy theories.'"

The *Tulsa World* chimed in with editorials such as "Making Tragedy Pay," which labeled Key as a "dedicated hustler" peddling "goofy theories to rightwing-crank audiences." They also accused the representative of profit-making from the sale of his bombing videos, which barely paid for themselves. The fact that Key had recently lost his insurance business due to his tireless efforts investigating the bombing, and was living on his $33,000-a-year salary to support a wife and three children, was not mentioned by the yellow journalists of the *Tulsa World*. The *World* also printed a constant stream of daily political cartoons by an artist named Simpson showing Key as the some wacko lunatic bent on corrupting the government's investigation.

The "truth seekers" of the local media weren't finished either. They eagerly focused on the efforts of Drew Edmondson, who accused Key of proposing a "wasteful witch hunt" and of engaging in "the worst kind of paranoid conspiracy pandering."

One article reported that state Attorney General Drew Edmondson had convinced the State District Attorney's Council to oppose Key's investigative funding bill.

"This is unprecedented, as far as I know, for the Attorney General to go to such lengths with the District Attorneys Council and to use such intemperate language," the soft-spoken Key told *The New American*, the conservative magazine printed by the John Birch Society.

In fact, local radio polls revealed that an overwhelming majority of Oklahomans supported Key's efforts. While the *Tulsa World* and the *Daily Oklahoman* went to extremes to label Key as a "conspiracy nut," they never bothered mentioning that fact.

Naturally, the CIA-connected *Washington Post* would have their say, comparing the "myth" of John Doe 2 to the Loch Ness Monster.

Lead prosecutor Joseph Hartzler added his voice to the ensemble, calling the leads "whacky theories."

Key's grand jury petition was quashed on November 6th, 1995 by District Judge Daniel Owens on the grounds that it would be "re-inventing the wheel."

Key appealed. As his attorney, Mark Sanford stated, "Legally [Owens] didn't have the authority to quash the petition. But because he's a judge he has the power, whether it's legal or not."

Beverly Palmer from Bob Macy's office argued at the appeals hearing in defense of Owens, claiming that the petition was "insufficient on its face," and the request was duplicitous of the federal grand jury's efforts.

Yet, as Appeals Judge Ronald Stubblefield pointed out, nowhere did Judge Owens state why the petition was insufficient. In fact, Stubblefield was highly skeptical that Owens had any facts to advise him properly in his decision. "I question whether Judge

Owens has the discretion” said Stubblefield. “He’s just operating on what he knows about the bombing. Do you think it’s right to make a judgment based on what he reads in the newspaper?”

The same could be said of District Attorney Bob Macy. At the time Hoffman interviewed him, he was collecting information on the case by reading Morris Dees’ *Gathering Storm*, a book attacking the Militia movement. This was a year and-a-half after the bombing—a bombing that occurred right outside Macy’s window. He didn’t know about John Doe 2. He had no idea about the Middle Eastern connection. He didn’t know about Nichols trips to the Philippines, nor about the two Ryder trucks seen on the same day. He had conducted absolutely no investigation.

“I have not seen these things you are talking about right now,” Macy told Hoffman. “When I see the evidence… I haven’t been presented with the evidence.” Macy subsequently claimed that he wanted Hoffman to work with his so-called “task force” that was “investigating” the bombing, but then never called him back.

His attitude was adequately reflected by his Assistant DA, Beverly Palmer. Visibly nervous, Palmer grasped at straws during the appeals hearing, arguing that the grand jury shouldn’t be convened because of the need for “judicial economy,” and that it contravened “public policy concerns.”

“What policy concerns?” Judge Daniel Boudreau asked.

She didn’t have an answer.

In spite of the efforts of a group of good ole’ boy politicians to sabotage justice, Judge Stubblefield remained firm: “The people have the right to circulate a petition if the people find that things aren’t going the way they ought to be,” he said. “Is it not only the right, but the sanctified right of the grand jury in Oklahoma, to inquire whether a crime is committed? Don’t they have the right to investigate people who they think are involved? This is a highly protected right.”

The Appeals Court upheld Key’s right to petition for a County Grand Jury by a unanimous vote.

Just two months before the hearing Macy claimed that he intended to prosecute McVeigh and Nichols in a state trial on 161 counts of First Degree Murder. “I don’t like taking a second seat to the [federal] prosecution,” Macy stated. “The bombing killed 10 of my friends.”

In a May 24, 1995 letter to Senator Orrin Hatch, one of the original authors of the Anti-Terrorism Bill, Macy wrote:

“First, immediately following the trial or trials in Federal Court, I shall, working in conjunction with the United Sates Department of Justice and the federal law-enforcement agencies investigating the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Building, prosecute the cowards responsible for murdering innocent people in the area surrounding the Federal Building. The State of Oklahoma has an overwhelming, compelling interest to seek and obtain the maximum penalty allowable by law for the senseless and cowardly killings. Not only is it in the interest of the State, it is my sworn duty to seek those sanctions, and I intend to fully carry out my responsibilities…Every day of delay represents a victory for these cowardly cold-blooded killers and another day of defeat and suffering for the victims and all other Americans who cry out for justice."

Macy also impressed his interest in getting at the truth: "I'm prepared to do whatever it takes to get to the truth," Macy said. "My sole intent is in learning the truth!"

Yet when asked if he intended to conduct an investigation independent of the Feds', he said, "Well, I don't want to be a party to anything that will interfere with the Feds' prosecution. I *Don't want to open up a new can of worms*."

After Macy lost the appeals hearing, he met with Wilburn and Key, explaining that he actually wished to cooperate with their investigation. Three days later, the two men discovered that Macy had decided to contest the Appeals Court's decision.

When a furious Key confronted Macy, all that the courageous, truth-seeking DA told him was, "They won't let me." When Key demanded to know who "they" were, Macy just lowered his eyes to the floor and repeated, "They won't let me."

Key later learned who "they" were from a source at ABC News. Macy had received a conference call from Janet Reno's deputy Jamie Gorelick, and the government's lead prosecutor, Joseph Hartzler, along with Governor Keating, Oklahoma City Fire Chief Gary Marrs, and Judge Daniel Owens.

When the grand jury was finally impaneled, federal prosecutors *quickly attempted to block the testimony of federal employees!*

Key also accused Chief Assistant DA Pat Morgan and others in Bob Macy's office of influencing and intimidating witnesses. "I am very upset about it," Key said. "Everyone should be outraged because of this."

Interestingly, during a debate with Representative Key, Keating stated, "Nobody could get away with a cover-up; it would not be tolerated by civilized Oklahoma City.… Nobody's afraid of the truth."

KFOR's Jayna Davis shed some light on the "truth-seeking" efforts of Bob Macy and the good ol' boy network of politicos from which he descends. Two years earlier, after an 8-year-old boy was raped, both Davis and the Public Defender demanded to know why Macy hadn't done anything. When Macy thought the camera was off, he whipped around and sternly admonished the reporter: "Lady, I don't know who you are or where you came from, but this isn't how we do business in Oklahoma!"

Representative Key eventually took the case to the Oklahoma Supreme Court. In his opposing brief, Macy again argued that it would be "a waste of the taxpayers' time and money to convene an Oklahoma County Grand Jury when one was already in session or when a Federal Grand Jury had already heard all available evidence."

All of the "available evidence"? They only saw the so-called "evidence" the government wanted them to see and hear.

The State Supreme Court did not agree with Macy. They unanimously upheld Key's right to impanel the grand jury, which was seated in June of 1997. Unfortunately the outcome was sealed and did nothing to forward the investigation or provide a final honest and proper resolution of the case.

Naturally, the Ministers of Truth at *The Daily Oklahoman* wasted little time, pumping out more bland editorial drivel to muddy the waters. The following quotes, from a piece titled "Conspiracy Theories," focuses on the fact that the County Grand Jury is only exacerbating the "agony" of some victims, who are apparently more concerned with some fairy tale notion of "closure" then in learning the truth:

"Whatever the cause, the delay adds to the agony of those bombing victims who believe the investigation is a waste of time.

"*The Oklahoman* shares that belief, but we are optimistic the probe may satisfy many who are suspicious about events before the bombing. Yet, we wonder if the more conspiratorial-minded will ever be satisfied.… Conflicting conspiracy theories and an olio of circumstantial evidence abound here. Jurors in Denver [at the McVeigh trial under federal judge Matsch] sorted through testimony and found McVeigh guilty. Frustrating as it may be to some, there is little more to this crime than meets the eye. The rest is the stuff of fiction."

The "stuff of fiction"? No matter the evidence, no matter the witness statements, *The Oklahonan*'s attitude was "don't let the truth stand in the way of a good story" and "don't confuse me with the facts, my mind is made up."

By *The Daily Oklahoman*'s account, the numerous credible witnesses who saw Timothy McVeigh with other suspects on the morning of the crime adds up to little more than "circumstantial evidence," while what prosecutors presented at trial—McVeigh's phone calls to chemical companies, his political views, and the emotional tales from bombing victims—are not.

Given the local media's connections to the political network via the Washington-connected Frank Keating, their position is hardly surprising. Famed Watergate journalist Carl Bernstein put some perspective on the matter when he revealed in a 1977 *Rolling Stone* article that over 400 U.S. journalists were employed by the CIA.

These ranged from freelancers who were paid for regular debriefings, to actual CIA officers who worked under deep cover. Nearly every major U.S. news organization has had spooks on the payroll, usually with the cooperation of top management.

The three most valuable assets the CIA could count on were William Paley's CBS, Arthur Sulzberger's *New York Times* and Henry Luce's Time/Life empire. All three bent over backwards promoting the picture of Oswald as a lone nut in the JFK assassination. (For more on this and the similar media manipulation reporting of cases, and of the JFK assassination by the media and the Warren Commission see my books *Kill Zone—a Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza,* and *The Medusa File—Crimes and Coverups of the US Government*").

The political network wasn't finished trying to stop the efforts of Representative Key. On May 7, 1997, Edmondson subpoenaed Key before a multi-county grand jury, alleging that he violated procedures in raising money for the bombing investigation. *The Daily Oklahoman* proudly proclaimed how it had played a critical role in bringing about the investigation of Key:

"The Attorney General's action is a result of an inquiry by *The Oklahoman* about

Key’s seven-page solicitation letter on the Internet. The letter asks for money to ‘secure copies of the voluminous (federal) government documents and to pay independent investigators’ and other expenses for the county grand jury investigation…”.

Bill Graves, an attorney who represented Key at the grand jury inquest, stated: “The law is pretty clear that you are not required to register before you hit the ten thousand dollar threshold, and Charles [Key] had not hit that limit so was not required to register. Edmondson knows that. They’re just trying to slow Charles down or stop him through harassment.” It was obvious that the feds were terrified that someone might uncover the truth concerning the bombing, and more frightening to them, the lies.

“This is all about stopping us and making us shut up, said Key. “If I would just quit the grand jury deal, this would all go away.”

V.Z Lawton, a HUD employee who survived the bombing, said “You don’t have to be that bright or look that hard to see the fraud and hypocrisy in these charges. For over a year-and-a-half, they’ve been doing everything imaginable and employing the most absurd arguments to prevent Charles from impaneling a grand jury to investigate one of the worst crimes in our country’s history. Now, after he’s overcome all of their legal challenges in the courts and is close to getting a county grand jury investigation going, they drag him before a multi-county grand jury for what amounts to jaywalking, while the bombing and other genuine, serious crimes go un-investigated.”

Lawton also brought to the attention of bombing investigators a February 5th, fax transmission to federal employees on the official letterhead of State Attorney General Drew Edmondson (a Democrat like the Clintons). The letter sought signatures from survivors to go with letters that were to be sent to various news organizations. The cover sheet said it came from Richard M. Wintory, Chief Deputy Attorney General of the Criminal Division.

The letter, entitled, “A Plea to the Media from Oklahoma City: Don’t O.J. Us!!!” purports to be a spontaneous response from victims asking the media not to “manipulate” and “exploit” them “for no purpose other than to enhance their ratings on the air and in publications.”

This obvious propaganda counter-offensive was in response to ABC’s January, 1996 20/20, show about prior knowledge. It referred to the “so-called report” by ABC as “tabloid journalism” filled with “unsubstantiated and baseless claims that have been repeatedly debunked.” ABC’s 20/20 had aired a piece on possible government foreknowledge, which was surprising considering it was not following the government script.

“We are appalled at the lack of interest in the truth and the underhanded method utilized by 20/20” stated the letter, which claimed that ABC had wrongfully implied that certain victims agreed with the “paranoid delusion” of the “ridiculous theory of government conspiracy in this crime.” It added that “reporters are sometimes tempted to forget the truth.” Ultimately, it stated, “It is people that matter in this life, not money, nor possessions, nor a Pulitzer Prize.”

This classic PSYOP piece was signed, “Many Survivors and Family Members, Oklahoma City Bombing.”

Survivors Lawton and HUD employee Jane Graham were two who angrily denounced the letter for the sham that it was. “Since the communication was loaded with lies and half truths, I certainly could not sign it,” said Lawton, “and I felt like a state Attorney General could better spend his time supporting an effort to find the truth rather than this transparent effort at helping to hide it.”

“I am angry,” stated Graham in a typed response to the letter, “that the Attorney General’s office would play on the emotions of this office at HUD under the guise of keeping us posted on how they are proceeding and planning the case, causing further emotional turmoil in this office between employees.”

During a June 13, 1997 television interview, Edmondson was asked why those witnesses who saw McVeigh with other suspects were never called to testify at McVeigh’s trial. Edmondson replied that prosecutors usually don’t present witnesses whose testimony isn’t “credible” *or conflicts with other witnesses.*

Rodney Johnson, who saw McVeigh with another man in front of the Murrah Building moments before it exploded, called Edmondson’s statement “misguided.”

“I took those comments to be rather personal,” said Johnson.

Edmondson’s blatant attempt at coercing the victims to pander to the official government line is similar to a letter from a group of victims *suggesting passage of the Anti-Terrorism Bill*. The recipients were urged to call Edmondson if they were interested in participating.

Of course, while Edmondson accused ABC’s 20/20 of “manipulating” and “exploiting” the bombing victims, it was obvious that Edmondson himself spent a great deal of effort to manipulate or exploit anyone who might have facts other than those wanted by the government. Edmondson was and still is a career politician. As of this writing in May, 2017, he has announced his plans to run for governor.

Several months after the scandalous smear campaign against Representative Key, Governor Keating was accused by the Oklahoma Ethics Commission of 32 violations of using state-owned vehicles for political fund-raising, including the state’s $2.9 million airplane. Conveniently forgetting his own dishonest smear attacks against Representative Key, Keating sanctimoniously talked about how the allegations were “irresponsible, silly and completely unjustified.” No doubt the Ethics Commission was “off the reservation,” and “baying at the moon.”

In spite of his unsuccessful attempts to smear honest men like Representative Key, Keating and his political team wasted no time in discrediting Edye Smith, calling her allegations “hysterical.” Smith was the mother of two young boys, Chase and Colton, who perished in the bombing. Smith immediately gained the attention of concerned citizens all across America. Hundreds of thousands of letters and checks began pouring in, and relief agencies used Chase’s photo on a poster memorializing the disaster.

On May 23, the day the Murrah Building was demolished, Edye Smith, in a live interview on CNN, stated “There’s a lot of questions that have been left un-answered. We’re being told to *keep our mouths shut, not to talk about it, don’t ask those questions!”*

CNN’s Gary Truchmann asked Smith to describe the nature of the questions: “We, along with hundreds of thousands of other people want to know, where was the ATF the morning of April 19th? All of their employees survived. They were supposed to be the target of this explosion [according to the government version] and where were they? Did they have a warning sign? I mean, did they think it might be a bad day to go in the office?

"They had an option to not go to work that day," Smith continued, "and my kids didn't get that option, nobody else in the building got that option. And we're just asking questions, we're not making accusations. *We just want to know why and they're telling us, 'Keep your mouths shut, don't talk about it."*

Truchmann quickly ended the interview.

Kathy Wilburn, grandmother of Chase and Colton, was among the first to arrive at the scene of the bombing. She and Smith, both of whom worked at the nearby IRS office, had witnessed the carnage first-hand. When she watched the building come down when the government imploded it to "remove the scar and the memory" (and to hide evidence), an eerie silence came over her. She knew that whatever evidence remained in the building would now be lost forever.

Wilburn's husband Glenn had been a vocal opponent of the government's investigation, and their explanation of the bombing did not sit well with him. The grandfather felt the loss of the two boys keenly. Wilburn had taken it on his own to investigate the bombing, and the facts he was coming up with did not make him happy. They just didn't fit the government version.

On the afternoon the building was demolished, Wilburn received a call from U.S. Attorney Patrick Ryan. Ryan wanted to meet with him and speak with the family.

"They wanted to set our minds at ease in that there wasn't anything sinister going on," said Wilburn.

Two days later Smith and Wilburn were visited by an entourage of federal agents including Ryan, ATF Agents Chris Cuyler and Luke Franey, an IRS Criminal investigator, and a member of Louis Jolyon West's victim's assistance team. When I heard that Dr. "Jolly" West was there I knew that he would try to use his mind control experience on the Wilburns, and Edye Smith if he could.

"They all came in and sat down and said 'We want to answer your questions and make you feel good.' I said 'fine.' Then I looked them right in the eye and said, 'You guys had no indication that April 19th could be a dangerous day down there?' They both answered, 'no sir.'"

"Well, two hours later I turned on the TV, and CNN is interviewing ATF Director John Magaw. The interview starts out, "Mr. Magaw, based on the significance of April 19th, did you take any precautions?'"

"Clearly there was an interest all over the country to do that," replied Magaw. "And I was very concerned about that. We did some things here in headquarters and in all of our field offices throughout the country to try to be more observant.…"

"Well, if there was ever a point that I was hooked into this thing, and there was nothing that was gonna' stop me," recalls Wilburn, "that was it… because by God, somebody lied that morning."

Ryan's conciliatory meeting with the family did not last long. The federal prosecutor became nervous after Wilburn casually mentioned that he had talked to a family lawyer. Ryan quickly got up and left.

While Edye Smith was quoted as saying that she was "satisfied" the agents had explained their whereabouts, she later said, "I can't believe they sat there and lied to us."

The meeting did not go well for the feds that day. The intimidation then began since it was obvious that Smith and the Wilburns would be problems if they didn't cease their inquiries.

Unmarked cars soon began showing up at Glenn Wilburn's house. When Wilburn went out to confront them, they sped off.

Two months later, Edye Smith and Kathy Wilburn had their Workers' Compensation checks cut off. Out of 462 federal employees affected by the blast, they were the only two employees who were mysteriously "denied."

Moreover, out of thousands of checks sent to Smith through the Red Cross, *none were ever received. All the letters had been opened and the checks removed, including some sent via the Governor's and Mayor's offices.* "All the mail that the Red Cross delivered to my house, probably thousands of pieces of mail, *every single piece was opened before I got it*. And it all had my name on it," said Smith.

"We started noticing that the mail that came to the house had money in it," said Kathy Wilburn, "but the majority of the mail that came to us through the Red Cross… it was all opened and there was never a thin dime in any of it."

When Smith called the Red Cross to complain, she was told that her mail wasn't being opened, and that no money was being taken. When Kathy Wilburn confronted the head of the local Red Cross, she was told that their letters were being opened to check for "hate mail." Wilburn told her that the explanation was "ridiculous." It was not the Red Cross's job to open anyone's mail, and is in fact, illegal. But no action was taken against the Red Cross or its leadership.

"A mother sent me a little card that her little boy drew." said Smith, "She said 'my little boy saved this three dollars and wanted you to have it.' And the three dollars was gone."

Keating's answer to the missing funds was weak at best. According to him, interning college students were responsible for the thefts.

A little known bit of history on Keating is that he had worked as an FBI agent during COINTELPRO (the FBI's Counter Intelligence Program of the late-60s to mid 70s), when he personally infiltrated anti-government activist organizations like the Weathermen, the Black Panthers, and the SDS (Students For A Democratic Society), and stated he saw little difference between them and the militias.

Keating also served as Assistant Attorney General under Edwin Meese. Meese was Attorney General during the 1985 fire-bombing of MOVE headquarters. MOVE was a group of black housing activists living in a squatted building in Philadelphia. The satchel charge, dropped from a helicopter by Philadelphia police, resulted in the deaths of over eleven people, including five children, and destroyed several square blocks of the city.

Instead of launching a proper investigation into that matter, Meese's response was "consider it an eviction notice."

Keating served in the Bush administration as Assistant Treasury Secretary during the Iran-Contra investigations. Gene Wheaton, a former Army CID investigator who worked for the Christic Institute, and worked with me on the bombing case, observed that it was George H.W. Bush who personally selected Keating as Assistant Treasury Secretary in 1985, where he supervised INTERPOL, the Customs Service, The Secret Service, and the ATF.

As Wheaton wrote:

"The word in Tulsa is that Bush is his "political godfather;" that Keating got his job in the Treasury Department through Bush's good offices and that Bush "loves Keating." The connection appears to be an old-boy connection through the Southern Hills Country Club in Tulsa, Oklahoma.

"In his position, Keating could control both the investigative and prosecutorial side of any scandal that came his way," adds *Portland Free Press* publisher Ace Hayes. "In 1985 to 1988 guns, drugs, and illegal money were moving all over the globe. Was the ATF, who couldn't find it's butt with both hands, as really as incompetent as it appeared, or was Frank Keating there to make sure they did not?"

In fact, it was while Keating was serving as Assistant Treasury Secretary that IRS investigator Bill Duncan—who was investigating Iran-Contra drug-running activities at Mena—was instructed to perjure himself. As Duncan stated in a deposition before a joint Congressional/Arkansas Attorney General investigative committee:

Duncan: In late December of 1987, I was contacted by [the] Chief Counsel for the House Judiciary Subcommittee on Crime… who told me that they were looking into the reason why no one was indicted in connection with the Mena investigations. The Internal Revenue Service assigned to me disclosure litigation attorneys, *which gave me instructions which would have caused me to withhold information from Congress during my testimony and to also perjure myself.*

Committee: And how did you respond to the Treasury Department?

Duncan: Well, I exhibited to them that I was going to tell the truth in my testimony. And the perjury, subornation of perjury resulted in an—resulted because of an allegation that I had received, that Attorney General Edwin Meese received a several hundred thousand dollar bribe from Barry Seal directly. And they told me to tell the Subcommittee on Crime that I had no information about that.

(*Note: Barry Seal was a drug running pilot who flew cocaine from Columbia, Panama, Nicaragua and Mexico into the US, often through Mena, Arkansas small airport while Bill Clinton was governor of Arkansas—drugs that when sold helped finance the Contras in Nicaragua. Weapons including HAWK missiles for Iran—hence "Iran/Contra"*).

Arkansas State Police investigator Russell Welch, who provided the information to

Duncan, was subsequently poisoned. Two months later, Keating was appointed as Associate Attorney General.

It seems that Frank Keating has served as a point-man, weaving a twisted trail through some of America's most notorious crimes, including Iran-Contra, BCCI, Iraqgate, the Savings & Loan crisis, and…Oklahoma City.

Keating has always been at the nexus bridging the agendas of men like George H.W. Bush, with their elitist agendas, and the subsequent covert-operations and sub-cultures which they spawned. In an article in the *Portland Free Press* entitled "Another Bush Boy," Wheaton wrote:

"The covert-operations 'lunatic fringe' in Washington, which took over key operations at the national security level, [and] still controls them, was Bush's 1981 agenda, and Keating is the next generation to carry it on."

It was only three months after Keating's inauguration as Governor that the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Building occurred. Given his background and grooming, Keating was in a perfect position to direct "damage control." As Wheaton noted:

"Keating is in a perfect position to control the direction and scope of any state investigation which might not correspond to the official federal inquiry."

It appears Keating did just that. As Governor, Keating was in a position to halt the hurried demolition of the Murrah Building, ordered by federal authorities under the guise of "safety," but refused to do so. FBI SAC Bob Ricks, the Special Agent in Charge of the Oklahoma City FBI office, and the FBI PR man who spoon-fed a daily dose of "information" to the press during the Waco siege, was appointed Oklahoma Director of Public Safety by Keating after he retired from the FBI. Keating and Ricks were good friends from college.

The demolition was ordered under the pseudo-psychological premise of providing "closure" to the festering wound hanging over the city. The demolition also effectively prevented any independent forensic investigation of the bomb site.

Said one victim whose spouse was killed in the explosion, "I was upset right from the start when there was the big rush to destroy the crime scene, to take the building down. A lot of important evidence was destroyed that could have helped solve this."

The DoJ's decision to destroy crucial forensic evidence has an eerie parallel to the demolition of Mt. Carmel. The destruction of the Branch Davidian church compound prevented independent examiners from determining that the ATF had fired into the roofs of the building during the early part of the raid. Also, that snipers had deliberately shot people trying to escape, as seen in a FLIR recording from an aircraft circling overhead, a copy of which was later obtained by the NRA and other organizations. With the building gone, there was no way to determine the cause of the fires that were started inside the building after an FBI armored personnel carrier crashed into the gym and remained inside for several minutes. When the APC pulled out, the fires started in that area.

Destruction, and the hauling away and burying of the Murrah Buildings remains (which location was kept fenced and under armed Wackenhut guards) precluded any inspection or analysis by General Partin or attorney Stephen Jones defense team.

The destruction of the Murrah Building is also akin to the Secret Service’s hasty (or carefully planned) decision to illegally remove President Kennedy’s body from Parkland Memorial Hospital in Dallas. Once under control of military officials, including generals and admirals who were possibly involved in the assassination plot, Kennedy’s autopsy could proceed under carefully controlled parameters. While observing the autopsy, these military officials prevented a thorough examination of the body. Back in Dallas, Secret Service agents carefully washed Kennedy’s limousine to remove all traces of bullet and bone fragments, and had Governor Connolly’s clothes, bullet holes and all, cleaned and pressed. They later took the car to an undisclosed location to *replace the windshield which had a bullet hole in it fired from the front!*

Said Jannie Coverdale, who lost her grandsons Aaron and Elijah in the Murrah Building bombing, “Everyone I talk to has the same questions: What happened? What is going on? We don’t want this to be another John F. Kennedy deal, where 32 years later the real story is still unknown.”

CHAPTER 19

The Federal Bureau of Intimidation and the Witnesses

“There is no place on earth where you will be safe from the most powerful forces of justice.”

FBI director Louis Freeh.

In a motion filed by Stephen Jones, affidavits show that numerous witnesses were instructed by the FBI to “keep quiet” so that the facts of the case “wouldn’t get distorted.” This aura of secrecy quickly turned into obstruction of justice, as FBI agents routinely instructed witnesses not to talk to defense team investigators or journalists.

When defense investigator Marty Reed attempted to interview Oklahoma Highway Patrolman Charlie Hanger (the patrolman who arrested McVeigh), he was told by OHP chief legal counsel John Lindsey, “The FBI has requested that no one interview Trooper Charlie Hanger.”

Mitchell Whitmire, who knew McVeigh when they were both in the Army, was contacted by defense investigator Neil Hartley. Whitmire told Hartley he was instructed by the FBI not to talk to anyone about the case unless he obtained permission from the FBI.

When Hoffman tried to interview two members of the Sheriff’s Bomb Squad, they became visibly nervous. They claimed no other bombs were pulled out of the building, clearly contradicting news accounts showing additional bombs that were taken away and detonated.

FBI agents put up a protective perimeter around Eldon Elliott, from the Ryder Truck rental business where McVeigh rented the truck, preventing him from talking to journalists and defense investigators.

KFOR-TV, which took the lead in investigating the case, found it almost impossible to interview witnesses. “We get there and all of a sudden they’ve been told to shut up,” said Melissa Klinzing, KFOR’s former News Director.

A Tulsa fire captain told me he saw black-clad agents with no markings, carrying MP5 sub-machine guns, *removing boxes from the Post Office ten days after the bombing and placing them in an unmarked white truck similar in size to the Ryder truck.* He said that he had traveled to Oklahoma City to film the damage and relief efforts, and when he toured the area he was accompanied by an FBI agent. When they rounded a corner of the nearby post office, which had been used to store medical supplies, he was told to put the camera down and not film the activity in the back on the shipping dock. When he was subsequently interviewed by Hoffman, he denied seeing anything. Could those have been the files that had been removed from the building on Day One?

When he asked the FBI agent what they were taking out of the post office building and putting into the truck, the agent replied “unsent mail.”

Ann Doman, who was in the building at the time for a meeting of INCOG, the Indian Nations Council on Government, originally told a Tulsa police officer she had seen two Middle Eastern males loitering near the front of the Murrah Building just before the blast.

She later, after being contacted by FBI agents, denied saying that.

According to a conversation investigative journalist Jon Rappaport had with *Daily Oklahoman* reporter Ann Defrange, witness Peter Schaffer told Defrange he had seen the Murrah Building collapse in on itself, suggesting that cutting charges were used. When Rappaport questioned Schaffer, he denied seeing the building falling down at all. When Rappaport got back to Defrange, she remained adamant about what Schaffer told her. “She didn’t budge at all,” said Rappaport.

“The FBI must have gotten to him,” said Heidelberg, referring to Schaffer. “You know, the FBI has been able to get witnesses to shut up about important things they know. We’ve talked to some of these people. In certain instances the witnesses believe that concealing evidence is the right thing to do. They really believe it. The FBI has sold them a bill of goods about national security or something like that. In other cases the FBI has used straight-out intimidation on witnesses. They size up people. On one witness they’ll use something like national security. On another, they’ll go for intimidation.”

Heidelberg’s own brush with the government didn’t end with his dismissal from the grand jury. Several minutes after agreeing to do an interview with Jayna Davis, he received a call from U.S. Attorney Joseph Hartzler telling him that a reporter was on her way and that *he was not to talk to her, or he would be arrested*. Obviously, Heidelberg’s phone was tapped.

“They tried everything to shut me up,” said Heidelberg. “They have said they were going to throw me in jail. When that didn’t work, they got down on their hands and knees and begged. I mean… they have tried everything to keep me from talking to the press about this.”

On July 19, FBI agents Jon Hersley and William Teater appeared at Heidelberg’s home, just hours after Judge Russell called him and discovered that he had taken his grand jury notes home. Apparently Teater wasn’t too pleased with Heidelberg’s casual attitude. At one point, he pulled back his jacket, revealing his gun, which he had conspicuously stuck in his waist belt.

“They were trying to impress upon me the seriousness of… they were trying to give me the message that this is big time, that this is heavyweight,” said Heidelberg, “and I was supposed to be frightened… Guns mean business… I was supposed to behave and be a good boy and not give them any trouble. The implication was that they were gonna’ shoot me, but I knew better than that,” Heidelberg said.

Heidelberg didn’t feel he would serve any jail time for his actions. “They didn’t want me exonerated or indicted,” said Heidelberg. “They wanted me twisting in the wind.”

Note: Hoppy Eric Heidelberg died April 30th, 2012.

In February of 1997, ABC planned a follow-up to their 20/20 “Prior Knowledge” piece, which included an interview with ATF informant Carol Howe. Hours before the piece was to air on “World News Tonight,” it was killed. Carol Howe, a Tulsa Debutante, had domiciled with neo-Nazi Dennis Mahon at Elohim City at the time Andy “The German” Strassmeir was there and was there when McVeigh called Strassmeir on the telephone prior to the bombing. According to ABC producer Roger Charles (Lt. Col, USMC Ret.): “They were uncomfortable with it after a series of phone calls from high-level Justice Department and ATF people, saying that well, yes, the story is right, but you’re going to draw the wrong conclusions unless we can explain it.” According to an interview with ABC conducted by McVeigh’s defense team, the conversation went something like this:

Justice Dept: “We have to admit now Strassmeir *has* been investigated.”

ABC: “But you have denied over and over that he was ever the subject of an investigation.”

Justice Dept: “Well, we’re un-denying that now. He has been investigated, but we could not involve him specifically in the bombing of the building.… [Regarding Howe’s reports of others involved, we] “could not find anyone who bought fertilizer, could not find anyone who rented a truck, so therefore we could not charge them with anything. [Besides], we’re not sure the information was credible.”

ABC: “But did you or did you not send her [Howe] back out?”

Justice Dept: “Yes, she was sent back out.”

ABC: “Well, what in the hell does that mean?”

Justice Dept: “She did go back out, but she was unable to develop any evidence that these people had participated, [although] essentially your information is correct.”

ABC then said the Justice Department press spokesman attempted to downplay the credibility of Howe by stating that the government hears these types of statements all the time from “White Supremacist compounds.”

ABC: “Yeah, but there’s one difference here.”

Justice Dept: “What is that?”

ABC: “The damn building blew up, that’s what.”

Not only would Howe’s testimony have had unfortunate consequences for authorities, it would not have jibed with the FBI’s fantasy of the “lone nut” bomber. It seemed authorities were replaying the same scenario they had played out 28 years before. In the JFK investigation, the FBI focused on the “lone nut” scenario too. Witnesses who did not support the FBI’s case against Oswald as lone participant were intimidated, debunked or misquoted in reports. Most who saw shooters other than the one on the 6th floor of the Texas School Book Depository were never subpoenaed to testify. And many of the witnesses who were available and who told their version “committed suicide” or had tragic “accidents.” In my book *JFK: The Dead Witnesses* I go into these cases in detail.

In 1963, Julia Ann Mercer told the FBI and the Dallas Police that she saw a man carry a rifle case up to the Grassy Knoll just before the shooting. The FBI took her statement. Later, when she was interviewed by District Attorney Jim Garrison and shown the statements she had given the Bureau which now said she didn’t see anything of importance, she began shaking her head. “These all have been altered, she said. “They have me saying just the opposite of what I really told them.”

In the Oklahoma City case, witnesses whose statements didn’t fit the government’s official timeline and scenario were either ignored altogether, or intimidated into changing their stories.

Cheryl Wood, an employee at Love’s convenience store, who saw McVeigh and John Doe 2 on April 17, told FBI agents that security cameras had captured images of the two men. The FBI didn’t take the tapes and didn’t want to use Wood’s story. “They tried to convince Wood that she was crazy—that she hadn’t really seen them,” said a Newsweek reporter who interviewed her. “They rattled her real good.” When the store manager decided to take the video home himself, the FBI changed their minds, and confiscated the tape.

McVeigh and his friends also stopped at another convenience store about 45 minutes from Love’s. As a *Newsweek* reporter who interviewed the employees told me, the FBI didn’t use the statements of those witnesses either, because it didn’t fit the FBI’s “official” timeline.

Mike Moroz, the Johnny’s Tire Shop employee who gave McVeigh and John Doe 2 directions to the Murrah Building on the morning of the blast, and was able to describe both McVeigh and John Doe 2, was interviewed by the FBI several times. On the last interview they told him that he had seen McVeigh drive in a different direction than he had originally stated. The FBI then claimed to the press that Moroz had made a mistake and was confused.

Danny Wilkerson, the Regency Towers employee who sold McVeigh two soft drinks and a pack of cigarettes 10 minutes before the bombing, while the Ryder truck was parked across the street waiting for the UPS truck to vacate its parking place in front of the Murrah Building, claims FBI agents tried very hard to get him to change his story. Wilkerson saw McVeigh and another man in an older, shorter Ryder truck with a cab overhang. FBI agents showed Wilkerson a catalog of different Ryder models, trying to coerce him into stating that the truck he saw was bigger and newer than the one actually seen. Wilkerson refused to change his story.

Catina Lawson knew McVeigh when he was stationed in Kansas, *and saw him at parties with Andreas Strassmeir and Michael Brescia*. When Lawson saw the artist’s sketch of John Doe 2, she said, “That’s Mike [Brescia]. Lawson repeatedly called the FBI to tell them it was Brescia, but they didn’t want to listen, and stopped returning her calls. Brescia was an old army buddy of McVeigh’s, and besides being in the ARA and involved in bank robberies, *he was also an undercover informant for the FBI!*

“I kept telling them that the man in the [John Doe 2] sketch was Mike, a nice-looking guy, dark-skinned. But the FBI made me feel guilty, then ignorant, as if I didn’t know what I was saying. Then, later, I tried to call in with more information and they wouldn’t even talk to me.”

Debra Burdick had seen the yellow Mercury, the brown pick-up, and the blue Chevy Cavalier that was described in the “Attempt To Locate,” that was seen at 10th and Robinson on the morning of the blast. Burdick called the FBI and the OSBI, and “they blew me off. They said they didn’t have time to get over here.… they told me, ‘you didn’t see anything.’ And that’s when I thought I was going crazy.”

Jane Graham, along with three other women, had seen a trio of suspicious-looking men in the Murrah Building's underground garage the Friday before the bombing. The men were working with wire and a small, putty-colored block which she described to me. What she saw sounded to me to be C-4 plastic explosive. They were putting blocks of "putty" on concrete pillars in the garage, then stringing wire between them. She thought they were installing a temporary phone or computer cable. She later said that one looked like Andreas Strassmeir and one looked like one of the faces on a news report of people at the Waco event, a man named Gary Hunt. As far as I've been able to ascertain he has never been questioned by any law enforcement agency. Hunt was also involved in the Waco event in 1993. According to William Cooper, now deceased, author of *Behold a Pale Horse*, "Gary Hunt masquerades as an American Patriot, but was, in fact, an informant for the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms."

Strassmeir was wearing a black western shirt and pants and black cowboy boots and a black cowboy hat, the other two were wearing GSA coveralls like those of the government maintenance personnel. The name of the third man is not known.

FBI Agent Joe Schwecke made two appointments to interview Graham, but kept neither of them. "He never showed up," said Graham. "I again called and set up another appointment for the following week and that was never kept."

When Schwecke finally spoke to her, he "only wanted to know if I could identify McVeigh or Nichols. Apparently the FBI was not interested in any time other than the Monday or Tuesday—the week of the bombing!" exclaimed Graham, "…and only if the responses pointed directly to McVeigh!"

The manager of the Great Western Inn in Junction City, Kansas, was certain a Middle Eastern man who had stayed in room 107 on April 17, two days before the bombing, was a dead ringer for John Doe 2. Yet the FBI tried to discredit him, saying that the inquiry there had been a waste of time. But the FBI confiscated the hotel's register with all the guests names.

Barbara Whittenberg at the Santa Fe Trail Diner told Bill Jasper of *The New American* Magazine that the FBI tried to get her to change her story.

Jeff Davis, who delivered Chinese food to a man in room 25 at the Dreamland Motel in Junction City, Kansas, was interviewed numerous times by the FBI. They appeared interested in trying to get Davis to say that McVeigh was the man he saw, and not another "John Doe."

During trial, prosecutor Larry Mackey attacked Davis' credibility, noting that two days after the bombing, he told FBI agents that the man was a white male, 28 or 29, about 6 feet tall, about 180 pounds with short, sandy hair, clean-cut with no mustache.

Yet Davis originally told the FBI, "The man to whom I delivered that bag of Chinese food is not Tim McVeigh." Still, Mackey tried to shake Davis' confidence in his memory, suggesting that Davis had told a bartender and an ABC sketch artist that he saw McVeigh. In fact, the person Davis saw had "unkempt" hair, a regional accent, possibly from Oklahoma, Kansas or Missouri, and an overbite. McVeigh possessed none of those characteristics.

"I was frustrated quite a bit because they just didn't seem to want to say 'Okay, there's somebody we may not have.' A lot of it seemed 'Damn! I just wish he'd say it was McVeigh so we could be done with it.'"

Davis told *The Denver Post* that the FBI never even bothered making a composite sketch of the man he saw. A TV network finally hired an artist to do one.

Daina Bradley, one of the Murrah Building bombing victims, had seen only one man —*olive-skinned, dark-haired, wearing jeans, jacket, and baseball cap*—get out of the *passenger side* of the Ryder truck in front of the Federal Building moments before it blew up. Yet when she testified for the defense during McVeigh's trial, she switched tracks, saying she saw two suspects.

What is interesting is that in numerous interviews with the media, prosecutors, and the defense team, Bradley adamantly maintained that she had seen only one suspect—John Doe 2. Just weeks before her testimony, Bradley again told U.S. Attorney Patrick Ryan and defense attorney Cheryl Ramsey that she was certain the man she saw wasn't Timothy McVeigh.

Yet shortly after the start of McVeigh's trial—after meeting with federal prosecutors —Bradley suddenly "changed her mind."

It seemed that FBI agents were conveniently waiting at the airport to intercept some of McVeigh's defense witnesses, who would then be "persuaded" to change their testimony.

Under cross-examination by Ryan, Bradley—who had maintained a rock-solid story of John Doe 2 since the day of the bombing—now claimed she saw a second man. Yet during trial she was nervous and faltering, her testimony wavering constantly. At one point, she covered her face with her hands and quietly said, "I want to talk to my lawyer."

Ryan eventually got Bradley to say she wasn't sure whether the second suspect was McVeigh, but that there was "nothing different" between McVeigh's features and those of the second man.

In addition, Bradley told the jury she thought the truck was parked against the flow of traffic on the one-way street—a ludicrous proposition but a convenient one for a government intent on convincing a jury that the suspect Bradley saw was not John Doe 2, but possibly McVeigh—get out of the driver's side. Seeing two men would mean that John Doe 2 was still out there since he couldn't have been Nichols, and obviously wasn't the government's excuse for John Doe 2, Todd Bunting.

Gary Lewis, the Journal Record pressman who was almost run over by McVeigh and another man in the yellow Mercury shortly before the blast, suddenly denied seeing them at all! Just before he was subpoenaed to testify before the county grand jury, Lewis told reporters, "What I seen wasn't a fact, it wasn't true."

Claiming the FBI had "cleared up his confusion" more than a year ago, Lewis said the FBI showed him a photograph of McVeigh's distinctive battered yellow Mercury, and convinced him it wasn't the same car he spotted on April 19. "It was real similar to it," Lewis said. "It was real close but it wasn't it."

Lewis then claimed his eyewitness account, which had already been published in striking detail, had been exaggerated by Representative Key and Glenn Wilburn. “I don’t care for [Wilburn] or Charles Key,” Lewis told *The Daily Oklahoman*. “They kind of pushed it along for reasons I don’t know why. That is about all I have got to say.”

This was quite a change from the nervous witness who checked the underside of his car every morning for bombs, afraid he was targeted for assassination by either the bombing suspects or the feds.

Dr. Paul Heath, the VA psychologist whose office was on the fifth floor of the Murrah Building, had spoken to McVeigh and two of his associates at his office several weeks before the blast, when they approached him looking for “jobs.” Heath was interviewed by the FBI no less than ten times. On the last visit, “He (the FBI agent) confronted me saying he did not want me telling the story any longer. He said it was a false story, that I had made it up, that it was a figment of my imagination, and that if I pursued it, he would publicly discredit me.

“I said to him, ‘that is the most despicable, uncalled for attitude that I’ve ever seen, and I don’t know why you said that to me, but I can tell you, you’re not going to change my reality with it.”

Lea Moore, a woman who was badly injured in the blast, was contacted by a reporter from the *Los Angeles Times*. While he was enroute to interview her, she received a mysterious phone call telling her not to talk to him. Moore, a diminutive woman in her fifties, was frightened. When the reporter showed up at her door fifteen minutes later, Moore didn’t answer.

Melba, an Albertson’s supermarket worker who made sandwiches for McVeigh and John Doe 2, was hostile and frightened when questioned by David Hoffman, who later told me “she’s too scared to talk.”

Connie Hood, who saw John Doe 2 at the Dreamland Motel shortly after midnight on April 16, then again the next morning, was interviewed numerous times by the FBI. They even went so far as to administer several polygraph tests. Hood told the agents exactly what she saw. On the last test, the FBI agent “turned around and got in her face,” recalled her friend David Keen. “He said, ‘You’ve never seen John Doe! He never existed!’” This is not the method used by any polygraph examiner. Polygraph, or “lie detector” questions are normally limited to answers to questions that would by answered either “yes” or “no.” What happened here is that some agent posed as an examiner to see if her story could or would be changed, and when that didn’t succeed, he resorted to an implied threat.

The experience of Hood and Keen is reminiscent of the interrogation of JFK witnesses in Dallas on November 22, 1963, when FBI agents pointedly told them they did not see any shooters on the Grassy Knoll.

“This big old dude (FBI agent) right out told me, ‘You did not see that!’” recalled Hood. “It got to the point where I was saying, ‘Excuse me, excuse me, there was someone in that room next to us. I know for a fact there was someone in that room next to us. I did not imagine someone coming out of that fricking room!’”

Hood is sure of what she saw, and is furious about the games the FBI played with her. “I’m angry,” said Hood. “It made my blood boil.”

The shoot down of TWA 800 had many identical scenarios. The experiences of these Oklahoma City witnesses parallels those of the witnesses on Long Island who saw a missile rise out of the water to shoot down TWA flight 800 on July 17, 1996, killing all 230 people on board. Over 154 witnesses on Long Island, who witnessed the attack, described what appeared to be a missile—a glowing object that impacted with the plane had risen from the surface of the ocean and went *up* until they saw an explosion high in the sky before burning wreckage fell.

These accounts were backed up by FAA (Federal Aviation Administration) radar records, which showed an unidentified object (a “blip” that was not “squawking” a transponder code) move rapidly towards, then merge with, the large jumbo-jet. I describe the event in detail in a chapter in my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government.*

Yet like the seismic records, and the video surveillance footage which would have shown the Murrah Building being blown up, these radar tapes would be confiscated by the FBI.

Naturally, the government lied about the crash. The National Transportation Safety board (NTSB) claimed that the most probable cause was a “spark” in the center fuel tank due to “static electricity.” This is ridiculous even to the uninitiated. Said Michael Barr, director of aviation safety programs at USC, “Airplanes don’t blow up just like that. I’ve been following 747s since 1970 and I’ve never seen one blow up like that.”

But over 200 witnesses were interviewed, and almost all were either intimidated, their reports were changed, or they were told “that is not what happened.”

Nor were journalists investigating Oklahoma City immune from harassment. Jayna Davis, the courageous KFOR reporter who tracked down many in the “Middle Eastern Connection”, received a warning from the Bureau that she was getting “too close” to the truth, and should drop her investigation.

Really? *Too* close?

Journalists and investigators who have attempted to interview rescue workers, including firemen, police, and other city officials are denied interviews. Most workers say they’ve been told not to talk by their superiors or by the FBI. “…they’re afraid of losing their jobs or being subjected to abuse if they say something,” said Jane Graham.

Nurse Toni Garret was one of many people who had volunteered to help tag dead victims that terrible morning. Garret and her husband, Earl, had just taken a break when they noticed federal agents arriving to set up a command post. “They acted like it was just a drill, like it was no big deal, said Garret. “They were kind of joking around and all that kind of stuff.”

Approximately 20 minutes later, when the Garrets re-entered the makeshift triage center, they found many of the doctors and nurses gone, and a completely different atmosphere prevailed. “There was nobody helping anymore,” said Earl. “Before, there were people bringing in food and medical supplies—just everything. When we came back in, there was a cold, callous atmosphere. I found out later that the FBI had taken over.”

But what really upset Toni Garret was the fact that the FBI and the Medical Examiner were suppressing the body count, *which they had claimed as only 22 dead*. Garret, who had personally tagged over 120 dead bodies that day, was shocked. “I was being interviewed by a lady from TBN (Trinity Broadcasting Network). I told her that I was highly upset because the news media and the information they were being given was not accurate information. There were many more bodies than what they were saying on the news media and releasing at the time.”

“[The FBI] didn’t like that Toni was being interviewed by the media,” said Earl. “An agent came [up] to me and said, ‘Do you know her?’ pointing to Toni. I said, ‘Yes, she’s my wife.’ He said, “What is she?’ I said, ‘Well, she’s been down here all day trying to get people out of this building and help people.’ He turned around to his friends and said, ‘Well, we need to get her out of here.’ Toni then told me that the agents had told her that the FBI was taking over and all of us could get out. *They told us to keep our mouths shut*.”

Said Toni, “When they came over to me, one of the agents was very pompous and arrogant about asking me who I was, what I was doing there, if I was a civilian, where I worked, and what my name was. I didn’t feel like any of that pertained to what was going on that day or what had happened that day, and he wanted to know everything about me. “He said, ‘Well, we’re down here now, and we’re taking over the building. It would be advisable and recommendable that you keep your mouth shut.”

Norma Smith, who worked at the Federal Courthouse across from the Murrah Building saw, along with numerous others, the Sheriff’s bomb squad congregated in the parking lot at 7:30 that morning. Shortly after Smith’s story appeared in a local newspaper, her house was broken into—twice. Smith, frightened, took early retirement and moved out of the state.

The bomb squad, which was seen searching the area that morning before the bombing, incidentally, denied being there, even after being seen by several people.

New American magazine editor William Jasper learned from an OCPD officer that during a mandatory daily security briefing at the Murrah Building, he and other assembled police/rescue/recovery personnel were told “in no uncertain terms” by one of the lead federal officials that it was necessary for “security” reasons to provide the public with “misinformation” regarding certain aspects of the case, and that this “official line” was not to be contradicted by any of those in attendance.

“There’s a lot that’s being covered up, for some reason,” charged a federal employee who narrowly escaped death but who lost many friends in the terrorist attack.

A man who lost his father said, “…I’m angry because I know I’m being lied to.”

“Many of us are going to come forward and challenge what’s going on as soon as we get some more of the pieces figured out,” pledged a law enforcement officer.

This same police officer later told me he was called into the offices of OCPD Chief Sam Gonzales and U.S. Attorney Pat Ryan and told to “cease and desist.” Exactly what was told to Terry Yeakey and a score of other officers. The word on the department was out, and Terry Yeakey’s death, and the threats of supervisors, put a damper on any other OCPD officers—with a very few exceptions—telling what they saw or knew about the bombing.

CHAPTER 20

More Dead Witnesses—The Body Count Grows

In my book *JFK: The Dead Witnesses,* co-authored by John Armstrong, I list and give explanations of the deaths of dozens of people who either witnessed the assassination of JFK, or had information about the assassination. Some died of what was described as "natural causes," but many others had tragic "accidents," "committed suicide," or were murdered outright. Over the two investigations into the assassination many of those who were called to testify had "accidents" or committed suicide just before they were to testify. As the mafiosos say, "they knew too much." Oklahoma City was no different. For those who "saw too much" and refused to keep their mouths shut as ordered by their superiors or by the FBI, death awaited. Deaths that would be chalked up to suicides, accidents, natural causes, or in at least one case, being found dead inside the building.

Mike Loudenslager

Mike Loudenslager was a GSA employee who worked in the Murrah Building. On the day of the bombing he was seen saving several people. Forty-eight year-old Michael Loudenslager became increasingly aware that large amounts of ordnance and explosives were in the building and strongly urged several parents to take their children out of the building, thereby saving many lives. Mike had filed a grievance with the G.S.A., through the building's security director, because of the dangers posed by the explosives in the building. As a result, he lost his job. Then, after the operator of the day-care center, the security director's wife, notified the fire marshals after some remodeling had been done to the day care center as required, the fire marshals were denied access to do their inspection by federal agents and told to leave! Then the day-care operator lost her contract.

Loudenslager and the day-care center operator then told many of the parents to get their children out. And, because of their warnings, far fewer children were in the day-care center on Wednesday morning, April 19th, than otherwise would have been there.

Shortly after the bombing, Loudenslager was actively helping in the rescue and recovery effort. A large number of people at the bomb-site either saw or talked with him. During the course of the early rescue efforts, however, Loudenslager was seen and heard in a very "heated" confrontation with someone there. Much of his anger stemmed from the fact he felt the ATF was in large part responsible not only for the bombing, but for the death and injury to those inside. He insisted they had prior knowledge and did not warn anyone else.

To the absolute astonishment of a large number of police officers and rescue workers *who had witnessed Mike doing rescue work after the bombing, it was later reported that "G.S.A. employee Mike Loudenslager's body had been found inside the Murrah Building the following Sunday, still at his desk, a victim of the 9:02 A.M. bombing!"* He is also officially listed as one of the 168 bombing fatalities.

Baker Street Irregular investigator Pat Briley asked in his reporting on the bombing "Was he murdered and placed at his desk by federal agents? Or was he just simply murdered by them and *said* to have been found at his desk? Access to the inside of the building, from shortly after the bombing onward was extremely limited to nearly all but federal employees, except for the FBI."

Mike Loudenslager's murder, most assuredly was one of the major factors leading to the demise of both Terry Yeakey and Dr. H. Don Chumley.

Dr. Don Chumley

Like Terrance Yeakey, the press claimed that Dr. Don Chumley was saddened and disturbed that he hadn't helped more people that terrible day. Chumley, who ran the Broadway Medical Clinic about half a mile from the Federal Building, was one of the first to arrive at the bombing site on April 19. Shaun Jones, Chumley's step-son, was assisting him. Jones recalled the scene:

"They had sent us around to the underground parking garage, where some people were trapped. Suddenly, three guys come running out of the basement yelling, 'There's a bomb! A bomb! It's gonna' blow!' Everybody panicked and ran screaming away from the building as fast as they could."

No one later could identify who these three men were, and this act became very skeptical later as no "bomb" was found in the underground parking area. What could have been found was the undetonated charges and det cord strung between the columns that failed to explode. These would be the charges that Jane Graham saw two days before the 19th. If rescuers who had any military experience with explosives saw them, that would have destroyed the government's "lone nut with a truck" story. That would have led to an investigation of exactly who put the charges there, and who they worked for.

It should be noted at this point that early on in my investigation I was notified that there was a "pallet" of Composition C-4 plastic explosive that was stolen from Fort Riley, Kansas. Shortly thereafter I received a fax with no address header that said something similar, but that C-4 was stolen in Arizona from Marana, an airfield and training area for both the CIA and the Arizona Army National Guard (who had a helicopter base co-located there named "Silver Bell"). We were never able to verify these two pieces of information, but the "putty" seen by Jane Graham came from somewhere, and it had to be a government military source.

Chumley, who was working with Dr. Ross Harris, was one of the few doctors who actually went into the Federal Building, while the others waited outside. He had helped many people, including seven babies, whom he later pronounced dead.

Chumley was killed five months later when his Cessna 210 airplane crashed near Amarillo, Texas in what I call "mysterious circumstances." As a commercial pilot, and at that time serving as a police helicopter pilot for the Tulsa Police Department's Helicopter Unit, and having amassed over 3000 hours of flying time in both helicopters and airplanes, I could immediately see that there was something wrong with the Chumley accident when David Hoffman called me and said that Chumley had just crashed in Texas, and that the FAA had said that the aircraft had *"gone straight down."* Then, as more information came out the investigators said that it was "pilot error" because the weather was bad and Chumley was a low time pilot with no instrument rating. If that was true, then what might have happened is called "spatial disorientation," in which a pilot who does not have sufficient instrument time, gets into a "zero zero" visual condition where he loses visual contact with outside references such as the horizon. Then, if the pilot does not trust his instruments, it is easy to get vertigo and think that your instruments, such as the artificial horizon and turn and bank indicator are wrong. You then attempt to “correct” for it by control inputs that make matters worse, often resulting in a “death spiral” spin until you impact on the ground. I have worked accidents where this has happened, and have been in that situation during instrument training, induced by a flight instructor, to familiarize me with what happens if you think your instruments are wrong.

But did this happen to Chumley?

Chumley had been in a minor accident during a landing a year earlier when his plane became trapped in a vortex caused by a large jet landing nearby. The small plane was forced into a snow bank causing some damage to its left wing tip. The damage had been repaired, but even that would not have affected the airplane enough to cause a catastrophic failure of any of the flight components.

According to reports in *The Daily Oklahoman*, Chumley, who was returning from a hunting trip, had landed twice Friday due to bad weather conditions. The crash occurred three days later, on a Monday.

“The thing that’s odd to me is that Don was perfectly healthy,” said Jones. “He was talking to the tower, and from one minute to the next he just went straight smack down into the ground.”

Investigators said they could find no evidence of an explosion at the scene. Chumley’s throttle was still set at cruise, and his gear and flaps were up. The FAA inspector stated there were “no anomalies with the engine or the airframe,” and the NTSB, who took over on fatal accidents reported “pathological examination of the pilot did not show any preexisting condition that could have contributed to the accident.”

“To me it’s unusual because I know he was a good pilot,” added Jones. “Everything was fine, he was in the air for 15 minutes, he was climbing, he had just asked permission to go from six to seven thousand feet. They tracked him on the screen at 6,900 feet, and the radar technician said he saw him on the radar, then he looked back and he was gone, and the plane came straight, straight down. I mean, no attempt to land… nothing, just straight down.”

The wreckage was found in a cabbage patch near Shamrock, Texas. It was on his course line for Oklahoma City.

Chumley’s hunting partner Joey Chief said in an interview in *The Daily Oklahoman*:

“He was the kind of guy who did everything right, always. He was very cautious, very professional,” Chief said, adding [that] Chumley’s plane was equipped with extra safety instruments,” meaning that it was IFR equipped for instrument conditions.

Mike Evett, a Federal Public Defender, had known Don Chumley for over twenty years. “I would never get into an airplane with anybody I didn’t know,” said Evett, “and I would never be afraid to fly with Don. For the life of me, this doesn’t sit right with me.”

Though the initial reports stated that Chumley was not IFR qualified and did not have an instrument rating, and that the weather was bad that evening, the doctor did in fact have an instrument rating, and was an experienced pilot, having logged over 600 hours of flying time. And the weather was not bad or, according to those who knew him, he wouldn't have continued the flight.

Did Dr. Don Chumley crash on the evening of September 25th due to bad weather? Did he commit suicide due to his grief over what he saw on the morning of April 19th, or was Don Chumley murdered?

I obtained the NTSB reports on the crash. it specifically states:

"During a refueling stop at Amarillo, Texas the instrument rated, private pilot received a weather briefing and filed an IFR flight plan to Guthrie, Oklahoma. During departure, the pilot took off at night in the auto-pilot equipped airplane, made a climb to 7,000 feet msl. About four minutes after level-off, Albuquerque Center lost radar and radio contact wth the airplane. Several witnesses either heard the airplane crash or saw a post-impact fire, but no known witnesses saw the plane before impact. Examination of the crash site revealed the airplane impacted in a steep descent, but the investigation did not find any anomalies with the engine or airframe. Pathological examination of the pilot did not show any preexisting condition that could have contributed to the accident. Probable Cause: Loss of control for unknown reason(s)."

This report specifically stated that Chumley had a significant amount of hours, that he was instrument rated, that the Cessna as equipped with autopilot which would have been used once he reached cruising altitude (and could be overcome easily by the pilot if it malfunctioned), and that Center—the FAA controlling agency that directs Instrument flights—lost radar contact within four minutes of reaching cruise altitude. Also, the airplane engine and airframe did not show any preexisting condition that would effect flight characteristics, and the post mortem did not give any clues such as a heart attack or stroke. Lack of oxygen would not be a factor since he was only at 7,000 feet MSL (above Mean Sea Level) and you don't need oxygen below 14,000 feet MSL.

The main NTSB report stated that the weather was "Visual meteorological conditions prevailed for the personal flight"—visibility was ten miles. That he received a weather briefing in Amarillo, and that he filed an IFR flight plan. The airplane crashed in a maize field near Groom, Texas, and no distress calls or anomalies were received."

To me, this indicated that something may have been done to sabotage the airplane at some point to provide a flight control failure, or something had been done to incapacitate the pilot.

The Daily Oklahoman article described how he had cried in front of his friend Jim Taylor on the day of the bombing, after tagging seven babies, and was not satisfied he had done all he could, even after helping to organize a fund-raiser for the victims.

It was also rumored that Chumley was about to go public with some damning information. According to a local journalist who has investigated the bombing, Chumley was asked to bandage two federal agents who falsely claimed to have been trapped in the building that morning. Since the pair was obviously not hurt, Chumley refused. When the agents went to another doctor at the scene, Chumley intervened, threatening to report them.

Chumley's crash is reminiscent of that of Dr. Ronald Rogers, whose plane went down on March 3, 1994 near Lawton, Oklahoma in good weather. President Bill Clinton's former dentist, Rogers was on his way to be interviewed by Ambrose Evans-Pritchard of the *London Sunday Telegraph*, where he intended to reveal evidence of Clinton's alleged cocaine use.

He never made it.

Like Rogers, Hershel Friday, a "top-notch pilot," died in the crash of his small plane only two days earlier during a light drizzle at his private airstrip. Friday had been a member of Clinton's presidential campaign finance committee, and was a close associate of C. Victor Raiser, another member of Clinton's presidential campaign, who died in a suspicious plane crash two years earlier.

In fact, the list of those who had potentially damning evidence on everything from the Kennedy assassination to Clinton's improprieties is a long and sordid one, stretching to hundreds of names and spanning at least three decades.

A few years after the Kennedy assassination, a disgruntled CIA official was on his way to Chicago to inform a journalist of the CIA's complicity in the murder. His plane exploded and fell into Lake Michigan.

Another well-known crash was that of Gary Caradori, a private investigator who was hot on the trail of a pedophile ring being run by Lawrence "Larry" King, manager of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union in Omaha, Nebraska, and other prominent businessmen and politicians in Omaha.

Caradori and his eight-year-old son Andrew died when their plane crashed in July of 1990. Caradori radioed that his compass was swinging wildly just before he went down. Moments later, the plane *went into a steep dive* from which it never recovered.

What is interesting is that only several days earlier, the courageous investigator had informed a friend that he had obtained evidence which threatened to break the case wide open.

Like Caradori, Rogers, and numerous other whistle-blowers, Don Chumley had evidently learned of the government's hastily planned cover-up surrounding the Oklahoma City bombing.

Prior to the crash, he was a brave individual who refused "to keep his mouth shut."

Speculation is that both he and Terry Yeakey knew, and were ready to bring forth the fact that Mike Loudenslager was alive and well after the bombing and was not at his desk, killed in the bombing like the government reported.

Glenn Wilburn

Glenn Wilburn, who lost his grandsons Chase and Colton in the bombing, was one of the very first to go public. A staunch opponent of the government's case, Wilburn had teamed up with both J.D. Cash and State Representative Charles Key to investigate the crime.

Key and Wilburn petitioned for the County Grand Jury investigation. Wilburn worked tirelessly to investigate the truth about what really happened that fateful morning, and his evidence was proving more and more embarrassing to authorities.

About a year after he began his investigation, Wilburn, 46, came down with a sudden case of pancreatic cancer. Initially recovering after surgery, he died on July 15, 1997, the day after the County Grand Jury which he convened, began hearing evidence. Was the sudden onset of a fatal cancer a "natural cause," or did something else happen? Students of the JFK assassination will recall that Jack Ruby, while in jail in Dallas, claimed that doctors were coming to his cell and injecting him with cancer cells. And, David Ferrie, a CIA pilot during the Kennedy years, and connected to the JFK case by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison, also mysteriously came down with a fatal cancer and died.

It is very unusual for someone as young as Wilburn was to have pancreatic cancer. As an example, in the UK a study was done that showed that men, ages 40-49 contracted pancreatic cancer in just over 200 cases per 100,000 population.

Like Dr. Chumley, Glenn would not "keep his mouth shut."

Ted Richardson

Three weeks after Wilburn's death, on August 5th, Assistant U.S. Attorney Ted Richardson was found in a church parking lot with a shotgun wound to the chest. The Medical Examiner's report stated: "No powder residue is apparent, either on the external aspect of the wound or in the shirt." An interesting observation considering Richardson had allegedly pushed a shotgun up to his chest and pulled the trigger.

The death was ruled a "suicide."

Yet the circumstances seemed to concur. Richardson had been depressed. He had been seeing a psychiatrist and was on Prozac. He once told a hunting buddy he "felt like ending it all."

One sunny morning, Richardson rose, fed his two dogs, got in his car, drove to a church near his house, pulled out a shotgun, and inside his car, shot himself through the heart.

He left no note.

Was Ted Richardson depressed enough to kill himself? And if so, why? The 49-year-old father of two had a happy marriage, and adored his 8-year-old son.

The two weeks he took off work at that time, according to others in his office, was due to unexplained "pressures" that may provide a clue. Richardson was the bombing and arson specialist for the Western District of Oklahoma. But he was inexplicably transferred to the bank robbery detail after the bombing—an area in which he had no expertise. As his brother Dan explained, "Ted should have gotten the bombing case."

Friends described Richardson as "one of the few good guys," and a man with a "strong sense of conscience."

In point of fact, Richardson was the U.S. Attorney who was prepared to prosecute Samir Khalil. Richardson had been investigating Samir Khalil for income tax evasion and HUD property scams. Richardson was abruptly taken off the investigation of Khalil just before the results of his investigation were to be submitted to a grand jury, and just after Khalil's name came up in the news media in connection with the OKC bombing in May 1995.

At this point, according to the federal investigators, he decided to kill himself.

Alan G Whicher

Alan Whicher, a 40 year-old member of the Secret Service, who at one time oversaw Bill Clinton's security detail, was transferred to the Secret Service Field office in the Murrah Building. He was told to be at this desk at exactly 9 a.m. for an "important phone call" from Washington. He died at his desk.

Gary Webb

Gary Webb, a Pulitzer Prize winning journalist, was deep into investigating Iran/Contra and cocaine smuggling when he was found dead. He wrote a series on this titled "Dark Alliance," that was published in the *San Jose Mercury News* in 1996. He claimed the Contra rebels in Nicaragua were shipping cocaine into the US. which was then flooding Compton and South-Central Los Angeles in the mid-Eighties after being turned into crack – a relatively new and highly addictive substance sold in 'rocks' that could be smoked. Webb also said the CIA was aware that proceeds from the sales of those drugs were being funneled back to help fund the Contras. Just prior to publishing an expose' book on this Webb was found dead with "multiple gunshot wounds to the head." It was declared suicide.

Joey Gladden

Joey Gladden was a Bureau of Prisons prison guard at the U.S. Penitentiary at El Reno, Oklahoma, who worked the section housing Tim McVeigh and Terry Nichols. Gladden was found dead on February 6th, 1996 with a bullet in his head. He was sitting on a sofa, still wearing his uniform jacket, and had just opened a can of beer. A .22 caliber revolver was found on the floor at his feet with one expended shell casing in the cylinder and five live rounds lined up neatly on his coffee table.

Gladden had worked in McVeigh's cell block, and had spoken personally to McVeigh. On one occasion, both Gladden and his supervisor, Charles Mildner, discovered syringes on McVeigh's food tray. When Mildner subsequently ordered only one person to deliver McVeigh's meals, Warden R.G. Thompson countermanded the order, saying it was "too much trouble."

Prison officials denied that there was ever any contraband items on McVeigh's tray, and stated in *The Daily Oklahoman* "The security of this institution has not been compromised, and reports of syringes and other contraband items having been smuggled into defendants Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols on their food trays are absolutely false."

Yet, Mildner's attorney, David Wilson, said numerous staff employees told him and Mildner about the syringes. "This came to me from other employees," said Wilson. "Do you think all these people are lying?"

Joey Gladden was very concerned with corruption inside the prison. He was a very conscientious individual and had decided to document everything with the intention of writing a book about it. He also, according to friends, was very outspoken and did not hesitate to speak his mind about concerns, which "got him into trouble."

Whatever the case, Gladden became frightened about what he knew and reported, only to be rebuffed and warned to keep quiet. The day before his death the 27-year old father of two spoke to his first wife, Shelly Walling, and told her "if anything happens to me, I have it all written down right here in my book." When she asked him what he was referring to, Gladden hesitated, then responded "we don't need to talk about it right now. I don't want you getting mixed up in this too."

On January 14th, three weeks before his death, Joey Gladden called his mother, Sharon Gladden, and said "They told me they were going to kill me." She said "Joey, honey, it's just the stress of everything." Gladden replied "Mom, the federal government has the power. You don't know the power. They could assassinate the president of the United States!"

His mother said "Things like that don't happen in real life."

Gladden then said "Mom, just forget it. Don't ask me about it. At least you know about it." Three weeks later he was dead.

Mark Anthony Finnigin

Finnigin allegedly had inside knowledge of the Oklahoma City bombing. Died May 18th, 1995 in a trailer fire in Wichita, Kansas.

Michael Abbot

Found severely burned in his car near Herington Kansas, not far from Nichols' residence. He died several days later, and allegedly had inside knowledge of the Oklahoma City bombing.

David Hoffman, on September 29th, 1996, faxed me a memo that had some sketchy information on other deaths, but did not, or was not, able to follow up on them:

"Two FBI agents (names not known) died within three weeks of the bombing in a car accident.

FBI agent from Kansas (name not known) died shortly after the bombing. He hung himself.

BATF agent (name not known) disappeared, believed dead.

Ambulance attendant—first ambulance that arrived (female) was very irate and vocal at the scene, died within three days of cancer—so they say.

Oklahoma City fireman who was at the scene died June 1996. May not be related, but…"

U.S. Army officer/survivor in fed bldg/Army recruiting office. Was out on maneuvers later and keeled over of heart attack last summer. He had a physical in May of 1995, then died in July of 1995.

Delmar Bartholomew, Oklahoma County Sheriff's deputy. A cop was loading his gun and accidentally shot Bartholomew. The cop got 'spooked' and disappeared. (Bartholomew was on a stake-out of the Murrah Building on [the morning of] April 19th!)." [author's note: I have not been able to find anything to back up Hoffman's remarks regarding this individual, however we do know that the Oklahoma County Sheriff's Office had deputies on scene that did have the building staked out the morning of the 19th].

Finally,

There were other deaths after the Murrah bombing with many going unreported. But of those recorded before and after the bombing with connections to the Clintons, Mena, cocaine smuggling and money laundering, and Iran/Contra, tends to show that eliminating witnesses or threats to the government was not an uncommon occurrence. Of those who had ties to the Iran/Contra drug smuggling and money laundering, or knowledge of such activities, and subsequently died, the breakdown of just 48 recorded “strange” deaths appear below:

20	Murder
9	Murder—declared suicide
5	Plane crash
4	Shot at Waco (all ATF and former Clinton body guards)
3	Helicopter crash (all former Clinton body guards)
2	Vehicle “accidents”
1	Heart attack
1	Fall from tall building
1	Unknown causes
1	Other accidents
1	Killed in Murrah Building

Is it a coincidence that not only these individuals, but those who had witnessed events on April 19th, or who had been vocal opponents of the government’s case had died?

“Out of roughly 5,000 of us who were originally involved in Iran-Contra,” said Iran/Contra whistleblower Al Martin, “*approximately 400, since 1986, have committed suicide, died accidentally, or died of* “*natural causes.*” In over half those deaths, official death certificates were never issued. In 187 circumstances, the bodies were cremated before the families were notified.”

After having investigated a similar spate of suspicious deaths for my book *JFK: The Dead Witnesses*. That investigation revealed that most of the deaths of witnesses to the assassination of President Kennedy, or knew something about it, peaked in the months leading up to one of the investigations, with the deaths often coming days or even hours before the person was scheduled to testify.

In the three years following the Kennedy assassination, 18 material witnesses perished. In the time period leading up to 1979, when the last of the Kennedy investigations ended, over 100 witnesses had died. Interestingly, most of the deaths coincided with one of the four main investigations: The Warren Commission (1964-65); the Jim Garrison investigation (1965-69); the Senate Committee investigation (1974-76); and the House Committee on Assassinations investigation (1976-79).

Naturally, the CIA had an answer for these mysterious deaths. In a 1967 departmental memo, a CIA officer wrote:

"Such vague accusations as that more than 10 people have died mysteriously can always be explained in some rational way: e.g., the individuals concerned have for the most part died of natural causes; the [Warren] Commission staff questioned 418 witnesses—the FBI interviewed far more people, conducting 25,000 interviews and re-interviews—and in such a large group, a certain number of deaths are to be expected."

If the CIA were not involved in any of the deaths, why was such a memo disseminated?

Then, to add further fuel to the fire, CIA technicians testified before the Senate Committee (Church Committee) in 1975 that a variety of Termination with Extreme Prejudice [TWEP] weapons had been used throughout the years, and many were chosen because they left no postmortem residue.

In one particular memo, the author states:

"You will recall that I mentioned that the local circumstances under which a given means might be used might suggest the technique to be used in that case. I think the gross divisions in presenting this subject might be:

(1) bodies left with no hope of the cause of death being determined by the most complete autopsy and chemical examination;

(2) bodies left in such circumstances as to simulate accidental death;

(3) bodies left in such circumstances as to simulate suicide;

(4) bodies left with residue that simulate those caused by natural death."

Regarding deaths that could be simulated to appear as "natural causes," the various assassination experts within the intelligence communities of the world knew quite well of the effects of such chemical agents as sodium morphate, which causes heart attacks; thyon phosphate, which is a solution that can suspend sodium morphate and provide a vehicle to penetrate the surface of the skin with the chemical (which is used to coat something the victim might touch); beryllium, which is an extremely toxic element that causes cancer and fibrotic tumors, and Plutinium pellets that can be shot into a victim with a very small device that causes fatal radiation poisoning—a favorite of the Soviet KGB.

As the daughter of a CIA contract agent who worked during Iran/Contra told me: "They eliminated my father, and I know what they do in the Agency. I know how they work as far as the Mafia goes.… They have no scruples. And they don't go by any law but their own. There is no conscience to these people; the end justifies the means. They will shut anybody up that they possibly can. They're amazing. And they will go through anything to make you look crazy, to make you appear to be a liar.

"And they go into these operations, and they run amok. They run amok. And then when it gets carried away or there's a leak, here comes the damage control, and you have to make everybody else appear like they're crazy. I mean people out there drop like flies. How many people can commit suicide for God's sake. How many people can be handcuffed behind their back, and they can call it suicide because they were shot in the head?"

Especially if they were shot in the head in an impossible angle to be considered self-inflicted, or shot multiple times?

And the so-called media, like the dead, remain silent.

CHAPTER 21

Hoffman Indicted and Sued

"I told Dave, you get the most flack when you're over the target!"

Craig Roberts, May, 1999

Hoffman called me one day during the Oklahoma County Grand Jury proceedings and said "Looks like I'm in trouble. Macy is after me. Says he's going to get me for jury tampering."

I asked Dave what had happened, and he said that he wanted to make sure that the jurors had the information that he had about the bombing in his recently published book *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*, so he found out where one of the jurors lived (possibly more but he didn't say so) and put a copy of his book in the juror's mail box. The juror evidently took the book to the jury room and showed Macy, who became incensed (and probably saw his opportunity to go after Hoffman whose book was not flattering to Macy—and Hoffman had been on Macy's case for weeks). Macy then filed charges against Hoffman for jury tampering.

Dave asked me what would happen, and having been Court Liaison Officer for Tulsa PD for a year, I knew more than most officers did about court proceedings. I said "Dave, if Macy filed charges, a warrant will be issued and you will either have to turn yourself in or they'll come out and arrest you. What were you thinking when you did this? Didn't you know that would result with jury tampering charges?"

"I thought that if I could get at least one juror to question the current proceedings they would at least have me come in to testify," he said. "Macy does not want that at all. He wants to control the jury and what they see and hear, and who gets to be questioned or give testimony."

Within a day or two Hoffman was booked for the charges brought forth by Macy. He made bond with the financial help of his benefactor who was supporting his investigation, Alex Magnus, a wealthy "concerned citizen" in Chicago who was interested in pursing the facts of the bombing. But when Hoffman was to appear on a later day he failed to do so because he had been advised of the wrong time on the date set to come back to court. One newspaper article did a short piece on the incident:

" The man indicted by the Oklahoma County grand jury investigating the Oklahoma City bombing found himself back in jail Thursday when he failed to appear in court.

"David Hoffman, 38, author of "*The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*," blamed his absence at the hearing before Special District Judge Russell Hall on his attorney, Michael Johnston. Johnston also said the mix-up was his mistake. He said he thought the hearing was at 1:30 p.m. instead of 9 a.m.

"The attorney showed up about 20 minutes late after he learned about the problem when he telephoned the district attorney's office with a question about the Hoffman case. Still, the judge increased Hoffman's bond to $12,000, and Oklahoma County sheriff's deputies took Hoffman to jail in handcuffs.

"He spent five hours in jail before being released."

A little over three months later Hoffman decided to plead guilty to two misdemeanor charges of jury tampering to avoid serious jail time. He was facing up to two years in the Oklahoma County jail if convicted, and the last thing he wanted was ending up in the slammer for that long in what he described as "the worst jail in the country." In one article about the case Hoffman explains:

"Hoffman said he probably would not be allowed to present evidence of his conspiracy theories at a trial.

"'We're not going to be able to turn it into a political trial,' Hoffman said. He said he had planned to air obstruction of justice allegations on the local and federal levels as part of his defense.

"'The whole reason I stuck my neck on the line is because I wanted to see justice done. It certainly wasn't being done with (District Attorney) Bob Macy's grand jury.'"

David was right. The way Macy was conducting the grand jury was a sham. No "evidence" was being presented, or being allowed in the court room that contradicted the "official truth" the government had put forth. Macy was following the old saying of "Don't confuse me with the facts, my mind is made up."

If Dave had called me in advance before putting his book in someone's mailbox, or even going before the grand jury with his findings and other material in the book that brought up any information outside the bombing case, I'd have told him not to do anything with the jurors or even to try to testify before the jury itself. Dave and I, and others, had discovered during our various efforts to follow leads, with some of them being what I call "rabbit trails," information that would almost be cases within themselves. Even if we knew, or if we felt they had connections to the bombing, they would have had no place in jury testimony. Using the adages of "follow the money," and "follow the power," we had chased leads to such entities as the Iran/Contra drug running, and from there to connections that needed a lot more attention and information and investigation into such companies and government contractors as Evergreen Air, Esystems, Raytheon, the FBI Lab corruption, the long list of the deaths that followed the Clintons, a strange Iraqi named Ishan Barbouti who was connected to one Gerald Bull—the inventor of Saddam Hussein's "super cannon"—a company named TK-7 in Oklahoma City, the murder "suicide" of Marine Colonel Sabow at El Toro Marine Corps Air Station in California, several stolen C-130 cargo planes that ended up smuggling drugs, and other areas that all seemed to have some links or tie-ins to the story. These were leads that also may have been mentioned in the "Little Rock Files," as I began to call the files taken from the building on Day One. There was no telling whether the federal investigators in Arkansas with the DEA and IRS had also stumbled into these rabbit trail connections, or even reported them if they did.

The problem that I tried to explain to David, since he had always been a newspaper reporter and had never written a book was that there was a big difference in a newspaper story and a full-length book when it comes to writing style and what to leave in and what to leave out. A newspaper article is very much like a police report. It is a series of facts and quotes with little "meat" to expand the story. It is limited in space, and unless one is doing a series, the space is *very* limited. In a non-fiction book the author strives to give all the information possible, but not so much as to lose the reader. After an initial rough draft, the author reads his material with a critical eye and "cuts the fat." If it doesn't add to the story, or goes too far astray from what the author is intending to present to the reader, it goes. The hard part is to know how much to actually leave in because as an author you know what you know, and you know what you are trying to say, but are you presenting it to the reader in a cohesive manner so that they understand what you are trying to communicate? That's the issue.

The next thing that must be done in books such as this one is to keep all of your files! Keep the material that backs up what you write. You need source material that you can use to prove what you wrote, everything from newspaper articles, to memos, reports, faxes, government documents, tapes, videos, and witness statements/depositions. When it comes to dealing with people there is legal difference between dealing with a public figure and dealing with a private citizen. Normally a public figure who is being paid with taxpayer money, or is in government service, is fair game if you can show that where there's smoke, there is probably fire. But you can't do that to a private individual until you have evidence to back up a claim such as court documents or other news reports that can't be challenged.

Dave's book went into areas that we could link to the story, but the problem was that any outside reader would not be able to make the detailed connections to the entities that we had made. The only way to do that would be an anthology which is a book of chapters, each with its own topic, such as my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government*. The format for that book was simply to tell stories of cases of government crimes and coverups from a given point in history—in that case World War II —to another point in history, which in that book was the shoot-down of TWA 800. There had to be a connecting theme that the reader would understand right up front to make the book informative and readable to the interested person. That theme was in the subtitle—crimes and coverups of the government.

Hoffman's book, however, had too many rabbit trails for the reader to follow, and it tended to the divert the story away from the single topic of the Oklahoma City bombing. It did link "politics of terror," but in some areas wandered too far afield of the subject to the point of giving an opening to anyone who wanted to attack him as simply a "conspiracy theorist."

The so-called mainstream media, which is controlled by the government to begin with, will use any opening to discredit, debunk, demonize, deny and destroy an author, reporter or screen writer who they wish to attack, and their favorite method for anyone who writes of conspiracies is to use what I call "The Little Green Men From Mars" attack.

Back in the 1950s there were a rash of UFO sightings. Hollywood jumped on board and capitalized on the then-current fear of an "invasion from outer space" with films such as Destination Moon (1950), The Day The Earth Stood Still (1951), Invaders From Mars (1953), It Came From Outer Space (1953), The War Of The Worlds (1953), Them! (1954), This Island Earth (1955), Forbidden Planet (1956), and many others. There were over 100 such movies from 1951 through the 1960s.

At the same time, the Air Force began its "investigation" into the UFO phenomena with Project Grudge, a cover for chasing down witnesses of sightings and debunking them. This later evolved into Project Blue Book, which also was a mission of damage control. It was not long before anyone who had a sighting and reported it was laughed at and debunked as having seen “little green men from Mars.” There were even news reports on TV showing a few people, either staged or real, wearing tin foil hats on their heads to “keep out the radiation and gamma rays the aliens were bombarding us with.”

Once an author, reporter or citizen came forward with anything pertaining to UFOs, he or she was quickly labeled a nut case accused of seeing the Little Green Men by anyone who did not believe such things existed-and even if they did, they wouldn’t admit it.

I was once asked why I didn’t do a chapter on government coverups of UFOs in *The Medusa File* and I responded that if you wrote about UFOs, you had to keep it to just that. If I had added a chapter on UFOs in *Medusa*, too many readers would have chucked the book in the trash and labeled me Agent Mulder from *The X-Files*, or worse (even though, admittedly, I often can identify with Mulder and his constant uphill battles to find the truth). It would be a case of destruction of credibility. As a career police officer I knew that I had to meld my former career, which entailed writing to-the-point factual police reports into my civilian writing career in the vein of Sergeant Joe Friday in the old television series Dragnet. I can still see Jack Webb saying in his deadpan manner “Just the facts, ma’am, just the facts.”

Since Hoffman’s book on the bombing was the first book he’d written, he made the typical first-time author’s mistakes of trying to include too much in it. I tried to tell him that there were some things he needed to leave out, but he was determined to joust every windmill on the battlefield. He was like a hound on the trail of a stag but he was not going to chase just one deer, but the whole herd. And, in so doing, he stood the chance of making the mistake of not fact-checking everything he wrote before he published it—which is okay IF you credit the information to its source and simply not declare it as fact without anything to back it up. In one incident he described in his book, this came back to haunt him. I was always a fan of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle’s “Sherlock Holmes” mysteries. In various tales regarding Holmes and Watson, he gives Holmes the advice (in various forms): “I never guess. It is a capital mistake to theorize before one has data. Insensibly, one begins to twist facts to suit theories, instead of theories to suit facts.” (Found in *The Sign of Four* and *A Scandal in Bohemia).*

“Rabbi” Hoffman, as I often referred to him, called me in May of 1999 to tell me that he was being sued. His book, which had been out for almost a year, had stirred up its share of controversy. But until that time no one named in the book had come forward to contest its contents. Then on May 12th, retired FBI agent Oliver “Buck” Revell, the former Assistant Deputy Director of the FBI, who had a “most interesting career” with the Bureau, filed a defamation of character suit against Hoffman for something he wrote in one of his chapters regarding the fatal bombing of Pan Am 103. Hoffman was attempting to show a connection between terrorism, the political fallout from terrorist events, and more importantly, corruption in the Federal Bureau of Investigation from field agents to the FBI lab. Citizens all over the country were incensed over the events of Ruby Ridge, Waco, and now Oklahoma City and were questioning the conduct and leadership of the FBI, BATF, DEA, and even the IRS. Like Oklahoma City we discovered a lot of strange and suspicious issues in several of the terrorist events “investigated” by the federal government.

Of note here is the tragic bombing of Pan Am 103 in 1988. The more we looked at it, the more we found that disagreed with what we were being told, what the agents in the field at Lockerbie, Scotland were "finding," and where the direction of the investigation was going contrary to known facts and eye witness accounts. And most of all, whether the government might have had foreknowledge that something was going to happen to that particular flight. If they did, and didn't do what they could to protect the passengers on the plane, it would parallel what had been charged in the Oklahoma City bombing.

Typically, U.S. authorities disingenuously denied receiving any warnings, as they would later do in New York on 9/11 and in Oklahoma City. Yet, as in those cases, evidence of prior knowledge would eventually become known. "It subsequently came to me on further inquiries that they hadn't ignored [the warnings]," said a Pan Am security officer. "A number of VIPs were pulled off that plane. A number of intelligence operatives were pulled off that plane."

Due to the warnings posted in U.S. embassies by the State Department (but not forwarded to Pan Am), many government employees avoided the flight. In fact, the Boeing 747 jumbo jet was only two-thirds full that evening. South African president P.W. Botha and several high-ranking officials were advised by state security forces to change their reservations at the last hour. The South African State Security forces, it should be noted, had a close relationship with the CIA.

Strange as it may seem, there were several important people scheduled to fly aboard that flight who were warned to stay off and reschedule. Some were even pulled off the flight before it could take off. (For more on this and the motives for the strange activities by government bodies, read the chapter on Pan Am 103 in *The Medusa File*).

Hoffman, who had read all he could find on the Pan Am tragedy, read one piece in which a senior FBI agent named Buck Revell had "rushed out on the tarmac and pulled his son and daughter-in-law" off of the plane. Unfortunately, David only sent me pieces of his manuscript as he was working on the original version, and I never saw this assertion until it was too late. Such a statement, to me, didn't make sense. No one just rushes out "onto the tarmac" to approach an airplane. If an announcement was made aboard an airplane for someone to de-plane, that's one thing if it is still at the gate, but not after it has rolled back. My next question to Dave would have been, "What was Revell doing in London in the first place?"

To put it mildly, on this particular story, Hoffman was off the leash and after the stag. But the stag was elusive, and even if true, could not be proven. Now Revell was suing him. And other than showing possible government foreknowledge of a tragic event and not taking proper action, it had nothing to do with the Oklahoma City bomb case.

One newspaper article reported:

"The lawsuit was filed against Hoffman and Alexander B. Magnus, who financed Hoffman's work through a group called Americans for Responsible Media.

"The book claimed Revell had advance knowledge of the Pan Am airliner bombing, which occurred over Lockerbie, Scotland, killing 270 people. It alleged Revell personally pulled his son and daughter-in-law off the plane on the tarmac of a London airport.

"At the time of the bombing Revell was in Washington, where he served as the FBI's executive assistant director for investigations. He said his son had left London a month before the bombing and that his daughter-in-law was also in the United States.

"The lawsuit said Hoffman's book also implied that Revell, former head of the FBI's Dallas office, was a co-conspirator in the Oklahoma City bombing, which killed 168 people April 19, 1995.

"'That is the most atrocious kind of lies,' he [Revell] said.

"Revell said Hoffman never spoke to him about the allegations before his book was published."

Hoffman's attorney, Mike Johnston, took the case and after winning against Revell in a lower court, ended up, after Revell appealed, actually trying it before the Supreme Court. In the end, Revell lost the case at that level. An article on the matter published in *NewsOK* when the Supreme Court case ended in October, 2003, said:

"A former FBI official says he wanted to protect his reputation and refute "the most atrocious kind of lies" when he sued the author of a book that accused him of having advance knowledge of the 1988 bombing of Pan Am Flight 103 over Scotland.

"Oliver "Buck" Revell's legal battle may have ended Monday, when the U.S. Supreme Court let stand lower court rulings that said he did not prove author David Hoffman acted with 'actual malice,' the standard required for public figures to recover damages in defamation cases.

"Public officials are left unshielded because people can say anything. They're virtually defenseless," said Revell, whose 1999 lawsuit claimed Hoffman's book, "*The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*," accused him of allowing mass murder.

"'It's absolutely, of course, totally false. It's absurd,' said Revell, a Muskogee [Oklahoma] native who retired from the FBI in 1994 and runs a global business and security-consulting firm in Rowlett, Texas."

The case was lost in the Supreme Court partly because Hoffman had quoted another source for the statements regarding Revell in London. I had read that one particular mention on an internet site, but simply having something on the internet without further proof to back it up does not necessarily make it true—or reliable. Simply stating the facts of the number of important people and intelligence assets that had been warned in advance to stay off the plane would have been more than sufficient to show foreknowledge.

As late as 2017, articles saying that Revell "rushed out on the tarmac" still exist on the internet. On one website titled "WikiSpooks," a page is dedicated to Revell with both his awards and duty assignments, and also negative items. Regarding Pan Am 103 and the accusation that Revell "rushed out on the tarmac" the notation states:

"On 21 December 1988, shortly before Pan Am 103 took off from London's Heathrow airport at 18:25 hours, FBI Assistant Director Oliver "Buck" Revell reportedly rushed out onto the tarmac and pulled his son and daughter-in-law off the plane. The Lockerbie bombing was not the first time authorities were warned of an impending terrorist attack.

The situation would repeat itself five years later in New York City, and seven years later in Oklahoma. It was an all too eerie coincidence.”

The point that Hoffman was trying to make was that without a doubt Pan Am 103 showed government foreknowledge. He also showed that the handling of the case afterwards was totally corrupted by the manner in which the FBI lab examined the evidence in order to come to the conclusion that it was a bomb plot by Libyan leader Mohamar Khadaffi, without taking into account other leads that led elsewhere. Hoffman, by the time he had finished his book manuscript, was extremely upset with the actions of the FBI in the bombing case, the corruption within the bureau, and what agents and superiors had gotten away with in the past and would continue to do so. He told me “The FBI needs a good house-cleaning, from the top down.”

I told him “Dave, there’s a lot of good agents out there. They just aren’t allowed to do their jobs, and one even told me he hated two things: criminals and his own headquarters. And Dave, I can say the same thing about a lot of police departments, including my own.”

Hoffman was not the only one sued by Revell. Feral House Inc., the publisher, could not afford to defend itself against the suit in the beginning and instead of fighting it in court came to an agreement to destroy all copies of the book and agree not to print any more. Other than a few rare copies on the internet, the book has gone into the Black Hole.

CHAPTER 22

Rabbit Trails and Mind Control—Was McVeigh a “Manchurian Candidate”?

The more we do to you, the less you seem to believe we are doing it. - Joseph Mengele

If you don’t control your mind, someone else will” - Joseph Allston

Previously I mentioned the “Little Green Men from Mars” syndrome. At the risk of reaching that point in this book I beg the reader to keep an open mind and not to succumb to mental tunnel vision. That is to say that by human nature, we live in our own worlds and we don’t like to look outside our own beliefs and experiences at things that just don’t seem to fit our conception of reality. Unfortunately, at this point, we need to explore the issue of exactly who was Timothy McVeigh, and what made him change from a perfect soldier to a heartless baby-killing assassin?

When working intelligence factors in the military we take all information available and filter it to find the pieces of a puzzle that forms a picture. As Sherlock Holmes stated in at least one short story “Once you eliminate the impossible, whatever remains, no matter how improbable, must be the truth.”

As David Hoffman, myself, and others progressed through this investigation we found ourselves finding more and more “rabbit trails” that led off to other areas that might be connected or have influence on our efforts. Most were dead ends, but some were valid in varying degrees. One of those of significance is why McVeigh did what he did, and, besides Nichols, were any others involved who might be part of the “special team” that he had mentioned in a letter to his sister in which he claimed to have become a “government assassin.”

For the uninitiated in the area of government dirty tricks, I suggest you read my book *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government* for more information on terrible things people within our government have been involved with since WWII. It is not a “Conspiracy Theory” book. There is no “theory” in it. All are facts of true conspiracies and crimes that have occurred, with most going unreported and unpunished. One chapter in that book that goes into detail concerning mind control experiments and operations dating from WWII in Nazi Germany, up through the late 1970s in this country.

One Day Six, after the bombing, I met with my contact agent at the FBI office in Tulsa, Pete Rickel. He briefed me on the current status of McVeigh, who was in custody, and saying very little. One thing Pete told me was that McVeigh was complaining about pain in his buttocks, and that the government had “implanted a chip in his butt.”

Pete laughed, and said that this guy was a nut case. I asked him why he thought that and he replied, “A chip in his butt? How ridiculous is that?”

Rickel was a bit shocked when I said, “It’s not ridiculous. It’s possible and you need to check on that.” I knew of Army programs that had mentioned “chipping” Special Forces and Special Operations soldiers with identification chips that would identify them if they were wounded or killed in action, for medical records, or for disposition of remains. One program that was being talked about long before that day was implantation of a chip that could be used to track individuals by satellite. This would be useful not only for special operations, but to track downed pilots and POWs.

I asked Pete "Have you, the FBI, X-rayed his butt?"

"You can't be serious," said Pete, "There's no such thing." There was, but there was no point in arguing about it at that juncture. At that time RFID (Radio Frequency Identification Devices) were put in pets and farm animals, and some human volunteers. As of April 11th, 2017, according to a CBA documentary, humans in Europe were accepting ID chips in their hands for "convenience." They take the place of credit cards, ID pass cards, and even car keys. There was no mention on the program about Christians' concerns regarding the "Mark of the Beast" mentioned in Revelation 13: 16-17 of the Bible.

I let it go. Then Pete said "McVeigh thinks he's still a soldier, and now he's a POW. All he's giving us is basically name, rank and serial number. The only other thing he's saying is that he would talk to Sheriff Mack."

I knew Richie Mack. Sheriff Richard Mack was the sheriff of Graham County, Arizona, and had filed suit on the government in 1994 in regard to an unfunded mandate requiring law enforcement agencies to do background checks in compliance with the Brady Bill. He won the case in the U.S. Supreme court since the court decided that the Federal Government cannot mandate—force—anyone to do anything that the federal government was not ready to pay for.

I responded, "I know. Sheriff Mack called me this morning and told me that and to ask that he be granted visitation with McVeigh. Let's see what McVeigh has to say to him."

"That won't happen. We're not letting McVeigh talk to anyone."

That ended the conversation. I didn't want to inquire why McVeigh, like any prisoner, could not ask for or authorize visitation. To me, McVeigh had that right, and I really wanted to see what Richie Mack might find out. But for some reason, someone, somewhere did not want that to happen.

The week after the bombing I didn't hear anything about McVeigh other than what the media reported. One aspect of his personality that came out was how calm and cool he was when he was stopped by OHP Trooper Charlie Hanger, when he was in jail, and when he was in federal custody. He was armed with a Glock 9mm semi-auto handgun when he was stopped by Hanger. Hanger was simply stopping a speeder who was driving in a car with no license tag. He had not connected McVeigh to the bombing and no information about suspects had been disseminated. McVeigh could have shot Hanger, then drove off. But he didn't. Instead he gave up and cooperated with the trooper. To me, this didn't make sense for someone who had just killed well over a hundred innocent people, including children and babies.

After talking to Rickel, my first inclination about McVeigh is that he might be someone who was under some kind of mind control. I felt this way because of all the past research I had done when writing *The Medusa File*. I knew of the programs that existed in the past, what they were designed for, and what they actually accomplished—and that such programs still existed. But was McVeigh one who had been so programmed or indoctrinated? And if so, why, who did it, where was it done, when was it done, and what was the purpose? A lot of questions had to be answered.

It was the first rabbit trail that I started a file on.

Shortly after the Korean war, we became aware of U.S. military personnel were been captured in Korea being put through a "re-education" program in the prisoner of war camps. We discovered that the first thing that was done once prisoners were moved from the initial capture point to a prison camp was that the officers were segregated from the enlisted personnel. This was done to take away any higher ranking leaders so that the remaining prisoners would be easier to control and influence. In the following weeks the prisoners were forced to attend "classes" that were little more than indoctrination sessions. All rank was removed and all soldiers were told that they were all equal and no one other than their Chinese captors could tell them what to do. They had to be good students to receive privileges, and often just to receive food and medical care. Over a period of time those who were most malleable were separated for "further training." These individuals became what we later identified as "Manchurian Candidates." The 1962 movie of that same name, which showed what was dubbed by U.S. scientists as "brain washing," was "The Manchurian Candidate," staring Frank Sinatra, Laurence Harvey, Janet Leigh, Angela Lansbury, and Henry Silva. The plot is one wherein one of the POWs becomes a programmed assassin, whose target is a high ranking U.S. political figure.

The movie reflected reality in what was actually happening in several government facilities and organizations. One organization that was extremely interested was the CIA, which not only became concerned that an enemy might be able to program an assassin, but have the ability to create a "super soldier." Then, beyond that, to even control the population by various means. Could we do the that? Could we use the Chinese methods to select and program our own assassins, spies, or super soldiers? That became the issue to be explored by both the CIA and the civilian psychiatric community that could be drawn upon to assist with research and experimentation.

One of the first experimental programs concerning mind control by the CIA was code-named "Midnight Climax." We know very little about this program other than that it involved drugs, some type of mental programming, often involving electric shock, sleep deprivation, subliminal "sound saturation," and hypnosis. We also know that a psychiatrist named Dr. Erwin Cameron was employed as a contractor by the CIA to work in this area, and whose specialty was hypnosis. He also used what he referred to as "psychic driving" and shock therapy to "implant new ideas" in the brains of his subjects. The ultimate goal was whether or not someone could de-program and re-program the human mind to make them do whatever was needed to fulfill a mission.

One of Cameron's "subjects" was an Army veteran, Paul H. Paul—a personal friend of mine—gives his account of his and his then-wife's experiences with Dr. Cameron. Paul was a U.S. Army veteran who had been injured in both knees during a field exercise by the muzzle blast and debris of a .50 caliber machine gun during a field exercise. He had been within the dangerous range of the blanks and their wadding, and had sustained damage that would effect him not only in the remainder of his Army service, but later in civilian life. Here is his story:

"During the Fall of 1956, I worked as a ballroom dancing instructor at the Robert Cowles

Dance Studio on Euclid Avenue in midtown St. Louis. Five days each week, I worked as a Production Control Expediter for the McDonnell Aircraft Corporation, in north St. Louis County, from 7:00 A.M. until 3:30 PM Then, after rushing home to shower shave, and change clothes, I drove to midtown St. Louis where I taught ballroom dancing from 5:30 P.M. until 11:00 P.M. It was a crushing schedule, but it was something I felt I had to do for my own physical wellbeing.

“I was drafted into the United States Army in August 1953, during the closing months of the Korean War. And since the war continued and the weekly body counts mounted, we were subjected to basic infantry training as if the war would go on for years. One dark evening, I was selected for a night recon in the rugged Boston Mountains of northeastern Arkansas. And it was during that patrol, with our faces blackened and our dog tags taped together, that I experienced a very painful “friendly fire” encounter with a .50 caliber machine gun, manned by a team of battle-hardened South Korean (ROK) soldiers. I was raked across the knees with blank fragments from a distance of about ten feet, knocking my legs from under me and deafening me for hours.

“After being assigned overseas, my knees were often quite painful and swollen. And when I was discharged in early June 1955, the Army doctors offered to send me to a Veterans Administration hospital for orthopedic surgery. However, they advised against surgery because they feared the surgery would make matters worse, rather than better. Instead, they advised that I give my knees “extreme amounts of exercise” over a period of years. That, they insisted, was the best medical advice they could give me.

“Hence, my daytime job with McDonnell Aircraft Corporation in St. Louis, in which I walked from five to seven miles each day inside the enormous factory complex, five days a week, and my evening job, in which I taught ballroom dancing for at least five hours each evening. The prescription worked, as hoped, and the pain in my knees gradually dissipated.

“Two of the students who participated in group sessions at least twice each week were a man, known only as Dr. Cameron, and his wife. Dr. Cameron explained that he headed a research organization in St. Louis known as the Kimball Foundation, which was involved in the study of treating psychosomatic illnesses through the alteration of personality factors. He explained that he and his associates were convinced that, if they could somehow alter the self-image and the overall attitude of their subjects, they could ease or eliminate certain physical ailments.

“As the weeks passed, the owners of the studio allowed us to stay late when we were able to converse with Dr. Cameron and to hear tales of his many successes, using a technique referred to as “slumber talk” in which a small voice transmitter was placed under the pillow of their subjects as they slept each night. What emanated from the speakers was all but totally inaudible during waking hours, but totally accessible to the subconscious during sleep. The receivers delivered an endless stream of flattering and encouraging messages to the subject’s ear, causing them to experience a significant change in attitude and personality over an extended period of time.

“Dr. Cameron also entertained us with demonstrations of hypnotic feats. One of my female colleagues , my assigned dancing partner, was found to be an excellent hypnotic subject. While fully awake, She had difficulty remembering the names of more than a few of her high school classmates, and even fewer of her classmates from grammar school and junior high school. However, during age regression demonstrations, she was able to remember most of the names of her classmates and teachers, going all the way back to the early primary grades.

“But what was most fascinating was the changes in her handwriting as she was age-regressed backward to eighth grade, to sixth grade, to fourth grade, and to second grade. With each leap backward, her handwriting gradually changed from the flowing cursive of a seventeen-year-old young woman, to a teenage adolescent, to the cursive scrawl of a pre-pubescent child, and finally to the scrawled block letters of a second-grader.

“After several weeks of hypnotic episodes, Dr. Cameron provided my dance partner with a code phrase which, if spoken or whispered to her by another person, would cause her to enter a deep hypnotic state almost instantaneously and she would then follow instructions without question. Her code phrase was known only to her and Dr. Cameron, but she later informed me that her code phrase was “blue rose,” words that no other human being would ever likely voice in her presence.

“It was entirely reminiscent of the plot of the 1962 film, “The Manchurian Candidate,” in which an American prisoner of war was “pre-programmed” by his Chinese captor to assassinate a major American political figure. All that was required to trigger the assassination attempt months or years later was a telephone call to a pre-programmed assassin which a phrase from a Robert Frost poem ‘…and miles to go before I sleep’… was whispered into his ear.

“But what was most surprising about our months of twice-weekly sessions with Dr. Cameron was something that I did not discover until years later when I had reason to consider exactly who our Dr. Cameron might have been. It was then that I finally realized that, in the time that we spent as dance instructors and psychological subjects of Dr. Cameron, my partner and I had both *experienced major alterations in our personalities* and our outlook on life.

“Following our time with Dr. Cameron, my partner, who’d been an energetic extrovert when we first met, became quite introverted, wary of strangers, and quite uncomfortable in most social settings. However, in that same time, I went from being a shy, introverted, highly self-conscious young man with a huge inferiority complex, to being a hard charging extrovert, socially self-confident, and unafraid to tackle any problem, no matter how large or how small.

“What caused me to reach that conclusion during the early 1970s was a CBS documentary on a CIA mind-control program in which they performed various mind-control experiments on sometimes unsuspecting subjects. In one widely-reported incident it was learned that the CIA had administered a dose of lysergic acid diethylamide (LSD) to an unsuspecting subject. That person, thinking he was capable of flying, leapt from the roof of a tall building, killing himself.

(*Author’s note: this man was Frank Olson, bacteriologist and biological warfare specialist who worked at Camp Detrick in Maryland. One night at a party in a rural cabin in Maryland, he was covertly dosed with LSD by his CIA supervisor—possibly Jolyon*

West—and, nine days later, plunged to his death from the window of a New York City hotel room. Some, including the official U.S. government version, term his death a suicide. Others allege murder).

“In one segment, the investigators interviewed local residents who had, at one time or another, worked at a large hilltop estate in Montreal. What they learned was that those they interviewed had been paid to participate in various mind games and research protocols… for what purpose they did not know. They were being well paid and that was all they cared to know.

“The program was a CIA program known as MKULTRA. But, what came as a complete surprise to me, was the information that their employer, the man in charge of the program, was known as “Dr. Cameron.” Were the two Drs. Cameron one and the same? Were we the unwitting subjects of a CIA mind-control experiment? We may never know. Only the CIA knows.”

Dr. Cameron was put under Dr. Sidney Gottlieb of the Technical Services Section of the CIA. The TSS had several varied programs that ran from mind control to assassination weapons such as poisons, drugs, and other “classified materials.” Known as the “Office of Dirty Tricks,” Gottlieb’s team and a large number of contractors worked in various areas of mind control experimentation, almost always using unsuspecting human “guinea pigs” across the country.

The project evolved into what became code-named MK/ULTRA. It has often been speculated that the “MK” was for “Manchurian Kandidate.”

The object of MK/ULTRA was simply *control*. From control of individuals to control of entire populations. The scientists experimented with everything from drugs and hypnosis to utilizing mass media ideas to influence human behavior and knowledge, part of which evolved into Operation Mockingbird’s control of the media and what we see and hear on television and radio and read in newspapers and books.

Of particular interest is the compartmentalization of the various segments of the control experiments. Researchers studied animal behavior in which rats, dogs and monkeys were subjected to various stimuli from rewards, to drugs, to pain. Then moving up a step to humans: how men reacted to the same stimuli, and/or blackmail and sense of duty. But the main thrust of the program was to find methods of control that were reliable, could be done in the shortest time possible, and would cause the subject to be able to accomplish a pre-programmed task, then, either not remember what they had done, or self-destruct afterwards. In any case, the subject, after the fact, would not be able to give anyone information on who he worked for, or who was actually behind the “mission.”

Besides hypnosis and other means of breaking down the human mind so that it could be re-programmed, the scientists became very interested in a new drug that was discovered in Switzerland: Lysergic acid diethylamide, or LSD.

LSD, or “Acid” is a psychotropic hallucinogenic drug that behaves differently in different people. It is not reliable for every CIA-intended use, but the TSS under Sid Gottlieb, along with several contractors in the U.S. and Canada, did extensive experimentation with the drug.

Another area of mind control occurs in various cults. Questions surfaced concerning whether large numbers of people could be influenced to do unnatural things by having a leader that could manipulate their thinking. One example of this in the 70s and 80s was Jonestown, Guyana, where cult leader Jim Jones influenced a large number of followers to move to a jungle encampment in where they were abused, turned into basic slave labor, and manipulated to see what could be done by a charismatic leader (probably with the help of drugs). Eventually the word got out to relatives of those living there and an investigation was initiated. California congressman Leo Ryan and a delegation of relatives and media personnel flew to Guyana and managed to visit the compound. Jones appeared to Ryan to be under the influence of some kind of drug, or maybe he was just plain "mental." Jones raved about the government coming after him and "his people," and that they would defend themselves against invaders.

Jones, who appeared to be under some kind of mind control himself, conditioned his followers to do as he said without question. He even had "suicide drills" wherein everyone would line up and drink "poison." On one of these drills, a survivor of Jonestown tells:

"Everyone, including the children, was told to line up. As we passed through the line, we were given a small glass of red liquid to drink. We were told that the liquid contained poison and that we would die within 45 minutes. *We all did as we were told*. When the time came when we should have dropped dead, Rev. Jones explained that the poison was not real and that we had just been through a loyalty test. He warned us that *the time was not far off when it would become necessary for us to die by our own hands*."

When the Ryan party, along with several Jonestown residents, tried to leave, they were gunned down at the airport. After this Jones knew he had to destroy Jonestown and everyone in it. It was at this time that he had everyone line up to "drink the Kool Aid."

That is when the problem for Jones surfaced. It seems that not everyone was sufficiently programmed to follow the fatal orders, so besides those who drank from the vat of flavored drink containing Cyanide, there were those who tried to flee into the jungle. Those who attempted this were shot in the back by Jones' security guards. Others were found later with syringe marks in their backs and scattered syringes around their bodies. Over 400 people died at Jonestown. Many doing it willingly.

Other cults that could fall into the category of mind control would be such as Charles Manson's "Family," who killed without remorse on order of Charlie Manson; Anton LaVey's "Church of Satan" in San Francisco; various Satanic and Wiccan groups; and Michael Aquino's "Temple of Set."

Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino's speciality in the U.S. Army was in Intelligence and Psychological Warfare. In 1973 he was the executive officer of a Psywar battalion, and one of his specialities was utilizing electronic emissions to effect the mind. In 1980, Aquino wrote a book titled "MindWar." Amazon's advertisement for the book reads:

"This book's extrapolation and evolution of the original 1980 concept is not merely theoretical. It proposes "laboratory" implementation through the structural redesign of the U.S. Army's three "Special Operations" branches: Psychological Operations, *Special Forces*, and Civil Affairs. A multiphase sequence of their interaction in a MindWar campaign is outlined, with the international crisis resolution procedures of the United

States modified to facilitate it.” [emphasis mine].

Aquino went on to establish his “Temple of Set” in 1975, which he developed after being a member of Anton LaVey’s Church of Satan in San Francisco. One can see how the Luciferian influence and the Scientific efforts were beginning to meld in the intelligence services and the armed services as well.

Aquino ran afoul of the law when he was stationed at the Presidio in San Francisco. He was sued for millions by parents of the Presidio Child Care Center who discovered that he was involved in a child molestation ring. But the Army, for some reason, convinced the parents to drop the suit.

Aquino was also allegedly involved in MK/ULTRA experiments in Vietnam, wherein one tactic was to spray areas of Vietcong and North Vietnamese Army locations with LSD, hence making them combat ineffective.

Aquino and his Temple of Set had ever-mounting problems as time went on. As late as 1999, Aquino was named in an investigation concerning ritual child abuse (and pedophilic mind control). In the August 26, 2005 issue of Executive Intelligence Review, a publication of Lyndon LaRouche’s organization, a case involving Aquino in the U.S. District Court exposes more than a few hints at his, and the government’s, mind control efforts in the civilian and youth population:

“On Feb. 5, 1999, in U.S. District Court in Lincoln, Nebraska, an extraordinary hearing occurred in *Paul A. Bonacci v. Lawrence E. King*, a civil action in which the plaintiff charged that he had been ritualistically abused by the defendant, as part of a nationwide pedophile ring linked to powerful political figures in Washington, and *to elements of the U.S. military and intelligence establishment.* Three weeks later, on Feb. 27, Judge Warren K. Urbom ordered King, who is currently in Federal prison, to pay $1 million in damages to Bonacci, in what Bonacci’s attorney John DeCamp said was a clear signal that “the evidence presented was credible.

“During the Feb. 5 hearing, Noreen Gosch stunned the court with sworn testimony linking U.S. Army Lt. Col. Michael Aquino (ret.) to the nationwide pedophile ring. Her son, Johnny, then 12 years old, was kidnapped off the streets of West Des Moines, Iowa, on Sept. 5, 1982, while he was doing his early-morning newspaper deliveries. Since his kidnapping, she has devoted all of her time and resources to finding her son, and to exposing the dangers that millions of children in America face from this hideous, literally Satanic, underground of ritualistic deviants.

“We have investigated, we have talked to, so far, 35 victims of this said organization that took my son and is responsible for what happened to Paul, and they can verify everything that has happened,” she told the court.

“What this story involves is an elaborate function, I will say, that was an offshoot of a government program. The MK-Ultra program was developed in the 1950s by the CIA. It was used to help spy on other countries during the Cold War because they felt that the other countries were spying on us.

“It was very successful. They could do it very well.”

Then, the Aquino bombshell: Noreen Gosch stated, “there was a man by the name of

Michael Aquino. He was in the military. *He had top Pentagon clearances. He was a pedophile. He was a Satanist.* He's founded the Temple of Set. And he was a close friend of Anton LaVey. The two of them were very active in ritualistic sexual abuse. And they deferred funding from this government program to use [in] this experimentation on children *where they deliberately split off the personalities of these children into multiples, so that when they're questioned or put under oath or questioned under lie detector, that unless the operator knows how to question a multiple-personality disorder, they turn up with no evidence.*" [emphasis mine]

She continued: "They used these kids to sexually compromise politicians or anyone else they wished to have control of. This sounds so far out and so bizarre I had trouble accepting it in the beginning myself until I was presented with the data. We have the proof. In black and white."

This testimony parallels what I wrote in *The Medusa File* in the chapter about the Finders Case, which occurred a bit earlier, in 1987. On February 7th, 1987, the *Washington Post* ran an interesting story that did not at first seem to have any particularly national significance. The article concerned a case of possible kidnapping and child abuse, and material discovered in the Washington DC area that they say points to a 1960s style commune called the Finders, described in a court document as a "cult" that conducted "brainwashing" and used children in "rituals." DC police who searched a Northeast Washington warehouse linked to the group removed large plastic bags filled with color slides, photographs and photographic contact sheets. Some showed naked children involved in what appeared to be "cult rituals," bloodletting ceremonies of animals and one photograph of a child in chains. Several cameras were found, many behind one-way mirrors that faced bedrooms wherein a "target" would be videotaped having sex with a minor, then later the tape could be used against that person, usually a high ranking politician or bureaucrat in the U.S. government.

When the Washington D.C. Metropolitan police detectives were ready to prepare charges against those involved, they were contacted by the FBI and told to "stand down." According to the Treasury agent's report regarding who was involved in the investigation:

"To the Resident Agent in Charge Date: 04/13/87

On Thursday, February 5, 1987, Senior Special Agent Harrold and I assisted the Washington D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) with two search warrants involving the possible sexual exploitation of children. During the course of the search warrants, numerous documents were discovered which appeared to be concerned with international trafficking in children, high tech transfer to the United Kingdom, and international transfer of currency.

"DETAILS OF INVESTIGATION:

"On March 31, 1987, I contacted Detective Jim Bradley of the Washington, DC Metropolitan Police Department (MPD). I was to meet with Detective Bradley to review the documents seized pursuant to two search warrants executed in January, 1987. The meeting was to take place on April 2 or 3, 1987.

"On April 2, 1987, I arrived at MPD at approximately 9:00 a.m. Detective Bradley was not available. I spoke to a third party who was willing to discuss the case with me on a strictly “off the record” basis.

“I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn, advised the MPD that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow, *North Korea*, and *North Vietnam* from the late 1950s to mid 1970s.

The individual further advised me of circumstances which *indicated that the investigation into the activity of the Finders had become a CIA internal matter.* The *MPD report has been classified SECRET and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired.* [emphasis mine]

“No further information will be available. No further action will be taken.

“ACTION TO BE TAKEN BY LESD/TECS:

No action to be taken on the basis of this report.”

Now, remember that these people were traveling from Washington D.C. and other places to North Vietnam and North Korea during the Vietnam war! That was prohibited travel, but the State Department stated to the MPD that all travel was within the law and there would be no action taken! One can only wonder how many high level State Department officials had spent some time in the Finders warehouse.

We find another strange character on this rabbit trail: Dr. Jolyon “Jolly” West, a mind control expert from the CIA who is connected to the Oklahoma City bombing case. I was amazed at West’s background and where he had been in his psychiatric career, and most of all, who he worked for and who he “treated.”

Dr. Louis Jolyon West’s interest in mind control began when, as Chief of Psychiatry Service at the Lackland Air Force Base, San Antonio, Texas, he examined POWs from the Korean War to determine the effects of torture and brainwashing during the CIA’s concern of Manchurian Candidates. His experience in this field allowed him to serve as an expert witness in the case of Patricia Hearst, the famous socialite kidnap victim-turned convicted bank robber.

Among West’s other famous clients was Dallas nightclub owner and mobster Jack Rubinstein, or Jack “Ruby,” a paid soldier for Sam Giancana of the Chicago crime family, and assassin of Lee Harvey Oswald. West’s examination of Ruby resulted in Ruby’s diagnosis of mental illness and *prescription of psychiatric drugs*, which Ruby charged were “poison.” Though West is hailed for helping commute Ruby’s death sentence, Ruby died in prison of cancer two years later, convinced that he was injected with malignant cancer cells by his captors.

West also examined Sirhan Sirhan, alleged assassin of Robert F. Kennedy, and widely suspected of being the victim of a method of brainwashing known as “psychic driving,” first pioneered by Dr. Ewing Cameron when he placed patients into long-term comatose states without their consent and played selected phrases continuously to the patient in loops in order to break down psychological barriers to “open the conscientiousness” of the “subject.”

It is most interesting to note that it was West that headed the American Psychological Association (APA) trauma response team that rushed to Oklahoma City in the wake of the 1995 bombing of the Murrah Federal Building. Timothy McVeigh was examined by John Douglas of the FBI’s Psychological Profile Unit, who determined that McVeigh was “an easily controlled and manipulated personality.” And it was West who visited McVeigh *eighteen times* in the federal prison in El Reno! West obviously was not there to diagnose McVeigh or treat him, but instead to reinforce McVeigh’s programmed brain. West never issued a report on McVeigh, or on what he had done while he was with McVeigh.

Who, exactly, was Timothy McVeigh? In the covert intelligence and special operations world it’s called “sheep dipping.” Sheep dipping is the term for giving someone an alternate identity, or changing their persona into someone who is different from who they really are. Once this is done the next phase is “building a legend.” In that phase the individual with the new identity develops a new personality that others will see as someone other than the actual person. This method is used on varying levels in the military and intelligence community. On one level, for instance, during the Vietnam War, we needed to set up radar sites in Laos, but the military was prohibited from participating in any manner in Laos itself. So instead, U.S. Air Force technicians were “discharged” from the Air Force, hired by civilian contractors (a front company) then sent to Laos as civilians. But in reality, they never left the Air Force except on paper. Their time in grade continued as did their pay and military benefits for their dependents. That was simple “sheep dipping”.

A different phase, and one in which McVeigh’s story fits, is much more complicated. In this phase a military member is selected and asked to volunteer for a special assignment. Various enticements are given varying from promotion to reward, and always a sense of “duty to country.” In this last part the saying, “The ends justify the means” is always used, as is the reinforcement to the individual of necessity of understanding the unavoidable “collateral damage.”

As I examined McVeigh’s alleged military “record” I saw sure indicators of a man who was recruited into a project, then sheep-dipped, and following that, spending obvious time in a series of events to create his legend. McVeigh’s attendance at:

1. Gun shows, where individuals and groups who were considered threats to the government (at least to the “Secret Team” establishment, as described by Col. Fletcher Prouty in his writings. This “team” is also known in some circles as the Shadow Government);

2. His very obvious and vocal appearances at militia meetings;

3. His appearance at Waco during the siege making sure he was filmed and interviewed.

All of these events reminded me of Lee Harvey Oswald and his open display before the media in New Orleans, standing outside former FBI agent Guy Banister’s private detective office, which was in the same building as Oswald’s “Fair Play for Cuba Committee” office. New Orleans district attorney Jim Garrison exposed Oswald in his investigation into the New Orleans connections to the JFK assassination. In a Playboy interview he addresses Oswald’s persona and his probable connections:

“Playboy: Are you free to discuss Oswald’s role in the conspiracy?

“Garrison: Yes, but before you can understand Oswald’s role in the plot, you’ve got to jettison the image of him as a “self–proclaimed Marxist” that the mass media inculcated in the public after his arrest on November 22nd. *Oswald’s professed Marxist sympathies were just a cover for his real activities*. I don’t believe there are any serious students of the assassination who don’t recognize that Oswald’s actual political orientation was extreme right wing. His associates in Dallas and New Orleans — apart from *his CIA contacts* — were exclusively right wing, some covert, others overt: in fact, our office has positively identified *a number of his associates as neo–Nazis*. Oswald would have been more at home with *Mein Kampf* than *Das Kapital*.

“Playboy: If Oswald wasn’t a leftist, what motivation would he have had for shooting at another right–winger, Major General Edwin Walker, eight months before the assassination?

“Garrison: If he did it, his motive — *which is to say the motive of those behind him* — was a simple one: to ensure that after the assassination, people would ask this very question and assume that because Oswald had shot at General Walker, he must have been a left–winger. It was *just another part of Oswald’s cover;* if you defect to Russia, pass out pro–Castro leaflets on street corners and take a pot shot at General Walker, who on earth would doubt you’re a Communist?” [All emphasis mine]

Garrison was bringing out the same issues we were seeing when we examined McVeigh, his—McVeigh’s—past, and what was appearing to be a cover, and not who he was prior to 1991 when he was “discharged” from the Army.

That said, Garrison was incorrect in stating that Oswald would have been more comfortable with Adolph Hitler’s *Mein Kampf* than Marx’s *Das Kapital*. Contrary to what the current public schools and history books and media says, Hitler was Left Wing! His party was the National *Socialist* Party, a very militant Left Wing organization in which the State controlled everything. Hitler had more in common with Stalin than most people realize, but he was also in competition with Stalin for supreme power in and over Europe, and eventually the world, hence his invasion of Russia.

In the Playboy interview Garrison was asked to elaborate on Oswald’s connection to the government:

“Playboy**:** Can you elaborate on this?

“Garrison: Yes, because this incident ties together some of the strands of the spider’s web. At the time Oswald started his so–called Fair Play for Cuba Committee, two men — Hugh Ward and Guy Banister — operated a private investigative agency at 544 Camp Street in downtown New Orleans.

‘There are some intriguing aspects to their operation. For one thing, Guy Banister was one of the most militant right–wing anti–Communists in New Orleans. He was a former FBI official and his headquarters at 544 Camp Street was a clearinghouse for Cuban exiles and paramilitary right–wing activities. Specifically, he allowed his office to be used as a mail drop for the anti–Castro Cuban Democratic Revolutionary Front; *police* *intelligence records at the time reported that this group was "legitimate in nature and presumably had the unofficial sanction of the Central Intelligence Agency." It did.*

"Banister also published a newsletter for his clients that included virulent anti–Kennedy polemics. *My office also has evidence that Banister had intimate ties with the Office of Naval Intelligence and the CIA.* Both Banister and Ward were deeply involved in covert anti-Castro exile activities in New Orleans. Banister in particular seemed to have had an almost messianic drive to fight communism in every country in Latin America; and he was naturally of value to Cuban exiles because of his intimate connections with American intelligence agencies." [Emphasis mine]

Had I not done a huge amount of research into the JFK assassination for my book *Kill Zone—A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza*, the similarities between Oswald and McVeigh would have gone unnoticed. Anyone who delves into the Kennedy assassination will see how Oswald did have connections to both the CIA and FBI, and indeed had informant/agent file numbers assigned by both organizations.

Did McVeigh have such a relationship? Was he part of a secret team that did covert and often illegal operations? According to his sister he was, but his letter to his sister was not the only evidence uncovered.

In October of 2000 I received a letter from an inmate in the U.S. Federal Penitentiary in Florence, Colorado named Daniel [last name deleted here for his own protection]. "Daniel" wrote that he had inside knowledge from other inmates regarding the bombing. The Florence prison, known as the "Super Max," for Maximum Security, houses the most dangerous and infamous prisoners in the federal system. Inside are such characters as Ramzi Yousef, the World Trade Center and Operation BOJINKA bomber; Ted Kaczysnki —the Unibomber; abortion clinic bomber Eric Rudolph; former FBI agent-turned-Russian-spy Robert Hansen; former CIA agent Harold Nicholson who also sold secrets to the Russians; and several mob figures.

In his letter, and letters to follow, Daniel made many statements on what information he could provide, but most of it—the most important and relevant parts—would only be provided if there was something I could do "to help him." Other statements mentioned that he could only go further in his information to me if he was released from prison. Eventually his last letters included the release of at least one other prisoner who was his friend and also had information.

He described trying to work with federal authorities, namely the FBI and Department of Justice, in trading prison time for becoming an informant, and being able to infiltrate groups associated with militias, McVeigh, and other groups that were considered threats to the government.

No government agency took him up on his offer. In one letter he described writing to then U.S. Attorney General John Ashcroft with his offer. He received no reply.

As a career police officer who had dealt with "cons" numerous times, and as every cop knows, people who are incarcerated will do anything they can to obtain privileges or to make deals that would benefit them. It's human nature. The problem is that you can't trust them to tell the truth. There is an old saying in police work "don't let the con con you." And when I was a young rookie officer the old timers told me that "in prison, none of them are guilty. They all are innocent. They were set up. Just ask them and they'll tell you." I found this to be true throughout my 27 years with the Tulsa Police Department.

That said, I read (and responded to) each letter. I explained that there was nothing I could do personally to help him, but he should give me all the information he could to get to the truth on the case in honor of the innocent victims of the bombing. I knew that what he might offer would have to be checked, if possible, and verified as factual.

In his letter of October 21, 2000 he wrote:

"Regardless of whether or not I was set up, I have important information, and the documents. Four separate individuals told me of the event before it happened. Three, I believe, were directly involved, having told me several important details one week prior to the incident, including the date and time, and they had just come from Oklahoma.

"I am also in possession of some documents, acquired in the beginning of 1999 by another gentleman who was in direct contact with Terry Nichols. The documents are: A 3 page letter from Terry (I have enclosed parts of the two pages), a list of names of people involved and dates (including FBI, NSA, BATF, Military Intelligence Agents, a Judge, a Senator, and more. [Also] a wire transfer receipt for $5 million, signed by Timothy McVeigh.

"The letter mentions the list, and *Terry's split of $2.5 million*.

"I was in contact with Representative Charles Key for a while. He visited me with Michael Johnston, his attorney, on 9/1/99. Earlier this year he was in receipt of a copy of these two pages of the letter, unedited. Somehow a copy of these two pages ended up in the hands of the FBI, and another acquaintance was questioned for 36 hours concerning it. When I contacted Mr. Key later he denied receiving an un-edited copy, but only an edited one. My contacts [on the outside] first sent him an edited copy, then a full copy later…I have tried to use go-betweens because my life was threatened before by federal agents, and so were the lives of my now ex-wife and children. I don't know who to trust."

The letter ended with "Can you help me in any way? I have much more info to tell. The whole thing is eating away at me inside." The letter was signed with his name and prisoner number.

He added a P.S. and in it he wrote "I've even met someone who has knowledge of the middle-eastern connection. This same person (formerly CIA) can tell you where to find terrorists with barrels of Anthrax in the U.S."

Each letter I received from Daniel, and later his "friend," had items that I knew were outright fabrications or just simply didn't make sense. In this one, I knew that there was no such thing as "barrels of Anthrax." Anthrax is kept in secure glass storage containers in small amounts, then only used as a chemical bioweapon when mixed with a much larger amount of other "vector agents." I think that Daniel and his friends tried to gain my interest in this after reading a copy of my book "*The Medusa File*," which had a chapter on bioterrorism. He later mentioned that they had a copy in the prison and several inmates had read it.

That said, you never "kill the messenger" until you have heard everything he as to say. There's often a nugget of information that matches other intel you already have, or might receive in the future. You only throw away pieces of the puzzle that don't fit after the puzzle has been completed.

Daniel claimed that he had a friend who cleaned Nichols' cell, and that he had copied, by hand, pages from one of Nichols letters (or possibly notes to himself as it was not addressed to anyone in particular). I received two pages, but not the most important one that would list "others involved." The handwriting on what I received is legible, but the spelling makes me wonder if Nichols, who is more literate than what was copied, actually wrote such a letter. Also, it is missing at least one previous page, if not more, as it begins in the middle of a statement, missing what came before the first sentence on the page I had. It also is written as if Nichols, if it *was* Nichols, was having mental problems or was on some type of drug. The letter as written, mistakes included, read:

"I've seen this man here before or someplace. His eyes how they hurt.

"The Guard, I can't think! But I need to do this before it turns dark again. And I am unable to think.

"I think I am still on orders but I am confuss. (The goverment has been watching us from a distance) yet not the group doesn't care, nor do I.

"Timmy moved the date and time up [and] ask me to use ID for truck & room. They laughed at us. Said Timmys out of .T. [out of touch?]

"Tryed to help in Waco. Failed: did we fail here too! (I must speak, but can i for fear of insteant death.) The top dog here, Sg Daniels. But what [is] the target and why is Helms so distance from him!

(I must write names, date of what we planned.) The Guard I must forget. Must hide this. Give it to whom! I'll sit on finish.

They moved me. Why? He's w my ciell.

[End of first page]

Second page:

"Trust no one. Sg Sullivan said it be ok but no hope. My head hurts, tests and more tests yet if I break I must not.

"(Percy couldn't place charge right cause all I saw was smoke. It was to fall inward.)

"V.J. Young, why didn't baseball field go code yellow. Must stay calm.

"Cox said he get me out but not a word. (Timmy said it just a drill. But not sure. he said split 2.5 mill. A privt acount overseas) Towers will come. No were matters. No it a name not what we did or how! For our friend[s] who were killed: they pay big: Bang…

"(Here my list of names of all whom help or was part of.)

[signed] TerryN"

I don't think Terry Nichols was this illiterate. And the handwriting of his signature did not match that on his signed depositions. It is possible that the person who copied it was in a hurry, and also "literacy challenged" and tried to sign his signature like his actual hand writing. Still, when wading through what was written several things stuck out that would not have come from another convict that did not have the information we had. First, he mentions being on orders. Next he mentions “the Group.” Then he names “Sg Sullivan” probably meaning Sergeant Sullivan, followed by the names “Percy,” “V.J. Young,” and “Cox.”

Finally what stuck out to me was a huge missing piece of the puzzle, one that I had heard of before but could not back up with any more information, and that was the mention of a pay off! $2.5 million dollars to be split between McVeigh and Nichols!

Why would he mention this? How would the other cons know about this tidbit to fake a letter containing that particular sum?

I wrote Daniel back and asked for more information. What I received shortly thereafter was a single page that was allegedly copied on a copy machine of an “original” sheet that was supposedly taken from Nichols’ cell. In the first letter the hand writing was all capital block letters. In this one it was cursive. The spelling was just as bad, and the only way to verify it was written by Nichols would be to compare his hand writing, samples of which I did not have at the time.

The disjointed and rambling text, with circled numbers, reads as if the writer was under the influence of drugs::

“Randy Weaver Dead/Cor [unintelligible] ATF Ruby Ridge

Hamul FBI PA (1)

John Pilets or Pilzeth NSA or Justese dep (5)

Shoemaker MI Colo

Daniel Cody (the kid Snider MI [unintelligible] WS Militia

Sentor Spector Tex (2)

Shon Elliot MI unknown (3) OK

Ami Klien police Colo

Justise Robert Henry WS Tenth Circuit Court Appeals KS

Who is sentor getar?

Ted L Brown New Mex—Known as Kelly Brown AS

50 (from what)

fifth mont on th seventh day & nineteenth

Nine & seventeen (Twenty one?)

Seventh Month

Twelth month

seven & twentieth day or 27 Colby”

Was this the referenced list of names that Nichols allegedly wrote down? I never found out. It was very hard to read and disjointed. However, I did run some of the names and got a hit on one: Judge Robert Henry of the 10th Circuit Court of Appeals. According to his bio in Wikipedia:

"In 1994, President Bill Clinton appointed him as a federal judge on the United States Court of Appeals for the Tenth Circuit, which, as all other federal judges appointed under Article III, is a lifetime position. He was confirmed by the Senate on May 6, 1994. Judge Henry is a cousin of former Oklahoma Governor Brad Henry and administered the oath of office at the governor's inauguration in 2003."

Wikipedia also mentioned his memberships in various organizations, one being the Council on Foreign Relations, a very dangerous New World Order globalist organization with ties to the British Royal Society for International Affairs in London. For a detailed study into this group see my book *Kill Zone—A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza.* So of all the names this is the only one I could find any reference to on the Internet, and it was obvious that if Daniel and his friends did actually try giving this information to the FBI, nothing was done with it.

As I was beginning this chapter Attorney Jesse Trentadue called me in relation to the chapter I had written on the death of his brother Kenneth. Jesse and I had been in contact years ago and in the interim he had filed several lawsuits and FOIA suits against the federal government and the FBI. Like me, Jesse was a Truth Warrior and would not give up. During the conversation he told me of several things that he had discovered in his suits and depositions. One particular Deposition titled "Declaration of Terry Lynn Nichols" was a huge piece of the puzzle. It was filed February, 2016 in the U.S. District Court of Utah in Salt Lake City.

As I read through it several items jumped off the pages. Among them was Nichols' sworn statement that "I am also now *prepared to identify others* who played a role in the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Building in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma on April 19th, 1995."

In this statement Nichols admits that others besides him, McVeigh and Fortier were involved in the bombing. He went on to state that he had written Attorney General John Ashcroft, who worked for President George W. Bush, and said that he wanted others involved in the bombing "brought to justice." He said he was prepared to fully cooperate with the Department of Justice to achieve this goal, but "I have never received a response to that letter" from Ashcroft or anyone else in the DoJ. Further, Nichols stated that "I have been trying to speak out on the Oklahoma City bombing but have been frustrated in this effort by the Federal Bureau of Investigation and Department of Justice." Further he stated that "The Bureau of Prisons and Department of Justice have denied me all contact with the media."

This declaration was taken in 2016! The coverup of the case through three presidents has continued, no matter who was in power.

Nichols then went on to state that he had met with Congressman Dana Rohrabacher, who was investigating the bombing in his committee in Congress, and said "I had hoped that the results of that meeting would lead to an independent, deeply probing, open investigation of the Oklahoma City bombing, including what I now believe was the hidden role of various federal agencies in that matter. Unfortunately, that did not happen…I was not able to speak openly and candidly with Congressman Rohrabacher since, despite my objections, an FBI agent was present during that interview."

Nichols also stated that in Rohrabacher's findings that the congressman believed that there were others involved who escaped capture and prosecution, and that the congressman "was correct about 'Others Unknown'."

(It was sometime later that I received a call from Rohrabacher's office from a female staffer. She was somewhat antagonistic and did not impress me as someone who is really interested in the case, or cared about what anyone had to say. She asked if I would be willing to travel to Washington to tell Rohrabacher and his committee what I knew or had discovered about the case. I said that I would, but I heard in the background a voice say "we have a cop that might come forward." It was obvious to me that Rohrabacher's office was very skeptical about the case and to waste my time going to D.C. to testify would be an exercise in futility. Nevertheless, I never heard from that office again).

In paragraph 9 of Nichols' later Declaration to Jesse Trentadue, Nichols talks about others involved. "One was acting as a government provocateur. The other was a high-ranking federal government official. I believe both men are now being protected by the federal government in a coverup to escape its responsibility for the loss of life in Oklahoma. It is my desire that as a result of the Declaration, my videotaped deposition can be taken so that I can tell what I know about the Oklahoma City bombing and, thereby, hopefully trigger a full, fair and impartial investigation of that event."

Dissecting this paragraph we see that Nichols may have inadvertently identified Andreas Strassmeir as the Government provocateur. But who was the high-ranking government official?

As I read through the pages of the deposition I got to paragraph 33. All of a sudden a huge piece of the puzzle jumped off the page! Nichols named McVeigh's handler!

"McVeigh was extremely upset and angry," the paragraph begins. "There, in what I believe was an accidental slip of the tongue, McVeigh revealed the identity of a high-ranking FBI official who was apparently directing McVeigh in the bomb plot. The name McVeigh let slip was *Larry Potts*—lead FBI agent at Ruby Ridge. McVeigh said he believed Potts was manipulating him, and forcing him to go 'off script,' which I understood to mean 'change the target of the bombing.' That was the only time I heard McVeigh refer to Larry Potts in that context."

The deposition was full of bits and pieces of information that tied together many of the loose ends and things we had turned up over the months and years following the bombing. Nichols admitted to being the one who robbed Roger Moore in Arkansas and what he and McVeigh did with the money and the guns, which according to Nichols was actually donated by Moore to help finance the bombing, and the robbery was staged to give Moore a way out when and if the guns were later found. He describes how he and McVeigh mixed the ANFO at Geary Lake on the 18th of April, the day before the bombing, and then admits that neither he nor McVeigh had the "level of expertise and sophistication" to build such a bomb that would work. He also states that McVeigh had purchased five black metal barrels and five white plastic barrels, and that if that was true, the shards of blue plastic barrels allegedly found at the scene of the bombing were not from the Ryder truck—or never even existed. As for them not having the expertise, that is very questionable considering that he had received bomb making instructions in the Philippines, and McVeigh had most likely had the same training at Camp Grafton.

It was paragraph 10 that literally leapt off the page! Here Nichols states under oath:

"10. In December of 1992, Timothy McVeigh told me that *while he was serving in the U.S. Army, he had been recruited to carry out undercover missions*. McVeigh did not say who recruited him, or specify the nature of his mission. McVeigh did say, however, that he was to begin making contacts with a 'network' of people after the first of the year and that he was to take no action in furtherance of the mission until called upon. McVeigh said he would soon be making his first contact 'down south.'"

This, a hard reference from Nichols to McVeigh's recruitment into a special organization or team, was a huge find! It was one more piece of information that what McVeigh had written to his sister about being selected at Fort Bragg more credible. In paragraph 11, Nichols went on to declare:

"11. McVeigh's first contact came one month later, in Florida. It was with Roger Moore: a gun dealer who lived in Royal, Arkansas, with his girlfriend and business associate Karen Anderson. McVeigh met Moore at the gun show in Ft Lauderdale in January of 1993."

Besides many other pertinent items revealed in the deposition, Nichols states that Roger Moore would never be prosecuted for lying about his robbery because in relation to the Oklahoma City bombing, he was a "protected witness." I tried to discover whether Moore had any prior military background or experience, where he might have been recruited, but was unsuccessful.

The reader will question whether such secret government teams that perform "dirty tricks" actually exist.

Years ago someone sent me a book titled simply *The Squad* written by Michael Milan. The book went into detail about a secret "squad" of hit men that worked for J. Edgar Hoover, Director of the FBI. In it, the author tells stories from a man who allegedly worked as a hit man for Hoover. The book linked organized crime hit men to Hoover and the FBI. If Hoover felt someone was a threat to his position, or even a threat, in his mind, to the security of the U.S., he allegedly could order a hit on that person or persons. In return, Hoover would need to not use "his" FBI to pursue the Mafia, or even deal with formal investigations, arrests or court proceedings. In this way each would benefit from the other. For many years Hoover would not recognize the existence of organized crime, possibly because of his arrangement with the mob for access to men "who would paint houses," or make hits in Mafia lingo wherein an execution in a house would leave blood spatter on the walls. In the instance of The Squad, the book states that none of the hit men knew each other and operated singly, thereby reducing the chances of one being caught and giving up others.

There has been a lot of controversy as to whether the stories in the book are true or not, but if one spends time studying the Cosa Nostra/Mafia of the time, it would be very easy to conclude that what is described in the book actually happened. Hoover is known to have had then-secret communication with mob bosses such as Sam "Momo" Giancana in Chicago, Santo Trafficante in Florida, Meyer Lansky in New York, Carlos Marcello in New Orleans, and Johnny Roselli in Las Vegas. Every one of these "bosses" figure in the assassination of John F. Kennedy.

Another report of such a secret government organization came across my desk during the initial bombing investigation. I did not see any connection to it at first, but it did raise questions about "others unknown" to the point that I started a file and "put the info on the wall" for later scrutiny if needed and more was revealed. I had read of the 1993 case of a Chicago attorney named Paul Wilcher who had written a letter to Janet Reno asking that the Waco case be exposed with new information Wilcher had obtained. The actual letter was over a hundred pages long and named names and organizations, including a mysterious "Council of Nine." This council consisted of nine men, whose names Wilcher did not know, but who had the power to have anyone, anywhere, killed, "including presidents."

Wilcher, shortly after sending this letter to Reno and others, was found dead in his Chicago apartment in a manner that even the medical examiner could not determine the cause of death—and the FBI refused to investigate.

Within the original letter, a copy of which was sent to me anonymously, Wilcher also mentioned a group who was responsible for the final outcome of the Waco massacre. It was a special operations military group that was sent in to "advise" the FBI. But by the 19th of April, 1993 (two years to the day before the OKC bombing), this "team" entered the Branch Davidian's gymnasium building and set fires that would consume the compound. I sent out enquiries asking if any of my contacts knew anything about the team or its mission. The reference to it was "DFG" or possibly "DF6." It was a bit hard to read so I used both in my enquiry. It was allegedly a team out of Fort Bragg that did "special missions." After a week or two I received a single page note back from one of my contacts, a former Los Angeles police detective who had worked in the LAPD Organized Crime Intelligence Unit. In the note he said "Craig, I made a few calls regarding DFG and DF6. Here is what I learned: DF6 'Special Ops'—cover is Direction Finding Group. Also Delta Force Group or Delta Force 'G' Squadron."

My contact then listed a DFT and a DAT. The DAT was "Direct Action Team."

It was already known that Fort Bragg had sent "special operators" to Waco to advise the FBI. And I would surmise that they would be Delta Force operators. But I had never heard of a "G Squadron." So I did some more checking. No one I knew in Special Forces had heard of a G squadron. Delta's actual name is 1st Special Forces Operational Detachment-Delta, or 1st SFOD-D. It's missions are multi-dimensional, running from hostage rescue to intelligence gathering to the capture or elimination of terrorist threats. The group is made up of four "Squadrons" running from A to D. Officially there is no squadron beyond D Squadron. However, it's been reported that there is one smaller specialized squadron that has the mission of "sensitive reconnaissance operations." I never received any information regarding an alpha or numeric designation for this team.

Was such a team involved in the Oklahoma City bombing? Was McVeigh part of a team as he claimed?

What we do know is that McVeigh was officially discharged from the Army in 1991, but was seen in uniform at Camp Grafton in 1993 driving an Army armored personnel carrier. When questioned by a photo journalist, he said, "I'm nobody. I'm just a parts clerk.” That video, as of this writing is available on Youtube by searching for “Timothy McVeigh at Camp Grafton.” In the video the closeup of McVeigh’s face is unmistakable, and the reader has to remember that this was taken two-plus years after McVeigh was allegedly “discharged.”

McVeigh video taken at Camp Grafton, North Dakota in 1993, two years after his discharge from the Army. “I’m nobody,” he told the photographer. “I’m a parts clerk.”

We know that McVeigh’s sister received a letter describing McVeigh’s selection for such a unit, and we know that Nichols verified that McVeigh told him that he, McVeigh, was recruited for that unit, being 10 out of 400 who were trying out for Special Forces.

We know that McVeigh said in his letter to his sister that his “work for the government” would include helping the CIA fly drugs into the U.S to fund many covert operations, serve as military “consultants” to work hand-in-hand with civilian police agencies (read “FBI”), and to “quiet” anyone whom was deemed a “security risk.” Then, in parenthesis, he added, (“We would be gov’t paid assassins!”).

We know that McVeigh acted like a different person after he left Fort Bragg and surfaced working for Calspan in New York. Besides building a Legend with his activities and statements there, including passing out copies of the Turner Diaries (like Oswald in New Orleans), he exhibited a totally different man than what others knew of him previous to leaving Fort Riley for Fort Bragg.

Calspan and electromagnetic mind control both have roots at the same Ivy League institution - Cornell University, Ithaca, New York. Calspan was founded in 1946 as Cornell Aeronautical Laboratory. And Cornell was also the contract base for the CIA's "Human Ecology Fund," a means of financial support for classified experimentation at the country's leading universities.

Cornell Aerospace was reorganized in 1972 and renamed Calspan. Six years later, the firm was acquired by Arvin Industries. Arvin-Calspan later merged with Space Industries International (SII), a commercial space-flight venture based in Texas.

McVeigh was assigned to the company's Advanced Technology Center in Buffalo, N.Y. ATC had a large energy shock tunnel, radar facilities and a radio-frequency (RF) simulator facility for evaluating electronic warfare techniques. One Calspan research lab specialized in microscopic engineering. Calspan literature boasts that ATC employs "numerous world-renowned scientists and engineers" on "the cutting edge" of scientific research. It was in this environment that McVeigh may have undergone more mind control reinforcement and programming.

McVeigh wasn't the Gulf War super patriotic career soldier who spent all of his time reading Army field manuals, doing physical training, and polishing his boots like the that soldiers he knew and served with at Ft. Riley prior to his leaving for Fort Bragg.

Investigative journalist Alex Constantine wrote in an article on McVeigh and mind control: "Captain Terry Guild, McVeigh's' former company commander (while he was in the Army at Ft. Riley), said that 'McVeigh demonstrated a willingness to carry out orders, any orders. He trained on his own time while other soldiers languished in their bunks or caroused at the PX.'"

" As a civilian, Timothy McVeigh continued to dwell on the military. In 1992 he took a job with Burns International Security Services in Buffalo and was assigned to the security detail at Calspan, a Pentagon contractor that conducts classified research in advanced aerospace rocketry and electronic warfare. Al Salandra, a spokesman for Calspan, told reporters that McVeigh was "a model employee."

""He was real different," Todd Regier, a plumber who knew McVeigh, told the Boston Globe. "Kind of cold. He was almost like a robot." Jeff Camp, who worked as a guard with McVeigh, told *Newsweek* that the bomber was "a very strange person. It was like he had two different personalities." (It should be noted that McVeigh also had used several aliases, some of which were Tim Tuttle, Robert Bridges, Robert Kling, Shawn Rivers, Sean Rivers, and Daryl Bridges, and Nichols also used aliases including Joe Kyle, Ted Parker, and Mike Havens).

We know that while in prison, Tim McVeigh was visited numerous times, apparently *18 times*, by a psychiatrist Dr. Louis Jolyon West, often referred to as Dr. Jolly West. We know that Nichols had mentioned to another prisoner at one time that "Sarge will get us out of this," and we know that McVeigh referred to "the Major" as their boss.

We also know that he had at least three bogus names and identities: Tim Tuttle, Robert Bridges, and Robert Kling.

Who was the real Tim McVeigh?

So many questions remain about McVeigh. Was he a part of a government operation? If he was, was he a mind-controlled programmed assassin sent on a mission? Whatever the case, we do know that McVeigh never showed any negative emotions while a prisoner, and in the end he dropped his remaining appeals, saying he'd rather die than spend the rest of his life in prison. On January 16, 2001 the Federal Bureau of Prisons set a date of execution for May 16, 2001. McVeigh stated that his only regret was not completely leveling the federal building!

Six days prior to the date set for his execution, the government turned over thousands of pages of documents of evidence that had previously been withheld from McVeigh's attorneys, which would take months to go through. Attorney General John Ashcroft granted a 30 day delay period, totally insufficient time to wade through the mountain of paper.

When the day of his execution arrived, strange things happened. First, instead of using the prison's execution staff, the government flew in it's own "executioner," complete with his own drugs. Then, according to Dr. Lorraine Day, McVeigh's execution was a farce. According to Dr. Day, there were several things that "just weren't right" about the execution:

"Before Tim McVeigh's scheduled execution, the state announced that none of his organs would be donated after his execution. This is very strange. A state OWNS the body of an executed prisoner, and can receive $200,000 or more for the body parts of a young healthy specimen like McVeigh.

"Before his execution, the state announced that Tim McVeigh's medical records would be sealed for 25 years. The question is, Why?

"Tim McVeigh's lawyers petitioned a judge to rule that no autopsy would be done on his body after his execution, a highly unusual request.

"The IV that was supposed to deliver the lethal injection dose to Tim McVeigh was placed, of all places, *in his leg!* I knew right then that they were NOT going to execute him. This was a fake execution, to pacify the families of the victims involved in the bombing disaster.

"The public doesn't understand what every surgeon and anesthesiologist knows very well. There is no large vein close enough to the skin surface in the leg to place a large enough needle or catheter to deliver the proper dose that would reach the vital organs fast enough to kill a person cleanly. It would be a mess.

"IVs are placed in the arm, the hand, occasionally in the foot (but not in the foot for extensive or difficult procedures) and certainly not in the foot or leg for an execution. If an IV cannot be placed in one of these upper extremity locations because of previous injury or scarring, or some other reason, then a small incision is made in the area near the clavicle to gain access to a large vein going directly to the heart."

One of the witnesses at Tim McVeigh’s supposed execution was Susan Carlson, a reporter for WLS-AM Radio in Chicago. She stated on the air that McVeigh “ appeared to be still breathing or what appeared to be shallow breathing, even after being pronounced dead, and his eyes remained open.”

Carlson’s account is not exactly what was later reported on ABC News. ABC, who interviewed several of those in attendance at McVeigh’s execution, wrote that Carlson told them “At one point, he filled up his cheeks with air and then just kind of let it go. But I don’t believe that was his last breath. There was still some shallow breathing that followed. His skin began to turn a very strange shade of yellow towards the end. And he remained extremely rigid.”

Reporter Karen Grunden of the *Terre Haute Tribune-Star* in the same interview stated “And, as others described, he looked around. He did swallow and puff some air and you could see his chest moving up and down. The warden did look at Timothy McVeigh. His eyes blinked a few times, and then they remained open.”

McVeigh’s body was transported away in a government van, allegedly to a funeral home where it was to be cremated, and the ashes given to his attorney. From there the ashes would be scattered in an unrecorded location.

Or, as some might wonder, did “the Major” or “the Sarge” take care of him? Does he have a new identity, and is he now somewhere living off his half of the $2.5 million dollars placed in a private account as described by Nichols?

The question most would ask is, “why would “*they*” even let him live?”

Indeed. Why not just kill him and get rid of the only person other than Nichols who would know names of others involved?

The simple, and only answer is that if he were part of a team, and he was on a mission, and he was allowed to be executed, then the message to the rest of the team members would be that their chain-of-command could not be counted on to take care of them in future missions. And, those that were involved in the Oklahoma City case just might decide to come forward—unless, of course they too were subjects of a mind control program.

Whatever the answers are, McVeigh’s death certificate leaves a lot to contemplate. As if giving him recognition, his death certificate in the box for “Decedents Usual Occupation” it states “Soldier.” In the box for “Kind of Business/Industry” it states “U.S. Army.” And in the box for disposition and “Embalmer’s Name,” it says “No Embalming.”

One has to wonder about McVeigh’s poem that he copied in his own handwriting while on death row, and the last paragraph:

“It matters not how strait the gate,

How charged with punishments the scroll,

I am the master of my fate;

I am the captain of my soul.”

ATTENTION ESTATE: The Social Security # is being requested by this state agency in order to serve its statutory responsibility. Disclosure is voluntary and there will be no penalty for refusal.

ocal No. 599

OFFICIAL COPY
VIGO COUNTY HEALTH DEPARTMENT
CERTIFICATE OF DEATH

THE RECORDS IN THIS SERIES ARE CONFIDENTIAL PER IC 16-37-1-10

YPE/PRINT IN ERMANENT LACK INK

ECEDENT

1 DECEASED—NAME (First, Middle, Last): Timothy James McVeigh
2 SEX: Male
3a TIME OF DEATH: 7:14 A.M.
3b DATE OF DEATH (Month, Day, Year): June 11, 2001
4 SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER: 129-58-4709
5a AGE—Last Birthday (Years): 33
5b UNDER 1 YEAR: Months / Days
5c UNDER 1 DAY: Hours / Minutes
6 DATE OF BIRTH (Month, Day, Year): April 23, 1968
7 BIRTHPLACE (City and State or Foreign Country): Lockport, NY
8a WAS DECEDENT A U.S. VETERAN?: Yes
8b YEAR LAST SERVED IN US ARMED FORCES?: 1991
9a PLACE OF DEATH (Check only one): HOSPITAL: ☐ Inpatient ☐ ER/Outpatient ☐ DOA; OTHER: ☐ Nursing Home ☒ Other (Specify) ☐ Residence — U S Penitentiary
9b FACILITY NAME (If not institution, give street and number): U S Penitentiary, 4200 Bureau Road
9c CITY, TOWN, OR LOCATION OF DEATH: Terre Haute
9d COUNTY OF DEATH: Vigo
10 MARITAL STATUS (Specify): Never Married
11 SURVIVING SPOUSE (If wife, give maiden name): N/A
12a DECEDENT'S USUAL OCCUPATION: Soldier
12b KIND OF BUSINESS/INDUSTRY: US Army
13a RESIDENCE—STATE: New York
13b COUNTY: Niagara
13c CITY, TOWN, OR LOCATION: Lockport
13d STREET AND NUMBER: 6289 Campbell Blvd
13e ZIP CODE: 14094
13f INSIDE CITY LIMITS: ☐ No ☒ Yes
13g ON A FARM?: ☒ No ☐ Yes
14 CITIZEN OF WHAT COUNTRY: USA
15 WAS DECEDENT OF HISPANIC ORIGIN?: ☒ No ☐ Yes
16 RACE—American Indian, Black, White, etc. (Specify): White
17 DECEDENT'S EDUCATION (Specify only highest grade completed): Elementary/Secondary (0-12): 12; College (1-4 or 5+):

ARENTS

18 FATHER'S NAME (First, Middle, Last): William McVeigh
19 MOTHER'S NAME (First, Middle, Maiden Surname): Mildred Noreen Hill

FORMANT

20a INFORMANT'S NAME (Type/Print): Robert Nigh
20b MAILING ADDRESS: 2 West 6th St Tulsa, OK 74119
20c Relationship: Attorney

SPOSITION

21a METHOD OF DISPOSITION: ☐ Entombment ☐ Burial ☒ Cremation ☐ Removal from State ☐ Donation ☐ Other (Specify)
21b DATE AND PLACE OF DISPOSITION (Name of cemetery, crematory or other place): June 11, 2001 Terre Haute Crematory
21c LOCATION—City or Town, State: Terre Haute, IN
22a EMBALMER'S NAME: No Embalming
22b EMBALMER'S LICENSE NO: N/A
23 WAS DEATH REPORTED TO CORONER?: ☐ No ☒ Yes
24a SIGNATURE OF FUNERAL DIRECTOR:
24b LICENSE NUMBER (of Licensee): FD09200035
25 NAME, ADDRESS, AND LICENSE NUMBER OF FUNERAL HOME: Mattox Ryan Funeral Home 602 S 7th Street Terre Haute, IN 4780 FH19900001

USE OF ATH

26 PART I: Approximate Interval Between Onset and Death
IMMEDIATE CAUSE (Final disease or condition resulting in death): a. Lethal Injection
DUE TO (OR AS A CONSEQUENCE OF): b.
DUE TO (OR AS A CONSEQUENCE OF): c.
DUE TO (OR AS A CONSEQUENCE OF): d.
PART II Other significant conditions - Conditions contributing to death but not previously stated in Part I
27 WAS DECEDENT PREGNANT OR 90 DAYS POSTPARTUM? (Yes or no): NO
28a WAS AN AUTOPSY PERFORMED? (Yes or no): NO
28b WERE AUTOPSY FINDINGS AVAILABLE PRIOR TO COMPLETION OF CAUSE OF DEATH? (Yes or no): NO

29a CERTIFIER (Check only one): ☐ CERTIFYING PHYSICIAN ☐ HEALTH OFFICER ☒ CORONER

TIFIER

29b SIGNATURE AND TITLE OF CERTIFIER: Susan S. Amos, MD Vigo County Coroner
29c MEDICAL LICENSE NO: 0103111 7
29d DATE SIGNED (Month, Day, Year): June 11, 2001
30 NAME AND ADDRESS OF PERSON WHO COMPLETED CAUSE OF DEATH (ITEM 26) (Type/Print): Susan Amos Coroner 501 Hospital Lane Terre Haute, IN 47802

LTH ICER

31 HEALTH OFFICER'S SIGNATURE: , MD
32 DATE (Month, Day, Year): JUN 11 2001

33 MANNER OF DEATH: ☐ Natural ☐ Pending Investigation ☐ Accident ☐ Suicide ☐ Could not be Determined ☒ Homicide
34a DATE OF INJURY (Month, Day, Year): June 11, 2001
34b TIME OF INJURY: 7:14 A.M.
34c INJURY AT WORK (Yes or no): No
34d DESCRIBE HOW INJURY OCCURRED: Judicial Execution by lethal injection
34e PLACE OF INJURY: U.S. Penitentiary
34f LOCATION (Street and Number or Rural Route Number, City or Town, State): 4200 Bureau Rd. Terre Haute, IN
34g DATE PRONOUNCED DEAD (Month, Day, Year): June 11, 2001
34h MOTOR VEHICLE ACCIDENT? (Yes or no): No

SDH06-004 State Form 10110 (R5/1-99)

McVeigh's Death Certificate. Note "Occupation" is "Soldier," and "No Embalming."

CHAPTER 23

Odds, Ends, and Dead Ends

It's been said: "Never fight a battle you know you can't win."

Early on in the investigation, and in the months that followed, the Baker Street Irregulars received so many "clues," anonymous "Intel Memos" and emails regarding the case, that we began to wonder if some organization was trying to either muddy the water or lead us off track to waste our time. In any case, I was seeing once again a repeat of what happens when too many people offer their personal theories, then try to bolster them with "evidence." Like the books on the Kennedy assassination, where books were written by authors to bolster their own theory of what happened in Dallas on that fateful day, there were individuals and so-called "committees" that sent us information that they thought would help. The problem is that one cannot disregard anything that might have some factual meaning, even if you had to dig through a mound of dirt to find a diamond. All of this took time.

Many other theories concerning who was involved and how the building was attacked emerged during the course of the investigation. Most of them, if any at all, were not followed up on by the FBI. Still, some of us felt that every lead should be looked at, and if necessary, investigated further. Some leads were very interesting, but not enough evidence existed to pursue them further, and some were just plain unworkable.

I often had to keep reminding the team that we needed to stay focused on the mission at hand, and that we had to answer certain relevant questions to get to the bottom of the case (if that was even possible). Considering the resistance of the FBI, the Oklahoma City Police Department, the media—both national and local, and much of the population in general that accepts the media version as gospel truth, it was a difficult scenario to operate in. In the military, there is a saying, "Never fight a battle you know you can't win."

Was this battle winnable? The longer our investigation lasted, and the more questions we brought up and tried to answer, the more difficult it seemed. Would our efforts be successful in regard to solving the case and putting bad people in jail? We didn't know. But we had to try. So when information came in we had to decide whether to explore it or discard it. Some were obviously ridiculous and a waste of time. Some opened doors that we needed to peek in. In investigating some areas I once again began to feel like Agent Mulder of *The X-Files*.

As for the battle you can't win, in this case the battle had to be fought. It was discouraging to find so many roadblocks set up by the government and media, but we, myself in particular, felt "The Truth Will Out."

It is always important to "fight the good fight." Yogi Berra said, "It ain't over till it's over."

As time wore on the team began to dwindle in size. Eventually, after Charles Keys' grand jury was concluded, I found myself and David Hoffman the only ones still chasing leads, building files, and doing what we could to get to the truth and prove it. By this time we knew we had a good idea of who McVeigh was and why the Murrah Building was selected as a target, and who Nichols was and why he went to the Philippines so many times. We knew that the official government version of the event was a coverup and a lie. We knew that there were several “others unknown,” and we felt we knew who many of them were. We both knew that the coverup and the motive behind the bombing of that particular building went to the highest level. But even so, what could be done with this information that had been gathered, and who could we turn to for even further investigation and justice? That was the question.

Hoffman called me one afternoon and we pondered over these questions. The best I could offer was that we were doing what we could. We were writing about it. In this case the Pen would have to be mightier than the Sword! I told Dave “We need to drive on and get everything down on paper that we can and get it out to the public. Maybe a future administration, an honest one, will take up the case and do what needs to be done. Failing that, maybe someone in the future will pick up the gauntlet. This was the mass homicide of over 160 Americans, and there is no statute of limitations on homicide.”

Hoffman agreed, and the result of Dave’s efforts culminated in his 1998 book *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror.* By then I was just finishing *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government*, in which I did a chapter on the bombing as one of the coverups. But it was not until now, 22 years later, that I felt compelled and obligated to write this book while I was still able. Especially now that we have, at this writing, the Trump administration, our last best hope.

As I went through my boxes of files on the case that have remained in storage for 22 years, I found several files of reports and memos that I or Dave received that we followed up on, but due to the lack of resources, could only go so far. Whether they have any concrete connection to the bombing or not (some do), I would be remiss to leave them out. I’ll head each one with a subject line then give a brief description when the information we obtained was limited.

The Hula Hoop Men

Hoffman and I both received a very interesting note from an anonymous witness, dated January 8, 1996, nine months after the event, that said “0330 hrs on April 19th, a witness saw a lot of activity in front of the Murrah Building. He was shunted through a roadblock that was just closing on the street, and as he proceeded by, he noticed several cars parked on both sides of the street, and men with “hula hoop” type antennas standing on the sidewalk, holding them over their heads and turning them slowly in different directions. He also noticed a white car with a stripe around it with flashing lights. He described it as an ‘MP car.’ It was funneling traffic through the roadblocks, then around them. All of the men were dressed in black.”

What this report described was men with, what we know in the aviation world, and in HAM radio, as direction-finding antenna. Years ago airplanes were equipped with what was known as RDF antennas and radios. RDF stood for Radio Direction Finder. The user would dial into a certain frequency (usually a known radio station) and get a bearing fix by turning the loop antenna on top of the aircraft. Then, repeat that with another station. Where the lines of the two reference directions crossed on the chart, that was the location of the aircraft. Amelia Earhart’s Lockheed Electra had such a system when she disappeared over the Pacific.

It occurred to me that the only reason for this activity was to occur in Oklahoma City, as described, would be if the Ryder Truck was transmitting its location and was being tracked. It would appear that there was a lot of concern because the original story early on in the investigation was that McVeigh was supposed to have arrived by 3 a.m. to mitigate casualties, but ran late for some reason. We have other witnesses who said that the building was staked out all night, but by dawn the stakeout was called off. Other nighttime witnesses describes "flashlights moving around inside the building that were visable through the windows from the street. True or not, these things can't be proven until someone, and probably more than one person, comes forward.

The issue I had with the timing was that if the original plan was for McVeigh and John Doe 2 to arrive at 3:00-3:30 a.m., then why would he be so late unless someone ordered him to do so. The object then would be to create mass casualties instead of hitting a mostly empty building. The motive for that would be two-fold: incite the American public with a Pearl Harbor style event, and to generate support for the Draconian *Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act* of 1994 that was languishing in Congress. The bombing that occurred at 9:03 a.m. that morning accomplished both.

Ted Gunderson and his fuel-air barometric bomb

Ted Gunderson, a former FBI agent who was in charge of the Los Angeles office of the FBI until he retired, called me and wanted to inform me of something that he felt had bearing on the case. He told me that a CI that he knew well, Michael Riconosciuto, who was being held in prison on a 30 year charge of manufacturing with intent to distribute Methamphetamine, thought he knew what device did the damage to the building.

It was after Riconosciuto had testified in a high profile case regarding a company named INSLAW, that had invented and produced a software program called PROMIS (for Prosecutors Management System) that could track criminal cases for the Justice Department. Riconosciuto claimed he was one of the designers and had programmed a back door into the system that would allow a user to track almost anything and anyone, including bank and monetary transactions.

The software was sold to the Department of Justice under Janet Reno, but was never paid for. INSLAW had to file for bankruptcy, then sue the government, eventually being rewarded with several millions of dollars.

Michael Riconosciuto stated that PROMIS had been further modified by the DoJ so that any agency using it could be subject to undetected eavesdropping by the DoJ (and CIA) — a sort of software Trojan Horse that could also be used to track not only bank transactions, but to move and launder money, and to even keep an eye on what other governments were up to that had PROMIS software installed in their computers.

In1991, Riconosciuto filed an affidavit before a House judiciary committee investigating the Inslaw bankruptcy case. Riconosciuto was called to testify before Congress regarding the modification of PROMIS. Riconosciuto declared that he had been under the direction of one Earl Brian, a long-time Reagan confidant and insider, who was then a controlling shareholder and director of Hadron, Inc.. Hadron was a competitor to Inslaw and was also a government consulting firm with several contracts with the Department of Defense and the CIA. In the affidavit Riconosciuto stated that he was working for the Wackenhut company, a security firm with many black budget contracts with the federal government. He stated in paragraph 2 of the affidavit that "The Wackenhut-Cabazon joint venture sought to develop and/or manufacture certain materials that are used in military and national security operations, including night vision goggles, machine guns, fuel-air explosives, and biological and chemical warfare weapons."

The reference to Cabazon had to do with the the Cabazon Indian tribe which had a reservation in California that the Wackenhut company operated under a contract with the tribe.

Within eight days of this declaration, Riconosciuto was arrested for conspiracy to manufacture, conspiracy to distribute, possession with intent to distribute, and distribution of Meth—a total of ten counts—related to methamphetamine and methadone. Gunderson told me that it was a setup to shut Riconosciuto up and to punish him for the affidavit. He had a lab in his house but, according to Riconosciuto, it was used to extract Platinum from other minerals. The bottom line was that he couldn't effectively fight the corrupt Janet Reno DoJ and ended up with a 30 year sentence in federal custody. As of this writing he is in the federal penitentiary in Lompoc, California, due to be released in June 2017.

Later, when the Congressional committee probing the Inslaw affair reported its findings, they wrote: "The enhanced PROMIS software was stolen by high level Justice officials and distributed *internationally* in order to provide financial gain to Dr. Brian and to further intelligence and foreign policy objectives of the United States." Earl Brian later was convicted on 10 counts of criminal behavior, including conspiracy, and commission of bank and securities fraud. He was ordered to report for the start of a four-and-a-half-year prison term on Aug. 18, 1996.

Within days of the bombing in Oklahoma City, Gunderson called me and said that he had talked to Riconosciuto on the telephone and Riconosciuto had told him that from the appearance of the Murrah Building he saw on television, it looked like what he called an "Electro-hydrodynamic Gaseous Fuel Device," also known as a "Barometric Bomb."

I was familiar with fuel-air bombs. Basically they are weapons that first saturate an area with a flammable fuel, then when it is vaporized, ignites it to create an explosion.

The problem with what Gunderson told me, and what I could discern from the damage to the Murrah Building, was that it did not show indications of such damage, and the witnesses did not describe anything like such an event. They described a rumble before the main explosion. A fuel-air bomb, when it detonates, is horrendous and would have done much more significant damage to the structure. What was described by victims and witnesses is much more descriptive of a series of cutting charges on columns in the base of the building, followed almost immediately by the detonation of the Ryder truck. The odd man out on this was the radiation that was picked up on the radiation detectors that were shown on the charts of the Yeakey computer disk—if that is indeed what is shown.

Hoffman and I decided to leave Gunderson's fuel-air bomb to Ted. It just didn't fit.

The Dirty Bomb

One of our original members of the Baker Street Irregulars was retired New York City Detective Jim Rothstein. Jim had a very interesting background when he was with the

NYPD that ran the spectrum from undercover operations to working organized crime. He brought his expertise to the team early on after being hired and sent to Oklahoma City by a wealthy Chicago real estate mogul named Alex Magnus. (Later Mr. Magnus provided the funding for David Hoffman to continue his efforts).

Throughout the investigation Jim, David and I shared information. Among the things that Jim turned up from his sources was that he didn't believe the OKC bomb was a "dirty bomb." In other words, it didn't in itself contain radioactive material. If such material was involved, which appeared to have shown up on the FEMA charts on the Yeakey disk, it was probably washed away the day of the bombing when it rained. Jim, according to his sources, said that at least three pillars had satchel charges on them. He was the first to mention that "there was one agent in particular that 'they' wanted killed, and that one charge was placed on a column below his office." That had to have been the Secret Service agent who was ordered to be at his desk at 9 a.m. for "an important call from D.C." That would be Alan Gerald Whicher, who had left President Clinton's personal security contingent for what he presumed would be a more peaceful assignment in Oklahoma. It is probable that Whicher knew many things about the Clintons that they would not like exposed. Was he ordered to be at his desk at that particular time because someone knew what would happen that morning? The evidence leans in that direction. I would not hesitate to add him to the Clinton Death List toll.

Jim also received information through his sources that "there were guys all around the area with hoops, looking for the transponder signal on the truck, but someone in the truck turned the transponder off." My files don't name Jim's source, but this was one more source regarding the "hoop" antennas.

At about this same time we received an email that mentioned someone named "Granse," on a "forensics team." The email, which Hoffman received said, "According to Granse, who was part of the forensic team that went to OKC, they were not allowed to make scrapings off the pillars or take anything with them. The level of radiation at the building site was 50% higher than the background radiation levels of surrounding areas. After the implosion of the building all of the building debris was then summarily buried, fenced, and guarded (by Wackenhut). The fence was eventually moved and the site obscured to make it difficult to find. The "Granse" mentioned may have been one Karl Granse, a legal researcher who lived in Michigan and had an interest in the case. He also, according the *The New York Times*, had a 20 minute conversation with Terry Nichols in which Nichols basically would not admit anything, including whether he even felt McVeigh was actually the driver of the Ryder truck.

The point of interest in what Rothstein's sources offered and what this forensic team claimed, all verify Terry Yeakey's computer disk graphs. There was come kind of radioactive activity involved in the vicinity of the bombing.

Comparison of Two Bombings

Murrah Building: 4,800 lbs Ammonium Nitrate (Allegedly) almost destroys a “bomb-proof” building. (Photo: OKCPD)

Khobar Towers bombing on June 26, 1996: 5,000 lbs *high* explosive barely removes the outer wall. (Photo US Air Force)

On June 26, 1996, terrorists blew up a tank truck that contained over 5,000 pounds of high explosives in front of the Khobar Towers building in Khobar, Saudi Arabia, that housed US Air Force personnel. The building, unlike the Murrah Building, was not “bomb proof,” nor was it built to American building standards. The Murrah Building was much stronger, and built to withstand a bomb blast from the outside. The Khobar Towers was not. The estimate of the actual effect of the explosives used in the attack was the equivalent of 20,000 to 30,000 pounds (9,100 to 13,600 kg) of TNT. In the Murrah Building attack the truck was parked on the street directly in front of the day care center. At the Khobar Towers the truck was parked 35 yards away. The Murrah Building crater was approximately 8-10 feet across and about 6-8 feet deep. The Khobar Towers crater was 20 feet deep and 30 feet wide. Yet, the damage to the Khobar Towers was much less than to the Murrah Building with only the front wall blown off the building and very few floors collapsing. It is obvious from the damage to the two buildings that the Ryder truck bomb did not cause all of the damage to the building, hence other bombers put explosives inside the building in advance.

On May 13, 1995 I received a letter from a good friend who is an attorney in Iowa. He said in the letter “This is interesting. A guy was in yesterday about a divorce. After going through that part of the discussion I visited with him for a while. He works for the General Services Administration at the federal building here. He is a heating and air conditioning guy so he has access to the entire building and knows a lot of people, including the BATF guys. This office of the BATF sent their agents to Oklahoma City to assist after the explosion.

“Upon their return they were talking to my client about some things, including that there were one or two bombs in addition to the truck bomb. They also told him that an unexploded bomb was found in the building and defused. Sounds like Mr. McVeigh must have been busy that morning.”

C1
C2
C3
C4
C5
C6
C7
C8
C9
C10
C11
1st + 2nd FLOOR
"PIT" AREA
3000 lb/ft²
Floor Ultimate Live
170 lb/ft²
27 lb
38 lb
B1
B2
B3
B4
B5
B6
B7
B8
B9
B10
B11
ΔP = 41 %
4
7
16
23
56
500
2100
300,000 lb/in²
A1
A2
A3
A4
A5
A6
A7
A8
A9
A10
A11
COLLAPSED ROOF LINE TO GROUND FLOOR
CANTILEVERED BEAM
COLLAPSED AT 3rd FLOOR ~ DEMOLITION CHARGE
COLLAPSED BY ODD NUMBERED COLUMNS

Gen. Partin’s diagram for blast effect and pressure analysis on the building

Then we have an extensive analysis by retired U.S. Air Force Brigadier General Benton Partin, a career explosives expert. He did an engineering study of the damage and concluded that the truck bomb was not powerful enough to do the damage that was done and that there had to be other devices in the building. His sketch shows the damage on the street floor.

Hoffman’s Contacts

David called me one day and said that he had made contact with an Israeli intelligence agent who had been sent to Oklahoma City prior to the bombing. It seems that some faction of Israeli intelligence, whether the Mossad, Israeli Defense Intelligence or some other faction had advance knowledge that something big was going to happen in Oklahoma City, and it would be related to the Palestine Liberation Organization. The contact that Hoffman established a repoire with was named William “Bill” Northrop. According to Northrop, he was an American-born Israeli, living in Tel Aviv, but had taken up residency in Oklahoma in 1994. He claimed he served in the U.S. Special Forces in Vietnam, and was wounded in the battle of Lang Vei Special Forces camp. He later was involved in Iran/Contra on behalf of Israel’s arms dealing participation with the CIA. His business card, which he provided Hoffman, was for “Bateman Project Holdings Limited,” a company with a Johannesburg, South Africa, address.

When David sent me a copy of the card I researched Bateman Project Holdings, figuring it might be a front company for the Mossad, or some other Israeli organization. Bateman turned out to be an “International engineering, contracting and project management group that operates through strategic business units, subsidiaries and associated companies.” Whatever that means, it would be akin to James Bond’s “Import-Export business.”

Hoffman believed Northrop was a good inside source to information that might be privy to intelligence organizations in Israel. The truth was that Northrop, which held 11 passports, had other names, and whose name was found in CIA Director William Casey’s personal phone book, was not all that he claimed. A much later investigation into Northrop’s viability showed that there is no record of him being in Special Forces, or Vietnam. This was discovered in 2006 when questions about his background were raised when he was working as the commandant for the Oak Ridge Military Institute, a military academy with 250 students. He was discharged after a few months when his background check was completed and his claims did not hold up regarding his prior service and achievements.

We do know that he was an arms dealer, he did have a residence in Tel Aviv, he traveled internationally, and that his background was very shady—exactly what one would expect from a “spook.”

We also know that he was in Oklahoma City before the bombing, and he did say that there were people with PLO connections—who would meld with the Iraqi/Palestinian connections through Samir Khalil. It was also through Northrop that Hoffman was told that the Southern Poverty Law Center, under Morris Dees, was a conduit and “of use” to the Mossad, and that Dee’s “handler” was in the Anti-Defamation League. That alone would explain a lot considering Strassmeir was an informant not only to his handlers, but to the SPLC, and a reason why the SPLC and the ADL teamed up against the militias and the Right Wing.

In one memo that Hoffman sent me, possibly with information from Northrop, paragraph 1 stated: “The information and leads supplied to the media (from Day One on) that was taken as gospel came from the Anti-Defamation League of the B’Nai B’Rith, and the extreme left Southern Poverty Law Center.” Paragraph 2 read “The ADL is basically an extension of the Israeli intelligence agency, the Mossad. This extension is divided into two parts: the ADL and the JDL. As in Northern Ireland, where the IRA is divided into two parts, the Sein Fein and the Provisional (action) Brigade., the ADL (like the Sein Fein) is the political arm, while the JDL (like the Provisional Brigade) is the military arm.”

In an investigative report that Hoffman faxed to me, which I understood may have originated with Northrop, the writer said that “In March of 1995, Israel’s Shin Bet (GSS or General Security Services) made some administrative arrests of suspected Hamas terrorists in Jerusalem. Interrogations of these suspects is thought to have revealed information on a bomb plot targeted on Oklahoma City in the United States. Shin Bet filed a warning with the Legal Attache’ (FBI) at the American Embassy in Tel Aviv as a matter of course. The warning did not come through the Israeli Ministry of Foreign Affairs to the State Department. This was a week or two prior to the bombing of the Murrah Federal Building on 19 April 1995.”

The report, titled “Prior Warning” went on to state: “A secondary source has stated that the German Federal Government also issued a warning, which was thought to have come through the State Department. The same source indicated that the Saudi Government also sent a warning through the State Department. A Saudi Major General also informed former CIA operative Vince Cannistraro, who in turn informed the FBI. There is a 302 in existence.”

To me, knowing more than most about intelligence operations, I thought this report was most interesting. I knew that Vincent Cannistraro was definitely CIA. He had served as Director of Intelligence Programs for the NSC from 1984 to 1987; Special assistant for Intelligence in the Office of the Secretary of Defense until 1988; and Chief of Operations and Analysis at the Counter-terrorist Center until 1991. Also, before 1984, he was an officer with the CIA’s Directorate of Operations in the Middle East, Africa, Europe, and Central America, and was a key figure in the the investigation of the bombing of Pan Am 103 over Lockerbie, Scotland. According to my sources, Cannistraro tried to warn the FBI about the possible attack on the airplane, but nothing was done.

The wording and the information in this report rang true, but like so many other pieces of the puzzle that could not be verified with other backup information, it was another piece that we put on the wall until it would fit the puzzle.

In the end, by 1996, I just couldn’t develop a lot of confidence in what Northrop told Hoffman. Still, you can’t totally ignore it either, hence the reason I kept a file on him and his information.

McVeigh’s friend, Michael Fortier

Within a week of the bombing federal agents swarmed in on the small Arizona town of Kingman. The relationship of Kingman to the Oklahoma City bombing was one Michael Fortier. Fortier and McVeigh were best friends in the Army, and McVeigh felt he could rely on him for assistance and support for the mission McVeigh (and his handlers) had planned.

According to Fortier, “I thought he was still in the Army when he showed up at my door.” Fortier described McVeigh with short cropped hair and neatly pressed camouflage fatigue pants. “When you saw him,” said Fortier, “it was like he never left.”

Fortier, McVeigh and Nichols had enlisted in the Army on the same day, May 24th, 1988. They trained at Fort Benning, Georgia, in what was known as a Cohort Unit—a company of soldiers who would take their basic training together, then serve together for the rest of their enlistment. When they graduated from Basic, then from AIT, (Advanced Individual Training), they were assigned to the 2nd Battalion, 16th Infantry, 1st Infantry Division—“The Big Red One”— at Fort Riley, Kansas.

According to Fortier, “McVeigh’s shoes were always spit shined and his clothes always pressed. When others went off base to party, he was still in the barracks, spit shining his boots and ironing his fatigues. When in the field, when others took a break, he shouldered his pack and ran around.” McVeigh, because of his efforts and attitudes, made sergeant long before his contemporaries.

Fortier also described McVeigh as having a “real New York attitude, real rude and blunt. He just had no tact.” According to a *New York Time*s article dated May 21, 1995, “Mr. Fortier appears to have been Mr. McVeigh’s main anchor as he drifted about in the last two years, making a living at short-term jobs and selling weapons and key chains at gun shows in Kingman. In his travels, Mr. McVeigh frequently stayed over at Mr. Fortier’s trailer house in a nondescript new subdivision at the far edge of Kingman, distinguishable from his neighbors mainly by a flagpole flying an American flag and a reproduction of one of the first Revolutionary War banners, bearing a rattlesnake and the motto “Don’t Tread on Me.” The flag, with its connotations to Minuteman militias, provides a clue that Mr. Fortier might have shared McVeigh’s far-right hatred of the Federal Government.”

When the FBI searched Fortier’s house they found guns and in a storage shed, a “Right Wing Book” titled, “Citizen’s Guide to the Constitution.”

The writer of this *New York Times* article, John Kifner, showed in the writing the Left Wing bent of the *New York Times*. After all, why should American citizens need to know anything about our Constitution? And, horrors if the American people became knowledgeable of the Constitution and its contents and then forced our politicians to actually abide by it!

A friend who was in Kingman called me during the FBI occupation and said “there’s an FBI agent on every street corner! People are afraid to even go outside.”

But in the end, the FBI found that it was Fortier’s trailer that McVeigh used as an address to open a drop box at the Mail Room in Kingman. The address there was under his name, and his alias of Tim Tuttle. With over 100 FBI agents occupying Kingman, and shadowing Fortier everywhere he went, he eventually agreed to testify before the federal Grand Jury. Fortier became a states evidence witness against McVeigh.

CHAPTER 24

The Uphill Battle

"The battle of life is, in most cases, fought uphill; and to win it without a struggle were perhaps to win it without honor. If there were no difficulties there would be no success; if there were nothing to struggle for, there would be nothing to be achieved."

Samuel Smiles (Scottish author,
1812-1904)

There comes a time when you know that the road you are on is a dead end. It is human nature to go as far as you can, but eventually, when the path you are on is not proceeding in the right direction, it is time to find a new route to successfully reach your destination.

This became obvious to me at about four months into the investigation. I really did want to try and trust the FBI—at least the local office to which I was assigned—with the leads and information that I and the Baker Street Irregulars were discovering, but it just wasn't working. With a very few exceptions in my 26 years as a police officer, I—and most of my fellow officers—considered the FBI the Black Hole. Everything you put in disappears and nothing ever comes back to you. By August of 1995 I finally knew that, no matter what we presented the feds, nothing would change their course. To my knowledge, they never followed any of our leads and I'm not even sure any of my reports or memos ever left the local office. The Black Hole description was once again proving true.

One day I decided to take one of my files to the Tulsa FBI office and sit down with Pete, my FBI contact agent. It was the file I had on the Clinton-Bush connection to the Iran/Contra affair. I wanted to feel Pete out and see if I could detect any recognition of the matter or if he was not in-the-know about who was involved and how deep the tangled web of players actually was. Or even if he cared.

When we sat down I began by briefing him on how, over time, I had obtained a certain amount of information that neither he, nor the FBI would have access to.

"Pete," I began, "I'm sure you know my recorded background. I'm sure you've done an extensive background check and that you know that the Defense Intelligence Agency has also done two extensive background checks on me for my Top Secret clearance. But what you don't know is that for several years I have had access into international issues that the government has been involved with—especially the CIA and certain foreign activities. The reason is that you probably have not checked my immediate family members. That said, I'll give you a short briefing so that when I open this file you might give it some credibility. I don't actually expect you or anyone in this office to do anything about it, but it will hopefully at least make you understand that the memos and reports I've given you just might have some credibility."

As Pete sat there I began. "First, let me tell you who my father is. He is a World War II Marine, and when he got out of the service in 1946 he found a job on the shipping dock of Byron Jackson Oil Tools in Los Angeles. Few people stay on their first job for long, but my dad was a hard core Tennessee farm boy who grew up on the family farm during the Depression. Because of that he was grateful for any job that was not on a farm. To get to the point he stayed with Byron Jackson for 40 years.

“When I was five years old my parents divorced. For various reasons my dad got custody of me and my little brother who was still in the crib then. We lived with my dad in an apartment in Bell, California for a year, then he was promoted to Sales, and we were transferred to Oklahoma City when I was in the fifth grade. The next year he received another promotion to district manager for Oklahoma and we were transferred to Tulsa to the B.J. Tools plant here. When I graduated from high school, I joined the Marines and left home. But my family, which now included a step brother and step sister and a half brother received a transfer to Europe. I missed that move by just a few months, so my overseas tour was Vietnam while the rest got to see Europe.”

I knew Pete was wondering where I was going with this so I continued: “While in Europe, my dad was managing director for B.J. Oil Tools, which became B.J. Hughes when Byron Jackson was merged with Hughes Tool Company. Eventually Baker Oil bought B.J. Hughes to become Baker Hughes. But through these years, with my dad being involved in higher positions as time went by and also being able to travel to Russia and the Middle East, even to Siberia on business, he was able to see many things that would not be open to any of our government officials or organizations such as the CIA. This was during the Cold War and wherever Dad went he had a KGB escort who limited what he could photograph, or not. Still, he was able to remember a great deal of his travels and when he returned to his home office in the Hague or back in the U.S. he was always debriefed by the CIA or your FBI.”

I could see Pete was beginning to pay a bit more attention with the last statement.

“Also, you will find it interesting that it was my dad’s company, when it was B.J. Hughes, that outfitted the Hughes drilling ship, *Glomar Explorer*, under contract to the CIA with all of its lift equipment that was used to salvage the Russian submarine K-129 that sunk 1500 miles northwest of Hawaii in 1968. The salvage effort happened in 1974 and we were told that the *Glomar Explorer* was only able to raise a section of the bow and torpedo room. My dad, who was a senior official with the company then, later told me that ‘we got a lot more than that, but we couldn’t tell the Russians.” Needless to say, I have contacts through my father and his sources that are much more than most others would have. And when I was working on my first draft of *Legacy of Dishonor* (which later became *The Medusa File*) I ran the draft chapters by my dad and often I would receive more information back from not only him, but from his anonymous contacts.”

I could tell Pete was getting more interested in my tale by the minute.

“Now, my little brother. He joined the Marines a few years after I did and served in Southeast Asia as a helicopter crew chief. After that he went to work for Bell Helicopter International as a maintenance instructor in Isfahan, Iran, when the Shah was in power. When the Shah regime fell he managed to get all of his American team members out of the country and to safety, over land, just as the U.S. Embassy was taken along with more than 60 American hostages. After leaving Bell International, he went to work for Airitima Marritima Italiana Aviation Services, a CIA front company based out of London. His boss was one Ed Wilson, a CIA agent who was involved with a front company known as EATSCO, or Egyptian American Transport and Services Company, which was later caught selling explosives and weapons to Libya when Khadaffi was in power. No one other than the CIA knows why we would sell seven tons of C4 explosives and thousands of M-16 rifles to Libya, so let's keep that in mind when I tell you about what is in my file. Meanwhile, my brother was posted to Benghazi, Libya during the late 1970s and through the Reagan administration, and when we bombed Libya, he was one of those on the ground who gave bomb damage reports on the Benghazi airfield to his contacts."

I continued, "My brother, Brent, returned to the U.S. after that and went into the truck driving business out of Los Angeles. He met and married a Vietnamese woman who was a refugee who had fled Vietnam during the fall of Saigon. Unfortunately, she left a daughter behind. Brent evidently had valuable contacts within the covert action world. He disappeared one day and traveled to Thailand, then disappeared for several more days. When he returned to Bangkok he had the girl. He had no trouble getting her back to the U.S., so must have had State Department assistance. Later, he eventually went to work for Hughes Aircraft on the AH-64 Apache attack helicopter project where he remains today."

I ended my little briefing with "I guess you could say between my dad, my brother and me, I'm the only one who wasn't a spook."

Pete just sat there. Then he said "well, I guess we didn't know all that. But, what exactly does any of that have to do with the Oklahoma City case?"

"Pete, I'm just telling you that I'm not some jack-leg off the street with wild theories about the case. When I check something out that just doesn't add up, I run it by my father and my brother and see what they can offer. That said, I wanted to have your serious attention to what I'm about to go into. And if I'm right, then the motives behind why the Murrah Building was picked as a target will be totally different than what I believe is a cover story of McVeigh wanted to 'strike back' for Waco."

"I'm listening," said Pete.

What I'm about to relate here all began during World War II. After the Japanese invaded China and Indochina (Vietnam, Laos and Cambodia), we sent an OSS team (maybe more than one) to the Golden Triangle to take over the French opium poppy fields.

Known as Detachment 101, the team consisted of Paul Helliwell, Ray S. Cline, Richard Helms, E. Howard Hunt, Jake Esterline, Mitchell WerBell, John K. Singlaub, Jack Anderson, Robert Emmett Johnson and Lucien Conein. Others working in China at that time included Tommy Corcoran, Whiting Willauer and William Pawley. Of note is Lucien Conein, known as "Black Luigi," who became the liaison between the opium production and smuggling out of the Golden Triangle to the Corsican Mafia, who was part of the French underground. After World War II the smuggling to the Corsican Mafia grew into smuggling heroin into the United States in what later became the "French Connection" case.

Next, E. Howard Hunt, who was part of Nixon's "Plumbers" during the Watergate scandal, was later CIA and worked for CIA Station Chief Theodore "Ted" Shackley during the anti-Castro days when they had the CIA's JM/WAVE control headquarters in Florida. Hunt was later identified as one of the "tramps" that was caught in the train yard next to Dealey Plaza when JFK was assassinated.

Then we have Mitch WerBell, a self-styled mercenary who was also the inventor of the Scionics sound suppressor used by the U.S. military and the CIA during the Vietnam war.

Richard Helms later served as Director of the CIA from June 1966 to February 1973. He was involved in several plans to assassinate Castro and did not hesitate to use assassination as a political weapon. He was also implicated in the opium smuggling that occurred in the Golden Triangle of Laos, Cambodia, Burma (Myanmar) and part of Vietnam during the war in Vietnam and after—and that still goes on today.

William Pawley was instrumental in forming the Flying Tigers, and also in obtaining air assets for Detachment 101. He later was appointed ambassador to Peru, and several researchers have implicated him in the Kennedy assassination as one of the planners. A close friend of both President Dwight Eisenhower and CIA director Allen Dulles, he took part in a policy that later become known as Executive Action (a plan to remove unfriendly foreign leaders from power). Pawley played a role in Operation Success, a CIA plot to overthrow the Guatemalan government of Jacobo Arbenz in 1954 after he introduced land reforms and nationalized the United Fruit Company. Pawley was also heavily involved in anti-Castro operations.

John K. Singlaub was later career Army and remained heavily involved in special operations and clandestine operations. As a specialist in unconventional warfare and covert operations, General Singlaub kept a low profile. However, he eventually became chief of staff of the United Nations Command in South Korea. He was forced to resign in May, 1978, after criticizing President Jimmy Carter and his plans to reduce the number of troops in South Korea. According to Peter Dale Scott, ten days before his retirement, Singlaub attended a meeting of right-wingers who “Didn’t think the country was being run properly and were interested in doing something about it.” The meeting was hosted by Mitch WerBell.

Singlaub then joined forces with Ted Shackley, Ray Cline and Richard Helms to get Jimmy Carter removed from the White House. In December, 1979, Singlaub and retired General Daniel Graham headed a delegation from the American Security Council, a private right-wing organization, on a trip to Guatemala. Singlaub pointed out that Ronald Reagan “recognizes that a good deal of dirty work has to be done” in order to destroy communism in Guatemala. “Death squad activity in Guatemala increased dramatically following the trip.” Upon his return to the United States, Singlaub called for “sympathetic understanding of the Guatamalan death squads”

As one can see, these particular members of Detachment 101 continued in clandestine services, often involving drug smuggling to support covert operations, for decades after WWII.

When the war in Vietnam was underway the CIA, through Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines worked with Pepsi Cola to establish a heroin processing plant in the old Pepsi Cola bottling plant outside Vientiane, Laos. Raw opium was smuggled into Vientiane through Air America flights that brought it out of the Golden Triangle. It was then processed and smuggled out though various conduits including the South Vietnamese Air Force, commanded by Air Vice Marshal Nguyen Cao Ky’s air transports, to Saigon. From there it either ended up in the veins of American troops in Vietnam, or it was sent inside dead GI bodies to Travis Air Base in San Francisco, or to Europe or Australia. The money was laundered through a clandestine bank known as the Nugan Hand bank in Australia, run by an Australian lawyer named Francis John Nugan and a Special Forces soldier named Michael Hand,. When that arrangement was discovered the bank (which had 13 branches around the world, all headed by retired admirals or generals), shut down, it re-emerged with a different name in Honolulu: the BBRDW Bank (for Bishop, Baldwin, Rewald, Dillingham and Wong). When *that* bank was discovered to be conducting illicit activities, massive amounts of drug money was then laundered through the criminal enterprise known as BCCI (Bank of Credit and Commerce International), or, as we in law enforcement knew it "The Bank of Crooks and Criminals International. Eventually, when BCCI was exposed as nothing more than a huge drug money laundering enterprise, it dissolved. In 1990, BCCI was convicted of money laundering for the Columbian Cocaine cartels in Miami. In 1991, BCCI collapsed and millions of investors in 73 countries lost their life savings.

After the BCCI collapse the cartels and the CIA had to find other methods of laundering drug money. This was not difficult. Due to the amounts of money involved, counted in the billions of dollars, large banks could easily be bribed to deposit the money in various accounts, transfer it as needed, and keep their mouths shut. In February of 2016 several U.S. families brought suit against one such bank. A group of families in the United States whose relatives were killed by Mexican drug cartels filed a lawsuit against the large financial institution HSBC, alleging that the bank's admitted laundering of roughly $881 million for the Sinaloa, Juárez, and Los Zetas cartels played a key role in the deaths of their loved ones.

"Money laundering is the lifeblood of the Mexican drug cartels, enabling them to construct a façade of legitimacy through which they establish, continue, and grow their global enterprises," the families' lawyers wrote in the complaint filed in federal court, alleging that cartels use that money to buy the weapons, vehicles, and the public officials needed to operate. "Thus, by facilitating the laundering of billions of dollars of drug cartel proceeds through its banks, HSBC materially supported the terrorist acts of the cartels, including the terrorist acts committed against the families."

After I explained all of this to Pete, I could still see he was puzzled as to why I was bringing it up.

What does all of this history have to do with the Oklahoma City bombing case? To understand just why the Murrah Building was targeted we need to follow the trail from the CIA's drug smuggling operations during Iran/Contra to understand how all of this connects.

After the fall of Saigon and the end of the Vietnam war, CIA agents Ted Shackley and his old Laos opium smuggling partner Thomas Clines were heavily involved in establishing the Cali and Medellin drug cartels in Columbia. The purpose was to use drug profits to support the Contra forces in Nicaragua in their efforts to oust Nicaraguan dictator Daniel Ortega, who was sympathetic to both Fidel Castro and Russia. Certain factions of the U.S. Government feared that Nicaragua would become another Cuba and were determined to do a better job of ousting Ortega than they did in their attempts to get rid of the Castro brothers.

While Clines was busy setting up the banking conduits, including accounts in the Cayman Islands, Shackley was organizing the cartels and establishing methods of moving the Cocaine shipments North. What would happen when the drugs hit the streets of America was of no concern to these two operatives, or to anyone else that was involved, for that matter.

The reason the CIA wanted two cartels was for control. They wanted competition in order to get the best prices for the "product," and they wanted to pitch the two cartels against each other if necessary to control the powerful drug lords.

The system worked well at first. The flights out of Columbia made a stop in Panama where Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega skimmed off his percentage. At the same time two Israeli Mossad agents, Amiram Nir (who later died in a suspicious plane crash in Mexico in 1998), and Michael Harare, both of whom served as Noriega's personal body guards, trained his elite security forces and were his Israeli contacts, took a percentage for Israel. The drugs taken by the Israelis were smuggled into Florida in fishing boats belonging to a front company named Sea Trader Incorporated. The profits went to Israel and reportedly were used to finance the Israeli Nuclear weapons program at their Nuclear facility in Dimona, Israel.

The invasion of Panama, codenamed "Operation Just Cause," had to do with Noriega's greed and his skimming too much off the top of the drug shipments, not the "official lie" that he was consorting with Colombian drug lords and was part of a drug smuggling network himself. He was, but that was only used against him with media spin. After Noriega was arrested, and Harare and Nir escaped due to advance warning of the invasion by leaks within our own CIA, the flow of drugs continued unabated—and much more profitable.

The drugs that were left after Noriega and the Israelis got their cut were then flown by clandestine drug flights in both private airplanes and CIA contract airplanes (such as Southern Air Transport, and by Barry Seal in Lear Jets or his C-123 cargo plane named "Fat Lady") to a private ranch in Honduras or to El Salvador's Ilopango Air Base. Ilopango was used by both the Salvadoran Air Force and the CIA. It was an arms transshipment point for the Contras on inbound flights and a drug transshipment point for drugs going North, which included both cocaine and in some instances bales of marijuana. One CIA agent in Columbia said that for $400 worth of Marijuana in Columbia, it would turn $40,000 profit in the U.S. in street value. Cocaine was much more profitable, and easier to pack into smaller loads and smaller planes.

From Honduras and El Salvador the drugs were split up and flown into the U.S. by at least two routes to destinations for further distribution—not including all of the small cross-border smuggling or offshore coastal drops that some of the planes did. Even oil platforms in the Gulf of Mexico were used by helicopters and small boats. Many of the platforms belonged to Zapata Petroleum out of Houston, Texas, a Bush family operation, and one which my father knew well. One smuggling route by air was across Mexico and Arizona into California, and the second was across Mexico, sometimes landing to refuel or drop off partial shipments, then to Mena, Arkansas. Mena, according to some law enforcement officials in Arkansas, was not a huge distribution point for drugs, but more often was used to modify airplanes for the long flights at Mena's Rich Mountain Aviation, which had a contract with the CIA. The key point on Mena is the amount of cash that came into the facility that was either deposited in Arkansas banks, in amounts less than $10,000 per deposit, or dropped in duffel bags full of cash on a ranch owned by Dan Lasater, a good friend of Governor Bill Clinton. The money in the bags was picked up by other Clinton associates and taken to the Rose Law Firm where, according to sources in Little Rock, Hillary Clinton, Webb Hubbell and Vince Foster logged the money in. Then it was banked in Little Rock, then laundered by Jackson Stephens through his firm of Systematics, Inc., using stolen PROMIS software, to other banks and savings and loans across the country.

A huge cut went to the Clinton's for helping to cover up the Mena operation, while the major portion was being funneled into the Iran/Contra arms-for-drugs efforts being run at the top by then Vice President George H.W. Bush (himself former CIA) and CIA Director William Casey

S.F.O
LA
LITTLE ROCK
MENA
GUADALAJARA
OAXACA
JUAN GARCIA ABREGO
PANAMANIAN AIR FORCE BASE (NORIEGA)
MOSSAD SMUGGLERS COCAINE FROM PANAMA INTO U.S. IN BAGS MARKED WITH THREE TRIANGLES ΔΔΔ
MOSSAD TRAINS "DRUG LORD" SECURITY FORCES.
MEDELLIN
ILOPANGO AFB (EL SALVADOR) SAT/CIA QUARTERMASTER FELIX RODRIGUEZ AKA "MAXIMO GOMEZ".
% SKIMMED BY NORIEGA AND AVRAHIM (MOSSAD) IN PANAMA.

The Flow Chart I drew for Pete Rickel of the FBI

There were many others involved, and eventually the house of cards fell when the Iran/Contra investigations began. The Democratic-controlled Congress did not want to interfere in the Nicaraguan situation, black funding, and Oliver North and others making deals to send American-made missiles to Iran in exchange for hostages being held by Hezbollah.

By then the drug cartels were thoroughly entrenched, the routes established, the money conduits working well, and the Mexican cartels were now involved and on the rise.

It was during the late 1980s and early 1990s that certain Mexican drug cartels began smuggling massive quantities of drugs across the border by various means that ran from truckloads, airplanes, and even drug tunnels. The “War on Drugs” was not succeeding, and would not succeed because the CIA still had its source of black funding, and when the war in Afghanistan began, it only got worse. Northeastern Afghanistan is one of the Opium growing capitals of the world, and is only getting bigger, overtaking the Golden Triangle.

When I met with Pete, I laid out all of this information (except the Afghan connections since they were not in play to my knowledge in 1995 when this meeting took place). Then I brought up, again, after the phone call from Little Rock when an alleged government agent (either DEA or IRS—and I suspect DEA) said their files on the Clinton drug involvement and money laundering were sent to Oklahoma City and hidden in the Murrah Building.

I mentioned that some people speculated that the files were about the Waco massacre, others the Clinton’s Whitewater scam, and others about Agent Orange usage in Vietnam. I never considered any of these to be relevant or true. But records that could threaten the Clintons, and George H.W. Bush, not to mention several members of the Dixie Mafia, the CIA, and other private businessmen and government officials? That would explain everything: why the conspirators would pick that building, the boxes of files removed on Day One despite so many people trapped in the building that needed rescuing, and the threat to future politicians who may have been part of the Iran/Contra operation

"THE ENTERPRISE"
KL-43
Oliver North (NSC)
Udall
(Including Lake Resources, et al SWITZERLAND)
Corp. Air Service Ltd.
Secord/ Hakim
MENA
MEXICO
SAT (Southern Air Transport)
Hasenfus Cooper Sawyer Stevenson
MIAMI
U.S. Consulate
GUADALAJARA
Corp. Air Service Ltd.
Enterprise Assets (Airplanes Parts etc.)
Felix Rodriguez Mitch Marr et al
Maquinaria International S.A. Terry Reed
PANAMA
ACE (Amalgamated Commercial Ent.)
DRUG AND MONEY SHIPMENTS
WEAPON SHIPMENTS
SECRET COMMUNICATIONS
MONEY TRAIL

Flow Chart of Iran/Contra operations and drug money laundering (Diagram: Terry Reed in his book *Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA*)

When I finished my story, including showing Pete diagrams of the connections of the players, the drug routes, and the money distribution and laundering methods, I waited for his reaction. I only wanted to make him understand that I—and others in the Baker Street Irregulars—should not be dismissed out of hand. Also, I wanted him to know that a massive coverup was underway, and that this whole affair just might eventually blow up in the FBI's face along with several prominent politicians. Especially Bill and Hillary Clinton.

I also wanted to make him understand that Juan Garcia Abrego did fit into all of this, and Pete had been the one who told me "he doesn't exist."

Pete's answer to all of this: "Thanks, I'll give this all some thought."

And that's the last word I ever heard of it from him or from his office. Who do you turn to when the guardians refuse to guard?

Mexican drug lord Juan Garcia Abrego, who my FBI contact said did not exist, being escorted off a plane in Houston, Texas in January 1996.

It was indeed an up hill battle. No matter what I did, no matter what the others did, it went nowhere. The FBI, which had the responsibility for bringing the case to a successful conclusion refused to follow up on all the material and information we provided. None of the information we had on the Middle Eastern Connection was addressed. They dismissed the solid leads to other John Does. They removed the video surveillance cameras from the scene around the Murrah Building, and covered up the mounting holes, and painted over them. They refused to acknowledge the existence of the video tapes until Jesse Trentadue forced them in court to admit that some existed, and they did everything they could to intimidate witnesses, change stories, change testimony, change reports, and obscure facts. Then they demolished the building before any independent investigators could inspect it, and had the rubble buried in a guarded location.

The media was just as complicit. Anyone who attempted to point out any of the above was ostracized, denied, and attacked. In the *Tulsa World* alone a huge editorial department and political cartoonist stooped to the lowest forms of yellow journalism to attack anyone who attempted to expose the truth. Charles Key, and anyone in the OBIC were free game, as were myself and others who tried to just open their minds a crack to let in some light. That, trying to get the media to understand anything other than the official Clinton-Reno government version was an exercise in futility. The media was controlled, and still is.

Hopefully, one day all that may change. Attorney Jesse Trentadue's continuing law suits have developed several damning depositions showing how much the case was mishandled by the FBI and how much it has been covered up. Just as at fault are the local politicians from the governor's office on down to the Oklahoma City government and Oklahoma City police department.

One recent discovery by the Oklahoma City Medical Examiners Office is in regards to the single left leg of a female dressed in camouflaged fatigues that was found at the scene on Day One that did not belong to any of the victims bodies. All limbs of victims, except for that one, were accounted for. I held hope for a new break in the case when a *Washington Times* article of December 7th, 2015 by Jeffrey Scott Shapiro came out: "The Oklahoma City Medical Examiner has partial DNA from an unmatched left leg collected from the ruins of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building bombing, reviving the possibility of a 169th unidentified victim from the 1995 terror attack as well as defense lawyers' long-held belief that Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols had an additional accomplice.

"An Oklahoma state forensics expert told *The Washington Times* the DNA tests were conducted by a private lab about two years after the attack, and no known person who was in the vicinity of the building the day of the bombing is presently unaccounted for.

"The Office of the Chief Medical Examiner has a copy of the results. However, the results are confidential pursuant to state law, Oklahoma Chief Toxicologist Dr. Bryon Curtis said."

To date nothing more has been said of this possible break through. The battle continues up hill.

CHAPTER 25

Never let the truth stand in the way

N*unquam veritatem fabulae bonae impedire sinamus*—Never let the truth stand in the way of a good story—or a "good" investigation…

To do a proper and thorough investigation of this magnitude, it would take a large staff of professional investigators, researchers, evidence technicians, and field operatives, of which only the federal government could field and support. Our small band of Baker Street Irregulars did all we could do as an *ad hoc* team, and surprisingly we accumulated more true evidence, developed a wider range of leads, and were obviously much more open-minded than the FBI and DoJ. The longer we dug into the case and each of us followed our various leads, the closer we got to the truth.

In the beginning there were, counting the members of Rep. Charles Keys' OBIC and the Irregulars, approximately 18 of us. That number dwindled over time and within 18 months only a handful of us remained. Eventually, those that trudged ahead were myself, David Hoffman, and Jayna Davis. David's part culminated in his book *The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror*. Jayna wrote her book, *The Third Terrorist*, OBIC released *The Final Report on the Oklahoma City Bombing*, and now my book, *The Medusa File II—The Politics of Terror and the Oklahoma City Bombing.*

I have to at this point recognize and compliment those who, despite the dangers involved, were brave enough to press forward in the investigation. For those of us who stood fast, it was "Damn the torpedoes, full speed ahead!"

But it's not over. As long as these books remain in print, and the various video documentaries are produced, the investigation will never cease until the full story is told and the "others unknown" are brought to justice.

For those that fall for the "Oswald did it by himself" scenario, and the "McVeigh's dead, Nichols is in prison, case closed" scenario, no amount of truth or facts will make a difference. But for those who know in their gut that the complete truth is still out there, these and other books will open many doors.

And for those who think McVeigh and Nichols, unaided, pulled off, at the time, the biggest terrorist event on U.S. soil in history, I would like to quote from Attorney Stephen Jones outstanding book *Others Unknown—The Oklahoma City Bombing Case and Conspiracy*:

Stephen Jones, during his investigation as McVeigh's defense attorney, traveled to Wales and England to confer with experts that might be of help in the case. One such meeting was with a retired British army officer who had done service in British Internal Security, or MI5, and had been involved in tracking down IRA terrorists in Northern Ireland. After having heard Mr. Jones' explanation of the event, the retired officer said, "I'm not sure your chaps (meaning McVeigh and Nichols) didn't do it. I'm just telling you that no one else has ever been able to do it that way. Since we've been keeping records, and that goes way back before 1968, there has been no major incident of terrorism anywhere in the world, where anything like this number of people were killed and injured, that was the work of only two men. If it was that easy, we would have bombs going off in London all the time. Terrorism requires an infrastructure, supplies, financing, safehouses, a getaway plan, lookouts, engineers, and leadership.

"So, if your clients are guilty, they and no others, one has to ask oneself: What did Terry Nichols and Tim McVeigh know that the PLO, the General Command for the Liberation of Palestine, Black September, and the Provos of the IRA, and every other terrorist organization in the world that uses ammonium nitrate bombs, didn't know?"

He continued "If your clients are guilty, Mr. Jones, I hope, before your government executes them, that you will make them available to the rest of us, so we can ind out how they did it."

It should be obvious to the reader at this point that the official Clinton-Reno false flag story that McVeigh, with a little help from Nichols, managed to build a sophisticated truck bomb powerful enough to do, by itself, the damage that was done to the Murrah Building with no outside assistance is a lie. It should also be obvious that the damage was done with the aid of internal explosives strategically placed on select columns, that the blast from those explosives blew outwards, and that not all of them went off as planned. According to OCPD officer Don Browning, who was one of the first officers in the building, the most significant damage was in the "cut" in the back of the building (where the "V" is located in photographs). Also, according to survivor Jane Graham, plastic explosives or demolition charges were place on columns in the parking garage area beneath the building by three unknown individuals (with one later being identified as Andreas Strassmeir).

Besides what is known, above, when we take all the known facts and put the pieces of the puzzle together we begin to form a very convincing picture of what happened before, during, and after the bombing.

The key points that make up the case

From what we know and can prove, and what we are convinced did occur but cannot prove, the events, when tied together, present this series of events:

1. The original "conspiracy theory" was that the Murrah Building was actually a federal government "sting" operation gone wrong. We know that the building had been staked out, and according to some witnesses it had been staked out all night but the stake out was called of around 6 a.m. when the Ryder truck had not shown up. We have witnesses who saw men with hoop antennas, like they were trying to track a transponder that may have been on the truck, and we know the Oklahoma Sheriff's office had deputies on stake out a block away taking photographs of the building early that morning, captured the image of a USP truck in front of the building entrance just before 9 a.m., which caused McVeigh to stop the truck a block short, where witnesses saw him and another man talking on the sidewalk.
2. We know that witnesses saw two "Middle Eastern males" in blue jogging suits in front of the Murrah Building entrance who held the parking spot for the Ryder truck when the UPS truck left. We know they then ran down the sidewalk to their parked brown GM pickup truck described as having dark windows and a smoked glass bug

shield on the front, then leaving the scene at a high rage of speed.

3. We know McVeigh and John Doe 2 exited the Ryder truck and managed to leave the scene in McVeigh's yellow Mercury.
4. Witnesses in the building described first a rumble, then a larger explosion, indicating two separate events. Seismograph tapes also showed two distinct events, and later when the building was imploded there was only one seismograph event recorded.
5. On Day One all rescue personnel, with a few exceptions, were pulled back away from the building after it was announced that more devices were found in the building.
6. Also, later on Day One, everyone was pulled back again while unmarked and unidentified "federal agents" swarmed to the building to remove boxes of files and even filing cabinets, while leaving victims still trapped in the rubble who required rescue and medical attention.
7. Sgt. Don Browning, of the Oklahoma City Police Department, described a tour of the building at one time prior to the bombing where he was shown security cameras on the south side of the building (where the Ryder truck would be parked). But all security cameras in the vicinity, their recording equipment, and all of the video tapes were confiscated by the FBI. Then, not only were the mounting holes patched up an painted over, but even the wiring was torn out of the walls so that there would later be no evidence of any video cameras recording the scene, or video tapes that would be the OKC version of the Zapruder Film.
8. McVeigh's military record is very strange. McVeigh was a model soldier during his service in Desert Storm as a Bradley Fighting Vehicle gunner, he made sergeant before any of his peers, and he even received a Bronze Star medal. He applied for Special Forces after returning to the States, but according to contacts at Fort Bragg, he dropped out due to problems with his feet, or not being able to pass the physical requirements (both of which are ridiculous excuses by the Army since McVeigh kept himself in top physical condition). Then, according to what McVeigh wrote to his sister, he had been selected with ten other soldiers for a "special team" that did covert operations both inside the U.S. and abroad. These actions included running drugs, robbery, dirty tricks, and even assassinations. His records say he was discharged in 1991, however he was seen and videotaped in uniform driving an M-113 Armored Personnel Carrier in 1993 at Camp Grafton, North Dakota, where he told the photographer "I'm nobody. I'm a parts clerk." We know he worked at Calspan, Inc. as a security guard for Burns Security Services, and it was during this time that he may have been subjected to mind control indoctrination and training. Later, when apprehended, he showed no emotion for the bombing or the deaths he had caused, and after being found guilty and given the death sentence he also showed no emotion. Then later, he refused any court appeals and demanded to be executed as soon as possible. Finally, there are many questions concerning whether he was actually executed or not. We also know that Nichols wrote that "Sarge will take care of us," and that he and McVeigh would split $2.5 million that, according to Nichols, had been set aside for them, probably in an offshore account if this is true. As for Nichols, he had asked to be interviewed by the media on more than one occasion, but all

requests have been denied by the government, and his request to be interviewed by then-Attorney General John Ashroft was never even acknowledged.

9. Any witness that wanted to come forward with any story other than the official version was intimidated by the FBI, ignored, or forced to change their story. Some witnesses died shortly after the event, and any so-called “suicide” was highly questionable, if not an outright coverup of a homicide.
10. Nichols made several trips to the Philippines and met with terrorists. He had no job and no money, yet someone paid all his expenses for the trips. We know he met with Abu Sayyaf, the Philippine Muslim terrorist group, which included 1993 World Trade Center bomber Ramzi Yousef, Mohammed Wali Khan, Edwin Angeles and Khalid Sheik Mohammed among others. We also know that Khan’s and KSM’s boss was none other than Osama bin Laden.
11. While this was going on, radical White Separatists were being influence by a German national named Andreas Strassmeir. Strassmeir was a lieutenant in the Panzer Grenadiers in Germany, and his father was a top aid to German chancellor Helmut Kohl. Evidence points to him also working for German intelligence missions dealing with covert operations. Those in contact with Strassmeir were ATF informant Carol Howe, radical racist Dennis Mahon, and Timothy McVeigh. Also in contact were various members of the Aryan Republican Army “Midwest Bank Robbers.” Mahon admitted casing the Murrah Building, and driving the second Ryder truck that was seen as a diversion in Bricktown along with one of the John Doe 2s on the morning of April 19th.
12. The so-called ARA bank robbery gang was infiltrated with at least three federal informants, and the FBI knew in advance every robbery that occurred, or at least who was involved in a robbery after the fact, but took their time in apprehending them. Was these robberies to be a layer of the onion regarding who helped finance the bombing, or allow the robberies to continue to use them to build a plausible means of finance? That would be a plausible explanation.
13. If the files that were removed from the federal building on Day One were the files on the Iran/Contra and Mena drug smuggling and money laundering operations, that would incriminate the president and first lady at the time, they would connect with the CIA, Colombian cartel drug smuggling, the Mexican Mafia drug cartels, many federal agents and government bureaucrats, and expose more of what we knew about the arms-for-hostages, and guns for Contras operation. But most of all, if those files were the DEA and/or IRS files from Little Rock that showed the Clintons being involved in these activities they would be shocking evidence of criminal activity on their part that might lead to impeachment or worse. Such files might also have led to exposing various high-level crime figures in northwest Arkansas, Georgia, Florida, Texas and California.
14. The Colombian and Mexican cartels were initially organized by the CIA, just as the opium running out of the Golden Triangle had been organized in the past, and by the same CIA officers and chain-of-command. The cartels also had liaison with Islamic terrorist groups, and still do today. Intelligence sources here and abroad confirm that Islamics do not hesitate in using “White neo-Nazis” to do their bidding, thereby tying

in the Middle Eastern Connection, Nichols trips to the Philippines to meet with Abu Sayyaf, Colombian and Mexican drug running, and certain Americans both inside and outside government service. Basically, when one understands that the drug running into the United States is a coordinated international affair between all of the above entities and players, then the picture becomes much more clear.

15. To try to bring an end to the investigation the FBI declared that after thousands of agents, investigating and hundreds of thousands of reports, that the apprehension of McVeigh and Nichols ended the case. According to the FBI, the Doj, and the Clinton White House, there are no others involved. The official version, backed-up by the controlled media, is that McVeigh did the bombing by himself (even though Mike Moroz at Johnny's Tire Store saw McVeigh in the Ryder truck with another individual as did others at the scene) for revenge for the Waco massacre. The FBI alleges that only Nichols helped build the bomb. Both McVeigh and Nichols were arrested and found guilty. Case closed. But if you try to dig into the case by filing FOIAs, you will either be denied and told that it is an open and ongoing investigation, or it is sealed because of "National Security."

16. After McVeigh and Nichols were in federal custody Andreas Strassmeir, who federal authorities never once interviewed, felt he needed to quickly leave the country and return to Germany as soon as possible. Even though he had been an informant to the Southern Poverty Law Center, a very Left Wing organization, he turned to Kirk Lyons of the Cause Foundation for help, a very Right Wing law office which is exactly the opposite of the SPLC. Kirk Lyons wrote on Cause Foundation letterhead in an undated letter to supporters that "Living in Elohim City was a friend of CAUSE Directors Kirk Lyons and Dave Hollaway, Andreas C. Strassmeir. Strassmeir is a German national who's [sic] father *just retired* as secretary of State for West Germany." The letter goes on to say Stephen Jones "has subpoenaed CAUSE Director Kirk Lyons and Strassmeir to testify in McVeigh's case." Lyons then decides to ignore the subpoena and instead writes "Strassmeir had to be spirited out of the country before Jones and company could get their hands on him. Also, there was some danger that the FBI might take Jones seriously and it would be much easier to defend Strassmeir from German than from inside a federal detention facility. This required a clandestine and circuitous route through Mexico, Paris, Frankfurt and Berlin, with numerous investigators, agents and process servers one step behind. Next, Associate Director Dave Hollaway had to go with him; there were numerous obstacle which developed and had to be overcome; language barriers, entanglements with four countries' border and immigrations service, security etc. At one point the *Kriminal Polizei* and *Bundes Grenschutzgruppen 9* (GSG-9) were involved because of death threats against Strassmeir and his family passed to them through Interpol by the FBI." Taking all of this at face value we know that no one stopped Strassmeir from leaving, and the FBI and other organizations even warned Strassmeir of death threats to the point of having to have him protected by the German Criminal Police and the Special Operations GSG-9, of which Strassmeir was possibly a member. Also a factor in this is a reference we found in one report that states that David Michael Alexander Hollaway served 8 years in Special Forces as a Green Beret, and that he allegedly also was at one time a pilot for the CIA and that he had a well-established

connection to the FBI. Also of note is that Lyons had lived at Elohim City during the Fort Smith sedition trials, and Hollaway had married one of the group's young girls. Strassmeir, who had lived at Elohim City and advocated blowing up federal buildings, and had trained the residents there to be their own "militia," and had been friends with McVeigh, Mahon, and the members of the ARA, was allowed to escape and never extradited to face charges.

17. Attorney Jesse Trentadue filed a lawsuit over his brother's death while his brother, Kenneth Trentadue, was in federal custody, and filed several FOIA requests for records and for the tapes of the surveillance cameras in FBI custody. He was fought by the DoJ and FBI at every step. He also obtained depositions from several key individuals that still may lead to more discovery of the truth about the event. He also obtained critical FBI reports that exposed the FBI's "PATCON" operations against "American Patriots" and the Right Wing.
18. The "Violent Crime Control And Law Enforcement Act Of 1994," which was on stalled in Congress was passed into law. It became the predecessor to the Patriot Act passed after 9/11. Both take liberties away from American citizens and increase government power.
19. The Clintons never face an official investigation into their involvement with the Mena affair, money laundering, or being ancillary to drug running.
20. "Others Unknown" remain at large.

Further proof of the files being taken:

One of Jesse Trentadue's depositions was with OCPD, officer Sergeant Don Browning. In it, several of the questions concerned things that happened on Day One.:

"16. The second witness is Donald Browning, a retired Oklahoma City Police Officer. Mr. Browning's duties as an Oklahoma City Police Officer included assisting the Secret Service in providing security for visiting federal officials. The Secret Service's Office was likewise located in the Murrah Building.

"17. Mr. Browning was familiar with the external security or surveillance cameras on the Murrah Building. The last time he toured the Murrah Building the cameras were operating, the images from those cameras were being recorded on videotape and those videotapes were being stored. Mr. Browning testimony involved removal of the surveillance cameras. According to Mr. Browning:

"A. Browning: We were told by a female, a white Caucasian female, wearing an FBI rain jacket, … that there were *files so critical to the government that there would be no recovery effort.* We were told to stand our ground on the courtyard of the Murrah Building … and they would let us know when we would be allowed back into the building. [Emphasis mine]

***

"Q. So you testified that a female in an FBI jacket came into the area and stopped, prevented you, made you leave the area, preventing you from rescuing others so that in your words critical files could be recovered. Is that – is that correct?

“A. Yes, sir. That is exactly what she told us.

***

“Q. If I was prevented from rescuing people who were potentially in harms way I would be pretty upset about that. Were you?

“A Yes, sir, extremely upset.

“19. While standing outside waiting to be allowed to re-enter the Murrah Building and continue in his efforts, *Mr. Browning saw several men wearing FBI rain jackets remove surveillance cameras from the building*:

“Q. And explain to the court what you saw in terms of being removed. Who removed them?

“A. There was three or four men wearing FBI rain jackets using an extension ladder and they were removing not only the camera but the bracketing and a good distance of the wiring.

“Q. Fair to say that they were removing all evidence of the camera having been there?

“A. Yes, sir.

“16. Mr. Browning’s testimony about the surveillance cameras being removed that morning is confirmed by Trial Exhibit 20, which contains photographs taken immediately after the bombing. This Exhibit shows the ladder described by Browning that was used by men wearing FBI jackets to remove the surveillance cameras, the surveillance cameras in place and the same location after the cameras had been removed, just as Browning had testified.

“20. It is also noteworthy that the FBI had known of the substance of the of what was on the tapes.”

In 2011, Chris Emery, who had been involved in the later investigations into the OKC bombing, and especially into the death of Terry Yeakey, called me and asked if I would be willing to help, and appear in, a new documentary film about the bombing. He had joined a group of concerned film producers who were working on a expose’ for Free Mind Films. I agreed to assist, and on a given date the film crew arrived at my location in Northeast Oklahoma. We spent half a day setting up and filming the interview. The end result, *A Noble Lie*, was a very well-done video in DVD format, and also available on the internet. As of this writing the documentary is also available to watch for free on Youtube. The only issue I had with the documentary was that it went more into Yeakey’s death than any other topic, and left out the Middle Eastern connection completely. I asked Chris about this later, and he told me that they planned on a second production that would include that part of the case. Unfortunately, that never happened. Instead, the second DVD, written and produced by one of the crew members, Wendy Painting, was *State of Mind* about government mind control. Still, the production of *A Noble Lie* continues to educate many who know nothing about the case, and those born long after 1995.

CHAPTER 26

How it All Comes Together

An honest witness does not deceive, but a false witness pours out lies.

Proverbs 14:15

There comes a time in an investigation that the investigator must take all of the information and the pieces of the puzzle and see if it forms a picture. Seldom are all the pieces in place, and more so when the investigator is limited by the resources available during the investigation. So it was with my efforts, and those of the Baker Street Irregulars as the months and years passed by after that terrible day in April, 1995.

There are many pieces of the puzzle that we uncovered and investigated that are directly connected to the bombing, but that the government either discredits, deny's or refuses to even acknowledge. The government's "investigation," extolled to be the biggest, most thorough investigation in the history of the FBI, totally ignores reams of solid leads, eye witness statements, input from other investigators, and the solid evidence that exists or had existed prior to being seized or destroyed by the FBI under orders of the DoJ and Attorney General Janet Reno. It should be obvious to the reader at this point that a massive coverup had been orchestrated at the highest levels, and continues to exist to this day.

I have attempted to provide the reader with the majority of the information that I, and those who helped in the investigation have available. I have combed my case files and brought forth as much as I could that would provide the reader with the facts of the case and the information that would prove that the bombing of the Murrah Federal Building was not a happenstance event, and that there were more people involved than just Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols.

There are lists of unanswered questions; questions the government agencies refuse to answer. When important documents were eventually released due to efforts of such patriotic people as attorneys Jesse Trentadue, Stephen Jones and Mike Johnston, they are heavily redacted to the point that makes them almost useless. If it were not for the courageous few who continued to drive on with the investigation, the case would have died within months of the bombing. As long as there are Americans—including the generations to come—that will not let the dragon of deceit stay in its cave, then there is hope that those involved in the criminal coverup, and possibly those that participated in the actual event in one form or another besides McVeigh and Nichols will eventually be identified, apprehended and brought to justice. The Oklahoma City bombing is not just a case of terrorism, it was a planned event that took the lives of 168 innocent people—Americans all. Those guilty of perpetrating the tragedy, supporting it in various manners from planning, to logistics, to finances, and covering it up to this day—are all guilty of murder. The Oklahoma City bombing is a homicide case, and murder has no statute of limitations.

In police work, cases all have three basic elements: Means, Motive and Opportunity. Someone has to have the means to accomplish the act—including the logistics—then they must have a motive to do so. Finally, an opportunity must exist to accomplish the crime.

The Oklahoma City bombing is no different. To understand the investigation one must fill in those blanks. This means asking question and finding answers. Some questions in this case will go unanswered other than addressing theories. Others have answers that are provable. The challenge is filling in the blanks between the theories and the facts. By taking what has been presented in this writing, we can sum up the main questions and where possible, the answers. As we examine the below questions, answers and evidence, it is easy to use the “D’s” to deal with the “official government version.” By peeling off the layers of the onion we can get closer to the truth. And to do that is to show how the government version of events can be discredited or debunked. This includes alternate theories propagated on the Internet that divert the thrust of the investigation.

1. *McVeigh left the Army after failing to qualify for Special Forces at Fort Bragg, became disgruntled after seeing what happened at Waco, then decided to strike back at the government by setting off a truck bomb at a federal building. He chose Oklahoma City.*

The problem with this version is that the offices in the Murrah Building had nothing to do with Waco (with the exception of the small ATF office). If McVeigh was going to attack an ATF or FBI office that would be directly linked in public opinion with Waco, he would have selected the ATF office in New Orleans where the plan originated, or Waco where the event happened. Also, the federal agency involved in the final outcome of Waco was the FBI, yet no FBI office existed in the Murrah Building.

2. *McVeigh left the Army in 1991 and was discharged. McVeigh did not qualify for Special Forces.*

If McVeigh was no longer in the Army after 1991 how is it that he was video-taped in uniform as a soldier inside an armored personal carrier at Camp Grafton in 1993? McVeigh’s letter to his sister regarding being selected for a “special unit” that did nefarious things from drug running to money laundering to assassinations makes sense if one knows the inner workings of the “dirty tricks” community that has existed in special operations and CIA operations for decades. The original story that McVeigh was AWOL from the Army did not hold up upon questioning Army officials and was quickly discarded.

3. *It was a “sting” operation gone wrong.*

There is a certain amount of evidence and witness statements that support this claim. The Oklahoma County Sheriff’s office had a stakeout vehicle northeast of the Murrah Building that took photos of the UPS truck which arrived just before 9:00 a.m. that morning; witnesses saw lights moving around inside the Murrah Building during the night before; Rep. Ernest Istook stated to two different witnesses that the government had prior knowledge; the local bomb squad was on the scene early that morning, as was parked two blocks away when the truck arrived. They had been seen searching the grounds around the building that morning by several witnesses; men with “hoop antennas” were seen on the sidewalk that appeared to be searching for a signal such as a RF transmitter on the truck; some reports mention that John Doe #2 was a DEA agent—which is unlikely, and is probably disinformation to distract from the real JD#2. Still, JD#2 was seen by numerous witnesses, and managed to get away with McVeigh in the yellow Mercury, never be properly followed up on or apprehended.

3. *Damage to the building was caused by the Ryder truck and barrels of ANFO.*

We’ve shown that such a device could not have done the damage. The size of the crater is too small to match the effect on the “bomb proof” building—especially from the outside. General Partin’s analysis alone shows that the pressure wave from 4800 lbs of ANFO would not do significant damage but would lose force-effect prior to the pressure wave making contact with the building. Also, much of the building and its windows were blown outward, the exact opposite of an outside explosion. Next, witnesses prior to and after the event saw explosives inside the building or on columns. Some did not detonate. Rebar on some of the columns showed evidence of “cutting charges,” charges placed directly on the columns. The Air Force at Wright Patterson AFB attempted to duplicate the government version of the event and could not do so. Comparing the damage to the Murrah Building with the alleged 4800 lbs of ANFO low explosive to the 5000 lbs of high explosive at the Khobar Towers in Saudi Arabia in 1996—a non “bomb proof” building tells all. 186 dead in Oklahoma City, 20 dead in Saudi Arabia.

4. *There are no video surveillance tapes of the bombing (and alternate versions of this statement).*

False. Three versions of this claim exist: A. “There were no surveillance tapes/cameras that saw anything;” B. “We can’t show the tapes due to ‘national security;’” or “It’s an ongoing investigation,” and C. “We can’t find the tapes—if they even existed.” All of these are lies. First, there were numerous video cameras in the area, and several video recorders that caught many aspects of the actions which occurred that morning. The entire front of the Murrah Building was under surveillance; cameras existed at the entrance and on the corners of the nearby Regency Tower apartment building, and also cameras existed on buildings around and near the area in question. The FBI made a concerted effort to not only seize all the videotapes and recorders, but to also remove all the cameras and evidence that they even existed—include removing the wiring from the inside of the walls, sealing up the mounting holes, and painted over the patches. We also now know that a local video duplicating shop made 400 copies of tapes for the FBI and that one rogue FBI agent later attempted to sell a tape to the *Dateline* for $850,000. The video tapes are the Achilles Heel to the case as they show—and would prove— the existence of John Doe #2 and most likely provide an identifcation as well. This bolsters the claim that, if JD#2 was a government CI or provacateur, not only did the government have foreknowledge of the event, but actually had a participant that might have been exposed if proven so. The video tapes from the attack on the Murrah Building are akin to the Zapruder film taken of the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. They need to be shown nationally.

There is no matter of “National Security” as an excuse for keeping the tapes sealed. If so, the FBI and DoJ must show how this could be so. And, out of 400 tapes, all could not be “lost.” If the FBI is this inept, there should be an investigation from an outside agency, and many individuals in the J. Edgar Hoover building should have their careers terminated immediately. All FBI supervisory personnel involved in the investigation at the time should be subpoened to appear before a Congressional investigating committee or special counsel to explain their actions—or inactions. The Committee should demand that the FBI turn over the video tapes for viewing and determination of exactly what was on them, then the tapes should be shown on national television.

5. *The Murrah Building was selected because of Waco.*

False. The Murrah Building in Oklahoma had nothing to do with the events in Waco, Texas. The only possible motive to attempt to destroy that building and everything in it would have to be what was in the building. That means that the second Achilles Heel to the case would be what happened on Day One when the government made the decision to abandon people trapped inside, to “rescue” files from a building that had nothing to hide regarding national security, or that were time sensitive. Beside numerous witness statements and local media reports of this particular event, media outlets across the nation mentioned it and questioned why the government would do such a thing. *The New York Daily News* on Monday, May 1st, 1995 wrote in one article: “Hours after the truck bomb ripped apart the Oklahoma City federal building, some rescue workers were ordered to stop searching for survivors while federal officials removed boxes of documents. ‘You’d think they would have let their evidence and files sit at least until the last survivor was pulled out,’ one rescue worker said. ‘They had guys carrying out boxes while the rescue workers were forced to sit on their hands.’ About 10 hours after the blast federal officials began limiting the number of rescue workers in the building to about a dozen… Meanwhile, groups of 40 to 50 federal agents spent much of the night carrying dozens of boxes from the seventh and ninth floors, where the federal Drug Enforcement Administration and Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms had offices. The contents of the files are unknown, but federal sources said they were looking into the possibility that the alleged bomber Timothy McVeigh and his accomplices had targeted the nine-story building in an effort to destroy DEA or ATF investigative files. FBI spokesman Gene Pogue called the allegations that rescue workers were restrained by the feds ‘unfortunate’ but otherwise refused to comment.”

Besides the concern for files-over-victims—which shows us what priority the files were to the government—what stands out is the reference to those federal “agents” who had no markings on their jackets is that they ascended to the 9th floor, to the DEA office. Is that where the Mena files were actually stored? Probably not, but they could not take the chance of missing any DEA files that might reference the Mena drug smuggling when Clinton was governor. My source did not say exactly where in the building the files were secreted, but agents also brought files out of what they could access in the basement.

To add to this, my contact with the BBC in London, Jan Klimkowski, had sent me an email three days after this article appeared that said “I have been told that the stories about the Gulf War Syndrome files and the Whitewater files being at the Murrah building are disinformation. It is files relating to drug running out of Mena (involving neo-Nazis as well as spooks) which, I am told, were stored at OK City. Proof of this for me was that the files removed from the building after the blast were from the DEA office.” I do not know where Jan got his information or his sources, but it matched what we suspected-and I felt confident was the truth.

6. *There is no Middle-Eastern connection.*

False. We know about the Iraqi “former POW” connection as described in this book, and we know about the connections through the Philippines with Nichols and Abu Sayyaf

—and its connection to not only Ramzi Yousef and other Islamic terrorists, but al Qaeda and Osama bin Ladin. It was Bill Clinton who decreed on Day Three that “there is NO middle eastern conection.” At that point the FBI stopped looking in that direction, no matter what the witnesses said or, the evidence we provided later showed.

7. *Where did the files go?*

We know that the files were taken to the post office a block away. These files were so important that it took two cordons of armed agents to guard the boxes of “unsent mail” when they were brought out of the back of the post office, where they had been secreted for ten days behind a plywood wall. They were then loaded into an unmarked white “Ryder-type” truck and driven off. The question remains “were they taken to be destroyed, or protected?” I felt they, like the Murrah Building itself, were destroyed. If they weren’t they would have surfaced by now.

8. *There was only one Ryder truck.*

False. We know of at least two Ryder trucks. We now know that one Ryder truck was seen at Geary Lake in Kansas while another was seen at Junction City at the Dreamland Motel. We also know of a third Ryder truck that the FBI had the Tulsa Police Department stake out at the Coppermill Appartments in Tulsa, and which may have been the Ryder truck seen with McViegh, Strassmeir and two “unknowns” at Lady Godiva’s strip club in Tulsa. Whether the Ryder truck and the strange operation at Camp Gruber is connected may never be known, however, the proximity and the appearance of the temporary facility erected there is very suspect—and why would the Army or DAARPA need a civilian Ryder truck when so many military vehicles were available? And what was the strange machine depicted in the aerial photographs, and what was the yellow substance that was spilled on the ground around it?

We then have the McVeigh truck, and a different Ryder truck being driven around Bricktown at the same time McVeigh was parking in front of the Murrah Building. I feel confident that Dennis Mahon was John Doe #3 and was the driver, and either Michael Brescia from the Midwest Bank Robbery Gang was John Doe #4. It is also possibly Andreas Strassmeir was with him Mahon instead of Brescia. Stassmeir’s appearance could easily be confused with McVeigh’ features if witnessed by anyone as they drove by. Their mission was to be witnessed in that area as a diversion to the later investigation.

9. *It was the Militias that did it.*

False. We have already shown that no militia groups or individuals were involved. That said, McVeigh’s handlers (or chain of command) did their best to have him build a “legend” as a “Right Wing Fanatic with ties to the Militia(s).” The media, being part of the disinformation campaign, using “expert statements” from the far left Southern Poverty Law Center and the Anti-Defamation League, bolstered this assertion at every opportunity. This created a false trail and also attempted to influence the national population of the evilness of such groups—and those on the Right in general.

This also was beneficial to the Clinton administration and the Leftists in both houses of Congress who by then felt that there was a dangerous resistance movement brewing among the population that they needed to counter—by force of arms if necessary. Globalist politicians knew that these groups would resist any move of the the government to bring America into their so-called “New World Order.” These groups had already witnessed the government’s move to take away guns from the population to reduce the firepower of the average American and the militias, and to also pass the Omnibus Crime Bill that was on hangfire in Congress and would not have moved without public support. The excuse for all of these Draconian measures was fed to the public was that we needed a “more secure nation.” All of these points add to the “motives” list to shut down the militia movement and other resistance groups.

Then there was PATCON, the “Patriot Connection” operation being conducted by the FBI. PATCON was, among other things, a means for the FBI to infiltrate various groups that ranged from neo-Nazis to Constitutional Militias by using “UCA’s”—Under Cover Agents. Any group of significance or size was penetrated with informants—often by more than one agency, as was the case with the FBI and ATF at Elohim City. The militia trail was a total, but time consuming, false lead.

10. *McVeigh’s accomplishes all came from Elohim City.*

Partially true. We know that McVeigh had a definite relationship with Strassmeir, and through Strassmeir to Carol Howe and Dennis Mahon. We also know that Nichols was involved in the guns stolen from Roger Moore in Arkansas. We know that the Midwest Bank Robbers also made visits and often stayed at Elohim City. However, McVeigh’s accomplices actually were outside Elohim City and would fit into the category of “others unknown.” These would include those associated with Nichols, the other John Does seen with McVeigh at various times and locations including restaurants and motels, and the Iraqi “Middle Easterners” that McVeigh had met with previous to the bombing at two known locations. Even though Nichols made several trips to the Philippines and met with other Islamic terrorists, there is no evidence of any one of them being in Oklahoma City though Cary Gagan made references to such being in Las Vegas and having meetings with Samir Khalil, Cary Gagan, and other PLO figures who were above Khalil, if what Gagan relates is accurate.

11. *Andreas Strassmeir is not a figure of interest.*

False. Strassmeir is a key figure in the investigation and a possible participant in the bombing. His background alone draws attention. As a lieutenant in the Panzer Grenadiers, and as a member of GSG-9 (according to some sources) it is obvious that he was a plant to infiltrate the neo-Nazi culture in this country. Germany was very concerned with Nazi material, literature, and artifacts being smuggled into their country from the U.S. that would bolster the illegal new Nazi movement in Germany. In this aspect, Dennis Mahon figures in being a person of interest to the German government. And through Mahon, and other inside informants in the neo-Nazi movement here, Strassmeir was brought over and inserted as an undercover agent for at least one, if not more, U.S. intelligence organizations. Beside attempting to arm and train the residents in Elohim City, he also tried to instigate the residents to “blow up a federal building.” Instead of being picked up and questioned by federal authorities, since they knew of these efforts from their inside sources, he was allowed to continue his activities. When his car was stopped, and its contents discovered, several powerful individuals intervened in the custody of the vehicle and its contents. Then, when Strassmeir began feeling the heat of the aftermath of the bombing, he was spirited out of the country by Kirk Lyons and his CAUSE foundation, through Mexico to Germany. He was never questioned in Germany either. Much of his information coming out of Elohim City was provided to the SPLC—the exact political opposite of the CAUSE foundation.

12. *There is no connection between the Murrah bombing and Iran/Contra.*

Maybe. But the evidence would be in the files that the "federal agent" in Little Rock told me about at the beginning of the investigation, bolstered by the fact that the feds put a precedence on retrieving files over rescuing trapped victims—a display of heartlessness the government will never live down. Also, we have to add to that how much resistance I received when I attempted to expose the Mexican Mafia/drug lord connections to the bombing. From the FBI denying to me that there was a Juan Garcia Abrego, to the "two Mexican bag men dressed as Arabs" who checked into the hotel in Oklahoma City, to the denial by the FBI that Mena and cocaine running had anything to do with the bombing (and the selection of the Murrah Building over all others).

13. *The Arkansas license plate, PTA-811, found near where McVeigh was stopped by Oklahoma Highway Patrol trooper Charlie Hanger, had nothing to do with the bombing.*

Suspected to be false. It was not a coincidence where and when the plate was found, and that it was a stolen tag out of Fort Smith not far from Elohim City. And a bigger point to be made is that when I first ran the tag, I received an NCIC "hit" that it was stolen from a family in Fort Smith, but when I ran it a week later it came back "Not in the system." It had disappeared from the computer data banks nationwide. This change in national computer data can only be done at the federal level. Add to that the fact that the family who owned the car that the tag was taken from would not return my calls after I discovered it was missing from the NCIC data bank.

14. *There was only one explosion at the building.*

False. Not only did two separate seismograms show 2-3 distinct "events" on their graphs, but witnesses inside and outside the building describe more than one blast. Many inside reported a "rumble," then a blast. People at a morning meeting at the nearby Water Resources Board produced a tape of their meeting that showed at least two blasts The witnesses and the forensic evidence of the building itself shows one blast outside (the truck) and one or more blasts from the inside, hence the glass and debris that was blown outwards.

15. *McVeigh acted alone.*

False. Throughout this writing I have shown that there were numerous events and witnesses that saw McVeigh with others. On the day of the bombing witnesses and video cameras saw McVeigh talking to a "dark complected man" on the sidewalk across from the Post Office prior to moving the truck up to the building. Other witnesses saw McVeigh and his passenger exit the truck the passenger back to the back of the truck (evidently to initiate the bombing sequence), then walk briskly across the street with McVeigh to get into the yellow Mercury (others say the passenger, John Doe #2, went east on the sidewalk to the brown GMC pickup truck, however there were only two men who did that, and they were the two "Middle Easterners" in blue jogging suits. Then we have Mike Moroz at Johnnie's Tire Store who witnessed McVeigh, and who was later identified as Hussain al Hussaini, in the truck when they stopped to ask directions. We also have the witness in the alley behide the Journal Record building that McVeigh almost hit with his car when he raced from the scene who saw a dark complected male with a “hateful look on his face” as he went by. Also, previous to the bombing, the people in Junction City, Kansas, at both the Dreamland Motel and the Ryder Truck rental shop, reported at least two others with McVeigh when they dealt with him. The FBI, under the gun from Washington, was forced to make up an alternative “John Doe” as a “case of mistaken identity” in one Todd Bunting who rented a truck during the same week that McVeigh did. For the FBI and media, that was “case closed” on the hunt for John Doe #2. And like Lee Harvey Oswald, that was the end of their investigation.

To summarize the above, we have the *Means*. That is the Ryder truck, the fact that Nichols was able to buy a truckload of Ammonium Nitrate fertilizer and barrels, the outside assistance in constructing the truck bomb (there is no way Nichols and McVeigh could have mixed and loaded all that in one evening), the team(s) that put explosives on the columns of the building. The *Motive* would be the destruction of the files in the building, failing that, their retrieval, then ultimate destruction. A side benefit/motive would be the attacks in the media on the militias, the passing of the Omnibus Crime Control Act, and more justification for the FBI’s PATCON operation of infiltrating any “resistance groups,” or government-threatening organizations, to be extended past its authorization date.

The *Opportunity*, well-planned in advance, came on April 19th, 1995, the anniversary of the Waco debacle.

As I waded through my boxes of case files I came across a “wiring diagram,” or flow chart that I had drawn that showed connections between various entities and the bombing. The below had places on the chart with lines that connected them to other persons, groups or organizations. With the bombing of the building located in the middle of the chart, the lines radiated out to, or were cross-connected with:

McVeigh—Fort Bragg—“Army” special team
McVeigh—Nichols
Nichols—Philippines—McVeigh in Army
Bombing—Records/files
FBI—PATCON—OKCPD—Yeakey—militias—files
Middle Easterners—Nichols—McVeigh—Khalil—PLO—Philippines—Iraqi POWs
Philippines—Nichols—Abu Sayyaf—Ramzi Yousef—S. Khallid Mohammed—Osama bin Ladin
Mena—drug running—money laundering—Iran/Contra—Bill Clinton—Hillary Clinton
Bill Clinton—Hillary Clinton—Rose Law Firm—Dan Lasater—Mena—Iran/Contra
Cocaine—Colombia—Iran/Contra—Mexican Mafia—Abrego—Mena—Los Angeles
Elohim City—Strassmeir—McVeigh—Mahon—Howe—Midwest Bank Robbers
Strassmeir—McVeigh—Elohim City—SPLC—ADL—Kirk Lyons—German Intelligence
CIA—Dr. Jolyon West—Mind Control—Iran/Contra—gun and drug running—German Intel
DEA—Iran/Contra—Mena—Fort Smith—Records/files—Mena drug running

When we peel the onion, removing the layers of lies, false leads, disinformation, bogus stories, and dead-end trails, what appears to hold the most damning picture of what led up to, and what happened after the bombing, is frightening. To fit in what has been exposed in this book—to assemble the pieces of the puzzle—here is what appears to be the evolution of the crime—if all facts hold true:

Timothy McVeigh, an outstanding soldier, decided to advance his career by joining the Special Forces—the Green Berets. But according to what he wrote his sister, he was selected from among 400 applicants to SF to instead join a "special team" that specialized in criminal activities—all for the good of the nation. He then was "discharged" and sheep-dipped to become the vile extremist "McVeigh, the anti-government zealot." In this mode he would be used where needed. (Unknown to him, he would be considered expendable). His missions at the time were to infiltrate anti-government groups and militia units, attempt to talk them into doing illegal activities, and report all information to his handlers concerning the groups and individuals he encountered.

An extensive investigation of the Mena and Iran/Contra drug running was in progress in Arkansas and other places. A great deal of damning evidence was gathered against those involved in the Mena affair, money laundering, and in some cases, questionable homicides and "suicides." Those being investigated were Dan Lassater and Governor and Mrs. Clinton, among several others. Because of this the files were kept secured and safe until the presidential election of 1992. In January of 1993, when the Clintons moved to the White House, the DEA (and possible the IRS) knew that to keep these records where they could be discovered would be dangerous. The decision was made to move them out of state—but not too far. The Murrah Building, a federal facility only a few hours driving time away from Little Rock, was selected, and the move was coordinated with the DEA office in Oklahoma City. Exactly where the records were moved to in the building appears to be two locations: storage in the basement, and in the the DEA office on the 9th floor IF the Mena records were moved to the DEA office itself at all.

McVeigh was given his orders at some point in 1992-93 to prepare for a new mission. In this he was to make contact with various individuals and groups. These would include Nichols and Fortier, and at some point along the line, the "Middle Easterners" who had been brought into the country at the end of the Gulf war. These groups of POW "refugees" made automatic terrorist cells, most of which could be controlled by domestic handlers. He would eventually to be told to contact Strassmeir, then become familiar with Elohim City and it inhabitants.

McVeigh and his *ad hoc* "team" of John Does, along with Nichols, Brescia, Mahon and Strassmeir, each played a part. By introducing various persons and groups into the event that would also create conflicts, confusion, and plausibly deniable connections to the case. These branches to the case would also create mountains of paperwork in investigative reports—far too many in the end for any one person or small group to wade through.

Whether McVeigh or Nichols knew anything about the files or not is unknown. They did not have a "need to know." It is entirely possible that McVeigh originally thought that it would be a sting operation where he and his passenger was to deliver the truck to the Murrah Building at 3 a.m., but for some reason they ran six hours late. Whether due to a change in orders, or for some other reason, the event became 168 times more tragic than it would have been. McVeigh may have been led to believe that the operation was conceived to attack the militia movement or other groups.

After McVeigh and his accomplices made their escape from the scene, Phase II of the operation, which was a back-up plan in case the building wasn't demolished, began. This was the search and removal of the files. This could not be done right after the bombing for many reasons: too many witnesses, too much on-site media coverage, too many people trapped in the building, and too many victims in the street. To attempt to stop the rescue efforts simply to recover paperwork at that point would not have worked.

A large quantity of files were found and removed, including entire filing cabinets. They were whisked away as soon as they could be retrieved and loaded onto the trucks. Meanwhile, McVeigh had been stopped and north of Oklahoma City and arrested. He exhibited no sign of stress or remorse. After he was identified, the investigation then expanded to look for the various John Does, some of which were ignored by the FBI, or discredited and labeled as "not involved." It is incredible that of all the witnesses who saw another man with McVeigh in the Ryder truck, and that man was not Nichols, that the FBI would cease looking for "John Doe #2." Someone higher than local FBI agents made that decision. The question was "who?" That decision had to have been made at the Washington level.

With the assistance of the national media, from print to television, the case was manipulated to the point of only finding McVeigh and Nichols guilty of the bombing, and Fortier guilty of knowing and not revealing what he knew to the government. In the 12 months following the bombing no one else was picked up for questioning, or even followed up on even though we provided many leads that needed checking.

As for the case at this writing, McVeigh was "executed;" Nichols is incarcerated for life; Fortier is free; Strassmeir is free in Germany and protected by the German government; Mahon is in federal prison on a 40 year sentence for bomb making; Carol Howe is in the witness protection program; the Iraqis who worked for Samir Kahlil have disappeared; Elohim City is still there, but no longer "of interest" since Rev. Millar died; and the files…have gone.

Bill Clinton was re-elected in 1996.

CHAPTER 27

Where Do We Go From Here?

We can never let this case or any other coverup be forgotten. We must always demand from our public representatives and federal agencies to be above reproach, and understand they have a responsibility to keep and maintain an honest government. In this, we have to demand that such events as the Oklahoma City bombing and those events surrounding 9/11 be thoroughly and openly investigated until the proper resolution is achieved and the guilty are prosecuted and sentenced.

We cannot let status, rank, or position be a factor in who is investigated or prosecuted such as happened not only with the Mena affair and Iran/Contra, but with many other crimes that involved persons in high places. Congress and the White House are no exceptions.

As I write this, we have a new outside-the-Beltway president who has promised to “drain the swamp.” Let us hope he does exactly that. The so-called Establishment is long overdue for a house cleaning. Until that happens, and we have honest patriotic people in power and in authority, the rocks that hide the crimes and coverups will remain in place.

As author Ayn Rand said in her essay *Man’s Rights*, “There are two potential violators of man’s rights: the criminals and the government. The great achievement of the United States was to draw a distinction between these two — by forbidding to the second the legalized version of the activities of the first.”

There are three agencies that must be forced to adhere to the Constitution and to their oaths of office: The Department of Justice, the Federal Bureau of Investigation, and the Central Intelligence Agency. The Department of Justice can be controlled by the president, and if proper vetting occurs, honest individuals will do an honest days work every day. The same goes for the FBI, which over time has become in many compartmentalized areas, a rogue agency. As one FBI agent once told me “J. Edgar Hoover don’t live here anymore.” Though most of the field agents are good law enforcement officers, there are those who pull the strings above them that hamper the good sheep dogs from effectively guarding the sheep.

And as for the CIA, President Harry Truman, who signed the orders creating the CIA to take the place of the OSS at the insistence of Allen Dulles, summed up his feelings in a letter written to *The Washington Post* in 1963, shortly after the assassination of JFK:

INDEPENDENCE, MO., Dec. 21 — I think it has become necessary to take another look at the purpose and operations of our Central Intelligence Agency—CIA. At least, I would like to submit here the original reason why I thought it necessary to organize this Agency during my Administration, what I expected it to do and how it was to operate as an arm of the President.

I think it is fairly obvious that by and large a President’s performance in office is as effective as the information he has and the information he gets. That is to say, that assuming the President himself possesses a knowledge of our history, a sensitive understanding of our institutions, and an insight into the needs and aspirations of the people, he needs to have available to him the most accurate and up-to-the-minute information on what is going on everywhere in the world, and particularly of the trends and developments in all the danger spots in the contest between East and West. This is an immense task and requires a special kind of an intelligence facility.

Of course, every President has available to him all the information gathered by the many intelligence agencies already in existence. The Departments of State, Defense, Commerce, Interior and others are constantly engaged in extensive information gathering and have done excellent work.

But their collective information reached the President all too frequently in conflicting conclusions. At times, the intelligence reports tended to be slanted to conform to established positions of a given department. This becomes confusing and what's worse, such intelligence is of little use to a President in reaching the right decisions.

Therefore, I decided to set up a special organization charged with the collection of all intelligence reports from every available source, and to have those reports reach me as President without department "treatment" or interpretations.

I wanted and needed the information in its "natural raw" state and in as comprehensive a volume as it was practical for me to make full use of it. But the most important thing about this move was to guard against the chance of intelligence being used to influence or to lead the President into unwise decisions—and I thought it was necessary that the President do his own thinking and evaluating.

Since the responsibility for decision making was his—then he had to be sure that no information is kept from him for whatever reason at the discretion of any one department or agency, or that unpleasant facts be kept from him. There are always those who would want to shield a President from bad news or misjudgments to spare him from being "upset."

For some time I have been disturbed by the way CIA has been diverted from its original assignment. It has become an operational and at times a policy-making arm of the Government. This has led to trouble and may have compounded our difficulties in several explosive areas.

I never had any thought that when I set up the CIA that it would be injected into peacetime cloak and dagger operations. Some of the complications and embarrassment I think we have experienced are in part attributable to the fact that this quiet intelligence arm of the President has been so removed from its intended role that it is being interpreted as a symbol of sinister and mysterious foreign intrigue—and a subject for cold war enemy propaganda.

With all the nonsense put out by Communist propaganda about "Yankee imperialism," "exploitive capitalism," "war-mongering," "monopolists," in their name-calling assault on the West, the last thing we needed was for the CIA to be seized upon as something akin to a subverting influence in the affairs of other people.

I well knew the first temporary director of the CIA, Adm. Souers, and the later permanent directors of the CIA, Gen. Hoyt Vandenberg and Allen Dulles. These were men of the highest character, patriotism and integrity—and I assume this is true of all those who continue in charge.

But there are now some searching questions that need to be answered. I, therefore, would like to see the CIA be restored to its original assignment as the intelligence arm of the President, and that whatever else it can properly perform in that special field—and that its operational duties be terminated or properly used elsewhere.

We have grown up as a nation, respected for our free institutions and for our ability to maintain a free and open society. There is something about the way the CIA has been functioning that is casting a shadow over our historic position and I feel that we need to correct it. Signed "Harry S. Truman."

At this point I am reminded of the scene in a movie where an investigator meets a contact known as Man X in a park, sitting on a park bench, watching children play on a playground.

"Well, you've finally got there," said Man X.

"Have I?"

"You managed to not be diverted by false flags and leads, and that's saying quite a bit."

"So what do I do now," asked the investigator.

"About what?" was the reply.

"About the case. Someone needs to go to jail. The American people need to know what happened and who's involved."

Man X lights his pipe, exhaling a puff of blue smoke. "You know by now that it goes all the way to the highest levels, don't you?"

"I suspect, yes."

"And if you write about it, you could disappear, or commit suicide, or have a heart attack?" Man X asks.

"So again," asks the investigator, "what do I do after all this work?"

"It all depends. Are you a crusader? They hate crusaders, you know. Hard to buy them off or intimidate them."

The investigator rubbed his forehead. He was beginning to get a headache. "Okay, I guess I'm a crusader. So are my friends."

"Then write a book. Get it published before they find out about it. It's your only insurance. After that they'll simply try to debunk you, discredit you, make you look like a fool, a crazy."

"That should be easy, considering how they run the media and have all their mind control background when it comes to propaganda. So I write a book, then I'm discredited, my writing career is ruined, and nothing happens. What's the use?" asked the investigator.

"Because the American people will believe you, at least most of them. And that's all that counts. You just have to take your best shot. Fire your volley down range and see what happens. The more the liberal establishment media attacks you, the more credibility you will have in the minds of the public. But most of all, after you publish, you have your insurance policy. If they killed you or made you disappear then, it would only add credence to your story. After that, it’s up to you how to proceed. And remember, you’re not alone. You do have friends. Even a few in high places.”

“…give me your blessing: truth will come to light;…murder cannot be hid long, at length truth will out.”

Shakespeare—The Merchant of Venice

EPILOGUE

Time to Retire: My Oklahoma City Report

“The high office of the President has been used to foment a plot to destroy America’s freedoms, and before I leave office I must inform the citizens of this plight”

President John F. Kennedy—ten
days before he was assassinated

The more I became involved, and the deeper I went into the Oklahoma City investigation, the more apprehensive my chief became. I know he was not happy when the local office of the FBI requested my help, and he never showed me any support from his office. The remark his administrative sergeant, “The Weasel,” as I referred to him, made when in the beginning he said “the chief says you are now assigned to assist the FBI at their request, but he said for you to do it on your own time when you aren’t involved in your daily duties.”

I knew the chief was looking forward to my upcoming retirement that would occur on the last day of March, 1996 as he considered me a “loose cannon,” which I will plead guilty to. I never let tact or inhibitions stand in the way of what I had to say—or do. And with my seniority and a short timer’s attitude, I was basically untouchable as far as the department and the City of Tulsa was concerned. Most of all, the Marine in me has always been “mission oriented.” Give a Marine a mission, then get out of the way. That mission would be accomplished, one way or another.

I felt it was my duty the week I retired to write my final report to the chief and the local office of the FBI. At that time, in March of 1996, I wrote of what I, and the Baker Street Irregulars, had come up with during the course of the investigation. Obviously it was not the government-issued version. And it did not make the chief, who was very political, very happy. The day after his office received his copy in interoffice mail I received an angry phone call from the chief: “I’ve read this report, and I don’t ever want it to see the light of day. Get rid of it. Shred it. Make sure it disappears.”

It is one thing to order me to do something regarding what I do or did on duty, but it is another to try and order me to do something that I did or did not do when off duty. I had written the report off-duty, just like they wanted me to handle my part of the investigation—so that it didn’t interfere with my official duties. And my official duties concerned flying police helicopters on patrol, and even so, since the chief assigned me to the case, then it was only correct for me to report the results.

I wrote a 28-page report that detailed my investigation and included information gleaned from my “other sources” that I did not name to protect those who put their lives on the line while searching for the truth. The things I exposed in that report, which can be found in my chapter on the Oklahoma City bombing in my previous book, *The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government.*

So, beyond keeping the report and publishing it, I kept all my files and documents as well. What you have read here is the culmination of my investigation in book form.

All my life I have been a “truth warrior.” And so I remain.

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

Ephesians 6:12

In ending, and as for now, as Yogi Berra said….

“It ain’t over ’til it’s over.”

Those killed in the Oklahoma City Bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building, April 19th, 1995:

Lucio Aleman Jr., 33, safety engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

Richard Arthur Allen, 46, Yukon, claims representative, Social Security Administration.

Ted Leon Allen, 48, Norman, community planning, Housing and Urban Development.

Baylee Almon, 1, Midwest City.

Diane E. (Hollingsworth) Althouse, 45, loan management, Housing and Urban Development.

Rebecca Anderson, 37, nurse.

Pamela Cleveland Argo, 36, Oklahoma City.

Saundra “Sandy” Avery, 34, Midwest City, development clerk, Social Security Administration.

Peter Avillanoza, 56, fair housing and equal opportunity director, Housing and Urban Development.

Calvin Battle, 62.

Peola Battle, 56.

Danielle Nicole Bell, 15 months.

Oleta Christine Biddy, 54, Oklahoma City, Social Security service representative.

Shelly Turner Bland, 25, asset forfeiture specialist, Drug Enforcement Administration.

Andrea Y. Blanton, 33, Oklahoma City, secretary, Housing and Urban Development.

Olen Burl Bloomer, 61, budget assistant, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Lola Renee Bolden, 40, Army Sgt. 1st Class, Birmingham, Ala., assigned to the Oklahoma City Recruiting Office.

James E. Boles, 51, administrative officer, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Mark A. Bolte, 27, highway engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

Cassandra Kay Booker, 25, Oklahoma City.

Carol Louise Bowers, 53, Yukon, operations supervisor, Social Security Administration.

Peachlyn Bradley, 3, Oklahoma City.

Woodrow “Woody” Clifford Brady, 41, Oklahoma City.

Cynthia Lynn (Campbell) Brown, 26, special agent, Secret Service.

Paul G. Broxterman, 43, Housing and Urban Development.

Kimberly Ruth Burgess, 29, Tinker Air Force Base, Federal Employees Credit Union.

David Neil Burkett, 47, Housing and Urban Development.

Donald Earl Burns Sr., 63, construction analyst, Housing and Urban Development.

Karen Gist Carr, 32, U.S. Army Recruiting Office.

Michael J. Carrillo, 44, Federal Highway Administration.

Rona Linn Chafey, 35, Oklahoma City, Cleveland County sheriff’s secretary assigned to the Drug Enforcement Administration.

Zackary T. Chavez, 3, Oklahoma City.

Robert Neal Chipman, 51, Edmond, financial analyst, Oklahoma Water Resources Board.

Kimberly Kay Clark, 39, Oklahoma City, legal division, Housing and Urban Development.

Dr. Margaret Louise “Peggy” Clark, 42, veterinary medical officer, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Anthony Christopher Cooper II, 2, Moore.

Dana Brown Cooper, 24, Moore, director, America’s Kids day-care center.

Harley Cottingham, 46, special agent, Department of Defense.

Kim Robin Cousins, 33, Midwest City, Housing and Urban Development.

Aaron Coverdale, 5.

Elijah Coverdale, 2.

Jaci Rae Coyne, 14 months, Moore.

Kathy L. Cregan, 60, Oklahoma City, claims representative, Social Security Administration.

Richard Leroy Cummins, 55, senior investigator, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Steven D. Curry, 44, Norman, General Services Administration inspector.

Brenda Daniels, 42, Oklahoma City, America’s Kids day-care center.

Sgt. Benjamin L. Davis, 29, U.S. Marine Corps Recruiting Station, operations clerk, Oklahoma City.

Diana Lynn Day, 38, Housing and Urban Development.

Peter DeMaster, 44, special agent, Department of Defense.

Castine “Brooks” Deveroux, 49, Oklahoma City, closing clerk, Housing and Urban Development.

Sheila R. Gigger Driver, 28, Oklahoma City.

Tylor Eaves, 8 months, America’s Kids day-care center.

Ashley Eckles, 4, Guthrie.

Susan Ferrell, 37, attorney, Housing and Urban Development.

Carroll June “Chip” Fields, 48, Guthrie, Drug Enforcement Agency.

Katherine Ann Finley, 44, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Judy J. Fisher, 45, Housing and Urban Development.

Linda L. Florence, 43, Oklahoma City, properties disposition, Housing and Urban Development.

Donald Lee Fritzler, 64, Oklahoma City.

Mary Anne Fritzler, 57, Oklahoma City.

Tevin Garrett, 18 months, Oklahoma City.

Laura Jane (Washington) Garrison, 61, Oklahoma City.

Jamie Genzer, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Margaret Betterton Goodson, 54, Social Security claims representative.

Kevin Lee Gottshall, 6 months, Norman, America’s Kids day-care center.

Ethel Louise Griffin, 55, Edmond, Social Security claims representative.

Colleen Guiles, 59, Oklahoma City, senior underwriter, Housing and Urban Development.

Capt. Randolph A. Guzman, 28, Castro Valley, Calif., executive officer, U.S. Marine Corps Recruiting Station.

Cheryl Bradley Hammons, 44, Oklahoma City.

Ronald Vernon Harding, 55, Oklahoma City, claims division, Social Security Administration.

Thomas Lynn Hawthorne Sr., 52, Choctaw, Social Security customer.

Doris A. Higginbottom, 44, purchasing agent, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Anita C. Hightower, 27.

Gene Hodges Jr., 54, Norman, evaluation supervisor, Housing and Urban Development.

Peggy Louise Holland, 37, Oklahoma City, civilian computer specialist, U.S. Army Recruiting Office.

Linda Coleen Housley, 53, Oklahoma City, Federal Employees Credit Union.

George M. Howard, 45, Housing and Urban Development.

Wanda Lee Howell, 34, Spencer, teacher, America’s Kids day-care center.

Robbin A. Huff, 37, Bethany, loan officer, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Dr. Charles E. Hurlburt, dentist, Oklahoma City.

Jean Hurlburt, Oklahoma City.

Paul Douglas Ice, 42, Midwest City, senior special agent, Customs Service.

Christi Y. Jenkins, 32, teller, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Norma Jean Johnson, 62, executive secretary, Department of Defense, Defense and Investigative Service.

Raymond Lee Johnson, 59, Oklahoma City, senior volunteer, Social Security Administration.

Larry J. Jones, 46, Yukon, computer specialist, Federal Highway Administration.

Blake Ryan Kennedy, 18 months, Amber.

Carole Khalil, 50, Oklahoma City, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Valerie Koelsch, 33, Oklahoma City, marketing director, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Carolyn Ann Kreymborg, 57, Oklahoma City, loan management, Housing and Urban Development.

Teresa Lea Lauderdale, 41, Shawnee, realty specialist, Housing and Urban Development.

Kathy Leinen, 47, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Carrie Ann Lenz, 26, Choctaw, contract employee, Drug

Enforcement Administration.

Donald Ray Leonard, 50, Edmond, special agent, Secret Service.

Airman 1st Class Lakesha R. Levy, 21, U.S. Air Force.

Dominique London, 2, Oklahoma City.

Rheta Ione (Bender) Long, 60, Oklahoma City, secretary, U.S. Department of Agriculture.

Michael L. Loudenslager, 48, Harrah, planner/estimator, General Services Administration.

Aurelia “Donna” Luster, 43, Guthrie.

Robert Lee Luster Jr., 45, Guthrie.

Mickey Bryant Maroney, 50, Oklahoma City, special agent, Secret Service.

James K. Martin, 34, highway engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

Gilberto X. Martinez, 35, Oklahoma City.

James A. McCarthy, 53, Housing and Urban Development.

Kenneth Glenn McCullough, 36, Edmond, special agent, Drug Enforcement Administration.

Betsy Janice McGonnell, 47, Housing and Urban Development.

Linda McKinney, 47, office manager, Secret Service.

Airman 1st Class Cartney J. McRaven, U.S. Air Force.

Claude Medearis, 41, senior special agent, Customs Service.

Claudette Meek, 43, Oklahoma City, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Frankie Ann Merrell, 23, teller, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Derwin Miller, 27.

Eula Leigh Mitchell, 64.

John C. Moss III, 51, Warren, Ark., chief of public affairs, U.S. Army Recruiting Office.

Patricia Nix, 47, Edmond, Housing and Urban Development.

Jerry Lee Parker, 45, Norman, area engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

Jill Diane Randolph, 27, Oklahoma City, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Michelle Ann Reeder, 33, Oklahoma City, administrative staff, Federal Highway Administration.

Terry Smith Rees, 41, Midwest City, acting director of public housing, Housing and Urban Development.

Mary Leasure Rentie, 39, Bethany, organization management personnel specialist, Housing and Urban Development.

Antonio Reyes, 55, fair housing, Housing and Urban Development.

Kathryn E. Ridley, 24.

Trudy Rigney, 31, Midwest City, draftswoman, Oklahoma Water Resources Board.

Claudine Ritter, 48, Moore, collection officer, Federal Employees Credit Union. Sonja Sanders, 27, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Lanny L. Scroggins, 46, Oklahoma City, accounting, Housing and Urban Development.

Kathy Lynn Seidl, 39, Shawnee, investigative assistant, Secret Service.

Leora L. Sells, 57, Housing and Urban Development.

Karan Denise Shepherd, 27, Moore, loan officer, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Chase Smith, 3, Oklahoma City.

Colton Smith, 2, Oklahoma City.

Master Sgt. Victoria L. Sohn, 36, Moore, U.S. Army.

John T. Stewart, 51, Oklahoma City, Housing and Urban Development.

Dolores Marie Stratton, 51, Moore, civilian personnel clerk, U.S. Army recruiting office.

Emilio Rangel Tapia, 50, Oklahoma City.

Victoria J. Texter, 37, Oklahoma City, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Charlotte A. Thomas, 43, Social Security appointment clerk.

Michael G. Thompson, 46, Social Security Administration.

Kayla Marie Titsworth, 3, Oklahoma City.

Ricky L. Tomlin, 46, division program specialist, U.S. Department of Transportation.

LaRue Treanor, 56, Guthrie.

Luther Treanor, 61, Guthrie.

Larry L. Turner, 43, special agent, Defense and Investigative Service, Department of Defense.

Jules A. Valdez, 50, Housing and Urban Development.

John Karl VanEss, 67, Chickasha, Housing and Urban Development.

Johnny Allen Wade, 42, Oklahoma City, planning and research engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

David J. Walker, 54, environmental specialist, Housing and Urban Development.

Robert Nolan Walker Jr., 52.

Wanda Lee Watkins, 49, Midwest City, clerk, U.S. Army.

Michael Don Weaver, 45, Edmond, attorney.

Julie Marie Welch, 23, Oklahoma City, claims representative and interpreter, Social Security Administration.

Robert Glen Westberry, 57, Daytona Beach, Fla., special agent in charge, Department of Defense, Defense and Investigative Service.

Alan Gerald Whicher, 40, Oklahoma City, assistant special agent in charge, Secret Service.

Jo Ann Whittenberg, 35, Oklahoma City, program assistant, Housing and Urban Development.

Frances A. Williams, 48, community planning, Housing and Urban Development.

Scott Dwain Williams, 24, Tuttle.

William Stephen Williams, 42, Cashion, operations supervisor, Social Security Administration.

Clarence Eugene Wilson, 49, chief counsel and acting manager, Housing and Urban Development.

Ronota A. Woodbridge, 31, engineer, Federal Highway Administration.

Sharon Louise Wood-Chesnut, 47, Oklahoma City, claims representative, Social Security Administration.

Tresia Worton, 28, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Victims Not Recovered

Christy Rosas, 22, Moore, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Virginia M. Thompson, 56, El Reno, Federal Employees Credit Union.

Presumed Dead

Teresa Alexander, 33, Oklahoma City.

Antonio Ansara Cooper Jr., 6 months, America’s Kids day-care center.

Gabreon DeShawn Lee Bruce, 3 months, Oklahoma City.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Private case files of William C. Roberts, Tulsa Police Department, Ret.

The Oklahoma City Bombing and the Politics of Terror by David Hoffman.

The Third Terrorist by Jayna Davis

The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government by Craig Roberts

Final Report on the Bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building April 19th, 1995 by The Oklahoma Bombing Investigation Committee

Others Unknown: The Oklahoma City Bombing Case and Conspiracy by Stephen Jones with Peter Israel

American Terrorist: Timothy McVeigh and the Oklahoma City Bombing by Lou Michel and Dan Herbeck

Oklahoma City Day One by Michele Marie Moore

The OKC Bombing—The Elohim City Connection by Victor Thorn

Heartland Conspiracy *LA Weekly* newspaper Sept 28 to Oct 4, 2001, pg 23

American Jihad: The Terrorists Living Among Us by Steven Emerson

Gathering Storm: America's Militia Threat by Morris Dees with James Corcoran

The Clinton Chronicles Book by Patrick Matrisciana

Compromised: Bush, Clinton and the CIA by Terry Reed

The Secret Life of Bill Clinton by Ambrose Evans-Pritchard

October Surprise by Barbara Honegger

Profits of War by Ari Ben-Menashe

The McAlvany Intelligence Advisor periodical issue of May/June 1995

The Manila Times

Videos

A Noble lie, video by Free Mind Films.

Oklahoma City: What really happened, anonymous

Oklahoma City Bombing, Dateline special

Coverup in Oklahoma, anonymous

The Bomb, Star End Investigations

Murder in the Heartland, Chuck Harder

Terrorism in America, A&E

OKC Bombing Special: Government foreknowledge, 20/20

Documents

Depositions and Declarations by Terry Nichols and others, courtesy of attorney Jesse Trentadue

Official DEA and FBI reports regarding drug smuggling, Mena, and the bombing

Official reports from Philippine intelligence services

Interviews of Edwin Angeles

Interview of wife of Edwin Angeles

Court documents re: testimony of Carol Howe and Angela Finley

Court records of Samir Khalil

Court records of J.D. Cash

Letter from OCPD chief William Citty

Letter from Juval Aviv of INTERFOR

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Craig Roberts is a retired career law enforcement officer, having served 27 years with the Tulsa Police Department. He is a United States Marine Vietnam veteran, and an investigative journalist and author or co-author over over 20 books and dozens of magazine articles. He also retired from the Army Reserve in 2006 as a lieutenant colonel, Infantry and Intelligence branches, after 30 total years service (US Marines and US Army). He lives with his wife and two dogs in the Ozark hills of northeastern Oklahoma where he teaches civilian, law enforcement, and military firearms courses on his private range. His website is www.riflewarrior.com.

All of his books are available on Amazon, Kindle and your favorite bookstores.

When Tulsa, Oklahoma, police officer Craig Roberts saw the television covereage of the Oklahoma City bombing on the morning of April 19, 1995, little did he realize that he would, at the request of the FBI, be the only Tulsa police officer assigned to the case. Over the following weeks and months Roberts investigated the events, followed leads that led him into very dangerous places, interviewed witnesses, and gathered numerous case files. His investigation, with the help of others, would take him in a totally different direction than what the official government version--accepted by the media--portrayed. Like his previous book "The Medusa File: Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government," Roberts pulls no punches. After more than twenty years he felt it was time to condense four file boxes full of case files into a book so that the truth can finally be told. The American people are owed the truth, and so are the 168 victims who lost their life in this tragic event.

Table of Contents

Acknowledgements

Introduction

Foreword

Chapter 1 Day One 9:02 a.m., April 19th, 1995, Oklahoma City

Chapter 2 Day One—It Becomes Personal

Chapter 3 The Assignment—Why Me?

Chapter 4 Things Don't Add Up

Chapter 5 Never Let A Tragedy Go To Waste 34

Chapter 6 Blaming the "Militia" and the Right Wing

Chapter 7 Elohim City and White Separatists

Chapter 8 Lee Harvey McVeigh: the Comparison of Timothy McVeigh and Lee Harvey Oswald

Chapter 9 Square Pegs in Round Holes: Facts, Lies, and Damage Control

Chapter 10 The Baker Street Irregulars

Chapter 11 The Middle Eastern Connection

Chapter 12 Terry Nichols and the Philippines Connection

Chapter 13 Colombian Drugs, Mexican Bag Men and Mena

Chapter 14 Midwest Bank Robbers—Connection Or Diversion?

Chapter 15 Death in Federal Custody—The Trentadue Case and OKBOMB

Chapter 16 The Strange Death of Sgt. Terry Yeakey, OCPD

Chapter 17 Federal Denial—"Never let the facts stand in the way of a good story—or "good" investigation.

Chapter 18 Sed quit custodian apses custodies? ("Who watches the watchers?")

Chapter 19 The Federal Bureau of Intimidation and the Witnesses

Chapter 20 More Dead Witnesses—The Body Count Grows

Chapter 21 Hoffman Indicted and Sued

Chapter 22 Rabbit Trails and Mind Control—Was McVeigh a Manchurian Candidate?

Chapter 23 Odds, Ends, and Dead Ends

Chapter 24 The Uphill Battle

Chapter 25 Never Let the Truth Stand In The Way

Chapter 26 It All Comes Together

Chapter 27 Where Do We Go From Here?

Epilogue Time To Retire—My Oklahoma City Police Report

List of Victims

Bibliography

The Last Circle

By Carol Marshall

Table of Contents

Editor's note: I have certainly been astounded by the material contained in this "unpolished" manuscript, as I am sure you will. It is quite evident, that all of us, not just investigative journalists, have the capacity and opportunity to write something of value. In this case the pseudonimous Carol Marshall, happens to be a journalist. This document was sent to me by a close friend and confidant who has maintained, as I have discovered, that this unpolished document had been prominent for quite some time on the Web up until late 1996, but has since diappeared. If anyone has info as to its authors whereabouts please let me know. The material contained in this document is extremely volatile, as evidenced by Danny Casolaro's death, and I feel that I may be taking a tremendous risk by publishing this on the Web. I must also, unequivocally ascert my Right as a Human Being, to disseminate anything that I find of inherent value to the community at large.

I must admit that I am not as familiar with the Cabazon/Inslaw/Wackenhut/Casolaro case as I should be, but that does not preclude me from sharing this important information with you. Your input and contributions are encouraged and welcome. I hope you find this significant.

Please read the Introduction first, as it sets the story properly so that the rest will follow logically. If you'd like to help me with brief descriptions of each chapter, I'd love to hear from you. Email me jeff@tomdavisbooks.com.

Thank you and God Bless,

Jeff Davis, September 16, 1997.

- Introduction and Chapter 1
- Chapter 2
- Chapter 3
- Chapter 4
- Chapter 5
- Chapter 6, Part 1

- Chapter 6, Part 2
- Chapter 6, Part 3
- Chapter 6, Part 4
- Chapter 7, Part 1
- Chapter 7, Part 2
- Chapter 8
- Chapter 9, Part 1
- Chapter 9, Part 2
- Chapter 10, Part 1
- Chapter 10, Part 2
- Chapter 11, Part 1
- Chapter 11, Part 2
- Chapter 12, Part 1
- Chapter 12, Part 2
- Chapter 12, Part 3
- Chapter 12, Part 4
- Chapter 13, Part 1
- Chapter 13, Part 2
- Chapter 14
- Chapter 15, Part 1
- Chapter 15, Part 2
- Chapter 15, Part 3-END.

Please report bugs and download problems to Jeff Davis.

This page created by Jeff Davis. Common Law Copyright 1997 by Jeff Davis, All Rights Reserved.

INTRODUCTION

Regarding "The Last Circle"

The following condensed version of The Last Circle was provided in October 1996 to a secret Investigative Committee comprised of Congress people, lawyers and former POW's at their request. I originally contacted Congresswoman Maxine Waters in Washington D.C. and offered information relative to CIA drug trafficking, but was told the information was too complex and would I mind putting the information into a newspaper story, get it published and send it to her office?

I agreed and contacted a local newspaper reporter who, after reading portions of the material, decided it needed to be reviewed by individuals who had special knowledge of CIA drug trafficking, arms shipments, and biological warfare weapons.

After a brief meeting with these individuals, former Special Forces soldiers from the Vietnam era, they asked for copies of the manuscript, guaranteed an immediate congressional inquiry, and advised me NOT to place the information on the Internet as they feared the information could be, in their words, "taken as just another anti-government conspiracy."

I condensed the manuscript into the attached treatise, covering information relative to THEIR focus, and sent it to them along with key documents. Shortly afterward, they re-contacted me and set up elaborate security measures to insure my safety. As of this writing, I've had no need to institute those measures.

I have in my possession five boxes of documents, obtained from a convicted methamphetamine chemist whose closest friends were a 20-year CIA operative and a former FBI Senior-Agent-in-Charge of the Los Angeles and Washington D.C. bureaus. The labyrinthine involvements of these people and their corporate partners is revealed in this manuscript, along with information obtained by Washington D.C. journalist Danny Casolaro prior to his death in 1991.

A great deal of investigation still needs to be accomplished. I have neither the financial means nor the ability to obtain "evidence" for "prosecution." I am simply an investigative writer, placing this information into the public forum in hopes that someone, somewhere, will grasp the significance of the data and initiate a full-scale investigation with subsequent subpoena power.

With subpoena power, government agents can testify (some kept anonymous in this manuscript) who would otherwise lose their jobs and retirement if they came forward. Witnesses can be protected and/or provided immunity, and financial transactions of government and underworld figures can be scrutinized.

To date, I have not had more than one hour conversation with anyone associated with any Congressional investigation, and therefore am extremely limited in my ability to present the information I have. Much of what I learned during my five-year investigation cannot at this point be inserted into a manuscript. I must be assured the information and witnesses will be handled appropriately.

I personally do not believe the Department of Justice will ultimately "prosecute" this or any other drug trafficking case if it involves government officials. But I have made the effort to put forth enough information to generate interest and show good faith. I hope it will be of some value to the American public.

Please keep in mind as you read the attached pages that the complex corporate structures and technological projects described herein "may" have been nothing more than an elaborate smoke and mirrors cover for narcotics trafficking.

This aspect of my investigation was corroborated by several government investigators, one of whom was a House Judiciary investigator, who spent three years investigating the Inslaw stolen software case and said in response to my findings:

"There's some great information here. You did a very good investigative job, I have to commend you on that. I realize it's only a fraction of everything you have. **What you have done, you have put the pieces of the whole thing together.** Little bits and pieces of things that I have known about, that I had theorized about, you have found answers to those specific questions." (See Chapter 13 for entire conversation). That investigator is now in the White House Office of Drug Control Policy.

To those interested, nearly everything noted in the attached manuscript is supported by documents or tape recorded interviews. Some are extremely bulky and not quoted extensively in the manuscript, such as lengthy FBI wire tap summaries. **However, any key documents mentioned in The Last Circle can be obtained by notifying JBC@BITTERROOT.NET. "This E - Mail address is a forwarding service for the author, the service has no information as to the author's physical location. Documents are NOT located at the service address. Document orders will be shipped directly by the author from another location.** Cost of shipping and copying will be returned via E - Mail. Attached to each document is a cover page identifying the significance of the document and its relation to the manuscript. Hard copies of the manuscript can also be ordered.

I wish to thank Garby Leon, formerly Director of Development at Joel Silver Productions, Warner Bros. in Burbank, California for tirelessly prompting me to get a first draft of The Last Circle written in 1994 and helping me with countless tasks during our joint investigation of the death of Danny Casolaro.

THE LAST CIRCLE

Copyright ©1994 - All Rights Reserved

By Carol Marshall

NOTE:

This is a FIRST DRAFT, bare-bones, unpolished manuscript without prose, characterizations etc.

CHAPTER 1

For the deputies of the Mariposa Sheriff's Department, the awakening occurred on June 24, 1980, when deputy Ron Van Meter drowned in an alleged boating accident on Lake McClure. The search party consisted mainly of three divers, deputies Dave Beavers, Rod Cusic and Gary Estep. Although adjacent counties offered additional divers, sheriff Paul Paige refused outside help, even a minisubmarine offered by Beavers' associate.

In the shallow, placid waters of Lake McClure, Van Meter's body was not recovered that week, and indeed would not be found until ten years later, in September, 1990 when his torso, wrapped in a fish net and weighted down by various objects, including a fire extinguisher, washed ashore a few hundred yards from where Sergeant Roderick Sinclair's houseboat had once been moored.

Van Meter's widow, Leslie, had been at home baking cookies when she was notified of her husband's disappearance. She was an Indian girl who had no affinity with sheriff Paul Paige. The horror began for her that day also. Her home was ransacked and her husband's briefcase and diary were seized by the Mariposa Sheriff's department. Only she and a few deputies knew what Van Meter's diary contained. He'd told his wife he'd taken out a special life insurance policy two weeks before, but after the search that was missing also.

Leslie was taken to a psychiatric clinic for evaluation shortly after the incident.The story surfaced years later, one tiny bubble at a time. The selfinvolved little community of Mariposa did not cough up its secrets gladly. On March 23, 1984, Leslie Van Meter filed a Citizen's Complaint with the Mariposa County Sheriff's department alleging that the Sheriff's office had been negligent and unprofessional in their investigation of her husband's disappearance. His body had still not been found, despite private searches by Sergeant Beavers and other friends of the missing deputy. She wanted the case reopened.

Paul Paige was no longer sheriff, but newly elected Sheriff Ken Mattheys responded by reopening the investigation. Investigator Raymond Jenkins, a Merced College Police Chief, and retired FBI agent Tom Walsh from Merced, were notified by Sheriff Mattheys in October, 1984 that the Van Meter case had been reopened and he wanted their help in cleaning up the Sheriff's Department.

Their investigation led them straight to the doorstep of **MCA Corporation (Music Corporation of America), parent company to Curry Company, the largest concessionaire in Yosemite National Park. A major drug network had surfaced in the park, compelling one park ranger, Paul Berkowitz, to go before the House Interior Subcommittee on National Parks and Recreation to**

testify about drug distribution by Curry Company officials.

Ed Hardy, the president of Curry Company, was closely associated with Mariposa County officials, in particular, Mariposa District Attorney Bruce Eckerson, County Assessor Steve Dunbar, and Congressman **Tony Coelho,** whose district encompassed Mariposa and the Park. The annual camping trips that the three men took together was encouraged by the local townsfolk because most of Mariposa's tax base emanated from Curry Company.Coelho and Hardy were regular fixtures around town, seen at most of the social events. Coelho even cooked and served spaghetti dinners for the whole town annually at the Mariposa Fair Grounds, and purchased property in partnership with one member of the Mariposa Board of Supervisors. In fact, Mariposa was one of the first places he bid farewell to after resigning from Congress to avoid an investigation of his finances.

Meanwhile, investigator Raymond Jenkins had followed **the drug trail from Yosemite back to the Mariposa airport, where sheriff's deputies were seen regularly loading and unloading packages from planes in the dead of night.**

One Indian girl complained bitterly about **deputies using the Sara Priest land allottment (reservation) to grow marijuana and operate methamphetamine labs.** Jenkins, by now retired from the position of Police Chief of Merced College, was called in to interview the Indian girl. That same day, as a favor, he provided me with copies of his notes. I followed up with a tape recorded interview at her home in Bear valley. Her father and uncle operated a small auto dismantling business on the reservation in Midpines, and after locating them and gaining their confidence, the uncle drove me out to **Whiskey Flats, the site of the marijuana and methamphetamine lab operations.** That week I rented a horse and rode down into the rocky, isolated valley of Whiskey Flats. Brush and shrubbery tore at the saddle on the horse and at the end of the dirt path I encountered three snarling Rottweiler dogs who put the horse into a frenzied lather.

Nevertheless, I managed to photograph the irrigation system, artesian spring and pond from which the water was supplied as well as various points of identification for future reconnaisance. I later returned in a fourwheel drive pickup truck and managed to view the trailer and lab shack.

The tape recorded interview with the Indian girl, the photos and notes from my discovery were provided to the Stanislaus County Drug Task Force, but jurisdictionally, they couldn't enter Mariposa County without authority of the Mariposa Sheriff's department. It was a catch 22 situation. Ultimately I provided the same information anonymously to several related agencies. It was not until 1993 that the fields were eradicated, and 1994, before the labs were raided. However, **no arrests of any deputies were ever forthcoming. In fact, no arrests occurred at all, except for a few nonEnglish speaking Mexican nationals who had handled the "cooking."** The head of the Los Angeles Drug Enforcement Agency noted to a local newspaper that **the meth lab was part of a large California drug network, but they were unable to identify the kingpins.**

On July 6, 1985, Mrs. Van Meter filed a "Request for Official Inquiry" with the State of California

Department of Boating and Waterways stating that no satisfactory investigation was ever conducted into the matter of her husband's disappearance.

That same month, shortly after a meeting at Lake McClure with Mrs. Van Meter, Sheriff Mattheys mysteriously resigned from his position at the Mariposa Sheriff's Department. Mattheys revealed to reporter Anthony Pirushki that he had been ordered by two county supervisors and the county's attorney "to stay away from the Van Meter investigation." But that was not the reason he resigned. The whole story would not surface until seven years later when a reporter for the Mariposa Guide interviewed him.

However, while still in office, Mattheys and his internal affairs investigators had learned the reason for Van Meter's disappearance. A few weeks prior to his death in 1980, Van Meter had driven to the Attorney General's office in Sacramento and reported **drug dealing** and other types of corruption within the Mariposa Sheriff's Department. This, according to his friends whom he had confided in, deputies Dave Beavers, a fifteen year veteran of the sheriff's department, and Rod Cusic, a seventeen year veteran. Both deputies were ultimately forced out of the department and retired on stress leave.

On that same day, reserve deputy Lucky Jordan had driven to the Fresno office of the FBI to report similar information. According to Jordan, they had split up and reported to separate agencies in the event "something" happened to one of them.The crux of the story was State Attorney General Van De Kamp's response to the requested investigaion by Ron Van Meter. When Ron returned home from Sacramento, he was confronted by Sheriff Paige. **Paige had received a call from the Attorney General informing him of the visit** and its contents, and the sheriff was livid about Van Meter's betrayal.**Van Meter had been photographing and journalizing drug activity by deputies at Lake McClure.** He was part of a California State Abatement Program which involved harvesting and eradicating marijuana fields in Yosemite National Park and adjacent counties. Instead, the harvested marijuana was being stored in abandoned cars and towed out of town by a local wrecker under contract with the sheriff's department. It was also being distributed at a hidden cove at Lake McClure.

On June 24, 1980, frustrated and angry at the Attorney General for betraying him, Van Meter had borrowed a boat and was on his way to arrest the deputies at Lake McClure himself. He never returned. The investigation of Van Meter's "accident" was initially handled by Sergeant Roderick Sinclair, who could not have known on that fateful day that in exactly three years, three months, and nineteen days, he would enter the Twilight Zone where his own private hell awaited him.

******

The first substantial hint that a tentacle of the Octopus had slithered into Mariposa County occurred on March 5, 1983 when a Mariposa County Sheriff's vehicle scouting Queen Elizabeth II's motorcade route rounded a curve in the Yosemite National Park foothills, crossed a highway and collided headon with a Secret Service car, killing three Secret Service agents. CHP (California Highway Patrol) Assistant Chief Richard Hanna reported that the collision occurred at 10:50 a.m. between Coulterville and La Grange on Highway 132 about 25 minutes ahead of Queen Elizabeth's motorcade.CHP Sergeant Bob Schilly reported that Mariposa County Sheriff's Sergeant Roderick Sinclair, 43, was driving with his partner, Deputy Rod McKean, 51, when "for some reason, [he didn't] know why," Sinclair crossed the center line and hit the second of the three Secret Service cars, which went tumbling down a 10foot embankment.

The three Secret Service agents killed in the collision were identified as George P. LaBarge, 41, Donald Robinson, 38, and Donald A. Bejcek, 29. Sinclair, who had sustained broken ribs and a fractured knee, was first stabilized at Fremont Hospital in Mariposa, then transported several days later to Modesto Memorial Hospital.

Years later, several nurses who had been present when Sinclair was brought into Fremont Hospital confided that Sinclair had been drugged on the day of "the Queen's accident" as it became known in Mariposa. For months Sinclair had been receiving huge daily shots of Demerol, "enough to kill most men," according to one billing clerk. Some former deputies who had feared punitive measures if they spoke up, later corroborated the story of the nurses.

Meanwhile, Assistant U.S. Attorney James White in Fresno ordered Dr. Arthur Dahlem's files seized to prove Sinclair's drug addiction. Sinclair's Mariposa doctor and close friend had been prescribing heavy sedatives to him for years. When White attempted to prosecute Sinclair for criminal negligence, he was called into chambers during the federal probe and told by U.S. District Court Judge Robert E. Coyle to "drop the criminal investigation" because Sinclair's drug problem was not relevant to the prosecution and the drug records could not be used in court. Judge Coyle's reasoning was that no blood tests had been taken on Sinclair at the Fremont Hospital on the day of the accident, therefore no case could be made against him.

In fact, the blood tests HAD been taken, but later disappeared.A significant piece of information relative to Judge Coyle's background was passed to me during my investigation of the Queen's accident by retired FBI agent Thomas Walsh. Allegedly, the Judge was once the attorney of record for Curry Company (owned by MCA Corporation) in Yosemite National Park. I later learned, in 1992, that Robert Booth Nichols had strong ties to MCA Corporation through Eugene Giaquinto, president of MCA Corporation Home Entertainment Division. Giaquinto had been on the Board of Directors of Nichols' corporation, MIL, Inc. (Meridian International Logistics, Inc.) and also held 10,000 shares of stock in the holding corporation. MIL, Inc. was later investigated by the Los Angeles FBI for allegedly passing classified secrets to overseas affiliates in Japan and Australia. It is interesting to note, though unrelated, that shortly afterward, the Japanese purchased MCA Corporation, one of the largest corporate purchases to take place in American history.

Relative to the Queens accident, in the civil trial that followed the tragic accident, Judge Coyle ruled that both Sinclair and the deceased Secret Service agents were at fault. Mariposa County was ordered to pay 70 percent of the claim filed by the widows, and the Secret Service to pay 30 percent. The county's insurance company paid the claim, and ironically, Sinclair was subsequently promoted to Commander of the Mariposa Sheriff's Department where he is still employed as of this writing.

In an interview on March 7, 1988, at Yoshino's Restaurant in Fresno, former U.S. Attorney James White recalled that the original CHP report on the Queens accident was sent to the State Attorney General's office (Van De Kamp) in Sacramento. The report was first received by Arnold Overoye, who agreed with White that Sinclair should be prosecuted. But when the report crossed Van De Kamp's desk, he told Overoye and his assistant to discard it trash it.

Van De Kamp then appointed Bruce Eckerson, the Mariposa County District Attorney, to take charge of the investigation and submit a new report. Coincidentally, Bruce Eckerson's disclosure statements on file at the Mariposa County Courthouse indicated that he owned stock in MCA Entertainment Corporation. White added that ALL of the crack M.A.I.T.S. team CHP officers involved in the original investigation either resigned or were transferred (or fired) afterward. The CHP Commander and the Deputy Commander who supervised the M.A.I.T.S. investigation also resigned as did Assistant U.S. Attorney White himself after the coverup took place.

However, White noted that before he resigned, he quietly filed with Stephan LaPalm of the U.S. Attorney's office in Sacramento the transcripts of the trial and an affidavit which listed the "hallucinatory" drugs Sinclair had used prior to the accident. I privately continued with the Queen's accident investigation, interviewing deputies Dave Beavers and Rod Cusic who had been privy to Sinclair's drugged condition on the day of the accident.

Beavers, who was the first deputy to arrive on the scene, maintained four years later, in 1987, that he was cognizant of Sinclair's condition, but when he was questioned by James White he was NOT ASKED about the drugs. (James White had by then been ordered to drop the criminal investigation and stay away from the drug aspect of the case).

In January 1988, deputy Rod Cusic strode into the offices of the Mariposa Guide, a competitor newspaper to the Mariposa Gazette, and stated that he was "told by Rod Sinclair to lie to a Grand Jury" about Sinclair's drug addiction and the resulting Queen's accident. Cusic added that he officially disclosed this to the Fresno FBI on April 26, 1984 and again on October 9, 1987. In 1987, Cusic also noted that he witnessed a boobytrapped incendiary device explode at Rod Sinclair's home during a visit to his residence. Additionally, earlier on, Sinclair allegedly barricaded himself inside his home and boobytrapped the property, as witnessed by numerous deputies who tried to persuade him to come out.

While reviewing old newspaper clippings from the Mariposa Gazette, I discovered an odd sidebar to the story. In December, 1984, during the Queen's accident civil trial in Fresno, U.S. Attorney James White had introduced testimony that Sinclair's vehicle contained "a myriad of automatic weapons including a boobytrapped bomb" when the collision occurred on March 5, 1983. It was not until 1991 that I discovered the depth of the coverup.

A CBS television executive and a Secret Service agent who had ridden in the third car of the Queen's motorcade in 1983, arrived in Mariposa to enlist my help in putting the pieces of the puzzle together on the Queen's accident. The Secret Service agent's best friend had been the driver of the car in which all three agents were killed. I signed a contract with the television executive for the sale of the story then drove them to the site of the accident, then to the site of where the damaged vehicle was stored near Lake McClure. The Secret Service agent broke down at the sight of the vehicle, remembering the gruesome appearance of his dead friend in the front seat. He turned, tears welling in his eyes, and said, "His heart burst right through his chest and was laying in his lap when I found him."

Dave Beavers joined us the next day. As did former sheriff Ken Mattheys. Beavers did not know that the same Secret Service agent whom he was sitting with in the car was the man who had tried to pull Sinclair out of the sheriff's vehicle on the day of the accident. There had been a scuffle, Beavers insisting that Sinclair go to the hospital with "his own people," and the Secret Service ultimately conceding.The Secret Service agent reflected sadly that they didn't know to ask the hospital for blood tests on Sinclair that day, didn't know of his drug addiction. By the time the case went to court, the records at the hospital were gone.

Two weeks after the agent left Mariposa, I received a packet containing copies of Sinclair's drug records for three years prior to the accident. They were the same records that U.S. District Court Judge Robert Coyle had disallowed in the Queen's accident trial. But it was not until producer Don Thrasher, a tenyear veteran of ABC News "20/20," came to town, that I learned of Sinclair's background, or the extent of his addiction.

By chance, at a book signing engagement at B. Dalton Bookstore, I had mentioned to the manager, Shaula Brent, that my next book contained information about the Queens accident.Surprised, Shaula blurted out that she had worked at Fremont Hospital when Sinclair was brought in from the accident. Shaula recounted the following: Rod Sinclair was brought into Fremont Hospital and placed in a room with an armed "FBI" agent outside the door. Sinclair had been receiving huge shots of Demerol in the arm every day prior to the accident, by order of Dr. Arthur Dahlem. Shaula noted that Sinclair was a big man and the amount of Demerol he had been receiving would have killed most men. After the Queen's accident, all drugs were withdrawn from Sinclair, and employees, including Shaula, could hear him raving aloud for days from his hospital room. The employees at the hospital were instructed not to speak about or repeat what took place at the hospital while Sinclair was there.

Because Shaula and her friend, Barbara Locke, who also worked at the hospital, were suspicious about Sinclair's hospital records, they secretly took photostats of the records "before they were destroyed by the hospital." Blood HAD been drawn on Sinclair on the day of the Queen's accident, and he HAD been under the influence, according to Shaula. Shaula gave the names of six nurses who were witness to Sinclair's condition at the time he was brought into Fremont Hospital. When his body was finally drugfree, Sinclair was transported, against his wishes, to Modesto Hospital.

******

In January, 1992, the final pieces to the puzzle fell into place. **Sinclair's background had been the key all along.** Producer Don Thrasher had interviewed the Secret Service agent and, although the information he obtained would not be used in his production, he advised me to follow up. The Secret Service corraborated the following profile: **Sinclair's father had been a military attache to General Douglas MacArthur during World War II.** (I had privately mused how many of MacArthur's men later became arms of the Octopus). **In Japan, after the war, Colonel Sinclair (sr.) supervised the training of selected Japanese in intelligence gathering operations.**

According to the Secret Service, **he was an "international figure," highly regarded in the intelligence community.** Rod Sinclair, Jr. attended school in Japan during this time. He later reportedly worked in the Army C.I.D. **in a nonmilitary or civilian capacity, allegedly receiving training at Fort Liggett in San Luis Obispo, a training center for military intelligence operations.**

Could it have been possible for Colonel Sinclair, Sr. to have called upon old friends in high places to rescue his son, Rod, from the Queen's accident investigation? Did the Octopus have enough power to alter an investigation of the death of three Secret Service agents? **According to the Secret Service agent in Los Angeles, it did. And he intended to tell the story after he retired.**

| Chapter 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 2

By this time three consecutive grand jury foreman's had sought help from the Attorney General, to no avail. It came to pass that one of the deputies, Dave Beavers, was having trouble obtaining his "stress leave" pay and hired a Jackson, California lawyer to represent him in the case. The lawyer, Ben Wagner, not only interviewed Beavers, but began interviewing other deputies who corroborated Beavers' story. Most of them, thirteen in all, had at one time or another testified before the grand jury and subsequently been forced out of the department. Interestingly, none of the deputies knew "why" the others had been been placed on stress leave or resigned until Wagner finally assembled them together and the story was aired.

At that point some of the former grand jury members were called in to confirm the testimony of the individual deputies. Most refused to speak up, but a few corroborated the deputies' story. Ultimately, after numerous meetings, the group of deputies and grand jurors formed and later incorporated an organization they called D.I.G. (Decency in Government).

By now, Wagner was carrying a gun inside and out of Mariposa for the first time in his life and writing letters to the Attorney General, the FBI, and even President Ronald Reagan. One response was forthcoming, from a special agent at the Fresno Department of Justice, Division of Law Enforcement. This agent listened to Kay Ritter, a former grand jury foreman and several deputies after reviewing Wagner's evidence.

Wagner was contemplating a huge civil rights lawsuit against the county of Mariposa, but it was imperative that he first understand "why" the attorney general refused to help these people.When the special agent drove to Sacramento and reviewed the files within the attorney general's office emanating from Mariposa, and talked to some of the office staff there, he learned that everything pertaining to Mariposa was automatically "trashed" when it crossed the A/G's desk.

Disgusted, the agent called Ben Wagner and told him "Go ahead with the lawsuit." He had no idea why all the grand jury documents had been trashed, but he was convinced no help would be forthcoming from the attorney general's office.

On November 20, 1987, Wagner filed with the U.S. District Court in Fresno the first of two lawsuits, later revealed in a Sacramento newspaper to be the largest civil rights lawsuits ever recorded in California history. Newspaper reporters and television crews flocked to Wagner for interviews. In one instance, Wagner, former Sergeant Dave Beavers and others stood in front of the Fresno FBI building while being interviewed by Channel 3 Sacramento News.

On camera, without hesitation, Beavers recalled **observing deputies carrying packages of drugs** from the Gold Coin Saloon, a notorious drug hangout, and placing the packages in the trunk of their patrol car. A subsequent raid indicated the drugs had been stored by the owner in a historic underground tunnel once used by the infamous bandit, Juaquin Murietta, to escape the sheriff's posse.

Meanwhile, on February 10, 1988, attorney Wagner filed at the U.S. District Court in Sacramento a Writ of Mandamus against John Van De Camp, the State Attorney General; George Vinson, regional director of the Fresno FBI; George Deukemejian, then Governor of California, and David F. Levi, United States Attorney for refusing to investigate corruption in Mariposa County.

The citizens of Mariposa were choosing sides, writing letters to the editor, arguing amongst themselves, and being interviewed on the sidewalks by news media. D.I.G. was the talk of the town. On February 17, 1988, Capitol News Service in Sacramento ran a story entitled, "Law & Order Failing on Hill County," by Jerry Goldberg. The article noted that Capitol News Service had had discussions with several Attorney General staff members who "stonewalled questions about any investigation of charges or direct answers on the willingness of Van de Kamp to meet with the citizen's group [D.I.G.]."

Goldberg mentioned the "Queen's accident" in his article: "The Fresno case charges destruction of records on individuals [Commander Rod Sinclair] involved in the case. This includes possible information about the fatal accident which occurred in the area [of Mariposa County] when an escort vehicle involved in the visit of Queen Elizabeth in 1983 [crashed.]"

Goldberg went on to note that "several people had received threats about dangerous things happening to them if they continued to stand up to the sheriff and district attorney." A San Joaquin County official, who asked not to be named, told Goldberg that a key element to the problems in Mariposa County "related to the fatal accident which occurred to Queen Elizabeth's escort vehicle."

On February 19, 1988, Ben Wagner's wife, a legal secretary, sent a letter to President Ronald Reagan at the White House. The Wagners did not live in Mariposa County, indeed, lived far away in Jackson County, unfettered by corruption, yet they saw fit to take it upon themselves to write for help. That emotionally gripping letter was headed, "Restoring Equal Rights to the Citizens of Mariposa County." It read as follows:

"Dear **President Reagan:** I am writing to you not only as the wife of an attorney, but as a citizen of the United States. My initial concern is that you personally receive this letter and enclosures, as many residents of Mariposa County have literally placed their lives, and the lives of their families in jeopardy by coming forth to expose the local government corruption detailed herein.I understand that your time is at a premium, however, your immediate attention regarding these matters is of the utmost importance, and respectfully requested.

"In August, 1987, our office was approached by several exdeputies and individuals from Mariposa County requesting assistance in redressing unlawful and corrupt activities by officials and departments within their local government, and failure on the part of the State Attorney General John Van De Kamp, the Office of the Attorney General, and our Federal agencies, to investigate these alleged activities.

"What we found through our initial investigations and accumulation of evidence into these allegations was appalling. It took us time to realize that in fact, the Constitution of the United States had been suspended in this county.

"The organization, Decency in Government [D.I.G.], was formed, and on November 20, 1987, the first multimillion dollar Civil Rights suit was filed in Fresno. We felt media coverage would lay a solid ground of personal safety for other complaintants to come forth. This coverage proved to be successful, and on February 11, 1988, the second Civil Rights suit was filed, along with the filing of a Writ of Mandamus in Sacramento.

"I have enclosed copies of these suits, including several newspaper articles regarding the situation. Since 1979, many residents, including individuals, sheriff's deputies, groups, organizations, members of Grand Juries and Grand Juries have taken their complaints to the Office of the Attorney General, State Attorney General John Van De Kamp and Federal authorities for investigation.

"These agencies have continuously and blatantly failed to redress the grievances of these citizens. What appears to be a consistent procedure of one Arnold O. Overoye, of the State Attorney General's Office, is to refer the complaints directly back to the local agencies to whom the complaints were made.

"Over the years, this has perpetrated threats, intimidation and fear by these local officials to the complaining individuals. There has also been questions regarding the disappearance of citizens possessing incriminating evidence, and the incompletion or failure to investigate `homicides' and `suicides'.

"Further, it has recently come to our attention, that Mr. Overoye's `procedure,' and the inaction of State Attorney John Van De Camp and Federal agencies is not limited to Mariposa County, but in fact, **expands to a number of foothill counties** who are experiencing the same types of local corruption.

"The grievances of these citizens, as you will note in paragraph IV of the WRIT are: (1) Violation of Individual Civil Rights (2) Abuse of discretion in the prosecution of criminal complaints (3) Intentional obstruction of the due course of Justice (4) Malicious prosecution (5) Bribery (6) Intimidation of Grand Jury members and witnesses (7) The deprivation of property (8) Illegal and unlawful land transaction (9) **The failure to arrest and prosecute those involved in illegal drug sales, including individuals employed by the County of Mariposa (10) Violation of Property Rights (11) Conspiracy to impede and obstruct criminal investigations (12) Homicide (13) Attempted homicide (14) Rape (15) Battery (16) Perjury.**

"Why Mr. President, are we bound to the laws of this country, and our officials are not? Life in Mariposa is as if the citizens were being held in detention, and the local agencies, the criminals, were running the county.

"Needless to say, residents feel it is a way of life to literally arm themselves and their homes against their government! I have been in these people's homes, and have witnessed the arsenal of weapons they feel they must possess to protect themselves and their families.

"My husband must travel in, around and out of this county [Mariposa] with an armed escort. He is transported during `the midnight hours' to interview Plaintiffs and witnesses.

"I ask you, Mr. President, what country are we living in? We should certainly make sure that our backyard is clean before we boast to the Soviets regarding the Civil Rights of Americans.

"On January 19, 1988, my husband took two witnesses, Kay Ritter, a former Mariposa Grand Jury Forewoman and Robert Ashmore, an exdeputy, to Mr. [George] Vinson, the Regional Director of the FBI in Fresno. The testimony, both oral and documentary, took approximately 3 hours to present. To this date, the FBI has failed to redress the grievances of these complaintants, and Mr. Vinson did not even have the courtesy to return my husband's phone calls. It came to our understanding, through a reliable source, that Mr. Vinson felt the complaints had `no substance.'

"Mr. President, my husband has been a trial attorney for 14 years. He certainly wouldn't waste his time or expertise, or the time of these witnesses, if he felt there was `no substance' to the contents of their testimony.However, this attitude by Attorney General Van De Camp, his office, and Federal agencies is typical and consistent.

"Shortly after this incident, **a major drug dealer contacted our office with valuable information detailing the sale of illegal drugs to county officials,** and wanted information regarding the Federal Witness Program. Mr. Vinson, knowing this by telephone messages, again failed to return my husband's inquiries.

"There is evidence by another credible witness, who was informed by the FBI, that should they get involved now, it would be `bad publicity,' and `they have let the problems in Mariposa get too far out of hand.'

"You may wonder why my husband and I became dedicated to the citizens of this county. We certainly don't foresee large amounts of money at the end of this case. Our investment in time and expenditures exceeds $40,000 to date.What we do see are people, just like you and I, who have been suppressed by their own `elected ' officials, with no help or assistance from Attorney General Van De Kamp, his office, or Federal agencies. If someone doesn't help them, they will continue to live under these conditions, which I could never imagine would exist in America.

"My husband is not a righteous individual, nor is he perfect. None of us are you know. He also doesn't believe that he can solve the problems of the world. However, being an attorney, he is an officer of the Court, and he feels a professional obligation to uphold the laws of the State, and to maintain the freedom of the citizens of this country.

"This is, however, more than I can say about a number of `representatives' and officials, who have failed to perform their appointed duties of their office, and are paid by the taxpayers.Through my involvement in this case, I have found, to my repulsion, that my lifelong conception of our government's representation of the `people,' its vested authority and ability to uphold Civil Rights, and its duty to maintain the laws and the Constitution, has been only an shattering illusion.

"Our system has failed, Mr. President. And by its failure, has crushed and destroyed the lives of many innocent, lawabiding people. Why? There is an answer. And we will utilize every legal avenue to find it. We will not be discouraged, or give up in our effort to restore the Constitution of the United States in Mariposa County, and other foothill communities. We will continue until the answer is found. Even if it means presenting the problem to you, Mr. President, on the steps of the White House.

"Our best regards to Mrs. Reagan. Respectfully yours, Vivian L. Wagner."

******

Shortly before Ben Wagner's first scheduled appearance in U.S. District Court in Fresno on behalf of D.I. G. (Decency in Government), Wagner received an obscure response from **"Chuck" at the Reagan White House.** Wagner excitedly called Kay Ritter and Dave Beavers, myself and a few others to note that a meeting with "Chuck" was scheduled that week. It was to be a somewhat secret meeting as requested by the White House.

However, the day after meeting with "Chuck," Wagner unplugged his phone and walked out on his law practice and his home in Jackson, California, taking nothing with him except his clothes and his wife, never to be seen again. I was later told that Jerry Goldberg of Capitol News Service did the same, on the same day, and I was never able to locate either of them again.

Chapter 3 | Chapter 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 3

The last remnants of the D.I.G. group were beginning to call themselves "The Loser's Club," resembling forlorn characters out of a Stephen King novel. They had squared off against a labyrnthine evil so incomprehensible, they didn't know what they were fighting. It was time to bring in some outside help.

During a strategy meeting in Jackson, California, Ben Wagner had received an impressive 700 page report commissioned by the Tulare City Council. The report, compiled by Ted Gunderson, a former Los Angeles FBI agent, was indepth and straightforward about deputies receiving payoffs and distributing drugs in the small farmtown of Tulare. Wagner had given me a copy for my files.

On an impulse, I picked up the phone and called Gunderson's telephone number listed at the top of the attached resume. The resume was impressive. He'd worked as SAC (Senior Special Agent in Charge) at Los Angeles FBI headquarters, Washington D.C. headquarters and in Dallas, Texas. It would be two years before I would grasp the significance of the Dallas connection. After retiring from the FBI, he'd worked for F. Lee Baily, Esq., then formed his own investigative agency in Los Angeles county.

I left a message with the answering service and he returned the call a few days later. His voice was open, attentive, devoid of the bureaucratic hollowness I had come to expect from FBI agents. We talked briefly, mostly about the problem DIG was experiencing in Mariposa. I said I needed help, anticipating his next question. But none came forth. Instead, a clipped knowingness entered his tone, as if nothing more should be said on the phone. He agreed to meet with me at his home a few weeks later and we hung up.

Unknown to me at the time, I had taken a quantum leap in the direction of the Octopus when I contacted Ted Gunderson. The mystery of the Mariposa coverups would soon be divulged through an associate of his, a former member of "The Company" in nearby Fresno, California.

******

On November 30, 1991, Ted Gunderson opened the door at his Manhattan Beach home and ushered us into a small living room cluttered with toys. He made no explanation for the toys scattered around the floor and the couch, but offered coffee and donuts, then proceeded to eat most of the donuts himself. I had expected someone dripping with intrigue, instead he was classic in the sense of an investigator; rumpled shirt and slacks, nervous movements, distracted behavior. We sat on the couch bunched together amongst the toys. Gunderson pulled a kitchen chair up in front of us, leaned over and began stuffing his mouth with cheese and crackers, all the while talking, his body in perpetual motion. He was a big, handsome man with an aging face and tossled silver hair. He seemed entirely unaware of his appearance or the appearnce of his home, but his pale eyes were intelligent and probing. Intuitively, I knew he was more than he appeared to be.

A young woman, perhaps early thirties, entered the room brushing long blond hair, still wet from the shower. Her faded jeans and sundrenched appearance reminded me of friends I'd known growing up in Newport Beach. Gunderson introduced her as his "partner," as she seated herself silently on the floor next to him. The flush on her face brought a fleeting prescience to me that they had been making love shortly before the meeting.

Ray Jenkins recounted the Mariposa story for several hours, with the rest of us digressing to insert a fact here or there. The investigation had led beyond Mariposa into MCA Corporation, and various State and Federal levels of government. I noted that Danny Casolaro's research had started at the eastern end, in Washington D.C., yet he had been preparing to travel to California for the rest of the story, **before his death three months earlier.**

Gunderson listened carefully, occasionally interrupting to ask questions, then motioned us to follow him to the backyard. There we stood in a circle in the middle of his yard while he surveyed the area. Satisfied that he was not being watched, he agreed to come to Mariposa, with media, and perform a citizens arrest on the corrupt officials. He pulled a frazzled piece of paper from his pocket and gave me a list of telephone numbers to write down. They were numbers to telephone booths at various locations in the vicinity of his home. Each booth had been coded 1,2,3,4, or 5. He instructed that the next time I called him, he would give me the code number of the booth and a time to call. I would then call him at the designated booth.

Eight hours later, I handed him a copy of my first book, as a courtesy, then left Manhattan Beach loaded with newspaper clippings and documents, mostly relating to Casolaro's investigation of the Octopus. One packet was titled, "The Wonderful Weapons of Wackenhut," others related to the Inslaw affair, Iran/Contra and various savings and loan scandals.

In the van, reviewing the documents, I wondered what relationship they had to Mariposa County and why I was given the packet. The documents were far ranging, beyond anything I had heretofore imagined. But within days of my visit to Gunderson, I would be introduced to the Octopus.

******

The following morning, at 7:30 a.m., I received a collect call from a man who identified himself as Michael Riconosciuto (pronounced Riconoshooto). Riconosciuto, calling from the Pierce County jail in Tacoma, Washington, said he had been informed by Gunderson that I was investigating a corruption/drug ring in Mariposa County. **For 45 minutes Riconosciuto related the names of those in charge of methamphetamine operations in Mariposa, Madera and Fresno counties.**

A ton of methamphetamine had been seized in the area of my investigations, according to Riconosciuto. **Richard Knozzi was a high level "cooker" and Jim DeSilva, Ben Kalka, and others were medium level distributors or lieutenants.** Kalka was currently serving time in a Pleasanton prison; 900 pounds of methamphetamine had been seized under his control.

"Who's behind this ring?" I asked. Riconosciuto paused for a moment, then took a deep breath. **"It's The Company. Arms get shipped to the Contras, the Afghanistan rebels [Mujahaden], the Middle East.** You know, to fight the Soviet influence. **But the Contras and the Mujahaden don't have money to pay for arms, so they pay with drugs, cocaine or heroin. The Company handles the drug end of it in the U.S ..."**

"What's The Company ...?," I asked. Riconosciuto interrupted, "Wait a minute. It's a long story. You have to start at the beginning." Concerned that Riconosciuto might have to hang up, I hurriedly pushed for answers. "Arms for drugs, do you have proof?"

"Oh, yeah. It's a selfsupporting system, they don't have to go through Congress ..."

"Michael," I pressed, "who ships the arms?" Riconosciuto quieted for a moment, gathering his thoughts. "Let's start with Wackenhut. I didn't play ball with Wackenhut so they poisoned the well for me. I'm in jail because I worked for Wackenhut. The government has put together a very simple drug case against me ... as if that's what I'm about, just a druggie."

"Tell me about Wackenhut."

"It's a security corporation headquartered in Coral Gables, Florida. Wackenhut provides security for the Nevada nuclear test site, the Alaskan pipeline, Lawrence Livermore Labs, you know, all the high security government facilities in the U.S. They have about fifty thousand armed security guards that work for minimum wage or slightly above.

"On the other hand, on the Wackenhut board of directors, they have all the former heads of every government agency there ever was under Ronald Reagan and George Bush; FBI, CIA, NSA, Secret Service, etc.

"You know, they've got retired Admiral Stansfield Turner, a former CIA director; Clarence Kelley, former FBI director; Frank Carlucci, former CIA deputy director; James Rowley, former Secret Service director; Admiral Bobby Ray Inman, former acting chairman of President Bush's foreign intelligence advisory board and former CIA deputy director. Before his appointment as Reagan's CIA director, the late William Casey was Wackenhut's outside legal counsel ..."

I interrupted him, wanting to know where HE fit into the picture?

"Well, I served as Director of Research for the Wackenhut facility at the Cabazon Indian reservation in Indio, California. In 198384 I modified the PROMISE computer software to be used in law enforcement and intelligence agencies worldwide. A man named Earl Brian was spearheading a plan for worldwide use of the software, but essentially, the modified software was being pirated from the owners, Bill and

Nancy Hamilton."

I asked, "So how did that cause your arrest?" Michael was articulate, but his story was becoming complicated. He continued. "I signed an affidavit for the Hamiltons stating that I had been responsible for the modification. The House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw was investigating the theft of the software and I was afraid I would be implicated since I had performed the modification. Nine days later, in an attempt to discredit my testimony, I was arrested for allegedly operating a drug lab."

I didn't want to push Riconosciuto on the subject of a drug lab at that point, but voiced my foremost concern. "Will the House Judiciary Committee be bringing you in to testify?"

"Eventually, yes."

"Are you in any danger where you are right now?" I was unaware at the time that Riconosciuto had been recruited at Stanford University into the CIA nearly twenty years earlier, and danger was a matter of fact in his life.

"Oh, you bet! Several of the jail guards here moonlight for Wackenhut here in Tacoma." Riconosciuto went on to discuss the Wackenhut setup. "Basically, what you have is a group of politically well connected people through Wackenhut who wanted to get juicy defense contracts when Ronald Reagan got elected president. And they did! They also preyed on high tech start up companies, many of them out of Silicon Valley in California.

"They saw technology that they wanted and they either forced the companies into bankruptcy or waited on the sidelines, like vultures, and picked them up for pennies after they were bankrupt."

I made profuse notes as Riconosciuto spoke, not knowing where he was leading, but assuming his narrative would eventually intersect with **my investigation of government sanctioned drug operations.** Finally it did. According to Riconosciuto, **Wackenhut Corporation "made inroads" into the methamphetamine operation. A man named Richard Knozzi allegedly headed major government sanctioned meth laboratories in Fresno, Madera and Mariposa counties. A man named Al Holbert, a former Israeli intelligence officer with U.S. citizenship, was the liaison or connection between the Knozzi operation and the U.S. government.**

In subsequent documents obtained from Michael's secret hiding place in the California desert, I located documents which indicated Michael had first been recruited into the CIA by Al Holbert. However, during this first of many phone conversations with Riconosciuto, I found myself searching for a beginning, something concrete to get a foothold. "Michael, is there any proof that you worked at Wackenhut?"

Michael responded diffidently. "CNN recently ran a piece, and they filmed a location shot from the parking lot of the casino. Then they aired another location shot on the [Cabazon] reservation of just an expanse of bare land, blue sky, sand and sagebrush. Then the narrator says, `Here on the Indian reservation is where Michael Riconosciuto claims to have modified the PROMISE software.' They didn't show the tribal office complex, they didn't show the industrial park. They showed a bare expanse of land, like I had a computer out in a teepee in the middle of the desert! The government is doing a character assassination on me. I'm fair game now that I'm in jail, because I've raised too many provocative questions, you know, and they're trying to relegate me to the area of delusion ..."

******

For three months Riconosciuto called daily from the Pierce County jail in Tacoma, Washington. At his request, I attached a tape recorder to my phone and unraveled a complicated web of illegal overseas arms shipments, espionage, CIA drug trafficking, biological warfare development, computer software theft, money laundering and corruption at the highest levels of government.

Throughout this time span, I also obtained every newspaper and magazine article I could lay my hands on relative to Riconosciuto's background and contacts. Riconosciuto had been communicating regularly with journalist Danny Casolaro prior to his death on August 10, 1991 when Danny's nude body was found in the bathtub of room 517 of the Sheraton Hotel in Martinsburg, West Virginia. His wrists had been slashed ten or twelve times. No papers were found in his hotel room or in his car, though he was known to cart a briefcase and files everywhere he went. An XActo blade found in the bathtub was not sold locally and his briefcase is still missing to this day.Casolaro was working on a book entitled, "Behold a Pale Horse," which encompassed the October Surprise story, the Inslaw computer software case, the Iran/Contra affair, the B.C.C.I. scandal, and M.C.A. entertainment corporation, all overlapping and interconnecting into one network which he dubbed, "The Octopus."

He told friends that he "had traced the Inslaw and related stories back to **a dirty CIA `Old Boy' network"** that had begun working together in the 1950's around the Albania covert operations. **These men had gotten into the illegal gun and drug trade back then** and had continued in that business ever since.

Before his death, Danny had made plans to visit the Wackenhut Corporation in Indio, California, and even considered naming his book, "Indio."

| Chapter 4 | Chapter 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 4

The history of Wackenhut Corporation is best described from its own literature. An outdated letter of introduction typed on Wackenhut letterhead once sent to prospective clients provided me with the following profile: (Excerpted) "Wackenhut Corporation had its beginnings in 1954, when George R. Wackenhut and three other former Special Agents of the Federal Bureau of Investigation formed a company in Miami, Special Agent Investigators, to provide investigative services to business and industry.

"The approach was so well received that a second company was formed in 1955 to apply the same philosophy to physical security problems. In 1958 the companies were combined under the name of Wackenhut Corporation, a Florida company. From the outset, George Wackenhut was President and chief executive officer of the enterprise. Wackenhut established its headquarters in Coral Gables, Florida in 1960, extending its physical security operations to the United States government through formation of a whollyowned subsidiary, Wackenhut Services, Incorporated. This was done in order to comply with federal statute prohibiting the government from contracting with companies which furnish investigative or detective services.

"In 1962, Wackenhut operations extended from Florida to California and Hawaii. On January 1, 1966, the company became international with offices in Caracas, Venezuela, through half ownership of an affiliate.

"The Wackenhut Corporation became public in 1966 with overthecounter stock sales and joined the American Stock Exchange in 1967. Through acquisitions of subsidiaries and affiliates, now totaling more than 20, and expansion of it contracts into numerous territories and foreign countries, the Wackenhut Corporation has grown into one of the world's largest security and investigative firms.

"In 1978 acquisition of NUSAC, a Virginia company providing technical and consulting services to the nuclear industry, brought Wackenhut into the fields of environment and energy management. In 1979, Wackenhut acquired Stellar Systems, Inc., a California company specializing in outdoor electronic security.

"The executive makeup of the company reflects the stress Mr. Wackenhut placed on professional leadership. **The Wackenhut Corporation is guided by executives and managers with extensive backgrounds in the FBI and other military, governmental and private security and investigative fields.**

"The principle business of the company is furnishing security and complete investigative services and systems to business, industry and professional clients, and to various agencies of the U.S. Government.

"Through a whollyowned subsidiary, Wackenhut Electronic Systems Corporation, the company

develops and produces sophisticated computerized security systems to complement its guard services.

"Major clients of Wackenhut's investigative services are the insurance industry and financial interests. These services include insurance inspections, corporate acquisition surveys, personnel background reports, preemployment screening, polygraph examinations and general criminal, fraud and arson investigations.

"The wide variety of services offered by Wackenhut Corporation also includes guard and electronic security for banks, office buildings, apartments, industrial complexes and other physical structures; training programs in English and foreign languages to apply Wackenhut procedures to individual clients needs; fire, safety and protective patrols; rescue and first aid services; emergency support programs tailored to labormanagement disputes, and predeparture screening programs widely used by airports and airlines.

"The company now has some 20,000 employees and maintains close to **100 offices and facilities with operations spread across the United States and extending into Canada, the United Kingdom, Western Europe, the Middle East, Indonesia, Central and South America and the Caribbean."**

******

On the surface, Wackenhut Corporation seemed innocous enough, but through documents later obtained from Michael Riconosciuto, I learned there was another, darker side to Wackenhut operations, at the Cabazon Indian reservation near Indio, California.

Because Indian reservations are sovereign nations and do not come under federal jurisdiction, Wackenhut International had formed a partnership and entered into a business venture with the Cabazon Indians to produce hightech arms and explosives for export to thirdworld countries. This maneuver was designed to evade congressional prohibitions against U.S. weapons being shipped to the Contras and middle eastern countries.

In the early 1980's, Dr. John Nichols, the Cabazon tribal administrator, obtained a department of Defense secret facility clearance for the reservation to conduct various research projects. Nichols then approached Wackenhut with an elaborate "joint venture" proposal to manufacture 120mm combustible cartridge cases, 9mm machine pistols, lasersighted assault weapons, sniper rifles and portable rocket systems on the Cabazon reservation and in Latin America. At one point, he even sought to develop biological weapons.

Again, through Michael Riconosciuto's files, I later obtained interoffice memorandums and correspondence relating to biological technology, but more on that in chapter 10. Meanwhile, in 1980, Dr. John Nichols obtained the blueprints to Crown Prince Fahd's palace in Tiaf, Saudi Arabia, and drafted a plan to provide security for the palace.

The Saudis were interested enough to conduct a background check on the Cabazons. Mohammad Jameel Hashem, consul of the Royal Embassy of Saudi Arabia in Washington, D.C., wrote former South Dakota Senator James Abourezk at his offices in Washington D.C. and noted, "According to our black list for companies, the Cabazon Band of Mission Indians/Cabazon Trading Company and Wackenhut International are not included." Translated, that meant that neither the Cabazons or Wackenhut were Jewishrun enterprises.

George Wackenhut's political leanings were once described in a book entitled, "The Age of Surveillance, The Aims and Methods of America's Political Intelligence System," by Frank J. Donner (Knopf, 1980), pp. 424425 as such: "The agency's [Wackenhut] professional concerns reflect the political values of its director, George Wackenhut. A rightist of the old blood, he selected as his directors an assortment of ultras prominent in the John Birch Society, the ASC, and other rightwing groups. The agency's monthly house organ, the `Wackenhut Security Review,' systematically decried the subversive inspiration in virtually all the protest movements of the sixties, from civil rights to peace. This vigilance earned the publication the accolade of rightwing organizations, inluding (in 1962) the George Washington Honor Medal and the Freedom Foundation Award at Valley Forge, Pennsylvania; and (in 1965 and 1966) the Vigilant Patriots Award from the AllAmerican Conference to Combat Communism."

******

Of all the articles written about Wackenhut Corporation, probably the most provacative was written by John Connolly for SPY magazine, published in September 1992, pp. 4654. Connolly, a former New York police officer turned writer, began his story with the following introduction: "What? A big private company one with a board of former CIA, FBI and Pentagon officials; one in charge of protecting nuclearweapons facilities, nuclear reactors, the Alaskan oil pipeline and more than a dozen American embassies abroad; one with longstanding ties to a radical rightwing organization; one with 30,000 men and women under arms **secretly helped Iraq in its effort to obtain sophisticated weapons?** And fueled unrest in Venezuela? This is all the plot of a new bestselling thriller, right? Or the ravings of some overheated conspiracy buff, right? Right? WRONG."

Connolly highlighted George Wackenhut as a "hardline rightwinger" who was able to profit from his beliefs by building dossiers on Americans suspected of being Communists or leftleaning "subversives and sympathizers" and selling the information to interested parties. By 1965 , Wackenhut was boasting to potential investors that the company maintained files on 2.5 million suspected dissidents one in 46 American adults then living.

In 1966, after acquiring the private files of Karl Barslaag, a former staff member of the House Committee on UnAmerican Activities, Wackenhut could confidently maintain that with more than 4 million names, it had the largest privately held file on suspected dissidents in America.

Connolly wrote that it was not possible to overstate the special relationship that Wackenhut enjoys with the federal government. **Richard Babayan, claiming to be a CIA contract employee, told SPY that "Wackenhut has been used by the CIA and other intelligence agencies for years. When they [the CIA] need cover, Wackenhut is there to provide it for them."**

Another CIA agent, Bruce Berckmans, who was assigned to the CIA station in Mexico City, but left the agency in January 1975 (putatively) to become a Wackenhut internationaloperations vice president, told SPY that **he had seen a formal proposal submitted by George Wackenhut to the CIA offering Wackenhut offices throughout the world as fronts for CIA activities.** In 1981, Berckmans joined with other senior Wackenhut executives to form the company's Special Projects Division. **It was this division that linked up with exCIA man Dr. John Phillip Nichols, the Cabazon tribal administrator, in pursuit of a scheme to manufacture explosives, poison gas and biological weapons for export to the contras and other communist fighting rebels worldwide.**

SPY also printed testimony from William Corbett, a terrorism expert who spent 18 years as a CIA analyst and is now an ABC News consultant in Europe. **Said Corbett, "For years Wackenhut has been involved with the CIA and other intelligence organizations, including the DEA. Wackenhut would allow the CIA to occupy positions within the company [in order to carry out] clandestine operations."Additionally, Corbett said that Wackenhut supplied intelligence agencies with information, and it was compensated for this "in a quid pro quo arrangement"** with government contracts worth billions of dollars over the years.

On page 51, in a box entitled, "Current and Former Wackenhut Directors," SPY published the following names: **"John Ammarell, former FBI agent; Robert Chasen, former FBI agent; Clarence Kelly, former FBI director; Willis Hawkins, former assistant secretary of the Army; Paul X. Kelley, fourstar general (ret.), U.S. Marine Corps; Seth McKee, former commander in chief, North American Air Defense Command; Bernard Schriever, former member, President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board; Frank Carlucci, former Defense Secretary and former deputy CIA director; Joseph Carroll, former director, Defense Intelligence Agency; James Rawley, former director, U.S. Secret Service; Bobby Ray Inman, former deputy CIA director."**

|Chapter 5 | Chapter 3 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 5

Danny Casolaro's body was found at 12:30 p.m. in a bloodfilled bath tub by a hotel maid who called the Martinsburg police. The body contained three deep cuts on the right wrist and seven on the left wrist, made by a single edge razor blade, the kind used to scrape windows or open packages.At the bottom of the bathwater was an empty Milwaukee beer can, a paper glass coaster, the razor blade and two white plastic trash bags, the kind used in wastepaper baskets.On the desk in the hotel room was an empty mead composition notebook with one page torn out and a suicide note which read: "To those who I love the most, please forgive me for the worst possible thing I could have done. Most of all, I'm sorry to my son. I know deep down inside that God will let me in."

There were no other papers, folders, documents of any sort, nor any briefcase found in the room. Danny's wallet was intact, stuffed with credit cards.The body was removed from the tub by Lieutenant Dave Brining from the Martinsburg fire department, and his wife, Sandra, a nurse who works in the hospital emergency room. The couple, who often moonlighted as coroners, took the body to the Brown Funeral Home where they conducted an examination.Charles Brown then decided to embalm the body that night and go home, rather than come back to work the next day, Sunday.

No one in Danny Casolaro's family had been notified of his death at that time, nor had they requested the body be embalmed.When Casolaro's family learned of the death, they insisted it was not a suicide and called for an autopsy and an investigation. Though the body had already been embalmed, an autopsy was performed at the West Virginia University Hospital by a Dr. Frost. The findings indicated that no struggle had taken place because there were no recent bruises on the body. The drugs found in Casolaro's urine, blood and tissue samples were in minute amounts but they were also unexplainable by his brother, Tony, who is a medical doctor.

According to Tony Casolaro, Danny did not take drugs or have any prescriptions for the drug traces of Hydrocodone and Tricyclic antidepressant that were found in the body. No pill boxes or written prescriptions were found. Dr. Casolaro searched through his brother's Blue Cross records and found no record of the prescriptions or doctor visits.

During the autopsy of the body, Dr. Frost had found lesions within the brain which were characteristic of Multiple Sclerosis. It was possible that Danny was having blurring of vision, but Dr. Frost downplayed the possibility that this contributed to any suicide. Of particular interest, was Frost's observation that the deep razor wounds on Danny's wrists were inflicted "without any hesitation marks." However, the lack of hesitation did not indicate one way or the other whether they were or were not selfinflicted. Investigators and police never found Danny's missing briefcase.

On August 6, 1991, Casolaro's housekeeper, Olga, helped Danny pack a black leather tote bag. She remembered he also packed a thick sheaf of papers into a dark brown or black briefcase. She asked him what he had put into the briefcase and he replied, "I have all my papers ..." He had been typing for two days, and as he left the house, he said, "Wish me luck. I'll see you in a couple of days."

By August 9th, Casolaro's friends were alarmed. Noone had heard from him and Olga was receiving threatening phone calls at Danny's home. On Saturday, August 10th, Olga received another call, a man's voice said, "You son of a bitch. You're dead."After learning of Danny's death, Olga recalled seeing Danny sitting in the kitchen on August 5th with a "heavy man ... wearing a dark suit. He was a dark man with black hair he turned towards the door, I saw he was darkskinned. I told police maybe he could be from India."

At 3:00 p.m. on Friday, the day before Danny's death, Bill Turner, a friend and confidante, met Danny in the parking lot of the Sheraton Hotel to deliver some papers to him. The papers allegedly consisted of two sealed packages which Turner had been keeping in his safe at home for Danny, and a packet of Hughes Aircraft papers which belonged to Turner.

Danny had appeard exhuberant to most of his friends before his death, noting that he was about to "wrap up" his investigation of The Octopus. Casolaro was trying to prove that the alleged theft of the Inslaw computer program, PROMISE, was related to the October Surprise scandal, the IranContra affair and the collapse of BCCI (Bank of Credit and Commerce International).

Turner later admitted to police that he had indeed met with Danny on August 9th, but at that time he refused to specify what time and would not describe what was in the papers he delivered to Danny. I later learned that Turner had been investigating discrepancies involving his former employer, Hughes Aircraft Company. The documents he had delivered from his safe to Danny had been sealed, with Casolaro's name written across the seal, and he claimed not to have known what they contained. Nevertheless, it is feasible to assume that Turner may have known who Danny was preparing to meet that evening at the Martinsburg Hotel because, for reasons of his own, Turner apparently wanted Danny to show the Hughes Aircraft documents to whoever he was meeting with.

Turner later noted to reporters that he was "scared shitless" about information he had seen connecting Ollie North and BCCI. "I saw papers from Danny that connected back through the Keating Five and Silverado [the failed Denver S & L where Neil Bush had been an officer]," he said.

To his friend, Ben Mason, Danny showed a 22point outline for his book. Included in the information he shared with Mason were papers referring to IranContra arms deals. Photocopies of checks made out for $1 million and $4 million drawn on BCCI accounts held for Adnan Khashoggi, and international arms merchant and factotum for the House of Saud, and by Manucher Ghorbanifar, an arms dealer and IranContra middleman, were presented.

"The last sheet," noted Mason, "was a passport of some guy named Ibrahim." Casolaro had emphasized that Ibrahim had made a big deal of showing him (Casolaro) his "Egyptian" passport."Ibrahim" was obviously the informant whom Olga, Casolaro's housekeeper, had seen sitting in the kitchen with Danny on August 5th. **Hassan Ali Ibrahim Ali, born in 1928, was later identified as the manager of Sitico,**

an alleged Iraqi front company for arms purchases. Casolaro had obtained these papers from Bob Bickel, who in turn obtained them from October Surprise source Richard Brenneke.

Ari BenMenasche, a self proclaimed Israeli military intelligence officer, was responsible for the tipoff to an obscure **Lebanese magazine about what later became known as the IranContra scandal.** After Casolaro's death, Menasche called Bill Hamilton, the president of Inslaw Company and creator of the PROMISE software. (Hamilton had been in daily contact with Casolaro until about a week prior to his death).

Menasche claimed that two FBI agents from Lexington, Kentucky, had embarked on a trip to Martinsburg to meet Casolaro as part of their investigation of the sale of the PROMISE software to Israel and other intelligence agencies.Ben Menasche told Hamilton that one of the FBI agents, E. B. Cartinhour, was disaffected because his superiors had refused to indict high Reagan officials for their role in the October Surprise. Ben Menasche claimed the agents were prepared to give Casolaro proof that the FBI was illegally using PROMISE software.

It is highly unlikely that the two FBI agents were enroute to Martinsburg to GIVE anything to Casolaro, but they may well have been on their way to obtain HIS documents and those belonging to Bill Turner. If, in fact, Danny had disclosed to any one of the many "sources" he had developed during his investigation, **that he was turning over his documents to the Lexington FBI,** that may well have alarmed a few of them.

Casolaro was also investigating Colonel Bo Gritz's expose of CIA drug trafficking, and had requested to meet with a former police officer who had information on Laotian warlord Kuhn Sa's Golden Triangle drug trade proposal to the U.S. He had learned through a Sacramento Bee newspaper article, dated June 2, 1990 that Patrick Moriarty, the Red Devil fireworks magnate convicted of laundering political contributions and bribing city officials in Sacramento, had been subpoenaed to testify on behalf of Gritz at his trial in Las Vegas where he was tried for using a false passport. Gritz was acquitted of the charges.

Moriarty's lawyer, Jan Lawrence Handzlik, told the Bee that **Moriarty had paid Gritz to make business trips to China, Singapore and other parts of Asia. Gritz said his business trip to Asia in July 1989** was for the purpose of negotiating an oil interest that he and Moriarty had set up between the People's Republic of China and Indonesia.

It is noteworthy that **Patrick Moriarty is the longtime (30 years) partner of Marshall Riconosciuto, Michael Riconosciuto's father. They owned several California businesses together, two of which were Hercules Research Corporation, of which Michael was a partner,** and Pyrotronics Corporation.

******

Casolaro at one time considered the title of "Indio" for the book he was writing about "The Octopus." His death occurred just days before he planned to visit the Cabazon Indian reservation near Indio, California. Though his notes did not divulge what role the Cabazons may have had in the conspiracy, **Casolaro listed Dr. John Phillip Nichols, the Cabazon administrator, as a former CIA agent.**

A source of information which Danny may have read is entitled, "DARK VICTORY, Ronald Reagan, MCA, and the Mob," by Dan E. Moldea. Moldea named this unholy alliance "The Octopus" in his book.

Numerous publications reporting on Casolaro's death corroborated that one of his sources included Michael Riconosciuto, a "44yearold former hightech scientist who had connections with Wackenhut Corporation ..." What brought Casolaro to Riconosciuto was an affidavit signed by Riconosciuto claiming that when he worked on the WackenhutCabazon project, he was given a copy of the Inslaw software by Earl Brian for modification. Riconosciuto also swore that Peter Videnieks, a Justice Department official associated with the Inslaw contract, had visited the WackenhutCabazon project with Earl Brian.

Earl Brian was a businessman and Edwin Meese crony who served in Governor Ronald Reagan's cabinet in California.The $6 million in software stolen from William and Nancy Hamilton, coowners of Inslaw Company, was allegedly sold by the Justice Department through Earl Brian to raise offthebooks money for covert government operations.

On May 18, 1990, Riconosciuto had called the Hamiltons and informed them that the Inslaw case was connected to the October Surprise affair. Riconosciuto claimed that he and Earl Brian had traveled to Iran in 1980 and paid $40 million to Iranian officials to persuade them NOT to release the hostages before the presidential election in which Reagan became president of the United States.

Riconosciuto's information created a domino effect in Washington D.C., opening numerous investigations and causing a media blitz. At that time, Casolaro headed the Hamilton's private investigation of the theft of their software and he had regular communication with Riconosciuto.

Former U.S. Attorney General Elliott Richardson, the Hamilton's attorney, subsequently sent Riconosciuto an affidavit to sign, to be filed by Inslaw in federal court in connection with Inslaw's pending Motion for Limited Discovery. The affidavit, Case No. 8500070, entered into court records, resulted in Riconosciuto's arrest within days. It read as follows:

"I Michael J. Riconosciuto, being duly sworn, do hereby state as follows:

"(1) During the early 1980's, I served as the Director of Research for a joint venture between the Wackenhut Corporation of Coral Gables, Florida, and the Cabazon Band of Indians of Indio, California. The joint venture was located on the Cabazon reservation.

"(2) The WackenhutCabazon joint venture sought to develop and/or manufacture certain materials that are used in military and national security operations, including night vision goggles, machine guns, **fuelair explosives, and biological and chemical warfare weapons.**

"(3) The Cabazon Band of Indians are a sovereign nation. The sovereign immunity that is accorded the Cabazons as a consequence of this fact made it feasible to pursue on the reservation the development and/or manufacture of materials whose development or manufacture would be subject to stringent controls off the reservation. As a minority group, the Cabazon Indians also provided the Wackenhut Corporation with an enhanced ability to obtain federal contracts through the 8A Set Aside Program, and in connection with Governmentowned contractoroperated (GOCO) facilities.

"(4) The WackenhutCabazon joint venture was intended to support the needs of a number of foreign governments and forces, including forces and governments in Central America and the Middle East. The Contras in Nicaragua represented one of the most important priorities for the joint venture.

"(5) **The WackenhutCabazon joint venture maintained close liaison with certain elements of the United States Government, including representatives of intelligence, military and law enforcement agencies.**

"(6) Among the frequent visitors to the WackenhutCabazon joint venture were Peter Videnieks of the U. S. Department of Justice in Washington, D.C., and a close associate of Videnieks by the name of Earl W. Brian. Brian is a private businessman who lives in Maryland and who has maintained close ties with the U.S. intelligence community for many years.

"(7) In connection with my work for Wackenhut, I engaged in some software development and modification work in 1983 and 1984 on the proprietary PROMIS computer software product. The copy of PROMIS on which I worked came from the U.S. Department of Justice. Earl W. Brian made it available to me through Wackenhut after acquiring it from Peter Videnieks, who was then a Department of Justice contracting official with responsibility for the PROMISE software. I performed the modifications to PROMIS in Indio, California; Silver Spring, Maryland; and Miami, Florida.

"(8) The purpose of the PROMISE software modifications that I made in 1983 and 1984 was to support a plan for the implementation of PROMIS in law enforcement and intelligence agencies worldwide. Earl W. Brian was spearheading the plan for this worldwide use of the PROMISE computer software.

"(9) Some of the modifications that I made were specifically designed to facilitate the implementation of PROMIS within two agencies of the Government of Canada; the Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP) and the Canadian Security and Intelligence Service (CSIS). Earl W. Brian would check with me from time to time to make certain that the work would be completed in time to satisfy the schedule for the RCMP and CSIS implementations of PROMIS.

"(10) The proprietary version of PROMIS, as modified by me, was, in fact, implemented in both the RCMP and the CSIS in Canada. It was my understanding that Earl W. Brian had sold this version of PROMIS to the Government of Canada.

"(11) In February 1991, I had a telephone conversation with Peter Videnieks, then still employed by the U.S. Department of Justice. Videnicks attempted during this telephone conversation to persuade me not to cooperate with an independent investigation of the government's piracy of Inslaw's proprietary PROMIS software being conducted by the Committee on the Judiciary of the U.S. House of Representatives.

"(12) Videnieks stated that I would be rewarded for a decision not to cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee investigation. Videnieks forecasted an immediate and favorable resolution of a protracted child custody dispute being prosecuted against my wife by her former husband, if I were to decide not to cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee investigation.

"(13) Videnieks also outlined specific punishments that I could expect to receive from the U.S. Department of Justice if I cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee's investigation.

"(14) One punishment that Videnieks outlined was the future inclusion of me and my father in a criminal prosecution of certain business associates of mine in Orange County, California, in connection with the operation of a savings and loan institution in Orange County. By way of underscoring his power to influence such decisions at the U.S. Department of Justice, Videnieks informed me of the indictment of these business associates prior to the time when that indictment was unsealed and made public.

"(15) Another punishment that Videnieks threatened against me if I cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee is prosecution by the U.S. Department of Justice for perjury. Videnieks warned me that credible witnesses would come forward to contradict any damaging claims that I made in testimony before the House Judiciary Committee, and that I would subsequently be prosecuted for perjury by the U. S. Department of Justice for my testimony before the House Judiciary Committee."

It is noteworthy that in January, 1992 when I obtained boxes of Michael Riconosciuto's hidden documents, included in those documents were handwritten pages of telephone numbers belonging to various Washington D.C. dignitaries. One number, "(202) 4260789" was listed as belonging to "PV," but it was no longer in service.

******

Danny Casolaro was, of course, intent on interviewing Peter Videnieks. A strange coincidence occurred during the week prior to his death. While sitting in a pub, having a beer, a man named Joseph Cuellar approached him and they began talking. At some point during the conversation, Danny disclosed the contents of his investigation and expressed a desire to interview Peter Videnieks.

To Danny's astonishment, Cuellar, claiming to be a Special Forces operative, said he could arrange a rendevous between Peter Videnieks and Casolaro. Cuellar's connection to Peter Videnieks allegedly came through Videnieks' wife, Barbara, who was the executive assistant to the powerful **West Virginia Democratic Senator, Robert Byrd. Byrd played a major role in the effort to have the CIA move**

some of its administrative offices to Charlestown, 20 miles from Martinsburg, on the Virginia border. It was apparently through Barbara Videnieks that Cuellar intended to arrange the interview.

Casolaro confided to friends that he was unnerved by this supposedly chance meeting. He met with Cuellar at other times that week, but it is unknown whether he ever spoke with Videnieks. To date, that question remains unanswered.

Significantly, Elliot Richardson, the respected former U.S. Attorney General representing Inslaw, called for the appointment of a special counsel to look into the death of Casolaro.

| Chapter 4 | Chapter 6 |

CHAPTER 6

At Michael Riconosciuto's trial in Tacoma Washington, Peter Videnieks testified that while working for the Justice Department he had contact with the PROMISE software. He "conducted the competitive contract competitive procurement for acquisition of the services to implement PROMISE."Under cross examination he testified that "it required preparation of a request for proposals issuance of that document to industry ... negotiating, selecting, and awarding the contract. Then after award, administering the contract to see that the work that the government paid for was properly performed."

So, essentially, Videnieks administered the Inslaw contract with the government. His employment record included work with the Internal Revenue Service as a revenue officer from 1964 to 1967. From 1967 to 1972 as a contract specialist with NASA. From 1972 to 1973 with Customs as a contract specialist. From 1973 through 1975 back at NASA as a contract specialist. From 1975 through 1981 as a contract specialist with Customs, supervisory at this time. From 1981 through September, 1990, with the Department of Justice as a contract specialist. And from September 1990 through present (January 1992) as a supervisory contract specialist at Customs again.

Thomas Olmstead, Riconosciuto's attorney, showed Videnieks the Inslaw affidavit signed by Riconosciuto. Videnieks said he had seen the affidavit prior to court, but testified that he'd never heard of the WackenhutCabazon joint venture and never visited the WackenhutCabazon facility in Indio, California. He also testified that he'd never met Earl Brian.

Olmstead asked Videnieks if he knew **Robert Chasen [Executive Vice President of Wackenhut]?** Videnieks testified that he knew him "by name since he was head of Customs for about a threeyear period, from about 1977 through 1980. **I met him once in the line of my duties."**

Interestingly, according to his resume, **Robert Chasen was Commissioner of Customs in Washington D.C. from 1969 to 1977, then Executive Vice President of Wackenhut from 1981 to present (1991).** And Peter Videnieks, a contract officer at Customs in Washington D.C. from 1972 to 1974, then again at Customs from 1976 to 1981, said he did not know Robert Chasen. How could that be? Videnieks had worked in the same department with Chasen, off and on, for at least three years.

Videnieks also testified that he met Chasen in the line of his duties sometime between 1977 and 1980. Yet, Chasen no longer worked at Customs between 1977 and 1980?

Olmstead asked Videnieks to reiterate his position with the PROMISE software. "I worked on the [PROMISE] contract. ... The procurement was assigned to me by a lady named Patricia Rudd. ... My function was to conduct a competitive procurement, negotiate an award of contract, and then administer the contract."

Olmstead: "What time frames are we talking when you were ...?"

Videnieks: "We're talking about from the day that I reported for duty at Justice, which was in September 1981, through about 1985."

Olmstead: "Are you familiar with Hadron Company?" (This was a loaded question because Earl Brian, who Videnieks testified he did not know, owned Hadron Company at the time of the court proceedings.)

Videnieks responded, "Yes, I am."

Olmstead: "Have you done work for Hadron Corporation in your procurement contract?"

Videnieks: "I supervise currently a contract specialist who is administering a contract with Hadron."

Olmstead: "Prior to supervising someone, did you personally handle that particular contract?"

Videnieks: "I have administered well over a hundred contracts, maybe a couple hundred or several hundred over my career, and I don't recall whether I have or not."

Olmstead: "And you have never given a deposition in regards to the Inslaw matter?"

Videnieks: "My recall is not that good. Like I said, I have administered hundreds of contracts, and I may or may not have administered one with Hadron."

Again Olmstead asked Videnieks if he knew Earl Brian?Videnieks responded, "No, sir."

Olmstead: "Do you know who owns Hadron?"

Videnieks: "I really don't. I've heard I mean, I don't want to speculate now. He may be an officer with Hadron. He may be."

Olmstead: "You don't recall any questions in any depositions at all regarding that?"

Videnieks: "I do recall questions along these same lines. But again, from general knowledge, I think he is an officer or has been an officer with Hadron."

Olmstead: "In fact, in your deposition, you admitted you knew that he was an officer of Hadron, didn't you?"

Videnieks: "I would like to see my transcript from my deposition as to what I said ..."

Olmstead went on to question Videnieks about "Modification No. 12" of the PROMISE software.

Videnieks stated that he knew what Modification No. 12 was, but repeatedly refused to discuss it until someone produced the original Inslaw contract. Finally, under pressure to give a general recollection, he said it dealt with the twelfth modification to the PROMISE software.

Olmstead asked, "Were you personally chastised as a result of Modification No. 12 in the way you handled that?"

Videnieks: "Please define `chastised.'"

Olmstead: **"Were you told that you took, converted, and stole six million dollars worth of Inslaw software through the way you handled Modification No. 12?"**

Videnieks: "**A judge in the bankruptcy court ruled that. Since then the record was erased.** And that language should not be the way a nonlawyer like me understands, **it is no longer in existence ..."**

******

It is necessary to digress here to disclose the magnitude of the apparent government coverup relative to Riconosciuto's case. About two weeks before Riconosciuto's trial began, I had received a call from Michael asking me to contact **Brian Leighton, a former assistant U.S. Attorney in Fresno, whom Michael claimed to have provided information to.** Michael was lining up his ducks. **Essentially his defense rested on his ability to prove he worked for the U.S. government in intelligence operations,** but his lawyer was behind schedule in making the contacts.

Brian Leighton had been instrumental in prosecuting 29 members of a drug/arms organization called "The Company." The Company had been written up in the San Francisco Chronicle on April 28, 1982 under the heading "Story of Spies, Stolen Arms and Drugs." According to reporter Bill Wallace, The Company consisted of (quote) "about 300 members, many of them former military men or expolice officers with nearly $30 million worth of assets, including planes, ships and real estate."

The article went on to say that "federal drug agents said the organization had imported billions of dollars worth of narcotics from Latin America, and was also involved in gunrunning and mercenary operations." Specialized military equipment consisting of nine infrared sniperscopes, a television camera for taking pictures in darkness, 1500 rounds of small arms tracer ammunition for night combat, a fivefoot remotecontrol helicopter, and secret components from the radar unit of a Sidewinder guided missile **were stolen from the U.S. Naval Weapons Station at China Lake in the Mojave Desert.**

Federal agents said some of the stolen equipment was going to be used to make electronic equipment for drug smugglers and some was traded to drug suppliers in Columbia. Twentynine members of the Company were indicted by the Fresno federal grand jury in 1981. Amongst those indicated was Andrew "Drew" Thornton, 40, a former narcotics officer.

On September 13, 1985, the Los Angeles Times published the story of Thornton's death, entitled, "Former Narcotics Officer Parachutes Out of Plane, Dies with 77 Pounds of Cocaine." **The article said Thornton was indicted in 1981 for "allegedly flying a plane to South America for a reputed drug ring known as `The Company.'"** In an interview with the Los Angeles Times, Brian Leighton said, "I'm glad his parachute didn't open. I hope he got a hell of a high out of that ..."

Thornton's mysterious death was discussed at length in a book written by Sally Denton entitled, "The Blue Grass Conspiracy." **Part of The Company was headquartered in Lexington, Kentucky. Prosecutors in Lexington, Fresno, California (Brian Leighton), and Miami, Florida were working together in a joint effort to bring down The Company.**

The San Francisco Chronicle noted that in **January, 1982, Gene Berry, a state prosecutor in Charlotte Harbor, Florida, was shot in the face as he answered his door. Police subsequently arrested Bonnie Kelly as Berry's murderer. Bonnie's husband, Mike McClure Kelly, was a suspected member of The Company** who later pleaded guilty in the Fresno, California case.

In Michael Riconosciuto's documents, I discovered a letter dated March 24, 1982, written on Cabazon letterhead to **Michael McClure at Hercules Corporation** from Art Welmas, President of the Cabazon Band of Indians. Copies (cc:) were also noted to Marshall Riconosciuto and Michael Riconosciuto. The letter complimented McClure's competence in presenting a clear and lucid explanation of a power pack under development at Hercules. (Hercules was owned by Marshall Riconosciuto, Michael Riconosciuto and Patrick Moriarty, the Red Devil fireworks mogul. More on Moriarty later.)

Throughout Michael's documents, I found references to Michael McClure and Bonnie Lynne G. Kelly. Michael's code word for Mike McClure was "Gopher."

Journalist Danny Casolaro had been communicating regularly with Michael Riconosciuto and obviously learned about The Company. It is not to be overlooked that coincidentally or not, Ari BenMenashe (a former Israeli intelligence agent who lived in Lexington, Kentucky) told Bill Hamilton that two Lexington FBI agents had been enroute to meet with Danny at the Martinsburg Hotel on the day of his death. The Company was headquartered in Lexington. Danny was not meeting with the FBI relative to PROMIS, he was preparing to turn over drug trafficking information on The Company.

BenMenashe further told Hamilton that one of the agents, E.B. Cartinhour, was angry that the Justice Department was not pursuing Reagan administration officials for their role in the October Surprise.

******

Meanwhile, it was necessary to contact Brian Leighton to corroborate Riconosciuto's story that he had been instrumental in helping Leighton identify members of The Company.

I did not directly contact **Leighton, who had resigned from the U.S. Attorney's office shortly after the prosecutions** and entered into private law practice, but asked the Secret Service agent in Los Angeles who had visited my home regarding the "Queen's accident" in Mariposa (mentioned in the first chapter of this book) to run a check on Riconosciuto.

Instead, he called Brian Leighton and when I checked back with him, he acknowledged talking to Leighton about Riconosciuto. **Leighton confirmed to the Secret Service agent that he recalled a threehour facetoface meeting with Riconosciuto and remembered him well. He gave specific details of Riconosciuto's cooperation with the U.S. attorney's office.** I thanked the Secret Service agent and hung up.

I next contacted a retired police officer and colleague in the Mariposa investigation, and asked him to put me in touch with someone trustworthy in government who could corraborate Leighton's information. The contact was made and this individual agreed to call Brian Leighton to see if he could glean further details of Michael's cooperation with the U.S. attorney's office. For purposes of anonymity, this source will be identified as "R.J." When I checked back, **he confirmed that Leighton did indeed remember Michael's help with the case and, in fact, said Michael led law enforcement officers to a marijuana cache belonging to members of The Company.**

At that point I was satisfied that Michael had been operating within the framework of The Company and had spoken accurately about his cooperation with Brian Leighton. I called Thomas Olmstead, Michael's attorney, and related the above information.

Two weeks later, on January 15, 1992, at Michael's trial in Tacoma, Washington, Brian Leighton testified that the case in question involved the theft of military equipment from the China Lake Naval Weapons Center in California. "The FBI and Naval Intelligence Service began the investigation," he said, "and there were several people that were targets of the investigation. One of those targets began cooperating with us and then it became a DEA and FBI investigation. The thefts occurred in 1979 and 1980, and the case continued on for a couple of years."

Leighton testified that he "could not recall ever meeting personally with Mr. Riconosciuto and he didn't know if he spoke to him personally or spoke to him through a government agent." Under crossexamination, Leighton testified that he thought Riconosciuto was brought to him by an agent Barnes from the Oakland or San Francisco office of the FBI, **but he couldn't remember exactly ..."**

After Leighton's testimony, Michael called me and asked, "What happened?" I was astonished at Leighton's testimony. What was at stake here? Michael speculated that Leighton was operating out of fear. He said Leighton retired from the U.S. Attorney's office shortly after prosecuting members of The Company, and recalled that the prosecuting attorney in Florida had been shot in the head.

I called the Secret Service officer and R.J. individually and asked them to repeat what Leighton had told them **before the trial.** They both repeated verbatim what Leighton had told them the first time about Michael Riconosciuto. I said it appeared Leighton had perjured himself in court. Neither could understand why?

******

In August 1994, I received from a friend of Bill Hamilton's (President of Inslaw) a Declaration, signed by Hamilton, which stated that " ... On or about April 3, 1991, I spoke by telephone with Mr. Brian Leighton, an attorney in private practice in Fresno, California. He stated that during the early 1980's, while serving as an Assistant United States Attorney in Fresno, California, he had investigated a nationwide criminal enterprise known as **`The Company,' which was engaged in illegal drug trafficking on a massive scale.**

"Mr. Leighton told me that (A) Michael Riconosciuto had furnished Mr. Leighton `valuable intelligence' on illegal drug activities and The Company; (B) Mr. Leighton had been unable to use the information in prosecution but (C) the failure to use Mr. Riconosciuto's intelligence information was not because of any fault of Mr. Michael Riconosciuto."

Also mentioned in the affidavit was corroboration of Riconosciuto's work in the defense and national security fields. **Section six of the affidavit noted that during the course of a telephone conversation with Robert Nichols on or about April 18, 1991, Hamilton learned that Nichols had attended a meeting that had been organized by a Colonel Bamford, an aide to General Meyer, then Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Others participating in the meeting were department heads from Department of Defense scientific facilities.**

Michael Riconosciuto was the principal presenter to this group of seniorlevel national security research and development officials. According to Nichols, Riconosciuto made a day long presentation to this meeting of scientists lasting from approximately 9 a.m. until approximately 4 p.m., answering questions from the participants and filling the halls of the conference facility with his handprinted notes on the scientific and technical issues that arose in the course of his presentation.

I was able to locate in Riconosciuto's files, a letter written on July 20, 1983 from **Tom Bamford**, Vice President of Research and Development at FMC Corporation in Santa Clara, California to William Frash in Escondido, California. At that time, Frash, a retired USMC Colonel, was Chairman of the Board and Chief Executive Officer of Lilac Corporation.

Essentially, the letter expressed enthusiasm for the potential application of technologies being proposed to FMC Corporation by Meridian Arms, and called for a list of all active participants in the joint venture. At that time Riconosciuto was vice president of Meridian Arms. Bamford added, " ... You may want to do this only for Mike at this stage."

Frash hastened to respond to Bamford on July 27, 1983 to apprise him of a meeting between himself and

Michael Riconosciuto, Robert Booth Nichols, Peter Zokosky and Patrick Moriarty (Michael's father's business partner) regarding "energy transfer phenomena." A proposal was underway to outline technology in the form of patents applied for jointly between Meridian Arms and FMC. Frash noted that the technology would "supercede all existing world patents in the field."

"Had we patented previously, it would only have announced our `edge' in the field," he wrote. Three of the four major patents that would be forthcoming were (1) the application of Perturbation Theory to enhanced energy transfer, (2) the application of stationary methods with powders and aerosols to enhanced energy transfer and (3) the application of Perturbation Theory to hydrodynamic flow regimes.

It is noteworthy that the submarine propulsion system depicted in the movie, "Hunt for Red October" utilized this theory. Frash concluded, "Tom, as you well know, Mike's tried and true value is in the field of high voltage and electrostatics and their application. The meetings in San Jose highlighted application of this technology in over one hundred areas that are inhouse FMC." He added, " ... Per your reference to meetings in Washington, D.C., I assume the meetings with **Dr. Fair,** Admiral Renkin and the ACCOM people will suffice in this matter. In closing we are very enthused, Tom, and we look forward to an expeditious closing. Sincerely, William Frash."

Frash's payment for putting together the above referenced joint venture, if successful, would be $500,000 for the first fifteen million invested, or $166,666.66 for only five million invested, a onehundredthousanddollar per year salary for a period of 20 years, and a 2% share in the gross profits. This, according to a Letter of Understanding sent to and signed by Robert Booth Nichols and Michael Riconosciuto in July, 1983.

In questioning Michael Riconosciuto about the FMC agreements, he said he attempted to break away from Robert Nichols in 1984. "The guy nearly got me terminated," declared Riconosciuto. "At the time I was working with Nichols on a proposal to FMC Corporation, which is Food Machinery Corporation, they produced the Bradley Personnel Carrier. I've got a complete papertrail on the technology that was being presented. **We conducted a test demonstration of an enhanced airfield device which I developed. We also conducted a test of a hydrodynamic implosion type of explosive device.**

| Chapter 5 | Chapter 6, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

The Last Circle - Chapter 6, Part 2

"The implosion device settled the Nevada Test Range by about 30 feet. The Lawrence Livermore Labs and the Gallup Ordinance people built a prototype of the device, but they overbuilt it because they wanted an impressive demonstration. It created an international incident because the demonstration was picked up by Soviet monitoring satellites.

"Anyway, the bona fides were established. The next thing was to get the business done and get me into harness in a program. I was all for it, but Bob [Nichols] started getting spooky on me. He wanted to receive the setup of our end offshore, in Singapore. He wanted to receive $20 million dollars in cash in Singapore, **and he wanted to use certain of the technology overseas, namely in Australia, OK?**

"Bob started drinking a lot. He was obviously under a lot of pressure from somewhere, and his fascade of respectability started to crack. About that time Bob began pressuring me to do things a certain way. We'd already been approved at the executive level by FMC. But we still had to go through the legal department and FMC is a publicly held stock corporation. So we still had to go through the shareholders for about eight months, which put us about a year away from consummating the deal.

"So, I asked Bob for some extra money to meet my everyday expenses, but Bob said, `Hurry up and get the business done and then you'll have plenty of money.' I tried to explain to Bob that there was no way he could expedite this thing, and so on and so forth. Well, Bob became really overbearing. And that's when he demanded that I state things in the contract proposal to FMC which would have been misstatements, to the point of being illegal. That's when I started having second thoughts about it.

"There were other people involved in the development of that technology. Bob wanted me to pay him out of my share and make no reference to the other people in the agreement. But when you've got the University of California and the University of Chicago having 16 percent of your company, having 16 percent of Hercules Research and Interprobe, you know, how could I misrepresent the interests of my dad, Moriarty and [Admiral] Al Renkin in a deal with a U.S. publicly held corporation [FMC]?

"At that time, Riconosciuto had been Vice President of Meridian Arms, a subsidiary of Meridian International Logistics. But he was also technical advisor for F.I.D.C.O. (First Intercontinental Development Corporation) of which Nichols was on the Board of Directors. Noted Riconosciuto, "I walked into F.I.D.C.O. in equal good faith. And that also turned sour because **Bob wanted me to illegally take embargoed technology out of the United States, to run an operation with embargoed armaments and high technology outside of the United States.**

"So I walked out on Bob. And Bob put the heat on me and they wouldn't leave me alone. When I got remarried [to Bobby Riconosciuto], they continued to harrass me by putting out false intelligence reports on me to law enforcement ..."

I asked Michael why he didn't fight back? Michael responded, "You don't seem to understand. All my involvements were under closely controlled situations. There's only one time in my life when I was planning on doing something offcolor, and it never went anywhere. All the rest of the time, everything was under complete controls. I never took any elective actions. Everything was, you know, on direct orders. And I got to the point where I balked with Bob Nichols and that's when he went ballistic on me."

Riconosciuto said he was in the process of cleaning up his life in Washington state when a private investigator from Inslaw contacted him. "I didn't want to get nailed for piracy of that software, so I talked to my attorney, who talked to the Inslaw attorneys, and I gave them a declaration. And about that time, Peter Viedenieks, who was an associate of both Robert Booth Nichols and Dr. John Nichols, called me and told me I was my own worst enemy. He said if I didn't cool it, if I didn't stonewall any further requests for information from the House Judiciary Committee, I was going away forever. I told Viedenieks that I was already in too deep, and he repeated that `I was my own worst enemy.' Seven days later I was arrested on drug charges."

******

Ted Gunderson was one of the few "cooperating" witnesses at Michael's trial. **Through his affidavit and testimony, Ted hoped to supply the defense with needed corroboration of Michael's covert government sanctioned activities.** Unfortunately for Michael, Ted could not disclose **numerous activities which had included Robert Booth Nichols.** At one time Gunderson, Nichols and Riconosciuto had been inseparable, like the three musketeers. **But, Nichols was currently under investigation by the Los Angeles FBI for alleged involvement in organized crime in the U.S. and abroad.**

Fortunately, however, Gunderson's resume added credibility to the provocative affidavit he entered into court on Michael's behalf. **He had been Senior Special Agent in Charge (SAC) at Los Angeles FBI headquarters from 1977 to 1979** when he retired from the FBI and went to work as chief investigator for F. Lee Bailey, Esq. Prior to that, **from 1960 to 1965, Gunderson was Special Agent Supervisor at FBI headquarters in Washington, D.C..** Interestingly, amongst a prestigious list of positions nationwide, **he was also SAC from 1973 to 1977 in Dallas, Texas (where he became friends with Clint Murchison, Jr., according to his livein partner, J.M.. J.M. stated in phone interviews that she and Gunderson attended parties with Murchison in Dallas, and Gunderson phoned him often from their Manhattan Beach home).**

In 1979, Gunderson received the Alumni Highest Effort Award in the Field of Law Enforcement from Sigma Alpha Epsilon Social Fraternity at the University of Nebraska. In 1979, he also received the Distinguished Alumnus Award from the University of Nebraska in recognition of distinguished and devoted service to his country.

Gunderson's handwritten affidavit, submitted to Michael's lawyer on September 27, 1991, read as follows (excerpted): "I, Ted L. Gunderson, make the following free and voluntary statement. No threats or promises were made to get me to make this statement. I was born 11/7/28 at Colorado Springs, Colorado.

"In early 1986, I met one Ralph Olberg through a friend of mine, Bill Sloane. Sloane is a former official with HUD. Sloane was appointed by President Ronald Reagan to the HUD position after the president was elected in 1980.

"Olberg is a prominent American businessman who was spearheading procurement of U.S. weapons and technology for the Afghanistan rebels.

"In late Spring or early summer of 1986, Ralph Olberg, one Tim Osman, Michael Riconosciuto and I met in a room at the Hilton Hotel, Ventura Blvd., Sherman Oaks, California. I accompanied Michael Riconosciuto, and Osman and Olberg were together. We were there to discuss Olberg's role with the worldwide support network involving the **Mujahaden, Afghanistan Resistance Movement** against the Soviets.

"In particular we discussed the ability of the **Mujahaden's willingness to field test weapons, new and esoteric in the field and to return a research report, complete with photos.**

"We also discussed the capture and/or defection of high ranking Soviet military personnel who had sensitive compartmentalized information and the availability of their briefings. We discussed one person who was a Soviet defector and was a communications officer who had detailed information of the highest levels of Soviet military C3I (Command Control Intelligence and Communications).

"We also discussed the Soviet directed weapons system referred to in the conversation as `Blue Death.' Michael and I were told by Olberg that witnesses stated the corpses did not decay even after being exposed and unburied for six months.

"**We discussed the possibility of Michael analyzing one of these units captured in the field by the Afghan rebels for the purpose of having Michael help their technical experts develop effective countermeasures**.

"We discussed a military **joint venture in Turkey** to produce specialized ammunition. We discussed a lobbying effort to legally obtain Stinger II missiles as well as the various Stinger post and Stinger alternates. Michael was to formulate a plan to sanitize the electronics of any Stingers that would be at risk of Soviet capture so any information gained from a captured Stinger could not be effectively used against the U.S. or NATO forces.

"This report was to be presented to a Congressional position as support for the lobbying effort **to convince Congress to legally sanction the shipment of these missiles to the Afghan rebels.**

"We discussed Michael's proposed modification of Chinese 107 MM rockets and how to reconfigure the package into a backpack portable effective artillery counter battlery system.

"We discussed Michael's connection with the Chinese weapons position, Norinco, to provide the basic components for the unassembled rocket system. We discussed the modification and assembly of these 107 MM rockets and their launchers at a facility in **Pakistan** known as the Pakistan Ordinance Works.

"It was my understanding from the discussion that we were working on a legally sanctioned arms assistance project to the Afghan rebels and that Ralph Olberg was working through the Afghan desk at the State Department as well as through Senator Humphreys office. "This was subsequently confirmed by journalist Danny Casolaro who was recently `suicided.'

"Olberg indicated a potential turf battle problem with certain factions of the CIA and his group MSH (Management Science For Health). In negotiations and/or lobbying efforts with Congress, the CIA MSH people were arguing that Ralph and Tim Osman's group did not truly represent the leadership of the Afghan rebel resistance.

"Tim and Ralph proposed calling their people and having an unprecedented leadership meeting in Washington D.C. to prove that their group did in fact represent the full leadership of the Mujahaden.

"When I recently called Ralph, he denied that the above meeting had taken place and then after prodding, he finally admitted to it and he asked me not to talk about it. This five page statement is true and correct to the best of my knowledge. Ted L. Gunderson."

******

Later in my investigation, I obtained from Michael Riconosciuto's files in the desert, a handwritten note from "T.G." to "Michael" which read as follows: "Raymond is arriving at LAX 7:55 p.m. Air Canada via Flight 793 from Toronto. Will have to go through Customs. **This will give us another member for our drug/arms operation."** The note gave a telephone number where "T.G." could be reached. "Raymond," referred to in the note, is presumably Raymond Lavas, Gunderson's former forensic's expert during his tenure in the FBI.

******

Michael's trial was not going well. He called and asked me to contact R.J. and bring him to my house. Michael was ready to talk **he wanted me to set up a phone conversation in which he could preliminarily open negotiations for entry into the Federal Witness Protection Program.** I was out of my depth here. I had no idea whether R.J. would cooperate with such a request. Nevertheless, I called him and related Michael's proposal. He said he had no authority to approve such a request, but he would take the information and pass it along.

He arrived at my home early the following week and Michael called as scheduled. Excerpts from that first taperecorded conversation went as follows: (Michael did most of the talking) " ... In the Fresno area, there was a group of people known as the **Fresno Company,** and the Bernard brothers were involved in it and Jamie Clark was involved and all of these people seemed to have charmed lives ...

"The Company was originally out of Lexington, Kentucky and Mena, Arkansas. Brian Leighton was the assistant U.S. Attorney who was the most effective person in formulating a strategy in the Justice Department to go after these people.

"We recognized what they were, for what they were, at that time, and there were a few ATF guys down in Los Angeles that recognized them for what they were, OK? **Here was a group of over 300 people, most of them exlaw enforcement and exmilitary, exintelligence people involved in a major drug and smuggling operation. And they were involved in compromising activities. The bottom line was espionage.**

"And all Leighton served to do was vaccinate the group against further penetration. Just hardened them. And all the major sources that were developed from inside turned up dead. A federal judge in Texas turned up dead.

" ... This is a nasty bunch of people. And they're still alive and well. Now where that dovetails into my current situation, **is in 1984 I was involved with Robert Booth Nichols who owns Meridian Arms Corporation and is a principle in F.I.D.C.O., First Intercontinental Development Corporation.** The CEO of FIDCO is George Pender and Bob Maheu was Vice President ...

"FIDCO was an NSC [National Security Council] corporate cutout. FIDCO was created to be the corporate vehicle to secure the financing for the reconstruction of the cities of Beirut and Damour in Lebanon. And they were working out of an office in **Nicosia, Cyprus.**

" ... And here I got involved with a group of people that were all high profile and should have been above reproach. FIDCO had a companion company called Euramae Trading which operated througout the Middle East. I came in contact with the PROMISE software (unintelligible). Euramae had a distribution contract with several Arab countries and I was asked to evaluate the hardware platforms they had chosen. That was IBM/AS400 stuff ...

" ... That had come from IBM Tel Aviv but it came through a cutout, Link Systems, because they couldn't deal directly with the Arabs.

"And I came across a guy named Michael T. Hurley and I thought he worked for the State Department but it turned out he was incountry attache for the DEA in Nicosia, Cyprus. [Nicosia is the capital of the island of Cyprus, off the coast of Lebanon]. Now, the DEA had no real presence in Lebanon. Neither did anybody else, including the Israelis. They had their usual network of contacts but it was very ineffective. **The only way to penetrate that situation, was to get into the drug trade**.

"Euramae got into the drug trade and I was told that it was a fully sanctioned NSC directed operation, which it turns out that it was ... **All those operations were bonafide and all the people who were in them were definitely key government people,** although they were not who they said they were.

"They all worked for different agencies other than was stated. Probably part of the normal disinformation that goes with that. And I was technical advisor for FIDCO and we had auspices through the government of Lebanon to get in and out of Lebanon.

"But as far as going to the eastern part of Lebanon, unless you were connected with the drug trade, your chances were slim coming out unscathed ... They built a network throughout the Bekaa Valley, and [Robert Booth] Nichols ... he is under Harold Okimoto from the Hawaiian Islands.

"Harold Okimoto was represented to me as being an intelligence person, which he is. He has worked under the auspices of [Frank] Carlucci for years. [Carlucci was former CIA deputy director and former Defense secretary]. Apparently Harold performed services for the U.S. government during World War II. He's of Japanese ancestry. I guess he was rewarded for services well done.

" ... Harold operates through a company called Island Tobacco Corporation. He has contracts for all the condiments at all the casinos in Atlantic City, in Reno, in Vegas, in Macao, China ... he's got contacts in Honolulu, the Orient ... a couple of Jews he knows in Bankok ... and there is a casino, no a city about 15 miles north of Beruit that Harold has his fingers in.

"When FIDCO was wheeling and dealing on financing for the reconstruction of the infrastructure of Beirut, they were making sweetheart deals with Syrian mobsters and the brother of the president of Syria, Hafez Assad.

" ... The intelligence people in their infinite wisdom decided to capitalize on the longstanding battle between Rifat Assad and his group and the Jafaar family. Selectively they were backing both people, but they were also playing them off against one another, developing networks. They got a bunch of prominent Syrians thoroughly compromised and they were in tow in the intelligence game. And they had people that could get me in and out of the Bekaa Valley, even out of certain areas of Syria.

"From an intelligence standpoint, it was a success. **But to maintain the credibility of those intelligence operations the heroin had to flow.** To make it real. **And the stuff was starting to accumulate in a warehouse outside of Larnaca.** "I personally was in a warehouse where Hurley and George Pender and George Marcobie (phonetic spelling) told me there was **upwards of twentytwo tons.** And even though it was packaged for shipment, the smell of it in that closed warehouse was overpowering. **You know, white heroin like that** has a certain odor because of the way it's processed.

"**They had authorization for what they called `controlled deliveries' into the United States. And**

they would target certain cities and then follow the stuff out, ostensibly unmasking the network and conducting prosecutions.

"However, the operation became perverted at the U.S. end of the pipeline. Controlled heroin shipments were doubled, sometimes tripled, and only one third of the heroin was returned to the DEA.

"At a certain transfer point at the airport in Larnaca, the excess baggage from the original controlled delivery would be allowed to go through. I was given the names of the narcotics people who were handling that. But there were a couple of agents who were on the up and up, and they had suspicions.

"An intelligence agent who worked with DIA is now deceased. His name was Tony Asmar and he got on to the operation early on, and started going toe to toe with Hurley [DEA]. He died in a bomb blast and it was ascribed to terrorists. And it actually was terrorists who did it, but his cover was deliberately blown. Myself and others suspected Hurley and Bob Nichols and Glen Shockley were responsible for that ... "

******

After researching Michael Riconosciuto's information, R.J. noted to me that Michael gave mostly valid information, but he could not prove that Michael had been involved. **He did, however, verify (through Customs) that Michael HAD been in Lebanon,** but he could not verify the details of the drug operation.

Michael responded (on a taped message to R.J.) by visually recounting the DEA apartment/condo in Nicosia, Cyprus: "The DEA had a condo, I think it was on Columbra (phonetically spelled) Street, in Nicosia, Cyprus [off the coast of Lebanon].

"They had a ham radio station there. It was an ICOM single side band amateur radio setup, with a linear ..."

"Were you actually there?" I asked. Michael quipped, "Yes, I was there," then continued. "I can describe the antenna system, on the top floor and the way it's wired up and everything. Unless you were there, you wouldn't know it was ICOM equipment.

"Now, the game plan with Euramae and Hurley's operation ..." Pause. " ... You need to understand that the airport in Lebanon was closed down. I took the ferry from Larnaca to Jounieb. Now Jounieb was slightly south of where the casino city was and the casino city was intact. Beirut was a nightmare, and so was Damour, because the PLO destroyed the infrastructure by burrowing bunkers, and there was no water, electricity or phones. It was a combat zone.

"The Syrian mob controlled the Casino du Liban in a little city north of Beirut. **It was used as a front by narcotics people.** Island Tobacco, owned by Harold Okimoto, sells all the cigarettes there. Now, I could give you the names of the families. They pitted them off against one another. F.I.D.C.O. was to finance the reconstruction of the infrastructure of the cities of Beirut and Damour. Deals were cut as to who got what concessions. There were certain families, like the ElJorr family that had to be placated. And there was Rifat Assad and his group. "Tony Asmar figured out what was going on with Hurley, **that they were shipping `noncontrolled' loads of heroin back to the U.S.. They killed Tony ..."**

| Chapter 6, Part 1 | Chapter 6, Part 3 | Table of Contents |

The Last Circle - Chapter 6

"What were the names of the people you were working for over there?," I asked. Michael's time was always limited on the phone.

"Ok, there was a man named Maurice Ganem. He had a relative, either a brother or a cousin, who is a senior DEA official with Michael Hurley. I can't remember his name right now. **Anyways, Maurice was agency, you know, in country, in Lebanon.** And Maurice and I and George Pender worked together."

"Which agency? CIA or DEA?," I asked.

"CIA." Michael continued. " ... And then there was Danny Habib. Danny Habib and Bob Nichols worked out of Cario (phonetic spelling) and Italy."

"And Bob was NSA or ..." "No, Bob was NSC at that time."

"George Pender and Bob Clark were the high level contacts on all of this. Bob Clark got drummed out because he was clean. And McFarland then took over, OK?"

"Uh huh."

"So, it was George Pender and McFarland and **Michael McManus[Assistant to President Reagan at the White House]."**

I asked, "What was your involvement with that particular operation?"

"I handled communications protocol. All the communications and financial transactions. **If I could get my records on line I could show all the money flows, everything."**

******

Michael called back later that day and we continued our conversation. He was intent on talking to someone in FinCen (Financial Crimes Enforcement Network). " ... The keystone cops are working on my defense. You know it's really an ordeal. Have you talked to R.J. again?"

"No Mike, he's not giving much information."

"Listen, tell him that not only am I willing to polygraph, but I need some expert help and I think he needs some expert help. In the league we're playing in, the only guys we can get that have the wherewithall are with FinCen. That stands for Financial Crimes Enforcement Network. Get me a technical guy that speaks my language."

"Alright, Mike ..."

"I'm talking about Swift Chips. That stands for Clearing House Interbank Payment System, Ok?"

"Right."

"Im mad, OK?"

"Uh huh."

"I'm real mad. The government has all my files and records. They've got all of my optical storage disks. Each of those optical storages, 130 of them, contains 20,000 plus pages. They jacked me around so bad ..."

"Mike ..."

" ... Get an expert that speaks my language, and I'll tell him everything I know and he can do so much damage, they won't need my testimony or anything else."

"Mike, everything you know about what?"

"Tell R.J. it goes all the way back to the Cayman Islands and the Bahamas and Castle Bank. Norm Caspar ... Resorts International Bank ..."

"How'd you get this stuff?"

"I handled the money for them, OK?"

"For who?"

" ... For the Wackenhut people. For Norm Caspar who was a Wackenhut employee during all of this. Now, there was the Workers Bank in Columbia. I can't pronounce the Spanish name for it, I just know it as Workers Bank. I set up their virtual dead-drops ..."

"What's that?"

"It's a way to get around A.C.H. reconciliations on a daily basis. It'll take an expert, you know, I can't even talk to a normal human being about this ..."

"O.K."

" ... And the bottom line here is Bob Nichols and Gilbert Rodriguez, Michael Abbell, whose now an attorney in D.C., but he was with the criminal section of the Justice Department and Harold Okimoto, and Jose Londodo, and Glenn Shockley are all in bed together. (Three years after this conversation, Michael Abbell was indicted for laundering money for the Cali Cartel).

"Now Ted Gunderson ..."

"Mike, have you got any paperwork on that?"

"Now, wait a minute. Gunderson was physically with me when Wayne Reeder, Peter Zokosky and his wife and several of Wayne Reeder's lieutenants, Bob Nichols and his wife, Harold Okimoto, George Pender, Deborah Pender, Dill Pender, and myself were all together ..."

" ... Where?"

" ... At Wayne Reeders country club, golf club, in Indio, California. And Bob discussed openly in front of Ted Gunderson and myself and everyone present bragged about Glenn Shockley and Jose Londono having 3,500 soldiers. It's now almost double that ..."

"What does that mean? What are the soldiers?"

Mike: "R.J. will know what it means."

"Alright. OK."

"This took place in 1983. I have correspondence on the things we were doing. But I was in fear of my life because Bob was starting to act irrational. The guy was getting drunk all the time, waving a gun out of the car window, shooting in the air, you know, just really doing a mind trip on me. I've been on the run ever since ..."

"Listen, Mike, what do you need from FinCen?"

"If I had help from the FinCen people, I could reconstruct my files. Tell them that I need two types of computers. I need a VAX 11730 set up with two RLO II disks; one RA80 and a TU80 tape drive. That's one package. And then I need a VAX 3900 computer. Now the reason why I need the older, slower VAX and I know where to get all this stuff, no problem, I've got the VAX's in Southern California, but I need a place to set them up and somebody to operate them, and just follow my instructions."

"Alright."

"Now, the VAX Series 3900 machine ... it's too complicated to go into what mass storage devices, but those are the two levels of machines I need.

"Ok, I'm thinking about going to visit your wife in Southern California, do you want us to bring those computers up here?"

"No, No! No, leave them where they're at. Tell R.J. to find someone at FinCen. If we move them around, we're going to wreck them. I'm not trying to talk down to R.J., but this is too far above him."

"Mike, **Raymond Lavas** turned some of your disks over to the Jack Brooks investigative committee (House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw)."

"Yeah, I know. There's no data on those disks. What that is, is that is a subset of VAX B.M.S., OK? What I do is I modify some of the VAX BMS routines to activate a one time pad encryption scheme. That's why I have to have two RLO2 drives on the VAX 11730, because one RLO2 Platter is a system planner, the other one is the one time pad. The data is on a 1625 BPI 9 track tape on the TU80 tape drive. That's the system configuration."

"If you say so."

"Now, R.J. needs to put me in touch with somebody he trusts at FinCen. There's about 120 experts there. There are a few guys there that speak my language.

"What's the encryption key?"

"Well, they're ten digit numbers ... it's a one time pad, but it has a pseudorandom, prime number expansion system ..."

"Mike, do you have access to PROMISE through this system?"

"What? Oh, I've got access to PROMISE, I've got access to FOIMS ..."

"Well, PROMISE is the one that's going to get you off the hook in court."

"Ok, I understand that. But PROMISE and FOIMS are one and the same. Now they will say no, that's not true, but in Virginia where the FBI has their center, and where the Justice Department has a center in D.C., they're both Amdahl mainframes, OK?"

"Yes."

" ... You see, I want that RLO II Platter out of the hands of the Brooks Committee and into the hands of somebody who'll do with it what I tell them to do. I don't want somebody to run it up without first getting my instruction."

"Does it have to be that particular one?"

"Yes, either that or it will take me six months to rewrite the subset. They want me to give them the codes to unravel everything. If I did, they wouldn't know what to do with it anyway. They'd make a mess out of things."

"Mike, what are you going to provide to FinCen?"

"I'm going to show them how these boys handled the life blood of the cash flow on a day to day basis. I'm going to unmask the whole operation ..."

"Anything specific on Robert Booth Nichols?"

Mike: **"Nichols is Harold Okimoto's godson. He's also Renee Hanner's (phonetic sp.) boy, and Wolfgang Fosog's (phonetic sp.) boy."**

" ... And who are they?"

"The FinCen people will know. There's also Octon Potnar "

"Alright. Well, if I'm going to play around with this, I don't want to be in the dark ... I could end up like Danny. I've got to know what I'm dealing with ."

"If you get the right guy at FinCen, he'll jump at this, OK? We've got to start right now. We're talking about some time getting things up and rolling to where we're fluid and flexible and functional in their system internationally. They'll be able to watch the daily transactions ..."

******

Michael continued to request of R.J. that he be connected with someone "trustworthy" at FinCen, to no avail. He also requested to be placed into a Witness Protection Program, again offering to assemble his computer equipment in a secret location and provide FinCen with a day by day view of Mob (and MCA Corporation) illegal banking transactions.

According to Michael, before his arrest, he had been handling gold transfers, money laundering, "virtual dead drops," altered ACH daily reconciliations and other transactions for various underworld figures including Robert Booth Nichols, Harold Okimoto, George Pender, Wayne

Reeder, Michael A. McManus, Norm Caspar, Gilbert Rodriguez, Jose Londono, Glen Shockley, and others.

Michael continued to call and give me taperecorded (at his request) messages to pass on to R.J. The man accepted the messages, but they just went down the big, black hole and never emerged again.

One message in particular later became significant to me. The message from Michael to R.J. went as follows: (Quote) **"There are three dozen C130's down at the Firebird Lake Airstrip on the Gila Indian Reservation in Arizona. Check out J & G Aviation, it's an FBO. The Fresno Company is alive and well down there.**

"The real activity is not at Mirana, it's at Firebird Lake Airstrip. Other airlines operating at Firebird are Beigert, Macavia International, Pacific Air Express, Evergreen and Southern Air.

"Question to R.J.: How much cocaine or heroin can be transported in a C130? Do you want the C130, or do you want the guys who orchestrate it?

"Do a matrix link analysis, then sit down and pick the targets. Otherwise, you will tip off the others and the proof will dry up.

" ... Brian Leighton made 29 arrests out of five hundred within the Fresno Company. All Leighton succeeded in doing was to `vaccinate' the Fresno Company against further penetration."

Riconosciuto said he had a fragile window into this organization (The Company), but Leighton and others were causing the window to close by being too public about their investigation.

The message continued regarding Robert Booth Nichols: "Bob Nichols runs Glen Shockley. Glen Shockley runs Jose Londono. I [Michael] sat with Bob Nichols and Mike Abbell. Bob handed him $50,000 cash to handle an internal affairs investigation that the Justice Department conducted which would have led to the extradition of Gilbert and Miguel Rodriguez and Jose Londono.

"Bob Nichols told me [Michael] that it was necessary to `crowbar' the investigation because they were `intelligence people.'

"Michael wanted to hand The Company and Bob Nichols over to FinCen in exchange for entry into the Witness Protection Program, but nothing was forthcoming from R.J.

It was two years before I learned who Mike Abbell, Gilbert Rodriguez and Jose Londono were. **Abbell had worked in the criminal division of the Justice Department,** according to Bill Hamilton. Hamilton added that, to his knowledge, Abbell had left the DOJ in 1982 and went directly into the Bogota, Columbia law offices of Kaplan and Russin.

A member of our loosely coalesced investigative team, George Williamson, a former San Francisco Chronicle reporter, obtained Abbell's background from library directories: From 1973 to 1979 Abbell was staff assistant to the Assistant U.S. Attorney General. **From 1979 to 1981 he was the Director of the Office of International Affairs of the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice.**

After leaving the Department of Justice in 1982, Abbell became counsel at the law firm of Kaplan, Russin and Becchi, **with offices in San Francisco, California Bogota, Columbia Santo Domingo in the Dominican Republic Bangkok, Thailand Tapai, Taiwan New York Madrid, Spain and Miami, Florida.**

As of this writing, Abbell was listed as working in his own firm with a partner named Bruno Ristau (Ristau and Abbell) in Washington D.C. Ristau was also formerly with the law firm of Kaplan, Russin and Becchi. And from 1958 to 1963 he was an attorney in the Internal Security Division and Civil Division of the Department of Justice. He was also with the DOJ from 1963 to 1981 where he was Director of the Office of Foreign Litigation. Ristau speaks German, Polish, Spanish and French. He was Chairman of the Division of International Law of the Washington D.C. Bar from 1971 to 1973. In the American Bar Association from 1981 to 1984, he was Chairman of the Committee of Private International Law Practice. He is also a member of the American Society of International Law. Ristau is obviously a heavyweight in the field of international law.

A TIME magazine article, dated July 4, 1994, described **Gilbert Rodriguez as a "leader of the Cali [Columbian drug] cartel, which controls 80% of the world's cocaine trade."** The newly elected president of Columbia, Ernesto Samper Pizano, was accused of taking $3.7 million in campaign funds from Rodriguez, which in effect, put Samper in league with Columbia's drug lords.

Three audio tapes of conversations between Rodriguez and Samper's campaign manager, Santiago Medina, had been handed over to U.S. State Department officials before the election, but nothing was done. **DEA officials were furious, stating to TIME that "No one did anything. They [the State Department] allowed this travesty to take place. Everybody, including the U.S. government, is participating in this coverup."**

The State Department responded, "We can't interfere with elections."

I pulled out a book from a dusty corner of my library entitled, "Cocaine Politics" by Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, and looked up the name Gilbert Rodriguez. On page 83, **Gilberto Rodriguez Orejuela and Jose Santacruz Londono were mentioned as part of the early leadership of the Cali cartel.** On page 88 it was noted that the "Calibased Ocampo and Gilberto Rodriguez had been the principal targets of a major DEA Centac investigtion that resulted in indictments of Rodriguez in Los Angeles and New York in 1978."

At that time, President Jimmy Carter's Human Rights foreign policy in Latin America distanced the CIA under **Stansfield Turner (later a Wackenhut Board Director)** from any deathsquad interdiction. The

Carter administration was also reportedly reluctant to go after Ocampo because of its determination in 1977 to sign a Panama Canal treaty with General Torrijos, even though Torrijos and family members were heavily involved at the highest levels of the world cocaine trade.

The Cali cartel, described in a 1983 Customs report, laundered its profits through Miami banks, one of which was Northside Bank of Miami, owned by Gilberto Rodriguez. Rodriguez popped up again as the leader of a delegation to the "cocaine summit conference" in Panama City in the early 1980's. **Yet, Rodriguez's name was subsequently removed from DEA reports under the Ronald Reagan administration. In fact, according to disgruntled DEA agents, some of whom suspected they were stumbling into a CIA connection, the case was never pursued past the indictment level and the Centac 21 task force was totally dismantled when Reagan and Bush came to office**.

So, Gilbert Rodriguez and Jose Londono were revealed to be high ranking members of the Cali drug Cartel in Columbia. I wondered if they were also CIA intelligence operatives? Or CIA drug operatives? Or both, as Manuel Noriega had been? Noriega had ultimately been ousted when he chose to back the violent Medellin cartel, George Bush's target. If in fact Gilberto Rodriguez had been compromised and forced to cooperate with U.S. officials after his 1978 indictment, and taking into account his strategic position of leadership in the Cali cartel and his alleged funding of the newly elected president of Columbia in 1994, it would indeed place the U.S. government in a powerful controlling position within the cartels today. In fact, it would place CIA drug operatives behind the election of the president of Columbia! The implications were earthshaking.

******

It is important to point out here that, on August 5, 1991, Michael Riconosciuto had called Bill Hamilton at Inslaw and asked him to obtain information on former DOJ official Mike Abbell. Riconosciuto planned to trade information on Abbell, Rodriguez, Nichols and others to the FBI in exchange for entry into a Witness Protection Program.

But Hamilton, pressed for time and not comprehending the significance of the "drug" connection, **had turned the investigation over to Danny Casolaro.** Riconosciuto had stressed to Hamilton that **Abbell's activities might be risky to track** and he should not take the information lightly.

That same day, August 5, **Casolaro called Bob Bickel,** the Texas oil engineer who once worked as an informant for the Customs Bureau, **to discuss Mike Abbell. Bickel later confirmed that Casolaro had in fact discussed Abbell, Nichols and Rodriguez at length during that last phone conversation**. **And he added, "Danny confronted Robert Booth Nichols about his relationship with Mike Abbell."**

Hamilton and Casolaro secretly devised a plan whereby Danny would conduct an inquiry with the Department of Justice, but would couch a number of other inquiries in with the Mike Abbell inquiry to avoid alerting authorities to the real "focus" of their search.

An October 15, 1991 Village Voice investigative piece, entitled "The Last Days of Danny Casolaro," by James Ridgeway and Doug Vaughan, shed further light on Casolaro's investigation during those last five days: (Note that most of Danny's last calls focused on "drug connections.") On Monday, August 5th, "Riconosciuto called Bill Hamilton from his jail in Tacoma. **He wanted some information about a former Justice Department attorney [Mike Abbell], and warned Hamilton that getting the information might be dangerous. Hamilton called Casolaro to help him find out about the attorney.**

"That same day, Danny called Bob Bickel to say that he was "getting close to the source, and he would soon go to Martinsburg and bring back the head of the Octopus."

Tuesday, August 6: Casolaro had been typing steadily since Monday, and by afternoon, he'd finished. Olga, his housekeeper, helped him pack a leather tote bag. She also remembered him packing a thick sheaf of papers into a dark brown or black briefcase. Danny walked out the door saying, "I have all my papers ... Wish me luck. I'll see you in a couple of days." That was the last time Olga saw Casolaro alive.

Wednesday, August 7: According to Inslaw records, Casolaro called the Hamiltons in the afternoon, and was put on hold. Before Hamilton could get free, he had hung up. At some time on that same day, **Riconosciuto called Hamilton again** to ask for the information about the Justice Department lawyer [Mike Abbell]. Hamilton called Casolaro, but he had already left for Martinsburg.

| Chapter 6, Part 4 | Chapter 6, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

The Last Circle - Chapter 6

Thursday, August 8: Casolaro called Danielle Stalling and asked her to set up appointments for him the next week with a former police officer, now employed as a private investigator, **to learn more about the Laotian warlord Kuhn Sa's proposed Golden Triangle drug trade.**

Friday, August 9: By now Hamilton was starting to worry. I talk to Danny everyday," Hamilton said. "I had never [gone without speaking to him for so long] before, so I called Bob Nichols in Los Angeles and asked whether he had heard from Danny recently."

Nichols told Hamilton "Yes," he had spoken with Danny late Monday night [August 5th] and he had been "euphoric." Nichols told Hamilton he (Nichols) was taking off for Europe that evening.

It was at that point that Olga, Danny's housekeeper, received four or five threatening phone calls. The first was about 9 a.m., a man's voice, in good English, said, "I will cut his [Danny's] body and throw it to the sharks."About a half hour later, another call came in. "Drop dead," the man's voice said.

Saturday, August 10: At 12:30 that afternoon, a maid knocked on the door of room 517 at the Sheraton Martinsburg Inn. Nobody answered, so she used her passkey to open the door; though it had both a security bolt and a chain lock on the inside, neither one was attached. When she glanced into the bathroom, she saw a lot of blood on the tile floor and screamed. Another hotel maid came into the bathroom and saw a man's nude body lying in the bloodfilled tub. There was blood not only on the tile floor but splattered up onto the wall above the tub as well. The police were called to the scene.

At 8:30 p.m. that night, unaware that Danny's body had been found, Olga, Danny's housekeeper, returned to Casolaro's house to look for him. The phone rang. A man's voice said, "You son of a bitch. You're dead." It was not until Monday, August 12, that authorities notified family and friends that Danny Casolaro was dead.

Had Danny in fact called Robert Booth Nichols on Monday, August 5th, and confronted him about his relationship with Mike Abbell? Had he told Nichols he planned to meet with FBI officials from Lexington, Kentucky? And what about FBI agent Thomas Gates, Nichols' antagonist? SPY magazine's article on Danny Casolaro indicated that **he spoke with Gates three days before his death, relating a conversation in which Nichols had warned him to abandon the investigation.**

Riconosciuto later conceded that he had tried repeatedly to reach Hamilton and Casolaro between August 5 and 10th t**o warn them NOT to mention Abbell or Rodriguez to Nichols, but it had been too late.** Bill Hamilton told one investigator that he did NOT know WHY Riconosciuto was inquiring about Mike Abbell - until AFTER Danny's death.

Bob Bickel's confirmation that Danny WAS trailing Mike Abbell in the last days before his death

indicate that Danny may have unknowingly stepped into the largest narcotics trafficking/ intelligence operation the world.

******

Another indepth article came to my attention which further corroborated Danny's investigation of Gilberto Rodriguez. "The Strange Death of Danny Casolaro," by Ron Rosembaum in Vanity Fair's December 1991 issue included an interview with Michael Riconosciuto. According to Rosenbaum, Danny's investigations were taking him into areas that involved dangerous knowledge and dangerous characters. It was Danny's habit of "bouncing" Riconosciuto's stories off Robert Nichols that put him in peril, Riconosciuto told Rosenbaum. **One of the things he reportedly "bounced" involved a major heroinrelated sting operation.**

Another involved Riconosciuto's claim about an "effort by the Cali cocaine cartel to derail the extradition of an alleged Columbian kingpin called Gilberto."

Nichols "went ballistic," according to Riconosciuto, when Danny bounced the Gilberto (Rodriguez) matter off him. Riconosciuto said he tried to warn Danny. "I called from that day on it was on a late Monday Tuesday, Wednesday, all the way through the weekend when they found Danny [dead]," he said. "Every day I was calling the Hamiltons, asking if anybody had heard from Danny. And I was frantic."

Labeled by Rosenbaum as the "resident demon of the labyrinth," Riconosciuto said "Danny's theory was different from the typical megaconspiracy theory. Danny was dealing with real people and real crimes."

Rosenbaum asked Riconosciuto about the **germ warfare technology** he had found in Danny's notes. Riconosciuto admitted that he had learned about "horrible things" going on at the Cabazon Indian reservation but did not elaborate on the subject. Wrote Rosenbaum, "This is the labyrinth [that] Riconosciuto was leading Danny into the one he died in."

Just days before his death, Danny had planned to visit the reservation. In his notes were cryptic references to **slowacting brain viruses** like Mad Cow Disease, which could be used against targeted people **by slipping the virus into meat pies.** Riconosciuto told Rosenbaum that Danny was "concerned" that he may have been a target of this virus. "That was one of the reasons he [Danny] had such an obsession with this story. He felt he had been hit by these people."

Accordingly, Riconosciuto filled Danny's head with allegations of Robert Booth Nichols' sinister, international covertworld connections. **He painted a picture linking Nichols to organized crime syndicates, the fearsome Japanese Yakuza, and various CIA and British intelligence plots emanating from Nichols' friendship with "a legendary Bondish Brit known as `Double Deuce' [Sir Denis Kendall]."**

Riconosciuto said Nichols was the key to Danny's Octopus. But Danny was receiving warnings from Riconosciuto's counterpart as well. Robert Booth Nichols had flown to Washington D.C. from Puerto Rico to warn Danny to stay away from Riconosciuto.

Danny's girlfriend, Wendy Weaver, had been present at one of the meetings at the Four Seasons Hotel bar when Nichols issued the warning: "You don't know how bad this guy Riconosciuto is ... he might not get you today, he might not get you next month. He might get you two years from now. If you say anything against him he will kill you."

Nichols repeated the warning several times, said Weaver. "At least five times." Weaver described Nichols as "very charming, very handsome," but said "it [the meeting] was a weird night, so weird."

Another friend of Danny's met Nichols at a luncheon at Clyde's in Tysons Corner where Nichols allegedly informed them that he had just been asked to become "minister of state security" on the island of Dominica. Reportedly, the island was going to be transformed into a CIA base. The friend, who spoke to Rosenbaum on condition of anonymity, said Nichols was "very slick, very civilizedappearing" ... "oozing intrigue," but he added that he had never witnessed a performance like the one that ensued.

After lunch **Danny had pulled his friend aside and showed him a purported FBI wiretap summary on Nichols. The summary was part of FBI agent Thomas Gates's affidavit in Nichols' slander suit against him. The summary linked Nichols to the Yakuza and to the Gambino crime family as a money launderer**.

Danny's friend had been shocked. "You just put me in a meeting with this man and didn't tell me what the hell why didn't you tell me before?," he asked Danny. Danny said he wanted to see how Nichols would react. The friend told Rosenbaum, "In other words, he gaffed me with a hook and tossed me in the water to see if the Octopus would move!"

Danny HAD in fact been receiving death threats on the phone. One threat reported by his housekeeper, "You're dead, you son of a bitch," which came hours AFTER Danny's body had been found, ruled out Danny himself as a possible source of the threats. And his prophesy to his brother, Tony Casolaro, "If anything happens to me it won't be an accident," made it unmistakably clear that Danny did, indeed, feel threatened.

Nevertheless, Danny appeared upbeat to most of the people he talked to prior to his death. Dr. Tony Casolaro, a specialist in pulmonary medicine, told Vanity Fair that he didn't believe his brother committed suicide because Danny was so excited and upbeat about his investigation on that last Monday when he saw him.

The autopsy examination of Danny's brain had revealed possible symptoms of Multiple Schlerosis, but friends and family dismissed this as irrelevant because Danny had never complained of symptoms or, to their knowledge, known of the disease, if he had it.

Tony was also troubled by a number of facts, one of which was Danny's current papers and files which he took to West Virginia were missing from his motel room. His body had been embalmed even before family members were notified of the death, and the motel room had been commercially cleaned before any type of investigation, other than a cursory look at the death scene by police, could occur.

In his Vanity Fair article, Ron Rosenbaum wrote that he had obtained one of **Casolaro's surviving notebooks and found mentioned under the heading of August 6, four days before Danny's death, the name "Gilberto."** It read: "Bill Hamilton August 6. **MR ... also brought up `Gilberto.'"** Rosenbaum did not speculate publicly who Gilberto might be, but it was obviously Gilberto Rodriguez, head of the Cali Cartel, at that time deeply involved with Michael Abbell, formerly of the Department of Justice.

******

A dozen or so drafts of Casolaro's proposed manuscript along with notes and phone bills had been sent to the Western Historical Manuscript Collection at the University of Missouri by his brother, Dr. Tony Casolaro.Tony Casolaro had sent the material to the University because, at one time, the IRE (Investigative Reporters and Editors) Association, headquartered at the University, had researched the fatal carbombing of reporter Don Bolles in Arizona.

Bolles had been researching a mobconnected gold smuggling operation in that state. Through Tracy Barnett at IRE, I learned that a graduate student at the University had been assigned to catalog all Danny's material for eventual insertion into a data base. In contacting the graduate student, who by then (September 1994) worked for ABC in Houston, Texas, I learned that **few if any journalists had inquired about the notes.**

But, interestingly, Chief Assistant U.S. Attorney Steve Zipperstein from Los Angeles, working for the Department of Justice, had requested copies of Danny's NOTES, but declined Danny's phone records. The graduate student noted that the notes and drafts of Danny's proposed **manuscript focused on a Cabal of intelligence people who, originally consisting of numerous names, were subsequently narrowed down to about eight. One of those names was Glen Shockley. Shockley, of course, was listed on the Board of Directors of F.I.D.C.O. along with Robert Booth Nichols.**

Shockley was also a corporate partner in Meridian International Logistics, headed by Nichols. Shockley was also a CIA contract employee (according to several sources) who allegedly "ran Jose Londono" of the Cali Cartel. This according to Riconosciuto's taped interview with government agents while negotiating for Witness Protection.

I purchased everything of any significance pertaining to Danny's writings and documents, including the FBI wire tap summaries which corroborated everything I had learned to date.

In reviewing the summaries, it became apparent that the FBI had inadvertently stumbled onto a CIA drug trafficking operation which included high ranking La Cosa Nostra figures, the Gambino crime family and the Japanese Yakuza.

One affidavit in support of an application to intercept wire communications over the telephone listed names of those to be intercepted: **Robert Booth Nichols, Eugene Giaquinto (then President of MCA Corportion Entertainment Division, and corporate partner with Nichols in Meridian International Logistics)**, Angelo Commito, Edward Sciandra, Michael Del Gaizo, Joseph Garofalo, and others.

The purpose of the interceptions was to determine "source, type and quantity of narcotics/ controlled substances, methods and means of delivery, and the source of funding for purchasing of narcotics/controlled substances."

The intercepted conversations read like a "Who's Who" of organized crime. It was also apparent that Eugene Giaquinto enjoyed a special relationship with John Gotti.

******

Ann Klenk, a long time friend of Danny Casolaro's and former associate of Washington D.C. columnist Jack Anderson, held all his personal notes which were not sent to the University. In a September 14, 1994 phone interview, she noted that the last time she talked to Danny, that last Monday before his death, he told her he'd cracked the Inslaw case.

I asked her, "Do you think he resolved that?"

Ann responded, "Oh, yes. I KNOW he did. He TOLD me he did. He said, `Ann, I broke Inslaw.' And I said, `Geez, Danny that's great!' But, I never asked him what he found because he was very despondent about it. He said, `You can have it. You and Jack [Anderson] can have the story. I don't even want it.'"

Ann said Danny was disgusted and related their last conversation: "I said, `Danny, you worked on this [so long] and now you don't want it?' He said, `It's just a little piece of the puzzle anyway.' **See, Inslaw led him into this, but Danny quickly became more involved with the drug aspects ... with the CIA aspects, with the Wackenhut aspects."**

I said, "I know what you mean, because I followed the same trail."

******

Danny's proposed drafts and notes obtained from Western Historical Manuscript Collection at University of Missouri revealed information never published in mainstream media. Typewritten and handwritten lists of contacts included names and telephone numbers of Ted Gunderson, Raymond Lavas, Robert Nichols, Peter Zokosky, Bob Bickel, Fahim Safar, Earl Brian, Peter Dale Scott, Art

Welmus, John Vanderwerker, Jack Blum, Dr. Harry Fair, Bill Hamilton, Bob Parry, Bill McCoy, and numerous others.

Most of Danny's drafts focused on the Southeast Asian heroin connection, CIA drug money used to finance the Contras, and the ability of terrorists to send missiles containing dangerous chemicals and biological diseases into the U.S.

One typewritten draft, entitled, "Behold, A Pale Horse," described an "international cabal [in Southern California] whose freelance services covered parochial political intrigue, espionage, sophisticated weapon technologies that included biotoxins, **drug trafficking,** money laundering and murder-for-hire." According to Danny, the cabal continues today, "its origins spawned thirty years ago in the shadow of the Cold War."

Casolaro's June - July (1991) phone bills told a story of their own. Having followed Danny's investigative trail for three years, I had an entire directory of phone numbers relating to his inquiries. Most obvious were Danny's numerous calls prior to his death to Robert Booth Nichols in Los Angeles. Most of the calls from Washington D.C. to Los Angeles lasted an average of one to two hours, invariably in the wee hours of the morning 1:50 a.m., 12:36 a.m., 1:13 a.m., 12:18 a.m., etc.

It was also apparent that Danny was riding a seesaw with Nichols and Riconosciuto. He would talk to one, then the other, often on the same day, back and forth for months. Then suddenly, he cut off Riconosciuto and his calls to Nichols increased in frequency.

Other phone numbers matched those of Ted Gunderson, Alan Boyak, a lawyer in Utah, Bo Gritz, Heinrich Rupp and Chuck Hayes, a self-professed (on the Internet) CIA operative. Danny often called Hayes immediately after he spoke with Nichols. Oddly, Hayes never came forward during the official investigation of Danny's death to disclose the content of those conversations.

******

Within six months of Casolaro's death, Riconosciuto was again attempting to trade information in exchange for entry into a Witness Protection Program. But this time, instead of using Casolaro or Bill Hamilton, he was using me to make the contacts.

At Riconosciuto's request, I contacted a man whom I will identify as N.B. at the BATF (Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco & Firearms) in San Francisco. Michael had advised me to call this agent because the BATF was "Treasury Department" as was FinCen.

I set up the phone meeting and Riconosciuto called the San Francisco BATF collect, as scheduled. N.B. listened attentively to Michael, then ran a check on him through the departmental computer system. Shortly thereafter, I received an unnerving phone call.

N.B. advised me in strong terms to "get out of this" while I still could. He said I would end up getting subpoenaed as a witness if I didn't discontinue my investigation. He added that sometimes people got killed or committed suicide when they got involved with Michael Riconosciuto or Robert Booth Nichols.

N.B.'s computer inquiry had bounced back on him. His superior in the BATF had been notified by someone from another agency he didn't say who who had instructed N.B. that he was to have NO further contact with Michael Riconosciuto or me.

When I related this conversation to Michael, he indicated no surprise, but immediately wanted to be put back in touch with R.J. He needed someone in the government with access to his files to verify his credibility and get that information back to Tom Olmstead, his attorney. Regarding the computer inquiry, Riconosciuto explained as follows: "I know what's happening here. Tell R.J. if he uses FOIMS, Field Office Information Management System, and if he leaves an audit trail, he's going to be exposed. There are all sorts of different levels of flags on my name. Whenever the computer gets a hit, the issuing agency is notified as to who made the request and from where it came."

"Mike," I asked, "how can he get around that? I don't understand ..."

"Listen, whenever there's a hit on one of those flags, whether it's a want or [a] warrant, or whether it's simply an administrative interest, unbeknownst to the user who's making the request, his access is audited. Tell R.J. before he starts making inquiries, no matter how discreet he thinks they are, that he should have someone totally uncoupled from him to enter into FOIMS."

"Alright."

"Now," Michael continued, "if he goes into NCIC or NADDIS, ah, NCIC is the least dangerous as far as making inquiries, because NADDIS can track just like FOIMS ..."

"Alright."

"Now, on NCIC there is a `nonelectric' filing on me and he can make the request that way without alerting anyone. If he has trouble checking anything out, tell him I can help him along."

"He can't call you at the jail. How can he get in touch with you?"

"Through my attorney. The minute he [R.J.] gets a line on me, ask him to notify my attorney. Tell him he can check my attorney out through the government. Tom has excellent records with the government."

"Alright."

"Explain to R.J. that I know PROMISE, I know FOIMS inside out. I helped develop that internal tracking audit trail ..."

I had lost all hope of R.J. rescuing Michael Riconosciuto, and I think in his heart, Michael knew that too, but I passed the information along as requested. R.J. politely accepted the information as he always did, then I never heard from him again.

| Chapter 7, Part 1 | Chapter 6, Part 3 |Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 7, Part 1

Through one of Michael's contacts, I was able to obtain the corporate documents on F.I.D.C.O. Corporation (First Intercontinental Development Corporation). This formidable organization lead me straight to the head of The Octopus.The Board of Directors of FIDCO consisted of the following principles:

(1) **Robert Maheu, Sr,** Vice President, Director former FBI agent, former CEO of Howard Hughes Operations, senior consultant to Leisure Industries.

(2) **Michael A. McManus,** Director, Vice President and General Counsel to FIDCO former **Assistant to the President [Reagan] of the United States at the White House in Washington D.C**.

(3) **Robert Booth Nichols,** Director, Sr. Vice President and Chairman of Investment Committee Chief Executive Officer of R.B.N. Companies, International, a holding company for manufacturing and development of high technology electronics, real estate development, construction and international finance.

(4) **George K. Pender**, Director former Director of Pacific Ocean area of Burns & Roe, Inc., an international engineering & construction corporation with active projects on all seven continents of the world. Senior engineer consultant to Burns & Roe, Inc.

(5) Kenneth A. Roe, Director Chairman and President of Burns & Roe, Inc., International engineers and Constructors, a family corporation owned by Kenneth Roe and family. Major current project of the company is the engineering design and construction of the U.S.A. Fast Breeder Nuclear Reactor Plant in conjunction with Westinghouse Electric Corporation which is responsible for the nuclear system supply of steam. Construction value of present business backlog of Burns & Roe, Inc. is in excess of six billion U.S. dollar.

(6) Frances T. Fox, Vice President and Director former General Manager of L.A. International Airport, former Director of Aviation for Howard Hughes Nevada operations, now called Summa Corporation, City Manager of San Jose, California.

(7) **Clint W. Murchison**, Jr. Director Owner of the Dallas Cowboys NFL football team.

(8) William M. Pender, Director and Sr. Vice President licensed contractor, State of California.

(9) **Glen R. Shockley,** Director Consultant to Fortune 500 Companies in business management. Internationally known as financial consultant in funding.

The list of directors was accompanied by a letter dated January 11, 1983 on FIDCO letterhead originating out of Santa Monica, California addressed to Robert Booth Nichols in Marina Del Rey, California. The letter, signed by George K. Pender, briefly referenced a copy of a resolution resulting from a meeting of the Board of Directors of FIDCO.

On April 13, 1983, Robert Booth Nichols wrote a letter to Joseph F. Preloznik in Madison, Wisconsin, outlining proposed arms projects, one of which was to build a two story building of approximately 7500 square feet with concrete walls and floors to house the "R & D position." (I later found the R & D facility referenced in a 1981 Wackenhut Interoffice memorandum as a companion facility to Wackenhut to be constructed on the Cabazon Indian reservation for the assembly of shell casings, propellants, war heads, fuses, combustible cartridge cases and other weapons systems).

Nichols wrote to Preloznik, "Should there be any questions with regard to my credibility, **verification can be made through F.I.D.C.O.** I have enclosed a copy of that appointment."

If in fact, F.I.D.C.O. was a vehicle of The Octopus, then the tentacles of its Board of Directors lead straight to the head. Clint Murchison, Jr. of Dallas, Texas was the son of Clint Murchison, Sr. who, according to Dick Russell, author of the book, "The Man Who Knew Too Much," (pp. 521523) was cut from the same political cloth as H.L. Hunt.

Wrote Russell: "Back in 1951, after General Douglas MacArthur was relieved of his Korean command by President Truman, H.L. Hunt accompanied MacArthur on a flight to Texas for a speaking tour. **Hunt and Murchison were the chief organizers of the proMacArthur forces in Texas.** They would always remember the general standing bareheaded in front of the Alamo, urging removal of the `burden of taxation' from enterprising men like themselves, charging that such restraints were imposed by `those who seek to convert us to a form of socialistic endeavor, leading directly to the path of Communist slavery.'"

According to Russell, Hunt went on to set up a MacArthurforpresident headquarters in Chicago, spending $150,000 of his own money on the general's reluctant 1952 campaign, which eventually fell apart as MacArthur adopted the strident rhetoric of the right wing.

"Still, connections were made," wrote Russell, "Charles Willoughby, for example, was a regular part of the MacArthurHunt entourage and undoubtedly was acquainted with Murchison as well." Both [the Hunts and the Murchisons] cultivated not only powerful people on the far right, but also J. Edgar Hoover, Richard Nixon, organized crime figures, and Lyndon Johnson, whose rise to power emanated directly from his friends in Texas oil.

"Like Hunt, **Murchison was an ardent supporter of Senator Joseph McCarthy's anticommunist crusade. McCarthy came often to the exclusive hotel that Murchson opened in La Jolla, California, in the early 1950's. So did Richard Nixon and J. Edgar Hoover.**

"In 1961, after Nixon had lost the presidential election to JFK the previous year, Murchison sold Nixon a lot in Beverly Hills for only $35,000 **a lot Murchison had financed through a Hoffa loan** which Nixon sold two years later for $86,000.

When Hoover visited the (Murchison) Hotel Del Charro, as he did every summer between 1953 and 1959, Murchison picked up his tab. That amounted to about $19,000 of free vacations for the FBI Director over those years.

Whether Hoover knew it or not, **almost 20 percent of the Murchison Oil Lease Company in Oklahoma was then owned by Gerardo Catena, chief lieutenant to the Genovese crime family.**

By the autumn of 1963, a major scandal was brewing around Bobby Baker, whom Vice President Lyndon Johnson had made secretary of the Senate Democrats in 1955, when LBJ was majority leader. LBJ called Baker "my strong right arm, the last man I see at night, the first I see in the morning."

On October 8, 1963 Baker was forced to resign, as a Senate investigation of his outside business activities began producing sensational testimony on numerous questionable deals. **"Baker's deals were tightly interwoven with the Murchison family and the Mob,"** wrote Dick Russell. "What first attracted the attention of Senate investigators was a lawsuit brought against Baker in 1963 by his associates in a vending company, alleging that he failed to live up to certain bargains. Those associates were, for the most part, Las Vegas gamblers; one of them, Edward Levinson, was a lieutenant of Florida mobster Meyer Lansky, whose Fremont Hotel in Vegas was financed through a Hoffa loan.

"Baker, it later turned out, did considerable business with the Mob in Las Vegas, Chicago, Louisiana, and the Caribbean. Through Baker, Levinson had also gotten to know Clint Murchison."

"Clint Murchison, Jr. [listed on the Board of Directors of FIDCO] tried to persuade the Senate Rules Committee in 1964 that his ownreal estate dealings with Jimmy Hoffa in Florida were `hardly relevant' to the Baker investigation."

Robert Maheu (Senior Vice President and Director of F.I.D.C.O.), was also mentioned in Russell's book, "The Man Who Knew Too Much," (pp. 190). Wrote Russell: "Back in 1960, with then vice president Richard Nixon serving as the White House's liaison to the CIA's Cuban operations, the **CIA** had initiated its long series of assassination attempts against Castro. **The `cutouts' in the operation started with Las Vegas billionaire Howard Hughes's righthand man, Robert Maheu, who got in touch with organizedcrime leaders Sam Giancana, Johnny Rosselli, and Santos Trafficante, Jr.** They in turn enlisted the direct assistance of Cuban exiles ..."

Throughout my conversations with Michael Riconosciuto the names of Robert Booth Nichols, George Pender, Glenn Shockley and Michael McManus (other directors of F.I.D.C.O.) cropped up repeatedly, but I found few references to them in any published books or magazines. **Riconosciuto often stated that George Pender and Glenn Shockley were CIA officials, which I later corroborated through Peter Zokosky, a partner of Robert Booth Nichols's.**

In August, 1994, I did, however, manage to obtain three significant letters with the signatures of **Michael A. McManus and George Pender** on them.

The following letters on F.I.D.C.O. confirm its presence in Lebanon.

Letter No. 1 Written on White House letterhead stationary, dated, **June 29, 1983, from Michael A. McManus, Assistant to the President (Reagan)** to George K. Pender in Santa Monica, California:

"Dear George: It was good to see you again. I appreciate the update you and your associates gave me concerning the status of your efforts in the rebuilding of Lebanon.

"Without question FIDCO seems to have a considerable role to offer particularly in the massive financial participation being made available to the government of Lebanon.

"As you are aware, the United States government is providing financial aid. We are very interested in the success of the rebuilding effort in Lebanon. I will appreciate your continuing to keep me posted. Best personal regards. Sincerely, Michael A. McManus, Assistant to the President."

It is interesting to note that in 1982, one year before the above letter was written, Israel invaded Lebanon in a bid to crush the PLO strongholds there and install the Gamayel family in power. At that time TelAviv was supporting the ultraright Christian Phalange militia . **It was the Christian Phalangist militia which first brought Lebanon into the heroin trade.** And the powerful Christian Gamayel family which led the way in turning to outside forces for money, guns and political support. **Foremost among those sources was the international heroin trafficking network.**

This according to Bill Weinberg, editor of High Times magazine, who wrote the indepth article, "The Syrian Connection" in March 1993. Weinberg also noted that as far back as 1955, U.S. Senate Judiciary Committee hearings learned that **Sami el Khouri, the Gamayel's chief of finances, was importing raw Turkish opium into Lebanon, where it was processed into heroin** and then shipped to Sicily for reexport throughout America and Europe.

El Khouri controlled the Gamayel family's shipping lines, trading, trucking and air freight companies. El Khouri's machine was the Lebanese wing of the French Connection the wing that continued to do business with the Sicilians in a bid to propel the Gamayel family to power.

After the Israeli invasion, **the Lebanese Parliament elected to the presidency Bechir Gamayel who had long been on the CIA payroll.** But before he could take office, Bashir was killed by an assassins bomb, and Bechir's brother, Amin, was installed as president.

The following letter from George Pender, President of FIDCO, to President Amin Gamayel in Beirut is printed in its entirety here.

Letter No. 2 Written on F.I.D.C.O. letterhead stationary, dated July 12, 1983, from George K. Pender, President of **FIDCO, to President Amin Gamayel, Presidential Palace, Beirut, Lebanon.:**

"Dear Mr. President: I had visited Beirut in February and May, 1983 to discuss FIDCO participation in the redevelopment of Lebanon. These meetings were held with the Chamouns, **Maurice Ghanem** and Mourad Baroudy. Of particular interest is the fact that FIDCO offered to arrange the financing of projects considered, provided they were in the government sector. Unfortunately, the response, to date, is dragging and a golden opportunity for Lebanon is slowly dying.

"I had made no effort to see you at that time as I thought it more prudent to delay until I had something more tangible to present. I expressed specific interest in the rebuilding of Damour and Alkhyam. FIDCO has presented these projects to an international Trust with whom we have a close relationship, and we are very confident that we can arrange the funding under International Chamber of Commerce format, provided FIDCO can negotiate turnkey contracts on both projects. We are ready, willing and able to proceed immediately on this basis.

"I understand you will be at the White House on July 22nd. Would it be possible for me to meet with you in Washington, D.C. on July 21st briefly so that I may personally present our interest in Lebanon? As per copy of attached letter, the White House is actively interested in our efforts.

| Chapter 7, Part 2 | Chapter 6, Part 4 | Table of Contents

Chapter 7, Part 2

"For your personal information, I was a good friend of Bechir. I was with him in Beirut in 1976 when the Syrian Army came in to police. When he later visited the United States on a speaking tour, my wife and I went to Framingham, Massachusetts to meet with him. I miss him tremendously.

"I would appreciate your reply as soon as possible. You can also reach me **via telex 652483 RBN [Robert Booth Nichols] ASSOCS LSA.** Thank you for your time and consideration. Sincerely yours, George K. Pender."

I cannot stress enough the importance of this letter From George Pender to Amin Gamayel. In the very first paragraph of Pender's letter he noted that "**Maurice Ghanem"** participated in the meetings held in Beirut in May 1983 to discuss F.I.D.C.O.'s participation in the redevelopment of Lebanon.

Michael Riconosciuto had stated (on page 40 of this manuscript) that he had worked directly under "Maurice Ganem" and George Pender in Lebanon! Riconosciuto had explained that **Maurice had a "relative, either a brother or a cousin, who was a senior DEA official with Michael Hurley."**

Then, in a 1993 book entitled, "Trail of the Octopus" by Donald Goddard with Lester Coleman, on page 152, I stumbled across the name of **Fred Ganem** in the following context: **"The number of DEAcontrolled deliveries of heroin down the pipeline to the United States had increased noticeably during the winter as a result of Fred Ganem's special knowledge of the Lebanese communities in Detroit, Houston and Los Angeles."**

This was independent corroboration of a link between F.I.D.C.O. (George Pender and Michael McManus) and **the very same heroin operation in Nicosia, Cyprus which Riconosciuto had described in detail to me in December 1991!**

It also directly connected George Pender with Michael T. Hurley. Goddard and Coleman recounted how "members of the Jafaar clan and other DEA couriers would arrive at Larnaca with suitcases full of highgrade heroin, white and crystal, and be met off the boat ... by officers of the Cypriot Police Narcotics Squad, who then drove them up to the Euramae office in Nicosia."In his interview with R.J. (page 37), Riconosciuto had maintained that "F.I.D.C.O. had a companion company called Euramae Trading ..." **Three years later,** "Trail of the Octopus," described Euramae as such: "Coleman was given a desk at the **Euramae Trading Company., Ltd.,** a DEA/CIA `front' newly set up by the Cypriot Police Narcotics Squad in a luxury threebedroomed penthouse apartment down the street from the US Embassy. It gave him the creeps from the start.

"Intended as a place where DEA and CIA agents could meet unobserved with informants and clients, as a message drop for **CIA arms dealers supplying Iraq and the Afghan rebels,** as a waiting room for

DEA CI's and couriers from Lebanon, and as a transit point, **not just for heroin,** but for cash, documents and bootleg computer software moving to and fro along the BeirutNicosiaUS pipeline, Eurame, as run by ElJorr, was more like a lowlife social club than a secret intelligence centre." Coleman had complained to Hurley, but Hurley had just brushed it aside.

It is noteworthy that George Pender listed Robert Booth Nichols's "telex" number at the bottom of his letter to Lebanon President Amin Gamayel. During that time span, Nichols and Pender (when they weren't in Lebanon) **were operating a NSC listening post from a condo at Marina Del Rey. It was allegedly the U.S. end of the Nicosia, Cyprus operation.** Michael Riconosciuto, Ted Gunderson and Allan Boyak, an attorney representing Riconosciuto, all had stories to tell about apartment number "007." More on this in a moment. Next, was the Lebanese response to George Pender's aforementioned letter (No.2).

Letter No. 3 Written on Arab Bank Limited letterhead, dated November 23, 1983, from Abdul Majeed Shoman, Chairman/General Manager of Arab Bank Limited in Amman, Jordan to George K. Pender in Santa Monica, California:

"Dear Mr. Pender: Mr. Ahmad has talked to me about the fund to reconstruct Lebanon and we the Arab Bank together with a group of other banks will be glad to cooperate with you concerning this respect.

"We shall discuss, in future, how this cooperation will be made and on what conditions and plans.

"You have mentioned in your letter to Mr. Ahmad on September 27th that **this fund amounts to US$ three billion or more.** There is no problem to take care of this by the Arab Bank and the other group of banks as stated above. The terms and conditions will be discussed with you provided the condition is clear in Lebanon and subject to the approval and counter guarantees of the Lebanese Authority. Yours sincerely, Abdul Majeed Shoman, Chairman/General Manager."

It is unlikely any "reconstruction" (funded by F.I.D.C.O.) ever took place in Lebanon. Only a Congressional investigation could determine what the US$three billion dollars was actually used for.

The next document, pertaining to Robert Booth Nichols, Senior Vice President of F.I.D.C.O., originated from an interview between Jeffrey Steinberg, a writer for Executive Intelligence Review, and **Allan Boyak**, an attorney in Utah whom Michael Riconosciuto contacted immediately after his arrest in Washington state.

Michael T. Hurley had allegedly been transferred from Nicosia, Cyprus to DEA in Washington state shortly before Michael's arrest. Riconosciuto's arrest had taken place with a week after signing the Inslaw affidavit.

It is noteworthy that Danny Casolaro also contacted and interviewed Allan Boyak shortly before

his death. According to Ted Gunderson and others who knew Danny, Boyak met with Casolaro in Washington D.C. and provided him with a copy of a transcript of the meeting between himself (Boyak), Riconosciuto, and Ted Gunderson, who at that time was Riconosciuto's investigator.

I later obtained the same transcript from Gunderson's live-in partner, J.M., and have related the contents of that explosive transcript in Chapter 13.

Meanwhile, the following "Memorandum for the File," dated 62591, was written by Steinberg after his interview with Boyak: (Excerpted) "I met at length Saturday, June 22, 1991 with Allan Boyak, an attorney from Utah who is representing Michael Riconosciuto in his pending drug case. Boyak is not the lead attorney and will not apparently be making court appearances in the case.

"Boyak recounted the following personal background information: He was in the U.S. Army in Special Forces and apparently did some contract work for the CIA during the 1960's and early 1970's. At some point in the early 70's, he worked briefly for the Drug Enforcement Administration (or its antecedent agency), being stationed in California.

"Boyak had some falling out with the DEA and left the government service altogether, entering law school. While in law school, **Boyak became friendly with Jim Nichols, a classmate. Nichols told him that he had a brother who was heavily involved in organized crime** and had been disowned by his family.

"Once out of law school, Boyak joined a Hollywood law firm and became involved in criminal defense work, representing a number of well placed West Coast drug traffickers. At some point, Boyak moved to Utah (he is a practicing Mormon), while retaining his California law practice on a parttime basis.

"In addition to his o.c. [organized crime] clientel, Boyak also maintained contacts and apparently did some legal work for some of his old buddies from his Green Beret and CIA days. One such pal was Art Suchesk, who ran a CIA proprietary company called Hoffman Electronics.

" ... At some point in the late 1970's, one of Boyak's clients, a Mormon old boy named Cap Kressop, who was a technical wizard, was approached by Robert Nichols and asked to manufacture a prototype laser site for a rifle. Kressop was offered a $200,000 contract for the job but he became suspicious when Nichols wanted to pay him in cash.

"Boyak contacted **Nichols at his Marina Del Rey, California home/office [apartment "007"]** and the two had a lengthy meeting there. Boyack's description of that meeting is that it was continuously interrupted by telephone calls and **telex messages.** Boyak came away **convinced that Nichols was involved in large scale illegal drug operations.**

"After consulting with one of his close friends from Green Beret days, then an assistant U.S. Attorney named Dexter Leitenen (now the Miami U.S. Attorney), Boyak went to the Los Angeles FBI office with the suspicions about Nichols' activities.

"The FBI background check [conducted by Ted Gunderson] on Robert Booth Nichols (born 1943 or 1944 he couldn't remember for sure) revealed that he was `squeeky clean.' In fact, he had a Class I machine gun license.

"Boyak did discover, however, that one of the people Nichols referenced as a business associate and personal friend, **Harold Okimoto, was believed by some of his sources to be a top Japanese organized crime figure based in Hawaii. Okimoto was described as a top agent in the Yakuza overseas**.

"Over the next two year period, after the L.A. FBI had dropped any interest in the Nichols matter, Boyack's friend, [Arthur] Suchesk, **repeatedly ran into Nichols in such places as Singapore, the Philippines, and Taiwan. Suchesk was based out of Zurich, Switzerland** during this period, apparently still **doing his front man work for the CIA.**

"Boyak says that information developed during this period, through Suchesk and others, [indicated] **that Nichols was indeed a bigtime drug dealer who was very well insulated** from any U.S. law enforcement problems. Nichols operated exclusively overseas. Whenever he came to the United States, he never engaged in any illegal activities.

"However, Boyak described Nichols' rum importing business as **a cover for bigtime heroin trafficking from the Golden Triangle.** Nichols was also named as `Mr. Big', according to Boyak, in the Medellin Cartel, in drug prosecutions in Utah and Los Angeles.

"Three to four years ago, Boyack received an out of the blue telephone call from Michael Riconosciuto. Michael identified himself as a former employee of Robert Nichols. He also referenced Ted Gunderson as a `mutual friend.' Boyak had only met Ted once very briefly when he was pressing the L.A. FBI to look into the Nichols dope suspicions ..."

" ... Then in April 1991, Boyak received a phone call from Ted Gunderson, informing him that `Michael was in trouble. He was caught in a government frameup.'

"Boyak returned to his background profile of Bob Nichols, parts of which were apparently provided by Bob's estranged brother, Jim Nichols. It seems that **as a young man, Robert Nichols wound up in Hawii functioning as a hitman for the Tongs. He was `adopted' as the Yakuza godson of Harold Okimoto,** a 67yearold car dealer in Hawaii.

"Nichols grew up to be a big business front man for the Far East syndicate. He reportedly laundered between $50200 million for Ferdinand Marcos. He now owns an estate in Hawaii, a feudal castle outside of Milan, Italy and the referenced Marina Del Ray home in California.

"Nichols has an office in Zurich. At one point, **he was reportedly involved in the smuggling of China White heroin into Mexico** where it was treated to look like the Mexican brown heroin which was more popular at the time.

"It should be emphasized that all of this information about Robert Nichols comes exclusively from Allan Boyak. None of it has yet been independently corroborated to my knowledge. Bill Hamilton and some other people involved in tracking the Inslaw story have all spoken to [Robert] Nichols and report that he has been straightforward with them and has provided leads and documents re: Michael Riconosciuto.

"Nichols is listed on the board of directors of First Intercontinental Development Corporation (FIDCO) along with George Pender and several officials of the Howard Hughes linked Suma Corporation."

One of the most surprising, and disturbing, documents I found in Michael Riconosciuto's hidden files (see Chapter 9) was an envelope with a notation on it, handwritten and signed by Ted Gunderson, which read as follows:

"Michael: Raymond [Lavas] is arriving at LAX, 7:55 p.m., Air Canada via flight 793 from Toronto. Will have to go through Customs. This will give us another member for our drug/arms operation. Only problem [is] Raymond will probably be using instead of selling. Sorry I didn't get to D.A. office. I tried to call, but no answer. By the time I fought the traffic to the bank and did my banking, it was too late Will be home tonight (818) 8806238. T.G."

Raymond Lavas was Ted Gunderson's forensic expert when he worked for the FBI. Lavas was in constant contact with Bobby Riconosciuto after Michael was incarcerated. In fact, everyone was watching Michael and Bobby very closely.

| Chapter 8 | Chapter 7, Part 1 |Table of Contents

CHAPTER 8

In March, 1993, **two years after** Michael Riconosciuto had attempted to trade information on the F.I.D. C.O./Euramae drug/intelligence operation in Lebanon to the government, the aforementioned magazine article printed in High Times magazine by Bill Weinberg, entitled, "The Syrian Connection," exposed **CIA penetration into the Bekaa Valley drug trade in Lebanon.**

Essentially, this article validated much of Riconosciuto's earlier information. The following are some excerpts:

" ... **Many of Lebanon's armed factions depend on the international drug trade for funds,"** wrote Weinberg. "**Each paramilitary group controls its own port in or around Beirut which serves as a transfer point for drugs on the way out of Europe and America and weaponry on the way in from the international market. Whoever holds the fertile Bekaa [Valley] holds the ticket to power. As the war escalated in the late 1970's, hashish, the traditional mainstay of the Bekaa, started to be replaced by the more lucrative heroin. Marijuana fields were converted to opium fields, hashish production compounds converted to heroin labs."**

Heroin production exploded in the Bekaa Valley under the Syrian occupation. However, the Syrian occupation forces didn't touch the drugs, but "profited from the trade and protected it." It was estimated that up to $2 billion in protection money was paid annually by dope plantation operators to Syrian occupation forces.

DEA official Felix Jimenez told a reporter in 1990 that the Syrian occupation received $10,000 per kilogram of Bekaa heroin. With the valley producing over 20,000 pounds a year, that was a lot of money.

Bekaa also became a center for processing Columbian cartel cocaine for reexport to European markets.

In 1988, two Syrians arrested with large quantities of heroin and coke in Milan [Italy] claimed to be working for a Syrian colonel in Bekaa. Prior to Desert Storm, Syria's president Hafez Assad and Iraq's Saddam Hussein were rival factions in the Arab nationalist Ba'ath Party. Syria was the only Arab nation to back Iran in the long and brutal war against Iraq in the 1980's. So when President George Bush invited Syria to join the Arab coalition against Saddam after Iraq's invasion of Kuwait, Assad accepted.

After Desert Storm, Assad closed ranks with the White House and even softened his stand against Israel. President Bush and Secretary of State James Baker peddled a postwar peace plan for the region and Syria and Israel were encouraged to recognize each others' Lebanese occupation zones.

Under a 1990 accord, Christians and Muslims were finally granted equal representation, officially bringing the civil war to an end. A new Syriabacked Muslimled government came to power. **Under the accord, Syria maintained control of the Bekaa Valley. Among the areas still under Syrian control were the notorious drug ports north of Beirut.**

High Times maintained that there were long standing backchannel relations between Washington D.C. and Damascus. According to a 1987 Pentagon memo leaked to the Chicago paper, In These Times, Lt. Col. Oliver North was personally notified that Syrian intelligence in Lebanon was willing to negotiate with the White House for release of the hostages held by Lebanese terrorists.

The Washington Jewish Week reported that Bush himself had made secret visits to Damascus for hostage negotiations. But there were other reasons for the U.S. to be in Lebanon. In 1988, when Pan Am Flight 103 exploded over Scotland, Pan Am hired the private investigative firm of Interfor to look into the bombing. The owner, Juval Aviv, was reportedly a former Mossad agent.

Interfor maintained that the Syrianbacked Popular Front for the Liberation of PalestineGeneral Command (PFLPGC) was behind the bombing. The PFLPGC had been able to get their bomb on board the 747 because **the flight was part of a heroin smuggling route run by a drug trafficking ring connected to the Syrian regime and protected by both the U.S. DEA and the CIA.**

Interfor claimed the ring was overseen by Syrian kingpin Monzer AlKassar often known as the world's biggest arms dealer. **The CIA was protecting the AlKassar operation because he was cooperating with efforts to free U.S. hostages in Lebanon**.

Reporter Bill Weinberg added that "the CIA and DEA had apparently both instructed Germany's internal intelligence agency, the BKA, to allow certain suitcases to pass uninspected onto USbound flights at the Frankfort airport, where Flight 103 originated."

Apparently, unknown to anyone except the PFLPGC and AlKassar, **a suitcase which was supposed to be full of the usual heroin was covertly substituted with a suitcase full of explosives**.

A London Times news article, dated July 22, 1991, entitled, "US Drugs Sting Gave Pan Am Bomber Cover," noted that **the DEA admitted that the protection program had existed.** The explanation for this operation, which was codenamed Khourah, was provided by **Ronald Caffrey, acting assistant administrator of the operational division of the DEA.** In a U.S. government submission, dated March 20, 1991, **Caffrey said the drug operation was a "controlled delivery."**

According to Caffrey, in a controlled delivery, a law enforcement agency permits and monitors shipments of contraband, including drugs, to move from a source or transit location to its intended destination. Use of this technique is sometimes essential to enable law enforcement agencies to identify and arrest highranking members of trafficking organizations, rather than simply arrest low level couriers.

Pan Am argued in court that it had been the pawn of an international intelligence operation, but still lost the case and was forced into bankruptcy.

In 1990, when the White House started to woo Syria as a partner in the Allied coalition, blame for the Pan Am bombing suddenly shifted from Assad's Syria to Qaddafi's Libya, and that is pretty much where it stands today.

Meanwhile, AlKassar was alleged to have provided Oliver North with drug profits to purchase arms for the Nicaraguan Contras. The U.S. Tower Commission probe into Irangate revealed that AlKassar had been paid $1.2 million by Oliver North's coconspirator General Richard Secord to move weapons from Israel to the Contras.

In her book "October Surprise," **former Reagan White House aide Barbara Honegger alleged that AlKassar's heroin smuggling network in Italy was used to launder NATO arms stocks for diversion to Iran with the help of corrupt Italian intelligence officials** linked to the secretive fascist Masonic lodge, P2.

It is noteworthy that AlKassar was reported to hold large tracts of land in the Bekaa Valley. The PFLPGC also has camps in the Bekaa which were the target of Israeli air strikes in 1989.

****

The U.S. government's presence in Lebanon is not to be taken lightly according to Lester Coleman, a selfemployed freelance writer, editor and security consultant who once moonlighted as a DIA (Defense Intelligence Agency) covert intelligence officer when he was called to serve. Coleman, age 47, told the London Times that for six years he worked as an intelligence officer with the secret unit, Middle East Collection 10 (MC10) in Cyprus, running a network of agents in Beirut whose mission was to find American hostages held by extremists.

Coleman was paid in travelers checks sent from the Luxembourg branch of the now collapsed Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI). Two senior MC10 members, Mathew Kevin Gannon and Major Charles Dennis McKee, had been on PanAm flight 103 and had just returned from a mission in Beirut.

Coleman explained that the DEA, with the narcotics squad of the Cypriot national police, the German BKA police and British customs, ran a "drug sting operation" through Cyprus and airports in Europe, including Frankfurt.

The operation involved delivering heroin from the Bekaa Valley in Lebanon to the United States; the operation was codenamed "Khourah." Coleman maintained that Pan Am Flight 103 was being used by the DEA as a "controlled delivery" flight.

After the explosion, the Beirut end of MC10 had obviously been "blown." There were five key members of the MC10 cell in Cyprus and Beirut, one of whom was Lester Coleman. Another was Werner **Tony Asmar,** a German Lebanese, who was killed in a bomb explosion at his office in east Beirut on May 26, 1988.

Another member of MC10 was Charlie Frezeli, a Lebanese army officer, who was shot dead at his home in east Beirut in November 1989. When Asmar was killed, the DIA ordered Coleman home.

Danny Casolaro had contacted Coleman in Sweden on August 3, 1991, seven days before his death in Martinsburg, West Virgnia. They talked about the sale of the PROMISE software by the U.S. Government to foreign governments, the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), **and the IranContra scandal.**

After Coleman learned of Danny's death on August 10th, 1991, he provided Inslaw president Bill Hamilton with an affidavit in October 1991. **That affidavit read as follows:**

"Affidavit of Lester K. Coleman, being duly sworn, do hereby state as follows:

"(1) I am currently selfemployed as a freelance writer, editor, and security consultant. I am a United States citizen and am temporarily outside of the United States.

"(2) In November 1984, the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) offered me a position in human intelligence operations in the Middle East. I was raised in the Middle East, where I lived in Iran, Libya and Saudi Arabia. I speak three dialects of Arabic and some Farsi. I accepted the position and received training from the DIA. I was assigned to a Middle East intelligence unit.

"(3) Between February and September 1987, I was seconded by DIA to the Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) in Nicosia, Cyprus, reporting to the DEA Country Attache, Michael T. Hurley.

"(4) After a cover assignment in the United States, I was again seconded to the DEA in Nicosia, Cyprus, in early 1988.

"(5) During April and May 1988, I worked in the office of Euramae Trading Company, Ltd. in Nicosia, Cyprus, a DEA proprietary company. On or about May 29, 1988, because of my concern about poor security in the DEA operation in Cyprus, I returned to the United States, having previously obtained the concurrence of DIA.

"(6) During my two stints as a DIA covert intelligence officer seconded to the DEA in Nicosia, Cyprus, I became aware of the fact that DEA was using its proprietary company, Euramae Trading Company, Ltd. to sell computer software called PROMISE or PROMIS to the drug abuse control agencies of various countries in the Middle East, including Cyprus, Pakistan, Syria, Kuwait and Turkey.

"(7) I personally witnessed the unpacking at the Nicosia, Cyprus, Police Force Narcotics Squad of boxes containing reels of computer tapes and computer hardware. The boxes bore the name and red logo of a Canadian corporation with the words `PROMISE' or `PROMIS' and `Ltd' in the company name.

"(8) The DEA objective in inducing the implementation of this computerized PROMIS[E] system in the drug abuse control agencies of the Middle East countries was to augment the drug control resources available to the United States Government by making it possible for the United States Government to access sensitive drug control law enforcement and intelligence files of these Middle East governments.

"(9) It is also my understanding that thirdparty funds were generally made available for the purchase of these computer software and hardware systems. One thirdparty funding source was the United Nations Fund for Drug Abuse Control in Vienna, Austria.

"(10) As DEA Country Attache for Cyprus, Michael T. Hurley had overall responsibility for both the Euramae Trading Company, Ltd. and its initiative to sell PROMIS[E] computer systems to Middle East countries for drug abuse control.

"(11) In 1990, DEA reassigned Hurley to a DEA intelligence position in Washington State.

"(12) I became aware in 1991 that Michael Riconosciuto, known to me as a longtime CIA asset, was arrested in Washington State by DEA for the manufacturing of illegal chemical drugs. I had also become aware of the fact that Riconosciuto had made a sworn statement, prior to his arrest, about his participation in a covert U.S. intelligence initiative to sell Inslaw's PROMISE software to foreign governments.

"(13) In light of Hurley's personal involvement in the U.S. Government's covert intelligence initiative to sell PROMIS[E] software to foreign governments and his reassignment to a DEA intelligence position in Washington State in advance of the DEA's arrest of Riconosciuto, the arrest of Riconosciuto should be regarded as suspect. I do not believe that Hurley's posting to a drug intelligence position in Washington State in advance of Riconosciuto's arrest on drug charges is merely coincidental. Rather, the probability is that Hurley was reassigned to Washington State to manufacture a case against Riconosciuto in order to prevent Riconosciuto from becoming a credible witness about the U.S. Government's covert sale of the PROMIS software to foreign governments.

"(14) The investigative journalist Danny Casolaro contacted me in Europe on August 3, 1991. Mr. Casolaro had leads and hard information about things that I know about, including Department of Justice groups operating overseas, the sale of PROMIS[E] software by the U.S. Government to foreign governments, the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), and the IranContra scandal. **I subsequently learned of Mr. Casolaro's death in Martinsburg, West Virginia, one week**

later, on August 10, 1991. I contacted Inslaw in October 1991, after learning about Mr. Casolaro's death under suspicious circumstances."

Village Voice magazine ran an article entitled, "The Last Days of Danny Casolaro," by James Ridgeway and Doug Vaughan on October 15, 1991 which gave a brief profile of Michael Riconosciuto's background:

"The 44yearold Riconosciuto is to put it mildly a colorful character, wilder than anything in `The Falcon and the Snowman.' He was a gifted child. When he was just 10 years old, Michael wired his parents' neighborhood with a working, private telephone system that undercut Ma Bell; in the eighth grade, he won a science fair with a model for a threedimensional sonar system. By the time he was a teenager, he had won so many science fairs with exhibits of laser technology that he was invited to be a summer research assistant at Stanford's [University] prestigious Cooper Vaper Laser Laboratory. Dr. Arthur Schalow, a Nobel laureate, remembered him: `You don't forget a 16yearold youngster who shows up with his own argon laser,' he told Casolaro."

******

| Chapter 9, Part 1 | Chapter 7, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 9, Part 1

Bobby Riconosciuto lived with Michael Riconosciuto at the time of his arrest in Washington state. Immediately upon learning of his arrest, she had fled to California with her four children, the youngest of which, Elizabeth, had been fathered by Michael.

Bobby was well situated in an exclusive suite at the Embassy Suites Hotel in Orange County, California. Her suite contained a living room and bar overlooking lush indoor tropical gardens and water fountains, marble walkways over bridgecovered ponds and a gazebo where free breakfasts were cooked and served to order.

Within the room, she had at her disposal office equipment, phones in every room, answering machines, room service and anything else she needed for herself and her children. Patrick Moriarty, Marshall Riconosciuto's business partner of 40 years, was paying the bills.

Moriarty and the Riconosciutos, father and son, had once owned Hercules Research Corporation together in Hercules, California. An old Contra Costa County newspaper article, dating back to April, 1981, gave the story of Hercules. The subheading of the article pretty much said it all, "Device Could Make Hercules a Silicon Valley."

In 1981, Hercules had developed a small electronic power supply the size of a tissue box, designed to specifically feed 30,000 volts of electricity to another device, a METC (Modular Energy Transfer Catalyzer) unit, that would cut the heating and cooling time in food processing and of making glass, metal and other products by 40 percent.

The METC unit, patented by Interprobe of Chicago, worked by electrostatically exciting air molecules by moving them through a charged field. This removed a boundary layer of molecules that inhibited the exchange of thermal energy. Hercules' highvoltage power supply was essential to the application of Interprobe's METC unit, so both companies were in the process of working out a merger in order to market both technologies as a complete system.

Admiral Henry Rankin, vice president of Interprobe, was a longtime family friend, and was very enthuiastic about incorporating the Hercules power pack with Interprobe's high voltage electrostatic technology.

Patrick Moriarty and Marshall Riconosciuto had funded research for 15 years and spent about $1 million of their own money on the project.

By 1983, things were not looking so good for Patrick Moriarty. The Los Angeles Times newspaper reported in a series of articles that "fireworks magnate W. Patrick Moriarty, his business and associates spent nearly half a million dollars in the last three years to influence government decisions throughout

California."

Moriarty's relationships with several key state legislators and his campaign contributions to elected officials from Anaheim to Sacramento had made him a powerful force in state and local politics. His association with the notorious Robert Ferrante, head of Consolidated Savings and Loan which failed in 1985, and who was the subject of a disorganized, onagain offagain FBI investigation, was written up in the book, "Inside Job," by (Mary Frick?).

Patrick Moriarty was described as "the manufacturer of Red Devil fireworks, who founded the Bank of Irvine. The bank failed in 1984, the victim of fraud and mismanagement, according to regulators." In 1985, Moriarty pleaded guilty to mail fraud in a case that became the biggest political scandal in California in 30 years. Over 10 prominent politicians, including one state senator, were indicted for taking bribes from Moriarty.

Though I'd spoken with her on the phone numerous times, I first met Bobby Riconosciuto facetoface on January 15th, 1992. On the day I visited her hotel suite, I hauled my Mita copy machine on a cart up to her room and we talked and made copies of documents all morning. Bobby was young, boxom and attractive in a natural, mother earth sort of way. Her long blond hair hung loosely around her shoulders, she wore no makeup, and her nose and mouth had an impish upturn that made her appear to be smiling even when she was not.

We became friends as the day progressed. Bobby confided that some of the more sensitive material was stored at Michael's hidden trailer in Trona, California.

While working at Wackenhut, Michael had anticipated a future need to have a hiding place for himself and his files in the event that things got out of control. Bobby, who had met Michael in Washington state after he left Wackenhut, had been instructed by Michael to stay away from the trailer in case she was being surveillanced.

The files and computer equipment stored there were Michael's last ace in the hole. Nevertheless, Bobby was frustrated by the slow progress of Michael's court defense, by R.J.'s lack of response to Michael's request for Witness Protection - and she had been barraged by reporters who wanted documented proof of Michael's statements.

I offered to drive her out to Trona, near Death Valley, to retrieve Michael's files and ultimately, she acquiesced. We arrived at the isolated trailer at dusk and began sorting through documents that could substantiate Michael's claim that he worked for the government.

The electricity had been shut off and as it became dark, we were forced to use flashlights. Bobby was terrified that we might get caught in that Godforsaken place. The children were cold and tired, and from sheer exhaustion, she finally offered to turn all the boxes and documents over to me to make copies at home.

We threw everything helter skelter into large plastic trash bags, dumped the bags into my Chevy van, and quickly headed back to civilization.

It is noteworthy that before we left, Bobby pointed the flashlight towards another, smaller trailer situated on a knoll overlooking the road, which she claimed contained Michael's hidden computer equipment.

It was several weeks before Michael learned that Bobby had turned the documents over to me. She never told him, nor did I. It was through Jonathan Littman, a San Francisco Chronicle reporter whom I had confided in, that Riconosciuto learned of our secret.

Upon arriving home from my trip to the desert, I had xeroxed roundtheclock for five days with help from trusted friends. The documents corroborated everything Michael had related over the phone, and more.

It was an exciting time. Boxes and boxes of documents provided me for the first time with a window into the CIA corporate structure, arms deals, drug operations, money laundering, biological technology, all the connecting tentacles of Danny Casolaro's "Octopus."

After making copies, I squeezed the originals into eight large packing boxes, sealed them tightly, and sent them back to Bobby Riconosciuto, via a friend, who gave them to Michael's father, Marshall Riconosciuto.

I later learned Marshall allegedly shipped them to Ian Stuart Spiro for safekeeping. It was not until April, 1993, that I learned what became of Spiro and the documents.

An Associated Press news story entitled, "Deaths Linked to Spy Network," published in the Merced Sun Star newspaper, outlined the death of **Ian Stuart Spiro,** 46, who was found dead of cyanide poisoning in the AnzaBorrego desert on November 8, 1992, one week after his wife and children were found shot to death in their Rancho Santa Fe home.

The news story, originating from the Oceanside Blade Citizen, noted that "**documents and U.S. intelligence sources implicated Spiro in the IranContra armsforhostages affair and an alleged Justice Department conspiracy to pirate software from a private company and sell it to foreign intelligence agencies."**

Spiro's name also appeared in Lt. Col. Oliver North's personal notebooks documenting the IranContra affair, according to the National Security Archives in Washington D.C..

Former hostage David Jacobsen told the BladeCitizen shortly after Spiro's death that Spiro helped negotiate the release of hostages in the Middle East.

After obtaining a copy of a followup BladeCitizen article dated June 3, 1993, entitled, "Spiro Probers Want to Talk to North" by Wade Booth, Stacy Finz and Michael Williams, I learned that **Ian Spiro lived in Beirut, Lebanon during the 1970's and 1980's where he "made contacts with Lebanese religious leaders and the Islamic Jihad."**

Greg Quarton, Spiro's brotherinlaw, told reporters at the BladeCitizen that Spiro maintained communication with Lebanese business associates until the time of his death, but investigating officers had possession of Spiro's phone bills, and as of this writing, they had not released them.

San Diego sheriff's Capt. Jim Marmack said detectives were investigating allegations by **Spiro's relatives that his file cabinets and business papers were missing.**

The week of the Spiro family's death, Robert Corson, a business associate of Spiro's indicted in a savings and loan scam, was found dead in an El Paso, Texas, motel room. **Corson, who reportedly worked for the CIA, died of a heart attack, officials said. The BladeCitizen reported that Corson once carried money to South America in a deal to deliver covert weapons. Corson also allegedly associated with California investor Wayne Reeder who was seen at a Wackenhut/Contra meeting in Riverside county** (See Chapter 10).

The newspaper article went on to say that **Alan Michael May,** age 50, [a former Northern California field director in Richard Nixon's presidential campaign and attorney for Nixon's brothers Donald and Edward] was found dead in his San Francisco home on June 19, 1991, four days after a newspaper story in the Napa Sentinel outlined his role in an alleged plot by Republican Party officials to bribe Iranian officials to delay the release of U.S. hostages until after President Reagan's inauguration.

Immediately after May's death, **Raymond Lavas,** Ted Gunderson's former forensic's expert, (and a former protege of Robert Maheu according to Michael Riconociuto) wrote a letter to one of Michael's friends, expressing his professional opinion about the death of Michael May. A copy of that letter was faxed to me and the following excerpts quickly captured my attention:

"... I don't understand why it's going to take two weeks to determine May's cause of death. Did you know that certain chemical assassination methods will have been evaporated out of the body by that time?

"Then, the cause of death would be ruled as natural, since the chemical agents are the primary cause that result in a secondary action such as heart failure, kidney or liver damage, etc.

"Some examples of these agents include BZ2, Ricin, Tropodotoxin, shellfish toxia and a variety of methlamine based neurotoxinsthat affect the central nervous system and cause failure of one or more organs in the human body.

"Some, if not most of these toxins are solvent based [DMSO] and may be introduced in minute quantities through the skin. Their effect [may] vary and some toxins take weeks to months to take effect.

Others take moments to damage the nervous system, then evaporate within hours.

"Unless the body is immediately refrigerated, the toxins are quickly evaporated, leaving only one or two parts per million in quantity. Unless there are suspicious circumstances surrounding the death, a trained forensic expert would never detect any traces of the toxin.

"So there you have it. [Michael] May is dead and they are dragging their asses to find out how! What is next? A statement that May died of natural causes? Let me predict this now ... and we'll see. Regards, Ray."

Michael May also apparently attended briefings connected with Lawrence Livermore Labs in California according to an official listing of Lawrence Livermore employees at a "Briefings and Discussions" document obtained from Riconosciuto's files.

The document, stamped, "Official Use Only," listed Edward Teller along with nine other names, including Michael May, under the heading "Lawrence Livermore Laboratory." Other headings with names listed underneath included the Department of Energy, Department of State, Defense Nuclear Agency and Naval Research Laboratory. There were no other pages accompanying the document, so it was impossible to determine from what manual it came from.

May's name also popped up in a letter Michael Riconosciuto wrote to Dr. John Phillip Nichols at the Cabazon Indian reservation when he was being screened for security clearances to work on the Cabazon/ Wackenhut joint venture.

The letter focused primarily on **Al Holbert, an Israeli intelligence officer who allegedly recruited Riconosciuto into the CIA,** and May's name was mentioned only once, in connection with members of "The Company." That one sentence read as follows: "Ben Kalka's relationship with Holbert and `May' will give the proper authorities the necessary auspices to come in and swiftly clean it [The Company] up."

Other portions of the letter gave a history of Riconosciuto's experience with Al Holbert (Excerpts):

" ... My problems stemmed from my association with Al C. Holbert. I first met Holbert when I was still in high school and I was led to believe that he was an `unofficial' representative of the Israeli government. I was further led to believe that his interests were not contrary to those of the United States. It was not until July of 1981 that I learned the truth about Holbert. It came directly from him to me personally in what I will call a confrontational situation.

"August of 1981 was when I first brought Holbert to your [Dr. John Nichols] attention. At that time, I still did not know much and I was still in a sort of state of shock from my `new awareness' of Holbert. I was in deep with this guy and so was **Paul [Morasca].**

"At first Paul thought that I was off base and overreacting and then by degrees he started to come around. Much of the incredible account of Paul's doings **(money transfers, gems, weapons, drugs)** were the result of his relationship to Burt and Jensen. Burt, Jensen and Kalka all met Paul through his brother Joe. I was the one who introduced Al Holbert to Paul, and Paul was the one who introduced me to Burt, Jensen and Kalka. This was in early 1967.

"I was introduced to [Al] Holbert through the Stanford crowd at the home of [name withheld] in Portola Valley, California. Interesting enough, [name withheld] is a former State Department employee ..."

" ... The realization of who and what Holbert is, and Paul's death, have taken me some time to adjust to. And that required professional help. I now have a clear idea and good perspective on what has really happened in my life.

"I am in awe of Holbert and his group's power [The Company]. During the last year, I have forced this structure to rear its ugly head in many different times and places, and in ways that can't be covered up. I have also spread far and wide what knowledge I have with the intent to first protect others involved and secondly to chisel the story in stone.

"Where it all stands now is that no matter who the group attempts to silence or what ruse they attempt to perpetrate, the truth cannot be destroyed. This is now in the hands of a competent attorney. My direct involvement is finished except to be available to answer questions.

" ... I feel that Holbert and his group represent a current national security nightmare to this country. I feel that I have been extricated from the hold of this group. But I also feel that the destruction by legal means of this group ranks in importance with my scientific and engineering skills to the overall picture.

"Ben Kalka's relationship with Holbert and May will give the proper authorities the necessary auspices to come in and swiftly clean it up. I would now like to start out where we should have been a year ago. The first point I will start with is a recap of our visit to Pickitinny Arsenal ..."

It is noteworthy that two of the people mentioned in the above letter are now dead: Paul Morasca and Michael May.

The bizarre circumstances of Morasa's death are detailed in the next few pages. Ben Kalka of The Company, is now serving time in prison for having 900 pounds of methamphetamine in his possession at time of arrest.

Through one of Michael's contacts, I managed to locate the current (1991) whereabouts of Al Holbert and confirm his identity. A letter written on "Solomon Investigations" letterhead, dated June 13, 1991, to a client requesting payment for the services of Holbert read as follows: (Excerpted) **" ... I enlisted the services of my electronic countermeasures expert, A.C. Holbert, for an immediate survey and**

sweep of the premises. Mr. Holbert is highly regarded as the best electronics man in the [San Francisco] Bay Area and has recently worked with Israeli intelligence services in the field of electronic countermeasures. He agreed to take on this job. I have enclosed a copy of Mr. Holbert's faxed report ..."

The mystery of Al Holbert was further uncovered in a 1983 transcript in which Michael stated, "After Paul's [Morasca] death, Holbert admitted to me that he was a Soviet backed agent, and they had a home, or he had a home for me, and I could be treated like royalty, and he reiterated that offer in the latest meeting, and he said, `He was prepared to deliver some fivehundredthousand dollars cash to me us a show of good faith ..."

The transcript, originating from a series of tape recorded interviews between Michael Riconosciuto, Ted Gunderson and Robert Booth Nichols at Nichols' "007" apartment in Marina Del Ray, provided a window into the entire drug scene in California from the early 1960's through the 1980's, mostly relating to methamphetamine operations in the Bay Area. It had been typed by Ellen Nichols, Robert's wife.

Riconosciuto's relationship with Ted Gunderson dated back at least as far as 1982. Michael and Nichols dated back to 1967. In reading the transcript, it appeared that Gunderson and Nichols were interviewing Riconosciuto for recruitment into a drug/sting operation.

Riconosciuto later verified that he was, in fact, being recruited into the overseas Lebanon drug operation by Gunderson and Nichols because of his (Riconosciuto's) undercover experience in the drug trade.

It is noteworthy that Al Holbert, the Israeli intelligence agent who originally recruited Michael into the CIA, is mentioned extensively throughout the 71 page transcript.

| Chapter 8 | Chapter 9, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

Chapter 9, Part 2

Riconosciuto's relationship with Holbert had lasted from 1966 to 1981, a span of fifteen years. Most of that time had been devoted to complex drug activities in California. In one passage, Riconosciuto stated that "Ben Kalka was one of [Al] Holbert's lieutenants. The other lieutenant with Kalka was Charlie Weinberg, who set up the Vortex Chemical Company in Berkeley, California for Holbert."

Holbert was also interested in technology. "I really confided in him. I was constantly steering him to various people in the Silicon Valley, you know, for requests that he made which were very sophisticated technical requests."

In the transcript, Ted Gunderson asked Michael, "Holbert had a technical mind for that sort of thing?"

Michael responded, "Absolutely! [He had] a firm grasp of physics, mathematics, chemistry, military hardware ..."

Gunderson asked, "Let's go back to '66 to '81, you were close to him?"

Michael: "Not on a regular basis. He would get in contact with me when he needed consultation in certain areas. I made some good money. I designed communications equipment for them. I did a lot of software development ..."

Ted: "And then he gave it to the Israelis?"

Mike: "Yes."

Ted: "And he admitted this?"

Mike: "Oh yeah, none of it was really classified. I did software for the analysis of radar change data. It was based on mathematical models that the Department of Defense wasn't using you know, my approach was new and different from theirs, but it wasn't connected with any of their projects, so technically it wasn't classified."

Michael developed other technology along the way and subsequently attracted the attention of Dr. John Phillip Nichols at Wackenhut/Cabazon who wanted his services. But Michael's association with Al Holbert was hindering Michael's security clearances. Through the screening process and Dr. John Nichols, Michael had learned more about Al Holbert.

Ted: "Well, how could he [Holbert] be a Soviet agent and an Israeli agent?"

Mike: "Your guess is as good as mine. I talked to Major General Peratt on that subject last May and he said, `You don't understand the ways of the world.' Regarding Al Holbert, I said, `That man has done more damage to my generation and my country [drugs] How can you people say that you're friends of the United States, when you send us a guy like that?"

Michael continued ..."You know, Holbert came to the United States and he went to work for the Treasury Department out of Philadelphia and ..."

Ted interrupted. "In what way? As an agent?"

Mike: "I don't know what the relationship was. The Treasury Department wouldn't tell me. They wouldn't comment at all except to acknowledge that, `Yes, he was involved at very high levels, giving special training.'

" ... Holbert taught courses in interrogation techniques. He taught touchkill techniques you know, with the thumbs on the temples and various scare areas like that. He moved around to a lot of different agencies. He got involved with the FBI, and he was involved with the Drug Enforcement people ..."

Ted: "He indicated to you for fifteen years [that] he was with the Israelis?"

Mike: "Israelis. Yes."

Ted: "And then you realized through Dr. Nichols that he was a Soviet?"

Riconosciuto explained that he thought it was John Ammarell at Wackenhut who had "zeroed in on Holbert."

Gunderson continued to press Riconosciuto about Holbert being a double agent. Michael responded: "Well, he was with the Soviets, but he was also with the Israelis. Holbert definitely is connected with Israeli intelligence. I mean there's no ifs, ands, buts, or maybes ... He was decorated in combat for them."

Riconosciuto further recounted a visit to Israel in April 1982. He had met a man (name unspecified) who was the assistant Secretary of Defense of Israel for a number of years and was in charge of defense production for the Israeli government. This man was a friend of Ariel Sharon and he had introduced Riconosciuto to Sharon. It was through this man and a man named "General Peratt," that Riconosciuto confirmed Holbert's position with the Israelis.

"Holbert definitely is one of their boys. I got an admission out of General Peratt that Holbert was funny, that he's a Trotskiite, and they knew about it, and I couldn't understand why they kept a guy like that around? I was told that I just didn't understand the ways of the world!"

Ted asked, "Who does Holbert report to?"

Mike: "Jean Pierre Boegner."

At this point in the transcript, Robert Booth Nichols interceded and provided Boegner's address: " ... His address in Paris is 114 Champs Elysees, Paris 8, France. That goes into my territory ..."

Mike added, "Jean Pierre reports directly to Colonel Stefan Uznanski of the Ukraine ..." Nichols noted, "I have strict files on him."

Ted asked, "And is he GRU?"

Mike answered, "No KGB."

Nichols added, "As high as you can go ..."

Ted asked, "And where is he, in the Kremlin?"

Mike answered, "No, he's in Vienna."

Nichols interjected, " ... Out of Salzberg. He has a home twenty minutes from Salzberg. His hobby is boar hunting. He has about a twenty man contingent."

Gunderson asked, "Is Boegner a Canadian?"

Nichols responded, "Boegner is French. Boegner was involved in the assassination attempt on de Gaulle. Boegner served time."

Ted: "He's KGB?"

Nichols: "Oh yeah, a Colonel."

Ted: "Okay, anything else. Anything more on Holbert that we should bring up?"

Riconosciuto noted that Holbert was very disappointed that he couldn't "turn him" (Riconosciuto) in August of 1981. Ted asked Michael if Holbert admitted at that time that he was KGB?

Michael corrected Ted, "GRU, he was GRU. He told me that he was GRU and he bragged that there were over thirtyfive thousand GRU agents active on the North American continent. And I checked with John Ammarall and with Robert Frye [executives at Wackenhut Corporation] and they told me it was about half that number.

" ... He [Holbert] wanted me to leave the United States, through Canada, and go to Israel."

Riconosciuto added, "You know, he's touched the Central Intelligence Agency, the Treasury Department, the Secret Service and various local law enforcement agencies all over the country ..."

The abovementioned transcript was mailed by one of three people to the "prosecutor" at Michael Riconosciuto's trial in Washington state where it was entered into evidence.

******

At that time, to Michael's knowledge, only Robert Booth Nichols, Peter Zokosky and **Jonathan Littman, a San Francisco Chronicle reporter,** had possession of it.

I subsequently received a copy of it from **Jonathan Littman, who coincidentally, I learned later, happened to be Ben Kalka's "cousin" (Kalka belonged to The Company, according to Riconosciuto, and had been arrested with 900 pounds of methamphetamine in his possession).** Littman had obtained the transcript from Peter Zokosky, Robert Booth Nichols' partner.

Riconosciuto believed Littman had given the transcript to Kalka during one his visits with him at the Pleasanton prison, and Kalka had sent it on to the prosecutor at Michael's trial.

Nichols later confirmed to me that he (Nichols) had indeed interviewed Riconosciuto with Ted Gunderson in 1983 and **the transcript was legitimate**, though he wouldn't state the purpose of the interview.

******

It is significant that a passage in the 1983 transcript mentioned Michael May as "one of the top three guys in the Lawrence Livermore Laboratory management structure" who was associated with Riconosciuto.

******

Michael and Bobby Riconosciuto had been communicating with Jonathan Littman for months, as had Danny Casolaro before his death, and they wanted me to connect with him. At that point, Littman had written a series of indepth articles on the Cabazon Indians and Dr. John Nichols, and I hadn't been interested in talking to him ... until he wrote about the death of Michael's partner, Paul Morasca.

The article, entitled, "Bizarre Murders Puzzle Cops," published on the front page of the San Francisco Chronicle on December 30, 1991, noted that the body of **Paul Morasca,** 31, had been found by Michael Riconosciuto. Morasca's arms had been lashed behind his back as he was hogtied with a telephone cord from his curledup legs to his neck. Police believed he died when his legs finally gave out and the cord tightened like a bowstring, drawing the noose around his neck until he slowly strangled.

From ???@??? Thu Sep 11 17:17:36 1997 Received: from mx.cruzio.com by mail.cruzio.com id aa22928; 11 Sep 97 14:58 PDT Received: from dnai.com (dnai.com [140.174.162.28]) by mx.cruzio.com with ESMTP id PAA07240 for ; Thu, 11 Sep 1997 15:01:29 -0700 (PDT) Received: from basement.dnai.com (dnai-207-33-180-160.dialup.dnai.com [207.33.180.160]) by dnai.com (8.8.5/8.8.5) with SMTP id PAA22438 for ; Thu, 11 Sep 1997 15:00:54 -0700 (PDT) Message-ID: <341868FA.7D0F@dnai.com> Date: Thu, 11 Sep 1997 14:56:10 -0700 From: Tim Canale Reply-To: basement@dnai.com Organization: Basement Films X-Mailer: Mozilla 3.01 (Win95; I) MIME-Version: 1.0 To: blackeye@cruzio.com Subject: The Last Circle - Chapter 9 Content-Type: multipart/mixed; boundary="------------114863521206" Before his death, Morasca and Riconosciuto had planned a business venture with Cabazon administrator John Phillip Nichols to develop hightechnology military hardware. **Morasca was also described as a "San Francisco entrepreneur suspected of being a money launderer involved in a major Northern California drug ring.**"

Oddly, when Riconosciuto found Morasca's body, he drove 500 miles to the Cabazon reservation and told John Nichols about the death. Nichols then called his Los Angeles attorney, who telephoned the San Francisco police.

Just three days after Morasca's death, **Mary Quick,** a 63yearold school teacher **was shot in the face and her purse stolen** as she was about to enter Fresno's American legion Post 509, where she was president of the Woman's Auxiliary.

At first, police assumed it to be a routine mugging murder, until it was discovered that **her nephew, Brian Weiss,** who had been living at his aunt's house in Fresno, **was a business associate of Michael Riconosciuto's.** (Brian Weiss was also mentioned in the abovementioned 1983 "drug transcript").

Riconosciuto explained to police that he told Paul Morasca that he had given Mary Quick a card containing **secret bank account code numbers** because "she had no connection to any of the principles and could be trusted." She had been instructed to give the code numbers over the phone only to Paul Morasca or Michael Riconosciuto.

It was not until I obtained Michael Riconosciuto's "desert" files that the above story affected me personally. **Within one of the boxes was an envelope containing eight coded computer cards with large sums of money handwritten next to the account numbers. One card, containing ten account numbers, indicated sums of upwards of $3.5 million dollars.** That was just one card of eight.

In my next conversation with Michael Riconosciuto, I inquired of him the "real" story behind Paul Morasca and Mary Quick's death. I did not reveal to him that I was in possession of his bank cards, but referred to the S.F. Chronicle newspaper story.

Michael remorsefully indicated that he had not, in fact, given any cards to Mary Quick as he had told

Paul Morasca he did. Michael had kept them (and obviously hidden them at his desert trailer). Nevertheless, Morasca believed, and under torture revealed, that one of the cards was being held by Mary Quick and the rest were stored in a safe deposit box. As we know, Mary Quick died three days later.

After that conversation I immediately took the cards to a professional photographer, had closeup photographs taken of them, and returned them in a separate envelope to Bobby Riconosciuto. I never knew what she did with them.

During subsequent phone conversations, Riconosciuto often referred to his former partner, Paul Morasca. During his attempted trade into the Federal Witness Protection Program, he had made a statement which caught my attention, and which I later inquired about. While relating his background in the electronics field, he had mentioned that he once worked at **Tyme Share, Inc.** Chuck Evert, a longtime family friend, had reportedly been one of the founders along with Tom O'Roarke.

Noted Riconosciuto, " ... And at the time of Paul Morosca's death, the biggest loss I received was a big bag of bearer shares of original Tyme Shares stock. And that was the main reason why Paul got killed."

Riconosciuto had stressed that only the FinCen people would understand the significance of that. I later learned that the computer cards which Paul Morasca and Mary Quick had died for belonged to the **Tyme Shares online financial clearing house used worldwide by banking institutions.** Essentially, the cards were provided to a subscriber or "user" who rented time on the computer for conducting banking transactions.

Riconosciuto chose not to elaborate on his operation at Tyme Shares from a "jail" phone, nevertheless, I was able to decipher that **he and Paul Morasca had accessed bank accounts using the computer cards in conjunction with a "password" determined by the user. Michael had created the passwords from the "pets" named in Phyllis Riconosciuto's (Michael's exwife's) diary.**

He did, however, randomly discuss his background with Tyme Shares: "I developed the modem, error trapping routines for Tyme Share used on the original network. I developed the protected mode memory for the scientific data systems, SDS, Sigma 7 computers. And I developed the capital PERT, Pert Software, which was the next generation of critical path method. That's a Programmed Evaluation Review Technique that Tyme Shares, for years, was the leader in.

"And then Electronic Data Systems bought a license from them, and you know, EDS's story is legendary. Now, PROMISE is an outgrowth of PERT. The Hamiltons had a woman programmer who was selftaught and she's the one, her signature is in the code structures of PROMIS. It's just like her signature because she was out of the mainstream and did things her own way ..."

Shortly thereafter, while reviewing Riconosciuto's documents, I came across a copy of an obscure statement submitted by Riconosciuto in **February 1984 to the San Francisco Grand Jury on the**

death of Paul Morasca. It cryptically tied Morasca to Wackenhut and appeared to have been transcribed from a tape recorded interview. The statement in its entirety read as follows:

"I first heard of Phil Porath in December of 1981. John Phillip Nichols [Cabazon administrator] told Paul Morasca and myself that we needed Phil Porath as a consultant to Recovery Technology, Inc. Porath was represented by John P. Nichols as being able to smoothly handle metals transactions for RTI on a large scale. Phil Porath was one of the contacts that John Phillip Nichols had committed to arrange for Paul as part of our deal. Paul Morasca's body was found after he failed to contact Porath for that scheduled meeting in January 1982.

"After Paul's death, JPN [John Phillip Nichols] came to me with a request. He asked me if I could recover some of **Ben Kalka's LSD** because he had a sale for 5 lbs. of it to someone in Romania. John Phillip Nichols claimed that this was an authorized covert intelligence operation and **the proceeds would be used to purchase George Wackenhut's yacht, Top Secret.**

"Military electronics equipment to be delivered to South Africa was also to be purchased according to JPN and delivered by the yacht. I went along with the program because JPN told me that **the `agency' was involved through WSI.** I did some checking on my own and became suspicious of JPN. Then JPN met with myself and **Raoul Arana** of Central Carribean Research, Inc.

"At this meeting, the details were plainly discussed by Mr. Arana. At that point, JPN directed me to have PAT (Phillip Arthur Thompson) **recover [all] of Kalka's assets.** I then contacted **DeSilva, who had control of Kalka's assets** and he agreed to release them to me. **DeSilva later called the Indian reservation and gave the location of the assets which included: one bobtail semitruck with power lift gate loaded with amphetamine production chemicals; one red Datsun truck with a portable refrigerator containing the acid.**

"I accompanied PAT and Steve Finley to the locations of these vehicles in the Oakland area. The keys, title and registration were with each vehicle. PAT and SF drove the vehicles off and I reported to JPN that the vehicles had been located and picked up.

"I also reported to my attorney, DW (Don Wager), the details. I contacted JPN a few days later and he complained to me that PAT had made off with everything.

" ... with George Wackenhut in Las Vegas. JPN told me that my problems would be over with if I went along with the program. **Brian Weiss** [Mary Quick's nephew] drove me to Palm Springs where I rented a car. JPN, myself and Brian Weiss then drove to Las Vegas.

"We arrived in Las Vegas late in the afternoon. We checked into the hotel. After we checked in, I was then introduced to Phil Porath by JPN. Porath seemed a little nervous and upset with JPN. JPN seemed desperate to have Phil Porath stall George W. on the sale of the yacht. Phil Porath seemed reluctant to go along with JPN.

"JPN, myself and Porath then went to a private section of the dining room and met with **GW [George Wackenhut] and JA[John Ammarell].** During dinner, JPN outlined my situation. **[Al] Holbert, [Ben] Kalka, [Richard] Knozzi, [and] the Fresno Company were covered in detail.**

"A cutaway, sectioned high security lock was also shown to JA and GW [George Wackenhut]. JA said that this should be presented to his personal friend, Bud Miller, for action and that I would be contacted.

"The sale of the WH [Wackenhut] yacht then came up. Porath gave GW a story [at] JPN's prompting. GW was impatient and asked where the `South African' Thompson could be reached?I then asked GW [George Wackenhut] if he was referring to PAT [Phillip Arthur Thompson] and he said, `Yes.'

"I then demanded to know what was going on? I laid out to GW what **PAT had done, including murdering PM [Paul Morasca]**. JPN interrupted me and told GW that I was mistaken and it was a different PT that I was talking about. It was at that point that GW [George Wackenhut] said he had a hearing problem and the dinner broke up.

"I went immediately to make telephone calls. I spread the word that I felt my life was in danger and that JPN, WH, and PAT had conspired to kill PM [Paul Morasca]. I then went back to the dining area where I saw PP [Phil Porath] and GW [George Wackenhut] at a small twoperson table talking about the yacht deal. JPN and JA were standing up and they asked me to come to JA's room.

"At JA's room, everybody acted like nothing had happened. There we talked for an hour or so about hitech projects. JPN and I then went to PP's room and talked [about] P's missed meeting with Paul M., Bill Jensen, Burt Gardener and metal projects. We then went to bed. The next morning JPN, BW [Brian Weiss] and I drove back to Indio. At no time did JPN mention the problem that came down at dinner."

******

In John Connolly's SPY magazine article on Wackenhut, September 1992 issue, on page 54, a brief notation mentioned Riconosciuto's meeting in Las Vegas with George Wackenhut and **John Ammarell, a Wackenhut board member** and consultant to George Wackenhut. SPY contacted Ammarell regarding the meeting, and Ammarell confirmed that such a meeting did indeed take place in Las Vegas. "I don't remember any specific conversations," Ammarell said, "but I think we were there to discuss the sale of George's [Wackenhut] yacht, the Top Secret. I think Nichols said he had a potential buyer."

Wrote SPY, **"So, the wealthy president of a large security company with CIA ties and one of his board members meet with a drug dealer turned electronics expert and a spook turned arms supplier and all they discuss is the sale of a boat?"**

******

After reading the newspaper article on the death of Paul Morasca, I contacted **Jonathan Littman** at the San Francisco Chronicle. Littman jumped in the car and drove from San Francisco to Mariposa (near Yosemite National Park) when he learned I had obtained Michael's hidden documents.

Interestingly, when he arrived at my home he thumbed through piles of documents, but seemed to be looking for something specific. **I later learned he was searching for Phyllis Riconosciuto's (Michael's first wife's) diary.**

While Michael had worked at Wackenhut, Phyllis had been treated psychiatrically by the Cabazon administrator, Dr. John Phillip Nichols. Part of her treatment included writing a "diary" of her life with Michael. Michael later broke into Nichols' office at the reservation and stole the original diary before fleeing to Washington state.

The original diary was in fact included in the documents I had obtained in the desert, but I decided to withhold specific pages from Littman until I could determine what his purpose for wanting them was. An incident which I have enumerated in Chapter 10, confirmed that my instincts had been subliminally correct.

Meanwhile, I attempted to satisfy Littman with a few documents sent to me by Henry Weinstein, court reporter for the Los Angeles Times. I had contacted Weinstein to inquire if he had written anything on Robert Booth Nichols' (unrelated to Dr. John Phillip Nichols) lawsuit against the Los Angeles FBI, specifically FBI agent Thomas Gates?

Weinstein had not heard of the lawsuit, but immediately investigated at the Los Angeles courthouse. Shortly thereafter, he sent a package of documents relating not only to Nichols' lawsuit against Thomas Gates, but also relative to Nichols' corporate minutes on the facilitation of biological technology to Japanese institutes, copies of his weapons permits, and documents indicating that Eugene Giaquinto, Vice president of MCA Entertainment Division, was on the board of directors of Nichols' corporation, Meridian International Logistics.

Marvin Rudnick, now a Pasadena lawyer, **once tried to prosecute MCA Corporation for organized crime involvement**, but got shut down at the highest level, and the Organized Crime Strike Force was disbanned. One member of that investigative team was **Richard Stavin, who talked to Danny Casolaro shortly before his death.**

Eugene Giaquinto and Jack Valente played heavily in Rudnick's investigation of MCA, as did Curry Company (a subsidiary of MCA) in Yosemite National Park. Rudnick was written up in American Lawyer for his explorations through the MCA labrynth, and at some point, worked closely with **Thomas Gates** during his investigation of Robert Nichols. Gates and Weinstein were also well acquainted with **Mariposa County government's relationship with Curry Company.** (See page 2 of manuscript).

In return for sharing copies of these documents with him, I asked Littman to collaborate with me on a story concerning the government sanctioned **(10 years!) methamphetamine operations at Whiskey Flats, on the Sara Priest Indian reservation in Mariposa.** I was still intent on forcing the arrest of deputies involved in the meth lab at that location. (See page 3 of manuscript). Littman instructed me to put together a detailed synopsis which he would submit to the San Francisco Chronicle.

******

| Chapter 9, Part 1 | Chapter 10, Part 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 10, Part 1

Through Michael Riconosciuto, Danny Casolaro had compiled a sizable list of former CIA officers and arms dealers, the most noteworthy of whom was Robert Booth Nichols, described in various publications as a James Bond type who jetted around the world trading arms and other products.

At the time of Danny's investigation, Nichols headed Meridian International Logistics (M.I.L.), a Californiabased company that conducted extensive business in Australia and Japan. M.I.L. also controlled Meridian Arms Corporation of which Riconosciuto was briefly Vice President.

Out of the WackenhutCabazon endeavor grew a business partnership between Nichols and Riconosciuto, both interested in developing new, hightech submachine guns and powerful explosive devices that, like a nuclear blast, could produce an electromagnetic pulse that could wipe out an enemy's communicatins and electronics.

The secretive Nichols chatted with Casolaro frequently. Casolaro's July phone bills indicated that he called Nichols fifteen times that month, often in the wee hours of the morning. Several of those phone conversations lasted for more than two hours. Before his death on August 10th, Danny Casolaro told his brother, Tony, and Bill Hamilton that Nichols warned him that his investigations were risky.

According to FBI statements, Nichols is not a man whose warnings should be taken lightly. In September 1987, Special Agent Thomas Gates of the Los Angeles FBI had begun an investigation of the activities of Robert Booth Nichols and his corporation, Meridian International Logistics, through Japanese and Australian legal attaches abroad.

According to a subsequent deposition filed by Gates, the bureau suspected Nichols of being involved in a $500 million stock fraud and of maintaining ties to the Gambino crime family and organized crime in Japan.

Gates's deposition was part of a 1987 wiretapping on the phone of Eugene Giaquinto, an official of the MCA entertainment corporation with reputed MOB links. Nichols was one of the people whose calls the bureau intercepted. According to the wiretap application, Nichols was allegedly an international money launderer for money generated through narcotics trafficking and organized crime activities.

In June, 1989, Nichols sued Thomas Gates in a California state court for libel, slander, and interference with contractural relationships when he (Gates) allegedly acted outside the scope of his employment by initiating contacts with the Australian Federal Police and various individuals in Australia and Japan. The complaint asked for damages in the amount of $11,000,000.

Ted Gunderson submitted an affidavit on Nichols' behalf, stating that he believed Gates HAD acted outside the scope of his employment when investigating Nichols abroad, the suit was subsequently dismissed through the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals.

Robert Booth Nichols was depicted in one eastern publication as a "handsome, dashing figure, frequently described as `Clark Gable without the ears' ..." His friendship with movie actor Steven Seagal brought him a cameo appearance in the movie, "Under Siege," but his real purpose for being on the set was to act as technical advisor for the weaponry used in the movie.

The son of a prominent Los Angeles surgeon, Nichols is the inventor of a submachine pistol that he maintained was superior to the MAC10.

Nichols' weapons permit application, dated January 28, 1985 from the Santa Clara County Sheriff's Department, indicated that that he was born on March 6, 1943 at Loma Linda, California. In addition to his residences in California, he maintained residences in Italy, France, Australia and London, England for "business purposes for twenty years."

His medical doctor was listed in Zurich, Switzerland. He had worked for Harold Okimoto in Hawaii for four years, from 1968 to 1972 as Vice President of Preventor Security Center, an intruder electronics firm.

The four guns registered to him included two Colt .45 automatics. His purpose for carrying a concealed weapon was listed as such: "I am involved in the research and development of weapons systems, ranging from the basic blowback automatic weapon to various advanced destructive devices. As I have detailed knowledge of the workings of these systems, I feel it is imperative to have personal protection for myself and for the good of the community."

Nichols' corporation, **Meridian Arms,** a subsidiary of Meridian International Logistics, was licensed in California in 1987 to posses and/or transport machine guns, Permit No. 01678, and to sell machine guns, Permit No. 01677. A 1985 Statement by Domestic Stock Corporation filed with the Secretary of State in Sacramento listed **Harold Okimoto, Peter Zokosky, and Glen Shockley as Directors** in addition to Nichols' family.

Okimoto, Zokosky and Shockley are also listed as Directors on Meridian International Logistics, Inc. (MIL). Eugene F. Giaquinto, president of MCA (Music Corporation of America) Home Entertainment Division in Universal City, was also a Director of M.I.L. until May 31, 1988, when he resigned and returned his 10,000 shares of stock as a result of the Los Angeles Organized Crime Task Force investigation, at that time headed by Thomas Gates.

The May 25, 1988 Minutes of an MIL Board meeting reflected Robert Booth Nichols concern with the investigation: " ... Upon meeting with Agent Gates on March 8, 1988, our legal counsel, Judge Mark Robinson, interpreted the line of questioning of Agent Gates as having a main focus on the relationship between Robert Nichols and MCA, Inc. (of which Mr. Giaquinto is an officer).

" ... Therefore, due to Mr. Nichols' concern, which Mr. Giaquinto understood and thus stated he would submit written resignation within two days; it was the unanimous decision of the Board to remove Mr. Giaquinto from the position of Director of MIL forthwith ..."

Nichols' concern with such an investigation can well be justified when you review the Minutes of an MIL board meeting held in Sherman Oaks on August 26, 1988. The following business was discussed and voted upon: (Excerpted)

"It was the unanimous decision of the Board to draft a letter to the President of an internationally recognized Medical School in Japan (as referenced in our corporate minutes of April 24, 1988) **with regard to our corporation's intention to make available a grant of funds** to said School, as the funds become available to our corporation, and under specific terms and conditions.

" ... The phenomenal success in the field of immunotherapeutics by the Immunology Department of said Japanese Medical School has convinced the Board [of MIL] that **the EXCLUSIVE training of qualified physicians under contract to and the direction of Meridian International Logistics, Inc., would be of great value and benefit to our company and it's shareholders."**

While reading these documents, I **couldn't help wondering why an "arms" dealer, allegedly tied in with organized crime, wanted to fund the exclusive training of physicians at a Japanese medical school?**

The Minutes of MIL dated September 20th, 1988, referred to an agreement executed on September 14th, which discussed the threeway, equal ownership between MIL, Dr. Shigeyoshi Fujimoto, and Ajinomoto Co. Inc., of certain patented **biological technology identified as "a newly devised technology for induction and activation of cytotoxic Tlymphocytes (Tcells),** referred to as CTL, directed to autologous cancer cells in vitro with high efficacy utilizing a serumfree medium."

A Power of Attorney was issued to attorney Fujio Kubota in Japan to file patents and registrations on the technology entitled **"The Method for Induction and Activation of Cytotoxic TLymphocytes."**

The signatories on the Agreement to file Registrations and Patents on September 14, 1988 were listed as Dr. Shigeyoshi Fujimoto; Takasha Miyamae (Ajinomoto Co., Inc.); Hidetoshi Onogi (representative of MIL); Kanehiro Ishida (International Service Center, Inc.); and Takashi Kumakawa (American Embassy).

Hidetoshi Onogi was granted full power of attorney to negotiate and execute an equity position for Meridian International Logistics related to the filings and "any other documentation pertaining to the technical knowledge and the mechanical and/or chemical processes for the production of T Cells as are present in the immune system of the human body or any other organism."

In and of itself this transaction seemed innocuous enough. **But again I asked myself, why was an international arms dealer on the Board of F.I.D.C.O (First Intercontinental Development Corporation), a CIA front corporation, which offered three billion dollars to rebuild Beirut to President Amin Gamayel of Lebanon, whose chief of finances (Sami el Khouri) was shipping tons of heroin to Sicily for reexport to America, want to invest in "a method for induction and activation of cytotoxic TLymphocytes"?**

Was this technology being developed with the authority of the U.S. government, or independently? If Nichols' operations were in fact government sanctioned, then it must have been frustrating for him to be investigated by the FBI. **The concept of the FBI inadvertently investigating the CIA was ironic. And what had Danny Casolaro learned about this technology?**

I found a possible answer in an obscure letter written on Wackenhut/Cabazon letterhead, dated January 20, 1983, addressed to Dr. Harry Fair at Tactical Technology in Arlington, Virginia, from Dr. John P. Nichols, Cabazon Administrator. The letter noted that on February 15th, 1983, Dr. Nichols would be forwarding to Dr. Fair "a unique list of agents and production techniques related to **biological warfare."**

The letter went on to say that the Storemont Laboratories business plan Dr. Nichols mailed to him was to prepare him for what was to be sent in the area of **biological warfare.** Added Dr. Nichols: **"[These] products could be utilized in small countries bordering ALBANIA or large countries bordering the Soviet Union. You will be amazed at the scope ..."** I could not help recalling the Village Voice article ("The Last Days of Danny Casolaro," October 15, 1991) which had stated, tongue in cheek, that "Casolaro had traced the Inslaw and related stories back to **a CIA `Old Boy' network that had begun working together in the 1950's around the ALBANIA covert operations ..."**

The hybridoma technology discussed in attached documents (in Michael Riconosciuto's files), centered around the ability to reorganize and synthesize genetic structures and to modify "lymphocytes" (immune cells).

Under the heading "Possible Military Applications Utilizing Hybridoma Technology" was the notation that **"genesplicing technology provides the ability to produce pathogenic (harmful) agents, i.e. viruses."**

"In fact," noted the writer, "biological warfare weaponry of this nature (both production and supply) is limited only by the imagination of the scientist."

Included in the above mentioned documents (attached to the Dr. Harry Fair letter), was a proposal to develop monoclonal antibody kits to detect the presence of such harmful biological agents in a field (combat) environment. In other words, develop a laboratory created vaccine for a laboratory created virus. The very same proposal had been submitted to Peter Zokosky in December 1982 by John P. Nichols.

I wondered, was THIS the same technology that Robert Booth Nichols and the Directors of MIL, including Peter Zokosky, Glen Shockley and Harold Okimoto, were fronting to the Japanese? What kind of "weapon" was this?

Other weapons discussed in the same letter included the Cabazon Arms CA 9 SMG which "Peter Zokosky had the British interested in." The CA 9 SMG could be produced for $75.00 per unit on the reservation and sold for $100 to $125.00. "It meets all the needs of a small, poor democracy for 9MM parabellum," said Nichols.

"They can afford to purchase this one. We have fired over 50,000 rounds with the test model using South Korean ammunition without jamming. We could begin manufacturing within two weeks in a country like Guatemala, Chile, etc., utilizing USA produced dies and Swedish extrusion machinery." ... **Peter Zokosky** has fired both the Viper and the CA 9 SMG and was impressed with both, but particularly with the CA 9 SMG. Kuwait has been particularly interested in financing the producion of the CA 9 SMG ..."

Dr. Nichols concluded: "We would initially manufacture on the reservation. **We can purchase an existing small company with all the licenses to manufacture and export.** [Meridian Arms?] We are ready. We are continuing to experiment with the combination sniper rifle (9MM) equipped with micropressor vision enhancement (no tubes) (night vision). **Michael Riconosciuto and some friends of the reservation have been working cooperatively on this project.** Within another 90 to 120 days we should have a working model to use on the CA 9 SMG and the sniper rifle."

The ongoing projects listed in research and development were a second 9MM calibre machine pistol, an assault rifle with laser sighting, a longdistance sniper rifle, and a small portable rocket system which could be attached to the assault rifle.

Three months later, on April 13, 1983, Robert Booth Nichols wrote to Joseph Preloznik in Madison, Wisconsin, recapitulating exactly the same weapons proposal as outlined above by Dr. John Nichols to Dr. Harry Fair.

I never found out who Joseph Preloznik was, but Dr. Harry Fair's name popped up in a Wackenhut InterOffice Memorandum in Michael's files. Dated May 25, 1981, from Robert Frye, a Vice President of Wackenhut in Indio, to **Robert Chasen, a Vice President of Wackenhut** in Coral Gables (and former Commissioner of U.S. Customs) the memorandum detailed a May 1213 visit to **Dr. Harry Fair,** Chief of Propulsion Technology, Applied Sciences Division and others at **Pickitinny Arsenal in Dover, New Jersey.**

The arsenal was listed under the official heading of "U.S. Army Armament Research & Development Command, Large Caliber Weapon Systems Laboratory" or ARRADCOM.

The fivepage memo not only outlined the depth of Wackenhut's commitment and involvement at the

Cabazon reservation, but it delineated Peter Zokosky's importance to the projects underway there. One of those projects included proposed construction of an "R & D" (Research and Development) facility on the Cabazon Indian reservation for the manufacture of 120 mm. combustible cartridge cases for sale to the U.S. Army, with sales also to NATO, and especially to the Federal Republic of Germany which at that time, was adopting the use of such cases in their Leopard tanks.

Wrote Frye: **"The obvious key to any such endeavor is [Peter] Zokosky.** He is reportedly one of only 67 personnel in the world who have had any significant experience in the development and manufacture of the slurry process involved in combustible cartridge cases. He is under present noncompete agreement with Armtec, his former company, until August 1981. Armtec is the present sole source supplier of 120 mm. combustible cartridge cases to the U.S. Government. Zokosky is also serving as a consultant to the British Government ..."

| Chapter 10, Part 2 | Chapter 9, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 10, Part 2

It is noteworthy that the Cabazon Indians had enlisted the aid of other Indian tribes to join in their endeavor. Use of adjacent tribal lands as a location for a large caliber weapons range test site was obtained from a sister tribe, the Torres Martinez, involving some 30,000 acres of very remote and desolate land near the Salton Sea.Potential use of a test firing range for the "railgun" on the Santa Rosa Mountain, under the control of the Santa Rosa Indians, had also been pledged to the Cabazons and the U. S. Government.

A notation was included in the lengthy memorandum to "firm up the deal between the Joint Venture and **John Vanderwerker, President of Intersect Corporation, [in] Irvine, California," who had the exclusive rights for foreign marketing** with the Litton Electron Tube Division **in third world countries.**

Mention of John Vanderwerker in the Wackenhut memorandum was singularly important in my investigative leap from overt arms operations to "covert" intelligence operations.

According to Peter Zokosky, Vanderwerker was on the CIA payroll. In Riconosciuto's files, I located a letter dated April 11, 1983, **written to Vanderwerker at Intersect Corporation from Glenn Shockley, a Board Director of both F.I.D.C.O. (First Intercontinental Development Corporation) and MIL (Meridian International Logistics), under investigation for organized crime activities. Robert Booth Nichols was also on the Board of both corporations.**

The Octopus trail gets a little complicated here, but it is a significant trail. **Both Vanderwerker and Shockley were on the CIA payroll.** Documents to that effect will be noted in future pages. In the aforementioned letter, **Shockley was offering to Vanderwerker fortytwo AH1S Cobra Helicopters** at a unit price of seven million eight hundred thousand U.S. dollars each.

The rest of the letter read as follows: (Note a few words had been damaged while xeroxing) "The price offered is F.A.S. location at Seller's option Europe. The price is net to Buyer possessing the proper documentation and does not include any government considerations (taxes), if any, all of which (indecipherable) to the Buyer's account.

"For verification of the existence of these products, you are requested to refer to telex transmission occuring during the Spring of 1981 between **Union Bank Suisse of Zurich,** Switzerland, and Omega Industries of Long Island, New York. The transmissions were addressed to Mr. Parvis Lavi at Omega and were signed by Mr. N.A. (indecipherable) bank officer. Your immediate response to this offer would be greatly appreciated. Sincerely, Glenn. R. Shockley."

Attached to this letter was a handwritten memorandum, obviously taken from the above referenced "telex" transmission. The memo delineated the procedure for "airframe I.D. number acquisition." The buyer's bank officer was instructed to telephone Seller's bank officer at 8:00 a.m. Tuesday morning to relay the following Seller's bank data: "**Bank Credit Suisse, Geneva.** Officer Mr. Eucomun. Telephone number 0114122365380. **Account Number 02746590 54821 Reference Code J.H."**

If the connection was missed, then it was to be repeated Wednesday at 8:00 a.m. $10 million U.S. dollars was to be exchanged at the bank for [a] Frame I.D. No. on Wednesday. If all was ready to proceed in Geneva in 5 banking days, then the $10 million would be credited to the buyer's account toward acquisition of all craft. If not, then $10 million was to be forfeited.

The bank officer's followup monologue as noted on the memorandum read as follows: **"Acting on behalf of our client, I confirm that he has on deposit the sum of $10 million U.S.D.** Upon receipt of one airframe identification number, the price of one craft will be set aside irrevocably for your client. If our client does not present to you within 5 banking days in Geneva, Switzerland, all necessary data, documents and fund commitments, he has agreed to forfeit the price of one craft to your client's account."

Also attached to these documents, was a sheet of handwritten notes obviously related to the above transaction. The names of various banks and their locations, along with the name of a bank officer, notations about **metric tons of gold**, and a code name, "Messenger Boy," were cryptically scrawled on the sheet.

I inquired of Michael Riconosciuto what the story was on the sale of the Cobra helicopters? Riconosciuto briefly related the following story. The fortytwo Cobra helicopters had been ordered by/for NATO, then after the helicopters were built, the funding was not available. **Nichols and Glenn Shockley, working for the CIA, were contracted to "get rid of the helicopters." John Vanderwerker was brought into the operation and the helicopters were shipped to a warehouse in Europe, destined for North Korea, then Iraq.**

It is important to note here that North Korea was a conduit for arms to Iraq from both the United States and the Soviet Union. In essence, the United States was forced to "compete" with the Soviets in providing arms to Iraq.

This is discussed in further chapters, but in summary, what it all boiled down to was Oliver North supplied arms to Iran. The CIA supplied arms to Iraq. And Wackenhut supplied arms to the Contras. All under the authority and supervision of the U.S. Government.

I asked Michael Riconosciuto if Danny Casolaro had knowledge of the "helicopter" deal? Michael responded, "I gave him the names of the people that were involved and Danny went out and confirmed it."

I asked him to elaborate. "Well, Danny went and talked to Roy Furmarc (phonetic sp.), William Casey's exright hand man, and Furmarc admitted that he had contact with them [the helicopters]. And when the

NATO stuff disappeared, Bob [Nichols] disappeared with it. They weren't going to pay Bob and his accomplices what they wanted, per the original deal, and Bob got angry and just walked away with it all. **But Bob got help from some people in the White House, and they cut a certain group of guys in the agency [CIA] out."**

I asked, "Who was involved with the helicopter sale besides Nichols?"

"Well, **Glen Shockley,** Parvis Lavi (phonetic sp.), he's an Iranian, but he worked with the Israeli (indecipherable word) Mission out of New York ..."

Riconosciuto paused, remembering, then continued with his story: " ... I brought in Stan Singer, former deputy Israeli Defense Minister, to try and take all those helicopters off everybody's hands. I would have made a nice, tidy sum of money for myself ..."

"Who were the helicopters originally destined for?"

Mike: "NATO. During the Carter administration, there was a slip up on some funding, they were really screwy in the way they handled certain things ..."

"Was this some kind of an undercover operation?"

Mike: "It was on the up and up, regular deliveries from the United States to NATO, but there was some kind of a misunderstanding between the upper reaches of the Carter Administration and some of the other NATO countries, so while they were having highlevel discussions, no financial instruments exchanged hands.

"They finally came to terms on the financial end of it, but by that time the stuff [helicopters] had been removed from the loading docks and warehouses."

"So, they were gone?"

Mike: "They were gone."

"To North Korea?"

Mike: "Into storage in Europe. Later they got sold to North Korea, and other places. It was hotter than hell ..."

"Where in Europe, do you know?"

Mike: "Well, I don't want to go into it on the phone [from jail], but I know the whole story behind it.

While it was in storage, everbody and their brother was trying to buy the stuff and the price got jacked way up. Casey's faction and Carlucci and those guys, they wanted it all, wanted to screw Bob and his guys, and Bob made an alliance with somebody else for the stuff ..." "Who?"

"Well, later with Mike McManus in the White House." (McManus was assistant to President Reagan, and on the Board of Directors of F.I.D.C.O. with Nichols).

"Why did they call upon Nichols to do this? What was his connection?"

Mike: "Bob had been doing errands for them for years ..."

"Who in particular?"

Mike: "Bob was working under Larry Kern basically. And Ellen's father [Nichols' wife] was somewhere in there ..."

"Was he working for the NSC at that time?"

Mike: **"Just the CIA. He was just doing contract type work.** He was good at what he did. Whatever objectives were given to him, Bob always achieved them. You know, he has an impeccable track record ..."

In a subsequent interview with Robert Booth Nichols, I asked him about the helicopter deal. **Nichols confirmed that he had, indeed, participated in the shipment of the helicopters to Europe through the CIA.**

In news interviews, Wackenhut had denied association with Michael Riconosciuto, yet in Michael's files, I found a letter written on Meridian Arms letterhead, dated February 10, 1984, from Robert Booth Nichols to Dr. Harry Fair referring to the Wackenhut visit to Pickitinny Arsenal in May, 1981. Nichols reminded Dr. Fair of the demonstration at Pickitinny in which "Michael Riconosciuto [had] discussed electrostatic heat transfer augmentation in a wide range of applications ... and demonstrated control of heat in electric discharge."

This letter was significant in that it confirmed that Riconosciuto HAD in fact accompanied Peter Zokosky and Robert Frye, Vice President of Wackenhut, to the Pickitinny Arsenal to demonstrate the above mentioned technology.

******

The crux of the Wackenut involvement in arms development and shipments through various sources, including Peter Zokosky, Robert Booth Nichols, John Vanderwerker, and others, was tied irrevocably to the Reagan administration's efforts to aid the Nicaraguan Contras.

A Special Operations Report emanating from the Riverside, California, District Attorney's office which was sent to John Cohen, investigator for the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw, provided indisputable proof that Wackenhut sold arms to the Contras.

The Special Operations Intelligence Report entitled, "Nicaraguans and Earl Brian at Lake Cahuilla 9/10/81" described a meeting held between two groups, the Nicaraguans and Wackenhut/Cabazon officials, at a countyowned police firing range at Lake Cahuilla in Riverside County.

According to the surveillance report, the purpose of the meeting was "to test a new night vision device and weapons. All [the] weapons tested were semiautomatic. [A} new sniper rifle tested was a 50 caliber with a 308 bullet."

The report went on to note that "some automatic weapons were present, but all had necessary **permits through Meridian Arms.** Meridian Arms [is] owned by Michael Riconosciuto, Robert Booth Nichols (no relation to John Phillip Nichols), and **Don Oliver former Undersheriff of San Diego County.** Meeting and testing took about one hour, then all parties left."

Police officers had been placed around the surrounding area in a surveillance/protection type mode. Each of the six Indio police officers participating in the range surveillance were named individually in the report.

The license plate numbers of each car that arrived on the scene was included in the Report along with the names and identification of everyone who attended the demonstration. Some of those names and I. D.'s were:

"Michael Riconosciuto Researcher for Cabazon Indians."

"Peter Zokosky President of Armtech Coachella."

"John D. Vanderwerker and a couple of his friends Vanderwerker, CIA Research Director for CIA [for] 8 years."

"Earl Brian Wisconsin businessman and CIA employee."

"Two Nicaraguan Generals **Eden Pastora, Commander Zero** and Jose Curdel, Commander Alpha."

"Raul Arana Central Caribbean research procurement front for liberation of Nicaragua (PreContra days)."

"John Phillip Nichols Cabazon Indian Manager."

"Wayne Reeder Builder/Developer""Jimmy Hughes Security Chief Cabazon Indians"

"Art Welmas Tribal Chairman of Cabazon Indians."

"Scott Wesley United States Army."

"Honduran Telephone Company Military connection network in Southern Hemisphere." And others.

The surveillance report indicated that Wayne Reeder and Earl Brian arrived together in a 1981 White Rolls Royce, License Plate Number OK 2XG2302. The two Nicaraguan Generals arrived in a 1981 Honda, License Plate Number AZ AFM877.

A newspaper article in the Los Angeles Times, dated May 16, 1991, entitled, "Noriega Papers Claim CIA Sent Him Millions," by Mike Clary, reported that General Manual Noriega, Panama's former strongman leader, **was paid more than $11 million from a CIA slush fund.** A 107page Noriega defense document contended that Noriega once warned the CIA to put an end to cocaine shipments to the United States that were being used to raise funds for the Contras in Nicaragua.

Noriega, who was scheduled to go on trial for drug smuggling on July 22, **maintained that planes carrying arms to Nicaraguan rebels returned to the United States loaded with illegal drugs. It was clearly a guns for drugs policy, he said.**

The article concluded that **"Noriega served as a conduit for cash payments from the CIA to onetime antiSandinista leader EDEN PASTORA."**

So, in 1981, Eden Pastora attended the Wackenhut nightvision goggles demonstration in Indio with numerous CIA employees in attendance, and ten years later, the L.A. Times reported that Pastora was a recipient of cash payments, via Noriega, from the CIA.

******

I believe it is safe to theorize at this point that the various tentacles of the Octopus heretofore outlined were used to develop and ship arms to various countries such as Nicaragua, Afghanistan, Lebanon, Pakistan, and other third world countries in exchange for cocaine and heroin. These countries certainly didn't have the funds to pay with cash. And it is possible that The Company was in fact the mechanism used to distribute the drugs after entry into the United States.

The reader may be wondering how I obtained a copy of the abovementioned "Special Operations [surveillance] Report." I had requested a copy of it from both the Riverside District Attorney's office and John Cohen, investigator for the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw, but the report was confidential and neither would send me a copy.

I then called Peter Zokosky and asked him to corroborate the report's existence. He not only corroborated it, but he offered to send me a copy. When I asked how HE had obtained a copy, he said, "I asked a friend in Washington D.C. to go into the [House Judiciary] vault and make a copy for me."

I received a copy shortly thereafter from Peter Zokosky. When I called John Cohen and mentioned I'd obtained a copy, he said he was aware that "someone" had gotten past the guards and into the House vault. He didn't know what had been taken, but he validated the document in my possession.

| Chapter 11, Part 1 | Chapter 10, Part 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 11, Part 1

Michael Riconosciuto had some, if not all, of the answers to the gene splicing technology that Zokosky and Wackenhut had attempted to sell to the Army weapons division in 1983, and later fronted to the Japanese, through Meridian International Logisitcs, in 1988.

I felt that time was of the essence in uncovering the nature of this technology, so I pushed Riconosciuto to talk about it. "It looks like Earl Brian, Sir Denis Kendall, Hercules Research, Wackenut, Zokosky and Bob Nichols were all involved in the same biotechnological agenda ..."

Michael answered, "You got it."

I asked, "Are they connected, or are they all individually working on their own projects?"

Michael: "Yes."

"How?"

Michael: "Check out Bio-Rad Laboratories. Their international headquarters are on half of the property that used to be the Hercules plant, in Hercules, California. Do you understand what I'm saying? BioRad makes the most toxic biological and radioactive compounds known to man. And they're now located in the town of Hercules. BioRad Industrial Park. That building of theirs, the headquarters, doesn't look like much, but it goes 20 stories down into the ground. It's a huge underground complex.

"See, BioRad was the flagship company, and then they [Earl Brian] started InfoTech, and then they got mired in lawsuits and then Hadron was formed to be a cutout parent corporation, you know, just to be a firewall from law suits ..."

I asked, "What do they do at BioRad?"

"Well, they make the most hazardous biological and nuclear chemicals in the world, for medical research."

"Who do they sell it to?"

"Well, front line researchers all over the world. BioRad is the single source for this stuff ... actually Aldrich Chemical sells it, there's about 100 companies, but BioRad is head and shoulder above all of them by a factor of ten on many things like Cytotoxins."

I remembered reading about Cytotoxins in the Wackenhut/Cabazon biological warfare letters to Dr.

Harry Fair.

Michael continued ... "You look at Cytotoxic TLymphocytes. You go ask any medical professional what they're doing on the leading edge of research there? What the full implications to humanity are, OK?"

I wanted clarification from Michael, so I answered, "It looks to me like research on a cure for cancer."

Michael took the bait. "Go ask a professional. I'd rather have you hear it from a collateral source other than from me."

"Well, give me some indication ..."

Michael responded hesitantly, "It would have been Hitler's wet dream. It's selective to such a degree that it's awesome. With the appropriate genetic material, you can wipe out whole segments of humanity. There's no stopping it."

"I asked, "You mean you could selectively wipe out certain races of people?"

"Sure."

"Jeez."

Mike continued ..."And, also, from the beneficial side, you can very specifically wipe out disease cells, cancer cells. Look at the patents. Look at Immunix (phonetic sp.) Corporation, look at the patent portfolios on BioRad."

"Who's BioRad's main buyer?"

"Well, the National Institute of Health, you know, every hospital in the world buys BioRad products."

I had read about Sir Denis Kendall, the famous M16 British intelligence officer during World War II, in "Who's Who in America," 1989 issue. Kendall had worked with Michael in some, as yet, undefined capacity. Bobby Riconosciuto had noted to me that Kendall and Ted Gunderson had counseled Oliver North prior to his testimony to Congress. Kendall was also heavily involved in arms and biotechnology, according to Michael Riconosciuto.

"Who's Who" described Denis William Kendall as a "medical electronic equipment company executive," born in Halifax, Yorkshire, England on May 27, 1903. Kendall came to the United States in 1923, was naturalized in 1957. His background included being a consultant to the Pentagon on high velocity small arms from 1940 to 1945. He was listed on Churchill's War Cabinet Gun Board from 194145. He was later executive vice president of Brunswick Ordnance Plant in New Jersey from 1952 to

1956. From 1961 to 1973, became president of Dynapower Medonics in Los Angeles, and chief executive of Kendall Medical International, Inc. in Los Angeles in 1973.

In 1983, the same year that Wackenhut was offering biological warfare agents to the Army, Sir Denis Kendall was the chairman of Steron Products, Inc. His club membership listings indicated he was a 32 degree Shriner in the Pacific Palisades (California) Masons and a member of the Religious Society of Friends (Quaker), amongst other things.

I asked Riconosciuto, "What was Sir Denis Kendall's connection ...?"

Michael broke in ..."He's involved in all of it. You might be able to get a handle on Kendall through Tiny Roland, a subsidiary of which is Penguin Books. And the other goodoleboy in the nail work is Octav Botnar. Then there's Wolfgang Fosog (phonetic sp.), Renee Hanner, Count Otto Linkee (phonetic sp.) ..."

"How did you meet these guys?"

"I was introduced through Joe Snell and Norman Davis. Snell was considered the father of industrial design. He was an industrial design artist who did the logos for Coca Cola, Chanel No. 5, Life Magazine. Norm Davis owned (unintelligble) brewery until he sold to Carling. My dad was his advertising and public relations man. My dad didn't know Kendall personally, but Norm Davis did. I met Kendall through Davis."

"Do you know what Kendall is into currently?"

"Sure."

"What would that be?"

"There's a pharmaceutical company in Los Angeles. There's a medical electronics company ... Ted Shannon in Los Angeles supervises all the production for that stuff. It's very exotic, far out stuff. And he's still in a controlling position in Brunswick [Ordnance] Corporation."

I asked Riconosciuto, "How close was BioRad to your father's plant, Hercules?"

Mike answered, "It's on the same property!"

"Mike, when you were conducting research at Hercules, you were incubating something in fish tanks there. What was it?"

Michael's response had a nervous edge to it. "Where ... where are you getting this?"

Riconosciuto was unaware at that point that his hidden files were in my possession. "I'm just thumbing through some old documents ..."

" ... Those documents aren't supposed to exist any more. They've all been destroyed."

"By whom?"

"Well, it was a matter of routine, you know ... they COULDN'T exist ...""

"Uh, huh."

"That's what they're doing with all this stock manipulation, you know. The biologicals are what got them in the door at such a high level in Japan ..."

I sensed Riconosciuto's possible involvement in the project, his reluctance to discuss it. But he believed I had "all" the records and he stammered on. " ... That paperwork trail shouldn't exist. I mean it was kept in a safe place, and then it was shredded. And the only people that had any direct knowledge of it was [Peter] Zokosky and Earl Barber, John Nichols, Bob Nichols, you know, those people ..."

Michael was attempting to disengage himself from any responsibility for the research.

" ... If there are any records left, those are their records, not any of ours [at Hercules], because I'm sure all of ours were destroyed."

I asked, "Why did you destroy them?"

"Well, do you understand the nature of this technology? You're talking in vague, general terms."

I answered, "I have an idea ..."

Michael interjected, " ... Horrible things. You know, it makes what the Nazi's did to the Jews look mild. The Romanian Project, do your homework on that project, you know it's a horrible germ warfare project ..."

"Uh, huh."

" ... And the Soviets were involved in it, and we countered it with our own methods."

I noted to Michael that Bill Turner, the man who had met Danny Casolaro in the parking lot of the Sheraton Martinsburg Inn (with Hughes Aircraft documents) on the day before his death, was currently in jail. Turner had written a letter in which he talked about an Iraqi from the Iraqi Embassy who was facilitating the transportation of biological warfare items to Iraq.

Michael responded, "Listen, Saddam Hussein introduced chemical and biological warfare agents to all his top military leaders. And he became enamored with this technology. He's been on a binge of sorts. Even when he was in the secret police of Iraq, he used chemical means on a wide scale ..."

I asked, "But none of these various entities that I've just named were dealing directly with Iraq, were they?"

"No, no. Not directly. All they needed was a VENDORS LIST."

Riconosciuto noted that the shipments were all ITAR (International Trafficking of Armaments) regulated chemicals, electronics, communications equipment, anything that was on the ITAR list.

******

In August, 1991, the Financial Post ran a story on Dr. Earl Brian. At that time, Brian's main company, Infotechnology Inc. of New York was bankrupt, and its subsidiary United Press International (UPI) was on the verge of collapse.

According to the Financial Post, the Securities and Exchange Commission and the FBI were investigating Brian, and a flurry of affidavits filed in the Inslaw Inc. scandal accused him of selling bootleg copies of the computer company's casetracking software (PROMIS) to the intelligence services of Canada, Israel, and Iraq.

Brian was referred to as "Cash" in the intelligence community and reportedly had a close relationship with the CIA. He was a highly decorated combat surgeon in the Vietnam war in the late 1960's, allegedly working in the controversial Phoenix Program. This, according to a 1993 "Wired," premier issue, entitled "INSLAW, The Inslaw Octopus" by Richard L. Fricker. Wrote Fricker, "After a stint in Vietnam, where he [Brian] worked as a combat physician in the unit that supplied air support for Operation Phoenix, Brian returned to California ..."

In 1970, Ronald Reagan appointed Brian director of the California Department of Health Care Services. He was only 27 and destined to remain a part of Reagan's inner sanctum. U.S. and Israeli intelligence sources linked Brian's name to the sale of weapons to Iran in the 1980's. "He was serving U.S. intelligence people, " said Ari BenMenashe, a former Israeli intelligence officer who claims he met Brian several times, once in Tel Aviv. Brian allegedly had more to do with the financial end of the transactions.

Other publications listed Brian's holdings in the rapidly developing biotechnology field. The hightech empire of Dr. Brian was a grab bag of fledgling companies involved in all the hot areas lasers, cancer detection kits, bloodtesting products, **genetic engineering**, computer programs, telecommunications and investment databases.

One of Brian's companies, Hadron, Inc. of Fairfax, Virginia, which, incidentally, both Michael Riconosciuto and Robert Nichols maintained Peter Viedenieks was involved in, was a laser manufacturer and computer services company.

According to Bill Hamilton, president of Inslaw, Hadron had attempted to buy Inslaw in 1983. Dominic Laiti, Hadron's chairman at the time, had phoned Hamilton out of the blue and said Hadron intended to become a dominant vendor of software to law enforcement agencies. Would Hamilton like to sell? Hamilton demurred. "We have ways of making you sell," Laiti is said to have replied.

Laiti, in an interview in 1988 with the Senate Subcommittee on Investigations, said he didn't remember calling Hamilton. Nevertheless, Hamilton said he believes his rejection of Hadron on that day in 1983 triggered an attempt by the Department of Justice to put Inslaw out of business, or at least bankrupt the small, Washingtonbased software maker.

At that time, Peter Viedenieks was the administrator of the contract between Inslaw and the DOJ. Within a few months of Hadron's call, the Department of Justice, citing contract violations, stopped making payments on Inslaw's $10 million deal to install PROMIS software in its 20 largest U.S. attorney's offices nationwide. (PROMIS stands for Prosecutor's Management Information System.)

Inslaw, starved of cash, was forced into Chapter 11 bankruptcy protection in 1985. Hamilton sued the DOJ for theft of property in 1986.

In February 1988, Federal Bankruptcy Court Judge George Bason ordered the DOJ to pay Inslaw $7 million in licensing and legal fees. The DOJ, Bason ruled, had "stolen PROMIS from Inslaw through trickery, fraud and deceit," then tried to put the company out of business.

The DOJ appealed Bason's ruling, but it was upheld. However in May, the U.S Court of Appeals reversed the decision on a technicality. Hamilton believed Dr. Brian and his old crony, former Attorney General Edwin Meese, were behind the attempt to bankrupt and liquidate Inslaw. When Inslaw refused to sell to Hadron, Hamilton believed the DOJ tried to bankrupt and liquidate Inslaw to force the sale of its assets, perhaps to Hadron, at firesale prices.

Several journalistic publications accused Dr. Brian of profiting from the Justice Department's theft of the PROMIS software. According to a number of sources, Brian traveled the world during the mideighties, selling the data management program to intelligence and law enforcement agencies the world over.

Brian's role, if any, in the October Surprise was less well publicized. The primary source thus far for the allegations that Brian was involved, is former Israeli intelligence officer Ari BenMenashe. Menashe alleged that Earl Brian helped make one of the first contacts between Republicans and the government of Iran in 1980. BenMenashe claimed Brian accompanied Robert C. "Bud" McFarlane to Tehran in late

February 1980. The trip came shortly after the New Hampshire primary, when insiders knew that there would be a ReaganBush ticket.

Earl Brian and McFarlane, then an aide to Senator John Tower (RTX), allegedly contacted Iranians with whom Brian had conducted business prior to the fall of the Shah. According to BenMenashe, one of these was Mehdi Bazargan, onetime Prime Minister, and in February 1980 still closely connected to the Iranian leadership.

An old 1975 Sacramento Bee newspaper article, dated January 12, 1975, reported that Earl Brian, called the Genius Doctor by his friends, was out to get a little "of that Middle Eastern oil money." **The article went on to say that Brian was "helping to write a proposal on health care for Iran."**

Brian, then at the University of Southern California, was working with Samuel Tibbetts of the California Lutheran Hospital Association, which in turn was working with a Chicago group. The Chicago group was not named and details of the proposal were not known. It is significant that Brian left his post one year before this proposal was written, in 1974, as Governor Ronald Reagan's Health and Welfare secretary. It was not known whether the contract with the Iranian government was ever consumated.

Another interesting facet of Brian's background included his relationship with **Senator Terry Sanford** (DN.C.). Prior to his election, Sanford had been the attorney representing Earl Brian in his 1985 takeover bid for United Press International (UPI). Sanford was also instrumental in winning Brian an appointment to the board of Duke University Medical School. At that time, Sanford was the president of Duke University.

Dr. Brian ultimately directed his energies towards biological technology. Another of his companies, Biotech Capital Corporation of New York, became 50% owner of American Cytogenetics, which was planning in 1982 **to create a subsidiary to engage in genetic research.** One notable investor in Biotech, when it went public in 1981, was **Edwin Meese.** Today, American Cytogenetics in North Hollywood, California, conducts Pap tests for cervical cancer. It also tests tissue samples for cancer and related diseases. Sales in 1985 were $3.4 million.

Hadron, of which Dr. Brian was a director, provided engineering and computer consulting services, along with telecommunications products. Sales were $25.7 million in 1985. Clinical Sciences, Inc. sells biochemical products used for diagnostic tests and antibody analysis. Dr. Brian was also a director of this company. Sales in 1986 were about $4 million.

******

| Chapter 11, Part 2 | Chapter 10, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

The Last Circle - Chapter 11, Part 2

Michael Riconosciuto had stated that he believed Earl Brian held a financial interest in Bio-Rad Laboratories in Hercules, California. I was unable to locate Brian's name in Board directories, but obtained some documents on an OEM agreement between California Integrated Diagnostics, Inc., a wholly owned subsidiary of the InFerGene Company, ("Manufacturer") a Delaware corporation, and BioRad Laboratories, Inc. ("Customer") a Delaware corporation, which listed the terms under which the manufactuer would provide the customer with various products.

Various exhibits outlined the product price list, delivery schedules, engineering specifications, etc. What made this agreement significant was a newspaper article published in the San Francisco Chronicle on May 31, 1991, entitled, "S.F. Firm Faces Toxics Charges." A criminal complaint had been filed against a law firm, an investmentbanking house and several lawyers and financiers involved with InFerGene Company for abandoning its toxic wastes after filing for bankruptcy.

According to an affidavit filed by the Solano County District Attorney's office at the Fairfield Municipal Court, after InFerGene was evicted from the premises, a county inspector found several hundred containers including petri dishes and vials marked "chlamydia, herpes, and HSV2." Many others contained "bacteria of unknown etiology."

A Vacaville newspaper reported that on December 7, an environmental health inspector found 36 55gallon drums of radioactive Butanol containing "beef mucosa." They were improperly stored and lacked labels showing content, hazard warning or the owner's business address. A followup report made by the environmental health office noted that a Halloween 1990 investigation into a smell was traced to a door with a radiation warning on it. The department had recommended that the lab doors be sealed and the pipe opening sealed.

In all, the county Environmental Health Department had responded four times to complaints about smells from the InFerGene labs in the Benicia Industrial Park well before it shut down in February. One complaint listed persistent smells causing nausea, a problem also cited by others still working in the area.

Founded in 1983, InFerGene specialized in DNA technology, making diagnostic test kits for AIDS, hepatitis and other diseases.

My research led me to another article on Bay Area bio-labs. In June, 1991, the San Francisco Examiner published a story entitled, "Germ War Lab Alarms Berkeley" which noted the community of West Berkeley **"was home to the Defense Department's one and only supplier of antiplague vaccine."** On December 28, 1990, four maintenance men made an unauthorized entrance into a room at Cutter Biological which housed Yersinia pestis, commonly known as "The Black Plague," which once killed a quarter of the population of Europe 650 years ago.

There was no harm to the workers and no release of the live bacteria, but if an accident had occurred, all of Berkeley would have been wiped out.

******

It is impossible NOT to compare the two incidents in the San Francisco bay area with the Wackenhut proposal to develop biological warfare viruses on the Cabazon Indian reservation in Indio, California. In order to develop vaccines, which sounds innocuous enough, the virus must first be created. In the case of biological warfare viruses, the disease would have to be highly sophisticated indeed, if it were to be used in military applications. Certainly nothing that would be easily recognizable, if it escaped the laboratory, to a layman medical doctor in Indio, California, or for that matter at any Indian reservation in the United States.

Any type of biological research on an Indian reservation would not be subject to scrutiny by the federal government because Indian reservations are sovereign nations. Nevertheless, if a virus DID escape a secret government installation at an Indian reservation, the reservation would provide an ideally "isolated environment" for further study (by a government entity) of affected subjects or victims under quarantine. Not a very pretty picture. Yet this was the exact nature of the proposal by Wackenhut to Dr. Harry Fair of the Army weapons division.

For the first time, I began to notice various "mysterious" illnesses cropping up in the media. I'm sure there have been unidentified diseases throughout history, but for the first time, I was conscious of what was written about them.

The first to capture my attention was the sudden deaths of twelve Navajo Indians in New Mexico and Arizona. A June 3, 1993, Department of Health Services interoffice memorandum distributed to public health laboratory directors throughout California labeled the virus a "Mystery Illness in New Mexico and Arizona." The memo asked, "Is it in California too?"

On June 2, 1993, New Mexico officials had reported a total of 19 cases, summarized as follows: Of the 19 cases, 12 were Native American Indians. Twelve died. All of the victims were residents within a 100 mile area in northwest New Mexico and Northeast Arizona. The symptoms included fulminant respiratory distress which killed within hours. There was "NO IDENTIFIABLE CAUSE." This was printed in capital letters.

Under "Etiology" (origin), the memorandum noted, "[The illness] remains a mystery despite extensive testing at University of New Mexico Hospital, New Mexico Department of Health, and CDC. If etiology were plague, anthrax, tularemia, some cases should have been identified by cultures/stains ..."

Oddly, nationwide media printed stories stating that the illnesses were caused by rat droppings, yet the actual documents from the Department of Health Services in Berkeley, California, confidentially given to me by a laboratory director in June 1993, mentioned nothing about rat droppings.

I later read about a mystery illness in TIME magazine, November 22, 1993 issue entitled, "The Gulf Gas Mystery," which reported that American troops in the Persian Gulf, upon returning home, were complaining of chronic diarrhea, aches in all the joints, and difficulty breathing. Several veterans and their families testified before a congressional committee that the Defense Department had ignored their complaints, and the Veterans Affairs Department downplayed the affair. The veterans themselves were convinced they had been exposed to "diseasecausing chemical agents" while in the Persian Gulf. Eightthousand veterans registered their symptoms with the U.S. government, thus labeling the disease "Gulf War Syndrome" (GWS).

Ultimately, the disease was determined by Major General Ronald Blanck, commander of the Walter Reed Army Medical Center, to be "multiple chemical sensitivity," syndrome. A board of inquiry was created headed by Joshua Lederberg of Rockefeller University, a Nobelprizewinning expert on rare and emerging diseases. But, noted TIME, "It is up to the Pentagon to bridge the credibility gap that seems to have sprouted over the strange new syndrome." It was not until 1996 that the Pentagon admitted GWS may have been caused by exposure to bombed chemical/biological plants in Iraq.

By far the most provocative incident occurred in February, 1994. The SpokesmanReview, out of Spokane, Washington, printed a story on August 9, 1994, entitled, "Victim of Mysterious Fumes Seeks Investigative Reports." In Riverside, California, **the county in which the Cabazon Indian/Wackenhut facility is located,** Dr. Julie Gorchynski, an emergency room doctor, was overcome by mysterious fumes while examining a woman who later died.

"This is a bona fide, genuine medical mystery, and we intend to solve it," said Russell S. Kussman, attorney for Dr. Gorchynski. Gorchynski suffered from osteonecrosis, avascular necrosis of bone, posttraumatic stress disorder, shortness of breath, restrictive lung disease and other ailments, as a result of exposure to the dying cancer patient on February 19th. Coincidentally, her symptoms matched those of GWS.

Later, in the same newspaper, dated September 3, 1994, another article emerged regarding the Riverside mishap. The bizarre episode had sent six emergency room workers to hospitals after being exposed to fumes emitting from patient Gloria Ramirez's blood samples drawn on February 19, 1994.

According to the state's 15page report, 11 people reported smelling an unusual odor after blood was drawn from Ramirez. After five collapsed and the emergency room was evacuated, 23 people complained of at least one symptom, most commonly headache, dizziness, and nausea. More serious complaints included muscle spasms and breathing disruptions. "Despite extensive epidemiologic, toxicologic and environmental investigations, the cause of the outbreak of symptoms among emergency room staff members ... remains unknown," the report concluded.

Dr. Gorchynski's lawyer stated that it could only be a toxin. "It's physically impossible for Julie to have had the symptoms, and not just the symptoms, the laboratory findings and test results that showed ... clearly Dr. Gorchynski was poisoned that day."

But epidemiology experts could find no culprit to explain the bizarre episode. The Department of Health Services ultimately described the incident as an outbreak of "mass sociogenic illness," perhaps triggered by an odor.

I could not help wondering if the deceased Gloria Ramirez was an Indian, or had ever been on the Cabazon reservation in Indio? I later learned she had been receiving experimental cancer treatments at a clinic in Mexico.

J.M., Ted Gunderson's live-in partner, on more than one occasion had noted that she held in her possession **a photograph of Gunderson and Sir Denis Kendall, the British M-I6 officer who owned bio-labs in Los Angeles, standing in front of a Mexican cancer clinic**. According to J.M., the photo had been used in an advertisement seeking nurses to work at the clinic. Without a copy of the photo, I was unable to determine if it "might" be the same clinic which Gloria Ramirez attended prior to her death.

******

In February 1993, I was contacted by a **U.S Customs agent** who was conducting an inquiry into the whole Inslaw, Peter Viedenieks, Wackenhut affair. The man had flown in to California from back east to interview Mike and Bobby Riconosciuto and other witnesses associated with the Inslaw case. Someone, whom he would not identify, advised him to contact me.

On February 5th, he and his partner drove to my home in Mariposa and spent the day. I provided him with an affidavit relative to Riconosciuto's attempted trade into the Witness Protection Program. **The affidavit contained mostly drug-related information on The Company and Robert Booth Nichols' connection to Michael Abbell (DOJ) and the Cali Cartel.** The agent also obtained a tape-recorded statement, under oath, relative to my findings and left with an armload of documents. **(Two years later, in 1995, Abbell was indicted for money laundering for the Cali Cartel and drug related charges).**

He called frequently after that (1993), once from a phone booth in the dead of night after visiting Langley, Virginia. We subsequently struck up an investigative collaboration of sorts. On September 3, 1993, **I received a call from him in Palm City, Florida. He had interviewed Robert Chasen, former Executive Vice President, Systems and Services Group, of Wackenhut Corporation in Coral Gables. Chasen, 70, was still senior consultant at the Florida facility,** but was allegedly dying of cancer and weighed less than 100 pounds at the time of the interview.

Because he (Chasen) had once been Commissioner of Customs in Washington D.C., he felt a rapport with this young agent and spoke candidly about his experience with Wackenhut in Indio.

Of significance, was Chasen's confirmation of the horrendous properties of the "virus" which he encountered at the Indio facility. **He said, "Wackenhut was running amuck." Robert Nichols and**

Peter Zokosky had attempted to sell the biological warfare technology (developed in cow uterises) through Wackenhut, using Robert Frye, Vice President of the Indio facility, as the front man.

According to Chasen, **Frye went behind his [Chasen's] back in facilitating the project; when Chasen learned of the project, he shut it down.** (Chasen supervised the Indio facility from Coral Gables, Florida.) Because of the projects underway at the Cabazon reservation, **Chasen chose not to step foot on the property, but instead met with the Indio executives in Palm Springs.**

In other respects, Chasen was not so candid. Though the Customs agent said Chasen "said a lot of derogatory things about Wackenhut in Indio," he did not admit to knowing Peter Viedenieks. The agent's investigation had led him to believe that the PROMIS software WAS stolen, and Viedenieks WAS involved in the theft, but he did not have enough evidence to take his case to court.

Chasen was evasive on the subject of PROMIS, though his background would indicate that he must have been knowledgeable about it. He had been a Special Agent in the Washington D.C. Federal Bureau of Investigation from 1943 to 1952. From 1952 to 1968, he was Vice President and President, respectively, of ITT Communications Systems in Chicago, Illinois and Paramus, New Jersey. He became Commissioner of U.S. Customs in Washington D.C. from 1969 to 1977 the same time span that Peter Viedenieks was in and out of Customs.

I called Dick Russell (author of "The Man Who Knew Too Much") to act as a "cutout" for me and interview Chasen. At that point, I didn't want to expose myself to Wackenhut, so Russell agreed. When Russell called back, he said Chasen didn't trust Robert Booth Nichols. **Wackenhut had "run a check" on Nichols and couldn't learn anything about his background.** This had bothered Chasen, but, he said, Robert Frye and Dick Wilson were "dazzled" with Nichols.

Chasen believed Nichols worked for the CIA, said he was a "slippery guy," and couldn't understand why Frye and Wilson were dazzled by Nichols for such a long time. Reportedly, George Wackenhut liked Frye and Dick Wilson, but did not trust Riconosciuto or Nichols. Michael Riconosciuto had been introduced to Chasen as a "specialist engineer in weapons."

Chasen acknowledged the biological technology introduced by Nichols and Zokosky, saying it had been presented to him as something that could "create anything from chicken soup to long range missiles." **When he learned of the properties of the technology, he halted it immediately. When pressed for further details, he added reluctantly, "It was the kind of thing your mind erases."**

Regarding the Cabazons, Chasen said he felt an affinity with Arthur Welmas, Chairman of the Cabazon Band of Mission Indians, because his [Chasen's] wife is part Cherokee. He noted that he sympathized with their situation and wanted to protect them.

Perhaps he protected them more than he realized when he shut down the Wackenhut proposal to the Army to develop biological viruses (and vaccines) on the Cabazon reservation.

******

One year later, on September 5, 1994, TIME magazine published an article on page 63 entitled, "A Deadly Virus Escapes," in which a Yale University researcher was exposed to the deadly Brazilian "Sabia" virus when a container spinning on a highspeed centrifuge cracked, causing the potentially lethal tissue to spatter. Fortunately, the researcher was wearing a lab gown, latex gloves and a mask, as required by federal guidelines.

Every surface of the area was scrubbed with bleach, all instruments were sterilized, then wiped down again with alcohol. Having decided the danger was over, he didn't bother to report the accident, and a few days later he left town to visit an old friend in Boston. Soon after the researcher returned to Yale, he bagan running a fever that reached 103 F.

An experimental antiviral drug eventually stopped the illness, but the man had exposed five people, including two children, before being confined to a hospital isolation ward, and another 75 or so healthcare workers after that.

The Sabia virus is particularly frightening because it kills in such a grisly way. Characteristic symptoms are high fever, uncontrolled bleeding in virtually every organ and finally shock. The liver turns yellow and decomposes. Blood can leak from literally every bodily orifice, including the eyes and the pores of the skin. **Sabia was never seen before 1990, when a female agriculatural engineer checked into a hospital in Sao Paulo, Brazil, with a high f**ever. Within days she was dead.

Fortunately, in the Yale University incident, none of the potential victims died or showed any evidence of symptoms. A book and movie on the Sabia virus's counterpart, the lethal Ebola virus from Central Africa, which is as deadly and as gruesome as AIDS, yet has an incubation period of only one week, was underway at the time and was later released in 1994.

The book, "The Hot Zone," described a victim who contracted Ebola. TIME wrote, "His eyes turn red and his head begins to ache. Red spots appear on his skin and, spreading quickly, become a rash of tiny blisters, and then the flesh rips. Blood begins to flow from every one of the body's orifices. The victim coughs up black vomit, sloughing off parts of his tongue, throat and windpipe. His organs fill with blood and fail. He suffers seizures, splattering virussaturated blood that can infect anyone nearby. Within a few days the victim dies, and as the virus destroys his remaining cells, much of his tissue actually liquifies ..."

The Ebola virus, found in the rainforest regions of Central Africa, once caused an outbreak in 1976 through villages near the Ebola River in Zaire, killing as many as 90% of those infected. Such dangerous viruses may seem a distant menace, wrote TIME, but "The Hot Zone" details a 1989 Ebola crisis that occurred in the Reston, Virginia Primate Quarantine Unit, run by a company that imports and sells monkeys for use in research laboratories.

When an unusual number of monkeys originating from the Philippines died, tissue samples were sent to a U.S. Army research center. There a technician identified the strands as either Ebola Zaire or something very close. Even more alarming, the virus found in Reston, Virginia, unlike the African one, could be transmitted through the air. Frantic phone calls were made to Virginia health authorites and to the Centers for Disease Control in Atlanta. An Army team, wearing space suits, went into the Reston building and killed 450 surviving monkeys, then placed them in plastic bags for safe disposal. Before the building was boarded up, the Army sterilized every square inch of the interior. No humans were infected with the virus, but Richard Preston, the author of "The Hot Zone," wrote, **"A tiny change in its genetic code, and it might [have] zoomed through the human race."**

A rival 1995 film on the same subject entitled, "Outbreak," directed by Wolfgang Peterson, also focused on the Ebola virus.

| Chapter 12, Part 1 | Chapter 11, Part 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 12, Part 1

It was time to interview Robert Booth Nichols. I was communicating regularly with Ted Gunderson and one day, on an impulse, I asked him for Nichols's telephone number. Gunderson hesitated, then gave me the telephone number of a "relative" of Nichols' in Los Angeles, stating that he really couldn't give out Robert's home number without first consulting him.

I called the relative and left a message for Nichols to return my call. The call came back on December 31, 1991. There was an intriguing international flavor to Nichols' voice. The tone was hostile but polite, and inquiring. Essentially, Nichols wanted to know why I was communicating with Michael Riconosciuto?

I explained to him that I was writing a book on government sanctioned drug trafficking and Michael had information to offer on local corruption. During the conversation, which lasted about 45 minutes, Nichols admitted that he worked for FIDCO and used the code word "Wa Latteral" for the operation in Lebanon.

The following are some excerpts:

CM: "Do you know anything about Michael Riconosciuto in Lebanon?"

Nichols: "Never."

CM: "He [Michael] talked about an interesting operation in Lebanon."

Nichols: "What was it called, the operation? I've heard of quite a few projects in Lebanon. If I've heard of it, I'll tell you."

CM: "Well, what was the code name of the one that you heard about?"

Nichols: "Wa Latteral."

CM: "Wa Latteral? And what type of operation was that?"

Nichols: "Well, it was trading in two directions. Now what's yours?"

CM: "Same thing."

Nichols: "Wa Latteral? Yours is the same name?"

CM: "No. I've never heard that name before."

Nichols: "Well, what was the code word of the one Michael said he was involved in?"

CM: "I would have to go over all of my notes, to tell you the truth. It didn't seem important at the time, so I don't have it off the top of my head ..."

Nichols: "What the project was, I can tell you very clearly, there's nothing secret about it now, was to develop an agenda whereby all sides, the Muslim and the Christian sides, would come to an agreement on a redevelopment project to where their respective areas would have the same capitalization, and the same benefit to stop the fighting."

CM: "Did this include rebuilding of the infrastructure of Beirut?"

Nichols: "Very definitely."

CM: "Did this have anything to do with FIDCO?"

Nichols: "Uh, FIDCO was involved in it, right. That was an effort by that company, as I understood it ... the project was to make sure that both sides developed building programs that were initiated concurrently and the development was fair and equitable to all sides, to stop the fighting." (I wondered why an "arms dealer" wanted to stop the fighting in Lebanon?)

CM: "Was there ever any subsidiary of that corporation called Euramae?"

Nichols: "I never heard that name before."

CM: "Ted Gunderson gave me a huge manual on The Octopus ..."

Nichols: "In my opinion, to research anything of that magnitude you are looking at -- it would require a lot of money and a lot of travel and a lot of patience. I don't think Ted Gunderson knows anything, personally. He's domestic. It's not his area."

CM: "Did you operate a telex company with him during the Olympic Games?"

Nichols: "Absolutely not. A telex company. Absolutely not. Oh, jeez. Did you ask Ted Gunderson that?"

CM: "Well, no, I didn't ..."

Nichols: "Well, you can't be shy. You have to ask questions, or else how do you know?"

CM: "What did Danny Casolaro spend so much time on the phone with you for?"

Nichols: "Danny used to ask me different things. But Danny was more into the names in Paris and Switzerland and -- Danny was investigating the whole international situation. You have to spend a lot of money and do a lot of traveling. Danny had said to me that he had a whole agenda worked out, you know, where he was going to go and who he was going to see. And I mean it was literally a global trip ..."

Nichols said he believed Danny was murdered and did not commit suicide. He believed Danny's death had to do with the international scene, someone Danny had contacted overseas.

I asked him, "Do you suppose his death had anything to do with the Justice Department?"

Nichols answered, "I would say, `Time will tell. Time will tell.'"

I pressed Nichols about his civil suit against FBI agent Thomas Gates:

Nichols: "The activities that I've been involved with, I can tell you very clearly, **an effort was made for many years to benefit a lot of people that were involved in the corporation.** That effort was destroyed by certain moves [by agent Gates]. And it caused a great deal of hardship to myself and quite a few other people who are very angry about it. And we'll deal with that matter in court."

CM: "What was Gates investigating?"

Nichols said he wrote two stories for some Italian movie producers. **"They were `sensitive' stories, about overseas. What I did, was I took two little, very brief parts of two stories to copyright in the United States.** And so they're very diluted, but enough for the copyrights.

"That's when I met the guy from Universal [studios], because he wanted the stories. And the French wanted the stories ... in 1987, but the stories haven't changed, they're still pertinent."

Gates had overheard the "pertinent" parts on the wiretap and initiated an investigation. I made a mental note to try to convince Nichols at a later date to provide me with the manuscripts. But I didn't want to push him during our first conversation.

******

I later asked a friend in Washingto D.C. to research Nichols' copyrights at the Library of Congress. There were indeed two stories copyrighted by Robert Booth Nichols under the pseudonym of R.N. LeDevoilier. Perhaps he was unaware that a cross-reference would reveal his true identity.

The 20-page manuscript entitled "Acceptable Casualty," essentially outlined gays and I.V. drug users as targets of bio-war by a cabal of military intelligence officers. In the story, a secret file, "C-911-Tuhnekaw," revealed the origin of the first AIDS infection. Field research dated November 12, 1977 originated from a Bay Area laboratory destroyed by fire in December 1975. Assorted bio-labs were mentioned, one in Palo Alto, California. The hero of the story obtained the secret cure from "the Chosen Ones" and escaped to Singapore with his family.

Interestingly, the names of those involved included "Yutaka Okimoto" and "Lawrence Zokosky," the last names of which match those listed on Nichols' "real life" corporation, Meridian International Logistics (MIL).

Nichols also copyrighted a 90-page James Bond type treatment entitled, "Decision of Conscience," which described state-of-the-art electromagnetic technology (launchers) used to demolish a two-story concrete building. I later found the words, "Decision of Conscience," written in Danny Casolaro's handwritten notes also.

Nichols' secret desire to write about his exploits in the CIA had led him to contact Jack Valenti, president of the Motion Picture Assn. of America, through his (then) corporate partner Eugene Giaquinto. The three met at the Beverly Hills Hotel where Nichols attempted to sell Valenti manuscripts disclosing top secret CIA technology.

Nichols later said Valenti refused the manuscripts because they contained "classified national security information." (Valenti once served as assistant to President Lyndon B. Johnson).

******

During several phone conversations with reporter Jonathan Littman, I learned that he had communicated with Danny Casolaro on a regular basis prior to Danny's death. At the time, I wondered why Littman hadn't written a story on Danny, since he was one of the few reporters to have spoken extensively with him?

I would have that answer soon enough. My confidence in Littman nearly cost me my life. An incident which I am about to relate forced me to document the following events, which I titled, **"Vortex," and subsequently turned over to John Cohen, investigator for the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw. Cohen had strenuously advised me to send it to him as he feared for my life. "Vortex" was also the "affidavit" I supplied to the Customs Agent who interviewed me in February 1993.**

During the course of our conversations, Littman had noted to me that he had a close relationship with Robert Booth Nichols, Peter Zokosky and Ben Kalka of The Company. **Littman also verified to me that he was in fact, Kalka's cousin,** but he (Littman) was a secretive, noncommunicative individual and I didn't press him for explanations. Kalka was currently serving time in prison for possession of 900 pounds of methamphetamine.

Littman did, however, confide that Kalka hated Michael Riconosciuto because Riconosciuto was responsible for Kalka's imprisonment. I described how former Assistant U.S. Attorney Brian Leighton appeared to have perjured himself at Michael's trial, and asked Littman's opinion of that. Littman stated simply that it didn't matter if Leighton had perjured himself, nothing should be done to get Michael out of jail. There should be no mistrial or acquittal or anything of that nature because Michael was probably guilty of the crime for which he was incarcerated. I didn't pursue the matter further at that point.

Meanwhile, Littman offered to arrange an interview with Robert Booth Nichols and Peter Zokosky for me. In exchange for this, he wanted me to arrange an interview with Tony Patterson and Raymond Lavas (Ted Gunderson's former forensics expert) through Bobby Riconosciuto. Tony Patterson had allegedly served with Robert Booth Nichols in Vietnam, and Raymond Lavas had access to Michael Riconosciuto's hidden computer tapes.

Both men were watching over Bobby Riconosciuto while Michael was in jail. I said I would do the best I could to arrange the interviews. Bobby was the only person communicating with these individuals and only she knew how to contact them. I never mentioned to Littman that I had been communicating with Robert Nichols on the phone. I can't say what my reasoning was at the time. Intuition, I suppose.

Bobby Riconosciuto reluctantly agreed to set up the interviews with Patterson and Lavas, though she pointed out that neither man trusted journalists. I naively assured her that Littman would be okay. It is noteworthy that Littman had been communicating with Bobby and Michael for several months prior to my introduction to them, yet, they didn't completely trust him at that stage of their relationship. When they learned of his relationship with Ben Kalka, they didn't trust him at all.

Elizabeth Riconosciuto's fifth birthday party was scheduled to be celebrated at the La Mirada Gateway Holiday Inn on February 14, 1992 at 11 a.m.. Reportedly, Patrick Moriarty and Marshall Riconosciuto had a financial interest in the hotel and they were paying the bills.

Littman and I decided that would be a good weekend to confidentially interview Robert Booth Nichols and Peter Zokosky in Los Angeles, and it would give Littman the opportunity to meet Bobby Riconosciuto facetoface. We would also squeeze the Patterson/Lavas interviews in during that time.

Michael Riconosciuto was cooperative about allowing his wife to be interviewed by Littman because it would give the journalist a closeup view of Michael's "family" in action. Tom Olmstead, Michael's lawyer, was scheduled to attend the birthday party as was Patrick Moriarty and Marshall Riconosciuto. After the luncheon celebration, the children and those adults who wanted to tag along would go to Disneyland.

Michael Riconosciuto had dual motives for wanting Littman in attendance. Olmstead had been instructed to pressure Littman to reveal "who" had sent the incriminating 1983 "drug" transcript to the prosecuting attorney in Michael's trial - only Littman knew if it had been Ben Kalka or Littman himself.

(Littman had obtained it originally from Peter Zokosky).

On Tuesday evening, February 11th, Littman confirmed a Thursday appointment with Robert Booth Nichols. However, he stressed that Nichols had insisted that the meeting be kept absolutely confidential. No one in media or Michael Riconosciuto's circle was to know of the interview.

I agreed, but explained that I had already mentioned briefly to Michael that I "planned" to interview Nichols at some future date. Michael had said he understood the importance of interviewing Nichols and he would cooperate. I even asked Michael to notify Tony Patterson and Raymond Lavas, via Bobby, that Littman and I would be interviewing them during our trip to Los Angeles.

Littman said that was alright, but I was to tell no one else associated with Michael. I noted to Jonathan that he might want to inform Nichols that I had already mentioned to Michael that I "intended" to interview Nichols at some time in the future. Littman said leave it at that. No problem.

Littman spent the night at my home in Mariposa on Wednesday night. The following morning, on February 13th at 7 a.m., we departed for Los Angeles. Strangely, at the last moment, Littman decided to follow us to Los Angeles in his own car. I rode intermittently with Littman, then with my husband, during the fivehour drive. At hour intervals, Littman pulled off the freeway to report to Nichols - and to a police officer in San Francisco whom he did not identify, but described as his "security."

At noon, we arrived at Nichols' Sherman Oaks apartment building. Littman punched in #68 and spoke briefly to Nichols, who buzzed the door open. At Nichols' apartment, #103, Littman pointed out the electronic security system on the front door, then at the last moment, instructed my husband to wait in the van. We owned a 1991 Chevrolet conversion, so he napped and watched television the rest of the afternoon. Towards the end of the fivehour meeting, Nichols invited him up for coffee and cake.

Peter Zokosky and his wife (former Mayor of Indio), Robert Booth Nichols and his wife, Ellen, were present inside the apartment. Littman had previously warned me that the apartment was electronically wired to detect any listening devices I might be wearing on my body. I said I had none.

Littman had also warned me that I would be seated on a couch next to a stuffed lion which had a tape recording device (bug) under its tail. Sure enough, when I entered the apartment, I was seated on a white couch near the lion. A giant anaconda skin hung stretched across the wall. European and African relics decorated the apartment. It was instantly obvious that Nichols and his wife didn't live in the apartment, it was a meeting place.

Nichols smoked cigarettes and as a result, kept the upstairs windows in the apartment open, allowing a cool February breeze to flow through the apartment. Nerves, and the cool air induced me to keep my light coat on during most of the interview. At first, Peter Zokosky, a friendly, congenial man, did most of the talking. As the conversation warmed up, Nichols entered intermittently, then took over completely.

A formal gourmet luncheon was served of curried soup, salmon and turkey finger sandwiches, wine and homemade strawberry cake. Ellen Nichols was the perfect hostess, but rarely said a word.

At one point during lunch, Nichols instructed Ellen to get the camera and snap a front and side picture of me, which she carried out silently. There was no explanation given for the picture.

| Chapter 12, Part 2 | Chapter 11, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 12, Part 2

After lunch, Nichols often stood or sat at the open window while he talked and smoked. It was cold and rainy, and I wondered why he kept glancing down at my van. Littman frequently left the room to attend to something in the back of the apartment. I was unable to determine what he was doing, but noticed that he took no notes and never once joined in the conversation.

Nichols was aptly described in magazine articles as "Clark Gable without the ears." But his mannerisms were intense, simultaneously controlled and dramatic. I intuitively sensed the violence in him, but only through his eyes. He studied me intently as I spoke, making every effort to throw me off balance by continuously correcting me. He also would not speak while I wrote on my notepad, stopping mid-sentence each time I put pen to paper.

It worked in some cases, but I finally rallied. I was in HIS apartment, with women present, though they were busy in the kitchen, and my husband was parked outside the apartment. I was certainly in no physical danger, so I gathered myself and bluntly asked the questions I had driven 350 miles to ask.

Referring to the U.S. currency and gold transfers into Swiss bank accounts, Nichols admitted that he was contracted by the government to "handle" the 42 Cobra helicopters which Michael had said were stored in Europe, then shipped to Iraq via North Korea.

At first he would not say what he did with the helicopters, but then revealed the entire operation. **John Vanderwerker at Intersect Corporation in Irvine, California, had been the CIA facilitator. It was a "classified" CIA operation, though Nichols would not give the name of the White House official behind it. I assumed it was Michael McManus, but didn't push it. Glenn Shockley had brought Nichols into the operation.** At least I had verbal confirmation of the operation, and unknown to Nichols, I had the entire paper trail.

Regarding Danny Casolaro, Nichols and Zokosky both insisted that Danny had been "murdered." Danny's book research had progressed to a point where he was looking overseas for answers and Nichols had offered to direct him to certain connections that would have completed his investigation.

Nichols confirmed that he was privy to Danny's findings on a regular basis, but chose not to elaborate on the content of his last conversation with Danny.

I continued to press him for information on the "cause" of Danny's death; what had he discovered that caused him to be murdered? Nichols responded defiantly that he knew why Danny died, but he said "no journalist or investigator had done enough work to be deserving of that information yet."

It was not until the end of the meeting, when we had established a tentative rapport, that Nichols offered to take ME to Europe, as he had Danny, to find the answers to my investigation of the Octopus. But, he stressed it would be very expensive and I would be gone for several months. I remember the probing look on his face as he made the offer. I had nodded slowly, stating I would give it some thought. I wondered fleetingly if he was trying to recruit me into the CIA? Or create a new Manchurian Candidate?

Regarding the stolen PROMISE software, Nichols said he believed Michael Riconosciuto had been contracted by the government to "derail" Bill Hamilton at Inslaw. According to Nichols, Michael DID have the PROMIS software codes. **Allegedly, Peter Zokosky's "brother" sold copies of the software to Israel. Zokosky nodded in agreement at that statement.**

Nichols said Michael HAD to know he was going to be arrested for operating a meth lab, but he (Michael) thought the FBI would bail him out again. Someone named (Admiral) Al Renkin allegedly "covered Michael's drug act."

I never knew what that meant and didn't pursue it, as I wasn't there to learn about Michael Riconosciuto. **While we were on the subject of drugs, I took the opportunity to question Nichols's involvement. I lead in by describing the drug situation in Mariposa county, adding that the entire country seemed to be economically dependent on the drug trade. Nichols nodded in full agreement, then noted that Europe's economy was completely dependent on drug money. Without drugs, banks and whole countries would collapse financially.**

We moved into another area of discussion. Peter Viedenieks was an associate of Earl Brian, according to Nichols. Other names were tossed around such as Senator Terry Sanford, a family friend of Earl Brian. Sanford was Nichols' link with Earl Brian. And, noted Nichols, Viedenieks was associated with Earl Brian through Hadron Corporation.

Allegedly, all of these fellows had met at Nichols' "007" Playa Del Ray condo at one time or another, including Viedenieks.

It is noteworthy that at the time of this meeting, neither Nichols or I could have foreseen the importance of this information. The issue of Viedenieks' connection with Earl Brian or Terry Sanford, or even Nichols himself, had not been raised publicly yet. At the time, I didn't place any particular significance on Nichols' relationship with Earl Brian or Peter Viedenieks, I just took the information at face value and wrote it in my notes.

Nichols reacted violently when I asked him if he had any business dealings with Brunswick Corporation in New Jersey. He jumped up from his chair by the window and yelled, "Absolutely not!"

I quickly explained that I had looked up Sir Denis Kendall (the famous M16 World War II British officer) in "Who's Who in America" and learned that he had once been associated with Brunswick. Nichols said he did not know Sir Denis Kendall. His eyes told me otherwise.

I noted that was strange since Michael Riconosciuto seemed to know him well. Nichols and Zokosky exchanged glances. I further explained that Bobby Riconosciuto said she had been to Kendall's home on Doheny Drive in Beverly Hills with her children once. She had often called Kendall when she was trying to locate Michael, and within hours of calling Kendall, Michael always called her back. Nichols and Zokosky seemed disturbed by that statement.

I didn't mention that Riconoscituo had stated Kendall was Nichols' supervisor (CIA "handler"), or that J. M., Ted Gunderson's research partner, had found a brochure in Ted's files advertising for Swedish nurses at a medical research complex in Mexico. The brochure contained both Gunderson's picture and Sir Denis Kendall's.

I had obtained all of the documents pertaining to Nichols' current lawsuit against Thomas Gates of the Los Angeles FBI, his corporate activities and his weapons permits. Nichols had been investigated by Gates for allegedly turning over sensitive information to organized crime figures in America and the "Yakuza" crime syndicate in Japan.

Nichols' corporation, Meridian International Logistics, Inc. (MIL), the parent company to Meridian Arms, had filed a lawsuit against Gates for contacting Nichols' European and Japanese business associates.

As a result, not only were Nichols' weapons permits cancelled, but his associates were allegedly intimidated by the investigation, thus damaging Nichols' ability to transact business.

I was curious about how far Nichols would take the lawsuit, and exactly what the nature of the research was that MIL fronted to the Japanese. I started out by asking Nichols if he had provided a "grant" to a Japanese facility for biological research? Nichols said he had provided no grant to any Japanese facility and attempted to change the subject.

Nichols was not evasive, but aggressively direct when he did not want to discuss something. Michael Riconosciuto had once commented to me that the biological technology which Nichols was involved in was "Hitler's wet dream." According to Michael, who was uncharacteristically hesitant about discussing the subject, "biotechnology was the weapon of the future, making all other weaponry obsolete."

In Michael's files in the desert, I had retreived a small cylindrical cannister, about six inches in length, with a cap on it. The metal cannister had not been marked, and instinctively, I had not opened it, but had placed it on a shelf in our empty guest house in Mariposa.

It was not until months later, after Michael learned I had copies of his documents, that I had asked him what the cannister contained. Michael had become disdraught, explaining that the cannister contained genetic material in a hybridoma base, a military concept, only to be used for military applications. Michael had stolen the cannister from a shipment at Wackenhut destined for King Fahd of Saudi Arabia and placed the sample in his files in the desert. (Proposals had also been underway with King Fahd to provide "security" for his palace).

His voice had been fraught with worry. He implored me to remove the cannister from my property immediately, take it to a "class 4 facility" where it could be disposed of. I was absolutely NOT to open the cannister as it contained lethal toxins.

Later, at the meeting with Robert Booth Nichols, I again wondered why arms dealers such as Peter Zokosky and Robert Nichols would be interested in genetic research? Five years earlier, Zokosky and Wackenhut Corporation had attempted to sell "biological warfare viruses" and vaccine kits to the U.S. government to be used against small countries bordering Albania or large countries bordering the Soviet Union.

I did not openly confront Nichols at his apartment about the above documents, but asked him if he had sold or facilitated the research of specific biotechnology to the Japanese? Nichols adamantly denied any involvement in any such research.

When I rephrased the question, and he realized I knew about the MIL agreements, he admitted that he had in fact facilitated the research of methodology and induction of cytotoxic TLymphocytes through "five offshore [outofcountry] research institutes." But, he added that the research was "classified" by the sponsoring governments and "secret" and he could not discuss it.

When I pressed for the names of the sponsoring governments, he clammed up. Had I known more about the technology at the time, I would have pointedly questioned him about the properties of the virus, but in retrospect, my ignorance opened doors that otherwise wouldn't have been opened.

I did, however, mention to Nichols and Zokosky that Michael Riconosciuto had allegedly worked on the same technology at Hercules Research in the early 1980's, reportedly using fish for incubation purposes.

Zokosky responded, embarking upon a lengthy discourse on the processes by which "they" had incubated the virus in cow uterises and udders in biolabs twenty floors beneath the ground. But Nichols interjected, discontinuing the narrative. It was obvious that both men were becoming agitated, so I dropped the subject for the time being.

Regarding Thomas Gates, Nichols expressed real anger and noted he would take the lawsuit against Gates as far as it would go. He said he didn't care if he was awarded any money (he was sueing for $11 million), but he would ruin Tom Gates, no matter what it took.

A thought crossed my mind that he was about to say that he would kill him, but instead, he sat silently glaring, waiting. I asked him how much the lawsuit had cost him so far, and he said not a dime. Originally, Michael McManus had advised Nichols, but then the case was handled by John Rowell.

It was already apparent that Nichols was warming to the interview, in a disarming, contentious sort of way. We were reaching a common ground, a netherworld of danger and intrigue. The room became his stage, the people his audience. He never took his eyes from mine, making every effort to distract me from my notes.

Unquestionably, he was a "game" player. The more I entered the game, the better he liked it. It was a trade off, I gave him a little information, he gave me a little. But he gave as much as he took ...

I asked him about his relationship with MCA corporation. He said Eugene Giaquinto, President of MCA Home Entertainment Division, had resigned from his company, MIL, after the FBI investigation was underway.

But Giaquinto was a smart man, noted Nichols. He had learned much from the man. Giaquinto drove an older car, as did Nichols. They hid their assets, living modestly when in the U.S., keeping a low profile. The FBI would "prove" nothing, said Nichols. He added that MCA Corporation was "going broke," and the only division that was making a profit was the home entertainment division, which Giaquinto headed.

I recalled privately the conversation in which Michael Riconosciuto had told R.J. that MCA was currently facilitating the largest leveraging scam ever conceived of in this country. MCA was subsequently sold to the Japanese, but I had no idea what connection that had to the above referenced conversation.

Nichols continued to lead the conversation towards Riconosciuto. Nichols and Zokosky could not understand why Ted Gunderson testified for Michael at his trial in Washington state. At a previous dinner party at Nichols' apartment in Sherman Oaks, Ted reportedly told the two men that Michael had loaned him (Gunderson) $60,000 for a joint business venture. Ted still owed Michael the money.

It is noteworthy that Ted also supplied Robert Booth Nichols an affidavit for HIS lawsuit against Thomas Gates.

Ellen Nichols had mentioned during lunch that Michael often buried secret documents and equipment. Obviously, they were trying to learn what documents I had acquired. I had not uncovered any "buried" documents, but had obtained his private files from the trailer in the California desert. I did not reveal this to Nichols, assuming that Littman had kept my secret.

However, as the conversation progressed, I came to realize that Nichols did, indeed, know I had obtained Michael's files. One statement which Nichols said in the presence of Jonathan Littman surprised me. Littman continued to leave the room to attend to something in the back of the apartment. When he returned, I asked Nichols to repeat what he had just said. Nichols obliged by reiterating that "Michael Riconosciuto would kill me if he learned that I had obtained his private documents."

I asked him "why" he believed Michael would kill me over that? Nichols seemed to want confirmation of something I'd obtained, something specific, but wouldn't define what it was and I had no intention of revealing anything to him at that point.

He randomly discussed the (coroner's grand jury) affidavit in which Riconosciuto had accused Phillip Arthur Thompson of killing Paul Morasca (Michael's partner) in San Francisco. Thompson had worked for the FBI under the code name of "Jason" in some capacity which Nichols would not define.

But, according to Nichols, it was Riconosciuto who had tortured and killed Paul Morasca. Peter Zokosky corroborated Nichols' comment. Both men said the torture of Paul Morasca was Michael's "style" that Michael had discussed torture techniques of that nature to Nichols prior to Morasca's death.

They added that "Jason," Phillip Arthur Thompson, was not so creative in his killing style. Thompson had allegedly killed many people in his career, but he chose to use a gun and get the job done quickly. Nichols also said at lunch, with Ellen listening, that he knew who killed Mary Quick. Ellen rolled her eyes at her husband and beseeched him to change the subject. I asked Nichols to name the killer or at least give me a clue. Nichols said the killer of Mary Quick had been arrested and released. Obviously they were talking about "Jason," who HAD been arrested and released.

Nichols and Zokosky both agreed in a conversation between themselves that Michael Riconosciuto had caused the death of other people also. Nichols repeated at least three times to my face, with Zokosky and Littman nodding in agreement, that he believed Michael would kill me.

I privately wondered why Nichols was making such an issue of this? I would understand soon enough. Meanwhile, Nichols continued to press his point. He said Michael was a patient man and would wait as long as necessary to accomplish this. I did not respond, as I had become somewhat immuned to the threat by then.

Littman had made similar statements on the drive up to Sherman Oaks. I simply did not perceive Riconosciuto as a killer. Nevertheless, I asked Nichols how Michael would kill me if he was in jail? **Nichols said it would be done by one of Michael's "drug flunkies." He said Riconosciuto HAD worked for the government, and had been "rescued" by the FBI for years.** He added that Michael could get away with murder.

Chapter 12, Part 3 | Chapter 12, Part 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 12, Part 3

I was becoming unresponsive to the game, so I presume Nichols decided it was time to "set the hook." It was not until two years later that I understood the significance of this incident. At one point during our conversation, and completely out of context with what we were discussing, Nichols played a video tape of the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. The southern wall of Nichols' apartment contained a sixfootwide screen on which I watched a blownup (enlarged), slow motion "uncut" version of the famous Zapruder film.

I watched what appeared to be the standard media version of the film, seen so many times in film clips over the years, but then Nichols slowed the camera even more, and on the sixfoot screen, I observed the driver of the limousine turn to his right, first looking at Connolly, then at Kennedy. The driver's left hand came over his right shoulder, and he was holding a long barreled gun. Smoke and a bullet emerged from the gun, traveling ever so slowly across the screen into Kennedy's head, blowing brain tissue into the air as he fell back against the seat.

Stunned, I watched Jacqueline Kennedy open her mouth in horror as she glanced at the driver, then try to climb over the back seat of the car.

Littman and Zokosky and I stared at the scene in silence, unable to believe what we were seeing. Nichols then changed the tape and showed what he described as the "media" version of the Zapruder tape. In the media version, the driver continued to drive, unflinching, as the shots rang out. Then the scene switched to the back part of the limousine.

At this point, Nichols stopped the frame and pointed with a stick at a tree in the background behind the limousine. From the middle of the tree to the ground, there was no trunk, just air. The top part of the tree was growing in air!

I demanded that my husband be allowed to see the film. I felt I must have been hypnotized. When he arrived, he viewed both films up close, in slow motion, and saw the same thing. Nichols played both tapes backwards and forwards as often as we demanded, until the memory of it was burned forever into our minds.

I wondered if the video had been tampered with. I asked Nichols where he had obtained the original "uncut" version? He would not say. I had no idea at that time that his F.I.D.C.O. partner, Clint Murchison, Jr.'s father had had instant access to the Zapruder film immediately after the assassination in Dallas, Texas.

Nichols studied me for the longest time, then walked over to the window and lit a cigarette. He finally commented that the CIA can cover up anything it wants, even a president's murder. He wanted to show me the power of the Octopus. "Nothing is as it appears to be," he said.

Somehow, that statement rang true. He then noted that he'd read my first book, the one I had sent him, then handed me a book entitled, "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate." He told me to read it, appraising me silently. Inwardly, I recalled a conversation with J.M., in which she related a conversation she'd had with Ted after a dinner engagement with Nichols. Nichols had reportedly stated to Ted that he headed a 200man assassination team. Jackie had been too frightened to elaborate on this conversation, but had pointed out that Nichols once worked in the MKUltra (Manchurian Candidate) program during the Vietnam war. This program was part of the "Phoenix Project." Interestingly, numerous publications had mentioned that Earl Brian had also participated in the Phoenix Project during the war.

Nichols' sister was allegedly a professional hypnotherapist, and Nichols himself was reportedly trained in the art of hypnotism. According to Riconosciuto, they all called themselves "The Chosen Ones," wore skull and crossbones rings, and shared a common interest, if you could call it that, in the old German SS occultism, its tribal and inner circle rites.

As I was preparing to leave, Nichols pointed his finger at me and reminded me of the agreement I had made with him through Littman. I asked him what agreement? He said the agreement that I would tell noone about this meeting. I again assured him that I would mention it to noone. He said I had better not or I would end up like the rest ...

******

When we finally left Nichols' apartment around five p.m., I told Littman I did not intend to accept any more collect calls from Michael Riconosciuto at the Tacoma jail. I might even wrap up the whole investigation at that point, because I had more than enough material for a story or a book.

Littman proceeded to issue a warning which I recorded in my notebook in the car. It read as follows: "Littman warned me today to watch out. Noone gets out of this alive. No one walks. If I cut them off, it would be very dangerous." I was completely numb at that point, and unresponsive to any further threats. We agreed to meet at 11:00 a.m. at the La Mirada Gateway Holiday Inn in La Mirada the following day to attend Elizabeth Riconosciuto's birthday party. Tom Olmstead, Michael's lawyer, would be flying in for the meeting, Ted Gunderson and J.M. would be there, Patrick Moriarty would be picking up Olmstead at the airport, Raymond Lavas would be there and possibly the elusive Tony Patterson, if Bobby could arrange it. Also expected was Janice Wynogradsky, the Australian reporter who produced the news story for Australian T.V.

I was exhausted and looked forward to a restful evening, but first I drove to the nearest toy store and purchased some birthday presents for Elizabeth.

That evening, I mentally reviewed the day's events. Nichols and Littman were undoubtedly screwing with my head. The doctored Zapruder tape gave them deniability. The information I had obtained at the meeting may or may not have had value, but I knew one thing, the deaths surrounding Riconosciuto and Nichols were real enough.

Behind the smoke and mirrors labyrnthe was a story, one they were working very hard to conceal. I felt sure the corporate and government connections were little more than "fronts" for large scale drug trafficking.

****

At 7:30 a.m. the following morning, Bobby Riconosciuto called the hotel where we were staying (the La Mirada Gateway Holiday Inn) and informed me that the luncheon meeting had been changed to a new location and Jonathan Littman was not going to be allowed to attend.I explained that I had not heard from Jonathan, did not know where he was staying, and could not get in touch with him to tell him about the change. Bobby and I argued about the inconvenience to Littman. I told her that Jonathan and I were not puppets to be manipulated by she or Michael. Bobby argued back that Olmstead had not shown up at the airport, Ted and J.M were having a tiff, and she did not trust Littman because of his relationship with Ben Kalka and Robert Booth Nichols.

She did not want her daughter's birthday turned into a "circus." I agreed with that aspect of the meeting, however, Bobby still had not arranged an interview with Raymond Lavas or Tony Patterson. Bobby argued that she did not think Lavas or Patterson would talk to Littman. I pleaded with her to arrange the appointments for Littman's sake, since he had driven from San Rafael for that purpose. I explained to her that it was important that Littman be present at the interviews with Lavas and Patterson because I was working on the Mariposa story with him and we had made an agreement.

Bobby asked me directly if I had interviewed Robert Booth Nichols? I said I had not. I felt it was really none of Bobby's business. I qualified that, however, by saying that I expected to interview Nichols at some time in the future. Bobby said she understood and would attempt to arrange the interviews with Lavas and Patterson for the following day, Sunday.

It is noteworthy that Littman wanted to interview Tony Patterson because Patterson "claimed" to have been in Vietnam (Phoenix/MK-Ultra) with both Earl Brian and Robert Booth Nichols. I doubted that. To my knowledge, Nichols had never served in the military.

Patterson had a rather provocative story to tell about Nichols. Allegedly, Nichols had smuggled several gold icons out of Vietnam into the U.S. He later killed the pilot so there would be no witnesses, and left Tony Patterson stranded in Vietnam to be captured and tortured by the Viet Cong. **Nichol's activities in Vietnam also allegedly included drug trafficking for the CIA, which both Bobby and Michael Riconosciuto maintained was still operational today.** THAT sounded closer to the truth.

Bobby called me back and instructed me to arrange a dinner meeting with Littman that evening (Saturday) and she would show up to be interviewed, then if Littman agreed to provide her with the name of the person who had sent the 1983 "drug" transcript to the prosecutor at Michael's trial, she would call Patterson and Lavas for interviews on the following day.

I was becoming stressed at that point. The whole weekend was spinning out of control and I was caught in the middle. I noted to Bobby that I would wait for Littman to show up at the La Mirada Gateway Holiday Inn and tell him the meeting had been changed to a new location, but that he was not invited. I would then give him the new meeting time 7:00 p.m. at the Belle Isles restaurant in Anaheim. Bobby agreed to that arrangement.

My husband and I waited until 11:30 a.m., but Littman never showed. He also never called to say he would be late. At 11:40 a.m., I left a message for Littman at the front desk apologizing for the sudden change in plans, and said we would meet him at the Belle Isles at 7:00 p.m..

Bobby had changed the luncheon to the hotel where she was staying with her children in order to be able to sign the tab on Patrick Moriarty's bill. Janice Wynogradsky was present, along with Ted Gunderson, J. M. and her two children. Neither Olmstead, Moriarty nor Marshall Riconosciuto showed up at the birthday party. Elizabeth opened her presents, we ate lunch and cake and caravanned over to Disneyland. We had a good time with the kids until six p.m.

At 6:30 p.m., Ted, J.M., Bobby and all the children returned to Bobby's hotel suite. I drove directly to Belle Isles. At 7:00 p.m., neither Bobby nor Littman had appeared for dinner. It turned out that Littman had left a message at the restaurant that he was sorry he missed us at the La Mirada hotel, but there was no mention of whether he would be joining us for dinner or not.

I called Sheri Littman, his wife, and she said Jonathan was on his way home. She did not know why.

Bobby Riconosciuto sat with Ted Gunderson and J.M. in her hotel suite and ate pizza. When I called her, she said Ted had detained her at the hotel, she couldn't get away. My husband and I finished our dinner and drove to San Diego to see my mother.

I never spoke to Bobby or Michael Riconosciuto again until one week later when I learned Bobby had requested the return of Michael's eight boxes of documents. My husband had dropped me off at my mother's home and returned to Mariposa. For days he had been receiving urgent messages from Bobby requesting that I call her. He simply told her that I was tired and needed a rest.

Michael Riconosciuto called and asked him if we had interviewed Robert Booth Nichols? My husband said, "No."

When I returned home, **I called Bobby and learned that Littman had told Michael Riconosciuto all about the meeting with Robert Booth Nichols.** Bobby wanted to know why I had lied to her about the Nichols meeting? **She explained that Littman had also told Michael that he had dug through Michael's private documents at my home which I had obtained from Michael's secret trailer in the**

desert. Bobby had never told Michael about this because Michael had instructed her to stay away from the trailer.

I told Bobby that I did not believe Littman would do such a thing. I added that if I HAD interviewed Nichols, and he requested confidentiality, I would keep my word to him. There was no reason to discuss such an interview with Bobby or Michael. Bobby accepted that.

However, to convince me that Littman had in fact told Michael about the contents of the meeting, she recounted that Michael had told her that the meeting took place on Thursday, it lasted five hours, and I would not take my coat off during the entire meeting, which allegedly made Nichols nervous.

Bobby also stated that I had been seated in a location where I could be scanned for electronic devices, and since I was not "bugged," Nichols could not understand why I didn't take my coat off.

I immediately hung up from Bobby and called Littman. There was no answer at his home, so I called Robert Booth Nichols. Upon answering the phone, Nichols immediately accused me of "breaking my word to him." There was a sinister edge to his voice. I explained to him that, to date, I had not spoken to Michael Riconosciuto since two days prior to the Sherman Oaks meeting on February 13th.

Nichols countered that **Littman had called him** and told him that **"I" had immediately reported to Michael the entire contents of the meeting**, because Michael knew all about it. His tone was accusing, attentive, but devoid of anger. Then silence, waiting. I was indeed caught in the tentacles of the Octopus, and I felt the weight of it at that moment.

I told Nichols that I would have Bobby Riconosciuto call him and repeat what she had said to me, that Littman had betrayed both Nichols and myself.

Nichols laughed. "Why should I believe anything Bobby says? I don't want to talk to her, and I don't want her to have my telephone number. Did you tell her where we met?" His voice was deeper, throatier, and I felt like a fool. Why should he believe her? I was grasping at straws and I had no answers. Why would Littman betray me, with so much at stake?

I said I would get to the bottom of this and let him know the results. Nichols said he was leaving for Australia the next day, would not be back for three months. (He had said the same words to Bill Hamilton when he was searching for Danny Casolaro on August 5th).

Nichols said he was VERY interested in hearing the results. "For my sake." He added that I should keep Peter Zokosky apprised of the results of my inquiry, then he hung up.

I called Jonathan Littman and asked him, "What's going on?" His voice was withdrawn, cautious. "I don't know. What is going on?" I decided to taperecord the conversation. My life was in danger as a result of Littman's actions, and I needed a lifeline to save it.

I explained that I had been in San Diego visiting my mother, and when I returned, Bobby Riconosciuto related the details of my interview with Nichols. "She said YOU told Michael everything."

Littman said, "Michael knew the truth."

"I haven't talked to Michael since before the interview with Nichols! How did he know about it?"

Littman's voice took on a slow, malignant tone. "What I'm saying is, you told him beforehand, and you can't play games with people like Michael."

I was astonished. And somewhat flustered. But I wanted to give him every opportunity to explain himself. "No. No. Something has happened. Something's wrong. Bobby just told me that YOU told Michael all about the meeting. And I told her I didn't believe that. I told her I DIDN'T have an interview with Robert Booth Nichols ..."

Littman quickly responded, "You shouldn't lie to Michael ..."

I thought to myself, why should I have to report who I interview to Michael or Bobby? It was none of their business. But instead, I said, "Bobby told me she knew I interviewed Robert Booth Nichols on Thursday, for five hours, and I wore my coat through the entire meeting. And she said, `That made Nichols paranoid.' Now, how in the hell could she have known that?"Littman answered in an eery, robotic voice, "I want to tell you something ..."

I interrupted, " ... And how did she know that I allowed you to look at Michael's documents, Jon?"

Littman began again, "She didn't. She only knows you have them ..."

Littman was being evasive, outright lying. I was becoming increasingly frustrated. I hated being reduced to that level of conversation. But so much depended on it. "John, Bobby said Michael called her. Michael NEVER knew I had those boxes until YOU told him. Bobby said YOU revealed to him that you had seen the documents, seen the diary, seen everything."

| Chapter12, Part 4 | Chapter 12, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 12, Part 4

I had withheld portions of the diary from Littman, amongst other things. I couldn't understand why he would have alarmed Michael about the diary, or lied about having it. Michael had risked his life at Wackenhut to obtain the only copy, broken into Dr. John Nichols' office to retreive it, and fled to Washington state to begin a new life. He had thought it was secure in the desert. Now I had it. And Michael knew Bobby and I had kept the secret from him. And Littman had betrayed us both.

I continued ... "How would Michael have known that I didn't take my coat off in the meeting with Nichols? Nobody knew that except you, Jon."

Littman stayed cool as ice. "Let me get one thing straight with you. I gave you the conditions under which you were to meet with Nichols ..."

"Absolutely."

" ... And you betrayed those conditions by telling Michael that we were going to interview Nichols. And that put all of us in an awkward position ..."

I was astonished at how twisted the whole situation had become. I stammered, "Jonathan, I didn't know I HAD an appointment with Nichols at the time I told Michael that. I simply told him I PLANNED to interview him at sometime in the future. I haven't spoken with Michael since the interview with Nichols? But YOU have ..."

Littman continued his train of thought, disregarding what I had said. "Once you told Michael you planned to interview Nichols, then you **had to tell him everything.** You had to tell the truth."

I asked pointedly, "Did YOU tell him the truth?"

Perversely, he confessed, **"I told him the truth exactly. Because he knew we'd been there. And I'm not going to lie to Michael. He knew we'd been there ..."**

I interjected, "But you gave your word to Robert Booth Nichols that you would never divulge the contents of the meeting to anyone. How could you do that?"

Littman attempted to change the subject, to put me on the defensive. "YOU are now the fly in the spider's trap ... You gotta be staight with all these people. With Michael, with Zokosky, with Nichols, these people can figure these things out. They're not dumb people."

"John, I've been straight with all of them. Every one of them. I have never betrayed any of them, **other**

than to provide you, as a journalist, with some documents you requested ..."

He interrupted me, still speaking meticulously, ever so slowly. "You cannot fool people like Michael and Bobby and Ted Gunderson. Michael knew the meeting was going to take place. And it's not a good idea to go back and tell him a story that something didn't happen when it did happen."

There was a monotonous singsong to his voice. He sounded like a tape recording. I was incredulous. Why was I defending myself to this man? I tried once again. "Michael doesn't control my life. I didn't tell him the meeting never took place. I NEVER SPOKE TO MICHAEL AFTER THE MEETING WITH NICHOLS! I didn't lie to him because I haven't spoken with him. I was in San Diego. I still haven't spoken to Michael. Why can't you understand that?" "Well, you're in the middle of it, because you're involved with Bobby and ..."

" ... Well, I'm not. That's the point, I'm not. It's a dangerous game and I want no part of it. I made that very clear with Bobby today when I spoke with her, which is the first time I've spoken with her since the meeting in Sherman Oaks."

" ... You told Michael that you were going to have a meeting with ..."

I was determined to get a confession from Littman. My life might depend on it. "Jonathan! Jonathan! **You stood in that room with Robert Booth Nichols, and you heard him say aloud in front of both us, that if Michael ever found out what I have [the documents], he would kill me. I would be dead. Do you remember when he said that?"**

"Sure."

" ... Yet you told Michael you had come to my home and seen his documents from the desert? Why?"

Littman repeated over and over the same words. "You lied to Michael. That was very stupid ..."

I wondered if he was intoxicated. I cut in, "You set me up. You called Nichols immediately after YOU told Michael about the meeting. Then you called Nichols and told him that "I" told Michael about the meeting. Now, Nichols just told me that today. Why did you do that, Jonathan?"

Jonathan did not deny setting me up, but stammered lamely, "I ... I did not appreciate your phone call to Nichols earlier today. You have placed me in an awkward position with Zokosky and Nichols ..."

So, Nichols had informed Littman of my phone call! Had he accused Littman of betraying him to Michael? I would probably never know the answer to that. I responded, "I called Nichols and asked him what was going on? How in the world could this have come about? I told Nichols what Bobby had said."

Littman was outraged that I had called Nichols and conveyed what Bobby had said. He was also outraged that Bobby had called me and confronted me about the Nichols meeting. Obviously THIS had not been in the scheme of things. Littman had obviously NOT expected Bobby to confront me.

After the Los Angeles fiasco, I had been fed up with her treatment of Littman and was cooling off in San Diego for a week. **I had told Littman that I wouldn't be speaking with either Bobby or Michael again.** Littman had underestimated Bobby's determination to speak to me, and my assertiveness in calling Nichols. His plan had backfired. Perhaps he had expected me to be dead before I had an opportunity to talk to anyone?

I was immediately alarmed about the synopsis and backup documents I had turned over to Littman on the Mariposa drug lab. It had included the names of the Indians who had confided in me. We had planned to do a story together for the San Francisco Chronicle. "John, can I ask you one more question? Did you ever send the Mariposa information to the Chronicle?"

He answered curtly, "No."

"You asked me to send it to you. Why didn't you send it to the Chronicle? Why did you even ask for it?"

Jonathan hissed at me. "You lied to Riconosciuto's wife, or your husband did [regarding the Nichols meeting], and as a consequence of that, you're in hot water. I warned you about this whole thing ..."

"I'm in hot water because YOU betrayed me to Michael," I countered.

Again he repeated, **"I told him EXACTLY what happened. You're a fool, and you better start getting smart ... I think you should think twice about continuing with this ..."**

The Indians who had turned in the drug lab were at risk. Jonathan had their names, including detailed information on two deputies implicated in growing marijuana and distributing methamphetamine on the Indian reservation in Mariposa. I wanted my paperwork back.

"Jonathan, there's something I need to know right now. This is important. You have information on Mariposa ..."

Jonathan hung up. I paced the floor of my office for a moment, then called him back. He didn't answer, but I knew he was standing by the phone while I talked into his answering machine. I informed him that I intended to document everything that had transpired at the Nichols meeting, including his betrayal of me to both Nichols and Riconosciuto, and that he had attempted to set me up to be killed by one or both of these men.

I said I was taking the report to the nearest U.S. Attorney and sending a copy to his editor at the San Francisco Chronicle. And, I wanted my Mariposa paperwork returned.

I then called Robert Booth Nichols, but there was no answer at his home, so I called Peter Zokosky. Zokosky, as always, was friendly and congenial, and confirmed that Nichols was very interested in the results of my inquiry. I recounted the conversation I'd had with Littman, in which he had confessed his betrayal, and offered proof of the conversation.

Zokosky said that would be fine and he would pass the information along to Nichols. On Sunday, February 23rd, I again talked to Bobby Riconosciuto. We again discussed what Littman had done and why he had attempted to convince Nichols that I had betrayed him [Nichols] to Riconosciuto.

Bobby and I both acknowledged that Michael had knowledge of Nichols' government and drug activities over a twentyyear time span. Unquestionably, Nichols wanted to discredit Michael in any way he could ... or deter anyone from obtaining Michael's information.

Suddenly, Bobby said she believed I was being "set up for a hit." I said I thought Michael was being set up with Robert Booth Nichols.

Someone, whoever was controlling Littman, was trying to create friction between Michael and Nichols, and attempting to use me to do it. My friendship with Bobby had unexpectedly thrown a monkeywrench into their plans.

Bobby confided that Michael had taperecorded the conversation in which Littman had reported the contents of the Nichols meeting. Michael had called a "friend," and had the friend patch Michael through to Littman. The conversation had then been monitored and tape recorded by the third party (obviously Ted Gunderson who performed this functon often). Bobby agreed to send me a copy of the taperecording.

I asked her why Littman would try to turn both Nichols and Michael against me. Professional jealousy? Bobby said, "No, the same thing happened to Danny Casolaro."

Littman had been talking to Danny Casolaro regularly, as well as Nichols and Riconosciuto at the time of Danny's death. **Yet, Littman had never written a single word about Danny -- or Robert Booth Nichols!!**

We both agreed that someone was being set up, but Bobby insisted that it was me. She said she needed to check something out and she would call me back. Shortly thereafter, Bobby called back and breathlessly stated she had confirmed that I was about to die. She would not say who she had talked to, but intuitively, I felt it was Ted Gunderson.

Bobby said if I died, Michael would be held responsible. I had received collect calls daily from him for three months, then cut off all communication with him after meeting with Nichols. I had obtained ALL of Michael's documents in the desert without his knowledge, until recently. I held in my possession the bank cards which Paul Morasca and Mary Quick had died for.

It was a perfect set up, noted Bobby. Everyone, including my own husband, would believe Michael had contracted my death. Inwardly, I recalled the numerous statements by Nichols and Littman and Zokosky that "Michael would kill me."

Undoubtedly, they had expected me **to repeat those statements to others,** perhaps other reporters, or friends, or relatives. Who, in turn, would have repeated it to the police "after my death."

In fact, I hadn't repeated it to anyone, but it WAS scattered throughout my notes. Bobby advised me to get out of the house immediately, then call the FBI, the U.S. Attorney, the police or anyone else I could think of immediately. "They're going to kill you, if you don't RUN!," she yelled.

She said she was going to hang up, and when she called back, she didn't want me to be in the house. I became somewhat alarmed because of the various deaths surrounding Michael Riconosciuto. Regardless whether anyone believed him or not, the deaths were NOT make-believe. To name just a few: Mary Quick; Paul Morasca, Michael's former partner; Michael May who had visited Riconosciuto in jail two weeks before his death; Dennis Eismann, a lawyer Michael tried to hire; and of course, Danny Casolaro who had been introduced to the Octopus through Michael Riconosciuto. There were others with less direct connections.

Just three months after Danny's death, I had been approached by Riconosciuto, and the game of Dungeons and Dragons had begun again, this time with a new player. It seemed as if Nichols and Michael and Ted, and others, played a real life game, and when one of the players got "accidented" or "suicided" (as Ted called it), they simply recruited new players. Oddly, Michael had once said that anyone could leave "the game" by simply dropping out while they were still alive. Once it was known they had dropped out, they were left alone - if they kept their mouths shut.

Michael had used journalists to gather information he needed to stay abreast of the game. It was a subtle form of blackmail he used on Nichols and Ted and, indeed, the government whom he had worked for. I had once asked him why "they" didn't just kill him. He had answered that they didn't want to kill him. They wanted his technology. The FMC deal was, in fact, still on hold. The deaths around him were "punishment" for his indiscretions, and to keep a lid on their biological warfare, hightech weaponry, and largescale heroin and cocaine operations worldwide.But who would believe it all? There were hundreds of deadend gopher trails ... dried up corporations, discredited witnesses, dead bodies. Nichols had said only days before, in Littman's presence, that my death would be brought about by one of Michael's "drug flunkies." Who would believe otherwise?

Littman had seemed adamant, even outraged, that I HADN'T reported the contents of the Nichols meeting to Riconosciuto. Why? When it was Littman who originally warned me not to? When I didn't, Littman reported it himself.

Somehow, the success of the scheme had hinged upon Riconosciuto having knowledge of the meeting. I had unexpectedly kept my word to Nichols. Of course I had. My life depended on it. And, why had Nichols made a point of showing me the Zapruder film? What possible significance could that have on my investigation?

(Two years later, after speaking with Dick Russell, author of "The Man Who Knew Too Much," a 17year investigation of the Kennedy assassination, and Garby Leon at Silver Pictures, we theorized that the film had been shown to provide Nichols with "deniability." If I had mentioned the showing of the film to anyone in media, and placed any credibility on it, it would have invalidated everything else that took place at that meeting.)

The phone rang again, and it was Bobby Riconosciuto. She was even more agitated than before - and furious that I was still in the house. I assured her that I was leaving and hung up. I called Ray Jenkins and Roger Imbrogno and asked them to come to my home in Mariposa. Ray was a former Chief of Police of Merced College and a good friend. His companion, Roger, was in the State Guard with him. They arrived 45 minutes later carrying military rifles and a bulletproof vest.

I sat at my computer and documented the whole event, entitled, "Vortex." It was a 17 page diary of sorts which began as follows: "The following is a detailed account of an investigation which I began on December 1, 1991 and continue to work on intermittently as time allows. In all my years as an investigator and journalist, I have never encountered anything as bizarre or as alarming as this story. The purpose of this diary is to document these occurrances for my own safety ..."

I did not send the report to the U.S. Attorney as I had threatened to do. Nor did I send it to Littman's editor, Michael Yamamoto, at the San Francisco Chronicle, though I should have. I simply kept it and sent a copy to R.J., where I'm sure it disappeared, as always, down the big, black hole.

At that point in time, my sense of reality was diminishing. I couldn't tell if I was overreacting to Bobby Riconosciuto's warning, or if my lack of experience might cause my death by staying at home. Ultimately, I decided to disappear for a while.

I drove to Fresno to stay with a friend, who subsequently accompanied me to Galveston, Texas where we stayed with her mother for three months. Walking the beaches of Galveston, I found some measure of balance within myself, and returned home in June, rested and ready to resume my life. For several months after that, I had no contact with any of the principles in my investigation until October, 1992.

| Chapter 13, Part 1 | Chapter 12, Part 3 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 13, Part 1

Sometime in midOctober, at the offices of the Mariposa Guide, I received a hurried phone call from Dave Massey, standing in the lobby outside the Washington D.C. offices of ABC's "20/20" news bureau. I had asked Massey to pick up key documents at the offices of producer Don Thrasher at "20/20" who had been holding them there as a safety precaution for me. ("20/20" had aired an indepth piece on the corruption in Mariposa County and I had developed a friendship with Thrasher at that time).

After Massey emerged from Thrasher's office building, he'd met with John Cohen, investigator for the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw. They talked for a few minutes, then Cohen asked Massey if he would turn over my documents to him? Massey excused himself and hurriedly called me at my office in Mariposa. I instructed him NOT to hand over the documents. Most of them were my originals and I had no copies. (Thrasher had flown into California to pick the documents up, but we hadn't had time to make copies).

However, I mentioned to Massey that he was welcome to give Cohen my telephone number if he wished. Shortly thereafter, Cohen called me at my home and we had numerous conversations during the next several weeks. It was my understanding that he was the lead investigator in the House Judiciary Committee's threeyear investigation of the Inslaw stolen software. The final Investigative Report, dated September 10, 1992, titled "The Inslaw Affair," had already been published and I wondered why he bothered to call me.

After much coaxing, I finally agreed to send him some sort of an affidavit. I was working as a reporter for the local newspaper and didn't have time to put together a detailed report, so I simply attached a notarized cover sheet to "Vortex" and mailed it off to him.

On October 28, 1992, Cohen called back. He was very excited about Vortex. **"There's some great information here,**" he observed. "You did a very good investigative job, I have to commend you on that. I realize it's only a fraction of everything you have. **What you have done, you have put the pieces of the whole thing together.** Little bits and pieces of things that I have known about, that I had theorized about, you have found the answers to those specific questions."I explained to Cohen that I planned to publish a book on the subject and his professional opinion was valuable to me.

He added, "You've done some good investigative work here. It puts me in a position to say, `Yeah, this stuff is good, and this is some stuff you may want to get out.' In fact, I can put myself out as being available to these media people to be an inside source, for background only, which would also add credibility to your project."

Cohen hesitated, seemingly uncomfortable with what he was about to say. He drew a deep breath, then proceeded. **"You are actually a key witness to this thing now.** And you might want to consider talking to a couple of the honorable law enforcement people that are still working on this. I do know there are currently some FBI investigations that are in place on this ..."

Cohen hesitated again, gathering his thoughts. " ... There has been coordination on this." He waited for a response, a signal that I understood what he was trying to say. I said I understood.

"It's been unofficial, but there has been coordination. So, I'd like to know whether ... maybe it would even keep you out of the limelight, whether you would mind, as long as I talk about it and clear it with you first ..."

Cohen was leading up to something, but having trouble getting to the point. " ... There is a certain sharing of information. Some of the leads and some of the stuff [in Vortex] (pause) ... Because I'll tell you, one of the biggest hits (pause) ... **I always felt that there was a narcotics connection in this ..."**

I laughed aloud. Cohen continued ... **"regarding international narcotics distribution.** And I've sort of made my expertise in my years in law enforcement, international narcoterrorism, the weaponsdope connections in the intelligence agencies ..."

I could only say, "Yes, yes, yes."

" ... And when I was in Los Angeles **I did a lot of undercover work with Columbians, where I worked international narcotics conspiracies with DEA and FBI and, being a local police officer, I didn't really get caught up in their systems, I just made some great contacts in these agencies. But I also learned quite a bit about Southeast Asian heroin and the rise of the Medellin Cartels and the other Cartels in Latin America."**

"Yes." By then, I knew Cohen had grasped the significance of **the information Michael Riconosciuto had attempted to trade to the FBI, as well as Danny Casolaro's fatal inquiry about Mike Abbell of the DOJ and his connection to Gilbert Rodriguez and Jose Londono of the Cali Cartel.**

Cohen continued ... "And I also ran into quite a few law enforcement professionals who were pretty irritated because of the intelligence agency, drug dealer connection."

"Yes. Right."

"Well, the thing that is interesting is, one of the most interesting things in the whole report, was the article on The Company."

"Yes."

" ... Because that immediately answered, or confirmed, what my suspicions had been. And I know the exact, right channel to push to get this thing hooked up. And he's a bigtime ... (pause) See this is a very good time for people like us, who are out for purposes of good, to ...(pause) You see, right now the

FBI is in a war with the Department of Justice. And would like nothing better than to have an investigation that they can discredit the Department of Justice with. So, the time is ripe to feed this stuff to the right people."

I agreed that the drug operations needed to be cleaned up, because the drugs were filtering into the smaller communities. But, thinking of Mariposa, I added that there were law enforcement people involved in the drug trade.

Cohen agreed. "I'm very careful with who I deal with. And I think when these people contact you, you'll be somewhat surprised."

Reluctantly, I said, "Ok, I will work with them."

Cohen concluded by saying, **"You said some real interesting things. I like the section where you said `Bob Nichols runs Glen Shockley, Glen Shockley runs Jose Londono.' Now that corroborates some information that I got in the past which talked about one of the reasons PROMISE was stolen.** You see, I've had a side theory about another reason why PROMISE was taken. And it was that PROMISE could also be modified to track money laundering.."

"Oh, absolutely."

"... And it could also be used as an active information gathering, or an active moving software program that can go into other data bases. And it could be modified to control hundreds of accounts and move money through the international banking system."

I interjected, "This is what Michael Riconosciuto was trying to trade to the FBI and to FinCen ..."

Cohen added, "What a lot of people don't realize is that there are two international banking systems. There's CHIPS and SWIFT. And the word Swift Chips has been spread out throughout this whole [investigation]. And a lot of people don't realize what that meant. Well, Swift Chips is a referral to those two clearing house systems. The clearing house interbank payment system and then the European counterpart, Swift. And they do $2 billion dollars worth of banking transactions a day."

"Yes ..."

" ... And if one was able to move accounts through there, you could move money around the world ..."

******

In a subsequent conversation with Cohen he asked me how I had obtained the document in which **Ted Gunderson had mentioned their "drug/arms operation?"** (See Page 60)

I explained that I had found it in Michael Riconosciuto's secret files in the desert.

Cohen remarked, "That's a great document."

I added, "I have the original."

Cohen: "You have the original?"

"Yeah."

Cohen noted, "You hang on to that. That's `key.'"

******

I was subsequently contacted by Thomas Gates of the Los Angeles FBI, and John Connolly of SPY magazine. Gates was somewhat cryptic and noncommunicative about his investigation. It was understandable since he had been sued by Robert Booth Nichols in a civil court.

Just before Gates called me, I had spoken with Gene Gilbert for the first time, the investigator at the Riverside District Attorney's office, and learned that drug activities at Wackenhut had been investigated for years, but a certain FBI agent, a Fred Reagan, had always shut the local investigations down.

I related this information to Gates, who seemed not particularly interested in that avenue of approach. "I'm mostly interested in Robert Booth Nichols," he said.

I explained to Gates that Nichols had made it very clear that I was not to discuss the meeting I'd had with him to anyone."

Gates inquired, "Why would he tell you that?"

I responded, "I have no idea. But I think he was serious. He had his wife take my picture front and side, and he wouldn't allow my husband into the interview. My husband had to sit downstairs in the van."

I summarized the interview briefly, then noted that I had obtained, through Bobby Riconosciuto, eight boxes of Michael's documents in the Mojave Desert near Death Valley. I believed those documents had caused Nichols and/or Jonathan Littman to want me out of the picture.

"Michael didn't know that we had done this," I noted. "Michael had instructed his wife not to go near the trailer out there. However, Bobby and I DID go out there. It was dark and it was cold and the kids were hungry, so rather than go through all those documents, she just gave them all to me. I put them in my van and and I came home with them. All the originals. And I spent a week copying all this stuff, then I shipped the boxes back to her fatherinlaw."

Gates had a habit of saying nothing when I finished my sentence. So I continued ... "Some of this stuff was incredibly incriminating for all of them. And this is why they're all concerned. They're really afraid that I'm going to send some of this material to someone, somewhere. And, I did send a 17page summary ("Vortex") to John Cohen, but not the material itself. There's too much to send. Additionally, I have reams of notes. I kept notes on all the calls I received."

Gates asked what "Vortex" contained? I replied that it pretty much summarized everything that had transpired from the first day. "I had contacted Ted Gunderson regarding a problem here in Mariposa. He had compiled a 700page report on Tulare County and I wanted to know if he had anything on Mariposa county, where I live. We had a meeting for about eight hours and I discussed the things that were going on in our community, which is close to Fresno. And, the very next morning, Michael Riconosciuto called me. I'd never heard of the man before, but he proceeded to give me all the names of the people involved in The Company out of Fresno, which he was working within the framework of."

Again Gates said nothing. I waited, but there was no response. So I added, "Now, all of this starts to get real involved at this point. I don't know if you're interested in this, or not ..."

Gates replied, "The Company?"

"Yes."

Gates noted, "At a future date. I'm more interested in what Nichols had to tell you right now."

Nichols had sued Gates and lost his case quite recently. I wasn't sure I wanted to walk into a situation where I would be caught in the middle. I asked, "Well, I need to find out from you - I'm not real thrilled about playing with this guy, you know ..."

Gates: "I don't want you to play with him."

"Do you want me to come in as a witness on your behalf, or what?"

Gates explained, "The Civil suit is finished. **This is a criminal proceeding.** I want to know what he said to you."

I responded, "Well, I want to know where this is going to go. I want to know who's listening in ..."

"Nobody's listening in ..."

" ... I want to know what you're going to do with it. Where it's going to go."

"Well, what do you WANT me to do with it?"

"Well, if I'm going to get involved in it, and once I tell you what I know, I'm going to be involved. I want to know in what capacity I'm going to be involved?"

Gates was evasive. "Well, I don't know what you have to say. **As far as looking at the gross amount of evidence we have, we're getting ready to do that real soon.** We have a lot of people out there talking to us, but we need to find the substance of the criminal act."

"Yes."

Gates continued ..."And you may have the key to some of that."

I was surprised. "So, you're putting together a `criminal case.' You're going to have to level with me to a certain point. I understand that you're FBI, and everything goes in and nothing ever comes out again, but still you're going to have to level with me to a certain point, because I need to know where I stand."

Gates drawled, "Well, if there's information that would be needed for criminal prosecution, then we'd have to talk to you about the use of that material. And if you decide you don't want to use it, or don't want to relinquish it, then we can't compel you to get on as a free witness and talk about this."

"Uh,hmmm."

" ... So, we would hope that you would do it. Whatever information you provide at this point will remain confidential."

"Uh, hmmm."

" ... You know what I'm saying?"

"Uh, hmmm."

" ... That's your choice."

"Yes, well I'll have to think about it."

"Well, if you could give me an idea as to what was mentioned, I could tell you, basically, how we can handle it."

I didn't know where to begin, what he wanted, so I asked, "May I ask what are the charges that you're going to bring against Nichols? Would this have to do with the government aspect of what he's been involved in, such as arms shipments, or would it have to do with drug trafficking ... murder, or what?"

Gates chuckled, "Well, that sounds like a pretty good package to me."

I laughed. "I'm just curious about what you're specifically focusing on."

He answered, "I'm focusing on any criminal activities that Nichols is involved in. Obviously, the most significant areas of interest are the drugs, the murders and the gunrunning."

I explained that it was very complex. I didn't have my notes or "Vortex" at my home, so I summarized as briefly as possible from memory what I had obtained from the boxes in the Mojave desert.

Gates listened attentively. When I concluded, he noted, "Do you have these things [referring to the documents] put away where nobody else can get at them?"

"Yes. They are not in my home or anywhere on my property."

Gates asked, "Does anybody else know where they are?"

I wondered if he thought I might NOT be around in the near future. "The person whose house they're at. Nobody else."

His next question confirmed my suspicion. "What if something happens to you? Where do we find them? How do we find them?"

I noted that I had copies out with two people. Gates asked, "Are they trustworthy?"

I said, "Absolutely."

Gates pressed further. "The place where the original documents are, can you trust that individual?" "Yes. Absolutely."

Gates seemed satisfied that the documents were safe for the time being. He reiterated that I would have to be debriefed extensively and the information would be maintained under the Attorney General guidelines for confidential sources.

The word "Attorney General" struck a cord in my consciousness. "You said `Attorney General,' you mean through the DOJ [Department of Justice]?"

Gates answered carefully, "Yeah."

I laughed sardonically. "This is getting funny ..."

Gates hurried to explain that it was only through the DOJ "guidelines." He added, "It's their rules, but they don't have access to the information."

I pointed out that I might consider talking to him, because I knew of his committment to busting the drug cartels and finding Casolaro's murderer.I added that I would never talk to "the FBI, quote, unquote," and Gates said that was okay. He understood. So I said, "We'll go on from there then ..."

I proceeded to describe the interviews with Robert Booth Nichols. When I was finished, Gates asked me what I was going to do with the information? I explained that I planned to write a nonfiction book about it because much of the information I had obtained through my investigation had been independently substantiated by the recently published House Judiciary Committee Report on Inslaw.

However, I had not decided what the focus of the book would be - the story still had to develop. A thought occurred to me. "I would be very interested in what you've experienced in your investigation right from day one. That's what the public wants to read about."

Gates agreed, "It would make a hell of a book." Then he added, **"So, how do we put Nichols and his group away?"** I answered simply, "I don't know, Tom, that's your department."

I never sent the documents and never spoke to him again until two years later when I was hot on the trail of Mike Abbell.

******

Chapter 13, Part 2 | Chapter12, Part 4 | Table of Contents |

Chapter 13, Part 2

John Connolly, a former New York police officer turned writer, was also researching the death of Danny Casolaro. Through sources unknown to me, he learned of my investigation, and after several conversations, I agreed to send him documents which he needed for his "Octopus" investigation. But first, I demanded that he fax me a letter protecting my copyrights.

Connolly faxed back the following letter, dated October 22, 1992: "I hereby agree that any and all information, documents, etc. sent to me from you will be treated confidentially. Any information supplied by you will not be used by me without your express permission. Furthermore, in the event that I publish a future story and use any of the information supplied by you, you will receive the proper reporting credits or bylines. Sincerely, John Connolly."

Connolly was a gungho journalist, and apparently found it impossible to withhold such provocative information. The January, 1993 issue of SPY included much of the information I had sent him in a story entitled, "Dead Right," by John Connolly.

He had not obtained my permission nor given me a byline, but I didn't hold it against him. The story was well written, and gutsy, and I had to respect that. Essentially, the story focused on the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, but pages 6365 gave an indepth profile of Robert Booth Nichols, who was portrayed as Danny's "dangerous friend" ... "The Lethal Robert Booth Nichols."

Wrote Connolly, "By the late Spring of 1991, Robert Booth Nichols had become one of Danny Casolaro's most important sources. They spoke frequently and at length ...

"We know Nichols was a man as comfortable in the underworld as in the intelligence community and that he was associated with people who treated killing as an ordinary part of doing business."

FBI agent Thomas Gates had identified Nichols in his sworn affidavit as a drug trafficker and money launderer stemming from a 1987 investigatin of MOB activities in Hollywood. **Interestingly, Nichols had been identified by the FBI as early as 1978 as being involved in drug trafficking, the very same year that Gilbert Rodriguez was indicted in Los Angeles.** I wondered if Nichols and Gilbert Rodriguez had been connected in the FBI investigation?

In 1989, Nichols represented a group of unknown investors who wanted to take over Summa Corporation, the holding company of Howard Hughes' empire. Hughes had just died, and Nichols had convinced a Saudi company called Ali and Fahd Shobokski Group to become partners in the (failed) takeover attempt.

Joseph Cicippio, who was later taken hostage in Lebanon, was at that time the London manager of Ali &

Fahd. **Cicippio told SPY he specifically remembered Nichols telling him he was representing interests in the U.S. Government and had been shown U.S. Justice Department identification by Nichols.**

By 1981, Nichols had become partners with retired arms manufacturer Peter Zokosky and they formed Meridian Arms, which in turn joined up with Wackenhut Corporation in a scheme to manufacture arms on the Cabazon Indian reservation.

In Meridian's quest to provide guns for the Contras, Nichols had obtained all the required California permits to possess and sell machine guns **using recommendations from CIA official Larry Curran.**

Connolly pointed out Nichols' listing of Harold Okimoto as a former employer on his application to carry a concealed weapon, describing **Okimoto as "believed by intelligence sources to be a highranking member of Japan's Yakuza crime syndicate."**

Eugene Giaquinto, president of MCA's Home Entertainment Division, was mentioned as one of M.I.L.'s board directors. (Nichols' Meridian International Logistics corporation). Noted Connolly, "[FBI] agents caught Giaquinto and Nichols lunching at Le Dome, the swank Los Angeles show business restaurant, and afterward transferring a box from Giaquinto's car to Nichols's. The [wire] taps caught them discussing possible takeovers of MCA, and the effect on stock prices. **It was also evident from the wiretaps that Giaquinto enjoyed a special relationship with John Gotti ..."**

Thomas Gates testified before the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw that he had twice heard from informants that Nichols had put a contract out on his life. In July 1991, Danny Casolaro became somewhat alarmed and began confiding in Thomas Gates. Nichols had flown from Puerto Rico to Washington D.C. to meet with Casolaro, staying several days.

SPY didn't know what they talked about, but after Nichols left, Casolaro told Agent Gates that Nichols had warned him, "If you continue this investigation, you will die." Three days before his death, Danny had asked Gates whether he should take Nichols's threats seriously?

On July 31, 1991, Casolaro had also spoken with **Richard Stavin, a former special prosecutor for the Justice Department who had been assigned to the MCA case (see Page 78). In his investigation of MCA, Stavin had unearthed documents implicating Nichols as a money launderer with ties to the Gambino crime family and the Yakuza.**

Connolly wrote, "Danny must have thought he hit the jackpot." Six days after speaking to Stavin, Danny Casolaro, "who still had a young man's vision of his immortality," had a long phone conversation with Robert Booth Nichols, but the contents of that conversation were unknown to Connolly.

SPY also interviewed Allan Boyak, a former CIA operative now practicing law in Utah, who had known Nichols for 15 years. Boyak told SPY, **"Nichols is lethal." A transcript of a conversation**

between Boyack, Michael Riconosciuto and former FBI agent Ted Gunderson, (which I had sent Connolly a copy of) described an occasion in which Nichols wanted to deliver a message to a mobster from Chicago. Nichols hung a man upside down on a hoist in an airplane hangar in front of a prop plane, then started the engine of the plane and revved it up, so that the man hanging on the hoist was sucked toward the propellers. According to Riconosciuto, "By the time Bob got finished with him, he wanted to die."

******

What Connolly failed to report in his article was the name of the man who had been "hung up." **His name was Sam Marowitz, a professional hit man,** who had been "the trigger man" in the nonfatal shooting of Robert Ferrante, head of Consolidated Savings and Loan.

Ferrante had been involved with Patrick Moriarti, Marshall Riconosciuto's partner of 40 years. It is important to remember that Robert Booth Nichols and Michael Riconosciuto had been close associates since 1967. Ted Gunderson had located, through his sources, the "trigger man" in the Ferrante shooting, and Nichols and Riconosciuto had forced Marowitz to confess to his crime by hanging him upside down in front of the airplane propellar.

Riconosciuto recalled, " ... So he [Marowitz] starts talking ... and Bob goes out of the room like this: `Oh my God, I don't want to hear anymore,' covering his ears. **This Marowitz starts confessing to every hit he's ever done,** including the Dorfman killings in Chicago. ... I mean, all hell breaks loose. All of a sudden Ted has found the torpedo in the Dorfman killings ..." After the "hanging" incident, Marowitz fled to Israel.

The transcript was taken from Riconosciuto's first (taperecorded) meeting with Alan Boyak on May 5, 1991 at the attorney visiting room of the Tacoma, Washington house of incarceration.

Riconosciuto had been arrested on March 29, 1991 by **DEA agents,** reportedly under the supervision of Michael T. Hurley, who had been transferred from Nicosia, Cyprus to Washington state shortly before the arrest.It is significant that this arrest took place exactly eight days after Michael had signed the Inslaw affidavit on March 21, 1991.

Michael already had a law firm representing him, John Crawford and John Rosalini, but Ted Gunderson had brought Boyak into the case because of the intense political ramifications. **In other words, they needed someone to put together a case against the government officials involved, "so they could buy out cheap."**

Danny Casolaro had obtained a copy of that transcript from Boyak, according to Ted Gunderson and Bobby Riconosciuto. **Bobby noted that Danny had taken the transcript to people in the Department of Justice and confronted them with it.**

Michael Riconosciuto later added that Robert Nichols had flown to Washington D.C. and "followed Danny's trail through the DOJ, doing `damage control' and repudiating the transcript."

This may well be the encounter (per SPY magazine) that Danny had with Nichols in Washington D.C. less than a month before his death in which Nichols had said, "If you continue with this investigation, you will die."

Danny had a unique habit of fearlessly "bouncing" information from one person to another, particularly between Michael Riconosciuto and Robert Booth Nichols. After the "transcript" incident, it undoubtedly created a hostile climate between Nichols and Riconsciuto. (Riconosciuto was attempting to trade information on Nichols'activities in exchange for his freedom).

Numerous passages in the transcript openly named narcotics traffickers allegedly working under Robert Booth Nichols. On page 53, just one of many named was **Bryce Larsen,** currently (1991) operating a hotel for "one of Harold Okimoto's people in Thailand," **who smuggled China White heroin into the U.S.. "The DEA seized two lear jets from him the last time they busted him," noted Riconosciuto.**

"Skip Jahota (phonetic sp.) was here trying to recruit people to go to work in Thailand, and to offload the boats when they bring the stuff in [to the U.S.]. **They've got some heroin coming in in the next few weeks, a rather large ..."**

Boyak interrupted, " ... There's a big case in Miami where a female black Assistant U.S. Attorney is handling this gal I was telling you about, but that's ... I don't want to go into details on that because she's in a witness protection program ..."

Riconosciuto added, "Well, she's probably working against the Martin brothers ..."

Boyak interjected, "No, it's against Larsen!"

On page 63, Riconosciuto brought Al Holbert, the Israeli intelligence agent, into the picture. " ... Now the other area where I can do some real damage is Al Holbert's procurement of chemicals nationwide. He has a mailorder chemical company that is mailing out chemicals right now. What they do is they mail out large multiple orders under threshhold limit value for the reporting requirements under the new DEA regulations. Like with Phenol acidic acid, it's one kilo a month, so they mail out 800 grams per month to one customer. And they've got fifty customers ..."

Boyak asked, "Where are they doing that?"

Mike answered, "In Miami, Florida."

But, Riconosciuto added, in the California operation, Holbert and Richard Knozzi weighed their

drugs on UHaul trucks! "When they do their meth lab, they usually do 1,500 to 2,000 pounds."

Holbert's address was listed at Ft. Mead. Riconosciuto informed Boyak that Holbert was a former Israeli intelligence officer who came to the United States to give special education classes to law enforcement agencies. "He's dirty as the day is long," he added. "He's out of OMV now. I don't know what OMV is doing at Ft. Mead."

Boyak had interjected, "Just so you know, because it may click with you. Ft. Mead has headquarters ISCOM (Intelligence Security Command) which has part of the intelligence network for the Delta Force."

In another section of the 65page transcript, Riconosciuto detailed his operation with Tyme Share Inc. something he had been unable to discuss with me on the jail phone. "Barry Smith, who is an associate of Bob Nichols, had done some research on some interlocking directorates with the board members of Wackenhut, and I started to realize how deeply involved in the NugenHand Bank the Wackenhut people were.

"Paul Morasca and I were very close to Michael Hand [former President of NugenHand Bank of Australia]. Now he's on the run, in Canada. I had a complete set of all the records for NugenHand that had not been destroyed."

Boyak: "What function were you doing for them?"

Mike: "I set up the data processing base. See, I was a principle in Tyme Share, Inc. Do you know what Tyme Share is?"

Boyak: "No."

Mike: "This is a giant computer communications company, and all the Justice Department field offices communicate via Tyme Net. FOIMS (Field Office Information Management System) for the FBI is all done via Tyme Net. Okay? Most of your big banking institutions ..."

Boyak interrupted, "I'm not even a user friendly person ..."

Mike continued, "I had the NugenHand records and I analyzed the situation and I looked at the Saudi position. They were taking people's paychecks, you know, foreign workers, and giving them unbelievable deals just to put their money in the bank ..."

Boyak: " ... And they were skimming the interest?"

Mike: "Yeah, oh yeah. So, what I did ... I was looking at block transfers on Swift Chips, and reconciliations ..."

Boyak: " ... You've lost me there."

Mike: "Anyway, what I did was I screwed up everything with the automated clearing house between NugenHand ..."

Boyak: " ... So nothing could be liquidated." P

Mike: "No, what I did was I created a virtual bank on the automated clearing house system and I funneled all that money into it, and then I funneled it out of there into blocked currencies ..."

Boyak interrupted again: "I can't track the technical paper trail. What I'm trying to do is get to the bottom line ..."

******

The bottom line was, Danny Casolaro allegedly carted the above transcript around the Department of Justice, demanding answers. Less than a month later he was dead. The transcript gave details of the Cobra helicopter shipments to Iraq, via North Korea, corporate structures, undercover operatives, espionage activities, advanced weapons technology tested at the Nevada Nuclear test site, and much more.

"Something" in the transcript pushed some buttons, but we can only theorize as to "whose" buttons were pushed.

******

In all fairness, it is necessary to relate Robert Booth Nichols' response to Alan Boyak's accusations about him. The following narrative originiated from a phone conversation with Nichols in which he said "Boyak was unbelievable."

(Nichols speaking): "I know what he said about me, and that's all well and dandy. But I don't know why he said it. It's all totally false. The guy could not be doing this unless he was under the orders of someone. Or he's crazy.

"The thing with this Boyak, he said I was involved in BCCI, he said narcotics trafficking, he said money laundering ... as did the FBI.

"The point is, I know people inside the bureau [FBI], I know people inside the agency [CIA], I know people inside government who are very responsible people. I speak to people as individuals, not as initials. In other words, I wouldn't talk to the FBI, I would talk to an agent that I knew in the FBI who was honest. Or I would talk to an agent in the company, or the CIA, who I know is honest, but I wouldn't talk to them as a whole, or someone I didn't know. Because I think they've become so corrupt and polluted that they don't know what they're doing half the time ...

"Some people in government are extremely concerned about it. They're very much involved with it. I mean, the honest ones are the biggest critics ...

"With regards to the Yakuza, I don't know them. To my knowledge, I've never been around them. With regard to the Mafia, I don't know them. To my knowledge, I've never been around them. With regards to narcotics, I hate narcotics. And anyone who's known me for any length of time, and my friends are all old friends, knows that I hate narcotics, have never been around them, have never seen heroin in my life ... except on television. So, it makes me wonder and many other people that are friends of mine, wonder what agenda ... who's up to what? Right?

"The Tong, I don't know them, nor have I ever been around them to my knowledge. One story [newspaper article] said [I was] a hit man for the Tong. That was one story. I've never been a hit man for anything, including Tong, which is the Chinese mafia.

"Ask yourself this. I sued them [the FBI], right? We were told, `Don't sue them,' by a lot of people. `Kill everybody, don't sue them.' But the point is, there are a lot of people overseas that said pursue them anyway, and that's it, period. So, it comes down to one thing, really. When we get to the courtroom, we are not going to say, `This is this, and that is that, and trust us.' We're going to document everything we say ..."

When I asked Nichols if Michael Riconosciuto had worked for the CIA, he said, "Why don't you call the CIA and ask them. I'm sure they're listed in the phone book."

******

Nichols' lawsuit against Thomas Gates and the Los Angeles FBI was dismissed twice in federal court. However, he later filed a lawsuit against the Los Angeles Police Department for alleged false arrest stemming from a 1986 incident at the Palomino nightclub in North Hollywood.

In March 1993, Nichols stated on the witness stand that he worked for the CIA for nearly two decades. His lawsuit charged that as a result of his detainment by the LAPD, the Santa Clara County Sheriff's Department rescinded his concealed weapons permit. That action, Nichols claimed, resulted in the loss of Swiss financing for a multi-million dollar deal to manufacture machine guns in South Korea.

Nichols also testified that he had no visible income for more than 15 years except for the living expenses he received from the CIA. He said he was recruited into the CIA while living in Hawaii in the late 1960's by a man named "Ken." Ken had told him that instead of joining the U.S. military, he could serve his country in other ways. He was instructed to take a job with a Hawaiian security firm

(Okimoto?) and later to move to Glendale, California to join a construction company (Pender?).

From that point until 1986, Nichols worked intelligence gathering operations in more than 30 nations from Central America to Southeast Asia. To prove this, Nichols' lawyer, John F. Denove, supplied the court with a list of Washington D.C. personages to be subpoenaed which ultimately caused Judge Thomas C. Murphy to declare a mistrial. No record was ever made public of that list of names, though Thomas Gates (FBI) and Henry Weinstein of the Los Angeles Times respectively **confirmed its existence over the phone,** but neither would divulge the names.

In August 1994 I placed several calls to John Cohen, former investigator for the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw, to follow up on Cohen's investigation of Mike Abbell and Casolaro's findings on him prior to his death. **Cohen was now stationed at the Office of National Drug Control Policy at the Executive Offices of the President (Clinton) in Washington D.C.**

I also made calls to Special Agent Thomas Gates at the Los Angeles Joint Drug Intelligence Group, who originally testified before the House Judiciary Committee on Inslaw. Gates had spoken with Casolaro during the week before his death and I felt he might help me to identify what Casolaro learned about Abbell. Both men were congenial, but hesitant to talk about Abbell at that point in time.

I then called the young Customs Agent to whom I had given the affidavit mentioning Mike Abbell in February 1993. His supervisor said **he was stationed in Miami, Florida** and put me in touch with him. He too was cryptic and uncommunicative about Mike Abbell.

I soon discovered why. A few weeks later, on September 9th, 1994, the FBI raided the law offices of Michael Abbell in Washington D.C. The raid was the result of a Miami federal grand jury probe of the Cali Cartel. As of that date no criminal charges had yet been filed against Abbell.

I had also placed a call in September 1994 to Steve Zipperstein, Chief Assistant U.S. Attorney in Los Angeles, who conducted an investigation for the DOJ on Inslaw and Casolaro in 1994. Zipperstein was uncooperative and defensive when approached about Casolaro's investigation of Michael Abbell and Gilberto Rodriguez.

Less than two weeks later, the DOJ report was released to the public with no mention of Mike Abbell, Gilberto Rodriguez, Robert Booth Nichols, or any of the aforementioned information in this manuscript, including F.I.D.C.O., though it was available for scrutiny through many sources.

******

| Chapter 14 | Chapter 13, Part 1 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 14

In November, 1994, TIME magazine reported that the 56year old Gilberto Rodriguez was "stressed out" and seeking to surrender to the Columbian justice system in exchange for reduced jail time, perhaps three or four years, and his fortune left intact. In a Columbian jail, this would inevitably amount to a quiet vacation.

However, Gilberto insisted that any deal would have to be endorsed by the United States. In return, the Rodriguez brothers, Gilberto and Miguel, would guarantee that a large percentage of Columbian drug dealers would be willing to get out of the drug business and dismantle their infrastructure, their labs and their routes. The estimated net effect would be a 60% reduction in the drug supply to the U.S. alone.

Prior to Rodriguez's offer, President Samper had announced that it would be necessary to dismantle the Cartels rather than incarcerate their leaders. An aide to Samper noted that the door was open to a surrender program.

In light of everything I had learned to date, I could not help wondering what price did the U.S. government pay to bring the Cartels to the point of surrender?

******

On June 6th, 1995, The Washington Post broke the news about Mike Abbell in a front page story entitled, "Ex-Prosecutors Indicted in Cali Case." Three former federal prosecutors, including Michael Abbell, who served "as a top ranking Justice Department official, were named in an indictment [on June 5th] in Miami along with 56 others as part of a broad racketeering case against the Columbia-based Cali Cartel ..."

Jose Londono, a founder of the Cali Cartel, and Donald Ferguson, an assistant U.S. attorney in Miami were also charged. Former assistant U.S. attorney Joel Rosenthal pled guilty in the case to charges of money laundering. Abbell and other lawyers faced charges of money laundering, drug conspiracy and racketeering. The indictment charged them with obstruction of justice, preparing false affidavits and conveying warnings to arrested cartel members that they should not cooperate with government investigations.

The Washington Post noted that, ultimately, it was not expensive cocaine interdiction on the high seas, but detective work by a team of Miami-based U.S. Customs agents and the Drug Enforcement Administrtion that compiled the evidence necessary to bring the 161-page indictment.

Tracking cartel shipments, authorites found cocaine hidden inside 40-foot cargo containers used to ship frozen vegetables, lumber, concrete posts and coffee. The smuggling system effectively evaded U.S.

radar planes and naval vessels deployed in the Caribbean. The racketeering case began when a load of cement posts and cornerstones arrived in the Port of Miami on August 23, 1991. DEA and Customs agents found 12,250 kilos of cocaine hidden inside their hollow cores.

******

Significantly, in early March 1995, THREE MONTHS BEFORE the Miami indictment was unsealed, I had received a letter from Michael Riconosciuto who had learned of the initial raid on Mike Abbell's law offices. He wrote as follows: (Referring to his trial in 1991)

" ... [During] pretrial I made an on the record proffer in an attempt to dispose of this case. The U. S. Attorney rejected it as garbage. That was in 1991. Now in 1995, it is a major case. In my proffer, I outlined a sophisticated smuggling scheme. It involved plastic items and concrete products. I named both Ackerman and Abbell.

"The DOJ now has evidence seized from attorney's offices. The cement items were handled through TRANCA Corporation. The specialized equipment to make concrete posts and beams came from Tacoma, Washington. The aircraft came from a Canadian brokerage known as THABET Aviation in Quebec City, Canada.

"Raymond Thabet is Lebanese and has special contacts that give him privileged access to Canadian military surplus. Fourteen (14) of these planes were handled through Abbell and Laguna. All the paperwork was handled by Ed Smith in Darrington, Washington state. These were ex-submarine patrol planes. Specialized electronics were provided.

"An insider in Customs was involved - Richard Cardwell.

"This is heavy stuff. The fact that I detailed it in 1991 demands an explanation. Forty (40) tons of coke [cocaine] would have been stopped. I want a direct explanation from Teresa Van Vlet." Signed "Mike R." Van Vlet reportedly worked in the drug enforcement administration of the Department of Justice.

******

| Chapter 15, Part 1 | Chapter 13, Part 2 | Table of Contents |

CHAPTER 15, Part 1

I was never able to rectify the purpose behind the biological technology that Robert Booth Nichols was involved in developing with the Japanese. Why did his patents stress the "Method for Induction and Activation" of Cytotoxic TLymphocytes? It is noteworthy that Harold Okimoto, Nichols' godfather and a member of his Board of Directors, had allegedly been a highranking intelligence officer during World War II.

While reading Dick Russell's book, "The Man Who Knew Too Much," I came across a chapter referencing Japanese biological experiments conducted during World War II. **In one passage (pp. 125-126), Russell noted that, at the end of World War II, Charles Willoughby, General Douglas MacArthur's chief of intelligence, had seized Japanese lab records on germ warfare. When the Pentagon determined that the biological research might prove useful in the Cold War, the Japanese responsible for the experiments received immunity from prosecution in exchange for their cooperation.**

At least three thousand people died as a result of those experiments, including an unknown number of captured U.S. military personnel. "Only in 1982 did this seamy story come to light, including the Pentagon's 1947 acknowledgement of Willoughby's `wholehearted cooperation' in arranging examination of the human pathological material which had been transferred to Japan from the biological warfare installations," wrote Russell.

Another publication, entitled "Unit 731" by Peter Williams and David Wallace, gave a detailed background on bacteriological warfare experiments conducted by all of the major combatants during World War II. When the United States government determined that the Axis Powers, including Russia, were evaluating this weapon, it became necessary to study the possibilities. This lead to the thought that if one prepared for offensive bacteriological warfare, then one must also prepare for defensive bacteriological warfare.

However, history shows that that reasoning broke down with the first use of nuclear weapons by the United States in Japan to finish the war in the East quickly. That action saved American lives if a land attack on the islands had been effected, but the principle is obvious. Would the U.S. do the same thing with viruses and bacteria?

In 1939 the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research in New York studied the virulent, unmodified strain of yellow fever virus, ostensibly for the purpose of developing a cure for the disease. The laboratory at that time was under the direction of Dr. Wilbur Sawyer. It was in 1939 that a Japanese Army doctor, Dr. Ryoichi Naito, visited the laboratory with credentials from the Japanese military attache in Washington to obtain a sample of that strain of the Yellow Fever virus.

A report of that incident was subsequently sent to the Army Surgeon General and after evaluation of similar incidents, it was determined by Army Intelligence that Japan was interested in the yellow fever virus for bacteriological warfare purposes.

Based on that information, along with other corollary information, the decision was made to build Fort Detrick near Frederick, Maryland to provide a secret laboratory for the study and development of defensive and offensive capability to wage bacteriological warfare (BW).

The secrecy of the project was of the same magnitude as the nuclear work done within the Manhattan Project. From the writings and speeches given by the military men associated with this project, it is apparent that they were genuinely concerned for the security of the United States, but inside this organization and within the government at large, was a potential for ulterior motives. (More on that later).

By 1944, more than sufficient evidence had been gathered by American intelligence units to indicate that Japan was deeply involved in bacteriological warfare. Thirtythousand bombs, manufactured at the Osaka Chemical Research Institute in Japan, containing typhus, diptheria and bubonic plague were sent to the Chinese front.

By then, overwhelming evidence was coming in, particularly regarding research being conducted by Major General Shiro Ishii who was awarded a Technical Meritorious Medal with highest degrees. After the war, American intelligence learned that General Ishii, through an organization called "Unit 731," conducted his more serious research at a camp in northern Manchuria. It was here that General Ishii experimented on human beings.

The experiments conducted on those human beings made Japan the world's leading authority on offensive and defensive bacteriological warfare systems. No other country, Ishii reasoned, would have equivalent technical data on how epidemics spread and how to protect against them.

Japan's fascination with biological warfare dates as far back as 1932, when experimentation on prisoners already sentenced to death was conducted at Harbin, but later during the war with China, the Japanese used prisoners of war. White Russians, caught in the area of Japan's war with China were also used, according to an interrogated Japanese army officer.

Each prisoner was placed in a closely guarded cell where the experiments were conducted. After each prisoner died, they were cremated in an electric furnace to remove all evidence of what had occurred. Starting in 1935, motion pictures of the experiments were taken and these were shown to senior army officers. It was reported that 3,000 were sacrificed at a separate test site called Pingfan. Why was it required to use so many humans?

The Japanese had learned that epidemics occurred naturally but the method for inducing and activating them artificially was more difficult. In order to find the most efficient method of transmittal, many experiments were needed to find the lethal doses required to spread the agent. What would work with animals might not necessarily work with humans. Also, a method was needed for immunization and only humans could be used for that purpose.

General Ishii thought that the West's moral codes would not allow for such experimentation and that alone would put Japan on the leading edge of such technology. Healthy humans were needed, so extensive medical tests were even conducted on prospective prisoners. Diseases were forcibly injected or administered with a special stickshaped gun. Some prisoners were infected through food or drink. Cholera, anthrax, TB, typhoid, rickettsia and dysentry were but a few of the bacteria used in the tests.

Live human prisoners were also exposed to chemical warfare agents such as mustard gas, hydrogen cyanide, acetone cyanide and potassium cyanide. Hydrogen cyanide was given extensive study because of its potential for ease of delivery into water supplys. In some instances, live human victims were actually opened up to observe the progress of various diseases and chemicals.

At one point, American intelligence learned that Japan had developed techniques for efficient delivery of Botulinus, a germ that attacks the central nervous system followed by paralysis and rapid death. Vast quantities of Botulinous germs were developed at Fort Detrick and a vaccine was hurriedly injected into all military personnel involved in the invasion of Europe.

What the United States subsequently did with the technical data from the Japanese experiments, under the direction of General Charles Willoughby, was shocking. During the War Crimes Trials in Japan following World War II, "sweetheart deals" were arranged between the United States and Japan to secure that data. Colonel Murray Sanders was assigned to General Douglas MacArthur, along with General Charles Wiloughby (Chief of Intelligence) and Karl T. Compton (Chief of Scientific Intelligence). General MacArthur specifically assigned these men to investigate the Japanese bacteriological warfare experiments.

During the war, Lt. Col. Sanders, a medical doctor, had been responsible for investigating and analyzing the capabilities of the Japanese in bacteriological warfare. He had also overseen the Fort Detrick experiments. When the Legal Section of the U.S. government tried to obtain the Japanese lab records on human experimentation from General MacArthur's staff, they were stonewalled. MacArthur's staff reasoned that if the U.S. Army's investigative evidence was given to the Legal Section in Washington D. C., the Russians would have access to the records. This sounds logical on the surface, but the resulting memorandums tell another story.

The StateWarNavy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC) responsible for coordinating and overseeing the war crimes trials in Japan, made an extraordinary statement which conclusively supported the intelligence community's stance on the matter. One excerpt read as follows:

"Data already obtained from Ishii and his colleagues has proven to be of great value in confirming, supplementing and complementing several phases of U.S. research in BW, and may suggest new fields for future research. **This Japanese information is the only known source of data from scientifically**

controlled experiments showing direct effect of BW [bacteriological warfare] agents on man. In the past it has been necessary to evaluate effects of BW agents on man from data through animal experimentation. Such evaluation is inconclusive and far less complete than results obtained from certain types of human experimentation.

"It is felt that the use of this information as a basis for war crimes evidence would be a grave detriment to Japanese cooperation with the United States occupation forces in Japan. For all practical purposes an agreement with Ishii and his associates that information given by them on the Japanese BW program will be retained in intelligence channels is equivalent to an agreement that this Government will not prosecute any of those involved in BW activities in which war crimes were committed. Such an understanding would be of great value to the security of the American people because of the information which Ishii and his associates have already furnished and will continue to furnish."

The astounding conclusion went as follows: "The value to the U.S. of Japanese BW data is of such importance to national security as to far outweigh the value accruing from `war crimes' prosecution. In the interests of national security it would not be advisable to make this information available to other nations as would be the case in the event of a `war crimes' trial of Japanese BW experts. **The BW information obtained from Japanese sources should be retained in intelligence channels and should not be employed as `war crimes' evidence."**

Communications between Washington D.C. and General MacArthur's headquarters in Japan were very revealing. One excerpt read as follows:

" ... The feeling of several staff groups in Washington, including G2, is that this problem is more or less a family affair in the Far Eastern Command."

No mention was ever made during the war crimes trials in Japan about bacteriological warfare or chemical warfare experiments being conducted on human test specimens. No indictments were ever handed down against those who had perpetrated these crimes. Colonel Sanders was ordered back to the United States to brief scientists at Fort Detrick but shortly thereafter became ill with tuberculosis and spent the next two years in bed. Oddly, the expert who was sent to replace Colonel Sanders, Arvo Thompson, committed suicide following his work for the Far Eastern Command and the scientists at Fort Detrick.

What happened to all of the Japanese officers and scientists who worked in the Manchurian labs during World War II? The military officers were retired on sizable pensions **and the civilian scientists continued their work with some of the largest chemical and medical companies in Japan.** Some became presidents and professors at leading universities, others became a part of the industrial complex which so successfully competed with the West for international trade.

(NOTE: Insert names of Japanese scientists and officers and their relationship to the Japanese scientist's names on MIL [Nichols' corporation] agreements for development of biological technology with

Japanese.)

Numerous board directors of F.I.D.C.O., of which Nichols was also a director, had been closely associated with General Douglas MacArthur. In fact, Clint Murchison, Sr. had helped finance MacArthur's presidential campaign.

******

The Vanity Fair article by Ron Rosenbaum had noted on page 98 that not long before his death, Danny Casolaro had reportedly approached a nurse he knew and asked her closely about the symptoms of multiple sclerosis and brain diseases.

Rosenbaum had asked himself what had been going on in Danny's head as he was being whipsawed between the shadowy Riconosciuto and Nichols and their death warnings? In Danny's notes, Rosenbaum had found references to germ warfare and slowacting brain viruses like Mad Cow Disease which could be used against targeted individuals. Had Danny thought HE'D been targeted?

A subsequent conversation with Michael Riconosciuto confirmed Rosenbaum's suspicions. According to Riconosciuto, Danny had not only been concerned, but had an obsession with the story because he suspected he'd been "hit by these people." A source had allegedly told Danny that he, among others, had been targeted with a slow acting virus. Riconosciuto had advised him to go to a doctor and get tests. The tests had been inconclusive. "Now, what he probably had was the genesis of a naturally occurring ailment," said Riconosciuto to Rosenbaum.

Rosenbaum had described the entire Inslaw/Casolaro affair as "Kafkaesque weirdness." Indeed, after Nichols had handed me the book, "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate" at his Sherman Oaks apartment, I had obtained a copy and recalled the author, John Marks, referring to the CIA MKUltra (Manchurian Candidate) interrogation methods as Kafkaesque in nature. Though Danny's notes mentioned nothing about "mindcontrol," and Bill Hamilton later noted that Danny had spoken mainly about the biologicals, I found it difficult to believe that he was not subjected to some form of mind control either subliminally or otherwise by someone in the field.

******

"The Search for the Manchurian Candidate" gave significant background on the history of biological warfare and mindcontrol research by the CIA. The author, John Marks, obtained much of his material **from seven boxes of heavily censored MKUltra financial records and another three or so Artichoke (CIA behavorcontrol program), documents** supplemented by interviews.

As early as 1943, the CIA, or actually its predecessor, the OSS, initiated "humanistic psychology," or studies of what the brain can do, during World War II when a "truth drug" **committee headed by Dr. Winfred Overholser conducted experiements with marijuana and mescaline to find a way to**

induce prisoners to confess. A parallel OSS group had also investigated the use of "quietus medications" lethal poisons for possible use against Adolf Hitler.

The original program was headed by General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, a burly, vigorous Republican millionaire who had started as White House intelligence advisor even before Pearl Harbor. A former Columbia College and Columbia Law Graduate, Donovan early on recruited Richard Helms, a young newspaper executive who had gained fame for interviewing Adolf Hilter in 1936 while working for United Press. He would subsequently become the most important sponsor of mindcontrol research within the CIA, nurturing and promoting it throughout his steady climb to the top of the Agency.

Despite harsh condemnation at the Nuremberg trials after World War II of Nazi scientific experiments, U.S. investigators found the research records from the Dachau prison camp to be "an important complement to existing U.S. knowledge." Doctors connected to the S.S. and Gestapo had conducted experiments that led to the testing of mescaline on prisoners at Dachau. Their goal had been to "eliminate the will of the person examined."

The Japanese, for their part, had stockpiled chemical and biological warfare substances during World War II and even went so far as to drop deadly anthrax germs on China during the early stages of the war. OSS responded by individualizing CBW (Chemical and Biological Warfare) and creating methods of secretly disorienting, incapacating, injuring or killing an enemy at Fort Detrick.

The CIA's postWorld War II mindcontrol program was headed by Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, who presided over investigations that ranged from advanced research in amnesia caused by electroshock **to dragnet searches through the jungles of Latin America for toxic leaves and barks.** Gottlieb's office not only found ways to make Fidel Castro's beard fall out, but he personally provided operators with deadly poisons to assassinate foreign leaders like the Congo's Patrice Lumumba.

Other areas of CIA sponsored research included explorations of personalities. Henry Murray, a former Donovan protege, devised a battery of tests which could size up the personality of potential CIA recruits as well as predict future behavioral patterns. **"Spying is attractive to loonies," wrote Murray. "Psychopaths, who are people who spend their lives making up stories, revel in the field."** The program's prime objective, according to Murray, was to weed out the crazies, as well as the "sloths, irritants, bad actors, and freetalkers."

Murray's assessment system subsequently became a fixture in the CIA and some of his assistants went on to establish CIAlike systems at large corporations, starting with AT & T.

It is important to remember that at the beginning, the OSS (precurser to the CIA) researchers from Security and Scientific Intelligence shared jointly the literature and secret reports seized from the Germans and the Japanese after World War II. They had theorized that in order to build an effective defense against mind control and **CBW, it was necessary to understand the "offensive" possibilities.**

But as the years went on, the line between offense and defense if it ever existed soon became so blurred as to be meaningless.

In 1947 when the National Security Act created not only the CIA, but also the National Security Council in sum, the command stucture of the Cold War a warlike posture was developed against the new perceived enemy, the Soviet Union. The men in the CIA took this job seriously. **"We felt we were the first line of defense in the anticommunist crusade," recalled Harry Rositzke, an early head of the Agency's Soviet Division. "There was a clear and heady sense of mission a sense of what a huge job this was."**

A contingent of the CIA behaviorcontrol program, code named "Artichoke," developed a progam whereby guinea pigs for mindcontrol experiments were obtained from the flotsam and jetsam of the international spy trade: " ... individuals of dubious loyalty, suspected agents or plants, subjects having known reason for deception, etc," as one agency documents described them. Artichoke officials looked upon these people as unique research "material" from whom meaningful secrets might be extracted while the experiments went on.

As one CIA psychologist who worked in the mindcontrol program put it, "One did not put a high premium on the civil rights of a person who was treasonable to his own country ..." Thus the Artichoke teams were given mostly the dregs of the clandestine underworld to work on.

In one experiment in the early 1950's, an alleged Russian double agent was brought to a safe house and plied for information with a mixture of drugs and hynopsis under the cover of a "psychiatricmedical exam." A professional hypnotist had accompanied the team, giving his commands to an interpreter through an elaborate intercom system, who, in turn, was able to put the Russian into a hypnotic trance.

Afterward, the team reported to the CIA's director that the Russian had revealed extremely valuable information and he had been made to forget his interrogation through hypnotically induced amnesia. The Russian was also used in a subsequent experiment where **he was given Seconal, Dexedrine and Marijuana in combination in a beer delivered during the cocktail hour.** There were little, if any, positive results.

Nevertheless, the CIA was still consistently on the cutting edge of specialized behaviorial research, sponsoring the lions share of the most harrowing experiments. One CIA psychiatric consultant provided a small personal glimpse of how it felt to be a soldier in the mindcontrol campaign. The psychiatrist, who insisted on anonymity, estimated that he made between 125 and 150 trips overseas on Agency operations between 1952 through his retirement in 1966. "To be a psychiatrist chasing off to Europe instead of just seeing the same patients year after year, that was extraordinary," he said.

| Chapter 15, Part 2 | Chapter 14 | Table Of Contents |

CHAPTER 15, Part 2

Later, due to bureaucratic squabbling, the CIA transferred its behavior work to a (CIA) outfit with Ph. D.'s called the Technical Services Staff (TSS). Under TSS's Chemical Division, research was conducted on **the use of chemicals and germs against specific people. LSD had been used extensively between 1951 and 1956 by Dr. Sidney Gottlieb,** a native of the Bronx with a Ph.D. in chemistry from Cal Tech; Gottlieb continued to oversee most of TSS's behavorial programs up to and including 1973.

At the top of the Clandestine Services (officially called the Directorate of Operations but popularly known as the "dirty tricks department"), Sid Gottlieb had a champion who appreciated his qualities, Richard Helms. For two decades, Gottlieb moved into progressively higher positions in the wake of Helms' climb to the highest position in the Agency.

Under the TSS leadership of Gottlieb and Helms, research on the covert use of biological and chemical materials progressed under the code name of "MKUltra." The operational arm of MKUltra was labeled MKDelta, the purpose of which was to "investigate whether and how it was possible to modify an individual's behavior by covert means." Hashish had been around for millennia, but LSD was roughly a million times stronger by weight. A twosuiter suitcase could hold enough LSD to turn on every man, woman, and child in the United States.

But the CIA was concentrating on individuals. TSS understood that LSD distorted a person's sense of reality and they felt compelled to learn if it could alter a person's basic loyalties. Could the CIA make spies out of tripping Russians or visa versa?

Suddenly there was a huge new market for grants in academia, as Sid Gottlieb and his aides began to fund LSD projects at prestigious institutions. Author John Marks ("The Search for the Manchurian Candidate") **identified the Agency's LSD pathfinders as: Bob Hyde's group at Boston Psychopathic, Harold Abramson at Mt. Sinai Hospital and Columbia University in New York, Harris Isbell of the NIMHsponsored Addiction Research Center in Lexington, Kentucky, Louis Jolyon West at the University of Oklahoma, and Harold Hodge's group at the Univerity of Rochester.**

The Agency disguised its involvement by passing the money through two conduits: The Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation and the Geschickter Fund for Medical Research, a Washington D.C. family foundation, whose head, Dr. Charles Geschickter, provided the Agency with a variety of services for more than a decade.

Beginning in 1952, TSS had an agreement with the Special Operations Division (SOD) of the Army's biological research center at Fort Detrick, Maryland, **whereby SOD would produce germ weapons for the CIA's use with the program called MKNaomi. Under MKNaomi, the SOD men developed a whole arsenal of toxic substances for CIA use.**

Wrote Marks: "If Agency operators needed to kill someone in a few seconds with say, a suicide pill, SOD provided superdeadly shellfish toxins." Agency operators later supplied pills laced with this lethal food poison to its Mafia allies for inclusion into Fidel Castro's milkshake.

In other instances, **"If CIA officials wanted an assassination to look like a death from natural causes, they could choose from a long list of deadly diseases that normally occurred in particular countries," wrote Marks.** When CIA operators merely wanted to be rid of someone temporarily, SOD stockpiled for them about a dozen diseases and toxims of varying strengths. "At the relatively benign end of the SOD list stood `Staph enterotoxin,' a mild form of food poisoning mild compared to botulinum," noted Marks.

Even more virulent in the SOD arsenal was "**Venezuelan equine encephalomyelitis" virus** which usually immobilized a person for 2 to 5 days and kept him in a weakened state for several more weeks. If the Agency wanted to incapacitate someone for a period of months, SOD provided **two different kinds of "brucellosis."** This incapacitating agent was allegedly placed on the monogrammed handkerchief of an Iraqi colonel in 1060 who was said to be promoting Sovietbloc political interests, but the colonel was shot by a firing squad before the handkerchief arrived."

SOD was forever developing more virulent strains," wrote Marks. Perhaps the most important question was whether a germ could be covertly delivered to infect the right person. **One branch of SOD specialized in building "delivery systems,"** the most notorious of which was a dart gun fashioned out of a .45 pistol which exCIA Director William Colby once displayed at a 1975 Senate hearing.

The Agency had long been after SOD to develop **a "nondiscernible microbioinoculator" which could deliver deadly shots that, according to a CIA document, could not be "easily detected upon a detailed autopsy."** One high Detrick official noted that the best way to infect people was through the respiratory system. SOD rigged up aerosol sprays that could be fired by remote control, including a fluorescent starter that was activated by turning on the light.

A former newspaper journalist turned narcotics agent, George White, was recruited by MKUltra chief Sid Gottlieb to test drugs on unsuspecting subjects at a San Francisco "safe house" on Telegraph Hill. The apartment was bugged with four DD4 microphones disguised as electrical wall outlets hooked up to two F301 tape recorders which agents monitored in an adjacent "listening post."

The San Francisco safe house specialized in prostitutes who brought unwitting victims back for study. In addition to LSD, TSS officials gave White even more exotic experimental drugs to test. One TSS source noted, "If we were scared enough of a drug not to try it out on ourselves, we sent it to San Francisco."

According to a 1963 report by CIA Inspector General John Earman, in a number of instances, the test subject became ill for hours or days and, in one case, hospitalization was needed. Wrote Marks, "The

Inspector General was only somewhat reassured by the fact that George White maintained close working relations with local police authorities which could be utilized to protect the activity in critical situations."

At another safehouse located in Marin County, TSS scientists tested such MKUltra specialties and delivery systems as glass ampules that could be stepped on to release itching or sneezing powders, a fine hypodermic needle to inject drugs through the cork in a wine bottle, and a drugcoated swizzle stick.

At one point, an attempt was made to spray LSD from an aerosol spray can at a house party, but the heat of the summer caused all the windows and doors to be open. "Years later," wrote John Marks, "George White wrote an epitaph [in a personal letter to Sid Gottlieb] for his role with the CIA: `I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a redblooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the AllHighest?'"

Not every scientist cooperated with the CIA. While conducting experimental studies on monkeys at the National Institute of Health, Dr. John Lilly discovered a method of inserting electrodes into the brain to stimulate precise centers of pleasure, pain, fear, anxiety and anger. As Lilly refined his brain "maps," officials of the CIA and other agencies descended upon him with requests for briefings.

Lilly insisted that all briefings remain unclassified, completely open to outsiders. Other scientists ordinarily had their work officially classified, which meant that access to the information required a security clearance. But Lilly's imagination had conjured up pictures of CIA agents on deadly missions with remotecontrolled electrodes strategically implanted in their brains, and so he withdrew from that field of research. By 1958 he had finally concluded that it would be impossible for him to continue working at **the National Institute of Health** without compromising his principles, so he resigned.

MKUltra officials were clearly interested in **using grants to build contracts and associations with prestigious academics**. The CIAfunded Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, later known as the "Human Ecology Fund," (HEF) supported such publications as the "Research in Mental Health Newsletter" published jointly at McGill University by the sociology and psychiatric departments.

Similarly, HEF gave grants of $26,000 to the wellknown University of London psychologist, H.J. Eysenck, for his work on motivation. Marks noted that the MKUltra documents acknowledged that this research had "no immediate relevance for Agency needs, but it would lend prestige to the Human Ecology Fund."

A whole category of HEF funding, called **"cover grants," served no other purpose than to build the organization's false front. A TSS source explained that grants like these "bought legitimacy" for the organization.** Nevertheless, one small grant to a psychologist from the University of Pennsylvania provided valuable information on "confidence men." The CIA was intrigued with the ability of con men to manipulate human behavior. As one CIA official put it, the psychologist unwittingly gave them "a better understanding of the techniques people use to establish phony relationships" a subject of interest to the CIA.

Marks wrote that at one point, the CIA took the "Svengali" legend to heart. In 1954, Morse Allen, the CIA's first behavioral research czar, simulated the ultimate experiment in hypnosis: the creation of a "Manchurian Candidate," or programmed assassin. Allen's "victim" was a secretary whom he put into a deep trance and told to keep sleeping until he ordered otherwise.

He then hypnotized a second secretary and told her that if she could not wake up her friend, "her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to kill." An unloaded pistol was placed nearby. Even though the second secretary had expressed a fear of firearms of any kind, she picked up the gun and "shot" her sleeping friend. After Allen brought the "killer" out of her trance, she had no recollection of the event, denying she would ever shoot anyone.

Some of the CIA's experiments wandered so far across ethical borders of experimental psychiatry that Agency officials ultimately conducted much of the work outside the United States. The CIA's Human Ecology Fund provided financing to foreign researchers and American professors to collect information abroad. The MKUltra men realized that ninetypercent of their experiments would fail to be of any use to the Agency, but the "behaviorists" continued to search for the elusive answer to human control.

Unbound by the rules of academia, the CIA took stabs at cracking the human genetic code with computers and finding out whether animals could be controlled through electrodes placed in their brains.

Within the Agency itself, the one significant question remained to be answered: Will a technique work? CIA officials zealously tracked every lead, sparing no expense to check each angle many times over, yet no foolproof way was found to brainwash another person. Specific methods worked "fantastically" on certain people, but not on others. It wasn't predictable enough, noted one official."

In the aftermath of the Bay of Pigs, President Kennedy reportedly vowed to splinter the CIA into a thousand pieces," wrote John Marks. In the end, he settled for firing Allen Dulles and his top deputies. Until that point, the TSS (Technical Services Staff) had been the Agency's largest scientific component. Under the new head of CIA, John McCone, TSS was stripped of its main research functions including the behavioral one and Seymour Russell, a tough covert operator, was brought in as the new chief. But the highest deputyship at TSS went to Sid Gottlieb, who became numbertwo man under Russell.

In his new job, **Gottlieb kept control of MKUltra. His emphasis switched back to chemical and biological substances** "not because he thought these could be used to turn men into robots," wrote Marks, "but because he valued them for their `predictable' ability to disorient, discredit, injure, or kill people." A $150,000 a year contract was signed **with a Baltimore biological laboratory which provided TSS a private place for "largescale production of microorganisms" for biological weapons without the Army's germ warriors knowing about it.**

Dr. James Hamilton, the San Francisco psychiatrist who worked with George White in the original OSS marijuana days, was brought back to MKUltra by Gottlieb **to conduct "clinical testing of behavioral control materials" on prisoners at the California Medical Facility at Vacaville.** Hamilton worked through a nonprofit research institute connected to the facility to conduct his research. **Marks estimated that he experimented on between 400 to 1,000 inmates between 1967 and 1968**.

In July 1977, after receiving notification that the CIA had located 7 boxes of MKUltra financial records, author John Marks held a press conference in which he criticized **then CIA Director Admiral Stansfield Turner (later a Wackenhut Board member)** for several distortions in describing the MKUltra program. **Turner had described MKUltra as only a program of drug experimentation** and not one aimed at behavior control to President Carter and the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence.

Marks responded by releasing a score of CIA documents to reporters that indicated the flavor of the CIA behavioral efforts. **The documents set off a media bandwagon that had the story reported on all three network television news shows as well as others.** The Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and Senator Edward Kennedy's Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research soon announced they would hold public hearings on the subject. The CBW program at Ft. Detrick was subsequently shut down.

In 1979, Marks concluded that he could not be positive that the CIA never found a technique to control people. CIA officials actively experimented with behaviorcontrol methods for another decade AFTER Sid Gottlieb and company lost the research action. The Office of Research and Development (ORD) picked up the ball by creating its own latterday version of the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology.

Located outside Boston, it was called the Scientific Engineering Institute and had originally been used by the CIA as a proprietary company to conduct radar research. In the early 1960's, ORD officials built a new wing to the Institute's modernistic building for "life sciences" or human behavior research.

According to Marks, one scientist from the institute recalled a colleague joking, "If you could find the natural radio frequency of a person's sphincter, you could make him run out of the room real fast."

"Just as the MKUltra program had been years ahead of the scientific community, ORD activities were similarly advanced," wrote Marks. **One researcher noted that MKUltra looked at the manipulation of genes and gene splintering as early as 1965, eleven years before the rest of the world even thought about it. Added the scientist, "Everybody was afraid of building the supersoldier who would take orders without questioning, like the kamikaze pilot. Creating a subservient society was not out of sight."**

******

The above research was conducted thirty years ago! What had been developed along those same lines by 1994? Even the most rampant imagination could not conceive of what might be underway in CIA laboratories today.

With today's cutting and splicing techniques, scientists can attach any genes they choose to certain carrier genes. These linked genes, called "recombinant DNA," are then conveyed inside a host cell, which virtually adopts the new gene as one of its own. **The object of most current experiments is to transplant genes from the host to bacteria.** These tractable, microscopic cells proliferate faster than rabbits. On a simple cheap diet a single bacterium makes a few billion copies of itself overnight. Its DNA, including that of the transplanted gene, is reproduced at the same rate.

Biochemists at Stanford University have found a technique for combining DNA from "two different sources" and putting it into a common bacterium. The bacterium they chose was "E.coli bacteria," commonly found in the intestine of every living person. Modified E.coli, containing certain cancer genes, could become a biological bomb. The bacterium carrying its little package of cancer genes, could then be passed as easily as the common cold from one human to another.

The U.S. is not the only country to have this technology. A classified report prepared for the National Security Council (U.S.) and obtained by the Washington Times claimed "the Soviet Union was using genetic engineering to create virulent new biological weapons that could be deployed as early as 1989 - if in fact some had not already been deployed." Robert H. Kupperman, a chemical warfare expert at Georgetown University's Center for Strategic and International Studies, told the Times that "it's like making designer drugs."

A report was prepared by the Central Intelligence Agency and the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency which outlined extensive violations by the Soviets of two anti-biological warfare treaties. The report noted "the Soviets were using recent advances in biotechnology, such as genetic engineering, to develop a new class of CBW [chemical, biological warfare] agents that can be rapidly produced for deployment."

Recent scientific findings on the Gulf War Syndrome (GWS) indicate genetic material common to Gulf War-era veterans could provide a clue as to why so many became sick after serving in the 1991 war. In a study presented to Gulf War veterans at a conference in Tampa, Florida, microbiologist Dr. Howard Urnovitz said the genetic marker could point to the existence of a "virus." The virus, in turn, could make veterans exposed to chemical agents or other toxins more susceptable to illness, he added.

Beginning on Veterans Day, November 11, 1996 and continuing through November 17th, KREM T.V. out of Spokane, Washington (509) 838-7350), an affiliate of Northwest News in Seattle, telecast a series on Gulf War Syndrome (GWS). Reporter Tom Grant interviewed numerous doctors, one of which was Dr. Garth Nicholson, a microbiologist, who maintained that GWS contains "altered genetic structures" similar to AIDS. He suggested GWS is a genetically engineered biological warfare organism, and it's contagious.

Dr. Larry Goss, in Walters, Oklahoma, not only confirmed Nicholson's findings, but said on public T.V.

that he and his wife "caught" GWS while treating Gulf War veterans. Dr. William Baumzweiger, a neurologist/psychiatrist at the V.A. hospital in Los Angeles found brain-stem damage in GWS vets, and noted the virus turns the immune system against itself.

GWS veterans were warned NOT to have unprotected sex or have any more children. The vets themselves were interviewed along with their families. Tragically, their wives and children were now suffering from the same GWS symptoms. Pictures were shown of the children, providing indisputable proof of the infectiousness of the disease.

Doctors warned the public that GWS could soon enter the general populace, and it could be terminal. However, on November 17th, Dr. Nicholson noted that treatment was available through antibiotics.

******

Scientists have long suspected the existence of a "lab-created" virus which attacks the immune system. In January 1986, the French-born and trained biologists Professor Jakob and Dr. Lilli Segal, published a pamphlet entitled, "AIDS: USA-Home Made Evil; Not Imported from Africa." The two scientists, a biophysicist and a biologist affiliated with the Humboldt University in Berlin, pointed out that examination of the genes making up the HIV retrovirus revealed it "could not have come about by a natural way known to biologists." The called the virus a "chimera," originally created in 1977 at Fort Detrick, Maryland.

The Segals were not the only researchers to suggest that "genetic engineering" was involved with AIDS. John Seale, M.D., a London venereologist, also stated that the molecular structure of HIV suggested "manipulation of viruses" rather than a natural mutation from known retroviruses. And Dr. Robert Strecker, M.D., a Los Angeles internist, has made the same assertion.

These advocates of the artificial HIV theory all note the structural similarities of HIV to visna virus, a pathogen found in sheep with similarities to AIDS. The scientists argue that the visna virus was artificially combined with the HTLV-I virus, another retrovirus which causes human lymphoma, a cancer of the white blood cells.

| Chapter 15 Part 3 | Part 1 | Table Of Contents |

CHAPTER 15, Part 3-END.

Today designer viruses are limited only by the imagination of the scientist creating them. Thus, bio-labs in both the U.S. and abroad are in a race to find vaccines which build the human immune system - or search out and destroy killer T - Cells.

A new study, recently released by Dr. Jeffrey Leiden, director of a research team at the University of Chicago, showed that genes can be injected directly into "muscle tissue" to cause production of proteins needed to correct some blood disorders, such as anemia. Genes in the injection are taken into the nucleas of cells in the muscle tissue and become, in effect, a pharmaceutical factory, increasing red blood cell levels as high as 64%. In the past, gene therapy involved using "viruses" to transfer genes into the body, a technique that was "poorly controlled," according to Dr. Leiden.

And another finding by Arthur Vandenbark, of the Veterans Affairs Medical Center in Portland, Oregon noted the discovery of a new vaccine which enables the human immune system to churn out more T - Cells, thus preventing multiple sclerosis patients from becoming sicker.

The ultimate irony of the 21st century could be the development of vaccines, in response to the threat of biological warfare, which boost the human immune system to such a degree that people become completely disease resistant. The question is, with overpopulation looming on the horizon, would the U. S. government release such a vaccine to the general populace -- if not, who would have access to it? The Chosen Ones?

Interestingly, Robert Booth Nichols' manuscript, entitled "Acceptable Casualty," copyrighted at the Library of Congress in May 1987, outlined an identical scenario.

******

Within Michael Riconosciuto's secret files in the Mojave Desert, I had found a box marked "Ted Gunderson," which I had dragged home along with the rest of the material.

This particular box had contained records of most of Gunderson's investigations, but one report particularly caught my attention. It was titled, "From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory" by Colonel Paul E. Vallely with Major Michael A. Aquino.

The 12 page Army report was undated but it outlined the use of "Psychotronics," intelligence and operational weapons systems employing the use of mind control, commonly known as Psychological Operations (PSYOP).

Wrote Aquino, "In 1967 and 1968 alone, a total of 29,276 armed Viet Cong/NVA (the equivalent of

95 enemy infantry battalions) surrendered to ARVN or MACV forces under the Chieu Hoi amnesty program the major PSYOP effort of the Vietnam War. At the time MACV estimated that the elimination of that same number of enemy troops in combat would have cost us 6,000 dead."

Aquino argued that the U.S. lost the war in Vietnam "not because we were outfought, but because we were outPSYOPed. Our national will to victory was attacked more effectively than we attacked that of the North Vietnamese and Viet Cong, and preception of this fact encouraged the enemy to hang on until the United States finally broke and ran for home."

The lesson, according to Aquino, was not to ignore U.S. PSYOP capability, but rather to change it and strengthen it "so that it can do precisely that kind of thing to our enemy in the next war." To begin, there would be a name change from Psychological Operations to "MindWar." Noted Aquino, "We must reach the people BEFORE they resolve to support their armies, and we must reach those armies BEFORE our combat troops ever see them on battlefields."

Aquino went on to compare his proposal with the definition of Psychological Warfare first introduced **by General William Donovan of the OSS** in his World War IIera "Basic Estimate of Psychological Warfare" in which Donovan discussed the need to destroy the will of the enemy. But an attendant 1947 letter stressed the need for a "synonym which could be used in peacetime that would not shock the sensibilities of a citizen of democracy."

Aquino indicated contempt for the U.S. Army's inability to accept PSYOP in its "most effective configuration," adding that "the reluctance with which the Army had accepted even an `antiseptic' PSYOP component" was well documented.

Having read about General Donovan's "behavioral control" program in the MKUltra book, I didn't perceive it to be exactly "antiseptic." Aquino's report, obviously written after the Vietnam war, **suggested that future MindWars should be fought through "skillful use of communications media."**

"MindWar," noted Aquino, "states a whole truth that, if it does not now exist, will be forced into existence by the will of the United States ... A MindWar message does not have to fit conditions of abstract credibility as do PSYOP themes; its source makes it credible."

Aquino continued, " ... The MindWar operative must KNOW that he speaks the truth, and he must be PERSONALLY COMMITTED to it. What he says is only a part of MindWar; the rest and the test of its effectiveness lies in the conviction he projects to his audience, in the rapport he establishes with it."

As I read the document it was difficult not to recall Oliver North's diary in which he called his associates, "The True Believers." (More on that in another chapter). Aquino noted that the recipient of the statement by the MindWar operative would judge such messages not only by his conscious understanding of them, but also by the mental conditions under which he perceived them. "For the mind to believe its own decisions," wrote Aquino, "it must feel that it made those decisions without coercion. Coercive measures used by the MindWar operative, consequently, must not be detectable by ordinary means ..."

Aquino's basis for his report came from various publications which were listed at the back of the document. "More effective configurations" of MindWar as noted by Aquino may well have included the following (taken from the back of the document):

"ELF (extremely low frequency) waves (up to 100 Hz) ... are naturally occurring, but they can also be produced artificially ... ELFwaves are not normally noticed by the unaided senses, yet their resonant effect upon the human body has been connected to both physiological disorders and emotional distortion. Infrasound vibration (up to 20 Hz) can subliminally influence brain activity to align itself to delta, theta, alpha, or beta wave patterns, inclining an audience toward everything from alertness to passivity. Infrasound could be used tactically, as ELFwaves endure for great distances; and it could be used in conjunction with media broadcasts as well."

So, the human brain can be aligned to infrasound through media broadcasts. Was that technology used on Manuel Noriega when he was forced to surrender in Panama under blaring radio broadcasts? And hadn't the Branch Davidians had been subjected to loud music and chants for extended periods of time?

Another section of the Aquino report noted that "ionization of the air" could be used to control an individual's emotions. "An abundance of negative condensation nucleii (air ions) in ingested air enhances alertness and exhilaration, while an excess of positive ions enhances drowsiness and depression. Calculation of a target audience's atmospheric environment will be correspondingly useful."

After his retirement from the Army, Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino, an exGreen Beret, was later written up in the San Francisco Chronicle as the head of the Temple of Set, a satanic, devilworshipping church. The November 1987 headlines read as follows: "Army Says Constitution Lets Satanist Hold TopSecret Job," by reporters John Whittinger and Bill Wallace. The story went on to say that "the high priest of a San Fanciscobased satanic church is able to keep his topsecret security clearance because his activities are constitutionally protected, Army officials said yesterday. "Lieutenant Colonel Michael A. Aquino, a highly decorated Vietnam veteran, is the founder and president of Temple of Set, a satanic church headquartered in Aquino's Russian Hill home ...

"Aquino, a psychological warfare officer who has worked in military intelligence, holds a top secret security clearance that allows him to handle information whose release would gravely damage U.S. security, according to Defense Department regulations.

"He maintains the clearance even though he has performed Nazi occult rites and has described himself as the `AntiChrist' in literature published by the Temple of Set ..."

Temple of Set literature described a coming apocalypse in which only followers of Satan would be saved. Readers were encouraged to read such works as "Mein Kampf," "Hitler: The Occult Messiah," and "The Occult Roots of Nazism."

Aquino conducted occult rituals patterned on ceremonies performed by Nazi leader Heinrich Himmler in a German castle once used by the Nazi SS for black magic ceremonies during the Third Reich. Nazis considered the black arts and satanic worship part of an ancient Germanic tradition.

Aquino, in his book, "Crystal Tablet of Set," wrote that he performed the rituals to recreate an order of Knighthood for followers of Satan. He even encouraged his followers to study the beliefs of the Nazi terrorist group, the Vehm, the Thule Gesselschaft, and the Ahnenerbe, two fanatic rightwing Aryan groups that existed before and during Hitler's reign.

When the two reporters from the Chronicle inquired about Aquino's security clearances, Major Rixon declared that "to the best of his knowledge, there was no part of the liturgy of his church that caused any (security) problem." Aquino admitted to being involved in devil worship for 22 years.

Ted Gunderson's box contained reams of literature written by Aquino along with other documents pertaining to identical subject matter. It was no secret that Gunderson lectured on the subject of Satanism, as I learned from a July 1993 Colonel Bo Gritz newsletter which advertised Gunderson as a featured speaker on one of Gritz's national radio broadcasts.

But it was not the Satanic aspect of Aquino's writings that caused me to scrutinize his earlier writings for the Army. Shortly after the Waco incident in Texas, **a secret "classified conference" was held at the Los Alamos National Laboratories in New Mexico.** Through a friend in Maine, I was able to obtain an official copy of the speaking agenda for the November 1993 conference and, oddly, the subject matter under discussion correlated with not only the original Aquino Army report, but also with the MKUltra behavior research underway during the 1950's and 1960's.

The title of the conference was **"NonLethal Defense"** and just a few of the speakers included such dignitaries as the Honorable U.S. Attorney General Janet Reno; Dr. Edward Teller who had helped develop the nuclear bomb; Dr. Milt Finger from Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory; Mr. Andy Andrews, NonLethal Project Leader at Los Alamos National Laboratory; LTG William H. Forster from Army Research, Development and Acquisition; Dr. Clay Easterly from the Oak Ridge National Laboratory; Dr. Henry Brisker from U.S. Army Research Laboratories; Ms. Astrid Lewis from the U.S. Army Chemical Research & Development Command; Lt. General Richard G. Trefry, former Military Advisor to President George Bush; and many more.

The most noteworthy "nonlethal" technology presentations included the following: "High Power Microwave Technology" "Application of Extremely Low Frequency Electromagnetic Fields to NonLethal Weapons" "Voice Synthesis" "Incremental Agression: Requirements for the Future" **"Chemical/Biological AntiTerrorism" "Biological Challenges"** "NonLethal Research: Fracture & Dynamic Behavior, **Biotechnology** & Structural Ceramics, and many more.

Interestingly, **the opening address was given by General E.C. Meyer (Ret.), former Chief of Staff of the U.S. Army the very same General Meyer who had set up the Department of Defense conference in which Michael Riconosciuto had been the principal speaker from 9 a.m. to 4 p.m. to a group of seniorlevel national security research and development officials.**

The objective and scope of the 1993 Los Alamos conference included exploring a nonlethal approach to apply force against not only wartime enemies (the Soviet Union had already fallen) but against "terrorists" and "international drug traffickers" as well. The introduction noted that the purpose of the conference was to bring together "industry, government, and academia to explore the potential of nonlethal defense and identify requirements so that the defense community can work together in leveraging the nonlethal concept."

"Industry [law enforcement], particularly, will benefit from a more precise understanding of requirements and operational constraints regarding nonlethal defense technologies," noted the conference's sponsors, The American Defense Preparedness Association.

Additionally, nonlethal defense was described as "an emerging technological option being developed conceptually with a sea of technical opportunity."

Based upon the technical presentations listed in the brochure, it didn't appear to me that such technology as acoustical, highpower microwave, laser, ELF/RF weapons and "psychotronic" systems were particulary NEW in the field of military or intelligence applications. Obviously, what was occurring at this conference was the presentation of these formidable weapons to law enforcement for domestic (U.S.) applications.

In late November 1993, a letter came to my attention which discussed the abovementioned conference. The letter had been written to U.S. Attorney General Janet Reno by a former CIA employee, Julianne McKinney, on letterhead stationary originating from the "Association of National Security Alumni, Electronic Surveillance Project, P.O. Box 13625, Silver Spring, Maryland 209113625."

Portions of the letter read as follows: " ... In December 1992, when `Microwave Harassment and MindControl Experimentation' was published, U.S. Government representatives routinely took the position that directedenergy technologies were nothing more than mere figments of physicists' imaginations, still on the drawing boards. Shortly following publication of this report, information concerning these technologies began to appear in such noteworthy organs as The Wall Street Journal, Defense News, Aviation Week & Space Technology, Tactical Technology, Defense Electronics and, most recently, The Washington Post.

"In a flurry of activity these past 10 months, directedenergybased surveilance and antipersonnel systems have suddenly leaped off of physicists' drawing boards into the world of reality, thus obviating the criticism, it would appear, that the attached publication [Los Alamos conference brochure] concerns nonexistent technologies.

"Indeed, directedenergy technologies appear to have evolved at such a rapid rate that they are now being promoted as the `Final Solution' to crime preliminarily, at a classified conference sponsored by the Los Alamos National Laboratory ..."

McKinney's concern focused primarily on future law enforcement application of "psychotronic" tools, or directedenergy weapons technologies. "What, so far, has prevented this goverment and its contractors from testing these technologies on U.S. citizens under involuntary circumstances?," she asked.

The letter went on to outline various instances in which people had complained to her organization of alleged symptoms of directedenergy technologies in such areas as the United States, England, Canada and Australia.

******

After reading "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate," I couldn't help wondering if Danny Casolaro had been subjected to some form of hypnosis.

Any such farreaching scenarios were outside the boundaries of normal human experience, indeed no mainstream journalist would pursue such a theory. But, then Robert Booth Nichols, Michael Riconosciuto and the CIA were not within normal human experience. **And, who would have believed, ten years ago, that the CIA would be investigated by Congress in 1996 for drug trafficking in Los Angeles?**

At one point in time Danny had signed an agreement with Nichols in which Nichols was to give Danny a $25,000 loan against his home in Fairfax, Virginia. Nichols had offered to take Danny overseas to find the answers to his questions and Danny had needed the money to make the trip. Where had they planned to go? What possible motive could Nichols have had for enticing Danny to go overseas for several months?

During one of my conversations with Bobby Riconosciuto, she had mentioned a private installation at Alice Springs, Australia which Michael had visited with Nichols. The tour of the installation had upset Riconosciuto to such a degree that he had become ill and cut the trip short. Nichols later confirmed the trip, and recalled that Michael had indeed become anxious and ill, but would not discuss the purpose of the trip.

When I subsequently questioned Michael about the Australian installation, he first asked where I had learned of it? When I noted the information came from Bobby, he explained that the underground facility had been built during World War II to be used as a bomb shelter. It was capable of housing thousands of people and was completely selfcontained.

I asked Riconosciuto if he had been inside the facility? He said he had, it was owned by a private corporation; inside was a city of sorts, containing sophisticated communications equipment, laboratory equipment and other items which he would not define. He chose not to discuss it further, but concurred that what he saw made him realize that it was time to terminate his relationship with Robert Booth Nichols.

Both men had confirmed to me that the Australian trip marked the end of their 20year association. I later contacted a journalist in Alice Springs to gain more knowledge of the mysterious "installation." I was able to confirm that the installation existed, that it was leased by a private corporation, and that it was heavily guarded, but noone seemed to know what it was being used for.

******

On November 22, 1992, I received a call from Michael Riconosciuto. It was the first time I had spoken with him in nine months. The first thing he asked me was, "Did Bob Nichols threaten you?"

I explained to him that I had nothing to fear from Nichols as long as I didn't reveal the contents of the meeting.Michael pressed further.

"Did he attempt to destroy my credibility, or did the meeting pertain to HIS activities?"

"Well, essentially, I asked him questions specifically about what he was doing with his corporation in Japan and overseas ..."

Mike knew I was referring to the genetic engineering project. Michael interjected, "That is so heavy. I've got a full paperwork trail on that."

I answered, "I have the paperwork trail on it."

Michael: "He didn't like that, did he?"

CM: "No, but after he knew I had information on it, he came right out and talked about it."

Michael: "Did he tell you what it was for?"

CM: "I think he did."

Michael: "Isn't that a `Dr. Strangelove tale'?"

CM: "Yes, I need to ask you some things ..."

Michael cut in. "Let's not talk about that over this phone."

Once again, Michael became evasive when confronted with the biological technology Nichols was involved in. This seemed to be one of the few subjects he refused to discuss over the phone.

His next question caused me some alarm. "Where did you send the metal cannister you found in my files in the desert?"

I replied, "I sent it out to have it analyzed. I haven't received the results yet ..."

Michael: "Oh, Jesus. Where ... If they don't know how to handle it ..."

I stammered, "... I haven't heard from them yet ..."

Michael took a deep breath. "Oh, God." Then silence.

I was alarmed. "What is it? Tell me the truth."

Michael seemed shaken. "It's a military concept where you can genetically engineer these biological agents ... you see, a specific penetration group can be immunized, and everbody else dies. Now, whoever you sent that to, if they're not set up ... if they're not a class4 facility, they better call someone who can handle it and get rid of it ..." Mike stopped abruptly. "Has anyone opened or touched the cannister?"

I responded that it had not been opened. He drew another deep breath and seemed to relax somewhat. "Alright, it's not your problem anymore. As long as it's off your property."

******

The remainder of this manuscript is not relevent to CIA Drug Trafficking or the focus of the Investigative Committee. I therefore have sent only the enclosed pages. If you want more, let me know. C.M.

END.

| Chapter 15, Part 2 | Table of Contents | The Library | Home |

THE JESUIT CONSPIRACY.

THE SECRET PLAN

OF

THE ORDER.

DETECTED AND REVEALED BY

THE ABBATE LEONE.

WITH A PREFACE BY

M. VICTOR CONSIDÉRANT,

Member of the National Assembly of France, and of the Municipal Council of the Seine.

BIBLIOTHECA BODLEIANA

TRANSLATED, WITH THE AUTHOR'S SANCTION, FROM THE
AUTHENTIC FRENCH EDITION.

LONDON:
CHAPMAN AND HALL, 186 STRAND.
MDCCCXLVIII.

LONDON
VIZETELLY BROTHERS AND CO. PRINTERS AND ENGRAVERS,
PETERBOROUGH COURT, FLEET STREET.

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

In putting forth a publication like the present, the authenticity of which will undoubtedly be strongly contested by those who are interested in so doing—one, moreover, which does not belong to the class of writings emanating from the Societary School, and which I edit in my own individual capacity, I am bound to accompany it with a testimonial, and with some personal explanations.

I.

I had long been aware of the existence of the *Secret Plan*, of which I had received accounts from many of my friends in Geneva. Their esteem and affection for M. Leone were of a very warm nature. They spoke of him in terms that excluded all suspicion of fraud. The objects too of his constant studies, the elevation of his ideas, and his religious labours in the *Edificateur*, indicated a man of serious character, loving goodness, and pursuing truth with natural and sincere ardour. Notwithstanding all these grounds for a favourable prejudice, I confess that I could not bring myself to believe what had been told me of the *Jesuit Conference*.

Visiting Geneva in September, 1846, I heard the *Secret Plan* much talked of, and on all hands I received the most positive assurances of M. Leone's good faith. Among those to whom he had made complete disclosures—and there were a great number of such persons—I did not meet with one who was not convinced of the authenticity of the *Conference*, and of the narrator's veracity. Nevertheless it was not until I had had some very serious conversations with men whose perspicacity and good sense it would have been absurd in me to disregard—men who had long held intercourse with M. Leone, and frequently heard his manuscript read—that my incredulity was shaken.

I felt, indeed, that after all I was infinitely less competent to decide in the matter than those whose judgment upon it was opposed to mine, and that not having seen the documents or conversed with the witness, it would have been presumptuous and irrational in me to settle dogmatically that they were wrong and that I was right. I therefore suspended my judgment, and abstained from forming any positive opinion on the subject.

It was in Paris, towards the close of 1846, that I first saw M. Leone. I scarcely spoke to him about his manuscript, for which I was informed he had found a publisher. I awaited the appearance of the work to become acquainted with its contents.

I must confess that at that time I did not believe much in the Jesuits, and therefore I was disposed to attach but little importance to the publication of the *Conference*. It had always struck me that the public did the Jesuits too much honour in giving themselves so much concern about them. I believed indeed that the order was deeply committed to very retrograde ideas, but I did not give it credit for the activity, profundity, or Machiavellian ubiquity generally imputed to it. In a word, to use a phrase that accurately expresses what I then thought, I calculated that at least a discount of from sixty to eighty per cent should be struck off from the current estimate respecting the Jesuits.

As for their obscurantist and retrograde conspiracy, I thought it of no more account against the development of human progress and liberty, than the barriers of sand raised by children against the tides of the ocean. And even now, though enlightened as to the character and intrinsic power of the celebrated Company, I still persist in that opinion; for, however strong the arms that raise it, the anti-democratic barrier is still but a rampart of shifting sand, incapable of stopping the rising tide: at most it can but trouble the clearness of the foremost waves.

II.

By-and-bye M. Leone was a more frequent attendant at our weekly conversations on Wednesday at the office of the *Démocratie Pacifique*. He spoke to me of a work on which he was engaged, and appointed a day on which to read me a copious exposition of the argument. I listened to it with the liveliest interest, and was deeply impressed by its contents. They related to the publication of extremely important documents, stamped with the highest ecclesiastical sanction, absolutely authentic beyond all cavil, and formed to shatter the coarse and oppressive carapace of the Catholic Theocracy,* and place in the most shining light the democratic and humanitary Christianity of the gospel, and the fathers of the first three centuries. It is the lamp that sets fire to the bushel.

The publication of this work, resting on the most solid bases, and of a theoretic value altogether superior, appeared to me most important. The Introduction was complete, and was about to be published separately in one volume, for which I was making the necessary corrections, when Leone received from one of our common friends in Geneva intelligence of a breach of confidence committed by his copyist, and the advertisement of the approaching publication of the *Secret Plan* in Berne.

---

* THEOCRACY. Excepting the rigorously defined terms used in mathematics, almost all words in the language have very diverse meanings; yet with good faith and some intelligence a mutual understanding is always possible.

But to avoid every false interpretation of the word *Theocracy*, which occurs frequently in the preface, I declare that both therein, and in the rest of the work, it is employed in its historical signification, and not at all in its grand and beautiful etymological sense.

Theocracy, in its historical import, is the usurpation of the temporal government by a caste or sacerdotal body, separated from the people, and exercising political, social, and religious despotism. For this Theocracy religion is but a means, domination is the end.

The etymological meaning of the same word is, on the contrary, the *government of God*, the coming of that reign of God, which Jesus commands us to pray for to our heavenly Father, and to establish amongst us; that is to say, the ideal of government here below—democracy, evangelically, harmoniously, and religiously organised. In this sense, far from repudiating Theocracy, no one would desire it more ardently than I!

On receiving this news, the details of which are given in the subsequent introduction, Leone changed his plans. He begged me to lay aside the first work, and immediately publish the *Secret Plan* in Paris, so as if possible to anticipate the necessarily faulty, truncated, and wholly unsubstantiated edition that was about to appear in Switzerland. But the notice he had received was too late, and ere long he had in his hands a copy of a bad edition, containing a part only of his MS., printed at Berne, without name or testimonial, and which in its anonymous garb—the livery of shame —did not and could not obtain any general notice. Thenceforth Leone's solicitude was not so much to hasten as to perfect the publication which was already in the press, and to make the third part (corroborative proofs), which is entirely wanting in the Berne edition, as complete as circumstances could require or allow.

III.

At that period there no longer remained any doubt in my mind as to the authenticity of the *Secret Conference* and Leone's sincerity.

To suppose that his story was a romance, the *Conference* a lying fabrication, and that Leone made me at once the dupe and the accomplice of a calumnious hoax, it would be necessary to esteem him the vilest and most despicable of men, considering the mutual relations that had grown up between us. But those relations had fully justified in my eyes the high estimate which our common friends in Geneva, who had known him long and intimately, had formed of his integrity, high-mindedness, and goodness of soul. I therefore declare, that if the circumstances detailed in the following narrative present to the reader's eyes an extraordinary character and a romantic appearance, calculated to stagger his belief, I for my part would regard as a still more inexplicable mystery, the quantum of baseness, and the power of fraud, which Leone must have been endowed with, in order so long to beguile the attached friends he had found in Geneva and Paris. Leone has given us such strong positive proofs of disinterestedness, single-minded sincerity, and incapacity to play an assumed part, that far from ascribing to him the faculty of mystifying and duping others, those who know him see in him, along with an unswerving devotedness to principle and truth, one of those natures which, while they preserve in mature age the confiding simplicity and sensibility of early youth, are much rather themselves exposed to be deceived every day.

IV.

But the guarantees afforded by the character of the witness are not the only motives that have convinced me of the authenticity of his testimony. Thousands of proofs, incidents of conversation, questions put at long intervals on delicate points, and imperceptible circumstances of the drama, have always resulted in an agreement so exact, positive, and formal, that truth alone could produce such perfect coaptation. One example will be sufficient to explain the nature of the proofs I am now alluding to.

Among other points in the narrative, it had struck me as an extraordinary and quite romantic circumstance, that, when the young neophyte entered the rector's apartment in the convent of Chieri, and took for his amusement a book from one of the library shelves, he should have found in the very first instance, behind the very first book he laid his hand on, the registry of the *Confessions of the Novices*, and again, immediately behind it, that of the *Confessions of Strangers*, and the rest. I had often reflected on the singularly surprising nature of this chance, and I had intended to mention my perplexity on this subject to Leone. Now it happened one morning while I was writing, and while he was conversing near me with other persons to whom he was relating his adventure, I heard him say, in the course of a narrative delivered with all the precision of a very lively recollection, "I laid my hand on the *first* book on the library shelf." This trivial detail, which was not in the first manuscript, and which Leone thus gave, unasked for, in the course of a recital the animation of which vividly recalled the scene to his memory and made him describe all its circumstances, explained to me in the most natural and satisfactory manner a thing which had previously appeared to me in the light, not indeed of an impossibility, but of a serious improbability.

This example is enough to show the nature of the counterproofs I have mentioned; and so great a number of similar ones have occurred to me, in the infinite turns and changes of conversation, during the four or five months I have been led to apply myself, often for several hours daily, to the correction of Leone's manuscript and proofs, that for my own part, independently of the arguments drawn from the character of the man, they are enough to erase from my mind all doubt as to the veracity of his tale. The utmost skill in lying could not produce a tissue always perfectly smooth in its most delicate interruptions. Imagination may, no doubt, very ingeniously arrange the plot and details of a fiction; but if at long intervals, in the thousand turns of conversation, and without letting the author perceive your drift, you make him talk at random of all the details which the story suggests, then certainly if the web is spurious you will discover many a broken thread. Now, this web of Leone's I have examined with a microscope for months together in every part, and I have not been able to detect in it one broken thread or one knot. I have no doubt, therefore, if the authenticity of the narrative become the subject of serious discussion, that the narrator will rise victorious over every difficulty that can be raised up against him; for I do not think that he can encounter any stronger or more numerous than I myself and some of my friends have directly or indirectly set before him.

V.

I will now examine considerations of a third kind, which have this advantage over the preceding ones, that they can be directly appreciated by everybody—for they are derived from internal evidence.

I say, without hesitation, that to me it is not matter of doubt that every cool impartial person, who has some experience of the affairs of life and of literature, and who shall have read very *attentively* the speeches in the *Secret Conference,* will recognise in them the distinct stamp of reality.

It seems evident to me that these speeches cannot be the produce of a literary artist's imagination: the imitation of nature is not to be carried to such a pitch. Certainly, it is not a young man, a young Piedmontese priest, though endowed with talent, sensibility, imagination, and good sense, who could have produced such a work. To this day, though his intellect is much more mature and his acquirements considerably enlarged, I do not hesitate to declare Leone quite incapable of composing such a piece. I go further and assert, that there is not one among all the living writers of Europe who could have been capable of doing so. There is in those speeches a mixture of strength, weakness, brilliancy, a variety of styles and views, a composite of puerilities, grandeur, ridiculous hopes, and audacious conceptions, such as no art could create.

Yes, they are surely priests who speak those speeches—not good and simple priests, but proud priests, versed in a profound policy, nurtured in the traditions of an order that regards itself as the citadel and soul of Catholic Theocracy—whose gigantic ambition, whose hopes and whose substance, it has gathered up and condensed; an order whose constant thought is a thought of universal sway, and which ceases not to strive after the possession of influences, positions, and consciences, by the audacious employment of every means. Yes, those who speak thus are indeed men detached from every social tie—emancipated from every obligation of ordinary morality—reckoning as nothing whatever is not the Order, in which they are blended like metals in the melting pot; the corporation, in which they are absorbed as rivers in the sea; the supreme end, to which they remorselessly sacrifice everything—having begun by sacrificing to it each his life, his soul, his free-will, his whole personality. Yes, those are truly the leaders of a mysterious formidable initiation—patient as the drop of water that wears down the rock—prosecuting in darkness its work of centuries over the whole globe—despising men, and founding its strength upon their weakness—covering its political encroachments under the veil of humility and the interests of Heaven—and weaving with invincible perseverance the meshes of the net with which, in the pride that is become its faith, its morals, and its religion, it dreams of enclosing Kings and Peoples, States and Churches, and all mankind.

History demonstrates that it is the nature of all great human forces, material or intellectual, military or religious, individual or corporate, to be incarnated in a People, an Order, an Idea, a Religion, or to have borne mere names of men, such as Alexander, Cæsar, Mahomet, Charlemagne, Hildebrand, Napoleon, &c.; it is the nature of all these great forces to gravitate by virtue of their inward potency towards the conquest and unity of the world.

It is a phenomenon likewise proved by history, that hitherto the laws of ordinary morality—the duties considered by practical conscience as the imperative rules of men's individual relations—are drowned and annihilated in the gulphs opened by those vast dominating ambitions, which substitute the calculations of their policy and the interests of their sovereign aim for the rules of vulgar conscience. At those heights in the subversive world in which humanity is still plunged, men are soon considered by those ambitions which work on nations and events, as but means or obstacles.

Now, the Theocratic genius, founding its domination on the alleged interests of God—covering them with the impenetrable veil of the Sanctuary—marching with the infinite resources acquired in a long practice of confession, in a profound study of the human heart, and in the arsenal of all the seductions of matter and mysticism; taking for the auxiliaries of its inimitable design human passions, obscurity, and time;—the Theocratic genius—if, with a deliberate consciousness of its aim, it has constituted itself a hierarchical militia, detached from all ties of affection—must necessarily carry to its maximum of concentration and energy that politic spirit before which persons and the morality of actions disappear, and which retains but one human sentiment and one moral principle—that of absolute devotedness to the animus of the corporation, to its aim and its triumph. And who, then, save eight or ten of those strong heads among the higher class of the initiated—those politic priests, those brains without heart, puffed up by the defeat of the modern spirit (1824), intoxicated by a recent triumph, and by the perfume of that general Restoration which had already given them back a legal and canonical existence, and the favour of the governments of Italy, France, Austria, &c.—who but such men, taking measure at such a moment of their forces for conquest, could have held such language?

VI.

There are mad flights of pride so delirious, that no imagination could invent them. To set them forth with the fire, brilliancy, and energetic audacity, they display in a great number of passages in the *Secret Conference*, the Word that speaks must itself be wholly possessed by them. That sombre and subterraneous profundity—that laborious patience, proof against the toil of ages—that sense of ubiquity—that absolute devotedness to a purpose whose fulfilment is seen through the vista of many generations—that absorption of the personal and transient individual in the corporate and permanent individual—and above all, if I may so express myself, that transcendant immorality, which all stamp upon the *Secret Conference* the character of a monstrous and insane grandeur; these are surely the tokens of a paroxysm of ***subversive unitism***, such as could only be manifested, the moment after a European resurrection and victory, by Policy and Theocracy allied in an Order self-constituted as the occult brain of the Church, and the predestined supreme government of the world.

And truly, when we reflect on the organic virtue of that theocratic power, which feels itself immutable amidst the vacillations of the political world, we are constrained to own, that such is the nature of its means, such the temper of its weapons, that it might with more reason than any conqueror, or even than any people, aspire to universal dominion, if instead of seeking to cast back the nations into the past, and to plunge mankind again into the night of the middle ages, a thing which is purely impossible, it had undertaken the glorious task of guiding men towards the splendours of freedom and the future. That Order, which for many a century has braved kings and nations—which neither the decrees of princes, nor the bulls of popes, nor the anathemas of the conscience of nations, nor the terrible wrath of revolutions, have been able to crush—whose severed fragments reunite in the shade like those of the hydra—that Order, everywhere present and impalpable, which feels itself living, with its eternal and mute thought, in the midst of all that makes a noise and passes away—that Order, on comparing itself with those governments whose vices, corruption, and caducity, would make them pliant subjects for its crafty magnetism—must certainly have conceived through its chiefs the plan developed in the *Secret Conference*, and none but the initiated could have given to that plan the profound, eloquent, and impassioned forms, which that grand folly there assumes. The fumes of pride have mounted to the brain of the mysterious colossus, and he has failed to perceive that his feet are of clay, and that the inevitable flood of the modern spirit is reaching them and washing them away.

Boundless ambition, a mighty organization, indomitable perseverance, and absolute devotedness, all directed to the attainment of an impossible object, an absurd chimera pursued by a transcendent system of means as immoral as they are puerile—such are, in brief, the characteristics of that modern incarnation of Theocracy which is called Jesuitism.

VII.

I am not the only person who has remarked a strange form that frequently recurs in the speeches of the reverend fathers of the *Secret Conference*, namely those harangues to imaginary auditors, of which they almost all present specimens, or fragments, in their addresses to their colleagues. There are some to whom this form seems extraordinary and unnatural. Extraordinary I own it is, but as to its being unnatural, the circumstances and the men considered, I am quite of the opposite opinion.

Men who for fifteen, twenty, or thirty years, more or less, have been in the daily practice of public speaking, whose incessant task is proselytism, the seduction of consciences, the propagation of their policy, the conquest of souls, and who when met together to concert and mutually make known their means of action and their modes of proceeding, are glad to display each his own individual skill, such men would naturally have recourse to the form of communication in question. On reflection, then, it is evident that this singularity is perfectly natural in the special case in which it occurs. The more improbable it seems in an abstract point of view, the more strongly does it argue in favour of the authenticity of the *Conference;* for most assuredly the idea of putting all those numerous harangues into the mouths of the reverend fathers would never have occurred spontaneously to one who should have sat down to compose a fiction. The thing is one of those which we can account for when they are done, but which we can hardly imagine beforehand. Leone himself has never, so far as I am aware, given the explanation of the matter which to me appears so simple. The answer I have heard him return to objections of this kind has always been, "I can only say that the thing was so."

VIII.

It certainly cannot be said that there are not, in the preliminary narrative, or in the *Conference* itself, points as to which Leone has clearly perceived the difficulty of overcoming public incredulity. He has even debated with himself whether he should not suppress certain passages of the conference, knowing very well that they would prove stumbling-blocks, and that many persons refusing to believe them, might very probably reject all the rest along with them. Finally he resolved to set down everything he had heard with the most scrupulous fidelity, and in my opinion the has herein done wisely, notwithstanding the inconveniences resulting from such a course. Sound critics will see in the fact an additional evidence of truth. They will say to themselves that were Leone an author instead of a narrator, he would have taken good care not to leave in a work, not hastily put forth, matters which he must have been well aware would appear incredible.

In like manner, if his story of the circumstances by which the *Secret Conference* was disclosed to him were a fiction, would it not have been very easy to make that fiction more probable ? Tale for tale, there might have been devised a score that on the whole would have been much simpler and would have presented much fewer of those apparent difficulties on which common objectors tenaciously fasten. No; and as Leone is far from being a fool, I say (and for proof I might appeal to circumstances, such as the daring resolution he adopted at the very moment when he had been panic-stricken by a danger that still hung over him, and which he himself describes to satiety; the almost literally exact stenography of the conference; the accumulation in so brief a space of time of the two revelations, that of the secret books in the library, and that of the speeches of the reverend fathers, &c., &c.), I say for my part, instead of the veracity of the story being impugned by its improbability, that very improbability is a pledge of veracity.

IX.

I conclude with an observation. Leone gives with exact details the narrative of his own life at the periods which have reference to the event of which he speaks. It is incontestible that he entered the monastery of Chieri with an extremely ardent, fixed, and profound determination; that he desired nothing so much as to become a Jesuit; that hopes had already been held out to him which could not but have whetted his desires; and that all at once, without any ascertained motive, he was seen, to the great amazement of everybody, flying from that monastery into which he had so eagerly desired admittance two months before, and where he had met with nothing but kindness, favour, and all sorts of winning treatment. It is certain, then, that he received some terrible shock in the monastery. The fact is attested by his flight, his subsequent illness, and his sudden abandonment of that Jesuit career which had been so much the object of his ambition, while at the same time he did not quit the clerical profession. This mysterious revolution, the meaning of which he could not then explain to any one of his friends or relations, and of which his old mother, who now lives in Paris, did not know the cause until the death of the head of the family allowed Leone to quit Piedmont—this revolution was certainly the effect of some extraordinary and formidable adventure, some sudden revelation, some appalling burst of light; for him, whom it had befallen, it was decisive of the whole bent of his life, and made the study of all that pertains to Jesuitism thenceforth his principal occupation.

In fine, the facts relating to all the circumstances which form in the narrative the envelope, as it were, to the SECRET CONFERENCE, are of public notoriety in Leone's native land, and he narrates them publicly, mentioning names, places, dates, facts, and persons. Something most extraordinary, unknown to the Jesuits themselves, who were unable to account for his flight, must have perturbed his being, altered his health, and effected a total change in the bent of his mind and his ideas; and for my part I doubt not that the publication now made by Leone, is the true and sincere explanation of that mysterious point.

X.

I will now say a word as to my co-operation in Leone's publication, because, independently of what I have already made known, there was in this matter a circumstance which has strongly corroborated my conviction.

Leone as yet writes French but very imperfectly, so that I have been obliged to revise his whole manuscript, pen in hand, before sending it to press. Now I found an enormous difference as to style between the *second part* and the others. In the *Secret Conference* Leone was supported by the text, and often by the solidity of the speeches, which he had only to translate, and here he left me hardly anything to correct; whenever there was any awkwardness or ambiguity of expression, I had only to turn to the Italian text and find a more exact translation for the passage. In this part of the work his French manuscript has only undergone slight modifications in a few passages.

In the other two parts (the first especially, for the third consists chiefly of extracts), I have had much more to do than I could have wished, and frequently whole pages to rewrite completely. The difference was so marked that it was impossible for me to retain the least doubt as to the duality of the sources whence it arose; and notwithstanding our conjoint labour, there still remains such a discrepancy between Leone's style and that of the *Secret Conference*, that the least observant reader will easily recognise a diversity of origin. As an example, I will particularly invite attention to the reflection with which Leone closes the *conference*, and which begins thus (see end of the second part), "*By these words, the echo and confirmation of others not less presumptous.*" When we came to this passage in the course of our revision, Leone said to me, "Is it worth while, think you, to let that reflection stand?" "By all means, my dear friend," I replied with a smile, "let it stand. We must not think of suppressing this precious *naïf* reflection with which you, as a narrator, have quite naturally closed your report of the *conference*. There is, if you will allow me to say so, between your summing up and that of the president, paragraphs xix. and xxi., which precedes it, so enormous, so colossal a difference, that I know no more glaring proof of the authenticity of the conference, and of the impossibility of your being its author. How pale and weak is what you say in comparison with the language of the general of the the Order! How much does the expression of your sentiments on Jesuit ambition sink below the Word of the Company, the living incarnation of that ambition? The contrast seems to me so important, that far from suppressing your lines, you must forthwith grant me permission to repeat to the reader what I have just been saying to you."

And indeed whoever compares the grandiloquent language of paragraph xix. and the concluding words of paragraph xxi., with Leone's final reflection, will, I think, admit with me that the latter is merely a narrator, and will own how far *external passion*, if I may be allowed the expression, falls short of *internal passion* in the expression of a sentiment. To body forth the theocratic will and purpose with those traits of fire that flash every moment from the pen of De Maistre, and often from the lips of the fathers of the *Secret Conference*, the writer must himself have raised an altar to theocracy in his soul, and have long kept up, upon that inward altar, the sombre fire its worship demands. Although it does not always show with equal brilliancy throughout the conference, every attentive critic will easily distinguish the language of the initiated from that of ordinary men.

XI.

Let me recapitulate.

In this affair I have examined the elements of the cause like a juror.

The character of the witness, my scrutiny into the circumstances of his story, and my study of the subject in itself, have left no doubt upon my mind as to the authenticity of the revelation, and I declare, on my soul and conscience, that I BELIEVE LEONE TO BE PERFECTLY FAITHFUL AND SINCERE.

Now, whereas I should deem it odious to make use, even against Jesuitism, of fraud and calumny, I have held it no less obligatory upon me, in the actual state of things, convinced as I am of the reality of the Jesuit plan, to assist Leone, who had been unable to find a publisher, in laying it before the public. This seemed to me a personal and conscientious duty.

When I came to the determination to edit the manuscript, the Jesuits were exhibiting in Switzerland what they were capable of. They tried every means to bring about there an intervention of the anti-liberal powers—a coalition into which the French government monstrously entered. Instead of conjuring civil war by a voluntary retreat, those pretended disciples of Jesus were seen artfully kindling the fanaticism and rancour of the abused populations of the Sonderbund, and doing all in their power to provoke a bloody conflict. Their aim was to recover, *by means of an intervention*, the ground taken from them in the cantons and the diet by the progress of free ideas. They spared no effort to produce that odious result, which happily they failed to accomplish.

Moreover, it is well known what has been and what is still the part played by them in Rome, and what a weighty obstacle they are to the liberal intentions of the great Pontiff, who at every step in advance encounters their occult and potent influence. The publication of the *Secret Plan* will serve to unmask them. Their whole strength consists in the mystery in which they shroud themselves; let their projects be exposed to daylight, and the charm will be broken. These darksome and malignant associations are like the phantoms of the night that vanish the moment they are touched by one ray of sunshine.

I have said wherefore, and how, I came to take upon me the editing of this book, although certain of Leone's tendencies are not always perfectly in accordance with mine. The main thing for me in this matter has been to aid in unveiling that odious conspiracy (in which many still hesitate to believe, and I own that I was for a long time among the number) which has for its defined and specific end the re-establishment of darkness and despotism, and for its means the deliberate and conscious employment of the most abominable of lies—religious lying.

Those who may refuse to consider the *Secret Conference* as anything but a romance, cannot at least deny that the romance is perfectly historical. The *third part* contains an assemblage of proofs putting this point beyond all cavil. The gospel is the code of human freedom and dignity; some would make it a code of brutification and slavery, or rather they would stifle the rays of light and love that beam from it, and substitute a despicable fanaticism for the spiritual and democratic religion of Jesus. They will not succeed in their design; but to insure the defeat of the theocratic conspiracy, the friends of progress and freedom must bestir themselves.

Catholicism is a great religious institution. It is necessary to the development of that living institution that the hierarchy which governs it be renovated and retempered in the living sources of the gospel. The first steps which the pontiff, who now wears the tiara, has made in the way of progress and liberty, are a capital revelation for Catholicism. *To be or not to be.*

Christianity is immortal. A religion which is summed up in these words, "Love one another, and love God above all things," cannot die out from mankind; for every progress of humanity is but a new and fuller unfolding within it of Christianity, that is to say of love and liberty. But the future destiny of the catholic institution, which is a government, now depends, like that of all other governments, on its reconciliation with the spirit of the gospel, which is the spirit of humanity.

The catholic government is still aristocratic and despotic. Let it emancipate its serfs! let it recognise the rights of the secondary clergy and guarantee them; let it put itself in harmony with the sentiments of the primitive church, and strive to free the world instead of employing itself in the old work of oppression. Christianity is young and radiant; Theocracy is decrepid: let Roman Catholicism choose between the two. Any long delay would be perilous.

The Jesuits are the janissaries of theocratic Catholicism. The pope of Islam has perhaps shown the Catholic pope in what way a serious reform should be begun.

LONDON, *Jan. 27th*, 1848.

VICTOR CONSIDERANT,
The Editor,
Publisher, Member of the General Council of the Seine.

P.S.—PARIS, *May 28th*, 1848.—Since I wrote the above Preface to Leone's narrative in London, and at the moment when the work was about to appear simultaneously in England, France, Belgium, and Germany, the Revolution of February changed the face of things. The party of oppression, favoured by the impious alliance of the French government with the absolute courts, has been miraculously overthrown; the Jesuits themselves have been expelled from Rome.

Let us not be deceived, however; the battle is not won; peace and liberty are still far from being solidly established in the world.

Peace, liberty, complete reciprocity *(solidarité)*, and universal brotherhood, will only be realised by the definitive incarnation of the spirit of the Gospel in humanity. The work now before us is to make a democratic and christian Europe, instead of the aristocratic and, socially speaking, heathen Europe, which was yesterday official and legal. The question is far more religious and social than political. It is the era of practical Christianity which we are called on to inaugurate.

Hence, though Leone's publication now no longer possesses the character it would have had in the very heat of the strife, before the Revolution, it nevertheless retains its value. It will serve the good cause by exposing the designs of the bad cause; it will help the development of the true Christianity, democratic Christianity, by exhibiting in its odious nakedness the pseudo Christianity, the Christianity of the profit-seekers, of Theocracy, of Despotism.

The two parties must be accurately segregated: on the one side daylight, on the other darkness.

The subordinate clergy, whose condition in France is an actual civil, political, and religious thraldom, has respired the air of freedom with hope and love. Let the Republic give it a democratic constitution—let it restore to it the rights and guarantees of which it cannot be much longer despoiled—and it will soon have made its conquest. The subordinate clergy begs only to be released from the yoke. It groans beneath superiors who are imposed upon it, and whom it fears; whereas it ought to elect and love them. Let us emancipate the sacerdotal people; set it free, and the oppressive and shameful doctrines of Jesuitism will find in it their most formidable antagonist.

It is time that this be done. It is time that the ecclesiastical people communicate with the lay people in the sentiments of modern life and modern ideas. It is idle now to think of conserving dead interpretations. Society is athirst for liberty, equality, and fraternity: it is time to return to the holy source, and recover the liberating import of Christianity.

Providence had committed an august mission to the Church: to perpetuate Christ's teaching, to render him for ever living on earth, preciously to preserve and to realise daily more and more the gospel principles of unity, charity, and universal brotherhood. Instead of accomplishing this task, the theocratic spirit has striven to efface from the Church the traces of Him who had founded it—to filch away the liberal meaning of his instructions—to paralyse the intellectual life—and, in a word, to make mankind a flock of brutes, to be shorn by the Princes of the Church and the Princes of the World.

Disowned, let us hope, by the mass of the clergy, this theocratic spirit will soon be constrained, finally and for ever, to give up Europe to the genius of the new times, reconciled with the most sacred traditions of humanity. The moment is come for the Church to repudiate all fellowship with a sect which has led it astray from its proper path, and to regain the ground it has lost in the confidence of men, by actively furthering all truly christian works—that is to say, all works of social and intellectual amelioration.

The Revolution of February has opened a magnificent field for the Church; the problem now to be solved is THE CONSTITUTION OF A CHRISTIAN SOCIETY. For eighteen hundred years has Christianity been preached to men;—how to incarnate it in society is now the problem. Political society itself invokes the Gospel formula, taking for its motto those three christian words, *Liberty, Equality, Fraternity!* Let the subordinate clergy and the liberal bishops, casting off the anti-christian and anti-catholic traditions of Jesuitism, press forward, full of faith, hope, and love, in the path which is opened to them. The mission of true Christianity is now to found universal Democracy.

The Pope has expelled the Jesuits. It remains for him to reinstal the Papacy in its spiritual and catholic functions by abdicating all temporal authority. It is its temporal interests that have corrupted the Church.

So long as the head of the Church shall remain *King* of the Roman States, the Catholic Church will be nothing but a Roman oligarchy. It must again become a spiritual and universal democracy; and its general councils must proclaim to the earth the true sense, the liberating and emancipating sense, of the Scriptures.

A sincere return to the democratic spirit of the Gospel; a rupture of that simoniacal alliance which odiously perverted a religion of freedom and fraternity, making it into a yoke of oppression for the benefit of all who use up nations for their own profit; a formal repudiation of the feudal, theocratic, obscurantist, and Jesuitical spirit: such is the price at which the salvation of the catholic institution is to be secured.

V. C.

PP.S. *July* 10*th*, 1848.—Events follow upon each other with such rapidity that every day produces in a manner a new situation.

The day after the Revolution of February, the Republic was accepted by all in France. Louis Philippe left behind him neither affection nor esteem, nor roots of any sort. Rejoicing in his fall, the legitimists said to themselves that the time of monarchies was passed, and gave in their adhesion on all sides to the republican principle, the government of all, by all, and for all.

The grand and vast idea of universal union found in the language of Lamartine an utterance full of brilliancy, elevation, and authority.

Unfortunately, narrow categories, language of injudicious violence, and conquerors' airs, calculated to lead to the belief that the immense majority of the

French citizens, who were *republicans of the morrow*, were about to be governed as conquered populations by the *republicans of the eve;* all those violences of speech and demeanour, which had not even the logic of the strong hand in their favour, produced serious reactionary ferments in the country. The huge folly of postponing the elections considerably diminished the democratic element in the National Assembly, which instead of feeling itself united, confident, and strong, was from the very outset uncertain, distrustful of itself, irresolute, and divided.

Hence the critical situation in which we now behold the republic and society.

A deliberately reactionary party, which would not have existed, had not its creation and development been provoked as if on purpose, is rapidly organising. It is turning to its own account material interests, the nature of which it is to be blind, blind and violent egotisms, and the resuscitated hopes, enterprising and intriguing, of the various dynastic factions and of the theocratic faction.

All these elements constitute a formidable coalition, in which intrigue is organising the resistance of those interests which it can so easily mislead and impassion.

The Jesuit element, that mysterious army at the service of obscurantism, despotism, and social retrogradation, has thus suddenly found allies in those who but yesterday fought against it.

Under the restoration it had on its side in France only the party of the emigration.

Under the monarchy of July it had indeed enlisted among its allies the official and satisfied bourgeoisie, which entered into covenant with it in its retrograde tendencies. M. Guizot and his rotten majority supported the general tendencies of Jesuitism, and formally yoked themselves to its cause, by pledging the policy of France to the service of the Sonderbund.

To-day, a new stratum of French society has passed over to the enemy, to the fear of progress and of democratic and social principles—a stupid and fatal fear, for interests can only be saved by their alliance with sentiments and principles. This new retrogression is authenticated by this token, that M. Thiers—who is what is called a tactician, a practical man, a man of manœuvres—and his organ the *Constitutionnel*, have, with brazen fronts, gone over to the party of which they had long been the bugbears.

M. Thiers, moreover, maintained a few days ago, in a committee of the Assembly, amidst the applause of many liberals of yesterday (liberals now entrusted with the task of founding the *democratic* republic), "that it was very dangerous to develop the instruction of the people, because instruction led infallibly to communism."

The anti-democratic coalition is bound up with the National Assembly, and the compact is signed between all the parties of the past.

Out of doors the movement is being organised by the insidious arts employed to terrify and blind the most legitimate interests.

Furthermore, the re-actionists will rapidly use up all the men of the revolution ; then, when the industrial and commercial crisis shall have passed away, they will again repossess themselves of the powers of the state, and with the help of all the confederated enemies of liberty and progress, they will re-establish society on its OLD PRINCIPLES, "*the mischievous nature of the new principles being definitively proved by the evils which their invasion has for sixty years let loose on the modern world.*"

That is the plan.

It is a general coalition of all fears, all egotisms, and all intrigues, against the legitimate and regular development of democracy.

This is literally the very same purpose as that aimed at by the Company of Jesus ; accordingly, the alliance has been already concluded with the *political* representatives of the Company.

V. C.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

There is no one but has devoted some attention to the reappearance of the too famous Company of Jesus on the European stage. Many have rejoiced at the event; a greater number have beheld it with deep sorrow or irritation.

To say the truth, there were various reasons why a fact of this nature should interest governments and nations; for if ever the aim of that audacious Order could be achieved, every right and every liberty would be at an end. I do not think I exaggerate in expressing myself thus; on the contrary, I am strongly persuaded that those who read the disclosures made in this work will share my opinion.

Let me be permitted, in the first place, to enter into certain personal details, before I proceed to initiate the public into the secret I am about to divulge. I will be as brief as possible.

In 1838, I voluntarily quitted Piedmont, my native country, went to Switzerland, and settled in

Geneva. At that period nothing yet presaged the ascendancy which the Jesuits were soon to obtain in the affairs of that republic, and the troubles in which their intrigues were to involve various other parts of Europe. Yet I did not hesitate to say openly to a great number of persons what there was to be apprehended in that way. I was not believed. My predictions were universally regarded as dreams. In vain I repeated to them that I possessed proofs of the invisible snares and most secret projects of the Company. A contemptuous smile was the answer to my words.

Gradually the face of events was changed, and the first symptoms of the Jesuit influence began to show themselves in Prussia.

Every one knows the commotion caused by the question of mixed marriages raised by the Archbishop of Cologne, and his ultramontane pretensions. A powerful party, and celebrated writers, Görres among the rest, declared themselves the prelate's supporters, and undertook the defence of doctrines which had long been considered dead. At the same period, pompous announcements were made of the conversion of princes and princesses, high personages of all kinds, learned men and artists. Such events were talked of with amazement in every company.

I happened to be one evening at the house of Mr. Hare, an Anglican clergyman, when a number of distinguished foreigners were present. The conversation ran exclusively upon the subject of these brilliant conquests, and everybody strove to invent some hypothesis on which to explain them. From what was stated of several of the converts by those who knew them personally, it was inferred that the real motive of their change was not precisely of a religious nature. I declared that the conjecture was not erroneous; and I was thus led to lay before the company present the course of circumstances through which I had become in a manner an INITIATED JESUIT.

A person who took part in the conversation, and who was travelling under the title of count, expressed a strong desire to see some portion of the SECRET PLAN, which had been mentioned. At his request, I called on him next day, and read him certain pages of the manuscript. He listened with great attention, seemed very much struck by some passages, and owned to me ***that at last he could explain to himself many enigmas.*** He asked me to let him keep the manuscript for a day, in order that he might study it more at leisure. This I declined; and then ***he made known his name.*** He was a prince nearly related to the royal house of Prussia. I persisted, nevertheless, in my refusal, though he offered me his support, and even made me some tempting promises.

The prince, somewhat to my surprise, requested me to give him a French version of the *Secret Plan*, that he might, as he said, have it translated into German. He recommended me to observe *the greatest discretion*, and insisted that I should not compromise *his name*. I was to deal only with his son's tutor on the subject. Furthermore, it was arranged that I should subjoin an essay on the question pending between the cabinet of Prussia and the Holy See, wherein I was to demonstrate that the attempts made by various prelates, especially their attacks upon the university system of education, and their growing audacity in enforcing the old maxims of Rome, were not a purely local and fortuitous manifestation, but a fact closely connected with a vast conspiracy, pregnant with danger to all the powers.

I set to work, and wrote an account of all the strange incidents through which I had become an invisible witness of the occult committee in which the Jesuit plot was concocted. As soon as I had finished the translation of the plan itself, which I sent off by instalments, and just as I was about to enter on the conclusion, I was desired to stop short—the pretext alleged being the death of the King of Prussia, which had just occurred. I had even a good deal of trouble to recover the copy I had sent.

I was soon surrounded with people who obtruded their advice upon me; telling me, that if aid was not afforded me towards publishing, it was for my own sake it was withheld; that I ought to beware how I braved a society known to be implacable—a society that had smitten kings. "Who are you," they said to me, "to cope with such a power, and not fear its numerous satellites?" Then, gliding into another order of considerations, they would say, "Nothing can be more dangerous than to initiate the people into such mysteries. It is enough that they should be known to those whose position authorises and enjoins them to frustrate an ambition, which is the more enterprising and mischievous inasmuch as religion and blind multitudes serve it as auxiliaries."

These observations would have had less influence over me, had they not derived weight from the increasing anxieties of an aged and timid mother. Besides, my existence then depended on families who would have been deeply offended by a publication of such a nature. All this embarrassed my projects; and eager as I had been on my arrival to send the *Secret Plan of the Jesuits* to press, my many disappointments led me to postpone its publication indefinitely, though I could not conceal my disgust and despondency.

During all this time the influence of the Jesuits had augmented, and the liberals were beginning to regard it with apprehension. People came to me with all sorts of solicitations; and so, notwithstanding my many disappointments, I was constrained, in a manner, by events and entreaties, again to make ready for the press this long-retarded work.

But other obstacles again delayed it, for everything seemed to conspire against an enterprise for which, in a great measure, I had voluntarily expatriated myself. The persons with whom I had come in contact for this business sought only their own interest, and wished to place me in such a position as would have entailed on me all the annoyances and dangers of the publication without any of its advantages.

The Genevese government increased my perplexities by its persecutions. That government of *doctrinaires*, or Protestant Jesuits, so deservedly overthrown last year, conducted itself on narrow, egotistical principles, and was particularly captious towards strangers. I was several times summoned before its police on the most futile pretexts. Unable to prove anything against me, they took upon them to judge my intentions; interpreted my religious and democratic ideas as a crime, and strove to intimidate me with threats of dire calamities. On my part I ventured to predict for that intolerable government a speedy and ignominious fall. At last I was ordered to quit the country within the briefest space of time, without any cause being assigned to justify that arbitrary measure. Thus a final stop was put in Switzerland to the publication of my work, which had already been rendered so difficult by all the obstacles I have mentioned.

II.

When I came to Paris in 1846 I had no thought of making fresh attempts, more especially as I was told I should have great difficulty in finding a publisher. I applied myself to the composition of a work, now in a great measure completed, founded on documents of unquestionable authenticity, and which I should even have wished to print before the *Secret Plan*, as fitted in every respect, by its important revelations, to secure to the latter the most solid basis in public opinion. But when I was about to publish it, I received from Geneva a letter informing me of a monstrous abuse of confidence. The person I had employed to transcribe my manuscript of the *Secret Plan* had copied it in duplicate. He had put the second copy into the hands of a society, which, strange to say, had been formed for the express purpose of trafficking in this robbery. The excuse they offered was, that since I had during so many years divulged the secret plan of the Jesuits, the thing had become the property of the public. Moreover, as I had transcribed it surreptitiously, it did not belong to me, but was free to be used by anybody. It will scarcely be believed that the spoiler even went so far as to dictate the terms of a bargain to the despoiled, and to add irony to impudence, since the work had been printed several days before in Berne, as witness a copy sent me. The insolent letter he wrote me deserves to be known.*

What! the very persons who profess themselves such uncompromising enemies of the Jesuits, do not themselves refuse to act on the maxim that "the end justifies the means." But what has been the result of their spoliation? That it has been of no manner of advantage to them. What confidence, indeed, would there be in a paltry pamphlet, without name or warrant for its authenticity? The work, too, they published was but a shapeless abortion, a rough draft of a translation, very imperfectly collated with the original, and what is worse, truncated, slovenly, incorrect, and swarming with mistakes. The edition I put forth is rigorously exact and scrupulous; I have long and minutely scrutinized it, and it has been recorrected under the eye of guides who have helped me to convey in French the full force of the original, which is often hard to translate. I have subjoined to the *Secret Plan* elucidations of great importance, and I have related the circumstances through which it has come into my possession. Finally, I have brought forward counterproofs of various kinds, all drawn from authentic sources, in support of the essential views and ideas developed in the plan.

---

* Here it is:—

"GENEVA, *Sept.* 7, 1847.

"SIR,

"After having so long played with us, it is extremely surprising that you now protest against the publication of a work containing essentially the disclosure of speeches captured without permission by your ears, or rather *by your eyes*, in 1824.

"This protest is the more astonishing after your having yourself communicated those speeches to hundreds of persons, so as to make them be regarded as common property.

"Though I consider your protest as insignificant, and as a thing which at most can only result in giving you trouble and making you spend money uselessly, yet on the other hand, since my object has been *attained*, and since it is from public motives and not for any private interest that I have done so, I now offer to treat with you on the following terms:—In case you desire to become the proprietor of this publication, I consent thereto, on condition that you immediately furnish the necessary securities for the complete payment of the printer and of the incidental expenses. I have the honour to salute you.

F. ROESSINGER.

The publication put forth by my spoliators is the more blamable, inasmuch as the manner of its execution has been such as to compromise the fundamental document. For, I repeat, what authority can it have without my co-operation, without my name, and the corroborative proofs that accompany it in the present volume? Is it not a culpable and shameful act to put in jeopardy a matter of such moment? If they were actuated by no sordid motives, why did they not apply to me, and offer me the means of giving publicity to my manuscript in the way necessary to secure its full effect? In acting with such bad faith, did they not expose themselves to see the blow they designed for Jesuitism turned back upon them to their confusion? What was to prevent me from annihilating the result of their manœuvre? Was it not in my power utterly to discredit the story, by attributing it to a freak of my youth?

I will say more. What they have done has put me in a position, from which it rested only with myself to derive profit, by proving by letters, ante-dated a few years, that my design had been to play off a hoax.

III.

Those who have at all reflected on the Order of the Jesuits, who have studied its history, and have had a near view of its workings, will by no means be surprised at its profound artifices and superb hopes. Do we not see it at this moment in France become the guide of the bishops, and giving law to the inferior clergy. M. Henri Martin thus expresses himself in a remarkable work recently published:

"The clergy, in its collective action, is little more than a machine of forty thousand arms, impelled by its leaders against whomsoever they please, and those leaders themselves are pushed forward by the Jesuit and neo-catholic congregations."*

Well-informed clergymen have assured me that the Jesuits were never so well seconded and supported as they now are. The establishments dependent on them are very numerous, and increase daily. Their resources are prodigious. A letter addressed to the *Siècle* thus speaks of their progress. Such a letter serves well to corroborate what is contained in the *Secret Plan.* I will quote the greater part of it:—*

---

* De la France, de son Génie et de ses Destinées. Paris, 1847, p. 92.

"The hill of Fourvières, which commands Lyons, on the right bank of the Saône, is a sort of entrenched camp, wherein all the bodies of the clerical militia are echelonned, one above the other, in the strongest positions; thence they hold the town in check, like those formidable fortresses which have been built to intimidate rather than to defend it. The long avenues that lead to Fourvières and the chapel that surmounts it, are thronged with images of saints and *ex voto;* and but for that industrious city which unfolds its moving panorama below your feet, you might fancy yourself in the midst of the middle ages, and take its factory chimneys for convent spires.

"The exact statistics of the religious establishments of Lyons, with the number of their inhabitants and the revenues they command, would form a very curious book; but the archbishopric, which possesses all the elements of those statistics, is by no means disposed to publish them. The clergy, since the severe lessons given it by the July event, likes better to *be* than to *appear;* its force, disseminated all over France, and not the less real because they do not show themselves; and it can at any moment, as occasion may arise, set in motion that huge lever, the extremity of which is everywhere, and the fulcrum at Rome.

"Now, the soul of this great clerical conspiracy, the vital principle that animates it, *is the Jesuits.* Every one knows the well-grounded dislike with which this able and dangerous order is regarded from one end of Europe to the other. Yet it must be owned that in it alone resides all the life of Catholicism at this day; and the clergy would be very ungrateful if they did not accept these useful auxiliaries even while they fear them.

---

* December 17, 1847.

"All France knows that famous house in the Rue Sala in Lyons, one of the most important centres of Jesuitism. At the period of the pretended dispersion of the order, that great diplomatic victory in which M. le Comte Rossi won his ambassador's spurs, the house in the Rue Sala, as well as that in the Rue des Postes in Paris, dispersed its inmates for a while, either into the neighbouring dioceses, as aide-de-camps to the bishops, or as tutors in some noble houses of the Place Bellecour; but *when once the farce was played out*, things returned very quietly to their old course, and the Rue Sala, at the moment I write, is still with the archbishopric the most active centre of politico-religious direction.

"That activity is principally directed upon two points; by means of the brotherhoods *(confréries)* it reaches the lower classes, whom the clergy drills and holds obedient to it; by education it gets hold of the middle classes, *and thus secures to itself the future by casting almost a whole generation in the clerical mould.* Let us begin with the brotherhoods. We will say nothing of those that are not essentially Lyonnese, and whose centre is elsewhere, though they possess hosts of affiliated dependents here. We will merely mention by name the Society for the Propagation of the Faith, whose centre, next after Rome, is Lyons, and which alone possesses a revenue of four millions and a half of francs. But the most important, the one which draws its recruits most directly from this industrious population, is the Society of St. Francis Xavier. Its name sufficiently indicates to what order it belongs; it is Jesuitism put within the reach of the labouring classes, and you may recognise it by the cleverness of its arrangements. The workmen, of which it consists almost exclusively, are disposed in sections of tens, hundreds, and thousands, with leaders to each section. The avowed purpose of the society is to succour invalid workmen, who, for a subscription of five sous a-month, or three francs a-year, are insured medical aid and twenty-five sous a-day in sickness. Such are the outward rules of the society; but in reality its design is clerical and legitimist: the two influences are here blended together in one common aim.

"Another and perhaps more dangerous means of action is the vast boarding-school which the brethren of the Christian schools, under the supreme controul of the Rue Sala, have established at Fouvrières. This gigantic establishment, which can accommodate upwards of four hundred interns, was founded about eight years ago in defiance of all the universitary laws. Its object, which is distinct from that of the small seminaries, is to give young men of the middle and inferior trading classes a sort of professional education, comprising, with the exception of the dead languages, all the branches taught in colleges. The complete course of study embraces no less than eight years. In this institution, as in all others of its kind, the domestic arrangements are excellent, and the instruction indifferent, being imparted by the brethren. Masters, fit only to teach little children their catechism, instruct adults in the highest branches of rhetoric, philosophy, and the physical and mathematical sciences. In consequence, too, of the continual removes of each of the brethren of the doctrine to and from all parts of France, any able professors who may have been formed in Lyons are soon appointed directors in some other town; and the system of teaching in the institution, however high in appearance, does not in reality rise above a very humble level.

"The annual charge is as low as possible, not exceeding 550 francs, which barely covers the indispensable expenses. This low rate of charge, aided by the all-potent influence of the confessional over mothers of families, attracts to the institution multitudes of lads of the middle class. As for the children of the poor, they belong of right to the schools of the doctrine—the primitive destination of the order, and one in which it can render real services. But this is not all: one of the centres of the Christian schools being placed at Lyons, there was requisite a noviciate house; and the order has just procured one, by purchasing for 250,000 francs a magnificent property at Calvire, within a league of Lyons. The vendor allowed ten years for the discharge of the purchase money; but the whole was paid within eighteen months; and a vast edifice, capable, when complete, of accommodating more than four hundred resident pupils, has risen out of the earth as if by enchantment. The estimate made by the engineer who directed the works, and who is a member of the society, amounted, it is said, to a million and a half of francs, and it has been exceeded.

"As for the lesser seminaries, of which there are many in the diocese, we will only mention that of Argentière, which contains five hundred pupils, and that of Meximieux, which has two hundred. Hence we may form an approximate idea of the immense action on education exercised in these parts by the clergy, *in flagrant contravention of the university laws and regulations.* The low charges of their institutions, not to mention many supplementary burses, give it the additional attraction of cheapness; and for those very low charges (about 400 francs) the Jesuit schools are supposed to afford their pupils instruction in all those branches of knowledge, Greek and Latin included, which are taught in those *gulphs of perdition* which are called Colleges.

"On the whole, we may reckon at the number of one hundred the religious establishments intended whether for the education of both sexes, or for the relief of the distressed. All the suburbs of Lyons have their nunneries; and monastic garbs of every form and colour swarm in the streets. The Capuchins, however, who were formerly found there, have migrated to Villeurbonne; and the Jesuits, jealous of any rivals of their supremacy here, are said to have purchased their retirement at the cost of 900,000 francs.

"If you are astonished at the immense sums which the clergy here dispose of, recollect that one individual, Mademoiselle de Labalmondière, the last scion of a noble family, has left the church a sum of ten millions, of which the archbishop has been named supreme dispenser. Through the confession, by means of the women, and by all kinds of influence direct and indirect, the clergy keeps the whole male population in a state of obsession and blockade. A trader who should revolt against this influence would instantly provoke against him the whole clerical host, *and would be stripped of his credit and put under a sort of moral interdiction that would end in his ruin.* The university, which possesses at Lyons some distinguished men, a brilliant faculty, and an excellent royal college, is put in the archiepiscopal index; and what here as elsewhere is called *freedom of teaching*, that is to say the power of taking education entirely out of lay hands and committing it to corporations, is the object of all the prayers of pious souls here, and of all the combined efforts of the archbishopric and the Rue Sala."

IV.

The Jesuits have shown themselves in their true colours in Switzerland, where, merciless as ever, they chose rather to provoke the horrors of civil war than to yield, as the christian spirit enjoined them. They have thereby augmented the hatred and contempt with which they are regarded on all sides. So sure were they of victory, that in their infatuation they disdained to take the most ordinary precautions.

" Apropos of the Jesuits," said the Swiss correspondent of the *National* at that period, " it will be well to give you some account of the documents which most deeply compromised the reverend fathers and their allies both in Switzerland and in other countries. It will be seen whether or not the presence of the order is extremely dangerous to the countries that afford them an asylum.

" In the first place, there has been discovered at Fribourg a catalogue in Latin of all the establishments which the Jesuits possess in a portion of France and Switzerland, with a list and the addresses of all the persons connected with them. I have sent you two numbers of a Swiss journal in which there is an abstract of this catalogue, drawn up with the greatest care. You will perceive from it that the Jesuits' houses have greatly augmented in number in France, since the pope made a show of promising M. Rossi and M. Guizot that they should have no more establishments in your country. The chambers will see how their demands have been derided. France will learn how she is duped, and what is the occult power that rules the government. For proof of all this, I refer to the analysis of the famous catalogue, which you will not fail to publish.

"There are two other documents, which you can see in the *Helvétie* of Dec. 18. The first is an address of two Fribourg magistrates, the president of the old great council, and a councillor of state, who humbly prostrating themselves at the feet of the Holy Father, recommend M. Marilley for bishop of the diocese, carefully insisting on the fact that he is most favourable to the order of the Jesuits. Now that prelate, a consummate hypocrite, ***had been at war with the society, and gave himself out for a liberal.***

"The other document is still more curious and instructive. It is an address from the deaconry of Romont (Canton of Fribourg) to the apostolic nuncio at Lucerne, dated Dec. 20, 1845, and recommending the same Marilley, a parish priest expelled from Geneva, to the pope's choice as bishop. The clergy of the deaconry, labouring hard to refute one by one the calumnious accusations directed against their ***protégé***, prove that M. Marilley by no means deserves the epithet of liberal; that he is not even ***a little liberal;*** and that far from being hostile to the reverend Jesuit fathers, he has given them authentic testimonies of his special veneration and esteem. The most remarkable passages of the address from the deaconry of Romont are those relating to politics. Speaking of the Catholic association, of which, like almost all the clergy of the diocese, M. Marilley was a member, his protectors say, 'In 1837 this association wrested by its influence the majority in the grand council from the radicals, who were threatening among other things to dismiss the reverend Jesuit fathers from the canton. So the conservatives owe to this calumniated association their majority and their places, and the reverend Jesuit fathers owe to it their actual existence in Fribourg.'

"Further on, with respect to the old doctrinaire conservative government of Geneva, the address says, 'Geneva does not choose to be either frankly conservative, because it is Protestant, or openly radical, because its votes are swayed by its material interests, and by the potent suggestions of Sardinia and France.' Other passages manifest the *close alliance* of the Jesuits and of the conservatives, *both protestant and catholic.*

"A fourth document is the report of an inquiry made in Fribourg by order of the provincial government as to the reality of an alleged miracle attributed to the Virgin Mary. A priest and other witnesses had deposed that a soldier of the landsturm, who wore one of those medals of the *Immaculate Virgin* of which I have told you, had been preserved, on the night of Dec. 7, from the effect of a ball which had struck him on the spot covered by the medal. The whole is attested by Bishop Etienne Marilley. Now the inquiry has rendered the imposture clear and palpable; the knavery of the bishop, the priests, and the Jesuits is laid bare. The matter of this inquiry will assuredly acquire great publicity.

"The Valais is not less rich in revelations than Fribourg and Lucerne. The federal representatives have in their hands all the official documents and the correspondences respecting the Sonderbund and the late military events, among others an authentic deed proving that Austria made the League the present of three thousand muskets which you know of. These documents contain proof that the League was a *European affair*, and that the purpose was to establish in Switzerland the forces of ultramontanism and the centre of re-action; that what was designed was not an *accidental association, and a defence merely against the attacks of the free corps*, but a *permanent* League, and a dissolution of the Confederation in order to the reconstruction of another which should be recognised, supported, and ruled by foreign diplomacy.

"We have not exhausted the stock of documents. Fresh ones are discovered every day."

V.

Enough so far to raise a corner of the veil. The plot is seen in action just as it is laid down in the *Secret Plan*, with which the reader is about to be acquainted. Its scope, we perceive, is formidable. Every means is welcome to its concocters that can forward their success. Their journals, especially the *Univers*, strangely mistaking the age, have promulgated plenty of miracles to sanctify the cause of the Jesuits in July. Their abominable fraud has not been able to remain concealed; the press holds up its perpetrators to contempt. Here then we have it proved for the thousandth time, that this order, continually urged by infernal ambition, meditates the ruin of all liberty, and by its counsels is hurrying princes, nobles, and states to their ruin. It is its suggestions that petrify the heart of the King of Naples, in whose dominions one of the members of the Company has been heard preaching the most hideous absolutism and blind obedience, as the most sacred and inviolable duty of the multitude. This is their very doctrine; and when they preach a different one, it is but a trick, and is practised there only where they lack the support of despotism.

Lastly, let us hear the captive of St. Helena expressing his whole opinion of this order. But be it remembered in the first place, that it is not for the sake of right and reason Napoleon declares himself an enemy to Jesuitism. He feared reason; right he deemed a thing not to be realised; and as for liberty, he could never comprehend it. "Louis XIV.," he exclaimed, "the greatest sovereign France has had! He and I—that is all."* He even thought that the people should not be allowed the Bible.* "In China," said he, "the people worship their sovereign as a god, *and so it should be.*"† Now, he felt strong enough, as he says, to make the pope his tool, and Catholicism a means of his power. He liked the latter, because it enjoins men to distrust their reason and believe blindly. "The Catholic religion is the best of all, because it speaks to the eyes of the multitude, *and aids the constituted authority.*"‡ In another place he says he prefers it because "it is an all-potent auxiliary of royalty."§ He admitted all sorts of monks, and thought he could make something of them, *except the Jesuits.* On his rock he speaks of them with nothing but abhorrence, and is convinced that he could not resist them with more profound or more decisive means than their own; and that wherever they exist, such is the force of their stratagems and manœuvres, that they rule and master everything in a manner unknown to everybody.

---

* Récits de la captivité de l'Empereur Napoléon à Sainte Hélène, par M. le Général Montholon. Paris, 1847, t. 2, p. 107.

"But," says he, "a very dangerous society, and one which would never have been admitted on the soil of the Empire, is that of the Jesuits. Its doctrines are subversive of all monarchical principles. The general of the Jesuits insists on being sovereign master, *sovereign over the sovereign.* Wherever the Jesuits are admitted, *they will be masters, cost what it may.* Their society is by nature dictatorial, and therefore it is the irreconcilable enemy of all constituted authority.

---

* Récits de la captivité, &c., t. 2, p. 159.

† Ibid, p. 269.

‡ Ibid, p. 62.

§ Ibid, p. 174.

Every act, every crime, however atrocious, is a meritorious work, if it is committed for the interest of the Society of Jesus, or by order of the general of the Jesuits."*

VI.

The first step in the reform of Catholicism is the absolute abolition of this order: so long as it subsists it will exert its anti-social and anti-christian influence over the Church and the Powers; and so long as the Church is filled with the hatred for progress which that order cherishes, it will only hasten its own decay, and its regeneration will be impossible.

---

* Récits de la captivité, &c., t. 2, p. 294.

SECRET PLAN OF THE JESUITS.

PART I.

NOVITIATE AND ECCLESIASTIC CAREER.

I.

At the age of nineteen I had formed the resolution of entering the church, and was finishing my studies at the Seminary of Vercelli. I usually passed my vacations in the company of Luigi Quarelli, arch-priest and curé of Langosco, my native place. Incited by an eager thirst for knowledge, I had, in the course of a few years, completely exhausted his library; and often did this worthy man repeat to me, that so far from learning being of any use to me, it would more probably be an obstacle to my advancement in the church. He now began to speak to me of the Jesuits. The power of this order, its reverses, its recent restoration, the impenetrable mystery in which it has been enveloped since its origin, all contributed to exalt it in his eyes. According to his account, none were admitted into it but such as were distinguished for intellect, wealth, or station. He spoke of it as the only order which, so far from repressing the native energies of the mind, or the tendencies of genius, did actually favour them in every way. This assertion he substantiated by many striking examples.

The impression made on me by these conversations was exceedingly strong. Young, inexperienced, and dazzled by statements which taught me to regard Jesuitism as the only resource of a noble ambition, I longed for nothing so much as to be received into the order. Neither the thought of abandoning my parents, nor that of the severe trials to which I must subject myself, could, in any way, divert me from my purpose.

The curé scrupulously examined my resolution, and the result being satisfactory, he wrote to Turin, to Father Roothaan, then rector of a college of the society in that town, and now general of the Jesuits. The rector, after having made the customary inquiries respecting me, intimated that I might repair to the capital, and undergo the preliminary examinations.

I therefore took my departure. When I presented myself to him, he conversed with me for some time, and with great openness and affability. At first, his object appeared to be merely to acquaint himself with the extent of my acquirements, but by degrees he led me on insensibly to make a general confession, as it were, of my whole life.

I will not here attempt to retrace the details of this conversation. It would be difficult for me to convey an idea of the consummate art employed to sound a conscience, to descend into the very depths of the inmost heart, and to make all its chords resound, the individual remaining, all the while, unconscious of the analysis which is going on, so occupied is he by the pleasant flow of the conversation, so beguiled by the air of frank good-nature with which the artful process is conducted.

I have retained but vague and disjointed recollections of all these subtle artifices. One portion of the conversation, however, imprinted itself so deeply in my memory that I will repeat it, in order to show under what point of view the present chief of the Jesuits had already begun to regard the mission and aim of his order.

" And now," said he, after having examined me, " what I have to communicate to you is calculated to fill you with hope and joy. You enter our society at a time when its adherents are far from numerous, and when there is, consequently, every encouragement to aspire to a rapid elevation. But think not that on entering it you are to fold your arms and dream. You are aware that our society, at one time, flourished vigorously, that it marched with giant steps in the conquest of souls, and that the cause of Christ and of the Holy See achieved signal victories by our means. But the very greatness of the work we were fulfilling, excited envy without bounds. The spirit of our order was attacked, all our views were misrepresented and calumniated, and as the world is always more ready to believe evil than good, we came, ere long, to be universally detested.

" Thus, we, the Society of Jesus, were doomed to undergo the same trials as our Divine Master. We were loaded with insults, we were driven from every resting-place. Monarchs and nations entertained with respect to us but one common thought, that of sweeping us from the face of the earth. Humiliated, insulted, buffeted, crowned with thorns, and bearing the cross, we also were doomed to suffer the death of ignominy. There was not wanting even a Caiaphas* to sign our sentence with his own hand ; and the chastisement with which he was soon after visited by the

* Allusion to Clement XIV. (Ganganelli.)

just judgment of Heaven, gave rise to a last calumny against us, which crowned all the others. Our last struggle was ended; we died—but though dead, the powerful still trembled at our name. They made haste to seal up our tomb, and they set over it a vigilant guard, so that there might not be the faintest sign of life beneath the stone which covered us.

"But behold what became of the potentates themselves, during our sleep of death! Day by day they were visited by chastisements more and more severe. The world became the theatre of direful troubles and terrible catastrophes. A giant threaded *(infilzava)* crowns upon his resistless sword, and monarchs were cast down in the dust at his feet. But the moment of terror soon arrived, in which Almighty God broke the sword of the man of fate, and called us from the sepulchre. Our resurrection struck the nations with astonishment; and now we shall be no more the sport and the prey of the wicked, for our society is destined to become the right arm of the Eternal!

"Thus, a new era is opening for us. *All that the church has lost* she will regain through us. Our order, by its activity, its efforts, and its devotedness, *will vivify all the other orders, now well nigh extinct.* It will bear to all parts the torch of truth, for the dispersion of falsehood; it will bring back to the faith those whom incredulity has led astray; it will, in a word, realise the promise contained in the gospel, that all men shall be one fold under one Shepherd.

"Henceforward, then, no more disasters; the future is wholly ours. Our march will be victorious, our conquests incessant, our triumph decisive.

"But, once more, do not expect to walk upon roses; it is right that I should warn you of this. The mission which our society imposes on itself is a stern one. We do not (it is important that you should know this), we do not aim only at restoring their ancient empire to *some fragments* of truth, but at restoring it to the *whole Catholic truth.* Thus, there is no pride or pretension that our order does not ruffle and wound: whence result all sorts of accusations, which we must support with courage. Bear in mind, when once the hand is laid to the plough, the only thought must be how to run the furrow straight. *Macte animo,* then, look not backwards. You can do much. Besides, I think that the more you become penetrated with the spirit of the order —if God, as I trust, grants you the grace to become one of its members—the more energy you will feel in yourself for the task which the superiors, and not human caprice, will assign you. Your superiors alone must be judges of this, for God always especially directs them, in order that each one, remaining at the post which is suitable to him, may most usefully co-operate in the great work, namely, the raising up of the church, the salvation of the world, and the union of all sects and parties under the authority of him who, as the representative of God himself on earth, cannot but act in the interest of all, ON CONDITION, HOWEVER, THAT ALL CONSENT TO OBEY HIM."

II.

This discourse, which I have considerably abridged, excited my imagination, filled me with new thoughts, and awakened in my heart an ardent faith. My visit to Father Roothaan, his engaging countenance, the unctuous phrases that flowed abundantly from his lips, the singular address he displayed in rendering his conversation always full of interest—all this had soon subjugated me most completely to the Jesuits.

The reader may imagine what I felt on the occasion of this memorable interview. I was at the age of enthusiasm, the age in which all our faculties spring with undivided purpose towards their aim, whatever it may be. My mind had remained till then absorbed in a sort of half slumber. Transported—inflamed for a cause which I believed to be that of God himself, my sole aspiration was to pronounce the vows which were to bind me to it for ever.

On learning my decision my father was struck with the deepest sorrow: nor can I describe the distress of my poor mother; but though the strong affection I felt for her had always given her a great influence over me, this time her prayers could not change my determination. Luigi di Bernardi, a man of uncommon worth, a priest, anti-monastic on principle, by whom I had been early initiated into all that is manly, austere, and sublime in the annals of Greece and Rome, exerted all his energy and all his knowledge to change the bent of my mind. All his efforts failed to shake my resolution, though my gratitude and my respect for him were boundless. Many friends also beset me, and added additional gloom in the appalling pictures which several persons had already traced to me of the order of the Jesuits. But in all this I saw nothing but pure malevolence, or stratagems devised to change my resolution.

At length my father declared that I should never have his consent.

The arch-priest Quarelli, grieved at our approaching separation, was obliged, almost in spite of himself, to make use of an argument which he knew would be decisive with my father and mother, both overcome with anguish at the thought of losing their only child.

He told them that everything proved the irresistible force of my vocation, and that my internal struggles were no less cruel than theirs; that it was absolutely necessary to obey the voice which called me, under pain of warring against God himelf. He reminded them of Abraham, and of his willingness to sacrifice his only son. "Besides," continued he, "perhaps he will not be entirely lost to you: perhaps God will permit that you shall embrace him sometimes before your death. You cannot live in peace with your conscience unless you consent, and, be well assured, the reward that awaits you at your last home will be equal to the greatness of your sacrifice; while, on the other hand, how deep would be your remorse if you persisted in refusing to God that which he asks of you!"

To talk thus to my parents was to attack them on their vulnerable side. Though they were most deeply afflicted, they consented at last to bid me farewell. My father was unable to pronounce a single word; my mother was almost overwhelmed by grief.

Just at this time Father Roothaan wrote thus to me:—

"Dearly beloved son, I trust that you will follow up your holy vocation in such a manner that we may never have to repent—you, of the resolution you have taken; I, of having proposed you; the superiors, of having accepted you. Your eternal salvation, your solid religious perfection for the greater glory of God, are and ought to be the first and principal motive for which you desire to enter into the company. You will need all your courage, as I told you, when you come to me for examination. In order to be a good and a true Jesuit it is indispensable to possess a strong heart, and to be ready not only to labour much, but to suffer much—aye, even unto death!—to be persevering in humility, in obedience, in patience, seeking only God, who will himself be *merces vestra magna nimis.* Therefore, *confortare et esto robustus.* In giving yourself up to the order you place yourself in the hands of Divine Providence! Confide yourself wholly to Him, and He will conduct you safely to port! Under His protection we may sing whilst we steer!

"Hasten your preparations so that you may present yourself here in September,* and I will send you immediately to Chieri, that you may there lay, in the novitiate, the solid foundations of a truly religious and Jesuitical life."

A few days afterwards I received from him another letter, in the following terms:—

"Now, then, you may at once enter the novitiate. Such is the purport of a letter of yesterday's date, sent me by the father rector of Chieri. Call at St. François-de-Paule, in Turin; if I am not there, you will find me at Chieri, where the novitiate is. As to the manner of proceeding to Chieri, you will be informed of it here, at St. François-de-Paule. Pray for me to the Lord.

"Yours most affectionately in Christ,
"JOHN ROOTHAAN,
"of the Society of Jesus."

---

* *Sic,* although the letter was dated the 2nd September (1824.)

III.

I set out accordingly. On my arrival, they placed in my hands the rules which related to this first phasis of my new existence. I was immediately initiated into the exercises of Saint Ignatius, and of other saints—all Jesuits. It is by this sudden and complete immersion of the soul that they acquire their unlimited power over so many young men, unarmed by experience, and totally without defence, from the unreflecting enthusiasm which belongs to their age.

The most profound silence, rarely interrupted even by whispers, reigned in this abode, which was however not destitute of material comforts. The *guardian angel* (for this is the name given to the father attached to each novice) was accustomed to close the shutters of my windows, in order that I might remain as much as possible in obscurity. Thus seated, in partial darkness, he reasoned aloud on the world, on sin, and on eternal punishment. Conformably to one of the rules of the founder of the society, he designated those who do not submit in all things to the decisions of the church, as an army of rebels, angels of darkness, whom Satan inspires and governs, and against whom battle must be waged, until the day of final victory by the army of the faithful, led on by those angels of light and chiefs of the sacred militia, the Jesuits. As for the enemy's camp, he spoke of nothing in it but its reeking pestilence and corruption.

The indispensable complement of these private and daily discourses is weekly confession, comprising an avowal of every affection of the heart, every sentiment of the mind, and even of one's dreams. This is the plummet-line always kept in hand by the superiors, and by means of which they ascertain what is passing in the very depth of their pupils' consciences. The miracles of all sorts with which the heads of the latter are filled are all invented in order to rear upon supernatural bases a structure of absolute and blind obedience. Under such a system, wherein there is neither conversation, nor reading, nor devotional exercise which has not been elaborately adjusted by a mysterious power, in such a manner as to take possession of both the understanding and the heart, each individual who has been wrought upon during a sufficient time, comes at last to consider himself religiously bound to the total surrender of his own will.

For myself, I felt my own personality daily diminishing, and I blessed this progressive self-annihilation, and recognised in it the sign of my salvation.

The subject most peculiarly dwelt upon, during my confessions, was the affection which still bound me to the remembrance of my friends and relations. I was constantly told that it was my imperative duty to tear asunder these bonds of affection, and stifle these remembrances: their complete immolation was represented to me as the most sacred of triumphs. To devote myself entirely to the order, was the sole object prescribed to me. As long as there existed within me the smallest trace of self-will, or of earthly affection, there would be something remaining of the "old man" which was finally to be absorbed in the Jesuit. I was by no means astonished that they should thus seek to convert me into a new being, for I truly believed that the more I should identify myself with the society the more I should belong to God; and in this deadening of every feeling which might stand in the way of my entire dedication to the order, I perceived nothing but a just and reasonable consequence of its directing principle: "that the fewer ties we have with all that might distract us from our purpose, the more will be our power to persuade others to acknowledge that authority which it is the mission of the Jesuits to proclaim, as the only one upon earth which is not subject to error."

IV.

Thus far, all went on well. However laborious it might be, I subjected myself resolutely to the *probatoria* (the probation which precedes the novitiate). Not that I was exempt from anxiety and sorrow. Far from it. In hours of deep depression and anguish, my thoughts recurring to many a beloved object I had just forsaken, and feeling that my heart was empty, my mind perturbed, my soul sinking within me, and even my imagination, hitherto so free, enchained, I confess that I shrank back with terror and repented. Never, however, even in those gloomy moments, did the idea of renouncing the society seriously take possession of me. The fact is, there was not a particle of all I had heard from Father Roothaan, but what I believed to be true, noble, holy, and more worthy to be followed than anything else on earth. Moreover, when these mental struggles beset me, I was told that those very persons who had sustained the like, had afterwards made themselves the most distinguished in the order for their zeal; and that far from regarding such things as proofs of a want of vocation, I ought rather to behold in them a mark of Divine election. "By and by," they told me, "when your studies shall have been completed, the immolation of the 'old man' accomplished, and your special vocation determined, you will only have to unfold your wings without fear of any impediment to your soaring flight."

This sort of language cheered me, and it is probable that I should have grown more and more attached to the society, that I should even have become one of its most devoted members, but for the incidents which I am about to relate.

V.

My too intense application to the subjects of a gloomy devotion, and the utter solitude of the *probatoria*, had broken down my spirits and my health. The first complaint I made, immediately procured me the indulgence of meat on a fast-day; and, when I would have refused this favour, it was in vain that I alleged the trifling nature of my indisposition. My *guardian angel*, Father Saetti, of Modena, solemnly replied to me that I ought to take especial care of my health, that I was called to be a labourer in the Lord's field, and that it was by no means the intention of the church to exact too much of those who, having torn asunder all the bonds of the flesh and of the world, delivered themselves up to her with devotedness.

Every morning, fasting, they obliged me, in spite of my extreme repugnance, to drink a sort of mulled wine, rather thick, and of a singular flavour, which had the effect of producing, during the whole of the day, a species of torpor which I had never before experienced. In vain I refused this potion; all I could obtain was the permission to begin with small doses, until I should become accustomed to it.

At length, fatigued by long poring over ascetic books, and by the meditations which I was required to make again and again for hours on my knees, without any support, and being tempted by the fine autumn weather to breathe the fresh air and enjoy the sunshine, I begged my *guardian angel* to ask permission for me of the rector to walk for a few moments alone in the garden. "You have only," he replied, "to go to him and ask this permission for yourself; you may be certain he will grant you whatever favour is in his power."

It was not, however, until two days afterwards that, excited by the splendour of a day more than usually beautiful, I resolved to make my request.

It was in the afternoon. I quitted my chamber, and went to the rector's apartment, the door of which I found open, although the rector was absent. This circumstance surprised me not a little, as among the Jesuits everything is conducted with the most exact regularity.

As the novices never address the superior, who has the direction of the novitiate, otherwise than by his title of rector, I am unable here to designate him by his name; but nothing would be easier than to know it by ascertaining who was the Jesuit father occupying the direction of the novitiate house at Chieri in the month of September, 1824.

This father was without any austerity of manner. I had every reason to be gratified by his kindness to me, and separated as I was from all those whom I had loved, I began to feel some attachment for him. From my first entrance into the house, he had even admitted me to a considerable degree of familiarity, with a view, no doubt, to insinuate himself into my confidence, all of which, indeed, he was in a fair way of obtaining. But the familiarity to which he had accustomed me had, on this occasion, a result very unfortunate for his speculations. If he had treated me with that reserve which intimidates and keeps at a distance, I should never have presumed to enter his apartments during the absence of the master, to go from one room to another, and to allow myself to do what I am about to relate.

VI.

I entered, then, the opened door, and perceiving nothing unusual in the room, except a small table, covered with bottles and glasses, in the right-hand corner, I supposed that the rector's absence was momentary, and that he would presently return. For want of something to do, I sauntered with a sort of lazy curiosity into an adjacent chamber, where a small library immediately attracted my attention. Impressed as I was by the holy maxims which were daily repeated to me, and above all by those solemn words which began and closed every conversation—*Ad majorem Dei gloriam*—how should I have doubted but that I was dwelling among angels? In fact, it is impossible to imagine anything more touching than the generosity with which the fathers attribute to each other the rarest virtues and the most astonishingly miraculous of powers. I was not far, indeed, from believing implicitly that I was an inmate of a place peculiarly favoured by a constant communion with Heaven.

It was impossible, then, that I should for a moment conceive the thought that the rooms of the rector of a novitiate, who, as my confessor, was ever exciting me to a life of purity and elevation, should contain any books but those of piety and holiness. Weary as I had grown for some time of incessantly reading the exercises of Saint Ignatius, and incited by an irresistible desire to turn over some other leaves than those, I raised my hand to a shelf of the library, and joyfully seized a volume. To my surprise, I perceived a second row of books behind the first. Curiosity impelled me to take down the volume which had been concealed by the first I laid hold on. The name of the author has escaped my recollection, but it was, I think, a philosopher of the last century. I should have looked at it more deliberately, had not a third row of books, behind the second, struck me by the peculiar style of the binding. What was my astonishment when this title met my gaze, "CONFESSIONS OF THE NOVICES!" The side edges of the book were marked with the letters of the alphabet. Could I do less than seek for the initial of my own name?

The first pages, written, probably, a few days after my arrival, contained a rough sketch of my character. I was utterly confounded. I recognised my successive confessions, each condensed into a few lines. So clear and accurate was the appreciation given of my temperament, my faculties, my affections, my weakness and my strength, that I saw before my eyes a complete revelation of my own nature. What surprised me above all was the conciseness and energy of the expressions employed to sum up the characteristics of my whole being. The favourite images I found in this depository of outpourings of all sorts from the heart of ingenuous youth, were borrowed from the materials used in building—hard, fragile, malleable, coarse, precious, necessary, accessory; a sort of figurative language which has kept fast hold on my memory. I only regret that I could but glance with the rapidity of lightning over the pages that concerned myself; yet this glance sufficed to reveal to me the object of such a work. An idea may be formed of it from the passage I am about to cite, and of which I have retained an indelible remembrance.

"The amount of enthusiasm and imagination with which he is endowed," said the text, "might in time be made very useful in varnishing our work. His want of taste for the *grotesque (sic)* in religion* will do no harm, but it proves that his talent must be employed in recommending and exalting, to the more delicate consciences, all that is pure and ennobling in religion. He would spoil all if we were to let him set to work on the clumsier parts of the edifice; whilst he will greatly aid its advancement if he is employed exclusively in the more delicate parts. Let him be kept, therefore, in the upper regions of thought, and let him not even be aware of the springs which set in movement the vulgar part of the religious world.

---

* Father Saetti, knocking at my door one morning, according to his custom, I did not immediately open it. "Why this delay?" he asked me. I replied that I could not open the door sooner. He then reminded me that, in all things, the most prompt obedience was the most perfect; that in obeying God we must make every sacrifice, even that of a moment of time. "One of the brethren," he continued, "was occupied in writing, when some one knocked at his door. He had begun to make an *o*, but he did not stay to finish it. He opened

"It is important that he should always have near him, in his moments of depression, some one to cheer him with brilliant anticipations. But should his ardour, on the contrary, lead him too far, some discouragement or disappointment must be prepared for him, in order to mortify him and keep him in subjection."

Not an atom of what I had, as a matter of conscience, revealed to my *guardian angel*, or confessor, was omitted in this register. When I recollect what sweeping inductions were drawn from the trifles which I had considered myself bound to communicate, I cannot wonder that such a system, so based on profound study of character, pursued with so much assiduity and constancy, and applied on so vast a scale to individuals of every age and every condition, should place in the hands of the Jesuits an almost infallible means for attaining the end which they have proposed to themselves, with such extraordinary determination.

It may be imagined what were the reflections aroused within me on the discovery I had made. In an instant I

---

the door, and on returning to his seat, he found the *o* completed, and all in gold! Thus you see how God rewards him who is obedient." I received this story with a burst of laughter, at which he appeared much scandalised. "What!" he exclaimed, with an alarmed face, "do you not believe in miracles?" "Most certainly I do," replied I; "but this one is only fit to tell to old women."

This was, no doubt, repeated to the superior, and gave rise, I imagine, to the secret remarks quoted above.

recalled all the sinister statements which had been made to me respecting this celebrated society. But none of these thoughts had time to fix themselves in my mind, so eagerly was I incited by the desire to know more. Agitated, carried away, by a dizzy curiosity and an increasing anxiety, I seized a volume entitled, *Confessions of Strangers.* I hastily glanced over a few lines, here and there, and the small portions that I read induced me afterwards to believe, that everything in this order is done conformably to the rules of the little code, known by the name of *Monita Secreta*, or *Secret Instructions.* It was, in fact, a collection of notes upon persons of every class, of every age, rich men, bachelors, &c. Here again were circumstantial details—propensities, fortune, family, relations, vices and virtues, together with such anecdotes as were calculated to characterize the personages. It is only in cases of exception, as I have since learnt, that a Jesuit remains long in the same place. If he be allowed to continue his sojourn there, it is only when the superiors are convinced of the incontestable utility of the influence which he exercises. Whenever a Jesuit, particularly one of moderate abilities, has used up the resources of his mind in any particular place, and when he seems to have nothing new to produce, the regulations of the order require that he shall be replaced by another who may, in his turn, be remarked and admired for a longer or a shorter time. In these frequent changes there is another advantage: the new-comer, entering upon the sacred office of his predecessor, as soon as he has learnt the names of the persons who choose him for the director of their conscience, can, by means of the *Register of Confessions*, furnish himself, in a few hours, with all the experience acquired by his colleagues. This artifice endows him with the infallible power of surprising, confounding, and subjugating the penitents who kneel beside him; he penetrates them most unexpectedly, and, in a manner unprecedented, introduces himself into the most hidden folds of their hearts. It cannot be told with how much art the Jesuits profit by the astonishment they thus excite, and how adroitly they turn it to the advancement of their work' Thus, I have met with rich bigots, old men, and often with young persons of the weaker sex, who boldly maintain that the greater number of these reverend fathers are actually endowed with the spirit of prophecy.

VII.

I was, meanwhile, disposed to make further and bolder researches. The book which I next opened was a register of *Revenues, Acquisitions, and Expenses.* In my feverish impatience I soon quitted it for another, entitled, *Enemies of the Society.* At this moment I was interrupted by a noise which I heard, and scarcely had I time to replace the volumes I had disturbed, when I distinguished the sound of numerous approaching footsteps, as if several persons were about to enter the apartment. Then only I began to feel the danger of my presence in the closet.

Until then I had been wholly absorbed, and hurried along, as it were, by a whirlwind. But the discoveries I have related proved to be but the prologue to a drama infinitely more serious, and which I am about to retrace.

As soon as I was aware that the rector was returning, along with several other persons, I held a rapid debate within myself whether I should leave the inner room, and cross the other in their presence, or remain hidden as I was. But, in order to render my narrative more clear, I ought here, perhaps, to relate a fact which can alone explain why I had found the door of the apartment open. I learnt afterwards that a rich nobleman and courtier* had come to pay a visit to the Jesuit fathers at Chieri. I had myself a few days previously heard a rumour of the expected arrival of some fathers from a distance. At this period, the Jesuits were beginning to plant some roots in Piedmont, of which they meditated the conquest; and I doubt not that the superiors of the society resident at Chieri wished to offer a flattering reception to this high personage. Their conversation had, probably, run upon the work which they proposed to undertake in that country. I understood, at least, from some of their expressions, that they congratulated themselves on having interested their noble visitor, and trusted that they had acquired in him a powerful supporter. There seems every reason to suppose that the fathers, desirous of pleasing him, had, in their excess of politeness, accompanied him to his carriage, where the conversation and the parting compliments had been prolonged more than a quarter of an hour, whilst it had occurred to no one amongst them that the door of the rector's apartment was left open.

What might be the number of the fathers I cannot exactly report. To judge from the noise of voices, there might be at least eight or ten of them.

---

* The Marquis of Saluces, brother of the Count of Saluces. I had not named him in the manuscript which has been stolen from me. My plunderers have added, in their Berne publication, a verbal indiscretion to their actual theft.

As to myself, my perplexity may be better conceived than described. I was bewildered. What was I to do? Remain? But every moment I might expect to be discovered, and then! Should I open the door, and break in upon their eager conversation? But I was too much agitated, too much oppressed, by what I had just read; besides, what I had already overheard of their projects, their eager animation, and the freedom of their speech, all terrified me. I trembled at the bare idea of encountering their inquisitorial gaze. A fearful reaction had instantaneously taken place within me. The Society of Jesus was suddenly revealed to me in darker and more repulsive colours than those under which it had formerly been depicted to me. Confounded, paralyzed, and utterly unable to come to any determination, I remained motionless. . . . Far from being fatal to me, this loss of time was the circumstance which saved me.

VIII.

Whilst they were thus conversing together with considerable vehemence, all on a sudden, as if they had disappeared, the noise of their voices ceased, and a dead silence ensued. An electric shock could not have produced a greater revulsion of feeling than that I experienced; and the door of the room, in which I was, being a little open, as it had been from the first, my very pulses seemed to stand still during this pause.

Yet were I again to be submitted to such a trial, I know not whether I should again be capable of the resolution which then rose within me. I was composed, as it were, of two beings. I felt, at the same time, all the timidity and all the rash boldness of a child. A sort of fascination inspired me with a daring thought, leaving me at the same time perfectly aware of the danger of my situation. Others may be able to explain this mystery; for myself, I only state what occurred to me. I tell what I dared to attempt, and what I effected, without seeking to conceal the terror by which I was shaken during its execution, and which left an impression upon me that lasted more than a twelvemonth. Certain it is that I soon experienced, in the midst of my trembling fears, a sort of boyish exultation, a feeling of joy and triumph at the idea of being initiated into secrets, the mysterious and awful nature of which I was led to infer from the revelations of the library, the words which struck my ears, the opinion I had conceived of the power of the Jesuits, and the remembrance, which these circumstances so vividly recalled, of all that I had heard in their disfavour. But let me not anticipate.

Up to this time, I had been endeavouring to collect all my courage, in order to present myself before the assembly, and attempt to go forth, excusing myself to the rector, if, as was most likely, he should interrogate me; and, probably, I should have finished by taking this step, had the confused conversation continued much longer. The sudden silence, the idea that I was discovered, put an end to the resolution I was about to take. At the very moment when I expected to see the door opened, the incident which took place changed my situation, and rendered it critical in the last extreme. At the first words I heard, and which I am about to relate, I felt with terror that I was, in fact, witness of a council which held up before me the two grand perils between which I had to choose. But the danger, if I presented myself, was immediate though unknown, whilst it seemed to me that in temporizing there was some chance of safety. This latter plan, too, was the easier from its inaction; it left me a ray of hope that I might yet escape undetected, and I remained therefore motionless, awaiting my fate. I will now relate the words which almost immediately broke the awful silence.

I do not profess to give with literal accuracy, in each expression, the allocution of the Jesuit who filled the office of president on this occasion; but I pledge myself that the sense is faithfully and accurately reported: the words, which in a moment so grave, and in the midst of such profound attention, fell slowly and emphatically on my ear, remain indelibly imprinted on my memory.

"You will excuse me, dear brethren"—(an imperative gesture of the president himself had doubtless produced the silence which had been so startling to me)—"you will excuse me if I thus interrupt you. You are aware that we have no time to lose. To-day, as already resolved, we will enter into a general view of the interests and the plan of action by which our society is at present to be guided. Hitherto our discussions have related only to local affairs. We must now define the principles which are, henceforward, to regulate our conduct. The men with whom we have now to do, are totally dissimilar to those of past times. The plan which we are now to lay down must be calculated to meet present as well as future obstacles. And shall not we," he added, with a tone of concentrated haughtiness, "with our united efforts, be able to do as much as—nay, more than was done by one single man, in a few years, to the astonishment of the whole world? Hold yourselves ready then, you who have sufficient understanding to throw light upon the important questions which we have to resolve.

"You have, before your eyes, the list of those points which form our chief object.

"What is most important for us is, that our materials should augment, and that a book be ultimately made from them—I will not say a large book, but such a book, as may become, though small in volume, a vast fund, wherein shall be concentrated the experience of thousands, for the benefit of all those whom we shall initiate into our work. For you all know that since quiet is restored, and the genius of war is fettered, the mind of every nation is at the disposal of him who shall most adroitly take possession of it.

"But let us not deceive ourselves. However good our old swords may be, yet seeing the struggle which awaits us, it is not enough to sharpen them; we must above all things modernize them.

"We must first decide, then, what course to follow with the multitude who have been bewildered and fascinated by such fine-sounding words as 'right,' 'liberty,' 'human dignity,' and so forth. It is not by straightforward opposition, and by depreciating their idols, that we shall prevail. To prepare for men of all parties, whatever may be their banner, a gigantic surprise, that is our task. *(Creare a tutti i partiti, qualunque sia la lor bandiera, una gigantesca sorpresa, ecco la nostra opera.)*

"Let our first care, therefore, be to change, altogether, the nature of our tactics, and to give a new varnish to religion, by appearing to make large concessions. This is the only means to assure our influence over these moderns, half men, half children.

"We will first, then, take a review of the arsenal of our forces. The present meeting shall be the pregnant mother of our future proceedings *(séance mère)*, wherein we will concentrate all the ideas we have formed upon the epoch, so as to turn them to the aggrandisement of the church. Here are the minutes of the three preceding meetings, which you may all consult at your leisure. Broad margins have been left in order that you may note down your reflections, your rectifications, and even your objections, should such present themselves to your minds; and above all, your new views on the difficulties we shall encounter, and on the best means of vanquishing them. In this manner we shall become more and more enlightened on the grand design of our order, and on the course which will most promptly and most surely accomplish it.

"Bear ever in mind that our great object, in the first place, is to study deeply and bring to perfection the art of rendering ourselves both necessary and formidable to the powers that be."

IX.

It almost took away my breath to find the worst that had been told me of the Jesuits thus suddenly and unexpectedly confirmed by what I had just read and heard.

To open the door now, and to present myself before them, would have been the act of a madman. All that remained for me was to decide what I should do if I were discovered; and I thought my only possible resource, if I heard them approach the door, would be to stretch myself on the ground as if I were in a fit. I felt, in fact, as if I were on the point of being precipitated headlong down a precipice.

A salutary diversion drew me out of this state of extreme anxiety; there was a movement and a sound of chairs; they were evidently taking their seats at the table. Here was a respite! I breathed again. The person who had already spoken now uttered, in a simple and familiar tone, the following words, which suddenly inspired me with the feelings and the resolution of which I have spoken above.

"I should wish," said he, "that nothing should be lost of what we are about to say. I desire exceedingly that all our ideas may be committed to writing, so that others may have opportunity to criticise, develop, or improve them. Let us, therefore, deliver them clearly and deliberately, in order that our friend the secretary (*l'amico nostro, il secretario*) may lose nothing of what is said."

To hear this, to observe near me a small table furnished with writing materials, and to resolve to play myself the part of secretary, was the work of an instant.

From the commencement of my studies, first from caprice, and afterwards with a special motive, I had invented for my own use a system of abbreviations in writing. I had only thought, at first, of procuring myself a little leisure during the dictation of the lessons, and thus being able to amuse myself, with all the vain-glory of a schoolboy, in watching my fellow-students painfully writing down what I had long since finished. The indulgence of this diversion sometimes, indeed, induced the professor to require me to prove, by reading the dictation, that I had really written it. But I afterwards turned this species of stenography to more account, because it enabled me to enjoy furtive reading during the lessons. And the effect of it remains to this day; for, although I no longer make use of this system, I find it difficult to write without many abbreviations, so that my handwriting is, unfortunately for my correspondents, singularly illegible. Besides, those amongst the Jesuits whose native tongue was not Italian naturally spoke with slowness. Hence I had no difficulty in writing down all that was said. I was thus occupied until the close of the day; a quarter of an hour more, and daylight would have totally failed me.

I will not attempt to describe my sensations whilst thus occupied. I felt as if I had taken a prodigious leap. Still very young (I was only nineteen), simple and confiding, I was confronted, wholly unprepared, with the most daring and profound machinations which men, such as the chiefs of the Jesuits, were capable of devising. The veil withdrawn, I beheld myself face to face with one of the most mysterious powers which has ever been known to reduce to system, on a vast scale, the art of subjugating all sorts of passions—the passions of the mass, and the passions of sovereigns—to the obtaining of a fixed and immutable purpose.

Thus, scarcely daring to make the slightest movement, I was able, through the partly-opened door, to hear distinctly every word. I listened to the discourses of eight or ten of the most energetic chiefs of the society, who, having laid aside, on this occasion, their unctuous language, and honied phrases of holiness, boldly reasoned upon sects, parties, opinions, and interests, weighed both obstacles and resources, and built up a colossal edifice of delusion, before which Machiavel would have bowed his head.

This was a rude trial for an understanding so youthful and unprepared as mine. Besides this, the singularity of my situation—listening to and writing down the words of invisible personages, whilst I knew that the sword was suspended over me by a single thread—occasioned emotions so violent, that I cannot, to this day, recal them without a nervous shudder.

My readers' own feelings, as they peruse what follows, will enable them to judge what I must have suffered.

X.

A certain impression, which I welcomed as a hope of safety and of Divine protection, seemed to come upon me, that this singular situation, which I had neither sought nor foreseen, was not the effect of chance. Besides, my occupation absorbed me so deeply, that I had sunk into a sort of calm—a calm inwardly troubled, it is true, and, as it were, convulsive. But when I perceived that the sitting was about to draw to a close, all my agitation was renewed. A deep terror took possession of all my senses; after what I had heard and what I had done, I could not look for any mercy. At the noise which followed, when all the assembly rose from their seats, my knees knocked together, and drops of cold perspiration fell from my forehead.

Meanwhile, however much I resembled a condemned criminal whose hour of execution has arrived, I was not so wholly mastered by terror but that I had some lucid moments. I took advantage of the noise produced by their mutual congratulations to thrust my manuscripts into my stockings, and felt somewhat relieved when they were thus concealed. Afterwards, when the bottles were uncorked, and the glasses were jingled, I exerted all the little force I had left to ease my torpid limbs; for the posture I had been obliged so long to maintain had cramped my whole frame, especially my neck and my legs. Happily, the noise was now sufficient to allow me to stretch my limbs, and let my blood return to its natural circulation.

This relief obtained, and the noise in the adjoining room having again subsided, the chief who had already spoken, addressed the following observations to his colleagues, who listened with the renewed attention which his words seemed always to command.

"Where is the revolutionist who, as soon as he becomes engaged in any plot, is not obliged to risk his fortune and his life? As for us, we have nothing of the kind to fear. On the contrary, those who load us with favours, to whom we owe these spacious mansions where we hold our meetings in perfect safety, not only confide to us their subordinates and their families, but put themselves into our hands."

These last words, uttered in a slightly ironical tone, excited an approving murmur, which induced the speaker to add:—

"But let us not trust too much to the singular advantages of our admirable position. Let us rather take extreme care to avoid the least false step, so as to arrive safely at the result of our efforts."

After these words there was an explosion of enthusiasm —toast followed toast; but nothing of the precise meaning of their noisy conversation reached me. The only words I heard distinctly were these which one of them, evidently English or Irish by his accent, pronounced in a grave sonorous voice, accenting each syllable impressively: "*Et erit unum ovile, et unus pastor.*"

Continually in fear of being discovered, I expected every instant to see the joyous scene of which I was the unknown witness, change into a scene of death. I looked anxiously around me—not a corner where I could conceal myself. I heard the rapid beating of my heart; my fate seemed darker than the night whose approach rendered my thoughts still more gloomy. What a position! I at once desired and feared a change, whatever it might be. I desired it, that I might be released from such cruel constraint; I feared it, for what might befal me! All at once a fortunate accident roused me from my stupor—the house bell rang. I heard these words, "Come, let us to supper;" followed by these others, "We have earned one, and a good one too."

XI.

As soon as I could make out that they were moving to the door and were really going, I was seized with an agitation of quite a different nature from that which I had endured before. I cannot possibly express what I felt at this moment, when, listening attentively, I acquired the certainty that the room was becoming empty. It seemed to me that an overwhelming weight, which had oppressed me during half the day with a mysterious terror, was instantaneously taken away, as it were, by an invisible hand.

Thenceforward, full of courage, I did not doubt that God had assisted me till then, and that he would continue to assist me.

As soon as the sound of retreating steps had completely died away in the corridors, I crept softly into the apartment. Even there I could not help casting a look on the table round which the assembly had been seated. The temptation was too strong for my curiosity not to overcome my fears. The first thing that struck me was some great books in the form of registers, with alphabeted edges. The sight of them explained to me a noise I had heard at the moment when the Jesuits entered. However, no use had been made of these books during the conference.

Although at that hour I could scarcely see to read, yet I would not lose the opportunity of casting a rapid glance into these volumes. I found that they contained numerous observations relative to the character of distinguished individuals, arranged by towns or families. Each page was evidently written by several different hands. Beside these enormous volumes, I saw three unbound manuscript books, two in Italian, and one in French, all thickly set with marginal notes. If I had not been tormented with strong apprehensions, I could have employed some precious time in looking through this mass of writings. But I had incurred peril enough, and however great the attraction, it was necessary to resist it, and depart without more delay.

XII.

What activity in this order!—what power of combination!—what boldness of views!—what fecundity of means! But also, what pride to imagine it possible, even with all these appliances, to delude, ensnare, mystify, and quell this rebellious age, which becomes each day more clear-sighted to comprehend these plans, and perceive the definitive object of these manœuvres.

Jesuitism, indeed, has long lain under the most terrible suspicions.

Fra Paolo Sarpi, a man of great capacity, of consummate experience, a monk himself, and who, during a long life, had studied this amphibious sort of corporation (for it does not declare itself decidedly either ecclesiastic or monkish), calls it in his usual laconic language, "The secret of the court of Rome, and of all secrets the greatest."

"Of all the religious orders," said likewise the formidable Philip II., "that of the Jesuits is the only one which I cannot in the least comprehend."

At the present day this society continues to be an enigma, but its meaning is on the point of being found out.

One day during the last few years I opened the *Revue des Deux-Mondes*, and great was my surprise on finding there details very similar to those which I have just recounted, and of which, as I have already said, I made no mystery on my arrival in Switzerland. It is, nevertheless, possible, that the information contained in the following lines proceeded from another source: —

"The provincial houses correspond with those of Paris; they are also in direct communication with the general, who resides at Rome. The correspondence of the Jesuits, so active, so varied, and organized in so wonderful a manner, has for object to furnish the chiefs with every information of which they may stand in need. Every day the general receives a number of reports which severally check each other. There are in the central house, at Rome, huge registers, wherein are inscribed the names of all the Jesuits and of all the important persons, friends, or enemies, with whom they have any connexion. In those registers are recorded, without alteration, hate, or passion, facts relating to the lives of each individual. It is the most gigantic biographical collection that has ever been formed. The conduct of a light woman, the hidden failings of a statesman, are recounted in these books with cold impartiality; written with an aim to usefulness, these biographies are necessarily genuine. When it is required to act in any way upon an individual, they open the book and become immediately acquainted with his life, his character, his qualities, his defects, his projects, his family, his friends, his most secret acquaintances. Can you not conceive, sir, what paramount practical advantages a society must enjoy that possesses this immense police register which embraces the whole world? It is not on light grounds I speak of these registers, it is from one who has *seen* this collection, and who is perfectly acquainted with the Jesuits, that I derive my knowledge of this fact. It suggests matter for reflection for those families who give free access to the members of a community in which the study of biography is so adroitly cultivated and applied."

I was forced, though with regret, to quit the table; besides, the darkness prevented my reading profitably. I was under no difficulty about leaving the room; I knew that the door opened on the inside, and that I should only have to shut it gently to reach the corridor. I thought it best not to go to my room, as it must have been shut up during my absence. What I most dreaded at that moment was to meet any one, for I was convinced that during this absence of half a day I had been anxiously sought for. The best expedient I could think of was to go and place myself in a latticed pew in the church, in which I attended mass every day accompanied by my *guardian angel.*

XIII.

Alone there, and in some degree safe, I had leisure to feel the full effects of the fatigue of body and mind I had endured. All my ideas had in fact undergone a complete revolution, which, had it been effected slowly, would not have had the serious consequences of which I am about to speak; but it had taken place with extraordinary violence; the tree had been torn up suddenly by the roots and cast upon the furious waters of a torrent. I will not attempt to describe such a situation; at times I appreciated the event in all its reality; at others the burning of my brain was such that I did not doubt I had been the sport of some Satanic vision; I was present once more at the scene which I had witnessed, but it was now so exaggerated that I fancied I heard spectres or demons conversing together.

Under a load of such different impressions of fear, of astonishment, my intellectual and moral strength broken by toil and constraint, after having yielded myself up to a maze of gloomy and agonizing thoughts, it was a good thing for me that I sank into a deep sleep. It must have been about nine or ten in the evening, when I was suddenly awakened by some one shouting out my name. Mechanically I came out of my pew, and was still rubbing my eyes when I know not how many fathers came round me.

I was instantly overwhelmed with questions. I was obliged to pause some moments to collect my ideas; and then I could find nothing better to say than that I had felt unwell—that everything fatigued me—that the slightest noise tortured me—and that I had retired there to be alone.

But all this was far from satisfying them. Father Saetti remarked, that not only he had been where we then were, but that he had knocked at every door, even at that of the rector, without being able to find me.

In fact, during the meeting I had heard the door open; and so long as the whisperings lasted, and until it was shut again, I had felt a cold shudder run through my frame.

I replied, therefore, that it was true I had not been constantly there; that I had been absent for a quarter of an hour or so, and I mentioned a place to which I had been obliged to go.

The embarrassment manifested in every word I spoke increased their suspicions. The fathers, irritated rather than appeased by my replies, continued, under different forms, to repeat the same interrogations.

The *guardian angel* took the trouble to inform me, in an ill-humoured tone, that at first he had believed I had gone to make my request to the rector, but that my absence proving so long, he had changed his opinion. And as though he feared being accused of negligence, he justified himself in an eager and serious tone.

"It was impossible for me to suppose," said he to the rector, "that even if you had received him you would have kept him so long—above all to-day, when, on account of the meeting, you had told me there would be no reception. It was only after having been more than once to inquire of the porter and of the lay brothers, after having importuned everybody, that I began to suspect he might have run away. It was then at the risk of disturbing your meeting, not knowing what to do, I came and knocked at your door. Before supper, I hastened to inform you of his disappearance, and, had it not been to obey you, I should, for my own part, have judged it perfectly useless to go calling him through the corridors as I have just done. I can scarcely believe my eyes at seeing him there now."

There would have been no end to all this, if, wearied with so many questions, and making a bold effort, I had not begun to complain bitterly, groaning out that they tortured me, that I was exhausted with suffering, that I was dying.

An aged father, whom I recognised by his voice as one of those who had spoken during the meeting, suddenly cut short these puzzling interrogatories. "Let me see," said he, taking hold of my hand and feeling my pulse, whilst the rest stood keenly watching me in silence; then, after a few moments of serious thought, "Poor lad!" said he, "he is in a burning fever. To bed with him immediately! let the physician see him at once; I never in my life saw any one in such violent agitation; he is in a tremendous fever." This was sufficient to put an end to their suspicions.

XIV.

My first care, on being conducted to my room, was to endeavour to undress without assistance. I contrived, not without difficulty, to lay my stockings aside without any other person touching them. The physician, who soon arrived, confirmed the opinion already pronounced on the serious nature of my attack.

Wholly engrossed by the secret in my possession, as soon as I was left alone, notwithstanding the darkness and the deplorable state I was in, I opened the edge of one of my waistcoats with a penknife; I then took my manuscripts, reduced them into small squares, and placed them carefully within the lining, so as to make no show that could betray their existence. I was obliged, however, to defer till the morrow the task of stitching up the waistcoat.

When my health was in some degree restored, and I had recovered my composure, I communicated to the rector my determination to discontinue my studies for the novitiate. In this I was guilty of signal imprudence, and from that moment my intention of quitting the establishment was represented to me as an inspiration of the devil. The pertinacity with which they strove to detain me, against my will, was so much the more odious to me, as they protested that all they sought was the welfare of my immortal soul. I found myself compelled some time longer to champ the bit in silence.

The day of confession arrived. I had hitherto obeyed a rule which prescribed that the penitent should reply aloud to the questions of his confessor—a more efficacious means, it was said, of advancing in humility and of rendering the act of confession meritorious. This time I paid no attention to it. The rector remarked this, and severely reprimanded me. The fact is, that he never failed on the Saturday evening to place his chair against that very door which, on the day when I took my notes of the sitting, had remained partly open, and he seated himself in such a manner that my voice was necessarily directed towards the door. I was, meanwhile, kneeling on a sort of footstool, and my face nearly touched his. The knowledge I had acquired had rendered me suspicious. The care which he took to exhort me to speak louder, whilst the usual custom in confession is to whisper, called my attention to the door which was in front of me, and I examined it as carefully as my situation would permit. I perceived that it was slight, and composed of a number of narrow battens, with many small interstices between them. Of course, in my new frame of mind I could not help supposing that some mystery was hidden behind that door—that, perhaps, on the same spot where I had written down the proceedings of the meeting, on that very table, so well furnished with writing materials, a secretary took notes of all that was weekly elicited, by questions cunningly contrived so as to search out the inmost hearts of young men who would have scrupled to dissemble, in the solemn act of confession, even their most fugitive thoughts.

XV.

Let me now give an account of the contrary effect which was produced on me, in my present state, by those very things which had previously wrought upon me, as it were, by fascination.

The devotional books I was made to read, the sighs and lamentations I heard uttered for the multitude of souls whom the world beguiles and corrupts, and, above all, these maxims, " That it is only by sacrificing our inclinations that we can advance towards perfection; that inferiors ought to listen to their superiors as if God spoke by their lips ; that when we have become as a wand, or as a lifeless body in their hands, then only we have attained the height of obedience; and that this short life cannot be better employed than for the triumph of the church, and in seeking to bring all to her." These books, these sighs, these maxims appeared to me as nothing else than the means of an abominable deception.

Nothing annoyed me so much as the pains they took to embue my gait, my gestures, and even my looks with a certain air of austerity, and to prune my habitual language of certain free and artless expressions, with a view to impose others upon me, of a honied, specious, and sanctimonious nature. To meditate for ever, in such a place as this, on the eternity of punishment, everlasting felicity, and the duty of putting off the old man and putting on the new, and to pass the beads of a chaplet daily through my fingers, were exercises incompatible thenceforward with the new life which I had received in that very place. But what consummated my disgust was to be compelled to participate in conventional groanings, and in a pious loquacity of which it is impossible to form an idea. How, indeed, could I have continued to be at all deceived as to the nature of these practices? I was now aware of their purpose. They hoped, by means of all their trash of hollow and heartless prayers, their fictitious ecstacies, and chimerical communion with God, to galvanize my imagination, to suppress a portion of my being, and by marring my reason to obscure and mutilate my understanding, so that they might at length become its absolute masters.

The traces of the crisis through which I passed have been so profound, that no religious phraseology, however grand, has ever since been able to impose upon me. So far from being, in my estimation, a warrant of solid piety, a profusion of set phrases induces me rather to inquire whether it is not employed as an instrument of political views, or of self-interested speculation. I have become more and more averse from that heavy formality which almost everywhere stifles the fruitful principles of the gospel; and I have good right to disapprove of and detest it, since I early encountered the most venomous of reptiles under its thick foliage. I know, indeed, of no better rule for judging of men and things than that given by Jesus: "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, nor an evil tree good fruit. By their fruits ye shall know them."

Convinced that the rector would never cease to oppose my departure, I matured a project of flight, and I chose for its execution what I thought the most favourable hour of the afternoon. I went immediately to the very hotel at which, a short time before, I had dined with the arch-priest, the day of my entrance into the novitiate. From thence I sent to the establishment for whatever belonged to me. One of the fathers immediately came to me, and exerted all his eloquence to convince me that I had committed a heinous fault; but it was in vain he protested that salvation is scarcely to be attained by those who mingle in the world's ways, whereas if we die in the society it is assured to us, according to the promise of St. Ignatius—I was no longer the man to give heed to such fables. Abstaining from all imprudent disclosures, and avoiding every symptom of rancour, I at length dismissed my persevering visitor, and now I thought only of returning to my parents. A physician, whom I found it necessary to consult, advised me to avoid the motion of a carriage, and to travel rather by boat upon the Po. It is astonishing how the eager desire to quit this place, and the joy of breathing the free air, took away all feeling of the indisposition under which I was still labouring. But scarcely had I proceeded six or seven leagues by water ere my illness increased so much, that when I was landed at Casala I was considered to be in danger. I was therefore compelled to remain at that place until I was able to be removed to Langosco, my native town.

Amidst so many trials it was, however, a consolation to me that throughout this perilous affair I had avoided the worst of all evils, that of betraying myself. In the height of the fever, brought on by all I had gone through, every word I uttered had some confused reference to the meeting of which I had made a minute. I had to strive against this tendency of my disorder, and so great was the struggle, that I suffered from the effects of it for more than a year. The strangeness of the event, and the fear of betraying my own share in it, had deranged my whole being.

XVI.

It is important that I should touch upon other annoyances to which I was subjected as soon as it was known that I had left the Jesuits. No one was more visibly hurt at my abandonment of the novitiate than was my former friend the curé. My brief abode at Chieri, my escape, the complaint against me addressed to him by the superior, and, more than all, my extreme reserve with the Jesuits, from whom I declared, however, I had never experienced anything but good treatment—all these things were to him totally inexplicable. Those who compared my former enthusiasm with my present icy silence, accused me of inconsistency, and harassed me with questions; and the necessity under which I was placed of answering evasively, contributed not a little to make it appear that I was in the wrong. But the greatest grief I felt on this occasion was that he who had hitherto loved me as his son, so that we could not pass a day without seeking each other's society, now shut his door against me, declaring, with indignant severity, that for the future he would have nothing to do with me. This was my old friend the curé. And in fact he had witnessed in me so much resistance overcome, so many sacrifices made, so many ties, and those the dearest, broken, that he could not but consider my vocation as a strong and decided one. It appeared unpardonable in his eyes that I should have no reason to allege for the suddenness of the change, none to justify my flight; and nothing could exasperate him more than the utter apathy I showed with regard to the Jesuits, after having been one of their most ardent admirers; an apathy which I could not disguise, although it rendered my conduct still more enigmatical. All this kept us asunder during several years, and even when our reconciliation at last took place, he could not refrain from treating me as inconstant, unreasonable, flighty, and paradoxical. In fact he only consented to receive me again on condition that not a word should be said on all this affair.

XVIII.

I will now give an idea of the conduct which I was obliged to adopt, in order to make my way in the clerical world. I pursued my theological studies, and very naturally the pages I possessed were the frequent subject of my meditations. Instead of being influenced by official instruction, I soon became sensible that, in my case, it only served as an antidote against itself. I thus preserved my thoughts from pursuing the common track. But a crowd of reflections were awakened within me on all that I saw, and these I was absolutely forced to suppress. To form an idea of what all this cost me, it would be necessary to make a close acquaintance with life in a seminary.

Reciprocal mistrust is the first lesson taught there; servility is recommended as the height of virtue; espionage is noble, everything is pardoned to him who practises it, whilst the greatest implacability is shown towards him who dares to call it a base occupation. The doctrine of pride is also carried to its greatest height in the opinion which the priest is taught to form of his own dignity. He is told to consider himself as no less superior to the laity than man is to the brute. He is told that he must not be familiar with the people; that he must maintain a certain distance in order to be the more imposing, and the better to inculcate the superiority of the church, or (which comes to the same thing) of the clergy. The students in these ecclesiastical establishments, almost all of the poorer classes, shrink from no sacrifice, because they are sustained by the hope of improving their condition. Yes, all that is sought, with such concentrated eagerness, under the semblance of this plausible mechanism of worship, is, in plain truth, a position more or less brilliant—a trade, in fact, by which to live. Such is the mainspring of this machinery, and it does not fail to keep all in movement. And to say the truth, whoever has eyes to see and ears to hear, can feel no doubt that this is the means employed to influence, modify, transform, render subservient, or stifle, if need be, opinions, ideas, and systems. So that the greater number of young men, who are brought by instruction to admit these ready-made convictions, and who are incapable of a free and magnanimous resolution, easily lend themselves to certain functions in the Catholic hierarchy, and each works at his appointed hour, and in his appointed place, with surprising readiness and regularity.

When my eyes had once begun to penetrate all these combinations, and their unavoidable results, I perceived within myself symptoms of another revolution. Every amusement was insipid to me; and my soul, early awakened, and yet imprisoned in a little world, an epitome of all that is stirring in the great world, set itself to work secretly to discuss a multitude of questions, delicate in their nature, and difficult to solve. I was in a situation every way exceptional. I was like a person who is placed behind the curtain during a scenic representation, and who witnesses the play of the wires. Thus, the pomp and show of religion, its fêtes, liturgies, solemnities, and devotional practices, inspired me with nothing short of repugnance. But forced to submit to circumstances, with my eye fixed upon a multitude of figures, and on the concealed springs which put them in movement, I shrank, pensively, within myself. This, however, I will say, that notwithstanding all the obligations which I felt were imposed upon me by my situation, neither the sermons at chapel, nor the weekly gymnastics to which I was forced to resign myself, in order to be one of the actors in the insipid exhibition of high mass, nor the act of confession and its monthly certificates, nor all the constraint imposed by constant espionage, operated in the same manner upon me that it did upon others. It roused within me a rebellious feeling, instead of rendering me docile to receive the common stamp.

Alone, as it were, amongst a great number of fellow-students, almost unconnected with them, on account of my eccentricity and isolation, I was compelled to have recourse to whatever change or occupation I could procure, in order to render my situation supportable. I ransacked all the works that came within the limits of the prescribed rules, in the hope of appeasing my thirst of knowledge, and for want of larger resources, my mind was absorbed in reasoning and reflection. I deeply studied (and this was the source of much reproach to me) a Latin Bible, divided into small volumes, one of which I always had about me. Meanwhile the orchestra poured forth its anthems, the altar shone resplendent with gold, the bishop enthroned himself with his scenic adornments; they knelt, they bowed, they waved the censers, they chanted, they stunned the ears, and dazzled the eyes; whilst I, in order to detach myself, as much as possible, from all this mechanical mummery, gladly abandoned my seat at the feast, always furnished on days of extraordinary ceremony, to those who were well contented to take my place; that is to say, to any of those beings as fond of these ceremonies as they were stupid and greedy.

My antipathy for these material forms of worship became generally perceived, and produced considerable scandal. I felt, meanwhile, an increasing ardour in the study of the Prophets and of the New Testament, in order to acquaint myself perfectly with the type of doctrine and the plan of redemption which they contain. If I consented, from time to time, to play a part in the numerous exhibitions which are indispensable in every grand Catholic solemnity, I did it with so bad a grace, and with such evident repugnance, that my fellow-actors were both amused and angry; so extremely susceptible are priests in all that relates to their ceremonies.

Such was the effect upon me of the event which I have related; and I was compelled to maintain a daily and hourly struggle with the desire I felt to communicate it. Notwithstanding all my reserve, however, involuntary glimpses of revelation from time to time escaped me, like flashes of lightning, and excited surprise and alarm in some for whom I had the greatest respect and love; so that they began to look upon me as an inexplicable anomaly, and I became convinced that my only hope of safety was to preserve the most rigorous silence.

XVIII.

My studies being terminated, I applied for ordination. And now I was made sensible of the obstacles I had to expect. I observed in all those who directed the seminary, not excepting the rector himself, a determination to stop my progress. I begged of them to inform me what were the motives of their refusal, and to say in what my conduct had given them offence? They replied, that I had no taste for religious ceremonies, and that, consequently, I had no vocation for the church; that I read too much, and that they could not understand me. As they persisted in their refusal, a canon, highly placed, who had long been my confessor, a man of a singular and complex character, procured me an introduction to Grimaldi, archbishop of Vercelli. When I represented to him the deplorable ignorance and the scandalous immorality of many of the pupils of the seminary, who had been received into holy orders by the influence of certain personages, and even by that of certain ladies, whilst those who were questioned as to my conduct had not a word of reproach to bring forward, he was obliged to intrench himself behind a custom which exists of never accepting a candidate who is opposed by his superiors.

I recount these details in order to show that the superiors with whom I had to do were unable to comprehend my character. They were anxious to interdict me from ever entering into the Catholic sanctuary; but they were unable to find an effectual pretext. The archbishop owned himself, at length, dissatisfied with mere suspicions, vague accusations, and gratuitous assertions of the difficulty of ascertaining my tendencies.

One of the many proofs I could furnish, that the singular secret of which I was possessor influenced all my views and directed all my proceedings, is, that as soon as I had succeeded in obtaining ordination, I took my departure for Turin.

In one of the intervals of the secret conference, during which the Jesuits relaxed themselves by a little familiar conversation, I had heard the theologian Guala spoken of as an ecclesiastic very serviceable to their plans. No sooner, then, was I at liberty to pursue my own projects, than I endeavoured to procure an introduction to him. He instructs a chosen band of young priests, in the capital of Piedmont, whom he trains up for confessors, and he conforms, in all things, to the views of the Jesuits, whom he considers as models of perfection. His morality is theirs.

XIX.

What most struck me, on my entrance into this congregation, was the chief himself. Small of stature, of great activity, with a most penetrating eye, inflexible with the little, and supple with the great, I beheld him every morning besieged, both at his own residence and at the confessional, by the most influential and the most distinguished persons of both sexes whom the city possesses.

Every week, at an appointed time, priests, young and old, crowded into a vast hall, and a conference took place, in which this theologian and his colleagues, all spiritual directors of the highest families, conducted the discussion of cases of conscience. For myself, all my attention was applied to study the tactics employed to furnish young confessors with rules not only different, but absolutely opposed to each other, and to teach them how to use them. I acquired also the clearest conviction that the supreme art of the confessional is, to utilize for the church, that is, for the clerical hierarchy, sins and crimes of every species. Casuistry, like a Proteus, for ever displayed itself to my eyes under varying colours. The waving willow branch is not more flexible than are these doctors in their principles of morality.

Every young priest is at liberty to play, by turns, the part of confessor and that of penitent. In the latter case, assuming the character of bigot or libertine, or acting the part of statesman, marquis, countess, or man or woman of the lower classes, he simulates the passions and adventures of all ages, sexes, and conditions. I listened with particular attention to the mentors, aged men of great experience, when they corrected the apprentice-confessors; not a word did I suffer to escape me of the many which revealed, in all its sinuosities, contrasts, and searching subtleties, all subservient to views of interest and domination, the nature of the language which they were to employ with the several classes of society.

But it is from a number of anecdotes, from conversations, from words let fall in public, or confidentially, from manuscripts which were only confided to trustworthy persons, that I acquired the certainty that the hidden designs of the Jesuits are executed by the aid of a multitude of adherents, who are entirely ignorant of the power that acts upon them, but are governed by others, who appear to know something of it, but in different degrees.

This same theologian, who had at his disposal benefices small and great, from the humblest offices up to mitred ones, succeeded, with great skill, in presenting himself to my selection when he learned that I was engaged in the choice of a confessor. My confession, genuine at first, was soon changed into a sort of conversation that had no relation to it, as a religious act. He, nevertheless, required that, every Sunday, the priests whose director he was should not fail to kneel before him at the hours when the church was most crowded: it is not difficult to guess the motive for such an exhibition.

He little suspected, however, that instead of studying me, as he proposed, he was giving me ample and continual subject for the study of himself.

Everything had, indeed, concurred to enable me gradually to penetrate the system which was carried on. I was not imposed upon by the numerous equipages which crowded round his door, and by the assemblage of persons of consequence, and ladies of rank, who waited upon him.

In this place, where the Jesuits, thanks to their devoted auxiliary, train up the clergy according to their views, I was more successful in my researches than I could have hoped. I was even so fortunate as to surprise miracles in their very germs—to learn how they are wrought up and brought to perfection—how they are introduced on the scene, and used as a lever for the accomplishment of ulterior projects.

I might have established myself in this congregation, and have counted, if I had chosen to make my court to him, on the credit of so powerful a protector. He did all in his power to inoculate me with his own ideas; but quackery, which in general deserves only contempt, ought to be more than despised in the church. An attendance of one year on this able and wealthy casuist, was enough to enable me to appreciate not only himself but his troops of adorers.

I now determined to quit this place, in order to pursue my investigations on a larger scale. I therefore abstained from returning, with the others, at the end of the vacation.

XI.

I will not conceal a strong temptation, which, for a while, diverted me from the path I had laid down for myself.

Seeing the rapid elevation of certain individuals of wretched abilities, who seemed to defy me as incapable of rivalling them, I was more than once on the point of making use of the secret of the Jesuits, as a sort of itinerary, in order to arrive, by a shorter way, at a respectable position in the ecclesiastical career.

This temptation did not last long, though I was often taken hardly to task by my father and his friends, sometimes because I devoted myself to the study of the bible and of the fathers of the church (a study which, I was assured, would be without any utility either immediate or remote); sometimes because I had declared my fixed determination never to aspire to any appointment or any honour whatsoever. Thus circumstanced, I felt that I must renounce my design of future expatriation, or make up my mind not to shrink from any kind of mortification. Happily for me, as my ardour increased to explore the foundations upon which Catholicism is built, my eyes became gradually opened, and I discerned more distinctly in what a mass of dogmatical, moral, and historical errors I had been brought up. This led me to conclude that it was not only a small portion of the Catholic hierarchy, as I had previously supposed, whose infection was dangerous, but the whole hierarchy itself, which, by its doctrines and by its aim, perverted the precepts of Christ, and pursued a course entirely repugnant to

His teachings. And, in good truth, although the Catholic church, inscribing in its calendar, and in the breviary of its priests, the names of the doctors of the first six centuries, constitutes them—(strange fiction!)—the columns of the church, declares them its organs, and worships them as its saints, we may, nevertheless, boldly affirm, when we know these fathers more intimately than by their names, and when we have weighed their writings, that they all, one after another, bring their portion of gunpowder and place it under the edifice of degenerated Catholicism; and in such abundant quantity, that there is a thousand times more than enough to blow up the whole and reduce it to dust.

XXI.

The examination which I thus made naturally inspired me with the desire to make another, equally useful and important.

I desired to know all that passed in other seminaries, in the different brotherhoods, in the cloisters, in the houses of the curés, but above all, in the dwellings of the superior clergy. Thus, there is no labour which I was not willing to undertake in order to penetrate all the springs and all the combinations by which, even in our times, though it be not in the same manner as formerly, the Catholic organization can boast of being endowed both with a boundless elasticity, and an inflexible rigidity that no other has ever possessed, or perhaps ever will.

On this account, I do not, therefore, regret the pains I took.

I could not, however, fail to perceive that, in consequence of the social condition of my country, I should at last become exposed to unpleasant consequences, should the least suspicion be entertained as to the twofold direction of my inquiries. I thought it necessary, on this account, to carry on, under a literary veil, my dogmatical and historical researches, and above all, those which I carried into the the domain of contemporary religion. I have always had an inclination for poetry and the fine arts. Availing myself therefore of this tendency, I let it be generally understood that the cultivation of letters was my ruling passion. This expedient, far from being an obstacle to the exploratory work which I had undertaken, furnished me, on the contrary, by the intercourse it procured me with persons of all classes, with numberless opportunities of appreciating the progress of the occult ideas of the Jesuits, whilst I seemed to be amusing myself with matters of trivial import.

Monks of every hue came frequently and eagerly to visit me, for sake of the sermons which I dictated to them. Assiduous reading of every kind had rendered this sort of improvisation easy to me. These men were open-mouthed beyond all conception, and they made me the depository of all they knew. Good easy men they were for the most part, but never having passed the bounds of monkish instruction, they were profoundly ignorant of the true nature of the system by which they were passively swayed. Each of them, in fact, might be regarded, in his degree, as a compendium of what passes within the cloister, and of the doctrines which are there taught.

I strove to make myself acquainted with the methods prescribed to them in order to become good confessors.

Some of the oldest, and the most noted for strictness in the confessional, told me what strange concessions are made by the Jesuits to certain consciences; and their anger was sometimes aroused when they related to me the efforts, too often useless, which they were forced to make against such a powerful means of seduction.

In this manner I gradually acquired clearer views, not only as to the Christian scheme, but also as to that no less mysterious enigma, the purpose of modern Catholicism. I saw it unfold itself by degrees, and I became convinced that both in the secular and regular clergy, and in the higher and lower classes of society, a metamorphosis was taking place in accordance with the views of the Jesuits.

How many phrases of the secret conference, which had appeared to me as mere momentary ebullitions, and flights of Utopian hyperbole wholly out of place in times like ours, recurred forcibly to my memory when facts themselves came forth as commentaries upon them! As yet unlearned in the complication of human affairs, I had long regarded as impracticable the mode of action which the Jesuits had proposed to themselves in their secret meeting, in order to get the mastery over both people and aristocracy, by bringing them under the influence of the most opposite doctrines. But experience, acquired in the world of the great and in the world of the little, convinced me that I had been mistaken in classing this method amongst chimerical conceptions.

XXII.

I frequently had occasion to appreciate the incomparable talent displayed by the Jesuits in making tools of young girls, silly women, domestics, devout ladies, and old men, towards the accomplishment of unlooked for results. However small may be each success they obtain, they use it to obtain greater still. How often have they, by means of such instruments, overthrown their surprised and astounded adversaries.

How many individuals, left stationary notwithstanding their capacity, and witnessing with irritation and disgust the rapid and unmerited elevation of others to honourable and lucrative appointments, have I seen at last enrol themselves among the adherents of the Jesuits! This miracle is followed by another. As no one likes to keep up an incessant struggle with an obstinate and vigorous enemy, the rage by which they were tortured up to the very moment when they yielded, becomes appeased; their secret feelings of scorn and hatred die away, and at last they grow zealous for a cause which formerly inspired them with indignation. Thus, the secret of this society consists in subduing, either by caresses or by the weariness of useless resistance when caresses have failed, the more enlightened of the *middle classes*, and in threatening them *in their means of existence.*

The influential classes, under the persuasion that their interests can nowhere be safer than in the hands of the Jesuits, place them there, little suspecting the marvellous skill with which they change the very favours which are bestowed upon them into so many springs to advance a cause whose success would be followed by the ruin of those classes themselves.

The following are the conditions—few, indeed, but peremptory—which they take care to enforce in every country where they are favoured by the government.

They insist that people shall confess to them, and participate as frequently as possible in the festivals of their churches; that they shall augment the number of their adherents, become children of Mary, praise the order always and everywhere, and stick at nothing in order to be useful to it. It is only on these terms that their protection can be obtained.

All who know the mask it was necessary to assume, in France, under the fallen dynasty, in order to assure success in any career, have no need to be told these things. Besides, do not the apologists themselves of the Jesuits avow that the latter have always possessed, in an inconceivable degree, "the art of spreading and accrediting the ideas which are subservient to their views, and that of compelling the great ones of the earth to concur in the execution of their projects."*

XXIII.

It was with great unwillingness that I resigned myself to remain in a country where I witnessed the daily increasing triumph of dissimulation and hypocrisy. Had not my presence been necessary to my father, whom it would have been criminal to forsake in his almost continual state of infirmity, I should have gladly made every sacrifice in order to escape the spectacle of the abject servitude to which the clergy was already reduced, and which the laity was beginning to partake. I waited with a feeling like suffocation until I should be free. No sooner, then, had the death of my father taken place, than I made the necessary preparations to expatriate myself, taking care, meanwhile, that no one should suspect my real intentions.

---

* *La Verité sur les Jesuites, et sur leurs Doctrines*, p. 73.

I determined, however, to take a last farewell of my friend the curé, and of the instructor of my early years. Each of them, the more tenacious as he was entirely ignorant of my views, blamed my aversion for an advancement in the church, which was the object of so much eager ambition to others. When I announced to them that they would, in all probability, see me no more, they deplored what they were accustomed to call my inexplicable obstinacy.

The singular determination which I took drew upon me, still more than my retreat from the Jesuits, the reproach of inconsistency.

A twofold permission was necessary for my departure. I went to Vercelli, where I presented myself to the Lord Archbishop d'Angennes, who gave me an invitation to dinner. As some ostensible motive for my departure was necessary, I informed him that I was about to place myself as instructor in an English Catholic family. Whereupon he gave me, of his own accord, a letter of recommendation to the police, so that there might be no difficulty as to their granting me a passport.

I must here remark, before I take leave of this epoch of my life, that belonging as I did to that portion of the clergy which was reputed liberal, I should have paid dearly for my principles had I committed any one tangible indiscretion; for there is nothing in that unhappy country which is attacked so mercilessly as new ideas, whether religious or political, more particularly when they are professed by ecclesiastics. I was, however, sufficiently fortunate to quit Piedmont without having become the object of any persecution, or even disapprobation.

XXIV.

No sooner did I find myself in the beautiful land of Helvetia, than the recollections which belong to it crowded on my mind. I thought, in my simplicity, that I should now find but one standard, and all hearts universally devoted to liberty—to that liberty which the gospel proclaims and consecrates, and of which it is the great charter to the human race.

But, as I have already hinted, a number of facts concurred to open my eyes speedily to a state of things which I had been far from anticipating. The explanations given in the introduction render it unnecessary that I should enter here upon the details of my sojourn at Geneva, upon the disappointments which there awaited me, and upon the lectures on the *Secret Plan of the Jesuits* which I had occasion to deliver to a number of persons there. Amongst the reflections suggested by these lectures, there is one which I consider worthy to be noted.

It was observed to me, that the father of whom I have already spoken, he who opened the conference by an address to his colleagues, expressed himself like one having authority. He evidently took the lead, and all the others showed much deference for him. His expressions and his deportment would seem to indicate that he was himself the restorer of the occult society, and that he directed it as chief mover; for neither did his language nor that of the others give the slightest indication that he was in any way dependent on any superiors.

It thus appears probable that the president of the meeting at Chieri was the general of the Jesuits.

Now, at this period, the general of the order was no other than Father Fortis, the same who, when Pius VII. conceived the project of introducing some innovations into the articles of the Jesuitical constitutions, repeated these memorable words, "*Sint ut sunt, aut non sint.*"

It is to this reply, first addressed to Clement XIV. by Father Ricci, general of the company, that Archbishop de Pradt alludes, when, recapitulating his ideas on this invincible society, he thus expresses himself:—

"Heavens! what an institution is this! Was there ever one so powerful amongst men! How, in fact, has Jesuitism lived? How has it fallen? Like the Titans, it yielded only to the combined thunderbolts of all the gods of the earthly Olympus. Did the aspect of death damp its courage? Did it yield one step? *Let us be what we are*, it said, *or let us be no longer*. This was truly to die standing, like the emperors, and according to the precept of one of the masters of the world."*

Before I close this portion of my history, I ought, perhaps, to reply to certain scruples.

The double case of conscience to which I am about to refer, has been discussed in those ecclesiastical conferences of which I have already had occasion to speak, as means of forming the apprentices to the confessional.

Supposing that some one knows, either by private intelligence or as an accomplice, that there is a plot to set a town on fire, may he, notwithstanding his oath of secrecy, give information to the authorities, in order that they may take the necessary measures of prevention? Would it be lawful for the confessor, who might be informed of the fact, to take, notwithstanding the sacramental seal upon his lips, the needful steps to prevent so great a catastrophe?

Supposing that a conspiracy existed, the success of which would bring ruin on a kingdom, might it, in spite of all imaginable oaths to secrecy, be revealed by a conspirator, or by the confessor himself? Yes. I have heard it laid down by the most profound casuists, that where the general good is in question oaths are in no way binding in such cases as these.

Now, besides that I am bound by no promise, I may boldly affirm that it is not an individual that is here at stake, or a town, or a kingdom, but the far more important interests of civilization and of the gospel itself, which is alone able, by the force of truth, to transform this vicious civilization, and to substitute for it that Kingdom of God whose coming we daily invoke in our Christian prayers.

---

* De Pradt, *On Ancient and Modern Jesuitism*, quoted in the pamphlet entitled *La Verite sur les Jesuites*, p. 271.

I may, I think, safely add that there is not a single person placed in like circumstances with me, who would not have been, like me, impelled by the force of a multitude of incidents, whose rapid succession left me not a moment for reflection. Embarrassment, agitation, indecision, terror, by turns incited and restrained me, and compelled me to act like a man whose eyes are blindfolded, and who knows not whither he is going. In fact it was impossible for me to act otherwise than as I did; and I will add, in order to conceal nothing, that it would have been equally impossible for me afterwards to resist the yearning I constantly felt to search into everything that had the slightest connection with those Jesuitical revelations which were ever present to my mind. What I am, intellectually and morally, all my researches and all my ulterior labours, all the materials which I possess—my whole life, in short, resolves itself into the sudden and terrible enlightenment which so early flashed upon me, and which communicated to all my energies an irresistible impulse.

It might be objected that it would be more prudent, on my part, not to provoke, by the publication of this secret, irreconcilable hatred, and perhaps, even revenge. But have I not undergone the most painful sacrifices in order to keep myself free and independent? When the Almighty had released me from the only tie which bound me to my country, did I not quit it solely with a view to render public that which I had rigorously abstained from communicating even to my most intimate friends, from motives of prudence, and from well-founded fears? And when I arrived in Switzerland, did I not pass for a visionary when I began to announce the plots which the Jesuits were ripening, and the dangers which were about to arise?

And now, perceiving, to my great surprise, that on one side a reaction is already taking place, and that, on the other, a certain class of interests, either from blindness or irreflection, is inclined to mix itself up with the interests of the Jesuits, little aware of the nature of the allies it seeks, or of the fate which attends all who make common cause with them, I feel more urgently than ever that this publication is incumbent on me.

XXV.

A phenomenon to which I am bound to call attention, because its immense importance is not sufficiently appreciated, is the alliance, which is now more firm than ever, between the high clergy and Jesuitism. I say, that neither its extent, nor its consequences, are sufficiently apprehended. And yet, who will deny that it has been the character of Jesuitism from its origin to its suppression, as Clement XIV. attests, continually to foment in the bosom of universities, parliaments, clerical bodies, and religious corporations, a succession of discontents, divisions, quarrels, and discords?

The remarks contained in the following extracts from an anonymous pamphlet, published at Geneva, seem to me to have been called forth by the knowledge of a *Secret Plan*, already divulged in that place.

"All around us," says the author of the pamphlet, "far and near, in Switzerland, in Germany, in England,"

and more particularly in France, Catholicism, which had for some time bowed its head beneath political storms and warlike operations, now rises up, more hostile, more threatening than ever, and boldly proclaims its design to extirpate from the bosom of Christianity what it calls the heresy of the Reformation.

"In particular, an association founded by a curé of Paris, for the conversion of heretics, under the title of *Congrégation du Sacré Cœur de Marie*, has obtained the sanction and concurrence of all the Romish clergy. Humble and obscure in its origin, it has risen, in an incredibly short space of time, to colossal proportions, its adherents now amounting to 2,000,000. These are disseminated through all the countries of the globe, and have taken a vow to co-operate in person and in purse in the propagation of Catholicism. They spare neither publications, nor intrigues, nor money, nor even miracles, in order to gain their end. The gazette of the Simplon informs us, that the contributions of the two cantons of Valais and Soleure alone, have amounted this year (1842) to nearly 900,000 French francs. It is easy to imagine what might be done with such resources, could money create faith.

"Geneva could not fail to be one of the most attractive points to the Congregation, and in this place, in fact, it numbers many active associates. The rapidity with which the Catholic population daily increases within our walls, is, without any doubt, the fruit of this association, and already the foreign press proclaims this triumph.

"A wind," continues the same pamphlet, "has blown from Rome, even over those writers *who have hitherto remained most indifferent to religious interests*; it is impossible not to recognise, in the malevolent absurdity of those attacks, which are renewed again and again, and almost word for word, the result OF A VAST CONCERT, in which the *hired* performers obey, WITHOUT PERHAPS BEING AWARE OF IT, the powerful and concealed instrument which gives them the key, from behind the curtain of the Alps."

It is, then, an acknowledged fact that there exists a vast concert, in which the paid performers obey, almost unconsciously, the powerful and hidden instrument which gives them the key, from behind the curtain of the Alps; and it is even admitted that the many attacks we witness, far from being the effect of chance, are, on the contrary, evidently made with a view to *certain* remote projects. But who is there that cares to investigate the nature of these remote projects, and the means which may be employed to realize them?

All however agree in attributing to the Jesuits an extraordinary political influence. It is generally admitted that boundless power, absolute supremacy, is the object of their ambition. Their rule of action, that "the end justifies the means," is become proverbial. And who doubts that the end so sought is evermore this same boundless power and supremacy?

The progress of this order being known and acknowledged, it would be folly not to suppose that it has abundantly provided itself with baits of every description, in order to secure such an immense number of co-operators of all classes and parties, even those the most opposite by nature.

And yet, no one has ever come forward with a view to investigate the means which the Jesuits are so industriously employing for the accomplishment of their ends. It is however easy to understand that the vast and formidable association, described in the above extract, is destined to be employed as a powerful lever, and to be directed, as time shall serve, to different points.

If this *Congrégation du Sacré Cœur* did not ultimately connect itself with the plan about to be exposed, we might have refrained from here quoting a fragment of its regulations, published in several journals. But the *Siècle*, after having examined not only the bases upon which it stands, but also its tendencies, thus accurately defines it:—

"An *occult* government, organized in a hierarchical manner, to the furtherance of a political and religious reaction."

It was impossible that the regulations of this new corporation should long remain a secret; once discovered, they were soon published. The following are among the articles:—

"It is not only in its object that the *Catholic Association* differs from the work of Catholicism in Europe, but also in its mode of existence, and in its means of action. Its hierarchical organization will not be determined for the present. Divine Providence will counsel us in this matter!"*

"The general assembly to be the principal instrument of the association—

"It would represent, in a certain degree, the institution of the cardinalate. It would serve as intermediary between the central directory, and the inferior grades of the hierarchy.

---

* Chap. V., *De l'Organisation hiérarchique*, p. 34.

"*The greatest discretion is recommended to the members of the Catholic Association,* no one of whom shall ever reveal, on his own authority, directly or indirectly, to any person whatsoever, the *existence*, the *means*, or the *rules* of the association." *

"As the association has absolute need of pecuniary resources, in order to pursue its end, and fulfil its object, one of its fundamental rules is the existence of an annual subscription, levied upon each member, the amount of which shall, each year, be fixed by the chapter." †

"Every novice admitted into the association shall swear *to combat to the death the enemies of humanity.* His every day, his every hour, shall be consecrated to the development of *Christian civilization.* He has sworn eternal hatred to the *genius of evil*, and has promised ABSOLUTE AND UNRESERVED SUBMISSION to our Holy Father THE POPE, and to the commands of the HIERARCHICAL SUPERIORS of the association. The director, on his admission, has ejaculated, 'We have one soldier more.'" ‡

These words suggested the following reflections to another journal:—"We are, therefore, warned. A crusade is organised; it has its secret chiefs, its avowed purpose, its trained soldiers."

The work is, as yet, scarcely begun, and the chiefs of the league consider themselves already sufficiently strong to address the government in the terms which one power employs towards another. What will they do when their strength shall have increased?

---

* Chap. VI., *De l'Organisation hierarchique*, p. 37.

† Chap. VI., p. 38.

† Chap VI., p. 42.

See how the editor of the *Univers*, a paper known to be the organ of the bishops of France, begins a letter which he addresses to the Minister of Public Instruction:—

"This year, sir, you shall have no vacation; nor shall your successor, next year, God willing: for the Catholics will allow no intermission to the war which they are determined to wage against *instruction by the state*."*

The same letter concludes in these terms:—

"If you know the hour of our defeat or of our degradation, secure your treasures. *Down goes all when we are no more*. Twenty empires sleep in the graves which they had dug for us."

I am inclined to believe that most of the writers who in our day profess to uphold the cause of Catholicism, derive their inspiration in various degrees from the spirit of the famous Company.

XXVI.

To revert to the occult plans which I expose to the public, I have only to entreat that this matter be not lightly examined. Now to judge it with sagacity, demands some acquaintance with the mass of writings with which the advocates of monastic institutions and of the

---

* *Liberté d'Enseignement*, letter to M. Villemain, Minister of Public Instruction, by L. Veuillot, editor of the *Univers*.

Jesuits have inundated us. Such a course of reading could not fail to convince every candid mind that there really exists a secret understanding to propagate, in a devout and pathetic tone, the most unworthy falsehoods. In fact, the religious orders would have us believe that, setting aside a few weaknesses incidental to human nature, their mission has ever been one of pure beneficence. All the calumnies which have been directed against them have sprung from heresy and impiety, actuated by jealousy and rancour. Consequently, if nations would seek to emerge from the factions and troubles which agitate them, they must repent of their ingratitude and return to their ancient saviours; "for," say they, "as long as the disastrous principle of free inquiry was unknown, and men suffered themselves to be guided by the principle of authority, all was harmony and peace; but once the principle of infallible authority was assailed, the whole world became the theatre of all sorts of evils and disorders." What incredible efforts have they not made to prop up this gigantic falsehood!

Even a cursory inquiry into these manœuvres and artifices, can hardly fail to manifest that the prime mover of all this wonderfully assiduous labour is a power which works in secret, which combines all the subordinate movements, which chooses and applies its means according to circumstances; and which spares neither flattery nor bribes in order to enrol in its service those individuals, whether writers or men of action, who may be able to aid the work.

I do not conceal from myself all that I have to fear in thus rending the veil which has been so carefully drawn to conceal projects, the extent of which, I verily believe, is unknown to the mass of the Jesuits, as well as to the bishops, the cardinals, and the pope himself. But, God is my witness that the motive which animates and sustains me is the desire to prevent a mistake fostered and propagated by the most Machiavelian policy, and which would entail the direst calamities on human society.

I submit to men of cultivated understanding, who can reason and judge impartially, the secret conversations I am about to relate. Especially do I refer the matter to those who have studied not only the art by which the Roman theocracy has raised itself to so high a degree of power, but also the writings, the tactics, the acts and achievements of that order, which has, since its establishment, been the most subservient to its despotism. If my readers keep themselves free from the influence of a preconceived system, and from the prejudices of their position, whatever it may be, I doubt not that they will discern, on a cool examination of the whole plan, that it is redolent throughout of the most subtle and profound spirit of Jesuitism.

I can, indeed, have no dearth of materials to dissipate all uncertainty, and these I owe to the ardour of investigation of which I have already spoken, and which was constantly inciting me to investigate every incident which had the slightest bearing upon Jesuitism. But what has most astonished me has been this: to find in books and journals, the organs of conflicting opinions, not only isolated ideas, but series of ideas, closely identified, both as to style and subject, with those of the meeting, as it is about to be described; and this identity is so striking, that I ask myself:

Must not these books and articles be the work of individuals belonging to the knot of the initiated, or, at least, to the league? If it has not been in my power to collect a sufficient number of facts to give to the *Secret Plan* which I am publishing an irresistible character of authenticity—for, after all, every one knows that conspiracies of this nature, being destined to remain a mystery, never transpire but by some remarkable chance;—yet, in the impossibility of fulfilling conditions which are, in fact, *inadmissible*, I cannot suffer to escape me the only kind of proofs which, in such a case, it is reasonably permitted to require.

These proofs will, then, be brought forward in the latter part of this work, and those readers who will take the pains to examine them will know how to place a just value on the language which the Jesuits and their official apologists have borrowed from the true advocates of progress—a language which they are now employing with singular audacity. It will be proved by irrefutable arguments that *civil and political equality, freedom of worship, of education, and of association*, are in their hands weapons of war, and nothing more.

XXVII.

It was at the time of restorations of all sorts that Jesuitism also was restored. At the period when the Holy Alliance was formed, the pope determined that he also would create a rampart for himself, against the encroachment of new ideas; he therefore evoked, from the depths of its mysterious retreats, the most skilful and enterprising of orders, that he might by its aid unite and consolidate not only all the orders, but the clergy of different countries, and the episcopacy, in a Theocratical Holy Alliance, of which the object would be not less fatal to the people than to the governing powers themselves.

"Pius VII.," as M. Henrion remarks, "at length recovering his liberty in 1814, recalled the religious orders to more active life. They have, subsequently, sent out new ramifications into many countries, and the venerable tree, which had been cut down nearly to the ground, shoots forth new branches, and is already adorned with abundance of foliage, which gladdens the eyes of Christians. In France, the change which took place in our political system in the month of August, 1830, having consecrated, in an especial manner, the *liberty of association*, there is no doubt that the monastic state will speedily rise up from its ruins."*

There will be no stability, according to the same writer, there will be no repose for society, if it refuses anew to be directed by monastic institutions. These would naturally range themselves under the leadership of Jesuitism. How should it be otherwise? Does not this order hold in its hands the plan of battle? Does it not train the combatants? Does it not direct them to the point to be attained? Why, otherwise, has the education of your youth been confided to the Jesuits? Why have they alone been judged worthy to initiate the clergy in the art of confession?

"It is impossible," continues their apologist, "that the Company should not know how to take its stand, and to adapt itself to the exigencies of the present state of things, that it should not know how, *as formerly*, to become popular by answering to the true wants of the period."

---

* *Histoire des Ordres religieux.* Paris, 1835, vol. ii., p. 125.

The Jesuits make one promise which is very singular, that of "acting only in the face of day, lest suspicious and impious men should mistake for intrigue the *pious subterfuges* and the sublime secrets of humility." What, indeed, could be more excellent than the work which they propose to accomplish? To extirpate the genius of evil! to lay the foundations of Christian civilization! But this is only to be done on condition that the people deliver themselves, bound hand and foot, to the Company of Jesus.

We find in the same author the following reflections:—

"In the moral world evil never walks abroad without its attendant good; and it is very favourable for the Jesuits that they should have been restored in 1814, at a period when the people, delivered from a long-standing European war, remained a prey to principles equally false in religion and politics. The crisis came; and it could be nothing short of divine inspiration which suggested to Pius VII. the thought of rallying around the apostolic throne a society so formed to trample down error.

"It was not, however, until 1823" (a date to which I call particular attention) "that the Roman College, which had passed into other hands since the fall of the Jesuits, was restored to them by Pope Leo XII. Several towns in Italy, the Duke of Modena, *the King of Sardinia*, and Freiburg in Switzerland, also welcomed the members of this reviving company. The King of Spain restored to them all their property, houses, and colleges, which had not been sold. In France they opened establishments for public instruction at St. Acheul, Dôle, Bordeaux, &c., &c. Francis II. received them in Gallicia, where they devoted themselves to instruction in the colleges of Tarnopol, Starzawiz, and Janow, and to active missions elsewhere. The company possesses colleges in England also, and in the United States of America."

M. Henrion, the friend and confidant of the Jesuits, doubtless knows, as well as any one, what is the end which they propose to themselves; and in one single line he thus betrays it:—"It is," says he, "the annihilation of a double class of principles to which the people are a prey—principles equally false in religion and in politics."

They would then destroy all the ideas which the French revolution has bequeathed to the world; in other words, they would abolish free inquiry, in order to bind every conscience with the chains of Catholic authority; they would strike down the principle of liberty, the source of all justice, in order to build up again the tyranny of times gone by.

XXVIII.

I deem it important here to bring forward a fragment of the text, too little known, of the bull by which Pius VII. restored the Jesuits in 1814. This pope, whose spirit, happily for humanity, the accession of Pius IX. has banished from the Vatican, declared that the Jesuits were indispensable to the safety of the world and to the well-being of the nations, and that he considered he should be neglecting one of his most urgent duties if he suffered the church to be longer deprived of their aid. He goes even further, and declares that they alone are competent to direct the faithful, the inferior clergy, and the bishops themselves. In short, he constitutes and consecrates them as the indispensable rowers of the mysterious Bark, the title by which the popes are accustomed to designate the Catholic church.

And lastly, in order that nothing may be wanting to an apotheosis so extraordinary, Pius VII. proclaims, in the face of nations, that under their guidance the bark of Catholicism will assuredly be saved, whilst without their care and protection it must inevitably founder.

Had we not then abundant reason to affirm that everything contained in these avowals is of immense importance, and calls for the closest attention?

And yet, so far from having allowed myself to exaggerate, I have closely paraphrased the following words, extracted from the bull of Pius VII., *Sollicitudo omnium ecclesiarum:*—

"We should believe ourselves guilty," it is there stated, "of a very heavy offence before God, if, amidst the many pressing wants under which the *public weal* is suffering, we neglected to bring forward for its use the salutary help which God, by a singular providence, has placed in our hands."

And whom has he selected to bring to the *public weal* this salutary help?

The Jesuits!

"On account," adds this same pope, "of the waves which continually toss the bark of Peter, he should esteem himself as highly culpable, if he rejected the *robust and experienced rowers* who offer themselves to him to quell the force of these ever-threatening waves."

And the simple and significant reason which he gives is this:—

"That it may not be SWALLOWED UP in INEVITABLE shipwreck."

END OF PART I.

PART II.

THE SECRET CONFERENCE.

It will be as well, before giving the account of the *Secret Conference*, to make some observations which may tend, as far as possible, to compensate to the reader for the want of what the tone and manner of the living voices have left for ever present to my memory.

I will first remark, that the list mentioned by the chief, and in which were set down the special points to be discussed, proves that everything in these meetings was arranged in the most precise manner.

If the reader carefully considers each discourse, he will perceive that each person has his own peculiar and distinctive style. The voices of the several speakers served me, instead of their faces, to know them one from the other; each one had peculiarities which I have not forgotten.

One of the fathers, the second who spoke, and whom I heard no more afterwards, surprised me by a most singular pronunciation. I had never heard a voice so slow and smooth, and oily. At the same time, no other speaker was more prolix and diffuse, yet he was listened to with the greatest attention. He was almost the only one who occupied himself exclusively with the people, showing by what baits it may be taken. Between this phlegmatic orator and all the others the contrast was striking; it was only at rare intervals that he became a little excited. At last, however, when he communicated a dialogue of one of his penitents with a companion, entirely to the honour of the Jesuits, he expressed himself with such unexpected animation as elicited a burst of merriment and great applause.

Another, whom I call the Irishman, is remarkable for a caustic and impetuous wit; he seemed possessed with fever. The Roman Jesuit is less vehement, but blunt and plain spoken; sometimes in a degree amounting to coarseness. The two Frenchmen exhibit a quite different character; one of them makes himself especially known by the ideas which he attacks with most eagerness, by the reminiscences his allusions awaken, and by his invariably clear and precise manner of expressing himself. The rector of the novitiate distinguished himself by a certain factitious pomp and gravity pervading all he said. He seemed made on purpose to ape wisdom, and make an exhibition of it. Father Roothaan had no occasion to be curbed from time to time, as happened, I thought, now and then to the Irishman; there was no fire, no acrimony, in the terms he employed; he expressed himself with gentleness, though occasionally with warmth; it must be confessed, however, that under his unctuous accents he conceals a propensity to violence and persecution.

There was one anomaly which I know not how to account for. The individual, whom I suppose to have been the general at that time (the same of whom I have said that he suddenly interrupted the promiscuous conversation), opened the meeting with an address in very pure and eloquent terms, which my memory is far from having faithfully rendered;[*] yet when all were seated and silently attentive round him, all his expressions seemed heavy, turgid, and inflated. There was something false and embarrassed in his voice. Subsequently, however, he resumed all the promptitude and facility which he had at first displayed.

Though the persons present at the conference were few, they are about to appear before the reader presenting temperaments and characters essentially different; some impetuous, some calm, others constantly grave. And yet the kind of work which was to be common to them all, far from tending to place these different characters in prominent relief, was rather calculated to merge all their individual characteristics, and reduce them to one standard type. In fact, it is only in assemblies, where there exists an opposition of principles and interests, which gives rise to free and contradictory debates, that each one, drawn out by circumstances, shows himself under his own peculiar features. Here, nevertheless, notwithstanding the unanimity of the meeting, the genius of each appears sufficiently striking to be easily distinguished.

None but those who have seriously studied Jesuitism, in the past as well as the present, and who know its spirit and audacity, will be able fully to understand all the meaning conveyed in the least of their words, without being astonished at the pride which devours them, or at the schemes which they meditate. Yet I believe it would require more than that to be able to apprehend the whole scope of their desires. It would be necessary not only to be acquainted with all their rules and their secret statutes, but with all the former discussions which led them to resume the weaving of that web of which I am about to show a few threads, and which, at the present day, must have extended immensely. It would be necessary likewise to consider the education these fathers had received, the preparatory influence to which they had been submitted, as well as the degrees through which they must have past before they could be judged worthy of becoming members of this committee which may be regarded as the last term of initiation. In fine, they were all under the empire of principles and ideas which had been discussed in the three preceding sittings, or in confidential conversations. All they did was necessarily connected with these antecedents; consequently, being ignorant of the latter, it is very possible we may mistake certain passages, or comprehend them but superficially.

---

[*] It has been seen that I have quoted this introduction only from memory.

Let us enter at last upon the conference. When all were seated, and silence established, the president began to speak as follows:—

I.

"Dear brethren, our weapons are of a quite different temper from those of the Cæsars of all ages; and it will not be difficult for us so to manœuvre as to render ourselves masters of all the powers already so much weakened. We need fear no lack of soldiers, only let us apply ourselves to recruiting them from all ranks, and from all nations, and drilling them into punctual service. But let us, at the same time, be vigilant, that no one suspect our designs. Let every one be persuaded, whilst consecrating to us his labour, his gold, or his talents, that he is employing them in his own interest.

Ours be the knowledge of this great mystery: as to others, let them hear us speak in parables, so that, having eyes, they may not see, and having ears, they may not hear.

Let us labour more diligently than all who have undertaken to raise great hierarchical edifices, and let our labour be in earnest!

You well know that what we aim at is the empire of the world; but how are we to succeed, unless we have, everywhere, adepts who understand our language, which must yet remain unknown to others.

Doubtless, you have not forgotten our ancient Paraguay. It was but a very limited trial of our system, in a small corner of the globe. In these latter days, we need a new code, we who have undertaken to work so mighty a change—to make everything bend beneath the irresistible hammer of our doctrines, so that all shall become as stone, iron, gold, and adamant, for the gigantic building into which we will force all men to enter.

Let every individual, therefore, yield up an entire obedience. Let him plight inviolable vows in one sole convent; and let the pope—but a pope of our own forming—be its perpetual abbot!

No; Catholicism must no longer remain a mutilated power: has it not, within itself, means innumerable to overthrow and to raise up? Can it not re-erect itself, conquer, destroy, rebuild, and so *Machiavellise* itself, that the world can by no means escape it? Let us hasten our work, before the people become enlightened; as long as they remain opaque and material, we can make of them an instrument of conquest. But do you not perceive how information is already spreading? Woe to us if so many noble countries do not soon become our conquest, and if millions of men, robust and ignorant, lend us not their herculean arms to extinguish the malign star which threatens us! But the more time we lose, the more problematic does our success become.

II.

The president having ceased, the father with the soft and drawling voice began to speak:—*

Yes; let us incessantly and unweariedly propagate our doctrines amongst the *people;* warmed by the fire of these doctrines, they will become changed for us into thunderbolts to strike down these haughty kings, who, instead of inclining their heads before the church as submissive sons, do her the favour to accept her as a satellite, who is good for nothing but to save them from almost inevitable ruin.

To this people, discontented and born to suffer, let us incessantly repeat:—

---

* Here follows in the original the obscure and embarrassed commencement of this father's discourse. "Sopra le populazioni, sopra, di ette, unga giammai stancarcia operiamo per mezzo delle nostre doctrine; impeniouchè si è solo forti ficandole e scaliandole alle nostre fiamme che ce le cangieranno in fulmini."

"You are wretched, deeply wretched, we know it but too well; and who can deplore your lot more sincerely than we do? Do we not know that you earn your bread by the sweat of your brows; but the greatest of all your evils is that you are ignorant of their true source. Oh, did you but know this, a great step would be already made towards delivering you from the only enemy who has plunged you into this vast abyss of misery. Know then, that all your wretchedness dates from the execrable day on which a renegade monk, in order to indulge his vile passions, dared —oh, horror!—to unite himself with a nun whom he snatched from her convent.

"Ever since that time, the Almighty has not ceased to roll the waves of his vengeance over the earth; peace has taken flight; the Holy Father has, with grief and indignation, beheld his children desert the sacred portals, and heard them insolently exclaim, 'We break thy bonds, we contemn thy precepts; thou art no longer our master.' Cursed and excommunicated, they have since wandered in barren and dark places. In vain the vicar of Jesus Christ has striven to recal these miserable prodigals; delivered up to their errors and their wilfulness, they have despised his offers of pardon.

"Behold the portrait of these rebels who have rejected him whom God put into his own place to govern all things. Listen to this psalm: God asks, 'Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing?' And thus God answers himself: 'The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His anointed, *saying*, Let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision.'

"If then the justice of God visits the earth with so many chastisements, it is that he may punish its ancient revolt. Wonder not, if to avenge himself on these apostates, and on the kings who have sustained them, he excites against them all the rage of their subjects: for you are not ignorant that during the space of three hundred years a frightful monster, the revolutionary hydra, has been unchained, and ceases not to threaten to devour them.

"O golden age of the church! O surprising miracle! who would believe it, were it not as true as it is sublime? When nothing could tame the pride of those sovereigns who crushed the poor and the weak, so strongly recommended by Jesus Christ to his vicar, he, a simple old man, extinguished with a word all this pride, as a light may be extinguished with one impulse of the breath. In those days the spouse of Jesus Christ was without spot or wrinkle. She shone as the springtide sun, which warms and makes the earth fruitful. It was not until after the days of the pretended Reformation that our holy mother beheld her children suffering from indigence and from hunger, and that she deplored her inability to help them. Alas! it is but too true that this plague was no sooner spread over the earth, than all justice, all charity, and every good thing grew less and less, in proportion as the respect for the vicar of Jesus Christ diminished. It was not thus in the days of the church's prosperity, when her fathers, her learned doctors (compared with whom the most distinguished men of the present day are but as worms), were always careful to recommend an obedience without bounds towards the common father of the faithful, the successor of Saint Peter; and never did they pronounce his name without bending the knee. Saint Bernard, although the pope had been his disciple, never wrote to him without having first prostrated himself on the earth.

"Do you, let me ask you, show this respect each time that you speak of the vicar of Jesus Christ? No; it is but too plain, it is but too true, that the best amongst you have lost your reverence for holy things. Ah! if God granted you the grace to comprehend what it is to occupy, on the earth, the place of God himself, with what fire would you not feel yourselves inflamed; what would you not attempt and brave, in order to free your sole benefactor from the yoke of the impious! Without doubt, the Almighty could immediately effect this himself; but it is his will that your own right arms should deliver you from your enemies by a heroic victory; since the glorious good which will result from it will form the recompense of the poor and the oppressed, and of all those who groan in subjection. Do you not remember with what constancy the faithful Israelites resisted the perfidious Canaanites? Courage, my children! for you also have to take possession of a promised land, which will pour forth for you every species of delights to refresh your wearied souls! Awake! arise! unite yourselves in a fraternal bond, which will strengthen you against every obstacle, if you wish, indeed, that the future should be yours. Have you ever reflected that if the heavens are become bronze, as it were, above your heads, God has permitted it, to punish your guilty negligence. Madmen and fools that ye are! you allow that His Holiness, he who represents God upon earth, should be held in slavery! But the finger of your heavenly Father has written the decree, that your own degraded lot shall be lengthened out as long as the degradation of your terrestrial father shall endure, he at whose feet every one who hopes for salvation ought to cast himself. In vain, be assured, does the pope seek to bless you—in vain does he raise his voice to do you justice; he is surrounded, like Christ himself, by scoffers and hardened sinners, who reject his word.

"Nevertheless, all these erring sinners are your brethren; you are not to hate them in your hearts—by no means; but it is the will of God that you should employ every means to induce them to accept of pardon, to recall them to the fold, where, when they have once entered it, the very wolves are transformed into sheep.

"Listen, listen! we will give you *spiritual* eyes.

"Where are the princes, even amongst those of our religion, who have dared, and who still dare, to concern themselves with the things of God?

"Behold wherefore the impious one has invaded the church; behold wherefore she, chained and enslaved, can neither speak nor claim obedience. The Anointed of the Lord, and the other anointed ones, his ministers, are everywhere treated without respect, and denied all authority. Their privileges are suppressed, their rightful property is torn from them, their honour is eclipsed, their character calumniated, and they are almost virtually annihilated.

"The prophecy is thus nearly accomplished. We have already long beheld the man of sin, the son of perdition—Antichrist, in a word—set up above him whom every one ought to adore and venerate. He clearly shows by his desires, by his pride, by his persecution of the clergy, and by his insatiable ambition, robbing that which belongs to God, and trampling under foot all that is sacred and divine—he clearly shows that he sits in the temple of God, and that he would even be regarded as God himself.

"Happy the time when this crowned dragon was muzzled by the church, when strength was wanting for him to accomplish his sacrilegious ravages; but at length, alas! he has succeeded in possessing all the earth, by the aid of a troop of apostates, and by the prodigies of his infamous seductions. Behold the source of all your ills. It is from this revolt against the church that so many amongst you are unable to contract a marriage without exposing himself to a thousand vexations. Thus is verified, not only that text which foretells that Antichrist would forbid to marry, but that other which says that the faithful would be compelled to abstain from a variety of delicate meats, which God has created for all, and not for the enjoyment of an exclusive few.

"O sublime institution of Jesus Christ! O confession! source of such infinite good! It is by thee that our ears become acquainted with the miseries of those whose lot is ceaseless toil, and of their many unnatural and unjust privations. Hence it is that confessión, which lightens for you the weight of so many griefs, becomes hateful to your oppressors. They would deprive you of it, because it is your solace and your refuge. By means of confession, in fact, how many directions we are able to give you, how many councils which, if you profit by them, will assuredly conduct you safely into port! By its means, how many secrets you can depose in our bosoms! secrets which you could not elsewhere reveal without a thousand dangers!

"Poor friends! if you would only abide by our instructions, if you would consent to place yourselves, with one accord, as instruments in our hands, you would no longer have to toil for the productions of the earth, in order that others may enjoy them to your exclusion.

"But do you truly desire to erect your heads towards heaven? If you do indeed desire it, begin by enforcing respect for him without whom the poor will never be respected."

This is the language I employ with them; and after having thus indoctrinated my conscripts, I give them a history of the Crusades, rousing them by the picture of this great movement of many nations; and in order to bind them to our league, I say to them:—

"What an impulse, my brethren! What sacrifices! what martyrdoms! And yet there was not one of these soldiers of Christ who looked for any temporal advantage to himself. They had but one desire—to redeem from Turkish hands a simple stone, an empty sepulchre, and to breathe their last sigh on holy ground.

"Poor people! if you had eyes to see, you would perceive that there is now something worse than Turkish infidels to combat; something more than a simple stone to defend with your breasts. He in whom Jesus Christ continually dwells, whom he has established as his representative, he whom the angels proclaim as the doctor of doctors, the infallible, the supreme chief of all the monarchs of the universe, he claims your zeal, your arms, your devotion, and it may be, your life.

"A psalm which you often sing thus speaks to the blessed who fight for the Eternal, and destroy his enemies, root and branch: 'Be of good cheer, and singing holy songs, arm yourself with the two-edged sword, to exercise vengeance upon the heretic nations, to chastise the unbelievers, to fetter their kings and their nobles, to execute against them the judgment which is written; for such is the glory reserved for all the saints,' that is to say, for all good Catholics.

"O may these sacred sparks kindle at the bottom of your hearts! Cherish them for the great day which is, perhaps, near at hand; propagate them in the minds of your children, of your husbands, of your wives; and, finally, be assured that the day of triumph for the holy cause of God will be that in which, all your tears wiped away, you will make the very heavens resound with your shouts of joy!"

Such language as this never failed of its effect: aroused and excited by such words, the hearers almost always go forth burning with rage.

I will repeat to you a conversation which I had once the satisfaction to overhear. A penitent of ours said to his comrade—

"John, it is only the Jesuit fathers who are men; all the others are stupid fools." "How so?" "Because it is only they who can see to the bottom of things." "What! do they understand our hardships, and can they find a cure for them?" "Have I not often told you so! Go and open your heart to them, tell them everything, listen to them, and you will learn certain things. I swear to you, you will soon know more than all these philosophers who make such an uproar." "What is it they tell you, then?" "Go and ask them yourself, and you will soon know the truth ; you will know why the world goes on so badly, and what we must do to set it to rights."

III.

It was this anecdote, related in a tone of pleasantry, contrasting strongly with that maintained during the other part of the discourse, which excited the hilarity and the applauses already mentioned. The next speaker I recognised by his voice as the rector.

Still, it is upon the great that we ought particularly to exert our influence. We ought to bring them to believe that in a period stormy as this is there is no safety for them but through us. Let us never relax in our efforts to penetrate them with the idea that they can only hope to obtain any great results by subjecting to us the consciences of their subordinates, and those of the common people, so that we, or those, at least, who follow our counsels, may wholly direct them. If they are satisfied with the service it is in our power to render them, by the discovery of secrets which our peculiar position enables us alone to penetrate, then in return (for their own sakes be it clearly understood, and if they desire a time to arrive when there shall be no more revolts and revolutions to trouble them), let them not be sparing in such praises of us as are likely to make an impression on powerful members of the Protestant body, and to lead them to conclude that we alone possess the art of consolidating governments, since it is our mission to correct whatever remained imperfect and unfinished in the middle ages, in consequence of the fatal disputes between church and state.

But since they may object certain acts of ours which are not free from a seditious appearance, we must do all in our power to colour and disguise these acts, so that they may not be too glaring. We must give them to understand that if we act thus it is because we are intimately persuaded that the cause of evil, the bad leaven, will remain in the world as long as Protestantism shall exist; that Protestantism must therefore be utterly abolished, since inquiry in religious matters creates and propagates inquiry in other matters. The admirable order of things which (we must tell them) it is our object to establish, can only exist on condition that the people shall be forced to move round these two axes, monarchy and the church. We must prove to them that we alone, with the other orders, and the clergy (the clergy, be it understood, under certain conditions), are capable of being more effectually useful to them than all their armed forces. And why? Because compression, far from changing the heart, only inflames it the more; whereas the most violent and obstinate finish by yielding to religion, when she acts upon them with confession for her auxiliary, and ecclesiastical pomp for a bait.

Let us moreover take all possible pains to convince them that they ought not to grudge the wealth possessed by the religious bodies, or that which we are constantly accumulating, for these riches are necessary to us; without them we could execute no great enterprise.

" Weigh well," let us say to them, " weigh well the present advantages we can offer, and those still more considerable which are to follow, and you will see that each of your favours will in the end be restored to you a hundredfold."

But what we must, above all things, endeavour to make apparent to them is this, that the ancient struggles between the church and the state are no longer possible, these two powers having learnt that there is nothing to be gained by transgressing their respective limits. From whence it follows that governments, protected by the wonderful progress of diplomacy, will be for ever secure from all abuse of anathema, and all attempts at usurpation, and may, with all confidence, leave to the priesthood the entire direction of the faithful. Besides, let governments learn that all our sacraments, confraternities, ceremonies, little books, &c., &c., are infinitely less to be feared than these pestilent journals of all sorts, which are good for nothing but to excite the worst passions; that it is infinitely more safe for the multitude to sink back into the legends of the middle ages, which will chain down their imaginations to the worship of past times; whilst, on the contrary, if we once suffer them to place a foot on the first step of the ladder, they will speedily mount to the top, and be seized with the vertigo of revolution, which immediately renders them unmanageable; they will inquire and examine, and the more they learn the more their pride and insubordination will increase. Yes, let governments admire what we are able to do with the people by means of these "Lives of Saints" and all these miracles; we are able to perpetuate their infancy until they shrink with terror from what others long for with a frenzy almost incurable.

IV.

The style of thought and imagery, and the accent of the next speaker, evidently denoted that he was from Great Britain. I shall call him the Irishman.

In my opinion (he began) we ought not always to repress certain bold tongues which mock at legends; on the contrary, it is well that there should be men who cast some ridicule on that immense apotheosis of Papacy which we are accustomed to make in Oriental language. This sort of license does us no harm, so long as it is confined to the higher classes, and remains unknown to the people: a certain tolerance on this point makes the world more inclined to trust us, and serves to lull suspicion in the minds of your gilded phantoms *(larve dorate)* as to our ultimate projects. But if this mockery went forth into open day, so as to unseal the eyes of the vulgar; or if some keen and penetrating spirit, drawing aside the corner of the veil, should point out the corrosive side of our doctrines, we must then make every effort to cover this audacious wretch with infamy, or denounce him as a dangerous conspirator, deserving of exemplary chastisement. Setting aside such extreme cases, it is rather to our advantage than otherwise that there should be here and there some cavillers at our vast dogmatic system; for whilst free course is allowed to a few sarcasms *(alcuni scherni)** on these matters, our tendencies are left unquestioned, we are allowed full liberty and opportunity to propagate our doctrines and to extend our conquests day by day.

---

* Perhaps he said *scherzi*, jests.

In order to render Catholicism attractive, let us strive to enlist in her cause the foremost statesmen and historical writers of our own times. Let us employ them to deck the past in golden hues; to sweeten, for us, the bitter waters of the middle ages; and help us to captivate mankind by the most alluring promises. Who knows but the day may come when the vaunting songs of the antagonists of Catholicism shall prove to have been swan music? Let us suffer all these various labourers to go on working for us; when the evening comes we will pay them, unlike the master in the parable, in good money of the middle ages *(in buona moneta del medio evo)*—of those middle ages which, in their fervent admiration of antiquity, they now so eagerly extol.

In good truth, our times are become strangely delicate! Do they flatter themselves, then, that no spark still smoulders in the ashes round the stake to kindle another torch? Fools! all they can do is to hate us! They are far from dreaming (*d'aver sentore*, literally to scent) that we alone know how to prepare a revolution, compared with which all theirs have been, are, and will be but pigmy insurrections. In calling us *Jesuits* they think that they cover us with opprobrium! They little think that these Jesuits have in store for them the consorship, gags, and flames, and will one day be the masters of their masters!

Excuse this warmth, my dear colleagues; at another time I will enlarge upon the immediate causes which fill me with indignation, and arouse all my energies against this envious and fractious race. I will now return to the point from which I digressed.

It is highly important to us that we should seem to offer large guarantees to every class of society. To the aristocracy of Protestant lands we should thus address ourselves:—

"The Roman hierarchy alone is able to gain you the victory; but this is on condition that she finds an echo in your own souls. It is by your efforts that the people must be collected into their former fold; when safely there, the impetuous torrent will no longer ravage your domains, you will see that submission will be restored, and the bad spirit which threatens to root up and destroy all things, shall itself be rooted up and destroyed. Your fathers turned everything upside down, the remedy must be not less energetic than the evil. Call upon all those over whom you have influence to listen, and address them boldly in some such words as these:—

"'Protestantism is an aberration. It has engendered nothing but miseries and innumerable catastrophes.

"'It is a religion lopped of its members, it is not even a skeleton.

"'Catholicism alone presents a harmonious whole. Where there is no confession, no pope, no attractive form of worship to address itself to the senses, no rallying point, no all-powerful and ever acting controul, all must needs be scattered like sand. We offer ourselves to your example, as the first to prostrate ourselves before the guides of our conscience, the first to reject the apostacy of our fathers! Let it be our common task to join together what has been rent. To the great work then! Aid us! follow us!'

"In this way the mass of the people, fascinated by your words and your example, will feel their souls stirred within them, their habits will be gradually changed, and at last with one impulse they will fall on their knees before our common mother."

Furthermore, dear friends, we must foresee all things, especially objections, that we may be ready to answer them off-hand, and without hesitation; for we can never succeed unless we have first, individually and collectively, made ourselves thoroughly conversant with our subject in all its bearings. Let each of us, therefore, hold himself bound to note with scrupulous fidelity, not only the arguments which are brought against us, but also the nature of the interests, fears, desires, and even the mixture of ideas, serious, extravagant, or mystic, which are arrayed on the other side; so that our answers, and our manner of considering their ideas, may astonish and bewilder them, and thus lead them captive to our cause.

"Reflect," let us say, closely following them up, "you are not surely so blind as not to see what is passing around you. Lay hold on the anchor of safety which Rome offers you, if you indeed believe it strong enough to resist so many impetuous waves. The torrent is constantly widening and gaining force. The loss of even a single moment may afterwards be to you the source of vain regret. Call upon those who alone are powerful to save you, by raising against these raging waters an insurmountable and eternal barrier. *Alone* (*non contando che su di voi*), what could you do against the impending catastrophes? Take refuge, then, with us; come with minds prepared, and we will teach you to tame this mass before whom you are now trembling; we will enable you to associate these people in the gigantic work of their own metamorphosis—a work which could never be executed but by the aid of expedients such as ours."

I know, by experience, that this sort of language is of certain efficacy. No sooner shall a few of these personages be converted, than others will imitate them; and when there shall be, by these means, a few breaches made in Protestantism—whether these conversions proceed from genuine motives, or whether they be determined by advantageous offers, which shall not be spared if the person be worth the trouble (*ne val la pena*)—we may certainly reckon that the people, allured by these conversions, will not long resist the yoke of pure authority, and then we shall know how to make them pull steadily. For, I would not have it lost sight of that our chief concern must be to mould the people to our purposes. Doubtless, the first generation will not be wholly ours; but the second will nearly belong to us, and the third entirely. Yes, the people are the vast domain we have to conquer; and when we are free to cultivate it after our own way, we will make it fructify to the profit of the *impoverished granary*[*]

---

[*] Here two words escaped me. I thought I heard the two syllables *rito*, and I imagine that the words pronounced must have been *granario impoverito.* It was a movement of hilarity, mingled, as it struck me, with some murmurs, which rendered these words unintelligible. But the Irishman, it is evident, took little pains to veil his thoughts. He had just compared the people to a vast plain, destined to be conquered and ploughed. It is become almost proverbial in Italy, and I heard it said by several aged priests, "that the granary of the holy city is impoverished." This is an allusion to the enormous loss on *indulgences, dispensations, &c.*, which Protestantism and modern ideas have occasioned to the treasures of the Vatican.

of the holy city. We shall know how, by marvellous stories and gorgeous shows, to exorcise heresy from the heads and hearts of the multitude; we shall know how to nail their thoughts upon ours (*inchiodare sui nostri i di lei pensieri*), so that they shall make no stir without our good pleasures. Then the Bible, that serpent which, with head erect and eyes flashing fire, threatens us with its venom whilst it trails along the ground, shall be changed again into a rod as soon as we are able to seize it; and what wounds will we not inflict with it upon these hardened Pharaohs and their cunning magicians! what miracles will we not work by its means! Oh, then, mysterious rod! we will not again suffer thee to escape from our hands, and fall to the earth!

For you know but too well that, for three centuries past, this cruel asp (*crudele aspide*) has left us no repose; you well know with what folds it entwines us, and with what fangs it gnaws us!

We may recognise in this language a mind embittered and rankling with resentment against the English Bible Societies. He must often have encountered them in his path, and felt enraged at their influence. His savage expressions were received with a dry and forced laugh, quite different from the spontaneous gaiety before exhibited.

V.

The next who spoke seemed, from the tone of his voice, to be advanced in years. I can make no guess as to his country. His manner was grave and sedate.

My brethren, as to the Bible, be advised by me. For our greater good let us avoid—let us carefully avoid this ground. If I may tell you, openly, what I think of this book, it is not at all for us; it is against us. I do not at all wonder at the invincible obstinacy it engenders in all those who regard its verses as inspired.

You are aware that, when once entered upon theological studies, we must of necessity make some acquaintance with the Bible. For myself, although in company with numerous fellow-students, mere machines accustomed to confound the text and the commentary, as if they were one and the same thing (an illusion which, to confess the truth, is extremely useful to us), it was yet impossible for me, endowed as I was with some capacity for reflection (as proved by my presence here, amongst the small number of the elect)—it was impossible for me, I repeat, to be so absurdly credulous as not to distinguish the text from the commentary, by which its sense is almost always distorted. In the simplicity of youth I fully expected, on opening the New Testament, to find there laid down, *totidem literis* (*in lettere cubitali*), the authority of a superior chief in the church, and the worship of the Virgin, the source of all grace for mankind. I sought with the same eagerness for the mass, for purgatory, for relics, &c. But in every page I found my expectations disappointed; from every reflection that I made resulted doubt. At last, after having read, at least six times over, that little book which set all my calculations at nought, I was forced to acknowledge to myself that it actually sets forth a system of religion altogether different from that taught in the schools, and thus all my ideas were thrown into confusion (*ne rimasi al sommo scompaginato*).

The penetrating eye of my confessor perceived the agitation of my mind, and I was consequently obliged to disclose to him my distress and difficulty. "Ah, reverend father!" I said to him, "I expected to find in the New Testament each of our different dogmas fully developed and dwelt upon in accordance with the value and importance which we are accustomed to attribute to them. What is my surprise to find there nothing at all like what we deem the most essential in our doctrines."

Without allowing me to proceed any further, he inquired, "Have you communicated your thoughts to any of your fellow-students?" "No," replied I, "I have suffered much—but alone." "That is well," he said.

From that moment he kept me apart from all the other students, and having repeatedly sounded my conscience to its very depths, he one day addressed this question to me, "My child" (I was at that time about twenty-three years of age), "if I were to place in your hands the Geography of Ptolemy, or that of Strabo, who lived about two thousand years ago, and if I were to say to you, Point out to me in these books the name of a single city of all those which have been since built, what would be your answer?" "I should say that it was impossible, since those cities did not then exist." "Exactly so; and the case is absolutely the same with the New Testament—the book of primitive Christianity—as with the Geography of Ptolemy or Strabo. All you seek there had its rise at a far later period."

At these words of my superior I looked upon him with stupefaction. He pressed me affectionately to his bosom, and said, "Do not distress yourself; you shall be a young man set apart. You are worthy to penetrate further than others. Jesus Christ himself, as you must have remarked, spoke to the multitude only in parables; but, in private, he interpreted these parables to the apostles, saying to them: 'To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom,' that is to say, to possess the key of these secrets; but he carefully avoided using this language to the vulgar. Do you think a child in the cradle is equally advanced with a grown man? No. In like manner this book is but the embryo of the church. Forms, new doctrines, the hierarchy, the power of the popedom, all these great things which have transformed the church into an ocean, as it were, have been the effect of gradual progress, a progress which has often, indeed, been impeded, often interrupted, but which we are destined to bring to its consummation."

Afterwards, in order to neutralize my impressions, he placed in my hands Dupuis, Boulanger, Volney, Voltaire, and some other writers. By this means, and by degrees, a new order of ideas was established in my mind, and I became in the end capable of rising to the loftiest views of our order.

I have related this anecdote, which is entirely personal, merely to put you on your guard against too much confidence in reckoning, like the heretics, upon a book which unfortunately abounds in arms against us, not for us.

Consequently, let us lay down this principle: in public to act as if we had nothing to fear from such a book, but rather as if it were favourable for us; in private, to describe it as dangerous and hurtful, or, where this would not be prudent, to declare that it is the germ, of which Catholicism is the complete and majestic development. We shall thus provide ourselves with an arsenal a thousand times better stored than the biblical arsenal of Protestantism. We shall thus elude a crowd of difficulties, and at the same time keep up the controversy between ourselves and the Protestants—the very thing we want; for as long as the present state of things continues, as long as the mass perceive that our disputes lead to nothing decisive either way, they conclude that if there had really been anything in the Bible which positively condemns us, it would, in the course of three centuries, have made itself fully apparent.

Meanwhile, let us be watchful to place our best workmen in the most important points. While these good automata aid us to lay stone upon stone, under the direction of our initiated members, our edifice will rise on foundations so solid as to withstand all shocks hereafter.

As to our texts, let us select them from the old legends of the Bollandists. Should certain of our practices or doctrines be questioned, why then let us heap miracle on miracle, let us repeat the old ones and make new, so as to throw a glittering veil over the pope, the Virgin, purgatory, mass, our ecclesiastical vestments, our medals, our chaplets; let our miracles be like an inexhaustible water-course, keeping up a perpetual motion in each wheel of our immense machine.

Let the heretics and the philosophers cry out against us as they may, we will take no pains to silence them, we will make no reply; so they will tire themselves out, and in the end they will let us alone. At the same time, I am quite of opinion that we ought, by every possible means, to secure the aid of modern thinkers, whatever be the nature of their opinions. If they can be induced to write at all in our favour, let us pay them well, either in money or in laudation. Provided that the universal edifice goes on constantly increasing, what matters it to us what workmen, or what implements, are employed? There are some who have become very zealous Catholics because, as they say, we know how, with our images, our paintings, our wax tapers, and our gold, to produce a highly picturesque effect in our chapels! Others are converted because ours is the only church which possesses a pool, always ready, in which he who is soiled by sin may wash himself clean!

Thus, you perceive that we are provided with an infinite number of baits, to take all sorts of people; be it ours to become expert in the choice and in the use of them.

VI.

He ceased. The speaker who succeeded him appeared younger. I cannot say whether he was an Italian or not. Our language is pronounced in so many different ways, that it is difficult to judge of a speaker's native country by his accent, more especially when we cannot observe his features. This speaker began by unfolding some perfidious theories, and his style was at first feeble and careless. I was astonished at his incoherence, but by and by he was put on his mettle by an interruption, and his style suddenly became terse and compact.

I know that we are accused of fearing the Scriptures; wherefore I am, at this very time, occupied in composing a little book, in which I point out a very easy method of enriching our oral instructions and our writings by Scripture texts. For example:—

"Whosoever hates not his mother, his father, his brethren, his sisters, and who is not prepared to sacrifice for the church whatever he possesses, is an unworthy disciple of Jesus Christ."

"If the church is a visible body, the simplest common sense requires us not to deny it a visible head."

"The Catholic people is successor to the people of God; consequently heretics and philosophers are the enemies we are bound to exterminate, and the powers which do not yield obedience to the Holy See are so many Pharaohs."

"As, under the Old Testament, the voice of the tabernacle was the voice of God, so, in like manner, the voice of the pope is the voice of God, under the New Covenant."

I might quote to you a thousand other examples, with their application; but the specimen I have just offered you will prove that we also, as well as the heretics, can present ourselves with a phraseology altogether Biblical.

As to our manner of proceeding with Protestants of all sorts, it must necessarily be very varied. My advice is this, that we should keep a register of the most obstinate and dangerous amongst them, and chiefly of their ministers. This register, in which their individual characters should be noted, would serve to warn our missionaries of the rocks and quicksands in their course; they would know beforehand with whom they had to do, whom to avoid, and whom to venture upon, according to the measure or the particular nature of their respective talents; this would be of admirable use in sparing us many defeats and unfortunate mistakes.

For my own part, in addressing those who appear less hostile and more manageable, I argue thus:—"Is it not apparent that we alone combine all the advantages that your sects possess separately. You can, therefore, lose nothing by your conversion; you gain, on the contrary, the advantages of becoming spectators of such imposing solemnities as must needs, sooner or later, captivate your very hearts.

"Our church styles itself catholic, or universal; this is why it employs sensuous vehicles proportioned to the intellectual faculties of each individual. Look upon Catholicism, then, as opening to mankind the most splendid feast. You know in what consists the merit of a table—in being laden with dishes adapted to every taste, and in displaying all the most delicious productions of the earth. Now, all men are not constituted alike. One man sees God through the medium of the fine arts and poetry; another can only discern him under a gloomy and austere aspect; a third beholds him in a sweet and radiant atmosphere; and others see him through the cloud of dim and mystic reveries. For all, however, there is one centre of unity, namely, Jesus Christ; and on this point we have not a shadow of disagreement with you. What, then, should hinder you from entering into the most perfect communion with us? Would it not be folly to require that all men should arrive at the same point by one single road, when it is the property of a divine religion to lead them thither by a multitude of different ways? Perhaps it may be repugnant to you to see God in the man to whom you confess yourself, in order to obtain absolution? But consider that a people left to itself, unrestrained by a visible power which supplies the place of the invisible, would soon become brutified, forgetting the horror of sin;

or, on the other hand, would become desperate, no longer hearing a voice which says, 'I am God who absolve thee.'

"You would prefer, would you not, that a friend should be your priest? Enlightened minds seek the commerce of enlightened minds; well, doubt not that Catholicism offers you a multitude of priests, who, knowing with whom they had to do, would never dream of imposing acts of humiliation upon you. As to our devotional practises, it is not necessary to take a part in them, further than for the edification of the simple *(per l'edificazione dei simplici)*. The church has too much perspicuity not to know how to make a discreet use of many of her different rules, so as to adapt them to all shades of intelligence, from the depths of ignorance to the heights of genius. Since her table is so richly provided, would it not be absurd that this very abundance should be the source of dissensions? No; restraint of this kind has never entered into the spirit of our system. Unity, that good thing beyond all price, is dear to us, but we know that sacrifices must be made in order to preserve it; we know that reciprocal tolerance is necessary in the different guests seated at the same religious banquet, where the choice of meats is free, without any one having the right to constrain his neighbour; and, by this touching and amiable forbearance, all are equally nourished and satisfied.

"Remember St. Paul, who forbids us to despise the weak; who will not that he who believes himself permitted to eat meat should trouble another who believes that by eating herbs only he renders himself agreeable to God. It is to you, Protestants, that St. Paul addresses himself when he says, 'Destroy not him with thy meat for whom Christ died.' Would that he had added, 'Destroy him not in exacting proudly that he should conform to your individual taste.'*

"There are to be found in the kingdom of God different lights—from the pale light of the smallest star to the brilliant glory of the sun.

"Apply this same spirit to different doctrines ; to that, for example, which gives you so much offence by placing all power in the hands of the pope. Doubtless this doctrine may be so explained to educated minds as to place it in a more elevated point of view, and even to give it the appearance of something rational and just; but, for many reasons, it must be preached to the common people in all its downright crudity (*in tuttala sua crudità materiale*).

"By degrees, as you are capable of comprehending the extended and noble views of our church, you will also perceive why she canonizes such totally dissimilar individuals—the being absorbed in an eccentric mysticism; the man who daily disciplines his body till the ground is sprinkled with his blood ; and him who has revelled in luxuries and pleasures, when his position rendered them attainable and legitimate. The reason is simply this, that human nature is multiform.

---

* There would be no end if we were to point out the continual efforts of the reverend fathers to wrest the meaning of the texts they quote. St. Paul, having to do with weak consciences, accustomed to ascetic maxims, and wishing still to respect them, without prejudice to the new principle he was labouring to establish, thus speaks:—"For one believeth that he may eat all things ; another, who is weak, eateth herbs. Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not, and let not him who eateth not judge him that eateth."—Rom. xiv. 2, 3. Things are greatly changed since St. Paul's time.

"All things are good, all things are holy, when they are in their right place, and when men do not seek to intrude upon every one their own exclusive principles. Is it difficult to perceive that this mode of conduct is both generous and sublime?"

After having thus argued, but at greater length, I change my tactics; I analyze Protestantism even to its most trifling details. I show from whence it came forth; I display its shameful variations, the pernicious example it has given, the consequences of its freedom of inquiry, and its miserable outward dryness, betokening its inward sterility. Then I exclaim, "See one of our grand processions! every one occupies his peculiar rank; for our church, even in her grand solemnities, loves not to eclipse the honour due to any state or condition.

"You are astonished, perhaps, to see us adore the Host, surrounded with glittering magnificence. We, too, are not ignorant that God is everywhere; and that He demands the heart alone, is not a discovery of your pretended reformers. But tell me, I pray you, when have the people been able to comprehend all these chimerical abstractions? Has there not at all times been need of certain signs to serve as steps, as it were, by which men might ascend to the ideal of religion?

"Thus the church, perceivingthat the Lord's Supper, in its primitive and vulgar simplicity, was ill adapted to excite devotion in the people, decided at last to concentrate upon the Host, by the mass, as upon a palpable and perceptible point, all the splendour they could give it. The church has signally succeeded, by means of frequent exhibitions of the august sacrament, and by the pomp of her ceremonies. The multitude, carried away by what is visible, is moved and softened, and adoration succeeds to admiration.

"Without these Catholic means, is it not to be justly feared that the number of those who never raise their hearts towards God would increase to an alarming extent?

"On the other hand, the enlightened man, the true philosopher, who has really no need of these material forms, would not, surely, attempt to impose his own spiritualism on beings whose destiny it is to remain material and gross. He will be content with admiring the ingenious resources of Catholicism, and he will thank God for having enabled the church to find means so adapted to awaken the piety of the stupid and ignorant mass.

"Thus, under the roofs of our temples, *children* and *men** tend to the same point, thanks to the divine and inexhaustible fecundity of the true church, which, as St. Paul says, makes itself all things to all men, in order to gain, if it be possible, the whole world, without, however, sacrificing the truth, by thus temporising."

---

* Under the name of *children* the father no doubt designates the lower orders, whom they design to keep under the yoke of superstitious practices; whilst by *men* he means those who disdain these practices, but who, adroitly veiling this, deserve the name of true philosophers. I have known priests, and even Protestant ministers, who reject many doctrines which they publicly preach; amongst others, everlasting punishment; and these, they say, Scripture authorises them to reject, but they maintain them as a check upon the people.

VII.

From the first words of the discourse which follows, I had no difficulty in recognising the unctuous voice which had put so many insidious questions to me, during my examination. This was the present general of the company, Father Roothaan. I felt at first considerable agitation, so that I lost two or three phrases, which were however unimportant, and which I have supplied in order to complete the sense.

The most fatal thing that could befal us at the present moment would be the change from a gay, glittering, scenic religion, to an argumentative Christianity, opposed to pomp and show, an *iconoclastic* spirituality; I mean by this term, a faith destructive of Catholic forms. You all know that these are the powerful shield which covers our plans. But if the poetic charm should ever be broken, if people should begin to seek inspiration in the apostles, or in the primitive apologists, then our *bark*, beaten by impetuous winds, would run great risk of sinking, with all the immensity of its treasures. Revolt would become general. The glorious edifice, the work of so many ages, would be assailed and torn to pieces by thousands of profane hands. It would become the order of the day to trample under foot all that might fall under the reproach of being borrowed from idolatory. This time, there would be no mercy shown, nothing would be spared. Discouragement and terror would then stalk through our ranks, for we could not rely for the suppression of these movements on the strong hands of certain powers, which we had not yet sufficiently engaged in our interests. As soon as the fatal word should have gone forth, that nothing had any value in religion but what is spiritual and biblical, the hierarchy would instantly fall to the ground. All hope would be over for the priesthood, when the people should acknowledge no other guide than a little book. To whom should we then turn, on whom should we found our expectations, in a desertion so general; what remedy should we seek to cure so horrible a malady in the blood? (*per guarir nel sagnue un si oribile male.*)

Not that there is the least symptom of the approach of such a danger. On the contrary, Protestantism is becoming decomposed; it is falling to pieces; we are beginning to gain from it some men of note, and there are even some high personages whom we have succeeded in convincing that, if they continue to uphold Protestantism, they are lost.

But it is not enough for us to be aware of a great apathy amongst our ancient enemies; we must do all in our power to augment it.

The proof that faith in an abstract being is powerless to constitute a solid and durable union—that it cannot form a vast body which shall be animated, as it were, by one mind, is, that scarcely three hundred years have passed since the first effervescence, and Protestantism is already wearing out and sinking into decay. Yes, we are destined to insult its last agonies, to march over its broken skeleton and its scattered bones! Oh! let us hasten this dissolution by our strong and united efforts! Let us preach to the timorous Protestants that deism and incredulity are corrupting their various sects, that God is, at length, weary of heresies, and that he is now, in our days, about to exercise upon them his terrible and final judgment.

Let us, meanwhile, carefully avoid entering into an open and serious strife with the Protestants. We could not but lose ground by it; and it would call too much attention to the subject. People who are greedy of novelty would be enchanted to see such a combat opened. Let us prefer a secret war, which though less brilliant, is more sure to bring us the advantage. Let us shun too much light. Let us content ourselves with pulling down the stones of the Protestant citadel, one by one, instead of venturing to carry it by storm. This would be neither prudent nor useful. Let us pour contempt upon this inglorious, naked, cadaverous religion; and let us exalt the antiquity, the harmonies, and the wonderful perfectibility of our own.

But we must, above all things, be provided with a store of arguments to parry the objections which the Protestants are so prone to bring forward, and which are founded on the vices and crimes of the ancient clergy and the popes. A difficult theme, I admit, and one which merits a special theory; for after all, what have we to allege sufficiently adroit, subtle, and cogent, to enable us to retire with honour from these discussions with which we are so often pestered? If we could but meet them armed with some good replies, the question might, at least, be maintained in suspense. You well know that the ground upon which the Protestants are most harassing, is the middle ages, which they are pleased to call the dark ages. Unfortunately, on this subject our best writers do but too often furnish our adversaries with arms against us!

O Rome! how many anxious toils, how many pangs of mortification, dost thou cost us! What an overwhelming task it is to have to suspend a veil of glittering embroidery between thy chaos and the nations!"—(*un ricamo brillante tra il tuo chaos ed i populi!*)

(These words came forth like a flash of lightning. It is impossible to give an idea of the contrast between this sudden burst, and the usually calm and smooth manner of Father Roothaan.)

"We have, however, one source of rejoicing. we cherish at the bottom of our hearts this principle, that whatever does not unite with us, must be annihilated; and we hold ourselves ready to make, as soon as we shall have the means, an energetic application of this principle. Protestantism, on the contrary, completely disarmed itself when first it preached the doctrine of toleration, and declared that to persecute for the sake of religion, is a violation of the gospel. O yes! this is well for those who are satisfied with small things, but not for us who aim at greatness which shall eclipse and annul all other greatness.

VIII.

The Irishman here took up the discourse so promptly that he seemed to have been waiting impatiently for an opportunity to break in. There was no speaker whom I found it so difficult to follow.

I will tell you, brethren, by what means we can mould and train up the true Roman Catholic in the midst of the heretic sects. With devoted bishops, and with a clergy whose tactics have been perfected by a serious course of study, we may prepare for the people such instructors as cannot fail to accelerate the progress of our ideas. All will go well with us, provided we can obtain that the Catholic from his very childhood shall abhor the breath even of a heretic, and shall firmly resist all insinuations, all books, and all discourse of a religious cast coming from them; carefully preserving towards them, at the same time, a polite and gracious manner. In other words, he must make a show of much sociability towards the Protestants, but he must avoid all intellectual contact or communion with them. This is what we must inculcate as the only condition of success in every exercise of our ministry, whether by catechism, confession, or conversation. This is our only chance for reuniting what is broken, strengthening what is weak, and magnifying what is small.

Every bishop must rigorously act upon this principle—be gentle, but inflexible. Let him know how to assume the demeanour of a lamb, if he would spread around him a perfume of sanctity which shall win all hearts; but let him also know how to act with the fierceness of a raging lion when he is called upon to protect the rights of the church, or to reclaim those of which it has already been despoiled by the tyranny of governments. If the bishops and the clergy, however, know how to do their duty, these rights shall all resume their paramount supremacy.

One of the dangers upon which our system may strike is the policy of Protestant governments. They have assumed the art of affecting a desire to do us justice, and profess even much condescendence towards those whom they disdainfully denominate Papists. It is their design to break down an isolation which it deeply imports us to maintain; were they to awaken sympathy and efface the limits of separation, our plan would be ruined to its very base.

My brethren, let us defeat such manœuvres, cost what it may, by manœuvres more skilful and more active. I will name one which I have sometimes known to succeed, and which I consider efficacious. The confessional must be our field of action, wherein we must undeceive all who are in danger of being taken by so perfidious a bait. Let us convince the faithful that silence towards us is a crime; that it is fear and not good-will that actuates their tyrants; that he who has penetration enough to see through these wiles, so far from believing that there is affection and kindness in them, perceives nothing but a deep design to weaken our force and to loosen our bond of religion. These governments are well aware that an alliance with Catholics would, sooner or later, enable them to dispute the right of Catholic princes to govern populations which have nothing in common with them. We must, therefore, repeat to the faithful at the confessional, and this under the seal of the most scrupulous secrecy:—"Refrain sedulously from sacrificing all your future hopes to a vile temporary interest, or you will prepare for your children a worse slavery than your own! Heresy is on the watch, to see you bow your heads under the yoke of her execrable doctrines. Remember that, in former times, it was the custom to cover with flowers the victim which was led to the altar. Woe to you if you fall into indifference! For then the mound which protects you will be broken up, and you, pure waters as ye are, will pass away into a pestilent and fetid lake!

"Reflect, that if you give way you are lost. Would you really suffer yourselves to become the dupes of men in power, who seek only to deceive you? The exaggerated respect which you show for their seeming virtues, the silly esteem for their persons with which they seek to inspire you, will be your ruin. The caresses which they lavish upon you kill your faith; for what is the purpose of their intrigues? To render you base and irreligious. For us, who penetrate beneath their outside seeming, our strict duty in the confessional—in this sanctuary, where nothing but truth is spoken—in this tribunal, which is the inviolable asylum of the church, and which heresy in her craftiness would gladly destroy—in this sacred spot, where we occupy the place of God himself, our strict duty is to enlighten you on your true interests, on your rights, and on the character which you ought to assume in order to escape their snares."

We know but too well, dear brethren, how many stones are scattered over those mixed and bastard countries. Let us take the trouble to search for these stones and collect them—it may be slowly and painfully—into one heap. Of this heap we will form one mass, one huge rock, which shall daily become more ponderous, more rugged, more irresistible, until its whole crushing mass shall fall upon the head of heresy!

Let us also send abroad our mysterious words,* which shall cast forth vivid flashes of our doctrine, to dazzle, attract, and draw converts together. We want some of these burning brands to put themselves into contact with such as are nearly or quite extinguished. Let us multiply the pious hands which will busy themselves in seeking out these lifeless logs, heaping them together, and re-lighting them. It is the Protestant revolt which has thus scattered them, and left them to grow cold. Let them, I say, be again collected into heaps, and let the bishops and the body of the clergy reanimate these vast Catholic braziers; let them inflame them without ceasing, for small flames rapidly become great ones, and great ones become fearful conflagrations! Yes, yes; let these avenging fires unite, and become one vast furnace, until at length we shall have no more need to envelop them in mystery; and then the destroying element shall purge out the wicked, and fitly baptise all sects, until the church alone is left standing above their ruins.

---

* He no doubt meant by these *words* the eloquent speakers amongst them, and he adds the epithet *mysterious* in the same sense as the president, who says, a little further on, "*Inviluppati di misterio dai piè fino al capo, restiamo impenetrabili.*"

IX.

The accent of the next speaker betrayed the Frenchman.

All that our friend has been saying is perfectly just. Nothing ought, in fact, to distinguish us in appearance from other men, provided we bear always in our hearts the programme of our deliverance. We must seek to work up all things together for the triumph of our church, and thus we shall prepare for our descendants a magnificent destiny.

Yes, the Catholic's exterior may be sociable, but let him not the less cherish within him concentrated rage and unconquerable antipathy. The final success of our work depends, I do not hesitate to say, on the realization of this type.

But to find men capable of realizing it, to multiply them, to cover all Europe with them—how is this to be accomplished? He who shall rightly answer this question will merit altars and statues. Worthy will he be that we should ascribe miracles to him, and that we should declare him the celestial patron of the people, the man who shall solve this arduous problem. What must we do to recruit such an army, organize and discipline it so as to make it exclusively subservient to the triumph of our ideas?

To isolate those whom we may have gained over, to allow them no other aliment than the bread and wine of our table, and by degrees transform them into raging lions—this must be our main pursuit.

We have, however, an immense variety of motives and interests with which we may work. To certain men, we must offer bribes of earthly good; to others, we must promise crowns of eternal life; some may be incited by the progress of the general welfare; others are capable of desiring to promote the glory of the church, and the spread of the true faith over all the earth.

Could we but flatter ourselves with the hope of seeing the political and the religious lever both swayed by one hand, as in the middle ages and in remote antiquity! Nevertheless, we have incontestible means of influencing all classes. In fact, what system has ever existed, in any age, so powerful as the church to multiply or change means of action? It is true that the religious orders are at this moment broken, and almost morally annihilated; but still they exist as bodies, and all we have to do is to reanimate them with the breath of our own life.

This is what we must also do for confession! May this institution endure as long as the sun! As long as it continues to exist, I defy all earthly powers united to deal Catholicism a mortal blow!

Could we but complete this institution! for it is perfectible. As yet it is but in its infancy. Could we but imbue all the clergy with a knowledge of its secret virtue! What a prodigious empire might it not acquire to the church! What an immense source of profit! What store of souls it might gain over to us! What partizans! What treasures! What an innumerable army it might place at our disposal, and what superiority it would assure us in the day of battle!

Should we not have found the fixed point desiderated by the mathematician of Syracuse?

Confession! What scope for genius beneath its impenetrable mystery! Gentleness and terror there play their part by turns. Volumes might be written on the power and the uses of this instrument, which are as manifold as the various affections and propensities of human character. It ought to become in our hands the miraculous rod wherewith to terrify Egypt, its Pharaohs and its ministers, until Protestantism, which has itself lopped off its own right hand, shall have fallen an easy victim to us.

As for the Protestant aristocracies, we must neither be open with them, nor yet veil ourselves so as to excite their suspicions. It may be even necessary sometimes to risk an avowal, if by an avowal, adroitly let slip, we can find means to strike a master stroke. For example, we might address them in some such terms at these:—

"Yes, certainly, our methods for sounding the hearts of those who are confided to us, and above all of subjugating the sentiments of the young, may appear startling; but examine the subject a little, and you will acknowledge that if you were to imitate us, your governments would be more stable. Only lend us a helping hand, and we will show you how to come at the statistics of each individual head. In this respect, at least, we are your masters. In your religion you leave people's minds to themselves, which produces, as you well know, all kinds of revolutions and many catastrophes. Adopt confessors. Let your youths submit their thoughts, from their earliest years, to a director of their conscience. Think of the immense influence of principles which men of the sanctuary deposit in a youthful breast! Show yourselves favourable to that clergy which, bending over a soul thus subjected, reads it as if it were an unsealed letter. The clergy would be grateful to you. Let it have an interest in serving you, so that it may warn you opportunely when the tide is rising or falling in each country, and enable you to turn public events to your own profit. Doubt not that if this alliance of religion with politics could be brought to bear on the whole human race, the latter would universally become as wax in your hands, to mould it as you pleased, and stamp it with your own seal."

It is needless to say that language like this is not to be proclaimed from the house-tops; it is to be adroitly insinuated into the ears of such as might be of vast utility to us, when struck by such glimmerings of light. Let them once begin to fall in with these ideas, and help to bring them into vogue, and then it will of course be our task to transform these stout auxiliaries into our very humble servants (*in servi umilissimi*).

I shall soon be prepared to lay before you an elaborate paper on this subject, which I have here but slightly touched.

X.

The Jesuit who spoke next expressed himself in the purest Italian. Nevertheless, the construction of his phrases, and the lucid precision of his method, induced me to think that he also was French. The cast of his phrases was so much after the French manner, that I had scarcely an effort in translating his speech.

The stiff-necked heretics of whom he speaks are the Protestants of the higher classes, not the vulgar.

It is chiefly as to the anarchic tendencies of free inquiry that we should attack those stiff-necked heretics, and I have often spoken to them thus:—

"If there is anything utterly inexplicable to reasonable people, it is your conduct. You allow free inquiry in religion; is not this equivalent to permitting, legitimizing, nay, even provoking it, on all political questions also? If you admit of so great a licence in a matter altogether divine and immutable—a matter so profound and abstruse as religion is, even for the learned few—is it not the height of inconsistency to hope to enslave the minds of men by forbidding them all inquiry into a subject so thoroughly human and variable as politics? On the one hand, you expect to exercise sovereign and unquestioned authority, whilst, on the other, where God and the church are at stake, you assist in shaking off the yoke of an authority a thousand times more sacred and more necessary! Surely it would be impossible to conceive a contradiction more palpable and absurd.

"Its consequences are obvious. When, for mere temporal advantages, several princes had encouraged the revolt against the church, the same disaster soon fell upon themselves. They had to endure, in their turn, an examination still more severe than that to which Rome had been subjected—an examination of their dynastic rights, their codes, their actions—an examination which took place by the glare of a fearful conflagration, and which sent them to perish ignominiously on the scaffold like highway robbers.

"Such are the fruits of free inquiry. If it multiplies everywhere its pestilential pulpits, the usual effects will inevitably follow. Hence I draw the following conclusions:—

"If ever the aristocracy of our church shall be laid low, all other aristocracies will perish likewise.

"If ever the Catholic church be decapitated, all other monarchies will share the same fate.

"If ever the purple of our cardinals be profaned and torn into rags, all other purples will be rent in like manner.

"If ever our worship be despoiled of its pomp and grandeur, there will be an end of every other pomp and grandeur on earth.

"We will not flatter you as courtiers do; we will tell you the whole truth, in the hope that, for our mutual benefit, you may arrive at these simple and sure conclusions: if the Roman church lives we shall all live with her; if she perishes, none of the grandeurs which have hitherto, in fact, been supported by Catholicism will survive the downfall of that infinite grandeur, the foremost of all, and before which the universe has so long prostrated itself. But if, on the contrary, you make common cause with us, in the endeavour to rally the people around the ancient banner, if your arms, whilst they yet may, drive them back to their forsaken ways; then, in the place of infinite disorders, we shall have the union of the two powers, which shall go on daily increasing until it become perfectly consolidated.

"Give us, then, your sympathies; turn your faces towards us; throw discredit on Protestantism; and let Catholicism, enthroned by your aid in the opinions of our times, lift up her head, spread her dominion over the whole world, and completely subdue it. And this will inevitably take place, if men of high station will fearlessly declare themselves converted; provided (and this is very important) that their change can in no way be attributed to motives of interest.

"Can you, indeed, deny that the present rage for innovation has arisen from the movement occasioned by Protestantism in throwing the Bible before the senseless multitude? The first thing, therefore, to be done is to bring them back from the Bible to Catholic authority, which retrenches from this book only what is hurtful, allowing free circulation to those portions of it alone which ensure good order.

"How comes it to pass that so many shallow minds make bold to fashion their own set of opinions? Is it not because you have abolished all subjection to the tribunal of consciences, which alone watched over the thoughts, and put a bridle on the lips? Consequently, this tribunal must be restored, and in order that every one may respect it, the great must be the first to bow down before it; nor will this submission in any way humiliate or abase them. Amongst the precious advantages to be derived from it, is not their part a rich one? You can little imagine what the church has in store to reward services of such importance."

Here a slight murmur of derision caused a moment's interruption.

"For, when once our renovated cult shall have regained all that heresy has snatched from it, Catholicism, which disdains the paltry spirit of Protestantism, will open wide the gates of her temples, that each rank, each estate, may there shine in its respective place. Being herself great, she naturally sympathizes with all that may add to her splendour. Those are madmen or fools, who, by their scheme for despoiling the churches of whatever could give them an imposing aspect, have made the nakedness of poverty conducive to that other mania of universal equality.

"Lend us then, we implore you, your aid to put down every obstacle to the mutual understanding of the two authorities—the church and the throne. It is only when these two authorities shall be regarded as divine dogmas, and when they mutually sustain each other, that they will have sufficient power to sweep away all this chaos of dangerous questions which converts society into a tumultuous sea. What glorious results will follow, on the other hand, from this happy union, this fraternal alliance! The church and the state, rendered valorous by this union, shall trample under foot the two hydras, mother and daughter;* the fire shall consume them, and their ashes shall be scattered to the four winds!"

---

* Protestantism and Revolution.

XI.

There was a pause of some moments. A conversation took place, so general and unconnected that it was impossible for me to seize its meaning. But Father Roothaan soon resumed the discourse, and his first words, no doubt, related to this short conversation.

To this effect I would remark that we shall establish nothing firmly unless we begin with those who are to direct others. It therefore appears to me essential to regulate the initiation, by forming various grades in it (*stadii*). I say regulate, because we must never risk our light but upon sure grounds, and after a rigid scrutiny of the dispositions of the person to be initiated. A ray too much, sometimes, instead of enlightening (*imbaldanzire*) him to whom it is communicated, serves only to dazzle him and lead him astray. We thus lose some excellent and active instruments, from having imprudently attempted to enlarge their mission. Let us know well beforehand with whom we have to do.

We must not, however, suffer a reasonable cautiousness to degenerate into excessive distrust. Let frequent essays be made in order to acquire extreme delicacy of tact, and that discernment of the inner man by which we may assure ourselves of a person's secret thoughts. It is well to begin by complaining of the evils with which the church is oppressed, and then to insist on the necessity of strongly attaching the inferior clergy to their bishops, in order that they may aid each other in seeking a remedy. The conversation being thus opened, it seldom fails, if adroitly followed up, to bring out the true character of the individual under examination. After having thus sounded him, a word may be hazarded on the urgency of uniting men distinguished by rank or talent (always supposing that he is himself of this class), in order to raise up a dam against the torrent, and ultimately put the church in possession of her ancient sceptre. And if his replies denote that he is capable of understanding us, the means to be employed in attaining this great end may next be hinted to him. He may afterwards be wrought upon by letters, and if he shows himself apt, some sparks may be imparted to him of the vast idea which animates us.

Yes, there are doubtless many on whom these words, prayer, religion, church, glory of God, conversion of sinners, exercise a magic power. There are others for whom there is a divine meaning in the words abolition of slavery, reformation of abuses, love of humanity, instruction of the people, universal charity. Well, let us sing in all these keys (*cantiamo su questi tuoni medesimi*), and let us not be sparing of the characteristic terms of their language. Let us say that Catholicism alone knows how to inspire philanthropy and heroism, and proofs of this will not fail us. But, under cover of all these forms, we must never lose sight of our final project.

Assuredly it is for our highest interest that a pope should be elected who is fundamentally Catholic; but if the greater number insist on a rational pope, be it so, on condition that they will aid us in placing the reins in his hands.* And we will not be sparing of our eulogiums on those men who take the lead in all parties whatsoever, in order that we may, in time, convert them into instruments for our own use.

---

* All power, spiritual and temporal.

But this is not enough. To ensure success to our efforts, we require instruments well proved, and of a nature to resist all seduction. We must, on recruiting them, gain them over to our doctrines by whatever is most flattering to their desires. This is the surest way of making zealous and prudent propagators. Let all courts, and particularly those of heretic princes, be provided with some of our most vigilant sentinels, who must be wholly ours, although belonging, in appearance, to the Protestant sect; in order that nothing may escape us, whether to our profit or our disadvantage, of all that passes in the cabinet and the consistory. We must hesitate at no cost when it imports us to gain possession of a secret.

I, too, earnestly desire a solution of this most difficult point—how to isolate the Catholics without their appearing in any way to be isolated. I confess that this appears to me almost impossible to be attained amongst the common people, because they have not been, like us, from their early years subjected to a fixed and inflexible discipline. Nevertheless, we can fashion men to what form we will, when powerful interests do violence, as it were, to their minds. The bishops, as well as the clergy, must learn the necessity of realizing this plan. But since a knowledge of the means of execution is indispensable, it must be our task to select them and inculcate them. Our business is to contrive:—

1st, That the Catholics be imbued with hatred for the heretics, whoever they may be; and that this hatred shall constantly increase, and bind them closely to each other.

2nd, That it be, nevertheless, dissembled, so as not to transpire until the day when it shall be appointed to break forth.

3rd, That this secret hate be combined with great activity in endeavouring to detach the faithful from every government inimical to us, and employ them, when they shall form a detached body, to strike deadly blows at heresy.

Let us bring all our skill to bear upon the development of this part of our plan. For myself, it is my intention to devote myself especially to it.

When we shall once have become familiar with these schemes, and when our store of expedients shall have been sufficiently augmented, I doubt not that the system which now seems crude and confused, will assume a very different aspect. We shall have brought it to a degree of perfection, such as our present vague and obscure notions can scarcely foreshadow.

It is fortunate for us that the catechism of each diocese contains the precious element upon which our dogma is founded—that God is to be obeyed rather than men. These simple words contain all that we require for the papacy. If we teach (and who shall prevent us from doing so?) that the pope is the vicar of God, it follows that the pope speaks absolutely in the place of God. It is the pope, then, who is to be obeyed rather than men.

This is the bond of which every confessor must make use, in order to bind the faithful indissolubly to the chariot of Rome. Even in the Catholic States doth not the pulpit bear this inscripion of servitude: " *Usque huc venies, neque ultra?* " But happily this is not the case with the confessional. That place is not profaned by any such insulting restrictions. There God reigns supreme, and, from *the* *great dogma*, the clergy (as long as it shows itself the worthy and legitimate organ of the pope) derives the privilege of being obeyed as God himself.

The catechism thus explained, so as to support the chief developments of our doctrines, we must from time to time hint that the rights of the Holy See may be momentarily forgotten, God so permitting, in order to punish the blindness of the people; but that these rights can never be annulled, since it is foretold that they shall one day revive in greater lustre than ever.

Now, one of the means which I judge proper to promote this spirit of isolation and proud self-reliance which is so important to us, is the transmission by declared participation of the all-powerfulness of the papacy, not only to the hierarchical body, but to the faithful, in their relations with those obstinate heretics; on condition, however, that they never lose sight of its indivisible unity. What a flattering attribute! what a fertile scource of religious exaltation! Could anything be conceived more adapted to knit our forces together and render them invincible?

One thing we cannot be too earnest and indefatigable in proclaiming, namely, that the Catholic religion alone possesses the truth and the life; that he who holds it is at peace with his conscience; that its orthodoxy does not depend upon its chiefs or its priests; that, were they monsters of wickedness, their shame and punishment must be upon their own heads; that their crimes could only be looked upon as those clouds which sometimes obscure the brightness of the sun; that the stability of the church, its holiness, and its virtue do not depend upon the characters of a few men, but on that prerogative which it alone possesses, of being the centre of unity; that it presents the sign of salvation, on which we must fix our eyes, as did the Israelites upon the serpent in the desert, and not upon the failings of the clergy! If a divine liquor is poured from vessels of clay, instead of vessels of gold, is it on that account the less precious?

Only let such arguments as these be seasoned with vivid eloquence, and take my word for it that even those who pass for enlightened people will not fail to be taken (*tolti*) by them just like the rest.

Let us also persist in declaring that if Catholicism gains the victory, and becomes free to act according to the spirit of God, it will work out the happiness of mankind; that, consequently, to labour in order to break the chains in which the world and the powers of the world have bound it, to devote ourselves, soul and body, to its emancipation, is to make so many sacrifices for the propagation of the holiest doctrines, and for the noblest progress of humanity. Can the triumph of the cause of God lead to any other end than the final triumph of the most generous principles that have ever warmed and stirred the heart of man?

I, too, am of opinion that it is advisable to make frequent use of the Bible. Does not a prism reflect all existing colours? and can our system fail to reflect one single idea of all those which pass through men's imaginations? No; to set aside the Bible would be to tarnish our beautiful prism. I will suggest a few instances of the mode in which it may be used.

Let us preach that from the union of the children of God with the children of men, sprang the monsters and giants who called down the deluge upon the earth. Let us remind our hearers incessantly of the captivity of Babylon, the bondage in Egypt, the conquest of the land of Canaan, of the ark, the splendours of Solomon's temple, the authority of the high-priest, his superb vestments, the tithes, &c., &c.

Even these few examples, you see, furnish us with texts innumerable, wherewith to foster the spirit of antipathy and separation, and to hallow all the sensuous and gorgeous parade of the church.

The Christian allegories may be turned to good account. We may say that God designs for extermination, like the Canaanites, all the nations that obstinately refuse to enter into the unity of the church; and that the vicar of Jesus Christ is appointed to execute these judgments in due time. Let the Catholics commit themselves with implicit trust into the hands of the sovereign pontiff, who is their only guide; God will hasten the day, when, not to speak of the happiness which awaits them in another life, he will make them the sole arbiters of all things here below.

Let us, on all occasions, impress upon the people, that if they will only be united and obedient, they will become strong, and will receive the glorious mission of striking down the power of the impious, and scourging with a rod of iron the nations inimical to the church, until they be brought at length to implore remission of their sins, and pardon for their revolt, through the intercession of him whom they hear so often blasphemously designated as Antichrist.

Towards the end of this discourse, Father Roothaan seemed to me to be deficient in his usual lucidity. There was a want of his accustomed assurance. It might be inattention; it might be that he was in haste to finish. No sooner had he done so than the Irishman again took up the discourse.

XII.

There is no reason why we should take too desponding a view of our position with respect to the Protestant States. Trust me, the age will have to pay dear for its much-loved liberty. Let us, however, claim our just share in it. That many-headed monster named Civil and Political Equality, Liberty of the Press, Liberty of Conscience,—who can doubt that its aim, its ultimate aim at least, is the destruction of the church? But never shall this proud divinity fulfil the vows of its enthusiastic adorers! Never shall it be able to arrest our march! Firstly, We will strive to obtain the same rights as those enjoyed by the Protestants: an easy conquest! We have only to awaken the good sense of the Catholics on this point, and to repeat to them without intermission: "What tyranny! Are you not as slaves? Attack their privileges; overthrow them! It is the will of God!" Secondly, When this equilibrium shall have been obtained—since not to go forward is to go backward—let us push up the faithful higher and higher, over the shoulders, over the heads, of these heretic dogs *(di questi cani d'eretici)*. Let us aim at preponderance, and in such a manner as to be ever gaining ground in the contest. Thirdly, By new efforts, by an irresistible energy, the faithful shall at length come forth conquerors, and place in their mother's crown that brightest and richest gem, THEOCRACY.

But what strikes me as most urgent, at the present time, is to create a language whose phrases, borrowed from Scripture, or from the Bulls, shall convey to the uninitiated nothing beyond their ordinary meaning, but which shall contain, for those who are initiated, the principal elements of our doctrine. This device is so much the more specious as, by its means, we might officially propagate our ideas, under the very noses of governments *(à la barba de' governi)*, unknown to them, and without the least hindrance. Those who are furnished with a key will be able to explain this language, on all proper occasions, so as to make known the will of Rome. It will generally suffice, for this purpose, to lift up a part of the veil with which the church is forced to cover herself, to escape much inconvenience in her present state of slavery. In this way, each word may be made the envelope of a vast political idea.

It will also be very profitable to our cause if we augment the number of those who comprehend us, and if we can succeed in enrolling in our ranks the compilers of the briefs and decrees which issue from Rome.

At this moment the father abruptly recurred to his favourite thesis.

Strike, strike upon this rock: Independence of the Catholics in every heretical government! There is a burning thirst for this independence! and you will see what splendid fountains will spring forth from it.

All Catholic serfs must take those of Ireland for their models; and the manner in which Ireland behaves towards her cruel step-mother, England, will teach them what conduct to pursue with the Protestant sects and states that encompass and overbear them. But I positively declare, that we have no chance of success, except by means of associations, powerfully combined, which shall have their chiefs, their own peculiar language, an active and well organized correspondence, and all sorts of stirring writings. For these purposes, it is not enough to have at our disposal men of talent and men of action—we must have gold to keep them fast to their work. Aye, give me gold—plenty of gold; and then, with such able heads and such resources as the church commands, I will undertake not only to master the whole world, but to reconstruct it entirely.

The triumphant tone of his voice was here suddenly checked, and he resumed, as if correcting himself.

When we aim at results so magnificent, a little boldness may be allowed us; but we must not be madly bold.

Yes, it is just, it is necessary to keep in view that, although there be men ready to give their wealth and their lives for the deliverance of the church (this word, the church, has such a magic influence over their minds!) yet nothing would be more dangerous than to explain too clearly *what the church is, and what it would have.* Their feeble vision could not bear the full blaze of the mighty reality which is hidden under so many folds of the religious veil. The moment they discovered the *political* element their arms would sink powerless, their eager zeal would vanish, and these athletic combatants, so prompt to serve us, would suddenly turn their weapons against us. It is by no means rare to witness these sudden changes, when persons full of zeal, but at the same time simple and of limited views, have been in communication with one of our brotherhood, who may have overstepped the bounds of prudence. Let us all then carefully fathom the characters of those with whom we have to do, and let every attempt we make be based upon strict examination.

The experience of some years has also taught me that sounding words go much further with vulgar minds than the best supported arguments. With well informed and cultivated persons we may venture upon abstractions of a seductive character, but it will save us trouble to remember that the common people may be wrought upon by *talk* which would appear contemptible to men of cultivated minds.

And now, learn what is the baptism of fire, which, at each confession, I used to pour on the heads of my penitents in Ireland.

"Poor people!" I said to them, "how have they degraded you! they esteem you less than brutes. Look at these great landlords! They revel in wealth, they devour the land, they laugh at you, and in return for the wealth they draw from you they load you with contempt. And yet, if you knew how to count up your strength, you are stronger than they. Measure yourselves with them, man to man, and you will soon see what there is in them. It is nothing but your own stupidity that makes them so powerful."

Such was pretty nearly the substance of all my discourses to them. And when their confession was ended, I added, "Go your ways and do not be downhearted; you are white doves in comparison with those black and filthy crows. Take them out of their luxurious dwellings; strip them of their fine clothes, and you will find that their flesh is not even as good as your own. They do you gross wrong in two ways—they sully your faith and degrade your persons. If you talk of religious rights, the rights on which all others depend, yours come down to you direct from Jesus Christ; as eighteen centuries—and what centuries!—are there to testify for you. But *they!*—who is their father? One Luther, or Calvin, or a brutal Henry VIII. They reckon, at most, three centuries; and these they have dishonoured by numberless crimes, and by the blackest of vices! The Catholics alone are worthy to be free; whilst the heretics, slaves every one of them of Satan, have no rights of any kind. Impious as they are! did they not stigmatize as false the religion of their fathers? a religion which counted more than fifteen centuries. In other words, they declare all their ancestors damned, and believe that they alone are saved."

Permit me, reverend fathers, to give you a summary of the maxims which I have laid down for my own guidance. I say to the Catholics who live in mixed countries:—

"Nothing can be more monstrous than the injustice you endure; you are not heretics, you therefore suffer not only your persons but your faith to be enslaved, in being subject to the rule of heretic princes. Not only have they no right to compel you to this subjection, but God wills that you should employ all your efforts to shake off the yoke.

"To despise the vicar of Jesus Christ is to despise your Saviour; for if Jesus Christ said of the apostles, 'He who despises them, despises me,' how much greater is the crime to despise him for whom Christ especially prayed, and whom he himself commissioned to confirm the other apostles in the faith.

"Does it not follow from these declarations, that whilst the whole human race is involved in error, the pope alone is divinely preserved from all error?

"It is from pride alone that heresy persists in maintaining its place beyond the limits of the church. It is not proofs it wants to convince it of its errors; there are proofs more than sufficient to overwhelm it with shame and disgrace.

"Do you know why it is that Catholicism has not yet succeeded in rendering the whole world happy? It is because human passions wage perpetual war against it; it is because Catholic kings themselves love their crown better than their faith. Be this as it may, it is the pope, and the pope only, who, by the will of God, possesses the secret of pacifying and uniting all men."

As regards the Bible, I am quite prepared to maintain the happy idea of representing it only as a primitive and unfinished sketch; whence we may justly say that it would be folly to expect the church to be now what it was originally; as well might we expect a man to retrograde to his cradle.

Let us, also, do our utmost to weaken and destroy in the minds of the people certain dangerous impressions which are apt to be made upon them by the virtues and the integrity of the heretics. Let us say to them:—

"However honest they may appear to you, it is next to impossible that their intentions should be pure; and as to their sins, they remain with them, and accumulate fearfully on their heads, deprived as they are of those means of salvation which the church alone provides, and by which alone we can be rendered pure in the sight of God; whereas the Catholics, if unhappily they go on from fault to fault, and even become black as coal, will most assuredly be saved. Surrounded in their dying hour by every aid and encouragement, they will revive as a flame, provided they do not persist to the end (which is scarcely possible) in rejecting confession, indulgences, and masses, for the redemption of their souls; these are means of grace of which the church, our good mother, is liberal towards those who, by their devotion and zeal, are worthy to be numbered amongst her children."

You will easily perceive that, if it is good to exalt, in the estimation of Catholics, these precious prerogatives, it is well also to draw from them all possible advantage for our cause. Thus let us tell them that, if they desire to be absolved by the church when on their death-beds, they must love her, and do much for her, in order that she may do the same for them. Tell them that the only way to please her is to hate whom she hates, to be united with her, to combat for her, and to raise her from the state of humiliation in which the last three centuries have held her.

Initiated fathers! Great are the hopes I build on the energies of our Ireland. I regard her as our champion. Let us only be careful to anoint her effectually with our oil, so that in wrestling with her tyrant she may always slip from his grasp. In how many folds may she not entangle the British she-wolf, if she will but listen to our counsels! Rising slowly from the tomb, under the breath of resurrection which is already upon her, she will strangle in her strong gripe the mysterious vampire which has sucked her blood for many a year. What may we not make of an idiot, savage, and famishing people? (*d'un popolo idiota, rozzo e affamato*). It will prove our Samson; and with its irresistible jaw-bone it will grind to dust myriads of the Philistines.

During my residence in Ireland I began a pamphlet which I am now finishing, in order to present it to our chosen vessel,[*] that it may serve him daily for a breviary. All difficulties are there smoothed, all advantages calculated—the spirit of the nation, its wants, its resources, its strength, what excites it, and what encourages it, are there laid down and fully reasoned upon.

The father seemed to have finished, for here he made a pause; but suddenly, with a voice totally changed, in a manner unusually deliberate, and with a remarkable stress on each word, he made this singular profession of faith:—

I believe that God looks down with derision upon humanity after having abandoned it to all the absurdities of its own caprice.

I believe that morality, principles of conduct, all our theories and all our systems, are merely effects of times and places, which alone make men what they are.

Let a nation, or a caste, feel the attraction that lies in the prospect of a great and magnificent advantage, let it not want the means to ensure itself the possession of this advantage, and immediately, in the eyes of this nation or caste, justice ceases to wear the same countenance, or to prescribe the same code as before in any one phase of its existence. Were justice really as unchangeable as books assure us, she would urge her dictates in vain—she would not be listened to; all her remonstrances would be despised; each party, each body, each sect would stick to the justice of its own making (*alla giustizia di sua invenzione*). Such ever has been, and such ever will be man. The weak will never cease to be slaves of the strong. Let us try, therefore, to belong to the latter class; strong in intelligence and in action, strong in wealth, strong in partizans, strong, in a word, in resources of all sorts, for it is only thus that we may hope to crush our enemies under our feet.

---

[*] O'Connell, doubtless.

The fathers seemed to acquiesce in the principles professed by the Irishman, for no objection was heard.

XIII.

Another father then spoke, and though his Italian was correct and his accent faultless, it is most probable that he was a German. It is well known that in their colleges the Jesuits exercise their pupils in making speeches in different languages, so that they often acquire great perfection in speech and accent.

We require to have certain centres from whence our devoted servants may diverge, both in England and in Germany. Bavaria and Ireland naturally present themselves as our two strongholds. Who can deprive us of them?

As to Germany, we must make up our minds to regard it as possessing a character altogether peculiar, seeing that the Reformation has imbued it with prejudices which seem almost insurmountable. We can have no hope that a pure Roman church will soon make its way there. Who knows how long we must be content to suffer many portions of our Catholic church in that country to remain almost Protestant? Be it so; but at least let them remain attached by some strong link or another to Rome. Let us not lose what is good by striving too impatiently for what is better. Let us rather study what are the actual signs of the times. Let us go into such and such parts of the country, and endeavour to introduce there our religious practices, beginning by such as are least obtrusive, if we see an opening for them; but at the same time, taking care not to expose them to too great a number of adversaries.

There is one argument which I have found singularly efficacious in obtaining the concurrence of men in power. I have observed to them that Protestantism is a reaction of matter against spirit; for with what did Protestanism begin? With expunging voluntary torture from the catalogue of the most heroic and exalted virtues; whilst, without foreseeing the dreadful consequences, it has dignified the enjoyment of the most seductive pleasures of this life, and thereby produced boundless mischief. "For our part (I have thus continued), what we show forth is, Christ naked and crucified; we declare that hunger, thirst, privations, scourging, contempt, abandonment, debasement even, are so many merits for which Heaven is prodigal of rewards. 'Happy those who suffer! happy those who are without consolation here below!' we continually repeat to the poor and the wretched; and if, at confession, they complain of the bitterness of their lot, we picture to them the Son of God himself without a place wherein to rest his head, bearing his cross, crowned with thorns, bleeding from the scourge, led to death like a lamb to the slaughter, and still forbidding to hate and to curse.

"Such is the model we place before the common people in our sermons and at the confessional, and thus do we change them from raging lions into resigned and timid sheep. Besides all this we dazzle them by the prodigious quantity of Lives of Saints which we set before their eyes—saints who have been canonized, who are now resplendent with celestial glory, who have fasted and mortified themselves, voluntarily undergoing the most severe sufferings, in order to gain a glorious seat in heaven.

"Weigh all this well, and you will be prepared to acknowledge that the Roman church alone is able to guarantee you against the principles of revolt, that by such teachings as these it can stifle and destroy them in their very germs."

The speaker here made a slight pause; and then, as if an idea suddenly occurred to him, he resumed in a calmer tone.

What if we organized a special committee to watch over the tendencies of the history and literature of the age? Encouragement might be adroitly given to any writer who would place a few flowers on the bust of one or other of our popes, or who might be disposed to defend certain parts of our institutions, or our calumniated religious practices. In time, we should see a great increase in the number of these apologies; and there is no doubt that if a few writers of note were to open the way in this direction, others would soon follow in their track, without requiring either pay or prompting from us.

If we could but operate a change in public opinion with respect to the history of the church, its dogmas and ceremonies, so as to bring the people to regard these things with less repugnance, how many obstacles would be thereby removed! We suffer rich benefices to be devoured by a host of Sybarites who do us more harm than good—why should we regret a few sums expended for a purpose so eminently useful?

How many ruins might be repaired through the instrumentality of the multitude of young poetic enthusiasts, or of those literary men whose presumption or itch for novelty keeps them perpetually scribbling.

XIV.

In the short pauses which took place between the speeches, I hastily made a few marks by which I might distinguish the speakers. In this place, however, in turning over a leaf, I blotted a line—so that I have nothing to say as to the Jesuit who broached the extraordinary doctrines which follow.

As long as the human heart shall remain what it is, believe me, dear colleagues, the elements of the Catholic system will never be exhausted, so abundantly fruitful are they! I will bring forward a convincing proof of what I say, although I am aware that, on the subject of the fair sex, you are Doctors in Israel.

One of my friends had the good fortune to see, at his knees, a lady, still young and beautiful. Her husband, an aged and very rich man, doted on her, and made it his sole study to please her. She, on the other hand, was a perfect specimen of that class of women who love religion—but love pleasure no less. Roaming from confessor to confessor, she had always had the ill fortune to fall into the hands of confounded Jansenists. All these had enjoined her to detach herself from *her dear painter!* Our brother, perceiving that she was devout to enthusiasm, knew at once how to deal with her case. The lady expressed herself nearly in the following terms:—"I could not endure to remain for whole years without receiving the sacraments; my heart would continually tell me that I was a heathen and a child of perdition. Was it my fault if they gave me in marriage at an age when I was incapable of reflection? He whom I love is the most irreproachable of men; and for myself, this attachment is my only fault. What use to me are the good things of life if I must be wretched as long as I live? For the love of the Holy Virgin, reverend father! do not be so hard as my former confessors have been! His pictures* are almost all on religious subjects; there is not a great ceremony in the church at which he is not present, as well as myself—too happy, both of us, to take a part in these ravishing solemnities! Alas! you know not, perhaps, reverend father, what it is to feel such love as this!"

Our friend, after having given free course to this torrent of amorous eloquence, gradually soothed his penitent by assuring her that religion is no tyrant over the affections—that it demands no sacrifices but such as are reasonable and possible. "If you are of opinion," said he, "that your health is suffering from the effect of melancholy, I can point out to you a way by which you may relieve your conscience. All those priests who have thus distressed you understand nothing whatever of matters of faith; they interpret Scripture by the letter, whereas the letter killeth, as the apostle says; but the interpretation, according to the spirit, giveth life. Listen to a parable, which will smooth all your difficulties:—

"Two fathers had each a son. These youths had a passion for the chase. One of the fathers was severe, the other mild and indulgent. The former positively forbade his son the enjoyment of his favourite pursuit; the latter, calling his son to him, thus addressed him:—'I see, my son, that it would cost you much to renounce your favourite sport; meanwhile there is only one condition on which I can allow you to indulge it; namely, that I may have the satisfaction of seeing that your affection and zeal for me increase in proportion to my indulgence.' What followed? The young man to whom the chase had been forbidden followed it in secret, and at the same time became more and more estranged from his father, until all intercourse was broken off between them; whilst the other redoubled his attentions to his father, and showed him every mark of duty and affection."

---

* The paintings of the *dear artist.*

You will, no doubt, admire both the parable and the tactics of our friend. He thus concluded his address to his fair penitent:—"It is for you, madam," said he, "to take the latter of these two youths for your model. Be always amongst the first at your devotions; let the house of the Lord witness your presence on all holy occasions; and since you are rich, let it be your pleasure to adorn it richly, like your own dwelling. The Magdalen, to whom the Lord forgave much because she had loved much, proved her love by her actions; she broke the most precious of her vases to bedew him with perfumes. In like manner, do you take as much interest in the holy spot where Jesus Christ every day dwells bodily, as you do in adorning your own person."

The delight with which the lady heard these words was boundless. "Oh, yes, indeed, indeed," cried she, "all that you say is clearer than the light of day. I vow that I will never again have any other confessor than you."

It is almost incredible what this lady afterwards lavished on the church in ornaments, censers, crowns, and robes for the Virgin. She placed herself at the head of different confraternities; and several other ladies, in circumstances similar to hers, were easily induced to follow her example.

Let this serve as a lesson to us. Too much rigour dries up the tree; but indulgence is like the rain which nourishes it and makes it bring forth fruit a hundredfold (*e gli fa produrre de' frutti al centuplo*).

Here followed a noisy interruption of some minutes, and it was evident that the remarks which were made were rather highly-seasoned. I was astonished, and I am still astonished, that men who affect so much gravity in public can allow themselves thus to make a jest of conscience. The president, however, soon put a stop to these ebullitions of gaiety, remarking that he was led by what he had just heard to communicate a perfectly novel idea. This *idea,* which he was about to submit to them, had often dwelt on his mind when contemplating the subject of celibacy, and the calamities which its renouncement would bring upon the church.

I have to remark, that Father Fortis, if it were indeed he who presided at this conference, and Father Roothaan, his actual successor in the generalship of the Company, seemed to take a livelier interest than the rest in the fate of the Catholic theocracy; and they were perpetually devising new schemes to secure its safety.

XV.

One measure, at which I have indeed already hinted, and which must be brought under discussion, is in itself calculated to produce admirable results: it is one which would have for its object to relieve priests from the too heavy burden of real celibacy (*d'un vero celibato*). You well know that if ever a breach is opened on this side, if ever a considerable portion of the clergy (urged on by the secular power which might be interested in such a change) should demand the right to marry, the whole hierarchical edifice would crumble away stone by stone, until nothing remained of the church. If once this question came to be generally entertained, the dispute would grow hot, and everybody would be asking, "When did ecclesiastical celibacy begin?" Its history would be investigated; and the marble covering which has been lying for ages over its mysteries, would be wholly removed. Scruples, remorse, and reaction, would spring up and spread like an epidemic. Rome would resist most certainly, for the very foundations of Catholicism would be in danger; but a growing irritation would everywhere find some object to fasten upon—inquiry would proceed to other matters besides celibacy—and in all probability a formidable league would be formed which would address this question to the pope: "Where are your titles to command the church and the clergy?" Thus there would be revolt upon revolt, and the Holy See, beset on all sides, would have to sustain the sorest fight it had ever waged.

It is therefore highly expedient that we should connect with the celibacy of the clergy as many interests as possible, like so many spokes of a wheel round its axis. For I repeat to you, brethren, if this institution should come to be overthrown, where is the dogma that will long survive it? As, in a house of cards, the fall of one single card is followed by that of the whole construction, so, should celibacy fall to the ground, down will fall confession, mass, and purgatory; all pomp will vanish from our worship—all glory will depart from our priesthood; and the mines from which we have drawn such rich supplies, will be henceforth closed to us. Maintain celibacy, and our course will be one uninterrupted triumph; suffer it to fall, and what a destiny will be ours! We shall be, as it were, transfixed with wounds, shamefully mutilated, our every project torn to pieces in our hands! *Quod absit!* we must, however, expect all this, if, by some powerful measure, we do not prevent so great a calamity.*

Since we are occupied in forging so many revelations and miracles, would it not be possible (great things proceed sometimes from small beginnings) to compose a little work which should breathe the purest perfume of sanctity, and which should at first be cautiously and secretly circulated? It might be conceived in some such terms as these:—

"The Church is entering upon dangerous times. Upon its fall, or its consolidation, hinges the end or the continuance of the world. An era of glory yet unheard of will open for the clergy, if it will lend an ear to what God reveals to it by Saint ——" (this revelation must be made in the name of some saint of recent date). "The strength which the clergy will derive from it is immense. It will teach them supernatural secrets, to throw down heresy, and to build up the degraded priesthood on the ruins of the profane, bestowing on it, at last, its imprescriptible title of *royal.* It is Jesus Christ himself who establishes this new compact with the shepherds of his flock, in order to prepare them, as valiant and invincible soldiers, for the struggle which is near. In former times, the Almighty sanctified simultaneous and visible polygamy. This was in order to people the earth; it was meet that all other considerations should yield to this. In later times, God condescended to permit this state of things to continue, even when the earth was covered with multitudes of people. Now, that the time seems to have arrived to render the church the universal sovereign, and to give it a glorious triumph over all its enemies—now, the Almighty, who does what he wills, in heaven and on earth, without control or question, from any power human or divine, abolishes for the clergy, for all monks, and all nuns, of whatsoever denomination, *real and true celibacy*, and for this reason, that it cannot but be hurtful to those who, called to destroy the armies of Satan, require for the success of this work to be as closely and as intimately united as if they were but one soul and one body. Wherefore God establishes, henceforward, instead of the ancient continence, a successive and invisible polygamy (*una poligamia successiva e invisibile*), and he requires only an interior and spiritual celibacy. But so precious a concession is only made in favour of those who resolutely undertake the task of labouring for the re-establishment of the church, and who spare no sacrifice in order that she may be adorned and glorified as becomes the spouse of God, and that she may finally take up her stand above all principalities, dignities, and powers, so that all things may be put under her feet: seeing that there is nothing, belonging to Jesus Christ, which is not equally due to the church.

---

* Others have thus expressed the same fears. "The duration of the Catholic confession," says Archbishop de Pradt, "depends upon the celibacy of its priests; let the one fall, and the other perishes with it. It would be an act of suicide in the Church of Rome to give up this stronghold."—*Du Jesuitisme ancien et moderne.*

"It hence follows that the right to have a *sister** after the manner of Saint Paul (for the title of wife belongs only to those who are externally and indissolubly married)—it follows, I say, that this right can only be granted to those labourers whose zeal in the holy cause is constant and heroic. It would be, in fact, a monstrous injustice, if these men might not enjoy so dear a privilege with an untroubled conscience. But it is, at the same time, highly important that all those against whom the church has any cause of complaint, should be impressed with the conviction that they could not usurp this privilege without committing deadly sin.

"The draught of water, which refreshes and strengthens, given to those who are actively engaged in the Lord's harvest, and are fainting under the excessive heat of the sun, was a prophecy of the mysterious contract which God has reserved for our times."

I have been for some months absorbed in this new and important theme; I am therefore prepared to enter upon its development with all the seriousness it merits.

To open such a view as this to the church hierarchy, would fortify, as by a triple wall of brass, a point of Catholicism so really weak, and so frequently attacked. I have not the least doubt that our idea will gain ground if we can manage to form a sect, at first very secret and select, which should adroitly insinuate this good news into convents and nunneries, and into the heads of certain churchmen. Some resistance there will be of course, but finally all will agree upon the propriety of what is at once so agreeable and so advantageous in many ways. You well know, besides, that we have nothing to invent in this matter, since numerous connections of the nature we would advocate are already in existence. But as they exist at present, they bring no profit to the church; on the contrary, they are hurtful, inasmuch as they bring many a conscience into trouble; whereas the authorization that I would give them, would take away all remorse, and would provoke an increase of zeal and industry. By virtue of this plan, men and women would co-operate to one end, each at his or her post, according to the established rules; whilst, thanks to this metamorphosis, the only scruple which could disturb them would be the fear of not rendering themselves worthy of such a privilege by a sufficiently entire devotion to the church.

---

* The text is here perverted; here it is verbatim: "Have we not power to take about with us a sister-wife, as do the other apostles, the brethren of our Lord, and Cephas?" (1 Cor. ix., 5.) *Brother* and *sister* were synonymous with *Christian;* as to the word *wife,* Pope Leo IX. himself acknowledges that it here signifies a married woman. The word *γυναικα* has the same signification in Greek as *femme* in French. (*Leo* IX. *Dist.* 31, can. *omnino.*)

If you will now consider the certain results of this secret dogma, you will find them of immense importance. But the most consummate prudence will be required in guiding and propagating the plan in question. The hospitals *à la Saint-Roch*[*] must be multiplied, and monks and nuns of all kinds must learn to combine three indispensable qualities,—first, outward austerity; second, moderation in their pleasures, and the most intimate mutual agreement; third, an indefatigable zeal for the conquest of souls—a zeal which never says, "It is enough."

---

[*] It was long before I learnt the meaning of this term. I will explain it in a later part of this work.

You know the proverb, *Varietas delectat.* This presents a further guarantee of the immense fruitfulness and of the solidity of such a theory; especially if, having vanquished all opposition, it should one day obtain an altar in the hierarchical sanctuary. Let it once obtain one, and no power on earth can ever remove it from that seat.*

XVI.

The Jesuit, whose revelations on the most delicate of subjects the reader is about to peruse, and who, further on, gives others not less curious, touching the dignitaries of Rome, had, in all probability, long resided in that city, with which he appears to be intimately acquainted.

All that I have just heard is perfectly true. And, in order to convince yourselves that, even in this respect, we have abundant materials; that, in point of fact, we have nothing to do but to legalize, or, more properly speaking, to consecrate what already exists pretty nearly everywhere, I beg of you to fix your attention on what I have to suggest to you.

---

* Cardinal Bellarmin, a Jesuit, was the first to promulgate the germ of this audacious idea respecting celibacy. He says: "For those who have made a vow of continence, it is a greater crime to marry than to give themselves up to incontinence." (Bellarmin, *De Monachis*, lib. ii., cap. 30.) Innocent III. (*Extra. de Bigamia*, cap. 34) says the same thing. Saint Paul says, on the contrary, "*Honorabile connubium in omnibus:* Marriage is honourable in all." (Heb. xiii. 4.) "*Melius est nubere quam uri:* It is better to marry than to burn." (1 Cor. vii.) The apostle excepts no one, and admits of no prescription.

No doubt you are all more or less acquainted with the things of which I am about to speak, but perhaps some of you are ignorant of certain particulars.

I refer to the Sisters of Charity; charming women, who owe it to *us* not to forget that "well-ordered charity begins at home." I have visited and been intimate with many of them in different countries. They are very accessible and very confiding; almost all whom I have known have spoken to me of their secret sorrows. I have listened to their complaints against priests and monks,—as if they expected our hearts to be as tender and as ardent as their own! It is my opinion that these are the sort of nuns adapted to our own times. I wish, indeed, it were possible to lighten the yoke of all the rest *(allegerire il giogo dell' altre)*, who are condemned unnecessarily and uselessly to see nothing all their lives but one little patch of sky and one little patch of earth; and what is still worse, to remain always shut up together, seeing the same eternal faces, without any possibility of removing to another convent, even when such a change appears reasonable. I would have the cloister abolished altogether, so that there might be less difficulty, less ceremony in approaching them. What a spring of cheerfulness for the poor hearts of these maidens! What an opportunity for them to vary, if not their pleasures, at least their griefs![*] The Sisters of Charity have this advantage.

---

[*] There was more prudence in the fifth century. Pope Leo the Great made a decree, cited in the Roman Breviary, a decree with which few persons are acquainted, and which will surprise many:—"He decreed," says the Breviary, "that no nun should take the veil until she had given proof of her chastity during forty years. *Sanxit ne monaca benedictum capitis velum reciperet nisi quadraginta annorum virginitatem probasset.*"—(11 *Api. in fest. S. Leon prim. papæ.*)

You know that good professors, skilful in this kind of chase, capture these poor little creatures when they are in the depths of terror and anguish. It is when they find themselves betrayed and forsaken, when the ground seems to fail from beneath their feet, and shame and remorse overwhelm them, that they eagerly accept the proposal to become Sisters of Charity. Young, for the most part, and having long deluded themselves with dreams of blissful love, they fall at last into despair. But their eyes are soon opened to the nature of the new state upon which they have entered; beset by priests of every age they soon forget their fine resolutions. They are as yet but at the very entrance of their spiritual career, and already their fortitude is shaken by the temptations of the flesh. As they find a sort of pleasure in dwelling upon the misfortunes which have decided them to become nuns, they have scarcely finished pouring their romantic tale into the curious ears of priests or monks ere they have already laid the groundwork of another. This time, however, they feel certain, the character of their new friends considered, that the web they are weaving will be of golden tissue.* If the clergy were discreet they would not make a capital object of a pleasure which they ought to take lightly as a passing indulgence. Always joining the *utile* with the *dulce* they should, however, profit by these critical moments to incite the woman to acts from which the church may indirectly derive advantage; for women can far outdo us when love and religion have warmed their imaginations. It is our business to know how to feed this double flame. Our best plan would be to impress upon our sisters that, where there is a want of constancy on our part, it is a chastisement for their want of zeal. Mountains alone are unchangeable. We should, moreover, never form a new connection without an express condition, on the part of the newly elected one, that she shall perform prodigies. But it happens, alas! too often, that men to whose lot they fall show no consideration for these frail vessels, and unexpected consequences expose them to inconveniences of the same nature as those which induced them to take refuge under the religious garb. But wise precautions may keep all scandal at bay; a sum of money, a temporary abandonment of the dress of their order, and a prompt obedience in removing to some other place, will always prevent affairs of this sort from transpiring. In their new residence they will be sure to find some new sister who will aid and console them; for where is there one who has not been, or who may not be exposed to the same difficulties?

---

* A passage, occupying about a line, has escaped me here, and I am unable to supply it.

Here an interruption took place. I heard the voice of the president, and then a confusion of voices. There seemed to be a sort of calling to the question. The orator continued in these terms:—

The essential point to which I would draw your attention is this. We must labour to multiply in all places initiated confessors, who may be able not only to augment the number of these sisters by persuasion and argument, but who may adroitly take advantage of their critical position, in cases such as those which I had first to mention to you. In fact, when they return to their religious duties, after the pains of maternity, disgusted, as they say, with the ingratitude of men, it is then we require aged and experienced priests, who, in proving to them the vanity of all human things, may totally change their ideas, and urge them, by the aid of severe penitence and heroic labours, to acquire unheard-of merits. At this period, also, the perusal of the life of some female saint, who has been a model of holy enthusiasm, who has been eager to incur suffering, and loss, and ruin, in order to serve her fellow-creatures, will have a wonderful effect.

There are in our strangely complicated existence moments which pass fruitlessly away, for want of being seized opportunely. I remember with what cheerfulness and ardour I devoted myself, whilst yet a novice, to the most disgusting functions of the hospitals. I confess that I should now be utterly incapable of these acts of self-denial; but it is not less true that, such as I then was, I rendered myself useful to the Company. I contributed my part to thicken the layer of good which can never be too deep to cover *—that which a blinded world—incapable of appreciating the grandeur of our work—always stigmatize as—bad!

I have beheld these our sisters in their field of action, devoting themselves with assiduous care to the relief of the most infamous galley slaves, and this in places and scenes so repugnant as to astonish the proudest heretics and the coldest infidels. And I, who knew so deeply and so well the subtle springs which move these delicate creatures, I have felt something stirring in the bottom of my heart at the sight of their constancy and their courage.

---

* To cover—*much evil.* This is the word which naturally suggests itself. In order to avoid it, and yet feeling himself bound to finish the sentence, the Jesuit lengthened out word after word, and his circumlocution was so awkwardly managed that his colleagues found it impossible to maintain their gravity.

The secret of all these things is this:

In order to induce them to prolong such sacrifices, to persuade others to imitate them, and to determine them if they waver, we must take the opportunity, when no strange ears are within hearing, and particularly at confession, to dwell upon such ideas as these:—"It is true that you have a hard struggle to overcome all that is most repugnant to your nature; but the angels, who behold you, envy you your future crowns in heaven. Persevere, for if even weakness, or even crime, has stained your consciences, from the day that you entered here, your charity, like fire, has wholly purified you. Henceforward you are white as snow; Jesus Christ looks upon you as his well-beloved spouses; he calls you his doves, his perfected ones; and the oil which you daily burn in your lamps is so abundant that it can never fail you. If we judge of you by your exterior, what so feeble as your frames! if we look within, what is there to be compared with the strength of your spirit! If it were not for your sakes, avenging thunderbolts would fall upon the earth! But God takes pleasure in you; you are the dearest objects of his love; he looks upon you and he becomes disarmed. Oh! beware how you cut short a time so precious; remain at your post of honour, where the heretics look upon you with stupefaction, avowing that they have never beheld such devotedness in their own impious sect. Pursue, then, your heroic career; for when you shall have accomplished your generous martyrdom, you will find yourselves in possession of such a treasure of merits, that you will be for ever lifted above the frailties and the faults which are, in this life, but too inevitable."

It is easy to imagine what power this species of eloquence gives us over the better part of that sex which is not less complex in character, nor less enigmatical than ourselves, but generally more credulous. When they have once tasted the nectar of these flattering eulogiums, some of the most ardent and impressionable amongst these women may be brought to plunge into the intoxication of mysticism, and by a strange miracle to transform the vague mobility of their minds into something fixed and constant; we may convert them into beings destined to remain altogether inexplicable to those who are ignorant of our secrets; beings who are, in fact, medals of honour which Catholicism can place, with pride and exultation, before the eyes of its silenced and confused enemies.

If we can extract fire from two bits of wood, rubbed together, what may we not obtain from these women, assembled together, and placed entirely and exclusively in our hands? Why should we not furnish ourselves with such a chosen band, worthy to be sent on missions of importance, and to become, by the very charm and illusion of their presence, a centre of attraction and a means of conquest?

This subject would admit of amplification; but, not to lose time in digression, I will return to considerations more immediately involved in the subject. Every one will admit that the example we owe to the public, our common interest, our complicity, and the fear of laical observation, must necessarily force us to cover these connections with the most impenetrable mystery. But whence comes it that there have always been relations of this sort ever since priests, monks, and nuns have existed? It is that, in the clergy, if there are some men who make a point of austerity, even these are desirous of providing themselves in these female nursery-grounds with some *adjutorium simile sibi*, being well satisfied, all the while, to live apart from the world. Now, it is a fact that the arms which they employ to vanquish these interesting creatures are precisely the same as those which we would ourselves consecrate to the purpose. Their only means in fact of making them yield is to say to them: "Provided that your fall is compensated by charity, by devotion and prayers, by an active observance of all religious rites,—in a word, provided that the *good* counterbalances the *evil*, especially when this evil, which does harm to no one, is caused by an unavoidable necessity; then, thanks to the quantity of indulgences amassed, and to the intermediation of saints, whose favour may be propitiated; thanks, also, to many other merits, daily augmented by scrupulous care and pious practices, the part of sin becomes deadened, or as it were annulled, whilst the part of good works remains entire and abundant."

It is then clear as the day that our system, at least in its rudimentary form, has long been at work in the habits and in the hearts even of the clergy, of monks and of nuns; all we have to do is to make it complete by gradually consecrating it; just as when an artist has completed a statue, it is brought forth from his profane studio, and solemnly inaugurated.

XVII.

He whom I last designated as a Frenchman, now spoke again.

The observations of our friend are incontestibly true; but we must not flatter ourselves that we shall easily bring our short-sighted clergy to accept ideas so bold. I know thousands who would be delighted to put our theory into practice as far as they themselves are concerned, but who would reject the principle as impious. I admit that if we could induce them to enter intrepidly into this course (as to the women, they are easily managed—they never have any other will than that of their spiritual directors), we cannot calculate the immense benefit which would follow for the church. Meanwhile, let me warn you that we should be utterly lost if so grave a secret should ever, by any chance, publicly transpire. Let us, then, act invariably in this matter with the most consummate prudence. If we can but continue to hold together our religious bodies by those strong bonds, the pleasing cogency of which experience has fully demonstrated, what have we to fear for celibacy? It cannot perish; and as long as it keeps its ground, what Catholic institution or dogma can incur any danger?

That naturally leads me to speak, according to the indication of the programme (*l'elenco*), of the radical reform of the episcopacy, the cardinalship, and the papacy, as the last term of our efforts; a reform without which it will be impossible to maintain many others which ought to extend to the heart of all communities and all convents.

Since there ought to be but one model for the whole church, should not the superior clergy feel themselves peculiarly bound to give us their aid in engraving it on every heart? But is it probable that we shall inspire this body with any magnanimous resolutions? Can it comprehend us? Verily, verily, the columns of the Catholic temple are neither precious nor solid. Touch them, and you will perceive their want of massiveness. They are hollow, and at the first shock—it would need no very strong one—the whole edifice would give way. What shall we then do to prop them up until we shall have gradually substituted for them a stronger range of supporters ? In other words, how shall we organize a totally new plan for the election of such as are fit to sustain us? How shall we introduce into the whole church a rule and a set of maxims better conceived, more rational; so that dignities, riches, and honours, all, in a word, that is worthy of man's ambition, shall become so many recompenses for eminent services rendered to our cause all over the world? If we could realize a species of alliance between talent, ambition, and the most exciting interests on the one hand, and the interests of our system on the other, then, indeed, our progress would become triumphant! We must consequently choose for our purpose, not men of a narrow and pedantic morality, which is always at war with our great projects, but the most advanced of our own initiated members, who shall have furnished, by their admission into our mysterious laboratory, some new links to the chain of our creative conceptions.

It is, therefore, expedient that a great number of the superior clergy, and some of the cardinals, should begin to be acquainted with our ideas, in order that they may feed upon them. This would be a means of preparing materials for the desired change. It is certain that if we could henceforward reckon upon men worthy of the name, whose number should be daily augmenting, whether by reciprocal contact, or by the promotion of such as are able to comprehend them (for those who resemble each other naturally collect together), it would no longer be difficult, with the aid of these hierarchical heads, and the co-operation of many others sufficiently initiated, to succeed in the important enterprize which occupies us. By thus copiously transfusing our young and ardent blood into the veins of the sacred body, we should by degrees clear it of the corrupt and sterile lees which are bringing on its death.

XVIII.

The impetuous Jesuit who next spoke, and whom we supposed to be Roman, leaves us now no room to doubt that he is so.

What I have heard is excellent, and I vow to you that I would willingly lose my ——[*] to see at last annihilated, in my own city, that race of commonplace and stupid beings who have been raised so high by the assiduous gratitude of certain matrons. Provided these elect of Cupid and Mammon find themselves in a prosperous condition, and after having lived by intrigue, can enjoy themselves like demigods, in an atmosphere of pomp and pleasure, what care they if a deluge comes after them? Who durst disturb their voluptuous dreams with forebodings of approaching and overwhelming catastrophes? Are these the men by whose aid we can hope to purify the hierarchy in renovating fire? I confess to you that when I examine the monachism of our days, in its cells, and when I find it so utterly incapable of anything great, the rage that I feel is not so much against it, as against that college of cardinals, from which nothing issues but what is totally unworthy both of the purple it wears, and of the lofty station it occupies. In fact, I see amongst them all, high and low, nothing but a collection of blockheads, who sit there and grow fat (*che imbecilli, che s'impiguano*). It is true that their tongues now and then curse the age which sometimes disturbs their voluptuous slumbers; but who amongst them ever takes the trouble to think for a moment, or to consult those who do think, on the means of extinguishing the conflagration that is devouring all around ?

---

[*] If I heard aright, the word which I here abstain from translating completes a Roman oath, which has more than once escaped from holy lips, in my presence, and in my own country.

We alone, my brethren, we alone bear the burden of the summer heat; we alone, diving deep into the annals of the world, study the secret springs which have decided the fate of empires; and our hope and courage gain strength from this study.

Permit me now to offer you a wholesome advice. Let our individuality become effaced. Let us be, as much as possible, not men but ideas. It is these which sooner or later get possession of crowns. Let these be assiduously instilled into the cloisters, and into the minds of some of the cardinals and bishops; for, notwithstanding all I have said, there are a few honourable exceptions. When we shall once have gained even a few of those who are the most hostile to our views, there will ere long be beheld conferences such as this in the very palaces of the highest dignitaries, and then it is that partisans will flock to us, and our work will truly prosper. The most sluggish and unwilling will then be forced to follow us.

I am sure we shall all admit the necessity of involving the people in the thickest and most inextricable network of devotional practices, so that they may become docile in proportion to their stupidity. But all this, though not without its value, is not yet enough ; what is of all things indispensable is, an active, indefatigable, perpetual concurrence, like this which now animates us collectively ; men of large and bold intellects, intent on continually advancing the progress of our work. Unless the church have the aid of a vast brain to elaborate for it a truly Catholic scheme, can it expect ever to see mankind universally subject to one sole chief ?

This is the way in which the name of Rome, at present so light, will recover all its preponderance.

As for persons of high birth, I would show them no favour, except in cases where their position or influence might contribute to the more rapid advancement of our conquests.

From the moment I beheld heretical governments stretch forth a hand to aid in the re-establishment of the Holy See, I believed the time was coming when they would at last swallow the bait, and begin to Catholicize their states ; but it is only too evident that I was deceived. Nevertheless, a few years ago some Roman princes having accompanied a prince of Germany on a visit to our most celebrated monuments, upon his asking for some explanations on a historical subject, there was something said about certain ferocious beasts being tamed by their masters to such a degree that the said masters did not fear to place their heads within the animals' mouths. I observed to these personages that a narcotic powder, frequently employed, would probably produce these marvellous effects. As this remark was accompanied with a somewhat subtle smile, the heretic prince understood me, and replied, "Reverend father, have you not some narcotic powder for all those wild beasts?"—pointing to the passing crowds—"for they seem to me very far from being tame." Emboldened by this observation I answered, "From the moment your populations were delivered from the Catholic soporifics, and you yourselves broke so many salutary checks upon them, from that moment they have been as turbulent as madmen. It is just as if the narcotics given to those animals were to be discontinued for a while; their astonishing tameness, which attracts such crowds of curious observers, would then be at an end, and they would resume all their habitual ferocity." This led us on to further discussion, and I have reason to believe that the prince went away convinced of the efficacy of our remedies to cure this very inconvenient popular malady.

But in order that hints of this kind may have more considerable results, we require a greater number of instruments. I return, then, to the necessity of having some of ours initiated in the cloisters, and of getting rid of some of these cardinals without thought, these popes without capacity, and of a host of bishops without nerve or energy, and who are totally ignorant of the spirit of the age. For our plan will be nothing but a dream until we can actually bring about these changes. Before the hierarchy can exercise any imposing influence, it must have in its upper ranks men of power to conceive, and of energy to bring their conceptions into action; men who are capable of reducing other men under the power of a vast and unfathomable political wisdom. Who would then dare to look our system in the face?

I ask you—is there anything approaching to this in the men whose office it is to guide us? Fools that they are! They would have us look upon them as giants! Man's whole strength is in his intellect; but these pillars of the church have nothing strong about them but their animal temperament. What would be the fate of these rotten voluptuaries, these ignoramuses, buried in purple and in *ennui* (*di questi voluttuosi putridi, di questi ignari sepolti nella porpora e nella noia*), but for our unconquerable energy and intrepidity?

We have, then, a herculean task to accomplish: to renovate a triple sphere, as well as the chief who governs it; and when a considerable mass shall have undergone a complete transformation, it is then that a pope who shall bear within him our idea, already ripened and developed, may employ the means and resources which shall have been accumulated by our strenuous exertions during a century, perhaps, or more. Again he may launch forth his anathemas, his interdictions, and his omnipotent decrees, to shake thrones, and to humble for ever the pride and insolence of monarchs.

After these last words there was a sort of pause; and during this interval several remarked upon what they had heard as presenting insurmountable difficulties. I even remarked a general tone of doubt and discouragement. Some, however, asserted that in time all this might be effected. In order to animate them after this short colloquy, the president set about explaining what should be the final purpose of the whole work.

XIX.

I would not have any one despair of the great future success of our enterprise because our beginnings are small. What could be more inconsiderable in appearance than was our Company at its commencement? Yet but a few years had elapsed ere it proved to be full of vigour, and was already become rich and powerful. And, in later times, what throne but owned the mysterious ascendency of our genius?

This short reflection was made in a familiar tone; it was a brief reply to those who had expressed some doubt as to the final triumph which was promised. Then, as though prompted by the picture just given of the vices of the Roman hierarchy, or, perhaps, previously prepared for this subject, he resumed after a short pause, in a voice alternately impassioned, proud, or exalted, but always marked by self-possession. In his manner of dealing with this subject he displayed surprising tact, profundity, and boldness.

From the review which has been taken of the matter, you must perceive that the church, notwithstanding the immense aggregate and the value of its materials, is far from being in the condition of an edifice solidly raised upon its foundations and completely finished. It is still altogether in a rough and disorderly state. If, then, it has narrowly escaped an overthrow on the first shock, let us look to the causes of its weakness. It wanted a skilful and rigorous architect, who would have taken care to examine and prove each several stone; who would have rejected the bad ones outright; who would have sought out the hardest granite to strengthen the most exposed parts; and would have seen that the whole was united together by the strongest and most tenacious cement. The greatest amongst the popes themselves have never possessed a clear and living light, they have only groped in the dark; and this explains to us wherefore a work, which is in itself gigantic, presents so little homogeneousness and harmony.

If, when the barbarian hordes overran our country and took possession of it; when the Roman empire fell to pieces, and Christianity was driven to change its abstract form for one better adapted to fascinate the imaginations and the senses of the new comers; if, at the moment when the papacy arose out of the universal degradation, it had fallen into the hands of men of large and enterprising views, it would have been able in times so propitious to efface, secretly and by degrees, all records of the ancient state of things, and to blot out every trace of the transformation of the episcopal aristocracy into a papal monarchy. It might have effected this by retrenchments from and additions to the writings of councils and of fathers, employing on this task minds capable of accomplishing it; and then, what a glorious position for us! The great strife between Catholicism and Protestantism would never have arisen, or at least it would wholly have confined itself to the authenticity of the primitive writings.

This work of retrenchment and addition ought to have been confided to a Roman school, well trained to the purpose, so as to imitate with dexterity the style peculiar to each writer.

* * * * * *

Here a few taps at the outer door, which I distinctly heard, stopped my pen. The thought that some one was perhaps seeking me froze me with terror, and drove every other thought out of my head. I did not recover from my alarm until I was aware that the person who had gone to the door to reply had quietly returned to his seat. There was probably too a momentary suspension of the proceedings; for notwithstanding the mist in which I was wrapped for a while, it does not strike me that there is any sensible *lacuna* in my report of the speech.

What was wanting in the ninth century was a pope who should have eclipsed the glory of Charlemagne. Gregory VII. with his gigantic, but too vague ideas; Innocent III. with his marvellous institutions, confession, inquisition, and monks, came too late. Five centuries earlier, some genius equal to his, and ourselves to aid with the vast idea that now engrosses us, would have rendered the Romish church the sovereign arbiter of the whole world. Instead of this, the two centuries which preceded Hildebrand supplied popes madder than Caligula, and more monstrous than Nero, so that it is impossible for us to give a colour to their history which may be deemed—I will not say excusable, but even tolerable. Neither the fourteenth nor the fifteenth century offers a single example of talent and intelligence capable of foreseeing, and consequently of preventing by the abolition of the most flagrant abuses in the church, the horrible outbreak of the sixteenth century. What, in fact, do we see in the two centuries which precede Protestantism? The Roman see occupied either by men of less than ordinary abilities, or by haughty voluptuaries. Such beings ruin a construction rather than help to build it up. They have no prudence to guide them; they exhibit to the people in their own persons a spectacle of turpitude, as if the people were brutes, absolutely incapable of reflection. Under such popes, with a clergy, bishops, and monastic orders of the same stamp, was it to be hoped that the church should wax great and strong so as to hold nations and monarchs compressed in its great embrace? Can we be surprised that it still remains in a state of abortion in spite of its immense resources?

Dropping his voice to a confidential whisper, he continued:

It is my desire that among ourselves everything be spoken out, and that the whole naked truth be uttered; for it is in the highest degree useful and necessary to us to know and to study it, as it is.

Resuming then his former manner, and even with added emphasis, he continued:

Are we so blind as not to perceive clearly that whatever was done then was done entirely with greedy and interested views, and that the same observation applies also to the present times? Nothing has ever been contrived as subordinate to the execution of a vast plan. You are acquainted with the infamous abuses of nepotism, and its frightful consequences: what a degradation of the papacy! That high and inestimable dignity was no longer coveted but as a means of glutting the mad ambition and insatiable avarice of a few families. Meanwhile, a vast catastrophe was impending, and the veil of the temple was about to be rent in twain. Alas! when those selfish dreamers suddenly awoke and everywhere lighted exterminating fires for heretics, it was too late. Men's eyes were opened, they had learnt to think, their indignation was aroused, the fire of it was in their hearts. The death of a great number of heretics only bestowed on a party already strong and filled with the most perverse ideas, the dangerous prestige of possessing its martyrs. Thus, by an excess of imprudence on our part, heresy took its stand as a power, to which novelty and persecution gave attraction and strength. How much time was thus lost; and what conflicts was the church compelled to sustain, no longer for the purpose of extending her sway, but simply to save herself from imminent and utter ruin.

Leo X.—that Sardanapalus enervated by Asiatic luxury—did nothing but blunder. Those who succeeded him followed but too closely in his footsteps. At length, the hurricane had almost dispersed the riven planks of the *Bark*, and no one could suggest any practical expedient for keeping them together. All grew pale at the demand for an œcumenical council, and it is certain that that of Trent would have been the grave of Rome but for the ability of our Company. We, resolute and unswerving, succeeded in baffling the multitude of heretics who were eager to attack the very foundations of Catholicism. With History in their hand, they were prepared to question the Bible, the Fathers, the Councils, to trace them from age to age, and explore the origin of each institution, dogma, and practice. What secrets would then have come to light! The symbol of the ancient faith, the primitive mode of solving questions, the progress of the papal power, the precise date of every innovation and change, the immense chaos of past ages, so well covered until then, would all have been exposed to the eye of day. Sifted after this fashion, nothing would have been preserved but what is expressly supported by some text of Scripture; the rest would have been remorselessly burnt as stubble. Nor could the pope have flattered himself with the hope of remaining an honoured patriarch; this very title of patriarch, they would have told him, was but of recent invention. There was a general conspiracy against it, bent on reducing it to the measure of what it was when many bishops of the east and even of the west despised it so openly, and when Cyprian, Ireneus, and Polycarp held it in so little esteem.

How many bishops, indeed, flocked to Trent with hostile intentions! How far might not their boldness have proceeded, had heresy been permitted to spread freely before them its pernicious erudition? But we intrepidly defended the breach, and the young hydra strove in vain to break into the place.

Thus, after three centuries of indefatigable labour, after we had been as a cuirass on the breast of Rome, her enemies determined to tear us thence, and almost succeeded, convinced that as long as we remained, Rome was invulnerable. But if Rome, in her weakness, bent for a time like a palm-tree beneath the raging winds, she soon raised her head again; and now, let us trust, she has gained an accession of strength that will enable her for the future to defy storm and thunder. Kings call upon us—they feel the need of our narcotic cup for their people; but they shall drink of it themselves also, and deeply! We will not, however, forget to bedew its rim with honey.

The cadence of these last words made me imagine that the conference was closed, when I heard the same chief resume, but with the coolness of a man who recapitulates. His repetition of ideas already propounded, was doubtless intended to give more prominence to certain favourite views which, as the reader has seen, predominated during the meeting.

Two principles—amongst the many we possess—two principles of inexhaustible power and attractiveness ought to hold the first place in our consideration; and this we must continually call to mind.

We must thus argue with men in power, and especially those at court:—Heresy having been the cause of all the complications which arose precisely when church and state were on the point of entering into a happy alliance, the results of which could not but have been solid and most satisfactory, it is of the highest importance that we should at length realize what three centuries of anarchy have postponed. As soon, then, as positive conclusions shall have been laid down, the following should be the two leading principles of a new code, devised for the regulation and conservation of the vast interests of the two powers at length united:—

WHENEVER HERESY SHALL DARE TO DISTURB THE SACRED TRANQUILLITY OF THE CHURCH, WHATEVER MAY BE THE NATURE OF ITS ASSAULTS, BE THEY SLIGHT OR SERIOUS, THE DUTY OF THE STATE SHALL BE TO PUNISH THEM WITH THE UTMOST RIGOUR, AS POLITICAL CRIMES.

RECIPROCALLY, WHENEVER REVOLT SHALL DARE TO DISTURB THE SACRED TRANQUILLITY OF THE STATE, WHATEVER MAY BE THE NATURE OF ITS ATTACKS, BE THEY SLIGHT OR SERIOUS, THE DUTY OF THE CHURCH SHALL BE TO STIGMATIZE THEM IN THE FACE OF THE NATIONS, AND TO TREAT THEM WITH THE SAME RIGOUR AS HERESY ITSELF, WHICH IS TO BE CRUSHED BY TERRIBLE AND SOLEMN CHASTISEMENTS.

After this, we have only to be logically consistent, and since it is a maxim of the schools that *qui potest majus* *potest minus*, it will not be difficult to contrive that the spiritual power, the omnipotent divinity of the Holy See, shall entirely absorb the temporal power. Only let them give up to us the *souls* of the people, let kings second us with their encouragement and their wealth, and our hierarchy, at present winding about like a river, shall soon spread wide as the sea, and cover hills and mountains.

But it is mainly important that we should know how to extinguish, one by one, the multitude of phosphoric flames that glitter in every direction. We must have the art to accustom the mass of the people to look up to none but our men (*sic*); and thus we shall train them for the day when, excited by some crying injustiee, an increase of taxes, or some such cause of discontent, they shall furnish us with an opportunity to hurl forth a thundering manifesto from Rome, a signal of its rupture with all governments, and consequently of a decisive and final struggle, in which we shall be bravely supported by the innumerable and ardent host which we or our successors shall have so well disciplined.

Would that we might be certain—but at least we can hope—that when that crisis comes, a considerable portion of the hierachy will have undergone a radical and complete change ; that the loftiest thrones of the sanctuary will be inaccessible to men incapable of understanding us; that bishops and cardinals well know how to follow up their brave words with braver deeds; and finally, that, after so many sacrifices, we may have to glory in a man embodying, in his own person, the most enterprising popes of past times, a man wearing one of those heads, in fashioning which Nature expands her compasses to their full stretch.

The artisan, when plying his ordinary labour, is never discouraged by the hardness of the wood or the metal on which he works, because he has at hand such implements as will reduce these materials into whatever forms he pleases. Let us so take care to be well provided with implements. When the ebullition which we are secretly fomenting shall have reached a sufficient point, the cover shall be suddenly removed, and we will pour our liquid fire upon those political meddlers, who are ignorant and unreflecting enough to serve as tools in our hands, and our efforts will result in a revolution, worthy of the name, which shall combine in one universal conquest all the conquests that have yet been made.

For this purpose, let our unceasing exertions be directed to the conversion of souls, and let us so preach that deathbeds may be the fruitful source of donations, riches, jewels, and all sorts of legacies. Means of action are indispensable to us, and these means must be as vast as our projects. Let nothing resist us; whilst, enveloped in mystery from head to foot, we ourselves remain impenetrable.

Friends, we must conquer or die! The higher classes are always very inaccessible to the lower ones; let us nourish their mutual antipathy. Let us accustom the mob, which is, in fact, an implement of power, to look upon us as its warmest advocates; favouring its desires, let us feed the fire of its wrath, and open to its view a golden age; and let the pope, Rome, Catholicism, or the Church, let each of these words become for the people the expression of all its rights, the point on which its eye is fixed, the object of its devotion, the moving spring of its thoughts and intentions. A day will come—but it will be too late—when it will be seen that expedients the most ridiculous have given birth to marvellous effects, and that those who believed themselves wise, were fools.

Yes, brethren! we also are kings! our arsenal is perhaps as rich as theirs, and even, if I mistake not, more efficient. Our chaplets, our medals, our miracles, our saints, our holydays, in fine, all that immense battery which we have this day passed in review, (*) will be worth as much, I imagine, as their powder, their soldiers, their cannon, and their moving forests of bayonets. All depends upon the skill with which we combine this infinity of means, discipline our troops, and by exciting their zeal and their courage, prepare them for the day which must bring to nothing, or crown with triumph, the long series of our labours. Let them make a jest of our processions round the profane Jericho, let them mock us and the sound of our trumpets, provided that at the seventh circuit, and assuredly it will be made, the walls of the city fall down, and those who inhabit it fall a prey to us.

What we have to do, then, is to erect again upon its pedestal the prostrate papal colossus. We engineers, here assembled, have to concert a special plan for this purpose, to point out the machines to be used or to invent new ones, to form workmen and place in their hands levers and cables, and then, provided the whole be directed by superior intelligence, success will be infallible.

Such is our task.

---

* *Ch'oggi abbiamo si bene analizzato;* this expression induces me to suppose that the *analysis* of all these things had been made, the same morning, in a previous meeting; for it appears too precise to relate wholly to what was said in the conference which has just been submitted to the reader.

But the day is closing, and I desire that we may not quit this place before some one, who may have considered the subject more deeply than myself, shall have said a few words on the possibly sinister issue of events, which, seeing the dangers around us, it is indispensable that we should coolly consider, while as yet our minds are undisturbed by any immediate apprehensions of such a result.

XX.

There ensued a brief silence, which the Irishman was the first to break, though in a tone less confident than before. He soon warmed, however, and became quite himself again.

If I venture to respond to this appeal, it is because I was lately present at a meeting of our fathers, in which the subject now in question was amply discussed. The conference closed with the following resolution.

Should we ever (it was unanimously agreed) be abandoned by kings, or should any fatal discovery utterly ruin our projects; should we in vain attempt to recover, if not confidence, at least some standing compatible with the execution of our plan; should we even be forced to crawl along (*trascinarci*) for a lengthened period, in order to reunite our many lost or broken threads—even in this extremity, happen what may, we must resign ourselves to these shackles, and submit to this wearisome delay. But if nothing can reconcile us with the offended Catholic governments, and if even Rome, in the hope of securing her own safety in a mean and narrow sphere, consent to immolate us anew, we must, at the price of every consideration, show kings and Rome that, even under circumstances so adverse, we can prove ourselves stronger than them all: and this, you are aware, it will be the more easy for us to effect, the further our labours shall have been advanced when the time of trial comes, if come it must. But I feel no doubt (and I could bring forward authentic proofs in support of this), I feel no doubt that, this time, Rome would rather make common cause with us, than consent to remain a degraded and manacled slave, without a hope of ever escaping from the limits imposed upon her. In case of need, poison would deliver us from a short-sighted pope *(il veleno ci liberebbe d'un papa a corta veduta)*, and the next conclave which should be assembled would accord entirely with our views.*

Then, brethren, will the world behold a strange spectacle. Having failed in our endeavour to avenge ourselves on kings by slowly and artfully exhausting their strength, we will take vengeance on them in a manner equally sudden and terrible. In six months Rome would become the incendiary focus of those volcanic spirits who are themselves at present the objects of our hatred; and a bull in which the sovereign pontiff should announce to the people that, deceived in his hopes of seeing good gradually prevail over evil, his patience is exhausted—such a bull would give us forces more numerous than the hyperbolical army of Armageddon.*

---

* Clement VII. having declared to Cardinal Bellarmin his resolution to condemn the doctrine of the Jesuit Molina as dangerous, the Jesuit Bellarmin replied, "Your Holiness will do no such thing." Cardinal Francis Marie del Monte having spoken of this resolution to Cardinal Bellarmin, the latter replied: "I know that he would gladly do it; I know that he is able to do it; but *he will not do it.* If he persists in executing his design, *he will die first.*" Jacques Tagliotti, Jesuit, in his "Life of Cardinal Bellarmin," liv. vii., 2.

What a source of agitation in times like ours! Assuredly Catholicism and its ceremonies would be for some time the fashion, but all its illusions would sooner or later evaporate, and we should but have hastened the opening of an era the very reverse of what we have been labouring to introduce. What matters it! let our last cry of despair, let our death be worthy of us! We must not be content to disappear like a dried-up river; let us rather resemble a torrent which breaks every mound and bears down every obstacle; like the elements of nature, which cannot be compressed without bursting out into universal conflagration. Thus would the famous saying be verified, "that the fate of kings is intimately allied with ours," for they would vanish from the earth along with us. Such would be the vengeance of Samson when shorn, blinded, and made to toil at the mill like a vile ass. He would crush them with the last effort of his enormous strength, and bury himself and them in the same tomb.

It is very possible, brethren (continued the Irishman in a fierce tone), that there may be some traitor amongst us, who, to render himself acceptable to some cursed Pharaoh by becoming his Joseph, his informer, may one day escape from our ranks and ruin us. The precautions which we have already taken against such a contingency do not appear to me sufficient, for the wretch who would desert from our body might find means to hide himself from our vengeance, and thus in vain would he have sworn that

---

* An allusion to a passage of the Apocalypse, ix. 16; xvi. 16.

"*to the last breath of life he would regard the destruction of his own person as holy and legitimate.*"

I therefore propose to you another means of surety, in addition to the former. Let us lay down this rule :—that no one shall be initiated unless he have previously consented that a certain number of our members shall concert together to attribute to him (on probable grounds of course) a correspondence either politically criminal or monstrously obscene; and this correspondence the candidate shall transcribe and faithfully sign, in order that our Company may, in case of treason, have the means of invalidating his testimony by the production of these precious manuscripts. Such documents would, you will easily understand, be of eminent service to us, should other means of vengeance fail us.

XXI.

The president now spoke in these terms.

We will hereafter take this suggestion into our special consideration. Meanwhile, I thank you heartily for this conference; it has been much more instructive than the three former ones, the minutes of which you had better examine—I have them here for your better information; and I beg that each one of you will note down his observations upon them. But let me suggest that during a discussion on mere details it would be advisable not to allow too much predominance to the poetical elements of the question. These elements may be admitted when we have to consider our whole plan in the fullest light, whilst the analysis of each separate question or problem should present a character as deliberate and cool as that of the synthesis ought to be warm and enthusiastic. I admire these two different kinds of talent, but I have rarely seen them united in the same individual. I have almost always found that those who were eloquent in the one way were mute in the other, and *vice versâ*. Let us strive to combine the calmness of reason with the fire of enthusiasm. Christ, who saw the germ of so many splendid truths, teaches us that in order "to make ourselves master of the strong man, his house and his goods, we must first bind him." Let us, therefore, become perfect in the art of loading the proud and the powerful with chains. Let us lay to heart this maxim as the rule of all our efforts :—one sole authority—that of Rome; one sole order—that of the Jesuits. And since our age does not boast a single mind capable of aspiring to universal empire, for kings have enough to do to retain a hold upon their petty kingdoms which are slipping from their grasp, let it be ours to aim thus high, whilst empty heads are dreaming. *Nulla dies sine lineâ.* Let not any opportunity escape us of observing what are men's tendencies; the better we know them the more useful they will be as instruments in our hands. Let us, at all events, so conduct ourselves that our future glory may compensate for our present abasement; for whether our name be destined to perish, or finally to prevail over kings and nations, let it, at least, be synonymous with the loftiest reach of greatness and daring which the world has ever seen or ever will see. Yes! when future generations read our story, and learn what we have been, let them be forced to assimilate us, not with mankind, but with those cosmogonic agencies which God only puts in motion when it is his pleasure to change the laws of the universe.

These words—an echo and confirmation of others not less presumptuous, which had already proceeded from the Irishman—show plainly that the modern Jesuits are imbued with no inconsiderable dose of pride. It will be equally clear that it is their project to Jesuitize, besides all the other orders, the papacy itself; and, as the *nec plus ultra* of the metamorphoses they are effecting by their mysterious strategy, to Jesuitize the whole world.

The president having concluded, they all rose and warmly congratulated each other. The scene then closed, they left the room, and I was out of danger.

END OF PART II.

PART III.

PROOFS AND CONCLUSION.

I.

THE Jesuits have always spoken of themselves in terms of the most unmeasured pride.

When their society had reached the hundredth year of its existence, they composed a book in its honour. The symbols which decorate the frontispiece of this work sufficiently prove that they esteem the humblest member of their order as infinitely above the rest of mankind. They call themselves "The Company of the Perfect."[*] The contents of the volume accord with the arrogance of its emblems.

The Jewish high-priest wore on his breast the jewel called the *oracle*. The order of the Jesuits considers itself, under the New Alliance, as the *oracle* from whence the pope draws his inspiration.

They proclaim themselves "the masters of the world, the most learned of mortal men, the doctors of the nations, the *Apollos*, the *Alexanders* of theology, prophets descended from heaven, who deliver the oracles in the œcumenic councils."

---

[*] Imago primi sæculi Societatis Jesu, lib. iii., Orat. i., p. 409.

The epitaph which they composed for Loyola strikingly exhibits their love of grandiloquence, and their overweening pride. It runs thus:—

"Whoever thou art who conceivest in thy mind the image of Pompey the Great, of Cæsar, and of Alexander, open thine eyes to the truth, and thou wilt learn from this marble that Ignatius was the greatest of conquerors."

The epitaph of Saint Francis Xavier is in the same strain.

But how striking the contrast between their conduct and the apotheosis they award themselves! We could say nothing on this subject which has not been proved by numberless publications.

Some of their own generals, even, have made no secret of their dismay at the perverse tendencies of the order. Mucio Vitelleschi, the sixth general, in one of his letters, dated the 15th of November, 1639, cannot refrain from pointing out the loathsome malady that had fastened upon the Company. "There exists," he says, "amongst the superiors of our society an excessive cupidity which spreads from them through the whole body. From this source comes the indulgence which they manifest for those who bring them riches."

Saint Francis Borgia, one of the earliest generals of the order, had before this acknowledged that poison was in its veins. I will not here repeat the numerous testimonies which prove that their casuistry justified crime in all its forms. It is impossible to deny that the doctrines, everywhere to be found in their writings, authorize theft, rape, perjury, debauchery, and even murder; that, when they have judged it expedient to get rid of a king, they have not shrunk from making the apology of regicide. But what we should be most repugnant to believe, did not their books, approved by the generals of the order, attest it, is the cynical nature of their science on a matter which ought to remain unknown to religious men, vowed to perpetual chastity, and making pretensions to perfect purity.

I shall not enlarge upon this subject, but confine myself to quoting a judgment which conveys the impression made on grave doctors of the church by the perusal of some of the books of the Holy Company. The university of Paris, in 1643, in its *Verites Acadêmiques* (*Academical Truths*), thus expresses itself:

"All that the malice of hell can conceive of most horrible; things unknown even to the most depraved of pagans, all the abominations which could call up a blush on the face of effrontery itself, are epitomised in the book of a Jesuit. The different casuists of this society teach secrets of impurity unknown even to the most dissolute."

What must be the shamelessness in their secret assemblies, if they suffer it to become thus apparent in their printed works? There is the less likelihood of their amendment, inasmuch as whilst others are led astray by passion and temptation, their immorality is a system, founded on an utter contempt of what is right and just.

It is painful and revolting to make these assertions, but the truth must be told. A pope supports it with his authority. In 1692, Clement VIII. presided at a general chapter of the Jesuits; what is the reproach which he casts upon them? His words reveal the spirit, the tactics, and the whole plan of the Jesuits, ancient and modern.*

---

* *Theatre jesuitique*, part ii. 4.

"Curiosity," said this pope, "induces them to intrude everywhere, and principally into the confessionals, that they may learn, from their penitent, all that passes in his home, among the children, the domestics, and the other inmates or frequenters of the house, and even all that is going on in the neighbourhood. If they confess a prince, they contrive to govern his whole family; they seek even to govern his states, by inspiring him with the belief that nothing will go well without their oversight and care."

The assertion of Clement VIII., made in terms so precise, would be sufficient to command belief; but there are numerous and striking historical facts, which prove that, under pretence of religion, this Company has constantly carried on a plot against nations and their governments.

I will mention one only of all these facts, but it was so notorious in its time, and is one of such weight, that it is as good as a thousand. It is related as follows by President de Thou, an historian of acknowledged probity:—*

"The Jesuits were accused, before the senate of Venice, of having pried into family secrets, by means of confession; and of having come, by the same means, to know intimately all sorts of particulars relating to individuals, and, consequently, the designs and resources of the state; and of having kept registers of these things, which they forwarded, every six months, to their general, by the hands of their visitors. Proofs of these charges were found in many documents, which their hurried flight prevented them from carrying off."

---

* Le Président de Thou, in his Hist., liv. 137.

This fact is not denied by Sachin himself, one of the most devoted historians of the Company.[*]

II.

This is surely enough to make those writers pause who have undertaken the defence of the Jesuits, and have carried it so far as to assert that they do not concern themselves about temporal things, and that the whole world is in a conspiracy to calumniate them. As if the universities, parliaments, and bishops who have accused them of corrupting morals, and leading the people astray, could have leagued themselves together, from age to age, for a purpose so iniquitous. Strange it is, however, we repeat, that, in our times, they have again succeeded in gaining over the bishops, that the more the world shudders at their name, and abhors them, the more warmly the superior clergy espouses their cause, and identifies itself with them. There is now a concert of apologies in their behalf. The new Catholic school is strenuous for them, alleging even that it is the very excess of their virtue which has called down so much hatred upon them, and that this hatred can only proceed from the envious rage of the impious. M. Laurent, bishop of Luxembourg, says in a pastoral letter of 1845 :—

"God has sent to the aid of his church militant *a well organised army*, commanded by a valiant chief; whose name is Ignatius de Loyola. Anathema against all the sovereigns of Europe, who, guided by an infernal instinct, and by the instigation of some self-styled philosophers, constrained the court of Rome to *suspend for a time* this holy order of Ignatius the Great."

---

[*] Sachin, Hist. Soc. Jes., lib. v., No. 15.

In France, of late years, the superior clregy has disseminated many books on the subject of free teaching. Its organs are full of fine-sounding orations in favour of the common right. Nothing can be more curious than their expressions on this subject. They are constantly borrowing the language which they used formerly to stigmatize as subversive of the throne and of the altar. It is true that they were then in the insolence of prosperity, and that their position is since changed. Become feeble themselves, they are compelled to have recourse to the arms of the feeble.

But are they hearty and sincere in all that they proclaim so loudly about right and truth? They have put on the new man too hastily for us to suppose that they have entirely put off the old. Thus, the Bishop of Luxembourg would have all instruction superintended by the clergy, and dependent upon it. The *Univers*, the organ of the French bishops, holds the same views.*

" Since the university has been at work it has only produced incapable and corrupt schoolmasters, and irreligious and impious doctors. The Bishop of Perpignan, following the example of M. de Bonald, demands free teaching. 'My wishes,' he says, 'are in favour of *free competition* in the instruction of youth; *but* I believe that this precious instruction has indispensable need of superintendence. Laws, and *imperative laws*, are necessary to protect society *against the dangers of bad doctrines.* This superintendence ought to combine all the elements capable of rendering it complete and enlightened; and consequently the episcopacy must not remain a stranger to it. In fact, religion has a large share in the inculcation of *the sciences*, OF WHICH IT IS THE FOUNDATION, and the episcopacy ALONE *is a competent judge in this matter*, since *it alone* has been established guardian of the sacred deposit of the faith. Now, has not its bearing on this point been turned aside?"

---

* L'Univers et L'Union Catholique, 24 Octobre, 10 et 11 Novembre, 1843.

All the art which the defenders of the clergy employ in their writings, is compressed into these few lines; the writer first proclaims right and justice, and declares himself the champion of free competition; then he asks for *imperative laws against the dangers of bad doctrines.* And who are to judge of these dangers? The bishops. They alone are competent judges of every range of ideas; the sciences are not to advance beyond the limits they shall prescribe. It appears, then, that in their estimation free instruction and common right signify subjection of thought and conscience to episcopal censure and domination.

"Wherefore," cries the Bishop of Chalons,* "should there be two sorts of instruction in one house? If it is yours which ought to have the precedence, why not tell us so? Wherefore compel us to play a part in your colleges which is altogether beneath our dignity?

"By virtue of the royal ordonnance you are to believe that these persons profess the same religion as the pope.

---

* Idem, 24 Octobre, 1843.

It is true that the catechism says the contrary, but the catechism makes a mistake ; the bishops say the contrary, but the bishops know nothing of the matter. Oh but— Make no objections: the king having heard the council of state, orders you to be convinced."

Are we to believe, then, only what the pope decrees, after having heard the council of cardinals? If it be so, the following is to be our creed :—"The doctrines of civil and political equality are seditious; we cannot hold in too much horror liberty of opinion and of the press, and particularly this maxim, that every man ought to enjoy liberty of conscience ;" for such are the very words of Gregory XVI., in his circular of the 15th of August, 1832.

A French bishop has made himself the interpreter of the spirit of the Vatican under the preceding pope. Different religious journals in Italy have applauded his attacks against those innovators who follow up "the mad and impious project of a restoration or regeneration of humanity." The Bishop of Carcassonne declared, in a mandate which followed close upon the circular of which we have just spoken :—"If it (the Romish church) so requires, let us sacrifice to it *our opinions*, *our knowledge*, *our intelligence*, the splendid dreams of our imaginations, and THE MOST SUBLIME ATTAINMENTS OF THE HUMAN UNDERSTANDING. Far from us be all that bears *the stamp of novelty*."

In the primitive ages, the Christian doctors held another language. Tertullian, speaking in the name of the church, thus expresses himself :—[*]

---

[*] Tertullian, Apologet., iv.

"Every law which does not admit of examination is suspicious; when it exacts a *blind obedience, it is tyrannical.*"

III.

The superior clergy has begun to boast of being alone able to realize liberty and right. We have just seen what it understands by free teaching. There is, after all, no secret to discover. The Bishop of Liege declares openly:— "We desire the monopoly of religious and moral instruction, because to us belongs the divine mission of bestowing it." *

Is it not grievous and scandalous to find so many artifices amongst those on whom Jesus especially enjoined simplicity and truth? Their minds have unhappily become perverted by the habit they have contracted of anatomizing vices and crimes; a mass of perfidious subtleties has at length stifled the voice of conscience within them. From hence proceeds their willingness to temporize when interest prompts them; from hence their inconceivable versatility, and their tactics ever changing according to times and places, alternately cursing or blessing, the doctrines of liberty one day, and those of absolutism on the morrow. But it is important to remark that whilst their means are perpetually changing, their end is always the same. When power is adverse to them, or does not favour them as they could wish, they do not shrink from the revolutionary character which, under other circumstances, they consider so odious. Thus, whilst they declare it to be the rigorous duty of those who suffer, to submit to their lot without a murmur, they will, from the same pulpit, excite discontent by propounding ideas which they will afterwards reprobate, when they have no longer an interest in sustaining them. I will give one example of this, one example amongst thousands which prove that what I advance is well founded. On the 21st of May, 1845, at Paris, in the aristocratic church of St. Roch, the Abbé le Dreuille thus exclaimed :—

---

* Letter of M. Doletz.

"I am the priest of the people. Labourers do not enjoy the rights *to which they have a claim*; it is time for the rich and the powerful *to render them an account.* Is it necessary to tell them that the working-man has a torch in his hand which a single spark will suffice to light, and that he will presently carry it flaming into chateaux and palaces with cries of distress and of vengeance? Has not experience taught us, that privileges *authorized by the law* are liable to fall *before the justice of the people?*"

The same abbé, whom we believe to be sincerely liberal and a friend to the people, once again preached the same doctrine in the same church. He had been authorized to do so. And since there has never been any repetition of the same thing, is it not reasonable to suppose that the desired effect had been produced?

IV.

We know no writer more intimately acquainted with the occult plans of the Company than M. de Maistre. As Sardinian ambassador at the court of the Czar, he had no more cherished friends than the Jesuits, to whom Alexander had given refuge, when they were driven out of all other states. Their modern panegyrist, M. Crétineau-Joly, by no means denies that there was a close and intimate connection between M. de Maistre and the Jesuits. "He supported them," says he, "as one of the key-stones of the social arch." *

Alexander, who was addicted to mysticism, and strongly attached to the Holy Scriptures, warmly encouraged the Bible societies. "The emperor," says the writer whom we have just quoted, "had suffered himself to be deceived. Prince Galitzin, the minister of worship, the highest functionaries of the state, the greater part of the Russian bishops, and even the Catholic archbishop of Mohilev, Stanislas Siestrzencewiez, became avowed patrons of an institution, *which was in the long run to strike a mortal blow at the Greek religion and at Catholicism.* There rose up in Russia, in favour of the Bible Society, one of those enthusiastic movements which can scarcely be conceived by those who live remote from the scene of action. Anglicanism was securing a footing from the shores of the Black Sea to those of the Frozen Ocean, and was spreading eastwards towards the frontiers of China. Prompted by Galitzin, the Catholic prelates served as blind instruments in its propagation, and encouraged their flocks to favour this work, of the tendencies of which they were, themselves, wholly ignorant."

The Jesuits knew the danger of placing the Scriptures in the hands of the people; for is it not virtually saying to them, Reflect and judge! Such of the innovators as were Catholics were denounced to Pius VII., who severely reprimanded them. Is it not, in fact, an unpardonable audacity, to follow this precept of Jesus: "Search the Scriptures; it is they which testify of me"? The Scriptures, then, speak, and even testify; this, however, M. de Maistre denies; and, doubtless, his judgment has more weight than that of Christ!

---

* Histoire religieuse, politique, et littéraire de la Compagnie de Jesus, t. vi.

"Let others," he exclaims, "invoke, as much as you please, *the mute word;* we live in peace with *this false God,* (the Bible!) awaiting evermore with fond impatience the moment when its partizans shall be undeceived, and shall throw themselves into our arms, which have been open to receive them during the last three centuries." * So then the Bible, submitted to the right of private judgment, is but *a false God, a mute word;* it only becomes intelligible in one single mouth—that of the pope. Moreover, this book is *incomplete;* the little that is found there *is only a germ.* "Never was there a shallower notion," says De Maistre, "than that of seeking in the Bible the whole sum of the Christian dogmas."

The same writer is shocked at the idea of seeking to *verify* whether laws or creeds are conformable to equity, or to the doctrines of the apostles.

"What man of sense," cries he, "would not shudder to put his hand to such a work? 'We must revert,' we are told, 'to *the fundamental and primitive laws* of the state, which an *unjust* custom has abolished; and *this would be a ruinous game* NOTHING BUT WOULD BE FOUND WANTING

---

* Essay on the Regenerating Principle in Political Constitutions and other Human Constitutions, pp. 30, 31.

IF WEIGHED IN THIS BALANCE. *Meanwhile the people are very ready to lend an ear to such exhortations.*' This is well said; nothing can be better. But behold what is man! The author of this observation (Pascal) and his hideous sect (the Jansenists) have never ceased to play this infallibly ruinous game; *and in fact the game has perfectly succeeded.*" *

This is what irritates him; this is what he cannot bear; he sees no hope of safety but in *compression;* he insists that the altar and the throne should be sacred, and quite above all question. Has he not then, erudite as he is, read how Lactantius, the celebrated apologist, upbraided the Pagan priests? "They make themselves slaves to the creed of their forefathers; they aver that it is to be adopted on trust; they divest themselves of their reason; but those who have enveloped religion in mystery, in order that the people may be ignorant of what they adore, are but knaves and deceivers." †

M. de Maistre himself has said: "Never can error be useful, or truth hurtful." This does not prevent him from maintaining elsewhere, that error is necessary—that it has its advantages—and that truth ought often to be held captive.

"The world," he says, "always contains an innumerable host of men so perverse, that *if they could doubt of certain things*, they could also increase immensely the amount of their wickedness."

Now, we all know that the Bible is styled, from the pulpit, *the Book of Truth*, and that truth has light for its emblem. But the Jesuits, applauded by M. de Maistre and by Pius VII., have done their utmost to put the light under a bushel. They have raised every possible obstacle to the propagation of the Bible. "They opposed it," remarks M. Crétineau-Joly, "with a firmness which the prayers and menaces of Galitzin, up to that time their protector and friend, could never overcome. The partizans of the Bible societies became leagued against the Company."* Now, the Jesuits have taken good care not to oppose version to version. They have uniformly opposed every version, and their intrigues on this subject were one of the causes of their expulsion from Russia, on the 13th of March, 1820. Does not this explain, in some sort, the explosion of rage against the Bible itself, which the reader has remarked in the secret conference?

---

* Idem, p. 55.

† Lactantius, Instit. dio.

Previously to this period, the Jesuits, as their apologist admits, were at open and bitter feud with the Russian universities. On that occasion they found, says the same writer, a bold defender.

"Joseph de Maistre studies it (the Society of Jesus) in its connection both with peoples and kings. Placing before the eyes of the Minister of Public Instruction a picture of the follies and crimes which the revolutionary spirit has produced, he exclaims, with a *prophetic* voice, which the events of 1812 have justified, not less than those of 1845: 'This sect (the liberal party), which is at the same time one and many, encompasses Russia, or, more properly speaking, penetrates it in all directions, and attacks it to its deepest roots. It asks no more, at present, than to have the ear of children of all ages, and the patience of sovereigns; it reserves its noisier manifestations for a future time.' After uttering these words, the truth of which becomes more and more apparent as the circle of revolution enlarges, and monarchs sink deeper into the fatal slumber of indifference, Joseph de Maistre adds: 'In the midst of dangers so pressing, nothing can be of greater utility to his Imperial Majesty than a society of men essentially inimical to that from which Russia has everything to dread, especially in the education of youth. I do not even believe *that it would be possible to substitute with advantage any other preservative.* This society is the watch-dog, which you should beware of sending away. If you do not choose that he should bite the robbers, that is your affair; but let him, at least, roam round the house, and awake you when necessary, before your doors are broken open, or the thieves get in by the windows.'"

---

* Histoire religieuse, &c., de la Compagnie de Jesus, t. vi.

This language is intelligible; the imagery is striking: the Jesuits are, truly, the vigilant watch-dogs of absolute governments, who rouse them from their sleep when necessary, and are always ready to bite those who would invade their repose. Do they not boast of possessing the statistics of everybody's thoughts, and of being alone able to predict the periods of the political tides? Thus M. Crétineau quotes these words of John Müller as profoundly judicious:—"Wise men did not hesitate to conclude, that with the Jesuits fell a common and necessary barrier of defence for all powers."

The rampart of the old order of things being thus overthrown, M. de Maistre gives vent to his wrath in these terms:—

"When we think how a detestable coalition of perverse ministers, magistrates in delirium, and ignoble sectarians, has been able, in our time, to destroy this *marvellous institution*, and to boast of their work, we are reminded of the fool who triumphantly clapped his foot upon a watch, exclaiming—*I will soon find a way to stop your noise!* But what am I saying? A fool is not guilty!"*

The Jesuits had a good right to the mortal remains of Joseph de Maistre, so they were delivered up to them, and are deposited in their church at Turin.

V.

M. Saint-Chéron, whom we ask pardon for quoting after a writer so distinguished as M. de Maistre, now comes forward as one of the most ardent disciples of the reverend fathers. He calls to remembrance this remarkable phrase, written by M. de Maistre in 1820:—"Providence *is engaged* in raising an army in Europe."† This army must needs have been on the increase. M. Saint-Chéron is, no doubt, acquainted with its chiefs; already he perceives "striking signs of the approach of one of those solemn crises which mark, for ages, the destiny of a people; signs which fore-token one of those epochs in which sanguinary contests take place." Emboldened by these prognostics, he adds:—"Catholicism is taking its measures to assure itself anew of the sword of France."

---

* Essay on the Regenerating Principle, &c., p. 49.

† Cited by the Journal des Débats of the 21st of February, 1844.—In 1820 an institution of the greatest importance was founded. The 3rd May, 1844, a pompous placard made its appearance in Paris, announcing to the faithful that an august ceremony would take place at St. Sulpice, *to return thanks to God for the ever-increasing success of the Society for the Propagation of the Faith, inspired by God twenty-three years ago.*

It is impossible, however, to be more daring than was De Maistre; he propounds the most formidable views, so that you would say he wrote with a portion of the *secret plan* before him. He lived in a time when the defeats of freedom were too recent to make him at all cautious in measuring his words. His successors are, in general, more anxious to disguise their odious projects. Often blunt and offensive, but always frank, M. de Maistre was too well acquainted with the falsity of the double system he so vigorously defended, to suppose, for a moment, that it could maintain itself under the rule of liberty. He deems, therefore, that the inquisition and the executioner ought to form its corner-stone.

"There must," he says, "be some authority against which no one has the right to argue. *To reason*, said Saint Thomas, *is to seek, and to be always seeking is to be never contented*."* No discussion, therefore; the right to use it is only sought by those who would reform and remodel all things—an impious and abominable thought; it is, doubtless, desired to the end that "the *crushed party* may have time to raise itself up, through the tolerance which is shown towards it, and may crush its adversary in its turn."

But why should not each party enjoy the same rights, the same liberty? This is precisely the *equality* which M. de Maistre abhors, he who is characterized as *the man eminently religious*, the *model of a Christian*. According to his notion, liberty is a privilege which belongs only to nobles and prelates. What, he indignantly demands, is the source of this flood of detestable doctrines? "It proceeds," he answers, "from that numerous phalanx of what are called learned men, whom we have not persisted in keeping in their proper place, which is the second."* This champion of the faith, who has God and religion perpetually on his lips, covers with these sounding words a system of barbarous oppression for all that is most sacred in man: he would have two castes, as masters, holding all the rest in slavery.

---

* Delay of Divine Justice in the Punishment of the Guilty. Note 2nd.

"It is not to science that it belongs to guide mankind: it has none of the necessary powers for this purpose. It belongs to prelates, to nobles, to the great officers of the state, to be the depositaries and guardians of the truth; to teach the nations what is evil and what is good, what is true and what false in moral and spiritual things: *none others have any right to reason upon matters of this nature.* They have the natural sciences to amuse themselves with—of what do they complain? As to the man who speaks or writes so as to take away a national dogma from the people, *he ought to be hung as a common thief.* Why has so great an imprudence been committed as to grant liberty of speech to every one? IT IS THIS THAT HAS UNDONE US. Philosophers (those at least who assume the name) are all possessed with a sort of fierce and rebellious pride which takes nothing for granted; they detest all distinctions of which they do not partake: all authority revolts them, and there is nothing out of their own sphere which they do not hate.

---

* Soirées de St. Petersburgh, enbutun VIIIme.

Leave them alone, and they will attack everything, even God himself, because he is their master. Is it not these very men who have written against kings and against him who has established them! Oh! *if, when the earth shall be settled*——."*

M. de Maistre here suddenly checks himself. He has, however, said enough to betray his gigantic hopes that the old system shall be re-established, that free inquiry shall be abolished, that all independence shall be impossible for the people, and that priests and nobles alone shall reign.

He quotes this saying of Cardinal de Retz: "He who assembles the people stirs them up to insurrection." The commentary which he makes upon it is worthy of himself.

"A maxim," he says, "the spirit of which is unimpeachable. The laws of fermentation are the same in morals as in physics. It arises from contact, and augments in proportion to the mass of the fermenting matters. Collect a number of men rendered *spirituous* by any passion whatever: you will shortly have heat, then excitement, and presently delirium will ensue, precisely as in the material process, where the *turbulent* fermentation leads rapidly to the *acid*, and this is speedily followed by the *putrid*. Every assembly is liable to the action of this general law, if the process is not arrested by the *cold* of authority, which glides into the interstices and stops the movement of the particles."†

Consequently, meetings of the people must be interdicted. But, at least, the people may have the right to represent themselves by deputies? See what one of the boldest defenders of the Jesuits says on this question.

---

* Idem.

† Du Pape, p. 96.

which is only accepted by reason, and discusses points of faith, is good for nothing but to undermine thrones; therefore does M. de Maistre desire that this error, the fruitful root of many others, should be extinguished by kings themselves.

"Help me," he says, "with all speed to make it disappear the more quickly. It is impossible that considerations so important should not at length make their way into Protestant council chambers, and be stored up there, to descend after a time like fertilizing water into *the valleys*. There is every inducement for the Protestants to unite with us. Their science, which is now a horrid corrosive, will lose its deleterious qualities in allying itself with *our submission*, which will not refuse in its turn to derive light from their science. This great change must, however, begin with the sovereigns."*

None are so much interested as the great in the demolition of Protestantism; other classes may be called to aid them; the Protestant clergy alone is to be excepted.

"Several manifest signs," he says, "exclude this ministry (the Protestant clergy) from *the great work*. To adhere to error is always a great evil; but to teach it by profession, and to teach it against the cry of conscience, is the extreme of evil, and absolute blindness is its inevitable consequence."

We have, then, a right to distrust doctrines which are an evident source of wealth and domination for those who teach them; the ardent zeal with which they are inflamed is to be justly suspected.

---

* Du Pape, p. 476.

VI.

In 1804, at the very moment when kings were struggling under the grasp of their conqueror, and plotting useless coalitions, Pius VII., so far from surrendering a jot of the ancient Roman supremacy, wrote thus to his nuncio, at Vienna:—

"THE PRINCIPLE OF THE CANON LAW IS THIS:— That the subjects of a heretic prince are liberated from all duty, all fealty and homage towards him." "Those who are at all versed in history," he remarks, "cannot but be acquainted with *the sentences and depositions* pronounced by pontiffs and councils against princes who persisted in heresy."

"In good truth," concludes Pius VII., "we are fallen upon times of great calamity, and of such deep humiliation for the spouse of Jesus Christ, that it is not possible for her to practise many of her *holy maxims*, nor even expedient for her to bring them forward; and she is, at the same time, forced *to interrupt the course of her just severity against the enemies of the faith.*"

Thus we are warned. Rome (unless Pius IX. accomplish a complete revolution in its traditions) is not less tenacious of its canonical rights than are kings and nobles of their prerogatives. They protest that God is the author of these. Absolution is holy, the theocratic system is sacrosanct. It has never been destroyed, it is only suspended until the passing away of these times, so calamitous and humiliating to the church, for days of glory are promised to her. Then, every sovereign who shall be heretical, or even of suspected faith, shall either be converted or deprived of his throne; the *holy maxims* of ancient times shall revive, and a *just severity* against the enemies of the faith shall renew its course.

VII.

It is not without reason that M. de Montalembert, while defending the Jesuits against those who reproach them with their vow of absolute obedience to the popes, is astounded at this accusation, and remarks that the bishops still make oath of absolute submission to the pope, in clauses and terms the most precise, strong, and comprehensive; and yet this important oath has never, till now, been a subject of accusation. Let us attach to each word its proper value, and we shall perceive that everything in this formula combines to render the pope the absolute chief of the world, as well temporal as spiritual, and that we must not therefore be surprised that the bishops spare no efforts to make the ecclesiastical jurisdiction predominate over every civil jurisdiction. Before he receives the mitre each bishop swears thus :—

"I will do all that in me lies to pursue, defend, increase, and strengthen the rights, honours, privileges, and the authority of the holy Roman church of our lord the pope and his successors.

"I will humbly receive the apostolic commands (the orders of the pope), and I will apply myself to their execution with the greatest zeal and the strictest punctuality.

"I promise and swear that I will WITH ALL MY MIGHT

PERSECUTE and combat all heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our lord the pope." *

As for the priests, every one knows that they are bound to swear implicit obedience to their bishops. It is exactly the same with the different orders and religious congregations. The Jesuits are, therefore, not the only ones bound by vow to labour for the restoration of Rome's sovereign power, and for the subjection of temporal rulers. What distinguishes them from other orders is their perfect accordance with theocratic principles, and the unremitting energy with which they follow them up to all their consequences. They it is who sustain the burden of the strife, and spur on the combatants.

Just now, indeed, the superior clergy, though never ceasing to extol the Jesuits, find themselves compelled to use language somewhat more liberal than formerly. But who will believe that these manifestations are genuine? Has not Father Roothaan himself but lately declared that his order applauded the tendencies and the acts of the new pope? Does he not loudly protest against those who have written that in Piedmont and Sicily, as well as in the Roman States, the Jesuits are striving to turn away princes from encouraging progress? Is he not indignant that they should be styled *retrograde*, and they should be accused of favouring the system of Metternich?

---

* Juro, honores, privilegia, et auctoritatem sanctæ Romanæ ecclesiæ et successorum prœdictorum conservare, defendere, augere, promovere curabo. Mandata apostolica humiliter recipiam et quàm diligentissime exequar. Promitto et juro me hæreticos, schismaticos et rebelles domino nostro papæ OMNI CONATU PERSECUTURUM et impugnaturum. *Ex pontificali Romano, capite de consacratione episcoporum.*

"Our Company," he says, "is a religious order, solemnly approved by the church. Its sole object is the glory of God and the salvation of souls; its means are the practice of the evangelical counsels, and the zeal of which the apostles and apostolic men of all ages have set it the example. *It knows no other means. It is a stranger to politics;* and has never allied itself with any party whatsoever. Calumny may be pleased to spread perfidious insinuations, and to represent the Jesuits as mixed up with political intrigues; but I defy any one to point out to me a single priest, amongst those who are subordinate to me, who has departed on this point from the spirit and the formal prescriptions of our institution.

"Will any one pretend to insinuate that the Jesuits of the Roman States have made an alliance with Austria? Surely this would be attributing a singular importance to these men of religion! But this supposition is so contrary to common sense, reason, and evidence, that it does not even require to be refuted.

"The Company of Jesus, like the church, has neither *antipathy* nor *predilection* for the political constitutions of the several states. Its members accept *with sincerity* the form of government under which Providence has marked their place, whether a friendly power encourages them, or whether it merely respects in them the rights which they enjoy in common with other citizens.

"If the political institutions of the country they inhabit are defective, they quietly endure their defects; if they are in course of improvement, they *applaud every amelioration;* if those institutions grant new privileges to the people, they claim their just share of this advantage; if they become open to more extended and liberal views, the Jesuits profit by this to give more extension to works of beneficence and zeal. Everywhere they bow before the laws; they respect public authorities; they are endowed with all the feelings of good and loyal citizens; they partake with these their obligations, their burdens, and their rejoicings.

"It is as contrary to truth as to public notoriety that the Jesuits are *in a state of permanent conspiracy* against the august pontiff whom the whole universe salutes with its acclamations. To love, venerate, bless, and defend Pope Pius IX., to obey him in all things, to applaud the wise reforms and ameliorations which he shall be pleased to introduce, is for every Jesuit a duty of conscience and of justice, which it will ever be grateful to him to fulfil." *

Up to this day, then, history has been nothing else, with regard to the Jesuits, than a perpetual calumny—a diabolical conspiracy. Thus, we are not to accept any historians but such as are sanctioned by them. What has been seen in past times, what is seen at present, is not to be believed; the most authentic witnesses are to be sacrificed to the immaculate purity of this innocent order. At Lucerne, at Freiburg, in the Valais, in all places where they have succeeded in establishing their influence, however heavy may be the chains with which they have laden the people, however intolerable the compression which they have established, we are to call it all the reign of social rights and of true liberty! Well; let us say nothing more of the past, which pronounces against them such terrible condemnations; let us look at what is close to us—let us see what is their favourite *régime;* let us see, amongst other laws exhumed from the dust of the middle ages, what decrees the Grand Council of the Valais, acting under their direction, has pronounced against *illicit assemblies, blameable reports and speeches,* &c. Here follows the first article:—

---

* L'Ami de la Religion, No. 4434.

"A fine of from twenty to two hundred francs, and imprisonment for not less than a month, nor more than two years, or one of these punishments only, shall be inflicted on those *who shall utter scandalous words against the holy Catholic and Roman religion,* or against public morality; this sentence does not regard *blasphemers who shall be punished according to the criminal laws;* likewise on those who introduce, *placard, expose, lend, distribute, or possess knowingly, or without authorization, writings or infamous books, or caricatures, which attack the holy religion of the state or its ministers . . . .* The said objects, moreover, shall be confiscated. In case of repetition of the offence, the highest amount of the fine and the longest term of imprisonment may be doubled."

The *Sémeur* makes the following observations on this article:—

"A citizen of the Valais happens to give it as his opinion, that such or such a miracle, proclaimed by the reverend fathers, is apocryphal:—scandalous words against the holy Catholic, apostolic, and Roman religion; fine and imprisonment for an offence so heinous! He ventures to assert that certain *curés* do not set the best possible example:—most scandalous words, which must be punished by the maximum of fine and imprisonment! He goes, perhaps, further; he disputes the title of the Virgin Mary to the adoration of the faithful, and maintains that the Roman church is at variance on this point with the New Testament:—this is more than scandal, it is a *blasphemy*, and blasphemy is a crime in this exceedingly well-governed canton. Our citizen of the Valais, with rash temerity, affirms that the morality of the Jesuits is sometimes very immoral:—blasphemy in the highest degree, and an ignominious punishment must be awarded for so heinous a crime!

"Is it conceivable that a law of this nature should be promulgated in 1845, on the frontiers of France and of Italy, in the very face of a press which takes note of all these atrocities; whilst the Jesuits wish to make it appear that they are prepared to admit a certain liberty? Is it comprehensible that they should offer to all Europe the spectacle of this ignoble thirst for despotism, this base and odious impudence, for which no name is strong enough in any known human tongue? Our country (France) was justly and deeply enraged against *the law of sacrilege*, which was abolished in obedience to the unanimous voice of the nation, after the days of July. But what was this *law of sacrilege* compared with the law promulgated in the Valais on the subject of *scandalous words* against the Catholic religion or its ministers? It was mildness, gentleness, and tolerance itself. It was only called into operation on the occasion of an offence committed in a place of worship during the exercises of religion, or of a direct attack upon a minister of the church. In the Valais it was enough to have uttered scandalous words,—and where? In the street, in an inn, at home, perhaps before strangers! Did the Inquisition go farther? What do I say?—did it go so far?

"We thought that the ordinances of the eleventh century, which prescribed that the tongue of the blasphemer or the heretic should be pierced with a hot iron, no longer lived but in history, as monuments of atrocious barbarism. We were mistaken; the Jesuits will not suffer anything that is cruel or infamous to perish: they may hide it for a time, they close their arsenal when the tempest roars, but let sunshine come forth again and they bring out their chains, their instruments of torture, and their merciless steel.

"Tell us, after this, of the generous principles of the Jesuits and the Romish priests! Boast of your love of liberty! Tell us for the thousandth time that you, and you alone, know how to respect the rights of nations and the progress of humanity! Advocate democracy in your sermons and in your journals! We know you too well, and shortly there will not be one reasonable man to be found who does not discern, under your borrowed mask, your insatiable tyrannic instincts!

"If there were any sincerity in your liberal maxims, you would at least express your indignation against such laws as those which have been promulgated in the Valais; you would attack the abominable enterprises of the Jesuits; but which of your journals is capable of such honourable frankness? The *Univers*, and the *Ami de La Religion*, and all the ecclesiastical gazettes, will keep silence, and on the morrow, even, these same papers will not be ashamed to reproach their adversaries with being inimical to liberty!

"Comedians! comedians! the wretched piece that you are playing will soon come to an end! beware of its denouement!"

VIII.

Just as I had finished these lines there was discovered in the Bibliothèque Royale a manuscript, containing on the subject of the Jesuits some pages which were not intended for publication, and which possess a curious interest at the distance of two hundred years from the date when they were written. They are by Thomas Campanella, well known by his book on the *City of the Sun* and other works, but still more celebrated for afflictions which would have subdued any other soul than his. His testimony comes forth opportunely after having remained buried nearly two centuries. Campanella's pages may be considered the complement of the *Secret Plan;* we learn from them once more by what occult mechanism some thousands of men dispersed over the face of the globe succeed in exercising an almost incredible power. I pass over pages of the celebrated Dominican, which contain only what would seem a tedious repetition of facts and artifices already divulged in books that have obtained great notoriety; and will only remark with Campanella, who adduces historical facts in proof of his assertion, that the Jesuits only exhibit great zeal for the pope's infallibility when it serves their own plans, but that they make not the least account of it when it speaks in a tone of authority to impose restraints and rules upon them. Let us hear the author.*

"Their father-general resides constantly in Rome, all the others yield him absolute submission. He has selected some fathers who are called assistants because they continually aid him. There is at least one of these for each nation, by whose name he is called, one being styled the Assistant of France, another of Spain, a third of Italy, a fourth of England, a fifth of Austria, and so on for all the other provinces and kingdoms. Each of them has for office to acquaint the father-general as to all events of state which take place in the province or kingdom, for which he is assistant; and this he does by means of his correspondents who reside in the provincial towns of the said kingdom. Now these correspondents inform themselves with scrupulous care as to the character, inclinations, and intentions of the sovereigns, and by each courier they acquaint the assistant with whatever facts have recently occurred or been brought to light. These are immediately communicated by the assistant to the father-general, who thereupon assembling his council, they proceed together to perform an *anatomy of the world*, and scrutinize the interests or the projects of all christian princes. After having weighed all the documents, they agree among themselves to favour the interests of one prince and thwart those of another, making everything turn to their own advantage. Now as the lookers-on more easily detect the sleights-of-hand committed than those who are playing the game, so these fathers having under their eyes the interests of all princes, can very accurately appreciate the exigencies of times and places, and put in operation the most decisive means in order to favour a prince whom they are sure they can make use of for the realisation of their own interested views.

---

* *Instruzione a' principi intorno alla maniera colla quale si governano i Padri Gesuiti.* Bibl. Royale de Paris, No. 636.

" The Jesuit fathers confess a great part of the nobility in the Catholic States, and often the sovereigns themselves;

whereby they are enabled to penetrate every design and resolution, to know the dispositions of princes and subjects, and to lay them before the father-general or an assistant.

"Anybody of the least penetration may easily convince himself how many perplexities they can cause to those princes whom their own interests, the sole and exclusive motive of their actions, point out to them as adversaries.

"Secrecy is necessary in state affairs: a state is undone when its secrets are divulged. But the Jesuit fathers, that is to say the father-general and his assistants, whether by means of the confessional or of the mutual consultations held by the correspondents who reside in all the chief towns of Christendom, or through other adherents, of whom we shall speak presently, are exactly and minutely informed of all the decisions come to in the most private councils; and they know the forces, revenues, and expenditure of sovereigns, better in a manner than the sovereigns themselves. All this costs them only so much postage. At Rome alone, as the post-masters attest, their postages for each courier amount to 60 or 70, and often to 100 gold crowns. Being thus profoundly acquainted with the interests of all sovereigns, is it not in their power to weaken the credit of any one of them with the rest, to ruin any sovereign they please in the estimation of his people, to make the latter his enemies, and to instil the leaven of revolt into the state—and all this the more easily, since by means of confessions and consultations they penetrate into the most secret thoughts of the subjects?"

After this follow details respecting the various classes of Jesuits, laymen and priests, and their auxiliaries in sundry occult functions. "They have them," says Campanella, "in every kingdom, province, and court." Their choice falls on shrewd and adroit men, whom they recompense with pensions, benefices, or high offices.

"The fourth kind," he says, "is that of the political Jesuits, in whose hands is the government of the whole order. They are of those whom the devil has tempted with that temptation which Christ endured in the wilderness, *hæc omnia tibi dabo;* and they have not shrunk from the offer. They have made it their task to constitute their company a perfect monarchy; and they establish it in Rome, the centre of confluence for almost all the affairs of Christendom. There resides the chief of these politicians—that is to say, their general—with many others who profess the same maxims. Being informed beforehand, through their spies and numerous correspondents, of all the affairs of the greatest importance which are pending at the court of Rome, and having their minds fixed upon those issues which accord with their own interests, each of them is assiduous in attendance on the cardinals, ambassadors, and prelates, with whom they adroitly ingratiate themselves. They talk to them of the affair in question or about to be brought forward—represent it under such colours as suit themselves—and do this so cleverly, that they make their hearers believe black is white. And forasmuch as first impressions, especially when they are derived from clerical persons, usually leave deep traces on the mind, it follows that extremely important negociations, conducted by ambassadors, princes, and other eminent personages of the Roman court, have often not succeeded as princes would have desired, the Jesuits having forestalled the influence of the princes or their agents by their insidious statements.

"The same artfulness which they use with the Roman prelates, they exhibit also in their dealings with sovereigns, either directly or through the medium of the Jesuits of the second class who are away from Rome. Thus does the greater part of the affairs of Christendom pass through the hands of the Jesuits; and those affairs alone succeed to which they offer no resistance.

"They formerly supplicated His Holiness Gregory XIII. (on the colourable plea of the good of the Church) to enjoin all legates and apostolic nuncios to take, for companions and confidants, Jesuits whose councils should guide them in all their actions.

"By such manœuvres, and by that knowledge they have of affairs of state, the principal Jesuits have acquired the friendship of several temporal and spiritual princes, whom they have prevailed on to do and say many things for their advantage. Hence have resulted two great evils.

"The first is, that, abusing the friendship and kindness of princes, they have not scrupled to ruin many rich and noble families, by usurping their patrimonies. They have enticed into their order such of the pupils in their schools as were most remarkable for their talents; and very often, when the latter have become useless to them through infirmities or other causes, the Jesuits have turned them off under some pretext or another, but without restoring their property, of which, during the period of profession, the order had taken care to become possessor.

"The second evil is, that these fathers are sedulous to make known the friendship and intimacy they enjoy with princes, *and give it out for still greater than it really is*, in order to engage the sympathies of all the ministers, and thus excite everybody to have recourse to them for obtaining favours. They have publicly boasted of their ability to create cardinals, nuncios, lieutenants, governors, and other functionaries. There are some among them who have even made bold to affirm that their general can do much more than the pope; and others have alleged that it is better to belong to their order than to be a cardinal. All these things have been said publicly; and there is scarcely any one who, in conversing familiarly with them, has not heard them give utterance to the like sentiments.

"Amply provided with resources of this kind, they affirm that they can favour or disgrace whomsoever they please; and covering themselves with the cloak of religion, the better to secure belief, they often succeed in their designs.

"It is not long since one of the leading Jesuits, speaking in public to one of the leading sovereigns in the name of his Company, began with these audacious words, founded on the notion that they are a Power:—'*Our Company has always maintained a good understanding with your Serenity,*' &c.

"These reverend fathers make it their business to have it believed that all those whom the prince favours in any manner whatever have been their favourites; and, by this means, they acquire more mastery over subjects than their monarch himself. This is highly prejudicial to the latter, both because it is inconsistent with every interest of state that ecclesiastics so ambitious and politic should have so much power over the will of ministers as to be able, if they please, to produce treason or riots; and because, through their influence over the ministers, their adherents, they introduce sworn Jesuits into the prince's service as councillors or secretaries; these, again, intrigue until they induce the prince to employ some Jesuits as confessors or preachers, and then all together ply their task as spies and informers, rendering a minute account to the general of all that passes in the secret councils. Thence it happens that certain projects get wind immediately, secrets of great importance are discovered, yet no one can tell who is the traitor, and sometimes suspicion falls on those who are not guilty."

"As from different plants the alembic extracts an unguent capable of curing many sores; as the bees suck honey from many flowers, so the Jesuit fathers draw profit from the infallible knowledge they have of all the interests of princes, and of the facts which occur in all parts, being skilled to the use of speech, so as to obtain their profit through the good or evil fortune of others, but more frequently through the latter than the former. Often, too, they prevail with princes, whose dispositions they have already sounded, by hinting at the possession of great means to enable the latter to accomplish their designs and crown all their desires. But when by the help of princes they have succeeded in their views, judging that if they aided those princes to rise too high, the latter might one day do them a mischief, they begin, as lawyers do with their causes, to protract and delay everything, and, with surprising artifice and cunning, they turn the cards, and finally ruin the designs they had themselves suggested.

"From all that has been said, it follows that the Jesuits never act with the least honesty towards any princes whatever, lay or ecclesiastic, and that they aid them only as far as their own interests require. It also follows that their aid should never be accepted by princes, and still less by prelates, because they are equally ready to bestow their attachment on everybody, and make themselves Frenchmen with the French, Spaniards with Spaniards, and so forth, according to circumstances; and since, provided they compass their own ends, they care not though it be to the detriment of this one or that, the enterprises in which the Jesuit fathers have meddled have rarely had a good result.

Moreover, knowing the interests of all princes, and being exactly informed of all that is daily transacted in the most secret councils, those who profess themselves partisans of France propose to the king, and his principal ministers, certain conditions of importance, which the political fathers transmit to them from Rome. Now, as they do the same with regard to Spain and other countries, there ensues such a jealous distrust in the hearts of princes that the one no longer puts any faith in the other, which is immensely prejudicial to the public tranquillity and the general welfare of the Christian world, such distrust rendering very difficult the formation of a league against the common enemy, for peace between the princes themselves is insecure.

"Sometimes we see a person afflicted with a dangerous disease; he shrieks out piteously; every one thinks him in great danger, but no one can guess the nature and origin of the disease. Thus every one complains of the Jesuits: one, because he is persecuted by them; another, because they have dealt dishonestly by him; but still the evil goes on, and it is not easy to apprehend its cause. Now, that cause consists in their huge desire to aggrandise themselves evermore. To accomplish this, they will stop at nothing, whether it be to displease everybody, or to deceive princes, or to oppress the poor, or to extort widows' fortunes, or to ruin the most noble families; and they very often sow the seeds of suspicion among Christian princes, in order to have opportunities of mixing in their most important affairs.

"To demonstrate how excessive is their passion for aggrandisement, I might adduce numberless proofs from experience. In the time of Gregory XIII. had not the Jesuits the audacity to solicit of the pope the investiture of all the parochial churches of Rome, in order to lay the foundations of their monarchy? But what they could not obtain in Rome they have at last recently obtained in England, where they have procured the election of an arch-priest, bound by oath to their Company. This man, far from protecting the clergy, is like a ravening wolf to all the priests who wish to be independent of the Jesuits, and drives them to despair, forbidding them to converse together under severe penalties. Almost all the English clergy have become sworn Jesuits, and none are now received in the colleges but those who pledge their words to become Jesuits; so that should that kingdom return to Catholicism, England would give birth to an effective Jesuit monarchy, since the ecclesiastical revenues, all the abbeys, benefices, and bishoprics, the arch-priestships, and the other dignities, would be conferred on none but Jesuits.

"If now, when they have no temporal jurisdiction, they exhibit to the world such great and scandalous disorders, what would they do if unhappily one of them were elected pope? In the first place, he would fill the sacred college with Jesuits, and by that means the pontificate would remain for ever in the hands of the Company. Moreover, the sacred college being moved only by its interests, and possessing the papal power, might they not endanger the states of several princes, especially those most contiguous to Rome? The Jesuit pontiff would bestow on his order the investiture of some towns or of some temporal jurisdiction, in which it would adroitly maintain itself, to the great injury of other princes. When the sacred college was filled with Jesuits, the latter would be the arbiters of Christ's whole patrimony; and like the dropsical patient, whose thirst increases as he drinks, the more greatness they acquired the more they would covet, and they would cause a thousand troubles. And as there is nothing so susceptible of changes as states, these fathers would put in operation all their artifices and resources, and would strive to disorganize everything in order to realize universally the form of domination which is dearest to them; and by this means they would become *real monarchs.*

"Were I ordered to write what I think the best to keep the Jesuits within rule, without doing them the least injury, but on the contrary procuring them the greatest advantage—for I would fain make them real monarchs, not of this world, which is but vile clay, but of souls, which are Christ's treasure—I should be ready to do so with charity, and with all the strength it should please the Lord to grant me."

IX.

I shall be asked, perhaps, do I think that any one has ventured to suggest elsewhere than in the occult committee the startling project of dispensing priests, monks, or nuns, from real celibacy? If it were so, it would still be very difficult to obtain tangible evidence of the promulgation of such a doctrine. Though I am of opinion that in its most audacious extreme it must have remained unrealized, I still believe that something of the kind has gone abroad; and if I am not mistaken, I have met with some tokens of its existence.

Nothing is more common than the licentiousness of the clergy, at least in Italy, where little pains are taken to conceal it; for the heads of the church are the less disposed to visit it with punishment, since the impunity they extend to it seems a sort of compensation for the total sacrifice of freedom to which the clergy are still doomed.

I knew a lady, a widow with one child, who was frequently visited by a clergyman of staid habits and irreproachable character. No one in the world would have presumed to entertain the least suspicion as to the nature of their intercourse, so extremely respectful was their behaviour towards each other.

One day, just as he had left the house, I paid a visit to the lady—a charming person, whose beauty was of the kind peculiar to that period of life at which youth is past, but decline has not begun. The moment I set eyes on her I was greatly surprised to see patches of white powder scattered over her bosom and shoulders. The venerable clergyman wore hair-powder.

Unwilling to hurt her feelings, but regardful of her interest, I led her to a looking-glass, where she blushed in great confusion. I entreated her to pardon my boldness, assured her of my discretion, and at last put her at her ease. She then confessed to me that she tenderly loved that grave and austere man, whom any one, to look at him, would have supposed insensible to such a passion; but she assured me that under a rough bark he concealed a warm and loving heart.

Of course I did not allow so good an opportunity of putting questions to escape me. I asked her, in the first place, how her reverend friend reconciled his vow of chastity with his conduct.

"It is true," she said, "the church must have priests who are not married, for otherwise the clergy would lack authority and prestige; and besides, confession is perhaps still more necessary than preaching (astonishing remark!); but if celibacy were abolished, there could be no more confession. On the other hand, how can men help loving? A man does not put off human nature when he becomes a priest. Now, there is but one way of reconciling these seeming contrarieties: and that is to love, and even with all the ardour of the senses, but without compromising the clergyman, making, if necessary, the greatest sacrifices—except, she added with a smile, that of not loving—in order not to expose the priesthood to the contempt or derision of the multitude.

"As for our affection, it is no obstacle, we are very sure, to sacred duties: far from being so, it excites us to fulfil them with more devotedness. Perhaps you will be surprised if I tell you that he whom I love regards, as a recompense from God for his zeal, the possession of a mistress who so well understands her position, and conducts herself with such prudence."

When I remarked to her that I could not understand the vehement indignation with which the individual in question professed to regard such faults, and that this appeared to me an instance of bad faith and hypocrisy, she made answer that he acted in perfect sincerity; for he believed firmly that the clergy ought to take care never to afford the laity grounds for scandal; what incensed him was not the fact itself (since he knew well that every man, priest or lay, was irresistibly impelled to an attachment for some woman), but the levity and indifference to the interests of the church shown in the neglect of precautions against discovery, which are less difficult to take than is commonly supposed.

Some years afterwards the lady's lover reaped the reward of his piety, decorum, and prudence, being appointed a bishop. His mistress accompanied him to his diocese, where he had no sooner arrived than he took measures which to many priests seemed intolerable. It was seriously believed that he was an enemy to the sex, and one of those whom nature has created incomplete. One of my friends, who was among the victims of these inexorable reforms, wrote and told me that he was living on bread and water in a convent, as a punishment for a *liaison* of which he had made no secret, and that he could not tell when his penance would end. He was not aware that I could deliver him forthwith. A sharp note addressed to the lady, in which I strongly reprobated the rigour displayed in the case, produced the desired effect. I saw her some time afterwards. She defended the prelate's conduct, and thought he was right in not tolerating those thoughtless and awkward persons who exposed the church to such serious disadvantages. You know well, she said, that his lordship is not so unjust as to desire that his priests should surpass human nature; but he thinks he has a right to insist on prudence and circumspection for the honour of the church. And then, as she had picked up a smattering of Latin, she quoted to me (from St. Paul!) these words, which the bishops are constantly repeating to the clergy: *Si non caste, saltem caute*—If not chaste, at least be cautious.

X.

Let us now refer to Section XV. of the *Secret Sitting*, in which mention is made of the hospitals *à la Saint Roch*. This passage would have remained for me a dead letter, but for a fact which cast a strong light upon it.

When very young, I had been placed as a boarder with an ex-Capuchin, Father Evasio Fantini, who was every moment beset by crowds of penitents of every rank and condition. What I saw and heard early excited in me reflections which were not without influence on the bent of my mind. At a later period I passed some time with the old man during my vacations, and used to accompany him in all his walks, delighting to hear him call up his recollections of the cloisters, of which he was a living echo. He took pleasure in making me acquainted with everything that passed in them to the minutest details, with a frankness and kindly simplicity worthy of his age.. What I learned from him was more useful to me, towards judging of monks and the monastic system, than all the books I have since read.

One evening at Casal Monferrat, as we were returning home from a walk, we observed an extraordinary bustle and excitement, and soon learned that faint cries had been heard issuing from underground in a girl's boarding-school; masons had been employed to search the spot, and a new-born infant had been found in a disgustingly filthy state in the privy of the house occupied by D. Bossola, a parish priest of the town. D. Bossola and his servant-woman were proved guilty. I will not repeat all the observations uttered among the crowd; it was not safe for priests to be seen there at such a moment, and we hastily came away. The priest was sent to a convent, and his accomplice was incarcerated. And, by-the-bye, there was much talk some time afterwards of the interest shown for her by the clergy; she received visits, was comforted, aided, protected, and treated with the most assiduous kindness.

Just as Father Fantini and I were quitting the spot, we were accosted by a reverend Jesuit father, who had just stepped out of a carriage, and learned the whole story. He was angry, but for reasons we were far from suspecting.

"Never would such things happen," he said to us, "if the clergy, and especially the bishops, had an ounce of brains" *(un' oncia di sale in zacca)*. "Those who wielded power, religious or political, were all a pack of asses. It ought to be impossible for such dangerous scandals ever to be made public."

"What would you do to prevent it?" said the old ex-Capuchin. "You Jesuits are men with grand secrets; but amongst them all you have not yet found a remedy for a great evil. You have not a secret for effecting that a man shall not be human. I have been confessing both sexes for fifty years; the confessional is my main business. Now, up to this time my penitents have always been in the same tale; one most obstinate sin holds the sceptre and sways all the rest; and if God will not pass the sponge over it, hell will be paved with nothing but tonsures, and peopled only with celibataries."

The Jesuit smiled, shook his head, and said he did not understand.

"Leave human nature as it is," he said; "men will not reform what has been made by an artificer who will suffer none to correct him. As for me, I think nature very good, especially on that point on which people so foolishly affect to consider her bad. One thing alone is important in the matter—namely, to know clearly whether it is intended that the church shall subsist, or shall share the fate of many another buried cult. Confession is the prime mover of the church; and without celibacy there is no confession."

I replied to him that it is not an easy thing to make celibacy and the confessional go together; that it is not easy to contrive that the candle shall not take fire when the match is applied to it.

"Too true, alas!" said the old man immediately; "the lamb will remain safe and sound under the wolf's tooth, before the young priest, with his passions glowing, can remain long without burning in the furnace of the confessional."

"The evil," said the Jesuit, "is not where you see it. No one is afraid of burning in the furnace; and the candle," he added slily, "likes to be lighted and relighted as long as it lasts."

"I begin to understand you," said the old man. "Thou becomest thy name: Jesuit!" (For venerated as he was by all, Father Fantini said *thou* and *thee* to everybody, from the peasant to personages of the highest birth.*) "What you complain of is solely that the priest's honour suffers, that confession is jeopardised, and even in danger of total wreck."

"I say, by all means pluck the rose," said the Jesuit; "but no pricking of the fingers! And to explain myself precisely, I will ask why means should not be taken to make it impossible that a priest should ever meet with mischances and be exposed to obloquy? Might there not be provided in every province establishments, in which the sex which suffers most from the results of human weakness might find a refuge free from care or fear, or any of those consequences which make it so often repent of having yielded?"

"Why, you don't mean to say," exclaimed the old man, "that you would have a seraglio established in every district, to which none should have access but monks and priests, and where they should find accomplices comfortably boarded, lodged, and clothed at the expense of the church?"

"Not exactly that, but something like it," was the reply; and then the speaker looked on us with a scrutinizing glance, as if he hesitated to proceed. As for me, the reader may imagine my curiosity to know what he was driving at. All I did to lead him on was to let him understand that, although the octogenarian stood out against him, he would not find me invincibly opposed to his notions.

"Still," said I, "it would be favouring and encouraging a passion which, even when it encounters obstacles or consequences apparently the most likely to check it, still rushes forward with undiminished audacity and blindness. What would become of it if every obstacle was removed and every untoward consequence was rendered impossible?"

---

* The Translator, however, thinks it better to drop, after the first phrase, a form of expression which in English does not imply familiarity.

"Had not David at least twenty wives?" he replied. "Whenever he was smitten with the beauty of a daughter of Eve, did he not make her his concubine? Would not any one who should now imitate him be regarded as the most abominable of libertines? And yet is it not written that David was a man after God's own heart? Other holy men had a greater number of women. Solomon is not blamed for having had a thousand, but only for having taken them from among the heathen, and for having been beguiled by them to worship their gods. Why, then, should it be a crime to know one woman, when in former times, notwithstanding the oppression thence resulting for the woman, God was not offended with those who indulged so copiously in that respect?"

I will not repeat all he said on this subject, for it would be necessary to enter into a labyrinth of theological questions. But what strongly excited my attention was his mention of a Hospital of St. Roch, existing, he said, at Rome. The rules of the institution, which he explained to us in detail, are such as to secure any woman from the usual unpleasant consequences of female frailty. These regulations seemed fabulous to Father Fantini; but the Jesuit insisted so strongly on the reality of what he had been telling us, that for my part I did not hesitate to believe him. He met all our objections without flinching.

I myself was afterwards assailed with the same objections in Switzerland, when I offered an explanation of the passage in my text wherein mention is made of a Hospital of St. Roch. Fortunately I was able to put them entirely aside by means of a testimony that leaves no grounds for suspicion.

In the following passage, written by M. Poujoulat, that writer has unwittingly done me a great service:—*

"One very admirable abode of charity is the arch-hospital of St. Roch, intended for pregnant women who wish to be delivered in secret. They are not asked either their names or their condition, and they may even keep their faces veiled during the whole time they are within the walls. Should one of them die, her name would not be inserted in any register, numbers being invariably used in the establishment instead of names. Young women, whose pregnancy, if known, would bring dishonour on themselves or their families, *are received at St. Roch several months before their time,* so as to prevent the shame and despair that might drive them to infanticide. The chaplains, physicians, midwives, and all who are employed in the establishment, *are bound to strict secrecy, which is enjoined under the severest penalties;* WHOEVER SHOULD VIOLATE THIS LAW WOULD BE ARRAIGNED BEFORE THE TRIBUNAL OF THE HOLY OFFICE. Every provision is made that nothing which occurs within St. Roch shall transpire out of doors. The arch-hospital is managed by pious widows. All strangers, be they who they may, are absolutely excluded; none but those who are employed in the hospital are allowed to cross the threshold. After their confinement, the patients can leave the house at any hour of the night they think most favourable, *and dressed in garments that disguise their gait.* The house, too, is isolated, and all around it is solitude and mystery.

---

* *Toscane et Rome,* Correspondance d'Italie, par M. Poujoulat. Bruxelles, 1840; Lettre xxii.

"What can be more generous, noble, and christian, than these pious cares to spread the cloak of pity over the errors of frailty!"

The suppression of foundling hospitals certainly cannot take place under existing circumstances without serious inconveniences; before they could be dispensed with, nothing less would be requisite than a fundamental change in the system of society. As for the institution of St. Roch, there is, after all, nothing in it very generous or very christian. In what interest has it been founded? Who are the authors of its regulations? They are an immense number of celibataries, who have but too strong an interest in concealing by any and every means the vast evils of a false celibacy. What is really surprising is, that those who profess themselves the guardians of the public morals, and who inveigh against vice and debauchery as a consequence of the incredulity of the age, should be the very persons who display such ingenuity in inventing the most efficacious means for screening the licentious from public observation. What a sublime effort of piety it is to rid oneself of every thorn, and to enjoy the perfume of the rose without fear, as the Jesuit expressed himself! That same cloak of pity, spread with pious care over the errors of frailty, would have been called an abominable invention, had it been woven by other hands.

"The sacred groves," said our Jesuit, "must by all means be rendered inaccessible to every profane eye, and the rash intruder must be laid low by the avenging thunder."

The ex-Capuchin, pursuing the same imagery, and alluding to a great number of monks and priests whom he had long confessed, replied—"As for what you call the sacred grove, I have handled a great deal of its timber, and found it all rotten and worm-eaten: the worm was always the same. It is a very bad sort of timber, indeed."

"It is one," said the Jesuit, looking particularly at me, "that can be made to shine like the purest gold."

When he was about to quit us, I asked his name. "Is it his name you ask?" said the old Capuchin; "but do you not know that a Jesuit of the superior grades, who is on a mission, must have at least as many different names as there are hours in the day? What a child you are! He has come to feel our pulses, and that is a reason the more why he should invent a name on the spot." Upon this, the Jesuit opened the door and left us, with a sardonic smile exclaiming, "It is no lying proverb that says, '*There is nothing simpler and slier than a Capuchin.*'"

"I know a truer one," retorted the old man, "and that is, '*It takes seven Capuchins to make a Jesuit.*'" We parted with a hearty laugh on both sides.

But to come to the fact I alluded to just now. The Rev. Mr. Hartley, an Anglican minister, to whom I had imparted the *Secret Plan* in Geneva, after having come to me three or four times to read it, told me he did not doubt its authenticity; that to suppose it my own work would infer my possession of qualities and conditions of which I was entirely destitute; but that he thought I had let myself be tempted to add to it the pages concerning celibacy, by way of a climax to all the rest. "This part of the work," he said, "does not appear to me to be credible."

"So strongly," replied I, "do I share in your opinion as to its improbability, that I have been a hundred times tempted to suppress it. Had I invented the *Secret Plan*, I should never have ventured to go so far."

I then narrated to him everything concerning the *Hôpital St. Roch.* I could not enumerate all the objections with which he assailed me, and with such force as to silence me completely. There were moments, even, when I fancied I had been made the dupe of a forged tale; and I was quite appalled when I contemplated the picture which my reverend friend drew of the consequences flowing from those regulations of the Hospital of St. Roch, which the Jesuit so much admired.

The Anglican minister was not favourable to the publication of the *Secret Plan.* Though he believed that the tactics described in it were real, and was convinced that to them Jesuitism owes its most brilliant conquests, yet he too, like many others, thought it imprudent and dangerous to initiate the multitude into all these stratagems. He again attacked me keenly on the pages which he averred were my work.

"Supposing such an institution existed," said he, "could any man of sense believe that it could have remained occult? Would married persons have abstained from denouncing it, or at least holding it up to public derision? It would thus have become known, and would have broken down before it could have made any great way. Think how long Rome has been visited by legions of English, who explore and anatomise it more closely than the Romans themselves. Consider how much ridicule and opprobrium is cast on our clergy for having rejected celibacy ; what finer opportunity could they have had to lay bare, to the disgrace of the Romish clergy, the expedients by which they secure themselves against all scandal ? Yet not a word has ever been written to that effect. Had I no other argument than this, I should deem it invincible ; but there are others besides of a higher order. I know how institutions, evidently bad, come to be submitted to through the force of centuries, heedlessness, the tyranny of habit, or potent interests. But most of them sprang up in barbarous times, and were formed little by little. Now, as for the regulations in question, if they existed, we should have to admit that they were the work of our own times, and that they had been planned, not piecemeal and gradually, but in one bulk, for the sole purpose of giving free course to the vices of the clergy ! And who are those who should have proposed to themselves such an aim ? Not one, or many priests, but the whole body of the prelates, with the pope at their head. I cannot bring myself to attribute to them such consummate depravity as this would infer. However I dislike Rome, I cannot possibly believe that a numerous body of men who respect themselves, who are watched by the public, and have formidable enemies, could conspire together to systematize the impunity of debauchery, and even take extraordinary pains to put it at its ease ! Why, it would be a vast brothel, under high protection, and screened from infamy. The encouragement to crime would here be flagrant. You would have done better," he concluded in a tone of severity, " not to put forward this fable.

The crimes of Rome are weighty enough without inventing others to charge her with. These objections stand like a wall of brass, which nothing can shake."

Any one who had seen me would have been sure that my cause was lost. I really knew not what to say, so exceedingly strong did his arguments appear even in my own eyes. As for the pages of the *Secret Plan* that relate to celibacy, had the world argued against me, of course it could not have made me believe that a thing belonged to me which did not.

Some months afterwards, when turning over several new works in a bookseller's, I lighted on M. Poujoulat's, and found in it the passage I have quoted. How great was my delight! I hurried off instantly with the volume in my hand to Mr. Hartley, who was just returned from a journey to Nice. Before conquering him in my turn, I wished to resuscitate the question. He appeared vexed at my audacity, and pressed me with objections still more pointed than those I have already reported. I let him enjoy his triumph, and my defeat appeared consummated. Logic, common-sense, and rules, were all for him. Meanwhile, in order to make him fully persuaded of the credit due to the authority on which I was about to base my proof, I made him read certain passages in which M. Poujoulat speaks of his relations with Gregory XVI., his docility with regard to the censorship, and his unbounded zeal for the triumph of Catholicism; after this, I laid before him the passage quoted above.

He was stupified. He read it two or three times, and at last confessed that he was forced to yield to evidence, and did not conceal from me that until then he had looked on me with great distrust. He frankly acknowledged his injustice, and exclaimed, "This Rome! this Rome! it bewilders the reason. We cannot apply to it any of the known and ordinary rules of judgment: it tramples on them all; it makes real what seems impossible; and we may well say of it that truth is stranger than fiction."

One is fortunate when he can refute his antagonist's arguments in this manner. One plain fact suddenly demolished an immense fabric: the wall of brass fell to the ground.

But do we not at this moment witness events, for good and for ill, which, if they had been predicted yesterday, would have been rejected as incredible? A pope is intent on progress; a government born of revolution is making itself the support of the Jesuits in Switzerland; frightful crimes are committed in high places; and the official regions are flooded with a corruption, the possibility of which would have been utterly disbelieved seventeen years ago.

XI.

Had it been announced some months ago that there was about to appear a book proving that the conclave in which Ganganelli was elected pope, had been a sink of venality and simony, in which nearly all the courts of Europe and a considerable number of cardinals had dabbled, and that Ganganelli had been elected only on condition of abolishing the Jesuits, no one would have believed the assertion, although the author had affirmed that he had *seen* and *read* the documents proving all this turpitude. Yet we are constrained to admit no less, now that M. Crétineau Joly comes forward with his proofs to establish this strange fact.

"When I had finished," he says, "I stood aghast at my own work; for above the throng of names that jostle together for mutual dishonour, there is one which the Apostolic See appeared to cover with its inviolability. Princes of the church, for whom I have long cherished a respectful affection, entreated me not to rend the veil that concealed *such a pontificate* from the world's eyes. The General of the Company of Jesus, who had so many strong motives for being interested in the discoveries I have made, added his entreaties to those of some cardinals. In the name of his order, and for *the honour of the Holy See*, he besought me, almost with tears in his eyes, to give up the publication of this history. Even the wish and authority of the sovereign pontiff, Pius IX., were invoked in the counsels and representations of which my work was the object.

"To a Catholic, how painful it is to detect princes of the church in *flagrant acts of lying and venality;* still more painful to see a sovereign pontiff timidly resisting the iniquity he encouraged by his ambition, and annihilating himself on the throne, *when he had done so much to ascend it.* But does not such a spectacle, which no doubt will never be repeated, does it not inspire a sentiment of sorrow which history cannot help recording? Is not the crime of the supreme priest equal to the crimes of the whole people? Does it not surpass them in the eyes of the Eternal Judge?

"The world swarms with writers who have the genius of evil: to us there remains only the boldness of truth. The moment is come to speak it to all. It will be sad both for the Chair of St. Peter and for the Sacred College, and for the whole Catholic world." *

We are free to admit everything except the tears and supplications of the General of the Jesuits. It was rather he, we think, who believed that the time was come for drawing from their concealment documents long collected, and that it was he who "excited the writer to unveil the mystery of iniquity," and to make known that when the Company was abolished, "then was seen *the abomination in the temple.*" Vainly would M. Crétineau Joly put the order of Jesuits out of question in this matter; it is a stratagem which we see through. It is to no purpose he exclaims, "I must boldly declare that there is not only want of agreement, but complete disagreement between the author and the Fathers of the Company of Jesus." † This is going too far, and pointing out the battery by dint of too much pains to mask it. His efforts to maintain that the original manuscripts did not come to him from the Jesuits, are equally unfortunate. Who more than the Jesuits could possess the art of insinuating themselves everywhere, inveigling, and employing thousands of agents all over Europe to get hold of secret papers carefully put away and kept in all the chanceries, and the most mysterious diplomatic correspondences? For it is in these terms M. Crétineau himself characterizes the documents he has in his hands, and the almost insurmountable difficulties of getting possession of them. It is amazing and inexplicable that those who were the most implicated by these documents did not make haste to destroy them immediately after the conclave; for whilst they existed, personages of the highest rank, including even a pope, were exposed to the danger of being rendered infamous in history. Here are two enigmas which shock the reason, and which it would be exceedingly difficult to admit if the fact were not indisputable.

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, 1847, pp. 7-11.

† Défense de Clément XIV., p. 8.

One is tempted to believe, from the manner in which M. Crétineau Joly defends himself, that far from its being his intention to prove that he does not derive all these original manuscripts from the Jesuits, it is, on the contrary, his aim to let that fact be understood; for the argument he uses to put the Jesuits out of question, implicates them more than ever.

"At what period, or by what mysterious ramifications," he says, "could they have deceived or suborned all the ambassadors, all the conservators of the archives?

"No doubt," he says, speaking hypothetically of the Jesuits, "they have possessed these documents since an unascertained period; why did they never make use of them during their suppression?

"The Jesuits, then, have not furnished me with any of these documents, for the very simple reason that such pieces could never have been in their archives. They have done all in their power to stop the work; but they have failed, because I have thought that in conscience I ought not to keep the light under a bushel." *

So then M. Crétineau, an ordinary individual, has been able, alone and unaided, to accomplish that very difficult

---

* Défense de Clément XIV., p. 32.

thing which would have been impossible for such a company as that of the Jesuits.

Having given these proofs that he is not the "liege man of the Company," he is more happy in his replies to those who have attacked his book as a romance.

"If," says he, "the letters of Bernis (one of the cardinals in the conclave) stood alone, without any other warrant than his word, we hold that doubt would be allowable, and we should doubt; but it is not he alone who, for the amusement of his idle hours, invents all these events, histories, and simoniacal projects, of which he makes himself the echo, the accomplice, or the censor. Outside the conclave intrigue marches with head erect, backed by ministers and ambassadors whose correspondence strikingly coincides with the romance which some would fain attribute to the cardinal. But these diplomatic correspondences show as much as possible a common bond and centre; they dovetail, in the cabinets of Versailles, Vienna, Madrid, Naples, and Lisbon, with other dispatches which contain the same plans and avowals.

"THE SIMONIACAL CONSPIRACY IS MANIFEST. Bernis and Cardinal Orsini repudiate it at first, but afterwards they join in it; and if this immense process were tried before a jury of bishops, or merely of upright men, do you suppose that after examination of the documents cited in the work, *the election and the reign of Clement XIV. would not be regarded as one of the sores of the Apostolic See?*" *

Let us take note of this language: it will be of importance to remember it. A little further on he protests that, notwithstanding all he has been saying, "it never entered his thoughts to invalidate the election of Ganganelli." His defence is nothing but a series of legerdemain, of subtilties and sophisms, denying on the one hand what he affirms on the other. But indeed the cause he defends makes all these contradictions inevitable.

---

* Défense de Clément XIV., pp. 37, 38.

"In my eyes," he says, "and by the documents I have published, Pope Clement XIV. (Ganganelli) *has never been sullied with the crime of simony*, properly so called. Ambition led him astray. A victim to the position in which he placed himself, he has incurred the eulogy of the enemies of unity —a eulogy which for a priest, a bishop, *above all for a pope*, acting in the plenitude of his apostolic authority, *is the most disgraceful of condemnations.* This pope, whose name becomes popular only at moments when the enemy's batteries are playing upon the See of Rome—this Ganganelli, who is deified whenever revolutionists affect an air of compunction *in order to arrive the faster at their ends*—I have represented struggling with the calamities he accumulated round St. Peter's chair; and I have felt for him the pity due to his private virtues and his misfortunes. There is a wide difference between this sentiment and desertion of the cause of justice. The memory of Clement XIV. had always been attacked and extolled without convincing proofs. Now, public opinion may, in safety of conscience, hear and determine this great suit. When the time shall have come, I will speak out the rest.

"There were attempts at simony," he says again, "on the part of the ambassadors, ministers, and Spanish cardinals. Terror, intrigue, and motives of family interest, were assiduously employed to sway *some* cardinals in the conclave. Ganganelli was lured away by ambition beyond his duties and *his most secret wishes:* he desired the papacy, thinking perhaps that his heart was set on a work beneficial to Christendom; *he entered into a sort of an engagement.* If this does not constitute simony—and we are firmly persuaded that it does not—let us add, nevertheless, that *such a manner of acting* in a prince of the church *borders very closely on scandal and corruption.* Furthermore let us add, that the words of the cordelier to Cardinal Castelli *are an evidence of knavery* which everybody will condemn."*

The last lines of this fragment are glaringly inconsistent with the first; concession follows concession, until at last we have it admitted that Ganganelli's conduct borders very closely on scandal and corruption, and that he displays knavery. Would the reader have more? The same writer beholds in him only "a pope who made cunning his ladder." And this he calls a sort of an engagement. There is not even a trace of simony, he says. Wherefore, then, such bitter reproaches, as though he had been the worst of popes? If he was under no formal and explicit engagement, then his brief was his free act and deed; and in suppressing the Jesuits, he was really actuated by the grave and imperative motives he alleges. The abolition was, therefore, the work of five years' reflection, and of the conviction arrived at by this pope, that the order was dangerous to the church, and would finally hurry it to destruction. Ganganelli would thus be the most innocent of all concerned, and quite unconnected with all the villanous schemes and infamous manœuvres. The venal compact is, nevertheless, proved in the most irrefragable manner: it is the very basis of the book, and that book is nugatory if Clement XIV. was not a party to the compact. Now, the words of the same writer, on which he rests all the importance of his book, are clear and precise, and they do implicate Ganganelli.

---

* Défense de Clément XIV., p. 40.

"*The bargain,*" he says, "which gave him to the church, ***has hitherto been always denied*** by the Jesuits and by several annalists. We have cast an unexpected light on this point; with the documents before us, which we have exhumed, ***doubt is no longer possible.***"*

These discoveries have appeared so strange and incredible, that some have even ventured to contest their validity; others on all hands demand the complete publication of the original manuscripts.

I will now mention a curious specimen of the disputes between the cardinals in this conclave into which we have been enabled to peep. The prelate attacked was one of Voltaire's friends.

"Overwhelmed with reproaches, Bernis tried to recover his position by starting personal considerations, and he said, 'Equality ought to prevail among us; we are all here by the same right and title.' Whereupon old Alexander Albani, raising his red cardinal's hat, forcibly exclaimed, 'No, Eminence, we are not all here by the same right and title; for it was not a courtesan that placed this hat on my head.'

"The recollection of the Marquise de Pompadour, evoked in the conclave, closed the mouth of Cardinal Bernis. The allusion told." *

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, p. 269.

Such a cardinal knew too well with whom he had to do not to be able to retort with the same force. But what is really astonishing is, that although it be confessed that the conclave was a downright mart, wherein the movement of the market from hour to hour, and the price current of consciences were noted and recorded—and although, in spite of all efforts to disguise the truth, it is evident that such of the cardinals as sided with the Jesuits were also the subjects of similar temptations—notwithstanding all this, M. Crétineau Joly has yet written such words as these:

"We may assert, that *at no time* did the Sacred College consist of more pious and edifying members. The exceptions in this respect are few." †

The author is deliberately resolved on heaping infamy upon this conclave, and at the very same time proving its almost spotless innocence.

If still stronger proofs are required that Ganganelli must have consented, must have owned accomplices, and bound himself by promises, here, according to the same writer, is what happened immediately upon the pope's accession.

"The distribution of the high functions of the Roman court is made by the diplomatic body. Pagliarini, the bookseller, who, under the protection of Pombal, *inundated Europe and Rome itself* with his pamphlets *against the Holy See and against good morals*, obtained by the brief *cum sicut accepimus* the decoration of the Golden Spur.

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, p. 226.

† Ibid, 220.

Thus Pombal ennobled him whom Clement XIII. had condemned to the galleys, and he asked for a cardinal's hat for his brother. Every one strove to secure an equivalent for the part he had taken in Ganganelli's nomination; every one insisted on high office, and trafficked on his suffrage to secure a hold on the helm of the church. One would have imagined that the constitutional system had invaded the conclave, such was the throng of craving intriguers and *protégés.* It was the day of self-seeking, the day of wages." *

The elevation of popes by corrupt influences, and even by crime, is no new thing. Although in times of censorship and inquisition, history could not know or relate everything, yet it has recorded scandals, trafficking and bargains, enough to hinder our being surprised at anything. Still they would have us believe that the Holy Spirit *always* presides at the elections of the Roman pontiffs; only, those who thus speak are forced to own that, whereas it formerly spoke by the lips of the clergy and the people, some cardinals have since succeeded in monopolizing it.

In fine, never could one have believed, never could one have dared to suspect, that so many ambassadors, ministers, princes, and cardinals, could have concerted together, without the least shame, to commit the greatest of sacrileges. The conclave in which this took place would still to this hour be regarded as one of the most edifying, were it not that from it issued the pope who abolished the order of the Jesuits. What was necessary in order that a mystery, which had so long remained impenetrable, should be unsealed, was that the pride and vanity of a potent congregation should be brought in play. Nothing less was requisite than the interest of such a corporation as that of the Jesuits, in order that the most profound secrets should be plucked from the archives of all the courts of Europe, no one knows how. I repeat, that if all had been said without that mass of proofs which are ready to be produced, the objections would have appeared insurmountable.

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, p. 330.

One word more, while we are on the subject, as to the strange work of an advocate of the Company of Jesus.

"Full of reverence for the pontifical authority," says M. Cretineau Joly, "we do not pronounce judgment on an act that emanated from the apostolic chair." *

What, you do not pronounce judgment? Your humility and reverence are but contempt. You have declared null and void the suppressing brief, and you abstain from judging? Can any condemnation be stronger? But let that pass.

If there be any fact beyond question, it is that Ganganelli's death was most horrible, that the poison infiltrated into his very bones had dissolved every part of his body, so that all who saw him were terror-stricken. It is known, through the testimony of others beside Cardinal Bernis, "that from the day of his elevation he was afraid of dying by poison." Now the apologist of the Jesuits, taking upon himself to be the biographer of Clement XIV., makes haste to pass over this perilous subject. He makes scarcely any account of the most ascertained facts, but takes pleasure in exhibiting the pontiff as a prey to the

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, p. 353.

most poignant agonies of remorse, shrieking out the words, "O God, I am damned! Hell will be my portion. There is no remedy left!" He adds, that the pope soon after his elevation became insane. "His insanity began," says he, "on the day he ratified the suppression of the Jesuits!"* So the pope who gave audience to a great number of persons, whose language excited admiration, and who for five years studied the question of the Jesuits, was only a madman! "In the history of the sovereign pontiffs," concludes the avenger of the Jesuits, "he is the first and only one who suffered this degradation of humanity." Nothing less would have been an adequate punishment for the greatest of crimes.

But now it is the *dénouement*, which, above all things, is worth knowing. It was requisite to renovate the good name of Ganganelli, and it belonged to the Jesuits to do this *for their own greater glory*. The expedient employed for this purpose is not new; recourse is had to miracle, and a legend is invented.

Saint Alfonso Signori has been canonised in these latter days. I have been able closely to observe how this sort of affairs is managed. The theologian Guala, of whom I have already spoken, was among the most active on the occasion, and spared no intrigues or efforts towards bringing about the canonisation. Could this great supporter of the Jesuits abstain from taking part with many others in rearing an altar to one of the greatest friends of the Company? The new saint was bishop in one of the cities of Sicily when Ganganelli died. His name was used, and the story was put forth that he remained for several hours entranced and seemingly dead; and that when he came to himself he narrated to some confidential friends that he had just been witness to the pope's last moments; that God had heard his prayers, and caused the pontiff's madness to cease, in order that he might repent; that he had spent his last moments in bewailing his crime, and asking pardon of the Almighty for his suppression of the sons of Loyola, and that he died reconciled to God, and saved.* How indeed could we suppose that God had not received him into grace, since he died reconciled to the Jesuits?

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites, p. 331.

XII.

A third of a century before the French Revolution, a vast change was taking place, as in our day, in the minds of men. Everything was preparing for a decisive crisis. Then, as now, the Jesuits, in their system of teaching, represented the most obstinate immobility, and the most retrograde doctrines. Men craved for more air, light, and life; and the Jesuits and their adherents everywhere strove to stifle these aspirations.

"They held in their hands," the panegyrist himself avows it, "the future generations, and *they acted as a clog on the movement begun.* This order has appeared as the most formidable rampart of Catholic principles. It was against it that the storm immediately directed itself. To reach the heart of Catholic unity it was necessary to pass over the bodies of the grenadiers of the church."*

---

* M. Crétineau Joly, towards the close of his book.

Great, however, is the difference between those times and ours. Then the upper classes, intoxicated with philosophy, and knowing by experience what were the designs of the Jesuits, spared no efforts for the abolition of the order. But a pope alone could accomplish their wishes. Now the Company was so identified with Rome, and so indispensable to it, that nothing short of the combined strength of the greatest powers could sever the connection. Even this was not enough; they had already demanded this abolition without success. Two preceding popes had begun by refusing, and when at last they had declared their design to suppress the Jesuits, death had soon cut short their projects. Success was, therefore, believed to be impossible, except by means of a pope created by the princes themselves, and thereby seriously compromised. Now to obtain such a pope it was necessary to manœuvre and use intrigues as potent as those employed by the Jesuits. The cells of the Vatican were conquered by a hostile spirit—by the very spirit of the encyclopedists which had become the possessor of thrones. It was a duel to the death, but the younger combatant was at last the victor. There issued from the conclave a chief of the church better adapted to the spirit of the age, and acquainted with its requirements. And yet he took good care not to abolish the Company forthwith; he waited, and postponed the matter even for several years. He wished, before he struck the blow, to collect proofs of extreme weight, and formidable by their numbers; but it turned out, as he had predicted, that in signing the brief which suppressed the Jesuits, he signed his own death-warrant.

---

* Clément XIV. et les Jésuites.

As for all those monarchs, ministers, and diplomatists, who knew no rest until the abolition took place, fortunately they did not perceive what would be its remote consequences. They rejoiced to see that Rome was about to lose her most valiant and able soldiers. Remembering how their ancestors had humbled themselves in the dust before her, and let themselves be beaten with rods, they believed that they were at last sole masters, that the tables would be turned, that the clergy would become their tools, and receive their orders. On either side there was no question of the people; it was regarded as nothing. But unconsciously they worked for its advantage, and prepared the way for its advancement, whether by the new philosophic ideas with which they inundated Europe, or by overthrowing the strongest bulwark that restrained it. They could not fail themselves to be swept away by the bursting flood. Such blindness was providential.

"Rome discharged her best soldiery," observes M. Crétineau, "on the very eve of the day on which the Holy See was about to be attacked on all points simultaneously. The Jesuits, while *they obeyed* the pontifical brief, thought it was their duty not to desert the post entrusted to their guard."*

Here was a model of perfect submission! The Jesuits alone know how to obey thus. As an institute they were absolutely bound to subsist no longer. But no, it is their privilege never to be liable by any possibility to be accused of revolt. The less they obey the greater is their submission. M. Crétineau's book is a collection of contradictions, posted by way of double entry, and very regularly balanced.

---

* Histoire réligieuse, politique, et littéraire de la Compagnie de Jésus, vi. 93.

XIII.

An immense revolution had convulsed the world; Napoleon had in vain endeavoured to turn it to his own profit; but the same ideas which had raised him so high had ceased to support him when they had been betrayed and put in peril, and so he was plunged living into the abyss. This terrible lesson, like many others, taught nothing to those who came from exile to resume the sceptre. The volcano of the new ideas did but smoulder; the Jesuits persuaded the powers that they had the means and the strength to extinguish it. All that was requisite was that they should have the young generation in their hands. They imagined that, as in past times, they should succeed in making God's name a means of propping up the most intolerable abuses and the most iniquitous privileges. But this insensate project was met by a proportionate reaction; the ideas of progression and freedom would not submit to be stifled, and they resumed the conflict—a conflict which M. Crétineau calls an impious rebellion, a work of perfidy and imposture.

"Ever since 1823," he says, "it is not individual malice that seeks to beguile a class of individuals; there is a permanent conspiracy against the truth, and, above all, against the good sense of the multitude. All means are employed to pervert it."[*]

Although the thing is known, it is not amiss to recollect what he means by the truth, and by conspiring against it. It is important to institute a comparison between the epoch of which we are speaking and our own; between the undisguised language then held by the upholders of the old system of society, and that which their successors now hold. At the very time when the Jesuits were occupied with the *Secret Plan*, M. de Rémusat thus expressed himself:—

"*The new year, or* 1824. *Questions of a ponderer.* "A grand project occupies the minds of the mighty of the Old World. They would fain bring back the New World to its infant state, and strangle it in its cradle in the swaddling-clothes in which it has been so long kept. The age has been accused, condemned, and anathematised by them. Crowned Europe has conceived the design of proving to the human race that it is wrong to be what it is; to time that it ought not to destroy; to the present that it ought to be the past. And one would almost say that this strange enterprise is beginning to succeed; one would say so, were one to judge from the stifled wail of the oppressed. But raise your eyes towards the thrones, and there you see faces pale beneath the diadems, and anxious eyes incessantly turned to the sceptre, as if to be assured that it has not slipped from the grasp. The anxiety of the victors is the consolation of the vanquished."[*]

---

[*] Histoire rêligieuse, politique, et littéraire de la Compagnie de Jésus, vi. p. 178.

[†] Passé et Présent, mélanges par Charles de Rémusat, vol. i. p. 206.

The same writer thus describes the system with which it was sought to innoculate France in those days:—

"Passive obedience, unlimited submission, in one word, despotism, were pleaded with the best faith in the world. Fear and flattery did not neglect so fair an opportunity to speak like good faith. Never was it more easy to bend without degradation, to be frail without shame; the slave of arbitrary power became the friend of order; the absence of every original, or merely independent idea, was preached up under the name of good sense; we were taught to respect even error, and to regard enlightenment as an abuse of thought. Thus served at once by faith and hypocrisy, leading in its train all the most heterogeneous prejudices, subduing the minds of men by admiration, their hearts by lassitude, their characters by fear, the genius of absolute power set about re-erecting its throne by heaping up the ruins of the old régime on the foundations laid by the Revolution."*

What was the lever put in operation? It was religion, as though enough had not already been done to render it odious by all the oppressions attempted in its sacred name. A committee was organised. The Jesuits, who had no doubt suggested it, were its managing advisers. The Holy Alliance supported it. Its affiliations ramified through all countries of Europe. M. Capefigue, as quoted by M. Crétineau himself, speaks of it in the following terms:—

"The first organisation of the party was connected with the religious congregations. Under the presidency of Viscount Mathieu de Montmorency and the Duke de la

---

* Passé et Présent, mélanges par Charles de Rémusat, vol. i. p. 71.

Rochefoucault Doudeauville there was formed in Paris a central congregation, the statutes of which were simple at first, and had for their object the propagation of religious and monarchial ideas. The congregation received every Catholic who was presented by two of its members; it was to extend to the schools and educational institutions, and, above all things, it was to lay hold on youth. When a young man wished to enter the association, his proposers were asked what influence he would exercise. If he was professor or member of a college, it was made a condition that he should propagate the good principles among the pupils. If he had fortune or high station, he engaged in like manner to employ them for the defence of religion and monarchy. Meetings were held twice a-week for prayer, innocent games, particularly billiards, and to report progress. Every Sunday the Abbé Freyssinous preached before a numerous audience, and waged war upon philosophy and the age in his elegantly composed sermons. It was against Gibbon and Voltaire that M. Freyssinous strove with much more pomp than point; and he never failed to exhibit in favourable contrast the then present times, and to commend the beneficent influence of the clergy and of religion, and the necessity of strengthening the altar and the throne. These sermons were well attended. The politicians of the royalist party, some of them epicureans and unbelievers, were assiduous hearers of the abbé. It was a way of putting one's self in a good light. The congregation had branches in the provinces. In those days there was a rage for obtaining admission into the congregation, and the reason of this was simple:—*there was no having* *powerful patronage or lucrative places* unless one was a member."[*]

"Such," says the advocate of Jesuitism, disdainfully resuming the discourse after this quotation, "such is the origin of the occult power so gratuitously attributed to the congregation. That power has existed, it has been exercised, *but absolutely apart from, and independently of the congregation.* The royalist coteries concealed their political manœuvres under its name; the liberal party seized upon that name to frighten France with the noise it wanted to make. The enemies of the church and the monarchy admirably calculated their blows; they depopularised the royalists, and hung a cloak of hypocrisy on the shoulders of Christians. Yet all this was but a part of what was to be done. They annihilated the present generation, but the grand thing was to kill the future."[†] As for the Jesuits, it is a great mistake to suppose that at that period they concerned themselves about anything else than the interests of religion. They reorganised their houses, and founded new ones with purely pious views, that was all.

The Bourbons, however, who had put themselves in the hands of the Jesuits, paid dearly for their excessive complaisance. The sun of July forced their evil counsellors to keep themselves concealed for a while; but by degrees, as the bright luminary grew dim, they came forth again, and renewed the struggle, but in a reversed manner. For now the clergy, finding themselves compelled to fight against authority, yet unwilling frankly to embrace liberty, adopted that Machiavellic attitude which it is partly the object of the second portion of this work to make known. Thus we can account for the embarrassments and the contradictions of their apologists.

---

[*] Histoire de la Restoration, par un Homme d'Etat, iv. p. 100.

[†] Histoire réligieuse, politique, et littéraire de la Compagnie de Jésus, vi. p. 187, 197.

Many persons have inveighed against Eugène Sue for having dared to personify the Jesuitic genius in Rodin. They could not bring themselves to believe that a considerable number of men, and those, too, men invested with a religious character, could have concerted together to wear all sorts of masks and play all sorts of parts, in order to secure the services of all sorts of individuals for a work which every one would abhor if he knew its aim and scope. This system of graduated fraud, which it has been thought unjust to attribute to the majority of the Jesuits, have I not proved that it is fair to impute it to numerous writers, to preachers, and to a large portion of the upper clergy? Can there be a doubt that there exists among them a close compact, and a well understood *mot d'ordre*, to mystify not only Europe but the whole world?

XIV.

We have sought to open the eyes of persons who may in good faith be or become accomplices, beguiled by artifices which often impose on the most adroit. We believe we have cast a flood of light into the theocratic sanctuary, and convinced the most obstinate that the dogma of suffocation and oppression, and the most despotic genius, evermore receive there divine honours, and that at this day the spirit of fraud, deprived of its old weapons, desperately defends its threatened empire by base sophisms and stratagems. Is it not time to purge the church from such foul impurities? But if this radical and divine reform proceeds not from Pius IX., if he lends an ear to those whose interest it is to turn him aside from the sublime task to which Providence invites him, and urge him upon the same erroneous courses as his predecessors, still the first steps he has taken will have immense results in spite of him and against him.

The Jesuits, as we have seen, have commissioned one of their liegemen to write the life of Ganganelli, in order to dismay and stop Pius IX. The dedication of the work is implied in this epigraph, *A bon entendeur demimot*, "A hint for one who can take it."

After all, if, as some begin to fear, the reforms of Pius IX. are to be nothing but administrative ameliorations, and if Rome refuse to institute a religious renovation which is imperatively demanded by our epoch, we possess the means of forcing the Vatican to break silence, and acknowledge, as evangelical, doctrines adequate to the reach and dignity of modern thought. The documents sent forth by the Roman presses, to which we here allude, have been stamped by Catholic authority with all possible marks of approbation.

The following is an epitome of the principles thus solemnly recognised as having been primitively admitted by the church:—The people is sovereign; it is the sole source of all authority; every government which does not submit its deliberations and its acts to the controul of the people is anti-christian. It follows thence that theocracy is convicted of rebellion. In fact, it is depicted in colours as severe as those which its most implacable enemies have employed to hold it up to execration. It would be impossible to prefer against it a more terrible bill of indictment, backed by a more overwhelming mass of decisive proofs. Its own organs confidentially predict to it that the impatient peoples will be driven to shake off an intolerable tyranny, if they despair of seeing it reformed; and they remind it of the mission it ought to have accomplished, and which consisted in reconciling and uniting men by love and justice, preventing their sufferings by an equal partition of burthens, bestowing its just remuneration on labour, and guaranteeing a real independence to each individual. Instead of this, the most formal avowal is made that this hierarchy, devoured with pride, drunk with pomp, enslaved to its own exclusive interests, has given itself out *for infallible, not being so;* that it has renounced the spirit of Christ, and would neither itself penetrate it, nor suffer others to do so. Therefore it is, that by the same hands is delivered to us the key of initiation into every evangelical work; the true sense of dogmas is unveiled; we now know what we are to think of miracles; reason and faith are astonished that a misunderstanding should so long have sundered them. It is said again and again in the documents we are speaking of that the reign of the dead letter must be abolished, for, as St. Paul says, "*the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life;*" and the same apostle tells us that the worship which is not rational is not christian.

We venture to affirm, that the instructions, of which I merely state the heads, are more than sufficient to justify and call forth the largest and most radical reforms in the religious and the political world, and in the whole organisation of society. They emancipate the spirit of the Gospel from the prison of a fosilised religion.

Did I not possess these weapons of proof, I should perhaps have been forced to abstain from publishing the *Secret Plan.* Those who may remain incredulous as regards it, will be compelled, by irrefutable proofs, to admit a far more extraordinary fact, authenticated by documents that will silence all the cavillings of self-interest.

The fact, which I will make known in a special publication, concerns the seventeenth century and a part of the eighteenth. I will demonstrate that Voltairianism prevailed in Italy during a whole century before Voltaire; that those who attacked mysteries and dogmas with language and sarcasms like his, were not libertines repudiated and condemned by the religious authority, or a handful of *savans* whose incredulity was confined to the circle of the cultivated class; but that the attack on the foundations of religion and morality was made in the very churches, from the pulpit, and by numerous preachers; that the numbers who flocked to hear them were immense, and that they enjoyed the countenance of the bishops and prelates. This horrible disorder was practised in the most celebrated churches of Rome; it resisted the few feeble efforts made to put it down, and was still in existence when Voltaire appeared. The sacred buildings rang with loud shouts of laughter in approval of the most shameless commentaries. The acts of the patriarchs were held up to ridicule; the Song of Songs afforded an ample theme for obscene jesting; the visions of the prophets were turned into derision, and themselves treated as addle-headed and delirious. The

Apostles were not spared, and it was taught that everything concerning them was mere fable. Finally, Christ himself was outraged worse than he had ever been by his most rancorous enemies, and was accused of criminal intercourse with the Magdalen, the woman taken in adultery, and the woman of Samaria. Thus was *absolute irreligion* preached, and for so long a time did this poison flow from the pulpits. The Bible was scoffed at, and Christianity likened to a mythology.

My greatest strength has been derived from the documents I have briefly alluded to; and but for them I should have succumbed beneath the force of Dante's apothegm, which many a time recurs to my mind:—"A man should always beware of uttering a truth which has all the aspect of a lie." But as I could count on such a revelation, a thousand times stranger than the one I myself have just made, I hesitated no longer, being convinced that in our days, more than ever, these words of Jesus must be fulfilled, "There is nothing hidden that shall not be brought to light."

THE END.

Vizetelly Brothers & Co. Printers and Engravers, 135 Fleet Street.

WORKS JUST PUBLISHED.

◆

HAPPY IGNORANCE; OR, CHURCH AND STATE.

A RELIGIOUS ADVENTURE.

With Notes by the Editors. Small 8vo., price 5s., cloth.

"This little book might have been written by the wise and good Dr. Arnold. It has many of the peculiarities of his opinions, and is full of his large-hearted tolerance and Christian charity. That the author is a clergyman of the Church of England, we can hardly doubt."—*Examiner.*

HOURS OF MEDITATION AND DEVOTIONAL REFLECTION

UPON VARIOUS SUBJECTS CONNECTED WITH THE RELIGIOUS, MORAL, AND SOCIAL DUTIES OF LIFE.

Translated from the German of Heinrich Zschokke.

Second Edition, small 8vo., price 5s., cloth.

Also,

THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF HEINRICH ZSCHOKKE.

8vo., price 6s.

"A beautiful picture of a good man's life, of a good man's struggles, of a benefactor of the human race."—*John Bull.*

MARK WILTON, THE MERCHANT'S CLERK.

A TALE.

BY THE REV. CHARLES B. TAYLER,

Author of "Records of a Good Man's Life," &c., &c.

With Numerous Illustrations on Wood. Small 8vo., cloth, price 9s.

LETTERS ON THE CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE OF IRELAND.

BY T. CAMPBELL FORSTER, Esq.,

Of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at Law, "The *Times* Commissioner."

Second Edition, in one thick volume, 8vo., with a Map, price 12s., cloth.

TALES OF WOMAN'S TRIALS.

BY Mrs. S. C. HALL.

With Seventy Illustrations on Wood. In a handsome volume, large 8vo., price £1 1s.

"Mrs. Hall's talents appear to great advantage in these tales. The book is magnificently printed and bound, and crowded with fine, thoughtful woodcuts. It is altogether presented with such an eye to costliness, that it is well entitled to take rank among the richest gift books of the season."—*Atlas.*

◆

LONDON: CHAPMAN AND HALL, 186 STRAND.

WORKS OF THOMAS CARLYLE.

THE FRENCH REVOLUTION: A HISTORY.

Vol. I. The Bastile; Vol. II. The Constitution; Vol. III. The Guillotine.

New Edition, Three vols., post 8vo., cloth, £1 11s. 6d.

CRITICAL AND MISCELLANEOUS ESSAYS.

New Edition, Four vols., post 8vo., cloth, price £2 2s.

OLIVER CROMWELL'S LETTERS AND SPEECHES.

WITH ELUCIDATIONS AND CONNECTING NARRATIVE.

With a Portrait of Cromwell, from an Original Miniature by Cooper.

Second Edition, with Numerous Additional Letters. Three vols., 8vo., cloth, price £1 16s.

THE ADDITIONAL LETTERS

SEPARATELY, TO COMPLETE THE FIRST EDITION.

8vo., cloth, price 5s.

THE LIFE OF SCHILLER.

A New Edition, with a portrait, small 8vo., cloth, price 8s. 6d.

PAST AND PRESENT.

Second Edition, post 8vo., cloth, price 10s. 6d.

LECTURES ON HEROES AND HERO-WORSHIP.

Third Edition, small 8vo., cloth, price 9s.

CHARTISM.

Second Edition, crown 8vo., cloth, price 5s.

TRANSLATION OF GOETHE'S WILHELM MEISTER;

CONTAINING MEISTER'S APPRENTICESHIP AND MEISTER'S TRAVELS.

Second Edition, Revised, Three vols., small 8vo., cloth, price 18s.

LONDON: CHAPMAN AND HALL, 186 STRAND.

BOUND BY
BONE & SON,
76, FLEET STREET,
LONDON.

[back]

THE ILLUMINATI FORMULA USED TO CREATE AN UNDETECTABLE MIND CONTROL SLAVE

a book by Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler

[Book in chapters]

INTRODUCTION AND WARNING
Dedication
  WARNING
Introduction by Fritz
  Paranoid Schizophrenics
  False Memory Syndrome campaign
Glossary of How Basic Terms are Used In This Book
  Beta
  Councils (Illuminati)
  Delta
  Deliverance ministry
  Illuminati
  Monarch Programming
  System
  New World Order
  Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA)
  Switching
CHAPTER 1: Science No. 1. The Selection and Preparation of The Victim
A. Genetics & dissociative abilities
B. Availability
C. Physical & Mental requirements
  Mind-controlled slaves are created for different purposes, hierarchy or non-hierarchy purposes
  Sharon Tate In review John Gittinger PAS (Personality Assessment System
D. List of organizations carrying out programming
E. 4 foundational steps for programming
  F. Step 1. Spiritual requirements Moon Child ceremonies Aleister Crowley
    Traumatization in vitro
  G. Step 2. Trauma by premature birth
  H. Step 3. Love bombing/love bonding
  I. Step 4. Severing the "core" of the mind
  The Initial Splits
J. Further considerations: The Illuminati have their own criteria as to who they select.
CHAPTER 2: Science # 2 The Traumatization and Torture of The Victim
A. A site for torture of children, NOTS China Lake , CA .
  How Children Are Transported To A Major Programming Site
  More About The Secret China Lake Base
  Charles Manson Joseph Mengele
B. What trauma does, the creation of PTSD & DID (MPD)
  PTSD (post-traumatic stress disorder) "Hidden Observer" "the core"
C. How the torture is carried out, types of trauma Baron Guy de Rothschild
  ritual aspect of trauma
D. What Occurs When The Mind Splits: How MPD works

- E. The Core
- F. How Programming is Anchored
  - How The Olfactory Nerves Are Traumatized
  - When Moonchild Traumas Miscarry
  - Ritual Torture Device
- Review
- **CHAPTER 3: Science No. 3 The Use of Drugs**
- A. A list of drugs used
  - Herbs
- B. brief history of use
- C. Applications for drugs to control a slave
  - Some of the cautions that the programmers are alert to include
- Summary
- **CHAPTER 4. Science No 4 - Hypnosis Understanding the Basics About Hypnosis**
- A. Dissociation, trance, & its historical use
  - The History of Hypnosis for Programming Hypnotic cues
- B. How to program with hypnosis George Estabrooks Royal Institute of International Affairs Rhodes Scholarship
- C. How to boost creativity of victim with hypnosis
  - The Vital Role of Movies for Hypnotizing Small Children
  - Spinning Tops
  - The Hypnotic Voice of the Programmer
- D. Keeping the mind dissociative
- E. Keeping the mind in a programming (Alpha) state
- F. Hypnotic triggers & cues
  - Monarch Mind Control Codes Contents (A-T)
- G. Hypnosis in programs & other uses
  - Alice In Wonderland Programming as it Pertains to an Alter Going Down in Trance for Internal Hypnotically Building in Structures
- **CHAPTER 5 Science No. 5: The Skill of Lying, The Art of Deceit**
- **A.** Overview
- **B.** The use of fiction
  - Judy Garland Charlie Manson Theosophical Society Adolf Hitler Mahatma Gandhi H.P. Blavatsky Alice Bailey Henry Steel Olcott Elvis Presley Manly P. Hall Frank Baum
  - PARALLELS BETWEEN:
    - A. THE WIZARD OF OZ BOOK & OCCULTISM
    - B. THE WIZARD OF OZ MOVIE & ILLUMINATI RITUALS Dorris Duke
    - C. THE WIZARD OF OZ SERIES OF BOOKS AND MONARCH PROGRAMMING Yellow Brick Road
    - Book 3. Ozma of Oz
    - Alice In Wonderland Alice Through the Looking Glass
    - The Tall Book of Make-Believe
    - Alien Programming Scripts
    - Island of the Blue Dolphins
    - The Lord of the Rings
    - The Most Important Programming Script--The Lesser Key
- **C.** The use of lies externally, incl. covers and fronts
  - External Deceptions
  - Covers For Individual Slaves Agent Provocateurs
  - The Use of Religious Fronts Billy Graham
  - **THE DECEPTION OF BILLY GRAHAM, A MIND-CONTROL FRONT**
    - The List Of Known And Credible Witnesses
    - Clarifying What Is Looked For In Proof
    - The Motivation of the Co-Authors
    - Clarifying What is Acceptable Testimony
    - The Policies of Deception By The Billy Graham Crusade Staff

    Billy Graham's Active Role In Satanic Ritual Abuse Hearst Jeanne Dixon Kissinger Nugen Hand Bank
    How Billy Graham Plays a Key Role in Reprogramming Monarch Slaves Near Death Trauma Centers
    References
    The Actual Heritage and Name of Billy Graham
    How Billy Graham is a 33° Mason
    FLEECING THE SHEEP
    Inadequate Reactions
  Summary
The Top Secret Amish Front (And Hutterites)
  How It Is Done
Hiding A Major Programming Center
External & Internal Deceptions Deflection, Blinds, Slides, Hegelian, Deniability.
Esoteric language
D. Internal Deceptions, incl. the art of hiding things in a system Gatekeeper alters
The Use of Esoteric Language
Saturn
SECRET HIGH LEVEL TEACHINGS
THE EXTERNALIZATION OF THE HIERARCHY
In Summary
CHAPTER 6 Science No. 6 The Use of Electronics and Electricity
Microwaves for Programming
Prozac and Slaves and Microwave Towers
The Use of Waves and Electricity to Implant Thoughts
Tracking/ID Implants
  Monitoring Implants
  Communication Implants
  The ALEX system intersects with the Monarch Mind Control Programming.
Accessories
In Summary
CHAPTER 7 The Science of Structuring
A. Structuring of MPD worlds
B. The creation of roles
  How the Self of a Man Alter Consists of Shattered Shadow Alters, A Script, Mirrors and Assigned Demons
  The Presideo S-P-I-N = Segmented Polycentric Integrated Networks
  Standard Roles Within An Illuminati Monarch Slave
    Angry Alters Animal Alters Christian Front Alters Clones
    Deltas How The Deltas Are Created How The Deltas Are Activated
    Foreign Language Alters Gatekeeper Alters Hierarchy And Deeper Cult Alters
    Egyptian Armies Flooding Alters Gems Looking Glass People Mirror Images
    Programmer Alters Reporting Alters Scrambling Alters Sexual Alters
    Names
    Boxes And Self-Abuse
C. Building in layered defenses
    Systems
  Imagery
  Defenses In Death
Overview Of The Princess Programming
D. Backup Programming
"Labyrinth", A View of a Monarch's Internal World
The Structuring Done in Monarch Star Trek and Star Wars Programming
CHAPTER 8 The Science of Body Manipulation and Programming
A. Scarring the brain stem
B. Split brain work
C. Medical technologies
D. Histamines I.G. Farben, DuPont, and Dow Chemical
E. The use of body programs

Pathways Virtual Reality
Programming Damage to the Body
Physical Aspects of the Human Brain
Genetic Engineering to Create Programmed Assassins Amphibious Man
CHAPTER 9 The Science of Mind Manipulation by Psychological Programming
A. Observing a satanic family conditioning their children
Other Items That Parents Do To Their Monarch Children
An Overview
Some of the elements which the Monarch program shares with other typical types of cult mind control are:
Handwriting
B. Behavior modification, obedience training
C. Isolation
D. Repetition
E. Psychological motivators, md. pride/needs/wants
F. Neuro-linguistic programming
Anchors
Future Pacing
Pacing For Hypnosis Milton Erickson
Reframing With Metaphors
The Right Brain And The Unconscious
Power Words, Reversals And Puns
The Mind's Natural Alarm Clock
G. The inversion of pain & pleasure
CHAPTER 10: The 10th Science - Using Spiritual Things To Control A Person
A. Using spiritual principles against a person
B. How the Monarch program miniaturizes what is done on a larger scale
C. Dehumanization
Porcelain Face Programming
Hearts Of Stone
Hypnotic Surgery
D. Fear
E. The use of guilt, shame & ridicule & anger
Anger
F. Teaching that the master is God
G. Portals, focal points golem baptism of the child victim to Satan
H. Vows & Oaths
I. The use of demon possession, layering etc. sabbat ceremony
HOW THE PROGRAMMERS UNDERSTAND DEMONOLOGY Voodoo
India
How The Anti-Christ Spirit Contributes To Controlling The Slave
J. The use of angel alters
K. The use of Scriptures In Programming
L. Theta programming
Some of the groups who did research for the Monarch's Theta Programming
How Out-Of-Body Experiences (Astral Projection) Are Done
Telepathy
Killing From A Distance
In Quick Review
The Philosopher's Stone
Further Spiritual Bondage Snares
CHAPTER 11 Science No. 11--Internal Controls
A. Teaching Occult Philosophies
Teaching The Ideologies Of War
Various Delta Forces
Delta Assassination Teams
Delta Force First Earth Battalion Green Berets Bo Gritz

B. Internal Computers--Perfect Delegation; Internal Computers Which Auto-Control A Slave
  Internal Computers Which Auto-Control A Slave
  Power Sources
  Color Codes And Ribbons
  How Monarch Slaves Are Designed To Interface With The Unix System Of The Beast Computers
  Components Of The Controls Some of the T.V. shows & movies, which served as Monarch programming scripts
  Jokers
C. Internal Hierarchies
CHAPTER 12 The Science Of External Controls Monitoring (Asset Control)
A. Monitoring (Asset control)
  9 subconscious desires ("weaknesses") Marilyn Monroe Draconian enforcers
  Planning A Typical Intelligence Operation, Or The Standard Textbook Techniques Of A Modern Intelligence Agency
B. The art of blackmail
C. Bribes
D. The Control of the Milieu Mazda eagle Groton The Beta Theta Pi Quest Program Madonna gypsies USO Camp Shows, Inc. International Brotherhood of Magicians Intrepid Park Elvis Presley
  Star Trek, The Next Generation
  Videodrome
  Trancer II
  Krull
  The Little Princess
  Miss Universe Contest
  The Manchurian Candidate Frank Sinatra Dean Martin William Joseph Bryan, Jr
  The Simpson Cartoons
E. Bonding & twinning
F. Peer pressure
Appendix One The Programmers
  Some of THE Illuminati's Companies
A. Introductory remarks Vril Society
B. Understanding the programmers Dr. Mengele Dr. Cameron Jerry Lee Lewis and Michael Aquino
C. Monarch Mind Control Programmers Country Music Industry The Temple of Set.
D. Dr. Green
E. Dr. White
F. The AntiChrist as a Master Programmer
  Footnotes
Appendix Two: The Programming Sites

INTRODUCTION AND WARNING

Dedication This book is dedicated to the two million Americans and counting who have been programmed with Monarch-type trauma-based mind control. This book is written to destroy trauma-based mind control before it destroys the human race. It's time for this horrendous secret to end.

It is also written as part of God's end time work to propel people of faith to the high calling that is prophesied of the Body, but cannot be attained without men of faith understanding these things. Humanity's great prophet said he came to heal those whose hearts had been broken--literally split and crushed, and to free those who are captive. That work needs to go forward. Blood, sweat and tears are associated with this book.

The blood of the innocent victims of this mind-control cries out in a single unison, along with the pungent sweat of those who have tried to minister help to the shattered humanity left by the sadistic programmers, and the pools of tears shed as this book was written, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, do you not judge and avenge our blood on earth?" Hope .... Thou shalt know that I am Lord: For they shall not be ashamed that wait on Me. Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? But thus saith Yahweh, even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. Isaiah 49:23b-25

WARNING, READ THIS FIRST BEFORE READING THE BOOK. IF THERE IS ANY CHANCE you the reader have had mind-control done to you, you must consider the following book to be DANGEROUS.

If you are consulting a therapist for DID (also known as MPD), it is recommended that you consult your therapist before reading this book. The complications that could result for those under mind control learning the truth--could be fatal. The co-authors take no responsibility for those who read or misuse this information. The reader's mind is like a garden. It may not be time to plant the truth in your mind. Perhaps you need some weeding or ground preparation, before the garden of your mind is ready. Perhaps the weather is too stormy to plant the truth. Pray to the Lord of the Harvest.

The blessings that flow from planting the information of this book in your mind, will require the presence of living waters of love. If you do not have love in your heart, this book is not for you. The information contained in this book is the biggest news-story of the 20th century, and still the biggest secret. It will challenge you, shock you, horrify you and hopefully motivate you to redouble your efforts to humble yourself and seek strength from God Almighty.

The programming procedures which are described in this book are based on research and consultation with deprogrammers, ex-programmers, therapists, counselors and pertinent literature. To the best of our knowledge the statements made in this book are factual, although they may not reflect the latest or currently accepted methodology among each and every faction of the New World Order which carries out Monarch-type programming.

This book tends to devote more emphasis to Illuminati programming, which is the highest level of programming. For individual application in understanding a survivor of Monarch programming, therapists are admonished to use this material with consideration for the Monarch victim's personal case and situation.

The authors disclaim any responsibility for therapeutic work based upon this material. Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler have co-authored They Know Not What They Do, An Illustrated Guidebook To Monarch Mind Control. Both Fritz and Cisco bring years of experience in dealing with Monarch programming to bear on the writing of this book. Fritz has researched the Illuminati, while he has worked with victims of its programming. He has authored The Top 13 Illuminati Families, and several other books.

Introduction by Fritz

There are many dangers to the human race, some real and some imagined. I believe that the trauma-based mind control which this book exposes is the greatest danger to the human race. It gives evil men the power to carry out any evil deed totally undetected. By the time the astute reader finishes this book, they will be as familiar with how to carry out trauma-based mind-control as some of the programmers. Ancient and more recent secrets will no longer be secrets.

Over the years, I have spent thousands of hours studying the Illuminati, the Intelligence agencies of the world, and the occult world in general. The centerpiece of these organizations is the trauma-based mind control that they carry out. Without the ability to carry out this sophisticated type of mind-control using MPD, drugs, hypnosis and electronics and other control methodologies, these organizations would fail to keep their dark evil deeds secret.

When one of the mind-control programmers of the Church of Scientology , who has left Scientology, was asked about MPD, he said, "It's the name of the game of mind control." Research into this subject will never be complete. This book has tried to give a comprehensive view of how the programming is done. The basic techniques were developed in German, Scottish, Italian, and English Illuminati families and have been done for centuries. Some report that some of the techniques go back to ancient Egypt and ancient Babylon to the ancient mystery religions.

The Nazis are known to have studied ancient Egyptian texts in their mind control research. The records and secrets of the generational Illuminati bloodlines are very-well guarded secrets. Even when I've learned about the location of secret depositories of some of the Illuminati's secrets in Europe , America , and Asia , their records and secrets are too well-guarded to be examined.

The intelligence agencies, such as MI-6 began investigating these mind-control techniques early this century, but their records have been routinely destroyed and tampered with. There are some survivors and professionals who know that the British used programmed trauma-based MPD (DID) agents in W.W. I. In Jan., 1987, Richard Kluft submitted an article to the American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis about 8 MPD patients who were between 60 and 72 years of age. Traugott Konstantin Oesterreich (1880-1949), who was professor of philosophy at Tubingen University , Germany studied MPD and demonic possession and wrote a classic study of it in 1921 entitled Possession Demonical & Other, which was translated into english in 1930. His classic work on this subject provides documented cases which reveal that the basic trauma-based mind-control was going on in Germany , France & Belgium long before the 20th century.

Although he is unable to put together all the pieces and the clues for what they are, the reader of this book might enjoy reading the 1930 English translation of his classic work after they finish this book. Oesterreich's research in early 1900s was the type of research that the Nazi mind-control programmers were very aware of.

In 1921, the Germans such as Oesterreich would describe personality switches, by the term "somnambuliform [hypnotic states] possession" or "demonical somnambulism" or what might be called "Besessenheit von Hypnotismus und bösen Geistern." The ability to study both the spiritual & psychological aspects of mind-control phenomena, is often lacking today. There are exceptions such as Dr. Loreda Fox's book The Spiritual Dimensions of MPD.

In the 1920s, the Germans also were aware that the human mind has a variety of ego-psycho-psysiological states rather than one unified mind, which they termed "Sub jecklose Psychologie" or the psychology of having correlated psychological states rather than the concept of a single ego. The Germans and Italians under the Nazi and Fascist governments began to do serious scientific research into trauma-based mind control. Under the auspices of the Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute in Berlin , Joseph Mengele conducted mind-control research on thousands of twins, and thousands of other hapless victims. Himmler supervised genetic research.

The Nazi research records were confiscated by the Allies and are still classified. A trip can be made from downtown Washington D.C. on a gray-government van which serves as a shuttle to the Suitland Annex where the government's secrets are buried including research papers captured from the Nazi Mind-Control research. Most of Mengele's concentration camp research is still classified. Much of it dealt with mind control. A researcher can visit the top floor, but underground below the top floor are the real secrets. The real secrets are lying in millions of sheets of classified documents hidden behind blast proof doors. There they have vault after vault, and row after row of top-secret files that only a few privileged persons with security clearances above COSMIC--such as with a "C3" or "MJ" security clearance can visit.

Everyone with these high security clearances which I have identified is connected to the Illuminati. Each underground area at Suitland Annex has its own subset of secret access words, known only to the initiated. Most of the OSS records have been destroyed, a few have been left, the important ones have been misfiled or remade. (This is according to a reliable British intelligent agent.) Also according to reliable inside sources the CIA is working night and day to remake old records, to expunge all the real dirty secrets from their records. The basement of CIA HQ is known as "the Pit," In the Pit documents are being shredded and burned on a round the clock basis. The large remains of these secrets are sold for landfill.

The Illuminati have developed secrecy to a fine art. They train their people in the art of secrecy from the time they are born. Most everything they do, is done orally. They are trained not to write rituals and other things down. There is very little paper trail left by the Illuminati. The creation of slaves with photographic memories facilitates this secrecy. But this book is not about how they have managed to keep their trauma-based Monarch Mind-Control a secret. They have managed only to keep it a secret to the general public. They have not been able to completely cover-up the millions of wasted lives that their programming has ruined. For many years, they were able to shut-up and quietly discard their programmed multiples by labelling them Paranoid Schizophrenics. But therapists are now correctly identifying these people as programmed multiples and are not only diagnosing them better but giving them better treatment. After Candy Jones's husband deprogrammed her enough that she could participate in writing a book exposing some of what had been done to her, the secret was out. (See The Control of Candy Jones Hypnotism and the CIA by Donald Bain.)

Ever since then, the intelligence agencies and the Illuminati have been carrying out damage control. Their biggest damage control campaign has enlisted the power of Hollywood and the controlled Media. This campaign is known as the False Memory Syndrome campaign, or as those of us who know the facts like to call it ""the false memory spin-drome." The headquarters of the False Memory Spin-drom Foundation is located at 3401 Market St., Suite 130 , Philadelphia , PA 19104 . Some of the original founders were doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia . The inside story about these early FMS doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia is that they practiced Satanic Rituals during their work days.

What is unusual about this--is that generally satanic rituals are performed at night, but these doctors did their coven work during the day. I know about these men. Now you can see why these men started the FMS! They started it to cover their own sins, because many of them were abusers themselves. In other words many of the EMS people are abusers of trauma-based mind-controlled slaves, or the victims of abuse who are in denial about their own abuse from trauma-based mind-control.

Martin T. Orn (the person credited with founding the FMS) had ties to the CIA. Two members of the EMS advisory board, Ralph Underwager, Ph.D. and theologian, along with Hollida Wakefield, M.A. let the cat out of the bag when they publicly supported pedophilia (that is adults having sex with children). Their support of pedophilia came in an interview with a Dutch magazine Paidika, The Journal of Paedophilia (Winter, 1993).

Although the False Memory Syndrome Foundation gets upset at any mention that there might be a conspiracy by the perpetrators of mind-control, because conspiracies supposedly don't and can't happen, they want us to believe that all therapists are conspiring together to implant false memories of abuse into their clients, which could not be further from the truth.

Monarch slaves typically run into a great deal of denial by their therapists that anything like this could be happening. The bottom line is that Multiple Personality Disorder (now refered to as Dissociative Identity Disorder) is a recognized bona fide diagnosis. False Memory Syndrome is not a recognized medical or psychological diagnosis and does not appear in the American Psychiatric Association's Diagnostic and Statistical Manual III-R nor the recently released DSM-IV.

Those who followed Fritz's writings have learned about the close working relationship between the Mondavi's and the Rothschilds (see his article about the Mondavi/Rothschild Napa Valley winery). Guess who got the court precedence which gives the EMS some legal ground to attack therapists? The precedence was supposedly a wife who went to a doctor who told her she had syphilis. The wife assumes she got it from her husband and divorces him. Then she learns she doesn't have syphilis. The husband then sues the doctor. Upon this bizarre case rests the legal precedence for a third party to sue a person who gives advice, such as family members suing a therapist. Upon this weak precedence, an abusive father who worked for Monday in a winery in California successfully destroyed a legitimate therapist who was trying to save his daughter who was a programmed Monarch victim.

Supposedly the therapist had implanted false memories of rape in his daughter, when the record shows that the daughter's mother told the therapist the girl had been raped by the father. When a valid case of SRA and repressed memories went to trial in Washington state involving a police officer whose family was MPD, Dr. Richard Ofshe of the False Memory Spindrom showed up to cause mischief. And mischief he did work. The case involved the children of a ""Christian"" police officer named Ingram who had satanically ritually abused his family for years. The daughter won in court, but Ofshe of the EMS was not above writing a book full of lies and distortions about the case. Lynn Crook, who was the abused daughter in the case wrote up a paper exposing what EMS person Richard Ofshe did to her.

The controlled media is giving full license and great coverage to the EMS people. Rather than fighting the government for scraps of declassified documents which have had their secrets marked out, and which may even be fake documents manufactured by the CIA, I have decided that there is a much better approach to expose the Monarch Mind Control to the world. If a person could never go to Nepal , he can see pictures of it and believe it exists. If a person can not get into the top secret records of the CIA and Office of Naval Intelligence and MI6, they can be given the exact RECIPE for creating a Monarch slave.

I believe that by giving the step by step recipe, people will see that A. all the ingredients are available, B. it is possible to combine the ingredients, C. all it takes is the motive to do it, and that motive is self-evident.

We'll even provide some of the names and places as we go along. This book will provide the step-by-step recipe for making a Monarch Mind-Controlled slave. It is a trauma-based mind control which programs multiple personalities using every known technique of mind-control. Every type of mind-control technique has been combined into a group package which makes the total package almost impossible to break. It is this ability to synthesize all these methods into a group package which is so powerful.

Edward Hunter, author of Brainwashing In Red China, testified in 1958 before a U.S. Congressional House Committee on Un-American Activities: "Since man began, he has tried to influence other men or women to his way of thinking. There have always been these forms of pressure to change attitudes. We discovered in the past thirty years, a technique to influence, by clinical, hospital procedures, the thinking processes of human beings. Brainwashing is formed out of a set of different elements ... hunger, fatigue, tenseness, threats, violence, and in more intense cases...drugs and hypnotism. No one of these elements alone can be regarded as brain washing, any more than an apple can be called apple pie. Other ingredients have to be added, and a cooking process gone through. So it is with brainwashing..."

Hunter said brainwashing was a Red Chinese threat. He said that the Chinese were the ones using these tactics. In reality, this mind control was being done in the U.S. and Hunter was a pawn to help justify the criminal activities of the programmers should they ever be found out behind their cover of "National security." The handlers of mind-controlled slaves carry around a black or grey 3 ring notebook or a lap top computer with the access codes and triggers. Some of the programmers and handlers have this all memorized.

The deepest parts, core/gems/executive committee, false trinity etc. are charted in esoteric language such as Enochian, Hebrew (which is considered magical), and Druid symbols. I have never gotten the opportunity to look at one of these, although a number of the slaves who I've talked with have while they were being programmed. These notebooks have color-coded graphs showing the arrangement of alters, the structure of the system, the training of the alters, the history of the alters and other details. All the primary tortures carried out on a slave are coded using dates/no.s so that the memories can be pulled up by the programmers.

There is a standard set of hand signals, gestures, and codes that allow a handler to work with someone else's slave, but the accepted code among the handlers is to leave another man's slave alone. As one leading psychiatrist put it, "Different ideologies use the same methodologies of mind control."

The Illuminati have secretly put in base programming that allows them ultimate control over many of the other groups' slaves. This will be described within this book. For both the ease of reading and the ease of writing, I have dispensed with most footnotes. To provide my sources would double the size of the book, and many of them are confidential. (In the past, when I have attempted crediting information, some people have gotten bruised feelings for having been passed over or for being named. When information comes in from several sources, it becomes difficult to pass out credit.)

I have made conservative judgment calls about what material I could use. Most of this information has been verified by several reliable sources. Confidential eyewitnesses are often the only source, when there is such a powerful conspiracy to keep this vast NWO mind control secret. Paper trails were not left or are not available. Programmed slaves who have worked for the military as mind-controlled slaves have witnessed their files expunged and sanitized.

The New World Order in 1981 made training films for their novice programmers. Monarch slave Cathy O'Brien was used to make both the film "How to Divide a Personality" and "How To Create a Sex Slave." Two Huntsville porn photographers were used to help NASA and the NWO create these training films. Undoubtedly, other porn training films exist too. In others words, there is film evidence of the Monarch Total Mind-control but these porn films are kept in very secure sites. During the last few years, I have visited with ex-programmers, I have visited with hundreds of victims of the Monarch type programming. I have gone to programming sites, I have visited with therapists who work with the victims of this mind-control, and I have met several of the programmers of the CIA/Illuminati face to face in the adventures of trying to save people from their programming.

I hope that God gives me the strength and the opportunity to get the information I have learned out to the world in general. When this information gets out, hopefully it will help lift some of the secrecy of the Monarch Programming.

The Monarch Programming is a foundation rock of the New World Order that when pulled up, will reveal the most evil two-legged bugs and slimy critters. When their rock is lifted, they will have to scurry to hide. Because the authors know what the programmers do, they must honestly record several areas of programming that will be controversial. The programmers are very much into demonology. Before therapists close their minds to this subject, the authors would like to point out, that they personally know of cases where Monarch slaves whose Christian personalities & other alters didn't believe in demonology were talked into participating in real deliverance, and the slaves discovered much to their surprise that work they had unsuccessfully tried to do for years with their therapist was accomplished in a day or two.

Some prestigious researchers have decided the subconscious doesn't exist because they can't find it--its mysterious. To the man in the street the concept "subconscious" is as mysterious as the concept "demon". Both have been the objects of intense research by U.S./Brit./Ger. Intelligence groups. In fact, many of the concepts in this book have been purposely obscured by the Illuminati's control over the media and universities. These obscured concepts include M.P.D. (DID), recovered memories, hypnosis, demonic possession, aliens, mind-control, the subconscious, a conspiracy to bring in a NWO, truth, etc.

The smokescreens of controversy will continue; but those who love the truth, if they seek it, will realize the importance of this book. It's on public record that MK ULTRA, the mind control research which CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner admitted to in 1977 spent millions of dollars studying Voodoo, witchcraft, and psychics. On August 3, 1977 , at a Senate hearing the then CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner disclosed that the CIA had been conducting mind control on countless numbers of unsuspecting victims for years, without their knowledge or consent. These CIA mind-control operations were carried out with the participation of a least 185 scientists and at least 80 American institutions, including prisons, pharmaceutical companies, hospitals, and 44 medical colleges & universities. Many of America 's most prestigious institutes of medical research, had cooperated with the CIA. as well as numerous big name corporations. Casey admitted that day that the CIA did mind-control consisting of drugs, hypnosis & electro-shock.

A few of the victims of the Monarch Project were even awarded financial compensation for their misery. But what was admitted was admitted in the spirit of covering up the extent of the full truth. The compensation was actually hush money, because victims were given "gag orders" by judges not to talk about what had happened to them.

It's been a disaster for Monarch victims that so many ministers have ignored those words of their Scripture, "For we are not ignorant of the devil's devices." 2 COR 2:11 This book is a must for those ministers who seriously believe "Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." 2 COR 7:1. In 2 TIM 2: 19-21, believers who "nameth the name of Christ" are asked to purge themselves of their uncleanliness (unclean spirits). There are many top notch Christians in the churches today who are under mind-control, incl. many of the Christian leadership. I would like to remind Christian ministers that Isaiah the great prophet said, "The Lord GOD hath given me the tongue of the learned that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning; he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned." Ignorance is not godliness. Isaiah learned to speak with the great learned men of his day, just as Paul the great apostle could speak to the learned men of his time. One of the character traits of God is that He is all-knowing. WHO says it is godly to be ignorant? The prophet Daniel said Yahweh God "reveals the deep and secret things." (Dan. 2:22a) God's instruments will do this revealing. Jesus' advice to his disciples was in effect to "Be wise as serpents, and gentle as a lamb".

This advice certainly applies in helping the victims of trauma-based mind-control. Paul in his letter to the Thessalonians (1 Thes 5:14) says that in effect that different people need different counseling, but they all need to be treated with patience. The first step in suggesting a cure is to find out what happened. That is what this book is about. This book is about how the Occult Network creates the problem that therapists and a few ministers try to deal with. But the keys to open doors to healthy solutions for the victims of trauma-based total mind control will reveal themselves in this book for the reader as this book reveals the nitty-gritty of how the total mind-control happens. Christ came to free the captives (Isaiah 61:1). Satanic ritual abuse has a history that is almost as old as history itself. Good King Hezekiah was a victim as a child of SRA. (2 Chr. 29) who got free. Moses confronted the satanic magic of Pharoah's magicians who could create live snakes from sticks. The Apostle Paul had to deal with Simon Magus, a leader of what is now known as Satanism. Solomon, one of the greatest men of faith, backslide and became one of the greatest satanists of all history. We have "no fellowship with unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them" (as per EPH 5:11).

While we have no fellowship with evil, the mind-control programmers are counting on us being so ignorant of their devices that they can hide their control devices behind perversion & filth that many people shy away from. We must be strong enough to face evil and not shy away from it. The victims of mind-control must look evil in the face & not look away to gain their freedom. We, who want to help them, must be courageous & strong enough to do this too. This book is written for that divine goal "till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ." Eph. 4:13 If the body of Christ is to attain fullness, we need this book to weed out the hidden terrible cancer that is consuming the body from within. This book is written for ministers, secular and Christian therapists, and truth lovers of all kinds. If you love the truth this book is for you. If you see something good in the human race so that our species should be preserved as well as the spotted owl and the sand flea, then this book is for you. IF YOU LOVE THE TRUTH, this BOOK is for YOU.

Glossary of How Basic Terms are Used In This Book

For those readers who are not familiar with these basic terms let us introduce you to the definitions under which this book uses them. Alter-Our usage is trying to follow the programmers usage of this word. A dissociated part of the mind which has a seperate identity and is given cue codes by the mind-control programmers to trigger that dissociated part of the mind to come to the front of the mind. The alter's identity may be a gem, rock, a tape recorder, a poodle, a white kitten, a dove, a horse, or even think of itself as a person or a demon. It all depends on its programming. An alter is different from an alter fragment in that the alter fragment is a dissociated part of the mind which serves only a single purpose. The programmers will give an alter a history, and insure that shadow alters will provide a full range of accessible emotions. Sometimes the distinctions between alters and alter fragments is vague, but examples from the two ends of the spectrum are easy to tell apart. We use the word alter in this book to conform to what the programmers' charts are encoding as alters. A typical main Mengele-created grid would be a grid of 13x13 principal A-coded alters, which is 169 principle alter personalities. In Illuminati systems, ceremonial "alters will consist of 3 alters placed on a spinning pedistal together into triad goddesses or gods. That means that an A-coded alter on some levels is actually 3 alters spinning together, which must be locked in place to communicate with, and then rotated to communicate to the other two.

Beta--This is the second Greek letter, and it represents the sexual models and sexual alters that the Programmers are creating. The primitive part of the brain is involved in this type of programming. An early sexual abuse event will be used to anchor this programming. These sexual slaves will develop sexual abilities that are far beyond what the public is aware is even possible. They also receive the worst kind of abuse far beyond what most people's imagination can picture. Beta alters generally see themselves as cats.

Councils (Illuminati)--The Illuminati has frequent meetings. Some of these meetings are organized to appear "acephalous" and "accidential" in their meetings, when in reality they are structured and planned. One group, MJ-12 has gone by the following names: the Group, the Special Study Group, the Wise Men, the Operations Coordinating Board (OCB), 5412 Committee, 303 Committee, 40 Committee, PI-40 Committee, and Policy Planning Group (PCG). Some of the formal policy and ritual groups have names that all Illuminati members who have gotten high enough to learn, will recognize: The Council of 3, Council of 5, Council of 7, Council of 9, The Grand Druid Council, The Committee of 300, and the Committee of 500 (known as Fortune 500). Many of the meetings are conclaves without formal names. The Grand Druid Council is not something fictional, but an actual body of people who formally meet and whose membership, we have been trying to keep track of. The groups which make decisions to control this planet are networked together. Each decision has its own origin and route that it takes.

Delta--This is a Greek letter shaped like a triangle which symbolizes change in calculus. It has become a favorite word to use in naming things for the occult elite. Delta teams are 4 person assassination teams which usually are secret teams. Delta Forces is an elite unit that operates under the Joint chiefs of staff that is made up of highly trained total mind-controlled slaves. Delta models are slaves whose sole purpose is assassination.

Delta alters are alters within an Illuminati alter system which are programmed to be assassins. These alters are often some of the deepest in a system and in a Genie bottle or with Umbrella programming.

Deliverance ministry-(This book is about HOW the mind-control is done, it is not a textbook on solutions.) The use of the term deliverance ministry in this book conotates any person(s) who via faith in God is able to pray for divine help in a fashion that a victim is helped from demonic activity. A deliverance ministry is a natural outgrowth of a life in harmony and fellowship with Yahweh God. However, this is not to be confused with Exorcism of the traditional Catholic or witchcraft nature in which certain spells and incantations are used in a prescribed method.

"Deliverance" connotates divinely inspired faith, exorcism involves ritual. A deliverance ministry might perhaps teach a person about forgiveness, or how they can renounce an oath, or how to apply Jesus Christ’s atoning blood to their life. In this fashion, the person finds deliverance through biblical spiritual principles rather than the efficacy of some ritual or hocus pocus spell. This book is in no way meant as a blanket endorsement of every spiritual warfare tactic. If anything, this book suggests that ministers learn more about mind-control, as well as grow stronger in their walk with Almighty God.

Illuminati--The Illuminati are 13 elite bloodlines which have maneuvered themselves into control over this planet. They lead double lives, one for society and a hidden one which is based on a gnostic luciferian philosophy which consists of lots of blood rituals.

Monarch Programming--This was a specific Project carried out by secret elements of the U.S. government and intelligence groups. There were, according to someone a few years ago who had access to the computer(s) which contains all the names of active monitored human slaves, 40,000 actively monitored Monarch slaves. However, this book uses the term generically to include all victims who have suffered this type of trauma-based mind-control. In the same way, that a brand name like "Hyster" is used to describe all lifts--when we use the term we use it in its broadest sense. This is the only way it can be used and technically correct, because as of this date, the authors have not seen who is on the active Monarch Program list of slaves.

System-- This term is used in several ways. It is frequently used to refer to a victim of total mind control because the victim consists of alters, programming, implant(s), internal computers, and numerous dissociative states which function together as a system. The word is also used in this book to refer to the body’s functional physiological units, such as the respiratory system. The word is also infrequently used to denote the established social-economic-political system controlling the world, also known insiders as the Network. Other standard meaning may also occasionally be used for the word. Multiple Personality/Multiple personalities or MPD Dissociative Identity Disorder or DID is the situation where different dissociative parts of a single brain view themselves as separate persons. The DSM-IIIR definition of MPD is the guideline for determining MPD for this book.

New World Order-- The New World Order is the global design for a One-World-Government One-World-Dictator and its constituents. Insiders call themselves the "network" and "the neighborhood".

Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA)--This is used to represent all categories of ritual abuse which would be inspired by the desire to rob, kill, or destroy something worthwhile in a person, especially their freedom of thought. Many groups carrying out SRA do not mention Satan by that name. They may make Pacts to Baphomet, and call upon Rex Mundi, or Belair, or Lucifer, or the Father of Light, God, or Kali or even "Jesus" or "Jesus Christ" (there are demons which call themselves "Jesus", who are not to be confused with Yeshua or Yehoshua ben Joseph who is known as Jesus Christ of Nazareth.) SRA is not a value judgement by the authors against some group, the victims themselves on some level know that he or she is being abused.

Switching--This is when one part (fragment) of the mind takes over from another, or in simple terms, this is when one alter personality (or alter fragment) takes the body from the alter which is holding the body. Switching can occur via the Programmers' codes for calling up alters, or by external or internal stimuli that trigger an alter to come out. Switching will usually cause at least a flicker of the eyes, and for outside observers, who know the different personalities, they will observe another personality take the body.

Chapter 1: Science No. 1. The Selection and Preparation of The Victim

A - Selection Based on Genetics and Disassociative Abilities

B - Availability

C - Mental and Physical Features One of the primary reasons that the Monarch mind-control programming was named Monarch programming was because of the Monarch butterfly. The Monarch butterfly learns where it was born (its roots) and it passes this knowledge via genetics on to its offspring (from generation to generation).

This was one of the key animals that tipped scientists off, that knowledge can be passed genetically. The Monarch program is based upon Illuminati and Nazi goals to create a Master race in part through genetics. If knowledge can be passed genetically (which it is), then it is important that parents be found that can pass the correct knowledge onto those victims selected for the Monarch mind-control. The primary important factor for the trauma-based mind-control is the ability to disassociate. It was discovered that this ability is passed genetically from generation to generation.

American Indian tribes (who had traumatic ritual dances and who would wait motionless for hours when hunting), children of Fakirs in India (who would sleep on a bed of nails or walk on hot coals), children of Yogis (those skilled in Yoga, who would have total control over their body in trance), Tibetan buddhists, children of Vodoun, Bizango and other groups have a good ability to disassociate.

The children of multigenerational abuse are also good at dissociation. The Illuminati families and European occultists went to India , and Tibet to study occultism and eastern philosophy. These Europeans learned yoga, tantric yoga, meditations, and trances and other methods to disassociate. These skills are passed on to their children via genetics. A test is run when the children are about 18 months old to determine if they can dissociate enough to be selected for programming or not.

Mind-controlled slaves are created for different purposes, hierarchy or non-hierarchy purposes.

The Illuminati create mind-controlled slaves who are to function within the Illuminati hierarchy. These slaves will usually have their genealogies hidden, and will be created to have excellent cover lives to insure that they are not detected. They will be given multifunctional programming, and will usually be used to help program other slaves. The abuse will not be as physically visible as it will be on the bodies of slaves who are not born to be part of the Illuminati elite.

Members of Moriah's (Moriah = the Illuminati) Luciferian elite will have undergone as much trauma as other slaves, however the torture scars and the control are better concealed. These children will often receive lavish experiences as well as talks to convince them that they are part of the elite. (By the way, body scars will show up better under black light, that is the same black light as used in clubs.) The Illuminati and other organizations have also programmed individuals who are simply expendable. These are sex slaves who are used up and killed very early in life, one-time use saboteurs, breeders, soldiers, drug couriers and so forth. The bodies of these people will often show visible torture scars.

The expendable are the children of parents who were blackmailed into turning their children over to the CIA. This is all hidden by the power of the National Security Act. These are children, who have been sold by pedophile fathers, or pornographic parents. The programmers/masters program them with the expectation that they will be "thrown from the freedom train" when they get to age 30. (Freedom Train is the code word for the Monarch trauma-based mind-control. To be thrown from the Freedom Train means to be killed.)

The CIA and the Illuminati are skilled at blackmailing parents to give up their children. They would watch the mail for porn. Pedophile and murderers who abuse their children are warned that they will go to prison for long lengths of time if they do not cooperate by selling their children into mind-controlled slavery. In return for the parent's cooperation, they provide rich financial rewards to the parent(s). It's clearly a case of "if you don't cooperate you lose in life big time, if you do cooperate you win big time."

Ministers are often set up with Betas (a sexual model) who then blackmail them. The ministers do not want to lose their status and profession via scandals, so they agree to turn their children over when young to the CIA to work with. The Illuminati like to blackmail these ministers when they are finished with their Seminary schooling and committed to the ministry at about 33 years of age. The idea of having nothing to fall back on after they have committed their entire life to one profession is too much for these weak willed men, and they buckle under the threats. If they don't buckle under, the resulting consequences will remove them from ministry. The type of father who is most preferred by the Programmers to offer up their children for programming is the pedophile. If a father will abuse his own little baby girl, then the Programmers know that the man has no conscience. This father's involvement in criminal activity (and thereby his vulnerability) can be continually increased. They want men who they believe will not develop any qualms later on in life about what they have done. A man, who waits until his daughter is a teenager to molest her, is usually esteemed to have too much conscience for the programmers.

A big distinction must be made between hierarchy Monarch slaves, and non-hierarchy Monarch slaves. The reason there is such a big distinction is that they are not programmed the same way. Since this book is giving the recipe for how to create a Monarch slave, we will have to cover the distinction between slaves within the Illuminati and those slaves who function outside of the Illuminati hierarchy.

It is important to stress that the label "Monarch" is used in this book in a generic sense for the modern trauma-based total mind-control that is taking place. Whether an Illuminati mind-controlled slave is technically in the Monarch records or out of the actual Monarch Program data files kept on computer is merely a technicality.

In my (Fritz's) other writings, I explain about how the Illuminati created the CIA. I know that some of its directors were members of the Illuminati and I strongly suspect that the other CIA directors were probably full-fledged members too. The two organizations need each other. If the CIA didn't have the international backing of the movers and shakers of the world, it would have been exposed and done away with. Likewise, the Illuminati, because it is so secret, needs organizations through which it can work. The CIA is a front for the Illuminati, and the CIA in turn sets up fronts.

Some of those fronts, are elaborate well-staffed, well-equipped programming sites, (such as many of the state mental hospitals, McGill Psychiatric Training Network consisting of 8 Montreal hospitals esp. St. Mary's, NASA in Huntsville, AL; the Presideo, CA; and NOTS at China Lake, CA, to name a few. (For a more complete list see Appendix B.)

The Illuminati couldn't do it alone without its fronts. Satanists within the Network & the CIA took over Boy's Town, NE in the early 1950s, & used that famous orphanage for a constant supply of boys for programming. Boy's Town is perhaps the most famous, but there are whole long list of others. When the Monarch Programming started, the top men were Illuminati. Originally, Joseph Mengele was the lead programmer. He had already achieved the rank of Grand Master (later Ipssimus) within the Illuminati. He had become skilled in music, in Kabbalistic Magic, in dancing, in abortions, and in torture (by the way, Mengele had a sadistic mother) and programming children.

Many of the concentration camp children that Mengele programmed still survive and still love him to this day as "Daddy". Mengele disappeared from Auschwitz in Jan. 1945, several months before the final chaos began in the Third Reich. He disappeared so the Illuminati could smuggle him to the U.S. , so that his exceptional knowledge of programming--honed and fined tuned on thousands of concentration camp child victims could be put to use on a grande scale in the U.S.

He travelled worldwide but especially in western U.S. doing his programming accompanied by his pair of two black servants. American Monarch survivors remember his spotless German uniform, his shiny boots which he wore during programming, his thick German accent, his handsome features, his cleft chin, the space in his front teeth, the way he would jab with his thumb while programming, as if he were still saying "links, rechts" to lines of jews coming into the concentration camps.

The reason Mengele was so excited to do the selection process of inmates coming into Auschwitz was that he was choosing inmates for his numerous mind-control trauma experiments. He was especially anxious to get identical twins, because his genetic research related to mind control needed persons of identical genetic makeup.

Traditionally, the Illuminati had been having their children inspected by a woman with the rank of Grande Mother. She would determine the fitness of the children and then present them for a formal acceptance ceremony at age 3 to the Grande Druid Council. This procedure didn't change when Mengele came over--the programming just jumped from being an occult science to one that had full access to the Medical, Psychiatric, Judicial, Scientific and Governmental sectors via the power of the National Security Act and the Intelligence agencies.

The Illuminati's programming of multiples prior to Mengele's arrival were simplistic, compared to the sophisticated techniques engineered by the Nazi Germans (whose Mind Control research included some non-German nationals such as some Italians). Just as a victim who is killed by an 18th century musket is just as much victimized as someone killed by an M-16, so a victim of the pre-1946 programming was just as victimized as those programmed with more sophisticated techniques.

For the Illuminati, the child's programming is planned by the Circle (another name for their organization) before it is born. From the Illuminati's perspective their plans involve generational spirits and positions within the hierarchy. The child is conceived according to their rituals, and the steps that that child will go through follows a well-thought out detailed regimen for programming it.

In contrast, the children from foster homes, or pedophiles do not receive the same regimen. Hierarchy slaves will in turn be used to program and train other hierarchy children, while CIA slaves and Mafia slaves and KKK slaves etc. will be discarded.

This is why a Presidential Model is "thrown from the Freedom Train [the name of the Monarch Program in the Underworld]". Women and men in the Illuminati will continue to help with the programming their entire lives.

The Illuminati is programming such vast numbers of children, they need everyone of their able members to help. Moriah's total membership worldwide numbers in the millions. The Illuminati regimen for their children is far more controlling than the CIA's programming. Not everyone in the Illuminati gets their mind-split and becomes a programmed multiple. However, everyone does get some type of mind-control.

Those who have been spared multiplicity still must participate in a two-week intense mind-control session that might be compared to the Army's Ranger school. Those who participate in this have learned obedience. Those who haven't learned obedience, are forced into ritual gladiator type duels or other punishments to eliminate them. Finally, a traitor’s death as pictured on one of the Tarot cards is waiting. **Sharon Tate** was left hanging in the No. 12 Tarot Card’s "hangman position" from the house rafters.

The best therapists will quietly admit that traditional therapy is inadequate. Unless God intervenes, people who are born into the Illuminati don’t escape it while alive. This book isn’t a mere exercise of academic thinking, but is written with the assurance that freedom is possible, there are viable answers. Some children live in foster homes, or with adopted parents, or in orphanages, or with caretakers and guardians. Because these children are at the mercy of the non-related adults, these types of children frequently are sold to become mind-controlled slaves of the intelligence agencies.

In review, remember that because many of these organizations are controlled by the Illuminati; an Illuminati slave may often work for one of these front groups, while the Illuminati maintain control over the base-program.

The intelligence networks were started by and run by the Illuminati. They are Illuminati fronts. The use of slaves crosses many organizational boundaries within the overall Network. If a slave is to be used as a Delta model (assassination), they may be selected for strength and dexterity. The Delta Force is the army's elite unit made up of Monarch slaves. If they are to operate as a Beta model (sexual slave), they will be chosen if they can master technique. Occasionally they might in some circumstances be selected for how pretty the programmers expect the child to become. Some parents have produced good looking children and are actually sought-after to bear children to sell into the Mind Controlled Slavery "Freedom Train" System.

However, vastly more important for Beta Sex Slaves are their ability to be programmed to have charm, seductive skills, charisma, and creativity. Beauty is in the eye of the beholder, and the programmers can put almost any kind of body to use as a sex slave. Almost any sex slave can fit somewhere into the script of the Illuminati/New World Order/crime syndicate "porn" movies. (I place porn in quotation marks--because what they call porn doesn't resemble what the public thinks of porn--we're not talking Playboy type porn, we're talking ghastly horrible atrocities that are as sick as anything done in the Nazi concentration camps).

For instance, it takes little acting ability or beauty to have one's head chopped off while having sex. There are different types of sexual slaves, but the Illuminati wants to get Beta alters which are sharp, talented, skilled, and resourceful. They will use these Beta alters, such as the Black Widow alters, for espionage and blackmail.

To make sure that the child's mind develops properly, the baby will be interacted with so that those areas of the brain that are important to develop will develop to the maximum. It is a well-known fact, that areas of the brain grow according to how much stimulation and use that area of the brain receives. For this reason, Grande Dames, who are involved in programming, will spend time drawing and showing faces to the child and seeing if the child can recognize identical faces. Almost any other item will be used, candy canes with stripes (match the candycanes with the same no. of stripes), trees, or pencils. The child must learn to match identical items very early--even before they can speak. This is so they will be able to build mirror images into their mind.

All the senses are trained for building the mirror images; for instance such as silks and cottons can be used for the sense of touch. The child will have to match textures. The Programmer, the Grande Dame, and Grande Mothers will teach the child to have good abilities in copying, reflecting, repeating, echoing, or re-echoing, and mirroring. They will be taught for hours how to re-echo something verbatim. Some of these teaching methods are almost like games. For instance, 20 pins will be in a box and the small child is given a short time to decide how many pins are in the box.

A certain level of intelligence and creativity is needed for time to be wasted on programming. You can not program a mind which is weak. Most of the people programmed are very intelligent. One study of multiples said that multiples were 130 or above in 1.0. and then mistakenly blamed their multiplicity on their 1.0. Attempts to program people with low intelligence or no creativity were discovered to be a waste of time. Methods are used to greatly enhance the victim's intelligence and creativity. The Illuminati will also work on enhancing their psychic abilities such as telepathy and cliarvoyance.

The head programmers have their own little mottos about building solid structures which they like to express to new trainees. These include, "An unstructured house [mind of the slave] is like unto a house without walls", "A house undisciplined is like unto a house without walls, it will crumble within itself', and "A house divided against itself will not stand."

Much of the structuring will be discussed in chapter 7, but the structuring begins at birth for the victim, so this chapter will discuss the first steps. In order to build a solid good house, one needs to have a solid foundation. In order to build a solid foundation, one needs to know how the land lays and what the weaknesses of the land are--if it is sand or rock or clay, etc. One needs to design one's house to take advantage of the natural lay of the land. Will storms come from this or that direction? Where will the house need extra protection? The very same principles pertain to programming--because a structure is being built.

Many evil geniuses within the Illuminati added their contributions to the Monarch programming. One of the most important was **John Gittinger** of Oklahoma , because he was the genius who could understand how a little child's mind was when it was in infancy. In order to work with something, you must know what you are working with. John Gittinger, who is no longer alive, worked at programming for years. His contribution was in the mental assessment area. John Gittinger (b. 1909) was the director of psychological services at the state hospital in Norman , Oklahoma . He got a master's degree at age 30, and joined the CIA's MK Ultra Mind

Control in 1950. He was a high school guidance counselor and a Navy lieutenant commander during W.W.II. In the late 1970s, he moved back to Oklahoma . He was heavy set and goateed. Its been said he looked like the actor Walter Slezak. He had an insatiable curiosity about understanding human personality.

When the Illuminati looked around for men skilled in personality assessment to assist the Monarch Programming, John W. Gittinger was one of their men who they selected. Gittinger was not the only researcher into personality that the CIA hired, but he was their top man in terms of the programming of children. From the end of W.W. II until he began with the CIA in 1950, Gittinger was studying how to assess personality. At the Oklahoma State Hospital , he had large numbers of adults who could be studied. After Gittinger started doing personality assessment for the CIA. most of his work became highly classified. The Rolling Stone article of July 18, 1974 asked why years of research into personality assessment should be so secret. In fact it was so secret, that Gittinger was not allowed to talk to journalists, even though it was public knowledge that Gittinger did personality assessment work/research. The reason that such an apparently benign science was kept secret is that it plays a major part in the success of the Monarch Programming. John Gittinger designed the **PAS (Personality Assessment System**). This is an extraordinary method to evaluate human behavior and predict their future behavior. As far as we know, most of the PAS is still classified SECRET. The PAS is based on the ability to differentiate different types of people.

There are 3 major differentiations (or dimensions). They are called the E-I dimension, the R-F dimension, and the A-U dimension. People are born with their original placement within each of these three spectrums. In other words there are 3 axes that can be graphed to describe a baby’s personality. The baby might be graphed-- I (Internalizer), F (Flexible), and A (Role Adaptive). If the baby were graphed this way (i.e. I-F-A), then the Programmers would automatically know this child’s mind will become a social or religious reformer. The child’s programming charts would then be labelled some suitable occupation such as "Environmental Activist", "Pentecostal church reformer", "Consumer Advocate", or "Activist against Narcotics". The programming for that child then would follow 6 month goals to develop that mind-controlled slave into one of the best in that occupation. (In fact, one of the co-authors of this book, Fritz, is indeed I-F-A. which helps explain why he is trying to reform society and religion with this book. While it took Fritz many years to find his correct nitch in life, programmed multiples are steered in the correct direction very early in life with all the breaks and all the money needed from the Network to open opportunities.)

There are three possibilities for the child in regards to his original personality components. He can express the component, or suppress or repress it. As the child goes through life, he has two periods within which he can change (suppress or repress) his behavior/personality. In the PAS, the first period is called "compensation" and the second is called "modification". The amount of punishment for a personality trait and pressure to change from others will determine the amount of change which the child’s mind will perform on its original personality. The activity level of a person at each point in their life is also measured. The intensity of each of the scores is also rated. The actual PAS system is far more detailed than the example above, but it serves to give a simplified idea of how it works. The essential dynamics of an entire personality can be written in a short code which might be written for example 12(E-uc Fcu + A+u+u)H+. However, even that code is shortened E-uc can be written simply i’.

The basic 3 dimensions to personality provide 8 basic types. However, the PAS allows for 6 basic positions in each of these 8 basic types which yields 216 discrete basic types. Next, the person can change their predisposed primitive personality initially 5 different ways, and this then gives $(30)^3$ or 27,000 different types. The second change can be done on 4 types of modification which makes for 1,728,000 types. Then the programmers can factor in activity level, their "Normal" level (intelligence base), age, sex, and education, and life experiences. In other words, what appears to be simple has a high degree of calibration to it. The person who was best with the PAS was its brainchild Gottinger himself. His intuition along with his PAS system, gave him an uncanny idea of how a person's s mind works now, and how it would work in the future. He sadistically reveled in putting his skill to use programming children.

The actual assessment codes that have appeared on programming assessment charts which the Monarch child assessment teams have used to evaluate, describe, & assess a child to be programmed follow the standard symbols created for PAS. Some about Gittinger’s work has escaped the secrecy of the intelligence agencies. Concerning the Gittinger Personality Assessment System see "An Introduction to the Personality Assessment System" by John Winne and John Gittinger, Journal of Community Psychology Monograph Supplement No. 38.

Rutland , Vermont : Clinical Psychology Publishing Co., Inc. 1973. See also the Rolling Stone magazine article, July 18, 1974 , "The CIA Won't Go public". Because so little is known about the PAS test, it needs to be explained some. Observations in relation to the Wechsler Intelligence Test provided the initial ideas behind the PAS.

The digit-span subtest of the Wechsler Intelligence Test, which rates the ability to remember numbers forms the basic test used for the E-I dimension. What Gittinger discovered was that short order cooks had good number-memory which = Internalizer personality or "I". A high digit span in any person tells much about them. People who don't separate themselves well from their environment are Externalizers = E. The "I" personality was a good baby. The "E" type who prefers doing to thinking is a "too-curious" baby, who will make demands. I's would often be pressured to become more outgoing, and E's are often pressured by parents to be more self-sufficient, and to progress from crawling (which they like) to learn to walk. Pure Internalizers become more withdrawn after several drinks, and uncompensated E's are more likely to become sloppy drunks, garrulous. Based on the E-I dimension, predictions can also be made for how LSD will affect a person. This is the E-I dimension.

The block design subtest shows whether a person is a Regulated (R) or a Flexible (F) person. This is the R-F dimension. The regulated person had no trouble learning by rote but didn't understand what he learned. The Flexible person on the other hand had to understand something before he learned it. R children could learn to play the piano easily, but the great concert piano players were F children who had persevered to master what they considered drudgery.

The third dimension is the Role Adaptive (A) or a Role Uniform (U) person. A could be defined as Charisma, while people tend to ignore the U. The CIA has 40 patterns that a skilled observer looks for, and these then are related to the PAS and Wechsler subtests.

Illuminati Mothers-of-Darkness alters trained in observation chart what they see a child do. A child's behavior with certain toys, certain hand responses, and certain social responses can be observed and used to assess how this child would score on the PAS test.

EEG (Electroencephalogram) patterns co-relate to the PAS digit-span test. This allowed them to use the EEG patterns to overcome cultural bias in the test. It also gave the Monarch programmers the perfect tool to assess small children before they have verbal skills. David R. Saunders, at the Univ. of Col. working with the CIA. wrote a paper in 1961 showing the connection between alpha waves and digit span. In 1960, Mundy-Castle wrote about the connections between EEG printouts and Wechsler-Bellevue Test variables.

Here is the tip of the iceberg that EEGs were being used to determine pre-verbal personality in children. And Salvatore et al wrote at the Massachusetts Mental Health Center , Boston , Mass, clear back in 1954 about the "predictive potential of Gittinger's theory" in an unpublished research paper. (The Massachusetts Mental Health Center was an early participant in all this.)

The child's guardians must teach the small victim obedience. They must teach the child to keep its eyes open and to hold still. These skills are important, because the child will be subjected to the EEGs in vast amounts. The hospital equipment would be something like an 11-channel Grass EEG machine where 11 electrodes are placed on the child's head, and brain wave patterns are printed out charting such things as background, variability, discharges, background suppressions, sharp waves, etc. The electrodes will have designations such as T3, T4 etc. In special programming sites, a machine with electrodes will be hooked up to the child's head for repeated tests. The newer machines accommodate up to 30 1/2 diameter pads (electrodes) which are attached with electrode adhesive tape or small needled ends to the child's scalp. The child's hair will be parted in an area, and the electrodes will be hooked to the skull. The attendant will tell the child, "Don't move. Keep your eyes open. Look at this point. Don't blink. Don't move your body." Then this procedure will be repeated for 45 minutes to an hour. Eventually hundreds of readout from electrodes clipped to the skull of the child will chart the brain waves of the child.

From these brain waves, the programmers can determine what type of personality the child has. This personality assessment criteria and ability is one of the guarded secrets of the programming. Should unexpected behavior crop up, the slave may be hauled in for more EEGs. The PAS tests would reveal to Gittinger what a person's weaknesses were. The PAS shows what a person wants. And these are called the soft spots of a person's personality. Also the PAS shows mental weaknesses, on where a person will be instable and can be broken down. Certain types of stresses will have a cumulative effect of hurting a person.

A stress-producing campaign is run against CIA targets, and by doing this they can neutralize a potential enemy. This information collected from children who are potential victims for the Monarch programming, is essential for knowing how to structure that child's programming. For instance IFU children often are autistic, IRU are schizophrenic children, and IR or IF are fantasy prone. It will be further explained shortly how this aids programming. An Internalizer personality would be important deep inside an alter system, while an Externalizer would be useful for a front personality. (Internalizers are predisposed to the production of mental fantasy.)

By knowing what the child was, the programmers know what they already have, and what they must add or build into the thinking of the alters they will create. Likewise, some alters need to be R and some F. And some need to be A and some U. Regulated (R) personalities like to have narrow limitations on their activity. This makes them suitable for programming. The R's readily accept authority, and will not try to step out of the range of their habits. The R has a marked ability to learn without understanding. They easily learn material by rote, because they do not need to understand it before they will learn it. This is another asset they have that the programmers like.

The programmers may or may not want an A (Role Adaptive personality). A future country singer needs charisma -- a future computer programmer doesn't. Without being able to finely determine what is there, the programming could not be fine tuned. If the child is good in math it will have its programming scripts steered in that direction. If it has artistic brainwaves, then the programmer will use art work in programming. The art work of the european artist M.C. Escher is exceptionally well suited for programming purposes. For instance, in his 1947 drawing "Another World", the rear plane in the center serves as a wall in relation to the horizon, a floor in connection with the view through the top opening and a ceiling in regards to the view up towards the starry sky. Reversals, mirror images, illusion, and many other qualities appear in Escher's art work which make all 76 or more of his major works excellent for programming. The use of these kinds of elements will explained later.

Five children each given the same Alice In Wonderland script will each use the script differently during programming. The programmer takes the child's own creativity and works with that unique creativity. The child must create the images itself if the programming is to hold. It won't work if the images are someone else's. The child organizes its internal world to suit his/her own experiences such as castles, boxes, rooms, and dollhouses. The PAS type testing will continue during the early years of the slave's life to make sure the programming has not driven the child crazy or psycho. The child will move down the script decided for it for its whole life, based on these early tests. More about how this works later.

The EEG tests run frequently on children to be programmed also show brain tumors, and medical problems beside just the brain wave patterns. The PAS tests can show how easy a person can be hypnotized. If the testing by the EEG's doesn't reveal a child who can be easily hypnotized, they will be rejected for programming, even though modern drugs and extreme torture in some cases will be applied to "salvage" children they really think they need to program but are clearly not easily hypnotizable.

EEG's can also be used to see what state of consciousness the brain is in. The Monarch Programming is based on structuring MPD alter systems which is covered in Chapter 7. The success of this structuring (its excellent finetuning) comes from the initial testing, which means programs are properly built on whatever foundation the mind has. The CIA front Human Ecology Society tested the PAS. In 1962, the CIA moved Gittinger's base of operations to another CIA front on Connecticut Ave. , Washington , D.C. called Psychological Assessment Associates. Because Gittinger believed genetic-based differences exist in people, which is one of the bases for the Monarch Programming, his work was not accepted by main stream psychology. In 1974, Gottinger described the PAS system, "...the Personality Assessment System (PAS):

(a) indicates the kinds of internal and external cues to which the individual is most likely to respond;

(b) suggests the types of stimuli that are most likely to produce behavioral change;

(c) provides an understanding of the inter-, intra-, and impersonal environments in which a person is most likely to function efficiently; and (d) offers insight into what constitutes stress and predicts probable behavioral response to such stress, including maladjustments, should they occur.

"In the area of experience, the PAS offers a method for obtaining specific clues to personality structure and functioning. Thus, the PAS:

(a) allows for direct inferences concerning an individual's primary response style:

(b) suggests the quality of the compensations and modifications he has achieved in response to social and environmental pressures;

(c) provides an understanding of personality development in terms of the interaction of primary structure, environmental pressures, and adaptive tendencies;

(d) offers a procedure for evaluating the surface or contact personality developed over time; and

(e) makes possible the assessment of the fundamental discrepancies between the surface personality and the underlying personality structure--discrepancies that typically produce tension, conflict and anxiety." Winne, John F. and John W. Gittinger. "Journal of Community Psychology Monograph Supplement No. 38. Rutland , Vermont : Clinical Psychology Publishing Co., Inc. 1973, p. 99. Wow! Gottinger's description of PAS is specifically the needs & goals that the programmers had when they initiate programming the personality splits in tiny 18-month old children! People associated with the following listed organizations may assist the Network to use their child for trauma-based programming. Children from families where one or both parents belong to the following organizations are often routinely sent off in early childhood for trauma-based mind control.

We are now in 3rd and 4th generations of people who are programmed multiples. (And even into deeper generations in some Illuminati bloodlines.) What can't be covered here is the enormous secret drama involved in Moriah finding and implementing control over parents via prescribed or illegal drugs, fear, blackmail etc. so that they will assist them in getting the children programmed. If the motherly instinct is too strong, the mom may be prescribed tranquilizers, so that there is a stable house for the child's front alters to grow up in. Unreliable non-multiple fathers are "debriefed" by Ilium , multiples who debrief & then erase their memories of what is happening to their children. Parents may have only a limited view.

D. Organizations Practicing Trauma-Based Mind Control (These groups form what insiders call "the Network." They are the backbone of what is known as the New World Order.)

Air Force Intelligence Army Intelligence (such as CIC), Atomic Energy Commission, Boeing, British Intelligence, in. MI-6, MI-5, & the Tavistock Institute, Bureau of Narcotics, Bureau of Prisons, Catholic Church (incl. Jesuits), Central Intelligence Agency, CIA (aka Agency, Company, Langley) Charismatic movement, Church of Satan, Church of Scientology, CIRVIS Club 12 & Club 41 Country Music Industry Defense Intelligence Agency, DIA, Department of Justice, Federal Bureau of Investigation, FBI Freemasonry (esp. the Palladium Rite, 33° and above degrees,Quatuor Coronati Lodge, SRIA, and other Masonic affiliated organizations) GEPAN German Intelligence (Shaback) GHG Hollywood The House of Saud in Saudi Arabia (which has un-programmed slaves too)

The Illuminati (also known as The Circle, Moriah, Moriah-conquering-wind, Gnostics, Luciferians etc.) at all levels is involved in trauma-based mind control as perpetrators & victims, incl. Frat. Saturni-Orden Fraternitas Saturni, THFS, FOGO, Golden Dawn, AntiC.Lucif. Dyn, etc. INS Ku Klux Klan (different KKK groups) Mafia Masons (see Freemasonry) Mod in Mossad (Mossad le Aliyah Beth) Mormon Church NASA (National Space Admin.) National Security Agency NSA National Programs Office National Science Foundation Naval Intelligence (ONI) Neo-nazi groups Oddfellows OTO (there are 4 groups) P.4 (elite MI6 section) Palo Mayombe Process Church and its offshoot Chingun etc. Professional Baseball, such as the L.A. Dodgers

Russian government & intelligence groups (GRU & KGB & KGB's successor, historically an early group known as Spets Byuro #1 called "Kamera" in Russian which means "Chamber" did drug/hypnosis mind control research. The Spetsburo was responsible for assassinations.) Santaria Satanic Hubs, Soc. of Dk. Lily, Chdrn of Lucifer (UK) Temple of Power (previously known as Temple of Set) Umbanda

US Army--esp. the Delta Forces & the 1st Earth Batt. USAF Veteren’s Administration Werewolf Order Some Witchcraft groups besides Satanism & Moriah

E. 4 beginning foundational stages

If the Illuminati’s preferred plan is followed, it has 4 beginning foundational stages to prepare the victim for programming. Let’s list these, and then afterwards explain in detail these first 4 stages. One programmer named the stages 2,3, 4 as stages 1, 2, 3, but the In utero preparations and preliminary ceremonies actually form an initial first stage.

The first stage is the initial ceremonies & the In Utero traumatization. The second stage is to have a premature birth, the third stage is to provide intense love for the child for the first 18 months by 2-3 selected Illuminati caregivers, and the fourth stage is to pull that love away and split the mind of the child permanently. Not every Illuminati child is born premature--but many are, because that is the preferred method for programming.

F. Foundation Step 1.

Preparation of the Children by Spiritual Preparations & In Utero Traumatization--The Moon Children

The preparation for someone to be programmed also concerns the ability of a person to be demonized. Generational satanic families are sold out to Satan, and their children belong to Satan in a way that non-generational children do not. Because of the generational curses, because of the genetic bent toward the occult, because of the generational demonic forces, the Illuminati children are very good candidates for Monarch programming. Part of the programming includes the layering in of demonic forces, and the participation in blood rituals in order to draw in the most powerful of demons. An indepth review about this important but controversial subject is in chapter 10.

The Moonchild rituals are the rituals to demonize a fetus. However, the demons that are invoked are not the small ones but very powerful ones. In working with victims of this programming, it is clear that high level demons were placed within these people at very early ages, many of them it is believed were demonized before they were born by rituals like the Moonchild rituals. Blood sacrifices and human sacrifices are always required for this level of magic.

Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) was a Satanist who was a 33rd degree Scottish Rite Freemason. He also was a leader in a number of other Masonic rites as well as an OTO leader, a chief in Stella Matutina, and a MI-6 (Br. overseas intelligence) agent. His writings have been important within 20th century Satanism and with black magicians. He wrote Moonchild which was first published in 1917. The idea of the Moonchild is that via black magic a perfect soul can be captured. The belief in reincarnation, which is prevalent among the Illuminati and Satanic groups, lends itself to the belief that souls compete for a particular embryo. On page 107- 108 of Moonchild the idea is expressed, "To produce a man who should not be bound up in his heredity, and should have the environment which they desired for him." This perfect soul in a proper person is called Homunculus. The magical work upon which this is based is said to be derived from Bacon, Albertus Magnus and Paracelsus who were all reported in occult circles to have captured souls and placed them into brass statues. The Hittites, the people of Asia Minor and Syria have long sought the ability to create a superman and a superwoman.

The Illuminati’s inside occult history places the Hittites in their ancestry. Clear back in 1917, long before superman appeared in comics and movies, Aleister Crowley was writing about a Superman. The magical idea is to capture a soul from the 4th dimension. In the book Moonchild, the villa used to produce a Moonchild was called "The Butter-fly-Net". The Monarch Project then which is named after the Monarch butterfly is also an allusion to the Moonchild project where Butterflies are an allusion to souls (what Christians call demonic spirits).

The actual rituals carried out to create a Moonchild are described in detail in three of Crowley ’s writings. A vague description of the rituals can be seen by reading the book Moonchild. The ritual took place at a villa nicknamed The Butterfly Net. The villa was really an occult temple laid out in sacred geometrics. It had figures of satyrs, fauns, and nymphs. It had statues of Artemis. Lots of silver objects and crescents and 9-pointed stars were at the villa, because these objects all relate to the Moon in magic.

The woman who was pregnant was surrounded by objects related to the moon. The moon's influence was repeatedly invoked. A small triangular silver altar to Artemis was used. There was a sacred spring where the woman was washed. The number 9 which is sacred to the moon was used along with its square 81. Prayers were made to Artemis, and there was the reenactment of the capture of Diana by Pan. The woman was coached to identify herself with what is known as Grandmother Moon (in the book she simply is called the Moon or Diana) by identifying her thoughts and actions with the deities one is wanting to invoke.

The creation of the Moonchildren within the Monarch Project involves high level magic by the circle of Illuminati black magicians involved with a particular individual's programming. It should be noted that Grande Master and Grande Dame alters will understand demonology, but the sections (levels) of alter above them, are not informed.

One of the biggest secrets kept from most of the slave's alters is that their System was demonized while a fetus. First, this would give religious front alters the information they need to get them on the right track towards healing, and it could also adversely affect the programming lies of some of the front alters who don't realize how premeditated all the trauma and torture is. The front alters of victims themselves remember the cover story that the moon children were produced via torture in the cages as little children.

The Illuminati have also planned that every one of the ten commandments of God will be violated in their favor with the child. They prefer the child to be born out of wedlock so that it is a bastard. This breaks God's commandment on adultery, and also gives them more leverage to destroy the child's self-esteem. This entire plan involves generational curses which are spoken and unspoken.

During Illuminati ceremonies, Ceremonial pacts which concern having the child out of wedlock to mock God are made. While the Illuminati destroy any godly spiritual foundation, they are creating a solid rock hard foundation of "love" (adoration or idolatry) within the new born upon which they will build the programming. The second commandment is "Do not take the Lord's name in vain". In the Black Mass, the names of God are invoked to get spirits with blasphemous names such as Yahweh Elohim. Most parts of the little child will never even hear the Lord's name--he will only hear the name of his master, who will someday be presented to him as "God". The hand that rocks the cradle rules the world. The child is being bonded to his future programmers.

Much later, great attention will be given to set up staged events to insure that the victim being programmed hates God.

In Utero Traumatization

The formal Monarch Mind-Control project was developed from observations of high level Satanic families. These families had no qualms about the concept of traumatizing the fetus. Italian generational witchcraft is called the Ways of the Strega. These generational occult bloodlines, esp. in Tuscany and Naples , are very much into generational ancestor spirits. These were the ones that Aleister Crowley went to learn how to create Moon Children.

Remember, that Italian and German generational Illuminati families were studied by the Italian fascists and the German Nazis to develop a scientific understanding of mind control. The Illuminati families in Germany were secretly and scientifically studied in the 1920s to determine what exactly was happening and how to systematically improve the Illuminati's control over the people they were already programming.

Discipline and training has been lavished for centuries upon the children of these elite bloodlines. The contribution of the 20th century was the systematic collection and scientific study of all the various methodologies into one cohesive programming package. This research was begun on a large scale in 1940s, and has been systematically added to since then. Families who wanted dissociative children learned that dissociative babies could be born if the child in the womb is tortured. Thin needles are inserted through the mother into the fetus to prick the preborn child. Mothers, who are pregnant with children to be programmed, are also severely traumatized during their pregnancy with a whole assortment of traumas, which simultaneously traumatizes the babies which they carry. For instance, the father may purposely abandon the pregnant mother in the middle of a forest, or blast the mother with loud frightening music, and then follow this up with love.

G. Foundation Step 2. The Trauma of a Premature Birth

A premature birth is important because the naturally occurring events around a premature birth insure that the child is naturally traumatized. Studies (such as Fenaroff, 1972) have found that only 7-8% of the live births were premature, but 25 to 40% (about a third) of all battered children were born premature. It appears that the satanic cult involvement with causing premature births may be reflected in this type of statistic. Some of the Illuminati-induced premature births have made the newspapers, because the preemies set records for being born so small.

Premature labor is induced-the fact that a premature birth happens is not natural, but the traumas that occur to the preemie are. Specialized drugs (not just the exogenous oxytocins normally used to induce labor) are used on a mother to place her in a deeper trance than a twilight sleep. (Remember, that the underdeveloped liver & kidneys of the preemie make it difficult to naturally purge meds from the preemie's body.) The mother will begin the process of delivery at this time. However, the mother must be brought out of this deep sleep in order to push the baby through the birth canal. The baby is too weak to help with the birthing process. This is the hardest type of birth that there is, because the baby is not able to help the mother in the small ways that a full term baby would. The strain on the heart of the mother is extreme. The Illuminati have learned that a mother can usually give 2 or 3 preemie births like this before she risks death to try it again. If this type of birth is repeated too often the woman's heart will fail. This is why the Illuminati will have their breeders give 2 or 3 preemies for programming, and then have their breeders switch to full term babies which are used for sacrifice. If we describe how breeders and babies are used we must speak in general terms, because each bloodline, each baby, each mother is a separate case. However, there are some patterns that should be pointed out. A bloodline will often want a female's first born male to be sacrificed to their belief system and the Lilith programming which is given the alters who function within the Kabballistic Tree of Life which is built in during Mengele's programming for the deeper sections (levels) of alters which are trained in Illuminati black magic. (This subject will be dealt with later.) The Illuminati breeders may be women who were preemies themselves. Sometimes they skip a generation with the trauma of a premature birth to get a mother with a good sound heart. Some of these breeders have excellent bloodlines, but during their own preemie birth their brains were damaged and they don't have the super-intelligence the Illuminati wants for programming. However, they still need to have had enough creativity to have allowed themselves to become a programmed multiple. When breeders are used by the Illuminati to obtain babies for programming, the Illuminati selects women who are themselves programmed multiples. They are used for breeders, because genetically they have genes for intelligence, even though they aren't brilliant. These women of lesser intelligence will only make the beginning Priestess level of the women and might obtain a rank in that level of High Priestess. All these women, no matter their circumstances have been made to believe that offering their babies to Satan is the highest honor, so many of them do not have normal qualms about their job. It is important to interject that the Illuminati are Luciferians, but worship Lucifer/Satan. Satanists are organizationally a separate set up, with a separate history, but both groups have many common practices, including child sacrifice. (There is a science in how the Illuminati hides bloodlines, sometimes families are used as brooders for other important bloodlines. It will only be mentioned in passing here, because it is relevant to the selection process of how children are slated to be programmed. The Illuminati is fully aware of rare bloodtypes and other genetic properties that run in bloodlines, and breed individuals to get certain traits, and they also take into consideration that certain weaknesses such as weak hearts or AB- negative blood with no RH factor will call for special attention.) The criteria for non-Illuminati cults for their breeders is much lower. Often these are the cults' leftovers. That is the difference between the good breeding of the Illuminati, and the degenerate thinking of the openly satanic groups. The Satanic groups which are organized into hubs, and some of the lesser occult groups like the KKK., have women which are kept under lock and key to serve as breeders. Breeders are kept from having outside talents that would help them function in the outside world. Some are not allowed to have driver's licenses and other basics. How does the occult world manage to work things out within a hospital setting? The independent satanic cults may not use hospitals. I have worked with enough first hand information to be familiar with some of the cults which have home births attended by their own midwives. An example is the Satanic cult in Seminole & Garvin counties of Oklahoma where their section houses in the countryside have had unrecorded home births for years. First hand information also confirms that hospitals in Tacoma , Vancouver , Portland , and San Francisco are used by the Illuminati for premature births. By extension, it can be understood that many hospitals across the United States are now staffed with a large number of nurses and doctors who are loyal to the occult world (called by insiders the "Network") headed by the Illuminati. The preemies are attended to by satanic witches who are nurses, many of them multiples themselves. Further on in this book, we will cover how the Illuminati is turning out a great number of pediatricians via programming to insure control over the preliminary programming stages. If the occult world wants a mother to see her preemie, the occult nurses on night shifts will quietly let cult mothers in to bond with their preemies. There is a lot of corruption that goes on unnoticed too. These doctors and nurses have taken lots of preemies for the Network to use for programming experiments. If the mother is a low income mother, the Freemasons will let them use their network of hospitals for free. Some of these premature children are described as dead and taken with the excuse that "they can't breathe". They then are used for programming experimentation. The Illuminati, working in conjunction with other occult groups, schemes up methods by which they can get other people's babies. This gives them additional children to work on. By giving low income mothers free births at Masonic hospitals, the occult world can later contrive some reason for stripping a low income mother who is on drugs of her guardianship of her baby. They take these children, some of them drug babies, for programming uses. The mothers of different animals are examples of how important touch is to any baby. A mother cow, or dog will nudge its offspring soon after it is born. They will also begin to teach the baby immediately after it is born. Studies have learned that most mammals lick their newborn, which has been observed to be critical for the healthy physical development of the baby animal. The Illuminati want the same development for their offspring. Research showed that rocking and stroking preemies helps them develop motor skills and respiratory functions. It takes the place of the licking animals give their offspring. The stroking even helps cardiac (heart) functions during the preemies sleep. Giving stimulus to a part of the brain will cause that part of the brain to grow. Although the premature child cannot speak, it still craves attention. Even if it hurts, the child wants--even needs-- to be held. The child can be touched, and it will crave that touching even if it hurts. Already the mixing of love and pain is beginning. Their skin will be thin and sensitive to touch. It will hurt to be touched and preemies can even have their skin bruised by a sheet. A premature birth will create a fighter spirit within the child. If the child does not have a strong instinct for survival, and does not fight to survive the premature birth, then it will not fight to survive during the tortures of the programming. By having a premature birth, the selection process has already started. Which child will be a fighter? The preemie will be emotionally deprived of getting to suck on a real mother's breast, but will be fed with an eye-dropper or bottle. Often a transdisciplinary team will be created at the hospital to take charge of the preemie. They will run one of the various standard assessments, perhaps the Neonatal Behavioral Assessment Scale (NBAS) or the Bayley Scale of Infant Development. Objectives will then be developed for the short and the long term based on each infant's identified needs.

The NBAS will look at

a. the ability to shut out disturbing stimuli,
b. responsiveness to auditory & visual stimuli,
c. muscle tone & motor skills,
d. irritability,
e. capacity to cuddle,
f. skin color,
g. reflexes. Every part of the preemie's body will be violated.

A Catheter will likely be put in the little baby's bladder, because preemies' urinary tracts tend to close up, and bed sores must be avoided too. They will also usually be given I.V.s. This will give them more fluid to eliminate. This is healthy for the Preemie to keep their kidneys well. However, it also serves as part of the natural traumatic process. Some will be given oxygen. The preemie will be adjusting to the light, temperature, sound, humidity and gravity of the new world it has been thrust into. Their hearts will have problems (some of these like Mitro-valve prolapse may stay with the child for a life-time), and also often difficulties with their lungs. Studies on preemies have shown that they tend to have a sober affect with few smiles, and then the smiles come only if their eyes are averted from who is in front of them. They are less social and they depend upon the primary person (usually a caretaker at the hospital) to give them assistance and encouragement to interact socially. (Als & Brazelton, 1981) When the child is born, the Illuminati make sure that its first view is of one of the people who will help program it. Often this is a Grande Dame within the hierarchy, but it might also be a male programmer. Over the following months, the programmer figure will repeatedly talk to the child in loving cooing tones. The most loving soothing words are all that is permitted at this stage. The child is being naturally bonded to the programmer. Mengele was the best of experts at this type of bonding. The programmers talk to each other in terms like, "this child is a piece of clay." They view themselves as the potters to that clay. When the Preemie is born it copes with the pain by being dissociative. The soothing voice of the programmer is said and heard in hypnotic tones. The hypnotic voice of the programmer is taking advantage of the dissociative trance-like state of the child in pain. The hypnotic voice is grooming the child from the womb. Hypnotic cues are placed into the child's mind even at this young age. Hypnotic cues use all the senses. In reality, the programmers are even hypnotizing the little babies. Soon the preemie's eyes will open when the preemie senses the presence of the programmer in the room. The preemie's eyes will follow the programmer around as he or she walks around the child's room. The child's eyes are following the voice of the programmer. Ronald Shor, a respected researcher into hypnotism, wrote in the Amer. Journal of Psychotherapy, Vol. 13, 1959, pp. 582-602, "Only in the fetus can one conceive of an ideally pure trance state, that is, a state in which there is a total absence of a functioning reality-orientation. In the developing organism in utero the first momentary experiences exist concretely, independent of any structured background of experience. The only organization that can take place at first is that which is genetically given. But except for this natural, ontogenetically undeveloped state there is always some degree of structuring." In other words, if you want to hypnotize someone, the ideal is when they are a fetus, because the baby soon begins to get a grasp of reality--that reality gives the child something to compare with what the hypnotist is wanting to program in. Notice, also the awareness on Shor's part, that there is some structuring of the mind done naturally via genetics. This again underscores the importance of why the programmers like multi-generational victims--because they pass via genetics some of the mental structuring needed for the smooth programming of the next generation. By looking into the preemie's eyes and talking, the programmer begins to teach the baby. The preemie learns that its primary caretaker is its controller. The controller controls its access to its bottle and everything else in its life. The Illuminati are teaching the child to view its controller as God from the first second it is born. They want the child to worship the programmer. The programmer is literally saving the preemie's life. By talking & cooing to the child, the programmer's voice becomes more real to the child than itself. The controllers begin stretching the mind of the child as soon as it is born. The two or three people who control the early baby's life begin teaching it with hypnotic voices as soon as it is born. Subliminal tapes are used to teach the baby immediately. The goal is to teach the child to read and speak much earlier than other children. In the Monarch Program's controlled setting, children who can read at six months, can still be programmed for social skills. In an uncontrolled setting, children taught this earlier tend to have their intellectual skills outstrip their social skills, and they develop serious problems with their peers and schools. Children can be hypnotized easier than adults, but it has to be done differently, especially if the child is preverbal. Rubbing the child, stroking its head, and patting the child help soothe the child into relaxing. The hypnotist must not make rapid tonal changes in his voice. These are reasons why gentle Illuminati women programmers are such an asset at this stage. The newborn child is taught obedience. It is allowed to cry to develop its lungs, but at some early point it is taught not to cry. Tape is placed over the child's mouth, and it is told over and over "no" with the index finger gesturing. They get approval if they don't cry. This type of programming is called behavior modification, and will be further covered in a later chapter. The baby is rigidly taught total obedience. In review of step 3, one tried and often used technique is to have the baby born premature. The baby must undergo lots of trauma, and must learn to be a fighter to survive. Babies have been taken by induced labor or C-Section at premature ages intentionally to insure that the baby will suffer trauma. When the premature baby leaves the comfort of the womb it experiences trauma. By taking the baby prematurely, it also gives the programmers an advanced start on the programming.

Foundation Step 3. Love Bombing the Child Until about Eighteen Months

The third stage is smothering the child in love. The love is given so that it can be taken away in the fourth stage. Unless love is given so that it can be taken away, there is no trauma. Illuminati children are never spanked in the first year and a half. They are very lovingly controlled. (This pattern of smothering new converts in love called "love bombing" in preparation for removing that love and acceptance to get obedience is done by some cults to new members too.) The Illuminati child learns about their body. Their bowels are allowed to function properly and they are kept meticulously clean. They must be taught to appreciate their body, before the trauma of stripping them of everything they value. Dissociation does not have to be taught to the child, because they have a genetic leaning toward it, and the premature birth has taught them to dissociate. All in all, the child has been allowed only to build a relationship with its programmer(s). The child has learned to trust, obey and adore the programmer during the first 18 months of its life. Its mind is lining up with hypnotic suggestions, cues, and is being obedient.

Foundation Step 4: Fracturing the Mind

The fourth stage is built upon the foundation of dissociation created in the first & second stages, and the love created in the third stage. (The demonology of the first step also helps pull in demons associated with programming, tunneling in the mind, and multiplicity, which are used in the fourth foundational step.) Often in the fourth step, the child's mind will fracture along the same dissociation fracture lines that the trauma of the premature birth created. If the child is not a premature baby, it will need some additional help to want to dissociate. The child can have its senses overwhelmed repeatedly to the point that it learns to react to its surroundings by what appears on the outside as a numbness, and mentally is simply dissociation. Everything imaginable can be used to overwhelm the caged little child's senses and create dissociation. Rotten faul odors of the child's excrement, of amnonia, and rotten food while it huddles in its cage will overwhelm the child's sense of smell. Being fed blood overwhelms the sense of taste. The chanting of the Programmers dressed in Satanic garb, banging noises, rock music and the electric hum, and ultrasonic stimulation overwhelms the child's sense of hearing. The child's natural developing sense of shapes is taken advantage of by spinning the child and making it feel like it is going to fall. The child will also be deprived of sleep and drugged. Together all this will provide the dissociative base for splitting the core. The fourth stage is to strip the child of everything nice and lovely in the world. The child is caged and tormented by electric shock. The child's senses will be overloaded and they will become numb. Eyewitnesses have described these hundreds of numbed children as "zombies". This stage and the programming put in after the foundational dissociation is created will form the next chapter. In the fourth step, the child is starved, cold and naked. When they finally see their beloved master or beloved adult caretaker appear after suffering from 42 to 72 hours, they are excited and they dissociate the pain of the previous hours of deprivation. Help appears to be on the scene. At that point the programmer/beloved adult shows his/her most vicious side, and the child in order to deal with how this loving caretaker has not only rejected them but is now hurting them dissociates along the same fractures of dissociation created by the trauma of the premature birth. The details of how the mind is split will be dealt with further in the next chapter. In review of steps 3 and 4, part of the programming is to have the primary initial abuser bond with the child. A close loving bond is needed between a child and the initial abuser so that a clean split is created when the initial mind-splitting trauma is carried out. The clean split occurs when the child is confronted with two irreconcilable opposing viewpoints of someone who is important to them. The child can't reconcile the two extremely opposite views of the same person, one being a loving caretaker, and the other being the worst kind of abuser. The person the child trusted the most is the person the child fears the most. Some professional therapists have come to realize that this is how the core is split. Jody Lienhart, a multiple herself, in her Ph.d dissertation correctly identifies the double bind of having two extremely opposite views of the most important person in the child's life as the fundamental splitting mechanism. She writes in her 1983 dissertation on p. 6-7, "Implicit in each of the studies of childhood trauma is the pervasive nature of paradoxical communication. Frequently, this double bind communication style appears during the formative, preverbal stages of childhood in which the interpretation of these messages is confused. This results in insufficient experimental learning which would allow translation of the confused appropriate messages... " This study presents the theoretical assumption that multiple personality is developed through early childhood state-dependent learning. [That means that learning is linked to a state of mind.] Furthermore, it is hypothesized that this learning occurs as a result of the hypnoidal effects of childhood trauma such as abuse and sexual molestation. The child, unable to translate the paradoxical nature of the messages he receives, fragments into a trance state. Furthermore, it is suggested that memories incorporated during each of these hypnoidal experiences are similar to knowledge acquired during state-dependent learning. Lienhart used her own memories as the basis for the type of trauma that suggests in her dissertation could create MPD. That trauma for her was her uncle forcing his penis into her mouth and almost choking her. The child is not in a position to flee, so the mind dissociates. She happened to have experienced a common trauma used to split a core. In order to split the core, the mind has to be trained to dissociate. The ability to dissociate is obtained by being genetically bred from dissociative parents, by having a premature birth/traumatic birth if possible, and by the conditioning done at the original programming center (between 18 mo. & 3 years) where intermittent electric shock along with the all the senses being overwhelmed, along with sleep deprivation and drugs create a dissociative base to split the core. The initial sadistic abuse to split the mind, is called "severing the core." Each person's original mind is like an open computer. The original computerlike mind in order to continue working, when confronted with overwhelming trauma, splits a part of the mind off and walls it up with amnesia barriers. From this area further splits can be made. One of the major technical feats to make computers useable was to figure out how to be able to wall off and protect memory in the computer from being accessed and used. When they succeeded in engineering isolated memory the other problems were minor. When someone has been traumatized from the fetus on up--there is no single core such as therapists usually look for. The Core for the programmers is the unsplit essence of the mind which drives or provides energy for the System. This Core is not an alter, but is an essence that the programmers hide. The Core is not an alter. The programmers do not touch the core in the fashion they do alters. They hide the core. Part of the drama that is carried out during the entire victim's life, is that their mind tries to protect this untouched core essense of their mind from being touched. If they think anyone, the therapist or the abuser are going to tamper with it, the mind and its parts will protect that core. As strange as it may seem, when a therapist talks about integration, they often scare the victim's mind that the integrity of the core and its innocence will be violated, and the victim's mind does everything it can to avoid contaminating the integrity of their core, i.e. they sabotage therapy and return to their programmer who understands their safety issue. Initially, in the 1940s, the Illuminati researched what would happen if the Core was allowed to meet up with the alters, and they discovered that the brain's essence or energy will work to pull the mind back together. Therefore, the Core is separated and hidden from all the alters. In Illuminati systems, it is usually placed in the middle of its first splits, which are also sources of energy and which are well hidden. They are dehumanized parts which function as gems, which are programmed as in the Alice In Wonderland story to change shape and color if they are approached, which rarely happens. These parts will be discussed in other chapters including how a system is structured. A dissociative carousel is also attached around the core. After the core is hidden, the rest of the alters will be programmed not to look for the energy/synthesizing part of the system. The real "core" or primal part of the unconscious will have an adult representative of it in a Monarch System. This primal part has a Toddler switch upon which all the programming is built. An event(s) in the child's life is used to build the programming upon. The Illuminati know about the various base programs and the foundational traumas, and some of this is kept secret from programmers who come from front organizations of the Illuminati. There are a number of parts which will be called "cores"--simply because they were early parts, but there is no intact single person who represents all of the mind. All that is left are fragments of the mind, each segment walled off with amnesia. The alters who perceive themselves to be "cores" are alters who have been programmed to think they are the core alter. The mind has a way of knowing the truth, and these alters may realize that their programmed story line is suspicious, but they won't know what is "fishy" about it, so they tend to be in denial about their identity. These substitute or mock cores will often be in denial that they are even MPD. In some cases, where Scripture was used to program with, the core was told that it would be "blessed by multiplying as the seeds in the stars of heaven and the sands of the sea" if "thou hast obeyed my voice", which is misuse of Gen. 22:17-18. Alters which represent the "sands of the sea" pop up if an alter tries to get to the core. (See chapter 10k about scriptures used in programming.

The Initial Splits

The initial part of a person's mind before splitting occurs is called the core. Theoretically, the core makes parts to protect itself. The initial splitting is called "splitting the core" and there is an art or science in knowing how to split a core. However, I disagree with the standard core model". I believe it is more accurate to say that the initial splits are stronger because they somehow are integrated closer to the mind. Later splits made from later splits, are in a sense less connected to the full mind. During a torture session, the initial splits are always the strongest. So when they torture someone and get 20 personality splits, they will use perhaps the first 13 and discard the rest or use them for single task jobs. Discard areas are created in the mind---these are variously called concentration camps, garbage dumps, or whatever. The victim's mind is trained to create these dumping grounds for the splits that the programmers don't want to use. As the programming got refined, so did the methods for discarding unwanted splits. In children, who receive programming at a very early age, the initial splits may be done in the womb. If the fourth step is carried out in a timely fashion at 18 months after the in utero trauma and a premature birth, then during the first 18 months the mind will never have a chance to pull itself together. If however, the fourth step is not done at around 18 months and no further trauma is maintained, the child's mind will pull back together by the age of two and a half. The initial splits are the most energetic and the easiest to manipulate. In Illuminati systems these early parts are dehumanized into thinking they are gems and crystals. These gems and crystals then "power" the entire mind-control system that is programmed over the following years into the child's mind. The gems are not perceived as alters, so the proxy core wouldn't integrate with what is perceived as an inanimate object. The proxy core is allowed to want to move toward health with a therapist, it is programmed to move toward healing, but to lead the therapist away from the true core. She or he is programmed to believe it is the true core. The real core & its first splits, which are the gems, are placed hypnotically at the mind's deepest levels--in an area of the mind few therapists ever search. As outlined above, other initial splits are led to believe they are cores. Part of the reason there is a illusive search on the part of therapists for a core, is that people have not accepted the reality that there is no one person (personality) in charge of a Monarch System who can simply decide to quit coping with life by stopping their MPD. Many therapists want to believe that some person is the "real" person and the rest are simply subordinate alters created to handle the core's trauma. I believe this is an inadequate understanding of what is happening. The elements that make up who a person is--i.e. personality elements such as memories, are fractured. These fragments have in turn often been built up into full-blown personalities with all the elements of full-blown personalities. There is no "real" person, just as if you smash a mirror into a thousand pieces, there is no single piece that is the "real" original mirror but rather simply fragments that can in turn operate as mirrors. However, there is still a primal self. Early splits are led to believe they are the core. The cult will hide the initial splits beyond recognition. Some of the third wave of splits will be created into what are named Silence alters. They are trained never to talk. (At least some Illuminati alter systems call these early splits "Silences".) These early splits are then hidden and used to blackmail other alters who were created later. The other alters, who are formed after the Silences (who are pre-language alters) are convinced that if they don't behave the Silences will have something drastic happen to them. Some of the pre-talking Silence alters are then placed in places such as Moloch's Temple to keep as hostages.

Alters are created down the road to guard the Silences. They guard in the full sense, controlling the Silences, and any access to the Silences. Since the Silences are early splits they are more important for the full integration of the mind, which the programmers want to insure doesn't happen. Probes are pushed into the brain at the base of the skull, in a very precise and methodical way during the initial core trauma. This is done to create guards for the carousel. For more about the early primal splits see the section on Carousel in Chapt. 7 on structuring, and the next chapter on how the trauma is done. Because the Programmers will tamper with the alters so much to get the satanic alters and the special purpose alters which they want, they need to use some of the first splits as front alters. They need strong front alters who have a sense of who they are. If they waited until later to get front alters, the alters wouldn't be as strong and would have already lost their identity. The 3rd wave of alters created often will in turn be split to provide alters to build the front section of a System. The front "cores" which are decoys will be set up with opposites, one alter will love the programmer the other will hate him. One alter will trust the programmer, the other will fear the programmer. Therapists spend all their time trying to reconcile this conflict which is placed out front as a decoy to keep them busy. Meanwhile, the gems along with the rest of the loyal cult alters will have the ability to create whatever is needed within the System. The entire system of alters is always shifting and many of the true alters are in hiding. The person is made to feel like he or she has been sliced like meat much as a bolagna slicer makes slices of bologni. This layering program is very dangerous and severe. Overlays of all kinds, demonic, hypnotic illusion, etc. are layered over real alters so that even the identity of what is a real alter is hidden. The point is that decoys which keep therapists busy are created, while the entire structure shifts and rearranges and restructures itself to keep itself hidden. Often the Illuminati encourages early front splits to learn about Christ and legitimately accept Him at a very early age. This acceptance will be used as the basis of the trauma to create strong satanic alters. Just as the handler will bond with the child to split it, the handler will allow some early parts of the System to bond with Christ in order to enhance the trauma that "God" will do to the System. This also allows the handlers to have a balancing point. Without the full range of capabilities within a Slave alter system-- a dangerous imbalance toward evil could propel the slave into situations where they don't have the ability to succeed. In many ways, the slave's world becomes a microcosm of the real world, having a mixture of adult and child alters, Christian, secular, and Satanic alters. Another thing which happens with the first splits is the creation of mirror images. Some of the time, in the early splitting procedures, the child creates extra splits. In the early stages, these strong extra splits are made into mirror images of regular alters. Some of these mirror images are known to be placed into the mind before any splitting occurs. As long as the victim's dissociation exists, the potential for mischief exists for the programmers. This is why integration can be a positive goal for a Monarch multiple if the deprogrammer knows what he is doing. After suffering decades of the most horrible traumas imaginable and the most severe abuse as slaves, most slaves have minds which are habitually dissociative. These older minds of slaves require a miracle to cease remaining permanently dissociative. It does take a great deal of brain energy to maintain the amnesic walls, and the minds of people in their 70's and 80's will stop maintaining those walls and these elderly will begin to remember. But by that time, they are considered senile, and their memories are discontented.

Further Selection Considerations

The Illuminati have their own criteria as to who they select.

The preference is that they be blue-eyed blond Caucasians and not to have obvious physical defects or visible scars. The Freemasons also reject physically defective candidates. After they test the child for its intelligence, creativity, and dissociative skills, they will bring the children before the Grande Druid Council. Formal approval of girls and boys into the Illuminati is done at a presentation by the Queen Mother and the Grand Druid Council at age three. However, the children have already been inspected by the Queen Mother before a formal physical inspection. Sexuality is an important issue for the physical part of the Illuminati inspection of little boys and girls. This is part of the physical criteria, as well as the physical health of the child. Creativity, strength, bloodlines, and intelligence will also be taken into consideration. The standard Trauma-based mind control which produces programmed multiple personalities is started on children before the age of 6. After the age of 6, it is difficult to follow this type of MPD/DID programming. However, this does not mean people aren’t programmed after age 6. Trauma-based personality splits remain isolated in the mind better than hypnotic-based personality splits, but most people can be hypnotized to create alter personalities. Some SRA survivors have programming but don’t have alter systems. A rare few do not have systems, but only a few dissociative states, such as a night self, and a day self. A wide variety of approaches have been experimented and operationally carried out. This book will concentrate more on the Monarch Systems which are created by programming infants. This is usually the most devastating, traumatic, controlling, effective approach. The Catholic Church has long said give me a child by the age of 5 and they will be Catholic. The Catholic Church is one of the largest parts of the network that carries out Monarch Mind Control. It is a fact, that if the Jesuits can place in their programming--what they call the "Keys to the Kingdom" Monarch Mind Control within a child, they will control his destiny. One Jesuit priest is on record as stating that there is nothing he can’t make anyone do with torture. The Jesuits developed torture to a fine art in the inquisition. Imagine the expertise they have brought to the Monarch Program which begins torturing children at 18 months onward with every sophisticated torture device invented. If the Jesuits brag that they can convince adults to do anything via torture, what about baby children? While the Monarch programming is done with children, one variety of it is done on adults. Adults who are selected are also chosen on the basis of the ability to disassociate and their availability. There are certain tests given by the branches of the military which identify people who disassociate well. Their "Cumes" --that is their accumulated school records are also examined. This type of person may be singled out and sent to get programming. Some of these persons end up in the various intelligence agencies, where they are trapped for their entire lifetimes. Some of the victims of the programming are war vets, Americans who were POWs, people in mental hospitals, people who just happened to work for Illuminati connected companies, and people going into acting. The intelligence agencies often begin mind-control on adult individuals when an individual joins their organization. If an intelligence or military group can exercise a high level of external control over an individual, they may not need the level of programming that some of the occult cults and the Illuminati need. The Illuminati place their membership among the world at large, and with the requirement that centuries of secrecy be maintained. This secrecy can only be maintained by insuring that strong early programming is done to create fail safe systems with large number of dark alters and heavy layers of demonic forces. (Many will scoff at the concept of demons being layered in, but whatever name one wants to call these forces, they are being layered in, and exert a powerful force behind the programming.) The programming will break down if memories are recovered, so demonic imps are layered in to protect the memories from coming out. The entire phenomena will be gone into great detail and explained in rational terms in the course of this book. No matter how a therapist explains these demonic imps, they need to be dealt with if the memories are not to be protected. There are various methods for controlled memory retrieval--journaling, hypnosis, safe rooms with screens, deliverance etc. which we will not go into at this point, because we are providing the recipe, not the solution. While most Illuminati victims are in-house from their own occult bloodlines, a certain renegade group of Illuminati programmers have proved to the Illuminati that they can adequately program non-Illuminati children. I am familiar with some of the people involved in this, but will not mention names. What we have covered in this chapter is how premeditated, deliberate, and precise the plans are by the programmers for the lives of these Mind-controlled slaves. The programming places their lives on very rigid scripts. There are different uses for mind-controlled slaves. What applies to one slave may not apply to another one. Not everyone is a good candidate for programming. Sometimes only part of a family will be programmed. Whatever the particulars about the programming, it will be sufficient to place the individual’s mind totally under the control of the handler. We have also given the details of how the candidates are selected, tested, prepared and the programming initiated. The next chapter covers more on how trauma & fear serve as the base of mind-control.

Chapter 2: Science # 2 The Traumatization and Torture of The Victim

The basis for the success of the Monarch mind-control programming is that different personalities or personality parts called alters can be created who do not know each other, but who can take the body at different times. The amnesia walls that are built by traumas, form a protective shield of secrecy that protects the abusers from being found out, and prevents the front personalities who hold the body much of the time to know how their System of alters is being used. The shield of secrecy allows cult members to live and work around other people and remain totally undetected. The front alters can be wonderful Christians, and the deeper alters can be the worst type of Satanic monster imaginable--a Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect.

A great deal is at stake in maintaining the secrecy of the intelligence agency or the occult group which is controlling the slave. The success rate of this type of programming is high but when it fails, the failures are discarded through death. Each trauma and torture serves a purpose. A great deal of experimentation and research went into finding out what can and can’t be done. Charts were made showing how much torture a given body weight at a given age can handle without death. Now this is why the Nazis did all those strange concentration camp experiments, where they tested how quickly people would freeze or die from various traumas. It was for mind control! The abusers are very specific and scientific in their torture. A lab technician with a clip board walks around monitoring the e for the children when they receive their initial traumas. Heart monitors are closely watched. Still many children died from the programming. The programmers learned that when a child rolled up in a fetal position it had given up the will to live. They learned to time how fast this would occur to get an idea how far to push the child. Parents in eastern United States were taken to Harvard University for training to teach them how much trauma they could give their children at home before they would die. After the children got back from their initial programming they were to receive daily traumas to keep them dissociative.

A The Initial Splites and Initial Programming Done At China Lake, CA.

The primary or initial torture for many children in western U.S. was done at China Lake which officially has gone under the designations Naval Ordinance Test Station (pronounced in short as NOTS), Naval Weapons Center, NWC, Ridgecrest (the town nearby), and Inyo-kern (the area). The address of Nimitz Hospital is the code "232 Naval Air Weapons Station". The base was set up to test "new weapons". Evidently, the Navy decided that mind controlled people were an important weapon to test. Most of the "new weapons" created at China Lake were for the most part human robots turned out in large numbers. The Monarch Mind Control was carried out in large airplane hangers on the base which have been able to house thousands of tiny cages just large enough for human babies. Lots of 1,000 babies was a small batch. According to people who worked in the hangers helping program, many batches were 2,000 or 3,000 babies. Many survivors remember the thousands of cages housing little children from ceiling to floor. The cages were hot wired (electrified on the ceiling, bottom and sides) so that the children who are locked inside can receive horrific electric shocks to their bodies to groom their minds to split into multiple personalities. These cages are called Woodpecker Grids.

The victim sees a flash of light when high D.C. voltage is applied. Later, this flash of light is used with hypnotic induction to make the person think they are going into another dimension when they are blasted with high voltage. In the Peter Pan programming, the Programmers tell the slaves that this is "riding the light." One of the popular traumas after the small child has endured the Woodpecker Grid cages for days is to rape it. The rape is intentionally brutal so that it will be as traumatic as possible. Many of the technical people on the base are civilians. This is in part because part of the research involves mind-control, and Illuminati civilian mind-control experts have come and gone from the base. The California Institute of Technology at Pasadena is intimately connected to China Lake ’s research (and by the way to the Illuminati). Also much of the work at the facility is for the intelligence agencies and not the military. Intelligence assets are often civilians. One of the things developed in the California Universities and then implemented at China Lake was color programming, which will be covered later in this book. Red and green were discovered to be the most visible colors for programming. Various colored flashing lights were used in programming at NOTS. Survivors of the programming all remember flashing lights. The use of flashing lights has been introduced into American culture by the CIA. If a person goes into bars and places where bands play, you will notice multi-colored lights flashing. The flashing lights create disassociation, especially in people who are programmed.

How Children Are Transported To A Major Programming Site

A list of major programming centers is given in an appendix, along with each site's programming specialties. In this chapter, an example of just one of the bases used for early programming is given, the large and very secret China Lake facility in California near Death Valley . The children are brought into the China Lake NWC (aka NOTS) base by trains, planes and cars. A number of the small airfields which fly these children into China Lake have been identified. One, which is no longer in use for moving children, was a private air strip at Sheridan , OR which was beside a large lumber mill. The lumber mill had an agreement to secretly house the children who had their mouths tapped. Neighbors in the area were bought off, and warned that if they talked they would be in trouble for broaching national security. The area has lots of mills joined by train tracks, which were used to shuttle the children around. Tied into this network was a Catholic Monastery which lies between Sheridan and McMinnville, close to the rail network. The Union Train Station in Portland , OR has underground tunnels where children were temporarily warehoused in cages before continuing on their journey. The Jesuits were active in this part of the child procurement. Catholic adoption agencies (which are many), nuns who get pregnant, third world parents, and parents who will sell their children were all sources of children for programming. When one thinks about how many corrupt people there are and how many towns and cities are on the West Coast, and how many children are produced by Satanic breeders, illegal aliens and other parents who'd rather have the money than children and the reader begins to realize how procuring batches of 1,000 or 2,000 children was no problem for the Illuminati working through intelligence agencies such as the CIA, NIS, DIA, FBI, and FEMA. The Finders, a joint CIA/FBI group procured children for the Network for years. Some of the children needed for programming are to be used for sacrifices to traumatize those being programmed. (The names of some of the people who work at procuring children for programming/sacrifice have been released in Fritz Springmeier's monthly newsletter.) The secret FEMA airstrip at Santa Rosa has planes landing and leaving all night. Some of these flights go east and then land at the secret 1800-square-mile China Lake Naval Research Base, and are believed to carry children for programming. This airstrip is called the SANTA ROSA AIR CENTER . When I tried to get FAA information on this airstrip they played stupid as if it didn't exist, yet it is in operation. Near Santa Rosa is the Bohemian Grove, southwest of Santa Rosa , is this air center which is not used by the public. This airport was recently used by private pilots as a F.B.O. It was built during W.W. II as a training base for P-32 pilots, and deactivated in 1952. After the war, it was leased to private companies (such as the CIA). The paved areas are 4' of concrete and can land the heaviest planes in use. There are no buildings over two stories in the entire area, and no control tower. The FBI have a contingent in the Federal building downtown Santa Rosa , and "FEMA" has a radio station at the airport. The Army reserve also has some buildings in the area. However, there is some highly secret activity going on underground at the airport. 6-7 small planes sneak out of the closed base a day, and for a base of its description that is closed, that is very interesting. The planes take off in the evening and do not turn their lights on until hundreds of feet into the air. The Press Democrat of Santa Rosa ran an article on Thurs., Apr. 22, 1993 about the Federal government selling 70 acres of property just to the east of the airport. However, when one reads closely, the land is going to be offered to a host of Federal agencies. The property was "being used by FEMA" (707-542-4534). If one thinks about it, it is unlikely that the radio station is a FEMA transmitter station. The close vicinity of this secret activity to the elite's Bohemian Grove makes this an interesting site for study. The airport used for the Bohemian Grove visitors is north of Santa Rosa on hwy 101, the Sonoma County Airport . United Express and American Eagle (which flies to and from San Jose) fly into this airport, which has a control tower. In 1964, the airport was reported to have also carried about 600 military operations (either a takeoff or landing) per year. It was around this time that the Federal government made an agreement with Sonoma County Airport to help pay for the runway to be extended, the runway to be strengthened and the airport to be upgraded in numerous ways. The elite from around the world fly into here to go to the Bohemian Grove, which is in the Monte Rio area. Monarch slaves are regularly abused at the Grove for the entertainment of Bohemian Grove members in kinky sex theme rooms, such as the dark room and the necrophilia room. Secret NWO order business is conducted in the small, dark lounge with a wooden sign naming it U.N.DERGROUND. Slaves are hunted in the woods for sport, and occult rituals, including infant sacrifice, are held outdoors in the Grove. These airfields are described in detail so that the reader can begin to catch on to the network of small planes and airfields the Monarch system uses to transport children. The children are trickled in from various collection points to China Lake . Monarch slaves, many of them children themselves are used in this extensive child procurement system.

Children are also used to entice and kidnap other children. Teenage slaves are used to escort and transport little children on trains, buses, and planes. The triangular-shaped airfield at China Lake has traditionally begun very early in the morning with lots of activity. The night flights from FEMA's Santa Rosa airfield being an example of incoming flights. The airfield connects to the main base area via Sandquist Road . Children are landed at this field, while others are driven through the gates guarded by marines, and others come through via the east-west rail line. The fact that children are driving through the gates is not alarming because inside the military perimeter is a high school, a junior high school and 3 other schools. Some of the adults of the children being programmed stay in military barracks (Quonset huts and one story buildings) while they wait. A male Monarch victim remembers a large hanger building at China Lake with a concrete floor and row after row of cages suspended from the ceiling filling the large building. One of the Programmers was dressed similar to a Catholic Priest. The electric current that ran to the cages made a hum, like an electric fence. There was a marble slab that served as an altar where black-hooded robed people would take a bone handled knife and sacrifice little children in front of the other children in the cages. (Memories from other survivors about the place will be mentioned later.)

More About The Secret China Lake Base

Charles Manson, a programmed Monarch slave who received initial programming at China Lake , lived with his cult only 45 miles north-west of China Lake at the remote Myers and Barker ranches. Scotty's Castle in Death Valley , Bakersfield , Edwards AFB, and Papa Ludo's Store & Tavern (with its secret underground programming center) are all in the vicinity of China Lake and have all been programming sites too. Old route 66 went by China Lake , which now is just off U.S. 395. The area's tavern has been named the Hideaway. The building was low, away from the highway, with a large unlit parking lot. Only people who knew how to enter it by the obscure entrance on the side could get in. The Hideaway Tavern has been a local hangout for the CIA men in China Lake . It has served them excellent steaks. The base headquarters is known as the White House, and it looks somewhat like a yacht clubhouse. Northwest of the airfield, at 39-64 & 4-33 E on the quad maps, the government has built a large magical seal of Solomon (hexagram) with each leg 1/4 mile long on the ground. What was it like for a victim in the early 1950's in a NOTS area programming center? One of the buildings in the area used for programming was described as having a flat roof and a tan exterior. A fence ran around the building. Inside the front door was an old oak reception type desk. A series of 3 doors connected by tunnels were gone through. One entered into a hallway, and then took a left into the programming room.

Tunnels connected the different hallways. The programming room was painted a good dissociative color white. In the middle of the room, cages were suspended with chimps. The examining table was metal, which was cold for the victim, but easy to wash for the attendants. The victim was placed in cages and could observe white dots light up in different dot patterns over the door on a panel of lights. The low level shocks to the victim were coordinated with the dot patterns. (Some of this relates to domino programming.) An attendant monitored the entire scenario on charts, while the child was repeatedly traumatized with low-voltage shocks. Needles were poked in the child, the room was made dark and then lit. Voices said, "Love me, love me not." This was part of the love me, don't love me part of programming. "Good girls ride the silvery wings." This was to build the ability to condition trancing by the victim upon electro-shock.

German & British scientists/mind control programmers came to NOTS after W.W. II, including Joseph Mengele (known as Dr. Green, or Greenbaum, and other pseudonyms). The Illuminati's Dr. Black worked out of China Lake also. Dr. White (Dr. Ewin Cameron) worked on the east coast, although he did fly in every so often to the west coast to meet with the other top programmers. Dr. Blue was another of the important leading Illuminati programmers. These top programmers supervised other lesser programmers. If something went wrong, they might fly a child from a programming location to a specialist to get it special help for its programming. The men and women of the Illuminati helped the top programmers out. The Grande Mothers, and the Grande Masters of the Illuminati participated in helping with the programming. As a child of the Illuminati progressed through its programming, three people had oversight over its programming: its Grande Mother, its Grande Dame, and the Programmer.

The Illuminati functions off a chain of command similar to the military. (In fact a big secret is that Satan's realm actually served as the model for military and political structures.) As a child begins its programming, it is monitored in a fashion similar to hospitals where charts are filled and then these charts are filed. Tests and evaluations are done regularly. Goals are set which are six month programming goals. These will say in effect, we need to accomplish this by doing a, b, c, d in the next six months. This is somewhat similar to an I.E.P. (individual education plan) which the special-ed teachers in Oregon set up for each student. At some point, the strong points and the weaknesses of the child will be identified, and then a decision will be made as to what occupation the Illuminati want to program the person to become. If the young boy is aggressive and has sadistic tendencies, the Illuminati call it "a war monger" and label its chart "This child will be a general." Then they proceed to program it to become a general.

Nurses, teachers, and child physicians must be programmed with a gentleness to their System. Other occupations, such as lawyers can be allowed to be ruthless. Many of the children have religious fronts labelled for their programming, and a very popular occupation for Illuminati men is to become clergymen. Religious leaders make up the majority of fathers of Monarch survivors that have sought help. Most Illuminati victims have parents who are important religious leaders, many of them top clergymen in the established churches. As the reader might expect, some tortures require that the child victim’s temperature, respiration, pulse and blood pressure be closely monitored.

B. What Trauma Does

In recent times, the military and the science of psychology is paying attention to what they call PTSD (post-traumatic stress disorder). PTSD are the psychopathic debilitating effects of trauma and chronic nature of reactions to trauma. Intrusive flashbacks of the trauma will occur if the mind doesn’t protect itself from reminders of the trauma. The mind creates avoidance patterns to protect itself from thinking about the trauma. Panic symptoms occur when the person undergoes physiological arousal to traumatic cues. A trauma will create a certain "shatteredness" within the victim. The victim will develop life assumptions about being vulnerable, about having little personal worth, and that life is not fair. They may develop phobias to constantly check their environment for safety and constantly monitor others to make sure they are not mistreated. For centuries warfare has taken place, and military men have experienced PTSD. However, a full description and investigation into the disorder has been done only in recent history. The U.S. military has prevented any serious counseling for their troops suffering from this. Peer "counselors" and rap groups were allowed, and misled by the army to believe that they would be adequate. PTSD will often lead to outbursts of rage, chronic depression, or borderline dysfunctions. The PTSD in Monarch victims is masked by the MPD/DID and the programming. Then in turn, the programming masks the MPD. When the programming is complete, front alters have been created which can function with smiles and cheerful attitudes, while underneath, the mind is full of shattered hurting alters, who the slave is unaware of. Self-punishment and social withdrawal are natural symptoms of PTSD, and the programmers have no trouble enhancing and programming these functions into their alter systems. Certain alters end up holding the anger, the fear, the social withdrawal, the guilt, and the desire for self-punishment. These are held in check by the programming, and take the body when the slave steps outside of the programmed path. The bad memories in the minds of men who suffer from PSTD have been noted to re-cycle and self-perpetuate themselves as they lie unresolved in the memory cells. Bad memories for the victims of Monarch programming are used to hold the MPD, the programming in place and also to keep the victim in compliance.

In 1954, Maslow published his hierarchy of needs, which when applied to Monarchs and PSTD victims means that they can not progress in therapy until their survival and safety needs are met. However, the Programmers/abusers know that it is important to keep the slave away from safety. To this end, the Programmers employ people externally to monitor slaves, and internal alters in the victim’s mind to be monitoring alters and reporting alters. Reporting alters can always reach the Network of abusers via 1-800 telephone numbers which change every 2 weeks. They can also call their handler. Reporting alters are very unemotional and serve as tape recorders which mechanically report any developments that might threaten the programming to their handler.

Alters programmed to commit suicide are also built into the Systems. For instance, for a system hacker--an outsider-- to work with the alters of an internal Grand Druid Council (aka Executive committee alters, or judge alters) or a System almost insures 99% of the time suicide of the Monarch slave. In at least 99% of the cases where Monarchs who have come in for therapy, they still lack safety, which is a higher need than trying to go against their programming. This is why so few people have really gotten free.

To undo the programming, the victim needs safety. The programmers know this, and have set up almost fail safe methods where the victim is not even safe from their own system of alters, let alone Big Brother. Therapists call their Monarch victims "survivors" a misnomer, because in reality they are still in the middle of ongoing abuse. Some therapists may mistakenly think that it is helpful to tell the victim, "These fears you are having are from the past." Deliverance ministries may also try to stop the victim's fears, without understanding the reasons behind the ongoing fear. Other chapters will deal with the extensive back up methodologies.

At this point, it is mentioned in the context of this chapter to establish to the reader that the abuse and torture continue non-stop. Some of this would naturally occur anyway, but the Programmers enhance this naturally occurring phenomena many-fold to insure that the slave will continually abuse themselves. This means as time progresses, some Monarch systems are timed to shatter certain levels & to create new levels.

If the Programmers want, they can shatter a front Christian alter level and create a new level of New Age believing alters to replace the original front. The abuse can be done by the victim themselves to themselves, because programming alters are given the ability to pull up horrific memories via codes. Those traumatic memories, which shattered the mind the first time, are still capable of doing it again when they are abreacted (that is relived by the body & mind). More and more people are experiencing working with someone with multiple personalities. However, very few multiples ever discover more than the front parts of their systems. Very few people, outside of the programmers, have much idea of what an entire system of alters is like, therefore some of the things that this book will describe will seem foreign to those people who have learned a little about multiplicity.

There are several models to describe what happens inside a multiple's brain as it develops multiple personalities. The brain is very complex. Recent brain research confirms that the brain was far more complex than imagined. In an average brain there are 10,000,000,000 individual neuron (nerve cells). Each of these has 10 with 100 zeros following it worth of interconnections. In other words, an average brain has vastly more interconnections than the total number of atoms in the universe! Often about 1/2 million different chemical reactions take place every minute in the average brain, and the number can be several times that during intense activity.

A Monarch's brain has been worked on to be even more active than a normal person's brain. The left & the right side of the Monarch's brain both work simultaneously, and the various personalities are all busy working simultaneously on different tracks. To describe the complexity of what is happening with someone's mind which has been messed with so dramatically for years, means that at times only an approximate model is presentable. There are several terms which are used in speaking about multiples, which have developed several meanings. Unless these terms are correctly defined, misconceptions about them can cloud an understanding of what happens during Monarch programming. First, researchers have discovered that deep within a person, the brain truly understands in a pure awareness all about itself. This is true for everyone.

This pure awareness has been named various names, including **Hidden Observer.** If a man is obnoxious and seems to have a total lack of awareness that he irritates people; just know that deep down an awareness realizes exactly what he is and what he does. The multiple's brain at some deep awareness knows what has happened to it. The term Hidden Observer is fraught with danger though. A demonic entity called the Hidden Observer works hand in glove with the programmer to program the individual. The Hidden Observer is able to see everything the System does. The people who control as slave frequently call up the Hidden Observer to ask questions. In this case, it is a demonic entity, and yet it is this Hidden Observer, which each System has, that some therapists are trying to access to understand the System. This Hidden Observer only tells the truth to its Master, because it is demonic.

The next term which is misunderstood is the term **"the core"**. The programmers set up various alters to pretend to be the core, and the core's protector. The real core is quite hidden, and not placed within the regular grid of the alter system's chart. It will take some explaining to convey what happens to the mind, and what the real core is.

C. The Types of Trauma

One thing discovered by research into the genetic transmission of learned knowledge by humans to their children was that people are born with certain fears. Snakes, blood, seeing internal body parts, and spiders are all things that people are born fearing. The phobias toward these things are passed down genetically from one generation to another. In searching for traumas to apply to little children, the Programmers found that these natural phobias which occur in most people from birth will work "wonderful" to split the mind.

Along this line, the following are samples of traumas done to program slaves:

a. being locked in a small confined spot, a pit or cage with spiders and snakes
b. being forced to kill, and cut up and eat innocent victims
c. Immersion into feces, urine and containers of blood.

Then being made to eat these things. These are standard traumas. Often a slave will experience not only all of the above but many others before they reach 4 or 5 years of age.

It is important to traumatize the child early before it has a chance to develop its ego states. By the way, when the child is placed into a small box with spiders or snakes, they will often be told that if they play dead the snake will not bite them. This carries out two things for the programmers, it lays the basis for suicide programs (i.e. "if-you-are-dead, then you-are-safe" thinking) and it teaches the child to dissociate.

Traumas to split the mind are not just high voltage, or natural phobias, but encompass the full range of the emotional and spiritual being of the victim. The victim is eventually stripped of every spiritual or emotional resource by a variety of traumas, such as "blood orgies" where male and female genitals are cut, torture sessions on all types of medieval torture machines, staged events where actors imitating God, Jesus Christ, police, and therapists curse the victim, reject the victim, and even "kill" the victim in simulated drug deaths.

Children are placed in hospitals in captive abusive conditions. Children are tied to innocent children which are systematically and brutally killed while the children are made to believe that they are guilty for the child’s punishment. Near death experiences such as drowning have become an art with these abusers. Trained dogs, monkeys and other animals are used to further traumatize the victims.

An Illuminati slave will most likely have experienced all of the last few paragraphs above, plus much more. (Toby, was one of the trained NOTS chimpanzees. He was trained to be sadistic. The other trained chimpanzees at China Lake included "Gabie" or Gabriel, who tickled the victim while they were tied up; Rastice, who had a toy chest with diamonds, bracelets, & a scepter which electroshocked; Zoro, who could do anything mean; Elmore, who cuddled as a mother but ate raw flesh; plus others. An example of something said during programming with the chimps is, "THREE LITTLE MONKEYS IN A CAGE, DO, RE, ME, FA, SO, LA, TE, DO".)

Joseph Mengele, aka Dr. Green, was skilled at using German shepherds to attack people. Mengele got a reputation in the Nazi concentration camps for using German shepherds, before he was brought over to America . He used dogs to help program American children. (The Process Church often uses German Shepherds too.)

He was also skilled in abortions, and was involved in weird traumas involved with babies being born, or the simulated births of dead rats (or other gross things) from the vaginas of girls being programmed. When the Satanic cults tie their victims with wire for rituals, some of these people will lose their toes or fingers from the wire. At times little fingers and the top part of ring fingers are lost in Satanic cult rituals too.

Many of the traumas and tortures are carried out by alters or persons who are sadistic. How does the Network get sadistic men to torture little children? Three different respectable studies (Harrower, 1976/ Milgram, 1974/ & Gibson 1990) show that essentially all human males can be taught to engage in sadistic behavior. There may be a few exceptions, but the point is that sadistic people are not in short supply for programming. Some of the alter systems have extremely brutal sadistic alters. In fact, the Mothers of Darkness alters are an important balancing point to prevent the sadistic male programmers from killing more of the children they are working on. These sadists get a laugh at hurting little children. The more pain, the more charge and excitement they get out of it. Sadists enjoy gaining total control over a person. In order to do this, they take charge over the little child’s basic body functions, such as sleep, eating, and pooping. They enjoy terrorizing the little child, so Monarch slaves end up watching hours of sadistic behavior done to others before they are even 5 years old. The worse the trauma, the more the sadistic programmers enjoy it.

Sensory deprivation, forced labor, poisoning, and rape of every orifice of the child are popular tortures by the programmers. The child soon learns that he is at the mercy of crazy people who can only be satisfied by total submission, and the willingness to allow someone else to think for you. The child will be made to eat feces, blood, other disgusting things, while the programmer eats good meals. Some of this sadistic behavior is toward a goal. Cutting a person's tongue and putting salt on it reinforces the no-talk programming. Making someone throw up to cause eating disorder programming. Dislocating shoulders to cause dissociation.

When the child victim's crying is heard, they immediately apply torture so the child thinks it will suffocate. This is behavior modification, & is covered later in chapter 9. This trains the child not to cry. Around age 3, a Black Mass, a sick evil communion, is performed which is so ugly, that the child hides in dissociation by creating a "locked-up"/or "obscure" child. This early flip provides a base for dark side programming. This locked up child can have a powerful healing (with system wide effects) by being part of a positive love-filled commumion.

There are many traumas which can be carried out, which leave no physical scars, but do leave the child with the deepest emotional and spiritual scars. This is often necessary when programming young children who the outside world will see soon after their programming session. Holding one's arms out is a simple torture. Tickling and sensory deprivation are two tortures that leave no marks. Burial caskets, some outside and some at inside locations are often used on slaves. That is why many slaves fear being buried alive. The Programmers place all types of creepy insects in the caskets when they bury the person alive. Another type of sensory deprivation is done by placing the victim in salt water (for buoyancy and weightlessness). Then the victim is fitted with sensitive sensors that shock the person if the victim moves. The shock puts the person back into unconsciousness. The brain is trained to stop all external body movement from the conscious mind.

This type of sensory deprivation is used to place in the posthypnotic commands to do something at some future date far into the future. The program is placed into the mind at the same primal level that the mind uses to tell the heart to beat.

One of the "appropriate" tortures is to place a bar between a little girl's legs which spreads the girl's loins for rape. Then the bent spread legs are flapped, while the victim is specifically told she is a "Monarch butterfly". Many victims have created butterflies in their minds while being raped. The programmers may tell some of their victims that out of caterpillar-worms come beautiful butterflies.

While raping the child, the Programmers will describe their sperm fluid as "honey comb", and will cry out "hallelujah" when they come. It doesn't take long for the child to realize it has no ability to resist what is being done to it. The will of the child victim is destroyed, and in its place remains a pliable slave. If the slave doesn't learn correctly they receive more pain. A fish hook in the vagina is a popular one. Older males have their genitals hurt during additional or reprogramming sessions. They may have to eat the skin taken from their genitals.

The mind of the victim is not only divided from itself, but the very process of torture, makes the victim distrustful of humans in general. On top of this distrust, the programmers will layer in programming to isolate the person from healthy relationships, which in turn increases the victim's feeling of helplessness. They are divided from their own parts (their own self) and the world in general. For instance, the water, cave and sand tortures make the survivor fearful of oceans. The victim may be traumatized by being lowered on ropes or a cage on ropes into the water from a cliff, or may end up being buried alive in sand and watching the tide come in, or simply being totally buried alive in sand and abandoned.

For a while, the Illuminati was big on water torture because they had built into their systems a weakness that water would destroy the clone armies that protected programming, and they needed their slave systems to be fearful of water. Slaves are frequently lowered into black holes, or pits containing the most scariest things possible. This is a frequent trauma, because the victim when left in a dark hole for hours or days without any contact with the world or water & food will develop deep emotional scars & dissociation rather than tale-telling signs of physical abuse. This torture is used essentially on all Monarch slaves.

Some of the traumas are done for specific medical reasons. For instance, the person is starved by only allowing for instance 300 calories per day for say a small woman of 125 lbs. Sugar & proteins are severely limited, so that the brain is starved into submission. Water deprivation, which is taught to parents who raise Monarch slaves, is used from time to time on slaves to raise the brain's temperature which happens when the brain swells from lack of water. When the brain gets woozy & overheated it hallucinates and has a hard time remembering events. If water deprivation is combined with electroshock it makes it harder yet for the victim to remember anything.

Heavy exercise along with long periods of little sleep (2-3 hours/day) causes an overproduction of endorphins in the brain and victims begin to robotically respond to commands. This was done to co-author Fritz under the pretense of military "training". The other author, Cisco, experienced it as part of her mind-control. The brain under such stress may flip its functions from right to left & vice-versa.

Hypnosis is easier when a brain is tired. Most victims remember being suspended upside down. This was honed to a fine art by Mengele with concentration camp victims, while records were made of how fast blood drained from a child or adult's stomach when they were dunked upside down into a tank of ice cold water. The cold water tests supplied the data on temperature levels as consciousness faded. This information then was used later on in America to help the survival rate of children given the same trauma.

Simply hanging a person upside down for one or two hours will begin to play tricks on the mind. The mind will begin to dissociate, and will begin to reverse the primordial brain functions such as pain is pleasure. The person's mind rearranges. This is often done with Beta alters or Beta models to get them to think that the pain of sadistic rape is a pleasure. After this reversal in the mind that "PAIN IS LOVE", the S&M kitten alters will beg their handler to slap them, tie them up, hurt them, etc. They will tease their handler, and tell him he is not a real man if he shows any mercy in how the pain is inflicted. Fire/burning torture is used in the porcelain face programming.

The charismatic branch of the satanic Network (such as the Assembly of God churches) uses porcelain face programming. This is done by using wax masks upon the victim, and giving them fire torture. The person actually thinks that their face has melted. At that point, the programmer pretends to be a god & a hero, and tells the person he will give them a new face, a porcelain mask. These new faces by the way, look like the ones sold in so many stores. The memories of abuse are then hypnotically hid behind the masks. To take off the masks is to abreact & burn again. If anyone touches the faces of alters with porcelain face programming, the alters will feel a burning sensation because their masks are not to be tampered with. This means that these alters have via torture & hypnosis lost their own faces! This is part of the dehumanization process which chapter 10 part C talks about. As long as these alters stay in denial of what has happened to them, they do not have to face the burn torture memories.

Some alters are tortured in a fashion that the eye area is traumatized and they squint the left eye. They look like Baron Guy de Rothschild of France 's left eye looks. Guy de Rothschild Guy de Rothschild is a major handler/programmer, but the reason for his drooping eye is not known. Perhaps it was torture.

The **ritual aspect of trauma** needs to be covered.

By traumatizing someone on a specific day--say, repeatedly traumatizing them on their birthday--is far more damaging than just simply traumatizing them. The reason is that every time that person's birthdate recycles they are put back into their memories of abuse. Sexual abuse of a child is more powerful when it is put into the context of demonic magic. The abuser's semen is magic and seals the programming. The ritual aspect of it, and the repetitive nature of the abuse creates several dynamics that accompany the abuse that wouldn't occur in non-ritual abuse. The lie that accompanies such abuse is that this institutionalized abuse is an obligation for both the abuser and the victim. For instance, the mind-control of the Beast Barracks experience at West Point , USMA is an institutionalized abuse that allows the abuser to side step responsibility for sadistic behavior, and sets the stage for the abuse to be continued under the disguise of tradition.

Finally, there is one more category of trauma - those to produce cosmetic looks, for instance, breast implants, or electro-shock to create moles at certain locations for either as a sign telling other handlers the extent of the programming or for a Marilyn Monroe look.

A "stage trick" is to use a multi-needle device to scar the tissue. The scar which is made in a pattern, a popular one is the satanic Goat's head of Mendes, can be made visible by hypnotic command. This allows the handler to look powerful to uninformed viewers. (This is further discussed in chapter 8.) This stage trick has been done by the occult world for centuries.

D What Occurs When The Mind Splits

During battles soldiers have been known to wall off horrible events with amnesia walls. Just like the soldier who walls off a traumatic battle scene where he sees his buddy disembowelled by a grenade, so the child walls off trauma. However, the soldier must only endure a relatively small amount of trauma compared to the children who are programmed under the Monarch trauma-based mind control. A soldier may remember his trauma, by being triggered by something that reminds him of the trauma. Likewise, the child victim will have things that trigger it too.

One way of describing the split, is to say that the child's mind is saying, "This isn't happening to me, its happening to some one else" and a split in the personality occurs. The new split will have the characteristics of what it split from. The programmer will ask the alter being tortured to create something in the mind when the split is created--such as "I want 12 white fluffy kittens." The programmer, demons, and the child's creativity work together with the dissociation to create alters. Those 12 white fluffy kittens will have the characteristics and memories of what they were made from. However, they are separated from each other by dissociation, and they will be given their own script and own separate identity by the programmer. The dissociation between some alters who are co-conscious is not full blown amnesia.

After the Programmer has instructed the child what alters he wants made when he tortures the child, the Programmer will inject a truth serum to determine whether the correct alters were made and the correct amount. The child's creativity is being guided by torture. The Programmer will often also call up the Hidden Observer and ask it what has happened internally in the mind of the victim. Another better way of looking at what happens is to understand that the part of the brain that records personal memory--that is the personal history memory section, is divided up into little pieces by amnesia walls built to protect itself from the repeated traumas.

Each section is walled off from another section by amnesia. Each trauma has an amnesia wall built around it. Each trauma memory is sectioned off. That walled off section is a piece of memory that will be identified, and a hypnotic cue attached by the programmers that will pull it up to the conscious mind. And further, if the programmers so desire, it can be given a history, a name, a job, and developed into a full-blown personality. It's important to grasp that the entire mind is not sectioned off into parts. Some areas of the mind, such as the area that holds skills & talents, is available to all the alters who want to access that talent. The talent doesn't belong to that alter but to the System.

Autobiographical memory is remembered differently than simple facts & skills involving primitive parts of the brain. A sense of time & a sense of self are attached to autobiographical memories--these things are stripped of an alter as it functions within the programming. Memory storage is also linked to the brain's state of mind at the time. Hormones released at the time of an experience will modulate the strength of the memory of that experience.

The limbic-hypothalamic system of the brain (which consists of the amygdala, hippocampus, cingulate gyrus, fornix, septum, certain nuclei of the thalamus, and the Papez circuit) has a central modulating part which interacts with peripheral hormones. Peripheral epinephrine will be released if the amygdala is electrically stimulated. The adrenal medulla releases epinephrine that is vital for memory storage.

In other words, there are hormones which help the brain remember or not. A particular talent is not used by every alter. A non-sexual alter (an alter with an asexual identity) is not going to access talents involved in sexual foreplay. This is because memories are both occurrent states & also dispositions, and when a disposition is dissociated, the alter must maintain a different set of dispositions. A three year child alter is not going to access abilities to write. To do so for these alters would mean attacking the amnesia walls which hold horrible memories. They would mean going against the programming with its penalties, and their own understanding of "reality" which is the programmed story line that the alter has been convinced of under penalty of losing its life.

To dissociate a memory and to take on a particular role and identity involves a constant re-interpretation of past events. It may also mean that the alter must contrive an interpretation of present events. The 3 year old may, for instance, see breasts but decide they belong to someone else in the system who they share the body with. This is in part dictated by the necessity of obscuring the pain of the trauma that separates the alter from the rest. Each day that the alter confronts reality, they will face the threat that old memories will not agree with the story line created.

For instance, the handler's sexual advances carried out in front of that asexual (nonsexual) alter must be misconstrued so that the illusion of not having been raped is continued. This is why normal life has a way of breaking down the multitude of lies and programming of the deeper alters, which live in a fantasy world created during the programming. The deeper alters have never had the chance to experience life outside of their programming, since they hold the body only at infrequent specialized moments which are disjointed in time. The alters created to be fronts to normally hold the body will be given lots of programming to help them hold onto certain denials, so that they will find it necessary to ignore or reinterpret dreaded associations linked with dissociated memories. For instance, a Christian front alter is sincerely very righteous and holy. The thought that this person (technically the alter's System of persons) could have done the most horrible savage demonic activities is inconceivable. The memories of ritual are safely ignored, because the reality would undermine everything the person is.

This phenomena is not just seen in memory dissociation, but also under hypnosis when a person accepts a suggestion which flies in the face of the reality they can see. If a person accepts the suggestion that there is no dog in the room, they will struggle internally to maintain that illusion. If asked to walk on a collision course with the dog, they will unconsciously move around it, and if asked why they stumbled around the dog, they will construct an artificial excuse, which is accepted even though it is transparently implausible.

One of the Monarch Programmers Orne called this "trance logic". Trance logic are those ploys and strategies to maintain a dissociative or hypnotic hallucination. The frontal lobes of the cerebral cortex which are called the Brodmann areas no. 9-12 are responsible for a person's own responses to circumstance--i.e. what some call "personality". When the mind is split, this natural personality is not erased but rather is a collected pool upon which various responses from it are attached to various personalities". Damage to these Brodmann areas tends to give an overall effect of making the person passive. The programming is not designed to damage these areas, only to control what emotions they contain are linked in memory to the various memory fragments that will be made into personalities. The reticular formation is the location of the brain's mechanism which determines the state of consciousness all the way from alert, to hypnotic trance, to sleep, to coma. It interacts with the frontal lobes and the rest of the brain. Each memory is a function of several parts of the brain working together.

Memory is a function of alertness/state of consciousness (reticular formation), the emotions (Brodmann Areas 9-12), the Thalami (priorities given to memories), and several complicated processes where the brain categorizes and interfiles the info with other remembered data. By building in amnesia walls between Event (personal history) memories, and by producing altered states of consciousness, the memories of a slave can be "nested" as the Programmers call it. "Nested" means that it is hidden behind several "locked doors" when the mind files the memory. Sometimes the person must go back to the altered state to recover a memory. The electro-shock also scrambles the brain's filing of a memory, so that it is filed in bits and pieces. Because of the use of electro-shock, if memories do start surfacing they surface in pieces. Sometimes a complete memory will be held by thousands of parts who the mind must bring together to recover the full memory. It has been discovered that memory retrieval is best when the environment is identical to when the memory took place. If we memorize numbers underwater, we will recall them better underwater.

Another thing discovered about trauma memories is that they are stored in the sensory motor processes, rather than just in the normal memory sites of the brain. These memories are called body memories, and they do not lie. The False Memory Spindrome is way off base on their attacks, but then all of us who know the real story realize that they are just a coverup damage control scheme of the CIA.

E. The Core

Let's return to describing the "core" or that part of the brain which is intact at the beginning. If we pause to consider that a non-multiple person will experience struggles in their mind when simultaneous, overlapping but conflicting desires meet in conflict--i.e. "should I lay in bed, go to work, or go fishing today?" A particular part of the brain (a Synthesizing Self) is capable of ordering such a conflict--it transcends all these conflicting ego states. A single Synthesizing Self in the brain is likewise responsible for the de-synthesizing of the ego states.

The victim in order to appease the programmers sets up different and opposite alters relative to a single System's needs. The formation of alters is systematically and intelligently guided by the programmers, especially in the early stages. The alters are created to meet the needs of the System that the programmers impose upon it, and not to adapt to an abusive parent. Some therapists have failed to see that alter formation is not natural, but a maladaptive practice that is guided by the victim's desire to please, and its fear of the programmers.

The pool of abilities will be shared in different combinations among the various alters. An alter may have an unique ability that consists of subsidiary traits which may not be unique but are shared by other alters. As a child develops if certain areas of the brain are stimulated, then those areas grow. If they are not stimulated, then the brain will not grow brain cells in the area. In other words, experience shapes the way parts of our brains develop. The way brain cells grow--that is how they make their connections is believed by researchers to be the actual place that memory is held. The growth in connections in their meaningful ways creates meaningful patterns that make up memory. When memory storage occurs, changes in terminals of axons ending on the dendrites occurs. Dendrite spines (which look like trees) develop. One tree (dendrite spine) might look like an oak in winter--another might look like a mass of seaweed.

For various reasons, as the brain of a multiple grows--it physically grows different than a normal person's brain. The brain can get around what has been done to it in some ways, but it needs to be borne in mind that we are not dealing with just bad memories--but brains which have had their physical makeup & functioning altered.

It is interesting to see how each different alter has a different EEG profile. One of the primary brain areas affected by the torture and programming are the areas which store event (personal history) memory. These areas are the hippocampus and the cortex of the frontal brain lobes which work with the two thalamus.

General knowledge is stored in the neocortex (the grey area of the brain or the outer thin layer. The brain has practically no limit to memory. However, it will select what it wants to remember, and it will decide how it will file what it remembers. Hypnotic suggestions to "forget" something often simply means the person remembers the event--but labels the file "forgotten".

Slaves are always under hypnotic suggestions to forget what they have experienced--however, usually the brain in actuality only appears to comply and then secretly records the event. Hypnosis will be dealt with in chap.

F. How Programming is Anchored

All the programming of each & every slave is anchored upon some type of trauma. One of the first fundamental traumas will be watched, filmed, coded & used as an anchor. For instance, the most brutal rape of a girl by her father will be used as an anchor upon which to build the Beta programming.

In chap. 1 it was discussed how the primary severing of the core was incest. Extreme psychosis is created within a child trying to deal with the issues created by the incest from the child's most important figure--their father figure. In Moriah's slaves, this is the standard method to sever the core, & create an anchoring trauma. When Mayer Amschel Rothschild (orig. named Bauer) was on his deathbed, he demanded from his sons, that they protect the power of the House of Rothschild through incest. Electroshock can cause pain, but this is nothing compared to the confusion in the mind caused by incest issues. Entire worlds of loyal alters whose only function is loyalty to the biological incestual father are created in the slave. This world of loyal alters may be the Daisy world. The hardest bonding to break within Illuminati slaves is this bond to their incestual father.

Non-Illuminati mind-controlled slaves are bonded to other people--the cult leader or programmer. Whatever fundamental trauma is decided upon, all the rest of the programming will be built upon that anchor in the victim's mind. (See chapts. 7 to 9 for further information on how the programming is layered in.) This fundamental trauma is not the bottom BEAST computer which sets at the bottom of the subconscious mind.

Internal computers are complex. This is simply an anchoring memory that the programmers begin with. In large systems, the programmers will choose an experience that all of the alters are familiar with. When large programmed alter systems come in for a major rehaul, the Programmers will call up section by section with the correct code words until they are all at the front of the mind. When this is done, thousands of alters are pulled up co-conscious & worked on all together. When this occurs it is an exceptionally big surprise for most alters who have lived their entire existence in dissociated isolation from other alters in their system.

Why would the programmers do this? For several reasons, speed and the desire to have common anchoring experiences, & common programming imagery.

How The Olfactory Nerves Are Traumatized

Blood and perfume have been linked together in magic for thousands of years. The magical writings are full of the different concoctions created for ritual smells. Some of these over the centuries were smells which were discovered caused people to go into trance or dissociate. A common wretched smell at Satanic/Illuminati rituals is the smell of human flesh, as flesh is heated to make candles in wooden ritual cups. It is reported that the stench of human flesh burning can cause dissociation.

The power of scents was noticed in ancient China by Li Po. The alchemists studied scents very carefully. The case at Loudon, Fr. (written about in Chapt. 10, pp. 295-296), had nuns going into different dissociative states at the smell of different flowers. Cinnamon is a widespread scent used in programming deeper parts in a system. The smell of faeces & urine is a trauma to a small caged child. Interestingly, urine also contains An-alpha which is the scent element which triggers the human mind sexually.

Moriah knows how to use the various scents, incenses etc. Astral magic uses various perfumes.

When Moonchild Traumas Miscarry

According to someone who has helped with the programming and Moon Child ceremonies, occasionally the child while in the womb when traumatized by the Moon Child rituals, retreats into its mind like a cocoon, and develops autism. Autism is an emotional problem where the child withdrawals from reality and goes into its own private world of altered states. The programmers for many years did not know why some children developed autism from the trauma rather MPD (DID), but in some cases it seems related to high 1.0. and genetics. The programmers are not able to reach such children, and essentially all were discarded into mental hospitals or used in rituals, until about 20 years ago when more and more of them were allowed to survive in public.

An article "Altered States", based on the Donna William’s autobiographical book Somebody Somewhere seems to buttress that autism can be mind-control duds. Williams is both autistic & MPD. Her book reveals that autistic children have acute sensory perception (intelligence) rather than retardation. There are different types of autism, and the authors do not understand the topic well enough to write much more than this. It is quite possible autism may have several causes, some which do not relate to the failure to become MPD (DID), but may be the result of some other cause.

However, the increase in autistic children is believed by the authors to be the result of increased trauma-based mind control. MS (multiple sclerosis) is another side effect, which can stem from brain stem scarring.

Ritual Torture Device

Several victims of Illuminati trauma, remember a special ritual torture device that is put inside a person and causes excruciating pain. It is made from only one kind of wood, a special wood, possibly myrtle. It has a painted spider on it, between two satanic symbols.

Review

In review, the elements that make up a single whole personality--family history, personal history and memories of abilities, talents and one’s self-image have all been stripped from the child when the mind divides itself up into sections walled off by amnesia walls. When the programmers work with each memory part, they have the option to give it all the elements of whatever personality they want it to have. They can even make it into an animal or an inanimate object, because that little fragment has no chance to contradict what it is being programmed to believe.

Although the memory part of the brain (which provides a person's personality) is divided, other parts of the brain function intact. Much of the elements of Monarch Mind Control are based on things that are observed in normal life--dissociation, mental & chemical dependence, denial, charisma, discipline, personality and torture which have been refined into skilled methodologies for controlling a person and then combined into a Group Package.

Understanding The Rituals and Trauma Illuminati rituals are based upon the most ancient Mystery religions. The Rothschilds like the ancient Canaanite Mystery rituals, and use Akkadian-Hittite-Canaanite-Babylonian rituals. The rituals from ancient Egypt are also heavily used by the Illuminati. The Collins -Sinclairs-type Illuminati bloodlines and some of the other Illuminati families with a northern European/celtic background, are very much into Druid rituals.

Understand that historically, the Druids gave up paganism for the truth of Christ, but that now neo-paganism would have people return to what the Celtic leadership gave up about two thousand years ago. The drawings below were done by participants in high level satanic ritual. The one participant drew several pictures of hearts which her coven placed into jars.

Some illustrations from the Egyptian Book of the Dead are included to show that the rituals of keeping hearts in a jar is straight from the Egyptian Book of the Dead. The heart was placed in a jar for weighing it for judgment. The twin (mirror-image) goddess Maat at times stands beside the scales, and at the same time Maat is also placed onto one side of the scale. This is similar to Christ judging a person, while also being the standard against which a person is judged against. In the Papyrus of Qenna the head of Anubis is on the beam and the ape, wearing disk and crescent, is seated upon a pylon-shaped pedestal beside the balance. Another picture shows Horus holding Maat in his hand, weighing the heart in the presence of the Maat goddesses, and anubis, who is holding the deceased by the hand, is presenting the heart to Osirus while Isis and Nephthys in the forms of apes sit nearby. The drawing of the ritual stick shows what one type of stick used in Satanic rituals looks like.

Chapter 3: Science No. 3 The Use of Drugs

The science of Pharmacology (drugs) has given the Programmers a vast array of mind-altering and body-altering drugs. Some of the drugs are not used to directly alter the mind, but to change the body (make the skin burn), or make the person vomit, or some other reaction that can be harnessed to further their nefarious programming goals.

If they want a little girl to develop breasts they might give her hormones. Neuroscientists are now familiar with chemicals which cause personality traits.

If one wants to create raving paranoia, simply provide the brain with too much dopamine in the emotional centers of the brain and too little dopamine in the seat of reasoning area of the brain.

Reduce serotonin in the person and the person will be unable to connect disagreeable consequences with what provoked them.

In other words, they can't protect themselves from danger.

Thorazine was used regularly at the CIA's Jonestown , Guyana group control experiment. Survivors of Jonestown have testified as to its effectiveness. After this gruesome experiment in mind control came to its end with a massacre, large amounts of drugs were discovered. Just one footlocker at Jonestown alone contained 11,000 doses. The authorities prevented chemical autopsies of the bodies to insure secrecy of this sophisticated concentration camp which was used for medical and psychiatric experimentation by the CIA. An examination of the drugs that are used in mental hospitals to alter the minds of patients offers a clear indication of what is being used in the Monarch Mind Control programming.

A. Drugs Used for Mind Control

The CIA/Illuminati programming centers have more than 600-700 different drugs at their disposal. The following is a partial list of the drugs available for their mind-control (aka MK-Ultra Programming). They can make a person feel like he is in heaven, or burning in hell. The drugs are at times used with elaborate light, sound and motion shows that produce whatever effect the programmer wants to produce. They can make a person believe he is shrinking, or that he is double (with mirrors), or that he is dying. Before describing how drugs are used for programming & control, let us list a few which we know have been used. This list comes from CIA documents obtained from the Freedom of Information Act and from what Multiples used as Programmers remember. Many of the new synthetic drugs are known only to the Illuminati/Intelligence community.:

2-GB (aka CBR, this is a strong hallucinogenic which also helps telepathic communication)

2-CT2 (produces dark, earthy visual patterns)

Acetylcholine (for EEOM , EDOM , and for blocking memory)

Adrenalin Aktetron Alcohol Ambien Aminazin Amobarbital (hypnotic sedative) Amobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative) Amphetamine (addictive) Amphetamine sulphate Analasine

Anectine (succinylcholine, a strong muscle relaxant that makes one feel suffocated and drowning. The person feels terror at thinking he is dying.) Anhalamine Anhalidine Anhaline Anhalonidine Anhalonine Anhalonium

Aphrodisiacs (sexual manipulation by programmers) Aphyllidine Aphyllin Aprobarbital (hypnotic sedative) Atropine (speeds heart rate given with l.V.) Atrosine BZ (designer drug ten times more powerful that LSD, produces amnesia) Bambusa Banisterine Baradanga (truth serum which makes people willing to follow any command) Barbiturate Belladonna (a traditional drug of witches since the middle ages) Benzidrene (Benzedrene, stimulant used w/ other drugs) Benzocaine Bromoharmine Bulbocapnine (causes a catatonia and stupors) B utabarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative) Butyl-bromallyl-barbituric acid Caffeine Caffeine sodium Calcium Chloride Cannabidiol Can nabinol

Cannabis (aka Marijuana, a sedative, change in perception, colors and sounds more distinct, time distorted. This drug is not used much in Monarch Programming because it IMPEDES mind control. It has been experimented with in combination with other drugs as an interrogation tool. The CIA listed it as being used in MK-Ultra, but it served as an experimental drug rather for programming.) Cannabol Caramine Carboline Carbrital Caroegine

Chloral hydrate (a hypnotic sedative, the active sedative ingredient is the metabolite trichloroethanol, goes to work in about 30-60 minutes, aka Noctec)

Cocaine (addictive, blackmail, the availability of cocaine may pull up certain alters who are addicted to it)

Coffee Coramine

Curare (to paralyze the body) Delvinyl sodium

Demerol (a hypnotic, also given as a reward for good learning after an induced headache, is used in the Scramble programming where the victim must overcome its effect to concentrate on what is being said) Desoxyn (used with Sodium Pentothal for hypnotic trance) Dexedrine (amphetamine) Di benzo pyran derivatives Dicain Doral Dramamine (aka dimenhydrinate, stops motion sickness) Drobinal (for quick access)

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

Ecstasy (aka XTC, Adam, MDMA, this is an illegal designer drug, but it's used by the government & cult programmers. Empathogens, like Ecstasy, enhance trust between the recipient & the programmer. It's effect lasts for several hours.) Ephedrine (stops hypotension) Ephetamine Epinephrine (adrenaline) Ergot Ergotamine Ethanol (to inebriate the victim to induce certain behavior) Ethchlorvynol (hypnotic sedative) Ethyl harmol Epicane Escrine E stazolam (hypnotic sedative)

Ethclorvynol (hypnotic sedative, effect begins 30 min. after digestion, addictive, aka Placidyl)

Ether Ethinamate (hypnotic sedative, aka Valmid) Eucaine Eucodal Eukotal Eunacron Evipal Evipan Evipan sodium Flurazepam hydrochloride (hypnotic sedative) Genoscopolomine Glutethimide (hypnotic sedative, has withdrawal symptoms, aka Doriden) Halcyn (blocks explicit memory by impairing hippocampal processing) Haliopareael (tranquilizer) Harmaline Harmalol Harman Harmine Harmine methiodide Harmol Heroin Hexacol Histadyl Histamine (causes changes in the skin) Hydractine (or Hydrastine) Hypoloid soluble hexabarbitone Icoral Indole Indole methyllarmine Insulin (shock for amnesia) Ipecac (to induce vomiting for eating disorder programming) Largatil (a powerful tranquilizer) Lophop-nine

Lorazepam (sleep induction, may destroy memory of previous day)

LSD-25 (Used to program alters to cut their veins; they want to end their nightmare by cutting what seem like white rivers w/ black threads or other scary delusions. Can cause psychosis & other effects. It's used in small amounts for interrogations. Its active ingredient is psilocybin which can create anxiety & a fear of death.) Lyscorbic acid

MDA (this is a cross between mescaline and amphetamine speed)

MDMA (also known as Adam, this is Ecstasy, see under Ecstasy for more information)

MDE (aka Eve, puts someone into a strictly intellectual head trip) Manganese chloride Mellaril (mood changer) Methaqualone (hypnotic sedative) Methotrimeprazine hydrochloride (hypnotic sedative) Methy-cocaine Methy-prylon (aka Noludar, helpful for hypnosis, side effects are a hangover & skin rashes.) Metra-ol Midazolam hydrochloride (hypnovel, versed, hypnotic sedative which can cause amnesia) Morphine Morphine hydrochloride Narco-imal Nembutal Niacin (helpful to stop an LSD trip) Nicotine Nicotinic acid (stops LSD drug effect) Nikthemine Nitrous oxide Novacaine Nupercaine Pantocaine Pantopone Parahyx Paraldehyde (hypnotic sedative, produces sleep in 15 mm., has a strong odor & disagreeable taste) Pellotine Pentobarbital (hypnotic sedative)

Pentobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative, if mixed with dextro amphetamine sulfate it will half the stage 1 dream time when REM sleep occurs) Pentothal acid (helpful for hypnosis) Pentothal sodium Percaine Pernoston Peyotl (interrogation, hallucinations) Pheactin Phenamine Phenolic acid (injected into expendable children's hearts to kill them) Pehyl-thio-urethanes Picrate Picrotoxin Procaine Propranolol (calms the mind so it can function better) Pulegone-orcinol Pulegone-olivetol Pyrahexyl Pyramidon Quazepam (hypnotic sedative) Quinine Reserpine Salsoline Scapalomine S. (good amnesia drug)

Scopolomine (truth serum that makes people willing to do whatever they are told) Scopolomine aminoxide hydrobromide Scopolomine-phetamine-eukotal Secobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative) Sodium Amytal (hypnotic sedative that reduces R E M sleep time) Sodium barbital Sodium dielvinal Sodium evipal Sodium pentobarbital (nembutal)

Sodium Pentothal (truth serum for interrogation, can be used with hypnosis, can be used with Desoxyn, given in an IV) Sodium phenobarbital Sodium rhodanate Sodium soneryl Sodium succinate Sodium thioethamyl Somnifen Stovaine Strychnine Styphnic acid Sulfazin Sympatol Synhexyl Telepathine Tetra-hydro-cannabinol acetate Tetra-hydro-harman Tetra-hydro-harmine Tropacocaine Tropenone Temazepam (hypnotic sedative) Thallium (confuses thinking) Thorazine (helps bring one out of an LSD trip) Tranquility (a designer drug for programming that makes the victim compliant, like Baradanga) Triazolam (hypnotic sedative, somewhat rapid) Yageine Yohimbine sulphate Zolpidem tartrate (hypnotic sedative)

Herbs

When the victim's body is saturated with all the drugs they can assimilate, they will receive herbs, which often have a drug effect. Ayahuasca (a vine of Brazil whose alkaloids such as Telapatin are said to produce a telepathic state where the recipient can see through people like glass and read their minds.) Bayberry (hemorrhaging) Calamas (part of a cerebral tonic) Cayenne Pepper (stimulant) Charcoal (absorbent cleanser) Caladium sequinum (injected into body parts to cause excruciating pain) Clove Oil (placed in nose for relief from the pain of dental tortures) Hemlock (a poison, used more to kill than for programming) Hops (sleep aid aka Beerflower) Lady's Slipper (relaxant) Kava Kava (sedative) Mistletoe (for dizziness, and lower blood pressure) Narcissus (anaphrodisiac for males) Opium (enchanting trip) Potions (made from roots, powders, dried blood and animal parts are given.) Rosemary (mild heart tonic) Saffron (sedative) Sage (part of a cerebral tonic) Sandlewood & henbane (when burned the fumes cause convulsions & temporary insanity) Skullcap (relaxant) Sunflower Seed Oil (this may be used to help with brain stem scarring) Valarium Root (works just like Valarium, also helps cramps) Witch Hazel (hemorrhaging) Yerba Mate (part of a cerebral tonic)

B. Brief History of the Use

Religious groups, shamans, medicine men, witches and cults have been using mind altering drugs throughout history. The medieval witches used potions of hemlock and aconite for their flying ointments. These are herbs (natural drugs) which will create delirium. Contemporary witnesses reported that covens during the medieval ages would apply the potion of hemlock and aconite to cause their new witch to go delirious, and then would transport the person to the Sabbat, where they would be told they flew there.

The Haitian satanic Vodoun cult, which has been manipulated by the CIA/Illuminati, has sorcerers called bokors. The Vodoun cult in Haiti is being used for trauma-based mind control. One of the items of the cult is to take the plant Datura stramonium and add this plant with other things. The plant is the active ingredient of a potent psychoactive drug, the "zombi cucumber" which produces amnesia and a pseudo-death of the victim. The brain doesn't die, but the mind is shut off. The victim is brought back to life as a zombie--a slave of the bokor. The powder to create a zombi is called zombificant in French-creole. The ceremonies to kill and resurrect the zombie are full of magic and demonology also. Magic, drugs and demonology have always gone hand in hand. Drugs remove the part of the will that prevents demonic possession.

Drugs are considered powerful demonizing substances by the those skilled in Demonology. If demonic possession is seen as part of mind-control, then cocaine, hashish, crack, and some of the other drugs are part of the effort to enslave people. (The power of magic to kill, just as the power of faith can heal, will be discussed in chapter 10.)

In Basutoland in Drakersbergs, the Zulu witchdoctors use drugs and trauma to create tokoloshes (mind-controlled zombie slaves). It is said that in recent years, they are using less children and more baboons and monkeys to get tokoloshes. The point is that drugs have been and continue to be used by the occult world for controlling people. The intelligence agencies working through the U.S. government financed drug research. An example is that Dr. Beecher of Harvard University was given via the U.S. Army Surgeon General's Office $150,000 to investigate "the development and application of drugs which will aid in the establishment of psychological control."

Research into drugs for mind-control began in 1947 at Bethesada Naval Hospital in Maryland . A CIA report described this research as to "isolate and synthesize pure drugs for use in effecting psychological entry and control of the individual." At the California Medical Facility at Vacaville , Dr. Arthur Nugent, conducted research into drugs for mind control under the auspices of the CIA. The Bureau of Narcotics worked with the CIA to establish "safe houses" where drugs which were seized were given to victims. Some other hospitals which began working with the intelligence agencies with dispensing drugs for mind control include Mount Sinai Hospital, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, University of Illinois, University of Michigan, University of Minnesota, Valley Forge General Hospital, Detroit Psychopathic Clinic, Mayo Clinic, the National Institute of

Health, and Letterman Hospital in the Presideo, CA.

The military did drug research/programming at the Army Chemical School in Ft. McClellan , AL and at the Edgewood Chemical Center . In 1958, Dr. Louis Gottschalk, working for the CIA suggested that addictive drugs be used to control people. Some GIs who became addicted to pain killing drugs were subsequently blackmailed by withholding the painkillers until they complied with the demands asked of them. Cocaine has been frequently given to Monarch slaves to get them addicted and give their handlers more control over them. There is spray cocaine, and powdered cocaine, etc. Because the Monarch slaves are used to haul drugs and to launder the drug money, they are right in the middle of large supplies of drugs. If you hear the expression "The snow is falling" it is the Network’s lingo for cocaine. Cocaine is reported to give people a feeling of power and to act as an aphrodisiac.

C. Applications For Drugs

In Programming Drugs are used during programming. Although drugs used to assist programming mean nothing to the common person, they each have a specific purpose within a certain type of programming. Some specific uses for drugs during programming include:

a. putting people into trance
b. teaching alters to go deeper into trance to escape drug effects
c. enhancing the trauma
d. producing out of body experiences
e. creating pain
f. creating blood vessels that hurt, a pulsating pain, that runs through the body
g. controlling histamine production
h. helping create illusions such as no hands, no feet, no face, no head etc.
i. teaching alters to stay in position
j. to assist other programming modalities, such as high tech harmonic machines, which implant thoughts. (The machines are used in conjunction with designer drugs.)

k. Hormones, for instance GnRH, which regulates the physiology of the sexual growth, and is given to speed up sexual growth. Other body developments may also be manipulated.

l. to enhance or reduce memory

m. to build the image of the programmer’s power

At this point, it is appropriate to point out that the personalities of a multiple do not respond uniformly to the same dose of the same drug. Understanding how a drug will effect particular alters is a science in itself. If an alter is holding the body, it will receive more of the effect of a drug. Let’s say Paraldehyde is given to a multiple. A possible reaction would be that some alters will feel no effect, some will be sedated to a drunken stupor, and child alters may be unconscious or hyperactive. Chloral hydrate might put some alters to sleep while others remain wide awake. Sometimes the personality holding the body may fight the influence of a drug to keep the body. Prochlorperazine is sometimes given by therapists to help alters cope with nausea and vomiting. Most alters will be programmed not to accept drugs except from their master.

Lithium suppresses alter switching in some systems. An alter to "protect" the system from the therapist’s helpful medications may develop "allergic" responses. Alcohol is a drug. The reaction of an alter System to it will again be varied. Child alters may become unconscious, while the adult alters don’t even become inebriated by large quantities of hard liquor. Within males, dangerous violent personalities may take the body. Within the medical world, often an approximate correct dosage will work. However, with the programming the doses must be extremely fine tuned.

Some of the best skilled medical doctors and assistants help with the programming. The Illuminati will initially give the small child a small dose of a drug. They will chart its effect, give it a urinalysis to see how long it stays in the body etc. This is just the testing stage, they are not doing any programming. A number of drugs will be tested, but only one at a time. They clear a child’s body of a drug before they give it another one. They prefer not to mix meds. They will start small to insure they don't overdose and then increase the dosage until they notice the correct behavior pattern. This will be charted in detail on the slave's chart. Each child's body chemistry is different, so the suggested dosages are only ball park figures which are not precise enough. If too much of a drug is given, the programmers can easily turn a child into a psychotic basket case.

One of the secrets of the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies is that they have secret antidotes for most medications, which, if they have to give them to a child, then they will. They will use an antidote, for instance, to keep a child from going into heart failure. The Programmers will have some helpful drugs and herbs on stock too. It is reported that Glutamic Acid (1000 mg. 3 times/day) will take care of the intense headaches that alters get from lots of switching. Witch hazel leaves and comfrey root will help internal bleeding.

a. putting people into trance About 90% of the population can be placed into the somnambulistic (the deepest) hypnotic trance possible simply by giving them hypnotic drugs. The prior list on pages 47-50 gives over 2 dozen drugs that can be used to assist taking someone in hypnotic trance. Special drugs have been designed which will place someone into a deep trance very quickly. If an alter is not being cooperative when they are accessed, they can be locked in place mentally and given a quick shot of a fast-acting hypnotic-inducing drug.

One drug which was popular for programming was demerol, which would be administered intravenously (an IV). It takes about 5-7 minutes to take full effect after administration via an I.V. The dosage can be administered so that the effect remains until the programming session is over. It may be administered about every half hour if appropriate. Children will receive 1 to 2.2 mg/kg dose.

Another drug, a truth serum, also consistently works on people making them totally compliant to any directive. Under Baradanga people will give their bank account numbers and anything else a person might want. These type of drugs are almost sufficient in themselves to get compliance out of a person. If one realizes that these drugs are used in conjunction to torture, elaborate systems of lies and deception, trauma-bonds, and all the rest of the sciences of mind-control used in the programming, it is easy to see how they are producing totally compliant human robots.

b. teaching alters to go deeper into trance to escape drug effects and pain. Much of the training in this area is based upon the child's horror and fear toward the all powerful master programmer. When the programmer wants the child's alters to learn to trance deeper, he will give a drug that the alter doesn't like. The child's alter will then be told to go deeper into the mind if they want to escape the effect of the drug. This enforces the dissociative state being trained for the alter. The suggestion or story line that is given to the alter is frequently the picture of a train. The child is told that the conductor is at the front of the train, but he must move to the back of the train through the train cars. The child is taught to count cars when they go by as if they were steps in the mind. This is training the child to descend into deeper levels of the subconscious. The train illustration has been used by programmers when they want the child to remember the drug experience. The programmer wants this experience remembered--at least for a while because it helps increase the child's fear. If the programmer wants the child to forget the drug experience while learning trance depths, then the imagery of a plane taking off and disappearing in the clouds works.

c. enhancing the trauma Drugs will be used to enhance the spinning effect when the mind is being programmed to have vortexes and to set up traps within the slave's mind. One particular drug enhances the trauma by 100 times. Drugs can be useful for instance, to enhance a child's terror of the experience of this child being placed in a small box in the fetal position for 24 hours. This helps shorten the programming time, and it also make the programming more intense. The programmers know what antidotes to give to pull the child out of the enhancement. Marijuana enhances perception of color and noise, but it is not used to enhance trauma. The mind does not program well under marijuana. That is why there has been such a big campaign to keep it illegal, even though many studies show it to be safer than alcohol.

d. producing out of body experiences Various hallucinogenic drugs, LSD included, will produce an out of body experience for the victim, if the drugs are administered correctly. The Programmer will prepare the victim with various information and story lines during the administration of the drug. Monarch slaves who are being deprogrammed, may have a memory where their skin feels inflamed and itchy, like a bad mosquito bite. The experience may also have the sensation of floating in an unreal world. This may well be an LSD trip given the slave during experimentation and programming. The CIA was using LSD beginning in the very early part of the 1950s. Several victims report that some type of potion causes a person to dream while they are awake. PCP which is "angel dust" is one way to disconnect the cortex from the limbic system and go into an altered state.

e. creating pain. This is done with a long list of drugs. Drops of salt water and pepper water are applied to the eyes of victims to make their eyes sting. Another pain in the eye takes place when lights are flashed signalling, "I love you, I love you not." The child is pulled two ways by this message. Dr. Green (Mengele) enjoyed pulling daisy petals while saying these words. If the last petal was "I love you not." the child would be put to death. Surviving children were left traumatized.

f. creating blood vessels that hurt Blood pressure is raised by drugs and then certain drugs are added which make the veins burn. The alter is taught to cut the burning veins. This is programming which is laid in to control the slave from straying from the script he or she is given. If they stray, then a cutting program is activated which was laid in via a combination of drugs in the method just stated.

g. controlling histamine production The control of histamine production is an important secret ingredient to the Monarch Mind Control. The breast implants placed into women help stimulate histamine production, which is used in conjunction with drug-assisted programming (See Chapter 8.)

h. helping create illusions such as no hands, no feet, no face, no head etc. A programmer working with a hallucinogenic drug can make an alter believe that it has lost a particular body part. Because most of these alters have little memory or no memory and little frame of reference, what they are told while under the influence of drugs seems very real to them.

i. teaching alters to stay in position Some alters don’t like to stay in position. But through the use of drugs, and the side effect of drugs, they soon learn the importance of staying in position. If they are disobedient, the memory of the bad side effects from not staying in position in the mind can be pulled up by a code and the alter can relive the pain from having disobediently moved from position. This is very effective in teaching alters to stay in their little position that is assigned them in the mind.

j. to assist other programming modalities, such as high tech harmonic machines, which implant thoughts. (The machines are used in conjunction with designer drugs.)

An example of how drugs can be important is as follows. The neurons in the hippocampus which is part of the memory process use acetylcholine. Drugs that block acetylcholine interfere with memory. The neurons and the chemical neural transmitters are understood much better today. Where and how a thought is created in the brain is understood by the programmers in detail. No one is in a position to physically prevent the Illuminati and others from taking their children and others to labs where chemicals and harmonics can be used in sophisticated computer guided ways to implant thoughts into the children’s minds. As the child’s brain is shaped according to its environment, the level of everyday brain chemicals and the shape of the various areas of the brain can be determined by the programmers.

This is why a recent article on Prozac (Newsweek, Feb. 7, 1994) uses a quote from Alice In Wonderland for its title, "One pill makes you larger, and one pill makes you small". This article (on page 38) quotes brain researcher Restak, "For the first time, we will be in a position to design our own brain." On the previous page in big letters it reads, "Scientific insights into the brain are raising the prospect of made-to-order, off-the-shelf personalities."

Another programming modality assisted by drugs is behavior modification. Aversion therapy using a vomit-inducing drug is used on children. Another example of drugs helping assist programming is to give someone LSD and then interview the child while it is hallucinating. The hallucinations are then used as programming building blocks by using hypnotic techniques. One way to build on an LSD trip is to tell the child if they ever do a particular thing (such as touch programming, remember programming, and integrate parts, etc.) the victim is to go crazy and hallucinate like they are presently doing. This means that they will be locked up in a crazy house for the rest of their life. Rather than be put in straight-jackets with other crazy people it would be better for the person to commit suicide. By constantly reinforcing this message, some alters will adopt the script "that they are doing the body good to kill it if any alter personality touches the programming," because otherwise the body will be locked up in a crazy house.

Drugs are used in programming to establish a pattern or a script. There must be a pattern of dissociation. Parts can't just dissociate into nothing, otherwise there would be nothing to build on. Drugs will play a major role in the structuring of the alter system, which is covered in chapter 7. The child doesn't know where the effect of the drug is coming from. The programmer will take credit for the power of the drug. Whoever administers the drug has power in the child's mind. The mind wants to be safe.

I am familiar with a recent example here in Oregon of someone who escaped from being sacrificed at a Satanic Ritual. The legal system told the woman she was crazy when she reported to the police that she had escaped from a Satanic Ritual where they were going to sacrifice her. To control her, the judge ordered 3 types of antipsychotics, twice the normal dose of two kinds of lithium carbonate to put her into a lethargic stupor, Paxil as an antidepressant, and Benztropine mesylate as an antiparkinsonian agent. The antipsychotics were Thiothixene, Thioridazine hydrochloride, and Perphenazine which are all addictive. This woman may or may not be a multiple. But this clearly shows the type of mental control via drugs that could be slapped onto someone who dares report Satanic activity to an establishment which has been sadly corrupted from top to bottom.

One victim of government mind control tried to get free. The first psychiatrist the person tried to go to was cooperating with U.S. Intelligence and gave her Stelazine, which aggravated the victim's situation. When the victim spied a general's uniform in the closet of this psychiatrist, she got another psychiatrist, who unfortunately turned out to be an ex-DoD employee. He placed her on Haldol Decanoate, Klonopin, and Benzatropine. The combined effect of these drugs is to erase memory, and create a dissociative disorder. All of the drugs were highly addicted. Another fleeing victim was given Trazodone by a physician who was cooperating with the Intelligence agencies. This almost gave the victim a heart attack because it aggravated her heart condition. And yet another escaping victim apparently also fell prey to dirty CIA doctors who were practicing in public without warning people of their intelligence connections. This victim was given a combination of Compazine and Xanax, in dosages that the Physicians Desk Reference warns against. The doctor, who prescribed this, worked out of an office named after an MK Ultra programmer. There are other important things to mention about when drugs are used in Monarch programming.

Some of the cautions that the programmers are alert to include:

a. watching the heart so that it doesn't stop. Many of the children who have been programmed have died from heart failure. The programmers are very careful to have heart monitors on the victim, and to have paddles ready to revive the body. Because so much of their drugging affects the heart, they accept that they will lose a few to heart failure.

b. making sure that drugs aren't given to children who are allergic to them. The programmers take the time to insure that they have the family histories of allergies to drugs, and they will test the children too, before proceeding with drugs. They not only learn the family & individual responses to drugs, but they can test during programming to determine a drug's blood level in a child. For instance, pentobarbital at a blood level of 5 mcg/ml aids hypnosis, at 15 makes the victim comatose with reflexes, and at 30 makes the person comatose w/ extreme difficulty in breathing. In everyday life, 30 mcg/ml would kill the child. Pentobarbital blood levels can be tested by an enzyme multiplied immunoassay technique. For longer-acting Phenobarbital gas chromatography is used. TCA's are tested by radioimmunoassay, high-perf. liquid chromatography & thin layer chromatography. Some hypnotics are tested by colorimetry, photometry, & spectrophotometry.

c. switching to herbs when the body is saturated with drugs. When the child's body has had all the manufactured drugs it can absorb, the programmers switch to a vast collection of natural herbs.

d. providing the antidote for AIDS. Monarch slaves are routinely given the antidote for AIDS and have been since the 1960s-1970s.

e. knowing how much of a drug each part can take, small young alters can't take as much. Multiples within a single system have varying levels of tolerance toward drugs. A small child alter may be killed by an adult dosage, even though the age of the body is that of an adult. The programmers are acutely aware of how to deal with multiple personalities.

f. providing salt to balance the electrolytes in the mind of a programmed multiple personality. An electrolyte imbalance can cause a multiple personality's mind to go wacky and start spinning. The Multiple could possibly go into shock and die. The programmers are very experienced in understanding the unique requirements of a multiple personality.

g. An important plant extract for watching brain wave activity is the large plant enzyme horseradish peroxidase (HRP).

Perhaps it would be worthwhile to briefly mention that all the major chemical and drug companies are run by the Illuminati. It would take a book to explain who controls what and how they connect in, and this author could write it. Instead, we will try to give a quick over view. Rather than cover 2 dozen large drug companies, three major drug companies have been randomly selected to show a quick view of how all the drug companies are deeply involved with Monarch mind-control programming. Since the purpose of this book is to show how the mind control is done--this sample of names is given only to convey to the reader that the drugs that the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies need are never in short supply. And the labs to develop designer drugs for mind-control are not in short supply either.

ELI LILLY CO.--Trustee of Eli Lilly Endowment Walter William Wilson - Illuminati, married to Helen Scudder (of the wealthy powerful Scudder family), prominent partner of Morgan, Stanley & Co. controlled by Henry Morgan also a member of the Illuminati. Executive Vice-pres. of Eli Lilly Landrum Bolling, represented Eli Lilly at the secret annual Dartmouth conferences, overseen by the Illuminati. Chairman of Eli Lilly Richard D. Wood, dir, of the Rockefeller's Standard Oil, Chemical Bank of NY, and the Amer. Enterprise Inst. for Public Policy Research. Dir. Eli Lilly C. William Verity, Jr., dir. Chase Manhattan Bank and assoc. with U.S. intelligence, and works with Mrs. Rockefeller as a member of USTEC. Dan Quayle and George Bush (CIA director and Monarch handler) have been part of Eli Lilly management too.

MANSANTO CHEMICAL COMPANY--President Earle H. Harbison, Jr.-CIA. and director of Bethesada General Hospital where they program Monarch slaves. He is also the president of the Mental Health Association.

STERLING DRUG CO. (an I.G. Farben spinoff)--connected to the Krupp Illuminati family. Chairman W. Clark Wescoe, dir of the super secret Tinker Foundation which is a CIA foundation. Dir. Gordon T. Wallis, Illuminati, dir, of the Fed. Reserve Bank of NY, CFR, Director Martha T. Muse, CIA, pres. of the Tinker Foundation, dir. of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem (Knights of Malta), and dir. of Georgetown Center for Strategic Studies

Summary

As the reader can see, the use of drugs in the Monarch Trauma-based Mind Control is extensive and requires skilled technicians, nurses, and doctors. Because of the long-held control by the Illuminati families over narcotics and drug manufacture/sales, there is no difficulty for the programmers to get large quantities of secret designer drugs. The minor occult cults have to get by with a more limited supply of mind altering drugs, unless they directly connect in with the bigger picture. The power of drugs to control a person's life is not absolute--although someone who lives with a cocaine addict or alcoholic might disagree--but when coupled with all the other methods in a sophisticated system of mind-control, drugs just further reinforce the absolute power of the Illuminati over an individual.

Chapter 4. Science No 4 - Hypnosis Understanding the Basics About Hypnosis

A. Dissociation, Trance, and History of Hypnosis for Programming

Dissociation is used as a defense to protect a person from overwhelming pain and trauma. It is a natural ability of the brain. Hypnosis or hypnotic trance is a form of dissociation. There are a number of types of dissociation: amnesia, somnambulistic states, localized paralyses, anesthesias, and hallucinations. Hypnosis can reproduce all of these dissociative states. The mind naturally hypnotizes itself under various conditions. Perhaps the reader has been driving along a familiar road and the next thing you knew you were arriving home, having driven in a trance. Now let's suppose you are driving to a movie and you are discussing next week's plans with your wife. The complex thinking required to drive just happens. You are awake talking to your wife, and yet on another level you were in trance driving the car. You as a subject were both in hypnotic trance (driving) and awake (talking about plans).

There are 5 levels to the subconscious that the mind will naturally dissociate to. The other deeper levels require help to access. People naturally can think on two levels. Because people's minds function on multilevels and there is a continua on a spectrum that runs from conscious to unconscious, it is often difficult to pinpoint just exactly what state of mind the brain is in at a certain point, because there is no single answer. A light trance is where a person is daydreaming about his girlfriend. A moderate trance is where he imagines he is in bed. A deep trance is where he physically feels he is in bed with his girlfriend. Sleep is where one dreams of being in bed. Behavior modification is carried out in the light to deep trances. The deep trance is a very creative level.

Hypnosis appears to affect several areas of the brain--the brain stem is modified into the hypnotic state, and the midbrain centers are inhibited so that other areas--the motor, sensory and memory areas can be manipulated. Further not all hypnosis works the same way. Hypnosis can be used on the intellectual part of the mind, the social-spiritual part of the mind, and the primitive reproductive part of the mind.

The skilled hypnotist will decide which area he wants and how to work with that area. Both Christians and Illuminati members who are skilled in understanding demonology, believe that there is a demonic side to hypnosis also. It should come as no shock to people that in the World Book Encyclopedia hypnosis is listed under Magic as a related article, but not under Medicine. Some Christians class hypnosis as a form of divination and enchantment. It certainly can be a form of control. In occultist W.B. Crow's book Witchcraft, Magic & Occultism, it lists hypnotism as an occult science. There is open debate whether hypnotism is simply part of the brain's natural abilities or if supernatural elements are part of the process. There is no debate that historically, hypnosis for centuries has been the guarded secret of the occult world. During shock or stress, the body's limbic-hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal system, releases substances which encode all the internal and external pieces of information being sensed into a deep level of consciousness. These memories often become dissociated from normal states of consciousness. In other words, when the mind-body returns to this state (where it was in during shock/stress) the mind can reaccess those memories. However, until the mind returns to this shocked state, it doesn't pick up the information it has embedded. The Monarch programmers are acutely aware of how the mind functions, and how information and memories can be trapped in the mind.

There are different neurophysiological states. Also there are said to be 12 levels to the subconscious mind. Then on top of this the mind has the ability to create amnesia barriers. Hypnosis is a valuable tool to move the mind to different neurophysiological states and to get the mind to different levels of the subconscious mind. Hypnosis can also play a role in working around amnesia, since both are types of dissociation.

Hyperventilation helps a person induct into a hypnotic trance. Torture, depersonalization, fear and acute anxiety stimulate the body to hyperventilate. So the fear, torture and depersonalization are aids for the hypnotist to help induct a person into a hypnotic trance.

Hypnotic cues can be given to cause the body to go into various dissociative states. This could be a post-hypnotic suggestion that causes hyperventilation and an accompanying trance state. Hypnotic cues that are tied to every day objects enhance the programming. Everything in life becomes a cue to reinforce the programming. That may seem on the surface to be an exaggeration, but it is only slightly enlarged from the truth. The programmers do in fact examine a person's life, and then tailor their cues to what the person will be around.

For instance, the programmer may force the child to smoke and then tell it that every time they blow out smoke they will think about their master. The programmed alters don't dare not to smoke on fear that they will be punished. The smoking in turn reinforces the power of the hypnotist/master. Much of the good that therapy can do is in effect to de-trance or dehypnotize clients. Most of the alters of a Monarch system go their entire lives in trance. Common objects in a person's life that can be hypnotically given a programming meaning include music, tones, colors, the sight of a book or Bible, the pyramid on the back of a dollar bill, pictures of God, silk scarfs, jewelry, lights, sounds, TV programs, and countless other things. The limit to this is simply the programmer's creativity.

The power of hypnosis is often underrated because the power of the mind is underrated. The mind can decide to control its breathing, heart beat, blood pressure and other things that were once thought to be involuntary.

The brain produces a substance which is a tiny peptide molecule called enkephalin which acts just like morphine and reduces pain. The brain can be hypnotically trained to release enkephalin so that the brain doesn't perceive pain. A common hypnotic device for washing away pain is running water. The victim is hypnotically told to go to a waterfall and wash their pain away. (According to a programmer the average healing rate is 3 times quicker under hypnosis than without.)

The fantastic abilities of the mind to control what happens to it are very remarkable (such as its natural healing abilities), but most of this is being kept a National Secret so that it can be used against humanity to enslave us to demonic-empowered power hungry monsters, rather than to benefit humanity. Several people in intelligence agencies quietly bemoan the fact that secret research could be helping humanity instead of controlling it.

The human mind has been found to be like an immense symphony orchestra, each part doing what it does best under the guidance of a director part similar to the conductor of an orchestra. A non-multiple's brain delegates responsibility to parts of his brain yet retains control over the process. His mind will shift from one ego state to another, & still retain its identity.

In contrast, the multiple's brain also delegates responsibility and shifts from one ego state to another, BUT doesn't retain a cohesive selfhood or self-identity. The mental mechanisms are similar, but the experience is vastly different. Rather than an orchestra playing together, the multiple's brain is full of competing isolated parts (instruments so to speak) that are playing in isolation. Out of the chaos of all these independent amnesic parts, the programmer through hypnosis/& fear then becomes the conductor to help bring order out of chaos.

If the multiple is to regain a chance to orchestrate their own life again, they must re-establish communication between the different parts of what should have been their own orchestra, and get internal people to harmonize their music of life. Good programmers do not need to formally induct their victim into hypnosis. However, if they need to, the Monarch slaves are well conditioned to respond to numbers being counted and fingers being snapped. Hypnosis was a well developed art by the early 20th century. And testing and refining continued all along.

For instance, the. U.S. military was conducting extensive tests of subjects under hypnosis during W.W. II. In spite of all this, the CIA was still seeking better rapid induction techniques for their slaves during the 1950s. MK Ultra Subproject 128 dealt with rapid induction techniques, especially Subproject 128-1. Some of their drug testing was done at Lexington , KT Detention Hospital.

The ability to distinguish between magic and hypnotism may not exist for the child in situations where they are witnesses to the power of hypnotism exercised by a programmer. This makes the adult programmer, who is a big person look all powerful. Another danger inherent in hypnosis are complications (side effects) that hit a percentage of those who are subjected to it.

Hilgard (1974) discovered 31% of the 120 university students participating in a study of hypnosis had complications that lasted from 5 min. to 3 hours after trance, which included headaches, dizziness, nausea and stiff necks. Fritz is aware of one woman who, after the one & only hypnotic session she was the subject of, developed the complication of having nightmares of snakes crawling all over her. (For further study the reader may want to read MacHovec, Frank. "Hypnosis Complications, Risk Factors, and Prevention" American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis. Vol. 31, No.1, July, '88, p. 40+.)

Regular gentle electrical stimulation in many parts of the brain including the lower part of the reticular formation can change the state of consciousness from alert to sleepy. An electrical band attached to a box is sometimes placed on the victim to produce a hypnotic state. There are several ways to alter a person's state of consciousness, but the most popular one by Monarch handlers is to use a combination of drugs and hypnosis. Drugs are used to facilitate hypnosis. Modern drugs do almost all the work for the hypnotist. They place the person in an altered state and make them willing to take any order. Often survivors remember orange or grape drinks, or something else which they were given, which were used to give the child drugs. One Monarch slave

(Cathy O’Brien) wrote about having been given hypnotic drugs via a Grasshopper ice cream drink.

Occasionally, hypnosis must be carried out by the programmers on unwilling subjects. They have 3 major ways to get around this. They can induce hypnosis by disguising what the hypnotist is doing, they can wait until the person is asleep and talk to him while asleep, or they can administer drugs.

Also the Network has some high-tech equipment which stimulates the orgiastic state (sexual ecstasy) part of the brain. By moving the body into this state, the mind opens up all the unconscious states. Then sophisticated brain wave machines program thoughts into the person. A computer disk is put into the electric shock machine and it runs a program that sends electric jolts down six nodes. The brain’s reticular formation serves as the brain’s mechanism involved in regulating alertness and awareness. Various kinds of stimuli will enter the brain through its various methods of sensing and learning. With total sensory deprivation (done by placing the victim in a salt water tank with electrodes that shock the body until it stops all movement) the reticular formation will place the mind into a primitive state of consciousness where the programmers can place in post-hypnotic commands to do something on a certain date. The end time programming, that has Monarch slaves doing something at a specific date to create anarchy or to help the Anti-Christ come to power has been put in at this level.

As previously mentioned, this level achieved by total sensory deprivation of the Monarch slave is same primitive level as the brain’s commands to keep the heart beating. Depending on what type of signals are coming in to it from the various sensing agents of the brain, the reticular formation will then make a decision what state of consciousness to place the mind in. If the reticular formation does not send out "alert" signals, then the brain will get sleepy. Damage to the reticular formation can cause a coma. The two thalamus lie just above the brain stem. The right and left thalamus are the brain’s selective attention mechanism. That is to say, they decide what it is important for the brain to focus its attention on. The right thalamus is connected to attention to visual shapes and the left to our attention to things describable in words. Ten to fifteen repetitions at one second intervals are enough to cause the brain to lose interest in something. At this point the neuron’s in the reticular formation quit paying attention to whatever it is. For instance, your brain will listen to a clock tick for only 15 intervals before it quits listening to a clock in the room. But the brain’s alertness can be reactivated by a strong and sudden stimulus like a loud sound or a flash of light. This is why 3 gunshots or 3 flashes of light are used as standard access triggers for Monarch slaves. Three was also found to be the best number to get the job done.

The History of Hypnosis for Programming

A masonic magazine for higher masonic rites where sex magic is performed entitled Freemasonry Universal, Vol. 5, 1929, p. 58 states:

"Certain Forces are sent through the candidate’s body during the ceremony, especially at the moment when he is created, received and constituted an Entered Apprentice Freemason. Certain parts of the Lodge have been heavily charged with magnetic force especially in order that the Candidate may absorb as much as possible of this force. The first object of this curious method of preparation is to expose to this influence those various parts of the body which are especially used in the ceremony. In ancient Egypt , there was another reason for these preparations, for a weak current of physical electricity was sent through the candidate by means of a rod or sword with which he was touched at certain points. It is partly on this account that at this first initiation the candidate is deprived of all metals since they may very easily interfere with the flow of currents."

Long story short, the Masonic lodges have been using hypnotism and electric shock in their initiation rituals for a long time. The combination of fear and hypnotism combine to help seal the lips of an initiate from telling what in some lodges are secrets of criminal activity. The Brahmin caste in India practice yoga, and other meditations where they regularly go into altered states of consciousness. Centuries ago, the Brahmin fakirs learned about drugs, tortures, and magical methodologies to produce hallucinations and altered states of consciousness. The worship of Bacchus in the west and Shiva in the east were similar, as were the bloodthirsty rites of Kali and Moloch. Occultists in India have also gone to cemeteries for centuries, like the Illuminati to draw spiritual power from graves. When eastern and western occultists linked up they realized they had a great deal in common. The ancient Egyptian writings many centuries B.C. talk about the third eye and temple trances. Hypnosis appears to have been practiced in these ancient temples. All over the world, altered states of consciousness have been used. The feared Scandinavian warriors called Beserkers were in a mildly-programmed altered state of consciousness which made them fearless.

B. How To Program With Hypnosis

George Estabrooks was the first major hypnotist to publicly recognize the potential for hypnosis. He contacted MI-6 and other military and intelligence groups in hopes he could interest them in the military-intelligence potentials of hypnosis. What was George Estabrook's connection to the Illuminati? George Estabrooks was a Rhodes Scholar, which is an entry-level group for the Illuminati.

For those who haven't studied this, it would be appropriate to give a brief explanation of these things. The Illuminati in 1919 created the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA). The Astor Illuminati family were major financial backers of the RIIA. Waldorf Astor was appointed to the RIIA. The American equivalent to the RIIA is the CFR. The RIIA and CFR set up Round Table Groups (based on the King Arthur myths) which were initially named by Cecil Rhodes "Association of Helpers".

High ranking Mason/Illuminatus Cecil Rhodes also created the Rhodes Scholarship to bring select men from several the English speaking world and Germany to learn how to bring in the One World Government that the Illuminati has long had planned. The Cliveden Estate of the Cliveden Astors (of the Illuminati) has played an important role in the preparation of Rhodes Scholars. Bill Clinton and Fred Franz, the late president of the Watchtower Society, are two examples of men selected for Rhodes Scholarships. Bill Clinton went through the program. However, Franz decided not to go to London in order to help lead C.T. Russell's cult as "oracle" after WT Pres. C.T. Russell was ritually killed on Halloween, 1916 and his remains buried under a pyramid. He later served as President himself from 1977-1994.

The Watchtower Society leadership is a front for a part of the Illuminati which practices Enochian Magic. The power of Enochian magic is the Watchtowers. A powerful part of Bethel headquarter workers are Multiple Personalities, and have cult alters who speak in Enochian. Some multiples work in the art department and have been secretly placing hidden occult symbology into Watchtower & Awake! magazines.

Now back to Estabrooks, who was also himself part of the Illuminati. In his book Hypnotism, which came out in 1946, he wrote in his chapter "Hypnotism in Warfare" (again bear in mind that Estabrooks writes this in 1946 and has been advocating what he writes for perhaps the 15 previous years!) This chapter is not taken from a mystery novel. The facts and the ideas presented are, so to speak, too true to be good, but no psychologist of standing would deny the validity of the basic ideas involved. He might, of course, be somewhat startled at our proposed use of these basic ideas and techniques, for he has never given this matter much thought.... The use of hypnotism in warfare represents the cloak and dagger idea at its best--or worst. Even if we did know the answers to some of the weird proposals in this chapter, those answers could never be given for obvious reasons. The reader must use his imagination for specific outcomes in specific cases have not been made public--probably never will be made public. Any topflight physicist is familiar with the basic laws of atomic fission and he is quite free to discuss those laws. But he may or may not know what is happening on some government research project in this field. If he does know, he is not shouting it from the housetops, probably not even whispering it to his best friend. The same applies to hypnotism in the field of warfare. Our interest here lies in some of the more unfamiliar sides of hypnotism which may make it of use in warfare. Again, no psychologist would deny the existence of such phenomena.... The only possible way of determining whether or not a subject will commit a murder in hypnotism is literally to have him commit one.... But warfare...undoubtedly will, answer many of these questions. A nation fighting with its back to the wall is not worried over the niceties of ethics [like Nazi Germany]. If hypnotism can be used to advantage, we may rest assured that it will be so employed. Any "accidents" which may occur during the experiments will simply be charged to profit and loss, a very trifling portion of that enormous wastage in human life which is part and parcel of war....

One in every five adult humans can be thrown into the hypnotic trance--somnambulism--of which they will have no memory whatsoever when they awaken. From the military viewpoint there are a few facts which are of great interest. Can this prospective subject, --this 'one-in-five" individual--be hypnotized against his will? Obviously, no prisoner of war will be co-operative if he knows that the hypnotist is looking for military information, nor will any ordinary citizen if he suspects that the operator will use him to blow up a munitions plant. The answer to this very vital question is "yes", though we prefer to say "without his consent" instead of "against his will." We do not need the subject's consent when we wish to hypnotize him, for we use a 'disguised" technique.

The standard way to produce hypnotism in the laboratory is with the so-called sleep technique. The operator "talks sleep" to the subject, who eventually relaxes and goes into a trance, talking in his sleep and answering questions.

Now suppose...we attach a blood pressure gauge to the subject’s right arm and the psychogalvanic reflex to the palm of his hand, just to make everything look shipshape. These devices are for measuring his ability to relax. We also point out that, of course, the very highest state of relaxation will be his ability actually to fall into a deep sleep while we are talking to him.

We also stress the great importance of the ability to relax in this modern world of rush and worry, promising to show him how to get results as one end of these experiments. All this is by way of buildup. Probably not one of our readers, if exposed to this procedure, would realize that this was preparation for hypnotism, but would co-operate willingly in this very interesting psychological experiment.

We then proceed to "talk sleep," much the same as in ordinary hypnosis, carefully avoiding any reference to a trance or making any tests with which the subject might be familiar, all the while checking on blood pressure and psychogalvanic reflex to keep up the front.

Finally we make the test of somnambulism, or deep hypnotism. We see if the subject will talk to us in his sleep without awakening. If this does not succeed, the subject wakes up completely, and in this case we simply repeat the experiment, hoping for better luck next time. But if we do succeed, if the individual belongs to the "one-in-five" club, the subject is just as truly hypnotized as by any other method, and from now on everything is plain sailing.

By use of the posthypnotic suggestion...we simply say, "Listen carefully. After you wake up I will tap three times on the table with my pencil. You will then have an irresistible impulse to go sound asleep." The next trance is just that easy to get, and the subject has no idea that it is the pencil which has sent him off."...

But we must go even further than this. Once a person has become accustomed to hypnotism, has been repeatedly hypnotized, it becomes very easy for any operator to throw him into the trance. Obviously this will not do if we are to use hypnotism in warfare. So we plug this gap again by suggestion in the somnambulistic state. We assure the subject that in the future no one will be able to hypnotize him except with the special consent of the operator. This takes care of things very nicely....We sit down with the subject...We are talking about the latest boxing match when the operator taps three times on the table with his pencil. Instantly--and we mean instantly--the subject’s eyes close and he’s sound "asleep." While in trance he sees a black dog come into the room, feels the dog, goes to the telephone and tells its owner to come get it. The dog is of course purely imaginary. We give him electric shock which would be torture to a normal person, but he does not even notice it. We straighten him out between two chairs and sit on his chest while he recites poetry. Then we wake him up.

He immediately starts talking about that boxing match! A visitor to the laboratory interrupts him. "What do you know of hypnotism?" The subject looks surprised, "Why, nothing." "When were you hypnotized last?" "I have never been hypnotized." "Do you realize that you were in a trance just ten minutes ago?" "Don’t be silly! No one has hypnotized me and no one ever can.” "Do you mind if I try?" "Not at all. If you want to waste your time it’s all right with me." So the visitor, a good hypnotist, tries, but at every test the subject simply opens his eyes with a bored grin. Finally he gives up the attempt and everyone is seated as before.

Then the original operator taps on the table with his pencil. Immediately the subject is in deep hypnotism. We now add another concept. We can coach the subject so that in the trance he will behave exactly as in the waking state. Under these circumstances we could defy anyone, even a skilled psychologist, to tell whether the subject was "asleep" or "awake." There are tests which will tell the story but in warfare we cannot run around sticking pins into everyone we meet just to see if he is normal. So rapid can this shift be from normal to trance state [the programming state], and so "normal" will the subject appear in trance, that the writer has used such a subject as a bridge partner. He plays one hand in trance and one hand "awake" with no one any the wiser. [This happens with Monarch slaves all the time. Few people ever catch on that alters are under trance.] Suppose we deliberately set up that condition of multiple personality to further the ends of military intelligence.

Let us start with a very simple illustration. For example, we can hypnotize a man in an hotel in, say, Rochester .

We then explain to him in hypnotism that we wish the numbers and state names of all out-of-state cars parked in the block surrounding the hotel. He is to note these very carefully in his unconscious mind but will have no conscious memory of having done so. Then we awaken him and ask him, in the waking state to go out and get us a tube of toothpaste. He leaves the hotel and wanders around the block in search of that tube. Finally, he returns, apologizing for his delay, saying that it was necessary for him to go entirely around the block before he noticed a drugstore in the very building itself. This, he says, was very stupid of him but apparently men are made that way.

Did he notice anything of interest as he made his walk? "Nothing! Oh, yes, there was a dog fight down at the corner." And he described the battle in detail. We now hypnotize him. He knows what we are seeking and at once proceeds to give us numbers and states of strange cars, very pleased with the fact that he can recall thirteen. He evidently enjoys the game immensely and is quite proud of his memory. Then we awaken him and see what he knows in the conscious state. "How many cars are there around the building?" "I don't know." "What are the numbers of the out-of-state licenses around the building?" "Good heavens, I have no idea. I think there is a California car near the front entrance, but I have no idea as to its number."

A friend tries his hand. "Now look here. You were hypnotized half an hour ago and you left this room under posthypnotic suggestion." The subject gets irritated. "Look here yourself. I'm getting tired of that silly joke. This is the third time today you've pulled it. All right. I was hypnotized and saw pink elephants all over the lobby. Have it your way." And the subject sits down to a magazine, obviously angry that this man cannot find something more amusing to say.

Often the hypnotic subject will react in this manner. Push him just a little too far and he becomes irritated, obviously a trick of the unconscious to end the argument and avoid any danger of being found out.... The reader's very natural reaction is, "Why all this rigmarole?"... There are certain safeguards if we use hypnotism. First, there is no danger of the agent's selling out. More important would be the conviction of innocence which the man himself had, and this is a great aid in many situations. He would never "act guilty" and if ever accused of seeking information would be quite honestly indignant. This conviction of innocence on the part of a criminal is perhaps his greatest safeguard under questioning by the authorities.

Finally, it would be impossible to "third degree" him and so pick up the links of a chain. This is very important, for the most hardened culprit is always liable to "talk" if the questioners are ruthless enough. The Super Spy in the instance we are about to outline, we may or may not be dealing with multiple personality....

The little experiment I have just cited could be successful with any good somnambulist and would require about ten hours preparation. The example I now cite would work only with a certain number of the very best somnambulists and instead of ten hours preparation, we had better allow ten months....

Perhaps we had better start by defending our position. Is it unethical? Perhaps, but science merely states the facts.... Now let us return to our presentation. We start with an excellent subject, and he must be just that, one of those rare individuals who accepts and who carries through every suggestion without hesitation. In addition, we need a man or a woman who is highly intelligent and physically tough. Then we start to develop a case of multiple personality through the use of hypnotism.

In his normal waking state, which we will call Personality A, or PA, this individual will become a rapid communist. He will join the party, follow the party line and make himself as objectionable as possible to the authorities. Note that he will be acting in good faith. He is a communist, or rather his PA is a communist and will behave as such. Then we develop Personality B (PB), the secondary personality, the unconscious personality, if you wish, although this is somewhat of a contradiction in terms. This personality is rabidly American and anti-communist. It has all the information possessed by PA, the normal personality, whereas PA does not have this advantage....

The proper training of a person for this role would be long and tedious, but once he was trained, you would have a super spy compared to which any creation in a mystery story is just plain weak. This is what the Illuminati have done. They create good Christian fronts, with Illuminati dark alters who can see what the Christians are doing.

My super spy plays his role as a communist in his waking state, aggressively, consistently, fearlessly. But his PB is a loyal American, and PB has all the memories of PA. As a loyal American, he will not hesitate to divulge those memories, and needless to say we will make sure he has the opportunity to do so when occasion demands.

Here is how this technique would work .... [skipping this story and several others, we come to:] We choose a good subject and then let him in on the plot. We disclose to him that he is an excellent hypnotic subject and we wish to use him for counterespionage. We suspect that in the near future someone is going to try hypnosis on him. He is to bluff, to co-operate to the very best of his ability, fake every test that is made and stay wide awake all the time. The test we fear most is that of an analgesia--insensitivity to pain. So we coach him carefully with posthypnotic suggestions to the effect that even when wide awake and bluffing he will be able to meet every test which may be made here, be it with ammonia under the nose, a needle, or worst of all, the use of electricity, which can be made extremely painful and is easy to use.

Under these circumstances it will be virtually impossible to tell whether this man is bluffing or really in trance. [The story continues that the master hypnotist thinks he has got a good subject and has hypnotized him deep. Then the subject tells him that he was only bluffing. The whole affair provides a nightmare for any counterintelligence group using hypnotism. They can be totally bluffed, unless they turn to high tech equipment to see what is really happening.]

Estabrooks also explains how a man can be hypnotized and told he is only testing the preparedness of security. He is told he has a fake bomb, but is really given a real bomb. The subject is sent to a location, and blows up with the real bomb. The subject blows up with the bomb so the evidence of the hypnotic lie is lost. Hypnosis changes the threshold of the how the senses perceive. Sensitivity can be increased or decreased, hallucinations can be perceived even though there is the absence of any appropriate stimuli, and things that exist can go unperceived by the mind. For instance, alters who are used for porn are hypnotized not to see the camera. Alters used for any type of sexual service are hypnotized repeatedly to not see faces. The slave will actually see blurs where people’s faces are. The Programmers like to manipulate. Children are set in front of circus mirrors that make them taller or smaller for programming. They are set in front of mirrors which duplicate their image. Here in Oregon , there is a site with a magnetic anomaly which bends light. It is called the Oregon Vortex. The Programmers take small children there for programming. Anything that creates an illusion, seems to be noticed by the Programmers and is put to use somehow.

The CIA has employed magicians like John Mulholland to help them create illusions. Magician John Mulholland wrote a manual for the CIA on how to deceive unwitting subjects. Under drugs and hypnosis, when a small child is set in front of a mirror that elongates its body and or then shortens, the reality of the programming script seems real. The programmer can hypnotically call upon the child’s mind to totally hallucinate seeing something, or he can support the illusion by handing the child a doll and telling it that it is a child, or handing the child a pencil and telling the child it is a flower. A great deal of acting and props are used during the programming. What child can tell fool’s gold from real gold? The bottom line is that generally, no matter which way the Programmers do it, whether by an illusion or an outright hypnotic-suggested hallucination, the event for the child is real. The majority of traumas are real events, but the scripts that are given are after the trauma are fictional.

C. Hypnosis Can Boost The Creativity of the Victim to Adopt Scripts

Creativity is a function of attentiveness, playfulness, anxiety, limitations, relaxation, the trance state, responsiveness and absorption. A good programmer can assist or boost the creativity of the child. The programmer can tell stories and programming scripts in a vivid way, so that the sensory pictures are bold and strong. The child can taste and feel and touch in their minds the script being given them. Besides the language of the programmer other aids such as fear and drugs can enhance a victim’s attentiveness.

Playfulness comes naturally to children. They naturally pretend and use fantasy in their play. Because children are innately creative they are far easier to program. Researchers have also discovered that creativity needs an element of anxiety and chaos in the person’s life. If everything is orderly and in perfect harmony, the creative juices will not flow. The conscious mind and the subconscious mind need to grapple. For creativity to be productive it must occur within limits. For instance, the concerto is created within the limits of a piano keyboard.

The programmer, and the Grande Dame and the Grande Mother of the Illuminati victim carefully guide the child's creativity and set limits. The spark of creativity occurs when there is an alternation of intense concentration and relaxation. The programmers must work back and forth between torture and kindness. A light trance will allow the mind to surface creative ideas. That is why writers and composers get ideas when they are in a light trance driving, in a light sleep, or shaving or some other place where a light trance occurs. Receptivity is the willingness to accept a creative idea when it comes.

The final part of creativity is one's absorption into the process of creativity. The artist may get so immersed into the portrait that he is painting that the portrait seems alive and real--the actual person. This immersion, where things imagined become real, is important to keep the creative juices flowing. The hypnotist/programmer can enhance the creative process by giving the child positive encouragement to reduce their fears and inhibitions to creativity. The programmer could say to the older child (a younger child might be told something else), "You take all of your fear of not being creative and put them into a sack. The sack now becomes a bundle of energy. Now imagine you are opening the sack and out of the sack comes a rainbow of energy. It is powerful, it is positive. You are now full of new ideas. You can feel this power surge through your body. Your mind is now clear and focused, focused, you feel confident, sure of your talent and eager to set your new ideas into motion, and you control the energy in your life, you are very successful in controlling the energy in your life...you take a few breaths and relax. You notice the neighborhood around you, there is a beautiful park, you begin to notice how beautiful the day is, and you begin to feel a fresh new energy flowing through your body...the more calm you become the more enthusiastic and creative you become...you will feel free to create, to enjoy your creative talent, to invent, to shape, and form new and wonderful ideas."

This is not to say that the Illuminati programmer or Mother of Darkness assistant will use this type of hypnotic suggestions, but sometimes it does become necessary to teach some children how to dissociate, and how to become creative. If they do not develop these abilities, they may lose their life to the torture.

The Vital Role of Movies for Hypnotizing Small Children

As mentioned before, the hypnotist will find children easier to hypnotize if they know how to do it with small children. One method that is effective is to say to the small children, "Imagine you are watching a favorite television show." This is why the Disney movies and the other shows are so important to the programmers. They are the perfect hypnotic tool to get the child's mind to dissociate in the right direction. The programmers have been using movies since almost day one to help children learn the hypnotic scripts. For children they need to be part of the hypnotic process. If the hypnotist allows the child to make up his own imagery, the hypnotic suggestions will be stronger. Rather than telling the child the color of a dog, the programmer can ask the child.

This is where the books and films shown the child assist in steering its mind in the right direction. If the hypnotist talks to a child, he must take extra precaution not to change the tone of his voice and to have smooth transitions. Most of the Disney films are used for programming purposes. Some of them are specifically designed for mind-control.

Spinning Tops

One method for inducting children into a dissociative state is to have them look at a large spinning top, as the colors whirl around. Carousel rides have also been popular to induce trances. A good sampling of optical illusions can be found in Katherine Joyce's book Astounding Optical Illusions. NY: Sterling Pub. Co. , 1994. The illusion The Temple makes one feel they are in a passageway leading to a small door. The Escalator makes one feel they are going up and down, and could be used for building in an internal elevator. We know that optical illusions have been used, but we are not saying that these particular ones have been. For a programmer to use an optical illusion, he would first submerge the victim into a drugged state with the appropriate mind altering music and sounds and then flash the illusion onto the wall that the victim was facing. With virtual reality the child can really be immersed into a weird head trip.

The Hypnotic Voice of the Programmer

Programmers will adopt either an authoritarian voice, which is commanding and direct or a permissive soft tone. Bear in mind the slave who has the authoritarian voice used on it, sees the programmer as God with the authority of life or death over its (his or her) body and soul. The heightened expectation from the commanding tone, will increase the suggestions chance for success. However a softer tone, will relax the victim, and the hypnotist and the programming victim become partners in the hypnotic process. The advantage of the softer tone, is that the creativity of the victim is enhanced and participates more in the process.

The hypnotic induction becomes more real when the victim participates more in the process. The Monarch programmer will either use a monotone voice or a rhythmic voice. Remember, the professor who could lull his students to sleep. He had a hypnotic voice, without knowing it. A singsong or rhythmic voice is comforting. It can also be used by the Programmer. One continuous thread of words strung together are used to close out distractions. After a suggestion or command is given, a pause is made by the programmer in talking so that the suggestion is taken into the mind. Otherwise anxiety is experienced by the victim's mind, and the suggestion will not be accepted as well.

Cisco, the co-author provides an example of how a hypnotic script can go with music, "Close your eyes for your eyes will only tell the truth. And the truth isn't what you want to see. In the dark it is easy to pretend that the truth is what it ought to be. "Softly, deftly, music shall caress you. Hear it, feel it secretly possess you. Open up your mind, let your fantasies unwind in this darkness which you know you cannot fight. The darkness of the music of the night. "Close your eyes, start a journey through a strange new world. Leave all thoughts of the world you knew before. Close your eyes and let music set you free. Only then can you belong to me. "Floating, falling, sweet intoxication. Touch me, trust me, savor each sensation. Let the dream begin, let your darker side give in to the power of the music I write. You alone can make my song take flight. Help me make the music of the night. "Helpless to resist the notes I write, For I compose the music of the night. Hearing is believing, music is deceiving. Hot as lightening, soft as candle light. Dare you trust the music of the night?"

When the authors have bumped into men who are programmers and handlers for the CIA, they have noticed that many of these men have warm personalities and have a certain trained hypnotic voice which they use even when not programming. During rituals, the various magical languages used in witchcraft employ repetition, alliteration, nonsense syllables, newly coined words, and ancient words that are chanted or sung in a limited-range that makes the sounds become hypnotic. Sounds like the mantra "a-u-u-in-in" are chanted. Gestures during rituals are also made which intensify the effects. Rituals can not be classified as having nothing to do with programming. There is such a great attempt to secularize and make clinical what the victim experiences, and the idea that witchcraft is part of the programming is an unpopular notion with some. Combining witchcraft with hypnotic language can be powerful with group dynamics. Repetitive sounds, such as a drum beating influences the locus coeruleus part of the brain. Drums can help induce trance.

D. Keeping the Mind Dissaciative

Illuminati parents (as well as other adults who care for a Monarch child) are given special instructions on how to raise the child to be dissociative. The parents are admonished that their child will have a successful future and so will they if they follow the instructions. If they don't follow the instructions, they are minded their child's life could be forfeited.

Here are some of the types of instructions that are given: Spend 15 minutes/day teaching the child to write backwards to develop the brain in a particular fashion. Giving daily doses of prolonged isolation, such as dark closets, dark cellars, the corners of dark rooms. During the prolonged isolation, the child cannot turn on the lights, go to the bathroom, make a noise or anything else. The child will learn to dissociate. The child is also trauma bonded to the abuser because each time the child is let out, it is grateful to the abuser. The child can be drowned in a pool and then resuscitated--and the exact amount of time to keep the child under will be given. The child can be placed in a freezer, and again the exact amount of time can be given to the parent.

The child is not to roam about the house freely. The adults' area is off-limits. The child must move with permission. Systematic punishment without provocation with the message--keep secrets. Hear no evil, see no evil, do no evil. This needs to be done several times a week to reinforce the codes of silence and the programming for silence. A needle which is gripped halfway up is stuck into the child a quarter inch deep on the child's muscles, buttocks or thigh to help continue dissociative behavior. On special occasions (birthdays, holidays) the hands and feet which are most sensitive to pain are stuck. When the feet or hands are stuck, they will often stick the needles under the nails. The ears are also on occasion stuck with needles. It also conditions the child to obey the commands of her handlers, who will use needles to access the minds various personalities. Various spots on the body when stuck with needles along with certain codes become access points for certain alters. Anytime a child argues, has a temper tantrum, or gets angry the child is to be slapped in the face. This is a quick trauma. It is to be followed with a lighted cigarette applied to the child to burn the skin the second the child gets submissive from the slap. If a cigarette can't be found, a stove top or some other hot item is to be found. At four years of age, the child begins programming to burn itself. If there are any bruises showing, the child can be kept home for a day or two. Anytime the child becomes willful it is to have its mouth washed out with soap. The child should be made to chew off a piece and swallow the foam. The child should be raped daily and then tortured. This helps with the sexual programming later, and begins a reversal in the mind that pain is love, and pain is pleasure.

Some of the first memories that female Monarchs recover are their memories of their fathers raping them. This is because the programmers allow these memories to be less dissociated than the later ones where the slave may be sexually servicing an important Monarch slave handler like the Rev. Billy Graham. (Graham is covered in full in chapter 5.)

In later situations like that, the kitten alters which do the sexual servicing will be electro-shocked to block their memory as well as given hypnotic cues. The fathers or step-fathers are often not the person who will be their master when they grow up. The abuse of this person will serve as a cover for the programming. If the person's front alters discover they are MPD, they will initially blame their multiplicity on the first abuser they remember, which then serves as a cover.

E. Keeping the Mind in Alpha State

The entire alter system of a Monarch slave has their sleep patterns controlled. Many alters are programmed not to sleep. They stay awake 24 hours a day internally. Someone has to take the body and sleep--but whichever alters are set up to do it, they are hypnotically commanded to only sleep three hours, to insure that the mind stays in an alpha state easy to program. Because alters which do not hold the body "rest" mentally in a sense--when they take the body they are fresh. In this way, a multiple can function without as much sleep as a normal person, but the price they pay is that their mind stays in an easy-to-program easy-to-hypnotize state. REM sleep allows the person to harmonize the mind's inner world with its outer environment. The periods of REM sleep lengthen as the hours of sleep progress. By preventing long periods of sleep, long periods of REM sleep are prevented from occurring, and the victim remains in a more controllable state of mind.

F. Hypnotic Codes, Cutes and Triggers

When a Programmer creates something, it will be a reflection of himself to some degree. Just like handwriting and art are a reflection of the person who makes them. Understanding the connections between a Programmer and his creation could take a book in itself. The following is extracted from the history of an ancient occult sect, still functioning today. It is the type of thing, that the programmers feed their minds on, which in turn provides them the patterns which show up in programming.

Here it is: In the ancient occult world, at the gates of palaces the doorkeeper had to be shown "the seals"--the secret names of God or pictures with magical power, and the words "R Akiva". When the person passed this entrance, he comes to the palace of pure marble stones, do not say, "water, water." Then the person will enter into the world or the celestial Garden of Eden or the Realm of the Heavenly Palaces. The Story of Sinbad, the golden lamp and genie would be another example of an occult story that could be used. Within the Illuminati, Gematria (which is the cabalistic teachings about numbers) is very important for knowing the codes of the deep darker alters. There are several reasons for why Monarch slaves have lots of codes and structures which come from witchcraft,

a. their programmers are witches and witchcraft is the world view on the mind of the programmer

b. the slaves are reminded of their entrapment to Satan and their cult whenever they hear their codes

c. the alters internally will work magic, even while they don't hold the body, and placing magical structures inside facilitates this internal magic

d. using magical words makes the programming look like magick

e. the internal alters are being inculcated into occult underworld life and doctrine

A rather remarkable book is Aleister Crowley's book 777 and Other Qabalistic Writings of Aleister Crowley. It is remarkable for the deprogrammer to understand many of the programming code links that the programmers may have used. In 777's forward,. Aleister Crowley wrote "777 is a qabalistic dictionary of ceremonial magic, oriental mysticism, comparative religion and symbology. It is also a handbook for ceremonial invocation and for checking the validity of dreams and visions. It is indispensable to those who wish to correlate these apparently diverse studies." (Crowley , 777, p. vii)

Later he writes, "The book 777 has for its primary object the construction of a magical alphabet." (p. xvii) For instance, Crowley gives the Officers in the Masonic Lodges and the Hebrew passwords of their grades. In another example of the book, Crowley gives a list of the Hindu chakra points (which is well known), with the Buddhist names, and their ancient Egyptian names. This is the type of occult knowledge that is hard to come by.

Crowley 's List of Correspondences are perhaps the best one will find printed in the occult world. They show the correspondences that occultists make between things. For instance, if we want to know what corresponds to the Hebrew letter Dalath. The letter means door. Door corresponds to the letter 14, the Cabalistic Tree of Life pathway between the two top circles on each side of "the crown", sky blue on the Queen scale of color, Aphrodite, Venus and Freya, and the gems Emerald and Turquoise, and the perfume sandalwood. All these things correspond within Cabalistic magic.

For someone trying to understand why a particular color, and name is given to a deep darkside alter, Crowley 's book is helpful in some Monarch systems. The Mother-of-Darkness alters (and Supreme Master alters in males) of the Illuminati must do path working rituals when they hold the body and participate in Illuminati activities. These Mother-of-Darkness alters are placed internally in the Cabalistic Tree of Life. Crowley 's book provides the mystic number that goes to each part (plane, or circle) of the Tree of Life and its Snake positional number. The mystic number of the Sephiroth that corresponds to the number to each of the 22 paths that must be worked is also given. The occult concept is that to achieve divinity one must go on the Tree of Life from being Malkuth to become Kether. Although it is not the intent to propagate occult doctrine, for those who want to know how Illuminati Monarch slaves get to where they are as adults, and what the codes are in their System, then we need to cover briefly the Kabalistic Tree of Life. (More will be written about this in chapter 10 on spiritual control.)

Let the reader picture 3 circles in a line. These three circles sit at the top of the Cabalistic Tree of Life. They are the top 3 circles of ten circles which all have names within an Illuminati Monarch slave. The center circle is "the crown" and holds the honored alter who actually is the Bride of the AntiChrist. The AntiChrist is also known as Black Saturn, and other names. Satan himself is known within a Monarch system often by the name Bilair, Bilar, or Bilid which are his cabalistic names.

The honored alter who is married to him sits on a pedestal revolving with 2 other alters. In the occult world, goddesses are triune: maiden, mother and crone. The one to the left of center is Midnight (the Mother figure), and the other is Morning Star (the maiden). Morning Star (Stella Matutina) may be a very young alter, rather than a teenager. On top of the Cabalistic Tree of Life will sit a pyramid. Each of the ten circles (rooms for the alters who live in them) of the Tree of Life is created with a different Illuminati ceremony.

Before a Mother-of-Darkness Monarch slave is 16, they will have gone through all the ceremonies involved in the creation of the alters which correspond to the 10 rooms of the Tree of Life. At age 16, the system's demons will then guide the system on a personalized pathway and a baby (the firstborn) will be sacrificed by the System. The blood of this first born is spiritually placed in a box under the Tree of Life. This is in accord with the Lilith story. The spirit Lilith (sometimes with an alter Lilith) will work with the spirits of Zerodieth and Lucifer. There are several trees which can be placed within a Monarch slave, including the ash, the oak, the ygdrassil, the willow, and the Tree of Evil, which is an evil counterpart to the Tree of Life. These will be dealt with under the chapter on structures. This chapter will provide the hypnotic codes, cues, triggers or whatever one wants to call these words, noises, and sensory inputs that manipulate these poor victims turned into Monarch robots. Other chapters will explain about the structures these codes go to, and also the spiritual dimensions of these codes and structures.

Another way to see things is to recognize that the programmers have created "power words" to which they have attached memory and programming. If a de-programmer observes closely the word usage of the victim, you will begin to spot power words of the abuser, for instance, "white rabbit". A cipher is when symbols are used to represent letters. One can used letter frequencies to break ciphers. Likewise, there are frequencies to code words. The Illuminati's intelligence agencies have programmed thousands upon thousands of slaves.

There are only so many code words to pick from and some of these code words are favorites. From the co-author Fritz Springmeier's experience, the following are favorite code words that have been used to program slaves with: CHARLOTTE, CHECKMATE, CHRISTMAS, CLARA, CLOVERLEAF, COURIER, CRAYON, CRYSTAL DAISY, DAVY, DELLA, DELTA, DEMON, DIANA, DINAH, DIRTY, DIME, DOT, DOVE, DRAGON, DUCK, DUMBO EAGLE, EASY, ECHO, ELAINE, ELEPHANT, ELLEN, EMERALD, EMPIRE, ESTER, EUREKA, EVERGREEN FAITH, FALCON, FARMER, FELIX, FIREFLY, FIVE BROTHERS, FIVE SISTERS, FLASHLIGHT, FLOSSY, FLYING + [other word], FOX, FREEZE, FRIENDSHIP, FULL HOUSE GALAHAD, GAMMA, GARGOYLE, GEMINI, GEORGE, GIPSY, GOLEM, GOLDEN + [other word], GOOSE, GRACE, GRANNY, GREEN DIAMOND, GULL, GWEN HADES, HALF-MOON, HAMMER, HARRIET, HAWK, HAZEL, HELENE, HELIOS, HEN, HERMES, HIGH BALL, HIGH CARD, HOLE-IN-THE-WALL, HOPE, HOPI, HOUNDDOG, HOURGLASS, HUSThER, HYDRA ICEBERG, IDA, IMP, INCUBUS, INSECT, IRIS, IROQUOIS, ITEM JACKASS, JAGUAR, JANET, JANICE, JASON, JASPER, JAVELIN, JENNY, JEZEBEL, JIG, JULIET, JOAN, JOSHUA, JUDY, JUPITER KANGAROOKANSAS, KATY, KING, KILO, KITTY, KOMET LACE, LADY + [other word], LAMP, LAURA, LEAP FROG, LEOPARD, LIGHTNING, LILY, LION, LITTLE + [other word], LOVE, LUCKY + [other word] MAE WEST, MAGIC, MAJESTIC, MAMIE, MANDREL, MARIE, MARK, MARTHA, MAX, MEADOWS, MERCURY, MIGHTY MOUSE, MILLION DOLLAR, MINNIE MOUSE, MONA LISA, MONTE CARLO, MOTHER, MUMMY NANCY, NAOMI, NAVAJO, NIMROD, NOAH, NORA, NUTCRACKER OBOE, OCTOPUS, OLD FAITHFUL, OLIVE, OPAL, OPHELIA, ORION, OSCAR, OWL, OZMA PACKAGE, PAMELA, PANDORA, PANTHER, PAPERCLIP, PAPA, PAT, PATSY, PEGASUS, PENTHOUSE, PHANTOM, PHOENIX, PINECONE, PISTOL PETE, PLATO, PLUTO, POLLY, PYTHON QUAIL, QUEBEC, QUEEN, QUEEN BEE, QUEENIE, QUEST, QUICK SILVER RACHEL, RAINBOW, RAM, RANGER, RASCAL, RAT, RAVEN, REBECCA, RED DIAMOND, RED HILL, RENO, REX, RHUBARB, RITA, ROBOT, ROMEO, ROOSTER, ROSIE, ROVER, RUBY, RUTH SABRE, SAINT, SAINT + [another word], SALLY, SAN ANTONIO, SAPPHIRE, SARAH, SATURN, SCAMPER, SCOUT, SEA GULL, SEAL, SERGEANT, SERGEANT-DELTA, SHADOW, SHARK, SHENANDOAH, SHO, SICKLE, SIGMA, SILVER, SNOW + (other word) ZEBRA, ZENITH, ZERO, ZYPPER, ZOMBIE, ZULU, ZUNI."

The word FOX is an example of a significant occult code word. F-o-x consists of the 6th, 15th (1+5), & the 24th (2+ 4) letters of the alphabet, which yield 666.

The reader needs to bear several things in mind. First, the programmers generally have intelligent, well sounding codes, that do form patterns. For instance, a woman's name from the Bible will be used as a code, with subparts or sub codes having other female names from the Bible. Deeper Illuminati parts will have goddess and god names, and king and queen names for cult alters.

These are the names the handler or cult uses--NOT their access codes.

The codes for slaves follow patterns. There are standard and unique codes. The internal programming alters have the power to change codes if they need to protect the programming. They will have to hypnotically work with alters when they trance out at night. In other words, most of their programming of front alters will be done when a System lies down for "sleep"--more accurately described as "for trance." If the internal alters change many codes, in their efforts to protect the system, they will even make it difficult for the handler/programmer to get into the system. Ciphers developed rotors that require lines to line up. Some simple schemes using this principle appear in some Monarch systems. This is part of the science of structuring. Intelligence codes often come from the Bible or popular fiction books. The deeper codes are occult words, often in foreign languages such as Arabic, which is an important language in the upper occult world. Slaves will be given COVER NAMES for ops, and often males receive female names and vice versa. Very shortly, we will provide the Monarch hypnotic cues (codes) for the multitude of functions that a Monarch's mind must carry out. The type of programming which is placed in a slave varies.

For intelligence operations the slave will have to have BONA FIDES, which are codes to allow two people to meet.

All slaves are given CONTROL SIGNS which allow them to indicate via a code that they are in trouble.

A RECOGNITION signal allows two people to make contact.

For instance, the handler might fly his distinctive sounding plane over a slave's house in a pre-arranged signal. It might also be a particular colored scarf, and a particular set of phrases.

A GO-AWAY code is a prearranged signal that means it is unwise to make contact. The go-away signal may be simply placing one's hands in one's pocket or turning the porch lights off.

A "GO TO GROUND" signal means to go into hiding.

A MAYDAY BOOK exists for Illuminati and Intelligence slaves which allows them to call if they are about to be arrested. A telephone number is left open for just this purpose. Also common universal Illuminati codes can be used by the slave to get set free from police and judges. Within the Jehovah's Witnesses, especially their headquarters, the Illuminati uses Enochian language to program with. With Druidic branches Druidic symbols are used. With the Jewish groups, Hebrew is used. Other languages are also used. An Illuminati System can easily have 6 different languages used as programming codes. The foreign language codes will be for small parts of the System only. Special artificial languages are also employed, as well as sign language.

Monarch Mind Control Codes Contents:

A. Alpha (Basic)
  Codes to all the various basic systems:
  Alice In Wonderland:
  Cinderella Program:
  The Melting Pot Program:
  Wizard of Oz:
  Tin Man Programming:
  Body Programs Control program
B Beta (Sexual)
C. Chi (Return to Cult)
D. Delta (Assassination)
E. Epsilon (Animal Alters)
F. Omega (Internal Computers)
G. Gamma (Demonology) Ceremonies
H. Hypnotic Inductions
I. Janus-Alex Call Backs (End-times)
J. Theta (Psychic Warfare)
K. Tinkerbelle (Never grow up/Alien)
L. Twinning (Teams)
M. Solemetric Military
N. Songs (Reminders)
O. Zeta (Snuff Films)
P. Sample alter system codes
Q. Catholic Programming
R. Mensa Programming
S. Hand Signals
T. Programming Site Codes (Used for Slave Model Codes, etc.)

A. Alpha (Basic) Basic Commands (these basic commands are also found used in many slaves, although there will be exceptions to everything.)

"GET ON YOUR TOES. STAY ON YOUR TOES." means "attention slave" get ready for a command. "ON YOUR TOES--is a preparatory command that will be used throughout an entire system. "IF YOU PLEASE SIR." -From Wizard of Oz, slave says this like "yes, sir." 3-tap code for access. "FOLLOW THE SNAPS", "LISTEN AND OBEY OUR COMMANDS", "THIS IS FOR YOUR OWN GOOD" "FIDDLER" = code to take one to Never Never Land

"PUPPET MASTER" -name of master for Marionette or Puppet program

"DADDY" -master "DADDY'S FRIEND"--a user of slave approved by master "PAPA" -master, "WHITE RABBIT--master "YOU'LL SPEAK MY WORDS WHEN I PULL YOUR STRINGS." Puppet programming control of what slave will say.

"SPILL IT" --trigger command ordering slave to speak

"SILENCE" --order means keep quiet Mr. Rogers Neighborhood's " Land of Make Believe " was used for the programming code script: "I AM MR. ROGERS AND I HAVE PUPPETS, TOO I PULL ALL THE STRINGS AND I PULL STRINGS ON YOU." Twinkling of the nose --Bewitched programming to cast spell or order on slave. "(name of alter), YOU WILL COME FORTH AND OBEY." or "...OBEY AND COME FORTH."

Another basic way of getting an alter would be simply to spin the person and call out the alter's name, or to snap the fingers and call out the name of a front alter.

Access is accomplished for a number of Illuminati slaves by a message via phone or letter, then a looking glass person takes the system to a location outside of the house, maybe simply to the sidewalk, there the person is picked up. The left hand is then grasp on the soft part of the hand between the thumb and forefinger by two fingers very tightly. This pulls up and alter with an egg in its lap. The egg is then opened via a code and the imps inside the egg to communicate to the ribbons and the computer. Access phone calls to slaves may have high-speed codes transmitted that trigger the slave subliminally without their conscious awareness.

Access to some people is done with computer like jargon "ON LINE" "ACCESS, (then identification), (then color code), (then name)" ", "ENTER", "RUN". Some Systems have their triggers all in computer lingo such as COMMAND MODE--ALL DISK DRIVES AND HARD DRIVES... ERASE.. .FORMAT DRIVE...COPY....UNDELETE PURGED MEMORY DRIVE ..."

Where some of the newer slave programmers are also computer programmers they enjoy transferring their computer lingo to use in controlling their programmed slaves. They may even throw in some FAX lingo such as "DIAL ALL REMOTES. . . INITIALIZATION - ATSO -OHOaM (HANDSHAKE BETWEEN ALL REMOTES), HANDSHAKE COMPLETED."

The color of the car to pick up a System may relate to the color coding of the alters to be picked up, such as white exterior, blue interior for a white alter-then blue alter access sequence.

Basic Internal Emergency Color Codes for a System, there are several different "CODE RED's, etc. not just one in a slave, what follows is not the complete information about the Codes, although it is possible some slaves have a simplified version like this:

"CODE GREEN" --Dr. Green's suicide programming, tied to "no-talk" programming.

"CODE BLUE" --Victim's body freezes in motion and can't move until another code is given.

"CODE RED" --Victim gets angry and violent

"CODE RED" -Another Code Red has the standard Monarch meaning, "serious self-destruct" program

"CODE YELLOW" --Victim gets jealous, angry and wants to violently get even "CODE BLACK" --Used to get victim's to get on their ritual clothes.

"CODE WHITE" --Code to protect the cult members from arrest. When police see the Code White they treat the people as untouchable. There are code words for Illuminati members to tell police and judges that will automatically get them set free.

Masonic handshakes and codes also work well with judges, police & govt. workers.

"CODE 911" --To activate the slave for an emergency calling for superhuman strength. Certain alters will have extra strength.

"CODE 911 "--Also used with standard Monarch meaning of "Call your programmer/handler".

"DISARM" (3x)-to get rid of a dangerous alter two snaps + "SHUTDOWN"--to shutdown an alter.

"LET THE KINGS BE KINGS" "LET THE BANKERS BE BANKERS" "LET THE PRIESTS BE PRIESTS"--saying to justify their Master-slave relationship to the masses of humanity. The Sun setting the following day was used as a trigger for slave to forget events.

For the cat alters a certain word is given to trigger them to go "over the rainbow" after an event in order for them to forget it.

"FROM THE RISING OF THE SUN TIL THE GOING DOWN OF THE SAME" --programmed in by using the scripture.

"GO INTO THE SEA OF FORGETFULNESS" --a hypnotic structure in the mind to forget.

Waterfalls are also used as a hypnotic image to forget pain and memory. "RETYPE A LETTER" -reprogram,

"JEWELS" = programs.

"THE CATS & THE FIDDLE NEED TUNED UP--Slave to handler, I need reprogrammed. There are three words to trigger a suicide program -

1. Bait,

2. [intentionally left out],

3. hook

Another suicide program trigger is when the dominoes fall.

"GO OVER THE BLUFF" (3X)- causes suicide in some alters SACRED HEART = Catholic/Jesuit suicide program Some suicide programs are set off with a long tone over the phone along with a code no.

"KERMIT THE FROG" --a type of access code.

"KERMIT" may be a code relating to computers, because Kermit is the universal language for connecting computers together. It is a single standard to exchange files between any two systems.

All memories, traumas, and tortures are coded.

Body programs are coded. One set of body programs uses Hebrew, Greek, and Druidic letters.

A clone program creates clones of an alter (also called lollipop or lobster program) imagery is that sesame seeds fall off of a hamburger bun and becomes another hamburger.

Codes to all the various basic systems:

Carousel 532342223
Castle System 221435321

Communication 311146623
Double Helix 432443321
Level 211343231
Mensa System 323542321
Pentagram 421136113
Pool of Death 231134421
Puppet 341124321
Sole metric 665421134
Spider Web 321654321
Stairwell 432111132
Quabala 423454334
Tornado 332146444
Umbrella System 314321014

Alice In Wonderland:

The White Rabbit is a programming figure for Alice In Wonderland Programming who will allow you to go to otherwise inaccessible places for adventure. He represents the master. The White Rabbit is an important figure to the slave. White rabbit gives a wafer (coke-sugar-cocaine) to Alice and says "EAT ME" or "EAT IT AND I'LL TAKE YOU THROUGH THE DOOR" ---takes master into closed part of System, or perhaps over the rainbow.

The Queen of Hearts is also an important figure for commands in the Looking Glass World which the slave enters upon command. When a deep slave alter is needed to perform they are sent into the looking glass world where a looking glass person carries out the command--but in a way that reality is thought to be a dream. In other words, this is a preparatory command to get the slave ready for abuse. "USE THE KEY. PUT IT IN THE LOCK. TURN. OPEN THE DOOR...AND STEP THROUGH A WINDOW [or MIRROR] INTO NEVER NEVER LAND." "SOMETHING IN LIGHTENING TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' RUBY SLIPPERS. CLICK YOUR HEELS TOGETHER AND BE THERE IN A SNAP. (SLAVE CLICKS HEELS) ELECTRIFYING .... WITH THE RUMBLE OF THUNDER. BOLTING THROUGH TIME ... SO YOU WON'T BE LATE ... FOR A VERY IMPORTANT DATE." (Alice in Wonderland Programming) (This is the wording to use deep alters.)

Cinderella Program:

The code word involves something said about the stroke of midnight .

The Melting Pot Program:

A very powerful program is activated by melting the slave into his master. The slave will do anything for the master with this program. The melting is the ecstasy that is occasionally experienced when lovers having sex seem to melt into each other. This feeling of ecstasy-melting is programmed to release when the master says these words, "MELT INTO YOUR MELTED MIRROR FOR AN ELECTRIFYING RIDE LOOK DEEP INTO THE BLACK OF MY MELTING MIRROR EYES. SEE YOU REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU...(cont. this several times) UNTIL WE MELT TOGETHER AND SINK DEEP... [words omitted] INTO THE OTHER SIDE." "MELT INTO MY MIRROR YOU LOOSE YOURSELF INTO THE POOL OF LIQUID MIRROR STEP INTO THE LOOKING GLASS, SINK DEEP WITHIN ITS POOL, AND STRADDLE THE DIMENSIONS IN TIME. I'LL SEE YOU THERE...ALONG WITH MY FRIENDS" "SEE IT THROUGH THE LOOKING GLASS"-- infinity mirror programming involving mirror image people (alters) "LOSE YOURSELF IN THE INFINITY MIRRORS."

Wizard of Oz:

The Yellow Brick Road is the script or programmed set of instructions one must follow. It also serves as a runway for alters to take off from their internal world and take the body. "FOLLOW THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD" There is a code to get through the poppy field (trance state). Some alters to get through the poppy field need to put on a new dress and a new image. The poppy field may be called "the field of forget-me-not". In this way it is linked to the daisies of Dr. Green. To get into the poppy field is easy, it is "SLEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP", see other induction methods on another page. "THERE'S A PAIR OF MAGIC SHOES TO WEAR WITH YOUR DRESS.. .SOMETHING IN LIGHTNING...TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' FURRY SLIPPERS." When the slave is finished being used they return from Never Never Land to Kansas . To do this they are told: "CLICK YOUR HEELS.. .THERE'S NO PLACE LIKE HOME." They might be reminded "YOU'RE NOW GOING OVER THE RAINBOW TO THE OTHER WORLD."

Tin Man Programming:

The Tin Man programming is all purpose versatile program for what ever the master needs done, it means that the slave is a well oiled machine. Sometimes the slave is reluctant to do a job but he is being told that he is a well oiled machine. The exact words may vary with the mission, but the following are exact words,

"LEAVE YOUR SHELL. ACTIVATE: MACHINE. COUNT DOWN ONE TO TIN...." "SOON WE'LL HAVE YOU PURRING LIKE A WELL OILED MACHINE. ALL OF YOUR MOVING PARTS ARE PIVOTAL AND GLIDING WITH EASE. MELT INTO MY HANDS. TAKE MY COMMANDS. I'LL HOLD YOUR JAW TO KEEP IT FROM SLIPPING WHILE YOU SLIP THROUGH A WINDOW IN TIME."

Program code for slave to shatter their memory of an event (used with electroshock): "MIRROR MIRROR ALL AROUND ON THE CEILING ON THE GROUND SPINNING FASTER ROUND AND ROUND ARE YOU UP OR ARE YOU DOWN? ARE YOU DOWN OR ARE YOU UP? IT REALLY DOESN'T MATTER. BECAUSE WHEN THIS MIRROR BUBBLE BURSTS, EVERYTHING WILL SHATTER." "GO KEY WEST IS KEY--several slaves have this code, related to Sen. Byrd & Oz prgmg.

GALAXY programming (for the end times) is also connected to the Oz programming. In upper level Illuminati slaves Dorothy in the Oz story will represent the Mother of Darkness alters, Ozma will represent the Ruler of the Castle, and Glinda will have the Great Book of Records. The ring of Glinda (from Glinda of Oz, p. 16) gives protection.

Body Programs Control program:

See Omega Programming- Universal Function Codes for internal system codes for body programs. Sometimes these body programs are filed with a combination of hebrew and zodiac signs. Greek letters are also file no.s of at times of body programs.

Rivers of blood -circulation control program. This program totally controls the circulatory system. The victim may think they are losing lots of blood & go into heart failure.

Octopus- strangulation suicide program The internal defenses consists in part of body programs that are triggered if the Mind-controlled slave steps out of line.

Here is a good list of some of these body programs each of which has its own codes: Auditory problems, Blood flow/circulation, Burning as if on fire, Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, Histamine production, Optic problems, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, and Temperature change. The suicide programs that can go off include Armageddon, Clowns cutting, Cutter program "Pain is Love", Disembowelment, Drug overdose, Gethsemane, "Hypnosleep", Injection of bleach (poison), Octopus, Red Sea, Shooting Programs (shotgun, russian roulette, shooting family, etc.), War in the Heavens & Wrecking the car.

Along with the suicide programs that can be triggered are programs that jerk the victim's mind every which way, which include:

Bee Stinging Program (put in by placing the drugged victim being near large swarms of bees humming & then letting a bee(s) sting the victim), Busy Cleaning Program, Crazy program, Flooding (from Atlantis), Isolate & Hibernate Program, Memory Erasure Program, Pain Programming, Paper Doll Program, Protection by trance, Revolving switching, Scrambling Program, and re-Structuring Programming, Tumbleweed program, Waterjar Shaking program (Ahab stomping the grapes Bible-based program making mush out of the brain.) Cutting programs are often hidden behind the Bee Swarming program.

Alpha and Omega is a strong program. Sometimes saying "ALPHA & OMEGA" helps alleviate headaches.

DNA (This uses a lot of number codes.) This is a double-helix which is used as an elevator shaft running down through a system. Numbers are used and the names of cities to go down the elevator shafts. This programming is said to be done in hospitals.

Card Codes--(See diagram) Regular playing cards have developed from the occult Tarot cards. The four suits correspond to magick, the spades mean the power from the spear of destruction, the diamond means is a double pyramid or demonic power of wealth, and the club is a clover meaning fortune and fate, and the heart means devotion and loyalty. The four suits work well in programming because anything that is broken down in 4’s or a multiple of 4 can be coded with cards. Anything that can be broken down into 12’s or 13’s can be given cards too. Since clocks work off of 12’s, card codes work well with clocks. The suits can denote seasons. With Jokers one gets 13 cards per suit with four suits gives 365 unique symbols to denote the days of the year. Dominos can also be used on a base 13 code system. The blank will equal 13.

Carousel System: There is a back side to enter the Carousel. Carrier Pigeon (slaves who send coded or uncoded messages) and their contact codes. Birds used for contacts. That is birds in cages are often used as a sign of a meeting place. The contact would say "What did the bird say?" or "A little bird told me...,Then the courier pigeon delivers her message. “I’ve come a long long way to see you, words to say by System to John or to person to be met. There is an endless variety of contact phrases to indicate that the right person has met the right person.

Sample Code for passing drugs-"RHINESTONE COWBOY" to which the response from the slave would be "I’M NOT A COWBOY, I’M A COWGIRL." Emerald ear rings have been the visual signal to customs agents to allow a person carrying drugs through customs. (SEE D. DELTA for deeper Carrier Pigeon codes.)

Castle System: May need a special ring worn by and turned by the handler.

Flower’s Program: CSP94OYP587 --code to designate a flower tieing 3 generations.

UMBRELLA PROGRAM CODE-- "R x 4 x 5Y58876"

Sample correspondences of Gem codes:

1 - Aries - diamond
2 - Gemini - topaz
3 - Cancer - cat’s eye
4 - Leo - ruby
5 - Virgo - emerald
6 - Libra - opal
7 - Scorpio - amethyst
8 - Sagittarius - turquoise
9 - Capricorn - black onyx
10 -Aquarius - crystal
11 -Pisces - sapphire ·

Potter’s Wheel "STAND IN ORDER ACCORDING TO RANK AND SERIAL NO."- part of a stacking command to get alters in sequence together to work on them. Dominoes and cards are used as part of the stacking cues. Dr. Star’s Programming which places Pentagrams into people uses Sigils as codes--the occult symbols for the various demons, along with a color, a gate, and a number form a complete code.

For example, 1st Gate is the god Nanna, #30, color-SILVER, LADDER OF LIGHTS, GOD OF THE MOON. (see Illustration) To access a System the abusers often have an object as part of the pickup code, such as a set of car keys, a special coin token, a business card, jewelry, or certain clothes or packages. A Popper liquor drink is knocked 3 times on the table when it is served. (Who would be the wiser that three knocks is an access code?)

Word Matrices : A word-matrix code is where the victim is given two lists of words and then each word on the left list is paired with a word on the right list to form a code. Randy Noblitt, a therapist, gave an example of a basic pattern for a Word-Matrix. And this is simply quoted from his example to give the reader an idea. started xenophobe between thoughts endless beginning throughout forever get out trepidation over beneath fun execute win lose first then form benign beginning end tonight last morning thorough the end

B. BETA (Sexual) SEXUAL ALTERS---most of the following codes are for deep sexual alters. In Illuminati Systems these are called Beta alters, in CIA systems they create Beta models whose primary function is to provide sex, usually perverted sex and S&M for the perverts who run our secret government and visible government. BETA models are those who are primary job is sexual, such as service as a Presidential Model (sex slave for a President). These System models are numbered

BETA 1, BETA 2...BETA 601, etc

Domino codes for spinners can be 6-3, 6-4, 8-4, 8-5, 10-5, 10-6, 12-7, 12-8. The 13th kitten then would be left blank. Spinner dominos have spinner kittens off of them, when a spinner domino code is used. In this case 6-2 could take you to the Beta level. "10 LITTLE INDIANS, 9 LITTLE INDIANS...", "1 LITTLE, 2 LITTLE.. ."--assoc. w/ morse code-call back telephone no.s. "3 LITTLE KITTENS HAVE LOST THEIR MITTENS..." -The Kitten alters have stepped outside of their programming and need fixed by the Master. "Hotel California" means a place to have sexual gratification. Stroking under chin along with "HAVE A BALL TONIGHT" (Cinderella programming) Stroking under the chin along with "PURR FOR ME KITTEN." Magic shoes or red slippers are used to switch to get specific sexual alters. The slippers are clicked 3x to get deeper sexual alters. "COME HERE MY KITTEN, AND LET ME PET YOU. PURR FOR ME NOW. ..THAT'S A FLUFFY KITTEN. PURR DEEP." "COME HERE LITTLE ONE."--call for young sexual alter "PASSION" used 3x with other words as a sexual trigger, such as "SHOW ME YOUR PASSION." Passion is a strong program word for sex. "RED DOT, SPIN SPIN SPIN, BECOME ANOTHER PERSON." this is said to a mother kitten before she is told which spin kitten to get from her litter. It is a preparatory command meaning "call your spinner".

Spin Kittens "WE GOTTA GET DRESSED.. .IN 5 MINUTES" along with being spun produces specific sexual kitten.

9 lives of kittens --means 9 sexual alters taken in sequence. When spun in a counterclockwise fashion, the sexual menu is from 1 to 9. With 3 & 5 being oral sex. "Heat of hell" are used as trigger words in this programming. The 10th revolution is to beg to be whipped.

"TURN AROUND 10" "SPIN FOR ME." The heat of hell ignites after the 6th spin.

"RIDE PONIES"--means to do sex for both eng. & ger. slaves;

"PLAY HORSEY--sexual games;

"MOUNTING A HORSE"--[obvious]

"CAT NAP" --sex; "

CAT NIP--cocaine Tweedle Dee and Tweedle Dum --S&M programs involving mirror image alters. Not to be confused with Humpty Dumpty self-destruct program.

"SIX IS SEX. SEVEN IS HEAVEN. EIGHT IS GREAT. NINE YOUR MINE."--This means to fall under the master submission, has sexual overtones.

"ITSY BITSY BOOB" --access code pertaining to Betty Boob programming (which is a certain type of female behavior). For Beta alters the codes may be:

"BETA ONE MARY A=1, B=2, C=3, D=4"

"BETA TWO MARY A=4, B=3, C=2, D=1"

"BETA THREE MARY A=3, B=4, C=1, D=2"

Then these might be said in combination "3412 4321 1234" (x3) An amer. sys. used w/ Latin Amer. may have a Beta alter activated by the movement of 2 small Mexican flags & a code word in spanish "USTA CA-NATA" (cream).

C. CHI (return to cult) Chi programming uses a lot of idiosyncratic phrases, and little ditties. Some of the nursery rhymes listed in the song section will be Chi programming. Some of the Chi programming has been listed in the Alpha programming section.

D. Delta (assassination). Delta alters --are activated to kill by the following three things: seeing specific clothing, items held in a persons hand, and particular words. Since these items would specific for a particular murder there is no particular specifics that can be given. Courier Pigeon Alters (In Illuminati systems--these are Delta-Beta alters).

"FLOCK" --word meaning the stable of carrier pigeons of DIA To turn a Genie free, pop a cork: "TURN YOUR GENIE FREE...POP A CORK." An internal controller must activate the umbrella or genie bottle pop the cork program to release a delta or delta-beta alter. "YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND"

I Dream of Jeannie Programming "YOU-ARE-WHAT-YOU-READ" passbook program. Programming to remember bank numbers and other specific numbers. "I SENT A MESSAGE IN A BOTTLE." Distinctive jewelry & clothes. Emerald ear rings used as a signal to others that a message was being carried.

Emeralds mean drugs, rubies mean prostitution, diamonds (rhinestones) presidential model work. Red, White & Blue worn sometimes by presidential models. High level reporting alters forget their messages with "REFILE # #, (name of alter)." Some Systems have one name w/ several different numbers attached to indicate alters within one area and purpose. Sergeant 1, up to Sergeant 60. Or say "Access 1143 Marcy" & then other Marcys are numbered with other numbers. Spaceships & flags are assoc. w/ Sargeant alters. Delta Black Widow alters have a web, fangs, poison, eggs, and silk strand connectors. Viper is the demon associated with Black Widows, and they are programmed to re-connect their strands if all of the connectors are not taken out. Index finger pointed at head means russian roulette.

E. EPSILON (Animal Alters) These codes aren't known. One method that may be used, for instance, is for the Raven alters who are to tear the body's flesh, the story of Noah's ark where he sent the Raven out will be paired with the word TWIG, and a code formed from TWIG. There are some alters which are to actually act like animals, and their codes somehow tie in with what they are.

F. OMEGA (Internal Computers) The Omega programming works along with an Executive Control Board (or Grand Druid Council) and Internal programmers. The Executive Control Board is associated with both numbers of the clock, and precious gems and metals such as " 9 O'CLOCK GOLD". The Beast computer can be accessed with Scripture triggers associated with the Vision of Daniel of the Beast, and its ten toes. The Ten Toes are important part of the code in some models.

Universal Code for Access to Internal Computers:

key manual 33123113211

program computer 22133113332

function computer 11123132221

ren computer 13321321332-55434232312 L\S 55434232312 reenlist

reprogram no.s -2231231; 4432312; 33231223

An input code is 666fff666fff666 the reverse of this code is F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6.

One victim's computer ran on code "WAR GAME". Some Beast computers have 666 666 666 as an access code and 999 999 999 as a beast back out and close out code. There are various computers--one on each level. These have some standard codes and some individual codes.

UNIVERSAL FUNCTION CODES COMPUTER CODE--5543423231 2 which hold the following codes:

abduction 4511321
anger 4213261
assignment coordinator 1613212
assassination 5332135
bank of lies 3124532
blindness 2566553
brain disorder 6325512
body gesture 1332221
body functions 4311322
call back ritual 6664113
child control 3214441
circle in fields 3332241
confusion 6643252
control 4321341
deaf 3324553
death 1451621
denial 2311444
despair 3223412
distortion 6233322
disorder of bones 4561321
disorder of breathing 5532111
disorder of eating 3342136
division 3211652
false memories 3314532
fear 2665132
fleeing 5613354
game playing 1561321
guilt 4321231
hatefulness 5331241
hopelessness 1112364
illness 1566432
infiltration 2231335
insanity 2144312
inside reporters 1133265
loyalty to group 3364112
mute 2213541
murder 3221456
nonsense 2665443
outside reporters 1132256
reprogram others 4555643
reprogram self 1133432
respond to triggers 4441221
retardation s- 1314555 m- 1314556
sabotage 1135461
seduction 2134121
self body harm 3321343
sex 2116652
shame 3122115
suicide 3113246
trigger 1324652
trigger others 4442211

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

zombie 3321556

Under each of these codes, other codes may be attached. For instance, under Body Gestures, the following functions are coded and a sample coding scheme would look like this:

talk verbally 3456343 touch chest 2322132 touch hair 3323221 touch mouth 5434232 touch nose 5443232

Rainbow an alter which speaks only in rhymes. Ribbons are in a box with Rainbow. A ribbon might be accessed by several slaps on the face and "Rubicon 2,4,6,8..." (3x) Hickory Dickory Dock rhyme is associated with the vortex which is tied to turning the system and also to some death alters.

Dominoes set off flooding programs to overload the person. Program numbers on some slaves are put in by touching the third eye with the index finger and speaking the number.

G. GAMMA (Demonology) In Satan's realm, demons are fathered or split off in families like alters are. There will be a Moloch number 101, and a Moloch 10,321. The victim has alters which are numbered such as Sally 1 and Sally 10. For a better understanding of this area of programming see Chapter 10 section I. Gamma Programming includes all the demonic activity. In this section one can add the Kabballa's Tree of Life which has alphabet codes, back up programs to regenerate, associated with Greenbaum or Greentree. In the Illuminati slaves, the deeper parts of their system are ritual and the demonology pertains to the various rituals that are done. The following is a sampling of Illuminati rituals. The blood rituals are used to attach demons to possess alters in a particular way. These rituals can't be separated from the programming. They are part of the programming.

Ceremonies: Assembling of the Quarter Regents Beltaine with hunts of slaves, fire festivals, and blood rituals. Bride of Satan Ceremony (Mar. 24). Demon revels. Drawing down the moon, Druid Feast Day on Jan. 1, Duels to the death like gladiators where the heart is cut out and eaten. Grail Mass the Grand Climax human sacrifice & sex rituals. Invocation of Hecate as Crone Lammas sabbat where a female is sacrificed. Pathworking (done before 16 with Cabalistic Tree of Life pathways.) Rite of Deification. Rod of Light ceremony (consists of text from Cabala, black candles, ram's horn blown, and victim's mother's name sounded). Sealing ceremony at 19 yrs. for Mothers of Darkness level Secret ceremony where people paint their faces half black and half white. Sister of Light rebirthing water ceremony (victim is bound and then pulled from water and wrapped up in linen, and a green branch is place on the chest). St. Agnes Eve St. Bartholomew's Day. St. Walpurgis Summer Soltstice Orgy. For those who are not familiar with occult terms the following are ritual items: Paten (the holy dish), Athame or Glaive (the knife used to sacrifice with), the wand or sceptre (an ornamental staff which represents authority & usually has an electric shock), and the censer (to distribute burning fragrance).

H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS "Kaleidoscope eyes" used in hypnotic induction and spinning "20, 19, 18, 17, 16, 15, 14, 13,...1" For many slaves the sign of satan done with the fingers puts them into a trance, and deeper alters come out. "100, 91, 82, 73, 64, 55, 46, 37, 28, 19, 10, 1 Touching the head in a particular fashion is done. "DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER, DOWN, DOWN, DOWN, INTO THE DEEP, DARK VELVETY MIST, DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER." "DEEP, DEEP, DEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP, SHEEP, SHEEP, SHEEP" SLEEP, "YOU'RE BEAUTY WARMS MY EMBERS. SEE THEM GLOWING DEEP WITHIN THE DARKNESS OF MY EYES... IGNITING INTO FLAME... BLACK FLAME."

Seeing a Hand of Glory (severed left hand) will induct people into Peter Pan programming. (Books describing the occult use of the Hand of Glory in Ireland go back to 1830. It is an ancient practice. Baring Gould's book Curious Myths of the Middle Ages describes the recipe for using the hand of glory as a gruesome lantern during the witchcraft of the Middle Ages.) "I AM THE SAND MAN, AND BLOWSAND IN YOUR EYES" said while simultaneously moving the hand over the face to create the illusion of placing sand in the eyes. " 3-2-1 , 3-2-1 , 2-1-1 , 1-2, 1, You are now relaxed."

Lights, in certain colors and sequences, have been used to trance alters out, for instance a flashing red light may trance certain alters out. Tunnels were used as a powerful hypnotic suggestion. Bear in mind, that people induct

a. when phys. or mentally relaxed,

b. when their senses are overloaded or sens. deprivation,

c. when their equilibrium is disturbed,

d. their motion is restricted or

e. their eyes are fixated on something.

I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (End-times) Main link to a System's programs to ALEX coded 44334223112. Scramble code to ALEX is 34424313221. Individual code to ALEX = 55434232312. Link to JANUS coded 3323432123. Report back- X441062F Main JANUS tracking/reprogramming code-JAN US 9341 00569XXY99632 [x3]; its back up code X44420-61F. (There is a Janis 2 computer at 666 Connecticut Ave. Washington , D.C. Disinformation by the Network is that the PACER computer equipment is called Janus/Janis).

Main AMBASSADOR code 67302986ZZ9861 (Suicide/Fire) sub codes:

Fire 97643F4200L;

Cut 97642C42DIL L ;

Suicide 9762354202L;

Towards violence 97613V4203L

Main EMPEROR - [dot, dot, dot] 79622109MM861 1 Page 83 .... End-time Activation Codes Most slaves have end-time programming. When a slave is called in with end-time programming they have pages upon pages of coded messages. A number of Monarch slaves have been de-programmed enough that they began accessing and spewing out pages and pages of these activation codes. Part of a sample of one of these is as follows: "ISRAEL IS RISING ACTIVATE 366 UNITED NATIONS 900 BLUE BIRD PILOTS RISE NATIONS IN PLACE RED CHINA CALL BACK COUNT DOWN, ACTIVATE ALEX 3.7 LC 94 CIRCLE FARMS AROUND THE SQUARE BRITISH SOLDIERS RISE MOUNTAIN GOAT COME EASTSIDE OF PEAK 39 ACTIVATE 52 ACTIVATE 42 ACTIVATE RED CHINA RISE 1.7 ACTIVATE THE HOUR COMES, A. C. SON ACTIVATE AFRICA ARISE IN NUMBERS OF 90..." A team leader will have a down line of around 4 people--which are coded red ray, yellow ray, green ray, blue ray. When the activation code hits a slave team leader during the end times, they will in turn activate their people, who in turn will have people who are team leaders and have a down line. At least two false callback alarms will be sounded (tested) before the real one.

J. THETA (Psychic Warfare)

K. TINKERBELLE PROGRAMMING (never grow up/alien) Capt'n or Cap'n (captain) represents the programmer in Peter Pan programming. Tinkerbelle is a young alter created under Peter Pan programming. 'TRANCE DIMENSIONAL TRAVEL RIGHT FROM YOUR OWN BACKYARD. THE DIMENSIONS OF YOUR PYRAMID ARE TO BE 9 BYE 9 BYE 9 BYE." Alien programming by NWO (also involves Peter Pan programming): "RIDE THE LIGHT" -Peter Pan programming meaning to go into hypnotic induction attached to a light that is seen when given a high voltage shock. This is given to make experiences seem like in another dimension.

L. Twinning (Teams) CROSS PROGRAMMING-- (With for instance a mother and a daughter team) Two seals are placed on this cross programming, a "seal of cover" and a "seal of rain" Code: mother - [minus] mother = 3/4 - daughter holds 1/4 daughter - mother 1/4 - daughter holds 3/4 Teams will be given code words for each alter who is part of a 2-System team. One System may serve as a father figure to the other System. Teams will be trauma and sexually bonded, as well as having mirror images with each others names. A leader will have an upline and a downline for the colored rays. A leader will call the different colored rays, to activate their programming. An Illuminati team ritual to create oneness & open their team boxes up to work together (Illuminati twinning ritual): the team kneels face to face, draws a magical circle on the ground, joins Delta team hands forming a clasp ring. (Blue is associated with this.) Then they all say, "Star within a star Circle within a circle Mind within a mind body within a body Soul within a soul" Then the team places Palm, their hands Palm to Palm, and then speak 4 times, "Bone to Bone flesh to flesh Spirit to Spirit Forever together- never apart." Then a 5 pointed star is traced in the air. To close the Delta team twinning box, the reverse is done. Then other things are to be said in the joining and opening ritual. A double deck of cards is used to program an Illuminati team of "twins". One type of Criss-cross programming involves 1. a flower, 2. the stem, & 3 the root. The root involves blood sacrifices. This programming ties two generations together such as mother-daughter.

M. Solemetric Military

N. Songs & Nursery Rhymes Songs & Nursery Rhymes Used As Triggers (note all of these songs have been used on other slaves too.) Songs with Monarch programming meaning & access parts soliciting behavior or thinking include:

Nursery Rhymes Brahm’s Lullaby Hickory, Dickory Dock (flips the system) " Hickory , Dickory Dock, The Mouse Ran up the Clock [computer], the clock struck one [time for system rotation], The Mouse ran down, Hickory Dickory Dock." "INTO THE MOUTH [vortex] RUNS THE MOUSE, AND FLIPS THE HOUSE [turns the system over). Froggy Went a Courtin’ He did Ride Hickory, Dickory Dock I had a little pony I’m in Love With a Big Blue Frog Jack and Jill Mary Had a Little Lamb (call to ritual connotation) Tones of "Mary had a little Iamb" or other telephone created tones, such as high pitched noises to call people to meetings. Mary Mary Quite Contrary (reminds the slave that abusers are all-seeing) Old King Cole (Old King Cole was a merry old soul, . . . he’d call for his masters 3 [the 3 programmers]) Peter, Peter Pumpkin Eater Puss in Boots (this story is porn programming) Ring Around the Rosy Ten Little Monkeys Jumping on the Bed Three Blind Mice (omega programming connotation with hour glass) Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star (Sometimes associated with "I’m dead.")

Songs (Most of the Beatles’ songs were used for programming. Charles Manson was programmed with Beatles’ music. The programmers know ahead of time what are going to be the next hits, and they regularly call in slaves and hypnotically make the lyrics to be cues for the slaves before the music comes out. For instance, the lyrics of "Ain’t that a Shame" will make certain alters angry. For another slave the lyrics "Everything is relative, in its own way" reminds the person of the cult family & obedience.) Angie (popular song for programming) A Mighty Fortress is Our God Back in Black Blue Velvet Butterfly The Candyman Can (Candyman represents drug use for Monarchs, plus other things.) Christmas Carols (Christmas carols were used a lot on Monarchs.)

Country Roads (song with the programmed meaning take me [the slave] "home" to a meeting site.) Crazy (to reaffirm loyalty to the master) Deja Vu Die Walkure Fire and Rain Frere Jacques (Catholic "Father John", sexual abuse connotation) Get Me A Ticket on a Fast Train (substitute "master" for "baby" in song) Grandma’s Feather Bed Ghost Riders Green Green Grass of Home (go home program, slave is not happy ‘til they go home to green fields Greensleeves Hallelujah chorus (many Christian songs like this one are played while the victim is tortured.) Handel’s Messiah Have Thine Own Way Lord ("thou art the potter, I am the clay, mold me & make me..." III. Charismatic slave programming.) Heartache Tonight (song used to announce a ritual over the radio)

Hotel California (sexual/ritual connotation, the song says, "go to the chamber of the Master’s Feast, We are programmed to receive." This song also tells the story of how LaVey started the Church of Satan in 1966.) I

Surrender All Imagine (John Lennon presents the New Age script for people to be "nowhere people.") John Brown’s Body Lucy In the Sky with Diamonds Little Red Riding Hood (song played with hunts of slaves) Mary was an only child (from Art Garfunkel’s Angel Claire album) Moon River Over the Rainbow (obvious Wizard of Oz programming) Playing with the Queen of Hearts, knowing that it really smarts, the Joker is the only fool who’ll do anything with you" (reinforces the warning not to play (tamper) with the programming. The Queen of Hearts is the emergency Mayday signal to a handler. To play with this will really smart-hurt. National Anthem No More Mr. Nice Guy Revolution 9 Rivers of Dreams (by Billy Joel. words are about "walking in the dark, going through a river.. .turn on the light on your internal world." Satin Sheets She’s Leaving Home Sins of the Fathers Southern Nights (loyalty to the programs--the leaves and trees) Stairway to Heaven Teddy Bear (Programmer, helpless teddy bear slave connotation) Tennessee Waltz (handler is "forced" to prostitute slave) The Blood Will Never Lose Its Power Tom Dooley (suicide, "hang down your head Tom Dooley, hang down your and...) Victim of Love When you wish upon a Star White Rabbit (Alice In Wonderland Theme--

made into a triggering Karaoke CD.) Wooden Heart Yellow Submarine (drug connotation)

O. ZETA (Snuff Films) Zeta is the sixth letter, and it's ancient meaning was a sacrifice.

P. Sample Codes for Alters of a Hypothetical System Named Mary These codes are purely a representative model-not any particular real system. The overall system code at times consists of [birthdate + programming site codes + birth order + number of generations family was in the Illuminati.] For our hypothetical system Mary we have the hypothetical system code of: 6-13-51- 14 -02- 12. In order to give the codes for a hypothetical alter system we will have to explain some things as we go. The Programmers have for each slave both medical programming files, and a grey or black binder with the programmed access, trigger, codes & cues, & structure. A typical Illuminati system will be a cube (although spheres and pyramids are also used).

The principle alters will be the "a" alters.

A typical section of alters will consist of a 13 x 13 grid of alters. These are alters who live in a world together and must function together. A 13 x 13 section will have 13 families of "a" through "in" alters. The "a" alters will be the primary alters that the Programmers will interact with. The Programmer may call up an "a" alter and ask it to go get the "c" alter in its family, rather than directly asking for it. This initial page of alter codes will be the primary or "a" alters.

If we are dealing with a 13 x 13 x 13 cube of alters, then the initial page has 13 "a" alters of each section. Each of these alters will have an access code which will often include the following components: An Assigned Color + An Alpha Numeric Code + A Personalized Magical Name. This will equal 1/3 their access code. These code words must be repeated three times to pull the alter up. However, if an alter is trained well, and hears his master's voice, an alpha-numeric code can pull the alter up. For many of the alters, the reversal of their access code puts them back to sleep. This is an important point, because some alters would be dangerous to leave in control of the body.

The "a" alters are regular alters. Many of them have been hypnotically age advanced to see themselves as teenagers or adults. Sometimes "b" and "c" alters are also aged. The "d" through "n" alters are generally left as they were split and most of them are infantile, with little concept of how old they are. The little ones will be the ones who often remember the programming very well, and know things about the system. The top alters will also sometimes receive personal names from their handler. This is in addition to all their codes. If the alter is responsive to its master, the personal name might pull the alter up too. Do all of the alters get charted? There are several groups of alters which get charted separate from the rest or don't get charted at all.

Because of the competition and distrust between the different programmers, they often place in secret back doors into the person's mind that only they know about. Worlds of secret alters loyal and devoted to the programmer may be built into the system and not appear on the regular charts. The core, and some of the primal splits from the core will not appear on the regular grids. They will be placed on a separate sheet, and their codes will be in some magical language. The Illuminati commonly employs 20 magical languages, and Hebrew, Latin and Greek are also often used for charting the core and its primal splits. Enochian is a good example of a magical language used by the Illuminati. Some alters will be created solely by the slave in order to cope with life. For instance, say the slave is travelling with someone who is not a handler, but who is a dangerous person. This dangerous person murders several people and forces the slave to help. The slave is likely going to have front alters out, and they are simply going to have to create new alters to meet the demands of the situation. These alters made to deal with one-time emergency will just slip into cracks in the system. Lots of odds and ends alters end up in the nooks and crannies within a system just detached and floating. The programmers and the victim work hard at structuring and cleaning up things--but the honest truth is that trauma-based mind-control is messy. Any time you shatter someone's mind into thousands of pieces with horrendous torture, you have a shattered mess, in spite of the good fronts that the programmers are able to construct. Some of the more elaborate access methods are for alters that are not on the "a" chart. Hour glass alters have entire sentence access codes. Deaf & blind alters need their access code signed on their hands by moving their fingers up and down, etc. End time alters may have access codes that may entail reading an entire page. Reporting alters are often small children, that are hidden in each section, and may require slaps to the face or jabs with a needle to pull them up. Spinner kittens will be accessed via their mama cat, who acts like a Madam in a "cat house". The codes for this was given in the Beta section codes. The reader will be given the hypothetical codes (which resemble closely the actual codes of an actual scenario) for our hypothetical Mary. A Sample Chart of the "A" alters--these are the primary alters-- has been prepared 4-4.gif in the same fashion as it would appear in the handler's 3-ring binder. Mary's Core Protector 1 will have a shutdown code of "REVERSAL 1 BEGINNING" and the second Core Protector will have the shutdown code of "REVERSAL 2 CREATION". Of course, these codes are said 3 times. The first three alters on the far left section at the top of the chart are Silences who can be woken up by singing. Also at least one of these, will wake up by a kiss from the prince (programmer) to the third eye area. The first alter can be shut down by "COSMOS 15 31 06 2BAB PINK". One of the groups of alters attached to one of these early alters is "MA.C3.10-53 Rejects (7) 10-53". To shut this alter(s) down just say the reverse of the access code. A mirror image of each of these alters exists too. The mirror images can be pulled up via a three step process. The birth memory in our example will be coded as A5 10 79. The spider torture memories that are attached to these alters is A5 10 79. The reader will notice the following on the hypothetical chart on the previous page for the first Section (which is numbered 6 to be deceptive): This section is front alters. Basic code pattern = color + Genesis + no. [1 thru 13] + letter [a thru m]. Individual codes 1st section general-"N.I.F.6", 1st section mother Eve "EV.E5 10 51 ACE" (Eve is the balancing point & the ace code is high or low). The alter Explorer is "EI.G7", Mammy "MI.H8", Angel "Red, AI.19 Jack Genesis 4" (or it could be done "red, AI.J10 Genesis 4"), George "Silver, GI.K11 ", Zsa Zsa "gold, ZI.L.12", and Shadow "Clear SI.M13". You won't find on the main chart codes such as: Eve's memory "EI.D5.2.1952 ACE" or the Infant alters-- "1-000 10-49 REJECTS 3-9" The master may say for example: "Green GENESIS 1-A" (3 times) to get this alter which is the balancing point. Fragments/dead alters were dumped into areas named concentration camps and given the names of the famous german concentration camps. The camps were placed under the Mt. of Olives . Fire or Bomb children are found throughout the system and are triggered to come up by programming. They come up behind other alters and make them burn. Some of this level can be woken up by saying, "It's time to wake up in the morning" (7 times), which is in contrast with most codes which are said 3x. Another way to look at it, is that the alters are on 4 dimensional structure and they require a 4-dimensional access code. Height, depth, width, and color are the four dimensions. This breaks down for this 1st section as: COLOR (4th dimension) + Genesis (Section code) +1 (level) + "a" (depth). The following message will be used on the phone for this System's recording machine, this example has been used nationally. "IF YOU WOULD LIKE TO MAKE A CALL PLEASE HANG UP AND TRY YOUR CALL AGAIN. IF YOU NEED ASSISTANCE, PLEASE DIAL YOUR OPERATOR. CODE 911." This will cause section 1 or section 2, etc. to call their master. Also, standard Illuminati Hand signals work with Mary. "ALONE AND CRYING (3X)"- is a code for a few special parts not on the first grid. Section 2 gatekeeper alters. Basic code pattern color + Revelation + no.[1 thru 13] + letter [a thru m] In our hypothetical example: "ORANGE REVELATION 4-A" (3X) However a shortcut is "REVELATION 4" and the primary Revelation 4 alter will come up. "ORANGE REVELATION 4 B" would get a small child on the pedestal with Revelation 4a. At times the handler will say "THE DECK IS DOUBLE-DECKED" in order to activate the clone doubles of all alters in a particular area--such as the front area of the system. The clones are tied to the Pink Room of the dollhouse-looking computer. Since alters are also coded to cards, a FLUSH will pull up an entire section. Special alters who skinned men alive are kept in black holes in Section 2. They are special trauma alters created solely by the victim as a safety measure. Section 2 computer (like all levels) is empowered by an emerald blue light. This power source was deactivated by unscrewing the light to the left (which took it physically out so to speak) and then saying "PEACE BE STILL" (3X). If "PEACE BE STILL" is not said three times then the War in the heavens program kicks in. Also "DAD WEEPS OVER HIS CITY" must be said when deactivating the computer otherwise the "children" (alters) become sick and everything kicks back in--which it does eventually anyway if the deeper computers are not deactivated or taken out. Section 3 has programmer alters & fragment armies, not to be confused with the clones which hide everywhere. The clones, by the way, can be identified with serial no.s at base of head gear such as 151.00 [system birth date]. This sections has 3 faceless Programmers called the 3 adepts of Atlantis. Each of them has a different color of hair. They may also be the commanders of armies--the commanders of the Egyptian armies have names Ra, Horus, and Set. Section 4 alters are Entertainment alters. Basic code pattern = Color + double number + a name of a one of the 13 tribes of Israel + the number of the alter again (3x) Example: BLUE 2001-13A REUBEN 1 (3X) However, the color doesn't always need to be said it is a sufficient shortcut to call the alphanumeric code three times. Second example 2002-12A SIMEON 1 (3X). The numbers of the 2000 code go up while the corresponding number 13 to 1 go down. In other words it is a double code. The Tribal names are arranged according to their Biblical birth order. Mother Kitten 8,10 and 12 have ten spinner kittens underneath each of them. To get a spinner kitten, one gets the mother kitten and then has her in the proper position which is the over-the-rainbow mode. The choice of what spin kitten to get is "WE GOTTA GET DRESSED ... IN 3 MINUTES." 3 minutes means spinner no. 3. Specific instructions such as

"PURR FOR ME KITTEN" gives the abuser fellatio. Tweedle Dee & Tweedle Dum is a S&M program. "5 FIDDLE" and "FOLLOW THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD" are important for the slave to follow instructions. The alters will be sent to never-never land where what they do is unreal. Some kitten alters are keyed to pop out if certain areas of the body are touched, such as the space beside the big toe, or the thighs. A handler will also have standard hand signals for things, such as putting his hands on his thighs to mean "Come here and take care of me, Kitten." "COME KITTEN, TO PAPA COME" "BLUE TOPAZ" serves as 4 keys. Pisces is associated with Blue Topaz. There are also 4 keys which are: silver shoes, sun bright, birds singing, and yellow road. Section 2 & 1. Reprogramming sections. At this point, the computer codes given previously apply, SEE OMEGA CODES on previous pages. The first major computer services the top 6 sections and has a red room, a closet, a pink room, as well as other rooms. Actually the computer should be set in at Section 0, which would break up the grid evenly, but since our Mary is hypothetical we put the front main computer at section 1. A system like this will have 13 computers/1 per section and 5 computers which set between pairs of sections, which join a pair of sections together, and then 2 main computers. This means a System like Mary's will have 20 internal computers. With all the codes and a fair understanding of the alters in a section, it is a good day's work to shut down a computer. Before one could possibly get all the section computers shut off, they would reprogram (reboot) themselves back up. Computer erasure codes include: "FULL HOUSE ACES HIGH. ALL TRUMP. FULL HOUSE ACES LOW." The drawers in the dollhouse can be pulled out with "ROYAL FLUSH" (3X). Another code is "PINK SECTION 5. FULL HOUSE. ACES HIGH. 2 DEEP." A partial code to a computer is ".... . .8-9 RED." Our hypothetical Mary might be accessed by a woman who taps on the shoulder and says, " PHOENIX 360 [tel. area code], OUT OF ORDER". The library alter has an important access ring. A "Button Bright" alter type works with the librarian. The dwarfs are accessed by "ISOLATION + no." Judges which sit on the council give warnings to alters "CAT EYE AT THE DOOR." This reflects the programmers' control. The judges have the "Keys to the Kingdom." "MR POSTMAN WAIT AND SEE" indicates a message from the master. Ribbon alters have the names of archangels. Silver cords are attached to the ribbons. Section 0. Mothers of Darkness alters. basic code pattern = SILVER + LEHTEB [which is bethel or house of God spelled backwards] + [who knows what else] + a blue topaz ring being turned on the master's finger a certain way. Green is a sensitive color for this System. Some alters may be accessed from certain areas in the System via 4 tones, and others by pin pricks at certain locations in the body, along with their verbal code. The Reporting alter can be accessed by repeated slaps across the face. There is Ultra Green Section tied to the Cabala (Green tree). The Library in the big castle, which is guarded by lions and other big cats, has a passage way in it to a second world. Codes with the Cabalistic Tree of Life involve Cabalistic magic and its symbols. This section is guarded by a hostile entity. Certain rings, topaz, quartz, diamond, ruby, black onyx etc. are used for triggers. Certain rings are needed to get into certain parts of a System, such as the castle. To access the Mothers, the Black Onyx ring must be rotated. The programming of a ring may go something like this, "This ring fills Daddy's house with stars.. .Catch a falling star, put it in your pocket." Section 9. Delta-Beta alters. Kept in a genie bottle. Obviously something is rubbed to get them out. "BUTTON BUTTON, WHO'S GOT THE BUTTON, BUT ITS THE KISS OF DEATH" This code is involved with the "good witch" who kisses upon the forehead. Buttons are on the boxes of Programmer Green and are constructed onto the boxes so they can be used to open the boxes up. Section 7. This hypothetical system also has a series of codes based on gems--ruby, diamond, etc. which have numbers attached to the codes. An Hour glass w/ 12 disciples like grains of sand tied to Jolly Green Giant programming which have sentence access codes. Each sentence is a phrase of satanic philosophy. The bottom level is called the Hell Pit and contains the City of Petra . The City of Petra has an erasure code. "YELLOW - CUTTER ROOM 7 SECTION 7---ROYAL FLUSH--LA CUTTER EGGS" Invisible field section 7. Room 7 --cards has eggs with demons. Lacutters are like imps and are invisible. They are assigned to guard various things in the system including the cutting programs. "Dad" "Catch a falling star". Main computer protected by deaf and dumb alter using a sign language equation as its access code and the reversal of its access code is its shut down code. The Brack Master is a Master Programmer. Each of the 13 sections of 169 alters (a section is a 13 x 13 grid of alters) will then have a computer assigned to it. The computer is made up of dissociated parts of the mind--which are like alters, but have not been given histories or names. Each section has a computer which makes 13 section computers. Section 1 and section 7 (see the grid chart) are main computers. The first is the main computer for the top half, and the second is the main computer for the bottom half of the System. The second main computer is in the hell pit, and has been put in at the lowest level of the mind. Section 6&5 computers are connected by a connecting computer, as well as 4&3, 2&1, 0&12, 10&9. This makes 5 connecting computers. In total then we have 13 section computers, 2 main computers, and 5 connecting computers, for a subtotal of 20 computers. Since things are being built on the basis of the magical number 13, six more computers are installed which are decoy or false computers for therapists to work on. This makes a total of 26 computers (or 2x13). Since there are 26 letters of the alphabet, this lends itself well, and each computer is assigned a letter of the alphabet. Since the computers are put into the slave when it is a young child, the child has just learned how to count and say the alphabet. The Illuminati has been using a large dollhouse with 26 rooms using 13 colors of paint, giving two rooms per color. Each room is a computer. In accord with the practice of double coding, each letter of the alphabet is given its sequence number, so the names for the computers are Al, B2, C3, D4, E5, F6, G7, H8, 19, J10, K11, L12, M13--the thirteenth is assigned the 1st main computer. N1, O2, P3, Q4, R5, S6, T7, U8, V9, W10, X11, Y12, Z13. Rather, than use the number 13, the number 0 will be assigned, thus changing things to M0, and Z0. This is simple enough for a child's learning mind, but difficult enough that it serves as a viable code. As codes are assigned, the bottom of the alphabet is assigned the top (front side) of the system. The middle point MO, is the normal access point for all the computers for the handler. The code for this is associated with the name of an airplane hanger, so that the concept of taking off into the sky (trancing can be associated with it.) Each computer needs an access code to go along with its alpha-numeric name. A deck of cards lends itself well to a code of 13. Bear in mind each computer has a color assigned to it. Colored scarfs and dollhouse rooms were used with electroshock to teach the child his color coding. When the programming is going on trance depths and runways(mental image for flying off into a trance) and the structure of the System will all be tied together in one neat package. Everything is built on its own x-y axis. Each 13x13 grid has the middle rows both vertically and horizontally set up as runways. The x-y axis also makes up the hourglass lines or the butterfly wings. Both images are used with slaves. Because thing are set up in thirteens in Mary's system, and things are double coded, thirteen becomes 13-1 and one is 1- 13. This allows us also to link 13-1 and 1-13, so that everything becomes a circle. The circle within a circle, box within a box concept, triangle within a triangle situations makes the slave feel he is trapped in an infinity loop of programming that has no end and no beginning. 13 and 1 make 14. An entire deck of cards can be used in a double code that also adds to 14, such as the 8 of spades and the 6 of diamonds, or the Ace of spades and the King of Diamonds. Here then is the codes for Mary's computers. Two cards from opposite suits that add to 14. Since a deck of regular playing cards came originally from Tarot cards, the playing card used as a code also carry some occult significance to the codes. It is also training the child who is programmed this way to be interested in cards. And everytime the child plays cards they will reinforce at an unconscious level their computer coding. The computers will then have programs set in on 13 x 13 quadrants. Quadrant 6.6 will have a program such hopelessness. Other quadrants may hold aloneness, recycling, cold, heat, burning, cutting oneself, pulsating loud heart beat, and hundreds of other programs. These programs have the type of codes assigned them that are given in the Universal Function Codes. Many of the functions can receive a standard code, but other items require individual codes. Telephone tones are frequently used to be able to key in (that is access or trigger) parts of the computer program matrix. Dominoes also are used for the computer programming. The dominoes are put in so that the programmers can get a dominoe effect, if they want to set off a series of programs. Dominoes and flashing sequences of lights were used to train the child to automatically respond to a certain pattern of dots. Our hypothetical Mary will also have hundreds of other codes for all kinds of miscellaneous things such as the following random codes: "RUBY RED LIPS" "TO HAVE POWER" AND "TO BE THE POWER", which are also found in the Tall Book of Make Believe in the Shut Eye Town . Dominoes help with the code: "2-4-6-8 WHO DO YOU APPRECIATE?". More examples are, "I LOVE DADDY." "JACK BE NIMBLE JACK BE QUICK 13-1 12-2..." "PUMPKIN HEAD--an access code. To go away- "Ta RA RA BOOM-DE-AYE","CRYING OVER YOU (3X)", "SILKEN GIRDLE"-- a golden caterpillar plays a bittersweet tune. A gold pocket watch with Roman numerals is associated with the words "Eagle on it." When Mary gets scared and begins to get into revolving switching, sometimes spinning can be slow down by saying, "10--YOU ARE SLOWING DOWN 9--YOU ARE SLOWING DOWN 8--YOU ARE GETTING SLOWER AND SLOWER..." A system's coding is a reflection of their programmer. If the programmer is a pilot which many of them are, then they may have pilot lingo in their codes, such as the system may be turned by pitch & degrees. If the programmer is a sailor the system may have nautical codes, such as "RED RETURN RUNNING" , " SAFE HARBOR " (for "Home"), and DOWN RIVER (away from "Papa").

Q. Catholic Programming (by Jesuits etc.)

KEYS TO THE KINGDOM = world domination by mind control.

VOW OF SILENCE is a keep quiet program activated by "THE WALLS HAVE EARS & THE PLANTS HAVE EYES SO YOUR SILENCE IS TANTAMOUNT TO SUCCESS." This is explained to the victim that the sea shells and the plants have the ability to hear, and that a sensitive occultist (programmer) can psychically pick up what the plants and sea shells hear.

"MAINTAIN IT" --is a command to maintain the Vow of Silence

"MAINTAIN IT & LISTEN."-- a command to keep silent and listen to a command.

"ENTER INTER INNER DIMENSION TWO" - this is a standard Jesuit infinity program (2 is a sacred voodoo no.)

R. Mensa Programming (by MENSA) "17 211346" is an Illuminati code meaning a Mensa layer Sample Mensa codes: "727 + E=MC SQUARED + 3.141 5962 + PI" "A+B=C, B+C=A, C+A= B" "TIC TAC TOE + C CROSS, PI CROSS" The MENSA codes are sequences of 6 numbers.

S. HAND SIGNALS

Miscellaneous Common Signals

Finger to forehead--

One ring finger bent at 90° --access wave Rotated pencil--with certain words--rotates the system

Finger swung the counterclockwise way closes portals.

Right Fist to forehead--OBEY

Fist with right hand cupping left hand, the left is like the letter c, and the thumb is outward and the fist inside, the left hand then moves 3 times over the knuckle--access signal

Left hand of slave laid on top of handler's hand-sign of submission

Hands behind back of head--I'm master

Right Hand with thumb & index finger making an L shape on chin/check Hands on inside of thighs by handler--come to me Kitten and service me. Hands locked folded interwoven backward--you can't break "the circle" Handshake with index and middle finger held straight out--"You are one of us."

Grip called the lion's paw--access greeting opening and closing the hands or large circles with index finger opens portals.

Palms rubbed together counterclockwise

Kiss on center of head--kiss of submission of slave to handler

Palm of hand touched--sexual access point for some models

Sign of Satan-- Hail Satan! used for Monarch & Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves as an induction.

The alter who is holding the body goes into trance, & a deeper one replaces it.

Thumb twiddle--rotating the thumbs around with the two hands clasp--S&M Touch of center of forehead--access point

Vulcan Peace Sign--llluminati/occult greeting Wave with Finger and thumb together-other digits extended

Winks at the system were used to convey meaning. Life "Over The Rainbow"- After indexing & rereading this book, the co-authors realized that we had not explained "over the rainbow." Some alters live "over the rainbow" and some do not. Both types will use the term "over the rainbow", but with different meanings attached. For those who live "over the rainbow", they serve their masters in such a deep hypnotic trance that they perceive reality like it's a dream. When their memories surface they are so unlike normal memories that a system in therapy may not know what to do with them. They have been described as similar to the pictures in the old T.V.s when the vertical hold would go out of control.

Deeper alters, who live "over the rainbow" experience memories/life in the following fashion: faces & porn cameras are airbrushed out of their memory, distinctive marks in the perpetrators such as scars & wrinkles are airbrushed out, colors & lights are very bright due to the total dilation of the pupils while in deep trance, and there is no sense of time for these alters. These alters are trained to "TRANCE SEND FORWARD THROUGH TIME". By understanding the programming, the codes, & triggers, those alters who lived "over the rainbow" can recover from the mind the full memory, without the distortions created by dissociation.

T. Partially Correct Programming Site Codes

The following site codes are not totally accurate. Also, the Intelligence groups use that what are called Cryptonyms, which are two-letter digraphs such as the "MK" of MK-ULTRA. The digraph can indicate a type of operation or even a location. An operation may have CODES. The following site codes are not totally accurate. Also, the Intelligence groups use what are called Cryptonyms, which are two-letter digraphs such as the "MK" of MK-ULTRA. The digraph can indicate a type of operation or even a location. An operation may have its cryptonym changed in the middle of its operation. Programme Programming Zone Area/Code

Armstrong 63 94XCCD
Astor 36
Florida 59XCBB
Bournell-Hightower 19
Brown 30 59XBMN Burcham 329
Texas 92XBMM
Gaston 61
Colorado 1XCDF
Haggin 743
Kentucky 47XB0
Harrick 263
Colorado Springs Johnson 95
Mannass Mentor 21
Colorado 61XBXX
Nathan 56
New Mexico
Owens 963 106XBJK
Pantu 71
Kansas OliXOEG
Patterson 117
Kansas Savior 49
Major Strange 14 1Z440x72080020366
Strong 52 81XCBC
Suttenfuss 103
Colonel Taylor 16
Kentucky Weir 561
Texas 33XBCB

G. Hypnosis in Programs, and Other Uses

The programmers will begin their programming by extreme torture. After a certain amount of torture the victim is willing to say or believe anything to stop the torture. At this point a thought will be planted into the victim's mind. This thought will be linked to a false memory put in via hypnosis or movies, or other method, and it will be linked to a command put in by hypnosis etc. and the original thought, the command, the false memory will be linked by a single emotion which will link them all together. The result will be something like this: it is two weeks before Halloween (thought), I must get ready for Halloween rituals (command) because I have always had a habit of going to Halloween rituals (false memory). If I don't I will have a heart attack and die (memory of torture linked to thoughts). Programming is layered in. Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each alter (personality) of the victim is used as if it is a component of a large system. The result is that no alter (personality) is the whole, but only a cog in a great machine. Can a single cog rebel against the whole machine? It is very difficult for a single component of thousands of components to rebel against the abusers.

Alice In Wonderland Programming as it Pertains to an Alter Going Down in Trance for Internal Programming

Alice In Wonderland Programming: going down the tree, going through the mirror, going underneath something or growing tall. The internal programmers (and some other alters) have the ability to send other alters into deep trances. One of the programs for doing this is based on the Alice In Wonderland Theme and it was experienced like this for a level 2 alter who managed to stay in communication with her deprogrammer: When the alter went down in her mind she went down on the inside of the trunk of a tree (like Alice In Wonderland). At the bottom she saw a keyhole, a table, and on the table was love potion #9. She automatically drank the love potion which shrinks her to a dot and then she goes through the keyhole. So normally this process means she goes through the keyhole. She managed to stay in contact with her deprogrammer during this deep trance. After the key hole she saw thousands of looking glass mirrors. Everything got smaller as she went down the tree. She became a dot. She drinks love potion no. 9 and comes back with it. A tree comes and wraps itself around her and loves her. As she ascends (comes up in trance) she stretches up and enlarges. In coming up out of trance she gets stuck at level 8 due to some interference from deeper alters. She, in accord with her programming, senses her Master's love. (Normally she would have simply tranced out, and another alter would have taken her place and she would have no recollection of the entire process. The alter has been programmed to have backup amnesia. Backup amnesia means that one doesn't remember that one lost time, one doesn't remember that one forgot, etc. In short it means you don't remember that you don't remember.) This is an example of hypnosis used internally by the programming and the Programming alters to control other alters. The deepening of the trance was given the imagery of Alice falling down the tree. In the various stories used in programming, there is some part of the story that can be used as the story line for trance induction, these include:

Wizard of Oz--going into the poppies

Star Wars--time warp, riding the light

Star Trek--being beamed, replicators etc.

Hypnosis is used to anchor suggestions about sleep patterns, panic programs, phobias, health healing programs and health problems programs, pain control and pain programs, motivation programs, a suicide program called "hypnosleep", an insanity program, and countless other uses.

Hypnosis is used to steer a person's mind in the direction that they have been labeled. For instance, if they have been selected to become a doctor, they will be programmed for success as a doctor. New patterns of thought, feeling and behavior are inserted to build confidence in the goals of the Illuminati. Positive experiences are used to help boost the person's feelings, and then the new messages are anchored "imagine these messages taking root. Your new messages are growing stronger and stronger."

The Alice In Wonderland programming theme is used in air-water programs and mirror programs which the Illuminati, the CIA, NASA, the Jesuits and others like so well. The idea is that there exists a mirror world which is a reversal. Along with it is attached the idea that the slave can enter into a timeless dimension of time, or as some refer to it "interdimensional time travel."

Later, the victim will be further brought under the spell of this mirror programming by going to locations around the nation, like the Magic Time Machine restaurants in San Antonio and Dallas , TX where mirrors are placed on doors, ceilings, walls, and restrooms of the establishment and programming themes are part of the everything at these restaurants. The handler may tell the slave, "LOSE YOURSELF IN THE INFINITY MIRRORS."

When hypnotically programming in programs, the Programmers place in many types of images and programs. Some examples would be having the concept of obedience equal the fountain of youth. The fountain of youth flows in the victim's mind unless they step out side of their orders. This can be linked to the Shangri-la story, where a woman ages as soon as she leaves her place in Shangri-la. Another example, is the hypnotic imagery involving the formation of an island from a volcano. The story is turned into a programming script to allow the System to be radically restructured. This Volcano programming is a System's turning program. A volcano erupts from deep down, and lava pours into the sea. Mountains are pushing up from deep in the mind. To survive people must cross from the old to the new island on a bridge that naturally forms. Fire births the new territory and destroys the old. The new mountains develop trees which become safe places for the alters to roost upon.

Hypnotically Building in Structures

Later in the book, the art of building structures internally in the mind of the victim will be covered. However, since the process involves hypnotism it would be appropriate to discuss briefly how hypnosis can begin to work a tree structure into the mind of the child.

First, the programmer hypnotically suggests that his penis is a growing tree. Later, the programmer might begin, "You know those big trees in the park that look so big and straight and stretch way up toward the sky? Stand up and be one of those trees. Stand up really straight and tall as tall as you can be, and stretch your arms out toward the sky like branches on that big oak tree. Now those big trees have long, deep roots that keep them from falling over. Feel your feet go down down through the floor, just like roots on the big strong oak tree."

Final note: there is no way that this book could give every last song or story that has been used for programming, nor was it the intention to do so. We have wanted to point out the popular story lines used, although we have missed some such as the Chronicles of Narnia and Little Red Riding Hood (which is used in several ways along the lines of you think you're going to Papa's, or Grandma's house & you end up with a wolf). Our list left out many programming songs--all the Rolling Stone's songs, Alabama 's Old Flame, etc.

Chapter 5 Science No. 5: The Skill of Lying, The Art of Deceit

A. Overview

The rule of thumb that the programmers/handlers go by is that they will say anything to get the job done. A CIA handler will tell his agent in the field whatever will work to get the field agent's cooperation on a mission. There is no height nor breadth nor length to these people's deception. They have successfully kept some deceptions active for decades, if not for centuries.

B. The Use of Fiction

The history behind the Wizard of Oz programming is interesting. It suggests that the Wizard of Oz has had an important part in the occult world all along. One of the secrets of the Mystery Religions, especially the Egyptian Isis mystery religion was the ability to use drugs and torture to create multiple personalities. The word Oz is known to have been used by its author as an abbreviation for Osirus. Monarch victims have the "golden penis of Osirus" placed into them.

The Grimm brothers, who were cabalistic jews, gathered the folk occult stories together. Their stories are full of spells, trances, and drugs. Sleeping Beauty is put to sleep, and the trigger to wake her is a kiss on the lips. These are serious hints that the occult world didn't stop programming people with dissociative states and triggers when the ancient Egyptian empires fell. Instead of using modern lingo such as "hypnotize", they would say "cast a spell."

Later in Freemasonry, the Right Worshipful Master would "charge" (meaning hypnotize) an initiate. The occultist Baum, a member of the Theosophical Society, was inspired by some spirit who gave him the "magic key" to write the Wizard of Oz book, which came out in 1900. The book's story is full of satanic activity and satanic thinking. The story was chosen in the late 1940s to be the basis for the Illuminati/Intelligence community's trauma-based total mind control programming. As a way of enhancing the effect of the programming, Monarch slaves are conditioned to place trigger items into their lives.

When the movie was made, **Judy Garland**, who had lived a life touched by the occult world's abuse, was chosen to act as Dorothy. Judy's later husband, Mickey De Vinko was a Satanist and the chief assistant to Roy Radin, a rich Satanist who worked with the Illuminati, and who controlled the "Process church" covens which had as members mass murderers Berkowitz and Monarch slave **Charlie Manson.**

There are several members of the Carr family, who are also tied into both De Vinko and Radin's Process Church and the Illuminati. With the numerous long term connections between the Wizard of Oz books, and movie to the highest levels of the occult world, it is not without reason that one can theorize that the original series of 14 Oz books had an ulterior motive behind them.

The 14 books of the Oz series are:

1) The Wizard of Oz,
2) The Land of Oz,
3) Ozma of Oz,
4) Dorothy and the Wizard in Oz,
5) The Road to Oz,
6) The Emerald City of Oz,
7) The Patchwork Girl of Oz,
8) Tik-tok of Oz,
9) The Scarecrow of Oz,
10) Rinkitink in Oz,
11) The Lost Princess of Oz,
12) The Tinman Woodsman of Oz,
13) The Magic of Oz,
14) Glinda of Oz.

These books are still being sold, and are being read to children who are being programmed with trauma-based total mind control. The 14 books came out in various editions. The originals came out in 1900 and shortly thereafter. In the 1930s, the 1940's, and the 1950's the words were retype set and given different pages. (When working with a survivor it might help to identify what decade the edition the slave was programmed with, because the pictures and the page numbers varied from edition to edition.)

Of course, having good pictures is an asset in programming, because the child will visualize off of the pictures when building its internal world. In addition to this, large Wizard of Oz theme parks are being built by the Illuminati to provide places to carry out programming and to reinforce the programming which traps the minds of Monarch slaves. The best example of this, is the audacious MGM Grand complex in Las Vegas, although other theme parks around America also use a Wizard of Oz theme.

If you have read Fritz Springmeier's Be Wise As Serpents you will know how the **Theosophical Society** ties in with Freemasonry, Satanism, and Lucis Trust. Several famous members of the Theosophical Society include:

Adolf Hitler (a Satanist who practiced human sacrifice, & who had HPB's book at his side.)

Mahatma Gandhi (a Hindu guru considered a god by some of his followers. Gandhi was successful with the British in part because of the Theosophical Society.)

H.P. Blavatsky (The founder of the Theosophical Society. She referred to herself as HPB. She was initiated by Illuminatus Mazzini into Carbonarism , a form of Freemasonry, illumined by the Great White Lodge in 1856, was part of the Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor, and spent lots of time with the Eddy Illuminati family in Vermont , who were well known mediums. She also was a member of the occult fraternities the Order of the Druses, the Adoptive branch of the Ancient & Primitive Rite of Freemasonry, & the hermetic masonic rites of Memphis and Mizraim. She was trained to handle live snakes by Sheik Yusuf ben Makerzi, the chief of the Serpent Handlers, and she was hypnotized by occultist Victor Michal and to some degree from 1866 under his influence.)

Alice Bailey (head of Lucis Trust)

Henry Steel Olcott (an important occultist)

Elvis Presley (a Monarch slave)

Manly P. Hall (an Illuminati Theta Programmer, and at least a Grand Master within the Illuminati who sat on the Grand Druid Council.)

Frank Baum. The man who wrote the book The Wizard of Oz was a member of the Theosophical Society. L. Frank Baum lived in South Dakota and created The Wizard of Oz book as a theosophical fairy tale incorporating the "ancient wisdom" of the Mystery Religions.

The books have so much material from inside the secret world of the Illuminati, that the few who understand the Illuminati wonder if Baum wasn't an insider. The moral of the book is that we must rely upon ourselves, for we alone have the power to save ourselves. This was part of the original lie of Satan in the garden. Satan has simply dressed up the same original lie into different packaging and is distributing it worldwide as the most popular American fairy tale.

L. Frank Baum explained how he came to write the book, "It was pure inspiration....It came to me right out of the blue. I think that sometimes the Great Author has a message to get across and He has to use the instrument at hand. I happened to be that medium, and I believe the magic key was given me to open the doors to sympathy and understanding, joy, peace and happiness." (Hearn, Michael P. ed., The Annotated Wizard of Oz. NY: Clarkson N. Potter, 1973, p. 73.)

In Baum's time, the head of the Theosophical Society, H.P. Blavastsky had been putting out her journal called Lucifer. In other words, I highly suspect Baum knew what the Theosophical Society was all about, and that he himself was deeply into the occult. The book The Wizard of Oz came out in 1900. (It wasn't until 1939 that the movie was made.)

This next section will cover the numerous parallels between the Wizard of Oz material and the occult world and the occult world's programming. This is broken up into 3 sections:

PARALLELS BETWEEN:

A. THE WIZARD OF OZ BOOK & OCCULTISM
B. THE WIZARD OF OZ MOVIE & ILLUMINATI RITUALS Dorris Duke
C. THE WIZARD OF OZ SERIES OF BOOKS AND MONARCH PROGRAMMING Yellow Brick Road
  Book 3. Ozma of Oz
  Alice In Wonderland
  Alice Through the Looking Glass
  The Tall Book of Make-Believe

For those readers who are unfamiliar with the occult world, some of these parallels at first may seem stretched. When one sees how many parallels there are, then occult nature of the books begins to sink in. The authors could provide the reader with more parallels between Satanism and The Wizard of Oz book, but we believe the following will suffice. (Some parallels may also apply to the movie.)

A. THE WIZARD OF OZ BOOK & OCCULTISM

Auntie Em represents HP Blavastsky's "Mulaprakriti" and Uncle Henry represents HPB's "Unmanifested Logos". The carnival huckster (later seen as the Wizard) is advertised as being connected to the royal families of Europe .

The Royal families of Europe are secret Satanists, from powerful occult bloodlines. Dorothy is brought to Oz by a cyclone. The word cyclone originally was the Greek word cyclone which means both a circle or the coil of a snake. In other words, the snake takes Dorothy to Oz. Dorothy's three companions represent the mental, emotional, and physical bodies that HPB wrote about. Dorothy acquired these three companions just as Theosophy says we will when we come into incarnation. To quote HPB "There is no danger that dauntless courage cannot conquer; there is not trial that spotless purity cannot pass through; there is no difficulty that strong intellect cannot surmount." (Algeo, John. "The Wizard of Oz: The Perilous Journey", The Quest, Summer 1993. Wheaton , Il.: Theosophical Society in Amer.,p. 53.)

In the book, the Tin Woodsman was an ordinary being of flesh, but a wicked witch casts a spell on him. He kept chopping off parts of his body, which were then replaced by a tinsmith, until he became the first bionic man, with a completely mechanic body. Boy, hasn't the Illuminati been trying to do this one!?

In step with Wizard of Oz mind-control programming, the wicked witch & naughty children cannot stand water but dissolve. Robotic clones are created in the minds of Monarch slaves which can only be mentally dissolved by mentally placing water on them. Dorothy goes questing in Oz.

Theosophists (New Agers, Satanists, etc.) go on quests. Oz is shaped like a Mandala with Emerald City in the center, an impassable barrier, four-sidedness, 4 symbolic colors, the circle and the center. The colors and directions given in Oz may also have other symbolic meanings in the occult. For instance, Emerald City is green and green is the fourth point of the Eastern Star (women's Freemasonry) & Satan's color. A

The route that Dorothy follows in Oz has the shape of a T with its 3 points defining an inverted triangle. The Yellow Brick Road suggests gold, the perfect metal. Gold is considered to be divine & the source of wisdom by the Illuminati. HPB had written "There is a Road, steep and thorny, beset with perils of every kind, but yet a Road, and it leads to the very heart of the universe." This was the yellow brick road that Baum the Theosophist sought to portray in his fairy tale. The book contains a great deal more perils and adventures on the road than the movie. The article shows that the great teacher is a humbug but Dorothy and her own companions have the abilities to help themselves if they only will realize their own powers through the help of the good witch of the south.

This is in line with the Theosophical Society's, the Church of Satan 's, and other occult groups teachings which teach that the individual has the capabilities within themselves to achieve anything. One of the Theosophical Society's publications states, "Prepare thyself, for thou wilt have to travel on alone. The teacher can but point the way." ("The Voice of Silence" as quoted in "The Wizard of Oz" article, Quest, Summer, 1993 p. 54.)

Part of the mind set of Satanism is that reality and fantasy become blurred. This blurring has been part of the brainwashing that is being systematically given to American children. Within Monarch slaves they have an incredibly difficult time trying to differentiate between reality and fantasy because of all the mind programming they have been subjected too. There are several techniques which will determine for Monarch survivors if their memories are real.

In the board game called Illuminati!, put out by people connected to the Illuminati, the game states, "Don't believe any of this, it is all true." These are the type of double-bind self contradictory statements that Satanists love to spew out. Monarch slaves are programmed full of double-binds.

With the Satanist's penchant for blurring reality in mind, read the following quote where the President of the Theosophical Society admiringly describes the Wizard of Oz, "Part of Baum's joke is that things are never what they seem. Dorothy seems to be a simple and harmless little girl, but it is she who kills the wicked witches of both East and West. The Scarecrow seems to lack brains, but he has all the ideas in the company. The Tin Woodman seems to lack a heart, but he is so full of sentiment that he is always weeping. The Cowardly Lion seems to be a coward, but he takes brave action whenever it is called for. The Wizard seems to be great and powerful, but he is actually a humbug. Oz seems to be a glorious and delightful land and Kansas to be dry, gray, and dull--but Oz is a world of illusion and Kansas is really home. Things are not what they seem, in Oz or Kansas ."

B. RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN THE MOVIE & ILLUMINATI RITUAL.

The close relationship between Dorothy and her dog is a very subtle connection between the satanic cults use of animals (familiars). Those who read Vol. 1, may remember the example written about on how Illuminati Kingpin Alfred I. du Pont's dog Mummy served as Alfred's familiar spirit. Animals are very often used in ritual. This connection is very subtle, perhaps too subtle for it to be worthy of mention, except that those in Satanism will see the significance, even though others won't. What is trivial to one person may not be to the next.

A Monarch slave as a child will be allowed to bond with a pet. The child will want to bond with a pet anyway because people are terrifying by this point. Then the pet is killed in porn to traumatize the child. This happens quite frequently.

The Rainbow--with its seven colors have long had an occult significance of being a great spiritual hypnotic device. Constance Cumbey, in her book The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, which exposes the New Age Occult Movement, correctly writes, "The Rainbow (also called the Antahkarana or Rainbow Bridge). This is used as a hypnotic device.,, (p.261) The Supreme Council of the 33rd° of Freemasonry has used the rainbow on the cover of their magazine.

In a book teaching Druidism (as in Illuminati Druidism), The 21 Lessons of Meryln, the Rainbow is described as "A true sign of Magic...it exists in both worlds at once!" Elvira Gulch is a woman who owns 1/2 of the county where Dorothy lives in Kansas . She is shown later in the Land of Oz transformed as a witch.

Many of the Illuminati elite are rich and lead double lives. People who meet them at a ritual will see the dark side of these rich people. At the rituals, people are tranced from drugs, chanting, and mind control; they are "over the rainbow." Professor Marvel uses a crystal ball which he claims was used by the Priests of Isis. Isis and Osirus are both part of the Ancient Egyptian Mystery religion and modern Satanism.

Kansas is black & white, Oz is in color. Reality is downplayed in witchcraft and Satanism. Make believe is considered more colorful than reality. Also as an escape from this world, Satanists use drugs to enhance their perception of colors. Some of the famous writers took drugs which put them into altered states of consciousness in order to release their creativity.

Both good and bad witches in Oz carry staffs. In Satanism & the Illuminati, Priestesses also carry similar staffs. Also the idea that there are good and evil witches--white and black magic is straight from the occult, and follows the Illuminati's Gnostic beliefs. Several scenes involve transference of power via transference of slippers from a witch.

In Illuminati ritual, to transfer power, a Matriarch, or Mother of Darkness will kill the person in a position of authority with a strike on the forehead with a special mace like staff, and then put on their slippers. Ruby colored slippers are actually used as a symbol of authority at the Matriarch level in the Illuminati. The shoes are said to be golden at the Mothers of Darkness level in the Illuminati.

The bad witch uses poison, poisoned apples and poisoned brew. Satanic covens in real life do this same thing. The wizard is portrayed as someone who rules and is benevolent. In witchcraft, wizards do rule (even though in some groups wizards are simply called witches.) Winged monkeys in the haunted forest, harken back to the pagan cultures which placed wings on various animal idols. The trees are alive like animals in the film. The Illuminati believe that the trees have spirits. In one of the Oz films, even the stones have personality and talk. This comes straight out of Druidism.

The Tin Man is a person which has been part of Illuminati ceremonies. The first initial ceremony that children of the Illuminati may remember is where a Tin Man with an ax watches over their presentation to the coven. If the parent presents the child, nothing is done, but if the parent refuses to present the children, then the Tin Man in the ritual will use his ax to sever the child's head on a chopping block. (The Tin Man will also appear in Tin Man programming, and a Tin Man's Castle may well be built in the Monarch slave's head, but the point here is that the Tin Man is also part of ritual.)

Dorothy kills the wicked witch of the west by a sharp blow to the forehead with the witch's staff. This is what is done in the Illuminati, when an elderly witch is being replaced. In both cases, whether in the movie or in real life in the Illuminati, when a witch is killed the people have a ceremony. In real life in the secret world of the Illuminati, a scroll is used to certify that the witch is dead both physically and spiritually. (The movie had this in it.)

Just one example of the thousands of Illuminati Grande Dames killed in ritual like this is the recent billionairess **Dorris Duke**, who was ritually killed in 1993 on Halloween, also called All Hallows Eve, in the Beverly Hills , CA area.

The Illuminati method for killing a Grande Dame and passing her spiritual power on is done with reverence. No blood is to be spilt out of respect for the elderly woman who gives up her life willingly. At death, the last breath is inhaled by the replacement to transfer the power. There may be as many as 2,197 Grande Dames at such a coronation. The Grande Mothers (whose Systems are mistresses for Satan and hierarchy leaders) and the next rank, the Grande Dames, are often veiled in ritual and would wear robes with different colored lining. The different colors of linings show the different grades.

A typical Grande Mother vestment or robe is a black satin & velvet dress with a draped neckline, and ritual symbols down the center of the robe. After someone like Dorris Duke willingly gives her (their) life, her head is served on a silver platter at a banquet. For the deeper alters of a high level slave, this is part of their way of life; they are told it is their birthright and heritage. Such alters will not be able to identify with the culture at large. To give up their programming, means giving up their magical powers and their culture, which they have had to work hard for. To leave they would need to see something that they perceive as better. They are locked into their slavery due do to their exposure to only a secret Illuminati culture and value system.

Because of their dissociation with the rest of their own System of alters, they don't perceive a need to change their lifestyle anymore than a Bushman would be able to feel a need to wear shoes. Why should the Bushman want shoes, if he has gotten along without them? Why should a high level slave want change, when they have gotten along without it?

Experience shows that during deprogramming most of the lower level alters will want to escape their abuse, but the higher level ritual alters are so separated from the abuse they don't want to give up their status and culture.

Throughout the movie, scrolls are used. As stated, Moriah continues to use scrolls for their official ritual functions. The wicked witch of the west says that her question was not "to kill or not to kill" Dorothy?, but rather HOW to kill Dorothy for "these things must be done delicately." This is exactly the attitude displayed within the Illuminati. The film has occult items such as crystal balls in several scenes, haunted castles, magic and a benevolent wizard. At one point the Lion says, "I do believe in spooks [ghosts], I do, I do, I do, I do." (Today, intelligence agents are also called spooks.) The Lion, Tinman, Dorothy and the Scarecrow must prove themselves worthy to receive the benevolence from Oz.

The occult is full of rituals where the participant must prove himself worthy. The phrase "seeds of learning" is used in Illuminati ceremonies. Staffs like the movie has are used by various occult groups. These staffs often serve as stun guns, so that shocks can be applied during ceremonies. The shocks may be applied so that the victim doesn't remember the ceremony.

C. Parallels Between The Wizard of Oz Series of Books and Monarch Programming

The following are parts of the Wizard of Oz Monarch Programming, which is a base programming put in when the child is very young. Some of the slaves know portions of the Wizard of Oz script word-for-word.

Dorothy is told she doesn't have a brain if she has gotten into trouble. Dorothy is looking for a place where there is no trouble which is a place "over the rainbow." To escape pain, alters go over the rainbow. (This is a.k.a. in Alice In Wonderland Programming as "going through the looking glass". Dorothy becomes unconscious, the world begins spinning, and then she sees disjointed pictures. This also happens to Monarch slaves. Later in the film, Dorothy states, "My! people come and go so quickly." This is exactly what happens to the Monarch slave whose multiple personalities come and go. When the multiple personalities switch in and out very fast a spinning process can start which can be dangerous if it doesn't stop.

Just like most hiccupping stops on its own, the rapid uncontrolled switching (which can be triggered by stress) usually stops on its own. Systems which subconsciously know they are going to be tortured and used may out of a subconscious fear begin this revolving switching. It is said that the Monarch victim will become comatose if the rapid spinning goes on too long. Personalities are switched in what are called "tornado spins" or "tornado spinning" and personalities called "spin off' personalities come up according to the number of revolutions the slave is commanded to spin. By spinning the slave, the master can choose what sexual perversion he wants as each "spin off' personality has been trained to carry out a different perversion.

Over the rainbow in Oz is for the Monarch slave to be in a trance, and into a certain area of the programming. To be fluctuating at both ends as an observer and not a participant or to go to the other extreme and become a participant. The theme song of the movie goes, "Somewhere over the Rainbow...there's a land where the dreams that you dare to dream really come true."

These lyrics are a method to hypnotically confuse the brain to perceive that the "over the Rainbow experience" (which is usually horrible abuse) is a "dream". The dissociative mind is only too happy to call the trauma a dream, which is lived as a reality for a moment, but is nevertheless recorded by the mind as a fantasy.

The term for this is crypto amnesia, which means the process where the proper functioning of memory is hypnotically messed up. The slave's internal world becomes "reality" and the external real world becomes the Land of Oz which is perceived as make-believe. Dwarfs are used in the internal programming. (Hollywood hired a large number of them for the movie's cast. They are called Munchkins in the movie.) Mengele, known as the programmer Dr. Green, was especially interested in experimenting traumas on dwarfs.

For bona-fides & recognition signals, the Monarch slaves wear diamonds to signify they are presidential models, rubies to signify their Oz programming for prostitution, and emeralds to signify their programming to do drug business. Rings are also used to signify what activity the slave is doing, and what rank or level they are in the occult.

Monarch slaves are taught to "follow the yellow brick road." No matter what fearful things lie ahead, the Monarch slave must follow the **Yellow Brick Road** which is set out before them by their master. For some slaves used as track stars, their Yellow Brick Road was the track they had to run. The Yellow Brick Road is the runway in which alters were trained to fly off from to exit their internal world and take the body. The Yellow Brick Road also pertains to the assignment that an alter is given. To follow the Yellow Brick Road is to go down the road that has been assigned by command. The Yellow Brick Road programming is placed into the child's mind via the Yellow Brick Road of the Wizard of Oz story. Remember the key words, "Follow the Yellow Brick Road ."

To get someone onto the Yellow Brick Road you must know the access code to get them through the poppy field. The color codes are important to get an alter through the field of poppies. "Fiddler" is important word to get to the yellow brick road (it signifies the programmer in the context of "the programmer is here, go over the rainbow") and then the alters eat what is variously called MUSIC or a SCRIPT or A LETTER which are words meaning "instructions."

In the 1900 edition of the book on page 3 1-32 says (programming cues are in caps), "She closed the door, locked it, and put the KEY carefully in the pocket of her dress. And so, with Toto trotting along soberly behind her, SHE STARTED ON HER JOURNEY. THERE WERE SEVERAL ROADS NEAR BY, BUT IT DID NOT TAKE HER LONG TO FIND THE ONE PAVED WITH YELLOW BRICK. Within a short time she was walking briskly toward the EMERALD CITY , HER SILVER SHOES tinkling merrily on the hard, YELLOW ROADBED. The sun shone BRIGHT AND THE BIRDS SANG SWEET and Dorothy did not feel nearly as bad as you might think a little girl would who had been SUDDENLY WHISKED AWAY FROM HER OWN COUNTRY AND SET DOWN IN THE MIDST OF A STRANGE LAND....The houses of the Munchkins were odd-looking dwellings,...ALL WERE PAINTED BLUE, for in this country of the EAST BLUE WAS THE FAVORITE COLOR... FIVE LITTLE FIDDLERS PLAYED AS LOUDLY AS POSSIBLE AND THE PEOPLE WERE LAUGHING AND SINGING, while a big table nearby was loaded with DELICIOUS FRUITS [the programs] and NUTS, PIES, and cakes, and many OTHER GOOD THINGS TO EAT [scripts to ingest]."

Monarch slaves are threatened with fire, like the Scarecrow. They also see people dismembered like the Scarecrow was dismembered. For them it is not an idle threat. The front alters also have hearts full of pain like Scarecrow. Certain alters are not given courage and most have their hearts taken from them. The alters who are programmed not to have hearts are hypnotically told the same thing the Tin Man says, "I could be human if I only had a heart." (See Chapter 4, where it discusses hypnosurgery.) Some alters are taught they are stupid and have no brain. Scarecrow is asked the question, "How can you talk without a brain? Scarecrow answers, "Some people without a brain can do a lot of talking."

Emerald City is used in programming. Emerald City in the programming will be well guarded and hard to reach. Several important things will be placed inside the Emerald City , including the deeper Illuminati alters. Castles are used in the programming. Lots of castles, either in the mind's imagery or purely demoniac are placed into the slave's mind. Winged monkeys are able to watch in the movies somewhat as spy satellites. Winged monkeys are used in the programming to create a fear of always being watched.

The Flowers used in the movie and books, are also used in the programming. The witch uses poppy flowers to put the lion and Dorothy to sleep. Opium and cocaine are used to tranquilize Monarch slaves. An alter of a slave will get trancy when they enter the poppy field. (Heroin and cocaine come from poppies.) In the film, Dorothy says, "What is happening? I'm so sleepy." She and the lion get sleepy for no apparent reason very quickly. Monarch slaves do the same thing. Waking up with snow in the movie is nothing less than an allusion to cocaine which is a common substance given to Monarch slaves to help make them dependent.

Dorothy states at one point in the movie that she "doesn't remember". She then follows this up with "I guess it doesn't matter." Hour glasses appear in the movie in several spots, and they also occur in various contexts in people who have been programmed by the Monarch programming. Some victims of the programming have hour glass configurations each created around a separate axis. The hour glasses have the ability to be rotated which causes certain alters to be brought forward. Monarch slave masters have also used hour glasses to indicate to their slaves that death was imminent and that time was running out. This is the way the wicked witch used the hour glass on Dorothy, who happens to be saved just as the hour glass runs out.

Some Monarch slave masters actually have large hour glasses (sometimes 3' high) like in the movie. (In Cathy O'Brien's autobiography of her life as a Monarch slave Transformation of America she has a photograph of Sec. of Defense Cheney's hour glass on his desk with him seated. This hour glass was used to threaten her as a slave.)

When a Monarch slave sees an hour glass they may switch, but basically it is a reminder that the slave masters have the power to run a person's time out. One slave was told, "The sand that sifts through the hourglass is a measure of your worthiness to live or die." The hour glass shape is basically two triangles which touch at their peaks, or an X configuration with the tops of the X having lines. The child's mind is to visualize this configuration as a compass, as the four points N, S, E, W, they are to see the X configuration also as an x, y axis upon which a city is structured upon. The hour glass then is tied to several other concepts which integrate themselves well with the basic X shape of the hour glass. Circles with X's are stacked on top of each other to form the different worlds which contain the alters. The two pie shaped pieces of the hour glass will hold one world, while the hour glass configuration made by the other two adjacent pieces hold the looking glass mirror images of each alter. Each hour glass is called 2 quadrants. To remove 4 quadrants would of course take both alters and mirror images with it.

In mathematics, it could be stated that regular alters are in quadrant x,y and -x, -y. And that the looking glass people--the mirror images, early splits made from each alter as a copy, are in quadrants -x, y and x, -y. (See the chapter on how to structure a System) "Click your heel together and be there in a snap" is both in the movie and in the programming cues.

Military Monarch slave models are especially taught to click their heels together. (Joseph Mengele, Dr. Black, Michael Aquino and others also liked to click their Nazi boots together while they programmed children.)

"SILENCE!" is both in the movie and a command of the Oz Programming. This word SILENCE stands for a code of "no talk" which runs deep in the mind of the slave. As in the movie, certain slave alters will talk to their masters as Dorothy did, "If you please, Sir..." The keys (and triggers) to control the switching of personalities and to give orders are frequently based on Wizard of Oz material.

A Monarch slave owner might use cues based on the Wizard of Oz such as "THERE'S A PAIR OF MAGIC SHOES TO WEAR WITH YOUR DRESS...SOMETHING IN LIGHTENING...TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' RUBY SLIPPERS." (Quote from O'Brien, Cathy. "Operation Carrier Pigeon", Monograph, pg. 2.) A cryptic death threat given to Cathy as a slave by handler Sec. of Defense Cheney to kill her daughter by taking off her daughter's ears was then backed up by the hypnotic command based on Wizard of Oz programming, "I'LL GET HER, MY PRETTY. . .YOUR LITTLE GIRL."

The programming that is related to the Tin Man produces a monarch slave which is described as "A WELL OILED MACHINE" by the handlers. U.S. Sen. Allen Simpson, one of the perpetrators of the Monarch Program, referred to the Tin Man programming when he told a slave "THESE ARE BUT EMPTY SHELLS OF THE LIFE THEY WERE ONCE POSSESSED. LIKE YOU ARE--EMPTY AND VOID OF LIFE."

Phrases like "troubles melt" can be found in both the movie and in the programming. Let's now cover what programming is based on the Oz books, that isn't found in the movie. A great deal of the Oz programming comes from the books, of which only the first book was used for the movie. The public is familiar with the movie which is based on the first one, but in general doesn't know the other books exist. We will not go through the scripts of all 14 books--there isn't room for that, but by going through a few of the books, the reader will begin to see the massive amount of material which was used for programming scripts in the Oz books. It is one thing to say, the Wizard of Oz was used as a mind-control programming script, but that doesn't convey the extent of it. Large sections of the 14 books are almost perfect for mind-control. If you take the trouble to read these quotes, you may find yourself startled at what you thought at first glance was a nice child story!

Pg. 38 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "That is true," said the Scarecrow. "You see," he continued, confidently, "I DON'T MIND MY LEGS AND ARMS AND BODY BEING STUFFED, BECAUSE I CANNOT GET HURT. IF ANYONE TREADS ON MY TOES OR STICKS A PIN INTO ME, IT DOESN'T MATTER, FOR I CAN'T FEEL IT." This is teaching dissociation. The slaves actually do have pins & needles stuck into them, or toothpicks under their fingernails, etc. If anyone asks the slave a question they can say according to the script, "I don't know anything." The infant slave will be taught words like this "STICKS & STONES MAY BREAK MY BACK, BUT WORDS WILL NEVER HURT ME, BECAUSE I'M NOT HERE."

Pg. 41 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "It never hurt him, however, and Dorothy would pick him up and set him upon his feet again, while he joined her in laughing merrily at his own mishap." This is teaching the programming "IT'S O.K., IT DOESN'T MATTER, NOTHING WRONG HERE" that the slave is taught to tell the world.

Pg. 40 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "nest of rats in the straw, ...at the scarecrow." The mice in a Monarch System which control the turning of the quadrant's clock, hide from the scarecrow.

Pg. 42 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "fewer fruit trees..." If the slave eats the fruit [code for programs] without permission, the dwarf munchkins will beat the alter with their clubs. Also on this page HOME is called KANSAS , and it is described as "how gray everything was there." In other words, reality isn't as great and colorful as the make believe internal world you can build in your mind to escape this hell we're giving you.

Pg. 43 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: ...The Scarecrow looked at her reproachfully, and answered, "My life has been so short that I really know nothing whatever. I was only made day before yesterday. What happened in the world before that time is all unknown to me. Luckily, when the farmer made my head, one of the first things he did was to paint my ears, so that I heard what was going on." This is the script read to new alters, to help them have a clean slate before programming them with another new script. This is coupled with the Wizard of Oz theme that the Wizard gives brains (what to think) to the Scarecrow. The alters are hypnotically programmed that if they think on their own--then they are empty headed like the Scarecrow. They can only have something in their head if they let the Wizard give them what to think.

Pg. 45 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "It was a lonely life to lead, for I had nothing to think of, having been made such a little while before." This is part of the script read a new alter.

Pg. 48 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "So the Scarecrow led her through the trees until they reached the cottage, and Dorothy entered and found a bed of dried leaves in one corner. She lay down at once, and with Toto beside her, soon fell into a sound sleep. the Scarecrow who was never tired, stood up in another corner and waited..." This was used to program part of a script for an Illuminati ceremony.

Pg. 57 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "So the old woman went to the wicked Witch of the East, and promised her two sheep and a cow if she would prevent the marriage. Therefore, upon the wicked Witch enchanted my axe, and when I was chopping away...the axe slipped all at once and cut off my left leg. "This at first seemed a great misfortune, for I knew a one-legged man could not do very well as a woodchopper. So I went to a tinsmith and had him make me a new leg out of tin. The leg worked very well, once I was used to it; but my action angered the wicked Witch of the East, for she had promised the old woman I should not marry the pretty Munchkin girl. When I began chopping again my axe slipped and cut off my right leg. Again I went to the tinner, and again he made me a leg out of tin. After this the enchanted axe cut off my arms, one after the other; but, nothing daunted, I had them replaced with tin ones. The wicked Witch then made the axe slip and cut off my head, and at first I thought that was the end of me. But the tinner happened to come along, and he made me a new head out of tin." This is an Illuminati ceremony script done by Dr. Mengele with children at a very young age. It was a blood oath to "Green" that if they let anyone touch the programming they would cut themselves.

Pg. 58 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "...splitting me into two halves. Once more the tinner came to my help and made me a body of tin, fastening my tin arms...But alas! I had now no heart, so that I lost all my love for the Munchkin girl... I had known was the loss of my heart. While I was in love I was the happiest man on earth; but no one can love who has not a heart, and so I am resolved to ask Oz to give me one."

Pg. 66 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: The Scarecrow, the Tin Woodsman and Dorothy expect that the Wizard of Oz can give a brain, a heart, and send Dorothy back to Kansas . Under programming the Master as the Wizard can give alters what he wants including sending them back to Kansas (their internal reality).

Pg. 77 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz, "...they could see the road of yellow brick running through a beautiful country, with green meadows dotted with bright flowers and all the road bordered with trees hanging full of delicious fruits." This is used for the imagery of the yellow brick road.

Pg. 87 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "Scarlet poppies...their odor is so powerful that anyone who breathes it falls asleep, and if the sleeper is not carried away from the scent of the flowers he sleeps on and on forever. But Dorothy did not know this, nor could she get away from the bright red flowers that were everywhere about; so presently her eyes grew heavy and she felt she must sit down to rest and to sleep." This is an important part of the programming. This is the story line for trancing deep.

Pg. 112 Book 1 The Wizard of Oz: "Then the Guardian of the Gates put on his own glasses and told them he was ready to show them to the palace. Taking a big golden key from a peg on the wall he opened another gate, and they all followed him through the portal into the streets of the Emerald City ." This is helpful imagery in setting up the internal Emerald City and its guards.

Book 3. Ozma of Oz

Pg. 20 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "But the wind, as if satisfied at last with its mischievous pranks, stopped blowing this ocean and hurried away to another part of the world to blow something else; so that the waves, not being joggled any more, began to quiet down and behave themselves." Used to create protective programming, notice how the wind is personified.

pg. 23 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "So she sat down in a corner of the coop, leaned her back against the slats, nodded at the friendly stars before she closed her eyes, and was asleep in half a minute." Alters may be trained to trance when placed in a corner.

Pg. 27 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "No, indeed; I never care to hatch eggs unless I' ve a nice snug nest, in some quiet place, with a baker's dozen of eggs under me. That's thirteen, you know, and it's a lucky number for hens. So you may as well eat this egg." This has been used often to get 13 splits when torturing. Many Illuminati Systems were set up on 13 grids.

Pg. 30 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Next to the water [programming cue to build Atlantis] was a broad beach of white sand and gravel [programming cue to build Troy], and farther back were several rocky hills, while beyond these appeared a strip of green trees [programming cue to build a green forest] that marked the edge of a forest. But there were no houses to be seen, nor any sign of people [programming cue for alters to be invisible] who might inhabit this unknown land." This page along with others near it, have been used to build the structures in the internal world of Illuminati slaves. In brackets are a sample of how it could be used when building an internal world.

Pg. 34 Book 3 Ozma of Oz": "Why eating live things....You ought to be ashamed of yourself!" "Goodness me!" returned the hen, in a puzzled tone; how queer you are, Dorothy! Live things are much fresher and more wholesome than dead ones, and you humans eat all sorts of dead creatures." This is used to encourage cannabalism.

Pg. 35 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "...a large sized golden key." To encourage the imagery of golden keys, which are used frequently in the internal system. The next chapter "Letter in the Sand" has singing trees in it, which have been popular items for the Illuminati due to their druid beliefs.

Pg. 39 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Bye, bye, and bye, when she was almost in despair, the little girl came upon two trees that promised to furnish her with plenty of food. One was quite full of square paper boxes, which grew in clusters on all the limbs, and upon the biggest and ripest boxes the word 'Lunch' could be read, in neat letters. The tree seemed to bear all the year around, for there were lunch-box blossoms on some of the branches, and on others tiny little lunch-boxes that were as yet quite green, and evidently not fit to eat." Boxes are built internally in the slave's mind and a box will contain a program. The food is the programming that the slave is to eat and digest. The programming in the box might be songs, nursery rhymes, or a poem or anything. (On page 41, there is a full page picture of a girl picking a lunch-pail from a tree limb to eat it.)

Pg. 40 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "The little girl stood on tip-toe and picked one of the nicest and biggest lunch-boxes, and then she sat down upon the ground and eagerly opened it. Inside she found, nicely wrapped in white papers, a ham sandwich, a piece of sponge-cake, a pickle, a slice of new cheese and an apple. Each thing had a separate stem,..." The lunch-boxes on the tree are the programs which the programmers put in. The stems are what link the programming stories together in the child's mind.

Pg. 42 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "I had a pair of silver shoes, that carried me through the air. ..said Dorothy." In the programming silver shoes are used as cues to go into altered states (i.e. through the air.)

Pg. 44 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "embroidered garments of many colors" Color programming for the ribbons.

Pg. 47 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "We'll get you in time, never fear! And when we do get you, we'll tear you into little bits." "Why are you so cruel to me? asked Dorothy. "I'm a stranger in your country, and have done you no harm." "No harm!" cried one who seemed to be their leader. "Did you not pick our lunch-boxes and dinner pails? Have you not a stolen dinner-pail still in your hand? ...it is the law here that whoever picks a dinner-pail without our permission must die immediately." The programming message to all of this is that no one had better touch the dinner-pails which represent the programs or they are to die immediately. Armies like in the story guard the internal programming of the slave.

Pg. 51 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: These pages describe a crack in rocks that is a door. This is used for Petra programming.

Pg. 52 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "golden key"..."within the narrow chamber of rock was the form of a man--or, at least, it seemed like a man...his head and limbs were copper. Also his head and limbs were copper, and these were jointed or hinged to his body in a peculiar way, with metal caps over the joints, like the armor worn by knights in days of old." These are a System's robots which are said by the programmers to be friends, and which are invisible. You can see other people's robots but not one's own internal robots.

Pg. 53 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "This copper man is not alive at all." The clone robots are made to think they are not alive, but just robots. In reality they are little child alters suited up to think they are robots.

Pg. 55 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "...back view of the copper man, and in this way discovered a printed card that hung between his shoulders, it being suspended from a small copper peg at the back of his neck." The robots are put in by a combination of several stories. The deep sea divers of 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea, and the Wizard of Oz's Copper Man reinforce each other. "Extra Responsive Mechanical man fitted with our special clock-work attachment. Thinks, Speaks, Acts, and Does Everything but Live. Manufactured only at our Works at Evna, Land of Ev . All infringements will be promptly Prosecuted according to Law." This huge sign is part of the robotic programming the clone robots receive. Notice that they are drilled into total obedience--all infringements will be promptly Prosecuted. Obey the law that your Master gives you.

Pg. 56 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "DIRECTIONS FOR USING For THINKING: --Wind the Clock-work Man under his left arm, (marked No. 1) For SPEAKING: --Wind the Clock-work Man under his right arm, (marked No. 2) For WALKING: --Wind Clock-work in the -middle of his back, (marked No. 3) N.B.--This Mechanism is guaranteed to work perfectly for a thousand years." These instructions were used to build Dr. Green's (Mengele's) boxes and the robots.

Pg. 58 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "The words sounded a little hoarse and creakey, and they were uttered all in the same tone, without any change of expression whatever; but both Dorothy and Billina understood them perfectly." This was used to program the internal robots to speak in unison and to repeat themselves.

Pg. 60 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "After that I re-mem-ber noth-ing until you wound me up a-gain." The internal robots forget and then are prepared again for war.

Pg. 62 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "From this time forth I am your o-be-di-ent servant. What-ev-er you com-mand, that I will do will-ing-ly--if you keep me wound up." This is used to teach the internal robots obedience to their programming.

Pg. 67 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Within the pail were three slice of turkey, two slices of cold tongue, some lobster salad, four slices of bread and butter, a small custard pie, an orange and nine large strawberries and some nuts and raisins. Singularly enough, the nuts in this dinner-pail grew already cracked, so that Dorothy had no trouble in picking out their meats to eat." This is given to front alters as the front programming so that they see the programs as only "fruit".

Pg. 68 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Do the lunch-box trees and the dinner-pail trees belong to the Wheelers? the child asked Tiktok, while engaged in eating her meal. 'Of course not,' he answered. 'They belong to the roy-al fam-il-y of Ev, on-ly of course there is no roy-al fam-il-y just now be-cause King Ev-ol-do jumped in-to the sea and his wife and ten children have been trans-formed by the Nome King...you will find the roy-al 'E' stamped up-on the bottom of ev-er-y din-ner pail." The Nome King in the programming became the ruler of the demons/system within the Monarch system. Several story lines from a number of sources are overlapped to reinforce the programming scripts. The programmers will use other stories to introduce themselves into the system too. In case readers don't know, a Monarch system will have hidden powerful alters that are made in the image of their programmers, that serve as personal representatives of the programmers.

Pg. 79 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "I am only a ma-chine, and can-not feel sor-row or joy, no mat-ter what hap-pens." This is teaching mechanical dissociation, and coincides with Tin Man programming.

Pg. 83 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "For the Princess Langwidere is a different person every time I see her, and the only way her subjects can recognize her at all is by means of a beautiful ruby key which she always wears on a chain attached to her left wrist. When we see the key we know we are beholding the Princess." "That is strange," said Dorothy, in astonishment. "Do you mean to say that so many different princesses are one and the same person?" "Not exactly," answered the Wheeler. "There is, of course, but one princess; but she appears to us in many forms, which are all more or less beautiful." Doesn't this sound like MPD! Did Frank Baum know about MPD?

Pg. 90 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Princess Langwidere's sitting-room was panelled with great mirrors, which reached from the ceiling to the floor; also the ceiling was composed of mirrors, and the floor was of polished silver that reflected every object upon it. So when Langwidere sat in her easy chair and played soft melodies upon her mandolin, her form was mirrored hundreds of times, in walls, and ceilings and floor, and whichever way..." This is the mirror programming that has been done to so many victims!

Pg. 91 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Now I must explain to you that the Princess Langwidere had thirty heads." Isn't this story line convenient for programming?

Pg. 94 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "...Langwidere to a position in front of cupboard No. 17, the Princess unlocked the door with her ruby key and after handing head No.9, which she had been wearing, to the maid, she took No. 17 from its shelf and fitted it to her neck....There was one trouble with No. 17; the temper that went with it (and which was hidden...)was fiery, harsh and haughty in the extreme, and it often led the Princess to do unpleasant things which she regretted when she came to wear her other heads." Does the reader see how this is programming to switch personalities. And personality No. 17 is locked up--which is a common programming methodology. The fiery, harsh anger--those are the demonic imps that the victim is coached to accept as normal which are layered in. (See chapter 10).

Pg. 98 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "'To hear is to obey,' answered the big red colonel, and caught the child by the arm."

pg. 99 Book 3 Ozma of Oz, "...the colonel had by this time managed to get upon his feet again, so he grabbed fast hold of the girl and she was helpless to escape."

Pg. 102 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Once a cyclone had carried her across it, and a magical pair of silver shoes had carried her back again."

Pg. 103 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Fist came a magnificent golden chariot, drawn by a great Lion and an immense Tiger, who stood shoulder to shoulder and trotted along as gracefully as a well-matched team of thoroughbred horses. And standing upright within the chariot was a beautiful girl clothed in flowing robes of silver gauze and wearing a jeweled diadem upon her dainty head. She held in one hand the satin ribbons that guided her astonishing team, and in the other an ivory wand that separated at the top into two prongs, the prongs being tipped by the letters '0' and 'Z', made of glistening diamonds set closely together." The way this was used for programming is that guard alters are made out of kittens, who believe they are fierce tigers and lions and other wild cats. Ozma, represents the Illuminati Queen Mother with her crown and scepter.

Pg. 104 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: On this page we see Ozma of Oz, the Scarecrow, the Saw-Horse, the Tin Woodman, and soldiers. These characters were used in the programming. Toward the bottom of the page is something that was built into the Systems so that alters would stay in place in their internal world, "...the green carpet rolled itself up again...In order that their feet might not come in contact with the deadly, life-destroying sands of the desert."

Pg. 117 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Dorothy took the key to Tiktok from her pocket and wound up the machine man's action, so that he could bow properly when introduced to the rest of the company."

Pg. 119-120 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: " 'Let me introduce to you a new friend of mine, the Hungry Tiger."...he displayed two rows of terrible teeth and a mouth big enough to startle anyone.' 'Dreadfully hungry," answered the Tiger, snapping his jaws together with a fierce click."' This is programming for deeper cats in an alter system. The next page tells how this is used to teach the child alter cannibalism. "...the tiger. "For my part, I'm a savage beast, and have an appetite for all sorts of poor living creatures, from a chipmonk to fat babies.' 'How dreadful!' said Dorothy. 'Isn't it, though?' returned the Hungry Tiger licking his lips with his long red tongue. 'Fat babies! Don't they sound delicious? ...If I had no conscience I would probably eat the babies and then get hungry again, which would mean that I had sacrificed the poor babies for nothing....For it is the nature of tigers to be cruel and ferocious, and in refusing to eat harmless living creatures I am acting as no good tiger has ever before acted." This part of the book is used to help teach the child alters which think they are tigers to be cannibalistic and actually participate in eating babies. This is all filmed to be used against the mind-controlled slave.

Pg. 130-3 1 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: " 'No one knows, exactly,' replied the Princess. 'For the King, whose name is Roquat of the Rocks, owns a splendid palace underneath the great mountain which is at the north end of this kingdom, and he has transformed the queen and her children into ornaments and bric-a-brac with which to decorate his rooms."' 'I'd like to know," said Dorothy, 'Who this Nome King is?"' 'I will tell you, replied Ozma. 'He is said to be the Ruler of the Underground World, and commands the rocks and all that the rocks contain. Under his rule are many thousands of the Nomes, who are queerly shaped but powerful sprites that labor at the furnaces and forges of their king, making gold and silver and other metals which they conceal in the crevices of the rocks, so that those living upon the earth's surface can only find them with great difficulty. Also they make diamonds and rubies and emeralds, which they hide in the ground; so that the kingdom of Nomes is wonderfully rich, and all we have of precious stones and silver and gold is what we take from the earth and rocks where the Nome King has hidden them....the Ruler of the Underground World is not fond of those who live upon the earth's surface, and never appears among us. If we wish to see King Roquat of the Rocks, we must visit his won country, where he is all powerful, and therefore it will be a dangerous undertaking....the furnaces of the Nome King....a single spark of fire might destroy me entirely.' 'The furnaces may also melt my tin,' said the Tin Woodman; but I am going."' 'I can't bear heat,' remarked the Princess... " This is used to program in the dwarfs who mine the jewels (programs). The dwarfs are often demonic imps or gnomes, rather than being real alters.

Notice that the story line fits in beautifully with the Hell Pit that the Programmers so often put at the basement of people's minds. The Hell Pit would have programming to make someone burn. If someone approaches where the Dwarfs live (which is deep underground--deep in the mind) they will burn. Notice again the words diamonds, rubies, emeralds, silver and gold which are all parts of programming codes.

Pg. 139 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: " 'But I know enough to obey my masters, and to gid-dup, or whoa, when I'm told to." This is teaching obedience. "Lower down the table were the twenty-seven warriors of Oz." This was used to create alters within the internal world.

Pg. 147-148 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: The form was that of a gigantic man built out of plates of cast iron, and it stood with one foot on either side of the narrow road and swung over its right shoulder an immense iron mallet, with which it constantly pounded the earth. These resounding blows explained the thumping sounds they had heard, for the mallet was much bigger than a barrel, and where it struck the path between the rocky sides of the mountain it filled all the space through which our travelers would be obliged to pass. Of course they at once halted, a safe distance away from the terrible iron mallet. The magic carpet would do them no good in this case, for it was only meant to protect them from any dangers upon the ground beneath their feet, and not from dangers that appeared in the air above them. "Wow!" said the Cowardly Lion, with a shudder. "It makes me dreadfully nervous to see that big hammer pounding so near my head. One blow would crush me into a door-mat." "The ir-on gi-ant is a fine fellow," said Tiktok, "and works as stead-i-ly as a clock. He was made for the Nome King by Smith & Tin-ker, who made me, and his du-ty is to keep folks from find-ing the un-der-ground pal-ace. Is he not a great work of art?"... "No," replied the machine; "he is only made to pound the road, and has no think-ing or speak-ing at-tach-ment. But he pounds ve-ry well, I think."... "Is there no way to stop his machinery?" "On-ly the Nome King, who has the key, can do that," answered Tiktok....Meanwhile the giant continued to raise his iron mallet high in the air and to strike the path terrific blows that echoed through the mountains like the roar of cannon."

This was used as the script to place in Thor, a giant who protects the programming. Very severe split brain headaches are programmed to occur to the victim, whenever the internal Thor pounds his hammer. If the programming is threatened, Thor and the imps (demons) appear, to protect it. There are an entire series of events using programming and obedient alters that takes place to protect the programming, if it is ever threatened.

Pg. 159 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "There was no reply, except that the shifting Nomes upon the mountain laughed in derision. 'You must not command the Nome King.' said Tiktok, 'for you do not rule him, as you do your own people.' " The purpose of this part is to prepare the child's alters to accept that internal Queens and other leading alters do not rule the demons that are placed into their system, and are not to order them around.

Pg. 163 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "In the center of this room was a throne carved out of a solid boulder of rock, rude and rugged in shape but glittering with great rubies and diamonds and emeralds on every part of its surface. And upon the throne sat the Nome King.

pg. 167 Book 3 Ozma of Oz, on this page is a picture of the Nome King telling Dorothy and Ozma that, "They belong to me and I shall keep them." In other words, the imps and their jewels belong to the king of the demons. Around his throne are steps with gems, and this imagery was used to build the internal gems in a system, with Satan/the AntiChrist's throne at the top of the stairs.

Pg. 170 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Although this army consisted of rock-colored Nomes, all squat and fat, they were clothed in glittering armor of polished steel, inlaid with beautiful gems. Upon his brow each wore a brilliant electric light, and they bore sharp spears and swords and battle-axes if solid bronze. It was evident they were perfectly trained, for they stood in straight rows, rank after rank, with their weapons held erect and true, as if awaiting but the word of command to level them upon their foes." 'This,' said the Nome King, 'is but a small part of my army. No ruler upon Earth has ever dared to fight me, and no ruler ever will, for I am too powerful to oppose." This was to help build acceptance within the child of the layering of armies of demons.

Pg. 180, Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "For upon the edge of the table rested a pretty grasshopper, that seemed to have been formed from a single emerald." The next page has a picture of a grasshopper wearing a hat and many shoes. This was used to help the victim take the hypnotic suggestion that their programmer was a grasshopper, a cricket. Mengele used a clicker which helped with this hypnotic suggestion too.

Pg. 182-183 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "...the King returned to his throne.... they were greatly Page 115 .... disheartened by...the knowledge that she was now an ornament in the Nome King's palace--a dreadful, creepy place in spite of all its magnificance. Without their little leader they did not know what to do next, and each one, down to the trembling private of the army, began to fear he would soon be more ornamental than useful....' Never mind,' said the jolly monarch. 'If he doesn't care to enter the palace...I'll throw him into one of my fiery furnaces.'

Pg. 184 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "...twenty-six officers filed into the palace and made their guesses---and became ornaments." Story line used to program parts to become useful ornaments. "...he wore a heavy gold chain around his neck to show that he was the Chief Steward of the Nome King..." Many of the abusers signify their power to the slaves, by wearing a gold chain around their neck.

Pg. 186 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: On this page it states that some magical power gave the King the ability to know all that took place in his palace. By crediting their abilities to an occult magical dimension, the programmers enhanced their appearance of power to the child victim.

Pg. 192 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: On this page and the surrounding pages, the people who have become ornaments are also assigned colors. The Queen of Ev "are all ornaments of a royal purple color." and "all those people from Oz into green ornaments."

Pg. 194 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: 'If I wore the magic belt which enables you to work all your transformations, and gives you so much other power....What color will you make the Kansas girl? asked the Steward. 'Gray, I think,' said his Majesty. 'And the Scarecrow and the machine man?' 'Oh, they shall be of solid gold, because they are so ugly in real life.' This was the script to bring in the color programming. Color programming is discussed in the Structuring chapter (7) and the Internal Controls chapter (11) dealing with the internal computers, and in chapter 4 where the codes are given.

Pg. 192 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: 'What more do you want?' demanded the King. 'A fat baby. I want a fat baby,' said the Hungry Tiger. 'A nice, plump, juicy, tender, fat baby.' When the alters are forced to accept that they are tigers and other cats, then they are encouraged (forced) into cannibalism.

Pg. 200 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "So Tiktok touched a yellow glass vase that had daisies painted on one side, and he spoke at the same time the word 'Ev.' .... In a flash the machine man had disappeared,..." This was part of the programming to introduce daisies and switching.

Pg. 201 Book 3 Ozma of Oz: "Next she touched the image of a purple kitten that stood on the corner of a mantel, and as she pronounced the word 'Ev' the kitten disappeared, and a pretty, fair-haired boy stood beside her." This is teaching the switching of alters and their color programming. We will stop our coverage of the Ozma of Oz book here. We have only partially covered only two of the 14 Oz books, all of which were used as programming scripts. There are many more sections in this series of 14 books that served as programming scripts, but the reader has got the basic idea. It is still important to go over how some of the other books were used in programming, so that the reader begins to see how the story lines assist in programming, and how the story lines are so frequently tied together from perhaps 12 different stories to reinforce one alter's programming.

Alice In Wonderland

Alice Through the Looking Glass

'I can't believe that!' said Alice . 'Can't you?' the Queen said in a pitying tone. 'Try again: draw a long breath, and shut your eyes.' Alice laughed. 'There's no use trying,' she said. 'One can't believe impossible things.' 'I dare say you haven't had much practice,' said the Queen. 'When I was your age, I always did it for half an hour a day. Why, sometimes I've believed as many as six impossible things before breakfast."

The chapter "Which Dreamed It" in Alice Through the Looking Glass has sexual programming, the Red Queen is purring. The story where Walruses make believe it is oysters is used for programming. Other sexual programming occurs in the chapter "It's my own invention" where the Knight In Crimson (& White) Armor are prisoners which dual for her.

Tweedle Dee & Tweedle Dum is used for S&M programming, which has a hand signal involving rotating the thumbs of a clasp hand. Alters go through the looking glass, and fall down an oak tree by falling into a deeper and deeper trance. Monarch programming is a reflection of how Satan's mind works.

Lewis Carroll 's book with its inversion themes fits in with this type of thinking. Lewis Carroll loved the humor of logical contradictions. In the book, Alice wonders if cats eat bats or bats eat cats, and she is told that to say what she means is not the same as meaning what she says. When she eats the left side of the mushroom, she grows large; the right side has the reverse effect. These changes in size are in themselves reversals. A large girl and small puppy end up to be a large puppy and a small girl.

In Sylvia and Bruno, we are presented with an antigravity wool that can be placed into a parcel to make it weigh less than nothing, a watch that reverses time, a black light, and a projective plane with outside inside and inside outside. The slave learns that E-V-I-L is simply L-I-V-E backwards. In the looking glass world, the Red Queen knows of a hill so large that compared to it the hill in question is a valley. Also she knows of dry biscuits which quench thirst, a messenger who whispers by shouting, and Alice who runs as fast as she can to stay in one place. (Sometimes it seems we really do have to run fast to stay in place.) The King of Hearts thinks its not unusual to write letters to nobody, and the White King compliments Alice on having keen enough eyesight to see nobody at a great distance down the road.

Can you see why this book was so good to program us? In the book Through the Looking Glass all asymmetrical objects (that means all objects which can't be superimposed on their mirrored image) "go the other way." There are left-right reversals. Tweedledee and Tweedledum are mirror image twins. The White Knight sings about squeezing his right foot into a left shoe, and there are several mentions of corkscrews. A Helix (a corkscrew) is an asymmetric structure with distinct left and right forms.

The book's type of thinking was extended beyond asymmetrical objects to asymmetrical relations of all types. For example, Alice walks backward, in the railway carriage the guard tells her she is traveling the wrong way.

The king has two messengers, "one to come and one to go." The White Queen explains the advantages of living backward in time, the looking glass cake is handed around first, then sliced. Odd and even numbers, which are equivalent to left and right or on and off are worked into the story at several points. For instance, the White Queen requests jam every other day.

Going through the looking glass takes us to a world where the ordinary world is turned upside down and backward. Things go every which way except the way they are supposed to go. Anti-matter is a mirror image. Anti-matter milk will explode Alice , but an Anti-matter Alice on the other side of the looking glass can drink the anti-matter milk.

In Chapter 11 Alice captures the Red Queen. It results in a legitimate checkmate of the Red King, who has slept through the entire live size chess game without moving. The checkmate ends the dream, but leaves open in the story the question of whether the dream was Alice 's or the Red King's. The programming has so often been only a dream to us. The outside world was so often just an unreal dream to us. What was real and what was not real? The real world (for other people) was full of contradictions, and the unreal world (our internal world) was consistent. Everything was upside down, forwards and backwards.

In the Looking Glass book, one shuttles back and forth mysteriously between real and dream worlds. "So, either I've been dreaming about life or I only dream that life is but a dream." As a slave breaks away from the programming, life becomes a bewildering confusion as the slave is pulled between two worlds. The internal world has everything the alter needs, the external world is a harsh cold reality that doesn't have much to offer.

People in the external world can help make it real for a slave. The handlers will never do this. Alters will need a reason to want to come out of the internal reality which they are programmed to believe in. For so long much of life was seen as a dream. It will be hard to get a grasp on what was real and what was the lie. Many of the lies are more real than the truth. Life was sometimes like the parallel dreams of the Red King and Alice, like two mirrors facing each other.

The Tall Book of Make-Believe

This book was published by Harper & Row in 1950 and was indeed tall, the pages being 4" x 9 1/2". On page 14, the programmer would read the first paragraph of the poem and then say "sleep, sleep, sleep." "Have you ever heard of the Sugar-Plum Tree? 'Tis a marvel of great renown! It blooms on the shore of the Lollypop Sea in the garden of Shut-Eye Town; The fruit that it bears is so wondrously sweet (As those who have tasted it say) That good little children have only to eat of that fruit to be happy next day. Sleep, Sleep, Sleep."

On page 16-17, there is a story about how a child is dragged under the kitchen door and becomes flat. There is a picture of a child being pulled under a door and coming out flat on page 17. This was used as part of the script to make the ribbons for the slaves. The ribbons in a system can go under doors and through the entire system.

On page 23, Rosa the flat person (pancake person) is shown again. This is ribbon. The top of the page has a large cricket like creature that was said to the child to be the programmer (Dr. Mengele). All of the stories in The Tall Book of Make Believe were used one way or the other in programming. We will just touch on some notable points.

On page 38 is a poem about a Mr. Nobody. The programmers like to have alters identify themselves as "nobody".

On page 39 is a poem/story about "someone" who comes tapping...but it is "only the cricket whistling". This was used to help program in that the 3 taps were the cricket (the cover image for the programmer.)

On page 50, is the story of a girl who when she lays down becomes a different person Mrs. Brown.

On page 67 is a poem Foreign Lands, where the child sees "the sky's blue looking glass" and then ends up "to where the roads on either hand lead onward into fairyland.. .and all the playthings come alive." In other words, what is in effect being communicated is: take the hypnotic image of flying into the sky in Papa's silver plane (as the plane goes up the trance goes higher -deeper) and then go into a fantasy land where all your wishes can come true--so that you can escape the hell us programmers are giving you.

On page 79 is the story of a ghost named Georgie who would run home and warn people at home when things were broken. This was part of the "fix me" programming--so that ghost-like alters, known as reporting alters, call "HOME" to "PAPA" if the programming is touched.

On page 84 is the story "How they bring back The Village of Cream Puffs When the Wind Blows it away." This story has several programming words in it, these words and their meanings are as follows: In programming the " Village of Liver-and-Onions " is a code word for "the coven. "Prairie" means "ceremony site", and in another story "picnic" means "ritual". It's doubtful that most alters would remember these meanings, but they helped the abusers confuse the child. Imagine the victim trying to describe a ritual and telling someone that a village of liver & onions had a picnic.

Alien Programming Scripts

There are numerous scripts for the Alien programming. Recent novels and Hollywood movies provide a non-ending pool of programming resources for the Programmers. Visual reality headgear and other high-tech methods can easily be incorporated into an alien abduction theme. The following are samples of some of the people who the author Fritz has spent time with, who on one level knew they needed help, but didn t know just what they felt uneasy about.

Person 1: Had been abducted by aliens since she was a small child. Different types of aliens took her. Her mother worked for the CIA at Area 51. Her mother was abusive to her. One of her best friends is a Monarch slave. When the aliens come a bright light appears and then they abduct her. The aliens she works with the most look exactly like people, and in their handwriting show severe abuse. These benevolent aliens have taken her fetuses several times. She has time-traveled to their planet. She is dissociative. The government authorities are constantly monitoring and tracking her, and have made an effort to besmudge her record, so that it appears like she is looney tunes. This is the type of cases that this book's co-author has spent time working with. Doesn't t this sound more like human mind-control than real aliens?

Person 2: This person hears aliens within his head (which when described sounds like a case of MPD (DID). The aliens would take him and force him to have homosexual activities even though he didn't want to participate. But that was O.K. to him, because they were a superior race and if these benevolent aliens which are so far advanced beyond us, want to have sex with him, that is their perogative. This person has a lot of depression. This person wonders why the authorities seem to keep track of him.

Person 3: This person worked at Area 51. Has a photographic memory throughout his entire MPD system. He realizes that he is MPD. His best friend claims to be an alien, a god of sorts, and is known by both this person & Fritz to be part of Naval Intelligence. This best friend acts more like a handler than an alien, and this Area 51 worker gives his best friend total allegiance. This man has all kinds of alien type stories, which sound in many cases like programming. This person admits that his family is Illuminati, and the front alters say he has watched Illuminati rituals as an adult, but hasn't participated . He shows signs of severe abuse. He is afraid to talk about trauma-based mind-control, but loves to talk about aliens.

In fact, all three of the persons discussed on this page shied away from talking about Monarch mind-control, as if it were something not important, but they all love to talk about aliens. And the list of interesting people like this could go on.

When Mind-controlled slaves who have alien programming are being abducted by the intelligence agencies for their use and for programming here are some of the details of how and what occurs: A bright light is shined into their house. They have been hypnotically conditioned to view this light as a Flying Saucer, whether it is a helicopter or something else. As the NWO does have Flying Saucers, sometimes the real thing is used. Men in Black (just like in SRA cases) are often associated with the abductions. And the slaves frequently speak about "shadows in the mind."

The slaves are taken to rooms where examining tables with white sheets and X-ray machines, Headgear and medical equipment is in place. (The alien equipment has gotten more high-tech over the last 40 years. The aliens wear suits that are full of occult symbology. The people are restrained with clamps and electrical shock and energy is used on them. They are told that they are receiving information. They are given tracking implants and other implants.

All of the 3 above persons, receive information from the aliens regularly. Almost all of the elements of Monarch trauma-based mind-control appear in these abduction accounts, especially in the psychological features of the victim. The victims of alien abduction programming feel suicidal after they talk too much. They have headaches, sleep difficulties, nightmares, obsessive thoughts, a fear of hypnosis, trapped feelings, and paranoia.

During their abductions the aliens use drugs, thought transfers, and painful medical procedures. The aliens use language that parallels the messages given to SRA victims, just change the language from Satan is in charge to the Aliens are in charge.

Cattle mutilations where the blood has been drain are associated with abductions. There is documented accounts where cattle mutilations have been connected to Satanic cults using helicopters. The victims of aliens are forced to be impregnated and then the fetus is repeatedly taken. The aliens are repeatedly telling these victims that a holocaust is soon to come.

Another strange phenomena, that others and this author have noticed is that these victims of alien abduction seen to know each other, much in the same way that victims of Illuminati mind-control seem to know each other. And the aliens seem to know everything about the victims. The victims have amnesia of their abductions. The memories of their abductions are hidden in altered states of consciousness, that hypnosis sometimes can pull up. Most victims are afraid of hypnosis or can't be hypnotized (they have been hypnotized not to allow anyone else to hypnotize them.)

To give credit where due, Bowart's Operation Mind Control Researcher's edition, (1994) has an excellent appendix with charts which compare SRA mind-control victims and alien abduction victims. The charts reveal how similar the two groups are. In preparing these paragraphs, we have used his charts as a basis for how we wrote these last two paragraphs up. However, the co-authors experiences in working with abduction victims match the findings of Bowart. Do aliens from another planet exist? They may or may not. It is not a real issue, we have to face what is already on this planet.

Fritz has several tapes of aliens of different types talking (which were obtained from abduction survivors) and their voices sound demonic and they are saying that they have been alive on this planet for many years. One said something like he's been here on earth 500,000 years. If an alien has lived on this planet for 1/2 million years, when does he get residence status. My! If that is true, he is no alien--we are!

But one thing is certain, this planet contains some very slimy evil creatures who are either real non-humans or very deceptive dark humans. The Bible calls them demons and reprobate men. The four most popular origins of supposed aliens on earth are all star groups relatively close to our solar system.

They are: the Pleiades, known as the 7 or 9 sisters, because their are 9 stars of which 7 are visible; Sirius, the dog constellation; the Orion constellation; and the twin stars of Zeta Reticuli, which twin stars were amazingly charted by Chinese astrologers in 3,000 B.C.!

Fritz, the co-author of this book kept an open mind on the issue, could there be any benevolent aliens? Some abductees believed that their aliens were benevolent, but when they are debriefed they admit that mind-control and sexual molestation is carried out by the aliens. Fritz, has concluded with other investigators on this question, there are no benevolent aliens, in fact the only aliens that may be around are what have been known as demons.

People who have participated in high level Illuminati ceremonies report the presence of creatures that look like the various aliens . (This whole subject is dealt with in another book by Fritz Springmeier.) Some points might be briefly brought out. Fritz has amassed a great deal of evidence that the elite have human-built Flying Saucers. Notice how the controlled media always link aliens with Flying Saucers and UFOs? This is an entire book in itself, however, the bottom line is that at least most (if not all) of the alien abductions are simply part of the NWO s mind-control.

It is obvious that for various reasons (including the goals set down in the secret Iron Mountain government report), the government (including cooperating agencies like NASA) decided to use an alien abduction theme rather than a Satanic Ritual Abuse theme to their mind-control programming. The major differences in the programming methodology is that the blood rituals of the SRA are no longer used. The reason why blood rituals are no longer needed is that the high-tech harmonic machines (which implant thoughts-see chap. 6) and other high-tech methods eliminate the need for the blood traumas. The victims of alien abductions are taken at random, where the Illuminati victims are abducted more frequently around ritual dates. The person who believes in UFOs and aliens is going to receive the same type of treatment as those who believe in Satanic Ritual Abuse. The legal system and society at large are conditioned to treat them as nuts. This protects their abusers.

An Illuminati hierarchy member described their magic goal of pursuing a spiritual path through the finer frequencies of outer time. The alien programming is one way to experience this.

Island of the Blue Dolphins

This is a child's book by Scott O Dell. The people of an island have both an everyday name and a magical name. When the chief gives his magical name to a Russian captain named Orlov, he and his warriors end up being killed in battle. The alters of Monarch slaves have names they can give outsiders and then their access code names which must be kept secret. Part of the story is to stay in line with what one's ancestors have done. Other items in the book, such as the four winds from the four directions fit in with programming too.

The book is just one of many that the programmers want the children to hear so that they naturally adopt the correct programming scripts.

The Lord of the Rings

Some Illuminati survivors are always looking for a ring. Rings play a significant part in the lives and programming of slaves. One section that is coding/programming found in J.R.R. Tolkien's Lord of the Rings is One Ring to rule them all, One Ring to find them, One Ring to bring them all and in the darkness bind them.

The Most Important Programming Script--The Lesser Key

One of the most important scripts for the Illuminati Mind-control Programmers is the Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia, The Book of Evil Spirits.

The Illuminati Doctors Green, Black, White and Blue (that is Mengele, Wheeler, Cameron, and Mueller) were fully knowledgeable about The Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia. In fact, all those who go beyond the initial levels in the Illuminati are required to study the entire book. It's an important ritual book. It is very out of fashion to believe in demons. It is in fashion to believe in aliens, in ghosts, in the internal psychological wizard that guides you, and other things which to those high in demonology secretly know are simply covers for what used to be called demons.

Both the high level Illuminati and the alert Christians are saying many of the same things concerning demons. Is "magical" phenonmena real? Do the programmers really believe in it? In the Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia it answers, "I am not concerned to deny the objective reality of all 'magical' phenonmena; if they are illusions, they are at least as real as many unquestioned facts of daily life; and...they are at least evidence of some cause." (p.10) The author of the Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia then points out that all our sense impressions of the universe are dependent upon changes in the brain. Reality is a perception of the mind. So the author states, "...we must include illusions, which are after all sense impressions as much as realities' are, in the class of 'phenomena dependent on brain changes.'

Magical phenomena, however, come under a special subclass, since they are willed, and their cause is the series of 'real' phenomena called the operations of ceremonial magic." In other words, when the Illuminati practice ceremonial magic, their magic to them is as real as life, but they do not feel a need to defend its reality.

People in the occult encourage children to fantasize. Fantasy is looked at with favor. Whether the power and healing and mind-control of demonology stems from illusion or Jung's autonomous power of the human psyche to attract & manifest archetypes through the human soul or some other source is not an issue for Satanists. They are seeing results, power, healings and the destruction of their enemies by demonology.

Within the Illuminati illusion, myth, and perception are all esteemed. Are they alone? No, they are not alone. The myth that the United States is a democracy is probably a far stronger "reality" in the minds of Americans than the actual reality that it is a tightly controlled secret oligarchy with a republican front. But in this case, which is the greater real reality? The American believes his myth enough that he dies for it. He fights the "war to end all wars" and then the "war to save the world FOR DEMOCRACY" (to quote some popular world war slogans).

In the American mind, he achieves victory even though he has fought and died for a myth. And even when the mythical goals he fought for aren't even achieved, he believes he has achieved a victory. The first world war never brought everlasting peace and the war to save the world for democracy ended after "victory" with more of the world under stronger totalitarian rule than before the war began. The bottom line is that myths and illusions make up a large part of the reality of most people's lives. Movie actors have repeatedly found out that they incur their fan's wrath if they try to reveal their real selves to the public. The point also is that the person practicing ceremonial magic will not be impressed by the average person, even if he be a minister, who has structured his life on myths and illusions, who will tell him that his ceremonial magic is not real. The magician will naturally ask, "Who IS living in a world of reality?"

Ceremonial magic is a very strong "reality" to the Illuminati's mind-controlled slaves, because the programmers make great efforts to develop the five "impressions" listed on page 11 of The Lesser Key, which are:

(1) Sight. The circle, square, triangle, vessels, lamps, robes, implements, etc.
(2) Sound. The invocations.
(3) Smell. The perfumes.
(4) Taste. The Sacraments.
(5) Touch. As under

(1). These are reflected upon by the person, and these 5 produce unusual brain-changes. Later two more senses are also highly developed. Programmed multiple-slaves have visual and auditory acuity far beyond the normal person. The Lesser Keys of Solomon Goetia goes on to say, "The Spirits of the Goetia are portions of the human brain. Their seals therefore represent methods of stimulating or regulating those particular spots (through the eye)." "The names of God are vibrations calculated to establish:

(a) General control of the brain....

(b) Control over the brain in detail. (Rank or type of the Spirit)

(c) Control of one special portion. (Name of Spirit.) The perfumes aid this through smell. Usually the perfume will only tend to control a large area; but there is an attribution of perfumes to letters of the alphabet enabling one, by a Qabalistic formula, to spell out the Spirit's name." (p. 12) Did the reader grasp that? The most important script for the programmers is to use ceremonial magic which uses the names of God to establish GENERAL, & SPECIFIC CONTROL (via a hierarchial arrangement of demons) over a person's mind. More will be covered about this in Chapter 10.

But while we are on the subject let's go just a little bit farther. "If, then, I say, with Solomon: 'The Spirit Cimieries teaches logic,' what I mean is: Those portions of my brain which subserve the logical faculty may be stimulated and developed by following out the processes called 'The Invocation of Cimieries.' And this is exactly what the programmers do.

They invoke via many rituals all types of specific demon (or demonic energy) to enhance the particular mental functions they want. For instance, Typhon and Choronzon (also Horonzon) are demons who are essential in building the structure of a programmed multiple. They must be invoked before the early start of dividing the mind.

Michael Bertieaux heads up the Horonzon Club, an unofficial part of Kenneth Grant's OTO. The demon Horonzon (or Choronzon) looks like a grey alien, and was conjured up by Sir John Dee, who was Queen Elizabeth I's genius advisor and court sorcerer.

Transyuggothian magic is carried out in order to reach Transyuggothian Space (also known as Trans-Plutonian Space and Universe B). These existence of these dimensions are kept very secret. The ancient cult of the Star Sirius, from which supposedly we are now getting aliens, had rituals to get one into the celebrated Universe B.

Sirius B (the binary twin star that exists with the actual Sirius A star) represented the god Ra Hoor Khuit. Sirius A represented the Egyptian devil.

Let's reflect on all this demonic "illusion". As stated, an American will die for the myth that America is saving the world for democracy. This made sense to psychologists at the time. However, if a slave dies for what he sees as the reality of voodoo magic, the psychologist dismisses it as unimportant--a mere coincidence. Since voodoo magic doesn't exist in the psychologist's mind, the psychologist believes that magic carries no threat to its intended victim. Likewise, because the psychologist doesn't believe in demons, demons supposedly pose no threat to the mind-controlled slave. The psychologist is really projecting his perception of reality upon someone else, and it doesn't work.

The Illuminati programmers are counting on the therapists ignoring demonology. In Bowart's in-most-respects excellent book Operation Mind Control, (Researcher Edition, Ft. Bragg, CA: Flatland, 1994, p. 249.) asks the reader to self-hypnotize himself by several times "looking into your mind's eye". To Bowart, he sees the trance state as merely looking into your mind's eye. He does not attribute any demonic activity to be involved with such things. No wonder, Bowart writes very disparagingly and critically about Christians who are trying to do demonic deliverances to slaves. But then as far as I know Bowart hasn't freed anyone of their mind-control either, he is just a reporter.

Both ministers and psychologists have contempt for each other's excesses. We must bear in mind that the victims of this total mind-control have their bodies, minds, and spirits enslaved. The body, mind and spirit need to be simultaneously liberated. A great deal of the success of the Programmers is that ministers have rejected the study of the mind (psychology) and therapists have rejected spiritual things. The victim is left without a way to heal both spirit and mind. Partial freedom is still slavery. And not only that but both therapists and ministers seem to feel the actual physical threats to the slave's body to be outside of their jurisdiction, and by default it is left up to the victim to provide. Which again without the body safe and healed, the mind and spirit are not fully free. There are therapists and others who pontificate about how evil Christian ministers are for trying to deliver mind-controlled slaves from their demonic possession. This is not the problem. The problem is that the Illuminati have skillfully separated the various therapeutic elements both functionally and legally. The answer to the enslavement of body, soul, mind and spirit is a team of people who will address all the issues together. Both the psychologists and ministers see the excesses of each other, but a little humility would go a long way, for both sides to recognize each other's value. God works through all people, even those who resist Him. That is why he can rightly be called Almighty God.

C. The Use of Lies Externally and Internally, The Use of Covers and Fronts, The Art of Hiding Things in A System

External Deceptions

There seems to be no end to the lies that are involved with the Monarch programming. The old adage that nothing is as it appears, is generally the rule. However, once one catches on to the common tactics of deceptions, the tactics themselves become red flags which can alert a thinking person to what is hidden.

This is similar to those Russians who could read between the lines when reading communist propaganda and figure out the truth. The deception begins with covering up the identity of the slave. Within the Illuminati, the art of hiding genealogies is a fine art. Children are swapped and placed with foster parents. Mothers all of a sudden have babies, when no one has noticed them being pregnant.

Investigators like Fritz Springmeier, who have been investigating court house records and other primary documents have seen court house records altered overnight, to cover up genealogical and financial information.

Covers For Individual Slaves

The individual slave is usually given a good cover. A good cover will be one that cannot be seen through, and still allows the person the freedom to get their job done. When building a cover, the following questions will be asked: how much will this cover allow this person to spend? what kind of people can this person associate with? where can this person go? and what kind of hobby can he or she have?

By now, the Illuminati have their secret slaves in so many places that they have their bases covered in all fields. True life examples include: a Monarch programmer who appears to be simply a middle class housewife. A Monarch computer programmer who appears to be a deaf and dumb mute when in the presence of the public, but the deeper brilliant alters work secretly at programming computers during the day. An international spy, who is a programmed multiple, who has a totally different set of I.D. and wigs, so that when they switch to certain alters used for the intelligence agencies--they not only act different, they look different, and have different valid I.D. An apparently dumb blond may be a very intelligent highly trained Monarch slave.

Within the intelligence world Monarch slaves will function as **Agent Provocateurs**, which are people who join groups with the purpose of leading the group to do things that will cause it harm. The neo-Nazis are full of Agent Provocateurs as are some of the Patriot groups. Some Monarch slaves are what is called "clean agents"--that is they have never been used in intelligence work, so they have no record of use. Monarchs are great for being used by this or that group on a limited basis without anyone suspecting any connection.

The Intelligence term for the elaborate cover histories they give one of their Monarch slaves to operate as an agent is called a "legend". Supporting documents will be placed into the appropriate government files to support the legend.

The intelligence agencies may have several intact "legends" for different personalities of a slave. The intelligence term is NOTIONAL. It roughly means "a fictional entity for the sake of an intelligence operation." Notional organizations are created to steal strength away from sincere organizations. If a church (or non-CIA KKK group etc.) gets too sincere and powerful, a well-financed notional rival will start up, and then later fold under scandal.

The net effect is to destroy the entire cause. At least half of the therapists helping Monarch slaves in the authors' area are programmed multiples themselves! The therapeutic community is heavily infiltrated. The help lines for women in crisis are all dirty. Some of the Christian groups that claim to help SRA victims are really fronts.

One recovering Monarch slave tells about how her father was the mayor of an important city in Pennsylvania . He was part of the Illuminati and he introduced drugs into his area, and had a monopoly on illegal drugs in the area. As mayor he established the first drug hot line, so that people could inform authorities about drug trafficking. He staffed the drug hot line with his own people and this allowed him to get tips to eliminate his competition.

The intelligence agencies which are using mind-control are hiding their drug trafficking and criminal activities. One of the ways they do this is the so-called War on Drugs. The situation is so bad and widespread that even the controlled media has had news where they reported CIA agents smuggling drugs seized in South America into the U.S. using government channels.

When a slave is being programmed, the abusers will use schools, churches, Big Brothers, Boy Scouts and other activities to carry out the abuse and programming. Children pulled from classes will be given back-up amnesia so that they forget that they forgot. In other words, they are totally unaware that they have lost time when they were pulled out of the classroom. The teacher gives them a test score, and they are told they took a test during the missing time. How can the front alters deny it, when they have been hypnotized to believe it and they can see the test scores?

Alter boys and boys at catholic orphanages have a record of being used by dirty priests. Recently, numerous priests have been discovered molesting children, and hundreds of lawsuits are underway, but it is still not coming out that this abuse is connected to trauma-based mind-control. In the past, if the parents who were part of the Illuminati elite, but were not religious wanted their boy programmed, they could send him off to a military school run under the cooperation of the Catholic church and units such as the 6th U.S. Army, which became one of the primary infiltrated units. The 6th army uses the magical hexagram as its logo. This would provide the programmed child with a religious front. He could say, "I went to catholic school." The programming could be disguised as discipline, etc.

The establishment media have worked propaganda wonders for the abusers of the Monarch Mind-control. Britain is extremely repressive in their information control. If any news medium tries to leak the most simplistic of information a secret document called a notice" will be sent at any time of day to them from a D-notice committee, and the media will have to stop whatever reference is deemed a secret. In the U.S. it in effect works as tight, it just is not officially as tight.

The abusers know that they also have an Incredulous Factor that can assist them. Who would believe that a sweet child drinks blood and is cannabalistic? The more that they can do that is far fetched, the less credibility the child has if they do talk. Some children do try to talk. One Monarch slave talked at age five, and her entire family came down hard on her and blamed the child's talking for the death of one of the abusers. What kind of proof can a child bring that adults will accept?

In the McMartin Preschool case about 800 children were witnesses whose stories colloborated the SRA and programming that was done, but the media, and the judicial system were able to cover up the abuse and make it look on television that the abusers were the victims! It wasn't until after the case was over and the property sold, that the tangible proof (the secret tunnels with paraphenalia) were found, and then the news media has covered that up too.

The abusers will often wear masks and costumes. Let's say a programmer wears a Mickey Mouse outfit, and the child would remember and tell, "Mickey Mouse hurt me." Now who is going to believe the child? The child has told the truth, but will be reprimanded for telling the truth. It doesn't take long for a severely abused child, who has been programmed to keep silent, to learn that no one wants to hear the truth anyway.

The Use of Religious Fronts

A great deal of Monarch programming and slave abuse, (as well as the drug trade) is done under three major covers or fronts: Religious Fronts, the Front of National Security and the Military, and the Entertainment fields, especially the Country Western Industry, the Rock Music Industry and Hollywood .

The religious fronts were popular for centuries, especially when groups like the Jesuits, the Assassins, and other groups held immense power. Religious fronts are still being used such as J.Z. Knight, Elizabeth Claire Prophet's CUT church, the Church of Scientology , the Charismatic movement, Jim Jones & Jonestown, and David Koresh's group etc. Billy Ray Moore's Lord's Chapel is entirely a mind-control operation. There is a nondenomination Pentecostal church in southern Washington whose entire membership is Satanists under mind-control.

Various overseas "missionary" groups are covers for the CIA & mind-control. It would take a book to explain how these religious fronts are part of the total trauma-based mind-control and how they operate to protect mind-control, however there are publications which go into some of the CIA connections to these groups. It is suggested that interested persons read these publications.

Some of the deceptions such as the lone assassin idea have been used for centuries as a cover for assassinations planned by the occult hierarchy. If we are going to really reveal how the Monarch Mind-control is done, we will have to explain how the deception is done. If one describes a chameleon only by saying "it is like a lizard", without mentioning the camouflage, then the most important part has been overlooked.

Religious fronts are an important part of the Illuminati program for making slaves. In fact, due to their gnostic philosophy of balancing their good deeds with their bad deeds, it is almost essential to have a religious front through which one can do good deeds. Even though adding this section to the book will spur some to blindly lash out at the book, still the whole story needs to come out. When we, the authors of this book, write that the Monarch-type total mind-control threatens everything this nation stands for, we are not exaggerating. The Monarch Mind-control program has not been used just to program slaves--but it has been part of a much bigger deception.

When this deception is realized by this nation, it will shatter the very fabric of trust that Americans have in their institutions. If Americans will begin to understand the power structure behind their institutions, and who controls this structure, they will begin to see the lies in the scripts that they have been fed since infancy. And YOU, the reader of this next section in this book, if you love the truth, can help begin the healing process to overcome some of the devastation that is going to rock this nation when the truth comes out.

This next section will help both Christian and non-Christian reader. The therapist can learn about what is happening so that they can better deal with what the SRA survivors are beginning to reveal. The grooming of the American people to believe massive amounts of lies did work, UNTIL a few loving therapists, ministers, and doctors began to liberate victims of the Monarch trauma-based mind-control. These programmed multiples began revealing a horror story of deception unparalleled in history. For the reader to deal with the next section means courage. It means that the reader will have to muster up some of the same type of love of truth that the mind-control survivors must muster to free themselves of the lies of their satanic programming. What we see and hear can be programming, in the same way SRA victims are deceived.

Everyone in the Illuminati of any significance has participated in grooming the public to believe that **Billy Graham** is a great man of God. Graham has stood beside each of the Presidents and the Pope. The Illuminati don't just program individuals, they program whole nations. The public has been led to believe in a television image. But what if the secular media's image of Billy Graham is not real? For Christians it means that they can quit trusting in a man, and place their trust fully on God. For secular readers, they can begin to see the extent of how America 's institutions have been corrupted by the horrible trauma-based mind-control. The heart-beat of the Body of Christ is crying out that something is terribly wrong. We will address that. All of us, whether Christian or not, must step out of the lies and look clearly out into the darkness and see every facet of this evil mind-control.

When men who worship the god of this world place "In God We Trust" on the Federal Reserve bank notes, we who know the truth must step out of our dream world and realize that they mean Lucifer. (By the way, the Federal Reserve is not a government agency, but a private banking institution of the Illuminati. This has been documented in a number of writings.) The issue at hand in this next section is to show how the institution called "the Christian church", and the world in general has been deceived by a programmed multiple and this trauma-based mind-control.

Secular readers will be shown that the doctrines that Christians want to believe in, have been subtly destroyed under the disguise of building them up. This is no different than the destruction of the positive values which hold any group together. (After the repeated collaboration by essentially all the Christian churches worldwide in many activities as the NCC, the Billy Graham Crusades, the Promise Keepers and other programs, the Christian churches, Orthodox, Catholic, Protestant & non-denominational can be considered one institution.)

The infiltration and control of the Christian religion has been one of the easiest tasks of the Illuminati. The Christian churches are what the intelligence agencies called "SOFT TARGETS."

THE DECEPTION OF BILLY GRAHAM, A MIND-CONTROL FRONT

In 1992, Billy Graham broadcast all over the U.S. his radio show called Embrace America 2000. In the Louisiana area, it came over the KJAM Lafayette Station. During the show, Billy Graham told the American people we need to embrace the New World Order. Billy Graham is also on record stating that people can have salvation through paganism (another name for witchcraft). For instance, in McCall Magazine (Jan. 1987) Graham stated,

"I used to believe that pagans in far-off countries were lost--were going to hell. I no longer believe that. I believe that there are other ways of recognizing the existence of God--through nature, for instance."

Pagans believe that salvation can be obtained through nature. This is not a pleasant story. Billy Graham has been built up to be the most respected popular person in America . Who wants to find out they have been deceived? We will try to give you the facts, or evidence, and may God grant you wisdom as you read this. This section is not propaganda for our own personal views.

Years ago, when Fritz set out on his search, he had no final outcome in mind. Fritz isn't concerned with concealing facts one way or the other. There is no desire to stampede our readers any where. We do want to clarify many issues. We do want to help the truth seeker. But the co-authors personally have no battle to win, except that truth be brought forth. The issues at stake are not trivial.

Historically, Billy Graham's deception is one of the "greatest" deceptions that has ever been perpetrated. Some might argue the greatest, making Benedict Arnold, Quisling, and the Trojan Horse pale into insignificance.

Allow us to introduce you just briefly into the world of the Illuminati. All top hierarchy Satanists are required to have covers. The Illuminatus will have multiple personalities, and he or she will have one personality that is particularly shown to the outside world. They (the Programmers, handlers and the Illuminati councils) try to get the best covers that they can. They like to be clergymen, but they are also mayors of big cities, lawyers, doctors, etc.

A Christian psychiatrist who has worked with numerous victims of Satanism and Multiple Personality Disorder wrote this observation after having worked with a large number of ex-multi-generational programmed Satanic multiples, "Some Satanists have invaded the church as it is the perfect cover for them. They masquerade as angels of light and gravitate towards positions of leadership in order to have more influence. Because much of what they say is sound doctrinally, they are rarely detected. Most survivors whom I have worked with had Satanist parents who were in high positions in churches; many were pastors."

(Dr. Fox, Loreda. The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of Multiple Personality Disorder. Salida , CO : Books of Sangre de Cristo, p. 196.)

Let us repeat what Dr. Loreda Fox said, "Most survivors whom I have worked with had Satanist parents who were in high positions in churches; many were pastors."

She didn't say "some," she said MOST. Independently, we have discovered the very same thing. People don't grasp that just because a preacher can sincerely preach what seems a "perfect sermon," doesn't mean that he can't also be part of the Satanic hierarchy. What is happening with the Illuminati's ability to create programmed multiples is that we are getting perfect preachers who are secret hierarchy members.

Some of their "perfect sermons" are full of slides, such as "the Christian people need to get involved in the voting process". Christians love to hear such things, it tickles their ears, but the truth is that the entire voting process has been captured and corrupted. Voting machines have repeatedly been exposed to have been rigged, and the controlled media and public denial have prevented Americans from giving up their myth that the common man's votes run this nation. (The subject of election corruption is dealt with in Fritz's newsletters, etc.)

In Fritz's Be Wise As Serpents book (which exposed Billy Graham as a Luciferian in 1991), it is explained that high level Satanism is Gnosticism which requires that "the Force" of these great satanic magicians be balanced. In other words, in high level Satanism your good deeds must balance your evil deeds. People do not realize that unless someone does "good" deeds they cannot be a high level Satanist. That is why some of the greatest philanthropists are also our leading national Satanists.

To see Billy Graham do something commendable does not disqualify him from Satanism. In fact, it is a requirement if he's been part of the Illuminati, such as ex-insiders/witnesses say he was. In fact, it wasn't until working on this book that an eyewitness to the mind-control abuse of at the hands of Billy Graham offered to help contribute to this section of the book. In other words, an eyewitness helped write this. This eyewitness account by the Co-author matches what the list of eyewitnesses that Fritz assembled in 1993 have said. But the eyewitness went further and exposed B.G. crusades' skillful use of Monarch slaves to launder drug money.

Several police officers have stated that today, there is for all practical purposes no police training helping police to understand Satanism. They are highly trained in many areas, but Satanism is avoided. When an SRA case involving multiplicity in Olympia , WA recently happened, the police who investigated the case found that they were treated as international experts in Satanism by other policemen. They themselves knew that they knew very little.

Where are the experts to teach us about how the Illuminati functions? Where are the experts who know who are in the Illuminati? There is no college open to the public that teaches Advanced Illuminati Studies 401, and gives degrees in Satanism. The expert witnesses are those who have managed to leave the Illuminati and Satanism, and stay alive long enough to talk. But the other side will argue, how can we verify the testimony of your witnesses Fritz?

Remember what happened to over 100 people who had some type of knowledge about the Kennedy assassination? Jim Marrs in his book Crossfire on the Kennedy Assassination lists 103 people who were key figures in knowing about the assassination who have died, many in circumstances that indicate assassination. The story we are dealing with here is just as sensitive to the elite as Kennedy's assassination, because it involves their preparations for the creation of a false Christ, called by Christians the AntiChrist, who will be the master handler/programmer.

The List Of Known And Credible Witnesses

If the authors were to call my list of witnesses up to the witness stand--which I can't for it would be a death sentence to many of them, the list would include:

1 Council of Foreign Relations member, who is secretly against the New World Order

1 National Security Agency person, who is against the New World Order

1 CIA high level administrator

2 Satanists, still in covens, but unhappy enough with the situation to talk

4 ex-Satanists, 3 of which are eyewitnesses, all Christians now

2 ex-New Age leaders who worked with the Conspiracy, both became Christians

1 ex-33° Mason, now a Christian

Various Christians who have worked with Billy Graham, Pastors, etc.

Various therapists working with SRA victims

The man who ran Security at the Sacramento Crusade

Alice Braemer, a woman who worked as a secretary for Jeanne Dixon

None, except for a couple of exceptions, none of these people knew anything about what the other witnesses (sources) had said. The high degree of validation and collaboration that separate testimony by witnesses who have never seen each other and live in different parts of the country is very powerful. There are several questions that pop up into people's minds who are not familiar with who Fritz is, and are not familiar with these witnesses. The type of worries some readers could be naturally having might be: But how are we, the readers, to know how accurate these people are? Are they trustworthy? Do they have a reputation for honesty? Could they possibly be giving false information to discredit a great man of God?

These kind of questions can be natural questions for people unfamiliar with how this information was obtained. But we assure you, that what we pass on from these eyewitnesses can be relied upon. None of these worries have any substance to them, because the manner in which Fritz came to find out about Billy Graham has generally been while he was researching other things related to the Illuminati. The author has not been out to build a case, the case has built itself from numerous detached witnesses who have nothing to gain by telling what they know. These witnesses have not come to Fritz to feed him bogus information.

Just the paper trail on Billy Graham is very revealing in itself. Generally the information of these witnesses has been confided by these witnesses to their trusted friends. Initially, these witness have had no idea that the information they confided in their trusted close associates would go beyond their most trusted friends. These trusted friends then have had permission to let me contact them or find out their information. The reason why these people are believable is that the information they reveal could get them killed, and second, the manner and circumstances of how the information has originally unfolded has never been in any fashion or method that could be construed as an attempt to give false information.

Clarifying What Is Looked For In Proof

Too many people are considered guilty unless proven innocent--which means that a legitimate search for truth has NOT taken place. On the flip side, we must bear in mind that hidden information that has laid dormant for years may totally reverse our understanding of something. Exceptional circumstances may surprise us. If some item does not lend itself to totally irrefutable, totally unqualified claims, then knowing this, the proper investigator uses words like "almost certainly" and "most likely". If the investigator feels strongly that everything is totally clear, he may declare that something is correct "without qualification." This is the nature of proof.

We need to understand the qualifications and reservations that often are attached to evidence or conclusions. But we certainly do want to press our investigations as far as possible to get as many "unqualified" conclusions as possible. Of course, by the time we write this, we have already done our investigating, and have one conclusion without any qualification: Billy Graham is working for the Satanic Hierarchy. We want to try to introduce the material in such a way that you will get some sense of the search, so that you will not simply accept our conclusion but will make rational spirit-led critically-thought-out decisions about Billy Graham.

So for the sake of the reader's investigation, please, let us unshackle ourselves from our prejudices and preconceived labels. Let us suspend our judgment about Billy Graham one way or the other, until we have thoroughly studied, prayed and gained discernment about this. It might be interesting to get some of the Masons, who casually without realizing what they were saying, have talked about Billy Graham's membership, or other aspects of his Masonic involvement.

It's doubtful that such men would be of any value on the witness stand. Their numerous Masonic oaths to lie and conceal Freemasonry under penalties of gruesome death would tend to have more influence on them than swearing on a Bible. (See Duncan's Masonic Ritual book, p. 30 for the 1st Degree oath.) This type of witness, because they talked accidentally and casually are very valuable witnesses to whoever accidentally hears them, but unfortunately they must be assumed to be still loyal to the Masonic Lodge and would be hostile witnesses that will not cooperate. If this were an actual court of law, depositions of Billy Graham's staff could be taken, so that it could be revealed to the court how many times they have lied. By showing their lies, their testimony would be impeached and Christians would realize that Billy Graham's staff have played a major role in the deception.

This article will put forth evidence that impeaches the testimony of Billy Graham's staff. We must refer readers to the Be Wise As Serpents book and other writings of Fritz for more information. Also some other books will be named too. Because these leaders are corrupt, they have been participating in the mass deception of the world about what Billy Graham does and who he is. In fact, if this were a court of law all types of people could be subpoenaed to take depositions, and we might find out many more things than we already know.

The Motivation of the Co-Authors

Many people, who like Billy Graham, have imputed evil motives to anyone exposing Billy Graham. As the Scripture say at one point, "Am I to become your enemy because I tell you the truth?" The story about Billy Graham and his life-long career for the Illuminati is not an easy thing for us to write. We do not enjoy speaking negative things against people. We do enjoy speaking positive things about people. And yet no man, no servant of God is above reproach. We can personally have an inner peace that what we have done was what we should have done. Something needs to be done to wake mankind up before its too late.

Clarifying What is Acceptable Testimony

In some subjects, going to the encyclopedia or almanac will settle questions. In dealing with the Illuminati and high levels of the occult world -- unless the investigator is willing to listen to eye-witness testimony, he or she will get nowhere. There is rarely any written record of their secret activities. But how much stock can be put in eye-witnesses? Many people up to now have criticized Fritz for using eye-witnesses. But remember that if we did manage to get some paper trail or books on the subject, that book paper trail would not be acceptable in court, or even if allowed would not be as important as our eyewitnesses.

In court, the written records can be introduced along with the person who recorded them. In other words, the personal witness is still important even with written documents. The testimony of our eyewitnesses expose Billy Graham's mind-control activities. Still, we want to bear in mind that witnesses have varying degrees of credibility and knowledge. The qualifications of witness in relation to what they are testifying is important. But to simply dismiss all these witnesses because they are not paper is simply to cut ourselves off from many valuable sources of information.

In accumulating evidence, the researcher will come upon two types of information. One is prearranged evidence and the other is called casual evidence. Casual evidence is evidence that has just happened to appear by accident. An actual example is when friends of mine met a total stranger who happens to be a Mason and he offhandedly talks about Billy Graham being a Freemason. Casual evidence is simply evidence that happens without the interested party having anything to do with it surfacing. Finding casual evidence is generally "luck".

In this case, Fritz has bumped into a great deal of casual evidence, simply because he had his eyes open and has been investigating this area for several years. Because of the situation today in this nation, there is little chance to get a proper hearing of this information. In terms of the future, indeed, the backlash from this book may silence us. The truth will still remain, even if we and the other witnesses don't.

We can draw conclusions about ducks from studying various types of ducks. I can not draw conclusions about radios from studying ducks, I can generalize about American made cars, but I can't include in my generalization about American cars an ox-cart in India . This may sound basic, and it is, yet people try to generalize by lumping the generational Satanists in with everybody else, and it just doesn't work. They also try to draw conclusions about the Freemasons on the basis of what the Rotary Club they belong to is like and it just doesn't work.

In terms of trying to get a proper hearing today, one of the barriers is that people use their own experiences to draw conclusions. People have nothing in their experience to allow them to draw conclusions about the Illuminati programmers/handlers who are moral degenerates and programmed multiples, who will do anything, in spite of their nice fronts.

The Policies of Deception By The Billy Graham Crusade Staff

In 1992, a Christian named Richard Bennett, a friend of Fritz's confronted the Billy Graham Crusade staff. What he was concerned about was the Billy Graham crusade policy (that has been in place since the 50's) of sending Catholics that come forward back to Catholic churches. Documentation shows that the deception is worse than that, new believers that have never gone to any church are sometimes referred by the Billy Graham counselors to the Catholic Church.

Now, why would Richard and Fritz be concerned about the Catholic Church? Richard Bennett was a priest from Ireland who worked at the Vatican , before giving his life to Christ. He knows how the Catholic hierarchy prevents people from realizing what they have in Christ. For those who have read Fritz's Be Wise As Serpents book chapter 2.2 you know that Fritz is very concerned when anyone gives their allegiance to a power structure that is part of the NWO and part of its Monarch trauma-based total mind control.

Not everything about the Catholic church is wrong. Yet, the Billy Graham Crusade could never get the support it gets from conservative Christians if Billy Graham's staff didn't lie about where Crusade converts are sent. What Richard and Fritz were concerned about was that new Christians would be sent to Catholic churches, which now are teaching Zen Buddhism, New Age things, not the salvation by grace that these new Christians need. Granted the enthusiasm of these new Christians might infuse some life into the Catholic church, but a babe in Christ is defenseless. He needs nurture, and the chance to grow. It isn't meant for new Christians to be thrown to the wolves.

Anyway, last Spring and Summer, the Billy Graham Crusade Executive committee was confronted face to face with the evidence of what the Billy Graham Crusade in Sept. '93 was going to do. Actually, more people than Richard did confront them, but Richard is one of the most knowledgeable ministries to the Catholics in this area. What the Billy Graham Crusade Executive Committee told Richard Bennett was that he had nothing to worry about. That the crusade would never send anyone to a Catholic church, but that if new converts wanted to go there on their own, that was their own choice.

Four Catholic leaders sat on the Executive Committee for the '92 Portland Crusade -- Chancellor Mary Joe Telly, a deacon and two priests. On the Catholic radio station, (and we have it recorded,) Mary Joe Telly of the Billy Graham Executive Committee along with another Bishop Wall Schmidt told the Catholic listeners not to worry that if they came forward they would be guaranteed that they would be referred back to a Catholic church. They gave the assurance four times in that talk show. They said that the decision to send people who came forward to Catholic churches was firm because it had come right from the very top. This was 6 p.m KVDM Portland station. Our recording of this is a record of just one of thousands of lies that the Billy Graham Crusade people have told Christians over the years.

In fact, from the evidence it appears the Billy Graham Crusade people say whatever they have to, regardless of the truth. In the North Star Baptist, Nov. 1964 there was an article by Japheth Perez, who as a convert in the NY 1957 Billy Graham Crusade and a brand-new Christian, was sent to a Catholic church by the Billy Graham Crusade.

Ian Paisley wrote this comment about Billy Graham's staff: "Dr. Graham did not reply. He never does reply to letters like this. He states he never defends himself. He does have a staff, however, who are paid to defend him and who are never hampered by facts or bothered by ethics or logic in carrying out their duties. One of the group, George L. Edstrom, replied. The Jesuits themselves could not give a finer example of casuistry than his. It is thoroughly dishonest and deceitful, ... However, since this technique of deceit by misdirection, this failure to face up to the issues, this disregard of fact, and this blasphemous attempt to identify Dr. Graham's official connection with infidels and his flattery and endorsement of them with our Lord's ministry to publicans and sinners is so typical of the Graham organization..."

In Fritz's June '93 Newsletter From A Christian Ministry, a letter from Graham's staff was reproduced with a point by point exposure of its lies.

Christians are really not well aware of what the Billy Graham Crusade does. We quote a paragraph from a letter sent to Billy Graham clear back in the 1950s by a Pastor who, grieved by what Billy Graham was doing to the harvest field, said:

"Some people say that if you have just one convert in an evangelistic campaign, it is worth the meeting. That is not true. The evangelist, as the pastor and teacher, is given to the Body of Christ. The real test of an evangelistic campaign is not how many people are converted but what kind of a spiritual condition does it leave in a community. Billy Graham is not only failing in the number of people he leads to the Lord Jesus Christ in this day when hearts are hungry and most people are afraid of what may happen in the world and when it is easier to get people converted than it ever has been in my lifetime, but Billy Graham is pulling the limbs off of the evangelistic trees and the orchard is being left in bad condition. As we have often said, the real test of an evangelist is not just how many converts he has but does he leave the orchard in condition so it will keep bearing fruit."

Billy Graham's Active Role In Satanic Ritual Abuse

Before we get into the details, we'll take an overview. Satanists thrive on power. Satan loves to give his followers power. Satan took Christ to the mountaintop and told Christ that he'd have a "crusade" and bring every one to follow Christ, if Christ would just bow down and worship him. Christ refused. Billy Graham accepted it.

We know a great deal how the Satanists took Billy Graham, the brush salesman and made him into the famous evangelist that he has become. Additionally, we also know from victims of Satanism, that have come out of it, that Billy Graham has been a Satanist himself. How can this be? And how can we know this?

One of the best witnesses is a Monarch program survivor, who has escaped from being a high-level Pentagon slave. This survivor witnessed Billy Graham working for the Illuminati. This survivor also carried messages for the Satanic hierarchy and personally knows that Billy Graham has been carrying messages from the top secret Illuminati to Presidents and heads of state. This person's information has been backed up by independent witnesses. A second ex-Satanist also remembers Billy Graham as a Satanist. Still another person, an ex-Illuminati person, who has MPD stood in front of Billy Graham and watched his eyes. This person said that it was very clear that Billy Graham has MPD and that he switches personalities.

By happenchance or God's will, Fritz received a report from one of the women who went to church with Billy Graham's wife Ruth. The woman was told by Ruth in conversation that her husband Billy Graham is strange in that he always sleeps with his eyes open. It is characteristic of people who have MPD to sleep with their eyes open.

People who have MPD may have a devout Christian personality and a devout Satanic personality all within a single body. This is not uncommon. In Billy Graham's case, he is fully aware of what he is doing for the enemy in all his personalities, although his Christian personality may not be ecstatic about it all.

Billy Graham's Decision magazine has on its front page caption is '"Changed From the Inside Out," and displays an infinity loop on the cover. Many Monarch slaves have had lots of programming around the infinity loop. This is an important trigger to remind them how they are captured by the unending repeating rebuilding programming. There are countless little things like this, which are evidence that Billy Graham is playing a role in the satanic mind-control of the Illuminati.

Dr. Schefflin, a mind-control expert, told me that he saw internal documents from the 1950s teaching Billy Graham's people on how to have a successful revival. These documents instructed crusade counselors on things which were elements of mind-control, such as delaying people from coming forward to confess Christ until the "right" time.

If you've ever wondered how much Billy Graham knows--if the Illuminati haven't told him, a concerned Christian named David Hill, who was an ex-Mafia/ex-New Ager/ex-Mason did. The concerned Christian was a friend of Franklin Graham (Billy's son) and he had lived for two years at Billy Graham's house. He didn't realize that Graham had been sucked into the New World Order until he had confronted Billy Graham. David Hill, who was a ex-Mason turned Christian, who had worked with many of the world's elite, spent 18 hours in a hotel room warning Billy Graham about the New World Order. Billy Graham told David Hill at the end of their two days of talking in this eastern U.S. hotel room that he was "a captive of that [NWO] organization." In other words, after placing himself under the Illuminati's sponsorship in the late '40s, Billy Graham has had the choice of continuing to do his job for them, or being destroyed.

Since they created who he is, they can destroy him. And he knows it. David Hill went on to try to expose the New World Order and lost (was murdered) his life just as he finished a manuscript exposing it. Even a well-informed Christian like David Hill, who tried to warn Billy Graham about the NWO, was unaware of the extent of the deception of the Illuminati's mind control. David didn't know about programmed multiples.

David Hill, who was a high ranking Scottish Rite Freemason and an important Mafia figure before he came to Christ, had even been the go between for Billy Graham and Joe Banana, a Mafia kingpin. It was David Hill, who innocently believing in Billy Graham, arranged the meeting for the two men.

David Hill knew that **William Randolph Hearst** was part of the Illuminati. He was part of the branch Illuminati -- at what could be termed the 6th degree. William Randolph Hearst was totally into paganism. That is very obvious by a tour of his mansion in California which has been turned into a museum. It was William Randolph Hearst who financed the first three years of Billy Graham's Crusades.

Stu PAK is associated with the Stewart Title Company. Stu Pak provides funds for Billy Graham and others. The head of Stu Pak is friends with Billy Graham and George Bush. The company has a lot of relatives running it. The Morris family is also tied to it. The people of Stewart Title Company are ruthless. The Van Duyn Illuminati family in California also helped Billy Graham's ministry get started. One of the ways the Illuminati funneled money to Billy Graham was through a monthly check delivered to **Jeanne Dixon's** office, which was picked up every month by Billy Graham's staff. After Dixon 's secretary came to Christ she tried to expose Billy Graham's connection to Jeanne Dixon. Jeanne Dixon sells crystal balls with snakes. She is part of the Illuminati. Billy Graham wrote her a letter calling her "a woman of God." Dixon 's secretary had a copy of this letter with Billy Graham's signature on it, after she became a Christian. In 1952, in Paris , Billy Graham and another evangelist had dinner with two prostitutes and each one took one of them home. Billy Graham had a wife and children at home, so the whole affair was totally improper for an evangelist even if Billy Graham didn't have sex with the woman. He told his friend only that the prostitute had taken off her clothes and he'd gotten scared and come back to their hotel room. See Frady, Marshall. Billy Graham, A Parable of American righteousness. Boston : Little, Brown & Co., p.169-170.

In 1954, the man who ran security for the Sacramento Crusade saw a high-priced hooker sneak into Billy Graham's room prior to him going out for the Crusade. Billy Graham and this high priced hooker were alone together in the room, It is this type of thing that has opened Billy Graham up to blackmail. Should Graham ever try to stray from the proper course set for him by the Illuminati, they have plenty of ammunition to blackmail him. (You may ask why would the Satanists from generational satanic families want to intimidate Billy Graham with fear? Why, isn't he from a generational satanic family? The answer is that the whole Satanic system operates off of fear. Intimidation & fear are standard everyday parts of their makeup and actions. Sort of the counterpart to the saying there is no honor among thieves. The Satanic hierarchy are in constant intimidation and power struggles.)

When Billy Graham wanted to, he could call up **Henry Kissinger** and say, "Tell him to call me the minute he comes in." (Frady, p. 451) Henry Kissinger is right in the middle of what the Illuminati is doing. Another Illuminatus that Graham had a working relationship with is Henry Luce, friend of the Baruchs. Luce and Billy Graham spent several nights staying up talking late into the night. Knowing how the Illuminati work, it is very safe to assume that they have pushed Billy Graham into further degenerate acts. They have probably done everything they can to pervert Billy Graham, so there is no telling what sexual sins remain hidden.

Kissinger is a member of P2 Freemasonry. If we were to assume that Billy Graham were not involved (and that is a big IF since we know that he is), then if one studies P2 Masonic recruiting tactics given in the book In God's Name, p. 116, then the reader will grasp that anyone of Billy Graham's stature who associates so freely with P2 Freemasons will be targeted and blackmailed and forced to join. Once they join, new members are forced to compromise other possible targets.

Billy Graham is part of the people who implement the Monarch program (which was a joint Illuminati/CIA total mind control program done to people). We know that he is serviced by Monarch sexual slaves (their kitten alters). It is very easy for the network to keep these poor victims (Monarch slaves) from talking, and so the full extent of much of what has gone on may not come out in our lifetimes.

Another possible clue about Billy Graham's hidden life comes from Billy Graham himself. Do the readers remember how Jimmy Swaggert would disguise himself with sun glasses, etc. and his staff helped him carry out what he in part confessed? In Hollywood , FL (yes, FL!) Billy Graham said that he "often attends loveins and rock festivals incognito by putting on a false mustache and beard." He also said he found the experience in doing that kind of thing "refreshing." This story was in the Chicago Daily News, Dec. 29, 1969 . The article's purpose appears to have been to make Billy Graham look hip to today's rock and roll crowds of teenagers.

Billy Graham described his friendship with Alan Dulles, "I make every effort not to let it appear that I favor one party over another. I count Secretary Dulles a friend, but Senator Humphrey is also a good friend of mine, [who he met] ... when we were both swimming nude at the YMCA pool in Minneapolis where he was running for mayor."

A friendship with Alan Dulles? Alan Dulles, director of the CIA, was one of the biggest perpetrators of the trauma-based mind-control that this book is about. Humphrey also received orders from the Satanic hierarchy.

And what is this swimming in nude? When Billy Graham had his 1954 Crusade, large sums of the money came directly from people in the Illuminati, the Whitneys, the Vanderbilts, the Rockefellers, and Chase Manhattan. Billy Graham has numerous times attended Hollywood cocktail parties. Just two examples of which are: one given by Debbie Reynolds, and another one which was a cocktail party for Hollywood stars put on by Nixon at his San Clemente , CA home on a Sunday evening.

Billy Graham's schedule is filled with activities such as playing golf with people who are in the Illuminati, or are Hollywood types. The full impact of this constant fellowshipping with darkness is hard for people to grasp, because they picture that Graham is an evangelist and so therefore he must go where the sinners are. There is an expression, show me a man' s friends and I'll tell you about him. It's one thing to spend time with evil to give it a chance to repent and come to the light, It is another to fellowship with evil and allow it to remain in darkness.

Let us quote from a neutral source, a group who had been investigating the role of church and state. They were trying to determine for their study whether Billy Graham has had an impact on all the Presidents from Eisenhower to Clinton , This study was not pro or anti Graham, It was simply trying to determine what impact this religious leader is having on political leaders.

Billy Graham has spent a lot of time with all the Presidents, so their question was "has Billy Graham had some type of impact?" Their conclusion printed in the Journal of Church and State concludes, ...could Graham speak the word of truth - especially when that word may be critical or slashing -to the man in the White House when he is on such friendly terms with him? On the basis of the evidence now available, the answer must be no."

What a person does on his free time is said to be revealing. Christ did spend his time with sinners, but he called them to repentance. In all my study of Billy Graham, I haven't seen any of the Hollywood movie stars or politicians change their lifestyles by their association with Billy Graham. A number of "conversions" have been artificially created, and given widespread publicity by the press. Pat Boone is the type of close friend of Billy Graham that perhaps typifies Billy Graham. He is someone well-received by the public. Billy Graham has enjoyed using him in Crusades. Pat Boone continued playing in Playboy type night clubs while he was singing at Billy Graham Crusades. Pat Boone who is pro-jewish, may be jewish, because the State of Israel has given him some special positions. There is nothing wrong with having „jewish blood", it just explains some of his connections.

The **Nugen Hand Bank** was a CIA operation that laundered money, and did many illegal activities. Pat Boone was part of the Nugen Hand Bank scandal. Exactly how deep he was involved with the CIA's dirty dealing is unclear. Pat Boone's daughter Debbie Boone made a hit out of the song "You Light Up My Life", the words of the song were written by a woman who worshipped Lucifer and wrote the song to Lucifer.

Billy Graham has placed the emphasis in his Crusades on putting liberals, even Catholic priests, up on the platform with himself. When does Billy Graham ever spend time with solid devout Christians? Every time Billy Graham went to Moscow he tried to avoid the devout Christians of the unregistered churches who unwittingly tried unsuccessfully to meet with Graham. Instead, he would meet with the heads of the Orthodox Church, which, since all the changes in Russia , are now proven to have been KGB agents--although most of us had suspected that all along from the type of things they said and did. How naive can Christians get? Do they really think that the Illuminati is going to let a legitimately powerful anointed Christian evangelist have regular access to their people? Don't Christians realize that if he was a real threat--someone who might really bring one of the top elite to Christ that they would be assassinating him, not wining and dining him.

"BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS, WHICH COME TO YOU IN SHEEP CLOThING, BUT INWARDLY THEY ARE RAVENING WOLVES." Mt. 7:15 --"BEHOLD, I AM SENDING YOU FORTH AS LAMBS AMONG WOLVES." Lk. 10:3

The Apostle Paul warned Christian leaders,

"Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God , which he hath purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock." Acts 20:28-29

Bill Clinton, some senators, and Billy Graham's son Ned E. Graham invited the leaders of the Chinese house churches to a prayer breakfast in Washington D.C. Three delegates from the Three Self Patriotic Movement (TSPM) and 3 others from house churches were invited, Lin Xian-Gao, Li Tian-En, and Yuan Xiang-Chen. Rev. Ned Graham visited these Chinese in person to extend the U.S. government's invitation. Graham told the chinese Christians that the government would pick up the entire tab for the breakfast. In return the U.S. government wanted the Christians to promise not to speak to the American press or to any Americans comments that might hurt the image of the Red Chinese government. The Chinese government had promised the American government that they would guarantee safe entry and departure for these house church Christian leaders. Then after the meeting, they were invited to Billy Graham's house.

The Chinese Christians declined the invitation by Graham. Chinese pastor Lin said,

"If I went to the United States , I would tell the truth, not lies. To tell the truth would definitely be considered an act of damaging the image of the Chinese government which would create a pretext for the government to refuse my re-entry into China . But my commission from God is to serve Him faithfully in China only. Therefore, I choose to remain in China rather than to go abroad."

Ned Graham (Billy's son) tried to talk the Chinese into coming, "I know that you surely do love your enemies, why then can you not compromise..." The pastor answered, "Yes, we can forgive our enemies for persecuting or opposing us in their ignorance, but we can never love the false prophets or their heresy."' Ned also said, "It is a glorious and dignified thing to be invited by President Clinton. Many people seek it, but cannot obtain it.

Fortunately, the Chinese did not buy it. (This info and quote comes from China The Untold Story by The Voice of the Martyrs, Inc., 1995. pp. 25-31) BUILDING AN IMAGE There is another area of Billy Graham that we will only touch on. In one of Fritz's '92 newsletter, Billy Graham is quoted stating that he thought UFOs were angels of God. On either Jan. 28 or 29th (See Smyma, Feb. '93, p.3), Billy Graham was interviewed on television by David Frost. Billy Graham said he believed people in heaven are sent by God to other worlds to help them in redemption of life.

This is edging somewhat close to what the Mormons believe, that "Christians" (that is Mormons) will each receive their own planet to be god of. In another show, Graham said he wanted to evangelize other planets.

Fritz has repeatedly tried to warn Christians of the many demonic dangers associated with the entire UFO phenomena, and the Satanic Hierarchy's connection to UFOs. Billy Graham's idea that UFOs are good angels is a dangerous idea.

Billy Graham was given the contrived artificial image of being a great anti-Satanist. At the Chicago Crusade, 200 Satanists stood up in the crowds. Mayor Daily of Chicago then said from the stand, Billy we have 200 Satanists that want to disrupt your meeting shall I arrest them? What shall I do? And Billy said, No let's sing a song. The crowd sang a song and the Satanists left the stadium on their own. The whole affair was clearly staged and hokey, but Christians are very naive about Satanism and Billy Graham. This further confirmed to them that Billy Graham was a great anointed man of God.

First, hard core Satanists don't show their faces in public. Second, the Mayor of Chicago is not against the Satanists, he works with them, and there are reasons to suspect he is one. Third, Satanists, who do show themselves in public like Anton LaVey, want good publicity and would not carry out something like pretending to want to disrupt a Billy Graham crusade. Fourth, if a real threat had existed, Mayor Daily and the police wouldn't be asking Billy Graham what to do, they would be taking care of the problem. The police don't need to ask for permission to take care of troublemakers at the Crusade.

Christians accepted this episode at its face value. Those who did clearly show the common church goer's poor understanding of those who seek to control and destroy the church.

How Billy Graham Plays a Key Role in Reprogramming Monarch Slaves

Two different talkative Satanists told sources of mine about 2 different coven meetings here in Portland in the Summer of 1993 where the covens discussed the benefits that the Satanists were going to get from the Billy Graham Crusade. I know one of the benefits for the Satanists was that Monarch programees who had become Christians and had deactivated the effect of their mind-control programming were to be reprogrammed with Billy Graham' s help.

When Billy Graham arrived in town, someone on his Crusade staff had managed to find and send out invitations to many of the survivors of Satanic ritual abuse (SRA) in Portland to come to a special meeting to personally meet with Billy Graham. At this special meeting with SRA victims, Billy Graham personally began saying the buzz words to reactivate these people's programming, especially the Monarch survivors. (This comes from several witnesses.)

For a number of years now, the Billy Graham Crusade has been putting messages across the bottom of television screens that has activation codes for Monarch survivors. Those Monarch survivors who have become devote Christians to escape the nightmare of the Monarch mind-control are often not aware of the danger of watching the Billy Graham Crusade on television.

When people are activated, special people are in the area and they take the Monarch survivors to what are called **Near Death Trauma Centers**. These centers are used then to reprogram these poor people. There were five in this area, of which we located 2 and forced them to move their sites.

Religious fronts (denominations, individual churches and certain ministers) are used to hide criminal activity. Billy Graham, who is a programmed multiple himself, is exceptionally adept at managing his Monarch kittens. The drug money laundered through his crusades is carefully handled by many Monarch slaves working in shifts and teams, so that the whole scheme can not be uncovered by catching one person. Billy Graham runs big operations all over the world under the disguise of evangelism.

Another of the countless religious covers, that works with the Network's/Illuminati's drug activities involves the Mormon Bishop warehouses, which are used to store cocaine. Monarch slaves are involved with this. Different religious labels hide the same criminal Network. By the way, when giving the Patriarchal Blessing, the Mormon Patriarch if he has a Monarch slave will use hypnosis and triggers to convince the person what their future will be like. One can't say this is happening in every case, but it is very widespread for the Patriarch who give these blessings to be part of the Trauma-based mind-control operations.

Billy Graham also personally delivers messages to the Presidents for the Illuminati, such as when he arrived just prior to Bush's decision to launch Desert Storm. Sometimes the papers even spell out that Billy Graham serves as a message boy, for instance, when he delivered a message in April, 92 from the Pope to North Korea 's dictator Kim.

References

The following three books were very helpful to me in terms of documenting Billy Graham's activities. All three authors were interested in documenting what Billy Graham is really all about. It may sound strange that I say that, but sadly most of the books that touch on Billy Graham like America 's Hour of Decision Including a Life Story of Billy Graham are simply part of the deception process of the enemy. However, if anyone wants to know more about Billy Graham the following three books were very helpful for me to document Billy Graham's activities.

Billy Graham, A Parable of American Righteousness by Marshall Frady. Marshall Frady was a writer for Life and Newsweek. He has done an incredible amount of research into Billy Graham's life. He doesn't touch on the sinister side of Billy Graham, but by giving an honest report about Billy Graham he tears off the "Hollywood-type mask" so to speak that everyone has seen and believed. Marshall Frady simply wanted to tell the whole story of Billy Graham, good, bad or otherwise. He spent many hours interviewing Billy Graham and many other people involved in Billy Graham's life. When this book was read by a devout Christian, it totally devastated this person's media-built image of Billy Graham-- for instance, items like Billy Graham going to dinner with a prostitute and taking her home, Billy Graham walking past his wife and not recognizing her, & Billy Graham's New York Crusade refusing to allow street people into the crusade because they were dirty.

However, another Christian borrowed my copy of it, and said after looking at the book he didn't see anything wrong with Billy Graham in the book. But then he just read portions of the book. Still, unless one has spiritual discernment the book is probably not going to "blast a person out of the water," because it is a biography not an exposé. Until recently, this was the only really good biography that was available for Christians.

Many months before the Billy Graham 1993 Portland Crusade, the advertisements for the crusade and the crusade activity here in Portland began. Pilgrim Discount, which is one of the best Christian bookstores in the Portland area sells both used and new Christian books. They had a used copy of Billy Graham a Parable of American Righteousness. I watched for months to see if any Christians would buy the book. Tens of thousands of Christians got involved in the Billy Graham Crusade in the Portland area, but none had the interest to read the only biography of Billy Graham available.

Finally, just shortly before the Crusade, a teenage Christian from Washington who had been warned about Billy Graham and who was trying to keep from being forced to attend, bought the book on a trip from Washington . This incident shows what Americans know--and what they want to know about Billy Graham is shallow media-hype. A Christian radio show here had the author of Billy Graham A Prophet with Honor on to promote his book, which was done just when the Crusade was days away.

A Startling Exposure- Billy Graham and the Church of Rome by Ian R. K. Paisley. This is perhaps the best book as far as actual documentation. The book is probably rare, and not available. Ian R.K. Paisley has made it one of his projects of his life to expose Catholicism. Because Billy Graham works more with Catholics than Protestants Paisley as a concerned Christian obviously found himself learning about Billy Graham. Ian R.K. Paisley knows first hand how powerful Billy Graham and his establishment backers are. They have a colossal publication strength to discredit any critic of Billy Graham in whatever manner it takes -- even if it means outright lies and slander.

Billy Graham Reformer? Politician? Preacher? Prophet? A Chronological Record Compiled from Public Sources By the Church League of America 195 1-1982. This book is from Edgar Bundy Ministries. It is a collection of articles that have appeared in the public media on Billy Graham over a period of 31 years. Billy Graham is condemned by his own words and his own actions. If people only took a look at what Billy Graham is on public record saying it would startle them. Who is Billy Graham working for? Is he trying to build the Christian churches up, or is he trying to lay the foundation for a one-world religion? While some people may on first thought think that it is a great idea to have every one belong to the same religious structure, they need to reflect on the dangers inherent in one single religious body with all-encompassing power. The groundwork for such a dictatorial global religious body is already partially constructed, and is revealed in other writings of Fritz Springmeier.

How many people know that in 1955 and 1956 Billy Graham announced that he had a policy of sending people who come forward at his crusades to the church of their choice whether that church or synagogue is Catholic, Protestant or Jewish. For instance, the Protestant Church Life quotes Billy Graham in its 29 Sept 1956 issue, "Referring to the Billy Graham New York Crusade scheduled for May, 1957, Dr. Graham said: 'We're coming to New York not to clean it up, but to get people to dedicate themselves to God and to send them on to their own churches--Catholic, Protestant or Jewish."

There is one other book worth pointing out at this point. It was not a source book for my investigation, but I know the author, and the book came out recently, so it is likely still available. The book is **The Assimilation of Evangelist Billy Graham into the Roman Catholic Church by Erwin Wilson**. The address is Quebec Baptist Missions, Box 113 , Compton , Quebec , Canada , J0B 1L0.

It's s nice that men like Erwin Wilson are noticing Billy Graham's love affair with the Catholic Church. He picked up on Billy Graham's statement about the Pope, "Pope John Paul II has emerged as the greatest religious leader of the modern world and one of the greatest moral...leaders of this century." (The Saturday Evening Post, Feb, 1980.) However, several of these anti-Catholic ministries are rejecting the bigger picture. They have strongly resisted learning about mind-control and the exposure of the conspiracy in Be Wise As Serpents. Because of this, several of these Christian ministries to Catholics have lots of information about Billy Graham and his close workings with the Catholic Church, but little comprehension of how the Catholic Church fits into the bigger picture, and how the New World Order is actually coming about.

There has been widespread concern about Billy Graham among Christians. Because the controlled media don't report these concerns, people are not realizing the extent of the concerns which have been voiced. Even before the co-authors got involved in exposing the Illuminati and their control over religion and their plans for a New World Order, there has been a long history of concern by devout Christians over Billy Graham. There has been a growing dissatisfaction among conservative Christians towards Billy Graham.

The introduction to Erwin Wilson's book which is written by Dr. Bob Jones (Chancellor of Bob Jones University) provides an introduction to the concerns Christians have about the man who has been set up by the media and the money elite to be their greatest leader. We quote only a paragraph of what Dr. Bob Jones said, "Some of us who grieved over Graham's first downward steps toward compromise with apostasy and biblical unbelief knew that he was pursuing a direction from which there would be no turning back. While we grieved over him and prayed for him, we had to warn men against his ministry as we had warned Billy against his direction."

The first area is doctrinal concerns by devout Christians, who have been deceived that Billy Graham thinks as they do. Christians usually take for granted that Billy Graham is sound doctrinally. The following paragraph of beliefs of Billy Graham were documented in 1993 by Fritz Springmeier in his June '1993 newsletter, with its large document packet. Main line Christians would be shocked to find out what Billy Graham really believes and is on public record as supporting. This will help show non-Christians, who read this, that Billy Graham is not really the Christian he pretends to be. This is not to preach at non-Christian readers, for some of the non-Christian readers will agree with Billy Graham's stands. These views are written to show how a major Christian leader can have a false public image that has survived mainly because the full public record of Billy Graham's stands are keep low key. If we are big enough to look at the deceptions of our politicians and statesmen, we must be big enough to face the deceptions of our ministers.

Some of the areas that Billy Graham deviates from Scripture are as follows. He is on public record supporting homosexuality, abortion, his disbelief in a literal hell, his support and practice of infant baptism to save children, his support for the Catholic church's worship of Mary (yet he calls himself a Protestant). He has repeatedly praised infidels and apostates as great Christians. He actively supported the American government policy to fight the Vietnam War. He would not challenge the idea that the Bible is mythology, when directly questioned.

The deception doesn't stop with the Protestants, Catholic supporters have been kept in the dark about his abortion views. The deception goes way beyond Protestant, Catholic beliefs. As a programmed multiple who participates in Satanic Ritual, Billy Graham has deceived everyone.

The **second** area is concerns about his support for a One-World Church and a One-World-Government. This stems from l. Billy Graham 's public endorsements of the World Council of Churches and the National Council of Churches, 2. Billy Graham's consistent attendance at the World Council of Churches' meetings, 3. that Billy Graham has done more than anyone in the world to bring about the One-World-Harlot church, and he has done more than anyone to unite all the Christian groups into one organization, 4. Billy Graham's support of the Pope and the Catholic church which is the largest Christian religion and one of the pillars of the New Age One-World religious body being set up. 5. The support that the NCC and WCC gives him, 6. The support that the internationalists and globalists give Billy Graham.

Billy Graham was first asked to do his Portland Crusade in 1993 by the WCC/NCC representative in this area who is a homosexual, a New Ager, and leader of the ecumenical movement.

A **third** area is concern over the lack of depth that conversions at Billy Graham's crusades have. Some of the details on this are l. Only 2% of the people coming forward at a Crusade have never been Christians and are actually giving their life to Christ for the first time, and of these 80% fall away, 2. A great majority of people that come forward are sent to Catholic and extremely liberal Churches, extremely few are sent to solid Bible believing churches. In the Catholic Standard and Times, Thursday, July 16, 1992, p. 10, this Catholic paper reported that 1,900 Catholics responded to Billy Graham's call to make decisions for Christ in the Philadelphia Crusade and were referred to about 250 parishes. 3. People that come forward are sent even to Jewish synagogues and New Age churches., 4. Converts are given the impression that Christ wants decisions for him, rather than that Christ wants disciples. 5. The people attending the crusades are almost all Christians, due to the high numbers of Christian counselors and the high number of church people which are always intentionally bussed in, (Frady exposes this, and in 1992 a writer of the Williamette Week did a major story for the magazine detailing how she had searched the entire week at the Billy Graham Crusade for an unsaved person and failed to find a single non-Christian. There were a few, but so few she didn't find any. William ette Week, Oct. 1,1992 .) 6. Most decisions at the crusades are for trivial things such as to stop smoking.

Interestingly, Christians with discernment spoke about how hurting the churches were after the Billy Graham Crusade here in Portland . They had been made wild promises of success, they were fleeced of their money, and then given a lukewarm spiritual boost. Their comments reminded me of this warning to Billy Graham clear back in the 1950s as to how he was ruining the harvest field. Part of Satan's Planetary control is through religious leaders.

Christians have been conditioned to believe that Billy Graham is a great prophet of God by the establishment media, who have told us for years that Billy Graham was the most respected man in America . The percentages that the controlled Media have reported for Billy Graham's popularity may have been inflated. There are several studies that show how the establishment uses polls dishonestly to manipulate thinking. The establishment media is able to create ideas so firmly within the mind of the public that it becomes almost impossible to deprogram people. What people see on T.V. becomes what you believe. The T.V. image becomes real.

What actually happens at a crusade is far different from the media image. In Scotland for instance, a poll was taken of church membership one month before the Billy Graham Scotland Crusade, and two months after the Crusade. Church membership had actually declined substantially. So after spending millions of the Christians' dollars, Billy Graham had not even helped the church attendance of the Scottish churches. When Billy Graham holds his crusades, the churches in the area sponsor the crusade. In Poland , in a nation 95% catholic, the churches that sponsored his crusade in Warsaw were Catholic churches and when people went forward they were sent to Catholic churches. Yet, when the mass media report on Crusades, it is made to sound like thousands of people became new Christians.

Many of the devout Christians that have supported Billy Graham haven't thought through what is really going on at the crusades. They have been so caught up with the media image that they are not able to critically comprehend that the crusades are really major spiritual disasters. The book for counselors at the Billy Graham Crusade here in Portland specifically stated that only Billy Graham was allowed to proselytize, that the crusade counselors were forbidden to proselytize anyone at any time during the crusade, or else they would lose their Crusade badge as a counselor. (See these instructions in The Billy Graham Christian Life & Witness Course, Minneapolis, MN: Billy Graham Evangelistic Association, p. 47, Instructions A.6.) But thousands of the Christians in Portland who became counselors for the '92 Crusade never gave it a second thought that only Billy Graham was allowed to proselytize, because they trusted Billy Graham.

Money that could have gone to helping victims of mind-control went toward superficial decisions for Christ. Money that could have gone to doing some serious damage to the evil, has gone for Madison avenue hype and for big shows. On top of this, the large sums that are spent on the Billy Graham Crusades serve as a cover for the Networks money laundering that they do through Graham's Crusade using a series of Monarch slaves in a complex series of money drop offs.

A **fourth** area is concern over his methodology. A body language expert says that Billy Graham's talks are simply canned. They are simply well-rehearsed canned-body movements and not coming from the heart. His crusade uses Madison-Avenue sales techniques instead of traditional scriptural methods to get converts. Billy Graham crusades always spend great sums of money for bill boards promoting Billy Graham and bumper stickers promoting Billy Graham, the end result is that Billy Graham's name is usually promoted millions of times more often than Jesus Christ. Christianity is consistently watered down and identified with the world and its ways. And a great deal of boasting is done about numbers of decisions instead of real meaningful discipleship.

A **fifth** area is concern over Billy Graham acceptance of Communism. Although many people feel communism is dead, this area is still relevant. If you think communism is dead go live in North Korea , where Billy Graham went in 1992 full of praise for North Korea . See Christianity Today, May 18, 1992 , p.55. (By the way, Billy Graham & family have sat on the board of Christianity Today, and still control it, so it wouldn't misquote him.) l. Billy Graham has repeatedly over international mass media claimed that there was no religious persecution under the communists, 2. Billy Graham has praised Mao-Tse-Tung's principles, 3. Graham has praised communist leaders on numerous occasions, 4. Dyed-in-the-wool communists who have been the ones giving orders to torture Christians for some reason feel comfortable spending time talking to Billy Graham.

The Actual Heritage and Name of Billy Graham

There is a connection between Marxism and a group of Satanists called Frankists. One of the strongest satanic cults to take control over the Jewish population was called Sabbatianism. Jakob Frank assumed the role of leader of this group, and afterward this brand of Satanism was called Frankism. (Freud's sexually-obsessed theories came from Frankism.) Frank taught his followers to convert to another religion and hide behind that religion to practice their Satanism. (One of several book on the subject of Frankism is The Contemporary Faces of Satan by Ratibor-Ray M. Jurjevich.)

Billy Graham's family when they originally came over to this nation were of the Frank family which is related to Jakob Frank. After coming over to this nation, they changed their name to Graham which is a Scottish name. Two groups of people who are over represented in the power structure over the last 200 years are Scots and cabalistic satanic "jews." Obviously, not all Scotsmen nor jews are involved in the NWO. Several other researchers independently discovered that Billy Graham's heritage was the jewish Frank family.

However, Fritz was beginning to suspect that there must be some kind of Jewish blood in Billy Graham's heritage, because of the all the things he would stumble upon. For instance, the intimate connections Graham had with Jewish leaders and Jewish Christian ministries. And his assurances to them that they are God's chosen people, a special group. Graham privately told them, that because they are a special chosen group they don't need to come to Christ. (Fritz discovered all this by accident reading Jewish literature.)

Further, the paper called "The C-9 Report For internal use only" states on page 11 that Billy Graham's daughters have lived in Israel , and that Billy Graham 's son fought with the Israeli army in the Six-Day War.

In the Be Wise As Serpents book, chapter 2.1, "The Jewish author Gerald S. Strober in his book American Jews Community in Crisis, p. 110 states that after a resolution in Feb. 1973 at Pittsburgh by the NCC failed to declare the NCC against converting the Jews, that Billy Graham announced the following day a statement that God had a special place for the Jews and rejected coercive evangelistic efforts."

Privately, Graham has assured Jewish leaders he is against converting the Jews to Christianity. Strober also informs his readers (p. 111) that many Christian organizations that are "Jewish Missions" take their marching orders from Billy Graham. This confirms numerous reports..." So Strober in effect is saying don't worry Graham is with us, and he controls most of the Christian organizations that are supposedly missions to evangelize us. Messianic Jewish groups are strongly pro-Billy Graham. Some of these groups have gained in size and then strangely gone back into Judaism. That kind of thing has been happening here in Portland , not to mention other localities. Now it is clearer why Jews coming forward at Crusades have often been and are being referred by the Crusade people to Reformed Jewish synagogues.

How Billy Graham is a 33° Mason.

This is an important issue, however, even if Billy Graham were not a 33° Mason, there are many things that he is doing that should warn Christians not to support him. There have been a number of people in casual conversation who have mentioned Billy Graham being a 33° Mason, for instance a CIA leader, a NSA person who is against the NWO, and various Masons.

These accidental revelations are what can be considered casual evidence, in that it is accidentally heard. Some of the people who have read Fritz's Be Wise As Serpents book have been experiencing validation of what was written on Billy Graham by their own casual contacts with people. These types of encounters are very meaningful to the people who experience them, but their significance is hard to communicate to others.

Hopefully, readers of this, who are truth seekers, will have their own casual-evidence-validation experience. One piece of casual evidence came from a Shriner Clown. It turns out the only clowns who were chosen to perform for the Billy Graham 1993 Portland Crusade were Shriner Clowns. There were non-Masonic clowns available, even some Christian clowns, but the masons were the only ones Graham allowed to perform for him.

Various people, who have worked in the system for the Illuminati, such as an ex-witch who is now a Christian, an ex-33° Mason now a Christian, and a CFR's person also now a Christian, all testify that Billy Graham is a 33° Freemason. A woman and a man who are ex-Satanists and now Christians also have mentioned about Billy Graham's Masonic membership. (One has to understand that there is a close working relationship between the Lodge and the Illuminati.)

To progress up the ranks in Satanism, they will require you to go through Freemasonry. Freemasonry then teaches people about the symbology of the mystery religions. The lodges bring in female Monarch slaves for some of their Egyptian sexual-magic rituals. If the reader were to get up in the morning and your mother, sister, and brother were in the kitchen and said that your mother had just drank a cup of coffee, you would be able to tell from their faces if they were telling the truth, and you would know that your mother had drank a cup of coffee. This is the way it is for us. We know these witnesses know the truth, and we know they are not making it up. But if people don't believe that, then they need to go scrounge up their own witnesses, and risk their own hide in doing the contacting. The material we presented here is not frivolous work. As pearls of value, we hope that this research is not taken and allowed to become pearls given to swine.

Because Billy Graham is such a key person for the Illuminati and the Satanic plan to bring in the Anti-Christ and the One-World-Religion, key parts of Graham's life have been intentionally shrouded, When he joined the Masonic lodge c. 1948, they intentionally kept his membership more secret than others. Why? They are secret about their membership in general, but even more so if the person is a key Illuminatus and a big key to their religious control.

This is why they have kept the membership of Charles T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower Society quiet. This is why they keep the memberships of the Mormon prophets secret. It has been a consistent pattern by the Masonic Lodge to keep these key people's membership very quiet. It would be much easier if we had a membership certificate, but for people who don't want to believe no amount of evidence would suffice.

In terms of a paper trail we have the following: Billy Graham's books consistently refer to basically only Masons. Billy Graham endorsed the Masonic DeMolay program for youth as God's work. This endorsement by Billy Graham is in a Masonic book that is used to educate people about "the craft" (that means Freemasonry). That book is The Clergy and the Craft and it says that the people who are quoted in it are Masons. (See Haggard, Forrest D. Transactions Missouri Lodge of Research, Vol. No. 27, The Clergy and the Craft, p. 127. where Graham endorses the Masonic youth program.)

In terms of witnesses who have put what they have witnessed in writing we have the following: Jim Shaw, ex-33° Mason -- the highest ranking Freemason to defect to Christianity, writes about Billy Graham being at his 33° initiation ceremony. Huntington House refused to print his book co-authored with Tom McKenney unless they took out Billy Graham's name on pg. 104, and substituted a general description. (See The Deadly Deception, p. 104-105.) Only Freemasons are allowed to attend these initiations. (See The New Age, the official organ of The Supreme Council 33°. Wash. , D.C., October 1961, p. 30.) Some Christians have tried every thing in their mind to get around Jim Shaw's testimony. And the Masonic Lodge are now claiming that he wasn't a 33° Freemason. There is no doubt that he was a 33° Mason. What we are seeing is how important it is to the Illuminati to keep Billy Graham's membership secret.

Originally, Dr. Morey who wrote a book on Freemasonry told me over the phone that Billy Graham was a 33° Freemason and that he had held his membership file in his hand in the library of the House of the Temple , which is where the Supreme Council of the 33° has their headquarters. However, now he denies it and says that he only was told by the librarians that the file existed, but that he didn't examine the membership file. He wrote a letter to Christian News to the editor which was printed. At least, his letter to the editor of Christian News says that the Scottish Rite have a Billy Graham file. Fritz stands by his original statements about what Dr. Morey said, even though he has gone back on his original story and is getting people to think Fritz somehow invented what he told me.

There are a great many things that are suspicious about Dr. Morey. His book on Freemasonry claims that Freemasonry started out a Christian organization. His book was printed by a company that uses the Knights Templar logo as their company logo, and whose company head is most likely a Freemason. If it looks like a duck, quacks like a duck, and walks like a duck--what do you think it is? Long before I actually knew Billy Graham was a 33° Freemason, I felt that was the "most likely" explanation for what I was learning of him. What caused me to think that way? Everything about the man, just shouted Freemason. The way he talks, who he has as friends, etc. etc. This article is not capable of going into depth about small nuances and details, but suffice it to say that the Masons know how to broadcast to other Masons that they are a Mason.

It should be pointed out some of the key people for Billy Graham's staff have been Freemasons. Let's look at a few of the key people helping Billy Graham:

William M. Watson--DIRECTOR OF THE BILLY GRAHAM EVANGELISTIC ASSOCIATION, he is a Freemason, and he is also President of Occidental Petroleum Corporation. Chairman of Occidental was Armand Hammer. Watson is also a member of the development council of the Masonic run Baylor University . Baylor University has participated in the mind-control, (See also the expose of Baylor University in Be Wise As Serpents.) He also was a member of the advisory council to the Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary in Ft. Worth which had at least three Freemasons on its board of trustees, and likely more.

David M. McConnell--DIRECTOR OF THE BILLY GRAHAM EVANGELISTIC ASSOCIATION, he is a Freemason, He was also U.S. ambassador to the United Nations (1968-69), business associate with Illuminatus

Charles Gambrell, in Belk Stores of Charlotte, North Carolina.

Arthur Lee Malory--CO-CHAIRMAN of the BILLY GRAHAM CRUSADE Advisory Committee for the 1973 St. Louis Crusade -- 32° Freemason, deacon in the So. Bapt. Church .

Who are some of the primary ministers that had worked with 33° Freemason Billy Graham over the years? Billy Graham has helped set up other 33° Masons in ministry. Billy Graham has placed his stamp of approval on almost every well-known apostate Christian out there. When Billy Graham had a crusade in Japan , the Japanese minister that he had up on the platform was a well-known extremely liberal Christian. A conservative Japanese was shocked. Billy Graham is also endorsing many of the books, and ministries of these apostates.

Some of the three biggest ministers in the protestant world, Robert Schuller, Norman Vincent Peale, and Oral Roberts are all 33° Masonic brothers of 33° Freemason Billy Graham. (See Roberts, Oral. Miracle of Seed Faith, p.9.) Billy Graham has helped each of these brothers with their ministries.

Robert Schuller taught principles of church growth to Unity School in Kansas City . A Christian, who used to be on staff there, said that Robert Schuller was fully aware that Luciferian Initiations were going on at the school and that he didn't care. Robert Schuller, 33° Freemason, was helped into ministry by Billy Graham. Schuller also participates in the Monarch program and is also sexually serviced by Monarch slaves. Norman Vincent Peale's form of Christianity called positive thinking is actually only white witchcraft with different names. Peale simply is a "Christian" witch.

Norman Vincent Peale, 33° Freemason, his church receive the bulk of people who came forward at the NY Crusade. Norman Vincent Peale is a 6° Illuminatus (Pilgrim Society), and a 33° Freemason. In the magazine Psychic Magazine of San Francisco Peale says of occultist Kreskin, All he's doing is dramatizing what I've been preaching in my writing for years. Norman Vincent Peale controls the approx. $200 million Presbyterian Minister's Fund. He celebrated the 25th anniversary of the United Nations. He was the keynote speaker at the birthday of the late Mormon prophet Spencer W. Kimball (a secret Mason). Peale praised Kimball as a true prophet of God, and a great man of God. Peale practices witchcraft, and palms it off on unsuspecting Christians under different terminology. The false unity movement which is so strong today, wants to unite the devout Christian with the likes of Norman Vincent Peale. Peale is a good friend of Billy Graham, and Billy Graham referred the largest number of new converts of the NY Billy Graham Crusade to Peale's church.

Oral Roberts, 33° Freemason, helped into ministry by his Masonic brother Billy Graham. Oral Roberts has been seen by witnesses participating in SRA and Mind-control. Oral Roberts University and the charismatic movement is another important religious front. The Charismatic movement has been infiltrated by multiples since day-one. The history of the infiltration is extensive. Oral Roberts had Cherokee blood. According to some things that Oral Roberts has said, some Christians think that he received his healing powers from an old Indian who healed him through Indian shamanism when Oral was young. At times, Oral does use the same methods that spirit mediums use to heal with. According to slaves who have been deprogrammed, they were in satanic rituals with Oral Roberts. Christian ministers, who have participated in his ministry are saying that they have seen massive swindle in his healing ministry. His university is being used as a programming center. His basketball team at one time had Monarch slaves playing on it. We do not know if they still do.

Under the prayer tower is one of the programming sites. Billy Graham, a handler himself, helped launch Oral Roberts University , and is a friend of Oral Roberts. From the Illuminati's point of view Tulsa is the Guardian City of Apollo. The City of Faith is to be the center for healing from AEsculapius, a demon related to Apollo.

While portraying themselves as Christians, infiltrators within the charismatic movement are carrying out satanic rituals to get demonic healing powers. Tulsa is one of, if the main center for the campaign to infiltrate Christianity via the Charismatic/Pentecostal movement with programmed multiples.

G. Bromiey Oxnam, 33° Freemason, was head of the FCC churches, supportive friend of Billy Graham, G. Bromley Oxnam has a long history to him of working for the elite, interested readers can pick up his story in Be Wise As Serpents in the chapter that goes into the details about how the Christian churches were organized by the FCC and WCC for the Illuminati.

The NWO is infiltrating the churches via the Earth Stewardship Movement. An attempt was made at Rio de Janeiro to get an Earth Charter but there wasn't enough time, their were lots of N.O.G. delegates and just in general lots of people to coordinate (4,000 attended). Another Earth Summit was promised, but instead they decided at the end of Sept/Oct of '95 to have a State of the World Forum to be held by/sponsored by the Gorbachev Foundation at the Presidio, CA. The ex-head of the KGB, Gorbachev is now headquartered in the Presideo, a major mind-control programming site. Christian basher Ted Turner was the chairman of the conference. The cost was $5,000 per person and the invitations went out to only select people. There were 100 handpicked politicians who received invitations, along with Billy Graham and Mother Teresa. This was coordinated with the 50th anniversary of the UN which was being celebrated all over the world.

FLEECING THE SHEEP

The charismatic movement claims to have the Holy Spirit in a special way, however, some seem to be lacking in all discernment that the Holy Spirit would give. There are several books exposing the big name Charismatic ministers. One is written by an ex-charismatic Assembly of God minister. He shows a picture in his book of an Assembly of God flier promoting the "Testimony of J. Edgar Hoover." Yes, the Assembly of God promoted the "testimony" of J. Edgar Hoover, while he was known to be a power hungry individual who practiced homosexuality. It was this type of hype that caused this minister to grow disillusioned with the charismatic movement's so called spirituality.

Recently, the spiritual discernment of Billy Graham and many other big time ministries was exposed when these big Christian ministries were conned out of $550 million dollars. Billy Graham introduced John G. Bennett to thousands of people at a recent Billy Graham Crusade in Philadelphia in 1992. John Bennett gave his testimony at the crusade. Because Billy Graham, John Templeton, and Laurance Rockefeller were apparently supportive of John G. Bennett, big time Christian ministries "trusted" him. John told many of the big Christian ministries that if they gave him millions of dollars, for every million he received he would give them two million back. Many of the big Christian ministries gave Bennett money--in fact he collected $550 million (which he ran off with) from ministries such as Pat Robertson's, Bill Bright's, Chuck Colson's, Luis Palau's, Westminster Theological Seminary, Wheaton College , the Salvation Army and many others.

The reader may have heard of this New Era Foundation scam. That's what it was. Bennett told these "Christian" leaders "Give New Era one million dollars and we'll give you back two million." The donations of hard earned money by many innocent Christian believers were lost. However, the Christian believers are partially responsible because the church has refused to clean house of wolves that set in their pulpits. For instance, when Billy Graham came to the Portland area all the various denominations from the most liberal to the most conservative supported him. Only about a dozen churches did not get involved and only one church actively tried to expose Billy Graham--even though there has been a mass of documentation exposing Billy Graham as a wolf for 30 years.

When the church refuses to follow God's Word and supports these men--then they must take some of the blame when these men give their millions of hard earned dollars away to a con artist.

Inadequate Reactions

When people have been warned about Billy Graham, one of the common responses is for people to call up the Billy Graham crusade staff. If I ask a biologist a question about biology I can expect to get a credible answer. If I ask a mother about her son I can expect to get a credible answer. But how in the world can someone call up the Billy Graham Crusade staff and expect to get a credible answer to the question "Is Billy Graham a Mason?" The person that answers the phone is likely a secretary, someone who knows Billy Graham no more than the janitor. What does that person know about the Freemasons?

Because the Freemasons are a secret society, in general, there are only two basic categories of people--people involved with Freemasonry, and they certainly know what's going on in it but they have taken blood oaths on penalty of death not to talk about it, and those who aren't involved with Freemasonry and don't know anything about it. There are only a few people who are not masons, who are informed about the Masons.

The answer of some secretary over the phone to the question, "Is Billy Graham a Freemason?" is of little value, because the secretary or other staff member has not had the opportunity to get reliable information. This is from the standpoint of getting a reliable witness, calling some secretary or staff member is simply not a credible response to all the documentation. No court would view a secretary of a large organization as an expert witness qualified to settle such a dispute.

The second catch is that such witnesses are not reasonably unbiased. It is expected that Billy Graham's staff would front for him any questions that could expose him to bad publicity. This last comment is not speculation. There is proof that Billy Graham's staff has consistently lied over the years to prevent negative publicity about Billy Graham.

When Richard Nixon met with his political buddies to decide who to have run with him, the person he asked first in the smoke-filled room was Billy Graham. I have read the account of this is more than one place, but I will quote Marshall Frady's description of when Billy Graham was asked who he thought should run with Nixon as Nixon's vice-presidential running mate. Billy Graham chose 33° Masonic brother (then only 32°) Mark Hatfield.

Here is Frady's description: "His assimilation into the Nixon presidency had already been well underway, in fact, at that convention in Miami when, after Nixon's nomination, Graham wound up sitting in Nixon's penthouse suite among the smoggy late-night deliberations over Nixon's vice-presidential selection: Graham himself, whatever initial uncertainty he might have felt to find himself in such a political locker-room session, soon pitched into the proceedings with his own effusive recommendation of Mark Hatfield: "He's a great Christian leader. He's almost a clergyman. He's been an educator, and he's taken a more liberal stand on most issues than you, and I think the ticket needs that kind of balance."

In 1992, Mark Hatfield, along with Prince Hall Freemason Jessie Jackson both were on television in July of last year defending Billy Graham's actions. Mark Hatfield, according to a deprogrammed slave has been a user of Monarch sexual slaves. NY's Union Seminary is controlled and funded by the Rockefellers. President of Union Seminary was Dr. Henry Van Dusen. Billy Graham made him a prominent person in his crusade and said he was a "classic example" of a mass evangelism conversion. If that is a good example of Graham's conversions, we Christians should shudder.

It is no coincidence that the Southern Baptists of which Billy Graham is a member, is controlled by the Freemasons. Brook Hays, Pres, of the So. Bapt. Convention was a high ranking Freemason as well as part of the CFR. None of the So. Bapt. Convention's Presidents have opposed Freemasonry. Pres. Bill Clinton, a slave handler, is a member of the Emmanuel Baptist Church which is a Southern Baptist Church in Little Rock , Ark. The late Bill Moyers who promoted the Mystery Religions was a Southern Baptist. Moyers went to the SW Baptist Theological Seminary, the same school run by one of Billy Graham's staff directors. John Buchanan is another Southern Baptist. John Buchanan went to a So. Bapt. Seminary, and then worked as a front man for People for the American Way started by Jewish Norman Lear, an anti-Christian. People might be shocked to learn of some of the New Age teachings and New Age teachers that have been allowed into the Southern Baptist churches. The Southern Baptist youth program is based on Masonic ideas and is very Masonic in its ritual.

Summary

The reader is thanked for wading through a lot of difficult material. The reader can see why Billy Graham may well be the greatest deception that has ever been successfully pulled off. But as Abraham Lincoln said, "You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but not all of the people all of the time." Ever since the early 1950s, there have been Christians exposing Billy Graham. But the control of the Christian media and the Christian seminaries is far more extensive than most people realize. The Be Wise As Serpents book diagrams out how the Christian religious denominations are being controlled, and how the Masons and Illuminati-connected administrators and trustees have control of most of the Seminaries. Billy Graham without a doubt works directly for the Satanic hierarchy. But a rational and fair appraisal of what the man is, and what damage he has done to Christianity will probably not be given much of a chance. Nobody, no matter who they are is going to fool Christ. There will be a real evaluation done on judgment day and when that day comes Christ said, "MANY WILL SAY TO ME IN THAT DAY, LORD, LORD, HAVE WE NOT PROPHESIED IN YOUR NAME, CAST OUT DEMONS IN YOUR NAME, AND DONE MANY

WONDERS IN YOUR NAME? And then I will declare to them, I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!" Mt 7:22-23

The Top Secret Amish Front (And Hutterites)

It will probably assist the reader to know that both of the authors have first hand experience with the following information about the Amish. Fritz was Amish for several years as an Amish church member in church districts in Kansas , Missouri , and Illinois . He has also visited numerous Amish settlements in the U.S. & Canada , and lived/worked with the horse and buggy Old Order Mennonites (not to be confused with the Old Order Amish Mennonites) in Ontario Canada for half a year.

He has a manuscript of a book that he wrote about the Old Order Amish Mennonites, and has gone so far as to inquire with publishers like National Geographic if they would like some of his material. He has also attended a variety of Mennonite churches, including Church of God in Christ, Menn. (Holdeman's), Charismatic Mennonite, Conserv. Menn. and Beachy Amish churches across the U.S.

He also knows first-hand that Illuminati slaves, some of who are programmers, have been infiltrated by the Illuminati into Mennonite churches. Perhaps what may come across as the strangest religious front, and it is certainly one of the biggest secrets of the intelligence agencies is their use of the Old Order Amish Mennonites as a front. The Amish are the most pacifistic people, so the Illuminati/intelligence agencies have placed some of their best programmed assassins behind the front of being Amish. The front is real--they are Amish, well, many of them, some were Illuminati children switched at birth to give the programmers better bloodlines to work from.

Some Amish women in cult families have let the Illuminati impregnate them with stronger bloodlines. Many Nazi bloodlines were hidden after WW II under the Mennonite/Amish cover. The Mennonites and some of the more progressive Amish adopt many children. The Amish in Missouri (Jamestown), Kansas (south of Hutchison), and Oklahoma (Guthrie , OK), Kentucky , Ohio (Holmes Co., OH), and Pennsylvania (Lancaster , PA) have been involved in selling their children to the Illuminati.

When the Illuminati would buy a child they would send in one of their own midwives to help with the birth and retrieve the child. Generally, the Amish would sell their children when they realized they were going to have twins. One would be given to the cult, and one would be kept by the Amish parents. Because these children are born outside of the system, and have no birth certificates, they made excellent children to use in porn. They also can be used as expendable children to use in porn. They were often blond haired and blue eyed. The Amish women were not allowed to use birth control, it was forbidden by the church, and they were not allowed to have an abortion, and it was their duty to have sex with their husbands. It is possible that some parents sold their children just to get out of the responsibility of having another child.

The Amish farms in Kansas and Oklahoma and in the border states like Missouri and Kentucky are mechanized with tractors, and they don't need the large families that the Amish in other places need. Due to the strong legalism that pervades their church, some have tried to get around the tight spot that the rules place them in by selling a few unnoticed children.

However, there is an active witchcraft practicing occult group within the Amish which is like a box within a box within a box. It is very secret. There are many ways of describing what is going on with the Amish. Let's describe quickly in half a page (it could be a book in itself) what a deep look at the spiritual dynamics of what is going on with their communities.

The rise of Satanism within their ranks is simply a natural outgrowth of the spiritual dynamics. There were two trees in the Garden of Eden, one was the Tree of Life and one was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The first meant being transformed by the Creator who made them into the image of the Spirit of God and receiving spiritual life, but the other tree was performance.

The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil (religion) includes both Law (good) and license (evil). As soon as a group gets legalistic, they fall from grace. They then separate themselves by their performance and say in effect "look at what we're doing" which is a form of pride. God resists the proud, so they through a number of spiritual dynamics lose fellowship with God. This means they must cling to their legalistic traditions even more, because a live relationship with God is gone. (Bible Studies are forbidden by most Amish church distrists, and they don't get new revelation from God, they still are working off of the revelations of the 1600s, when they were traumatized and quit growing. When they split from the rest of the Mennonites, they were like a child alter split which never grows up.)

When a group gets legalism, they also get license, because the two grow from the same tree. Every Amish community has two large groups--the legalistic ones and the license ones. The young people are even split this way. In Lancaster County , the "Groffies" is the nickname of the large license group of young people who fornicate and drink. There is a smaller group of legalistic conservative young people too, who are at the other end of the spectrum. There is one group (gang might be a more appropriate name) called Jamborees who are an unruly and destructive collection of angry wild young people. The Bishops in Lancaster Co. meet twice yearly to keep this large settlement of opposites together. A lot of compromise and looking the other way is done for the sake of peace. "Peace" at any price is the name of the game. Even before a prayer is said in church the minister calls out, "Wenn mer eenich sin, wella mer bete." This translates, "If we are in one accord, then let us pray." Because peace is so important, they are out of balance in getting it. They place peace far above truth. In order to have the appearance that everything is well, secrecy pervades everything like the air one breathes. Because their whole culture is secret, children raised in it aren't aware of how strong it is, it is simply a way of life, like it is for the Illuminati.

Legalism values conformity. Conformity prefers robotic obedience over understanding. In fact, one Bishop told Fritz, co-author of this book, "We don't want our young folks to understand why they do what they do, we only want obedience. Understanding is dangerous." Does the reader begin to see how the Amish make both the perfect setting for Monarch Mind-Control, and the perfect cover. The Amish are a very secret group. During their early history they suffered severe persecution. Their culture teaches them to suffer in silence, which today helps their Satanic abusers infiltrate their culture.

In the past in Europe , when the Catholic or Protestant church caught them they were tortured to death. They were hunted as animals and treated worse than animals when caught. This was the trauma, that Satan did to them, and the lie that was then handed them was that if they would cloister themselves secretly in the New World away from everyone else, they would be safe. The Amish have shut out from outsiders the true flavor of their culture and beliefs. They are silent about their problems. They tell themselves that outsiders couldn't possibly be interested in their affairs.

The Amish themselves are very divided from each other. The divisions between Amish groups is called Zwietract. Zwietract can cover anything from a mild aloofness to a full fledged shunning (called the Meidung). The Amish aren't in general qualified to tell outsiders much in detail about their own heritage, or religion because they are so isolated from the other Amish settlements and have been raised in such an anti-intellectual culture. Most Amish are content to know that the way they do things "was always done this way" and that their elders and forefathers were gifted men who examined things very closely. Their social norms are not intellectually questioned by most Amish, but then American society has been very isolationist in the world and few Americans question their society & norms.

Americans even rebel in the prescribed fashion, whatever the elite tell society is the "in" "cool" "hot" stylish way to do things. The Amish are similar to the Mid-east culture in that they have a very indirect approach to saying things. They do not consider it proper to speak with a negative connotation about anybody. They also instinctively give pat answers to outsiders to blunt questions. These pat answers border on being rigid, prejudiced, and simple. They serve the purpose to deter curiosity. The early Amish leaders were ex-Catholic priests, but most of the people were peasants who had little formal schooling, had little Bible knowledge, and came from southern Germany and the Rheinland where witchcraft was practiced by the common people.

The Spirit of Witchcraft never left the Amish. It has always been with them. The folk witchcraft is called Brauche, and the craft is kept secret by old men who pass the incantations down in secret. When the Amish moved to Pennsylvania , they moved in next door to Rosicrucians. When the Rosicrucian settlements fell apart they joined the Mennonites, thus bringing their hermetic magic along with them.

Somewhere within the Amish were some families that were under cover for the Jesuits, and were sent in as spies long ago because they were corrupt. These families have been generational Satanists, which practice pedophilia and other crimes in the safety of their isolation. They were placed within the Amish to help the Catholic church destroy the Amish.

In Europe that happened under Hitler, when all the Old Order Amish were arrested in 1938 and wiped out of Germany. Prior to WW II, the Nazi's part of the Illuminati sent over a number of programmed multiples which set up an unnamed cult in upstate New York . This cult was to help Hitler take power in the U.S. when the Nazi's won the war. They did not win the war, but 60 years later this Satanic cult still operates. Now 2nd and 3rd generation programmed multiples are now part of this cult.

Somehow this Illuminati mission coordinates with the Illuminati project to get Hitler's bloodline hidden among the Amish, although the authors are aware of Hitler's descendants being in Oregon , and Washington as well as Pennsylvania . One of them in Portland , Oregon works for the Federal government. Lancaster County is sometimes referred to as the mother church. This was one of the original counties which the Amish settled in when they first came over to the New World . William Penn invited Rosicrucians, Amish, and other dissident religious groups to Pennsylvania .

The Satanic covens in Lancaster County , PA consist of members from Amish, Mennonite and Brethren churches. They are not simply all Amish. Lancaster County 's Amish will fellowship will all the approximately 200 other settlements of Amish around the country. What is a peculiar phenomena, is that many churches that do not fellowship with one another, will still maintain "communion" with Lancaster out of respect for place in Amish history. However, Lancaster County has some of the most immoral reprobate Amish that there could be. All this is hidden very well from the thousands of tourists, due to the secrecy of the Amish.

The Amish do not often pay taxes, do not pay social security because they are exempt from the Social Security program, and send many of their children to Amish schools. They are truly a separate society which maintains rigid secrecy. If you were the New World Order or the Illuminati where would you want to hide your assassins? The safest place is inside of the most pacifist group in the world, the Amish. Monarch mind-controlled slaves are being created out of Amish children.

During W.W. II, Amish conscientious objectors were forced by the government to do alternate public service in lieu of military service. This was known as Civilian Public Service. Amish & Mennonite conscientious objectors were placed into Mental Hospitals to help. They served at Allentown State Hosp., Allentown, PA; Cantonsville State Hosp., Cantonsville, MD; Cleveland State Hosp., Cleveland, OH; Delaware State Hosp., Parnhurst, DL; Denver State Hosp., Denver, CO; Greystone Park State Hosp., Greystone Park, NJ; Harrisburg State Hosp., Harrisburg, PA; Hudson River State Hosp., Poughkeepsie, NY; Kalamazoo State Hosp., Kalamazoo, MI; Lima State Hosp., Lima, OH; Livermore State VA Hosp., Livermore, CA; Macedonia State Hosp., Macedonia, OH; Marlboro State Hosp., Marlboro, NJ; Mt. Pleasant State Hosp., Mt. Pleasant, 10; Norristown State Hosp., Norristown, PA; Provo State Hosp., Provo, UT; Rhode Is. State Hosp., Howard, RI; Roseburg VA State Hosp., Roseburg, OR; Staunton State Hosp., Staunton, VA; Tiffin State Hosp., Tiffin, OH; Wernersville State Hosp., Wernersville, PA; Ypsilanti State Hosp., Ypsilanti, MI.

The author, Fritz, believes that the complete story of how the Illuminati got a secret foothold into the Amish community lies in what happened in mental hospitals to the anxious-to-please, compliant, innocent Amish boys, who were assigned to these mental hospitals. Many people do not realize that during W.W. I, several Mennonite/Hutterite conscientious objectors were tortured to death by our government. Not a pretty picture when you find out how sadistic our government was willing to be toward its own citizens. Not only did the Amish boys go to lots of mental hospitals during W.W. II, but all of the religious groups that participated in the conscientious objector service (called Civilian Public Service) contributed boys to the Office of Scientific Research & Development (part of the Army), which was still using these boys for experiments until Dec. 31, 1946.

What kinds of "experiments" were the Amish boys, who were offered up as guinea pigs, subjected to by the OSRD? We now know that some of these experiments were very dangerous to their human guinea pigs. 1-0 classification was the Selective Service Board's Conscientious Objector classification. During the Vietnam War, Amish young men went into I-W service (conscientious objector service) at mental and regular hospitals. Their I-W service was for two years. Some of these young men were programmed at these hospitals. One Amish boy after he got home from I-W service committed suicide.

The secret satanic families within various Amish settlements also offered up their children. This started a large scale super secret operation by the CIA/Intelligence agencies to set up Delta teams within the Amish. Who would ever suspect an Amishman? They have been expendable assassins for the CIA for years. These young men are strong farm boys. They have no connection between themselves and the outside world where they secretly carry out their missions, and if they die, there is no birth record, and perhaps a dozen other siblings for their family to continue on with.

During the Vietnam War, the Military's Selective Service did things differently than in W.W.II. Any hospital or mental hospital which applied for approval could get I-W (conscientious objector) boys. The Amish put together a Steering Committee to work with the government and the I-W service. In the I-W Steering Committee meetings (and the author Fritz attended one) it was stated by Committee members "The boys do not come back the same [from the hospitals]" and that the I-W service in the mental hospitals was "proving unsatisfactory and harmful."

Some of the mental hospitals which received Amish boys include Columbia Missouri's State Mental Hospital & Hospital complex, Colorado Psychopathic Hospital in Denver, all of the hospitals that got W.W. III-Ws (as listed above), Central State Hospital, Indianpolis, IND, New Jersey State Hospital, Greystone Park, NJ, Philadelphia State Hospital, Philadelphia, PA, plus numerous others. At any one time, there were hundreds of Amish boys in I-W service.

It is suspected that many of these hospitals were involved in mind-control, and it is known that the Columbia , MO complex of hospitals and Mid-Missouri State Mental Hospital , 803 Stadium Dr. , Columbia , Missouri and the Veteran's Hospital across the street were involved in mind-control for the CIA.

A mental hospital had to apply to the Selective Service Board for approval to get I-W workers. Then their personnel departments would hire the I-W boys for positions such as nursing attendants. One State Mental Hospital administrator told Fritz that the whole I-W thing was "pretty confidential."

The Amish Steering Committee worked with the Mennonite Central Committee (MCC) which in turn worked for some quasi-religious group which is privately funded called The National Service Board of Religious Objectors (NSBRO) still active in Washington , D.C. The Amish were slow to act, but by the end of the Vietnam War, they had managed to get some of their farms approved for I-W service and in 1971, the Steering Committee was able to announce that 70 Amish I-W boys were working on Amish farms in 8 states, rather than in hospitals. However, this late change was too late to protect their settlements from infiltration from sophisticated Illuminati mind-control.

How It Is Done

A programmed Amish boy will likely be contacted by what is called a "CUT-OUT". This is the secret contact person who maintains contact between the Handler and the Amish Delta. CUT-OUT's can either be given several slaves (a BLOCK CUT-OUT) or in other cases only know the up-line handler and down-line person (a CHAIN CUT-OUT).

If further secrecy is needed by the handler, he can use "sterile telephones" which the Illuminati/CIA have which cannot be traced, even by the telephone companies. When an Amish boy is activated and sent out on an assassination mission for the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies he is a professional at what he has been trained and programmed to do.

Amish boys, programmed to be assassins, are used in what their handlers call "wet ops". This intelligence lingo means that human blood will run. Wet ops, also called black ops, are debriefed by a briefing team. The Amish multiple will have to give a detailed account of the finished operation, once under hypnosis, once with a polygraph, and once under the drug scopolamine (a truth serum). And when the debriefing team, which includes a Mind-control Programmer, is satisfied that all of the inconsistencies between the different accounts have been ironed out, then the Programmer will block out all memory and guilt of the operation. The handler may write a "blind memorandum" which has no file no. or letterhead or name.

Then Amish boy's assassination alters will be praised for having done a great service to humanity and to his country. The Amish boy can now be sent home to milk cows and work on his labor-intensive tobacco farm without any nagging guilt or horrible memories surfacing to trouble him (at least in theory). Trained assassins do have memory flashes, as all Monarch slaves have, but they are only bits and pieces.

People also do not realize that the Amish live in many more states than Pennsylvania . They move all over the United States . If an Amishman was travelling on a CIA mission there are numerous of excuses that could be made for why he could be on the move. There are far more Amish young people away from the Amish settlements than people realize because they dress like the world.

Many young people leave with the knowledge that they can go back years later and be accepted back into their community. What are some of the mitigating factors in all of this?

The Amish do their own butchering. They are down-to-earth people who are not afraid of blood. Essentially all Amish children grow up helping with butchering, and seeing life and death played out everyday on their farms. The Amish do not embalm their dead, and have their own cemeteries. The Satanic cult within the Amish can reopen the graves and carry out satanic ceremonies afterward. Their cemeteries are small almost hidden sites with markers hidden in grass. Some of these graveyards blend in with their rural settings.

Elmo, Joseph, and Victor Stoll are some prominent Amish men. Joseph and Elmo have traveled a great deal esp. to Central America . Joseph wrote a book on Child Training which teaches parents how to break a child's will. This author is supportive of discipline and respect. The book is pointed out, only because it is a paper trail to show that the Amish discipline and the Illuminati's discipline at times can be similar. The only person who might see an Amish boy being disciplined (since they are a rural people) would be the immediate family or an occasional Amish guest. An Amish man seeing a father carrying out the Monarch steps to build dissociation would likely not see anything wrong. If the guest did see something wrong (i.e. too strict or mean), the objections would be kept very low key. For sure, no non-Amish would ever hear about it.

The Illuminati families like the Dukes and Reynolds control tobacco production and cigarette manufacturing. In order to keep their lifestyle in Pennsylvania , the Amish have had to grow tobacco for the Illuminati controlled companies. This author can only speculate what economic leverage that has given the Illuminati over the Pennsylvania Amish.

Hiding A Major Programming Center

The blueprints of the Portland Mormon Temple at Lake Oswego , OR which sets over a secret underground programming site, were changed overnight after they were looked at. The original blueprints showed that Lake Oswego had allowed a building code to broken. The blueprint was changed, showing that Lake Oswego 's city employees were working along with the Mormon church and the CIA to keep everything running smooth with their high tech secret underground programming center, which has the front of being sacred temple grounds. Three separate Monarch slaves independently described this underground installation, and there are other evidences of it too.

In order to gain access to the underground programming tunnels, a person has to have to place their palm on the wall, where a disguised instrument identifies a person's hand. The entrances are disguised using the most sophisticated techniques. One is from the Temple Laundry Building south of the temple and another is from the hotel south of the temple. This hotel has a strange hard-to-find entrance to its parking lot, almost as if they haven't wanted uninvited guests. Tunnels are widely used at the other various programming sites.

External & Internal Deceptions

There are some stock tools of deception that are used both externally on the world and internally on the slave when their system is programmed and structured. Later in the book we will cover the structuring. Since this chapter covers deceptions, we will discuss them here, but the reader needs to bear in mind, they will be employed in the structuring/programming phases of the slave's life.

The tools are Deflection, Blinds, Slides, Hegelian dialectics, and Deniability. **Deflection** is taking something good and deflecting its purpose. This is a stock tool. For instance, loyalty and obedience can be good virtuous things if given to the correct authority. But deflected to the false sadistic authority, they are disastrous. They use Deflection to redirect the power of truth which is opposed to them. Healthy foods, benevolence, ecology, love, acceptance, etc. are all part of the Creator's Christian walk. These truths and other are deflected from their original purpose of glorifying the Creator to glorifying their own programs. Rather than publicly opposing Christianity, they rename their own movements Christian, and then proceed to do very little for Christ, and everything for Lucifer. They are even deflecting worship of Jesus Christ onto worship of a demon named Jesus.

The next externally and internally used stock tool is called "**Blinds**"- these are deliberate deceptions placed within their own writings to confuse the uninitiated. H.P.B. gives a good description of the use of these, so do Masonic writers like Albert Pike. H.P.B. writing describes the use of Blinds in The Secret Doctrine, Vol. 5 Adyar edition, p. 435. Blinds are used in CIA documents, they are incorporated into the scripts that the alters receive. For instance, the in fetro Moon Child ceremonies are not revealed to the non-hierarchy alters, but they are told that the Moon Children have to do with the cage tortures.

Slides are truth that has been warped just slightly to take an investigative person into a dead end. An example of a slide, is that the New World Order is satanic, but that only Nazis and stupid people think that Jews are involved. This is a slide, because then the Rothschilds who hide behind their Jewishness, can not be mentioned as suspects without people yelling "Anti-Semitism."

In reality exposing these abusers has nothing to do with Anti-Semitism, it's simply that all abusers no matter what good front they have, need to be correctly identified as dangerous. Another example, an alter who pretends to be helpful is placed in the system who says that the door to get to a castle internally is the fifth door on the right in such and such hall. The answer is correct, but the door must be opened using the left side, rather than the right side where the door knob is located. Because the answer doesn't pan out then the idea that the door is the correct door is discarded, and the alter's knowledge is suspect. Lots of psychiatrists are writing papers about MPD with slides. They give some truth, and then they give people a path to go down that will dead end them from ever finding the truth.

They use **Hegelian Dialectics**. This dialectic process doesn't happen on its own so it often has to be forced into happening. The idea is that each idea ("ism") called a "thesis", like say Capitalism, naturally by definition has an opposite, an "antithesis". In Capitalism the antithesis is Communism. The conflict between the two produces a synthesis. By controlling both ends of the conflict, one controls the end product, the synthesis. More than not, the One-World-Power can be seen working behind both sides of many conflicts. Indeed, the Secret Societies have been historically shown to be behind all the revolutions and wars in Modern Europe since the American Revolution.

In religious conflict, both sides are often being manipulated. Some of the various groups openly admit their strategy is designed to create a synthesis. You will find Hegelian Dialectics has been introduced into the U.S. educational system by the Skull & Bones Order, an Illuminati group. It was adopted in Russia by the Slavophiles in the 19th century. Communism, Nazism, Fabians, most New Age groups, Liberation Theology, and other parts of the Power use Hegelian Dialectics. Hegel in turn based his system on the ancient Greek atomists especially Democritus. Hegalian dialectics is built into the conflicting scripts that alters are given. Slaves who are twinned to another slave will find Hegelian dialectics employed in their twinning programming. The Hegelian dialectics can be worked in with the double-binds that the programmers love to use.

Esoteric language.

Indirect interference with truthful information getting out. This is done by stealing the impact of the truth, by printing a parallel story with disinformation at the same time, or "leaking" an opposite story with disinformation at the same approximate time. Disinformation leaks can be done through the mass media, or an individual alter. g. deniability.

When orders are given and language is used, it is on purpose vague so that the guilty can deny their guilt. At this point, it might be appropriate to cover some standard CIA tactics. They use some Monarch slaves as "Live Letter Drops". An LLD is a person who will remail spy letters. They will use "dead drop boxes" which are simply places that an item or message is concealed to be retrieved by some other criminal in the Network. They may give the slave a gift which then has to be passed on. They may protect a written message by writing it on edible paper. Safe houses are used, indicated by things such as 2 lion statues along with prearranged O.K. signals, such as the position of a flower pot.

D. Internal Deceptions

When building an internal world, the programmers use every trick in the book to hide things. First the abuse has to be hidden in silence, and then the MPD has to be hidden. Next, the real core needs to be hidden. Then, the purpose of a Monarch slave needs to be hidden. All the time that this is going on, the programmers must constantly work at keeping the programmers' identities hidden, and their programming sites hidden.

Programmers usually have cover names when programming, and then hypnotically have the victim see them as something else. For instance, Dr. Green had victims see him as a cricket. He even used a cricket noise maker while programming, that clicked. In recent times, the Programmers and handlers are programming their slaves to believe that they are aliens. The slave will generally be lied to that they have a "twin" somewhere. Internally, the Programmer will begin making the System with the core related alters and then the front alters. The front alters will be rearranged in a fashion that the structure of the System is confused. The front alters will be given heavy programming, to convince them that nothing ever happened to them, they had a wonderful life. They will be given fictitious stories about the programming, so that almost every item in a System has a cover story to mislead an alter about what is going on.

Many things are placed in boxes. Clowns programmed to cut, are Jack-in-box clowns that pop up when an alter even thinks unapproved thoughts. Some of the important things in a System may be hidden out front. An alter on the front may think it is stupid, and yet they have access to internal maps of the entire system--which they can remember only on code. If a person (such as a therapist or nosey alter) goes to look deep in the System for the material he might be frustrated. Under a fanatically un-sexual (asexual) alter, will be a sexual alter. Under a stupid alter, may be an alter gifted in a language or art. Alters are very often hidden behind opposite types of alters.

Important things in the System, and many unimportant things, are all well guarded. Sometimes particular alters have to serve as the guards. Some of these guards are called **Gatekeepers**. Gatekeeper alters will appear near the surface of a system, and then again deep in the System about level 10, and 12. Gatekeeper alters are alters that the programmer must go through to get to deeper levels. The Gatekeeper alters are very heavily programmed to keep them in place. They will receive intensive lies. Some of the access triggers which must accompany the verbal codes are kept secret, by virtue of the fact that no person in their right mind would use them, such as needles, electro-shocks, or slaps to certain parts of the body to trigger deep alters to take the body.

Items in a System will be disguised, such as the clockmaker alter/demons will make clocks to appear in the system like anything they want. The only way these can be adequately identified is that these clocks are always disguised as gold items. As the Programmers work, they like to find word games, plays on words and double-binds. They will also put in scrambling programs, deaf alters and foreign language codes to help protect their secrets. The alters who look the least to have programming may have the most. Duplicate alters of most alters are created, so that even the alters themselves don't know if it is themselves or another alter. These duplicates are called mirrored images & looking glass people (LGPs). Some of the mirrored images may turn out to be demonic entities that have been placed using high level demonology. Suicide alters, who are trained to have a big smile and be clowns, mask their intention to kill the body when they take the body of a slave.

A popular method for hiding things within the occult world, has been boxes within boxes. A Masonic organization will have a rite, within a secret rite, with a secret group, with an insider clique. Common everyday items that surround the slave will be given special meanings. The songs the slave hears on the radio, will for instance have code words. The Programmers due to the corruption of the music industry knows what hit songs are coming out, and they will haul their slaves in and program them according to the lyrics of the soon-to-be hits. The lyrics will be written so that programmed meanings can be attached to certain words and lines.

Something as innocent as watching T.V., listening to the T.V. or to a sermon may actually be programming a special message into the victim. Hand signals will even be done over the news or other shows. For instance, Bill Clinton at his inauguration made a satanic signal during the inauguration ceremony. This sign of Satan is a standard hypnotic induction hand signal for slaves. Clinton waves the sign of Satan with his left hand at his inauguration. This is a hypnotic induction signal for slaves. Although some might interpret this as "I love you" which is handed by the right hand of a deaf person, this left handed signal will induct slaves no matter what some people think the meaning is.

No wise person would knowingly choose to fight their opponent blind and deaf, yet that seems to be the choice which many nominal Christians are choosing. They would like to live in denial and to characterize this book as doomsdayer stuff and then dismiss and ignore this material. They want to eat, drink and be happy. If people think that by putting their heads in the sand they can escape the future, or even the present difficulties, they may be in for a rude surprise.

The Use of Esoteric Language

One method of deception is the use of Esoteric language. Esoteric terms are understood by those deep in the occult, but are misunderstood by the common people. The best example is the term "Saturn."

Saturn

The word Saturn consistently turns up as an important word for the Illuminati and upper levels of the occult. Because Saturn is such an important concept, it should be covered in this part of the book. Therapists may encounter something to do with Saturn in a programmed multiple. Before Fritz began researching the elite of the occult world, Saturn was merely meant an enormous planet 95 times the size of the earth's mass, the 6th of the solar system in an orbit of 29.5 years around the sun. This means that the co-authors of this book are less than three Saturian years old.

Fritz was also aware that Saturn was the father of all Gods in the mythology of the ancient world. David M. Talbot in his book The Saturn Myth documents how all over the world Saturn has been worshipped even more than the sun god. Saturn has been the secret god of the occult world. When we read in Deut. 18:9-10, "When thou art come into the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not learn to do after the abominations of those nations. There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch."

All of these practices are abominations done by Satanists today and are becoming commoner among Americans. Note that the first item mentioned by Moses in this passage was passing (putting) children into the fire (of Moloch). Commentary on The Pentateuch, III, reprint, Grand Rapids , MI : Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1949, p.393.) (Keil, Carl F. and Franz Delitzch) on DT 18:9-10: "Moses groups together all the words which the language contained for different modes of exploring the future and discovering the will of God, for the purpose of forbidding every description of soothsaying, and places the prohibition of Moloch-worship at the head, to show the inward connection between soothsaying and idolatry, possibly because februation, or passing children through the fire in the worship of Moloch, was more intimately connected with soothsaying and magic than any other description of idolatry."

The worship of Moloch was the worship of Saturn. There are perhaps various routes one can take to learn this. One route is a very close examination of the Scripture, especially the old Septuagint. Scriptures actually write of this fact in Amos 5:25-26 and Acts 7:41-43. Amos wrote, "Did ye bring unto me sacrifices and offerings in the wilderness forty years, 0 House of Israel ? Yea, ye have borne the tabernacle of your king ("siccuth malkecem", or in the Septuagint it reads "skenen tou Moloch"!), and the shrine (kiyyun) of your images, the star of your God, which ye made to yourselves" AMS 5:25-26 The Christian Stephen quotes these passages of Amos and connects it with the worship of the golden calf (bull or Taurus). His words on this are recorded in Acts 7:4 1. He further connects it in the next verse with the worship of "the host of heaven". In line with translations like the Septuagint, he states in verse 43 that Amos 5 refers to the cult "of Moloch and the star of the god Rephan".

Hebrew writing consists of only the consonants. The vowels can be added with what are termed vocalizations, which are dots. The Jewish scribes in their contempt for heathen gods placed vocalizations (vowel indicators) on the word Molech (M-L-CH) from a Hebrew word for "shame". Because the incorrect vocalization was added out of contempt for the heathen names of abominable gods, the word Molech (Saturn worship) has been mistranslated by some translators. Further, the word Chiun (Kaimanu in Assyria) has been represented by the word Rephan in Acts 7:43. Rephan is Kaivan (Chiun) which is the arabian and syrian way of saying Saturn. Rephan apparently was a very limited or localized way of saying Saturn. The adoration of the calf (bull) in the wilderness was an important act of defiance by the Israelites-- while Moses went up on the mountain to speak to God face to face.

This worship of the bull was actually worship of Saturn! Some call this star worship, and the bull was worshipped because at that time the constellation Taurus (the Bull) marked the position of the sun at the time of the spring equinox. The fact that the calf was gold was no accident--gold has many Satanic connotations. For a modern occult reference connecting the Bull, astrology and gold together see Esoteric Astrology by Alice Bailey (Lucis Trust, 1951), pp 378-79. Various scholars on ancient religion have written that the worship of Moloch was Saturn worship.

For instance, Siculus Diodorus wrote, ". ..there was a brazen statue of Saturn putting forth the palms of his hands, bending in such a manner toward the earth, as that the boy who was laid upon them, in order to be sacrificed, should slip off, and so fall down headlong into a deep burning furnace..." The ancient Roman circus, like so many public activities in America , was based upon the occult. The circus had 7 circuits, and had a pyramid in the center with 3 alters, one to Saturn, one to Jove, and one to Mars. This is an example of what the common people knew about Saturn. Moloch, then was the Sun God, during the Zodiac period from Taurus to Serpens and Scorpio which is when the sun is hottest. The Babylonians referred to Saturn as the "star of the sun".

In the Mithraic Mysteries, Saturn was the Sun God. (See Hall, Manly P. The Lost Teachings of All Ages. p. facing 21.) In fact, Saturn was the Sun God of many of the Pagan religions, and was the foundation of the Solar Temple . (ibid. Hall tells us on pg. 97, Lower Left, that Saturn is the foundation of the Solar Temple .) The Ten tribes of the Israelites fell into the ritual sacrifices of Moloch (Saturn worship and sacrifice) which brought them their judgment of Assyrian captivity. (2 KGS 17:16 - 17)

Astrology, witchcraft, and ritual sacrifice were also associated with Saturn worship. Isaiah the prophet tells those who worship Saturn, "Let now the astrologers, the star-gazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee." ISA 47:13 Saturn did not save the Israelites from captivity.

Ex-Illuminati members have revealed that Saturn is Satan. Yes, Saturn is Satan. The Satanic Illuminati hierarchy teach the high level students that "those who serve Saturn promote the return of the lost son Saturn." The religion of Saturn is Saturnian gnosis--which turns out to simply be a rehash of the gnosticism that the high level Satanists believe in. Saturn is severe. Jupiter is mild. The merging of Saturn (severity) with Jupiter (mildness) is the creation of the new Golden Age--according to high level Satanic hierarchy teachings. The earth has been caught in a battle between a bi-polar world--the inner Solar Logos and the outer Saturnian sphere. The trans-Saturnian planets actually belong to Alcyone(!) which eventually gets its planets returned. (This may be the reason, that the Satanic hierarchy has treated us to "good aliens from the Pleiades." Alcyone is a star in the Pleides.) Page 161 .... Saturnian gnostic teachings are that darkness contains the light.

What this means is that darkness is necessary for light to exist. And light appears within the matrix of darkness only by the Demiurge Saturnes--the Logos. This is what they teach. According to Albert Pike in the Masonic Text Book Morals and Dogma given to 320 Masons, the work of the Sun is the perfecting (also known as the deification of) man. Christians view that it is Satan's work to teach men that they can be deified (which is rebellion to the one and only true God).

SECRET HIGH LEVEL TEACHINGS

In secret Satanic rituals, the Grande Master has a scepter which represents his authority to wield power through the Lord of this world who is known as Saturn. New Age leaders are calling "Saturn" "Sanat Kumera". A devil by any name is still a devil. In a dialogue with a Mother of Darkness, this Mother of Darkness alter provides some interesting information.

The dialogue went like this:

Mother of Darkness: "Saturn is the gateway that must be opened. For a season God has winked that man might be illuminated. But excessive light destroys. Man must not forget his destiny is concerned with loving regeneration of the earth [Mother Gaia worship] and balance. Soon the other eye of God must open. Those who are illuminated have kept the balance point. The majority of mankind has not. Few seek the ancient seed of wisdom that springs from the brow of Lucifer. Man becomes.. .forgetful of His spiritual ancestry and destiny....They are Ellyllon. Keepers of nothing. They fill the earth with their passing and crowd the planes with nothingness. They are a waste of the energies. And so the other eye must open. Each man shall receive abundance in what he seeks. Some call it Karma..."

Interviewer: "What do you mean by the other eye?"

Mother of Darkness: "The other eye of God as some would say. Chemosh. Cleansing Fire. The outstreched arms of Molech."

Interviewer: "What has that got to do with Saturn?"

Mother of Darkness: "Everything. This is a most secret thing. Saturn is the gateway. The point at which all thought is fixed. The point at which all feeling shall be projected as the eye opens. Much ritual and preparation has gone into the issuance through the gateway of the ancient ones. There has been a gathering of the elemental essence to clothe them. A strengthened invisible quintessence to hold them in this plane at the time of advent.

Interviewer: "And what will be the result of this advent? What will it mean?"

Mother of Darkness: "A restoring of balance. Those who do not seek wisdom shall cease. Those who are so bound to the earth that they forget the light shall cease....When the other eye opens the dawn shall come. The Golden Dawn shall be upon us and the sun of righteousness shall rise with healing in His wings.... The urge to sacrifice others is a gift. It is a liberation from the awful rigidity for at least it permits an awareness of other humans. However badly.. .treated as a result of that awareness they have served an important purpose. The balance is kept and the light dwells upon the illuminated. The energy is released into the circle and is converted into something powerful and useful....In this way you can see they do not truly die. Light increases. Wisdom grows....Death begets life. The sacred cycle of the ancients. The earth shall regenerate herself when the eye of Molech opens."

There the reader has it, secret teachings from a Mother of Darkness on Saturn. Gnosticism believes that there is a force (not Almighty God)--the Force as it is called can be used for evil or good. Within the hierarchy of the Satanists (Moriah), their thinking has no problem understanding that Lucifer is the same person as Satan.

Satan is what happens when the evil side of the Force is being used, and Lucifer is that person when the good side of the Force is being used. As in all of the Mystery Religions and in the occult world in general, people are told different things at different levels. Most people don't want to serve evil. They want to think they are good--their pride motivates them to want to be thought of as good and great. They will easily follow Lucifer, but are not going to admit to themselves or anyone that they are following Satan. NO problem--they are allowed to think they are Luciferians. OR if being a follower of Lucifer is too strong a statement, they can be a worshipper of almost thing. Satan in his pride has provided esoteric teachings on the worship of just about everything. There are esoteric teachings about worshipping rock, mountains, trees, the stars, animal spirits, mother earth etc. If one probes deep enough into the layers of hidden meanings all these worships go back to Satan. The five primary interlocked concepts of Satan, are all represented by the Serpent, which are Lucifer (aka Light-bearer or godhood); Search for light or wisdom; sun worship, the Sun god, or energy; fire also called Kundalini force; and the regenerative principle which is phallic and sex worship. These 5 interconnected concepts are represented world wide by snakes (serpents) and represent worship of the supreme serpent Satan.

THE EXTERNALIZATION OF THE HIERARCHY

The big event or operation that is being carried out is the externalization of the hierarchy. Satan's secret hierarchy with its pure Satanists have been around for thousands of years. But the Satanic conspiracy to control mankind is to become an "open conspiracy". The hierarchy is to be externalized. And the elimination of Christians (those who haven't sought worldly wisdom--that worldly wisdom which comes from Satan) --is to pave the way for Satan's appearance.

The Satanic occult conspiracy is to leave its secret confines in Masonic Temples and Oddfellow Halls and is to permeate Society in general. This is what has been happening. The real light must go out for the dark side to feel comfortable coming completely out. The Mysteries, also known as the Mystery Religions are the Mysteries that one is initiated into when one joins Freemasonry. In fact, the very first item any prospective Masonic candidate must do is fill out a form requesting to be initiated into "the Mysteries."

The Mystery Religions were actually veiled forms of the worship of Lucifer or Satan. Lucifer is simply Satan dressed up as the Light-bearer. In the Mystery Religions the disciples are taught that the spirits of men are the powdered bones of Saturn. When one learns who Saturn is--it is a rather distasteful idea to think that men are taught that their bodies belong to Saturn.

Further, Freemasonry teaches about Hiram Abiff and CHiram. It turns out when we study the Hiramic Legend by Freemasonry's best philosopher that we learn who Santa Claus is. Santa is a scrambling of Satan. Anyway the Hiramic legend goes like this according to Freemasonry great expert on the Mystery Religions, "Saturn, the old man who lives at the north pole, and brings with him to the children of men a sprig of evergreen (the Christmas tree), is familiar to the little folks under the name of Santa Claus, for he brings each winter the gift of a new year." "Part of the symbols, are displayed.. .to the initiated, but he is intentionally led astray by false interpretations...Masonry conceals its secrets from all except the Adepts, the Sages and the Elect; and uses false explanations for its symbols to mislead those deserving to be misled." (This is according to the great Freemason Albert Pike in his book Morals & Dogma.)

It should come as no surprise that Saturn is one of the items which is mentioned by various Masonic authors. For instance, the Freemason Ragon, who is considered an expert on Freemasonry, wrote, "This is the important phenomenon, the ineffable mystery, the key to nature, which the ancient sages succeeded in discovering, and which they adopted as the basis of Masonic doctrine...It is interpretation, the revolting atrocities of subject of Masonic legends. According to Saturn...were considered interesting enigmas, which involve facts worth our notice." (Ragon, Tyileur General De La Franc-Maconnerie, p. 219-19 as quoted in Mohr, Gordon. The Hidden Power Behind Freemasonry, Burnsville, MN: Weisman Pub., 1990, p. 109) Alice Bailey's Esoteric Astrology states that Saturn is the Lord of Karma (p. 105) Venus and Saturn shall rule men during Aquarius. (p. 148) "Saturn is the planet of discipleship... we stand at the gateway of the new world, of the new age and its new civilization, ideals and culture." (p. 148) The occult book A Treatise on Cosmic Fire, pp 1196-1207 states that Saturn is the 5th creative Hierarchy.

This is the type of stuff that the Kaballa comes out with. And American businesses which are controlled by the Illuminati are getting into the act of bringing the occult out into society. Ford called its car Taurus (Bull--the Pleiades), another car is named Aries which is another occult astrological name. Then there is the car named Saturn!!

In conclusion, Saturn turns out to be an occult name for Satan. Santa turns out to be an occult name for Saturn. It also turns out that the name Saturn has been used for Satan for centuries by the occult. The ritual sacrifices to Molech was Saturn worship. The opening of the eye of Saturn is the materialization of hordes of demons taking place during this time period.

High level Illuminati, who will gather together in Atlanta in the summer of 1996, under the cover of the '96 Olympics will carry out high level rituals to open up a large hole for the materialization of hordes of demons to complete their push toward a world dictator. The use of the name Saturn is an example of how Satanism operates under the cover of layers of deception.

Many Christian words also have occult meaning. There is a Morning Star Church in Tulsa which ministers to victims of Illuminati Trauma Based Total Mind-Control. There is also a prophetic magazine named The Morning Star, which is very slick and glossy. On the other side of things, the term "the Morning Star"--Stella Matutina in Latin- is another name for Lucifer. Stella Matutina is also the name of a cabalistic black magic lodge which Satanist Aleister Crowley led when the Golden Dawn reorganized in 1903. There are Morning Star rituals done by Illuminati members. One Illuminati slave, who was trained to infiltrate Christian churches and turn them toward the New Age movement, channeled a demon named Jesus. He infiltrated Christian churches for decades, and when he spoke about Jesus, he was referring to the demon he channeled. We know about this because one day, his front alters gave their life to Jesus Christ, and he abandoned his job of infiltration, and sought spiritual help.

People need to understand that almost all Christian terms have dual meanings. Just because a term sounds familiar doesn't mean it is being used in the way that a sincere Christian would understand them.

In Summary

To summarize, the Illuminati are manipulating technology, language, ritualistic activity, subliminal awareness, fear, lust, human vulnerabilities, and conflicts. These manipulations are external deceptions, which help cover up their trauma-based mind control. They use the best covers as fronts. They use fiction, the best of religious fronts, travelling entertainment fronts, and the cover of national defense. They use deflection, blinds, slides, Hegelian dialectics, deniability, and esoteric language. They use agent provocateurs, "clean agents", "legends", and safe houses. The Illuminati have refined the art of deception far beyond what the common man has imagined. The very life & liberty of humanity requires the unmasking of their deceptions. That is what this book is about.

Chapter 6 Science No. 6 The Use of Electronics and Electricity

These photos printed in a magazine in the fall of 1981 show electric prod marks on the necks of these two slaves who were used for porn.

Another basic component of the Monarch program is lots of electro shock. Stun guns, staffs with hidden electric cattle prods, and cattle prods are frequently used on the slaves. Electroshock is used to create the dissociation from trauma during the programming, and later it is used to remove memories after the slave has carried out a mission, or to instill fear and obedience in a reluctant slave.

Slaves generally carry horrible body memories of excruciating electroshock tortures to their entire bodies. As the slaves begin a therapeutic deprogramming process they will recover these horrible memories, not to mention many other painful memories. A slave often shows electroshock marks on their feet, or back, or buttock or legs after they have been used. An owner of a slave will ordinarily carry a stun gun. This is perhaps a 120,000 DC volt stun gun to erase & compartmentalize memories, but some of the stun guns go up to 200,000 volts DC to erase the memory of his slave. They will apply their stun guns to the base of the skull. After giving programming instructions they will usually give a high voltage shock to the base of the skull to imbed the instructions deep in the subconscious.

They often use hypnotic cues along with the shock. For instance, they will tell the slave they are "now going over the rainbow", and that when the sun goes down they will forget everything, before they shock the body. The shock destroys and scrambles the memory which is still stored in the short term memory section of the brain. They must shock the person within 24 hours, to insure that the short term memory doesn’t get into long term memory as a coherent memory. This means that if a slave is being used daily, they get electro shocked daily.

Types of devices used by handlers: A cylindrical type cattle prod with 3/4" between the contact points is used externally and internally. This is manufactured by Hot Shot Products, Inc., Savage , MN 55378 . Model B-12. They have a red or black rubber handle with an overall length of 12". The low voltage is between 10,000-15,000 volts. The medium voltage is 12,000 to 20,000 volts. A bruise on the buttocks will be black and blue spots about 1 1/2" diameter each.

A hand held wand type shock prod which has 2 /4" between its contact points. It uses a rechargeable battery pack. The prod (wand) is 2 1/2’ long, and unwieldy to handle. Various farm supply companies (livestock equipment) sell this. The medium voltage is 12,000 to 20,000.

A stun gun which has exactly 2" between the contacts with a 9 volt battery. This stun gun was created for law enforcement, and is generally regarded as the best device for dropping a victim or for inducing hypnosis, or setting in a hypnotic program. Its high voltage is 35,000 to 120,000 volts. It is a light weight (12 oz.), compact device, 7" x 2" x 1". This device will leave deep red dot ("holes") scars and cancerous moles. The victim will develop moles from the repeated use of this device. The muscled areas of the victim are preferred. For instance, the muscled area just below the shoulder blade.

Farrall Instrument Co., of Grand Island , NE makes a cattle prod with an adjustable voltage control. Their long distance wireless shocker called Personal Shocker can shoot a shock about 75 indoors and 300 feet outdoors. The control box is hand held, and the receiver is a leather case. The shock can be adjusted from 9 to 800 volts, current is 5 milliamperes, and it lasts 1 to 2 milliseconds. This Personal Shocker was manufactured to be used on people.

An electronic firm in Tujunga , CA makes a shock box used in programming. An electronic bark collar is used to train Illuminati & other Monarch slaves in silence & obedience. On other occasions, fancy gem studded collars and leather collars are fitted around the necks of female slaves for sex with wolves and fierce dogs, who bite these neck collars when they mount. Many of the slaves have experienced these various collars for obedience, silence, & bestiality.

In trying to track down who makes the larger electroshock machines, especially the computer guided ones, we only got started investigating. Conmed (315-797-8375) makes medical electrodes for portable monitoring units. Sentry Medical Products, at 17171 Murphy, Irvine , CA 92714 (714-250-0233) makes Skin Mounted Conductive Medical Electrodes for Tense Unit Machines. In Vivo Metric, in Healdsburg , CA also makes silver Chloride electrodes for placement on human skin. Electro-Cap Inter, produces BEG placement systems. Uni-Patch Medical Products, 13 13-T Grant Blvd. W , Wabasha , MN makes all types of Electrodes and some of theirs go onto machines for shocking people. Classic Medical Products, 582-T W 19246 Apollo Dr. , Muskego , WI make electrodes for diagnostic and shock purposes. Arndt Automation & Assoc., Inc., 17770 Liberty Lane , New Berlin , WI , make electrodes for ECG and EKG machines. And a Colorado company named Biomedical at Evergreen, CO makes medical electrodes.

When a slave is taken to an impromptu programming site--a hypnotic drug is injected into them for a quick induction while a metal band is put around their head and a current of 100,000 volts will be run through for say 5 seconds into their heads. This will cause the body to shake, the eyes to close, sweat to pour out of the body etc. The hands are tied down with restraints. Sometimes the mouth is gagged so that the tongue doesn’t protrude. After imbedding the hypnotic commands deep into the mind, the programmers might adjust the automatic timer on the equipment and give the victim another blast of voltage for 10 seconds. The person’s body will shake and quiver for a while after this. They may dribble spit. Finally, the person will be brought out of their hypnotic trance, instructed not to remember anything, to feel happy and sent on their way. This entire programming session can last 15 minutes. Programming sites like this can be the back of a van, a back room in a restaurant, or any other place that the equipment can be set up at. This is why a slave, who has been used recently, may hobble a little, or when they get memories feel a tight headband around their head along with awful headaches & flashes of light. The memory will feel like a robotic state to the slave.

Here is a drawing that one slave made of the electric headband used to program an alter.

The slave handler will also carry a black or grey spiral book with all their own slave’s access codes, triggers, cryptic keys and programs. All this will fit into a brief case. A working knowledge of hypnosis is helpful to understand how to deal with the slave in certain instances. Because the slave is under the most powerful combinations of mind control and is so divided against his or her own self, it is almost impossible to have many problems with the slave if the handler does what he is supposed to do. However, some handlers get drunk or loan the slave to inexperienced people, etc. and problems do develop. Of course the slaves always end up taking the blame for everything that goes wrong.

If the slave gets out of hand, because the handler doesn’t know what he is doing, a stun gun comes in handy to control the mismanaged slave. In other words, a brief case with the programming book and stun gun are basically all that is needed to control a Monarch slave for the rest of his or her life. Some of these stun guns are only a few inches long and look like boxes. Other stun guns are imbedded in staffs. The canes and the staffs that Satanists carry around, like Michael Aquino (in public in fact) are actually stun guns to control their slaves. The Queen Mother’s staff of the Illuminati has an electric stun gun hidden in it.

Children in day care centers are reporting small boxes with wires that electroshock them during programming. An example is given in Vol. 1, of how the Illuminati bloodlines connect to research about electric shocks to control people. For example, David V. Reynold's research, who wrote, "Neuroelectric Research: Electroneuroprosthesis, Electroanesthesia, and Nonconvulsive Electrotherapy."

Another way of using electricity for torture is to use directed energy (a new technology) on men's genitals. With skillful use of directed energy they can simulate a rape of a man or woman. Artificial sodomy via directed energy was first tested in male prisons. ELF waves will place thoughts into the men's mind as the directed energy make them feel sodomized.

Microwaves for Programming

The x-rays below were used with the victims' permission.

Mind control implant in the nasal cavity.

Electrodes implanted in the person's skull when a child in the 1940's.

Transmitting implant in the cortex.

Implants enlarged from 7mm and 11 mm. Drawings by Fritz Springmeier

On Aug. 22, 1989, Phillip L. Stoklin, P.O. Box 2111, Satellite Beach, FL took out a patent --which is Patent Number 4,858,612 which is a device that can be placed in the auditory cortex of the brain. This device allows the following process: someone speaks into a microphone, the microphone then has its sounds coded into microwave, which are sent to the receiver in the brain and the receiver device will transform the microwaves back so that the person's mind hears the original sounds. In other words, a person with this device in their head will hear whatever the programmers send via microwave signals.

Various types of "non-lethal" weapons have been created and are now being used. Directed energy can be used to sculpt clouds. ELF waves can be used to place thoughts in people's minds without using implants.

In 1991, a paper trail began to appear when the CIA connected U.S. government Global Strategy Council came out with a paper entitled, "Nonlethality: Development of a National Policy and Employing Nonlethal Means in a New Strategic Era." Their paper was prepared by Janet Morris.

The USAF School of Aerospace Medicine, Brooks Air Force Base, TX put out a report USAFAM-TR-87-30 entitled "Behavioral response of rats exposed to high-power microwave radiation." High-power ultra-short pulse-width emitters of microwaves were used to alter the thinking in rats. The report refers to two other reports: one by T. Wheeler, et. al. "Retrograde Amnesia in Rats Produced by Electron Beam Exposure," entitled USAFAM-TR-83-3, Feb. '83. The other report is by R. Bermant, "Classical conditioning of Microwave-Induced Hyperthermia in Rats." Radio Sci. 14 (6S): 201-207, 1979. This is a clear paper trail, that military research has gone on to control the brain via microwaves.

Another institution in Texas, the Texas Dept. of Criminal Justice TDCJ-ID, has been putting high tech listening implants into the ear canal behind the ear drum which lets them monitor what the ear is hearing--a great way to spy. This is according to an implant victim who with medical help discovered his implant. The Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (WRAIR) discovered that pulsed microwave audiograms also called analogs of the sounds of spoken words, could be transmitted to a target, and the effect on victim would be to hear voices in their head. The next 11 pages are patent no. 4,858,612. After this, we'll reveal the numerous mind control capabilities of ELF microwave tech.)

========

The next pages, from page 169 to 174 may present the reader with some minor difficulties in reading, because with some words it was not possible to process them, because of poor printing. So some words are lost, and this can make certain sentences appear strange ...

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

=========

Hearing Device US Patent 6-3

Background of the Invention

1. Field at the Invention

This invention relates to devices for aiding at hearing in mammals. The invention is based upon the perception at sounds which is experienced in the brain when the brain is subjected to certain microwave radiation signals.

2. Description of the Prior Art

In prior art hearing devices for human beings, it is well known to amplify sounds to be heard and to apply the amplified sound signal to the ear at the person wearing the hearing aid. Hearing devices of this type are however limited to hearing dysfunctions where there is no damage to the auditory nerve or to the auditory cortex. In the prior art, if there is damage to the auditory cortex or the auditory nerve, it cannot be corrected by the use of a hearing aid.

During World War II, individuals in the radiation path of certain radar installations observed clicks and buzzing sounds in response to the microwave radiation. It was through this early observation that it became known to the art that microwaves could cause a direct perception at sound within a human brain. These buzzing or clicking sounds however were not meaningful and were not perception of sounds which could otherwise be heard by the receiver. This type of microwave radiation was not representative of any intelligible sound to be perceived. In such radar installations, there was never a sound which was generated which resulted in subsequent generation of microwave signals representative of that sound.

Since the early perception of buzzing and clicking further research has been conducted into the microwave reaction of the brain. In an article entitled Possible Microwave Mechanisms of the Mammalian Nervous System" by Philip L Stocklin and Brain F. Stocklin, published in the TIT Journal of Life Sciences. Tower International Technomedical Institute. Inc. P.O. Box 4594 , Philadelphia . Pa. (1979) there is disclosed a hypothesis that the mammalian brain generates and uses electra magnetic waves in the lower microwave frequency region as an integral part of the functioning of the central and peripheral nervous systems. This analysis is based primarily upon the potential energy of a protein integral in the neural membrane. In an article by W. Bise entitled "Low Power Radio Frequency and Microwave Effects On Human Electro-encephalogram and Behavior," Physiol. Chemistry Phys. 10. 387 (1978), it is reported that there are significant effects upon the alert human EEG during radiation by low intensity cw microwave electromagnetic energy. Bise observed significant repeatable EEG effects tar a subject during radiation at specific microwave frequencies.

Summary of the Invention

Results at theoretical analysis of the physics of brain tissue and the brain/skull cavity, combined with experimentally-determined electromagnetic properties at mammalian brain tissue, indicate the physical necessity for the existence of electromagnetic standing waves called modes in the living mammalian brain.

The made characteristics may be determined by two geometric properties at the brain: these are the cephalic index at the brain (its shape in prolate spheroidal coordinates) and the semifocal distance of the brain (a measure of its size). It was concluded that estimation of brain cephalic index and semifocal distance using external skull measurements on subjects permits estimation of the subjects characteristic mode frequencies, which in turn will permit a mode by mode treatment at the data to simulate hearing. This invention provides for sound perception by individuals who have impaired hearing resulting tram ear damage, auditory nerve damage, and damage to the auditory cortex. This invention provides for simulation of microwave radiation which is normally produced by the auditory cortex. The simulated brain waves are introduced into the region at the auditory cortex and provide for perceived sounds on the part at the subject.

Brief Description Of The Drawings

FIG. 1 6-fig1.gif shows the acoustic filter bank and mode control matrix portions of the hearing device at this invention.

FIG. 2 6-fig2.gif shows the microwave generation and antenna portion of the hearing device of this invention.

FIG. 3 6-fig3-4-5.gif shows a typical voltage divider network which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 4 shows another voltage divider device which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 5 shows a voltage divider to be used as a mode partition wherein each of the resistors is variable in order to provide adjustment of the voltage outputs.

FIG. 6 6-fig6-7.gif shows a modified hearing device which includes adjustable mode partitioning, and which is used to provide initial calibration of the hearing device.

FIG. 7 6-fig6-7.gif shows a group of variable oscillators and variable gain controls which are used to determine hearing characteristics of a particular subject.

FIG. 8 6-fig8-9-10.gif shows a top view of a human skull showing the lateral dimension.

FIG. 9 6-fig8-9-10.gif shows the relationship of the prolate spherical coordinate system to the cartesian system.

FIG. 10 6-fig8-9-10.gif shows a side view of a skull showing the medial plane of the head. section A-A.

FIG. 11 6-fig-11-12.gif shows a plot of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number M.

FIG. 12 6-fig-11-12.gif shows a left side view of the brain and auditory cortex.

FIG. 13 6-fig-13.gif shows the total modal field versus angle for source location.

Detailed Description of the Preferred Embodiment

This invention is based upon observations at the physical mechanism the mammalian brain uses to perceive acoustic vibrations. This observation is based in part upon neuro anatomical and other experimental evidence which relates to microwave brain stimulation and the perception of sounds. It is has been observed that monochromatic acoustic stimuli (acoustic tones, or single tones) of different frequencies uniquely stimulate different regions at the cochlea. It has also been observed that there is a corresponding one to one relationship between the frequency of a monochromatic acoustic stimulus and the region of the auditory cortex neurally stimulated by the cochlear nerve under the physiologically normal conditions tonotopicity).

It has been observed that for an acoustic tone of a frequency which is at the lower end at the entire acoustical range perceivable by a person, that thin lateral region ("Line") parallel to the medial axis of the brain and toward the inferior portion of the primary auditory cortex is stimulated.

For an acoustic tone whose frequency is toward the high end of the entire perceivable acoustic range, a thin lateral region parallel to the medial axis and toward the superior portion at the primary auditory cortex is stimulated.

Neural stimulation results in the generation at a broad band of microwave photons by the change in rotational energy state of protons integral to the neuron membrane of the auditory cortex. The physical size and shape of the brain/skull cavity, together with the (semiconductor) properties (conductivity and dielectric constant) of the brain tissue provide an electromagnetic resonant cavity.

Specific single frequencies are constructively reinforced so that a number of standing electromagnetic waves, each at its own single electromagnetic frequency in the microwave frequency region are generated in the brain. Each such standing electromagnetic wave is called a characteristic mode of the brain/skull cavity. Analysis in terms of prolate spheroidal wave functions indicates that transverse electric field components of these modes have maxima in the region of the auditory cortex.

This analysis further shows that transverse electric field possess a variation of amplitude with angle in the angular plane (along the vertical dimension of the auditory cortex) and that is dependent only upon the primary mode number. The auditory cortex in the normally functioning mammalian brain is a source of microwave modes. The auditory cortex generates these modes in accordance with the neural stimulation of the auditory cortex by the cochlear nerve. Mode weighting for any one acoustic tone stimulus is given by the amplitude of each mode along the line region of the auditory cortex which is neurally stimulated by that acoustic tone stimulus. A listing of mode weighting versus frequency of acoustic stimulus is called the mode matrix.

In this invention, the functions of the ear, the cochlear nerve, and the auditory cortex are simulated. Microwaves simulating the mode matrix are inserted directly into the region of the auditory cortex. By this insertion of simulated microwave modes, the normal operation of the entire natural hearing mechanism is simulated.

Referring now to FIG. 1 and FIG. 2 there is shown an apparatus which provides for induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain. This bearing device includes a microphone 10 which receives sounds, an acoustic filter bank 12 which separates the signals from the microphone into component frequencies, and a mode control matrix 14 which generates the mode signals which are used to control the intensity of microwave radiations which are injected into the skull cavity in the region of the auditory cortex. The acoustic filter bank 12 consists of a bank of acoustic filters Fl through Fk which span the audible acoustic spectrum. These filters may be built from standard resistance, inductance, and capacitance components in accordance with well established practice. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 filters which 63 correspond to the observed critical bandwidths of the human ear. In this preferred embodiment a typical, list at filter parameters is given by Table I below:

The rectifier outputs one through K are feed to K mode partition devices. The mode partitioning devices each have N outputs wherein N is the number of microwave oscillators used to generate the microwave radiation. The outputs 1 through N of each mode partition device is applied respectively to the inputs of each gain controlled amplifier of the microwave radiation generator. The function of the mode control matrix 14 is the control of the microwave amplifiers in the microwave amplifier bank 18. In the preferred embodiment thus will be 24 outputs and 24 microwave frequency oscillators. Connected to each microwave amplifier gain control line is a mode simulation device 16 which receives weighted mode signals from the mode partition devices 14. Each mode simulation device consists of one through k lines and diodes 17 which are each connected to summing junction 19. The diodes 17 provide for isolation from one mode partition device to the next. The diodes 17 prevent signals from one mode partition device from returning to the other mode partition devices which are also connected to the same summing junction of the mode summation device 16. The diodes also serve a second function which is the rectification of the signals received from the acoustic filter bank by way of the mode partition devices. In this way each mode partition device output is rectified to produce a varying DC voltage with major frequency components of the order of 15 milliseconds or less.

The voltage at the summation junction 19 is thus a slowly varying DC voltage. The example mode partition devices are shown in greater detail in FIG. 3, FIG. 4, and FIG. 5. The mode partition devices are merely resistance networks which produce 1 through N output voltages which are predetermined divisions of the input original from the acoustic filter associated with the mode partition device.

FIG. 3 shows a mode partitioning device wherein several outputs are associated with each series resistor 30. In the embodiment depicted in FIG. 4 there is an output associated with each series resistor only, and thus there are N series resistors, or the same number of series resistors as there are outputs. The values of the resistors in the mode partition resistor network are determined in accordance with the magnitudes of the frequency component from the acoustic filter bank 12 which is required at the summation point 19 or the gain control line for amplifiers 20.

The microwave amplifier bank 18 Consists of: plurality of microwave oscillators 1 through N each of which is connected to an amplifier 20. Since the amplifiers 20 are gain controlled by the signals at summation junction 19. the magnitude of the microwave output is controlled by the mode control matrix outputs Fl through F. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 amplifiers. The leads from the microwave oscillators I through N to the amplifiers 20 are shielded to prevent cross talk from one oscillator to the next, and to prevent stray signals from reaching the user of the hearing device.

The output impedance of amplifiers 20 should be 1000 ohms and this is indicated by resistor 21. The outputs of amplifiers 20 are all connected to a summing junction 22. The summing junction 22 is connected to a summing impedance 23 which is approximately 50 ohms. The relatively high amplifier output impedance 21 as compared to the relatively low summing impedance 23 provides minimization of cross talk between the amplifiers. Since the amplitude of the microwave signal needed at the antenna 24 is relatively small, there is no need to match the antenna and summing junction impedances to the amplifier 20 output impedances.

Efficiency of the amplifiers 20 is not critical. Level control of the signal at antenna 24 is controlled by pick off 25 which is connected to the summing impedance 23. In this manner the signal at antenna 24 can be varied from 0 (ground) to a value which is acceptable to the individual. The antenna 24 is placed next to the subject's head and in the region of the subjects auditory cortex 26. By placement of the antenna 24 in the region of the auditory cortex 26. the microwave field which is generated simulates the microwave field which would be generated if the acoustic sounds were perceived with normal hearing and the auditory cortex was functioning normally.

In FIG. 2A there is shown a second embodiment of the microwave radiation and generator portion of the hearing device. In this embodiment a broad band microwave source 50 generates microwave signals which are feed to filters 52 through 58 which select from the broad band radiation particular frequencies to be transmitted to the person. As in FIG. 2 the amplifiers 20 receive signals on lines 19 from the mode control matrix. The signals on lines 19 provide the gain control for amplifiers 20.

In FIG. 6 there is shown a modified microwave hearing generator 60 which includes a mode partition resistor divider network as depicted in FIG. 5. Each of the mode partition voltage divider networks in this embodiment are individually adjustable for all ot the resistances in the resistance network. FIG. 5 depicts a voltage division system wherein adjustment of the voltage partition resistors is provided for.

In FIG. 6, the sound source 62 generates audible sounds which are received by the microphone of the microwave hearing generator 60. In accordance with the operation described with respect to FIG'S 1 and 2. microwave signals are generated at the antenna 10 in accordance with the redistribution provided by the mode control matrix as set forth in FIG. 5.

The sound source 62 also produces a signal on line 6-4 which is received by a head phone 66. The apparatus depicted in FIG 6 is used to calibrate or fit a microwave hearing generator to a particular individual.

Once the hearing generator is adjusted to the particular individual by adjustment of the variable resistors in the adjustable mode partition portion of the hearing generator. A second generator may be built using fixed value resistors in accordance with the adjusted values achieved in fitting the device to the particular subject The sound produced by headphone 66 should he the same as a sound from the sound source 62 which is received by the microphone 10 in the microwave hearing generator 60. In this way, the subject can make comparisons between the perceived sound from the hearing generator 60. and the sound which is heard from headphone 66. Sound source 62 also produces a signal on 68 which is feed in cue light 69. Cua light 69 comes on whenever a sound is emitted from sound source 62 to the microwave generator 60. (A piece of text omitted here--illegible)

In Fig. 7 there is shown a modified microwave generator which may be used to determine a subject's microwave mode frequencies. In this device the acoustic filter bank and the mode control matrix have been removed and replaced by voltage level signals generated by potentiometers 70. Also included are a plurality of variable frequency oscillators 72 which feed microwave amplifiers 74 which are gain controlled from the signal generated by potentiometers 70 and pick off arm 76. This modified microwave hearing generator is used to provide signals using one oscillator at a timi.

When an oscillator is turned on. the frequency is varied about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception by the subject is perceived. This perception however may consist of a buzzing or hissing sound tat rather than a tone because only one microwave frequencies being received. The first test of perception is to determine the subject's lowest modal frequency for audibility. (M= 1). Once this modal frequency is obtained. The process is repeated for several higher modal frequencies and continued until no maximum acoustic perception occurs.

Another method of determination of a subject's modal frequencies is through anatomical estimation. This procedure is by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull. In this method, the shape is determined in prolate spheroidal coordinance. Purely anatomical estimation of sub ject's modal frequencies is performed by first measuring the maximum lateral dimension (breadth) L FIG. 1, of the subject's head together with the maximum dimension D (anterior to Posterior) in the medial plane of the subject's head. D is the distance along Z axis as shown in FIG. 10.

The ratio L/D, called in anthropology the cephalic index, is monotonically related to the boundary value E0 defining the ellipsoidal surface approximating the interface between the brain and the skull in the prolate spheroidal coordinate system. E0 defines the shape of this interface; E0 and D together give an estimate of a, the semi-focal distance of the defining ellipsoid.

Using E0 and a, together with known values of the conductivity and di-electric constants of brain tissue, those wavelengths are found for which the radial component of the electric field satisfies the boundary condition that it is zero at E0. These wavelengths are the wavelenghts associated wi ith the standing waves or modes. The corresponding frequencies are found by dividing the phase velocity of microwaves in brain tissue by each of the wavelengths A subject's microwave modal frequencies may also be determined by observing the effect of external microwave radiation upon the EEG.

The frequency of the M equal I mode may then be used as a base point to estimate all other modal frequencies. A typical example of such an estimation is where the subject is laterally irradiated with a monochromatic microwave field simultaneous with EEG measurement and the microwave frequency altered until a significant change occurs in the EEG, the lowest such frequency causing a significant EEG change is found. This is identified as the frequency of the M= 1 mode, the lowest mode of importance in auditory perception. The purely anatomical estimation procedure (FIGS. 8, 9, 10) is then performed and the ratio of each modal frequency to the M 1 modal frequency obtained. These ratios together with the experimentally-determined M - I frequency are then used to estimate the frequencies of the mode numbers higher than 1. The prolate spheroidal coordinate system is shown in FIG. 9. Along the lateral plane containing the x and y coordinates of FIG. 9. the prolate spheroidal coordinate variable 4 (angle) lies FIGS. 9 and 10. Plots of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number m are shown in FIG. 11. The equation is The "elevation view" FIG. 12, of the brain from the left side, shows the primary auditory cortex 10. The isotone lines and the high frequency region are toward the top of 100 and the low frequency region toward the bottom of 100.

The formula I, 6-6.gif set forth below is the formula for combining modes from an isotone line at ø= øj being excited to obtain the total modal field at some other angular location ø. For this formula, if we let J= 1 (just one isotone single frequency acouistic stimulus line), then it can be shown that ALL modes (in general) must be used for any ONE tone.

FIG. 13 shows the resulting total modal field versus angle ø for source location ø at 5.25°, 12.5°, etc. With reference to the set of curves at the left top of this figure. A spacing of approximately 7.25° in ø' corresponds to a tonal difference of about I octave. This conclusion is based on the side lobes of pattern coming from ø=5.25°, etc. The total filed (value on y-axis) falls considerably below the top curves for source locations well below 5.25° (toward the high acoustic stimulus end) and also as the source of frequency goes well above 10° frequency end) ø is plotted positive downward from the (at lateral location as indicates in FIG I 11. Resistor weightings are obtained from the (unreadable word) (m[ø -øj]). Formula I. The scale between acoustic frequency and ø must be set or estimated from experiment. Approximately 5.25 ± 1° corresponils to a tonal stimulus at about 2 khz. (the most sensitive region of the ear) since this source location gives the highest electric field amplitude.

The apparatus of FIG. 7 may also be used to determine values for a hearing device which are required for a particular subject. Once the modal frequencies have been estimated, the device of FIG. 7 which includes variable microwave oscillators may be used to determine values for the oscillators which match the subject, and to determine resistance values associated with the mode partition devices of the mode control matrix.

In FIG. 7 manual control of the amplifier gain is achieved by potentiometers 76. In this manner the amplifier gains are varied about the estimated settings ror an acoustic tone stimulus in the region of two thousand Hertz (2 khz) until maximum acoustic perception and a purest tone are achieved together. The term purest tone may also be described as the most pleasing acoustic perception by the subject. This process may be repeated at selected frequencies above and below 2 kHz. The selected frequencies correspond to regions of other acoustic filter center frequencies of the subject. When modal frequency (oscillator frequency) and gain set values (setting a potentiometer 76) are noted, it is then possible to calculate fixed oscillator frequencies and control resistor values for the adjusted hearing device for this particular subject. In the event the subject has no prior acoustic experience, that is deaf from birth, estimated resistor values must be used.

Also, a complex acoustic stimulation test including language articulation and pairs of harmonically related tones may be developed to maximize the match of the hearing device parameters for those of this particular subject. Typical components for use in this invention include commercially available high fidelity microphones which have a range of 50 Hz to 5 kHz with plus or minus 3 dB variation. The audio filters to be used with the acoustic filter bank 12 are constructed in a conventional manner, and have Q values of about 6. The filters may also be designed with 3 dB down points (½ the bandwidth away from the center frequency) occurring at adjacent center frequency locations. The diodes 17 in the mode control matrix which provide isolation between the mode partition circuits are commercially available diodes in the audio range.

The microwave oscillators I through N and the microwave amplifiers 20 are constructed with available microwave transistors which can be configured either as oscillators or amplifiers. Examples of the transistors are GaAsFET field effect transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HFET series or silicone bipolar transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HXTR series. All the cable between the oscillators, the microwave amplifiers, and the antenna should be constructed with either single or double shielded coaxial cable.

The antenna 24 for directing microwave signals to the audio cortex 26 should be approximately the size of the auditory cortex. A typical size would be one and one half CM high and one half to one CM wide. The antenna as shown is located over the left auditory cortex. but the right may also be used. Since the characteristic impedance of the brain tissue at these microwave frequencies is close to 50 ohms, efficient transmission by commercially available standard 30 ohm coax is possible.

The invention has been described in reference to the preferred embodiments. It is, however, to be understood that other advantages, features, and embodiments may be within the scope of this invention as defined in the appended claims.

What is claimed is:

1. A sound perception device for providing induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain comprising in combination: means for generating microwave radiation which is representative of a sound to be perceived, said means for generating including means for generating a simultaneous plurality of microwave radiation frequencies and means for adjusting the amplitude of said microwave radiation frequencies in accordance with the sound to be perceived; and antenna means located in the region of the auditory cortex of said mammalian brain for transmitting said microwave energy into the auditory cortex region of said brain.

2. A hearing device for perception of sounds comprising in combination: means for generating a signal representative of sounds; means for analyzing said signal representative of said sounds having an output means for generating a plurality of microwave signals having different frequencies having a input connected to said output of said means for analyzing said signals, having an output; means for applying said plurality of microwave signals to the head of a subject, and whereby the subject perceives sounds which are representative of said sounds,

3. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a signal is a microphone for detecting sound waves.

4. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for applying said plurality of microwave signals is an antenna.

5. The apparatus in accordance with claim 4 wherein said antenna is placed in the region of the auditory cortex of the subject.

6. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein the subject is a human being.

7. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for analyzing said signal comprises: an acoustic filter bank for dividing said sounds into a plurality of component frequencies; and a mode control matrix means for providing control signals which are weighted in accordance with said plurality of component frequencies, having an output connected to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signal inputs.

8. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said acoustic filter bank includes a plurality of audio frequency filters.

9. The apparatus in accordance with claim 8 wherein said audio frequency filters provide a plurality of output frequencies having amplitudes which are a function of said signal representative of sounds.

10. The apparatus in accordance with claim 9 wherein said amplitudes are the weighted in accordance with transform function of the signal representative of sounds.

11. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said mode control matrix device includes a voltage divider connected to each of said plurality of said audio frequency filters.

12. The apparatus in accordance with claim It wherein each of said voltage dividers has a plurality of outputs which are connected in circuit to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals.

13. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a plurality of mirowave signals comprises a purality of microwave generators each having a different frequency and means for controlling the output amplitude of each of said generators.

14. The apparattus in accordance with claims 2 wherein said means for generating plurality of microwave signals comprises a broad band microwave source and a plurality of filters.

15. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said generators each comprise a microwave signal source and a gain controlled microwave amplifier.

16. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said means for analyzing output is connected to said means for controlling microwave amplifier output amplitudes.

17. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein analyzing includes K audio frequency filters.

18. The apparatus in accordance with claim 17 wherein there are N microwave generator.

19. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 including a mode partitioning means which provides N outputs for each of said K audio frequency filters.

20. The apparatus in accordance with claim 19 wherein said N amplifiers each have K inputs from said mode partitioning means.

21. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N amplifiers have K inputs less the mode partitioning means outputs which are so small that they may be omitted.

22. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said mode partitioning output device outputs each include a diode connected to each microwave amplifier gain control to provide isolation between all outputs. 23. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said K audio frequency filters are chosen to correspond to the critical bandwidths of the human ear.

24. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N microwave generators are each adjustable in frequency output.

25. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each N microwave generators is determined by anatomical estimation,

26. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator is chosen by determination of the effect of external microwave generation on the EEG of the subject.

27. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each of said N microwave generators corresponds to the subject's microwave modal frequencies.

28. The apparatus in accordance with claim 27 wherein the subject's modal frequencies are determined by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull.

29. The apparatus in accordance with claim 28 wherein the subject's lowest modal frequency is determined by varying the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception is obtained by the subject In 1989, James C. Lin wrote Electromagnetic Interaction With Biological Systems which deals with transmitting ideas and words via electromagnetic waves.

Brief cases, stereo speakers and boxes are some of the disguises that the CIA has been caught using to hide their ELF microwave emitters that plant thoughts in people. One victim who spent time talking to Fritz Springmeier reported how they had repeated tried to trick him into going to free hotel rooms and other traps, where they tried to bombard his head with the idea that he should sell drugs. He cleverly dismantled their devices which they hid in the ceilings and other locations in these rooms to protect himself from the thoughts they were trying repeatedly to beam into his head. He was on the run as a fugitive to protect his mind. Naval Intelligence and other groups have conducted research into ELF waves upon the human body and mind.

Some of the many things that can be done to the human body and mind with ELF waves include:

a. put a person to sleep
b. make a person tired or depressed
c. create a feeling of fear in a person
d. create a zombie state
e. create a violent state
f. create a state of being sexually aggressive
g. change cellular chemistry
h. change hormone levels
i. inhibit or enhance M(RNA) synthesis/processes
j. control the DNA transaction process
k. control biological spin and proton coupling constants in DNA, RNA & RNA transferases.

Unfortunately for us humans, ELF waves can penetrate almost anything. The U.S. Military has built a Ground Wave Emergency Network (GWEN) all over the U.S. with several hundred 300-500' GWEN towers that broadcast a very-low-frequency wave (VLF) for mind control of the American public. A single GWEN tower can broadcast up to 300 miles in a 3600 circle. Plus 8 secret powerful ELF transmitters have been established and 3 of them operate on the west coast.

Prozac and Slaves and Microwave Towers

Some of the Monarch slaves are receiving Prozac. Prozac (fluoxetine hydrocloride-a serotonin re-uptake inhibitor) is dangerous for everyone. Prozac is now the second most used drug in the world. Three examples of the ongoing nightmare now happening worldwide: September 14, 1989--Joseph Wesbecker on Prozac went crazy and got a gun and opened fire in the Standard Gravure Building in Louisville killing eight and wounding twelve others before killing himself. 20 suits against Eli Lilly were filed by victim in this case.

July, 1990--Rhonda Hala of Shirley, NY filed a $150 million suit against Eli Lilly charging that Prozac had driven her repeatedly to attempt suicide.

August, 1990--CCHR called on Congress to ban Prozac and 3 widows in Louisville, KT filed $50 million lawsuits each, charging that a man on Prozac had been driven insane to kill by the Prozac and had killed their husbands. Two other lawsuits were filed in this time period, one from Indianapolis, and one from Chicago from people driven to attempt suicide by Prozac.

Certain brain activities trigger people on Prozac to become homicidal or suicidal. Thanks to research by Illuminati controlled companies, the Network knows exactly how to used ELF waves vectored on a particular person by 3 separate towers to stimulate the Prozac controlled brain to murder. This is being used to increase acts of anarchy and violence in order to help insure anti-gun legislation. If a slave doesn't comply or needs to be thrown from the Freedom Train they can become a useable statistic. Simply trigger them to murder and then watch the police gun them down. The NWO gains one more statistic and another case to scare the public into accepting gun control.

The Use of Waves and Electricity to Implant Thoughts

The programmers are always trying to outdo what they've done before. They are not satisfied with the old recipes for scrambled brains, they keep inventing and refining new methods. Anything and everything within their grasp has been tried. They have found that ELF and VLF electro-magnetic waves can be used to control people's thoughts. Harmonics and sound waves are used to manipulate the RNA covering of neuron pathways to the subconscious. Harmonic generators (code named "ether-wave") are able to imbed detailed commands which are linked to audible triggers. This is one of the standard features of the Monarch program. It allows the slaves to be controlled by trigger words which make no sense or seem to carry no negative connotation to outside listeners. For instance the words, "Mr. Postman wait and see" (a Marionette command) might set off an access sequence so that a slave living away from its master goes to its master (also called a handler).

The use of harmonics has taken away much of the work of the big programmers. Now harmonic machines can implant the programming and codes that the Programmers put in. It's quicker and perhaps more efficient, although the lesser cult groups have to get by with the older methods. And the Illuminati still have many excellent programmers in full-time and part-time use. According to an eyewitness, their top-programmers are far beyond their 1950-60 predecessors like Mengele.

There are four types of brain waves: alpha, beta, delta, and theta. The four basic models of Monarch slaves have the same names as these four types of brain waves. High level Illuminati models may have programming that includes all of these types. According to one ex(?)-government source, the CIA has been labeling their harmonic-created total Mind-controlled slaves by the following: Bravo 2 series models are men programmed to run the Beast computers. Delta series are models for espionage and assassination. Juliet series are sexual mind controlled slaves. Kilo 5 series is military espionage. Michael 1 series slaves are CIA agents under total mind-control. Operation Greenstar was the Mind-control project to create UFO abductions scenarios. Much of the high level programming in the 1980s and 1990s is no longer done with human programmers, but is done via programmed machines using drugs, electricity and harmonics.

Tracking/ID Implants

A great deal has come out in a whole number of Christian books, as well as secular books about the microchips that are being implanted in both people and animals. These microchips will do many things, depending upon which type of microchip they are, however, some of these microchips emit coded signals which allow satellites with computers to track the exact location of the person or animal carrying the chip.

Obviously, a Mind-controlled slave is not going to have the freedom to reject a chip like this. This gives the owner a method for tracking the slave should they ever escape to their exact location. Many of the slaves, CIA agents, and military men have these implants already. Many Desert Shield troops (to make sure they weren't lost in the desert) were required to get the tracking implants. Some countries are making it mandatory for pets to get tracking implants.

Monitoring Implants

As I write this, I have the report "An eight channel micropowered PAM/FM biomedical telemetry system" written by the Space Biology Lab/Brain Research Institute of the UCLA Center for Health Sciences, of Los Angeles, California 90024.

What they are reporting on is an implant which will electronically report back what is going on with a person's body to whoever is monitoring the person. Their "biotelemeter" consists of a signal conditioner(s), multiplexer (for multichannel systems), and a transmitter. The entire size of the implant is 6.35 cm. by 0.97 cm thick.

EEG monitoring is being done of free-swimming divers by implants. A frequency of 2300 Hz. was used on the first underwater monitoring devices.

Communication Implants

First, we will give an overview of the subject and then we will cover the details of how the technology works. In the Bible it predicts that in the end of church age that the rulers of the world "These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the Beast" REV 17:13.

Robert Muller, a member of the Illuminati, and former Assistant Secretary General of the UN, who has been involved in setting up a "Peace University" in Costa Rica, said in a symposium "Toward a Global Brain, Our Next Evolutionary Step" (Nov. 9-11, 1984 "We are beginning to link together to form one-world, minds and souls. Let go of our own beliefs - crap stuff. We stand now at the threshold of the first spiritualization of humanity.

The goal of having a single "World Mind" is being advocated by people tied to the Illuminati and the New Age Movement they have created. In the New Age book Gods of Aquarius the author advocates, "The only viable solution is to link the brains of all men into one giant super brain. It has been the entire species that have been developing and it must be linked into one super being. A synthesis of human minds in a world brain."

Hollywood put out a movie in 1970 called Colossus-The Forbin Project which shows how the ultimate computer will dominate the minds of men. Unfortunately, the Illuminati now have the capability via their fronts to implant transmitters that will communicate messages to the human brain that are received via computers. The ability to literally have a single World Brain is within the grasp of the elite. They must now simply figure out methods to accomplish it. All this New Age talk by world leaders like Robert Muller about a single World Mind is not hot air. Unfortunately, the technology is here already. Will humanity stop the secret elite, or will humanity continue to slide into deeper slavery?

CIA programmer/researcher Professor Delgado wrote in Physical Control of the Mind in 1969 that, "Brain transmitters can remain in a person's head for life. The energy to activate the brain transmitter is transmitted by way of radio frequencies." The radio frequencies used to transmit to brain implants are usually from 15 to 35 KHz. Radio frequency analyzing computers hooked up to computers have charted the radio frequencies being used to transmit to victims with implants. (See Mediaeko Investigating Reporting Group. Brain Transmitters What They Are and How They Are Used. 1993, pg. 8.)

The use by handlers of Frequency shift signals, which is a special way of modulating through a given spectrum of frequencies, has been observed and recorded. Some of the first brain transmitters looked like bullets and were placed into the victim's brain via the nose. In the late 1960s, some of the transmitters were simply swallowed, or carried externally by the victim. Small wires imbedded behind the ears are one of the implants. Sometimes implants are placed within the pain/pleasure center of the brain, which allows the handler to manipulate what feels great or what feels painful. The Intelligence agencies have given their implants a whole variety of names. Some of these names for brain implants are:

EDOM -- Electronic Dissolution of Memory
EEOM--Electronic Enhancement of Memory
ESB --Electronic Stimulation of the brain
RHIC -- Radio Hypnotic Intra-cerebral

Control Terms that accompany these techniques include:

PREMA--Personal Radio & Electro-Magnetic Frequency Allocation. This is an individual's personal frequency which is scanned by a hand-held device (such as a Reading Wand).

PRIME FREAK--This is the Primary Frequency of an individual, which the intelligence agencies will obtain and then manipulate to control an individual.

VITAL HUMAN BRAIN FREQUENCY-- This is a frequency that is vital for humans, (the 800 MHz band) which is manipulated for mass mind-control.

In 1978, Samuel Chavkin warned in his book The Mind Stealers "With the increasing sophistication and miniaturization of electronics, it may be possible to compress the necessary circuitry for a small computer into a chip that is implantable subcutaneously. In this way, the new self-contained instrument could be devised, capable of receiving, analyzing and sending back information to the brain, establishing artificial links between unrelated cerebral areas, functional feedbacks, and programs of stimulations contingent on the appearance of predetermined wave patterns."

Since Chavkin wrote this in 1978, the Network has come a long ways on miniaturization and sophistication of their implants. One of the most important end times communications systems of the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies is their ALEX system. This will operate on several levels. The electronic end of the ALEX system which stands for Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmission (ALEX) is a method for encrypting electronic transmissions so that a computer which could decode 5 Trillion codes a second would take 2,000 years to decipher one of these transmissions. In other words, when the ALEX system is operating--it cannot be decoded. The ALEX system has 700 Billion Trillion codes! Yes, the intelligence agencies/Illuminati have really outdone themselves with overkill on this one! By the way, this is very ULTRA secret.

The ALEX system intersects with the Monarch Mind Control Programming.

The ALEX (also called ALEXUS) is part of the tracking and AntiChrist-Call-Back Programming. Outside computers are able to interconnect with the Monarch Mind Control slave and call them back for AntiChrist activities. In other words, the Council of 9 of the Illuminati has placed an alter by the name of Alex or a similar name in high level slaves and they have either via implants or some other type of programming made these slaves available for programming via electronic communications that tie in with their ALEX computers. (Fritz Springmeier touched on this AntiChrist programming in his "Chapter 3 Mind Control" monograph in 1992, when he mentioned Imperial conditioning.) Actually Imperial and Emperor programming are programs that work in conjunction with the ALEX system.

All the police in this nation are to have their communications encrypted by Christmas, 1995 in time for the start of the most intense period of anarchy. The concentration camps, FEMA, FDIC, and the all the rest of the acronym monsters are switching over to the secret operational frequencies which this paragraph will now provide you. This will be 912 meg. to 954 meg. using either or both the ALEX or General Dynamic scrambles. Motorola is providing the hardware. In other words, when the most intense period of anarchy and arrests begins, the New World Order (Big Brother) will have electronic transmission capabilities which will be totally secret. Even police transmissions which can be listened to now by the bad guys will no longer receivable.

The Illuminati have been saving their best technology for use during their takeover in the next few years. Implants within slaves are being used to communicate such thoughts as (actual samples of things sent):

a. "murder your family"

b. "the government is to blame, murder the President"

c. "you can not get legal redress for what has been done to you by the government"

d. "it is hopeless to fight us"

e. "you want to have sex with the opposite sex"

f. "you want to deal in drugs"

g. "you want to protect your country by being loyal to the CIA"

Since the early 1960s, the Intelligence agencies have been putting two-way radio communication implants into victims. This is called telemetry or remote control. The radio wave enters the implant, the implant transmits it to the brain, and the brain's reaction is then picked up and relayed back to a computer which decodes what the brain waves show the brain was thinking. These implants in the early '60s were half the size of a cigarette filter. A few of victims have managed to escape the control of the System and get x-ray pictures of the implants and then have them removed. One victim in this Portland area has tried for years to find a legitimate surgeon to remove the implant. Liquid crystals are said by some to be used. It is said that the liquid crystals are implanted to function as transmitters. Others say that the liquid crystals were tried and were lethal.

Accessories

It was discovered that if a strobe is flashed into the eyes at ten cycles/per sec. or 10 hertz (hz), the brain will retuned itself to that frequency. The brain will downshift from a beta state of consciousness down to an alpha or below. The entire cortex is influenced by the strobe light. Actually, this was just a rediscovery of what some of the ancients had discovered. Flashing lights have been used by people to go into altered states for a long time. Ptolemy, the famous ancient Greek astronomer built a wheel that would flash sunlight, and people would stare at this contraption and go into an altered state. As with many inventions, they can be used for good or bad.

The following machines are things that anyone can purchase, just like a stun gun or a cattle prod. An array of mind-altering electronic devices have been created over the last few decades. Personal light-and-sound machines that alter the brain's consciousness that were once $60,000 dollars are now a few hundred. They have goggles that fit over a person's eyes. The Synchro Energizer, which requires a trained operator to run its control panel, is a machine to electronically alter the brain's consciousness with a sound and light show. Nine lights work via the goggles to give a light show to alter the brain's wave pattern. It is sold by Synchro-Tech of Cleveland via Syncho Energize on Broadway, NY. An operator can start the Synchro Energizer at the brain's high beta waves and then takes the wave pattern downward through the alpha, and then to the theta and sometimes into the delta (the sleep state).

There are smaller machines designed to do the same thing, such as the Relaxman, built by Synchro-Tech. Comptronic Device Ltd. has put out a similar but superior machine called D.A.V.I.D.Jr. It can place a person into a deep delta wave sleep. These are just what are available to the public. Imagine what NASA, the NSA, and CIA have. If one needs to work with more than one person, the Synchro-energizer ($60,000) also built by Synchro-Tech will place 32 people at the same time into altered states of consciousness. This machine uses full-spectrum lights to change the brain's state of consciousness. The Lumatron machine uses strobe lights that can be set to eleven different frequencies. When the light is directed through the retina it is converted to an electrical nerve impulse called a photocurrent. Eventually, the photocurrent passes throughout the entire brain.

Genesis is a machine which measures the brain's responses and then matches music to that response. Hospitals and corporations have been purchasing Genesis machines. The Twilight Learning Device is a bio-feedback machine that has an EEG machine hooked up to two tape recorders. There are dozens of technical articles on a whole host of subjects relating to the implants. This is a vast subject that really needs its own book.

FOR FURTHER STUDY of the big SUBJECT of IMPLANTS the reader is directed for starts to the FOLLOWING ARTICLES:

'Scotland on Sunday, 2 April 1995, had an article about how U.S. and Swedish scientists have pioneered a method to graft neurons to a computer chip. Stanford University, CA helped with this. A person can now be "hot-wired" to a computer, such as Arnold Schwartzenegger in the film Total Recall.

LA Times, 8/17/94, article about the Hughes Identification Device which is a tracking implant (microchip) which is called SmartDevice. 6 million/per year are planned to be quietly inserted into people during surgery. 'In a recent article "Alien-Human Interactions: the Facts and Propaganda" by Karla Turner, she points out that many alien abductees (like herself) are "monitored and harassed by human agents of some sort and the cases of phone and mail surveillance are only part of the story.... He was compelled by some post-hypnotic suggestion.. .there is strong external evidence that these events have been carried out by strictly human agents and not by aliens giving the illusion of a military presence." She goes on to explain about the implants, wires & tubes that are put in victims of "alien abductions". Karla Turner doesn't know that she is a victim of trauma-based mind control, but she's getting close to understanding what she has been subjected to.

‘The Journal, Alexandria, VA, Nov. 8, 1995, carried a story "Surgeon, a UFO buff operated and found..." The story was by Steve Chawkins of the Scripps Howard News Service. The article talks about a Ventura, CA surgeon who has removed implants from abduction victims. The implanted items that are removed from victims, disappear when sent in for tests to determine what they are.

'Relevance Magazine-art. on Beh. Mod. implants.

Fortean Times #83, Oct.-Nov. ‘95 article on Russia’s mind control called PIS which is similar to America’s. Barry Karr of the Center for Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal states, "We haven’t heard of anything that, without the shadow of a doubt, couldn’t have been made here on Earth. Let’s see the evidence."

It is clear that some people are now realizing that these implants are being placed into people by human slave owners, who simply are hypnotically telling their slaves that they are aliens. IBM began work on the implantable microchips under the cover of other goals. In the 1960s G.E. took over the development. Honeywell continued the work after they merged. The R2E Division of the cIIi Honeywell Bull in France has then gone on to develop the Smart card. Lithium batteries in implants were secretly being used in the 1960s long before the public got wind. Fairchild has publicly announced several years ago that they have a bio-chip the size of a human hair with 4 times the capacity of the BT952000 project. These are some of the companies who have provided the Network with a large assortment of implantable chips.

In Summary

Electro shock is used to control a slave and to erase memory. Stun guns are used daily on some slaves. Slaves are under so much control that they will shock themselves if the master wants them to. Equipment has been developed to alter states of consciousness electronically, and also to track, and monitor slaves. The most serious development in electronics for mind control is their ability with high tech equipment to actually place thoughts into a persons mind. Harmonic machines (given code names) are now being used to do lots of the programming. Powerful individual & mass mind control can take place via electronic means; our question, who will control the controllers of these electronic means? So far the American & European people have been content to let them get by with what they have done.

Chapter 7 The Science of Structuring

A. Structuring of MPD Worlds

The purpose of the mind-control is to build a System within the mind that is a human robot. It would do no good to torture the slave and get thousands of pieces (fragments of the mind, alter personalities) if these were not structured.

Very few Multiples have ever really gotten to see the deeper parts of their Systems. Many of the early successes of therapists were actually only the integration of the fronts of Systems, while the deeper cult parts were left fully functioning. The integration of the front alters was only a ruse to allow the therapist to think the patient was healed. The Illuminati’s organization, whose identity still remains secret to the therapist, can continue to use the ‘healed" patient. Everyone was happy, therapist, client, and the abusers.

Also I might add the book publishers such as those who published Sybil are also happy. Sybil is an occult first name--but the book, movie and therapist give no hint that ritual abuse might be involved in her system’s MPD (DID). The victim of When Rabbit Howls (a book & a movie) shows clear signs of having a full-blown highly structured and programmed MPD (DID) system, but the movie doesn’t even hint of programming or Satanic involvement. The whole movie was a big slide. The Illuminati know the details and minutiae of every new direction the therapeutic community decides to take.

Indeed, a number of their people are leading the pack, providing leads and misleads. Their first goal is to keep therapists on side roads, away from the real issues. The second goal is, if they do get onto something, to bring the slaves in, and structure in defenses so that the therapists don’t go anywhere. And then when one has success like we have seen, they eliminate front structures and front alters, and turn to massive reprogramming, and skillfully linking primal traumas with the new programs. Bear in mind, the internal programming alters are also always alert and will restructure the system constantly if alters work against their programming.

Restructuring is a process that can continually go on, not something completed when the victim was a child. For instance, new levels of alters can and are created when the victim is in their 30s, either by the internal or external programmers. From observations, it is clear that the most drastic changes are from the external programmers, who can work much faster than the internal programmers. In the beginning, the programmer must bring order out of the chaos he has created. He must use some type of structure to place worlds.

In recent years, these have been solar systems, galaxies, and planets, because they have gone to Star Trek, Star Wars, Alien types of programming. Each planet may have a type of alter--a family, if you will, of alters who are similar. They will not be able to travel to other solar systems, or stars, or galaxies without transportation. Spaceships, and teleporters have now replaced the elevator that the older systems used to go up and down the worlds. When the programming begins, it must be simple enough that a child can understand it.

One game that was excellent to teach internal structures to child victims was Chinese checkers. An innocent game, but a great vehicle to communicate placement of alters and structures. Alter patterns would be placed upon the hexagram board with marbles. A marble would represent an alter. Notice that alter colors (and/or jobs) can be coded by what marble is chosen. A ruby alter can be a red marble. A blue coded alter is a blue marble. Structures which are to be superimposed upon each other in the child’s mind, are easy to superimpose. Take one pattern - of marbles off, and place the superimposed pattern of marbles over the same place. This is how several different structures can be tied together in one locality in the mind. This is one way structures can be layered in. The Hexagram checker board was called "The House of David" in one victim.

B. The Creation of Roles Internal, External, Dependence, etc.

Many splits in the mind are not developed into full blown personalities. Some are simply fragments which are given a single job assignment. Generally, a System will have about half a dozen alters which frequently take the body and hundreds of alters which only occasionally take the body.

Internally, the System must carry out the following functions: Protect all information and history that relates to the creation and use of the slave. All the structuring and codes of the System are also secrets and need to be guarded. The programming and the very things that the slave can think about need to be guarded. The slave is meant to be entirely self-governing. The best boss is the boss who gives a directive and can go do something else while the person receiving the order carries it out without input and supervision. The Monarch slave is the prime example of how to delegate authority. The delegation of authority allows both the master and the victim himself to blame the victim for the orders they carry out. The satanic cults will hide their alters which make money for the cult behind the blood and gore alters. This protects their illegal money making operations. Alters must learn to function as designed by the Programmer. If they can’t work together, the Illuminati will try to get them to work together somewhat akin to a mechanic fixing a car. If the alters can’t be fixed, they and their System will have to be thrown away. The dramatic disparities of all the alters goes hand in hand with what at first seems apparent, then not apparent, and then apparent again--there is a unity beneath the multiplicity. Alter functions and abilities overlap with other alters. No alter is entirely separate from several common pools of intellect and dispositions that are attributable to the entire alter system. Alters are real and separate persons. But the common traits that run through an alter system are also real. One alter system may have a streak of kindness and gentleness that runs through the entire system. There may be a few alters which have been battered enough not to display the trait, but the trait is so pervasive that it characterizes the System. The programmers are also skilled at building in alters who can serve as balancing points. Unless the system of alters has balancing point alters who are calm, cheerful, and emotionally stable, a system could easily self-destruct with all the shatteredness, pain and craziness that has been intentionally built into the system.

Each level or world will have a balancing point. When the System is being charted during the early programming process, a Mother of Darkness and the Programmer and the Grande Dame will make a decision on how to label the chart. By the time the child is four, the weaknesses and strengths that characterize the alter System have been recorded on charts and the child’s destiny in life determined.

The chart will read what occupation the child will be made into, and what its function for the overall Illuminati plan will be. This determines what types of programs and alters must be created. Most people are still unfamiliar with multiplicity and their rigid thinking is challenged by the concept that one mind can have several personalities. On the other hand, they can understand perfectly that a computer can wall off sections of memory, and they can understand perfectly that a single human mind is superior to all the computers in the world assembled together, and yet they can't let go of their basic simplistic foundational understanding of life that one mind has only one personality. They will allow a computer this ability but not the human mind. The creation of multiple personalities also divides responsibility within a person. A person who lives with a multiple, say for instance their handler, will form widely divergent relationships with the different alters. In terms of programming, each dissociated fragment of the mind may be molded into something. Some fragments lend themselves to be molded into full personalities, and some lend themselves into being molded into single-purpose fragments, and some must be discarded. A part of the mind can be developed into a full-blown independent personality with all the idiosyncrasies that any other person has.

Bear in mind, that generally the Programmers consider color identification and the coded numbers to be more critical for identifying an alter than a name. A name humanizes the alter. Names are sometimes attached later if needed by a handler.

Some handlers simply refer to their sexual alters by their generic name "kitten". Others may have a specific cat name such as "Tabby", "Bast", "Hecat", "Adandara" or "the Lion of Judah" for an alter. Keep in mind, if full blown personalities are created, it happens for both the benefit of the victim AND the programmers. During the Monarch Programming an average System will have at least 1,000 alters, but not all of these will be personalities designed to hold the body. For those who need to get a handle theologically on how to approach this, it is suggested that they approach it as a city of persons. A city has both a unity and a multiplicity about it. It also must carry out certain basic functions if it is to survive. All cities have administrations and city planners, and justice, and police, and garbage collectors, and entertainment, etc.

The early Illuminati researchers soon accepted that their victim of multiple personalities is in essence a city of people, and so they used that understanding to construct in the victim's head, using the victim's creativity under torture and drugs to create all the structures and features that accompany a geological land. The map of the Land of Oz in the Wizard of Oz books was frequently used for the front parts of a System, with some additions and subtractions. The engineering of the structures within an Illuminati Monarch slave, looks like the original designs were done by engineering specialists--perhaps even Boolean algebra was used to develop the original designs. However, once working models of systems were proven to function without fail, lesser skilled programmers & technocrats could help assemble a Monarch System of alters without fully understanding the engineering and all of the demonology/magic behind it. Just like in a city, some people have friends and know others, and other people are strangers and enemies, so it is with an Illuminati system of multiples. Some alters may be aware of each other, and some may even hate each other.

When building a system, the Programmers take advantage of their knowledge of how multiplicity works. Two alters can have several possible relationships which are:

a. two-way amnesia, where neither alter knows about the other's existence. This is what the Programmers want for most alters. They don't want multiples to even know they are multiples.

b. one-way amnesia, where A alter knows B alter, but B doesn't know A. This can be accomplished by setting in one-way mirrors.

c. co-presence, two alters can come on top of each other at the front of the mind and hold the body together. This produces some strange behavior for the multiple as different alters synthesize their thoughts. When a tough alter comes up behind a Christian alter, the Christian alter may find himself letting loose of a cuss word without knowing where exactly it came from. When a child alter comes up behind an adult, the adult may find itself talking like a child.

d. co-conscious, this is when two alters are aware of what each other is thinking. As the Programmers structure a System of alters, they build in No-talk walls every so often where all communication and visibility between alters is walled off. These No-talk walls are specifically built structures and not the result of normal amnesia. A

13 x 13 grid may have, for instance, 2 No-talk walls. Other methods will be used to divide all the levels from each other. One method of dividing the levels is the level of trance for level 3 will be different than the level of trance for level 10. This will not hold true across the board, because some deeper alters are not in deep trance.

One Monarch slave, programmed beginning in the 1950's, described her System, Scattered Parts Broken hearts, divided parts, they all live inside of me. How many times can they divide my mind? Broken hearts with divided parts scattered throughout my mind. How many times can they wipe me out before I come back no more? Can they instill a will in me that is not mine? They broke my heart too many times and divided all the parts, then scattered them through time. Some are good and some are evil. How many times can they split my mind? The lights, needles and pain went on much longer than we can explain. Did these things happen, or is it what they wanted me to believe? Does God exist or is it what I want to believe? Does the store house exist where the computer is? Are there computers in me that help split me? Scattered parts, broken hearts, where do I exist? Is there a castle built inside? If so, what person am I? Lights, needles, and pain goes on today, or is it lies that are made up in a mind split far too many times. Broken hearts, divided minds, scattered throughout time. I don't want to mislead you. Did the experiments work? And they split me too many times? Lights, needles, and pain. They can wipe me out if I try to explain. Butterflies, butterflies, lots and lots of them. I lay down at nights with them. I wrap up in a blanket made of them. I hear their hum as they lead me to the lights, needles and pain. The needles and pain make it so I can not think. I get so sleepy, but I can not sleep. The pain races through my mind and splits it one more time. I have forgotten more than most will ever know. The computer will show how many times they can split the mind, break the heart; divided minds scattered throughout time. How many times before I can come back no more?" --received from therapist Denny Hilgers.

Our previous book They Know Not What They Do, An Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming-Mind Control, Oregon City, OR, 1995, p. 91, has a good description of how extensive the internal structuring is: "Many Systems never get to the point of seeing their internal world(s). Further, most alters have only a small spot in which they are to reside, and they don't get to see but a tiny fraction of the entire System. After these structures are built into the mind they continue to work and carry out their function on a subconscious level. Sometimes it takes years of work for a System to begin seeing their internal world. They can begin doing this by turning lights on inside of their worlds.

To make a comparison, when a person looks at a clock they see the finished result, the time it shows, but they don't see all the mechanisms. The structures in the mind are part of the mechanism to keep the System of Alters structured in a way that is useful to the abusers, but often all that observers will see is the finished result, the mechanisms stay hidden. But we are exposing those mechanisms in this picture and on this page.

A therapist's client may be responding in a way that makes no sense until one realizes the internal structures that they are responding to. An alter generally must maintain the spot in the mind which it is assigned. To leave that location in the mind, means traveling through a System which is filled with dangers and traps of all kinds. Only a few of our alters ever ventured where they were not to go, and they always encountered many obstacles. However, if an alter gets trapped behind mirrors, the alter should not break the mirrors.

If the alter is a Christian they can use the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth to bind and cast out the demons which are in the mirrors. The danger of the mirrors is the demonology involved. Some things work and some things don't. We are speaking from our years of experience. The mirrors are deadly and they were everywhere in our System, but they are deadly only if one can't deal with the demonology. The therapist should at least be aware that these images can be worked with just as if they were real to manipulate situations involving them. But if the structures are going to be worked or toyed with, the therapist and survivor need to have an understanding about the structures. If you don't understand the mirrors, or the River Nile, or whatever then be careful what you have the survivor do to them. The structures (the images) that are built into the mind of the Monarch slave are not trivial. An overview of the structures that are in our System alone will show that they went to a great deal of effort to build all kinds of internal worlds to house our thousands of alters.

A list of the internal structures that were contained in our System follows:

Ant pits, Bee Traps w/ swarms, Black Glass Wall, Black Holes (vortexes), Boxes (Dr. Green's under J.J., boxes have buttons which access certain parts), Candyland, Carpet (Magic), Castles, Castle dungeon (torture chambers), Caves, Clocks (there are several incl. computer clocks), Concentration camp, Cords, Desert, Doll

House, numbered Doors by the thousands w/ red hot nobs, Elevators, Emerald City (connected to the castle), Eucalyptus Trees, Fields of "forget me" & island of "forget me not" (JJ's Prgrmg), Firewall, 2 Forests (singing forest with Cedars of Lebanon and Oaks, and a dwarfs forest which has 3 kinds of trees), Fruit Tree (programming tree), Glass, Glass coffin, Golden Keys, Graveyards, Hallways with red doors, Hell Pit or Hell Fire (7 levels--pepperbox. There is a glassy wall before the hell pit.), Hour Glass (matrix), House of David, Icetown, Invisible Countries, Keys (clock key), Libraries, Light side City, Marshlands, Mazes, Mirrors (constructed via access permissions) (One-way), Moat, Mountains, Nursery (glass), Ocean, Paper Trees, Petra Secret City, Playground, Poppy field, Portals (for altars and demons, like the third eye), Rubicon (outer space beyond the stars), Rivers (Nile, Rio Grande, Shenandoah, etc.), Room behind a closet (existence not confirmed), Seeds, Serpent tree, Shafts, Shells, Shifting sands, Shoes (gold, silver, and ruby slippers), Snake pits (traps), Spider chambers, Stairway, Torpedo Town, Tin Woodsman's Castle, Tree with square paper boxes containing Dad's music programming, Trojan Horse w/ armies, Tunnels, Valley of the Dry Bones, Volcano (to destroy & remake the system), Vortices (see Black Holes), Wasteland, Water (Moats), Waterfalls, Wind, Wires, Worms, and a Yellow Brick Road."

In order to use the multiple in different life styles--they divide up a system of alters into worlds of alters which rarely see each other. These worlds are also called cities. The words "city" or "world" are interchangeable when it comes to a Monarch System. Typically, they received names such as Atlantis, City of Refuge, Shangri-la, and Troy.

Later, after Candy Jones exposed the programming, there was a major shift about this time, and many of the Systems were programmed with Solar Systems. Each planet had a different group or race of alter or demon. The concept of Star Trek was helpful for this. Some of the Systems programmed in the 1970s, used Star Trek as their basis. The distribution of alters was similar to watching the various episodes of Star Trek. Alters that were created at the same time and left in an area of the System together are families. The programmers in their efforts to dehumanize these alters will stick to animal names such as referring to them as "litters". The front level of a System would often be given a cover. The front level might see their world as a basketball court, or several houses, or a dollhouse, or a street. The front world is set up to deceive anyone from discovering the true structure of the system. The programmers can link and unlink, and move alters around. Eventually they get something neat and tidy on a sheet a paper.

A standard Illuminati System is built like a 13x13x13 cube with an elevator shaft running up and down from the bottom to the top. The elevator is constructed as a piece of DNA and alters can ride up and down the elevator (go up or down in trance) to move when allowed. Most of the alters have no sense of time, and most of the alters do not hold the body very frequently. For various reasons most of the alters never grow up. Obviously, if they don't hold the body very much, and are dissociated from everyone else's memories, they have nothing to stimulate them to grow up. However, the Programmers must have some of the alters who can function as adults. For instance, alters who go into bars must think of themselves as adults. The alters which will hold the body in public will be hypnotically made into adults. The Network likes to leave many child alters, because most of them are pedophiles and they like the pseudo-pedophile experience of making it with an alter that thinks it is four years old. Or just the opposite, sometimes an adult alter will appear within a child victim, and this is a clue that this is an access/reporting alter.

Many of the Illuminati systems, especially Mengele's were set up on a 13x13 grid of alters. The grids are numbered top to bottom and side to side but not in the fashion one might expect. The typical Mengele grid will begin with 6 and proceed 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. However, the structure doesn't have to be a grid, any geometric shape works and has been used, such as a sphere, cube, or pyramid.

Dr. Star and his wife, who is an OTO programmer working out of Corpus Christi, TX likes to structure an alter system in the shape of the Seal of Solomon. The Yin-yang symbol is then equated with the entire Seal of Solomon. The all-seeing eye is placed in the center of Star's systems, just like Mengele would put in an All-Seeing Eye. The hidden Sun of Tiphareth is placed into Dr. Star's victim's systems, as well as the four elements, and sulfuric acid. Alters are then placed in the various positions around the hexagram.

Because therapists, (and Christian ministers) are generally unaware of the deeper occult things, they usually miss seeing the occult philosophies behind the structures. For instance, the elements of earth, wind, fire and water are not just part of magic--they are in Druidism considered the four zones (or directions) also called rings which are held together by the fifth ring--balance.

This is the basis of Celtic geometric art, metaphysical maps, and ancient Ireland was symbolically divided into four regions with a unifying fifth. This was the bardic view of the universe which is presented in the Vita Merlini (written by Geoffrey of Monmouth in 1150). Supposedly England, Wales and Scotland were also divided into 4 regions with a unifying fifth too. And all these four regions Ireland, Wales, Scotland and England are joined again in the U.K.

In Druidism, the four magical elements the Sword, Rod, Cup and Shield are unified by the Cord while the four elements are unified by the spirit. Ancient Druid stone statues of triple faced gods and goddesses still remain today. Heads were considered sacred by the early Celts which is why the heads of the top Grand Dames are preserved after they are ritually murdered. If an outsider really wants to understand why Illuminati systems are constructed in the fashion that they are--first understand that there is a great depth of meaning behind what structures are used to build an internal world. An ex-programmer talks about how the programmers would call upon Satan in high level rituals to "Tell me what to do, and I'll do what you want" to gain wisdom in how to design these alter systems. Within a System, a few alters will be given maps to the System. There will be a structure "map" which takes the system down through its progressive levels down to its fundamental or primal level. There will also be internal world maps, maze maps, or what some call programming maps.

How the Self of a Man Alter Consists of Shattered Shadow Alters, A Script, Mirrors and Assigned Demons

What really is an alter? An alter is a dissociated part of the mind, which is developed BY the programmers to be a complete personality. We will now explain what an alter is. If you were to look on the programmers' charts found in his grey 3 ring binder, or his lap top computer you would see graphs with alters with access codes. What are these alters? If the programmers didn't invest a great deal of programming and structuring, each alter would not be a complete personality. On the chart, the programmer will have a square on a grid where he will record the cult name, the front name, the alter's alpha-numeric pull up code and its grid number. What seems neat and tidy is really not so neat and tidy. That alter is really an alter with many shadows of itself. This is a family of fragments of that alter which hold parts of itself. There is a particular secret term that only the programmers use for these fragments, but for purposes of discussion we will call these fragments "family fragments" or "shadow fragments."

For instance, a Gatekeeper alter will have a shadow alter fragment that holds its fear, one that holds its pain, one that holds its anger, and many that hold its memories of abuse and torture. What appears on the grid as a square is in reality a box holding lots of fragments. The programmers understand how multiplicity works, so rather than chart an alter with 25 fragments coming off of it--they name the whole mess after the main alter they have created for that family of fragments. The main alter really is a fictional persona created by the programmers linked to numerous fragments of the mind. The mind of the child victim will cooperate with the torture and programming. The programmer will verbally discuss his programming scripts with his close assistants, for instance, the Grand Dame who helps him; but he doesn't record the scripts down.

Historically, the Programmers have always individually tailored their story scripts for each child. Because the best are master story tellers, who can make a story come alive, they do not need to depend upon stale written scripts. The Wizard of Oz, and Mother Goose books, etc. are read prior to actual programming session, to enhance the programming session. The final alters are recorded, but not the stories or the lies told them. After a main alter has been created and shattered, the programmers find this main alter within the mind and give it a personal history (via films, virtual reality headsets, stories, etc.), give it a job within the system, a place to live in the internal world, and its rules and guide lines on how to function within the system. It will be given scripts about the outside world. And shortly, we will explain those. This doesn't mean that alters don't exist--they are physically part of the mental makeup of a multiple's brain--but an alter's existence is not at all what it sees or what outsiders see. Both the alter and the therapist see only a small part of the picture.

John O. Bearhrs (Limits of scientific psychiatry, Role of uncertainly in mental health. NY: Brunner/Mazel, 1986, pp. 86-113.), who did therapeutic work with Multiples, recognized some of the process that we are describing. He wrote about how an alter when confronted with more pain, guilt, and rage will dissociate this mental hazardous waste into alters who function as internal garbage cans. He described a victim who had a jolly front alter Diane with a winning smile. This front alter dumped her pain on a small child alter Mary, who lived in an internal "basement". However, in one particular case Mary didn't want the pain and she passed it to Karl (a 4 yr. old alter), who cried and yelled so loud internally that Danny, a 12 year old alter who was characterized by toughness and courage took the pain.

However, the actual situation is more subtle and complex than Beahrs realized. Every alter creates shadow alters of itself to handle the anger, fear, guilt, betrayal etc. The Programmers are totally aware of these shadow alters and they work with them. If we picture an alter as a point in the mind--a dot or small circle, then we can for the sake of discussion picture the shadow splits off of that alter as rays coming out of that small circle. Now we have an image of something looking like a sun with rays.

Actually, in real life, after all the torture, the shadow alters holding memories and all the programs attached are simply one big mess that resembles the branches of a tree with leaves. The Programmers have made a thorough mess of the person's mind--and they need some clean way to deal with this mess they have created. So the Programmers use the imagery that best resembles the mess they have made. The victim is told they have a tree with branches and leaves growing through them. This tree with its branches grows through out every alter. The image of the vine and its branches is also used, because then the programmers can bring in the Bible to make their programming seem to be supported by God's Holy Word. The original alter is told that it is a mote of nothingness (a very tiny circle).

The programmers don't chart all the family or shadow fragments of an alter because they understand MPD (DID). The fragments will hold all the memories of abuse, so the alter can function. The fragments will also give the alter the appearance of the full range of emotions. If a main alter gets angry or feels guilty, what is happening, is that it has accessed its shadows to express the full range of emotions. The Programmers abuse an alter and get the Shadow alters. Then they hypnotically attach a memory cue (which is a code consisting of the alter's name, the date of the memory, and perhaps something else to complete the code) to the main alter so that they can access the memory anytime they want. Then they hypnotically & demonically build an one-way mirror between this main alter and the shadow alters they have just created. These one-way mirrors are like one way windows--the reason they are referred to as mirrors is that they are put in the child's mind via mirrors. Next, they ritually/magickly implant demons to guard the mirror(s) and to guard each memory held by the shadow alters. This separates an alter from knowing itself and its own abuse. The main alter has dissociated the pain, etc. to its shadow alters of itself. The Programmers then use the memory as blackmail to keep the main alter in line. The main alter has dissociated the pain, but will recover the memory if either one of three possibilities happen: a. the Programmer or handler says the memory code 3x, or b. if an event happens that triggers the main alter to remember, c. the main alter tries to remember the abuse and the programming, and in doing so they will be stepping outside of the circle assigned to them and will "break the circle & break the mirrors." Remember, how we described a Main alter as a small circle with the rays (shadow alters) split off from it. The shadow or family alters of a Main alter are the true history of an alter.

The Main alter is given the script to totally love the Programmer/Master. It should be angry at what has happened to it. The ability to direct that anger is lost with the dissociation, but might be retrieved if the alter remembered, so the programmers transfer it by creating some outside person or object for the alter to focus their hate upon. Elaborate hate scripts are then given to the main alter. The love of the Master now protects the Main alter from having to remember its pain. Very few alters and very few non-multiple people would want to remember such trauma and it is very unpopular in society to remember past traumas (how often have you heard expressions "let bygones be bygones", "the past is past", "don't dig up old skeletons", etc.) As long as the alter loves its Master, it is somewhat safe from remembering its own traumas. And yet for a Monarch slave to regain its own mind, the alters must regain their own memories. That is why to really break down the programming, memory work is need.

That Monarch slaves must regain their memories to heal is a hard one for many people and ministers to understand. Most deliverance ministries pray that God would take away their bad memories. Further, the programming holds the lies in place, and the demonology holds the traumas, programs, and memories in place. A Main alter is really in the middle of special purpose Shadow alters which have been split from itself. The Programmers do a reversal on this and tell the Main alter that it is on the outside looking in. Vagabond Programming (which tells an alter it is a vagabond) is then applied to teach the alter it doesn't belong to the inside world, nor to the outside world. It belongs nowhere. The Main alter will perceive that it is on the outside looking in at mirrors. The mirrors then guard the inside of the circle. To try to remember the truth is to break the circle of mirrors. The circle of mirrors has magical significance, because it ties in with the witchball or speculum which the witches have used over the centuries to see beyond time and space. The steps that the programmers do, can be explained on many levels. Many of these steps are done for special occult reasons.

One of the first things taught to a child is "DO NOT BREAK THE CIRCLE". This has both the internal meaning "don't go after you own memories and the external meaning "don't leave the cult--the circle." Special black mats (such as used in wrestling) have been constructed by the Programmers. The first black mat is a circular mat with a 4' radius. The next black mat has an 8' radius (with a donut hole with a 4' radius) so that it can fit over/around the first circle. From there you have concentric donut shaped pieces of mat each four feet wider in radius than the previous, which can all be joined together. Each of the concentric circles will have a different colored circle painted on its edge. The victim child while it is in the crawling stage will be placed onto the middle dot and told to stay. They will be punished every time they move. When they finally can do this obediently, they will be given the 4' circle. Toys will be placed outside of the painted line (which may for starters be a blue line, then perhaps green, and then red). Just off of the mat are interesting things like a full bottle, a blanket, a coat, food, toys, etc. The child is cold, hungry and bored. Will the child obey and stay in its circle? If it doesn't it will be punished by being mildly shocked, or having its head dunked into a toilet, or its hand punished, and it will be set back in the circle until it's will is broken and it learns to submit to the order to stay in the circle. This teaches the victim child several things: don't step outside of boundaries, don't break the circle, it teaches them the colors that will be used in the color programming of the internal world, and it is again traumatizing. What they see, hear and do will now be done in obedience.

Does the reader see how hard it is for the child & its alters to move outside of the scripts? Alert readers will realize that there are 13 colors in Illuminati systems and that means 13 x 4 feet = the radius of the finished 13-concentric-circled black mat when all the pieces are laid down. This means a large indoor area with a floor space of at least 124' across in needed. Military bases, hospitals, churches, and universities like Oral Roberts University have gyms or auditoriums which the Illuminati use for this stage of the programming.

The Presideo

Mother of Darkness alters train the children. The Presideo had a great place for this training. This is the programming for the "Circle Will Not be Broken" script. The Amish do something similar, to make their children obedient, which is one reason the Monarch programming is easy to hide within the Amish culture. This type of programming is referred to in chapter 5 about the fronts and the Top Secret Amish Front. Let us briefly mention, that some systems are simply concentric rings (levels of alters) each assigned a different color. Another twist to the color coding--an alter in some circumstances may have two colors. An alter may be coded Black below white, so that when it sees black color below white it is triggered. The sections on a soccer ball, have been colored and used for a programming visual aid. Various researchers who have tried to identify: What happens when a normal non-multiple subject is hypnotized to not feel pain? Of course, the subject consciously tells the hypnotist that he feels no pain, but researchers such as the Watkins & Hilgards have demonstrated that the subject under hypnotism dissociates the pain to another part of the mind. In other words, hypnosis and MPD (DID) which are both forms of dissociation are much closer in how they function than some people have realized. In fact, some researchers, who are well aware of how close the two dissociative functions are, have defined MPD (DID) as "spontaneous hypnosis" (Beahrs, 1982; Bliss, 1986).

The non-conscious area of the mind that hypnotic subjects dissociated to have been labeled "ego-states", "the hidden observer" and "a covert cognitive structural system". The giving away of pain, fear, and other traumas to Shadow parts is similar to what happens when researchers observe a person who is directed in hypnosis to not feel pain, unknowingly giving his pain away to a hidden ego-state. A hiding place where alters can go, a place of light which gives energy, is created in a System. The New World Order's One-World-Religion and their MindControl is organized on the hierarchal system with a S.P.I.N. front. The Illuminati and the occult world that they supervise has a strong hierarchial system both worldwide and within the slave. Fritz has spent a great deal of time researching and communicating to other how the hierarchy controls on a large scale, and how it is miniaturized and how this identical hierarchy is placed internally into the slave.

However, the big cover for the hierarchial arrangement is the SPIN principal. What is the Spin Principle?

S-P-I-N = Segmented Polycentric Integrated Networks.

If one were to diagram a SPIN organizational chart it would not be a conventional box type configuration such as an army company organization chart. Rather, it would resemble a fishnet with interlocking nodes with groups linked to many other groups and cluster around nodes. There is no center to the network. It is like the brain's electrical connections, with an overlap of functions, so that good cells can take over from damaged sections. A network (one of their buzzwords) is many times more greater than the sum of its parts.

The New Age author Marilyn Ferguson does an excellent job in describing how the Conspiracy's SPIN network functions. "This is a source of power never before tapped in history: multiple self-sufficient social movements linked for a whole array of goals whose accomplishment would transform every aspect of contemporary life. " Because SPINs are so qualitatively different in organization and impact from bureaucracies...most people don't see them--or think they are conspiracies. Often networks take similar action without conferring with each other simply because they share so many assumptions. It might also be said that the shared assumptions are the collusion. "The Aquarian Conspiracy is, in effect, a SPIN of SPINs, a network of many networks aimed at social transformation. The Aquarian Conspiracy is indeed loose, segmented, evolutionary, redundant. Its center is everywhere. Although many social movements and mutual-help groups are represented in its alliances, its life does not hinge on any of them." Ferguson, Marilyn. The Aquarian Conspiracy. Los Angeles, CA: J.P. Tarcher, Inc., 1980, p. 217. ---The next 2 pages are charts showing an hour glass & its turning mechanism, & how a section can have various codes, trance depths, etc.

The programmers enjoy setting up double-binds. One of their tricks is to create alters which are given negative spiritual roles with names to match. An alter may be named "unforgiveness", or "the one who doesn't trust anyone." For such an alter to trust someone, makes the alter feel like it is giving up its name, and therefore its identity. By combining the name with an identity that the alter doesn't want to lose, the programming intend to double bind the alter. The Satan alter within a System will see itself as Satan. The alter Satan feels that he is on the winning side in a war, due to the lies that have been told this child alter when it was created. A girl child alter will be made to think they are the evil male Satan. The point is that the identity of this alter is tied up with their negative destructive role in the system. The Christian therapist has a better chance to show Satan that the Rule of the Victor means that Satan serves Almighty God, than for a secular therapist to try to convince Satan that Satan doesn't exist. And if the secular therapist tries to debunk the Biblical view of things, what positive philosophy or spirituality is the secular therapist going to give this Satan alter to fight with against the inevitable external evil that we all face in life?

Standard Roles Within An Illuminati Monarch Slave

(Note: that depending upon what the System's occupation in life is, also determines some of the types of alters created. If the System is a politician, they will need special alters to deal with certain secret activities. If the System is a baseball pitcher, they will need alters that are trained to pitch.)

Alien alters for contact, bonding w/ aliens, & acceptance of mock alien invasion
Angel (imitation) alters for divine messages, these may be seen as Spirit Guide alters
Angry alters
Animal alters who are meant to act like animals
Assassination alters (Deltas)
Babysitter alters to look after keep them from popping out inappropriately
Blackmail alters (Betas, and Black Widows)
Bird alters (used for half a dozen various internal purposes, including ravens for suicide, doves for peace, orks to fly over the internal mazes, owls for wisdom, etc. The dove may be part of a false trinity.)
Child alters
Clockmaker & Clockholder alters (Also the Grim reaper may be associated with the clocks.) Core related alters to imitate or protect the core from anything
Coven alters to lead coven level meetings
Courier alters (Carrier Pigeons)
Data alters to hold information (this encompasses a wide range of alters, including alters who hold internal system information to alters who hold information for their masters.
Deaf & Dumb alters to prevent the System from hearing non-approved users say access codes.

Death alters to take near death traumas
Element alters (Alr or Wind, Water, Earth, Fire) for magick & compliance
Espionage alters
Firechild or Bombchild alters to make body feel like its burning
Flooding alters (often flooding comes simply from Shadow fragments)
Foreign Language alters
Front alters for a good cover
Gatekeeper alters to guard portals and gates Guard (or Blocker) alters to guard important areas of the System
Justice alters--alters who mete out justice for disobedient alters
Hierarchy alters to take part in Illuminati hierarchy ceremonies (there will be a big demand for many of these alters--different ceremonies and different times of the year are given different alters).
Hunts, alters created for the master's sport of being hunted
Loyalty alters which hold strong love & devotion to the master
Martial Arts alters to protect the System if need be
Mirror image alters, for deception
Monster alters to scare the other alters
Mouse alters to run the clocks (computer, and grids)
Nothing alters, alters who believe they are nobody, or Mr. Nobody, or "no-name.
Observation alters (these deep alters quietly observe all that goes on in an alter system. They may be called Watchers.)
Programmers, Internal (alters cloned after the original programmers to reprogram the System, also known as Internalists.)
Programming alters to help Illuminati program
Protector alters to protect almost everything in the System (essentially nothing is left unprotected in the System.) In some systems, these alters may even be known in the System as Warrior & Infiltration Alters. They may include such titles as Keeper to the Pit.
Ribbon Alters to send messages from computers to System areas
Reporting alters to give the master reports regularly, esp. important to monitor all activity by a therapist
Ruling alters, such as Queens & Kings
Run/return to master alters
Satanic hierarchy alters, to insure that system is controlled by Satan
Sexual alters (kittens for porn, S&M, etc.)
Scrambling alters to prevent alters from hearing Shell alters (to hide real alters from therapists)
Suicide alters (clowns, Russian Roulette alters, etc.)
Tranced, (alters tranced deeply to move up and trance the body)
Travel alters, which can sleep during travel or be oblivious to where they are going
Next we will discuss how some of these types of alters are created. These will be discussed in alphabetical order. It should be pointed out that generally the Illuminati choose one of the early front Gatekeeper alters to be the alter who knows the entire system as it is made.
This often is Gatekeeper no. 3. After the entire structuring is finished this alter will be hypnotically programmed to forget that they know the entire system. By the age of ten, an Illuminati system will have someone who knows the entire system. However, these gatekeepers get heavy programming not to remember.

Angry Alters

By the time the programmers are ready to create angry alters, the child victim has been well conditioned not to get angry, but to passively accept their abuse. The programmers have to get the child's mind to break with their prior programming to get angry. In order to do this, the child will be tormented without end for several days. This is one of the worst parts of the programming, and many children die in this stage. The Illuminati pick their most gentle Mothers-of-Darkness systems to work with the male programmers. If the gentle Mothers-of-Darkness slaves didn't bring some balance and affection to the child victims, the sadistic programmers would probably kill all of the children at this stage of programming. For more on this see Egyptian Armies just a little further.

Animal Alters. (Meant to act like animals) Although a large share of an alter system is dehumanized, there are certain alters which will be created to actually hold the body and act like animals. The alter may even be named "animal." A male or female slave may have dog alters which bark like a dog and get into the correct position to allow a Rottweiler/German shepherd/Doberman to penetrate the slave sexually. This is accomplished by taking menstrual blood from a dog in heat and smearing it on the victim. Animal alters are created by the standard dehumanization methods, and then shown films of what they are to become. Through hypnosis and behavior modification, the alters eventually accept the role they are tortured and programmed into taking. It's hard telling what roles the programmers have created, it could possibly be any animal, but cats, dogs, donkeys, horses, rats, and mice are common examples.

Christian Front Alters. Most Illuminati Systems have Christian front alters. Some of the early splits around 2 years of age are provided the chance to genuinely accept Christ. From these alters, two things will be done. Front alters who are Christians will be created, and satanic alters. In order to get dedicated Satanic alters, Christian alters are severely traumatized and God is blamed for not helping them. The Satanic alters will be deeply convinced that God has abandoned them. The Christian alters will dissociate all the trauma, and will believe that they are normal--nothing has happened out of the ordinary in their life. Christian alters will also, like all MPD/DID alters, tend to deal with overwhelming problems by dissociation. Many Christian alters will deny such basic things such as that a Satanic conspiracy exists. They often will be far more zealous than the normal Christian, because they do not have conflicting ego-states. If any situation calls for compromise of their religious beliefs they can switch to someone else--and thereby escape having to compromise.

There are many programmed multiples leading the Christian churches today. Christian alters are coached via the modern church and their handlers to only "spiritually minded" and not to challenge evil in the natural world. Some walk around believing that God will cure everything, which is true but not in the sense that some of the churches are explaining. That doesn't mean that all Systems will be "Pollyanish", but it can happen. The original Christian alters will be shamed and then hidden by the programmers. The "host" or "presenting" alter which holds the body will often be a Christian. This really helps hide the entire mind-control. Interestingly, a system of 20,000 alters may have only less than a dozen Christians alters, but the one or two strong Christian alters will exert a disproportionate influence on the System. The Illuminati has had a hard time controlling the Christian alters they allow. In their zeal to infiltrate, control and destroy the Christian churches, they have opened many of their top slaves up to the love of God, which has ended in the slaves trying to break free. Unfortunately, most ministers know too little to help these people escape.

Clones. The clones are little children who have been put into robot costumes and are trained to attack parts of the system which are not in compliance with the programming. The heads of the clones can be unscrewed. The clones can be taken out by various tactics--but there are hundreds of clones and they each have been numbered. The serial numbers are placed on them. An example of a clone's number at the base of the neck might be 158.00. This may either be a model or actual serial no. but often is tied to the birth date of the victim, which is generally part or all of the victim's Monarch serial no. To create the clones during the 1950s, movie scenes of the divers of the Nautilus of the movie 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea were shown. (With later models, such as in Star Wars programming, the robots of these shows suffice.) Some clones kill with a knife as the divers in the movie 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea. When clones surface and take the body they are cold. Programming is encased in a clone. Alters, particularly cult alters, may not be able to see the clones. They may be hidden in almost anything internally, including door knobs and walls. However, there is the possibility for the therapist that a net made of cloth woven of light can be dropped and the lumps will reveal the clones. They may be behind mirrors too. Water has certain properties that can stop clones, as well as magnets. Microwaves will take care of the electronics. A little microwave can take out a group of clones. Clones have many shapes--but they do not look like people. They usually have a switch to be activated. Atlantis may be set up as the world for clones, in accord with 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea programming. Whatever the style, robots & clones are popular items for programmers to install.

One of the major defects of the first few decades of Illuminati programming, was that the clones were set up so that water would stop them. Therapists could stop the clone armies by applying water on them. Recent models have corrected that deficiency. But when the clones are stopped, and the diver suits are taken off of the child alters, who are inside of the robot suits, then a child alter will be found which is in the same drugged state that it was in when it was being programmed. This child fragment alter will often have an I.V. (wires and needles) in it, and will be very druggy. It will be in its programmed war-like angry state. In Druidism, a swan was something dirty like a pig in Judaism. Some alters which are assigned to protect, are warned they will become swans. If the Queen of the Clones becomes a swan, the clones will become helpless. The Queen of the Clones (a triad) must do her job or be turned into a swan. Changing subjects to alter clones, Cloning programs include, for instance, Lollipop & Lobster programs.

Deltas. The Deltas are alters trained to carry out special missions resulting in death. The Deltas who are inactive are asleep. They must be activated. The programming to activate them will be triggered if a mission is given or if certain parts of the deeper parts of the system are tampered with. Deltas will work as a team with the Beta's to kill. An Illuminati System will be "magically" twinned during programming to be a Twin with another system's Delta alters. And these two systems in turn are joined in programming with another 2 person team, so that 2 person and 4 person teams can be constructed. This gives the Illuminati more flexibility in what kind of missions it can send its slave out on. 4 person assassination teams are very common. They had 2 four-man Monarch slave assassination teams at Waco, Texas the day that the Waco Branch Davidian building burned up.

How The Deltas Are Created. Illuminati Deltas are linked to the moon children, and are the offspring of the moon child alter in the early cage programming. In the early 1950s, the Illuminati would take a child and force it to watch another child, who they have bonded with, be incinerated alive in a crematorium at high heat which would not only melt the child but turn it to ashes. The form of the child in ashes would stay in the shape of the child until the crematorium door which would have glass in it for viewing would be opened. A small gust of air would cause the ashes to lose their shape. Watching through glass and feeling the fire and hearing the child scream was a trauma for any child. The Presideo and some of the Illuminati-run funeral homes which had this type of crematorium were employed for fire traumas. The fire trauma was done so that the child would visualize melting from heat. This melting trauma would then form the basis of the good witch/bad witch programming where water on a witch makes her melt like in the Wizard of Oz story.

The Delta and Beta alters are then to trance into their melted state whenever their programmers want them to function. Their functioning state is the "melted state". The programming is that the witches melt down to NOTHING. After a few years, the programmers realized that they didn't have to have a real trauma to get the programming done, because they could usually do it with a combination of hallucinatory drugs, hypnotic drugs, and paper dolls. Paper dolls which when cut out are all joined together would be placed on a grid similar to an alter grid on a platform. The right hypnotic suggestions are made, and the child believes these paper dolls are alive and are burned up. If the paper dolls didn't work, they'd go back to using a real child to get the job done.

Later, the lower cat alters are taught how to be hunted and hunt at the "life or death" Beltaine hunts. These hunts helped train alters which are then used to create the Deltas. The Deltas are not completed until later. To create a trained assassin, the alters were desensitized towards pain and death by being shown gory films with the eyes forced open. Hypnosis was also used. The potential victims were devalued, it is believed the Aryan alters which are very elitist and racist are used for Delta alters. Satanic rituals were also involved in the creation of the Deltas. Deltas will be trained in hand to hand combat--and know certain vulnerable places to kill people incl. breaking the neck. Training included a great deal of weapons training. In an early programmed multiple System, which was created and programmed in Nazi Germany in the 1930s, the assassination alters are placed behind a wall of ice. When the wall of ice is melted, these assassination alters are freed and they will go about their assignment to kill by using an ice-pick type needle poked into the heart of their prey. These Systems were infiltrated into the U.S. during the 1930s to build a foundation for when the Nazi's expected to win the war. Later, American Delta alters were taught the art of assassination by poking a needle through the eye of the victim. This kind of assassination is apparently hard to detect.

How The Deltas Are Activated. The access codes for the Deltas are structured different than for the rest of the System, except for the sexual/entrapment/espionage alters who are designed very similar. The Deltas may be black color coded. When the programmer wants to use these Delta alters, he will call them up from their genii bottle or wherever they are hidden deep in the mind. They will be commanded to melt. When they have melted into the nothing state, then the programmer gives an exact script of everything the Delta alter is to do, just like you would program a computer step by step-- from step a to step z.

For instance, the programmer might say, "At a certain place you will be in the melted state until you hear the words, "I'm going to Kansas City, where are you from Miss Ruby shoes?", at that point you will remain in the melted state and do part B of the script." As the programmer continues with the script, a Delta fragment will be given NWO codes, bank account numbers, and major sports numbers (so other NWO folks know who is going to win ahead of time). This fragment will simply be a mental floppy disk.

The Delta-Beta alters are habitually lied to by their programmers when they are given their detailed scripts. If they are carrying cocaine they may be told it is soap for needy children. If they shoot someone, then they will be told all kinds of lies about the person they are to kill. They never are really given a chance to step outside of their deep trance and to ever hear the truth about what they are doing. They live their lives in a surreal fantasy world where nothing really makes sense. They don't try to think for themselves, they just follow orders.

Since a mission may call for other alters to hold the body, the programmer must put together his Delta script so that two scripts can be intertwined. The programmer may work out something so that the Delta alter goes into a temporary sleep in the melted state while out on the mission. This way the programmer doesn't have to be present on the trip to bring the Delta alter back into its functioning "melted" state. The Delta alters can't be out too long anyway because they are not used to functioning in the outside world and they get tired fast. Several Delta alters can switch so that they keep having a fresh Delta alter come out, but eventually every one begins to get tired. That is another reason they will work in another script with front alters. The front alters are used to holding the body everyday. The front alters will take a vacation, while the Deltas work on their detailed script of carrying secret messages and maybe killing someone.

During an airplane trip, a travel alter will hold the body while the Deltas sleep in the melted state. Delta alters (who by the way have photographic memories) are given their scripts by programmers, not run-of-the-mill handlers. Everything is too fine tuned in the programming for a run-of-the-mill handler.

Delta alters have an internal hour glass, this hour glass may be a mural in their internal world that they look at. As long as they are obedient, the hour glass sands do not fall. If they are disobedient, the sand begins falling, and their life is on the line. There is no room for mistakes. If the sand runs out, death is to happen. Large hourglasses are often displayed in front of Delta-Beta slaves to remind them that there is no room for mistakes, no slack for disobedience. Their thinking is buried in fairy tales. They are programmed to see themselves in fairy tales, they are programmed not to see their handlers or anybody's else's face for that matter. Their handlers pretend they are fairy tale characters or aliens. These alters do not have a chance to understand what they are doing. If the programmers get tired of the slave's programming breaking down--and it does in part due to the severe abuse they get from these sadistic programmers/handlers, then they will simply give the slave an assignment in which the slave will end up dying, i.e. a suicide mission. This type of suicide mission is happening all over the United States with great frequency. An example would be a lady who is getting too wise about the New World Order, so a Delta is assigned to crash their car into the lady, and its written down as "just an unfortunate ACCIDENT with fatalities." A shop owner refuses to pay the Mafia for protection; so a Delta vandalizes and tears up the shop and has a fatal shootout with the police.

Foreign Language Alters

The Illuminati/intelligence agencies realized when they started making slaves with photographic memories that they could create different parts of a slave's mind to operate on different languages. Illuminati hierarchy systems will employ foreign language alters for several purposes:

a. to facilitate the alter working in various situations, for example French is helpful to work with Catholics in Quebec, and with the Cambodian/Vietnamese criminal syndicate that the Illuminati set up in this nation. A high profile example of this is Bo Gritz, an officer of the Delta Force, who due to his photographic mind (created via brain stem scarring) can speak Mandarin Chinese. Mandarin Chinese is not normally an easy language for Americans.

b. to hide things in a system.

Examples of this include code words attached to Greek and Hebrew letters for body programs. Another example is having Latin phrases for accessing deeper parts. If an entire area of a system is put in a foreign language, and the system is not given any alters capable of translation, then you have very effectively isolated an entire section. For instance, systems are being created in their early teens which are sectioned off into 5 or more languages, say for instance, German, Spanish, French, Italian, and Arabic. Some of the Systems created in the late 1950s, already were employing some of this. Since the very best Illuminati programmer in the world is European, and speaks several languages you can expect to start to see more and more of this "Tower of Babel" programming (multi-language systems where parts can't communicate.) The reader realizes that such multi-language capabilities are always secret until the person starts breaking down the programming. The programmers tell alter systems that God wants this programming done, because God confounded all the languages & then spread people into the 4 corners of the world.

Gatekeeper Alters

The Gatekeeper alters are just that. They protect the gates or portals to all System levels. Infrequently, the programmers may also call them "doorkeepers", or "tollmen" & "toll women". The victim may refer to them as guards or blockers, although Gatekeepers are more than guards, they are an entrance or portal to something.

Gatekeepers may often be the alter that was split to get a particular section. Each gatekeeper may be at a deeper level trance than the one before it. When a Gatekeeper is split it creates a natural link to the alters that are created from itself. Then the Gatekeepers are given programming not to see what they have created and what they are natural portals to. These steps create a natural portal for the deeper alters. One-way mirrors are usually installed between the Gatekeeper and the section they guard, so that the deeper alters can see out, but the Gatekeeper can't see in. Besides splitting off entire sections from the Gatekeepers, clown alters will be created from them to keep the Gatekeepers in line. The first row of doors in a system--which the front Gatekeepers protect are often set up as the "red door(s)".

Deeper in the system, other Gatekeepers will be stationed in front of important systems, and these other doors will have a different color code than the first set of doors. To train gatekeeper alters, they are taken to a door and by behavior modification techniques (i.e. severe torture) they are taught not to go beyond the door. They are to hold their place and not step through the door. Then they are strongly programmed via hypnosis to forget the training session, but not the lesson. The first row of Gatekeepers can have no tie to the cult and no tie to the outside world. They are taught they are vagabonds. The only real tie they are allowed to have is themselves, and they are aren't allowed to know who they themselves are. The standard programming for Gatekeepers is to mess them up with love-hate double binds. Gatekeepers are often very melancholic and if they go against their programming, they or the alters near them can easily commit suicide. The Gatekeepers always receive heavy programming and heavy trauma. Front line Gatekeepers may be near the front of a System, but due to their heavy programming, what they say should be taken with a big grain of salt. They usually provide outsiders with the lies the programmers have so skillfully convinced them to believe.

Illuminati Gatekeeper alters are in 3 parts. The higher numbered gatekeepers have a pedestal which they are rotating on. A cat, a butterfly and a porcelain face are the three kinds of alters which are joined together and rotate. The deeper Gatekeepers on Illuminati models must be locked in place before conversation can ensue. The Gatekeeper alters are non-sexual, and programmed not to see what is below their feet which are the sexual alters. A stacking mechanism has been created to call each gatekeeper alter out and stacked on each like a deck of cards. This command for some systems is "Stand in order according to rank & serial no. [said 3x]." Another stacking mechanism can be achieved to place them all on the potter's wheel according to order with "See no evil, Hear no evil, do no evil" which originally was accompanied by a hand movement of exposing cards. The NWO's Charismatic branch give their deeper gatekeepers Porcelain Face Programming. Sometimes, the frontline Gatekeepers also get Porcelain face programming. The movie Ghostbusters, which has been used for a programming script on some slaves, has a very strong demonic "Gatekeeper" in the show. Janus, the two-faced god, was a gatekeeper, & the 1st month which is the gate to the new yr. (January) is named after him. The Illum. Great Rite ritual has a Gatekeeper (male) and Keymaster (female) to produce an AntiChrist child.

Hierarchy And Deeper Cult Alters

The deeper cult alters may be placed in a crystal ball and the Cabalistic Tree of Life. The Mother-of-Darkness alters will be set up on the Maiden-Mother-Crone trinity of the occult. Stormy alters, and there may be 60 or more deep level Stormy alters per system, are alters that are to be involved in all the man-made "natural disasters" that are planned for the period of anarchy. Sergeant alters are deeper call back alters who will be commanders of programs for the AntiChrist takeover.

The deep front alters of the Mother-of-Darkness, Grande Dames, or Grande Master alters will not be in a deep trance. They need to be fully alert for what they do for the Illuminati. However, since they are only out at special points in time, all they know is Illuminati life and philosophy. Illuminati philosophy will include such things as "Pain is strength. The pain we suffer will give us the strength to conquer." The Sisters of Light (the level before the Mothers of Darkness) will be under the leadership of a Queen Mother. She will direct them to abduct a handsome male for breeding purposes. After the handsome male is used for breeding to get a male child for sacrifice or a female to raise as a Sister of Light, then the handsome male will be sacrificed. The Sisters of Light wear white for this ceremony. Because these alters only know the traditional ways, they don't have a realization of what they are doing.

An Illuminati multiple will carry on ritual functions at a number of different levels in the occult. There will be different alters for different levels and different ritual dates. The back part of a hierarchy system will not be worked until a sealing ceremony involving Egyptian magic at the age of 19 in late Apr.-May. Three keys are given at the ceremony, which is tied to astrological events. The 19 also represents 9 + 10 doors in the system. Then the back (deeper hierarchy) alters will begin to be used. This back half of the System will be shaped by pathworkings of the Cabalistic Tree of Life. In the first levels of witchcraft, they will think they are worshipping a male & a female god. By the third level they will be informed they are worshipping one god-Lucifer. Some Illuminati groups, which are Jewish, worship a female god at the coven levels.

The secret Illuminati set of documents that the Bavarian government confiscated in 1784 and published as Die Originalschriften der Illuminatensekte, Munich has an accurate organizational chart on p. 32 of these reprinted Illuminati papers. There were 130 or levels. Six of these are functional. Monarch slaves who have internal worlds with 13 levels, with 6 functional and 6 hidden are not much different than the actual hierarchy structure. In the Illuminati covens, each coven will secretly have a copy of The Book of Ages, which is vellum, and is basically a Who's Who of the Illuminati, and a copy of The Book of Generations, which explains the 13 bloodlines and what belongs to what generation. A handwritten magickal Book of Shadows will also belong to the coven. Only the Keeper of the Books and the coven leader will know about these things. The coven will also have a Keeper of the Seals which pertains to vows and oaths.

After Halloween, the coven leader (priest or priestess) will secretly send all the coven records to headquarters in Europe. It is important to realize that the internal structuring of an Illuminati alter system will correspond to the external structures of the Illuminati. This may not be an exact one-to-one correspondence. Understanding the Illuminati hierarchy ranks, which by the way had remained secret until Fritz Springmeier's recent Newsletter From A Christian Ministry in Jan. '93, is important.

Within the male membership in the hierarchy you will find the following positions, Grande Druid, Grande Master, 5-star general (Servant of the Pentacle), Asmodeus, Ipsimus (or Royal Ipsimus), and Supreme Master. Bards are wise men within Druidism. Within the female side, are the Sisters of Light (9 grades), the Mothers of Darkness (11 grades), the Grande Mothers (13 grades), the Grande Dames, and the Queen Mother. Each of the 13 bloodlines have their own governing monarchies, upon which the numerous mob crime families are modelled. This particular arrangement may have developed from Basque witchcraft rather than Druidism. Generational thrones (kings, princes, priests) are very important. The Kings are called Olympians. All of these bloodlines cooperate by having councils. Three groups have been identified as preserving the plans for the world rule by the AntiChrist, the Keepers of the Dawn, the Order of the Quest, and the Order of the Garter.

Egyptian Armies

The Egyptian armies are hundreds of fragments which have been programmed to have uniforms and to function as parts of an army. The main gods or spirits of Egyptian magic may be the names of the captains of the armies, such as the following names Isis, Osirus, Horus, Set and Ra. Thoth can be another name. In the Temple of Set, alters with Egyptian names abound, and aren't restricted to fragment armies. The armies are built to protect various internal structures. The technique to make these armies are to torment the victim child in such a way that they make the child very angry. At the peak of the child's rage, they split the mind. The result is lots of child alter fragments which are angry. These are collected and shaped into an angry army of little children. When an adult Monarch slave, triggers a protective army the adult alter finds themselves with angry children alters who are like a large crowd of toddlers who are screaming their heads off. There is no way to reason with these child fragments. Imagine trying to reason with a little 2 year who is screaming. Without anyway to reason with them--the adult alter has little defense against such an army.

Flooding Alters

Flooding alters can be used as singles or as a group of alters. There is almost always a number of flooding alters in a system. They are developed by using drugs which lower dissociative barriers. The drugs were used when these alters held the body and the drugs caused all the dissociative walls to come down. These alters hold the memory of this flooding. Drugged alters in weird states can also be pulled up to make a system feeling crazy.

Gems

The Gem alters are early child splits. These alters are treated as bad as possible. They are literally defecated upon, and pissed upon. They are intentionally dehumanized and taught to think as little as possible about themselves. At some point, these alters who have no self-esteem are told that they are something precious as Satan's gems. But they are warned that if they ever talk to someone on the outside, bombs will go off. Various bomb mechanisms are constructed using other alters and imagery. If these bombs go off, these alters will be so dysfunctional, incoherent and in shock that the therapist will not be able to work with the System again. The Gems are then used to transmit the mind of Satan to the System. Beyond the gems, and the hour glass disciples, there may be a stage which has more memories hidden. If a therapist gets that far, see how to raise the curtain.

Looking Glass People

The "Looking Glass Images" is the Illuminati name for mirror image alters, who are split off of main alters in order to confuse everyone but the controller. Sometimes these alters can be spotted because an alter will say, "I don't know if I'm inside or outside, I think I'm inside." As previously mentioned, many alters also have shadow alters created from themselves to take their pain. It will be appropriate to discuss the overlays that the Illuminati place over real alters. The Illuminati will try to hide real alters with pseudo alters, mirror alters, mirror images and other tricks. Some alters are demons, and others are simply illusions of the mind. Shell alters prevent therapists from talking to the real alters.

Mirror Images

Mirror images are purpose fragments whose job is to confuse both victim and therapist. When an event happens, the abusers will fragment the alter who participated in the event, and create mirror images of that alter. This means that no one has the full memory. An alter doesn't know if the mirror image is itself or something else. It's very confusing. A triangle is formed by

a. an alter

b. its mirror images

c. demonic mirror images.

When an alter tries to recover a memory it goes round and round in a vicious cycle and finally concludes the memory is false. If one alter holds a memory, an alter close to it will have no feelings attached to the memory and will find it difficult to accept the memory as its own. It's like wearing someone else's coat, it may fit, but it just isn't your own. Mirror images, & pseudo-alters are layered in, so that it becomes perplexing to identify where an alter starts & where it ends. Therapists may think they have integrated alters, & actually only integrated their mirror images. Looking Glass People are similar to the mirror images. The Programmers may create a looking glass alter by having a drugged alter(s) of the victim endure the trauma of seeing someone's face peeled. Then the victim's face is also pretended to be peeled--by pulling off something like elmer's glue which has formed a surface on the victim's face. Then the dead person's skin is placed over the victim being programmed. The Looking Glass People are charted on grids and contain lots of the programs. They are confusing to the regular alters, because they appear internally like mirror images.

Programmer Alters

Internal programming alters, which are "clone images" of the 3 primary external programmers will be placed into a Monarch system. Of course the programmers want to remain anonymous, so these programming alters are faceless & wear white robes. They are given vast power in the authority structure of a system, & can move wherever they need to move. When programming is discussed by a victim & therapist, they will appear.

Reporting Alters

These alters are programmed to record everything. They lack an overview of reality. They are child parts that only know their job. The reporting alters will be involved in the recontact cues. Recontact alters are alters which are unaware of the abuse. The programmers may promise these recontact alters favors if they "report to Daddy." For years, many therapists have worked with clients and never realized that the secret and well hidden reporting alters were reporting everything back to the handler.

Scrambling Alters

This is one of the hardest type of programs for the victim to master. To make sure that the victim's mind is very alert a drug is given which clouds the thinking. The alters must try exceptionally hard if they are to concentrate and learn what their job is. They will learn how to take something being said and scramble it. When alters are not supposed to hear something, these alters will be called up by the internal programmers & they will sit on top of other alters and scramble everything they hear. These alters are technicians who usually enjoy the mastery they have over their difficult assignment. Therapists can give them a new job scrambling incoming cult messages. Scrambling programs (linked to triggers for scrambling alters) have at times been given names such as "AC DC" & "FLIP FLOP."

Sexual Alters

The early sexual trauma is designed to familiarize the child with sex, and to access the primal part of the mind. The torture and sexual abuse eventually becomes gratifying to the mind. The mind does a reversal, pain becomes pleasure. At any rate, the programmers are trying to get a type of nymphomaniac. They accomplish this on one level. The sexual alters have no feelings attached to what they do, and their masters never allow them to enjoy sex. They are not to have climaxes, although they may be coached how to fake it. (For punishment if a slave gives trouble, the programmers might even hypnotically or surgically sew up the clitoris to insure the slave receives no gratification. The Arab sheiks of Saudi Arabia will cut off--destroy-- the clitoris of their Monarch slaves in the same fashion that the Moslem world does with all their females.)

The Programmers have been heard to program their slaves, "Don't be a hustler and don't pick up strays." The programmers must now ‘‘groom’’ these alters. Little boys begin to be orally sexually molested when they are three. That is the standard age. Females (and some males) need to learn how to appear and act seductive. The programmers understand human nature. They understand that there is a spectrum of female sexuality, where on one end of the spectrum females guard their bodies with their minds, and on the other end they guard their emotions with their bodies. When a woman guards her emotions with her body--she is the type who craves sex for the physical pleasure of sex. There are an entire cluster of behavior traits that go with this type of personality, such as the way they walk, use their eyes, stare at men, the way they dress etc. The sexual groomers and programmers will teach the sexual alters these clusters of behavior. The sexual alters will also pick up lots of expertise naturally during the years of having to sexually service hundreds of abusers in every fashion imaginable. When Roseanne Barr, a Monarch slave, in her recent T.V. interview with Barbara Walters said, "I'm been screwed every possible way," she was not exaggerating.

The Gumby Programming is to make the slave think their body is like Gumby and is flexible to move into any position. The slave is repeatedly threatened with their life, if they do not perform perfectly. The sexual techniques of the world have been collected and improved upon by the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies such as MI6, & the CIA. There are techniques to use with old men, for porn movies etc. which the common people aren't even aware of. The intelligence agencies and the military, when they use a male Monarch slave for covert activities, will find a female slave whose personality matches the male and pair them sexually during the period that the male slave is used on covert operations. This is done to ensure that the other side doesn't take advantage of the male's sexual desires. Subjects such as how to train alters for espionage & prostitution could be books in themselves. The Illuminati have male instructors who teach small classes of females about the power of seduction & how the male brain shutdowns when their sexual organ gets involved. Finishing schools like at Youngstown, OH teach sexuality performance based on fear of death. The male & female sexual slaves usually are highly skilled technicians who don't have emotions attached to what they do.

Names

There are some examples in professional literature which will serve to illustrate how the alters in an Illuminati system are named. A therapist in a professional magazine provided the names of a client's alters, which were Karen J, Karen Jo, Karen Ja, Baby Alpha, Middle Alpha, Adult Alpha. One of Frank Putnam's clients, (who had PET scans done showing how different alters have vastly different PET brain scans, which are not exhibited by people who only pretend to have MPD), had a Pam 1, and a Pam 2. These three methods here are common methods for nomenclature. In a 13x13x13 grid of alters, the top 2 sections of 169 each will usually have a quite a number of duplicate names. Our hypothetical Mary, would have a Mary 1,2, 3...11, 12, 13. She might have Eves 1-13 also. On the charts these would be Eve A, Eve B, Eve C, etc. She could also have a George Ann, a Georgee, a Georgette, a plain George, and a little child George, and several alters attached to these who have no names. Sometimes alters will be set up with first names and a surname, so that a family of alters will all have the same last name (surname). Some alters are not named by their abusers, they must fend for themselves in figuring out what to call themselves. They only have access codes to pull them to the front of the mind.

There seems to be no end to the variety of names of alters. Some are named after the quality they have like a robot named Steel, or a crazy alter being named Dementia, or a animal alter being named Animal. However, a number of names keep popping up in System after System, so for what it's worth here are some popular names that Fritz has seen occurring as alter names: the Adepts, Alexis (or Alex), Angel, Anna, Baker, Charlie (or Charles), Crystal, Death, Jezebel, Lilith, Queen, Sadie, and Samantha. This is not a scientific sampling at all, just an observation based on dozens of alter systems which have shared some of their alter's names.

Boxes And Self-Abuse

We will now discuss one method of placing boxes into an alter system. Between the age of 4 and 4 1/2, an Illuminati child would be taken to Scotty's castle, CA for programming. A cedar chest would be placed in front of a table. Two Illuminati children well into their programming would be assigned to guard the chest, which would be called the Doctor's box. They would have "clean slate" alters who knew nothing but their hypnotic commands to guard the doctor's boxes. Expendable children would be coached to come into the room and try to get into the box. The Illuminati children would be given strict orders to kill them if they tried to get into the box. If the children failed in their guard duty, they either got more programming or were in turn expended. The Illuminati children had sharp swords with which to guard the box, which had 3 seals on it.

Internally, Mengele would then hypnotically program in countless boxes with 3 seals. Locked up in the boxes would be self-mutilation and body programs, etc. Therapists should know that these boxes are deadly. After reaching the level of obedience where they would kill for the programmer, the Illuminati children would be placed in a deep well for a well-trauma, and then while deep in the well would be given various orders such as "cut yourself," "probe yourself (electroshock oneself)" and other self-abusive things. The well torture would usually work at teaching the "clean slate" alters to abuse themselves. During many programming sessions, the victim is told "you must pass a test, will you pass the test?" There is something that is more motivating in these words, than if the truth were said, "you must endure these traumas, for our enjoyment and to become a slave for
And to quote a line from the film When Rabbit Howls, "The worse things got, the more of us showed up." The mind keeps protecting itself by dissociating the overwhelming abuse.

C. Layering Programming is layered in.

Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each alter or alter fragment is used as if it were a component of a large system. The result is that no alter or fragment is the whole, only a cog in a great machine. Can a single cog rebel against the whole machine? It is very difficult for a single component of thousands of components to rebel against its abusers, when it doesn't even have the ability to realize they are abusers and not the alter's natural order giver.

Besides programs, items are placed into the mind too. Examples include vaults, safes and doors which need combinations & keys. The Illuminati Programmers see the layering in of programming as demonic. They feel the scripts, and movies are more "fronts" than the actual layering mechanism. They believe, as one ex-Programmer said, "This programming involves an organization system, established by horrendous trauma, for the alter personalities involving internal mental imagery, which is driven by demons, who provide the power. Undoing it requires an understanding of the mental processes involved, the imagery or blueprint used, and the spiritual dynamics." (By the way, some readers will be ignoring this as Christian propaganda. However, this was said, not because this person is a Christian, which this person isn't, but because this person wanted others to be set free. It's also true that the Word of God, the Holy Bible, which was the foundation of Western civilization, does speak about spiritual warfare.)

Systems

Now we will go into the various systems that are programmed in. The Programmers place into their slaves a combination of the following standard systems to make up the victim's programming:

a. Cabalistic Tree of Life
b. Carousel
c. Castle
d. Cave and well
e. Chess Board
f. Double Helix
g. Flowers
h. Helix
i. Hour glass
j. the Mensa system
k. Pentagram
l. Pool of Death
m. Potter's Wheel
n. Puppet System
o. Solemetric
p. Spider Web
q. Spiritual structuring
r. Stairwell
s. a Telescoping system
t. Tornado System
u. Umbrella

Also an internal timing clock (system) keeps time according to the rotation of ritual dates, which helps 'justify" the SRA, for "it's that time of the year."

Just a quick note: different programmers have different preferences for how they do things. It also may depend on what site they are using for the programming. Drugs and videos are frequently used to get the person to adopt the script they are to accept internally. However, harmonics and electronics are increasingly being used. Ritual and magical ceremonies may or may not have rigid scripts.

7-7.gif

A. Cabalistic Tree of Life

7-6a.gif 7-6b.gif 7-6c.gif

While the Cabalistic Tree of Life means little to most people, it is a very important--essential structure for Illuminati systems. Therefore, in describing how these systems are built it is important to describe this crucial magical tree. The reason all these following items such as Trees of Life and goddesses are placed into slaves is because THESE SLAVES ARE PART OF HIGH LEVEL SATANISM. The slaves are a reflection of the world view of their programmers. You and I wouldn't bother with all this because we are not into magic. That we find ourselves reporting all this, does not mean we endorse any of this. We don't. But the programmers didn't ask us what to place into their slaves. If you have a low tolerance for understanding the Illuminati's cabalism, skip on down to the Carousel system.

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

The Cabalistic Tree of Life is put into upper level Illuminati slaves. It is a very deep program laid in at about section (level) 11. The Cabala is the basis of a. Freemasonry b. The magic of the Illuminati Monarch programming c. The key to the spiritual mysteries of the Scripture (according to Caballists). Because the word Cabala is a word originating in the Middle East it can be spelled with a Q, a QU, a K and a C. All these spellings are O.K. It can be spelled with one b or two, etc.

Golem in the Cabala are ancient medieval mind controlled slaves--are these precursors to what we have today?

WHO liked to program this?

Mengele, and Wheeler (Dr. Green & Dr. Black) were skilled in the Cabala, especially Dr. Green (Mengele). Some of the Rothschild programmers have been too. Mengele learned from the leading Jewish Kaballists, during concentration camp days--Mengele himself was an Ipsimus in Illuminati. Undoubtedly, it is standard programming and many other Illuminati programmers must be doing it too.

WHAT is it?

The Cabala is synonymous with Hermeticism or Hermetic magic. The Cabala was Jewish Babylonian magic. The Jewish black magicians brought it to Europe. It began to get widespread notice in Europe after Enlightenment period. The great pyramid according to the occult is a symbol of the Cabalistic Tree of Life--the branches of the tree form the four streams or lines to the base of the pyramid. Because the Cabala is the basis of their hermetic magic, Illuminati systems will be fairly consistent in the make of a slave's internal Tree of Life and Tree of Evil. A Maiden/Mother/Crone triad goddess will sit at the top of the structure and will be married to the AntiChrist & Satan.

The Cabalistic Tree of Life area of the System may have up to 12 other trees. These are other magical trees. There are 10 circles or rooms which are joined by 22 lines that make up the Cabalistic Tree of Life called The Cabala for short. There are 4 worlds of the Cabala--3 pillars to the tree which are also given different names to these pillars at different times. As just mentioned, there are 10 spheres of the Tree of Life and they are joined by 22 paths. The Mother-of-Darkness alters (at least some of them) are placed in a Tree of Life, and they do what is called pathworking".

The spheres of the tree (also called rooms) are called "Sephiroth" and they along with the 22 paths that join them are the "file drawers of this universal file cabinet." Before the first sphere there are 3 veils of negative existence--the Ain, Ain Soph, and Ain Soph Aur. Alters in male and female systems in the Tree of Life will consider themselves to be gods or goddesses. Their names will often reflect god or goddess names.

Chesed is a sphere which may be called a “Hall of Masters” or the “Sphere of the Adepts". Geburah is called "Hall of Karma" or "Hall of Judgment". The Illuminati alters of course believe in Karma. The center of the tree is called Tifareth which means Beauty or Harmony. Understanding of the mysteries of sacrifice may be attached here.

If we think of the Tree as three pillars--the right, center and left pillars, then we start with describing the **right pillar** from the top room down--an Illuminati system will have Ishtar! Venus/The Morning Star/Lucifer in the top room. The next room below this will be an alter of destruction, an alter of change, unbinding and freeing. The final right pillar room at the bottom is associated with virtue/white/victory/endurance.

In the **middle pillar** at the top is The Crown. This is the Bride of Saturn (Satan, and the AntiChrist). The room in the middle pillar one down from the top is the Blue Room. Sometimes front Mother alters are in the blue room. Other rooms have other colors assigned, which then tie in with the computer color coding. The blue room is the balancing point, an important room, the center of all things, associated with the twinning. The next room down is the Foundation. This room is the meeting point for the ethereal and the earth. The next and final room down on the middle pillar is the Kingdom. It has the life force of the first male child who was sacrificed by the slave. This is the feet on the earth room.

The **far left pillar** has 3 rooms. The top left is associated with Midnight/the Mother/and water. The next room down is associated with Discipline and control. The next room down is an alter that performed an eating the dove ceremony.

Each of these 10 rooms will not only have its own name, but each room's alter will have its own magical name, which is not to be confused with its access code. The alter associated with Wisdom "Chokmah" (and maybe even named Wisdom) is usually full of good information.

In the occult literature, the tree is said to be attached upside down--that is its roots are in heaven. This applies to the internal programmed tree. Malkuth is the top of the tree. Malkuth is the "Gate of Death". There seems to be more gatekeepers at these lower levels. The Lord of the Earth is the power of Malkuth.

How it is put in? Our answer applies to Illuminati Mother-of-darkness level systems. Before a Mother-of-darkness system is 16 years old they will have gone through all the ceremonies involved in the creation of the alters which correspond to the rooms of the Cabalistic Tree of Life which is placed in each system. There is one alter assigned to each of the 10 rooms of the tree. Each one is created by a particular Illuminati ceremony. After the age of 16, the System will be guided on a personalized pathway by the system's own demons and the life force of the sacrificed baby under the tree which relates to the story of Lilith. Lilith is not a single driving force, but the demon Lilith is joined with Zerodieth and Lucifer.

Between age 16 and 19 the deep Satanic alters are working on "pathworking." This pathworking will be completed before they are 19. The ceremony at 19 will include the 1,000 points of light ceremony at the super secret Mother-of-Darkness castle of Chateau des Arnerois (Castle of Kings) close to the Belgium-French border in Europe and about 20 kilometers as the crow flies west from Luxemburg. This will be a sealing ceremony with the Mothers dressed in black. Guards and heavy forest protect the large castle from view. The people in the nearby spooky village of Muno, Bel, basically belong to the castle. The castle has a cathedral inside with a dome with 1,000 lights. The words 1,000 lights is an Illuminati buzz word. When the President used it to describe the White House's Christmas tree, hierarchy people knew what he was signalling. The cathedral has a great hall with columns on either side, and the Queen Mother's throne will be set up there. Only a single male waving an incense ball and robed in white with a red mantle with gold symbols will participate in 1,000 lights ceremony. Down in the secret basement is where an innocent child is sacrificed everyday to provide blood to write in a hugh book the record of how Satan is bringing his plans to fruition.

The strongman protecting the tree of life is Lilith/Zerodieth/Lucifer spirits amalgamated. Behind the 1st line of the tree are 880 demons, and tens of thousands more are attached to this whole apparatus. For 24 hours after one of the Queen ceremonies, the Queen alter is a queen and can have anything she wishes.

As previously stated, at 19, three keys are given, and the back part of the System begins to be worked. The System has an alter lay on a throne (like in Egyptian days) with a lily. The death, burial and resurrection ceremony also is done sometime in here. There are 9+10 doors to the tree which make up the number 19 (which is the year the system is sealed). This is tied to an astrological event. Note that every 19 years the full moon appears on the Summer Solstice day and this relates to the internal sun dial and what is called "moon swing." The Cabalistic tree needs balance and becomes operational with balance. Special rituals are chosen for each individual, so the rituals from one alter in one system to another will vary. Individualization may actually be a choice from a selection --that is menu of options--rather than actually totally unique.

The "Becoming" ritual at 19 begins in the ceremony of inhaling a dying mother-of-darkness's breath. Consciousness of the tree is achieved by balance. The Prana children are attached to the tree and its ceremonies. Lily became white when Moon child drew down the moon & exchanged herself for the goddess. She then drew down the stars of heaven (milk from the breast of the goddess). The lily she held in ceremony was the female challis to hold this essence or light of light. (this ceremony has sexual tones to it...) As Lily died in the ceremonies--drinking something from a special cup and laying down on an altar with candles at her head and feet) night was born. The liquid was wine with lily essence in it as well as Rue, which is a strong smelling European plant. Two things happen as lily is consumed--one conceives and one dies from poison.

Does this death and conception relate to moon cycles? Night = Nuit Noir = Black. She has names in two terms. She is death, permanence which preserves earthly attainments i.e. position, glory, possessions, etc.

What other items are involved with this programming? The rooms of the tree of life have names. Essentially, every Illuminati hierarchy victim, has the Cabalistic tree of life placed in them. This tree lies below the other trees. The circles that make up the internal Cabalistic Tree of Life are called rooms or quads by the various survivors. Alters can use the internal Tree of Life to work magic internally. It also reminds deeper alters of cult control. The circles of the tree are rooms that can be entered into. Mt. Qabbalah is a figurative mountain in the Cabala.

What kind of demonology is programmed in with this? In the Cabala, demonology is important. Ashmedai is Asmodeus which means king demon. Lilith is an important demon in Kaballah and is found in Ill. Mother of darkness systems. Lilith's story from the Cabala about mating with Adam and killing her son, is used in Ill. ceremony and programming. The blood of 1st born is placed in a box in the System under each tree. This according to the programming gives the "eternal life force to the tree." This is in line with occult doctrine of the power of blood, and also serves as a misapplication of the biblical "life is in the blood" concept.

Metatron is a lesser top god of the Kaballah, and is receiving lots of Hollywood attention in recent movies. The four mothers of demons are Lilith, Naamah, Agrath, and Mahalath (a.k.a. Rahab). In the Cabala each demon has its own seal. Samuel & Amon of No are important demon leaders in the Cabala. At least one System of the Mothers (and we can assume others do too) uses the Bilair, Bilar, Bilid cabalistic names for Satan, rather than Satan.

The Shekinah rules the Cabalistic Tree of Life. This is not the Shekinah of God Almighty, but from the self-proclaimed "father of light" Lucifer. There is a "Tree of Evil" said to be below the Tree of Life which is all spirit and not alters. This Tree of Evil has spirits attached to each room rather than alters. In contrast, both alters & spirits are attached to the 10 rooms of the Tree of Life. Various precious stones are attributed to each of the sephiroth rooms, as well as occult archangels. Again if we look at the right pillar at the top is Beelzebub with Chaigidel as assistant. The Knowledge Abyss separates this room from the room below.

This next room is Astarte with Gamchicoth as her assistant. The final room on the right is Baal with Hareb Serapel. The middle pillar at the top is Satan & Moloch in joint rulership. Below that is the Daath room. The room below is Belphegor, and the bottom room on the middle pillar is Lilith with Gamaliel as assistant. The far left starts at the top with Lucifuge. Then below that is Asmodeus. And the final room on the left is Addramalech. Finally, below the bottom middle pillar live the four elements of life; air, water, wind, and earth. Note that what is at the bottom is really at the top. On the other end, the pyramid with the all-seeing eye rests on the two Cabalistic Trees. Ratzkiel is the archangel of Chokmah. The angels which carry out Ratziel's directions are the Auphanim (the wheels), a name full of symbolism and programming possibilities. Tzafkiel, the Archangel of Binah is the Keeper of the Akashic Records, where all the System's days, lessons, and lessons to learn are kept. Since the library records are spiritual, during deprogramming they will have to be wiped out. However, I'm told that there is someway to retrieve them. Some therapists are using sodium pentothal or whatever to get access codes--but there is another way to recover some of the records.

What Are The Codes Like? Gematria might play a role in Monarch codes. Gematria is a Cabalistic teaching about numbers meaning letters. Gematria is used a lot by Moriah. These are the magical numbers that also serve as letters to the Hebrew alphabet. Certain deeper alters are good at working at astral levels. These alters have "ASTRAL" or "CRAFT' codes, and code names, which will include codes from the names of herbs, spices, jewels, and alpha-numeric codes. Simple equation codes are also used in the deeper levels. HOW does this program relate to the twinning? Many survivors have roses incl. red roses. The Red Rose in the Cabala is associated with the Tree of Life. The Red one is assoc. with one part of the tree and the white with the other part. When paired together they make a blue rose which is the Rose of Malkuth. It may be possible that Red Rose and White Rose were used in the twinning and that a Cabalistic blue rose results in such a Monarch twinning. That last statement is only a supposition.

Speaking of roses, Rosemary (the Rose of Mary) is an occult term for a woman who conceives a dark child. It is also associated with a fragrance of the Mint family. The Willow Tree Vs. Oak Tree As A Programming Hanger For Moriah's Programming Alters of an Illuminati System, due to programming, will perceive a tree growing in them which has roots in their feet and its trunk and branches extending throughout their body. Upon this tree, fruit (programs) are placed. Illuminati programs may be to cut a "tree" limb off (which is actually the victim's arm), or for a certain part of the body to get hot, or for a certain part of the body to physically change in some way. These are attached via the tree imagery. Both oak and willows are trees are used.

Why might a programmer choose a willow tree rather than an oak tree in the basic programming? The answer lies in why a tree is used in the first place. A tree is used because of its imagery and because of its magical powers according to Druidism. There are a number of images a tree provides and there are a number of magical powers too. We will discuss the contrasts to develop our answer. The oak is a well-known powerful Druid item, but the willow tree is also sacred. The oak is so well-connected to the Druids that some of the other sacred trees of the Druids are not quickly recognized as sacred.

Let us look at the intrinsic imagery advantages of the willow and then the magical properties it might contribute. The combination of the two, will then provide us with the complete answer as to why a willow tree rather than an oak tree might be used.

Imagery . The imagery of a tree is used because it has branches, leaves and a root system. These items are manipulated for programming purposes. For instance, in the Alice In Wonderland programming, the girl jumps hypnotically into the tree and falls (hypnotically falling deeper and deeper) into the roots of the tree. The deep root system of the willow is an advantage over the shallow root system of the oak. When a storm comes the willow bends and doesn't break, while the oak is rather stiff and breakable. Since these trees are programmed into a person a flexible tree that can't be broke is an advantage. The wrapping around imagery of the branches gives a great deal of flexibility for programming and a stronger imagery than the oak. The willow draws water from deep below. The tree is "the tree of life" (the programs are the life of the system), and the Bible is used to "validate" the programming. For instance, the tree of life by the river (REV 22) is used.

There are some other images that are important too. During Illuminati rituals the willow branches are used as whips to "cleanse" people the victims of programming. The image of a willow branch could easily trigger the memories of being punished (whipped and being cleansed), and this in turn would help hold the programming in place. The fruit of the trees are the programs--and some of the fruit can be eaten and some not. Sometimes children's stories about lunch pails hanging from trees or fruit in the trees is used to create a place for the individual programs are hung--or this could be a place for the front programs, and the more important programs are stored away somewhere more secret. Bear in mind, the trees in the programming sing and are able to wrap themselves around people if they are going where they aren't supposed to go. The willow has that flexibility naturally, so it is easier to imagine it wrapping itself around a person.

Magical Properties. Most everything that is done programming-wise has a dark spiritual significance to it too. The programmers will look for things that serve their purpose both here and in the spiritual realm. The willow tree is used to make witches wands, and help to make witches brooms. (Birch can also be used.) It is planted around Druid/Celt graves to protect them spiritually. It is believed to also have magical sexual powers. It is possible that some of the programmers might prefer the magical sexual powers of the willow, rather than those properties said to come from the mighty oak. This is not all of the willow's magical powers. It is connected with February and April in different ways, and magically connected with spring. It's possible that the person receiving a willow tree might be born in this time period. Is it possible that what type of tree is selected could sometimes be related to when a person is born. Some programmers might be into being time appropriate--this would depend upon the beliefs of the programmer(s). The imagery of the willow's magical sexual properties could be worked into the programming, as certain alters might be asked to make certain brews, or taste of certain things hypnotically. This would be done at such a deep level it might not be known. Just as in the case of the Alice In Wonderland programming, when the person drops clear to the bottom of the tree roots they find themselves small and they go through a door. But when they come back the alter is not going to remember the trip and what they ate on the hypnotic trip down the tree.

Further considerations on the choice of Trees. It is possible that the we can question the question. That is perhaps the question is not that the oak or the willow tree was used to the exclusion of the other--but that BOTH trees were used in the programming. Generally, this seems to be the case. In one particular case, it is possible that in a double system (with a dormant third system as a final backup), the oak tree being the more obvious Druidic symbol and quite strong was used in the front system, and the totally secret second system has the willow utilized. When the one person attempted to snap the oak tree at ground level in a crude attempt to deprogram themselves, the root system regenerated itself through the first mirror image, and what came back was more spirit and more deadly.

Remember, the tree serves as an umbilical cord linking via its roots the person to their spiritual life force (which are the evil spirits which command and drive the system.) However, when the oak tree and its mirror images and the spiritual protectors (hideous spirits) were properly done away with, and then further deprogramming was done, a crack seems to have developed behind the pyramid crystal which allowed the person's original set of alters to experience a new or double system! Since that has happened it seems there has been an increased drawing to willows. In other words, for this particular victim it is conjectured that the front system (the fully operational set of alters) has an oak, and the duplicate set of alters which were each broken off of each of the original set) have a system with a willow tree. The trees roots of course are the umbilical cord to the source (the waters) that spiritually feed it. These relate to the soul ties. These roots have to be dealt with spiritually. They are so interwoven that they tie a person completely up with their roots and programs that are interwoven and wrapped around each other. Other high level Illuminati survivors also have a front tree and a back tree.

Another consideration is that the trees have flowers planted around them. Uprooting the trees are not sufficient for deprogramming, because the flowers are the deeper generational material and will regenerate the trees. Touching Lilith's box under the tree can release owls and monkeys and other animals that are dangerous. A generic code often can be used to take out the flowers.

What Are The Other Trees? Other important occult trees are the Tree of the Knights Table, and the Tree of Alchemy. There is such a thing as Tree Magic, which involves many kinds of trees and tree spirits. The Axle tree according to world wide occult belief has the earth revolving about it. Many survivors of course have the oak, willow or ash trees placed in as their principle tree or as their back up tree.

The final back up tree in an Ill. System might be the occult Yggdrasil tree (ash tree). The Yggdrasil tree has 3 roots (spiritual, terrestrial, and infernal) and has a cosmic egg attached to it. Generally only one tree is mentioned, but a back up tree exists, and then third tree which is a back-door back-up tree. Therapists should be cautioned that these trees often come in groups of 3.

What are the Backups? Beside the principle tree, the programmers will often plant a flower that represents the generational ties. If the tree is taken out the flower will regenerate the tree. The petals, the flower center, the stem and roots represent different generations of the victim. Understanding the Maiden-Mother-Crone combination in the Mothers-of-Darkness. Therapists are going to find Illuminati slaves having 3 alters placed together. This is part of how these systems are structured. The maiden is set up on the pedestal as the "a" alter. The first programming chart which shows all the "a" alters in the system consists only of the young maiden mothers. The mother or second figures are close behind the a's. However, the crone part of the triads is meant to hide in the background. They serve as the power of advice behind the scenes. These Mother of Darkness triads participate in various ceremonies. Their initial initiation ceremonies included water torture with electroshock, which is the death, burial and resurrection ceremony. There are the full range of Satanic holidays for the Mothers and a look at the frill range of holidays will provide a person with the type of ceremonies that the Mothers carry out, which include the two solstices. Different Mother-of-Darkness alters participate in different ceremonies. The inside of their black velvet gowns are color coded so that within the ranks of the Mothers are a whole series of ranks (grades). All of these Mother parts have been told they are divine goddesses. The following information will clarify this further.

The Mother or "A" Parts

The Mother part of the Goddess Trinity is the high point in all cycles. Traditionally her color is red, the color of life force. The Mother is associated with adulthood and parenthood. The Mother is ripeness and balance. Mothers actively work magick. She is a nurturer. She is confident and has no indecision. The Mother knows what she is. She is the full moon. Summer is the Mother's time of the year, the full moon is her monthly point of power. She is honored by Beltane (May 1), Summer Solstice, and Lunasa (Aug. 1). As stated before there are certain rituals which call for Mothers rather than a maiden or a crone.

Maiden Or "B" Parts

The young maiden part of the mothers is the equivalent to the "apprentice" level of the mystery schools and Freemasonry. The myth holds that the maiden will be eternally youthful. Even with the aging process, the goddess can experience youthfulness in the mind. The maiden is the creatress of new ideas. She also is the armed hunter of the Mother's laws. She is the Guardian of the Balance. She is aware of her sexuality. She is independent and not controlled by men. She is the Way-Shower, the Keeper of the Keys. You will find the maiden in the following rituals: New beginning rituals Plans for conception The birth of a child The first menstruation for girls Puberty rituals for boys

The Crone or "C" Parts

These alters rarely show themselves. They stay in the shadows and pass on advice. The crone aspect of the Triad of Goddesses has been called the Terrible Mothers, the Hag, the Dark Mother, and the Wise One. She is associated with black, death, winter, menopause, wisdom, counsel, reincarnation, and the initiator into the deepest of the Mysteries. The waning Moon is her monthly time of power. The crones number is 9. 9 is a number of wisdom and sacred magick. Nine is also a moon number, which means spiritual completion and wholeness. The crone has a cauldron. She is the great recycler. She is the ultimate teacher. She contacts the Spirits and is an expert on demonology. She is the Keeper of the Spiritual Records. She is the shadow behind the Mother's throne. According to the occult, she is the elder of unlimited wisdom. There are certain rituals which call for the crone, such as Winter Solstice. The crone completes the wheel or cycle of existence of the Mothers of Darkness. She is most likely in the system the most dehumanized of the three that sit on the pedestal. The following are a sampling of the goddesses you will find. Since the names of these goddesses are not secret, it is possible for people who are not in the occult to track down what the popular goddess names are. Here are a few that are placed into systems:

ASET (Isis) (Maiden)--She dwells in the sky as the silver sheen. Isis or Aset is the best known of the Egyptian goddesses. Her name means throne. She is a ruler. She is the mother of the Anti-Christ figure of Horus. She has a horned crown or a solar crown. She has lots of titles.

BAST (Maiden)--Bast is the mother goddess of all cats. Bast looked like an 18' giant with a cat head. Internally, in the system she will look hugh. Black cats were sacred to Bast. The internal Bast may like obsidian and cats-eye. Bast corresponds to Yesod (the Foundation) on the Cabalistic Tree of Life.

CAILLECH (Crone)--Caillech was the Scotch and Irish Crone figure. She is known as the black mother. A derivative of her name is Caledonia. She was the Spirit of disease. Caillech means an old woman, a hag, or a veiled one. California is named after a version of her name. Some think her name is a derivative of Kali.

HAT-HOR (Mother)--Hat-Hor is also known as Het-Hert. She is the womb of Horus. She is Queen of the Dead, or Queen of the West. In mythology, Hathor, when turned loose on the earth, slew humans until blood ran in the rivers. She is the avenging Mother. She is identified with the heavenly cow who made the Milky Way, and the Nile Goose, who laid the Golden Egg.

ISHTAR (Mother in the swamps)--Ishtar is Lady of heaven, goddess of the moon. Istar had a lion throne and a double serpent scepter. Ishtar went down through 7 gates into darkness and then returned in order to try to find her lover Tammuz. Sometimes Istar is accompanied by dragons. She was originally a Babylonian goddess.

KALI (Crone)--Kali or Kali Ma is the best known Crone goddess. She will be deep in an System. One image of her in mythology is squatting over the dead Shiva devouring his penis while physically eating his intestines. This is an actual Satanic ritual that Mothers-of -Darkness participate in. Kali has both creation-& destruction abilities. Kali's necklace in Indian legend consists of skulls with magical sanskrit letters. Kali was and is worshipped by a great number of people, especially the Hindus. One group of worshippers has been the Thugs, who relate to the Assassins and the Knights Templars. Another group of Kali worshippers are the gypsies who left India in the middle ages and over the next following hundreds of years travelled all over the world. Originally, blood sacrifices of male animals or men were made to her. There is a reported decrease in India of such blood sacrifices from what it was a century ago. The favorite view of Kali is the black Kali named Dakshinakali. She is usually shown black and naked, full-breasted with dishevelled hair and a wild grimace.

KORE-PERSEPHONE (Maiden)--A great mother of Greek myth. Kore means "maiden" in greek. In mythology, she watched the grain grow among the wildflowers, especially red poppies. She became the mistress of the underworld. She guards the chasm that goes into the earth. She marks each spirit of the dead on their forehead with pomegranate juice. Pomegranates are used in ritual. Kore returns in Spring to see her mother

Demeter. According to Greek legend Kore was raped in Hades. She is also known as the Queen of the Dead. A similar Illuminati ceremony takes place where a male wearing a mask acts like Satan. Kore makes the journey to Hades by herself without her mother. The Greek mystery schools, which included many great Greek thinkers, have had rituals around Kore.

MAAT--Maat's name means "She whose name is Truth". Her symbol is a red ostrich feather. A ritual vow is "by the Feather of Maat." Maat's presence might explain why a System is infatuated with feathers. Maat is the one in legend who "is the pattern" --the one who "will find a way to weave us back into our proper places in the tapestry."

B. Carousel The Carousel in real life is used as a device to teach dissociation, and how the alters are to go up and down in trance. Sometimes you will see parents who seem to be so loving having their children ride for long periods on a carousel. They might actually be programming them in dissociation.

An internal carousel is built into an internal system. Mirrors and shadows are placed around and perhaps in it. The carousel spins and moves up and down repeatedly. In the center of the carousel, the Programmers often place something or someone important. They will often put this at the bottom of the DNA double helix and have the double helix elevator shaft coming up the center of the carousel. The carousel's bottom side will set on top of the system's switching mechanism. And the core will sometimes be placed in the center of the carousel somewhat underneath it. The switching mechanism is the main control for turning the system (the Grandfather clock so to speak.)

The carousel may have umbrella programming immediately on top of it. (This could be Illuminati Delta alters, which can be one of the deepest things put in.) The carousel must be approached from the back side. At times an internal key, which often looks like an old key is needed to enter the Carousel. Many Illuminati systems are given a key or set of keys, and at times when they enter therapy the front alters give this to their therapist not knowing what the key is, but knowing it is important.

The co-authors believe that these keys are carousel keys. A false trinity will be assigned to guard this, which will consist of the False Prophet, The Beast or Dragon, and the Hoofed One. The false prophet and the Beast (dragon) come out of the book of Revelations. The Hoofed One is a rare occult term for Satan, not to be confused with the popular usage of the Horned One in the occult. The two terms are different.

If several carousels are built into a system, then they will have other guards than the false trinity. In many Illuminati systems, there are 13 silent splits made from the core called silences, and at this time during the splitting process guards are made to the Carousel/core. The method of doing this is to place black covers over the eyes of the victim, and then probes are inserted into the base of the skull, as well as electric shocks being applied body-wide and in the subcortical part of the brain. The victim has their mouth restrained from screaming. The pain from this is about as excruciating as a human can stand. First, the fear part of the brain is activated. Then the logic part is activated, and the victim is told repeatedly "Be good, obey." Next, the fear is stimulated, and then the pain. The head will have excruciating pain, and so will the body to the point of nausea and sickness. An alter will be created to carry the pain, and one to carry the fear, and one to carry the anger. These will be identified and used to guard the carousel. Six alters will guard the carousel. They will be identified and linked to the most important carousel, which guards the core.

To attempt to think about the carousel, on the part of an alter, may bring up these guards, and the system will abreact in memories that are almost unbelievably painful. If a therapist accidentally triggers this, get the little child guard to back up or go to sleep. Make sure the heart of the victim, and lungs continue to function. The alters within the victim's system may have "aged" slightly since their primal trauma, and may appear about 2 years of age. Most alters this young do not know how old they really are. Therapists will attempt to associate the memory and provide anchors from the early memory to the present. Association strategies are worked out by the therapist to deal with the particular trauma in relation to what alters are there to help and were involved in the trauma. The association may be done in steps. Older helping alters can help assess the age of the infant alter by answering questions about size, teeth, physical abilities, verbal abilities etc. Verbal abilities of illuminati infants may be advanced beyond norms.

C. Castle. A castle system will contain a moat, drawbridge, turrets, gargoyles, a torture dungeon filled with actual memories of torture, secret passages, lots of levels, & rooms including a library. Child alters are often hidden in the castle. Disobedient alters may be locked up in the castle. Lots of traps are placed around and in the castle. The castle will house some alters and also some deadly programs. When castle alters get stirred up, the victim may internally see the castle lights go on. The castle walls may have a grid on them. The castle may be guarded by monsters.

D. Cave and well. A gatekeeper will guard the cave. Disobedient alters may be put down the well. This system deals with a lot of darkness. Catacombs may be connected to the cave and well. Falling down the well is one way to get to the abyss (see the film Labyrinth). Usually there is only one entrance-exit to this cave.

E. Chess Board. This system utilizes the Alice In Wonderland story. It is put into male slaves. The pieces of the chess board move in various ways setting off different programs. The devil will equal the black king. A program might sound like this: "Black knight moves two spaces and one right. White knight moves two spaces and one left. White knight challenges black knight. Black Queen moves 5 spaces." The victim who receives this programming must be the type of thinker who would play chess reasonably well. The script can be shown via videos while the victim is under hypnotic drugs.

F. Double Helix. This is a very important system. The double helix pattern is used as an elevator shaft running up and down the worlds created for the alters. In general, each world lays at a trance level. The double-helix is put in at programming sites where they have full medical facilities, such as Letterman Hospital, Presideo, CA. The codes up and down the elevator are alpha-numeric with lots of numbers. Because the way the double helix shape twists, one can ride the elevator and get off a level 1, 3, 5, 7, 9 but you have to ride it the other way to get off at 2, 4, 6, 8, 10, 12. Because the double helix is the centerpiece of how the different physiological states of the mind are being layered, taking the victim down to these different physiological states and levels is very risky and by the time it is through it involves lots of blood transfusions for the victim. The Caduceus is a double helix with snakes at the top. The Caduceus is an occult symbol used in ancient Babylon, ancient Hindu India, and by Chinese occultists. Mercury in occult lore carries a staff called a caduceus. Mercury's staff is a cabalistic symbol. William Heller's book on the Kaballah on page 78 states, "Mercury's staff, called Caduceus, and made of intertwined black-and-white twin serpents, heralds more forthcoming splits into duality. Once again, it reflects the ambivalent mind, its conscious, and subconscious states, its waking thoughts and imaginative dreams." So according to cabalistic doctrine, the caduceus represents the various states of the mind.

G. Flower system. This system is attached to other systems, and utilizes the power of peer pressure and generational ties. The flowers will often be bright. The bud of the flower will represent one person, the stem and the flower represent others. This system might be connected to the Umbrella, the Trees, the Triangle and the Star. A flower can regenerate an internal tree because of its generational roots. Flowers are also used as elevator shafts, such as a sunflower. One has to jump into the center of the flower and go down the stem to reach a lower level. Flower fields such as the poppy field are used as a hypnotic trigger to put an alter into deep trance.

H. Helix. This is a simplified version of the double helix.

I. Hour glass. Three hour glasses will be placed around the x-y-z axis in a quadrant. A quadrant consists of a section of alters in a world and their mirror images. The hour glass programming also includes a suicide program. 12 disciple alters will be placed within the hourglass. Each disciple has to memorize a disciple lesson. If something triggers them, they will begin to fall through the hour glass. If each of these 12 disciples falls through the hour glass like sand, then a sleeping giant like in Jack in the Beanstalk will wake up, . When the Giant awakes, he will kill the body. And of course, a mirror image of the Giant alter will be made also to help insure that at least one of the giants get the job done.

J. Mensa. This is a program put into slaves who have photographic memories. It involves lots of numbers and math. It's overall structure looks like a triangular-shaped fish net, with all the nodes or knots of the net containing a triangle. The core is placed at the center of the triangle and is surrounded by more triangles. There are circles of alters within circles of alters. Circles within circles. The a circle can rotate and seems never to end. The programming is meant to be non-ending. There are also triangles within triangles. The effect of using a structure like this to house the alters is that they feel trapped in endless circles and mazes of triangles within triangles. The codes in a Mensa system will be equations (sometimes called union force codes), bar codes, and number sequences.

K. Pentagram system. One pentagram system has pentagrams within pentagrams. The geometric lines grow from pentagram to pentagram by lines running in opposite directions. This has the same effect as circles within circles.

L. Pool of Death. One or more of these can be placed into an alter system. They often are found inside the main castle. Dead alters and body parts and torture fragments, are all dumped into these system garbage dumps. The Spirits of Death and Destruction control these pools of Death. Variations of this may be called Lakes of Death, and Waters of Death. In some systems, this is overseen by Taskmaster alters.

M. Potter's Wheel. This is the equivalent to a computer utility program. The way it functions is that the Programmer pulls the alters he wants to work on up on the potter's wheel in order to work on them. When they are pulled up on the potter's wheel, they can be asked to stand in order and rank. Then the alters will come to the front of the mind on top of each other in their prearranged sequence. The Charismatic movement programmer's like to use this, because the Programmer can become god, and the slave becomes the clay. Can the pot talk back to the potter? The Bible verse in ISA 45:9 is used, "WOE unto him that striveth with his Maker! Let the potsherd strive with the potsherds of the earth. Shall the clay say to him that fashioneth it, What maketh thou? or thy work, He hath no hands?" The next verse again repeats its woes upon those who question parents who fashion a child. As is typical of a number of Illuminati programs, at first glance they look like they are merely perversions of the Bible, but a closer look reveals that they are actually ancient occult rituals. For instance, the Illuminati believe "As above, so below." This is druidic philosophy, even though it sounds somewhat like something from the Bible. In the book Invocation of the Gods Ancient Egyptian Magic for Today, pg. 203, the book gives a magical invocation that supposedly has been found in ancient Egyptian magical papyri. At any rate this invocation's wording is powerful in English for a Monarch slave. The Invocation is called The Potter's Wheel. "Hear the sound of the potter's wheel As it spins! Khnum! See the clay on the potter's wheel As it spins! Khnum! Feel the hand of the Mighty Lord Form the seed to contain a soul As it spins. See the soul, on the Wheel of Life As it spins! Khnum! Birth to death on the Wheel of Life See the soul, on the Wheel of Life As it spins! And with death we are born anew While the vessel that's tossed aside Will return to the potter's wheel As it spins!" This is just one more example of where programming and magic intersect.

N. Puppet System. In this system the body feels totally disjointed and controlled by strings. Mengele enjoyed this program. He would say, "Dance Marionette dance." In other words, to paraphrase, "dance slave for me the controller". Demons are laid in to pull the strings of the puppet. The internal controller may be a demon or a demonized alter. It can be attached to other systems such as the Pentagram system. In a previous part of the book, it was discussed how the victim's body is paralyzed by drugs and then electroshocked in a way that the person seems to be the Programmers puppet. This is put in when the child is very young. This puppet programming is very convincing to a small child, and is a very nasty program for the slave to experience.

O. Solemetric system. This is used for government/business/research slaves who must perform complex tasks and they want their minds to be less fragmented or not fragmented. The mind can be programmed and divided from itself without creating alter personalities. Because the divisions in the mind due to dissociation and programming lies are not as deeply structured, victims who get solemetric systems have strong demonic forces and lot's ritual to hold their systems in place.

P. Spider Web system or Black Widow Spider System. This system is set up just for blackmail and destruction via entrapment of unsuspecting people who are perceived as threats to the Illuminati. This system is found in lots of women coming into churches with decent by naive ministers. The system has a web with connectors and silk strands. A target person will be symbolically placed into the web and then the black widow alter(s) will entrap the victim. This is programming to take down pastors of churches with sexual entrapment. The spirit Viper found in ISA 59:5 is placed into this system to protect it. There will be egg alters which will devour the victim, and Gatekeepers are assigned to guard the system.

Q. Spiritual structuring. The spiritual structuring is not a single structure. A few people have worked with the deeper elements of the programming to help victims and also know what the Illuminati programmers have done and what their agenda is, have come to realize that the spiritual structuring is the most important part of an

Illuminati system. What you will now read is known only to an exclusive few. Spiritual castles (Grandfather, Father, Mother, and Grandmother castles) and spiritual temples (to Moloch and Baal etc.) are constructed internally. Entire spiritual worlds are constructed internally. The most primal parts of the mind, and the key early alters and the core essence are usually taken to spiritual constructs within the Illuminati slave. The gems are empowered by the light of Lucifer (an alter-demon combination). But even more deeper than that are the generational ties. The programmers, who themselves are generational satanists, are part of a plan where the generational legal rights of Satan are accumulated upon an individual. In the Scriptures it says that the sins of the fathers are visited upon the third and fourth generation. This gives Satan a legal right to the generational victim. Each bloodline has its Prince demons attached to it--just like in the Bible the Prince of Persia was both a man & and a demon. Hidden within spiritual constructs such as black diamonds, and diamonds, are further demonic constructs. The thrones of the generational Prince Demons are attached to the primal human part of the victim. This is entirely spiritual--beyond that there are no words to describe it. It is very real to the survivor when therapists get to that point (which is very rare!). The power of the Illuminati is that it is generational. They build upon that, when they build a system. Some of these genealogies have not been free for many generations. If you want to spoil a structure, one need to bind the strongman. The strongman in an Illuminati system is the generational ties. All ties to the bloodlines need to be renounced. The Programmers will take little Illuminati children to crypts of their ancestors in order to better attach the generational spirits. The womb holding the premature child is used as a temple in the Moon Child ceremonies. After the child is born the womb structure will spiritually serve as a temple for the primal human parts of an Illuminati slave. Whether the therapist can realize these things or not, in the very least, they are aware of the saying "Father like son", and are aware how traits may skip a generation but how a grandson may mirror a grandfather. The generational aspects to Illuminati slaves are a major role in the Illuminati

R. Stairwell. The stairwell is just as it sounds, it is a stairwell that is placed into a system. The stairwell can be used as a trap for alters who are unwise enough to be lured by programming to go into it. The stairwell system connects various levels. There are booby traps and demonic entities attached to the system. Stairwells may be sealed up with Gatekeepers assigned to protect them. If an alter proceeds down a stairwell to get to other levels they need to realize that they initially will hit "tornado (also called whirlwind) programming" and flooding of memories. The tornados will spin the victim inward and disorient them. The alter holding the body will feel as if it is out of control and going to die.

S. Telescoping. Any telescoping object (such as a telescoping army drinking cup, or a telescoping rod) can be used to give the visual picture for the child to follow when it is being programmed. A telescoping system often has a time level, a function level and an age level. The game of Chutes and Ladders along with Jacob’s Ladder have been used to place the story line into children.

T. Tornado System. This is a free floating system that moves around areas that the programmers want protected. When it hits an alter(s) it causes confusion, spinning, and switching, as well as a feeling of losing control. It’s part of the elemental back up programs discussed within a few pages.

U. Umbrella. This is associated with military programming. An umbrella protects something, such as the Delta assassination alters. An umbrella must be taken down from the inside and so must this protective shield of the Umbrella program. One Umbrella system had 7 gates to it.

Defenses In Death

What would happen if a slave physically got away from its master or handler? This has happened countless times and the mind-control is so solid that the handlers don’t have too much to worry about. Mind-controlled slaves have gone to therapists for years and never gotten free of the mind-control. The therapeutic process that the establishment has schooled them in and then requires them to adhere to, prevents the therapist from doing things that might really set the victim free. Therapists are often loath to give any help in any thing that smacks of spirituality. The spiritual issues in many of these slaves are the most crucial issues facing them. If they don’t resolve these spiritual issues, the deeper alters will continue to adhere to their blood oaths of allegiance to their Satanic abusers and their oaths to serve Satan loyally.

Each cult which programs, makes sure that they place in lots of loyal alters, which therapists call persecutor alters because they torment the alters who want freedom. If therapists try to eliminate these persecutor alters, they will fight back with the full tenacity and strength that the survival instinct gives to anyone. Their persecutor role needs to be validated, and then redirected toward productive ends. Many persecutor alters see life simply as following their instructions and that they are protecting the system from greater harm by stopping therapy. During programming that was the case, but if their System has reached a good therapist and has good support team of other people, their fears no longer apply. The cult will attempt to show them that their fears do still apply. Hopefully, the support team for the system of alters will work as hard at protecting as the abusers do to reinforce the fear.

Many of the programmers have been associated with the military. One of the tricks that the military learned is a defense in depth. The Russians employed defenses in depth with great success in 1943 in the big battle of Kursk during W.W. II. The first defense is that the slave has no awareness of the MPD (DID) or that they are being used as a slave. Some of the alters will realize that something is wrong, but the mind control is too strong for them to see clearly. Essentially the System is in trance all the time, even the front alters, they do not perceive reality like people who are not in trance all the time. The next line of defense is that the fronts of an alter System don't have a clue about the abuse or what their system has been designed for. The front alters will have alters which are loyal to the master, and alters who are full of craziness and disinformation. If the victim keeps probing (which many don't) they will discover an occult involvement. Even if they discover that the System is related to the occult world, the programming is still intact. If the person finds out he is MPD, and finds out that the System was part of the occult world, then he still is captured by all the programming which is intact.

Walls, fire walls, mazes, suicide programming, internal armies, programmed craziness and many other tactics sap the strength of the front alters if they try to deviate from the straight and narrow programmed way of behaving.

WHEN THE FINAL CALL BACK IS GIVEN--many Monarch slaves are programmed to kill their therapists because the Illuminati will be able to hide/protect them once they leave their place in society and return for the final callback. Reporting alters hidden well in the System, observe and secretly report back to the Network everything a therapist does. The alters have fix me codes to call for help such as "FIX ME", "QUEEN OF HEART", "THREE LITTLE KITTENS WHO LOST THEIR MITTENS", "THE COWS IN THE CORN, LITTLE JACKIE HORNER WON'T YOU PLEASE BLOW YOUR HORN." The jokers and internal programmers will work night and day to stop or reverse any work done toward freedom. There are so many levels, suicide programs and so many other defenses a person's body is not strong enough to attack the programming head on.

There are for instance Bells of Destruction programming, The War in the Heavens suicide programming, the Gethsemane Suicide Programming, the Octopus suicide programming, the Injection of Bleach, the overdose of drugs, the go insane program, just to mention a few. The slave will be given a whole batch of these types of programs which may all go off at once if the slave doesn't comply with keeping the mind control secret. One internal protective programming line is The Man without a Country story. Another is a water program but in with Scripture from Jer. about Ahab stomping the grapes. Another is for the slave to think they have been turned into a fragile paper doll. The paper doll programming is put in by making the skin very sensitive to any touch, and then attaching that memory to the hypnotic suggestion of being a paper doll. An octopus suicide program chokes the slave if they are disobedient. A mush the brain is triggered by a fanning movement. If the slave touches the programming, Armageddon programming is activated in those who have Bible programming. The four horsemen on their different horses ride out and bring their different mental tortures to the slave's mind. Winged monkeys (possibly alter fragments) from the Wizard of Oz story programming are called "watchers". They watch alters. The slave is conditioned that if any programming or demonology is taken out, it will come back seven times seven stronger. The Bible (MT 12:43-44) is used to put in this programming. Actually, this is more than programming, there is a principle in operation here. Therapists need to be cautious about pulling things out, if they do not understand what the ramifications will be. We want the victim to have hope, not to make the task look harder.

One of the primary protective programs is the JUDAS PROGRAMMING. Anyone who betrays the abusers is labelled "Judas" and is programmed to go out and act like Judas by hanging themselves. If that mind control program doesn't happen, the Illuminati warn their people "Remember Tom Collins", who was the son of an Illuminati Grand Mother, who became a Christian, started exposing the Illuminati in churches, and was gunned down in a grocery parking lot. Finally, the members are warned that they will be sacrificed on a cross like Christ in what is termed "a traitor's death." Usually, mind-controlled slaves will police their own actions and thoughts. The therapist may hear their Monarch client talk about the Dove, fire, Moriab, and water as protectors. They may talk about a little bird dove who is part of protection which flies iftto the ebony trees. The basic defensive programming placed into the early Illuminati models was based upon the 4 BASIC ELEMENTS--fire, wind, water, and air. When the programming is touched by anyone, the elements of the earth come alive. For instance, if the programming is touched the following programs based on the four elements come alive:

WATER--victim will freeze like ice, will suffocate like inhaling water, will boil like being placed in boiling water, will feel a drip drip drip on the head, and will flood with memories. This is why some Monarch slaves do not like to swim.

FIRE--Victim will burn inside and outside. The victim will remember fire torture, and perhaps their face melting. This is why some Monarch slaves don't like to light a match or a fire. Slaves will have their programming reinforced with the warning, "If you disobey us, Satan will take your ability to resist burning away, and you will burn in hell." The alters have no way to conceive that God could love them, so they feel if they are to have any chance not to burn in the afterlife of hell they must obey. The fire programs which activate when they disobey reinforce this warning. Often victims report a "Ring of Fire" burning within.

EARTH--the victim will remember being dropped down a well, being buried alive in either hot sand, or a casket. Earth means "life or death". The earth "swallows people up." The victim may feel dehydrated from memories of being buried in hot sand (hot earth). This is why some victims have a fear of being buried alive. In fact, this can be done internally where alters are internally placed in caskets and buried. Alters are also internally thrown into internal wells. The Illuminati programmers say, "ASHES TO ASHES, DUST TO DUST' to mean that the earth will bring death. Sometimes even volcanos erupt (earth and fire) out of the ocean (water) and destroy parts of a system. Internal earthquakes also happen quickly and then the entire system will be shifted and shuffled.

AIR or WIND--Vortexes suck the person down and away, a strong wind takes the alter(s) into the Rubicon of Outer Space and the body dismembers itself as it goes away. The mind doesn't understand why it is being torn apart, only that it is being torn like a tornado. The alter may also go into a bubble and float away.(This effect is put in w/ drugs and hypnosis.) They will dissociate and nothing is real. How does one place into a child these types of programs? Let's say the programmers want to put in the Tumbleweed Program where the child feels like it has become a tumbleweed & can't ground and get its bearings on anything. Let's say the programmer also wants the child to lose his arms & legs while being blown away. The child is dehydrated so the mind is overheated and hallucinating. Special drugs are also given to the child to make it more delirious, make it more suggestible, etc. The little child by this point has no mind of its own. Heavy fans with hot air are placed upon the child. It is hypnotically told that it has no arms and no legs. The child is too weak to think for itself. It is almost comatose. The child will be left for perhaps 8 hours as a script which keeps repeating itself is played on a voice box. The child will hallucinate the script or the video it is being shown. When the child can give the script back to the programmer exactly like it is meant to be, then the programmers know they can stop. The child alter is to take on the identity of the tumbleweed. If it responds like many Main alters--it will pass this ability on to splits that it creates for this purpose. These splits created for the tumbleweed script will be clean slates for the programmers to manipulate. By the way, smelling salts are used to wake up child victims who are too comatose.

Overview Of The Princess Programming

The Omega programs prevent integrating the Multiple personalities, and they hold the body programs, and run the computers. If major tampering is done with the System, which threatens to totally wipe out the Omega programs, then one of the backup programs is the Princess programming. The princess programming is a back up program. It can be triggered several ways. One method is by astral communication between loyal alters and their Illuminati programmer. However, the main triggering factor is that the System has recognized that serious tampering has been done to the System. If serious deprogramming occurs, the Princess program with "Sleeping Beauty" kicks in. The programming is contained within a box, which is opened up upon the appropriate cues. The way it operates is that it kicks in when the handler loses control over a system. The princess who is kept sleeping by spiders which bite her in a coffin, wakes up and looks for the prince to come.

Daddy demon and the dark princess are now ruling from the castle dungeon. A System's dwarfs and Thor continue to guard as well as the big guard cats like Bast. Darkness sets in on all the top sections of alters, and thick walls and pain come, then a webbing much like a body-suit-cocoon will envelope all but alters loyal to the master. It becomes hard to breathe and the alters who had sought freedom from the programming, now find themselves being tranced out. Alters who are cold and in lots of pain are called up by code to torment the body. The Outer Darkness of a System (sometimes called the Rubicon) gets thicker. If Gatekeeper and Kitten alters have porcelain face programming, then they will get their porcelain masks back as the Omega programming kicks back in. The porcelain masks have cords back to the black princess. The black princess's coffin has cords to Papa. The core will give her energy to the dark side, and alters who want freedom will receive very little energy. They will be very tired.

Those alters who liked the light side and freedom are now under attack. They will be isolated by walls and then incapacitated by a cocoon which leads to death. The alters who do not want to be part of Satanism will be worked over, and they will continue to be worked over until they shatter. If need be, they can be taken to the castle dungeon and played movies of torture which have been coded and entered into the mind via codes. Internal voodoo will be carried out to scare alters into complying.

The worlds will reestablish their compasses. The internal BEAST computer along with the dark princess run the show. The box which opens up, sets off the suicide programming. The primary tool in fighting the suicide programming is the will to fight. If the will to fight is strong, a way to fight through the walls can be found. If the walls are broken down, then a strategy of isolating the castle's programming can be carried out, and eventually the black princess can even be retrieved. Since the princess and daddy demon are running things via spiritual and demon processes, the battle at this point involves spiritual warfare, although there are probably other methods to solve the situation.

The castle programming will be isolated by closing the portals, and other safeguards. The Black Princesses can be turned from their course. The Black Princess can be retrieved. The castle's power can be shut down. The Princess programming can be beat, but it takes hard work. A system must make decisions to continue fighting the programming with all their creativity, strength and will power.

A rebirthing program will go off. This rebirthing program is controlled by a System of clocks. The clocks are the stabilizing heartbeat and are tied to the eternal life force. There are also clocks which control the steps to the Princess Programming. These clocks bring about steps which will take the System down the road to no-return. These clocks can be frozen and by freezing them, one can stop the next step from taking place. In the rebirthing program, umbilical cords and strings run from alters back to the black princess. The black princess is in the torture chamber of the dungeon and the strings carry the torture memories to alters in sections wanting freedom, especially those holding the body. If those alters want to stop the intense pain to the body they need to freeze those strings and stop the torture memories from coming up from the torture chamber. The umbilical cords are "feeding" the alters from the black princess.

The Kittens alters, most likely due to programming, will want to protect the core so they do not want to stop the process of control that the black princess is exerting over them. In other words, they will find it hard to save themselves. Internal Voodoo will come from a dollhouse, and only by dealing with inside the doll house can it be stopped. One option is to create shields to protect alters from the voodoo. Christians have the shield of faith which really can function in real life, and an internal shield of faith has protected and shielded Christians from Voodoo. The darkness and what people (alters) call "walls" can be flooded with the blood of Jesus, which often drives back the darkness and can give freedom to work. The soul ties that are involved with the princess programming and the masks need to be broken and bound. The System may be able to find someone or some place to get wisdom or understanding about their System. The System also needs to cut their soul ties to their Illuminati programmers. The rebirthing program is also giving directions to the dark princess. There is an umbilical cord which ties the dark princess to the rebirthing program. The blood of Jesus can stop this tie.

D. Backup Programming

One of the backup programs is designed to deal with someone who has a good understanding of a system, and tries to take a system out via spiritual warfare. A camera is designed to reflect an image onto a mirror and the deprogrammer works with the mirror images. The deprogrammer has great success with the mirror images, because the camera can merely shift its view, and the things the deprogrammer is trying to get rid of disappear. However, since the alters that are collaborating with the deprogrammer see all the correct things happen, they sincerely think they are being deprogrammed. When the deprogrammer finishes the alters feel better, see their worlds come together, but the work has only been a sham. Other backup programs provide the deprogrammer with mirror images and sham alters to talk with. The deprogrammer never talks to the real human elements. If we try to give a summary of the different backup programs we could include

a. each grid has programs attached to its grid no. and each section has a computer, as well as connecting computers between sections---both the programming and the computers have the power to reprogram themselves.

b. the 4 elements of nature coming alive programs

c. the princess program (based on Sleeping Beauty)

d. a plutonium or atom bomb set up activated by lasers to protect the internal hierarchy.

The Monarch programming creates very complex systems that are as sophisticated as an Apollo spacecraft. There is no way all the possible in and outs can be covered. However, the reader can watch a movie "Labyrinth" to get a good idea of what the end product is like for the mind of the victim. The movie represents what the internal world is like for an alter who is trying to understand its mind. It would be worthwhile to finish this chapter on structuring by covering this movie which illustrates the end product. The bizarre movie Labyrinth may be shown again on HBO and is available from some video stores. In fact, the video stores have a hard time meeting customer demands for this popular video. One of the co-authors knows a girl who has watched "Labyrinth" twenty times.

"Labyrinth", A View of a Monarch's Internal World

In 1986, a movie called "Labyrinth" was produced by Cherry McFadden. The movie was Monty Python’s "Terry Jones" scripted. The movie is a portrayal of what the internal world inside a Monarch mind-controlled slave looks like. The Monarch slave has an internal world built inside their mind in which the hundreds and thousands of alters must live in. The alters are given a psychotic world of fiction in which they must live in as reality. An alter of a Monarch slave will have two worlds, the external world of reality, and their own internal world which, because of the programming, will seem more real than the real world.

Hogel, a gnome, tells Sarah, "Things are not what they seem in this place." The internal worlds of the slave can be shifted and rearranged by the internal programmers. The internal programmers can change codes, eliminate alters, and carry out extensive deception to other parts of the System. As in the Monarch programming, the movie's castle reminds one of Emerald City. The movie Labyrinth seems weird and occultic. Gargoyle elves (similar to coven demons) dance magic and a sweet girl played by Jennifer Connelly moves from one weird scene to another, while an occasional shot gives us the hideous ruler of the Castle played by David Bowie. These demons also guard the baby that represents the innocent core.

Monarch slaves very frequently have castles built into their internal world. Some slaves will have a whole series of castles, some are King’s castles, some are Queen’s castles, and some are castle’s shaped liked pyramids with all-seeing eyes in them. The story line of the movie Labyrinth is that the girl, Sarah, searches for her baby brother, Toby, who is captive in a castle in a dream world. Actually, this represents an alter searching for the innocent core from which it split off from. Often the core (the original innocent child personality which split off personalities in order to remain innocent is locked up in the castle by the programmer who serves as Master of the castle. Often in deprogramming, the core is taken to a castle dungeon in a terrible backup program called the princess program which was just described on a previous page. The princess programming (which is a back up program) functions, when the regular programming goes down (which is rare). When the Princess back-up program kicks in the toad is kissed, the princess core is woke up, etc. etc. Parts of the Princess program seem portrayed towards the end of the movie. In the movie, David Bowie, who in real life was a satanist & a rock star who committed suicide, plays the part of the Master of the Castle. The girl soon goes into the dream world (internal world of her mind). She must go through a labyrinth if she wants to get to the castle.

Although the movie is fiction, it is close enough to how a Monarch's mind thinks, that an adult Monarch slave might well have his or her programming reinforced if they saw this film. It also would trigger many Monarch slaves and create fear in them. Monarch slaves have many clocks built into their systems. They have internal clock makers and internal clock keepers. In the movie, clocks pop up everywhere just like in a Monarch's mind. Some Monarch slaves are programmed to see their internal world, and others are programmed not to be able to see their internal world. In other words, many Monarchs may not have the ability to see a great deal at first of this programming due to further programming, and yet these images work in the deep recesses of their minds to keep their minds within the confines of the programming.

David Bowie has the magical ability to rearrange time on the clocks. The handlers often mess with the internal and external clocks of a slave, so that the slave is disoriented about what time it is. Alters within a Monarch system are not allowed to stray from the path assigned to them. If they try to move out of their assigned spot in the mind, then they encounter traps, mazes, tunnels and demons just like in the movie Labyrinth. An internal world of a Monarch's mind will have brick walls, doors and vortex tunnels just like in the movie. When the girl falls into a vortex, she has magician hands all over her. Monarch victims speak of what vortexes are like and they often describe hands coming out of nowhere.

The movie begins with an oak tree. The oak tree is an important part of the Illuminati programming. The Master programmer in the castle, wearing a triangle medallion around his neck and looking veracious (David Bowie) sings, "Voodoo. ..Babes with the power.. .magic spells...dance magic...slap that baby and make him pay....dance magic, dance magic." Cobwebs are built into the Monarch minds, and when an alter goes where it shouldn't they often get cobwebbing over them. The tunnels in the movie are full of cobwebs. As the girl moves forward toward the magic demon-invested Castle she comes across many things--all of which relate to internal items built into a Monarch slave's mind. Some of the things are slightly different in the movie than in a slave's mind--but the concepts are the same.

For instance, the actual Thor figure looks like the Iron Man of the Wizard of Oz series rather than the iron robot that they portray. But the match is close enough for the imagery to portray what it is meant to represent. During programming, bracelets with pieces will be given to the child to teach them how the alters are to revolve. A bracelet like this is owned by the girl. The girl encounters a dwarf. The dwarfs in the internal world "mine the jewels" (that is the programming).

The Jewels are the particular programs that run a Monarch system of alters of an MPD (DID) mind. The dwarf in the movie is told by David Bowie (the Programmer) that he has "lost his Jewels"--that is that he has lost his programming! The dwarf in the movie decides to help the girl. In Monarch programming the dwarf helps an alter by bringing it programming! Some help! The goblin (demon) is asked by the girl to find a portal. The goblin opens a door and it appears to be a broom closet. He opens it again and it appears as a door. This is the exact way the programming is.

Portals and doors in the internal world have cover stories. At first they look like one thing--but if the mind can get by the first look--they will turn out in reality to be something else. There is cover programming over everything--so that the slave doesn't trust his own mind. For instance, besides lots of clocks undisguised, clocks are disguised in a System as any object, but they can be recognized by the trained observer because they are gold colored.

In the movie, objects are constantly changing. Many monarch's fear the rocks coming alive--just as they do in the movie Labyrinth. In the bottom of the slave's mind--put in at the deepest hypnotic levels possible are the hell pits. The movie shows the hell pit and even calls it the "hell pit." Notice that as she goes into this strange world that the clocks can be turned around. This is true in the programming. The clocks can be turned by the programmer so that the slave can be told it is January when it is December. A cover program can be entered so that the slave has memory of what he was supposed to have done in December.

These false memories are laid in with real torture memories and tied to emotions. The false memories lack certain characteristics of real memories--and yet still they can at times be difficult to separate from the true memories, especially if the mind-controlled slave is in programming. The following is the story line of the movie as it happens in this bizarre movie.

Early in the movie we see a witch with an hour glass. When the girl gets to the castle it is guarded by a mechanical monster that resembles in some ways Thor of the programming. Notice that portals and holes open up. When they open up another level, protectors attack them and they must run back down their tunnel to save themselves. The Monarch slave will get feelings of being crushed if an alter ventures where it shouldn't in the mind. When the girl asks the dwarf "How can I believe anything you say?" She is told, "What choice do you have?" Fire demons come out dancing. They take out their eyeballs and eat them. They say "Bad luck down the path."

What the fire demons represent are the Gamma programming and the threats that the Gamma programming has upon the victim. The programming tells an alter that it will lose its head or other horrible threat if it doesn't comply with the programming. "Let's take off her head" the fire demons say, as they act out the various programs--decapitation, delimbing, etc. They also want to throw her into the pit of eternal flames. They go down a chute into the eternal hell pit. It is even called the eternal pit in the movie! The hell pits of a slave will generally smell like sulfur--which is exactly what the movie's hell pit does. A guardian of the pit (looking like a dog) comes out.

Guardians within the Monarch's mind are generally far more horrifying than this dog. The guardian must give permission for passage. Another trap appears--as the slave's internal world is filled with booby traps. The name of the dog the guardian rides on is Ambrosius, similar to Ambrosia. A peach with poison is given to the dwarf. The slave is programmed to fear poisoned fruit. (This is another fairy tale turned into programming.)

David Bowie is called an "adept" who creates dream bubbles. The slave's mind will have adepts who are the programmers. The movie's adept puts a princess in a bubble. Then she goes by memory back to when she was at a Satanic ball where people wear masks of birds, goats, and pigs. Illuminati ceremonies include balls like this with masks. This Love story is reliving programming of the girl that she is a Queen, that she is married to Satan, and that this is a bonding ceremony. Everyone is grabbing her. People who have been to this Illuminati ceremony will recognize it. Next, she sees mirrors. When she shatters the mirrors (a no-no in the programming) she begins falling.

Generally, if a slave shatters the mirrors in their mind--they fall into suicide programming. She falls into a junkyard. Then a satanic seed comes alive from her fruit. It is a worm. An old hag gives her a teddy bear. The programmers and parents of slaves frequently give stuffed animals. The teddy bear without hands represents to the victim their helplessness. The old hag says "like a little bunny rabbit...Don't you...Bitsy Boob" All this is Monarch programming stuff. Then she sees a book about the labyrinth. The Monarch's mind has libraries and diagrams of their own system but these are kept guarded by the mirrors, the demons, and programming. The girl Sarah finds a book (the files) of how the labyrinth is built. Actually, you can too. If the original programming was Wizard of Oz programming--then when you looked at the front of the Wizard of Oz series books you would find a map that helped build the internal world. Some of the items on that map will likely be found in your Monarch system (but not all). If your Monarch system has Star Trek programming it is possible they will have an internal world similar to the diagrams shown in this book where Star Trek programming is covered.

In other words, there are books which do show the labyrinth, just as the movie Labyrinth has Sarah find a book showing the internal world. But if an alter finds a map, this does not mean the alter can travel freely in its system's mind! In working with a mind-controlled slave, we discovered one of the methods to get over the Wizard of Oz mazes was to fly with the Orks.

However, an alter caught in the mazes was frightened to stay put by the demons that surrounded it. (This is so well portrayed in Labyrinth.) This happens in real life to Monarch alters which stray into the mazes. They are lost and then they can't come out and take the body. They are simply lost in the mind. The old hag gives her slippers! Slippers are important triggers or cues to go places internally. She is given a horsey and told she loves it. "Take back the child you have stolen."

A ferris wheel is shown. (Carrousels were used greatly in programming.) Then she breaks an hour glass. Hour glasses are internal clocks. Then she encounters levels, doors and tunnels. An Iron robot representing Thor comes out and bangs bangs bangs. The banging is the split brain headaches that the internal Thor causes the victim's mind to experience. A child is placed into the robot. Often during the programming, child alters are programmed to put on a robot like suit and serve with other children as clone solders in a clone army. (The sea divers of the Walt Disney movie "20,000 Leagues Under the Sea" were used to program child alters into how they were to get into robot suits.)

These child alters form armies that attack if an alter tries to fight the programming. These children alters are like children screaming--it is impossible to reason or talk to them. Armies of these alters are difficult to stop in the mind. In the programming, the brave are told they are brave and vice-versa. The character says "I have no courage." But is told "You are a man of courage." More clocks and a bell appears. A red and blue guardian appear. Perhaps these colors represent the color programming. Rocks and cannons represent the protectors and the earthquakes they cause internally in a Monarch's mind.

When she enters the castle it is a carbon copy of Esher's drawing entitled "Relativity." (See The Graphic Work of MC. Esher, figure 67.) She runs up stairs and gets nowhere. Escher's drawing, according to ex-programmers, are used for programming. The Master sings, "Everything I've done, I've done for you." David appears everywhere from every angle. This is how the internal programmers, which are clones of the real programmers appear everywhere in the mind of the slave. He sings, "Just as I can be so cruel...look without your heart beat. ..I must live within you." She says, "Give me the child [the core]" and the programmer says, "I have been generous. ..but I can be so cruel .... I have reordered time...turned the world upside down...all for you."

The internal and external programmers can be cruel. The victim is trauma bonded to them. They are cruel and kind to the victim, just like Mengele was to his thousands of victims. The internal worlds can be turned in a Monarch system, by turning the hour glasses which are on X, Y and Z axes. The hour glasses are turned with hand signals and codes that are similar to what pilots use to tell their degree positions in the sky. The programmer sings, "I ask for so little, just let me rule you, and you can have everything you want...just love me, fear me, and do as I say." He tells her that her kingdom is great. Internally alters are given great titles, and are made queens, etc. Their internal worlds give them all they need, and that the real external world will never understand them. She is told repeatedly "Your kingdom is great." "Bow down and worship me, and you get everything."

At this point she realizes she has dominion over the demons. When one listens to the programming, it seems that it is powerful and in control. The movie does a good job of showing how a slave's mind has both an internal and an external world. A hall appears with daisies. Daisies were used in programming. When she leaves the internal world, she finds that the internal world is right there with her in her external world. She is surrounded by internal cues. Then she embraces and accepts her internal world toward the ending of the movie. Many systems have an owl in their system which represents the master. In the movie, an owl representing the master appears at various times & then flies away at the end. Toward the end the Master sings, "Power of Voodoo..."

The internal world is full of goblins, dwarfs, worms, a hat, door knockers, Fury 1,2,3,4,5 and many other things. Ravens are in the movie. In real life, the programmers take alter fragments, which are splits which are not developed into full blown personalities and they program them to have a single task, for instance to think they are a raven and to bite the body when ever they take the body. Whole flocks of demons which take the form of ravens may wait inside the mind waiting for their release to bite the body. When triggered by the internal programmers when an alter crosses the boundaries set down by the programming, a flock of ravens may come forward and "take the body" (as they say in MPD) of the slave and the Monarch slave will bite his or her flesh and viciously tear it with its teeth. By watching the movie Labyrinth, and using this as a guide, the viewer will begin to understand the horror and control that the internal world holds over the alters of a Monarch slave. Few Monarch slaves ever tell other people what is going on in their minds, now you have been privileged to find out.

To learn this much for a Monarch slave comes with a high price. The price is paid by reliving for a second time what has been done to them, fighting off the suicide programs that click on when the slave's mind disobeys. The slave must also fight off torture memories that recycle. These torture memories are activated by the programming when an alter disobeys its programming. As one Monarch survivor described it to me, "This all can be wrapped up by defining it as the raping of the body, soul and spirit."

The Structuring Done in Monarch Star Trek and Star Wars Programming

The original Monarch programming often used the Wizard of Oz books and film as the basic programming. The

Alice and Wonderland story then was overlaid, along with many other fictional fairy tales to complete the Mind Control of a Monarch Mind-controlled slave. However, in recent years a superior story line has appeared. It has more flexibility and more secrecy. This is the Star Trek series.

In recent years, Star Trek is being used as a basis of programming. Those who are programmed with Star Trek programming can attend annual Star Trek Conventions which are held in New York City since 1972. The child's mind is tortured until the point they will accept anything. They are told to build certain structures in their mind. These structures may be castles, or rivers or submarines or airfields, etc. In the case of Star Trek programming they have detailed maps and diagrams that have been created to go along with the Star Trek program. (The real reason or the ulterior motive of these Star Trek maps was to create a blueprint for programming. Some pages of these are included for you to look at.) Then particular alters are placed within these structures, and they are hypnotically given cues that will pull them to the front of the mind when the alpha-numeric cue is said. Many of the more secret alters can only be accessed by a combination of several different cues which go to different senses--such as the person must be in a corner contacting 3 points, a certain ring must be turned & a certain code said for the alter to come forth. The advantages of the Star Trek story line is that

a. almost any type of scenario can be fit into the programming script because the Star Trek characters in the series, encounter about anything imaginable,

b. have holograms, which can serve as substitutes for mirror images in the programming,

c. alien programming can be introduced in order to promote the mock alien invasion being planned by the Illuminati, and

d. the Star Trek series has its own language which can be used for trigger codes, which Monarch slaves can study, and learn. The use of this klingon language will make it very difficult for ordinary people to break into the slave's programming.

Michael Aquino, Satanist and Colonel in the U.S. army, has enjoyed using Star Wars for programming. Aquino wrote his own version of the Star Wars, which he uses for programming. The programmer becomes Darth Vader, which then is reproduced as an alter within the victim.

In the Star Trek series, Data was a dehumanized "person" who stored vast amounts of information. Monarch slaves are always created with libraries, and volumes of information. This information is stored in various ways and can be retrieved in a variety of ways. Data of Star Trek lends himself to become the model for an alter of a Monarch system to copy. In other words the child is shown Data, and is steered in the right direction to create an internal person named Data. Any child if it is drugged, tortured, threatened with death if they don't follow directions, with weakened and confused minds will get to the point where the child will create a Data alter in its mind, rather than die.

Once in place, the Data alter will think of itself as the movie character. Every time the child sees Star Trek or pictures of Data, it will reinforce the programming. The transformer room technique of beaming in Star Trek is what magicians have tried to do for centuries and which has been called "bi-location-physical projection" as well as other things. This is said in magic to be mental control over the molecules of the body via demonic power. Whether magicians have ever done this, who knows, some certainly claim the power.

The Illuminist is a power structure placed into some Monarch slaves. It is constructed from parts of numerous demons, rather like a demonic Frankenstein, & is portrayed in Star Trek, the Next Gener. as the crystalline body. A cartoon series was created for Star Trek. In this series, children watch such things as Kirk in a magical universe of Megas-tu which has a Guardian of Forever. Two other spin-out shows were Deep Space Nine and S.T. Voyager. In other words, a child could watch 5 different Star Trek series. If the child's parents had cable T.V. the child be virtually immersed into the various Star Trek shows. Unfortunately, some of the children who have been programmed with this are doing exactly that. Fritz has personally worked with someone who has Star Trek programming. They sit for hours and immerse themselves totally into all kinds of Star Trek details.

We have two Star Trek Technical Manuals. Fritz's father is an engineer and designed quite a few things. Fritz himself has worked as a manual/computer draftsperson for the Federal Highway Administration as well as for his father off and on over the years. Based on that experience, he realizes the enormous amount of work that went into these Technical Manuals for the Star Trek series is simply mindboggling. One manual is 183 pages and the other is in the neighborhood of 250 pages. The amount of engineering and computer drafting that went into these manuals is astonishing. Why did someone go to such extremes? These manuals are as good as if NASA were planning to build an Enterprise spaceship. The plans are done more professionally than engineering designs that we have seen groups like the United Nations drawing up. Why did all this engineering, design and drafting happen for a fictional T.V. show? To create a book to sell? The books.. could hardly be best sellers. One originally sold for $13 U.S. and the other for $6.95. One reason so much work and money was put into these Technical Manuals is that they are used for programming helpless victims of the Monarch Mind Control.

The Following are the Descriptions of Why the Exhibits Are Important To Programming. The Technical (or Training) Manual pages are coded.

Exhibit 1 7-8.gif Star Fleet Technical Order (TM:379260-1) This page show codes on the far left that are similar to the type of codes used in Monarch access codes. Alters are trained to take the body upon the proper access code. Also certain activities or programs can be triggered by codes also.

Exhibit 2 7-9.gifUniform Color Code. (TM:379260-0) In creating a System within the slave's mind, geometric shapes are used. Within these shapes a number of worlds or universes will be created. These worlds can be 3-D. That means when building them in the child's mind they can have height, depth, and width. One system which I have seen several times in slaves has been a 13 x 13 x 13 cube. In order to give another dimension and to give the programmers the ability to tie different things in different parts of the system together--the programmers use color coding. Each alter will receive a color code. I am familiar with the standard color coding program, and how it is put into the child's mind. Dr. Green (Mengele) used a box of colored scarfs and electroshock to program in the color coding into victim's mind. Besides alters, other things in the system may be color coded also. Let's say as Programmers we place hidden observers on each level, system or world. Then we can tie those isolated alters together by color coding them the same. During the programming, computers are built into the mind to operate the programming, and they send their signals according to color coding.

Exhibit 3 7-10.gif Milky Way Galaxy Map (TM379260-2) This is just one of a number of maps that go with the Star Trek programming. During the programming (which is sophisticated torture of all kinds backed up w/ drugs) the child's mind will be encouraged to psychotically build worlds in his or her mind. These worlds are built with vortexes, mine fields, and in the case of Star Trek programming Radiation zones. If an alter would attempt to wander from its assigned spot in the mind, it will run into Radiation zones, walls, and other barriers. These zones are built into the mind, to insure that the multiple personalities do not contact each other. Aliens and holograms protect certain areas and prevent personalities from freely moving around in the mind. These "aliens" are placed into the victim's mind by high level demonology--in other words they are not aliens--they are demons which have been brought in by high level rituals.

Exhibit 4 7-11.gif 4.1 Computer System (p.50) The first thing created are the multiple personalities. Then these personalities are placed into a structured system. To operate that structured system and to insure compliance the Monarch programmer will put in what is called Omega programming. Omega programming consists of computers, wiring, conduits and cords. The most important part are the computers. These computers contain the instructions, and they are controlled by internal programmers who may be alters or who may be high level demons. The aliens (demons) who are placed strategically in the mind to keep the Omega programming intact are put in by sophisticated high level demonology. The high level demonology part of the programming is the most secret and it is termed Gamma programming. This is a diagram which could be used to help build into the child's mind a computer. In the early programming, a little girl while being tortured would be shown a multi-roomed dollhouse. The rooms would each have a separate color. The rooms would be linked in the child's mind to computers. In other words--the dollhouse structure was the structure the computers used. In the Star Trek programming, the modern child simply is given a multi-roomed computer like the one drawn.

Exhibit 5 7-12.gif Engineering Main Bridge Section TM:379260-3 Various methods of communication and travel within a Monarch system's mind will be built in. Various alters are allowed contact with other alters. Portals and one-way mirrors or one-way windows are built in also. In order to teach an alter to come to the front of the mind, an airplane taking off on a runway might be used as a visual aid to teaching how to leave the alters cubicle in the mind and come forward to take the body. Various internal communication system’s can be built into the System. The training manual is full of many possible communication and locomotion devices, and this is just one of a whole number of items that could be incorporated into a Monarch child’s mind as it is programmed.

Exhibit 6 7-13.gif pg. 82. Utilities The brain stems are scarred on babies and when the body rebuilds itself it overcompensates and the brain gets an incredible memory. Monarch slaves with scarred brain stems are running the computer systems for the New World Order. If the slave has a photographic memory as many of them do, then a specific chart like this utility chart could function as the blueprint for the mind when it creates its power packs. Power packs, and energy cells (sometimes put in like light bulbs) run the computers which are built into the slave’s mind. This is part of what is called the Omega programming.

Exhibit 7 7-14.gif TM:379260-2 S.I.N.S. Base Datum This is a coordinate system. In the early years the Monarch systems were built with 3 hour glasses each spinning on a x,y, or z axis. The hour glasses could be turned and in so doing the entire system of alters could be turned. Let’s say that we have a slave and we have created great Christian front alters. Now, we decide that the time has come to use the dark Satanic alters full time. Since the dark alters are hidden at the bottom of the system, we need to rotate the System 180 degrees so that the Satanic alters are now on top. Now the Satanic alters will receive extra energy to be out holding the body full time. This SINS Base Datum is a way of making a coordinate system for a Monarch System. Certain codes would then be given the System to make a shift when the handler needs to turn a System.

Exhibit 8 7-15.gif Darth Vader cover of Warren Magazine, plus the next two pages. This final exhibit consists of not one but 3 pages which are the first 3 pages of a article written by Michael Aquino. This article is Michael Aquino’s own version of Star Wars. It is this version that he wrote and then used to program Monarch Mind-Controlled slaves. Actually to give credit where credit is due, an army colonel (who has since moved to Santa Fe, NM) at the Army’s War College worked with Michael Aquino at designing mind-control programming around the Star War’s script. 7-17.gif

---

Chapter 8 The Science of Body Manipulation and Programming

A. The Scarring of the Brain Stem

Early on it was discovered that the brain would overcompensate for scarring on the brain stem. This is a principle similar to weight lifting. By tearing down the muscle fiber by overexertion, the body rebuilds the muscle stronger. By scarring the brain stem, it was discovered that geniuses who had photographic memories could be created. Brain stem scarring was used to create the whiz kids that the NWO needed to run their big computers. For instance, the computers that just NASA alone uses require people who can work in

ALGOL, BASIC, COBOL, COBOL 74, MULTICS COBOL ver. 4.4, COBOL Cb.4, COBOL CP-6, BOL, EULOR, FLIP, FORAST, FORTRAN, HAL/S, Illiac 4, JASP, JOSS, JOVIAL, /LYAPAS, LISP, LISP 2, /MAP/, NuSpeak, PASCAL, PEARL, /PLACE/, PL/1, PL/1-APAREL, PLANIT, Praxis, SA Machine Language, SEMANOL, SNOBEL, UNIX, WANG, ZBIE.

It takes a good memory to remember computer languages and programming. These whiz kids, who were both programmed with Monarch programming and had their brain stems scarred can be seen in some of the University computer departments and the intelligence/military agencies’ computers rooms.

For instance, at Ft. Meade , the NSA has 2 buildings which contain a completely self-sufficient intelligence operation. (The complex has its own stores, bank, dry cleaning, dentistry, barber shop, PX, hospital, as well as the normal snackbars and cafeteria that Federal buildings often have.)

This complex which is internally guarded by cameras watching all the corridors, has several major computer rooms where whiz kids are employed. Movement by these whiz kids, requires that they have the proper I.D. attached to them. The CIA which has had an ongoing project to create them, has called them "Compu-kids." Some of the elevators are private and operate only with the proper key. The NSA’s computers participate in electronically watching the world. Another example of where compu-kids (slaves with scarred brain stems) work on big computers (incl. a Beast computer) is at Area 51 (Dreamland), NV.

The method of scarring the reticular formation of the brain stem is accomplished electronically. The RNA piles up and breaks the continuity of the signals coming through. Different people's bodies are able to tolerate different levels of abuse. Many of the brain stem scarring victims die, or end up with a pseudo-Multiple Sclerosis. Many children are coming into hospitals and being misdiagnosed as having Multiple Sclerosis when in fact they are damaged from programming and brain stem scarring. If the victim is successfully given a photographic memory through their entire alter system due to brain stem scarring, then they are often programmed to see what are called "hieroglyphics" (that is the cover name) which is really just the 'Intergalactic Language" that NASA developed in the 1960s and then turned around and used to program slaves with photographic memories. Under the cover of research projects like N67-3042 (17 p. 3022) "Language structure and message decoding for interplanetary decoding." in 1967 and N65-32284 20-3414 in 1965 entitled "Symbol science for communication language of humans, animals, and inanimate objects --application to mathematics, cybernetics, and automation."

The actual study no. or no.s for the Intergalactic Language is not known, but they should appear somewhere in the voluminous Scientific and Technical Aerospace Reports that NASA puts out each year. The script of this language was shown in the beginning credits of the strange movie Lawnmower Man. Some of the symbols are similar to Ascii Computer language (which is a language that interfaces with many other computer languages, so that one language can be translated into another language.) The Monarch slaves are told that this is an alien language. This is the Way the Script of the Intergalactic Language Looks:

8-1.gif

Another method that has also been used to enhance memory is hypnosis. Estabrooks was able in the 1930s to create Multiple personalities via hypnosis and get incredible mental feats accomplished by those parts which were asked under hypnosis to have photographic memories. Still another method is to place small transceivers into the head or body of the person. These implants have been attached in the neck or other places, and have been connected to various parts of the brain. They have literally created what the movies called "terminal man."

This has allowed special intelligence agents to be linked to large computers. The intelligence asset can get continuous information on anything the intelligence agencies have managed to get into their large computers. Brain implants can down load incredible amounts of information to the brain, however, the ability to use this information wisely is still a skill. Having a library of information available doesn't necessarily mean a person is wiser. For more on slave-computer interfacing see the index for information on ALEX, Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmissions, and UNIX systems which are used to tie the Monarch Mind to computers.

Drugs and torture are also used to enhance memory. Brain stem scarring is not the only method to enhance memory, but it has been a "highly successful" (if one doesn't count all the ruined lives when it's failed) good method. MPD also naturally increases the brain's functioning several fold, and can help give photographic memories. In review, drugs, torture, hypnosis and MPD all work to enhance memory. Most slaves have some photographic memory capability. The most serious form of memory enhancement is brain stem scarring, which produces a strong system-wide photographic memory.

B. Split Brain Work

The brain is "bicameral" or two-sided. The two-sides (called hemispheres) communicate via a superpowerful connector called the corpus callosum. The left hemisphere is specialized in verbal-linguistic transduction of speech and analytical thinking (logic, math, cause & effect, language, & sequential thinking). The right side plays more of a role in holistic-metaphorical information transduction such as imagery (art, dance, intuition, subjective, spontaneous, holistic, & dream imagery). The primary role of creating imagery is carried out by the right side.

Roger Sperry, a neuroscientist won a Nobel Prize for feeding information to only one side of the brain, and also for feeding simultaneously both sides of the brain different information. His results showed that the two hemispheres could operate separately at the same time. We hate to rewrite history, but the work that won Sperry a Nobel Prize was being done to unwilling human victims before his publicly known experiments. Sperry’s research left people wondering if it wasn’t possible to have one personality located in one hemisphere, and another person in the other.

Psychologist Julian Jaynes wrote a book arguing that mankind used to have two personalities before the two hemispheres evolved an ability to integrate. (His book is The Origin of Consciousness in the Breakdown of the Bicameral Mind.) Before the public had heard about the ability of the two hemispheres to work independently, the Illuminati and MK-Ultra programmers were carrying out split brain programming, by two methods, 1. shutting down one side and communicating only with one side of the brain, and 2. by simultaneously feeding different information to each hemisphere. This is often down by the victim being locked in place with their eyes forced open, and different movies shown simultaneously to both eyes. This creates a form of split brain programming. High speed films will be shown with one hemisphere receiving horror scenes and the other getting family settings. This makes the two hemispheres work separately and the victim feel crazy. The mind feels ripped apart. One hemisphere is trying to dissociate and is having a miserable experience, while the other side is experiencing something just the opposite.

When high speed films are shown for split brain programming, the films are shown in 5 minute increments. Front alters may be shown good films to make them believe they live in a perfect world with a good family life. Right side satanic alters may receive horror films shown via the left eye. The right side of the brain doesn’t verbalize well, so this is one reason slaves have emotions without the ability to verbalize.

A possible third method is to use drugs that block the two hemispheres from communicating. A fourth method in split brain work is to speak into the left ear while giving the right ear confusing noise. This last method is sometimes done to force alters to concentrate when learning scripts. The split brain programming done by the Illuminati is grotesque. A drug is injected at the base of the skull into one hemisphere of the brain to shut it down, while the other hemisphere is kept awake. Torture is then carried out to split the mind. What this does is create programs and alters which are associated with only half of the brain. The brain is being further divided from itself.

Work is done by the Programmers to develop the thinking of alters from one side of the brain to think differently from those of the other side. Split brain programming is not just hypnosis, as some have been led to believe. Split brain programming provides the Programmers one way to keep the left hand from knowing what the right hand is doing. It also gives them the ability to put in body programs or memories which effect only half of the victim’s body.

When one hemisphere is dominating in what the brain is doing, the opposite nostril will open and take in air. When the right hemisphere is doing most of the thinking, the left nostril will be doing most of the breathing. Voluntary changes in nostril breathing can help shift the center of brain activity from one side of the brain to the other. When a person lays on his side, the downward side hemisphere will be activated, because the top nostril will breath best. The control of nasal breathing has been part of the Yogi’s art to achieve Samadhi.

The distinctions between the two hemispheres or two brains are used by the occult world. Moriah values the intuitiveness of the right hemisphere. As one Illuminati mind-control programmer said, "It’s the right brain that has an inbuilt propensity for accessing timelessness. There is bound to be some unconscious prompting therefore that alerts us to the imminence of forthcoming disaster, that is, if we are sufficiently sensitive to its message....unless we have the wisdom, the soul age, to affect the use of those additional facilities (to access right brain knowledge) we will find our intelligence sadly limited to the left brain logic of the material world."

While this book is not about occult philosophy, occult philosophy is part of the motivation behind some of the split brain work. In order for the Illuminati to create alters which are highly intuitive and which are able to access the higher demonic spheres, they need to shut down the logic hemisphere. When the left hemisphere is shut down, then the right brain (which controls the left hand and left side of the body, i.e. the left hand path) is able to function without competition. The victim must be able to get in touch fully with his or her intuitive side to go into the "spiritual dimensions" where demons exist. This is very nasty work, because this split brain work involves high level demonology. Most of the deeper Illuminati alters are right brain alters so that they will be very spiritually intuitive.

The Lesser Key of Solomon is an important teaching book of the Illuminati. It states, "An adept enters an abnormal plane and equips himself to ‘charge’ with magical energy the pentacle and talismans." The training that this takes is called "training of the higher will" and split brain programming is part of how it is accomplished.

C. Medical Technologies

Medical science has been probing the gray matter that makes up the human brain for several hundred years and they continue to probe it. With the use of various new techniques they can look inside the human brain in ways that were not available before. An enzyme called horseradish peroxidase (HRP) which serves as a marker or highlighter allows brain researchers to visually look at brain cells on functioning brains. Researchers such as Frank Putnam, at the National Institute of Mental Health, have taken PET scans of the brains of people with multiple personalities, whose brain scans from one alter personality to another are very different.

This doesn’t occur in non-multiple people who pretend to have different personalities. The brain scans have shown that brains with multiple personalities are physically different than other people’s brains. The different personalities are often in different neurophysiological states. Medical science has helped the programmers put people into different neurophysiological states for programming. Some of these states are dangerous unless trained medical personnel are available to insure the victim doesn’t die. Which, according to ex-Programmers, does happen anyway.

Medical science has identified glutamate which is an amino acid as an important neurotransmitter involved with memory storage. However, after countless tests and all types of research, we still do not know completely how the brain stores memory. However, the NWO’s Network understands far more than they have let the public learn.

Having Skilled Medical Lab Technicians

Having the medical know how doesn’t get the job done in itself. Obviously, the Network has needed to have both hospitals and trained medical personnel. Having skilled workers is part of the success of the Monarch Programming. For instance, the simple interpretation of Alpha BFT instruments, requires that the operator be able to understand what is background interference. Everywhere the instrument is located there is going to be some amount of background interference. Only the good operators can realize when a pseudo-alpha wave has been produced, perhaps from the child sweating in the location of the electrode, or hair movements, or eye blinks or twitching.

The Illuminati has their own midwifery training program, which will take teenage Monarch slaves and train them. They also begin training their people in programming and observation from infancy up. By the time they are an adult, the programming alters know programming as second nature. They have no shortages of doctors, nurses, psychiatrists, and other well educated people. If they have to save an important Monarch slave, they may fly in a specialist from wherever the right specialist is.

When it comes to research, some of it done by professionals who don’t realize how their research is going to be used. Many researchers are great on seeing detail, but not the bigger picture. They usually don’t realize how their research is going to be misused, and are very gullible people. The CIA finds that the researcher is quick to justify in his or her mind the moral value of the research they are doing.

Many members of the Illuminati are involved in secret genetic research. Having control over numerous big hospitals, is an important link in the ability of the Network to program so many people successfully. Medical personnel are participating in acts that help mind-control. One Christian nurse quit the University Hospital here, because newborns are secretly being given implants. A few years ago, it was discovered that The Upjohn, an American multinational company was involved in placing radiotransmitting material in with their liquid cortisone preparation Depomedrone, which created an implant when medical personnel put Depomedrone into their patients.

D. Histamines

Histamine is a chemical (a particular molecule) which the body uses to defend against alien cells. It also has the ability to lower blood pressure and to flare up the skin. The auditory sense can effect histamine production via programming. Histamine is a molecule which is part of the immune system. Changes in histamine levels effect moles. It effects skin changes in scars. This is how the abusers can magically make scars appear and disappear, which makes the programming seem even more real to alters. The abusers like to create invisible scars that form patterns and pictures. The most popular is the Baphomet head (which stands for Satan). Upon command they can trigger the skin to make these scars visible.

If one pricks someone's skin with a needle having histamine on the tip, it will cause the skin to flare up red. Biofeedback has allowed people to mentally talk to their skin. Hypnosis has controlled people's immune system. States of mind effect the immune system. Somehow a combination of these is used to allow the handler upon command to trigger the correct state of mind within the victim to increase histamine production within the skin area.

The bone marrow of the body produces stem cells. The stem cells are capable of growing into many different types of cells. First the stem cells grow into some basic different cells and those in turn grow some more and further differentiate. For instance, a stem cell can become a myeloid, which can become a polymorpho nuclear granulocyte which in turn can become a basophil or mast cell. Both basophils and mast cells are leukocytes and they are part of the body's immune system. Both basophils and mast cells are carriers of histamine.

Histamine does several things in the body. Histamine causes dilation of blood vessels, and it allows blood vessels to become permeable (leaky so to speak) which allows other chemicals and fluid to go through the blood vessels into the area between cells and tissues. All CNS (Central Nervous System) cells of the body have receptors that the histamine can attach itself to like a ship docking. When cells are damaged, or alien cells enter the body, the basophils and mast cells release their histamine. For the body to have more histamine, it must increase the number of basophils and mast cells. This can be accomplished by changing the ratio of stem cells that develop into other types of cells. The core of the histamine molecule is an ethylamine. Antihistamines are molecules that resemble histamines enough that they can attach themselves to the histamine receptors on regular cells and prevent the histamine molecules from attaching. If the histamine molecules don't attach, the body disposes of them. The point being that histamine remains in the skin only so long before the body disposes of it.

Histamine levels in the body can raise IF the cells which carry the histamine are increased. This is the Structure of a Histamine Molecule:

8-2.gif

It is believed that breast implants have some kind of effect on raising histamine production levels in the body. Whether these breast implants are identical to what all breast implants are, or whether they have something special to agitate the body into higher immune cells' production of the mast cell & basophils type is not known. However, there seems to be some relationship between the Network's need to raise histamine production in their slaves, and the breast implants that they are putting in them. Putting the pieces together leads one to believe that the implants agitate the body's immune system into raising the level of its histamine carrying cells.

A number of women who have gotten implants speak about an increase in allergies. The allergic reaction is caused by high levels of histamine. Whether this happens to some or many is not known at the time this is written. The three big Illuminati chemical companies are **I.G. Farben, DuPont, and Dow Chemical**. Dow Chemical began research with implanting silicon in 1956. After 35 years of studies in which they implanted thousands of various animals with silicon, the company knew exactly what silicon would do in the human body. The FDA had public hearings in 1992 where internal documents of the Dow Chemical Co. were released which showed that the company knew all along that their breast implants were very dangerous, years before they put them on the market. There is an incredible search going on for a anti-silicon antibody so that they can clean up the mess they have created in millions of people who have silicon implants. The immediate chest wall and area around the breast implant gets highly agitated. The silicon leaks through the membrane, and then causes great difficulties in the body. Many of the female Monarch slaves have received breast implants.

E. Body Programs

Researchers have come a long way toward understanding the mind. They have discovered, for instance, that under stress the brain will convert nerve signals into "messenger molecules" who then in turn direct the endocrine system to produce steroid hormones, that can reach the nucleus of various cells and cause them to change how the body's genes are written out. These genes will then direct the cells as to how to make a variety of molecules which are used in growth, metabolism, sexuality, and the immune systems.

In other words, the mind can rewrite genetics. This was the secret that helped get the Monarch program off to its scientific foundation. Now the actual mechanics of this have been observed by researchers. One of the leaders in understanding the mind-body relationship was Franz Alexander. Black was one of the researchers into how hypnosis can be used to regulate the body and the body's functions such as the immune system. Ken Bowers also worked in this area. Dr. S.M. Lambert of the Rockefeller Foundation studied how voodoo could cause death by creating certain thoughts in the mind. Most of the research in this area was monitored, if not sponsored by the Intelligence agencies under the auspices of the Illuminati.

The Hypothalamus bridges the mind and the body. It works as part of the Limbic-hypothalamic system. This system is a determining center for what state of mind the brain is placed in. The immune system communicates directly with the hypothalamus part of the brain with its own "messenger molecules" known as "immunotransmitters". This then is mind-brain link that the Monarch programmers have taken so much advantage of.

Barbara Brown, a physiologist at Veteran's Administration Hospital (in Sepulveda) wrote a book New Mind, New Body. Barbara Brown's research was government funded. Her book got the public interested in biofeedback. Because of repeated success at getting patients to control such things as their heartbeat, Dr. Brown is convinced that a person's heart rate, breathing, muscle tension, glandular responses are all subject to a person's will. Those who have worked with victims of U.S. government MK Ultra mind control know that what Dr. Brown writes is correct and was known years before she published her book. Biofeedback is now required training in some prisons for some inmates.

It is clear from the final results that Monarch slaves have programming which can carry out the following functions:

control the pulse rate and heart beat
control the body's temperature
control the temperature of individual body parts or sides of the body--such as the right side of the body might get hot, and the left side of the body get ice cold. Fritz has observed this by touching the left and right sides of a victim who was burning hot on the right and ice cold on the left.

The secretions of various enzymes and histamine production has been trained into the victims and attached to various body programs to keep the slave in line. Histamine production appears to be regulated via surgery carried out on women's breast. It appears, but hasn't been confirmed that the surgery where breast implants are placed into female Monarch slaves plays some role in histamine production & programmed control.

allow the body to pretend that it is dead, when actually it is in an altered state similar to being comatose. The internal defenses consists in part of body programs that are triggered if the Mind-controlled slave steps out of line.

Here is a good list of some of these body programs:

Auditory problems, a Bone disorder, Blood flow/circulation, Coma (zombie death sleep which makes victim appear dead), Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, Histamine production, Optic problems such as blindness, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, and Temperature change.

Body programs will be put in across the board for all alters. The same code will work for all alters when the internal programming alters want to trigger a body program. If a body program is placed into the slave it may be anchored to something, and that might be something as drastic as the heartbeat. One of the programs causes the victim to hear a heartbeat which is refrained in their minds as the "heartbeat of Satan."

Some of the body programs are carried out by creating an alter which has one mental state--such as an alter fragment which is burning or one that was created by ice torture. This alter or this feeling of being hot or cold is then attached to something in the mind. For instance, if the victim moves toward the world, a cold alter or a cold feeling of a memory is hypnotically programmed to come up behind the alter holding the body. Sometimes the sensation of burning can be eliminated by getting a firechild to back up from the front of the mind where another alter is holding the body.

Many feelings, body sensations, and drugged states are attached to programs. When the alter hits a stringer, he will go through a series of memories, false memories, hypnotic commands, and body sensations that have been attached together in stringers. The stringer type of programming is often put in to set in a front program which is to deceive an alter.

The abilities of the human brain to control the body have been seriously underrated by people. Bio-feedback researchers in the 1960s were surprised to find out that if a single nerve cell's activity is placed upon a screen so that the subject can see its activity graphed, the subject will be able to mentally identify that cell apart from any other nerve fiber cell, and will be able to have voluntary control over that single cell apart from any other. Just to show how complex the body is, a single nerve fiber cell will have 600 connections. This mental feat is simply mind-boggling for researchers.

The Mar. 5, 1972 L.A. Times reported that patients were being taught how to alter their heart rate without drugs. This had already been happening within the Monarch Programming. The heart is controlled by the mind and works with the emotions of a person. There have been people who have literally died from a "broken heart." This is a historical fact. The Monarch programmers have long been taking advantage of the mind's ability to control the heart's beating. A tiny little bit of tissue not really visible to the visible eye called the sinus node, sends out electrical signals that regulate and initiate heart beats in an unbroken rhythm. The genetic code concerning the body's metabolism and the genetic code for the sinus node somehow get the entire heart beat generator mechanism started.

Two areas of the brain control the changes in heart beats that the sinus node would make. The sinus node sends out the signals but it doesn't change the rate. A very primitive part of the brain stem is one of the control areas, and the other control area along the spine. Both of these areas connect to the higher thinking areas of the brain. The three most frequent events that change heart beat are emotions, sicknesses, and muscle activity. Since the will influences emotions, the higher brain can control the heart beat and its pulse.

Alters are programmed so that they will trance out if anyone tries to prove to them that they have a heart--which they have been programmed to believe was taken away from them by the programmer. The occult world learned this ability from the Indian yogis who have been controlling their hearts for centuries. Some have even shown in the scientific laboratory that they can stop their hearts for up to 30 seconds. (See Green of Menninger Foundation's work.) The yogi's also developed the skill of changing their body temperatures. For instance, Swami Rama in the lab of Dr. Elmer Green could make one side of his palm hot and the other side of his palm cold simply by mental efforts.

This type of body control was learned by the Illuminati years ago, and has been applied to the Monarch programming to make the programming lies seem more real to the victim than the outside world. A Monarch slave can get cold on the left side and burn on the right side of his body. It has been well-documented that the mind can control the blood flow to various tissues and in this way change temperature in various different parts of the body. This was first reported to the public in 1978 (Barabasz & McGeorge). It appears that a combination of yogi type bio-feed back techniques along with classical behavior conditioning is able to account for some of the body programs in slaves.

Other body programs appear to be connected to the memories of alters. For instance, if the Programmer wants the body to burn--he has the System pull up an alter which was tortured with fire who comes up behind the alter holding the body, and the body then abreactes and feels like it is burning. As mentioned, one technique is the split-brain programming where the functioning of the two hemispheres of the brain are separated, which allows the patient to feel the "right hand path" and the "left hand path" separately. This type of programming is very powerful in making the programming script seem more real than outside reality.

High blood pressure or hypertension has been found to be largely a function of the mind. However, conventional medicine has ignored this for years, and has a large volume of confusing and misleading research to the opposite. Rather, than admit the cause, the medical establishment has labelled the largest percentage of hypertension cases as "essential" or "idiopathic" which are labels to cover up that they don't know (or refuse to recognize) the cause of the high blood pressure.

At any rate the cardiovascular systems (heart and blood vessels, etc.) is so complex that it has been very difficult for researchers to get a grasp on many issues involved in blood pressure such as the release of hormones into the blood, and the result of long term stress on the cardiovascular system. When tests show that the stress of unemployment increases high blood pressure problems among men, it would seem that the medical establishment would begin to see the link that the mind has with controlling blood pressure. Again bio-feedback and classic conditioning have been successfully used to radically change a subject's blood pressure. This along with the ability to go into deep trances, are abilities that the Monarch slave is programmed to have to control their blood pressure. Again the question may be, why would they condition a slave this way? Because, if the Master can call out a hypnotic trigger and change the slave's heart beat and blood pressure, does the reader see how "puppet-like" the slave feels? The slave's mind and body are literally owned by the master. The slave is not even allowed to control his own body. This is what total mind control is all about.

Pathways

The medical profession uses the term "pathways" to describe the ways the mind creates biochemical and physiological changes. In other words, how does the mind consciously decide to change its body? When medical researchers began to understand how the two hemispheres worked, they began to understand better how to facilitate mind-to-body communication so that they could program the slave's mind to control its body.

One of the better books on this subject is The Psychobiology of Mind-Body Healing by Ernest Lawrence Rossi. Rossi and Erickson devised a three-stage approach to accessing the person's inner resources for therapy. This type of hypnotic-induced healing is a clue to part of how the Body programs are structured in for body control by the programming. What some use for good, is used by others for evil. During the hypnotic work, Rossi uses what is called the "inner mind" of the person.

For instance, to get a person to stop bleeding indirect hypnotic suggestions are made in the following 3 stages,

a. a time-binding introduction of "Why don't you stop bleeding? Now!"

b. there is an accessing of state dependent unconscious processes that can control the bleeding, and

c. there is a response by the person which ratifies that the inner process of stopping the bleeding has actually happened.

The hypothalamus is a very small part of the brain. It is only the size of a pea, but it contains an immense amount of important tissues which control all types of inner activities of the body, including the endocrine, the immune, the neuropeptide and automatic systems. It is this area of the brain which is manipulated by hypnosis. The limbic-hypothalamic system is in a constant process of shifting what state of mind the brain is in.

There are numerous unconscious and conscious states that can be shifted to. These are labeled "psycho-neuro-physiological states" because researchers now realize how a state involves the entire person. All learning is associated and depends upon the state it was learned in! A new sense organ was discovered, and US. News & World Report, July 19, 1993, p. 61 reported on it. We do not know when this tiny sense organ, which is located in the nasal cavity, was discovered by the people doing mind-control, but it is already being exploited. This organ responds to chemicals called pheromones, which play an important role in human emotions, such as fear, hunger and love.

Human skin gives off odorless pheromones which other people can detect. Basic human drives are controlled by Pheromones. Endorfin is a peptide, of which at least 50 have been charted. By manipulating these chemicals, people can be biochemically put into a different state of mind, and victims have been manipulated by these chemicals. These chemicals are being used in conjunction with **Virtual Reality** to control slaves' minds. In the

March-April ‘94 edition of The Futurist the author Glenn F. Cartwright, of McGill University announces in his article "Virtual or Real? The Mind in Cyberspace", "Strangely, the developers of virtual reality seem largely unconcerned by the possible dangers inherent in launching individuals into another reality." This is because Virtual Reality is being developed as another tool of mind-control. Computers can dynamically control and synchronize all that needs to be coordinated to give someone a virtual reality experience. The researchers/programmers are trying to immerse as many of the victim’s senses into their virtual reality trip as possible. It becomes almost impossible to distinguish reality from the trip for the victim of this type of programming. McGill University, Dr. White (Cameron’s) old stomping grounds did some virtual reality research.

People are now getting involved with what is called MUDs (multi-user dungeons) where a person via virtual reality can create a parallel life. Some people are spending up to 120 hours a week immersed in their virtual reality second life. In 1992, Internet had 207 such games. Now the programmed slave only needs to hook into Internet to be programmed. Cartwright’s article warns that a person’s ego-center can be projected somewhere else via virtual reality, which destabilizes one’s actual understanding of where their own identity is. He also warns that Virtual reality will create other personalities. He writes on page 24, "Multiple Identities. If it is possible in virtual reality or cyberspace to enter an altered state, become disembodied, swap genders, create a virtual ego-center, decenter the self, and assume a different identity, then it may also be possible to assume more than one identity at the same time. In this context, the exponential increase in multiple-personality disorders in recent decades may be of more than just passing interest .... having multiple, serial, and simultaneous personae in cyberspace may not only be possible, but may even be encouraged as a part of interacting with others.” Virtual reality via the computer Internet has now become another tool of the Programmers.

Music Dissociated tones, beats and music may accompany hypnotic induction drugs. Pulsing beating sounds in the ears can change the brain’s waves. It is no secret that music will put someone into an altered state. Music will change moods, heart rate, and even one’s state of consciousness. In a home church setting, that Fritz participated in, the question was asked of a group what they do to overcome depression. Everyone present listed "listen to music" as one of the things they do to overcome depression.

Sound will change body chemistry, blood pressure, breathing and digestion. (See Jacobson, Steven. "Media Mind Control", Media Bypass, Sept. ‘95, pg. 50). To quote Jacobson, "Fast music will speed up the nervous system while slow music will slow it down. Sounds vibrate in different parts of the body. Low tones will vibrate in the higher portions and on into the head. Much of today’s popular rock music is built around a heavy bass pattern louder than the melody. These low-frequency vibrations reverberate in the lower parts of the body so that the music ‘feels’ good. These loud, low-frequency vibrations and the driving beat of most rock music affect the pituitary gland, which controls male and female responses.

The repeating sound pattern induces the hypnotic state of mind that is similar to day dreaming, thus clearing the mind of all thought so that the message can be implanted in the unconscious without resistance. " It is important to note that the lyrics of many rock songs are not clearly distinguishable consciously. When you do not hear the message clearly, you cannot make the conscious choice to accept or reject it. When you cannot make that choice or when that choice is taken away from you, the message is programmed directly to the subconscious, thus circumventing analysis and choice in accepting the content of the message.

Sixties rock superstar Jimi Hendrix said: ‘You can hypnotize people with music, and when you get them at their weakest point, you can preach into their subconscious whatever you want to say.’" Long term exposure to the heavy metal themes of sadomasochism, satanism, suicide and drug abuse can only have a negative influence on the minds of the listener. Today’s generation of children are being raised on this type of music. Many of the big rock bands consist of satanists. This statement isn’t made flippantly, but from having learned from many witnesses of the rituals these Satanic bands participate in. Some of these satanists, as the reader can already guess, are programmed multiples. For those programmed multiples who participate in heavy rock music, they are simply adding one more type of bondage and mind-control to their already long list. The spiritual damage done by rock music will be briefly addressed later in Chapter 10.

Programming Damage to the Body

Many of the body programs that activate via trigger codes are simply memories of severe torture. For instance, the victim might be placed naked on a block of ice, which contains the body of a frozen person. (This is a common trauma used in programming.) When this memory is triggered, via an alter or alter fragment, the victim's body abreacts and gets very cold.

Another common torture is to stick a ureteric catheter up the external urethral orifice (whose channel is called the urethra). This is painful. Then the urinary bladder is filled so that the victim is in extreme pain, and is made to hold their bladder in silence. This torture to the body is painful. But the long term effects of this torture, which is done repeatedly to slaves to teach obedience, is to seriously damage their urinary bladders. The abreaction of memories of this help blackmail alters into obedience. The body of many slaves are only kept functioning, because they are given repeated surgery by doctors working under the auspices of the Illuminati. These doctors can be trusted on to keep quiet about the abused bodies they have to keep fixing.

It was mentioned in chapt. 2 that some people suffering from autism are failures in mind control programming. We know of one case where a brilliant autistic teenager who'd not talked during childhood began talking, and shocked his parents because he began talking about his spirit guides (see Chapter 10 on spirit guides.) Some people diagnosed as MS are really failures of the mind control's brain stem scarring. Many hundreds of women w/ breast implants are coming down w/ symptoms that look like MS & Lupus. This may be because part of the women w/ implants are programmed multiples. Another disease that is believed by some to be caused by programming failures is lupus (aka lupus erythematosus or systemic lupus erythematosus). Establishment medical science claims that the cause of lupus is unknown. Modem Maturity (Ap/My '93) & Nations Business (May '93) are examples of magazines that have run articles about Lupus. Ronald I. Carr and the Lupus Foundation of America put out a handbook on the disease in 1986. The director of the Lupus Foundation has been an Illuminati programmed multiple.

The effects of the programming are not just in the mind. It has been scientifically shown that the torture memories are enbedded in the cells of the body. In fact, the Illuminati intentionally wants the body injured by trauma pains & trauma memories, because they want to prevent the possibilities of the sanctification of the body such as written about in 2 TM 2:2 1. Also, the Programmers intentionally & zealously prevent the deeper alters from wanting to love as 1 COR 13 describes.

Physical Aspects of the Human Brain

Neurobiologists and chemists have learned a great deal about the physical aspects of the brain. One has to be careful about simplification. The concept of the split brain has been over simplified, because the best researchers on the two hemispheres know that there is constant interplay between the brain's two halves--unless the Illuminati have tampered with someone's brain.

The split brain concept has been replaced with the Penta-Brain (something akin to a pentagram). The Penta-Brain takes the triune-concept of the brain conceived by brain scientist Paul MacClean and adds it to the split brain hemispheres and the duality of the frontal-posterior dimension also. In this process, "mammalian" & "reptilian" brains (those parts of our brains that mammals & reptiles also have) are accessed and worked on in people. The best description read by co-author Fritz of the intricate chemical changes that happen during Learning and Memory is a Special Report entitled "The Chemistry of Learning and Memory" Chemical & Engineering News, Oct. 7, 1991, pp. 24-4 1, by Karen J. Skinner, Yale Chemistry Ph.D. in '73, Masters from Kennedy School of Govt., Harvard. This is a very technical report.

The programmers do not learn this material, but those who want to understand the nitty-gritty molecular-biology of how the complex memory processes work in the mind might want to try to study the report. In very basic terms, what it is communicating is: Neurons (nerve cells--of which the brain has 10 billion) meet each other at junctions (gaps) called synapses. At the synapses (gaps), neurotransmitters allow them to communicate. There are 60 trillion synapses. As a person gathers information, the brain changes the synapses, in a sense rewires itself. Part of memory is how the brain "rewires" itself, to use a layman's term.

Genetics have an important role in the initial hardwiring of the brain. Genetics also determine receptor diversity (at the synapses) which relates directly to learning & memory because it increases the ways neurons can perceive, process and recall information. The Hippocampus has been found to play a role in long term memory storage. The Hippocampus stores memory in the cortex to be encoded into long term memory.

Numerous areas of the brain are busy with processing only one type of memory. In a macaque monkey, around two dozen distinct visual areas of the brain for memory storage have been discovered. In other reports, it has come out that memory is stored holographically. German researchers have been trying to figure out at the Max Planck Institute for Brain Research at Frankfurt, Germany what mechanism is used to bind the many various parts of information stored into a coherent recollection.

The point that should be made at this point, is that an alter does not exist in one spot in the mind. The mind perceives that an alter does, but an alter in terms of physical change in the brain is actually a multitude of synaptic changes scattered throughout the brain. The brain's concept/image of an alter and the dissociated state can be played with by the programmers, but they really don't kill alters like they pretend to do during programming. Alters can't be "killed" in the mind. As the mind consolidates info, it fires neurons in harmony (in phase) called a "binding" process. Perceptions which are not memories are initiated this way. It is these perceptions that exist without memories that are so important to the programmers. Some have called these perceptions "global unity" of the brain. These are in phase frequencies from 40 to 70 Hz.

NMDA receptors can perceive patterned firings from nerve cells that are active at the same time, which allows the brain to strengthen some synapses and let others grow weaker. Synaptic efficacy is called LTP. Interested readers can study LTP's molecular mechanism, etc. in Karen Skinner's Report.

Changing subjects slightly, let's discuss how Moriah fertilizes two zygotes and intentionally kills one of the twins in the womb. Studies have shown that in cases where one twin dies in the womb, the other twin usually tries to lead two lives. This has nothing to do with DID (MPD), except that the surviving twin will later be made into a programmed multiple. The Illuminati doctors have perfected a method to kill a developing twin so that the other engulfs it in the womb. This is skillfully done, and creates some interesting mental changes in the survivor. Moriah also believes that it endows the survivor with twice the spiritual power.

Genetic Engineering to Create Programmed Assassins

This next section is somewhat of an appendix to this chapter. Readers may want to skip it, if readers are only wanting to just learn HOW the mind-control is done. However, we felt that since genetic engineering went hand-in-hand with Moriah's mind-control that a look at one specific type of military mind-control model would be worthwhile for some readers.

An example of how genetic engineering is couple with the trauma-based mind-control is **Amphibious Man**, a particular top secret model of Monarch slave. The following section is taken from an earlier article by Fritz on this. As far as we know, this was the first and only article ever written on the subject (not counting classified secret documents). When the public saw the British Royal Navy locate the sunken Lusitania in 1935 using the Iron Man Diving Suit, the British Royal Navy told the public that it had no interest and no use for the suit. The Royal Navy lied about the Iron Man Diving Suit that, "no use could be made of it as the Navy [had] no requirements for deep diving." The Royal Navy had no use for deep diving! Do you swallow that? That's a bold enough lie to drown on. They had just used it to locate the Lusitania!

The lesson here is that when the World Order is using a particular advanced technology, they will tell the public that they have no interest in it. The British, American and German navies continued after W.W.I to do research beyond what the public knew they were interested in. While the public thought that Aquaman was simply a comic idea--the research went on to develop the ability for humans to swim like fish. When the World Order has discovered a technological breakthrough they pretend that they are still researching the basic concept. Often they prepare the public for their inventions via science fiction novels and movies. The reasons include their need to avoid the future shock that can incapacitate a people.

If the reader has gone fishing, she or he may be familiar with how fish can breathe in the air, they don't die automatically. They have gills which are designed to take oxygen from water, but their gills do absorb some oxygen from the air, enough to keep them alive on land for a while, so that if they are left on the bank after being caught they may jump back into the water and escape. Likewise, people don't automatically die from drowning. Near drown victims have been recovered after 40 minutes of being immersed in cold water. However, normal humans do not survive breathing water as well as fish breathe air. There are some animals though which can breathe both air and water, amphibians.

Over the years, the New World Order has secretly developed the ability to create a subspecies of people who can swim and breathe water. Recently, the Oregonian newspaper (July 28, 1995) Arts & Entertainment Guide, p. 22, ran an article entitled "Brave New Waterworld". This is an example of a fictional supposedly futuristic setting for a movie about a technology they already possess. The movie Waterworld is the most expensive film made recently. It is estimated that it cost between $140 million to $200 million to make it. One of the main characters in the movie is Mariner, who is a human who has been genetically changed to have gills behind his ears. As mentioned already, they use movies like this to convince people that their present technology is only something of the future, while still preparing people mentally to accept it. That way the culture is not overwhelmed if they encounter the technology in the near future.

When secret researchers discovered that a particular chemical(s) added to the bloodstream would enable the human lungs to take oxygen and remove carbon dioxide from water, they had the ability to have men swim in water like fish without scuba gear. Now they needed to cover their tracks, so National Geographic Society (which has great respectability in the public's eye) has written about experiments to find a way for men to breathe water. In the National Geographic book Exploring the Deep Frontier The Adventure of Man in the Sea, published in 1980, they show a GE experiment on pg. 248. The picture's caption reads, "To dive like a whale and breathe like a fish: Scientists search for ways to increase man's freedom and range in the sea. In a tank at a General Electric research laboratory (right) fish swim past a parakeet separated from their watery world by a transparent membrane. Watertight but porous, the membrane allows oxygen and carbon dioxide to pass in and out. Equipped with artificial gills, man may one day breathe liquid while diving."

The example here is that they cover their tracks when they make a discovery by setting up experiments that are allowed to be published that make it look like they are only beginning to understand the subject. Bear in mind, the Allies captured secret Nazi German records, and the Germans did not research using parrots--they used live but expendable people. The Nazis were not above injecting drugs that induce respiratory paralysis or other responses and testing how the person's body would respond to drowning. I would suggest that they analyzed 02 contents in the human guinea pigs with mass spectrometers. The paperwork of the secret Nazi research projects that the Navy confiscated at the end of W.W. II, would provide a better picture of what was researched and discovered.

The National Geographic article admitted that they had a membrane through which a parrot could get oxygen via the water around it. Now, logic would tell you that if they have a membrane that will allow a parrot to breathe surrounded by water that the technical difficulties of adapting this to a person can be easily overcome--so the concept of gills for people is quite achievable--however, the ability for humans to directly breathe from water is already achievable due to some other advances they have already used secretly for years. In order to capitalize on their discovery of how to create Amphibious Man, military minds in the Illuminati went to work trying to think up schemes on how to use men who can swim like fish to their own evil advantages. Here is a discovery that could benefit mankind and yet they are thinking of ways to use it for evil.

They basically realized that amphibious man could be used like a glorified Seal team. Seal teams are the navy's semi-secret group of well-trained men, who do primarily land operations after swimming ashore. Monarch slaves are being used in the Seal teams. The Seal teams are being secretly used to carry out assassinations, such as recently they were used to assassinate people in Iraq. They are trained in the ability to land and disguise themselves as natives and carry out illegal assassination work during times of peace. For missions like this only programmed slaves will work, because they need to erase their memories.

Seal teams are located around the world, especially in the San Diego HO area. The Seals were originally given dolphins to train and communicate with via clickers but these were turned over the EOD (the navy's ordinance group) so that the dolphins can be used to disarm mine fields or carry explosives. The comic book scenario of Aquaman with dolphins is not fiction anymore. The Seals use SDV (Deep Vehicles) which are tight fitting 4-person minisubs to submerge deep into the water, before swimming with gear. The name which is being used world-wide by people familiar with the concept of men swimming like fish is "amphibious man".

There are groups secretly world-wide working on the use of this new sub-species of man. They are genetically trying to engineer new skin and other parts of the human body to make people more suitable for living underwater. In line with this, men, like Frenchman Jacques Rougerie, have been designing and building Aqua-cities so that people could live underwater and have industry such as fish farming to sustain themselves economically. Special "geothermal" generators would help generate heat for the Aqua-cities. Amphibious man is alive and well today.

Understand that the people who are being genetically engineered by the Illuminati are also being raised under their mind-control. The structures of their alter systems are very complex on Amphibious Man models, because so much secrecy is riding on these slaves. The internal systems of these slaves are booby trapped every which way so that no tampering can be attempted, plus the design work on these Systems is some of the best. Things are tied together like a jigsaw puzzle. Fritz's Summer '95 newsletter, revealed for the first time that today, there are genetically engineered Amphibious men who are able to swim underwater without air tanks.

There were a number of difficulties that the elite's scientists had to overcome to create Amphibious man. Scientists had the benefit of being able to make lots of comparisons - between various animals. Some animals can use water, some water and air, and some just air. There are many other comparisons that have been used in underwater research. In almost every physical aspect related to animals living underwater there are differences between various animals which can be compared so that the technical feature which allows one animal to do something underwater that another species can't can be identified. Once the feature is identified, then research can begin on how to obtain this feature for human swimmers.

For instance, one type of snake (the pelagic yellow-bellied sea snake) which breathes air, can under optimum conditions stay underwater indefinitely. Turtles have an incredible tolerance for anoxia, in comparison to other reptiles, which go underwater. And sea turtles have the best tolerance of all the various turtles. This is the type of difference that lends itself to comparison research. Underwater comparison research had already begun clear back in 1869, when Paul Bert examined the differences between domestic chickens and mallard ducks. Doing comparisons it is easy to find out that birds and mammals which dive have greater storage in their bodies for 0^2 than humans.

The Japanese Ama divers were studied in the early 1930s by German underwater researchers. However, the public has been told that very little research in this area occurred until the 1960s. Kooyman, Gerald L. Diverse Divers Physiology and Behavior. Berlin, Ger.: Springer-Verlag, 1989, p. 33 states, "Little further experimental work was done on the subject of gas exchange in human breath-hold divers until the early 1960s." Can you believe that the British, Germans and Americans didn't research such an important underwater subject for 30 years? Yes, they did continue frantic secret research, and they eventually learned how to solve a number of undersea problems facing humans.

First, the regulation of respiration is carried out by what is called the Chemoreceptors which are carotid and aortic bodies which detect the changes in the partial pressures of oxygen and carbon dioxide in the blood. The CO2 break point mechanism is sensitive to a number of phenomena, which can prevent it from protecting a person. When a person breaths, he has an ingassing and an outgassing of oxygen, carbon dioxide, nitrogen, and other gasses. The levels of each of these gasses and their nature are important factors in how a person's body underwater functions or dies. If the level of CO2 gets too high, the person can become unconscious. The human circulatory system has to be changed to be able to adapt to the ocean environment.

In dealing with men swimming underwater all the laws of gasses that regular divers have to deal with still apply to Amphibious Man--such as Amonoton's law, Boyle's Law, Charles Law, Henry's Law, and Haldanian's Theory on gas absorption and elimination by body tissues. Blood glucose is the only source for carbon when humans dive, which forces muscles to rely primarily on anaerobic glycolysis. This means that oxygen depletion is not the only major problem for those who hold their breath and swim. Blood glucose levels must be attained for underwater swimmers that will sustain activity. Breathing water must assure the proper functioning of the circulatory system. The high salinity of sea water causes hypertonic reactions in the lungs. Fresh water has too little salt in relation to the human blood & it causes hypotonic reactions. Either way, the water (either fresh or salt) causes the alveolar tissue to damage and the body begins leaking proteins out of the mouth.

Secret naval intelligence researchers tied to the Illuminati studied what happens underwater to the heart rate, cardiac output and stroke volume, blood pressure and flow, the various important organs and the human brain, the muscles and bones and venous circulation, the hemoglobin affinity for 0^2, the effect of being submersed on blood gases, how oxygen is stored, and how hemoglobin concentrates in the body.

Another advancement was to discover how to manipulate the genetic codes for the growth of skin, so that very dense skin could be created. The genetics for all types of animals have been spliced and diced and all of weird humans and creatures have been created. Many are freaks and serve the NWO no benefit. One of the big underground facilities for genetic research is Area 51, which is also close to San Diego, where the Seal Teams are HO.

Area 51 is also an important mind control programming center. Fritz's June-July-August Newsletter '95 further discussed the underwater bases, underwater supply depots, underwater mining research, undersea warfare systems, Tektite II, the mind-control research during the Consheif underwater living experiment, the U.S. Navy underwater research ship the Eagle, Scripps Institution of Oceanography and the Physiological Research Laboratory for Naval Intelligence use, underwater research by Rothschild and Bowers, Remote Controlled Vehicles (RCVs), & CURV (cable-controlled Underwater Recovery Vehicle), and special underwater tools such as the hydraulic underwater saw.

Chapter 9 The Science of Mind Manipulation by Psychological Programming

Methods: Behavior Modification, Psychological Motivation and NLP

One way to explain how the slaves are conditioned is to relate an episode where the two authors observed a Satanic family carrying out conditioning to reinforce their children's mind control as their family "ate" at a restaurant. After relating this interesting incident, the chapter will cover the various psychological methods used to condition slaves.

A. Observations of a Satanic Family Carrying Out Monarch Conditioning on Their Children

The husband of the family was about 28 and the wife was about 26. A young man (perhaps an uncle of the children) about 25 also sat at the table with them. The family had 5 children, ranging from about 1 1/2 years old to about 7 years old. During the entire time we watched them, which was over an hour, we never saw one act of love, not one act of nurturing on the part of the parents. Everything was programming, programming and more programming.

The husband had an attitude of control over his children. He was a young somewhat wild cock-sure type. From piecing together things it was clear that he made a good salary and that he and his wife enjoyed profanity. His wife had the most dead looking eyes we have ever seen in a person. She looked every bit the part of a Satanic priestess of the worst type. The young man of about 25 had a very large knife hidden on his back that we noticed only by close observation of his movements. Although it was 1 o'clock , the adults were calling their meal "breakfast." The main male child was about 5 years old. He had an older sister and two younger sisters, and they all had a baby brother.

During the entire time that the family was there, the children ate almost nothing. The 5 yr. boy munched on a watermelon rind, trying to draw some sustenance from it. Part of mind control is depriving the body of food. The poor children never once asked for anything; that is a clue that something wasn't normal. During most of the time that the family was in the restaurant, the mother and father took turns shooting one question after another at the five year boy. The questions were like: What is the capital of Florida ? What is the 70th element on the periodical chart? What are the names of the first five presidents? What is the square root of 121? The boy would robotically answer each question successfully. The questions were not questions but programming and commands. The mother sternly said, "What make of car was that? That's a question." (Actually what she was saying was a command.)

Around this time they said, "Wake up, wake up, wake up." (hypnotic command.) A couple which was in the restaurant was watching how obedient the children were, and they were also overhearing how excellent this little boy could answer difficult rapid-fire questions. They were impressed and the lady came over to tell the parents how wonderful their family was. After oodling for 10 minutes over how great this family was the woman went on to other things. It was difficult for both of us watching to stomach the compliments this stranger was giving to these parents. The natural impulse was to get her to shut up her compliments. She naively made all these compliments little knowing, that these parents were practicing one of the most hideous if not the most hideous type of mind control invented. Asking questions rapid fire is another mind-control technique.

In fact, all of the elements of what Fritz watched at the table that day were practiced on Fritz, the co-author, when he was in Beast Barracks at West Point , USMA. The little girl was repeating her programming, "I don't have anything inside me." She was actually singing it. One of the girls had different alters coming out and was having a conversation with herself between different alters (personalities). She placed her hand over her temple in scarecrow fashion (Wizard of Oz) programming. Her head movement was a dead giveaway to those of us familiar with Monarch programming. The parents had chosen the spot to eat because of the large surreal picture above them on the wall with blue & red flowers, water and mountains. The picture was acting as a scrambling-scattering mechanism, when the boy studied the picture, which he did for the longest time in a trance.

The middle girl was dropping crayons into a styrofoam cup and saying "get into the fire." Then she would say "I'm purple." "I'm pink." "I understand you're purple." "I understand you're pink." "Get out of here for a minute." What she was doing was giving the crayons personalities. In the Monarch programming, the person is totally dehumanized so that some alters think they are ribbons, some monkeys, some clowns, some dolls, some trees, some lions or tigers, etc. The sexual alters are often programmed to think of themselves as cats and butterflies. While the girl was coloring, her father reached over the table without warning and took her colors, "You don't deserve these colors and I should have taken them away before now. The girl had done nothing wrong. This is part of mind control. The person learns that there isn't a right or wrong only that they must be obedient. The little girl did not even respond when her colors were yanked away. When the mom talked to them, she said "children"--she never once personalized things.

The parents began another programming session and said something like, "I will spank you. If you don't count then you can be spanked, we will count 20 times." The constant double messages were obviously breaking down the children to think as programmed rather than respond like normal people to the outside world. The woman turned to her little baby and said, "Tell daddy good-bye". When the child waved good-bye, the woman snapped, "You're not going anywhere." This serves to create confusion. Then she kissed him and said, "Baby, do you want a picture?"

We decided to say something to them, and we did so in the form of a compliment about their children. Neither parent showed any pride in the children when the earlier lady had gushedly complimented the children, nor when we complimented them with a sentence. Instead, when we complimented the children, the father began shooting off a series of difficult questions to the boy. This was simply more programming, but apparently he must have thought that we'd be impressed with the boy's ability to answer difficult questions that seemed way beyond what many teenagers would know.

Two strange things happened during the course of our verbal interaction with this satanic family. First, the waitresses had given the family free ice cream coupons, but the parents gave them to us without the children even batting an eyelid. Second, I asked the father what the age of his children were and he didn't know, or acted like he didn't know. Then he blurted out, they are 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5 years old. His wife knew that that answer must have looked bogus to us, and she reprimanded him, "You don't even know the age of your children." To which he replied, "Yes, they are 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6." His second answer was equally implausible, but his wife didn't protest, and the poor mind controlled children were experiencing just one more element of Satanic mind control. They are not even allowed to realize how old they are. Dates, and times, and ages are kept very confused in the children's minds for secrecy and control. Not only that, but by giving a hypnotic induction "1, 2, 3..." the father had lowered each of the alters which were holding the bodies of his children into a deeper trance. With these alters tranced, another word from the father could have easily pulled up other alters.

Other Items That Parents Do To Their Monarch Children

Double bind communication is commonly given multiples by all of their abusers. Some of these double binds are well thought out and some just occur due to the craziness of the entire thing. For instance, in ritual or programming, the child may have the option to stab or be stabbed. In fighting the programming, if an alter goes toward health, the programmers have set in a booby-trap. Which evil does the slave live with--the lies of the programming or the lies of the external world? How does one tell the truth to a therapist, when the therapist is not capable of hearing the truth, and yet still demands to be told the truth? Yes, double-binds abound.

Another trick is to alternate leniency with harshness. This trick is done in the military also, and has been worked with success by the Chinese government upon the people of Red China. When leniency is alternated with kindness, the effect is devastating and disconcerting because the person looses the ability to predict what is going to happen. Everyone likes to control his or her life. Predicting what is going to happen is part of a person's mind gaining control over their environment. Even that control is stripped from a slave. They soon learn to quit trying to protect themselves, and they quit trying to think for themselves but docilely submit to whatever fate assigns them. The mind can't figure life out, so it quits trying to understand life, and just fatally submits.

Dr. Green (Mengele) was very gentle when drawing blood, and he was very gentle when giving the children X-rays. He would sweet talk them and give candy. But he was very sadistic when he'd follow this up with abuse. The programmers have preferred to be inconsistent with the children like this. Soon the child doesn't know what hate and love are anymore. The person, who claims he loves them, gives them torture or abandons them to be tortured by someone else. A third trick is to give the victim monotonous tasks, such as chanting or copying long amounts of written material. This helps prod the dissociation, and is a torture that doesn't leave marks.

An Overview

All of the elements of mind control are incorporated into the Monarch program. If a person surveys what the everyday cult mind control which is NOT part of total Monarch mind-control looks like, you will find the same elements of everyday cult control also are employed at various places within the Monarch programming of a person's alter system. (This didn't happen by accident either, the Illuminati have examined all these lesser cults to see what they could borrow for their own mind control.)

Some of the elements which the Monarch program shares with other typical types of cult mind control are:

1. The Needs Of Individuals Are Promised To Be Met, But Are Ignored For Group Goals. The Illuminati handler (master) will promise to meet individual needs of alters, but these needs are ignored for group goals. For instance, certain Monarch alters of a person's system may be told they have no faces and no hearts. They are programmed not to see their faces and not to hear any heart beat. If a pulse monitoring machine is hooked up to the alter, the alter will go into a trance. For instance, the handler might promise faces and hearts but will never give them to the Monarch slave when he could. The promise is a control mechanism.

2. Isolation From The World, So That the Only Reality Is The Leader's Reality. The Illuminati isolates the slave so new ideas are available or allowed except their cult leader's ideas. "Whatever the Papa Bear [master] says is reality." Each alter will only communicate with a few other alters. What this does is divide the person from their own parts. The will and mind is broken so that there is no organized resistance, nor any access to other alters who might know something. The slave will often be denied mother, grandmother, grandfather, aunts, sisters, children, grandchildren, & friends. They will be deprived of all naturally occurring relationships via the mind control. This doesn't they mean exist in a vacuum, it means that the handlers will prevent natural relationships to develop. Isolation is very key and parts are made to feel like animals rather than people to isolate them from humanity. No ideas are allowed the slave to confront their programmer's lies. They are programmed to hate Christ and the God of the Bible, so that they are isolated from the true God and His abundant spiritual resources.

3. The Person's Sense Of Identity Is Lost. The Monarch slave lose his/her sense of self to the cult and to the person's master. No sense of where I begin & end, and where the Master begins and ends. The Monarch programming goes beyond what many cult have done, the alters are hypnotized to not see their faces, which is part of their identity.

4. Altered States and Hypnosis Is Used. The handlers/programmers use hypnotic techniques. They induce dissociation by songs, chanting, guilt inducing sessions, torture, isolation, as well as using songs, repeating triggers 3X, and lots of hypnosis.

5. A Sense Of Peace Is Induced, Especially When One Merges With Whoever Is Leading. The Head Of The Cult Will Take Credit For What The Slave Is. They induce a sense of peace leading to the fantasy of merging with leader, often suggested by leader. Then the victim has the abuser placed internally in them. For example, the master may say he was one with the slave and that he "created" the slave. The handler will claim to be God.
6. Out Of Body Experiences. Out of body experiences (O-B-E's) are induced by the torture & Illuminati training, as well as splits.

7. Sensory Bombardment And Fatigue. Sensory bombardment used, such as prolonged sleep deprivation, environmental control, and love bombing. Cages, love bombing of certain alters, and a sterile nursery/toddler room are employed.

8. Critical Thinking And Disagreeing With The Leader Is Forbidden. The slave must suspend ability to think critically or disagree with leader. The slave must never question the Master (also called the handler), never get angry at the handler, or else the slave wants to be punished. The slave must always obey or pay with pain. The alters are splintered from others so can't use their information for analysis.

9. The slave must reorganize reality through identification with aggressor (Illuminati master). Strong identification is created with the master. The slave is programmed to protect the master.

10. Individual sees locus (location) of control with the Master and the Illuminati rather than self. Programming overrules self.

11. Black and white thinking is created by the programming.

Many of the Gnostic cults (see the Fritz's Be Wise As Serpents book for an examination of what a Gnostic cult is) have employed these tactics. People in the Jehovah's Witnesses and CUT, which are Gnostic cults, as well as members of many other groups--such as the CIA will recognize that these methods were used on them. (The CIA is in reality just another cult, and an Illuminati-controlled cult at that.)

Isolation For children who are being taken out of Day Care Centers and programmed without their parents knowledge, they will be isolated from their real parents. The abusers will tell the children that they are actually the "real parents" and that they intend to come and take the child away from its parents later. They will make the innocent child feel like it is cut off and rejected by everyone including the world at large. In a sense, this is true, because the child is expected to endure the most horrible abuse and yet has no one to talk to. Feelings of isolation and despair take control over the child's mind. These ways of thinking are also spiritually enhanced by rituals to bring in demonic spirits that will help insure the child is dominated by feelings of hopelessness.

During the entire life of the slave, the handlers and programmers are always trying to sow distrust in the victim. The programming is often designed to sow distrust in everyone on the outside except the godlike figure the Master. Even the Master is not trusted so much as feared and obeyed by the slave. The slave is also subjected to isolation as a child being placed into freezers, closets, dark rooms, boxes and isolation tanks. Sensory deprivation is a serious thing, that has been discovered to cause people to hallucinate. The brain goes into an altered state just from sensory deprivation. Polar explorers who see only white for days on end must deal with this danger.

Handwriting Modification Psychology developed over the years a number of projective, objective and subjective tests of personality. Ludwig Klages (of Germany), H.J. Eysenck (of England), and M.N. Bunker (of the U.S.) are some of the notable researchers who took handwriting analysis out of the occult realm and into the scientific realm. (The co-author, Fritz, happens to be a certified Graphoanalyst through IGAS, who has done Graphoanalysis professionally. IGAS has strict standards not to allow members to do anything associated with the occult, but insists they keep their work on a scientific basis.)

When a person writes, he will use about 200 separate muscles in the hand, arm, and body. The mind coordinates all these muscle movements. A good handwriting analyst has about 800 different things that he can look for in a sample of handwriting, such as how hard did the writer write with his instrument, how big, where did he start on the paper, how did he cross his "t" etc. In other words, the mind in order to write had to make hundreds of decisions within seconds. There are too many decisions to make them all the decisions consciously. This is why document examiners can authenticate signatures. Most of the many decisions as one writes are done subconsciously, and the decisions are influenced by state of mind, personality, the state of the physical body, and the environment. The good handwriting analyst is able to work backwards. Why was the decision made to make the capital P look like an L? Why did the person start their writing half-way into the paper and waste half the piece of paper? Through scientific studies and observations, a vast wealth of understanding has developed by graphologists about why certain decisions are made. Some graphologists use a wholistic method, others like graphoanalysts, analyze each stroke. Both methods will give the same results if the handwriting analyst is skilled at applying the principles of graphology.

Handwriting analysis has not gotten the credibility it deserves, in part, because it is such a powerful diagnostic tool, the intelligence agencies have wanted to keep it to themselves. However, the nation of Israel, uses handwriting analysis to hire with, and a high percentage of the businesses use it in hiring also. The nation of Israel has had a high rate of success with handwriting analysis.

How does handwriting analysis play a part in the mind control? Several ways. A number of the programmers are skilled in handwriting analysis. They are well aware that the abuse of their slaves will show in the handwriting. Through behavior modification (usually torture) the front alters are trained to write in a fashion that hides the abuse. The abuse will show in the handwriting of most of the alters, so many of them are programmed not to read or write. This is why some of the child alters will have older alters write for them. The programmers were also aware of how the mind heals/changes itself via handwriting therapy. If the mind will place enough energy into writing a particular way--it will go ahead and put enough energy into becoming what it writes. In other words, if I am lazy, but I get determined enough to focus the brain so that it doesn’t make handwriting strokes that indicate laziness, then my brain will also change its lazy attitude in other ways. In other words, I can begin to change a personality trait by working on the handwriting decisions that stem from that trait. The programmers can and do help modify their slaves’ personalities this way. They of course will employ a number of personality changing techniques as a group package. The goal is to bring as much pressure to bear as possible to get the original trait modified. This will be done in accordance with the programming goals for the various alters within a system. Remember, some alters need to be outgoing and other reticent, some melancholic, and others sanguine or choleric. The programmers know what they want and how to modify what they have to get the temperament and personality traits they want.

B. Behavior Mod (Modification)

Behavior modification comes in various packages. One package has been called ELT (Electrolytic Trtmt) developed by H.C. Tien. One simple version of behavior mod is to find out what someone has done which is good, and praise and reinforce that behavior. Then state the goal. And then continue to reinforce promptly the good things the person is doing. The goal in mind must be measurable. An example of this, might be for a handler to praise his kitten and to purchase it nice things if a client is satisfied with the sexual service he got. The reinforcement needs to be soon, and appropriate. “Thinking behavior” is a term that behavior mod scientists use. "Adverse conditioning" is another. Anectine, which paralyzes the body and makes one think they are suffocating, can be used for aversion conditioning. The victim is told not to do a particular behavior or else experience discomfort. When behavior modification is done in programming, you can be sure that there is paper work done to chart the progress. Rather than worry about what a person is thinking, the behaviorist charts a person’s behavior and then gives reinforcements of correct behavior (or the opposite adverse rewards of punishment) to modify it. Victims are conditioned to carry out certain behaviors. If an alter does something wrong, there is an immediate consequence set up for it. Soon it is conditioned not to do what the programmer doesn’t want. The behavior mod scientists believe that creativity can be controllable. When a child creates a new form he is rewarded. Soon the child learns to create.

Illuminati Delta-Beta alters will be trained in espionage. They will be trained to recognize a person’s physical identity instantly. One method of training which has been used is to teach people to remember reflexively rather than analytically. Thousands of faces or thousands of license plates, or whatever are flashed on a screen, and when a repeat is shown the person must press a button. If a mistake is made, the slave is treated to a nasty little shock. After a while a person develops the correct reflexes. Slaves are being trained in recognition from the time they are small children, this is important so that they can build their internal worlds with mirror images and other confusing things. The following "deeper" programming is an example of classical conditioning. The child's hand is cut so that the child goes into a trance of shock, and then each time they use the word "deeper" they cut deeper to enhance the shock/trance state. By pairing the word with this trauma, when they are through, the word "deeper- asleep" will throw some alters instantly into a very deep trance.

E. Psychological Motivation

When a person has been knocked down and degraded, traumatized by poor sleep and little food and water, he is more susceptible to suggestion. He can then be told that he himself is the cause for his own degradation. If he just behaves better, his treatment will improve.

When the person accepts his guilt for the bad situation he is in, then the programmers give a target for the blame--God, country, or whatever the person had depended upon. The programmer then aggravates these hostile feelings, and keeps nurturing them until the person is livid with anger toward the object of blame. The victim is coached to project their blame onto this target of blame. When this is accepted, the conditions for the victim improve. Once the person has targeted their blame, then the Programmer becomes the friend to help one fight the evil target. Anything and everything is rationalized in this "All becomes fair in war."

Enemies are easy to create. People readily accept them. The intelligence community has long played on people's fears about communism. People might be shocked to realize that this was one of Hitler's favorite methods to recruit loyalty from people. It is why the Nazi's secretly burned down the Reichstag, and then blamed the communists. The Illuminati are masters at making Christianity the fault for everything from homosexual suicide to the world wars.

F. Neuro-Linguistic Programming

NLP means Neuro-Linguistic Programming, which are practical communication skills. Programmers were using NLP before it became known as NLP in 1976. Some NLP techniques are obvious truths, and some are more subtle truths in dealing with human nature. NLP can be more of an art, than a science. One of the truths in NLP is "Everyone lives in their unique reality built from their sense impressions and individual experiences of life, and we act on the basis of what we perceive our model of the world." (O'Connor, Joseph & John Seymour. Introducing NLP. San Francisco, CA: Aquarian Press, 1993, p.4.) That is why alters have their worlds created by their programmers, and then the occult alters are indoctrinated with satanic beliefs. (Chap. 11 Part A deals with this indoctrination.)

Let's list some other "assumptions" that NLP practitioners believe in without explaining them: Almost all communication is non-verbal. Knowledge of content is not required to make behavioral changes. Our internal representation of the world is not the world but only our own feeble map of it. The map is not the territory. People will choose predicates which correspond to what representational system they are using, and which one they choose can be seen from eye accessing cues.

If one studies NLP, one will find that NLP books such as Basic Techniques Book II by Clifford Wright, teach people how to create dissociative states which are alternate personalities, and that they teach people how to develop different states of mind, and pseudo multiple personalities. It is difficult to express all the different cross-overs that NLP has with Monarch Programming, but at different times the concepts of NLP certainly would be helpful to the handlers. However, it must be stressed that NLP IS NOT Monarch Programming.

One of NLP's suggestions is that a person assess their "present state" and their "desired state." This simply common sense suggestion is often carried out during programming. The Programmer will tell the victim WHAT KIND of alters they want produced and HOW MANY when they begin the torture. The motivation to do this is also suggested by NLP and is accomplished by the programmers threats to the person's life, and by the person's desire to be free of pain and torture.

Milton Erickson's work on altered states has been picked up by NLP. Likewise at least part of the programming hypnosis is based on Erickson's ideas.

Clues For Observing A Victim Lateral Eye Movement (LEM) can be a useful skill to the programmer. Monarch victims are sometimes programmed so that the real LEM is not done publicly by the victim, to prevent people from getting visual clues as to what is going on in their mind. A person who is thinking in visual images will generally speak more quickly and at a higher pitch than someone who is not. These types of clues help the Programmers be more skilled, but it isn’t a necessity.

Anchors

NLP researchers have noticed that people have emotional states in which the entire body will take up a posture in carrying it out. Memories can come into a person that causes the body to take up the negative states again. The NLP practitioners have developed language which includes such terms as Anchors, emotional states, and triggers. These words are used to describe ideas that have long been in use. For instance, let’s say that when you heard a particular song at some point in your life you were having a good time (emotional state). Now that every time you receive a trigger to that memory, such as the song, you regain that good feeling that is attached to the memory of the song. Every time you hear the song, you feel good, which then in turn, continues to act as reinforcement of the association of a good feeling to the song. A stimulus that is linked to and triggers a physiological state or emotional state is called an anchor.

Our lives are filled with naturally occurring anchors, such as our favorite childhood smells, or the alarm clock. One of the Illuminati kingpins in Germany, a Krupp, liked the smell of manure, and built his house so he could smell horse manure all day.

NLP is the art of building associations with an anchor. A past emotion can be linked to something today. If a person is afraid of public speaking, then a good feeling can be linked to giving talks. The skilled programmer will anchor an emotion with several sense cues--including auditory, visual, and touch. The person visualizes an emotional state from the past. When the state is reaching its peak, the anchor is placed in. The anchor needs to be unique, distinctive, & easy to repeat in the exact form that it was done.

Much of the trauma-based programming is actually setting anchors using extreme trauma. When the anchors are tested (fired), if the emotional state is pulled up, then the anchors have worked. Firing two separate anchors at once is called collapsing anchors. Two separate states can be fired at once. There is a methodology for collapsing anchors together.

Future Pacing

Future pacing can be used to help program a person toward his occupational objective which was charted for the victim when they were small. Future pacing is a mental rehearsal that is practiced in the imagination so that the person can deal with some future challenge. Expectations can often become self-fulfilling prophecies.

NLP also is used to teach people how to learn. It teaches people to learn a variety of methods for a single skill. However, this type of self-help info is not freely given to the slave. It might be used if the programmers needed to develop the person hypnotically in a certain direction.

Pacing For Hypnosis

Because **Milton Erickson** stands out as a genius among those who have used hypnosis, and people are still trying to figure out fully what he did, it is appropriate to mention his work. We don’t know how these ideas of Milton Erickson’s are used by the Programmers. We do know that the CIA has paid close attention to his ideas, and that some of the Programmers have some of the smoothest tongues. If there is some way to utilize Erickson’s work to help control Mind-controlled slaves, then the Intelligence agencies have no doubt found it. On the flip side, several deprogrammers used Ericksonian methods to unlock the programming of the people they want to help. What we describe in this section is just a small sampling of Erickson’s methods.

Another type of NLP pacing besides the one just previously mentioned was developed by Milton Erickson. He would gain rapport with anyone by describing to them what they were feeling, hearing and seeing. He would induce a peaceful state by speaking slowly, using a soft tonality, and pacing his speech to the person’s breath. Gradually hypnotic suggestions are introduced to lead them into what is called "downtime." He would gently encourage people with gentle suggestions such as, ‘It’s easy to close your eyes whenever you wish to feel more comfortable..." But you may wonder how can anyone know what someone else is thinking?

Erickson developed language that was vague enough for people to match their own thinking to what he described. He would use smooth transitional words such as "while", "and", and "as". The type of vague sentences he would say are "It is well known that people can read books and make changes." Milton Erickson learned to distract the dominant brain hemisphere, and also speak in a complex way that all seven (plus or minus two parts of the conscious mind) would get engaged in trying to figure out what his ambiguous statements meant. Milton found that he could say anything if he set it up in the context of someone else saying it. He also found that the unconscious mind does not process the linguistic negative. Rather than tell a child "Don’t fall" tell it "Be careful."

Reframing With Metaphors

Metaphors, some from Druidism or from some other occult teachings, are used by the Programmers. For instance, the seasonal changes that leaves on trees make is an example of a programming metaphor. For those readers who don’t know what reframing is, the following in the book Reframing, Neuro-Linguistic Programming and the Transformation of Meaning by Bandler and Grinder (Moab, UT: Real People Press, 1982) is an excellent story to explain it: "A very old Chinese Taoist story describes a farmer in a poor country village. He was considered very well-to-do, because he owned a horse which he used for ploughing and for transportation. One day his horse ran away. All his neighbors exclaimed how terrible this was, but the farmer simply said ‘Maybe.’ "A few days later the horse returned and brought two wild horses with it. The neighbors all rejoiced at his good fortune, but the farmer just said ‘Maybe.’ "The next day the farmer’s son tried to ride one of the wild horses; the horse threw him and broke the leg. The neighbors all offered their sympathy for his misfortune, but the farmer again said ‘Maybe.’ "The next week the conscription officers came to the village to take young men for the army. They rejected the farmer’s son because of his broken leg. When the neighbors told him how lucky he was, the farmer replied, ‘Maybe.’"

The meaning of an event depends upon the FRAME we place upon it. Those frames are perceptions. Occult fairy tales are great for reframing events. A frog turns into a prince. Rudolf's embarrassing red nose becomes a guiding light to bring happiness to people. Many of the common things in our everyday life are reframed by the Programmers to have hidden mind-control meanings. The Teddy Bear the child is given by her Daddy is to remind her how helpless she is to prevent him from raping her. The carousel toy is to remind the child of dissociation and the internal carousel built into the mind. Many of the things that parents, who are intentionally raising a programmed child, do, look nice on the outside unless one can reframe what they are doing in the context of total-mind-control based on trauma and fear.

Reframing can be done by collapsing anchors. For instance, the sober part of an alcoholic and the drunk state of the alcoholic are given the same anchor and then these are collapsed together to get the drunk to stay sober. The two states are taken in a process of integration for the reframing to occur. Reframing someone with MPD is almost impossible without integration, but reframing a particular alter with metaphors is not out of reach. The programmers have much more chance to reframe while they program than the therapist, because the programmers set in defensive programs to prevent other’s from reframing.

Power Words, Reversals And Puns

In NLP, 7 senses are taken into consideration. First we see, then we hear, and finally we have the senses of internal kinetics and our emotions. The Programmer also takes into consideration what are called "power words". Those are words which have specific meaning for the person. The programmers also love to use reversals and puns, for instance in Disney’s Ducktales the character says, "I stole ‘em fair and square." Other typical reversals are "Life is death, and death is life", "Pain is love, and love is pain."

Another example is one used on Cathy O’Brien, where the words "Service Entrance" were used to mean "Serve us. En-Trance." Naming an alter "Allison Wonderland" --a pun on Alice in Wonderland--is another example of a programming pun. The programmers love to use these types of things.

The Mind's Natural Alarm Clock

The programmer’s have made use of the mind’s natural ability to wake itself up like an ‘alarm clock' if it wants. Slaves may be given the coded message that the draconian enforcer will come by to pick them up at 1 a.m. The slave will automatically wake up in the middle of the night, and in a trance like a sleep walking, a deep LGP alter will take the slave out to the street to be picked up. Many slaves are being used at night without their families suspecting anything. Sleeping patterns are also related to personality. REM sleep is believed to help restore the effectiveness of certain brain pathways in which norepinephrine is a transmitter substance. By programming different alters to have certain sleep patterns, their personalities can be adjusted. Of course this is done in conjunction with many other aspects of mind control.

The Right Brain And The Unconscious

The Programmers are also aware that right-handed people use their left brain hemisphere for highly conscious processess which require good attention, focus and intentional decisions; while their right brain will tend to work on the unconscious and automatic chores. Split brain programming takes this contrast into account.

Chapter 10: The 10th Science - Using Spiritual Things To Control A Person

8-1.gif

THE SPIRITUAL FOUNDATION FOR PROGRAMMING LAID BY THE PROGRAMMERS ARE THE GENERATIONAL SPIRITS WHICH ARE LAID IN THE WOMB & INTRODUCED TO THE CHILD WHEN VERBAL AS THE CHILD’S "FRIEND" & "SPIRIT GUIDE".

A CLAN’S GUIDING SPIRIT IS ALSO CALLED A TOTEM. THE KEEPERS OR GUARDIANS PROTECT THE SPIRITS WITHIN AN ILLUMINATI SYSTEM.

THERE WILL BE ONE ALTER WHICH KNOWS ALL THE DEMONS WHICH HAVE BEEN LAYERED IN.

FROM THE AGE OF FIVE, THE CHILD’S CULT PARTS WILL BE TAUGHT THE GENEALOGICAL HISTORIES OF THEIR SPIRIT GUIDES.

AT THE AGE OF 12, SOME CANDIDATES FOR AMER. TRIBAL CHIEFS HAD TO WAIT IN THE WILD FOR THEIR TOTEM TO GUIDE THEM. THEY MUST REMAIN IN THE FOREST UNTIL THEIR GUIDING SPIRIT APPEARS. THIS IS WHY THE ILLUMINATI STUDY THE XIBALIAN MYSTERIES WRITTEN IN THE POPOL VUH.

Saving this chapter for last (of the mind, body, spirit chapters) is like saving the best wine for last. The authors know first hand that the Illuminati fears more than any other information getting out, that the spiritual aspects of programming would be revealed.

This chapter has been organized into the following parts:

A. Using spiritual principles against a person
B. How the Monarch program miniaturizes what is done on a larger scale
C. Dehumanization
  Porcelain Face Programming
  Hearts Of Stone
  Hypnotic Surgery
D. Fear
E. The use of guilt, shame & ridicule & anger
  Anger
F. Teaching that the master is God
G. Portals, focal points golem baptism of the child victim to Satan
H. Vows & Oaths
I. The use of demon possession, layering etc. sabbat ceremony
  HOW THE PROGRAMMERS UNDERSTAND DEMONOLOGY Voodoo
  India
  How The Anti-Christ Spirit Contributes To Controlling The Slave
J. The use of angel alters

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

K. The use of Scriptures In Programming
L. Theta programming
  - Some of the groups who did research for the Monarch's Theta Programming
  - How Out-Of-Body Experiences (Astral Projection) Are Done
  - Telepathy
  - Killing From A Distance
  - In Quick Review
  - The Philosopher's Stone
  - Further Spiritual Bondage Snares

The 10th science includes some of the most secret elements of the Monarch programming, and certainly some of the most controversial. Psychologists and psychiatrists are an unlikely group to delve into demonology, although there have been a number of studies done in this area.

Six examples of such studies:
· Braude, S.E. (1988). "Mediumship and multiple personality." Journal of the Society for Psychical Research, 55, 177-195.
· Krippner, 5. (1987). "Cross-cultural approaches to multiple personality disorder: Practices in Brazilian spiritism." Ethos, 15, 273-295.
· Rodgers, R.L. (1991). "Multiple personality and channeling." Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry, 9, 3-13.
· Rogo, D.S. (1987). "The spiritual side of multiple personality." In D.S. Rogo, The infantile boundary: A psychic look at spirit Possession, madness, and multiple personality (pp. 243-246). New York: Dodd, Mead, and Co.
· Ronquillo, E.B. (1991). "The influence of 'Espiritismo' on a case of multiple personality disorder." Dissociation, 4, 39-45.
· Smith, RD. (1981). "Hypnosis, multiple personality, and magic: A case study." Voices: the Art and Science of Psycho-therapy, 17, 20-23.

The Gamma programming is the secret layering in of demons. However one wants to describe these demons--the victim has to deal with their "reality". The ceremonies to demonize the victim occur even before they are born. Generational spirits are very important to determine how the Programmers program a person. But this 10th science goes way beyond just demonology, because it deals with the fundamental issues that effect our views of God, our fellowship with Almighty God, and our view of the occult sciences of astral projection, ESP, telepathy, etc.

Part A. The Use Of Spiritual Principles To Isolate The System From God

In the course of deprogramming Monarchs, and rubbing shoulders with programmers, it became clear that the programmers of the Monarch program are fully aware of the spiritual principles which are in operation for everyone. In 1930, a leader of one of the groups which today carries out trauma-based mind-control, wrote that the occult masters are not interested in uplifting the souls of men, but that "These Masters. .. have in reality no interest in soul or astral development, except as a means of forming passive Illuminized tools, completely controlled in mind and actions."

The Monarch victims of today are the tail end of centuries of efforts by the Kaballists, Freemasons, and the Illuminati adepts to completely control other human beings. The following quote comes from a communist manual on how to brainwash a nation. It could just have well been written by Monarch Mind-Control Programmers. "The first thing to be degraded in any nation is the state of Man, himself. Nations which have high ethical tone are difficult to conquer. Their loyalties are hard to shake, their allegiance to their leaders is fanatical, and what they usually call their spiritual integrity cannot be violated by duress. It is not efficient to attack a nation in such a frame of mind. It is the basic purpose of [mind-control] to reduce that state of mind to a point where it can be ordered and enslaved. Thus, the first target is Man, himself. He must be degraded from a spiritual being to an animalistic reaction pattern. He must think of himself as an animal, capable only of animalistic reactions. He must no longer think of himself, or of his fellows, as capable of 'spiritual endurance,' or nobility... " As it seems in foreign nations that the church is the most ennobling influence, each and every branch and activity of each and every church, must, one way, or another, be discredited. Religion must become unfashionable by demonstrating broadly, through pyschopolitical indoctrination, that the soul is non-existent, and that Man is an animal."

Later this chapter will describe how a person is dehumanized. One spiritual principle is that if you can get a person angry at God, you can get that person to commit any sin. Great effort is taken, via staged events to make the victim being programmed certain that God has rejected them. For instance, some victims had someone play God and walk away from them when they needed help in a life & death situation.

The 1980 Hollywood movie Altered States, which is about a university professor in the 1960s who experiments with mind-altering drugs and sensory deprivation tanks, shows some scenes where God turns into a goat. Some of the religious scenes in this movie, match some of the anti-God/religious programming of some Monarch slaves. The Monarch slaves are repeatedly warned that God is cruel and judgmental, and that He wants to destroy them for the wicked things they have done. Bible verses that tell of the wrath of God & God’s anger are read to the victim. An example of how the slave is programmed to hate God will now be given.

A hypnotic drug will be given the victim when they are about 6 years of age. This will relax the person and allow the programmers to take the child into the deepest trance, so that the programming will be sure to enter into the very fiber of the child’s being. After several hours of being in a deep trance, as the drug begins to wear off, the child will be strapped very secure into a tight fitting coffin. A man with long white hair, and a long robe, with sandals, staff and a white robe will present himself before the child, and announce that he is "God the great I AM". Then "God" will look in a big book and announce he cannot find the person’s name so he will have to send the person to hell for being bad. The coffin will then be lowered into a deep pit---like a mine shaft, and the victim will be told that when they can no longer hear God’s voice that they will be a cat and not human. God can’t find them in the book because they have no soul, and are a cat. Deeper and deeper the child is lowered. They are told this is the penalty for having tried to pray to God.

The programmers make sure that the slave is implicated in many gross sins, such as the murder of innocent children, in order to insure that the person is sure that God hates them. Then the victim is told that God is a consuming wrath who hates them. The injustice of God creating a world of suffering is also taught to the slave. All this is to insure that the victim hates God. That hatred toward God will express itself in the victim’s system’s willingness to do any sin, without conscience.

Part B The Monarch Programming Is A Miniturization Of What Was Being Done To Entire Peoples Or Cities

Demons are attracted by the "scent" of people. We are made in the image of God, and we are attractive prey to those who hate God Almighty. Cities are magnets for demons. When demons target a person or people, a common tactic is to make trouble for the person. When a person’s problems reach a crescendo, they will be in a state of mind to grab any solution that is passing by. People then make pacts with demonic forces. They sell their souls hoping for relief from their problems. All this is clear as a bell to the spiritually enlightened, but the demonic forces are able to dull the senses of their victims to the point they no longer have the slightest realization that they have sold their souls. People make a choice to accept the falsehood offered by the demons for their relief, rather than stick with the truth which seems to hurt. The demonic lies may be that colds and flus are caused by evil spirits--when in reality they are caused by viruses and bacteria. Or the opposite type of lie may be given--that demonic forces have no influence over disease, that only viruses and bacteria exist.

In Africa, modern medicine is often viewed as White Man’s magic, because they fight disease with incantations which the demons have taught them to use to cure their problems. Authority to demons is transferred to them by festivals, ceremonies and pilgrimages. Strong demonic manifestations usually occur around festivals, ceremonies, rituals and pilgrimages which are being done everyday around the world. These ceremonies and rituals are welcome mats for demonic forces giving them the right to rule. Every area of the world has them. And often demonic signs and wonders occur at these rituals and ceremonies.

The power of a lie has to be preserved and fuelled by tradition, which is manifested via rituals. Without tradition the power of the lie would die out. If the tradition is being rejected by a people, the demons often augment it with "new" deceptions. The first lie doesn’t stand a chance. The pre-existing bondage then is strengthened by new deceptions that seem more appropriate.

If you were asked now, "HOW DOES SATAN ENSLAVE PEOPLE?" you should know the answer because it was just given it to you. The answer is Satan's control is trauma-based. A trauma is applied to the lives of people. They reach out for some type of answer to the trauma, and the demons offer some type of answer--so many Hail Mary's, or so many sacrificed cats, or pray to some idol which is a disguised demon. The lies are turned into myths which the people believe. The myths are a blurring of reality which the people on one level may know are false, but their minds can't break loose of the power of the lie. The power of the myths are fuelled by tradition and demonic manifestations and demonic attacks.

Anyone who steps outside of the demonic lie is attacked. The people feel they are being personally attacked when their traditions are ignored. Because a people has willingly sacrificed the truth for the falsehood in their need for relief from their trauma, they have chosen to be deceived. This choice to be deceived has a great deal of spiritual power to it. They are no longer truth-lovers. It is not enough to come to these people with the truth. They have rejected the truth. They must at some point will to seek the truth again. These people can have all the proof shown to them about the truth, and they will continue to reject it. Their demonic bondage needs to be broken somehow. This bondage can be broken in a number of ways. Pointing out the inadequacies of the lies is sometimes sufficient to break the demonic spell over people. But after the lies are broken, they need to be followed by the truth--and the love of truth.

The Monarch Mind Control programming is simply the sophisticated application of what has been done to humanity on a large scale being scaled down and applied to a single human body. Trauma and lies are used in the same way. The different alters sell their souls to the lies in return for their safety. A basic ingredient to the programming of a group of people (or a group of alters) is the same--trauma and fear.

The Land of Oz was ruled by a shadow-leader, the Wizard of Oz. Most countries are ruled by unseen people and unseen powers. The Wizard of Oz story is so representative of how life is for Satan's world. No wonder it is the programming base for so many Monarch mind-controlled slaves. The solution to Satan's control, was that the disciples of Christ would be so united in love that the world would see the solution. "That they all may be one.. .that the world may believe."

For the Monarch slaves, the therapists have wanted integration. For the world, Christ wanted integration. But there are formidable spiritual strongholds which divide us. These spiritual strongholds are far stronger than most Christians can imagine. The heartbeat of the Body of Christ is to bring all humanity to their Creator God. This can be done by breaking down all the lies and programming that separate the parts of the Body of Christ so that those of Christ are so well integrated in love and spirit that the world believes on the power of Christ.

Each of the programming acts has a spiritual, mental, and physical side to it. The slave has his or her will stripped from them so it becomes unnecessary to think in terms of their guilt--they are slaves who no longer have the freedom of choice. If they kill, or steal, or tell an untruth (lie), they have not done it intentionally.

Still the Programmers know that there are spirits involved to spiritually prepare the slave to do these acts. For instance, they implant Spirits of Greed and lust into the victim. An Illuminati value system is drilled into the victim. Any person who is not taught to dedicate personal rights and possessions to God, will end up with all types of surface forces such as insecurity, worry, anger, envy, jealousy and tension. This goes for multiples or non-multiples. These surface forces will in turn cause all types of surface weaknesses such as lying, stealing, cheating, and arguing. If these surface weaknesses are displayed by anyone, they are evidence that a deeper spiritual problem exists. However, the slave is not being set up to display these vulnerabilities as they will, but ONLY as they are programmed.

An Illuminati Beta model can have sex only with who her master allows her to have sex with. Nor is she granted the privilege of refusing to sexually service someone. If the slave is allowed free will, they often will reject the life style programmed into them. The reason they can reject the Spirits of Seduction & Lust that have been layered in to insure that these moral weaknesses exist, is because the will of the alter being programmed was being coerced. There was duress involved. Satan has some claim, but not the stronghold that comes from those whose active will is involved in a sin. That doesn't mean that some slaves don't develop a taste for their perversion. The point is that the ability to have these personality weaknesses, should the programmers want them, can be spiritually set into the slave by teaching the slave to resist the grace and love of God. It may be shocking to realize that the slaves are specifically programmed to resist God's grace and love, and to hate Him. This is not left to chance, and is accomplished by a number of events in the slave's life.

Another spiritual area that is tampered with is the self-image of the person. They are not allowed to think of themselves as made in the image of God (unless they are front alters created or allowed to be Christian). Instead of allowing the victim to learn about Jesus, the victim is consistently belittled and compared to others. This is in violation of a spiritual principle found in 2 Corinthians 10:12, "For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise." John 5:44 and 2 Cor. 10:17,18 teach how it is to be done correctly.

Fritz, co-author, knows of one programmer who is still programming who is fully aware of these scriptures and how they apply spiritually. When people are not allowed to accept themselves, they end up resisting the will of God. The wrong attitudes are built into the slave, so that they will always resist the will of God. Again if the programmers want a Christian front, they may program the correct thinking into the front alter. To do this doesn't threaten their hold on the system in the least. To have Satanic alters and Christian alters which are diametrically opposed to each other's thinking only insures that if they would discover each other in the mind, that they would reject wanting to learn about the other part, and would go into denial of the part's existence. The programming and mind-control is being linked to a belief system.

Taking this one step further, we can also say that the programming is also a conflict between two faiths, the faith that the alters place when they visualize and create their occult-system, that is their faith in demonism and magic, versus the faith of those who follow the God of the Bible. The method of creating hard-core Satanic alters from traumatized Christian alters is an obvious example of this. Some secular therapists have been slow to admit this conflict. If we look at the Illuminati's brand of Druidism, we will notice that the Book of Pheryllt which is a Druidic book for rituals gives four symbols which can be made to evoke the four elemental forces also called the four basic portals. Visualization is said to be the key to the occult, and to opening portals with these four signs. As the deeper parts of a slave are drawn into such activity, they are in reality placing their faith in that belief system. How can you take something away, without giving something in return? An alternative faith in a God and belief system that is not connected to mind-control is an important therapeutic aid. You can not hate something passionately if you are unaware of it. When two groups are very similar, in order to high light their individual identity they will have a high level of animosity toward each other. In order to create strong Satanic alters who hate God, the Illuminati actually encourage the young two year old victim to understand and accept the love of God.

Upon this faith in a loving God will be built the rejection and trauma to create wounded alters, who hate God because they feel rejected. Rejection is a tool of Satan across the board in the world. Rejection creates a sine wave of hills and valleys. (The way of the Lord is made straight levelling these hills and valleys.) When a person (or nation) is rejected they will often shift to one of two extremes: either they try to perform to meet up to expectations or they will retaliate against rejection. Both are extremes (the hills and valleys of the shadow of death) of the what resembles a sine way.

8-2.gif

Both rejection and retaliation are tools of bondage. The enemy will work a person to get them to feel either rejected or angry. If either side of the sine wave is latched onto by a person (or nation) they will set in motion a dynamic where they will end up with the other side of the curve. This is because the human mind has an inbred desire to balance things out. If we feel rejection, then we may retaliate or try extra hard to perform. This sets up a BONDAGE LOOP.

The Cabalistic Tree of Life is the knowledge of good and evil--performance. The programmer by repeatedly REJECTING the slave, build into the slave a high level of performance. The slave is not allowed to get angry at the programmer--which is the opposite peak of the sine wave. The human mind will naturally try to balance the performance peak with increasing the anger/retaliation peak to match it in opposite intensity. Because the slave can not get angry at their programmer, they turn this anger inward and upward toward themselves and God. The performance of the slave for the master is a form of false love. Performance love is false love. "If you do this for me, then I'll love you." Christ loved us when we were yet sinners and unlovable. This is the type of godly true love described by Paul in 1 COR 13 which seeks not its own.

Self-preservation is a tool of death. That is one reason Christ did not preserve himself--even though he could have called angels--he wanted to show the world true love. Fear gets its root in death. The threat of death of a spouse, of oneself, of one's dreams, of one's identity, or of one's fleshly body creates fear. Death comes from Satan. Life from Yahweh God. Fear is built on a threat of some kind of death. Self-preservation then is actually based upon fear which is in turn based on death. This is why Christ said one must lose their life to gain it. To escape the satanic bondage loop of self-preservation built on fear, we must reach out for the love of God. Self-justification is not normally seen by people as a bondage loop, but it often is. Only the sureness that Almighty God loves us gives us the strength not to get caught in the self-preservation tactic of self-justification. There is a place for defending the truth, but it must be done in love. Christ and his disciples taught that we are justified by faith in God--not by self-justification. Self-justification can easily be related to the self-preservation bondage loop. We simply have to have an inner knowing that we are made in the image of God, and that He is working in each of our lives. Since we are His work, He will justify us. All of the Monarch slaves, are a work of God. The cult has simply refashioned what God created. The slave needs to recapture the loving view God has of what He created. God doesn't make mistakes. He has placed lots of beauty and value in each person. Each person is His handiwork, isn't the human body fearfully and wonderfully made?

After someone has been made to participate in crimes against humanity, the Programmers intuitively have created a situation where the person may fall into self-justification, for example, "They deserved to die." This is a subtle, but dangerous tool of bondage. Much of the trauma-based mind-control is based on simple fundamental spiritual life-spiritual death issues. The Spirit of the Lord does not give fear. It comes from the enemy. Abductees, who claim to have met aliens, claim that the aliens feed off of human fear. Fear brings spiritual death. To show this dynamic in another way, let's describe a common thought for alters of Monarch slaves. This thought is "If I stay with the programming I'm safe." This is the same thought that society in general is taught via fear of self-preservation. "If I stay with the crowd, if I stay with the system, then I will be safe." This is why peer pressure, which seems safe, can lead many young people into death. All this fear of self-preservation by remaining in the programming (whether individual or societal) will be transferred to loyalty of the AntiChrist--that is the plan.

The Truth shall set you free. Anytime we reject the truth for safety and peace because of our fear for self-preservation, we accept a lie. If the truth sets a person free, then by definition, slavery means to "not to have truth." All lies lead to bondage. They create strongholds. Many religious groups are built upon a collection of truths and lies. The truths are used as the enticing attractive front, the lies are used as the enslaving bondage. This is why there is almost no end to all the lies used to program Monarch-type trauma-based total Mind-controlled slaves.

An important mind-control programming dynamic is the creation of images. This will take some explaining. One spiritual dimension of humans is that we like to behold our God. This was built into us. Archeologists have noticed that ancient man has always worshipped. It is built into man to worship, and we like to behold whatever we worship--whether that is God, ourselves, or some other image. In other words, worship is image oriented. This is the power of images. One of the most ignored commandments of God, of which Fritz wrote a book about in 1977, was the commandment God gave "thou shalt not...make any likeness of any thing that is heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth." EX 20:4

Students of God's Word are warned to "examine everything carefully; hold fast to that which is good." 1 THES 5:2 1. What is significant is that God's commandments in Ex. 20, which were a distillation of His laws, could have simply stated "Thou shallt not make any graven image", but instead went on to make a big issue in that same passage about any image of God's creatures (the word translated "things" has historically been understood as "living things.") In DT 4:15 "pasal" images--that is images formed out of any material with a tool (ax, chisel, or engraving tool) and the "likeness of male or female" and "similitude of any figure" are forbidden. Next, it again forbids the likenesses of living creatures. The word "image" occurs about 100 times in the Bible, and is usually accompanied by judgements such as "I will cut down. ..destroy...break down...smote." In a number of verses (EC 7:20, PS 106:29, 39), the scriptures speak about how man is always seeking inventions that provoke God to anger.

The creation of images of many varieties was a big part of Egyptian magic, and still is. Because the creation of images is so esteemed today, a balanced view/discussion of the spiritual ramifications of images (& their creation) is a rare subject. "For the invisible things of Him, from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse." RM 1:20. (cf. ISA 6:3) One ex-Programmer has talked at length, that part of the motivation for the many programming images, is so that they can establish a world built by Satan, because they want to insure that there is no testimony about God's power. (By the way, some deliverance ministries are having success in helping heal victims by pointing out that Satanic programmers only build from elements God has already created.)

Mirrors, and lots of them, are important in occult programming because they make images. They create so many internal images one doesn't know which way to go. Images are lies. We often create false images of the people we want to love. Do we love them or their image? Movie stars are loved for their image, and rarely for who they really are. Some of them have acknowledged that they don't feel loved by their fans, because their fans are only worshipping an image. Again, we must remember THE TRUTH SHALL SET US FREE. What is our real identity? Who are we really in God's eyes? Why did He allow us to be born? What was His real purpose for us? These real questions which are so hard for so many of us, are the reality that we need in our lives. The bondage of images has yet to be understood.

The word "duplicity" is based on the word duplicate. Machiavelli taught the elite how to rule through duplicity--that is to rule via imitation images. This is nothing more than one of the operational principles of mirror images placed within the Monarch Mind-controlled slaves. Whatever gives life is duplicated in a mirror image by Satan. Life swallows up death, as the Kingdom of God's genuine light gets progressively brighter. The copy of this is that performance must get progressively better--i.e. technology must change to get better if we are to have life. The Amish show that society's penchant for technological progression, does not improve life. The Amish have a very successful life-style free from divorce and crime. Missionaries to Africa have come back at times wondering if the primitive tribe they spent time with didn't have many things which our technologically advanced society had lost. This doesn't mean that an invention won't help mankind--it is that mankind will not get life from technology. Technology must be understood in the entire context of life. If a person catches onto the lie of technology or performance, they may try the opposite lie--platforming. Many troubled people reach out to God, receive help, and then platform by saying, "Thanks for the help God, but I'm O.K. now." God's love is not performance-based, but we still need to continue to press toward the mark of the high calling of God, transforming and renewing our mind, ever growing spiritually. Things which do not grow are labelled dead. How do we grow without being performance oriented? That is the message that Christ tried to bring people. The programmers get their slaves caught in a performance loop. The slaves are not going to get freedom, if a minister of some church traps them into some religious group that is performance-based, rather than unconditional godly-love based.

It is sad to see victims of mind-control free themselves at great cost, only to run from one controlling group to another. If we neglect to look at the spiritual dimensions of mind-control slavery, we then are neglecting to see some of the elements of total mind-control slavery.

In Summary, Some Of The First Things Attacked

What is often the first thing which is attacked in individuals and nations in order to control them? It is their sense of identity as a spiritual moral being. Both individuals and nations are targeted to destroy their ethical self-respect. The individual and the nation must be brought to think of themselves as animals. Another primary tactic or tool is to traumatize the victim who is to be controlled, and then provide relief when a demonic lie is accepted. Rejection is an important trauma, because it creates a desire for performance and retaliation, and gets people trapped in a bondage loop. Lies put people into bondage. Images are a type of lie, that lead to bondage. This is why so many images and lies are placed into the Mind-controlled slave. These images and lies are inherently bondage-makers. Fear and self-preservation are grounded in death. To preserve ourselves, we will allow ourselves to be enslaved. (Eventually, Mind-controlled slaves and society in general in order for peace, safety and self-preservation will transfer their allegiance to the master programmer, the Illuminati's AntiChrist.)

Part C The Dehumanization Process

The dehumanizing of a multiple--that is of a fragmented personality--is done to most of the alters, but the front alters are allowed to be human. Because alters take on the characteristics of what they were created from, the front alters have to be some of the first splits so that they have a sense of family and that they are human. That does not mean that the first series of splits can’t be dehumanized later--they are, they are turned into gems (crystals).

How do you make an alter into an animal alter? It may not be quite as difficult as some may imagine, because they can create alters with "clean slates"--that is they are the plain tablets that Dr. White (Dr. D. Ewin Cameron) prided himself that he was able to make out of adult minds. When a part of the mind has no reality to reference, and is tortured and told lies, then it will accept what the programmer says is real. When an alter is created via torture, if you want a cat alter, they will have the child tortured in a cage surrounded by cats of some type. The new alters will be told they are cats. Their programmers will actually kill a little child in the worst way in front of these alters and tell them that that is what happens to little girls and boys. Do they want to be a little girl? No. After watching the horrible things that happen to little girls, they do not want to be little girls or little boys (as the case may be). They want to be a cat, because as a cat they will not be killed and tortured like the children. The alters are forced to eat like cats with cats. They are repeatedly shamed and degraded and repeatedly told they are cats. Lie detector Instruments are hooked up to the child to determine if the alters actually believe they are cats. When the alter can actually state, "I’m a kitten." or "I’m a tiger." and pass the lie detector test, then the programmers know they have succeeded.

But what if the mind resists being told it is a cat? As long as the child is a girl it is given faeces to eat. But the cats are fed wholesome meals in front of the victim. The little girls in the other cages are dirty and tortured and ill fed. Do you want to be a little girl? A great deal of simple torture is applied to make sure that the correct answers are given. If your life depended upon saying you were a cat, you’d be a cat too.

Further, children have a vivid imagination. Normal children can easily role play, and they can easily imagine they are something they aren’t, because their personalities and egos have not solidified. Again nothing is left to chance. A fake blood transfusion of cat blood may be given the child. Very often high speed films of kittens playing and having fun are shown in one eye, while the other eye is forced to few little girls having to undergo the worst of tortures. This viewing is forced upon the child, as its eyes are held open and the child is strapped into a viewing chair.

The dehumanization process will make alters into various types of birds, cats, dogs, aliens, horses, earth elements, gemstones, rocks, and countless other items. They will then place in back up programming to insure that the alters continue to believe they are not human. The ingenuity of the back up programming to ensure that they continue to believe the lies are extensive and ingenious. A great deal of hypnosis, and drug induced states, and drug-hypnosis is used to carry out the dehumanization process. The programming will be reinforced by a cat alter’s environment, because the alter’s handlers will always refer to them as kittens or other types of cats.

The painful rape of a child with its legs held in a butterfly configuration is used to get butterfly alters. To get a puppet, the body is given a drug which paralyzes the child. Then electro-shock is applied to certain muscles upon the command of the programmer. The effect is that the child has no control over his body, and the programmer can make the child’s body parts jerk and move by electro-shocking the muscles. The child actually becomes the puppet of the programmer. This is a very powerful program. One of the names connected with Monarch programming is Marionette Programming. The child literally becomes a Marionette. This concept appears to have been cooked up by the Germans under Hitler. An alter System as a child is physically shown that they are a marionette puppet. Their muscles are electro-shocked in such a way as to take advantage of the natural reflexes. When electro-shocked that way, the victim’s body parts jerk out of our control at the whim of the programmer to prove to the victim that they are a puppet. At this time, the rules are given and rule number 8 is that the alters are their puppet.

Illuminati programmer Dr. Mengele, used puppets in a dollhouse as he programmed. He did skits with his puppets. "Dance Marionette dance," he’d say in his thick German accent. Pinocchio's story was used to name the spirit guide Jimney Cricket.

Along with rule no. 8, he taught the following rules at this point:

1. Listen to your instructions

2. There is no room for error

3. "The Game Timer"--these were the specifics of how to move, the melted mirror, etc.

4. There is a chain of command, the King's men

5. Your Master would chart your course

6. You will receive orders, what to do, a memorized script to follow and fulfill

7. The Creator and Master would always own you into infinity

8. You are puppets on a string. "Dance Marionette dance. You are to speak only those words told to you, and to only speak those words when your string is pulled

9. There is no room for questions

10. The controller always plays the role of the White Rabbit.

Dark side alters of a System are taught to know these rules as part of their being. Dr. Joseph Mengele (known as Dr. Green) carried a violin, which was used during programming. He programmed slaves to respond to the key word "Fiddler".

During programming, the victim will be made to believe that all their insides have been removed and tape recorders placed into them and surgically hooked up. To the child being programmed this is real. This is part of the dehumanization process to protect them from spiritual growth and freedom. The programmers' dehumanization parallels what is done in the army when the drill sergeant yells at the new recruits names such as "maggot" and "worm".

Porcelain Face Programming

The Porcelain Face Programming was already touched on earlier in chapters 2 & 7 when the fire tortures and Gatekeeper alters were written about. Fire torture and melted wax is used to make the child victim believe their face has been burned. Then the programmer generously gives the traumatized alters a porcelain mask. The alter getting the Porcelain face may be given a "gem" hypnotically like Jade and that becomes their secret name. There are several different methods that are available to lay in the porcelain face programming. There has been a great deal of porcelain casts made of people's faces and then masks made of them. In fact, when a handler dies, at least in one case the replacement handler wore a mask to look like the previous handler. Human baby skin is used to construct a mask from the victim's facial cast.

A mask is worn by the Illuminati victim when they are married to the AntiChrist. The Porcelain Masks are often part of the Camelot & Shakespeare programming. Another use of porcelain masks which was only experimented with was to place masks on Pawn alters which were used as alters who would guard things by scaring other alters with their fearful porcelain countenances. This programming has spiritual ramifications, because it is one of the programming methods to steal alters of their faces. The alters getting porcelain face programming will only see a porcelain face in the mirror until the programming is taken down. As long as the computer on their level is operating the programming to that alter will be intact.

Hearts Of Stone

The programmers leave no stone unturned when they strip the alters of a system of any vestige of humanity they might have. The programmers make the alters believe that the programmers have surgically removed their hearts & replaced them with a stone. To reinforce this programming the victim is hypnotized to fall into a deep trance if at any time the victim's deeper alters are hooked up to anything monitoring the heart. If and when someone tried to prove that these alters have a heart by taking their pulse, they may be surprised when these alters trance deep enough that the machine doesn't even read. This is how the programming keeps the lies safe from exposure.

The Programmers will hypnotically take the hearts for a number of reasons. One is blackmail. They will promise to return the hearts, if the victim obeys, returns home to the cult when needed, and is present when the Anti-Christ needs the victim. It is doubtful these alters would get their hearts back by their cult considering all the false promises that are typically made. The Programmers will give the hearts to a queen mother alter for safekeeping. They may be hidden somewhere like in the Temple of Molech. The Temple of Molech in some survivors is used as a depository for memories of child sacrifices. It is not a place any alter could or would want to go in the internal world. In return, the Programmers give the victim stones, yes, hearts of stone.

Stone-like protectors will stand guard in the background. Their voodoo doll appearance reflects the voodoo images that are built into Monarch Internal Worlds. By removing the victim's hearts, it removes any chance that dark alters would have a soft warm spot in their heart for anyone. They will be told that they are incapable of having friends or of loving others. This is quite effective in separating these alters from others. That isolation is a part of the mind control. Because the alters believe they have no life source within themselves--that is no heart, they have to look to their master. If the master places his hand upon the victim's chest they may feel alive. Because people need a heart to feel, alters are programmed to believe that they are incapable of feeling and have no feelings. They can not cry during their own suffering, and are encouraged to feel incapable of caring for the suffering of others.

In spite of all the brutality and isolation of the programming, the alter's humanity will lay in the background, but whether alters will ever acknowledge that humanity is a big question. If people ask these heartless alters to give their hearts to Jesus, they may be told that they don't have one. In all covenants, something is given to the cult. In this case the victim's hearts are (hypnotically) given to the satanic Master. There is a Keeper of the Seals who keeps the items given when a vow or covenant is made. If a person is a traitor to a vow, then the cult has an object to carry out voodoo or magic upon to punish the person. Monarch Mind-controlled slaves know their orders, and are locked into obedience.

Hypnotic Surgery

After the Programmers steal the deeper alters' hearts, their identities, their free will, their real families, and their faces and their humanity, they are kind enough to sew back into the victim's chest via hypnotic surgery black stones. They do all this surgery by hypnosis. Via hypnosis, the Programmers can heal the victim's wounds after they torture the victim. They can basically make or remake reality to be what they want.

Part D Fear

The thing that stands out so vividly for those who have met victim's who are in therapy is the Spirit(s) of Fear that control them. Waves of paranoia roll back and forth through the alters. Everyone needs to bear in mind, that the programmers were sadists, and they didn't get satisfaction from their programming until they could see raw terror in their victims. The primary vehicle for programming was the raw terror that is repeatedly instilled into the victim. To achieve total terror, the sadist programmer gains total control over every aspect of a person, their thoughts, their bowel movements, their life, even the power to commit suicide is stripped from the victim. Nothing that originally belonged to the victim is left untouched.

A realistic fear of most victims, is that they will never be believed. Indeed, many therapists are serving the final insult to these severely traumatized people by denying the authenticity of things the victim experienced himself and even wishes were not true. For a victim to overcome their fear to tell, after all the years of programming not to tell and threats not to tell is an enormous feat. Very few victims, ever get to this point. And yet, when they do overcome this enormous barrier, they must face disbelief. Traditionally, the psychiatrists have treated these victims as if their abuse is nothing but psychotic nonsense. How many fleeing victims have been locked up and told they were Paranoid Schizophrenics? The fear of losing one's identity within a coven or religious group, says the Church of Scientology, is balanced out by the structured framework that these groups have. Members identify with each other, because they participate in the same rituals and have given their allegiance to the same idealized master.

Part E The Use Of Guilt, Shame, Ridicule And Anger

The Chinese and police agencies have been especially good at developing methods to solicit confessions. This is done by a variety of punishment and reward strategies, and the Mutt & Jeff routine. Confession and self-criticism have been used by religious groups, esp. the Jesuits as a method to convert persons to and then perpetuate a belief. One of the things that the deeper alters will not be taught about is forgiveness. Because forgiveness of oneself and others is such an important spiritual dynamic, to not know about forgiveness cripples many deeper alters from healing from the deep spiritual wounds they have received. Forgiveness is an act of the will. Forgiveness of oneself is usually a major issue with deeper alters who generally don't know how to do this. However, the handlers and abusers will be sure to heap lots of guilt--whether deserved or not onto the poor mind-controlled victim. It is natural for a person to focus on himself--after all, if a person doesn't think for himself who will?

Often a person accepts their strengths, but focuses on their weaknesses hoping that that weakness will somehow be reduced by the focus that is placed upon it. The programmers know how to take advantage of that. They set impossible standards of perfection, and then demean the victim because they have failed to live up to the impossible standard of perfection.

Black and white thinking develops in the slave's mind. The programmers will not allow the victim to display natural feelings of anger, sadness or doubt. To do so means that one is a failure and weak. Of course they are natural feelings, so the slave has to do a great deal of repression and self-incrimination for having these natural feelings. The slave learns to turn his or her anger inward. Many of the male slaves end up committing suicide. They beat themselves up with subconscious & conscious guilt. Anything and everything wrong or bad in the slave's life is blamed upon him. Of course not all things are meant to be remembered by the slave. Guilt can play a natural role in the forgetting of memories too. If the Monarch slave would remember something terrible, the religious front alters can be made to feel repentant for such terrible thoughts. Then the natural desire to forget can be reinforced by suggesting that the evil memory be removed from the mind. In other words, memories are forgotten because they don't conform to a person's moral code. If good morals are programmed into the front alters, they will take the hypnotic suggestion not to remember what has really happened that they had to participate in. The front alters will only remember a sanitized version. The person may even want to think of the memory as "only a dream" because the guilt associated with believing the reality of it. If a person is hypnotized to have guilt about something that they didn't commit, then they can be gotten to believe that they did it.

For instance, a false implanted memory of the Monarch slave killing a child may be implanted with the command, if you do not obey we will kill more children and you then will be guilty for not just this child but others. People will tend to justify their abuse by saying "I was bad, I was evil." The programmers take advantage of this natural tendency. Nothing the slave does is good enough or worthy of praise. After they sexually please a customer, they are called "bitch" and "whore" to make the slave feel guilty, when all they have done is follow orders. The whole situation causes the slave to work harder for approval which of course is very tentative and fleeting at best. The Master just keeps control, and sets the standards higher if the slave gets close to reaching perfection. The Master must insure that the slave feels guilty and dirty. Many of the slaves endure a guilt that is common among soldiers and concentration camp survivors--the guilt of having survived when others died. "Why did I live and they die? I was no better than them?"

Any desire on the part of deeper alters to want something for themselves is painted as "selfishness". They will be internally and externally punished for any pleasure. If a sexual alter enjoys a sexual encounter, she is programmed to internally feel some type of severe punishment program. One standard punishment for a female slave who appears to have actually enjoyed a sexual act is to cut them from vagina to rectum, and sew them back up without anesthesia WHILE the slave is forced to watch her punishment in silence without tears or screams.

One form of tormenting a slave is to ridicule the slave as they have to carry out a wretched assignment. Many slaves lose their zest for humor because they end up the brunt of so many bad jokes. Comedians, because they are skilled with puns, and other words games, have often served as handlers or programmers. Bob Hope is the best example of a Monarch slave handler who uses his verbal skills as both a handler and comedian. Bob Hope has a side to him that the public doesn't see. Over the years, Bob Hope has spent millions of dollars on his team of gag writers to keep him well supplied with gags.

Anger

The use of anger is not haphazard. The spiritual ramifications of anger are very well known to the programmers. They know that anger opens up spiritual portals for demonic activity. Remember, chapter 7 on structuring explained how the programmer purposefully push the victim almost to its breaking point to get angry alters. The use of anger is seen in a number of different areas of programming. The Gatekeeper alters will be depressed and angry alters to insure that they remain good portals for demons. Gatekeeper alters function as Gatekeepers in several different capacities. Gatekeeper alters will be found to the whole system, often on the second level (section) down. Gatekeeper alters will also be found guarding important sections like the Carousel and Castle.

In review, Anger toward God, anger toward the outside world, and anger toward themselves are all built into a System. Where was God? Where was the outside world, when all these things were happening. Many, if not all, of the victims of Monarch turn their anger on themselves, which is the only safe place to vent it. Most of the deeper alters of a Monarch system will have very low self-esteem and will have lots of guilt and anger toward themselves. The slave is victimized so much, that when their handlers give them the chance to victimize someone else, some victims find release in assaulting others. Of course the entire process of transference further entraps the victim, and provides more guilt and more debilitating spiritual dynamics. The slave may be given the power of life or death over others, as well as the power of deciding another person's eternal fate. Sometimes this power is addictive. This addiction can be a trap that binds the slave to his source of power. The power that the Illuminati give their slaves is one of the major barriers preventing deeper alters from moving toward freedom when their systems have a chance. Slaves also turn a great deal of anger in on themselves.

The self-image of most alters in a System is extremely low. The anger that alters have becomes a tool of the handler to insure that the slave never thinks highly enough of themselves to do anything about the control over them. An example of this is Monarch slave **Loretta Lynn**. Loretta Lynn's handler is her husband Doolittle. Although Loretta has worked (slaved) very long hard hours she credits Doolittle for all her success. Her programming allows her only to give him credit for her successes. In her "autobiography" Loretta Lynn A Coal Miners Daughter, which was written by a professional writer who sat down and worked with her, Loretta says on page 63, "In a lot of ways, it was good for me to marry someone older than me [her husband Doo was a WW II vet/satanist who married her when she was 13], because I could learn from him. But, in another way, it wasn't so good because I went directly from Daddy to Doolittle without ever being on my own. Even today, men are telling me what to do. My husband, my lawyer, my accountant, my personal manager [Ken Riley, her road manager has been her mind-control handler, and Alex Houston & Reggie Maclaughlin have done some of her recent programming]. In a sense, I still don't have complete control over myself. Maybe I never will. But if it wasn't for Doo [her nickname for her husband & handler], we wouldn't have what we have today."

Anger within a System can be dangerous, when one alter directs its anger toward another alter. Sometimes one alter will try to kill another alter. Actually, this happens more often than one might imagine. If the alter succeeds of course, the body will be dead, with the resulting consequence that everyone dies. The programmers enjoy seeing this type of drama, but they don't want it to be carried out to its final conclusion, so they generally, if not always, have alters who can step in and take the body and stop this. If the alter system can't, then alters who understand what is going on can call their master for help, and the master can once again show how dependent they are upon him for life. This is the "divide and conquer" strategy. The divide and conquer strategy is used repeatedly in constructing an alter system.

Part F Teaching That The Master Is God;

The Programmers Set Themselves Up As Gods

The Programmers and the Handlers are setting themselves up as gods, or Almighty God, or as a being from a superior race of aliens, such as Koldasians or Pleiadians. Interestingly, if one listens, these different alien races make conflicting claims for whatever good the earth has. However, those of us who have followed the Monarch programming know that these aliens are just men who do the Programming.

Time-life Publishers (owned by men in the Illuminati) subtly gave this away in their book The UFO Phenomenon when they referred to UFO abductions as "the Oz factor." They go on to say that its like Dorothy in the Wizard of Oz on page 71. Then they go so far as to reemphasize the point by showing a picture of Dorothy in Oz.

In the TV series on aliens & UFOs called the "X-Files", they begin a show with an "I love you-I love you not" Monarch programming script. Often the Programmers tell the alters which they have created, that they are their Creator and therefore their God. In a spiritual sense, they took the place of God in every way, including attributing the scriptures about God to themselves. This works well for Illuminati alters, because they are indoctrinated that all humans can be divine. It also works well with non-Illuminati alters as long as they are under mind-control.

However, the actions of the handlers are so ungodlike, that should the programming break down, and the alters get a taste of reality, these lies soon are transparent. The lies that the handler is an alien are much harder to refute than the lies that the handler is God. The trend appears to be for the handlers to refer to themselves as a superior race of aliens. Most if not all of the people seeing aliens, are really just being jerked around by their handlers. This doesn't mean that aliens do or don't exist. It does mean that those of us who have been working with people who have alien contact experiences and who understand Monarch Mind-control have only seen people obviously under mind-control. Fritz has yet to meet someone who has had an "alien contact" who wasn't under mind-control.

In 1992, a book Exposing The Mystery of Iniquity was started by Fritz Springmeier showing the connections between so called "aliens" and "demons." Is it coincidence that the demon Sir John Dee conjured for his enochian magic looks just like a small grey alien pictured so often today? People who have participated in high level Illuminati ceremonies speak about guardians which are nephalim (half human-half demon) which are the offspring of mixing humans with demons, and who look like the variety of "aliens" that are so often reported. The subject of nephalim and whether aliens are or are not visiting us is too vast for this book. However, these nephalim guardians are perceived as real by Illuminati members, and they strike incalculable fear within the members of the Illuminati.

As one of the big sources of fear, the guardians take their place as part of the control mechanisms to keep slaves in place. Polls taken by others, have found that 100% of Satanists have had a experience with UFOs, and report some type of "alien" abduction. (The Programmers & upper level hierarchy don't get themselves in polls, and the lower levels are all programmed.) The point is that there is a close relationship between UFOs and the occult world. On the following page are some of the more respectable scripts that persons, who are victims of "alien abductions" see in their heads. Signs of MPD were visible in each of these cases, and these abductee are placing their wills at the command of these "higher beings". Their wills are subservient to the will of the "alien". They receive messages in these scripts in altered states of consciousness. Some of the scripts are blatantly satanic magic scripts and sigils, but the majority are blatantly of human design.

It stretches the imagination that most alien scripts would have a language and script that matches the English alphabet, with the same letter frequencies of English letters--that is "a's", "m's", and are found in abundance. It stretches the imagination passed the breaking point to think that aliens light years away with different vocal cords or whatever they have, evolved a script that corresponds to English, when our alphabet doesn't correspond to Greek, or Sanskrit, or Ogham that closely.

Quite a few abductees have the "aliens" give them more complex versions of their "alien script" as they get older. The simplified version is received as a child, and then it evolves. It appears that there are now numerous programmers, who are simply concocting made-up scripts, and hypnotically telling their poor hapless victim that the script is alien. In this respect, these scripts are really codes--not "alien scripts". They are full of what are called follows.

Follows are symbols that are similar to one another, which are a variation on a theme. Test results have shown that made-up scripts have many more follows that an actual real historical script. The occult world are teaching that the Akashic record of all recorded information lies somewhere in the essence of space called the reticulum dei (the network of God). The mind-control victim, who actually gets his automatic writing and his information from deep in his system, is led to believe that he has gotten it from the Akashic record. Click here for picture

The spiritual dynamics of the Programmer setting himself up as God are far reaching. The spiritual world mirrors the physical world. In the physical world, in biology, researchers have found that chemicals that resemble other natural body chemicals can be substituted in for those original chemicals with far reaching effects. For instance, anti-histamines do not destroy histamine, they resemble histamine enough that they steal the places that histamine molecules attach themselves to cells. Because the histamine molecules have had their attachment places stolen, they can’t interact with the cells. Within the spiritual realm the very same thing happens. The Anti-Christ is less of a Christ destroyer as he is a Christ replacement. True spiritual power is replaced within the world by the religious spirit. Within Christendom, the religious spirit has replaced much of the positions that should have gone to true faith. Therefore the power of true faith is destroyed by simply being replaced and its position usurped. The foundation for the religious spirit are fear and pride, which are also foundational pillars for the Monarch programming. The religious spirit can be detected when someone reads an admonishment and can apply it immediately to others and not to oneself. When a person sins, for example Eli in the book of Samuel, the religious spirit will propel them to make a sacrifice to cover that sin like Eli did. However, that religious zeal to cover sin by doing good and giving sacrificially of oneself, stems from the religious spirit not the holy Spirit of God (See 1 Samuel 3:13-14). Religious zeal done to cover sin is not accepted by Almighty God. Eli’s sons "despised the offering of the LORD" (1 SAM 2:17).

One of the outgrowths of SRA upon the Monarch victim is that they will generally exhibit black and white thinking. Black and white thinking is actually an element of the religious spirit, which in spiritual terms pervades the Monarch victim. The Monarch victim’s system is set up to usurp true faith. Something has to replace true faith, and the religious spirit is a good substitute. Perfectionism or unloving idealism is part of the religious spirit. This perfectionism will demand that if a person can not be perfect, they should give up. The holy Spirit of God gives hope. The religious spirit destroys hope by demanding more than people can give. As long as people are travelling the journey of seeking God, they don’t need to have arrived to perfection. Idealism wants people to be at the destination at once or not start the journey. This religious spirit has stopped many victims of Monarch programming from moving forward to real freedom. It is a very powerful type of spirit. Many people are waiting until they are perfect to help minister to others. Sadly this is an outgrowth of the religious spirit. We do not need to be perfect to help others.

The following is an actual account: a Christian man who didn’t understand mechanics very well stopped to see what he could do to help an elderly couple stranded on the road. The car miraculously started for the Christian and he was able to have the couple follow him to a repair station at the next town. But the attitude of the Christian was to make himself available to God--not that he was going to fix someone else’s problem. The couple was sure they had been visited by an angel. What is being discussed is how setting oneself up as "a god" or "God" is part of the religious spirit that attracts itself to so many of us. One of the attributes of the religious spirit is that it will notice what is wrong in a person rather than discerning what is right. Unless discernment is based upon love, discernment will be warped. Churches caught up in the religious spirit have mercy on the things that are abominations to God. Likewise, they show unwarranted mercy on the actions of ministers who have mercy on things that are abominations to God.

One of the best examples is the religious front this book discussed in detail in chapter 5. Billy Graham, a Monarch slave handler, is on public record endorsing Mao-tse-tung’s teachings, abortion, salvation through witchcraft, the One-World-Church in alliance with the world’s political power, and many other things. Quite a number of Freemasons, ex- and current members have stated that Billy Graham is a secret Freemason, however, his staff denies this. The religious spirit has run a campaign to cover up Billy Graham’s personal use of prostitutes, many of them Monarch kittens. And some of these Monarch kittens have been able to reveal the facts of their abuse. Billy Graham is a "prophet" who works for the Network. The point is that churches turn a blind eye to these things. Fritz has tried to approach ministers about these things, and there isn’t an open ear. By the way, Almighty God still can step above what Billy Graham is and work in spite of it. Satanists can infiltrate the highest church positions, but they won’t stop good from eventually conquering evil, and God’s will being done. When we write "God’s will", please understand that God has several types of will, including a conditional will, and an ultimate will. His conditional will is let men have what they want. His ultimate will is to see His creation be a wonderful paradise.

The religious leaders in Jesus’ day got rid of true prophets. The religious spirit today will do the same. The religious spirit causes people to flagellate their backs with whips. A Russian branch of the Illuminati, called the Skoptsi, are famous for the self-inflicted tortures including castration that they carry out upon their bodies. The religious spirit causes people to have self-abasement for the wrong motives. Discipline and faith are worthy things to have, but not if they are done out of only love for oneself rather than also love for one’s Creator. This is why satanic alters have such a hard time seeing what Christianity has for them. They see the religious spirit of Christianity and they realize that Satanism has a more powerful form of religion. Satanism is based upon legalism (the rituals have to be exactly so), and upon pride and fear. To make an analogy, the religious spirit is like a man or woman who dresses to get compliments rather than dressing nicely to please their spouse. In other words, the man who wears something that offends his wife (because he wants other men to think he is macho), has a similar motivation as the religious spirit. The author of the religious spirit is Satan, the author of death.

God wants people to choose things which are excellent and make their lives count for eternity. On the flip side, the programmers, who worship & serve Satan in their invocations, murder their victims in 4 ways of death--mental, moral, spiritual, and physical death. They program 4 types of ongoing suicide into their slaves. They bring them mental suicide, moral suicide, spiritual suicide, push some alters to physical suicide, and program others to commit physical suicide. They push their slaves into near death experiences--some alters die, and are discarded.

Often, there are "dead" alters within a live System.

a. To perpetuate mental death, the programmers administer drugs, hypnosis, and false philosophies, and programming to wipe the truth out of the slaves' mind. This is mental murder .

b. Resistance to evil is the essence of life.

By requiring their slaves to engage in the worst moral impurities, these parts lose their spiritual eyes. This is moral murder. (2 Peter 1)

Part G Portals And Focal Points

Within the occult world, the entire study of demonology is wrapped around the geometric shapes that serve as focal points for demons (such as made by crystals and pyramids), and the portals by which demons can enter the human body. A demon doesn't have to be materialized (conjured up) to enter into a body. Geometric shapes which are believed to attract demons are placed into the internal worlds of slaves. The will of the person also plays a role in the introduction of demons into the body. Torture attaches and layers in demons within the body. Sex and blood sacrifices are used to attach powerful demons. According to high level demonology, certain powerful spirits can only be manipulated if there are blood sacrifices. This may seem strange, however, the record (evidence) bears out that generational victims of possession who have had demons placed in via blood sacrifices are definitely controlled by more powerful demonic forces.

All of the chakra points, and the orifices to the human body serve as portals. Both the Illuminati and Christian deliverance ministries agree that the mouth, ears, nose, anus, etc. are portals. High influxes of demonic energy into the body is accompanied by a burning sensation. The Mother of Darkness who is assigned to a child who is being programmed has to oil the child periodically to protect it from this burning. The goal to possess someone of spirits, or to be possessed by spirits has been practiced since the early times of mankind.

In Llewellyn's New Worlds of Mind and Spirit magazine June/July 1994, issue #943, they write, "The **golem** of Prague is perhaps the most famous example of 'practical cabala'--the use of cabala for magical cabala." Scholem in his excellent treatise on the Cabala has an entire chapter about the Golem. The golem were mind-controlled slaves created by the magick of the Cabala. The Cabala, according to the best Masonic authorities, including Albert Pike in his famous Morals and Dogma book is the basis of Freemasonry. By extension then, it is clear that the goal of having a mind-controlled golem has been the goal of Freemasonry, because that goal is the best example of practical cabala.

This is the paper trail that lets us view the secret goals of the secret world of Freemasonry. There are Cabalistic grades within Freemasonry. Sexual slaves were used by the higher and more occult Masonic rites in the 19th century. These sexual slaves were subjected to trances and demonic possessions. They were subjected to all types of perverse magical rituals. The Cabala teaches intercourse with demons. Theurgy is the skill or ability to invoke demons variously called angels of light, genii, spirits of various kinds, such as elemental spirits. Demons come with a price and that price is blood.

Satanism and Luciferianism and other similar cults are blood cults that require blood to be sacrificed to pull in certain demons. For instance, blood may be taken from both the tongue and the genital area and mixed in a certain ceremony to invoke a particular demon. Demons are not bought with gold or silver, they are bought with blood. Some spirits are invoked by placing alcoholic enemas into the child. These children get totally intoxicated with alcohol, some to the point that they even die from the ceremony. This is all done to bring in particular demons. The Spirit Choronzon and Typhon are critical spirits to place into a person for the Mind-Control to work. The Illuminati do not believe the Mind-control will work without the assistance of these spirits. Typhon and Choronzon do the tunneling and the MPD work.

An example of an important ritual to demonize the victim is the **baptism of the child victim to Satan**. Satan may be called Set in the ritual. There are variations on this ceremony, so a victim's personal baptism may vary in some or all of the details. This is actual variation of the ritual done to Monarch mind-controlled slaves: The child is stripped nude and given a purple robe. It is placed inside the pentagram, and an "altar" which is made by a nude woman or child is brought forward. A horse or jackal is inscribed with the inscription "Nebebka" on the neck or forehead. Then the animal is sacrificed to whatever name the group is using for Satan (such as Set or Saman). The abdomen of the beast is split open completely, and the liver removed. The 4 spirits of the 4 watchtowers are invoked. The slave child being baptized is smeared with fat from the dead beast. The Gatekeeper spirit is called by ringing a bell. Then the child is placed into the animal's belly. A part of the raw liver is given to the child and the rest consumed by the group. The child is then baptized in blood. A cut called the Devil's Seal is placed on the child on the left hand, or under the armpit, or on the upper part of the head. This in Cabalism is the Mark of Foundation. The Priest reads out of the Book of Satan and the Book of Names. The victim repeats after the Priest. In this fashion the Priest ritually gives the person a new name. The Dance of Hod (Glory-the sphere on the bottom left of the C. Tree of Sephiroth) is then begun in a circular motion by the cult, to oppose Netsah (Victory-the sphere on the bottom right of the Tree). The Priest of the coven will then dismiss the demon(s) he has conjured.

At times this ritual is done with a child sacrifice rather than an animal, & sometimes it is done in conjunction with another ritual, such as All Hallow's Eve. To empower the Monarch System, special rings which have been dipped in the blood of sacrificed victims, are given to the victim with instructions to wear it faithfully. The rings are used as focal points to insure the continued demonization of the victim. Some examples of this would be a Blue Topaz ring, a Black Onyx ring, or a Diamond ring. Black Onyx is used to capture souls. Whether the therapist believes this or not becomes irrelevant in view of the fact that the deeper alters in a Monarch System are skilled in demonology and they do believe it, and take consolation that their magical powers are never challenged by therapists. These deeper alters will continue to do much of the demonization of the system for the Programmer, and this delegation of this job, means the Programmer/handler is free to focus on other things. Our experience is that when the Slave Masters within the Illuminati take away the hearts of the alters of a system, they give them a heart of stone and a ring. The ring is important for if they lose this, they think they will not get their hearts back. The slaves will wake up in the middle of the night looking for a ring--but never know what ring they are looking for. "CATCH A FALLING STAR, PUT IT IN YOUR POCKET FOR A RAINY DAY" ties in with this story line. The star is magical stardust. During programming the Programmers use "magical star dust." If the slave loses his/her ring, they are told the Master will never love them. When the Master comes to give his love, then the slave will get to use their magical wand with its star dust. The ring of the Programmer, which has occult power from being used in ritual, is also used as a hypnotic cue. The ring also represents occult power and authority.

Part H Vows And Oaths

The Illum. & generational occult families attach Ancestral & Generational curses (noted about in EX 20:5-6, DT 23:2, 2 KG 5:27, JER 32:18, JER 3:25, LEV 26:40) to the victim. The Programmers create soul ties (intermeshment with others in an ungodly way), including intermeshment of spirits. Sex, emotional dependence, anger and love can be tied to this dependence. The spiritual power of the Communion meal--which is a form of the Passover meal (deliverance) & the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (wholeness in heaven) is reversed by Black Mass's symbolism/bondage. The Moriah & other occult groups attach curses to a person that are brought on by occult involvement. These curses are the consequences of sinful occult involvement. The Monarch programmers force the slave to make blood covenants, contracts, oaths, and to shed innocent blood. Often times the deeper alters feel like they have made these contracts willingly--however, if they could see the whole picture they would realize that they were forced and deceived into accepting these occult practices. To free themselves of these oaths and covenants every alter has to break them, or at least the main alter breaks it for others.

What various witchcraft and Illuminati slaves will experience will be Satan drawing blood from their left hand and causing them to write in the slave's own blood a formal contract entering his service. The ceremony has a lasting impression. Their signature in the Great White Book, which is an important Illuminati document, which has everyone's signature will change color, and they will lose their magical power, etc. This creates a double bind, if they keep the System "safe", they can't get out. They need to understand that greater is Jesus than he who is the world. See COL 2:15 also, which speaks about him triumphing over the principalities and powers.

The Illuminati & the Network keeps books which have the signatures of all their membership, including slaves. They tell the slave that if they ever break a covenant with them, that Satan will cause the signature in blood to turn green. In other words, the slave is led to believe and is convinced that if they ever renege on their vows to Satan and the New World Order, they will be instantly found out. Even the American presidents are reported to be threatened with this type of threat. The "birthright" of a child born to Illuminati parents is to be allowed into satanic coven level activity. Alters which function at coven levels, will be far removed in a Monarch system from Illuminati hierarchy alters. The coven level will also be called the anarchy level and is represented by an A.

One of the early oaths taken by the Illuminati child before the Grand Druid Council is, "Satan the Way and the Light. No one comes to me except through the father of light which is the Anti-Christ. I, [birth name], by my free choice take the following oath. I commit to serve my body and spirit in union with the father of light for the total prosperity and insurance of the victory of Satan and the father of light the AntiChrist. Now within an unbroken circle of spiritual power, understanding and accepting the consequences of breaking the spiritual circle which joins the Mothers of Light (later they learn that they have joined the Mothers of Darkness). with each other and to the father of light. I [Illuminati coven name] with these bonds in place commit to rule within the spiritual union over the principalities of darkness to insure Satan's power and control over the world. I forever take on the seal of the father of light and commit my eternal life to serve Satan as the prince of peace, savior, and spiritual light for ever and ever. I now denounce the truth of the God, the resurrection of Christ and the power of the Holy Spirit."

Should the person break this vow, they are programmed to remember torture on a cross, which is designed to cause a seizure and heart failure. The Final Vows of a Mother of Darkness or a Grand Master will make these cult alters feel like they are bound and trapped in service to Satan. They are almost always unaware that Almighty God doesn't recognize such vows, and will willingly release them from their evil servitude. The black stone is used in the Mothers-of-Darkness vows. The book of Revelation speaks about a white stone with a name written on it. Mothers of Darkness alters get a black stone with their assigned Queen goddess names written on them.

Those who have been on the inside of Satanism know that oaths taken by occult lodges and satanic cults are at times enforced. The oaths describe the type of traitor's death that is to be carried out. An example of the types of penalty these oaths carry can be seen in the following words, "All this I most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear with a firm steadfast resolution, to keep and perform the same without any equivocation, mental reservation or secret evasion of mind whatever, binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn open, my heart plucked out my body severed in twain, my bowels taken from thence and burned to ashes, should I knowingly violate this my solemn obligation."

The covenants, and vows and threats all work together to keep people in line. Alters within a Monarch slave are conditioned by their servitude to believe that their life is controlled by Satan, who is stronger than God. Where was God when they needed him? And yet many of the Monarch slaves coming in for therapy have had numerous miracles in their lives that have given them the latitude to reach out for health and freedom. If the Monarch alters can not see the positives of what God has done, they will remain trapped in their pabout that night in Transformation of America, p.129-130.)

Working hand in hand with the vows and the oaths, are the extreme measures the Network goes to, to convince the perception that Satan rules. Actually, the survivors of the Illuminati's mind-control were meant to play a big role in helping God upset the detailed satanic script. And because these people sincerely gave their lives to Christ around the age of 2, God will honor that and help them. At any rate, even the informed secular therapist should realize these programmed slaves are in the middle of some power struggles. They are instruments of the Satanic hierarchy to carry out their plans.

The Network goes out of their way to enhance the slave's perception that the occult rules. Along this line, President Reagan insisted the Monarch programmer Michael Aquino wear his black satanic ritual robes to a White House party. (One can read more slave that they are always being watched. This is the "You can run, but you can't hide" programming. Supposedly, the slave is being watched by satellite no matter where they go. For instance, at Offit Air Force Base in Nebraska, an underground viewing room is used to convince Monarch slaves they have no place to hide. There the walls have numerous "satellite pictures" from around the world. The satellites are called "Eye in the Sky." A four-screen viewer pretends to respond to the type-in commands of an air force official who tells the slave, "Where will you run? To the Artic? The Antarctic? Brazil? The Mountains?...We can find you there. There is truly no place to run and no place to hide." This show, which was made to convince the mind-controlled slave of the NWO's prowess, is just a pre-made slide show, it is just theatrics. However, the computer chips they have been implanting into people do give them the ability to track their slaves. And the intelligence agencies do have spy satellites. The NWO is protected from nuclear attack via the Pentagon's C^3I (pronounced "see-cubed-eye") meaning command, control, communication & intelligence. An important part of C^3I is MILSTAR which is a global central nervous system of 9 satellites and about 3,500 million dollar MILSTAR terminals on the ground. The CIA has among other things, the $300 million Vortex spy satellite and a $500 million Magnum spy satellite which were recently launched.

Part I Layering In Demons

The American Journal of Psychotherapy, two noted psychiatrists and an M.D. from India wrote an article "Multiple Personality in India: Comparison with Hysterical Possession State". The tenor of the article was that in India, the psychiatrists have to deal with demonic possession rather than MPD which is found in the west. They made comparisons of demonic possession in India to the MPD of the west, which are similar but not the same. Later, other articles and letters were written about this article. One of the criticisms was that these Indian psychiatrists were trying to compare their demonic possession to the west's MPD when it was obvious that their cases of demonic possession did not meet all the criteria of MPD. In the experience of the co-authors of this book, demonic possession is not MPD (DID) but it does have many of the same characteristics.

If we understand programming from the Programmers point of view, they believe in both MPD and Demonic possession. From the programmers point of view, they try to create the alters and demonize the alters. Several ex-Programmers have told Fritz that if a person really wants to understand the Monarch trauma-based mind-control, they need to realize that it is fundamentally demonic-based. Both of the co-authors have had to sit through lectures by secular therapists who dismissed Satanism and the occult as simply as an excuse on the part the abusers to traumatize their victims. According to these secular therapists, demon possession and satanic rituals have nothing to do with therapeutic issues, but are merely games and charades put on by the abusers. We beg to differ with this point of view. Programming and mind-control can not be separated from demonology and occult ritual. Even the "alien programming" uses lots of occult symbols, rituals & spiritual programming.

An example of how ritual & programming overlap is the **sabbat ceremony** to insure that cult slaves keep silent no matter what, even under torture. On a full moon sabbat, a large oak tree will be used to hold this night ceremony. A Majic cake, also known as a Red or Acacia Cake is made for the ceremony. The demon seer is invoked using the name Shaddai (one of its 9 mystic names). An unbaptized child, who has been taken from Christian parents, is in the middle of the Pentagram, and a live altar consisting of a woman is used. A magic square called Satar formula is carved onto the child with an Eagle or Rooster claw. The child is turned to the 4 directions and then turned face down toward the east. The child must curse and blaspheme God Almighty. Then its mouth is gagged with a purple cloth. Flesh is cut from the child, and mixed with black millet and given to Satan (also called Sheitan). Prayers in Enochian are said. Incense is lit. The child is now sacrificed to Satan, using the ritual athame (perhaps a black handled dagger), while the child is condemned by the cult to hell.

This type of ritual is to instill fear of talking and praying into the cult members. One of the secret ceremonies to invoke demons comes from The Book of Beasts. It is an ancient ceremony to summon demons. The ceremony begins with reading the Tetragrammaton Elohim, the Creature of Judgement is invoked, as well as the 9 mystic names of the dead. A child is skinned and sacrificed. The Book of the Old Faith is read from. And then the demons are dismissed and a bell rung in the 4 directions. Monarch slaves recall the stench of the demons, and the roar that they make when invoked. To live through a horrifying experience like this does impact the slave, and therapists need to quit ignoring the various impacts that effect the victim of occult ceremonies.

On the flip side, victims of mind-control need to realize that although demonic possession is one of the tools of control, that the diagnosis of "demon possession should not be used to cover up the many other issues involved with the mind-control including body memories, a lifetime of severe abuse, abandonment issues, safety issues, and all the rest of the garbage that goes with having been a mind-controlled slave. These many other issues need to be addressed too. When one of the authors of this book, Fritz Springmeier, began working with Programmed Multiples, he was told by several independent of one another that they had problems with spirits, which they called Legion, Beelzebub, Asmodeus, Leviathon and Behemoth. Occasionally Hanan was mentioned. After doing some work, false satanic trinities were found leading these Structured Multiple's systems.

Interestingly, other ministers who were working in other areas of the country with Illuminati programmed multiples were finding the same thing. If we comb the rare books of Europe, there is a book in French Cruels effets de la vengeance du Cardinal Richelieu ou Histoire des diables de Loudun by Aubin (Amsterdam, 1716, pp. 215 +) and as well as another one, Delacroix, Etudes d'histoire et de psychologie du mysticisme. Paris, 1908, pp. 328-344., which tell the story of the Uruline convent in Loudon between 1632 and 1638. This convent plays a role in the Illuminati bloodlines.

What is of interest to us, is that the nuns back in 1632 found themselves "possessed" by demons. These demons made the people act like animals, such as bark like dogs, rave in altered states, go into trances, have uncontrollable changes in personality which they would be amnesiac about. A male voice would appear in a female, etc. The mystic Father Surin, who came and tried to help the convent, himself got possessed for 20 years and had an entire change in personality for 20 years. He wrote that at times he felt like Satan. Seven demons manifested themselves in very different but distinct persons within these nuns. The Catholic priest (an exorcist) could make the different demonic personas take the bodies of the Loudun nun Jeanne des Anges, and her face & body & voice would change from one possession to the other.

These seven demons were Asmodée (also called Asmodeus), Leviathan, Béhémoth, Aman (Haman), Isacaaron, Balaam, and Grésil. They also had a false trinity Lucifer-Beelzebub-Leviathon associated with them. French psychologist P. Janet in 1888 noticed that many of his patients found themselves losing control of their body to what they called a demon who would often be named Astaroth, Leviathan or Beelzebub. (P. Janet, L 'Automatisme psychologique. Paris, 1888, pp. 440 +.) Reports from other areas such as Germany over the years are similar. Is this mere coincidence? It is stretching the imagination to believe that so many separate incidents have commonalities, and identical demonic entities, and yet are not related in some fashion.

By the way, medieval witchcraft, Rosicrucianism, and the Illuminati have all had rituals where people dress with Cat, Lion, Owl, Cuckoo, and Parrot masks. In altered states, these medieval witches may have actually flipped into animal alters who thought they were a cat or owl, etc., which would account for written accounts by medieval craft adepts that witches would transform into animals.

Demonic possession is getting more and more recognition by psychologists. Some psychologists have discovered that their programmed multiples responded very positively to deliverance of demons, and were able to get more accomplished in a few hours of deliverance than years of psychology. What does this tell us? Well, it is NOT "scientific proof' that demons exist, but it is proof that deliverance can be very helpful. One can debate the exact reasons why deliverance works--perhaps it is merely that the helping person is entering the other person's construct--but the events of successful deliverance strongly indicate that what has happened is an actual deliverance of demons.

Because this book is about HOW the victim's are controlled, and the programmers believe that the primary ingredient in the mind-control is demonology, we will cover demonology. If that bothers some readers, then they need to ask themselves, Are they really wanting to understand HOW the mind-control is done, or simply superimpose and replace the HOW it is done with what they themselves would do? Several times psychologists have been heard saying, "We don't know how the programmers think. It would be helpful to know." How many people are really ready to hear the answer? Recently, one of the Programmers (and names could be mentioned) never got excited as long as his slave was in therapy, but when his slave got a deliverance, he came totally unglued.

On the flip side, anyone who can read this book entirely to this point and think that Illuminati slaves only have a problem with demons has somehow missed most of the book. The programmers are so demon possessed that people who have worked with them say that the powerful demons within them try to compete with each other for power. Those who have worked with the programmers know how the programmers themselves have been skilled in conjuring demons with a nine-foot circle with magical phrases like "Bagabi laca Bachabe, Lamac cahi achababe,..." Rituals have been performed at the programming sites. (On the flip side, deliverance ministries can send demons to the throne of Almighty God to get instructions.)

One of the first stories read to a slave may be the Jungle Book by freemason & occultist Rudyard Kipling (1865-1936). The story is used to teach the child to have animal spirit guides, such as the bear and leopard spirit guides found in Jungle Book. The main character in Jungle Book is neither animal or human, but in between. Neither world accepts this orphan boy. Slaves are taught that they are not human, but not fully animal, but something that can't be fully accepted or understood by anyone. Jungle Book provides the script for this. A bracelet keeps the boy safe by giving him the power of the gods. The slave is taught to get demonic power from jewellery which is given to them. There are many other features of Jungle Book which are used for the initial programming too, such as the pack of wolves (protectors in the system), snakes in the hell pit, a Boa Constructor snake to guard the castle, the need to pass through the waterfall to get into a wonderful world, a black jungle of death on the other side of the waterfall, castle jewels, caged birds, etc. Later, alters will be told they are the leader of a pack. Via the Jungle Book story used as a demonic programming script, the child's alters are taught that they are orphans with no mother or father, and that they must play and have the animal spirit guides as their friends.

HOW THE PROGRAMMERS UNDERSTAND DEMONOLOGY

Demonology is the key to what the programmers accomplish. Some recent efforts to expose the Monarch Mind Control have portrayed the programmers as very cynical about their "magick". While there may be exceptions to the rule, within the Illuminati, demonology is not taken lightly, but is considered to be the real science of the Sciences of Mind Control. The goal of the Illuminati programmers is stated in their own writings in latin, "Quod superius est sicut quod inferius et quod inferius est sicut quod superius ad perpetranda miracula rei unius..." Meaning that their goal is to achieve the wonders of the "one thing" where "that which is above, is like that which is below and that which is below is like that which is above."

In other words, they take the dark spiritual realm of Satan, as the pattern for the world. This Latin phrase is also used to support astrology, which influences some of the programming decisions. The concept of astrology was created by reframing God's "event markers" as event controllers. While Americans think of 1776 as independence year, 1776 was originally chosen as the most favourable year to reorganize the mystery religions into the formal Illuminati because 1776 consists of 1100 and 666. 1100 is the Babylonian counting system's number for 666. Babylonian Satanism is a foundational part of Moriah's Illuminism.

Some of its bloodlines are descendents of the Pharisees who secretly practiced Babylonian Satanism at the time of Christ, incl.. child sacrifices. It's standard operating procedure in the occult world that what you see is not what you get, double-meanings are the norm. Those students of Monarch Mind Control who do not want to delve into what the Programmers are doing are limiting their own understanding. Most of what the Programmers do is actually spiritually based and connects to their understanding of demonology. Much of what the victims of the Monarch Programming experience will be understood in the context of the spiritual world. Obviously some is illusion. Obviously some is delusion. However, when the high level programmers teach novice programmers, they will be teaching the spiritual principles you the reader are about to be told. (A few therapists across the U.S.--and their names will not be revealed, have had miraculous recoveries of their Monarch slaves when they addressed these demonic and spiritual issues. These are therapists, who tried the old methods for years, and then in desperation were willing to listen to ex-programmers and other informed people about the spiritual side of the programming.)

Everything in life has a physical and a spiritual side to it. Things in the spiritual effect the physical, and things in the physical effect the spiritual. They are two worlds. The Alice In Wonderland story is highly regarded by the programmers, because it portrays the situation that exists between the spiritual world & the physical world. When people within the physical look toward the spiritual, it is like looking into a mirror. Initially, they will only see the physical world reflected back. But if they go beyond the mirror, they would see a "mirror image" of the physical exists in the spiritual realm. When Christians pray they say, "Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven." Earth is a mirror image of heaven, not an exact copy, but someday they will be alike, according to Scripture. According to messianic jews who understand the OT well, the ceremonial law is being enacted in heaven spiritually as it's mirror image once was done on earth. When the programming is seen only in a secular fashion, much of its design is missed. What have witches used to see beyond time and space? Mirrors. Remember the witch saying 'mirror, mirror on the wall, who is the fairest of them all"? The idea is magical mirrors, the speculums, which will lead one "through the looking glass mirror" that then allows the victim to magically transcend time & space.

One of the important keys to success with Monarch programming are generational spirits. The cover for this is studies in genetic science. The programmers believe that genetics are important, but the real abilities to program someone come from the generational spirits that are built up in bloodlines. This is why the Illuminati were in part skeptical that non-generational occult bloodlines could be successfully programmed. They have found that they can be (especially with all their high tech equipment), but the best candidates are those with strong generational spirits. The difference could be compared to those who raise race-horses for the Kentucky derby and those who have horses as a hobby. A race horse must have high spirits. The suburban housewife & daughter who ride as an occasional pastime could care less for that quality of horse. The military can produce cannon fodder with the simple mind-control of Basic Training. They don't need sophisticated time intensive mind-control techniques like the Monarch Program for some military positions. Third world children are being programmed to become baseball players etc. But the highest occult avocational positions will be given to people with exceptional generational demonic power.

Within a Multiple you will find duplicates of a particular name. For instance, you may find thirteen Susies. Susy1 may not even be aware of the other Susies. The internal worlds of the Monarch victim are structured along demonic patterns. Within the demonic world the spirit Moriah is not itself in every victim that has Moriah. Moriah # 10,882 may be in victim A, and Moriah # 3,355 in victim B. But the difference is academic because the Moriah in each victim is a member of the same demonic family--the Moriah Spirit Family. They are for all intents and purposes the same spirit. The Illuminati programmers are acutely aware of the generational spirits, who they are, and how they function. The ten commandments warn that a person's iniquity will affect the next 3-4 generations. EX 20:5b. A generational spirit is given "appointment" over a victim at birth. The victim will receive generational spirits from their biological father and mother. Satan can not be the creator of heaven and earth, but he can satisfy his desire to do so, by creating an internal world within the victim, a heaven, earth and hell of his own creation. The armies of spirits which are placed into the infant will cooperate with the programmer and the child to produce the programming. It's like the Father ("Papa" the programmer), son (child) and unholy spirit (demons) work together. The internal creation of worlds within the victim will be the heart beat of Satan.

A Regional territorial commander demon will make weekly rounds in an area, and so the structuring work done with generational victims, combines ideas from the generational spirits as well as the regional commander. The curses and the vows give the Commander the legal right to exercise control over the victim. Within any geographic area, there has been a layering in of demons, much in the same fashion that the programming and demons are layered into a Monarch victim. The most important territorial spirits in an area are the root or original spirits. In the United States these are Indian Spirits. Territorial spirits may contribute ideas as to what will be effective for programming in their area. There are geographic patterns to spiritual warfare. Each area has its deities and spirits which rule the valleys, homes, and nations. These particular spirits exercise power over the local people. The evangelist is not going to progress, unless he understands the spirits that are ruling what he is trying to liberate people from. The basic territorial spirits are the original ones.

In the U.S. these are the Indian spirits. That is why the Illuminati pays such a strong interest in the Indians. The original principalities are the foundation, the bedrock upon which everything else is layered upon. This also is done in Monarch programming. A number of Monarch slaves have Indian shamans and spirits placed in their systems. Upon the original foundation, the newer ideologies are layered in. In Russia, communism was simply layered on top of the original territorial spirits. In China, communism was simply layered on top of the original territorial spirits. This is one factor why Chinese & Russian communism were never alike. Traumas and crises will produce strongholds.

Our understanding of our blind spots is often weak because we use others as our measuring stick rather than the divine word of God. Blindspots & strongholds may take outside intervention in our lives to eliminate. How many of us see that Moroni on top of Mormon temples is a ruling demon? How many of us have realized that the rising sun on Japan's flag is the Sun goddess who is a ruling spirit over Japan? If we go to Hawaii we will see some of the "natives" are interested in Pele, the God of Fire. The volcanoes have been used by the demons to entrap the people to Pele, the God of Fire. One of the things that the author's book Ezekiel 6:3 An Inhouse Directory shows is that many of the ritual sites have occult names. Devil's Canyon may well be a canyon for devils. The names people give geographic areas are important. They show the types of pacts that people have been making.

When the psychiatrist Karl Menninger of the Menninger Foundation dealt with spiritual issues with people in mental hospitals (i.e. he had them ask for forgiveness of sins), he was able to clear out whole sections, and send the patients home well. (His bro. Roy W. Menninger, an Episc., & also a psychiatrist, worked in Boston State Hosp. while in the military in '52-53.) There is a direct tie between much of the insanity today and demons. Spiritual principles should be studied by Christians to understand how demons operate and what gives them entry rights and power. Certain objects and people are focal points for spirits.

Who are the experts? Basically, two types of people involve themselves in studying demonology--those who are involved with performing works of darkness such as magic, or those involved with performing works of godliness such as deliverance ministries. Jesus told his disciples to command the demons to leave. He didn't ask his disciples to let him cast out demons, nor did he ask his disciples to ask the demons to leave. No, the responsibility was placed upon his disciples & they were asked to command the demons to leave. The Illuminati maintain hidden libraries full of ancient treatises on demonology, which they avidly study. Some of the more important demonology books are the Sixth and Seventh Book of Moses, The Black Raven, The Spring Book, The Spiritual Shield. A whole series of magical books bearing the name of Solomon exist, of which the Key of Solomon is widely known. Clavicula Salomonis or the Clavicle of Solomon is also well known.

More and more of the ancient writings seem to be coming to light in these end times, and the hierarchy is getting bolder and bolder in the release of this information. A Cabalistic Jew will study the Talmud until he is 40 or so, and the study of the Cabala is reserved for the only those who have studied a long time. The Zohar and the esoteric teachings are not taught until late in life.

Opposite the Illuminati, are those dedicated Christians who study demonology, not to invoke demons but to free people from them. Each state in the United States contains a few Christians who understand demonology and deliverance from it. The blood of Jesus Christ (Yeshua ha Messiach) is very powerful against demons. High level deliverance can not be done without angelic and the Holy Spirit's help. The Christian who gets into studying and fighting high level demonology needs to learn the significance of getting God's help. Without God's help, the deliverance will back-fire in the face of the deliverer. Members of the Illuminati are bound in servitude to Satan. One of the strong shackles that bind Satanists to Satan is the high level of demonology they are enslaved to.

How are the demons organized? It is very clear that there are different types of demons, and that they are divided up into different ranks, functions, orders, etc. A great deal of time has been spent by both brilliant Christians and satanic Magicians to chart out the names, ranks, and structure of the demonic armies that Satan commands. One accurate method of ranking demons has 365 ranks of demons, with no. 1 being the highest level of demons. The numbers of top level demons are numbered in the trillions, while the lower level imps are incredibly numerous. There is no shortage of demons to carry out the work of Satan on this planet. These demons are sometimes variously referred to as spirit guides, angels, wizards, ghosts and aliens or a number of other disguises.

Both early Christians and the occult have often divided up the evil spirits under fire, water, wind, and earth. The power of Enochian magic comes from the Watchtowers of these four elements. Some common types of Evil Spirits are: Spirit of the Anti-Christ (1 John 4:3) Spirit of Bondage (Romans 8:15) Spirit of Divination (Ezekiel 21:21) Spirit of Death Dumb & Deaf Spirit (Mark 9:25) Spirit of Error (1 JN 4:6) Familiar Spirit (LV 20:27) Spirit of Fear (2 TM 1:7) Spirit of Haughtiness (PRY 16:18, 19) Spirit of Heaviness (ISA 61:3) Spirit of Infirmity (LK 13:11 Spirit of Jealousy (NM 5:14) Lying Spirit (2 CHR. 18:22) Perverse Spirit (ISA 19:14) Seducing Spirits (1 TM 4:1) Spirit of Whoredoms (Hosea 4:12, and 5:4)

Each of these types of Evil Spirits has a number of specialists. For instance the Spirits of Whoredoms contains spirits which can specialize in the following: A Spirit of Unfaithfulness A Spirit of Prostitution (whether Spirit, Soul or Body) A Spirit of the Love of Money A Spirit of Idolatry A Spirit of Chronic Dissatisfaction A Spirit of Fornication A Spirit of Glutton

The Spirits of Bondage include: A Spirit of Fear A Spirit of any number of addictions (drugs, alcohol, etc.) A Spirit of the Fear of Death A Spirit of being a Servant of Corruption A Spirit of Compulsive Iniquity

These lower echelon demons are too numerous to keep track of. When a portal is opened which gives a particular demon legal access into a body, they move very quickly into the physical body. When a man lusts after a woman, he will open a portal, such as the mouth through which a demon (spirit of lust), shaped for instance like a frog, will jump in through. This demon will then insure that the evil thought will be acted upon. The principalities and powers exercise dominion over spirits. Further, high level Satanists are well aware of all these things. When godly people of faith identify, bind and cast out specific demons, they should practice loosening the appropriate good spirit to take its place.

If we bind a spirit of Bondage, we loose a spirit of adoption. If we bind a Spirit of Error, then we loose a Spirit of Truth. There are 3 powerful satanic covens of 21 persons. They are distributed in Monterray, CA, Phoenix, AZ and the third in Idaho. L.A. also has a fourth headquarters for the Coven of the 21st Star. These 21-person-covens are made up of very intelligent, powerful persons. These type of covens attract powerful commander demons. Within the co-author's area, Bend, Portland and Eugene areas in Oregon have powerful covens.

The power of these types of powerful covens will be reflected in the spiritual world. Paul under the Spirit's inspiration wrote, 'while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal.' 2 Cor 4:18 The invisible things are more important than the visible. If we recognize this, the Word of God says that this will help us keep from losing heart! 'Therefore we do not lose heart. Even though our outward man is perishing, yet the inward man is being renewed day by day.' 2 Cor 4:16 Spirits are in a sense a mirror image world. They are placed in the victim first. The programming and the images that are built will be built with their cooperation and guardianship.

Spirits are appointed to protect each program and each memory. A spirit commander called a chief executive is set in command of the victim's life. Military command structures around the world are structured on how the demonic command structure exists. Some soldiers have the same function, but are not actually the exact same person. So it is with demons. Victims have their own individual demons, but they are models of what that type of demon is supposed to act like.

The child is exposed to films, books and stories. The spirits interact within the person's mind to lock these pictures in place. The demons in a sense serve as mirrors within the child's mind, reflecting the images the child needs to fix in the mind. As the programmer, child and demons structure the internal world, the demonic spirits will guard these structures. The force or energy behind the structures is the demons. In order to guard things further, demonic castles and temples will exist within a system to guard it. Entire spiritual quadrants will exist, that are entirely spiritual and contain absolutely no alters. These spiritual worlds can not be seen physically. Only spiritual power and discernment can reveal them. In fact, while the normal person uses 5 senses, the Illuminati teach their alters and people in demonology to use 7 spiritual senses. The child will be shown films and stories, but will then be programmed to forget them. However, the demonic spirits will guard these concepts. The core is involved in giving energy toward these spiritual programming goals.

The wilful contribution of energy to these demonic goals must be guarded so the core is hidden. While other children are playing with children, the victim of Monarch Mind Control slavery is being taught to dance and play with internal playmates which are demons. This is to familiarize the child to the spirit world. The child's family becomes its internal world. There are some teachers in public schools and pre-schools that are openly helping children do this. All the time that the programming is going on, the spiritual world stays hidden in the darkness.

Gnomes, sometimes called dwarfs, are one of the four divisions of nature spirits. They know where the gold is within the earth. This is why Joseph Smith, Jr. who was from an important generational occult bloodline which has generational programmed MPDs, did magic to elemental spirits when he was looking for jewels and gold as a young man. In reflection of this, the Gnomes (also known as dwarfs, elves, or minihunes) of the internal world mine the gold and jewels--the programs of the System.

Illuminati programmer Manly P. Hall wrote in his classic book The Secret Teachings of all Ages on page CVI, '...there are many types of gnomes evolving through the subjective ethereal body of Nature. These earth spirits work in an element so close in vibratory rate to the material earth that they have immense power over its rocks and flora, and also over the mineral elements in the animal and human kingdoms. Some,...work with the stones, gems and metals, and are supposed to be the guardians of hidden treasures."

The Disney family and the Disney corporations are part of the occult world. While the names Dopey, Happy, Bashful, Sleepy, Grumpy, Sneezy, and Doc sound like names picked to please children, they are actually the translation from Scandinavian of the demonic dwarfs Toki, Skavaerr, Varr, Dun, Orinn, Grerr, and Radsvid. Note that Disney placed a character with a green mask in a dark mirror, and had in his shows what was called the 'Spirit of the Magic Mirror' which was also called The Slave of the Magic Mirror. The Monarch slaves "most precious programs" are concealed in the ground and are guarded by the gnomes built internally by the programming. These gems have power that is channelled from Satan.

Most of the readers thought Snow White and the 7 Dwarfs was simply a harmless piece of fiction. They most likely didn't realize that it is demonology. An example of the importance of these types of spirits is Findhorn's use of them. Findhorn Institute in Scotland, which has branches by other names in other countries, is like the Vatican of the New Age. It secretly sends out orders to many witches and New Agers. To spell it out clearer, Findhorn, the Vatican of the New Age movement, is one of the channels of communication from the secret Illuminati councils to their people worldwide. The success of Findhorn's community, according to Findhorn is their use of elemental gnome spirits in their gardening and planting.

What is someone who believes in good spirits to do with this information? To recognize that the patterns for the programming are inspired by demons, are held in place by demonic energy and are guarded by demons. The programming can be collapsed upon itself if this demonic "glue' is taken away. But only a few individuals understand the spiritual forces behind the programming. This understanding takes spiritual eyes. If the spiritual is not dealt with, the person can be reprogrammed at will by the demonic entities that still control the victim. This is the "missing piece that has frustrated advanced secular therapists.

Within Illuminati slaves, they will have the All-seeing Eye placed in their system guarded by legions of demons. Within the very eye of the all-seeing eye, the Programmers will place some actual alters. There will also be demons placed within the construct too. The De-programmer must be careful to separate the demonic from the human element and get the alters who are held captive in the eye out. The Programmers do a great deal of mixing demons with alters, and they place alters all over the system in captive or hostage situations so that the System of Alters is literally blackmailed into cooperating if they don't want to hurt parts of themselves. The Programmers do both internal and external blackmail. Within the Monarch programming, the demons are layered in between the worlds. In the older Illuminati programming, mirrors were placed into the System and the demons were layered behind the mirrors. The mirrors would separate levels within the mind. The demons would protect the mirrors. If a Monarch alter would shatter a mirror, the demons behind it are released and all hell breaks loose in their mind. Therapists who have tried everything for years to deal with the mirrors, have found that a few minutes of correct spiritual warfare accomplished more than years of trying psychological techniques.

In the 1980 models of Monarch slaves, the Programmers began placing a planet of alters, interspersed with a planet of demons, as they would build a solar system. This had the same layering effect as the mirrors. The demons then would be assigned to protect the different levels, in this case represented by different orbiting planets.

Principle demons that are popular to place into Monarch systems are: Æsculapius--the satanic miracle healer, related to Apollos, in the pagan world he was depicted with his head encircled with rays. In order to show pagans that it was O.K. to worship Jesus, the Catholic church put the golden rays of Æsculapius around pictures of Jesus. He is also at times represented as the sacred snake.

Absolom--, Amon--(various spellings) A marquis of Hell, who has the gift of prophecy.

Apollyon - This demon is over the bottomless pit and is described by REV 9:11. Demon of fear and destruction, who may be a deep part of a System.

Apollo--The AntiChrist's father

Astar (Star, Ashtareth, Ashtaroth, Astarte, Ishtar) -Bible students will find this demon referred in many Bible passages including JDG 2:13 ACTS 20.

Balilo-- witch demon, Beelzebub-- Ruling demon

Beliah--the chief demon, with the name meaning "worthless one".

Beliel-- sexual demon,

Bes-- Spirit ruling the dwarfs.

Blackwell--legion demon, upper rank, to divide the mind.

Blood(aka Yahweh Elohim)--dark spirit using God's name & part of Black Mass, conn. w/ early 3-year-old trauma to "locked-up child'.

Choronzon--to help with constructing the mind control

Dameon--Dagon--the fish god over water. The fish sign was adopted by elements of the Catholic church to secretly keep Dagon worship alive. The Pope wears the garb that the Pontiface Maximus wore as leader of the cult of Dagon. One system had a water monster named CTHULHU.

Electra--Enigma--,

Geb--voice behind the earth spirit,

Gerberus--Guardian angels--the Illuminati may assign guardian angels called Hafaza.

Javen--double-minded demon Kali--bloody female goddess

Kemosh Leviathan (Seen as a sea-monster, or Tyrannosaurus Rex, or Dragon-like)-This demon runs up and down the spine. Leviathan is related to the Babylonian reptilian God Tiamet (which looks like the Reptilian aliens portrayed today.) Is tied to the double-helix. It can actually be three spirits. Bible students can read about Leviathan in Job 3:8, Job 41:8, 15,22, PS 74:14, ISA 27:1 Lilith--a bloody demon, known as the "terror of the night". The occult story is that she was Adam's wife before Eve, and that her offspring with Adam were demonic-human monsters. It might be worthy to mention that in Druidism, the life-force or energy force is considered to be the Dragon. There are several names for this Dragon including Wyvern, nwyvre, or the winged lion.

Mammon--the demon of avarice

Meganosis--Metatron--Sometimes said to be Enoch.

Moriah-Moloch (also spelled Molech)--The various satanic-luciferian groups that program offer child sacrifices to Moloch, an internal Temple of Moloch may guard the innocent blood of children sacrificed during ceremonies. Historically, the people in Israel sacrificed children to Moloch at Tophet in the Valley of Hinnom near Jerusalem. Drums (tophim) were beat so the cries of the children couldn't be heard.

Mormo- Important demon placed in Mormon Monarch slaves.

Nanna-Nemo--Mormon programming Octopus--blood sucking demon

Orion--placed over Mormon victims, the name Orion is popping out all over the place, Pan-protector of woods

Ronwe-Squat--a number of Illuminati Monarchs report that this demon gives them the ability to understand foreign languages, Shu--does internal weather magic

Others incl. - Typhon (program tunneling connections in the mind), Verono, Vultar Val (legion), Pan whose depression sends one Rege (drugs), who sends one to Bacchus(addiction) which then starts a bondage loop.

The Jokers The everyday demons who the alters have to contend with if they step out of line, are the Jokers. Jokers can jump out of the mirrors and drag an alter into the looking glass world. Alters going into the system away from their assigned living quarters end up in mazes of mirrors. The mazes of mirrors can't be broken because demons are placed behind the mirrors. However, deliverance methods work well to destroy the power of these demonic protected mirrors. Many, if not most of the occult world do not view spirits as evil. Illuminati children are taught that these spirits are playmates. Since the child is not allowed real friends, they are happy to have demons to play with inside their mind. One major religion whose adherents publicly seek spirit (demonic) possession--although they again view spirits as being capable of both good and evil, neutral in connotation much like the Greek gods, is Voodoo.

Voodoo (Vaudou) In discussing how trauma-based mind-control is done, voodoo must be included as a component. Many of the Mind-controlled slaves have had voodoo as part of their trauma, and many had voodoo dolls placed into their Systems. When vows and oaths are made, an object is given to the satanic cult or the Illuminati for the Keeper of the Seals to guard. If the vow is broken voodoo magic can be used against the offender by using the object given in the sealing.

Voodooism came from Africa, where it is called Ju-Ju. A recent book Blood Secrets is the true story of demon worship and human sacrifice by a former JuJu high priest Isaiah Oke, who gave up JuJu magic for the Christian faith. The Basuto in Africa call witches "baloi", the Akans say "obayifo" and the Lovedu say "vuloi". There are different names and variances of magical practices, but what most people don't realize is that these are just different styles of JuJu-ism. The JuJu priests (called a babalawo) will rule the religious/magic lives of an African village. JuJu is satanic, and much of it is kept secret by its high priests. The Priests take blood oaths of secrecy. The West African name for Satan is Esu. A group in Phoenix, AZ claims to be in contact with an alien named Jesus Esu Sananda.

Another word that has come from Voodoo is the word zombie. Many members of the Illuminati go to the Caribbean and South America to attend Illuminati rituals. Umbanda (Brazilian satanism), which is sometime mistakingly called Macumba, openly has satanic rituals on Copacabana Beach. Many of the elite have made their pilgrimage to Copacabana Beach, incl. European royalty and the Pope. There are 7 bloodlines in Umbanda, and a newcomer must join one of these. If Amer. Illum, slaves have memories of Argentina and other Latin American countries, the memories could easily be true. The Illuminati within the Jehovah's Witnesses' Bethel HQ (which are programmed multiples) have used quiet islands in the Bahamas for rituals. In 1958, it is believed (according to 2 partly de-programmed multiples) that it was Andros Is., Bahamas which they used for their rituals.

In Haiti, Voodoo, called Vaudou, is the religion of the majority of the people, about 90% of the people. This is interesting because it gives us an example of what the situation is like when an entire nation regularly seeks to be demon possessed. Possession behaviour in the various black occult groups, such as Umbanda (brazilian satanism), Haitian Vaudou, and the St. Vincent Shakers (also called Zeckeeboom people) is a learned behavior. Candidates for mediumship in Sao Paulo Umbanda are given special training in trance & possession. They use dissociation techniques such as focusing on a lighted candle, or turning the person and snapping the fingers to put people in trance. In the U.S., because demon possession seems rare to psychiatrists, they have labeled demon possessed people as "crazy". However, in Haiti, an entire nation regularly conducts rituals to become demon possessed. Since the norm is to be demon possessed, it fails to be abnormal behavior. Many of the other labels and explanations that psychiatrists find easy to give concerning demon possession in the U.S. obviously just don't explain what is happening in Haiti.

Some of the explanations given by psychiatrists for demon possession in Voodoo is

a. repressed personality is coming to the surface, b. that the voodoo trance is an act to impress a crowd, c. it stems from hysterical nervous disorders, and d. it stems from psychopathy, neurosis, or schizophrenia

a. In Haiti, demon possession of people can not be a repressed personality because the person being possessed of a demon must behave according to rigorous rules of how each demon is supposed to act. Far from expressing himself, the victim of demon possession tries to personify some mythical spirit whose character on the whole is foreign to himself.

b. In Haiti, most people who go into the demon possessed state are not observed closely because it is the norm for people to become demon possessed. People at the ceremonies may cast absentminded looks at the people being possessed, but the entire scenario gains the possessed person very little attention. Nor does an entire crowd in Haitian Voodoo get possessed, or go into a collective delirium. The excitement is quite varied with the crowds.

c. If explanation c. were true, it would mean an entire nation is hysterical and mentally deranged. 40 years ago it was shown that the Haitian people are not all hysterical, but that demon possession in Haiti was the normal means of communicating with supernatural powers. If demon possession trances were genetic in origin, then why do some groups of blacks from the same gene pool but living in other nations have absolutely little to do with the occult?

d. Investigators in Haiti have had to discount demon possession as a neurosis. According to one investigator the number of schizophrenics and psychotics is very small within cults like Voodoo. "Here the very marked lack of response to the cathartic therapies employed in possession cults in the case of seriously disturbed individuals...is itself a testimony to the robust mental health of the majority of participants....The latter have no difficulty at all in communicating their problems. They operate within a culturally standardized medium of communication. Nor in contrast to the true self-insulated psychotic, do they miss their "cues." They respond in the expected way, and others react equally predictably."

A Brazilian psychiatrist said that no "frankly schizophrenic person would be able to pass the probationary scrutiny" involved to join this religious group. (These last two quotes come from a study of Black Religious groups.) Interestingly, studies made of W.W. II war criminals show no personality differences between them and the normal population. Could it be possible that there really is a demonic element in the lives of people that helps move them in the direction of evil?

So what is demon possession in Haiti's Voodooism? According to the Haitians a spirit which they call "loa" joins a person like a rider mounts a horse. The spirit then controls the person like a rider. The possessed person is called a "chual" which means horse, and the spirit is said to mount or saddle his victim. Blood sacrifices are often associated with the demon, and the possessed person will drink the blood from the sacrificed animal. Polished stones, and herbs, and trance and dissociative states are used to attract spirits. While the Monarch slaves have trauma-based dissociative states, the practitioners of Voodoo have ritually induced dissociative states. Voodoo rituals will involve chanting, drums, at times handclapping and frenzied dancing to induce the dissociative states. In fact, several features have been identified which bring about dissociative states in the black religions of the Caribbean and South America.

First they have dancing to a pronounced and rapid beat. Next, the induction into the dissociative state frequently follows a period of starvation and/or overbreathing (hyperventilation). The beginning of the demonic possession is characterized by a brief period of muscle inhibitions, or a collapse. The person who is experienced at being possessed acquires a specific behavior pattern for the deity that is supposedly controlling it. And finally, the head and limbs may tremor under trance, and the person may become dissociative enough that they can pick up red hot irons. The possessed can be conscious, semiconscious, or unconscious. Studies made of this situation where an entire nation like Haiti actively seeks demonic possession allows us to discount some explanations and get a better picture of what demon possession isn't. It also helps to understand what is involved in demonic possession.

The first major authoritative work on Haitian Voodoo written in 1884 by Spencer St. John reported on the terror, the blood rites, and the cannibalism of Haitian Voodoo. This has been too much for some people to believe. Still, if people stop to realize how Voodoo came about it, it makes sense. Conservative estimates of the number of slaves brought into the port of Saint Dominque while it was a plantation colony are 900,000. The conditions on the island for the slaves was like a Nazi work camp. The cruelty on the colonial Haitian plantations was beyond comprehension. The Africans brought in as slaves already practiced JuJu. Under the crucible of the severe torture of slavery, the slaves formed Haitian voodoo, which is a conglomeration of African Voodoo, Masonic rites, and European magic and Catholic saints and symbols. For 2 centuries, their African vaudou was these slaves only power against their cruel plantation owners, and is partly credited for helping Haiti become the first free black republic in the revolution of 1804.

In Haiti, Cuba, Brazil, Trinidad and other areas of the New World, where JuJuism has transformed itself into black occult religions, the old gods of Africa: Damballa, Erzilie, Legba, Obatala, Ogun, Oshun and others have been equated with Catholic saints and given the names of these saints. The ritually induced dissociative states of Voodoo are generally accompanied by amnesia, that is lost time. During this lost time, the person acts as if he is a spirit (god). This is a ritual based dissociative state rather than a trauma-based dissociative state.

The Illuminati Monarch programming at times attempts to combine the two bases--ritual and trauma--to create a dissociative state. This is why is it difficult to separate out the religious factor.

India

Up to now there have been numerous cases of demonic possession in India, but there has been no case of a true multiple personality. The reason why is that the multiple's in the U.S.-Europe are being cranked out by trauma-based mind-control and the Illuminati hasn't been programming in India like the U.S. & Europe. As the slaves that are being created disperse, within time, we will eventually start seeing multiples in India.

In the American Journal of Psychotherapy, Jan. 1981, p. 115, it states, "However, so far, no case of double or multiple personality so labelled by a psychiatrist, has been reported from India in the professional literature. Considering that hysterical disturbances in general are quite widespread in the country, this is surprising. On the one hand, it could mean an actual low prevalence of multiple personality in the country." For those of us who understand what is happening, it is obvious why multiples aren't found in India. The fact that multiples aren't found in India ought to wake up people that multiple personalities is not "demon possession nor is it simply the result of bad parenting or everyday type of horrendous trauma. Almost everyone has a trauma in their early life, and is somewhat dissociative, but that doesn't make them have multiple personalities, which are programmed and have separate histories and altar names. India has over twice the population of the U.S. and yet no multiples reported. After reading this book, the reader understands why not.

It might be appropriate to point out here that the early American cases of MPD (now called DID) are from bloodlines associated with the Illuminati. The first widely reported American case of MPD was Mary Reynolds in 1811. The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines covers the Reynold's bloodline as being a major Illuminati bloodline. Two other earlier Amer. MPD cases are one involving a man from Edinburgh University, Scotland and one found discussed in a letter in 1791 written by a Reverend Joseph Lathrop of Mass. to the President of Yale Ezra Stiles. (See Letters and Papers of Ezra Stiles, President of Yale College, 1778-1795. New Haven: Yale Univ. Press, 1933.) Those, who have tracked the conspiracy, or read Fritz's writings, know that Yale founded by the Unitarians has long been important for the Illuminati. The Unitarians have been connected with hermeticism and money from the start.

How The Anti-Christ Spirit Contributes To Controlling The Slave

Within the Illuminati hierarchy slaves, the Spirit of the Anti-Christ operates. The Mothers-of-Darkness are only allowed to become Mothers-of-Darkness after they marry the AntiChrist. The entire worldwide collection of Mothers-of-Darkness alters will serve the physical AntiChrist as a private harem when he takes over. They will also serve as an inner elite guard of the physical AntiChrist. They describe the consummation of the marriage with the AntiChrist as being badly burned. Because the AntiChrist, who is alive and well today, will be/is already the master handler and the master programmer a description of him is given in Appendix A.

How does the Spirit of the AntiChrist influence a Mind-controlled slave? Some of the things that this Spirit does to control individuals is to cause them to judge themselves. Another thing done to control the slave's alters to change their focus so they can't grow spiritually, bribe the person with enticing doctrines of demons, and mislead people from true freedom into religious bondage. We will clarify what we mean as we explain these things in the next few paragraphs.

Satan himself spawned the Anti-Christ spirit, as well as leading the demonic angels into their evil. The Spirit of the Anti-Christ has as its purpose the destruction of everything that God has built within the person--their looks, their curiosity of beauty, and their personhood itself. The Spirit of the AntiChrist is attached to the religious spirit when people get Christianity without the Spirit of Life. Many Monarch slaves with the Anti-Christ spirit are working under the cover of being good Christians. The Bible even talks about them, "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." 2 COR 11:13-15.

The greek word translated "transforming" is also the source of our word masquerade. It means to have a front, with a hidden character behind the front. The words of the apostles warn Christians about "double-minded men" (JS 1:8) and that Satan's key people will masquerade with false fronts. In contrast, the Scriptures admonish followers of Christ to have their public lives match their private lives. Satan lavishes the Spirit of the AntiChrist upon his hierarchy. He doesn't lavish his spirit within what he views as the "rabble" of humanity, who do not directly serve him. When the Spirit comes into a person, it comes in as a cold clammy spirit that consumes all hope and all joy in life. Rather than being a fresh breeze bringing joy, this Spirit of the AntiChrist is like a vacuum sucking life. It is like being raped. Victims of this spirit, say they felt like they were raped and defiled by it. The person's own natural feelings of cleanliness will feel violated. This Spirit can touch our lives in different ways and at different levels. When our personal standards are violated, the persons will often not forgive themselves. Instead, they judge themselves.

This further illustrates how the AntiChrist sets up abusive patterns. By judging ourself, rather than forgiving, we set ourselves up as God, for only God can judge a person, for He is the only one who has a true standard and measuring stick to judge by. Captured by the cycle of abuse of the Spirit of the AntiChrist, a person will continue to beat up upon themselves. At some point we forgive ourselves, and in so doing we are saying that the memory no longer has mastery over us. As Christ is the incarnation of God in the flesh, the AntiChrist will be the incarnation of Satan in the flesh. (cf. REV 13:4) Satan wanted God's power and glory, but not the character of God. The Spirit of the AntiChrist has a wisdom that it promotes which is "earthly, natural, demonic." (JAS 3:14-15) The Spirit of the AntiChrist will entice people with the Doctrine of Demons. (See 1 TIM 4:1)

For instance, "For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that are just escaping from them who live in error. While they promise liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption..." 2 Ptr. 2:17-19 The AntiChrist Spirit breaks our ability to love God & others. Satan's original pride came from selfishness. The Spirit of the AntiChrist brings selfishness, but it brings it in a hidden way. The AntiChrist Spirit will cause pain. Heaven, where the Spirit of the AntiChrist is absent--has no suffering. The hidden damage of pain is that it inflicts self-focus.

Christ as He hung on the cross was able to continue to focus on others. While most men would have been thinking about themselves in self-pity Jesus was still thinking of others. He said to his mother, "Woman, behold your son." And to John, "Behold your mother." To paraphrase, Take care of my mother. Later he said, "Forgive them for they know not what they do." (See the Gospel of John) Jesus even brought someone to the Lord while he hung on the cross. He was evangelizing. Don't so many Christians look for the ideal situation to lead people to the Lord, yet Christ did it under the worst of conditions. Self-focus, selfishness and pride are closely related. It is hard to point out where one begins and the other ends. The Spirit of the AntiChrist wants to draw others to its position of pride. So it inflicts pain and suffering, like it did to Job to draw the attention of the person off of Yahweh God and one's fellowman and onto oneself. All the commandments hang on us loving Yahweh God will all our heart, soul, and mind, and loving our neighbor as ourselves, but the AntiChrist Spirit gets our focus off of Yahweh and others and onto ourselves. Bitterness may develop in us. Bitterness grieves the Holy Spirit. Bitterness will seat itself in our mind, and like a transponder will emit bitterness. A lack of peace and joy results. The Spirit of the AntiChrist has sidetracked the whole maturing process.

As a child grows into an adult it learns to shift its focus from itself to others. Can we go in and focus on our own problems and solve them? If part of the problem is self-focus, then the answer is "no." The answer lies in focusing on the Holy Spirit. Living and walking in the Spirit of Christ is the health we seek. (GAL 5:16; JN 15:1-11) Does it work? Yes. The authors know of many cases, where all kinds of individuals solved all kinds of problems by receiving the Holy Spirit into their lives. They see the supernatural cleansing that happens, but many times they don't understand the principle behind what they just experienced. When some of their problems persist, do they turn again to focus on the Holy Spirit? Often they focus on themselves, self-pity, bitterness, etc. Counselling today often takes this approach. It is fine to identify the problem, but then following that- the solution is not to focus on the problem but to get out of the path of death. The process of healing. Healing may be a process, not an event. We break an arm in a second, it takes many months to heal. We break our capacity to love God and our fellowman, but we expect an instant cure. Anyone who has met the Spirit of the AntiChrist needs to learn how to love again. Love is an action word. One learns to hammer nails by hammering nails. One learns to type by typing. One learns to love by loving. The survivor who has been controlled by the Spirit of the AntiChrist may need to get a teacher of love, a "Loving teacher" so-to-speak.

Part J The Use of Angel Alters

Many Illuminati models had "angels" or "spirit guides" created that could provide divine messages to the Monarch slave. The Illuminati/Intelligence agencies have been highly successful with controlling people via their religious beliefs by implanting alters who are seen by a Monarch slave as being a messenger from God or the god(s). For someone like, Loretta Lynn, they use spirits of Indians. Another example of this, is someone having 3 Black Angels. The concept is the same though. This works in closely with having demonic guides.

Part K Scriptures In Programming

An ex-Programmer states that the Illuminati Mind-Control intentionally used verses from every book of the Bible. The Programmers also intentionally used everything Jesus said in one distorted way or another in the programming. A person can pick up a Bible with Jesus' words in red, and get a quick idea of one area of the Bible which was heavily misused. The programmers love to reframe (twist) parables.

Billy Graham, who is a Monarch handler, is very adept at weaving in programming language in with biblical messages. For instance, as this book was being finished, in his 1995 televised Christmas message, given in front of a fireplace with 13 candles lit behind him, he said, "Come home so I can give you a new heart." A little later he activated the Plowshares programming, and a little later he said, "from the cradle to the cross to the ground", which is a phrase any deeper cult alter would have an entirely different meaning for than the person on the street.

Readers, who read chapter 5, will remember what was written about Billy Graham. When Billy Graham was in Portland, his ministry somehow got the addresses and phone numbers to all the Monarch survivors in the area, who he invited to a personal meeting with him. While he had his mind-control survivors gathered, he talked to them and set off their programming with their personal codes. This was observed by several witnesses. His ministry also sends codes via their messages flashed across the bottom of the T.V. screen.

The reader needs to bear in mind that bloody Satanic holidays occur around Christian holy days. The Winter Solstice occurs around Christmas. Every Christmas, the Illuminati covens around the world build mangers with children which they sacrifice. This is worked in to enhance the programming they are doing with their children. Around Easter time, the Illuminati do Death, burial and resurrection ceremonies (traumas). Nothing sacred to Christianity gets overlooked. The method that it is mocked depends on who is in control of that region's ceremonies.

The idea of using Scriptures for programming accomplishes several things: a. therapists are usually secular and unfamiliar with the Bible. This prevents exposure of the programming cues and triggers and fronts. b. ministers are usually unable to believe in psychology and mind-control programming and so their Bible knowledge is not of any therapeutic benefit because they are ignorant of Satan's devices.

Some Christian ministers are putting out advice that Multiples need to be helped by simply telling "the person" to quit using multiplicity as a way to cop out of responsibility.

First, there is no "person" who is using multiplicity as a cop out--the personality of the person has been shattered--and no one person represents the entire mind.

Second, the person is not in control of their mind to stop what is happening. They are under total mind control.

c. the last place people would look for understanding Satanic programming is in the Bible.

d. when programmed multiples go to church, they can be used, and programmed by using Christian terms. There are "Christian" churches in Washington, Arkansas, Tennessee, and California and many other places which are 100% cult mind-control operations, such as the "Lord's Chapel."

e. When a programmed multiple tries to set themselves free by taking in spiritual knowledge of God, they find that the Bible is a programming trigger, that sets off programming or brings up some alter. Reading the book of 1 John might bring up the Illuminati's alter named Jesus.

f. The cult which is doing the programming by making a mockery of God, can build their egos and their pride. It may allow them to feel they are more powerful than God Almighty.

g. The victim can be told that "God" is telling them to do something. And who sets himself up as "god"? --the cult programmer.

There isn't anything in the Bible that can't conceivably be misused, but some of the Scriptures and their programming misuse are listed below. Scriptures that lend themselves to double-binds, to obedience or cover stories that seem to justify the programmer and the programming are used. Names of Queens and Kings in the Bible can be used for alter names. The men who wrote under inspiration, knew that scriptures could be misused, in 2 Cor 4: 1-2 Paul writes about himself, "Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully..."

Clearly, mishandling the word of God deceitfully is an ancient art.

Genesis Genesis Creation Story--cover story for the creation of parts of a slave's System

Tree of Life--used to create an internal Cabalistic Tree of Life for alter magic

Adam & Eve--code words

Garden of Eden--part of the System, usually the early pure part that needs to be guarded by "angels"(demons)

Angels--alters or demons placed into a System. Angles could be a method by which the abuser sends messages to the person, thus giving divine credibility to the programmer's message. Angel names can represent alters and demons placed into a person.

Sodom & Gomorrah--a type of suicide program

Genesis 22:17-18, "That in blessing I will bless thee, [the programmer as god is going to bless the victim with torture] and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed [all the areas of the system]; because thou hast obeyed my voice." [the programmer's voice]

Melchizedek--a type of occult order or rank

Genesis 38--pledge of a signet, bracelet & staff--trigger cues to open up a System to obey.

Joseph & Esau's birthright--Satanic birthrights emphasized as if sanctioned by God's word.

Exodus The 12 (actually 13 with Manassah and Ephraim) Tribes of Israel can be used for the code names of alters and sections of alters.

House of Israel--code name for section/structure of a system

Plagues of Egypt--Program to terrorize a slave.

Oaths and Covenants--their existence in the Bible is used to emphasize the validity to Satanic oaths and covenants. The curses that God says will happen if disobedience takes place are used by the Handlers to instill fear into the victim, that if he doesn't comply, God's curses will fall on them.

The Catholic/Jesuit programming relies heavily upon the Bible. The Bible verse ECL. 5:4 "When you make a vow to God, do not delay to pay it...It is better not to vow than to vow and not pay," is used by these Satanic programmers to hold their victims under vows made under duress, hypnosis, or deception. (DT 23:2 1 also emphasizes keeping your vows.) These Satanic Mind-controlled slave handlers do not tell their slaves that Numbers 30 states that many vows, such as the vows of children are null and void. The first fruits of things belong to the real God of the Bible and can't be vowed away. The Satanic groups like to take the first male child in mockery of what belongs to God. Evil vows, vows made under duress (just like contracts made under duress) are null and void. But the Handlers never tell their slaves these "finer points of the law." Instead, they use the Bible to justify their own goals.

I AM [one of the names of Yahweh]--used as a programming cue or name

EX 15- "I am the Lord that healeth thee". The programmer can apply this to himself as he helps rescue the victim from a manufactured life-threatening crisis.

Ten Commandments with LEV 20--used to belittle the victim to show him that he is rejected of God. When the Programmer sets himself up as God, he can misapply all the verses calling on people to serve God such as DT 4:29 "Seek the Lord thy God, thus thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul."

See DT 8:18 also DT 11:13, "love the Lord your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul." Of course many of the alters have been stripped of their hearts during programming and given a heart of stone. They do not have a real heart to serve God, but they can serve their master with their heart of stone.

OT Historical Books 1 KG chapters 16-2 1, The story of Ahab, Jezebel, and Elijah. The Programmers play themselves in the role of Jehu coming to protect what is his. The only admirable thing for Jezebel to do, is to put her make-up on and prepare herself to die. This story is used to make a woman slave think that the only admirable thing to do is to prepare to die like Jezebel.

The Vineyard of Naboth is also used as a programming theme.

The show Mysteries of the Bible is an example of how the Bible and television can work together to control a person. This show had an episode about Jezebel, Ahab and Jehu. It must be remembered that Dr. Green's internal alter in some victims is called Jehu, and that another programmer has taken the identity of Ahab and that one of the deep cats is the Grande Dame programmer represented by Jezebel.

The effect of the show on one Monarch System was this: Jehu has the power over the gates and to bring judgement upon Ahab and Jezebel. Jezebel in the show Mysteries of the Bible is praised because when she knew she was going to die she got her makeup on and she got herself ready for Jehu and allowed herself to be killed. The System understood the show to mean in paraphrase: "this is a threat, you are to get yourself ready for Jehu or whoever and comply."

Prophets EZ (Ezekiel) 1:15-17 and the rest of the chapter. This whole chapter is used to build the internal circle within circles of interconnecting worlds of the alter system.

Jeremiah 18:3--When the child is 3 or 4, a utility program called the Potter Wheel is placed in so that the Programmer can work with an entire section of alters if he so desires. When an alter(s) go up on the wheel, they are available to be worked on. They will be asked to "stand in file according to rank and serial no."

EZ 37-The story of the Valley of Dry bones is used as a way of reactivating dead robots--or dead robotic clones within a Monarch system.

JER (Jeremiah) 47:3--in this verse horses show up when a boundary was crossed. This is used to put in protective programming.

Nahum 3:2--the sword = staff. The entire 3rd chapter of Nahum is used to make slaves feel that God has rejected them. They have no heart, because of their evilness.

Daniel Daniel 10--the Beast with 10 toes (used for programming in the Beast computer)

Gospels MT 5:13 "Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savior wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and to be trodden under foot of men." This is used to justify punishment of the slave.

MT 6:22-23 "The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!" These words are used with a mean programming trick where disobedient alters are pulled up, locked into place, placed mentally within crystal chandeliers and then the sexual organs, mouth, and side of the brain are shocked in sequence. The "light" does a severe shattering to all the alters which experience the shocks. This shatters the disobedient alters and they are replaced with others.

MK 3:24-25, "And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand." Used to help justify backup programming that will not allow disobedience. The slave's front alters are told to go along with the rest of the System's desires, and if not, then the house (body) will fall (commit suicide). This type of scriptural programming is used in a demonic way to keep the victim from straying from the script of the mind-control.

MK 4:6 "But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away." This is used to make sure the roots of the programming are not uprooted.

MK 4:28-32, "And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God?...It is like a grain of mustard seed. ..But when it is sown it groweth up and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it." In the programming, a tree is programmed mentally into the victim's entire body. This tree carries the programs, and the birds nest in it. This scripture is used for the imagery of part of that programming.

MK 5--This entire chapter deals with the story about Legion (which is a large number of demonic spirits). The story is also found in MT 8:33. Legion is placed into the person to guard the All-Seeing-Eye.

LK 1:46-52, When a person is traumatized and the Master is allowed to save the victim, he can present himself as Savior and will use this scripture to buttress his authority.

LK 11:9-10, "And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened." This is used to reinforce the knocking triggers that open up a system. MT 7:8 is almost identical to this scripture.

JN 15:4, "As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me." This is used to force the slave to stay within the programming script, so that the fruit (the programs) will not be damaged. The slave has been given lots of alters and demons whose only assignment is to protect that fruit-bearing (the program-bearing) capability of the System. This chapter continues, "If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you....If you keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love."

JN 15:7,10 In other words, the Master is telling the slave, if you do what I command, you remain in my love, but I will pull my love away if you don't comply.

ACTS 17:28, "For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring." The slave is bonded totally with their master. His existence is their existence.

Paul's Writings ROM 1:7, "And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the

Father hath put in his own power." The slave is to depend upon the Master called God for all this.

ROM 1:18, "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness." Used by the Programmer/handler to justify their wrathful abuse.

ROM 6:16, "Know ye not, that to whom ye Page 312 .... yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness." This scripture is a good one to use with ROM 13:1 to make the slave think that obedience to the Master's authority is righteousness.

ROM 7:22, "For I delight in the law of after the inward man." God is Programmer, and the slave is to delight in programmer's laws.

ROM 9:20-22, "Nay but, 0 man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? "Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? "What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction." The programmers teach the alters that the Programmers are the Potter and the alters and their minds are the clay. What right does the clay have to question the Potter. This is a powerful verse used to insure compliance and acceptance of the programming.

ROM 13:1, "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." There is the perfect scripture to be misused to prove to the slave that their master has to be God or at least ordained by God. Who has power? Where does power and authority come from? God. This is a favorite verse within the Catholic realms to demand loyalty to authority. To defy their authority is to defy God. It is the perfect double-bind for the slave.

1 COR 3:16, "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are." The slave has a temple built into their System and they are told that their master is God. If they defile that temple (by touching the programming)--their master will destroy them.

1 COR 11:27, "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord." Actual blood and an actual human body are consumed. The person is told they must be worthy of this or else they are guilty.

2 COR 1:22 "God; who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts." Can be applied to the Programmer, who is God.

2 PTR 2:22--Slaves are cursed with the verse and as dogs told to return to their own vomit. During the tortures of eating foul things, the slave doesn't want to vomit--because it is a standard practice to make slaves eat their own vomit.

Revelation (Or Apocalypse) The White Stones of REV. 2:17--The deeper alters go through a ceremony where the white stone is taken and a black stone with their name is given.

REV. 6-8. The 7 seals are used for Armageddon Suicide programming. First, the white, second the fiery red, third the black seal, and the fourth is pale, it is death & hades, fifth, is blood and beheading, sixth, is earthquakes internally, and the seventh is golden which is silence.

RV 21--The description of heaven is used to build internal structures and the stones used in heaven are used for access points. "The street of the city was pure gold, like transparent glass."

RV 21:21 lends itself to Wizard of Oz Yellow Brick Road programming. The words "Alpha and Omega" are programming triggers. The trumpets and seals of Revelation and the horses of judgement are all part of the charismatic Monarch Mind Control. With An Ancient Warning The prophets of the Bible warned that mind control would dominate the world in the last days. For instance Paul wrote, "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils."

1 TM 4:1,2 "...the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not..."

2 COR 4:4/ Along this line Jesus the greatest prophet said, "When the Son of Man comes [referring to his own second coming], will he find the faith on the earth?"

Lk 18:8 Paul warns "Let no man deceived you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first [from the truth]."

2 THES 2:3,4 He tells us that in the last days people will not endure sound doctrine which means sound teachings. The prophet John warn that the love of the truth was all that would protect people in the end times from the mass deceptions coming. It is this mass mind control and individual mind control which allows the satanic New World Order to carry out a world-wide satanic conspiracy right under the noses of the world's citizenry without the majority of people even being alarmed! "...The whole world lies in the control of the evil one." 1 JN 5:19

Part L

Theta Programming got its name just as the Alpha, Beta, and Delta Programming in part from the four types of EEG brain waves. Theta waves are frequent in children. The 4 types of waves are rated according to their wave frequencies which are delta- 1-3 cycles/sec; theta 4 to 7 cycles/sec; alpha 8 to 13 cycles/sec; and beta 13 + cycles per second. Psychic warfare became a branch of the Monarch Programming. This is the Theta Programming. It is the marriage of occult practices with state of the art science. The idea to be able to copy what Elisha did to the King of Syria (2 KG 6:11-12) when he "telepathically" spied on the enemy, discovered their plans, and thereby ruined their chances of success.

Today this has been called "ESPionage", and the U.S. Army's term is "psychotronics". Of course, the CIA's position is that they couldn't find anything that worked, but that is simply not true, because the co-authors know of many Theta alters and Theta model systems which have Theta programming which is successful. Black magicians have been honing their skills on how to deflect magical attacks for centuries. Are their efforts superstition and empty nonsense, or do they really have efficacy? The Illuminati and Hitler believed in black magic. And in recent times, the other groups involved in trauma-based mind-control have also looked into magic based psychic warfare. For those readers who skipped the split-brain programming section, you may want to read that section to find out how the Illuminati create alters via split-brain programming who are very intuitive and capable of interacting in higher demonic spheres such as the occult planes of the magical Watchtowers.

Some of the groups who did research for the Monarch's Theta Programming are:

AiResearch (Al can stand for artificial intelligence) Manufacturing Co., Torrance, CA (such as psychic warfare & ESP)

Biological Dept. of Air Force Research, Baltimore, MD (telepathy)

Bell Telephone, Boston, MS (telepathy)

Defense Intelligence Agency

Duke University Parapsychology Lab, Durham, N.C. (parapsychology, ESP, telepathy)

Garret Air Research Corp., El Segundo, CA. (ESP, ELF)

General Electric, Schenectady, NY

Institute of Noetic Sciences Maimonides

Dream Lab in Maimonides Medical Ctr., Brooklyn, NY

NASA (telepathy and many other things)

National Institute of Mental Health (funneled money to telepathy/clairvoyance projects for the CIA)

Naval Surface Weapons Center and China Lake

Princeton Univ., (ESP, remote perception, telepathy)

Stanford Research Institute

Veterans' Administration Hospitals

Whether the public perceives Psychic warfare as viable or not, billions of dollars have been spent on it, and numerous Theta models produced. Twelve psychics in a room together are said to be able to guide missiles which are fired. There are a number of excellent books that have come out on the subject.

The New Earth Battalion and the Delta forces of the U.S. Army consist of Monarch slaves trained in Psychic warfare. (The reader is invited to read for instance John White's book Psychic Warfare Fact or Fiction? (Wellingborough, UK: The Aquarian Press.)

Col. John B. Alexander has been one of the more visible and prominent military men assigned to training and providing the U.S. Army some elite units of warrior-monks who can fight with both martial arts and psychic warfare. Of course, they picked their elite mind-controlled programmed multiples for this. Col. Alexander's position has director of "the Advanced System Concepts Office" in Adelphi, MD. He has worked with Col. Michael Aquino with Monarch slaves.

Upper level martial arts involves the use of the occult. The Ninji are one of the few groups who openly realize that their martial art power comes from demonic powers. A half crow/half man spirit empowers them. The Samurai would kill the Ninji because they used witchcraft in warfare. But the Samurai and many other martial arts also use occult powers, which are actually different forms of witchcraft and demonology, even though they don't recognize it as such. Now American Monarch slaves in the U.S. First Earth Battalion are taught to throw energy balls, to move people during hand to hand combat, and do other things using occult forces. (Yes, these warrior/monk groups are even getting into blood sacrifices.)

In 1987, The Seattle Times, ran a front page story on Lt. Col. Jim Channon, who worked with the military Theta models. The story is entitled "The New Army's experiment with 'New Age' thinking". The article says, "So the army tried 'New Age' thinking - the idea that the world can be changed by changing the way people think about it, and that the mind has invisible but tangible powers yet to be tapped.

Centers were established at Fort Ord, Calif., and in Washington, D.C., to explore the intriguing idea that mind power plus firepower could either win wars or make them unnecessary. From 1980 to 1982 the proposals were expanded at Fort Lewis by Lt. Col. Jim Channon....The Army began by finding young officers enthused with 'new thought' and combining them with skeptical scientists. The two groups were quickly dubbed 'the butterflies [an appropriate name for Monarch mind-control men] and the bees.'...One result was an Army think tank at the Pentagon that evaluated the paranormal - unusual psychic or mental phenomena. It brought in proponents of extra sensory perception (ESP), mental spoon-bending, people who 'channeled' spirits and even a helmet designed to unite the left (logical) and right (intuitive) halves of the brain."

Col. John B. Alexander, US Army and part of the Monarch Programming, wrote for Psychic Warfare, "Psychotronics may be described as the interaction of the mind and matter. While the concepts may stretch the imagination of many readers, research in this area has been underway for years, and the possibility for employment as weaponry has been explored. To be more specific, there are weapons systems that operate on the power of the mind and whose lethal capacity has already been demonstrated."

Some of those systems are Monarch systems of the Theta Model, and many of those in the military are young men of the Illuminati. Some have been seen at NORAD, in Colorado, which helps confirm that Theta models are being employed to bring in the Anti-Christ. (NORAD is a main center for Alex and Janus end-timed programming.)

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

10-4.gif 10-5.gif 10-6.gif

Col. Alexander claims that the ability to transfer energy from one person to another has been proven, that emanations of body energy have been proven and picked up by Kirlian photography, and finally that hypnotic states have been induced telepathically. The Pentagon and the CIA spent many millions of dollars on ESP, at least $6 million per year. According to the information that has leaked, there are psychic humans, but the ability is not a consistent ability available for all. In the early 1980s it came out that the Navy had 34 psychics, who they paid $400 a month, to track Soviet subs. The CIA claimed during the cold war that 200 Russian experts were working on telepathy. Many of the Illuminati's Monarch slaves will speak about learning on the astral plane.

One reason it is difficult to deprogram a slave, is because the deeper parts know how to astral project, and can carry out the demonology which helps their master to astral project to them so that the System can be reprogrammed. Whether the therapist believes in demonology or not, if the therapist deprograms a client and then finds out that the deeper parts have undone the work via the astral plane, the therapist should look into how to manage this problem. This type of reprogramming rarely needs to occur because few slaves are ever even partially deprogrammed.

One of the most skilled programmers of Astral Projection is the Programmer B. Bowers. He is known nationally for this skill. He worked with the famous Manly P. Hall, who also had a reputation in the Illuminati for Astral Projection. Astral projection is accomplished by a focused trance where the spirit by demonic power leaves the body and travels to a particular point. Grand Masters within the Illuminati can give lessons to students on the astral plane. Much of their Illuminati occult learning, according to some Illuminati slaves was done on the astral plane. We will discuss several methods on how this is done.

The traditional druidic method (the three stepping stone method) to teach astral projection called "spirit flight" is to get 3 stones, a silver one, a gold one and a black one. Three small stones which are painted would work. The silver represented the female, and the properties of silver. The gold represented male and the properties of gold. And the black stone represented midnight and the unknown and the properties of coal. The silver stone will be placed at a carefully selected location at some distance from the student's house, and then farther out the gold stone will be placed, and still further out the black stone. During sleep the Druidic student will practice seeking out the "three stepping stones" in order.

Telepathy has been developed by the Illuminati, but is a closely guarded secret, which their Illuminati slave alters are trained in. Telepathy is used by Delta teams to coordinate their activity and to sense if one of them is in danger. Duke University (which ties back to the Duke/Reynolds Illuminati bloodlines) has done massive amounts of research into psychic abilities. Only certain people have the ability to be a psychic. A certain type of brain structure is required and the CIA has identified and mapped everyone with this natural ability in the U.S.

However, the Programmers are not above "cheating" in creating psychic phenomena within the slave's mind too. Since slaves can not be consistently given Theta programming, a surgical implantation of a sodium/lithium powered high frequency receiver/transducers coupled with a multi-range discharge capacitor was placed into the brains of Monarch slaves. This gives the handlers the ability to signal by remote signals to the victim's brain. When the receiver picks up the signals they electronically stimulate certain areas of the brain which in turn triggers pre-set programming. Implants are now being placed in a high percentage of the Monarch slaves.

How Out-Of-Body Experiences (Astral Projection) Are Done

Another method of creating psychic phenomena with the aid of electronics is astral projection using sound waves. This method seems to work fairly consistently, although it is possible it wouldn't work for some people. It was discovered that astral projection occurs at a point that the body is asleep and the mind is awake. Focus 10 is the state of mind where the body is asleep and the mind is awake, and with the proper stimuli the mind can wander off into the astral plane. A few odd people get into the Focus 10 state by themselves, but it is rare.

The brain works off of waves that are less than 16 hz. and the human ear can't hear anything below 30 hz. so at first it appears sound waves can't influence the brain. However, if one ear hears 100 hz. and the other ear hears 104 hz. the brain will hear a ghost beat of 4 hz. 4 hz happens to be a theta/delta frequency on the border of sleep and waking that can possibly launch an astral trip. Focus 10 is just the starting point for astral travel. Focus 12, 15, 21 and beyond are the real trip. When a person astral projects it is said to change the BEG pattern to a special pattern called Alphoid. To stimulate someone to astral project they are induced into sleep, and then just as they lose consciousness, the mind is jolted awake with some high-frequency beta signals. The body remains asleep, and the mind is then free from the body to wander. A hemispheric synchronizer (which was patented in 1975) is used to get both hemispheres working together.

Those who want to read more on this subject might start with Journeys Out of the Body by Robert A. Monroe, and Far Journeys, and D. Scott Rogo's Leaving the Body: A Complete Guide to Astral Projection, and A Traveller's Guide to the Astral Plane by Steve Richards.

Other Theta Controls ELF (Extremely Low Frequency Waves) are being used to modify people thoughts, implant thoughts, and modify their emotions, such as make a person angry. ELF weapons are being used on civilian targets in the U.S. High pitched sounds, and helicopter flying with P7 mind control equipment are also augmenting the abilities of the Illuminati/Intelligence Agencies/NWO Network.

Telepathy

Essentially all Illuminati slaves have dark side alters who are taught to be telepathic. There will be differing opinions as to whether this is real or imagined. IF it is real, and we will work off of that assumption, then how do the Illuminati do it?

Again there are varying opinions about how it mechanically works--it appears that it may involve all or part of the following components:

a. The human nervous system is able to change the gravitational constant in a field surrounding a person. If the sender had a low field and the receiving party had a higher than normal field, thoughts can flow from the sender to the receiving party.

b. Somehow altered states of consciousness influence telepathy. Experiments with two people who simultaneously hypnotize each other, have found that they enter a shared world in which they do not have to verbally speak to communicate.

c. Demonic spirits provide insights to those who are involved in the occult world, as a method to further entrap the occultist.

In other words, the person is cooperating with some other intelligence. Although the various occult groups have different ways of explaining telepathy, with Alice Bailey & Lucis Trust (and spin off groups like the I AM movement) it is explained that you are an ascended master. In some groups, telepathy is described as putting on energy and then controlling that energy. It is seldom in the occult world that telepathy is linked with demonology. However, those in the occult world who are skilled in demonology are fully aware that the "energy" that one controls to carry out telepathy are demons. In the occult, the telepathic person must control his demon and then send it to another person. The first person's demon must then control a kindred spirit in that person. High ranking demonology, such as in the high ranks of the Illuminati, would view telepathy as the ability to control demons.

d. An excess of negative ions in the atmosphere has significantly increased telepathic scores in experiments. When telepathy occurs, researchers have noted that the parasympathetic nervous system is activated, & this occurs along with an increased amount of acetyicholine in the brain. According to the high levels in the occult, there are 7 points in the Auric Body. These points are not on the physical body, but are on what is called the etheric body (or the body's astral energy) whose location is approximately in the same locality as the physical body, except that it extends for a few inches beyond. The 7 points--(all important demonic portal points) are the top of the head, the third eye, the throat, the chest-heart area, the solar plexus, the lower abdomen, and the genital area. (The back of the head and the spleen make up 2 other points that are not considered as active. There are 21 minor centers, and 49 focal points found on the human body.)

Streams of energy called nadis carry the astral energy to where the sender's mind focuses to have the energy taken. The recipient feels this energy in the solar plexus. Another area that is said to be active during telepathy is the throat. The throat area on the etheric body is said to be able to transmit mental thoughts if the sender and receiver are in harmony and rapport, and are dissociated. Intuitional telepathy is said to be a function of the third eye and the throat areas working together to send thoughts. In review, there are several different types of telepathy, all of which use different points of the etheric body. Whether therapists believe in telepathy or not, if they work with Illuminati slaves who feel comfortable to express themselves, then the therapists will find out that the deeper parts have been trained in mind reading and telepathy.

An Illuminati Monarch mind-control slave will be twinned with another Monarch. If these two persons are in the same room and send forth a glance of love toward each other, they will establish a connecting energy link that allows them to telepathically communicate. When two Multiple personality Systems meet, there will be communication going on dozens of levels as all types of alters seek out their counterparts and begin to communicate.

A drug containing alkaloids derived from the Ayahuasca vine in Brazil is said to place a person into the telepathic state. Canada outlawed it in 1947 after a company sold it publicly in 1946. The U.S. may also have outlawed the drug. Sodium amytal destroys psychic abilities, and caffeine enhances them. Also a positive intent by the receiver and the correct emotions of both parties helps.

Killing From A Distance

Various methods have been attempted by the military to give their warrior monks the ability to kill by psychic powers. One reported project in the late 1970s, which appears to have tried to link technology with some previous occult ideas, was called Dreamscan. When a person was in his dream state, waves matching brain waves are to be generated by some type of hardware, in order to cause the death of the sleeper. Some intelligence assets in AT&T were said to be involved in this.

In Quick Review

The military and the Illuminati are using telepathy, psychic warfare, astral projection and other occult sciences with their programmed slaves. The ability to carry out some of these occult sciences (psychic abilities) can be greatly enhanced by certain drugs, brain wave patterns, training, and demonology. Non-illuminati models may not have these abilities built in, but the deeper alters of Illuminati slaves generally have some alters who are trained in all these abilities.

The Philosopher's Stone

One of the major goals of Alchemy was "The preparation of aurum potabile, liquid gold, a sovereign remedy, because gold being itself perfect could produce peffection in the human frame." -quoted from The History of Chemistry as quoted by Manly P. Hall in his The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p. CLV.

Gold has long been called the metal of wisdom by the Illuminati. The Illuminati are well aware of the alchemical quest to create the correct type of gold which will bring enlightment to the world. The Rabbi's, who know the Cabala, have considered the secret of white powdered gold the greatest secret of all times. Somehow the Egyptian Pharaoh's had learned the secret of how to make white powdered gold which when seen up close is transparent--like the gold described in the Bible as making up the streets in heaven. This gold is monotonic (with molecules in a high spin state), and looks like baking flour. It greatly enhances the pineal gland, and a similar substance of iridium greatly enhances the pituitary gland. Regular yellow gold or gold salts will cause the hair of the subject to fall out, but white gold is safe to ingest. After ingesting the white gold for over 9 months, a subject will become extremely psychic and disease free. The person's body will also glow. Whether the Illuminati discovered this white gold, and have been using it secretly when their adepts went into hiding for months of long training, or whether they were only playing with substitutes we cannot say. (By the way, some occult groups groom slaves in the craft for 24 hours a day for a year.)

At any rate, in recent years a man named David Hudson, who is of the Holy Blood line (13th Illuminati Bloodline, of the de Guise lineage), discovered and patented white gold. He named the white gold Ormus, which is the occult name for the Prieure de Sion. Ormus also pertains to gnosticism in the ancient world. Ormus is also the Hebrew words for "golden tree", which David finds appropriate since this white gold is the elixir of life that the sho-bread (& manna) was made from. This is said to be the reason the Priest glowed when he came out of the Holy of Holies, after eating the sho-bread.

David Hudson, told co-author Fritz that he was supportive of the cabalistic goal of Adam Kadmon. Because Hudson knew the cabala very well, it seems likely that he understands what Adam Kadmon is really all about. Monarch slaves of the House of Rothschild have revealed how the Illuminati are able to do what they call Proxying. This is a Mind-Spirit transfer, done by the twinning traumas, channeling, telepathic communication, and astral projection so that all slaves worldwide are being pulled into one single interlinked Demonic One World Mind.

We do not understand how white gold and iridium help the body become a semi-conductor so that the body is highly psychic, but it does. We hope to find out more. David Hudson has the patent (U.S. patent and some international patents) on white gold. There are a number of scientific studies on white gold which verify the power of white gold on the human body. When the co-author Fritz talked to David Hudson, he certainly knows the occult world exceptionally well, besides being skilled in the Cabala. He claims he has nothing to do with the occult world, and that he stays away from the Illuminati. He says that he took what was occult and turned it into science. The co-author’s talk with him left many questions. David Hudson has given mankind the most important secret that has captivated the best minds of the occult world for centuries, the Quest for the Philosopher’s Stone.

Further Spiritual Bondage Snares

There are a number of activities which are snares to entrap people, both Monarch slaves and people in particular, which are not commonly recognized as such. One has to view them in their overall context and the consequences of what these activities lead to. According to Biblical teachings, Satan is trying to develop man’s hidden abilities as well as provide him some extraordinary supernatural power to encourage man’s indepedence from God, as opposed to man’s faith in, fellowship with and dependence upon his Creator. As man developes these hidden powers that were part of Adam’s natural mental, psychic, and physical abilities, mankind increasingly feels more godlike.

Man’s independence from his Creator Yahweh God, makes him more vulnerable and more dependent upon Satan. (Cf. verses in Scripture about the fall, 1 Cor. 15:4,5,46, how man is a combination of spirit, body, soul in 1 Thes. 5:23, and how Satan’s system will do trade in the souls & the power of the souls of men, REV 18:11-13.) Due to the corruption of man, God doesn’t want to develop these abilities. For instance, atomic power may make man powerful, but man has not developed spiritually enough for these abilities to be used in a godly fashion. Mankind, according to the Bible, is not ready for these abilities, until mankind is on a higher spiritual walk with God. Today, mankind lacks the authority from God to use occult powers. Mankind’s flirtation with occult powers, is similar to the teenage boy who is disobedient to his father’s guidelines and uses his new sexual powers before he has learned responsibility and how to use his new power responsibly. We are not to be ignorant of Satan’s devices. Understanding about these powers, just as the teenage boy understanding about sexuality in a constructive way, is not the same as the irresponsible use of these powers.

One of the most dangerous, ensnaring spirits, is the Spirit of Gambling. The Illuminati know that if they can get a man hooked on gambling, that gambling will bring in every evil spirit with it. When a man is hooked on gambling he will do anything. Gambling introduces covetiousness, greed and lust. A man with big gambling debts will murder, sell his children, lie, deceive, steal, etc. This is not simply the two authors’ opinions, but the experience of the Illuminati in working with human nature. When the Illuminati want to destroy a lineage, they will purposefully try to get a man or woman in that lineage hooked on gambling. That will begin a cycle of evil spirits being passed down for generations.

In order, to introduce the gambling spirit into society on a mass scale, they are working off of several traumas. The rejection, abuse, lack of power and lack of respect that the American Indians received from the White man, has opened the American Indians up to accepting the lie that opening gambling institutions on their reservation lands is a good thing. The American Indian is gaining back some power and money, but their gambling operations will actually lead them into further bondage. The state governments are finding it hard to finance projects, and their manufactured hardship is also opening the door to state run gambling. Again we see the trauma, and the subsequent programming lie being done on a mass scale. Once the gambling spirit is entrenched, it will continue to strengthen its control over people and society. These things are well-conceived spiritual operations that are blindsiding Americans because "evil" spirits are no longer politically correct to talk about. Illuminati Monarch slaves, such as a Mother of Darkness or Grande Master, are given occult powers. They are also frequently connected to gambling--they will have alters who like to gamble. Rather than being activities of power and opportunity, occult power & gambling are really activities that ensnare people. The symbol that the Programmers use to symbolize the bondage loops that they construct is the infinity sign, the same sign that we saw on the front of Billy Graham's Decision magazine.

Chapter 11 Science No. 11--Internal Controls

A. Teaching Occult Philosophies

Learning plays an important part in perception. The Programmers try to get their victims to subscribe to philosophies and ideas that will make it hard for them to rebel against their controllers. This is what is termed indoctrination. The same methods of teaching that others find useful are employed. Ways of thinking are incorporated by the slave via handlers, programmers, and the cult they belong to.

Everyone tries in their own way to make sense of life. This is a natural brain function, so that the human mind can understand how to deal with the future. The mind takes raw data, and then applies some type of logic, and comes to conclusions. Once accepted these conclusions can be as hard as nails, and they will defy any attempt to change them, even in the light of new evidence. If the Programmer is smart enough, he can get an alter to logically believe anything. Once the belief is embedded, it will remain there tenaciously.

In the Illuminati, "great" masters and adepts teach "hidden mysteries". The slave feels the authority that emanates from this teacher with special gifts and abilities. The slave is hardly in a position to question the teachings being given from on high. Circular reasoning, lies, and other tricks are used to convince the person that the occult world is true. For instance, "God abandoned you, therefore you need to cling to us, the only ones who would see any use in you." (The truth is that the cult staged a crisis where their actor playing God abandoned the child to the cult's abusiveness. The whole event was simply cult abuse--with God taking the blame.)

"We are trying to fashion a better man, a man with far more capabilities than before, with better genetics. Those who oppose us, are trying to keep humankind back in the dark ages." This is circular reasoning and outright lies. (They are not interested in helping mankind, only destroying it.)

To make occult philosophies more palatable, the occult world attacks the character of anyone whose life would dispute their false claims. They also use a great deal of rationalization, where the end justifies the means. Many slaves have had to sit and listen to their masters rationalize their brutality.

Within the Illuminati, ranks are achieved with much learning and ritual. Within the Temple of Set , a member is required to read certain books. Fritz, the co-author has a list of books a Temple of Set member is asked to read, with the comments attached by the Temple of Set to each suggested title.

In their suggested/required reading Category 19 entitled "The Metamind" is Metropolis by Thea von Harbou. Their comments are "An Expressionistic portrait of a negative utopia in which humans are controlled by machines.. .the basis for many electronic/audio-visual ritual techniques employed by the Church of Satan and further developed by the Temple of Set ." (p. C21-2)

Another is Physical Control of the Mind: Towards a Psychocivilized Society by Jose M.R. Delgado. Their comments, "Delgado, Professor of Physiology at Yale University , is one of the most distinguished authorities in the field of Electrical/chemical Stimulation of the Brain (ESB). This book is necessarily dated, but it is so well-written that it deserves to be perused as a preface to more recent works on the subject." (p.C-16?-2)

The Psychology of Anomalous Experience by Graham Reed. Their comments, "This book addresses unusual, irregular, and puzzling experiences- dejà vu, illusions, delusions, hallucinations, etc.-in terms of the mind's normal psychological processes of gathering, monitoring, processing, and storing information." (ibid.)

This is just a brief look to illustrate to the reader that leaders of groups like the Temple of Set are avid students of mind-control. (An almost complete membership list of this group at one point in time, is provided in Appendix A.) The librarian of the Multnomah County Detention Ctr. shared with co-author Fritz that Sheila, formerly second-in-command of the Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh's commune at Antelope, OR studied, via jail/prison interlibrary loan, books on Hitler's mind-control techniques.

Many other examples could be given of how mind-control is being studied and taught by these groups. One more book on the Temple of Set 's reading list would be worthy to point out, The Psychology of Man's Possible Evolution by Peter D. Ouspensky. Their comments, "Should be read especially by those members whose magical ability is hampered by flaws in their balance factor....A series of lectures which explain the Gurdjieff approach to the concept better than G. himself was able to do."

There is an important link between Gurdjieff, mind-control, MPD, etc. but the subject is big and needs to be further investigated. Co-author Fritz has been investigating this link, including talking with leaders of the most successful Gurdjieff commune. As with so many groups, what you see, is not what you get.

Teaching The Ideologies Of War

One of the ways to control a person is to get them angry and then channel that hate. Wars have been used for centuries by the oligarchies that run things to control their people. Right now, the New World Order is carrying out a Drug War, an Environmental War, and a Bosnian conflict for the express purpose in their own plans to control us. They have a mock-alien invasion planned to further justify more control over our lives.

Over the years mankind has created an entire industry around warfare. There are long traditions within military units, that for some reason must be "upheld" by the men who serve in those units. When people buy into the philosophies of war, they can generally be persuaded to give up or do anything to contribute to that war. After all, any sacrifice will be minor compare to the large numbers of bodies that will end up dead.

One of the large purposes of the Monarch type of trauma-based mind-control is to produce robotic soldiers who will do anything. Normal military training is usually sufficient for most military needs, so it is clear that Monarch slaves have some ulterior uses that the military doesn't want the public to know about.

Various Delta Forces

The military as well as other groups have created numerous delta teams, delta forces, delta groups etc.

Delta Assassination Teams

These teams are projects that the Satanic Hierarchy and the CIA collaborated together on. The programming that was placed into people was ingenious and very complex. As the program progressed over the years, the programming became more sophisticated and past mistakes were improved upon. The Delta Teams were programmed to carry out various assignments such as political assassinations. The members of these teams are housewives and other ordinary people who were programmed years ago.

The Delta Teams are part of the CIA's psychic warfare bag of tricks. The CIA works so closely with the military that the Delta Force is easily expected to be tied in with the CIA & U.S. intelligence.

Delta Force

The system tapped Frank Burns to create the Delta Force. Frank Burns was a Green Beret. What kind of things did Frank get involved with AFTER joining the military? Hold on. Frank Burns was an SDS (Students for a Democratic Society--an Illuminati organization) organizer. He was also deep into Zen Buddhism, which is the same as mysticism. Frank Burns as an officer also studied under the Esalen Institute. The Esalen Institute is at Big Sur , California and is the American equivalent of the infamous Tavistock Institute. The Esalen Institute created "sensitivity training" programs for the business world under the title "Organizational Development (OD). Esalen people were brought in to Fort Ord where Frank Burns was the commander and began training people. The army promoted Burns to work in the Chief of Staffs office as a "senior organizational effectiveness consultant", which allowed Burns to introduce Esalen programs all through the army. This could not have accidentally happened.

Frank Burns in a conversation with a two-star General about the need for "wholistic" soldiers coined the slogan "Be all that you can be in the army." Burns phraseology began the army's recruiting slogan. It refers to the Human Potential Movement that the army has incorporated from the New Age movement. The army is moving toward becoming an occult fighting force that practices witchcraft with its warfare. Some of the units moving that direction are Psy-Op operations, which has included Satanists within its officers.

The Delta Force network of various Generals and other high ranking officers is merely one facet of the drive by the Illuminati to transform the American army into something akin to occultic warriors that will be as fierce as the Nazi Death head units. Bear in mind that George Bush, commander-in-chief of Burn's Armed Forces has come from an Illuminati family/ & the Ill. Skull & Bones chapter that was part of the secret support for Hitler. They have been using as an insignia what they themselves (the Skull & Boners) call "the Death Head".

It is not surprising then that support for the Delta Team activities has come from the very top. Frank Burns set out to create a warrior monk. Lt. Col. Jim Channon, in Delta Forces, also put forward the idea. Channon visited more than 130 New Age groups in California doing what was called "social experimentation." It is an idea that the occult have repeatedly carried out.

Hitler's S.S. were a special elite group of warrior monks from which about 3,000 went through religious initiations. (As the war progressed the primary focus of the S.S. shifted from being the Black Order to merely being a reliable military group called the Waffen SS.) There were 3 levels of initiation, the last reserved for the hard-core Satanists at the top. The Nazi initiation seems to have been an attempt to get the force of the Vril.

The Ordensburgen (Castles of the Order) were training centers for the elite Nazis, including the S.S. (Having been in the military, I know first hand that the success of the S.S. and Waffen S.S. units in being fierce warriors is attributed by some of our leading military men to their training to be warrior-monks.) One group of the S.S. called Knights of Poseidon volunteered themselves for castration, in an experiment to change them back to the supermen of the mythical and magical Hyperborea. Some of the best Sufi organizations were warrior monks.

Burns and his Task Force Delta generated the **First Earth Battalion**, which is an occult military unit trained in martial arts, and witchcraft. Men who are selected for First Earth Battalion are given an occult initiation which includes the following oath: "I have the capacity and therefore the duty to contribute to the development of myself, my associates, and our planet, simultaneously now! I take personal responsibility for generating evolutionary conspiracies as a regular part of my work. I will select and create conspiratorial mechanisms that are not costly in time or resources because I am aware of the five channels available to me (such as radio, television, and word of mouth.) I will organize a self-supporting high commando group that will create and perform evolutionary breakthrough actions on behalf of people and planet. One people, one planet. I will then pass this concept on to others who are capable of generating further self-organizing commando teams."

What ever happened to defending this nation? Military units such as the First Earth Battalion although they are supported by American tax dollars are not here to protect America. They are global minded. They are here to protect an occult world government. They are out there actively promoting the New World Order.

Several years ago, Egendorf states that $4.5 million (which came from you and I, and other Americans) had already been spent on Delta Force's 80 different projects.

The **Green Berets** is another organization that has been heavily targeted by the Satanists, to indoctrinate and recruit. The Green Berets are increasingly moving toward being warrior-monk group. Many of them are now programmed multiples. One man who is being looked up to by many American Patriots and Christian Patriots as the leader to help them oppose the New World Order is **Bo Gritz**.

He was a recent presidential candidate. Bo Gritz was a Green Beret and a Delta Force commander. Bo Gritz is very proud of the fact that he wrote the manual for the Delta Forces. He also worked for the CIA. Bo Gritz is one of the military's best programmed multiples, and perhaps one of the most dangerous. Insiders have told me he IS the most dangerous. Numerous insiders both for and against Bo, have talked about Bo Gritz, and that he is a programmed multiple.

According to Bo Gritz’s campaign literature for President he was a commander in Delta Forces. Reproduced on a previous page is Bo’s own presidential campaign literature where he states that he is "Intelligence Officer & Reconnaissance Chief, Delta Force." He is also "Chief, Special Activities, U.S. Army General Staff, the Pentagon" and "Principle Agent, National Security Council, Intelligence Support Activity". Under qualifications Bo states that he is a "Security & Counter-terrorist Specialist."

Within the government, they are already referring to Christians who are against the NWO as terrorists. Bo is their greatest counter-intelligence counter-terrorist they have. He came in like a storm and took control of the Patriot movement, and it has been like pulling teeth to warn patriots about who he is.

Bo Gritz himself was a Green Beret, and was used to assassinate 300 people. His blood lust caused him at one point during the Vietnam War to shoot 30 prisoners in cold blood. I also heard Bo talk about say being Temple recommend Mormon. That means he was at that time in good standing with the LDS Mormon church so that he could go to the Temple and participate in its rituals.

Those who are alert realize that the temple rituals are like Masonic and Witchcraft rituals. Now he is no longer a Mormon. But he still continues in the military philosophy he believes in. Bo Gritz is going around the nation teaching SPIKE training to anyone who wants martial arts skills. Bo has done an excellent job in identifying for the New World Order every person in the nation who could threaten their plans for a martial law NWO takeover. Bo Gritz likes to call attention that he is one of this country’s foremost counter-terrorist agents. This is true. The New World Order believes patriots and Christians are terrorists, because they stand in the way of the world’s acceptance of their world dictator. Bo Gritz has done a great deal to infiltrate and neutralize the opposition to the New World Order. He has been their best counter-terrorist agent.

B. Internal Computers--Perfect Delegation;

Internal Computers Which Auto-Control A Slave

If a master has to constantly spend time whipping and motivating his slave, as well as forever watching that the slave doesn’t escape or do shoddy work, or physically or verbally injure the master, then controlling the slave can end up to be a full time job. When the master gets too much involved in the control process, he ceases to be master, and becomes a slave to the control process.

The intelligence agencies knew that they would have to create mind control slaves who could police themselves. If the master has to constantly guard his slave, the slave will be more trouble than he is worth. Many successful people have gained their success because they knew how to delegate. The most successful supervisor is the one who can delegate the best. The programmers had to find ways to cut their supervisory requirements to the bone if they were to make owning a Monarch slave worthwhile.

The method chosen was to build "computers" into the slave’s mind that would internally regulate everything. They do this by taking hundreds of the alters and dehumanizing them and turning them into parts of a computer. For instance, the shutter on the All-seeing eye of the computer, which is seen in the mind like a camera shutter, is a child alter who's job is to open and shut. (Another primal part is inside the eye’s pupil.) This shutter part knows what goes on in all the system subconsciously but if discovered by a therapist and pulled to the front of the mind will not be able to vocalize about the system. The software for this "computer" could be programmed into it, and all the individual programming of every alter can then be tied back to the computer.

In other words, each alter would be programmed on how to view life, to act, to think, and to function in their job. This programming would be linked to a computer. The programmers invented the perfect method to decentralize their control over their slaves and yet still supervise with the tightest of control. Each alter is linked to a computer (internal-not an external one) built from a foundation of fear and trauma. Since each section of alters was to remain secret, each section of alters for a slave is given its own computer, and then linking computers were built to link the various sections, and then finally a major backup computer is built, and then finally the internal Beast computer.

Bear in mind that this is all built internally in the mind of the victim. We are not talking about actual physical computers built out of physical microchips, wires, condensers etc. If the programmer concentrates on a single point when giving instructions he will get better results. Rather than complicating things for the slave, you gain power over the slave (and any subordinate) if you can give simple clear instructions. For this reason, a large share of the alters in an alter system are given very clear straight forward jobs. Because their jobs are so straightforward, these alters will often remain fragments, rather than alter parts with full blown personalities.

The programmers don't cloud the issue. An undeveloped alter will be given one single clear, basic job. By stringing 1,000's of alters together with single tasks, a highly sensitive system of alters can be created. Each piece of the System is separated by some degree of dissociation to make it a separate piece. By dividing the mind so much, it is incapable of fighting what has been done to itself. Before we begin describing the technical details of an internal computer, bear in mind that every Monarch System is unique and yet they all follow certain patterns & methodologies. Most of the models for the first few decades follow these patterns, some of the newer ones have more updated imagery.

Power Sources

In an Illuminati System, a computer is created for each section of alters. That computer will be given a "power source", which if unscrewed like a light bulb will go out. The light from one of these power sources might be emerald blue or emerald green or other color. The reader may want to refer to chapter 4 for the codes to understand the structuring of the various computers and systems.

Color Codes And Ribbons

In a standard 13x13x13 Illuminati alter system, 13 colors were used, and each computer was given a color. (Color Programming) These would be pink, orange, yellow, white, red, brown, blue, green, black, purple, silver, gold and platinum, and clear.

Color programming is reported to have been developed at UCLA. Whatever the case, Systems all over the United States have color programming. The hierarchy of colors in a System is often as follows (from top power down): Platinum, Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, Pink. Clear is also used as a color for secret areas of the system. This hierarchy of color coding can be switched. The internal programmers can reassign colors if they need to, in order to protect the programming. Alters, sections, and parts of the computer are all color coded. The color coding for alters is not the same just because the alters are in the same section. The color coding within the Illuminati Mind Control is fairly consistent, however a sample of an alternative Illuminati color scheme will also be provided. A survey of colors is as follows:

CLEAR. Secret or shell alters who can take on any color are coded clear. These are alters who serve as images or as a stage for other alters. This would include "Guardian of the Vail" alters.

GOLD. This color is for the supreme leadership in the System, which includes the Grand Druid Council.

SILVER. This color is for the Satanic alters who perform high level Satanic rituals. The Mothers of Darkness have silver coding.

PURPLE. These alters see themselves as the abusers, rather than the Illuminati. These alters were involved with the programming. They have been taught to forget the abuse and to reframe it in their mind as training.

BLACK. These alters were born out of Satanic ritual, and are Moon children. The Delta and Beta alters are black coded. They do the dirty work for the cult, such as blackmail and assassination.

RED. These altars see themselves as witches. They were born out of witchcraft ritual, believe they have great spiritual power, and tend to deny that they have been abused.

GREEN or EMERALD GREEN. These cat altars recognize they have been abused. They still see themselves as belonging to the cult family, and deny that they have been abused to protect their cult family.

BLUE ALTERS. Clones, armies and the ribbons appear to have blue coding. These alters will go so far as to hurt the body to protect it from leaking information or deprogramming.

WHITE. ‘These are Atlantean alters who have been given Aryan type racial nonsense to think they are superior. They believe in genetic engineering, and a master race.

ORANGE. These special protector alters are scouts who warn of danger from internal or external threats.

YELLOW. These are the strong Christian alters of which there will only be a few in the System. They help serve as a balancing point to control the System as well as to hide what the System is all about.

PINK. These are core related alters. They maintain the true feelings of the true self apart from the cult programming and the cult family’s programming. These alters are viewed as weak because they are emotional and often break down and weep. They are fragile emotionally.

An alternative color scheme that is used:

DARK EMERALD GREEN. This color is assigned to the AntiChrist-Satan alter(s). Green is the occult color for Satan and happens to be the most sacred color. Few people outside of Satanists know that Green is more sacred for them than any other color.

LIGHT GREEN. The gods and goddess alters which are triads which function in Illuminati ceremonies get this color coding. WHITE. The internal programmers who come around in white robes get this color assigned to them, as if they are doctors or angels of light.

RED. Sexual alters are given the natural color of sex and arousal red.

BLACK. Connecting alters that are Nexus alters between various system parts. PINK. Reporting alters.

DARK BLUE. Non hierarchy cult alters.

LIGHT BLUE. Alters in charge of the way the system runs, such as the judges.

YELLOW. Alters which are ritually and sexually twinned with alters of other systems.

ORANGE. Guard alters which are heavily programmed for obedience.

VIOLET-PURPLE. Front alters and small child alters placed into boxes.

CLEAR. Shell alters to deceive the outside world.

GOLD. The traumatized alters upon which the programming is built on.

Joseph Mengele and the programmers who worked with and under him, used a large dollhouse with 26 rooms. Each of the rooms were painted with one of the 13 different colors in order to build into the child’s mind, the 13 front and the 13 back computers. The internal computers worked off of color codes, as well as other codes. A dollhouse was used to instill into the child’s minds the compartments of the computer. Each room was done up in a different color.

One particular room was a secret room, and this represents the secret world of Petra which is hidden behind two large rocks. This secret world is coded the color clear.

Besides the special color clear, the following colors appear in the system: Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Blue, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, and Pink. Each color has meaning and a rank. Just as the hour glasses could be turned, the color coding can be switched in rank. This is why in some systems there is a "Computer Operator Black", a "Computer Operator Green", and a "Computer Operator Purple", etc.

During the programming a black box with needles and wires which attach to the body for electroshock is used.

While electro shocking the victim, colored scarfs coming out of a box are showed to the child. The scarfs would help form the imagery needed to build colored ribbons internally. Alters would be created using the Tall Book of Make Believe story of the Pancake people. Using this as a base or foundation, the alters would then be dehumanized one step further into thinking they were ribbons--such as ticker tape, which could transmit information from one computer to another area of the mind. The Ribbons had the ability to travel between the different levels and to transmit messages through the System, especially to the computers. It is believed they could do this because they were spirit.

When a System is accessed by a programmer, one procedure is to obtain a Ribbon alter and then inform the Ribbon what he wants. The ribbons transmit messages to the internal computers. The ribbons on older systems use morse code.

Who are the Ribbons? The Ribbons are the beginning of the Luciferian alter-like demons and alters. They are primarily the message bearers from the computers to the different computers, levels and alters. The Ribbons might have angelic names (Michael, Gabriel, etc.). The word angel means messenger. The ribbons serve a very similar function. They transmit ticker tape with morse code messages. They are at work most of the time for a System. A sample cover story for what they guard--which is the main computer with the gems and the core, is that the ribbons guard the System’s "Garden of Eden". Some more of the cover story that may be given is this: Ribbons were supposedly formed out of the dust of the ground and were placed in the Garden of Eden to create every pleasant tree. (See Genesis 1.) The ribbons relate to the Tree of Life. But to eat of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil will cause death.

The name of the first river of four in the garden is Pashon. Out of the first river come four heads. The River Pashon has gold, ballium, onyx, rubies, diamonds and precious stones. These gems are the programs the dwarfs mine. If the System has charismatic programming, the alters will have porcelain face programming. In this case each ribbon’s color will match the color of the stones in the masks--that is yellow, white, blue, green, purple, red and black. The colors of the ribbons correlate or match the colors of the Dollhouse rooms. What do ribbons do? The Ribbons serve the programmers and the computers, who in turn serve the evil master Spirits.

Things that the Ribbons do for the computers have been identified as follows:

a. The Ribbons eat from the system’s internal "Tree of Good and Evil".,

b. Ribbon programming consists of several things--where they reside, who they are and what they are to protect.,

c. Ribbons must protect the computers in order to protect their own life.

The Ribbons will be programmed to believe that reversing the computer will reverse the Ribbons’ life. The ribbons themselves operate with mechanical hearts (not human hearts). The cover stories may include the following: All Ribbons are hid behind a little girl, who is a front for them & who tells the creation story. The little girl will tell the creation story which included the Ribbons. Behind her runs a silver cord. The silver cord has to do with heart programming. The silver cord has 3 strands that cannot be broken as per ECL 4:12. This silver cord goes off if the Ribbons are touched. Ribbons are set up so that suicide programming is triggered if they are cut. Actually, french braiding conceals a 4th strand.

In review as stated, during the programming, a box with colored scarfs was shown the child while severe electro-shock was given to the body. A colored scarf represents a ribbon which runs a message from a colored room to a similar colored alter. In a System which is structured into families and cities and worlds and sections, these "geographically different" structures in the mind of the victim can be connected via the color coding.

In other words, the alters are structured into a 3-D cube structure. Then a fourth dimension (the color coding) is added to tie in all of the three dimensions. A central computer was placed in at the bottom of the mind. Using various techniques the victim is brought to the deepest altered state possible, and a computer is built into the mind via hypnosis and alters. This can be done by freezing the entire body and just keeping the head active. Or it can be done by bringing the body to a comatose state where the heart is beating faintly. This step can only be done under the strictest medical supervision.

The memory storage area for the computers include the Emerald City Library (staying with the Wizard of Oz theme) which contains alters who's only function is to memorize & retain with photographic memories pages and pages of information. The layout with codes of the entire system can be stored in a storage bank, so the programmer could access this area if his own records were lost. The libraries contain the historical genealogies of satanic iniquity from early ancient times to present.

This ancient occult information has been reported by at least half a dozen Illuminati slaves as being retained internally by demons.

How Monarch Slaves Are Designed To Interface With The Unix System Of The Beast Computers

In line with what is being done by the Illuminati around the world with their network of computers--the computers have access codes similar to 666 666 666, and back out and close down codes similar to 999 999 999. These are the codes that the UNIX universal system uses, and the Monarch slaves are being created with codes that interface with the UNIX system for computers. (On some systems if the computer is shutdown it will request an input code of 666fff666fff666fff666... This can then be reversed F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6.)

The UNIX system is being used to allow the New World Order's big BEAST computers to communicate with any known computer, including the minds of their Monarch mind-controlled slaves. In the 1960s, the U.S. Department of Defense began linking computers together into a superhighway now developed into the Internet. Hundreds of thousands of computers around the world are tied in. Like buildings in a city, each computer has its own unique address. Most of these addresses are registered at the Network Information Center in Menlo Park, CA. Individuals can also be registered at the NIC too.

The U.S. Military links into the system with their Arpanet and Milnet networks, which tie together such divergent things as MIT computers, West Point computers, NORAD computers, Air Force Systems Command Space Division computers at El Segundo, CA and U.S. Army DARCOM at Seckenheim, Ger. (to name a few). These are all being tied together to form one vast electronic brain.

There are nine secret BEAST computers of the New World Order, at the time this was written. "Big Bertha" is the nickname of the BEAST computer located at the secret military installation called Dreamland at the secret Groom Lake, NV test site facility. Papoose Lake is referred to as S-4. The other super-secret facilities in the area are named S-2, 8-6, and S-66. This area has become the Illuminati's prime programming facility for turning out Monarch slaves, and the Monarch slaves which are turned out from this area have turned out to be the worst basket cases.

In other words the programming is very severe which is carried out in this area. This area has also been used for the space program, for the U-2 & SR-71, for the CIA's A-12 spy plane, for the Stealth fighters (Lockheed F-1 17A Attack plane) and bombers, the Aurora, and for the U.S. government's "Above Top Secret" flying saucers. The Big Bertha computer (named after the Illuminati Mother-of-Darkness Bertha Krupp) can be talked to in half a dozen languages and will answer a person back in the language they speak.

On a daily basis, airplanes fly into the Groom Lake facility. The callname of flights bringing workers and people go by the call name "Janet". About 12 Janet flights come into the facility everyday. These flights are usually Boeing 737s and arrive from places like a secure terminal run by EG&G at McCarran Alrport in Las Vegas and from the military's Palmdale, CA facility. These 737s are unmarked except for a red stripe running down the fuselage. Large military C-130 arrive with cargo, and Illuminati dignitaries arrive in smaller twin-engine craft. Victims for the programming are brought in via planes, & other routes.

One of the BEAST computers occupies three floors of the headquarters of the European Economic Community building in Brussels, not far from the important Illuminati Mother-of-Darkness worldwide headquarters castle near the Fr.-Bel. border near Muno, Belgium. Another BEAST computer is in Luxembourg. In observing the operations of the Illuminati, it has been seen that telephone area codes are used as part of a mind-controlled slave's code. We do not understand everything about their codes, but it does tie in with other things that are happening.

Every person in the world has been assigned an 18 digit tracking number, which consists of 3 groups of 6 numbers. The first 3 numbers assigned in the BEAST computer to everyone are 666.

The next is one's national code. The U.S. national code is 110. Then the next 3 numbers are your telephone area code, and then finally your 9 digit Social Security number.

The code then is 666 + Nation code + Tel. area code + social security no. = BEAST I.D. no. for an individual.

According to Dwight Kinman's book The World's Last Dictator, 2nd ed., (Woodburn, OR: Solid Rock Books, p. 256) VISA has already begun issuing VISA cards using the BEAST 18 digit number. When an American makes a bank transaction on an autoteller within a matter of seconds the BEAST has been informed of the activity. These computers use UNIX.

The particular programs for the economic transactions just described are a worldwide computer network called SWIFT (Society For Worldwide Interbank Financial Transactions). The SWIFT works off of the UNIX system and can communicate with any computer. It was developed by AT&T and uses C language. (Bear in mind that there are dialects of UNIX, such as the standard AT&T UNIX and for instance Berkeley UNIX. The UNIX system uses both timesharing and multitasking. The mind of a Monarch slave also does both multitasking and time sharing.

One of the nice UNIX features, is "protected memory", which is also part of the Monarch programming. A kernal is what the UNIX programmers call a "protected person". It is very similar to the internal "person" (alter) who helps the Monarch slave's programming functions. The big item about UNIX is that it has permissions granted. This is similar to the Monarch programming. Permissions are granted to 3 types of entities. The Top Programmer or "god" as he is called, of the UNIX System receives what is called the individual permission. The next permission is called group permission, and it is given to insiders who work with the system. The final permission type is the world, which has very limited access. The parallel between this and the Monarch programming is surprising. In some cases the programmers may have matched things on a one-to-one correspondence. The Monarch program also has a Top Programmer who is called "god" to the System. He has total control over the system. His programming permissions can not be deprogrammed out by others who might want to usurp his power. Hidden from the casual user of the UNIX system are the Daemons and Demons.

The UNIX programmers decided to use the old English spelling for demon = Daemon. These are computer processes which work secretly behind the scenes and are given actual demonic names--some corresponding to actual names of historically known demons, such as Asmodeus. Asmodeus is also a demon which is placed into many Monarch slaves. In the UNIX system these demons are treated like persons in the computer's user director. Demons in the computer system do not have to log onto the computer, but they work behind the scenes and are given the same powers that people users are given. They are set up in the same structure as how the computer treats people.

Permission in the UNIX system is granted using an 8 bit count with 0 through 7. The three kinds of permission are the read, write, and execute permissions. If no permission were granted in any way the UNIX system would indicate" "on the screen which means 000000 000 or nine 0's. The super user called god is given the code 777 which means super user. However, the permission of 666 gives the user the power to everything the 777 permission gives, except that the 777 permission allows the god the master programmer to execute not executable programs. The Postmaster Demon is the head demon, and his permission level in UNIX is 666. (In the Monarch Programming "Mr. Postman" is a code word used internationally.) The most important part of the BEAST system is its communication power. The Electronic Mail System of the BEAST allows it to communicate worldwide, and along with electronic mail comes levels of permission to super user (god) is called Root. A programmer on the Beast must get permission. His program must get permission. That program that gives permission must also get permission. In other words, there are levels of permission that must be gone through. This is similar to the Monarch program. For instance, the alters personalities which would control the body during Illuminati gatherings have very tight access permission. It is very hard to access these hierarchy personalities.

Both the UNIX system (and the Monarch programming) creates "children" by "spinning". The "child" spins off. When the "child" is finished it is "killed" in UNIX lingo. When the programmers created child processes in the computer, they were having problems with the child processes killing the parent processes. The same type of problems have had to be dealt with in the Monarch programming. The initial programmer is often the biological parent of the child, and this parent is very responsible for extreme tortures being applied to the child who is being programmed--not to mention all of the expendible children, who are killed in front of the child to highlight the reality of the trauma. The natural reaction of the child being created is to hate the programmer. Naturally, the Monarch programming had to overcome that natural tendency, which it does very successfully.

The UNIX system uses an internal clock within its computer system. The UNIX clock is called CRON. CRON checks files to see if the programmer has put in any files to run. The UNIX system uses data bus lines, which are like the Monarch programming ribbons, which go through the system. These ribbons or data bus lines take information and commands from the computers to other computers.

Within the UNIX system, insiders have revealed that the Daemon (Demon) processes of all the UNIX systems have a security flaw. That flaw is that the Postmaster Daemon has access to them in spite of who the god is of that particular UNIX computer system. So while owners, who purchase UNIX systems think that they have exclusive control over their system, an external Postmaster Daemon coming from the Beast could use its permission levels to over ride the power of the local owner of the system.

The Monarch system has a similar feature, the Illuminati programmers know how to access the base or primal anchors to the programming and yank out any programming they want. All the slaves of these lesser groups such as the CIA, Church of Satan, Mafia, etc. can all be reprogrammed rather quickly to serve the Illuminati, if they are not already due to the Illuminati programmers extra knowledge on how to get into the base programming. In these many ways, the UNIX system serves both real computers and also for the internal computers of some slaves’ mind.

The slave’s system becomes a computer system. It functions as a series of computers that are connected to the master computer which is sunk into the mind at the lowest hypnotic level, which is a level often placed even below an internal "hell pit". To access the different computers, combinations of cards were used for the codes (numbers are also used. See Chapter 4.). Various parts of a Monarch system correspond to what any computer would have. A microprocessor register has 3 sections on a computer to make it functional.

In Monarch Systems, you would find these 3 represented by 1. stored data in the library and alters with photographic memories, 2. an instruction section with codes, and 3. stacking mechanisms.

Linked to all this were a crystal, clock, hour glasses, a compass and an entire demonic command structure. The eye in front of the big computer will be protected by legions of spirits. The front big computer runs front quadrants and the back computer runs the deeper quadrants. The software so to speak for the Omega programming (computer) may be set up to include a stacking program called the Potter’s Wheel. The Potter’s Wheel is a misuse of the Bible, and is a type of programming that the Charismatic/pentecostal movement carries out. The Mormons and the Catholics have their own distinctive "software" programs.

An initial stacking mechanism would work by telling alters to "Stand in Order according to rank and serial no." Another code along with a hand signal would place the Gatekeeper alters up on the Potter’s wheel for their "creator" to work on them. A group of alters could be taught to go up on their Potter’s wheel by seeing a pattern of dominoes. It is whatever the programmer decides. The dominoes were used for coding, but they also had the programming feature of being able to tie alters together so that if the System is tampered with out of sequence, a domino effect would take place. This domino effect is for one program to set off another program to set off another program.

Soon the Monarch slave’s mind is trying to deal with dozens of suicide programs running simultaneously, along with perhaps other programs such as scrambling programs. For instance, one story line used is the mice run up and down and open up new levels of programming and are tied to the pendulum/clock mechanism. The mice can activate the hour glass, and a gold-winged green skirted fairy Whisper balances the hour glass on her wings. If the slave goes toward freedom, the slave’s mind triggers programs of all kinds, and the mind ends up not knowing if it was coming or going with all the different programs which activate.

A more exhaustive look at all the craziness and activity of the Omega & Gamma programs which activate to defend the Illuminati’s Mind Control are given in other chapters. The programming has been designed that if it was taken out improperly, it is to come back Seven times Seven stronger. This is also a clue that the programming is partly a demonic manifestation, cf. MT 12:43-45 et al.

Components Of The Controls

At the center of the System are the mechanisms that control it, such as the Master Computer, the All-Seeing Eye, the Compass, the Master Clock, and the Quadrants that tie in together. The System may have 3 hourglasses spinning on axes. These hour glasses can also be called matrixes, which are on your standard 3 axes, a X axis, a Y axis & a Z axis. The worlds are various sections of these matrixes. There are backup worlds & mirror image worlds.

Occasionally, there will be a double system. Some of the more important alter System are even far more complex than a double System or a double Double System. Each alter is split so that every alter has another alter created from it. Then there are demonic doubles--demonic mirror images in the System. The double images shown in the picture are very real when describing our System. Some therapists have noticed "Satanic Guardian Angels" which talk to their patients. They do not know what to make of these. Some classify them as hallucinations, because they do not have any room in their belief system for demonology. These are the demons that do control the multiple's mind.

Thor, with his huge hammer is a painful demon. Thor's image is made of cast iron & carried an iron mallet. Thor is a black strong figure. When his hammer strikes, the slave gets split brain headaches. Programmers can use the story of the Giant with the Hammer in the Ozma of Oz book (pp. 141-155) to give the imagery when programming. A special series of sweeping motions with both hands will relieve the split brain programming, but some alters can only tolerate these hand signals being done by the master.

By the way, Thor is an important protector in Satanic/occult beliefs, & the religion of Thor now has equal stature/popularity in Germany as the Lutheran church. The programs are put into a System and given codes. These programs use Greek, Hebrew and Druidic letters (or other esoteric languages) in their activation codes. Actually, these alphabets also are the way these people numbered with, and the Greek, Hebrew & Druid letters were used as numbers. These programs could be called Utility Programs, because they function much like the utility programs of a computer. Along with all the programming comes cover programming.

Generally, front stories cover almost everything in a System. Dominos have been used in Monarch programming as the basis for what is called a "Mother Board" in actual computers. Telephone tones key in on a slave's computer matrix. At times, telephone tones in everyday life will make slaves accidentally wacky. All computers run off of base 2--which uses the numbers 0, and 1. 0 and 1 can be represented as on and off. In the programming, they were represented by "He Loves Me", "He Loves Me Not." The Programmers, especially Dr. Mengele, enjoyed taking a daisy and pulling its petals off one at a time. First petal, "I love you". Second Petal, "I love you not." IF the last daisy petal was "I love you not"--then the child was dramatically killed in front of other children to be programmed. The Illuminati's method of death--skinning alive--has been developed into a fine art, for both programming and ceremonies. A drawing of this skinning procedure by a witness is on pg. 338.

The daisy game, which was scary for a child, heightened the victim's attention. Matrixes were built upon this deadly game. How did it feel to be programmed with Mengele's "I love you, I love you not" programming? A victim recalls, "The child was placed in a cage exposed and naked. The low voltage wires were rigged to the metal of the cage. The child experienced a continual erratic or sporadic prolonged voltage of shock until the heart would pulsate and the anxiety level of the child became out of control. "Then the Dr. would enter the scene with his sneering taunting smile while holding a daisy in his hands. The sporadic voltage would continue to flow through the child's body. As the shock continued, the Dr. stood before the child pulling petals off the daisy. His only communication was voiced in these words, "LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT, LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT," while pulling off the daisy petals. This action would drive the child crazy because the child knows full well if that last petal is pulled off it meant death. The child that is not loved is skinned alive before the other children. "...we can now begin to understand that the expendable children were in other cages placed all around us for the eye to see. They went through the same process as we watched. When the last petal of the daisy was pulled from the flower they were killed. Then the terror of what we had just experienced through the seeing and hearing, let us know we were next, but when? By the time the doctor got to "He loves me not" some children no longer knew fear. Their ashes were taken from the crematorium and used in the garden for fertilizer, as a reminder to all what happens to unloved children.

"In the clinical room, the lights were used to program the day's events. The bright light continually flashed starting with 7 lights, then six dots, then five dots, then four dots, then three, then two dots, then 1 dot. In the blindness of the lights, we could hear the doctor's voice, "LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT." over and over again. A child could have a false trust when the lights flashed 7 dots. By the time one dot was flashing, the child's terror had once again risen. The doctor never pulled the last petal off for us, but we can't forget how he teased us. He smiled and walked away, 'NO, I LOVE YOU.' and walked away."

If we use L=I love you and N=I love you not we can build the following matrix for the internal computer: L N L N L N 1 2 3 4 5 6 2 3 4 5 6 1 3 4 5 6 1 2 4 5 6 1 2 3 5 6 1 2 3 4 6 1 2 3 4 5 This type of configuration can even be tied to color programming, and to dominoes, where the numbers are represented as the dots on a domino. By making numbers into dots--the numbers can be represented by lights in the same patterns of black domino dots. This means that dominos can be used to program a child, and who would suspect anything about dominoes? Another thing that lends itself well to use as a programming code are a deck of cards. Many slaves have this. It can be tied in with the Alice In Wonderland story. When cards are used, a section (also called a world or city) of alters will be given its own computer. To access that computer, a code consisting of several things including 2 cards can be used.

In review of what Chapter 4 said about codes, often double codes are employed--what is meant by that is that suppose we have 13 important alters in a section. They will designate each of these "A" alters. Then they number them each 1 through 13. But then they will double code them so that as we count up, we also count down. Then they attach a generic level number to them, say 2,000. So putting this together we have Emerald Green 2001-13a for our first alter, then next is Emerald Green 2002-12a, the next is Emerald Green 2003-11a, and so on. Then the magical name of the alter or the Tribal name of the alter can be attached onto this to complete an access code. While it seems perhaps complex at first, all an alter is remembering is a color, a common section no. and their rank no. and their file letter, and their magical name. (The name to pull them up--will not be their name for public use.) Alice In Wonderland, the Wizard of Oz and the Tall Book of Make Believe played a fundamental role as "software" in a System. The Wizard of Oz stories are often used to show how & what structures to put in the small victim's internal world.

The stories even teach HOW to create an internal world and its parts. **Some of the T.V. shows & movies, which served as Monarch programming scripts** (i.e. the software) include:

Batman Bewitched Bobby's World Cartoons (deliberate triggers) Dameon/Omen movies Disney movies (all of them, some with deliberate triggers) Duck Tails Cartoon (deliberate triggers) ET (used in alien programming) Fantasy Island (deliberate triggers) Ghost Busters (used for "who ya' gonna call" theme) Love Boat (used for mind control of cruise prostitutes) My Fair Lady (finishing school for slaves, such as Youngstown, OH) Star Wars Steven King Horror Movies Tiny Toons Cartoons of Steven Speilberg (deliberate triggers) Wizard of Oz movies Some of the books which were used as programming scripts, which haven't been mentioned yet, are the Dead Sea Scrolls, the Egyptian Book of the Dead (satanic rituals follow closely the rituals of the Egyptian Book of the Dead), Steven King novels, & Wilbur Smith's. The Mother Goose nursery rhymes were used prolifically for internal codes in slaves.

Now that we have discussed the widely used "soft ware" available to the programmers, we don't want to forget the root program, the tree which was used as a method of organizing the various programs, just like a computer's subdirectories branch out more subdirectories. If the programming is tampered with, the slave will want to cut the tree--however, since the tree is in them, this means they will want very badly to cut their arms, especially their veins. The programming is not guarded as much as the computers. Everything guards the BEAST computer including deaf alters who have to be communicated with using a hand number code system. Such a code might resemble finger signing 1,2,3,4,5,10 = 15 & following this with a shutdown code which simply reverses the access equation. Surrounding the central All-seeing-eye will be alters & programs with insanity, fear, hopelessness, cutting, burning, aloneness, etc.

Strong demonic forces are attached to these alters & programs. They also can trigger the slave to have abusive behavior as punishment. A System is given a life force which is able to regenerate a system, the jokers who protected the programming, and you have the alpha-numeric codes, the cards, and dominoes (represented by a dice) that formed the access codes to parts of the System. The alters will often feel the heartbeat (which may be an alter) associated with the computer. In the background is a Luciferian blue light. This Satanic light empowers the Joker. It along with the Joker and the internal programmers give a System the ability to regenerate itself. One can shut down internal computers which run programming to the levels of the System using the same codes that the original programmers use, but until one also takes care of the 13 Jokers & the faceless white-coated programmers who control the Omega Programming, then the back up computers can regenerate the programming & rebuild the system.

Jokers

If the computers are given cards as access codes--it works in well to create Jokers who are wild cards within the system, which can imitate anything. The Jokers have a Luciferian form. Luciferian is the term that the programmers used. This means that it is spirit. Because the Jokers are Spirit, they can take any form they need to and they can do what they want to do, until they are bound & cast out with the rest of their hierarchy of demons. The Jokers will pop up when a victim tries to study the codes & programming that direct that victim's life. Around this cult core are the jewels (which are the programs the dwarfs mine). Remember the story of Snow White and the Seven dwarfs? Also swirling around Silence are ribbons which we will discuss later.

TREES. The trees bud at certain times. This is one way the imagery of the tree to connect to the time that rituals are to happen. If the tree is barren of leaves (no programs--i.e. deprogrammed), then the system is to grow more leaves.

C. Internal Hierarchies

The programmers build chains of command within the groups of alters that they create. They credit themselves with bringing order out of chaos. When a system of multiple personalities thinks of rebelling, they are in the similar situation as a colony wanting freedom from its mother country. Can we govern ourselves, and what governing structures can we keep--since the structure itself is colonial? Can the mind work together to help itself? The concerns are legitimate questions. And yes, the multiple's mind can function outside of the control of the programmer's hierarchial arrangement, but not without alters taking on different job assignments. In the slave's hierarchal chain of command, adult alters are assigned to insure that child alters don't get out, unless the abusers want a child alter out. Likewise, commander alters are needed to keep the switching smooth, and to keep things orderly. Subordinate alters are taught to submit to their king, or governor, or queen alter. Immense power and indoctrination is given to the key cult alters ruling a system. The internal hierarchial arrangement means that the host alter coming into therapy (often a Christian) may not be as completely open as therapists think. They must play an internal game of going toward health while not pushing the buttons of deeper more powerful alters. A lot of internal politics may go on. A front alter may promise a deeper alter secrecy in order to consult with it. This makes for all kinds of triangulation and manipulation within the alter system itself. The entire hierarchy of alters has a lot invested in protecting the core from trauma, which was why the core was split in the beginning. Trad. therapy goes after the core & the multiplicity that protects it, thus insuring resistence from the entire hierarchy incl. front alters, who in MPD systems seeking help are often close to the core. The core self is best not directly pursued by the therapist, but gently encouraged on its own to reconnect.

11-1.gif

Chapter 12 The Science Of External Controls Monitoring (Asset Control)

A. Monitoring (Asset control)

Every intelligence service since time began has sought methods of owning people and ensuring they stayed loyal. Two of 13 Illuminati families who are known to have developed extremely well-run bloodline intelligence groups are the Li family and the Rothschild family. The Li's family started its Chinese intelligence back in 1400 A.D. They had already been an ancient Chinese aristocratic family for many centuries prior to this. Some of their techniques for their agents were state of the art mind control techniques. The Rothschild's personal spy network and their own mail service was known to be superior to the national European governments during the 19th century.

Traditional spycraft has involved the ability to recruit and keep agents loyal. The professional spook manipulates his recruits for a living. He becomes adept at controlling people. For thousands of years, spy operations have honed their skills at controlling people. Because they work secretly, they generally have done whatever they wanted. When you combine the resources and centuries of intelligence operations of the Illuminati, along with the credibility of government intelligence agencies supposedly guarding our national security, the combination is horrific. There are no moral or financial restraints on what is being done. If the intelligence groups want to dabble in keeping a severed head alive apart from the body, (or a frozen body with an active head) which they have done, there is no one to stop them.

Handlers of slaves use both natural and contrived cues to convey to the slave that they want obedience. A natural non-verbal threat cue would be brusque movements, and an innuendo in their voice. A contrived cue would be placing both hands behind the head, which is a code for "I AM YOUR MASTER, OBEY ME." Another cue for slaves to obey is when the master makes a fist with his right hand and touches his forehead. This means, "OBEY." Even children, who were multiples, who were being taught to control their mother who wanted to leave the cult, have been observed using the fist to the forehead to try to get obedience from their mother. Staring is one method that the Programmers use. Charles Manson, who was both a slave and a handler, is an example of how a penetrating hypnotic stare is used by the Programmers.

One way to control people is to wear clothes of authority. Dr. Green, Dr. Black, Dr. Star, Michael Aquino and other programmers have worn Nazi uniforms while programming, and at other time have worn Satanic Priestly garb.

A beginning point to control people is understanding human needs, and understanding the individual to be controlled. A good case officer learns everything he can about the asset (person or slave) he is to control. Case officers/handlers have been constantly working at improving their skills of control. Monarch slaves who must function as intelligence officers, who recruit spies, are trained in the art of listening and conversation. Learning to listen without interrupting is a guarantee of success. CIA handlers/ programmers have an extremely personable side to them--and a very deadly animalistic side to them too. They will be trained to look anyone they want to recruit in the eyes and withstand their stare. "Friendship begins with a smile; recruitment with a stare." (This is a quote from the book Suvorov, Viktor. Inside The Aquarium. New York : Macmillan, p. 108. During training, men in U.S. Army Intelligence are told to read this book to understand how U.S. intelligence works.)

The entire lives of Monarch slaves are kept on records. Zbigniew Brezinski, and the heads of the CIA, and Sec. of Defense Cheney are just some of the men known about who have access to the computer records that contain records on every active Monarch slave. Not everyone has a price, but everyone will respond to their needs being met. James K. Van Fleet, an important military intelligence officer, wrote about how to manage people. In military intelligence, they keep files on people where they identify which subconscious desires of people are important to the person at the time. All this information is kept in SOFT FILES--which are not official files, so these files have never officially existed and are not given up even to Congressional subpoenas. The Intelligence agencies know that if they find out what the person wants above all else in life, they can control the person.

The nine areas that are monitored to see if they are important at the moment are:

1. emotional security

2. recognition of efforts or reassurance of worth

3. creative outlets

4. a sense of personal power

5. a sense of roots--belonging somewhere

6. immortality

7. ego-gratification

8. love in all its forms

9. new experiences Once they monitor these areas and then they determine which needs are priority needs for the person, then they will use what they call "the depth approach" to subconsciously gratify those needs in a way that they gain control over the person.

Modern companies are doing this too. Dough mix isn't sold, but making a family memory with the children is. Soap isn't sold to get dishes clean--but rather soft beautiful hands are sold. Cosmetic companies don't sell an item--they sell you hope or an image. Fruit dealers don't sell fruit, they sell health and vitality. Car dealers don't sell cars, they sell prestige and images. Freezers aren't sold, emotional security from having a full freezer is sold. They have learned to genuinely appeal to the 9 subconscious desires.

In intelligence, these desires are called "weaknesses", because intelligence case officers and handlers will attempt to manipulate those desires for their own gain by sincerely helping the person. They set up short-range & long term goals and plans on how to manage a person.

For instance, if a Monarch slave's day to day alters want ego-gratification, a creative outlet, and reassurance of worth, the Illuminati may promise the slave that if the alters comply they will give them a singing contract in Las Vegas.

If they need to appeal to their emotional security--they can promise a big salary and a nice house.

If they need to appeal to immortality they can promise to award them a star on Hollywood Boulevard or whatever religious immortality they can credibly offer. (The slave will get the short end of any deal.)

Anything the slave gets is going to come at a price. The slave will have to do something in return for the Network. Illuminati alters are promised power, honor, glory and wealth. Considering the power and wealth of the elite, they do have the resources to make good on this if they want. However, the price of obedience might be to shave one's head in submission and sacrifice a child.

Another important point is that the abusers want to get the active cooperation of the person being used. This can be accomplished by lies (or facts if they are convenient) which appeal to the person's views of right and wrong.

For instance, a pedophile will talk to the child who they are going to rape to get its cooperation. The CIA handlers will listen to what a Slave needs, and solve it for them. Bear in mind, they will only do this if the slave doesn't live with the handler and is pulling in the wrong direction. For instance, the CIA has lots of sleepers, who are dangerous people just waiting to be set off. In these cases, the CIA has to work with front alters who aren't aware of the mind control. Rather than force an issue with control, sometimes a gentle manipulation will work. Then again some slave alters are under such strong mind control that they simply need an order, and don't need gentle manipulation.

The isolation that the handlers impose on their slave to prevent real relationships with outsiders, and the strong bonding of the slave to its master (trauma bonding, etc.) that is administered via the mind control, actually provides a chance for freedom IF the slave survives its master's death. Most slaves are programmed to die soon after their master dies--the co-author Cisco was. If the slave survives the suicide programming, the Illuminati will have already taken into consideration who the slave will be passed onto. Cisco's system survived their programmer/master's death, and they were not able to break the intense bonds which made the System loyal to that master. Because there is so much secret mind-control slavery going on, if only a small percentage begin to break loose because their loyalty programming backfires on the Illuminati, it has still given us on the other side a significant break.

Another example of an MPD system becoming exposed when a handler dies, is when Rothschild, the President of Oilfield Scrap & Equipment in Kentucky , committed suicide. He was the handler of a highly functioning MPD slave, who was his secretary, Mary Davis. Mary Davis could not function after his death and sued in court-- Davis v. Oilfield Scrap & Equipment Co., 482 So.2d 970 (La. App. 3rd Cir. 1986)--for worker's compensation because she could not function after her handler's death.

Because the Illuminati have kept their membership secret, people have not seen the connections between the various cases of multiple personality that surface. In Iowa in 1987, a Multiple named Freeman was arrested for stealing a car. In South Carolina in 1990, a Rutherford with MPD was in court. In North Dakata in 1988, an MPD daughter named Johnson tried to sue her abusive father named Johnson for her sexual abuse. In 1984, a Multiple named Hall was hit by a truck and was in court. In 1987, a Multiple named Jones tried to use his MPD to get off of a murder conviction in Washington. In 1988, Marie Moore, a Multiple in N.J. ran a coven which tortured teenagers. The police found a well hidden body in her house, but the corrupt judicial system did not convict her of murder. In 1988, a Ms. Wheeler applied for Social Security disability benefits due to mental impairments such as MPD. In each of these MPD cases: Freeman, Hall, Jones, Johnson, Moore, Rutherford, and Wheeler are all surnames that have many members in the Illuminati.

The secrecy of the Illuminati has protected people from seeing their hidden genealogies. Tracking these genealogies would in turn start exposing the extent of their mind control. As the handlers isolate the slave from mainstream society, they can begin to give them things that will satisfy their long suppressed emotional needs. These are given in a way that they further lock the person in to the control. For instance, the slave has been stripped of power, he craves power--so he is given power over other people's lives. The slave has been stripped of its real family, so he is given roots by a long generational occult bloodline, and a cult family.

Each Monarch slave exists in their own situation, but there are often common features to how they are controlled. For instance, the handlers like to restrict the mobility of their slaves. Some of the slaves will never write their own checks, will never drive anywhere, and will seldom watch television unless it is something like a Walt Disney movie which is mind-control programming. Some slaves are allowed to drive, but only on a limited basis and their sense of direction is stripped from them hypnotically.

In January, 1995, this co-author's newsletter From A Follower of Christ had a feature article on **Marilyn Monroe**. Monarch mind-controlled slaves like Loretta Lynn and Marilyn Monroe lived tightly controlled lives, and were not allowed to drive automobiles. The one exception is that Loretta has been allowed to drive her car around the ranch. The following is some excerpts from the co-author's January '95 newsletter because it gives a good example of how Marilyn Monroe, a mind-controlled slave had her life very tightly controlled.

Excerpts ...On a day in October, 1957, a woman named Lena Pepitone was hired to take care of Marilyn Monroe. In 1979, she published her memories of the time she was the primary person taking care of Marilyn Monroe. I personally think that Lena Pepitone was clean, and didn't know what she was dealing with. She describes in detail her life with Marilyn Monroe. The inside story of life with Marilyn is nothing like people might imagine. Lena's book is such a clear description of how life with a Monarch slave can be--that I decided to use her book as the basis of some articles.

Marilyn Monroe was an orphan, and during her infancy the Illuminati/CIA programmed her to be a Monarch slave. Before becoming an actress, while she was still a stripper, she spent time with the founder of the Church of Satan Anton LaVey. Victims of LaVey have pointed him out as a mind-control programmer. At that time, Marilyn was going by several names including Mona. When they made her a star, Marilyn lived on the 13th floor, in 13E at Sutton Place, NY - the world of the rich and famous. That is where Lena came to help her.

However, Marilyn's existence was not that of a rich person, but was more like that of an inmate. Marilyn was allowed to have no personal life, outside of the dictates of her programmers and her masters. The programmers and users bore down so hard on controlling Marilyn that they repeatedly came close to driving her insane.

The following format the words in italic are direct quotes from Lena Pepitone's book which is entitled Marilyn Monroe Confidential An Intimate Personal Account, NY: Simon & Schuster, 1979. · p.16- "Floor-to-ceiling mirrors were everywhere. Even the dining alcove at the rear of the living room had a table with a mirrored top. All these mirrors didn't cheer things up."

In programming Monarch slaves, mirrors are used a great deal. Within the Monarch slave's mind, countless mirror images are made. The slave sees thousands of mirrors everywhere in their mind. Because Marilyn was so stripped of any personal identity, she decorated her house as her mind looked on the inside--full of mirrors.

Although other Monarchs may have some desires to decorate with mirrors, Marilyn is the most extreme case I know of filling one's house full of mirrors.

· p.25-- "Marilyn 's bedroom was definitely not a queen 's chamber... There were no paintings in the cramped, square room, only mirrors. Marilyn's controllers kept her down. Even when she was famous and great, she lived like a slave. She was not allowed to have any self-esteem beyond what she was programmed for.

· p.29 -- "May was finally able to call for the chauffeur to take Marilyn away. " ... Marilyn was a captive, she didn't go anywhere on her own, she always had someone drive her.

· p.32-- "First of all, Marilyn's life was incredibly monotonous for her. Her doctor 's appointments (I later learned these were appointments with psychiatrists) and her acting lessons were virtually all she had to look forward to. She spent most of her time in her little bedroom... Marilyn went out of the house to be either programmed or groomed. Other than that she stayed cooped up in her room. Does the reader begin to see that the woman was a slave with no life of her own?

· p.33-- "She [Marilyn] didn 't even own a television, never listened to the radio." They stripped Marilyn of any contact with the outside world to insure that their mind control would work. They were afraid that something might go wrong with the first Presidential slave that was allowed to be highly visible to the public....

· p.41-- [Marilyn says], "Shit. My life is shit, "she wept. "I can't go anywhere. I'm a prisoner in this house. " Marilyn is only telling the truth.

· p.43-- "Because Marilyn had no real friends, she concentrated on herself" The closest friend Marilyn had is saying that Marilyn Monroe had no real friends. Doesn't that strike someone as strange. Marilyn didn't have any real friends. Almost the only ones in her life were her abusers, and they worked hard to strip her of any personal goals or esteem.

· p.70-- "You can go anywhere," I [Lena] assured her. "Anywhere in the world" "Who with? she asked sadly. "Who with? By myself""Mr. Miller, your friends..." "What friends? I ain 't got nobody." Many times during the programming, the programmers separate the victim from anyone who could be a support person, they are isolated from having friends and relatives unless the relatives are in the occult.

· p. 71 --Marilyn repeatedly calls herself a prostitute. She says, "They laugh at me. What am I . . . nothing... a prostitute. "Further on the page Marilyn tells Lena that no one has cared about her for her entire life, including her mother....

· p.77-- "Don't take my baby. So they took my baby from me... and I never saw it again. "After Marilyn had a healthy baby it was taken away from her and she was never allowed to see it. It was very likely sacrificed. Marilyn was too afraid to ask what they were going to do with it.

· p.100-- Marilyn loses her baby at the same place that some of her programming was done at. One can speculate that they took the baby for some perverted use....

· p.134 -- "The operation took place at Polyclinic Hospital where Marilyn had lost her baby the year before... [Marilyn said]"Going back to that hospital's a nightmare... .Pain? What 'spain?" For her, the only pain was in not having her own child" . Notice she always go back to the Polyclinic Hospital. Monarch victims have had to endure vast amounts of horrible torture. They learn to survive by disassociation. When Marilyn says "What is pain?" she is being accurate in reflecting her response to pain. She could not have pain--because she would disassociate it. Certain alters are created to take the pain, and the other alters don't have to experience it.

· p.135-- "I found Marilyn in a small room without any view. It was very depressing, especially since there were no flowers or any other signs that Marilyn had friends who were thinking of her." Imagine a great actor like Marilyn is given a room without a view and no flowers or anything to cheer her up.

· p.137-- "Marilyn's now almost daily visits to the psychiatrists ... She was closely monitored.

· p.193-- Marilyn's half-sister tries to come into Marilyn's life. Marilyn says, "I have a right to have a family."

And on the next page, "Gee, you're really my sister. My sister... At least you lived with relatives." Marilyn's masters did not want her to have any family. They often strip the deeper alters of a Monarch slave from any ties to any non-cult person....

· p.199--Marilyn orders a $3,000 Emerald green dress to be made. Emerald green is often the most favorite color of Monarch slaves because of their Wizard of Oz programming which is usually the foundational programming.

· p.202-- "Frank... clipped two gorgeous emerald earrings on Marilyn 's ears." Again we see that emerald green is often used by Monarch slaves.

· p. 205-- "A side from her evenings with Frank [Sinatra], Marilyn's life in California seemed identical to her life in New York. She didn't read, didn't watch television, didn't go anywhere. Although the sun was always shining, Marilyn was as pale as ever. She didn't like to go outside during the day."

As time goes on the case officer or handler will weave and ever firming ever tightening web of control around his asset. They will often use rapport. Many of the CIA's Monarch programmers are very likable people, they have learned the skill of "B.S." and building rapport. Some of this involves just understanding people and NLP. The handler will look for telltale signs such as absenteeism, lateness, nervousness, or inconsistency. He will rely on intuition, spies, astral projection or psychic abilities to keep tabs on the asset. Then if a problem develops it will be addressed with appeals to patriotism, greed, ambition, or fear. Whatever works is the motto of the game.

When slaves are picked up, the men picking them up are called **Draconian enforcers**. Both authors of this book are very familiar with some of these men. They are often big male Monarch slaves. A popular Illuminati access point is to grab the right hand with the enforcers thumb in the area between the victim's thumb and index finger. The pressure will be strong enough to leave a bruise after the access. At different times in different states there have been patterns to what kind of car they drive. They often take the cars from cooperating dealerships, so that there is no license number to trace. They also use stolen license plates on their cars. In 1993, in NY they were using brown Volkswagens. In the Oregon area (especially Portland), a full time Monarch slave enforcer named Rex drives his large red pickup or at times someone else's other vehicle (like his Illuminati boss's white pickup truck). He will carry a gun and a cattle prod.

The cars in some places have been often red or black. A white or silver car sometimes is used to denote someone of rank. When limousines are used to pick up slaves, they may switch license plates regularly because the plates contain access codes. This was one reason the establishment began allowing people to customize their own license plates! When one wants to control a group of people, as a leader of a country Machiavelli's book is great. Some of those principles can be scaled down to working with individuals.

Fritz has observed that almost across the board, if slaves are left within a non-cult family, relatives will consistently misperceive what is happening in the slave's life. Switches between personalities are reinterpreted to fit the world view of the observer--the multiple is merely perceived as "moody" and "irrational". Half-way decent cover stories will generally suffice to cover the slave's activities for the mafia, the CIA, and the satanic cult they belong to. The slave merely needs to pull up a good front alter for public consumption, for people want to think the best of everyone. The public will watch the 7-Swans fairy tale where a magical coat turns swans into a princess, never guessing that a news story far greater is happening all around them.

One way to control a person is to identify who the key people are in their life and then influence those people. Some of the work in controlling Monarch slaves goes on behind the scenes, even without the slave ever realizing it. A number of Monarch slaves have been maneuvered into marriages without actual mind-control even being necessary.

One of the items to successfully controlling people is that they know who they are taking orders from. In the military, officers get frustrated because they end up getting conflicting orders from conflicting jurisdictions. This happens with the control of Monarch slaves too, when too many chiefs and not enough Indians are around. When a slave ends up serving several handlers within a short period of time they can get really messed up. This is because the slaves receive severe abuse and their programming can be splintered and destroyed if not handled correctly. Of course, the slave takes the blame, but that doesn't eliminate the problem.

If a handler wants a better chance of his slave functioning smoothly, the slave shouldn't be tampered with by lots of handlers. This common sense logic of management seems to have been missed by a large number of handlers. One thing can be said, someone who is a common drug dealer had better not tamper with an Illuminati Mother of Darkness alter slave if they want to stay alive.

It appears that slaves are seldom tampered with without permission. Another ingredient in controlling people is knowing what your competition is going to do. Because the cults work with the intelligence agencies, they often know who, what, where, when, and how their enemies are going to challenge them. The authors of this book could write a book on how the Illuminati/intelligence agencies have watched them. People such as therapists and ministers who challenge the Monarch trauma-based programming have nice growing dossiers in CIA files.

A note should be made that the American intelligence agencies tattooed some of their slaves with blue Monarch butterflies, bluebirds, or roses for identification purposes. The bluebird relates to the CIA project name Project Bluebird. Some satanic cults tattoo the "sign of the great Beast" on the heads of victims. They also place scars with occult designs on their victims. The Illuminati slaves, who are hierarchy members of the Illuminati, are not tattooed, although a hard-to-see scar consisting of dots in a triangle on the third eye is done to some members. The prohibition against marking up one's body is not consistently enforced in the Illuminati--it seems this standard is enforced more with the women than the male Illuminati members. CIA slaves have received the Butterfly tattoos from the age of about 11 on up.

Planning A Typical Intelligence Operation, Or The Standard Textbook Techniques Of A Modern Intelligence Agency

The following points are of a scenario which was developed as follows by the author: Fritz observed how the CIA were carrying out an operation to recapture a Monarch slave who was trying to escape. These activities follow standard spook textbook methods, and for instance, fit the same patterns of an intelligence operation codenamed Operation Sphinx described in detail in the book By Way of Deception. By exposing how an operation is put together perhaps it will become clearer how the CIA monitor an asset they fear is escaping.

POINT 1. An event that looked like an accident was planned. The event was impossible to miss. This can include car accidents, people waving one down to tell you that you have a flat tire, etc.

POINT 2. They studied their prey to determine his/her routine. They will watch a residence intently to determine the person's routine and take advantage of this.

POINT 3. Then an insignificant accidental event is planned. Repeatedly, in the many Monarch people the authors have known, the tiniest insignificant points in people's lives are being manipulated. (Bear in mind the intelligence people are carried away and overdo much of what they do, even over planning some of their ops.)

POINT 4. The chief is given the order to "hit at convenience." They are watching and probing to discover a weak point, and when they find a weak point they will strike at convenience.

POINT 5. Listening devices are installed. (The Illuminati's intelligence agencies are illegally monitoring the Jives of Americans with bugs that go up to 2 Ghz. Companies like Tektronics which work with the CIA are selling counters which won't detect bugs at 2 Ghz. In other words, what is mainly sold the public is inadequate, but BK Precision does sell a counter which goes past 2 Ghz. for those who want to know when they are being illegally spied upon. Since MI-6 & the CIA cooperate, the CIA can simply say that their American intelligence information is from MI-6. It may be illegal for the CIA to spy in the U.S.-ha! no one stops them, but British MI-6 can legally spy on American citizens.) The intell. groups themselves use BABBLERS, which are electronic devices that emit noise & chatter & destroy the effectiveness of bugs.

POINT 6. Teams of experts are brought in to brainstorm about the operation. The people called in on a case will be coordinated by a team or teams. One of these teams will consist of various experts whose combined brains will give great ability to plan.

POINT 7. The person will be watched by moving in an observer into a nearby building.

POINT 8. An intelligence woman or man will be sent door to door selling perfume or something else--perhaps they will pose as Jehovah's Witnesses.

POINT 9. The door to door undercover intelligence person will be very personable, very nice to talk to.

POINT 10. The team will take all the surveillance information and spend hours going over every detail, and they will debate and get tense as they hash out the significance of certain intelligence pieces of information as they work out a plan of action.

POINT 11. The Intelligence people will take advantage of the social needs of someone close to their prey. They might give his wife some opportunities for fun things away from the house. They know how to take advantage very quickly & smoothly of the social needs of people who are around a Monarch slave. (They put used car salesmen to shame.)

POINT 12. The intelligence people have the capability to enter without keys.

POINT 13. They practice "motionless following." That means they followed people in shifts. They will follow by tag teams so to speak, and use car phones.

POINT 14. They like to use "trade" occupations as a cover.

POINT 15. The man will give a business card which had an actual office, etc. but which was a front. They will be willing to give a business card--which is a real address, but only a CIA front. The day they realize they are exposed, the phone will quit working. Handlers and men within the Network often use business cards and other cards they carry in their wallets as codes indicating various things.

In intelligence operations, the agents will take their "intelligence--that is the info they have collected, and put it through 4 steps. 1) "direction", who is going to collect what where. 2) "collection", the actual spying. 3) "processing", analyzing and integrating what they have collected, and 4) "dissemination", distributing (via reports, talks, charts) the analyzed and rewritten reports to their customers.

Most of the intelligence groups have a reputation for distorting the truth in the third stage to fit their agency's "party line". Count St.-Germain (169?-1784) is a good example of an intelligence officer. He was one of the leading Illuminati of his time. He did alchemy for Louis XV, and magic for the Masonic leader Karl, prince of Hesse. He spied for the Dutch and the French, and who knows who else. His fundamental allegiance was to the Mystery Religions of the Illuminati.

Modern day examples are Lord Victor Rothschild, one of the leaders of MI-6, Sir Dick Goldsmith White, Jewish, Mason, & leader of MI-6 from 5/6-69, Sir John Rennie leader of MI-6 from 69-73 whose son Charles Tatham Ogilvy Rennie was a known, major drug runner, Major General Sir John Sinclair, of the Illuminati, MI-6 chief from '53-56.

MI-5 has had a number of Illuminati/Freemasons called Director-Generals (rather than Chiefs) running it too. Nigel West, a pseudonym for a man who worked for MI-6 devoted an entire chapter in his book MI-5 about how Hugh Astor and Victor Rothschild ran Britain's double agent division.

ALL, I repeat ALL of the German agents spying on England during W.W. II were double-agents actually working for the British. If anyone tried to work for the German's secret service who wasn't disloyal, that person could only work for the Germans IF they turned into a double agent for the British.

Today, almost every one working against MI-5, MI-6 and the Illuminati's New World Order, is a double agent. This book may be followed by a number of similar books by double agents of the New World Order's Network. CIA Operations Involving George White George White, working for the MK Ultra Mind Control program supplied during the 1950s a long list of prostitutes to the CIA for study. During the 1950s, the CIA was refining its knowledge of what makes a prostitute tick. How do you use them? How do you train them? How do you teach them to do both espionage and seduction. What are the elements of seduction? All these sciences were refined. For instance, if a prostitute stays longer than she is paid for, she will shock the john, and he will find his ego greatly boosted. With the right methods, the prostitute agent can elicit all types of secrets from the vulnerable male. With the ability to create Black Widow Spiders (deadly seductive Monarch alters), the Illuminati gained one more sure method to control others. Seduction and then blackmail. The CIA, just as FBI J. Edgar Hoover did, keeps detailed files on sexual preferences. It supplies what people want, but the supply comes with a price that the individual is now under blackmail.

B. Blackmail

This dirty game has been honed to a fine art, which is a standard feature of the Illuminati/intelligence groups. The CIA term for blackmail is an "OK FIX." When they use a person's past sins to force someone to do something they refer to this as "biographic leverage." Any weak point in a person can and will be exploited. Sexual entrapment for blackmail is referred to as a 'HONEY TRAP". Black widow alters are being trained and sent out for this purpose. Blackmail of the slave begins when it is beginning to get verbal.

At 3, the cults will tell a child they have a bomb planted inside them, that the cult can detonate if they don't obey. In order to blackmail, or threaten, you have to have something to threaten the person with. Men are frequently entrapped by sexual behavior which is criminal. Sometimes they are also entrapped by murder. The Monarch slave will be allowed to have children so that they can be blackmailed into complying to save the children or grandchildren. The Monarch slave in turn may be used to blackmail others. Certain alters are trained in this. A Monarch Beta model is highly trained in seduction and will seduce a man. Then an alter which feigns death will take the body and the man will be threatened for having killed the woman. Many politicians and ministers are operating under blackmail today.

When Jimmy Swaggart's ministry fell, over 200 Assembly of God ministers called headquarters and confessed that they had similar problems. The extent that blackmail is being used by the NWO would boggle people's minds. Porn films are taken of the Monarch victims, so that they can be used to blackmail the victim. Monarch victims are forced to commit ritual murders which are photographed and then used to blackmail the poor mind-controlled victim. Perhaps, one of the cruelest forms of blackmail which is carried routinely by handlers, is the threat to incarcerate the mind-controlled slave in a mental hospital. The co-author Fritz has read a number of books about the situation in America's mental hospitals, and sections of these books will literally make a person vomit from disgust. The legal climate in this nation has made it easy to stick someone else in a mental hospital. Once there, they are routinely given tranquilizers Mellaril, Thorazine or Stelazine so that they can't rebel against the most wretched conditions.

Nadine Scolla was a nurse in a mental hospital who wrote an expose based on her diary while she worked. Her book is entitled Keeper of the Keys (Westlake Village, CA: F&J Publishing Corp., 1976)

The following are quotes from her account of working in a mental hospital, "How can they allow such places to exist? They really need to reform, but who is going to do it?.. .We're supposed to be civilized and yet many people are treated worse than the lowest form of animals. Who cares about these patients? (p. 15).. .

Doctors receive one hundred thousand dollars a year starting salary, and the nursing personnel receive the highest pay in the profession, and yet the patients get the worst of care. (p. 19).. .

I could see that the patients had no rights here. (p.27)... [on page 49-50 she reports about a secret hospital grave yard where patients could be buried without anyone knowing].. .Do you remember the young rape victim and how they treated her - the girl with beautiful olive skin and long brown hair?... They filled the bath tub with cubes of large ice and dropped her into it. They removed her from that and placed her in scalding hot water. She came out red as a lobster. Her body was badly blistered. This treatment didn't help, so they decided upon shock treatment. 'I never saw anything so awful in all my life. They forcibly strapped her down, tied her hands and legs, stuck the electrodes to her head and placed a tongue blade in her mouth. She couldn't scream, wiggle, or do anything. After the treatment.. .Tammey was dead. Her body was limp - she was still trapped in the chair. It was more than I could take. I had to go off by myself and cry.' (p.51)

I don't understand how our local government can allow these people to be treated worse than a dog in the local pound. At least the animals have their own cubicle and their own food dish. (p.73)"

According to what Nadine Scolla was told, half of the patients in mental hospitals are schizophrenics. A hefty percentage of these "schizophrenics" are really programmed multiples who are being quietly discarded by the system. How many victims of trauma-based total mind-control have ended up sent to mental hospitals? Many tens of thousands, maybe the exact number will never be known. America's mental hospitals have also played an active role in the programming and the research for the programming.

C. Bribes

Their skill at bribes is an extension of understanding human nature, and human needs and wants. It works together with blackmail.

D. The Control Of The Milieu

One of the basic ideas of creating a mind-controlled slave, is to control the entire milieu of the slave. This is expressed in Nexus Seven. The environment of the slave is designed for what is called "story immersion." A Monarch slave who has been given the basic Alice In Wonderland and Wizard of Oz programming will see objects connected to these story lines in almost every store. Restaurants in Dallas and San Antonio (The Time Machine Restaurants) which are used to reinforce programming, have mirrors on their walls, doors and ceilings and their waitresses dressed like programming script characters--such as Dorothy of the Wizard of Oz.

It is no accident that one of the leading Satanic singers calls himself Ozzy Ozburn, or that a certain Mexican witch calls herself Oz. It is no accident that recently a witch wrote the book The Witches of Oz. It is no accident that the elite have promoted the Wizard of Oz theme with television product advertisements. It is no accident that the U.S. has Oz stamps, that television has Oz cartoons, and Oz characters are appearing all over the place. For a while even Kansas had an Oz theme to their license plates ("Land of Ahs").

Hillary Clinton, (a 6th level Illuminati witch & sadistic Monarch slave handler) received a witch's hat in anticipation that she would be called the wicked witch of the West, and that Mary Matalin (who married Clinton's top campaign advisor James Carville) had a photograph of Hillary Clinton as the Wicked Witch of the West on her wall with the caption "I will get you, my pretty, and your little dog too!"

The witch's hat and the caption both are popular with these people associated with the White House because they are so rich in triple and quadruple meanings. The deadliest meaning is that the Monarch Slaves that sexually service Hillary and Bill Clinton have Wizard of Oz programming. Hillary is really the Wicked Witch of the West! to these poor Beta slaves. The constant bumping into Wizard of Oz paraphernalia or pictures of it helps focus the slave's mind onto their Wizard of Oz programming.

MGM Grand recently built a multi-million dollar pyramid complex with a theme park which is based on the Wizard of Oz and the Alice in Wonderland themes. The hotel at the MGM Grand is the world's largest with 5,000 rooms, which shows that mind-control is big business. A team of actors dressed up in the Wizard of Oz theme like Dorothy and her friends (Tin man & Scarecrow) and walked on a yellow brick road constructed in the MGM complex. Emerald City is part of the theme park. The complex cost $1 billion according to the Las Vegas Review Journal, Dec. 19, '93 page Al. This complex is given the occult name Luxor, and is at 3900 Las Vegas Boulevard South. It has been advertised as the "Next Wonder of the World." It's a shame that the 1990's big wonder is a programming center.

Another part of the control of the Milieu is labelled "planned spontaneity" by the controllers. The Monarch victim repeatedly finds experiences "just happening." These are the coincidences that are so mystical that people feel there must be a higher significance to the event. Many of these are well-staged events. A slave may try to escape marrying the person they are commanded to marry. The handlers stay one step ahead of the slave, and through a series of coincidences introduce another acceptable person. The slave in an effort to escape grabs the first available substitute who has been coached on how to push all the correct green mental buttons to get the escapee to marry them. 'The slave jumps from the frying pan into the fire. Things which validate the programming and the mystical beliefs of the cult will be repeatedly introduced. The skill in introducing these secretly into the life of the slave are amazing. There is no limit to what can be attempted, and some of these staged events are worthy of Houdini.

The occult world has placed their symbols all over the United States. The most esteemed institutions such as

Walt Disney are fountains of the occult. Walt Disney movies are steeped in magic, and yet American society is so drowned in the occult, they have been desensitized to how it permeates American culture. The concept of "Sacred knowledge" versus "profane knowledge" is introduced. If the slave should escape, the first choice is to send someone who can pick them up. I have heard of slaves escaping from Europe on the plane, only to be picked up by a handler when they land in New York.

Mt. Shasta's programming site, accessed by helicopter, specializes in reprogramming escaped slaves. Jerry Lee Lewis has a notorious reputation among the Network as being exceptionally sadistic in reprogramming escapees. However, if the slave is not needed, and is wanting out--tens of thousands of them have been locked up in mental hospitals as paranoid schizophrenics. In the mental hospitals they can continue to get drugs and electro-shock--the very things that caused their problems in the first place. The insiders have a name for these slaves, they call them "broken butterflies".

If the slave tries to go to court, according to some the Non Compos Mentis Law prevents them from testifying against their abusers. At any rate, with or without this law it would not be easy for a victim to get his testimony accorded the respect it deserves. If they get psychiatric help--their therapist can not tell anyone about what they have suffered, and the therapist is hamstrung about what they can do in court for the client. Recently, 15 states have created statutes of limitations on sadistic rape. This is in response to all the Monarch slaves who have begun recovering memories.

The extent that entire culture and society protect the Monarch Programming is enormous. Anyone admitting MPD (aka DID) is in fear of being labelled crazy and losing some of their rights and their job. Because the conspiracy (the Network) is so vast, an examination of how the Illuminati controls society would be needed to cover the subject of milieu control. This would take an entire book. The reader is encouraged to read some of Fritz Springmeier's other works which expose how the Illuminati's control extends over all levels of society.

Most people have settled their minds on this issue without getting the facts. When the real facts are shown, it blows people's minds. Some of the easiest and everyday items to show people, are simply a dollar bill--with its Illuminati symbol on the back, and a can of vegetables which has a bar code on it. Every bar code has 3 secret and non-functional numbers in the bar code, which are 666.

The silent hammer that strikes out at the Monarch slave is that everywhere they go, the occult world is there. Several cars are named after Satan. The name Saturn, and Belair are well-known as occult names for Satan. When Freemasonry's greatest philosopher/Illuminati Mind-control Programmer/Grand Druid Council member Manly P. Hall wrote Cabalistic Keys to the Lord's Prayer (Los Angeles, CA: The Philosophical Research Society, 1964, p. 10) he wrote "Saturn = Hallowed be thy name."

The men who head these auto manufacturing companies are in the Illuminati. There is no question that they were NOT ignorant of the significance of these names. Many other occult names of big significance to the Illuminati involving eagles have been placed on cars. Electra is a recent car named after a demon. Viper is a slow and deadly creature, why would one want to use it to name a car? Viper is also the name of an important demon. Viper is found in Black Widow Monarch slaves. Some readers may begin to feel that things are being stretched. The connections of numerous car names to the occult could be exposed, but that is not the purpose of this book. We will quote straight from a company their own explanation for their car's name in this next paragraph, simply to make the point, whether other perceive it or not, the Monarch slaves have to exist in a world full of satanic/occult symbology that ordinary people don't understand.

Mazda's president, Norimasa Furuta, published a book in 1990 which it intended to give to all its employees. The book explains its purpose "...we have written a booklet to explain how MAZDA became the name of our corporation and what it means in order to help everyone who is related to MAZDA enhance their creativity and develop their potential." The book entitled The Globe: In Search of the Origins of Mazda, goes on to explain about the founder of Mazda car company, Matsuda Jujiro, who is heralded as a great seer who "believed in himself, in his friends, and in heaven, and he achieved a truly global vision." Mazda company's book The Globe then explains that the company name Mazda comes from the god Ahura-Mazda which was the "god of light" and the "god of wisdom" according to the book. Jujiro believed that Mazda represents the "origin of civilization." The "god of light" (Lucifer) is often credited for starting civilization by those who aren't Christians. The name Mazda according The Globe symbolizes "unlimited possibility and stimulates people's dreams." Mazda's book puts down in writing their New Age goals to "establish peace for mankind with a global point of view," and "a spiritual foundation" toward which to work toward a "new age." The book further states civilization started in Egypt and that Christianity evolved from the pagan mystery religions.

Another book associated with Mazda cars, is the book The Meaning of Life given to everyone who test-drives a Mazda--that was as long as book supplies last. I quote the book "...the time when regions and continents existed keeping a certain distance from each other is a thing of the past.... We are eager to transmit the meaning of MAZDA to the children of MAZDA who will create a new MAZDA... With a strong desire for peace and through the production and sale of automobiles and machine tools, MAZDA has advanced on a course to unite the people of the world" (pp 78-79.) An adept of the Illuminati is taught about Ahura Mazda. He would know that Mazda was the Persian God of Light who was also known as Ormus--which is another name for the Preiure de Sion, which is a powerful group protecting the 13th Illuminati Bloodline.

Some of the names of cars which could be triggering to SRA survivors include the Demon, the Vagabond, Dodge Ram (Goat of Mendes), Buick's Phoenix, Ford's Cobra, Mercury's Cougar, Eagle Jeeps, the Le Baron Eagle Logo, Navistar Eagle Truck (which may have Eagle mud flaps, and Goodyear Eagle GT tires). For most of us an **eagle** is a symbol of what is noble and beautiful. Historically, the eagle and the snake have been the logo of the tribe of Dan, considered the "black sheep" of the 12 tribes. The Prophet Hosea said, "Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He shall come as an eagle against the house of the LORD, because they have transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law." (HOS 8:1) And the Prophet Obadiah said, "Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, saith the Lord." (OB 1:4)

The co-authors of this book didn't create Illuminati history nor their symbols. We are only reporting on them. We would like the eagle simply to represent what is noble and fearfully made by God. Indeed, in some verses like in Isaiah the eagle has a positive connotation. However, the construct, the refraining that is done by the Illuminati upon these symbols is that the eagle represents Satan's empire. The Assyrian, Roman, and Nazi empires used the eagle. The Illuminati point these things out to their initiates, and ask, "Is this a symbol of Christianity, or the power of our lineages which ruled those empires?" It is not the co-authors desire to interpret what Hosea and Obadiah meant. Nor is it our desire to dissuade anyone from buying the cars mentioned above. Our only point is that the survivor lives in a world of occult symbols and occult programming triggers. How do you convince someone to quit fearing the power of their abusers when it has its symbols on their money, their canned food, their cars, and their churches? (Yes, there are such things as All-Seeing Eyes in some churches and Masonic logos on others, and other occult symbols. Hislop's The Two Babylons is devoted to showing all the pagan symbology in the Catholic church.)

Are we exaggerating? Fritz went into one fast food restaurant and the cups and placemats had a wizard throwing occult energy balls with occult symbols, the next fast food place had place mats showing the King Arthur story which is an extremely important myth for the Illuminati (the quest for the Grail!), the next fast food place had place mats giving children instructions on how to hypnotize your parents, the next one had a Wizard of Oz theme, and the next one was selling occult movies. Fritz kept these place mats to use in his talks!

This nation is immersed in the occult and so desensitized they don't realize it. The public thinks nothing of a Gargoyle Coloring/Activity book. This type of thing is commonplace in American society. If one examines Golden Book's Gargoyle Coloring/Activity book (1995) still being sold, you will find Gargoyle demons named after geographic locations that the child can color, you will find a Magus with a Book of Spells that the child can color. For activities, the child can duplicate pictures, work codes, match shadows with their figures, match objects and images, and work with robot heads of which several can be placed on one body. All these activities reinforce the type of skills that the programmers want children under mind-control to have. The book has castles, robots, a sentence about a kitten which is a code about a computer disk, and mazes. A perfect book for the programmers to give a child, and the naive public walks by these kinds of books on their store shelves everyday.

The Illuminati's mind-control goes on in part right in front of America's nose, and they don't see it. One of the saddest things for Monarch mind-control survivors is that the Programmers are so systematic in destroying everything of beauty and value in life. Everything conceivable that can be degraded will be. This mind control has spread like an unseen cancer to every segment of life, and threatens to destroy this nation from the inside out. Imagine that every time you heard your own national anthem that it reinforced your mind-control programming? That is the life of these victims of mind-control.

We wish the American people could realize that George Bush and Bill Clinton are on the same team. Both are descendants of the top 13 Illuminati bloodlines, both are totally corrupt morally, both are into the occult, and both were trained by the same person in subliminal language techniques. The best in subliminal language techniques is said to be Tony Robins, and he is who the elite got to train both George Bush and Bill Clinton.

Monarch Mind Controlled Slaves have been created since the late 1940s. Since the early ‘60s, Monarch Slaves have been specially created for American presidents. These models are called Presidential Models. There are now living about 600 people (Monarch slaves) who were created into Presidential Models. That is a large harem. Presidential Models fit a particular set of physical standards, not one of the Presidential sex slaves has been black. President Kennedy, Johnson, Nixon, Ford, Bush, Reagan and Clinton have all been slave handlers.

Many slaves have some deeper alters who have a realization that their Presidents are in on the corruption, how does that make them feel? The cults which program pay particular attention to show the child, men in police uniforms and ministers of churches which are participating with the cult. This has the effect of embedding in the mind of the victim that there is no escape--that the entire structure of society is secretly in cahoots with the programmers. Not all policemen nor all ministers are dirty, but because of the Monarch program, the entire structure of American society has been seriously compromised to the extent that all sectors are infiltrated and contaminated.

Unfortunately, the worst fears of the victims, are in reality close to the truth. The Monarch victim is further victimized because no one wants to believe them in how controlled American society has become. The truth is we are on the verge of losing civilization as we know it, and entering into a dark sadistic slave-master society that will make Hitler’s Third Reich look like child play. What part of our lives are not controlled. We go to our jobs--our boss is naturally given the right to control us. For many centuries, the Machiavellian elite have provided the masses with "Bread and Circus". That means "keep the people fed and entertained and they will not rebel."

After Americans come home they are kept busy with entertainment. The only exception to their work, and TV watching, are their trips to their churches. Even the various religions are secretly under elite control. See Fritz’s Be Wise As Serpents book for an 800 page expose of how the various Christian groups and New Age Religions are controlled. The point is that people are kept busy and occupied, and they seldom try to step outside of the path that the elite want them to stay in. A slave’s front system will be a normal busy person for years, while the deeper alters serve their various functions for the elite. There is simply little that occurs that shakes the routine that gets established. If the handler doesn’t live with the slave himself, he will often place another slave as the spouse, to oversee the slave. The marriage couple’s deeper alters spy on each other. The schools that the slaves will go to are often controlled by the abusers. Some of the more obvious ones are **Groton**, a school for the elite’s children, and Santa Clara University and Williamette University used by the Illuminati to train their politicians for public office.

The Beta Theta Pi is a political fraternity through which quite a few Illuminati politicians have joined. The Jesuit schools throughout the United States are used for abuse and programming. Note, that Bill Clinton went to the Jesuit university in Washington, D.C. called Georgetown University. A number of the military school that parents ship their elementary boys off to are used by the elite for the ongoing abuse and programming of slaves. The Illuminati foundation, the W.K. Kellogg Foundation, gave the initial funding for the **Quest Program** for the public schools. The Quest Program is being adopted by various public schools. It also goes by the names Skills for Adolescence, Skills for Growing, and Skills for Living. One of the early editions of Quest had an exercise called "elevator" where the teacher uses visualization and guided imagery. The teacher places her school children in a mild hypnotic trance described in the Quest literature as "a quiet contemplative mood." Then the teacher tells the students, "You are on an elevator." Each button on the elevator represents an age of the child. When the students push a button, the elevator takes them back to experiences at that age.

It is not possible in the scope of this book to cover how every sector of our lives are controlled. Those who are interested need to read some of Fritz Springmeier’s other writing including Be Wise As Serpents. However, it would be appropriate to cover how television shows and Hollywood are intimately linked to Monarch Mind-

Control programming. A great deal that is coming out of Hollywood is linked to mind control in some fashion. Some of the hottest entertainers are Monarch slaves, such as **Madonna**, a Marilyn Monroe replacement. Co-author Fritz was given a catalog to Vidimax, which is an New Jersey occult porn video club by someone wanting to help his research. This cult video club sells actually snuff films. They sell the real life footage of cannibalism, virgin sacrifices, occult rituals, and worse. When Madonna was a teenage slave with the name Louise Chiccone living in NY East Village, a real life film was made of her being raped (a setup), and then her cult family taking the rapist and sacrificing him. Vidimax sells this for $19 to their members. Some of their videos are live footage of how kidnapped people have been tortured into becoming slaves. One of the catalog listing says, "tortured until their wills are broken and they become Olga's submissive slaves!...WARNING EXTREME GRAPHIC VIOLENCE...BACK BY POPULAR DEMAND." By the way, the Illuminati have their own private porn distribution. Many people ask, "Why do they need mind-controlled slaves?" Part of the answer is they need them to make their sick porn.

The history of the connections between the entertainment world and the occult and royalty go far back. One group of people known for their travelling entertainment, the **gypsies**, have some interesting parallels with the Illuminati bloodlines. A gypsy proverb is, "If you want to stay survive, you must be a devil." Both groups have kept their bloodlines and their identity. Both are secretive. Both groups live double lives. Gypsy children will be given a secret magical name, and a name to use for outsiders. Gypsy children are often baptized in a magical circle. Both groups are into the occult, such as cannibalism, black magic, the evil eye, and white slavery. The gypsies believe in Charani, a big bird consumed by fire who rises from the ashes. The Illuminati call this the Phoenix. Both groups have a secret code that allows them to do anything to outsiders (who are called "Gadja" by gypsies meaning "enemy").

The gypsies originated in India and migrated west to Iran and Turkey and then to Greece and then into western Europe in the 1400s just prior to an occult revival in Europe. The largest gypsy tribe in India is Ghor. They follow Durga (Kali). Other tribes also worship Kali under different names such as the Black Virgin for which they make an effigy called "Bibiaca" which simply means "lady". Gypsies made up early groups of travelling entertainers. Sir Francis Bacon, who wrote under the pen name of Shakespeare, was the founder/leader of the Rosicrucians of his time. (The proof of who Shakespeare was is in several books, for instance, see Alfred Dodd's research in his excellent book Francis Bacon 's Personal Life Story.) The previous two paragraphs are offered as examples of how close the occult world and entertainment have been over the centuries. The history of the two worlds coincide for many centuries back, so it shouldn't come as a surprise that today's entertainment industry is still closely linked to the occult world, nor should it come as a surprise that the Illuminati have made sure they have control over the industry.

During W.W.II, the entire country was mobilized for the war effort and Hollywood was recruited so to speak to help with the war effort. For instance, cartoons were created as training films and as war propaganda. The military hired thousands of entertainers for **USO Camp Shows, Inc.** which was under the Special Services Division of the U.S. Army. Bob Hope, who worked for MI-6, British overseas intelligence, was the leading entertainer for USO tours. After the war broke out he went on 12 major overseas tours which took him and his beautiful troop of stunning knock-out girls to every front of the war--from the quiet fronts like Panama to places like Italy and North Africa. To make a long story short, Bob Hope was used to run messages to programmed multiples for British & American Intelligence. Later, after the war Bob Hope became a slave handler. In some of Fritz's other writings, Bob Hope's connections to the Illuminati are gone into. U.S.O. magicians were found to be the most overall popular USO show.

The **International Brotherhood of Magicians** is intimately connected to the occult world and puts out a magazine The Linking Ring. Under the auspices of the USO (controlled by military intelligence) the country western industry's roots developed. The country western industry became a front for drug running, money laundering and white slavery for the Programmers of Monarch total Mind-controlled slaves. The USO also created at least 200 bands, from which came Lawrence Welk's band, Sam Donahue's band, Claude Thombill's band, and Guy Lombardo's band to name a few.

Over the last 45 years perhaps the most popular place for couriers to be signalled to meet was by someone holding a bird in a cage or at a shop with birdcages. The allusion to carrier pigeons is so obvious. Look at a caption "Speaking of WRENS" with a cartoon from Bob Hope's book I Never Left Home (NY: Simon & Schuster, 1944) written in 1944 during the middle of W.W. II. The cartoon shows Bob chasing a girl with a bird cage and saying, "Tweet, Tweet, Tweet." Hypnotic commands are given 3 times. What seems like a harmless cartoon, is more like a signal telling people that Bob Hope is in charge of a flock of carrier pigeons (couriers), which we know he was. When talking to a group of soldiers during the war, Bob said, "In London the bobbies caught a guy walking around in the fog with a bird cage giving the mating call but the American counsel got me."

Walter Bowart in his researcher's edition of Operation Mind Control discusses the case of two W.W. II vets, who had their W.W. II memories erased by the military using drugs, hypnosis and behavior modification, before they were released from the army in 1947. This is found in Cassiday, Karen and Judith A. Lyons. "Recall of Traumatic Memories Following Cerebral Vascular Accident" Journal of Traumatic Stress. NY: Plenum Pub. Vol. 5, No. 4, Oct. 1992, p. 627.

The point is that evidence is surfacing from various locations that the U.S. government was carrying out mind-control during WW II. This was done under the auspices of British Intelligence (MI-6) during W.W. II. When Canada entered the W.W. II with Britain, one of the best British secret agent training schools was set up between Whitly, Ont. and Oshawa, Ont. on Lake Ontario's north shore across from the U.S.-Can. border. The site was called **Intrepid Park**. Agents called it "the camp" or "the farm".

Today, the CIA have their own "farm" (Camp Perry). The official British name for this spy camp was British Security Coordination Special Training School No. 103 & Hydra. STS 103. It was also known as Camp X. British SOE (Special Operations Executive) set itself in NYC. Americans from the FBI and OSS went to Camp X for training, as well as the SOE,SIS, BSC, and the Canadian RCMP. The British were already using mind control at this stage. The connections are endless.

Edgar Allen Poe, who was into the occult and worked for British intelligence wrote The Raven. Vincent Price starred in Hollywood's version of the Raven, and passages of the book have been used as codes for a number of Monarch slaves, who had to memorize portions of the book with their photographic memories. Warner Communications came out with the book/& movie "Sybil" which is about a woman with multiple personalities. The book and movie "Sybil" are full of mental slides (misinformation detours are called "slides" by the CIA) to prevent people from looking and thinking in the right directions concerning MPD. Structured MPD (DID) like Sybil's, occurs only from very specific trauma-based programming. Even the name Sybil is an occult name, although the idea that occult was involved in creating Sybil's MPD is not hinted at. The chief financial power behind Warner Communications was the Illuminati/Pilgrim Society member Eugene R. Black, retired head of the World Bank. Warner Communications is headquartered at Rockefeller Plaza, and has produced quite a few occult movies and occult books, for instance their movie about a demon "It Lives Again."

When Monarch slaves watch television, the shows they watch can relate to their programming in the following ways.

1. First, many of the shows have code words or programming scenarios which are deliberately in the shows to control the slaves: such as Star Wars, Star Trek, The Wizard of Oz, the Love Boat, Fantasy Island, I Dream of Jeanie (Delta Genie in the bottle programming, and "YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND" type trigger), The Little Princess, the Miss Universe Contest 1995, Duck Tails (created to control child slaves, with deliberate triggers such as "earthquack"), Bobby's World cartoon, Steven Spielberg's Tiny Toons, My Fair Lady (used in several of the slave finishing schools), ET (for alien programming), etc.

2. Some of the shows which are supposedly pure fiction show elements of actual Illuminati ceremonies, Illuminati history, drug running methods, etc., such Bell, Book & Candle, Burn Witch Burn, Curse of The Voodoo, Equinox, Manos, The Hands of Fate, Witchcraft '70, as Spirits of the Living Dead, Frankenstein, Night of the Living Dead, Bewitched (with actual witches as actors). Raising Cain shows torture and MPD. Hellraiser 3 depicts "gatekeepers."

3. Some of the shows portray the Monarch total mind-control program (!): Telephon, The Manchurian Candidate, Videodrome, Labyrinth, Trancer II, The Attack of the Robots, Dr. Goldfoot & the Bikini Machine, Attack of the Puppet People, The War of the Zombies, Colossus-The Forbin Project, and The Point of No Return starring Jane Fonda's Bridgett, who is connected to the OTO. (By the way, Monarch mind-controlled slaves have been shown the movie "Telephon" to emphasize to them that their minds are controlled by their

handlers, and for them not to forget it.)

4. Many of the movies and shows use Monarch slaves as actors & performers: such as Rosanne Barr, Bette Mittler, Marilyn Monroe, Loretta Lynn, Crystal Gayle and possibly Wayne Newton (a child singing protege, who never wrote a check for himself in his life). They also use lots of slave handlers such as Frank Sinatra, Peter Lawford, & Bob Hope. And occasionally they use programmers such as Anton LaVey, Jerry Lee Lewis.

Cisco, the co-author of this book, while in the Illuminati, was given repeated reason to believe that **Elvis Presley** was also a Multiple programmed by the Illuminati. We know that at times he went by code names, one which is publicly known was John Burrows. His group, called the Memphis Mafia, have talked about his ability to go into altered states of consciousness, even seem dead. Recently, another Illuminati slave, also stated that Elvis was an Illuminati slave. Cisco points out that Elvis' twin brother was dead at his birth, and that Elvis knew that this gave him double spiritual power (according to Illuminati beliefs). The Illuminati will often kill a twin, so that the other will get the power of two souls. From what we understand, Elvis Presley's handler/programmer was a Col. Tom Parker.

Elvis belonged to a team of 4 Illuminati men. Elvis is publicly known to have studied yoga, numerology, drugs, and received some new age spiritual training in an academy overlooking Pasadena, CA. He was an active member in the Theosophical Society. After Elvis Presley supposedly died, the Sun International Corp. came out with an Elvis Presley album called Orion, with the winged-sun-disk on its cover. The winged-sun-disk is an important Egyptian magical symbol used by the OTO, Theosophical Society etc. Mae Boren Axton, known as the Grand Dame of Nashville, played a pivotal role in Elvis Presley's life. Elvis & the Beatles were chosen by the Illuminati to introduce rock music to the United States. There is no doubt about Elvis' and the Beatles' musical talent.

Elvis' close friend Wayne Newton is highly suspected as also being a slave. Elvis worked with Burt Reynolds and Jerry Lee Lewis who also connect in with the Illuminati's mind-control operations. The authors are puzzled why Elvis' grave, which had millions of dollars spent on its security, has his name misspelled? We are also puzzled why Elvis, who repeatedly stated he wanted to be buried beside his mother, is buried beside his father, who he privately stated wasn't even his real father. Why has no one ever tried to collect insurance on Elvis' death? Once again, it seems, the front stories that the public hears are full of inconsistencies. We believe that some people in the Illuminati know the true story about Elvis Presley. For sure Elvis' mysterious mind-control programmer/handler Col. Tom Parker would know.

Star Trek, The Next Generation

The original series of Star Trek had lost money, but in September, 1987 a new series called Star Trek, The Next Generation was started with $1 million dollars budgeted for each of its 24 episodes. The episodes pushed the Illuminati's agenda in every show. People were being aroused to bombard Paramount with requests for a new Star Trek. Bob Justman who worked with Roddenberry said, "When I left Star Trek in 1968 it was a disaster. It was a failure as far as the network was concerned." That is because it didn't make money. Hollywood tells us it makes these movies because they are what the public want and that they have to go where the money is--the closer truth is that Hollywood makes movies that push an agenda--Hollywood makes movies that Hollywood wants to make. And since Star Trek was part of the NWO's mind-control, the show and it successors had to go on.

How important is Star Trek? A witness has talked about Boeing workers sneaking off their jobs and hiding in the tunnels underneath the huge Seattle Boeing plant so they could watch Star Trek shows. This enormous Boeing plant is used for rituals and mind-control. This Boeing building is enormous, for it is where they have assembly lines to build the huge jets, like the 747s, 707s, etc. An extensive maze of tunnels lays underneath the main building, large enough to accommodate all the tens of thousands of workers on any shift.

It is interesting who was associated with the production of Star Trek: The Next Generation. Script writers for the Next Generation had a Star Trek Bible to write from. These script writers included such persons as Alan Adler, Dennis Putnam Bailey, three Grays, Debra Mclntrye, Ronald Moore, Grant Rosenberg, Randee Russell, Bryan Stewart. These are common names within the Illuminati.

Coca-cola, an Illuminati-run corporation, was one of the major advertisers for Star Trek, and the god-man Dalai Lama of Tibet, who is a Star Trek fan, visited the cast of Star Trek in 1988 in Hollywood and got his picture taken with members of the cast. Probert who worked with Star Trek productions also worked with Walt Disney's Imagineering subsidiary.

Here are some of the Star Trek scenes:

· A Wizard of Oz head is shown on a show.

· Data is a humanoid with an on-off switch who can store vast amounts of data. His memories can be so strong that personalities in those memories fight for control of Data. (See the episode aired 1/23/89).

· Holodeck creations of people (humans who are mirror images) who are aware of themselves. This is a well-used concept for programming Monarch alters. The first episode with this aired 1/1 1/88 and got several awards--an Emmy Award, and an award from the George Foster Peabody Award board. A few other items which will show the reader the occult agenda of Star Trek, the Next Generation and how it fits into the mind-control programming (dates that the show aired are in parenthesis): a Reptilian Race called Tellisians (10/12/87), a Cosmological Egg-from the cabalistic magical world view (10/26/87), a brain scanned by a probe (11/9/87), age regression, reverse aging and memory loss (2/8/88), android duels & a crystalline body (1/18/88), a race of computer operators (2/1/88), an ozone hole in the atmosphere kills a planet (2/15/88), a matriarchal oligarchy--shades of the Mother of Darkness's oligarchy (1/25/88), people who are only holographic projections (4/11/88), a cyberneticist & androids (2/13/89), doubles (mirror images) (4/3/89), half-human half-robot people (5/8/89), clones of people (5/22/89), a holodeck person who doesn't know his last name (6/19/89), Betazoids (11/13/89), and a drug which causes hysterical paranoia (7/17/89).

Colorado is the area where trauma-based alien-theme programming is carried out with a mock UFO. Gaston, one of the programmers in that area, is turning out top secret Monarchs with solometric systems. NORAD and Colorado Springs and several other Colorado locations are major headquarters for end-time call back programming. Interestingly, they have placed the Star Trek Fan Club in Colorado.

Videodrome

This recent movie portrays Monarch Mind Control and S&M. Mind-controlled slaves are frequently used to create S&M films. The Illuminati's S&M porn film industry has been booming for over 4 decades. (Compare the name Videodrome with Vidimax mentioned above.) The porn films done of a particular Monarch slave who is used as a porn star will be coded according to the code name given to the star. Let's say they call the Star "Lily", then the porn movies will be cataloged Lily 1, Lily 2, Lily 3, etc. This type of porn involves a great deal of real torture, humiliation, and actual deaths of people. This type of porn is portrayed in the Hollywood movie Videodrome. The main character in Videodrome represents what a mind-controlled slave would see. The main character Max is told, "I want you to open up to me." He then feels intense pain and doubles up and falls down, and submits, "all right." Then he is ordered to "Give us channel 83." He then proceeds under the mind-control to kill two partners, who he has previously liked and with whom he has had no quarrels. He is further told, "You are an assassin for Videodrome. They can program you. They can make you do what they want."

Interestingly, the name of the brand of cigars smoked on the show are named Medicis. He is told, "To become the new flesh you must kill the old flesh." This is the type of suicide programming given Monarch slaves. He is ordered, "Come to Mickey." Mickey happens to be part of Mickey Mouse programming and one of the nicknames of the programmer Michael Aquino. He is then shown a picture of suicide. Then the hypnotic command, "Come to Mickey" is said three times. "Long live the new flesh." The movie announces, "The battle for the mind of North America will be fought in Videodrome."

Trancer II

This is also billed as a "cult classic". Who decides what is a "cult classic"? At any rate, this is another film which depicts part of the Monarch total mind-control. We will not take the space to cover indepth, but will touch on a few items here. The main character is McKnowlty which sounds a lot like MK Ultra. Is it a play on words? It could be. A council like the Illuminati's with lifetime appointments is in the film. The persons under control in Trancer II bear some resemblance to the Monarchs. Some of the language that is used is lifted from the language handlers use. "FOLLOW MY INSTRUCTIONS, SLEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP" a person is instructed. "RABBIT SPEAKING", "YOU BELONG IN A GREEN WORLD." The movie also has Freeze codes which are a color.

Krull

This 1983 movie with Ken Marshall and Lysette Anthony is just one more example of hundreds of Hollywood movies which show some aspect of the Illuminati &/or their mind-control. Krull is an island ruled by sorcery. A prince searches for a magic ornament to save his bride and their kingdom. The film has a poppy field, castles, an All-Seeing-Eye, armies of robots, Satan, and other features that a Monarch internal world will be set up with. A person can turn into a dog, pig or lion.

The Little Princess

This Shirley Temple movie was just one of many Hollywood films used for programming. The princess has a nice "dream". Slaves are programmed to view their service in the real world as dreams, and their fantasy worlds in their internal mind as reality. The Princess has a scene with hot cross buns and ravens. This scene was used for programming. The Princess sits on a throne. There are fairies and a joker, which are used in programming. The father is said to be dead, but is not dead in this movie---thus creating the type of reversal that the programmers like to work into the minds of slaves. A rich genie helps the princess, and when she finds her Daddy, she wakes him up with a kiss and a song. The girl’s name is Sarah, a name which appears within a number of Monarch system’s as an alter name.

Miss Universe Contest

The broadcast of the 1995 Miss Universe Contest did a very unusual freeze-framing of the show while it was on. The screen was mysteriously freeze-framed 9 times, this was a trigger for Illuminati Mothers of Darkness alters. A Mother of Darkness type throne was sat upon by the winner of the contest. An all-seeing-eye was flashed up on the screen with the code A MAY ZING written on it. This is the type of puns that the programmers enjoy. The winners of the contest came from INDIA, CANADA, and the USA. The order and names of those countries have to do with end times programming. The names were a code to certain Mothers of Darkness systems. India wore a Mother of Darkness type garment. Canada wore black and white, and USA wore Red. Miss India gave another code during the interviews, "If someone wants to put monkey’s on your back, if you stand up they get on your back."

The Manchurian Candidate

In 1958, the author Richard Condon had his novel The Manchurian Candidate published which describes an American Army sergeant, who is captured and programmed to assassinate on the cue of a queen of diamonds of a deck of cards. Richard Condon’ s ability to think about the potential of behavior modification and hypnosis, had allowed him to stumble upon what had actually been going for over a decade.

Frank Sinatra bought the movie rights for this book, let the movie out briefly and then squelched the second release of the film. Frank Sinatra has been a slave handler. He has handled Bob Hope’s slaves, when Bob Hope has lent them to the Rat Pack (which consisted of **Dean Martin**, Frank, Sammy Davis, Jr. Peter Lawford & Joey Bishop). Frank Sinatra spends time with the Rockefellers and the Rothschilds. Both he and Dean Martin have handled slaves. Dean Martin was described by The Hollywood Reporter as a "hypnotically attractive, homegrown American monster."

In Fritz’s previous writings he has exposed how Peter Lawford & Sammy Davis, Jr. were satanists. Dean had the audacity to want to bring out a slave on his T.V. show on a lease in a tiger outfit. As mentioned previously, the sexual alters see themselves as kittens or cats and are given obedience training with the type of collar Dean wanted to bring them out on stage with on television. The television network stopped it.

As Frank Sinatra grew up, his parents always had money. His mother was a cigar-smoking cruel foul-mouth woman, who performed illegal abortions. She got caught once and had to face the penalty on Feb. 27, ‘39 in a

Hudson Special Sessions Court. Frank's hero was Benjamin "Bugsy" Siegel, boss of Murder, Inc. About 30% of the dirty work for the Illuminati is carried out by the Mafia. The Illuminati have their own death squads which are superior to the Mafia, but individuals must approach one of the Illuminati councils for approval to assassinate. Often it is easier for someone in the Illuminati just to put out an unauthorized contract than to go through proper channels.

Bugsy associated with all the Mafia heads including Charlie "Lucky" Luciano who controlled mind-controlled slave Marilyn Monroe. Both Frank Sinatra and CIA mind-control programmer **William Joseph Bryan, Jr**. (aka William Joseph Bryon, and William Jenning Bryan III, etc.) were members of the Tommy Dorsey Band. Bryan programmed people while he was with the Air Force as Chief of Medical Survival Training which was the Air Force's covert mind-control section. Later he opened up his own hypnotherapy Institute on Sunset Strip in Hollywood where he programmed some people in the Illuminati who are actors. He also was the person who programmed Sirhan Sirhan to be involved in the Robert Kennedy assassination. He also hypnotised Alvert Di Salvo.

After Bryan died in spring, 1977, the CIA cleaned out all of his files including his home files. Bryan was fat, 6' 1 1/2", and a Satanic priest in the Old Roman Catholic church. This is same satanic church that William Schnoebelen was a Satanic priest in, before giving his life to Christ. (Bill Schnoebelen tells his own story in Lucifer Dethroned. Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1993.) Schnoebelen was offered a slave but turned down the opportunity to be a handler.

In William J. Bryan, Jr.'s book entitled The Chosen One The Art of Jury Selection, Bryan teaches how to use hypnosis on jury members to win one's case. On the back of the book he states about himself, "In addition Dr. Bryan served as an Electronics Engineer in the Navy in World War II, was Director of all Medical Survival Training for the United States Air Force, and a leading expert on brainwashing." William J. Bryan was the technical director for Frank Sinatra's movie The Manchurian Candidate. It was hoped that the movie would scare Americans into thinking that the enemy (the communists) was carrying out mind-control.

The Simpson Cartoons

There are episodes of the Simpsons which blatantly promote the Freemasons, the Illuminati and even show items of the Monarch mind-control such as "following the Yellow Brick Road." The episodes are quite revealing.

Aspects of Illuminati programming can also be seen in the movie "Spirits of the Dead", where spirit copies of one's abusers are placed into the slave, and the movie "Cat Girl", where a beautiful girl is turned into a killer beast. Several movies have come out showing the concept of creating robotic people such as the 1920's movie Golem, the 1966 movie Cyborg 2087, and the movie Frankenstein.

According to Illuminati history, the Collins Illuminati bloodline did pre-20th century experiments to create a Frankenstein, and Mary Shelley's novel is actually secretly based on their research. The Rothschilds have carried out successful production of synthetic people this century. This is all in accord with the black magic goal of controlling bodies, whether live or dead.

The 90 mm. "Night of the Living Dead" expresses the satanic black magic goal to control bodies. And if the Illuminati can't control their slaves, the final solution, if nothing else works, is to- as the CIA say- "terminate with extreme prejudice" (a.k.a "Executive Action"), like they did to Mary Pinchot Meyer on Oct. 13, 1964, Princess Grace Kelly & countless others.

E. Twinning And Bonding

Two Sisters-of-Light (the level before Mothers-of-Darkness) will be placed before a many-faced mirror with intense lights and programmed to see each other as inseparable. They become twins, and are programmed to die if the other one dies. They are taught to be one in body, mind, and soul. They are bonded in many ways, including torturing each other, and sexual bonding.

The trauma bonding that they undergo will consist of

a. being put in life or death situations together

b. given programming scripts which intertwine & fill in to complete each other to make a whole

c. are placed in jobs that require total compliance with the programming in order to survive

d. are bonded together to other people.

The scripture "A house divided against itself cannot stand" (MT 12:25, MK 3:25) is used to program people to stay in line with what the team is doing.

High level four-person female teams and a four-person males team are programmed to work together after the Anti-Christ takes over. These types of teams form the male-female component of a larger 3-part team. With the advent of advanced medical technology the Illuminati are now able to make quintriplets, implant the eggs in surrogates, and then switch the identical children during their lifetimes. This type of high level subterfuge is going on, and it makes the identities of some slaves complicated to say the least.

Readers may want to get some of the articles Fritz has written about the clones, synthetic people, organic robotoids, and double look-alikes that the Rothschilds and the rest of the Illuminati families are engaged in creating. The twinning programming is very complex and detailed.

Within the Rothschild bloodlines--the 5 family lines that began with Mayer Amschel’s 5 sons going to 5 capitals- network/bond their female slaves together with Gennifer-Sally-Elsie-Sarah-Penelope programming. (The 6th son to finish the red schield hexagram is/was a bastard.) This is all part of a complex satanic world mind that is being created. This is the Adam Kadmon. Twins (& teams) claim to be telepathic with each other, and observations of slaves, has tended to support that claim.

Many therapists have failed to take the twinning part of the programming into account. Twins must be deprogrammed together for best results, if one is left out they may try to impede therapy.

F. Peer Pressure

At the beginning of the programming, the Programmers are dealing with a small infant who is unable to verbalize to others about their abuse. They are further frightened in every way, and tortured, and given behavior modification to teach them to remain silent. Even without all these strong threats which always exist, the child would not be capable of fighting back. The child will naturally think this is the way the world is, and of course, the programmers are reinforcing the idea that this is the heritage or path that the child is supposed to be following.

The dissociative parts of the child do not fully comprehend that being sexually assaulted daily by their father is wrong. They are being misled by their abuser that it is correct, that that is their purpose in life. The child is never given a chance to realize that it has a right to refuse. It is conditioned to obedience. The abuse seems to be just another part of things that belong to the world of adults. For children, adults do many things beyond comprehension, at times ridiculous. And they seem to need no reason to do these things, except for the fact that they are adults. Other adults that come and go are also participants in the abuse, so the child doesn’t grasp that he can be defended by other adults.

The programmers are always doing unexpected things to the child, so the child quits trying to figure life out, and fatalistically complies with what it is expected to do. Children all over the world grow up in an adult world, and are at the mercy of adults.

As the alters begin to experience life, they are generally in situations where the attitudes of the people around them, reinforce their programming. Boys are told by society in general to take their lumps in life "like a man". They are taught to fight their own battles, and not to whine. Few boys risk the shame that comes from talking about their abuse. Society is not kind to "whiners".

Females are permitted to show emotions, without the social sanctions levied on males. If the child victim of mind-control comes from a family where only one of the parents is a participant in the abuse, then what often happens is that the clean parent, will never even discuss abuse issues with their child. Few adults ever really discuss abuse issues with children. The child is generally isolated from their peers as much as possible by the child's handler's and programmers. They place other children that belong to the cult in the child's life to report on what the child is doing. When the child victim begins to "stretch their wings" so to speak and meet other people, there are very few people that will threaten the control of the programmers. When the slave does find a good therapist to make friends with, this friendship will trigger all kinds of programming, unresolved issues around adults, trust, etc.

The slave feels double-binded. If they move toward health and freedom, it creates many more problems than staying in slavery. They need to see the bigger picture. They need to be given something positive to live for outside of the slavery. Psychiatrists are not permitted by their boards to get personally involved in their clients lives. Traditional therapy doesn't address some of the issues that will stop the slave from wanting to gain freedom. Internal peer pressure from multitudes of programmed loyal deeper alters, and external peer pressure from cult children the victim is bonded to, begins to exert an overpowering force for the child to stay on the beaten path. Few people ever buck the system, and go against peer pressure. Someone as hurt and docile as a slave is going to want acceptance, and is not likely going to want to step out of line with society and their peers. Until society admits that there is a problem with mind-control, it will be a dangerous thing socially for a child slave to admit to what the victim is actually experiencing every day.

Are there any HAGABARDS or MOSES? Now the reader has the FORMULA for the mind control. Now what? These programmed multiples continue to eat away at the moral fiber every one of America's Institutions like an army of termites. On the outside the structures still look strong, but they are being readied to collapse, for the reign of the Illuminati's AntiChrist. There is a series of books called the Illuminati books which are a fictional account of how the Illuminati run the world. In the novels, the Illuminati run essentially everything--which is actually what is happening. The hero, Hagabard fights against this ancient conspiracy. Who isn't familiar with the Biblical example of the elite ruler, who leaves his place of royalty to lead a nation in slavery to freedom? This hero's name is Moses. He also frees the people spiritually from the spiritual bonds of their hermetic magical culture. If there are any Hagabards or Moses' or Aarons out there, it is time to buck this World System. "LET OUR PEOPLE GO. LET OUR CHILDREN GO." Thus saith the LORD, Let my people go, that they may serve Me. (EX 8:1b)

Appendix One The Programmers

Some of THE Illuminati's Companies
A. Introductory remarks Vril Society
B. Understanding the programmers Dr. Mengele Dr. Cameron Jerry Lee Lewis and Michael Aquino
C. Monarch Mind Control Programmers Country Music Industry The Temple of Set.
D. Dr. Green
E. Dr. White
F. The AntiChrist as a Master Programmer
Footnotes

May each & every person listed get right with YHWH God before they die. Short List of some addresses of abusers who are part of the Network, a.k.a. New World Order

Addresses may not be current but are my last address for them. This information may have mistakes, this is only to display to readers that the veil of secrecy is no longer holding up for the Mind Control Programmers.

AC/DC satanic Rock Band, 11 Leonminster Rd., Morden, Surrey SM4, England

Ade, Henry. CIA & drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 1663 County Rd. 13, Waterloo, IN 46793

Aga Khan IV, H.H.

Prince Karim. Satanist & leader of Ismaili Muslims, Aiglemont, 60270 Gouvieux. France

Alabama Country Music group, satanists and Monarch slave handlers, Box 529, Ft. Payne, AL 35967

Baily, John, slave abuser, 1525 Pine St., Office 10. Redding, CA 96001

Barnes, Don, slaveabuser & in co. sherriff office, 7309 Grove Rd., Frederick, MD 21701 301-694-2152; 1513 Cedarcrest Ln, Frederick, MD 21702301-663-8316

Benson, Ezra Taft, satanist/leader of LDS church. Church of Jesus Christ , Administration Bldg., 47 E. S. Temple. Salt Lake City , UT 84415

Bowers, Wilbur D., Ipsimus in Illum. & Monarch programmer & CIA drug dealer. 1735 NE 11th, Bend , OR 97701 ph. 503-EV2-5162 (EV for 'evergreen')

Brown, Edmund G. (Jerry). Jr., Illum. satanist & CA politician & slave abuser. 700 S. Flower St., #600 , Los Angeles , CA 90017 (phns 415-928-6346, 415-928-5073)

Brown, Charlie. Air Force Intell. & murderer & Monarch slave abuser, Box 8 . Greenbrier, TN Bundy, McGeorge, IlIum., 133 East 18th St. , NY , NY 10021 Bus. 212-371-3200

Byrd, Robert C.. Satanist and mind-control programmer & Sen. from W.VA, 311 Senate Hart Office Bldg., Washington. D.C. 20501

Clinton, Hillary. Illuminati witch & mind-control slave handler, (address besides White House) Rose Law Firm, 120 E. 4tn St. , Little Rock . Ark. 72201

Cochran, Hank CIA drug kingpin. Hendersonville . TN, 615-824-7011

Cox, Wayne, Satanic High Priest & Monarch handler & dangerous serial killer, Rt. l. Box 84, Chatham, LA 71226

Dante, Michael (Michael Vitti). Monarch slave abuser and porn maker, 3485 Canon Drive . Beverly Hills , CA 90212 218-858-9425; Orange , CA 92665 , 714637-0590

Day, Brad, slave abuser & coke pusher. 5300 Las Pablanos NW. Albuquerque, NM 87107 Drake, Jim (and son), slave abuser & porn/drug dist., 11173 N. Kendall Dr. #F105 , Miami , FL 33176

Fonda, Peter. RR #38, Livingston , MT 59047

Fonda, Jane, c/o Fonda Films, P.O. Box 1198 , Santa Monica , CA 90406

Gavoruhk, John, Police chief working for Illum. protects Monarch programmers/handlers. 121 Partridge Circle . Wintersprings , FL 32708 305-699-0618

Grace, J. Peter, business leader & illuminati. CCAGW, 1301 Connecticut Ave. , NW. #400, Washington , DC 20036

Grateful Dead satanic cult rock band and Illuminati cocaine distributors. P.O. Box 1566, Main Office St., Montclair, N.J. 07043

Greene, Jack, CIA & white slavery & Monarch slave abuser & country entertainer, Box 485A Goodlettsviiie, TN 615-859-3284

Haggard, Merle, slave abuser & country singer. P.O. Box 536 , Palo Cedro , CA 96073 Hestbeck, Vaughn. Monarch abuser & Danish cocaine distr., 515 Rhapsody Paquet Cruises. 1007 N. American Way, Miami, FL 33176

Hope, Bob, slave owner and slave handler w/ intelligence agencies, 3808 Riverside Dr., Burbank, CA 91505

Houston, Alex, satanist & Monarch programmer & CIA, 1155 Ridge Hill Rd., Goodlettsville, TN 37072 615-859-3543

Hummell, Ed, Monarch programmer, Cattleman's Steak & Seafood Co., 10260 S.W. Nimbus Ave. Suite M-3, Tigard, OR 97223 503-620-7824 (also Las Vegas?)

Humperdink, Englebert, Castro Valley . CA 94546 510-733-6085

King Juan Carlos I, King of Spain and Illuminati, Palacio de la Zarzuela , Madrid . Spain

KISS satanic rock band, 6363 Sunset Blvd., #417, Los Angeles , CA 90028

Kissinger, Henry, Illuminat & P2 Freemason, 1800 K. St. , NW. #400. Washington . D.C. 20006

Kreskin, occultist, P.O. Box 1383, West Caldwell, NJ 07006

Lang, Velton, white slavery & drug running, 264 Bluegrass Dr., Hendersonville, TN 37075 615-824-6076 (also at Twitty City 615-822-3210)

Lewis, Jerry Lee, Monarch slave programmer & musician, P.O. Box 3864. Memphis , TN 37173 ; 3324 Lynchburg St. Memphis , TN 38134 901-388-1135

MacLaine, Shirley, actress/author/New Age occultist, 8899 Beverly Blvd. , Los Angeles . CA 90048 Madonna, satanist & monarch slave, 75 Rockefeler Plaza, New York, NY 10019

Manson, Charles, satanist & monarch slave and monarch slave handler, Corcoran Prison, 1002 Diary Ave., Corcoran, CA 93212

Martin, Diane, CIA drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 45-641 F. Apapane St., Keneoke, HA 96744 McKee, Lloyd, drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 6501 Meoqui, Albuquerque, NM, 87107; 3000 Colonnade Ct. NW. Albuquerqe, NM 87107 505-345-4194

McOuinn, Mike, slave handler & money launderer, Miami, FL 305-386-1512 & 305-251-5320 Meadows, Hal, dir. of the CIA near death mind-control programming center. Swiss Villa Ampetheater, Box 27, Lampe, MO 65681

Merritt, Jeff, CIA drug runner & slave abuser, St. Thomas, US Virgin Islands, 809-744-4000

Mitterrand, Francois

Maurice Marie, Illuminati & close friend to Rothschilds & Pres. of France, Palais de l'Elysée. 55-57 rue du Faubourg Saint-Honoré. 75008 Paris, France

Nelson, Willie, singer & monarch slave handler. P.O. Box 33280 , Austin . TX 78784 Nunn, Sam. IlIuminati, 303 Senate Dirksen Office Bldg., Washington. D.C. 20510

O'Brien, Earl. CIA Monarch abuser, 12614 Lakeshore, Grand Haven, Ml 49417 Overstreet, Tommy, CIA & white slavery. P.C. Box 41103 , Nashville , TN 37204

Parton, Dolly, satanist. Crockett Road , Rt. #1. Brentwood , TN 37027

Pope John Paul II (aka Karol Wojtyla), Illuminati & Freemason. Apostolic Palace, Vatican City

Pride, Charley, slave abuser & white slavery & country singer & CIA. c/o Chardon Inc., 3198 Royal Ln., #204, Dallas, TX 75229

Prophet, Ronnie, Satanist & Monarch slave runner, 1030 17th Ave. N., Nashville, TN 37208 615-321-0539

Queen Beatrix (Wilhelmina Armgard). Illuminati & Queen, of the Netherlands , Binnen Huf 19. The Hague

2513 AA. The Netherlands

Reynolds, Dr. Herbert H., Illuminati & Univ. CEO, Baylor Univ., Waco TX 76798; 336 Guittard Ave. Waco, TX 76706 817-753-4011

Riley, Ken, CIA & Neo-nazi & Loretta Lynn's handler/road manager, Rt. 3, Rosebrook Ct., Gallatin, TN 37066

Rockefeller, Winthrop Illumnati kingpin & porn dealer. Winrock Farms, MorriIton, AR 72110 501-727-5481

Rorick, David (a.k.a. Dave Roe), satanist & white slavery, 1211 Mallard, Franklin, TN, 37064

Rose, Ivan, CIA & White slavery & Monarch abuser, RR 2, Mt. Pleasant Rd., Spartansburg, PA 16434 814-694-2496

Ryan, Dr. Michael N., one of Illum.'s coverup doctor who patches up slaves, 353 New Shackle Is. Rd., Hendersonville . TN 37075, 615-824-8475, 615-824-8496

Smith, Dan, car & drug dealer & slave abuser, P.O. Box 262 . New Martinsville, W. VA 26155

Stevens, Jim, Monarch slave abuser & drug runner, 1726 N. Magnolia, Ocala, FL 32670 904-622-1966 904-622-2139

Tanis, Bob, CIA & Air Force Intell., Monarch abuser & Mafia & pornographer, 7278 N. Lakeshore, West Olive. MI 49460

Train, Russell, Club of Rome, 1803 Kalorma Sq., Washington, D.C., 20008-4021 202-332-5800

Trump, Donald. Illuminati, 725 Fifth Ave. New York, NY 10022

Vanderpool, Darcy, Monarch programmer, 2620 Regatta Dr. # - 116, Las Vegas, NV 891 702-242-4222

Walker, Jimmy, Monarch save abuser/pornographer, 904 Carswell Waycroos, GA 31501 912-285-5594

Warlock, Billy, actor, 9200 Sunset Blvd., #625, Los Angeles, CA 90069 Westberry, Kent, songwriter, satanist & white slavery. 359 Lee Road , CottonTown , TN 37048

***Some of THE Illuminati's Companies:**

Air America , CIA front, works out of Tulsa ; Nederland , TX ; Berea , OH . & Jackson , MS . The Tulsa addresss is 1419 S. 135th East Ave. , Tulsa , OK 74108-4131 918-234-3041

Cargill, Inc., large grain cartell run by Illum. P.O. Box 9300, 15407 McGinty Rd, Minnetonka, MN 55440

Dungeon Master, Desmodus Inc., hard gay porn, s & m publisher, Box 11314. San Francisco, CA 94101

Eli Lilly & Co., Illuminati drug co., Lilly Corporate Center, Indianapolis, IN 46285

Machinery International, Inc., CIA front, 302 Fall Cr Dr.. Richardson , TX 75080 214-234-2969

Rothschild Pediatric Group, 4770 S. I 10 Service Rd., Metairie, L.A 70001 504-887-1133

Rothschild Pedatric Group, 1970 Ormond Blvd., Destrehan, LA 70047 504-784-6036 Southern Air Transport, CIA front, 6400 N.W. 36th, Miami, FL 33166 Summit Aviation, CIA front, Summit Airport, Middletown, Delaware 19709 302-834-5400

Appendix One (continued)

a. Introductory remarks Vril Society
b. Understanding the programmers Dr. Mengele Dr. Cameron Jerry Lee Lewis and Michael Aquino

c. A list of known programmers Country Music Industry
d. Dr. Green
e. Dr. White
f. The AntiChrist as a Master Programmer

A. Introductory Remarks

For any recipe you need a cook. So who has been cooking up the RECIPE for making Monarch Slaves? The authors felt that after reading the recipe, that some readers would be interested in learning about the master chefs who make human robots using trauma-based mind-control. According to an ex-Programmer, the Programmers for decades have been treated like royalty whenever they step foot onto a military base, or enter a hospital that carries out mind control. They are always expected. Generally, the commanding general on a base would meet them and escort the programmer in a limo. If the base commander couldn't make it, an important physician might take his place.

The programmers have keys, and codes to get into special areas. After many thousands of Americans died in WW II fighting Nazism, our government's intelligence agencies (incl. the military intelligence groups) in cooperation with the Illuminati and its people in the Vatican, smuggled 10,000 of the worst Nazi-fascist war criminals into this country. This is on public record now. Part of this was under Operation Paperclip. The DoD (Dept. of Defense) also worked at smuggling Nazi mind control programmers under Project 63. Every W.W. II veteran who fought ought to be angry that after putting his life on the line for "democracy" and freedom, and supposedly defeating the Nazis, our government brought in men like the S.S.'s infamous butcher Dr. Joseph Mengele to program American children with trauma-based mind-control like he had in the concentration camps. In fact, Fritz has worked with an Illuminati victim of Joseph Mengele, who was programmed in Germany in a concentration camp, and then smuggled to the U.S. via Canada by Jesuits working with the Illuminati.

Once in the U.S., this person continued to be programmed by Mengele, who went by many names including Dr. Green. He is described in detail in part d. of this Appendix. We must begin to get beyond the fronts and covers that the programmers have for the world. Jewish professor Ernst Bergmann, of the infamous Leipzig University , is also surprisingly a strong advocate of Nazism. His main book is A National Socialist Philosophy of Culture. He writes, "A new type of mankind is being developed." He is mentioned here so that people stop looking at labels, and start looking at what is really going on. One of the principle goals of Nazism was to remake mankind. The Ahnerbe of the Nazis was set up to do genetic research and experiments. And one element of that was to be able to create the prefect obedient mind-controlled slave.

A first glance at the lies told us by our press will give one the impression Nazism was anti-communist, nationalistic, & Christian. However, a close look at Hitler and today's Nazi leadership, will reveal that Nazism is Socialism (or Marxism, exactly what communism is about) and that Nazism is not nationalistic, but international in its view. Further, it is Satanic and based on the Nordic mystery beliefs (Odin, Thor, etc.). It is not based on Christianity.

The **Vril Society** was the mother of the Nazi party. "Vril" means the Light Force. What Light force? Lucifer the light bearer's light force. The true nature of Nazism is being concealed. When Hitler came to plan, he was placed into power in accordance with the Illuminati plan which was spelled out in writing. This plan said, "Nowadays if any state raise a protest against us it is only pro forma (provided in advance) at our discretion and by our direction, for their anti-semitism is indispensable to us for the management of our lesser brethren."

Illuminati international bankers brought Hitler to power, and Illuminati kingpins like Rockefeller, Onassis and the King of Sweden traded with the Nazis. Spain stayed neutral during the war to serve as a conduit of supplies to keep Hitler's war going. Hitler was a participant in rituals where human sacrifices were carried out. He himself killed a number of men by pulling their hearts out of their bodies while they were alive. One Monarch slave remembers his father, who was powerful in the Illuminati, describing how Hitler killed a man in front of him by pulling his heart out. Some of Hitler's key advisors and key men were in the Illuminati.

There are also lots of tie ins with the OTO, the Vril Society, the Thule Society, the Society of Green Men. The head of the Tibetan Monks that Hitler imported to help him lead Germany was known as The Man with the Green Glove. The monks were posted in Berlin, Munich, and Nuremberg.

By the way, the NWO is still using Tibetan Monks. Have you ever watched how much travel the Dalai Lama gets in? And did you notice that Tibetan Monks were imported in the Bakaa Valley Colorado by a U.N. leader? The Mishpuka (Jewish Mafia) leader Pritzker who lives in seclusion on Haulon Rd., Libertyville, IL 60048 on a 1300 acre piece of expensive real estate, had the Dalai Lama consecrate a shrine for him. Haulon Rd. has two access points, a northern and a southern. (The road was bought by Pritzker and is guarded. Pritzker has been active in Chicago for the Mishpuka. He is reported to have spent millions renovating his house, where for some reason, dead bodies keep showing up on its estate grounds.)

Our political leaders have been aware that Nazi Mind-control experts were imported after the war. For instance, some of the Nazi war criminals smuggled in became some of Richard Nixon's personal friends. Even the Mossad were fully aware that thousands upon thousands of the worst monsters that the world has known were smuggled into the U.S. for the Illuminati by the Vatican, the Intelligence Agencies, and other groups.

The Rothschilds and Nelson Rockefeller forced the Jewish Zionist leadership in Israel to keep silent about the Nazis who were smuggled into the U.S. after W.W. II. In return for Israel's silence and the Mossad's silence about the thousands of high level satanic Nazis who were brought into the U.S., the nation of Israel was allowed. They made a deal, according to high level insiders.

Nelson Rockefeller had enormous power in South America. In June 1945, when the U.N. was being set up at San Francisco, Nelson Rockefeller attended. While Nelson Rockefeller was there, he busied himself with directing the South American delegates. Rockefeller's bloc of 19 Latin American countries had more U.N. votes than Europe's nine members. Rockefeller was a key person, if the Zionist's wanted the U.N. to vote so that the nation of Israel could be established. The Zionist leadership used what they thought was blackmail, if you don't let Israel be established we will expose how you are smuggling Nazi war criminals into the U.S.

Of course, the Illuminati wanted Israel to be created--so those in the Zionist leadership who knew the bigger plans of the Illuminati, knew that the Illuminati-run CIA wasn't giving up anything. If anyone asks why the Mossad didn't expose MI-6 and the CIA's extensive hiring of Nazi war criminals, they say today that they were using it for blackmail to get Israel what it needed. Those in the know, realize that is just an excuse. The Mossad has hired its own share of Nazi criminals, and at some point learned mind-control programming from the CIA, perhaps even from Mengele (Dr. Green). The Nazis used Croats and White Russians to carry out some of their genocide policies. Not all of the monsters of W.W. II were German, many were White Russian collaborators.

Essentially every White Russian War Criminal from W.W. II that survived the war was placed on one NATO payroll or another. The U.S. intelligence even hired German SS administrators. Why? Because U.S. intelligence is controlled by the Illuminati. The White Russian Nazis were settled in the NY-NJ area, especially in South River, NJ. One of the worst monsters was Stankievich who ended up living in Richmond Hills and working for the CIA. He got a job working for Radio Liberty in NY! Isn't that ironic that "Radio Liberty" has hired such monsters. Does our government put out propaganda or is it really the champion of freedom that it portrays itself to be?

The Nazi mayor of Minsk was brought over by the CIA and given a job at the N.Y. Library of running the Slavic desk. One of the chief White Russian war criminals, the Vor Kommando Moskau chief recruiter was made head over a NY county medical society.

John Foster Dulles, brother of the director of the CIA, was trustee of the Rockefeller Foundation. The Rockefeller Foundation was a participant in Nazi mind control research done by Mengele and others for the Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute in Berlin. After the war, John Foster Dulles helped smuggle Nazis into this country, including those who were Illuminati Mind-control experts.

Bill Casey, later director of the CIA, was also busy helping bring in Nazi war criminals after the war. He served on the International Rescue Committee in NY which he used to bring Nazis into New York. Prior to the war Jewish German scientists were smuggled into New York through the Arnold & Constable Store, which housed the ADL on the top floor.

The South American countries, especially Argentina, ruled by the Perons, was connected to both the Illuminati in Germany and the Illuminati in the states. Many Germans went to Argentina, and they simply continued doing what they had done in the past. Satanism working under the veil of Nazism was very strong in Argentina where many of the German Illuminati leaders moved after the war.

Another place that the Germans loved to move to was Oregon, especially Portland, OR. The head of Hitler's intelligence was the brilliant Reinhard Gehlen who worked for the CIA after the war. He is Illuminati. His brother was Doe Winters who lived in Pullach after the war.

Mengele, (the Dr. Black of Monarch Programming, who was an Illuminati Grand Master himself) would occasionally visit Doe Winter's Pullach residence. To renovate the image of Nazi criminals, they became Anti-communist crusaders. A group of fascists from Asia and Europe were taken by U.S. Intelligence and moulded into the WACL (World Anti-Communist League). And we of the sheppel (sheep) were given more Hegalian dialectics. Those of us who still care about humanity's freedom, and that human spirit not to be broken by the elite's total mind control, have got to get beyond labels, and the media's propaganda, and the false fronts.

B. Understanding The Programmers

Many men have contributed to the research of trauma-based mind control. The men who learned how to torture during the ancient Babylonian days, during the Roman days and during the Medieval days passed their secrets to the rulers of the secret Mystery Religions. Some of the 13 Illuminati bloodlines trace their history back to the ancient times of Babylon. Because the programmers are driven by the spirit-world, they are very jealous and competitive towards each other. It is a dog-eat-dog world amongst them. The demonic forces within in them are in competition too. Yes, the programmers have had their friction, their jealousies & power struggles with each other. Some of these inner battles have been fought with and over their mind-controlled slaves. When two programmers work on a single slave, they might both put in their own secret back doors to insure that the slave remains loyal to himself rather than other programmer.

There has also been ongoing tension between the half-blooded & full blooded Illuminati programmers. Because each of the various programming centers specializes in perhaps a dozen types of programming, programmers go to different programming centers. The props for the scripts are often kept at the programming centers. The programmers will dress according to the script they are giving the victims, which might mean they may be dressed as the Wizard of Oz, a Nazi, a doctor in a white coat, a white rabbit costume, a corrigan sweater as Mr. Rogers, or in the nude.

One of the most cruelest evil geniuses in recent times was **Dr. Mengele**. Dr. Mengele used 3,000 twins during the time of 1943-1944 for research. Most of these twins died. The twins were chosen out of the vast numbers of people who were brought in to the German concentration camps. By the time W.W. II ended, Mengele knew a great deal about how to torture children in order to get them to bond totally with him. Even today some of the survivors of his horrible experiments believe that Mengele loved children. They love him as their father. Mengele also developed the ability to create artificial twinning between two people. Mengele carried his violin with him when he came onto military bases. His violin hid his color bands and probes for color programming.

Other men worked with Dr. Mengele and soon became programmers in their own right. **Dr. Cameron** of Canada became a Monarch mind-controlled slave programmer known as Dr. White.

Another programmer who was not a full blooded generational Satanist was Gog known as Dr. Blue. Heinrich Mueller is known as Dr. Blue. Dr. Blue lived in the northwest area and has two sons--their programming and cult nicknames are Teddy Bear (Theodore) and Robin Hood (Michael).

Two programmers known successively as Dr. Black are L.W. and W.B. A protege of L. W. is Ed Hummel who works in states such as Texas and Oregon. Ed was originally from Texas, and W. and B. were originally from Oklahoma before they began working in the Northwest.

Two of the most ruthless programmers on the West coast are **Jerry Lee Lewis and Michael Aquino**. These two men are as cold blooded as they come, ranking right beside Mengele in their ability to torture. Michael Aquino (DOB 10/16/46, 2430 Leavenworth St., San Francisco, plus other addresses), because he was in military intelligence, was in a position to pass on his diabolical programming abilities to dozens of military officers. His wife works with him, and her name is Lilith Sinclair (DOB 4/21/42). Michael Aquino has travelled all over the

U.S. doing programming. Michael Aquino used Cathy O'Brien as the star victim in his training video which teaches military officers how to create Monarch mind-controlled slaves.

One of the old time programmers (early 1950s-80's) who worked as a psychiatrist in southern California went by the programming name of Sid. The principle Illuminati programmers were known as Dr. Black, Dr. White, Dr. Green, and Dr. Blue. They oversaw the training of thousands of part-time programmers. The better programmers are able to get into the mind of the victim much like Colombo (Peter Falk), who is, by the way, in his personal life is part of this all.

The reader needs to understand that a victim who is given the Monarch mind-control may have a number of programmers, but the slave will be trained to only respond to the voices of a limited number of users. If someone tries to use a slave and has the wrong voice, it could trigger suicide programming. A human robot may have alters which can rescue the body from a suicide alter, but the message will be clear to the mind-controlled slave that it should stay away from non-approved users or face possible suicide. We have now entered an era where second and third generation robotic mind controlled slaves are programming. The programmed are now doing much if not most of the programming. This means many of the programmers are men with MPD.

Some programmers are hard-core military men who see any type of "discipline" or "training" as good if the end product produces better obeying soldiers. These hard-core military men have lost any proper boundaries on what is O.K. for training. This explains why the whole apparatus to create mind-controlled slaves is turning out new slaves at an alarming rate. The small number of victims who are painstakingly saved by de-programming and therapy is slight compared to the number of new slaves being created. Over two million Americans have been programmed by trauma-based mind control since 1947, & the CIA admitted its Mind Control publicly in 1970, and yet the existence of the mind-control is still secret to the general public.

Doctors such as Dr. Gaefsky, at the Bethesada Naval Hospital and Dr. Beecher at Harvard, under the auspices of the CIA worked to perfect the use of drugs to mind-control people.

Dr. Jensen, was the CIA programmer who programmed Candy Jones (birth name Jessica Wilcox, and CIA alias Arlene Grant), the famous sex object of males during W.W. II. Candy Jones was a Monarch carrier pigeon (courier) for the CIA. Candy Jones received some of her programming at The Farm which is the CIA's Camp Peary.

Dr. William Jennings Bryan also helped the CIA in programming. Naval Psychologist Lt. Comdr. Thomas Narut contributed his ideas on how to develop mind-controlled assassins. Some of the assembly-line Delta assassination teams are using programming techniques based on Narut's programming research.

A Dr. James Monroe also worked for the CIA in Mind Control programming.

READERS ARE ASKED TO REMEMBER THAT SOMETIMES SEVERAL PEOPLE MAY HAVE THE SAME NAME. Disclaimer: The readers are asked to check these people/names out for themselves before drawing any final conclusions, maybe the leopard has changed his spots.

C. Monarch Mind Control Programmers

Morse Allen

Lt. Col. John Alexander
Richard Dabney Anderson
Michael Aquino (program cover name Malcolm, also known to some children as Mickey, Betty Ford is his mother, Illum, bloodline, married to Lilith Sinclair)
Astor
Armstrong
Bill Bennett
Wilbur Bowers (program cover name Billy Boy, a Rothschild)
Dr. William Jennings
Bryan Burcham Burnell-Hightower

Sen. Robert C. Byrd
Dr D Ewen Cameron (program cover name Dr White)
Sue Carper
Joe Circo
Mark Circo
Wayne Cox
Dr. Bernard Diamond
Michael Delaney (prog. covr name Robin Hood)
Russell G. Frazier
Gaston Beth George (a Rothschild)
Clair George
Dr Sydney Gottlieb
Col. Wilson Green
John Gunter (program cover name Little John)
Haggin Harrick in Denver, Co.
Col. Height (sp.?)
Lawrence Hinkle
Alex Houston
Ed Hummel
Dr. Harris Isbell
Dr. Jensen Johnson
Steve Kilgore
Kris Kristopherson
Helga LaRouche
Hank Levine
Jerry Lee Lewis
Dr. John Lilly
Col. Manassah
Irby Mandrell
Hal Meadows
Dr. Meiers (program cover name The Jolly Green Giant)
Seward Prosser Mellon (program cover name Governor)
Dr. Josef Mengele (program cover name Dr. Green)
Dr. Joseph A. Meyer
Ted V. Mikels
Dr. James Monroe
Heinrich Mueller (program cover name Dr. Blue)
Theodore son of Heinrich Mueller (program cover name Teddy Bear)
Nathan Lt. Comdr.
Thomas Narut
Dr. Martin T. Orange
Owens
Col. Tom Parker
Patterson
Pete Peterson
Ken Riley
Rockefeller
David Long Rothschild
Guy de Rothschild
Savor
Alden Sears
Dr. Star Maj.
Strange
Strong
Suttenfuss
Col. Taylor

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

Leo Taylor
Darcy Vanderpool
Weir Kent
Westberry
Leo Wheeler (program cover name Dr. Black, a Collins)
Robert Whitlow
Harold Wolff

SOURCES: Fritz Springmeier's Newsletters Oct. 15, 1993; Dec. 1, '93; Feb, '94; Jan., 1995; March-April, 1995; "Perpetrators" (Monograph), 1993 by Cathy O'Brien, Fritz Springmeier's own list of people from Survivors, In Search For the Manchurian Candidate

Country Music Industry

Perpetrators Involved and knowledgeable of Monarch Mind Control (Most are involved with the CIA's drug running network.)

Henry Ade
Alabama band
Atlanta Bandana
Lynn Anderson
Jerry Barlow
Boxcar Willie
Ray Burdette
Glen Campbell
Ace Canon
Dee Clark
Roy Clark
David Allen Coe
Pat Corn
Helen Cornelious
Wayne Cox
Dave DeBolt
Penny Dehaven
Charlie Dick T
he Drifters
Roy Drusky
Narvel Felts
The Four Guys
Randy and Rudy Gatlin
Jim Glaser
Vern Gosdin
Jack Greene
Merle Haggard
Alex Houston (and Elmer)
Englebert Humperdink
Waylon Jennings
George Jones
The Judds
Merle Kilgore
Buddy Killen
Velton Lang
Hank Levine
Jerry Lee Lewis
Ernest Ray Lynn
Ronnie Lutric

Jack MacFadden
Reggie Maclaughlin
Brent Magor
Marty Martell
George Moffet
Lorrie Morgan
Bonnie Nelson
Willie Nelson
Oakridge Boys
Merril Osmund
Tommy Overstreet
Jerry and Arlene Petty
Ray Pillow
Charlie Pride
Ronnie Prophet
Jeannie Pruett
Giles Reeves
Dave Roe (Rorick)
Dave Roland (and Sugar)
TG Sheppard
Hank Snow
Ronnie Stoneman
Jimmy Sturr
Jimmy Swaggart
Mel Tillis
Buck Trent
Leroy VanDyke
Jim Vest
Mack Vickory
Billy Walker
Charlie Walker
Jim Webb
Dottie West
Shelly West
Kent Westberry
Bobby Whitton

Michael McArthur, a recent convert from Satanism who helped abduct children provided first hand testimony that the following are involved in abductions of children:

"Chucky" (aka „Mike," aka "Peters"') --FBI hit man in Div. 5 of FBI, involved also with Inslaw Case

Nichol Harrah -FBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice

Linda Krieg-Satanist working for FBI

Ken Lanning-FBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice while claiming SRA doesn't exist

Nick O'Hara--FBI hit man, satanist, who has covered FBI child kidnapping by murdering witnesses

Kepe Richardson--CIA agent who abducts children for sacrifice

In addition to all this, the following are a few of the CIA people who are both Slave Handlers and drug dealers, who haven't gotten their names mentioned yet:

Pat Bowlin
George Bush & son

Sue Carper (not known if she deals drugs). She does dir. CIA operations and the Norwegian Caribbean Lines.
Hank Cochran, a drug overlord
Alan Dulles
Diane Martin of Hawaii
Irby Mandrell who controls other family members who are slaves such as Barbara, Louise, & Iriene.
Jim Maynard, CIA covert ops Belize Jeff Meritt, St. Thomas, U.S. Virgin Is.
Carl Misel
Jim Mitchell
Earl O'Brien
Linda Scale
Bob Tannis w/ Air Force Intell. in Ml

The Temple of Set.

The Temple of Set (The Temple of Power) is built upon mind control. Since most of the members are either victims of mind control or perpetrators or both, it would be productive to give the membership of this organization.

Dr. Flowers, the Grand Master of the Order of the Trapezoid, may well be a programmer. In the least he is a slave handler. Some Total Mind-controlled slaves will have Order of the Trapezoid things internally. If they do, the therapist should recognize that this is Temple of Set (Power) programming. The membership of the Church of Set has been a closely guarded secret. Here it is.

A few words of explanation are in order. Most of the names in the list are the actual names of people, but some people joined the Temple of Set under aliases. For instance Eddie W. Hands is an alias for Edward Wayne Cox of Chatham, Louisiana. E. Wayne Cox may have chosen this alias because he runs an international business of selling left hands taken from victims of human sacrifice. The left hand is called by these Satanists "the hand of glory."

Although Senator Robert C. Byrd's name doesn't appear on the Temple of Set's formal membership, he properly should be included in any membership list, because it was his legal expertise that helped Aquino set up the Temple of Set so that it would be legally protected by the Constitution. Behind this legal Satanic organization is a large amount of illegal Satanic activity, including sacrifice, slavery, mind control, porn and drugs. Senator Byrd is an example of how evil men can pervert the use of the Constitution for evil.

Another name which is not on the formal membership roster is Jerry Lee Lewis, but Jerry Lee Lewis works so closely with the Monarch slaves of the Temple of Set that he is an integral part of the Temple of Set system. This secret membership list follows this pattern NAME OF PERSON-POSITION IN THE TEMPLE OF SET (i.e. rank), PLACE OF RESIDENCE, OTHER OCCULT OR SECULAR FACTS ABOUT THE PERSON. Roman numerals are used to identify Setian ranks, I have taken the liberty to abbreviate these roman numerals into our everyday numbers, such as VI° = 6°.

Here is the PAST AND RECENT SECRET MEMBERSHIP IN THE TEMPLE OF SET (a spin-off of the Church of Satan, and recently reconstructed as the Temple of Power.):

Alex, Frank R.--Setian 1°, Illinois Alleé,
John D.-Adept 2°, Mass., editor of satanic newsletter Brimstone.
Frank Sinatra fan.
Anderson, Yolanda--Adept 2°, Calif. Adept at Black Magic. Satanic priestess.
Aquino, Lilith Sinclair--Magistra Templi 40 Treasurer, she founded the Lilith Groto which was the largest and longest-functioning Grotto of the LaVey's Church of Satan. On the T of S's Council of nine, Of the Sinclair bloodline.

Aquino, Michael-The vain Ipsissimus 6° of the Temple of Set, Missouri, Lt. Col. U.S. Army with high level security clearance, in Military Intelligence and army's Psychic warfare battalion, Green Beret, member ACLU, Defense Intelligence College, and prominent teacher of how to create Monarch slaves.

http://whale.to/b/sp/for1.html

Austen, David--Priest of Set 3°, London, England, Black Magician who studies Crowley

Barrett, Ronald L., Jr.--Priest of Set 3°, Colorado, ex-Airborne Ranger, interested in alchemistry
Bennett, Clifton B.--Setian 1°, Colorado, studies Crowley, medieval Satanism and Kenneth Anger
Berkey, C. Joseph, 3rd--Adept 2°, Virginia, does occult art and practices Enochian Magic
Blood, Linda--Wrote a book about her time with Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set
Blount, Larry D.--Setian 1°, Texas, studies Friedrich Nietzche and black magic
Bozeman, Clayton C.--Adept 2°, Oregon,
Bradley, Curtis A.-Setian 1°, Colorado, Freemason, reads everything on vampires
Browning, Willie--USAR officer in Ml
Buckman, Samuel-Setian 1°, Accra, Ghana, West Africa, wants to spread black magic in West Africa
Butch, William T.--Priest of Set 3°, Penn., Lt Commander of Navy SEALs, studies ancient Egyptian Satanism
Campbell, Adam N-Adept 2°, Melbourne, Victoria, Aust., satanist interested in politics
Chandler, Kendal T.--Setian 1°, Penn.. a musician into heavy metal music
Clark. Julian R.-Priest of Set 3°. England, practicing hypnotherapist in London, has snakes for pets
Cruse, Roger D. 2nd-Setian 1° , Georgia, interested has studied Clinical Psychology
DeCecco. R. Amn-Magistrer Templi 4°, Maine, on T of S's Council of Nine
DiCicco. Carman J., Jr.-Setian 1°. New Jersey. studies Bruce Lee, Machiavelli, and Anton LaVey, likes Black Sabbath/Ozzy

DuNard-Phillips, Carolyne--Adept 2°, Missouri, Egyptian &Enochian Magic, heads an Egyptian magic Lodge
Egen, Shane M.-Setian 1°, Wellington, New Zealand, interested in Heavy Metal music, martial arts and mind control Engels, Georges-Setian 1°, Belgium, practices Black Magic
Evans, Larry--Priest of Set 3°, Oklahoma, Sentinel of the Gates of Hell Pylon
Farnsler, William E.-Adept 2°, Texas,
Felczak, John J.--Adept 2°, Calif., has stuied a wide variety of occult systems
Ferguson, Rick A.--Setian 1°, Ohio, Flowers.
Nancy K.-Magistra Templi 4°, Texas, Editor of the Scroll of Set, part of the Bull of Ombos Pylon in Austin, TX.
Flowers, Dr. Stephen E.-Magister Templi 4°, Texas, Grand Master of Order of the Trapezoid, expert of Runes and Germanic occultism

Fox, D. Pete-Setian 1°, Illinois, interested in Nazism's occultism
Friedel. Peter--Priest of Set 3°, West Ger. member of the Ordo Satuni (holds a high degree), 30° in the Scottish Rite, member of the Quatuor Coronati Lodge of London, generational satanist of the Illuminati, promotes Satanism's growth in Europe.

Gallo. Walter J.-Setian 1°, New York, former painter. interested in Crowley and Nazism
Gibbs, Cynthia K.--Setian 1°, Calif.,
Goff, Joseph A-Adept 2°, Mich,
Grady. James S-Virginia Gregoire, Raymond A-Priest of Set 3°. Wash, state
Grisé, Kevin M.-Setian 1°, hypnotherapist & rehab counselor
Guliaeff, Nickolai N., Jr-Adept 2°, Calif.
Gyori. John G., Jr.--Adept 2°, Texas Hand,
Eddie W.--Setian 1°. Louisiana (See previous art, in Oct. 15 newsletter on Wayne Cox within the list of witch covens,) Hardee, Bryan C.-Setian 1°, Wyoming, was part of a guild of magicians called the G.T.P,
Hardy, Patty A--Priestess of Set 3°, Maine, likes to read Robert Anton Wilson
Haywood, Michael T.--Setian 1°, Illinois, (now perhaps in Pittsburg PA)
Hearty, Marie L.--Setian 1°, Ontario, Can.,
Hinson, Eulit M.-Adept 2°, Black Magician who studies Crowley, Aquino, the Golden Dawn, Nietzsche, vampirism, etc.
Jantschik, Walter-Adept 2°, West Germany. Black Magician who studies vampirism, demonology, fraternal orders Johnson, James R., Jr.--Adept 2°, Nevada.
Johnson, Lynn (later married W.T. Butch)--high Setian who left to form the Temple of Nepthys
Joyner, James C-Sec, of the Order of Leviathan, Baxley. GA
Kalivoda, Kurt-Setian 1°, Illinois, studied OTO black magic
Keil, Jeffrey J.-Setian 1°, mmbr Rune-Gild, King, Stephen P.--Setian 1°, So. Carolina,

Knowles, James L., Jr.--Setian 1°, Minn., has studied Enochian Magic. (The Knowles family is somewhat prominent.)
Laakso, Petri-Setian 1°, Finland. joined T of S as a young man going into the Finish armed forces
Lance, Rebecca C-Priestess of Set 3°, Calif., member of The Children which is a Satanic band
Lee, John--Setian 1°, Queensland, Aust., interested in Nazism and SS rituals
Lewis, .James--ipsissimus 6°, Council of Nine, Baxley, Georgia, was formerly with the Church of Satan
Lilly, James H., Jr --Setian 1°,
Lima, Peter J.--Setian 1°
Lynch, Scott C.-Setian 1°, Halifax, Nova Scotia, interested in Neo-Nazism and the KKK
Mahoney, Michael--Setian 1°, Mass.
Mann, Dennis K-Priest of Set 3°, Order of the Trapezoid, and Order of the Vampire, New York, USAR in Ml. propaganda expert and an attorney

Matthews, Lee J.-Adept 2°, Conn., studies the Yezidee Satanists McGranahan,
Timothy L.--Adept 2°, Illinois
Mensohel, Robert--Magister Templi 4°, Calif., Member of Mensa, computer whiz kid, editor Ruby Tablet
Moffatt, Robert H.--Magister Templi 4°, Calif., co-fdr of T of S Council of 9, editor SCROLL, operated Set-Amentet Pylon in LA. Moore,

Patrick R.--Setian 1°, FL
Neilly. Robert W.-Magister Templi 4°, Ontario, Canada, co-fdr T of 5, Chrmn Council of Nine, ESP research
Nielsen, Ruth A.--Adept 2°, WI, ex-Catholic nun, into magic, incl. hermetic magic and computers
Nourse, Andrew--Setian 1°, MA, amateur radio, computer programmer, into massage magic,
Osbourne, Amanda--Adept 2°, CA, likes Stephen King Novels and Star Trek, and love horror films
Page. Richard E.-Setian 1°, Ml, into runic and Enochian magic
Parkin, Antony--Adept 2°, Lancashire, Eng.. likes Nazi SS things
Pridgen, William D.--Adept 20, So. Cara., likes the works of Crowley, Lovecraft, Grant, R.A. Wilson, John wheeler and others.

Radtke, Walter--Adept 2°, CA. experimental artist, interested in Da Vinci, Tesla, Velikovsky
Reichensperger, Peter--Setian 1°, mathematician. Esoteric Order of Dagon. works with computers
Reynolds, Linda--Magistra Templi 4°, Tenn, co-leader of Seshen Pylon, San Francisco
Rietze, Perry A.-Setian 1°, FL, Satanist interested in Satanic Bible, ritual magic, Egyptology, and demonology
Rigby. Michael S.-Adept 2°, TX Rivera, Peter N--Adept 2°, Calif., interested in the magical effects of drums and music
Robinson, Robert W.-Priest of Set 3°, UT. interested in snakes, studying the Illuminati, built ritual sites in Death Valley, explores Aztec ruins.

Rowlett, Curtis A--Adept 2°, GA, interested in Aleister Crowley/Thelema
Rush, Jennifer--Adept 2°, N.S.W. Australia, uses Tarot cards as a hobby
Russell, Diane--Setian 1°, FL, practices Black Magic Sandling.
Frances S.--Adept 2°, Dorset, Eng.. interested in John Dee (Enochian Magic). Crowley & LaVey. Does Black Magic rituals.

Sass, James D.--Setian 1°, P.O. Box 666, Daytona Beach, FL 32115, Hard core black magician.
Saunders, Richard--Adept 2°, England. interested in Black Magic and Chaos Magic
Schumacher, Jeurgen-Setian 1°, Germany, works Hatha Yoga, likes Odinism, studies hypno-therapy
Scott, Eardley W.--Setian 1°, NJ, a drummer with a rock/jazz fusion, like Enochian magic & its conversion to Setian symbolism

Shull, Robert W.-Adept 2°, VA, Snow, Heather L.--Adept 2°, NM, artist
Sobolewski, R. Douglas--Setian 1°, PA, Rosicrucian (AMORO) 8°, amateur astronomer
Spriet. Patrick--Adept 2°, Belgium, interested in Nazism and Egypt, multilingual in 5 languages
Stout, Julie-Adept 2°, TX, Taylor, Lucifer E.--Setian 1°, MA, Exec, Sec. of Brimstone, a journal of the Anc. Brotherhd of Satan, 231 Kennedy Dr #130, Maiden, MA 02148
Thompson, Elana-Setian 1°, OR, interested in the occult, science fiction and anthropology esp. the Middle East
Van Patten, William P.-Setian 1°, NY, likes Heavy Metal music like Ozzy/Black Sabbath, reads Stephen King.

studies Nazism

Watson, Amoid R.-Setian 1°, TX, interested in Egyptology, the Yezidi Satanists, Enochian Magic, and other things.
Webb, Don-Adept 2°, TX, Weirich, Richard J.-Setian 1°,
Wendall, Margaret A.-Magistra Templi 4°, CA, was a prominent mmbr of Ch. of Satan, founded the Scroll of Set & has been its editor

Whitaker, Colleen G.-Honorary Setian, OH, artist, interested in the Tarot, Councillor & Ex, Dir, for Ch of Satan
Whitaker, Roger L.-Honorary Setian, OH, a film maker, likes horror films
Winkhart, Roland-Priest of Set 3°, Germany, helps Peter Friedel operate the Black Diamond Pylon in Germany for the T of S

Zajkowski, Marie M,--Priestess of Set 3°, CA. Zimmer,
Brian E.-Adept 2°, OH.

D. Dr. Green (Dr. Joseph Mengele)

The most significant programmer, perhaps one could give him the title of the father of Monarch Programming was Joseph Mengele, an ex-Nazi Concentration Camp doctor. Thousands of Monarch mind-controlled slaves in the U.S. had "Dr. Green" as their chief programmer. Physically the doctor was 5’8", dark-brown hair, greenish brown eyes, and gracefully handsome. He was a Dr. Jekyll-Mr. Hyde character who disarmed people by his kindness. He was gentle and quiet and intelligent, while still having a very sadistic brutal side to him. Joseph Mengele was born into a wealthy Satanic bloodline, and became one of the most powerful Satanists in the world. He was an expert on demonology and the Cabala. He was at least a Grand Master in the Illuminati, but how high he went up the hierarchy ladder is unknown to this author.

Because he was part of the Illuminati and their bodies are not to have visible scars, Joseph Mengele did not take the SS tatoo on his body when he joined the Nazi SS. Mengele became the camp doctor at the famous Auschwitz Concentration Camp. Joseph Mengele was in a very key position as the camp doctor at Auschwitz. He was able to use countless thousands of people as guinea pigs for experiments. One of the chief items that had to be charted in detail was how much torture various humans could take. The charts were worked up so that the Illuminati would know exactly how much torture and how much nurturing to carry out in creating trauma-based mind-controlled slaves.

After Joseph grew up in Gunzberg with a family noted for their secrecy, and an abusive mother, he studied at Frankfurt-am-Main which is a satanic stronghold in Germany. He interned at Leipzig, a town known for being the site of modern learning theories. Later he joined the SA and then later the SS. At the end of W.W. II the United States army took custody of Mengele, and the secret satanists of the satanic brotherhood, got Mengele quietly smuggled into the U.S.

Mengele was given a higher profile in South America to lead people to think that he spent his time in South America. Actually Mengele spent a great deal of time travelling worldwide especially to places like Tavistock and China Lake’s Naval Intelligence base where Monarch slaves were created from innocent children. Although Mengele did indeed live in Brazil, Argentina and Paraguay a great deal of misinformation and disinformation has been dumped on the world by the CIA and other groups working for the Illuminati.

Mengele continued to love music and dancing throughout his life. He became a human puppet master who used music to program with. He liked both the violin and the piano. He did lots of musical key-tones programming. Some of his protégés also used music to program with. This bent toward using music then contributed to the fact that the American country western industry is an outgrowth of the Monarch program. The country western industry is a cover for the drug running done via Monarch slaves.

Another bent of Mengele’s also contributed to a direction that the Monarch program took. Mengele was fascinated by twins and twinning. Mengele experimented on thousands of twins, most of who died from the torture of the experiments. Science experiments need two groups, one of which is a control group. Twins make research easy. Mengele used them extensively. He was developing, along with some German and Italian researchers, the capability to trauma bond people to their abuser to such an extent that the victim would be totally loyal to their abuser. During episodes in the camps when Mengele saved people from execution by the S.S., some of those people remained loyal to him to this day in spite of an awareness of how many people he cruelly tortured to death.

Monarch slaves are programmed to think they have a twin somewhere. Many of them have been twinned into 2 person and 4 person teams also. Mengele was known by people in the camps by his victims as the Angel of Death, Vater (father), Vaterchen (daddy) and Schoner Joseph (beautiful Joseph). Monarch mind-controlled slave victims who were programmed by him know him by names such as Doctor Green, Papa, David and Fairchild. Monarch slaves remember the cadence of his shiny black boots as he marched back and forth while programming them.

Whether programming in a lab, or experimenting on humans Dr. Mengele enjoyed reducing people to the level of animals. However, many times his victims were restrained from crying tears. Mengele is well-known by his Monarch victims for his daisy game programming. He would pull off a daisy and say I love you." Then he would pull of one and say, I love you not." When the last daisy petal came out I love you not," he would then kill a small child in front of the child he was programming.

Mengele was in Dallas during the killing of JFK, which was achieved by trained Monarch slaves. (In fact, the Beaumont, TX Enterprise on Mon. April 10, '94 in the Metro Sect. B, on page B cont. to 4b reports that a sworn affidavit exists where a man connects Joseph Mengele with Kennedy's death and to have seen Mengele at the Texas Book Depository.) Luis Angel Castillo was just one of the Monarch mind-controlled slaves sent to kill JFK on Nov. 22, '63. A woman from Germany named Mrs. Krebs, along with a host of other programmers, worked with Mengele on the Kennedy assassination.

In 1956, as part of the ongoing deception (and also showing the audacity of the Illuminati) Joseph Mengele applied and got an Argentinean foreign resident permit under his own name. He even travelled to Europe to various countries in 1956 using his own name.

E. Dr. White (Dr. D. Ewen Cameron)

Dr. White was the cover name for D. Ewen Cameron (b. Dec. 24, 1901 - Sept. 8, 1967). He was born in Scotland, was tall, imposing, & blue eyed, liked whiskey, and wore custom-made suits. He called women "Lassie." His favourite book growing up was Frankenstein, it is said that Frankenstein inspired him to go into psychiatry.

Cameron was president of the powerful American Psychiatric Association, and later the president of the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and then later the first president of the World Association of Psychiatrists. He was chairman of the Canadian Scientific Planning Committee.

Dr. D. Ewen Cameron, of Montreal, Canada was Dr. White when carrying out Monarch programming. Cameron tried to continue some of Mengele's eye color research in Canada. Mengele was trying to discover for the Nazi's how to make brown eyes blue. Cameron received funding from the Illuminati. Cameron also got funding from the CIA. The Rockefeller Foundation gave him $40,000 in 1943 to create the Allen Memorial Institute for psychiatry, an Illuminati front. He began doing programming early in the 1950s. Cameron had served on the gruesome western front in W.W.I.

As an Illuminati kingpin and programmer, Cameron (Dr. White) was very sadistic and cold blooded. He visited other programmers on the West Coast periodically. One leading Canadian doctor said that Cameron "was not possessed of the necessary sense of humanity to be regarded as a good doctor." The man was able to instill fear into people by looking at them. He met frequently with Allen Dulles, the head of the CIA. He travelled frequently including making stops in Washington. Many of the Monarch slaves on the east coast were victims of Cameron. He worked long hours at his mind-control work like a driven man.

In 1961, just one of Cameron's institutions administered under his supervision 60,000 electrical shocks to patients. This is just what was recorded at one institution for one year. Who knows how many victims got electrical shocks and programming by this man? He worked with the Jesuit part of the NWO in Canada.

Leonard Rubenstein was one of his trusted assistants. Cameron encouraged dissension among his staff in divide and Conquer tactics to maintain his power. Cameron had a big ego that allowed him to steal other people's work and give himself credit for it, in his publications.

F. The Anti-Christ Chief handler/programmer

(1) The AntiChrist will have both public and private lives. The two will not be the same. Deep in the heart of the AntiChrist he will want to rob, kill, and destroy.

(2) He will be a man of war, but his public image will be that he is a man of peace.

(3) He will be a winner. The public always likes a winner. This will be a man with a hardened heart, but a man of charisma.

(4) Charisma has been noted to develop when a person is a foreigner (novel) and has some feature that causes people to feel sorry for the person --some wound or physical defect (like Gorbachev's red splotch on his head). The AntiChrist will have the public appearance of being a genius, not only a wizard of words, but a commercial genius, a military genius, a diplomat of the highest order, a leader, and an intelligent good looking man.

(5) However, this is the public image. Some of this will be created by Madison avenue techniques. He will be fearless,

(6) a skilled negotiator, a poker face who is capable of crafty deception. In fact deception characterizes the man. He is Satan in human flesh,

(7) who will use religion for evil. He will use good for evil.

(8) His lineage is from several directions. He may have Hittite blood,

(9) blood from the Tribe of Dan,

(10) and blood from Assyria .

(11) He may also claim to have Egyptian royal blood.

(12) He will be proclaimed the returning messiah for the Buddhists, the Islamic religion, the New Agers, the Christians, etc. Inman Mahdi, the Messiah. etc.

(13) However, the group of people who he will be most connected to, will be the Jews.

(14) His sphere of influence will not just be jews, but he will reinstitute blood sacrifices in the Temple in Jerusalem .

(15) This may well be the abomination of desolation that the Word of God warns about.

(16) The AntiChrist will arise on the scene like a thief in the night (17) and will surprise people by his rise to fame. He will come from obscurity --

(18) but he will have all the correct credentials

(19), and bloodlines.

(20) All the correct occult signs will occur around this individual.

(21) Because of historical precedence, we know that chaos and confusion will set the stage for the grand entrance of this man onto the stage of public attention.

(22)Problems will be created, so that this great man can pull mankind out of the worst disasters. The world will be trauma-bonded with him.

(23) He will be a savior saving mankind from extinction and death.

(24) However, while he promises and provides a new life for humankind, he is actually a merchant of spiritual death.

(24) The eternal fate of individuals is determined by how they respond to him.

(25) A remnant of true believers will endure to the end

(26), but many will succumb to the deception.

(27) The AntiChrist will not have to face a hostile church--the church will be in apostasy and will accept him.

(28) The AntiChrist will have to face a few John the Baptist types, who he will use his guillotines on.

(29) In other words, the AntiChrist will not be antagonistic toward the church--but he will subtly destroy it and cause it to serve only him. He will disregard the true law of God

(30)--the spirit of the law, but he will be a legalist, who wants law and order

(31). He will have both a False Prophet and another close friend the Beast.

(32) The daily blood sacrifices will become the global correct view, and Christians who oppose these sacrifices will be in trouble.

(33) All the trappings of Rabbinic and Talmudic and Cabalistic Judaism will be revived and flourish.

(34) He will pretend to be like Christ--he will be compared to Christ in the media--but he will also be opposed in reality to everything Christ stands for. As so many Satanic cult leaders do, and as is standard within Illuminati rituals--the AntiChrist will be killed and brought back to life.

(35) This simulated death will be done in front of the public, and this will give him the appearance of superhuman strength and divine favor--for being able to receive a deadly wound and then to heal and revive so quickly. Jerusalem will be the religious capital of the New World Order (36)--but there is reason to believe that there will also be both a political and an economic capital, and a computer and a police center. (37) There will probably be 3 public capitals and many other centers

(38) Just as during the Roman Empire there were many religious centers, such as Ephesus was the spiritual center for Diana worship being one of the 7 wonders of the Ancient world. Mt. Olympus in Greece was a sacred mountain in ancient times, with sites for consultations with the Oracles. In modern AntiChrist times, Glastonbury, UK and Mt. Shasta, CA may serve as spiritual centers. The New Age pilgrimages to Mt. Shasta which are covers for the mind control done there may well continue to serve that same function in the AntiChrist's reign.

(39) Rome or London could become political capitals. An economic capital could be established almost anywhere. The computers are already being centered in Europe. Once he has taken power, he can enter into Jerusalem like a hero, triumphantly.

(40) He will command universal worship via the technological advances that have been made in communication. All the spirits of evil will collect themselves in this one person of evil. He will be shrewd, and will be able to understand dark evil things. He will do things according to his own will. At least some outside of the inner circle will know that he is homosexual, (and bi-sexual).

(41) He will have the full force of the world's system behind him, trying to make him look better. He may be born in the Middle East --perhaps in Pakistan like Lord Maitreya (Rahmat Ahmad).

(42) Historically, Satan's AntiChrist spirit has captured a number of men.

(43) For instance, Antiochus IV Epiphanes, Caligula, Nero, Ghulam Alimad and Hitler.

However, these have been only partial manifestations. Satan working through secret Satanists such as Karl Marx set up Communism. In Russia, Marx, Engels and Lenin were made into a Father, Son and Holy Spirit triad. The picture of the 3 was prominently displayed all over Russia. Lenin was created into a Christ like figure. (The extent of how much communism substituted these men for the trinity hasn't been covered by the controlled Western media.)

The men of this false godhood were given the attributes in Russia of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit by state propaganda. I mention all these things, because again this was a partial manifestation of the AntiChrist spirit along with the Beast and the False Prophet. Those who would understand how the AntiChrist will act in public, need to study Machiavelli, Hitler, Antiochus IV Epiphanes, Lenin, and the many other partial manifestations of the AntiChrist spirit, such as the Popes.

Most Reformation reformers and early American puritan leaders regarded the Pope as the AntiChrist. He certainly has often been a good example. The private life of the AntiChrist will be very identical to other Illuminati kingpins. He will participate in Illuminati rituals. He has already been presented to Illuminati councils for approval. All the Mothers of Darkness will serve him as brides, as well as an inner body guard. Like Faust, and everyone else in the Illuminati, the AntiChrist has made many covenants, oaths, and vows to Satan himself. He has been taught that he is a god man. In public, he will proclaim himself divine. In private, he will consider Satan to be his own god.

He will strive to do the best job for Satan possible, because he has been taught that he will rule with Satan in hell, and his position in hell will be determined by how good he does his job now. He will be totally turned over to Satan, the Father of all lies. He will feast on the blood of sacrificed individuals, and may well be addicted to drinking blood, like Vice-Pres. Al Gore is.

(44) Those who do not have a love for the truth, will come under the spell of the AntiChrist's deception which will be flooded over the television screens, and through the controlled media.

(45) He will push all the correct buttons verbally when he speaks, and he will even flatter people. (46) He will be the world's tyrannical but much loved dictator, a father figure.

(47) The AntiChrist will be working on creating supermen , the genetic wonder man that Hitler was working to create. Instead of using God's approach to perfection, the AntiChrist will have the most superior genetic approach so far. In other words, to the public with their warped thinking, he will look like he is improving the human race genetically, and in every other way too.

The Illuminati are planning to install him as Lord over the earth around the year 2000. Occultists (incl. known Satanic leaders) have been prophesying his coming. Hollywood under the direction and financing of the Illuminati have given us the Damien series and other films on the AntiChrist. David Bauer, a psychic adviser and Baptist minister, has prophesied that the AntiChrist will come in the year 2000. Jean Dixon, who has connections to the Illuminati has prophesied this too. So has the English astrologer Edwin Lyndoe. They declare that this leader will be a savior of mankind. Jeanne Dixon went so far as to say that the AntiChrist was born on Feb. 5, 1962. (See Dixon, J. My Life and Prophecies. Fred. Miller, 1971.) The witch Sybil Leek even pointed to a son of a Jerusalem dentist. David Morris as being the man. (Leek. S. Reincarnation: the Second Chance. NY: Stein & Day, 1974).

All kinds of people are pointing at the year 2000. Occult prophecies about the year 2000 come from Irene Hughes, Alan Vaughn, Edgar Cayce, Kenneth Odhar and many others. De Sabrato an occult prophet believes Christ will return in 2003 in the form of an ET Christ. However, if plans fall apart there are indications that the AntiChrist could arrive later in the 21st century. Henry Kissinger said, "We are going to have a New World Order, if not in this generation, then in the next."

One of the men who worked high up in the New World Order. and who had inside information felt that the

AntiChrist wouldn't rule until 2047 and that he would be born in New York City and have blond hair and blue eyes. From what the Lord has shown this author, and taking into account the vulnerabilities of the Illuminati's plans, this author would state that the AntiChrist may not arrive until quite a few years from now. On the other hand, there are already candidates who have been presented before the Illuminati councils who are candidates to become the AntiChrist.

The primary candidate for the position of AntiChrist is being kept in a heavily guarded small town near London. Only those who are summoned by him enter into the room where he is located. Individuals who come into his presence immediately want to worship him. He is a Rothschild.

The mother of either the NWO's John position or the Christ position was S. E. D. [name may be available on request from Fritz Springmeier] and his name is Alexander Rothschild, Jr. The name Alexander is very important to the Illuminati. Baron Rothschild passed on his spiritual power when he was ritually murdered in 1976. This Rothschild AntiChrist is known as the Son of Apollo.

(48) From a reliable source close to Lord Maitreya. he is Jewish. The Illuminati have a Mary position, also known as the Madonna position, which are women that are closely connected to the AntiChrist. Within the last few years, all the Madonna-position systems united in ritual in London, Frankfurt, Austria, and Switzerland. The name Queen of Heaven (Seriramis) is also applied to high level women close to the AntiChrist.

Programmed multiples, who rise above the Grande Dame level, enter levels designated by a. b, c & d. Guinevere, the name of King Arthur's wife & Lancelot's mistress, designates one of the positions of the 4-female Illuminati teams around the AntiChrist. It is written Gennifer for English speaking systems.

(49) Prior to the AntiChrist 2 witnesses are to come to which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt. REV 11:8. In the past, God has sent his 2 witnesses (Moses/Aaron), (the two to Sodom, see GEN 18:16+) on Nisan 1 (Passover). The orthodox Jews expect the return witness of Elijah on Passover. The real 2 witnesses/& or the Satanic 2 false witnesses may appear around the Passover time. (cf. REV 11:1-3, 7:1-17, 14:1-5, JOEL 2:30-32, & ACTS 2:19-21.) These witnesses and the Illuminati's John the Baptist? position are some of the prominent people who are slated to die in the end time drama being prepared by the Illuminati who are trying to copy scripture, and by God Almighty who is directing things on a higher level. Readers must bear in mind that Satan knows the Scriptures too, and is a great imitator.

Footnotes

1. This is a universal trait of men with the AntiChrist spirit. While Christ is truth, Satan is deception. Having a facade, being two-faced (like the god Janus) is standard for these men. Judas Iscariot with his kisses for Christ is just one example of thousands of examples. James 3:17 shows that the Holy Spirit is without hypocrisy, but the Evil Spirit is devoid of the Holy Spirit s fruit and is full of hypocrisy.

2. The Spirit of Satan desires to rob, kill, and destroy. Satan s desires will consume the thinking of the AntiChrist. The Word of God indicates that whatever the AntiChrist wills to do, he will do according to Dan. 11:36. In this sense, he will be the master magician, the Adept of Adepts. 3. Scripture indicate that he will bring a false peace to the earth, and that he will be a man with fierce countenance.

4. Scripture indicate he will be worshipped, and the power of the media to make heros Out of any actor has been well established.

5. Scriptures indicate he will be considered very intelligent. They also indicate what spheres of influence he will lead, and what roles he will play. Taking these into account, and taking into account what the Illuminati have planned, and taking into account that Satan s world likes to develop certain public images for its heroes, then it is a given that Satan s AntiChrist will appear gifted or well developed intellectually in many areas. While intellectual stature is not important to God, it has always been in Satan s world.

6. Dan. 8:23

7. Scripture, and common knowledge among Satanists is that the AntiChrist will be produced from the seed of

Satan and aminated by Satan himself. Lk 22:3 shows that Satan himself entered Judas, how much more so then will the AntiChrist be the embodiment of Satan.

8. The Scripture show that Satan likes to use good things like the Word of God for evil purposes.

9. Illuminati belief is that they are descended in part from the Hittites. 10. Early Christian leader Irenaeus felt that Scriptures and early teachings indicated that the Tribe of Dan would raise the AntiChrist. The Midrash on Gen. 49:14-17 supports his view, and it states that darkness will come over the world from the Tribe of Dan. Other conspiracy researchers like myself have discovered that the Tribe of Dan s lineage is playing a big role in the Illuminati.

11. Isa. 10:5, 12

12. Jeanne Dixon prophecies that he will be descended from Pharaoh. The Illuminati are making coronation plans at the Great Pyramid in 1999. It is quite possible that the AntiChrist may have blood from a Pharaoh, or at least the pseudo-documentation to make people believe it.

13. The Illuminati are already doing this with Lord Maitreya

14. The Word of God shows that he is accepted by the Jews as being the Old Testament messiah.. In order to do that he must have some credentials that look good.

15. Rev.

16. Mt. 24:15

17. The Illuminati have been working hard to keep the AntiChrist s identity a big secret. Cf. Acts 1:7 and Mt. 24:36. God has kept some things secret too. Satan will come like a thief in the night. 2 Ptr 3:10. 18. The Son of Perdition will be revealed --2 Thes 2:3-4 with powers and signs and lying wonders 2 Thes 2:9.

19. He steals (cuts off) the worship deserved by Christ for himself. Rev. 13:16, 17, and cf. 2 thes. 2:9. It is clear that the AntiChrist must have credentials that allow himself to be palmed off as a Christ. He will be a genuine imitation Christ.

20. We know he will have an elite generation satanic bloodline because he belongs to the Illuminati, which in itself is the elite bloodlines. He will be the elite of the elite. There are spiritual reasons why Satan needs people from generational satanic families for his leadership. His legal claims over the AntiChrist and his occult powers are increased by the circumstances of being from multi-generational satanic families.

21. This is simply part of being within Satan s kingdom.

22. This is according to the Illuminati s plans, which have been discussed at length with this author by people trying to escape the Illuminati.

23. A common tactic by satanic leaders, there is little doubt that this tactic will also be used by the supreme dictator, the AntiChrist.

24. Satan gives spiritual death, Christ gives life--that is one of the themes of the Bible.

25. Rev. 19:20. Those who take the AntiChrist s mark are thrown into the Lake of Fire.

26. The gates of Hell will not prevail against the church. There will be faith, although it will be as in the days of Noah--it will be a rarity. Various scriptures indicate that Satan will never wipe out the entire church on the earth.

27. Mt. 24:24. He will break the Holy People. Dan 12:6-7

28. A number of scriptures indicate that there will be a falling away- Christ asks, Will there even be faith? This apostate church is Babylon the Great, which is described in Rev. 17- 18. The entire world will worship him.

Note how many Christians are united with the ecumenical activities of mainstream Christendom. The majority of churches are now participating in ecumenical activities, even the supposedly conservative evangelicals.

29. Rev. 12:11, Rev. 6:10

30. Scripture call him the Lawless One because he hates God s spiritual laws and will try to destroy the sacrifice of Christ by reinstituting blood sacrifices.

31. This is according to Illuminati plans, and also matches what the previous partial manifestations of the AntiChrist have been like. Hitler was always preaching law and order. This is a common theme by the NWO. Satan is always a great legalist.

32. He will deny the Father and the Son (1 John 2:22) and present to the world the False Trinity described in the book of Revelation. (Rev. 13:1) 33. Cf. Jn. 16:2

34. This has already happened. The Temple rituals have been reinstituted, and even the blood sacrifices are secretly being done underground.

35. This is hinted at in a couple of places in Scripture. It is such a standard satanic trick, that it would be amazing if it were not done. Part of anticipating one s enemies actions is to know their thinking. This would be in line with satanic tactics.

36. Cf. Lk. 21:24. When the Times of the Gentiles ends, Jerusalem is to be restored to being a spiritual center. cf. Dan. 11:45-12:1.

37. This is a conclusion by the author after studying plans of the elite, including UN plans, and other activities and statements by those in the NWO.

38. This is a conclusion by the author after studying plans of the elite. 39. This is speculation on author s part. which takes into consideration what is already going on in secret.

40. Illuminati plans. The Jews have long waited for the Messiah (the New David) to enter Jerusalem through the Golden Gate. This expectation was mentioned to the author when he was in Jerusalem.

41. Dan. 11:37. The Illuminati have been promoting homosexuality because they want people to accept the homosexuality of the AntiChrist. In Dan. 11:37 it indicates that Neither regard.. .the desire of women.

42. See the Be Wise As Serpents book. Chapt. 1.4

43. John 2:18 and I John 4:3

44. Two different ex-Satanists have independently provided information on Al Gore s addiction to blood. Illuminati kingpins are often addicted to the Adrenalchrome that pools in the body just prior to a person being sacrificed. Various newsletters give more information on this and related issues.

45. Mt. 24:4,5,11; 2 Thes. 2:10-12 Because they received not the love of the truth...

46. Dan. 11:32

47. Rev. 13:3,4, 7, 8,17

48. This entire paragraph comes from various Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves who were in important positions around the AntiChrist, who have been deprogrammed.

49. This information comes from half a dozen top important Illuminati mind-controlled slaves who are in the process of being deprogrammed.

Appendix Two: The Programming Sites

Some MAJOR MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMING SITES with explanations of their programming.

(Fritz Springmeier originally exposed many of these sites in 1993, so it is possible they have made some changes since they were originally exposed. Most of these operated for years, and may still be operating. We are aware of that some of their programming bases have been moved after exposure.)

Besides these major programming sites, there are countless minor ones. For instance, some of the programming sites for water-beach tortures have been visited by the co-authors, but are not listed. The massive Boeing Plant in the Seatle, WA area with its large amount underground tunnels has been used for programming, as well as the ARCO Beaver Valley Plant in Pennslyvannia. So has the chapel at the Coast Guard Academy at New London , Conn. which was built by A.W. Mellon of the Mellon Illuminati family via their Mellon Foundation.

This list is not put forth as comprehensive. Without question, this list is only the tip of the iceberg.

29 Palms, CA Area 51 (Dreamland, Groom Lake), NV--Area 51 is also known as Dreamland. There are a number of extensive underground facilities in the area. This was one of the first genetic research facilities in the U.S. and perhaps the first major genetic research facility. The people/workers & victims are brought in by airplane and tube shuttle. The worst cases of UFO/alien type of Monarch programming is coming out of Area 51. The eggs from slaves are being harvested and weird genetic creatures are being developed from human eggs which have been genetically mixed with other things.

Bethseda , MD --The Bethesada Naval Hospital Bingham , UT --A red brick house, which was a closed House of Prostitution. The building was used for KKK programming. Child porn was produced in the basement, and upstairs programmed child slaves serviced KKK members. The KKK activity in the area connects in with the Illuminati controlled Kennecott Copper Co. (aka Utah Copper Co.) Russell G. Frazer, head of Bingham's Klavern & doctor for Kennecott Copper Co. did the electro-shock to split personalities.

Black Forest, Germany--Because the U.S-U.K. and Germany do so much programming, and some of the people in the U.S. were programmed in the U.K., Germany or Russia, it is worthwhile to mention some of the German programming sites. A number of witnesses report about castles in the Black Forest which are used for programming & ritual.

Basal, Sw. on the border with Germany is a important Illuminati center.

Frankfurt , Berlin and Zurich are all important programming/ritual sites. The Jesuits and the Catholic churches are very active in programming in Germany .

Boulder , CO --The headquarters for EMC, a type of electra-magnetic mind control that is being broadcast to modify the thinking of Americans, and to control slaves.

Butner , N.C. -- Center of Correctional Research , all types of mind control are carried out and experimented with on the inmates.

Camp Peary , VA --The CIA's The Farm is located on a narrow strip of land between the York & James Rivers near Williamsburg , VA , used for programming CIA slaves. It has red brick buildings, and looks similar to a small college. The official crytonym was ISOLATION. People who are brought in who don't know where they are for training are called Black Trainees.

China Lake Naval Research Base (Inyokern), CA--This facility had a country store, and hangers, and a hospital (address for the hospital is the code- 232 Naval Air Weapons Station) which all provided sites for programming. This site has been operational since the early 1950s. Large numbers of children (batches of 1000 or 2,000 or 3,000 children were run through this facility at a time. This facility did much of the original traumas and mind-splitting tortures that created the MPD. Other facilities then specialized in further programming that was then layered in on top of the original China Lake programming. A great deal of dehumanization in cages was done to large numbers of tiny children at China Lake Naval Facility.

Nimitz Hospital did drug testing of the children prior to their programming.

Colorado Springs , CO --The ALEX system programming and end-times Military programming is coming out of Colorado Springs and is connected to NORAD. One of the Colorado sites is doing alien programming with mock UFOs.

Dillsboro Nike Base--Monarch programming of many kinds

Disneyland , CA -- Disneyland has been an off hour site for Illuminati and satanic rituals for years. Programming has gone on using Disneyland as one big prop for programming. Many of the Disney movies are used for programming, and some Disney scripts are especially tailored for Monarch slave programming. The Peter Pan programming can use the ship. The space programming can use the space props. The satanic programming can use the castles. Lots of mirror programming is done at Disneyland , and Disneyworld . There is also Magic Mountain programming, and programming using the Around the World Dolls, and its theme song. Some of Wizard of Oz and the Cinderella programming was also done at Disneyland using costumes. Preverbal children are taken to Disneyland to get them ready for the scripts.

Disneyworld , FL -- Disneyworld was created as the eastern counterpart to the Disneyland programming site. One of the rides in Disneyworld plays "It's a small, small world" which is Disneyland developed programming theme.

Ft. Campbell , KT--Base programs are placed in here.

Ft. Detrick , MD --involved with medical/biological experimentation

Ft. Holabird , MD --This site is no longer in existence, but was the Army Intelligence School . CIC used the school. The place was known as "the Bird."

Ft. Hood , TX --programming involving military uses of Delta Monarch slaves was done here.

Ft. Huahuachua , AZ --HQ for Army Intelligence.

Ft. Knox , KT --The 1st Earth Batt. was developed here.

Ft. Lewis , WA --involved with the Psychic warfare part of the Monarch Programming.

Ft. McClellen -- Ft. Meade , MD --The National Security Agency was created on 4 Nov 1952 . Its headquarters were Fort Meade , VA. The National Security Agency (NSA) employs tens of thousands of employees and has a budget larger than the CIA. It has also been kept far more secret, while the CIA has been used as the fall guy to protect the National Security Agency's reputation.

In the late 1960's, under Operation Minaret and Program Shamrock, the NSA and its British counterpart GCHQ began monitoring much of the communication within the USA and UK . The NSA monitors all American calls via computers using trip words, specific names, specific addresses, specific telephone numbers, etc. NSA has several computer to record all the millions of conversations which the computers have examined and deemed worthy of recording. How the NSA can get any use out of millions of recorded telephone conversations is beyond me? What intelligence agency could adequately process so much information? These organizations now monitor all communications within both countries. At least one congressman got upset that his phone was bugged by the NSA. (see David Corn's article, "The case of the bugged senator" in Nation, Feb. 6, '89 , p. 152.)

NSA has developed a fiberoptics network called Internet computer network. An orange book is used to specify some of the NSA's security levels. An informant in the National Security Agency states that establishment newspapers like the Wall Street Journal and the New York Times are used to communicate secret messages which are placed within want ads, buzz words in editorials, and via other methods. Because of some of what this person told me, I have given some possible examples in this newsletter of how people might be using the papers for secret messages. For instance using Michael Jackson with his hands making some type of sign might be a signal.

Manfried Adler and the US Senate Committee investigating the CIA found that 90% of the CIA's secret messages are transmitted via the media, with the aid of coded texts and pictures. A raised forefinger or two raised forefingers while a speaker is talking means that the message is a Masonic message coming from a Masonic speaker.

The Illuminati uses code words within the large establishment papers to warn their people what they are going to do with the economy. In this way, people in the Illuminati can take appropriate responses.

Goddard Space Flight Center--NASA mirror-theme programming

Grissom AFB, IND-- Hollywood, CA--One of the programmers/handlers in the Hollywood area is surprisingly Anton LaVey. This is one reason Anton LaVey has followers who will carry out his very wishes. LaVey's children of course were programmed too. His own girls have been participating in the nude in satanic rituals since little children.

Homestead AFB, FL-- Kirkland AFB, NM--Lampe, MO--This has been the site of a CIA near-death trauma center where slaves are programmed. It is an R&R center for the CIA where they can have any sexual perversion or drug they want. This has been a large cocaine supply depot also. Hal Meadows was director of this center which is deep in the woods surrounded by cabin chalets overlooking a small deep lake. A gravel road leads to the site which is fenced and well-guarded. Hal Meadows address was Box 27, Lampe, MO 65681.

Langley, VA-- Slaves for the wants of intelligence.

Las Vegas (sites in and around Las Vegas), NV--MGM's Grand Hotel and Theme park were built for programming, but there are also some sites outside of the city used. In the general area of Las Vegas in remote sites, the elite gather for slave auctions once a year where Monarch slaves are sold and traded. One of the favorite slave auction sites was 20 miles out of Las Vegas and 10 miles off the main road into the site. The Mob is involved with Monarch slaves in Las Vegas. A blue-eyed 11 year old girl will go for $50,000.

Toronto, Canada is another regular site for Monarch slave auctions.

McClellan AFB, CA - Very bad Child and adult porn using Monarch victims is distributed through this base as well as the other bases listed in this list. A T.W. Sanderson worked with Monarchs at this base.

MacDill AFB, FL --Near Tampa, FL

Maxwell AFB, AL --

Montreal, Que., Canada -McGill Univ., McGill Psychiatric Training Network, Allan Memorial Inst., St. Mary's Hosp.- The Zombie Room (Sleep Room) in the basement, the Isolation chamber and the Grid Room at St. Mary's Hospital were used for programming.

Mt. Shasta, CA--Underground facilities around this huge mountain in the Lake Shasta area are putting out Monarch programming that makes the people think they are in communication with aliens. This facility is for torturing & reprogramming captured runaway Monarch slaves. People are brought into the area via helicopter, plane, or flying saucer. This site is probably the largest mind-control programming center. It is in a remote wooded area. It is heavily guarded, has fences, and a large contingent of black helicopters. Mt. Shasta is equipped with state of the art high tech programming equipment. Mind-controlled slaves who are soldiers are programmed and trained at the Mt. Shasta facility.

Nashville, TN--These sites work with the Country Western Music Industry which is actually a CIA front for moving drugs to finance their dirty black activities. Fiddler's Inn, Nashville fits in with the Monarch Programming.

Papillion, NE--

Patrick AFB,--Portland (Old OMSI, New OMSI, Bldg. Near Monarch Hotel at 8800 SE Sunnyside Rd., Mormon Temple, etc.), OR. The Old OMSI building had a back door on the west side in which slaves were taken in to the bottom floor and reprogrammed. Although security guards aren't visible, they are there with electronic surveillance. The people running OMSI are tied in the Illuminati. The DC-3 airplane outside of the building was used in the programming as a hypnotic trigger. The submarine docked outside of the new OMSI building is also used as a programming hypnotic tool. The new Mormon Temple has an extremely high tech underground tunnel facility for programming built underneath it. Witnesses have collaborated their testimony on this high tech programming site under the Portland Mormon Temple. Although building plans are to be public information, the city of Lake Oswego makes it very difficult to view the temple's building plans. The plans show that the foundation walls are far thicker than any conceivable earthquake would ever call for. The reason is that the foundation helps house an underground arena for the Illuminati & and their guests to watch perverse shows.

Presideo, CA (incl. Alcatraz, San Francisco)-- The Illuminati and various Satanic cults used the Presideo for their programming. Split-brain & other programming was done at Letterman hospital. Fort Point was used for Illuminati ritual & programming, as well as a number of churches, underground gun emplacements and the large circular Greek column art building at the Presideo. Alcatraz, abandoned as a prison, was used for water tortures and other programming. Tunnels connected buildings, and the Mule/Horse buildings and the cemetery also were used. This is one of the older programming sites. Psychic warfare activity also was experimented on in this area. Letterman Hospital has been used for the initial drug testing of the infants before programming. Lots of isolation programming in damp cold places was done at the Presideo. Lots of porn and military programming have also been done here.

Redstone Arsenal, AL--

San Antonio, TX--

Salt Lake City (Mormon Temple)--This underground facility works in conjunction with the Mormon hierarchy who are allowed to create slaves. The Illuminati put in base programming that still gives them ultimate control beyond the control that the Mormon programming has.

Scotty's Castle, Death Valley, CA-Mengele (Dr.Green) programmed in some of his "internal boxes" as well as other Illuminati programming was done at this site. Mengele had a large circular red bed in the castle which he stocked with his little girl slaves, who already had kitten sexual alters. Scotty's Castle is a castle located in Death Valley CA. It has a very interesting history. To reach the castle one is required to drive through many miles of desert. If one drives to lnyo County, CA, the same county that has China Lake Naval Testing Grounds, and Inyokern, and then you drive on Hwy. 190 into Death Valley National Monument (it is not a park or forest, dead valleys are called monuments), next you go north on a road after Stove Pipe for 35 miles.

The man who built Scotty's Castle was Walter Perry Scott (1872-1954). Walter P. Scott was the son of an alcohol distiller and horse breeder in Kentucky. Walter did not get any formal education. He left home and went west where he worked as a mule driver, and a water boy. From there he became a horse wrangler. Because of his talent with horses Buffalo Bill made him the feature rider along with Annie Oakley in Buffalo Bill's family show. The show travelled and Scotty was with it eleven years. During this time, Scotty made many important friendships with men of power and wealth. In 1900, Walter married and left the show. He got a loan from Julian Gerard, a NY banker, to go prospecting for gold which he failed to pay back. Julian Gerard was repeatedly sending people to hassle Scotty to get his money back. In 1905, Walter Scott ("Scotty") scattered gold nuggets and $100 bills from N.Y. to L.A. Where he got all this gold and $100 bills is a mystery, but it wasn't from prospecting. The idea of finding a secret mine was very obviously a cover for however Scotty managed to get his money. Scotty is well-known for his penchant to throw away $20 gold pieces as if they were candy wherever he went. Nobody believed he had a mine, strangely the IRS never got interested in Scotty. Why?

The IRS went after Charles Caughlin who was exposing the elite, the bankers, the Freemasons, etc. in the early 1930's on his radio show. There was no reason to suspect Caughlin of any cheating on his Income Tax, and the audits found the IRS actually owed Caughlin money. However the national papers printed front page stories of the IRS investigation, and practically ignored that the man was exonerated. Yet, the IRS left Scotty alone. Hmmm.

Although Scotty was married, he became intimate friends with Albert Mussey Johnson (1872-1948), a Chicago millionaire, who was v.p. from 1906 to 1926 of the National Life Insurance Co. Albert M. Johnson was born in Ohio, and lived in Arkansas and Missouri before moving to Chicago. Johnson came out and stayed in Death Valley. The stay helped his health, and he and Scotty remained close friends. In 1924, construction secretly began on a castle in Death Valley. The best of materials were used and the materials had to be hauled clear out in the desert by truck to Grapevine Canyon where the castle sits. Hundreds of workers were hired. The castle got its kitchen tiles from Spain. Special rugs were made on the European island of Majorca for the castle. Tiles for the incompleted pool came from the Mediterranean. Many of the furnishing of the castle came from cathedrals and palaces in Spain and Morocco. Draperies made for the castle were hand-tooled in selected sheepskin leather. Sixty hand-carved panels, each of a different design, were installed in the music-room ceiling. A Welte Mignon organ reported to have cost $160,000 --the finest of its kind in Western United States was placed in the music room, even though Scotty could not play the organ. Twelve bathrooms were installed. Several kitchens were installed. Tunnels and secret rooms were built under the buildings. Around $2 million (dollars of that time period) were spent on building the castle, supposedly from Scotty’s "gold mine." The castle became known as Scotty’s Castle. It is ideal as a Satanic ritual site. It can accommodate numerous people. It is remote. It has hidden rooms and areas and tunnels.

Tavistock, England--This has been the primary programming center for England. The Rothschild programmers work out of Tavistock. A large number of slaves in America have been programmed there. Tavistock has been doing mind-control since before W.W.ll. Under the supervision of London’s W Board & 20 Committee MI6 and MIS’s Section BIA ran double agents and mind-controlled spies/couriers during W.W. II. MI6 has had an office at Century House, No. 100, Westminster Bridge Road. MI5 offices have been in part on Curzon St. MI5 has operated behind a number of fronts, incl. their fake travel agency Casuro Holidays. MI-5’s address for mail is Room 055, The War Office, London. Special Intelligence Service (SIS) dealt with all types of mind control. Tavistock was under SIS. The British government has had their own telephone exchange with a 222 prefix, which was later linked to another secret exchange YTAN. Outsiders could dial 222 8080 to get into the secret govt. exchange.

Men like mind-control expert/hypnotist Eric Trist worked for Tavistock. A six-man team which wore black berets also helped w/ mind control at Tavistock. Two people who became terrorists after their visits to Tavistock are Angela Davis and Stockley Carmichael who went to a conference at Tavistock entitled Dialectics of Liberation in 1967. Its main building is a bland 6-story building.

The address is The Training Office, The Tavistock Clinic, 120 Belsize Lane, London, UK NWs SBA. Tel. no. 071-435 7111. The chief exec. is Anton Obholzer. The Chair of Prof. Comm. is Nicholas Temple. Both are skilled in psychology. The Tavistock Clinic was founded in 1920, and in 1946 the Tavistock Institute was created as an independent body to assist the Tavistock Clinic. The Institute does more of the research.

The Royal Free Hospital at the University of London works with Tavistock Clinic, as well as the Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU) of Sussex University. A large number of Britian’s psychologist, social workers and police get their training at Tavistock. Tavistock has set themselves up as the authority on ritual abuse and MPD (DID). In other words, the primary programming site, is pretending to be the leading institution trying to solve the problem! That’s a good cover.

Tinker, AFB, OK--Tinkerbell programming is carried out here. This programming makes alters think they are like Tinkerbell in that they will never grow up or age.

Titusville, FL--At the Kennedy Space Center. Mind control testing is done, and base programming such as the Wizard of Oz programming is done here. Also NASA high tech programming is done here.

Tulsa, OK—Believed to have an Alice In Wonderland theme to their programming. Oral Roberts University is used for programming. The programming to infiltrate and capture the Christian church via the healing/charismatic movement has centered around Tulsa and Oral Roberts University.

Utah State Prison--The prison has carried out mind control for over 30 years on their inmates for the intelligence agencies with the help of the U.S. government’s power to cover it up.

Versailles, IL—Brain implants are put into Monarchs here.

Washington, D.C. area--The basement of the Pentagon and other facilities around Washington D.C. such as the Jesuit Georgetown Univ. Hosp. are involved with Mind-Control. Presidential Models are moving in and out of Washington, D.C. carrying messages and performing their sexual acts for the lusts of politicians. There is also a NASA Mind-control Programming Center in Washington D.C. Secret tunnels connect the White House to other buildings. These tunnels are used to bring in slaves. Some secret rooms in the lower White House are set aside for rituals.

Wright-Patterson AFB--Near Dayton, OH, Virtual reality programming is carried out here.

Youngstown, OH--The Youngstown Charm School has been run by Illuminatus Prosser Seward Mellon along with a U.S. Congressman named Jim Trafficant. The old stone building originally belonged to one of the railroad elite. This school is for Beta models and gives them advance sexual charm training. This school produces about 6 new Monarch slaves every three days. Mafia deals are carried out on the second floor of the charm school. A slave who is being trained/programmed at the Charm school will take a course that last a few days. The first day may be spent hanging in a dungeon which was once a basement wine cellar. The torture dungeon has all the traditional torture devices, a stretching rack, whips, hanging chains, etc. In the dungeon rooms were a black Nubian goat "Satan", a small donkey "Nester', and a small white pony "Trigger", as well as dogs and snakes. The slave is taught silence in the dungeon as they are subjected to bestiality.

Building near the Presideo used for Mother-of-Darkness rituals.

The 6th Army HQ at the Presideo

Oak Tree At The Presideo

Building Near The Presideo

Fort Point, Presideo

Mule Barns

Cemetary at The Presideo

A Church At The Presideo

Across The Bay From The Presideo

Mother Of Darkness Castle, Belgium

Building In Washington

Mother of Darkness Castle We have just touched the surface of the vest network of programming sites. Two examples of an entire series of programming sites--(1) the Coast to Coast campground resorts and (2), the Jesuit-run institutions, which are often programming sites incl. Jesuit College, WV. An example of the former is the Park City Diamond Caverns.

KT Coast to Coast resort, which has had a sensory deprivation tank, headphones for state of the art harmonic programming. etc. These membership camp sites are used to program children. Nor have we touched upon the large numbers of programmed Russians & Eastern Europeans that are coming Into this nation. When this book was written more people immigrated to the U.S. from Russia than anywhere else. Europe is teeming with programming sites, including the Vatican .

Sebulun Zuflucht in Marienheide , Germany is about the only European attempt at deprogramming.

THE HUNT FOR ZERO POINT

INSIDE THE CLASSIFIED WORLD
OF ANTIGRAVITY TECHNOLOGY

NICK COOK

The Hunt for Zero Point

Inside the Classified World of Antigravity Technology

Nick Cook

BROADWAY BOOKS
New York

THE HUNT FOR ZERO POINT. Copyright © 2001 by High Frontier Productions, Ltd. All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the publisher.
For information, address Broadway Books, a division of Random House, Inc.,
1540 Broadway, New York, NY 10036.

A British edition of this book was published in 2001 by Century, The Random House Group Limited, 20 Vauxhall Bridge Road, London, SW1V 2SA, United Kingdom.

Broadway Books titles may be purchased for business or promotional use or for special sales. For information, please write to: Special Markets Department, Random House, Inc.,
1540 Broadway, New York, NY 10036.

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

BROADWAY BOOKS and its logo, a letter B bisected on the diagonal, are trademarks of Broadway Books, a division of Random House, Inc.

Visit our website at www.broadwaybooks.com

First Broadway Books edition published 2002

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Cook, Nick.
The hunt for zero point: inside the classified world of antigravity technology /
Nick Cook.— 1st ed.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
1. Research aircraft—History. 2. Antigravity—Research—History. 3. Aeronautics, Military—Research—History. 4. Military weapons—Research—History. 5. Defense information, Classified—History. I. Title.
TL567.R47 .C 2002
629.13'07'2073—dc21 2001052668

FIRST EDITION

ISBN 0-7679-0627-6

1 3 5 7 9 10 8 6 4 2

In memory of Julian Cook, inventor, and Harry Hawker, fighter pilot

Per ardua ad astra

And for my children, Lucy and William, that one day they or their children may see the stars more closely

Author's Note and Acknowledgments

Not everyone who has assisted me in *The Hunt For Zero Point* has wished to be identified.

There are four people—"Amelia Lopez," "Lawrence Cross," "Daniella Abelman" and "Dr. Dan Marckus"—whose identities I have deliberately blurred. They, of course, know who they are and I gratefully acknowledge their help.

It goes without saying that I could not have interpreted the mass of raw science data in this book without the exceptional skills of Dan Marckus. His knowledge, wisdom, humor and friendship have been an inspiration to me.

Everyone else is exactly as identified in the text.

The people and institutions I can thank freely are listed below:

My colleagues at *Jane's Defence Weekly* and *Interavia*, Tom Valone of the Integrity Research Institute, Paul LaViolette Ph.D., Dr. Kathleen Bunten, Isabel Best, Joel Carpenter, the Imperial War Museum, Philip Henshall, Graham Ennis, Rowland White, Guy Norris, Jeremy Bartlett, Michael Collins, Guy Rigby, Kevin Bexley, Stephen Parker, Bill Zuk, Yvonne Kinkaid, the Office of (U.S.) Air Force History, David Windle, Chris Gibson, Tony Frost, the late Prof. Brian Young, Dr. Ron Evans, BAE Systems, Garry Lyles, George Schmidt, Marc Millis, the U.S. National Aeronautics and Space Administration, Lockheed Martin and the Lockheed Martin Skunk Works, Dr. Evgeny Podkletnov, Dr. Hal Puthoff, the late Ben Rich, Bill Sweetman, Glenn Campbell, Mark Farmer and the Groom Lake Interceptors, Mike Grigsby, James Cook, David Monaghan, George Muellner, Marian Swedija, Irving Baum, Ken Jones, Charles T. Schaeffer, the 16th Armored Division veterans' association, Dr. Amy Schmidt, the U.S. National Archives Records Administration, Ned Bedessem, U.S. Army Center of Military History, the Bundesarchiv at Freibourg, the U.K. Public Records Office, Maurizio Verga, James Holland, Callum Coats, Don Kelly, Bob Widmer, Boyd Bushman, George Hathaway, John Hutchison and John B. Alexander.

My particular thanks go to:

Mark Booth, Hannah Black, Anna Cherrett and the whole team at Century, Charlie Conrad, Claire Johnson, Chava Boylan, Becky Cole, and the whole Broadway Books team in New York, Bill Rose for his outstanding picture research, Igor Witkowski for taking me to the Wenceslas Mine and for sharing his tremendous insight into German secret weapons, Tom Agoston for his groundbreaking book *Blunder!*, the Schauberger family—Frau Ingeborg, Joerg and Ingrid—for their kindness and hospitality at Bad Ischl, Brue Richardson for her constancy, serenity and guidance, Barry and Fiona Shaw for putting up with me (and the rest) during a myriad of writing weekends, Dr. Patrick G. Bailey and Charlee Trantino for their sterling work on the index, and Mark Lucas for being a damn fine friend and agent.

Last, but not least, I would like to thank Ali, my family and hers. This book would have been quite impossible without them.

Prologue

The dust devils swirled around my Chevrolet Blazer, catching the early evening light. I watched Sheriff's Deputy Amelia Lopez clamber out of her Chrysler Le Baron and stare for a moment in the direction the plane had gone down ten years ago.

I grabbed my rucksack. By the time I looked up again she was already striding toward the peak.

Over a rusted barbed-wire fence and we were into the scrub—with new traces of green at its tips from the spring rains. Beyond lay the edge of the Sequoia National Forest, a huge expanse of protected park and woodland.

We left the broken fence posts behind and our cars were lost against the sunset. I looked for other traces of a human presence, but found none, even though we were only twelve miles from Bakersfield, California, a city of four hundred thousand people on the edge of the Sierra Nevadas.

Amelia Lopez' peaked cap and the firearm on her gunbelt were clearly silhouetted as she moved along the jagged edge of the ridgeline.

As I sucked down the warm thin air and wiped the sweat out of my eyes, I tried to picture her as she must have been on that sweltering July night ten years earlier; the night she'd been out partying with her college friends at a campsite near the Kern River.

It was in the breaking hours of July 11, 1986. Just as she was settling into her sleeping bag the jet went supersonic somewhere in the black sky overhead.

The pressure wave of the sonic boom hit the campsite like a clap of thunder, sending a shower of embers from the campfire into the night sky.

Amelia was too startled to say a thing; then, the entire horizon was flash-lit by an enormous explosion, the flames shooting skyward as the plane plowed into Saturday Peak ten miles away.

She told me it had sparked a dozen brushfires on the edge of the forest; that it took more than a hundred Forest Service and local firefighters to put it out. Her only thought was that this wasn't an aircraft at all, but a hydrogen bomb.

Within hours, every newspaper in the state, and a whole lot more besides, had a reporter heading for these foothills with a brief to find out what had hit the ground. Amelia Lopez, a law student at the state university in Sacramento, had been one of several witnesses quoted in the papers that had covered the story, which was how I'd traced her.

She and her friends hadn't gone more than five miles toward the impact point when one of them noticed a figure on the trail up ahead. The scrub either side of her erupted with movement and the next thing she knew her face was in the dirt and she had a boot in her back and a gun at her head.

Out of the corner of her eye she saw that they were soldiers—not California National Guard, as might have been expected in an environmental emergency, but SWAT-types brandishing assault rifles, night-vision systems and a shit-load of threats about government property and national security.

Two of her friends started on about their rights under the Constitution, that this was public land and there wasn't a person on earth who could tell them to get off it. But to Lopez their protests registered as white noise on the edge of a persistent and piercing alarm. These soldiers were unlike any she'd ever seen.

She screamed for her friends to shut up, but once the screaming began, she couldn't stop it. She screamed and she yelled and she flailed against the pressure in her back, until the next thing she felt was the slap from her roommate that brought her around. When she finally understood what she was being told, it was that the soldiers were gone.

None of them said a word as they doubled back to the campsite. When they reached it, still numb with shock, they found a bunch of reporters on-site getting statements from other witnesses. Somebody shoved a tape recorder in her face and started asking questions and before she knew it she'd given her name and stammered something about an atomic blast.

As for the rest, she and her friends said nothing.

Amelia Lopez kept a lid on her feelings for the next two and half years, until November 1988, in fact, when the outgoing Reagan administration revealed the existence of the F-117A Stealth Fighter, an aircraft that had been flying in secret squadron service out of a classified air base in Nevada for over five years. In that time, she learned, it had crashed twice: and on one of those occasions—on the night of July 10 -11, 1986, to be precise—she'd had the grave misfortune to be there.

The troops had been part of a Pentagon "red team" flown in by helicopter to secure the crash site at all costs.

When she got my message, she'd been reluctant to meet up at first, but when I finally persuaded her to talk, she found it difficult to stop.

We reached the crash site soon after the sun dipped below the edge of the mountain. The summit was only 2,000 feet above us, but here the ground was even and covered in a crusty layer of dirt. The plants and trees were younger than the vegetation we'd passed on the way up. But that was the only real clue something had happened here.

Amelia Lopez sat on a rock and slowly removed her mirror shades before pouring bottled springwater over her face. I felt her eyes follow me as I moved between clumps of vegetation, kicking over rocks and sifting the sand, even though there was nothing to see.

Lopez bent down and ran her fingers through the soil. "I read they sieved the dirt for a thousand yards out from the impact point," she said. "Those guys were damned thorough. A few weeks after they left it was like *nothing* ever happened here." She paused a moment before adding: "You being an expert, I imagine you knew that."

It was framed as a question and I grappled for something to say, conscious that she'd brought me here for any insight I could provide into the events ofthat night.

I said nothing, so she turned to me and said: "Are you gonna tell me what is really going on here?"

Overhead, an eagle cried. As I watched it wheel on the updrafts I hoped that she wouldn't press me for an answer, because I didn't know what to tell her.

Standing here in this place, I was filled with the old feeling. It was almost impossible to articulate, but it left you with a taste in the mouth, some innate sense, that however far you dug, however many people you interviewed or questioned, you were simply scratching the surface of the sprawling U.S. defense-industrial base. What had happened here, the events that had imprinted themselves onto the landscape in a moment or two of madness a decade or so earlier, were almost tangible, even though there was no physical evidence—no fragments amidst the thin soil and the rocks—to suggest anything out of the ordinary had occurred.

These people were thorough; Lopez herself had said it. But they left something behind, something you couldn't see or touch—and it was that trace, that echo of past deeds, that had brought me here.

The Stealth Fighter was real enough. As a reporter, I'd covered it from the inside out. Yet as a piece of technology it was more than two decades old, almost every detail of it in the open now. But strip away the facts and the feeling persisted.

I got it when I went to U.S. government defense laboratories and on empty windblown hangar floors in parched, little-known corners of the country. I got it at press conferences in power-soaked corridors of the Pentagon. But most of all I got it when I stared into the eyes of the people who worked on those programs.

What I got back was a look. Individually, it said nothing, but collectively it told me there was a secret out there and that it was so big no one person held all the pieces. I knew, too, that whatever it was, the secret had a dark heart, because I could sense the fear that held it in place.

It was impossible to tell Lopez any of this, of course, because it was simply a feeling. But as I headed back for the car, I knew the trip hadn't been a waste.

At long last, the secret had an outline.

Through half-closed eyes, I could almost reach out and touch it.

Chapter 1

From the heavy-handed style of the prose and the faint handwritten "1956" scrawled in pencil along the top of the first page, the photocopied pages had obviously come from some long-forgotten schlock popular science journal.

I had stepped away from my desk only for a few moments and somehow in the interim the article had appeared. The headline ran: "The G-Engines Are Coming!"

I glanced around the office, wondering who had put it there and if this was someone's idea of a joke. The copier had cut off the top of the first page and the title of the publication with it, but it was the drawing above the headline that was the giveaway. It depicted an aircraft, if you could call it that, hovering a few feet above a dry lakebed, a ladder extending from the fuselage and a crewmember making his way down the steps dressed in a U.S.-style flight suit and flying helmet—standard garb for that era. The aircraft had no wings and no visible means of propulsion.

I gave the office another quick scan. The magazine's operations were set on the first floor. The whole building was open-plan. To my left, the business editor was head-down over a proof-page checking copy. To her right was the naval editor, a guy who was good for a windup, but who was currently deep into a phone conversation and looked like he had been for hours.

I was reminded of a technology piece I'd penned a couple of years earlier about the search for scientific breakthroughs in U.S. aerospace and defense research. In a journal not noted for its exploration of the fringes of paranormality, nor for its humor, I'd inserted a tongue-in-cheek reference to gravity—or rather to antigravity, a subject beloved of science-fiction writers.

"For some U.S. aerospace engineers," I'd said, "an antigravity propulsion system remains the ultimate quantum leap in aircraft design." The implication was that antigravity was the aerospace equivalent of the holy grail: something longed for, dreamed about, but beyond reach—and likely always to remain so.

Somehow the reference had escaped the sub-editors and, as a result, amongst my peers, other aerospace and defense writers on the circuit, I'd taken some flak for it. For Jane's, the publishing empire founded on one man's obsession with the detailed specifications of ships and aircraft almost a century earlier, technology wasn't something you joked about.

The magazine I wrote—and still write—for, *Jane 's Defence Weekly,* documented the day-to-day dealings of the multibillion-dollar defense business. *JDW,* as we called it, is but one of a portfolio of products detailing the ins and outs of the global aerospace and defense industry. If you want to know about the thrust-to-weight ratio of a Chinese combat aircraft engine or the pulse repetition frequency of a particular radar system, somewhere in the Jane's portfolio of products there is a publication that has the answers. In short, Jane's was, and always has been, about facts. Its motto is: Authoritative, Accurate, Impartial.

It was a huge commercial intelligence-gathering operation; and provided they had the money, anyone could buy into its vast knowledge base.

I cast a glance at the bank of sub-editors' work-stations over in the far corner of the office, but nobody appeared remotely interested in what was happening at my desk. If the subs had nothing to do with it, and usually they were the first to know about a piece of piss-taking that was going down in the office, I figured whoever had put it there was from one of the dozens of other departments in the building and on a different floor. Perhaps my anonymous benefactor had felt embarrassed about passing it on to me?

I studied the piece again.

The strapline below the headline proclaimed: "By far the most potent source of energy is gravity. Using it as power, future aircraft will attain the speed of light." It was written by one Michael Gladych and began: "Nuclear-powered aircraft are yet to be built, but there are research projects already under way that will make the super-planes obsolete before they are test-flown. For in the United States and Canada, research centers, scientists, designers and engineers are perfecting a way to control gravity—a force infinitely more powerful than the mighty atom. The result of their labors will be antigravity engines working without fuel-weightless airliners and space ships able to travel at 170,000 miles per second."

On any other day, that would have been the moment I'd have consigned it for recycling. But something in the following paragraph caught my eye.

The gravity research, it said, had been supported by the Glenn L.

EX-G1
CAL SMITH

The G-Engines Are Coming!

By far the most potent source of energy is gravity. Using it as power future aircraft will attain the speed of light.

By MICHAEL GLADYCH

■ Nuclear-powered aircraft are yet to be built, but there are research projects already under way that will make the super-planes obsolete before they are test-flown. For in the United States and Canada research centers, scientists, designers and engineers are perfecting a

which there has been no escape. "What goes up must come down," they said. The bigger the body the stronger the gravity attraction it has for other objects . . . the larger the distance between the objects, the lesser the gravity pull. Defining those rigid rules was as

way to earth.

This discovery gave modern scientists a new hope. We already knew how to make magnets by coiling a wire around an iron core. Electric current running through the coiled wire created a magnetic field and it could be switched on

Martin Aircraft Company, Bell Aircraft, Lear "and several other American aircraft manufacturers who would not spend millions of dollars on science fiction." It quoted Lawrence D. Bell, the founder of the planemaker that was first to beat the sound barrier. "We're already working on nuclear fuels and equipment to cancel out gravity." George S. Trimble, head of Advanced Programs and "Vice President in charge of the G-Project at Martin Aircraft," added that the conquest of gravity "could be done in about the time it took to build the first atom bomb."

A little further on, it quoted "William P. Lear, the chairman of Lear Inc., makers of autopilots and other electronic controls." It would be another decade before Bill Lear went on to design and build the first of the sleek business jets that still carry his name. But in 1956, according to Gladych, Lear had his mind on other things.

"All matter within the ship would be influenced by the ship's gravitation only," Lear apparently said of the wondrous G-craft. "This way, no matter how fast you accelerated or changed course, your body would not feel it any more than it now feels the tremendous speed and acceleration of the earth." The G-ship, Gladych explained, could take off like a cannon shell, come to a stop with equal abruptness and the passengers wouldn't even need seat belts. This ability to accelerate rapidly, the author continued, would make it ideal as a space vehicle capable of acceleration to a speed approaching that of light.

There were some oblique references to Einstein, some highly dubious "facts" about the nature of subatomic physics and some speculation about how various kinds of "antigravity engines" might work.

But the one thing I kept returning to were those quotes. Had Gladych made them up or had Lawrence Bell, George S. Trimble and William "Bill" Lear really said what he had quoted them as saying?

Outside, the rain beat against the double-glazed windows, drowning the sound of the traffic that crawled along the London to Brighton road and the unrelenting hum of the air conditioning that regulated the temperature inside.

The office was located in the last suburb of the Greater London metropolis; next stop the congested joys of the M25 ring road and the M23 to Gatwick Airport. The building was a vast redbrick two-story bunker amid between-the-wars gray brickwork and pebbledash. The rain acted like a muslin filter, washing out what little ambient color Coulsdon possessed. In the rain, it was easy to imagine that nothing much had changed here for decades.

As aviation editor *otJDW,* my beat was global and it was pretty much unstructured. If I needed to cover the latest air-to-surface weapons developments in the U.S.A., I could do it, with relatively few questions asked. My editor, an old pro, with a history as long as your arm in publishing, gave each of us, the so-called "specialists" (the aviation, naval and land systems editors), plenty of rope. His only proviso was that we filed our expenses within two of weeks of travel and that we gave him good, exclusive stories. If I wanted to cover an aerospace and defense exhibition in Moscow, Singapore or Dubai, the funds to do so were almost always there.

As for the job itself, it was a mixture of hard-edged reporting and basic provision of information. We reported on the defense industry, but we were part of it, too—the vast majority of the company's revenue coming from the same people we wrote about. Kowtowing was a no-no, but so was kicking down doors. If you knew the rules and played by them you could access almost any part of the global defense-industrial complex.

In the course of a decade, I'd visited secret Russian defense facilities and ultrasensitive U.S. government labs. If you liked technology, a bit of skulduggery and people, it was a career made in heaven. At least 60 percent of the time I was on the road. The bit I liked least was office downtime.

Again, I looked around for signs that I was being set up. Then, satisfied that I wasn't, but feeling self-conscious nonetheless, I tucked the Gladych article into a drawer and got on with the business of the day. Another aerospace and defense company had fallen prey to post—Cold War economics. It was 24 hours before the paper closed for press and the news editor was yelling for copy.

Two days later, in a much quieter moment, I visited the Jane's library. It was empty but for the librarian, a nice man way past retirement age who used to listen to the BBC's radio lunchtime news while gazing out over the building's bleak rear lot.

In the days before the Internet revolution, the library was an invaluable resource. Fred T. Jane published his first yearbook, *Jane's Fighting Ships,* in 1898; and in 1909 the second, *Jane's All The World's Aircraft,* quickly built on the reputation of the former as a reference work *par excellence* for any and all information on aeronautical developments. Nigh on a century later, the library held just about every book and magazine ever put out by the company and a pile of other reference works besides.

I scanned the shelves till I found what I was looking for.

The *Jane's All The World's Aircraft* yearbook for 1956 carried no mention of antigravity experiments, nor did successive volumes, but that came as no great surprise. The yearbooks are the aerospace equivalent of *Burke's Peerage* or the *Guinness Book of Records:* every word pored over, analyzed and double-checked for accuracy. They'd have given antigravity a very wide berth.

For a story like this, what I was looking for was a news publication.

I looked along the shelves again. Jane's had gotten into the magazine publishing business relatively recently and the company's copies of *Flight International* and *Aviation Week* ran back only a few years. But it did have bound volumes of *Interavia Aerospace Review* from before the Second World War. And it was on page 373 in the May 1956 edition of this well-respected publication, in amongst advertisements for Constellation airliners, chunky-looking bits of radar equipment and (curiously for an aviation journal) huge "portable" Olivetti typewriters, that I found a feature bylined "Intel, Washington, D.C." with the headline:

"Without Stress or Strain . . . or Weight." Beneath it ran the strapline: "The following article is by an American journalist who has long taken a keen interest in questions of theoretical physics and has been recommended to the Editors as having close connections with scientific circles in the United States. The subject is one of immediate interest, and *Interavia* would welcome further comment from knowledgeable sources."

The article referred to something called "electro-gravitics" research, whose aim was to "seek the source of gravity and its control." This research, "Intel" stated, had "reached a stage where profound implications for the entire human race are beginning to emerge."

I read on, amused by the tone and wondering how on earth the article had come to be accepted in a mainstream aerospace journal.

"In the still short life of the turbojet airplane [by then, 1956, little more than a decade], man has had to increase power in the form of brute thrust some twenty times in order to achieve just twice the speed. The cost in money in reaching this point has been prodigious. The cost in highly specialized man-hours is even greater. By his present methods man actually fights in direct combat the forces that resist his efforts. In conquering gravity he would be putting one of his most competent adversaries to work for him. Antigravities is the method of the picklock rather than the sledgehammer."

Not only that, the article stated, but antigravity could be put to work in other fields beyond aerospace. "In road cars, trains and boats the headaches of transmission of power from the engine to wheels or propellers would simply cease to exist. Construction of bridges and big buildings would be greatly simplified by temporary induced weightlessness etc. Other facets of work now under way indicate the possibility of close controls over the growth of plant life; new therapeutic techniques, permanent fuelless heating units for homes and industrial establishments; new sources of industrial power; new manufacturing techniques; a whole field of new chemistry. The list is endless . . . and growing."

It was also sheer fantasy.

Yet, for the second time in a week I had found an article—this time certainly in a publication with a solid reputation—that stated that U.S. aerospace companies were engaged in the study of this "science." It cited the same firms mentioned by Gladych and some new ones as well: Sperry-Rand and General Electric among them. Within these institutions, we were supposed to believe, people were working on theories that could not only make materials weightless, but could actually give them "negative weight"—a repulsive force that would allow them to loft away "contra-gravitationally." The article went further. It claimed that in experimentation conducted by a certain "Townsend T. Brown" weights of some materials had already been cut by as much as 30 percent by "energizing" them and that model "disc airfoils" utilizing this technology had been run in a wind tunnel under a charge of a hundred and fifty kilovolts "with results so impressive as to be highly classified."

I gazed out over the slate rooftops. For *Interavia* to have written about antigravity, there had to have been something in it. The trouble was, it was history. My bread-and-butter beat was the aerospace industry of the 1990s, not this distant cozy world of the fifties with its heady whiff of jet-engine spirit and the developing Cold War.

I replaced the volume and returned to my desk. It should have been easy to let go, but it wasn't. If people of the caliber quoted by Gladych and *Interavia* had started talking about antigravity anytime in the past ten years I would have reported it—however skeptical I might be on a personal level. Why had these people said the things they had with such conviction? One of them, George S. Trimble, had gone so far as to predict that a breakthrough would occur in around the same time it took to develop the atomic bomb—roughly five years. Yet, it had never happened. And even if the results of "Townsend T. Brown's" experiments had been "so impressive as to be highly classified," they had clearly come to naught; otherwise, by the '60s or '70s the industry would have been overtaken by fuelless propulsion technology.

I rang a public relations contact at Lockheed Martin, the U.S. aerospace and defense giant, to see if I could get anything on the individuals Gladych had quoted. I knew that Lawrence Bell and Bill Lear were both dead. But what about George S. Trimble? If Trimble was alive—and it was a long shot, since he would have to be in his 80s—he would undoubtedly confirm what I felt I knew to be true; that he had been heavily misquoted or that antigravity had been the industry's silly-season story of 1956.

A simple phone call would do the trick.

Daniella "Dani" Abelman was an old media contact within Lockheed Martin's public affairs organization. Solid, reliable and likable, she'd grown up in the industry alongside me, only on the other side of the divide. Our relationship with the information managers of the aerospace and defense world was as double-edged as the PR/reporter interface in any other industry. Our job was to get the lowdown on the inside track and, more often than not, it was bad news that sold. But unlike our national newspaper counterparts, trade press hacks have to work within the industry, not outside it. This always added an extra twist to our quest for information. The industry comprised hundreds of thousands of people, but despite its size, it was surprisingly intimate and incestuous enough for everyone to know everyone else. If you pissed off a PR manager in one company, even if it was on the other side of the globe, you wouldn't last long, because word would quickly get around and the flow of information would dry up.

But with Abelman, it was easy. I liked her. We got on. I told her I needed some background on an individual in one of Lockheed Martin's "heritage" companies, a euphemism for a firm it had long since swallowed whole.

The Glenn L. Martin Company became the Martin Company in 1957. In 1961, it merged with the American-Marietta Company, becoming Martin-Marietta, a huge force in the Cold War U.S. defense electronics industry. In 1994, Martin-Marietta merged again, this time with Lockheed to form Lockheed Martin. The first of the global mega-merged defense behemoths, it built everything from stealth fighters and their guided weapons to space launchers and satellites.

Abelman was naturally suspicious when I told her I needed to trace an ex-company employee, but relaxed when I said that the person I was interested in had been doing his thing more than 40 years ago and was quite likely dead by now.

I was circumspect about the reasons for the approach, knowing full well if I told her the real story, she'd think I'd taken leave of my senses.

But I had a bona fide reason for calling her—and one that legitimately, if at a stretch, involved Trimble: I was preparing a piece on the emergence of the U.S. aerospace industry's "special projects" facilities in the aftermath of the Cold War.

Most large aerospace and defense companies had a special projects unit; a clandestine adjunct to their main business lines where classified activities could take place. The shining example was the Lockheed Martin "Skunk Works," a near-legendary aircraft-manufacturing facility on the edge of the California high desert.

For 50 years, the Skunk Works had sifted Lockheed for its most highly skilled engineers, putting them to work on top secret aircraft projects.

Using this approach it had delivered some of the biggest military breakthroughs of the 20th century, among them the world's first Mach 3 spyplane and stealth, the art of making aircraft "invisible" to radar and other enemy sensor systems.

But now the Skunk Works was coming out of the shadows and, in the process, giving something back to its parent organization. Special projects units were renowned for bringing in complex, high-risk defense programs on time and to cost, a skill that had become highly sought after by the main body of the company in the austere budget environment of the 1990s.

Trimble, I suggested, might be able to provide me with historical context and "color" in an otherwise dry business story. "Advanced Programs," the outfit he was supposed to have worked for, sounded a lot like Martin's version of the Skunk Works.

Abelman said she'd see what she could do, but I wasn't to expect any short-order miracles. She wasn't the company historian, she said dryly, but she'd make a few inquiries and get back to me.

I was surprised when she phoned me a few hours later. Company records, to her surprise—and mine—said that Trimble was alive and enjoying retirement in Arizona. "Sounds hard as nails, but an amazing guy by all accounts," she breezed. "He's kinda mystified why you want to talk to him after all this time, but seems okay with it. Like you said, it's historical, right?"

"Right," I said.

I asked Abelman, while she was at it, for all the background she had on the man. History or not, I said, trying to keep it light, I liked to be thorough. She was professional enough to sound less than convinced by my newfound interest in the past, but promised she'd do her best. I thanked her, then hung up, feeling happy that I'd done something about it. A few weeks, a month at the outside, the mystery would be resolved and I could go back to my regular beat, case closed.

Outside, another bank of gray storm clouds was rolling in above rooftops that were still slick from the last passing shower.

I picked up my coat and headed for the train station, knowing that somewhere between the office and my flat in central London I was going to get soaked right through.

The initial information came a week later from a search through some old files that I'd buried in a collection of boxes in my basement: a company history of Martin Marietta I'd barely remembered I'd acquired. It told me that in 1955 Trimble had become involved in something called the Research Institute for Advanced Studies, RIAS, a Martin spin-off organization whose brief was to "observe the phenomena of nature . . . to discover fundamental laws . . . and to evolve new technical concepts for the improvement and welfare of mankind."

Aside from the philanthropic tone, a couple of things struck me as fishy about the RIAS. First off, its name was as bland as the carefully chosen "Advanced Development Projects"—the official title of the Skunk Works. Second, was the nature and caliber of its recruits. These, according to the company history, were "world-class contributors in mathematics, physics, biology and materials science."

Soon afterward, I received a package of requested information from Lockheed Martin in the mail. RIAS no longer existed, having been subsumed by other parts of the Lockheed Martin empire. But through an old RIAS history, a brochure published in 1980 to celebrate the organization's "first 25 years," I was able to glean a little more about Trimble and the outfit he'd inspired. It described him as "one of the most creative and imaginative people that ever worked for the Company."

I read on.

From a nucleus of people that in 1955 met in a conference room at the Martin Company's Middle River plant in Maryland, RIAS soon developed a need for its own space. In 1957, with a staff of about 25 people, it moved to Baltimore City. The initial research program, the brochure said, was focused on NASA and the agency's stated goal of putting a man on the moon. But that wasn't until 1961.

One obvious question was, what had RIAS been doing in the interim? Mainly math, by the look of it. Its principal academic was described as an expert in "topology and nonlinear differential equations."

I hadn't the least idea what that meant.

In 1957, the outfit moved again, this time to a large mansion on the edge of Baltimore, a place chosen for its "campus-like" atmosphere. Offices were quickly carved from bedrooms and workshops from garages.

It reminded me of accounts I'd read of the shirtsleeves atmosphere of the early days of the Manhattan Project when Oppenheimer and his team of atom scientists had crunched through the physics of the bomb.

And that was the very same analogy Trimble had used. The conquest of gravity, he'd said, would come in the time it took to build the bomb.

I called a few contacts on the science and engineering side of Lockheed Martin, asking them, in a roundabout kind of way, whether there was, or ever had been, any part of the corporation involved in gravity or "counter-gravitational" research. After some initial questions on their part as to why I should be interested, which I just about managed to palm off, the answer that came back was a uniform "no." Well, almost. There was a guy, one contact told me, a scientist who worked in the combat aircraft division in Fort Worth who would talk eloquently about the mysteries of Nature and the universe to anyone who would listen. He'd also levitate paper clips on his desk. Great character, but a bit of a maverick.

"Paper clips?" I'd asked. "A maverick scientist levitating paper clips on his desk? At Lockheed Martin? Come 0«."

My source laughed. If he hadn't known better, he'd have said I was working up a story on antigravity.

I made my excuses and signed off. It was crazy, possibly dangerous stuff, but it continued to have me intrigued.

I called an old friend who'd gained a degree in applied mathematics. Tentatively, I asked whether topology and nondifferential linear equations had any application to the study of gravity.

Of course, he replied. Topology—the study of shape in physics—and nonlinear equations were the standard methods for calculating gravitational attraction.

I sat back and pieced together what I had. It didn't amount to much, but did it amount to something?

In 1957, George S. Trimble, one of the leading aerospace engineers in the U.S. at that time, a man, it could safely be said, with a background in highly advanced concepts and classified activity, had put together what looked like a special projects team; one with a curious task.

This, just a year after he started talking about the Golden Age of Antigravity that would sweep through the industry starting in the 1960s.

So, what went wrong?

In its current literature, the stuff pumped out in press releases all the time, the U.S. Air Force constantly talked up the "vision": where it was going to be in 25 years, how it was going to wage and win future wars and how technology was key.

In 1956, it would have been as curious as I was about the notion of a fuelless propulsion source, one that could deliver phenomenal performance gains over a jet; perhaps including the ability to accelerate rapidly, to pull hairpin turns without crushing the pilot and to achieve speeds that defied the imagination. In short, it would have given them something that resembled a UFO.

I rubbed my eyes. The dim pool of light that had illuminated the Lockheed-supplied material on Trimble and RIAS had brought on a nagging pain in the back of my head. The evidence was suggesting that in the mid-'50s there had been some kind of breakthrough in the antigravity field and for a small window in time people had talked about it freely and openly, believing they were witnessing the dawn of a new era, one that would benefit the whole of mankind.

Then, in 1957, everyone had stopped talking about it. Had the military woken up to what was happening, bringing the clamps down?

Those in the know, outfits like Trimble's that had been at the forefront of the breakthrough, would probably have continued their research, assembling their development teams behind closed doors, ready for the day they could build real hardware.

But of course, it never happened.

It never happened because soon after Trimble, Bell and Lear made their statements, sanity prevailed. By 1960, it was like the whole episode never took place. Aerospace development continued along its structured, ordered pathway and antigravity became one of those taboo subjects that people like me never, ever talked about.

Satisified that everything was back in its place and as it should be, I went to bed.

Somewhere in my head I was still tracking the shrill, faraway sounds of the city when the phone rang. I could tell instantly it was Abelman. Separated by an ocean and five time zones, I heard the catch in her breathing.

"It's Trimble," she said. "The guy just got off the phone to me. Remember how he was fine to do the interview? Well, something's happened. I don't know who this old man is or what he once was, but he told me in no uncertain terms to get off his case. He doesn't want to speak to me and he doesn't want to speak to you, not now, not ever. I don't mind telling you that he sounded scared and I don't like to hear old men scared. It makes me scared. I don't know what you were really working on when you came to me with this, Nick, but let me give you some advice. Stick to what you know about; stick to the damned present. It's better that way for all of us."

Chapter 2

In 1667, Newton mathematically deduced the nature of gravity, demonstrating that the same force that pulls an apple down to earth also keeps the moon in its orbit and accounts for the revolutions of the planets. But today, we are still thwarted in attempts to measure it with any great precision. In lab experiments carried out since the 1930s, G has consistently defied efforts to be measured to more than a few decimal places.

This was what the reference books told me as I plowed through a stack of standard science works in the musty, gothic surroundings of the local library.

It was intensive work. Science was something I'd come to associate with the grind of exams. It didn't feel like the beginnings of a journalistic investigation.

I continued to scratch notes. But Newton openly stated that he had no idea what gravity actually was. All he knew was that it had to be caused by something.

The idea that a body may act on another through the vacuum of space over huge distances "without the mediation of anything else . . . is to me so great an absurdity that I believe no man can ever fall into it. Gravity must be caused . . . but whether this agent be material or immaterial I have left to the consideration of my reader."

I glanced up. The librarian, who'd been waiting to catch my eye, nodded toward the clock on the wall behind her. I looked around and realized I was the only person in the room. I'd lost track; it was a Saturday and the library closed early.

Outside, the rain had given way to the starlit sky of a passing cold front. I pulled up my collar and started down the street, dodging puddles that shimmered under the streetlights. The anomaly over gravity's measurement and the uncertainties over its causes only served to tell me how incomplete my knowledge of physics was.

I reached the edge of the common. The lights of my home street were faintly visible through the trees. I thought about my late-night call from

Abelman. In the week since her approach to Trimble and his initial favorable response to the idea of an interview, it very much appeared that somebody had gotten to him. And then I thought about what I had just learned. If we had no real understanding of gravity, how could people say with such certainty that *antigravity* could not exist?

In 1990, the U.S. Air Force had been looking at developing a weapon capable of firing a "plasma bullet"—a doughnut-shaped ring of ionized gas—at 10,000 kilometers per second.

Shiva Star was capable of generating and holding up to 10 megajoules of electrical energy and a potential 10 trillion watts—three times as much as the entire U.S. electricity grid carried in a year. At the time that I visited Shiva, which was located within the USAF's directed energy research laboratory at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico, program engineers had been readying to fire a plasma bullet sometime in 1995. The purpose of the bullet was to destroy incoming Russian nuclear warheads and, despite some fierce technological challenges, the program engineers were confident they could do it. But several years later, when I returned to Kirtland, it was like the plasma bullet project never existed. Engineers had difficulty even recalling it.

Officially, it had been terminated on cost grounds. But this made little sense. The program had been budgeted at $3.6 million per year for five years. Eighteen million bucks to produce a true quantum leap weapon system. Few people I spoke to bought the official version. Somewhere along the way, they said, Shiva must have delivered. Somewhere along the line, the program had gone black.

I coupled this knowledge with what the antigravity proponents had been saying in 1956. If you could find a way of shielding objects from the effects of gravity, the military, let alone the economic ramifications would be enormous.

Aircraft propulsion seems to have progressed little in appreciable terms since the advent of the jet engine in the 1940s. Incremental improvements for decades have been of the order of a few percentage points. The fastest aircraft in the world—officially, at least—is still the Lockheed Blackbird, designed in the late 1950s, first flown in 1962 and retired in 1990.

Amongst my peers, there had been speculation since the late 1980s about the existence of a secret replacement for the Blackbird, a mythical plane called Aurora that supposedly flew twice as fast and on the edges of space.

I had no direct evidence of Aurora, but then I'd never gone looking for it either. On balance, though, I felt *something* had been developed.

In 1992, circumstantial evidence of Aurora's existence was strengthened when *Jane's Defence Weekly* carried a detailed sighting of a massive triangular-shaped aircraft spotted in formation with USAF F-111 bombers and an air-refueling tanker above an oil rig in the North Sea. The sighting was credible because it was witnessed by a highly trained aircraft recognition expert in the Royal Observer Corps who happened to be on the rig at the time.

Shiva had been my first brush with the "black" world, the Pentagon's hidden reservoir of defense programs—projects so secret that officially they did not exist. Since then, I'd felt the presence of other deep black projects, but only indirectly.

Looking for the black world was like looking for evidence of black holes. You couldn't see a black hole, no matter how powerful your telescope, because its pull sucked in everything around it, including the light of neighboring stars. But astronomers knew that black holes existed because of the intense friction they generated on their edges. It was this that gave them away.

Forty years ago, the people in charge of the Air Force's hidden budget would have been quick to see the extraordinary implication of Trimble's message; that there would be no limit—no limit at all—to the potential of an antigravity aerospace vehicle.

The black world would have thrilled to the notion of a science that did not exist.

As I crossed from the park back into the glare of the streetlights, I knew I was quite possibly staring at a secret that had been buried more than 40 years deep.

I called Lawrence Cross, an aerospace journalist from the circuit, an ex-Jane's man, now a bureau chief for a rival publication in Australia.

Cross and I had spent long hours ruminating on the existence of U.S. Air Force black programs and the kind of technologies the Air Force might be pursuing in ultrasecrecy.

I liked Cross, because he had his feet squarely on the ground, was a hell of a good reporter, but wasn't your average dyed-in-the-wool-type hack. It had been a while since we had spoken.

The phone rang for ages. It was ten at night my time, eight in the morning his; and it was the weekend. I could hear the sleep in his voice when he finally picked up the handset. In the background, a baby was crying. Cross had three kids under six years old. Ninety percent of the time he looked completely exhausted.

He remained quiet as I sketched out the events of the past weeks. I told him about the article, Trimble's initial willingness to be interviewed, then the phone call from Abelman and her insistence, on Trimble's say-so, that I drop the whole business.

"This is interesting," he said, stifling a yawn, "but why the long-distance call?"

"I wanted to tap you on one of your case studies."

"Uh-huh." He sounded wary, more alert suddenly. "Which one?"

"Belgium," I said. "Wasn't there some kind of flap there a year or two back?"

"You could say that. Hundreds of people reported seeing triangular-shaped craft all over the country in two 24-hour waves—one in 1989, the other in 1990. The Belgian Air Force even scrambled F-16s to intercept them. Why the sudden interest?"

"You once told me that those craft might have been the result of some kind of secret U.S. development effort."

Cross laughed. "Maybe I did. But I've had time to study the officiai reports since—the ones put out by the Belgian government. Those craft were totally silent. They hovered, often very close to witnesses, and they never made a sound. You may find my take on this hard to swallow, but there is no technology—no technology on earth—that could produce that kind of performance."

"Didn't the Belgian press try to tag the sightings to Aurora?"

"Yes, but you and I know that that's crazy. Even if Aurora is real, don't tell me it can remain stationary one moment and fly Mach 7 the next. And without making a sound. Belgian radar tracked these things. The tapes show that they pulled turns of around 20 to 40 g—enough to kill a human pilot." He paused. "You're not seriously suggesting what I think you're suggesting, are you?"

"A 40-year U.S. development effort, in the black, to make antigravity technology a reality? Why not? They were talking about it openly in 1956, Lawrence, then it dropped off the scope. Completely and utterly, like somebody orchestrated the disappearance. It makes me want to consider the possibility, at least, that someone achieved a breakthrough and the whole thing went super-classified."

"And now you've got the bit between your teeth?"

"Something like that, yes."

For a long moment, Cross fell silent. Then I heard him light a cigarette. In the background, I heard his wife calling him. Then he cupped the receiver, because I caught his voice, muffled, telling her he'd be there in a minute. The baby was still bawling its lungs out.

"If you break cover on this," he said, "you'll blow everything. For yourself, I mean."

"Come on," I said, "it's a story. It may be an old story, but I'll apply the rules that I would on any other. If there's any truth in it, the answers will pop out. They usually do."

"That's so bloody naive. If there is any truth in it, which I doubt, they'll already know you're interested and that's not going to help you one little bit. They'll stand in your way, like they may have done already with this old man . . . Trimble? If there isn't any truth ink, then you're just going to look like a fucking idiot."

"They, Lawrence? Who's they?"

"The security people. The keepers of the secrets. The men-in-black. You know who I mean."

I didn't. To my ears, it sounded more than a little insane.

"I'm going to bide my time," I said, returning to the reason for the call, "do this at my own pace. For the moment, there's no need for me to break cover. Right now, all I have to do is conduct some low-level research and keep my eyes and ears open when I'm out there in the field. No one has to know about any of this, Lawrence. All I'm asking for in the meantime is a little help. Some of your knowledge. A few facts."

"Listen," he said, "there are no facts in this field; the whole business, if you want to know, is riven with disinformation, much of it, in my opinion, deliberately orchestrated. Sooner or later, you're going to have to surface and when you do, some of that crazy UFO spin is going to rub off on you. That happens and you'll never eat lunch in this great industry of ours again. Do you understand what I'm saying?"

And then his tone softened. "I've got to go now, but if you really are hell-bent on taking this forward, you might want to try an outfit in Washington, D.C., called the Integrity Research Institute. They have a handle on some of this material. Just promise me you'll keep my name out of it, okay?" And with that, he hung up.

During a trawl of the Library of Congress in the summer of 1985, Dr. Paul LaViolette, a researcher badly bitten by the gravity bug, tripped over a reference in the card indexing system to a report called *Electrogravitics Systems—An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control.* The words immediately alerted LaViolette, because he knew they were synonyms for something that science said was impossible: antigravity.

LaViolette had become interested in antigravity during his study for a Ph.D. in systems science from Portland State University. His curiosity was aroused further when he realized that the electrogravitics report was missing from its rightful place in the library's stacks—"like it had been lifted," he told me later.

When LaViolette asked the librarian if she could try to locate a copy elsewhere, what began as a simple checking procedure soon developed into a full-blown search of the interlibrary loan network, all to no avail.

Convinced he would never see a copy, LaViolette gave up, but weeks later the librarian called to tell him that she had managed to track one down. It had been buried in the technical library of Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Dayton, Ohio.

There were no other copies known to exist across the whole of America.

"Whatever's in it," she told LaViolette dryly, "it must be pretty exotic."

When LaViolette finally got the Air Force to release the report, exotic seemed about right. *Electrogravitics Systems,* drafted in February 1956, the same year Trimble and his colleagues began pronouncing publicly on antigravity, contained details of what appeared to be a Mach 3 antigravity aerospace vehicle designed as a fighter-interceptor for the U.S. Air Force.

The fact that the report had been located at the Air Force's premier research and development facility instantly made *Electrogravitics Systems* an intriguing piece of work. That the USAF also appeared to have sat on it for almost 40 years only served to underscore its importance, LaViolette and his associates felt.

I had managed to track LaViolette through the Integrity Research Institute. The institute sat on the edges of a sub-culture of researchers who relentlessly picked over the antigravity issue. Type "antigravity" into a Net search engine and an outpouring of conspiracy-based nonsense on the government suppression of antigravity technology usually popped up onscreen. In the sober world of defense journalism, I'd never remotely envisaged a day when I'd have to involve myself in such matters.

Now, recalling Cross' warnings about professional suicide, I was reluctant to take the plunge, but realized that I had no choice.

I spoke to a colleague of LaViolette's called Tom Valone who mercifully never pressed me on the reasons why I was so interested in the antigravity business. A few days later, a copy *of Electrogravitics Systems* duly arrived through the mail.

Electrogravitics Systems had not been prepared by the Air Force, it turned out, but by an outfit called the Gravity Research Group, Special Weapons Study Unit, a subdivision of Aviation Studies (International) Limited, a British organization.

I did some checking. Aviation Studies had been a think tank run by Richard "Dicky" Worcester and John Longhurst, two talented young aerospace analysts who in the mid-1950s produced a cyclo-styled newsletter that had a reputation for close-to-the-knuckle, behind-the-scenes reporting on the aerospace and defense industry.

From the start, the *Electrogravitics Systems* report adopted a lofty tone: "Aircraft design is still fundamentally as the Wrights adumbrated it, with wings, body, tails, moving or flapping controls, landing gear and so forth. The Wright biplane was a powered glider, and all subsequent aircraft, including supersonic jets of the 1950s are also powered gliders."

The writers went on to say that insufficient attention had been paid to gravity research and that the "rewards of success are too far-reaching to be overlooked."

But while it quickly became clear that the report was not authored by the USAF, or apparently even commissioned by it, it did appear to be remarkably well informed about the progress of gravity—and antigravity—research in the United States and elsewhere; something that LaViolette and Valone felt might have accounted for its burial for so long in the Wright-Patterson technical library.

The word "antigravity" was not used in the report, presumably because this pop-scientific term was felt to be too lurid for the report's paying subscribers. To those less fussed, however, the term "electro-gravitics" seemed pretty much synonymous with antigravity, even by Aviation Studies' own definition:

"Electrogravitics might be described as a synthesis of electrostatic energy used for propulsion—either vertical propulsion or horizontal or both—and gravitics, or dynamic counterbary, in which energy is also used to set up a local gravitational force independent ofthat of the earth."

Counterbary is subsequently defined as "the action of lévitation where gravity's force is more than overcome by electrostatic or other propulsion."

Antigravity, then.

The report echoed what had already been made clear in the Gladych and *Interavia* articles: that antigravity was of real interest to just about every U.S. aerospace company of the day.

"Douglas has now stated that it has counterbary on its work agenda, but does not expect results yet awhile. Hiller has referred to new forms of flying platform. Glenn Martin says gravity control could be achieved in six years, but they add it would entail a Manhattan Project type of effort to bring it about. Sikorsky, one of the pioneers, more or less agrees with the Douglas verdict . . . Clarke Electronics state they have a rig, and add that in their view the source of gravity's force will be understood sooner than some people think. General Electric is working on electronic rigs designed to make adjustments to gravity—this line of attack has the advantage of using rigs already in existence for other defense work. Bell also has an experimental rig intended, as the company puts it, to cancel out gravity, and Lawrence Bell has said that he is convinced practical hardware will emerge from current programs. Grover Leoning is certain that what he referred to as an electromagnetic contra-gravity mechanism will be developed for practical use. Convair is extensively committed to the work with several rigs. Lear Inc., autopilot and electronic engineers, have a division of the company working on gravity research and so also has the Sperry division of Sperry-Rand. This list embraces most of the U.S. aircraft industry. The remainder, Curtiss-Wright, Lockheed, Boeing and North American have not yet declared themselves, but all these four are known to be in various stages of study with and without rigs."

Everybody, in other words, had had a finger in the pie.

But where, I asked, was the evidence 40 years on? It wasn't simply that the results of all this activity had failed to yield hardware; no corporate history of any these companies that I'd ever read in all my years as a journalist in the industry even hinted that gravity, antigravity, electrogravitics, counterbary—call it what you will—had ever been of interest to any of them.

And then, on page three of the *Electrogravitics Systems* report I saw the mention of Thomas Townsend Brown—the "Townsend T. Brown" of the *Interavia* piece in the Jane's library.

The report referred to Brown's "Project Winterhaven." Apparently, Brown had invented a whole new approach to the mechanics of flight.

This notion of electrogravitic lift supposedly worked on the principle that a plate-like object charged positively on one side and negatively on the other would always exhibit thrust toward the positive pole, i.e. from negative to positive. If the plate is mounted horizontally and the positive pole is uppermost, the object will in effect lose weight, because it will want to rise skyward.

I was in no rush to judge the validity of the physics. But I'd worked in the business long enough to know that the military would be quick to dismiss anything that wasn't practical. So the key question for me was how the military had viewed Brown's work.

I called the Integrity Research Institute and asked Tom Valone to send me as much information as his organization possessed on Brown.

Then, over the next few weeks, my life assumed a pattern. In the dead hours, long after the phone stopped ringing, I'd head down into the basement, fire up the computer and hit the Net, staying on-line deep into the night.

My great regret was that I couldn't contact George S. Trimble directly. Had I done so, I knew that Abelman would have gone ballistic. She'd told me to stay away from him and she had the power to ensure that I became an outcast if I didn't. Lockheed Martin was a large company and its word would spread quickly.

In that respect, Cross was right. Pretty soon, no one would want to talk to a technology hack who was running around asking madcap questions about antigravity.

Better, then, to do what I was doing; keep a lid on it. Here, in the silence of the night, I could roam the Internet and remain anonymous. Besides, it really did seem to be a case of reviewing the evidence and following up the clues—clues that had apparently never registered with the experts who had been reporting on all this for years.

That in itself was seductive. Little by little, I could feel myself being pulled in.

Chapter 3

Thomas Townsend Brown was born into a prominent family from Zanesville, Ohio, in 1905, two years after the Wright Brothers, residents of nearby Dayton, propelled their "Flyer," the first aircraft capable of sustained powered flight, into the sky at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina. From an early age, Brown exhibited traits that would later come to mark his work as a scientist. As a child, he built a workshop in his backyard and at the age of ten was already receiving signals from across the Atlantic on a homemade radio-receiver. At 16, he was broadcasting from his own radio station.

For all his prowess as an inventor, Brown appears to have been a somewhat recalcitrant student. In 1922, he was enrolled at the California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech), but soon fell into a disagreement with his teachers over the time allowed by the Institution for laboratory work, something he lived for. After failing his first year exams in chemistry and physics, he persuaded his father to sponsor the construction of a laboratory of his own. With no expense spared, a lab was installed on the second floor of their new house in Pasadena.

The quid pro quo, apparently, was that "T.T." had to receive home tuition to boost his grades. Brown subsequently reported that he made considerable progress in chemistry, while still finding time to devise an X-ray spectrometer for astronomical measurements. It was at this point that he began to develop his first theories about electrogravitation. In essence, Brown believed that gravitation might be a form of radiation, much like light, with a "push" as opposed to a "pull" effect.

"Word of this got out among my classmates," he related in a document called "A Short Autobiography," which I found on the Net, "and although shunned and made fun of by the professors, I was nevertheless called to the attention of Dr. Robert Andrew Millikan, Director of Cal Tech and, incidentally, my first physics teacher, who explained to me in great detail, why such an explanation of gravitation was utterly impossible and not to be considered."

In 1923, Brown transferred to Kenyon College, Gambier, Ohio, and the following year switched to Ohio's Denison University where he came under the tutelage of physicist and astronomer Dr. Paul Alfred Biefeld, a former classmate of Einstein's in Switzerland. In earlier experimentation, Brown had made the startling discovery that a Coolidge X-ray tube exhibited thrust when charged to high voltage. It took Brown a while to realize that the motion was not caused by the X rays themselves, but by the electricity coursing through the tube. Brown went on to develop a device he called the "Gravitor," an electrical condenser sealed in a Bakelite case, that would exhibit a one percent weight gain or a one percent weight loss when connected to a 100-kilovolt power supply.

In 1929, Brown wrote up his discoveries in a paper entitled *How I Control Gravitation* and speculated as to how his invention might one day be used:

"The Gravitor, in all reality, is a very efficient motor. Unlike other forms of motor, it does not in any way involve the principles of electromagnetism, but instead it utilizes the principles of electro-gravitation.

"A simple gravitor has no moving parts, but is apparently capable of moving itself from within itself. It is highly efficient for the reason that it uses no gears, shafts, propellers or wheels in creating its motive power. It has no internal mechanical resistance and no observable rise in temperature. Contrary to the common belief that gravitational motors must necessarily be vertical-acting, the gravitor, it is found, acts equally well in every conceivable direction."

This ability to manipulate the force in all axes opened up the Gravitor's potential to aviation. Brown's research led him to the development of a shape that was the most efficient in the production of electrogravitational lift: that of a perfect disc or saucer.

The way he proposed to control the craft was by dividing the disc into segments, each of which could be selectively charged. By moving the charge around the rim of the saucer, it would, Brown said, be possible to make it move in any direction.

I had to remind myself that this was the 1920s.

The aviation industry was still absorbing the technical lessons of the First World War, the biplane was king and fighters, typified by the Boeing Model ISA, a leading U.S. design of the mid-1920s, were struggling to attain top speeds of 160 mph.

But although Brown's principles seemed to have been confirmed by observation—something, after all, was causing his condenser plates to move, however much the naysayers denigrated the possibility that it was due to an electrogravitic reaction—he had no way of generating and maintaining an electrical charge that would keep a small model craft in the air, let alone to maneuver it. This force was calculated to be in the region of 50 kilovolts, 200 times more than the charge that came from my wall socket.

Yet these were early days. What was astounding was that Brown had developed a concept for an air vehicle, shaped in the form of a disc, years before anyone had coined the term "flying saucer."

This, I thought, had to be more than happenstance, especially as the military were showing signs that they considered Brown to be not just a visionary, but a practical man of invention; someone they could turn to to develop nuts-and-bolts hardware.

In September 1930, Brown joined the U.S. Navy Reserve, but instead of going to sea was given orders to report to the Naval Research Laboratory (NRL) in Washington, D.C. In due course, he transferred to the NRL's "Heat and Light Division" and here he carried on the experiments that he started in Ohio.

Experiments were conducted which seemed to prove the concept of gravitation which he had first postulated at Cal Tech in 1923.

In 1932, Brown served as staff physicist on the Navy's Gravity Expedition to the West Indies. But by 1933, the effects of the Great Depression were forcing cutbacks within the Navy and Brown, suddenly finding himself out of a job at the NRL, was driven to seek work in industry, which he interleaved with his duties as a reserve naval officer.

With war clouds gathering in Europe, Brown was drafted full-time into the Navy and assigned to acoustic and magnetic minesweeping research, a field for which he seemed to have a great natural aptitude. He developed a method for maintaining the buoyancy of minesweeping cables, designed to trigger magnetic mines with a strong electrical force field, while simultaneously shielding them from blast effects. Brown took out a patent on the idea, which was immediately classified.

By 1940, he was appointed head of the Navy Bureau of Ships' minesweeping research and development activity and it was during this period that he experimented with "degaussing"—a method for canceling a ship's magnetic field. This was a critical breakthrough as it was a ship's magnetic field that triggered a new breed of German mines, weapons that the Nazis had developed in quantity.

There was no question that Brown was by now well plugged into the military's research and development community, and that his opinions were given great credit.

It is ironic, then, that it is at this point that his credibility is most open to question, thanks to his supposed association with the so-called "Philadelphia Experiment."

In this, according to legend, the U.S. Navy spirited one of its warships, complete with its crew complement, into another dimension.

The Philadelphia Experiment was made famous in a book of the same name by Charles Berlitz and William Moore, writers who have forged names for themselves with tales of paranormal mysteries. Even they confessed that it was "questionable whether Brown was really ever very heavily involved in the Philadelphia Experiment project"—a comment that assumes this incident took place at all.

But the association is ingrained. Run a check with a search engine and Brown is up there, his name highlighted, nine times out of ten, right alongside it.

I tried to maneuver around this obstacle, this blip in Brown's otherwise blemishless wartime record, but whichever way I turned, it wouldn't go away.

Its effect was powerful and immediate. Up until this moment, I'd trawled cyberspace and decades-old documents in the growing conviction that this unusually gifted engineer was an important, long-overlooked link in the antigravity mystery highlighted by the Gladych and *Interavia* articles.

But the instant the Philadelphia Experiment started to be mentioned in the same breath as Brown, it made me want to drop him like a stone.

It was just as Cross had said it would be. I could feel the association, with its whiff of paranoia and conspiracy, threatening to act like a contaminant on my thinking.

Better to avoid it altogether.

Everything had been going so well. Brown was university-educated, he'd worked in the aviation industry, he'd been embraced by the military and he'd done classified work. And then, the Philadelphia Experiment had come along.

Shit.

The substance of the story is that while experimenting with techniques in 1943 to make navy ships invisible to radar through the use of intense electromagnetic fields, a destroyer, the USS *Eldridge,* disappeared from its berth in Philadelphia and reappeared moments later at a Navy yard in Norfolk, Virginia, 250 miles away. During this time-lapsed interval, the crew were supposedly transported into a "parallel dimension," an experience that drove many of them insane.

Brown's credentials at the time, coupled with his refusal in the years since altogether to dismiss the Philadelphia Experiment as hokum, have helped to stoke the myth. And so it has stuck to him like glue.

In the silence of the basement, confronted by this dead end, I began to wonder about that.

If the original authorities on the story, Berlitz and Moore, had had their own doubts about Brown's involvement in the Philadelphia Experiment, how had he come to be linked so inextricably to it?

And then I thought of something else; something Cross had said. That this whole field was riven with disinformation, some of it, in his opinion, deliberately managed. The Soviets had even coined a term for it: *disinformatsiya.*

During World War Two and the long decades of the Cold War the Russian military had used *disinformatsiya* to achieve key tactical and strategic objectives.

Far from avoiding the Philadelphia Experiment, which was what my every professional instinct yelled I should be doing, I came to the uncomfortable conclusion that I ought to do precisely the opposite.

Tentatively, I began to surf the Net for obscure websites that told the story.

There are two versions of what the Philadelphia Experiment was trying to achieve. One holds that the Navy was testing a method that would make ships invisible to radar, the other was that it was attempting to develop some kind of *optical* cloaking device as well; that by generating an intense electromagnetic field around the *Eldridge,* it would distort both light and radar waves in its vicinity, rendering the ship invisible to both sensor systems and the human eye.

To do this, the legend stated, the *Eldridge* was equipped with tons of electronic equipment. These, the story had it, included massive electrical generators, several powerful radio frequency transmitters, thousands of power amplifier tubes, cabling to distribute the energy around the ship and special circuitry to tune and modulate the fields.

During the first test, which is supposed to have taken place in July 1943, the *Eldridge* is said to have become invisible at its berth, the only sign that it was there being a trough of displaced water beneath the hull. Though classified a success, the ship remaining invisible for around 15 minutes, the crew experienced side effects, including nausea, disorientation and memory loss.

If we can for the moment assume that there's some truth in the story this would have been quite unsurprising to those in charge of the science, since the nerve impulses by which the brain operates are signaled electrically. In effect, just as earlier iterations of the equipment had demonstrated on enemy mines, the field generators would have "degaussed" the brains of anyone within the area of influence, causing them temporary and, in some cases, permanent damage.

In such circumstances, I could conceive of reasons why the Navy might want to plant misleading stories about the *Eldridge*—the more so, since it involved stealth.

It remains highly sensitive technology, but the use of electromagnetic fields in generating radar stealth is a technique well known to military science today.

But during World War Two—if Brown had discovered a means of shielding U.S. Navy ships from enemy radar (or even for marginally reducing their radar signature)—it would have rung right off the classification scale.

The last thing the Navy would have wanted was sailors running around complaining of headaches and revealing how they had come by them.

The next experiment supposedly went even further. In October 1943, after the Navy had replaced the first crew, a second test on the *Eldridge* was carried out.

This time, soon after the generators were switched on, the ship shimmered for a few seconds, remaining visible in outline only. Then there was a blinding flash and it vanished altogether. The legend states that it was transported briefly to a berth in Norfolk, Virginia, before making its way back to the yard at Philadelphia.

When investigators went on board, they found that some of the crew had been swallowed by the ether that had momentarily consumed the *Eldridge.* These men were never seen again.

Those that did make it back were either made dangerously ill by their adventure, experiencing intense nausea and headaches for years, or were driven mad by it.

Weirdest of all, five of the crew were found fused into the metallic structure of the ship, which had materially transmuted to accommodate them.

These were the broad "facts" as presented to Berlitz and Moore, who were first alerted to the mystery by a man who claimed to have been on the *Eldridge.* They were supported by an eccentric source identified variously as Carlos Allende and Carl Allen, who claimed to have witnessed the whole thing from the deck of the SS *Andrew Furuseth,* a merchant marine ship berthed close to the *Eldridge* in the Philadelphia navy yard.

This was in the mid-1970s, more than 30 years after the purported events. When the book came to be written, Brown became an inextricable part of the myth.

* * *

The only other thing I knew about disinformation, certainly as it had been practiced by the Soviets, was that it worked best when mixed in with a little truth.

Intuitively, therefore, I felt Brown must have been somewhere in the vicinity of the "experiment" when it was supposed to have happened. Beyond that, I could draw no other conclusions, so I returned to the documented facts of his career.

In 1942, he was appointed head of the Atlantic Fleet Radar Materiel School and Gyrocompass School in Norfolk, Virginia, a position that would have made him privy to some of the most highly classified technical secrets of the day. Whatever work he was engaged on there, it appears to have taken its toll, since the following year he suffered a nervous breakdown and was discharged from the Navy.

There is something neatly synergistic in this unfortunate development, which appears to have been real enough, with the mystery surrounding the USS *Eldridge.* One suggestion is that whatever work Brown was engaged in at the time, be it in the radar or minesweeping field, it caused him temporary memory loss.

While it stretched credulity to believe in stories of optical invisibility, tele-transportation and parallel dimensions, I did find it possible to envisage a scenario in which the legend of the *Eldridge* had grown out of the secrecy of Brown's legitimate work in the radar field; in much the same way that the supposed ability of RAF night fighter pilots to see in the dark by eating carrots stemmed from a childishly simple British ruse to protect its radar secrets at around the same time.

Despite Brown's illness—and whatever really happened in the Philadelphia and Norfolk shipyards—it appears to have had no long-term detrimental effect on his standing in the eyes of the Navy. In 1944, he went back to work as a radar consultant in Burbank, California, at Lockheed's Vega Division, which was responsible for development of the Navy's PV-2 Harpoon and P-2V Neptune antisubmarine patrol bombers.

At war's end, Brown moved to Pearl Harbor, Hawaii, where he once again resumed the antigravity work that had driven his research efforts as a young man.

It seemed to me from this period—long before the story of the Philadephia Experiment emerged to complicate the picture—as if two portraits of Brown had been painted and were now in circulation: one portraying him as a mildly eccentric inventor with some harebrained ideas about negating the forces of gravity; the other showing him to be a man responsible for some of the most highly classified research of the war.

Seen through this ambivalent prism, the story of the Philadelphia Experiment has helped to perform a very important function.

By 1980, it had managed to tip Brown over the edge; make him a wholly discredited figure in the eyes of science.

That left me with the uncomfortable feeling that the story had been carefully stage-managed. If so, why? And why so long after the supposed events had taken place?

The next occasion Brown is reputed to have demonstrated his Gravitor and tethered flying discs was to Admiral Arthur W. Radford, Commander in chief of the U.S. Pacific Fleet, in Hawaii in 1945. Brown had by now left California and was resident in Hawaii, where he worked temporarily as a consultant at the Pearl Harbor Navy Yard.

His demonstrations supposedly failed to impress the Navy, but there is no known official record of its reaction. One account is that it "refused funding for further research because of the negative opinion of other scientists." Another relates the story of his room being broken into after the Pearl Harbor demonstration and the theft of his notebooks. According to this variant, which was related by a close friend of Brown's, Josh Reynolds, the Navy returned the books days later, adding that it remained uninterested. The reason given was that the "effect" was not due to electrogravitation, but to "ionic wind"—this, despite Brown's view that he had conclusively proven otherwise with experiments under oil back in the 1920s.

From 1945 until 1952, little is known about Brown's activities, but based on what happened next, it is clear that along the way he returned from Hawaii to Los Angeles, where he established the Townsend Brown Foundation.

In 1952, the Foundation received an unannounced visit by Major General Victor E. Bertrandias of the U.S. Air Force. I learned of this thanks to a recovered transcript of a phone conversation between Bertrandias and another USAF general called Craig, whose job description was not immediately clear.

The transcript had been forwarded to me by Tom Valone at the Integrity Research Institute. It made clear that Bertrandias was astounded by what he witnessed.

"It sounds terribly screwy, but Friday I went down with Lehr, a man named Lehr, to a place called the Townsend Brown Foundation, and believe it or not, I saw a model of a flying saucer," Bertrandias reported.

"No," Craig replied, apparently without irony.

"I thought I should report it," Bertrandias told him. "There was a lot of objection to my getting in there by the party that took me and the thing frightened me—frightened me for the fact that it is being held or conducted by a private group. I was in there from about one-thirty until about five in the afternoon and I saw these two models that fly and the thing has such a terrific impact that I thought we ought to find out something about it—who these people are and whether the thing is legitimate. If it ever gets away I say it is in the stage in which the atomic development was in the early days."

"I see," General Craig replied. The man's urbane delivery earmarked him, to me at least, as someone big in Air Force intelligence.

"I was told that I was not to say anything about it," Bertrandias burbled on, "but I'm afraid that all that I heard made me believe in it and these were not schoolboys. It was conducted in rather an elaborate office in Los Angeles. I thought I should report it to you."

"Yes, well I'll look into it and see what I can find out," Craig told him, shortly before hanging up.

It seems that what Bertrandias had stumbled upon, a little before the Townsend Brown Foundation was ready to pitch it formally to the military, was Project Winterhaven—the distillation of all Brown's ideas into a blueprint for a manned antigravity fighter, built in the shape of a disc and capable of Mach 3, twice the speed of the leading jet-powered interceptor of the day.

Years later, LaViolette had found extensive references to Winterhaven in the sole remaining copy of the *Electrogravitics Systems* report the Congressional librarian had tracked down to the technical library at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base.

I was rapidly coming full circle.

I needed to see the report on Project Winterhaven, but remembering the difficulty LaViolette had had in tracking down the one remaining copy of *Electrogravitics Systems,* I couldn't begin to think how or where I would lay my hands on one. I imagined, given the Air Force's evident excitement about Brown's work, that if there were any copies of *Winterhaven* left, they were buried somewhere deep.

I rang Valone in Washington—my third call in as many weeks—and this time got the question I'd been dreading. Was Jane's running some kind of investigation into antigravity?

I told him it wasn't; that my interest in Brown's work was born of personal curiosity, nothing more, and that I'd appreciate it if he'd keep the matter to himself.

Valone seemed quite unfazed by this request. In the murky world of antigravity research, I realized it was probably par for the course.

The conversation drifted inevitably toward Townsend Brown and *Winterhaven.* It was then that I mentioned how I'd give my eyeteeth to know what was in it.

A week later, to my absolute astonishment, a copy of *Winterhaven* (registered copy No. 36) landed on my desk. Attached to the front page was a note from Valone. Thanks to the Freedom of Information Act, there was no need for me and my teeth to part company, he said. I smiled. The man was a one-stop shop.

He assured me, too, that no one else bar him and LaViolette would ever know that I was interested in the subject matter.

Nagged by the ease with which the military had relinquished its grip on *Winterhaven,* I started reading.

In his pitch to the military, on page six, Brown had written: "The technical development of the electrogravitic reaction would usher in a new age of speed and power and of revolutionary new methods of transportation and communication.

"Theoretical considerations would predict that, because of the sustained acceleration, top limits of speed may be raised far beyond those of jet propulsion or rocket drive, with possibilities of eventually approaching the speed of light in 'free space.' The motor which may be forthcoming will be essentially soundless, vibrationless and heatless."

I made notes. This was language that was similar in tone to that expressed by George S. Trimble and his quoted contemporaries in the 1956 Gladych article. Trimble, who 40 years later had canceled my interview with him, because he appeared—to Abelman's mind, at least—to be too afraid to talk.

The attributes of the technology were also right in line with the characteristics exhibited by the flying triangles observed over Belgium.

The little model discs that had so impressed General Bertrandias "contain no moving parts and do not necessarily rotate while in flight," the Winterhaven report stated. "In atmospheric air they emit a bluish-red electric coronal glow and a faint hissing sound."

Project Winterhaven, then, offered a systematic approach for the establishment of a U.S. antigravity program—echoing the origins of the U.S. atomic bomb project a decade earlier and the path that Trimble had advocated in 1956.

In the report, Brown recommended starting modestly with 2-foot discs charged at 50 kilovolts, then proceeding to 4-foot discs at 150 kV and finally to a 10-foot disc at 500 kV, with careful measurements being made along the way of the thrust generated.

This was a sensible, structured approach. It showed that Winterhaven was ready to transition from the drawing board to the technology demonstration phase.

Full-blown development wouldn't be far behind.

Brown had also formulated a method for generating the required high voltages for a free-flying disc—the problem that had earlier stymied its practical development into a manned aircraft—by means of a "flame-jet generator." This was a jet engine modified to act as an electrostatic generator capable of providing up to 15 million volts to the skin of the craft. The *Interavia* article, I remembered, had talked of trials involving 3-foot discs run in a 50-foot diameter air course under a charge of 150 kV "with results so impressive as to be highly classified."

Brown's flying saucer now had a power source.

In one way and another things seemed to be gaining momentum.

But it was short-lived.

Days after General Bertrandias' conversation with his spook colleague General Craig, the documents trail showed that the Air Force Office of Special Investigations, AFOSI, was well and truly onto the Brown case. AFOSI was the Air Force equivalent of the FBI—an indication that Craig had taken Bertrandias' interpretation of his visit to the Brown Foundation seriously. Once again, it was Valone who furnished me with the relevant papers.

They showed that AFOSI uncovered a copy of a report prepared by one Willoughby M. Cady of the Office of Naval Research, the ONR, in Pasadena, California, entitled: "An Investigation Relative to the Townsend Brown Foundation."

The report, which was forwarded by AFOSI to Major General Joseph F. Carroll, Deputy Inspector General of the USAF, made disappointing reading all around.

"Mr. Brown claims that a gravitational anomaly exists in the neighborhood of a charged condenser," Cady wrote in his conclusions, adding: "This effect has not been well documented by Mr. Brown."

Cady went on to say that there was no electrogravitational link, merely a disturbance of the air around the model saucers stimulated by the electrical charge and it was this that was causing them to be propelled upward and forward.

Any hope that this technology might be of use in aerospace propulsion was damned by Cady. "If the efficiency of conversion of fuel energy into electrical energy is 21 percent, the overall efficiency of propulsion of the model flying saucers by the electric wind is 0.3 percent. This compares with about 25 percent for a propeller-driven airplane and 15 percent for a jet airplane."

If Cady's conclusions were clear to me, they would have been crystal clear to the Navy and the Air Force. Brown's flying saucer would have had trouble getting off the ground, let alone cruising at Mach 3. The whole "science" of electrogravitics, Cady was telling his superiors, was a waste of time, effort and money.

The Navy and its old foe the Air Force would have concluded that they were both far better off sticking with jets.

Even under the auspices of a deeply classified program, an arrangement by which one branch of the armed forces might be unaware of projects taking place in another, it was hard to see Brown's work surviving such an appraisal.

On September 22, 1952, six months after General Bertrandias' telephone call to General Craig, documents showed that the Air Force downgraded its interest in the work of the Townsend Brown Foundation from "confidential" to "unclassified."

This explained why the Pentagon's archives had contained a declassified copy of *Winterhaven.*

Despite the view of LaViolette, Valone and many others that this was the moment Project Winterhaven went super-classified, forming the basis of a number of "black programs" in the antigravity field from the mid-1950s onward, I found this hard to believe. Although LaViolette's theory dovetailed neatly with the ringing silence that followed the zealous rhetoric of George Trimble and his colleagues in the U.S. aerospace industry on the subject of antigravity in 1956, there was no evidence at all to support it.

Nor, crucially, did LaViolette's thesis explain Brown's behavior from this period onward. For although it was obvious that he knew how to keep a secret—his wartime work would have instilled in him the need for the rigors of secrecy—if the ONR report was merely a blind, his subsequent actions went way beyond attempts to lead investigators away from a buried program within the U.S. Navy or Air Force or both. The energy with which he now set out to prove his electrogravitational theory seemed, in fact, to stem specifically from the comprehensive rejection of his experiments by the U.S. military. For the rest of his life, Brown, who was universally described as quiet, unassuming, honest and likable, behaved like a man driven to prove his point.

In 1955, he went to work for the French aerospace company

SNCASO—Société Nationale de Constructions Aéronautiques du Sud-Ouest.

During this one-year research period, he ran his discs in a vacuum. If anything, they worked better in a vacuum, something that prompted SNCASO, which was interested in exploiting Brown's work for possible space applications, to offer him an extension of his contract. But in 1956, SNCASO merged with its counterpart Sud-Est and its new bosses saw little future in the space business. They wanted to build aeroplanes; real ones, with wings and jet engines.

His contract terminated, Brown returned to America, where he helped found the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), an unofficial study group set up to analyze the growing body of UFO sightings across the American continent and elsewhere. It was Brown's belief that the study of UFOs, many of which exhibited characteristics similar to his discs, could shed light on their propulsion methodology and this, in turn, could be exploited for science and space travel. The trouble was, of course, that this alienated him even more from the mainstream.

It also further alienated him from me. As I'd immersed myself in Brown's life and work, I'd wondered more and more if his "discovery" of electrogravitics had had something to do with the emergence of the whole UFO phenomenon in the '40s, if these "alien" craft had in fact been top secret aerospace vehicles propelled by a power source that science even today refused to recognize. This, however, did not gel with a man who went on to found a UFO study group.

In 1957, Brown was hired as a consultant to continue his antigravity work for the Bahnson Company of North Carolina and in 1959 he found himself consulting for the aerospace propulsion giant General Electric.

I found little corroborating evidence for Brown's activities during these years.

When he went into semiretirement in the mid-1960s, Valone and LaViolette saw this as a signal that, in effect, he had been been bought off by the military, especially as he hardly touched electrogravitics again. His last great interest involved a series of ultimately successful attempts to draw stored electrical energy—albeit in minute quantities—from common or garden rocks . . .

Unquestionably a highly gifted and unusual man, Brown died in relative obscurity in 1983.

In trying to draw lessons from his story, lessons that might perhaps help explain the sudden outpouring of interest in antigravity by America's leading aerospace designers in the late 1950s, I found myself trying to put the pieces of the puzzle together. The problem was, however I went about it, they wouldn't form into any recognizable picture.

If the Navy had developed Brown's experiments into a fully fledged antigravity program, why had its premier research arm, the ONR, gone out of its way to dismiss them? And if this was an elaborate ruse to throw others off the scent—including its old rival the U.S. Air Force—why did Brown continue in his work, eventually taking it to another country? If electrogravitics was classified, this would have handed it on a plate to another nation, which was madness.

There was, conceivably, a chance that Brown's work had been hijacked by the U.S. military without his knowledge at the end of World War Two, but this too seemed unlikely. Given Brown's wartime clearances, it would have been simpler to have sworn him to secrecy after the Hawaii experiments, had the Navy been that impressed with them.

There was another, remote possibility—that Brown's work had been rejected by the military, not because it was hokey or crazy, but because its principles were already known to them—and, perhaps, therefore already the subject of advanced development activity. Had this been the case, it might well have explained why, a few years later, Bell, Convair, Martin and so many other companies—equally ignorant of this activity—aired their views on antigravity unchecked for a number of months, as recorded in the *Interavia* article, until someone, somewhere ordered them to silence.

As I kicked this notion around, I found sympathy for it from an unlikely source.

In the appendix section of a compendium of UFO sightings, I found a secret memorandum dated September 23,1947, from Lieutenant General Nathan Twining, head of the U.S. Army Air Forces' Air Materiel Command (AMC), to Brigadier General George Schulgen, a senior USAAF staff officer in Washington.

The memorandum had been declassified and released into the public domain only in the late 1970s. I'd found it during another late-night trawl of my burgeoning archive, a cup of strong coffee in my hand to keep me awake.

In the memo, Twining states in his "considered opinion" that the rash of UFO sightings in America during the summer of 1947—the first real wave, as it turned out—had been "something real and not visionary or fictitious."

He continued: "There are objects . . . approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as a man-made aircraft." These discs exhibited a number of common characteristics, amongst them a metallic or light-reflecting surface, an absence of any jet trail and no propulsion sound.

In addition, they were capable of "extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted."

For an Air Force officer—a senior one, even—to admit to the reality of UFOs was quite an admission, but it was not unique. Other then-classified memos from other USAAF officers of the day show them to have been similarly perplexed by the disc sightings phenomenon across America from mid-1947 onward.

UFO researchers had seized on these documents as evidence that the USAAF (and from 1947 its successor, the USAF) recognized the reality of UFOs while officially pooh-poohing them—a blanket denial that remains policy to this day.

My attention, however, had been drawn to something quite else.

As an aerospace analyst, and in light of the Brown research, I found the key part of Twining's memo in what followed. UFO researchers had concentrated entirely on the main thrust of the memo: Twining's acknowledgment of the reality of UFOs.

The part that interested me, the postscript, added almost as an afterthought, had been totally overlooked. It so absorbed me that I never noticed the pencil on which I set down my cup of lukewarm coffee. It tipped over and the drink spilled, spreading across the open pages like ink on a blotter. I swore, mopped it up as best I could and returned to the text. The stain, as poor luck would have it, had covered the paragraph I was interested in, making the task of rereading it a painfully slow affair. I uttered the words aloud, enunciating them slowly so I knew I had read it right.

"It is possible," Twining wrote, "within the present U.S. knowledge—provided extensive detailed development is undertaken—to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7,000 miles at subsonic speeds."

As head of Air Materiel Command, the branch of the USAAF that assumed responsibility for all USAAF aircraft development, Twining—who would have written the memo under the best advice from his subordinates—should have known what he was talking about. The problem was that 50 years this side of Twining's memo, at the end of the 20th century, I still knew of no combat aircraft capable of the performance characteristics Twining had elucidated. Even the Lockheed

NND 760168
OKS 5-4-75
~~SECRET~~

SAVE

HEADQUARTERS
AIR MATERIEL COMMAND

IN REPLY ADDRESS BOTH COMMUNICATION AND ENVELOPE TO COMMANDING GENERAL, AIR MATERIEL COMMAND, ATTENTION FOLLOWING OFFICE SYMBOL:

TSDIN

TSDIN/HMM/1g/6-4100
WRIGHT FIELD, DAYTON, OHIO

SEP 23 1947

SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs"

TO: Commanding General
Army Air Forces
Washington 25, D. C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called "Flying Discs". This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division T-3. This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel from the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2, Office, Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.

2. It is the opinion that:

a. The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.

b. There are objects probably approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.

e. The apparent common description of the objects is as follows:-

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

SECRET U-39552
~~SECRET~~

Basic Ltr fr CG, AMC, WF to CG, AAF, Wash. D. C. subj "AMC Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs".

(2) Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted.

(6) Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.

f. It is possible within the present U. S. knowledge — provided extensive detailed development is undertaken — to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in subparagraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any developments in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin - the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.

(2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.

U-2 spyplane (which first flew in 1955, but is still in service), a single-engined aircraft intended for ultra-long endurance missions (and hardly, therefore, a maneuvering type like the discs reported to Twining), had a maximum unrefueled range in excess of 3,000 miles—3,500, perhaps, on a good day.

And, needless to say, no one had ever owned up to building a flying saucer.

To construct the "aircraft" that Twining had in mind, he told General Schulgen: "Any developments in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time-consuming and at the considerable expense of other projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects."

Placing such a project outside the mainstream of aerospace science brought to mind the effort that had resulted in the development of the first atomic bomb. In 1956, George Trimble had also cited the Manhattan Project as the inspiration for his proposed antigravity program. Brown, too, had offered a highly unusual development model for Winterhaven, his Mach 3 antigravity program, one that only peripherally involved the U.S. aerospace industry.

I tried to keep my mind on the facts. The essential point of Twining's memo was that the development of an aircraft exhibiting the characteristics of the saucers that people were seeing in 1947 was "within the present U.S. knowledge," but that the craft themselves were nothing to do with the USAAF. Then whose were they?

Twining himself offered two possibilities. First, that they were of "domestic origin—the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 (air force technical intelligence) or this Command." And second, "that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion, possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge."

The first part I actually found a little scary. Twining was entertaining the possibility that these craft had been developed and fielded by another branch of the U.S. armed forces—the Navy, perhaps—without the knowledge of the USAAF.

The second explanation was, at least, a little more conventional. The discs, Twining offered, were the result of another country's secret development effort.

I had been sucked into a story that seemed to have had its origins in 1956. Reluctantly, I now had to concede that if I was to do this thing any justice at all, I needed to cast the net back even further.

Chapter 4

History doesn't relate the mood of the crewmembers of the Northrop P-61 Black Widow patrolling the sky above the Rhineland that night, but the available clues suggest that they were none too happy. A night-fighter crew was about as close-knit a unit as you could find among the frontline squadrons ranged against Germany in late 1944. Success—their very survival when it came down to it—depended on a high level of trust, intense training, the reliability of a piece of hardware then still in its infancy—radar—and undiluted concentration.

The last thing U.S. Army Air Forces Lieutenant Ed Schlueter would have needed that night was a passenger. Worse, Ringwald wasn't even aircrew, but an intelligence officer.

Lieutenant Fred Ringwald was sitting behind and above Schlueter, the P-61's pilot, in the position normally occupied by the gunner. Schlueter's unit, the 415th Night Fighter Squadron of the U.S. 9th Army Air Force, had recently upgraded from their British-made Bristol Beaufighters to the Black Widow. They had also just transferred from the Italian theater of operations to England and from there across the Channel, deploying eastward in short hops across northwest France as the Allies pushed the Nazis toward the Rhine and back into Germany itself.

Schlueter flew his aircraft south along the Rhine, looking for "trade." The Black Widow was a heavy fighter; bigger than the Beaufighter and considerably more menacing in appearance. While its primary targets were the German night fighters sent up to intercept British bomber streams heading to and from Germany, there was always the chance, provided Schlueter was sharp-eyed enough, of hitting a Nazi train or a vehicle convoy, especially as the Germans were moving men and materiel under cover of darkness due to the Allies' overwhelming daytime air superiority. This had been pretty much indisputable since the D-Day landings five months earlier.

But night strafing operations brought their own hazards. Over the uncertain territory of the Rhineland, sandwiched between the bluffs of the wide and winding river and the rugged uplands of the Black Forest, there was a better than even chance you could follow your own cannon-fire into the ground.

There was no official record as to why the intelligence officer Ringwald was along for the ride, but knowing something of the way in which spooks had a habit of ring-fencing intelligence from the people who needed it most, I had a feeling that Schlueter and his radar operator would have been left just as much in the dark.

In the black skies above the Rhineland, after a long period of routine activity, it was Ringwald who broke the silence.

"What the hell are those lights over there?" he asked over the RT.

"Probably stars," Schlueter said, concentrating on his instruments.

"I don't think so," Ringwald replied. "They're coming straight for us."

Now, Schlueter looked up and out of the cockpit. In the pitch-black of his surroundings, the formation of aircraft off his starboard wing stood out like a constellation of tiny brilliant suns. Instinctively, he twisted the control column, bringing the Black Widow's four cannon and four .50 cal machine guns into line with them. At the same time, he called ground radar.

The ground station was supposed to be Schlueter's eyes and ears at all times, but if each pulsating point of light represented the exhaust plumes of a German night fighter, there were anything up to ten aircraft closing on him and he hadn't heard a whisper out of them. Somebody had screwed up. Later, he would be angry. Now, he was simply frightened and confused. He urgently requested information.

"Negative," the reply came back. "There are no bogies in your sector. You're on your own."

Schlueter's radar operator, Lieutenant Don Meiers, who was crouched over the scope of the SCR540 airborne intercept (AI) radar in a well behind Ringwald, told him the same thing. The sky ahead of them was empty of any air activity.

But the lights were still there and they kept coming. Instead of running, Schlueter boosted the throttles and pointed the nose of the Black Widow at the lead aircraft of the formation.

As the twin air-cooled radiais powered up either side of him, the glow from his opponents' exhausts dimmed; and then they winked out. Puzzled and alarmed at having lost the contacts, and with no help from Meiers on the Black Widow's own radar, Schlueter held the aircraft steady and the crew braced themselves for the engagement.

Schlueter eased the night fighter into the blacked-out bowl of sky where he had last seen the contacts. He craned his neck for a glimpse of something—anything—that signaled the presence of another aircraft, jinking the plane left and right to check his blind spots.

Still nothing.

It was only when he started to execute a turn back to base that Ringwald told him the lights were back again.

Schlueter followed the line indicated by Ringwald and saw them a long way off. Impossibly far, in fact, but still within radar range. He called out to Meiers, but the radar operator was now having technical problems with his AI set.

Schlueter again prepared to engage the enemy, but the lights had already begun to glide away to the northeast, eventually retreating deep into the German lines and disappearing altogether.

Nobody said anything until shortly before the Black Widow landed. Although Schlueter and Meiers were agreed that the Germans must have been experimenting with some new kind of secret weapon, neither wanted to hazard a guess as to what this weapon might have been. There was nothing they knew of in their own inventory that approached the weird, darting performance characteristics of the aircraft they'd just seen.

Fearful they would become the target of unwelcome squadron humor—along predictable lines they were "losing it"—they decided not to report the incident. And Ringwald, the spook, went along with it.

Reports of this incident exist in a number of UFO books—books I'd not encountered before because to someone steeped in the dry reportage of nuts-and-bolts technical journalism, they'd never entered my orbit.

The incident showed that almost three years before Twining wrote his memo to General Schulgen unconventional aerial objects had appeared in German skies prior to their manifestation across the U.S.A. in 1947.

On odd days off work and at weekends, I'd begun trawling public archives for corroborating evidence of this sighting. What I found were details on the 415th Night Fighter Squadron and the aircraft Schlueter had flown at the time of the encounter; details that allowed me to fill in the gaps of the published account and to visualize the sense of bewilderment and fear that Schlueter and his crew would have experienced that night. But along the way, I discovered that Schlueter's sighting was far from unique. All that winter of 1944-45, Allied aircrew reported small, ball-shaped aircraft glowing orange, red and white over the territory of the Third Reich. While some attributed the lights to natural phenomena such as ball lightning or St. Elmo's fire, others could not dismiss the sightings so easily. The devices appeared to be able to home in on Allied aircraft as if guided to them remotely or by some built-in control system.

Bit by bit, the reports entered the realm of officialdom. In archives and on the Internet, I found dozens of them.

"At 0600, at 10,000 feet, two very bright lights climbed toward us from the ground," another pilot from the 415th told intelligence officers after an encounter on December 22, near Haguenau, close to where Schlueter, Meiers and Ringwald had been. "They leveled off and stayed on the tail of our plane. They were huge bright orange lights. They stayed there for two minutes. On my tail all the time. They were under perfect control. Then they turned away from us, and the fire seemed to go out."

Although their appearance was sporadic, aircrews increasingly reported the devices via the appropriate channels. They nicknamed them "foo-fighters," a bastardization of the French word "feu" for "fire" that had worked its way into a cartoon strip called *Smokey Stover, the Foolish Foo Fighter* which had first appeared in a Chicago newspaper several years earlier. Meiers, who was a resident of Chicago, appears to have been the first person to have coined the term.

The consensus was that foo-fighters were Nazi secret weapons of some kind, but mighty strange ones, since they did not open fire on Allied aircraft, nor did they explode on proximity to them. They simply appeared, tagged along for a while and then vanished.

Seemingly, the spooks couldn't provide any plausible explanation for what they were either, as the following account, by Major William Leet, a B-17 pilot attached to the U.S. 15th Air Force, indicated after a nighttime encounter with a foo-fighter—"a small amber disc"—that followed his bomber all the way from Klagenfurt, Austria, to the Adriatic Sea in December 1944. "The intelligence officer that debriefed us stated it was a new German fighter but could not explain why it did not fire at us or, if it was reporting our heading, altitude and airspeed, why we did not receive antiaircraft fire," he reported.

Most encounters were at night, but there were daylight sightings, too.

A B-17 pilot, Charles Odom, flying on a daylight raid into Germany, described them as being "clear, about the size of basketballs." They would approach to within 300 feet, "then would seem to become magnetized to our formation and fly alongside. After a while, they would peel off like a plane and leave."

A P-47 fighter pilot also reported seeing a "gold-colored ball with a metallic finish" west of Neustadt in broad daylight, while another saw a "three to five feet diameter phosphorescent golden sphere" in the same area.

In 1992, researchers digging into the foo-fighter mystery uncovered a wealth of buried reports within the U.S. National Archives at College

Park, Maryland. What was intriguing was that almost all of them had been filed by pilots and crewmembers of the 415th Night Fighter Squadron. Unlike the incident involving lieutenants Schlueter, Meiers and Ringwald (whose experience was relayed after the war by a former war correspondent), the 15 "mission reports" of mysterious intercepts, many of which occurred in a triangular sector of the Rhineland bordered by an imaginary line linking Frankfurt-am-Main to the north, Metz to the west and Strasbourg to the south, could be examined in their original format; logged in the dispassionate shorthand of the intelligence officers who originally noted them down.

"December 22-23, 1944—Mission 1, 1705-1850. Put on bogie by Blunder at 1750 hours, had AI contact 4 miles range at 0^7372. Overshot and could not pick up contact again. AI went out and weather started closing in so returned to base. Observed two lights, one of which seemed to be going on and off at 0^2422."

And another:

"February 13-14, 1945—Mission 2,1800-2000. About 1910, between Rastatt and Bishwilier, encountered lights at 3,000 feet, two sets of them, turned into them, one set went out and the other went straight up 2-3,000 feet, then went out. Turned back to base and looked back and saw lights in their original position again."

The reports made it clear that the sightings covered a period between September 1944 and April 1945.

September. Two, maybe three months before Schlueter's and Meiers' own encounter.

Maybe, I thought, that tied up one little loose end.

When the spook, Ringwald, had been riding with them that night he must have been looking for something he already knew to be there.

So what did we have here?

Ostensibly, these objects—they could hardly be described as "aircraft"—exhibited characteristics similar to T.T. Brown's flying discs. Their historical interest lay in the fact that their "existence," if you could call it that, had been logged by observers with impeccable credentials more than three years before the first rash of flying saucer sightings in the United States. True, it was wartime and things got misidentified. But with the foo-fighters there was none of the hysteria that accompanied the U.S.-based sightings of 1947, which tended to make the testimony, if anything, more objective and believable. These people, many of them hardened by years of combat experience, felt they were encountering something new and dangerous in German skies. And the year 1944 seemed to be key.

Their experiences echoed what USAAF General Twining had told General Schulgen in his secret memo of September 1947. That "aircraft" making no apparent sound, with metallic or light-reflecting surfaces, exhibiting extreme rates of climb and maneuverability, "were within the present U.S. knowledge."

What did that mean exactly?

I didn't know, but somehow I felt the wording was key.

Over the next few months, life at *JDW* went on pretty much as it had done since I'd joined the magazine in the mid-'80s; a routine made up of press conferences, air shows, defense exhibitions and weekly deadlines. But as I maintained a close watch on developments that were shaping the defense and security climate of the post-Cold War world, I found my mind on other things. Things I kept to myself.

Had the Germans developed a totally new form of propulsion, blended it with a radically different kind of air vehicle, and deployed it in the form of some new and secret weapon system in the latter stages of the war? I had to juggle this possibility with the fact that T.T. Brown had postulated the basis of an antigravity propulsion system as far back as the 1920s.

I decided to discover whether any of this wartime sightings data was reflected in work the Germans had been doing in their research facilities and factories.

In the late 1950s, a book written by a German who had served as the commanding officer of a German Army technical unit in the Second World War, Major Rudolf Lusar, went on to become an unlikely best-seller in Britain and the United States.

The book was called *German Secret Weapons of World War II.*

Seeking clues to the foo-fighter mystery, I discovered a copy in the reading room of the Imperial War Museum. In it, Lusar described in meticulous detail, in language that often made the depths of his bitterness clear, the technical achievements of "a small, industrious and honest nation which lost the war."

Secret Weapons made somber reading. Although German technical achievements were visible in developments such as the V-l flying bomb, a direct forerunner of the modern-day cruise missile, and the V-2 ballistic missile, it was the vast extent of Germany's underpinning technology base, as revealed by Lusar, which showed just how far ahead of the Allies the Nazis had been in certain key areas.

Jet engines, rocket engines, infrared and thermal-imaging systems, proximity fuses, missile guidance seekers . . . technologies that are integral to most modern aircraft and airborne weapon systems were all listed and described. In the late 1950s, when Lusar's book first appeared, these technologies were still in their infancy in Britain and America.

Yet the Germans had been working on them a decade and a half earlier.

But there was another side to the book, one which was so sensational that immediately on its appearance it had set alarm bells ringing in Washington.

This side of the book related to so-called German "wonder weapons" beyond the V-l and V-2.

One of these was the *Fleissiges Lieschen,* or "Busy Lizzie," a 150 m-long tube assembly of non-alloyed cast steel with chambers leading off it that lent it the appearance of a giant millipede. It was designed to fire 150 mm projectiles over distances of 170 km, more than enough to hit most British cities from sites deep within France. It never went into service, but 45 years after the war the components of an almost identical weapon, the "supergun," were intercepted by British customs officials on their way to Iraq.

Other esoteric developments detailed by Lusar showed that the Germans had been working on technologies for bringing down Allied aircraft with sound waves, air vortices, intensely focused beams of light and jets of compressed air.

In 1958, the U.S. Air Force commissioned a "special studies group" within Air Force Intelligence headed by an Austrian-born technical consultant called Dr. Stefan Possony to carry out a detailed appraisal of Lusar's book. The research effort was branded "secret" and has only recently come to light. I found it during a long, hard night's trawl in the basement when it popped out of cyberspace after an unusual combination of word commands fed through a high-power search engine.

A section in Lusar's book was devoted to "flying saucers" which he asserted, in no uncertain terms, were the product of German wartime inventors. "Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called 'flying discs,' were undertaken in 1941," Lusar wrote. He even went on to name the key individuals involved. These were "the German experts Schriever, Habermohl and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo."

Lusar described the craft in some detail. There were two principal centers of disc development: one, headed by Miethe in the vicinity of the Lower Silesian city of Breslau in modern-day Poland; the other centered on Prague in Czechoslovakia, then also an integral part of the Reich. The Miethe disc was described as a discus-shaped "plate" of 42 m diameter, fitted with "adjustable" jet engines. Shortly before the plant where the craft was being built was overrun by the Russians, the retreating Germans blew it up, destroying the disc inside. However, many of the "experts" who had worked on the project were captured and taken back to Siberia, where work on them "is being successfully continued," Lusar reported.

In the paranoid U.S. security climate of the late 1950s, it was this aspect of the account that had led to the commissioning of Possony's special intelligence report.

According to Lusar, the other disc, developed by Schriever and Habermohl, did achieve flightworthy status before the end of the war—on February 14, at a facility just outside Prague. "Within three minutes they climbed to an altitude of 12,400 m and reached a speed of 2000 km/h in horizontal flight," the author related.

At a time when the most advanced interceptors of the day (the late 1950s) struggled to achieve such velocities, this was an outrageous claim, but then it didn't have to be taken wholly at face value to contain an element of truth.

Having covered the Stealth Fighter story in the mid-1980s, when the aircraft was still deeply secret and witnesses were reporting things they couldn't square with any known aircraft development of the day, I trusted the old maxim about smoke and fire.

And in this assumption, I had an ally in Dr. Possony. Why else had he been tasked by the U.S. Air Force with writing a classified critique of Lusar's claims? Why else, according to one source I spoke to about him, a researcher by the name of Joel Carpenter who had devoted considerable time to studying Lusar and Possony, had the good doctor shredded his conclusions on the subject?

So, alongside wartime pilots' reports of flying objects that defied their understanding of aircraft performance were accounts of Germans having worked on projects that had no engineering counterpart, even within present-day aerospace knowledge. In Lusar's book were names, dates and places—crude data, admittedly, but usable nonetheless as jumping-off points for a more rigorous search. And though Lusar's claims didn't point directly to evidence of antigravity propulsion technology, in his discussion of another taboo technology area in scientific circles, the flying saucer, he had outlined a pathway to an altogether different kind of aerospace platform.

Just as T.T. Brown had done in the 1920s—and Trimble had in 1956.

The task seemed so simple. Make the link between Germany and the flying saucer and here was an opportunity to solve not only the antigravity propulsion riddle, but, in the process, perhaps, one of the most baffling mysteries of the 20th century: the origins of the UFO. If machines like those in General Twining's memo were "within the present U.S. knowledge," no wonder Trimble and his colleagues had so quickly fallen silent on the subject of a new and exotic propulsion source.

The flying disc must have exhibited performance so in advance of its time that it had been super-classified, then hidden in plain sight—behind the UFO myth—for the best part of 60 years.

Perhaps, too, it explained why Trimble had sounded like he'd had the fear of God put in him when he had been approached by Lockheed's PR machine on my behalf. The spooks would have made it abundantly clear there would be no statute of limitations on this particular secret. That you never talked about it. Ever.

Across multiple satellite relays, I heard the anguished shrieks of his three-month-old, the background clatter of his older children as they ran wild in the tiny apartment and finally relief in Lawrence Cross' voice as he realized it was me; a moment's respite in a whirl of copy deadlines, late-night feeds and trips to theme parks.

The baby's crying faded into the static as Cross took the handset into another room.

I thanked him for the tip about LaViolette and Valone, as a result of which I had pieced together the essential elements of T.T. Brown's life and work. Without elaborating on how I'd arrived there, I asked him what he knew about the Germans' purported development of flying saucers in World War Two.

"Oh Jesus," Cross said, and I formed a mental picture of him rubbing his eyes and reaching for a cigarette, "where do I begin?"

I prompted him. One minute the Nazis were tinkering with this technology, the next people were reporting sightings of these objects, first in Gemany, then in America . . . ?

"It's not as simple as that," Cross said.

"Come on, Lawrence. A book called *German Secret Weapons of World War II,* by Rudolf Lusar details names, dates and places. Has anyone ever dug into this stuff? Have you? The story must be fit to bust wide open."

"It's been around for decades," he said, "long enough to have been given a name."

"What do you mean?"

"In the trade, we call it 'the Legend.' It looks so straightforward, doesn't it? A story with a solid trail. But it's not like that at all. When you get into this stuff the trail goes everywhere and nowhere. The people who really did exist are long dead and others probably never existed at all. I know. I've been there and I've looked for them. So have dozens of other investigators. The detail is fantastic, but it's all uncorroborated. By that I mean there isn't a shred of evidence in any archive—no official word, no plans, nothing—that any of these projects ever existed."

"Have you got anything on it?"

He laughed and it caught in his throat. Cross smoked for the entire journalistic profession. He hacked the cough into the room, away from the receiver.

"Sure. How much time have you got? I'll email it to you. There's another book you should get ahold of. It's by an Italian. Guy by the name of Vesco—Renato Vesco. The book's called *Intercept—But Don't Shoot.* There's an English translation. I think it was first published in the late 1960s. Vesco's well up there, right in the heart of the Legend. Maybe you should try and track him down—that is, if he really existed."

I said nothing. Cross continued.

"Take nothing at face value and you're off to a better start than me. *Lusty* was real enough, but that's all I know. Everything else is up for grabs."

I thought I must have heard him wrong. *"Lusty?* Did you say, *Lusty?"*

"It stands for *Luftwaffe Secret Technology.* The U.S. Army Air Forces' official file on the state of the German Air Force's secret weapons work at the end of the war. The Air Force Historical Research Agency has a copy in its archives at Maxwell Air Force Base. It's raw data. That is to say, it's never been processed by anyone, so it's uncorrupted and verifiable, but I have no idea what's in it. In all these years, doing what we do, I've never had an excuse to go there. Maybe you do."

"Where is Maxwell Air Force Base?"

"It's in Alabama. Where the skies are so blue. A distant memory for you, I guess."

I thanked him, hung up and knew that I wouldn't be tapping Cross for any more advice. He'd made it abundantly clear, more in tone than anything else, that for him this was the end of the road.

I thought about the months ahead. I had no legitimate business in the States except for a trip to Washington to cover an Air Force symposium—and that wasn't until later in the year. Stretching the trip to include a visit down to Alabama was simply out of the question.

I called the Air Force Historical Research Agency at Maxwell Air Force Base to see if I could get a copy of *Lusty* sent to me. In theory I could, but the files were held on a number of microfilm reels and, I was told, it could take months, perhaps years, for the release forms to plow through the system and for the report to reach me. Not only that, but the

Lusty files were old and corrupted, making repros difficult. The best, probably only way to view them, the administrator there told me, was in situ.

I put the phone down, kneaded my eyes and thought about smoking a cigarette again; something I hadn't done in years.

I had just hit another pluperfect dead end.

Chapter 5

Flugkapitän Rudolf Schriever, one of the four saucer engineers cited in Lusar's book, began talking to the West German media in 1950 about a truly fantastic flying machine he had worked on for the Nazis—one that would have changed the course of the war had it gone into full-scale production. It stemmed from work that he had allegedly undertaken for the Heinkel Aircraft Company at Marienehe, near Rostock on the Baltic coast.

Schriever was one of the four "scientists" mentioned in Lusar's book as having worked on the Nazi flying discs. He was also, I found out through the massively detailed file that my former journalistic colleague Cross sent me via email, central to the Legend.

Though he started out as a pilot in the Luftwaffe, Schriever appeared to have developed some highly advanced ideas about aircraft that could take off and land vertically and it was in this capacity, after he had been drafted to Heinkel's design section, that he soon came to the attention of company chairman Professor Ernst Heinkel, who in early 1940 encouraged him to construct a small flying prototype.

So far so good. Though best-known for its lumbering He 111, the Luftwaffe's mainstay bomber during the Blitz against London in 1940 and for much of the rest of the war, Heinkel was one of the most pioneering and innovative aircraft companies within Germany at the time.

Whatever the Legend said, this much was fact.

In 1936, Ernst Heinkel began funding experiments that three years later would lead to Germany's successful construction of the world's first jet-powered aircraft, despite the fact that it was the British designer, Frank Whittle, who had first invented and patented the concept. The tiny, one-off Heinkel He 178 first flew on August 27, 1939, five days before the German Army marched into Poland. Eighteen months later, Heinkel would again eclipse all other aircraft companies by flying the world's first jet-powered fighter, the He 280. If anyone was to develop something as radical as Schriever's idea, therefore, Heinkel was the company to do it.

The Legend then takes over.

In the spring of 1941, Schriever's blueprints were being used to construct a "proof-of-concept" model in a "garage" away from prying eyes. Officially known as the VI (V for "Versuchs" or "experimental version 1"), informally it was referred to as the "Flying Top." It was probably no more than two or three feet in diameter and powered by an electric motor or a small two-stroke engine. It is not known where this garage was, but within the sprawling complex of buildings at Marienehe, set in three square kilometers of the Mecklenburg State Park, there was ample room for Schriever's esoteric little engineering project to be hidden from view. Furthermore, it fitted into the Heinkel way of doing things. During the development of the world's first turbojet, Ernst Heikel had installed Dr. Hans-Joachim Pabst von Ohain, a gifted graduate of the University of Göttingen, in the same kind of environment—a converted garage at the university—before transferring the fruits of von Ohain's labors, the revolutionary HeS 3A turbojet, to a secure facility within the Marienehe site.

By June 1942, Schriever's Flying Top had been test-flown and the results deemed sufficiently interesting to secure top secret funding from the RLM, the Reichsluftfahrtministerium or State Air Ministry.

With RLM funding, the intention was to construct a full-scale piloted version capable of controlled vertical takeoff and landing. Construction of this full-size version, the V2, began at Marienehe in early 1943. The V2, which was known as the "Flugkreisel" or "Flightwheel," had a diameter of approximately 25 feet, its power generated by one or perhaps two Heinkel-Hirth jet engines, depending on which version of the Legend you want to believe. The V2 supposedly flew with Schriever at the controls, but as a piece of technology it was deemed to be heavily overengineered and was quickly scrapped. As a proof-of-concept vehicle, though, it seems to have served its purpose, because shortly afterward, Schriever and his team relocated to Czechoslovakia where they set about constructing a larger and altogether more sophisticated prototype known as the V3.

With the Allied aerial bombing campaign now at its height, their activities were dispersed around the Prague area to minimize the exposure to the relentless air attacks, by now penetrating deep into the Reich. But the bulk of the team's work was centered on a restricted area of a satellite facility outside Prague belonging to the Munich-based Bayerische Motorenwerke engine company, better known today as BMW. Despite the existence of Heinkel's own jet engines, the real cutting edge of German gas-turbine research was centered on BMW and in particular on its Bramo division, located at Spandau in Berlin. Bramo, the Brandenburgische Motorenwerke, had been bought by BMW from Siemens in 1939. By the middle of the war, BMW-Bramo had 5,000 staff working full-time on gas-turbine research alone—a discipline then barely a decade old—and was ultimately responsible for the BMW 003 jet engine, the best turbojet of the day, which powered the Me 262, the world's first operational jet fighter, and the Ar 234, the Luftwaffe's advanced jet-propelled reconnaissance-bomber, another aircraft far ahead of its time.

It was from Spandau, supposedly, that Klaus Habermohl, the second disc engineer mentioned by Lusar, was recruited to the Schriever team. Habermohl's job in Prague was to integrate the disc with a new and radical form of power plant called the radial-flow gas-turbine, or RFGT. Unlike Brown's electrogravitic motor, the RFGT was, at least, recognizable technology by modern standards, if extraordinary. It was essentially a jet engine. However, unlike a regular jet power plant, with its compressors, combustion chambers and turbines mounted one behind the other in what was basically a big tube, the RFGT formed part of the airframe itself, with the whirling turbomachinery rotating around the aircraft's centrally mounted cockpit. As such, "aircraft" did not adequately describe what the machine actually looked like. There was only one configuration to which an RFGT could possibly be adapted: that of a flying disc or saucer.

By the autumn of 1944, the V3 is said to have been completed. With German airfields under constant attack from Allied daylight bombing, the prospect of a fighter or bomber that could take off and land vertically from any dispersed site would have been exactly in line with Luftwaffe requirements. However, due to "an administrative change," the V3 program was abandoned in favor of a further prototype, the V7, propulsion coming from another experimental RFGT from BMW-Bramo. The V7 supposedly had a diameter of 60—70 feet and a crew of two or three.

Applying a crude rule of thumb, based on a rough estimate of the disc's weight, Habermohl's ingenious RFGT would have had to have generated around 10-15,000 pounds of thrust to have made the design of the disc in any way viable. This was the machine that supposedly test-flew on February 14 with Schriever and Habermohl at the controls, achieving 2,000 km/h in level flight.

The fastest aircraft of the day, the little rocket-powered Me 163, struggled to attain half this speed.

Lusar's third and last German saucer scientist, Dr. Richard Miethe, was supposedly working on another disc project at a subterranean facility near Breslau under the auspices of an altogether separate contract. Toward the end of the war, the legend stated that Miethe was drafted from his activities in Breslau to assist with the Schriever/Habermohl disc in Prague, an indication, perhaps, that the Schriever/Habermohl disc was the better bet in a procurement environment that was by now desperately short of money, skilled labor and raw materials. This streamlining coincided with the "administrative change" that had led to the abandonment of Schriever's V3 design for the altogether more viable V7.

The V7, then, seems to have been the result of a three-way endeavor, although there were reports that a Miethe disc—based, perhaps, on the project he abandoned at Breslau—was captured by the Russians, along with a number of engineers and scientists, when they drove the Germans out of Poland.

As for the V7, some say it, too, was acquired by the Russians when they took Prague; others that it was blown up by the Waffen-SS on May 9, 1945, the day hostilities in Europe ended. The Legend had it both ways.

The detail in the Schriever/Habermohl/Miethe legend was rich and impressive. Here were names, dates and places—minutiae even, that seemed to corroborate everything Rudolf Lusar had written down. The trouble was, the data was based heavily on the say-so of Schriever, who was long since dead; the rest had magically appeared out of thin air, just as Cross had said. No one knew where the detail emerged from. Over the years it had been passed down from one researcher to the next, with no apparent attribution. When I approached BMW's archivists, for example, they denied that there had been any BMW factory near Prague "engaged in advanced aircraft projects including design or advanced research during World War II."

I began to see what Cross meant. Cross and I were used to sourcing every piece of information we ever came by. This stuff was unverifiable. What I needed was hard, solid proof; and within the Schriever portion of the Legend there was nothing to hang a hat on, beyond the fact that the man himself had existed.

Unfortunately, the same could not be said of the other characters in the story. All attempts by researchers to trace Miethe and Habermohl had foundered, although there had been occasional "sightings" in the lore that had grown up around them.

Miethe is supposed to have escaped Czechoslovakia in early May and to have headed west, eventually making contact with U.S. technical intelligence teams operating inside Germany. Herded into a "pen" along with Wernher von Braun and his fellow rocket scientists, Miethe was said to have been taken to the United States, ending up at Wright Field, the

USAAF's premier research and development center near Dayton, Ohio. If any of this actually happened, there is no trace of it.

Habermohl is said to have been captured by the Russians at the Letov factory, a German-administered aircraft plant outside Prague, and, after a period of detention, sent to work at a top secret Soviet aircraft design bureau east of Moscow.

Again, no one could say for sure whether he had even existed at all.

My research showed the Italian, Bellonzo, was real enough, except Lusar had misspelled his name. In 1950, Professor Giuseppe Belluzzo, a former industry minister in Mussolini's cabinet, started talking about disc-shaped "flying bombs" that he claimed to have worked on during the war and passed on to the Germans, who had subsequently developed them into working prototypes.

Belluzzo was also convinced that these weapons were the basis of the flying-saucer sightings that had gripped much of America for the best part of three years and that they were now under further development inside the Soviet Union. Beyond the fact that Belluzzo, like Schriever, was real, his claims also remain unverifiable. Interestingly, though, he started talking to the media just a few days before Schriever, leading some researchers to reason that Schriever, a man who like so many other Germans in 1950 was struggling to make ends meet, had invented his entire story.

In fact, the Legend lacked a single item of corroborating data. There was nothing in any archive or museum, no photograph, no indisputable piece of testimony, to say that any of it was true.

There were splits and schisms in the Legend, just as there are orthodox and unorthodox branches within major religions. The other strand to the myth that I had to pay attention to was Vesco's. I had managed to obtain a copy of his book, *Intercept—But Don't Shoot* (published 1971), and scrutinize it. What was beguiling about Vesco's account was the certainty with which he presented his case. Vesco, who was 22 years old when the war ended and said to have been well connected with technical experts within the Italian Air Force at the time he wrote *Intercept*, claimed that he pieced together his account of the top secret development effort behind the foo-fighter program from sources inside the Italian military and from Allied intelligence reports published after the war.

What also made Vesco's account worth more than a cursory glance was the fact that it "detailed" a completely different development effort from the Schriever/Lusar account. Vesco claimed that there were two kinds of foo-fighters. One was unpiloted and remotely controlled; in effect, a flying bomb designed to knock down enemy aircraft. The other was manned, but flew in anger only once before hostilities ended.

The unpiloted version was called the Feuerball (Fireball) and it blended a number of highly advanced technologies.

"In the autumn of 1944," Vesco wrote, "in Oberammergau in Bavaria, the OBF—an experimental center run by the Luftwaffe—had completed a series of researches into electrical apparatus capable of interfering with the operation of an engine up to a maximum distance of about a hundred feet by producing intense electromagnetic fields."

In parallel, a separate effort was under way by the Germans to produce a "proximity radio interference" device capable of jamming or spoofing Allied radio and radar systems. Put these two technologies into a small, circular, armored airframe "powered by a special turbojet engine, also flat and circular and more or less resembling the shell of a tortoise" and "a highly original flying machine was born."

Radio-controlled at the moment of takeoff, the machine was steered toward Allied bomber streams by a ground operator, whereupon it automatically latched onto their slipstreams, "attracted by their exhaust flames, and approached close enough without collision to wreck their radar gear."

And then came the detail. The Fireball was first constructed at an aircraft plant at Wiener Neustadt, south of Vienna, with the help of the Flugfunk Forschungsanstalt of Oberpfaffenhoffen (FFO), an aircraft electronics firm near Munich. Hermann Goering, Hitler's deputy, inspected progress on the weapon "a number of times," hoping that the principle of the Fireball could also be used to produce "an offensive weapon capable of revolutionizing the whole field of aerial warfare.

"The fiery halo around the perimeter—caused by a very rich fuel mixture—and the chemical additives that interrupted the flow of electricity [in Allied aircraft] by overionizing the atmosphere in the vicinity of the plane, generally around the wing tips or tail surfaces, subjected the H2S radar on the plane to the action of powerful electrostatic fields and electromagnetic impulses (the latter generated by large klystron radio tubes protected with anti-shock and anti-heat armor). Since a metal arc carrying an oscillating current of the proper frequency—equal, that is, to the frequency used by the radar station-can cancel the blips (return signals from the target), the Feuerball was almost undetectable by the most powerful American radar of the time, despite its nighttime visibility."

Once again, I pictured the desperation felt by Schlueter as his radar operator, Meiers, failed to register the orbs of light ahead of the Black Widow on the SCR540.

Was this what they had encountered that night, the Fireball?

To believe that it might have been, I had to accept that what we had here was a weapon system that was decades ahead of its time. Years before the deployment of the surface-to-air guided missile—sufficiently perfected to shoot down the CIA U-2 pilot Gary Powers over Russia only in 1960—and decades before radar-evading stealth technology would become a household word, the Vesco portion of the legend held that the Germans had developed a single weapon system that blended these and other exotic technologies. Not only that, but the Fireball was able to home in on its intended prey, the Americans' B-17 and B-24 bombers, via an automatic guidance system—one that tracked their exhaust plumes—a sensor so advanced that it was unheard of, even with the benefit of modern-day knowledge. Once close to the bombers, it could then either disrupt their electronics or stop their engines in flight with a gas that killed their ignition systems.

At a stroke, Vesco had assembled all the evidence he needed to explain the foo-fighter conundrum. He also threw in some eyewitness testimony. "One person who saw the first short test flights of the device, without its electrical gear," he wrote, "says that 'during the day it looked like a shining disc spinning on its axis and during the night it looked like a burning globe.' '

The trouble was, it sounded like science fiction.

When the Russians advanced into Austria, Vesco maintained, the Fireball production line was moved from Wiener Neustadt into underground facilities run by the Zeppelin Werke in the Schwarzwald—the same area of Rhineland and Black Forest where Schlueter, Ringwald and Meiers, and a host of other aircrew from the 415th Night Fighter Squadron, had first encountered the inexplicable.

Vesco went on to explain that the Feuerball had an "older brother," the Kugelblitz or "Ball Lightning Fighter," that was built and flight-tested—once—in the vicinity of Kahla, site of a huge underground weapons development complex in Thuringia, a region of mountainous uplands in the heart of Germany known as the Harz. If this "fact" also was a hoax, it was a clever one, since the Harz certainly had housed a number of underground Nazi weapons factories, among them the facility at Nordhausen, where Wernher von Braun's V-2 rockets had been produced.

Vesco was notoriously reclusive. Some researchers believed he'd never existed at all; lending credence to the supposition that *Intercept* really was just an elaborate hoax. But Vesco was real, all right. I managed to trace a group of Italian researchers who had been in contact with him up until his death in November 1999. According to them, Vesco didn't care whether people believed him or not.

"He was very correct," one of them told me over the phone, "so it's very hard to believe that he made it all up."

But where was the proof?

Vesco claimed that the evidence for Feuerball and Kugelblitz was to be found within obscure tracts of the British Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee (BIOS) reporting system and its successor, the U.S.-U.K.-administered Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee (CIOS), published in the immediate aftermath of the war (a number of reports from which, however, are still withheld). BIOS and CIOS were the systems employed by the British and the Americans for assessing German high technology. But researchers had been through all the available CIOS and BIOS files with a fine-tooth comb and had found nothing that pointed to anything that described the Fireball or its "older brother" the Ball Lightning Fighter.

Vesco had stuck to his guns, never wavering from the conclusions he had espoused in his book: that the Germans had developed a truly revolutionary new form of air vehicle; that it was the British who had happened upon the technology at the end of the war and that they, together with Canadian scientists, had refined it in the frozen wastelands of British Columbia and Alberta.

Vehicles resulting from this endeavor, Vesco maintained, were responsible for the rash of U.S. flying-saucer sightings in 1947.

A familiar pattern was emerging and it wasn't helping my case. The more I looked, the more "evidence" I found that the Germans had been tinkering with technology that explained the foo-fighters sightings of that winter of 1944^5.

From Schriever in the 1950s to Vesco's testimony in the 60s—and others before, during and since—maybe a dozen Germans had come forward to say that they had worked on flying-saucer technology under the Nazis. And some, like Viktor Schauberger, were so very nearly believable.

Schauberger, whose story was contained in notes on the Legend sent to me by Lawrence Cross, was an Austrian who had supposedly invented a totally new form of propulsion based upon a principle called "implosion." No one I spoke to seemed entirely sure what implosion meant, but according to the stories that had grown up around this man, the implosion process was at the heart of a radical turbine that Schauberger had installed in a sub-scale flying disc sometime during the war. A test of this small flying vehicle, with its echoes of the Schriever Flying Top, had supposedly taken place and the results were said to have been highly impressive. In one account of the test, the craft had apparently risen toward the ceiling of the test facility "trailing a glow of ionization." This immediately elevated the report above the many others I had come across, for it signaled that, whatever was occurring within the implosion process, it had precious little to do with jet propulsion. If true, it could only have been an antigravity effect.

If true.

Though Schauberger was long dead, his son Walter was still alive when I telephoned him at his home in Austria in 1991. Talking through an interpreter, I asked Walter about his father's experiments and got a disconcerting answer. I had imagined that Viktor had attended some impressive German or Austrian technical institute; that he was a professor of physics at Vienna or Salzburg or, at the very least, an eminent aerospace engineer. But no. Walter Schauberger told me that his father had developed his radical ideas about energy and propulsion by observing what he had seen in Nature, the way rivers flowed and fish swam. His only professional training had been as a forester.

This was the trouble. While all of these stories were laced with detail, which immediately gave them a veneer of credibility, they were almost always let down either by corrupted data or a complete absence of it. In a decade of investigating the aerospace industry, I had never once come across a designer who did not have a set of initials after his name. A forester was simply absurd.

Had there been more to the Schauberger story, I would not have hesitated to make the trip to Austria. But as decisions went, this was an easy one. I was using my training to make value judgments all the time on the data that was gathering in my basement. You didn't need a degree in physics, though, to appreciate that whatever they had or hadn't been, foo-fighters would have had to have come from the minds of engineers—not from a man who'd spent his time among Alpine forests and streams.

It was for this reason that I gently declined Walter Schauberger's offer to visit his "biological-technical institute" in the Salzkammergut Mountains.

For any of the "evidence" about German flying saucers to be irrefutable, it had to emerge from official documentation. But Lawrence Cross and a number of other credible researchers I'd contacted on the subject had already been through the BIOS and CIOS reports and found nothing. And that should have been the end of it. Yet, I knew that if the Germans had developed a revolutionary air weapon, based perhaps on some radical form of propulsion technology, it was inconceivable that the CIOS or BIOS intelligence teams would have documented the discovery for the world to read about.

To go the extra mile, I realized I'd have to access the original intelligence data on which the BIOS and CIOS assessment teams, most of whom were technical types sat at desks in Brussels, Paris, London and Washington, had based their analyses. Here again, I knew there would be no smoking gun. Had intelligence units in the field come across anything meaningful, these reports, too, would have been sanitized. Anything as obvious as a full-blown air vehicle or a new form of propulsion system would not have escaped the censor's attention.

But to identify evidence of a new form of aerospace technology, particularly one as far-reaching as that described in the legend or by Vesco, I wasn't searching for the obvious, because the obvious would have been picked up by the censors.

As with any new piece of technology, developments came together as a series of systems and subsystems. There would have been prime contractors and subcontractors, some of them working in new scientific areas—areas that would have been on the very edge of the technical knowledge of the deskbound BIOS and CIOS assessors.

Between the chaos of the front line and the overstretched resources of the intelligence units tasked with assessing German hardware and documentation—which the victors had shipped out of Germany by the ton-load—there might still, I figured, be some fresh evidence; something useful that had been overlooked.

I started with the British, whose initial stab at organized technology plunder was vested in the hands of a ragtag private army—composed, bizarrely, of sailors and Royal Marine commandos. This outfit was the brainchild of a certain Commander Ian Fleming, who 15 years later would go on to create the Bond persona in the double-oh-seven novels. Bond's character, it appears, drew heavily on the exploits of 30 Assault Unit RN, which rode roughshod over the conventions of the day. Following the battle for Cherbourg, in which 30 AU RN had been tasked with capturing German naval headquarters, the marines liberally enjoyed the spoils of war. Their behavior was described as that of "merry courageous, amoral, loyal, lying toughs, hugely disinclined to take no for an answer from foe *orfraulein"*

As a result of their "martial exuberance," as one assessor wrote, 30 AU RN was reined in somewhat and renamed 30 *Advanced* Unit RN. It was also ordered to subordinate its activities to a new and much larger force of British tech-plunder units, known as "T-Forces." These would move forward with General Bernard Montgomery's 21st Army Group, principally in Monty's theater of operations, northwest Germany, but not exclusively so. Under the terms of the CIOS charter, with its Anglo-American task jointly to exploit German spoils of war, British T-Force teams would also be allowed to tag along with forward U.S. Army units in pursuit of their objectives.

These objectives were to locate and secure intact technical "targets" of interest; to preserve German high technology from "destruction, loot, robbery and, if necessary, counterattack," until the completion of their examination by teams of experts or until their removal. They were also to act as armed escorts in enemy territory for the "expert investigators" drawn from CIOS offices far behind the front lines. As a quid pro quo, U.S. technical teams could ride with forward British assault units. The eventual size of British T-Forces would grow to 5,000 personnel.

But from the reports generated by these units, now freely available in the U.K. Public Records Office, it was apparent that the British were desperately ill-prepared to make the most of the opportunity that lay before them.

Over the next two months, I spent every spare moment down at the Public Records Office. And when I wasn't in the Records Office, just down the road in Kew on the outskirts of London, I was gathering as much open-source reading material as I could on the Allies' systematic plunder of German high technology at the end of the war. One book, *The Paperclip Conspiracy* by Tom Bower, read like a manual on how to dismantle an entire nation's technology base. If America, Britain and their allies had applied the lessons of*Paperclip* to the Iraqi problem at the end of the Gulf War in 1991, the threat posed by Saddam Hussein's war machine would have been eradicated forever.

During the November 1944 to March 1945 planning stage of the T-Force operations, the problem facing British investigators was a fundamental lack of intelligence on what they were supposed to be looking for. A "black list" of technical targets was drawn up, the majority of them weapons-development and research centers put forward by CIOS.

But a general air of ignorance of the situation on the ground persisted, as a T-Force field commander later recorded. "It appeared that the sponsoring ministries knew little or nothing about the specific whereabouts and natures of their targets; and that investigators who would eventually come out would know even less."

If there was any sense at all that the British realized they were in a race against the other allies—the French and the Americans particularly—it came far too late. Roy Fedden, a senior and respected British aviation industrialist who flew into Germany to view the tech-plunder operation for himself, complained that his compatriots were being "lamentably slow" to take advantage of the information on offer. With many of the U.K. technical experts drawn from industry, part of the problem was a considerable reluctance on their part to accept that Germany could possibly have been as far ahead of British technology in certain pioneering areas—the jet engine, for example—as they evidently were.

There were British successes—the capture of the German navy's laboratories at Kiel, for example, where highly advanced German U-boats and torpedoes, propelled by an innovative peroxide-fueled engine, were being developed. There were also significant British finds at Krupp in Meppen, where advanced armor and artillery technology had been produced for the Wehrmacht.

But reading between the lines of the British-controlled tech-plunder operation, its disparate character was clearly a factor in its limited success. Without adequate direction from London, there was confusion as well as a palpable lack of urgency about the operation at the front. And in some cases—the activities of T-Forces of the 21st Army Group's Canadian First Army, for example, who were roaming between Germany and Holland, looking for targets—it was portrayed as being akin to a jaunty adventure.

Among the most prominent targets on First Army's T-list, according to records of its operations at the time, was the radio transmitter of Lord Haw-Haw, the British traitor and Nazi propagandist. "Two further wireless stations had been discovered on the (German) island of Borkum and another platoon was dispatched there as guard. That platoon was in the happy position of having 4,500 German marines to wait on them!"

It all seemed a very far cry from the exotic weaponry that Vesco had described in *Intercept—But Don't Shoot.*

In scanning the British documents, however, I'd found one big problem with Vesco's thesis that the British had discovered flying disc technology and removed it to Canada. By far the greater part of Germany's advanced aerospace development had taken place in Bavaria in southern Germany, a long way from the main thrust of British operations in the northwest of the country.

And while some British T-Force units had been integrated with American forward army operations in central and southern Germany, they were more often than not outwitted by the Americans, who time and again seemed to have had the resources to take what they wanted, much to the dismay of Roy Fedden.

"The Americans," he wrote, "have fine-combed the country, removing considerable quantities of drawings, technical records and actual equipment direct to the States."

This, I could see, was no mere happenstance. American tech-plunder activities were the result of the most carefully thought out strategy in the history of U.S. military operations, its orchestration planned at the highest levels.

In November 1944, the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff had established a Technical Industrial Intelligence Committee to seek out anything in Germany that might be useful to the postwar American economy. Nor did the Joint Chiefs' target list just comprise military objectives. One subcommittee had a staff of 380 specially trained civilians set up specifically to represent the interests of 17 U.S. companies. Special agents from the U.S. Field Intelligence Agencies (Technical) scoured Germany for vacuum tubes a tenth of the size of the most advanced U.S. devices, and condensers made out of zinc-coated paper, which were 40 percent smaller and 20 percent cheaper than U.S. condensers—and, instead of "blowing" like the U.S. vacuum tubes, were "self-healing"-in other words, they could repair themselves. Such innovation would later prove invaluable to the postwar U.S. electronics industry.

The teams were also on the lookout for German textile and medical advances—and found them by the ton-load. At the German chemical giant LG. Farbenindustrie, notorious for its role in the development of the gas chambers of the Holocaust, investigators found formulas for the production of exotic textiles, chemicals and plastics. One American dye authority was so overwhelmed by the discovery that he declared: "It includes the production know-how and the secret formulas for over 50,000 dyes. Many of them are faster and better than ours. Many are colors we were never able to make. The American dye industry will be advanced at least ten years." German biochemists had also found ways of pasteurizing milk using ultraviolet light and their medical scientists had discovered a way of producing synthetic blood plasma on a commercial scale.

Hundreds of thousands of German patents were simply removed and brought back to America.

No wonder the Brits were struggling. It was clear from these and other accounts that CIOS, the Anglo-U.S. reporting channel and assessment office for German high technology, was little more than a front. The real American tech-plunder operation had been organized long beforehand, under separate cover, in Washington.

A year after the war ended the U.S. Office of Technical Services (a body set up to ensure that German technology, where required, was spun rapidly into American industry) was reportedly sifting through "tens of thousands of tons" of documentation. This "mother lode" of material, according to one contemporary report, "very likely contained practically all the scientific, industrial and military secrets of Nazi Germany." Had exotic propulsion science been buried somewhere within this mountain of raw material, it would have been almost impossible to locate. But after the war, the mother lode was divided between the Library of Congress, the Department of Commerce and the technical archives at Wright Field. Most of the Wright Field material had come via *Lusty,* the postwar intelligence report on Luftwaffe technology that Lawrence Cross had told me about. This was the report that was stuck, frustratingly, in Alabama—nowhere near the Air Force symposium that I was due to hit in a quickie assignment to Washington later in the month.

I called the Air Force Historical Research Agency at Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama again to see if the administrator there could recommend any other sources of information comparable to the *Lusty* report. Since I was going to be in the vicinity of the U.S. National Archives in Maryland, I wanted to be sure I wasn't missing out on anything.

"If you're gonna be in D.C. anyway," she told me, chewing slowly on the syllables, "you might want to check out the other copy *of Lusty* that's available at our sister site down by the Old Navy Yard, just across the river from Capitol Hill."

For a moment, I thought she was joking. This was the person who'd told me, in painstaking detail, that if I wanted to obtain a hard copy of *Lusty* from the archives of Maxwell Air Force Base it would take me months or even years; that due to the poor condition of the microfilm reels, the only viable way of accessing the information was by reading the reels in situ.

When I pointed this out, her answer was nothing if not honest.

"You never mentioned nothin' 'bout no trip to D.C.," she said.

The Office of Air Force History maintained an out-of-the-way archive in Washington, D.C., located at Boiling Air Force Base, next to the Old Navy Yard.

I was supposed to be in and out of Washington inside a couple of days. I stretched the schedule and bought myself another 24 hours.

If there were trace elements of a suppressed technology within the U.S. documents plundered from Nazi Germany, I figured they had to be buried in *Lusty.*

Chapter 6

It was still dark when I exchanged the warmth of the Holiday Inn for the damp chill of the predawn, heaved my bags into the back of the cab and hunkered down for the 30-minute ride across the river. I had around eight hours to sieve *Lusty* for evidence of a technology Cross maintained couldn't be substantiated.

The commuter traffic was jamming the bridges, the top of the Washington Monument scraping the overcast sky, as the taxi headed across the Frederick Douglass Memorial Bridge and into a part of the nation's capital that only makes the news when the body counts from the drive-by shootings top three or four.

By the time I reported to the guard at the main gate, the wind had got up, lifting sheets of spray from a choppy confluence of gray wave caps where the Potomac and Anacostia rivers meet off Greenleaf Point. The spray snaked in rivulets this way and that in front of us as the cabdriver navigated the maze of open streets looking for the address I'd been given. It took him 15 precious minutes to find it.

The archive was tucked away in a forgotten corner of Boiling Air Force Base, home of the Defense Intelligence Agency and the USAF's Office of Special Investigations. It wasn't the sort of place you'd want to stroll or take the view.

Boiling was a large cordoned-off military district sandwiched between the black waters of the Potomac and the badland housing projects of Congress Heights and Washington Highlands. It also bordered the grounds of St. Elizabeth's—a hospital for the criminally insane, since renamed—where John Hinckley served time for his assassination attempt on President Reagan.

The reading room in the tiny Office of Air Force History was low-lit and windowless. True to her word, the senior archivist had placed a cup of coffee next to the warmed-up microfilm reader opposite the farthest row of metal book stacks. There was a clock on the wall above the door to her office. It was a little after seven-thirty. The air-conditioning had not yet kicked in and my breath mingled as condensation with the steam rising from the cup.

The documents were contained on several reels of microfilm and, like the reels at the main repository in Alabama, they were in bad condition. My business schedule allowed for one shot at a read-through. My plane left at 6:15 that night.

To help me cut to it, the archivist had offered to open the office early and said I was welcome to turn up any time after seven. Coffee was on the house.

Time was already short when I slapped the first reel into the microfilm reader and got to work.

Lusty opened with a condensed history, the opening paragraph of which began:

"At a medieval inn near Thumersbach near Berchtesgaden [Hitler's mountaintop retreat in Bavaria], early in May 1945, the German General Air Staff patiently awaited the outcome of surrender negotiations taking place in the north. They had arrived by car and plane during the past weeks, when the fall of Berlin was imminent, and had kept in contact with Admiral Doenitz at Flensburg. Through the interception of one of these messages, their location, which had previously been unknown, was discovered. Within 24 hours, Lieutenant Colonel O'Brien and his small party, representing the Exploitation Division of the Directorate of Intelligence, USAFE (United States Air Forces in Europe), had arrived, located the party and conducted the first of a series of discussions with General Koller, who was then in command."

Colonel O'Brien's men were the advance guard of 200 officers chosen from HQ^Army Air Forces to oversee the USAAF tech-plunder operation and it was clear right from the start that they were in a race against time.

In the chaos of the collapsing Reich, many German scientists were dead, others had been captured by the Russians advancing from the east or the Americans, British and French in the west. Many were held in internment camps, but in a country brimming with former Reich slave-workers and displaced citizenry—almost all of whom had to be filtered by the Allies for Nazi party members and war criminals—it was hard to know who was who or where.

But the vast majority were still at their factories and laboratories when the advance units of the USAAF plunder operation screeched up in their jeeps and half-tracks. With no orders to stop working, they had carried on at their workbenches, even though the armed forces of the high commands that had commissioned their work had either capitulated or been wiped off the map.

Many documents and blueprints were missing. German project managers would tell U.S. investigators that they had destroyed them under orders, but the USAAF officers quickly learned to apply some psychology of their own: men and women who had devoted years of commitment to technologies they considered vastly superior to those of their enemies were incapable of such vandalism.

Most of the files existed, but had been hidden.

Germany had already been divided by the Allies into zones of occupation; and many of the most technologically interesting German facilities—the underground V-l and V-2 production sites in the Harz mountains, for example—were in the designated Russian sector.

Before the zones were locked and sealed the missing documents had to be located and brought under American control.

By a process of detective work and, where that failed, by persuasion and coercion of the German scientists and program managers, boxes of blueprints and notes were pinpointed, then recovered from the bottom of lakes, as well as caves, farms, crypts, hospitals and mines.

O'Brien's team hit pay dirt early: their sleuthing led them from Thumersbach to an air raid shelter covered with earth in the side of a mountain close to the Austrian border. There they found files belonging to the l Gruppe/6 Abteilung, the German Air Ministry's intelligence directorate. These detailed all the Luftwaffe's latest air weapons, from the Me 262 jet fighter and the Me 163 rocket fighter to radars, air-to-air missiles and guided bombs. It also showed that the blueprints had recently been smuggled out of Germany in U-boat shipments to Japan.

Reading through the signals transmitted by *Lusty* field team officers to their superiors, I was hit by the sheer scale of the operation and the pressures endured by those who took part in it.

On April 22, 1945, two and a half weeks before the guns in Europe fell silent, additional recruits were needed to process the data. "It is planned to expand the activities of air technical intelligence tenfold, securing the most highly qualified specialist personnel available to the Army Air Forces," Brigadier General George C. McDonald, head of USAAF Intelligence, wrote that day.

The caliber of the technological spoils was indicated by the arrival in-theater at the end ofthat month of a "special group of scientists" headed by Dr. Theodore von Karman, special consultant to the U.S. Army Air Forces' supreme command.

The hardware that awaited them was detailed on several pages of microfilmed documentation from McDonald's intelligence directorate. Among them were a jet-propelled helicopter "in fly able condition accompanied by a complete set of documents and detailed drawings"; the Lippisch P-16 tailless rocket-propelled research aircraft whose advanced construction indicated "possible operation at high Mach numbers in the vicinity of 1.85"; and the Horten Ho 229 twin-jet flying wing bomber.

Nothing comparable existed in the American inventory; or anywhere else, for that matter.

But by midday, I had still found nothing that indicated the merest presence of the machines elucidated within the Schriever/Vesco legend.

As more men and resources were plowed into *Lusty,* the search for high technology widened. The files detailed the growing number of shipments back to the U.S. "Hanau: 50 tons of documents ready for shipment. Munich: 30 tons of documents ready for shipment. Teisendorf: Approximately two tons of documents pertaining to flight-path studies of guided rocket missiles are on location ready for shipment..." From all over Germany, documentation was being gathered, marshaled and hauled back to the U.S.

But just when it seemed as if the USAAF mission was breaking the back of the task, new finds and new problems added to the logjam. The biggest and most unexpected of these related to the Nazis' underground facilities, whose scale and number had not been anticipated by the investigators, because Allied reconnaissance had failed to pick up anything but the vaguest hints that the Germans were putting their factories underground.

The underground facilities were of more than passing interest to me since they figured in the Legend as places where the Nazis had developed their antigravity technology.

From the message traffic that built up around the discovery of these facilities in the late summer of 1945, three or four months after the war in Europe ended, it was clear that the discovery of these underground facilities was diverting the *Lusty* investigators from their primary goal of plundering German technology.

On August 29, General McDonald sent USAAF headquarters in Europe a list of six underground factories that had been discovered and "excavated." All of them had been churning out aircraft components or other specialized equipment for the Luftwaffe until the very last day of the war.

According to McDonald, the facilities varied in size from 5 to 26 kilometers in length, according to measurements of their tunnels and galleries. The dimensions of the tunnels varied from 4 to 20 meters in width and 5 to 15 meters in height; the floor space from 25,000 to 130,000 square meters.

Seven weeks later, in mid-October, in a *Preliminary Report on Underground Factories and Facilities in Germany and Austria,* senior USAAF officers were told that the final tally showed "a considerably larger number of German underground factories than had hitherto been suspected."

In addition to Germany and Austria, the underground building program had been extended across France, Italy, Hungary and Czechoslovakia.

"Although the Germans did not go underground on a large scale until March 1944, they managed to get approximately 143 underground factories into production by the last few months of the war," the report stated. A further 107 facilities had been located that were either being built, excavated or planned by the end of hostilities, but another 600 sites could be added to the total if caves and mines, many of which had been turned into production lines and weapons laboratories, were taken into consideration.

The report's author was evidently taken aback by the breadth of the German underground plan. "It is a matter of conjecture what would have occurred if the Germans had gone underground before the beginning of the war," he concluded.

And then, hot on the heels of the underground investigation, a fresh directive, this time from a senior USAAF field officer to General McDonald, the air force intelligence chief at Wright Field in Ohio.

Set against the steady but predictable buildup of documentation, its tone was so unexpected and the content of the message so different that it took me a moment to come to terms with its implications. It was dated September 28, 1945:

> 1. It is considered that the following have been thoroughly investigated and have proven to have no basis of fact.
>
> a. Remote Interference with Aircraft
>
> Investigations have been completed on this subject and it is considered that there is no means presently known which was in development or use by the German Air Force which could interfere with the engines of aircraft in flight. All information available through interrogations, equipment and documents has been thoroughly investigated and this subject may be closed with negative result.
>
> b. Balls of Fire
>
> As far as can be determined from extensive interrogations, investigation of documents, and field trips, there is no basis of fact in the

> reports made by aircrews concerning balls of fire other than that phenomena similar to balls of fire may have been produced by jet aircraft or missiles. This subject may be considered closed with negative results.
>
> A.R. Sullivan Jr.,
> Lt. Colonel, Sig. C.

This was the first hint or mention of anything connected with the foo-fighters. Sullivan was telling McDonald that investigations on the subject had been completed; and yet, there was no sign in any of the raw communications traffic that had hitherto flowed between the front and Wright Field that anyone was the slightest bit interested in the subject of "remote interference with aircraft" or "balls of fire." Furthermore, there wasn't any suggestion of interrogations having taken place or equipment or documents having been investigated pertaining to possible foo-fighter technologies—or of special "field trips" having been undertaken to track them down. But the instruction that the subject "may be considered closed with negative result" was so strident it made me sit up and wonder if I'd missed something.

I felt a knot of excitement in the pit of my stomach. The subject, as Sullivan put it, *may be closed with negative result.*

Why?

In the apparent informality of its memo format, the implication hadn't been clear on a first read-through. But it was now. This wasn't a casual instruction. It was an order.

I flicked back a few frames and found a field report of an investigation into German guided weapons technology.

It was then that my eyes were drawn to an assessment of a sensor called *Windhund* ("wind-hound"). *Windhund* was a "sniffer" device that detected the presence of aircraft by measuring differences in the polarity of the surrounding air. It then automatically directed its parent aircraft to follow the trail until it reached the bomber stream itself.

All you had to do was hard-wire *Windhund* into an autopilot and you had a mechanism to allow a pilotless aircraft—conveivably, the Fireball—to be controlled automatically.

In the same document, a second sensor from a related facility (same organization, different location) was detailed as an infrared tracking system for locating aircraft exhaust gas. Both technologies were at an early stage, but the fact that they were being investigated at all was significant. A half century later, as far as I knew, neither had been perfected or developed. But here, in 1945, were sensors that a foo-fighter could have used to get close enough to a bomber to disrupt its engine ignition systems.

I felt for the first time like I had a foot in the door.

A few frames later and here was a large document set out in tabular format with headings running across the top of the page: *Target~, Organization, City, Activity, Assessed (date), Action Taken and Remarks.* From the first page, it was clear that this was a very different kind of file, filled with data as raw as it came, and instantly noteworthy for what it did—and didn't—say. In the remarks section of one target, listed only as a "research station" near the town of Eib See, assessed primarily by the British, curiously, on May 2, 1945, it said: "Over 400 evacuated Peenemunde personnel held. Excavations made in the mountainside close to lake for underground workshops. A very important target." Nothing else.

Mysterious as hell.

Next page.

Target: Luftfahrt forschungs [sic]. *City:* Brunswick. *Activity:* Radio-controlled aircraft. *Assessed:* April 21-24, 1945. *Action Taken:* Team has been dispatched. *Remarks:* "Evidence of radio-controlled aircraft."

I scratched some notes. Another potential foo-fighter technology.

Next page.

Target: Research. *Location:* 87, Weimarerstr. Vienna. *Activity:* Experiments with antiaircraft rays. *Remarks:* "Research activity is conducted in a house at the above address. Research personnel were not allowed to leave house (reported hermetically sealed)."

The Germans *had* been working on directed energy weapons and had sealed those working on it from the outside world.

So many radical technologies and so long ago. I had no idea.

Next page.

Target: Daimler-Benz. *City:* Unter-Turkheim/Stuttgart. *Activity:* Secret weapon. *Assessed:* April 25, 1945. *Remarks:* "Said to stop ignition system of a petrol engine. The apparatus has succeeded in stopping a motor vehicle w/magneto ignition, but not one w/battery, at a range of 2 or 3 km."

The report went on to say that the technology had been insufficiently developed to have been brought against aircraft, but it made clear that this was the goal.

The Germans, then, *had also* been working on devices that were designed to "interfere with the engines of aircraft in flight," contrary to the note sent by Colonel Sullivan to General McDonald on September 28.

Why, then, did Sullivan say that all information available through in-

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

THIS PAGE I

Target	Location	Source	Activity	Remarks
Henschel Factory	Oderwerke (Nordhausen)	OSS London - SQ 2285, 13 April 1945.	Manufacturing parts for the HS-177 Rocket AA Weapon.	
Henschel Factory	Woffleben (Halle-Kassel)	ditto	Manufacturing parts for the HS-177 Rocket AA Weapon.	Mfg. actually takes place underground in an old mine shaft.
Laboratory	Grosser Inselsberg (Northern end of the Thuringen Wald)	A.D.I.(K) Rpt. 358/1945.	Proximity fuses (electrostatic)	
Friedrich Listwerke Firm	Plauen - Voigtland	OSS-London, SQ-2285, 13 April 1945.	Mfg. remote control mech. ("Kreiseln") for the projectile of HS-177 Rocket (AA Weapon).	
Research	87, Weimarerstr. Vienna	OSS-London No. B-2222 (23) 13 April 1945.	Experiments with anti-aircraft rays.	Research activity is conducted in a house at the above address. Research personnel were not allowed to leave house (reported hermetically sealed)
Research	Hennin ?	P.W. Report by A.D.I. (K) No. 228/1945.	A 'Vermessungsstelle' consisting partly of a Kinetheodolite section for observing the flight of rockets launched from Peenemunde.	
School	Lubmin	A.D.I. (K) No. 228/1945.	Instruction on the beam system used in connection with A-4 Rocket.	Students received instruction on the "Leitstrahl" (Beam) system. This beam system used in connection with A-4 rocket. The P.W. in this report confirms the A.D.I.(K) Rpt. No. 612A31944 that one of 3 batteries of an Abteilung was equipped with a leitstrahl transmitter.

terrogations, equipment and documents had been "thoroughly invesigated" and that the subject "may be closed with negative result"?

What negative result?

Over the years, I had conducted extensive interviews on and off the record with intelligence analysts on both sides of the Atlantic about Soviet and Russian weapons developments and knew something of their techniques. They would never have dismissed an invention such as *Windhund* as cursorily as Sullivan had in the light of clear evidence that the enemy had been developing such a radical strand of technology. At the very least, the reports would have gone into a holding file. If no other reports came in to substantiate this finding, then in time it would have been downgraded. Only then, would field agents have been told to stop looking.

Instead, Sullivan's exhortation for investigators to cease forthwith their search for one of the key component technologies of the foo-fighter sightings, a mystery that had absorbed the USAAF's intelligence community in that winter of 1944—45, was, well, odd.

Unless, that is, they had found a foo-fighter and needed to put the lid back on.

It got better. I came to the field report on the last target to have been assessed, the Institut für Elektrophysik Hermann Goering at Landsberg-am-Lech in Bavaria. Like so many of the others it was quite anodyne until the remarks section, which read:

"Experimental work in conjunction with airfield at Pensing, 9 km north (toward Munich). Activities: research on gas, aircraft, pilotless aircraft, radio communication."

Here, then, was a facility that merged in a single program all the activities that explained Vesco's Fireball drone: a pilotless, remote-controlled aircraft that disrupted the engines and electronic systems of Allied bombers. And the fact that the research activity was taking place at an airfield seemed to suggest that the tests were at an advanced stage when the *Lusty* assessment team showed up.

I sat staring at the screen for several more minutes, scouring the text for other corroborative details, but there were no further clues and I was out of time.

I photocopied what I could, thanked the archivist and made my way outside. The taxi was already waiting, engine running, wipers working against the rain. I threw my bags on the backseat and sat back for the ride, my head buzzing with thoughts about a strand of weapons technology that appeared to have been buried from view for more than half a century.

But it wasn't until the flight home that sanity prevailed.

What had I actually learned from *Lusty'?*

That the Germans had been working on technologies that far exceeded published accounts of their aeronautical achievements in the Second World War?

Certainly.

That they had developed a craft that explained the foo-fighter sightings reported by Allied airmen?

Possibly.

That they had developed antigravity technology—and that this technology had fallen into the hands of the Americans at the end of the war in Europe?

Unfortunately, not.

Besides which, I realized that *Lusty* had been declassified in the mid-1960s, several years before Vesco's book *Intercept—But Don't Shoot* was published. A skeptic could claim that Vesco had simply concocted his account from the documents.

I had hoped that by applying a few basic investigative principles, I would find some tangible evidence of a radical propulsion technology that had been overlooked by everyone else.

Of course, it was never going to be that simple.

Despite all the stories, there was no concrete proof that the Germans had even designed, let alone built, a flying saucer. As for antigravity propulsion, no one had ever found a single piece of evidence that would reliably hold up in court.

A short postscript to the German story emerged; in Canada of all places. At the time it seemed irrelevant to the main body of my investigation, but it came screaming back at me later in a way I couldn't possibly have guessed at so soon after my return from Washington. I would recall it later as the "Silverbug affair."

In April 1959, during hearings of the Space Committee of the U.S. Congress, the U.S. Department of Defense revealed that it was working with the Avro Canada company to develop a "flying saucer." According to the Pentagon's Research and Engineering Deputy Director, John Macauley, the craft would "skim the earth's surface or fly at altitudes reached by conventional aircraft." This was the first public admission that Avro was building a flying disc, the Avrocar, the brainchild of a gifted British engineer called John Frost, who'd moved to Canada shortly after the war.

Activity surrounding the Avro project was shrouded in mystery. Word of its existence had leaked as early as 1953, when the *Toronto Star* reported that the company was working on a "flying saucer" that could take off and land vertically and would fly at 1,500 mph. British and American scientists were also reported to be involved. Both the Canadian government and Avro played down the reports.

When the Avrocar finally emerged from the shadows it was easy to see why. One look at the prototype was enough to know that it would never achieve supersonic flight. Flight tests, in fact, confirmed it was a dog.

Underpowered and unstable, the Avrocar made its first untethered flight in December 1959 and soldiered on for two more years as Frost and his team sought to overcome its failings.

By the end of 1961, at the conclusion of the U.S. development contract, the Avrocar had managed to claw no more than a few feet into the air. Funding for the world's only known flying-saucer program was not renewed and the Avrocar drifted into obscurity—although not fast enough for the Canadian aerospace industry, which has sought ever since to distance itself from the project. There and elsewhere, it has become a byword for failure; something of an aviation joke.

Yet, that may have been the intention all along.

Recently declassified papers show that from early 1952 right up until the cancellation of the Avrocar in 1961, a select group of engineers known as the Avro "Special Projects Group," led by John Frost, had been working on a highly classified set of programs that accurately reflected the *Toronto Star's* original leak of 1953.

The papers revealed that, commencing with Project Y, also known as the "Manta," via Project 1794 to Project PV 704, the SPG tested technology for a whole family of flying saucers whose projected performance was designed to eclipse that of all other jet fighters. Data on Project 1794, a design for a perfectly circular fighter-interceptor, show that it would have been capable of Mach 4 at 100,000 feet. The best fighters then on the drawing board were hard-pressed to achieve Mach 2.

On December 2,1954, Canada's Trade Minister C.D. Howe sought to dampen speculation about the existence of an Avro flying saucer program with a statement that the Canadian government had backed studies into disc-shaped aircraft in 1952-53, but had since dropped the idea.

This, as it turned out, was true—up to a point. In fact, the Avro design, now called Project Y2, had been purchased outright by the U.S. Air Force and re-code-named "Project Silverbug."

Under pressure from the U.S. press to reveal the nature of this program—which, though classified, had again leaked—the USAF issued a bland statement in 1955 that it had a "research and development contract with the Avro Company of Canada to explore a new aircraft design concept." But that was all.

USAF documents on Silverbug declassified as recently as the mid-1990s show just how radical the Silverbug/Y2 concept was. "The Project Y2 design proposal incorporates a number of advanced improvements brought about by the utilization of several radical ideas in fundamental areas." Among these was a "very large radial-flow gas-turbine engine, which, when covered, will form a flying wing with a circular planform, similar in appearance to a very large discus."

The entire air vehicle, in other words, was a giant flattened jet engine, the hot gases that propelled it forward exiting from slots around its rim. By directing the exhaust, Silverbug would have been capable of almost instantaneous high-speed turns in any direction; maneuvers that would have included 180-degree reversals, the craft flipping this way and that like a tumbling coin, and all with minimum discomfort to the pilot, because the g-forces would have been alleviated by the adjustable thrust.

Much like the craft that had vexed the U.S. Air Force intelligence community following the first rash of U.S. flying saucer sightings in 1947.

The only other place prior to this discovery I had ever heard mention of a radial-flow gas turbine, an RFGT, was in Germany during the war.

After the ignominy of the Avrocar program, the Avro SPG disbanded and most of its exceptional brain talent was snapped up by U.S. aerospace companies or government-run research establishments. The most notable exception was John Frost, the maverick genius and inspiration behind the saucer projects, who soon after the Avro company was dissolved in April 1962 emigrated to Auckland, New Zealand. After the exhilaration and excitement of designing highly classified, highly unconventional air vehicles for the Canadian and U.S. air forces, Frost settled for the relative obscurity of an engineering job with Air New Zealand. He rarely, if ever, spoke about his work on the Avrocar and never mentioned the existence of the supersonic saucer projects that had gone on all the while behind it. He died of a heart attack in October 1979 at the age of 63.

Soon after I got back from Washington I rang Frost's son, Tony. I had tracked him down to Auckland, New Zealand, via a small band of researchers, all with strong aerospace credentials, who had done a fantastic job in piecing together the Avro story—the real story; one in which high-performance flying saucers had been shown to be real; far from the stuff of legend, as they had been in Germany.

"Dad was very secretive about his work," Tony Frost told me.

"Everything I ever learned about what he had been doing in Canada I had to pick up from people he'd worked with. The Special Projects Group was, for a time, just about the most secret group of its kind in Canada or the U.S., but why its activities should remain shrouded in secrecy for so long is still a mystery to me."

In the brief silence that followed, my mind worked hard to fill in the gaps. Had the lumbering Avrocar been an intentional blind all along, something to draw the flak from the SPG's real, but hidden goal: the creation of a supersonic, vertical takeoff and landing interceptor?

With Avro shut down, had work on the supersonic saucers continued in the utmost secrecy in the U.S.? Was there something about the very shape and form of the saucer, indeed, that was inherently super-classified?

While the Avro program didn't entirely explain how saucer-shaped craft had been "within the present U.S. knowledge" in 1947, it came very close.

First off, Avro showed that man-made flying saucers were real; they'd existed.

Secondly, if you substituted the radial-flow gas turbine, the RFGT, for something even more exotic—a T.T. Brown—type propulsion system, for example—the specification was a pretty neat match.

In the conventional world of aerospace, testing a new kind of airframe with a known engine was standard operating procedure. Was this what the Avro program had really been about? Were the Americans using the Canadians to perfect the aerodynamics of the saucer before the arrival of an all-new propulsion source—something that Trimble and Co. had hinted at in their statements of 1956?

Or was the truth altogether more prosaic? Had the supersonic Avro disc program merely been hushed up all these years in an attempt to avoid embarrassment by those who had thrown money at it and seen it fail?

These were questions without answers, so I asked Tony Frost instead how he thought his father had come by his radical ideas.

He told me, almost in passing, that a file recently uncovered in Canada's National Archives had shown that his father had made a journey to West Germany in 1953. There, at a Canadian government installation in the company of British and Canadian intelligence officials, Frost met with a German aviation engineer who claimed to have worked on a vehicle similar to the disc-shaped aircraft on the drawing boards at Avro. The German said that the project had been under way at a site near Prague, Czechoslovakia, in 1944—45, and that the saucer had not only been built, but flight-tested. He told Frost that both the plans and the craft itself had been destroyed in the closing weeks of the war.

How the information was used by Frost was never made clear. Like the Avro supersonic disc program, he never spoke about it—to his family or anyone.

I felt the historical data pulling me back. If the Canadians and the British had been colluding on German-derived saucer technology, it was dangerously close to the scenario that Vesco had espoused all along.

But Tony Frost had spent years trying to piece together the secret history of his father's life and he was still no closer to the truth.

I had exhausted the safe, cozy world of archives and Internet trails. It was like Cross had said; they'd succeeded only in taking me everywhere and nowhere. If a decade of training had taught me anything, I knew my only real chance of verifying Trimble's outburst back in 1956 was to search for leads in the real world.

I didn't know it yet, but I was about to get a helping hand from a scientist on the inside loop, a man I came in time to regard as a genius, who for reasons of his own had already embarked on exactly the same journey as I had.

Chapter 7

I had expected the drive to Austin, the state capital, to provide me with a rich set of impressions of the frontier that divided the Eastern Seaboard from the wilderness that started here and extended to the Pacific. But for two hours I sat on the freeway, my views of Texas obscured by bumper-to-bumper traffic, peeling trailer homes and secondhand car lots. And so I thought of the man I was about to visit instead.

Dr. Harold E. Puthoff, "Hal" to those who knew him better than I, was the director of the Institute of Advanced Studies at Austin. Puthoff had lived his whole life on a frontier; one that straddled known science, the world explained and understood, and a place that most people, scientists included, said didn't exist.

I felt drawn to Puthoff, because his academic qualifications, not to mention his connections to the military, put him squarely in a place that I could relate to; yet, he was clearly also involved in strange science.

His résumé, which I had pulled off the Internet, said that he had graduated from Stanford University in 1967 and that his professional background had spanned more than three decades of research at General Electric, Sperry, the Stanford Research Institute (SRI) and the National Security Agency, the NSA, the government's super-clandestine electronic eavesdropping organization.

It also told how he "regularly served various corporations, government agencies, the Executive Branch and Congress as a consultant on leading-edge technologies and future technology trends" and that he had patents issued in the laser, communications and energy fields. Puthoff was no lightweight.

What his résumé didn't describe was one of the strangest episodes in the history of U.S. intelligence gathering: a program, known as remote viewing or RV, that enabled the Central Intelligence Agency and the Defense Intelligence Agency to spy on America's enemies using clairvoyance. For years, depending on whom you believed, this highly organized, well-funded operation had proven remarkably successful, providing reams of usable data on Soviet military activities that were inaccessible to more traditional intelligence gatherers, such as spy satellites and aircraft.

RV remained buried, deeply classified, until 1995, when the CIA finally admitted it had used "psychic spies" against Russia during the Cold War.

Puthoff had been the RV program's founder and first director and had run it for 13 years, finally leaving SRI in 1985 to establish his own institute, the IAS, at Austin.

And now, he was up to his ears in gravity work.

If the U.S. government had instituted a top secret antigravity program, decades before possibly, then chances were Puthoff was either directly involved, knew about it, or, at the very least, had some inkling of it. On the other hand, doing what he'd done, acting as a consultant to some of the government bodies he still advised, I knew that Puthoff breathed the same air as people for whom disinformation was a just another part of the tool kit.

Ordinarily, I would have been wasting my time and Puthoff's. My limited, workaday knowledge of physics put me at an enormous disadvantage when it came to sorting out good information from bad in the antigravity field.

But on that day, as the miles to Austin sped by, I had some help.

Deep in the heart of Britain's own aerospace and defense establishment, I had found someone to decode the intricate mysteries of gravity for me.

I wound back the clock to the time when I'd attended a trade conference many years earlier. It had been entitled "Antigravity! The End of Aerodynamics." I'd only gone along because of the caliber of the speaker: Brian Young, Professor of Physics at Salford University. Young was also Director of Strategic Projects for British Aerospace (BAe) Defence, Britain's biggest military contractor.

The lecture had been given at the London headquarters of the Institution of Mechanical Engineers, IMechE, just off Parliament Square. Handouts beforehand (which I'd clipped to my copy of the transcript) had set the theme: "Gravity is the most mysterious of all the natural forces. It appears completely indifferent to anything we try to do to control it. Nonetheless, its very presence is the driver for the whole science and business of aeronautics. Scientists from the very distinguished to the very ridiculous have tried for over 300 years to either explain it or destroy it. Technology is making tremendous strides in all directions and perhaps we are getting close. If so, is this the end of aerodynamics?"

I chewed over the words of Young's speech, according it a respect I hadn't given it on the night it was given. Now I wished I had.

I recalled the elegant marbled hallway and the low hubbub of conversation as I'd drifted among the attendees—a hodgepodge of MoD men and aerospace industry executives, some of whom were familiar to me—waiting for the doors to open into the auditorium.

Young had kicked off his talk by reiterating our general state of ignorance about gravity. "It is an incredibly weak force," he'd said, "although it probably didn't seem so to the Wright Brothers and I suspect most mountain climbers would disagree violently.

"But really gigantic quantities of matter, about 6x10 (to the power of 21) tonnes in the case of the Earth, are required to produce the gravity field in which we live. If you think of a simple horseshoe magnet lifting a piece of iron, then, as far as that piece of iron is concerned, the magnet weighing a few ounces is outpulling the whole Earth."

He flashed up a set of artist's impressions showing how three different kinds of antigravity vehicles might look assuming engines could be built for them.

One, a "heavy-lifter," looking much like an airship, was depicted effortlessly transporting a giant section of roadbridge through the air. Young made the assumption that the antigravity engine of the heavy-lifter not only canceled the weight of the craft, but its underslung load as well.

Another, saucer-shaped, craft, described as being like a bus for "city hopper" applications, used a "toroidal" or doughnut-shaped engine to allow it to skip between "stops" in a futuristic-looking metropolis.

The third showed a combat aircraft with a green-glowing antigravity lift engine on its underside for vertical takeoff and landing (VTOL) and conventional jet engines for forward propulsion.

But all these things were fiction, he stressed, so the designs were simply conjecture. "The more I have read and thought about antigravity and its terrestrial applications, the more I have become convinced that as it stands today it is going nowhere. Whatever name the press may give experiments, either in someone's garage or in Geneva, most of the real work is trying to uncover basic knowledge and few people really believe it will lead to gravity control.

"To the contrary, a view I have seen expressed is that if gravity control is ever discovered it will be as an unexpected by-product of work in some completely different field."

To which he'd added a rider. Were he to have gotten it all wrong, were an antigravity effect ever to be discovered, the growth of the industry surrounding it would be exponential—look what had happened after Faraday's discovery of electromagnetic induction in 1831. Within five years, the electric motor industry was born. Within seventy, the generation of electricity was huge business. Today, it is hard to conceive of a time when man-made electricity did not exist.

I vaguely remembered going up to Young after the lecture and chatting to him about some of the points he'd raised. But now I kicked myself. If only I'd paid more bloody attention.

Soon after I'd returned from the low-key archive in Washington that housed the *Lusty* documents, I'd picked up the phone and dialed British Aerospace. Through to the public relations department and I logged the request. Could they get me Professor Young's phone number?

Forty minutes later, the media manager called back to say that Professor Young had died, of a heart attack he thought, some years earlier.

I put the phone down, a little shocked at the news, and pinched the bridge of my nose, looking for that extra bit of concentration. What had Young and I talked about? Down into the basement and another protracted rifle through a box taped up and marked "notebooks: 1989—94." There in among my old reporter's pads, after an hour on my hands and knees, I found the one that I'd taken with me that night to IMechE. I started reading and flicking pages.

The notes I'd jotted down were piss poor, highlighting terms like "gravito magnetic permeability" and "toroidal engine" and putting big question marks against them.

I kept turning. There, right at the end, I'd written myself a memo to put in a call to a media affairs officer at BAe who would arrange for me to receive photos of the artist's impressions Young had flashed up during his speech.

This, I remembered now, was one of the things Young and I had discussed.

Below the memo were two names: Dr. Ron Evans of "BAe Defense Military Aircraft's Exploratory Studies group" and Dr. Dan Marckus, an eminent scientist attached to the physics department of one of Britain's best-known universities. The department was more than familiar to me. Its work was well known in defense circles for the advice that it gave to the government.

Beside Evans' and Marckus' names were their contact phone numbers.

I called Dr. Evans first.

He turned out to be a nice, soft-spoken mathematician based at BAe's Warton plant, a facility that cranked out jet fighters close to where the bleak mudflats of Lancashire's Ribble Estuary met the Irish Sea.

When I asked if he could brief me, as per the suggestion of Professor Young, Evans said he needed to consult with the company's media managers. He'd never dealt with the press before. I got the impression it was sensitive stuff.

It was, but not for any of the reasons I had guessed or hoped. Britain's biggest aircraft manufacturer, BAe, had an antigravity department. That in itself was key.

But its activities weren't classified. Far from it. The impression I got, more than anything else, was that the management had tucked Evans' tiny department into the farthest-flung corner of the company because it didn't know what else to do with it. That and the fact no one in BAe at that level wanted to wake up to headlines that it was involved in kooky, Buck Rogers science. It would destabilize the share price.

In the end, Evans wasn't allowed formally to brief me on his work, but he was given permission to fill me in on some of the background that had led to the formation of his Exploratory Studies group. That suited me fine. BAe didn't want to break cover—nor did I. For once, we were on the same side of the secrecy divide.

In March 1990, Evans chaired a two-day University-Industry Conference of Gravitational Research, sitting around a table with a gathering of distinguished academics to identify any emerging "quantum leaps" that might impact on BAe's military aircraft work. Gravity control figured extensively on the agenda.

Imagine it. A technology, popping out of nowhere, that rendered all of its current multibillion-pound work on airliners and jet fighters redundant at a stroke. Now that, I thought, *really* would do things to the share price.

The company also undertook some practical laboratory work in a bid to investigate the properties of a so-called "inertial-thrust machine" developed by a Scottish inventor called Sandy Kidd.

In 1984, after three years' work building his device—essentially, a pair of gyroscopes at each end of a flexible crossarm—Kidd apparently turned it on and watched, startled, as it proceeded to levitate, then settle three inches above the surface of his workbench.

An ex-RAF radar technician, the Scotsman had become obsessed with the idea of inventing an antigravity machine after he'd removed a still-spinning gyroscope from a Vulcan nuclear bomber. Carrying it backward down the aircraft's ladder, he reached the ground and was promptly flattened by a sledgehammer blow to his back. The force, he realized, had been transmitted from the gyroscope, which had reacted in some inexplicable way as his feet had touched the ground.

In May 1990, BAe began a series of trials to test whether there was anything in Kidd's claims, knowing full well that he wasn't alone in making them.

In the mid-1970s, Eric Laithwaite, Emeritus Professor of Heavy Electrical Engineering at Imperial College London, demonstrated the apparent weight loss of a pair of heavy gyroscopes by lifting the whole whirling contraption with one hand and wheeling it freely around his head. When the twin rotors were not in motion, attempting this feat was impossible. The gyroscopes were the size and weight of dumbbells. But when the rotors turned, they became as light as a feather.

Somewhere along the line, the machine had lost weight.

The accepted laws of physics said that this was not possible, out of the question—heresy, in fact. But Laithwaite's claims were supported by a top-level study into gyroscopes published by NATO's Advisory Group for Aerospace Research and Development (AGARD) in March 1990.

The authors of the AGARD report concluded that a "force-generating device" such as Laithwaite's, if integrated into a vehicle of some kind, could, in theory, counteract gravity. "Clearly if such a counteracting force was of sufficient magnitude it would propel the vehicle continuously in a straight line in opposition to said field of force and would constitute an antigravity device."

The report went on to say that there was at least one "gyroscopic propulsive device" that was known to work and that the inventor, E.J.C. Rickman, had taken out a British patent on it. The trouble was, the report concluded, the impulses generated by these machines were so slight they would be useless for all practical applications—except, perhaps, to inch a satellite into a new orbit once it had already been placed in space by a rocket.

It was hardly a quantum technological leap. But that wasn't the point, Dr. Evans told me. What was being talked about here was an apparent contravention of the laws of physics; the negation, at a stroke, of Newton's Third Law, of action-reaction. Which was why the BAe-sponsored tests on the Kidd machine had a relevance that went way beyond their immediate and apparent value.

If there were ways of generating internal, unidirectional, reactionless forces in a spacecraft, and in time they could be refined, honed and developed, the propulsion possibilities would be limitless.

In May 1990, a trial went ahead under the watchful eyes of two wind tunnel engineers from BAe's Warton aircraft plant. The first series of tests showed no antigravity effects, but to everyone's surprise, during a second series of trials, one result did appear to indicate that the machine had changed weight.

Unfortunately, the engineers failed to repeat the result; and in science and engineering, repeatability is the benchmark of success.

Had it been repeatable, the two percent weight change Kidd claimed for his device would have been scientifically verified, and BAe would have employed the world's first known antigravity device as an orbital maneuvering motor for satellites.

Shortly after the trial, Cold War defense budgets collapsed and BAe's share price went into free fall. As it fought for its survival, there were cutbacks across the company and Dr. Evans' department, with little hope of any short-term returns, was disbanded as quietly as it had come together.

That, essentially, was how things were when he and I met.

I rang Dr. Marckus a few times, but only ever got an answering machine and so I capped my involvement in the BAe antigravity story with a few low-key articles in *Jane 's* about the BAe investigation. It was more an excuse than anything else to broadcast a question: Was anyone else out there engaged in similar work?

The U.S. Air Force had recently proclaimed its interest in the field with a document, published in August 1990, called the *Electric Propulsion Study.* Its objective was to "outline physical methods to test theories of inductive coupling between electromagnetic and gravitational forces to determine the feasibility of such methods as they apply to space propulsion." Stripped of the gobbledygook, it was really asking whether there was any theory out there that might permit the engineering of an antigravity device.

The existence of the *Electric Propulsion Study* gave me an excuse to slip tailored messages into a couple more stories about futuristic propulsion. It felt a little like pointing a transmitter into deep space and waiting for a response.

I waited, but nothing came back. No emails, no anonymous faxes, no spooky phone calls. Nothing.

Thereafter, I kept a weather eye on the antigravity scene, but the receiver I had rigged for the slightest trace of life out there remained silent. In the end, I switched it off.

During the mid-1990s, BAe kept its toes in the gravity field by placing a few small-scale contracts with a number of British universities, principally to see if there might be a provable relationship between gravity and heat; a link first postulated by Michael Faraday in 1849.

Like me, the company was clearly reaching, but getting nowhere.

Then, in 1996, NASA—the U.S. National Aeronautics and Space Administration—began questioning some of the perceived limits to the advancement of air and space travel in two notable areas. One related to the unbreachability of the light-speed barrier—a throwback to Einstein, whose Theory of Relativity said that the velocity of light was a fixed constant never to be exceeded.

The other questioned the heretical notion that, somewhere in the universe, there might be an antigravity force; one that could be exploited for air and space travel.

The resultant NASA program, wrapped within something called ASTP—the Advanced Space Transportation Program—prompted BAe to resurrect its antigravity work. It has since been rebranded "Project Greenglow," a "speculative research program . . . the beginning of an adventure which other enthusiastic scientists might like to join, particularly those who believe that the gravitational field is not restricted to passivity."

Decoded, Greenglow involved little more than reseeding small amounts of company R&D money to more British universities, funding a few more experiments of the Kidd kind, and acting as a European feed-in to the NASA effort.

It was, to say the least, depressing news. I thought back to George S.Trimble, the man who had been too afraid to talk to me after Dani Abelman of Lockheed Martin had approached him on my behalf. If Trimble had cracked the gravity code back in 1956, why were BAe and NASA, with their immense know-how and resources, still struggling with the gravity conundrum today? It didn't make any sense.

And that should have been where the matter ended.

But long months after I had consigned the antigravity story to the graveyard, I got a phone call. The man at the other end of the line was bluff and unapologetic, verging on the rude. Dr. Marckus had finally gotten in touch.

Chapter 8

The sunlight reflected brightly off the thin carpet of snow that had fallen along the east coast overnight. I kept the estuary on my right and the sea defenses on my left, edging the car along the narrow road, navigating by the instructions I had been given over the phone. There was something almost primeval about the combination of the pine forest, the limbs of the trees twisted into impossible shapes by the wind, the open sky and the stillness.

The trees parted briefly and I saw the radar mast that I'd been told to look for. Around another bend and the tiny haven swung into view.

I pulled up in the parking lot beside a wooden jetty that jutted into the green, fast-flowing current toward a small settlement on the far bank. The buildings seemed run-down and dirty compared to the crisp scenery through which I'd just driven.

There were two other cars parked beside mine and both were empty. I got out, stretched my legs and shivered as the still-freezing temperature blew away the fug of the hour-and-a-half-long journey from London. Suffolk. The East Anglian coast and the cold waters of the North Sea. I was in a part of the country I didn't know.

A light breeze tugged at the rigging of a row of yachts dragged onto a thin stretch of stony beach nearby. Seabirds picked along the jetsam and detritus of the shoreline. Above the gentle pinging of the mast ropes, I heard children's voices.

There were four people on the jetty.

A woman sat on the far side, wrapped warmly against the cold, reading a book as her two small children line-fished for crabs.

The father, standing farther off, his back to me, was tracking an open motorboat chugging hard against the fast-flowing water, its helmsman preparing to tie up alongside the jetty's end.

As the boat bumped against the tire buffers, the man stepped on board and settled onto one of the bench seats.

I waited for the woman and the two children to get up and join him, but they never so much as glanced his way.

It was then that I realized the man in the boat was Marckus.

He looked up and waved me aboard. I hesitated. Taking a ride on a boat had not figured in our brief phone conversation.

Until then, I'd not considered the possibility that Marckus was anything other than the person he claimed to be.

But what did I know about him? That he was plugged firmly into Britain's aerospace and defense community, that he didn't make a habit of talking to journalists, and that he was taking a risk by talking to me.

The ferry was preparing to leave.

I ran along the jetty and dropped down into the boat. Marckus paid for both of us and the ferryman cast off.

I found myself apologizing for the mix-up; how I'd thought Marckus was with the woman and her children on the jetty. Silly, nervous jabbering.

Dr. Marckus cut me short. "Does the significance of this site mean anything to you?" he asked, his arm almost hitting my face as he waved in the direction of the road.

I shrugged and he gave a mild snort of derision. "I thought you said you were a Jane's man."

"I'm sorry," I said, "it looks like a small yacht club and a fishing village." I neglected to tell him, because I couldn't see the point, that history wasn't my bag. My work was high technology of the 21st-century kind.

Once, Dan Marckus must have been lean and ascetic-looking; the thinning hair and high forehead still gave a hint of it. With age, however, he had put on some padding, making him look a lot less severe than he sounded. A dark, scratchy beard, flecked with gray, distracted the eye on first meeting from a thick pair of lenses in tortoiseshell frames.

Behind them, Marckus' brown, beady eyes watched me intently and with a hint of irritation.

He was dressed sharply in a thick blue polo-neck, a trendier version of the kind fishermen wear, and a brown leather jacket. His voice said he was around 65, but he looked younger.

"What you saw when you drove through those trees was one of the orginal antenna masts of Bawdsey Manor. Before the Second World War broke out, the Germans sent an airship, the *Graf Zeppelin,* up and down this coastline trying to figure out what we were up to—what those tall steel lattice towers meant."

"And what did they learn?" I asked.

"They'd packed the *Graf Zeppelin* with electronics—listening gear. But the old man was so much smarter than them, thank God."

Marckus registered my bewilderment. "Robert Watson-Watt. The man who gave the British the secret of radar. It all happened here. I thought you'd know that."

Once on the other side, we jumped down onto the beach and strolled along the shoreline, past a lonely cafe, in the direction of the point.

"So how did Watson-Watt outwit the Germans?" I asked, to fill the silence more than anything else.

"They saw the *Graf Zeppelin* on their scopes when it was way out over the North Sea, realized what it was up to and switched off the radars. The Germans went away believing that they were radio masts, that Germany was the only nation that had successfully developed radar detection. A month later, they invaded Poland."

"That's interesting. Did you work for him?" The term he'd used, "old man," denoted more than a passing familiarity. "Watson-Watt, I mean."

Marckus never answered. He walked on in silence, watching the gulls soaring on the cold currents above our heads. Then, without looking at me, he said: "It's been a while since you've written about my favorite subject. I was beginning to worry that you'd lost interest in it."

"It's like Professor Young said in his speech. I have come to the conclusion—a little late in the day, perhaps—that antigravity is for the birds."

"I see," he said. "Are you hungry?"

I looked at my watch. It was close to midday and I hadn't had any breakfast.

Marckus, registering my hesitation, doubled back toward the cafe.

I pulled a copy of the U.S. Air Force's *Electric Propulsion Study* from my coat pocket and set it down on the table next to a tatty yellowing manila folder that had been clamped under his arm throughout.

Marckus and I were the only two people this side of the deep fryer. After serving us our plates of cod and chips, the cafe's proprietor left us on our own.

Marckus seemed to start to relax.

"Apart from the fact that the math and the physics are beyond me, the evidence says that this whole science, if you can call it that, is still in its infancy," I said. "One look at this report says they're still playing around with algebra. When I wrote what I wrote, I thought the story was bigger than that. I have to concede I was wrong."

"What were you hoping for, if I may ask?" Marckus asked.

I shrugged. "I thought maybe they'd have at least built some hardware by now. God knows they've had time. The U.S. aerospace industry first started talking about this stuff in the mid-1950s. You'd think by now there might just be something to show for it. But the Air Force is just staring at its navel and doing a few sums."

I tapped the *Electric Propulsion* report. "Modifications to Maxwell's equations and all that."

"As I recall," began Marckus, "in the 1970s, the Americans tripped over some research published by a Russian mathematician, Ufimtsev, who in turn had gained his inspiration from work done by Maxwell a hundred years earlier. The end result was stealth, the biggest breakthrough in military aircraft design since the jet engine. Not bad, for a mathematician."

"The difference is, they developed stealth," I told him.

"How do you know they haven't developed antigravity?"

I studied his face. How much did Marckus really know?

He must have read my expression. "My information isn't any better than yours," he said, raising a hand in the air to signal his innocence. "The U.S. and the U.K. share a lot of sensitive data, as you know. But there's nothing come across my desk that says we're cooperating with the Americans on antigravity—or even that the Americans are doing it on their own. My point is, we don't know." He brought his hand down on the manila folder to reinforce the point.

I looked at the U.S. Air Force study again. It was hardly reassuring. If antigravity existed and people had known about it years ago, how come the Air Force—along with BAe and NASA—was only just starting to look for it in the mid-1990s?

Marckus stared into his cup. "Did they build the first atomic bomb with a few 'poxy' million bucks? Christ, no. It cost them billions of dollars, even in 1940s values. Secret dollars nobody outside the secret was supposed to even guess at."

"So, has antigravity been developed in the black or not?"

Marckus glanced up. His voice hardened. "I already told you. I don't know. None of us this side of the bloody Atlantic knows." Then he coughed, semi-apologetically. "But there are signs."

"What signs?" Despite myself, I leaned forward.

"Up until 1939, atomic energy was still a matter of conjecture, even among physicists in the field. But by the following year, some of the brighter sparks in the community realized that it was doable, that if you split a neutron into equal parts, you'd quite likely get an enormous release of energy. Things that appear impossible usually aren't, even when the physics *say* they are."

I knew enough to know that in the 1930s next to nothing was understood about nuclear physics, that by the outbreak of the Second World War all experiments resulting in nuclear reactions had required more energy than had been released.

As more and more physicists escaped the Nazis, however, and debate in America was stimulated further, the conjecture spilled into the U.S. press and writers began to speculate about what they had heard. A number of sensational articles appeared about the weapons implications of a nuclear reaction that could be compressed into the blink of an eye. The word was, it would result in a massive bomb.

By 1940, when it was understood that uranium bombarded with neutrons fissioned and produced more neutrons and that a multiplying chain reaction really might occur with huge explosive force, something remarkable happened. The nuclear physics community voluntarily stopped the publication of further articles on fission and related subjects and this, in turn, dampened the media's interest.

By the time America entered the war in December 1941, you couldn't find a mention of fission. It was as if no one had ever been discussing it.

The parallel with what I had read in the U.S. media in the mid-1950s, culminating in all those statements in 1956 that antigravity was doable with a Manhattan-style effort behind it, and then the crushing silence, was extraordinary.

By 1960, you talked about antigravity and people looked at you like you were mad.

I stared out the window, trying to find Watson-Watt's once-secret radar mast, but it was lost behind the trees. I knew Marckus lived somewhere nearby. I wondered where, exactly; what his house was like, whether he was married, if he had kids.

"What's in this for you?" I asked him.

"You have freedom of movement, I don't," he said. "You can go visit these people and ask questions, I can't."

I still couldn't quite see where all this was headed.

Marckus took a moment before adding: "I think it's 1939 all over again. I think we're poised on the brink of something. The physics is mind-boggling—Christ, I don't pretend to understand half of it myself—but what we're talking is huge."

"Spell it out for me."

"Bye-bye nuclear power. Bye-bye rocket motors. Bye-bye jet engines. If we can manipulate gravity, nothing will ever be the same. But expecting British Aerospace to develop this stuff is like asking someone who'd spent the first half of the 17th century building horse-drawn carts to come up with the outline for Stephenson's bloody Rocket. People don't really have a taste for it here, not at a senior level. They don't have the vision that the Americans do. Antigravity is too much mumbo-jumbo, not enough ROI." He rubbed his thumb and forefinger under his nose and pulled a face. "Return on investment—bean-counter talk."

"So, if you can prove that the Americans really are up to something," I said, "you raise the stakes and get something going here? You get a real program in this country with real money behind it?"

"Right—to a point," he said. "The difference is you're going to prove it."

I stared at him, thinking I hadn't heard him right.

"It's not such a bad arrangement," he said, reaching into the manila folder and pulling a bunch of papers from it. "You get a short course in physics, a few tips on who to talk to, and maybe a story out of it." He paused. "The story of the biggest breakthrough in transportation technology since the invention of the wheel."

"You said there were signs . . ."I said cautiously.

Marckus pushed the papers across the table. The cover sheet was a photocopy from some kind of index. The writing was small, but my eyes were drawn to a section of text that had been highlighted with a yellow marker pen.

I peered closer and words like "magnetic monopoles," "gravitational charge" and "linear equations" swam into my vision.

"This is taken from something called the 'Source Index,' " he said. "It's a list of doctorate papers published by universities around the world. The highlighted part shows you what is happening in one U.S. university, that's all. There are dozens, maybe hundreds, of other facilities like these across America engaged in related research. All of them probing the sorts of areas you'd want to probe if you were pulling a field-dependent propulsion program together. Some of the entries go back decades."

Field-Dependent Propulsion; yet another term for antigravity.

"This thing is a multifaceted, multilayered puzzle and you won't solve it by picking away at the edges," Marckus said. "Begin with what you can see, then search for what you can't. What NASA's doing is in the open, so get over there and start looking and listening. Then go deeper. Some people say that the B-2 Stealth Bomber uses an antigravity drive system. It's like the bomb. The physics has been around for a long time. All it requires is some imagination, a shitload of money and some technical know-how and someone who wants to put the pieces together."

On the way back home, as the shadows lengthened and the traffic bunched on the choke points into London, I thought long and hard about the road ahead and where it was taking me. I knew absolutely nothing more about Marckus than I had gleaned from him before the meeting. The meeting had confirmed that he was a highly gifted academic with strong ties to the British government and its defense industry and that he was unquestionably up to his eyes in secret work. But that was all.

It didn't make me feel particularly comfortable. But then again, I'd already painted myself into a corner and this, at least, was a way forward. Doing nothing was not an option if I wanted to progress things.

Marckus had given me the names of two people I needed to see in the States. One was Garry Lyles at NASA; the other was Hal Puthoff.

In American defense procurement, there was a white world and a black world—one that was open to public scrutiny and one that was so firmly closed, from an outsider's perspective it was like it didn't exist.

The white world had know-how, a good sprinkling of imagination and not a little money at its disposal.

The black world, on the other hand, had all of the above in spades.

Lyles clearly worked in the white world. But with Puthoff, it was absolutely anyone's guess.

Chapter 9

A larger-than-life depiction of Wernher von Braun, whose self-assured good looks conjured up images of postwar Hollywood matinee idols, stared down at me from a mural in the gallery above the arrivals hall at Huntsville International Airport.

Von Braun is still revered in that remote corner of Alabama as the founding father of the nearby George C. Marshall Space Flight Center, the NASA "center of excellence" for space propulsion. Von Braun had died more than 20 years earlier, but American rocketry remained as a testament to the work of Operation Paperclip, the U.S.A.'s clandestine effort after World War Two to recruit Nazi V-2 specialists.

A complex of drab, rectangular buildings, "the Marshall Center Wernher von Braun administrative complex," erected at that time, stands as testimony to the decade in which the high ambient humidity routinely reverberated to test runs of engines for the Mercury-Redstone and Saturn V launch vehicles. The former took the first U.S. astronaut, Alan B. Shepard, briefly into space three weeks after Yuri Gagarin in May 1961; the latter formed the basis of the giant Apollo moon rocket.

Today, NASA Marshall scientists still work on the same basic technology that von Braun developed under the auspices of the Third Reich, even though chemical rockets, his great invention, are today regarded as too slow, too unreliable, too expensive and too inefficient.

It was mid-summer, four months after my meeting with Marckus, before I was able to wangle a trip to Marshall and do as he'd suggested.

Set in a vast area of grasslands, bordered by well-tended, lush forestation, Marshall was melting under the high heat when I eased my rental car up the long approach road that peeled off the interstate to the hub of the Center itself. As I got out of the car, a military Huey thudded low overhead, disappearing behind the trees in the direction of the Redstone Arsenal, the Army's neighboring missile test facility. As the low-frequency throb of the blades faded from earshot, it was replaced by the gentle swish of grass sprinklers and the chatter of cicadas.

I was met at the entrance of the main building of the complex by a woman from public affairs. As we moved through the lobby, she sketched in some of the background to the program I'd come to talk about with its manager, Garry Lyles.

Under the Advanced Space Transportation Program, ASTP, officials at NASA Marshall have been working since the mid-1990s on methods to reduce the cost of space access. Using today's generation of launch vehicles—the Space Shuttle Orbiter, the Delta and Atlas rockets—it costs around $10,000 per pound to put a satellite into low Earth orbit. One short-term payoff of ASTP will be the development of a family of reusable rocket planes that should cut these costs by a factor of ten by the end of the present decade. A mid-term goal, due to yield results in around 2015, is to develop a hybrid "combined cycle" engine— half-rocket, half-jet engine—that will reduce launch costs by a factor of a hundred. Even though the hybrid engine, if it can be mastered technologically, will give NASA space access for as little as $100 per pound, it will never lead to anything other than a delivery system to low Earth orbit.

For missions beyond Earth, scientists will either have to rely on improvements to the chemical rocket or on something radically different.

For a mission to the planets of the inner solar system a nuclear rocket could be developed in a relatively compressed timescale to cut round-trip journey times from Earth to Mars from many months to possibly just weeks. The feasibility of nuclear rockets had been proven in two NASA-developed solid core fission reactor test programs, NERVA and ROVER, between 1959 and 1972. These never came to fruition, my PR guide told me, due to concerns over safety and also because emerging and more advanced nuclear fusion technology was seen as yielding three times the efficiencies. Like the fission rockets, however, fusion systems never happened either—not in the white world, anyhow. In the early 1990s, the Pentagon was reported to be working on a classified nuclear thermal rocket under the code name "Timberwind," but soon afterward it was canceled. Since the black world is publicly unaccountable, it is impossible to know whether this really was the case.

Lightweight nuclear fusion propulsion is one methodology being studied for a manned NASA mission to Mars, my guide continued as we drifted toward the elevators, alongside "light-sails," "magnetic sails," "antimatter fusion drives," lasers and other exotic-sounding technologies.

While the physics behind these ideas is generally well understood, she added, the challenge in turning them into hardware is enormous.

But ASTP did not end there. In addition to examining ways to provide cheaper access to low Earth orbit and coming up with propulsion systems that by the second half of the century will lead to "the commercialization of the inner solar system," its original task went a lot further.

Into an elevator, half a dozen floors up, and we emerged into a world of bright walls, carpeted floors, posters of exotic spacecraft and artists' impressions of planetary systems, constellations and nebulae.

Up ahead, through an open door, sitting behind a large desk, Garry Lyles—bespectacled, bearded and thoughtful-looking—was waiting.

"Within a hundred years," he told me over coffee, his soft southern drawl catching with emotion, "we'll be going to the next star system."

He spoke about the journey with such absolute conviction that it was difficult, in spite of the sheer fantasy at the heart of the idea, not to believe him. Lyles was a dreamer, but his dreams were rooted in work that was going on within the Wernher von Braun administrative complex as we spoke. ASTP scientists at Huntsville—people working right on the edge of what was known and understood in the harsh world of propulsion physics—were collaborating with other NASA facilities on science that would enable astronauts to make a "fast trip" to the Alpha Centauri star system, Earth's nearest stellar neighbor, 4.3 light-years away. As head of this portion of ASTP, Lyles was bound up in the immensity of the challenge.

I asked what he meant by a "fast trip."

"We have set a goal to go to Alpha Centauri in 50 years—a 50-year trip." He stared at me intently as he rocked back in his chair. "You have to really use your imagination to come up with a propulsion system that will do that."

"When will you be able to make that trip?" I asked.

He gestured to another part of the complex visible beyond the blinds of his window. "We have a group of thinkers out there that's beyond anti-matter. They're looking at space warp, ways to get to other stars in a Star Trek-like fashion. If we're not thinking about that kind of thing today, we won't be going to the stars in a hundred years' time. But I have to tell you that if you talk to these people, these engineers who are working on interstellar missions, they think they can do it. And I have no doubt that they're right."

The trip, he reiterated, would be possible before the end of the 21st century.

The phone rang and Lyles took it, allowing me a moment to consolidate my thoughts. His team, he said, had opted for a 50-year trip because it represented a time span most engineers could get their heads around. Fifty years, however, made no sense from the point of view of a practical mission, because even if it could be accomplished technologically, old age (or boredom) would have killed most of the crew long before they ever got there, let alone back again.

But that wasn't the point. The "extra-Solar System" portion of ASTP was about getting scientists to think about realizing impossible journeys. In 1960, there were those who said that landing a man on the moon by the end of the decade would be impossible. That we weren't colonizing Mars by the end of the 20th century, they maintained, was directly attributable to the drop-off in research activity that followed the Apollo program. If we wanted to get to the stars by the end of the 21st, Lyles said, we needed to be thinking about it now.

Which, though he didn't know it, was why I was here.

In 1956, a group of engineers had talked openly about an impossible idea. Lyles' "fast trip" to Alpha Centauri was so impossible, his team was having to really reach—to think way out of the box—to come up even with half-answers to the challenge. To make the fast trip happen, NASA had no choice but to tap heavily into some taboo areas of science. That was my lead.

Supposing for a moment that NASA could come up with a vehicle capable of light-speed, a one-way trip to Alpha Centauri would take 4.3 light-years. Since the speed of light was a constant 186,000 miles per second, by extrapolation, the spaceship would be moving at almost 670 million miles per hour.

The 50-year journey time reduced the requirements to a more manageable 16,000 miles per second or 57.6 million miles per hour.

I had only once come across real hardware (aside from a laser, the ultimate "speed of light" weapon) about which comparable speeds had been mentioned.

Shiva Star, the 250-ton capacitor I'd seen at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico in 1992, had had a task to fire a plasma bullet at 10,000 km per second.

And then, just a few years later, when I returned to Kirtland, it was like the program never existed.

In the carefully regulated temperature of Lyles' office, I shivered.

Shiva's plasma bullet, designed to be dumped into the soft electronics of an incoming nuclear warhead at one-thirtieth the speed of light, was but one of a handful of deep black programs I'd encountered in the course of my career.

How many more secrets existed below the waterline of accountability? What other secrets were out there? What was the ultimate weapon? The questions churned, as they always did in a place like this, almost too fast for me to get a hold on them.

What Lyles and his counterparts in the black world shared was their absolute belief that they could engineer things other people said were impossible. It was a part of the feeling I got when I visited facilities like this and it thrilled and scared me with equal measure.

Why had Marckus sent me here? What did Lyles know?

When he got off the phone, I asked Lyles if he ever felt NASA was developing technology that had previously been developed by the Air Force in the black. He took a moment before answering, choosing his words carefully. I thought that by tweaking his professional pride I might be able to ruffle some of that soft, southern *savoir-faire.* But Lyles had seen me coming. "Yeah, sometimes we do. But you have to understand that going into space is a very hard thing to accomplish. It takes a lot more than money. I would guess—certainly when it comes to single-stage-to-orbit technology—that NASA is at the cutting edge."

This was the essence of the multilayered conundrum that Marckus had touched upon during our meeting on the estuary. While NASA was struggling to develop technology that would reduce the cost of space access, there were those that said that the Air Force had already solved the problem. Believers in Aurora, the large triangular aircraft supposedly sighted over the oil rig in the North Sea, maintained that at least one variant was capable of conducting single-stage missions to low Earth orbit. If, as George S. Trimble and his contemporaries had stated back in 1956, the U.S. was on the threshold of developing antigravity technology, why spend billions on something as conventional (by comparison) as Aurora 20 years later? Or any other advanced kind of weapon system for that matter?

But when Lyles said that he doubted the Air Force had cracked single-stage-to-orbit, I actually had no way of knowing what he really knew. There was every chance that NASA was simply repeating work the Air Force had already carried out—and this applied to all aspects of its work "on the cutting edge."

I knew of several Congressmen who were deeply pissed off about it. On their watch, they'd committed money to a number of NASA programs knowing damn well, but unable to prove it, the Air Force had duplicate technology up its sleeve.

A number of NASA scientists I had spoken to in other fields of endeavor had acknowledged a feeling—though it was often no more than this—that their work was a mirror image of some hidden effort, something they couldn't see, that was going on in the black. If NASA scientists, therefore, were thinking "way out of the box" to come up with science that would enable them to reach another star system by the end of the century, maybe someone, somewhere had experienced that same feeling.

If anyone at Marshall had sensed such a presence, it would have been George Schmidt. Lyles recommended I go talk to Schmidt, because Schmidt, being a project engineer, was right on the cutting edge. A big, genial man with a football player's physique and a marine-style haircut, Schmidt, as head of propulsion, research and technology on the ASTP effort, waded routinely through the theory that could one day transform Lyles' interstellar vision into real hardware. Still under escort, I found him down a maze of corridors in a different part of the von Braun administrative complex.

Schmidt punctuated his remarks with references to "superluminal velocities"—faster-than-light speeds—and "space-time distortion," phenomena that weren't even accepted by mainstream physics ("although General Relativity and Quantum Mechanics don't discount the possibility"). By the same token, he said, there were some holes in current thinking—"some windows of opportunity we may be able to take advantage of—that might transition the theory sooner rather than later. One of these related to so-called "wormholes," shortcuts through the universe that could be created with large amounts of "negative-energy density matter": material that existed only on the very fringes of theory.

Since it was known from the established physics of General Relativity that gravity, electromagnetism and space-time were interrelated phenomena, he said, it followed that any distortion of space-time might well yield an antigravity effect.

Questioned on the principles of a wormhole, Schmidt quickly warmed to his theme. "It's based on the idea that you can actually curve space," he told me. "Einstein discovered that large masses curve space. Well, it's the same thing with a wormhole. You're curving and distorting space so that you don't have to follow the usual dimensions—you can go up and out, so to speak, into another dimension, if you will. And that allows you to travel much faster than the speed of light."

I asked him if he ever got the feeling that anyone was working on this stuff elsewhere; that there may even have been breakthroughs—ten, twenty, maybe forty years earlier. His reply was more candid than I had anticipated.

"That's always a possibility. I'm not one for conspiracy theories, but we've learned about things that governments and organizations have been involved in in the past."

He paused and rubbed the bristle hairs at the back of his head. I waited.

"It would be extremely frustrating to think that we're duplicating what was done maybe decades before. We like to think we're on the cutting edge, at the forefront of knowledge. It would be very discouraging to think that everything had been determined before and we were just sort of . . . here for show. I hope that's not the case. But you never know. Maybe in some aspects it is."

It was then that my PR escort interjected.

"You know," she said, "I really don't think this is anything that we can comment on in any depth."

I knew that the topic of conversation had taken an unwelcome turn. Now, I had intruded far enough.

"I'm simply trying to get a feel for the kind of capabilities that are out there—on both sides of the fence," I replied.

"Then maybe you should go talk to the Air Force," she said crisply. In any case, I was talking to the wrong people at NASA, she added. Huntsville was where the big picture behind the interstellar vision came together. But, she said, the "breakthrough physics" that would one day lead to the engineering of a "device" was being managed by the NASA Glenn Research Center at Lewis Field in Cleveland. It was from there, not here, that NASA was actively in the process of handing out contracts that aimed to prove or disprove whether there was any substance to the theory.

If I wanted to know whether the physics was doable, get up there, she told me. Talk to a guy called Millis. Marc Millis.

Before I left, I had one last question for Schmidt. I asked him if he genuinely believed that a wormhole might one day give man the ability to cross the universe.

"Yeah," he said, smiling but serious at the same time. "If you can build a wormhole, certainly. Who knows? But you've gotta be careful to make sure you've got the right end point. Who knows where you'll end up if you just generate it? You could end up anywhere in the universe. So that's something to be very careful about."

Six hundred miles to the northeast in Cleveland, Ohio, but a world away culturally, Marc Millis had indeed just received a half-million-dollar contract to test whether there was any theory out there, anything at all, that might one day enable a propulsion device to be built with the energy to take man out of the Solar System and into interstellar space.

Millis ran the NASA Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program, referred to in the trade as BPP.

"This is it," he told me, gesturing to the modest office he shared with another NASA official whose head was just visible on the other side of the screen that set the boundaries of Millis' work space. It had taken some hard negotiating after Huntsville, but I had managed to secure a visit to the Glenn Research Center, NASA's "center of excellence for aero-propulsion research and technology," on my way to Washington, where I was due to conduct some interviews for the magazine before heading on down to Puthoff's place in Austin, Texas.

With his half a million dollars, Millis had awarded five contracts, any one of which might lead to the breakthrough that gave BPP its name.

The first contract, placed with the University of Washington, Seattle, was designed to test theory which maintained that a change in inertia was possible with a sudden energy-density change, induced, say, by a massive jolt of electricity. Manipulate inertia—an object's innate resistance to acceleration—and apply it to a spacecraft and you had the ability to reduce, if not negate altogether, its need for propellant. If the sums were right, it would continue to accelerate until it reached light-speed.

The second experiment was tasked with examining the reality of the so-called zero-point energy field and whether it existed at anything like the magnitudes that had been postulated by some scientists. If these people were even half right, Millis said, zero-point energy held enormous significance for space travel and offered entirely new sources of non-polluting energy on Earth.

What, I asked, was zero-point energy?

For some years, Millis replied, there had been a developing understanding that space was not the empty vacuum of traditional theory, but a seething mass of energy, with particles flashing in and out of existence about their "zero-point" baselines. Tests indicated that even in the depths of a vacuum chilled to absolute zero (minus 273.15°C)—the zero point of existence—this energy would not go away. The trouble was, no one knew quite where it was coming from. It was just there, a background radiation source that no one could adequately explain. With millions, perhaps billions, of fluctuations occurring in any given second, it was theoretically possible to draw some—perhaps a lot—of that energy from our everyday surroundings and get it to do useful work. If it could be "mined"—both on Earth and in space—it offered an infinite and potentially limitless energy source.

The third experiment, he continued, would set out to examine the unproven link between electromagnetism and gravity and its possible impact on space-time. Perturbations of space-time not only promised a propulsive antigravitational effect, but opened up other more esoteric possibilities, such as time travel.

I asked Millis if this stuff was for real and for a moment he looked unsure. The mere mention of time travel and we were suddenly into science-fiction territory. It was enough to put any serious scientist on the defensive.

"The immediate utility is not obvious," he said stiffly, "but it's like a foot in the door."

The fourth experiment looked at "superluminal quantum tunneling"-faster-than-light speed. Recent laboratory tests had shown light pulses accelerating beyond the speed of light, thereby shattering Einstein's Theory of Relativity, which said that the light-speed barrier was unbreachable. If a light pulse could arrive at its destination before it left its point of departure, the theory said a spacecraft might be able to as well.

"How it translates into space travel," Millis said, anticipating my next question, "is way down the pike."

Again I was presented with a failure of fit. If NASA was still struggling with the theory now—40 years and a world of knowledge after the pronouncements of George S. Trimble and his colleagues in 1956—what on earth had led them to believe they could crack gravity then?

Something I'd written down tugged me back to the present. I flicked back over the list of experiments and did a quick inventory count.

"You said there were five contracts. I've only got four. What's the fifth?"

He looked momentarily taken aback.

"It's conducted under the auspices of the Marshall Space Flight Center itself," he said. "Since you'd just come from there I rather presumed they'd briefed you on it."

I shook my head. "Briefed me on what?"

Millis reached into a drawer and pulled out a file full of newspaper clippings and magazine articles. He rifled through them until he found what he was looking for, a clipping from Britain's *Sunday Telegraph* dated September 1,1996. The headline read: "Breakthrough As Scientists Beat Gravity."

"I'm surprised you didn't know about this," he said, pointing to its source.

I said nothing. I had a photocopy of the same story in my files at home. I'd not taken much notice of it because it had seemed totally outlandish.

The story detailed the experiments of a Russian materials scientist called Dr. Evgeny Podkletnov, who claimed to have discovered an

Breakthrough as scientists beat gravity

by ROBERT MATTHEWS and IAN SAMPLE

SCIENTISTS in Finland are about to reveal details of the world's first anti-gravity device. Measuring about 12in across, the device is said to reduce significantly the weight of anything suspended over it.

The claim — which has been rigorously examined by scientists, and is due to appear in a physics journal next month — could spark a technological revolution. By combatting gravity, the most ubiquitous force in the universe, everything from transport to power generation could be transformed.

The Sunday Telegraph has learned that Nasa, the American space agency, is taking the claims seriously, and is funding research into how the anti-gravity effect could be turned into a means of flight.

The researchers at the Tampere University of Technology in Finland, who discovered the effect, say it

tures. The team was carrying out tests on a rapidly spinning disc of superconducting ceramic suspended in the magnetic field of three electric coils, all enclosed in a low-temperature vessel called a cryostat.

"One of my friends came in

the *Journal of Physics-D: Applied Physics*, published by Britain's Institute of Physics.

Even so, most scientists will not feel comfortable with the idea of anti-gravity until other teams repeat the experiments.

HOW THE ANTI-GRAVITY DEVICE WORKS
A 1-stone object would lose 4.5oz of its weight through 'shielding' effect of the device
Ring of super conducting ceramic (Yttrium-barium-copper oxide), spinning at 5,000 rpm
Whole assembly cooled with liquid nitrogen
Solenoids used to put magnetic field around ring
Three solenoids, which allow ring to levitate magnetically
Unit approx. 12in diameter

antigravity effect while working with a team of researchers at Tampere University of Technology in Finland. What made the claim different from "so-called 'antigravity' devices put forward by both amateur and professional scientists," wrote the paper's science correspondent, was that it had survived "intense scrutiny by skeptical, independent experts." It had been put forward for publication in *Journal of Physics D: Applied Physics,* published by Britain's Institute of Physics.

When the *Telegraph* hit the streets, Podkletnov's world turned upside down. He was abandoned by his friends, ostracized by the university, which claimed that the project did not have its official sanction (and later threw him out), and the journal pulled his paper. Leaving his wife and family in Tampere, Podkletnov returned to Moscow to lick his wounds until the furor had died down.

And all because the *Sunday Telegraph* had used a single, taboo word in its opening sentence: antigravity. The term may have been vital for 1950s pulp sci-fi, but it had no place in the world of mainstream physics.

What was unfair, was that Podkletnov had been so careful to avoid the term himself. All along, he had referred to the test as a *gravity-shielding* experiment.

It was still heresy; and he had burned for it.

But here was Millis saying that NASA *had* taken Podkletnov's claims seriously. Not only that, but NASA had been apprised of the "gravity-shielding" properties of superconductors even before the *Sunday Telegraph* story broke.

I wondered why no one had told me about all this while I was in Huntsville.

In 1993, the Advanced Concepts office at the Marshall Space Flight Center was handed a copy of a paper written by two physicists, Douglas Torr and Ning Li, at the University of Alabama at Huntsville. It was called "Gravitoelectric-electric coupling via superconductivity" and predicted how superconductors—materials that lose their electrical resistance at low temperatures—had the potential to alter gravity. Even if the amounts were fractional, NASA officials quickly saw the benefits. Applied to something like a rocket, even fractional methods for cutting launch weights would, over time, lead to a considerable reduction in the space agency's fuel bills.

In their paper, Torr and Li went out of their way to avoid the term "antigravity." One whiff of it, they knew, and no one would take their work seriously.

It worked. NASA promised money for an experiment.

But when the Podkletnov story broke, Millis told me, NASA decided to take a multi-path approach instead. First it tried to contact Podkletnov to see if he would share his findings with them. When the Russian refused, it elected to do the experiments itself, setting up the "DeltaG group" at Marshall specifically to look for interactions between superconductors and gravity.

At first, Ning Li, the brilliant Chinese woman scientist who had predicted a one percent weight change in her original calculations, joined forces with the DeltaG effort. Then, apparently frustrated by the pace of work at Marshall, she set up to pursue the experiments on her own. If she was getting anywhere with them, she wasn't saying, all her most recent tests having been conducted behind closed doors.

Since that time, according to Millis, the DeltaG group had found cause to believe that *something* unusual was happening when gravity fields were influenced by superconductors, although the precise nature of the effect was a matter of conjecture. Podkletnov had claimed that two percent weight reductions were being consistently observed during his experiments—a result, if you could call it that, that was so close to the Torr/Li prediction it was scary.

Like the whirling gyroscopes investigated by BAe, the low percentages were, in a sense, immaterial. What was being talked about here—and apparently engineered by Podkletnov—was a phenomenon that science said was impossible.

The DeltaG experiments at Marshall continued, but, without Podkletnov's input, Millis admitted that things had not gone as fast as NASA would have liked. Part of the problem had been its inability to reproduce superconductors of the size and fidelity Podkletnov said was required to achieve gravity shielding—a term with which even Millis, who was broader-minded than most, was uncomfortable.

"It's more accurate to call it an anomalous gravitational effect, but even that is jumping the gun." It could, he said, simply be an experimental error.

But what if it wasn't? If Podkletnov was right, if he had found a way of altering an object's weight, aerospace was about to change—civilization, too, maybe—and forever. Conscious, no doubt, that it might be staring at the greatest scientific discovery since the bomb, I could see why NASA was hedging its bets.

It had solicited a company in Columbus, Ohio, to try to develop superconducting ceramic discs like those built by Podkletnov. Without the Russian's secret recipe, however, it hadn't been getting on as well as it might. At the time of my visit to Ohio, the Columbus-based company had managed to build small discs, but it still hadn't acquired the knack for turning out the larger variety—the type that Podkletnov said was crucial to the success of the experiment. And this was the bittersweet irony. Being a materials scientist, Podkletnov had an insight into the way the discs were constructed that left NASA, with its $13 billion annual budget, floundering in his wake. Tempting as it was to view Huntsville's silence over Podkletnov as a deliberately misleading omission, I suspected that NASA's impotence in the face of this irony was the real reason no one had mentioned him.

* * *

On the flight down to Texas, I picked through a pile of clippings I'd managed to track down during my brief stopover in Washington. From the little that was known of Podkletnov's Tampere experiments, it was apparent that the superconductors needed to be spun at around 5,000 rpm inside a large steel container filled with liquefied gas for cooling. Electromagnets were used to make the superconductors levitate and get them up to speed. In the absence of any firm data on Podkletnov's discs, though, attempts by NASA to duplicate his work were inconclusive as far as gravity shielding was concerned. A couple of times, the readings had blipped—a little like Dr. Evans' experience with the Kidd inertial thrust machine at BAe—but they were never consistent enough to be taken seriously.

If Podkletnov knew all this, I thought—and somehow or other, I guessed he probably did—then he was more than likely pissing himself laughing.

Either he had perpetrated a fantastic confidence trick, or he really had pulled off one of the greatest scientific discoveries of the 20th century.

So, where the hell was Podkletnov?

The best and only clues to his whereabouts had been provided by an American journalist named Charles Platt who had documented his attempts to track down Podkletnov in a lengthy article for *Wired* magazine. After the *Sunday Telegraph* story, Platt managed to get a phone number for Podkletnov and they spoke a couple of times, but only on the basis that Platt wouldn't publish anything without the Russian's consent.

"He told me how he made his discovery," Platt wrote more than a year later, quoting the Russian: " 'Someone in the laboratory was smoking a pipe and the pipe smoke rose in a column above the superconducting disc. So we placed a ball-shaped magnet above the disc, attached to a balance. The balance behaved strangely. We substituted a non-magnetic material, silicon, and still the balance was very strange. We found that any object above the disc lost some of its weight, and we found that if we rotated the disc, the effect was increased.' '

When Platt suggested that huge amounts of energy would be required for this to be remotely so, Podkletnov reportedly became irritated.

"We do not need a lot of energy," he'd snapped back. "We don't absorb the energy of the gravitational field. We may be controlling it as a transistor controls the flow of electricity. No law of physics is broken. I am not one crazy guy in a lab; we had a team of six or seven, all good scientists."

And that, for the next year or so, was that. It was only when an intermediary told Platt that Podkletnov had returned to Finland, where he was now set up as a materials scientist in a local company, that the American jumped in a plane and finally managed to confront the man who'd dared to claim he had shielded gravity.

What Podkletnov had been doing during his yearlong self-imposed exile in Moscow was never made clear, although the Russian soon hinted that he had not been idle. He was quick to explain to Platt that his original findings at Tampere had been meticulously charted using a mercury barometer. Immediately above the superconducting disc, it had registered a 4 mm drop in air pressure, because, the Russian said, emphasizing the point, the air itself had been reduced in weight.

When he'd taken the barometer upstairs, Podkletnov had found the same drop in pressure over the point where the experiment was taking place on the floor below. He went up to the top floor of the building and it was the same thing.

This showed that gravity reduction would not diminish with distance, that the effect had no limit. Podkletnov's gravity shield went on, extending upward in a 30 cm diameter column—forever.

And then, if that wasn't good enough, pay dirt. The two percent weight reduction in all the air above the disc meant that a vehicle equipped with gravity shielding would be able to levitate, buoyed up by the heavier air below.

"I'm practically sure," Podkletnov had told Platt, giving him an intense look, "that within ten years this will be done. If not by NASA, then by Russia."

During his year in Russia, he went on to reveal, he had conducted research at an unnamed "chemical scientific research center" where he had built a device that *reflected* gravity. By using superconductors, resonating fields and special coatings—and "under the right conditions"—gravitational waves had been repelled instead of blocked. Applied to an air vehicle, Podkletnov said, this "second generation of flying machines will reflect gravity waves and be small, light and fast, like UFOs. I have achieved impulse reflection; now the task is to make it work continuously."

Their meeting over, Podkletnov slipped back into the shadows and Platt returned home. While there had been sightings of Podkletnov in the years since—reports of his whereabouts had surfaced in Japan, Russia and Finland—he had, to all intents and purposes, disappeared again.

Back in the States, Platt canvassed the physics mainstream for its reaction to the Podkletnov claims. Most scientists laughed outright. Gravity shielding, they said, was simply inconceivable.

I made a note on the flight home to ask Marckus to keep his ear to the ground for signs of the Russian's whereabouts. It was tempting to believe that Podkletnov was by now working in the bowels of a crumbling military research institute somewhere deep behind the Urals, refining his experiments to the accompaniment of a howling Siberian gale. And maybe this wasn't a million miles from the truth.

But scientists had a habit of talking to one another, whatever obstacles seemed to separate them. And since Podkletnov had shown himself to be loquacious enough when it suited him, I thought he'd probably surface again before too long.

When he did, I needed to be there.

I was intrigued by the Russian's work. It echoed something that Professor Young had said in his lecture on antigravity—something that had sounded right at the time. If gravity control is ever to be discovered, Young had said, it would most likely be as an unexpected by-product of work in some completely different field. An accident.

Podkletnov hadn't been looking for an antigravity effect. He'd been playing around with superconductors. If he'd been working in a Western laboratory, his discovery might have forever gone unnoticed. But in Russia—and Finland, too, apparently—it was OK to light up a pipe in a room full of test equipment. And, bingo, the smoke had hit the column of shielded air and snaked straight up to the ceiling.

It struck me as not impossible that Podkletnov had discovered—in a million-to-one fluke—what Trimble et al had predicted theoretically in 1956.

Had Podkletnov tripped over the answer and got in by the back door?

If anyone knew, it was Dr. Hal Puthoff, the second of the two contacts passed to me by Marckus during our meeting by the estuary.

Even in the cocooning environment of the aircraft, nursing a stiff drink, I felt anxious at the prospect of meeting him.

Up until now, I'd managed to palm off my interest in NASA's advanced propulsion activities as a quirky sideline to my regular journalistic pursuits. I knew, though, that when I pitched up at Puthoff's door, a discreet address remote from any other legitimate aerospace business, there'd be no hiding what I was really up to.

Chapter 10

I reached Puthoff's offices after a drive through the industrial suburbs of the Texas state capital, parked and double-checked that I had the right address. I had expected the Institute of Advanced Studies to be housed in another windowless science block, a modern version of the concrete edifices at NASA, replete with clean rooms and scientists swishing around in white coats. But the IAS was a small glass-fronted office in a leafy business park. Several of the other lots were vacant and at least one was boarded up.

Puthoff's reputation as a scientist of vast repute went a long way before him. His papers on gravity and inertia were viewed as seminal works by the science community. He also sat on something called the Advanced Deep Space Transport group, ADST, a low-profile organization composed of people that someone had described as being "on the frontier of the frontier." Staffed by select NASA, Air Force and industry representatives, it was the real cutting edge, but you had to know where to look for it.

Puthoff's link to NASA was bound up in theoretical work that he had been conducting since the early 1970s into the zero-point energy field.

Before getting out of the car, I was beset with a rush of all the old doubts. Did I really want to declare my interest in antigravity to a man who had clear connections to the intelligence community?

I checked my watch. It was a little after five-thirty in the morning back in England, but I needed reassurance. I called Marckus on my cell phone.

He picked up on the second ring, sounding bright and alert. I wondered for a moment whether Marckus ever slept, then dispensed with the small talk and told him of my concerns.

Marckus, showing a tendency that would become familiar over the course of our acquaintance—a tendency to impart knowledge well after the time I needed it most—informed me that NASA, being a government institution, was, in effect, the outer marker of an elaborate but invisible security system.

"How's that?" I asked.

"You show up asking the kind of questions you asked at Huntsville and

Cleveland and, believe me, someone, somewhere will have registered the fact. I have little doubt that you began pulsing away on radar scopes at government agencies too numerous to mention the moment you even logged your requests to visit NASA. You've already crossed the threshold. It's too late to go back now."

I felt the muscles in my stomach tighten, but I said nothing. This propensity to unsettle was also a part of Marckus' act. I asked him instead, as casually as I could, for a data dump on everything that was known about zero-point energy (ZPE).

I'd already grasped the principles: that space—the air that we breathed, the atoms in our bodies, the far reaches of the cosmos, everything—was filled with a churning "foam" of energy. Its presence was signified by the background static hiss of the universe—something you could hear on a transistor radio—but as far as visual detection went, was invisible. Which was what made it so controversial.

In 1948, Marckus told me, a Dutch physicist, Hendrik Casimir, came up with a theoretical model for proving that the "quantum vacuum" existed. If two aluminum plates were placed very close together, so close that their separation was less than the wavelengths of the fleeting particles in the quantum foam, it followed, Casimir reasoned, that there would be nothing between the plates.

Because the theory said that everything outside the plates would still be seething with zero-point fluctations, the external force pushing in on the plates ought to be enough to close them together, thereby proving the existence of the ZPE field.

The difficulty, however, related to the experiment. To exclude the wavelengths of the fluctuating particles, Casimir's plates had to be exactly parallel and separated by less than one micron—one hundredth the width of a human hair. It wasn't until 1997 that science was able to come up with equipment that could satisfy the tolerances required for the Casimir experiment. When it did, it found that the Casimir Effect existed exactly as predicted.

And with it flowed the corollary that the quantum vacuum, zero-point energy—call it what you will—existed as well.

In principle, there was no reason why mechanisms couldn't be built to tap into this energy.

And since the fleeting particles were popping in and out of existence billions of times every second, on every conceivable frequency, in every possible direction, there was, theoretically speaking, no limit to the amount of energy resulting from the fluctuations.

In principle. Theoretically speaking.

"The argument now is not about whether the ZPE field exists," Marckus concluded, "but about how much energy it contains. It comes down to a difference in people's calculations and interpretations. Some say that there's enough energy in a shoe box to blow the world apart; others say that all the ZPE in the volume of the Earth couldn't boil you an egg with it." He paused. "I think you'll find with Puthoff that it's closer to the shoe-box scenario." And then he signed off.

I locked the car, walked over to the IAS office, pushed the glass and watched as it swung open. There was no one in the front office, so I called out a couple of times and, not getting any answer, moved toward the back of the building. I followed a corridor till I heard a man's voice. Poking my head around a door, I saw Puthoff sitting on the edge of his desk, a phone jammed to his ear. He was shorter than he'd appeared in photographs, but his puckish features and thick head of hair belied his 60-odd years. He waved me in, pointed with a mock grimace to the voice on the other end of the receiver, and gestured for me to grab a seat. A couple of minutes later, he hung up, muttered something about a canceled meeting in Washington, and asked if I'd like a coffee.

While we were standing by the coffee machine, I asked him which of Marckus' analogies he inclined toward.

"If we're right," he said, as I stirred creamer into my coffee, "and you have all possible directions of propagation in the universe, and all possible frequencies and wavelengths, and every one of them has this little contribution of zero-point energy, when you add it all up, the numbers are ridiculous."

"How ridiculous?" I asked.

He paused and added matter-of-factly: "There's enough energy in the volume of your coffee cup to evaporate all the world's oceans many times over."

He showed me a large workshop at the back of the building filled with workbenches, electrodes and measuring equipment. This, Puthoff said, was where he and his small team worked on the ZPE devices that people routinely sent him for analysis; tiny little reactors that supposedly drew energy out of the vacuum of space: the space that we occupied and the space, in its quantum sense, that occupied us.

The machines came in all shapes and sizes. Some were solid-state devices with no moving parts that used the pinching motion of the Casimir effect to create clusters of electrical charge with energy outputs many times greater than the kick they required to get going.

Others used the millions of imperceptible yet infinite movements of the quantum foam to stimulate a vibrating motion in magnetic fields.

These vibrating fields, their proponents claimed, served as "gates" via which unending supplies of vacuum energy could be fed through electronic circuits and put to use.

If they could be proven to work repeatedly and reliably, Puthoff said, imagine it: no more pulling power off the national grid. You'd have a reactor in a box in your backyard; a little thing the size of a microwave oven that sucked energy from the space that it occupied and belted out clean, unending power wherever it was needed. Initial machines would feed power to your house, but later, as they developed in sophistication, just as computers had developed exponentially at the end of the 20th century, these devices would shrink in size and double in output; and they'd keep on shrinking and doubling, over and over, until they'd be small and powerful enough to put in cars or aircraft or submarines. Applications would be limited only by the imagination of the user.

"If," I said. "You said, 'if.' "

"Ah, well, that's the point," he replied. "Of the 30-odd devices that have come through this door, none has passed the magic test yet: a demonstrable measurement of more energy flowing out than is flowing in."

But it would happen. Maybe tomorrow, maybe in 30 years. But for sure, one day someone was going to announce that they'd invented a machine that could extract energy from the immeasurable pulse of the universe. It'd rate a paragraph in the news-briefs columns, but clip it or keep the paper, mark it well, Puthoff said, because on that day the world would change. Nothing would ever be the same again.

As he talked, Puthoff filled in the gaps in the résumé that I'd pulled off the Net. Soon after gaining his master's degree at the University of Florida, he went on active duty as a Naval Intelligence officer seconded to the National Security Agency. When he left the Navy, he converted to civilian status at the NSA, then went on sabbatical at Stanford University in California to get his Ph.D. He gained his Ph.D. in 1967, resigned from the NSA and soon afterward joined the Stanford Research Institute, a spin-off from the university, set up, among other things, to pursue heavily classified research for the U.S. defense and intelligence communities. Puthoff's thing was lasers, but it was at SRI that he developed the notion of the remote-viewing program for the CIA and the DIA. The RV work formed the hub of the "heavily classified research" that he undertook at SRI for the next 13 years.

I asked how he'd made the jump from lasers to remote viewing.

"It sounds weird, but it was a very straightforward thing," he said. In the early 1970s, physicists were searching everywhere for evidence of tachyons—particles that theoretically had the ability to travel faster than light. Finding them was problematic, because, if the theory was right, they couldn't travel below light-speed, making identification somewhat challenging.

Someone had given Puthoff a book called *Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain*, which mentioned how Soviet scientists were looking for evidence of ESP in plant life. The Russians had connected up a pair of plants to polygraphs, separated them over huge distances and shielded them from all electromagnetic frequencies. They found that when one plant was burned with a cigarette, or even if someone was thinking about it, the other plant responded on the polygraph.

Since one of the postulated characteristics of tachyons was that they could penetrate all kinds of shielding, it occurred to Puthoff that one of the few places that scientists hadn't looked for tachyons was in "organic living systems." He wrote up a proposal that aimed to verify if plants were "tachyonically connected" by linking separated algae cultures with lasers. He sent the proposal to an acquaintance involved in similar work who happened to show it to Ingo Swann, a noted psychic and medium, who in turn approached Puthoff, assuming that he was interested in ESP. Even though he wasn't, Puthoff was sufficiently intrigued to invite Swann to SRI, where he proposed to immerse him in a "shielded quark magnetometer," a "tank" in a vault that was totally cut off from all known emissions and frequencies.

As Swann approached the vault, which he hadn't been forewarned about, he appeared to perturb the operation of the magnetometer. The dials and instruments inside it all flickered into life. He then added insult to injury by remote viewing the interior of the apparatus, "rendering by drawing a reasonable facsimile of its rather complex construction," according to Puthoff, even though details of it had never been published anywhere.

Puthoff wrote up his findings, circulated the report among his colleagues and got on with other work.

A couple of weeks later, the CIA showed up at his door and invited him to set up a classified research program to see if it was technically feasible to use clairvoyance to spy on the Soviet Union. It turned out that the CIA had been tracking Soviet efforts to do the same thing for several years, but didn't believe what it was seeing. It was only when Puthoff wrote up his paper that it put two and two together and thought it'd better set up something of its own. And so the U.S.-controlled remote-viewing program was born, with Puthoff as its director.

For the next decade and a half, U.S. "psychic spies" roamed the Soviet

Union, using nothing more than the power of their minds to reconnoiter some of the Russians' most secret R&D establishments. If you believed what you read in published accounts of these people's activities, they were able to roam not merely in three dimensions—up, down, left and right—but in the fourth dimension as well: time. They could go back in time to review targets and they could look at them in the future as well.

Puthoff showed me a picture that one of his team of remote viewers had drawn of an "unidentified research center at Semipalatinsk," which had been deeply involved in Soviet nuclear weapons work. He then showed me some declassified artwork of the same installation, presumably drawn from a U.S. spy satellite photograph. The two were damn near identical.

It all seemed a long way from zero-point energy, gravity and inertia, in which Puthoff had been busying himself even before he left the remote-viewing field.

Or was it?

In a recent paper written by Puthoff, which I had already seen, he'd mentioned that the Russian physicist and Nobel prizewinner Andrei Sakharov had published a paper in 1967 suggesting that gravity and inertia might be linked to what was then still a highly theoretical proposition: vacuum fluctuations of the zero-point energy field. Now that the zero-point energy field had been proven to exist, "there is experimental evidence that vacuum fluctuations can be altered by technological means," Puthoff had written in the paper. "This leads to the corollary that, in principle, gravitational and inertial masses can also be altered."

Puthoff was too smart to use the term—for all the reasons that Podkletnov, Ning Li and the others hadn't—but he was saying that antigravity was indeed possible.

And, so were the Russians. All you had to do—somehow—was perturb the zero-point energy field around an object and, hey presto, it would take off.

I asked him why NASA and the Air Force should be so interested in ZPE when it was obvious that there weren't going to be any practical applications of it for years—maybe centuries.

Puthoff looked at me in a meaningful way. "Unless we find a shortcut."

"Is that a possibility?"

"Podkletnov could have come across a shortcut."

The maverick Russian materials scientist and the idea of pipe smoke hitting a gravity shield had entered the conversation so abruptly that it caught me off guard. Puthoff was saying that anything was possible. And this from a man who had spent most of his professional life plugged into the heart of the classified defense environment.

I probed further, but gently. Were there already forms of aerospace travel out there—in the black world, maybe—whose principles contravened, if not the laws of physics, then at least our understanding of aerodynamics?

He sucked the top of his pen, giving the question a lot of thought before responding. "I've certainly talked to people who claim that something is going on," he said, pausing to add: "I would say the evidence is pretty solid."

I felt myself rock back on my chair.

I eased back on to the more comfortable subject of the NASA BPP study. "Which of the five methods outlined in Breakthrough Propulsion Physics would you say is the one most likely to have a payoff?" I asked him.

Because of Puthoff's promotion of ZPE, I thought it inevitable that this explanation would have figured in his answer. But it didn't. Without even thinking about it, he said his money was on the third experiment—the one about perturbing space-time; antigravity from time travel.

Given Puthoff's strong connections to the military-intelligence community, it was tempting to dismiss all such talk as a deliberate blind, something to lead me away from a more probable area of breakthrough. But it didn't seem that way at all.

I liked Puthoff. He seemed on the level. Besides, one thing I had learned after years of formal briefings and interviews was how difficult scientists found it to lie when confronted with a direct question on their chosen subject. Spooks could lie at the drop of a hat. It was what they were trained to do. But scientists found it inherently unnatural, since it contravened all their instincts to match a question quid pro quo with data.

Puthoff's answer to the question had been swift and visceral. And there had been something else, too; a look on his face, a willingness to confront my gaze, that in itself conveyed information.

We'd been talking about breakthroughs—events that, at a stroke, had the power to short-circuit the evolutionary development of technology.

The important thing about breakthroughs was that they didn't happen over an extended period of time. They changed things overnight. And they could occur at any moment.

It was only later, when I was back on the freeway, crawling south in the bumper-to-bumper traffic, that I had the feeling he'd been trying to tell me that some kind of payoff from the third experiment had already produced tangible results.

Chapter 11

If antigravity had been discovered in the white world, then someone, somewhere had to be perfecting it—maybe even building real hardware—in the black. The trouble was, I had no idea where to begin looking for it. Contrary to the implicit promise of revelation contained in Dr. Dan Marckus' hints by the estuary, neither Lyles nor Puthoff had taken me any further in so far as hard-and-fast leads were concerned.

On my return, I tried to raise Marckus. I left several messages on his answering machine. In the first of them I foolishly spelled out the fact that I didn't know a whole lot more—beyond strict theory, at least—than I had before my trip to the States.

During subsequent calls, as the answering machine clicked in, I just knew that Marckus was there—listening in, but refusing to pick up. I was beginning to get the measure of this relationship. Marckus gave a little and I had to give something back. He now knew that I had returned from the States with nothing, so he was punishing me for it. Well, I didn't need to play psych games with some spook academic with a warped taste for drama. I had enough on my plate already—a major feature article on stealth technology to deliver. Antigravity, for the time being, was going to have to go on the back burner and Marckus could stew with it.

As background, I reread an account of what is probably the most definitive history of stealth to date: *Skunk Works,* the story of Lockheed Martin's super-secretive special projects facility, as told by the guy who had run it for 16 years, Ben Rich.

In the summer of 1976, America's leading radar expert, Professor Lindsay Anderson of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, arrived at what was then the Lockheed Skunk Works in Burbank, California, with a bag of ball bearings in his briefcase. The ball bearings ranged in size from a golf ball to an eighth of an inch in diameter. Rich, a grizzled veteran of Lockheed's secret projects department for more than 25 years, led Anderson to a mocked-up design of a funny-looking diamond-shaped aircraft, poised on a plinth in the middle of a blacked-out hangar.

Over the course of the day, Anderson repeatedly attached the ball bearings to the nose of the aircraft, starting with the largest and ending with the smallest, while Lockheed engineers fired radar signals at it. What they were looking to measure was the radar cross section, or RCS, of the prototype aircraft, code-named Have Blue. The moment the radar picked up the ball bearing instead of the aircraft behind it was the moment its RCS could be accurately plotted.

When the test was over, Anderson zipped the bearings back into his case, left the site as quietly as he'd arrived and returned to MIT to process the data.

A few days later, Rich received a telegram from the air force chief of staff. Have Blue had been classified "Top secret—Special Access Required," a security grading reserved only for "quantum leaps"-programs that jumped right over the state of the art. The first of these super-secret "black" programs had been the atomic bomb. The telegram had just pitched "stealth" into the same category of secrecy.

Have Blue's RCS had bettered every single one of the ball bearings Anderson had attached to it—even the one that was sized down to an eighth of an inch. This gave the aircraft and its operational successor, the F-117A Stealth Fighter, a radar signature equal to that of a bee-sized insect. Stealth, which up to that point had been viewed by skeptics as nothing more than puff and magic, suddenly went "deep black"—so secret that no one outside the program would ever know it was there. Lockheed had discovered a way of making aircraft invisible to radar, but the stakes were far, far higher even than that.

Soon after the late 1977 first flight of Have Blue from the U.S. Air Force's remote testing base on the dry desert lake bed at Groom Lake, Nevada, also known as Area 51, Dr. Zbigniew Brzezinski, President Jimmy Carter's national security adviser, flew into the facility in an unmarked jet and grilled Rich about the true significance of his firm's breakthrough. Rich put it on the line for him.

"It changes the way that air wars will be fought from now on. And it cancels out all the tremendous investment the Russians have made in their defensive ground-to-air system. We can overfly them any time at will."

"There is nothing in the Soviet system that can spot it in time to prevent a hit?" Brzezinski asked, jotting notes as he talked and listened.

"That is correct," Rich replied simply.

After more than three decades of standoff between the two superpowers, the realization made Carter's national security chief catch his breath. If the Russians wanted to match stealth with counterstealth, theoretically they could do it, but it would bankrupt them in the process.

Stealth had the power to end the Cold War, but it also had the power in the meantime—should the Russians realize what the Americans were up to—to trigger World War Three.

Have Blue was a strange-looking aircraft. It didn't look mean and hungry. It didn't look like the kind of plane that could start and end wars. It had the appearance of a bunch of bolted-on geometric shapes that had somehow been hammered into the vague outline of a jet. It turned out there was more than a good reason for that.

Have Blue hadn't been the creative inspiration of an aerodynamicist, but of a mathematician.

Begin with what you can see, then search for what you can't.

As I wrestled with the stealth feature, Marckus' words from our meeting battered around my head, forming as a dark thought with a black body and soft wings.

I had trawled the white world and found five possible pathways to antigravity: manipulating an object's mass and/or inertia; exploitation of the zero-point energy field; perturbations of the space-time continuum; faster-than-light travel; and gravity shielding. None of them was visible in the developmental activities of the U.S. aerospace industry, but just because you couldn't see them, it didn't mean they weren't there.

Just as it had, or hadn't been with stealth a decade and a half earlier.

Ben Rich and I had sparred on a number of occasions on the stealth question—most recently at an air show where he'd turned up, desperately ill with cancer, to promote his book. I'd respected him utterly and liked him hugely, sensing in his presence the grit and wisdom of a generation of postwar aviation pioneers that wouldn't be around us for much longer.

It was Rich who'd once told me of a place—a virtual warehouse—where ideas that were too dangerous to transpose into hardware were locked away forever, like the Ark of the Covenant in the final scene of *Raiders of the Lost Ark.* It had almost happened to stealth.

By starting with stealth, something that I knew about, something I could *see,* maybe I could pick up traces of that energy, the friction that astronomers looked for when hunting down black holes.

In the year ahead, the calendar of aerospace and defense events showed that I had multiple excuses for visiting the States—to look for the self-generated heat of a buried antigravity effort's interaction with the real world.

As I sat behind my desk, calling contacts and sources in an effort to plug holes in the incomplete, still highly secret history of stealth, I could hear the faint echo of a signal. It was almost impossible to decipher, but the cold side of my training, the part I kept separate from the muffled wing beats of the creature let loose upon my thinking by Marckus, said antigravity had something to do with the shared origins of the two most powerful weapons of the 20th century—stealth and the atomic bomb.

Have Blue would never have happened, but for the work of a retired Lockheed math guru named Bill Schroeder and a Skunk Works software engineer named Denys Overholser. Schroeder revisited a set of mathematical formulae originally derived by Maxwell and refined by a turn-of-the-century German electromagnetics expert called Arnold Johannes Sommerfeld. Between them, these two physicists predicted the manner in which a given geometric shape would scatter or reflect electromagnetic radiation. A Russian, Pyotr Ufimtsev, honed their work into a more simplified set of equations in the early 1960s, but Ufimtsev could only apply the equations to the most basic geometric shapes. Schroeder's and Overholser's breakthrough had been to take Ufimtsev's concept and apply it to the inherently complex form of an aircraft, rejecting the regular smooth, curved lines of aerodynamic aesthetics in favor of a set of ugly flat, angled panels. If an aircraft could be broken down into hundreds, maybe thousands of these two-dimensional shapes, if each flat surface or "facet" could be angled in a way that would reflect an incoming radar beam away from its source, and if the combined shape could still create lift, then a true "stealth" aircraft was possible.

The irony, of course, was that stealth was in part a Soviet invention. The Soviets had allowed Ufimtsev's paper to be published, because no one east of the Iron Curtain had entertained the idea that such a complex set of equations could ever be applied to an aircraft. It had taken Overholser to pick it out from hundreds of other ponderous Soviet science texts and draw the necessary conclusions.

Stealth, like the bomb, then, had owed its genesis to algebraic formulae. In a sense, it was pure accident that it had been discovered within the nuts-and-bolts world of the aerospace industry.

Podkletnov's apparent discovery of gravity shielding in Tampere, Finland, had been an accidental by-product of the Russian's work with superconductors.

What they all shared was their origins in pure math and physics.

That thought gnawed at me as, working through a decade's worth of my files, I began to reimmerse myself in the world of the F-l 17A Stealth Fighter, Have Blue's operational successor.

Lockheed was used to black programs. It had built the U-2 spyplane that the CIA had used to overfly the Soviet Union on reconnaissance missions in the late 1950s and it had developed the Mach 3.2 A-12 for the CIA as the U-2's successor. Both projects had come together under rules of draconian secrecy, but stealth, from a security standpoint, would need to be protected even more stringently. The problem facing Rich and his customer in the Pentagon, the Air Force Special Projects Office, was how to go about shielding an entire industry. The U-2 and the A-12 had been built in "onesies and twosies," but the F-117A was required in multiple squadron strength. Clearly, there would come a time when the program would need to be revealed, but the longer it could be shielded from public view, the less time the Russians would have to react when it finally emerged into the light.

Rich was one of five Lockheed employees cleared for top secret work and above. Everyone else connected with the program—including several thousand factory floor workers—had to be rigorously security-checked. And nothing about their lives was off-limits. "Security's dragnet poked and prodded into every nook and cranny of our operation," Rich wrote years later. It almost drove him insane.

As the F-117A began to take shape at Burbank, arrangements were made to accommodate it operationally. A secret base was constructed in the desert at Tonopah, Nevada, and pilots were asked to volunteer without being told anything about the assignment. In New Mexico, at a radar range miles from the nearest public land, the final configuration of the F-l 17A was subjected to more RCS checks to validate its insect-like radar properties. When the aircraft made its first flight, in June 1981, it did so at Area 51, shielded from the remotest scrutiny by the jagged mountains of southern Nevada and a crack air force special forces unit authorized to use "lethal force" to protect Groom Lake from intruders.

As production ramped up under the administration of the hawkish presidential incumbent, Ronald Reagan, who took office in 1980, it rapidly became clear that the Skunk Works was outgrowing its Burbank facilities and so plans were drawn up to relocate the plant eastward, to Palmdale, on the edge of California's Mojave Desert. Palmdale was also home to a giant new production facility operated by Northrop, designer of the B-2, the USAF's four-engine strategic Stealth Bomber. The B-2 was black, but not as black as the F-l 17A. This meant it was acknowledged to exist, even though the rudiments of its design were classified.

It was in this triangle of land, bordered by New Mexico to the south, California to the west and Nevada to the northeast, that people—ordinary people—started seeing things on moonlit desert nights that they could not correlate with the known facts. Speculation grew that a "stealth fighter" program of some description existed—and almost certainly at

Lockheed, where security in recent years had tightened considerably—but the detail was invariably way off the mark. And since the money for the F-117A program—to the tune of several billion dollars—had been appropriated from the Pentagon's "black budget," ring-fenced as it was from public scrutiny, that was how things remained until late 1988, when the outgoing Reagan administration revealed just what it had hushed up for so many years.

The F-117A, the bland press release stated, had gone operational in 1983. For five years, its pilots had operated at squadron strength "in the black," roaming the desert night skies of the U.S. Southwest, practicing for the nighttime attack mission they would be required to perform in a war. The disclosure had only been made at all because the air force wanted to expand the training envelope and start flying the F-117A by day. Otherwise it would have remained buried even longer.

During the F-l 17A's five years of secret ops, thousands of workers had been involved in the assembly process at Burbank; hundreds more in supporting the aircraft at Tonopah. And yet, not one had breathed a word about it.

The big story in November 1988, then, related to the existence and capabilities of the Stealth Fighter, a program that rivaled the scale and daring of the Manhattan Project almost 50 years earlier. Like the bomb program, the F-117A had been meticulously covered up, but unlike the bomb program, the secrecy had held. With hindsight, this was understandable. The moment the U.S. government had decided not just to develop the bomb, but to use it on the enemy, its security was compromised. Atom spies sympathetic to the Soviet Union—the liberal, heady atmosphere of Los Alamos cultivated them like seeds in a hothouse—were always going to ensure that details of the weapon would be passed to Moscow; and the traffic merely accelerated when it was dropped on the Japanese.

The logic these people had applied in betraying their country was simple. They didn't want America to have a monopoly on such a devastatingly powerful strand of weapons technology. By passing bomb secrets to the Russians, the atom spies believed they were restoring the balance of power and making the world a safer place. It was a lesson that U.S. security managers would not forget.

Stealth was a passive technology. It did not need to be "dropped" on an unsuspecting enemy, but it had the power to begin and end wars just the same. Because it didn't need to be revealed, it had been easy to cover up, until the moment it suited the U.S. government to make the revelation—to bring it out of the black. Neglected in the process of disclosure, however, was any analysis of the system that had allowed this superhuman feat of engineering and parallel security to materialize; and the black world was a system—a huge, sprawling machine.

Between the bomb and the Stealth Fighter, a massive security structure had swung into place to protect America's ever-proliferating black programs. And in the vastness of the desert, it wasn't hard for individuals—the little cogs of the machine—to develop a sense of their frailty. The desert had been a good place to build the bomb and the perfect place to field stealth. It had swallowed both programs—the weapons and the people who'd constructed them—whole.

If antigravity was real—and by now I believed the white world contained evidence that *something* was going on—the desert was where it would have come together.

According to Marckus, the black world had known I was coming from the moment I set foot in NASA and had had plenty of time to prepare for my visits.

In London, I struggled to make the right connections.

I returned to something Marckus had said during our meeting by the estuary; something about the Northrop B-2 Stealth Bomber. There was a strand of thought, even among some quite high-profile academics, that the B-2 used some kind of antigravity drive system. I wasn't inclined to believe the story at face value. But with scant entry points to the black world, it seemed, for the moment, as good a place as any to start. If there were lessons still to be learned from the media's coverage of the F-l 17A in the early 1980s—before the program had been revealed, but when people were reporting things they couldn't explain in the night skies of California, Nevada and New Mexico—the most appropriate was the old one about smoke and fire.

The detour through NASA had pointed up five possible pathways to antigravity's application in the black world: manipulating an object's mass and/or inertia; exploitation of the zero-point energy field; perturbations of the space-time continuum; faster-than-light travel; and gravity shielding. Of the five, two (space-time and faster-than-light) were patently out of the question—the B-2 was not a time machine and it could not even muster the speed of sound—and two more (mass/inertia manipulation and zero-point exploitation) were still some way from a practical breakthrough. Only one, the last of the five, seemed to have resulted in any kind of payoff. And Podkletnov had tripped over it by accident because of somebody's pipe smoke, which meant it had been out there, waiting to be discovered, for as long as anyone needed it.

Applied to the B-2, using some of the many billions that had gone into its development, the kind of weight reductions that the Russian had been reporting (anywhere from 2 percent to 5 percent) would have been highly significant. The B-2 had already shown its ability to fly halfway around the world and back—a 37-hour, 29,000-nautical-mile return flight from Whiteman Air Force Base, Missouri, to Guam in the Pacific with several air-to-air refuelings en route. With gravity shielding—if such a thing could be moved from the laboratory to a fully fledged aircraft program—either its range could be extended or the number of midair refuelings cut. Either of these would make the technology a powerful draw.

The biggest argument against the existence of antigravity technology had seemed to me to be the lack of any visible hardware from production programs. Now, I was having to confront the possibility that antigravity played a vital part in the most important technological development since the bomb.

Chapter 12

I'd been aware of rumors about the B-2 for some time, but they were so bizarre as to be quite unbelievable, so I'd ignored them completely. In following the thread that had been dropped by Marckus at the estuary, however, I discovered that it led somewhere that was already familiar. The chief proponent of the idea that the B-2 utilized an exotic propulsion source was my old friend Paul LaViolette, the Ph.D. who had tripped over the reference to antigravity in the Library of Congress.

LaViolette had written an elegant thesis about the B-2 and its antigravitational properties soon after the publication of a revelatory article in *Aviation Week,* the "bible" of the U.S. aerospace industry, in which a number of black-world engineers had whistle-blown to the author, the magazine's West Coast editor, Bill Scott, about a host of amazing new technologies supposedly being developed in the deeply classified environment. One of these related to "electrostatic field-generating techniques" in the B-2's wing leading edge with a view to reducing the giant Stealth Bomber's radar cross section.

LaViolette had taken this revelation and coupled it to his own knowledge of Thomas Townsend Brown's work and patents and drawn the conclusion that the B-2 was the embodiment of Project Winterhaven, T.T. Brown's proposal in 1952 to the U.S. military for a Mach 3 saucer-shaped interceptor powered exclusively by electrogravitics—antigravity.

In an essay entitled "The U.S. Antigravity Squadron," LaViolette outlined the reasoning behind his extraordinarily bold assertion.

The B-2, he held, was simply a scaled-up version of the subscale discs, the little charged saucer-shaped condensers, that had whizzed around Brown's laboratories in front of multiple witnesses from the U.S. Air Force and Navy in the late '40s and early '50s. If true, it explained why superficially the U.S. Air Force had shown such little interest in Winterhaven, while on the inside—I remembered the recovered transcripts of conversations between Air Force generals Bertrandias and Craig following the former's visit to Brown's lab in 1952—those who had seen the tests were going apoplectic with excitement.

While conventional wisdom had it that the B-2's outer skin was composed of a highly classified radar-absorbent material (RAM) that made it invisible to radar, LaViolette plausibly argued that the RAM was in fact a ceramic dielectric material able to store high amounts of electric charge. The material was said to be made from powdered depleted uranium—an incredibly hard substance, commonly used to tip armor-piercing tank shells—with three times the density of the "high-k" ceramics proposed by Brown in the 1950s. This would give the B-2 "three times the electrogravitic pull" of the Mach 3 saucer at the heart of the Winterhaven study.

Another useful bit of synchronicity was the fact that Brown had, for a short period of time, worked for General Electric, the company responsible for the B-2's engines.

But try as I might, I couldn't get LaViolette's theory to fit. For the thesis to be accurate, it hinged on something approximating a switch in the Stealth Bomber's two-man cockpit that would permit the aircraft to transition from normal jet-powered flight—something, according to LaViolette, that it used on takeoff and landing and other occasions where witnesses might be present—to antigravity cruise mode.

If there were such a thing as this switch, I knew, pound to a penny, dollar to a cent, its existence would have leaked.

The B-2 first flew in 1989 and the first operational aircraft arrived at Whiteman Air Force Base in 1993. A total of 20 aircraft had been built at $2 billion a shot and all of them had been delivered by the end of the decade. Dozens of crewmembers had been trained in that time, and many of them had been interviewed. The B-2 had started as a black program (or more accurately, a dark-gray one, since its existence had been confirmed officially from the start, all other details being classified). But now it was in the open, albeit, still, with some highly classified features. Pilots—an inherently talkative breed—would have let it slip somewhere along the line. Rumors would have developed about such a switch. But they never had. Moreover, B-2 pilots and engineers hadn't just denied the antigravity story, they had scoffed at it openly. Intuitively, my colleagues and I were agreed, the B-2 antigravity story was wrong. In fact, the whole notion of it was absurd.

The end result was that "the B-2 as antigravity vehicle" had been consigned to the columns of conspiracy mags and tabloids; the mainstream aerospace press, afraid of an adverse reaction from its conservative readership, had refused to touch it.

With one exception.

Enter Britain's most eminent aerospace journalist, Bill Gunston, OBE, Fellow of the Royal Aeronautical Society, and an article he'd penned entitled "Military Power."

Gunston, who served as a pilot in the RAF from 1943 to 1948, was scrupulous over his facts—as editor of Jane's yearbook on aero-engine propulsion, he had to be. "Military Power," published in *Air International* magazine, was a walk-through dissertation on the development of aero-engine technology since the end of the Second World War; good, solid Gunston stuff.

Until the last couple of pages, when, to the uninitiated, it appeared that the aerospace doyen had lost his mind. Gunston not only portrayed the B-2 antigravity drive story as fact, but went on to reveal how he had been well acquainted with the rudiments of T.T. Brown's theories for years, but had "no wish to reside in the Tower [of London], so had refrained from discussing clever aeroplanes with leading edges charged to millions of volts positive and trailing edges to millions of volts negative."

Gunston explained why he felt that there was much more to the B-2 than met the eye, drawing on a lifetime of specialized knowledge. In short, if you applied the laws of aerodynamics and basic math to the known specifications of the B-2, there was a glaring mismatch in its published performance figures.

It was clear, Gunston said, that the thrust of each GE engine was insufficient to lift the 376,500-pound listed gross weight of the aircraft at takeoff.

The only way the B-2 could get into the air, therefore, was for it somewhere along the line to shed some of its weight. And that, of course, was impossible, unless you applied the heretical principles of Thomas Townsend Brown to the aircraft's design spec. The B-2 wasn't a black world aircraft program anymore. It was operational, had been blooded in combat and was frequently exhibited to the public. If it used an antigravity drive system, the proof of the phenomenon existed in plain sight.

If it didn't, then someone, somewhere had gone to some lengths to make a number of highly respected aerospace experts believe that it did.

In October 1990, *Aviation Week* published a report based on an analysis of 45 different daylight and nighttime eyewitness observations of strange aircraft over the desert Southwest—Bill Scott's backyard. In this, he concluded that there were "at least two—but probably more—types of vehicles" beyond the F-l 17A and B-2 under test. One was a "triangular-shaped, quiet aircraft seen with a flight of F-l 17A stealth fighters several times since the summer of 1989"; another was a "high-speed aircraft characterized by a very deep, rumbling roar reminiscent of heavy lift rockets"; a third was a "high-altitude aircraft that crosses the night sky at extremely high speed . . . observed as a single, bright light—sometimes pulsating—flying at speeds far exceeding other aircraft in the area." Because the latter was always seen above 50,000 feet, where you wouldn't routinely expect to hear engine noise, Scott deduced that the second and third aircraft might be one and the same type.

Speculation that the Reagan administration had embarked on a massive program of black world aerospace and defense research began circulating in earnest among Washington reporters and defense journalists following the publication of a "line item" called "Aurora" in the Pentagon's fiscal year 1986 budget. Aurora was supposedly a "sleeper site" used by the Pentagon for burying B-2 funds at a time when the Stealth Bomber was still highly classified. But this explanation, put about by "highly placed Pentagon sources" when the Aurora story hit the streets, simply smacked of backpedaling. As Aurora was listed under the "Other Aircraft" category and was projected to receive a huge increase in funding between fiscal years '86 and '87—a jump from $80.1 million to $2.272 billion—the sleuths concluded that its inclusion in the budget request was a genuine mistake, that the aircraft was real and, because it was listed in the "reconnaissance" section, must have been a replacement for the Mach 3.2 Lockheed Blackbird, which was earmarked to retire from its strategic spying duties in the early 1990s.

Then, when that dark triangular shape was seen by a trained Royal Observer Corps spotter over the oil rig in 1989, people put two and two together and deduced that Aurora wasn't just a line item, but a real flying aircraft.

One of the supreme ironies of the black budget system is that, thanks to U.S. bureaucratic procedure, you can work out, almost to the cent, what the Pentagon is spending on its most deeply classified programs. Every year its financial planners submit an unclassified version of the defense budget to Congress. It is a remarkably detailed document, listing major line items of expenditure in the military research and development (R&D) and weapons procurement arenas. Trawl down the list, however, and some of the dollar values of these line items are missing. Many of those in this category have strange-sounding code names like Forest Green, Senior Year, Chalk Eagle or Centennial. Others have curiously nondescript headings such as "special applications program" or "special analysis activities."

These are black programs. Because the unclassified budget includes accurate total budgets for all three armed services, all you need do is subtract the total dollar value of the line items from each category, and the difference is what the Pentagon is spending on black world research and acquisition.

In 1988, the total was computed to be $30 billion for R&D and secret weapons programs—more than the entire annual defense budget of a major European NATO nation such as Britain, France or Germany.

What we were talking here was an industry within an industry, multiple layers deep and compartmentalized to death horizontally. The black world's inaccessibility was based not just on its segregation from the outside, but on the inability of managers and engineers in one of its compartments, or on one of its layers, to have oversight of anything that wasn't within his or her "need to know."

In a system whose existence had been designed to be denied, examples were few and far between, but one shone clear. General George Sylvester, head of the Air Force's R&D program in 1977, was not "accessed" to the Lockheed Have Blue program, even though the program itself was run out of his office at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. One of the "bright young colonels" at Air Force Special Projects in Washington who ran the Air Force's portion of the black budget had decided to cut Sylvester out of the loop.

It was small wonder, then, that reporters and investigators began to level the charge that the black world had spiraled out of control.

How deep did the layers go? How many compartments did the system contain? What kind of technologies were being pursued within it?

The truth was, nobody knew. The black world was labyrinthine and it was essentially unaccountable; its whole system of compartmentalization so convoluted, so tortuous, that if people like Sylvester had been excluded, then God only knew how many others who should have had the "need to know," didn't.

It was in this climate of hidden expenditure that Bill Scott reported what he was seeing and hearing in and around Palmdale.

The prognosis was that Aurora was a massive leap forward in aerospace terms, that it was powered by a new form of "combined-cycle" engine fueled by liquid methane or hydrogen to give it a cruise speed anywhere up to Mach 8—5,300 mph. It was also a fair bet, Scott and others reported, that the Lockheed Skunk Works, which was in the process of shifting to Palmdale, was the firm responsible for building it.

Outwardly, the Skunk Works had next to no work on the stocks, but something was keeping its 4,000 employees busy just the same and something was rattling the windows of the desert Southwest at night.

From mid-1991 until the mid-'90s, the U.S. Geological Survey, the agency that monitors earthquake activity, revealed that an unknown aircraft, with sound footprints different from the SR-71 or the Space Shuttle, was causing "airquakes" as it crossed the California coastline from the Pacific, heading inland for southern Nevada. Couple this with some fresh U.S. eyewitness sightings after the North Sea encounter of a huge, arrow-shaped aircraft that left a weird, knotted contrail in its wake and made a noise "like the sky tearing apart," and a recent program of expansion at the Air Force's test site at Area 51 in southern Nevada, and it all added up to a black world economy that was, so to speak, booming, too; a situation that continued even after the Cold War ended.

Following the dissolution of the Soviet Union, the U.S. Air Force budget, in concert with those of the other armed services, was cut and black world funding along with it. But as a proportion of the overall budget, the classified segment of the USAF's R&D and acquisition spending actually increased and, even in the mid—late 1990s, hovered comfortably at around the $11 billion a year mark. This left more than enough money for the Air Force to pursue a range of exotic technologies for the 21st century.

In early 1992, Scott was contacted by a group of black world engineers who had decided to break cover and talk about some of the programs they were working on. Their reasoning was simple. The Cold War was over and there was no need for the U.S. government to protect some of its most highly classified technologies any longer. Some of these technologies, the engineers told the reporter, could actually be spun into the white world of commercial aerospace programs to give the U.S. an enormous economic advantage over its international aerospace trade rivals.

In revealing their presence to Scott, they acknowledged that they were breaking a "code of silence that rivals the Mafia's." The dangers of their approach were already manifest. Two engineers said that their civil rights had been "blatantly abused" by their black world controllers in a bid to prevent them from leaving the deeply classified environment.

"Once you're in, they don't let you go," one of them said.

Amidst the revelations that the engineers dangled in front of Scott were a number of technologies for reducing the visible signatures of the B-2.

To people in the business, Northrop's winning of the $40 billion Stealth Bomber competition against Lockheed in 1981 had long been something of a mystery. It was, after all, Lockheed that had made the breakthrough in mathematically computing stealth in 1975. But then, the

F-117A, composed of its mass of angled flat panels, was "first-generation stealth."

The B-2, or the Advanced Strategic Penetrating Aircraft, as it was known when it was still deeply gray, was a second-generation aircraft and this, according to Northrop, was manifest in its blended aerodynamic shape. Instead of being rough and angular like the F-117A, it was smooth and rounded—a product, Northrop claimed, of five years' worth of improvements in computing technology between the start of the Have Blue program and the ASPA.

Improved software algorithms processing had allowed Northrop to come up with a shape—a refinement of the YB-49 flying wing jet bomber it had first flown in 1947—that allowed the aircraft to look and fly right *and* to remain invisible on enemy radar screens.

Not only that, but according to LaViolette it had the capability to fly electrogravitically as well.

In my basement, where the noise of the city couldn't intrude upon the sort of silence you needed to sift a decade's worth of documents and files on the arcane properties of stealth, I still wasn't happy about LaViolette's assertion, because of the absence of that all-important switch, the one that kicked in the B-2's antigravity drive system.

There was one other beguiling aspect to Scott's story. His sources said that charging the airframe electrostatically not only helped to make the B-2 stealthy, it also reduced friction heating of the airframe, its sonic footprint and its drag.

This last point was crucial. If it were possible to alter the "drag" or air resistance of an aircraft, you could either make it fly farther or faster or both.

The drag reduction system was supposed to work as follows: By creating an electrostatic field ahead of an aircraft, it ought in theory to repel air molecules in the aircraft's path, allowing the plane, in effect, to slip through the atmosphere like a thin sliver of soap through warm water.

Like antigravity itself, the whole notion of using electricity fields to reduce aircraft drag was heresy—it was, according to traditionalists, just smoke and mirrors. But here, in Scott's article, was a reference to Northrop having conducted high-grade research in 1968 on just such a phenomenon: the creation of "electrical forces to condition the air flowing around an aircraft at supersonic speeds." Furthermore, the California-based aircraft company had supposedly submitted a paper on the subject to the American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics that same year.

I hit the Net and went into the AIAA website, then did a title search. But the papers on the AIAA site went back only as far as 1992 and I was out of time.

I rubbed my eyes. In two days I was due to attend an aerospace convention in Las Vegas. And I wasn't any closer to solving the puzzle.

Or was I?

During the Second World War, I remembered Thomas Townsend Brown had been involved in experiments that sought to show how you could make a ship disappear on a radar screen by pumping it with large doses of electricity. Between 1941 and 1943, Brown had supposedly been involved in tests, I saw now, *that were identical in principle to the methodology that Northrop seemed to have applied to the B-2 to make it the ultimate word in stealth.* Researchers had never taken Brown's wartime experiments seriously because the precise nature of the work had been obscured by the myth of parallel dimensions aboard the USS *Eldridge*—the ship at the heart of the "Philadelphia Experiment." Brown had also used electrostatics to power his model discs and, by his own testimony and that of witnesses—including a general from the U.S. Air Force—they had flown by defying gravity.

Could it really be that in researching the B-2 I had picked up the threads of T. T. Brown's work again? Work that the U.S. had continued to develop in the black?

I jotted the keywords on a piece of paper, like a crossword player consigning letters to a page in the hope of unraveling an anagram. *Brown—electrostatics—stealth—antigravity*—and then, against my better judgment—*parallel dimension.*

I studied the words for a long time, but nothing jumped out at me.

Below: Alleged photograph of Rudolph Schriever.

Right: The Legend's rendition of the Schriever/ Habermohl/Miethe disc.

Right: Richard Miethe.

Below: Artist's impression of foo-fighters engaging a formation of B-17 bombers. (All images via Bill Rose)

Above: Thomas Townsend Brown.

Right: Patent illustration showing experimental layout of the charged condenser plates Brown demonstrated to the US Air Force and Navy.

Aug. 16, 1960 T. T. BROWN 2,949,550
ELECTROKINETIC APPARATUS
Filed July 3, 1957 2 Sheets-Sheet 2

FIG. 6
40
43
44
45
46
47
41
56
57
57
56
50
53
55
HV SOURCE
56
57
FIG. 7
57
50
51
54
55
56
HV
FIG. 8
65
66
62
61
67
63
64
60
HV

INVENTOR
THOMAS TOWNSEND BROWN
BY
ATTORNEYS

THOMAS TOWNSEND BROWN:
BAHNSON LAB 1958-1960

ELECTROGRAVITICS LEVITATION EXPERIMENTS

ORIGINAL SILENT FOOTAGE TRANSFERRED TO VHS VIDEO

See New Styles of Electrogravitic Prototypes Designed for Vertical Flight and Hovering, Captured on Film at the Bahnson Laboratory

/Above: Brown holding a disc capacitor prior to charging.

Left: A demonstration of electrogravitic lift at the Bahnson Laboratories in the late 1950s.
(All images via the Integrity Research Institute)

Left: John Frost.

Below: A cutaway illustration of the Avro Silverbug showing the radial flow gas-turbine.

Below: John Frost (right) with other members of the Avro SPG team in front of the Avrocar. (All images via Bill Rose)

Above: A full-scale engineering mock-up of the Project Y Manta at Avro's factory in Malton, Ontario.

Right: General arrangement of the proposed Avro Project 1794, showing arrangement for its six Viper turbojets.

Below: Avro's test-rig for the Mach 4 Project 1794 saucer. (All images via Bill Rose)

UPPER IMPELLER AND TURBINE
PILOT'S COCKPIT
UPPER AND LOWER INTAKES
INTEGRAL FUEL TANKS
FLAME HOLDERS
ENGINE INTAKE
OUTER WING
FLIGHT CONTROL SHUTTERS
INNER WING DIFFUSER SECTION
TURBINE EXHAUST
6 A. S. M. VIPER 8 ENGINES
LOWER IMPELLER AND TURBINE
ENGINE TAILPIPE
SECTION A-A

Above: British Aerospace's concept of an advanced fighter interceptor, powered by an anti-gravity lift engine.

Below: Another British Aerospace design for a heavy-lift anti-gravity vehicle. (Both images via BAE Systems)

Above *left:* Tom Valone of the Integrity Research Institute. (Tom Valone)

Above right Paul LaViolette. (Paul LaViolette Ph.D.)

Below: Dr Evgeny Podkletnov (left) with Dr Ron Evans, Head of BAE Systems' Project Greenglow. (BAE Systems)

Above: The Northrop Grumman B-2 Stealth Bomber. (Northrop Grumman)

+
+
+
B-2
G FORCE
G Field
G Field
+
-

Left and below: LaViolette's schematic illustrations of the B-2's electrogravitic drive system, showing positive and negative charge and flow distribution. (Electrogravitic Systems)

Left: The Lockheed Martin F-117A Stealth Fighter over typical desert terrain.

Below: 50 years of Skunk Works Products - those that the company has owned up to.

50 years of Skunk Works aircraft
T-33
YC-130
P-80
1940
1950
U-2
JETSTAR
1960
U-2R
1970
XF-104
1980
A-12
TR-1
1990
D-21
SR-71
HAVE BLUE
F-117A
YF-22
2000
AND BEYOND

Right: Ben Rich and the F-117A.
(All images via Lockheed Martin)

HELENDALE
PALMDALE
RTE STATE HWY 18
RTE HWY 14
RTE STATE HWY 138
RYE CANYON
RTE I-5
BURBANK

Above: Map showing key California-based sites of the Skunk Works in the late 80s/early 90s. (Lockheed Martin Skunk Works)

Right: Jack Gordon, head of the Skunk Works in 1996. (Lockheed Martin Skunk Works)

Below: An artist's rendering of Aurora, the USAF's mythical hypersonic spyplane. (Julian Cook)

Right: The concrete henge structure at the Wenceslas Mine - test-rig or cooling-tower? (M. Banas)

Below: The Wenceslas Mine, Ludwigsdorf, Poland, looking across what was once a covered railway marshalling yard. (Nick Cook)

Above: The Wenceslas Mine. The henge-like structure is situated behind the trees in the distance. (Nick Cook)

Right: The entrance to the Mittelwerk at Nordhausen. (I. Witkowski)

Below: SS General Hans Kammler - the only known photograph of him in uniform; France, 1944.

Above: A partially lined gallery a the SS-run 'Giant' underground manufacturing complex near Waldenburg, Poland. (M. Banas)

Left: A completed gallery at the 'Giant' underground complex. (M. Banas)

Above: Viktor Schauberger and his implosion-based home power generator in 1955, with interior shot.

Left and below: The Schauberger Repulsine with and without cone-shaped intake. (All images via Schauberger Archive)

Left: Bob Widmer, chief designer of General Dynamics Convair, in his office in the late 1950s. (Lockheed Martin)

Below: A grainy shot of a wind-tunnel mode of Kingfish, Widmer's Mach 6 spyplane proposal. (Air International)

Right Bob Widmer in his Lockheed Martin office at Fort Worth, in 1996. (Nick Cook)

John Hutchison in his Vancouver apartment, surrounded by equipment integral to the Hutchison Effect. (John Hutchison)

Metal ingots 'disrupted' by the Hutchison Effect. (John Hutchison)

Chapter 13

Vegas. Two thumps through the 747 and I was on the ground at McCarran International, an airport, like Miami's, that crackled with illicit activity; you could just feel it. We taxied to the terminal and passed engineering shops filled with propeller planes that looked like they should have been scrapped decades ago; old classics running freight operations now, with radial engines that dripped oil on the ramp and coughed clouds of smoke, their tired but sturdy airframes lined with irregular rows of rivets and bumps.

I raised my eyes and took in the view. Vegas, sprawled there just beyond the perimeter fence under an upturned bowl of blue sky, half a dozen giant new hotels since I'd been here last, half a dozen more going up amidst a thicket of cranes.

I loved and loathed this city with equal measure.

Down on the Strip, with the sun setting on this city of broken dreams, I took in the glare of the lights from the back of the cab, half listening to the driver's lament over the mob's exodus and its replacement by corporate America.

The slipping sun played over the tops of the mountains that bordered the southern end of the Nellis Air Force Range, a closed-off piece of government land the size of Switzerland where the Air Force tested its latest military hardware and ran air warfare exercises, and the driver's voice still filling my head about the days when people in the city had lived and died by a set of rules everyone understood.

I grunted something neutral as I tracked the Convention Center where tomorrow I'd tramp the hallways, doing what I always did on these occasions: talk to old friends, meet contacts, trawl the stands, hoover up data, collate stories, file copy, hit the town, go to bed late, get up early and then go through it all over again.

The cab pulled into the Sahara, a hotel that exuded the Vegas of Sinatra, Martin and the mob; the mid-'50s, when it had opened.

It had been face-lifted so many times, it seemed like the demolition teams would be here at any moment, but through half-closed eyes you could still see how it once had been, which gave it a strange kind of charm. The Sahara suited me just fine.

Its pile-'em-in, rack-'em and stack-'em ethos, ideal for gamblers passing through, meant it was shunned by most of the show delegates, but it had the enormous advantage of being a stone's throw from the Convention Center.

The following day, I picked up my reporter's pass and filed into the exhibition hall. It was jam-packed with aerospace and defense companies from across America, their stands and booths ranged in rows either side of the carpeted walkways.

From all over the hall, TVs plugged into videos on permanent loop flashed with images of combat aircraft going through their paces or weapons under test, the pictures backed by deadpan monologues and Top Gun-style soundtracks.

I slipped into the routine, walking the course, checking the stands for signs of developments or breakthroughs.

Sometimes stories came from a new aircraft, spacecraft or weapon system depicted in model form or artist's impression, but such copy as this generated was merely the low-hanging fruit—things that the public affairs people wanted you to see. As long as it constituted news, most reporters, myself included, were happy to go through the motions.

More often than not, though, the developments we looked for were more subtle: a missile fitted with a new seeker or an aircraft with a new sensor, denoted by an aerial or antenna window on the display model that hadn't been there last time around.

Such changes, though seemingly inconsequential to an outsider, pointed to performance gains that signaled real news to a defense reporter, news that the industry's primary customers generally didn't want to see in print.

But there was another side to show reporting, a side that I altogether preferred: chewing the fat with people in the business I'd known and liked for years, gathering data that gave hints of longer-term trends; what was really happening to the industry in the face of Cold War budget cuts, where the technology was headed, who was buying, who wasn't.

Three days at an aerospace and defense exhibition gave you information you couldn't get from a month's worth of phone calls. And after the intensity of weeks spent scrutinizing obscure pieces of data for hints of a black world antigravity program, the change was refreshingly good.

On the third day, long after the press conferences had dried up and I'd filed my final piece of copy to the magazine, I hit the Northrop Grumman stand and started talking to a guy who'd worked a whole range of the company's programs, including the B-2 Stealth Bomber.

Careful not to provoke the reaction that usually greeted the antigravity question, I asked him what he made of the stones that the B-2 charged its surface electrostatically.

This time, no derogatory smirk, just a straight answer and a half smile.

It was impossible, he told me. If you charged the airframe of the B-2, you'd fry its onboard electronics. He went on to describe a secondary problem. All aircraft need to discharge the static electricity they absorb naturally as they move through the air—usually via small wire aerials on the wing tips. Deliberately adding to this static buildup with a man-made electrical charge would be enormously risky, the engineer maintained. Since it would be impossible to discharge the electricity fast enough, it would turn the aircraft into a giant lightning conductor.

I called Marckus from my hotel room the following morning. The eight-hour time difference meant that he was at home, the day's work finished. Classical music filled the background, Brahms' Symphony Number Four turned deafeningly high, giving me, in a moment of insight, a clear view of Marckus' domestic situation. I knew then the man lived alone.

"He said what?" he shouted back.

I repeated the engineer's assertion. Marckus left the phone for a few seconds to turn the music down.

"The man's an idiot," he said when he came back. "Either that or he deliberately lied to you."

"Why should he do that?"

"Why do people normally lie?"

"Come on, Dan, it's too damned early here for twenty questions."

"The guts of the B-2 are held within a Faraday Cage," Marckus explained. "It doesn't matter how much electricity you pump across the skin. The inside remains insulated from it. The guy was bullshitting you. And it's not even very good bullshit."

The rest of his argument was badly flawed also, Marckus said. If you looked at the B-2 from the top, it looked like a boomerang, with straight, sharp leading edges and a serrated trailing edge. Regular aircraft had two wing tips; two points from which to discharge their natural buildup of static. But the B-2 was a flying wing. With its sawtooth back end, it had, in effect, seven wing tips from which to discharge the continuous flow of electricity from its supposed flame-jet generators.

At low altitude and low speed, the discharges would be difficult, if not impossible to see with the naked eye. But at cruise altitude, with enough plasma buildup around its leading edges, an aircraft—particularly a supersonic or a hypersonic platform—would glow like a lightbulb. It would pulse.

"A high-altitude aircraft that crosses the night sky at extremely high speed . . . observed as a single, bright light—sometimes pulsating—flying at speeds far exceeding other aircraft in the area," one of the nighttime eyewitness observations reported in the October 1990 edition of *Aviation Week.*

"Northrop has been playing around with electrostatics for years," Marckus said. "In 1968, it submitted a paper called 'Electroaerodynamics in Supersonic Flow' to the American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics."

"I know," I told him, happy for once I had something he didn't. "I tried to find it on the AIAA website, but the papers on their electronic database don't go back far enough. I'll have to request a copy from their archives instead."

Even across eight time zones, I caught Marckus' withering sigh.

"Don't bother. I applied eight years ago. It's missing. They couldn't find any record of it. Almost certainly, some special projects office in the Pentagon pulled it. Made it disappear. That happens occasionally. Someone screws up and the black world has to go clean up. Actually, it wasn't all Northrop's fault. Back in the '60s, they had some noble ideas that this technology could be applied as a drag-reduction device for supersonic airliners, cutting heat friction and fuel burn. It was only when someone clocked the fact that a plasma shield around an aircraft also reduces its radar signature that the military really woke up to it. It's been rumored for a while that Northrop had come up with something revolutionary in this field. The missing paper proves it."

Marckus carried on. I closed my eyes and tried to think.

The signal I was picking up was painfully indistinct against the background mush of interference, but I could see that it added up to something important.

The B-2 clearly used some kind of skin-charging mechanism to lower its radar (and quite possibly its heat) signature. But it was also clear, from the nature of the paper that Northrop had written in 1968, that the origins of this electric shield, this stealth cloaking device, were actually rooted in another field of research altogether—drag reduction. According to Marckus, who now admitted to having witnessed similar experiments in the U.K., the electrostatic field could also be made to behave like a big "jet flap," an extension of the wing. Deploy this invisible jet flap on takeoff and it was the same as if the wing area had been substantially increased, with a parallel reduction in drag and a concomitant improvement in lift—by perhaps as much as 30 percent.

Bingo.

This could explain how the B-2, or an aircraft like it, staggered into the air with a full bomb-and-fuel load. Thirty percent seemed far too high, but even a few percentage points would constitute a breakthrough. A substantial lift improvement was the equivalent of a substantial reduction in weight. Maybe the B-2 lost weight, so to speak, aerodynamically, not electrogravitically. It would explain why Northrop had beaten Lockheed to the B-2 contract. While the Skunk Works had been playing around with Maxwell's equations and two-dimensional shapes, Northrop had already worked out how an aircraft could be enveloped in a shield of static electricity and how that energy could be put to work: as both a cloaking device and a method for reducing its air resistance.

No laws of physics broken, no antigravity switch in the cockpit, but an extraordinary development nonetheless.

A weight reduction device by proxy.

And in working this through, I realized something else. The B-2 antigravity story actually played into the hands of black world security. It was so fundamentally unbelievable that it discredited any serious investigation of the application of electrostatics to aircraft. What defeated me was why the spooks should have worked so hard to stop its disclosure—pulling papers from the AIAA and so forth—and yet be content for details to be released of the Lockheed stealth method.

But then, disinformation works best when you mix it in with a little truth.

It was then that the picture cleared momentarily and I glimpsed something through the snow and distortion. The keywords I'd written down and then hurled into the bin in the basement of my home a few days earlier swam into focus. If I could just hold the picture a second or two longer . . .

Marckus' voice, punchy and impatient on the other end of the line, brought me back to the here and now of my room in the Sahara.

I'm still here, I told him.

He was asking me where I was headed next.

I told him there was only one possible place I could go. If Northrop had been working on electrostatics since the 1960s, *if* it was now operationally deployed on a $2 billion frontline bomber that had been designed in 1980, there had been plenty of time in the intervening period for improvements and refinements. I knew there was no way that

Lockheed, now Lockheed Martin, would have taken Northrop's B-2 victory standing still.

Aviation Week had written about the "fast mover" that had been observed crossing the night sky as a single, pulsating point of light. And others had reported the manifest contradiction of a prominent Air Force contractor at Palmdale that was filled to capacity with workers, was hugely profitable, yet had nothing to show for it.

I told Marckus that my request to interview the head of the Skunk Works, Jack Gordon, had just been given the green light.

Better still, it was to take place within the holy of holies itself.

It was only on the road to Lancaster, my next stop, across the border in California's Antelope Valley and a three-hour drive across the Mojave Desert, that I found the quiet I needed to work through what I'd been unable to finish in my call to Marckus.

Its starting point was one of the keywords that I'd written down on the note I'd penned and then trashed five days earlier: stealth. It all started and ended with stealth. In 1943, Brown had been involved in an experiment that sought to make a ship radar-invisible. His test was the first attempt by anyone—certainly, as far as I knew—to have conducted a genuine radar-stealth experiment.

At its heart was a technique developed by Brown to wrap a ship in a field of intense electromagnetic energy, produced by powerful electrical generators.

In the mid-1970s, the U.S. Department of Defense was briefed by Lockheed on a new form of technology—essentially, to do with airframe shaping—that reduced the radar cross section of a fighter-sized aircraft to that of a large insect.

In 1976, the company was awarded a contract to develop the Have Blue stealth demonstrator. Two years later, Lockheed was given the go-ahead to develop the F-l 17A, the world's first "stealth fighter."

A new military science had been born—one that was about to change the defense planning of entire nations.

As a result, the technology was classified to the rooftops. Stealth had become America's biggest military secret since the bomb.

It was then that somebody must have remembered Northrop's research papers into drag-reducing plasmas and dusted them off, recalling, probably, that electrostatics had a highly beneficial spin-off effect: it could reduce—perhaps even cancel altogether—the radar signature of an aircraft.

A picture formed in my mind's eye of an insect-sized image on a radar screen winking out altogether. The B-2, three times the size of the F-l 17, would be 100 percent radar-invisible if it worked as advertised with its plasma cloak activated.

Since the development of big-budget weapon systems is all about risk reduction, the Northrop approach, fundamentally different from Lockheed's, would have appealed to the bright young colonels of Air Force Special Projects.

If one of the methods failed to deliver, you could always rely on the other one to show you the money. It gave the colonels two bites at the problem.

Soon afterward, Northrop won the contract to build the B-2A Stealth Bomber, based on its use of electrostatics to make it ultra-stealthy. The technique, first developed by Brown, also improved its aerodynamic efficiency and reduced its drag. It represented a phenomenal breakthrough—a development that would give the U.S. a ten-year lead, maybe more, over the Soviet Union.

But herein lay a problem.

The whole science of stealth would need to be protected like no other strand of weapons science before—the lessons of the bomb being uppermost in the minds of those charged with securing the Air Force's precious new secret.

A novel protection strategy, one that overcame the flawed security model established to protect the bomb 40 years earlier, needed to be set in place.

Eradication and disinformation, coupled with the secure compartmentalisation of the program, formed the basis ofthat strategy.

From that moment on, past clues or pointers to stealth would have slowly and carefully been excised from officialdom. It was most likely at or around this point that the Northrop paper was pulled from the archives of the AIAA.

But then, in the archive trawl, somebody would have come across the work ofT. T. Brown. Brown's stealth work for the U.S. Navy in the early 1940s, coupled with his use of electrostatics in his electrogravitic work, was an unexpected discovery that needed to be handled with great care. The man's work was a dangerous liability. Something needed to be done—something truly innovative.

In 1978, the authors of the Philadelphia Experiment, Berlitz and Moore, were apparently approached by two U.S. Air Force officers who claimed to have knowledge of a fantastic secret. They told how they had had a chance encounter with a man who'd claimed to have been on the *\JSSEldndgeinl943.*

The man had told the two officers how the warship had vanished from its moorings during a test that sought to make it invisible to radar.

In 1979, after further research by Berlitz and Moore, much of it supplied by their elusive and slippery source Carlos Allende, aka Carl Allen, *The Philadelphia Experiment* appeared in print—and Brown's name became forever linked with the myth of the *Eldridge,*

The story's primary twist was that the ship had been transported into another dimension—kooky stuffand, to any sensibly minded individual, wholly unbelievable.

In the 1980s, the decade when stealth came to be fielded operationally, the technology had acquired its own tailor-made cloak of disinformation.

Tempting as it was to assume that Winterhaven or something like it had been pursued in the black since the 1950s, there was simply no evidence for it.

There was no doubt in my mind that LaViolette's articles on the B-2 were sincere, but they had only helped to muddy the Brown story further. When the B-2 and its antigravity propulsion system appeared in print, Brown—whose work was at the heart of this technology—was already a highly discredited figure. Whichever way you approached the story of his life and work, sooner or later you hit the Philadelphia myth. It blew all hope of dispassionate reporting on the man out of the water.

It turned out that the removal of the AIAA paper wasn't the only example of censorship in this field. Before leaving Vegas, I'd called Tom Valone of the Integrity Research Institute. Valone told me that he had been trying for years to locate a copy of an appraisal of T.T. Brown's experiments conducted in 1952 by the Naval Research Lab in Washington, D.C., but had been informed that the NRL no longer had it. *The T. T. Brown Electrogravity Device: A Comprehensive Evaluation by the Office ofNaval Research* had disappeared into the ether as well.

To deduce from this that Brown had cracked gravity was too big a leap for me. In his experiments, he had demonstrated to the satisfaction of many that an antigravity effect was possible. But that didn't mean he'd got to the point where the technology could power an aircraft. Project Winterhaven had promised to deliver this, but Winterhaven never got off the ground. Not in the white world, anyhow.

Somewhere between the junction at Barstow and Boron, a tiny mining community on the edge of the Mojave, the sun finally slipped behind the southern tip of the Sierra Nevadas and I knew I'd taken the disinformation angle as far as it would go. There were just two things that wouldn't fall into place. One of them related to the words on that self-penned note. Brown, electrostatics, stealth and antigravity: all of these elements were bound together in the disinformation story—those who had assembled it operating on the age-old principle that a little truth really does go a long, long way.

Why, then, did they introduce the fifth element? The part about the *Eldridge* slipping into a parallel dimension? How had such an improbable notion popped into the heads of the disinformation gurus?

Somehow, I had the feeling Marckus knew about all of this, yet hadn't passed the knowledge on. As I hit the freeway and turned west toward Lancaster, night falling as fast as rain, it was this thought more than any other that troubled me most.

The Desert Inn motel, its lobby replete with signed photographs of test pilots, display-case models of their aircraft and other Right Stuff memorabilia, was located on an invisible confluence of routes connecting the various nodes of the Air Force's classified desert kingdom. Twenty-five miles to the north lay Edwards Air Force base, home of the USAF's premier test pilots from the days when Chuck Yeager had broken the sound barrier in the Bell X-l. Proof of a link between Edwards and Area 51, the Nevada test base that didn't officially exist, 250 miles away as the crow flew, had been ascertained in a neat piece of detective work by Glenn Campbell, the leader of an outfit called the Desert Rats, a group of dedicated "stealth watchers" who hung out in the scrubland around Area 51, hoping for a glimpse of some exotic piece of classified hardware. Campbell had come by a procedures manual for security personnel assigned to Area 51 in which they were advised to tell anyone who professed any interest in them that they were attached to a facility called "Pittman Station." Going through local county records, Campbell found papers attesting to the fact that these personnel had been sworn in as local deputies. One of them had listed his mailing address as "Pittman Station, Henderson 89044," but all of them said that they were affiliated to something called "DET AFFTC." Campbell knew that AFFTC stood for the Air Force Flight Test Center at Edwards.

A powerful Web search engine did the rest. It turned up a 1990 NASA résumé for an Air Force astronaut candidate called Captain Carl Walz who was employed at "Pittman Station, Nevada," which in reality, Campbell knew, was nothing more than an abandoned electricity substation on the Boulder Highway. Another biography, found by a Net sleuth colleague of his, ascertained that Walz had served as a flight-test program manager at "Detachment 3 of the Air Force Flight Test Center at Edwards." Because there was no Det. 3 at Edwards itself, Campbell deduced that it had to be Area 51 and that Pittman Station was the mail drop.

Edwards, then, was the white world mirror image of Area 51, the super-classified facility at Groom Lake.

Both the "pulser" and the aircraft tracked by the U.S. Government Survey's seismic equipment (more than likely one and the same aircraft type) were viewed on a heading that either led into or out of Groom Lake.

Twenty miles to the west, somewhere behind the palms surrounding the Desert Inn's swimming pool, lay the "Tejon Ranch," Northrop's RCS range, a remote facility buried in a gulley on the southern end of the Tehachapi Mountains. People who found themselves in the vicinity of this place in the dead of night had reported seeing orbs of light within the confines of the range and, inevitably, stories that Northrop was testing recovered alien spacecraft began to circulate among UFO buffs. Based on Northrop's highly classified work applying electrostatics to the B-2, these pieces of eyewitness testimony now perhaps had a more plausible explanation.

UFO stories had grown up around the two other radar test ranges in the area—Lockheed Martin's and McDonnell Douglas' (now Boeing's)—a score of miles to the east. Closer still, was Plant 42, the site on the airfield at Palmdale where the Skunk Works' huge manufacturing facility was located. It was there that I was due to meet with and interview Jack Gordon, bright and early after breakfast.

It was sometime in the dead hours that I heard the sound of scratching coming from the lock. I turned toward the handle, no more than four feet from the head of the bed, and saw it move, fractionally, but perceptibly, in the thin sliver of light spilling from a crack in the bathroom door. In my head, I knew exactly what was happening even before the action started. Someone was about to hard-key the front door lock and there was nothing I could do about it. As I braced for the bang from the hammer that would drive the platinum tool into the barrel of the lock and core it out in a split instant, it happened, but so fast, all I could do was lie there, paralyzed, as the door flew in and the bolt cutters took down the chain. Then, I saw them: three shapes silhouetted momentarily in the doorway—black jumpsuits, body armor, kevlar helmets and semiautomatic weapons. A glint of reflected moonlight on the barrel of the gun as it moved and then it was hard against my forehead, grinding against the thin skin between my eyebrows. More pressure, killing pressure, as the snub-barreled M16 was pushed down harder and harder, the force driving my head deep into the mattress. And above it all, the double click of the bolt being cocked and locked, a shock of white teeth in a face otherwise hidden by the shadows as he braced to take the shot.

It was then that I came up for air, sucking it down in great gulps, my hands outstretched, pushing against bodies I could still see but weren't there and never had been.

Slowly, the ropey, '70s charm of my motel room at the Desert Inn pulled into focus. I was bathed in sweat and my hands were shaking. I lay there motionless until the sweat dried on my skin and then I tried to get back to sleep, but against the rattle of the air-conditioning unit, I knew I was righting a losing battle. Around four-thirty, I gave up, got out of bed and stepped outside, a bottle of Coke in hand, into the enveloping warmth of the tinder-dry Mojave night air.

The liquid shimmer of the night sky had been diluted by the first traces of dawn light, dimming the intensity of the stars a little, but not the overall effect. I lay back on the hood of my car and tried to lose myself in thoughts of the cosmos and Garry Lyles' dreams of a "50-year fast trip" to Alpha Centauri in a craft whose modus operandi was beyond the comprehension of the best brain talent in NASA.

After six months of sniffing around the black world, even longer reporting on its periphery, I had found nothing within the Air Force or its attendant industry to suggest the remotest link with any of the five methodologies espoused by NASA for cracking the gravity code. All I had found was a possible link to T. T. Brown and, significant though this was, it left too many gaps in the overall picture.

While Brown's early work might conceivably have explained how an aircraft with the performance characteristics of a UFO had come to be "within the present U.S. knowledge" in 1947—the footnote to the memo I'd found between USAAF generals Twining and and Schulgen (now stained with the coffee I'd spilled across it)—it begged other questions: why NASA had studiously chosen to ignore his work, for example, as a pathway to antigravity.

The official reason, according to Valone, LaViolette and others, was that the Air Force had carried out its own investigation into the Brown effect as recently as 1990 and had found no cause to believe it was real. In a report on "Twenty-first Century Propulsion Concepts," prepared for the Air Force Systems Command Propulsion Directorate, the author, Robert Talley, had concluded from his experiments that "no detectable propulsive force was electrostatically induced." This failure to replicate

Brown's work was cited by both NASA officials and Dr. Hal Puthoff as a valid reason for excluding the Brown effect in their search for exotic propulsion technologies.

But what the Air Force report did not make clear was that Brown had consistently advocated using very high voltage to induce an electrogravitic effect—50 kilovolts in the case of the 2-foot diameter discs and 150 kV in the follow-up experiment that had supposedly exhibited results "so impressive as to be highly classified." In Winterhaven, Brown had urged further tests using a 10-foot diameter disc charged at 500 kV—the Air Force, by contrast, had not raised the voltage in its tests above 19 kV.

During two out of dozens of readings, it conceded that it had recorded some "anomalous" results, but it then made no attempt to explain these anomalies in any subsequent analysis.

I tried to figure why this should be.

Was the Air Force afraid of the truth—or merely trying to suppress it?

In the clarity of thought that can come in the aftermath of dreams, the other notion I latched onto was this: Ever since I'd stepped into the black world I'd not been moving forward, as I'd hoped, but backward; to a period of research I'd already covered, rooted in work that had gone on a half century earlier.

I was trying to find answers in high-tech hot spots like the Skunk Works, when something told me I was looking in the wrong place; the wrong time, even.

And Marckus, I felt sure of it, had known about this from the beginning. He'd been in possession of the facts surrounding the B-2 and for all I knew he was bang up to date on NASA's advanced propulsion activities as well. For the past God knows how long all I'd done was duplicate his vast knowledge in a couple of key areas.

I'd been set some kind of practical exam and gone along with it.

After breakfast, I set off for my appointment with Gordon, keeping the railway on my left and the sun behind me. In the distance, through the early morning haze, a giant hangar pulled into view. It had been built in the '70s as a final assembly hall for Lockheed L1011 airliners, but subsumed since the early '90s by the Skunk Works for the only official work on its stocks: a bunch of "onesie-twosie" upgrade programs associated with the U-2 and F-117A.

The hangar dominated the desert scrubland for miles.

I pulled into the parking lot across the road from the main facility and was met by Ron Lindeke, a seasoned veteran of Lockheed's PR machine.

Since the interview was to take place on the main site itself—a rare sanction, Lindeke reminded me—I was reminded to leave my camera and tape recorder in the PR building. This functioned as an air lock between the outside world and the organization's highly secure operations on the other side of the road.

We drove in his car to the main gate, where our documentation was double-checked and triple-checked. It took an age before we were finally admitted to aerospace's inner sanctum.

Gordon's office was located in an administration block in the lee of the giant hangar. There was a low-slung building to the left of the gate and a cluster of busy-looking facilities to the right. These were the factories where the bulk of the company's classified work went on.

The giant hangar was what you were meant to see. The real work went on in the buildings in its immense shadow.

I followed Lindeke to Gordon's office. The cool, low-lit atmosphere chilled the sweat on my back and I wondered what it must be like to work in this windowless environment all the time, day in, day out; and whether it was true, as the engineer had told Bill Scott, that they really didn't let you go once you were inducted.

We stepped into an office, as dimly lit as the corridor I had just left. A tall, powerfully built man got up from a table on the edge of the room. Jack Gordon, the fourth president of the Skunk Works, smiled hesitantly and shook my hand.

The Skunk Works and its dynastic leadership system was founded in 1943 by Kelly Johnson, a hugely talented, opinionated and irascible aerospace engineer, in response to an urgent U.S. Army Air Forces requirement for a jet fighter to counter the emergent threat of the Messerschmitt 262. The Me 262, a twin-jet swept-wing fighter-bomber of revolutionary performance, had recently been identified by Allied intelligence as being under development for the Luftwaffe.

Johnson had long been badgering the Lockheed leadership for a special engineering department—small, agile and free of the overweening overheads and administrative baggage that encumbered technical progress in every large aerospace corporation (including Lockheed); and with the XP-80 project he finally got it. The XP-80 was built in just 143 days and, despite arriving too late for a showdown against the 262, went on to become an aviation classic.

The unorthodox methods Johnson pioneered to bring the XP-80 in on time and under budget—all the while under conditions of intense secrecy—set the standard for everything that followed. Ten years later, when the CIA drafted a requirement for a spyplane that could overfly the

Soviet Union, it was Lockheed that came up with the solution. When the Agency needed an aircraft to surpass the performance of that aircraft, the glider-like U-2, again it was Lockheed that furnished the answer, this time with the extraordinarily graceful Mach 3 A-12 Blackbird.

Like the U-2, the A-12 started as a black program, but gradually moved into the light, emerging finally as the USAF SR-71, the fastest operational aircraft in the world until its retirement in 1990. To this day, there is nothing faster, but that, of course, presupposes the "Aurora" stories aren't true.

Ben Rich, who succeeded Johnson in 1975, denied in his book *Skunk Works,* which serves as its semiofficial history, that Aurora ever existed. But Rich did not offer any plausible explanation for what his company had been up to since it produced the last F-117A Stealth Fighter in 1990. There had been rollouts of two YF-22 prototypes—the forerunner of the USAF's new F-22A Raptor advanced tactical fighter—and a couple of unmanned DarkStar reconnaissance vehicles, but neither of these could account for the comings and goings of 4,000 workers or the busy appearance of the low buildings I had passed on my way in.

I was questioning Gordon about the Skunk Works' operating charter when he let slip that in the course of his 23 years with the company he had worked on 15 "real flying aircraft"—adding hastily that he could only talk about 12 of them.

It was in the ensuing seconds that the thought formed and rapidly solidified in my sleep-starved brain.

Whatever was going on here, however many secret programs the Skunk Works had on its books, none of them had anything to do with antigravity.

Perhaps Aurora was real. Maybe it was the "fast mover" that people had described crossing the high frontier above the Southwestern U.S. as a pulsating point of light—as reported in *Aviation Week* in the late 1980s. Maybe it employed a drag-reduction device of even greater sophistication than the one apparently on the B-2. But whatever it was or wasn't, Aurora was an aircraft, designed and developed by aerospace engineers.

Forty years earlier, T. T. Brown had proposed specifically that Project Winterhaven should be built outside the aerospace industry. Maybe Brown knew intuitively what it had taken me months to grasp. The aerospace industry had more to lose from antigravity than it could ever gain from it. Gordon's entire business base relied on the science of aerodynamics. Take that away and he, it—everything about the aerospace industry, in fact—ceased to have any role or purpose.

Antigravity threatened to wipe the aerospace industry off the map.

Was this the reason for the crushing silence that had followed the industry's initial burst of enthusiasm for antigravity in 1956? If so, it was the simplest explanation of all. And I had spent months on the wrong heading.

I pressed Gordon on the missing three aircraft, but in view of the direction my thoughts had taken, I must have unintentionally signaled my indifference.

When he raised his eyes to mine, they told me that the meeting was over.

Minutes later, Lindeke escorted me back toward the high heat that was baking the floor of the Antelope Valley.

Just before I left the building, I stopped in front of a large chart on the wall of the lobby area. I hadn't noticed it on the way in.

It proudly illustrated the lineage of every Skunk Works aircraft since the XP-80. Past the picture of the U-2, past the SR-71 Blackbird and the F-117A Stealth Fighter, past the YF-22 and DarkStar, and there was something called "Astra."

Sitting at the top of the tree, Astra looked like an ultra-high-speed reconnaissance aircraft; every pundit's dream of how Aurora ought to look.

It was difficult to gauge Lindeke's reaction because he did not remove his sunglasses, but he knew as well as I that the Skunk Works had built nothing since DarkStar; and DarkStar, being unmanned, looked nothing like "Astra."

In the car, I pressed him for an answer and he promised to come back to me. It was several weeks later, long after I returned to England, that he finally did.

"Astra was a high-speed airliner we studied in the 1970s that got canned," he announced without any preamble. "I checked."

It took me a moment to absorb this. "The thing I saw was at the very top of the chart, Ron, and it was most certainly not an airliner."

"Hey," he interjected testily, "the only Astra anyone here ever heard of was something we considered more than 20 years ago and never built. Take it or leave it." For a moment, the receiver filled with the sound of his breathing. "Call me if you got any further questions, won't you?" And with that he was gone.

Chapter 14

There were two final way points on the invisible network of nodes and links that held the black world together and here was the first of them, the Pentagon, with its long, wide corridors leading to the offices of Lieutenant General George Muellner, principal deputy, Office of the Assistant Secretary of the Air Force for Acquisition. After a month's interlude in the U.K., I was back in Washington on official business.

It was Muellner's last day as the service's chief procurement officer. Tomorrow he retired, the culmination of a service career that had begun in the late '60s as a pilot flying F-4s out of Cam Ranh Bay, South Vietnam.

According to his bio, he had more than 5,300 hours on F-4s, A-7s, F-15s and F-16s. Muellner completed 690 combat missions over Vietnam and logged another 50 combat sorties during the Gulf War in 1991, at which time he commanded a deployment of Joint STARS battlefield surveillance aircraft. In 1991, Joint STARS was still officially under experimental test, but its belly-mounted radar proved invaluable in picking out Iraqi tanks and Scud launchers against the flat backdrop of the desert. It was, to use the jargon, an "enabling technology" that had helped the Coalition to win the war.

Another "enabler" had been stealth, a technology with which Muellner was intimately familiar, although you would never guess it from his official past. The merest clue that he had once been bound up in the stealth revolution came in the fourth paragraph of the "assignments" section of his bio, the part that outlined the key milestones of his career. While the maximum period of time contained in each of the 17 other paragraphs covered a year, two at the most, the fourth paragraph spanned an unusually long length of time: May 1973 to July 1982.

During these nine years, Muellner's activities were described as "F-15 operational test pilot, 4486th Test Squadron, Edwards Air Force Base, Calif.; chief of systems testing, USAF Test Pilot School; test pilot with the F-16 Combined Test Force; and operations officer and commander, 6513th Test Squadron, testing classified aircraft." It was kind of like Pittman Station all over again.

So, Muellner had the Right Stuff in spades and he had lived a great deal of his professional life in the black. His nine years in the test community, it turned out, covered one of the most intense periods of development in the U.S. Air Force's history—a time when it had had to take a long hard look at its equipment and tactics and rapidly come up with a raft of new ideas and hardware to ensure that it was as ready for the next conflict as it had been ill-prepared for the one it had just fought and lost in Vietnam. It was this period that presaged the biggest hike in black world spending since the days of the first and most grandiose black world project of all: the bomb.

By even stepping into the building—the great edifice constructed by General Leslie Groves prior to his appointment as director of the atomic bomb project—I knew I had entered a world of Catch-22s. If the Air Force was developing antigravity, there was no way, of course, that Muellner was simply going to come clean and admit it. Then again, if it was going on, it was also possible Muellner had been excluded from it. If this was the case, Muellner's answers to my questions, whether they were true or not, would have "plausible deniability"—the earnest and sincere response of an official whose résumé said he should be in the know, even though in reality he wasn't.

It seemed an apposite way to start, so I asked the general whether he was satisfied that he'd been briefed on everything that was being procured for the Air Force in his name.

He replied without missing a beat. "I believe so. You know, it's one of those questions you never know the answer for sure, but I think the answer is 'yes.' '

So, just what was the Air Force developing in the black?

"Things that push the envelope beyond where we're at," he replied, again without hesitation. Next-generation stealth, certain breakthrough weapons technologies, information warfare, spy satellites. That sort of thing.

Civilians who made it their business to keep tabs on such affairs, sleuths like the Desert Rats who ventured as deep as it was possible go into black world territory without getting their heads blown off, claimed that there might be as many as four secret "platforms" flying out there, I probed, including the fabled Aurora—or was it Astra now?

Suddenly, Muellner looked uncomfortable in his stiff, blue uniform; a shirtsleeves airman who'd have gladly swapped the formality of his Pentagon suite for something a little closer to the front line of advanced flight test.

"If they are," he said, "then my earlier answer about knowing about all our programs may be faulty, because I'm certainly not aware of them."

The Air Force, he added, had no need for a reconnaissance aircraft that could fly around the globe at Mach 7 or Mach 8 when the satellites it already had in place could, for the most part, do the same job at a fraction of the cost.

Stealth, however, was a different matter and here the Air Force was developing a range of new technologies in the black.

Muellner wouldn't be specific, but he hinted that at least part of this effort entailed the development of "reactive skins" that would enable a next-generation stealth fighter to change color like a chameleon, blending against its background from any perspective. A cloaking device that could, in effect, make an aircraft disappear into the surrounding ether. Visual stealth to add to the radar and infrared variety already in place.

None of these efforts had resulted in any new operational aircraft yet, but there were test programs under way, he said, designed to "mature technology."

From this it was acceptable to deduce that *something* had been developed at the time of the Aurora sightings over the North Sea oil rig and elsewhere, that something real had been tripping the seismology sensors of the USGS, but that for whatever reason the vehicle had not been procured for front-line service. Why? Because Muellner didn't need to be saying any of this. The Air Force never talked about black programs; but on this, his last full day in office, had the general decided to invoke his other responsibility as the service's "chief information officer" and set the record straight?

The black world had taken a pasting of late. The rumors about what the Air Force was doing away from the public light of accountability were starting to spiral out of control. There were certain things that the Air Force would always need to develop in the black to maintain America's readiness in an uncertain world, Muellner said.

"And the rest?" I asked him, easing between the agreed subject matter of the interview and the antigravity question. What about the people—apparently sane and credible witnesses—who said that they saw things in the desert night skies that seemed to defy the laws of physics? Craft that hovered right over them sometimes, huge, motionless, silent?

Muellner smiled. Get him the name of the contractor, he said, because he'd love to put them under contract. Whatever was out there, it had nothing to do with the Air Force.

But here was the disconnect. People *were* seeing things that defied explanation in the vicinity of Area 51, Nevada, the U.S. Air Force base that didn't exist a hundred miles north of Las Vegas, north of a bend on Highway 375—the "Extraterrestrial Highway," as it had been dubbed by the Nevada state legislature.

Here, Tikaboo Valley, 25 miles wide and six times as long, as lonely a place as you could find on the planet, stretched into the distance till it merged with the horizon.

It was Tikaboo Valley that connected the outside world to Area 51, hidden as it was by the jagged peaks and ridges of the Groom Range and the Jumbled Hills. Right above it, high on top of Bald Mountain, elevation 9,380 feet, sat the radar site and observation post that gave security officers an unrestricted view of all traffic entering and transiting the area. It was the first of several security rings and sensor networks employed by the Air Force to ensure that nothing penetrated the discreet *cordon sanitaire* around the base. The others, if you were unlucky, could be a lot less passive, more in-the-face: the sworn-in deputies from "Pittman Station" who patrolled the valley looking for miscreants and who occasionally locked them up and were said to throw away the key; and the Black Hawk helicopters that had been known to sandblast the odd Desert Rat from his hidey-hole on the high ground overlooking Area 51's 27,000-foot runway.

Already one of the longest paved runways in the world, it had been specially extended in the late 1980s in a move that supported the widely held view in the "stealth-watcher" community that a very high-speed aircraft was under test at Area 51. Couple this with the unmarked charter planes and buses with their windows blacked out that were ferrying up to 4,000 workers in and out of the base from Los Angeles and Las Vegas every week and word soon got around that Area 51 was as busy as it had ever been in its 40-year history—ever since, in fact, Kelly Johnson, the Skunk Works' founder, brought the U-2 here for testing in the mid-1950s.

But alongside the stealth-watchers, another set of pilgrims regularly made the trip to Tikaboo Valley. Many of these people had been drawn to Area 51 by the revelations of a man named Robert Lazar, who in 1989 claimed to have worked on recovered alien spacecraft at a site adjacent to Area 51 known as S-4. While Lazar's claims seemed wild, his followers consistently reported sightings of strange orbs of light over the base; objects that seemed to defy the way aircraft—even the top secret variety at Groom Lake—ought to fly.

But tread the fine line between the world of black programs and the world of UFOs and you entered another minefield of disinformation.

In 1997, the CIA admitted in a set of released documents that it had encouraged reports of flying saucers in the 1950s and 1960s to obscure the flight trials of its then top secret U-2 and A-12 spyplanes. The implication was that if you saw one of these things overflying the highway and reported it, there was something wrong with your reasoning. It was a tactic that worked well.

Add this to the highly compartmentalized, watertight environment in which black program engineers and scientists worked, and the fear they were reportedly subjected to, and here, as with the Philadelphia Experiment, was a cheap, but highly effective means of maintaining program secrecy. By the cusp of the millennium, there was so much bad information mixed in with the good about black programs that it was often impossible to tell them apart.

Was Astra another case in point?

On my return from California I'd left a message on Marckus' answering machine. Maybe, I'd conceded, talking to the machine like it was a confessional, I had been expressly meant to see that chart. Maybe Astra was a subtle piece of disinformation; a misleading fragment planted ahead of my visit. Then again, maybe it wasn't. Maybe it was genuine.

Faced as I was with the official denial, Astra was every bit as effective as a hit team equipped with Colt Commandos and a platinum hard-key. Less messy, too.

This time, Marckus had called me back. I told him then what I thought of his wild-goose chase. He never attempted to deny it. I got the impression he truly believed it was good for me, like it was an extension of my education or something.

In the small hours of a particularly hot night, three days after I'd sat in Muellner's office, I watched from my mountaintop lookout as a ball of shining golden light rose above the hills that separated Groom Lake from Tikaboo Valley. The light appeared to hang in the air for a few moments before drifting lazily downrange and disappearing behind a mountain peak 50 miles to the south.

It left me strangely unmoved.

In the kind of silence that you can shred with a razor when you're a hundred miles from anywhere, I found myself thinking again about the memo from Lt. Gen. Nathan Twining, head of the U.S. Army Air Forces' Air Materiel Command, to Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, chief of USAAF intelligence in September 1947. The memo I'd spilled coffee over in my basement back in London.

Twining's observation—that objects "approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as a man-made aircraft" were neither "visionary nor fictitious"—was written just three months after the supposed crash of a UFO at Roswell, New Mexico, in July 1947: the period that most people tout as the real start of the modern UFO sightings era.

What was it that Twining had written? That it was possible, "within the present U.S. knowledge—provided extensive detailed development is undertaken—to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7,000 miles at subsonic speeds."

In mid-August 1945, I recalled, too, that 300 railroad freight cars of V-2 components captured in the European theater of operations had trundled westward across the wilderness from the Gulf of Mexico to the Organ Mountains, deep inside the dry, desert hinterland. Every railroad siding from El Paso, Texas, to Belen, New Mexico, a distance of 210 miles, had been seen to be full of cars all headed for the White Sands Proving Ground, 125 miles to the west of Roswell. Following on behind them were approximately 40 captured German scientists recruited under the covert selection program known as "Operation Paperclip." They were led by Wernher von Braun.

Maybe Roswell had happened, maybe it hadn't. But if something had come down in that summer of 1947, something extraterrestrial, there was no definitive proof, more than half a century later, to say that what had crashed there was alien; and dozens, if not hundreds of researchers had sought to discover the truth about it.

But if Roswell's extraterrestrial dimension was simply a piece of fiction, then why not turn the thing around, look a little to the left or the right, and see what swam into focus.

When I looked at Roswell this way, I saw the White Sands Proving Ground. And then I saw something else.

The V-2 rocket program had started under the aegis of the German Army, the Wehrmacht, but had been transferred in the final stages of the war on Hitler's orders to a higher authority: Reichsführer-SS, Heinrich Himmler. The same had been true of the Me 262 jet fighter and just about every other German high-tech weapons program. Most of them had started under Luftwaffe control and then migrated in the same direction. In short, anything that had shown any real promise as a weapon system—in particular, anything that appeared to represent a quantum leap over the then state of the art—had ended up under the oversight of the SS.

Eight thousand feet above sea level, I felt a constriction in my throat. I was so keyed up, my breath was coming in short, sharp gasps. But the thoughts kept on tumbling.

Just as it seemed I'd been wrong in trying to connect antigravity with the USAF, so I realized, in a moment of clarity, I'd made the same mistake in Germany.

What had *Lusty* actually stood for? *Luftwaffe* Secret Technology.

In looking for evidence of an antigravity program in the raw intelligence reports of Project *Lusty*, had I been heading up a blind alley?

If antigravity had been developed by the Nazis, then perhaps it hadn't been under Luftwaffe control at all, but that of the SS.

I called Marckus from a public phone in a windswept diner just after I turned off the Extraterrestrial Highway for Vegas. I told him the conclusions I'd reached and that the available clues said I should take another look at Germany.

"I think you're making a mistake," Marckus said. "If anyone has cracked it, it's the Americans. Stay in the States, use your contacts, go deeper."

I neglected to tell him that, thanks to his field test which showed that my research in the U.S. was merely duplicating his knowledge, I'd wasted enough time already.

Chapter 15

In the reading room of London's Imperial War Museum, under a skylight battered by autumn winds and icy rain, I immersed myself in books and papers that plotted the SS's gradual takeover of the German aerospace and weapons industry in the last two years of the war. But as the evidence mounted, I found myself increasingly distracted by thoughts of Marckus. Why had he warned me off the German research angle? Why did Marckus, with his incisive mind and razor-sharp reasoning, insist on belittling information that seemed more beguiling by the hour?

It was the intractible aspect of this contradiction that led me to pledge quietly to myself that from now on I'd be much more careful about what I told him.

It was in August 1943, just three months after the first successful test shot of the A-4 rocket, better known as the V-2 vengeance weapon, that Himmler, head of the SS, managed to wrest the V-2 from the control of the Wehrmacht, the German Army. Himmler was at the Wolf's Lair, Hitler's remote headquarters in the forests of East Prussia, when the Führer, in the company of his deputy Martin Bormann, brought up the subject of A-4 manufacture and his concerns about program secrecy. Hitler, as was his wont, was demanding the impossible.

The recent test of the A-4, which had landed just five kilometers off-target over a distance of 265 kilometers, had finally convinced Hitler, after months of vacillation, that the rocket would thwart the Allies' developing invasion plans and quite possibly bring Britain to its knees. He demanded that 5,000 rockets should go into immediate production and be delivered in the shortest possible time.

Himmler saw his chance. Quick to exploit an opportunity, the Reichsführer knew that neither the Wehrmacht nor Albert Speer, Hitler's young and energetic minister of armaments and war production, could deliver the project under existing arrangements. Hitler had decreed that "only Germans" should be employed in the production of the A-4, but the sheer size of the task meant, practically speaking, that foreign civilian workers—Poles, Hungarians, Czechs and others from the conquered east—would have to be involved sooner rather than later in the process. But with foreign workers came the risk of the security leaks that Hitler had expressly sought to eliminate. It was to this apparently insoluble conundrum that Himmler claimed he had the answer.

What he offered Hitler, he promised, was watertight: his proposed workforce would be drawn not from the diminishing manpower resources of the Reich's civilian labor pool, but from the SS-controlled concentration camps, from which there was no escape. The same workforce, Himmler added, could be used to build the underground manufacturing facilities that would keep the A-4 secure from Allied bombing. Faced with the logic of this proposal, Hitler agreed, but informed Himmler that he must cooperate with Speer.

Though the SS controlled the camps, it was the armaments ministry that had masterminded the revitalization of the German manufacturing economy, achieving month-on-month growth, in spite of the ferocity of the Allies' strategic bombing campaign, since Speer's appointment the previous year. Yet, when he was informed of Himmler's proposal, Speer couldn't help but object to it, knowing that Himmler, whose dreams invariably exceeded his abilities, would never be able to deliver what he had promised. This was undoubtedly the case, but it was not what Hitler wanted to hear. The following day, Himmler informed Speer that he had taken charge of the manufacture of the "A-4 instrument" (as it was known to conceal its identity and purpose to outsiders) and demanded Speer's full cooperation as a subordinate. This the outmaneuvered armaments minister was forced to provide.

Thus, within 24 hours, did Himmler not only acquire control of the V-2 program, but in the process lay the foundations for the SS takeover of all secret weapons programs within the Third Reich.

For years, the Reichsführer-SS had harbored a grand scheme to turn the SS, originally established as Hitler's bodyguard, into a self-sustaining economic entity, capable of funding and running its affairs without reliance on the everyday financial and administrative mechanisms that maintained and sustained the Reich. It was via the camps that Himmler and his leading economic authority, Oswald Pohl, realized that they could achieve their aims. By 1943, population of the camps had surged—from around 25,000 on the eve of the war, to well over half a million, a figure that did not begin to reflect the millions that had already died in death camps like Auschwitz, Dachau and Mauthausen and the millions more that would die of disease, starvation and the gas chambers before hostilities were over.

In a perverse reflection of the growth of the camps, the size of the SS itself surged from an eve-of-war strength of 240,000 to an end-of-war tally numbering 800,000. Aside from its task to maintain security within Hitler's state and its brutal administration of the death and labor camps, the SS also provided 38 fighting divisions alongside the Wehrmacht.

After the abortive bomb plot against Hitler in July 1944, a scheme hatched by anti-Hitler elements within the German Army General Staff, the control of the SS and its grip upon Germany would become absolute. But it was in August 1943, at the Wolf's Lair, that the seeds of the SS's takeover of the armaments industry were sown. Skilled workers and scientific specialists, Himmler told Speer, would immediately be transferred from the camps to begin work on the A-4. Furthermore, the Reichsführer-SS added, he had asked a "young energetic construction expert, who had already proved his outstanding ability, to take charge of the enterprise."

Speer must have had an overwhelming sense of inevitability as to the identity of this individual, but he inquired anyway. The man who was to assume direct oversight of the A-4's manufacture, Himmler told him, was Dr. Ing. (Engineer) Hans Kammler, head of the SS's Building and Works Division—the entity that had masterminded and built the camps.

Kammler's rise inside the SS had been meteoric. Up until 1941, he had been an unremarkable civil servant within the RLM, the Reich Air Ministry, with special responsibility for construction projects—hangars, barracks, administrative offices and the like. In the autumn of that year, realizing that he was never going to rise to the heights to which he aspired, he transferred to the SS, where he received the rank of Brigadeführer and was immediately put in charge of building projects. By the end of that year, Kammler had already drafted a five-year RM13-billion program of construction for SS barracks and concentration camps stretching from the newly captured territories of the Soviet Union to Norway.

The sense that the SS gave Kammler free rein to indulge his ideas and ambitions—suppressed during his years of obscure service at the RLM—is unavoidable. No sooner had his appointment taken effect, than he was drawing up detailed plans for the rapid expansion of the camps, egged on by Pohl, who had impressed upon him their value as the engines of growth for his and Himmler's grotesque vision.

To turn it into reality, Kammler immediately saw what needed to be done and requested to expand the capacity of the camps to four million; three months later, he increased this figure again to 14 million.

While the building program got under way, he set about industrializing the existing camps, but progressively found himself thwarted by Speer, who, irrespective of any feelings he may or may not have had about the moral consequences of such a scheme, believed that the camps were not the answer to Germany's manufacturing needs. Yet it was a confrontation that Speer was bound to lose, as he tacitly admitted in his memoirs; for, in Kammler, he was essentially battling against a twisted image of himself.

"He too came from a solid middle-class family, had gone through university, had been 'discovered' because of his work in construction, and had gone far and fast in fields for which he had not been trained." Speer, it is clear, was jealous of Kammler, but while Speer patently wrestled with his conscience, especially during these years, there is no sign of any moral doubt on the part of the 40-year-old SS officer.

Kammler was cut from the same cloth as SS-Obergruppenführer Reinhard Heydrich, the author of the "Final Solution of the Jewish Problem," who was assassinated by Czech agents in Prague in 1942.

"Both were blond, blue-eyed, long-headed, always neatly dressed, and well bred. Both were capable of unexpected decisions at any moment, and once they had arrived at them would carry them through with a rare obstinacy," Speer noted.

With Heydrich dead, Himmler had found in Kammler a cold, ruthless and energetic executor of his wishes; the man who would carry though his simple, yet grandiose vision.

Kammler set about his task as overseer of the A-4 manufacture program with clinical zeal. One week after Himmler's fateful meeting with Hitler at the Wolf's Lair, he dispatched the first group of concentration camp inmates from Buchenwald to Nordhausen in the Harz Mountains of central Germany, where work on a giant underground construction facility for the A-4/V-2 commenced.

Within a month, Kammler and Speer, the latter in his new capacity on the project as junior partner to the SS, established the low-profile Mittelwerk GmbH (Central Works Ltd.) to run the rocket venture.

By the end of the year, 10,000 Buchenwald prisoners—mostly Russians, Poles and Frenchmen—had been dispatched into the limestone cliffs of the Kohnstein, the mountainous ridge close to the village of Nordhausen into which the facility was tunneled, to bring about the impossible: the construction of the largest underground factory in the world, a facility a kilometer and a half long containing 20 kilometers of tunnels and galleries, dedicated to the construction of rockets, missiles and other top secret weapons. It was finished in a year—20,000 prisoners dying in the process.

Plans show that it was the first phase in a construction program that would have made the Mittelwerk part of an enterprise three times the size.

Thereafter, Kammler's ascent to the top levels of the bureaucracy surrounding Hitler's inner cabinet was unstoppable. As 1943 drifted into 1944, the SS's steadfast refusal to believe in anything other than final victory ensured its deepening involvement at all levels of state. In March 1944, at the formation of a combined "Fighter Aircraft Staff composed of senior Luftwaffe and armaments ministry officials tasked with increasing fighter production in the face of the Allies' determination to wipe it out with carpet bombing, Kammler represented the SS as Himmler's special delegate, offering two primary areas of expertise: his rapidly developing knowledge of underground factory construction and his ability to mobilize vast numbers of concentration camp laborers. In recognition of this, Reichsmarschall Hermann Goering, head of the Luftwaffe and Hitler's nominal successor, tasked Kammler with transferring strategic aircraft factories underground. Just over three months later, Himmler was able to report to Hitler that ten aircraft factories with an underground floor space of tens of thousands of square meters had been constructed in just eight weeks.

As the Reich's decay accelerated under the relentless news of defeat on all fronts—the D-Day invasion had placed Allied troops in France, the Red Army had just crossed into Poland and British and American bombers were pummeling German cities daily from the air—Kammler's influence spread. In the air of paranoia that followed the bomb plot of July 20, his ascendancy entered its final and most decisive phase. On August 6, following Himmler's appointment as head of armaments, adding to his portfolio as chief of internal security and commander in chief of the reserve army, Kammler was given responsibility for all aspects of V-2 operations—from design through manufacture to deployment and offensive operations against England and the Low Countries. In effect, Kammler now had sole charge of the project from planning to firing; a position that, thanks to his obsessive eye for detail, gave him an insight into the running of a strategic weapons program that no other individual has enjoyed before or since.

In January 1945, with the Red Army in Budapest and Warsaw and the Western Allies turning the tide of the Germans' Ardennes offensive, Kammler was appointed head of all missile programs—defensive as well as offensive. On February 6th, Hitler transferred cradle-to-grave responsibility for all air weapons—fighters, missiles and bombers—to the man that many Party insiders now viewed as the most powerful and influential state official outside Hitler's inner cabinet.

Kammler had first come to Hitler's attention with a carefully crafted hand-colored design for the Auschwitz concentration camp. It was his perverse capacity to retain control of the minutiae of a project without ever relinquishing grip on the strategic objectives, a trait shared by Hitler himself, that drew him increasingly into the Führer's orbit; a characteristic that came to the fore when Kammler "reengineered" the Warsaw Ghetto after the crushing of the uprising in August 1944. He not only leveled the "contaminated area," but made sure that each of the 34 million bricks from the Ghetto was used for other essential building projects. He was also called in to advise on methodologies for increasing the daily output of the camps' gas chambers and ovens from 10,000 to 60,000. For this and his other work he was rewarded with an SS general's rank of Obergruppenführer.

By the beginning of April 1945, with the Red Army driving toward Berlin and Hitler now ensconced in the Führerbunker below the Party Chancellery, Kammler had acquired control of every single major aircraft—or rather, *aerospace*—program of any importance within the Third Reich. His empire now included any project or facility that had either an SS influence or was aircraft or missile related. Geographically, this gave him the authority to enter and operate any weapons plant within the shrinking borders of the Reich, by now restricted to Norway, Denmark, northern Germany, southern Bavaria, Czechoslovakia, Austria and northern Italy.

What is astounding is the belief of the Nazi leadership, even at this terminal stage of the war, that Kammler would bring about miracles and deliver the German people from the relentless advances of the Soviets in the east and the British and Americans in the west. "The Führer has had prolonged discussions with Obergruppenführer Kammler who now carries responsibility for the reform of the Luftwaffe," propaganda minister Joseph Goebbels wrote in his diary on April 3. "Kammler is doing excellently and great hopes are placed on him."

Yet, for all the power vested in Kammler at this late stage of the war he barely rates a mention in standard works of reference on the Luftwaffe or its major programs. There is so little data on him, in fact, that archivists at London's Imperial War Museum confessed that their files contained next to nothing on him.

Just when I thought I was going to have to look elsewhere, perhaps in

Germany itself, I received a phone call from a diligent researcher at the Imperial War Museum who'd become as engrossed as I was by the lack of information on Kammler.

The researcher told me, a note of triumph in his voice, that he *had* turned up a book on Kammler after a rigorous search: a slim volume, with a curious title—*Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia*—penned by a British Cambridge graduate-turned-foreign correspondent named Tom Agoston.

What *Blunder!* contained, however, was dynamite, for Agoston had established what no other researcher has managed to before or since.

While Kammler carried out his job to the letter, churning out the rockets and jet aircraft that Hitler hoped would turn the tide against the Allies in the closing weeks of the war, he also set up, unbeknownst to anyone connected with those projects, a top secret research center tasked with the development of follow-on technology, a place where work on "second-generation" secret weapons was already well advanced.

"In modern high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an 'SS research think tank,' " Agoston wrote.

In the jargon of the U.S. aerospace and defense industry, however, Kammler's "think tank" would have been known by a different term—one that would have been familiar, though, to anyone who had ever been consigned to the black world.

What Kammler had established was a "special projects office," a forerunner of the entity that had been run by the bright young colonels of the USAF's stealth program in the 1970s and 1980s; a place of vision, where imagination could run free, unfettered by the restraints of accountability. Exactly the kind of place, in fact, you'd expect to find antigravity technology, if such an impossible thing existed.

Chapter 16

According to Agoston, Kammler set up his special *Stab* (staff) for these visionary projects in a highly compartmentalized section of the Skoda Works in the Reich Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia in the vassal Nazi state of Czechoslovakia. Through the brutal administration of Heydrich, the Protector of Bohemia-Moravia until his assassination in June 1942, the SS had come to treat the industry of the entire Czech region as its own private domain. In March 1942, Himmler formally took over the operations of the Skoda Works, a giant industrial complex centered on the Czech towns of Pilsen and Brno, as an SS-run operation. In the process, he managed to bypass Speer, who knew nothing of the arrangement until Hitler told him it was a *fait accompli.* With the SS in charge of Skoda, Hitler tasked Himmler with evaluation and, where appropriate, duplication of captured enemy weapon systems whose performance outstripped the Germans' own. Under the leadership of Skoda's director general, honorary SS-Standartenführer (colonel) Wilhelm Voss, this project was completed in record time. On May 11, 1942, Voss was able to explain to Himmler what it was that had enabled him to progress the development of these back-engineered weapon systems so successfully—"by concentrating all developments for the Waffen-SS in the liaison staff of Skoda and Bruenn [Brno] weapons plants, and assuring systematic, intense cooperation with the SS Ordnance Office."

In effect, Voss was telling Himmler that he had been able to move as quickly and effectively as he had thanks to the removal of the overweening bureaucracy that went hand in hand with projects administered by Speer's armaments office.

As far as the regular mechanisms of the Reich procurement machine were concerned, then, the Skoda operation was to all intents and purposes beyond oversight. This would set the scene for the Kammler special projects group, which was so deeply buried, so beyond regular control, it was as if it did not exist.

Voss, "tall, quietly reserved in manner, graying, upright and elegant," would become Kammler's alter ego in the administration of the special projects group. Seven years older than the SS general and with a reputation as an industrialist that was as solid as a rock, Voss, with his nuts-and-bolts background, was the ideal complement to Kammler's driven bureaucrat. Even better, the two men had a task from Hitler and Himmler to run the special projects group without the least interference from Goering or Speer. Apparently, neither Goering, head of the Luftwaffe, nor Speer, head of all armaments programs, would have the least idea it existed.

But for Tom Agoston, in fact, the reality of the *Kammlerstab* might never have emerged at all.

Agoston was a Cambridge graduate who had served during the war as an air photo interpreter. After the war, he traveled to Germany to report on the Nuremberg war crimes trials. It was there that he ran into Voss.

Though not indicted by the war crimes tribunal, Voss was so close to the Nazi elite that his name was constantly on the lips of the prosecutors.

"Everyone wanted to interview Voss, but they couldn't find him," Agoston told me over the phone from his home in Germany a half century later, the satisfaction still evident in his voice. "As he was sheltering in my house at the time, this was hardly surprising."

In the course of several extended interviews in 1949, Voss unburdened himself of the whole Skoda story, speaking of his activities there with "unique frankness."

Tired and disillusioned, Voss was patently grateful for Agoston's company and when the subject of the Kammler Group surfaced, he told the reporter everything.

The Kammler special projects office was regarded by the select few who knew about it as the most advanced high-technology research and development center within the Third Reich. It was totally independent of the Skoda Works' own R&D division, but used Skoda for cover.

All funding for the programs at the *Kammlerstab* was channeled through Voss, who reported alongside Kammler directly to Himmler. The scientists were culled from research institutes all over the Reich, chosen for their acumen as engineers and scientists, not for their allegiance to the party.

"Many scientists, anxious to see their work in print, even if it was kept top secret, prepared papers for a central office of scientific reports, which circulated them to specific recipients. Some of these reports were used as the basis for selecting candidates for employment at Skoda," Agoston wrote.

Once recruited to the special projects group, whether they liked it or not, the scientists set about their work, their activities protected by a triple ring of security provided by SS counter-intelligence specialists assigned specially for the task.

These security rings were established by Himmler around Skoda's sites at Pilsen and Brno and their administrative center in Prague.

Voss described the activities of the scientists at the *Kammlerstab* as beyond any technology that had appeared by the end of the war—working on weapon systems that made the V-l and the V-2 look pedestrian. Among these were nuclear power plants for rockets and aircraft, highly advanced guided weapons and antiaircraft lasers. The latter were so far ahead of their time that by the end of the 20th century there was still no official confirmation of laser weapons having entered service, despite the best efforts of the Russians and the Americans.

In March 1949, several weeks, after he briefed Agoston, Voss was pulled in for questioning by the U.S. Counter-intelligence Corps.

Shortly afterward, he wrote in secret to Agoston and requested that *die heisse angelegenheit*—"the hot matter"—they had discussed earlier that year was not for publication.

Voss had told the CIC agents about the range of research activities that had been pursued by the special projects group and they informed him, in no uncertain terms, that he was never to speak about the *Kammlerstab* or its programs to anyone.

Voss gave them his word, neglecting to tell them, of course, that he had already briefed Agoston.

Agoston duly honored Voss' request to put a lid on the matter, but with Voss' death in 1974 he was absolved of his obligation and began picking up the threads of the story again. Voss' interrogation reports should have been freely available under the U.S. Freedom of Information Act, but despite persistent requests, Agoston was told they were unavailable; that there was no record, in fact, of any such interrogations ever having taken place.

I recalled from the *Lusty* documents I had examined in Washington a report that had been filed by OSS agents, forerunners of the CIA, from Austria in April 1945. Bundled into a collection of unprocessed notes on Nazi high-technology weapons "targets" examined by U.S. intelligence specialists, the report had mentioned a location in Vienna where experiments had supposedly been conducted on "antiaircraft rays"—laser weapons.

"Research activity is conducted in a house at the above address (87, Weimarerstr. Vienna). Research personnel were not allowed to leave house (reported hermetically sealed)."

Funny, I thought, how this much later on in the investigation I saw things through a markedly different prism. At the time, I'd been focused on the technology. Now, the fact that the Germans had been working on directed energy weapons was subordinate to a subtly different observation: that the Nazis had operated a compartmentalized security structure like the one now operated by the black world.

It was then that I saw the Kammler special projects group for what it was; not as a facility where experiments were conducted, but as an R&D coordinating center. Testing wouldn't have been performed at Skoda itself, but in the field.

It was exactly as Agoston said it was: a think tank, not an experimental site.

I put out feelers into the Czech Republic and Poland. I now saw that if there had been any truth at all in the reports of flying saucers developed by the Germans at the end of the war, this was the place to start looking. If the legend that had grown up around the supposed activities of Messrs. Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo was in any shape, way or form based on truth—and while my earlier research had shown there wasn't a shred of solid evidence to say they were, I was convinced there was no smoke without fire—two places always seemed to recur in so-called testimony.

The first was Prague, not a million miles from Skoda's twin hubs at Pilsen and Brno (Bruenn). The second was Breslau in the German province of Lower Silesia. Then part of Germany, Breslau—renamed Wroclaw—is today in southwest Poland.

I turned my attention back to Kammler.

In March 1945, Kammler moved his headquarters from Berlin to Munich, working out of the regional Waffen-SS and Reich Police Construction Office. On April 16, three weeks after he had received his mission from Hitler to change the course of the war, Kammler delegated Gerhard Degenkolb, industrial plenipotentiary for the manufacture of jet aircraft at Speer's ministry for armaments and war production, to assume special responsibility for manufacture of the Messerschmitt 262, Germany's last-ditch hope in the war in the air. On April 17, with the Third Reich crashing around his ears, Kammler sent a message to Himmler at SS Command Headquarters in Berlin denying Himmler the use of a heavy truck that the Reichsführer-SS had requested from the Junkers aircraft factory motor pool—an order so obsessive in its attention to detail, given the inferno that was burning around Kammler, that Speer later described it as "both terrifying and laughable."

Be that as it may. It was the last official message anyone ever received from Kammler, who by April 18 had dropped off the map—effectively without trace.

"In the course of my enforced collaboration with this man," wrote Speer of Kammler after the war, "I discovered him to be a cold, ruthless schemer, a fanatic in pursuit of a goal, and as carefully calculating as he was unscrupulous."

If there was one thing I had learned about Kammler in the short time I had spent analyzing his activities, it was that nothing in the clockwork routine of his life happened by chance. By the beginning of April 1945, while Hitler was heaping new responsibilities on his shoulders almost by the day, the general would have been acutely aware that it was just a matter of time before Germany collapsed.

In contrast to Himmler, who vainly believed that he could enter into armistice negotiations with the Allies and emerge from them with a leadership role in the reconstituted Germany, Kammler was a realist. His part in the construction of the concentration camps, the clinical way in which he had sought to boost the throughput of the gas chambers and ovens, not to mention the methods he had employed in leveling the Warsaw Ghetto, would have placed him high on the list of SS officers sought by the Allies for war crimes.

Unlike Himmler, however, Kammler had something of value to deal—something tangible. By early April, Hitler and Himmler had placed under his direct control every secret weapon system of any consequence within the Third Reich—weapons that had no counterpart in the inventories of the three powers that were now bearing down on central Germany from the east and the west.

A man who had no trouble transforming the grand visions of others into reality while retaining control of the minutiae, would have found it just as easy to talk victory and plot an exit strategy at the same time.

The clues, which double as the countdown to Kammler's disappearance, were there from the beginning of that month.

On April 3, Kammler had his meeting with Hitler in Berlin. As Goebbels reveals, following their discussions about the "miracle" weapons that could still win Germany the war, the Führer retained great faith in him. But Kammler had already moved his headquarters out of Berlin to Munich for reasons that Speer guesses at—accurately, it seems—in his memoirs: given the expected failures of these projects, it would have been dangerous for him to remain within Hitler's reach.

Before he left Berlin for the last time, soon after his final meeting with Hitler, Kammler paid Speer a visit. He had come to say good-bye.

"For the first time in our four-year association, Kammler did not display his usual dash," Speer recalled. "On the contrary, he seemed insecure and slippery with his vague, obscure hints about why I should transfer to Munich with him."

Speer might have put this down to the fact that the central part of Kammler's kingdom, at least as far as he, Speer, was aware—the giant Mittelwerk underground A-4 construction complex at Nordhausen in central Germany's Harz Mountains—was about to be overrun by the U.S. First Army. With most of the A-4/V-2 program team still in place at Nordhausen, Kammler's nervousness was understandable. He needed to get them out.

But then, Kammler told the armaments minister that "efforts were being made in the SS to get rid of the Führer."

As Speer was also in the throes of a desperate scheme to assassinate Hitler, using poison gas to kill him and his entourage in the bunker beneath the Reich Chancellery, this perhaps came as no great surprise, except that it came from Kammler's lips. Speer did not know it, but SS General Walther Schellenberg, Germany's combined intelligence chief, had already opened secret surrender negotiations on behalf of Himmler with Count Folke Bernadotte, vice chairman of the Swedish Red Cross. These were transmitted to the Western Allies, but promptly and roundly rejected.

But then Kammler told Speer he was planning to contact the Americans and that in exchange for a guarantee of his freedom he would offer them everything—"jet planes, as well as the A-4 rocket and other important developments." He informed Speer that he was assembling all the relevant experts in Upper Bavaria in order to hand them over to U.S. forces.

"He offered me the chance to participate in this operation," Speer said, "which would be sure to work out in my favor." Speer turned him down. In a late display of remorse for his years of unquestioning devotion to Hitler, the armaments minister now saw it as his solemn duty to prevent Hitler carrying out his scorched-earth policy in the face of the advancing Allies. As soon as Hitler was issuing orders for factories to be burned to the ground or blown up, Speer was countermanding them, arguing with frightened and bewildered plant managers that the war was lost and these facilities would be needed for the economic revival of the "new Germany."

On April 10, Army General Walter Dornberger, onetime head of the A-4/V-2 program, now subordinated to Kammler, ordered 450 key A-4 scientists to evacuate the Nordhausen complex and head for the mountains south of Munich. Those that could not board a special southbound train, nicknamed by those on it the "Reprisal Express," would be left behind at Bleicherode close by, where Dornberger and von Braun had established their headquarters.

Von Braun argued against this move on the grounds that it would mean deserting his men in the Harz, but Dornberger reminded him that Kammler had issued the order and if they did not obey it, "the SS would shoot them all."

Kammler did not come with von Braun and Dornberger on the journey south, but he did make arrangements to meet them at the Hotel Lang, near Oberammergau, which was already serving as an evacuation site for Messerschmitt's advanced projects team, evacuated late the previous year from the company's bombed-out factory at Augsburg.

Von Braun and Dornberger made their way by car to Oberammergau, arriving there on April 11, the day that U.S. forces entered and overran the underground factory they had just left. The two men, who had cooperated on the rockets from the beginning, were settled into a compound that had been prepared for them by the SS. On his arrival, von Braun remarked on the beauty of his new surroundings, the snow on the peaks, the lush pasturelands, but noted, too, that the barbed wire had been designed to keep them in, not the Americans out.

Soon after he arrived, von Braun made his way to the Hotel Lang.

As he sat in the lobby, he could hear two people talking in an adjoining room. Straining to catch what they were saying, the rocket engineer recognized the voices as those of Kammler and his chief of staff, SS-Obersturmbannführer Starck.

The two men were discussing a plan to burn their uniforms and lie low for a while in the 14th-century abbey at Ettal, a few kilometers down the road. From the tone of the conversation, von Braun was unsure if they were serious or joking. It was at that moment that an SS guard appeared and ushered him into the room.

Kammler, sitting next to Starck, appeared relaxed and affable—very different from the man that Speer had described a week earlier in Berlin.

He asked von Braun how he found the accommodation, whether his team was comfortable, if the broken arm that von Braun had suffered in a car crash the previous month was causing him any great distress, whether the team would be able to begin its design work again soon.

Von Braun, noting the machine pistol propped beside Starck's chair, replied as enthusiastically as he could to Kammler's questions, careful to maintain the charade. To have done anything less might have been fatal given Kammler's ruthless nature; besides which, von Braun had made provisions of his own.

Before leaving Nordhausen, he had had his men stash ten tons of blueprints relating to the A-4 and its successor, the intercontinental A-9/A-10 rocket, in a deserted iron-ore mine several kilometers from the complex. Had Kammler any inkling of this, von Braun had no doubt as to the fate that awaited them all.

But with the A-4 team settled in Bavaria, the general didn't appear overly concerned about the scientists anymore. He had other matters to attend to, he told von Braun, matters relating to his duties as Hitler's special plenipotentiary for jet aircraft production. He would shortly be leaving Oberammergau for an indeterminate period. SS Major Kummer would assume command in his absence. Kammler got to his feet. The meeting was over.

They said their good-byes and von Braun left.

It was the last time anyone of any standing could corroborate seeing Kammler.

Yet there are traces of his movements in the days, even weeks, that followed; and some of his subsequent actions are decipherable—to a point.

Kammler told von Braun that he had to leave Oberammergau to oversee production of the Me 262 jet fighter according to Hitler's wishes. Yet, five days later, on April 16, the general appointed Degenkolb to the job, thereby delegating his responsibility; to someone eminently capable, as it turned out. Kammler communicated this decision from his office in Munich, dispatching it to Speer, Goering, Himmler, Hitler's Luftwaffe liaison officer Colonel Nikolaus von Below and SS General Hermann Fegelein, Himmler's liaison officer in the Führerbunker. Describing this communiqué years later as a bafflingly "unimportant message," even Speer signals his bewilderment at Kammler's determination to spread the word to all and sundry about Degenkolb's appointment.

It seemed obvious with the benefit of hindsight that Kammler wanted as many people as possible to see that he was on top of his assignment—that he was in Munich doing what he had been told to do.

With Degenkolb in charge of Me 262 production, a job that required constant supervision, it left him free to pursue other matters.

When Kammler told Speer that he would offer the Americans "jet planes and the A-4 rocket," he must have known that their currency was devalued by the sheer numbers of people associated with them. The Me 262, Arado Ar 234 and the Heinkel He 162 jets were in widespread service with the Luftwaffe at the end of the war and plans for hundreds of other jet aircraft were on drawing boards at aircraft factories across the Reich. The Americans arid the Russians could take the blueprints for these projects and the design staff associated with them irrespective of Kammler.

The same went for the A-4. As von Braun's actions testify, the rocket had been secretly earmarked for handover to the Americans for some time by the people who had designed and built it. Whether Kammler was aware of these moves or not is immaterial; the fact that there were hundreds of V-2s in various stages of construction at Nordhausen meant that the Americans would simply take them as war booty, with only the fate of the design engineers left to negotiate.

If Kammler did have plans to hand the Dornberger/von Braun design team over to the Americans, these came to naught. It appears, though, that he never even tried.

On April 13, von Braun succeeded in persuading Major Kummer to disperse the scientists into the surrounding villages, ostensibly to cut down the risk of their being wiped out by air attacks on Oberammergau. Von Braun's real fear, of course, was that it would be Kammler issuing the orders for their annihilation.

The move may well have saved their lives, but it also left von Braun free to make his own deal with the U.S. agents that had been dispatched into Bavaria to seek him out.

On April 17, Kammler sent his message to Himmler about the "truck"—the last signal he was known to have dispatched from his Munich headquarters. Under German communications procedure, his teletyped "signature" was preceded with the letters "GEZ"—an abbreviation for *"Gezeichnet* or "signed by"—denoting to the recipient that he was physically where he claimed to be.

The fact is, he could have been anywhere—anywhere within a narrow corridor of territory then still in the Reich's possession.

As I immersed myself in as many sources as I could regarding Kammler's mercurial existence, a single question pounded repeatedly above the others.

Where had he gone?

Degenkolb was taking care of jet aircraft production. The inner circle in the Führerbunker, cut off from reality and increasingly from the world, had its own problems. No one seemed to care anymore about the whereabouts of the golden boy—the keeper of the miracle weapons who would save Germany from annihilation.

They could have had little idea that he was planning to bargain them for his freedom—for his life.

What did Kammler hope to trade? The rockets were gone. The jets were gone. That left the "other developments" he had told Speer about.

On April 17, the GIs of General Devers' 6th Army Group were just days—hours, perhaps—from Munich. All Kammler would have to do was hole up and wait for them.

But what evidence there is suggests he did something quite else.

There is testimony that Kammler moved on from there to Prague, a journey that would have taken him right past the Skoda Works at Pilsen.

Voss had spoken about nuclear propulsion, highly advanced guided weapons and lasers. What other secrets resided within the *Kammlerstab?*

If the witness testimony was accurate, if Kammler did move into Czechoslovakia, what was so precious about the inner workings of the "special projects group"—this Pandora's box of advanced weaponry—that it compelled him to go east, not west? Toward the Russians, of all people?

Nothing in Kammler's carefully coordinated life happened by chance. I knew that much. The documentation led nowhere. Even Agoston had reached the end of the trail.

All that was left, was Kammler's lasting legacy: the underground factories that riddled his kingdom, built to his carefully exacting standards, forged by the Holocaust that was also largely of his making.

I requested some time off work and booked myself a fly-drive package to Hanover. From there, with a good rental car, I would be in the Harz Mountains less than two hours after the wheels of the aircraft greased the airport tarmac.

Chapter 17

I entered the complex from the southern end of the Kohnstein—a long ridge dotted with pine and deciduous trees that rose like the hackles of a crouched beast above a sleepy plateau in the Harz Mountains close to the small town of Nordhausen. Inside, I hesitated before drawing breath. Twenty thousand people had died in the construction of Nordhausen, many of them right here, inside the mountain itself.

Anywhere else and you could half pretend that you were in the bowels of an archaeological site; where lazy reveries about the past of the place were part of the experience. But the imprint of what had happened here within the bare limestone walls was indelible and overwhelming.

I was standing at the entranceway of Gallery 46, a long tunnel with a semicircular roof. It was still littered with wartime debris. The records said that it had been used in the construction of the V-l flying bomb.

Every now and again it was possible to recognize a piece of hardware—components of an Argus pulse jet destined for a V-l, a section of fuel tank or a part of a wing—but, for the most part, in the dim yellow electric light, it could have been any old scrap metal. Next to nothing had been touched, my guide informed me, since this part of the facility had been reopened to visitors in 1994.

Soon after the war, when eventually the Americans left the site—but not before they'd shipped 100 fully assembled A-4/V-2s back to the States—the Soviets sealed Nordhausen by blowing the entrances to the long galleries. In time, the trees had returned to the Kohnstein and East Germans could almost forget that the place had ever been here.

There was a kind of symmetry to this; the Nazis had gone to very elaborate lengths to conceal it during the war, even from their own people.

The Mittelwerk was vast. At the height of its activities, it had been turning out thousands of V-ls and V-2s a month and had consisted of almost 100,000 square meters of floor space. Built in the 1930s as an underground storage facility for fuel oil, the complex—already huge—

gave Speer and Kammler a head start in the construction program they began and completed between 1943 and 1944.

The site consisted of two main tunnels running in parallel between the northern and southern faces of the ridgeline. One of these, Tunnel B, the main V-2 production line, was a kilometer and a half long.

Between the tunnels, like the rungs of an enormous ladder, were 50 "galleries," each between 100 and 200 meters long. Many had been component manufacturing facilities for the giant rocket assembly line. Some, such as those given over to the manufacture of jet engines, were assembly lines in their own right.

Until the construction of concentration camp Dora nearby, the slave workers who had prepared Nordhausen for the V-l and V-2 had lived in situ.

Six thousand prisoners had crammed into three tunnels, Number 46 being one of them. Initially, they had slept on straw, their surroundings lit only by a few carbide lamps. Then, they had been allowed to build bunks, four-story affairs that touched the ceiling, but which still failed to accommodate everyone. Since work went on around the clock, this did not matter; the laborers went to work and slept in shifts.

Beyond Gallery 18, deep inside the mountain, there was no ventilation, water or heating. Every explosion set off by the tunnelers filled the galleries with blinding, choking dust and gases.

This, mixed with the smell of the open latrines—oil drums sawed in half with two planks on top—made the air almost unbreathable. They also made the tunnels a place of terrible disease and infection. It was a privilege to be on the evening rota that loaded the latrines onto train wagons and emptied them in the open air.

A little more than 50 years later, as I walked the galleries beneath the Kohnstein, I found the silence deeply troubling. I'd wanted to concentrate on the science and engineering, to look at the Mittelwerk as a place that had been responsible for the most awesome piece of technology to have come out of Europe during the war; to breathe the same air as those who'd created the A-4 rocket's assembly line, to soak up that atmosphere in the way that a profiler would use a murder scene to build a picture of the killer. This place, after all, was one of the final staging posts to Kammler's disappearance. I needed to think as he had thought. But uppermost in my mind was the sheer scale of the crime that had been committed down here and its unexpected proximity to my own ordered existence. The people who'd toiled and died down here to create this Dantean design from Kammler's notebook, the same one perhaps that had spawned his delicate sketches of Auschwitz, were just a generation away from the safe confines of my own world. And all I had succeeded in doing was immersing myself in the fate of its slave workers, not in the thoughts of the icy technocrat who'd driven them on. In the subzero chill of the tunnels, all I could hear were the cries of the dying, not Kammler's whispered escape plans.

Only when I reemerged from the tunnels could I reapply my mind back to the problem.

When the building work on the tunnels stopped, those that survived went on to work on the rockets. At first, quality control was poor and many of the rockets exploded or went off course.

Suspecting sabotage, the SS ordered mass executions.

On one day in March 1945, the guards hanged 52 people in Gallery 41, tying a dozen at a time to a beam which was then pulled up by an electrical crane. Those next in line to die were forced to watch.

Then there was Gardelegen, 80 miles to the north. On April 13, two days after advance U.S. units entered Nordhausen, the SS forced a thousand evacuated prisoners from Dora into a barn that had been pre-soaked with gasoline, locked the doors and set light to it. When American troops came across the scene, they found some of the bodies still in the barn, some in a partially dug mass grave. Twenty men had survived by sheltering in holes they had dug beneath the charred corpses of those that had perished in the first moments of the conflagration.

These were Kammler's hallmarks. Others might have pulled the trigger, operated the cranes or poured the gasoline, but these acts had been carried out according to his wishes. More than 50 years later, you could sense it.

This was something about the man that I had pulled from the dank, subterranean air.

It was curious, then, that so few people after the war—the many tens of thousands whose lives had been touched by Kammler—could recollect him in any detail. I found this incomprehensible at first, remembering occasions in which concentration camp survivors had identified their tormentors decades after the war.

Even those who had not been directly traumatized by Kammler commented upon this mercurial ability to blend in. A U.S. diplomat who had served in Berlin until the U.S. entered the war in 1941, whom Agoston had interviewed, recalled his ability to "soothe and tame an unruly horse, using a magically gentle touch, and then minutes later order a negligent groom to be brutally horsewhipped.

"I always thought he was a man to watch," the American told Agoston.

"But I never saw him again. When I got back to Berlin after the war, no one seemed to remember him."

How could this man, this monster, the most powerful individual in Nazi Germany outside Hitler's inner circle in the last days of the war, come to be quite so easily forgotten?

It was only outside Nordhausen's giant bombproof doors, as I gazed again at the single wartime picture that exists of Kammler—in his general's uniform, striding for the camera, his cap with death's head badge enough to one side to betray more than a hint of vanity—that I began to understand. Kammler was fair, as so many Germans are. There was a gleam of raw intelligence behind those expressionless eyes and a hint of cruelty about the mouth. But take away the uniform, take away the job, the jut to the jaw and the energy in the stride, and he could have been any average 40-year-old European male.

In the chaos of the collapsing Reich, Kammler could have gone anywhere he wanted, assumed any persona he liked, and no one would have been the wiser.

On April 11,1945, when the first elements of the Third U.S. Armored Division of the First Army swept into Nordhausen, Kammler's legacy would have been plain for the Americans to see.

Clearly, however, his war crimes were not uppermost in their minds.

When Voss was picked up by agents of the U.S. Counter-intelligence Corps soon after hostilities ended, he told them about the existence of the *Kammlerstab* at Skoda. Their reactions surprised him. They appeared so unmoved by the notion that the special projects group contained a Pandora's box of exotic military secrets, he concluded that U.S. intelligence already knew.

When Voss went on to propose that they should spare no effort in finding Kammler before the Russians got to him, the CIC agents appeared equally uninterested.

This, from a nation that had mounted the biggest plunder operation of all time—involving the Army, Navy and Air Force, as well as civilian agents—to bring advanced German technology back to the United States.

At first, I wondered if their behavior had to do with the fact that Pilsen had fallen within the designated Russian zone of occupation. Maybe the CIC recognized that Kammler was beyond their reach and had simply abandoned any hope of finding him?

Then I came upon the final piece of the jigsaw.

The rapid eastward push that had brought the Third Armored Division to Nordhausen did not stop there. Disregarding agreements signed by the exiled Czech government and the Soviet Union, troops of Patton's Third Army to the east of Nordhausen crossed the Czech frontier on May 6.

Deep into the Soviet-designated zone of occupation, a forward unit of Patton's forces entered Pilsen that morning. Records I'd had sent to me from the U.S. National Archives before I left England showed that U.S. forces had the run of the Skoda Works for six days, until the Red Army showed up on May 12. Following protests from Moscow, the U.S. Third Army was eventually forced to withdraw.

Six days is a long time if you're retrieving something you already know to be there.

Had Kammler already done his deal with the Americans? Speer, during his initial interrogation at the hands of the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey Mission on May 21, less than two weeks after the German surrender, intuitively believed so.

Asked by the mission for technical details of the V-2, he replied: "Ask Kammler. He has all the facts."

As I pushed eastward toward the Czech border, using wartime documents I'd gathered in London and a worn copy of *Blunder!* as my guide, I found myself following a scent of collusion that was still choking more than 50 years later.

Chapter 18

On the morning of Sunday May 6, 1945, five days after the announcement of Hitler's death in Berlin, troops of the U.S. 16th Armored Division pushed cautiously through an eerie, soulless landscape that its soldiers described as "neither German nor Czech." The local people—German-speaking, terrified by their Slav neighbors to the east and undecided whether to remain in their homelands or flee westward—were powerless to resist the U.S. troops.

The war was all but over and everyone knew it; everyone except a hard core of Waffen-SS in and around Prague, southern Czechoslovakia and Austria that had signaled their intention to defend this, one of the final remaining pockets of the Reich, to the very last.

As the half-tracks rolled deeper into Czech territory, the U.S. soldiers passed ragged columns of Wehrmacht troops rolling westward to the comparative safety of the U.S. zone of occupation. The U.S. objective was Pilsen, a place known to the soldiers of the 16th Armored for its beer, not the giant armaments factory where Skoda had cranked out guns and munitions for the Nazis for the best part of seven years.

Inside the U.S. half-tracks, you could cut the atmosphere with a knife. No one wanted to end up a statistic in the last few days of the war. But still, the pace was relentless. Rumor had it that Patton wanted to reach Prague ahead of the Russians. And that meant a confrontation with the SS.

Approaching Pilsen, the atmosphere changed. The U.S. troops noticed a scattering of red, blue and white Czech flags in place of white flags of surrender. As the half-tracks left the Sudetenland behind and pushed on into the heartland of Czechoslovakia proper, the people came out into the streets, waving and cheering as the 16th Armored swept past. "It was Paris all over again, with the same jubilant faces, the same delirium of liberation," one soldier recalled in the 16th Armored Division's official account of the liberation of Pilsen.

By 0800 hours, the U.S. troops were in the center of Pilsen, their advance all but halted by the crowds that had spilled off the pavements and into the streets. The situation was chaotic. It was only when German snipers opened up in many sections of the city an hour after the Americans arrived that sanity of a kind was restored. The civilians fled back into their homes, leaving the U.S. soldiers to mop up what resistance remained and carry out house-to-house searches.

One unit from the 16th Armored soon came upon Lt. Gen. Georg von Majewski, the German army commandant in Pilsen, with 35 members of his staff in the Wehrmacht's town headquarters. As American troops entered von Majewski's office, the general surrendered his forces to the officer in charge, then pulled a pistol from the drawer of his desk and shot himself through the head in front of his wife.

Von Majewski was one of 14 enemy dead that day. Around 4,500 more surrendered. The Americans had suffered one fatal casualty in the whole Pilsen operation.

A second 16th Armored unit, Task Force "Casper," captured the airport and a third, Task Force "Able," occupied the Skoda Works.

An air raid by U.S. B-17s several weeks previously had rained destruction on a large part of the facility. The forward units of Task Force Able reported that the central administrative building had been 80 percent destroyed.

The news that Pilsen had fallen to the Americans was picked up on the radio that night by the onetime head of the Skoda Works, Dr. Wilhelm Voss, who was hiding out with his wife and family at a hunting lodge on a Skoda estate south of Prague.

Voss had been out of a job since January, when Goering had dismissed him for refusing to accept two of his nominees on the Skoda main board.

For weeks, Voss had been monitoring the Allies' radio reports for news of their advance, knowing that it was touch and go whose forces would get to Pilsen first. Armed with the news he wanted to hear, Voss seized the moment soon after the German surrender on May 7 and set out for Skoda.

Given Voss' former position and the chaos that engulfed the former Protectorate, this was a hazardous undertaking. Czech partisans were summarily executing all the Germans they could find. While the bulk of the Waffen-SS units had officially surrendered, some were reported still to be holding out against the Russians in and around Prague. But as Voss told Tom Agoston during their conversations in 1949, he was determined to hand over the blueprints of Kammler's SS special projects group to the Americans, not the Russians.

According to *Blunder!,* Voss finally pulled up in front of Skoda's main gates on May 10. He bluffed his way past the American guard and found a very different place from the one he remembered; a Skoda in transition, with Germans, Czechs and Americans milling about the plant. In the confusion, he located a member of the *Kammlerstab,* who told him that survivors from the group had already recovered some documents, marked them up as personnel and payroll records, and loaded them onto a truck. They were hoping to get them to a place of safekeeping before the Russians arrived. The facility was due for handover to the Red Army in two days' time.

Sensing that this was the time to act, Voss sought out the U.S. officer in charge, informed him who he was, then told him what was in the truck. The American listened, unimpressed by what he was hearing, and finally informed Voss he was under orders to hand everything over to the Russians. Voss insisted, but the American was adamant; nothing was to be moved. An American ordnance team had already inspected the plant earlier that week, he told the exasperated industrialist, and had picked up everything it needed.

Two days later, Voss watched as the truck was driven away by a Red Army transport officer.

In *Blunder!,* Tom Agoston had traced records showing that a British-led Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee team entered the Skoda Works on May 12 and promptly got the runaround from Skoda's newly ensconced Czech managers, who wanted to cooperate with the Russians and no one else.

I had found another set of CIOS reports, from a British team that entered Skoda one week later on May 19 with the plant now firmly under Soviet jurisdiction. This report, CIOS Trip No. 243, summarized a combined U.S.-U.K. operation—the U.S. team, it said, having entered the plant on May 16—in which nothing of any real interest was discovered, except for certain new projects in the ammunition field and some advanced German design and production methods for guns and munitions.

The triple ring of security put in place by Himmler and Kammler around the *Kammlerstab* had done its job, even after hostilities had ended.

Voss' story implies that Kammler never made it to the Skoda Works to retrieve the blueprints of the *Kammlerstab*—that instead the papers were ignominiously removed by the Russians and taken back to the Soviet Union.

It didn't look that way to me.

Based on what was happening in Germany, where U.S. technical intelligence agents were systematically targeting any weapons facility of interest and plundering the contents, it is inconceivable that they would have ignored Skoda, even if they had been unaware of the SS-run special projects group in its midst.

The U.S. officer who stonewalled Voss over the papers in the truck told him that a U.S. "ordnance team" had inspected the plant earlier that week. "Earlier that week" could only mean that the "ordnance team" had walked into the plant alongside or directly behind the combat units of 16th Armored's Task Force Able on May 6.

There is no official record of any such unit's visit to Skoda. There are, however, reports that a U.S. team with nuclear expertise entered the plant and gained access to documents that outlined the SS cell's work in conjunction with the Junkers company at Dessau on nuclear propulsion for aircraft. I had been informed by someone that an account of this activity was contained in *Atomic Shield,* the official history of the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. But after extensive inquiries with archivists at the U.S. Department of Energy, the AEC's successor, I was assured that there were no references in that book or any other to Skoda, its purported SS think tank or German nuclear research at Pilsen or Dessau.

Given Voss' claims that nuclear propulsion work had been one of three primary areas of research within the *Kammlerstab,* alongside lasers and guided weapons, it is inherently credible that some such work had gone on there.

It is at odds, however, with the official view that Germany was nowhere near as advanced in nuclear weapons technology as the Americans, who by May 10 were less than two months away from detonating their first atomic bomb in the New Mexico desert.

According to Speer, official Nazi sanction for attempts by Werner Heisenberg, the father of the would-be German atomic bomb, were rescinded in 1942 on the grounds that the earliest timetable for an available weapon was 1946—too late, Speer concluded, to be of any use in the war.

In late 1944 and early 1945, U.S. technical intelligence agents from the Alsos Mission ("alsos," in a quirky piece of coding, being ancient Greek for "grove," i.e. General Leslie Groves, who was in charge of the U.S. bomb project) tore into France, Belgium and Germany searching for signs of German atomic bomb work and quantities of German-held uranium oxide ore—a material that is inert until it has been subjected to neutron bombardment in a nuclear reactor.

On April 23, an Alsos team led by the unit's commander, Lt. Col. Boris T. Pash, a former high school teacher turned Army G-2 security officer trained by the FBI, arrived at the locked steel door of a box-like concrete entranceway in the side of a cliff above the picturesque German town of Haigerloch, near Stuttgart.

Pash, who had been in a race against the French to get there, shot off the lock and found himself in a chamber with a concrete pit about ten feet in diameter in the middle. Within the pit hung a heavy metal shield covering the top of a thick metal cylinder. The latter contained a pot-shaped vessel, also of heavy metal, about four feet below the floor level.

What Pash had discovered is what history describes as one of only two German reactors assembled, or partially assembled, before the end of the war—the other, at Kummersdorf, being captured by the Russians.

Using heavy water as a moderator and 664 cubes of metallic uranium as its fuel, the Haigerloch reactor had achieved a sevenfold neutron multiplication just a few weeks earlier.

Heisenberg had calculated that a 50 percent increase in the size of the reactor would produce a sustained nuclear reaction.

Had he done so, Hitler would have had the means to enrich enough fissionable material to construct a bomb.

This is the official view of the extent of the German atomic bomb program and it is terrifying enough. The Nazis had come close to developing a weapon.

But look a little to the left and right of the official view, as I had before leaving London, and an even more frightening scenario pulled into view.

On May 19, a German U-boat, the U-234, docked at the U.S. Navy port of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, having surrendered to a U.S. Navy destroyer two days earlier off the eastern seaboard. Her commander had received high-level orders to sail from Kristiansand in Nazi-held Norway to Japan on April 16.

On board, the Americans found an Aladdin's Cave of technical equipment and blueprints, most of them related to advanced German jet aircraft. The U-234 was also ferrying technical experts, a nuclear technician among them.

This fact alone tipped off U.S. investigators that U-234 was no ordinary U-boat. A secondary examination showed she had been modified to carry a very dangerous cargo. Set in her six adapted mine-laying tubes were 560 kilos of uranium held in ten gold-lined containers. The loading manifest maintained that it was uranium oxide, the state in which uranium is found when it is extracted from the earth and safe enough to carry around in a paper bag. That the U-234's converted mine-laying tubes were gold-lined indicates that its cargo was emitting gamma radiation. This, in turn, meant the uranium oxide ore had been subjected to enrichment from a working nuclear reactor. The gold lining was to prevent the radiation from penetrating the U-boat's hull.

And yet, officially, there had been no nuclear reactor in Germany capable of fulfilling this task.

Not in Speer's orbit of operations. But what about Kammler's?

The journey to this point had revealed the extent to which the SS had ring-fenced its top secret weapons activity from the rest of the German armaments industry. Could the *Kammlerstab* have contained the plans of a working nuclear reactor? Its secret location, even? It was a possibility I had to confront.

The lack of data in U.S. archives concerning the fate of the U-234, its cargo and its personnel is astonishing. But then, everywhere I'd looked prior to leaving London, a pattern had been emerging.

Protracted searches by archivists at the U.S. National Archives for any data on Kammler had failed to locate a single entry for him.

It was the same for Skoda.

Given Kammler's range of responsibilities in the final months of the war, this absence of evidence was remarkable; so much so, that one archivist at Modern Military Records, College Park, Maryland, said that it "redlined" him in her book.

I asked what she meant.

Somebody, she replied matter-of-factly, had been in and cleaned up.

Tom Agoston had found evidence of much the same thing. Despite Voss' extensive debriefings on Skoda by U.S. CIC agents at the U.S. European Command Counter-intelligence Center at Camp Oberursel, near Frankfurt, no one had been able to trace any records or transcripts of the interrogation.

When Agoston ran checks on Kammler, it transpired that his name hadn't even registered at the Nuremberg war crimes trials—the very least that might have been expected of someone who had played such a prominent role in the Holocaust.

Unlike Martin Bormann, whose body was never found after he was reported killed during his escape from the Führerbunker on May 1, Kammler was never tried *in absentia* at Nuremberg. There is no evidence that anyone ever bothered to look for him. This, despite the fact that the four versions of his death conflict with each other so markedly that none stacks up under scrutiny.

The first version says he committed suicide in a forest between Prague and Pilsen on May 9, two days after the German unconditional surrender.

The second says that he died in a hail of bullets as he emerged from the cellar of a bombed-out building to confront Czech partisans that same day.

The third version says that he shot himself in a wood near Karlsbad (Karlovy Vary in today's Czech Republic), also on May 9.

What these variations on a theme do manage to assert is that Kammler was in or around Prague just prior to the German capitulation.

One witness quoted by Agoston, an official with the Prague regional office of the Buildings and Works Division of the SS Economic Main Office, recalled the date: "Kammler arrived in Prague early May. We did not expect him. He gave no advance notice of his arrival. Nobody knew why he had come to Prague, when the Red Army was closing in."

I could see only two reasons why Kammler should have made such a journey. First to retrieve the mother lode of documentation on the special projects group at Skoda and the Skoda administrative offices in Prague; and secondly to bury it somewhere prior to setting up the deal that would save him from the gallows and buy him his freedom.

Where in the crumbling, collapsing edifice of the Reich would Kammler have considered hiding this priceless cargo? Certainly not in Czechoslovakia, not with the Russians closing in. And it was unlikely that he would have headed west through the partisan-infested forests between Prague and the German border.

The fourth version of his death, I felt, offered the best possible clue.

The German and Austrian Red Cross, according to Agoston, held two relevant documents after the end of the war, the first posting Kammler as "missing," the second updating the first and listing him "dead." The first report had been filed by a relative. It placed Kammler's last known location as Ebensee in Steiermark, Austria. The updated report was based on the testimony of unnamed "comrades." No burial place was specified.

I did some thinking of my own, using the reference books I had brought with me as pointers.

In early May, the province of Steiermark was putting up a vigorous defense against the Russians, while bracing iself for the American advance, under the leadership of Gauleiter Siegfried Ueberreither. The gauleiter—the Nazi party's chief administrator for the Steiermark "gau"—was backed in his decision to hold the province to the last by large numbers of Wehrmacht and SS troops.

Kammler knew Ebensee well. Under his orders and supervision, work had commenced there in 1943 on a giant underground complex for the intercontinental A-9/A-10 rocket—the weapon that Hitler had intended to use against New York. The facility was code-named Zement and a large section of it had been completed by the end of the war. Zement was tucked into the mountains abutting the shoreline of Lake Traunsee.

On May 8, 1945, Lake Traunsee could be considered the epicenter of the Nazi empire on the eve of its surrender; a seething confluence of terrified citizenry, refugees from the east, heavily armed German troops and Nazi party members looking for places to lie low until the frenzy of capitulation had subsided. Gauleiter Ueberreither himself, having urged his people to fight to the last bullet, slipped out of his office in Graz and disappeared. Years later, he emerged in Argentina.

I began to make arrangements that would get me to Ebensee. But shortly before I could complete them, I received a call from Poland. A researcher there had responded to my request for information about German wartime research activities around Breslau, one of the two purported homes of German flying saucer research.

The guy's name was Igor Witkowksi and he had been recommended to me by Polish sources through my work at Jane's as someone who was both highly knowledgeable and reliable. Witkowski, they told me, had self-published a series of books in Polish detailing his findings.

For years, Witkowski had been sifting through archives related to the many secret Nazi scientific establishments in and around Breslau—modern-day Wroclaw—looking for traces of wartime secret weapons work. What he'd uncovered was evidence of a systematic SS-controlled R&D operation in a rat run of interconnected facilities, many of them underground, in the remote Sudeten Mountains in the southwest of Poland—Lower Silesia as it had been, before its handover to Poland under postwar reparations by Germany.

Witkowski's research led him to conclude that a number of these facilities had been used by the SS for nuclear research work. But one site did not conform to the pattern. In this case, he said, a series of experiments had taken place in a mine in a valley close to the Czech frontier. They had begun in 1944 and carried on into the April of the following year, under the nose of the advancing Russians.

The experiments required large doses of electricity fed via thick cabling into a chamber hundreds of meters belowground. In this chamber, a bell-shaped device comprising two contra-rotating cylinders filled with mercury, or something like it, had emitted a strange pale blue light. A number of scientists who had been exposed to the device during these experiments suffered terrible side effects; five were said to have died as a result.

Word had it that the tests sought to investigate some kind of antigravitational effect, Witkowski said. He wasn't in a hurry to agree with this assessment, he added, but he was sufficiently intrigued by the data to alert me to the possibilities.

Like Witkowski, I was skeptical, a feeling that grew when he told me who had presided over the work: Walther Gerlach, Professor of Physics at the University of Munich and head of nuclear research at the Reich Research Council in 1944-45.

Wilhelm Voss, joint head of the SS special projects groups inside the Skoda Works, had made it clear to Tom Agoston that German nuclear work had absorbed a large part of the group's research activities. By early May, Kammler should have had adequate intelligence that Pash, the FBI-trained former teacher and head of the U.S. Alsos Mission, had located most, if not all Germany's nuclear research centers in the western zone of influence along with the scientists that went with them. Kammler might also have known that the U-234 had sailed with its cargo of uranium ore for Japan; maybe he'd been responsible for the order himself.

While he could not have known that the Americans were close to perfecting their own nuclear weapon, or that the U-234 would fall into U.S. hands, he didn't seem like a man who would gamble his life on providing America with a technology it had already acquired via diligent detective work. It didn't tally with his profile.

My feeling was that Kammler would offer them something so spectacular they'd have no choice but to enter into negotiations with him; and, intriguing as it was, this experiment down the mine didn't seem to fit the bill. The sickness suffered by the scientists appeared to be the result of radiation poisoning. As for the device itself, I said, by now thinking out loud, since it fell within the Soviet zone of influence, it hardly conformed to the plan that Kammler had outlined to Speer in Berlin.

It was then that Witkowski, who had listened for several minutes patiently enough, interrupted me. His research had uncovered the existence of an SS-run "Special Evacuation *Kommando* (command, team or unit)" that had evacuated the "Bell" and its supporting documentation prior to the Russians' overrunning the facility. The evidence said it had been shipped out, destination God only knew where; except it wasn't there when the Russians arrived.

Despite the warmth of my hotel room, I felt a sudden chill. For all the months I had been following Kammler, he had been a remote figure, even at his closest in the wet, freezing-cold underground galleries at Nordhausen. Now, fleetingly, I felt him in the same room as me.

"And the scientists?" I asked. "What happened to them?"

I thought the line had gone dead, but it was just Witkowski taking his time, choosing his words.

"They were taken out and shot by the SS between April 28 and May 4, 1945. Records show that there were 62 of them, many of them Germans. There were no survivors, but then that's hardly surprising."

He paused. "It's quite clear that someone had gone to very great lengths to clean up."

It was the second time in as many weeks that this expression had been used in the context of Kammler. Within the hour, I had booked myself on a flight to Warsaw.

It was thus—simply and irrevocably—that I was pulled into the extraordinary story of the Bell.

Chapter 19

We left the Polish capital in the haze of an overcast dawn, moving quickly past drab living blocks half-hidden by a frenzy of construction work.

Witkowski drove, apologizing in advance for the schedule ahead. The Wenceslas Mine was 50 kilometers or more the other side of Wroclaw and Wroclaw, formerly Breslau of the German *gau* of Lower Silesia, was around 350 km from Warsaw. The drive would be hard, he said, much of the route consisting of poorly maintained single-lane roads, but all being well we would reach our destination before sunset. In the meantime, he would bring me up to speed on his research, which had started with a phone call from a Polish government official.

Witkowski, a former defense journalist, did not want to tag his informant, but he assured me that his integrity was impeccable. The official had permitted him to view some documents, to make notes, but not to take anything away with him.

Witkowski had taken him at his word and transcribed most of what he had been allowed to view verbatim.

At the airport, his stocky appearance was just as I had imagined him. He was younger than I, with a thickset expression, high Slavic cheekbones and dark, intensely serious eyes. From the word go, we talked about little else but the research that united us. Had Witkowski been in any way a lightweight, I would have turned around and got on the first plane home. But when I saw him, I knew he was OK. There were aspects to him that I saw in myself. Like me, Witkowski was consumed by a thirst for knowledge. Knowledge of a highly specialized kind.

After months on the road it felt good to be sharing data again. And the very fact he'd let me in on his discovery told me that Witkowski felt the same way. We were walking a tightrope. If either of us were wrong about the data we'd collated, it'd be a long fall. On the phone, Witkowski had convinced me that he could take me to places that only he and a select group of local researchers knew about.

The papers that Witkowksi had been allowed to transcribe detailed the activities of a special unit of the Soviet secret intelligence service, the NKVD, forerunner of the KGB. Attached to this unit were two Polish officers, General Jakub Prawin, head of the Polish military mission in Berlin, and Colonel Wladyslaw Szymanski, a senior member of his staff.

It was during their "debriefing" of a former high-ranking official from the *Reichssicherheitshauptamt,* the Reich Central Security Office or RSHA, that Prawin and Szymanski learned of "General Plan 1945."

Their interrogation subject, Rudolf Schuster, had worked at the RSHA—one of four security organizations run by the SS-controlled *Sicherheitsdienst* or Security Service—until his deployment on June 4, 1944, to the Special Evacuation *Kommando,* an organization unknown to the NKVD, which prided itself on knowing everything. Schuster, it transpired, had been responsible for the ELF's transportation arrangements.

Schuster's information must have set alarm bells ringing at the highest Soviet levels, for Prawin and Szymanski had learned that the man behind General Plan 1945 was none other than Martin Bormann, Hitler's deputy, last seen fleeing the Führerbunker on the night of May 1. Though supposedly killed in the attempted breakout, Bormann's body had never been formally identified. Tying Bormann into a scheme for some kind of evacuation procedure, therefore, had disturbing implications, but pumping Schuster was evidently pointless as it was clear he was only privy to the transportation details. The SS, operating its traditional compartmentalization system of security, had kept him from the broader aspects of the plan. It was apparent, however, that much of the *Kommando^* activities centered on the territory of Lower Silesia, now southwest Poland.

The next piece of the jigsaw was provided by SS-Obergruppenführer Jakob Sporrenberg, who from June 28,1944 had commanded a section of the *Kommando* attached to the Gauleiter of Lower Silesia, Karl Hanke. Hanke, like all gauleiters, who were the party's representatives in the gaus or regions, was answerable directly to Bormann, the party chief.

Sporrenberg had been captured by the British in May 1945, but was handed over to the Poles because he was a general in the SS and had been active in Poland, the scene of many of the SS-run death camps. Had they realized Sporrenberg's true brief, it is unlikely they would have been quite so quick to release him.

Sporrenberg was a big shot, one of a scattering of senior SS police generals of exalted rank and status positioned to give Himmler absolute power throughout Germany in the closing years of the war. To put his seniority in perspective, he carried the same rank as Ernst Kaltenbrunner, the brutal Austrian who succeeded Heydrich as head of the

Reich Security Office, the Nazis' central agency for internal counter-espionage and repression. For Sporrenberg to have been assigned the command of the Special Evacuation *Kommando* unit attached specifically to Hanke's gau of Lower Silesia shows how important Bormann's evacuation plan was considered to be.

And, I thought, just how secret. There has never been any official acknowledgment of the existence of the Special Evacuation *Kommando.*

Exactly what, I asked Witkowski, was the *Kommando* tasked with evacuating?

The taciturn Pole, concentrating on the road ahead, flashed me a look. Patience. Everything in its own time.

Sporrenberg, he continued, was sent for trial and sentenced to death in 1952, but not before he had testified in secret before the Polish courts about his role as one of Lower Silesia's main plenipotentiaries for the evacuation of high-grade technology, documents and personnel or his part in the murder of 62 scientists and lab workers associated with a top secret SS-run project in a mine near Ludwigsdorf, a village in the hills southeast of Waldenburg, close to the Czech border.

Sporrenberg, operating under the political oversight of Gauleiter Hanke, had been in charge of a *Kommando* cell tasked with "northern route" evacuations via Norway, which remained in German hands until the very end of the war.

The NKVD/Polish intelligence team learned that SS-Obersturmbannführer Otto Neumann, who had commanded a *Kommando* detachment in Breslau, had been responsible for all southbound shipments to Spain and South America.

Neumann was never caught, but was reputed to have escaped to Rhodesia, where he was supposedly sighted after the war.

According to some estimates, Witkowski said, the air bridge established by the *Kommando*'s southern command between the Reich's remaining occupied territories and neutral, but Axis-sympathetic Spain managed to evacuate 12,000 tons of high-tech equipment and documentation in the final months of the war using any commandeered Luftwaffe transport it could lay its hands on.

The *Kommando* southern command had one other exit route available to it up to the end of the war—albeit an even more hazardous one. Using some of the northern Adriatic ports that remained in German hands up to the surrender, a brave or foolish U-boat commander could conceivably have run the gauntlet of Allied air and maritime superiority to evacuate cargo and personnel by sea.

But it was Sporrenberg's northern route operations that underpinned the reason for the trip, because it was Sporrenberg who provided the only details that have ever come to light on the Bell.

The experiment started out at a top secret SS-run facility near Leubus (Lubiaz in modern-day Poland), northwest of Breslau, in early-mid 1944. With the Soviets' rapid push into Poland during late 1944/early 1945, the unit was transferred to a castle on a hill above the ancient village of Fuerstenstein (Ksiaz), 45 kilometers to the south, close to the Lower Silesian coal-mining center of Waldenburg. From there, it was moved again to the mine near Ludwigsdorf (Ludwikowice), 20 kilometers the other side of Waldenburg, nestling in the northern reaches of the Sudeten Mountains. The Wenceslas Mine, where the Bell ended up, had been requisitioned by the SS as part of a neighboring underground weapons complex, code-named *Riese*—"Giant."

Riese, only part-completed by the end of the war, was an attempt to transform an entire mountain into an underground weapons production center. The many tens of kilometers of galleries that had been tunneled by the end of the war had been clawed from the rock by inmates drafted in from the nearby concentration camp of Gross-Rosen. Modern excavations *of Riese* show that the SS had been attempting to link it to the Wenceslas mine via a tunnel almost ten kilometers long.

By mid-afternoon, Witkowski and I had reached Wroclaw, a smoky industrial city on the banks of the River Oder that in 1945, as the "fortress" city of Breslau, had held out against the Red Army for more than 70 days, despite total encirclement.

In September 1944, long before the Russians were at Breslau's gates, the German military commander, General Krause, proposed the evacuation of 200,000 civilians, but Gauleiter Hanke refused, seeing it as a sign of weakness.

Four months later, as the Soviet ring of steel closed around the city, Hanke finally relented and women and children were permitted to leave.

But in the depths of a winter that was cold enough to freeze the sweeping waters of the Oder, those that weren't cut down, killed or raped by the Russians succumbed in their thousands to the subzero temperatures.

In February, the troops of SS Fortress Battalion "Besselein" launched a ferocious counterattack in an attempt to break the siege. While the German troops met the Russians head-on in some of the heaviest street-fighting since Stalingrad, Hanke exhorted his citizens to victory under the slogan "Every house a fortress." He then ordered a ruthless conscription of manpower that produced five regiments of Volkssturm—old men beyond normal fighting age—and Hitler Youth.

Following the briefest of training regimes, principally in the use of antitank "panzerfausts," they went out and died in the thousands.

We edged forward in the heavy traffic, soon finding ourselves on a long wide thoroughfare, the former Kaiserstrasse, which by April 1945 had been transformed into a landing strip for medium transport aircraft after the Russians captured the airport. It signaled the beginning of the end, but still the defenders fought on.

German Red Cross flights of Junkers Ju 52s removed 6,000 of the more seriously wounded and beneath the dense overcast that merged with the factory smoke a half century later, I could almost hear the rumble of trimotors as they swept into land, touching down at night under the guiding light of flame torches, and the crump-wump of artillery explosions in the suburbs.

By this stage, the defenders—soldiers and civilians alike—were forced to battle the Russians on all conceivable fronts, including the sewers beneath the streets.

On May 4, two days after the Russians took Berlin, a delegation of churchmen begged General Niehoff, Krause's replacement, to surrender. Two days later, he agreed and on May 7 the Red Army marched in.

Furious at having been held at bay by such a vastly inferior force, the Soviets launched heavy reprisals against the soldiers and citizenry of Breslau; a fate that Gauleiter Hanke chose not to share. He had flown out of the city on May 4 in a Fieseier Storch liaison aircraft to take up his post as successor to the disgraced Himmler, whose surrender negotiations had been uncovered by Hitler shortly before his suicide.

Hanke, local administrator of Bormann's enigmatic General Plan 1945, the man to whom the Breslau-based detachment of the Special Evacuation *Kommando* was directly acountable, was never seen again.

When I told Witkowski about Kammler, how he too had vanished off the face of the earth, he was unmoved. It was simply part of a pattern, he told me. Hanke, Kammler . . . there were dozens of high-ranking former SS or Party members that had never been called to account. They had simply disappeared. Many of them shared the distinction of having had access to highly advanced technology.

In the immediate aftermath of his death sentence, Sporrenberg, head of the Special Evacuation unit's Breslau operations, was smuggled to Russia, milked by the NKVD in one last brutal round of interrogation, then disposed of. Schuster, in charge of the unit's transportation arrangements, died "mysteriously" in 1947 and Szymanski and Prawin, the two Polish intelligence officers who'd interrogated them, also met untimely ends after their release from the special NKVD investigation cell—Szymanski in an air crash and Prawin in a drowning accident.

"What was it that killed them?" I asked. "Their knowledge of the Special Evacuation *Kommando* or the fact they knew about the mine?"

Witkowski kept his eyes on the road. "The Germans maintained a special detachment of aircraft, probably Ju 290s, and a single Ju 390, both rare heavy transport types, based at Opeln—Opole today—a hundred kilometers from here. Witnesses say the planes were well camouflaged and that some were painted with yellow and blue identification markings, which suggests they were masquerading as Swedish planes. If so, it was almost certainly a unit of KG 200, the Luftwaffe special operations wing, which frequently flew aircraft under the flag of enemy or neutral countries. The point is, the Evacuation *Kommando* had the ability to move thousands of tons of documentation, equipment and personnel, and they could move it north or south. Sporrenberg's brief was to go north. The whole operation was highly secret. But nothing, it seems, was more secret than the Bell."

We crawled out of Wroclaw in a heavy convoy of trucks bound for the Czech border. I focused on a faint ribbon of sky between the clouds gathering to the south and the outline of the Sudeten Mountains, the inner core of Kammler's high-tech kingdom, indistinct yet somehow threatening, on the distant horizon.

Chapter 20

In his interrogation sessions with the NKVD and his deposition to the Polish courts, SS General Jakob Sporrenberg could only tell the interrogators and the prosecutors so much, Witkowski told me. Sporrenberg was a policeman and an administrator, not a technician. He could relay what he had seen and heard, little snippets he had picked up, but the technology itself was beyond him. He had been tasked with getting men, materiel and documents out of Lower Silesia before the Russians reached them; he had had no need to know much else. This was standard SS operating procedure.

I asked what else he knew about Sporrenberg.

Witkowski stared straight ahead as he talked. First, I had to understand that Sporrenberg was very high up the chain of command. Records showed, he said, that Sporrenberg was appointed deputy commander of the Waffen-SS VI Korps under SS-Obergruppenführer Walter Krueger in 1944. Krueger, as far as Witkowski had been able to ascertain, had been involved in a series of top secret SS-conceived operations in the closing months of the war, including a plan to occupy neutral Sweden, the evacuation of Nazi wealth to South America and other neutral or nonaligned states, a harebrained scheme to strike at New York with V-ls launched by submarine and, of course, the special evacuation of Nazi secret weapons and high technology. Sporrenberg was appointed plenipotentiary in charge of northern-route "special evacuations" to Norway on June 28, 1944. Like Kammler, it seemed that General Sporrenberg was recognized and rewarded for his ability to organize, not for his ability to fight.

Following his capture, as much as Sporrenberg was able to divulge to Soviet intelligence and the Polish courts about the Bell was this, Witkowski said. The project had gone under two code names: *"Laternentrager"* and *"Chroms"* and always involved *"Die Glocke"*—the bell-shaped object that had glowed when under test. The Bell itself was made out of a hard, heavy metal and was filled with a mercury-like substance, violet in color. This metallic liquid was stored in a tall thin thermos flask a meter high encased in lead three centimeters thick.

The experiments always took place under a thick ceramic cover and involved the rapid spinning of two cylinders in opposite directions. The mercury-like substance was code-named "Xerum 525." Other substances used included thorium and beryllium peroxides, code-named *Leichtmetall.*

The chamber in which the experiments took place was situated in a gallery deep belowground. It had a floor area of approximately 30 square meters and its walls were covered with ceramic tiles with an overlay of thick rubber matting. After approximately ten tests, the room was dismantled and its component parts destroyed. Only the Bell itself was preserved. The rubber mats were replaced every two to three experiments and were disposed of in a special furnace.

Each test lasted for approximately one minute. During this period, while the Bell emitted its pale blue glow, personnel were kept 150 to 200 meters from it. Electrical equipment anywhere within this radius would usually short-circuit or break down. Afterward, the room was doused for up to 45 minutes with a liquid that appeared to be brine. The men who performed this task were concentration camp prisoners from Gross-Rosen.

During the tests, the scientists placed various types of plants, animals and animal tissues in the Bell's sphere of influence. In the initial test period from November to December 1944, almost all the samples were destroyed. A crystalline substance formed within the tissues, destroying them from the inside; liquids, including blood, gelled and separated into clearly distilled fractions.

Plants exposed to the Bell included mosses, ferns, fungi and molds; animal tissues included egg white, blood, meat and milk; the animals themselves ranged from insects and snails to lizards, frogs, mice and rats.

With the plants, chlorophyll was observed to decompose or disappear, turning the plants white four to five hours after the experiment. Within eight to fourteen hours, rapid decay set in, but it differed from normal decomposition in that there was no accompanying smell. By the end of this period, the plants had usually decomposed into a substance that had the consistency of axle grease.

In a second series of experiments that started in January 1945, the damage to the test subjects was reduced to around 12—15 percent following certain modifications to the equipment. This was reduced to two to three percent after a second set of refinements. People exposed to the program complained of ailments, in spite of their protective clothing. These ranged from sleep problems, loss of memory and balance, muscle spasms and a permanent and unpleasant metallic taste in the mouth. The first team was said to have been disbanded as a result of the deaths of five of the seven scientists involved.

This, Witkowski said, was all contained in the documents he had been shown. What impressed him—and what I now confessed had me intrigued as well—was their level of apparent detail. It told him—and me—that in all likelihood *something* had happened down the mine; something mysterious. But what? Witkowski insisted that it had all the hallmarks of an antigravity experiment. But I wasn't so sure. Before I could begin to believe this was the Holy Grail, I needed to check off a set of more rational explanations first. And the most glaring of these was the probability that this had been some kind of test involving nuclear material. The documents that Witkowski had seen had mentioned the involvement of Professor Walther Gerlach, the man charged with oversight of Germany's atomic weapons programs. Disturbingly, they also cited Dr. Ernst Grawitz, head of the euphemistically labeled SS Medical Service. Grawitz had been the boss of Josef Mengele, the infamous doctor of Auschwitz. Inevitably, there were reports that the Bell had been tested on humans as well. Again, if the Bell had emitted radiation, the Nazis—given their record on war crimes in this area—would have probably monitored its effects.

I said nothing, however, out of deference to Witkowski, who told me that much of the rest of his evidence was visible at the Wenceslas Mine itself.

As we approached Waldenburg, Walbrzych as it is today, the landscape altered. After nothing but lowlands and flatlands all day, the road now started to twist and climb as we headed into the foothills of the Sudeten range.

Waldenburg itself was bleak, its imposing mix of late nineteenth- and early twentieth-century architecture, Germanic to the rooftops, blackened with coal dust and beset by decay. Though it had escaped the ravages of the war, the Soviet advance passing it by to the north and the south, it had been less fortunate in the wake of the communist collapse. By the early 1990s, almost all mining operations in the region had been shut down, transforming it overnight from one of Poland's most prosperous areas to its poorest.

Men with nothing to do gathered on street corners and intersections and passed bottles of cheap vodka among one another, eyeing us suspiciously as we swept by.

On the narrow road leading out of Waldenburg to Ludwigsdorf, I asked Witkowski what had led him to believe that the Bell experiments had been an attempt by the Nazis to manipulate gravity.

There were scant clues, he admitted, but those that Sporrenberg had provided in his testimony seemed to add up to something. Many of the descriptions used by the Bell scientists did not gel with any of the accepted terms associated with nuclear physics, nor were there any obvious radioactive materials used in the experiments themselves. One of the terms Sporrenberg had picked up had been "vortex compression"; another was "magnetic fields separation." These were physical principles that had come to be associated with the new wave of gravity and antigravity pioneers—people like Dr. Evgeny Podkletnov, Witkowski said.

Podkletnov. Now, I began to pay more attention. If I'd interpreted Witkowski correctly, there was some kind of a relationship between the Russian's experiments with spinning superconductors—the effect he had tripped over in Finland when his assistant's pipe smoke had hit that column of gravity-shielded air—and the effect produced by the Bell.

I needed to call Marckus and run some of this stuff past him; if, that is, he was still talking to me after my refusal to dig deeper in America.

Witkowski also claimed there were anomalies in the curriculum vitae of Professor Walther Gerlach that placed him firmly in the orbit of the gravity scientists, despite the fact that, ostensibly, his discipline was nuclear physics. In the '20s and '30s, Witkowski discovered, Gerlach had immersed himself in phenomena such as "spin polarization," "spin resonance" and the properties of magnetic fields—areas that had little to do with the physics of the bomb, but much to do with the enigmatic properties of gravity.

A student of Gerlach's at Munich, O.G. Hilgenberg, published a paper in 1931 entitled "About Gravitation, Vortices and Waves in Rotating Media"—putting him in the same ballpark as Podkletnov and the Bell. And yet, after the war, Gerlach, who died in 1979, apparently never returned to these subject matters, nor did he make any references to them; almost as if he had been forbidden to do so.

"The Germans ignored Einstein and developed an approach to gravity based on quantum theory," Witkowski said. "Don't forget that Einsteinian physics, relativity physics, with its big-picture view of the universe, represented Jewish science to the Nazis. Germany was where quantum mechanics was born. The Germans were looking at gravity from a different perspective to everyone else. Maybe it gave them answers to things the pro-relativity scientists hadn't even thought of."

Kammler, Witkowski told me, had the ability to vacuum up all scientific activity, whether it was theoretical or practical, through an SS-run organization called the FEP, for *Forschungen, Entwicklungen und Patente*—researches, developments and patents. The FEP introduced the last major player in the story of the Bell and the Special Evacuation *Kommando,* an SS-Obergruppenführer called Mazuw. A high-ranking general, Emil Mazuw had been able to acquire any significant technology, science theory or patent application that had come to the attention of the SS—and via its prolific security arms, there wasn't much that passed it by. The FEP, according to Witkowski's researches, operated independently of the *Reichsforschungsrat,* the Reich Research Council, but would unquestionably have had oversight of it.

My guess was that the FEP had been administered by Kammler's secret research cell within the Skoda Works. After the war, the Allied powers seized 340,000 German-held patents from the captured records of the Reich Research Council.

But here was something else: the cream of Germany's wartime scientific research that had been skimmed off by the SS and compartmentalized for its own use. Its value would have been immeasurable. Perhaps this really was what Kammler had returned to Czechoslovakia for in the death throes of the Reich?

There were other clues, too, but these, Witkowski repeated, were the physical traces at the mine itself and were best explained when we got there.

At Ludwigsdorf we followed the line of an old railway that had been built before the war to connect the region's network of industries to the outside world. As the road climbed, we found ourselves in a valley bordered on both sides by tall trees. A patchy mist clung to the upper branches as we ascended into the hills.

Then we rounded a bend and the scenery opened up. We were in a valley, one that had appeared out of nowhere. Witkowski parked on a patch of gravel overlooking some level ground. The railway track, overgrown from years of disuse, followed its median line, eventually disappearing from view behind a large derelict building whose tall arched windows rose cathedral-like into the mist. It was next to this building, Witkowski said, that the shaft of the mine disappeared belowground.

I stood on the edge of a steep bank a short walk from the car. The valley was around 300 yards across, the trees either side of it so dense you'd never know the place existed unless you happened upon it.

The bank, which was 20 feet high, was mirrored by an identical feature on the opposite side. During the war, this expanse of land had been an underground marshaling yard, Witkowski told me, thick wooden planks called sleepers topped with turf hiding a six-lane section of track where the railhead met the workings of the mine.

Even the buildings disguised the facility's true purpose.

High on the opposite bank was a large redbrick house, an original 19th-century feature of the Wenceslas Mine. But look a little closer, Witkowski said, and you could see where the Germans had tunneled into the ground underneath and constructed a large concrete bunker, one of the many blockhouses scattered around the complex. All of the bunkers had been covered with earth and trees planted on top.

In short, the Germans had gone to a great deal of trouble to ensure that the place looked pretty much as it had always looked since mining operations began here at the turn of the last century, a clear indication that whatever had happened here during the war had been deeply secret. Now, half a century after the Germans had left, second-guessing the use to which it had been put, simply from the available physical evidence, was far from easy.

When, immediately after the war, the Poles repatriated the local German population, substituting German place-names for Polish ones in the process, they removed any witnesses who could have shed light on the SS' activities. Almost everything that was known about the Wenceslas Mine had been handed down from Sporrenberg.

It had been run by the SS, had employed slave labor and had been sealed from the outside world by a triple ring of checkpoints and heavily armed guards.

Beyond that, Witkowski said, we were into the realm of analysis, interpretation and detective work; the skills required for such a task being more akin to those of an archaeologist.

Although the locals had used the site for small-scale industrial activity in the years since the war—I could see freshly milled lumber stacked on a flat piece of land over by the valley entrance—it had been entirely neglected by the history books; its wartime use known only to the handful of people Witkowski had brought here.

That, I could understand. The place was as far off the beaten track as I'd ever been on the continent of Europe. I felt like I was tramping on ground that had hardly been touched since the Germans had pulled out more than half a century earlier.

The first thing to point out, Witkowski said, was the structure at the end of the valley. This, built before the war, was a power station capable of burning a thousand tons of coal a day—enough to provide the valley with vast quantities of electricity. It had more than likely been this single feature that had drawn the SS to the site, Witkowski said, since it had helped to make the place entirely self-sufficient. After the war, when the Russians eventually made it into these hills, they would have found an abandoned complex given over to some quasi-military purpose, a mine shaft that had been flooded, possibly deliberately, and little more.

"With the help of Sporrenberg's testimony, we have an edge that was denied to the first Red Army units to enter this place," Witkowski said. "Come, I want to show you something; something very strange."

We clambered back into the car and made our way down the track that led past the abandoned power station. It was now dark enough for Witkowski to use his lights, the beams catching in the weeds that tumbled through the cracks in the prefab concrete roadway laid by the Germans during the war.

Whatever the SS had been moving around here, it had been pretty heavy-duty, Witkowski remarked.

The track cut through a wood, emerging in a clearing on the far side of the power station. Caught in the headlights, rising out of the ground straight ahead, was a circular concrete construction 30 meters wide and 10 high. With its 12-meter-thick columns and horizontal beams, it was part-reminiscent of some ritual pagan edifice.

Witkowski parked the car, but left the headlights on, the beams bathing the columns of the object in bright white light.

"What is that thing?" I asked.

But Witkowski was already out of the door, crouching over something a few feet from the car. He was studying what looked like a partly exposed underground drain. Its concrete cover had cracked to reveal a duct about a foot across.

"This carried the electricity cable from the power station," he said. "It disappears into the ground just beyond the car, but diverts via this thing."

"What is it?" I asked again.

"I am not sure. But whatever it is—whatever it *was*—I believe the Germans managed to complete it. In this light it is difficult to see, but some of the original green paint remains. You do not camouflage something that is half-finished. It makes no sense." He paused. "There is something else. The ground within the structure has been excavated to a depth of a meter and lined with the same ceramic tiles that Sporrenberg describes in the chamber that contained the Bell. There are also high-strength steel hooks set into the tops of the columns. I think they were put there to support something; to *attach* to something. Something that must have exerted a lot of power."

I looked at him. "What are you saying?"

He took a moment before replying. "I'm saying I think it's a test rig. A test rig for a vehicle or an engine of some kind. A very powerful one."

That night I tried to call Marckus on my cell phone, but the isolated farmhouse where we were staying was buried in a deep valley, every bit as remote as the one that housed the nearby Wenceslas Mine complex, and I couldn't get a signal.

The Polish couple who owned the small farm let out a room to Witkowski whenever he came south from Warsaw to visit. They shared his curiosity about the mine and the neighboring rat run of uncompleted tunnels that were part of the SS-run "Giant" underground weapons complex. For all they or anyone else knew, the tunnels extended under the ground I was standing on. But being only second-generation inhabitants of this region, their parents having been shipped in to replace the Germans who'd lived here for three hundred years previously, they knew as little about the history of the place as Witkowski and I did. This, undoubtedly, helped to give the place a detached, soulless air.

There was no anecdotal evidence to fall back on; the only evidence was history's imprint on the topography itself.

I needed Marckus. I needed to run every last detail of the mine past him to see if it rang any bells in that weird analytical mind of his. I needed his guiding expertise again. Without some input from a physicist, the data on the Bell was nothing more than a bunch of science mumbo jumbo.

As I collected my thoughts under the swath of clear, starlit sky between the ridgelines, I elected to concentrate on a matter I did know something about; something that had been nagging at me ever since Witkowski had mentioned it: the matter of the KG 200 unit at Opeln, the base that had operated the Ju 290 and 390 transport aircraft on detachment to the *Kommando.* It was a highly significant development.

The Ju 290 was quite a rare bird; the 390 even more so. The 290 had been a big four-engined aircraft designed for the maritime reconnaissance, transport and bombing roles. The first transports had been used in the Stalingrad air bridge in 1942, but toward the end of the war, the final variants were modified for extreme-long-range operations. Three such aircraft are known to have made flights to Japanese bases in Manchuria. The Ju 390 was a six-engined modification of the Ju 290 with even more impressive operating characteristics. Though only two prototypes were built, they clearly demonstrated the Ju 390's ability to mount ultra-long-range operations of up to 32 hours endurance. On one occasion, a Ju 390 flew to within 12 miles of New York and back again. It could also carry a very heavy payload.

Above all, though, the Luftwaffe had referred to these aircraft as "trucks."

A book in Witkowski's possession, *The Nuclear Axis* by Philip Henshall, had provided this one essential detail. Henshall had picked up on Tom Agoston's story of Himmler's request for a "truck." But Henshall had arrived at a markedly different interpretation of the data. When Kammler had telexed Himmler on April 17 from his Munich office—the last signal anyone ever received from him—refusing the Reichsführer-SS the use of a "heavy truck" from the Junkers "motor pool," he hadn't been referring to a truck in the conventional sense. He had been referring to an aircraft. A long-range one with a heavy payload.

Kammler had been telling Himmler, his superior, that he couldn't have a Junkers 290 or 390 for his own use, because it was committed elsewhere. It could only have been for use by the Special Evacuation *Kommando.* Why else stamp such an ostensibly bland, innocent message *geheim*—secret? Why else would Himmler have been bothering himself with trucks?

With Bormann, Hitler's deputy, in charge of the evacuation plan, Kammler would have been in a unique position to call the shots. Although Hitler viewed Himmler as a valued and trusted ally—certainly up until the moment his secret surrender negotiations were discovered—it was Bormann, Hitler's gray eminence, who had his ear.

Kammler could safely refuse Himmler permission to use a Ju 290 or 390 without fear of recrimination. With such aircraft at its disposal, the *Kommando* could have flown its cargo of documents, personnel and technology pretty much anywhere it wanted. Spain, South America—Argentina, even—would have represented no problem to such a long-range platform.

The realization pulled me up short. What was the point of chasing Kammler, if he 'd already shipped everything out?

After dinner, a good but simple meal of boiled eggs and local ham, I wandered back outside to take the air, leaving Witkowski inside to talk to our hosts.

I gazed at the ridgelines again. A few miles away, lay the Wenceslas Mine.

Part of me was transported back to the desert around Groom Lake, to the time when I'd stood vigil over the hills that shielded Area 51 from the outside world.

The part-completed Giant underground manufacturing complex and the Wenceslas Mine were a lot closer than I'd ever been able to get to the 27,000-feet-long paved runway on the desert lakebed. But the feeling they evoked in me was curiously similar.

The SS had installed a security system around the mine every bit as impenetrable as the cordon around Groom Lake. That, undoubtedly, was a part of it.

As was the fact that the technologies at the heart of both places were essentially a mystery to everyone but the people who'd worked on them.

It was not knowing what lay beyond those ridgelines that made me do this. It was the not knowing that drove me on.

All these sensations contributed to the almost tangible atmosphere that imbued both places.

I was consumed with the need to go on until the picture steadied.

I knew then that I was tired—more tired than I'd ever been. I had got to the point where my every living minute was filled with a need to know the truth of something this insoluble, and that it had got ahold of me so badly that my subconscious mind was trying to solve it in my sleep, failing in the process and turning in on itself, twisting raw thoughts and images into the worst kind of dreams. Here, in the depths of Kammler's kingdom, a thousand miles from the warm archives of the Imperial War Museum and the Public Records Office, the scale of the Holocaust had begun to cling to me like a second skin.

Amidst it all, though, a particular sequence of images had stuck in my mind since my visit to the mine. Try as I might to stop it, I couldn't. I saw it with my eyes open and I saw it with them shut. In the chill air between the ridgelines, I saw it now.

It started with the arrival of a convoy of Opel trucks a week before the end of the war.

The scientists would have had mixed feelings about leaving: a sense of regret at having to abandon the project; relief to be escaping the oppressive feeling of the place; joy at the knowledge they were getting out ahead of the Russians.

A late spring day, the guns a long way off, the scientists talking and smoking in threadbare suits, their bundled possessions to hand, as the convoy was readied for departure. Sixty-two scientists meant three trucks' worth; perhaps another five to transport the crates. Eight trucks in all, moving west, gears grinding on the steep roads through the mountains. A disciplined unit operating to a fixed schedule, the details drawn up by Sporrenberg's bureaucrats in Breslau.

Two kinds of troops attached to the unit: drivers and logistics personnel to oversee the evacuation procedure and an armed *sonderkommando* group acting as escort.

To these special-action troops, the scientists were simply "subjects." The trick was to maintain their docility and compliance until the last possible moment.

After multiple "operations" in the ghettos of Lodz, Warsaw, Minsk and the other occupied towns and cities of Central and Eastern Europe, the SS had found that by sticking to a preprepared book, the subjects could be kept as passive as cattle.

For some of the scientists, there may have been a tremor of foreboding as the three trucks peeled off from the main body of the convoy and headed into the forest.

But for most it would only have hit them when the tailgates dropped away exposing a line of troops with SS runes on their collars, their guns raised.

The Waffen-SS would have outnumbered the subjects two to one, their crushing shock and bewilderment combining with the SS's weight of numbers to make them respond without question to the barked orders as they moved toward the edge of the ditch. At no point, special-action orders decreed, should subjects feel that the executioners offered the remotest kind of hope.

And so, it had come to this. Two shifts, 31 bullets per shift, each shot three, maybe four seconds apart. The first victims facedown in the dirt for each member of the second shift to witness in a terrible moment of finality as he stepped up to the ditch, their grave, the proportions worked out in advance in some warm administrative office a long way from the front.

Sixty-two men meant a ditch ten meters long, two meters wide and one meter deep, the bodies stacked two high.

If the executioner tasked with placing his pistol at the base of each head observed the guidelines laid down for his benefit, the act of pulling the trigger was calculated to be no more arduous than switching off an electric light.

When the trucks left, the only thing to denote the scene of the crime would have been a mound of freshly dug earth half a meter high.

By the following spring, the mound would have collapsed to the exact same level as the ground around it. This, too, would have been carefully calculated according to the known decay rates of human tissue and the ambient conditions of the ditch.

To preserve the secret of the mine, the SS had consulted not even a page, but a paragraph or two from the execution manual it had drawn up for the Holocaust. It had tapped on the crime of the century to do this to a handful of its own people.

Though none of this was proven fact, remember this, I told myself, should you ever be tempted to view this as a technology hunt in a remote place that has little or nothing to do with you.

Chapter 21

The next day, I was back into Germany, on my way to Austria, making good progress on the autobahns in the rental car I'd picked up across the border, when the phone rang. It was Marckus. Hearing his voice, I felt a wave of relief, the cellular link between us suddenly feeling like a lifeline.

I spent the next 20 minutes briefing him on the mine. To begin with, he put up some resistance, trotting out his old belief that it was pointless pursuing the Germans for anything remotely as advanced as antigravity technology. But I had a feeling that Marckus was simply going through the motions.

The longer I talked, the more he listened. By the end, he was firing the questions at me.

I told him I had a hunch; that the Wenceslas Mine complex had been some kind of nuclear installation, the strange, henge-like construction being redolent of a reactor housing, with a tile-lined coolant pool in its midst. I didn't buy Witkowski's test-rig thesis, but then again I wasn't dismissing it either.

As for the Bell, I had absolutely no idea what it could have been, but without my notes at hand, I couldn't give Marckus the kind of details he required to conduct an in-depth analysis.

I promised to send him an email with the facts that night, as soon as I got to my hotel in Bad Ischl, across the Austrian border.

"What happens in Bad Ischl?" Marckus asked.

I told him about the Junkers "truck" business and how it had altered my plans. With long-range transport aircraft at his disposal, Kammler had had the means to ship the core secrets of the Skoda Works anywhere he wanted. And for all I knew, he had gone with them. It was pointless trying to pick up the clues of his disappearance in Ebensee or anywhere else for the time being. It was enough to know that the Nazis had, via Kammler's special projects group, a repository of technical secrets that had gone way beyond the V-weapons they had developed and used by the end of the war.

It had taught me other things, too. For years, I had read of the SS' involvement in exotic weapons technology, but dismissed it as inadmissible claptrap peddled by people with an unhealthy interest in its warped ritualistic ideology; this, despite Speer's solid documentation of Himmler's penchant for unconventional scientific solutions to Germany's dire military position in the closing years of the war. In *Infiltration,* Speer's account of how the SS eventually succeeded in establishing its own industrial empire within the visible economic framework of the Reich, he had listed some of Himmler's more absurd ideas: producing fuel from fir-tree roots, tapping the exhaust fumes of bakery chimneys for the manufacture of alcohol and producing oil in abundance from geraniums.

Speer also attests to Himmler's willingness to entertain any radical ideas for new weapons—especially those that leaped the current state of the art. One such was a proposal for turning the upper atmosphere into a giant high-voltage conductor, presumably for the purpose of frying the Allies' B-17, B-24 and Lancaster bombers as they flew into Reich airspace. These ideas, many of which were based on unsound science, came to naught, but it would have taken only one far-reaching proposal underpinned by some solid scientific reasoning for this vast array of funded research activity to deliver the payoff so desperately sought by the Nazi leadership.

Like lasers, for example. Or an atomic bomb.

It had also taught me just how effective—and this word, of course, glosses over the grotesque cruelty of its methods—the SS security machine had been.

The *Kammlerstab* had been protected by a triple ring of counter-intelligence agents to prevent word of its activities from leaking. If it hadn't been for Voss and Agoston, the existence of the special projects group at Skoda might never have surfaced at all.

It had been the same story at the Wenceslas Mine. A combination of active security measures and a neighboring populace that had been rounded up and removed *en masse,* and its wartime activities had all but disappeared from existence.

But there was an even more powerful reason why none of this had ever properly surfaced before.

By involving the concentration camps, the SS had unwittingly set the seal on any serious postwar investigation of the science and technology it had pursued during the conflict. Because it had been the SS, not so much Speer's Armaments Ministry, that had backed so-called high-payoff, "visionary" projects with funding, German industry found itself in league up to its collective neck with the perpetrators of the Holocaust.

Many of the companies that had benefited from SS money, and employed concentration camp labor in the process, are still in existence today.

Bosch, Siemens, Zeiss and AEG all maintained highly secretive research and development operations in Lower Silesia.

It remains in their interests for their activities at this time to stay largely undocumented. I doubted, in any case, even if they were to open up their archives, whether anything of real value remained in them. Like the records pertaining to Kammler's past, I suspected they'd long since been cleaned out.

This, I said to Marckus, was how secrets came to be locked away, buried for all time, leaving nothing but myths and legends in their aftermath.

Maybe the Nazis had initiated a flying saucer program; maybe some of the technology had borne fruit. There was certainly enough anecdotal evidence to support the view that a variety of disc-shaped craft had flown before the end of the war. It was simply that there was *no proof.*

My journey into Kammler's kingdom had opened my mind to possibilities I wouldn't have begun to entertain a few months earlier. And in the process of this willingness at least to confront new ideas, I had found myself drawn to Bad Ischl.

It was there, before leaving London, that I had arranged to meet with the family of Viktor Schauberger.

I had picked up on the Schauberger story via the Legend forwarded to me by my friend and former colleague, Lawrence Cross, in Australia. I had initially dismissed it out of hand because not being an engineer but a simple forester, what this Austrian inventor was said to have achieved technically hadn't made any sense. And the phone conversation I had had with his son Walter, who back in 1991 had urged me to visit the family-run "bio-technical institute" in the Salzkammergut mountains so I could make up my own mind, had only served to alienate me further.

But Bad Ischl was less than 15 minutes' drive time from Ebensee. And a lot had changed in the interim. I knew, for example, thanks to Podkletnov and his lab assistant's pipe smoke, that whatever antigravity was or wasn't, it had to be induced by something highly unconventional. And Schauberger's approach to the energy-generation process he referred to as "implosion"—if the Legend as relayed to me by Cross contained even a grain of truth—was certainly unconventional.

The Schaubergers maintained a large archive dedicated to Viktor's work in their house, the location of the institute, on the outskirts of Bad Ischl. If they would allow me to take a look at it, perhaps I would be able to find something, some proof, that the Germans really had developed a new and exotic propulsion medium.

They were reluctant to do so and I could understand why: It was well documented in the legends that had grown up around him that Viktor Schauberger had worked for the SS.

In my initial assessment of Schauberger's work, this association seemed to have been drawn straight from the mythology surrounding SS activities during the war and had merely compounded the case against him.

Now, of course, it was quite the reverse.

I'd reached the end of the road; told Marckus everything I'd learned. It was only when I finished that I realized he hadn't interjected once.

I thanked him for listening. He stopped me just before I cut the link.

"Call me, won't you, if you need to talk. I mean it. Day or night. Sometimes it can be good to download, clear the mind for what lies ahead."

As I journeyed on toward the mountains, I felt better about Marckus than I had in months. It was difficult to put my finger on, but it had something to do with the fact that, for once, I was telling him about material of which he had no prior knowledge. I wasn't entirely sure why, but for the first time I felt I could trust him.

Something about Marckus' final tone of voice told me something else.

I felt sure that he knew exactly what I was going through.

As soon as I crossed the Austrian border, I took a break at a rest stop, got out the laptop and pulled up Cross' notes on the Legend. The relevant portion, the part devoted to Viktor Schauberger, boiled down to the following precis:

Late in the war, despite being close to pensionable age, Schauberger was called up for active duty in the German Army. Soon afterward, he received orders to report to an SS institution in Vienna. From there, he was taken to the nearby concentration camp of Mauthausen, informed by the camp commandant that his inventions had received the blessing of Reichsführer Himmler himself, and ordered to handpick a group of engineers from among the prisoners. This would be the "team" that would help him complete his work on an energy device of radical design that Schauberger had begun working on before the war. If he did not comply with this order, the commandant informed him, he would be hanged and reprisals instituted against his family. Schauberger did as he was told.

By 1944, serious work had begun on a Schauberger machine that appeared to have a dual purpose: first as an energy generator and second as a power plant for an aerospace vehicle of saucer-like appearance. Descriptions of the workings of this generator, sometimes referred to as a "trout turbine," were always woefully inadequate. One such relayed the apparent fact that "if water or air is rotated into a twisting form of oscillation known as 'colloidal,' a buildup of energy results, which, with immense power, can cause lévitation."

Details of the chronology were hazy, Cross explained, but Schauberger's team had apparently claimed success a few days before Germany surrendered. One of the scientists who'd worked with Schauberger reportedly said that at the first attempt to run the machine "the flying saucer rose unexpectedly to the ceiling and then was wrecked. The apparatus functioned at the first attempt. . . . and rose upward trailing a blue-green and then a silver-colored glow."

The craft in question, Cross said, had a diameter of 1.5 meters, weighed 135 kilograms and was started by a small electric motor with takeoff energy supplied by the so-called trout turbine.

The next part, Cross' text alerted me, was really weird. "A few days later an American group reportedly appeared, who *seemed to understand what was happening and seized everything* (his emphasis, not mine)." Schauberger was kept under "protective U.S. custody" for six months to a year, Cross maintained, and some of his work was reportedly branded by the Americans as "atomic energy research." Cross ended up saying he had no idea what happened to Schauberger after this period.

I kept all of this in mind as I drove through Ebensee, scanning the mountains for a glimpse of the entrance to Kammler's tunnel system: the Zement complex that would have developed and manufactured the A-9/A-10 intercontinental rocket. I saw nothing but for some road signs directing visitors to a Holocaust Memorial. Zement had become a tourist attraction.

Following directions from Schauberger's grandson, Joerg, I pushed through Bad Ischl, following the River Traun through a patchy expanse of woodland until, on the left-hand side of the road, I spotted the institute, a large imposing house with a tower rising from one of its wings, the initials "PKS" painted in letters six feet high on one of its walls. It was here that the Schauberger family organized periodic lectures and seminars devoted to the heretical scientific principles promulgated by Viktor and his son Walter. Walter had since died, but *his* son Joerg continued to push the ideas that his father and grandfather had promoted for the creation of a better world.

All I knew about the Schaubergers was what I had read; that Viktor, through his early work as a forester, had developed a passionate set of theories about the essential characteristics of air and water as living, energizing media and that he viewed Nature as a complex interaction of forces that constantly created or reinvigorated matter—against the orthodox view that matter is in a natural state of decay.

Walter, a trained mathematician, had taken his father's theories a step further, merging Viktor's views with Pythagorean concepts of harmonics and the laws of planetary motion developed by Johannes Kepler. It was no coincidence, Walter believed, that a carefully cut cross section through a Pythagorean hyperbola or the elliptical planetary orbits plotted by Kepler happened to be egg-shaped, a form that was one of Nature's highest expressions of energy and strength. PKS, I remembered now, stood for Pythagoras-Kepler System.

It sounded more than a little like New Age craziness, the last place that someone with my background and training should have gone out of his way to visit; but then again, I reminded myself, maybe it was actually no crazier than NASA's Garry Lyles telling me that man would be journeying to the stars by the end of the 21st century in a spacecraft that used some kind of warp drive or wormhole.

I eased the car onto the Schaubergers' property. The institute lay at the end of a long drive. The snow-capped tops of the mountains beyond were dazzlingly bright against the blue sky.

Joerg Schauberger, Viktor's grandson, greeted me on the steps of the house and led me to the basement area where a series of small-scale experiments had been set up to demonstrate the theories developed by his father and grandfather. Viktor's maxim had been "comprehend and copy Nature" and central to this thesis had been his understanding of the vortices that occurred naturally in the environment.

These "energy spirals," as he saw them, creative whirlpools of Nature, were visible everywhere: from the spiral galaxies of the outer cosmos to the power of a tornado or simply in the whorled horn of a kudu's antler or the double helix of a DNA strand.

Nature, Viktor Schauberger had believed, employed the vortex as its most efficient conduit for the transmission of energy.

When this three-dimensional spiraling energy pattern was channeled inward, not outward, in a process Viktor called "implosion," it became endowed with "higher order" properties—characteristics which Viktor himself described as "atomic" (although his understanding of the word was quite different from that of a nuclear physicist's).These properties were capable of generating phenomenal levels of force. Transposed into machinery, Viktor had even coined a term for it: "bio-technology."

One such device, an implosion-based generator, stood disused and rusting in the corner of the basement area where Joerg Schauberger and I now viewed the fruits of his forebears' lifework.

Joerg Schauberger had signaled during our phone conversations his reluctance to prize open the family archives to a complete stranger. But he was content for me to come to Bad Ischl to plead my case. I was glad that I had. He was roughly my age and had an open, honest face. I liked him immediately. I could see that he was weighing me up every bit as carefully as I was assessing him. Both of us were entering uncertain territory. For me, his grandfather's experiments bordered on the incredible. But Joerg wasn't interested in publicity. This in itself gave me confidence. Whatever lay in the archives, I knew it would be fresh, untainted evidence, free from any kind of interpretation or bias.

Joerg was proud of his family's achievements. In the lofty, baronial entranceway of the family institute, he had shown me a cutaway section of a log flume that his grandfather had built in the forests for the efficient removal of lumbered trees.

It was then that I realized the impression painted of Viktor Schauberger in the Legend was a misleading one. Schauberger wasn't a forester in the strict sense of the word. He was an engineer; and from the look of the machinery around the house an extremely accomplished one. His milieu happened to be the forest.

Now, as we stood beside the implosion machine, his grandson spelled out his fears. Others had documented Viktor Schauberger's experiments, he told me; there was little, he believed, I or anybody else could add to this body of knowledge—the more so in my case, as, by my own admission, the science of the processes involved wasn't principally what had led me here.

I was after proof of a technology that conventional science said was impossible.

If, as the Legend had it, his grandfather had cooperated with the SS, what did his family and its reputation possibly have to gain from my seeing the archives?

I had thought long and hard about this during my drive through Germany, but whichever way I cut it, there was nothing reassuring to say.

So I told him instead about the journey that had brought me to his house; about the series of statements in 1956 by U.S. aerospace companies that the conquest of gravity was imminent, that all that was required to make it happen—to usher in an era of clean, fuelless propulsion technology, of free energy—was money and a little application from the U.S. government.

I told him about Thomas Townsend Brown's efforts at much the same time to interest the U.S. Air Force and Navy in an electrogravitically powered Mach 3 flying saucer and how aspects of Brown's ideas had emerged in the B-2 Stealth Bomber more than three decades later.

I told him how Evgeny Podkletnov had defied the theoreticians of NASA's Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program by engineering a device that shielded gravity by as much as five percent and how, officially, Brown's work had been discredited by the U.S. military—despite its very real application to the B-2.

We spoke, as well, about the glaring discrepancy between General Twining's view in 1947 that the development of a manned aircraft with the operating characteristics of a UFO was "within the present U.S. knowledge" and the fact that, even in the black world of modern U.S. aerospace technology, there were so few traces of this knowledge it was as if it had never existed.

Which had brought me to the Germans.

There was, via the Kammler trail, a mounting body of evidence that the Nazis, in their desperation to win the war, had been experimenting with a form of science the rest of the world had never remotely considered. And that somewhere in this cauldron of ideas, a new technology had been born; one that was so far ahead of its time it had been suppressed for more than half a century.

Joerg Schauberger's grandfather, I felt sure, was integral to the truth of what had happened at that time. But unlike the Wenceslas Mine, where few traces of Sporrenberg's court testimony remained on view, Viktor Schauberger had left records. That, I told his grandson, was why I was here.

At this, he gave an almost imperceptible nod and indicated we should head upstairs. It was getting late and there was a lot of material we needed to get through in the short space of time I was in Bad Ischl.

Like me, he said, pausing at the base of the steps that led to the upper levels of the house, he was only interested in the truth. In the complex world his grandfather had lived in, it was a commodity that was not always so easy to get a handle on.

It was then that I understood. Joerg Schauberger had been trying to assemble his own jigsaw puzzle—one that explained the intricate mystery of his grandfather's life.

I held pieces of the puzzle he didn't possess.

In regulating the movement of water via dams and irrigation schemes, man had obstructed the complex, vortex flow patterns that water naturally adopted for itself, Viktor Schauberger said, causing widespread degeneration and decay in the ecosystem. Harnessed in this unnatural state, water, he came to believe, acted as a pollutant upon the earth, not a life force.

In seeking to come up with methods to restore the earth's ecological balance, he turned to the development of "bio-technical" machinery and promoted his ideas through books, some of which came to the attention of Berlin.

In 1934, a year after Hitler came to power, Schauberger was summoned to the German capital to explain to his Führer and fellow countryman how processes of natural motion and temperature and the vital relationship between soil, water and vegetation combined to create a sustainable and viable society; a society, in effect, that was at ease with itself.

At the meeting was Max Planck, the great German physicist and pioneer of quantum theory, who when asked by Hitler at the end of Schauberger's talk what he thought of his theories replied testily, "Science has nothing to do with Nature" and withdrew from the discussion. Hitler nonetheless asked his technical and economic advisers what could be done to incorporate Schauberger's ideas into the country's four-year economic plan, but nothing ever came of it.

For his part, Schauberger told Hitler that the short-termism of Germany's economic strategy would undermine and ultimately destroy the country's biological foundations.

As a result, he said, the thousand-year Reich would be lucky if it lasted ten.

By using an "impeller"—a propeller that induced an inward-, instead of outward-flowing motion—to draw water through a tube, a flow pattern Schauberger referred to as "centripetal [the opposite of centrifugal] force," he found that the output he was getting was nine times greater than could be achieved with a conventional pressure turbine.

His early egg-shaped implosion machines were also generating extremely high vacuum effects.

By substituting air for water, Schauberger began to envisage a device that with some refinement could be put to use as a radical form of aero-engine; one that sucked rather than pushed its way through the atmosphere.

In 1939, he conceived of a device that could be put to use either as an energy generator or as a power plant for aircraft or submarines. In the application he lodged to the Reich Patent Office the following year, Schauberger described the essential characteristics of this machine as a "multistage centrifuge with concentrically juxtaposed pressure chambers."

Shortly afterward, he wrote to his cousin that he had invented an aircraft that didn't make any noise.

With these devices, Schauberger realized he had created an entirely new methodology for propelling vehicles through air and water.

As Joerg Schauberger and I settled into the archive, which was crammed full with the old man's files and papers, it was clear that Viktor Schauberger had documented every turn of his career in meticulous detail.

Through his letters, duplicates of which he always placed on file, it was possible to paint an intricate profile of the man and his inventions. The challenge, even for his family, lay in decoding the shorthand Schauberger had used to decribe his work.

During the war, he had concentrated on the development of several types of machine—the Repulsator and Repulsine for water purification and distillation, the Implosion Motor for electricity generation, the Trout Turbine for submarine propulsion and a "flying saucer" that used air instead of water as its driving medium. Because they all worked on the same principles, Schauberger tended to interchange the names of these devices and their applications when it suited him.

So, when Viktor wrote in 1940 that he had commissioned a company in Berlin called Kaempfer to build a "Repulsator," it wasn't immediately apparent what this machine was for. It was only when he ran into contractual difficulties with Kaempfer, which was having enormous problems manufacturing the machine to Viktor's demanding specifications, that its function became clear.

By February 1941, Viktor had switched contractors to the Kertl company in Vienna, and here, in correspondence, he described the prototype (which he was building at his own expense) as having a two-fold purpose: to investigate "free energy production" and to validate his theories of "levitational flight."

The machine relied on a turbine plate of waviform construction that fitted onto a similarly molded base plate. The gap between the plates was whorl-shaped, mimicking the corkscrew action of a kudu's antler.

Having drawn air in via the intake, the rapidly rotating turbine propelled it to the rim of the rotating mass under centrifugal force.

The vortex movement of air created by the waviform gap between the plates led to its rapid cooling and "densation," producing a massive reduction in volume and generating a vacuum of enormous pressure, which sucked more air into the turbine.

t
B
S
D
W
C
S
A
E
t

The machine required a small starter motor to commence the process (as depicted in the Legend), but having whipped the turbine up to around 15,000-20,000 rpm the motor was turned off and the operation became self-sustaining.

By connecting the machine to a gear shaft, electricity could be generated from it; or left to its own devices, it could be made to take off.

This capacity to fly Schauberger partly attributed to the creation of the vacuum in the rarefied region immediately above the plates. But the primary levitating force, he claimed, was due to some other process altogether—a reaction between the air molecules in their newly excited state and the body of the machine itself.

Here, we had touched on the heart of the matter: Had Viktor Schauberger created an "antigravity" device?

If the files were anything to go by, the answer was unequivocal.

Soon after work on the device restarted at Kertl, an associate of Schauberger's made an unauthorized test run while Schauberger was absent from the plant. During this experiment, the machine generated such a powerful levitational force that it shot upward, smashing against the roof of the hangar.

Schauberger's correspondence makes it clear that March 1941 was when things really started to happen. It was then, while work began on repairing the Kertl device, that the Gestapo, the secret police arm of the SS, became aware of his work.

That same month, he reported that Professor Ernst Heinkel, inventor of the world's first jet aircraft, was also showing an interest in his technology.

In fact, Professor Heinkel had illegally obtained sight of Schauberger's patent application at the Reich Patent Office and, without the Austrian inventor's knowledge, had begun to incorporate his ideas into a Heinkel project—one that is presumed by some who have studied the Schauberger archive to have been the He 280 fighter, which made its maiden jet-powered flight on March 30, 1941.

While it is known that development of the He 280 ran into technical problems, especially in the area of its troubled HeS 8 turbojets, there is no confirmation that the He 280 was the aircraft in question. And so I found myself wrestling with a heretical notion. It could just as easily have been the "Flying Top" proof-of-concept vehicle supposedly being built by Rudolf Schriever in a "garage" under Heinkel's guidance at Marienehe, near Rostock on the Baltic coast. Try as I might to resist the notion, it would be bolstered by additional data on Heinkel in the space of a few more minutes.

The Schriever story was part of the legend that had grown up around Rudolf Lusar's *German Secret Weapons of World War II,* the book that had drawn me into the contentious area of German flying disc research. In it, Lusar, who had been well informed on all other aspects of Geman secret weapons activity, made the bold assertion that the first Nazi flying saucer projects commenced in 1941 and that the research was centered on two places: Prague and Breslau.

Heinkel coerced the patent office into restricting the use of Schauberger's technology to water purification and distillation applications, leaving Heinkel free to make fraudulent use of Schauberger's innovations in his aircraft projects. When the Reich Patent Office offered Schauberger a patent on this basis, the Austrian refused and consequently had his application turned down.

In May 1941, Schauberger was formally approached by the "Gestapo," who served him notice (in the company of his patent lawyers) that they would not restrict his work—far from it—but in future he had to pursue it in secret.

This meeting appears to be the trigger for a period of highly covert activity in Schauberger's life, about which he leaves few clues in his letters. Weeks after his meeting with the Gestapo (which, in Schauberger-speak, could just as easily have been any SS personnel), he wrote to his son Walter saying he was in Gablonz (present-day Jablonec) in Czechoslovakia and that "what I am doing is secret."

Today, Jablonec is almost exactly where the Czech, German and Polish borders meet. During the war, it was bang in the heart of Kammler's high-tech kingdom.

In a letter the following month, Schauberger told his son that he had an agreement with a "factory" in the Sudeten region which was undertaking unspecified "research." This factory appears to be one and the same place Schauberger had mentioned earlier: Gablonz.

Looking at the map and trying not to be seduced by the Legend, I noted that Gablonz was conveniently located between Prague and Breslau.

In the same correspondence, Schauberger reveals two other facts of significance: first that work at Kertl (apparently on repairs to the device that smashed against the roof of the hangar) is "going so slowly it is as if someone is deliberately trying to slow it down"; and that he has become aware that Heinkel has stolen his ideas.

Schauberger also reveals that his source in the Heinkel matter is a member of the "secret police"—a term Schauberger used interchangeably with "SS."

In July 1941, Schauberger describes how "an intermediary" has approached him in a bid to rectify certain problems Heinkel was experiencing with the technology he had lifted from Schauberger's patent application. With ill-concealed *schadenfreude*', Schauberger reveals that Heinkel's engineers have made a mistake copying his design, and that he knows what the error is. Through his dialogue with the intermediary, Schauberger believes that Heinkel is trying to substitute conventional engine technology with technology of his own.

On the face of it, this ought to mean one of two things: that the compressor technology of the troubled He 280's HeS 8 turbojets had been marked for replacement by Schauberger turbine components, the "centripetal compressors" of his successful 1936 patent application; or that Heinkel was attempting to swap complete Schauberger power-plant units for the underperforming HeS 8 turbojets.

The first explanation makes little sense. Adding a "centripetal compressor"—one that causes air to flow radially inward—would have destroyed the carefully tailored flow dynamics of the HeS 8 engine, which was a centrifugal gas turbine based on a principle diametrically opposed to the Schauberger implosion technique.

The second explanation is equally vexing. Strapping Schauberger's engines, which worked on a suction principle, onto the He 280 would have made a total nonsense of the aircraft's graceful aerodynamics.

History, in any case, tells us that the Air Ministry (RLM) would give the He 280 a production order only if Heinkel substituted the HeS 8 engine for BMW 003 or Jumo 004 axial-flow turbojets. Neither of these would fit, so the entire project was scrapped.

There has never been any mention in Heinkel files, so far as I am aware, of any association between the He 280 project and Viktor Schauberger.

This process of elimination allowed me to entertain the notion with greater confidence than I had earlier that Heinkel had been working on some altogether different form of air vehicle—one that would have worked best with a Schauberger engine, not a gas turbine; and one that has never come to light.

It is interesting to note that the legend of the Schriever Flying Top makes specific mention of the fact that construction of full-sized disc-shaped vehicles was transferred from Heinkel's Marienehe facility at Rostock to Czechoslovakia in 1943.

From late 1941, Schauberger's correspondence makes it plain that he is busily engaged in secret work in Czechoslovakia. In late 1941, he found himself in a "weapons factory" at Neudek (now Nejdek) near Karlsbad (Karlovy Vary), around 120 km southwest of Gablonz. In December 1941, he was back in Gablonz eagerly awaiting the arrival of a starter motor—presumably, the little electric engine that was needed to kick-start his implosion device. At one point he tells his son that he is having to make frequent visits to the train station at Reichenberg (today, Libérée in the Czech Republic) to see if the "apparatus" has arrived.

In early 1942, Schauberger transferred to the Messerschmitt prototype works at Augsburg in Bavaria. There, he worked on the further development of a Repulsator implosion machine. In his correspondence, it is not clear if this is the same machine as the ones on which he was working in secret at the two locations in the Czech Republic, although it seems unlikely. What appears to be the case is that Schauberger's work was central to a number of parallel activities during 1941 and 1942: Heinkel's mysterious work at Marienehe, the two secret weapons factories in Czechoslovakia, the Kertl company in Vienna and Messerschmitt at Augsburg.

From Schauberger's writings, we know what happened to the Kertl and Messerschmitt machines. Work on the former ceased due to the company's inability to obtain essential supplies for the repair of the damaged device. This is not unreasonable, given Germany's growing inability to get hold of strategic raw materials from this period on, but Schauberger still voices his doubts, being convinced that somebody has ordered the work to be slowed deliberately.

The Messerschmitt device suffered a catastrophic failure due to the use of substandard casting techniques (and probably low-grade metal alloys) during the manufacture of the turbine. According to Schauberger it suffered a "meltdown" as soon as it reached its maximum rotational velocity. A company in Vienna, Ernst Kubiznak, was ordered to repair the device under a "Führer directive," but this, like the Kertl work, appears to have come to naught.

This leaves the Heinkel work and the secret activities in Czechoslovakia.

After the war, when Schauberger picked up on rumors of German flying saucers that supposedly flew near Prague during the closing stages of the conflict, he voiced his conviction that these were developments of his own ideas—and, given the way Heinkel had behaved, this may have been the case. It was already quite clear that the Sudeten region was the epicenter of some of the Nazis' most secret and unconventional research of the war period. But flying saucers? Antigravity propulsion?

In April 1944, after a yearlong period of inactivity, Schauberger was summoned before a "draft panel" of the Waffen-SS.

In June, he traveled to Breslau, ostensibly to join an SS-Panzergrenadier division. But more than six months before the Red Army had battled its way to the gates of the city—before Gauleiter Hanke had sifted the citizenry of Breslau for men far fitter than Schauberger—it is ludicrous to suppose that the SS would have recruited an Austrian of his age to fight in the defense of a patch of the Fatherland hundreds of kilometers from his home. In April 1944, Schauberger was 59 years old.

Given the SS penchant for extreme secrecy, coupled to the fact that Schauberger had already been up to his eyes in secret program work in Czechoslovakia, it is infinitely more likely that the Panzergrenadier story was a cover and that Schauberger was taken to Breslau for a specific purpose; one that played to his primary talent as an inventor.

This would have been an ill-disciplined leap of faith, a lapse in cold reasoning on my part, but for one thing.

By June 1944, the SS was almost a year into its takeover of the German secret weapons industry. Bit by bit, the Luftwaffe and the Wehrmacht were being eased out of arms production. In spite of the failures at Kertl and Messerschmitt, there is ample justification—based on what happened next—to assume that the Czech-based projects had validated at least some of Schauberger's ideas.

A month previously, a month *before* Schauberger went to Breslau, he was ordered to Mauthausen concentration camp to handpick a team from among the inmates to start building as many as five different types of Schauberger machine. This is confirmed by the Schauberger archive. The SS wanted him to stop "tinkering around with prototypes and begin serious construction work."

Somewhere along the line, someone must have been convinced that the technology worked.

The essential point, the point that made the hairs on the back of my neck stand on end as I settled into the part of Schauberger's diary that dealt with the last six months of the war, was one of which Viktor himself would have been unaware as he arrived outside the stone walls of Mauthausen camp in that summer of 1944. The big picture, which was in the possession of a mere handful of individuals in Berlin, was that the concentration camps were the designated *production* engines of the "state within the state," as Speer had called the SS; the grim new powerhouses of the Reich economy.

Viewed this way, it shed light on Schauberger's frantic activities during 1941, when his feet had hardly touched the ground as he dashed between project locations in Germany, Austria and Czechoslovakia, a time that could now be reinterpreted as the start date for prototype work of a diverse and highly secret nature; work that continued until early 1944, when the SS became satisfied that the machines were ready for manufacture.

The immediate task of Schauberger's handpicked team at Mauthausen was to produce engineering drawings from which production work could begin.

Schauberger's diaries tell us what these machines were. One was a water purifier. Another was an energy device capable of generating high-voltage electricity. A third was for "biosynthesizing" hydrogen fuel from water. A fourth was a machine that "naturally" produced intense heat or cold. The fifth, dubbed the *"fleigende scheibe,* "or "flying saucer," was the unconventional aero-engine that had come to the attention of Heinkel and others during 1941. It was this latter device that I now focused on.

Schauberger set up design offices in the SS technical engineer school, in the Rosenhugel district of Vienna.

Working under oppressive conditions, effectively at gunpoint, he managed to gain a number of key concessions from the SS. Telling them that he needed personally to select his team from Mauthausen's inmates and that these men should be removed from the camp environment, fed and clothed properly if they were to work productively, he was able to extract around 25 former technicians from the camp and set them up in workshops nearby.

The first set of preproduction drawings were signed off on in August 1944 and delivered from the engineer school to these facilities. Schauberger moved between the two sites, his visits to Mauthausen increasing in frequency as metal was cut on the propulsion device, which he referred to sporadically in the text as the Repulsine (even though this name had come to be associated in former years with other projects).

By early October 1944, Schauberger's diary shows that he was already starting to mill components for the Repulsine. On October 6, he made the first preproduction drawings of a part of the device he refers to as the *Schaufelentwurf,* a design for a cone-shaped air intake that bolted onto the top of the disc.

Five days later, work is interrupted by the first of many air raid alerts as Vienna and its environs are hit by Flying Fortresses on daylight missions against local industrial targets. Mauthausen was close to Linz, home of the Hermann Goering Works, a giant heavy engineering complex. It is clear from these and other entries that Schauberger was racing against the clock to complete his task.

On October 14, he wrote: "I wish I could work longer, but I have to stop at four in the afternoon. There is a shortage of materials and tools. I had to construct parts today from an old tank." Because much of the raw material was of low quality, he instructed his team to be particularly mindful of heat stresses and welding quality.

It was also clear that he was being forced to shift between projects as demands required. On October 23, he turned his attention to developing a more efficient carburetor for Opel Blitz army trucks, presumably on the instructions of the SS, an activity that distracted him for the best part of ten days. On November 4, one of the water-based devices needed his design input. On November 26, it was the turn of the Repulsine again—the electric starter motor needed to be checked and fitted.

The team worked on the Repulsine on Christmas Day and on into the New Year, all the while having to contend with power cuts and air raids. Finally, on February 28, Schauberger moved his operations center to the little village of Leonstein in Upper Austria. The decision was a fateful one on two counts. It not only took him away from the bombing, but placed him squarely in what would later become the U.S. zone of occupation. Had he stayed in Vienna, Schauberger would have found himself in the Soviet zone of influence.

In light of what happened to him in the days, weeks and months that followed the end of the war, it might have been the softer option.

On April 5, 1945, the diary reveals that final assembly of the Repulsine had commenced. A month later, it was ready to go. But the end, when it came, was almost surreal. Instead of firing up the turbine for its first test run as planned on May 6, Schauberger awoke to find that the SS officers charged with oversight of the operation had fled into the night. The team stopped work on May 8, hours before the surrender of German forces took effect at a minute past midnight on May 9.

The SS machine had not flown in the last days of the war, as the Legend had maintained, but in almost all other respects it had held up remarkably well.

The diary had made it clear that Viktor Schauberger had built a machine that had flown earlier in the war at Kertl (and almost certainly during Schauberger's secret period of research in Czechoslovakia). It was also quite clear that the device's modus operandi was wholly unconventional—that is to say, the method by which it generated lift was insufficiently explained by current scientific knowledge.

The diary had given me something I could believe in at long last.

Via Schauberger, the Nazis had been deeply involved—no question—in what can only be described as flying saucer technology. And from this flowed the corollary that other parts of the Legend were perhaps also based on fact.

Couple the Schauberger evidence with what I had seen in the *Lusty* files and suddenly it wasn't so hard anymore to believe that the Germans had developed prototype remote-controlled air vehicles—craft that had the ability to latch onto the exhaust wakes of Allied bombers or the infrared signatures of the aircraft themselves—that explained many of the foo-fighter sightings of 1944 and 1945.

It was also highly likely that some of these "conventionally powered" German disc-shaped craft were test beds for Schauberger-type propulsion systems.

And therein lay another subset to the mystery.

Something about this whole strand of development had conspired to make it the most classified form of technology in existence. Even more so than the bomb.

Unlike the bomb, however, this was a secret that had held for more than 50 years.

Days after the end of the war, U.S. intelligence agents found Schauberger in Leonstein and apprehended him. Exactly as the Legend had it, the agents, who were almost certainly Counter-intelligence Corps—the same outfit that had detained and interrogated Skoda's director, Wilhelm Voss—were remarkably well informed about his entire operation. It was as if, Schauberger noted later, someone had guided them directly to him.

Across the country, at almost exactly the same moment, Russian intelligence agents located and entered his apartment in Vienna. They removed anything of value they could lay their hands on, then blew the place up, presumably to prevent anyone else from discovering information they had overlooked.

For the next nine months, until March 1946, Schauberger was held under close house arrest and extensively debriefed by U.S. technical intelligence about his activities during the war. Years later, he disclosed that it was his knowledge of "atomic" energy that had got the Americans so vexed. This is understandable. The merest suggestion that Schauberger had engaged in nuclear research would have set alarm bells ringing at the local headquarters of Boris Pash's Alsos agents, the U.S. team charged with scouring the former Reich for atomic weapons activity.

And yet, it would have taken the CIC and Alsos days, if that, to ascertain that what Schauberger had really been up to had nothing to do with a Nazi bomb or even atomic energy production—at least, not in the sense Los Alamos understood it.

That night, back at my hotel, I applied myself to a study of the Schauberger effect that had been written up by a researcher named Callum Coats. I had picked up a copy of one of his books at the Schauberger institute. In it, there was a description of what happened when a Repulsine was rotated at 20,000 rpm. The high rotation speeds appeared to cause the air molecules passing through the turbine to pack so tightly together that their molecular and nuclear binding energies were affected in a way that triggered the antigravity effect. "A point is reached where a large number of electrons and protons with opposite charges and directions of spin are forced into collision and annihilate with one another," Coats wrote. "As lower rather than higher orders of energy and the basic building blocks of atoms, they are upwardly extruded as it were out of the physical and into virtual states."

Virtual states? What the hell did that mean?

A few paragraphs on, Coats elaborated on this theme: "Through the interaction between centrifugal and centripetal forces functioning on a common axis, he was able implosively to return or re-transmute the physical form (water or air) into its primary energetic matrix—a non-spatial, 4th, or 5th dimensional state, which has nothing to do with the three dimensions of physical existence."

"I stand face-to-face with the apparent 'void,' the compression of dematerialization that we are wont to call a 'vacuum,' " Schauberger had written in his diary on August 14, 1936. "I can now see that we are able to create anything we wish for ourselves out of this 'nothing.' '

More than 60 years after Schauberger had consigned these thoughts to paper, I had stood in the Austin, Texas, offices of Dr. Hal Puthoff and listened to the American's descriptions of a near-identical scientific process. *All you had to do—somehow—was perturb the zero-point energy field around an object and, hey presto, it would take off.*

Long before the term had ever been coined, Schauberger had been describing the interaction of his machines with vacuum energy—the zero-point energy field.

Part of the contribution to the craft's ascent, Coats explained, was due to a quasi-aerodynamic phenomenon—something I knew as the "Coanda effect." But another part came from the expulsion of the densely compressed "emulsion" of molecules and atoms that had not been "virtualized" as they passed through the gill-like slits of the craft's

Teil Nr.	Gegenstand	Stückzahl	Material	Norm Nr.	Gewicht	Bemerkung

Buchstabe	Buchstabe kommt vor	ÄNDERUNG	Datum	Name

Gezeichnet
Geprüft
Genehmigt

VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER

Ersatz für
Ersetzt durch

Maßstab: 1:1;

Apparat - Repulsine Type ~~IV~~. V
Z. Nr. 70 Rotor-Oberteil

Nr d. Zeichng. **71**

compressor blades. This would have produced a glowing bluish-white luminescent discharge akin to ionization, exactly as described in the Legend.

I closed the book and reached for the large manila envelope that Joerg Schauberger had given me before I left his home.

"Drawing No. 71," signed off on by Schauberger at Mauthausen, showed the simple innards of the *Schaufelentwurf,* the design for the shovel intake, that had bolted onto the top of the craft. I pressed the drawing flat, amazed that a thing of such organic grace should have come from a place that had once been the embodiment of evil. I thought, too, of the effect this must have had on the fragile psyche of the onetime forester, the man who had wanted to bequeath his grandchildren's generation—my generation—a limitless source of safe energy, to do good for the world, but who'd ended up working for the machinery of the Holocaust.

Chapter 22

The sun was just hitting the peaks of the Salzkammergut and the roads were all but empty. Two and a half hours to Munich airport via Bavaria, the cradle of Nazism, and I could box up this whole thing and head home. The beauty of the topography and the shadows of the past were inextricable. It was time to move forward again.

I now had a sequence of events that allowed many of the pieces to fall into place. I had seen the plans of a craft that had drawn on a source of energy that could not be explained by conventional science. The Germans, a people who knew the value of good engineering when they saw it, had had sufficient confidence in the technology to throw money and resources at it. When all else fails, follow the money. It rarely lies.

It must have freaked the Americans out.

At the end of the war, the U.S. Counter Intelligence Corps, the CIC, had spent nine months debriefing Schauberger. They would rapidly have come to realize that implosion technology had nothing to do with "nuclear" energy in the bomb sense, even though Schauberger himself described the processes at work as "atomic."

What they would have learned, however, would have been no less unsettling.

Schauberger believed that his machines were generating an antigravity effect whose power potential was unlimited.

The CIC agents would have had little comprehension of the mechanics of the device—why should they?—but somebody must have been spooked by it. Why else did they incarcerate the old man for nine months? Why else did they threaten him?

By the early part of 1946, following the debriefings and their admonition to Schauberger never again to involve himself in "atomic" science, the CIC would have had in its possession the rudiments of an entirely new propulsion medium—one that 18 months later would have allowed General Nathan Twining, head of the USAAF's Air Materiel Command, to admit to a subordinate in a classified memorandum that it was possible "within the present U.S. knowledge—provided extensive detailed development is undertaken—to construct a piloted aircraft" with the operating characteristics of a UFO; a craft that seemingly defied the laws of physics.

What had happened to this knowledge?

Part of the answer, I felt sure, lay in some curious synchronicity between the final months of Viktor Schauberger's life and events that had started to unfold at around the same time in quiet corners of the North American aerospace industry.

In the spring of 1958, Schauberger, by now 72 years old and in poor health, was visited by Karl Gerchsheimer, a German-American acting as an intermediary for a U.S. financier and multimillionaire named Robert Donner, who had heard of Schauberger's inventions and wanted to develop and implement them in America.

Gerchsheimer, a 55-year-old German living in the U.S.A., was a man with a colorful past. He left Germany in 1922, eventually settling in Texas in 1937. During the war, he appears to have been deeply involved in U.S. counterespionage activities, ending up as an intelligence agent, almost certainly for the CIC. From the war's end in 1945 to 1950, he was the U.S. civilian property administrator-in-chief in charge of all civil administration, logistics, transport and accommodation for the U.S. army of occupation, and in this role was described as "the most powerful nonmilitary individual in the U.S. zone." In 1950, he returned to the U.S., where he set up a metal fabrication business that ended up doing significant business, ironically, with NASA.

It was during the '50s, according to Callum Coats' book, that Gerchsheimer met Donner, the retired former owner of the Donner Steelworks in Philadelphia. Donner, Coats wrote, was a "patriot who waged constant war against subversive activity in the United States." Between them, Gerchsheimer and Donner became sold on the idea that there had to be an alternative to the use of explosive forces to generate power and motion—a view that Gerchsheimer, through his NASA work, even took up with the master of rocketry himself, Wernher von Braun.

In 1957, Gerchsheimer came to Schauberger's home in Austria, telling him that there were millions of research dollars waiting for him in the United States and an engineering facility in Sherman, Texas, that was all ready to implement his ideas for safe, clean energy production. All he had to do was cross the Atlantic and make it happen. Schauberger, who was suffering from emphysema and a bad heart, took some persuasion, but eventually agreed, the stipulation being that he would stay just long enough to get things up and running—around three months—before returning home to Austria. His son Walter, a trained physicist and mathematician, would remain on in the U.S.A. for a year to turn his ideas into blueprints from which the Americans could put his implosion technology into production.

Throughout this dialogue, it is clear that Schauberger felt that Gerchsheimer had come to him as some kind of representative of the U.S. government. And while Gerchsheimer subsequently denied this, his evident connections with U.S. law enforcement and intelligence agencies, connections that he never hid from the Schaubergers, merely reinforced the view in the inventor's mind that the offer carried official U.S. sanction. This impression was compounded when Viktor and Walter arrived in the States and Gerchsheimer and Donner tapped physicists at the National Atomic Research Laboratories at Brookhaven, Long Island, for expert advice on implosion technology. Seven weeks after the Schaubergers' arrival in Texas, Gerchsheimer instructed them to write up separate reports about implosion, then forwarded them to Brookhaven for analysis.

At first, Viktor Schauberger was happy to go along with the Gerchsheimer/Donner plan because at long last he believed here was something that would allow him to implement his free-energy ideas for the benefit of mankind. But as the weeks dragged into months, and negotiations in the high heat of Texas turned sticky, Schauberger's health became ever more fragile and he yearned increasingly to go home.

Gerchsheimer and Donner, meanwhile, had become frustrated at the painfully slow pace with which Schauberger was transcribing his ideas onto paper, and the whole relationship broke down.

Prepared to do anything that would enable him to get home quickly, Schauberger made the cardinal error of signing a document that he had not bothered to translate properly. When, later, he fully absorbed the text of it, he realized that everything he owned—models, sketches, prototypes, reports, even intellectual property—had become the sole possession of the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium.

The release form also stipulated—just as U.S. intelligence agents had, 12 years earlier—that Schauberger was to commit himself to total silence on the subject of implosion and that any further ideas he might develop were never to be discussed with anyone other than designated U.S. personnel.

It was the last straw. On September 25, five days after arriving back in Linz, Viktor Schauberger died a broken man.

There was no point looking for any explanation of this tragedy on the

U.S. side. Other researchers had petitioned U.S. intelligence agencies under the Freedom of Information Act for papers relating to Schauberger's period in Texas, but had been blocked by officialdom, which would neither confirm nor deny the existence of such records, always citing the National Security Act of 1947.

In seeking to find something that explained this final sequence of events in Schauberger's life from the Austrian's side, however, I had come across a small, almost throwaway reference in the Schauberger archive that had seemed to act as the trigger for it.

Shortly before the Gerchsheimer approach, Schauberger records that he was contacted by two aircraft companies, one American, the other Canadian, and that they both offered him substantial sums of money—the U.S. company, according to Schauberger, pitched its bid at $3.5 million—for the rights to acquire his propulsion ideas.

Schauberger never referred to either firm by name, but as this period coincided exactly with the rise of John Frost's shadowy Special Projects Group and its design of a top secret Mach 3-4 flying saucer for the U.S. Air Force—Project Y2/Silverbug—the Canadian company could only have been Avro. No other Canadian aerospace firm at that time was remotely engaged in such advanced technology work.

I recalled my long phone conversation with Frost's son and his revelation that his father had once made a secret visit to West Germany in 1953. There, at a "Canadian/U.K. government installation," according to declassified documents in Canada, John Frost had met with an engineer who claimed to have worked on a flying saucer project at a site near Prague in 1944-45. Since Frost was probing in all the right areas, he would inevitably have come across Schauberger's work; the engineer whom he debriefed might even have known him personally.

Schauberger rejected both offers because neither company would meet his twin overarching demands: that his turbine should be used "for the common good"—i.e. for commercial aviation purposes—and that the deal should be made public.

This period, of course, also coincided with the period in which George S. Trimble of the Martin Aircraft company, backed by his counterparts in other aerospace firms across the U.S.A., was talking up the conquest of gravity and the impact this breakthrough would have on air and space flight. The world, they announced, was poised on the brink of an era in which free, clean energy would be the norm; and one day, they predicted, it would take us to the stars. In 1955, Trimble had set up RIAS—Martin's Research Institute for Advanced Studies—-whose charter had been "to observe phenomena of Nature and to encourage, promote and support investigations in search of underlying knowledge of these phenomena . . . to discover fundamental laws . . . and to evolve new technical concepts for the improvement and welfare of mankind."

RIAS' charter could have been Schauberger's own.

And look at what had happened next.

No sooner had people started showing an interest in Schauberger again than a man with clear ties to the U.S. intelligence community turns up on his doorstep, tempts him over to the United States and shuts his operation down—permanently.

In 1956, Trimble and others announce to the world that gravity can be harnessed in the same space of time it took to develop the atomic bomb.

Within two more years, all of the companies that had been waxing to the rooftops about the coming antigravity revolution had fallen silent on the subject. By 1960, it was as if none of them had ever even thought of it.

In the meantime, Avro Canada, the only company in the world to have openly admitted to working on a flying saucer—a dog of a thing that has trouble even getting off the ground—has had the rights to the real but highly secret technology, the supersonic models that show phenomenal promise, acquired by the United States. Then that operation is shut down, too.

John Frost, the man who headed up Avro's Special Projects Group, takes its secrets to his grave and George Trimble, many years into his retirement, gets spooked by a seemingly mundane journalistic inquiry 40 years on from these events.

I returned to that central question. What was it about these complementary technologies—the saucer airframe and antigravity propulsion—that had caused such extreme and violent reactions in people directly linked to them?

For the next three decades, no one in scientific circles would have dared discuss these twin strands of development for fear of the ridicule it would have brought upon them. The cult of the UFO—a phenomenon that has clearly been "spun" by the military-intelligence community from time to time—simply made this worse. It was only in the 1990s, as NASA and other scientists began to strive for propulsion methods that far outstrip today's state of the art, that the whole antigravity business started to gain currency again outside the black world. But even then, you had to proceed with caution.

But the real mystery was this. If the principles of antigravity technology had been available since the war—earlier, perhaps, if T.T. Brown's contribution should be given credit—then why were some of the best math and science brains on the planet still struggling to develop the theory underpinning it?

It was this question, I knew, that would take me back to the States one last time.

Shortly before I boarded my flight at Munich, I checked my cell phone for messages. There were four and Dan Marckus had left three of them. Whatever was on his mind, I knew I was on to something, because, for once, Marckus was chasing me.

With one eye on the departure gate and another on the clock, I called him back.

Even over the bustle of movement in the departure hall and the static of a bad line, I could tell something was definitely up.

"You need to get yourself to Sheffield the middle of next week," Marckus said, his voice scarcely audible. "Podkletnov's come out of hiding. He's going to be talking about his gravity-shielding experiments to a small group of invitees at the university there—aerospace industry and defense ministry types mainly. It isn't a closed session, so you should be able to get yourself on the list. Go talk to him. Something tells me he knows a lot more than he's letting on."

An airline official at the desk was looking at her watch and beckoning for my ticket. I was about to sign off, when Marckus stopped me.

"There's something else," he said.

I showed the girl my ticket and passport and carried on talking while I proceeded to the aircraft.

Marckus started to talk about the experiment down the mine. He'd got my email and now he wanted to talk physics.

"Dan, I'm about to get on the bloody airplane. This can wait, can't it?"

"I know what they were trying to do," he said simply.

I stopped a few paces short of the door of the aircraft.

"I know what the Bell was really about," he repeated.

My tone softened. "OK, go ahead. I'm listening." I was staring out of a small window at the end of the jetway. The rain was beating down on the wings of the aircraft. I could see passengers settling into their newspapers through the fuselage windows.

"They were trying to generate a torsion field."

"What is a torsion field?"

"Laternentrager means 'lantern holder.' But it's the second code name that's the giveaway. *Chronos.* You know what it means, don't you?"

"Yes, Dan. I know what it means. What is a torsion field? What does it do?"

"If you generate a torsion field of sufficient magnitude the theory says you can bend the four dimensions of space around the generator. The more torsion you generate, the more space you perturb." He paused momentarily, long enough for me to make the connection. "When you bend space, you also bend time."

Chronos.

The third experiment in NASA's BPP study and the one that Puthoff had predicted would be the first to yield a result.

""Now, do you understand what they were trying to do?"

I said nothing. It was Marckus who closed the loop.

"They were trying to build a fucking time machine," he said.

Chapter 23

Viewed from the back of the lecture theater, Dr. Evgeny Podkletnov, the man who claimed to have nullified gravity, cut a slight, shy figure as he gazed up at his audience, a mixed gathering of academics and defense industry types.

Wearing my Jane's hat, I had managed to get myself invited to the Russian's presentation by Dr. Ron Evans of BAE Systems, formerly British Aerospace or plain "BAe." It was Evans who single-handedly ran the giant aerospace and defense company's antigravity effort, Project Greenglow. BAE, I was given to understand, had sponsored Podkletnov's trip to the U.K.

Evans' name was one of the two I'd scribbled down in my notes after Professor Brian Young's lecture, "Antigravity: The End of Aerodynamics?," in London in 1991. The other name, of course, had been that of Dr. Dan Marckus.

Though Podkletnov's English was immaculate, he talked so softly that I found myself leaning right forward to catch his words, which were marked by a strong accent. He didn't look like anyone's idea of a rebel.

He was, I supposed, in his mid-to-late 40s and thin of stature. His dark eyes, which had an intensely haunted look about them, radiated seriousness and conviction. I knew the day his lab assistant's pipe smoke had hit the wall of the gravity shield he claimed to have created, he had found himself locked on a course against the science mainstream. Its reaction had been so vehement and overwhelming that he had gone into exile for the best part of four years to recover from the shock of it—and, word had it, to refine his experiments.

For a heretic, Podkletnov had acquired for himself a nice, quiet audience in this, his first appearance since the personal trauma of that time. Aside from a handful of graduates and undergraduates from Sheffield University's Department of Electronic and Electrical Engineering, the small group of invitees included observers from the U.K. Ministry of Defense, Rolls-Royce aero-engines and BAE Systems.

I let my mind wander back to the day I'd ambled, innocent of all knowledge on the subject, into the marbled hallway of the Institution of Mechanical Engineers in the center of London eight years earlier to hear Professor Young's lecture. Some of the faces in the audience today looked familiar from that evening, though I couldn't exactly say who or why. If I'd known then what I knew now, I wondered if I'd have ended up where I was sitting today. It had been a long haul.

Podkletnov started by recapping the events that had shaped his life and work over the past decade.

By using rotating magnets to spin up his superconducting doughnut-shaped discs to speeds of around 5,000 rpm, he had found that any object placed in the area of influence above them was losing a part of its weight.

Weight reductions of between 0.3 and 2 percent were found to be easily repeatable, he claimed. Five percent reductions had been recorded, although not with the same repeatability. "For a physicist, this is an enormous weight loss, for a practical engineer it is not," he noted. I thought of the NASA engineers at Huntsville struggling to reduce the cost of space access. For every hundred kilos of rocket, Podkletnov was offering them a launch weight reduction of two kilos.

He was right. It wasn't a whole lot. But then again, gravity shields weren't supposed to exist.

I jotted everything down as best I could, knowing that the better my notes, the better Marckus' efforts at interpreting them for me in plain-talk later. He was reluctant for us both to show in the same place, especially with so many members of the establishment present. Once again, I was acting as his eyes and ears.

The Russian peppered his talk with references to General Relativity and Quantum Theory, the unique properties of superconducting materials and his admiration for other pioneers in his field, among them Hal Puthoff, whose idea that gravity might be a "zero-point fluctuation force" Podkletnov professed, with characteristic Russian understatement, to find "rather interesting."

He started to talk about torsion fields, a term still fresh in my mind from Marckus' analysis of the experiment down the mine. Igor Witkowski, my Polish guide, had also talked of "vortex compression," a term used by SS police general Jakob Sporrenberg in his deposition to the Polish courts. Witkowski had remarked how this had linked in with Podkletnov's gravity-shielding experiments.

"The observed effect," Podkletnov said, talking about his own tests, "might be caused by a torsion field excitation of the physical vacuum inside and outside the superconductor."

The idea came from somewhere far and remote, then steadied long enough for me to begin processing it.

Marckus and I had spoken at length since my return from Austria about the Bell experiment and Schauberger's ideas. There was no doubt at all in his mind that what the Nazis had been trying to do at the Wenceslas Mine constituted an investigation into the arcane properties of space-time. And the fact that they had tested the effect of the torsion field on vegetation, lizards, mice and, God only knew, humans as well, suggested that there had been a practical aspect to the experiment as well. There was evidence, Marckus had told me, that particles appeared to slow down when they entered a torsion field.

"Since the zero-point energy field is composed of billions of tiny fluctuations of energy that pop in and out of existence every split second, relentlessly and infinitely," he'd explained, "anything that can mesh with those fluctuations, so the theory goes, can tap into them and extract energy from the field. That's what some people, myself included, believe that a torsion field does."

A torsion field, he'd continued, was best imagined as a rotating whirlpool. If you created one of these whirlpools, dipped it into the zero-point energy field, the seething mass of latent energy that existed on an almost undetectable level all around us, there was evidence to show that it reacted in an almost magical way by directing the flow of energy. Anything that rotated, even a child's spinning top, Marckus said, was capable of generating a torsion field, albeit a very small one.

"There's evidence of this?" I'd interjected.

Marckus had looked at me and nodded. "If you imagine the zero-point field as a giant vat of treacle and man-made torsion field generators like the Bell and Schauberger's Repulsine as mix-masters—food-blenders—then you can begin to visualize their effect."

Some things were better at stirring the zero-point field than others, Marckus had said. Anything that generated an electromagnetic field was a case in point.

"The Bell would have been radiating like hell," according to Marckus, "generating electromagnetic energy on all frequencies, from radio waves to light—no wonder they'd buried the damned thing so deep." The fact that the Germans had also filled the rotating cylinders with a mix of different metals was also significant, he believed. If you could get the proportions exactly right you stood an even better chance of interacting with the zero-point field. But it would have been a very hit-and-miss process—an observation that was borne out by Sporrenberg's testimony. Each test had been very short, lasting on average of around a minute.

It seemed very much as if the scientists had been trying to "tune" the Bell, much as you would a radio set.

"Get it right and you've got a very interesting piece of hardware," Marckus had told me, "get it wrong and all you've got is some expensive junk."

Sixty-two scientists shot dead by the SS told both of us that the Bell tests had to have been at least partially successful.

It had been the same with Schauberger's machine. The air molecules whirling around within it had been spun into such a state of super-excitement that something very strange seems to have happened.

Compounded by collisions of electrons and protons—"the building blocks of atoms," as Callum Coats had called them—the result had been the creation of a vortex—a torsion field—similar to the Bell's, only without the electromagnetic component.

This was no ordinary "twister" in a three-dimensional sense, but a coupling device to the zero-point field—a pump, if you will—that not only acted as a conduit for its infinite source of energy, the seething mass of fluctuations, but had combined with an aerodynamic lift component and the Coanda Effect to produce lévitation.

If, as Puthoff and others were suggesting, gravity and inertia were component forces of the zero-point field, along with electromagnetism, then the vortex/torsion field was also responsible for interacting with the zero-point field's gravity and inertia properties. Tune the machine right and you could manipulate them.

Manipulate the inertia of an object and you removed its resistance to acceleration. Put in space and it would continue to accelerate all the way up to light-speed—and maybe even beyond.

Manipulate the local gravity field around an object and you could get it to levitate.

Both of these pathways to "advanced propulsion" were being explored within NASA's Breakthrough Propulsion Physics initiative.

But here was the truly wild part. The vortex, Marckus said, wasn't a three-dimensional phenomenon or even a four-dimensional one. It couldn't be. For a torsion field to be able to interact with gravity and electromagnetism it had to be endowed with attributes that went beyond the three dimensions of left, right, up and down and the fourth-dimensional time field they inhabited; something that the theorists for convenience sake labeled a fifth dimension—hyperspace.

It was here, they said, beyond the vacuum of absolute space, beyond what we now know to be a "plenum" (the opposite of a vacuum) flooded with zero-point energy, that the binding mechanisms of the universe actually lay.

To date, we know of four of these fundamental forces: gravity, electromagnetism, the strong nuclear force and the weak nuclear force.

If a whirling torsion field with or without an electromagnetic component was binding with gravity to produce a levitational effect—an *antigravity* effect—it wasn't doing so in the four dimensions of this world, but somewhere else.

It explained why the Germans had attempted to use a torsion field to act upon the fourth dimension of time. Time, like gravity, the theorists said, was simply another variable stemming from the hyperspace.

"Say," Marckus had told me, "to use an extreme example, the Germans had been able to slow time within the area of the Bell's torsion field, this ceramic-lined chamber, to one thousandth the rate at which it was progressing outside and you sat inside the chamber for a year. What you've done is slow time down on the inside, while on the outside it progresses at its normal rate. Step outside the chamber after a year has ticked by on your calendar and you find yourself a thousand years into the future."

The chances were, Marckus said, the Germans had only been able to generate a tiny time perturbation—perhaps of the order of a hundredth or a thousandth of one percent. Its area of influence, mercifully, would also have been very localized. God only knew, Marckus said, what effect a larger-scale manipulation of the space-time matrix would have had otherwise. Science itself could offer few clues.

I believed from what I had seen in the Schauberger archive that antigravity was real and that the Germans had thrown considerable resources into cracking the problem.

It struck me then that they wouldn't have pursued a single pathway to antigravity, but several. In the same way that the Americans had pursued several different theoretical and applied approaches to the creation of an atomic bomb.

And in the same way that NASA was investigating multiple different routes to breakthrough propulsion physics for taking us to the stars.

In my mind's eye I imaged the strange henge-like edifice next to the power station. Maybe, just maybe, Witkowski was right. Maybe it had been a test rig of some sort. A test rig for a highly unconventional engine or a large circular aircraft.

If the Germans had been looking for an antigravity effect at the

Wenceslas Mine, they would have needed something robust to test the forces generated.

And what of the weirdest variable of all? The gateway to the hyperspace itself?

There was a burst of applause in the lecture theater. If I'd got the Russian right, he was saying that gravity shielding—antigravity by another name—was a torsion field "excitation" of the physical vacuum, soaked as it was with zero-point energy.

The Bell, Schauberger's work and Podkletnov's were all linked by torsion fields and torsion fields appeared to be the key to a host of effects science was at a loss to explain; effects that came from somewhere, some other place, that lay beyond the vacuum of nothingness.

In the Q&A session after the formal part of his talk, Podkletnov had made a reference to something that I needed to follow up on. He'd mentioned that during a recent round of experiments he had generated an even more pronounced shielding effect, one that demonstrated a *consistent* weight loss in objects exposed to the beam of five percent—double his previous best—for short periods of time.

No doubt mindful that NASA had been unable to produce superconductors of the required size, strength and fidelity to duplicate the Russian's experiments, a member of the audience asked him what size discs he'd been using. With a look of evident pride, Podkletnov replied that he'd been using 30-centimeter discs—so strong that the president of Toshiba had been able to stand on one without breaking it.

Half an hour later, during a buffet organized by the university for its unconventional guest and the assortment of government and industry types who'd come to hear him speak, I managed to talk to Podkletnov in a quiet corner of the room.

He must have known that I wanted to pick up on the Japanese angle, because no sooner had I hit him with my business card, than he announced that most regrettably the topic of Japanese sponsorship wasn't for discussion. He had said more than he ought on the subject and that was that.

This in itself, of course, was interesting. But the block on this avenue of inquiry was so abrupt that for a moment it wrong-footed me.

I grappled for some new purchase on the conversation. "How about aerospace applications?" I asked.

I half expected Podkletnov to tell me what he had previously told Charles Platt, the American journalist who'd tracked him down in the wilds of Finland. Platt had revealed that Podkletnov was working on a spin-off of the shielding effect that had allowed him to achieve "impulse reflection"—using gravity waves as a repelling force. These, Podkletnov had told the writer from *Wired,* would one day permit the development of a "second generation of flying machines," beyond the brute-thrust types we rode on today.

But Podkletnov went off on a different tack altogether.

"I have discovered," he said slowly, watching and weighing me as he spoke, "a new and truly bizarre effect."

"What kind of effect?" I probed. The low-key nature of the Russian's lecture had already signaled that he wasn't in the habit of using hyperbole.

"I'm not sure that I am ready to talk about it publicly yet," Podkletnov said, smiling awkwardly.

I was about to return to the subject of the Japanese for leverage, but in the end I didn't have to.

"I am, however, happy to share this news with you," he said. He paused to give the room a quick sweep. There was no one close enough to overhear us.

"If the superconductors are rotated considerably faster than the 5,000-rpm speeds I've been mainly using until now, perhaps five to ten times as fast, the disc experiences so much weight loss that it actually takes off."

"Have you experimented?" I asked.

"Yes," he said meaningfully, "with interesting results."

It was then that I asked him if he had heard of Viktor Schauberger. It kind of came from nowhere but in actual fact it wasn't such a wild shot in the dark. There was something incredibly familiar about those rotation speeds.

Schauberger had been generating a lévitation effect using rotational velocities of 15-20,000 rpm. If these were rapid enough to produce a usable torsion field, no wonder Podkletnov had been getting "interesting results" from 25-50,000 rpm.

Podkletnov weighed his response before replying.

"You should understand that I come from a family of academics," he said after a long moment of reflection. "Both my father and grandfather were scientists. Shortly after the war, my father came to acquire a set of Schauberger's papers. Some time later, when I was old enough to understand them, he showed them to me."

"Original papers?" I asked.

Podkletnov said nothing, but in itself this told me as much as I needed to know.

When the Red Army entered Vienna, Russian intelligence agents had made a beeline for Viktor Schauberger's apartment. There, they had found documents and certain component parts that Schauberger had spirited out of Mauthausen and the SS technical school at Vienna-Rosenhugel shortly before the SS transferred him and his design team away from the bombing to the little village of Leonstein.

Afterward, the Russians had blown up the apartment. But they had evidently taken what they could from it. And for some reason, Podkletnov's father had acquired some of the plunder.

"Perhaps you know that the Germans experimented quite extensively with gyroscopic forces for aircraft during World War Two," Podkletnov continued.

I wanted to tell him about the evidence I had uncovered in Austria and Poland, to share some data quid pro quo so I could learn more about his father's work, but out of the corner of my eye I could see one of the civil servants from the Ministry of Defense making his way toward us, a plate of sandwiches in one hand, a notepad in the other. A discussion about Podkletnov Senior and German "gyroscopic aircraft" would have to wait till another time.

On the way to the train station, I called Marckus and told him about the three significant facts I had learned that day. First, that the Japanese were in on the antigravity/free-energy act; and Toshiba wasn't routinely in the business of throwing good money at crackpot ideas. Second that Podkletnov was generating a free-floating levitational effect by rotating his superconductors at 25-50,000 rpm. And third, that Evgeny Podkletnov's father had come to acquire original Schauberger documents soon after the end of the Second World War.

"What would Evgeny's dad have been doing with them, Dan? It's a hell of a coincidence, isn't it?"

"Leave it with me," he said, "I'll call you back."

He did so within the hour. He'd been on the Internet, he said, scanning, processing stuff, eventually finding what he was looking for on the IBM patent-server, a voluminous website. I could tell from his voice that this was Marckus' kingdom; the place where he was happiest.

"I grind away at this material in low gear like a Stalin tank, but I always get there in the end."

"What did you find?" I asked.

"Something . . . curious. More than a coincidence, I believe. It seems that Podkletnov's father filed a master patent in 1978. It's funny, because I damn near quipped to you earlier that he'd probably turn out to be the father of the Moscow sewerage system. Well, guess what? The patent relates to industrial techniques for the continuous pure enameling of metal pipes. Evgeny's dad, in other words, had come up with a novel way of lining steel water pipes. It tells us two things: that he was a materials scientist, just like his son; and that he knew about water. My guess is that the Podkletnovs would have been quite comfortably off under the old Soviet system."

"How did he come to acquire the Schauberger papers?"

"Ah, well, let's postulate a little. Russian intelligence agents enter Schauberger's apartment in Vienna at the end of the war and find a bunch of papers, the contents of which they really don't begin to understand. But they know they're important, because they've already tied Schauberger to the SS secret weapons program. So they bring the documents back to Moscow and look around for someone who can decode them. Most of Schauberger's work, remember, related to machines that used air and water as their driving medium. What was Evgeny's dad? He was a leading academician in the hydro-engineering field—a pipes man. Not exactly the first person you'd think of approaching to do the work had he lived over here, but then again, in Schauberger's field, remember, there weren't any dedicated experts. So, Podkletnov Senior, a water engineer, got the job."

"You think the Soviets took the technology further?"

"Who knows? The Russians have never been afraid to exploit weird science. Remember the remote-viewing program kicked off by the CIA under Hal Puthoff? The reason the CIA was into it at all was because it picked up on the fact that the Soviets had started to dabble in the psychic spying business. There is ample evidence that the Russians have been tinkering with torsion fields for a long time, too. But my guess is that they never found enough in Schauberger's apartment to make practical use of his theories."

"But enough for Evgeny's dad to be intrigued by them," I suggested.

Marckus paused.

"What is it?" I asked.

"Podkletnov's discovery probably wasn't the accident he's cracked it up to be."

"You mean, when his assistant's pipe smoke hit the column of gravity-shielded air he was already looking for an effect?"

"That's certainly how it appears now we know what we know about his father."

"Jesus," I said, "if he can do it on a shoestring, anyone can."

"Right. Scary, isn't it?" He sounded like he meant it, too.

But I was still left staring at the end-wall of the same blind alley in which I'd found myself on the way back from Bad Ischl.

"Here's the problem I'm facing, Dan. If Schauberger and Podkletnov can crack antigravity, more or less in their garden sheds, then why can't NASA, for Christ's sake, with billions of dollars at its disposal?"

He thought about it for a long moment, then lightly cleared his throat.

"My best shot, and it doesn't help you much, is that what you and I have learned tells me that there are two kinds of science. The stuff they teach you in college and all the weird shit they don't. The aerospace and defense industry is inherently conservative. It doesn't like change. This . . . knowledge, if you can call it that, is dangerous stuff. It's change with a capital C and it's not easy to get your head around. The aerospace and defense industry says it likes people who think out of the box, because they're the guys who give us the breakthroughs . . . radar, the bomb, stealth and that. But think this far out and they look at you like you're crazy. They might even put you away."

I thought back to the article that had landed on my desk all those years ago and my failed attempt to interview George S. Trimble.

Only a maverick, an enlightened one at that, would have pushed for the foundation of something as bold as RIAS—the research institute spun out of the Martin Aircraft Company that Trimble had helped to set up in 1955, at exactly the time he was making his public pronouncements about the imminent conquest of gravity.

I liked to think that all those people who'd been talking up antigravity in the mid-1950s had been forced into silence by some murky intelligence outfit tasked with guarding the truth about the Germans' achievements during World War Two.

Yet, they might just as easily have been silenced by their own chief executives—people who realized they were talking up the premature death of the aerospace industry itself. A science that made their whole world redundant.

Like white goods, fast-food chains and cars, the aerospace and defense industry of the 21st century has become a global enterprise. Back in the 1950s, though, as a modern entity, one that we would recognize today, it was only just getting going.

The 1950s was the decade that spawned the intercontinental ballistic missile, the Mach 2 jet fighter, guided weapons and transatlantic jet passenger planes. It was a time when the industry needed brilliant individuals—mavericks like Kelly Johnson and Ben Rich of the Skunk Works—to bring about those revolutionary advances.

Maybe that was why one name had kept popping into my head since my return from Austria.

When I had first inquired about Trimble and RIAS at Lockheed

Martin, my contacts there had recommended I interview a man who routinely talked about the kinds of things that had once been integral to the RIAS charter.

A man who tended to talk about Nature, not science; a physicist who looked at things quite differently from other people.

Boyd Bushman was a senior scientist for Lockheed Martin's Fort Worth Division, the part of the corporation that turned out F-16 and F-22 fighters for the U.S. Air Force. If you're interested in antigravity, then talk to Bushman, they'd said.

Bushman, the guy who'd levitated paper clips on his desk.

I hadn't, because back then Bushman's theories had sounded just a little too weird. And back then, I hadn't begun to accept the fact that antigravity and the multibillion-dollar interests of the aerospace industry went together like chalk and cheese.

But it was all a question of perspective. I saw things very differently now from the way I'd seen them then.

What, I wondered at this moment, was an antigravity man doing at the world's most prolific manufacturer of good old-fashioned, jet-powered combat aircraft?

If Bushman was talking up antigravity in the midst of an industry that didn't want to know, then maybe, just maybe, he could provide the answer to the $64,000 big one; the discrepancy between clear evidence in the real world of the existence of antigravity technology and the people at NASA who were, at this very moment, spending ten times that amount scratching around for theory to make it work.

In two weeks' time, I was due on another defense industry junket to the U.S. West Coast. From there, it would be easy to route back to England via Texas.

Journeying into Kammler's kingdom had taught me the value of analyzing data in situ. Now, as I prepared for one last trip to the States, I needed something to help me acquire a different kind of mind-set.

I considered how, in July 1986, an F-117A Stealth Fighter crashed at dead of night into a desert canyon just outside Bakersfield, California. For me, the crash had always held a special kind of significance, since it was one of those rare occasions when the black world had been flushed into the light.

In 1986, the very existence of the Stealth Fighter was still a classified secret even though the aircraft had been in full squadron service for three years.

What did Bakersfield say about the system that had been set up to protect America's most deeply classified secrets? Had it been a murder site, what would a profiler have deduced from the traces this incident had left in the environment?

Back at my desk, I started sifting through a pile of newspaper clippings that I'd kept since the time of the crash. Through the clippings, I had traced the whereabouts of a number of witnesses to the events of that night. One of them, Amelia Lopez, now a local law enforcement officer, had reluctantly promised to act as my guide should I ever find myself in that neck of the woods.

I checked to see that I still had Lopez's numbers. Then I picked up the phone and called the public affairs department of Lockheed Martin, Fort Worth.

Chapter 24

The flight was several hours out of Heathrow, when I reached into my hand luggage and extracted the book that Marckus had made me promise I'd read before I got to the States. He'd sent it to me ten days earlier, but in the hurly-burly of stories that needed to be written before I disappeared off to America, and in the course of preparations for the weeklong trip itself, I simply hadn't had the time to pick it up.

Not only that, but the book, which was called *Blowback—The First Full Account of America 's Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy,* looked rather academic and heavy-going. Even now, as I gazed at the cover, I found myself reluctant to make a start on it, the more so as Marckus never told me what it was about the book that made it essential reading. But I'd read the newspaper, established that there were no movies on the entertainment system worth watching and had even plundered the in-flight magazine for items of interest. With nowhere left to go, I turned to *Blowback* and started reading.

It began promisingly enough, although the territory itself was more than familiar. By Chapter 3, the author, Christopher Simpson, an American, had got his teeth into his country's recruitment program of German scientists after the war—an operation that had started under the code name "Overcast." As early as July 1945, barely two months after the end of the war in Europe, the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff gave its authorization for Overcast to commence. Its job was to "exploit. . . chosen rare minds whose continuing intellectual productivity" America wanted to use in the continuing war against the Japanese and in the gathering Cold War against the Soviet Union. Under the top secret project, the JCS directed that 350 specialists, mainly from Germany and Austria, should be brought immediately to the United States. Among the Germans who came to the U.S. at this time were rocket specialists like von Braun and his boss, Army General Walter Dornberger.

I did as I always did with books that held details of Germany's wartime technology effort: I flicked to the index and looked for references to

Kammler. More often than not, Kammler never rated a mention, such was the ease with which he had blended into the bland backdrop of the Nazi administrative machine. Here, in *Blowback,* however, Kammler did score a single entry, but only in the context of his relationship with Dornberger at the Nordhausen underground V-2 plant. An arrangement was struck, the book stated, in which the SS, under Kammler, assumed the day-to-day administration of Nordhausen, leaving Dornberger in charge of the rocket technology and the V-2's production schedules.

By 1946, the Pentagon's Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency wanted to recruit even more former Nazi scientists in the gathering standoff against the Russians, but because U.S. immigration laws forbade entry into the U.S. of any former Nazi Party officials, President Truman was forced to authorize a more extensive effort than Overcast, code-named Paperclip, on condition that it was kept secret and that only "nominal" Nazis—opportunistic party members who had not committed any war crimes—were to be allowed into the country.

I read on, but the rest of the chapter told me nothing I didn't already know. Simpson's research was excellent, but it was marred by the fact I'd previously read Tom Bower's compelling work, *The Paperclip Conspiracy.* From this, I'd gleaned as much as I needed to absorb about Paperclip: that by September 1947 it had officially been canceled, but in actuality had been replaced by a new "denial program"; one so secret that Truman himself was unaware it existed. Paperclip continued as a "deep black" program (as it would be described today), recruiting its last scientist in the mid-1950s. Through Paperclip, hundreds, if not thousands of former Nazi engineers, many of them with highly undesirable backgrounds, were permitted entry to the United States and employed on cutting-edge defense and aerospace projects, not the least of which was NASA's moon program.

I pressed on, but from Chapter 4 onward, Simpson's book took a new turn, describing the CIA's recruitment of former Nazi intelligence agents, the spy networks they set in place against the Soviet Union, and the State Department's elaborate efforts to cover up its wholesale recruitment of these people.

I laid the book down and took a pull of my drink. When Simpson had written *Blowback* in the late 1980s, I could see it had been hard-hitting, revelatory stuff. But I couldn't see why Marckus had gone to such lengths to persuade me to read it.

I continued to wonder about this long after I landed in Los Angeles and arrived at my hotel. But given the time difference between California and the U.K., it was too late to call Marckus and by the following morning, as I journeyed up the coast to Santa Barbara, the scene of several appointments with a number of defense electronics companies that day, my mind was preoccupied with other things.

After Santa Barbara, I headed inland to Bakersfield, met up with Amelia Lopez and proceeded to the site where the F-117A Stealth Fighter had crashed in 1986, two years before it was unveiled. That the security surrounding the plane had remained in place after the crash was mainly down to the fast footwork of special Air Force crash-recovery teams, whose policy included sieving the earth up to a thousand yards from the crash site for pieces, then scattering bits of a '60s-vintage Voodoo fighter prior to their departure to throw the curious off the scent.

To me, Bakersfield said two things. It said that the black world would stop at nothing to prevent America's "quantum leap technologies" from spilling into the public domain until its bright young colonels were satisfied nothing more could be gained by holding the lid of secrecy in place. And two, in scattering bits of Voodoo, an aircraft that hadn't been flown actively for years, it wasn't averse to sending a signal.

When restrictions on the site were lifted, aircraft enthusiasts went into the hills and picked over the site to see if they could find any evidence that for the first time would point to the reality of the Stealth Fighter's existence. When they brought back little pieces of aircraft and had them analyzed, they knew exactly who'd been yanking the chain. The pieces of Voodoo were the telltale flourish that anonymous artists leave to denote the authorship of their work to cognoscenti of their talent.

It was in the canyon where the Stealth Fighter had gone down that I saw the book again in a flickering moment of clarity. When Amelia Lopez and I were clambering back across the rocks to our cars, the picture steadied and I knew why Marckus had wanted me to read it. The book was the key to everything, not least Marckus' role in all this. His fatalism, humor, cynicism and cunning clicked neatly into place. It was so simple yet overwhelming it almost took my breath away.

Fort Worth owes its very existence to the military, which in 1849 established a small outpost on the Clear Fork of the Trinity River some 30 miles to the west of Dallas.

A quarter of a century later, the coming of the railroad turned what until then had been little more than a cluster of tents and wooden huts into the biggest cattle railhead west of Chicago, a status it retained until shortly after World War Two.

By the 1940s, Fort Worth had begun to profit from other industries aside from cattle and oil, and as you drive out of the city, heading west, it is impossible not to notice Air Force Plant No. 4, a low building a mile long that rises from the Texas plains like an enormous rock escarpment.

Plant 4 had been set up during World War Two to manufacture the B-24 Liberator heavy bomber. In 1944, when output reached its peak, the plant was turning out almost ten aircraft a day; a feat of mass manufacturing that would never be equaled again.

Today, Plant 4 produces the Lockheed Martin F-16 at just a handful of aircraft per month. Lockheed Martin inherited the F-16 program from General Dynamics, whose aircraft and missile businesses were purchased by what was then simply the Lockheed company in the early 1990s.

GD had, in turn, acquired the Fort Worth operation from Convair, with which it merged in 1954. During World War Two, Convair was known as Consolidated Vultee Aircraft. Originally centered on San Diego, Convair, together with the USAAF, decided to set up the B-24 production line about as far from the Pacific as you could get, as a precaution against bombing by the Japanese.

In 1942, a young engineer called Robert Widmer moved from the San Diego operation to Fort Worth to begin work on the B-36, a massive intercontinental bomber that would make even the B-24 look tiny. It had been specified in 1939 to bomb Germany from the United States in the event that Hitler succeeded in invading Britain. It rolled out of Plant 4 in 1946 and went on to become the backbone of Strategic Air Command during the 1950s.

Bob Widmer spent much of the late '40s and early '50s lobbying to save the B-36 from cancellation before going on to design the B-58, SAC's first supersonic bomber. But by the late 1950s, Widmer had also begun throwing his energies into another project—one that was so advanced that the details would still be beyond the public domain four decades later.

The project was called Kingfish and it emerged out of a requirement by the CIA for a very fast high-altitude reconnaissance aircraft to replace the U-2, which was rapidly running out of places to hide from the Soviets' SA-2 Guideline surface-to-air missiles in the rarefied air over the Soviet Union.

As chief engineer of Fort Worth at the time of the Kingfish program and, almost 40 years later, still a consultant for Lockheed Martin Fort Worth, Bob Widmer was someone I very much wanted to meet.

What was so special about Kingfish that it had remained out of the limelight all these years? Questions about this aircraft take on an even more bizarre twist, when you consider the official history of the program that spawned it.

I was interested in Widmer and Kingfish, because to me it appeared to offer a link—one that had been overlooked by everyone else—to Aurora, the large black triangular aircraft that had supposedly been sighted over the North Sea in 1989.

In August 1959, the CIA's contract for a high-flying, super-fast reconnaissance aircraft went not to GD Convair, but to Kelly Johnson's Skunk Works, which went on to deliver an aircraft called the A-12 under a program code-named "Oxcart."

The A-12 flew for the first time in 1962 from the USAF's remote test center at Groom Lake, Nevada, better known today as Area 51. The 15 A-12s that were built conducted three years' worth of operational reconnaissance missions up to the program's cancellation in 1968. By then, an Air Force version of the plane, the Lockheed SR-71 Blackbird, had entered service.

With a top speed of Mach 3.4, the Blackbird remained the world's fastest operational aircraft until its retirement in the early 1990s. If you exclude the evidence for Aurora, there is, even today, nothing remotely as fast.

In official versions of the Kingfish/A-12 contest (declassified by the CIA only in the early 1990s) the Convair and Lockheed proposals were remarkably evenly matched. Both aircraft were optimized for cruise speeds of Mach 3.2, but the Lockheed proposal beat its rival's by tiny margins on key parameters such as range and operating altitude. On this evidence, then, it was only right that Lockheed got the deal.

But in the same way, as Marckus observed, that there are two kinds of science, so there are two kinds of history.

In 1995, a small photo of a wind-tunnel model of Kingfish appeared for the first time in the pages of an aerospace magazine. Scrutiny showed the model to be much more advanced than the paltry details in the caption suggested.

When I made inquiries at Lockheed Martin, under whose historical aegis both of these programs (Kingfish and the A-12/SR-71) now fell, I discovered that Bob Widmer, Kingfish's designer, was still employed at Fort Worth as a consultant. At 80 years of age, Widmer was busying himself in unmanned combat air vehicle technology. UCAVs—cheap, pilotless fighter planes—are seen very much as the future. It says a great deal about Widmer's skills as a designer that he was still employed at the cutting edge of aerospace and defense engineering almost 60 years after he joined Consolidated; but then Widmer, I was about to learn, was no ordinary engineer. Like Lockheed's Kelly Johnson and other "engineer-leaders" of the day, he'd helped to shape the modern U.S. aerospace industry.

His official biography describes him as an "innovator and a maverick" and the "first engineering leader to totally integrate airframe, propulsion and avionics into a single weapon system, the B-58."

What it does not say, but what I had gleaned from others, was that he blended these skills with those of a pastor, acting as guide and mentor to his team. In the 1950s, the pressure on GD Convair to outperform its rivals was intense, but the atmosphere inside the plant was informal and shirtsleeves—almost familial. To many of the younger engineers, Bob Widmer wasn't just a brilliant designer, but someone they could turn to for advice—something of a father figure, in fact.

We started by talking about Convair's own black ops capability, a special projects facility that stayed in the shadows, unlike Johnson's entity over at Lockheed, which reveled in its status as black world aviation's one-stop shop for special programs.

"Kelly was the catalyst, the guy who did things differently," Widmer said, "but, hey, we had a 'skunk works,' too; the difference was, we never spoke about it."

Widmer's slight, sinewy body, so much frailer than it had been in the black-and-white shots from the '60s, trembled with excitement. His small eyes shone.

As the talk drifted into the early days of the Cold War, a time when GD Convair came into its own as a reconnaissance specialist, I could see that the minder assigned to me from the PR department was beginning to lose interest. An individual I hadn't come across before, he was there as a matter of routine to ensure that I did not encroach upon matters that would put Lockheed Martin in a bad light or compromise national security. But since this was history, history from way back at that, it hardly constituted a threat to either. It was late and the minder looked tired. His eyes were closed, to focus on the conversation more intently perhaps? But if I hadn't known better, I'd have said he was asleep.

In this atmosphere of near-conviviality, I asked Widmer about Kingfish.

At first, he was reluctant to say a great deal, but seeing that I knew some of the details already, he began to open up. As we talked, I could hear the anger in his voice; anger, I thought, that stemmed from the fact that the CIA had chosen Lockheed's plane, not his, for the contract.

This portrait of Kingfish—the one that Widmer now began to talk about—was markedly different from the official CIA version. And here was one element of the mystery. In its final design form, Kingfish had been at least twice as capable as the variant that is recorded in official agency files.

The final iteration of Kingfish was optimized to cruise at 125,000 feet at a speed of Mach 6.25. It had contained a great many "firsts," including two powerful ramjets—a radical form of power plant that, to this day, has never been deployed on an operational aircraft—a blended, stealthy airframe shape composed of high-temperature steel and a special heat-resistant substance called "pyro-ceram" that also acted as a highly effective radar-absorbent material.

Kingfish would have streaked far above the Soviets' air defenses, twice as fast as any aircraft the Russians ever consigned to the drawing board; and it would have been all but invisible to radar.

Kind of chilling, too, was the fact that its specification was a near-perfect match for most people's idea of what Aurora should look like—and Widmer had designed the aircraft almost 30 years before rumors of a high-speed Mach 6-8 reconnaissance plane had begun circulating in *JDW* and *Aviation Week.*

That the CIA bought the A-12 instead of Kingfish is, of course, an enormous tribute to the Lockheed project team, which went on to overcome unprecedented design challenges to make the A-12/SR-71 Blackbird a reality. But while Blackbird is now a museum piece, the finer details of Kingfish, the loser in the CIA contest of 1958-59, will forever remain locked inside Widmer's head.

At the end of the competition, the CIA moved in and ordered all the blueprints, plans and files to be shredded. They also told him never to talk about it again.

I asked what effect this had had upon him.

"At the time, the CIA were in their glory," he replied. "I don't want to go into detail about the kind of life I had to lead . . . how I had to conduct myself, my family and so forth."

"Was it very restrictive?"

Widmer looked over his shoulder at the minder, who must have detected the change in mood. The minder looked at me and I looked at Widmer.

The former chief designer continued. I could see that he was determined to say his piece. "It was unbelievable. It wasn't just restrictive. It was counter to my conscience and morals and so forth."

"The whole business of black program secrecy?"

He nodded and I got the sense he was speaking not so much for himself as the younger members of his team, the people who'd looked to him for guidance. For an aerospace engineer the black world was a regime that ought to be endured only for a small window in a person's career—and even that was a crime, Widmer said. It was not, he added, what he would call a good formula over a long haul.

When I noticed his hands, I saw that they were shaking.

After a pause that was long enough for me to image the mixture of suspicion and draconian security that had once stalked him, he added: "I mean, the degree they went to in order to hold the secrecy was unbelievable."

The look in his eyes was so far-off and intense that I was reluctant to intrude further. But I needed to ask him one last question.

"Did it frighten you, ever?" I said.

"Yes," he replied, his voice scarcely a whisper.

As I left the room, heading under escort for my appointment with Bushman in the cavernous interior of Plant 4, the minder and I said nothing. Perhaps this way, it was easier to pretend that nothing had happened. But as we walked across the shop floor that had consistently churned out combat aircraft for the past 50-odd years and then stepped back into the strip-lit corridors and past endless security-sealed doors, the air-conditioning cold on our faces, I couldn't help but wonder at the senselessness of it all. One look at Widmer, another at his résumé, told you everything you needed to know. His ambition had been to design and build aircraft that made GD Convair the best plane-maker in the business and which protected America from its enemies. In most people's eyes, that made him a patriot, not a security threat.

But the CIA, or whoever the hell had terrified the bejeezus out of him and his family, had insisted on making the point. And what for?

Had Kingfish, the official loser in the CIA's high-speed spyplane contest, gone on as a "deep black" development program, emerging years later as Aurora?

Or was the truth more prosaic?

Had Kingfish simply been too expensive to be developed, forcing someone, somewhere to consign its design principles into a black hole of ignorance, the mythic warehouse that Ben Rich had told me about, where no one would ever be able to get at them?

If so, how many other technologies were in that place? How many more Widmers had been terrified into keeping that perpetual oath of silence?

Hundreds. Thousands in all probability.

Whether George S. Trimble had developed antigravity in the black or not, as head of advanced programs at Martin Aircraft, he would have been forced to abide by the same austere security oath. No wonder, then, he'd had second thoughts about our meeting all those years ago. No wonder my PR contact at Lockheed Martin had relayed the observation that he'd sounded scared.

Trimble must have been scared for the same reasons Widmer had been.

God only knew what they thought might happen to them.

Like an unsinkable ship, the black world had been built up around multiple, layered compartments, each securely sealed. Some of those compartments, it is now clear, had been designed never to be opened again. Ever.

The Kingfish story provided a tantalizing glimpse of the contents of one such compartment. By approaching the black world from another direction altogether, I had come to learn of the contents of at least one other.

At the end of the Second World War, via Schauberger's work and, no doubt, a wealth of other captured technology from Germany that has never seen the light of day either, America acquired knowledge of the most dangerous kind.

The Germans' secret weapons program had yielded a power plant—a free-energy source, to boot—that had given America the ability to design a radically different form of air vehicle, one that reflected General Twining's assessment to General Schulgen that a "circular or elliptical" craft that normally made no sound, which could turn on a dime and was capable of extreme acceleration, could be constructed, "provided extensive, detailed development" was undertaken.

Something of the order of the Manhattan Project that had yielded the atomic bomb.

But there is no evidence that the Pentagon ever initiated such a program.

The closest thing to it that has reached the light of public accountability was the recently declassified Project Silverbug, the USAF's development of the supersonic saucers designed by Avro Canada in the mid-late 1950s. But Silverbug, being jet-powered, was conventional compared to what the SS had tried to develop in Czechoslovakia, Lower Silesia and Austria.

If the U.S. agents who debriefed Viktor Schauberger in 1945-46 so much as half appreciated the ability of his or other devices to cause disturbances, however small, in the fabric of space and time, to unleash untold "variables" hidden in dimensions that conventional science hadn't begun to see or understand, then someone, somewhere would have taken the view that it should be kept secret for a very long time.

There were other even more disturbing possibilities.

During their time in America, it had dawned on Viktor and Walter Schauberger that the implosion process could be harnessed to create a massive weapon—one that was infinitely more destructive than the hydrogen bomb. More than anything else, they were terrified that their "hosts" would latch onto the same idea.

I filed this away in the back of my mind as something to put to Marckus.

Bomb or not, it appears that antigravity was boxed up and put away, ready for the day when American science could harness it consistently enough to control it. Besides, in the 1940s and 1950s, it wasn't as if the world really needed it. The global economy—and none more than America's—has been reliant on oil and the technology that supports it for more than a century. It is only now that we're having to confront the end of the petro-chemical era and seek alternative power sources.

I was left with an image of Widmer's hand, shaking with anger, and a cold feeling I hadn't had since Witkowski told me about the murders of the 62 Bell scientists at the hands of the SS. It didn't take a whole lot of introspection to get to the root of it.

For years, I'd labored under the assumption that it had been the bomb program that had kick-started America's black world into being. It hadn't, of course. From a security standpoint, the Manhattan Project was a flawed model. It had leaked like a sieve and the Soviets had acquired the most powerful technology on earth, the atom bomb, a scant handful of years after the Americans.

In 1944, when the Joint Chiefs of Staff established their high-level committee to hunt down on America's behalf every military and industrial secret that Nazi Germany possessed, they couldn't have begun to foresee the full consequences of that directive. America, more than any other ally, had acquired a vast array of German-derived technology. Much of it, like von Braun's V-2 rocketry, was highly advanced, but essentially recognizable. Some of it, however—notably the nonconventional science pursued by the SS—came from a different culture altogether.

To master the weapons it had acquired from the Germans, America found that it had to recruit the engineers responsible for them. Some were former Nazis, but many were just scientists, no more no less, who'd simply been doing their job.

The trouble was, it didn't end there. With the help of German-derived science, America's technological lead over the rest of the world accelerated exponentially after the Second World War. But the black world was a low-grade reflection of the system that had been employed to protect the secrets of the *Kammlerstab* within the confines of the Skoda Works.

The state within a state had been transported four thousand miles to the west and somehow, I just knew, Kammler had come with it.

The intuitive feeling I'd experienced all these years in obscure corners of the U.S. aerospace and defense industry had suddenly acquired a face.

Throughout the next interview, I felt the presence of the info-minders like a low-intensity headache. After the near-informality of my time with Bob Widmer, the proximity of three company caretakers in the room gnawed away at my concentration. They were here to watch over the man who could levitate paper clips on his desk.

But now that the interview was over, the minders were looking the other way. They'd done their job and I'd done mine. Boyd Bushman had spilled no secrets either on or off the record and that was what mattered. Nor had he in any way tarnished the reputation of the Lockheed Martin company.

That I had learned nothing of value must have shown on my face, for without warning, Bushman leaned forward and put his hand on my shoulder.

He asked me what was wrong and I told him.

"It's a lonely walk, but a rewarding one," he said, so quietly that I almost missed it. I looked into his eyes, which were quite blue but for that superficial milkiness that sometimes denotes the onset of old age.

He smiled at me. "Keep traveling the road and you might just find what you're looking for."

"What do you mean?" I asked cautiously.

"In all my years with this company, no one has asked me the questions you came here with today." He paused a moment, then said: "Here, I want to show you something."

He produced a vidéocassette from the folds of his loose-hanging suit and gave me the same smile that had crossed his face a number of times during the interview; usually, I noticed, when he needed a moment or two to think about a particularly awkward question I'd thrown at him. He looked not unlike Walter Matthau, the Hollywood actor, with a kindly, hangdog expression and thick straight hair to match. Instinctively, I'd liked him. But more to the point, I knew that I could trust him. Unusually for someone who toiled in the heart of the U.S. defense-industrial complex, he looked like someone who was incapable of telling a lie.

Bushman appeared beyond the retirement age of most good man-and-boy company men, which in itself spoke volumes about his ability.

Before I met him, I'd been told that he was a one-off, one of those people who liked to think out of the box—defense jargon for a guy in the trade who looked at things differently. Just how differently, I was about to find out.

The picture on the TV screen steadied and I found myself staring at a scene of such ordinariness I thought for a moment that Bushman had plugged in the wrong tape.

From the graininess of the film and the way the camera trembled, it rapidly became clear that this was some kind of a home movie. It depicted the interior of a garage or workshop. In the middle of the frame was a saw on a pockmarked wooden work surface. Beside it was a pair of pliers and a handful of nails.

For a while, we both just stood there watching a picture in which nothing happened. The minders had taken a quick look and apparently decided it was an eccentric end to a quirky afternoon's work, because they went back to their own conversation.

My gaze drifted back to the TV just as one of the nails in the center of the screen began to twitch and the pliers moved—jumped, rather—a centimeter to the left. Within seconds, everything was shaking, as if rocked by a series of earth tremors. And then, quite suddenly, the nails stood up, like hairs on a cold forearm.

I looked at Bushman, who was studying the screen intently. "Watch," he urged, "this is the best bit."

One by one, the nails took off and shot off the top of the screen. A moment later, the pliers started to do a crazy nose-down dance across the work surface and the saw began flapping around like a fish out of water. Then they both went the way of the nails, shooting out of frame toward the ceiling.

Then, the picture switched: same background, different still life.

Ice cream was creeping up the sides of a see-through tub. A lump of it broke away and rose toward the ceiling trailing little pearls of cream. Seconds later, the whole tub jumped off the bench.

My skepticism was working overtime. But Bushman read my thoughts. "It's no fake," he said. "This is as real as you or I." He cast a look over his shoulder at our companions. "The man responsible is a civilian, nothing to do with the defense business. That he's a genius goes without saying, of course. You needed to see this, because it's confirmation of the *data."* He emphasized the word as if somehow it would help me understand what I had just seen. "You must get to see this man. I think, then, you will be closer than you think to the end of your journey."

"Data? What data?" I looked at him more closely, hoping for more, but he said nothing.

As I was ushered out of the room, the scientist looked down at the thick pack of material he'd handed me before the interview. I hadn't had time to look at it. Now, I wished I had.

That evening, I sat down with Bushman's file in my hotel room. He'd loaded me down with so many papers, I didn't know where to begin or what I was really looking for. There was a stack of photostats relating to the patents he'd filed during a long and illustrious career that had included stints at some of the giants of the postwar U.S. aerospace and defense industry: Hughes Aircraft, Texas Instruments, General Dynamics and Lockheed.

There was his résumé, which noted his top secret security clearance, as well as copies of scientific papers, stapled neatly at the corner, with exotic-sounding titles that meant little to me.

My eyes swam over pages of complex mathematical equations and algebra sets. I was looking for clues, but seeing nothing that made much sense.

I pressed the "play" button on my tape recorder.

From the tenth floor of my Fort Worth hotel room, the lights of the city shimmered in the sizzling 90-degree heat, even though it was a good half an hour after the sun had slipped below the skyline. Inside, the air-conditioning was cold enough to prickle my skin.

". . .1 went back to some of the first work on gravity done by Galileo. . ."

Bushman's voice crackled in the darkness, clashing for a moment with that of a CNN reporter on the TV. I adjusted the volume on the tape recorder, hit the fast-forward button and pressed play again.

"So, what I think is: Follow the data and log your data very well and don't throw it away because you have a theory. The theory of gravity is just a theory. Einstein improved on the original theories of Newton and he was verified by data—and data gave precedence. No one believed Einstein until the data arrived. Well, our data's arrived . . . "

I scrolled the tape again. As I did so, I spotted something among the collection of papers Bushman had given me. Tucked beneath the patents and company brochure material on weapons technology was a grainy photocopy of a UFO flying low over a straight stretch of desert road. A handwritten caption underneath identified the location as Santa Ana, California, and the date as 1966.

Flicking past it, I found another cluster of photostats taken from the "Ramayana of Valmiki—Translated from the Original Sanskrit." A stamp on the title page identified the book as belonging to "Lockheed/Fort Worth."

Puzzled, I toggled with the buttons on the tape recorder and finally found the part of the interview I'd been looking for.

"Nature does not speak English," Bushman had been telling me. "Not only that, but if we verbalize it, we're probably approximating, but not telling the truth. Math comes close, but it isn't there either. What Nature tells us is what must be honored. It has been talking to us on many domains."

I let the words echo in my head for a moment.

Bushman was a senior scientist for one of the world's biggest defense contractors; a member of the fraternity that I'd looked to for expert comment all my professional life, and he was telling me to trust in what I saw. Follow data, he'd said, not theory. He worked on programs that lay beyond the cutting edge of known science.

"I can't talk to all the theoreticians," he'd told me, "because there don't exist theories where I am."

For the past ten years, I *had* been following data and the data had shown me the existence of something real. And yet some of the brightest minds on the planet were struggling to produce theory to underpin it. How could there be no theory for effects that were genuinely manifesting themselves in the environment?

What Nature tells us is what must be honored. It has been talking to us on many domains.

And we'd only understood a fraction of what it had been saying.

If we verbalize it, we're probably approximating, but not telling the truth.

And then it hit me. That's all theory was or ever had been—an approximation of the truth. Sometimes that approximation worked out and held fast, becoming scientific currency; other times it didn't and was superseded by another theory.

In this case, there were so many holes in our knowledge, it had allowed for people like Podkletnov and Schauberger to fall through the gaps, to show us things that science couldn't account for. Because science theory hadn't mapped them yet.

Not outside Nazi Germany, at any rate.

Einstein had followed Newton and data had verified them both. But in this field, as with other fields of scientific endeavor, the data was still coming in.

It rendered NASA's theory, in this particular area, at least, quite meaningless.

I flipped another piece of paper in Bushman's file and saw a man with a mop of unkempt hair staring at me from a grainy photostat. He was standing in the same garage I'd witnessed in the film Bushman had shown me at Plant 4.

A note told me his name and that he lived in Vancouver—a place, if Bushman was right, that one way or another looked like being where the road ran out.

Chapter 25

George Hathaway, a science and engineering Ph.D. who ran a consulting firm on "nonconventional propulsion technology" in Ontario, Canada, offered a suitable staging post between the reality of sorts that exists in London and the world inhabited by the man in the photostat that Bushman had shown me: self-trained scientist and inventor, John Hutchison.

I met Hathaway in the coffee shop of my Toronto hotel and was gratified to note that there was nothing remotely flaky about him. Hathaway, whom I guessed to be in his early 50s, looked like most people's idea of a slightly unconventional nine-to-five scientist: a tall man, dressed in jeans and a tartan shirt, with wire-framed glasses, Bill Hickok mustache and hair over the collar. The briefcase gave him a suitably businesslike air as well; he was someone you could talk turkey with.

Hearing him talk, I began to feel a lot better.

I was booked on a flight that afternoon to Vancouver, but had been filled with doubts about the whole trip ever since my arrival in Canada.

It was three weeks after my visit to Fort Worth and I had flown halfway around the world on my own ticket to meet a man who claimed to be able to levitate objects with equipment he'd salvaged from electrical shops and thrift stores.

I had managed to grab myself two days off work. Two days to get to Vancouver and back via Toronto. The ticket had cost me a small fortune.

Faced with a sizable hole in my finances, the whole thing suddenly seemed to stretch credulity, even if it had come with an endorsement from Bushman.

Worse, I'd been unable to make any kind of contact with Marckus.

As was his wont, he had vanished off the face of the planet. I'd called, left messages, sent emails, but he wasn't answering. In the end, I had been unable to put off the opportunity to travel any longer.

Hathaway's ability, therefore, to converse in hard-and-fast science and engineering terms about Hutchison came as an enormous relief. The key point was that he and a colleague, a South African called Alexis Pezarro, had believed in Hutchison sufficiently to back him financially for a considerable chunk of the 1980s. And even though they weren't linked in any business sense anymore, Hathaway still professed to be a fan of his work.

"There are three kinds of people involved in the advanced propulsion field in my experience," Hathaway had told me over the phone a few weeks earlier. "There are the professionals, people like Marc Millis at NASA."

Millis. The guy who ran the space agency's Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program out of a lonely office at the Glenn Research Center in Cleveland, Ohio. I cast my mind back. It seemed like a lifetime ago.

"Then there are the Tesla types who have an intuitive grasp of electromagnetics who come in from the ground up," Hathaway continued. "And then there's John Hutchison who doesn't fit into either category."

Hutchison, it was more accurate to say, fitted into no real category at all.

He had been born in 1945 in North Vancouver and had grown up an only child, surrounding himself with the only things that he seemed to show any real empathy for—machines. Reading between the lines, it was clear that he had not fitted in as a kid. He'd dropped out of school at Grade 10 and had gone on to complete an education of sorts with the aid of a private tutor (mirroring, I recalled, the schooling regime that Thomas Townsend Brown had endured 40 years earlier).

Amassing a large collection of machine tools, steam engines, old guns, chemical equipment and electromagnetic gear, Hutchison became infatuated from a young age with the theories of Einstein and Faraday, even though he was not remotely academic. His interest in them stemmed from his intuitive grasp of science in general and of electromagnetism in particular. His great hero was the turn-of-the-century electrical engineering pioneer, Nikola Tesla.

I had done my homework on Tesla, because Bushman's papers had been peppered with references to him.

Tesla was a Serb engineering graduate from Prague University who in 1884 at the age of 28 emigrated to America in the hope of finding work in the then fledgling electricity industry. With nothing more to his name when he arrived in New York than a letter of introduction to the man widely regarded as the father of the electricity industry, Thomas Edison, Tesla rapidly established himself in Edison's eyes as an engineer of great skill.

But while Edison used him primarily as a glorified Mr. Fixit to repair and refine his power generators, which were by then beginning to proliferate across the eastern seaboard, Tesla had set his mind on introducing an electricity supply system that was infinitely better than Edison's. If Edison would only use his, Tesla's, method of alternating or AC current instead of direct or DC current, which was notorious for its inability to travel over long distances, Tesla knew he could deliver a system that was far more efficient.

Yet, by the mid-1880s, Edison's entire infrastructure—indeed, his entire business base—revolved around the supply of DC power, whatever its manifest deficiencies. As a result, Tesla left the Edison Electric Company to set up on his own.

From then on, his career was dogged by a series of business disasters, but as an inventor—and the man who gave the world AC current into the bargain—Tesla was without parallel. In 1891, he developed the Tesla Coil, a remarkable invention that remains the basis for radios, televisions and other means of wireless communication.

But it was the wireless transmission of energy that became his great goal and for most of his professional life Tesla dedicated himself to the pursuit of a system that promised to give the world a free supply of energy. It hardly seemed to enter his head that big business, which by the early 20th century was starting to make handsome profits out of electricity, would be resolutely opposed to the idea.

Tesla's wireless energy transmission system was initially based upon technology for sending power through the air, but he soon developed a far more efficient transmission medium: the ground. In a series of experiments in Colorado, Tesla showed that the earth could be adapted from its customary role as an energy sinkhole—a place to dump excess electricity—into a powerful conductor; a giant planetwide energy transmission system that obviated the need for wires.

Tesla died penniless in 1943, mumbling to the end about fantastic beam weapons that could blast aircraft from the skies or be bounced off the ionosphere to strike at targets anywhere on the globe. One of the wilder theories that still cling to his memory revolves around a supposed experiment to beam some kind of message to the Arctic explorer Robert Peary, who in mid-1908 was making an attempt to reach the North Pole. According to legend, Tesla, who had built a powerful transmitter at Wardencliff on Long Island, beamed the "message" on June 30 and awaited news from Peary. The explorer saw nothing, but thousands of miles away, in a remote corner of Siberia, a massive explosion equivalent to 15 megatons of TNT devastated 500,000 acres of land centered on a place called Tunguska.

The Tunguska "incident" is generally ascribed to the impact of a comet fragment or a meteorite, but the absence of evidence for the impact theory has enabled Tesla proponents to maintain the line that it was Tesla's "death ray" that caused the blast. Certainly, Tesla himself seemed to believe he was responsible, for immediately afterward he dismantled the "weapon" and reverted to other pursuits.

What Tesla and Hutchison shared was a complete sense of ease at being around electricity. Tesla, for example, knew it was perfectly safe to pass high voltages through his own body, provided the current was kept low. Using himself as a conductor, he would stage dramatic demonstrations aimed at validating the safety of AC power. In one of them, he would hold a wire from a Tesla Coil in one hand while drawing a spark from the fingers of the other to light a lamp. The newspapers of the day would frequently run photographs of him in morning dress, his whole body alive with sparks. It must have seemed like magic, but was nothing more than straightforward evidence of Tesla's deep-seated feel for his subject.

It was the same with Hutchison. By the age of 15, he had already assembled his own laboratory, cramming it with Tesla machines he had constructed himself; signal generation equipment, static generators and a uranium source housed in a copper tube that used a magnetron pulsed by an old rotary spark plug system to transmit microwaves. During the 1970s, Hutchison set up shop in a bigger, more sophisticated laboratory in the basement of a house in Lynn Valley, North Vancouver, which contained racks full of signal generators, low-power radar systems and phasing equipment coupled to refinements of his earlier devices.

One evening in 1979, Hutchison was in his laboratory, sitting amid the sparks and high voltage effects of his equipment, when he was struck on the shoulder by a piece of metal. He threw it back and it hit him again. This was the ignominious beginning of the Hutchison Effect. In the ensuing months, Hutchison found that by tweaking the settings on the equipment, he could get things—ordinary household objects—to levitate, move horizontally, bend, break and even explode. In the latter case, this portion of the effect came to be known as "disruption."

In 1980, Hutchison went into partnership with a company called Pharos Technologies, which had been formed by Hathaway and the South African Pezarro. Pharos Technologies was designed exclusively to promote the Hutchison Effect, which in these early days was billed as a "lift and disruption" system. This, however, barely begins to describe some of the extraordinary phenomena Hutchison was manifesting in his Lynn Valley basement.

Using only tiny amounts of power—between 400 and 4,000 watts via a 110 AC wall socket—Hutchison found he could raise any kind of material—sheet metal, wood, styrofoam, lead, copper, zinc . . . whatever—from a few ounces to a hundred pounds in weight at distances of up to 80 feet. From a physics standpoint, it was meant to be impossible, of course, but Hutchison was doing it—regularly, if not exactly on demand. Nine times out of ten, nothing would happen. The rest of the time it was like a bad day on the set of the film *Poltergeist',* objects rising slowly from the area of influence in the center of the equipment and looping back somewhere else; or shooting skyward in a powerful ballistic arc and striking the ceiling, kicked there by a massive energy impulse; or simply levitating and hovering, continuously, for ages.

What was more, Hathaway said, it had been captured on hours of film and videotape and had been demonstrated in front of hundreds of witnesses.

As for what might be producing the Effect, there were many theories. Some said that it was triggered by opposing electromagnetic fields that canceled each other out, creating a powerful flow of zero-point energy to any object in the zone of influence; others that Hutchison was causing electromagnetic fields to spin or swirl in some unknown way and that this was the trigger for lévitation—shades of the torsion fields generated by Schauberger, Podkletnov and the Bell. Another camp maintained that Hutchison was generating the Effect himself by psychokinesis.

What was interesting, Hathaway said, was that Hutchison himself did not know what caused it and he had no control over it once it started. Sometimes the Effect produced lévitation, sometimes it caused objects to shred, tear apart or evaporate; other times, it would cause transmutation—the alteration of an object's molecular composition; Hutchison, like an alchemist, could change one metal into another.

"You're shitting me," I said.

But Hathaway shook his head. "John's a wild and crazy guy. He lives in his own world and he can't readily express what he's doing in terms an engineer or a physicist might always understand. You should go see him, no question." He paused, then added: "A visit to John is definitely a once-in-a-lifetime thing."

As the Canadian Airlines A320 tracked westward above the Great Lakes, I sat alone at the back of the aircraft, my mind still beset by doubts, in spite of Hathaway's no-nonsense assessment of the man I was about to meet.

The one thing that kept me going was the germ of a mystery rooted in some hard, incontrovertible fact I'd managed to glean separately from Hutchison and Hathaway: in 1983, a Pentagon team spent money on

Hutchison—tens of thousands of dollars over a period of several months—analyzing the Effect.

In promoting Hutchison's technology to potential investors—people to exploit its potential as a propulsion or "disruption" system—Hathaway and Pezarro had come into contact with a unit inside the Pentagon that was prepared to take their claims at face value.

Led by Col. John B. Alexander of the U.S. Army's Intelligence and Security Command, INSCOM, the team put up money to move Hutchison's cramped lab at Lynn Valley to a large empty warehouse on the edge of North Vancouver.

The facility was set up under tight security and anything pertaining to it was classified.

The "INSCOM group" tasked with analyzing the Hutchison Effect comprised five people besides Hutchison, Hathaway and Pezarro—two scientists from Los Alamos National Laboratory, a representative of the Office of Naval Research, an Army R&D specialist and Alexander himself.

The presence of the Los Alamos and ONR representatives appeared to be significant, since both of these organizations were driving forces behind the Strategic Defense Initiative. SDI—"Star Wars," as it had been dubbed by the media—had been the brainchild of Ronald Reagan's science advisers and Reagan had hawked it to the rooftops as the be-all and end-all arms program of his presidency: a space-based ring of steel comprising sensors, laser weaponry and missiles that would protect the United States from an all-out nuclear strike by the Soviets.

SDI was unveiled in March 1983 and from then until its death later in the decade was heavily staffed by experts from Los Alamos and ONR.

For the life of me, I couldn't think what Hutchison's work had to do with it.

Soon after Hutchison's lab was moved to the large warehouse on the edge of North Vancouver, the experiments began in readiness for the INSCOM visit. The Pentagon's funding was good for four months. Alexander had provided Hutchison, Hathaway and Pezarro with objects on which to test the Hutchison Effect in its new location. One of these was a six-by-quarter-inch molybdenum rod. Molybdenum is an incredibly strong but light metal used in nuclear reactors. It has a "sag" temperature of 3,700 degrees C. Alexander had deliberately marked the rod so it couldn't be switched. Give it a whirl, he told Hathaway. See what happens.

A few days later, the colonel was contacted by Hathaway and told that the test runs had been spectacular. The test specimens were dispatched to the INSCOM team for analysis forthwith.

The Effect had snaked the molybdenum rod into an S shape as if it were a soft metal—lead, tin or copper. There were other successes to report, too. A length of high-carbon steel had shredded at one end and transmuted into lead the other. A piece of PVC plastic had literally disappeared into thin air before the eyes of the evaluators. Bits of wood had become embedded in the middle of pieces of aluminum.

And, of course, things had taken off—all over the laboratory, items had been levitated; some deliberately, others in parts of the lab that were nothing to do with the experiment. The lab at one point had also become self-running, drawing its electricity from God only knew where—since the power was down at the time.

Keep everything exactly as it is, Alexander told him. We're on our way up.

When the INSCOM team got off the plane in Vancouver, everyone was gibbering with excitement about the looming set of tests—everyone, that is, except for the more senior of the two Los Alamos scientists, a dour man who'd been given the unaffectionate nickname "Big Bad Bob" by the other team members.

Bob remained convinced that somehow it was all just a bunch of jiggery-pokery.

Someone, he'd told Alexander, was being had here.

A shimmy through the airframe as the A320 thumped down on the tarmac at Vancouver and here I was, same place as the INSCOM group, different time.

Like them, I was thinking of the encounter to come; and for a reason I couldn't entirely put my finger on, I felt anxious.

I set out from the hotel for Hutchison's apartment 12 hours later.

It was a crisp morning, warm air from the Pacific mixing with the cold air of a blue sky to form a thick layer of cloud in the waterways of the harbor below. I followed Hutchison's directions, turning left on a wide run-down street, eventually spotting what I was looking for: a brown apartment building with an antenna farm on one of the balconies.

I could see Hutchison in silhouette at one of the windows, scanning the street for my arrival.

He met me at the entrance and we shook hands. He was dressed in jeans and a denim jacket. A strand of thick black hair fell over one lens of his glasses. The other had a crack running through it. He was tall and powerfully built, but his voice was softer than I remembered it on the phone. Through the handshake I could sense he was as restless as I was. We exchanged a few pleasantries, then I followed him inside. A minute later, there was a rattle of keys and tumbling of locks as Hutchison pushed back the door of his apartment.

The door traveled about 18 inches, then stopped abruptly.

"Sorry, it's kind of a squeeze," he said, forcing his way through the gap and disappearing inside. I followed suit and found myself in a dark, narrow corridor with what looked like crates lining the walls. The gap down the middle was barely wide enough for a child. Hutchison pushed the door shut and somehow managed to squeeze past me, heading for the back.

He pulled a drape off the window and light flooded the room. Outside, the aerials and dishes I'd spotted from the street pointed skyward at crazy angles. It was only when I turned back to study the apartment interior that I realized the crates I'd seen were radios—huge, metallic, gray, lifeless things, some the size of tea chests. I peered into the kitchen, the bathroom and bedroom and saw more radios.

Every available inch of floor and wall space, in fact, was filled with radios and radar screens, gear that had gone out with the Stone Age, complete with dials, valves and analogue readouts.

It was like stepping into a cross between a military surplus store and Radio Shack circa 1952.

Hutchison lowered his huge frame to the floor and assumed the lotus position on the chocolate-colored carpet. He had an almost childlike innocence about him. He'd never once asked why I'd come all this way to speak to him and he gave me the impression that only a small part of his mind was here in the room with me.

The equipment, he told me, had been requisitioned from some '50s-vintage Canadian warships he was helping to dismantle in the harbor. In return for his salvage services, the Canadian military said he could have all the stuff he was able to carry away with him. Clearly, they'd underestimated his strength.

Radios, sonar systems and electronic countermeasures devices lined shelves suspended from the ceiling. Hutchison told me he'd consulted the plans of the apartment block and had drilled holes in all the right places.

"There's a ton and half of the stuff above your head, but it's safe enough," he smiled. I glanced up nervously and noticed a heavy-looking cluster of boxes suspended over me, then asked if this was the equipment that had been used in the INSCOM tests. Hutchison shook his head. Much of it had been confiscated by the Canadian police and after their intervention, he'd found it hard to carry on, though recently he'd rebuilt the lab and was readying to start operations again.

He showed me an aluminum ingot that looked as if it had blown apart from the inside and a file filled with letterheads I recognized: Boeing and McDonnell Douglas had been but two of Hutchison's backers.

But he was getting ahead of himself and so was I. First things first. "What happened after the arrival of the INSCOM team?" I asked.

He scrolled back 15 years and told me about the plow.

The building had been unremarkable, another storage facility in the outer suburbs. There was no security, just an eight-foot wire fence and the warehouse's relative obscurity amid the smoke and grime of Vancouver's industrial quarter. It was not optimum, but guards would only have attracted attention.

The equipment was housed behind a wall of breeze blocks in the middle of the warehouse. The breeze blocks extended halfway to the roof—around 15 feet.

This was the target area.

Behind the wall was the large Tesla Coil containing the uranium source, a device around four and half feet tall with a doughnut-shaped metal coil on top.

Diagonally across the room, on the other side of the target area, sat a powerful Van de Graaf generator capable of producing a 250,000-volt DC static charge.

The other prominent piece of technology was a three-and-a-half-foot double-ended Tesla Coil, known as the "dumbbell," suspended from supports running across the top of the wall.

Between these three main equipment items were an assortment of smaller devices, all connected to each other by multiple coils of wire and cabling.

There were tuning capacitors, high-voltage transmission caps, RF coils and a spark gap that would snap every 40 seconds or so sending an earsplitting shock wave throughout the building while it was up and running.

Now, though, as the equipment warmed up prior to the test, all it emitted was a low-intensity hum.

Outside the target area lay a pile of unclaimed scrap metal. Leaning against the wall were three old streetlights and a spool of wire hawser. Set in front of them was a rusting horse-drawn plow, three times the weight of a man.

In the flickering light of the monitoring screens members of the team would see their shadows moving on the edge of their vision. Several said it made it feel like there were people there, watching them.

Between the scrap metal and the target area a bank of receivers and monitoring equipment rested on a workbench.

Hutchison, then in his late 30s, sat at the bench, watching monitors and tuning dials.

The Pentagon and DoE evaluation team had flown in from across the border the previous night. The atmosphere was relaxed as it could be—shirtsleeves, first-name stuff—but everyone was tense. No one knew what to expect; no one, that is, except Big Bad Bob, the crusty old skeptic from the Los Alamos National Laboratory.

What was happening here, Bob told anyone who'd listen, was just a bunch of smoke and mirrors, a waste of fuckin' time, effort and money.

His sidekick, John, was blessed with a more open mind and, given the nature of the assignment, he expressed the view, though not when Bob was around, that this was no bad thing.

Only a few days earlier, tongues of fire had licked their way up through the concrete floor, a manifestation of the Effect that had not been encountered before.

Everyone except Bob had accepted the Canadians' version of events at face value.

As Hutchison adjusted the monitoring equipment, he could hear the ladder behind him groaning under Bob's considerable bulk. Bob was gazing down on the equipment from the top of the wall. (Hutchison never made clear to me the reasons for the wall. Had it been put there to contain the Effect or possible fallout from it—an explosion perhaps?) Colonel Alexander, who was pacing in the shadows to the left of the workbench, asked him what he could see.

The equipment was humming and the cameras were turning. The target, a length of steel rod, wasn't moving—wasn't even quivering—so no friggin' surprise there, Bob replied.

Just then, the radio crackled. Bob's deputy was running some checks with special monitoring equipment outside the building. He was 300 feet from the warehouse and picking up some kind of distortion. Something, he said, was happening.

Alexander stepped out of the shadows and studied one of the monitors. He peered at the readings, then glanced at the video image of the steel bar, but it was just as Bob had said: nothing was moving. Nothing had changed.

Suddenly, without anyone touching anything, the ceiling lights switched on and began to glow intensely bright. For a moment, the entire floor area was bathed in incandescent white light. Then the bank of bulbs blew, sending a shower of red-hot filaments and glass onto the target area.

Except for the glow from the monitors, the warehouse was plunged back into darkness. Bob, who was standing a little to the right of Hutchison, started to laugh.

Out of the corner of his eye, over by the scrap area, the Canadian caught the movement, real movement this time, and instinctively ducked his head.

The crash was followed by a cry from Big Bad Bob, then silence.

The plow had sailed across the room at shoulder height and buried itself into the wall close to where he had been standing.

After the INSCOM team departed, Hutchison's work continued. The lab moved again to a different part of Vancouver and people came and went.

This much I know to be true, because Hutchison showed me copies of the reports.

Among Hutchison's visitors at this time was Jack Houck of the McDonnell Douglas aerospace corporation, who in 1985 spent two days analyzing the Effect. Houck came away satisfied that no fraudulence had occurred during the experiments he attended, during which, in a subsequent report, he pronounced that "some very interesting events" had been captured on videotape. However, he went on, "some of the biggest events occurred outside the target area. The first evening a gun barrel and a very heavy (60-pound) brass cylinder were hurled from a shelf in the back corner of the room onto the floor. Simultaneously, on the opposite side of the room toward the back, three other objects were hurled to the ground. One was a heavy aluminum bar (% inch by *2%* inch by 12 inch). It was bent by 30 degrees."

Houck attested to the randomness of the Hutchison Effect and postulated that it might in part be attributable to psychokinesis—that Hutchison, in other words, was either boosting the energy generated by the machinery with his mind or that his mind alone was responsible for the manifestations produced.

These phenomena, Hutchison was now able to report, included time-dilation—pockets of altered space-time within the target area—and, most extraordinary of all, the capacity of the Effect to turn metal ingots transparent. It was as if, momentarily, the ingots were there, but not there; visible in outline yet totally see-through.

It had been Hathaway's dream in the early stages of their work to develop Hutchison's machinery into a "stationary launch-assist" device: an antigravity aerospace platform.

This was based on his initial belief that the inertial properties of the machinery itself appeared to have altered during some of the experiments; this, in addition to the clearly altered weight condition of the objects placed in the target area—objects that I'd seen in the video Bushman had shown me in Texas.

But in 1986, Hutchison and Pharos Technologies went their separate ways, Pezarro and Hathaway having failed to secure the kind of backing for the Effect they'd always hoped for. It all fell apart, Hathaway said, when it was suggested that Hutchison "was an integral part of the apparatus"; that the Effect, in other words, was unachievable without the presence of Hutchison himself.

For his part, Hutchison vehemently denies this, but the fact that the most spectacular manifestations of the Effect always seemed to occur when he was around is hard to refute. The psychokinesis proponents hold this up as evidence that their theory is the right one; the technologists counter that it is Hutchison's intuitive feel for the machinery, his ability to tune it to the hairsbreadth tolerances required for things to start happening, that makes his presence necessary.

The fact that two aerospace companies—Boeing and McDonnell Douglas—felt it necessary to investigate the Hutchison Effect is at least telling.

Boeing partly funded a series of experiments during the late 1980s. By then, however, Hutchison had become disenchanted with the Canadian scene and in 1989 went on a scouting tour of Europe intent on moving his lab to either Austria or Germany. When he came back to Vancouver at the turn of the decade, he found the Canadian government had confiscated half of his equipment. The Royal Canadian Mounted Police maintained that it constituted an environmental hazard; Hutchison that the Canadians had been leaned on by the Americans.

Hutchison's suspicions were compounded when attempts to have the Los Alamos report released under the Freedom of Information Act resulted in failure.

No one in officialdom had been able to locate the files. It looked as if the report had been buried.

Later, Colonel Alexander, the head of the INSCOM group, told me that the report had been classified, but was subsequently downgraded to "confidential." In the end, it had been "routinely destroyed."

Alexander's take on the "plow incident" was also markedly different from Hutchison's. On the day in question, he said, nothing mysterious had happened. That, from INSCOM's point of view, was the problem.

I asked Alexander what he felt about it all.

"Oh, it's real all right," he told me, "the trouble is, sometimes it works and sometimes, it doesn't. But four out of five of us came away believing."

Chapter 26

I met Marckus in a country pub close to the haven on the estuary where we'd hooked up at the very beginning. It had been several years since our initial rendezvous, but when I walked in and saw him in the corner, time might as well have stood still. He looked up from his paper, gave me a wave and clicked his fingers for some attention from the bar. Other than a bored-looking girl behind the pumps, there was no one else in the room.

After she'd taken my order, she came over and set my beer down on Marckus' paper. Marckus clucked like an old hen and handed the glass to me. The circle of condensation, I noticed, had partly ringed the word "doom" on a headline about the forthcoming earth summit. It felt about right. It had been raining solidly for months.

"So you know," he said with an air of finality. "Good. I can't stand awkward explanations."

Before departing for Canada, when I'd been desperate for him to brief me on Hutchison, I'd left messages on his answering machine telling him I wanted to talk about *Blowback*—the book he had lent me about U.S. recruitment of high-value Nazis. Marckus must have figured out that I'd known then.

"Where have you been?" I asked him.

"I decided to make use of some vacation time that's been owing to me." He held up his hands. "I'm sorry. I should have told you."

"So where did you go?"

He looked down at his beer. "I've been following in your footsteps, paying a few respects. Bavaria is beautiful this time of year. From the little hotel where I was staying you can see the snow on the mountains. Maybe on a clear day, if you could only see through the wire, you might have glimpsed the same view from Dachau."

"How many members of your family did you lose?" I asked.

"A couple that I know of. An uncle and aunt on my father's side. Most of me is as English as you are." He paused. "I'm sorry I put you through the hoops. It must all seem a little trite, I suppose. But it was important to me that you found things out for yourself.

"When you started out on the path that you did, sooner or later the trail was going to lead you to Germany. I was happy to help you with the science, but it was important that I held back certain kinds of information. It has taken me decades to build the knowledge that you have acquired in just a few years. But if I'd told you the full story from the outset, you'd have written me off as a crank."

"Do you think the Americans have mastered the technology?" I asked.

He shrugged theatrically. "We're going in circles again, aren't we? I told you when we first met. I don't know. I know—you know now—that they have access to it, but whether they've *mastered* it or not . . . it depends on what you mean by 'mastered.' '

He took a sip from his drink and continued. "When the Americans tripped over this mutant strain of nonlinear physics and took it back home with them, they were astute enough to realize that their homegrown scientific talent couldn't handle it. That it was beyond their cultural terms of reference. That's why they recruited so many Germans. The Nazis developed a unique approach to science and engineering quite separate from the rest of the world, because their ideology, unrestrained as it was, supported a wholly different way of doing things. Von Braun's V-2s are a case in point, but so was their understanding of physics. The trouble was, when the Americans took it all home with them they found out, too late, that it came infected with a virus. You take the science on, you take on aspects of the ideology, as well."

"And the black world?" I prompted.

"Well, there are different shades of black, of course. But what interests me is that the bit that is truly unaccountable is the part of the system that's been exposed longest to the virus. So in time, it will simply destroy itself. That, at least, is my earnest hope."

Marckus stared out of the window a while, then shook himself like a dog. "Tell me about Canada."

I took a pull of my drink and set the glass down. I felt tired. "There isn't a whole lot to go by. After the Royal Canadian Mounted Police paid him a visit, Hutchison doesn't even have the equipment to do lévitations or transmutations anymore."

He glanced up. "So, you believe him."

"I believe that he caused objects to lose their weight. I also believe he made iron bars turn momentarily transparent and I believe that he transmuted metals." I tried to rub some of the tiredness away, but the alcohol wasn't helping. "Beyond that, I don't know."

Marckus fell silent for a few seconds, then he said: "Do you have any idea how much energy it takes to transmute a metal?"

At the back of my head, I seemed to recall Hathaway talking in terms of a gigawatt or two. I found it difficult to visualize a gigawatt and said as much to Marckus.

I didn't want another physics lesson, but I realized too late I was going to get one.

"At the low end of the scale, Hutchison was using 400 watts to achieve the effects you're talking about," Marckus said. "Four hundred watts are the heat and light you get from four light bulbs." A kilowatt—a thousand watts—represents the heat you get from a one-bar electric fire. A thousand kilowatts are a megawatt and a thousand megawatts are a terawatt. A thousand terawatts, Marckus told me, were a gigawatt.

"You know now what a gigawatt is?" he said. "A gigawatt is the equivalent energy release of the Nagasaki bomb. And that's what Hutchison was pulling out of his 110-volt AC wall socket to turn steel into lead.

"Transmutation is real. The reason most people don't use it to turn lead into gold is that the power requirements cost more than the gold."

"Why would INSCOM be interested in alchemy?" I asked.

Marckus smiled again, but the look in his eyes was intense. "Transmutation has other purposes. You can use it to change the rate at which radioactive elements decay or you can turn the whole process around."

Marckus was putting me through the hoops again.

"Go on," I told him.

"Think of it," he said, leaning forward, "transmutation, if you can do it the Hutchison way, is a cheap method of enriching uranium, for example. There's another thing, too. Remember when you were heading for Puthoff's place and you asked me for a no-brainer on the power potential of zero-point energy? I gave you the shoebox analogy and how much untapped energy there is in it?"

He swilled the dregs of his beer around, drained them, then set the glass down and looked at me. "Maybe Hutchison doesn't know it. Release that energy slowly and you've got a safe, clean reactor that can go on pumping out power forever. Speed up the process and make all the right connections and you've got a bomb; one that'll make a thermonuke look like a child's firecracker. No wonder they shredded the report at Los Alamos."

I was about to remind him that it had merely been "routinely destroyed," but stopped myself. Standing next to the coffee machine at the Institute of Advanced Studies in Austin, Puthoff had coolly relayed his belief that there was enough energy in my cup to boil the world's oceans many times over. And then I remembered the Schaubergers' fears over the Americans' hijacking of the implosion process—its potential use in the development of a giant bomb.

I could feel my heart in my throat.

"When he does what he does," Marckus said, "Hutchison is reaching into a place that you can't see or touch and he's pulling things out we call 'phenomena.' " He turned his index fingers into quote marks to make the point. "But things don't happen by magic. Phenomena happen because there are laws of physics we don't understand yet. The fact we haven't found the answer yet is our problem, not Nature's. But we're working on it." He stared at me and frowned. "Why on Earth are you smiling?"

"Because you just nailed something down for me. Something that's bugged the hell out of me almost from the very beginning."

"What's that?"

"The Philadelphia Experiment. A neat piece of disinformation, I think you'll agree, but stuffed full of real elements that make it impossible for people like you or me to conduct a meaningful investigation of anything remotely related to it. I'm thinking of T. T. Brown, electrostatics and stealth, of course, but there was always that one part of the story that didn't seem to fit—the part about the ship slipping into another dimension. Even that, it turns out, has a grain of truth in it."

Marckus nodded. "The best disinformation always does."

Bushman *was* right. Everything had been right there in Hutchison's apartment.

No wonder INSCOM's weird-shit division had shown up at his door.

Sooner or later, someone would succeed in developing a zero-point reactor—a machine that would be able to exploit the fluctuations in the quantum sea as they blinked in and out of existence millions of times every second. It was just a matter of time. "We are at the stage that the fathers of the atomic bomb were at when they put together their first test nuclear reactor in the early Forties—and look what happened a few years later," Puthoff had been quoted as saying recently.

I offered Marckus another drink, but he looked at his watch and said that he had to get going. The wind had started to lash against the window, bringing more rain with it. Marckus pulled up the collar of his coat and readied himself to leave.

But I hadn't quite finished with Dan Marckus just yet.

"So what's it to be?" I asked him. "Are you going to build a bomb or a reactor?"

Marckus made an exaggerated display of busying himself with his coat. He said nothing, so I asked him again.

"I'd like to know what you're going to do with this knowledge, Dan. You know as well as I do that radical technology that destroys existing technology isn't welcome."

"Let me put it another way," he said. "Years ago, a story appeared in one of those pulp American science-fiction rags, *Astounding Science Fiction* I think it was, in which the U.S. military authorities gathered America's best scientific brains around a table and told them to develop and build an antigravity machine, because it was known that the Russians had already developed something similar. The twist in the tale, of course, was that the business about the Russians was a total piece of fiction, but not knowing this the scientists went away, put their heads together, and came up with a crude, but workable device.

"The point of the story is that nothing is impossible, once it is known to be practicable. I have something infinitely better than that. Physicists have proven the existence of the zero-point energy field and your data shows that people have actually developed antigravity devices that flew. I want you to know that you weren't simply duplicating knowledge that I already had. Let's say I had the big picture and you provided the details. It's the details in this business that are important. What we're faced with here is a simple set of alternatives. Free, clean energy for everyone on the one hand or the biggest bloody bomb you can imagine. I want the good guys to be in the van here, because a day doesn't go by that I don't think about my family and what happened to them under the Nazis."

Marckus strolled across the parking lot, heading for a pathway through the woods on the other side. There was something nagging at the back of my head that I'd meant to ask him, but I couldn't think of it. I closed my eyes, but the inspiration wouldn't come. When I opened them again, he had vanished among the trees.

It was then, of course, that it came to me. I'd meant to ask if he had sent the article that had landed on my desk at Jane's all those years ago.

I smiled to myself. That would have been too Machiavellian; even by Marckus' impressive standards. But I would ask him all the same.

Twenty minutes later, I eased my car along the narrow road that ran beside the abandoned radar establishment and parked up close to the jetty where Marckus and I had first met. The rain had passed, leaving the unmistakable smell of spring in its wake. I got out of the car and gazed skyward. High above a checkered layer of cirrocumulus, an aircraft contrail tracked westward toward America, the silver arrowhead at the point of its creation looking tiny and vulnerable against the deep blue. For years, I had banked on the presumption that technology would pursue a set course—one that had been preordained ever since someone had had the wit to fashion a wheel out of a piece of flat stone. Now I knew that it didn't have to be that way, that there were shortcuts in the process that would allow us to leap the state of the art in moments of searing inspiration. I thought back to the day that Garry Lyles at NASA had outlined his vision of interstellar travel, the fast trip to Alpha Centauri that he earnestly hoped man would make within the next 100 years.

If we looked in the right places, we might just be making it a lot sooner.

Epilogue

A few final thoughts, the first of them regarding George S. Trimble Jr., the man whose comments on the imminent "reality" of gravity control provided the trigger for the investigation behind this book. In 1967, Trimble left the Martin Company for NASA, where he became director of the Advanced Manned Missons Program. His reasons for not wanting to be interviewed about his activities at Martin Aircraft deep into his retirement remain unclear, although, of course, they may be entirely innocent. As an ironic twist on everything that followed, I recently came across a comment of his: "The biggest deterrent to scientific progress is a refusal of some people, including scientists, to believe that things that seem amazing can really happen," the *New York Herald Tribune* quoted him as saying on November 22,1955. "I know that if Washington decides that it is vital to our national survival to go where we want and do what we want without having to worry about gravity, we'd find the answer rapidly."

Enough said.

In October 2000, the U.S. magazine *Popular Mechanics* revealed that Ning Li, the Chinese-American scientist working in an area of endeavor similar to Dr. Evgeny Podkletnov, was close to developing an operational machine capable of exerting an attractive or repulsive force on all matter. By using 12-inch disc-shaped superconductors and around a kilowatt of electricity, Li's device would produce a force field, the magazine stated, that would "effectively neutralize gravity above a 1-foot-diameter region extending from the surface of the planet to outer space." Li left the University of Alabama at Huntsville in mid-2000 to pursue the commercial development of her invention and has kept a low profile since. While her eye is said to be on civilian spin-offs of this remarkable breakthrough—NASA scientists at the Marshall Space Flight Center believe her "AC Gravity" machine could be used as a shield for protecting the International Space Station against impacts by small meteorites—it goes almost without saying that it could also be hijacked as a weapon. The same force that can deflect a meteorite or a piece of orbiting space junk can also stop a reconnaissance satellite or a ballistic missile dead in its tracks. Hit a foot-wide gravity-reflecting beam at an orbiting velocity of 17,000 miles per hour and it would be no different to hitting a brick wall, except there would be no evidence to say that you had hit anything. The results, to borrow an expression from science-fiction writer Arthur C. Clarke, would be "indistinguishable from magic," the ultimate in weapons technology.

Over recent years, a wealth of articles have appeared outlining the view of an emerging breed of physicists that we may indeed reside in a multi-dimensional cosmos. The August 2000 edition of *Scientific American,* for example, generated a mass of copy in newspapers here and in the States on this growing belief—that parallel universes may exist alongside our own and how additional, unseen dimensions would help to unify the fundamental forces of Nature that inhabit our four-dimensional space-time. According to this thinking, much of it wrapped within so-called "string theory," our universe may simply exist as a membrane floating within a higher-dimensional space, with gravity—this impossibly weak, little-understood yet massively influential force—the only one of the four fundamental forces capable of propagating across the dimensions. Over the course of the next decade, experimentation may provide real answers to these tantalizing and complex suppositions. For me, it has simply served to show how taboo notions—taboo *science*—can, in time, enter the mainstream of ideas.

As I sit here, picking over clippings related to these and other areas of research connected with this book, it has dawned on me only now that attitudes *have* changed in the relatively short space of time it has taken me to write it. Broadsheet newspapers from the *New York Times* to the *Sunday Times* and the *Observer* have all carried thought-provoking features over the past few years on zero-point energy, faster-than-light travel and other contentious areas of science. Suddenly, the idea of gravity having an *antigravity* component—this heresy that terrified the professional daylights out of me a decade ago—doesn't seem so strange after all.

On that note, I should add that this book is in not intended to be a catchall explanation for UFOs. While it may go some way toward explaining some of the thousands of sightings that have occurred since the Second World War—many of them documented in official files—the subject is too complex, too multifarious, in my opinion, to conform to a single explanation. Although the data that Boyd Bushman encouraged me to follow to glean the truth about antigravity is sufficient for me to reach some definitive conclusions on that subject, it is inconclusive, to my mind at least, on the question of UFOs. For the time being, it must remain a loose end.

Regarding the definitive fate of SS General Dr. Hans Kammler, there are rumors that he died in Virginia—some have it as Texas—but it amounts to insubstantial testimony and to date there is no hard evidence to say that he came to the States, let alone died there. The U.S. National Archives remain devoid of any meaningful files on him.

In April 2001, the CIA provided confirmation of just about everything Christopher Simpson wrote in *Blowback* when under Congressional directive it released 20 files on Nazi war criminals recruited by U.S. intelligence at the end of the Second World War. One of these was Emil Augsburg, an SS officer instrumental in drawing up the "Final Solution to the Jewish Question" at the Wannsee conference in 1941. Another was Gestapo captain Klaus Barbie, the infamous "Butcher of Lyons."

Yet to be confirmed at official levels, though likely to be just as true, is the even less salutary story of Gunter Reinemer, an SS lieutenant in charge of death squads at the Treblinka concentration camp. After the war, the CIA gave Reinemer a whole new identity—as a Jewish Holocaust survivor of all people—before dispatching him into East Germany as a spy. In 1988, a few days before he was found dead, Reinemer was unmasked by a German financial investigator named Dieter Matschke. "You have to ask yourself," Matschke was quoted in the London *Times* on December 15, 2000, "how many other Reinemers did America spirit to safety?"

If the U.S. recruitment program did this for Augsburg, Barbie and Reinemer, it would have bent over backward to accommodate Kammler, keeper of the Third Reich's most exotic military secrets.

Marckus did not place the article on my desk. I checked.

Since the publication of the U.K. edition of *The Huntfor Zero Point,* one other significant postscript to the story is worth mentioning—in time, the word "momentous" may even be appropriate. On March 26, 2002, a U.S. patent was granted for a device called the "Motionless Magnetic Generator," or MEG, that its supporters say will be the world's first commercially available free-energy home-generator. The MEG has been developed by a team of inventors led by long-time zero point energy pioneer and proponent Dr. Thomas E. Bearden, a retired U.S. Army lieutenant colonel and former nuclear engineer. The MEG is designed to provide an indefinite output of 2.5 kilowatts—enough to run a room or two in your house—by tapping into the infinite energy of the quantum sea. Link three or four MEGs together, proponents claim, and you get enough output to run an entire house. The event is significant, at least, because the U.S. Patent Office traditionally shuns so-called "free-energy" devices; de facto, it has accepted there must be something to this one. As I write this, scant weeks after the patent's acceptance, it remains to be seen whether claims for the MEG will indeed transcend into commercially available hardware. But maybe, just maybe—as I sit here recalling Hal Puthoff's exhortation—3.26.02 will be the date I put in my diary as the day the world changed—forever.

Bibliography

PRINCIPAL PUBLISHED SOURCES:

Books

Agoston, Tom. *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia.* New York: Dodd Mead, 1985.

Barrow, John D. *Impossibility: The Limits ofScience and The Science of Limits.* London: Vintage, 1999

Berlitz, Charles and Moore, William. *The Philadelphia Experiment.* London: Souvenir Press, 1979

Bower, Tom. *The Paperclip Conspiracy.* London: Michael Joseph, 1987

Coats, Callum. *Living Energies.* Bath, UK: Gateway Books, 1996

Darlington, David. *The Dreamland Chronicles.* London: Little Brown, 1997

Good, Timothy. *Above Top Secret.* London: Grafton Books, 1989

Greene, Brian. *The Elegant Universe.* London: Vintage, 1999

Harwood, William. B. *Raise Heaven & Earth. The Story of Martin Marietta People & Their Pioneering Achievements.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1993

Henshall, Philip. *The Nuclear Axis.* Stroud, UK: Sulton, 2000

—. *Vengeance. Hitler's Nuclear Weapons, Fact or Fiction.* Stroud, UK: Alan Sutton Publishing, 1995

Hirschfeld, Wolfgang and Brooks, Geoffrey. *Hirschfeld: The Secret Diary ofa U-Boat.* London: Orion, 1997

Jane 's Fighting Aircraft of World War Two. London: Jane's Publishing Company, 1946-47

Jones, R.V. *Most Secret War.* London: Coronet, 1979

Lomas, Robert. *The Man Who Invented the 20th Century—Nikola Tesla, Forgotten Genius of Electricity.* London: Headline Book Publishing, 1999

Lucas, James. *Last Days ofthe Reich.* London: Grafton Books, 1987

Lusar, Rudolf. *German Secret Weapons ofWorld War II.* London: Neville Spearman Ltd., 1959

Manning, Jeane. *The Coming Energy Revolution.* New York: Avery Publishing Group, 1996

Masters, David. *German Jet Genesis,* London: Jane's Publishing Company, 1982

Miller, Jay. *Lockheed's Skunk Works—The Official History.* Leicester, UK: Midland Publishing, 1995

Overy, Richard. *The Penguin Historical Atlas of the Third Reich.* London: Penguin Group, 1996

Piszkiewicz, Dennis. *The Nazi Rocketeers—Dreams ofSpace and Crimes of War.* New York: Praeger Publishers, 1995

Pitt, Barrie (editor). *The Military History of World War Two.* Twickenham, UK: Temple Press, 1988

Rhodes, Richard. *The Making ofthe Atomic Bomb.* New York: Touchstone, 1988

Rich, Ben R. and Janos, Leo. *Skunk Works.* London: Little Brown, 1994

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback.* New York: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1988

Speer Albert. *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an S S Industrial Empire.* New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1981

Speer Albert. *Inside the Third Reich.* London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1970

Trevor-Roper, Hugh (editor). *The Goebbels Diaries: The Last Days.*

—. *The Last Days of Hitler.* 7th Edition. London: Macmillan, 1995

Vajda, Ferenc A. and Dancey, Peter. *German A/C Industry & Production 1933-45.* Shrewsbury, UK: Airlife Publishing, 1998

Valone, Thomas MA, PE, (editor). *Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology.* Washington: 2nd Edition. Integrity Research Institute, 1995

Vesco, Renato. *Intercept—But Don't Shoot.* New York: Grove Press, 1971

Wiener, Tim. *Blank Check.* London: Warner Books, 1990

Witkowski, Igor. *Supertajne Bronie Hitlera.* Warsaw: WIS, 2000

Zuk, Bill. *Canada's Flying Saucer Projects. The Story ofAvro Canada's Secret Projects.* Boston Mills Press, 2001

Articles

"Black World Engineers, Scientists Encourage Using Highly Classified Technology for Civil Applications," William B. Scott, *Aviation Week,* 9/3/92

"Breaking the Law of Gravity," Charles Platt, *Wired,* 3/98

"Military Power," Bill Gunston OBE, FRAeS, *Air International,* 1/00

"Nordhausen," Karel Mevgry, *After the Battle,* No. 101

"Secret Advanced Vehicles Demonstrate Technologies for Military Use," William B. *Scott, Aviation Week,* 1/10/90

"Secrets by the Thousands," C. Lester Walker, *Harper's Magazine,* 10/46

"Taming Gravity," Jim Wilson, *Popular Mechanics,* 10/00

"The Universe's Unseen Dimensions," Nima Arkani, Savas Dimopoulos and Georgi Dvali, *Scientific American,* 8/00

"The U.S. Antigravity Squadron," Paul LaViolette, Ph.D., *Electrogravitics Systems* (Op Cit)

"Without Stress or Strain . . . or Weight," Intel, *Interavia,* 5/56

Reports

Electro aero dynamic s in Supersonic Flow, M.S. Cahn and G.M. Andrew, The Northrop Corporation, AIAA, 1/68

Electrogravitics Systems: An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control, Aviation Studies (International Limited) 1956

Project LUSTY, U.S. Air Force History Office 1945

Project Winterhaven, The Townsend Brown Foundation 1952

USAF Electric Propulsion Study, Dennis J. Cravens

USAF Report: 21st Century Propulsion Concepts, R.L. Talley, 5/91

Index

Page numbers ofillustrations appear in italics.

A-12 (Mach 3.2 A-12 Blackbird), 8, 18,14, 119,126, 144, 246, 248. *See also* SR-71 Blackbird
Abelman, Daniella "Dani," 7-9, 21, 85
"About Gravitation, Vortices and Waves in Rotating Media" (Hilgenberg), 194
Advanced Deep Space Transport (ADST), 108
AEG, 204
Aerospace industry, 224-28, 239-40, 247, 252,254
Agoston, Tom, 159, 160-69, 172, 176, 177, 180,181,183,199,203
Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI), 32
Air International ma.ga.zine, 125
Alexander, Col. John B., 262, 263, 266, 268
Alsos Mission, 178-79, 220-21
American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics (AIAA), 129-30, 134, 137,138
Anderson, Lindsay, 115-16
Antigravity, 14
  aerospace applications, 235-36
  article, 1996,101-3, 702
  articles on, 1950s, 1-4, 5-7, 12, 17-19, 208
  B-2 Stealth Bomber and, 91, 121-22, 123-26, 129-30,132-37
  "Bell, the," Germany, WWII, 182-84, 188, 191-201, 202, 228-29, 232, 234
  black programs, 14, 16, 33, 79, 89, 90, 115
  economic effect of, 81, 144-45, 239, 251
  experiments, 5, 7, 23, 24, 58, 83-84
  five pathways to, 117, 121, 141
  gravity shielding as, 103, 104, 107, 117, 121,228,231,234,275
  Hutchison Effect and, 265-67
  lévitation and, 10-11, 211, 213, 233, 236, 237
  Lockheed Martin and, 10-11
  NRL, 24
  Philadelphia Experiment, 24-27, 130, 137-38, 272
  Podkletnov discovery, 101-7, 113-14
  propulsion system, 1-4, 44, 208-22, 222, 223
  Puthoffand,79,221
  Schauberger and, 208-22, 222, 223-27, 250-51
  Sheffield, England, talk by Podkletnov, 228,230-31,235-37
  silence concerning research or pursuit of, 12
  U.S. shutting down of white programs, 223-27,251
  weight reduction of object associated with, 102, 103,104,121-22,231, 235, 236,269
  See also Trimble, George S.
"Antigravity: The End of Aerodynamics?" (Young), 230
Area 51 (Groom Lake, NV), 116, 119, 128, 199
  A-12 test flight, 246
  alien spacecraft stories and, 149
  link with Edwards, 139-40
  sightings of aircraft around, 148—49
  Tikaboo Valley and Extraterrestrial Highway, 149
Astra, 145, 150
Atomic Shield, 178
Augsburg, Emil, 277
Aurora, 14-15,16, 126,127, 144, 148, 246, 249
  link to Kingfish, 245^9
  sighting, 1989 and 1990, Belgium, 16
  sighting, 1992, North Sea, 15, 246
Austria
  Bad Ischl, Schauberger home, 204, 238
  Ebensee (Zement), underground Nazi complex, 181-82, 206
  Leonstein, 219, 220
  Russian army in, 219, 236-37
  Vienna, Schauberger's apartment, 236-37

  Vienna, secret Nazi research facility, 162
  Vienna, SS technical engineer school, 218,237
Aviation Studies (International), Ltd., 19
Aviation Week, 5, 123, 125-26, 134, 144, 248
Avro company, Canada, 226, 250
  Avrocar, 73-74, 76
  Project Silverbug/Y2 (U.S. Air Force flying saucer project), 73-77, 226, 250

B-2 Stealth Bomber, 119, 121, 122, 123-26, 128-29,132-37,142
B-24 Liberator bomber, 245
B-36, 245
B-58 (first supersonic bomber), 245
BAE Systems (formerly British Aerospace [BAe] Defence), 79, 82, 83-85, 230
Bahnson Company, 34
Bakersfield, CA, F-117A Stealth Fighter crash, ix-xi, 240^1, 244
  Voodoo fighter remains scattered at, 244
Barbie, Klaus, 277
Bearden, Thomas E., 277
Belgium, sightings of aircraft, 1989, 1990, 16
Bell, antigravity device *(Die Glocke,* code names *Laternentrager* and *Chronos),* Germany, WWII, 182-84, 188, 191-201,202
  massacre of Nordhausen scientists and, 183-84, 187, 200-201, 233, 251
  meaning of code names, 228
  as time machine, 229, 232
  zero-point energy field and, 232-33
Bell, Lawrence D., 3, 4, 7, 12, 20
Bell Aircraft, 3, 20, 35
Belluzzo, Giuseppe, 45, 54, 163
Berlitz, Charles, 25, 26, 137
Bernadotte, Count Folke, 165
Bertrandias, Maj. Gen. Victor E., 29-30, 32,33,123
Biefeld, Paul Alfred, 23
Black operations, 15, 96-97, 121, 250, 269
  A-12,144,150,248
  Air Force projects, 147-48
  antigravity development, 14, 16, 33, 89, 115,121
  Aurora, 126
  budget, 120, 126-27
  "deep black," 116,243,249
  disinformation and, 17, 26, 27, 76, 137, 138,139,149-50,227,272
  F-l 17A Fighter crash at Bakersfield and, x-xi, 240-41, 244
  German, 159, 160-69,177,178, 179-80, 187, 220
  Kingfish program, 245-49, 250
  Operation Paperclip becomes, 243
  origins, 251, 269
  Pentagon and, 146
  "quantum leap technologies" and, 116, 244
  remote viewing (RV), 78-79, 112-13, 238
  Shiva Star, 14, 15,96
  Skunk Works (and Plant 42), 8-9, 10, 115-16, 119, 127, 135, 136,139, 140, 142-45, 149, 239, 246, 247
  stealth development, x-xi, 46, 115-22, 124, 240
  Timberwind or nuclear thermal rocket, 94
  See also Area 51
Blowback—The First Full Account of America 's Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy (Simpson), 242^43, 269, 277
Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia (Agoston), 159, 160-69, 174, 176, 177
BMW (Bayerische Motorenwerke), Bramo, 51-52, 53
Boeing Corp., 20, 140, 265, 268
  Model 15A, 23
Boiling Air Force Base, Washington, D.C., 63,64
Bormann, Martin, 153, 180, 186, 187, 199
Bosch, 204
Bower, Tom, 60, 243
"Breakthrough As Scientists Beat Gravity" (Matthews & Sample), 101-3, 702
Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program (BPP), 99-100, 114, 229, 233, 258
Breslau, Germany (Wroclaw, Poland), 45, 163, 182-84, 185-90,217
  subterranean facility, 52-53
Britain
  Bawdsey Manor, antenna masts, 87-88
  Nazi technology, Canadian testing of, 57, 61
  Nazi technology, obtaining, 59-62
  Sheffield talk by Podkletnov, 228, 230-31,235-37
  U.K. Public Records Office, 60
British Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee (BIOS), 57, 58-59
Brown, Thomas Townsend, 7, 20-30, 33-34, 35,44,46, 76,123,124,125,130,136, 137,141,142,144, 227, 258,272
  Gravitor, 23, 29

Brown, Thomas Townsend *(cont'd)*
  Philadelphia Experiment and, 24-27, 130,138,272
  Project Winterhaven, 30, 31-33, 123, 138,144
Brzezinski, Zbigniew, 116
Bushman, Boyd, 10-11, 240, 249, 252-56, 257,276
  videotape from, 253

Cady, Willoughby M, 32-33
Campbell, Glenn, 139-40
Canada
  Nazi technology, testing of, 57, 61
  "Silverbug affair," 73-77
Carpenter, Joel, 46
Carroll, Maj. Gen. Joseph F., 32
Casimir, Hendrik, 109
Casimir Effect, 109
CIA (Central Intelligence Agency)
  Kingfish program and need for high-flying, super-fast spy plane, 245-49, 250
  Mach 3.2 A-12 Blackbird and, 246
  Nazis recruited by, 243, 251-52, 277
  strong-arm tactics by, Kingfish program, 248-49
  See also Aurora
Clarke, Arthur C., 276
Clarke Electronics, 20
Coanda effect, 221-22, 233
Coats, Callum, 221,224, 233
Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee (CIOS), 57, 58-59, 60, 62, 177
Convair (formerly Consolidated Vultee Aircraft), 20, 35, 245
  B-24 Liberator bomber, 245
  B-36, 245
  B-58 (first supersonic bomber), 245
  black operations at, 247
  Widmer at, 245
Craig, Gen., 29-30, 32, 33, 123
Cross, Lawrence, 15-17, 21, 26, 47-48, 53, 57, 58, 63, 77, 204, 205, 206
Curtiss-Wright, 20
Czechoslovakia
  Brno (Bruenn), 160, 163
  Gablonz (Jablonec), 214
  Neudek (Nejdek) weapons factory, 216
  Pilsen, 160, 163, 172, 175, 178
  Prague, German WWII research, 45, 51, 52,76-77,163
  Skoda Works, 160, 169,174, 175-84, 195,202,252
  U.S. Third Army (Patton's troops) in, 173-74,175-76

Degaussing, 24, 26-27
Degenkolb, Gerhard, 163, 167, 168
Desert Rats, 139,147
Disinformation, 17, 26, 27, 76,137, 138, 139, 149-50, 227
  Philadelphia experiment as, 272
  UFOs as, 149-50, 227
Doenitz, Adm. Karl, 65
Donner, Robert, 224, 225
Dornberger, Walter, 165-66, 242, 243
Douglas Aircraft Company, 19
"Drag" or air resistance of aircraft, 129, 132-33,134-35

Edison, Thomas, 258-59
Edwards Air Force Base, 139
Einstein, Albert, 85, 98, 194, 254, 256
Electricity
  AC current, 258-59, 260
  gigawatt, 271
  Hutchinson and, 260-61
  measurement of, 271
  Tesla and, 258-60
  Van de Graaf generator, 265
Electric Propulsion Study (U.S. Air Force), 84, 88, 89
"Electroaerodynamics in Supersonic Flow" (Northrop), 134, 137, 138
Electrogravitics Systems—An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control, 17-20, 30
Electromagnetism, 100-101, 232, 234, 258, 261
Electrostatic fields, 129-30, 132-33, 141-42
Eradication (clean-up, red-lining) of information, 137, 138, 180
  Los Alamos report on Hutchison Effect, 268,271
Evans, Ron, 81-82, 83, 105, 230

F-16 fighter, 240, 245
F-22 fighter, 240
F-l 11 bomber, 15
F-117A Stealth Fighter, x-xi, 46, 116, 118, 119, 120, 125, 129, 136, 144, 145, 240
Faraday, Michael, 85
Fedden, Roy, 61, 62
Fegelein, Hermann, 167
Fifth dimension (hyperspace), 233-34
Fleming, Ian, 59
Flight International, 5

Flying saucer
  Brown's, 23, 24, 31-33, 34,43,124
  Canada efforts to create, 73-77, 226, 227
  German, 45-46, 47, 51-54, 58, 77, 163, 204-22, 222
  Schauberger and, 211, 272, 213-22, 222
  U.S. Air Force's, 226
  See also Foo-fighters
"Flying Top," 51, 52, 58, 213, 215
  Marienehe, Germany, 213, 215
Foo-fighters, 40-44, 54-57, 68-70, 72, 220
  Kugelblitz (Ball Lightning Fighter), 56
  Feuerball (Fireball), 55
Fort Worth, 244-45, 254
  Air Force Plant No. 4, 245
  Lockheed Martin Division at, 240, 241, 245
Frost, John, 73-77,226
Frost, Tony, 75-76

Galileo, 254
General Dynamics (GD Convair), 245, 247, 249,254
  loss of Kingfish contract, 246
General Electric, 6, 20, 34, 124
"G-Engines Are Coming!, The" (Gladych), 1-4, *3,* 6
Gerchsheimer, Karl, 224-25
  Sherman, TX, facility, 224-25
Gerlach, Walther, 183, 194
German Secret Weapons of World War II (Lusar), 44-46, 47, 214
Germany (Nazi Germany)
  A-4 rocket, 153-54, 155, 156, 165, 168
  A-9/A-10,167
  antigravity research, 182-84, 188, 191-201, 202, 234-35
  anti-Hitler elements, 155, 165
  atomic bomb and nuclear development, 178-80, 182, 183, 202, 203, 220-21
  "Bell, the," 182-84, 188, 191-201, 202, 228-29
  concentration camps, for labor pool for weapons projects, 154-57, 170, 171, 172, 188,204,217,218
  evacuation of secret weapons, 187-90, 199, 202, 204
  Fleissiges Lieschen ("Busy Lizzie"), 45
  "Flying Top," 51, 52, 58, 213, 215
  foo-fighters, 40-44, 54-57, 68-70, 72, 220
  General Plan 1945, 186, 189
  Graf Zeppelin, 87-88
  guided weapons technology and *Windhund,* 69-70, 72
  Kammlerstab, 160-61,172,177, 180, 203, 252
  massacre of Nordhausen scientists, 183-84,187,200-201,233,251
  Mittelwerk GmbH, 156, 165,170
  naval advances, 61
  remote interference with aircraft, 68, 70-71,203,220
  RLM (State Air Ministry), 51
  Skoda Works, Czechoslovakia, 160, 169, 174,175-84,195,202,252
  surrender, 176, 219
  SS, 155, 172, 175, 200-201
  SS FEP *(Forschungen, Entwicklungen und Patente),* 194-95
  SS oversight of secret weapons research, 151-52, 153-59, 160-69, 178, 199-200, 202-3, 217, 238, 243
  SS "Special Evacuation *Kommando"* 183,186,187,189,190,195,198, 199
  tech-plunder of, 59-63, 64-73, *71,* 151, 162,172,178,195,206,250,251
  underground facilities, 66, 67-68, 157, 181-82, 188, 193, 196-201
  underground weapons factory, Nordhausen, 56, 156-57, 165-66, 167, 170-74, 183-84, 187, 200-201, 243
  V-l flying bomb, 44, 170
  V-2 ballistic missile, 44, 56, 151, 157, 168,170,171,251,269
  Vienna, SS technical engineer school, 218,237
  Vienna secret research facility, 162
  World War II secret weapons, 44-47, 51, 187,250,251,269
Gladych, Michael, 1, *3*
Glenn Research Center, Lewis Field, Cleveland, 99-100, 258
Goebbelsjoseph, 158, 164
Goering, Hermann, 55, 157, 161, 167, 176
Gordon, Jack, 136, 142-45
"Gravitoelectric-electric coupling via superconductivity" (Torr & Li), 103
Gravity, 11, 13-14,79-80, 234
  electromagnetism and, 100-101
  heat and, 85
  reduction and distance, 106
  shielding (antigravity), 103, 104, 107, 117,121, 228, 231,234, 235, 275-76
  superconductivity and, 103, 106-7, 194, 231
  ZPEand, 113, 117, 121,231
Grawitz, Ernst, 193
Groom Lake, NV. *See* Area 51
Groves, Gen. Leslie, 147, 178

Gunston, Bill, 124-25
Gyroscopes, 82, 83, 104, 237

Habermohl, Klaus, 45, 52, 53, 54, 163
Hanke, Karl, 186, 187, 188
Hathaway, George, 257, 258, 260, 261, 262, 267, 268
Heinkel, Ernst, 50, 213, 215, 214, 215
Heinkel Aircraft Company, Marienehe, Germany, 50, 215
  He 111, 50
  He 162, 167
  He 178, 50
  He 280, 50,213,215
  HeS 3A turbojet, 51
Heisenberg, Werner, 178
Henshall, Philip, 199
Hermann Goering Works, Linz, 218—19
Heydrich, Reinhard, 156, 160, 186
Hilgenberg, O. C, 194
Hiller Company, 19-20
Himmler, Heinrich, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157, 160, 161, 163,164, 167, 168,177, 186,199,203,205
Hitler, Adolf, 153, 158, 159,161, 164, 175, 179,209
Holocaust, 200-201, 206, 222, 277
Houck, Jack, 267
Howe, C. D., 74
"How I Control Gravitation" (Brown), 23
Hughes Aircraft, 254
Hutchison, John, 256, 257-58, 260-67
  Intelligence and Security Command (INSCOM) visit to, 262-63, 264, 265-67,272
  laboratory, last, 267
  laboratory, Lynn Valley, 260
  laboratory, North Vancouver, 262, 265-67
  phenomena and, 272
  psychokinesis and, 261, 267, 268
  videotape of experiments, 253
  ZPE and, 261
Hutchison Effect, 260, 261
  Boeing and McDonnell Douglas interest in, 265, 267, 268
  description of various results, 264-67
  lévitation by, 253, 260, 261, 263, 267
  Los Alamos report on, 268, 271
  molybdenum rod results, 262-63
  Pentagon funding, 261-62
  time-dilation and, 267
  transmutation of metal and, 261, 267, 269-70, 271
Hyperspace, 233-34

I. G. Farbenindustrie, 62
IBM patent-server website, 237
Implosion energy generation, 57-58, 204, 205, 207-8, 210, 211, 223, 225, 251
  bomb potential of, 271
Inertia, 100, 113, 117, 121, 233, 267
Inertial-thrust machine, 82-83
Infiltration (Speer), 203
Institute for Advanced Studies (IAS), Austin, TX, 78, 79, 108, 271
Integrity Research Institute, 17, 18, 21, 138
Intelligence and Security Command (INSCOM), 262-63, 264, 265-67, 271,272
InteraviaAerospaceReview, 5—7,32
Intercept—But Don't Shoot **(Vesco), 48,** 54-57,61,72,73,77

Jane, Fred T., 5
Jane's All the World's Aircraft, 5
Jane's *Defence Weekly (JDW* 2, 4-5, 15, 44, 84, 248
Jane's Fighting Ships, 5
Japan, antigravity research, 235, 236, 237
Johnson, Kelly, 143, 149, 239, 246
Joint STARS, 146
Junkers company, Dessau, 178

Kaltenbrunner, Ernst, 186-87
Kammler, Hans, 155-59, 160-69, 171, 172-73, 174, 177,180-81, 183, 189, 191,194-95,199,202,242-43
  denies Himmler's request for a "heavy truck," 163, 168, 190, 198-99, 202
  fate of, 252, 277
  Kammlerstab, 160-61, 172, 177, 180, 203, 252
  special projects, 159, 160-69, 172, 176, 178
Kepler, Johannes, 207
Kidd, Sandy, 82-83, 84, 105
Kingfish, 245-49, 250
  Mach 6.25 capability, 248
  ramjets and pyro-ceram, 248
Kirtland Air Force Base, NM, 14
Koller, Gen., 65
Krupp, Meppen, Germany, 61
Kummer, SS Major, 167

Laithwaite, Eric, 83
Las Vegas, NV, 131-32
LaViolette, Paul, 17-19, 30, 33, 34, 47,123, 129,138
Lazar, Robert, 149
Lear, William P., 3-4, 7, 12

Lear Inc., 3, 20
Legend, the, 47, 50-53, 54, 56, 57-58, 204, 208,213, 214, 219-20
Leet, Maj. William, 42
Leoning, Grover, 20
Lévitation, 10-11, 211, 213, 233, 236, 237, 260, 261, 263
Li, Ning, 103, 275
Light-speed barrier, 85, 96
  faster-than-light travel, 101, 117, 121, 233, 276
Lindeke, Ron, 142-43
Lockheed Martin, 7, 20, 21, 85, 254
  acquisition of General Dynamics, 245
  anti-gravity and, 10-11, 240
  Astra, 145
  black programs, 118-19, 124, 144
  DarkStar, 145
  F-16 fighter, 240, 245
  F-22 fighter, 240
  F-l 17A Stealth Fighter, x-xi, 46, 116, 118,119,120,125, 129, 136,144,145, 240
  Fort Worth Division, 240, 241, 245
  Kingfish project, 246-49
  Mach 3.2 A-12 Blackbird (Oxcart program), 8, 18, 14, 119, 126, 144, 246, 248
  radar test ranges, 140
  Skunk Works (and Plant 42), 8-9, 10, 115-16, 119, 127, 135, 136, 139, 140, 142-45, 149, 239, 246, 247
  SR-71 Blackbird, 145, 246
  U-2 spyplane, 36, 38, 56, 118-19, 145, 149,150, 245
  XP-80,143,145
  YF-22, 145
Longhurst, John, 19
Lopez, Amelia, ix-xi, 241
Los Alamos National Laboratory, 262
  "Big Bad Bob" scientist observing Hutchison Effect, 263, 266-67
  report on Hutchison Effect, 268, 271
Luftwaffe
  air weapons, 66
  Ar 234, 52, 167
  He 162, 167
  Ju 290 and 390, 190, 198-99, 202
  Me 163, 52, 66
  Me 262, 52, 66, 143, 151, 163, 167
  surrender of, 65
Lusar, Maj. Rudolf, 44-46, 47, 214
Lusty (Luftwaffe Secret Technology), 48-49, 63,64-73,77, 152,162
Lyles, Garry, 92, 95-97, 207, 274
Macauley, John, 73
Magnetic fields separation, 194
Manhattan Project, 10, 20, 31, 38, 89-90, 120, 178, 250
Marckus, Dan, 81, 84, 85, 86-92, 97, 108-10,117,121,123,133-36, 142, 152, 153, 198, 202, 204, 205, 228-29, 230,231,232,233,234,237-39,242, 243,244,251,257,269-73
Marshall Space Flight Center, Huntsville, AL, 93-95, 98-99, 101, 103, 275
  DeltaG group, 103-4
Martin-Marietta (formerly Martin Company, Glenn L. Martin Aircraft Company), 2-3, 8, 10, 20, 35, 226
  Research Institute for Advanced Studies (RIAS), 9-10, 226-27, 239, 240
  See also Lockheed Martin
Matschke, Dieter, 277
Mauthausen concentration camp, Austria, 217,218,237
Maxwell Air Force Base, AL, 48-19, 63
Mazuw, Emil, 195
McDonald, Gen. George C, 66, 67, 68
McDonnell Douglas, 265, 267, 268
Meiers, Don, 40, 41,55, 56
Mengele, Josef, 193
Men-in-black, x, 17, 140-41
Messerschmitt works, Augsburg, Bavaria, 216
Miethe, Richard, 45, 52-54, 163
"Military Power" (Gunston), 125
Millis, Marc, 99-104, 257
Molybdenum, 262-63
Montgomery, Gen. Bernard, 60
Moore, William, 25, 26, 137
Motionless Magnetic Generator, 277
Muellner, George, 146-48

NASA (U.S. National Aeronautics and Space Administration), 85, 92
  AMMP (Advanced Manned Missions Program), 275
  antigravity research, 101, 103-7, 141-42, 227,239,240,275
  ASTP (Advanced Space Transportation Program), 85, 94-96
  black programs and, 97-98
  Breakthrough Propulsion Physics program (BPP), 99-100, 114, 229, 233, 258
  Gerchsheimer at, 224
  Glenn Research Center, Lewis Field, Cleveland, 99-100
  interstellar travel and, 95-96

NASA *(cont'd)*
  Marshall Space Flight Center, 93-95, 98-99, 101,103
  Nazis recruited for, 243
  nuclear rocket development (NERVA and ROVER), 94
  Podkletnov's experiment and, 235
  "Project Greenglow," 85, 230
National Atomic Research Laboratories, Brookhaven, Long Island, NY, 225
National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), 34
NATO's Advisory Group for Aerospace Research and Development (AGARD), 83
Naval Research Laboratory (NRL), 24
Negative-energy density matter, 98
Nellis Air Force Range, 131
Neumann, Otto, 187
New York Herald Tribune, 275
New York Times, 211
Nondifferential linear equations, 11
North American Inc., 20
Northrop Grumman
  B-2 Stealth Bomber, 119, 121, 122, 123-26,128-29,132-37, 142
  electrostatic field research, 129-30, 135, 137
  P-61 Black Widow, 39
  RCS range at Tejon Ranch, 140
Nuclear Axis, The (Henshall), 199
Nuremberg war crimes trial, 180

O'Brien, Lt. Col., 65
Observer (London), 276
Odom, Charles, 42
Office of Naval Research (ONR), 32, 35, 262
Operation Paperclip, 60, 93, 151, 243
  as deep black program, 243
Oppenheimer, Robert, 10
"Overcast," 242
Overholser, Denys, 118
Oxcart, A-12 development program, 246, 248

P-61 Black Widow, 39
Pabst von Ohain, Hans-Joachim, 51
Paperclip Conspiracy, The (Bower), 60, 243
Parallel universes, 276
Pash, Boris T., 178-79, 183, 220
Patton, Gen. George, 173-74, 175-76
Peary, Robert, 259
Pentagon
  black operations and, 146
  Hutchison Effect and, 261-62
  Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency, 243
Pezarro, Alexis, 257-58, 260, 262, 268
Pharos Technologies, 260, 268
Phenomena, 272
Philadelphia Experiment, The (Berlitz & Moore), 24-27,130,137-38, 150, 272
Planck, Max, 209
Platt, Charles, 105-7, 235
Plenum, 234
Podkletnov, Evgeny, 101-7, 113-14, 121, 194, 204, 209, 228, 255,275
  Bell and, 194,231
  father's patent and, 237-38
  gravity-shielding and, 103, 104, 107, 117, 121,228,235
  Schauberger's papers and, 236-38
  Sheffield, England, talk, 228, 230-31, 235-37
Pohl, Oswald, 154
Poland
  Breslau (Wroclaw), 45, 52-53, 163, 182-84,185,188-90, 217
  Leubus (Lubiaz) secret facility, 188
  Opeln (Opole), Ju 290 and 390 base, 190, 198-99
  Waldenburg (Walbrzych), 193
  Wenceslas Mine, Riese underground complex, 188, 193, 196-201, 209, 232, 234-35
  See also Bell, antigravity device
Popular Mechanics, 21S
Possony, Stefan, 45, 46
Prawinjakub, 186,189-90
Project Greenglow, 85, 230
Project 1794, 74
Project Silverbug/Y2 (U.S. Air Force flying saucer project), 73-77, 226, 250
Project Winterhaven, 20, 30-33, 123, 138, 144
Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain, 112
Puthoff, Harold E. "Hal," 78-79, 92, 107, 108,110-14,142, 229, 231, 233, 238, 271,272

Quantum Theory, 231
Quantum vacuum (foam), 109, 110-11, 272

Radford, Adm. Arthur W., 29
Radial-flow-gas-turbine (RFGT), 52, 75, 76
Reagan, Ronald, 119, 120, 126, 262
Reinemer, Gunter, 277
Remote viewing (RV), 78-79, 111-12, 238

Research Institute for Advanced Studies (RIAS), 9-10, 226-27, 239, 240
Reynolds, Josh, 29
Rich, Ben, 115, 116, 117, 119, 144,239,249
  "virtual" warehouse of too-dangerous projects, 117, 249
Rickman, E. J. C., 83
Ringwald, Fred, 39-42, 56
Rolls Royce aero-engines, 230
Russia, 56
  advance into Nazi territory, 56, 157, 181, 188-89
  Cold War and, 115,242
  intelligence agents search and destroy Schauberger's Vienna apartment, 236-37
  remote viewing (RV), 78, 238
  SA-2 Guideline, 245
  Soviet secret intelligence service, 186
  stealth and, 116-17
  torsion fields, 238

Sakharov, Andrei, 113
Schauberger, Joerg, 206, 207, 208, 209, 222
Schauberger, Viktor, 57-58, 204-22, *212, 222*, 255
  American custody of, 206, 220, 223, 250
  bio-technology, 207
  centripetal force, 210, 215, 221
  contacted by American and Canadian aircraft companies, 226
  death of, 225
  flying saucer (antigravity device), 211, 272, 213-22, 222, 233, 236
  Heinkeland,213,215,214,215
  implosion energy generation, 204, 205, 207-8,210,211,223,225,251
  Red Army search and destruction of Vienna apartment, 236-37
  Repulsine and Repulsator, 211, 272, 213, 216, 218, 219, 221, 222, 223, 232, 250-51
  Sherman, TX, work with Gerchsheimer, 224-25, 226
  SS associations, 205, 213, 214-15, 217
  trout turbine, 206, 211, 226
  zero-point energy and, 221-22, 222, 233
Schauberger, Walter, 58, 204, 206, 214, 225,251
Schellenberg, Walther, 165
Schlueter, Lt. Ed, 39-42, 55, 56
Schmidt, George, 98-99
Schriever, Rudolf, 45, 50-52, 53, 57, 58, 163,213,215
Schroeder, Bill, 118
Schulgen, Gen. George, 35, 38, 44, 141, 150, 250
Schuster, Rudolf, 186, 189
Scientific American, 276
Scott, Bill, 123, 125, 127, 128, 129,143
Sequoia National Forest, ix-xi. *See also* Bakersfield, CA
Shiva Star, 14, 15,96
Siemens, 204
Sikorsky, 20
Simpson, Christopher, 242-43
Skunk Works (Rich), 115, 144
Sommerfeld, Arnold Johannes, 118
Source Index, 91
Space-time continuum, 98, 117, 121, 229
  Hutchison Effect and, 267
  torsion field and, 232, 234
  zero-point energy and, 232-33
"Special Projects Group," 9, 226
  facilities, 8
  See also Lockheed Martin, Skunk Works
Speer, Albert, 153, 154, 155, 156, 161, 164-65,167,171,178,203,217
Sperry-Rand, 6, 20
Sporrenberg, Jakob, 186, 187-89, 191, 194
SR-71 Blackbird, 145, 246
  Mach 3.2 A-12 Blackbird, 8, 18, 14, 119, 126,144,246, 248
Stealth, 8,89, 115-22, 136
  B-2 Bomber, 91, 121-22, 123-26, 128-29,132-37,142
  as deep black program, 116, 136
  F-117A Fighter, x-xi, 46, 116, 118, 119, 120,125,129,136,144, 240
  Have Blue, 116, 117, 118, 127, 136
  RCS (radar cross section), 116
  reactive skins, 148
  Skunk Works and, 8,115
Strategic Air Command (SAC), 245
Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI or Star Wars), 262
String theory, 276
Strong nuclear force, 234
Sullivan, Lt. Col. A. R., Jr., 68-69, 70, 72
Superluminal quantum tunneling, 101
Swann, Ingo, 112
Sylvester, Gen. George, 127
Szymanski, Wladyslaw, 186, 189-90

Tachyons, 112
Talley, Robert, 141
Tampere University of Technology, Finland, 102, 105

Tesla, Nikola, 258-60
  Tunguska and, 259-60
Tesla Coil, 259, 265
Texas Instruments, 254
T-Forces, 60-62
Theory of Relativity and General Relativity, 85,98,101,231,254
30 AU RN, 59-60
Timberwind or nuclear thermal rocket, 94
Time, 234
Time machine, 228-29
  torsion field and, 232, 234
  See also Bell, antigravity device; Zero-point energy
Time travel, 101
Times (London), 276, 277
Topology, 11
Torr, Douglas, 103
Torsion field, 228-29, 231, 232, 233, 234, 238,261
Toshiba, 235, 237
Townsend Brown Foundation, 29—30, 32, 33
Transmutation of metal, 261, 267, 269—70, 271
Trimble, George S., 3, 4, 7, 8, 9, 11-12, 17,21,31,33,38,46,47,76,77, 85, 97, 101, 226, 227, 239, 249-50, 275
Truman, Harry, 243
T. T. Brown Electrogravity Device, The: A Comprehensive Evaluation by the Office of Naval Research, 138
Tunguska, Siberia, 259-60
"Twenty-first Century Propulsion Concepts" (Talley), 141-42
Twining Lt. Gen. Nathan, 35-36, *37,* 38, 44, 141, 150, 209, 223, 250

UCAVs (unmanned combat air vehicle technology), 246
Ueberreither, Siegfried, 181, 182
Ufimtsev, Pyotr, 89, 118
UFO
  antigravity aircraft as, 11, 34
  disinformation and, 149-50, 227
  explanation for, 276
  Northrop and, 140
  origins, 47
  photostat, Bushman's, 255
  Roswell crash and, 151
  sightings, 35, 43, 57, 75, 125-26, 128, 134,140, 148, 150, 151
  Twining memo, 35-36, *37,* 38, 44, 47, 141,150-51,209,223-24,250
United States
  aerospace industry, 224-28, 239^0, 247, 252,254
  Alsos Mission, 178-79, 220-21
  antigravity technology, state of in, 269
  Kammler and, 165-69, 174
  Nazis recruited by, 93, 151, 242-43, 251-52,269,277
  tech-plunder activities, Nazi Germany, 62-63, 64-73, *71,* 151, 162,172, 178, 195,206,250,251
U.S. Air Force
  Air Material Command, 36
  anti-gravity and, 84, 88, 89, 141-42
  black programs, 97, 147-48
  crash recovery teams, 244
  F-22A Raptor, 144
  plasma-bullet, 14, 96
  Project Silverbug/Y2 (flying saucer development), 74-77, 226, 250
  "special studies group," 45
  SR-71, 144
  top-secret classification, 116
  Twining memo, 35—36, *37,* 38, 44, 47, 141, 150-51,209,223-24, 250
  "vision," 11
"U.S. Antigravity Squadron, The" (LaViolette), 123-24
U.S. Army, Intelligence and Security Command (INSCOM), 262-63, 264, 265-67,271,272
U.S. Army Air Force (USAAF)
  9th, 415th Night Fighter Squadron, 39, 43
  15th, 42
  Convair and, 245
U.S. Counter-intelligence Force (CIC), 162,220-21,223,224
U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS)
  Operation Paperclip and, 251
  recruitment of Nazis and, 242
U.S. Office of Technical Services, 63
U.S. Patent Office, 277
USS *Andrew Furuseth,* 27
USS *Eldridge,* 25-27,130,137-38, 139

Valone, Tom, 18, 19, 21, 30-31, 33, 34, 47, 138
Vancouver, Canada, 257, 260
Vesco, Renato, 48, 54-57, 61, 72, 73, 77
Von Below, Nikolaus, 167
Von Braun, Werner, 53, 56, 93, 95, 151, 166-68,242,269
Von Karman, Theodore, 66

Von Majewski, Georg, 176
Voodoo fighter, 244
Vortex compression, 194, 231
Voss, Wilhelm, 160-61, 162, 169, 173, 176-78,180,183, 203, 220

Walz, Capt. Carl, 139
Wardencliff, Long Island, NY, 259
Watson-Watt, Robert, 88
Weak nuclear force, 234
Weight reduction of object associated with antigravity, 102, 103, 104, 121-22, 231,235,236,269
Whiteman Air Force Base, 124
Whittle, Frank, 50
Widmer, Robert, 245-49, 251, 252
  Kingfish, 245-49
Winterhaven, 31-32. *See also* Project Winterhaven
Wired, 236
Witkowski, Igor, 182-84, 185-90, 193-94, 195-97,231,234,251
Worcester, Richard "Dicky," 19
World War II
  German surveillance of British coast, 87-88
  Operation Paperclip, 93, 151, 243
  Russian advance into Nazi territory, 56, 157,181,188-89, 236-37
  U.S. First Army, 165
  U.S. Third Army (Patton), 173-74, 175-76
  U.S. invasion after D-Day, 157
  U.S. pilots spotting foo-fighters, 39-43, 55,220
  See also Germany (Nazi Germany)
Wormholes, 98
Wright brothers, 19
Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Dayton, OH, 18, 30, 53-54, 63, 68, 127

Yeager, Chuck, 139
Young, Brian, 79-81
  "Antigravity: The End of Aerodynamics?" (lecture, 1991), 230, 231

Zeiss, 204
Zement, underground Nazi complex, 181-82,206
Zeppelin Werke, Schwarzwald, Germany, 56
Zero point, 100
Zero-point energy (ZPE), 100, 108, 109, 110-11,113-14,117,121,232,273, 276
  Bell, the, and, 232-33
  electromagnetism and, 232, 261
  gravity and, 113,117, 121,231
  Hutchinson and, 261
  hyperspace and, 234
  potential of, pro and con, 273
  reactor, 272
  Schauberger and, 221-22, *222*, 233
  space-time and, 232-33

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Nick Cook is the Aviation Editor of *Jane 's Defence Weekly,* the world's leading military affairs journal, a position he has held for twelve years. He has also written for national U.K. newspapers, including the *London Times, Sunday Times* and *Sunday Telegraph,* and has had many of his stories syndicated worldwide.

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/08/02/exposing-the-international-sex-trade/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 3:19 pm on August 2, 2018

Tags: human trafficking, mind control (69), programming (60), SRA (45)

Exposing the International Sex Trade

Trigger warning: graphic description of the international child and infant sex trafficking market

These are recovered memories shared by inside parts, and while I believe them to be true and accurate, others may consider this account fictional. I will let readers decide.

All international occultic societies engage in pedophilia and human trafficking to some degree. In this post, I will expose one of the biggest money-makers for the order I was raised in: the infant and child sex trade.

The center of the "industry" as it is known to brokers (those who buy and sell infants, children and teens for various uses) is in south Amsterdam, known to those in the industry as "sin city". Sin city contains the brothels and sex houses known to the public, but it has a seamy understand that is less known: the trafficking in children and infants.

One of the families I was hosted with as a child was located in South Amsterdam for this very purpose. I was raised with my "Uncle Lou" and "Aunt Sally" there. They each had their idiosyncrasies: I remember that Aunt Sally constantly cleaned and scrubbed the house until it was spotlessly sterile, as if doing penance for her lifestyle. Uncle Lou, when angry with me, used to threaten to ship me to Eastern Russia, terrorizing me by telling me I would be raped to death, since I was a pretty child.

Uncle Lou was a broker in the sex industry, and as a child, he taught me everything about how it worked. I remember being taken in a truck to Eastern Europe (I was only 8 at the time), to "help" as the workers went to orphanages, and found infants and children deemed suitable. The workers dressed in nice Western suits, and let the orphanage directors know that the children would be placed in "loving families" in the West; they also gave a generous donation to the orphanage. I was cynically sure, even at that young age, that the directors of the orphanages suspected that these pretty children were not destined to be adopted out.

The infants were cared for in the truck by peasant women hired for this purpose, to give the infants bottles (with medication, to make them sleep more), to change them, and ensure that the cargo would make it to Amsterdam healthy. These women knew that they were to never talk about what they did, on threat of their entire families being killed. I helped give bottles to the babies, and held or comforted upset toddlers and children, as the truck was filled up during the long journey across Eastern Europe. Other times, the truck made the trip to China, or Russia, but the purpose was the same: to find as many beautiful children and infants as possible, to feed the appetites of the wealthy.

Once the truck was full, it would head back. The infants and children, by now drugged, slept quietly behind a special partition. The border guards were well paid to never inspect the cargo, and it made its way back to sin city. Once the truck came, it was unloaded; the children were given shots, vitamins and inspected carefully. This was when the sorting occurred.

Some children (infants) were destined to undergo specialized sexual training before being placed on auction (twins were especially valued for this purpose, and got a higher price on the black market). Others, a bit older, were placed on a special diet for strength and health, and were destined to go to the special sex parties that the wealthy in Europe enjoyed; or for use in infant porn. The youngest children were often sent directly to a proceurateur (individual whose job was to procure children and infants for the wealthy), who then prepared them with perfumes, oil baths, etc. prior to a sex party. These children were considered “expendable”, and were often killed by the teens or adults who went to the party, once they were sexually abused. At times, the multiple rapes themselves killed the child; other times, the adults killed the child as part of their sexual perversion (e.g. as part of a “snuff” sequence).

I remember the first sex party that I attended, at age 2. My twin sister and I wore diamond dog collars, and nothing else, and the individual who took us in to the party wore a tuxedo (this was the father we loved). We both had special temporary tattoos on our backs and neck that identified us as being private property, and not to be killed (but this did not cause our anxiety to go down, as we watched child after child snuffed that night). Fortunately, in the morning, we were both still alive; the partiers respected the special tattoos.

The purpose of being at the party? To observe the adults, and report any information possible on those who attended, to the Fathers who had sent us there for this purpose. Most adults in that time did not suspect that a young child could be used in this way, or knew that a two-year old can accurately report adult conversations and activities.

I had been to these parties for years, and knew the private practices of the Rothschilds, Battenbergs and others, which were quite perverse. I recalled at times fearing being suffocated due to an intoxicated adult passing out on top of me when I was very young; or fearing that the special temporary tattoos would accidentally get rubbed off during the night’s activities. At age 8, I felt sorry for the infants and young children that the procurateurs for these families and others grabbed, knowing all too well the fate that awaited them.

Once the shipment arrived, word went out, and the buyers for the larger private brothels would come. The Amsterdam child brokers have a list which is updated every month, with the current market price for infants, toddlers, children and preteens; these prices vary by race, training (e.g. whether the child can perform an unusual sexual feat, or has been specially “stretched” since birth to accommodate an adult penis, etc.), whether they are a twin, and other factors. The buyers and the brokers both know the going “list” price, which is set at the private coffeehouses where the brokers gather and discuss prices; I often served these brokers coffee and ran to get them cigars as a young child in my Dutch presentation. After a period of negotiation, the buyers for the brothels (some international) pay and take the children. Some shipments also contain children earmarked for various occultic groups, for use in rituals or other events.

Some children go to the auction houses. The largest is located on the outskirts of Paris, and is a popular destination for the wealthy. After an extravagant dinner served at 11 pm, at which the wealthy wear designer originals and deck themselves with jewels, there is a brief entertainment (such as an orchestra, or singing, etc.) At 1 am, the auction starts, with children exhibited and bid upon. This goes on hour after hour, as the wealthy bid on the children that will accompany them to the next “sex party”, or on ones to be given as “gifts” to return a favor. Some are taken home that night; one that sadly they will likely not live through.

The “industry” brings in billions of dollars a year. An infant in the late 1960’s would sell for thousands of dollars; a child, from 1000 to 10,000 (for an especially pretty child or one with special training); they would certainly sell for more now. One truckload of children back then would bring in hundreds of thousands of dollars. The brokers keep careful track of the money earned, and have specialized accountants for this purpose.

One of my main jobs in my early teens was to help keep the books for some of the larger brokers. I did this for a reason unknown to these individuals: to ensure that the brokers were being “honest” and not embezzling, since the profits from the industry went to the V. The V. had numerous agents around the city who were well aware of how much money was being earned through sales to procurateurs, private brothels, auction houses and others. A strict accounting was done, because to the V., it was ultimately all about money; the children were not valued at all, but simply seen as a money-making commodity.

The top brokers are well aware of the oversight over the trade of an individual from the V., to whom they must pay a “tithe” or “tax” as it is sarcastically referred to. This individual has a huge mansion with walled gardens, and often puts on fabulous sex parties for private guests.

The amount of human pain, misery and death that this industry creates is terrible. The children are not commodities, and the auction houses are centers of corruption, lust and greed.

Earlier in my healing journey, I fantasized about burning down the auction house in Paris (when the children were all gone). I hated it and all it represented. As a teen, I was forced to be a procurateur for a time for the head of the German Illuminati, due to my connections to the industry. I hated having to look for children to feed the appetites of these individuals, and today am ashamed of what I did.

To cope with the shame and guilt, in my Dutch presentation, I had several addictions (sexual ones). At the time, the feeling was “since I must be part of this all, I may as well join in.” It took time and significant inside work to undo the addictions, since at one time, I was the individual who oversaw the “industry” in Amsterdam in the mansion, hosting the parties. I helped to funnel the money from south Amsterdam to others. I am truly sorry for all that I did at this time in my life, and I pray that this terrible buying and selling of children will stop.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

III. How are the Jesuits financed? August 30, 2021 In "mind control"	Mother Programming February 1, 2019 In "mind control"	Working with internal pantheons August 28, 2018 In "healing"

Minhar 11:18 pm on November 30, 2018

Svali I have read all your writings and really love your work. All of this is happening under our noses and we don't even know that which makes me quite sad. I'm a Muslim who lives in a Muslim country and here there's not much children selling or all that illuminati ritual stuff.It happens more in the west. It really scares me how much power these people have and it's looks almost impossible to defeat them. I pray everyday that one day all this would end.I really appreciate that you left the group and all the evil. I know God has for given you for all you did. I really like you and as you've left illuminati I want u to research about all religions and choose the best one. I want u to convert to Islam. We're not terrorists.The illuminati did 911 to create hatred between Muslims and other people.Before that we lived together peacefully. Islam is an upgraded version of Christianity and Judaism. If you converted to Christianity you can convert to Islam. Michael Jackson also converted to Islam but they killed him same with princess Diana. Everyone who wrote a book on 911 most were killed before it published. Please watch this YouTube channel dawahiseasy or dawah is easy. I swear that will help a lot trust me.Its just that i like you a lot and want you to go to heaven.Just research and it's your choice whether you wanna convert or not.Im not forcing.please reply cause I'll be waiting.Also i hope your living a happy life now after getting rid of that group 🙂 .....

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 11:02 pm on December 1, 2018

Dear Minhar,
Thank you for your kind wishes. I do hear that your faith is important to you, and I respect this. I personally have chosen my own faith because it has been a huge support in my own healing, and I am glad that yours helps you.

★ Liked by 1 person

Minhar 11:01 pm on December 8, 2018

I'm only 14 years old and your like my mother. I really like you after reading all your articles and I understand that you wanna stick with the religion you started with.The thing is that all religions are from God and you can use any religion to heal yourself. God sent us to this world to find the true religion and worship him. It's our job to find the true one. Some years ago I started to notice that I had some doubts about my religion. I thought more like an atheist. I was really worried that because of my doubts I would be sent to hell. So I researched and I have no more doubts left. Through this researching I also researched other religions and trust me that made my belief stronger in my own. I'm just telling you to research and convert only if you think you should. I respect your faith as well and understand it's not easy to convert. Just research and if you think your good with your own faith than keep up with it. I give you all my wishes for a happy and a long life as your probably in your 60's now (which probably makes you more like my grandma instead of my mother lol)

★ Like

Zach 9:20 pm on January 6, 2020

Where does Jefferey Epstein and his associates/customers, like Bill Clinton, Prince Andrew and other prominent people and celebrities come into play with the Illuminati sex slave trade? I'm thinking he was a broker, who also transported children and elites on his private jet to his private island estate for sex parties. I'm also thinking he's either not really dead or didn't kill himself, but was probably an expendable fall guy. How and why did he even get exposed? I'm hoping it's because God is at work exposing some of this and bringing some justice. I'd appreciate any further insight you can give. Blessings in Christ.

★ Like

Zachary 12:51 am on January 10, 2020

Where does Jeffrey Epstein factor into this? Do you believe he's a fall guy doing the bidding of people behind the scenes? Is he like a controlled demolition to put certain blackmailed elites on notice that they too could also be thrown under the bus if they don't follow orders? Or is God at work to expose some of this evil?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 7:36 pm on January 21, 2020

Based on what I have read about Epstein, it appears that he is doing the bidding of others. Usually, in a situation like his, the individual has offended others, who as you noted, use him as an example. Otherwise, the media would not have covered all of this, it would have been kept quiet.

★ Liked by 2 people

Pingback: Exposing the International Sex Trade – The justice league/ fighting for justice

Pingback: Human Hunting | cathy fox blog on child abuse

Hadassah 5:22 am on April 12, 2022

Svali, we so appreciate all you're teaching us. I imagine it is hard to write as it is hard to read sometimes. It hurts the soul to know what Jesus' "little ones" are enduring, and it hurts to know what you've been through. We do grieve with you, Sister. But I read the hard stuff for the sake of the children, to educate myself so we will know how to be aware and fight this evil. I pray the Lord bless you and keep you safe. Much love to you.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here...

← Growing Up International Part Three: Ages Three to Six

Interview with Jo Getzinger of CARE, INC. Part 1: For Those Helping Survivors →

Blog at WordPress.com.

FIONA BARNETT

EYES WIDE OPEN

2020
LOCKDOWN
EDITION
INC. NEW
CHAPTERS!

CIA Child Trafficking | MK-ULTRA in Aust
Ritual Abuse & Mind Control | Trauma-Based Force
Trauma-Focussed Integration

Fiona Barnett

Eyes Wide Open

CIA Child Trafficking | MK-ULTRA in Australia
Ritual Abuse & Mind Control | Trauma-Based Forced Dissociation
Trauma-Focussed Integration

Eyes Wide Open

Published online August 2019
Revised October 2019
Lockdown Edition June 2020
© 2020 by Fiona Barnett

Length 267,000 words on 569 pages

TOPICS: CIA coordinated global child trafficking operation; Project MK-ULTRA in Australia; Project MK-DELTA child soldier program; Occult ritual abuse & mind control; Trauma-based forced dissociation methods; Trauma-focussed integration treatment.

Cover: Self-portrait (1991) by author, pencil on paper.

2020 Lockdown Edition Foreword

It's a bit on the conspiracy side for my taste – but yeah, it's brilliant.
- BBC journalist re *Eyes Wide Open*

I often joke that my 'free bestseller' is flying off the eBook shelves. To date, *Eyes Wide Open* has been downloaded over 130,000 times from my blog sites alone. The total number of downloads is incalculable because I designed it so. I figured the CIA can't herd cats. My book is being separately hosted on numerous alternate sites, with one reporting statistics of up to 350 downloads per day. Further, many people worldwide have generously printed, bound, and distributed my book within their networks. Thus, *Eyes Wide Open* is achieving cult status, despite my sites being banned from mainstream social media sites. Keep sharing this book before the internet completely censors the truth.

I will never realise the full impact of *Eyes Wide Open*. Is it a coincidence that the 'False Memory Syndrome Foundation' quietly dissolved on 31 December 2019, just four months after this book uniquely and thoroughly exposed the FMSF as a CIA cut-out staffed by MK-ULTRA perpetrators? Or was that operation made redundant by this current global takeover? One alternative media personality recently described my book as the only thing that makes sense of the current climate. While writing *Eyes Wide Open* I felt pressured, like I was working to an invisible deadline. I now recognise that deadline to be Huxley's promised *Final Revolution*. I released and distributed my book just in time.

People often tell me that what I write sounds impossible and crazy, but then weeks, months, or years later, evidence emerges to prove me right. I laughed hard at a broken cop's post to my social media page: 'Let's be honest, a few years ago we all thought Fiona was fucking crazy. But now look at everything that has come to light since.' Jeffrey Epstein, Prince Andrew, Anthony Weiner, *Pizzagate*, Clinton Foundation, Podesta brothers, Paul Keating's daughter at Epstein's NY mansion with Prince Andrew, Bob Hawke's coverup of his daughter's rapes: these are just some scandals to have surfaced since I provided my testimony to the Child Abuse Royal Commission in 2013.

Eyes Wide Open warned of a shadow government staffed by the Luciferian elite and their coming Nazi-Communist takeover. And here we are, less than a year later, in unprecedented global lockdown, suffering birth pains that will certainly increase in frequency and intensity. This third, *Lockdown Edition* of my book sheds a little more light on how we got to where we are today, and where we are headed tomorrow. It consolidates the observations I have made after first publishing *Eyes Wide Open*, clarifies some abuse memories, and includes relevant blog posts, in one convenient location.

We live in strange, unprecedented times. I have heard multiple accounts of severe PTSD clients suddenly normalising during this 'pandemic.' Trauma victims seemingly feel validated by the external global chaos. The novel environmental conditions create a kind of equilibrium which neutralises the PTSD sufferer's internal state of chaos. Consequently, the world is no longer perceived as threatening, and chronic PTSD sufferers are unfazed by the threat of Covid19. I experienced the same phenomenon during 9-11. While watching the Twin Towers collapse, I nodded and muttered, 'Now the whole world knows how I feel inside.'

Meanwhile, psychologists are cracking. Therapists are simultaneously manifesting symptoms of extreme *Future Shock* in response to the tidal wave of change and uncertainty. Sadly, I've heard devastating reports of previously stable people contemplating and committing suicide due to the lockdown and restrictions. I hear of people giving up hope because they don't want to live in the emerging social structure in which people are subjected to the same torturous conditions I experienced as a child at the hands of military mind controllers: isolation, deprivation, confusing and contradicting instruction, loss of identity and culture, discrimination, shock and trauma, excessive scrutiny, humiliation, and reduced self-worth. To such fragile folk, I implore: Humanity has been promised that we will never be tested beyond what we can endure. What you experience now, I have endured my entire life. I say with confidence that even in these dark, unprecedented times there is indeed Hope.

We will never return to the life we knew. They will toy with us until we submit - or not. To illustrate, the Nazis did not simply kill everyone upon their arrival at the death camps, and not all were experimented on. Instead, the fascists dragged the internment experience out to where people either broke or persevered. This is because the Devil is doomed, his time is short, and all he can do is bitterly take as many to Hell with him as possible. To achieve this, he must pressure people into willingly giving up hope, giving up God, and relinquishing their right to eternal life. That is why the coming Mark of the Beast, which guarantees eternal damnation, will be a conscious choice.

We are at war. The current battle is for our minds and wills. Their weapon is psychology. Our defence is vigilance, adaptation, wisdom, patience and endurance. It is time for everyone to adapt to the new normal, just as we Military Mind Control victims learned to do as young children. It is time to redefine the meaning of life, the universe and everything, and to realise what truly matters.

The Book of Daniel (12:10) said of these 'end times':

Many shall be purified and made white, and tried;
but the wicked shall do wickedly:
and none of the wicked shall understand;
but the wise shall understand.

* * *

Contents

Introduction vi

I. The Luciferian Cover-up
1. Watergate was Pedogate 1
2. Royal Whitewash 41
3. Victorian Pedophile Network 82
4. NSW Pedophile Network 109
5. Bond University Pedophile Network 123
6. Satan’s Seat 141
7. Witches in the Workplace 152
8. Conspiracy Fact 154

II. The Luciferian Philosophy
9. Soviet-Fascist Agenda 166
10. Justice Denied 173
11. MK-ULTRA & the Occult 183
12. MK-ULTRA in Australia 210
12. MK-ULTRA in the Military 255
13. MK-ULTRA in Hillsong Church 280
14. Confessions of a Sydney Satanist 296
15. Addicted to the Occult 307

III. The Luciferian Application
16. An ‘Ejumacation’ 318
17. The Family 328
18. Ritual Abuse in Australia 340
19. Candy Girl Child Prostitute 362
20. The Relevance of Intelligence 373
21. Personality Assessment System 388
22. The Programming Matrix 399
23. MK-DELTA Child Soldier 430

IV. How to Heal
24. Wendy-Louise Walker 457
25. Psychology 101 484
26. Trauma-Focussed Integration 502
27. Dirty Doctors 531
28. A Life Sentence 541
29. Source of Hope Within 552
30. 2020: What the Future Holds 559

Introduction

The worst thing about being an inspiration is that you have to be perfect.
- Anne McDonald

Eyes Wide Open is not a biography as such, and descriptive dialogue is limited. Consider it more a reference book designed to meet three distinct aims:

1. Provide the relevant historical basis for understanding the existence and coverup of CIA child trafficking, ritual abuse, and mind control.
2. Document my personal experience of this abuse in Australia and the USA.
3. Offer information for combating the techniques which cults, the military and intelligence agencies use to artificially induce dissociation and achieve radical and strategic behaviour modification. I explain the nature of *Trauma-Based Forced Dissociation* including the victim selection process, why most therapy is ineffective, and why a *Trauma-Focussed Integration* approach is essential.

My testimony is scaffolded by the extraordinary research of Steve McMurray who assembled the jigsaw of faces, places, and relationships I recalled and relayed. Steve's work features mainly in the chapter, *MK-ULTRA in Australia*. This book would not exist, and my integration would not have been as thorough, without Steve's research efforts.
The following publications provide a preliminary understanding of ritual abuse and mind control, which my book builds upon:

- *Secret Don't Tell: The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism* (1998) by Carla Emery.
- *How the Illuminati Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave* (2008) and *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (1998) by Fritz Springmeier and his wife 'Cisco Wheeler.'
- *A Nation Betrayed: Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People* (2002) by Carol Rutz.
- *The Greenbaum Speech* (1992-3) conference presentation by Dr Corydon Hammond.

The Bible suggests we may *know them by their fruits*. That is, we recognise the wolves-in-sheepskins by the consequences of their words and behaviour. Be they arrogant academic or bottom-feeding troll, anyone who attempts to discredit the above writings is certainly an operative for the trafficking network. Similarly, whoever attacks my book has a vested interest in the lucrative international child trafficking operation coordinated by the CIA.

This electronic version of *Eyes Wide Open* is being distributed at no cost because the truth and healing ought to be free. Victims have paid enough. The public is welcome to download, distribute and host complete copies of this book version online for educational and therapeutic purposes. Flooding the internet with multiple book copies combats the increasing censorship and stops the child traffickers burying this information again.

Watergate was Pedogate

> *The Watergate break-in was strictly based on one thing - the pedophile records that were being kept at the Democratic National Headquarters.*
>
> - Detective James Rothstein (*NYPD, Retired*)

In October 2016, I presented at Colin Ross' *Trauma & Dissociation* conference in Seattle, USA. Following my talk, one attendee approached me in the hotel lobby where my fellow presenters sat at their merchandise stalls. 'All this!' she shouted while sweeping her arm across the sideshow alley of over-priced books, stickers, and fridge magnets, 'All this is *shit! You* have the real stuff! Where's *your* book?!' Tears welled in her eyes. 'Write a book! Please write a book!'

Yes, I have the real stuff. I am not some left-brain dominant academic pretending to understand what it is like to be a victim of the most heinous crimes. I lived it. I spent my developmental years trapped in a mind control labyrinth. I spent my adult years navigating an escape. I eventually achieved what few victims of the most extreme abuse do, integration. I may therefore declare with authority what does and does not work.

I prefer the term '*victim'* to '*survivor'* because the latter implies my ordeal is over. My ordeal will likely never end. As Dr Reina Michaelson warned, 'Fiona, I think this is a life sentence.' Indeed, I serve a life sentence for crimes committed against me, with the full knowledge and blessing of the Australian government. I am constantly harassed by police, paid agitators, agent academics and journalists, DID sleeper cells, perpetrator relatives, sold-out victims, fake advocates, professional social media trolls, police SOIs (special intelligence operatives), and retired intelligence community thugs hired to do the dirty work of VIPs who dare not overtly attack me for fear of attracting media attention to their part in the international child trafficking operation.

Recovery from extreme abuse begins with realising the true nature and extent of international child trafficking. In 2015, *Newcastle Herald* journalist Ian Kirkwood wrote favourable articles in the wake of my Sydney press conference.[1] I consequently passed to him a story regarding David Hogg, the *Lifestyle Solutions* founder who was later convicted of historical child sexual assault. Kirkwood worked with Joanne McCarthy whose media campaign, starring whistle-blower Peter Fox, helped spark Australia's *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse*.

In 2012, Detective Chief Inspector Peter Fox exposed his colleagues' coverup of a massive pedophile network in the Newcastle Catholic diocese. The NSW police hierarchy consequently physically threatened Peter Fox and demanded his doctor allow police to attend his private therapy sessions. University of Sydney law graduate Margaret Cunneen chaired a *Special Commission of Inquiry* into child sex abuse in Newcastle which attacked and discredited Peter Fox and journalist Joanne McCarthy.

Cunneen had a history of supporting pedophiles. In 2009 she attended the book launch of organised crime boss Roger Rogerson and admitted she had 'known him since he was a detective.'[2] Detective Sergeant Roger Rogerson was dismissed from the NSW Police Force in 1986, meaning Cunneen associated with him during his underbelly heyday when he oversaw the trafficking of drugs and children in Sydney, and committed multiple murders to conceal his crimes. Then in 2002, Margaret Cunneen advised Queensland Police to drop their prosecution of pedophile swim coach Scott Volkers on the grounds: (a) one victim's sexual assault was too 'trivial' to prosecute; (b) 12-year-old female victims were unlikely to have developed breasts and thus allegations Volkers groped them would be difficult to substantiate; and (c) 12-year-old girls could not relax enough to experience orgasm while being abused.[3]

---

[1] Ian Kirkwood (2015). Franca Arena was Right on the Mark. *Newcastle Herald*. 30 October.

[2] Kate McClymont (2011). An unusual meeting of minds. *The Sydney Morning Herald*, 7 May.

Firstly, Cunneen's conclusions defy biology. Secondly, my sister-in-law was Scott Volker's assistant coach during the 1990s. Long before Volkers hit the news, I was told he assaulted his own niece whom he regularly drove to swimming practise, that his pedophilia was common knowledge to Queensland Swimming staff including Greg Lawler who caught Volkers showering naked with Olympian Samantha Riley, and that Swimming Australia was generally infested with pedophiles including National Coach Don Talbot (my first swim teacher) who was deported from Canada for impregnating a 14-year-old, prior to being appointed as Australia's head Olympic coach.

The federal Royal Commission into child abuse subsequently vindicated both Peter Fox plus the multiple victims of Scott Volkers who in 2018 was finally charged for the same crimes Margaret Cunneen dismissed. Cunneen was further discredited when Roger Rogerson was convicted of murder in 2014. Cunneen narrowly escaped investigation by the *Independent Commission Against Corruption* in 2015.

As Chair of the *Special Commission of Inquiry,* Margaret Cunneen banned Peter Fox from including crucial evidence thereby prejudicing his testimony. She subjected Fox to hours and days of aggressive interrogation, and facilitated his being slandered 'a liar,' 'the devil incarnate,' 'obsessed' with exposing pedophile priests, and involved in a 'conspiracy' with *Newcastle Herald* journalist Joanne McCarthy who was also interrogated under cross examination. Cunneen branded Fox an 'unreliable' witness who acted 'without integrity.' I enjoyed afternoon tea with Peter Fox and witnessed the toll this took on someone who victims consider a national hero. If only all NSW police were as obsessed with exposing pedophiles.

The NSW Police Force then targeted Deputy Police Commissioner Nick Kaldas for supporting Peter Fox. Kaldas was suddenly subjected to excessive scrutiny, investigation, public discrediting and career destruction. Margaret Cunneen's witch hunt occurred under the command of NSW Police Commissioner Andrew Scipione who publicly supported pedophile Frank Houston, the Hillsong founder who sex trafficked kids to Kings Cross brothels in association with fellow child rapist Roger Rogerson.

So, if the *Newcastle Herald* would not publish my story, I figured, no other newspaper would. I phoned Ian Kirkwood to request he investigate and publish my full story. If only one mainstream journalist published my testimony against Antony Kidman, I reasoned, it would blow the international child trafficking network wide open. During our call, Kirkwood relayed a conversation he once had with 'a couple of spooks' who told him that all senior politicians are pedophiles because that is how they are controlled. Kirkwood asked me if that was my story.

'That's exactly right! That's consistent with my experience.' I tried to contain my excitement. 'The mainstream media has long documented the CIA's involvement in drugs and weapons trafficking, right?'

---

[3] Paul Bibby (2014). Margaret Cunneen queried whether swimmer's breasts big enough to be groped. *The Sydney Morning Herald*, 8 July.

Kirkwood agreed, noting there had just been another story about that in the mainstream press.

'Well then, is it so hard to imagine they are also involved in trafficking children which is far more lucrative than guns and drugs? ASIO and the CIA work together to traffic children between Australia and America. They're the ones who trafficked me.'

The journalist promised to consider my request, bearing in mind he had a young family and publishing my story would surely place them at risk. But he never got back to me. A short time later, Ian Kirkwood developed a rare and aggressive form of cancer. I called him, expressed my condolences, and we chatted for a bit. At the end of our conversation, I mentioned I was considering writing a book. I asked him to clarify and elaborate on what he told me of his encounter with the 'spooks.'

'I never said that,' he bluntly asserted.

I sighed in resignation. There went my last chance at breaking into the mainstream media. There sunk years of building rapport and credibility with mainstream journalists. There went years of investigating other abuse cases and passing my findings on to television and newspapers. Years of driving journalists around the district to personally meet victims. Years of results in *other* cases.

My Gold Coast Hogtie Doctor story went international, with paediatrician Neville Davis being banned from practising medicine in Australia (although that doesn't stop him setting up shop in Thailand). My story on Gary Willis' 18-year child abuse spree ended with a life ban on his teaching for the NSW Education Department (although that didn't stop him working for the Queensland Education Department). My story on Daruk government boys home forced reluctant NSW police and *60 Minutes* agent journalists to conduct a mop-up investigation. I broke the Daruk story on my blog and negotiated it into the mainstream news. Sensational headlines about a victim having his penis cut off went global. Police and the media charged multiple low-level perpetrators, and *60 Minutes* falsely presented the story as 'exclusive.' Police and media conspired to bury the crux of the Daruk story, that it was a recruitment centre for (a) boy prostitutes used to service ASIO's human compromise operation, and (b) Project MK-ULTRA lab rats. Journalists may print all sorts of child abuse information, except that which exposes the global child trafficking operation.

I had come so close. My October 2015 press conference – delivered in response to Senator Bill Heffernan's announcement that a former prime minister was a pedophile - was statistically the most popular story on the *Sydney Morning Herald* website that day (although the news site's computer technicians prevented it from displaying as the most viewed article). Another of Prime Minister Bob Hawke's sex assault victims, the daughter of Hawke's architect Kevin Borland, agreed to address a follow-up press conference with me but pulled out last minute. The *USA National Inquirer* intended to run a front-page story about Antony Kidman being a pedophile, until they received a vicious legal threat from his daughter Nicole Kidman. A journalist and her photographer husband flew up from Sydney to interview me for a major Australian magazine, until Nicole Kidman took a 'Scientology approach to managing' me. And a UK journalist travelled around the country interviewing me and two other victims of Antony Kidman for the *Daily Mail*, until one of the victims (whose parents were friends with Kidman) was threatened and subsequently withdrew his permission last minute.

Nicole Kidman's PR team shut down my mainstream media exposure by drawing on her lucrative contracts with Australia's media outlets. So, I turned to the internet. Armed with a simple meme app and a right-brain talent for lyric writing, I launched my own social media campaign. I spent five years in front of the computer, communicating with hundreds of victims and supporters, many fake, many genuine. I hit the conspiracy theory jackpot when David Icke featured an enormous photograph of me and my story during his Australian speaking tour.

My tactics worked. Online articles about Nicole Kidman, where the public was free to leave negative comments, were followed by streams of intelligent attacks on her heavily orchestrated stardom. I realised my impact when Kidman's PR team paid the *Daily Mail* plus a morning television show to feature an article tellingly titled, '*Shame on you, Australia. Stop Hating on Nicole Kidman*.'[4] People don't hate Nicole Kidman as an individual. They hate what the Harvey Weinstein scandal subsequently highlighted: that Hollywood rewards something other than an ability to sing, dance or act.

Despite everything the pedophile network threw at me, my story still got out there, such that if you Google Antony Kidman's name the words 'child abuse' soon follow. Yet no amount of alternative media success can match a complete break into mainstream news. So, I admitted defeat. I stopped posting and did not bother checking my blog sites.

PEDOGATE

Days before the 2016 US Presidential Election, I received a barrage of phone texts from old friends asking if I was okay. People started questioning my kids regarding our family's welfare. I had no idea what was happening. Then I checked my blog site. A spike of 100,000 views in one day stemmed from an article that activist group *Anonymous* published about my being trafficked to American VIPs as a kid. They used my story to expose Hillary Clinton's involvement in a child sex trafficking ring. The Clinton Foundation was a front for the trafficking of children including Haiti earthquake victims.

Bill and Hilary's trafficking network implicated campaign chairman John Podesta, billionaire Jeffrey Epstein, and 'Saint' Mother Teresa. In 1995, the Nobel Peace Prize recipient opened a *Mother Teresa Home for Infant Children* adoption centre in Washington DC with Hillary Clinton which quietly closed in 2002.[5] Mother Teresa's Roman Catholic order, *Missionaries of Charity,* came under Indian government investigation for child trafficking, with a nun arrested for selling babies.[6][7] Mother Teresa accepted donations from Haiti dictator Jean-Claude Duvalier.

Jeffrey Epstein sex trafficked minors to VIPs including Harvard law professor Alan Dershowitz, Prince Andrew, Kevin Spacey, and Bill Clinton who flew aboard the *Lolita Express* to Epstein's 'Little St. James' pedophile island in the Caribbean. Epstein is among the many VIPs and government heads who knowingly donated money to the Clinton Foundation child trafficking operation. The Clinton Foundation received $88 million from Australian taxpayers between 2006 and 2014, peaking during Welsh-born Australian ALP Prime Minister Julia Gillard's term.[8]

Hilary Clinton's campaign chairman John Podesta and his brother Tony Podesta were staying in a Portuguese villa owned by UK politician Sir Clement Freud, in the same resort where British child Madeleine McCann was when she disappeared. Clement Freud was

---

[4] Angela Mollard (2017). Shame on you, Australia. Stop Hating on Nicole Kidman. *Daily Mail*, 22 Jan.

[5] Michael Warren (2016). Hillary 'Worked With' St. Teresa to Create a D.C. Adoption Center That Quickly Closed. *Washington Examiner*, 5 Sept.

[6] *BBC News* (2018). Mother Teresa India charity home 'sold babies.' 5 July.

[7] Michael Safi (2018). All Mother Teresa homes inspected amid baby-selling scandal. *The Guardian*, 17 July.

[8] Andrew Bolt (2016). Why have we donated to Clinton's Foundation? *Herald Sun*, 31 Oct.

Sigmund Freud's grandson. British media outed Clement Freud as a violent child rapist.[9] John and Tony Podesta perfectly matched the identikit images Scotland Yard released of Madeleine's abductors.

Pedogate, as the scandal became known, surfaced when Wikileaks released emails from John Podesta's account in October 2016. The emails notably outed Hillary Clinton as a self-confessed 'Molech' worshipper, and captured politicians ordering children for pedophile parties using alleged fast-food code words. The content of the Podesta emails is consistent with the following leak from a CIA cut-out company called STRATFOR:

> From: Fred Burton [mailto:burton@stratfor.com]
> Sent: Thursday, May 14, 2009 2:39 PM
> To: 'Don Kuykendall'
> Cc: 'Aaric Eisenstein'; 'Darryl O'Connor'; 'Copeland Susan'
> Subject: RE: Get ready for 'Chicago Hot Dog Friday'
>
> I think Obama spent about $65,000 of the tax-payers money flying in pizza/dogs from Chicago for a private party at the White House not long ago, assume we are using the same channels?

A related email from STRATFOR's president informed Aaric Eisenstein (of SVP Publishing): 'Aaric, you can participate as well!'

'If we get the same 'waitresses,' I'm all for it!!!' Aariac Eisenstein replied.

If STRATFOR staff were talking about a Whitehouse orgy, the word 'waitresses' was placed in inverted comas to indicate its alternative meaning. Waitressed would typically be prostitutes, most likely child prostitutes. According to this email (disseminated by *Anonymous* and *Wikileaks*), President Barrack Obama ordered $65,000 worth of fast food, an act which contravened Whitehouse policy dictating all food be prepared onsite using raw ingredients to counter the security risk posed by externally prepared foods. The leaked emails prompted Hilary Clinton to publicly declare Australian award-winning journalist and whistle-blower Julian Assange a 'dead man walking.'

Child prostitutes visiting the Whitehouse is old news. On 29 June 1989, the front page of the *Washington Times* read:

> **HOMOSEXUAL PROSTITUTION INQUIRY ENSNARES VIPs WITH REAGAN, BUSH: 'CALL BOYS' TOOK MIDNIGHT TOUR OF WHITE HOUSE**

The sensational headline concerned the Franklin Scandal in Omaha Nebraska that David Shurter was a victim of and witness to. Shurter is also a victim of my perpetrator Lt. Col. Michael Aquino who was implicated in Franklin plus the Presidio and McMartin preschool scandals in which children were sexually and ritually abused.

Pedogate whistle-blowers claimed, children trafficked to Washington DC were held in transit cellars within local businesses including a restaurant where an 'entertainer' was filmed boasting about raping and killing kids. Clean FBI and NYPD officers apparently made multiple attempts to charge Hillary Clinton and other VIP members of the trafficking ring, but their efforts were thwarted by those in the chain of command above them. One of the attempted charges related to a video of Hillary Clinton and her bisexual lover Huma Aberdeen (wife of pedophile Anthony Weiner) conducting a Luciferian ritual in which they skinned the face off a live young girl. The dissemination of this video was the said reason behind YouTube's global shutdown that occurred in late 2018 while I was online. Someone later posted forensic photos of the skinned victim on my Twitter feed which I automatically viewed.

---

[9] Martin Evans & Gordon Rayner (2016). Sir Clement Freud exposed as a pedophile as police urged to probe Madeleine McCann links. *The Telegraph*, 15 June.

Mainstream media giants launched a cover-up campaign against the leaked Podesta emails and related crimes, to muddy the waters and leave the general public confused about the truth. The likes of CNN (founded by my pedophile rapist Ted Turner) successfully drew the public's attention from what was contained in the emails, to who might have leaked them and spread 'fake news.' The pedophiles coined the term 'fake news' in reaction to the publication of Podesta's emails. Clinton herself never addressed or denied the email contents. The emails were said to have been leaked by US Intelligence community staff opposed to organised pedophilia. Mainstream journalists whose reports were consistent with this version of events were promptly fired. Further, over 100 Clinton staff and associates met untimely deaths, in quick succession, just like the many witnesses to JFK's assassination, and the victim of and witnesses to Kevin Spacey's sexual assaults. *Pedogate* was discredited as 'fake news' despite NBC's (11 June 2013) televised report regarding Hillary Clinton using her position as US Secretary of State to cease an investigation into child sex trafficking within the State Department.

Despite the mainstream media blackout, *Pedogate* reached the public via social media. YouTube featured interviews with credible witnesses who testified to the existence of an international child sex trafficking operation involving US politicians and the CIA. That was when I noticed retired NYPD Detective James Rothstein. *Pedogate*, he explained in interview, was the same VIP pedophile network he investigated for 35 years. The perpetrators were doing everything in their power to shut the Pedogate story down, Rothstein observed. He predicted the perpetrators would successfully bury it just like every other time their network was almost exposed, including the Franklin, Presidio, and McMartin scandals.

Rothstein explained that the NYPD was no ordinary state police force, but a leading investigative agency with national and international offices. Back in 1966, Rothstein became the first police detective assigned to investigate the prostitution industry. Almost immediately he discovered an underground sexual blackmail operation that compromised politicians with child prostitutes. 'Human Compromise' is what he labelled the honey-trap process. Rothstein and his colleagues found that approximately 70 percent of top US Government leaders were compromised in this way. Rothstein said, the CIA conducted the human compromise operation, while the FBI was tasked with covering up any leaks.

The CIA trafficked the kids, the FBI covered their tracks

A subsequent news article validated Rothstein's allegation against the FBI:

> **Prince Andrew's role in Jeffrey Epstein paedo scandal is being covered up by the FBI, claims ex top cop who say he has hours of damning CCTV footage**
> Jon Lockett, *The Sun*, 25 Sep 2019
>
> *… John Mark Dougan - who fled to Moscow following a raid by the Feds on his home - also says he has hundreds of hours of footage from the billionaire paedo's Florida mansion…*

2020 Update

Here are some facts that have subsequently emerged in the Jeffrey Epstein case, which support Rothstein's description of a global child trafficking operation used to compromise VIPs. This case notably features the role of female predators and 'baby breeders' in child trafficking operations – something I argued for years.

- Virginia Roberts testified that Ghislaine Maxwell was a lesbian pedophile who daily sexually assaulted underage girls and sex slaves.
- Ghislaine Maxwell teamed up with Epstein for threesomes with underaged sex trafficked girls.
- Ghislaine Maxwell recruited young girls from parks, into prostitution and sex slavery, under the guise of offering modelling careers.
- Ghislaine Maxwell and Jeffrey Epstein instructed Virginia Roberts to have a baby and sign the newborn over to her perpetrators.
- Prince Andrew participated in a sex orgy with multiple international underaged sex trafficked girls on Epstein Island.
- Epstein and Maxwell prostituted Virginia Roberts to multiple VIPs including British Royalty, billionaires, a Harvard law professor, and world leaders including 'a Prime Minister'.

The following news articles add spectacular evidence to Rothstein's claims:

Jeffrey Epstein book claims he and Ghislaine Maxwell were 'Mossad spies' who 'filmed US politicians and power players having sex with underage girls to blackmail them'

Jennifer Smith, *Daily Mail*, 6 December 2019

- *Dylan Howard's book* Epstein: Dead Men Tell No Tales *proposes the theory that Ghislaine Maxwell and Jeffrey Epstein were Israeli spies*
- *It says Ghislaine's late father Robert introduced Jeffrey to Mossad handlers before he died in 1991*
- *Robert - who was also a Mossad spy, according to the book's sources - told them to 'accept' Jeffrey*
- *They believe he and Ghislaine then lured prominent politicians and celebrities into sleeping with underage girls they provided, filmed it and blackmailed them*
- *There is no proof that Epstein has tapes of anyone sleeping with underage girls*
- *However, several of his victims say his homes were wired with cameras and that he kept the footage in a safe*
- *Both the FBI and New York authorities which raided his home are refusing to confirm whether or not such tapes exist*

'FBI is involved in Jeffrey Epstein cover-up'

Tom Parfitt, *The Times*, 25 September 2019

> *A former US police officer who fled to Russia and claims to have hundreds of hours of video from Jeffrey Epstein's properties has said that the FBI may be helping to cover up Prince Andrew's alleged role in the sexual abuse scandal. MI6 sources fear that John Mark Dougan, a former US Marine and Florida deputy sheriff, may have passed compromising information about the prince to Russian authorities…*

James Rothstein said he was alerted to an identical VIP pedophile ring operating in the UK when Scotland Yard consulted him regarding the *Profumo Affair*. UK agents visited Rothstein in New York to extract anything he knew about British politicians and other VIPs having sex with child prostitutes. Britain were in damage control, tying up loose ends, covering up the true pedophile nature of the Profumo Affair. Here is my email exchange with Rothstein concerning this incident:

From:	Fiona
Sent:	Sunday, July 29, 2018 6:24 PM
To:	Jim
Subject:	CIA Hollywood pedophiles being exposed

Incidentally, someone criticised my writing saying the Profumo Affair was 1963 and before your appointment, and so you are a disinfo agent. Obviously, I don't believe that - but can you tell me what to say in your defence regarding those dates?

Subject:	RE: CIA Hollywood pedophiles being exposed
From:	Jim
Date:	Monday, July 30, 2018 at 10:41 AM
To:	Fiona

That is correct. They did not do the follow up until a number of years later after the Profumo case broke. My source in the business knew the whole story. They were making sure that there was no other connection to the operation we had in New York.

Here is a copy of the actual report. The part they were looking for was from 1963.

In the late 60's, Rothstein is called to attend a meeting with a number of New York Police Department officials and two agents from Scotland Yard at a high-end restaurant on the Upper East Side. (They picked up the tab). Scotland Yard was following up on the Profumo Scandal in 1963. They were trying to find out if their national security had been compromised. Profumo had used the services of Christine Keeler and Mandy Rice Davies. The two girls had also been involved with a Russian, Yevgeny Ivanov. The connection in New York was that Keeler and Davies had been associated with a high-level prostitution ring operating out of an apartment on Fifty Sixth Street and Second Avenue. Rothstein calls on Peggy to determine who was operating the ring and what was going on at the prostitution operation on 56 St. and 2nd Ave. Rothstein conducted an in-depth investigation using Peggy's information and determined that the association between Keeler, Davies, and the Madam of the Prostitution House on 56 St. and 2 Ave. were in fact true. The information Rothstein gleaned from the investigation verified that the location was being used to set-up and compromise victims. Rothstein believes it is a sanctioned State of the Art, High-End human intelligence and human compromise operation.

The late 60's was 68-69. I became a cop in 1965 Feb. 15.

Rothstein and his law enforcement associates realised the international pedophile rings were all connected. He said the VIP members met at various world locations where each destination catered for a different type of degenerate sexual proclivity, including 'satanic-themed' abuse.

Rothstein said he and his colleagues encountered fierce resistance to the investigation and prosecution of members of the child trafficking operation. His journalist contacts at the *New York Times* and *Washington Post* could not get stories about the VIP ring printed. All police, FBI, customs and IRS officers who pursued the VIP pedophile network above street level had their careers subsequently destroyed. Rothstein's attempts to arrest key perpetrators were continually thwarted. For example, the time he served the head of the CIA's human compromise operation, Tippy Richardson. According to pedophile-turned-police-informant Ben Rose, in November 1971, Tippy Richardson, businessman Leonard Stewart (from OPEC, *Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries*) and a surgeon named Dr Chesky, raped and murdered three boys aged 14 to 15 years in Ben Rose's apartment on East 64th Street in New York City. The *New York State Select Committee on Crime* subsequently served subpoenas on both Tippy Richardson and Leonard Stewart. When served, Tippy Richardson said that because he worked for the CIA the subpoena would be withdrawn under the National Security Act by the time Rothstein and his colleague returned to their offices. That is precisely what occurred.

In 1972, Rothstein arrested one of the five Watergate burglars, CIA operative Frank Sturgis. During a subsequent two-hour interrogation, Rothstein discovered the truth about Watergate (plus Sturgis' and the CIA's involvement in the Bay of Pigs incident, and the related assassination of JFK). Sturgis told Rothstein, the Watergate burglars sought something they nicknamed 'The Book' which listed the Democratic and Republican politicians who accessed child prostitutes, their sexual proclivities, the amounts they paid to rape kids, etc.

The official Watergate explanation is that the Liberals broke into Democratic National Committee Headquarters to obtain information about their election strategies. People who lived through Watergate typically comment with a frown, 'That never made sense.' Rothstein's experiences make better sense of why Nixon conspired to quash the Watergate investigation, why he suggested the investigation posed a threat to national security, why his personal secretary destroyed Oval Office tape recordings after they were subpoenaed, why chief CIA psychologist John W. Gittinger was called to testify at the congressional committee that investigated Watergate,[10][11] and why Nixon's own Vice President issued a pardon which protected Nixon from prosecution for any crimes he had 'committed or may have committed or taken part in' as President. If Nixon's crimes included pedophilia, that would make perfect sense.

I am confident President Richard Nixon and his good buddy 'the Reverend' Billy Graham were named in the Watergate pedophile records. I am confident of this because I was sex trafficked by CIA head psychologist John W. Gittinger to both men as a young child.

I spoke with James Rothstein on 13 April 2018, 9:48 am and asked him whether he knew, or had heard, that Nixon was a pedophile. 'No, I did not,' he quipped with surprise and interest. I next asked him whether he knew about Billy Graham being a pedophile. At this, Rothstein chortled and responded confidently, 'Oh, we heard lots about *that*!'

BILLY GRAHAM: CIA ASSETT

I published a draft of this *Watergate was Pedogate* chapter on my blog in 2018. It proved popular. 'Watergate was Pedogate is the best thing I ever read,' one reader commented. My article caused great controversy, particularly among Southern Baptist Billy Graham worshippers who told me I was the talk of many a Sunday table. Photographs published by Billy's son Franklin Graham on social media showing him proudly dining on what he described as 'killer doughnuts' at *Voodoo Doughnuts* in Portland added weight to my allegation, that Billy Graham was a multi-generational Luciferian pedophile. Many concluded that Franklin Graham posted his tweet as a cult threat against me, in direct response to my articles exposing his Freemason father. Conservative Christians found it inappropriate for an evangelical preacher to dine at an establishment that sold doughnuts decorated with encircled pentagrams and which featured Jesus Christ crucified on a penis and testicle shaped doughnut called 'Cock-N-Balls.' My articles caused one elderly Baptist to cut the Billy Graham Foundation from her will.

---

[10] Judith Well (1988). Life Quieter for Retired CIA Man, *NewsOK*, 26 October.

[11] Pat Lewis Copeland (1986), The CIA man, *Tulsa Tribune*, 12 February.

Franklin Graham
@Franklin_Graham

Take a look at these killer doughnuts!
#Portland

11:39 AM - 5 Aug 2018

TEAM AQUINO

The CIA intervened to protect their agent Billy Graham.[12] One of my key perpetrators, US Army Psychological Operations expert Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, weighed in on an orchestrated international effort to discredit me. Another perpetrator, Bond University lecturer Katarina Fritzon, responded to my allegations on official Bond University letterhead. The written responses of my two perpetrators mirrored each other in their accusation I was a crazy fantasist. Yet people typically ignore crazy fantasists. People respond to someone who is swaying public opinion and who threatens to expose their cult involvement. Only the most desperate and dumb perpetrators respond personally in writing. After this umpteenth attack on my credibility failed, the fool who published both responses subsequently begged social media sharers to delete Luciferian priest Michael Aquino's email to him, before he disappeared from the internet.

---

[12] New York Times (1967). Graham Denies Knowledge of CIA Funds for Trip, 26 Match.

Team Aquino's angle was to focus on whether Rothstein had personally investigated Billy Graham, and they staged a phone interview with the retired detective. I subsequently phoned Rothstein's home. His wife, who had warmly welcomed Aquino's lackey, was cold and short with me. I phoned Rothstein's mobile. 'How did you get this number?!' Rothstein asked defensively. It was the same number Aquino's lackey called him on.

'It's plastered all over the internet,' I responded. 'You were tricked. A recording of your conversation with Aquino's lackey is everywhere.'

'I thought what you're doing is admirable,' he lamented. 'Can't you just tell people an old man got it wrong?'

No, I could not.

To clarify, Rothstein never told me he personally worked on an investigation into Billy Graham. Rothstein spoke of Billy Graham in the context of having heard about the preacher's pedophile antics from somewhere within his network of associates whose job it was to investigate VIP pedophile rings. We never discussed the source of this information, or whether it came from his own NYPD organisation, or from external agencies like the FBI, or his journalist contacts. He simply immediately and emphatically asserted to me that he and his colleagues 'heard lots' about Billy Graham's pedophile involvement.

I am not the first to publicly accuse Billy Graham of being a CIA agent, Freemason, and rapist. MK-ULTRA victim Kathleen Sullivan, who wrote *Unshackled: A Survivor's Story of Mind Control,*[13] said he raped her. Former high-ranking Freemason James Shaw described how 33° Freemason Billy Graham was present at his own 33° initiation ritual.[14] *Time* magazine reported,[15] the CIA funded Billy Graham's 1967 Latin American crusade under a CIA cut-out, the *US National Student Association*, which also financed the *National Council of Churches*, Harvard Law School, and AFL-CIO affiliates.[16] *The New York Times* picked up the story.[17]

Here is correspondence I received from two more Billy Graham victims:

1. *'Fiona, I just came across an article you had written about Scalia and it also mentioned Billy Graham. I was born in 1956 in SC, to a 'church organist' who was in an SRA cult. I am 62 and was 55 before really detailed abuse memories became clear to me. I worked for a while with a Christian therapist who diagnosed me as having DID and being an SRA survivor. Sometimes I doubted my own memories, but he NEVER did, with one exception. He did not believe me when I told him of being taken to a Billy Graham crusade as a small child, perhaps age 6 or 7, and being made to give Graham oral sex. My parents sang in the choir at several of his crusades and his music director, Cliff Barrows... my parents knew them personally... Even after his death, he is one religious leader heavily protected by the media. Anyway, may God bless you for your courage. Please keep exposing evil people... I'm 99 percent sure my*

---

[13] Kathleen Sullivan (2003). *Unshackled: A Survivor's Story of Mind Control*. Dandelion Books.

[14] James T. Shaw (1988). *The Deadly Deception: Freemasonry Exposed by One of Its Top Leaders*. Vital Issues.

[15] Time (1967). 'Pandora's Cashbox.' 3 March.

[16] Nancy Gibbs & Michael Duffy (2007). *The Preacher and the Presidents: Billy Graham in the White House*, Hachette, p150.

[17] The New York Times (1967). *Graham Denies Knowledge of CIA Funds for Trip,* 26 March.

abusers were Luciferians. Definitely involved some Freemasons one of whom was a Southern Baptist minister.'

2. *'I was put through a satanic ritual with Billy Graham when I was 7, hung upside down on a cross, with about ten children and a half circle of men in black robes. I think I called out for Jesus during part of it. He grabbed me by the shoulders and shook me for doing so, screaming at me something like that not even Jesus could help me. That's one ritual. Just one. Billy Graham must have had so many victims. The man is in hell where he belongs.'*

* * *

The Rothstein incident is a fine example of the tactics employed by CIA-paid social media agents. They search hard for inconsistencies and try to discredit and dismiss my entire testimony based on one small detail. I spent five years on the internet disproving every accusation. Every time I successfully defended myself, the CIA-paid internet trolls ignored their defeat and moved directly onto their next attempt. That is a CIA tactic and the same thing a courtroom lawyer is trained to do. These CIA social media agents are trained in public persuasion tactics based on Social Psychology, Crowd Psychology, and Bystander Effects. The CIA know that most people do not bother researching facts for themselves; instead, they would come to me and demand an answer to every false accusation, no matter how absurd. The CIA-paid social media trolls will do the same with this book - focus on discrediting my entire 250,000+ words with one stupid point that I do not sufficiently clarify.

2020 Update

On 25 October 2019, the FBI released documents relating to the 'Finders-Keepers' case and published a link to these on Twitter. This official FBI release included documents acknowledging the existence of the McMartin preschool tunnels, Satanic Ritual Abuse, the microchipping of child trafficking victims, plus the CIA's involvement in child sex trafficking.

AUSSIE PEDO PMs

James Rothstein told me that during his investigations he became aware of an identical child sex trafficking ring in Australia which involved our Prime Ministers. Regarding this matter, Rothstein did clarify that he had not directly investigated the Australian pedophiles himself, but that an Australian intelligence officer named Peter Osborne knew the details. Rothstein confirmed that Australian politicians and other VIPs attended international child brothels.

In 2015, I reported three former Australian Prime Ministers to the NSW state and Australian Federal Police for their participation in the international pedophile network Rothstein described. In 2019, the daughter of one pedophile PM, Paul Keating, was outed for her intimate connection to Jeffrey Epstein's child trafficking operation:

> **When privilege becomes a curse: How Katherine Keating used her status as PM's daughter to befriend royals and infiltrate New York's high society – and why she has gone into hiding since being linked to Jeffrey Epstein**
> Josh Hanrahan, *Daily Mail*, 24 Aug 2019

> *… Ms Keating's involvement with Epstein came courtesy of the connections she has cultivated through her family name. In 2002, at just 20 and while studying arts at the University of New South Wales, she became a member of then NSW Premier Bob Carr's personal staff. She left that role in mid-2003, but remained an advisor to the NSW Labor government until 2005…*

Bob Carr and the Australian Labor Party are heavily implicated in the global child trafficking network. In 2010, Katherine Keating was filmed waving at accused pedophile Prince Andrew while leaving Jeffrey Epstein's New York mansion. This occurred after Epstein's 2008 sex offender conviction. The 2010 video footage shows a young girl leaving the house with Jeffery Epstein, followed by Katherine Keating waving at Prince Andrew who stands behind Epstein's front door. In 2014, Katherine Keating interviewed Epstein's child trafficking partner Ghislaine Maxwell for the *Huffington Post*. Maxwell is the daughter of a corrupt British politician and media proprietor.

NICOLE KIDMAN – PRINCE ANDREW CONNECTION

Katherine Keating is not the only daughter of an Australian VIP pedophile linked to the CIA child sex trafficking network. In 1999, Prince Andrew and Nicole Kidman collaborated to campaign against child abuse in the UK. Here is an article documenting this:

HELLO!
THE DUKE OF YORK AND NICOLE KIDMAN
SUPPORT OUR £1 MILLION PLEDGE TO THE NSPCC
EXCLUSIVE INTERVIEW WITH THE PRINCE AT BUCKINGHAM PALACE
THE 10p INCREASE ON THIS ISSUE GOES TO THE NSPCC. HELLO! WILL ALSO BE DONATING AN ADDITIONAL 10p FOR EACH COPY SOLD
THE WEDDING OF KIRSTY YOUNG AND NICK JONES

Kidman Joins Princely Effort

> *LONDON (CNN) — Britain's Prince Andrew and Australian actress Nicole Kidman teamed up Wednesday in a campaign to end child abuse in Great Britain. They were pictured on the cover of celebrity magazine* HELLO! *to publicize the cause.*
>
> *Inside, Andrew — the chairman of a campaign launched by the British National Society for The Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC) - is quoted as saying, "I was staggered to learn that between one and two children die as a result of abuse in Britain every week — and most during their first year of life." He has been recruiting celebrities like Kidman to help bring attention to the issue.*

> *Kidman, who co-stars in the late Stanley Kubrick's "Eyes Wide Shut" with her husband Tom Cruise, told the magazine, "Children should be allowed to grow up without fear of cruelty."*

THE BLACK NETWORK

Dutch banker Ronald Bernard also surfaced in the wake of the Pedogate scandal to shed further light on the people and system behind the international child trafficking network. During a series of interviews with one Irma Schiffers, Bernard explained how he worked in international finance and high-end money laundering for 12 years. In that role, he discovered that political power does not reside with publicly elected representatives, but with the world's 8,000 to 8,500 wealthiest individuals who exercise power behind the scenes and who routinely manipulate the media. These elites, Bernard said, sit at the top of a power structure that resembles a pyramid:

World Banking Power Structure

8,000 - 8,500 wealthiest individuals
Bank for International Settlements (BIS)
IMF (International Monetary Fund) + World Bank
Central Banks
Multinational companies
Countries' governments

Ronald Bernard described the Central Banks as 'illegally created private banks' which oversee the commercial banking system of their respective countries. He said the wealthiest 8,000 to 8,500 people created the BIS in 1930. Since the world's richest individuals are too young to have helped establish the BIS 88 years ago, he must mean banking dynasties like the Rothschilds.

DOPE INC. (1978)

In a chapter called *Banking and the World's Biggest Business*, the book *Dope Inc.* (1978) lists nine family dynasties responsible for the modern drug industry which '*…is run as a single integrated world operation, from the opium poppy to the nickel bag of heroin sold on an inner-city corner.'* [18]

> *The names of the families and institutions are known to the history student: Matheson, Keswick, Swire, Dent, Baring, and Rothschild; Jardine Matheson, the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, the Chartered Bank, the Peninsular and Orient Steam Navigation Company* [P&O]. *Britain's array of intelligence fronts ran a worldwide assassination bureau, operating through occult secret societies: The Order of Zion, Mazzini's Mafia, the 'Triads' or Societies of Heaven in China.*[19]
>
> …
>
> *We will then take a grand tour through the Anglo-Dutch offshore banking centres, watching money being laundered through Basel, Liechtenstein, Tel Aviv, and the*

---

[18] K. Kalimtgis, D. Goldman & J. Stienberg (1978). *Dope, Inc: Britain's Opium War Against the US*, 63. Executive Intelligence Review.

[19] Ibid 10.

Bahamas; tracing it carefully as it changes ownership from the mob, to the Bronfmans, to British banks, to the Israeli Mossad — finally ending up in dummy corporations to finance international terrorism and a privately owned worldwide assassination bureau.[20]

The drug industry is run as a single, integrated global operation

DOPE, INC.
Britain's Opium War against the U.S.
by a U.S. Labor Party Investigating Team

DUTCH ORIGINS

Ronald Bernard said the financial hierarchy he worked for originated in Holland. The *Dope Inc.* (1978) authors agree. The British Crown employed the *Hofjuden* (*'Court Jews'*) to financially manage their drug operation. These Royal bankers migrated from Amsterdam to Britain after the 1688 Revolution during which Holland's leader conquered England and was crowned King William III. Previously, the bankers participated in the *Dutch East India Company's* first opium trade expeditions, collaborated for centuries with the British Jesuits, and participated in the Jesuit Inquisition. The Royal bankers were rewarded with Royal bloodline wives. These bankers, including the Rothschilds, Warburgs, Oppenheimers and Schroeders became Hitler's main financial backers. The British Royal family are of German descent and changed their family name from the German-sounding *House of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha* to English-sounding *House of Windsor* in 1917. Their Nazi sympathies were demonstrated in the 1933 film footage of future King Edward VIII teaching the 'heil Hitler' arm salute to young Queen Elizabeth, Princess Margaret, and their mother. In October 1937, abdicated Edward visited Nazi Germany where he met Hitler, dined with Hitler's deputy, Rudolf Hess, and toured a concentration camp.

---

[20] Ibid 264.

The Royal bankers coordinated the laundering of drug money via offshore unregulated banks including Britain's island colonies. Hong Kong was established as the centre of the global drug trade. The British Crown created the P&O shipping line specifically to transport the drugs, plus the HSBC bank to launder the opium proceeds. A portion of the drug money was laundered via 'legitimate' cash businesses like hotels, restaurants, gambling establishments, while some was channelled into blood diamonds, gold and art.

The Royal Family created P&O to traffic drugs, HSBC to launder drug money

The *Hofjuden* sponsored select families to run the criminal underworld and its front organizations. These families committed crimes of trafficking, extortion and murder. The *Bronfman Rothschild* finance company is a prime example of this arrangement. The Canadian heirs to the Seagram liquor company were originally known as the 'Bronfman Gang.' They made their initial fortune boot-legging alcohol and operating prostitution brothels during prohibition, followed by trafficking cocaine and heroin.

Nothing has Changed

Dope Inc. (1978) named prominent families involved in the drug trade, including the Astor, Bundy, DuPont, Freeman, Kennedy, Li, Rockefeller, Rothschild, and Russell dynasties. Fritz Springmeier added Bronfman, Cabot, Shaw, Bacon, Perkins, and Morgan to the list. He said all of these were Luciferian bloodlines. The same families are still trafficking drugs and children, as recent events indicate:

- In April 2019, Seagram heiress Clare Bronfman pleaded guilty to her role in a sex trafficking operation called NXVIM. Her sister and co-financer Sara Bronfman was implicated but avoided charges.
- In June 2019, US officials seized a cargo ship owned by J.P. Morgan Chase which was trafficking 20 tons of cocaine worth $1.3 billion.

NXIVM = MK-ULTRA

In the late 1990s, Amway salesman Keith Raniere and Nancy Salzman founded NXIVM. Raniere, who attended a Luciferian Rudolph Steiner school, modelled NXIVM on Scientology. Salzman was trained in NLP (neurolinguistic programming) by Richard Bandler (MK-ULTRA perpetrator), and in hypnosis by Herbert Spiegel (US Army hypnotist, and MK-ULTRA researcher at St. Elizabeth's Hospital, who wrote the foreword to the MK-ULTRA classic, *The Control of Candy Jones*).

The Bronfman sisters financed NXIVM and its subsidiaries including the non-profit *Ethical Science Foundation* which came under state Attorney General investigation in 2017 for performing brain-activity and other human behavioural studies. Medical doctor Brandon B. Porter conducted MK-ULTRA style 'Human Fright Experiments' in which he hooked over 100 victims to an EEG and recorded their reaction to surprise screenings of snuff films:

> *…an actual video of the horrific and brutal murders and dismemberment of four women by machetes; and violent film clips, including a male African American being*

> *viciously stomped by a Nazi; a conscious male being forced to eat a portion of his own brain matter; and a graphic gang rape.*[21]

The *New York State Office of Professional Medical Conduct* initially determined Dr Porter's behaviour did not constitute medical misconduct. They caved to pressure following the high profile NXIVM case.

Back in 2013, Keith Raniere patented a device designed to measure victims' sensory responses to watching snuff films. He labelled this, '*Determination of whether a Luciferian can be rehabilitated*.' Women who were not overtly traumatised by the images were considered suitable recruits and physically branded like cattle. Their numbness at watching snuff films indicated their passivity to, and suitability for, sex trafficking.

The mainstream media ignored the crux of the story, that NXVIM was a front for CIA child sex trafficking. NXVIM leader Raniere and his sidekick Allison Mack were originally charged with child sex trafficking. In 2019 the couple were additionally charged with child pornography. The pending counts filed on 19 April 2018 and published on the internet read:

1. *Sex trafficking of* ***children*** *by force, fraud, or coercion.*
2. *Conspiracy to commit sex trafficking of* ***children*** *by force, fraud, or coercion.*
3. *Attempt to establish peonage, slavery, involuntary servitude, human trafficking.*

Adding weight to NXVIM posing as a 'legitimate' front organisation for child trafficking, Clare Bronfman sponsored a NXVIM subsidiary called *Rainbow Cultural Garden* which operated numerous international childcare centres located in the USA, UK, Ireland, Guatemala, Spain and Mexico. Bronfman also purchased an island in Fiji, a notorious child trafficking hub. The NXVIM court case revealed the Mexican government, including their President, were involved in the operation, vindicating my five-month 2018 online campaign to expose the Arizona/Mexican border as the main human trafficking land route involving Tucson Mayor Jonathan Rothschild, his senior police staff who were previously implicated in child trafficking in California, and a minion of NSA / FBI informants with Luciferian cult connections. Isaac Kappy who helped me expose this operation subsequently died under suspicious circumstances in Arizona near an NSA base immediately after he reached out for help to the Clinton/DynCorp/CIA-linked SEAL Team 6 assassin who hid the discovery of child trafficking camps in the Tucson desert.

NXIVM bore the hallmarks of a CIA human trafficking and compromise operation. The cult sex trafficked children and adults, targeted influential people including entertainers, and owned over 60 related companies including a video department called *Moving Pixels*. Connections were detected between NXIVM and human trafficking mob bosses Bill and Hillary Clinton:

- Texts exist between Keith Raniere and Hillary Clinton.
- In the 1990s, Bill Clinton asked Keith Raniere for money because he was doing business in Arkansas. When Raniere refused, the state Attorney General targeted his operation for closure. Consequently, Raniere's new NXIVM operation made illegal campaign

---

[21] Melissa Klein & Isabel Vincent (2018). Albany doctor allegedly ran sick human experiments for NXIVM, *New York Post* (online), 5 May.

contributions to the Clintons. This information was revealed during Mark Vincente's testimony during the NXVIM trial (12 May 2019).

THE OCTOPUS

Dope Inc. described the same criminal system as Ronald Bernard who said his own laundering operation dealt with governments, multinationals, terrorist organisations, and secret service agencies. Intelligence agencies like the CIA, MI6 and Mossad do not serve and protect a people or country as the public expect, he explained, but are *all* criminal organizations that trade in drugs, weapons, and children. The CIA functions as a private police force for the elite. According to Bernard, the wealthy elite control their employees through compromise and blackmail – just as James Rothstein described.

Ronald Bernard described how he and the other bankers employed by the wealthy elite were expected to participate in heinous sexual and murderous acts including the ritual sacrifice of children. This sounds far-fetched - until you read news articles like this:

Portfolio Manager Accused of Raping, Beating Women in Penthouse Dungeon
Rebecca Rosenberg, *New York Post*, 3 Nov 2017.

A former portfolio manager for an investment fund founded by financier George Soros sexually abused women at a Manhattan penthouse dungeon, according to a $27 million Brooklyn federal suit. Howie Rubin, 62, whose high-stakes dealing was featured in the best-selling books 'Liar's Poker' and 'The Big Short,' rented the lavish Metropolitan Tower pad in Midtown to indulge in brutal sex with women whom he paid between $2,000 and $5,000 per session, according to the suit filed Thursday.

The three unidentified plaintiffs in the case — including two Playboy Playmates — claim the married father raped and beat them to the point that they needed extensive medical attention, court papers say. At the $8 million penthouse, they were shown to a side room featuring ropes, chains and sex toys along with other BDSM equipment. Rubin gagged, tied up and viciously abused the women — even punching one in the head, the suit filed by civil lawyer John Balestriere said.

'I'm going to rape you like I rape my daughter,' Rubin barked during one of the alleged assaults.

*In one session, he beat one of the women's 'breasts so badly that her right implant flipped,' the papers state. The former Bear Stearns trader paid her $20,000 to repair the damage. One plaintiff was tied up, gagged and shocked with a **cattle prod** in her groin before Rubin allegedly raped her, according to the filing.*

Rubin — who collaborated with two female fixers and a lawyer — had the women sign non-disclosure agreements, the papers state. The trio sought to 'cover up Rubin's sexual misconduct and criminal abuse of women and to serve as a cover for his wide-ranging human trafficking scheme,' wrote Balestriere …

* * *

There must have been some truth to the 1978 content of *Dope Inc.* because after its publication the HSBC lost its licence to operate in the USA. Further, the 1978 book inspired law enforcement officials to swap their assumption that drug trafficking consisted of pockets of independent criminal activity, for understanding the drug industry as a global network coordinated by the CIA, with proceeds laundered through banks and funnelled into the CIA's covert terrorist operations.

All Intelligence agencies are privately-owned criminal organizations

Dope Inc. and Ronald Bernard's testimony are consistent with the 1972 *Bank of Credit and Commerce International* (BCCI) scandal and the findings of reporter Danny Casalaro who was 'suicided' while investigating the same secret syndicate. The Manhattan District Attorney who closed BCCI's USA branch announced that 16 witnesses died while investigating the BCCI's involvement in covert CIA operations, arms smuggling to Iraq, money laundering, and child prostitution. Danny Casalaro labelled the system *The Octopus* and described it as follows:

> *They're not government officials but their tentacles can reach into any part of the government in almost any country including legitimate and rogue spy networks. They are not notable industrialists, but they can pull the strings of the oil and banking empires at will. They are not known criminals, but they successfully penetrated all factions of organized crime including the Mafia, the Japanese Yakuza, the secret Chinese Triads, and the terrorist underground.* [22]

Casalaro linked *The Octopus* to people, places, and activities consistent with my experience. His notes and phone records referenced drug trafficking, money laundering, Mossad, CIA, shellfish-based bioweapons, genetic engineering, Nicaragua, Watergate, Australia's Nugan-Hand Bank, Pine Gap, MJ-12, and Area 51.[23] This bizarre combination of diverse and seemingly unrelated research topics only makes sense within the context of witness testimonies like mine. I can pull together every single one of those topics and explain their solid relationship.

The best way to understand the global child trafficking industry is to trace the history of the drug trafficking industry. As you read *Dope Inc*. cross out the word 'drugs' and replace it with the word 'kids' to gain a picture of the child trafficking network that traded me. Like the drug trade, the child sex trafficking industry is run as a single integrated world operation. At the top sit the wealthy elite who maintain control by ensuring only blackmailed, compromised politicians, military brass and government officials occupy leadership. The secret services, including ASIO, MI6 and the CIA coordinate the child trafficking and human compromise operation, receive the victims procured via the little men, modify the behaviour of child victims until they become suitable assets, and transport the trained victims nationally and internationally to service VIP pedophiles.

---

[22] Kenn Thomas & Jim Keith (2004). *The Octopus: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro*. Feral House.

[23] Cheri Seymour (2010). *The Last Circle.* TrineDay LLC.

Child trafficking is run as a single, integrated world operation coordinated by the CIA

Operation Mockingbird: In 1977, Watergate investigative journalist Carl Bernstein said the CIA had recruited over 400 American journalists:

> *Alsop is one of more than 400 American journalists who in the past twenty-five years have secretly carried out assignments for the Central Intelligence Agency, according to documents on file at CIA headquarters. Some of these journalists' relationships with the Agency were tacit; some were explicit. There was cooperation, accommodation and overlap. Journalists provided a full range of clandestine services—from simple intelligence gathering to serving as go-betweens with spies in Communist countries. Reporters shared their notebooks with the CIA. Editors shared their staffs. Some of the journalists were Pulitzer Prize winners, distinguished reporters who considered themselves ambassadors without-portfolio for their country. Most were less exalted: foreign correspondents who found that their association with the Agency helped their work; stringers and freelancers who were as interested in the derring-do of the spy business as in filing articles; and, the smallest category, full-time CIA employees masquerading as journalists abroad. In many instances, CIA documents show, journalists were engaged to perform tasks for the CIA with the consent of the managements of America's leading news organizations.*[24]

This CIA operation was called *Mockingbird*. Australia and the UK have their own network of Mockingbird journalists which sprung to the defence of Westminster VIP pedophiles.

* * *

PIE (Pedophile Information Exchange)
I received the following correspondence in 2017:

> *In 1971 an Adelaide barrister from the Communist Party of Australia created the precursor to what later became the Pedophile Information Exchange. This lawyer was the late ELLIOT JOHNSON. The Pedophile Information Exchange was formed from earlier pedophile groups such as the Lewis Carroll Collectors Guild and the (homosexual) Peter Pan Club. Another founder of this organization (from the Peter Pan Club) was FRANK HOUSTON who also founded the pseudo-church The Assembly of God. Houston was pastor of the Surrey Hills Christian Centre which later morphed into Hillsong Church. Houston was an organizer for the Peter Pan Club when he was contacted by Elliot Johnson and asked to assist in forming a 'united front' for organized pedophilia. This resulted in the formation of the Pedophile Information Exchange in February 1973. This organization was then exported to the United Kingdom…*

---

[24] Carl Bernstein (1977). The CIA and the Media. *Rolling Stone*, 20 Oct.

Here are some shocking facts about PIE (*Paedophile Information Exchange*): [25] [26]

- The UK government gave PIE grants totalling at least £70,000 via the Home Office, between 1977 and 1980.
- PIE proposed reducing the age of consent to age 4 years.
- PIE's motto was: 'Sex before eight - before it's too late.'
- PIE produced a magazine, *Understanding Paedophilia* which contained articles written by psychologists.
- PIE was affiliated to the UK *National Council for Civil Liberties* and backed by the *Campaign for Homosexual Equality*.
- PIE campaigned for the social and legal acceptance of pedophilia:

We want to dispel the myths connected with paedophilia, and show that most pedophiles desire gentle, loving, and mutually pleasurable relationships. We believe it is inhumane to children to outlaw their sexuality and we support moves to lower the age of consent.

* * *

How did the Pro-Paedophile Group PIE Exist Openly for 10 Years?

Tom de Castella & Tom Heyden, *BBC News Magazine*, 27 Feb 2014

The Paedophile Information Exchange was affiliated to the National Council for Civil Liberties - now Liberty - in the late 1970s and early 1980s.

…

A gay rights conference backs a motion in favour of paedophilia. The story is written up by a national newspaper as 'Child-lovers win fight for role in Gay Lib.' It sounds like a nightmarish plotline from dystopian fiction. But this happened in the UK. The conference took place in Sheffield and the newspaper was the Guardian. The year was 1975. It's part of the story of how paedophiles tried to go mainstream in the 1970s.

…

PIE was formed in 1974. It campaigned for 'children's sexuality.' It wanted the government to axe or lower the age of consent. It offered support to adults 'in legal difficulties concerning sexual acts with consenting 'underage' partners.' The real aim was to normalise sex with children. Journalist Christian Wolmar remembers their tactics. 'They didn't emphasise that this was 50-year-old men wanting to have sex with five-year-olds. They presented it as the sexual liberation of children, that children should have the right to sex,' he says.

…

It's an ideology that seems chilling now. But PIE managed to gain support from some professional bodies and progressive groups. It received invitations from student unions, won sympathetic media coverage and found academics willing to push its message.

---

[25] K. Mudie (2014). Huge sums of TAXPAYER'S cash 'handed to vile child-sex pervert group' by Home Office officials. *Daily Mirror*, 1 March.

[26] Michael Parkin (1975). Child-lovers win fight for role in Gay Lib. *The Guardian*, 26 Aug.

> *…*
> *One of PIE's key tactics was to try to conflate its cause with gay rights. On at least two occasions the Campaign for Homosexual Equality conference passed motions in PIE's favour.*
> *…*
> *Most gay people were horrified by any conflation of homosexuality and a sexual interest in children, says Parris. But PIE used the idea of sexual liberation to win over more radical elements. 'If there was anything with the word 'liberation' in the name you were automatically in favour of it if you were young and cool in the 1970s. It seemed like PIE had slipped through the net.'*
> *…*
> *A Guardian article in 1977 noted with dismay how the group was growing. By its second birthday in October 1976, it had 200 members. There was a London group, a Middlesex group being planned, and with regional branches to follow. The article speaks of PIE's hopes to widen the membership to include women and heterosexual men.*
> *…*
> *In August 1983 a Scottish headmaster, Charles Oxley, handed over a dossier about PIE to Scotland Yard after infiltrating the group, the Glasgow Herald wrote. He said the group had about 1,000 members.*

* * *

PIE membership included judges, politicians,[27] scoutmasters, headteachers, diplomats, aristocrats, intelligence agents, and child protection experts. Notable PIE members were:

- **Prime Minister Edward Heath** (regularly attended PIE meetings in Westminster).[28]
- **Richard Maurice Clive Bigham** (son of Viscount Mersey, was convicted of raping sisters aged six and 10).[29]
- **Sir Peter Hayman** (Senior Diplomat, British High Commissioner to Canada, Foreign Office Minister. In 1981, MP Geoffrey Dickens used Parliamentary privilege to expose information Thatcher had suppressed: that Hayman posted pornographic material. Dickens consequently received death threats and was burgled).[30]
- **Geoffrey Arthur Prime** (British Intelligence Officer, Soviet spy, convicted in 1982 of raping three girls).[31] [32]
- **Charles Napier** (PIE treasurer, schoolteacher).

---

[27] Danny McGrory (1983). MPs on 'child sex mailing list.' *Daily Express*, 3 Sept.

[28] Nick Dorman (2015). Edward Heath fixed it for Kimmy Savile to receive OBE and attended Pedophile Information Exchange meetings. *Mirror*, 8 Aug.

[29] *Daily Express* (1978). Dishonoured: the shame of a viscount's son who turned from porn books to child sex, 11 July.

[30] Garth Gibbs & Stuart Greig (1981). Secret shame of Mr Perfect, *Daily Mirror*, 19 March.

[31] Julian Haviland (1982). Thatcher's guarded security statement. *The Times* (London), 21 July.

[32] Steve Bird (2014). The child sex attacker and Soviet spy who was in the vile group legitimised by Harman and chums. *Daily Mail* [Online], 26 Feb.

- **Peter Righton** (PIE founder, charged and cautioned for raping a boy in 1960, UK's most senior child social worker, VIP network scapegoat).

'MORAL PANIC'

In a 1981 publication, *Perspectives on Paedophilia*, Peter Righton attacked the 'moral panic' over pedophilia; he said that with 'the child's willing compliance…the sex is unlikely to do much harm.' Peter Righton was the UK's top social worker and child protection expert. He served as Director of the *National Children's Bureau* charity, Director of the *National Institute for Social Work*, and consultant for the *National Children's Bureau*. In 1992, Peter Righton was convicted of possessing hard-core child abuse porn obtained from Amsterdam. Police also found a diary containing 'scores of boys' whom investigators believed Righton had sexually abused. At the time of his arrest, Righton lived with his gay pedophile partner at the 2,500-acre estate of Lord John and Leslie Henniker-Major which operated as 'an educational and recreational centre for children.' London Borough of Islington sent children to the Henniker estate under a scheme called *The Islington Suffolk Project*. Hundreds of Islington children holidayed at the Henniker estate since the 1970s. Islington was implicated in child trafficking. Jimmy Savile raped kids on Islington where 14 investigations revealed pedophiles operated all 24 children's homes.[33] The entire island was complicit in the abuse, such that victims refused to testify to internal investigators who 'lost' all files documenting child abuse on Islington.

Operation Fairbank was established in 2012 to investigate allegations against Peter Righton and his connections. During the 1992 raids on Righton, police found 25 years of correspondence between Righton and pedophiles in Britain and around the world.[34] Police found a letter from Charles Napier to Righton boasting of his life in Cairo as a British Council teacher, how Cairo was 'full of boys, 98 per cent of them available,' and how Napier could send child pornography to Britain in diplomatic bags.[35] Charles Napier fled England for Cairo in 1972 after being banned from teaching in the UK for indecently assault pupils at a Surrey school. In 1995, Charles Napier was convicted of the historical rape of a boy. Police evidence included letters exchanged between Napier and Righton about the availability of boys in Sweden, plus a 1978 film showing Napier and Righton with boys in Sweden.

ELM GUEST HOUSE

Operation Fernbridge was an *Operation Fairbank* offshoot. It focused on, 'Elm Guest House, south-west London, a gay brothel where VIP pedophiles preyed on young boys supplied from local care homes.'[36] Rent boy candidates were identified from school magazine photos and forced into foster care by government social workers like Peter Righton. Multiple boy brothel victims identified VIP Elm Guest House clients including politicians, police, Royal family employees, British Intelligence, military, and pop stars. Cliff Richards obtained a high court injunction to prevent the media naming him as an Elm Guest House client codenamed 'Kitty.' The media instead named Cliff Richards for sexually assaulting a boy at Billy Graham's

---

[33] Andrew Johnston (2014). Islington child abuse victim: Why I won't talk to the Town hall Inquiry into Jimmy Savile link, *Islington Tribune*, 11 April.

[34] Keir Mudie (2012). Abuse scandals probe widens: The man who may hold key to UK's biggest pedophile network ever. *Mirror*, 11 Nov.

[35] Keir Mudie (2013). VIP child abuse ring: Cops probe paedo teacher Charles Napier. Mirror, 16 Feb.

[36] Ibid.

1985 Crusade in Sheffield, forcing him to relocate to pedophile-friendly Portugal (where Madeleine McCain disappeared).

Multiple victims named Prime Minister Edward Heath and Home Secretary Leon Brittan as Elm Guest House clients. In November 1983, Geoffrey Dickens MP gave Leon Brittan a ‘massive’ dossier on child abuse containing specific allegations about a link between PIE and Buckingham Palace staff, Foreign Office staff, and the civil service. Dickens gave Brittan a second dossier in 1984 alleging child abuse in a children’s home and naming prominent pedophiles including a BBC TV executive. Leon Brittan investigated nothing – because he was one of them.

SPARTACUS

Elm Guest House ran an advertisement in the *Spartacus International Gay Guide* pedophile magazine which offered a ‘10% Discount to Spartacus Club members.’ According to Australian police detectives, ‘Spartacus’ was codename for an international underground pedophile network.[37] *Spartacus Club*, part of the British-registered *Spartacus International*, was run by pedophile Catholic priest John Stamford, a PIE activist who fled the UK for Amsterdam where he published and managed the German *Spartacus International Gay Guide*. The magazine functioned as a shopping catalogue / tourist guidebook for international pedophiles who could arrange to meet up with the children advertised in the magazine. The *Spartacus International Gay Guide* was distributed to pedophiles travelling to ‘Europe, Mediterranean, America, Africa, Asia, Australasia, USSR.’

CLARENCE OSBORNE

Brisbane court stenographer Clarence Henry Howard-Osborne was Australia’s contact point for senior PIE figures including John Stamford.[38] Osborne took photos of Brisbane children that appeared in German and English pedophile magazines including *Spartacus International Gay Guide*. Clarence Osborne organised for international pedophile tourists to meet up with Brisbane children whose photographs he had placed in the *Spartacus International Gay Guide*.

In 1973, the Public Service Board conducted two secret inquiries into Clarence Osborne. Resultingly, Gough Whitlam’s ALP government transferred Clarence Osborne to the Hansard bureau at Parliament House in Canberra. (I was trafficked to a pedophile party held inside Parliament House during Clarence Osborne’s placement there.)

Clarence Osborne committed suicide in 1979 after police raided his home:

> *[Police] discovered thousands of pictures of naked children, hundreds of hours of tape-recorded conversations with boys and a meticulously organised filing cabinet filled with index cards bearing the details of his victims, from their names, ages and addresses, to their physical measurements. It was later estimated that Osborne had been involved with more than 2500 under-aged males over a 20-year period… Incredibly, Osborne and his voluminous files were never thoroughly investigated by police. According to officers who viewed the Osborne material at the time, the names on the index cards, so dutifully recorded by Osborne, were not only those of the boys he had seduced, but adults – members of the judiciary, the legal profession, politicians,*

---

[37] Matthew Condon (2016). Pedophile Clarence Henry Howard-Osborne’s files could have ‘brought down government.’ *Courier Mail*, 18 March.

[38] Ibid.

> *academics, and even police officers - with sexual interests in children. One former officer said the Osborne material was enough 'to bring down the [then Queensland] government overnight.'* [39]

Osborn shared his pedophile materials with Australia's leading criminologist and ABC Radio regular Paul Wilson who wrote a book defending Clarence Osborne.[40] At the University of Queensland during the 1980s, Paul Wilson organised a pro-pedophilia conference and showed a child porn snuff film to his psychology class. Bond University published Paul Wilson's pro-pedophile articles on their website, until Wilson was charged with historical child sexual assault.

> *By the early 1980s the Osborne case had been all but forgotten, and many of the diminutive stenographer's secrets were presumed lost with him. Except a retired Queensland police officer with a conscience and a phenomenal memory, who wanted to pursue Osborne at the time – and was warned off by senior officers, and who received a death threat after he pushed the pedophile investigation too far – only to be drummed out of the force, never forgot the case. And in breaking his silence, he would link Osborne to an international pedophile ring, and the child abuse scandal currently rocking Westminster in the UK.*[41]

JIMMY SAVILE OBE: UK's JEFFREY EPSTEIN

Jimmy Savile, who associated closely with British prime ministers Edward Heath and Margaret Thatcher, and the British Royal family, was linked to PIE. Initial allegations against Savile involved Satanic Ritual Abuse:

> **JIMMY SAVILE WAS PART OF SATANIC RING**
>
> James Fielding, *Express.uk.co*, 13 Jan 2013.
>
> *JIMMY SAVILE beat and raped a 12-year-old girl during a secret satanic ritual in a hospital. The perverted star wore a hooded robe and mask as he abused the terrified victim in a candle-lit basement. He also chanted 'Hail Satan' in Latin as other paedophile devil worshippers joined in and assaulted the girl at Stoke Mandeville Hospital in Buckinghamshire. The attack, which happened in 1975, shines a sinister new light on the former DJ's 54-year reign of terror. Savile, who died aged 84 in October 2011, is now Britain's worst sex offender after police revealed he preyed on at least 450 victims aged eight to 47.*
>
> *The girl kept her torment hidden for nearly 20 years before finally opening up to therapist Valerie Sinason. Dr Sinason told the Sunday Express she first spoke to the victim in 1992. 'She had been a patient at Stoke Mandeville in 1975 when Savile was a regular visitor. She recalled being led into a room that was filled with candles on the lowest level of the hospital, somewhere that was not regularly used by staff. Several adults were there, including Jimmy Savile who, like the others, was wearing a robe and*

---

[39] Ibid.

[40] Paul Wilson (1981). *The Man They Called a Monster: Sexual Experience Between Men and Boys*. Cassell.

[41] Matthew Condon (2016). Pedophile Clarence Henry Howard-Osborne's files could have 'brought down government.' *Courier Mail*, 18 March.

a mask. She recognised him because of his distinctive voice and the fact that his blond hair was protruding from the side of the mask. He was not the leader, but he was seen as important because of his fame. She was molested, raped and beaten and heard words that sounded like 'Ave Satanas,' a Latin-ised version of 'Hail Satan,' being chanted. There was no mention of any other child being there and she cannot remember how long the attack lasted but she was left extremely frightened and shaken.'

Savile was a volunteer porter and fundraiser at the hospital between 1965 and 1988 and had his own quarters there. Five years after the hospital attack, he abused a second victim during another black mass ceremony held at a house in a wealthy London street. The woman was 21 at the time and was made to attend an orgy, which later took on a darker twist.

Dr Sinason, director of the Clinic for Dissociative Studies in London, said: 'A second victim approached me in 1993. She said she had been 'lent out' as a supposedly consenting prostituted woman at a party in a London house in 1980. The first part of the evening started off with an orgy but half-way through some of the participants left. Along with other young women, the victim was shepherded to wait in another room before being brought back to find Savile in a master of ceremonies kind of role with a group wearing robes and masks. She too heard Latin chanting and instantly recognised Satanist regalia. Although the girl was a young adult, who was above the age of consent, she had suffered a history of sexual abuse and was extremely vulnerable.'

Both victims contacted Dr Sinason, who is president of the Institute of Psychotherapy and Disability, while she was involved in a Department of Health-funded study into sexual abuse committed during rituals and religious ceremonies. She said: 'Both these witnesses did speak to police at the time but were vulnerable witnesses and on encountering any surprise or shock did not dare to give all the details.' Dr Sinason added: 'Savile was still a huge celebrity in the early Nineties, let's not forget, and there was never any action taken against him or any of the others involved. Neither girl knew one another, they lived in different parts of the country and contacted me a year apart, yet their experiences are very similar. Whether Savile was a practising Satanist or merely enjoyed dressing up to scare his victims even more will perhaps never be known but he left those two girls mentally scarred.'

Dr Sinason has passed details of the abuse to officers from the Savile inquiry, Operation Yewtree…

* * *

SCANDAL OF JIMMY SAVILLE'S 50 YEARS OF SEX ABUSE

John Twomey & Mark Reynolds, *Express.co.uk*, 12 Jan 2013.

THE vast scale of Jimmy Savile's sexual abuse was revealed yesterday as the BBC star was unmasked as a monster who raped and molested children for nearly six decades.

Former Top of The Pops presenter Savile preyed on at least 450 victims at schools, hospitals and at other venues including a hospice and the BBC TV Centre. Using his celebrity status and the popularity of shows such as Jim'll Fix It, the paedophile gained access to victims and committed horrific crimes at will, a report revealed yesterday. Savile hoodwinked his bosses, hospital and school officials and millions of viewers and listeners to gain almost saint-like status. Commander Peter Spindler, who led Scotland Yard's £450,000 inquiry, said: 'He groomed the nation.'

Detectives believe Savile spent every waking moment thinking of ways to gain access to victims. He also attacked vulnerable adults but 73 per cent of his victims were under 18. The youngest was an eight-year-old boy. He also abused a dying child at Great Ormond Street Hospital. The child, aged 11 or 12, told relatives Savile had touched him or her inappropriately. The DJ committed at least 34 rapes – mostly on women. Some victims were hospital patients who had pleaded with him to visit because they had no one else. Victims were attacked in 14 different medical establishments including mental health units.

His sickening activities were exposed in a landmark joint report by the Metropolitan Police and the children's charity NSPCC. His earliest recorded offence was in 1955 and the latest in 2009, when he was 82. He died in 2011. Police recorded 214 crimes across 28 forces from Avon and Somerset to Northumbria. The peak of the offending was from 1966 to 1976.

Scarcely any victims complained. The few who did were not taken seriously by police, prosecutors, hospital and school officials – or even their own parents. At least five chances were missed to put Savile in the dock – the most recent in 2009 when four women reported assaults while in their teens or early 20s. But detectives mishandled the investigations.

Lawyers representing victims are preparing multi-million damages claims against Savile's £4.2million estate, the BBC, hospital and education authorities. Solicitors said they had not ruled out suing the police…

*   *   *

SAVILE ABUSED DYING CHILD

John Twomey & Mark Reynolds, *Express.co.uk*, 12 Jan 2013.

JIMMY Savile's 54-year reign of sexual abuse was revealed yesterday as it emerged the disgraced BBC star's victims included a terminally ill child and an eight-year-old boy.

… he abused a dying child at Great Ormond Street Hospital. The allegation was made by a patient aged 11 or 12 who told relatives before dying that Savile had touched him or her inappropriately. He committed at least 34 rapes, mostly of women. Some victims were desperately lonely patients who had pleaded with Savile to visit because they had no one else to comfort them…

* * *

Irish Foster Boys Trafficked to Royal Mountbatten & Jimmy Savile

Jimmy Savile was close friends with Lord Louis Mountbatten, Prince Charles' favourite uncle. Savile and Mountbatten are linked to the investigation of Kincora Boys' Home in Belfast, Northern Ireland. Joseph Mains, the Warden of Kincora Boys' Home, prostituted boys to British VIPs. He drove Kincora boys to Classiebawn Castle on Mullaghmore Harbor in County Sligo, on Ireland's West Coast, for Lord Mountbatten to rape. Mountbatten holidayed at Classiebawn Castle every summer for 30 years – until the Irish Republican Army assassinated him in 1979 by bombing his boat in Mullahgmore Harbour. Rumours persist that the IRA killed Mountbatten because he took advantage of Northern Irish boys.

Consistent with their VIP child trafficking coverup, the British press completely ignored this Saville-Mountbatten-Kincora connection when reporting on the August 2019 launch of Andrew Lownie's sensational biography, *The Mountbattens: their Lives & Loves*. The following article typifies the UK press' alternative focus:

> **Lord Mountbatten 'was a homosexual with a lust for young boys' claims secret FBI dossier compiled by agents seeking dirt on British statesmen during World War Two and the Suez Crisis**
> Connor Boyd, *Daily Mail*, 18 Aug 2019.
>
> *Intelligence files describe Lord Mountbatten as person of 'extremely low morals'*
> *75-year-old documents say he frequently had homosexual extramarital affairs*
> *It comes ahead of the 40th anniversary of his death at hands of the IRA in 1979*
>
> *Prince Charles' uncle and valued mentor Lord Mountbatten was a 'homosexual with a perversion for young boys', according to a secret dossier compiled by the FBI. The intelligence files describe the 1st Earl Mountbatten of Burma and his wife Edwina as 'persons of extremely low morals' who frequently had extramarital affairs. One source said Mountbatten's penchant for young men made him 'an unfit man to direct any sort of military operations.'*
> …
> *The 75-year-old FBI documents were obtained through a freedom of information request by British historian Andrew Lownie, who has written a biography of the couple. In the book, The Mountbattens: their Lives & Loves, Mountbatten's former driver Ron Perks reveals that one of his boss's favourite destinations was 'an upmarket gay brothel used by senior naval officers' called the Red House near Rabat.*
>
> *Agents began compiling the file, which spans more than three decades, in February 1944, shortly after Mountbatten became supreme allied commander of southeast Asia. Following his appointment, the FBI interviewed Elizabeth de la Poer Beresford, Baroness Decies, about another matter, and she brought up Mountbatten. The file reads: 'She states that in these circles Lord Louis Mountbatten and his wife are considered persons of extremely low morals. She stated that Lord Louis Mountbatten was known to be a homosexual with a perversion for young boys. In Lady Decies' opinion he is an unfit man to direct any sort of military operations because of this condition. She stated further that his wife Lady Mountbatten was considered equally*

> *erratic.' It was signed EE Conroy, head of the New York field office, who wrote that she 'appears to have no special motive in making the above statements.'*
>
> *…*
>
> *Rumours about Mountbatten's sexuality have long swirled following his death 40 years ago… fuelled by his comment: 'Edwina and I spent all our married lives getting into other people's beds.' The royal kept a large group of gay friends, including Noël Coward, Terence Rattigan, Ivor Novello and Tom Driberg, who reportedly referred to him as 'Mountbottom'.*
>
> *Lownie's new book, to be published on Thursday, contains an interview with Anthony Daly, a rent boy to the rich and famous during the 1970s. Daly claims: 'Tom said Mountbatten had something of a fetish for uniforms — handsome young men in military uniforms (with high boots) and beautiful boys in school uniform.'*

* * *

By contrast, Irish news sites focussed on Andrew Lownie's coverage of the Saville-Mountbatten-Kincora connection. For example:

A Kincora Boy Abused by Mountbatten Committed Suicide a few Months Later
Joseph de Burca, *Village*, 18 Aug 2019.

* * *

BRITISH INTELLIGENCE PRESS COVERUP

The British press downgraded Jimmy Savile's documented SRA to a 'plain vanilla' story. Pro-pedophile mouthpiece *The Telegraph* led the propaganda charge with quotes like: 'Satanic ritual abuse does not exist, it's like alien abduction.'[42] The quoted female barrister advocated for lowering the age of consent to 13, and not charging pedophiles with historical crimes because it was 'too late.' She employed the term 'moral panic' to dismiss victim testimony. Quoting a female pedophile defender is effective because the public do not realise how many females, including barristers, are involved in Luciferian pedophile cults.

The 'plain vanilla' account pushed by UK media involved 13 police stations which gathered reports from 589 victims, 450 of whom claimed abuse by Savile. The abuse implicated the BBC plus 32 government hospitals. A 2014 National Health Service report concluded, Savile raped public hospital patients over several decades, including children, adults, and dead bodies, with the knowledge and support of government authorities. Nurses felt so helpless to stop Savile, they warned hospitalised children to feign sleep to avoid Savile raping them during his late-night ward rounds. Savile even assaulted hospital staff and visitors. Further, politicians and civil servants appointed unqualified Jimmy Savile to run Broadmoor psychiatric unit where he boldly assaulted staff, raped patients, and invited high profile associates to watch women shower. To date, the British Government has failed to explain how one filthy grub wielded such influence and terror without the backing of Westminster pedophiles.

---

[42] Melanie Hall (2013). Jimmy Savile satanic abuse claims as unlikely as 'alien abduction', says leading barrister, *The Telegraph*, 8 July.

Jimmy Savile was implicated in the abuse of children at tax/pedophile haven Jersey Island[43] where residents' front yards proudly display statues of very young children performing oral sex on erect penises, plus a 12-foot statue of Satan as pedophile Pan. The entire Jersey Island population including police, judiciary, social services and journalists were complicit to the ritual rape, torture and murder of children at the island's children's home, *Hart de la Garenne,* where police found buried remains of multiple children, plus a kill room featuring: shackles, a blood-stained concrete tub, lime bath, and incinerator full of children's dismembered body parts. Senior police, including Scotland Yard, blocked investigations of most of the 151 perpetrators identified by 192 victims who made 1,776 witness statements. A few low-level staff were charged, while all VIPs and those accused of satanic ritual abuse, escaped police investigation. Anyone who tried to expose the Luciferian pedophile child trafficking operation were arrested or murdered, including Dyana, sister of Bill Maloney who produced the documentary *Sun, Sea and Satan* about the ritual abuse the siblings experienced on Jersey Island.

Prime Minister Edward Heath closely associated with Jimmy Savile. Guy Marsden, Jimmy Savile's nephew, said Heath sexually assaulted a boy at a London party. Heath was also implicated in the rape and murder of Jersey Island children aboard his yacht.

SILENT UK WITNESSES

British Intelligence and the BBC went to extreme lengths to plug any leaks regarding the VIP trafficking operation:

- In 1978, the BBC banned pop star 'Johnny Rotten' for outing Saville as a pedophile during interview.[44]
- In 1996, the British government assassinated a Dunblane teacher and her entire primary school class following disclosures the children were being sex trafficked to the elite Westminster pedophile ring. Websites exposing the truth of the Dunblane Massacre were wiped off the internet.
- In 1999, journalist Jill Dando was gunned down in a professional hit, to stop her exposing the same VIP pedophile network on the BBC *Crimewatch* television program she hosted.

Owing to the internet, the truth became more difficult for the UK government to suppress. Here is a summary of notable newspaper articles that documented multiple police investigations into thousands of VIP pedophile allegations in the UK.

TORY PAEDO COVER-UP

Jonathan Corke, Tony Bushby & Deborah Sherwood, *Daily Star*, 28 Oct 2012.

- The British Royal Air Force flew rich and powerful European VIPs, including Belgians, to attend London pedophile orgies in the 1980s (via RAF Northolt located outside London).
- Numerous boys were sex trafficked to rich and powerful men in the 1980s.

---

[43] *Daily Mail* (2012). Former Jersey police chief says Savile was implicated in Haut de la Garenne children's home scandal and there's 'no reason to doubt' he abused girls there, 9 Oct.

[44] *The Guardian* (2015). John Lydon says he was 'banned from BBC' over Jimmy Savile comments, 24 Sep.

- VIPs paid boy prostitutes to attend pedophile orgies at ‘millionaire properties’ in London and the Home Counties.
- A ‘network’ of boys, including runaways, were prostituted to the orgies.
- A teenage rent boy witness vanished just weeks after speaking to Metropolitan Police detectives.
- The boy named VIP pedophiles including a living Tory Cabinet minister, judges, and senior civil servants.
- Met detectives received multiple pedophile allegations against the Cabinet minister.
- Metropolitan Police ordered detectives to stop investigating the VIP pedophile ring.
- A retired detective who worked on the case said: ‘It wasn’t that we ran out of leads, but it reached a point where a warning to stop came. It was a case of ‘get rid of everything, never say a word to anyone. It was made very clear to me that to continue asking questions would jeopardise my career.’
- The Tory Cabinet minister was never arrested. No one was charged over the rent-boy pedophile ring.
- Labor MP Tom Watson said case files from 20 years ago link pedophile Peter Righton to a Prime Minister. Watson knows of evidence linking a second pedophile ring to Parliament and the PM. Watson said the leads were not followed up, and he was contacted by someone claiming the police ‘held a vast quantity of material suggesting Jimmy Savile was a predatory pedophile.’
- Police conducted at least 7 investigations into Savile while he was alive – yet no charges were laid.
- Scotland Yard investigated Savile in the 1980s over claims he attacked a girl in a caravan at London BBC TV Centre.
- Metropolitan Police are currently investigating Jimmy Savile’s assault of 300 victims over 60 years.

* * *

MI5 'Helped Margaret Thatcher Cover-up Pedophile Tory MPs Activities' new Document Reveals

Nick Sommerlad & Jack Blanchard, *The Mirror,* 22 July 2015.

- A 1985 letter from MI5 head Sir Antony Duff to Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher revealed two sources accused an unnamed senior Tory MP of having ‘a penchant for small boys.’
- MI5 told Cabinet Secretary Sir Robert Armstrong, they accepted the MP’s denials of the pedophile allegations, adding: ‘At the present stage... the risks of political embarrassment to the Government is rather greater than the security danger.’
- Pedophile documents link PM Thatcher’s parliamentary secretary Sir Peter Morrison, Home Secretary Leon Brittan, diplomat Sir Peter Hayman, and minister Sir William van Straubenzee.

* * *

‘Edward Heath Abused us too’ say More Alleged Victims Coming Forward
Russell Myers, *The Mirror*, 4 Aug 2015.

- Metropolitan, Wiltshire, Jersey and Kent police forces investigated pedophile allegations against PM Edward Heath.
- The Met Police had been investigating Heath for almost 10 months.
- A Scotland Yard inquiry, Operation Midland, investigated Heath as part of a 1970s - 80s VIP pedophile ring.
- Wiltshire Police received ‘a number’ of fresh calls from Heath victims.
- In the 1990s, a brothel keeper threatened to reveal in court that she had evidence PM Heath was a pedophile. Charges against her were dropped.
- The Police force is being investigated by the Independent Police Complaints Commission for allegedly failing to investigate the brothel keeper’s evidence.
- The NSPCC [the child abuse charity Jimmy Savile and Margaret Thatcher supported] has also been contacted by people claiming Heath sexually assaulted them.
- A central police operation codenamed Hydrant collated all historical pedophile allegations involving VIPs.
- Heath raped a 12-year-old runaway at his flat in Mayfair, Central London, in 1961. The victim made a detailed statement to lawyers. Social workers called the victim a ‘fantasist’ when he tried to report the rape.
- Another man contacted Kent Police yesterday saying Heath raped him in the 1960s. ‘Detectives are making inquiries and will obtain a full account from the victim.’
- Jersey police said, ‘Heath is one of at least 13 “well known” politicians, celebrities and sports stars being looked at over decades of child abuse’ under *Operation Whistle* investigations of historical pedophilia.
- Jimmy Savile frequented Jersey care home *Haut de la Garenne*.
- Jersey Police’s Operation Whistle, launched in 2015, investigated 4 institutions, 45 suspects including 13 VIPs.

THE DUTROUX AFFAIR

In the 1990s, Catholic Belgium became notorious for the *Dutroux Affair*, a 1990s child sex trafficking scandal implicating Belgian Royals, politicians, bankers, businessmen, police and lawyers. WikiLeaks dropped a ‘Dutroux dossier’ showing clientele from European countries, plus Morocco and Saudi Arabia, paid to rape trafficked Belgian children. Belgian victim Regina Louf said VIP clientele were secretly filmed without their knowledge as part of a human compromise operation, ‘It was big business - blackmail - there was a lot of money involved.’[45] Belgian girls were kidnapped, caged, gang raped in pedophile orgies, and murdered for snuff films; they were tortured, ritually sacrificed, suffocating to death in holding cells, wrapped in plastic and buried alive, and killed for sexual pleasure.

Regina Louf was sold to the Belgian trafficking network by her wealthy grandmother, Cecile Beernaert, whose WW2 brothels serviced Nazi troops. Regina described being raped at sex orgies organised by businessman Jean Michel Nihoul who was later convicted of trafficking drugs and people into Belgium. Regina Louf and other Dutroux victims told police they were subjected to satanic ritual abuse and child hunts in which VIPs including Belgium Royalty hunted and murdered children for sport in locations including the grounds of Chimay Castle.

---

[45] Olenka Frenkiel (2002) Belgium's X-Files, BBC 2, 2 May, 7:15pm BST.

The Belgian government subsequently covered up the true nature of the Dutroux Affair. Evidence disappeared, numerous suspects were never investigated, and over 20 key witnesses were murdered.[46] [47] One witness was poisoned, and his wife incinerated in her bed.[48] No VIPs were charged, and a few low-level scapegoats were prosecuted, including Marc Dutroux and his wife who received lengthy sentences for starving two eight-year-old girls to death in their cellar. RTBF, a government-owned TV station, campaigned 'to prove that Dutroux was an *isolated pervert* kidnapping girls for himself, that there was no network, that Jean Michel Nihoul was innocent, and victim Regina Louf was a liar.'[49] VIP pedophile mouthpiece *The Telegraph* supported this angle from the UK.[50]

In 1996, a massive 350,000 Belgian citizens protest marched against the VIP child trafficking operation. Belgian fire fighters protested by turning their hoses on the Belgian Parliamentary building. One third of Belgians surnamed Dutroux legally changed their family name. Yet this all this achieved nothing.

Belgian sex trafficking victim Anneke Lucas came forward in 2017 in the wake of *Pedogate*. Anneke's mother sold her into sex slavery at age six years. For the next 5.5 years she was raped six hours per week by up to 200 pedophiles including Royalty. Anneke Lucas was subjected to torture, child murder, and satanic ritual abuse. From age six she attended weekly, late-night pedophile orgies held in mansions and castles during which she was 'used for an S&M show, on a low stage, chained up with an iron dog collar, and made to eat human faeces.' [51] Anneke said she and the other trafficked children were 'made to commit violence' against child victims so they felt too 'implicated' to inform police.

UK Prosecutes 'Fantasist' Victims for Whistleblowing

The UK's latest tactic to silence victims of government child trafficking is to prosecute them for reporting the crimes committed against them to the police. Their modus operandi involves the DPP charging victims with perverting the course of justice, while the government-controlled media slander the victims as a 'fantasists' who fabricates witness testimony for money. The UK government tried this on Ben Fellows, a former UK child actor and Westminster sex trafficking victim. Ben Fellows said his agent Sylvia Young solicited him at age 14 years for sexual abuse by Tom Cruise. Fellows was subsequently targeted for false arrest and slander by the media who described the victim as 'an inventive and sometimes persuasive fantasist.' In 2015, the UK government unsuccessfully prosecuted Ben Fellows for perverting the course of justice for providing a 2012 police witness statement to *Operation Fairbank*.[52]

---

[46] Olenka Frenkiel (2002). Belgium's silent heart of darkness, *The Guardian*, 5 May.

[47] Andrew Osborn (2002). Belgium still haunted by pedophile scandal. *The Guardian*, 25 Jan.

[48] *Irish Times* (2004). Dutroux trial to revive Belgium's trauma. 1 Mar.

[49] Frenkiel, above n42.

[50] Ambrose Evans-Pritchard (2004). Life for Dutroux and his wife gets 30 years. *The Telegraph*, 23 June.

[51] Jenny Awford (2017). 'THE BUTCHER'S BLOCK WAS BLACK WITH BLOOD' Ex-child sex slave Anneke Lucas reveals she was 'raped, tortured with a fishhook and almost stabbed to death after being sold into aristocratic paedo gang aged six.' *The Sun*, 19 Jan.

[52] Haroon Siddigue (2015). Court clears actor who accused Kenneth Clarke of sexual assault. *The Guardian*, 31 July.

Multiple victims who came forward and made police witness statements against elite UK pedophiles including Edward Heath were initially supported as 'credible and true.' In 2016, Westminster victim Darren Thornham used Twitter to warn of a coverup operation involving (a) a fake victim being planted to discredit the genuine ones, and (b) a cut-out media company (*Exaro News*) gathering testimonies from victims who were subsequently falsely arrested and murdered. Darren implicated Australian *60 Minutes* journalist Ross Coulthart in an elaborate media rouse. According to Darren's tweets, police beat him, threatened him with false arrest (for attending a 1992 rave at age 15 years with eight fellow sex trafficking victims) and threatened to raid and charge him for terror crimes along with victim Kevin Allen (brother of missing victim Martin Allen) whose family were also threatened. The UK media branded Darren a 'fantasist' after police charged him in 2016 for making false accusations against VIP pedophiles. Police eventually dropped the charges, according to Darren's final twitter post:

Darren Press Statement – 17.11.17

> *The false charge against me, which was downgraded from making hoax claims to wasting police time, has rightly been dropped. I have been subject to a terrifying ordeal of being attacked, stalked and threatened by individuals determined to get even with me for telling the truth about the sexual abuse I suffered as a child.*
>
> *The case has clearly shown serious misconduct by Suffolk police officers, who have ignored complex issues surrounding harassment and intimidation of myself. The case was part of an attempt by police and the wider establishment to silence me.*
>
> *I refute claims that I invented the allegations of child abuse committed by high profile offenders. On many occasions, the media have simply published lies as part of a campaign against me. Some media behaviour has bordered on harassment and bullying of a CSA* [child sexual abuse] *survivor. I was especially saddened and shocked to see certain people who claim to be CSA survivors on social media, as well as certain journalists, vilify me.*
>
> *The last nine months since my arrest have been very difficult for me. It has led to my being on the verge of suicide on more than one occasion. It is only the support of people very close to me that I did not ultimately kill myself…*

Darren's press statement inexplicably thanked the Exaro News journalist he criticised in numerous earlier tweets. Was Darren under duress?

TAVISTOCK PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATION

In 2019, after the UK government failed to prosecute high profile victims Ben Fellows and Darren Thornham, they made an example of a convicted pedophile who named Edward Heath plus the heads of MI5, MI6 and the Army, in a police witness statement. Nick was sentenced to 18 years prison – a disproportionate sentence compared to the lenience granted to pedophiles – for perverting the course of justice. Social media agents spread the discourse that this action against Nick was justified because he himself is a convicted pedophile. *The Telegraph* vilified Nick as a 'fantasist' who fabricated his witness testimony to get compensation – as though by extension ALL victims of government child trafficking are fantasists. Was this the plant Darren Thornham warned us of on Twitter?

Nick was used to discredit and bury numerous witness testimonies against PM Edward Heath, including six genuine victims who named Heath to police in SRA accusations. Nick's prosecution was an MI6-Tavistock Psychological Operation designed to sway public opinion, deter all other government child trafficking victims from making future police statements, and discredit the many Westminster VIP pedophiles that were reported to police 50 years before Nick's prosecution. This one successful prosecution does not erase the following 1969 and 1989 police investigations into the sex trafficking of government care children to Westminster pedophiles:

1. 1989 Police Investigation into Wales Boys Home Brothels

Scallywag magazine was published between 1991 and 1998. Issue 22 (1994) contained an article 'LORD MCALPINE AND THE PEDOPHILE RING' by Angus James which exposed the *Bryn Alyn Community*, a private company centred in Wrexham, Wales, which operated 11 children's residential homes. The *Bryn Alyn* organisation was a front for a massive international child sex trafficking and pornography business managed by scapegoat John Allen who was eventually convicted of 33 counts of child rape against 19 children. Allen prostituted foster children to VIPs who attended boy brothel houses located all over the UK including London, Manchester, South Shields, Gloucestershire, Wrexham, Brighton, plus Bordeaux, France. He also hired rent boys for members of the Wrexham Golf Club to rape. Allen also operated a child porn empire including a branch in Amsterdam and a Wrexham film studio where foster children were used to make pornography. John Allen's VIP clients included:

- **Lord Robert Alistair McAlpine** (Treasurer, PM Margaret Thatcher's Advisor. Formally cautioned in 1965 by Strathclyde police for committing a sexual offence against a child. He sued the media for outing him as a pedophile).
- **Gordon Anglesea** (Police superintendent and notable Freemason. He sued two national newspapers in 1994 for printing crimes he was eventually convicted for. In 2016, he died six weeks into a 12-year prison sentence for violently raping two boys in the 1980s).[53]
- **Lord Kenyon** (North Wales Police Authority Chair).
- **Wyn Roberts** (MP for Conway, minister for State at the Welsh Office).
- **Adam Mar-Jones** (son of film critic Justice Jones).
- **Sgt. David Morgan.**
- **PC David Rodgers.**
- **PC Peter Sharman.**
- **DC Gary Probert.**
- **Michael Portillo** (politician).
- **Peter Lilly** (politician).
- **Lord David Steel** (politician).

In 1989, Detective Superintendent Ackerley collected over **1,500 witness statements** during an internal police inquiry, yet his findings were buried, and key witnesses and investigators were physically assaulted. Alex Siddington (Welsh Coordinator for the *National Association of Young people in Care*) was beaten and had chemicals sprayed into his eyes. Gordon Anglesea's rape victim and key witness Steven Messham was beaten twice. The local BBC journalist who investigated the case for 18 months was burgled in retaliation.

---

[53] BBN News (2018). Gordon Anglesea: Jailed child abuse ex-police boss died of natural causes, 2 May.

2. 1969 Police Investigation into Rochedale Boy Home Brothels

Lord David Steele MP recently admitted to burying child abuse allegations that publicly emerged against politician Sir Cyril Smith in a 1979 *Private Eye* magazine.[54] In 1969, Lancashire police investigated Cyril Smith's sexual assault of young boys in Rochedale care homes. The inquiry ended in 1970 when prosecutors falsely concluded they had insufficient evidence to prosecute Cyril Smith. MI5 knew the DPP lied to journalists about their decision not to charge Cyril Smith but did nothing.[55] In *Smile for the Camera: The Double Life of Cyril Smith* (2014) Rochdale MP Simon Danczuk claimed Cyril Smith was allowed to continue abusing children as young as eight, after 144 victims' complaints were submitted to authorities.

This is not the extent of investigations into Westminster VIPs and UK children homes being used as VIP brothels. I will mention one more high-profile case, due to its international trafficking relevance:

NAMBLA & ARTHUR C. CLARKE

British science fiction writer Arthur C. Clarke co-wrote the screenplay for the 1968 predictive programming film, *2001: A Space Odyssey*. In 1961, Julian Huxley's UNESCO awarded Clarke the Kalinga Prize for popularising science. Clarke is famously quoted as saying, 'Any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic.' More significantly, Arthur C. Clarke was a gay pedophile who pioneered the Sri Lankan child sex tourism industry. The British Royals knighted Clarke just days after *Sunday Mirror* journalist Graham Johnson revealed Clarke admitted to having solicited young boys for sex. When Clarke subsequently denied this admission, the *Sunday Mirror* produced Clarke's taped admission plus a secret document naming Clarke as a pedophile known to members of the NAMBLA (*North American Boy Lovers Association*) pedophile network.

> *US detectives, who arrested leaders of the [NAMBLA] association 10 years ago, say Clarke was named by other pedophiles they quizzed during an FBI investigation. The perverts had set up children's homes in Thailand as fronts for their sick activities. One of its leaders was Jonathan Tampico, 48, a top nuclear scientist who worked for the American Government. He served two-and-a- half years in jail for molesting a boy of 12 and is now on the run with a million-dollar warrant on his head for further porn offences. He told detectives he had stayed at Clarke's home in Colombo and had swapped letters with the author. Another known pedophile, former church minister John Wakefield Cummings, 56, is serving a 24-years-to-life sentence after admitting molesting 17 boys in his care. He told police in Sacremento, California, that Clarke had been contacted at his Sri Lankan home by a pedophile who was on the run from the American authorities. In a sworn statement made to an investigator for Sacremento's district attorney…Wakefield Cummings told how the pervert fled to Sri Lanka where he*

---

[54] Rajeev Syal (2019). Lord Steel says he believed Cyril Smith abuse claims but did not act. *The Guardian* [Online], 14 March.

[55] Frances Perraudin (2017). MI5 knew prosecutors lied to press about Cyril Smith case, inquiry told. *The Guardian* [Online], 10 Oct.

> *was able to contact the pedophile community through Clarke. He then fled from Sri Lanka to Indonesia. Detectives contacted a child welfare group to warn them about Clarke's activities.*[56]

> Arthur C. Clarke said in the notorious interview: 'I am all in favour of efforts to stop [pedophilia]. But how do we stop it without interfering with the rights of responsible adults. I think most of the damage comes from the fuss made by hysterical parents afterwards. If the kids don't mind, fair enough.'

> *In recent years Clarke's name has been linked with two notorious pedophiles, one of whom - a Swiss millionaire - was kicked out of Sri Lanka on the orders of the president for abusing impoverished beach boys. He is now awaiting trial in Zurich accused of sexually abusing up to 1,500 young boys and like Clarke was friends with a lot of Sri Lanka's top politicians, senior policemen and influential government figures. Clarke is said to have attended parties at the tycoon's home. When asked if he had, Clarke replied: 'I may well have done. I mean the very first man I met here in 1954 was a pedophile and made no bones about it. He was in Intelligence in the army, a fantastic guy.'* [57]

Media mogul Rupert Murdoch stopped his UK newspaper *News of the World* from breaking the story that Arthur C. Clarke was a pedophile - because he was friends with the pedophile.[58]

COVERUP TACTICS

The UK government employed dirty tactics to cover-up the Westminster pedophile story. Similar tactics were implemented in Belgium, Australia and the USA:

1. Label outspoken victims as liars, fantasists, and/or insane.
2. Frame victims with false arrest for fabricated crimes.
3. Label concern about, and investigation of, pedophilia and ritual abuse crimes 'Moral Panic' or 'Satanic Panic.'
4. Label all inquiry into adult male pedophiles with a penchant for boys, 'homophobia' and an 'abuse of human rights.'

The gay community must be proactive in distancing themselves from pedophiles who long ago equated the fight for gay rights with the fight for social and legal acceptance of pedophilia. Being gay does not automatically make a person a pedophile. Yet many equate being gay with being a pedophile, thanks to PIE and NAMBLA members who aligned themselves with gay activist groups in the 1970s and '80s. NAMBLA participated in gay pride marches. USA VIP trafficking victim David Shurter provided me with insight into this issue, and I hassled him to write a book about child trafficking and his experience and understanding of the gay lifestyle he lived. Shurter's insights may help combat the trend where VIP pedophiles suddenly come out as gay in reaction to being accused of violently raping children. The tactic of masking pedophilia allegations with cries of 'Homophobia!' worked for decades in Australia, UK and the USA - until Kevin Spacey tried it mid *#MeToo* movement. Note that PIE and NAMBLA never disbanded, they simply dove underground and employed more subtle ways of achieving their perceived right to rape children.

---

[56] Tracey Schaverien & Roger Insall (1998). 'Smirk of a pervert and a liar; Police Probe Links Clarke to International Child Sex Ring.' *Sunday Mirror*, 8 Feb.

[57] Sunday Mirror (1998). 'It Doesn't Do Any Harm...Most of the Damage Comes from Fuss Made by Hysterical Parents.' 1 Feb.

[58] Graham Johnson (2012). *Hack: Sex, Drugs, and Scandal from Inside the Tabloid Jungle*. Simon and Schuster.

AUSSIE BANKS: CIA MONEY LAUNDERERS

Australia is in the process of two federal investigations, the *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse*, and the *Royal Commission into Misconduct in the Banking, Superannuation and Financial Services Industry*. Only one of these investigations has shed any light on the global child trafficking network. On 5 April 2018, Nicole Rose, the newly appointed head of AUSTRAC (*Australian Transaction Reports and Analysis Centre*) addressed the Australian media:[59]

> *I thought coming from the Australian Criminal Intelligence Commission that I had a pretty good handle on serious and organised crime side. I didn't appreciate the depth and breadth of involvement with private entities and banks. I didn't appreciate how many industries it does actually touch. There's a misperception that money laundering is a victimless white-collar crime that's probably just looking at tax avoidance - and it's not. It is criminal entities using financial institutions here and nationally to move criminal funds around our country and our financial system overseas. And it has a massive impact on everyday life. Whether that's child exploitation, serious and organised crime, drug importation - it all involves money laundering.*

The Commonwealth Bank of Australia (CBA) was subsequently fined $700 million for almost 54,000 breaches of anti-money laundering and counterterrorism financing laws, including the laundering of proceeds from child sex trafficking, and the channelling of these funds into overseas terrorist organisations. This massive criminal operation involved 27 different groups or cells, each of which accessed a CBA account. Each of the 27 accounts was used for money laundering by multiple, possibly hundreds, of criminals, with each individual depositing amounts of over $10,000 into the automatic tellers per sitting. Police obtained footage of people sitting at tellers at night with large bags of cash, patiently feeding notes into the IDMs (Intelligent Deposit Machines).

About 80 percent of CBA-laundered money was obtained via drug trafficking, while the remaining 20 percent came from child sex trafficking (namely by Fijian nationals operating in far north Queensland). The CBA sting operation incorporated the biggest illicit drug bust in Australian history. This massive Perth, WA drug bust went unreported in the Australian media. And that is not all the government covered up. AUSTRAC cut short their investigation and action against the CBA because if they continued, the laundering operation was so massive the CBA would have run out of money paying the appropriate fines.

The most telling cover-up regarding the CBA case is that, while the CBA as an organisation was fined, law enforcement authorities never prosecuted the individual CBA employees identified as responsible for masterminding the laundering operation. Those offenders simply left the CBA to assume senior executive positions within other organisations. Police prosecutors claimed they had insufficient evidence to prosecute the executives, when they in fact possessed ample evidence. I suggest the true reason the DPP did not pursue the individuals responsible for these crimes is because the perpetrators were CIA agents, and the CBA money laundering operation was part of the CIA-coordinated global child and drug trafficking operation.

---

[59] Peter Ryan (2018). New AUSTRAC boss Nicole Rose shocked by 'depth and breadth' of money laundering, *ABC News* [Online], 5 April.

As I write, Westpac and the NAB (National Australia Bank) are under AUSTRAC investigation for the very same crimes.

2020 Update

Subsequent mainstream news articles confirm the accuracy of my 2019 writings:

Westpac braces for record fine over AUSTRAC scandal
Clancy Yeates, *Sydney Morning Herald*, 14 April 2020

> *Westpac is setting aside enough money to cover what would be the biggest fine in Australian corporate history over a money laundering scandal that saw the country's oldest bank lose its chief executive and chairman. The bank on Tuesday said it had provisioned $900 million for its "potential liability" over the lawsuit launched last year by the financial intelligence agency, AUSTRAC...*
>
> *In its case against Westpac last year, AUSTRAC accused the bank of 23 million breaches of anti-money laundering and counter-terrorism finance laws, including failing to properly vet thousands of transactions that could be linked to child exploitation and live child sex shows in the Philippines and other parts of south-east Asia.*

One of the Westpac customers paid someone in the Philippines who was later charged with ‘live streaming of child sex shows and offering children for sex.’

* * *

ASIO, ANSTO & the REDRESS SCHEME

In 2018, the Australian government initiated a Redress Scheme where child abuse victims could apply for a maximum $150k compensation for being abused at the hands of one or more government and/or private institutions named as perpetrators to the *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse*. The Redress Scheme prevents victims from taking further action against the institutions. It is the responsibility of individual institutions to submit to the Redress Scheme. For instance, the Roman Catholic Church dioceses signed up, but the individual Catholic Orders including the Salesian Priests who operated BoysTown did not. Signing up is basically an admission of responsibility on the institution’s part and indicates that victims reported that institution to the Child Abuse Royal Commission. Scrolling through the list of institutions who signed up to the redress scheme, my therapist and I were shocked to read the names ASIO and ANSTO.

2020 Update

The CSIRO have subsequently signed up to the Redress Scheme. Further, two Redress Scheme employees (a lawyer and a counsellor) told me they each had *multiple* child abuse victims name ASIO, the Australian Army, and other government institutions in their claims.

So, while I am overtly labelled nuts for my testimony, the government is covertly silencing the numerous other victims of ASIO child sex trafficking with pathetic payouts.

* * *

BABYLON WILL FALL

'Babylon' is the Biblical name of the 'great city that rules over the kings of the world' (Rev. 17:18). Babylon was and is a global political, financial and religious power system that rules the world. It is the *Black Network*, the *Octopus*, the *Illuminati*, the *Luciferian Order* headed by the Rothschild dynasty, administered by pedophile government officials, and policed by the CIA, Mossad, ASIO and MI6. The Bible describes Babylon as follows:

- The kings of the world have committed adultery with Babylon. (Rev 18:3)
- The merchants of the world have grown rich because of Babylon's desire for extravagant luxury. (18:3)
- Babylon brewed a cup of terror for others. (18:6)
- Babylon bought great quantities of human slaves. (18:11)
- The merchants of the world became wealthy by selling human slaves to Babylon. (18:15)
- Babylon's merchants are the greatest in the world. (18:23)
- Babylon deceived the nations with her sorceries. (18:23)

The 'merchants' are the world's richest and most powerful merchant bankers who trade in 'human slaves' including child sex slaves. The 'kings' are the pedophile world leaders who are compromised via child prostitutes. The 'cup of terror' refers to the CIA-created terror organisations being used to force countries to submit to Babylon. Revelation guarantees that Babylon will fall. The destruction of Babylon and her Luciferian pedophile associates will be quick and complete. My existence and endurance testify to this fact.

* * *

Royal Whitewash

My views on [child abuse memories] are very similar to those expressed in Justice Wood's 1997 Royal Commission report on the NSW Police, in a chapter on paedophilia.

- Campbell W. Perry, MK-ULTRA psychologist

THE CATALYST

My private session with the *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse* was scheduled for 3pm, 26 June 2013 at an inner Brisbane City hotel. My husband and I sat waiting in a hotel room when a young lawyer rushed in to greet us. Her arms cradled the 22-page written complaint I electronically submitted to the Commission, and remarked:

'You're obviously highly educated!'

'No,' I corrected her. 'I'm highly intelligent. I received an abysmal education. I taught myself everything I know.'

The lawyer led us into an adjacent hotel room where two commissioners stood to greet us. Federal court judge Jennifer Coate sat opposite me at a large round table. Child psychiatrist Helen Milroy sat to my right. The young female lawyer took her seat to my left. Judge Coate presided over our meeting. She began, 'We've read your comprehensive submission. It's good that you submitted this beforehand otherwise we would be spending the entire hearing relaying its contents. We gained the impression that your submission contains a selection of what you experienced and that you know a lot more.'

'Yes,' I agreed. 'There's much more. I selected the incidents where I could best identify a time, date and place. I also compiled this -...' With two hands, I purposefully placed a fat, well-organised folder on the table.' It contains some evidence to back up my complaint. Sorry about the hand-written contents page. I would normally type and reference everything better than this, but I only had a few days' notice that I would be attending today.'

The Australian public was given the impression that private sessions were a positive, cathartic experience where victims got to share their abuse in a supportive, non-judgemental environment. My experience was different to that. The next two hours felt more akin to a cross examination. It seemed Judge Coate was looking for holes in my testimony.

'That's good!' retired Tweed Heads Detective Frank Natoli exclaimed. 'It means they took you seriously. They were seeing how you'd hold up under cross examination.' He concluded, 'This Royal Commission is giving victims a false sense of hope. They won't investigate their complaints.'

Detective Natoli was right. The first thing Judge Coate told me was, 'Fiona, we're not here to redress current victims' complaints. We're here to do something for future victims.'

But current victims ARE the future! I thought. *This is nothing but a collect-and-contain operation*. A wave of determination washed over my being. I asked, 'What do you plan to do differently to avoid the pitfalls of the last child abuse royal commission?'

Judge Coate was taken aback. 'We're just at the information gathering stage. We haven't yet decided what we're going to do next.'

'I imagine you're overwhelmed at the response so far.'

The three women collectively sighed. We spent the next two hours exploring three separate but related matters:

1. How the NSW Education Department and NSW Police conspired to bury a pedophile ring operating within my local Tweed Shire.
2. My experiences as a victim of an international child sex trafficking ring.
3. How dirty police, Australia's Psychology Board, and Bond University conspired to simultaneously frame me as (a) an adult perpetrator instead of a child victim of my abuse (in which case my child abuse claims were true), and (b) psychotic because I said I was abused as a child (in which case my child abuse did not occur).

'You're obviously not psychotic,' Professor Milroy observed. 'Fiona, your submission was impressive and unique. What you wrote about Elizabeth Loftus and false memory syndrome: we weren't aware of any of that beforehand.'

I reiterated the scientific invalidation of Loftus' pro-pedophile writings that formed the basis of the previous Royal Commission's dismissal of witness testimonies like mine. 'God help me if I see Elizabeth Loftus in your report!' I warned. 'You need to stop universities teaching this rubbish. You need to stop health practitioners automatically labelling child abuse victims borderline personality disordered. That condition is often just a symptom of child abuse and it's - . . .'

'Recoverable?' Milroy offered.

'Y-yes,' I stared at her like a stunned mullet. 'The symptoms dissipate as the victim recovers her memories.' I remounted my soapbox, 'You need to stop the latest tactic being used against child abuse victims. They're using a study which claims that child abuse victims are more likely to become perpetrators, as grounds for accusing victims of *being* perpetrators. They've already tried to frame me as a perpetrator based on being a victim – so you'd better nip that one in the bud!'

My right hemisphere rapidly scanned and analysed the words, body language, eye appearance and micro facial expressions of the three panel members, and drew its conclusion: *Milroy – empathic, intelligent, genuine, eye single, trustworthy*. So, when the hotel room turned a fuzzy white and voices became like a faint echo in a dark cave, I turned to Milroy, stared into her red teary eyes and confessed: 'I'm dissociating.'

Hold it together, I told myself. *You are here to give the children a voice*. I continued, 'Detective Bob Sullivan of the NSW child protection squad told me in 2005 that only a Royal Commission had the power to investigate the Tweed Shire pedophile ring. Well, we have a Royal Commission – so let's investigate!'

Silence.

'Are you going to investigate my complaints?' I persisted.

Judge Coate ignored me.

I seized the commissioner's eye and demanded: 'Yes or no! Do you have the power and authority to investigate my complaints?'

The commissioner squared her body to mine, smiled bemusedly and coolly responded, 'Yes.'

'Right! That's one point. Secondly, is it within your terms of reference to make recommendations based on your investigations?'

'Yes,' she responded just as smoothly.

'Right!' I ran my finger across their collective presence and warned, 'I'm holding you to that. Investigate my complaints!'

I shuffled through my folder of evidence and pulled out a document. 'I've included a newspaper article about my university lecturer who was recently charged with sexually assaulting two children. Bond University published his pro-pedophile writings on their website. It says here:

> *In his book Life of Crime,*[60] *Professor Wilson said that in the 'sizeable majority of incidents' adolescents were sexually provocative. 'My findings were remarkably similar to studies in California and Scandinavia which suggest child victims of adult sex offenders are generally willing or active participants, and that they not infrequently initiate the sexual relationship,' he wrote.*

The Commissioners gasped.

'This is what students are being taught in our universities?' I raised my voice. 'It's not acceptable!' My heart beat faster as I pulled out another document. 'This is an email sent to me from Tor Neilsen saying he witnessed sixty children raped in the very same location where I witnessed the same people committing similar crimes! Tor and I independently reported our experiences to the police!' My frustration peaked as I turned to another section of my folder and tore out an illustration of the Order of the Eagle ritual banner. 'Look!' I thrust it at them. 'Look at this! I am the first person in the world to come forward and publish this! This was erected at every major pedophile ring meeting! Other victims out there must recognise *this*!' I tossed the drawing on the table.

Silence…

Finally, Jon spoke, 'Let's remember that there are victims who couldn't be here today . . .' his voice broke as tears welled in his eyes, 'because they didn't make it.'

More silence.

I continued, 'I've put my neck on the line time and time again for others.' I lowered my head and fought back tears as I uttered words that caused me immense pain. 'I've never asked for anything for myself…' I struggled to continue. 'But I'm asking you now – investigate my complaints.'

Pause.

'Fiona,' Commissioner Milroy spoke softly and pointed to my folder of evidence, 'first we have to read that.'

Silence.

'Fiona, you're obviously highly intelligent - . . .'

'So *what*?!' I snapped. 'What's the use of having intelligence when institutions continually prevent me from using it?! My life has been destroyed! They've continually ruined my finances, my health, my reputation - and now all prospects of employment!'

Silence.

'Fiona,' Judge Coat asked, 'Do you have any final questions?'

'Yes,' I wiped my tears and straightened my posture. 'What am I allowed to share with the public regarding what I experienced here today?'

The judge shifted awkwardly in her seat, 'You can't repeat anything you heard here.'

'Show me the legislation.'

'What?'

'The legislation,' my tone strengthened. 'Get me the legislation that states what you just said.'

---

[60] Paul Wilson (1990). *A Life of Crime*, Scribe.

The young lawyer's eyes widened. She dove into a pile of folders. Minutes later she read out the relevant section.

'Now,' I told Judge Coate, 'interpret that for me.'

Following Coate's explanation, I sought clarification, 'So, I own anything that I stated here and can share that with whoever I choose?'

Judge Coate nodded, 'That is correct.'

'But Fiona,' Professor Milroy interjected, 'you may be tested on how much what you say you said here indicates what we said.'

'Thank you,' I smiled. 'That was my next question.' *Oh sure*, I thought. *As if the Royal Commission will spend public funds prosecuting a victim instead of investigating her complaints. What a great national news headline that would make.* 'You'll have to excuse my audacity,' I offered, 'but that is what has sustained me.'

'Oh no, that's fine,' they all agreed.

It was time to go. I shook Milroy's hand, peered deep into her brown eyes and expressed, 'Thank you. I know you're genuine.'

'Fiona,' Milroy implored, 'keep making submissions.'

I mournfully shook my head, 'What's the use?'

I met Judge Coate's handshake which was so firm I was reminded of the western ritual where men shake hands to establish dominance. I stared defiantly into her right eye and returned her grip with enough strength to make my point but without committing an offence.

As I exited the room, the panel members stretched, sighed heavily and exchanged looks which said, *that was intense!*

Jon and I had barely exited the room when he, grinning from ear to ear proudly exclaimed, 'Oh, Fi! Milroy would have employed you on the spot! *Well done!*'

We were escorted into yet another hotel room where a government appointed psychologist waited to debrief me. I engaged in half an hour of intellectual discussion before tiring of it. *You must let yourself break, Fiona*, my brain warned me. *You need to feel the emotion before you leave.*

'They're not going to do a thing,' I complained. 'This is a *whitewash!* And I *knew* it would be. I *knew* not to get my hopes up. But still I did. A small part of me hoped that there would be justice for me. I've never asked for much -. . .' I lowered my head as my whole being convulsed in emotional release. I wept sorely from some hidden chasm of despair. Minutes passed before I gathered myself enough to speak again. 'I just thought that maybe. . . just maybe. . . for once something might be done for *me.* But I was wrong. There's a part of me, buried deep within that's reserved solely for justice. That part of me opened today for the very first time, but it just got shut right back down again.'

I did not realise it at the time, but a poorly sutured invisible wound was tearing open. My session with the Royal Commission sparked a crazy chain reaction of events including going public, delivering a national press conference, re-entering intensive therapy, making police witness statements, speaking at an international conference, and writing this book.

* * *

AUSTRALIA'S 'SATANIC PANIC'

A tightly organised, mafia-style, hierarchically structured crime syndicate has infiltrated every aspect of Australian government and society including the judiciary, churches, law enforcement, military, child protection, hospitals, educational facilities, childcare centres, and Parliament. The network has numerous branches and countless members who profit from various illegal activities including drugs, arms and child sex trafficking. It is a well-oiled clandestine machine fuelled by public ignorance and distraction. Detecting members of this system and their tactics is like driving a new model of car: you suddenly notice all the other cars on the road of the same make and model.

Ritual Abuse (aka RA, Cult Abuse, Satanic Ritual Abuse, SRA) constitutes one facet of the child trafficking machine. The Australian media has reported on RA cases, although references are limited and difficult to locate. Reporting of these cases peaked in the mid-1990s during the Wood Royal Commission.

DAMAGE CONTROL PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATION

The CIA adopted a multi-pronged approach to bury the epidemic of SRA reports and control the Australian narrative. Here is a summary of their tactics:

- Establish a bogus investigation, to gather and contain victims and their evidence.
- Assassinate all network perpetrators who risked exposing the trafficking operation.
- Focus the entire scandal on a handful of outed, now conveniently dead, scapegoats.
- Muddy the waters by labelling the pursuit of pedophile crimes ‘homophobia’ and ‘moral panic.’
- Devise a bogus disorder to label and denigrate victims and their therapists with.
- Conduct bogus research to support the bogus disorder.
- Recruit dirty doctors and hired guns to defend the bogus disorder in the media and courtrooms.
- Create derogative newspeak to mock, devalue and discredit victims and their witness testimony; e.g., ‘conspiracy theorist’ and ‘hysterical.’
- Recruit agent journalists to promote the cover-narrative in the mainstream media.
- Support subsequent findings of bogus investigation with bogus disorder and research.
- Have perpetrator academics teach the bogus research and bogus disorder in universities to perpetuate the lie, deter future therapists from understanding the truth, and forever conceal the child trafficking operation.
- Restrict therapists from working with victims of extreme abuse, via new Health Board policy preventing such, and policing, which targets dissident therapists for deregistration.

PEDOPHILIA OBJECTION is *NOT* HOMOPHOBIA

‘Homophobia’ is the propaganda angle the CIA chose to defend and bury allegations of government involvement in child sex trafficking. Hence the CIA-infiltrated Australian media subtly shifted reader focus from revelations of ritual abuse and VIP pedophilia – to accusations of ‘homophobia’ and minority rights violations. VIP pedophiles routinely ‘came out’ as gay to distract attention from child rape allegations.

‘METAPHOR FOR INCEST’

Early 1990s disclosures of ritual abuse and mind control were labelled a ‘metaphor for incest’ by Australia’s most recognised DID expert Warrick Middleton. ‘Metaphor for incest’ is precisely what Gold Coast Hospital head psychiatrist Dr Flanagan parroted at me in 1991. Flanagan and Middleton worked together for the Queensland Health Department. In 1995, journalist Richard Guilliatt quoted Middleton in his article which cast doubt over the validity of ritual abuse testimony:

> *'I believe it is a metaphor,' argues Dr Warwick Middleton, a Brisbane psychiatrist specialising in trauma. 'It re-creates in the present a scenario that evokes the helplessness of the past.'* [61]

Warrick Middleton failed to provide any scientific research to back his opinion that victims' torturous PTSD flashbacks are merely metaphors. Metaphor is best treated by academia rather than psychiatry. Here is my critique of Guilliatt's 1995 introduction of the CIA's new narrative to discredit the wave of SRA reports:

> **Therapy in Turmoil: The Memory Controversy**
> Richard Guilliatt, *Sydney Morning Herald,* 1 February 1995.
>
> *In a bizarre modern phenomenon, hundreds of women are dredging up lost memories of childhood abuse involving blood, sex and devil worship. The accusations are criminal – but investigators have never proven a case of Satanic ritual abuse.*

[Persuasive, misleading reporting. WA police proved and convicted a case of SRA in 1991. Sydney investigators actively buried SRA reports.]

> *By the late 1980s, this phenomenon had spread to both Europe and Australia, most notably with the 'Mr Bubbles' case in Sydney, when staff of the Seabeach Kindergarten in northern Sydney were arrested and accused of occult sexual abuse. Therapists, private investigators and police began telling the media this was a problem of great consequence, and a four-part report on Channel 10 in late 1990 prompted police to form a taskforce…*
>
> *In Australia, the Mr Bubbles case collapsed from lack of evidence. Although the principal defendant in the Mr Bubbles case, Anthony Deren, later confessed to fondling adolescent girls earlier in his life, the evidence of occultism amounted to a handful of anti-Satanic books in his home and the fact that children at Seabeach chanted Ram-Sam-Sam, a common children's song…*

[Police sabotaged the case and omitted crucial evidence from court. The DPP prevented Professor Kim Oates (head of the Child Protection Unit at the Camperdown Children's Hospital) testifying that his hospital staff found 5 children were sexually abused at Seabeach Kindergarten. The children reported Luciferian chanting, not 'common' harmless preschool songs as the agent-journalist persuades the reader to conclude.]

> *Although Satanic abuse stories are not as common in Australia as in the US, one Sydney rape counsellor estimates from her contact with therapists that about 300 women in NSW are being treated for ritual abuse. That estimate is supported by the Herald's own calls to 'survivor' groups, therapists and sexual assault workers. Phoenix Van Dyke, the*

---

[61] Richard Guilliatt (1995). Therapy in Turmoil: The Memory Controversy. *Sydney Morning Herald*, 1 February.

> *organiser of the ritual abuse support group Beyond Survivors, says she has been in contact with more than 200 women who believe they are survivors. The Sydney Rape Crisis Centre has had more than 100 cases in recent years and one major Sydney hospital about 30.*
>
> *To believe these women, one would have to accept NSW has been permeated by brutal Satanic cults since at least the late `60s, a network of evil which has indulged in murder, prostitution, child pornography and other crimes without leaving evidence…*

[‘To believe’ is persuasive language. NSW Police buried the evidence, ambushed victims’ homes, removed kids from whistle-blowers.]

> *One middle-ground view of these stories is that satanic abuse ‘memories,’ although not literally true, may be a way for incest victims to symbolically represent the evil done to them. ‘I believe it is a metaphor,’ argues Dr Warwick Middleton, a Brisbane psychiatrist specialising in trauma. ‘It re-creates in the present a scenario that evokes the helplessness of the past.’*

[Middleton presented subjective opinion and did not substantiate it with scientific evidence.]

> *But others are beginning to view Satanic ritual abuse as simply a form of mass hysteria sparked by a confluence of events in the early 1980s – growing public alarm about child abuse, the rise of support groups and alternative counselling, the influence of Christian fundamentalism in the US and the popularity of ‘confessional’ TV chat shows such as Oprah, which have given unquestioning coverage to stories of Satanism.*

[Vague inference. There is no clarification of ‘others,’ their qualifications or associations. This is CIA propaganda aimed at swaying the reader’s opinion.]

> *Therapists are now grappling with the vexed question of whether Satanic abuse survivors are mentally ill people suffering delusions, vulnerable people influenced by their therapists or actual incest victims who have wildly distorted their abuse. If the latter is true, how many of their memories are reliable, and how can a therapist possibly determine what is fact and what is fantasy? Remarkably, however, this debate appears to be completely bypassing many of the therapists, child abuse workers and sexual assault counsellors who have banded together to combat ritual abuse. After years of exposure to abuse cases, these counsellors are adamant that there is nothing unbelievable about the vivid detail of the stories they are hearing, and many view the current debate as a ‘backlash’ against their cause.*

[The agent-journalist does not clarify how many and which ‘therapists’ he refers to, apart from Middleton who states an unproven opinion. He then introduces CIA concept that victims are ‘deluded,’ ‘fantasists,’ their memories ‘unreliable.’ He is using the NLP equivalent of writing, by repeating the word ‘unreliable.’]

> *Among some survivors and even therapists, the ‘backlash’ and the failure of police investigations are now cited as examples of the diabolical cleverness of Satanic cults,*

> *whose influence reputedly extends to the top of our society. 'It's very deliberately instigated by people who have an enormous amount to lose,' says Janet. 'I think it's much more than a backlash … it's actually orchestrated by ritual abuse perpetrators as a way of discrediting survivors.'*

[Repeatedly placing quotation marks around the word 'backlash' is designed to persuade the reader to disagree with the professional's testimony that she experienced a backlash.]

> *This view has been fuelled by allegations, currently under investigation, that NSW police have been bribed by pedophiles. One therapist claims to have seen infra-red Federal Police photographs of nocturnal forest rituals. A Child Protection Services official talks about covens meeting around Australia on certain days of the year. Even the official NSW Government booklet on ritual abuse – distributed to hundreds of health workers since 1993 – dismisses the growing body of contrary evidence as an example of society's collective 'denial.'*

[The agent-journalist's choice of the word 'fuelled' is subjective persuasive writing, not objective news reporting. His placing quotation marks around the word 'denial' again persuades the reader to disbelieve the therapist's witness testimony.]

Richard Guilliatt is still writing newspaper articles that subtly undermine the credibility of ritual abuse victims. His 2017 hit piece in *The Australian* targeted me.[62]

WOOD ROYAL COMMISSION

The 'investigation' referred to in the above article was the *Royal Commission into the New South Wales Police Service* (aka, Wood Royal Commission) which operated from 13 May 1994 to 30 Jun 1997. Justice James Roland Wood was appointed commissioner. The purpose of the investigation was to examine allegations of systemic and entrenched corruption within the NSW Police, namely that police were protecting pedophiles, and that some police were themselves involved in pedophile activities and ritual abuse. The Wood Royal Commission was to specifically examine multiple allegations of Satanic Ritual Abuse at Sydney's Seabeach Kindergarten.

The Wood Royal Commission was sparked by complaints from politician Diedre Grusovin regarding reports of a child trafficking network involving not just police, but politicians, churches, child welfare services, juvenile detention centres, the Education Department, media moguls, and entertainers. The trafficking operation involved the ritual abuse of children who were pimped to Kings Cross brothels. The following Legislative Council document (dated 10 October 1990, p.8046) recorded Grusovin's complaint:

> ***SATANISM***
>
> *The Hon. E.P. PICKERING: On 12th September Reverend the Hon. F.J. Nile asked a question regarding Satanism. The answer is as follows:*
>
> 1. *Yes.*
> 2. *No. The Hon. Deirdre Grusovin alluded to a network of pedophiles and said that established networks, such as Satanists, could also be involved in these practices.*

---

[62] Richard Guilliatt (2017). 'Those Events Never Happened.' *The Australian*, 30 September.

3. *I can assure the House that any allegations of child abuse or Satanism are and will continue to be thoroughly investigated by the New South Wales Police Service.*

WONDERFUL WOLLONGONG

Commissioner Wood chose Wollongong as his focus case because he had a big bloody mess to cover up:

> *For those whose memories do not extend back to the mid-1990s, Arena was a Labor politician in the NSW upper house, who gained national attention in 1996 when she named two people – retired judge David Yeldham and former state MP Frank Arkell – as potential pedophiles. At the time, a royal commission into the NSW Police Service headed by Justice James Wood was in full swing, but Arena and others believed it was not doing enough to look at people in high places. Along with fellow Labor MP Deirdre Grusovin, Arena promised to name at least two Sydney men in a parliamentary speech, and the next day asked why the commission had not investigated Yeldham or Arkell.*[63]
>
> *Ordinarily, such allegations would have been met with probably successful defamation actions, but Arena spoke with the protection of parliamentary privilege, protecting her from being sued. Her speech caused an uproar and both men denied being pedophiles. But before long, Yeldham was revealed to have lived a double life as a homosexual, and he took his own life on November 4, 1996. Arkell was horrifically murdered on June 26, 1998, a fortnight after another Illawarra man, David O'Hearn, was killed in equally brutal fashion in his Albion Park home. The perpetrator in both cases was a 19-year-old, Mark Valera, who claimed that both men had propositioned him sexually, and that he had been abused by his own father.*

Frank Arkell (Wollongong mayor), David O'Hearn (Wollongong shopkeeper), and Trevor John Parkin were ritually murdered. Parkin and O'Hearn were disembowelled. O'Hearn was decapitated and his severed hand used to draw an inverted cross, pentagram, and the word 'SATAN' on his walls.[64]

> ***Gareth Robinson***: *Wollongong's daily newspaper has been having a look. The Illawarra Mercury has published a series of stories about the secret lives of some of the city fathers, stories about a child sex ring, about priests and teachers abusing trust. There have been claims of satanic abuse, none ever proven,* [note the same subjective persuasive comment.] *and a string of convictions in the courts…The line of inquiry into Wollongong itself runs long and deep. What was revealed at the Royal Commission goes back many years, to another Mayor. He was Tony Bevan, a pilot, property developer, and one-time owner of Bevan's Real Estate Agency… There were complaints that Tony Bevan was having sex with young boys… Tony Bevan, who was known to offer boys the thrill of a ride in the plane he flew on regular shark patrols.*
> ***Victim***: *[Tony Bevan] started to take me up to the [Kings] Cross, which was during the week and every weekend.*

---

[63] Ian Kirkwood (2015). Franca Arena was Right on the Mark. *Newcastle Herald*, 30 October.

[64] ABC Radio National (1998). Wonderful Wollongong. *Sunday*, 30 August.

These men were part of the Luciferian pedophile network that ritually abused and sex trafficked boys to the Kings Cross brothels. Incidentally, I witnessed children dropped by air into the shark infested waters to deter others from whistleblowing against the CIA trafficking network.

‘FALSE MEMORY SYNDROME’

> *In 1993, Dr Corydon Hammond, a professor at the University of Utah’s School of Medicine, conducted a seminar on federally funded mind control experiments. Topics covered by Hammond included brainwashing, post-hypnotic programming and the induction of multiple personalities by the CIA. Hammond contended that the cult underground has roots in Nazi Germany, and that the CIA’s cult mind control techniques were based upon those of Nazi scientists recruited by the CIA for Cold Warfare. (Researcher Lenny Lapon estimates in Mass Murderers in White Coats that 5,000 Nazis resettled in the US after WWII.) Hammond was forced to drop this line of inquiry by professional ridicule, especially from the CIA’s False Memory Syndrome Foundation, and a barrage of death threats. At a recent regional conference on ritual child abuse, he regretted that he could no longer speak on the theme of government mind control.*[65]

MK-ULTRA child rapist and killer Martin Orne cofounded the *False Memory Syndrome Foundation*. The concept of ‘false memory’ was in fact the brainchild of Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, the US Army Intelligence Officer who headed Psychological Operations. In classic PsyOp style, Aquino appeared on Oprah dressed in theatrical pop-satanism garb, to muddy the waters after multiple children identified him as a Luciferian pedophile. Aquino was implicated in every major USA case involving CIA child trafficking, ritual abuse and MK-ULTRA mind control, including the McMartin Preschool, Presidio Preschool, and Franklin scandals.

Aquino and Orne’s *False Memory Syndrome Foundation* (FMSF) and its Australian counterpart (AFMA) were formed specifically to counter the tidal wave of disclosure by victims of CIA child trafficking and Project MK-UKLTRA which began in the 1980s and peaked in the early 1990s before the CIA effectively shut it down. The FMSF Board comprised of former CIA and military doctors with backgrounds in behaviour modification - not ritual abuse.[66] All members were accused pedophiles and/or CIA perpetrators. Like PIE, the FMSF offered legal support to accused pedophiles. Here are some facts about key False Memory associates:

USA ‘FALSE MEMORY SYNDROME’ FOUNDATION (FMSF)

Martin T. Orne (*Founder*)

- Senior CIA MK-ULTRA psychiatrist.
- Raped and murdered countless MK-ULTRA child subjects.
- Co-Director, *Unit for Experimental Psychiatry*, University of Pennsylvania.
- Editor in chief, *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis* (1961 to 1992).

---

[65] Alex Constantine (1995). *Psychic Dictatorship in the USA*. Feral House.

[66] Alex Constantine (1995). *Psychic Dictatorship in the USA*. Feral House.

- Experimented in hypnotic programming and dissolving memory.
- Defence psychiatrist (with Lois Jolyon West) for 1976 Patty Hearst trial.

Aaron T. Beck

- MK-ULTRA psychologist.
- Father of Clinical Psychology and CBT.

Elizabeth Loftus

- Conducted unethical bogus research, fabricated statistics, generalised narrow findings to population at large.
- Successfully sued twice for lying about child abuse victims.
- Avoided psychology deregistration by resigning.

Ralph Underwager

- Psychiatrist discredited in US courts.
- Told Amsterdam pedophile magazine journalist it is 'God's will' and 'responsible' for adults to rape children.
- Told British reporters in 1994 that 'scientific evidence' proved 60% of all women molested as children believed the experience was 'good for them.'

Hollida Wakefield-Underwager

- Ralph Underwager's wife.

Peter and Pamela Freyd

- Psychiatrists.
- Stepsiblings who married.
- Peter was sexually abused at age 11 and later prostituted himself.
- Accused of incest by their daughter.

Harold Lief

- Former Army Major in Medical Corps.
- Close colleague of Martin Orne.
- MK-ULTRA psychiatrist experimented with behaviour modification and hypnosis programming at the University of Pennsylvania's *Unit for Experimental Psychiatry*.
- Employed by the Freyds to retrospectively diagnose their adult daughter as a 'fantasist' for accusing them of incest, *after* he joined the FMSF, and when he was not Jennifer Freyd's doctor. He made this diagnosis after Jennifer had qualified as a PhD psychologist and university lecturer, and after she outed her parents during a 1993 conference presentation.

David Dinges

- Co-Director of University of Pennsylvania's *Unit for Experimental Psychiatry* with Martin Orne.

Margaret Singer

- Testified (with Louis Jolyon West and Martin Orne) in the Patty Hearst trial.
- Experts on cults and brainwashing.
- Investigated techniques used by North Koreans against American soldiers.
- Collaborated with CIA doctor Richard Ofshe.[67]

---

[67] R.J. Ofshe & M.T. Singer (1994). Recovered-memory therapy and robust repression: influence and pseudomemories. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, October, 42:4, 391-408.

Campbell W. Perry
- Australian hypnosis expert.
- MK-ULTRA psychologist.

AUSTRALIAN FALSE MEMORY ASSOCIATION

Michael Cox *(President)*
- Accused by daughter of sexual abuse.
- Convicted of raping two stepsons (his conviction was typically overturned on technicality).
- President CAFSA (*Citizens Against False Sexual Allegations;* CAFSA knowingly employed convicted pedophile Bob Dutton; CAFSA was supported by MK-ULTRA hypnotist Peter W. Sheehan.

Robert Stanley *(President)*
- Member *International Society of Hypnosis*.
- Deregistered by Psychology Board for having sex with a client who died shortly after.[68]

Graham Dene Burrows
- Order of Australia Medal.
- Authored books on hypnosis.
- Provided reference in failed attempt to reinstate associate Robert Stanley's psychology registration.
- Photographed hosting Martin Orne at his home on 22 August 1979.
- Victorian Medical Board reluctantly 'investigated' him in 2011 after the media reported they had received 100 complaints about him in three days.[69] (Used patient as guinea pig, resulting in suicide. Destroyed patient medical file to prevent investigation into his over-prescription of drugs causing kidney failure.)
- Retrospectively diagnosed father as mentally ill and so not responsible for throwing his four-year-old off a bridge.[70] (Criticised by presiding judge. Accused of concocting the evidence by MP who demanded the University of Melbourne sack him.)

Jerome Gelb
- Co-founded the AFMA in consultation with FMSF.
- Branded 'mentally unstable' after bringing a loaded handgun to court. A subsequent police raid found a cache of illegal weapons (800 rounds, guns, knives, cattle prod) stored in his home.[71]

Edward Ogden
- Worked for the Victorian Police Force (who were outed by Dr Reina Michaelson as Luciferian pedophiles).
- Said, 'Mind-control is a fantasy of the Cold War.'
- Involved in various drug experiments.

---

[68] Psychologists Registration Board of Victoria (2003). Hearing Re: Robb Stanley, 16 June.

[69] Lucie van den Berg (2011). Heat turns on Melbourne University Professor amid allegations. *Herald Sun*, 23 June.

[70] Selma Milovanovic (2011). Expert witness in Freeman case should be sacked: MP. *The Age*, 12 May.

[71] Renee Switzer (2007). Armed shrink 'unstable mentally.' *Sydney Morning Herald*, 3 February.

David Millikan

- ‘Cult investigator’ who said, ‘only middle-class people join cults.’
- Worked for the ABC with Nevill Drury.
- Co-authored ABC book with Drury promoting Christianity and New Age compatibility.
- Drury was a Luciferian and Shaman who took LSD at the *Esalen Institute*.
- Drury promoted Michael Aquino.
- Drury wrote the only authoritative biography of Rosaleen Norton, the notorious 1950s-60s ‘Witch of Kings Cross’ who worshipped Pan, Hecate, Lilith and Lucifer, and practised Kundalini yoga, out-of-the-body trance exploration, and Aleister Crowley’s Thelemic sex magick.

Jan Groenveld

- ‘Investigated cults’ with David Millikan.
- Daughter is a Satanic Ritual Abuse victim.
- CAN (*Cult Awareness Network*) member with MK-ULTRA US Army doctor Col. Louis Jolyon West (my perpetrator).
- Founded Australia’s *Cult Awareness Information Centre*.
- Trained in MK-ULTRA developed Neuro Linguistic Programming.
- Influenced by Steven Alan Hassan (CAN member mentored by NLP creator John Grinder).

Yolande Lucire

- Demonstrated a Scientology approach to psychiatric medication.
- Agreed to not administer psychiatric treatment to a Scientologist’s daughter who consequently killed her father.
- Member Australia’s *Cult Awareness Information Centre*.

PETER & PAMELA FREYD

The Freyds were stepsiblings who married. They coined the term ‘false memory syndrome’ in response to being accused of sexually abusing their daughter Dr Jennifer Freyd, a University of Oregon Psychology Professor who outed them at a 1993 mental health conference in Ann Arbor, Michigan. On 17 April 1995, Peter Freyd’s brother William wrote an open letter to WGBH-Boston, criticising the TV station’s inexplicable bias in favour of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation:

> *There is no doubt in my mind that there was severe abuse in the home of Peter and Pam…The False Memory Syndrome Foundation is a fraud designed to deny a reality that Peter and Pam have spent most of their lives trying to escape.*[72]

Ralph Underwager was a founding FMSF member. In June 1991, Joseph Geraci, Editor-in-Chief of the pro-pedophilia publication, *Paidika: The Journal of Paedophilia* interviewed Ralph Underwager in Amsterdam. During this interview, Geraci asked Underwager, ‘Is choosing pedophilia for you a responsible choice for the individual?’ Underwager responded:

> *Certainly, it is responsible. What I have been struck by as I have come to know more about and understand people who choose paedophilia is that they let themselves be*

---

[72] Valerie Sinason (2018). *Memory in Dispute*. Routledge.

> *too much defined by other people. That is usually an essentially negative definition. Pedophiles spend a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I don't think that a pedophile needs to do that. Pedophiles can boldly and courageously affirm what they choose. They can say that what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian and as a theologian, I believe it is God's will that there be closeness and intimacy, unity of the flesh, between people. A pedophile can say: 'This closeness is possible for me within the choices that I've made.' Pedophiles are too defensive. They go around saying, 'You people out there are saying that what I choose is bad, that it's no good. You're putting me in prison, you're doing all these terrible things to me. I have to define my love as being in some way or other illicit.' What I think is that pedophiles can make the assertion that the pursuit of intimacy and love is what they choose. With boldness, they can say, 'I believe this is in fact part of God's will.' They have the right to make these statements for themselves as personal choices. Now, whether or not they can persuade other people they are right is another matter.*

'MR BUBBLES' RITUAL ABUSE CASE

Ralph Underwager gave crucial evidence in Australia's notorious 'Mr Bubbles' case in which children were sexually and ritually abused while attending Sydney's Seabeach Kindergarten. Underwager was interviewed by Australia's *60 Minutes* in an episode, *Witness for Mr Bubbles,* which aired 5 August 1990. Reporter Mike Munro stated:

> *Six weeks ago (17 June 1990) we brought you a story that a number of people, including some in high places, wanted to keep secret: the case against Mr Bubbles. In that report, parents named Tony Deren as the man who had sexually assaulted their children. Deren's wife ran the kindergarten they attended. Tonight, we investigate another crucial aspect of this disturbing case. You remember, police listed seventeen young victims, and more than fifty (54) criminal charges were eventually laid. But when the Mr Bubbles case went to court, not one of the children was called to give evidence. The charges were thrown out, and Tony Deren was set free.*
>
> *One of the key Deren witnesses was a hired gun from the United States, a psychologist named Ralph Underwager, who says he's an expert in child sexual abuse. He testified that the children's evidence had been contaminated, and they were too young to know what the truth was… This is Ralph Underwager, psychologist. He was paid $25,000 and gave crucial evidence in favour of Tony Deren; evidence which helped Deren walk free… Always the same story: three and four-year-olds being lured into bubble baths with a man who sexually abused them.*
>
> **Professor Kim Oates**: *Having examined them, and talked with them, I'm absolutely convinced the children were sexually abused.*
> **Reporter**: *There's absolutely no doubt?*
> **Oates**: *No doubt at all*
> **Reporter**: *That's the evidence Professor Kim Oates wanted to give in court. But he was never asked. As head of the Child Protection Unit at the Camperdown Children's Hospital in Sydney, he's known around the world as an expert in detecting child sexual abuse.*

Reporter: *So, we have 18 children who were examined, five of whom your staff say were definitely sexually abused, and all of them from the same preschool. What's your reaction to that?*
Oates: *Well, I think if you look at the incidence of significant child sexual abuse in the community, significant enough to lay physical findings in the preschool age group, I think it's extraordinary.*
Reporter: *This is Debbie's medical report. Once again, it was positive; there was sexual abuse.*
Debbie's Mother: *I was entirely spun out on that because I, at that point, had been trying to tell myself that, no, this wasn't happening, it wasn't true, who would interfere with my child.*
2nd Child: *(wasn't identified): I put some things in his body, and he put some things in my body, but I didn't want him to.*
Reporter: *Cindy's medical report confirms she was abused. The doctor found signs consistent with traumatic dilatation of the anus… This is Boroko Court House, Port Moresby, New Guinea. In 1972, Deren was brought here, charged with the aggravated assault of two young girls. He'd interfered with them in a swimming pool. Something Deren admits. And both charges were proven. There's no doubt scores of questions remain unanswered in the Mr Bubbles case, and some of them relate to Ralph Underwager, the expert witness Tony Deren paid to testify on his behalf. Ralph Underwager was imperative to Tony Deren's defence. As a supposed independent expert, he testified that the evidence of the Bubbles children had become contaminated. And, they were too young to understand their duty to tell the truth. But, here in America, we've certainly discovered Underwager's reputation and credentials aren't all they're cracked up to be.*
Dr Salter: *Well, he is someone who makes his living going around the country and testifying against children in child sexual abuse cases. He says the same thing in essentially every case. Which is every…*
Reporter: *And Anna Salter knows what she's talking about. A PhD from Harvard, and a master's degree in Early Childhood. She says young children can be believed.*
Dr Salter: *This is consistent with the literature. If you look at what is the best legal textbook in the country today on children as witnesses, 'Child Witness: Theory and Practice,' Malcolm Meyers says clearly children as young as three can comprehend the duty to tell the truth.*
Reporter: *And this man is a highly respected legal scholar in America?*
Dr Salter: *I think he's fairly clearly the chief leading scholar on child sexual abuse in the country.*
Reporter: *Six American states have given Dr Salter a grant to check Underwager's methods in court. And what did she find?*
Dr Salter: *That he isn't accurate. That what he says in court does not necessarily fairly represent the literature.*
Reporter: *He distorts the facts?*
Dr Salter: *Uh, frequently. Sometimes he quotes specific studies, and he's frequently wrong about what the studies say.*
Reporter: *So, we thought we'd get Dr Salter to analyse the evidence Underwager gave under oath at the Mr Bubbles hearing, where he testified his qualifications had never*

> *been questioned. But in an American case, the Swann case, this is what the courts said about Mr Underwager.*
> **Dr Salter**: *The court remains convinced the psychologist did not have the qualifications to testify as a doctor. The trial court ruled that the psychologist's proposed testimony was not proper because there was no indication that the results of the doctor's work had been accepted in the scientific community.*
> **Reporter**: *In the Mr Bubbles case, he said his qualifications were never in question… Now, the second incident, in the Mr Bubbles case, was where Underwager said that 90 percent of accusations against child molesters are wrong. Now, is that backed up scientifically?*
> **Dr Salter**: *No, that's gobbledegook. I don't know of any study that would support that…*
> **Reporter**: *Ralph Underwager was hired to defend Polly's father. And as usual, he testified that nothing had happened. It was all a delusion, and Polly had simply made the whole story up. But then, Underwager was cross-examined by Polly's lawyer, Eric Vaughan.*
> **Lawyer**: *He used the theory that it was a delusion of the child that she was doing a favour for the mother by saying this happened when it really didn't happen, to gain the favour and to be the apple of the eye of the mother.*
> **Reporter**: *A delusion that she was continually raped over four days.*
> **Lawyer**: *That's right.*
> **Reporter**: *The jury took only an hour to decide Polly Barnes was telling the truth, and that Ralph Underwager's testimony that nothing had happened, could be ignored. In fact, Underwager's evidence was rejected so much, the jury awarded Polly three and a quarter million dollars… So, while Underwager was being rejected here in America, he had no such trouble at the Mr Bubbles hearing in Australia where he testified that the children were too young to tell the truth… Ralph Underwager has testified for the defendants in about 400 child abuse cases.*

WOOD RC COVERUP

The *Royal Commission into the NSW Police Service Final Report* was published on 1 May 1997. Three volumes of this report were devoted to pedophilia inquiries. Volume Four, Chapter 5 (pp.99 -116) were solely devoted to the subject of Ritual Abuse. At the end of this chapter, Commissioner James Wood concluded:

> *5.13 From a common sense perspective, while it must be recognised that apparently respectable and successful members of the community do commit child sexual abuse, a quantum leap in credibility is required to suppose that they would do so in the bizarre, ritualistic way described, which includes the infliction of serious, even fatal, injury and mutilation upon their own children.*

James Wood's examination of Ritual Abuse amounted to a blatantly biased white washing. Wood devoted the entire content of *Chapter 5* of his report to discrediting victims, parroting critics' unscientific reasons for why Ritual Abuse does not exist in Australia, excluding the evidence for Ritual Abuse's existence, and listing alternative possible reasons – none scientifically evidenced – for the epidemic of SRA reports in Australia. James Wood's list of alternative explanations included:

- Mental illness
- Substance abuse history
- Urban legend
- 'Metaphor for incest'
- Lying to get compensation
- Exposure to ritual themes in books, film or television.

Concerning the last point, Forensic Psychology academics told my post graduate class the media do not influence people's thinking and behaviour. Horror movies, violent video games and rock music do *not* influence people to commit heinous crimes. By contrast, Wood claimed film and television influence people to believe that heinous crimes have been perpetrated *against* them.

In his *Final Report*, Commissioner Wood declared that Ritual Abuse does not exist from a law enforcement perspective because:

1. *Rarely, if ever, are bodies of the 'victims' or their graves found, nor do neighbours, friends or relatives report children missing in the numbers required to account for the allegations;*
2. *there is rarely, if ever, any evidence of the kind which can be confirmed by modern forensic technology;*
3. *signs of physical injury in the form of scarring, burns and the like, are not found upon medical examination of 'victims' who report torture of the most extreme and prolonged kind; more often than not the medical examination fails to confirm the abuse as alleged;*
4. *in cases of criminal conspiracy, inter-group jealousies or disputes inevitably develop and throw up an informant. In cases of RA, this rarely if ever occurs. Similarly, a co-conspirator who is otherwise in trouble, and prepared to supply information in return for an immunity or assistance in sentencing, rarely emerges;*
5. *again, contrary to experience with child sexual abuse generally, most of the offenders are reported to be females;*
6. *although many 'victims' claim that photographs are taken and videotapes made of the activity, visual records of the kind are rarely found, nor does the large amount of child pornography in circulation portray the bizarre and ritualistic activities described; and*
7. *so many people tell the same story and allege the involvement of so many others in the events that it is difficult to see how there could not be independent evidence, or knowledge of it on the part of persons outside the alleged rings.*

I will address James Wood's seven points:

1a. Bodies and graves are indeed found. Police and doctors who are part of the trafficking Network write bogus reports to coverup the deaths. I witnessed Leonas Petrauskas write a fake death certificate saying a child was stung by a blue bottle, to cover Paul Keating's crime. When I made a witness statement to Terry Frost at Tweed Heads Police, he said my accounts matched numerous 'unsolved murders' in the Sydney areas I named, and he would urgently send my statement to Sutherland detectives.

b. Most bodies are disposed of. I witnessed bodies being fed to dogs, cremated in factory furnaces, dissolved in chemical pools, and thrown from a helicopter into the ocean.

Bodies are commonly fed to pigs (Paul Keating had a pig farm). I am sure you can think of a few other ways of disposing of dead bodies. Just watch TV for inspiration…

c. Most child murder victims are bred by cult members and slave breeders for the purpose of ritual sacrifice. Their births are never registered. Many children are legally stolen from parents via Child Protective Services. Thousands of babies were stolen from 'unfit' mothers and 'adopted.' Many children are trafficked by pedophile parents, and when the innocent parents find out and report the matter to police, dirty cops write bogus reports against the innocent parents who subsequently lose custody of the child victims. I later received a call from a lawyer who told me the Sutherland detective in charge of my case covered up the sex trafficking of her client's son in this manner.

d. My cult grandparents' neighbour who resided at 12 McAlister Ave was also a cult member. His obese wife 'committed suicide' after she had a nervous breakdown following the multiple 'cot deaths' of her young children. I witnessed one of these 'cot deaths' when I was five years old. The preschool boy was ritually sacrificed by the neighbour and my step-grandfather in the front room of the neighbour's house. Leonas Petrauskas wrote the death certificate.

2. Again, there certainly is evidence. Network members in positions of authority routinely fabricate circumstances surrounding victims' deaths. Doctors and police routinely falsify death certificates and police reports. Take for example the 1986 murder of Sallie-Anne Huckstepp by dirty cop Roger Rogerson who protected the Sydney child trafficking operation that James Wood investigated. Sallie-Anne was writing an article about the Sydney child trafficking network when Rogerson's contract on her was fulfilled. Sallie-Anne was found dead in Sydney's Centennial park. The usual police coroner was not on duty the day police were called to Sallie-Anne's body. The substitute officer arrived and was instructed to record the death as suicide by drowning in a pond. The honest police officer noted struggle marks on Sallie-Anne's arms and wrote the death up as suspicious. This led to an investigation during which the officer gave what he thought was a confidential testimony; however, by the time he arrived back at his station, everyone knew what he had just said. He was consequently victimised, traumatised, and transferred 1000 kilometres away to Murwillumbah police station. Yet NSW police continued to hound the man; they raided his home multiple times in search of grounds for charging him - such as a pencil taken from work. The clean cop was forced to retire from the police force. He withdrew to a farm out the back of Mount Warning and never recovered from the trauma of what the corrupt NSW cops did to him. So, if that is what accidentally emerged because a good cop happened to be on duty on the wrong day, imagine what convicted murderer Roger Rogerson's minions routinely covered up every other day?

3a. As part of their Order of the Illuminati practises, bloodline victims like me must not be physically flawed or scarred, and sacrifices must be without blemish. My abusers were experts at administering torture techniques, including electrocution, that do not leave physical evidence. It is possible to beat someone in the gut through a phone book to hide superficial evidence of the beating, a traditional police method.

b. Some victims do carry scars, but police and medical staff do not believe victim accounts of how these were acquired. DID victim Jennifer Haynes (who made history when her dissociative parts were granted permission to testify in court) appeared on *60 Minutes* (26 May 2019) to discuss her horrific child abuse. Her physical scarring is so severe she wears a colostomy bag and can never have children. Yet her testimony was 'consistently faced with ridicule and disbelief.' (Note that during the initial show trailer, Jennifer mentioned being subjected to 'ritual abuse' – yet *60 Minutes* subsequently edited this out of the broadcasted episode.)

c. Any leakage of physical evidence is routinely covered up. I accidentally suffocated during a ritual and was transported to Sutherland Hospital for resuscitation. To cover for the incident, my perpetrators told hospital staff one of the cult members was my mother, and duped medical staff release me into her care.

4. The notion that an informant would voluntarily step forward is the most ridiculous point on James Wood's list. Like the mafia, pedophile ring membership is a life-long commitment. As the famous *Hotel California* song says, 'You can check out any time you like but you can never leave.' At six years of age, deep in the National Park, I witnessed the fate of a 'traitor' who tried to leave the pedophile ring. Each of the man's four limbs was tied to a different vehicle. The four vehicles then accelerated in opposite directions. I certainly was reluctant to talk after being made to watch *that*.

5. I witnessed male and female ritual abuse perpetrators, and believe me, the women were as debauched as the men. However, a disproportionate number of men were involved in my abuse, and in the abuse of the numerous other ritual abuse victims who contacted me.

6. As for Wood's reference to an alleged lack of videotape and other evidence, consider the 2004 disappearance of the video evidence that Dr Reina Michaelson submitted to the Victorian Police Commissioner. The video footage featured men in Victorian Police uniform raping preschool children at a Mornington Peninsula childcare centre. The video footage 'disappeared' in police custody. Reina told me she was subsequently slapped with a 'D-Notice' on the grounds that what she knew about the government's involvement in child trafficking could undermine the public's confidence in the government.

7. When examining ritual abuse from a law enforcement perspective, James Wood ignored the following ritual abuse case which preceded his 'investigation' by three years:

> **CHILD SEX ABUSE LINKED WITH SATANISM: POLICE**
> David Humphries, *Sydney Morning Herald,* 13 March 1991
>
> *PERTH: Perth police say they have proved a link between organised child sex abuse and devil worship, following the conviction on Monday of a young man on 22 charges of indecent assault and dealing and of evil intent. The head of WA's child sex abuse unit, Detective-Sergeant Roger Smart, said the conviction of Scott Brian Gozenton demonstrated the link. Satanic practices 'and the associated abuse perpetrated on children is prevalent in the United States and Britain and no-one can now doubt that the link can be made here,' Sergeant Smart said.*
>
> *Gozenton, 20, pleaded guilty to all charges and was remanded until April 5 for sentencing after the District Court was told that 13 witchcraft covens operated in Perth. Judge Kennedy was told that Gozenton had been a victim of sex abuse as an eight-year-old and had been recruited as a teenager into a satanic cult where adults practised bizarre sex with each other, their own children and teenage recruits. The more bizarre and perverse the orgies, the closer cult members felt to the Devil, Gozenton's barrister, Mr Mark Trowell, said. 'The real villains are those individuals who visited their perversity on this young man,' Mr Trowell said. Gozenton was a tragic result of sexual abuse perpetrated by a school caretaker against himself and six other boys for three years. Shame prevented him from revealing his 'terrible secret' and he*

> *became introverted, rebellious and distant from his parents. 'At the age of 14, he was approached by a school chum about a new family where rebellion was encouraged and someone like this young man could get a sense of belonging,' Mr Trowell said. He said the coven was attended by about 20 adults of both sexes, their young children and the teenage recruits. Rituals were both homosexual and heterosexual, he said.*
>
> *His client had recognised cult members at earlier hearings but had refused to identify them for fear of reprisals, Mr Trowell said. 'These evil people kept this young man under their spell and direction for four years while these offences against him were committed. He…was instructed to establish a junior coven for the purpose of recruiting junior members from school and the Scout group with which he was associated.'*
>
> *Mr Trowell said the initiation rituals mostly involved touching of genitals and, apart from three charges of oral sex were 'not unduly perverse.' The evil design charges related to attempts to recruit others into the cult, where Gozenton had the code name of Death. He said Gozenton had been seeking to extricate himself from the Satanists, established a stable relationship with a woman and improved relations with his parents and did not deserve a jail sentence.*
>
> *Mr Chris Drew, for the Crown, said the charges against Gozenton were 'extremely serious' and that jail was the only option available.*

THE DEVIL MADE ME DO IT

Royal Commissioner James Wood also ignored the Australian *60 Minutes* episode that aired in the late 1980s called, *The Devil Made Me Do It*. It aired one year after an episode, *Satan's Children,* in which a 15-year-old English girl Teresa detailed her experience of Ritual Abuse. Reporter Ian Leslie presented both episodes. *The Devil Made Me Do It* involved a discussion panel including Senator Fred Nile plus two former coven pedophile ring members, a young man from Sydney and a young woman from Adelaide. The Adelaide woman was under police investigation for her involvement in criminal activities (including the ritual murder of babies) which, she said, were committed on campus by a coven comprised of University of Adelaide staff and students.

ELIZABETH LOFTUS: CIA PSYCHOLOGIST

Royal Commissioner James Wood used the gangrenous writings of CIA psychologist Elizabeth Loftus to dismiss multiple witness accounts of organised pedophilia and ritual abuse. Wood's *Final Report* referenced Loftus' 1994 book, *The Myth of Repressed Memory: False Memories and Allegations of Sexual Abuse*, to support his conclusions:

a. 'False memories' of Ritual Abuse can be artificially created as a result of third person suggestion,
b. A victim of Ritual Abuse can't experience dissociation and repression of traumatic memories, and
c. Ritual Abuse victims are female 'attention-seeking' hypochondriacs whose flashbacks may be attributed to overly zealous female therapists.

Loftus' 1994 book was not a scientifically conducted, peer reviewed research publication. It was just a book.

At the time of her 1994 book release, Loftus had published one study relevant to her 'false memory' theory, an experiment which examined university students' memory for films of car accidents.[73]

In 1995, Loftus co-published the notorious *Lost in a Shopping Mall* study.[74] [75] [76] [77] [78] Loftus' assigned University of Washington postgraduate student James Coan as chief co-investigator for her mall study. Subjects' family members were asked to provide James Coan with three true childhood stories about the subjects, and to describe a typical family shopping trip. Based on the shopping trip descriptions, a false story was created for each subject about getting lost as a child during a shopping trip. Subjects were told their family members said the events 'had happened.' The subjects were asked to repeat the stories and to try and remember more details. Finally, the subjects were told that one of the memories was false and asked to choose the false memory.

Elizabeth Loftus conducted and published this research before receiving ethical approval for the study. Loftus added a second interview plus another evaluation scale to the research protocol long after the study was approved on 10 August 1992.

James Coan reported in his 1993 honours thesis that only 6/24 subjects completed the study, and zero subjects created a false memory.[79] [80] Crook and Dean (1999) analysed Loftus' data and discovered only 2/24 subjects likely completed the study.[81] First year psychology students are taught, a minimum of n=10 subjects is required for valid statistical analysis. So, Loftus blatantly lied when she reported: 'Of the 24 total, 19 subjects correctly chose the getting-lost memory as the false one, while the remaining five incorrectly thought that one of the true events was the false one… These findings reveal that people can be led to believe that entire events happened to them after suggestions to that effect.'[82]

The raw data from the shopping mall study were subpoenaed by defence attorneys in *Burgus v. Braun*. Loftus successfully obtained a gag order for her fraudulent data. The case settled on 31 October 1997 and the data returned to Loftus.

Elizabeth Loftus published another lab experiment in 1996.[83] This examined, 'whether imagining events from one's past can affect memory for childhood events.' A total of 38 undergraduate psychology students (young female university students studying the same course) participated in the study for course credit. Loftus asked the students to imagine described events such as tripping over or falling through a window.

---

[73] E. Loftus & J. Palmer (1974). Reconstruction of Automobile Destruction. *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behaviour*, 13, 585–589.

[74] E. Loftus & J. Pickrell. (1995) The formation of False Memories, *Psychiatric Annals*, 25, 720-725.

[75] L.S. Crook & M. Dean (1999). 'Lost in a shopping mall' - A breach of professional ethics. *Ethics & Behavior*, 9:1, 39-50.

[76] L.S. Crook & M. Dean (1999). Logical fallacies and ethical breaches. *Ethics & Behavior*, 9:1, 61-68.

[77] James A. Coan (1993, August 18). Creating false memories. Senior paper, Psychology Honors Program, University of Washington, Seattle.

[78] James A. Coan (1997). Lost in a Shopping Mall: An Experience with Controversial Research. *Ethics & Behavior*. 7. 271-84.

[79] James A. Coan (1993, August 18). Creating false memories. Senior paper, Psychology Honors Program, University of Washington, Seattle, p16.

[80] James Coan (1997). Lost in a Shopping Mall: An Experience with Controversial Research. *Ethics & Behavior*. 7. 271-84.

[81] L.S. Crook & M. Dean (1999). Logical fallacies and ethical breaches. *Ethics & Behavior*, 9:1, 61-68.

[82] E. Loftus & J. Pickrell. (1995) The formation of False Memories, *Psychiatric Annals*, 25, 720-725.

[83] M. Garry, C. Manning, & E. Loftus (1996). Imagination Inflation: Imagining a Childhood Event Inflates Confidence that it Occurred. *Psychonomic Bulletin & Review*, 3:2, 208-214.

The characteristics of Elizabeth Loftus' samples made it inappropriate for her to generalise findings from her studies to the population at large. And yet Loftus drew conclusions from these severely flawed studies about the reliability of child abuse memories, and the possibility that a parent or therapist could create false memories of child abuse in a person who has experienced trauma of the most severe kind. Loftus basically equated a psychology student's experience of watching a car crash film or imagining themselves falling over – with real life accounts of being systematically raped and tortured throughout one's development. That is beyond preposterous.

Elizabeth Loftus' conclusions failed to hold up under cross examination. In 1994, Lynn Crook successfully sued Loftus. Lawyer Barbara Jo Levy asked Loftus, 'If you are asked to testify about your experiments of implanting false memories, would you use those first six?' Loftus replied, 'No, I don't think I will use the first six' (Transcript, p.61).

In December 1995, two women filed ethics complaints against Elizabeth Loftus with the *American Psychological Association*, claiming she had misrepresented their successful recalled-memory lawsuits to the media. Loftus resigned from the APA in January 1996, so the APA dropped their investigation.

A *Washington Post* article entitled, *In the Sharon Case, a Grilling to Remember* (27 October 2006) described a damning cross examination of Elizabeth Loftus:

> *But when Fitzgerald got his chance to cross-examine Loftus about her findings, he had her stuttering to explain her own writings and back pedalling from her earlier assertions. Citing several of her publications, footnotes and the work of her peers, Fitzgerald got Loftus to acknowledge that the methodology she had used at times in her long academic career was not that scientific, that her conclusions about memory were conflicting, and that she had exaggerated a figure and a statement from her survey of D.C. jurors that favoured the defence.*

In 2003, Nicole Tau successfully sued Loftus for invasion of privacy. At age six years, during a videotaped interview by a medical doctor, Tau had accused her mother of child abuse. Tau subsequently forgot her abuse but spontaneously recalled it at age 17 years. Corwin and Olafson (1997) published an article about the case, favouring the notion that repressed memory of childhood abuse can be recalled. Elizabeth Loftus set out to discredit Tau by hiring a private investigator to locate Tau. The PI lied to Tau's family by pretending to be Corwin's research assistant. Loftus subsequently published an article based on the PI's interviews with Tau's family in which she identified Tau as a victim of crime. Tau filed an ethics complaint against Loftus in 1999 with the University of Washington who upheld the complaint.

During a 2013 TED Talk about memory, Loftus intentionally misrepresented the basic facts of Nicole Tau's case by saying it was about a 'woman' who 'accused her mother of sexual abuse based on a repressed memory.' Loftus knowingly omitted crucial facts of the case: that Tau was six years old when she made the report, then forgot the memory, and then spontaneously and accurately recalled the memory 11 years later at age 17 years.

CIA INFILTRATED AUSTRALIAN THERAPY INDUSTRY

A 1994 FMS newsletter documented the influence the CIA pedophiles had on Australian therapists. The following is a letter to the FMA from Jerome Gelb (the psychiatrist who took a loaded handgun to court):

> ***NEWS FROM AUSTRALIA***
>
> *The Australian False Memory Association has now been formally organized. The links between the AFMA and Australian professionals seem strong and the fact that the Australian Psychological Society* [APS] *has already established guidelines for recovered memory situations indicates a positive and determined approach by professionals to deal with the problem.*
>
> *A letter from Dr Jerome Gelb, a psychiatrist in Australia, affirms this optimism. He states, 'I am writing to keep you up to date with events in Australia regarding FMS and Recovered Memory Therapy. Australian Psychiatrists are, apart from very few exceptions, fully aware of the iatrogenesis of so-called repressed memories, MPD and Satanic Abuse. The Royal Australian and New Zealand College of Psychiatrists has been helpful in publishing on the issue.'*
>
> *Dr Gelb mentioned the television and newspaper articles that have recently appeared in Australia noting that they understand the iatrogenic nature of some memories. Dr Gelb said that he had published a detailed letter to the Editor in the December 1994 RANZCP Journal of Psychiatry and that the journal of Australasian Psychiatry, Vol 2, No 4, August 1994, pp 179-180 had published his article, 'Reality Revisited.'*
>
> *Dr Gelb went on to write that, 'I feel that public opinion in Australia is supportive and the media is also. Most importantly, Australian Psychiatrists are almost universally wary of American therapy fads and are highly critical of poorly trained therapists and the inappropriate use of suggestion, persuasion and memory recovery techniques of all kinds. Please let your membership know of these developments.'* [84]

* * *

CIA-DICTATED APS RECOVERED MEMORY GUIDELINES

The APS *Guidelines Relating to Recovered Memories* were introduced on 27 October 1994. According to the 1994 US FMS newsletter, the APS *Guidelines Relating to Recovered Memories* were adapted from a book written by MK-ULTRA hypnosis researchers Australian Peter W. Sheehan and Kevin M. McConkey which was based on their hypnosis research.[85] Kevin McConkey and Peter Sheehan then presented their views at the 28th Annual Congress of the Australian Society of Hypnosis. Their presentation paper was subsequently published.[86] Presenters at that same conference included the usual suspects:

- **Graham D. Burrows** (Chairman, Board of Education, Australian Society of Hypnosis)

---

[84] FMS Foundation Newsletter (1994). 1 November, 3:10.

[85] K.M. McConkey & P.W. Sheehan (1995). *Hypnosis, Memory, and Behaviour in the Forensic Setting*. Guildford.

[86] K.M. McConkey & P.W. Sheehan (1998). Recovered memory, hypnosis & professional issues. In B.J. Evans & G.D. Burrows (eds) *Hypnosis in Australia*, 263-282. Australian Society of Hypnosis.

- **Wendy-Louise Walker** (trained at Sydney University by MK-ULTRA Martin Orne)
- **Jeffrey Zeig** (Rented out Disneyland for two nights for the Psychotherapy conferences at which Milton Ericson & Carl Rogers trained attendees in their MK-ULTRA methods.)
- **Barry J. Evans** (MK-ULTRA trained under Martin Orne at Sydney University).
- **Greg J. Coman**, University of Melbourne, co-authored books with Barry J. Evans.

Note that the 2019 Annual Congress of the Australian Society of Hypnosis featured a workshop in '*Shamanic healing through altered consciousness*' to 'explore the Lower, Middle and Upper worlds that a shamanic journey can take one to. Each level represents an area of consciousness…' I did that workshop too – at age six.

Peter Sheehan (Australian Catholic University) and Kevin McConkey (University of NSW) both conducted hypnosis research with MK-ULTRA psychiatrist Martin T. Orne.[87] Kevin McConkey was the current APS President, and his hypnosis book was currently in press, when the APS introduced their *Guidelines Relating to Recovered Memories* that he co-authored. Here are the key points from APS *Guidelines Relating to Recovered Memories* that stopped Australian psychologists acknowledging the existence of ritual abuse and mind control, and treating victims of extreme abuse, for the following 25 years:

- *Memories can be altered, deleted, and created by events that occur during and after the time of encoding, and during the period of storage, and during any attempts at retrieval.*
- *Although some clinical observations support the notion of repressed memories, empirical research on memories generally does not. Moreover, the scientific evidence does not allow general statements to be made about any relationship between trauma and memory.*
- *The available scientific and clinical evidence does not allow accurate, inaccurate, and fabricated memories to be distinguished in the absence of independent corroboration.*
- *Assumptions that adult problems may or may not be associated with repressed memories from childhood can't be sustained by available scientific evidence.*
- *Psychologists should be alert to the role that they may play in creating or shaping false memories.*
- *Psychologists should seek to meet the needs of clients who report memories of abuse and should do this quite apart from the truth or falsity of those reports.*
- *Psychologists should explore with the client the meaning and implications of the memory for the client, rather than focus solely on the content of the reported memory.*
- *Psychologists should be aware that research is needed to understand more about trauma-related memory, techniques to enhance memory, and techniques to deal effectively with childhood sexual abuse.*

Let me place things into perspective: The men who wrote these APS Guidelines trained under Martin Orne who, according to US Congressional witness testimony, raped, tortured and murdered children in the name of national security and psychological research. Here is my retort to the above points:

---

[87] M.T. Orne & K.M. McConkey (1981) Toward convergent inquiry into self-hypnosis, *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 29:3, 313-323.

- There is zero scientific evidence to support the claim that mainstream therapists can create false memories. Only MK-ULTRA doctors possess the knowledge and military technology to radically alter memory. Memories can only be deleted during and after encoding using unethical hypnosis, illicit drugs, torture, and cutting-edge medical procedures.
- ‘False memory syndrome’ is not a recognised mental health condition, has no clinical history or symptomology (when Repressed Memory has both) and does not feature in the DSM.
- A range of studies using various methodologies across cultures support a causal relationship between trauma and dissociation (alterations in memory and identity). One research team found, ‘strong empirical support for the hypothesis that trauma causes dissociation, and that dissociation remains related to trauma history when fantasy proneness is controlled. We find little support for the hypothesis that the dissociation-trauma relationship is due to fantasy proneness or confabulated memories of trauma.’ [88]
- The APS basically ruled that unless the therapist can find a third-party witness to the abuse, they should not work with - or even acknowledge as substantially true - the client’s abuse memories. The APS should apply the same rule for every experience a client brings to therapy, otherwise that is bias. Courts consider an individual’s witness testimony a form of evidence, yet the APS does not. Perpetrators are adept at concealing their crimes and eliminating witnesses, a fact the APS ignores.
- Genuine belief in a client’s testimony is essential for establishing rapport and eliciting client trust. Therapists can’t possibly meet the therapeutic needs of Extreme Abuse victims unless they believe and understand the abuse account. A client will trust sufficiently to disclose their abuse details, and therefore integrate, only once they perceive the therapist sincerely believes them. Empathy and belief can’t be feigned toward hypervigilant high IQ victims.
- Victims will never process and heal from extreme childhood abuse unless therapy focusses on the actual abuse memories, including the thoughts and feelings experienced during the childhood trauma incident, instead of what the adult victim presently thinks and feels about their memories of Extreme Abuse.

LOFTUS LEGACY IN AUSTRALIA

Elizabeth Loftus was discredited, professionally disciplined, and successfully sued in the USA for her blatant lack of ethical conduct and unscientific methodology. Despite this, Loftus’ unproven opinion regarding memory: (a) was the basis for Royal Commissioner James Wood’s dismissal of multiple independent reports of Ritual Abuse; (b) provides the Australian blueprint for dismissing the nature and existence of extreme child abuse within mental health, education, and forensics; and (c) underpins all psychology teaching and educational texts in Australia. Most Australian psychology textbooks are American imports. Mine were. A 2014 study examined three undergraduate psychology textbooks and found, all three concluded that child abuse memories are likely false.[89] All three textbooks referenced Loftus' writings. Owing to this unfounded and illogical embracement of Loftus' opinion:

---

[88] C.J. Dalenberg et al. (2012). Evaluation of the evidence for the trauma and fantasy models of dissociation. *Psychological Bulletin*, May 138:3, 550-88

- Australian universities and educational materials teach psychology students that most child abuse memories are false, and repressed trauma memories are particularly unreliable.
- Regulatory bodies deter psychologists from acknowledging the validity of repressed child abuse memories and working with implicit trauma memories.
- Australian psychology students receive no training in the Trauma Model approach.
- Australian therapists receive zero training in recognising or treating ritual abuse and mind control.
- NSW Victims of Crime counselling services forbade the use of scientifically validated, effective tools like EMDR for processing implicit abuse memories (until I publicly accused them of withholding treatment). A therapist can only use EMDR if they tape the sessions; yet this is not required for other, less effective treatment modalities.
- University criminology lecturers do not teach future Australian law enforcement officials that child trafficking is run as a single, integrated global operation.

FAILED WOOD ROYAL COMMISSION

During a 1997 parliamentary hearing, Senator Fred Nile addressed the Mr Bubbles case and the Wood Royal Commission's mishandling of it as follows:

> **The Hon F Nile**: *I seek the indulgence of the Attorney General. I wish to ask him a question without notice. Why did the children who attended the Seabeach Kindergarten, of the Mr Bubbles case notoriety, receive more than $500,000 compensation? How is it possible that the Government of New South Wales, through the Victims Compensation Fund, is able to pay compensation to the children who were at the Seabeach Kindergarten even though the Wood Royal Commission refused to make any findings about the case and the Director of Public Prosecutions was unable to successfully prosecute the perpetrators of the alleged assaults?*

Government officials subsequently deemed the Wood Royal Commission a 'failure.' In May 2002, the *House of Representatives Standing Committee on Legal and Constitutional Affairs* conducted an inquiry into crime in the community. An excerpt from *Volume 2* of their Report (published August 2004) reads:

> *Almost immediately, the Committee received substantial submissions covering all aspects of the Inquiry. From New South Wales came very serious allegations of corruption in New South Wales policing, including allegations of protection of pedophiles, 'doctoring' of police statistics, corruption of the newly introduced promotions system for duty officers, the failure of the Wood Royal Commission and the systemic failure of bodies set up to investigate such issues. Instead of being applauded for seeking remedies, the whistle-blowers received punitive treatment…*

---

[89] B. Brand & L. McEwen (2014). Coverage of Child Maltreatment and its Effects in Three Introductory Psychology Textbooks. *Trauma Psychology*, Fall, 8.

SUBSEQUENT CASES

Reports of organised pedophilia and ritual abuse continued to surface in multiple locations around Australia, following the failed Wood Royal Commission and the subsequently established *Police Integrity Commission* also headed by James Wood. Here are some case examples:

1. **Brisbane ABC, CJC Pedophile Network**

Senator Bill Heffernan stated in the Australian House of Parliament (29 May 1998):

Recently I made a speech in which I highlighted the code of silence which protects worldwide child sex networks; in particular, Australian pedophile networks. These networks include people in the judiciary, parliament, clergy and the Public Service. Many of these people live in an abhorrent culture in which is included as a 'spoils of office' the right to have sex with children.
These people put themselves at continual risk of serious compromise in their workplaces as perpetrators, as too do those people who knowingly ignore or turn a blind eye to this ultimate betrayal of our children. Honourable senators should be concerned at recent developments involving the Criminal Justice Commission, the body set up to investigate official corruption in State after the Fitzgerald inquiry. One of the senior members of this body, Mr Bob Hailstone, a former priest and manager of the ABC in Brisbane, and director of the corruption prevention division of the CJC [Criminal Justice Commission] has left the CJC in what could only be called exceptional circumstances.

In November last year a State police pedophilia task force raided Hailstone's house at 31 Dudley Street, Bardon and took possession of a great deal of obscene material. Last week Eric Goh, a man who lives with Hailstone at 31 Dudley Street, appeared in the Brisbane Magistrates Court on charges of possessing for sale indecent or obscene material. These charges raise serious issues of concern.

I have in my possession a letter which I will now read into the public record, and which records disturbing incidents alleged to have occurred at Mr Hailstone's house. The letter was written by a man, Mr Phillip Wood, shortly before he died. Hailstone recently resigned from the CJC rather than face disciplinary charges including association with an inappropriate person. It seems to me that the whole period of Hailstone's service with the CJC should be examined, particularly as this body has failed in the past to investigate pedophilia allegations. The letter written to a Brisbane solicitor reads as follows:

Dear Malcolm,

This is my account of the incident on 30th June 1996. On 30th June 1996 I attended a luncheon party at the home of Mr. Robert Hailstone, 31 Dudley Street, Rainworth. In attendance were a total of fourteen persons, including Mr. Robert Hailstone – it then mentions a second and third person – the others I either didn't know or can't remember their names. During the course of the luncheon, some of the guests and the host were talking about having sex with young Asian boys, especially during their holidays in

Thailand. This conversation was somewhat disturbing to me as I regard pederasty as anathema, but I said nothing. Later on, the conversation was about the church and their involvement in it, some of the group having been to church that day.

This triggered a hostile reaction in me, and I asked them how they could be involved in an institution that so vocally condemns homosexuality. This prompted an outburst of abuse by one of their number to me, with me responding by calling them a bunch of churchgoing pedophiles and saying that they should be outed (meaning to publicly expose them).

I then left the house. As I was reversing out of the driveway (there were a number of cars parked there) I clipped the wing mirror of one of the cars. This bought the lot of them out onto the driveway, shouting abuse and kicking the driver's side of my car breaking the driver's side window. I was bleeding from the broken glass and being physically attacked by a number of persons. In an attempt to escape I reversed into a tree and drove into the side of a car parked in the driveway. In the melee that followed one of their number managed to turn off the ignition of my car and remove the key. I was then left alone in my car whilst they huddled together a few metres away. I used a spare key and drove out of the driveway. I was covered in glass and blood and very shaken up, but I drove to my home in Victoria Point without incident. I had arrived at the luncheon at approx. 12:15 pm and arrived at my home at 3:30 pm.

Mr Robert Hailstone, who is a director of the CJC had stated to me on a couple of occasions that he could have anyone in Queensland arrested on a trumped-up drug charge. With this in mind, I was afraid to report the incident to the police. I paid for the repairs to the side of my car ($920) and made two separate claims to the NRMA insurance company for the damage to the front ($2785.18) and rear ($870.89) of my car. I hope that this account is comprehensive enough.

Yours Sincerely,
Phillip J. Wood

Madam President, this letter was dated 8 November 1996. Mr Wood was found dead in his home on 10 November 1996.

* * *

2. NSW Central Coast Coven

EVIL IN THE WOODS

Miranda Wood & Martin Chulov, *The Sun Herald,* 8 Aug 1999, p7.

The Police Integrity Commission is probing a shocking series of allegations that pedophiles have been protected by police and officials entrusted to care for the children. Police have uncovered evidence of central coast sites used in satanic rituals, to which drawings made by children who claim to have been abused, bear an eerie resemblance. One mother's traumatised child tells of adult groups hanging him from

> *a cross, killing animals, performing sexual acts on cult members and watching orgies. A child from a separate family, who does not know the other child, tells an identical story.*
>
> *The Sun-Herald has seen evidence of the rituals.*
>
> *One mother, Genevieve, who has fought a four-year campaign to have authorities probe her claims said her case was similar to 33 other cases reported to the Department of Community Services. Medical evidence has proved that both Genevieve's children have been abused. 'I'm coming across more and more women who tell the same story,' she said. 'I've spent years trying to get help for my children, but there are people who don't want this to come out. As he comes to feel safer, he has given more detailed explanations of what has happened to him and his brother. They held laser lights in their eyes to disorientate them. They were locked in basements and they had to watch each other being abused. He couldn't have possibly made all of this up.'*
>
> *Genevieve said the boys had told her the names of those who assaulted them, and they could recall seeing at least 30 people at rituals in the bush. She said she believed the cult's rituals had been passed through generations of satanic covens. 'My son can recognise members in the street and he even knows their names,' she said. The children called the bushland site 'the woods.' They would take long walks through the bush and it was always at night. The ceremonies were held at night,' Genevieve said.*
>
> *The drawings by each child also show the same violent acts and symbols used by the cult. One of the symbols Genevieve's son drew was the same symbol on the ceremonial table police have taken a photo of at the bushland site.*
>
> *Genevieve said the children were afraid to tell of the ritualistic abuse after cult members threatened to kill them and their mothers. Cult members also told them a bomb in their stomach would explode if the truth was revealed - a trait associated with worldwide satanic covens. Genevieve said her son could also remember being drugged and hypnotised. 'He said they dressed in black robes and had eye and mouth pieces cut out,' she said. 'I know they're pretty dangerous people. I have had warnings outside the house telling me to stop investigations. We're fearful for our lives. The boys never want me out of their sight.'*
>
> *She is now battling to let the truth come out and protect other children from a fate similar to that of her sons. Genevieve said: 'It's an absolute nightmare. You try to get help and you have the door slammed in your face repeatedly. I'd do anything to stop this from happening again. After a while they make you feel as though you dreamed it all up. The laws and the attitudes need to change.'*

Commissioner James Wood headed the organisation (Police Integrity Commission) which investigated this case, which subsequently went nowhere. Are the victims and witnesses now dead?

3. National ALP Pedophile Network

SA Parliamentary Speaker of the House, Peter Lewis, stated (1 April 2005):

> *There are a large number, but not a high percentage, of people in high places and positions of trust who take it for granted that they can indulge their sexual appetites for children of both sexes so long as they arrange to cover it up and get away with it… It's a national problem and MPs involved seem to know each other.*

On 4th April 2005, Peter Lewis resigned his position as Speaker of the South Australian Parliament. He resigned amidst allegations that certain ministers and journalists thwarted his attempts to expose high-end pedophilia rings by reducing his concerns about pedophilia to 'homophobia.' Lewis stated during his parting speech:

> *I…was quietly, and as quickly as possible, bringing some of the people who had made the allegations to the point where they might pluck up enough courage and confidence and swear the truth of those allegations, enabling them to be more carefully investigated. But they were being 'bumped off'- that is, murdered and viciously assaulted – quicker than I or the people who were helping me could get them to write down their allegations and then swear that what they were saying was true…*
>
> *The most outrageous thing of all…is…what appears to be the related and organised activities of those pedophiles in high public office – that is, the judiciary, the senior ranks of human services portfolios, some police and MPs, across the nation, especially within the ranks of the Labor Party.*
>
> *Yet you only have to recall in recent years the investigations, charges and successful convictions against such people as Darcy, Liddy, Wright, Wells, a former senator and other current and past MPs in Queensland, New South Wales, and Victoria to understand my concern. They have not acted alone or in isolation, it seems to me…*

It is not surprising that we find [pedophiles] in the jobs and roles of leadership.

* * *

4. Melbourne Priest Luciferian Pedophile Ring

In 2006, the Catholic Church's Melbourne diocese acknowledged as 'substantially true' allegations that a priest took part in ritual murders in the 1960s and paid compensation to a surviving victim.

PRIEST DID 'RITUAL KILLING'

Gary Hughes, *The Courier Mail,* 26 May 2006.

> *A Catholic priest took part in satanic murders and rituals that included child sexual abuse. The Catholic Church's Melbourne Archdiocese has accepted claims about the rituals as 'substantially true' and paid $33,000 compensation to a man who was a victim of the rituals as a child. The archdiocese's independent sexual abuse investigator, barrister Peter O'Callaghan, QC, described the details of the ritualised*

murders and sexual abuse provided by the victim as 'extraordinary… but I have no reason or justification for doubting his credibility,' Mr O'Callaghan said in a letter to the victim's lawyers in 2000.

Earlier during a formal interview with the victim, Mr O'Callaghan said he was satisfied the man was telling the truth.' I see no reason why I shouldn't accept what you say,' he said. 'Amazing as it is, I accept it…'

In a sworn statement given to the archdiocese, the victim said he was first abused by the priest in Melbourne in the early 1960s, when he was serving as an altar boy at the Sacred Heart Church in Sandringham. The priest has since died. In his statement the 56-year-old victim, who wishes to remain anonymous, gave details of at least three deaths – a young woman, a young man and a child – that occurred during satanic rituals over a number of years. *Two victims had their throats cut and a third was killed with an axe. Animals were also killed during the ceremonies. 'I have some gruesome memories of killings,' the victim said…*

The independent compensation panel made a $33,000 ex-gratia payment to the victim in 2001 after his claims had been investigated by Mr O'Callaghan. The archdiocese is paying for counselling for the man, who has been diagnosed as suffering from complex post-traumatic stress disorder.

* * *

'EXTRAORDINARY' CLAIMS TRUE: CATHOLIC CHURCH

Gary Hughes, *NEWS.com,* 26 May 2006.

The most extraordinary thing about today's allegations of murders during satanic rituals involving a Melbourne priest is not that they've been made, but that the Catholic Church admitted in writing that it accepted they were substantially true. Indeed 'extraordinary' was the word used by the Melbourne Archdiocese's experienced sexual abuse investigator Peter O'Callaghan QC to describe the allegations when they were put to him in 2000…

The statement provided to the Archdiocese by the victim, who wants to remain anonymous, makes chilling reading. He details how the Catholic priest, who has since died, first began abusing him at the age of 11 in 1961 when he was serving as an altar boy at the Sacred Heart Church in the bayside suburb of Sandringham and attending a Catholic school, where the priest was chaplain. The priest got the victim alone in a room on the pretext of giving him a sex education lesson and sexually abused him. Later the priest would sexually abuse the boy in his car and at the Sacred Heart Church's presbytery, where the victim was lured on the promise of playing with toy soldiers.

But it's the accounts of satanic rituals and the victim's eyewitness reports of murders that are harrowing. In the statement he details at least three murders – a young girl, a youth and a young child. He says the victims were mostly drugged and appeared to

> *be in a daze before having their throats cut or being hacked with an axe. He says he was forced to take part in the rituals and was sexually abused during them by the priest and others involved in the ceremonies.*
>
> *While claims of satanic rituals and ritualised sexual abuse by victims are nothing new, what makes these allegations different is the Melbourne Archdiocese's acceptance of the claims as being true. To our knowledge, it is the first time the Catholic Church in Melbourne has done that in writing.*
>
> *Some of the rituals, which occurred over a three-year period, took place in an old house owned by the Catholic Church in Sandringham. The house was later demolished, and a new Sacred Heart Church built on the site. . . Other rituals took place at other locations around Melbourne. The victim would be driven to and from the locations by the priest. The victim said during one of the final sexual assaults by the priest he was threatened with a carving knife and told he would be killed if he ever talked to anyone about what he had seen or what had been done to him.*
>
> *The victim first contacted Victoria Police in 1998 and was told details would be passed to the homicide squad. He says he heard nothing more . . .*
>
> *In a letter to the victim dated January 5, 2001, the then head of the Melbourne Archdiocese, Cardinal George Pell, apologised for the 'wrong and hurt' he suffered at the hands of the priest.*
>
> *The victim's decision to speak out follows the conviction in the United States earlier this month of Catholic priest Gerald Robinson for the ritualistic murder of a nun. He said he believed there were other victims of ritualised abuse in Australia who were too afraid or embarrassed to speak out. Robinson was charged with the murder of the nun 26 years ago after a female victim of child sexual abuse went to authorities with claims that the priest had been involved in satanic rituals.*

The victim in the two articles is James Shanahan. Cardinal George Pell, who signed the (5 January 2001) letter of apology to James, was one of James Shanahan's Luciferian pedophile perpetrators.

5. Bathurst, NSW Police and Clergy Pedophile Network

In 2008, a decade after the Wood Royal Commission ruled that Ritual Abuse does not exist in Australia, the greatest Ritual Abuse scandal in Australia's history broke into mainstream media. The following two newspaper articles refer to this case:

> **CHANTING, SPELLS AND SEX ORGIES AT ST STANISLAUS COLLEGE**
> Gemma Jones, *Herald Sun,* 27 Aug 2008.
>
> *POLICE are investigating claims that up to 40 boys were sexually abused by a pedophile ring of priests and teachers at an exclusive NSW school… A former priest at the school has been charged with 33 counts, a former teacher has already been convicted of several offences and two other teachers are under investigation.*

> *In his first interview, a brave young man who used the internet to expose the abuse revealed the full extent of the horror at the school. He is one of two victims who have told The Daily Telegraph how they were herded into a prayer room by a priest chanting 'hypnotic' spells in tongues. Inside the prayer room, the boarders who attended the school in the 1980s said they were subjected to horrendous sexual abuse or forced to assault each other…*
>
> *A former boarder now aged 35, who can't be identified because of a court suppression order, started at St Stanislaus in the '80s because it was the only private school in the area his family could afford. He alleged the abuse began after a priest took him aside for private tutoring about the Catholic Church and God two months after he arrived at the school and the horror turned into a twice-weekly event. 'They got a group between eight and 12 of us together and they'd just start chanting and I would wake up during these sessions and see what was going on,' he said. 'It was like an orgy.'*
> *The second victim, who declined to give permission to be named, yesterday described the horrific night-time prayer sessions in the staff's quarters under candlelight. 'You'd pass out … they spoke in tongues … another element was called laying on hands, that was the basis on which he would engage in physical contact,' the victim said. He said the students were all small in stature and many of them emotionally troubled. 'I know of people who have been contacted, they said, 'Yes, you're right but I haven't told my wife what happened to me I'm not going to tell you guys (police),' he said. Police last night confirmed 13 alleged victims had already come forward.*

* * *

Abuse at St Stanislaus College 'Involved Night Orgies'
Angus Hohenboken, *The Australian,* 28 Aug 2008.

> *ORGIES involving up to 60 schoolboys, priests and teachers are among allegations levelled at former staff members of a NSW Catholic boarding school. The Seven Network last night reported claims that nine former teachers and priests from St Stanislaus College in Bathurst, in eastern NSW, had committed sexual abuse on students during 'hypnotic' night prayer services in the 1980s.*
>
> *An alleged victim, whose identity was withheld for legal reasons, said the number of victims involved in the encounters had grown over time. 'It started out on a one-on-one basis and then in small groups of between eight and 12, and then on one occasion there was a large group of at least 60...'*

The victim whistle-blower was Tor Nielsen. The group of 60 Tor referred to were 60 children raped during a Luciferian ritual in Bathurst City Hall. This pedophile orgy was attended by visiting NSW police officers who boarded at St Stanislaus College during the famous Bathurst car race.

SUSPISCIOUS ST STANISLAUS DEATHS

Tor Nielsen did a letter drop in Bathurst to expose the pedophile ring. Consequently, his lawyer who failed to silence Tor 'fell' from an eighth story apartment. Another witness died under suspicious circumstances, the day before he was due to testify in the pedophile trials. The deceased was a lawyer and a former St Stanislaus College student whose son attended the school. He worked at Frederick Jordon Chambers in Sydney. One morning, the chambers clerk found the lawyer hanged to death by his tie from a bookshelf in the basement. He was not suicidal. Staff witnessed him in a normal mood and working on one of his cases, thirty minutes before his time of death. Although attending police considered the death suspicious, it was later ruled a suicide.

6. Brisbane, Queensland

Brisbane Grammar Counsellor Ritually Abused Students, Royal Commission Told

Joshua Robertson, *The Guardian,* 4 Nov 2015.

A counsellor at a prestigious Queensland private school ***ritually hypnotised*** *students before masturbating them, slapping them in the face and putting acupuncture needles in one child's genitals, the royal commission into institutional responses to child sex abuse has heard. The scores of alleged victims of Kevin Lynch at Brisbane Grammar school included a boy who was sexually abused in a grief counselling session given after learning his father had committed suicide…*

One alleged victim of Lynch, known only as BQK, told the commission that the counsellor's 'treatment [was] built around his convincing me that I could harness the power of my orgasms to gain an edge' in studies and sport. 'He would regularly masturbate me to the point of ejaculation and sometimes would make me ingest my own semen,' he said. Lynch also slapped the boy in the face to 'psyche me up about winning a metaphorical race. Other times he would use acupuncture needles and put them into my testicles or stick his thumb in my anus,' BQK said. BQK told the commission he 'assumed this was a normal treatment method' and did not appreciate he had been seriously abused until 'well into my adult life.'

He said he could not understand why Grammar staff had not questioned why Lynch operated out of a room that had two heavy, soundproof doors, red and green light signals controlling student access, and had significant stocks of tissues and towels, which he used to wipe up semen. The room was set up as a 'sick conveyer belt of victims for Lynch,' he said…

My husband worked at Brisbane Grammar School. We lived in a school-owned apartment on Gregory Terrace with my baby. I contended with the school's coven which involved an English teacher and ground staff who targeted my daughter. They posed as a new church that I was invited to. My suspicions were aroused when the English teacher's young obese daughter broke down in terror at a 'church' meeting, as though we were at a coven gathering.

JAMES WOODS' SEXIST CONCLUSION

In his Final Report, Royal Commissioner Wood concluded Ritual Abuse victims to be:

> *…nearly always women, who during therapy for a variety of personal problems, reveal previously unrecalled memories of bizarre childhood victimisation at the hands of multiple offenders, and who are frequently diagnosed as suffering from multiple personality disorder.*

The Australian victims documented in the above newspaper articles are *male*. Most of the Sydney pedophile network victims who contacted me are *male*. This contradicts Commissioner Wood's sexist dismissal of Ritual Abuse victims as crazy, hysterical females.

BILL HEFFERNAN REITERATES

Twenty years after the failed Wood Royal Commission, Senator Bill Heffernan raised the same concerns regarding VIP pedophiles:

> **Liberal Senator Bill Heffernan says Former Prime Minister a Suspected Pedophile**
> Jane Lee, *Sydney Morning Herald,* 21 October 2015.
>
> *A former Australian prime minister is on a list of 'alleged pedophiles' that Liberal senator Bill Heffernan claims forms part of a police document. Senator Heffernan used a Senate estimates committee hearing on Tuesday to discuss the list of 28 people, which he said formed part of police documents that had been 'signed off' by Gary Crooke, QC, the former senior counsel assisting NSW's Wood royal commission into police corruption in the 1990s. Mr Crooke declined to comment when contacted by Fairfax Media on Tuesday.*
>
> *Many of the people on the list and otherwise named in the documents were 'prominent,' including a former prime minister, Senator Heffernan said: 'They were delivered to me by a police agency some time ago because no one seems to want to deal with them.' Every Commonwealth attorney-general since Philip Ruddock had seen the list, Senator Heffernan said…*
>
> *Senator Heffernan had shown the documents to the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse but was told they were not part of its terms of reference.*

PROOF CHILD ABUSE ROYAL COMMISSION IS CORRUPT

The federal Child Abuse Royal Commission is a farce. It was implemented to gather information, coverup any evidence of Australia's massive pedophile network, and give the public a false sense of security that something is being done to remedy the child abuse epidemic. I can prove the Royal Commission is corrupt, with a single example.

In 2015, the Royal Commission hired lawyer Gail Furness to assist them. That year, Gail Furness questioned both Gerald Ridsdale and George Pell. Gail Furness' cross examination of George Pell in Rome was so poor, Australian lawyers noted, the most basic criminal lawyer could have performed better. Owing to her abysmal effort, George Pell escaped answering vital questions about his coverup of pedophile priests including Gerard Ridsdale. Gerard

Ridsdale has been convicted of raping over 60 kids so far (a fraction of his estimated victim total). One incident involved Ridsdale raping a girl on a church altar, after the child's own father delivered her naked to the altar (an act which reeks of ritual abuse).

Royal Commission Hid Pedophile Priest Network

A Melbourne newspaper identified Gerard Ridsdale and numerous other priests as members of a massive pedophile network that shared victims across Victoria.[90] The article does not name George Pell as part of this network, when he certainly was. Hardly surprising, since 300 journalists were charged for revealing Pell's conviction. The article states:

> *At the centre of a number of these networks was Melbourne's seminary - Corpus Christi - which has produced about 1000 priests over almost 100 years, including jailed Cardinal George Pell and convicted child rapist Gerald Ridsdale. According to a conservative snapshot from the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse, at least 75 convicted and alleged sex offenders emerged from Corpus Christi. The true figure is not known.*
>
> *…*
>
> *In a statement of claim which lawyers plan to file in court this week, the victim, who cannot be named for legal reasons, alleges Vears took him to the seminary in October 1976 and left him to wait in a communal living room with four or five other boys. A second priest, Ryan, then allegedly picked the boy from the group, took him back to a bedroom and sexually assaulted him. 'I recall that seminarians would come out through the corridor into the sitting room and select a boy to go back with them,' said the former St Peter's altar boy.*

The same thing occurring at St Alipius Presbytery, a single-story residence adjoining St Alipius parish school and St Alipius Catholic church in Ballarat, Victoria. In 1972 to '73, Gerard Ridsdale, George Pell and a third priest lived together in St Alipius Presbytery. Gerard Ridsdale served as the St Alipius parish school chaplain. Four St Alipius schoolteachers and priests were outed as pedophiles: Robert Best, Edward Dowlan, Gerald Leo Fitzgerald, and Stephen Francis Farrell. All, except Fitzgerald (who could not stand trial because he was dead) were convicted of sex crimes. One of Ridsdale's child rape victims disclosed being forced to procure more child victims from the school playground and lure them to the St Alipius presbytery to be sexually assaulted by priests.

Gail Furness actively hid the existence of a pedophile ring in St Alipius presbytery as follows. Furness questioned Gerard Ridsdale about his violent rape of a 10/11-year-old girl in the St Alipius Presbytery kitchen, an incident which George Pell witnessed. A newspaper article accurately reported the facts of the crime as follows:

> **JUDGE SLAMS CHURCH OVER PAEDOPHILE PRIEST SECRETS**
>
> Padraic Murphy, *Herald Sun*, 9 April 2014.
>
> *A PRIEST* [George Pell] *who allegedly witnessed predatory pedophile Gerald Ridsdale raping a young girl 40 years ago has been slammed by a judge, but the clergyman's identity has been withheld from the public.*

---

[90] Farrah Tomazin, Chris Vedelago & Debbie Cuthbertson (2019). Revealed: How paedophile priests in Victoria worked together to share victims, *The Age*, 17 Sep.

> …
> *Ridsdale pleaded guilty on March 18 to the rape of the girl, then 10 or 11, at St Alipius presbytery, Ballarat, in 1972 or '73. A summary of the court plea details: 'In around 1972 or 1973 when (the victim) was aged 10 or 11 she was cutting up vegetables in the presbytery kitchen at the St Alipius Primary School. Ridsdale came in and said he had lots of shiny rocks to show her. (The victim) remembers this was around the time of the VFL football grand final.' The court heard that Ridsdale then took her into his room, and showed her adult magazines, and she ran back into the kitchen. When she ran, he chased her, grabbed her, told her to bend over and then raped her. A summary said: '(She) believes that another priest* [George Pell] *living at the house at the time walked through the door to the hallway and exited out the back door as this occurred. She knows that this priest* [George Pell] *saw what was happening…'*

Gail Furness misrepresented the content of the victim's police witness statement and the facts of the case, and led the defendant, while questioning Gerald Ridsdale, by putting the following two blatant lies to Ridsdale:

1. The Presbytery was a two-story building that contained two upstairs bedrooms.
2. Gerald Ridsdale raped the victim in the privacy of his 'upstairs' bedroom.

Prior to Gail Furness' cross examination, Gerald Ridsdale had been charged, convicted and sentenced based on the following facts:

1. The presbytery is a single-story building,
2. Gerard Ridsdale raped the victim in the communal kitchen, not his private bedroom.

So, Gail Furness moved the location of a child's rape from a public to a private setting. Why? Because if the rape occurred in a public place, this suggests every priest in the presbytery was comfortable with pedophilia, and the only people comfortable with pedophilia – are pedophiles. It indicates the house was full of pedophile priests. Indeed, it later emerged that Cardinal George Pell was the priest who witnessed Ridsdale raping the girl in the kitchen, and that George Pell himself was a rampant pedophile. Hundreds of victims made police statements against Pell, yet the police only ran with one simple case.

The Australian government has consistently covered up the true nature and extent of Pell's crimes. The Australian government and the Royal Commission allowed Pell to leave the country knowing his crimes. The Australian government paid Gail Furness $5 million for her services to the Royal Commission.

WHAT THE WOOD RC CONCEALED

My contact with multiple victims over five years enabled me to piece together the sealed contents of the Wood Royal Commission files. James Wood buried evidence of a CIA child trafficking operation where children were recruited for a human compromise racket and as MK-ULTRA experiments. Subjects were obtained through MK-ULTRA institutions including Hillsong Church and Daruk government boys' home where they were subjected to ritual abuse and mind control. Daruk and Hillsong children were prostituted to venues like Club Costello boy brothel in Kellett Street, Kings Cross, frequented by prominent politicians, judges, police, entertainers and businessmen. Multiple victims of the Wood Royal Commission era pedophile network that Senator Heffernan referenced, named the following perpetrators:

- **Gough Whitlam** (ALP Prime Minister, my pedophile rapist).
- **Bob Hawke** (ALP Prime Minister, my pedophile rapist).
- **Kim Beazley** Snr (ALP Minister, my pedophile rapist).
- **John Kerr** (ALP appointed Governor General, my pedophile rapist).
- **Bob Carr** (ALP politician who campaigned to lower the age of consent).
- **Marcus Einfeld** (Federal judge. Found guilty of perverting the course of justice. Defended pedophile entertainer Don Lane on marijuana charge. Defended my pedophile rapist Lionel Murphy against corruption charges).
- **David Yeldham** (Judge who suicided after Franca Arena named him in Parliament as a pedophile, sparking the Wood Royal Commission).
  John Marsden (President NSW Law Society, President NSW Council for Civil Liberties, member NSW Police Board. My father's lawyer. Ivan Milat's lawyer. Named in Parliament as a pedophile).
- **Roger Rogerson** (Police detective who protected Sydney's underbelly including Club Costello boy brothel. Escaped drug trafficking and murder convictions on appeal, before a subsequent murder conviction stuck in 2014).
- **Frank Arkell** (Wollongong Mayor ritually murdered after being named in Parliament).
- **Kerry Packer** (Media mogul. Roger Rogerson shot 12-year-old Dean Henry, son of Kings Cross prostitute, as he fled being raped by Packer).
- **Frank Houston** (Hillsong Church founder, serial pedophile, child trafficker).
- **Graham Kennedy** (TV star).
- **Don Lane** (TV star).
- **Bert Newton** (TV star).
- **Stuart Wagstaff** (TV star).

In 2018 Bert Newton made a bizarre reference to the pedophile antics of his TV star buddies Graham Kennedy and Don Lane during his TV Logie Awards speech:

> *Graham Kennedy was always the sort of man who nurtured young talent. He enjoyed giving young people a chance on television, he was a great mentor, he mentored a lot of young people. You knew if you went to his dressing room it was locked, he will be inside doing some mentoring. Don Lane was a mentor too. He did a hell of a lot of mentoring.*

ENGADINE BOYSTOWN & DARUK

Daruk government boys' home was used to procure kids for sex trafficking to Club Costello boy brothel in Kings Cross. Tim Roy's father, who sex trafficked his own sons to members of Sydney's entertainment industry, worked at Daruk.

At age 13, Stephen Masters was thrown into Daruk government boys' home where he was subjected to ECT (electrocution). Stephen publicly declared Daruk was a CIA research facility where boys were subjected to MK-ULTRA experiments involving circumcision, biochemical exposure, drugging, and electrocution. Stephen said boys (notably a child surnamed Rogan) were murdered by hanging and their deaths recorded as 'suicide' or 'absconded.' Victims' bodies were disposed of in the coal furnace that heated Daruk.

Stephen Masters believes Medical Officer John Munger headed the MK-ULTRA research conducted on Daruk boys. The Australian government is protecting the identity and whereabouts of John Munger who is not listed with the low-level Daruk perpetrators due to be prosecuted in early 2020. Police informed Stephen Masters that John Munger served in the Australian Navy, yet no photo is available of him. Daruk staff occupied a house on the street corner directly outside the Daruk entrance; Stephen believes this was where the MK-ULTRA records were safely stored off-site.

Stephen Master's was incarcerated in Daruk with Les Murphy who, with four others including John Travers, was imprisoned for the 1986 ritual rape and murder of 26-year-old nurse Anita Coby. I say 'ritual' because I heard unpublished details of Anita's murder from two unrelated sources who viewed Les Murphy's file, the lawyer husband of my high school friend, and a prison guard I bunked with during my parole officer training in Sydney. The latter vomited when she read Murphy's file detailing how he and his accomplices had sex with deep cuts they made in Anita's body.

Serial killer Ivan Milat's victims were found chopped up and scattered over a wide area of bushland, which indicates satanic ritual. I surmise that Milat was the fall guy for a group cult effort. Stephen Masters reported two encounters with Ivan Milat to police. The first involved Milat offering 15-year-old Stephen and his inebriated teenage mate a lift. Milat detoured to Club Costello boy brothel in Kings Cross where Stephen recognised 16-year-old Les Murphy working behind the bar. Stephen deduced Ivan Milat drugged and raped his young mate in Milat's car that evening, and that that Milat had a system of scouting and collecting child victims, drugging them in preparation for rape by pedophiles at Club Costello, before disposing of their bodies afterwards.

Both Ivan Milat and John Travers (Anita Coby's killer) spent time in Engadine's BoysTown juvenile detention facility, where my father and I were subjected to years of ritual abuse. Australians question where the likes of Milat, Murphy and Travers got the idea to murder people the way they did. Such behaviour is not innate - it was taught by Luciferian pedophiles who ran Engadine BoysTown and Daruk. We will never know how many murders Milat and Murphy committed separately or together. The unsolved 1965 Wanda beach murders where two 15-year-old girls violently stabbed and slashed at Cronulla carried all the hallmarks of Ivan Milat.

MILAT, MARSDEN & MURPHY

John Marsden was Ivan Milat's lawyer. In 1971, Marsden secured Ivan Milat bail for rape and armed robbery charges and helped him flee to New Zealand. Australian authorities allowed Milat to leave the country knowing he was on bail for serious offences. I wonder how many NZ victims Milat sourced, abducted and killed for the NZ VIP pedophile network I heard about from NZ victims and witnesses. When Milat returned to Australia in 1974, John Marsden had him acquitted of the rape and armed robbery charges. Milat was never charged for breaching his bail conditions by leaving Australia. My father knew the Milat brothers who told him they were never caught for a series of bank robberies during which they routinely raped young female bank tellers.

Daruk resident Ray Leary was sex trafficked to Club Costello boy brothel where he was raped by John Marsden.[91] Ray Leary also witnessed Les Murphy working behind the bar at Club Costello, and said John Marsden used Les Murphy, whom Marsden frequently visited in prison, to threaten him. Indeed, a judge found John Marsden used Les Murphy to persuade a witness to change his position. John Marsden escaped conviction for pedophilia, yet the NSW Victims Compensation Tribunal awarded compensation to one of his victims.

John Marsden came out as gay after Deidre Grusovin used parliamentary privilege to name him as a pedophile. Pedophile Prime Minister Gough Whitlam attended John Marsden's funeral, while accused pedophile Justice Michael Kirby delivered Marsden's eulogy.

2020 Update:

Former federal Liberal MP Alasdair Webster facing historical sexual assault charges
Duncan McNab, *7NEWS*, 11 March 2020 .

A former federal politician and Order of Australia recipient will face court later this month on historical sexual assault charges. Alasdair Webster, 86, has been charged with buggery, attempted buggery, assault occasioning actual bodily harm and 10 counts of indecent assault on a male. The offence of buggery carries a maximum 14 years imprisonment…

The charges result from investigations by Strike Force Eckersley into alleged abuse of boys at the Daruk Training School near Windsor, in Sydney's west, between 1978 and 1980, where Webster was Chief Superintendent…

Webster was the federal Liberal Party member for the seat of Macquarie in Sydney's west from December 1984 to March 1993. He later contested the NSW Legislative council at the 1999 and 2003 elections for Fred Nile's Christian Democratic Party. Webster was awarded an Order of Australia in 2008 for "services to the Parliament of Australia, and to the community through Indigenous, educational and service organisations."

* * *

AGE OF CONSENT BILL

James Wood did not recommend any action against the accused VIP pedophiles. instead, he recommended lowering the age of consent so men could legally have sex with teenagers. Premiere Bob Carr subsequently introduced his *NSW Age of Consent Bill* in 2003. The leftist media labelled any opposition to Carr's Bill 'homophobia.' When an MP who voted against the Bill used parliamentary privilege to threaten naming a senior MP accused of raping a 15-year-old boy, Premier Bob Carr referred the matter to the *Police Integrity Commission* headed by James Wood.[92]

---

[91] Margaret Scheikowski (2000). NSW: Man tells court John Marsden raped him as a boy. AAP, 2 Jan.
[92] Nick Grimm (2003). Carr sceptical of new pedophile claims, *ABC Radio National*, 28 May.

‘RITUAL ABUSE’ & PM NATIONAL APOLOGY

I campaigned for five years to undo the damage James Wood did to the credibility of Australian Ritual Abuse victims and their therapists. On 17 October 2018, I tweeted to our Prime Minister:

@ScottMorrisonMP When you issue your ‘National Apology to Victims and Survivors of institutional Child Sexual Abuse’ this Mon 22 Oct, please acknowledge victims of ‘Ritual Abuse’ by using these very words. This will gain you credibility with the many RA victims and the therapists.

If only the Prime Minister included those two words, I reasoned, then victims and therapists could reintroduce ‘Ritual Abuse’ to their vocabulary, and SRA victims would have a voice. My tweet received the most public attention on the PM’s twitter account that day. On 22 October, the PM included in his National Apology:

> *The crimes of Ritual Sexual Abuse happened in schools, churches, youth groups, Scout troops, orphanages, foster homes, sporting clubs, group homes, charities, and in family homes.*

My therapist exclaimed: ‘From now on I’m including the words, *“ritual abuse - as acknowledged by the Australian Prime Minister”* in all my medical reports!’

Pièce de résistance

On 18 June 2014, Sydney child trafficking victim Dean Thomas Chisholme Henry attended an *Assessment and Inquiry Session* at Silverwater Prison with Vicki Cosma and Darren Latimore (Officers with the *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse*). During this session, Dean Henry provided verbal testimony concerning his child abuse experiences which the Commission Officers recorded and submitted in transcript form to the Royal Commission.

In this transcript, Dean Henry listed names of some of the men his prostitute mother sold him to as a child. On page 5 of the transcript, Dean Henry named the following man as one of his pedophile perpetrators:

JUSTICE JAMES ROLAND WOOD.

* * *

Victorian Pedophile Network

In 2004, Reina Michaelson (PhD psychologist, 2005 Young Australian of the Year for Community Service) called for a Royal Commission into allegations of a Victorian pedophile network involving Rushmore state high school and the Education Department, DOCS (child protection), a Mornington Peninsula childcare centre, Liberal Party Premiere Jeff Kennett, Victorian Police, Network 10, and TV star Bert Newton. The following newspaper articles refer to this operation:

POLICE FILES ON SEX ABUSE 'VANISHED'
Gary Hughes, *The Age,* 19 April 2004.

Police files on a suspect in claimed sexual abuse by men dressed as police are said to have 'disappeared.' A deputy principal who reported a student's claim of the abuse says detectives later told him that Victoria Police computer files on one of the alleged pedophiles were tampered with. He was also told his initial report to the Department of Human Services under the mandatory reporting system disappeared.

The 13-year-old boy told staff at the school he had been repeatedly sexually abused by a number of men on the Mornington Peninsula. He said some of the men wore police uniforms and warned him that they would know if he reported the abuse because they were policemen. The boy had also been used to produce child pornography later published overseas.

The deputy principal said it was clear from a detailed 12-page statement made by the boy that the abuse was conducted by an organised and 'well-connected' pedophile ring.

No charges were laid because police said the boy had been 'too well groomed' by the pedophiles and it was doubtful he would testify in court.

The deputy principal contacted The Age after it revealed this month that the Ombudsman was investigating the alleged mishandling of a number of child sexual abuse cases by Victoria Police. The Age advised him to contact the Ombudsman, which he has since done.

One case being reviewed by the Ombudsman involves children at a child-care centre in Mornington. Investigators have been told that a house where the alleged abuse took place possibly belonged to a policeman and that a videotape existed of children from the centre being abused by men dressed as police.

The deputy principal from the college in Melbourne's outer east has asked that neither he nor the college be named to protect the identity of the abused boy. The deputy principal, who has since become principal of another school, lodged an initial report with what was then Community Services Victoria in July 1995. He telephoned about two weeks later and was told the report was being investigated. The deputy principal *said it was clear from a statement made by the boy that the abuse was conducted by an organised pedophile ring.*

After the boy made more detailed disclosures and began displaying disturbing behaviour, the school lodged a second mandatory report in December 1995 through the Education Department's regional office. The complaint was taken 'very seriously' and police were called. The deputy principal said police told him there was no record of the original report to community services or his follow-up phone call. A senior child protection manager told him it was not the first time reports had disappeared.

Detectives from a community policing unit said the main alleged offender in the ring was well known to police, the deputy principal said. But the police said a previous case against him had been abandoned after information on police files had disappeared. 'I started to pinch myself and think is this real or not? It seemed quite bizarre and I was very frustrated…' he said.

After police dropped the investigation in 1996 the boy 'totally clammed up' and staff at the school did not know whether the abuse continued. A Victoria Police spokesman said the original allegation had been investigated, including a search of the main suspect's home that found no incriminating evidence. The boy involved had refused to repeat to police the disclosures he had earlier made to school staff. The spokesman said he was not aware that files had disappeared.

* * *

CALL FOR PROBE INTO POLICE INVESTIGATION

Matt Doran, *Mornington Peninsula Leader*, 4 May 2004.

AT 7am on an ordinary morning in the early 1990s, police rapped on the door of a house in Mt Martha, waiting to tell a mother and a father their two toddlers were believed to have been victims of pedophilia. They did it subtly, of course, by asking the parents to see if their children had ever heard of 'red Kenny' or 'Daddy Kenny.'

A number of children from a Mornington childcare centre had earlier told the police these were nicknames used by men who had sexually abused them. 'I will never forget the look on my daughter's face when she heard those names. She immediately ran behind her mother saying, 'save me mummy, save me,' said John (not his real name). John was later told by his eldest daughter that the same men had held her underwater and bent her little finger backwards if she didn't do as she was told. John knew in his heart then that the bruises on his youngest daughters' cheek had not been caused by a 'playground accident.' His children, 'two little heroes,' were among at least 16 others abused at the Mornington Child Care Centre and Nursery School in the 1990s.

Children told police and their parents they were taken from the centre in a van to a house in Mornington where they were sexually and physically abused by a group of adults. Some described being abused by adults wearing 'funny clothes' including police uniforms, clown suits and 'black capes with tails.'

The centre was deregistered after a Department of Human Services inquiry found that the centre's owners, Norman and Alison Shulver, had 'permitted the abuse to occur or were involved in that abuse.' No police charges were laid, but in 1994 the Crimes Compensation Tribunal awarded damages of up to $20,000 to more than 30 applicants affected by the alleged abuse.

Now a decade later, Victoria's Ombudsman is due to release a report on the way police handled their investigation. But that does not comfort John or his eldest daughter, now 16, who are still traumatised. 'My eldest daughter still needs counselling and is afraid to sleep by herself. She is on antidepressants and . . . has no friends,' John said. 'She believes she was the victim of organised pedophilia and she still fears for her life. 'It is too late for justice for my family. Justice cannot repair my marriage or make up for the trauma my daughter has suffered. But there needs to be justice for the community, so that people's faith in the system can be restored.'

Psychologist Dr Reina Michaelson, who is representing survivors of abuse throughout Victoria, helped instigate the Ombudsman's investigation in 2002. She first raised concerns with Chief Commissioner Christine Nixon in 2001, about the way the original police investigation was conducted after a 'well-hidden' file containing allegations linking police to child sex offences was stolen from her home. But now Dr Michaelson has lost faith in the Ombudsman's internal investigation.

Documents obtained by the Leader show that in April last year an Ethical Standards Department officer was removed from the investigation for 'incompetence' after he failed to pass on vital information from two witnesses. One witness claimed that a house used by pedophiles in Mornington belonged to a policeman. The other witness gave information about the existence of a video tape that showed a number of men dressed in police uniforms abusing children. The investigator said he could not recall talking about a video with the witness, but a check of telephone records showed he did have such a conversation.

'These children were the victims of a highly organised and protected pedophile group that continues to operate throughout Victoria,' Dr Michaelson said. 'While this type of corruption continues, these children don't have a hope of getting justice. 'They desperately want to present their testimonies and evidence, but they need to be given a forum where they can do this in safety and where the investigative process is truly independent.

Doctor's Years of Dedication

Dr Reina Michaelson, who sparked the Ombudsman's current investigation, is a high achiever in the world of child psychology. The 33-year-old completed her PhD in psychology at Victoria University in 2001. Her thesis, which was awarded the vice-chancellor's medal for excellence in research, focused on ways to prevent child sexual abuse. Dr Michaelson was Young Australian of the Year (for community service) in 2001.

*   *   *

MPs AND POLICE 'IN CHILD SEX NETWORK'
Gosia Kaszubska, *The Australian,* 9 July 2004.

A SOPHISTICATED pedophile network involving former politicians and police has been operating in Victoria since the 70s, anti-child-abuse campaigners claimed yesterday. Reina Michaelson, head of the Child Sexual Abuse Prevention Program, and Bravehearts founder Hetty Johnston said victims had told them of an organised child pornography and prostitution network with links to former MPs and senior police officers.

The claims a pedophile ring was operating under the protection of police came after the Victorian Ombudsman released a damning report on the conduct of four child sex abuse investigations, leading to a review of the operations of the sexual crimes squad. Two experienced members of the squad will be investigated over their role in the abuse cases, which are being reopened.

The inquiry found the officers failed to adequately examine several child abuse allegations and concluded they may have lied under oath to investigators from the Ombudsman's office. The Ombudsman found officers from the squad told the Education Department a teacher had been cleared of abuse allegations, despite conducting no investigation into the claims.

In a separate case, a senior detective blamed a 12-year-old girl for encouraging a man who had allegedly abused her, and another officer described the victim as 'a little slut.'

The Ombudsman's inquiry followed complaints from Dr Michaelson, who gave a dossier of child abuse cases she claimed had been mishandled to police Chief Commissioner Christine Nixon in late 2001. . .

* * *

TV MAN [Bert Newton] LINKED TO SEX CASE INQUIRY
The Age, 16 Nov 2004.

A sudden decision by Victoria Police to drop a rape investigation involving a prominent television industry figure is likely to be examined as part of a special inquiry by the state Ombudsman into how authorities handle sexual assault cases.

Using his new powers, the Ombudsman will examine how government agencies and the police investigate allegations of sexual assault and how victims are treated. The wide-ranging inquiry will include the Department of Education and the Department of Human Services, which is responsible for child protection.

One of the cases likely to be examined is the recent decision by Victoria Police to drop an investigation into sexual assault allegations against the prominent Victorian television industry figure. The alleged victim told police in March that he was *repeatedly raped and sexually assaulted as a teenager by the male television executive in the 1980s.*

Deputy Ombudsman John Taylor told The Age a special unit began initial work on the inquiry several weeks ago and government agencies had been formally notified.
…
The alleged victim of the television figure lodged a formal complaint last week with the Ombudsman and Victoria Police Chief Commissioner Christine Nixon about the decision to drop the investigation. The Ombudsman had already decided to hold the special inquiry before the complaint was received. Ms Nixon has referred the complaint to the police Ethical Standards Department.

The Ombudsman has been told that police decided to drop the case, despite the Office of Public Prosecutions reviewing the evidence just weeks earlier and indicating the investigation should proceed and charges could be laid. In his complaint to the Ombudsman, the alleged victim said that police ignored potentially corroborative evidence, failed to interview witnesses, only spoke to some other witnesses over the telephone and pressured him into writing a letter exonerating a second offender just a week before dropping the case.

Mr Taylor said the decision to hold the special inquiry was the result of the number of complaints received over the past 12 months about the way sexual abuse allegations had been handled by government agencies and the police. 'Inevitably the focus has been as the result of some specific complaints, but we are looking more broadly than just a few complaints,' he said.
…
The new inquiry comes after an Ombudsman's investigation into police mishandling of child sexual abuse cases was scathing in its criticism of Victoria Police in July. Police reopened four cases after the Ombudsman found investigations had been bungled. The Age revealed at the time that, in one of the cases, children had remained at risk in a country town after police inadequately investigated an alleged pedophile in 1999.

The two-year investigation by the Ombudsman was also highly critical of the attitudes of investigating officers. One senior sexual crimes squad detective blamed a 12-year-old schoolgirl for leading on a 63-year-old man who allegedly abused her. Another police officer told investigators the same girl was a 'slut,' despite admitting she had most likely been sexually abused.

The sexual crimes squad was also found to have failed to investigate allegations against a teacher but told the Education Department that investigations had been carried out and the teacher cleared.

* * *

CULT FIGHTS CLAIMS OF CHILD SACRIFICE

Barney Zwarts, *The Age,* 22 November 2006.

> *An anti-child-sex campaigner accused an occult religious group of hosting parties at which naked children acted as waiters and at which members had sex with and murdered children, a tribunal was told yesterday. The obscure group Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO) claims Dr Reina Michaelson and the Child Sexual Abuse Prevention Program described it in a website article as a satanic cult that sacrificed children and ate their organs and blood. It has complained under Victoria's religious hatred law that Dr Michaelson and her organisation vilified OTO members, causing revulsion, ridicule, hatred and contempt.*
>
> *According to OTO's statement of complaint, Dr Michaelson said it was not a religion but a child pornography and pedophile ring, that its members practised trauma-based mind control, sexual abuse and satanic rituals to discourage its victims from complaining to the authorities, and that it condoned kidnapping street children and babies and children from orphanages for sex and sacrifice in religious rituals.*
>
> *The case began at the Victorian Civil and Administrative Tribunal yesterday but was adjourned to today to allow a last-ditch attempt to settle out of court. The article, still accessible on a website run from NSW, suggests senior politicians and television celebrities are part of a top-level pedophile ring and have been protected by some police. It says some members of the ring pretended to support Dr Michaelson's campaign and became board members of her group to subvert it from within. . .*
>
> *OTO members follow a religion known as Thelema, founded by occultist Aleister Crowley.*

* * *

DR REINA MICHAELSON'S TESTIMONY

The following document was posted by David Icke and on various websites including *Above Top Secret*. The public reinserted some of the names that Reina Michaelson disguised.

Dr Michaelson's Statement:

The following is a summary of events that detail the infiltration of a high-profile, powerful group of child sex offenders into my child abuse prevention organisation. What was uncovered as a result of this infiltration was the existence of a child pornography and pedophile ring that is operating in Australia, under the protection of senior-ranking members of Victoria Police.

The members of the network include senior management and executives from a major television network, media celebrities, high-ranking politicians, police officers in charge of pedophile and child pornography investigations, senior management representatives from the Department of Education, directors of 'child-focused' service clubs, wealthy businessmen, and others.

I have tried to keep the account as brief as possible while including all relevant information. The description covers events from 1995 until the time of this writing (2005). Names have been changed.

Victorian Department of Education Protects Rushmore Pedophile Teacher

In 1995, I started running Australia's first child sexual abuse prevention program in schools (CSAPP, Child Sexual Abuse Prevention Program). This school-based program teaches children how to protect themselves from sexual abuse and what to do if someone tries to sexually abuse them. The program also teaches adults how they can best protect children under their care from sexual abuse.

My assistant and I were at Rushmore high school in the northern region working with Year 9 boys. We received a note written anonymously by one of the boys asking, ‘What do you do if you get raped by a teacher and no one will believe you? What happens if you get raped and you enjoy it?’

Later during that day, we were asked exactly the same question by a boy who was flushed red with embarrassment. I replied, ‘Talk to the Student Welfare Coordinator,’ to which he replied, ‘What if he is the one who won't believe you?’ I emphasized that it is important to keep telling until someone believes you.

During the day my assistant and I noticed the strange behaviour of a Rushmore teacher. Later that afternoon I learnt that the car I had been driving had been rammed in the school's carpark. Witnesses reported that the car had been rammed deliberately by a man who then drove off very quickly.

The local police were called and ran a licence check on the car and discovered that the numberplate was fake. They then took photos of the crime scene using the school's camera. Later, when it was revealed that a teacher was under suspicion of sexually abusing the children at the school and then organising the ramming of my car to intimidate me, the photos went ‘missing,’ and no further action was taken.

The Rushmore teacher was the only person at the school who knew my car, as he had taken it upon himself to show me to my car to give me directions to the shops during a break in classes.

It was organised that the boys in Year 9 would be interviewed in order to find the victims and give them appropriate support. Three people (including myself, my assistant and a counsellor from a sexual assault centre) were responsible for conducting the interviews. At the completion of the interviews, there were concerns for approximately 12 of the boys.

These concerns related specifically to sexual assault by a teacher at the school. However, by this stage (over a week had passed since the initial program) it was clear that the boys had been threatened. For example, when I interviewed the boy who had asked the questions about sexual abuse by a teacher and not being believed, he huddled into a foetal position, started crying, and said he could not tell me what happened. When I asked him why he couldn't tell me, he replied that he had been threatened with his life. His best friend told me he would never tell what had happened.

Sometime after this, we organised a theatre company performance for the students (on the topic of sexual abuse). While the children were seated and waiting for the play to begin, the offending teacher made an unscheduled visit to the hall. He proceeded to stand in front of each of the boys we had identified as potential victims and stare them down. The boys, who had been happy and laughing in the excitement of waiting for the play to begin, went grey with fear. Finally, I stood in front of the pedophile teacher so that he could not intimidate the boys any further.

I was then told no further action would be taken as the boys had not named the offender.

Program Infiltrated

I was the recipient of a very prestigious national award (Young Australian of the Year for Community Service). One of the judges ('RS') was a well-connected government official, and another was Robert Osmotherly, a Network 10 TV executive.

Network 10 General Manager

After winning this award, Robert Osmotherly approached me and said that he had never heard of this terrible crime (child sexual abuse) before meeting me. He said wanted to help me get my program into every school in Victoria within five years and said he had the money and the connections to do this. He said he would raise half a million dollars in 6 weeks, and have it matched within 6 months. He said that he and RS would set my program up as an independent organisation and that they would establish a Board of Management consisting of all of their powerful and influential friends. RS would become President of the organisation and Robert Osmotherly Vice-President.

I agreed to Robert Osmotherly's proposal as it sounded as if he would enable the program to receive substantial funding and therefore be able to reach many more children within Victoria, and across Australia. I did not consider for a second that Robert Osmotherly and RS could have been deceiving me in order to get control of, and ultimately, to destroy the child sexual abuse prevention program that I had developed.

The Board members and supporters that they brought to the organisation were very powerful and from the highest echelons of society. These included the Editor-in Chief of a major Australian newspaper, the former head of a child-focussed service club, the head of the largest agricultural society in Victoria, the partner from a well-known law firm, an extremely wealthy businessman and former Network 10 board member, the head of a well-known accounting firm, the head of a successful advertising company, and others.

Despite having such wealth and powerful connections, in the two-year period that they served on the Board they organised only one donation of $25,000. The board members subsequently despised the donor and ostracised him from their community (which at the time I thought was incredibly ungrateful!). This is compared with over $200,000 my family and I raised doing the fundraising ourselves in the same time period!

Furthermore, my efforts to secure funding were being actively sabotaged. For example, after an interview on the Channel 9 'Today' show (not Network 10), I was contacted by a well-known multi-national company who said that they would like to fund my program. This well-known company was located in Sydney, and as Robert Osmotherly frequently went to Sydney, I asked if he would have a meeting with them on behalf of our organisation. He agreed.

However, when he returned from the meeting, he said for me not to have much hope and not to contact them for six months while they sorted out a new tax issue. I found this very odd, as they had been so keen to fund the organisation when I had spoken to them. I phoned the woman whom I had spoken to, and she confirmed my suspicions. She had been at the meeting and Robert Osmotherly had told the company not to bother funding us, as 'the organisation won't be around in six months.' Needless to say, we did not receive the funding.

During this time period, I was without any income for four months. Many other people would have quit and sought other employment; however, I believed passionately in my cause and did not give up, much to the chagrin of Robert Osmotherly. On one occasion he said to me, 'You have given so much to this cause in your life, why don't you just give up? You have achieved more good in your short life than many do in a long lifetime. Why don't you retire down in the country (I was 28 years old)? Go on, just give up.' When I replied that I would never give up, he stormed away! I was confused by this behaviour, but as I trusted him, I did not think too much more about it at the time.

The Board members achieved one other 'in-kind' donation. It was the use of a Honda CRV vehicle. I appreciated the use of the vehicle while I had it (approximately 18 months). However, I later discovered that the head of the company that donated it, a close friend of RS, had just been convicted of child sex offences. These offences included the production of child pornography**.**

RS organised a meeting with TF, the CEO of a major charitable trust and personal friend of his and other members of the Board. At that meeting I was amazed when TF asked me, 'Do you ever think that by preventing children from having sexual relationships with adults that you are actually HARMING them?'

I replied by citing the research that strongly indicates adult-child sexual relationships are harmful to children, but he had switched his mind off to my argument. He then stated that in 100 years or so it will be revealed that such relationships are not harmful but that what I was doing was harmful to children. I was certainly taken aback, and RS said, 'Don't worry, TF just thinks on a very high intellectual plane. High above yours.' Needless to say, we didn't get funding from RS's very good friend after all.

Meeting with Victorian Premiere Jeff Kennett

After winning the award, I had a meeting with a very powerful state politician, Jeff Kennett. At that time, Jeff Kennett was the most powerful person in the state. As well as being politically powerful he also had key business interests, including in the media. When I was first introduced to him, he was staring at me quite sleazily. After he asked what work I do, and my response 'child abuse prevention,' he would not make eye contact at all and sought to exclude me from the meeting in a very bullying manner.

It was well-known that Jeff Kennett was a serious domestic violence offender, and that his wife was frequently being admitted to shelters in secret. However, given the power and status of Mr Kennett the issue was never raised in the mainstream media.

I was later to be informed by a very reliable and trusted source from the child welfare field that there is a file containing serious child sex offences (against boys) by Jeff Kennett, but because of his enormous power in Victoria, the police would not act on it. I also discovered from a former sex worker that Jeff Kennett frequently paid St Kilda boy sex workers for sex, and that one of these boys 'talked too much to the wrong people and ended up dead with an 'accidental' heroin overdose.'

It was also alleged that Jeff Kennett intentionally abused the boys in unusual situations (for example, in a helicopter) so that if it ever got out, the boys' testimonies would seem unbelievable. This of, course, is exactly the same strategy used by offenders in the US child-care centre cases. Interestingly, Jeff Kennett has recently commissioned a statue of himself - as a gargoyle [on St Patrick's Cathedral [93]].

Later I met with another politician (from the same Liberal Party) who told me that 'Jeff Kennett is really into that (child sex abuse).**'** This same politician told me that in the late 1980s and early 1990s, the police were 'getting too close to the truth, too close to people in high positions of power who are also pedophiles,' and so the sex crimes squad's child exploitation unit had been established to investigate organised pedophilia and ensure it was shut down.

---

[93] *The Age*, It's Kennett the gargoyle. 7 June 2002.

(Soon after Detective Senior Sergeant Chris O'Connor was put in charge of the child exploitation unit and the sexual crimes squad, to investigate these offences and ensure that the truth never got out and that this high-ranking network of offenders would never get caught).

VICTORIA POLICE CORRUPTION
PREVIOUSLY CENSORED
THE BOOK THAT THE VICTORIA POLICE DON'T WANT YOU TO READ
RAYMOND HOSER
VICTORIA POLICE CORRUPTION - 2
INCLUDING WHAT THE MEDIA DIDN'T TELL YOU!
Australia's Most Frequently Banned Author
RAYMOND HOSER

Jeff Kennett still runs the Victorian Liberal Party…

Network 10 Produces Pornography

One day I was working on a computer at Network 10. As I was working, Robert Osmotherly approached my computer and put a floppy disk in the machine. He said, 'Look at this' and proceeded to bring up images of pornography involving humans and Sesame Street characters. I was very embarrassed and did not know how to react.

I asked, 'Where did you get that?' and he replied, **'**Oh, someone put it together here,' indicating that Network 10 was producing pornography. I was later to discover that Network 10 is also producing child pornography and is, in fact, a cult-owned and run television station. I was also later to discover that Robert Osmotherly is a passionate member of a cult.

Mr Television: Bert Newton

Robert Osmotherly introduces me to Mr. Television

After winning the abovementioned award, I was invited to go on one of the morning television shows on Network 10. (This was before my association with Robert Osmotherly. Ironically, after my association with Robert Osmotherly, Network 10 did not do any promotion of my work at all!) It is hosted by one of the most famous and longest serving television personalities in Australia, Bert Newton.

I was asked to prepare a number of questions that Bert Newton would ask me. I prepared very straight-forward questions that focussed on the work, so I was quite shocked when Bert Newton glared at me and said, 'Are you doing this because it happened to you?' I was also stunned when he refused to allow the phone number of my organisation to be presented on the air for donations.

When I later became closely associated with Network 10 Robert Osmotherly would often say to me ‘You know, Bert Newton really likes you. He really likes you!’ This surprised me because my experience of Bert Newton had been the exact opposite of that. (Interestingly, Robert Osmotherly also frequently said to me, ‘Jeff Kennett really likes me since I started helping you. He has me sit next to him at all of the formal functions we attend now.’ This was indeed true, Jeff Kennett, Robert Osmotherly and ‘RS’ were all the best of friends.)

After my experience with Network 10, I subsequently discovered that in the late 1980's Bert Newton was frozen out of the television industry due to allegations of his involvement in the production of child pornography. Although his alleged involvement in this activity was well-publicised at the time, he was never charged and about a year later he joined Network 10.

Since then he has continued to play a significant role in the production of child pornography in Australia. One contact who works on the set of the morning program hosted by Bert Newton finds the work to be very distressing as other on-air talent are very open about their pedophilia. This contact is disgusted, as his sister is a victim of child sex offences, however he does not want to publicly disclose the information as he will lose his job. In addition to the above, I am now in contact with a boy who was paid $2000 a night to have sex with Bert Newton, from the ages of 15 - 18 years.

Introduction to the Pedophile Police Unit

There is a specialised police unit in Victoria that, since the early 1990's, is responsible for investigating all child sex offences involving multiple-victims, offences committed by teachers, as well as child pornography offences [the Child Exploitation Unit within the Sexual Crimes Squad]. I had a meeting with the head of this unit, Detective Senior Sergeant Chris O’Connor, and was very surprised when the first thing he said to me was ‘Does Jeff Kennett know about your program? Jeff Kennett should know about your program.’ I found this a very odd thing for him to say as an opening statement, and especially so, given the information known about Jeff Kennett's alleged sexual abuse of boys. I thought it impossible for this police officer not to know of these things, given his specialist role.

Relationship between Chris O’Connor and network 10 Robert Osmotherly

I subsequently became aware of the ‘unusual’ relationship between Chris O’Connor (police) and Robert Osmotherly (Network 10). I invited Chris O’Connor to do a presentation for the board members. RS was ‘so impressed’ by Chris O’Connor that he wanted to invite him onto the Board of Management (along with all the other pedophile members). I later discovered that Chris O’Connor and Robert Osmotherly, although pretending not to know each other at the Board meeting, have a very cosy relationship indeed.

Specifically, a couple of years ago, a senior staff member at Network 10 was charged with procuring children for prostitution. At the time, the wife of a detective working in Chris O’Connor's unit (Pam Cullen) received a very sudden and significant promotion to become Robert Osmotherly 's Personal Assistant. It was a clear conflict of interest and deeply comprising to the investigation.

Pam Cullen 's husband should not have been involved in investigating Network 10 staff for their involvement in procuring children for prostitution or any other child sex offences connected to Network 10. However, with the appointment of the detective's wife to Personal

Assistant of the General Manager of Network 10, it was guaranteed that no other information pertaining to Network 10's illegal activities involving sex offences against children would be pursued by Chris O'Connor or his unit. And Pam Cullen enjoyed her unexpected and incredibly well-paid, new position at Network 10.

Chris O'Connor called in to investigate the Rushmore teacher and other offences

In 1999 fresh allegations were made against the Rushmore pedophile teacher. This time, teenage girls reported the Rushmore pedophile teacher approaches students and asks them to meet him after school to meet 'Winston the Baseball Bat'. They indicated that 'Winston' was the teacher's penis. They reported that other students were very affected by this behaviour, and some had taken to writing warnings to each-other on the desks, such as 'If the teacher asks you to meet Winston, don't do it – it's his dick!!'

At last, the Rushmore pedophile teacher had been named and the victims were prepared to come forward. The teacher admitted to these offences and received 5 sessions of counselling. I then discovered the teacher had conveniently taken up a temporary position in a country school (like a priest being moved from parish to parish when things get too hot). The principal at the original school had not told the new school the circumstances surrounding his transfer and had instead said, 'Poor teacher, he's had a difficult time lately.' I later discovered that this Principal was an expert liar and had gone over and above the call of duty in protecting this pedophile teacher.

At this new country high school, it was not long before further allegations of child abuse by the Rushmore teacher came out. Incidents of verbal abuse, such as calling students 'fucking stupid' were revealed, as well as physical assaults, such as dragging students out of the classroom and throwing them on the floor. In another physical assault, the Rushmore pedophile teacher grabbed the 12-year-old boy by the neck and held him by his neck against a wall. The teacher admitted to the latter assault, wrote a letter of apology and provided financial compensation for the loss of the necklace.

With the pedophile teacher being named and various offences being admitted to, I reported his behaviour for criminal investigation to Chris O'Connor's sex crimes unit. It also provided the opportunity for the 1995 offences to be re-investigated. However, Chris O'Connor interviewed only two of the 12 boys on the list from 1995 and reported to me that as the first two boys did not disclose anything, the others would not be interviewed.

In relation to the offences against the teenage girls, Chris O'Connor said that, at 15 years of age, the girls were 'too young,' and he did not want to distress the girls' families by bringing up the topic of child sexual abuse. Therefore, these offences by the pedophile teacher would not be investigated either. I could not believe what I was hearing! Child sex offences are offences because they happen against children! And at 15, the victims were hardly at the young end of the age-spectrum! It was a completely nonsensical reason for not investigating the pedophile.

As for the physical assaults, Chris O'Connor said that he was not responsible for such investigations, so those cases would not be pursued either. He said, 'You do understand, don't you!' (it was not a question) and I replied that I did not. However, Chris O'Connor was not prepared to discuss the situation amicably and the pedophile teacher evaded investigation, by both the police in the unit established to investigate such offences, and by the Department of Education.

Further Dealings with Chris O'Connor's Child Exploitation Unit

Whilst at the country school, disclosures of child sexual abuse by other offenders were made by many children. The disclosures centred on two offenders in the town. The specialised Child Exploitation Unit arrived to 'investigate.' However, the main victim of the sexual abuse, Sammy, a 12-year-old girl, did not attend school that day.

Sammy did arrive after school that day on her bike, and her face was visibly disfigured. I was told by her best friend that she had been bashed, but her friend would not tell me who did this to Sammy. Her smashed-in face was warning enough for all of the children. The police later went to her house, where she fainted upon seeing them. She did not disclose any abuse at all. Despite the fact that her face was visibly disfigured and swollen from a recent assault, the police did not pursue the matter further.

The specialised Child Exploitation Unit totally destroyed any chance of the truth being revealed and the victims receiving the justice they deserved. For example, they left children waiting all day to be interviewed and did not end up interviewing many of them, including witnesses to attempted child-rapes.

The Child Exploitation Unit did interview one 12-year-old victim ('Lucy') and totally intimidated her. When the girl indicated that the police didn't believe her the first time, she told them what had happened to her, one police officer lent right over the top of her, pointed his finger directly in her face and hissed 'Don't say that! You don't know that!' I was shaking, and I was an adult sitting next to the girl! As she walked out of the interview room, the police officer said in voice loud enough for the girl to hear, 'We have serious concerns about the truth of what this girl is saying.'

It had the desired effect, Lucy burst into tears and said, 'The police don't believe me. I don't want to keep going.' The Welfare Co-ordinator, who was also in the room during the interview, and who is also an experienced sexual assault counsellor and child protection officer, said to me, 'That wasn't an interview. That was designed to stop a child from talking.'

The Child Exploitation Unit did not pursue the case any further on the following grounds: No-one would believe Sammy if she disclosed the abuse in the future, as she hadn't disclosed the first time. (The fact that she had been bashed would not be seen as relevant to her hesitancy to disclose?!) Lucy had led all the children on (to make up 'stories' of sexual abuse for fun, even though the children were visibly traumatised). In relation to the sexual abuse of a boy, they said, 'men try to touch other men's penises after football matches all the time' so it was not worthy of pursuing.

And finally, the Child Exploitation Unit claimed that there was not enough evidence - this is despite the fact that there were witnesses to the attempted rapes of the children, and the testimonies of many victims provided significant corroboration. Also, many adults reported having been sexually abused by the same offenders when they were children, but the police refused to interview these adults.

The Case is Stonewalled by Child Exploitation Unit head Chris O'Connor

The police recommended that the Welfare Co-ordinator make reports to DOCS (Child Protection Department) as they stated it was a 'protective issue, not a criminal one.' The Welfare Co-ordinator did this, but weeks passed, and the children were not interviewed, and she inquired as to why. She was informed that DOCS would not be taking any further action 'on the advice of the police.' So, after telling the Welfare Co-ordinator to take the case to DOCS for investigation, the Police effectively stone-walled the investigation by advising Child Protection not to investigate.

Relationship between Robert Osmotherly & Chris O'Connor

During the two-year association I had with Robert Osmotherly, 'DS' and the Board of Management that they had established, I trusted them implicitly. Although incidents occurred that often left me confused, and often baffled, and of-course, frequently without funding, I continued to trust them. DS always said to me 'I'm here to help.' It was his favourite saying.
I therefore reported all of the events that had occurred at the northern secondary school and the Rushmore school, to Robert Osmotherly. Osmotherly then told me that he knew Detective Senior Sergeant Chris O'Connor (in contrast to his earlier pretence of not knowing him at all!). He stated that Chris O'Connor is a 'really good bloke.' However, when I spelt out the stonewalling of the Rushmore case, Robert Osmotherly 's face twitched, and he became visibly uncomfortable. I had never seen Robert Osmotherly react in this way.

It was soon after this that very strange events began to occur.

On one occasion Robert Osmotherly was on the phone to his 'boss' (of Network 10). When his boss realized that I was present he began to speak aggressively, not knowing that I could hear him. He was saying, 'put her on the phone to me, I'll sort her out!' Of course, I found this all to be very strange as I had never even met this man before. However, when Robert Osmotherly apologised on behalf of his boss, I accepted it and put it out of my mind - again, because at that time I trusted him.

I had recently purchased a very cheap country property that I planned to use as a retreat for abused children. I invited the board members to view the site. None attended, however Robert Osmotherly said that he wanted to go - alone with me. He said he had set aside the whole day for it and was putting me under enormous pressure to go with him. I felt very uncomfortable about it as he had insisted on a number of details.

First, it had to be a complete secret. I wasn't even allowed to tell my parents that I was going, let alone where I was going. Second, he had to drive. I wasn't even allowed to drive my car to the station and for us to drive together from there (my car had to stay at my unit carpark). And third, Robert Osmotherly insisted on picking me up from my unit before daybreak. This was unnecessary as the trip only takes two-hours. Of course, all of these bizarre 'conditions' and the huge pressure that Robert Osmotherly was putting me under made me feel extremely wary. With my parents' help I made up an excuse at the very last minute and did not go.

However, if I had done as Robert Osmotherly had wanted and if anything had happened to me that day, I could have gone missing without a trace.

Sammy's relationship to Network 10

'Sammy,' the 12-year-old-girl from Rushmore, was a main victim of the sexual abuse being perpetrated against children in the town. She referred to the offender (a man in his 60's) as her 'boyfriend,' and her close friends knew of the sexual activities between her and the man. The offender also happened to be the best friend of her father.

I was asked to provide support to Sammy, and in one session it became apparent that Sammy's personality had been totally fragmented. In her words, she was like 'a house with mirrors everywhere, smashed into broken bits.' It was later that I learned about the use by powerful secret societies of trauma-based mind control, sexual abuse and satanic ritual to force children to create 'alter personalities.' Other information from Sammy has led me to believe that she has been subjected to all these forms of abuse.

Sammy also told me that her relative takes her to Queensland (Australia) 'whenever I want' and that she can get 'whatever I want, too.' It was only later that I learned of the immense significance of what Sammy was telling me. Sammy's relative is a Board member of Network 10, who is based in Queensland. It is my belief that Sammy was being used in Network 10's production of child pornography, both in Victoria and Queensland**.**

Here is another example of the police's failure to investigate a case with ominous connections to Network 10. In particular, Detective Senior Sergeant Chris O'Connor's unit that has been established specifically and exclusively to investigate such cases well and truly ensured that this case would go nowhere.

After two sessions with Sammy I was told that the school had 'received complaints' that I had 'brainwashed the children' and the support sessions were terminated.

More Connections - the Cult in Rushmore

I was to learn later that there is a Satanic cult operating in Rushmore. I learned this from two independent sources. One was from a Christian woman who was raised in the town and who since had moved elsewhere. The other was from an adult survivor of the cult, Mick. The Satanic cult is very powerful within the town and was headed up by the most powerful and influential families of the town. One of the members owned and operated the photographic studio in the town. Furthermore, Jeff Kennett, the powerful politician mentioned previously, has significant 'business operations' extremely close to Rushmore, and he was driven (by his driver) to this location every week.

Mick's Experiences

'Mick' was introduced to the satanic cult as a very young child by an extended relative. Mick informed me of many experiences he was subjected to as a child in this cult. From everything that I have been told by Mick, the cult appears to be the Illuminati operating in Australia. Mick now suffers from MPD/DID but has survived his experiences remarkably well considering the traumas he has been through.

As a child Mick was forced to attend blood-rituals, where animals and small children were sacrificed, and their blood and organs consumed. Mick was required to clean up the blood after these rituals. The children and babies were street children or were taken from orphanages, so that they could not be traced, and no-one would know, or care, if they went missing. The rituals were spoken in Latin and were clearly satanic. The rituals took place at various locations, including Rushmore. Mick and other children would be driven to the rituals in the boots of cars.

The members of the cult were extremely powerful members of society. There were numerous politicians (mainly from the Liberal Party). These people would often speak of important events before they would actually occur. Mick was also sexually abused by Graham Kennedy, the famous television personality and professional partner of Bert Newton.

Mick was one of the many children who were used to 'host' parties of the cult members. At these parties the children acted as waiters and were naked. Many of the adults, but not all, would wear masks at these parties. After the food was served the adults would have sex with the children. Children who tried to escape were killed, often in front of the other children in order to control the children through fear. Once Mick and another child had tried to escape but were caught. The other child was murdered by having her head smashed open with a rock. Her body was then dumped in a nearby mineshaft. Mick was spared the same fate, as he was told that he was the 'chosen one,' selected to carry on the traditions of the group.

Mick was forced to participate in the production of child pornography, including movies as well as still photographs. This involved sexual activity with other children as well as adults. He would get paid a small amount for his sexual ‘services,’ while the relative who brought him to the events would get paid a large amount of money. As he got older, Mick was no longer used for sexual purposes by the group but was required to recruit new younger children. When he was old enough (in his 20's), Mick was able to escape the group, but they continue to contact him with threats.

Robert Osmotherly's ‘Religion’

During my association with Robert Osmotherly I got to know him quite well. One day he informed me of his "religious" beliefs. These were the opposite of mine (as I am a Christian). I was also informed by one of his colleagues in the media industry that Bob's ‘religion’ is ‘weird shit.’ At the time I had not heard of the Illuminati and it is only now that I realise that Robert Osmotherly is an active and dedicated member of the Australian Illuminati. The symbolism used in Network 10 promotional material is totally consistent with that of the Illuminati, such as the key colours - blue and gold, and key imagery involving flames.

Telephone Interference and Intimidation Begins

It was after reporting the events at Rushmore to Robert Osmotherly that unusual events began to occur. My phone line began clicking, and the voice-mail service recorded the sounds of a tape clicking over (note that voicemail does not use tapes for recording so the tape was from another source). Two of my organisations' staff members had their cars broken into on the same night.

In one car, the book ‘The Clocks’ by Agatha Christie was on the front seat. The book is the story of a series of murders where the only evidence left at each murder scene is a clock. On the front seat of the other staff member's car was a broken clock. Nothing was stolen from either car. On one occasion I purposely said over the phone that I kept all of my files in the backyard shed (this was not true, I just wanted to test the security of the telephone line). Soon after, the back shed was broken into.

Board Members Propose a Name-Change

At one board meeting, the head of the Agricultural Society, proposed to launch the organisation, despite the fact that it had been operating for nearly two years. He had three ideas. The first was that a rodeo would be organised, and whenever a rider fell from their horse or bull, money would be donated. Thus, it would be ‘money for every bruised butt.’

The second proposal was to organise a ‘beauty pageant’ for 12-year-old girls. There would be an award given for ‘the prettiest girl on the shiniest pony.’ A photo of her on her horse would be used as a centre-page-spread in the leading newspaper (courtesy of the Editor-In-Chief contact). The third proposal was to have a photo of sexually abused children in an ‘animal birthing centre.’ This photo would also be published in the leading newspaper.

The Ag Society head also proposed a name-change. He proposed to change the name of the organisation to 'Shine.' I did not want to do this, and the members of the Board put me under incredible pressure to adopt this name-change.

It was only later that I learnt about the Illuminati connections and the significance of their symbolism and language. 'Shine' is a very significant Illuminati term.

Realisation Dawns

It was at this point that I realised that something was dreadfully wrong. I rejected all of the proposed ideas (very politely, but firmly). I also called for all outstanding Criminal Records Checks to be undertaken immediately. The Criminal Records Check had been designed only to identify whether a person had committed any sexual assaults against children or had any involvement in related offences, such as child pornography. Therefore, if a person had smoked marijuana in their university days, this would not be revealed in the Criminal Record Check.

This was a policy that I had insisted on right from the start (nearly two years ago), however Robert Osmotherly had given numerous excuses every time I had requested his. He even went so far as to suggest that he would organise it "on the sly" using his "contacts in the force". I did not pursue that option and instead gave the Board members two weeks to complete their forms and submit them. Robert Osmotherly, while initially embracing the policy at the start, ultimately refused to submit a Criminal Records Check.

The Significance of Shine

I discovered that there is an Australian Internet-based group called 'Shine'. The site includes a membership section where members are able to exchange photos etc, including ‘S&M’ and ‘hard-core Bert Newton style.’ It is a child pornography club that operates similar to the notorious Wonderland club. I noted the code-names used by the operators of the Shine site, one of which was Natas (Satan backwards). I went to the Network 10 site and entered a secret section on the site (which members of the public would never know about). It asked for the password, so I typed in Natas, which took me to another level. It then asked for the next level password, which I didn't have. The computer then went berserk and was almost impossible to turn off. I managed to do so only by pulling out all of the connections. Soon after this, the Internet site for Network 10 was shut down and remained shut down for a number of months, which is rather unusual given that Network 10 is such a large company.

After that year, the Department of Education put on a concert involving thousands of children. They chose to call it 'Shine'. This was an interesting choice of title, given my experience and other people's experiences of the Department of Education protecting pedophile teachers.

A further interesting connection was that Robert Osmotherly and RS organised a meeting between us and the senior managers of the Department of Education. When we all met, the men acted as if they did not know each other and were meeting for the first time (exchanging business cards, etc). However, when the men thought I was gone (I was in fact standing just out of their sight), it was very clear that they not only knew each other, but that they knew each other extremely well. They were saying things such as ‘Great to see you again, mate!’ and slapping each other on the back!

Escape from Robert Osmotherly and the Pedophile Board

After I discovered what was going on (at least, I started to discover what was going on) I knew I had to break away from Robert Osmotherly, RS and the people they had put on the Board of Management. The AGM was coming up and I organised for my family to attend. We did this secretly, as we knew that the phone lines were being monitored. On the night of the AGM, the board members were visibly shocked when they saw that members of my family were attending.

It transpired that, rather than undertake a Criminal Records Check, the members of the Board had planned to resign on the spot. This served two purposes; (1) they avoided having to undergo the Criminal Records Check; (2) the organisation would effectively fold as there would be no-one to take up the Board member positions. This is exactly what Robert Osmotherly had wanted from the beginning, but especially since I had begun to uncover the corrupt pedophile police activities and the crimes in Rushmore.

However, as my family had attended the meeting, they were able to take up the positions on the Board, and the organisation did not fold. On the surface, the meeting was very amicable and civilized, Robert Osmotherly tried to remain calm, but he ended up storming out of the meeting half-an-hour early.

Mother Receives Death Threat from Robert Osmotherly

My family and I all waited for half-an-hour after the meeting had closed (to recover!) before leaving. We had all come in different cars, and my mother had parked her car in a nearby car park. She walked to her car by herself. We had not learnt to be security-conscious at that stage. As she approached her car, she was surprised to see Robert Osmotherly there (he had left the meeting half an hour early). He then approached her and said, 'You had better watch yourself. If you don't, someone might just run over you.' He then drove off very suddenly and another board member followed in a different car.

My mother and father told me about this incident, which had left my mother very shaken. Soon after I received a message from Robert Osmotherly saying, 'I only want to help.'

I was infuriated at this man, so I phoned his office and left a message with his Personal Assistant, Pam Cullen (I didn't know the significance of her husband's relationship with Robert Osmotherly and Network 10 at this time) saying, 'Bob has said he just wants to help me. Could you please tell him that it would be helpful if he could undertake the Criminal Records Check that he has avoided for so long. After all, it is designed to only reveal if the person has committed sex offences against children or related offences, like the production of child pornography. Oh, could you also tell him it would be very helpful if he did not threaten members of my family. Death threats against my family really aren't helpful. If you could pass this message on, that would be great. Thanks.'

Soon after leaving this message, my mother received a letter from Robert Osmotherly. In the letter he stated that he was only joking when he told her to watch out or she'd end up being run over. Yeah, real funny joke.

Report to Department of Education - Complaints and Investigation Unit

After these experiences I made a complaint to the Complaints and Investigations Unit of the Department of Education. My complaint related to the conduct of Rushmore pedophile teacher, which amounted to repeated acts of misconduct against students, and the police investigation at Rushmore.

Interestingly, the head of the Department of Education Complaints and Investigations Unit, PG, was at the very first meeting I had to outline my complaint. It was after this meeting that the material, which I had been assured by PG would remain strictly confidential, was given to Chris O'Connor and EI (who subsequently paid a visit to the new President of the Board in an effort to pressure me to drop the complaint). PG then left that posting, but 'coincidentally' was brought back to it to finish off the case involving the pedophile teacher.

PG wrote a letter to me exonerating Rushmore teacher on all counts 'because the witnesses (which I had provided) cannot substantiate your claims.' As you know, of the eight witnesses that I had provided to corroborate the case, only one had been contacted - and she re-confirmed the concerns about the pedophile teacher. In fact, she stated that she was amazed that it had taken so long for the matter to be investigated! She was shocked to discover that Rushmore teacher had been exonerated and that the Department of Education had LIED about her testimony!

After I did the telephone round of the witnesses I had listed and learnt that only one had been contacted, I phoned PG to ask how many of the witnesses had in fact been contacted. He said that he didn't know but that he would call me back ‘within 24 hours.’ Needless to say, I did not receive a return phone call from pedophile-protecting PG.

I truly believe that if the parents of children attending Victorian schools knew the extent to which pedophile-teachers are being protected by the Department of Education, they would boycott the education system altogether. And if they knew the suffering that some children and families have had to endure as a result of the pedophile-protecting actions of the Department of Education, they would boycott the system on those grounds too.

I am convinced if the parents of children attending the northern region secondary college knew of the abhorrent behaviour of the man teaching their children, and his shocking and extensive history of abusing students, there would not be a single child enrolled in that school in the future!

Leaked Document

After numerous meetings concerning the complaint (which I was told would be kept strictly confidential, particularly from Chris O’Connor and his unit), a document was leaked to me from within the Department of Education. This document revealed that the Department planned to absolve the Rushmore teacher from all complaints. The investigation had been totally and completely corrupted in order to absolve the pedophile teacher.

The grounds for this were that ‘no complaints of a sexual nature have been made against the Rushmore teacher since 1995.’ This was unbelievable! So, the pedophile teacher's invitations for students to meet his penis after school were not considered to be sexual! Also, it was stated that as the schools had taken action in relation to each case, there was nothing more to be done. So, it was therefore acceptable for a teacher to commit repeated acts of serious misconduct, against multiple students, at different schools.

It was very clear that this teacher was being actively protected.

Theft of Department of Education Files

I left a message with the Minister for Education to inform her that I had received information to indicate that the investigation had been seriously corrupted. Soon after, the unit that I lived in was broken into and files containing information about the Department of Education's protection of pedophile teachers were stolen.

This included a letter from a mother pleading for help as her son had been sexually assaulted by a teacher and was now suicidal. She wanted my help as the Department of Education was covering up for this pedophile teacher. Nothing else was stolen from the unit.

Visit to the New President of the Board

A new President was appointed to the Board, along with other new members. One day, the new President of the Board received a visit from one of the workers in the child protection field. This woman, EI, approached the new President and told him that Detective Senior Sergeant Chris O’Connor knew about the complaint I had made to the Department of

Education (indicating a significant breach of confidentiality). She told the new President to cease any association with me and my organisation 'for the sake of your professional reputation.' The incident spooked the new President enough for him to telephone me in an effort to get me to drop my complaint against Chris O'Connor and his unit, which I refused to do. Thankfully, the new President had the integrity and courage to stick with our organisation despite the pressure he was being put under.

Anonymous reports to Crime Stoppers

Approximately 12 months had passed when I decided I would make an anonymous call to Crime Stoppers, a phone-in service where people can give anonymous tips to police about crimes. I telephoned Crime Stoppers from a public phone and informed the woman, Katie, of the pedophile network that was operating in Melbourne. She asked me to call back again with further information and I did so.

I told Katie that the network was operating under police protection and at that stage had not given her the police officers' names who were implicated. She then asked me to provide the names of the police officers who were involved. I told her that I was very nervous to do this, as my family and I had suffered very negative repercussions as a result of this group, and I didn't want us to have to go through any more traumas.

She spoke to her boss and he promised me that the information I provided would not go to the police officers of concern, and that the information would go straight to the Ethical Standards Division (ESD), which is the same as Internal Investigations. As she and her boss had promised that the information would go straight to ESD, I gave her the names of the officers.

When I called back again to find out how the case was proceeding, I was shocked when Katie told me that her boss had forced her to send the information to Chris O'Connor 's unit! The information had gone directly to Chris O'Connor!! Katie apologised and appeared to be genuinely distressed at what had happened.

I asked to speak to her boss, and I told him that he had promised that the material would go to ESD, and he exclaimed: 'Do you realise how serious your allegations are?' I replied that of-course I did - that's why I wanted the information to go to ESD, and not to the police officers of concern! He said, 'We don't pass on information to ESD.' Katie then got back on the phone and was clearly very upset. She implored me to contact ESD and give them the information myself.

Intimidation and Harassment Begins Again

Soon after this, my family and I were subjected to harassment and surveillance. For example, nearly every day there would be a car out the front of my parent's home (where I had now moved to, for safety reasons), with two men just sitting there. The men often had large walkie-talkies. The cars often had large, thick aerials. Whenever a member of the family walked out of the house the people in the cars would speed off. However, sometimes we were followed by the people in the cars.

The cars were usually very flashy, like large four-wheel-drives or dark shiny sedans. I was often followed by men in white shiny cars with the number plates beginning with VHA and was to later learn that these cars were often used as government vehicles.

Sometimes I would come out of a location, say a friend's house, and there would be a man in one of the flashy vehicles just waiting there. It was very menacing and very stressful for my family and me. We also received unusual phone-calls at that time, clicking noises over the phone and sometimes the phone-calls were actively intercepted with heavy breathing or laughter or shuddering screams. My incoming mail was very clearly being interfered with.

Visits from the Mormons

One day my mother and I came out from my parent's house and there was a group of men waiting in a car out the front of our house again. They sped off when we came out, but this time I got in my car and followed them. As I drove towards them (they had turned their car around and were facing me) they flashed their lights at me.

I drove around the cul-de-sac and was shocked when I got to my parent's house again. The men were talking to my mother from in their car. I called for her to get away from the men and she replied, ‘It’s OK dear, they're Mormons.’ I did not believe they were Mormons and I held my hand on the car horn and chased them out of the street. A licence check on their car however, seemed to indicate that they really were Mormons, or were using a Mormon-registered car.

I did not think they would ever return (especially if they really were Mormons!). However, two weeks later I was getting into my car and saying goodbye to my mother. The same men approached my mother, not realising I was in the car. They asked if they could ask her a few questions about me.

I then stuck my head out of the car window and said, ‘If you've got any questions you can ask me!’ They were very surprised that I was there and asked, ‘Why did you chase us out of the street that day. We are just Mormons.’ I replied, ‘Because some of your behaviour is most un-Mormon-like!’ The man then said, ‘Like what?’ and I replied, ‘Like flashing your lights at me.’ He then said, ‘Oh, you mean when we were taking photos of you? You didn't like us taking photos of you?’ The 'Mormons' had just admitted to taking photos of me, without my knowledge or consent. I told them to stay away from me and my family.

Soon after this I saw the same men in a different car. It was a dark, flashy sedan, similar to those that were often sitting in our street. I got the licence plate of this car and gave it to a trusted police office. He told me that the car was owned by a debt-collecting agency, or more likely, a surveillance company as they often used debt-collecting as a front. The owner of the car, however not one of the men who had been seen in the car, was a Mormon. The Mormons were very clearly conducting surveillance on my family and me.

Reports to Deputy Ombudsman

After the problems with Crime Stoppers, I decided to call the Ombudsman's office and pass on the information I had to them, including the incident with Crime Stoppers. The Deputy Ombudsman put me under a great deal of pressure to meet with him and hand over all of my information to him for investigation. I said that I wanted to meet with the new Chief Commissioner of Police, Christine Nixon, as she was dedicated to flushing out bent police. Deputy Ombudsman told me that he would try to arrange this. However, he reported that it was not possible and again put me under great pressure to give all of my information to him for investigation.

I finally did succeed in getting an appointment with the Chief Commissioner. Contrary to the Deputy Ombudsman's claim that she could not meet with me, she had never been informed that I had tried to get a meeting with her through him. She was extremely annoyed when she had been left out of the loop in this way, and the incident just added to my suspicions about the motives of the Deputy Ombudsman.

Thefts of Evidence

While I was reporting information to the Deputy Ombudsman over the phone anonymously, two thefts of evidence occurred. On the first occasion, the file was stolen from the boot of the car. I had left it there for two hours while I attended to a matter at a school. When I returned, I discovered that it had been taken. I rushed home to check that the copy left at my parent's house was still there. I discovered that my parent's house had been broken into, the dogs drugged, and the file stolen from a hiding place. Much was taken, including the letter of admission from Robert Osmotherly (of the threat to my mother). Luckily, I had kept a third copy with somebody else.

Fires at Network 10 Studio, Melbourne GPO and Celebrity’s Home

At this time a number of significant fires occurred. One was at a studio used by Network 10. Interestingly, the copy of the network's recent multi-million-dollar production had ‘coincidentally' been removed from the studio two days before the fire. All that survived the fire was a Sesame Street character, which took centre place in a photo of the scene in the leading newspaper's report.

Within a week there was another fire, this time at the Melbourne General Post Office. All of the post offices boxes (and their contents) were destroyed, though little else was affected. Finally, again within a week, a suspicious house fire occurred in the home of a well-known television celebrity. This celebrity is a member of the same secret society as RS. All that was destroyed in the fire was a collection of videos and photographs. Interestingly, the comment of the celebrity was, ‘It can all be put to bed now.’ A strange thing to say after your house has just gone up in smoke.

A further interesting incident occurred at Melbourne's largest brothel. An armed intruder stole a relatively small amount of cash from the brothel but was led to the safe where videotapes of clients engaging in sexual activities were kept. Video tapes of clients were ‘stolen,’ including those of Jeff Kennett, a frequent client of this establishment. A reliable contact informed me that the theft was actually an ‘inside job.’

Within a two-week period, thousands of videos had gone up in smoke or destroyed.

These events occurred at the time of the reports being made to Ian Snow. It is also very interesting to note that at that time, the British section of Interpol was in Victoria conducting a ‘secret’ investigation into child pornography.

Children Tortured or Die in Mysterious Circumstances

It was also around this time that a number of children connected to the child pornography industry were either killed in suspicious circumstances, or tortured. I was working with a young girl and was very concerned for her safety at this time. I told a trusted police officer of my concerns for this girl. A week later she had been rushed to hospital. An unregistered ‘tank’ (her word, meaning a very solidly built car) had come out of nowhere and slammed into the car in which she was a passenger. Thankfully, she survived.

Fears for My Life

I had managed to arrange a meeting with the Chief Commissioner of Police (this was no small feat, as there had been many stumbling blocks, and it appeared that there were people actively trying to prevent such a meeting). In the weeks leading up to the meeting I was in real fear for my life.

On one occasion I came home late at night and saw two men sitting in a car just up from my parent's house. As no-one was home at my parent's house, I drove to the top of the hill to stay with my friends. They did not hear the doorbell, and while I was standing in the street wondering where I would go, the men in the car drove up the hill very slowly, looking for me.

I had all of the evidence with me (since the thefts I did not let it out of my sight) and had to quickly hide in the bushes. The men drove up and down the street no less than five times looking for me. I had to cut through the backs of homes in order to get to another friend's house, where I stayed the night. They also witnessed the men driving up and down the street looking for me.

The next evening, I heard and saw the same car drive up the hill. As no-one was going to be home that evening, I quickly got in my car and drove to another friend's house where I stayed the night. The next morning the friends discovered that their front light had been smashed in. No other houses in the street had been affected. However, the neighbours did report hearing strange cars driving up and down the quiet street late that night. It was after this that I wondered if I would live to be able to hand over all the information I had to the Chief Commissioner.

Meeting with Christine Nixon, Chief Commissioner of Victoria Police

I attended the meeting with Christine Nixon, Chief Commissioner of Victorian Police, along with the trusted police officer who had investigated the house break in and thefts of the files. The Chief Commissioner believed me and was very concerned. She organised for the matter to be thoroughly investigated. The Chief Commissioner asked me if I wanted police protection for my family, which I declined (sometimes that results in more trouble). She told me I could contact her office whenever necessary.

Soon after this my unit was broken into and one of my collectable dolls had the eyes painted over. I phoned the Chief Commissioner's Personal Assistant and let her know that I would be sending the Chief a letter via registered mail. At the start of the conversation the line was clearly intercepted, which the Personal Assistant heard. She told me to call her back from a public phone.

Interestingly, after letting her know that a letter was coming to her via registered mail, the Chief Commissioner did not receive it. I called some weeks later after having received no response and was told that the letter had somehow been intercepted! All letters to the Chief are signed for, and the person who had signed for the registered letter I had sent was not known in the police force.

However, after two days of the Chief Commissioner demanding to know where the letter went, it turned up with a post-it note attached, 'Sorry, didn't know where to send this.' Well, to the person it is addressed to might be a start!

Ethical Standards Department (ESD) Investigation Gets off to a Questionable Start

I had a meeting to begin my statement to the Ethical Standards Department. It was clear that the officer appointed to the case did not believe what I had to report. While he went to have a smoke, he (accidentally) left me with the report that had been written by another police officer in response to my own report (that had been submitted to the Chief).

I could see why the police officer I was dealing with was so dismissive of what I had to say. The report discredited everything that I had reported. It made a mockery of my claim that Bert Newton and other high-profile individuals were involved in pedophilia and stated that there was nothing to support my claims of intimidation and harassment. This was despite the fact that there were numerous witnesses to these events.

The author went on to say that an investigation must be seen to be conducted, however, because if the information was to be made public there would be a public outcry. That is, make it look like it is being investigated, but don't do anything!

Even more disturbing was the specific recommendation that a Detective be appointed to conduct the investigation. The detective was a close friend and colleague of Chris O'Connor's and had in fact worked with him in his unit for many years. Indeed, he had only left Chris O'Connor 's unit three months ago to be transferred to ESD. It was very interesting timing. At the same time Chris O'Connor receives information that someone is dobbing him in for misconduct, his close friend and colleague gets a transfer to ESD and ends up with the job of investigating his best mate! How very convenient.

The Deputy Ombudsman Gets the Investigation

After this turn of events (I reported it all to the Chief Commissioner), the Deputy Ombudsman was given the investigation.

Child Care Centre, Pedophile Network, Police Pedophiles and Network 10

The Deputy Ombudsman informed me briefly about a case in the early 1990's. I did my own research into this case and discovered that it involved a creche in the Mornington Peninsula region. A high-profile group of men were sexually abusing, torturing and hypnotising the children. The owner and his wife took the children out of the centre during the day to the homes of the rich and powerful, where the children would be sexually abused, tortured and filmed. The children were also subjected to satanic ritual abuse. This case was almost identical to those in the USA (Little Rascals, McMartin and others).

The offenders were wealthy and powerful men in the community and included police officers.

Video copies of the children being abused were obtained by Network 10 (how interesting it is that Network 10 should be involved). However, when the story went public, the video tapes went 'missing' and the police claimed that they never received them.

Ultimately, the police did not take any action against the owner of the creche, on the grounds that the children were too young to be viewed as credible witnesses. While there was conclusive evidence that four of the children had been raped or sexually abused while at the day care centre, the owner was never charged.

A concerned parent with links to the underworld offered the head of a bikie group $10,000 to inflict enough damage so as to ensure that the owner of the creche could never sexually abuse another child again. The head of the bikie group said that they knew about the owner of the creche, and what he was up to, however, they could not do the job. Much as they would like to, the owner had protection from the very highest levels. He was untouchable.

When the Mornington Peninsula child-care-centre case broke, an investigative journalist infiltrated an elite child-pornography and pedophile club based in Melbourne. Its members were all wealthy and elite members of Melbourne society. It was chaired by the CEO of a major Melbourne Charitable Trust. This article included information on their use of telephone monitoring, courtesy of the group's contacts within Telecom.

The children from the Mornington Peninsula child-care-centre reported being taken to a 'pink' room with a spa and other significant decor. It was in a house where the children were sexually abused, tortured and filmed (amongst other locations). Three children independently identified to the investigators the house that they had been taken to.

Sure enough, the room had been painted a dusty-pink colour, and it had a spa and the other decor items described by the children. However, as you now know, no further action was taken against the owner of the child-care-centre, nor others suspected of being involved in the ring. What is most significant however, is that the pink house WAS REGISTERED TO THE VICTORIA POLICE!!

I am now working with some of the young survivors of the child-care centre and their families. It is clear that a cover-up of the highest order occurred in 1992, and the children and their families are still suffering from it.

Present Days

All of this material is currently being investigated by the Deputy Ombudsman. However, the investigation has been marred by suspicious activity. Perhaps the most significant example is the conduct of the police officer Ian Soft appointed to head the investigation: Detective Jock Westland.

My colleague, a counsellor who worked on the 1992 Mornington Peninsula Creche case, provided Jock Westland with information pertaining to a video tape that depicted police actively involved in the satanic-ritual-sexual abuse of children from the creche. This is highly significant information. However, I discovered from one of the other investigators that Jock Westland had decided not to pass this information on for further investigation. In fact, his notes read, ‘This witness (my colleague) has no information of significance.’

In addition to this, Jock Westland refused to investigate my claims of intimidation and harassment on the grounds that I was ‘paranoid.’ This is despite the fact that there are many witnesses to certain events who can corroborate my claims, and indeed, several have provided Statutory Declarations to do so.

Jock Westland has been under ‘investigation’ for these actions for two months now, and I am yet to find out whether he will continue to be involved in this investigation. If he remains on the case, we can be sure that this so-called investigation is just another example of high-level white-wash and cover-up of organised pedophilia and child pornography in Australia.

A final note on the Department of Education investigation. I received a letter stating that the Rushmore teacher had been cleared of all charges, as the witnesses could not substantiate my claims. However, of the pool of eight witnesses I had provided ONLY ONE HAD BEEN CONTACTED and she clearly re-affirmed the concerns about the Rushmore teacher. Another cover-up of the highest order and complete protection given to one of the untouchable pedophile elite.

* * *

OMBUDSMAN BASHED & OTHER ANOMOLIES

- Norman and Alison Shulver ran the Mornington Child Care Centre and Nursery School, in Parwan Crescent, Mornington, a bayside suburb of Victoria.
- The Police Child Exploitation Unit investigated and determined that 24 children alleged abuse while attending the Centre. The State Government Office of Preschool and Child Care inquiry heard evidence that in 1992 while attending the centre, a number of children were taken in a car to a nearby house, undressed by adults,

photographed and videotaped while naked, forced to play sexual games, and urinated and defecated upon by adults. The adults wore masks and 'funny clothes' including police uniforms.

- Ann Sherry, who chaired the 1992 inquiry by the Office of Preschool and Child Care found that the Shulvers were not appropriate people to be running a childcare centre, having at least allowed the abuse to take place. She further found, 'There is a substantial amount of evidence that the person or persons who actually committed the acts of abuse may have included Norman Shulver.'
- In 2002, Victorian Police Chief Commissioner Christine Nixon referred complaints to the Victorian Ombudsman Dr Barry Perry. Shortly before he was due to report his findings, Ombudsman Barry Perry was bashed and left for dead.
- His successor's 2004 report alleged serious misconduct on the part of Chris O'Connor and his mate, the ESD investigator, including failure to obtain witness statements and evidence, and mishandling evidence. Police denied speaking to witnesses or receiving evidence, until telephone records proved this was a lie. Police denied receiving a videotape of men in police uniforms raping the preschool children in a Mornington house registered to a member of the Victorian Police, and the videotape subsequently went missing from the police evidence locker.
- Chris O'Connor (head of the Child Exploitation Unit and the Sexual Crimes Squad) and the other detective who threatened and intimidated child victim-witnesses, were destined for transfer until the Victorian Police union threatened industrial action. In 2005, Simon Overland, Assistant Commissioner for Victorian Police, said the findings against the two detectives were 'minor failings' and he took no further action against them.
- The Ombudsman's report was never published, on the grounds it 'would identify the child victims.'

VICTORIAN LAW CHANGED TO SILENCE DR REINA MICHAELSON

Dyson Devine and Vivienne Legg ran a website called *gaiaguys* in which they typically covered topics including environmental issues and government corruption. In 2005, the Melbourne OTO (Ordo Templi Orientis) used an interstate ACT judge to sue the website owners for publishing Reina Michaelson's aforementioned experiences on their site. On 28 June 2005, the ACT Magistrate's Court ordered Devine and Legg to remove the article and pay the OTO $30,000. The OTO subsequently repeated this tactic of using ACT judges to silence anyone from any state who posted anything negative about them on the internet, until a defendant won their case.

In 2006, Victoria's Labor government amended the *Religious and Racial Tolerance Act of 2001* specifically to target Dr Reina Michaelson. The *Victorian Civil and Administrative Tribunal* tested the amendment by hearing a case the OTO brought against Reina Michaelson. The VCAT (Victorian Civil and Administrative Tribunal) wrongly determined the OTO met the Act's definition of a religion. Thelema, which the OTO practised, technically met the definition, but the OTO did not. Reina Michaelson's lawyer ignored this fact and ruined her case. Consequently, the VCAT decided Dr Michaelson's account of the Victorian pedophile network religiously vilified OTO members and ordered her to remove the document from the internet. Reina had been set up for this court case because she did not have control over the websites that published the document and never gave her permission for the document to be posted. On 28 November 2007, VCAT Judge Harbison sentenced Devine and Legg to 9 months prison for contempt of court for not removing the document from their gaiaguys website.

The alleged pedophile network was never investigated, the alleged perpetrators were never charged, and the alleged victims were silenced via threats, torture or murder. Norman and Alison Shulver, who ran the *Mornington Child Care Centre and Nursery School*, resettled in Brisbane. Dr Reina Michaelson fled for her life to the Northern Territory.

* * *

NSW Pedophile Network

While Reina Michaelson was battling pedophiles in Victoria, I was confronting an identical pedophile network in New South Wales. The following articles that I wrote for *Independent Australia* online news journal capture my experiences:

> **NSW Education Department Covers up Teacher's Alleged 18-Year Child Sex Abuse Spree**
>
> Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 25 June 2013.
>
> *The Royal Commission into Child Sexual Abuse, which has commenced private hearings in Brisbane this month, is expected to shed light on one of Tweed Shire's darkest secrets — horrifying abuse, systematic cover-ups and institutional failure and corruption in NSW schools and the police service. Parent and whistle-blower Fiona Barnett fronts the Commission tomorrow — here she tells part of this story*

ON 14 MARCH 2006, Jill Carlon, Chief Investigator for Employee Performance & Conduct of the Department of Education and Training, sent concerned Tweed Shire parents a letter:

> *I am writing to advise you of the finalisation of the investigation and follow up action taken in respect to allegations that a teacher at Centaur Primary School, acted in a manner that could amount to improper conduct against students... In reviewing the investigation, all the available information has been carefully considered and, as a result, steps have been taken to ensure that the person will no longer be employed or involved in school, TAFE or student-related activities.*

The letter brought to an end, at least for the parents involved, an 18-year nightmare and an alleged reign of terror by that teacher — of physical, emotional and sexual assault and abuse. However, many questions still remain, including how this man was allowed to be exposed to vulnerable children over such a long period? How has this matter been covered up for so long? How was he able to continue teaching in NSW independent schools, and in public schools just a few miles away across the border in Queensland? Why have NSW police consistently refused to properly investigate his activities? And why has he never faced criminal prosecution?

The teacher in question was Gary Willis, a middle-aged man who transferred to Northern NSW in the late 1980s. Despite allegedly having no prior experience in special needs, Willis received a 3-year position at East Murwillumbah Primary School's Special Education Unit. Almost immediately Willis began working at the School, allegations of inappropriate behaviour emerged — even directly in front of parents. For instance, one outraged mother related, in a written statement, that Gary Willis had allegedly exposed his penis and urinated directly in front of children, parents, and teachers during a school excursion:

> *Gary Willis made no attempt to be discrete [sic] or hide his penis from any of us and grinned the whole time he was urinating. I was horrified that a teacher would conduct himself in this manner in front of young children, so I reported the incident to the principal, Al Gudgeon.*

Principal Gudgeon asked the parent to tell him specific times and dates of the incidents, apparently so that he could report them. The mother provided the requested information, but said the principal never followed through with the complaint:

> *I became very frustrated and angry with Al Gudgeon because I believed he was not taking any of these matters seriously and trying to cover up all complaints. I felt so strongly about the lack of protection and moral obligation to all children attending East Murwillumbah Primary School because of Al Gudgeon and Gary Willis, I transferred my children to another school.*

In the classroom, Gary Willis was responsible for the most vulnerable children imaginable — children who were intellectually disabled, autistic, unable to walk and unable to speak. Former students, parents, and teachers allege that Gary Willis sexually and physically assaulted these disabled children. Witnesses, including other teachers, also say they witnessed Gary Willis being violent toward students, including allegedly ramming a wheelchair bound child into a wall and thrusting another disabled boy’s head into a sink. Two teachers stated that Gary Willis constantly refused to allow female aids to toilet the female students and that he insisted on doing this delicate task himself. Arguably even more shocking, witnesses allege that Gary Willis taught mainstream schoolboys to sexually assault the disabled girls. Medical evidence, police interviews and local DOCS intervention appear to support this claim. Police, DOCS, and a paediatrician concluded that two girls had been sexually assaulted at East Murwillumbah Primary School; Gary Willis was named in both cases. Parents subsequently watched him being seized by police from the school for questioning.

How was he allowed to allegedly perform these heinous acts almost entirely unchecked? To begin with, it seems his line manager, East Murwillumbah’s Special Needs Unit head Steve Tyler (now deceased), at best turned a blind eye to his alleged activities and, at worst, according to some reports, may have even been an active participant in the abuse.

Numerous witnesses complained to East Murwillumbah Principal Al Gudgeon about these and other abuse allegations. But Al Gudgeon apparently delayed notifying the Education Department and DOCS of the allegations and instead tried to cover the matter up — including by making late night phone calls to parents, where he allegedly threatened them with legal and departmental action if they continued their complaints, amongst other repercussions. To keep the staff quiet, Gudgeon allegedly threatened teachers with dismissal if they spoke to parents about what they had witnessed at the school. What is more, teachers also complained about Al Gudgeon’s own inappropriate behaviour. One described an incident when the principal allegedly used a child to deliver a picture of a penis to a 22-year-old female teachers’ aide, and then complained when his gift was returned.

Parents and staff complained about the child abuse allegations at East Murwillumbah School – verbally, personally, and in writing – to the Education Department’s Head Office in Sydney, to the Lismore Regional Office and to the Cluster Director at the Murwillumbah District Office.

A special needs teacher aide, Debra Edwards, submitted a hand-written complaint (dated 25 July 1991) to Cluster Director John Quill. Mrs Edwards reported catching Gary Willis with a naked, disabled, female student ("AA") on an excursion. In her complaint, Mrs Edwards alleged that she witnessed Gary Willis take the child AA to the men’s toilet during another excursion and doing something to her that made her laugh uncharacteristically while toileting.

On another excursion, she said she witnessed Gary Willis take AA for a lone motorbike ride into the bush and then admit to having toileted her. Mrs Edwards also says she witnessed Willis physically assault children. Debra Edwards never heard from the Education Department regarding her written complaint to the Cluster Director. To her knowledge, neither Principal Al Gudgeon nor the Department ever informed the girl's parents that formal complaints had been made concerning the alleged abuse of their daughter whilst in the care of the East Murwillumbah Primary School. The Department did, however, subsequently ban Gary Willis from approaching the child.

When parents further complained to Cluster Director John Quill that Gary Willis was allegedly sexually abusing their children, Quill concluded that the best outcome parents could hope for was to have the perpetrator transferred to another school.

In response to multiple child abuse complaints, witnesses say the NSW Education Department sent three investigators to East Murwillumbah Primary School to monitor the behaviour of Gary Willis for three weeks. Unfortunately, Gary Willis was allegedly warned that these investigators were coming and so behaved impeccably during the observation period. After concluding their watching brief, the investigators reported that they perceived no problem with Gary Willis. They reached these conclusions despite not having interviewed any parents or staff witnesses.

Parent ‘DM’ stated that she received a phone call from a Sydney solicitor acting on behalf of Gary Willis. The solicitor stated that she was representing Willis in some matter involving ‘AA.’ The solicitor sent a document for DM to sign, which asked her to attest that Gary Willis never hurt her intellectually disabled daughter. But Gary Willis did, allegedly, hurt her daughter — as the former student’s statement reveals:

> *Mr Tyler was watching when Mr Willis put the stick between my legs… Mr Willis put stick in other girls – L… Mr Willis pulls pants down all the time, and Mr Tyler, before he died, he watched him. Mr Willis showed everyone what he’s got. He played with it…*

Teacher Jeff Fallon stated that around 1994 (the same time DM received the phone call from a Sydney solicitor), he received a visit from a frantic Al Gudgeon, who stated that a complaint concerning DM's daughter had ‘gone up a notch’ and was now with the Minister for Education. The principal allegedly asked Fallon whether he possessed a copy of the minutes from meetings he and Gudgeon attended concerning the abuse allegations at the school. Jeff Fallon said the Education Department suspended Gary Willis from teaching in the early 1990s and placed him at Murwillumbah District Office for 12 months while he was being investigated for misconduct.

South Tweed Primary School

In 1991, the NSW Education Department transferred Gary Willis to South Tweed Primary School, where he was assigned to teach infants. Parents and teachers soon complained to the principal about how Gary Willis presented himself and acted around students. For example, one teacher described in a statement his work attire:

> *He wore short ‘ruggers’ with no underpants, and often you could see the cheeks of his bum, his testicles, and his penis hanging out the bottom. He wore thongs and old,*

> *faded stretched round-neck t-shirts. I can't remember ever seeing him dressed differently.*

Parents at the new school soon began complaining about Gary Willis' mistreatment of their children. For instance, a Grade One boy ('E'), told his mother that Gary Willis constantly locked himself with little girls in the class storeroom. Other former students recalled similar incidents:

> *I remember Mr Willis took one or two girls into the classroom storeroom alone and shut the door. He would stay in there for a while. The girls would go into the storeroom with neat hair but would come out with messed up hair. Sometimes the girls would look upset and as though they were about to cry. Mr Willis chose the pretty girls to take into the storeroom.*

'E' also complained that he was being constantly harassed and physically assaulted by Gary Willis. E's mother appealed for help to a friend of hers, Dawn Mitchell. Mrs Mitchell happened to know about Gary Willis from East Murwillumbah Primary School, where she had accompanied DM to meetings with Al Gudgeon. Mrs Mitchell also happened to know the family of an Indigenous boy in Gary Willis's class ('T'). In a signed statement, T recalled being physically and emotionally abused by Gary Willis, who – he alleged – regularly called him 'coon,' 'nigger and 'the black snake.' Two former classmates and one former teacher corroborated T's testimony in writing.

Mrs Mitchell consulted South Tweed Primary School's Aboriginal Liaison Officer / School Counsellor, Joan Sheriff, and relayed the child abuse allegations against Gary Willis that had arisen at Murwillumbah East Primary School. Ms Sheriff apparently reprimanded Mrs Mitchell for making the accusations, but then allegedly said: 'I never did like his short shorts.' The Principal then contacted Mrs Mitchell and arranged a meeting with her, during which Mrs Mitchell reported Gary Willis' extensive history of child abuse allegations.

But just days following the two meetings, Gary Willis supervised a school sleepover attended by infant children. During the sleepover, Gary Willis allegedly sexually assaulted six young girls. The following day, parents, teachers, and students witnessed the girls in a distressed state at school assembly.

Three Tweed South parents complained to the school principal, counsellor and teachers regarding Gary Willis' abuse of children. According to them, their complaints were mishandled and denied. One of the parent's daughter wrote a statement when she was 20:

> *I recall that Gary Willis came to my house out of the blue one night and insisted on getting some takeaway and having dinner with my mother and me. My mother looked shocked at this, and she couldn't get rid of him. In an effort to get him away from our house, my mother suggested we go somewhere else for dinner. We went to Club Banora and had the buffet. All night during this meal, Mr Willis sat me on his lap, played with my hair, and told me how beautiful I was.*

Despite parents' ongoing protest, Gary Willis was allowed to supervise a second school camp at Hastings Point. Again, teachers, parents and students allegedly witnessed Gary Willis visit young girls' tents late into the night.

Parents and teachers complained that Gary Willis allegedly made young female school children change into their sports uniforms in the back of his panel van while he watched. Witnesses also recall Gary Willis taught girls dancing at Tweed Heads South Public School and an occasion in which he supervised these dancers at a combined schools' concert at a local club. During the concert, Gary Willis was allegedly seen refusing to allow parents to change his young dancers backstage, so that he alone changed them.

A Tweed Heads South Public School teacher witnessed complaints about Gary Willis allegedly flood into the school, particularly from Grade 5 and 6 students. When she consulted the principal about these complaints, she was told that 'photographic evidence' was needed before the allegations could be acted on. The teacher stated that Gary Willis was subsequently banned from associating with the older students at the school but was still placed in charge of infants.

In 1992-93, the parents of an 8-year-old child girl in Gary Willis' class phoned their friend, South Tweed teacher 'Ms X' and reported that Willis had just sexually assaulted their daughter 'BB.' Ms X immediately attended the family home and spoke with the victim. Gary Willis had allegedly asked BB and another little girl to stay behind after school that afternoon. He then allegedly took the girls into his classroom storeroom, fondled them, and digitally penetrated them. Consequently, BB suffered bed-wetting and screaming in her sleep. Despite Ms X's pleading, the parents declined to have Gary Willis charged because they did not want to put their daughter through the police and legal system.

Ms X reported the assault to the Principal Genevieve (Geni) Coughlin. The principal allegedly told Ms X to remain silent about the assaults. She also allegedly bullied her, yelled abuse at Ms X through her classroom window. She also subsequently allegedly criticised Ms X's teaching to parents, though many of the same parents responded by supporting Ms X — at least one calling her 'the best teacher ever.' Ms X was pregnant during the worst of this abuse and says she began to experience stress and high blood pressure after these highly stressful experiences.

Ms X complained to the District Inspector at Murwillumbah about Gary Willis and the principal's bullying. The Director allegedly advised Ms X to: 'Tell the people at South Tweed to have enough intestinal fortitude to stand up to her and come to me with their grievances, so I can do something about it.' Ms X's work colleagues shied from following the Inspector's second-hand advice, allegedly out of fear of reprisal.

The NSW Department of Education sent a counsellor to speak with South Tweed teaching staff. Without interviewing either the victim or her parents, the counsellor dismissed Ms X's allegations of child sexual abuse against Gary Willis as being unfounded. The counsellor allegedly told Ms X that she was being irrational, to think of her unborn baby, and she advised the whistle-blower to 'punch a pillow' to relieve her frustration and anger regarding Gary Willis and the principal. Ms X subsequently suffered a nervous breakdown and resigned from the NSW Department of Education altogether. She could not cope with entering a school again for 20 years. The once-passionate teacher concluded:

> *I was the one who the Department said needed counselling, and I was the one who ultimately resigned in frustration, and yet a suspected child sex abuser was left alone in his classroom, teaching.*

Following multiple complaints against Gary Willis at South Tweed Primary School, the NSW Education Department eventually transferred him to the neighbouring Centaur Primary School.

Centaur Primary School

In 1998, when Ms X's youngest child started school at Centaur Primary School, she was appalled to see Gary Willis at the school, still teaching. She immediately consulted the principal Mary-Anne Judge. Ms X told Ms Judge about Gary Willis' history of abusing children and warned that he was not to approach her child. The principal allegedly responded: 'I absolutely understand. I wouldn't have him here if I had any other option. I'm stuck with him.' Dawn Mitchell's own daughter attended Centaur Primary School. In 1998, upon discovering that her child had been placed in Gary Willis' English class, Mrs Mitchell (accompanied by parents Eric and Jeanette Ackerman) met with principal Mary-Anne Judge. Mrs Mitchell raised concerns about Gary Willis teaching her children and his history of alleged abuse at his two previous schools. Principal Judge allegedly told the three parents that she was unaware of any abuse allegations and she challenged Mrs Mitchell to either prove them or stay silent.

That evening, Principal Judge phoned Mrs Mitchell and allegedly stated that what the mother had said regarding Gary Willis's abuse allegations was true, but that she would not confirm it in front of other parents. Mary-Anne Judge said that she had been trying unsuccessfully to get rid of Gary Willis for quite a while but that the Education Department had resisted her efforts. Mary-Anne Judge indicated that, with this mother's help, she might successfully 'get rid of' Gary Willis.

During their next encounter, Principal Judge allegedly told Mrs Mitchell that she had contacted the Education Department's Regional Director, and that she was waiting to hear back from him. Mrs Mitchell next saw Principal Judge at a Grade 6 break-up dinner. Principal Judge is said to have asked this mother: 'Have you noticed someone's been conspicuous by their absence?' She was apparently referring to Gary Willis, who had been absent from the school for some time. Mrs Mitchell said Principal Judge then stated: 'Expect a visit by the NSW Education Department over the holidays.' The mother was never contacted by the NSW Education Department. Feeling threatened, Mrs Mitchell pulled her daughter out of Centaur Primary School.

Following a stint in administration at the Murwillumbah District Office, Gary Willis was reinstated at Centaur Primary School. Upon his return, multiple allegations of inappropriate behaviour and sexual abuse were subsequently reported to Principal Mary-Anne Judge.

A former Centaur teacher, Sandy McGrady, alleged that every single Centaur teacher was aware of Gary Willis' history of paedophilia allegations. She added that a Centaur parent confided in her that Willis sexually abused her daughter. Another teacher, Alison Howells, alleged that a cleaner caught Gary Willis sexually assaulting a girl in a Centaur Primary School storeroom. Another parent stated that Gary Willis sexually assaulted a Grade 5 student ('CC') in 2003.

In 2004, Centaur parent Sharon O'Grady allegedly confronted Principal Mary-Anne Judge about Gary Willis and she asked whether her daughter was at risk in the teacher's care. Sharon O'Grady says Principal Judge replied 'no' and she denied any knowledge of Gary Willis' history.

At a Centaur Primary School disco to celebrate Harmony Day in 2004, parents Steven and Victoria Boyce reportedly saw Gary Willis dancing with young girls in an inappropriate fashion. They said he was dressed in a toga and 'dirty dancing' with the girls, including pelvic thrusting towards them from behind. When Mrs Boyce complained to a teacher supervising the disco, the teacher apparently responded: ‘It’s all part of the fun.’ Teachers were seen taking photos of Gary Willis dancing at the disco. During the disco, Gary Willis allegedly entered the girls’ toilet and peered underneath a locked door at Mrs Boyce’s daughter. Mrs Boyce said she witnessed the deputy principal chastise Gary Willis for being in the girls’ toilet. Mrs Boyce alleged that Gary Willis made the girls in his class sit immodestly on the classroom floor. Instead of sitting with their legs crossed, he made them sit with their legs apart and knees bent up. Mrs Boyce said that she complained to the school about Gary Willis’ behaviour at the disco. When she mentioned other abuse allegations regarding Gary Willis, the deputy principal, Mr Burgess, allegedly stated: ‘I’ve heard that before, but it’s a load of bullshit.’

In 2006, the NSW Department of Education finally determined that the rumours were not bullshit — and they banned Gary Willis from teaching in the NSW public education system. However, because he had never been charged with a crime, Gary Willis was free to seek child-related employment in the NSW private education sector and interstate. After leaving the NSW Education Department, Gary Willis found two years of employment as a bus driver at a private Tweed Shire school, Lakeside Christian College (renamed Pacific Coast Christian School). Gary Willis was last seen living and working in Queensland.

* * *

NSW PROTECTS ALLEGED TWEED HEADS PEDOPHILE RING

Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 26 June 2013.

In 2004, concerned parent and whistle-blower Fiona Barnett became determined to end teacher Gary Willis’ (then) 15-year alleged child abuse spree — but the NSW Education Department and police had decidedly different ideas. Here, Fiona tells the second part of this story

In 2004, when I was six months pregnant, my lawn mowing lady raised the alarm. She began complaining about a male teacher at her children’s primary school who was reportedly abusing students. When the woman described the man’s extremely tight and brief shorts, I instantly recognised him as Gary Willis.

I first heard about Gary Willis when I was attending a local high school in the late 1980s. I grew up hearing horrifying stories of this teacher allegedly abusing young disabled children at three local primary schools. Indeed, Gary Willis allegedly sexually, physically and psychologically abused children from the homes of four different family friends.

I reasoned that the previous campaign against Gary Willis failed because parents complained from the bottom up. This approach allowed the perpetrators and their allies to intercept and quash any action. So, I lodged a complaint against Gary Willis, who was then teaching at Centaur Primary School. I alleged that Gary Willis had exhibited inappropriate behaviour toward students at three schools, raising concerns about the protection of Centaur children. I also named other teachers whom parents and staff had also alleged were pedophiles.

I requested an investigation into the NSW Education Department’s mishandling of abuse allegations concerning Gary Willis over a 14-year period. I was aware that each time abuse allegations began pouring in at a school Gary Willis worked at, the Education Department simply transferred the man to another local school.

The complaint letters were signed by a large group of concerned parents, and they were accompanied by copies of numerous witness statements. A former teacher aide and I collected signed letters from witnesses, including letters of complaint written up to 14 years prior. Former child victims, now in their 20s, themselves wrote some of these letters. Other victims, including disabled and illiterate witnesses, dictated and signed letters.

Approximately 30 concerned parents signed various letters of complaint that were posted to Prime Minister John Howard, Bob Carr (NSW premier), Brendan Nelson (Federal education minister), Jenny Macklin (Federal Opposition education spokesperson), Andrew Refshauge (NSW minister for education), Jillian Skinner (NSW Opposition education spokesperson), and the NSW Ombudsman.

I approached Tweed Heads Police detectives Josh Burton and Murray Baker, who told me that Gary Willis was known by the justice system with regards to child abuse allegations, and that DOCS involvement was mentioned onscreen. Detective Baker said that he put an Intel report into crime manager regarding the information I had gathered, and he expressed concern over possible corruption within the Education Department. He stated that Willis had never been charged with anything. He told me that one complaint had been in the system from about 8 to 9 years ago, that it had not been substantiated. He told me that certain complaints I knew had been made to police did not appear on the screen under Gary Willis' name.

An EPAC Child Protection Investigator, Sandra Cameron, informed me that the NSW Education Department held a considerable number of files containing abuse allegations against teacher Gary Willis, including numerous written complaints by teachers. Ms Cameron said that much of the information was horrendous and allegedly of a criminal nature and that it had subsequently been turned over to the police.

Our complaint was assigned to Chief Inspector Bob Sullivan of the NSW Child Protection and Sex Crimes Squad. On 27 October 2004, Bob Sullivan phoned witness DM (refer to Part 1), whose daughter ('Y') had recently alleged that teachers Gary Willis and Steve Tyler (now deceased) had sexually assaulted her while she was a student at the East Murwillumbah Primary School. Y told her mother (DM) that she would like to pursue charging Gary Willis for his alleged crime.

As a result of Bob Sullivan's phone call, DM complained to the NSW Ombudsman. DM complained that Bob Sullivan had said our efforts were a waste of time and we wouldn't get anywhere. He allegedly also said DM should think hard about pursuing a complaint against Gary Willis because it would go nowhere, since Y was disabled. Bob Sullivan also allegedly insisted that Y be interviewed at the Tweed Heads police station instead of at her local Brisbane sex crimes unit. Bob Sullivan did not, according to DM, ask for further information or clarification of existing information. DM also complained that Bob Sullivan left her with an overall feeling that there was no point to pursuing Y's complaint against Gary Willis and that the policeman had been trying to talk her out of pursuing the matter.

On 3 November 2004, I received a phone call from Inspector Bob Sullivan. During this call, Inspector Sullivan made what I allege are some startling and disturbing statements:

- He criticised victims, parents and witnesses for expecting me to help them.
- He described alleged serial pedophile Gary Willis as a 'poor bloke' and the victim of a 'witch hunt.'
- He said there was no such thing as justice, and that achieving justice in this matter was not the aim of the police;

- He accused me of fabricating witness letters, including a hand-written complaint personally submitted to the Education Department by a teacher aide some 14 years previous.
- He said that NSW police have no record of any complaints against Gary Willis made by victims. When I challenged this by saying that two Tweed Heads detectives had told me the opposite, Inspector Sullivan contradicted himself by saying that police had investigated a number of complaints against Gary Willis, but that none of these had been substantiated. Then, he contradicted himself again, saying: ‘action was taken in 1993.’
- He said there was no evidence of child abuse — just ‘innuendo and rumour.’
- He said he was not prepared to launch a proactive investigation into Gary Willis, as the victims probably would prefer to forget the past and get on with their lives. When I suggested he was pre-empting their reaction and added that many witnesses had been threatened and bribed into silence, and maybe they would feel safe and relieved talking to the police in such a way, Bob Sullivan asked: ‘Mrs Barnett, have you ever been the victim of a sexual assault?’
- He said police were certainly not interested in the ‘minor assaults’ listed.
- He said that if Y's case went to court, witnesses certainly could not be subpoenaed to testify and that only a Royal Commission had the power to interview reluctant witnesses.
- He stated that Y had the best chance of charging Gary Willis, but that if her letter was the extent of her language ability, she would get nowhere and therefore there’s no point in her pursuing the matter.
- He concentrated on just one of the alleged pedophiles, Gary Willis, and refused to acknowledge allegations against other named teachers and DOCS workers.
- He stated that it was not a crime for Gary Willis to constantly call an Aboriginal child ‘coon,’ ‘nigger’ and ‘the black snake.’
- He stated that he was immediately returning the file to the Education Department and closing the investigation, without contacting any other people or witnesses named in the file.

I complained about Bob Sullivan in writing to the Prime Minister, the Police Integrity Commission, and the NSW Ombudsman. On 7 February 2005, I received a phone call from Kim McKay, Commander of the Child Protection and Sex Crimes Squad. Commander McKay stated that Bob Sullivan was currently on sick leave and that stress accounted for his inappropriate behaviour toward me and DM.

Commander McKay stated that the Sex Crimes Squad would not be conducting an investigation into the Education Department’s allegations of criminal misconduct on the part of Gary Willis and other teaching staff. She stated that this was because Bob Sullivan had assessed the file and determined the case did not meet their criteria for investigation. Commander McKay added that the Sex Crimes Squad was already investigating 600 other cases. Commander McKay stated that Bob Sullivan alone made this decision and that she had not read the file herself.

I suggested that if Bob Sullivan’s functioning was impaired at the time he assessed the Gary Willis case, then perhaps the case should be reassessed by a medically fit, stress-free, police officer. Commander McKay denied this request. She neglected to explain why the Gary Willis case did not meet the Sex Crime Squad's criteria for investigation.

Commander McKay told me that I must report everything else I knew about the alleged Tweed Heads pedophile ring, or else I could be charged with an offence called 'Concealing a Crime'. This seemed an odd statement, given Bob Sullivan had refused to accept any further information about the case and McKay had just told me that NSW police were not prepared to investigate the information they had already received. But, as instructed, I handed over the following information:

- I reported a female teacher who allegedly regularly took two female high school students for the weekend. (One of these students later died from complications following an operation which she underwent soon after her breasts suddenly became engorged.)
- I reported that one set of parents had tried to have a female special needs teacher charged for allegedly sexually assaulting their son.
- I reported that a male Murwillumbah High School special needs teacher's aide allegedly regularly took a male student home for lunchtime sex. The teacher's aide also allegedly provided the student with pornography, that he would bring home.
- I reported a male Murwillumbah High School careers teacher who allegedly drugged a 17-year-old male at an adult party. The student allegedly awoke in his teacher's bed, naked, with no memory of how he got there. He allegedly saw the teacher standing naked in his bedroom doorway, saying: 'It's okay, sweetie.'
- I reported a Murwillumbah high School English teacher who allegedly had an affair with his Grade 11 student.
- I reported a female Murwillumbah High School English teacher who allegedly had an orgy with a group of her surfing students.
- I reported my own Murwillumbah High School teacher, who continually photographed female students, including naked arty shots of my friend.
- And, while I was at it, I also reported my Grade 3 teacher from Budgewoi Primary School on the NSW Central Coast, who allegedly sexually abused a classmate during a sleepover at his Wyong farmhouse.

In a letter (dated 9 February 2005) Commander Kim McKay wrote to me:

> *As a result of my inquiries I have established that there is a disparity between yourself and Detective Bob Sullivan on a number of the issues you have raised and are unable to determine where the truth lies. However I acknowledge that if Detective Bob Sullivan did ask you if you were a victim of sexual assault, then this was inappropriate and should not have been said. In relation to the manner in which he addressed you I have found that this also was not always appropriate in the circumstances. On behalf of the New South Wales Police Force I apologise for this occurrence.*

Parents complained to the NSW Ombudsman concerning the NSW police's refusal to investigate the alleged Tweed Shire pedophile ring. Consequently, in a letter dated 18 November 2004, a Detective Sergeant M.N. Robinson of Byron Bay informed us that Detective

Sergeant Brett Greentree of Tweed Heads Police station had been assigned to investigate Gary Willis and that witnesses were to contact him and make formal statements at the Tweed Heads police station.

Five of Gary Willis' former students were prepared to make statements to the Tweed Heads police. Three of these witnesses were intellectually disabled (ID). I had already contacted the Intellectual Disability Rights Service (IDRS) for legal advice and asked them to supply a support person to attend the Tweed Heads police interviews with three ID witnesses, including Y. The IDRS lawyer, named Tamara, informed me that their service had trained Joint Investigation Response Teams (JIRT) police officers to interview ID witnesses, including adults. The lawyer also said that the current police policy and procedures stated that Tweed Heads police must initiate contact with JIRT regarding the three ID witnesses.

However, when we contacted Ballina JIRT, an officer called Melissa Williams told me that no JIRT police officer was trained to interview intellectually disabled people. She also stated that JIRT refused to interview the three disabled witnesses because they were now adults. One of my initial contacts, Detective Murray Baker at Tweed Heads, said he could not understand why Ballina JIRT would not touch the historical material, because they do 'all the time.'

When I complained to Commander Kim McKay about JIRT refusing to interview ID adults, she stated to me that not one police officer in the whole of NSW had been specifically trained to interview intellectually disabled victims of sexual assault. This, of course, flew right in the face of the statements by IDRS lawyer Tamara. Commander McKay, however, attempted to placate me by saying that Brett Greentree could be trusted to interview the three disabled victims because he was ex-JIRT (with two years' experience) and because he was 'a nice bloke with good intentions.'

NSW Education Department employee Sandra Cameron arranged with Brett Greentree to be present at the witnesses' formal police interviews. Ms Cameron allegedly told a parent that she must attend her daughter's interview with police because she represented the Department and so had to be sure the police questioning was fair to the Department. Ms Cameron subsequently insisted on attending the police interview, even after the parent told her not to. Ms Cameron told another parent that she planned to attend the police interviews so that she did not have to conduct independent interviews.

The IDRS lawyer responded that it was ludicrous for a NSW Education Department representative to attend a police interview where a victim was making a statement and an allegation against the NSW Education Department. Tamara explained that if Sandra Cameron spoke during the interview, it could render the interview inadmissible in court.

I arranged for an IDRS support person to attend the police interviews with the three disabled witnesses, but Detective Sergeant Greentree refused to allow this. I also specifically requested that Brett Greentree video the interviews, but he refused to do this.

To the knowledge of victims and concerned parents, NSW police never investigated our complaints, Gary Willis was never charged with any of the reported crimes and victims were never given the chance to claim compensation for their child abuse experiences.

Gun to the Head

Following my whistle blowing efforts against what I allege was a pedophile ring in the Tweed Shire, I came under increasing threat from parents, the local police force and various government authorities. The threat began subtly with offers of free 'counselling' from the NSW Department of Education. Owing to the increasing number of telephone threats, my mother answered my phone. 'This must be very stressful for Fiona,' the Education Department counsellor spoke consolingly. But after my mother politely declined the woman's invitation, her manner changed. The counsellor called repeatedly, each time sounding increasingly frustrated and angry at my refusing her 'services.'

At the same time, my telephone provider informed me that my phone was tapped. Two other whistleblowing parents complained that their phones had been bugged also.

Certain parents who had previously been helpful and collaborative with the whistle-blowing process suddenly began threatening other whistleblowing parents and me. 'ZZ,' the mother of East Murwillumbah victim L, phoned me in a hysterical state. She demanded that I give her the numbers and addresses of all the witnesses to Gary Willis' abuse of children, particularly her daughter. She swore at me and told me she'd sue my 'fucking arse' if I did not stop pursuing the Gary Willis matter. She said she would hire a private detective and track everyone down.

When I said it was too late and that the evidence had been forwarded on to the Education Department, she accused me of not having given her the opportunity to view the evidence and discuss her views on the whole matter.

'I phoned you weeks ago and gave you that chance,' I reminded her.

ZZ screamed at me: 'I don't want to be dragged through no fucking kangaroo court again! My daughter was examined under a general anaesthetic and they found she was still a virgin!'

I explained that someone can be sexually assaulted without damaging the hymen, but ZZ concluded with a tirade of abuse.

I was advised to phone a parent 'FF' for information about the alleged abuse of her daughter 'GG.' FF had worked at South Tweed Primary School for 18 years.

She told me: 'I've been waiting for your call … It would be best if you handed all those statements back to the parents and don't implicate yourself further, as this could get bad for your stress levels.'

One whistleblowing parent ('AF') began receiving phone calls from ZZ who would phone and say, 'Fucking bitch!' and then hang up. ZZ told AF to retract her statement. She referred to AF's poor state of health and to the fact that I was pregnant. When AF said she was not going to retract her statement, ZZ became aggressive, illogical, and spewed profanity at AF. ZZ added: 'You're disturbing Al Gudgeon's retirement. How could you do this, as he has done so much for the community and for children? What happened all those years ago has nothing to do with what is happening today.'

My own daughter attended Banora Point Public School. I attended a P&C meeting at the school and raised the alarm about Gary Willis. I warned parents and teachers not to employ Gary Willis at our school — the only place he had not worked at in our area. Attendees, including the treasurer David DeClosey and his police officer friend, became visibly angry at me and verbally attacked me in the meeting. Following that, DeClosey and the police officer attended the P&C Federation's Annual Conference. Upon their return, DeClosey passed on a threat to me. A NSW Education Department representative at the conference, he said, had told him to warn me to stop talking about Gary Willis — or else the NSW Education Department would sue me for defamation.

After this, the threats became more tangible. To begin with, the P&C police officer issued me a hefty parking fine for something which, as my daughter's teacher testified in writing, I simply did not do.

The threats became physical. The RSPCA turned up at my house following a false report of pet neglect. When my fat, happy dog greeted him, the inspector remarked: 'He's fine.' Next, a health and safety officer turned up at my house following a false report that my builder was using a ramset gun while unlicensed. Then police turned up at my house following a false report that there was a stolen vehicle parked in my garage. On several occasions, Tweed Heads police drove slowly by my house, glaring menacingly at me.

Heartbreakingly, my 'neglected' dog was dragged beneath our fence and killed, and my pet chickens and ducks were also found slaughtered.

On one occasion, I reported to police that the 13-year-old child of my neighbour had been driving his father's car at excessive speeds on the highway and had near backed into my car. The petite blonde officer who responded to my complaint failed to identify herself. She verbally abused me for making the complaint, called me a 'shit-stirrer,' and slapped me with an AVO from the juvenile's father. In the end, I paid $14,000 to successfully challenge the spurious AVO.

My husband and mother subsequently attended a meeting with Superintendent Tim J. Tarlinton to discuss our concerns regarding the increasing threats against our family. Tarlinton treated my family with hostility and contempt.

I began to feel so threatened by Tweed Heads police that I took my 10-month-old baby and six-year-old child into hiding for the next six weeks. My suspicions were justified days later when Tweed Heads police dispatched five squad cars to ambush my home at 5 Anthony Avenue and two relatives' homes in Laura Street, Banora Point. My accountant husband, due to fly interstate for a work conference, pre-booked a taxi to the Gold Coast airport. Three squad cars followed the taxi, which pulled up on the highway just south of the Queensland/NSW border. The taxi driver told my husband to exit his vehicle. Police, dressed in vests, thrust three loaded semi-automatic weapons at my husband's head, ordered him face down on the side of the highway and handcuffed him.

Five months later, I received the letter from the NSW Education Department informing me that they had banned Gary Willis from teaching in the NSW public system. I then discovered that Superintendent Tarlinton had retired from his position as Local Area Commander and Brett Greentree had been transferred to Bourke on a promotion to Detective Inspector.

Yet my victimisation at the hands of Tweed Heads police did not end there.

The petite blonde female officer returned in 2012, unidentified and armed with handcuffs and a weapon, to arrest me. Some stranger had illegally parked a trailer on my front lawn and reported that it was damaged while left there unattended. Instead of issuing a $180 fine for the illegal park, the police officer sought to arrest me. Hand clasped on her gun the officer rang my front doorbell. My mother answered. 'Where is she?!' the officer hissed. But I had already fled with my family for the third time since blowing the whistle on the alleged Tweed Shire pedophile ring.

It then struck me: the NSW police force displayed more concern for an illegally parked trailer, rather than an unfathomed number of young, disabled children who were assaulted and mentally scarred by a violent sexual predator.

So many questions remain. Where is Gary Willis today? Does he have contact with children? Why were the whistle-blowers, including me, being ostracised and victimised, while the alleged perpetrators were seemingly being protected by the NSW Police? Why did the NSW Police seem so disinterested in investigating an alleged pedophile network, in which there was numerous witnesses and a wealth of documentary evidence? Does this suggest that network extends beyond the Education Department and into the police? And does it extend even further than that?

* * *

After being banned from employment in NSW, Gary Willis was hired by the Queensland Education Department to work at Tallebudgera Primary School on the Gold Coast. A Tallebudgera neighbour of Gary Willis told me he tutored her children and assisted with children’s Nippers lessons at Tallebudgera Surf life Saving Club.

* * *

2020 Update: NSW Police Commissioner Mick Fuller promoted Brett Greentree to Acting Assistant Commissioner.

Bond University Pedophile Network

BOND UNIVERSITY EXPOSED

Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 20 July 2014.

Bond Uni has been in the news recently with criminologist lecturer Professor Paul Wilson facing court on child abuse charges. Former student Fiona Barnett says the rot at the University goes deep.

Bond University was founded by Australia's most notorious corporate criminal, Alan Bond. As disgruntled students have discovered, Alan Bond structured the private organisation, so it evades public accountability — despite the fact the university accesses public funds in the form of student loans. Bond University's lack of public accountability stems in part from the fact that it is not actually a university but rather a corporation legally permitted to borrow the title 'university.'

I undertook postgraduate psychology studies at Bond University from 2006 to 2007, and again from 2009 to 2010. In 2013, I reported Bond University to the *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse*. My complaint contained a long list of offences in relation to the cover-up of pedophile activities, pro-paedophilia course content, the misuse of students' personal child abuse histories, and the sexual harassment and assault of students by certain lecturers.

High-profile psychologist damns Bond University

I provided the Royal Commission with the transcript of legally obtained recordings of Bob Montgomery, previous president of the APS (Australian Psychological Society) and former Head of Psychology at Bond University. Dr Montgomery described Bond as follows:

> *It is one of the worst run universities I've ever seen. It's dishonest. It's been dishonest all the time I've known it... Bond University will do all the skullduggerous things they can to deny any mis-practice... While I was there, they had a lunatic professor of psychology.... He was caught screwing his secretary on the desk. The outcome was he sacked the secretary and the vice-chancellor backed him up... So, you might have a realistic concern if you enrol for an externship that they may try to manipulate the situation in some way to try and put you in a bad light. And you've got to put that in your decision-making mix... If you decide to plough ahead with Bond University. you will be dealing with people who are out to get you, nasty, willing to do dishonest things, and getting increasingly desperate because not only have they not knocked you down, but you're coming back even stronger.*

Bond University covers-up child sexual abuse

While working in the Bond University Psychology Clinic, a 10-year-old DOCS client and her foster mother disclosed to me that a former foster carer and convicted pedophile had sexually assaulted my client, along with other children. In direct contravention of Queensland legislation regarding the concealment of child abuse, Bond University forbade me from reporting these crimes to the police. I persuaded one lecturer to let me inform the Queensland Children's Commissioner of the allegations. Bond University, however, subsequently withdrew my complaint to the Commissioner without my knowledge and then lied to the Commissioner by saying they had done so in consultation with me. While the

Commissioner upheld my complaint and proceeded with an investigation, Bond University chastised me and said my complaint jeopardised their relationship with the DOCS office, upon which they relied for clients to keep the Bond Psychology Clinic running.

Bond University's pro-paedophilia teachings

In 2013, I asked the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse to investigate Bond University with respect to its pro-paedophilia teachings. These teachings include the writings of a psychology and criminology lecturer, and Order of Australia medal recipient, Professor Paul Wilson, who served as Dean of Humanities at Bond University for 10 years. In one of his books, subtitled *Sexual Experiences between Men and Boys*, the professor promoted the benefits of paedophilia and renaming this crime 'Greek love.' The professor also published articles on Bond University's website, which stated that children are often willing participants in child sexual abuse. (The Royal Commission gasped when I read that fact out.)

In late 2012, Paul Wilson was charged with six counts of indecent dealings with two girls — one of whom was under 12 years old. In May 2014, he was committed to stand trial. The same professor taught me at Bond University. He and other Bond lecturers, in my view, encouraged a strong anti-victim/pro-perpetrator stance in their classes. For example, one lecturer endorsed the notion that technically there is no such thing as a victim of crime because a criminal case involves the defendant versus the crown instead of the defendant versus a victim. On another occasion, I had marks deducted for briefly mentioning a victim's perspective in an essay.

Bond University lecturers strongly endorsed the flawed 'false memory syndrome' writings of USA psychologist Elizabeth Loftus. The Royal Commission commended my submission against Loftus' writings and my condemnation of her association with the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF). The FMSF was founded by Peter Freyd and his wife (and stepsister) Pamela after their daughter, Professor Jennifer Freyd, accused Peter of child sexual abuse. Apart from founding the FMSF, Peter has publicly endorsed paedophilia as a responsible lifestyle choice and allowing siblings to marry. The effect of the FMSF has been to discredit child abuse witness testimony and the existence of well organised pedophile rings.

Bond University sexually harasses students

Bond University has a history of sexually harassing students. During my 2009-10 enrolment, the following incidents occurred: a postgraduate student handed out pamphlets on campus alleging that a senior staff member had sexually harassed him and that the university had engaged in cult-like practises; a female lecturer offered a teenage girl who was on scholarship, sex in exchange for good grades; and a male lecturer offered a legal minor, also on scholarship, sex in exchange for good grades. The girl's father, a lawyer, threatened to lodge a complaint with the AHRC (*Australian Human Rights Commission*). In an effort to placate the family, Bond University offered the girl a transfer to her preferred Sydney University. I witnessed a Bond University lecturer regularly throw parties at her house, during which students were supplied copious amounts of alcohol. I also saw the lecturer instigate a game of 'sexual disclosure' spin-the-bottle with her students.

Bond University pressures students to disclose child abuse histories

Bond University psychology staff exhibited a pattern of obtaining students' personal information, which they would then use to hold students to ransom if they complained about their Bond experience. I witnessed lecturers' concerted efforts to bait a fellow student into disclosing her child abuse history to them. 'She came so close to disclosing!' one lecturer told me on one occasion, in a state of high excitement.

I was pressured to disclose my personal history of child sexual abuse to Bond University lecturers during psychological supervision and while socialising with lecturers in their homes and also at my home. According to my understanding, the lecturers' abuse of their authority, and their pressuring of me to disclose personal information, constituted a breach of the APS Code of Ethics and Guidelines.

During my studies, I was sexually harassed by a Bond University staff member My experience of sexual harassment occurred in response to the disclosure of my child sexual abuse. The same lecturer tricked me into sleeping in her bed at a student party, described my breasts as 'magnificent,' before grabbing one and massaging it in a sexual manner.

From: Katarina Fritzon [mailto:kfritzon@bond.edu.au]
Sent: Thursday, 12 June 2008 8:44 AM to
To: Fiona Barnett.
Subject: RE: Seen this revolting page?

Fter
Ahhh it was you!!
Ben said someone called and he'd forgotten who it was… by the time he wandered from the kitchen into the bedroom. Yeah I had a sty brought on by stress and so I went to bed very early that night… now I have another one in my other eye. I am trying to finish off a million things before I go on holidays next week.
I keep thinking about you. I know that sounds unbelievable as I never act on it, but I honestly do – every couple of days a little Fiona thought pops into my head.
Yeah – ONE day we shall meet again!
Love the photos by the way

Jackie Yoxall is looking for rooms nearer Tweed cause she has moved down near Lennox and doesn't want to keep having to come back to Broadbeach. Do you know of any rooms that you could recommend?
If you are still looking for a supervisor my friend Bek is still available.
Let me know
I get back on the 9th of July so let's get together after that. I'd like you to meet Mr Ben

Love, x

Best wishes

Katarina Fritzon
Associate Professor
Psychology Department

Telephone: +61 7 5595 2681
Facsimile: +61 7 5595 2540
Bond University | Gold Coast, Queensland, 4229, Australia

From: Fiona Barnett [mailto:fbarnett@bigpond.com]
Sent: Wednesday, 11 June 2008 3:55 PM
To: Katarina Fritzon
Subject: Seen this revolting page?

Hi,

Thought I'd turn you off your tea.

I rang the other night but you were ill with an eye infection or something. I'm still flat out. Kasia's 2nd semester of work due in 2.5 weeks. Electrician currently here and making big mess. Jon and I spent long weekend jack-hammering up tiles and tossing bits in skip bin (yay).

Speak to you ONE day…

f

Bond University Lecturer Katarina Fritzon's inappropriate email showing her grooming behaviour.

Formal Complaints against Bond University

I rejected a Bond University lecturer's unwanted sexual advances and complained to Bond University and to the Psychology Board. I also lodged a complaint of sexual harassment and disability discrimination with the *Australian Human Rights Commission*, which upheld my entire complaint.

The disability discrimination section of my complaint related to a visual cortex stroke I suffered during the fifth week of my Masters program. Lecturers used my subsequent disability as a means of harassing me. Staff refused to adhere to the conditions set out by my

Bond University disability support officer — consequently, I suffered further damage to my vision.

Bond staff subjected me to extreme bullying and harassment, including exclusion and placing me under excessive scrutiny. For example, a staff member verbally abused a student peer and reduced her to tears for inviting me to her private engagement party. This victimisation intensified following my initial complaint to the Psychology Board and following my attempts to adhere to mandatory reporting legislation in relation to child abuse disclosure in the university's psychology clinic.

Bond University's Corruption

In October 2010, to subdue an adversary process I had in place against staff at the time, Bond University staff lodged a vexatious and unsubstantiated notification against me to the Psychology Board, which is administered by AHPRA (*Australian Health Practitioner Regulation Agency*). Bond University staff simultaneously pooled the information they had gleaned about my own childhood sexual abuse. They removed the age I was during the time of my child abuse and reported me as an adult perpetrator instead of a child victim of the same crimes to AHPRA and to the NSW police. An (11/11/2010) email from AHPRA to a senior Queensland police detective who lectures at Bond University stated:

> *It has come to my attention that Ms Barnett is under investigation by police following serious allegations of a criminal nature… if you have any information which may be imperative to the assessment of Ms Barnett's health, please do not hesitate to contact me.*

The police officer then (26/11/2010) sent the following email to AHPRA from his Bond University email account:

> *The last briefing I had was that contact had been made with NSWPOL and they could not identify any outstanding jobs that would match the claims made. They also informed us that the suspect had previously made outlandish claims of a similar nature. The investigation is ongoing but given the above I would suspect it will not be a police matter.*

A second (27/11/10) email from police to AHPRA said:

> *At this stage we are unable to find any evidence to what MS BARNETT is saying. MS BARNETT has previously made similar admissions to NSW police in 2008, this investigation was finalised as no evidence could be located to substantiate what MS BARNETT has stated.*

AHPRA used the above correspondence as evidence I was a criminal, as detailed in their 29 March 2011 letter to me:

> *…confirmation of similar reported events by the NSW Police Service regarding past criminal activities of a serious nature is a matter that the Board will need to address.*

I sent written complaints about these emails to the NSW and Queensland police ministers. Both ministers denied that NSW police provided any information to AHPRA in support of Bond University's accusation that I was a perpetrator of crimes. So, either police lied to their ministers about providing emails to AHPRA, or AHPRA fabricated evidence against me.

Bond University staff lied to AHPRA by alleging that I had suddenly became psychotic at an unspecified time, somewhere between the second and third field placements I did as part of my Masters program. They simultaneously treated my child abuse history as both: (a) real (i.e., evidence of my alleged criminality), and (b) fictitious (i.e., the product of my alleged sudden psychosis).

Bond University accused me of 'decompensating into psychosis' — despite me having no history or symptoms of psychosis whatsoever. They made this claim without consulting the only Bond employees who had regular contact with me during the time that this 'mental illness' was supposedly manifesting — my two external supervisors.

Dr Gavan Palk (barrister and chair of the APS Forensic College) supervised my second practicum, during which he saw me four hours per week for three months. Dr Norm Barling, who was Bond University's Clinical Director for 20 years, supervised my third practicum. Both supervisors wrote me glowing references that made a mockery of Bond's notification. For instance, Dr Palk wrote:

> *Ms Barnett impressed as an extremely intelligent person with excellent written and oral skills. She has exceptional writing skills and her psychological reports were very thorough and well written. She demonstrated that she could integrate her clinical experience of clients with objective test results. Her opinions were sound and followed logically from the evidence she gathered through testing and interviews.*
>
> *In regards to interactions with clients, Ms Barnett demonstrated that she was able to develop and maintain a therapeutic alliance with clients. She also demonstrated a solid command of micro counselling skills and sensitivity to client's needs. Her approach towards clients was very professional and she had no difficulty in analysing problems, undertaking appropriate research background forming hypotheses, planning and carrying out psychological interventions...*
>
> *In conclusion, it was a pleasure to provide supervision to Ms Barnett. She is a passionate and intelligent person who has persevered in spite of her health difficulties. The writer is very confident that Fiona has the makings of a very fine psychologist and she should be encouraged to undertake a PhD in the area of sensory processing and intellectual giftedness.*

All of Bond University's vague accusations were easily and completely disproved by written evidence, including emails, and letters from witnesses and health professionals that I submitted to AHPRA. Most telling, Bond University had already passed me, over one year prior to the false and vexatious notification in the very subjects during which the alleged ethical breaches were said to have occurred. Further, Dr Barling pointed out that if Bond staff had any concerns about my mental health prior to my commencing the third practicum, then ethically and legally they were not permitted to allow me to commence a third work placement — which, of course, they had done.

Bond University submitted to AHPRA and the AHRC a written confession that a Bond lecturer had students attend a sleepover at her house in 2007 — an act which, alone, constituted an alleged breach of the APS Ethical Code and Guidelines. In this same document, the lecturer lied by alleging I was not enrolled in Bond University at the time of her 2007 party, when academic transcripts clearly show I was, indeed, enrolled.

Despite my excellent academic history – including a grade of 89% in my final theory subject, Psychopharmacology – and with only two subjects to complete before obtaining my Master of Psychology degree. Bond University wrote 'withdrawn' on my academic transcript. They then failed to grant me a right of reply to their action and forbade me from accessing their appeals system. As a consequence, I was robbed of six years of study and close to $100,000 I paid in student loans. And since I was no longer enrolled in a psychology course, AHPRA immediately cancelled my student psychology registration.

Bond University's double standards

In 2013, Bond University staff allegedly severely breached privacy legislation and ethical standards in the execution of a research project into autism (Project Number RO-1516). The project's approved recruitment protocol was for parents to be invited to participate in the study via emails sent from Gold Coast Autism Inc. Instead, the Queensland Education Department provided Bond University with the names, medical history and contact details of state school students who are registered with the department as having autism — without the parents' knowledge or consent. One parent told me that Bond University contacted her on a Saturday via her private mobile. When the mother confronted her school principal, he said he knew nothing about the research project. If true, this ethical breach is monumental and far surpasses the petty ethical breaches that they falsely accused me of committing.

For instance, Bond reported me to AHPRA for 'upsetting a student' by appropriately borrowing a psychology test from the library. Unbeknownst to me, the student (whom I had never met) wanted the test I had borrowed. The student, who had a history of aggressive behaviour and who had allegedly attracted formal student complaints, stormed in on my client session in the Psychology Clinic and demanded I immediately cease working with my client and give him the test. Despite the fact my supervisor informed me, via email, that he reported the student to the Psychology Board, one year later Bond staff reported me to AHPRA for the very same incident.

Bond University audited

Because of Bond University's private status, they proved unaccountable to every government body to which a similarly offended student at a public university might be able to appeal. Bond is supposedly answerable to the Australian Psychology Accreditation Council (APAC), the national body that accredits psychology courses. In March 2011, APAC commenced an audit of Bond University in response to alleged multiple breaches of APAC Standards. Bond had previously lost accreditation for similar breaches in 2007/2008. In response to this audit, Bond employed yet another organisational psychologist to conduct student interviews. However, aggrieved students were actively denied access to this investigation.

APAC intervened and virtually begged a fellow offended student and me to attend the interviews. APAC assured us that multiple students had supported and validated our complaints against Bond. In the end, APAC and the APS did nothing to assist me in my fight for justice and vindication. In a letter to the AHRC, Bond University documented and criticised my attendance at the APAC interviews. In this letter, they stated that APAC did not take my testimony seriously. Immediately following the APAC audit, two Bond Psychology Clinic administrators lodged internal complaints against one offending psychology lecturer for her misconduct and her mistreatment of me and other psychology students. Bond University then pressured that lecturer to resign.

The main offending lecturers remain employed at Bond University.

* * *

AHPRA PROTECTS ALLEGED SEX OFFENDERS

Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 3 November 2014.

After Fiona Barnett was bullied out of her Bond University psychology course, health regulator AHPRA treated her case with a curious mixture of incredible incompetence and callous contempt.

In theory, the role of the Australian Health Practitioner Regulation Agency (AHPRA) is to oversee the administration of our medical, psychology and other health profession boards. They are supposed to protect the public from malpractice, while simultaneously offering a level of protection for innocent health professionals against vexatious and unsubstantiated complaints.

In 2011, a Senate Committee Inquiry was conducted into AHPRA. The Inquiry's findings were damning. The resultant report stated:

> *6.19 In relation to complaints about health practitioners, the committee identified a number of areas where improvements are required including inconsistencies in application of complaint processes … and the way in which vexatious complaints are handled.*
> *6.32 … the mistakes, omissions and poor processes that were clearly evident from the evidence received during the inquiry calls into question the ability of AHPRA to carry out its primary purpose. For AHPRA itself to be responsible for a breakdown of the entire system of registration of health practitioners in Australia is a dismal example of policy implementation and public administration.*

The Senate Inquiry identified the Queensland AHPRA office as Australia's most incompetent state office. You might expect, following such a finding, that the Queensland AHPRA office may have addressed the Inquiry's criticisms and implemented some changes. Unfortunately, if you did, you would be wrong.

AHPRA exploits student's child abuse history

My personal child abuse experiences formed the basis for Bond University's notification against me. My abuse constituted grounds for Bond's allegation that I was 'impaired' and posed a risk to the public. This was despite no explained link between my having experienced child abuse 30+ years ago and my alleged impairment. AHPRA cited my personal child abuse history as evidence that I was psychotic and a criminal. The obvious anomaly in their argument was that they used my personal testimony as being a symptom of psychosis, then they simultaneously employed my testimony as a basis for contacting the police and accusing me of criminal activity. It is difficult to understand how my testimony could simultaneously be both a product of my imagination and a physical reality.

After making a FOI (Freedom of Information) application, I obtained the following emails showing that AHPRA communicated with police in both NSW and Queensland. Two email exchanges identified a senior detective who worked for the Gold Coast CIB and who also lectured at Bond University. The first email (dated 11/11/2010) from AHPRA to the Queensland police officer was addressed to his Bond University email:

> *'It has come to my attention that Ms Barnett is under investigation by police following serious allegations of a criminal nature … if you have any information which may be imperative to the assessment of Ms Barnett's health, please do not hesitate to contact me.'*

The second email (dated 26/11/10) from the Bond University lecturer to AHPRA stated:

> *The last briefing I had was that contact had been made with NSWPOL and they could not identify any outstanding jobs that would match the claims made. They also informed us that the suspect had previously made outlandish claims of a similar nature. The investigation is ongoing but given the above I would suspect it will not be a police matter.*

This letter documents that police dismissed my testimony as 'outlandish,' despite:

- Possessing Tor Nielsen's collaborative witness testimony prior to my contacting them.
- Never having collected a comprehensive statement from me.
- Having assigned a task force to investigate a pedophile ring at the institution where I had been abused (Engadine BoysTown).

Another email (dated 27/11/10) from police to AHPRA stated:

> *At this stage we are unable to find any evidence to what MS BARNETT is saying. MS BARNETT has previously made similar admissions to NSW police in 2008, this investigation was finalised as no evidence could be located to substantiate what MS BARNETT has stated.*

I was never interviewed with regard to the allegations I made to police. AHPRA used the above correspondence as evidence I was a criminal, as recorded in their letter (dated 29/3/11) and addressed to me, which said:

> *…confirmation of similar reported events by the NSW Police Service regarding past criminal activities of a serious nature is a matter that the Board will need to address.*

I sent written complaints about these emails to the NSW and Queensland police commissioners. Both police commissioners denied that NSW police provided any information to AHPRA in support of Bond University's accusation that I was a perpetrator of crimes. So, either police lied to their ministers about providing emails to AHPRA or AHPRA fabricated evidence against me. I submitted the two police ministers' response letters, plus comprehensive evidence which clearly disproved Bond University's allegations against me. I submitted these to Queensland AHPRA's state manager.

AHPRA use health assessment to 'stitch up' student

On the basis of Bond University's vexatious and unsubstantiated notification, AHPRA ordered me to attend a health assessment. Several professional sources warned me not to attend this assessment. These sources included a high-profile psychiatrist who warned me that AHPRA had employed a notorious 'creep' psychiatrist to 'stitch [me] up.' Patient feedback on a social media site described the 'hired gun' as 'likes to humiliate patients.' My own GP also warned me not to attend AHPRA's health assessment.

One close personal contact, who drafts legislation for the Queensland Government, warned me that archaic Queensland legislation permitted AHPRA's 'hired gun' health assessor to decide I was psychotic even if I was not, call police without my family's knowledge, drug me and admit me to a psychiatric hospital. She said AHPRA had far reaching powers, including the authority to enter my home and remove my personal belongings. She studied the new *Health Practitioner Regulation National Law (Qld) 2009* (referred to hereafter as the Health Act) and concluded that it had been poorly written, failing to include penalties for my refusing to attend an AHPRA health assessment. She then advised me not to attend the assessment.
The multiple warnings not to attend AHPRA's health assessment seemed valid considering:

- What happened to Tor Nielsen when he attended a similar assessment in Sydney.
- The damning findings of the 2011 Senate Committee Inquiry into AHPRA.
- AHPRA's multiple breaches of legislation in their administration of Bond University's vexatious notification against me.

AHPRA Breach Health Act 2009

AHPRA breached the Health Act by, for example, demanding I pay the costs associated with their health assessment. They sent me multiple 'Authority' forms to sign, which said:

> *I, Fiona Barnett hereby authorise the following practitioner to provide information as requested by the Psychology Board regarding my current and past medical condition. I agree to accept responsibility for any costs associated with the production of this information.*

Notably, AHPRA omitted their 'Authority' form from my released FOI file. This direction from AHPRA overrode a general provision made in Section 171(4) of the Health Act which states: 'The assessor's fee for carrying out the assessment is to be paid out of the National Board's budget.'

AHPRA violates APS Code of Ethics

On 29 November 2010, a fellow Bond University student and I submitted a joint notification to AHPRA against several Bond University lecturers. The other student had an unblemished 10-year career as a psychologist and a supervisor. AHPRA refused to action our joint notification. The health regulator stated its reasons for refusing to act were that the other student and I were not classified as clients in receipt of psychological services; and since AHPRA was less than a year old, it had not had time to adopt the *APS Code of Ethics and Guidelines.* AHPRA's failure to recognise Bond psychology students as recipients of psychological services seems to breach section 5 of the Act, which clearly classifies health education as a health service of which psychology students are recipients. Back in 2009, the Psychologists Board of Queensland had already sent me a letter saying:

> *…the Board endorses the Australian Psychological Society's APS Code of Ethics and the APS Ethical Guidelines. The Board is guided by, though not limited to, these documents when assessing the professional conduct of registrants.*

The letter shows that the definition of students as clients preceded AHPRA. This definition should have been implemented regardless of whether the administration of the Psychology Board had problems transitioning from a state to a national scheme. In any case, AHPRA's failure to apply the APS Code of Ethics breaches s40 of the Health Act, which deems AHPRA to have adopted the APS Code of Ethics when it first appeared on the AHPRA website in 2010.

Meanwhile, AHPRA stated they had employed the very same APS Ethical Code and Guidelines in their administration of Bond's vexatious and unsubstantiated notification against me. On 29/3/11, they wrote:

> *The Board has adopted the Australian Psychological Society's Code of Ethics for the profession and should an investigation be commenced into the conduct and professional standards of Ms Barnett, the Code will be the standard against which the concerns will be assessed.*

Since Bond University's notification arrived prior to my joint student notification against Bond, this order of events makes a mockery of AHPRA's argument — that they were too new and disorganised to apply the APS Code of Ethics to a joint student notification against Bond University.

AHPRA condones unprofessional conduct

Bond University psychology lecturers should be held accountable according to the APS Code of Ethics and Guidelines regardless of whether psychology students are labelled 'clients' or 'colleagues.'

AHPRA's lack of action against Bond University psychology lecturers would appear to be inconsistent with the Health Act's definition of 'unprofessional conduct', which is stated to mean: '… professional conduct that is of a lesser standard than that which might reasonably be expected of the health practitioner by the public or the practitioner's professional peers.' It is difficult to imagine that the public would approve of psychologists and lecturers having parties with students, supplying students with alcohol, and then sexually assaulting students while they are under its influence of alcohol and asleep. It is also difficult to imagine that professional peers would condone Bond University's lack of adherence to mandatory reporting requirements.

AHPRA deny due process and natural justice

In a letter (dated 4/1/11) AHPRA admitted that it operates in accordance with principles of natural justice. Natural justice dictates that an individual (where allegations are to be made against that individual) is entitled to know precisely what those allegations are and the facts upon which it is said those allegations arise. However, AHPRA failed to tell me the basis for the allegations of unsatisfactory conduct and professional standards, criminal behaviour, being impaired and of posing a risk to the public. Consequently, AHPRA failed to act in accordance with the principles of natural justice.

AHPRA deprived me of my right to due process and my right to be heard. I was denied correct information and legal consultation. AHPRA denied me the opportunity to respond to Bond University's allegation I was 'psychotic' and a 'criminal.' They consistently denied me the chance to submit an initial right of reply to Bond's notification. Despite multiple requests, AHPRA failed to provide me with sufficient information concerning the content of Bond's notification against me so that I could actually compose a right of reply. To access any information, I had to struggle to obtain my AHPRA file under FOI provisions.

AHPRA directed me to attend substance abuse testing (including urinalysis) when I have no history of substance abuse and when no reference to an alleged substance abuse problem was made in the Bond University notification. Nor were there any reference to substance abuse in any of the 200 pages of my AHPRA file released via FOI.

AHPRA tried to bully, threaten and railroad me into quickly complying with their unlawful and unfair administration of a vexatious notification. AHPRA demonstrated bias, provided me with confusing and contradictory instructions, withheld crucial information and misrepresented me to the Queensland Psychology Board. AHPRA set me impossible deadlines, carrying negative consequences and threatened me with action that could result in financial loss, loss of professional registration, loss of reputation and deprivation of liberty.

AHPRA reneges on agreement

AHPRA eventually said that I could substitute their psychiatric assessment with a private medical report. My GP referred me to a high-profile psychiatrist for a specialist report. I paid thousands of dollars for a comprehensive medical report, in which the psychiatrist concluded that I had no mental health disorder. He reported that the only thing I needed counselling for was the mistreatment and subsequent stress to which Bond University had subjected me. AHPRA rejected the privately acquired medical report.

AHPRA then mysteriously gave me back my registration. Then they took it away again. This yo-yo approach was typical of Queensland AHPRA.

Several staff displayed a sarcastic and abusive phone manner. Written communication suggested that certain AHPRA staff enjoyed overstepping professional boundaries at my expense.

Complaint Tampering by Federal Agency

AHPRA's administration is answerable to the *National Health Practitioner Ombudsman*. I submitted a complaint against AHPRA, plus a request for an administrative review, to the National Ombudsman. I sent my comprehensive complaint and evidence via registered post. Despite my receiving a signed delivery confirmation slip, the ombudsman's administrator told me that their office never received my complaint. The office ignored my follow-up emails, emailed complaint submission, phone calls and recorded messages. I then formally complained about my missing parcel to Australia Post, who concluded that it 'must have been lost.'

Conclusion

Queensland AHPRA's actions against me – an innocent student and victim of crime – indicate that nothing has changed to improve their professional operation since the damning findings of the 2011 Senate Committee Inquiry. As other Independent Australia contributors have long campaigned for, a Royal Commission is required to get to the bottom of the shonky – perhaps criminal – administration of health in Australia.

* * *

SECOND BOND PSYCHOLOGY LECTURER CHARGED WITH PEDOPHILIA

Two Bond University Psychology professors were charged with historical pedophilia crimes after Bond's Psychology faculty destroyed my Psychology career – Paul Wilson and Bob Montgomery. Bob Montgomery established the Bond Psychology program while Paul Wilson was the Head of the Humanities Department. The two accused pedophile psychologists worked at Bond at the same time.

Paul Wilson was prominent in Australia's 1980s academic movement to legalise pedophilia. While lecturing at the University of Queensland, Wilson organised a pro-pedophilia conference which the university cancelled following public outcry, and he 'accidentally' showed a psychology class the end of a child porn snuff film. One student witness was the daughter of a Queensland police commissioner. Other students are now practising psychologists. Paul Wilson was friends with Queensland Police Commissioner Terry Lewis who kept a dirt file on him which surfaced during the *Kimmin's Report* and found its way into the *Fitzgerald Inquiry* of the late 1980s. The Fitzgerald Inquiry was Queensland's version of the NSW Wood Royal Commission into government child sex trafficking, and similarly buried its crucial findings.

PAUL WILSON
THE MAN THEY CALLED A MONSTER
Sexual experiences between men and boys

In 1981, Paul Wilson wrote a book subtitled, *The Man They Called a Monster: Sexual Experiences Between Men and Boys*[94] which advocated for pedophilia to be renamed 'Greek love' and be socially accepted like in Ancient Greece. The book defended Wilson's pedophile associate Clarence Henry Osborne, who maintained records of his 2,500 victims plus VIP pedophiles including academics like Paul Wilson.

In 2016, Paul Wilson was sentenced to 6 months prison for the historical sexual assault of two young girls. A journalist, to whom I provided information for a Courier Mail feature story about the case, told me Paul Wilson had such a long list of victims waiting to prosecute him, he will spend the rest of his days either in court or prison.

Bob Montgomery

In 2019, Bob Montgomery was charged with sexually abusing and anally raping three young boys at Byron Bay in the 1970s. Montgomery established psychology courses at two other universities besides Bond, including Alfred Conlon's ANU in Canberra. Montgomery authored 13 books, regularly appeared on television and radio, and was the consultant psychologist on the *Big Brother* TV show. Montgomery was 2009 to 2010 President of the APS who describe themselves as: '…the peak body for psychologists in Australia and represent over 24,000 members. We advocate for the profession of psychology, support high standards, promote community well-being, and are dedicated to providing benefits to support members.' The APS certainly supported Bob Montgomery who received a 'slap on the wrist' for having sex with his client.

Bob Montgomery headed unethical MK-ULTRA research conducted by LaTrobe University's psychology department in 1973 to 1974. The Milgram replica experiments which tested a human's willingness to fatally electrocute others left Montgomery's subjects traumatised. LaTrobe University is home to Psychology lecturer Gary Dowsett who was part of academia's 1980s push to legalise pedophilia. Until recently, Dowsett's LaTrobe University resume page featured a link to an article he wrote in *Gay Information Quarterly Journal* (Spring 1982). Titled, *Boiled Lollies and Band-Aids: Gay men and Kids,* it stated:

> *And a new political position is needed... First, we have three legal/social questions to win: custody rights for gay men and lesbians; the legal right of pedophiles and their young lovers; and finally, the sexual rights of children as a whole.... How different then is that gentle, tentative sexuality between parent and child from the love of a pedophile and his/her lover?'*

Gary Dowsett developed the Victorian Government's Safe Schools sex education curriculum which, I heard from multiple sources, contained explicit pornography and resulted in boys gangraping girls at school. As stated in response to PIE's 1976 campaign to lower the age of consent: '…what is called sex education differs from other subjects in that it may determine the immediate and future behaviour of children and change the whole climate of society.' [95]

The timing of Bob Montgomery's 1970s Milgram experiments coincides with Kidman's CIA-funded Learned Helplessness research that he conducted under Seligman's guidance. During the 1970s, Bob Montgomery was a visiting professor at the Universities of Hawaii and

---

[94] Paul R. Wilson (1981). *The Man They Called A Monster: Sexual Experiences between Men and Boys*. Cassell.

[95] Ronald Butt (1976). Who really wants a change in the age of consent? *The Times*, 22 Jan.

Oregon, MK-ULTRA research hubs. Kidman undertook a PhD in biochemistry at the University of Hawaii.

Antony Kidman and Bob Montgomery both promoted CBT (cognitive behavioural therapy) and Health Psychology in Australia. 'Health Psychology' was invented by Joseph Matarazzo who designed the 2001 torture program that Seligman was second in charge of. An excerpt from a self-help book illustrates the perceived relationship between these men, and their denial teachings:[96]

> ***Unreal Beliefs and Conflicts***
> *The final group of conflicts are caused by unrealistic beliefs, sometimes called the irrational beliefs which are found in everybody. The only thing that varies is the intensity and the number of them we have. These unrealistic expectations we have form pictures in our mind that place us in inevitable conflict and cause, not just conflict but also cause sadness, even despair.* ***Albert Ellis, Anthony Kidman and Bob Montgomery*** *as well as several other authors have one thing in common, they refer in their books to these as the 'irrational' beliefs we have about ourselves. What follows is, in fact, the ten irrational beliefs so often quoted: . . .*
>
> - ***Irrational Belief 3****: Some people are bad, wicked or evil, and they should be punished for this. . .*
> - ***Irrational Belief 5****: My bad feelings are caused by something out of my control, so I can't do anything about them. . .*
> - ***Irrational Belief 9****: My problems were caused by some events in my past, so that's why I have my problems now.*
>
> Here is my rebuttal to these points:
>
> - **Rational Belief 3**: Psychologists who rape and torture children are evil criminals who deserve to be brought to justice and punished to the full extent of the law.
> - **Rational Belief 5**: My feelings stem from implicit memories of being hypnotised, drugged, raped, and brainwashed. My feelings are outside of my conscious control because they are a symptom of repressed abuse memories. My feelings will dissipate when I remember and process my abuse.
> - **Rational Belief 9**: My current physical and psychological problems were certainly caused by my child abuse.

Antony Kidman, Bob Montgomery, and Paul Wilson were three of Australia's most prominent psychologists. Authors, university lecturers, and ABC media consultants, they used their positions to promote child abuse denial, stop victims processing their trauma memories, and mislead the public concerning the truth about organized child abuse in Australia. Not surprising if all three men were pedophiles.

Another Bond University lecturer, Richard Hicks, was involved with MK-ULTRA research in the 1960s also.[97]

---

[96] Roger F. Peters (2004). *A Wish before Dying*. HEAS Publishing.

[97] R.E. Hicks & P.J. Fink (Eds.) (1969*). Psychedelic drugs: Proceedings of a Hahnemann Medical College and Hospital symposium sponsored by the Department of Psychiatry*. Grune & Stratton.

2020 Update

On 2 June 2020, ABC News reported that Bob Montgomery pleaded guilty to anally raping three 12-year-old boys while working as a Scout master during the 1960s. He faces up to 14 years in prison. Once again, Australia's mainstream newspapers failed to mention that Montgomery was a former President of the Australian Psychological Society (APS).

On 2 June 2020, the current APS President issued the following statement to its 24,000+ member psychologists regarding Bob Montgomery:

A statement from the President regarding Bob Montgomery

Dear [Member Psychologist]

Many of you may be aware of today's media coverage regarding psychologist Bob Montgomery, who has plead guilty to child sex offences while he was a scoutmaster in Sydney in the 1960s.

Bob Montgomery has formally resigned his membership with the APS.

The APS Board wishes to acknowledge the courage displayed by the victims and their families. We hope the legal process brings some resolution.

This news may be triggering both for APS members, and for those within our communities who have a trauma history. We urge you to reach out and seek support if you are experiencing these triggers and to remember that self-care is incredibly important during such times.

*We acknowledge that some APS members may be long term friends and supporters of Bob Montgomery and his family, prior to this case emerging. Whilst the APS does not condone in any way Mr Montgomery's behaviours, **we wish to acknowledge the impact of current proceedings on him and his family's mental health and hope they are seeking support from these friends through this process**.*

Yours sincerely
Ros Knight FAPS
President

It is abhorrent for an APS President to acknowledge the impact on both the victims and their rapist in the same breath. Expressing sympathy for the rapist in this way makes any acknowledgment of the victim hollow.

The following day (3 June 2020), the current APS President issued a follow-up statement regarding Bob Montgomery. Obviously, this was in response to a national backlash of criticism from its member psychologists, many of whom work with child sex abuse victims.

Follow up statement from the President regarding Bob Montgomery

Dear [Member Psychologist]

Yesterday I issued a statement to APS members about psychologist Bob Montgomery. I have received and appreciated your heartfelt feedback to this communiqué.

The APS takes your views very seriously. Your feedback ensures we remain accountable to you, our members.

Allow me to be absolutely clear: the APS holds a position of absolute condemnation of all forms of abuse in our society. Our position remains that all forms of child sexual abuse are a profound violation of the human rights of the child, and a crime under Australian law. It is never, ever OK.

This official position, and acknowledgement of the life-long harm and suffering that can ensue, has underpinned the APS's active campaigning for better justice and interventions for survivors.

We extend our deepest acknowledgement of the pain and suffering experienced to the survivors of these traumas and their families. Psychologists should be the providers of comfort, support and healing, not the cause of pain. We hope that the survivors are receiving the assistance they need and deserve.

I also wish to acknowledge and commend all of you who work with and support survivors in these difficult and complex areas.

Finally, I take this opportunity to remind all psychologists of our mandatory reporting obligations under the law to report sexual offences (or any abuse) against children to the relevant child protection authorities, and to report peers to the relevant authorities if we suspect the public is at risk.

Yours faithfully
Ros Knight FAPS
President

This statement by the APS President is consistent with that institution's long history of child abuse denial and double speak.

* * *

ABC GET THEIR SHIT TOGETHER

Four days after I broke the above story, the ABC interviewed some pissed-off psychologists. Here are some choice extracts from the ABC article:

Australian Psychological Society under fire for 'disturbing' response to Bob Montgomery child sex prosecution

ABC News, 10 June 2020

A peak psychologist's body, once led by paedophile Bob Montgomery, has come under fire for noting the "impact" of criminal prosecution on him and urging he seek support from "long term friends" in its ranks...

The ABC has been told the Australian Psychological Society (APS) was flooded with hundreds of complaints from its own members over its response to Montgomery's guilty plea to child sex offences...

Heidi Smith, a psychologist in Western Australia, said the APS response made her feel "ill for several hours. I cried with frustration for all the child sexual abuse victims and the struggles they face with institutions supporting child sex offenders," she said. "At no point during this email does the APS mention that this man was the president of their prestigious society [or] that you cannot be a psychologist if you are convicted of a crime such as child sex abuse," she said. "It says he resigned, like it was his choice. At no point [did] they make any statement in relation to ethics or his role as a psychologist."

Montgomery was president of the APS from 2008 to 2010.

A senior psychologist, who asked not to be named, said the response was "disturbing" and members were "disgusted".

Ms Knight in her email also indicated the APS had not expelled Montgomery, who was awarded life membership in 2016, but that he had "formally resigned". The psychologist said the APS response highlighted "the impact on his mental health and that of his family — yet no mention about the mental health of Montgomery's victims for which he plead[ed] guilty to, nor for mental health of other victims. Members are so disgusted that reputations of psychologists will be tarnished by association, and that importantly, the current president of the APS, as a clinical psychologist, has ignored the impacts of the abuse on the immediate victims of her former colleague," the psychologist said.

A well-placed source told the ABC that "many hundreds of members contacted the APS," prompting Ms Knight to respond...

The senior psychologist said [the 2nd APS President statement] was "still a horrendous reaction. Alarmingly, even in her second statement the day after, she did not address the mental health impact of Montgomery's victims, but just in general about all victims," he said. "It seems in these statements the victims of Montgomery have been ignored, and just lumped into general victims of sexual abuse – whereas Montgomery was specifically mentioned and considered in relation to the impact on his mental health, it seems above the interests of his victims."

In 2014, the APS made Montgomery a "new honorary fellow" to recognise his "extraordinary and distinguished contribution." He was president the same year the professional regulator, the Psychology Board of Australia, adopted its code of ethics from the APS.

In a statement, the APS said "on reflection, the original email from the APS could have been worded differently in two areas". It said the email was an attempt to convey a "neutral, or non-biased judgment towards the matter" which was done with "the best intention". The APS said this was in line with the fact that "psychologists frequently find themselves dealing with complex matters [and] often psychologists work with both survivors and perpetrators of crimes." The APS said it had received a "small number of complaints" from its 25,000 members and took those concerns seriously... It said that "to the best of the APS's knowledge, Mr Montgomery did not contribute" to the code of ethics adopted by the professional regulator.

Far more psychologists were outraged by the APS President than the 'small number' who complained in writing. My therapist called them evil pricks, my friend’s psychologist threw things around the room and was too angry to complain in writing.

The APS president's statement revealed her true colours. Like I've been saying for many years, Australia’s psychology industry is run by dirty filthy perpetrators. They run the universities psychology courses, they run the APS, and they run the Psychology Board.

* * *

Seems there’s more to this story of coverup:

Dr Thea Vanags (Dr T)
@DrTheaVanags

Hope the sentence is a long one, Bob.

Hope @AustPsych is proud of its ex president.

Hope @UniCanberra is proud of its failure to act on student complaints about Montgomery in 2003

My heart goes out to the victims

@abcnews

Jun-02,2020 15:00
Likes : 1 Retweets : 0
Tweet URL

Satan's Seat

I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is…

Several people independently described Bundaberg to me as 'Satan's throne.' There is no denying the isolated country town is a microcosm of national coven activity, but why the Prince of Darkness would choose such a shithole for his throne room is beyond me.

Several variables lend credibility to the rumour. Bundaberg sits smack atop one of the major Ley-lines occultists prize. Another clue was the enormous road sign that confronted visitors at the town's entrance. The blood red sign contained the black silhouette of a huge bull with tall erect horns. Superficially, the bull poster advertised the *El Toro* restaurant located in the nearby coastal suburb of Bargara. On a sinister level it represented the horned bull of Mithraism and it indicated that Bundaberg was a coven capital.

Another of Bundaberg's dark features is the legendary Hummock. The Hummock is a hollow, extinct volcano that dominates the area's otherwise flat landscape. The cavern inside the Hummock is accessed via a number of the homes that sit on the hill, homes which are only ever sold on to approved coven members. Local Indigenous people said the Hummock features a natural tunnel system which joins the main enormous hollow to surrounding landmarks including the local Catholic school and cemetery. Luciferian rituals are said to take place beneath the impenetrable Hummock.

Bundaberg is characterised by a lack of aesthetics, absence of culture and an obsession with sport. Its main street was once lined with iron laced heritage buildings and enormous trees that created a long cool green arch; but someone clad the buildings, and cut down every tree, creating a repulsive heat.

In the early 1990s, a Bundaberg courthouse employee informed me that he processed one suicide per week. That statistic struck me as high, considering the town served a population of approximately 40,000.

Bundaberg's air of suicidal futility was well captured in the school war-cry that local children shared with me:

'Sex! Drugs! Rock-n-roll! Bundy High's a fuckin' hole!'

If ever you want to know what is really happening in a community – ask the kids. The local children told me about the 26 primary school students being treated at the hospital's psychiatric unit for the sexual and physical abuse they experienced at Bundaberg West State School, and which was eventually reported in the local paper. The kids informed me about the Bundaberg East State School principal who liked to watch children do cartwheels in their skirts, and who would force himself upon mothers in the school classrooms while they attended teacher interviews. The school cleaner complained to my Aunty Beryl that she would find semen all over the desks and floor. I attended this school for a while in Grade 6.

The most telling testimony came to me in 1998 from Samantha, a Grade 7 student at Woongarra State School. Samantha was an attractive 12-year-old with the body of a 16-year-old and the mouth of a 22-year-old. I met Samantha during a local cricket game. She was staying with my friend who was providing respite to the girl's mother. The 'tween-ager' was reportedly out of control and dating a man in his early twenties.

For some reason, Samantha decided to tell me all about her life, including her involvement in 'witchcraft.' The child said that she was introduced to witchcraft by her classmate whose house she often stayed at. In fact, her entire primary school class had been converted to witchcraft the previous year. ‘It was a really positive thing,’ Samantha explained, ‘because before that there was a lot of fighting and bitchiness, but after we all became involved in witchcraft it united us, and we all got on really well.’ Samantha told me about how the class would cast spells on their teacher. One of these caused her teacher’s chair to break, while another caused the teacher’s car tyre to go flat. Apparently, it was really funny, and it gave the students a means of revenge against their ‘mean’ teacher.

Samantha then revealed what she benefited from witchcraft – a sense of control over her out-of-control life. The child was angry. Two years ago, police found her grandmother dead, mysteriously slain with a fork – the common eating utensil kind. Samantha wanted revenge against an unknown entity.

I listened patiently to Samantha for about two hours, quietly prompting. Once satisfied that the girl had shared everything, I made my stand. I looked the child dead in the eye and affirmed: ‘Now listen here and you listen well. You are playing with fire, missy! Right now, this whole witchcraft thing feels fun, but come your thirteenth birthday you will be initiated into the next step – which is not fun! Once you take that next step, you will reach a point of no return. The next level is human sacrifice where they murder little babies and children. Believe me, because I’ve seen it. I know it’s real, just as you know that magic really works. Take it from someone who has seen where all of this goes – stop now before it’s too late! This is your chance, right here, right now, to get out!’

Terror seized the girl’s being and she morphed back into a 12-year-old child. ‘What do I do?’ she pleaded.

‘There’s only one way out of this mess. When I was your age, I noticed that these people were extremely rich, extremely powerful and afraid of no one or thing. But then I noticed that there was a source of power greater than theirs and that when they came up against that power, they lost. That power source was Jesus Christ. So, I figured that I would rather side with the God that held the greater source of power. The name of Jesus Christ is the only one that is able to free you from what you’ve got yourself into. Right now, Satan is lord over your life. You need to ask Jesus Christ to be Lord. You need to pray to God and ask Him to undo every curse, hex and spell that you are subject to.’

‘I want that! I want that right now!’

That afternoon, Samantha gave her heart to Jesus Christ and accepted a King James Bible. The last I heard, Samantha’s rebellious behaviour had quelled, and she was reading her Bible daily. Ideally, I would have recommended some church for Samantha to attend, but by that stage, I could think of none.

My mother originally moved to Bundaberg to be near her sisters. One sister, Beryl Jenkins, had lived in her beloved ‘Bundy’ the longest. My cousin David Mitchell rightly labelled Beryl ‘an evil bitch’ after holidaying with her as a child. When she wasn’t pretending to be a Christian elder at the local Wesleyan Methodist Church, Aunty Beryl was heavily involved in her family’s true god – basketball.

Beryl was particularly spiteful toward two members of the human race: me and my younger brother Peter. Perhaps this was because Peter and I naturally excelled at everything - including basketball. I joined a basketball team in Beryl’s *Across the Waves* club after shooting a three pointer over Will, Bundaberg’s star African American import, during a social game. I have never in my life witnessed anything as dirty and dangerous as Bundaberg women’s basketball. The saddest moment came when a 15-year-old child on the opposing team broke her ankle. As the girl lay on the bitumen crying in agony, one of my teammates -

the town's only paediatrician - snarled, 'Get her up!' This same doctor ran the Bundaberg *Rainbow Girls*, a Freemasonic youth group for girls.

At the end of my first basketball season, all of Bundaberg's opposing clubs nominated me for the overall Association trophy. However, Aunty Beryl and my own club gave me nothing. Peter also won a trophy that season, but he was struck down with an illness and bedridden, weeks prior to presentation night. Consequently, Aunty Beryl stripped Peter's name off the trophy and was about to give it to another child when the only club member with integrity intervened, chided them all, snatched the trophy and marched it to my mother's house.

But Aunty Beryl's full capacity for evil manifested at her church which my family and I initially attended. Beryl's daughter-in-law, Marcie, attended the same Wesleyan Methodist church. Marcie was my age and so we quickly became acquainted. She invited me to join the church youth group. When Marcie introduced a fellow youth group member who worked as a meter reader to me as being 'like a spy for us,' I realised she was consciously involved in a coven and had mistakenly assumed that I was too. It's a common assumption because Satanists can't fathom the concept of escaping.

Marcie warned me not to associate with a warm, pretty and musically talented youth group member named Lynette.

'Why not?' I puzzled.

'She's trouble,' Marcie asserted. 'She flirts with all the boys.'

'What do you mean? What boys?'

'It doesn't matter,' she rolled her eyes. 'She's just caused a lot of trouble.'

Aunty Beryl also warned me against associating with Lynette. Then Pastor Peter Breen's daughter repeated derogative things that her mother, Mavis Breen, had uttered against Lynette. The whole church seemed to be gossiping about Lynette behind her back. Their comments were inconsistent with the modest sweet girl that I was observing; so, I did what a Christian is supposed to do – I decided to talk with Lynette and make up my own mind about her. To everyone's horror, I invited the social outcast to a big Christmas party at Aunty Beryl's house, and I spent the entire evening getting to know Lynette. Eventually, I told Lynette bluntly what people had been saying to me about her, and I asked her what was going on.

Lynette told me about an incident that had occurred when she was 16 years old. Her older sister Diane was about to be married but was killed in a car accident just south of Bundaberg, the week before her wedding. On the day of her wedding, the guests who had travelled for the wedding attended her funeral instead. Her bridesmaids, dressed alike in their formal wedding-day dresses, stood by the bride's coffin instead.

During the chaotic week following her sister's death, Lynette fell ill. So, her sister's best friend, a nurse named Wendy, invited Lynette to stay at her house. Wendy's husband, Adrian, was the son of a church deacon and a notorious philanderer. One morning, Wendy gave Lynette a large dose of codeine medication (Mersyndol) which left the child extremely drowsy and asleep in the spare bedroom. Soon after Wendy left for work, Adrian entered Lynette's room, picked her up, carried her to his bed, and sexually assaulted her.

I met with Lynette the day after her disclosure, placed some crayons and paper in front of her, and said, 'Draw it for me. Show me what Adrian did to you.'

Lynette drew the assault.

'Now,' I continued, 'draw a thought bubble above your head. Inside the thought bubble, write words that you were thinking.'

She wrote, *NO!*

'Did you tell your parents about this?'

'Yes.'

'What did they do?'

'They could have had him charged but that would have broken up the church.'

'So instead, everyone doesn't know the truth, and someone started the rumour that you flirted with him.'

'Yes.'

'And let me guess – your parents have been too preoccupied with your sister's death to notice how you felt about being assaulted straight after your sister's death?'

'Yes.'

'And just how do you feel?'

'Like no-one would notice if I was gone.'

'Do you wish you were gone?'

'Yes.'

'Have you thought about killing yourself?'

'Yes.'

'Have you thought of how you'd do it?'

'Yes - overdose on pills…'

I was myself young and inexperienced yet aware that the last time I kept silent about someone's suicidal ideation they gassed themselves to death in Amsterdam. So, I had a go: 'Lynette, this is a perfectly normal reaction to something bad that happened to you. Your sister was killed and while you were still in shock from that, and ill, and drugged, an adult sexually assaulted you. You were a child. None of this is your fault. You did nothing wrong.' I paused. 'I think you need to tell your parents about how you really feel. And I think someone needs to put a stop to all the church gossip.'

Lynette agreed. In fact, now she felt like standing up and telling the whole church.

'How about we start with Pastor Breen? How would you feel about showing him these drawings?'

'Yes, I'd like that.'

'We could go right now if you like?'

'Yes.'

We went looking for the pastor at the church, but no-one was there. Then an idea dawned on me. I led Lynette into the empty church. 'I'm going to sit in the pews,' I suggested. 'You stand at the front behind the pulpit. Pretend that the church is full. Tell the church what you would like them to know.'

Lynette addressed the invisible congregation and expressed what had been tearing her up inside since her sister's death.

Peter Breen arrived, and I told him, 'Lynette has something to show you. Show him the drawings Lynette and tell him what you told me.'

Lynette showed the pastor her drawings, carefully explaining each one.

Pastor: 'I feel sick.'

'Did you know any of this?' I asked him.

'No, Lynette, I'm sorry, I didn't realise.'

'Well,' I continued, 'practically the whole church is gossiping about a wrong version of it, including my family and yours. Lynette here would like to get up in front of the whole congregation and tell everyone the truth. Instead, I think it's only fair that you locate every single person who has been told the wrong story and tell them the truth.

He nodded. 'And please don't tell Mavis [his wife] about this. It'll ruin her Christmas.'

That evening, Lynette and I met with her parents and filled them in on recent events, including the malicious gossip. I prompted Lynette to express to her parents how she felt.

'I want to commit suicide,' Lynette announced.

Her parents became still like stunned mullets.

I softly asked Lynette's Dad, 'Where is your daughter right now?

'Huh?'

'Where is Diane right now?'

He thought for a moment. 'In heaven.'

'What do you think she thinks about that?'

'Well…she'd be very happy.'

'And what do you think God thinks of where she is right now?'

'Well, he would be pleased to have her there.'

'Okay, so your daughter's in heaven, she is happy with that arrangement and so is God. God is sovereign, He loves us, but He decided to take her anyhow. I don't know why God allows such horrible things to happen to us, I just know that we have to trust Him with the situation. While you have been grieving for your eldest daughter, you haven't noticed that you're about to lose your youngest.'

The full impact of my intervention with Lynette became apparent many months later. It all began one Sunday morning during church service. The pastor had introduced a new age doctrine to the church which involved having parishioners sit in a circle for service and inviting people to voice their opinion mid-service. One morning, the pastor gave a sermon on God's image, and he asked people in the service to verbalise their impressions of God.

Troy, a nice young man who had been a Christian for about a week, raised his hand and excitedly offered his opinion: 'I-I-I think of the song, He's got the whole world in His hands. I'm-I'm into body building, and that's just my thing. So, I see God like a big Arnie Schwarzenegger holding up the world in his arms!'

The congregation applauded.

Just then, a self-appointed church leader named Spencer Gere shot to his feet and pompously tore Troy's opinion apart: 'God is immaterial. He cannot be compared to mortal being, to some Hollywood actor …'

As Spencer Gere raved on like a Shakespearean soliloquy, I turned to notice Troy behind me, deflating like a pool floaty. I arose and spoke, 'The Bible clearly states that we are made in God's image. We have arms – so does God. Troy may not have been a Christian for very long, he may not have been to Bible College and he may not have read a lot of books yet, but his understanding of God is just as valid. And now I'll give you all something more important to focus on – someone in this congregation is involved in Satanism.'

The congregation applauded.

Following the service, people approached me and stated: 'Thanks for standing up for me...' 'You said what we've all been thinking but didn't have the guts to say…' 'That guy has been putting us down for months.'

I was immediately summoned to an emergency meeting attended by Pastor Breen, Spencer Gere, Aunty Beryl, Lynette's Dad (Kevin) and the pastor's brother-in-law. Instead of opening the meeting in prayer, Spencer Gere launched into a criticism of me. Yet, every time he went to address me, I was overcome with a deep spiritual repulsion, as though an evil spirit was daring to converse - I promptly cut him off: ‘Don’t you dare speak to me!’

Pastor: ‘You can’t talk to Spencer like that!’

‘He’s not a man of God!’ I snapped.

Pastor: ‘What you are doing is not of God.’

‘How would you know?’

‘Because you’re causing division in the church!’

‘Jesus said he came to separate the sheep from the goats.’

Pastor Breen was dumb.

Aunty Beryl sat quietly with a smug look on her face.

Tears welled in my eyes.

Lynette’s father interjected: ‘No, no, no. This is all wrong. This is wrong. Fiona has done a lot to help our family. She saved our daughter’s life!’

But the wolf pack were not interested in words of reason, righteousness or support.

Their criticism faded into background noise as I focussed on Lynette’s father:

‘Fiona, Fiona, ‘he implored. ‘Do you remember what you said to me?’

‘No,’ I sobbed.

‘You told me three things that helped me get over my daughter’s death.’ He counted the list off his fingers. ‘Where is my daughter now, what does she think about that, and what does God think about that.’

‘Thank you,’ I managed a small smile. Then I left.

The following Sunday I began attending the local Baptist church which had two ministers. One of the ministers reminded me of a stout Roman Caesar, especially when, mid-sermon, he patted his fat gut and irreverently boasted, ‘And you all know how much I like my food.’ After my third Sunday of attendance, this pastor asked to meet with me. During this meeting he said that Pastor Breen had phoned him and warned him not to let me attend this church because I liked to ‘lure vulnerable young women into questionable counselling situations.’ Pastor Glutton concluded, ‘We do not want you to be a vessel through which the Holy Spirit works in this church.’ Months later, Pastor Glutton caused a split in the church and eventually started up a new church in Bargara with half of the congregation.

At about this time, Aunty Beryl rallied Mum’s siblings plus my father into making a joint complaint to DOCS. Beryl alleged that my mother medically neglected my brother Peter who was not recovering from one of the numerous mystery illnesses that seemed to constantly plague Bundaberg in Biblical proportions. My mother had indeed sought medical attention. She had taken Peter to Bundaberg Base Hospital (notorious for Dr Patel’s killing spree) only to be told that there were no vacant beds and to go home and consult her GP in the morning. Mum took my brother back to his GP who wrote a medical certificate stating that there was nothing wrong with Peter. We later discovered that Peter had a rare virus that ate away the cartilage between two of his vertebrae and his hip. Peter’s GP was later struck of the medical registrar for multiple complaints of malpractice.

My sister-in-law thrust Peter’s medical certificate in Aunty Beryl’s grimacing face while I asserted: ‘Oh you care so much about Peter’s illness. You cared so much that you ripped his name off his basketball trophy!’

Beryl screamed hysterically, ‘Have you spoken to James Kraak yet? Well you should!’ and she left.

James Kraak was the pastor of the new church that my mother and siblings had been attending called the People’s Church. At that stage, I was unaware that Kraak and his wife

Helen had ritually abused my siblings at a church holiday camp held at Harvey Bay. I was aware that Kraak's son had been suspended while under investigation for pedophilia at the remote primary school he taught at. In fact, I barely knew Pastor Kraak when I promptly drove to his house and said, 'Beryl told me that I should speak with you. Why?'

Kraak turned red and snapped, 'She shouldn't have!'

'What did you say to her?'

'I'm not telling you!'

One year, there was a knock at my front door. It was Lynette's father Kevin - and Peter Breen. Pastor Breen began, 'Spencer Gere wanted to come, but I didn't think that would be a good idea.'

Me: 'Correct.'

'We've had some experiences in the church which have led us to reconsider what you said about someone in the church being involved in Satanism.'

'What experiences?'

'One of the ladies was sewing and the sewing machine just picked itself off the table and smashed itself to pieces on the floor.'

Pastor Breen: 'What can you tell us about Libby Margots?'

I snapped, 'You went and told that other minister that I liked to lure vulnerable young women into questionable counselling situations! Did you ask Kevin here what he thought of that conclusion before making that phone call? You have more than one Satanist at your church, Peter. For starters there's that warlock that you've placed on a pedestal and who is picking on new Christians! And what the hell are you doing attending secret prayer meetings with the local Catholic priest at the Catholic Church?! Your every move is dictated by a coven. Here you are asking about Libby when she manipulated you into ordering me not to speak with her again. What the hell was that?!'

Pastor Breen left the building.

Later, sources told me that Peter Breen and his family had come under severe spiritual attack. One person who was dining with the Breens witnessed the whole family suddenly jump to their feet and rush into another room to pray. Pastor Breen left the ministry soon after, and his son Harley Breen whom my brothers befriended and was fond of, became a foul-mouthed comedian who joked about the hypocrisy of his father's Bundaberg church.

The Libby referred to was Aunty Beryl's friend. Libby Margots strategically drained the church's financial and human resources via counselling for her homosexual husband plus financial assistance for her six home-schooled children. Libby's constant companion was a young woman who introduced herself to me as: 'I'm Libby's slave.' Coven members call new initiates whom they are mentoring 'slaves.' My friend who regularly babysat for Libby (another Libby surnamed Fenner) told me about the goats and many other animals that Libby bred in large numbers, all of which would suddenly and mysteriously disappear. It was James Kraak who informed my mother that Libby was secretly in a relationship with a coven member named Robyn Brown.

My family and I quickly caught on to Libby's game – and she knew it. That's why Libby ordered Pastor Breen to tell my mother and me to stay away from her. However, Libby couldn't have felt as threatened as she made out. At a church luncheon she casually walked up to me and asked, 'Fiona, I saw you at the hospital the other day. What were you doing there?'

'I was visiting Marcie.' My cousin had recently suffered a miscarriage.

'No, it wasn't that. It was something else. What was it?'

I was volunteering at the hospital but had not told anyone about it. Such is the boldness that coven members exhibit when they seek information.

Libby was connected with the owner of one of Bundaberg's landmarks – the Purple Castle. This was a private dwelling which was built in the shape of a witches' castle and painted in tell-tale purple. A bricklayer who laboured on the purple castle told my mother that he built a large round altar at its centre. The purple castle was owned and occupied by a woman who took in numerous young single mothers. Baby diapers constantly filled her clothesline. This was a blatant coven breeding centre.

Bundaberg featured a large coven which comprised entirely of members with Scottish heritage. One member of this was a woman we called 'the hat lady' because she sold handmade hats at the local market. My family were thrice confronted by this hat lady, once at a highland dancing event, once at a market and most memorably in *Bonnie Jean's* fabric shop. During the latter incident, I stood at a large table glancing through pattern catalogues. My mother and sister-in-law Janine stood on the other side, doing the same. My baby sister Emma wandered nearby.

Suddenly we were surrounded by several people including the hat lady, a man in a full rainbow clown outfit and an obese, dark haired woman.

I snapped to attention. 'Don't let them form a triangle around us!' I ordered my family. 'Get Emma away from that clown!'

My mother fetched Emma. The hat lady came and stood very close to my right and began turning the pages of a catalogue. The clown stood close to my left, pretending to browse lingerie patterns. The fat lady stood at the counter, purchasing black and purple satin. I turned to the hat lady and affirmed, 'I rebuke you in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.'

The clown gasped, ran off to an obese woman who stood at the counter measuring yards of black and purple satin, and whispered something to her. The woman boasted aggressively, 'She wouldn't dare say that to me!' Yes, I would.

The hat lady thrust her gargoyle face in mine and hissed, 'Who do you think you are?' I looked her dead in the eye and affirmed: 'I-will-be-your-*downfall*.'

The hat lady flew into a rage, knocked me out of her way and snatched my catalogue. She slammed the book down on the table and began thumbing through the pages. 'Rachel!' she shrieked.

A thin, young store assistant nervously approached the table.

'Rachel! Did you hear what this lady said? She rebuked me in Jesus' name!'

Rachel's eyes darted about nervously as she scanned my family for clues as to what she should do.

'We're just looking at patterns,' my mother shrugged.

I gave Rachel a look of 'who's the crazy' while twirling my finger around my ear.

'Well?!' the hat wench demanded: 'What are you going to do about it?!'

Rachel stammered, 'I-I-I don't know what to do.'

The coven members congregated at the counter while my family and I stood in a small circle and began to pray aloud. Then the group disbanded and returned to normal behaviour, completely ignoring the fact that a group of people were praying aloud in the middle of a fabric shop.

I encountered another Scottish identity while participating in a local production of the musical *Les Miserables*. John Harbison was an optometrist whose friendship seemed harmless until he began criticising my absent English boyfriend, and saying, 'He only thinks he loves you, but he doesn't.'

I agreed to accompany John Harbison to a restaurant for dinner. Afterwards, we went back to his house for tea. We sat on the back deck of his Queenslander home, glancing through art books. I commented on one of the artworks when suddenly, coffee in hand, John Harbison leaned forward, stared at my eyes and declared:

'Beezlebub, Lord of the Flies!'

'Huh?' I shot him a puzzled look. 'Beezlebub lord of the flies?! What does that have to do with the price of fish?'

Harbison frantically scanned my face for signs of an impending expected reaction – but it wasn't forthcoming. He had uttered a trigger phrase, not realising that because I had processed the ritual abuse incidents, the trigger was deactivated. That was Harbison's first blunder.

His second mistake came after I told him I was visiting England. What I had failed to tell him was that I would only be in England a few short months before travelling to Western Australia. I was interstate when my mother received a letter that John Harbison addressed to me. In his letter he stated that he was in a Scottish pub and had scoured the UK searching for me. 'WHERE ARE YOU?!' he screamed in erratic font that consumed half a page.

'But he knew where you were,' my mother deduced. 'You told him you were in England. Why would he think anything else?'

John's letter ended with a one page of list of grotesque and seemingly unrelated words including 'vomit' and 'rhinoceros' that resembled a curse.

The next time I spied John Harbison was during the early hours of the morning, under a full moon. My mother and I recognised him with three men standing together in the next-door driveway. They were dressed in brown robes and pointed hats. The men stood out the front of 46 George St, near the front unit occupied by a South African man named Tony and his four-year-old-son. The little boy often entered our house uninvited and started talking to us. One day we caught him perfectly forming his hands into a satanic sign. We asked him what the sign meant. The child answered and then proceeded to talk us through and demonstrate his enormous repertoire of satanic hand signals.

On another day, the little boy walked into Mum's bedroom, eating an ice block. When he finished, he showed my mother the stick and asked, 'What does that say?'

'Heaven,' Mum read.

'Do you know where that is?' he pointed to the ground. 'Down there.'

'Oh, no it isn't. That's where Satan lives.' Mum pointed to the sky. 'Heaven is up there. God lives up there.'

The boy then pointed at my brother Peter and blurted, 'We shot Peter last night!'

The previous night, Peter had awoken screaming in agony and saying he felt something like electricity shoot up his arm.

That was the last time we saw the little boy. He and his father suddenly disappeared. A while later we spied a cleaning lady at their rented unit. Under the guise of being a potential tenant, my sister-in-law Janine approached the cleaner and inquired about the unit. The cleaning lady began complaining about the job. She described a strange brownish substance that was stuck to the bathroom floor and walls, and she invited Janine in to look. Janine returned to us looking a shade paler. 'It's everywhere! There's a great pool of it all over the floor, and it's splattered all over the walls and ceiling. It looks like someone was butchered in there!'

Following this incident, Bundaberg Centrelink social security office sent my mother a letter informing her that my brother Peter was dead. Then Mum found a little white note that a postal worker had taped to the inside of her Australia Post box which read, ‘Watch mail coming into this box.’ Then we found dried, dead chopped up animals scattered all over our front footpath. Then, on several occasions, taxis continually circled our block and drove past our house from midnight until 3am.

During our final year in Bundaberg, one of my brother’s began dating his classmate Anne Gillespie. Anne was of Scottish heritage and she lived in a Bargara house that was passed from coven family to coven family. Anne showed me a satanic altar that was erected in her back yard. She told my family that babies had been sacrificed in her home and that there was an enormous blood stain on the wooden floor of her upstairs bedroom, beneath the carpet. My brother clearly recalls a time that Anne’s parents drugged him and Anne during a party attended by local coven members.

Anne was 17 years old when she told my mother that she was frightened of her parents and she begged my mother to help her escape Bundaberg. When my husband and I left Bundaberg, we gave Anne a ride. As soon as we were gone, police Sergeant Greg Maloney phoned my mother’s house and hissed to my eight-year-old brother Michael: ‘Your mother has thirty minutes to tell me where Anne is, or else I’ll come and get you all in my squad car!’ This was the same Sergeant who bullied a 16-year-old girl out of pursuing legal recourse for being gang raped by 10 young Bundaberg men. The girl assumed that her boyfriend was dropping her at work when he drove her to a warehouse where the perpetrators awaited. These men are now all prominent Bundaberg businessmen. The men proceeded to rape the girl all day and night. The girl attended Bundaberg hospital which reported the rape to local police. Sergeant Greg Maloney subsequently interrogated the girl severely, including verbally abusing and accusing her in a manner inconsistent with police policy and procedures. When the girl broke down under this pressure, Sergeant Maloney concluded she would not withstand cross-examination, and so he dropped the matter.

My mother returned Sergeant Maloney’s call and informed him that Anne had already town left with me. Sergeant Maloney threatened, ‘We have the power to block every single road in the state, and we’ll do it! We’ll find them!’

They didn’t find us.

Later, I lodged complaints regarding the sergeant with several bodies including the CJC (criminal justice commission) which was supposedly independent. The young woman from the anti-corruption commission whom I spoke with immediately contacted the Bundaberg’s Sergeant Maloney and informed him of my complaint. I correctly anticipated this and confronted her on the phone: ‘You just called Bundaberg – didn’t you!’

‘I-ah-er-…’

‘Yeah, I know exactly how you lot work.’

Anne’s parents placed a mental health warrant out for her despite no history or symptoms of mental illness. In an attempt to secure Anne’s rights, I consulted legal aid, paid a lawyer and studied relevant legislation. The police recorded an interview with Anne at my home. During this, Anne told the police all about the murders and child abuse that she had witnessed in her home.

Anne repeated this information to the Department of Children’s Services (DOCS). In response, DOCS demanded an interview with my mother. DOCS acted more interested in what my mother might have said to influence Anne, rather than Anne’s allegations against her parents of involvement in child abuse and murder. When DOCS interviewed me, the first thing they asked was whether my brother, who was slightly older than Anne, was in a sexual relationship with his girlfriend.

‘No,’ I responded. ‘So, you’re more interested in pinning a statutory rape case on my brother rather than investigating Anne’s testimony of child abuse and murder in her parents’ home?’

Despite their best efforts, DOCS found nothing against my family – because there was nothing to find. Anne moved interstate with my family where she enrolled in her final year of high school. When she turned 18 years old, she left us to meet her former best friend from Bundaberg at a nearby hotel. We never saw Anne Gillespie again.

* * *

Witches in the Workplace

I completed my psychology undergraduate degree two weeks before the birth of my first child. My eldest baby was 18 months old when I underwent a rigorous selection process for becoming a parole officer. I was placed on a waitlist for a position in my local NSW area. Meanwhile, I was advised to take a casual position with an interstate parole office which was suddenly desperate for applicants. I took a casual position at Burleigh Heads. Most Queensland parole officer positions were casual. I met one employee who had been casual for 11 years and could not get a house loan because his job was not permanent.

At Burleigh, I unwittingly entered an industrial nightmare, 'the systematic destruction of a fully functioning office,' as Robyn Farris described it. Regional Manager Rod had seconded Burleigh Heads boss of 20 years, John, against his will to Beenleigh office located 100km north of his workplace and home. Rod then gave the freshly vacated managerial position to his friend Catherine Hand who held no parole officer experience or relevant tertiary qualifications. Catherine had a visual arts diploma from the Queensland College of Art where I obtained my first degree. Upon assuming the management position, Catherine bullied out the experienced officers who had worked harmoniously together at Burleigh for 14 years. Catherine replaced these with young, inexperienced females, including dumb blonde looking me.

I excelled at the job tasks and thoroughly enjoyed working with offenders. I had a knack for court report writing, understanding legislation, and court work. My first court performance was the talk of the office, and my fast brain coped easily with a caseload of 100 offenders. It was the office politics that concerned me. For three months I quietly observed Catherine Hand bully the experienced staff, place them under excessive scrutiny, label them 'dead wood,' and slash their caseloads. On one occasion, Catherine pinned an outstanding teenage parole officer named Chris to the wall, placed her fat red lips inches from his face, and screamed at the top of her voice in front of reporting offenders: 'YOU'RE A FUCKING IDIOT!' The Federal Police subsequently snatched Chris up for employment.

Catherine Hand presented her offer to me one Friday afternoon following a training conference at Tugun Life Saving Club. I found myself sitting alone with at a café table with Catherine who fiddled with the ring on her finger. It was gold and bore an *Order of the Easter Star* encircled pentagram. The pentagram centre contained a black stone, while each point featured a different coloured gemstone: blue, green, red, white and yellow.

'Fiona, have you seen my ring?' Catherine asked.

'No,' I lied.

'This is my coven ring. Each gemstone represents one of the women in our coven. I'm the diamond. This one is Megan [a Queensland College of Art pottery teacher]. Every two years, no matter where we are in the world, the five of us meet up. Fiona, if you play your cards right, you'll go far in management.'

I eyeballed Catherine and sternly affirmed: 'I'm not management material.'

The following Monday, I submitted detailed complaint against Catherine Hand's bullying behaviour to upper management. Upon discovering this, Catherine called me into her office where Southport Area Manager Peter Smales sat smirking. Catherine Hand pinned me against the wall like a white-collared psychopath and shoved her face in mine. She smiled like a Cheshire cat and spat, 'You have ten minutes to vacate your office!'

The Corrective Services Regional Manager subsequently sent me a letter which notified me I had been temporarily filling in for some woman named Helen who had been on maternity leave (news to me) and that I was being let go. Rod stipulated in writing that I had done 'nothing wrong.'

Three Burleigh parole officers and I lodged successful WorkCover compensation claims against Catherine Hand. The Industrial Relations commissioner also upheld my complaint against Catherine, openly called her a bully during the first round of hearings. With disgust he declined Catherine Hand's ridiculous settlement offer and he decided for me that I would be pursuing the matter further. Yet I decided to leave Catherine behind me and concentrate on my new job offer, because I am not that litigious.

However, Catherine Hand pursued me, with the full blessing of the Queensland Department of Corrective Services. Catherine Hand used government expenditure to hire a private detective who sat in a car outside my house photographing me. Then she went through my resume and phoned previous employers looking for dirt on me. Then she phoned my next two bosses and told them to get rid of me. Finally, I hired a barrister who phoned the Queensland Department of Corrective Service State Manager and requested the Department cease harassing me.

State Manager: 'We can do whatever the fuck we like!'

My barrister: 'No, you fucking *can't*!'

Meanwhile, the Department hired a professional mediator to investigate and mediate Burleigh Heads office. The man interviewed each employee separately and then coordinated a group confrontation where the office had the opportunity to vent their experiences. Catherine Hand subsequently broke down crying and apologised to young Chris who told me, 'I almost felt sorry for her.'

I was not invited to that healing opportunity, which is a shame because that is the point at which I developed noticeable PTSD symptoms (separate from those attached to my child abuse flashbacks). This bullying experience marked a permanent personality change.

Catherine Hand and her co-conspirators were subsequently promoted, and the Burleigh office was eventually cleared of all its 'dead wood.'

A decade later, the bullied senior staff vouched for my character to Gavan Palk who supervised my psychology registration. I reeled in horror the day Gavan informed me he was the Corrective Services boss who first hired Catherine Hand.

'*YOU* hired her?!'

'I know,' he lamented. 'I'm sorry. I had no idea.'

* * *

Conspiracy Fact

Anyone who challenges the prevailing orthodoxy finds himself silenced with surprising effectiveness.

- George Orwell

9-11

In October 2002, I was in New York City, peering out a massive window of the World Finance Centre at the construction scene below. Next to me stood Eddie, the once-jolly janitor who now suffered PTSD.

'Were you here that day?' I asked.

'Ma'am, I was standing right here. Something made me stop and look out this here window. I never done that before. But something made me do it. I saw a black van pull up on that, there road. And no vehicles *ever* stop there: you can see how busy it is. Two guys dressed in black suits and white shirts got out, fiddled with a black box in their hands. Then they got back into the van and drove off. Minutes later - *BOOM!* - them bombs went off. It was like watching a movie. I didn't believe it was real. I could see people up there deciding whether, or not to jump. I been telling everyone what happened. Then the managers came to me and said, "Eddie, you gotta stop talking about this to people. People gonna think you're crazy. You should just worry about your job." But I said, "Why should I shut up? Why do you care about what I say?! Why don't you care about those people that died? You should care about the people that died!" There was a childcare in that building. Full of little children! Trains full of people starved to death!'

'Who do you think did it?' I asked.

'The *government* did it!' Eddie punched the air, his eyes widened like a wild animal. 'Man, our own government did it!'

'I believe you, Eddie. I believe you…'

* * *

GLADIO & the NWO

An examination of *Operation Gladio* and its key players explains the Nazi origins of the CIA plus the false flag methods they developed to target dissident groups who threaten the Illuminati agenda. The CIA originally targeted Communists, then Muslim 'terrorists', now 'far-right Christian extremists' and anyone who opposes the emerging New World Order.

Propaganda tool Wikipedia defines *Gladio* as follows:

> *Operation Gladio is the codename for clandestine "stay-behind" operations of armed resistance that was planned by the Western Union (WU), and subsequently by NATO, for a potential Warsaw Pact invasion and conquest in Europe. Although Gladio specifically refers to the Italian branch of the NATO stay-behind organizations, "Operation Gladio" is used as an informal name for all of them. Stay-behind operations were prepared in many NATO member countries, and some neutral countries. The role of the CIA in Gladio—the extent of its activities during the Cold War era and any responsibility for terrorist attacks perpetrated in Italy during the 'Years of Lead' (late*

1960s to early 1980s)—are the subject of debate. Switzerland and Belgium have had parliamentary inquiries into the matter.

Allan Francovich's 1992 documentary GLADIO, which screened on BBC2's Timewatch, ends all debate regarding the CIA's involvement in 'false flag' terror activities. The series proves *Operation Gladio* gave rise to the CIA's current modus operandi. In it, Francovich interviewed numerous Operation Gladio primary witnesses and perpetrators, including the following individuals:

- CIA director William Colby
- An Italian Gladio commander
- A Belgian Gendarme (military force with civilian police duties)
- An OSS officer
- The Head of Propaganda Due (P2 'Grand Orient of Italy' Masonic Lodge)
- An Italian neofascist and terrorist
- A Venetian judge
- A Belgian Senator.

Operation Gladio was financed by both the USA and the UK. Gladio NATO bases were located in London, UK and near Boston, USA, and comprised of special USA, English, French and Belgian units. Gladio officers were trained by MI6 in Hartford, England. Under the auspices of British Intelligence, the CIA, Mossad and other secret service organisations combined to create an international clandestine security force – an 'invisible army' – so secret that governments knew nothing of their existence. Only leaders sympathetic to the CIA were informed of Gladio. Hence Gladio points to the existence of a global shadow government being a terrifying reality and not some vague 'conspiracy theory.'

Gladio demonstrates the existence of a global shadow government

Operation Gladio commenced in Italy in 1951, and expanded to Denmark, Norway, Holland, Spain, Turkey, and Greece. In a nutshell, Operation Gladio recruited Nazi war criminals to the OSS (the CIA's predecessor) to track down key communists and commit terror attacks which they then blamed on the communists, as a means of quelling rising communist influence. For example, Licio Gelli was an original key Nazi recruit. Gelli had served as a Blackshirt (Italian fascist) and liaison officer between the Italian government and the Nazi SS before the OSS/CIA employed him to instigate terrorist activities in Italy including the Bologna Massacre which killed 85 and injured 200. Gelli headed and reformed Italy's secret P2 Masonic Lodge whose members included members of Italy's three secret services, royalty, top military officers, senior police, senior politicians (notably future Prime Minister Berlusconi), journalists, broadcasters, bankers, judges, civil servants, businessmen, and mafia. Today 1000 x P2 member names remain secret. Like most elite perpetrators, Gelli escaped multiple charges, and retired in beautiful Tuscany until his death at age 96. Child trafficker Mother Teresa supported Gelli's Nobel prize nomination in 1996.

FREEMASON CONNECTION

Reformed Freemason Michael Witcoff explains the tight relationship between the Freemasons and the secret services. Basically, Masonic lodges offer an ideal recruitment ground for CIA agents, since members of secret lodges have already proven their ability to keep a secret. Freemasonry also serves as a means of information gathering and dispersion.

PATCON [98]

Since 1976, the FBI has trained heads of Australian law enforcement organisations at their national academy in Quantico, Virginia. An expressed goal of the training is to create collaboration between international law enforcement agencies and governments. In 2006, the FBI launched a Counter-Terrorism program for Australian law enforcement officials. One graduate described the program as follows:

> *'This place is like the temple where leaders of law enforcement*
> *come to receive their mission - don't ever lose the magic*.'

NSW Police Commissioner Anthony ('Tony') Raymond Lauer trained at the FBI Academy. Lauer became Commissioner in 1991 but resigned prematurely in 1996 due to the Wood Royal Commission into NSW police corruption. Lauer had succeeded Commissioner John Avery (my perpetrator). Lauer previously trained with the Australian Army at Holsworthy in 1957 and headed the Freemason Grand Lodge of NSW and ACT.

Commissioner Lauer attended the FBI Academy at a time when the FBI instigated an infiltration program code-named PATCON (short for 'Patriot Conspiracy'). 'Patriot' loosely defines antigovernment, racist, antisemitic, and/or Christian 'extremists.' PATCON officially ran from 1991 to 1993 and consisted of FBI undercover agent provocateurs posing as members of a fictional extremist group, to infiltrate target Patriot groups, and gather intelligence related to past, present, or future crimes. PATCON's 1991 prosecution goals included: conspiracy to commit murder, illegal possession of weapons, and money laundering. However, no criminal convictions resulted. Instead, PATCON proved to be a training exercise for Ruby Ridge, Waco, Oklahoma bombing, 9-11, and Australia's Port Arthur massacre. The operation also provided preparation for the myriad of anti-terror laws introduced to Australia post-9-11, and the subsequent establishment of 'Fixated Persons' police-psychiatric detainment facilities in both Australia and the UK.

SOCIAL MEDIA PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS

The internet is a psychological war zone. The secret services, military, Vatican, cults, and various police organisations employ thousands upon thousands of social media agents. The role of these agents is to monitor, identify, target, and infiltrate individuals and activist groups opposed to the Luciferian global agenda. Social media agents target those who speak out against such controversial issues as the global child sex trafficking operation, 5G, vaccination, immigration, and the 'Safe Schools' program. After six years of battling it out on the internet, the agents' behavioural patterns have become obvious to me. I conclude that approximately 90 percent of the higher profile alternative media identities are in fact agents, paid to control the narrative regarding controversial topics, with the primary goal of swaying public opinion and subduing the masses from revolting. These agents employ Hegelian

---

[98] Jim Berger (21 May 2012). *PATCON, International Security Policy Paper*. New America Foundation. [archive.org]

Dialectic methods and pretend to argue a topic, when in fact they are all working toward the same goal. They muddy the waters with endless rhetoric until the public is confused and dissuaded from investigating the truth of a matter.

The following three news articles provide insight to this type of psychological operation. The authorities typically claim these operations exist to target extremists, when in fact they target government dissidents. The terms 'Russia' and 'Isis' are employed, to justify the existence of such Orwellian measures.

BRITISH ARMY CREATES TEAM OF FACEBOOK WARRIORS

Ewen MacAskill, *The Guardian*, 31 Jan 2015.

The British army is creating a special force of Facebook warriors, skilled in psychological operations and use of social media to engage in unconventional warfare in the information age. The 77th Brigade, to be based in Hermitage, near Newbury, in Berkshire, will be about 1,500-strong and formed of units drawn from across the army. It will formally come into being in April.

The brigade will be responsible for what is described as non-lethal warfare. Both the Israeli and US army already engage heavily in psychological operations. Against a background of 24-hour news, smartphones and social media, such as Facebook and Twitter, the force will attempt to control the narrative. The 77th will include regulars and reservists and recruitment will begin in the spring. Soldiers with journalism skills and familiarity with social media are among those being sought.

…

The Israel Defence Forces have pioneered state military engagement with social media, with dedicated teams operating since Operation Cast Lead, its war in Gaza in 2008-9. The IDF is active on 30 platforms – including Twitter, Facebook, YouTube and Instagram – in six languages… It has been approached by several western countries, keen to learn from its expertise.

…

The creation of 77th Brigade comes as the commander of NATO special operations headquarters, Lt Gen Marshall Webb, speaking in Washington this week, expressed concern about Russia and about Isis. 'Special operations headquarters is uniquely placed to address this," he said…

* * *

CYBER WARFARE: ARMY CREATES 'TWITTER TROOPS'

Alistair Bunkall, Defence Correspondent, *Sky News*, 31 Jan 2015.

The British Army is setting up a brigade of soldiers - tasked with tackling groups like Islamic State - using social media. Members of 77 Brigade have been trained to use guerrilla tactics and will be experts in psychological warfare operations. The Army hopes the brigade will impact the traditional battlefield using non-lethal techniques including social media to reflect the digital age. Using creative thinking it is hoped that 77 Brigade will influence the minds and shape the behaviour of the enemy and local *populations. This has led to the early nickname "Twitter troops" for the Brigade, which will be formally created on 1 April.*

…

Its members will support mainstream military tactics.

…

It will draw its members from the regular and reserve forces across the Army, Navy and RAF - with 42% reservists - and will also seek civilians with specialist skills to work alongside their military colleagues…

NON-EXECS NEEDED - NED Transition Programme I Exclusive High Paid Jobs I Network
Connect
Message
More...
Show less

Gordon MacMillan • 2nd
Head of Editorial, EMEA, Twitter
London, United Kingdom

...
Bournemouth University
See contact info
500+ connections

I'm a journalist working at Twitter, which I joined in 2013. I was previously the editor of the advertising, digital and media website Brand Republic, which I also launched. I am very interested in all things social media and digital.

I have a strong interest in politics and international affairs and am a reserve officer in the British Army serving in 77th Brigade, which specialises in non-lethal engagement

TWITTER EXECUTIVE FOR MIDDLE EAST IS BRITISH ARMY ‘PSYOPS’ SOLDIER

Ian Cobain, *Middle East Eye*, 30 Sept 2019.

Head of editorial for MENA is part-time officer in the 77th Brigade, an 'information warfare' unit which has worked on 'behavioural change' projects in the region.

The senior Twitter executive with editorial responsibility for the Middle East is also a part-time officer in the British Army’s psychological warfare unit, Middle East Eye has established. Gordon MacMillan, who joined the social media company's UK office six years ago, has for several years also served with the 77th Brigade, a unit formed in 2015 in order to develop ‘non-lethal’ ways of waging war. The 77th Brigade uses social media platforms such as Twitter, Instagram and Facebook, as well as podcasts, data analysis and audience research to wage what the head of the UK military, General Nick Carter, describes as ‘information warfare’.

Carter says the 77th Brigade is giving the British military ‘the capability to compete in the war of narratives at the tactical level’; to shape perceptions of conflict. Some soldiers who have served with the unit say they have been engaged in operations intended to change the behaviour of target audiences.

> *What exactly MacMillan is doing with the unit is difficult to determine, however: he has declined to answer any questions about his role, as has Twitter and the UK's Ministry of Defence (MoD)… While clearly engaged in propaganda, the MoD is reluctant to use that word to describe the unit's operations. His involvement with the 77th Brigade was made public when he disclosed it on his page at LinkedIn, the online professional networking site. As well as outlining his responsibilities at Twitter, MacMillan wrote that he had an interest in politics and international affairs, had trained at Sandhurst, the British military academy, 'and am a reserve officer in the British Army serving in 77th Brigade, which specialises in non-lethal engagement'. His page has recently been edited to remove all references to his service with 77th Brigade.*

FIXATED PERSONS

Victims of government child trafficking who seek justice are being labelled 'Fixated Persons' and finding themselves targeted for detainment. NSW, Queensland, and Victoria recently constructed *Fixated Threat Assessment Centres* (FTAC) which are attached to Australian state police forces. These Orwellian facilities are staffed by specialist police, forensic psychiatrists, forensic psychologists, and *Special Intelligence Officers* (SOI). Detainees are referred to FTACs by 'family, neighbours, counter-terrorism authorities, or local police' and held for 14 days without legal representation or family knowledge.

The FTACs detain people for crimes they may commit in the future,[99] thereby violating a fundamental tenet of Western law which determines citizens are innocent until proven guilty. The perpetrators circumvent this law by never formally charging the detained citizen with a crime. Holding an individual for mental health or terror reasons is apparently legal. As in Nazi Germany, laws are not broken, merely adjusted to accommodate an underlying agenda. The people behind this Totalitarian regime define 'Fixated Persons' as:

- Victims of crime,
- Typically aggrieved at being wrongly done by,
- Seeking justice,
- Litigious and chronic complainers,
- Exposing government corruption or treason,
- Posting too much on social media about government officials and other public identities,
- Making too many FOI (freedom of information) and document requests,
- Repeatedly lodging complaints to politicians or local council,
- Having strong religious beliefs or ideology.

The above definition is broad and vague. It fails to specify what constitutes 'too much' of a particular action or 'too strong' a belief. The concept of 'Fixated Person' has not been legally formalised but left for government agents to interpret, adapt, arbitrarily apply to whatever target they choose. As such, the above definition can be loosely interpreted to describe victims of government child trafficking who speak publicly about, and actively seek justice and redress for, the heinous crimes committed against us. The definition is being misused to profile victims and whistle-blowers like me.

---

[99] Patrick Wright (2018). New Melbourne anti-terrorist centre criticised for being 'loopy,' 'illogical.' *ABC News* [Online], 28 February

The British-based trafficking network's primary objective is to discredit victims of their global child trafficking operation. Their agents achieve this by labelling targets psychotic, criminal, or even better – *criminally insane*. Their traditional modus operandi was to lure targets into a 'health assessment' where dirty doctors labelled them non-compliant psychotics (as when Bond University psychology and criminology lecturers conspired with dirty NSW and Queensland cops in their failed attempt to frame me). This method is now superseded by a formalised kidnapping and detainment operation in three Australian states. FTACs promise to re-victimise child trafficking survivors via the same abuse methods the CIA perpetrators originally used on us.

The expressed purpose of Australia's anti-terror laws introduced by Freemason and Satanist John Howard in 2002 was to stop Islamic terrorism. Instead, the laws are being used against citizens seeking to expose political party corruption. Let us examine who has been genuinely targeted by these FTAS teams:

- **Phil Galea** was kidnapped by Victorian police in August 2016, falsely charged under anti-terror laws, and is still detained in solitary confinement without trial. Politicians and police are preventing Phil from appearing before a judge and jury, which would expose the 'Fixated Persons' wrought.
- **Fiona Wilson**, a former Origin Energy executive, was involuntarily detained and injected with drugs in Brisbane's FTAC for blowing the whistle on the coal-seam gas industry. Wilson's detainment left her with PSTD.
- **A grandmother** who complained to authorities that her 12-year-old granddaughter was being raped and sex trafficked by her father was declared a 'Fixated Person' by a judge who referred her to the FTAC where she was placed under perpetual surveillance and her passport stamped to prevent her leaving Australia.

Australia's Family Courts, child social services (renamed DOCS, FACS, etc) and foster care system have facilitated government child trafficking since their inception. The same occurs in the UK and USA. Every day for five years, desperate parents contacted me and shared the same story: the government fabricated grounds to steal, prostitute, disappear, and kill their kids. The FTACs make the Australian leg of the global child trafficking operation far easier and simpler to implement and maintain.

Some advice: if you discover your child is being sexually abused by your partner – take the child and disappear. Some mothers have had success by inducing the husband to physically assault them and using their resultant injuries as evidence for a domestic violence order and reason for fleeing with the child. If Child Protective Services start sniffing around your family – run! Leave at the first hint. Forfeit all material goods, pack your kids into a loaned car, with documents, cash, and some clothes, and just disappear. Tell no-one where you go. Find fake IDs and wait it out in some remote location until the kids are grown.

Australia's foster care system is a massive child sex trafficking operation

It is concerning that neighbours can refer victims to the FTAC, considering a common tactic is to have agents move in next door to victims and threaten and harass them. It is also concerning when the Centres are staffed by perpetrators. For example, Queensland's Fixated

Threat Assessment Centre is staffed by clinicians from the Queensland Forensic Mental Health Service, who employ Bond University forensic psychologists.

SECRET INTELLIGENCE OPERATIVES (SIO)

The FTACs plant police informants called *Secret Intelligence Operatives* (SIO) to entrap victims for detainment in their tax-funded MK-ULTRA facilities. SOI agents employ the following methods:

- Pretend to be right-wing extremists.
- Stage and film fake arrests for fake terror breaches.
- Befriend and physically access targets.
- Set the target up for arrest for associating with 'terrorists' and engaging in 'terror activities.'

Their modus operandi was demonstrated in a 2008 Melbourne case where a police agent called '*SIO39*' was cross-examined regarding his entrapment of an Islamic terrorist cell.[100] SIO39 'told the court he was a Victorian Police officer working undercover with the covert unit of the security intelligence group.' The SIO agent inserted himself into a terror cell where he taught the leader how to make a bomb. The prosecution asked SIO39:

> *'You were making a very deliberate effort to befriend him, weren't you?… Consistent with the directions you had been given?'*
> *'Yes, that's right,' said the agent.*

The FTAC's entrapment methods are classic PATCON tactics where agent provocateurs lure victims into engaging in behaviour which constitutes a breach of legislation and subjects them to search and seizure laws.

In 2018, I was simultaneously targeted by six agents connected to Fixated Threat Assessment Centres in Brisbane, Sydney and Melbourne. They were notably connected to NSW Police Commissioner Mick Fuller who held locational jurisdiction. All secret intelligence type agents base their 'grooming' conversation on real life events, to appear more convincing. Hence one SOI agent told me he trafficked drugs in Sydney for the Australian Federal Police. The agents tried to trick me into breaching Australia's strict anti-terror laws and provide justification for police to raid my property and arrest me. Their entrapment methods included unsuccessfully encouraging me to:

- Hand them administrative control of my websites and social media pages, under the guise of improving my sites.
- Become a board member and so assume legal responsibility for an agent-created and controlled child abuse advocacy group.
- Excessively post about certain politicians on social media.
- Publicly incite social discord by joining the agents' call for an 'uprising.'
- Endorse vigilante behaviour including t-shirts labelled 'Pedo Hunters' which were decorated with images of a hangman noose / gun sight target.

---

[100] Karen Kissane (2008). Planted Agent Showed How to Make Bomb. *The Age,* 1 May.

- Provide a list of known perpetrators to be targeted for vigilante style justice (i.e., *premeditated murder*).
- Physically associate with agent provocateurs posing as extreme right terrorists.
- Accept money and trafficked commodities from 'terrorists' and 'terror activities.'
- Accept unregistered guns under the guise of protecting myself from the pedophile network.
- Provide a list of all fellow government trafficking victims I knew, including their locations and testimonies, under the guise of making a documentary.

Having studied Australian anti-terror legislation and statutory interpretation, I quickly recognised how and why the above activities list might be interpreted as breaching our vague counter-terrorism laws. Associating with known terrorists, wearing uniform outfits, accepting money from terrorists, possessing illegal weapons, and conspiring to commit murder – all constitute grounds for immediate arrest and detainment.

PAUL MULLEN: MK-ULTRA PSYCHIATRIST

The Australian and UK definition of 'Fixated Person' and the associated Fixated Research Groups and Fixated Threat Assessment Centres are the brainchild of CIA/MI6 forensic psychiatrist Paul Mullen. Here are some of Mullen's secret service career highlights:

- Worked with MK-ULTRA Subproject 84 hypnosis doctors including Peter W. Sheehan.
- Court-appointed expert in the MK-ULTRA Chelmsford Hospital medical negligence case (involving which Ewan Cameron's trainee Harry Bailey).
- First non-military defence expert to enter the Guantanamo Bay detention centre, site of Martin Seligman's CIA torture program.
- Heads the Fixated Person Research Groups linked to the FBI, MI6, and Tavistock (UK's mind control hub).
- Contracted by the British Royal Family.
- Interviewed Melbourne Hoddle Street shooter, Julian Knight.
- Assessed alleged Port Arthur shooter, Martin Bryant.
- Publicly presented the Christchurch NZ massacre script and shooter profile two weeks before the event.
- Supports false memory writings of CIA psychologist Elizabeth Loftus.

The book *Dope Inc*. (1978) was meticulously researched and proved beyond all doubt that the British Royal Family are the ultimate benefactors of the CIA coordinated, global drug trafficking operation. The royals are also the financial benefactors of the global child sex trafficking operation. Prince Andrew was accused of raping minors trafficked by convicted pedophile billionaire Jeffrey Epstein. One of Prince Andrew's victims, Virginia Roberts Giuffre, had her photo taken with him. Recall the Royal Family were caught on film teaching princesses Elizabeth and Margaret to Nazi salute. Recall pop star Mick Jagger referred to Queen Elizabeth as 'Chief Witch.' [101] I witnessed the queen preside over the ritual murder of 11 kids at St James Anglican Church in Sydney City when I was 11 years old.

---

[101] The Telegraph (2012). Why the Queen 'refused to hand Mick Jagger a knighthood,' 11 July.

Port Arthur

Paul Mullen was the court-appointed psychiatrist who assessed Martin Bryant, the young man forced to change his plea to guilty and so receive 35 life sentences for the Port Arthur massacre. After a 3.5-hour interview, Mullen claimed Martin Bryant possessed an IQ of 60. It is neurologically impossible for someone whose intelligence level sits at the bottom 2% of the population to kill *19 people in 20 seconds.* That head shot rate is not achievable by the world's most elite snipers, whose intelligence level must sit in the top 1% of the population because high visual-spatial IQ is essential for accurate shooting ability.

Christchurch Shooting

Paul Mullen 'coincidentally' popped up at four mass shootings in Australia and New Zealand. He was working in Melbourne in 1987 where he interviewed the Hoddle Street shooter, Julian Knight. Then he moved to Aramoana in New Zealand in time for David Gray's 1990 shooting massacre. Then he returned to Melbourne in time for the Tasmanian Government to request he interview Martin Bryant in 1996. And he just happened to be visiting New Zealand for the 2019 mass shooting in Christchurch. Two weeks prior to the Christchurch massacre, Mullens spoke at Melbourne's Sofitel hotel where he released an exact script for what unfolded in NZ, and profiled the white, right-wing extremist type who poses the new terror threat, and which fit the alleged shooter.

False Memory Fan

Paul Mullen's research interests include: *Litigious and Chronic Complainers*, and the *Long-Term Impact of Childhood Sexual Abuse* - the ideal combination for silencing outspoken victims of CIA child trafficking. Paul Mullen was quoted in a 1994 *False Memory Syndrome Foundation* newsletter as saying:[102]

> *The precedence accorded child sexual abuse has also had negative consequences, socially and scientifically, particularly in distracting attention away from physical and emotional abuse and from the whole context of disadvantage and neglect in which the sexual abuse often occurs.*

Not surprisingly, Paul Mullen is a child abuse denier and an advocate of Elizabeth Loftus' discredited false memory opinion. Mullen claimed, '*the basis of the recovered-memory theory was flawed … there were no specific symptoms that came from childhood abuse*.'[103] In his book *Childhood Sexual Abuse: An Evidence-Based Perspective,*[104] Mullen denies the phenomenon of repressed trauma memories being stored in the right implicit brain and accessible via appropriate therapy:

> *On the other side of the debate have been equally powerful defences of the capacity of therapists to bring to consciousness repressed memories that on occasion, it is asserted, provide detailed and veridical narratives of actual abuse… However, contrary to these claims, the main problem following trauma is an inability to forget rather than*

---

[102] *FMS Foundation Newsletter* (2004). Jan/Feb, 13:1.

[103] *The Age* (2004). Memory therapy: state launches probe, November 23.

[104] P. Mullen & D. Fergusson (1999). *Childhood Sexual Abuse: An Evidence-Based Perspective.* Sage Publications, 100-101.

> *a complete loss of the memory of the event… Psychogenic amnesia following trauma may occur, but usually the individuals are well-aware of the gap in their memory.*
>
> *There are claims that memories of CSA are laid down in the brain through a unique process that does not apply to other forms of trauma and that can be recovered via the sensorimotor system... This remains an unproven hypothesis…*
>
> *Current theories of memory emphasize that memories are not replicas of the events themselves but imperfect and subjectively modified records of how we have experienced those events…*
>
> *That it is possible to influence the memories of others by suggestion is established (Loftus, 1993) . . . Both client and therapist may believe they are overcoming the forces of repression and revealing the true narrative of the abuse, but how much the expectations, assumptions, and theoretical commitments of both participants are producing a new construction remains in question.*

When a repressed memory contains a detailed image of a location the victim never visited apart from during her child abuse, and when the victim physically visits that place as an adult and discovers everything in that abuse location is exactly as the victim recalled it during a flashback or therapy – that constitutes evidence of reliable repressed child abuse memories. I experienced this in 1993 when I visited Sutherland Hospital. There is no record of my ever having been admitted or treated at Sutherland Hospital. My parents never took me there during my Sydney childhood. Yet I knew the layout of an internal ER room at Sutherland Hospital. I visited the hospital at age 23 in search of the room I awoke in after suffocating in a grave at age eight years. A triage nurse kindly led me to a room out of public bounds which looked exactly as I remembered and drew it. The walls were clad in pale blue tiles, the door and furniture were positioned exactly like in my therapy drawing, and the original oxygen bottle sat at the head of the very stainless-steel table I was laid on. 'This is where you would have come if you had suffocated,' the nurse told me.

DIRTY DOCTORS

Corydon Hammond said in his legendary *Greenbaum Speech*:

> *When you start to find the same highly esoteric information in different states and different countries, from Florida to California, you start to get an idea that there's something going on that is very large, very well coordinated, with a great deal of communication and systematic-ness to what's happening. So, I have gone from someone kind of neutral and not knowing what to think about it all, to someone who clearly believes ritual abuse is real, and that the people who say it isn't are either naive like people who didn't want to believe the Holocaust - or they're dirty.*

Paul Mullen, who denies the true nature of child abuse induced trauma, who embraces the pro-pedophile writings of discredited Elizabeth Loftus, who hangs around CIA MK-ULTRA torture and mind control facilities, who leaps the Tasman sea in time for every Australasian mass shooting, and who, despite being a 'world renown expert' excluded irrefutable evidence that it was neurologically impossible for a mentally disabled man with an

IQ of 60 to have committed the crime (thereby condemning an innocent man to life in prison) - is the main driving force behind new Orwellian legislation and protocols which are being used to effectively target and silence vocal victims and witnesses to government organised child sex trafficking.

* * *

Soviet-Fascist Agenda

Communist world aggression is a total war against humanity and human civilization.
- Yuri Bezmenov

During the 1960s, KGB officer Yuri Bezmenov worked for the Communist equivalent of Orwell's Ministry of Truth, the *Novosti Press Agency*. Novosti produced *disinformation* – i.e., slanted and false stories to plant in the foreign media. Bezmenov specialised in aiding the infiltration and overthrow of foreign governments by deceiving (hand-picked) visiting international journalists and academics into falsely reporting in the West that life in communist Russia was healthy, even desirable and romantic. This was a means of spreading propaganda to the West and increasing the spread of Marxist-Lenin doctrine by Communist subverters in academia, journalism, Hollywood and politics.

Bezmenov attested to the truly hellish existence under 'Soviet fascism' where the government arranged marriages and sent independent thinkers to labour camps and firing squads. More than two people standing on a Soviet street corner constituted grounds for arrest and internment (just like today). Painting horses galloping against a tumultuous stormy background was grounds for arrest, since this symbolised uprising against the State.

In 1970, Bezmenov defected to the USA and changed his name to Tomas Schuman. There he spent his remaining life warning America to rid itself of the Marxist-Lenin doctrine infiltrating Western culture. In 1984, he wrote: [105]

*My dear friends, I think you are in big trouble. Whether you believe it or not, YOU ARE AT WAR. And you may lose this war very soon, together with all your affluence and freedoms, unless you start defending yourselves. I hope you have noticed on your colour televisions that there is in fact war going on right now all over this planet. This war has many faces, but it's all the same — it's war. Some call it "national liberation", some title it "class struggle" or "political terrorism". Others call it "anticolonialism" or "struggle for majority rule". Some even come up with such fancy names as "war of patriotic forces" or "peace movement". I call it **World Communist Aggression**…*

The final stage of Communist aggression — military confrontation — has very little to do with rivalry for territorial or geopolitical gains in order to free and liberate. Communist world aggression is a total war against humanity and human civilization. In Communist propaganda terms, this is 'the final struggle for the victory of Communism.'

No matter how many problems you think the US may have, believe me when I say that they are nothing in comparison to the troubles you will experience if the US continues to agree and sympathize with communist/socialist doctrines…

IDEOLOGICAL SUBVERSION

The KGB's main (85%) activity was subversion. In Soviet terms, 'subversion' means a destructive, aggressive activity aimed to destroy the country of your enemy. Subversion activities are overt and legal. A typical subverter is an exchange student, diplomat, actor, artist, or a journalist. You can't subvert an enemy who doesn't want to be subverted. Bezmenov wrote:

An integral part of this war of ideology is IDEOLOGICAL SUBVERSION — the process of changing the perception of reality in the minds of millions of peoples all over the world. The

---

[105] Tomas Schuman (1984). *Love Letter to America*.

late comrade Andropov, the former head of the Soviet KGB called this war of Communist aggression, 'the final struggle for the MINDS and hearts of the people.'

The art of duping the masses into doing things to their own disadvantage and making them believe it is "the will of people" is as ancient as mankind itself. The essence of subversion is best expressed in the famous Marxist slogan, (if you substitute "proletarians" for a more appropriate word): Useful idiots of the world - UNITE!

To achieve the desired effect, the subverter must first - make idiots out of normal people, and DIVIDE them, before turning the people into a homogenized mass of useful and united idiots. Tanks and missiles may or may not be needed at final stage. For the time being they are simply the means of terrorising people into inaction and submission. (The dumbing down of school children using Marxist indoctrinated curriculum achieved this.)

The Chinese military strategist Sun Tzu first formulated the principle of subversion as follows:

1. *Cover with ridicule all of the valid traditions in your opponent's country.*
2. *Implicate their leaders in criminal affairs and turn them over to the scorn of their populace at the right time;*
3. *Disrupt the work of their government by every means;*
4. *Do not shun the aid of the lowest and most despicable individuals of your enemy's country.*
5. *Spread disunity and dispute among the citizens.*
6. *Turn the young against the old.*
7. *Be generous with promises and rewards to collaborators and accomplices.*

Sound familiar? About 2500 years later we can read this very same instruction in a secret document, allegedly authored by the Communist International for their "young revolutionaries." The document is titled "Rules of Revolution":

RULES OF REVOLUTION

1. *Corrupt the young, get them interested in sex, take them away from religion. Make them superficial and enfeebled.*
2. *Divide the people into hostile groups by constantly harping on controversial issues of no importance.*
3. *Destroy people's faith in their national leaders by holding the latter up for contempt, ridicule and disgrace.*
4. *Always preach democracy but seize power as fast and as ruthlessly as possible.*
5. *By encouraging government extravagances, destroy its credit, produce years of inflation with rising prices and general discontent.*
6. *Incite unnecessary strikes in vital industries, encourage civil disorders and foster a lenient and soft attitude on the part of the government towards such disorders.*
7. *Cause breakdown of the old moral virtues: honesty, sobriety, self-restraint, faith in the pledged word.*

4 STAGES OF SUBVERSION

Bezmenov detailed the four stages of Soviet Ideological Subversion:

1. Demoralisation
2. Destabilisation

3. Crisis (Global Pandemic)
4. Normalisation (Marshall Law)

Stage 1: DEMORALISATION

This is also called psychological warfare, ideological aggression, or propaganda warfare. This stage takes 15 to 20 years to achieve, because this is the minimum number of years needed to 're-educate' a single of generation of students via Marxist ideology. There are three levels of demoralisation:

1. **Ideas** (consciousness)
2. **Structures**
3. **Life**.

Demoralisation of Ideas involves the subversion of vital areas including religion, education, media and culture. Communism (and its Marxist-Leninist dogma) is a distorted form of faith. Subversion of ideas involves substituting the traditional values of the Judeo-Christian heritage with "Marxist-Satanic faith." To achieve this, subverters politicise and commercialise the dominant religions and turn them into forms of entertainment. Bezmenov said this included:

Development and spreading of various religious cults, including Satanic and Death cults; preaching moral relativity and removing religion (and prayer, ANY prayer) from schools; creating 'personality cults' in religion whereby the preacher becomes the centre and object of divine worship, not God (often your religious charlatans claims to be 'incarnations' of God, or even God Himself)…

Let's start with the most 'innocent' method of destroying religion, namely, making it ENTERTAINING. To attract people and MONEY to 'established' religious organizations some churches have literally become theatres conducting variety shows featuring celebrities from the entertainment 'industry' who perform for 'fees'. The KGB Agents of Influence may or may not have to physically manipulate these entertainment arrangements. The indiscriminate choice of the 'celebrities' for these church 'performances' is usually quite pleasing to the KGB. A group of rock or pop-musicians with a message of 'social-justice' sugar-coated in popular 'spiritual' tunes can be actually more helpful to the KGB than someone standing in the pulpit preaching Marxist-Leninist doctrine.

COMMERCIALISATION of religion does the same thing. If the church has to SOLICIT your money and remind you over and over again in every TV show to contribute (with telephone numbers to pledge donations), that only means and infers that there is something basically wrong with your faith. Faithful people do not have to be ASKED for money, they tithe to their churches voluntarily and eagerly. Unhealthy competition for donations between various 'electronic churches' does two things beneficial to the subverter:

1. *Makes religion dependent on the most successful 'salesmen' of God (not necessarily of the highest moral standards). Thus, truly moral and God-centred people are turned off by organized religion.*
2. *EMPTIES regular churches, where you have to practice your religion by personal physical presence and participation and involvement.*

Politicising religion is the most efficient method of demoralizing a target nation. The subverter uses moral values for dissemination and enforcement of amoral ideas and policies.

Churches become involved in such things as 'social justice' and partisan political squabbles and loses focus on mercy and the grace of God. The most powerful instrument of this process is the KGB-infiltrated *World Council of Churches*.

Dr. Shafarevich in analysing the 'dead' civilizations of Egypt, Maya, Mohenjo-Dara, Babylon, etc, comes to an ominous conclusion: EVERY ONE OF THESE CIVILIZATIONS DIED WHEN PEOPLE REJECTED RELIGION AND GOD, AND TRIED TO CREATE 'SOCIAL JUSTICE' ALONG THE SOCIALIST PRINCIPLES.

The Marxist-Leninist concept of education emphasizes 'environment' and 'mass' character of education over individual abilities and quality… The American romance with State-run education as encouraged by KGB subverters has already produced generations of graduates who cannot spell, cannot find Nicaragua on a world map, cannot THINK creatively and independently. The main methods of Soviet DEMORALISATION of American education include:

- Flooding of campus bookstores with Marxist and Socialist literature.
- Infiltration of schools and universities by radicals, leftists, and simply 'disturbers', often functioning unknowingly under the direct guidance of KGB Agents of Influence.
- Establishing numerous 'student' newspapers and magazines, staffed with Communists and sympathizers.

NON-ISSUES

Introducing non-issues is another means of demoralising at the level of Ideas. A ‘non-issue’ is defined as follows:

An issue, the solution of which creates more and bigger problems for the majority of a nation, even though it may benefit a few, is a non-issue (civil rights of homosexuals is not an issue; defending sexual morality is the larger, real issue). The main purpose of non-issues and the devastating result of their introduction is the SIDE-TRACKING of public opinion, energy (both mental and physical), money and TIME from the constructive solutions.

Non-issues include immigration, minorities, LGBT, and the environment. These are the same issues pushed by the communist left. Minority rights of artificially created divisions (women, gays, Muslims, or black, Indigenous, or Asian people) are an intentional distraction of ‘no importance’ considering the overall loss of human rights being experienced by *all*. Gay rights are of no importance compared to the rights of *child sex trafficking victims* – a vital issue that large crowds have never protested in Australia or the USA.

Cultural subversion includes the promotion of garbage culture – i.e., anything that prompts teenage insubordination, confuses and frustrates parents, breaks down discipline, and encourages relaxation of authority. A main focus is developing obscure, talentless, immoral musicians and actors into teenage role models. Another focus is the embracement of Eastern spiritual practices, like meditation and marijuana, that encourage one to sit and do nothing. Similarly, Eastern practises in psychology encourage the individual to do nothing.

Demoralisation is aimed at the following socio/ political/ economical structures:

- Judicial and law enforcement system. Promoting legalism instead of justice. Treating criminals as ‘underprivileged’ victims creates mistrust of the police and courts, and makes people demand harsher punishments and stricter controls for fighting crime. This in turn justifies replacing the police force with the military, as is happening in the USA right now.

- Public organizations and institutions dealing with relations between individuals, groups, and social classes.
- Security and defence organisations.
- Internal political parties and groups.
- Foreign policy formulating bodies (academia, think-tanks, Sovietology advisors).

Similarly, in the area of social life, by encouraging you to put your individual RIGHTS over your OBLIGATIONS (any obligations - private, financial, moral, patriotic, etc.) the subverter achieves the desired effect: a society composed of IRRESPONSIBLE INDIVIDUALS, each one "doing his own thing," and acting according to the "law of jungle." Such subversion of society is the first step to tyranny.

To demoralise law enforcement, police were called ‘pigs’ and ‘fascists,’ police agencies watching over subverters and radicals were called ‘spies’ (by the American Union of Civil Liberties) and disbanded, criminals were recruited as police which destroyed police integrity and reputation. Consequently, within 20 years the public lacked civil laws or protection from criminals. This constituted grounds for calling in the army to do the police force’s work. Right now, ‘Black Lives Matter’ protestors are calling for the US government to pull funding of police, and police are resigning due to the violence. This only paves the way for the military, Marshall Law, and a Nazi-Communist totalitarian regime. *ALL* lives matter. All lives are at risk.

Demoralisation in areas of family life, health services, food consumption, inter-racial relations, population control, and distribution and labour relations. Marxist-Leninist ideology disguised as "social theories" have greatly contributed to family break-ups, to create children disloyal to families but loyal to the State.

Racial and ethnic interrelations is one of the most vulnerable areas for demoralization… [American] society is the least discriminatory. The Communist 'solution' for racial problem is 'final': they simply murder those who are different and stubbornly insist on remaining different. Stalin played with whole populations of 'ethnics' — 'resettling' Estonians, Latvians and Lithuanians in Siberia, relocating Crimean Tartars from the tropics to permafrost, and Koreans from the Far East to the Kazakhstan deserts…

The present day 'solution' to racial inequality is borrowed from Communist mythology: EQUALITY of all racial and ethnic groups LEGISLATED by the government and ENFORCED by state bureaucracies. We know perfectly well that neither races nor INDIVIDUALS are equal, in every respect. We know that every nation and race have its peculiar character, abilities, traditions, mentality, and ability to learn and its individual PACE OF DEVELOPMENT. By mimicking the Soviet 'national policy' of equality America simply erases the distinct racial characteristics that have made this country great.

The removal of private land is an important method of demoralisation because: *…the poor farmer often is a greater PATRIOT than an affluent dweller of a large congested American city. Communists know this very well… the farmer will fight an invader until last bullet ON HIS LAND. "Underprivileged" or urbanized masses on the other hand, may feel like meeting an invader with flowers and red banners.*

Concerning labour relations, the ideological infiltration of labour is well documented. Teachers are the best examples of whinging Marxists. Since Gough Whitlam’s communist cabinet in the 1970s, Australian State schoolteachers have spent more time striking for more pay, less work, and more holidays, than producing kids that can actually read and write.

Stage 2: DESTABILISATION

Destabilisation takes 2 to 5 years to achieve. The focus here is on the country's internal power structures, foreign relations, and economy. The first symptom of instability is expressed as the desire of the population to bring to power those politicians and parties who are charismatic, act like good "caretakers" and promise job "security" and "free" social services rather than protection from external and foreign enemies.

This global lockdown has just destroyed the economy. In Australia, those who suddenly lost their jobs qualified for $750 per week social welfare payments. No matter what your job, you get the same wage – just like in Soviet Russia.

THE SUBVERSION PROCESS

AREAS	METHODS	RESULTS
	DEMORALIZATION (15 TO 20 YEARS)	
IDEAS		
1. RELIGION	POLITICIZE, COMMERCIALIZE, ENTERTAINMENT	DEATH WISH
2. EDUCATION	PERMISSIVENESS, RELATIVITY	IGNORANCE
3. MEDIA	MONOPOLIZE, MANIPULATE, DISCREDIT, NON-ISSUES	UNINFORMED MYOPIA
4. CULTURE	FALSE HEROES AND ROLE MODELS	ADDICTIVE FADS, 'MASS'
STRUCTURE		
1. LAW AND ORDER	LEGISLATIVE, NOT MORAL	MISTRUST 'JUSTICE'
2. SOCIAL RELATIONS	RIGHTS VS. OBLIGATIONS	LESS INDIVIDUAL RESPONS.
3. SECURITY	INTELLIGENCE, POLICE, MILITARY	DEFENSELESSNESS
4. INTERNAL POLITICS	PARTY, ANTAGONISMS	DISUNITY
5. FOREIGN	SALT . . . FRIENDS	ISOLATION
LIFE		
1. FAMILY, SOCIETY	BREAK UP	NO LOYALTY (STATE)
2. HEALTH	SPORTS, MEDICARE, JUNK FOOD	ENFEEBLED MASSES
3. RACE	LOWER THE UPPERS, BIBLE? GENETICS VS. ENVIRONMENT	HATRED, DIVISION
4. POPULATION	DE-LAND, URBANIZE	ALIENATION
5. LABOR	UNIONS VS. SOCIETY	VICTIMIZATION
	↓	
	DESTABILIZATION (2 TO 5 YEARS)	
1. POWER STRUGGLE	POPULISM, IRRESPONSIBLE POWER STRUGGLE	BIG BROTHER
2. ECONOMY	DESTRUCTION OF BARGAINING PROCESS	YIELD TO BIG BROTHER
3. SOCIETY FIBER, LAW	GRASS ROOTS PARTICIPATION	MOBOCRACY
4. FOREIGN	ISOLATION, MULTI-NATIONS, AND CENTRAL COMM.	PRESTIGE, BELLIGERENT ENCIRCLEMENT
	↓	
	CRISIS (2 TO 6 MONTHS)	
	↓	
	NORMALIZATION	

BY TOMAS SCHUMAN

Stage 3: CRISIS

This stage takes 2 to 6 months to achieve. This is the stage we are globally now at.

At this third stage of subversion you will have all your *American 'radicals' and Soviet 'sleeper' agents springing into action**, trying to 'seize power as quickly and ruthlessly as possible… If all the previous stages of Soviet subversion have been successfully completed by* *that time, the majority of Americans will be so totally confused that they may even WELCOME some ‘strong' leaders…* The crisis was Covid-19. The radicals are whipping the people into a protesting frenzy. The result is what Yuri predicted: The leaders will be given almost unlimited 'emergency powers.'

A forceful change of the US system may or may not be accomplished through a civil war or internal revolution… But change it will be, and rather a drastic one, with all the familiar attributes of Soviet 'progress' being instituted such as NATIONALIZATION of vital industries, the reduction of the 'private sector' of the economy to the bare minimum, the redistribution of wealth and a massive propaganda campaign by the newly 'elected' government to 'explain' and justify the reforms.

No, no concentration camps and executions. Not yet. That will come later at:

Stage 4: NORMALISATION

To avoid bloodshed, the subverter moves to normalisation. Normalisation is where a country is brought by force into the normal state of socialism. This is where dissidents are placed in camps and publicly or privately executed.

The New Order will need STABILITY and NEW MORALITY. No more 'grass roots' movements. No more criticism of the State. The Press will obediently censor itself.

So, Bezmenov predicted the systematic destruction of America’s Judeo-Christian democracy that would culminate in the violent riots occurring in America now, followed by Marshall Law and the instalment of a ‘Communist-fascist’ regime under which everyone will achieve the equality y’all were deceived into protesting for: equal oppression.

HISTORY ALWAYS REPEATS

The problem is that no one studies history anymore, which explains why we fail to notice history repeating itself. To illustrate, Bezmenov read the following information in KGB files:

The South Vietnamese city of Hue had been captured by the Hanoi Communists. When it was re-captured by the US Army and allied forces, only two days later, the CIA discovered to their horror that several thousand Vietnamese - teachers, priests, Buddhists, businessmen, and educated citizens - everyone who was ‘pro-American’ had been rounded up by the invaders and IN ONE NIGHT, taken out of the city limits and executed collectively. Some were shot. Others, with their hands tied by electric wire, were found with their skulls crushed-in by shovels and iron bars. ‘How could they possibly have located all of these people within only a few hours in a large city?’ - the Americans wondered. I thought I knew the answer.

Long before the invasion, there was an extensive network of Communist informers working under the guidance of the Soviet embassy in Hanoi — that is under the KGB. The Communists filed every bit of information: addresses, personal habits, political affiliations, expressed ideas, unexpressed thoughts revealed in informal and private conversations, even the names and addresses of relatives, friends, even lovers and mistresses of the future victims of ‘liberation.’

Everyone today is under similar surveillance, except that now the 'Communist-Fascist' regime use Facebook and Twitter to identify dissidents and whistle-blowers. Those who press ‘Like’ on too many anti-establishment social media posts are tagged for the coming collective execution.

* * *

Justice Denied

No one calls for justice; no one pleads a case with integrity. They rely on empty arguments, they utter lies; they conceive trouble and give birth to evil.

(Isaiah 59:4)

ANDERSONIAN LEGACY

We stand at the precipice of Aldous Huxley's promised Final Revolution. Australian law prevents freedom of speech, permits whistleblowers to be charged with defamation, and allows outspoken victims of CIA child trafficking to be labelled 'terrorists' and subsequently seized, detained and subjected to the same abuse we experienced as children by the same perpetrator network. Erosion of Australia's civil liberties and Judeo-Christian culture traces back to the University of Sydney Philosophy lecturer John Anderson who (from 1927 to 1958) applied Cultural Marxism to create an enduring legacy of indoctrination which influenced future generations of Australian politicians, journalists, and law reformers. John Anderson taught my key perpetrators, three of whom were discovered to be Soviet spies who were seemingly assassinated by the British Crown.

Cultural Marxism is a non-violent but revolutionary collectivist ideology that seeks the gradual gain of power via infiltration and the modification of laws, institutions and social organisations. Western educational institutions, particularly government schools and universities, are a hub of left-brain Cultural Marxist indoctrination. Communism dominates Australia's education system thanks to Soviet spy Alfred Conlon who created a system of standardisation and control via the Commonwealth Education Department.

I encountered militant pro-Marxist teaching in six universities, in three states, over a 30-year span. I know from experience that Marxist teachings saturate the fields of Education, Science, Psychology, Law, Philosophy, and the Visual Arts. I attended the top Art Colleges in three Australian states and found them all intolerant of independent creative thinking. Australian educators saturate developing brains with Luciferian Marxist culture - sexual promiscuity, globalisation, lawlessness, anti-nationalism, occultism, pro-abortion, pro-pedophilia, and a mocking hatred of the Biblical God.

John Anderson founded Australian Realism, the Empirical brand of philosophy which spread to the University of Adelaide and Alfred Conlon's brainchild, the Australian National University. All three universities became infiltrated with Anderson's Communist legacy. All three became MK-ULTRA research facilities. Anderson was aligned with the Trotsky movement and the *Communist Party of Australia* (renamed *The Australian Greens*) and he contributed to their journals. Anderson pushed the Marxist agenda including sexual revolution and abolition of religion in schools. He argued that God does not exist, traditional Christian concepts of good and evil were only meant for slaves, and the notion of morality is empty. His converts (labelled 'Andersonians') included members of the *Sydney Push*, a leftist intellectual subculture who rejected conventional morality and placed Sydney at the forefront of the sexual revolution. Promiscuous feminist Germaine Greer is a fine example.

ALP LAW REFORM

My ears pricked up when our law lecturer said the Australian Labor Party (ALP) were the first political group to appoint Catholic judges in our predominantly Protestant country. The ALP also appointed the two reformers most cited in Australian law schools, Lionel Murphy (my pedophile rapist) and Michael Kirby (publicly accused of pedophilia by Senator Bill

Heffernan). Catholic Murphy attended Sydney Boys High selective school and commenced at the University of Sydney in 1949. Murphy was nominated as Chief Justice by Gough Whitlam (my pedophile rapist) and appointed by John Kerr (my pedophile rapist). Known for his radicalism and judicial activism, Murphy's reforms included establishing the Law Reform Commission, and no-fault divorce which led to an epidemic of broken homes and displaced youth ripe for recruitment into child trafficking and Luciferian cults. Murphy notably authorised the 1973 raids on ASIO. Corruption allegations plagued Lionel Murphy until his death, after his 1985 conviction for perverting the course of justice.

Michael Kirby is a Fort Street Boys High graduate who commenced law at the University of Sydney in 1959. Kirby served as Vice Chancellor of Macquarie University, plus as an executive with CSIRO and the Law Reform Commission. Kirby was nominated Chief Justice by ALP Prime Minister Paul Keating (whose rape and murder of a young boy I witnessed). In 2002, Senator Heffernan used Parliamentary privilege to announce, Michael Kirby used a government car to solicit underage male prostitutes at the Army Barracks 'Wall' in Darlinghurst, which victims confirmed to me. In response, Kirby announced he was gay, and leftist politicians and journalists accused Bill Heffernan of 'homophobia.' The truth of the matter remains sealed in the Wood Royal Commission case files.

WHY STUDY PHILOSOPHY

Philosophy is the study of how people think. An introductory knowledge of philosophy is crucial for understanding the origins of the eugenics program we know as MK-ULTRA, and the perpetrator mind-set. Let us quickly review the historical erosion of traditional values and insertion of Marxist doctrine via a subject every Australian law student undertakes, *Philosophy and the Law.* Here is my essay in that subject, which addressed the question of whether a relationship still exists between justice and the law. My essay provides an extremely simple introduction to Philosophy and its relationship to legislative and social change.

JUSTICE DENIED

The first edition of the *Oxford English Dictionary*[106] defined justice as a quality or principle meaning morality, equity, righteousness, truth, integrity, and restitution. By contrast, the modern law student's prescribed legal dictionary considers justice, *A concept defined according to the particular philosophical school of the inquirer*.[107]

Western concepts of justice combine Greco-Roman philosophical traditions with Scripture.[108] From Plato to postmodernists, philosophers have debated the existence of a relationship between law and justice. The resultant theories are generally divided into two camps.[109] One camp associates justice with Biblical principles and absolute moral standards, emphasises individualism and equality, and produced classic common law under which Western society had a moral obligation to uphold clear rules of conduct.

The opposing camp considers justice to be human-made and evolving with society's changing mores.[110] Their theories are soaked in Darwinist eugenics, ethical relativism, secular humanism, and collectivism, which successively distorted the interpretation of the word

---

[106] *Oxford English Dictionary* (Oxford University Press, 1928).

[107] R. Finkelstein & D. Hamer (eds), *Concise Australian Legal Dictionary* (LexisNexis Butterworths 5th ed, 2015).

[108] Alvin Schmidt, *How Christianity Changed the World,* (Zondervan, 2004)

[109] R. Finkelstein & D. Hamer, above n69.

[110] Ibid.

'justice' until it lost its original meaning. Justice went from a tangible principle to a subjective concept shaped by political agenda, religious affiliation, and previous experience of the legal system.

Australia was dominated by positivist and liberalist theories[111] until feminism, post-structuralism, and ecological approaches took influence.[112] Traditional liberalist concepts of individuality, formal equality, and property ownership were devalued. Now, fluctuating cultural conventions determine what values inform the legal system in our increasingly permissive society.

Research indicates six-month-old babies possess an innate sense of justice.[113] While the average citizen might hope and trust that our legal system is synonymous with what they innately sense justice to be – it is not. Practical examples of this confront us daily, from anti-terror laws that breach international human rights standards,[114] to unfathomably lenient sentencing for men who rape young children.[115]

Personal experience drives home the reality that justice is nothing more than the excrement of Orwellian *newspeak*, a mythical, abstract ideal that law students write essays about, and promise to preserve in the forefront of their minds while earning $500+ per hour at their inner-city law firms. Only those who have yet to experience injustice can afford to pontificate about an actual relationship between law and a concept that can no longer even be defined, let alone exacted.

Ancient Concepts of Justice

Plato (428-348 BC) believed justice stems from social order.[116] He proposed private citizens forgo individuality and personal rights for a state controlled by a gifted minority who regulate everything from sex to moral thinking.[117] Plato's ideal society was modeled on Sparta,[118] aligns with modern totalitarianism, and inspired Hitler's Third Reich.[119]

By contrast, Aristotle (384-322 BC) believed in natural justice.[120] He saw justice as: transcending local customs and conventions, determined by divine reason, and inherently connected to law.[121] Aristotle believed a just society stems from allowing citizens to enjoy the private property they worked for, and that property redistribution is unjust. Yet the Greeks ignored Aristotle's notion of natural rights for citizens,[122] and women, children, slaves, and non-citizens possessed no rights at all.[123]

---

[111] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[112] *Legal Process Study Guide* (2015).

[113] Paulo Bloom, *Just Babies: The Origins of Good and Evil* (Crown, 2013).

[114] George Williams, 'A Decade of Australian Anti-terror Laws' (2011) *Melbourne University Law Review* 35.

[115] AAP, 'Racing legend Sir Jack Brabham's son jailed for child rape', *Brisbane Times* (online), 15 April 2016.

[116] Cecil Bowra, *Classical Greece* (Time, 1965).

[117] William McGovern, *From Luther to Hitler; The History of Fascist-Nazi Political Philosophy*. (Houghton Mifflin Company, 1941).

[118] Will Durrant, *The Story of Civilization, Part II: The Life of Greece* (Simon & Schuster, 1966)

[119] Leonard Peikoff, *The Ominous Parallels* (Plume, 1983).

[120] Michelle Sanson & Thalia Antony, *Connecting with Law* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2014).

[121] Raymond Wacks, *Understanding Jurisprudence* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2012).

[122] William McGovern, 'Collectivism and Individualism,' in Felix Morley (ed), *Essays on Individuality*, (Stratford Press, 1958) 339.

[123] Larry Siedentop, *Inventing the Individual: The Origins of Western Liberalism* (Belknap Press, 2014).

The Ancient Romans viewed justice as protecting citizen rights only.[124] They preserved equality of rights between citizens via commutative justice.[125] Commutative justice is precise and accurate, since the offending action, perpetrator, and victim are easily identifiable to all. Their concept of justice, which encouraged freedom and responsibility, passed to English law.

Christian

Siedentop[126] argues that a moral revolution occurred in the 1st Century after the New Testament writings introduced the notion that everyone has God-given rights. This revolution inspired Medieval Christian philosophers and canon lawyers to promote individual freedom and moral equality. These men, and not the secular humanist philosophers of the Renaissance or Enlightenment, formed the foundations of Western liberal democracy.[127] Biblical Christianity considers justice, freedom and law inseparable. Hayes[128] observed:

> *Wherever Christian ideals have been generally accepted and their practice sincerely attempted, there is a dynamic liberty; and wherever Christianity has been ignored or rejected, persecuted or chained to the state, there is tyranny.*

This statement makes no sense if 1st Century Christianity, an individual belief system with no formal organization, is equated with tyrannical collectivist religious organizations like the Roman Catholic Church. Roman Catholicism started with Emperor Constantine I (306-337) who retained his title of pontifex maximus pope, and rebranded Roman paganism as 'Christianity' and superimposed Christian motifs over Roman cult practices and festivals (Christmas and Easter) in honor of sun worship and the goddess Ishtar.[129] Dog excrement by any other name still stinks, and the same organization that fed Christians to lions continued persecuting Christians via a series of Crusades and Inquisitions.[130] The Protestant Reformation was a protest of orthodox Bible-reading Christians against the satanic Roman Catholic papal system. The uninformed confuse Protestantism with Catholicism and wrongly group them under the one label of 'Christian.' Because organizations like the Catholic Church committed heinous acts of injustice, people used this to justify condemning the orthodox Christian values that informed our Western legal system.

Medieval

Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274) introduced distributive justice theory,[131] a vague and indeterminate form of justice which, if violated, leaves no identifiable offence or perpetrator. Aquinas was an Italian priest and apologist for the Catholic Church. Accordingly, he viewed the pope as supreme law giver and laws inconsistent with Catholic doctrine as invalid. Aquinas replaced Augustine's (354-430) idea that unjust laws are not laws, with the notion that unjust laws should be tolerated for practical reasons[132] (i.e., submission to the Roman Catholic pope.

---

[124] Will Durrant, *The Story of Civilization, Part III: Caesar and Christ* (Simon & Schuster, 2011).

[125] Ibid.

[126] Larry Siedentop, above n19.

[127] Ibid.

[128] Carlton Hayes, *Christianity and Western Civilization* (Stanford University Press, 1954) 21.

[129] Ibid.

[130] Edward Clarke, *Commentary on the Bible* (1831).

[131] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[132] M. Sanson & T. Antony, *Connecting with Law* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2014).

Common Law

The common law system is based on Judeo-Christian principles.[133] Edward Coke (1552–1634) believed God gave humans an innate understanding of the law. Therefore, justice manifested in a judge's ability to correctly discover and apply Biblical law. Just laws were based on, and did not contradict, individual rights and free choice. When Coke said, '*The King himself should be under no man, but under God and the Law,*'[134] he referred to the Rule of Law whereby everyone is bound by fixed and predictable rules. Without objective law, individuals are at the government's mercy. The alternative is the rule of man, which results in tyranny.[135] Common law offers basic protective measures including the right to silence and presumption of innocence.

William Blackstone's (1723-1780) *Commentary on the Laws of England* influenced common law adoption by English speaking countries, plus the USA *Declaration of Independence* and *Constitution*.[136] Blackstone traced English common law to King Alfred's Scripture-based legal system.[137] While the 10 Commandments formed a moral premise that was easy for the public to know, Blackstone made the common law further accessible to lay people.[138] He also promoted inalienable rights.[139] Blackstone said England's *Bill of Rights* declared three immunities: private property, personal security and individual freedom,[140] and that the common law '*…gives liberty, rightly understood, that is protection to a Jew, a Turk, or a heathen, as well as those that profess the true religion of Christ'.*[141]

Atheistic

Atheism undermines the notion of a higher moral law. It encourages relativism - the denial of absolute truth and moral code. Without absolutes, morality is determined by social norms and individual discretion, and people have no sense of moral obligation or duty. Atheist Claude Helvetius (1715-1771) heavily influenced Bentham and Marx.[142] He believed humans are a product of their environment and culture. Helvetius said the meaning of life is attaining earthly happiness for the greatest number, not salvation. Helvetius advocated self-love, and valued actions by their public utilitarian use.[143]

Darwinian

The notion of a higher moral law dominated Western society until Charles Galton Darwin (1809–1882) introduced, *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life* in 1859. Darwinism was a pro-eugenics political movement that assumed God does not exist and humans are evolving animals. The Darwinian concept of law and justice stems from man's will that evolves over time with changing social values and conventions. Darwinism influenced Marxism and Nazism.[144] It also influenced secular humanism which similarly assumes only nature and the material world exist, and humans are evolving toward perfection (i.e., 'mechanised'). These theories dismiss natural law and an absolute moral code. They base morality on the changing nature of human interaction.

---

[133] Robert Stacey, *Sir William Blackstone and the Common Law: Blackstone's Legacy to America* (American Vision, 2008).

[134] N.D. Arora, *Political Science* (McGraw-Hills, 2011) 6.2.

[135] Robert Stacey, *Sir William Blackstone and the Common Law: Blackstone's Legacy to America* (American Vision, 2008).

[136] Ibid.

[137] Ibid.

[138] Ibid.

[139] Ibid.

[140] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[141] William Blackstone, *Commentaries on the Laws of England: In Four Books; with an Analysis of the Work, Volume 1* (S. Sweet, 1829).

[142] David Smith, *Helvetius: A Study in Persecution* (Clarendon Press, 1965).

[143] Ibid.

Positivist

Darwinism influenced positivism. In *Pure Theory of Law* (1939) Hans Kelsen (1881-1973) said, '*The changeover of legal science from natural law to positivism went hand in hand with the progress of empirical natural sciences and with a critical analysis of religious ideology'.*[145] Positivist Jeremy Bentham (1748-1832) rejected God and natural law, and declared law a product of human will and reason, force and social struggle.[146] These theorists believed laws are logically formulated by the state to suit society's evolving needs. That Positivists consider law manmade,[147] separates law and morality. Positivists consider law just if it benefits the population majority.[148] So, jjustice fluctuates according to the whims and preferences of the state. Its arbitrary nature renders a Positivist legal system susceptible to tyranny.

Positivist John Austin (1790-1859) aimed to transform law into a science by purging it of all moralistic notions. He asserted that law is the command of 'a sovereign who requires full obedience' [149] - which sounds pretty much like a tyrant. Hart (1907-1992) concluded that Austin's theory in effect posed a sovereign threat.[150]

Positivism ignores individual rights, natural justice, and outcome fairness.[151] Owing to Positivism, our courts are more concerned with rules and exacting procedural justice, rather than the law's ethical implications.[152] Positivism fails to make the common law distinction between natural wrongs that everyone wants criminalised (like murder) and behaviours that the government prohibits but which the public generally accept, such as defending one's family against a violent intruder; a prime example being the Batterham case [153] which also contradicted the common law allowance of proportionate use of force against a perpetrator.

Social Contract

Social contract theorists tried to reconcile Christianity with Darwinism. They defined a 'social contract' as an agreement people made in the state of nature before society existed. According to this philosophy, the public sacrifice freedom for social order and state-administered justice. Philosophers have different ideas about the state's role in this social contract. Thomas Hobbes (1588–1679) advocated for absolutism - the absolute right of the state to control the individual.[154] Hobbes' collectivism was a precursor of modern totalitarianism.[155] Hobbes diverted focus from natural law which encouraged altruism, to a sense of entitlement. Unlike Blackstone and Locke, Hobbes was not considered influential in his day, and he made no significant contribution to the legal system. He was rejected by both major parties of his day[156] and Oxford University burnt his writings.[157]

---

[144] Conway Zirkle, *Evolution, Marxian Biology, and the Social Sciences* (University of Pennsylvania, 1959).

[145] Augusto Zimmermann, 'Evolutionary Legal Theories: The Impact of Darwinism on Western Conceptions of Law' (2010) 24(2) *Journal of Creation* 103.

[146] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[147] Ibid.

[148] Ibid.

[149] Ibid.

[150] *Legal Process Study Guide* (2015).

[151] Ibid.

[152] *Legal Process Study Guide* (2015).

[153] Belinda Geary and Brianne Tolj, 'Father is charged with murder after a man who he caught 'rummaging through his daughter's bedroom' dies during attempted citizen's arrest,' *Daily Mail* (online), 28 March 2016.

Liberalist

As a social contract theorist, John Locke (1632–1704) considered the consequences of when a government fails to uphold their contractual obligation.[158] He believed people had rights to life, health, liberty, and property in the state of nature.[159] Locke believed these rights stemmed from God-given natural laws that people could easily recognise using their God-given reason. As the father of liberalism, Locke's support for inalienable, individual rights inspired the 1776 *American Declaration of Independence*, 1789 *Bill of Rights*, and 1793 French *Declaration on Human and Citizens' Rights*.[160] Locke's ideals are reflected in the legal system via notions of presumption of innocence, procedural fairness, a fair trial, and non-discrimination.[161]

Enlightenment

Unlike Hobbes and Locke, Jean Jacques Rousseau (1712-1778) claimed life in the state of nature was good.[162] He inspired Romanticism, an emotive philosophy that promoted a return to the alleged 'bliss' of a pre-civil society. Leftist collectivist ideology originated with Rousseau who claimed rights which existed in the state of nature are relinquished to the state-created *general will*.[163] Rousseau damned civil society for permitting private interest which, he claimed, exploits others and detracts from the general will.

Charles Darwin's philosophy was previously suggested by others including Immanuel Kant (1724–1804).[164] Kant agreed with Hobbes and Rousseau that humans chose to surrender their rights to the state when they created the state.[165] He said a government has no duty to its citizens, but that: *'It is the duty of the people to bear any abuse of the supreme power, even though it should be considered unbearable.'* [166] Kant based his deontological (duty-based) approach to morality on human reason.[167] He claimed that although humans are intrinsically altruistic,[168] a society containing no moral absolutes produces people motivated by selfishness instead of altruism.

---

[154] William McGovern, *From Luther to Hitler; The History of Fascist-Nazi Political Philosophy*. (Houghton Mifflin Company, 1941).

[155] Ibid.

[156] Lee Ward, *The Politics of Liberty in England and Revolutionary America*, (Cambridge University Press, 2010).

[157] Raymond Wacks, *Understanding Jurisprudence* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2012).

[158] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[159] Lee Ward, *The Politics of Liberty in England and Revolutionary America*, (Cambridge University Press, 2010).

[160] Ibid.

[161] Michelle Sanson and Thalia Antony, *Connecting with Law* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2014).

[162] N.D. Arora, *Political Science* (McGraw-Hills, 2011).

[163] William McGovern, 'Collectivism and Individualism,' in Felix Morley (ed), *Essays on Individuality*, (Stratford Press, 1958) 339.

[164] Abram L. Sachar, *A History of the Jews* (McGraw-Hill, 5th ed, 1964).

[165] William McGovern, *From Luther to Hitler; The History of Fascist-Nazi Political Philosophy* (Houghton Mifflin Company, 1941).

[166] Emmanuel Kant, *The Philosophy of Law: An Exposition of the Fundamental Principles of Jurisprudence as the Science of Right* (T & T Clarke, 1887).

[167] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

Marxist

Darwin, Rousseau, and Kant inspired Carl Marx (1818-1883).[169] Marx rejected Christianity, natural law, private property, individual rights, separation of powers, and the Rule of Law.[170] He viewed law as a tool for political power and based it on the working class' collective will. Marxism promotes lawlessness via contempt for existing social order and encouraging the working class to violently revolt against government.[171] Marx believed the need for law dissolves once communism is established.

Marx was anti-Semitic.[172] Not surprisingly, every application of Marxism has resulted in totalitarianism, deification of a dictator, human rights violations, inequality before the law, and the equal distribution of poverty.[173] This is reflected in mass killings of over 100 million people by Hitler, Lenin, Stalin, and Mao. Thus, Marxist law has proven to be the antithesis of justice.

Radical Multiculturalism

Marxism influenced contemporary theories including radical feminism, critical legal studies, and race legal theory. These theories agree that *reality is socially constructed to create and maintain power*.[174] They consider talk of justice, universal truth, and objective knowledge as white patriarchal attempts to gain political power over minority groups.[175] Such theories view law as a socially constructed tool for political gain.[176] They are pro-social justice for leftist political purposes. Their goal is not to create an overall fair legal system or an efficient government but encourage minority groups to pursue radical political change.[177] Ironically, these theories promote anti-Semitism.[178]

Collectivist Ideology.

Fascism, feminism, race legal theory, dialectical materialism, critical legal theory, socialism, deconstruction, post-modernism, ecological jurisprudence, and all other theories that advocate for government ownership and wealth redistribution are forms of *collectivist ideology*. Collectivism purports that individuality is a socially constructed phenomenon, since individuals did not exist in the state of nature.[179] Collectivism is a political-economic movement that subjugates individuals to a group, and forces interdependence.[180] People are grouped (by gender, race, class, etc.) and this group identity determines whether individual behaviour is right or wrong. Consequently, morality is determined by our *common humanity*.[181]

---

[168] Ibid.

[169] George Knupffer, *The Struggle for World Power* (Noontide, 4th Ed, 1986).

[170] Karl Marx, *Early Writings* (Penguin, 2005)

[171] Daniel Farber and Suzanna Sherry, *Beyond All Reason: The Radical Assault on Truth in American Law* (Oxford University Press, 1997).

[172] Karl Marx, *On the Jewish Question* (1844).

[173] David Koyzis, *Political Visions & Illusions* (InterVarsity Press, 2009).

[174] Daniel Farber and Suzanna Sherry, *Beyond All Reason: The Radical Assault on Truth in American Law* (Oxford University Press, 1997).

[175] Ibid.

[176] Ibid.

[177] Ibid.

[178] Ibid.

[179] William McGovern, 'Collectivism and Individualism', in Felix Morley (ed), *Essays on Individuality* (Stratford Press, 1958) 339.

[180] Ibid.

Individual Rights Erosion

The meaning of *rights* has changed to suit collectivist bias. Inalienable individual rights have been reinterpreted as minority group rights. Owing to the disregard for individual rights, and because law is not fixed, individual rights are overridden by an arbitrary government equally capable of violating, as implementing, rights.[182] An example is the myriad of Australian anti-terror laws introduced since 2002. Most were expedited without the usual parliamentary and civil considerations.[183] This lack of procedure undermined the democratic values and rights found in our Constitution, common law, and other legislation. Australia has no federal human rights legislation to ensure anti-terrorism laws comply with international human rights standards.[184] Consequently, anti-terror legislation infringes upon basic rights including a fair trial, privacy, freedom from arbitrary detention and arrest, non-discrimination, freedom of association and expression, retrospective law, and recognition under law. Historically, such denial of individual rights has preceded totalitarianism.[185]

Tyrannical Consequences

Legal system change begins with the education of student lawyers.[186] Our law texts cherry pick history to support leftist bias. Law professors highlight Marxism but omit its link to holocaust;[187] elevate fascist Hobbes above the father of Common Law;[188] [189] [190] criticise liberalist notions of individualism, formal equality, and property ownership;[191] favour abandonment of objective truth, moral absolutism, and a universally accepted standard of justice in preference for moral relativism;[192] and encourage students to care more for the rights of trees rather than humans.[193] The pro-Marxist university lecturers who undermine the foundations of our Western legal system simultaneously enjoy the freedom and rights this same system affords them.[194] It comes as no surprise then, that there is no longer an identifiable relationship between justice and the law.

* * *

---

[181] *Philosophy of Law Study Guide* (2014).

[182] Simon Bronitt and Bernadette McSherry, *Principles of Criminal Law* (Thomson Reuters Australia, 3rd ed, 2010).

[183] George Williams, 'A Decade of Australian Anti-terror Laws' (2011) *Melbourne University Law Review* 35.

[184] Australian Human Rights Commission, *how are Human Rights Protected in Australian Law?* (2006)

[185] Leonard Peikoff, *The Ominous Parallels* (Plume, 1983).

[186] Ibid.

[187] Michelle Sanson & Thalia Antony, *Connecting with Law* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2014).

[188] Ibid.

[189] Raymond Wacks, *Understanding Jurisprudence* (Oxford University Press, 3rd ed, 2012).

[190] Margaret Davies, Asking the Law Question (Thomas Lawbook, 3rd ed, 2008).

[191] *Legal Process Study Guide* (2015).

[192] Ibid.

[193] Ibid.

[194] Alvin Schmidt, *How Christianity Changed the World* (Zondervan, 2004).

Justice is Crucial

Justice is precious to victims of crime. Justice is a fundamental Biblical principle. Justice is supposed to be the objective of our *Justice* system. Yet now a desire for justice has seemingly been criminalised and pathologized in Australia. If victims of ritual abuse and mind control can’t depend on our government for justice, what hope do we have? Where do we turn? How do we cope?

* * *

MK-ULTRA & the Occult

Scientology and all the other cults are one-dimensional, and we live in a three-dimensional world. Cults are as dangerous as drugs. They commit the highest crime: the rape of the soul.

- L. Ron Hubbard Jr. (*Penthouse*, June 1983)

PROJECT OFTEN

John Marks authored his CIA-approved book, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate,* based on 139 boxes of MK-ULTRA documents. While none of the FOI-released documents exposed the truth that *children* were the ultimate Manchurian Candidates, 40 percent of the documents pertained to the CIA's interest in the occult, a fact useful to this chapter.

Sidney Gottlieb initiated Project OFTEN-CHICKWIT to study parapsychology and the occult, to 'explore the world of black magic' and 'harness the forces of darkness and challenge the concept that the inner reaches of the mind are beyond reach.' Under OFTEN, the CIA visited with and recruited fortune-tellers, palm-readers, clairvoyants, astrologists, mediums, psychics, specialists in demonology, witches and warlocks, Satanists, and other occult practitioners. They established a research laboratory at the University of South Carolina and recruited student guinea pigs via a college class in black witchcraft, demonology and voodoo. Project OFTEN built on the library of knowledge the Nazi's acquired by scouring the globe collecting occult practices including trauma-based mind control techniques. During their height of power, the Nazis conducted Luciferian rituals in the streets of Germany in broad daylight. Winston Churchill fittingly wrote of Hitler:

> *He had conjured up the fearful idol of an all-devouring Moloch of which he was the priest and incarnation.*[195]

DARWIN-GALTON-HUXLEY-WEDGEWOOD DYNASTY

MK-ULTRA and the occult are inseparable. MK-ULTRA was founded on occultic practises by occultists. To understand this, we must examine the spiritual and philosophical beliefs and practises of the people behind MK-ULTRA, the covert Rothschilds and their overt operatives, the Darwin-Galton-Huxley-Wedgewood dynasty.

Aldous Huxley was the evil revolutionary who conceived and facilitated MK-ULTRA in the USA. His brother Julian Huxley coined the term 'transhumanism' and founded the eugenicist UNESCO to achieve their transhumanist end goal. Julian and his Australian relative Leonard Huxley coordinated MK-ULTRA in Australia. Aldous and Julian Huxley were the grandsons of biologist, anthropologist and philosopher Thomas Huxley (1825-1895) who co-founded the occultic Imperialist *British Round Table Society*.

LORD ROTHSCHILD

Reformed elite Luciferian John Todd-Collins was the informant behind the 1970s *Jack Chick* comics responsible for my childhood conversion from satanism to Christianity. According to John Todd-Collins, the HOGD (*Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn*) is the Rothschilds' organisation of witchcraft. The Rothschilds have been the world's wealthiest family for the past 200 years and are the pinnacle dynasty within the Luciferian power hierarchy. According to the *Jewish Encyclopedia* (1906, Vol.2, p.497) the Rothschilds 'are the guardians of the papal treasure.'

---

[195] Winston Churchill (1948). *The Gathering Storm*, 64. Houghton Mifflin / Thomas Allen.

The Cult taught me to revere the Rothschilds as demigods (Nephilim). Based on my programming structure, I deduce that Joseph Mengele was a Rothschild. I also suspect my perpetrators Michael Aquino, Leonas Petrauskas, and Leo's business partner John Melov were Rothschilds.

Global Power Hierarchy

Lucifer (All-Seeing Eye of Horus)
Rothschilds
Council of 13 (Grande Druid Council)
Council of 33 (33 highest ranked Freemasons)
Council of 500 (500 richest individuals)
HOGD (Rothschilds' international organisation of witchcraft)

SYNAGOGUE OF SATAN

The Rothschilds are *Hofjuden*. The close ties between the London-based Hofjuden families and the British oligarchy trace back to the founding of the Bank of England, and before that to an alliance with the pirates who financed post-Renaissance Genoa in North-West Italy. The three Jewish authors of *Dope Inc*. (1978) explain this history:

> *Several of the Hofjuden families who converged on London during the 17th and 18th centuries had served the Genoese bankers in their takeover of Holland, had participated in the Dutch East India Company's first expeditions in opium trade, and had collaborated over the centuries with the British Jesuits against European humanist forces…*
>
> *The Montefiores trace their origin as 'special operations' experts for the European oligarchy to the 13th century in Spain, when they ran errands as tax farmers and Inquisitors for their masters, the Genoese. The Montefiores later moved to Holland to help found the Dutch East India Company and the Bank of Holland. After the Stuart Restoration of the mid-17th century, the Montefiores moved to England where they helped establish the Bank of England and the British East India Company. Under Sir Moses Montefiore, the family collaborated with Lord Palmerston and Prime Minister Disraeli in the founding of the present-day Zionist 'movement…'*
>
> *Rothschilds, Warburgs, Oppenheimers, Schroeders, and other Hofjuden became the leading financial backers of Adolf Hitler.*

The Rothschilds and other Hofjuden call themselves Jews yet worship Lucifer instead of the 'I AM' Creator God of the Torah and New Testament. Their loathing of fundamentalist Jews and Christians was demonstrated by their financing the extermination of these groups via Hitler, Lenin, Marx, Papal Inquisition, and the CIA. The three Jewish authors of *Dope Inc.* (1978) asserted the Hofjuden are not true Jews. The Bible says:

> *I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan*. (Rev. 2:9)

The *Synagogue of Satan* created the Zionist movement and stamped the Luciferian hexagram on Israel's flag which they named the 'Star of David.' The hexagram had *nothing* to do with King David, and David had *nothing* to do with witchcraft or Luciferianism. The hexagram represents the pagan god Astarte. Hence the Rothschilds adopted a red hexagram (Red Shield) as their family crest and on their subsidiaries including the Salvation Army. The Luciferians call the hexagram the '*Seal of Solomon*.' Fritz Springmeier explains:

> *Throughout the Middle Ages the Seal of Solomon had been used by Arab Magicians, Cabalist Magicians, Druid witches and Satanists. One of the few ancient uses of the symbol was on the floor of a 1,200-year-old Moslem Mosque found where Tel Aviv is today. In the twelve century an Ashkenazic Jew Menahem Ben Duji, who thought he was the Messiah, used the magical symbol. Because the Rothschilds were Satanists they adopted this powerful magic symbol in 1822 for their coat-of-arms.*

David's son Solomon defied God's law by substituting Jewish brides with a thousand pagan whores who seduced him into satanism. Consequently, Israel permanently split into two kingdoms. Ten tribes rejected Solomon's son by a pagan wife as their king, split off and formed the northern kingdom called Israel. Two southern tribes formed the kingdom of Judah under Solomon's pagan offspring. Consider the following 1836 quote:

> *The Rothschilds are the wonders of modern banking. Sprung from that poetic, that ancient, that mysterious race, from whom we derive all our religion and half of our civilization, we see the descendants of Judah, after a persecution of two thousand years, peering above kings, rising higher than emperors, and holding a whole continent in the hollow of their hands. The Rothschilds govern a Christian world. Not a cabinet moves without their advice. They stretch their hand, with equal ease, from Petersburg to Vienna, from Vienna to Paris, from Paris to London, from London to Washington. Baron Rothschild, the head of the house, is the true king of Judah, the prince of the captivity, the Messiah so long looked for by this extraordinary people. He holds the keys of peace or war, blessing or cursing. To what will all this lead? If the holy city to be rebuilt? – the third temple to rear its urrets to heaven? No. The lion of the tribe of Judah, baron Rothschild, possesses more real force than David – more wisdom than Solomon. What do they care for the barren seacoast of Palestine? They are the brokers and counsellors of the kings of Europe and of the republican chiefs of America. What more can they desire?* [196]

The *Synagogue of Satan* intend to build a Third Temple. They are responsible for the growing antisemitism brewing another holocaust, because people think the Zionist bankers who push for the state of Israel (which was almost named 'Zion') and the construction of a Third Temple, are Jewish. The Rothschild's financed the Nazi holocaust to justify the need for a Jewish homeland, with the Templar end goal of building a replacement temple in Jerusalem to house their coming fake Messiah, the Antichrist. The Rothschilds flooded Palestine with people whose Jewishness is determined via the maternal line. This contradicts the Torah which clearly says the male bloodline establishes Jewish heritage. The Old Testament lists pages and pages of *male* birth lines, not female. King David specifically addressed this issue. Women may convert to Judaism via marriage while men certainly can't.

---

[196] H. Niles (Ed.) (1835). *Niles' Weekly Register.* Baltimore, 19 September, 49, 41.

I doubt the dome of the rock is the original site of Solomon's temple, but of an ancient Roman fort. Former biology professor Walter Veith produced an excellent *Total Onslaught* series on the secret history of Freemasonry and Catholicism, in which he proves the gold-topped Mosque is a renovated Roman Temple of Diana. Jesus clearly said 'not one stone' would be left of the Temple site, including the foundation stones. I visited Jerusalem and saw numerous stones constitute the ancient Roman fort site. I agree the real Temple site was completely razed down to below its foundations, even the hill and soil it sat on were removed. Let the Communist cult of Islam created by the Roman Catholic church keep their pagan temple. The Bible is clear, God will ultimately make the *Synagogue of Satan* bow at the feet of His genuine Jewish people. He will restore the Jewish people to their homeland in His time:

> *Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you.* (Rev. 3:9)

SCOTTISH RITE OF FREEMASONS

The Rothschilds control global Freemasonry. Fritz Springmeier wrote:

> *The Masonic reference book '10,000 Famous Freemasons,' Vol. 4, p.74, indicates two other sons of Amschel were Masons, James Meyer Rothschild, and his brother Nathan Meyer Rothschild. James Rothschild in Paris was a 33-degree Scottish Rite Mason, and his brother Nathan in London was a member of the Lodge of Emulation. And Jewish Freemason Katz indicates Solomon Meir Rothschild, a third member of the five brothers, was initiated into Freemasonry on June 14, 1809. The Rothschilds became powerful within Freemasonry.*

Freemasonry has links to the Ancient Greek and Egyptian mystery religions:

> *The Dionysiacs of Asia Minor were undoubtedly an association of architects and engineers, who had the exclusive privilege of building temples, stadia, and theatres, under the mysterious tutelage of Bacchus…*[197]

Freemason Lodges (temples) are decorated with Ancient Egyptian paraphernalia, indicating its connection to the Cult of Isis and Thoth/Hermes. Freemasons call themselves 'architects' meaning designers of alchemic transhumanism.

PROJECT INTERNATIONAL ARCHITECTS

An interesting couple lived near my childhood farm. Radovan von Winterberg was an engineer and architect who claimed to be the rightful owner of Winterberg Castle which sits on the Czechoslovakian border. Radovan drove a red 260z sports car that featured UNESCO diplomatic plates. He once told me 'Australia needs a mini-Hitler' and he showed me drafts of Pauline Hanson's early speeches which he claimed to have written. Radovan said he was still on the payroll of a secret service agency that retained him as a consultant for $50k per year. His wife Michelle worked as a biochemist for the CSIRO. At one stage Michelle headed the biological section of the Sydney Water Board's Scientific Services.

---

[197] John Robison (1797), *Proofs of a Conspiracy against all the Religions and Governments of Europe, Carried on in the Secret Meetings of Free Masons, Illuminati, and Reading Societies*.

The mysterious von Winterberg couple built an underground house at Terranora and installed tight security and cameras in an '80s era when neighbours typically left their front doors unlocked. A sign at their entrance read 'Project International Architects' and featured a Freemason square and compass logo. While the average person might dismiss the sign as a reference to his house design business, I immediately took it as a reference to her human design business. Our family always speculated that Michelle was conducting illegal genetic engineering projects in their underground lair which my high IQ blue-eyed blonde father often visited.

When Radovan's house came up for sale one owner later, I challenged my sister-in-law to inspect the place with me and see whether it could have accommodated a cloning lab. She dismissed my lunatic ravings – until we saw the house. Radovan's underground home resembled a 1960s James Bond movie set complete with space-style shower pods, built-in fish tank, and velvet and silver wallpaper. But it was the room at the end of the house that rendered my sister-in-law speechless. There we found the creepy science lab I knew existed. The room was so haunted, I had difficulty breathing. My sister-in-law freaked out, fled the property, and refused to discuss what we felt and saw.

ORDER OF KAPPA SIGMA

A clue to Freemasonry's origins is found in the Order of Kappa Sigma secret handbook published by Wikileaks. Kappa Sigma is a Freemason fraternity founded in Bologna University, Italy during the 1400s. Michelangelo was a member. The Order spread to the other four great European universities (Florence, Paris, Orleans, and Montpellier) and was preserved by French and Italian nobility. The Kappa Sigma Order of America was founded at Virginia University in 1869 and became the largest fraternity in the USA. Head CIA psychologist (my perpetrator) John W. Gittinger was initiated into Kappa-Sigma at Oklahoma University.

Kappa Sigma is Greek for 'Kirjath Sepher' the name of an ancient city in southern Canaan. Esau was the brother of Jacob (renamed Israel) who sold God's blessing for a bowl of stew and killed (and stole the enchanted clothes of) Nimrod who founded the ancient Babylonian mystery religion. Esau married two Canaanite women plus a daughter of Ishmael, the father of Islam. The Canaanites worshipped Baal, Echmoun (Asclepius), Dagon, and Astarte/Ishtar/Oester (Greek Aphrodite and Roman Venus) the goddess of child prostitution to whom babies were sacrificed and Ishtar eggs coloured red with their blood to celebrate spring. Some believe the *Hofjuden* stem from the bloodline of Esau.

The Kappa Sigma symbols include the Luciferian encircled pentagram, Islamic crescent moon, and caduceus of Mercury. Kappa Sigma founder Stephen Alonzo Jackson (aka, Grand Master, or 'Architect of Ritual') stated: 'Let us not rest contently until the Star [Astarte pentagram] and Crescent [moon] is the pride of every college and university throughout the land.' [198] The fraternity is a means by which our youth are initiated into Luciferian Freemasonry and indoctrinated, like 'Comrade Gittinger,' with their agenda.

The human skull and crossed thigh bones is another Kappa-Sigma symbol, used to remind members of their sworn oath and the punishment that awaits should they violate it

---

[198] *Ritual of Kappa Sigma* (1995).

(i.e., beheading and amputation). The initiation ritual involves the use of a genuine human skull and crossed thigh bones placed on an altar. John Ward, University of Sydney Vice Chancellor, created a human skull and cross bones during a Halloween ritual by skinning a child alive. The skull and crossbones symbol is a feature of the Freemasons, Jesuits, Knights Templars, knights of Malta, and Shiners. Freemasons traditionally bury human femur bones on their Lodge grounds during rituals.

The Knights Templar had the world's biggest fleet in the 13th century, and they were notorious for committing acts of 'piracy'. The Knights of Malta replaced them, and they too were pirates. Pirates financed post-Renaissance Genoa in North-West Italy. The skull and crossbones trace back to ancient Canaan/Sidon/Zidon, a rendezvous for pirates (aka, 'merchants'). Sidon was a wealthy and powerful city of merchants who first produced the Royal Purple dye worn by Emperors, popes, and Luciferian priests.

ILLUMINATI BLOODLINES

> *In mockery and imitation of God's 12 tribes, Satan blessed 12 bloodlines. One of these bloodlines was the Ishmaeli bloodline from which a special elite line developed alchemy, assassination techniques, and other occult practices. One bloodline was Egyptian/Celtic/Druidic from which Druidism was developed. One bloodline was in the orient and developed oriental magic. One lineage was from Canaan and the Canaanites. It had the name Astarte, then Astorga, then Ashdor, and then Astor. The tribe of Dan was used as a Judas Iscariot type seed. The royalty of the tribe of Dan have descended down through history as a powerful Satanic bloodline. The 13th or final blood line was copied after God's royal lineage of Jesus. This was the Satanic House of David with their blood which they believe is not only from the House of David but also from the lineage of Jesus, who they claim had a wife and children. The 13th Satanic bloodline was instilled with the direct seed of Satan so that they would not only carry Christ's blood--but also the blood of his 'brother' Lucifer. One of the bloodlines goes back to Babylon and are descended from Nimrod.*[199]

BRITISH ROUND TABLE & THE RIIA

Cecil Rhodes, who was initiated into Freemasonry at Oxford University, formed a eugenicist secret society to reclaim the British Empire and recapture the USA, the *British Round Table Society*. Rhodes recruited fellow Freemasons Thomas Huxley, Rudyard Kipling, and Alfred Milner, plus a group of Oxford College graduates known as '*Milner's Kindergarten.*' This group were trained as an occult priesthood devoted to the eugenicist principles of Imperial rule.

In 1919, the same group founded the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA) to serve as the central planning and recruitment agency for Britain's 'One World Empire.' Arnold Toynbee, who sat on the RIIA for nearly 50 years, headed British Intelligence's Research Division during WW2. Toynbee served as wartime briefing officer to Prime Minister Winston Churchill, a Freemason and Druid. Toynbee stated in 1953:

> *By forcing on mankind more and more lethal weapons and at the same time making the whole world more and more interdependent economically, technology has brought*

---

[199] Fritz Springmeier (2005). *Bloodlines of the Illuminati*. Pentracks.

> *mankind to such a degree of distress that we are ripe for deifying any new Caesar who might succeed in giving the world unity and peace.*[200]

The RIIA were responsible for charting Britain's global drug trafficking trade. Their means of reclaiming British Empire included political infiltration, and instigation of the 1920s Prohibition to facilitate their introduction of drugs, traffickers, and large-scale organized crime to the USA.

> *Illegal alcohol and illegal narcotics made up two different product lines of the same multinational firm. The British, through their distilleries in Scotland and Canada, and the British, from their opium refineries in Shanghai and Hong Kong, were the suppliers. The British, through their banks in Canada and the Caribbean, were the financiers. Through their political conduits in the United States, the British created the set of political conditions under which the United States might be won back by means other than the failed Balkanization plan of the Civil War period.*[201]

INTERNATIONAL ASSASSINATION BUREAU

British PM Henry Palmerston, Patriarch of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, conducted the opium business. Palmerston and his successors employed the following groups to perform assassinations, traffic illegal drugs, and follow a chain of command through the Freemasons:[202]

1. **Triad Society** (aka Societies of Heaven) a suppressed religious cult who violently revolted against the Chinese government. Jesuit and Anglican (Church of England) missionaries recruited Cantonese Triads into the *East India Company* opium trade.
2. **Klu-Klux-Klan** stemmed from Freemason *Knights of the Golden Circle*. Co-founded by Confederate General **Albert Pike**, Jesuit priest, Freemason Grand Commander who promoted Luciferian worship within the Scottish Rite.
3. **Young Italy** became the Mafia. Originally Sicily's law enforcement arm, they were organized and commanded by Freemason Communist founder Giuseppe Mazzini. Their uniform was a white cape bearing a Maltese Cross (the insignia of the *Order of Saint John of Jerusalem*) on the left shoulder. During the American Civil War, they paraded in uniform through New Orleans, gunning down African Americans.
4. **Anarchist** bomb-throwing gangs of Russian Mikhail Bakunin (member of the *Grand Orient de France* Freemason lodge) organised by Alexander Herzen (Freemason and Rothschild agent).
5. **B'nai B'rith**, (aka, *Constitutional Grand Lodge of the Order of the Sons of the Covenant*) a branch of the Freemasonry for American Hofjuden, and US covert intelligence front. Merged operations with the KKK.
6. **Order of Zion** (aka, **B'nai B'rith** in the USA) Hofjuden division of the British Royal Family *Order of Saint John of Jerusalem*. Secret society whose members swear and act on a

---

[200] J. Vernon McGee (1991). *Thru the Bible, 59: The Prophecy (Rev. 6-13)*. Thomas Nelson.

[201] K. Kalimtgis, D. Goldman & J. Stienberg (1978). *Dope, Inc: Britain's Opium War Against the US* Executive Intelligence Review.

[202] Ibid.

blood oath. A Freemasonic Order specialising in dirty tricks operations. Founded by London-based Hofjuden Montefiore and Rothschild families. Trained the Confederate leadership, assassinated Abraham Lincoln. Descendants of Confederates migrated to Brazil after the Civil War, namely São Paulo, which became home to the largest Nazi population.

7. **Jesuit Order** (based in Hapsburg Austria). Military and banking arm of the Roman Catholic church.

The Jesuits formed in 1540 after Henry VIII ousted the pope and declared himself intercessor between man and God after the pope refused to annul Henry's first marriage. His daughter Elizabeth replaced the Roman Catholic church with the Anglican Church (Catholicism light). (Orthodox Anglicans do not consider themselves protestant, hence the pope offered membership to disgruntled parishioners opposed to the ordination of gay priests). Queen Elizabeth received a complete occult education from John Dee who published books on alchemy, ancient languages, hermeticism, Kabbalah, math, and sacred geometry.

The pope created the *Vatican Intelligence Service* (aka, *Santa Alleanza* or *L'Entità*) in 1566 to infiltrate the court of, and overthrow, Elizabeth I. Today, Santa Alleanza is considered the most discreet and greatest intelligence service on the planet. Simon Wiesenthal described it as the world's 'best and most effective espionage service.' In 2008, the Vatican joined INTERPOL to access resources and databases in 192 countries, which expanded Santa Alleanza's reach. Santa Alleanza was infiltrated by Freemasons. Like *Church Militant* stated: 'It is not generally known to Catholics just how well inserted ideological Freemasons are into the intelligence services of the military apparatus of Italy and other European nations.'[203] The Italian government disbanded a Freemason group *Propaganda Due* (P2) after they infiltrated the Vatican bank, but the group simply reformed as different entities.

JESUIT INQUISITORS

The Hofjuden and Jesuits combined forces to torture and murder innocent children and adults during the 1542 Papal Inquisition. The aim of the Inquisition was to instigate *spiritual revolution*. The Inquisitors targeted Jews, Protestants (fundamental Christians) and heretics. 'Heretic' is defined as a person holding an opinion at odds with what is generally accepted, and is synonymous with dissident, nonconformist, and freethinker. The Inquisition torture methods described in the following secret oath, formed the basis of CIA trauma-based mind control.

Jesuit Oath

I do further promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Masons, as I am directed to do, to extirpate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex nor condition, and that will hang, burn, waste, boil, flay, strangle, and bury alive these infamous heretics; rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race. That when the same can't be done openly I will secretly use the poisonous cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard, or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honour, rank, dignity or authority of the persons, whatever may be

---

[203] The Church Militant (2018). Santa Alleanza: The Vatican Intelligence Service, 14 Sept.

> *their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agents of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Father of the Society of Jesus.*[204]

I witnessed my Jesuit perpetrators commit the crimes described in the above oath. Everything damning and true that was written about the Jesuits back in the 17th Century was, hundreds of years later, declared a 'forgery' by Catholic priests or *Jesuit Institute* publications.

JESUIT PERPETRATORS

The Jesuits are prominent in Australia and amongst my perpetrators. Roman Emperor Ratzinger, a former Nazi, is the first Jesuit pope. Ex-PM Tony Abbott is a Jesuit. Former Labour Party leader Bill Shorten, who escaped a rape conviction because his victim lubricated during penetration and therefore 'wanted it' - is a Jesuit.

Leonas Petrauskas was schooled by Jesuits in Lithuania and associated with Jesuits in PNG. Antony Kidman had strong Jesuit ties. Kidman attended a Sydney Jesuit school, *Saint Aloysius College*, with his brother who commenced Jesuit training but abandoned this due to his schizophrenia. The Kidman family attended *Star of The Sea **Jesuit** Church* in North Sydney. The Kidman's family priest was Jesuit Father Paul Coleman who officiated Nicole Kidman and Keith Urban's 2006 marriage, and Antony Kidman's 2014 funeral, at St Mary's North Sydney. This is the same church where the fake funeral of my Jesuit trained perpetrator (and Sydney Grande Dame) Patricia Anne Conlon was held.

MITHRAISM IS ROMAN CATHOLICISM

For those who think the Vatican runs the world and the pope is the antichrist, note the Vatican are not a bloodline, just a male-dominated order which relies upon recruitment and initiation. The Roman Catholic priestly order stems from the ancient Roman Cult of Mithraism which my British husband and his father, of the Gardiner Illuminati bloodline, were initiated into. Mithraism is so secretive you will find no records of their beliefs and practises. Mithraism rank initiates based on IQ level, and conduct ceremonies in which priests 'marry' boy brides - which might explain the epidemic of Catholic priests raping altar boys. I also know from experience that the Roman Catholic high mass is a watered-down version of the Luciferian black mass.

ORDER OF THE ILLUMINATI

In 1527, Ignatius of Loyola was let off with a warning by a Christian court for sympathising with the Alumbrados of Spain (aka, Spanish Illuminati). In 1534, Loyola founded the Jesuit Order. In 1773, the Pope ordered the suppression of the Jesuits, and Adam Weishaupt became professor of Canon Law at a Jesuit University. In 1776, Weishaupt founded the Order of the Illuminati. Illuminati is synonymous with Luciferianism. Illuminated means 'to make luminous' while Lucifer means 'light-bringer.' My perpetrators referred to the entire Luciferian network as 'The Order.'

In his 1797 book '*Proofs of a Conspiracy Against all the Religions and Governments of Europe Carried on in the Secret Meetings of Freemasons, Illuminati, and Reading Societies*,' John Robison showed how the Jesuit Order and Scottish Rite of Freemasonry colluded to fulfil Adam Weishaupt's goal of revolution.

---

[204] Carlos Didier (1843). Subterranean Rome. New York. Jesuit Extreme Oath of Induction, In *Journals of the 62D Congress*, 3d Session of the US, 15 Feb. 1913, 3215-16.

LUCIFERIAN EUGENICIST AGENDA

The Galton-Huxley-Darwin-Wedgewood families were eugenicists who, in Luciferian bloodline tradition, intermarried to preserve their bloodlines and maintain their wealth and influence. Their relationship is demonstrated by a January 1874 séance conducted at Erasmu Alvey Darwin's house which was arranged by spiritualist Francis Galton and attended by Charles Galton Darwin, Hensleigh Wedgwood, and Thomas Henry Huxley.

Charles Galton Darwin's great-grandson married Thomas Huxley's great-granddaughter. Charles Darwin shared a grandfather with Francis Galton, who coined the word 'eugenics' in 1883 and founded the international eugenics movement. Thomas Huxley coined the term 'Darwinism' and was responsible for promoting his relative Charles Galton Darwin's philosophy of evolution, which was originally titled:

On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the PRESERVATION of FAVOURED RACES in the Struggle for Life

Marxist educators typically omit the second half of Darwin's title which indicates Darwin was a eugenicist. The Darwin-Galton-Huxley-Wedgewood eugenicist agenda was survival of the Luciferian elite and annihilation of the masses. Communism, the universal symbol of which is a red Luciferian pentagram, has the same goal.

> *Darwin's proof of evolutionary changes in species – an evolution which proceeds by mathematical laws, not by the conscious design of a Creator – was soon incorporated in mechanistic theories of man and society. Social Darwinism fitted equally well into the arguments of apologists for capitalism like Herbert Spencer and William Graham Sumner, precursors of fascism like the Austrian sociologist Ludwig Gumplowicz, and the influential Communist theorists Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels.*[205]

All Darwinism is Social Darwinism, the application of 'natural selection and preservation of favoured races' to human society. Darwin was influenced by Thomas Robert Malthus, whose theory of population control advocated for reducing population numbers via deliberate neglect and passive annihilation. Darwinism combined with Malthusianism produced three arms of the same dialectic:

1. National Socialism in Nazi Germany,
2. International Socialism in Marxist Russia,
3. Corporate Capitalism headed by the USA.

Charles Galton Darwin's son Leonard was an Army Major, MP, and 1912 president of London's First International Congress of Eugenics. Leonard Darwin associated with Harry Hamilton Laughlin, Expert Eugenics Agent of the US House of Representatives. As superintendent of the Eugenics Record Office, Laughlin oversaw the collection of prominent family pedigrees including the Galton-Darwin-Huxley-Wedgewood dynasty. High profile American eugenicists included Alexander Graham Bell (the fraud who stole Antonio Meucci's telephone invention[206]) and David Starr Jordan (Stanford University's first President). David Star Jordan coined the term dysgenics, referring to defective or disadvantageous genes and traits in offspring of a population. Aldous Huxley adopted the term as follows:

---

[205] Alan Scheflin & Edward Opton (1978). *The Mind Manipulators*. Paddington Press.

> *Among the Brave New Worlders, the control of human nature was achieved by eugenic and dysgeni**c** breeding, by systematic conditioning during infancy [which] is as old as Pavlov.*[207]

H.H. Laughlin's publications promoted racial segregation and sterilisation of 'hereditary defectives.' In 1922, Laughlin published the *Model Sterilization Law* mandating the involuntary sterilization of 'useless' people. Thirty USA states passed laws allowing sterilization of mentally ill, diseased, blind, orphaned, homeless, disabled people, and criminals. Laughlin's *Model Sterilization Law* provided the model for, and was virtually identical to, the Nazi sterilisation laws resulting in 2 million sterilizations.[208] In 1936, the Nazi-run Heidelberg University awarded Laughlin an honorary MD degree 'in recognition of studies made on human heredity and population analysis and control.' The USA sent a large delegation to the university in honour of its 150th anniversary, to witness the Heidelberg University student body parade in Nazi Stormtrooper uniforms.

COMMUNIST REVOLUTION

The Soviet Union caused tens of millions of deaths, far more than Nazi Germany. Like Nazism, Communism stemmed from occultism and is violently anti-Biblical.[209] Russian author and historian Alexander Solzhenitsyn (1918 - 2008) wrote:

> *Within the philosophical system of Marx and Lenin, and at the heart of their psychology, hatred of God is the principal driving force, more fundamental than all their political and economic pretensions.*

Russian Communist Party leader Leon Trotsky wrote:

> *In the 18th century, Freemasonry became expressive of a militant policy of enlightenment, as in the case of the Illuminati, who were the forerunners of revolution.*[210]

Trotsky said leftist Illuminati members became the Italian 'Carbonari' secret revolutionary societies that spread socialist ideas and achieved prominence during the Napoleonic French revolution. (Napoleon named himself *New Apollyon* after the god Apollo.)

> *Illuminism was among the many occult philosophies of the time, with influences from the ancient belief systems of Gnosticism and Hermeticism. It was based on a loose idea*

---

[206] Rory Carroll (2002). Bell Did Not Invent Telephone, US Rules. *The Guardian*, 17 Jun.

[207] Michael Horowitz & Cynthia Palmer (eds) (1977). *Moksha: Aldous Huxley's Classic Writings on Psychedelics and the Visionary Experience*, 95. Stonehill.

[208] Lenny Lapon (1986). *Mass Murderers in White Coats: Psychiatric Genocide in Nazi Germany and the United States*. Psychiatric Genocide Research Institute.

[209] Joshua Philip (2017). The Dark Origins of Communism: How communist ideology was formed by the dark occult, atheism, and societies of violent revolution. *Epoch Times*, 7 June.

[210] Leon Trotsky (1930). *My Life.*

> *of personal enlightenment through reason, with a heavy focus on materialism and the nature of man - and often with strong anti-religious and anti-government overtones.*

Destruction of moral restraint and the deification of human nature over suppression of divine aspirations, is fundamental to Communist ideology. Communism basically amounts to rebellion against God and a hatred and destruction of humanity. Hence the Luciferian end goal is to oppose and destroy everything God stated and created and replace these with genetically engineered and mechanised replicas. Our youth, indoctrinated with the philosophy of evolution and the religion of scientism, are ready to embrace the final evolutionary phase of transhumanism.

> **Man-as-Machine**
> *The man-as machine idea appealed to men's desire to control themselves and others, to replace disorder with order, to get on the bandwagon of Science (which was revolutionizing society), and to replace the theological explanations of man's nature which were coming to seem more and more achronistic. From Thomas Hobbes to B.F. Skinner, the list of man-as-machine philosophers could serve as the greater part of a reading list for a course on modern intellectual history: Spinoza, Julian Offray, de la Mettrie, Hartley, Jeremy Bentham, Joseph Townsend, Thomas Huxley, James Mill, John Locke, Auguste Compte, Saint-Simon, Eramus Darwin, Hegel, Herbert Spencer, William Graham Sumner, Haeckel, Hume, Pierre Simon de LaPlace, and Rene Descartes. The list would also include such pro-fascists as Gumplowicz, and the founders of Communism, Marx and Engels… The cost of this controlled happiness was to be the extinction of human liberty…*[211]

THE FINAL REVOLUTION

Throughout history, the Rothschilds and their predecessors orchestrated and financed every major revolution (Industrial, French, Communist, etc). There is coming a Final Revolution to end all revolutions. This final revolution, psychological in nature, inspired Project MK-ULTRA, and will be expedited by nuclear war. Out of the ashes of chaos a dystopian new world order will arise like the Luciferian phoenix, complete with tyrannical dictator. The Bible predicts this, and so did Aldous Huxley, the evil revolutionary who founded and coordinated Project MK-ULTRA in the USA. The coming social order will combine Aldous Huxley's *Brave New World* with George Orwell's *1984*. Both 1930s novels are proving to be more blueprint than fiction. Aldous Huxley compared the two books in a letter he wrote George Orwell from California, 21 October 1949:[212]

> *The first hints of a philosophy of the ultimate revolution — the revolution which lies beyond politics and economics, and which aims at total subversion of the individual's psychology and physiology — are to be found in the Marquis de Sade, who regarded himself as the continuator, the consummator, of Robespierre and Babeuf…*

---

[211] Alan Scheflin & Edward Opton (1978). *The Mind Manipulators*. Paddington Press.

[212] Rob King (2012). In the future, I'm right: Letter from Aldous Huxley to George Orwell over 1984 novel sheds light on their different ideas, *Daily Mail*, 7 March.

> *My own belief is that the ruling oligarchy will find less arduous and wasteful ways of governing and of satisfying its lust for power, and these ways will resemble those which I described in Brave New World…*
>
> *I have had occasion recently to look into the history of animal magnetism and hypnotism, and have been greatly struck by the way in which, for a hundred and fifty years, the world has refused to take serious cognizance of the discoveries of Mesmer, Braid, Esdaile, and the rest…*
>
> *But now psychoanalysis is being combined with hypnosis; and hypnosis has been made easy and indefinitely extensible through the use of barbiturates, which induce a hypnoidal and suggestible state in even the most recalcitrant subjects.*
> *Within the next generation I believe that the world's rulers will discover that infant conditioning and narco-hypnosis are more efficient, as instruments of government, than clubs and prisons, and that the lust for power can be just as completely satisfied by suggesting people into loving their servitude as by flogging and kicking them into obedience…*

Aldous Huxley repeated his goal of 'Final Revolution' as follows:

> *We have had religious revolutions, we have had political, industrial, economic and nationalistic revolutions. All of them, as our descendants will discover, were but ripples in an ocean of conservatism – trivial by comparison with the psychological revolution toward which we are so rapidly moving. That will really be a revolution. When it is over, the human race will give no further trouble.*[213]
>
> *There will be, in the next generation or so, a pharmacological method of making people love their servitude, and producing dictatorship without tears, so to speak, producing a kind of painless concentration camp for entire societies, so that people will in fact have their liberties taken away from them, but will rather enjoy it, because they will be distracted from any desire to rebel by propaganda or brainwashing, or brainwashing enhanced by pharmacological methods. And this seems to be the final revolution.* [214]

Aldous Huxley recruited to MK-ULTRA the famous behavioural psychologist, B.F. Skinner, who wrote a novel in the dystopian tradition. In *Walden Two*, Skinner echoed Aldous Huxley writings concerning a psychological revolution:

> *Now that we know how positive reinforcement works, and why negative doesn't, we can be more deliberate and hence more successful, in our cultural design. We can achieve a sort of control under which the controlled…nevertheless feel free. They are doing what they want to do, not what they are forced to do. That's the source of the*

---

[213] Aldous Huxley quoted in Lewis M. Andrews & Marvin Karlins (1971). *Requiem for Democracy? An Inquiry into the Limits of Behavioural Control*, 1. New York.

[214] Aldous Huxley (1959). Speech to Tavistock Group, University of California Medical School. In Michael Horowitz & Cynthia Palmer (eds) (1977). *Moksha: Aldous Huxley's Classic Writings on Psychedelics and the Visionary Experience*, 171. Stonehill.

> *tremendous power of positive reinforcement—there's no restraint and no revolt. By a careful design, we control not the final behaviour, but the inclination to behave - the motives, the desires, the wishes. The curious thing is that in that case the question of freedom never arises.*[215]

DYSTOPIAN PREDICTIVE PROGRAMMING

Before Hollywood, literature and reading groups provided the vehicle for cultural change. Hence the introduction of the dystopian genre by Wells, Huxley and Orwell. Thomas Huxley taught biology to H.G. Wells at the Royal College of Science. Wells became head of British Intelligence and the author of 'science fiction' classics that reflect the New World Order technology and agenda. *War of the Worlds*, *Time Machine*, *The Island of Doctor Moreau* anticipated the invention of aircraft, tanks, space travel, nuclear weapons, satellite television, the internet, the sexual revolution, motorised transport, suburban growth, time travel, genetic engineering, invisibility, and 'alien' invasion. H.G. Wells in turn educated George Orwell who wrote *1984* and *Animal Farm.* Wells also educated Thomas Huxley's grandsons Julian and Aldous Huxley at Oxford. Aldous Huxley taught high school French to George Orwell.

BRAVE NEW WORLD

Aldous Huxley wrote his 1932 classic *Brave New World* in H.G. Well's dystopian style. Huxley's novel plus *1984* were essential cult reading prescribed by the Grande Dame who trained me. Brave New World portrays a Fabian Socialist state built on eugenics, where genetically and socially engineered babies are behaviour modified via mind control methods including drugs, electric shock, verbal repetition, and pedophilia. The resultant artificially created caste system possess the same labels (*Alpha, Beta, Delta, Gamma, Epsilon*) correspond with MK-ULTRA's program classifications. Alpha are the high IQ ruling class, while the mass-cloned Epsilon slave class possess a mental age of 10 years. The lower classes are sterilised, while the upper-class women take birth control pills stored on their 'Malthusian' belts (a reference to Social Darwinism). Everyone is in a drug-induced state of happiness, and the water is drugged. Everyone is sexually promiscuous, young children are forced to engage in sexual activity with each other, while love, relationships, and displays of emotion are forbidden. For entertainment, people listen to synthetic music and watch shallow, sensory-based films featuring action and soft porn. No one learns history, and there is no religion. A form of spiritual ritual involves Isis Cult-like drug fuelled orgies. The characters are named after communists Lenin, Marx and Trotsky, and industrialist Ford, representing two arms of the same dialectic (Communism and Capitalism) that led to the Final Revolution that this book describes.[216] *Brave New World* also notably references Napoleon, Darwin, and the Rothschilds. The citizens are regenerated by drugs, voluntarily euthanised in mass crematoriums with the aid of drugs, and their dead bodies are turned into fertiliser as their final act of servitude to the collective.

UNITED NATIONS: CHILD SEX TRAFFICKING FRONT

The UN is a front for child sex trafficking. To illustrate:

---

[215] Burrhus Frederic Skinner (1948). *Walden Two.* Hackett Publishing.

[216] Jan Dyer (2018). *Shocking Reality Behind Huxley's Brave New World*, 11 Aug. [jayanalysis.com]

- I attended a 1992 lecture on *Child Abuse and Neglect* at Perth's Princess Margaret Hospital where speaker Freda Briggs stated that police had recently raided United Nation's headquarters in Geneva due to its operating as a child prostitution brothel.
- A 1996 UN study revealed, '*In six out of 12 country studies on sexual exploitation of children in situations of armed conflict prepared for the present report, the arrival of peacekeeping troops has been associated with a rapid rise in child prostitution*.'[217]
- In 2001, UN Peacekeeper Kathryn Bolkovac publicly exposed an elite underage sex trafficking operation in Bosnia involving the UN, US State Department, US Military, and *DynCorp International* (a global private military contractor funded by the US federal government).[218]
- In 2017, investigative journalists revealed, 114 UN Peacekeepers ran a child sex ring in Haiti for a decade but were never imprisoned.[219]

HUXLEY'S UNESCO: its PURPOSE & PHILOSOPHY

Julian Huxley was an evolutionary biologist and president of the *British Eugenics Society.* He founded, and was first Director General of, UNESCO (*United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organisation*) the UN's propaganda arm for implementing cultural revolution. Julian Huxley coined the term 'transhumanism' to describe a philosophical movement that advocates for using technology to enhance human physiology and intellect. Huxley said:

> *I believe in transhumanism: once there are enough people who can truly say that, the human species will be on the threshold of a new kind of existence, as different from ours as ours is from that of Peking man. It will at last be consciously fulfilling its real destiny*.[220]

Huxley's transhumanism is synonymous with Huxley's eugenics:

> *Critics have likened transhumanism to a modern-day version of eugenics, the discredited field of improving the human race through controlled breeding.*[221]

In his 1947 book, *UNESCO: Its Purpose and its Philosophy,* Julian Huxley described his plans for achieving global cultural control.[222] He proposed combating the '*inequality of man and races*' with '*the democratic principles of the dignity, equality and mutual respect of men*.' (This echoes the Freemasonic creed of the French Revolution, 'Liberty, Equality, Fraternity, Solidarity.') Eugenics was his primary tool for achieving equality:

> *…the other primary aim of eugenics should be the raising of the mean of all desirable qualities. While there may be dispute over certain qualities, there can be none over a*

---

[217] United Nations (26 August 1996). *The Impact of Armed Conflict on Children*. UNICEF.

[218] Kathryn Bolkovac & Cari Lynn (2011). *The Whistleblower: Sex Trafficking, Military Contractors, and One Woman's Fight for Justice*. Palgrave Macmillan.

[219] Associated Press (April 13, 2017). *UN child sex ring left victims but no arrests*, Paisley Dodds.

[220] Julian Huxley (1957) Transhumanism. In *New Bottles for New Wine*, 13-17. Chattos & Windus.

[221] J.B. Stewart, M. Goldstein & J. Silver-Greenberg (2019). Jeffrey Epstein Hoped to Seed Human Race With His DNA. *The New York Times*, 31 July.

[222] Julian Huxley (1947). *UNESCO: Its Purpose and its Philosophy,* Public Affairs Press.

> *number of the most important, such as a healthy constitution, a high innate general intelligence, or a special aptitude such as that for mathematics or music.*

Julian Huxley alluded to the Luciferian end goal of radical population reduction by proposing the existence of an optimal population number: '*…there is an optimum range of human population density, and of total population in the world*.' (p.15). Huxley dared not disclose his optimal population figure, which would have exposed the Luciferian plan to (a) preserve a minority of wealthy, healthy, high IQ cult initiates who serve, and are useful to the collective, and (b) annihilation of the 'dead weight.'

> *…the dead weight of genetic stupidity, physical weakness, mental inability, and disease proneness, which already exists in the human species, will prove too great a burden for real progress to be achieved. Thus even though it is quite true that any radical eugenic policy will be for many years politically and psychologically impossible, it will be important for UNESCO to see that the eugenic problem is examined with the greatest care, and that the public mind is informed of the issues at stake so that much that now is unthinkable may at least become thinkable*. (p.21)

Julian Huxley proposed using Communist propaganda to force cultural change upon a reluctant Judeo-Christian society:

> *Taking the techniques of persuasion and information and true propaganda that we have learnt to apply nationally in war, and deliberately bending them to the international tasks of peace, if necessary, utilising them, as Lenin envisaged, to 'overcome the resistance of millions' to desirable change.* (p.60)

On page 12, Huxley emphasised the need for 'provision of birth control facilities.' The term 'birth control' was coined by one of H.G. Well's many mistresses. Besides birth control, Luciferian eugenicist methods of population control include famine, war, unequal distribution of planetary resources, biological warfare, fluoride (an aluminium waste product), GMO and other food contaminates, fracking and other environmental poisoning, vaccination, pharmaceuticals, radiation, crime, sexual promiscuity and sexually transmitted diseases, euthanasia, destruction of heterosexual marriage, divorce, abortion and suicide. Like Julian Huxley said, he would use propaganda to overcome our resistance and make the unthinkable thinkable. The unthinkable slaughter of newborn babies is now thinkable, as the US currently debate the legalisation of 'post-birth' abortion. My childhood abusers called this ritual child sacrifice.

Julian Huxley suggested recruiting artists, critics, historians, anthropologists, divines, theologians, archaeologists, poets, and academics to help introduce a focus on Eastern and primitive indigenous culture to the West. He said, 'the development of culture in the various regions of the Orient must receive equal attention to that paid to its Western growth.' This cultural embracement would include Eastern and primitive pagan, shamanic, witchcraft, occultic, spiritual, and sexual practices.

On page 13, Julian Huxley blatantly revealed the end goal of 'evolutionary progress' is a 'one world sovereignty' that opposes Christianity:

> *…two opposing philosophies of life confront each other from the West and from the East… You may categorise the two philosophies…as individualism versus collectivism; or as the American versus the Russian way of life; or as capitalism versus communism; or as Christianity versus Marxism.*[223]

Julian Huxley's UNESCO document proposed the same totalitarian regime led by the 'Lawless One' described in Revelation. Communism opposes the Rule of Law. The Lawless One beheads dissenters who refuse to comply with the Luciferian New World Order. The coming regime will mandate child sacrifice and mandated DNA-altering vaccinations which switch off the death gene and qualify recipients for eternal hellfire. Huxley insinuates what the Bible clearly states, that people will be forced to choose between two ways of life: Christian versus atheistic, Luciferian communism.

JULIAN HUXLEY: WHO

The *World Health Organisation* (WHO) is the UN's public health branch. Julian Huxley, Margaret Mead (anthropologist), and three pioneers in development psychology - John Bowlby, Erick Erikson, and Jean Piaget - attended monthly WHO meetings in Geneva (1953-56) to discuss child psychobiology. The proceedings were published by *Tavistock,* the UK's mind control research centre. John Bowlby also attended similar weekly meetings at the Tavistock Clinic. Four *Tavistock Study Groups* (held in 1959, 1961, 1963 and 1965) were called 'Ciba-symposia' because they were funded and arranged by the Swiss 'Ciba' foundation (renamed 'Novartis'). Ciba published a journal called *Ciba Symposia.* The 1947 edition of the journal tellingly featured three articles about 'Early Psychotherapy' - *Psychotherapeutic aspects of Shamanism*, *Egyptian Psychotherapy*, and *Psychotherapy in the Greek and Roman World*.[224]

Aldous Huxley's role as US MK-ULTRA coordinator is indicated by his correspondence with MK-ULTRA doctors. For instance, Colgate University Library possesses George Estabrooks' unpublished documents pertaining to his MK-ULTRA research. A '1962' file contains correspondence between Estabrooks and Milton, Erickson, Martin Orne, and Aldous Huxley.

John Bowlby (Attachment Theory pioneer) and Aldous Huxley exposed their intentions for humankind during correspondence regarding Bowlby's ape attachment experiments. Bowlby modified the relationship between the mother ape and her baby which resulted in a retarded baby chimp. Huxley praised this result as an example of the ability to destroy the human genetic code.

Aldous Huxley revealed his association with Louis Jolyon West in a letter to Timothy Leary:

> *I also spoke briefly to Dr Joly West (prof. of psychiatry at U. of Oklahoma medical School), who told me that he had done a lot of work in sensory deprivation, using improved versions of John Lilly's techniques. Interesting visionary results – but I didn't have time to hear the details*.[225]

---

[223] Julian Huxley (1947). *UNESCO: Its Purpose and its Philosophy,* 61. Public Affairs Press.

[224] Ciba Symposia (1947). *Early Psychotherapy*. 9:1-2, April-May, 609-632.

[225] Michael Horowitz & Cynthia Palmer (eds) (1977). *Moksha: Aldous Huxley's Classic Writings on Psychedelics and the Visionary Experience*, 186. Stonehill.

SEEMINGLY CONTENDING CULTS

Aldous Huxley directed society toward revolution against both man and God via his introduction of the 1960s counterculture based on the Isis and Dionysian Cults. The ancient Egyptian oligarchies organized themselves into priesthoods and created numerous *seemingly contending* pagan cults. This Hegelian-Dialectic approach was emulated by the Huxley-Wedgewood family in Britain, the USA and Australia. Hence the emergence of many interrelated occultic groups which my Sydney perpetrators belonged to.

All secret societies stem from the ancient mystery religions. Greco-Roman mystery religions were cults that required secret initiation and ritual practice. It was strictly forbidden to reveal the practises to outsiders. All mystery religions in turn stem from Babylonian Luciferianism, hence all secret societies practice Luciferianism at their top levels. Luciferianism, the religion of the world's wealthiest families, includes pedophilia and child murder as religious ritual. The secret services (including the CIA, Mossad, MI6 and ASIO) operate as their private police force, and most secret service members are themselves Luciferian pedophiles. Thus, Omaha Nebraska child trafficking victims were dropped at Offutt Airforce Base to be raped by CIA pedophile staff.

CHILDREN OF THE SUN

Edward Bulwer-Lytton developed the secret Dionysian cult *Children of the Sun* into which the children of the British Round Table Society were initiated. Dionysus (Roman Bacchus) was the Ancient Greek god of wine, fertility, ritual madness, religious ecstasy, and theatre. Cult members engaged in perverted, drug-fuelled sexual orgies involving bestiality. Initiates included Aldous Huxley, his gay lover D.H. Lawrence, Aleister Crowley, T.S. Elliott, and Oswald Mosley (a fascist photographed while given the 'heil Hitler' salute, who had sex with his stepmother plus sister-in-law).

HERMETIC ORDER OF THE GOLDEN DAWN

Opium addict Aleister Crowley was a British Intelligence agent and 33° Freemason. Crowley founded the *Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn* (HOGD) in 1886. An Isis-Urania cult, HOGD was based on the 1877 manuscript '*Isis Unveiled*' in which Russian Luciferian Helena P. Blavatsky called for the British aristocracy to organize themselves into an Isis Priesthood resembling the Ancient Egyptians. Blavatsky wrote:

> *And now it stands proven that Satan, or the Red Fiery Dragon… Lucifer, or 'Light-Bearer,' is in us: it is our Mind—our tempter and Redeemer, our intelligent liberator and Saviour from pure animalism.*
>
> *[One] of the most hidden secrets…involves the so-called fall of Angels. Satan and his rebellious host…will thus prove to have…become the direct Saviours and Creators of divine man… Thus Satan, once he ceases to be viewed in the superstitious spirit of the church, grows into the grandiose image… It is Satan who is the God of our planet and the only God. Satan (or Lucifer) represents…the Centrifugal Energy of the Universe… this ever-living symbol of self-sacrifice for the intellectual independence of humanity.*[226]

---

[226] Helena Petrovna Blavatsky (1988). *The Secret Doctrine*, 2, 513, Theosophical University Press.

The 'fall of Angels' Blavatsky referred to were documented in the *Book of Enoch*, which was found among the Dead Sea Scrolls, included within the Ethiopian Bible, and referenced in the Biblical book of Jude:

> *8:1. And Azâzêl taught men to make swords, and knives, and shields, and breastplates, and made known to them the metals of the earth and the art of working them, and bracelets, and ornaments, and the use of antimony, and the beautifying of the eyelids, and all kinds of costly stones, and all colouring tinctures.*
>
> *2. And there arose much godlessness, and they committed fornication, and they were led astray, and became corrupt in all their ways. Semjâzâ taught enchantments, and root-cuttings, Armârôs the resolving of enchantments, Barâqîjâl, taught astrology, Kôkabêl the constellations, Ezêqêêl the knowledge of the clouds, Araqiêl the signs of the earth, Shamsiêl the signs of the sun, and Sariêl the course of the moon. And as men perished, they cried, and their cry went up to heaven…*

…

> *9:1. And then Michael, Uriel, Raphael, and Gabriel looked down from heaven and saw much blood being shed upon the earth, and all lawlessness being wrought upon the earth… 6. Thou sees what Azâzêl hath done, who hath taught all unrighteousness on earth and revealed the eternal secrets which were preserved in heaven, which men were striving to learn… 8. And they have gone to the daughters of men upon the earth, and have slept with the women, and have defiled themselves, and revealed to them all kinds of sins. 9. And the women have borne giants, and the whole earth has thereby been filled with blood and unrighteousness.*

…

> *10:8. And the whole earth has been corrupted through the works that were taught by Azâzêl: to him ascribe all sin.*

According to a key Hermetic text, 'The legends of the Fallen Angels have a basis in actual fact, as all advanced occultists know.'[227] The HOGD passed on the 'eternal secrets' revealed by Azazel. 'Hermetic' refers to Hermes/Thoth. Egyptian Thoth was the god of law, magic, philosophy, religion, science, and writing. Thoth taught humans geometry, architecture, the calendar, and the concepts of space and time. The HODG teach esoteric philosophy based on the Hermetic Qabalah, astrology, tarot divination, geomancy, astral travel, magic/science classical elements (Earth, Water, Air, Fire, Ether) and alchemy (aka, transhumanism, genetic engineering, cloning, gene splicing, chimera manufacturing). The same subject areas were explored and developed by scientists tied to Nazism, NASA, JASON, DARPA, DoD, CERN, Dulce, Area 51, Pine Gap, and ANSTO.

HOGD co-founders William Butler Yeats, William Westcott, and several other Bulwer-Lytton protégés were Freemasons. Westcott was also Chief of England's Rosicrucian Society and a Theosophist. Notable HOGD initiates included Aldous Huxley, Charles Henry Allan Bennett (who introduced Buddhism to the West), plus occult-fantasy authors J.R.R. Tolkein and C.S. Lewis. H.G. Wells introduced Aldous Huxley to Aleister Crowley, who introduced Aldous to psychedelic drugs in 1929. The HOGD and its offshoots were involved with the Nazis and the British Royal family. The 'heil Hitler' salute, which the British Royals were filmed teaching to young princesses Elizabeth and Margaret, was a HOGD ritual sign.

---

[227] The Kybalion (1908). Yogi Publication Society, Chicago, p.133.

Hermetic Principle of Vibration[228]

According to the Hermetic Principle of Vibration, 'differences between different manifestations of Matter, Energy, Mind, and even Spirit, result largely from varying rates of Vibration,' and 'Every thought, emotion or mental state has its corresponding rate and mode of vibration.' This Principle 'was enunciated thousands of years ago, by the Masters of Ancient Egypt.' 'An understanding of this Principle, with the appropriate formulas, enables Hermetic students to control their own mental vibrations as well as those of others.' This principle of vibration was researched under Project MK-ULTRA and applied under MK-DELTA, by Hermetic psychologists and scientists:

> *The Hermetists were the original alchemists, astrologists and psychologists, Hermes having been the founder of these schools of thought. From astrology has grown modern astronomy; from alchemy has grown modern chemistry; from the mystic psychology has grown the modern psychology of the schools.*

THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

Emma Hardinge Britten (1823 - 1899) was a member of the more senior *Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor* and one of 17 occultists who attended the Theosophical Society's founding meeting at Blavatsky's New York home on 7 September 1875. Britten wrote:

> *The persons I came into contact with were representatives of many other countries than Great Britain. They formed one of a number of secret societies…They claimed that alchemy, medieval Rosicrucianism, and modern Freemasonry were offshoots of the original Cabala, and during the last 150 years new associations had been formed, and the parties who had introduced me into their arcanum were a society in affiliation with many others then in existence in many countries… The arts necessary for study to the practical occultist are…a knowledge of the qualities of drugs, vapours, minerals, electricity, perfumes, fumigations, and all kinds of anaesthetics.*[229]

Blavatsky, Britten and their secret society colleagues practised Ancient Egyptian magic arts in which priests evoke and employ 'the spirits of the elements.' Hence Freemason lodges are decorated in Ancient Egyptian paraphernalia. In *Art Magic*, Britten wrote of using initiation rituals and drug/meditation-induced altered states of consciousness to channel, summon and control spirits.

> *Among the emblems most commonly seen in this connection are the following: the phallus, the lingam, the triangle, all the different methods of exhibiting the cross, the serpent with its tail in its mouth, and a vast number of such geometrical signs as include the triangle, cross and circle*.[230]

---

[228] Ibid, pp.30, 146.

[229] Emma Hardinge Britten (1887). *The Two Worlds*, 18 November, 3-5

[230] Emma Hardinge Britten (1876). *Art Magic*, 57, section 5, New York.

The lingam is used to worship Shiva (aka Isis, Ishtar, Easter, Queen of Heaven, Roman Catholic Mary). The 'Ishtar-lingam' is an egg-shaped stone. The cross is an occultic symbol, since the Bible states Jesus Christ was in fact nailed to a *living tree*. Luciferians recognise the cross, Christmas, Easter, Christmas cakes, panettone, hot-cross buns, Sunday pagan temple worship, as pagan concepts. The serpent with its tail in its mouth is the Ouroboros, which represents eternal rebirth, or transhumanist resurrection, a reference to the Luciferian pursuit of eternal life via an alternative means rather than bodily transformation through belief in Jesus Christ.

ANTHROPOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

L. Frank Baum (*Wonderful Wizard of Oz* author) was in the *Theosophical Society*. Close friends J.R.R. Tolkein (*Lord of the Rings*) and C.S. Lewis (*The Lion, Witch and the Wardrobe*) were HOGD members. In his autobiography, C.S. Lewis credited his enduring 'passion for the occult' to a school mistress who introduced him to the 'Anglo-American Occultist tradition' based on 'Theosophy, Rosicrucianism, Spiritualism.' Lewis and Tolkien were in the Oxford reading group 'The Inklings' with HOGD member Charles Williams.

The Oxford Inklings, including C.S. Lewis and J.R.R Tolkien, were influenced by German Luciferian Rudolf Steiner who created a Theosophical Society offshoot which he called the *Anthroposophical Society*. Senior Nazi Rudolph Hess strongly supported Rudolf Steiner whose writings reflect his eugenicist philosophy:

> *If the blondes and blue-eyed people die out, the human race will become increasingly dense… Blonde hair actually bestows intelligence.*[231]

The Anthroposophical Society became the fastest growing cult in post-war Germany.[232] *Anthroposophy* means 'human wisdom.' Rudolph Steiner created counter-cultural movements within architecture, farming (biodynamics) and education. His 'Waldorf' schools are located internationally including in Australia. The Steiner school curriculum features sacred geometry, clairvoyance, alchemy, necromancy, reincarnation, karma, and 'Ahriman' of Mithraism. Steiner schools teach:

- 'Christ' is the sun god,
- Lucifer has good qualities,
- The actual existence of pagan gods including Thor and Zeus,
- The origins of Atlantis
- The Aryans 'Root Race' of fallen angels, as aspired to by Blavatsky and Hitler, and described in Edward Bulwer Lyon's *Vril: The Power of the Coming Race* (1871).

ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS [233]

Emma Hardinge Britten and Aleister Crowley helped found *Thelema* and the *Ordo Templi Orientis* (aka, OTO, *Hermetic Brotherhood of Light*, *Order of the Temple of the East*, or *Order of Oriental Templars*).

---

[231] Rudolf Steiner 91981). *Health and Illness*, Vol.1. Anthroposophic Press, pp.85-6.

[232] Martin Gardner (1957). *Fads and Fallacies in the name of Science*. Dover, pp.168-9.

[233] Gregory Tillett, History of the OTO, Wentworth Building, University of Sydney.

> *The Ordo Templi Orientis was established in 1895, in part as a Western interpretation of certain Oriental occult teachings, and in part as a restoration of a tradition which had been largely forgotten in the West. Its original members were Freemasons, and in 1902 the authority of a Masonic Rite was conferred upon them for the establishment of a Grand Lodge in Berlin within which the Grades of the O.T.O. would be worked.*
>
> *The Founders of that Grand Lodge were Carl Kellner, Franz Hartmann and Heinrich Klein. The Grand Lodge was formally constituted on January 22nd, 1906, and this constitution was revised on January 22nd, 1917. National Grand Lodges were established for Germany (including Germany, Austria and Switzerland), and later for France (1908), the Slavonic Countries (1912) and Great Britain (1912).*
>
> *Amongst the eminent figures who were, at one time, associated with the work of the Order were Gerard Encausse ('Papus'), Dr Rudolf Steiner, and Dr R.W. Felkin. Following the death of the first Outer Head of the Order, Carl Kellner, in 1905, Theodor Reuss became the second Outer Head. During his period in office there was a rapid, and not altogether properly administered, expansion in the Order. It was Reuss who, in 1911, admitted Aleister Crowley to the Order and, in 1912, appointed him head of the Order for Great Britain. Crowley effectively took over the pre-existing traditions of the Order and shaped them to suit his own interests...*
>
> *Crowley revised and rewrote the rituals of the Order, and his work attracted considerable notoriety. It is from the Crowleyan version of the Order that virtually all modern claimants to the title, tradition or working of the Order come, and to which virtually all who write about the Order refer.*

HUXLEY'S 1960s COUNTERCULTURE

Via the Hofjuden, the British Royals assassinated or deposed every world leader who threatened their agenda:

- President Lincoln ruined Britain's slave cotton trade, which was pivotal to their opium trade,
- President Kennedy threatened to destroy the Hofjuden-owned CIA and Federal Reserve,
- President Nixon directed his 'War on Drugs' at the Hofjuden banks, and
- PM Gough Whitlam established the investigation into Australia's intelligence agencies (*First Hope Commission*, 1974 to 1977), threatened to out the CIA agents in Australia, and refused to renew the CIA's lease on Pine Gap.

The Rothschild family and their New York Jewish banking cousins, the Lehmans, established themselves in the USA via the pre-Civil War cotton and slave trade. These families supported Britain's successful efforts to recapture the USA which they lost during the Confederate War, via the drug/rock counterculture. Counterculture literally meant 'anti-culture' - the intentional destruction of the existing Judeo-Christian culture and replacing it with Luciferian culture. British Intelligence officer Aldous Huxley coordinated the 1960s drug-rock counterculture including the introduction of psychedelics to the USA.

Just when you thought you knew the 60s…

Aldous Huxley moved to the USA in 1937 and remained there for WW2. Aldous and pedophile Christopher Isherwood were employed as Hollywood script writers for Warner Brothers, MGM, and Walt Disney studios. During the late 1930s to 1940s, Huxley and Isherwood laid the foundation for the 1960s drug-rock counterculture by recruiting people into the Isis Cults that Huxley's mentors (Bulwer-Lytton, Blavatsky, and Crowley) had formed while stationed in India. Huxley founded multiple Isis Cults in southern California and the San Francisco area, while Isherwood translated and propagated ancient Zen Buddhist documents that inspired Zen-mystical cults.

The 1960s counterculture was a complete resurrection of the Isis and Dionysian cults. The MK-ULTRA puppeteers rebranded the *Isis Cross* as the famous peace symbol of the '60s counterculture. The 1960s hippies played Dionysian Cult instruments including 'Pan' pipes, tambourines and skin drums. The *Rite of Isis* incantations, drum beating, dances, repetitive movements (like throwing the head back), and hallucinatory substances including mescal and hashish, created the dissociative trance state combined with hallucinations considered to be the visitation of the gods (spiritual possession). Hippies thought they were 'becoming one' with the goddess Mother Earth. Ancient cult drugs were sacred and their knowledge, preparation and gathering were secret. The Isis drug and dance ritual were reproduced at '60s CIA events like Woodstock. The sex orgies of the Isis Cult became the 'free love' hippie orgies of the 'sexual revolution.' Both involved liberation from civilization's rules and constraints and featured a return to primordial nature Mother Earth and animalistic sexual behaviour. The ancient cults featured sex with animals.

In 1952, Aldous Huxley accompanied his family doctor, Humphrey Osmond, to the USA. Huxley recruited Osmond to conduct research for CIA Director Allen Dulles' MK-ULTRA covert LSD experiment. Osmond wrote *Schizophrenia: A New Approach* in which he said mescaline (used in ancient Egyptian and Indian pagan rituals) produced a psychotic state identical in all clinical respects to schizophrenia, and so experimentation with hallucinogenic drugs may be key to developing a cure. In his book '*The Doors of Perception'* Huxley claimed hallucinogenic drugs 'expand consciousness.'

In California, Huxley recruited to MK-ULTRA individuals who were initially attracted to the Isis Cults he founded during his previous USA visit, including Alan Watts and anthropologist Gregory Bateson (Margaret Mead's husband). Watts became a nationwide Zen Buddhist cult guru who founded the *Pacifica Foundation*, a CIA cut-out which sponsored two radio stations used to introduce the 'Liverpool Sound' to the USA, namely Rolling Stones, Animals, and The Beatles, followed by 'acid rock' and fascist 'punk rock.' The Beatles, who featured Aleister Crowley on their album cover, took copious drugs and consulted their Indian guru, and so recruited a generation of youth to Huxley's Dionysiac counterculture.

Gregory Bateson became the director of a MK-ULTRA LSD experiment at Palo Alto VA Hospital in which patients were brainwashed into becoming 'psychedelic' Isis Cult hippies. One patient, Ken Kesey, completed *One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest* three years after he was subjected to Bateson's LSD experiments. Kesey then assembled a group who administered LSD to unsuspecting victims lured to the Haight-Ashbury district of San Francisco via Scott McKenzie's counterculture song, 'San Francisco.' Huxley and Bateson established a 'free clinic' in the area to treat the subsequent addicts. This clinic paralleled a project at the Tavistock Institute, the psychological warfare agency for British Secret Intelligence.

In 1960, Aldous Huxley gathered a Harvard LSD team comprised of Humphrey Osmond, Alan Watts, Timothy Leary, and Richard Alpert. Timothy Leary wrote *The Psychedelic Experience* based on the Ancient Tibetan *Book of the Dead,* to promote LSD as 'consciousness expanding.'

ESALEN

Aldous Huxley founding the Esalen Institute in Big Sur, California, in 1962 via Stanford graduates Michael Murphy and Dick Price, to explore what Aldous called 'human potentialities' (i.e., human consciousness). Esalen became headquarters of Huxley's counterculture movement, and led the *New Age* movement, Humanistic Psychology, and Gestalt Psychotherapy. Esalen teachers included Aldous Huxley, Arnold Toynbee, Timothy Leary, Carl Rogers, B.F. Skinner, Joan Baez, Ken Kesey, John C. Lilly, Rollo May, Abraham Maslow, Erik Erikson, and Deepak Chopra. Fritz Perls was an Esalen resident scholar for five years. In its early days, the Esalen facility was guarded by a gun-wielding Hunter S. Thompson who belonged to a child pornography ring linked to Bohemian Grove during the 1980s. Thompson was offered $100,000 to make child porn snuff films during Luciferian rituals at Bohemian Grove.[234]

LAUREL CANYON

Dave McGowan[235] researched Laurel Canyon, an isolated community hidden in the Hollywood hills that manufactured the 'Rock Star' musicians, singers and songwriters of the 1960s Counterculture:

- Frank Zappa
- Gram Parsons
- The Mamas & the Papas
- Buffalo Springfield
- The Byrds
- The Monkees
- Steppenwolf
- Crosby, Stills & Nash
- Neil Young
- Alice Cooper
- Jimi Hendrix
- Charles Manson.

Major record labels suddenly signed these unknown musicians, provided them with musical equipment, recording studios, and session musicians, and recorded, mixed, arranged, released, and promoted their albums.

Most of these musicians came from Military Intelligence families:

- **Frank Zappa**'s father was a chemical warfare specialist at Edgewood Arsenal (home to MK-ULTRA's biowarfare program) who later did classified work for Military Intelligence at Edwards Air Force Base. Zappa's manager, Herb Cohen, was a former US Marine who spent 1961 in the Congo, supplying arms to Lumumba. Frank Zappa's wife Gail (nee Adelaide Sloatman) came from a family of Naval officers. Her father worked on classified nuclear weapons research for the US Navy. Gail attended a

---

[234] John DeCamp (1992). *The Franklin Cover-up*. AWT.

[235] Dave McGowan (2008). *Inside The LC: The Strange but Mostly True Story of Laurel Canyon and the Birth of the Hippie Generation*.

Naval kindergarten with Jim Morrison (The Doors), and high school with John Phillips and Cass Elliott. She later worked as a secretary for the Office of Naval Research and Development.
- Jim Morrison's father commanded the fleet during the Gulf of Tonkin incident (false flag) that led to an escalation of the Vietnam War.
- John Phillips wrote 'San Francisco (Be Sure to Wear Flowers in Your Hair)' which lured teen runaways to the MK-ULTRA acid project in Haight-Asbury. His father was a US Marine Corp officer, and his sister worked at the Pentagon. Phillips attended elite military schools and dropped out of Annapolis Naval Academy before marrying the daughter of an intelligence operative (a descendent of President John Adams) who worked for the Pentagon. Prior to his role as a CIA musician, Phillips was in Havana, Cuba, for the Cuban Revolution.
- Stephen Stills (Crosby, Stills & Nash) was educated at schools on military bases and at elite military academies before allegedly serving a tour of Vietnam.
- David Crosby is the son of an Annapolis graduate and WWII Military Intelligence officer. His family history includes senior politicians, judiciary, military and high-ranking Freemasons.
- Jackson Browne also stemmed from a career military family. His father was likely OSS.
- Mike Nesmith (Monkees) and Cory Wells (Three Dog Night) were in the US Air Force. Gram Parsons (The Byrds) was the son of an Air Force officer. Nesmith and Parsons were heirs to old money.

Laurel Canyon was linked to numerous untimely and questionable deaths of stars, many of whom died on significant satanic ritual dates, most notably Charles Manson's cult butchering of pedophile Roman Polanski's pregnant wife Sharon Tate.

CIA CULT CUT-OUTS

The CIA began using cult cut-outs to conceal their MK-ULTRA mind control activities, from 1963 onwards. The CIA started new cults or infiltrated existing cults as part of their *Occultism in High Places* project.[236] The CIA developed numerous cults during the 1960s hippie movement centred in California. The CIA's use of cults for social control experimentation resulted in famous group murders and mass suicides.

OTO LODGES

OTO Agape Lodge in Pasadena, CA was founded by Satanist Jack Parsons, the rocket scientist who worked with Nazi Von Braun, and who co-designed the Pentagon's occultic shape. Aleister Crowley highly influenced Parsons to become high priest in this, the USA's first OTO lodge.

Order of the Temple of Astarte (OTA), also founded in Pasadena CA, practised Hermetic magic. In 1973, Louis Tackwood told journalist Donald Freed the OTA were a 'devil-worshipping cult' and on the LA Police Department payroll.

Solar Lodge of the OTO (aka *Riverside Lodge of the OTO*) in San Bernardino, CA, was linked to drug trafficking, blood drinking, child rape and murder. Founding lodge members were found guilty of the ‘Boy in the Box’ case featuring a six-year-old boy chained for 56 hot summer days in a shipping container in the desert.[237] Charles Manson, who slaughtered pedophile Roman Polanski’s wife Sharon Tate, belonged to this OTO lodge.

---

[236] Miles Copeland (1989). *The Game Player.* Aurum Press. 176-177.

Order of the Solar Temple (OTS) mixed Thelema, Rosicrucianism, Freemasonry, Ufology, and New Age philosophy. The OTS established lodges internationally including in Australia and Canada. The Lodges featured altars, rituals and robes. In October 1994, a three-month-old baby was stabbed to death with a stake at the Quebec OTS lodge. Immediately following this, 15 leaders ‘suicided’ with poison and 38 members were murdered by various means at OTS lodges in Switzerland. In December 1995, 15 people were found dead in the French OTS lodge. In March 1997, five OTS members were found dead in Quebec, while two children of one of the dead couples were found heavily drugged.

Jonestown

The OTS mass deaths mimicked the assassinations the CIA conducted to cover up their Jonestown MK-ULTRA experiment. The Jonestown experiment was conceived, staffed and financed by Lawrence Laird Layton (University of California lecturer, former Manhattan Project chemist, and early 1950s head of the Army’s chemical warfare research division). His son Larry Layton led the Jonestown death squad that murdered Congressman Leo Ryan who was in Guyana to investigate the CIA’s formation of cults.

Waco

Jonestown was a step toward the massive 1993 psychological operation known as Waco, Texas. The US government’s torture and assassination of innocent women and children began by shooting dead a blonde preschool boy sent to the front door waving a white surrender flag. Victims were mass subjected to sleep deprivation via flood lighting, plus amplified loops of screeching rabbits and Nancy Sinatra threatening ‘*these boots are gonna walk all over you!*’ FBI agents (Bush Senior’s former bodyguards) were filmed being executed by their own men during the exercise. Waco husbands and fathers who rushed home from work and tried to enter the compound were shot dead climbing the fence. Finally, the government blocked all compound exits with flame-throwing tanks that incinerated and flattened the children they were supposedly there to rescue. The US public swallowed the official explanation that these crimes against humanity were committed to rescue abused cult victims.

Scientology

Before founding Scientology, L. Ron Hubbard closely associated with Satanist and OTO high priest Jack Parsons. Together they performed a ‘Babalon Working’ ritual aimed at manifesting the Anti-Christ. Historical records stored at Scientology’s New York headquarters contain letters between Jack Parsons and Aleister Crowley, in which Parsons wrote (1946):

> *About three months ago I met Capt. L. Ron Hubbard, a writer and explorer of whom I had known for some time. Although he has no formal training in Magick he has an extraordinary amount of experience and understanding in the field. From some of his experiences I deduce he is direct touch with some higher intelligence, possibly his Guardian Angel. He is the most Thelemic person I have ever met and is in complete*

---

[237] Frater Shiva (2007). *Inside Solar Lodge - Outside the Law*. Teitan Press.

> *accord with our own principles. He is also interested in establishing the New Aeon, but for cogent reasons I have not introduced him to the Lodge.*

L. Ron Hubbard based Scientology on Aleister Crowley's black magic:

> *The one super-secret sentence that Scientology is built on is: 'Do as thou wilt. That is the whole of the law.' It also comes from the black magic, from Aleister Crowley. It means that you are a law unto yourself, that you are above the law, that you create your own law. You are above any other human considerations.*

Capt. L. Ron Hubbard had links to the Office of Naval Intelligence, and MK-ULTRA. Hubbard participated in CIA drug experiments at St. Elizabeth's Hospital in Washington DC. Miles Copeland (CIA Case Officer) said CIA operative Bob Mandelstam used Scientology as a front for his covert *Occultism in High Places* scheme.[238]

The Orange People

This sex cult was based on Tantra, Taoism and Hinduism. Led by Indian guru Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh, the CIA-created cult established a large following in Australia before moving the operation to Oregon.

> *In 1985 the Portland Oregonian published a 36-part, book-length series linking the cult to opium trafficking, prostitution, money laundering, arson, slave labour, mass poisonings, illegal wiretaps and the stockpiling of guns and biochemical warfare weapons. The year-long Oregonian investigation revealed cult ties to CIA-trained mercenaries in El Salvador and the Far East. Domestically, Rajneesh's secret police force worked with Agency operatives.*[239]

The Family International

The 'Children of God' group was CIA created in 1968. The pedophile cult produced comic books instructions for 'flirty fishing' – i.e., child rape. Cult parents were encouraged to have sex with their own children. A raid on the cult's Argentinian compound produced videos of child pornography and Satanic Ritual Abuse. An Australian offshoot, 'The Family,' was a MK-ULTRA eugenicist experiment which Julian Assange's mother married into. The following chapter discusses the Australian CIA cults.

* * *

---

[238] Miles Copeland (1989). *The Game Player: The confessions of the CIA's original political operative.* Aurum Press.

[239] Alex Constantine (1995). *Psychic Dictatorship in the USA*. Feral House.

MK-ULTRA in Australia

> *…it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All-Highest?*
>
> - George Hunter White

The CIA coined the term 'conspiracy theory' to discredit whistle-blowers like me. Project MK-ULTRA is conspiracy fact. Irrefutable evidence of its existence sits in the US Library of Congress in a document titled:

> *Project MKULTRA, the CIA's Program of Research in Behavioural Modification, Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources United States Senate Ninety-Fifth Congress First Session, August 3, 1977.*

According to this document, MK-ULTRA was an umbrella project for CIA-funded subprojects conducted in respected government and private institutions. Experiments conducted at universities, hospitals, prisons, and research facilities used drugs, hypnosis, electric shock, psychology, psychiatry, radiation, harassment substances, and paramilitary devices and materials, to manipulate human behaviour.

The committee hearing was a whitewash. MK-ULTRA was far more sinister than the public were told. The following facts remain hidden from public understanding:

- Doctors and scientists, including the pioneers of psychology and psychiatry, routinely tortured, raped, and murdered children whom the CIA kidnapped and trafficked for Project MK-ULTRA.
- In the early 1970s, Australia became the main child recruitment location after Project MK-ULTRA's US operation was publicly exposed.
- The Australian and US military and Intelligence services collaborated to train Australian DELTA child soldiers for special operations.

EVIDENCE MK-ULTRA USED CHILDREN

Evidence that MK-ULTRA doctors experimented on children is sparse. Here are three documented cases:

1. Robbers Cave Experiment

In 1953, Muzafer Sherif (a suspected Communist) conducted his initial MK-ULTRA experiment at Middle Grove in upstate New York, with Rockefeller Foundation funding.[240] Sherif recruited underprivileged 11-year-old boys from poor families with offers of a free summer camp. He deceived the parents and did not inform them or their children they were being used as subjects for a psychological experiment. The aim of the experiment was to demonstrate that people could be taught to hate, and friends could become enemies. Sherif's theory was that we are shaped by the group that were members of, and if you change the way groups operate, you can alter the way people feel and behave. Sherif pitted two peaceful groups of children against each other and used sabotage and provocation to incite the boys to turn on each other. His first experiment failed. His second, successful experiment was conducted in 1954 at Robbers Cave in Oklahoma using boys selected based on observations of their school playground behaviour. The subjects were divided into two groups: rebellious types versus placid types who prayed. The latter group were traumatised by the unbridled behaviour of the rebellious group. The subjects were not debriefed afterwards, and some were seemingly permanently detrimentally impacted.

---

[240] David Shariatmadari (2018). A real-life Lord of the Flies: the troubling legacy of the Robbers cave experiment. *The* Guardian, 16 April.

2. Martin Orne & John Gittinger Named to Presidential Committee

The *Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments* was established in 1994 to investigate the US government's unethical human radiation experiments. On March 15, 1995, New Orleans trauma therapist Valerie B. Wolf and her clients, Claudia S. Mullen and Chris deNicola Ebner appeared before the Advisory Committee in Washington, D.C. to testify on the connection between the Radiation Experiments and Mind Control Experimentation on Children. Wolf submitted:

> *Generally, it appears that therapists across the country are finding clients who have been subjected to mind control techniques. The consistency of their stories about the purpose of the mind control and torture techniques, such as electric shock, use of hallucinogens, sensory deprivation, spinning, hypnosis, dislocation of limbs and sexual abuse is remarkable. There is almost nothing published on this aspect of mind control used with children, and these clients come from all over the country, having had no contact with each other… It needs to be made clear that people have remembered these names and events spontaneously with free recall and without the use of any memory-retrievable techniques, such as hypnosis.*

Claudia S. Mullen testified:

> *Between the years of 1957 and 1984, I became a pawn in a government scheme whose ultimate goal was mind control and to create the 'perfect spy' — all through the use of chemicals, radiation, drugs, hypnosis, electric shock, isolation in tubs of water, sleep deprivation, brainwashing and verbal, physical, emotional and sexual abuse. In 1958, I was to be tested, they told me, by some important doctors coming from a place called the 'Society' (the Human Ecology Society).* [aka, Human Ecology Fund]
>
> …
>
> *A Dr John Gittinger tested me, and Dr [Ewan] Cameron gave me the shocks and Dr Greene the x-rays. Then, I was told by Sid Gottlieb I was 'ripe for the big A,' meaning 'Artichoke.'… The next year, I was sent to a place in Maryland called Deep Creek Cabins to learn how to 'sexually please men.' Also, I was taught how to coerce them into talking about themselves. It was Richard Helms (Deputy Director of the CIA), Dr Gottlieb, Captain George White and Morse Allen who all planned on filming as many high government and agency officials and heads of academic institutions and foundations as possible, so later, when the funding for mind control and radiation started to dwindle, then the projects would continue — at any cost. I was to become a regular little 'spy' for them after that summer, eventually entrapping many unwitting men, including themselves, all with the use of a hidden camera. I was only nine when this kind of sexual humiliation began.* [Martin Orne was the only pedophile not filmed.]

> …
> *Another time, I heard Dr Martin Orne, who was the Director of the Scientific Office, and later the Institute for Experimental Research, state that in order to keep more funding coming from different sources for the radiation and mind control projects, he suggested stepping up the amounts of all the 'stressors' used and also the blackmail portion of the experiments. He said, 'It needed to be done faster, then get rid of the subjects, as it was asking for 'us' to come back and haunt them by remembering.'*

3. Josef Mengele & Ewan Cameron Killed Kids in Catholic Montreal

In 1997, Quebec Ombudsman Daniel Jacoby reported on his findings regarding the Duplessis Orphans.[241] His report glossed over multiple witness accounts of orphans being subjected to MK-ULTRA atrocities. In 1944, Quebec Premiere Maurice Duplessis, President Franklin Roosevelt, Prime Minister Winston Churchill, MacKenzie King, and CIA Director Allen Dulles reportedly attended a Quebec Conference to finalise a secret agreement where Quebec's Catholic Orphanage children were given to the British and US military to be used as MK-ULTRA lab rats. Approximately 22,000 orphans were automatically certified mentally ill, to qualify them as subjects for MK-ULTRA research involving electrocution, lobotomy, rape, Deep-Sleep, LSD and other drug experiments at psychiatric facilities including Ewan Cameron's *Allan Memorial Institute*, *Saint Michel Archange Hospital* and *St Jean de Dieu*.

Josef Mengele in Nazi Germany.

Mengele in Saint Michel Archange Hospital's 1949 Yearbook?

The 1949 *Saint Michel Archange Hospital* yearbook contains a photo of what may be 38-year-old Josef Mengele (who disappeared from Germany in 1948) bending down to examine a boy in a wheelchair.[242] Duplessis Orphan Sylvio Albert Day recognised Joseph Mengele performing lethal experiments on children at *St Jean de Dieu* hospital in 1960. Concordia University's student newspaper explains: [243]

> *During his time in power from the mid-1930s to the late 1950s (with one break where the Liberals re-took power), Duplessis transferred power to the Church by extending*

---

[241] Daniel Jacoby (1997). Quebec Ombudsman, in a report to the National Assembly, *The Children of Duplessis: A Time for Solidarity*, St. Foy, 22 January.
[242] http://lunamoth1.blogspot.com/2011/06/dr-mengele-comes-to-quebec-1949.html
[243] Lou Teeluck (2018). The Order of Grey Nuns Facilitated Child Kidnappings, *The Link*, 4 Sept.

> *their responsibilities to include operation of most social services like orphanages. This gave the Church authorization to act as a government-sponsored agency—minus any form of public accountability.*
>
> *At the time, federal funding allocated $0.70 to $1.25 per day, per orphan to the church. If an orphan was mentally disabled, they received $2.50 in subsidies. This precipitated a mass scale process of proliferating 'orphans' and intentionally misdiagnosing them as mentally disabled to qualify for the larger subsidy.*
>
> *In many instances, the children recruited weren't legitimately orphaned. Nuns and priests would travel to low-income neighbourhoods throughout Quebec and Eastern US and convince parents to hand over their children, promising them a better future.*
>
> *Bernard Piché, a doctor who falsely certified the orphans as mentally disabled, admitted to not examining any children in 1999. In a statement, Piché said, 'I did it because the nuns asked me to.'*

…

> *The matching testimonies of the Duplessis orphans being tortured with electro-shock therapy, forcible injections with powerful drugs and other human experimentation raises serious concern that this tragedy was part of MK-Ultra—a US government program which honed torture techniques and had a known human-experimentation centre in McGill University.*
>
> *Sylvio Albert Day, a Duplessis Orphan, says that one of the priests was Josef Mengele, a former Nazi doctor during World War II. Day's job was to transport dead bodies into unmarked graves. Some of these bodies had to be cleaned because in 1942 Quebec law allowed nuns to sell unclaimed bodies to medical schools for $10.*

At *St Jean de Dieu* hospital, Sylvio Day transported approximately 70 dead bodies in three months. That equates to Josef Mengele and his MK-ULTRA doctors murdering one child per workday in a single hospital. Sylvio said the children were as young as 4, their skulls often had holes drilled into them, and one had its brain removed. Bodies not sold to medical schools were placed in cardboard boxes and stacked in mass graves in the 'pigsty' cemetery.

MARTIN ORNE AT SYDNEY UNIVERSITY

CIA psychiatrist and psychologist Martin Theodore Orne conducted MK-ULTRA Subproject 84 at the University of Sydney during a two-month lecture period in 1960. His experiment was jointly funded by the *US Airforce Office of Scientific Research* (grant number AF-AFOSR-88-63) and the *Human Ecology Fund* (HEF) under the project title *Attitude Formation, Decision Matrices*.[244] The HEF also financed Hans Eysenck's Subproject 111 under the same title. Hence subprojects 84 and 111 were related and both influenced Australian operations. The HEF was a Cornell University based CIA cut-out for financing MK-ULTRA activities including Ewen Cameron's crimes at Montreal's *Allen Memorial Institute*.

---

[244] Price, David. (2007). Buying a piece of anthropology Part 1: Human Ecology and unwitting anthropological research for the CIA. *Anthropology Today*. 23, 8-13.

Martin Orne's 1960 visit was sponsored by USEFA (*US Educational Foundation in Australia*), the Australian body of the *Fulbright Scholarship and Lectureship Program*.[245] The CIA used the Fulbright program to insert their agents or contractors into MK-ULTRA subprojects.

University of Sydney Psychology faculty head, Alfred Gordon Hammer, approved Subproject 84. Gordon Hammer (then APS Chair) subsequently spent two sabbaticals in Martin Orne's Philadelphia laboratory during the 1960s and 70s.[246] Leading up to Martin Orne's visit, Gordon Hammer ran a weekly hypnosis seminar attended by University of Sydney students who became major contributors to MK-ULTRA hypnosis research:

- **Frederick Evans**
- **Wendy-Louise Walker**
- **George Singer**
- **Wendy A. Fairfax-Thorn**
- **Jean Jones**
- **Margaret Austin,**
- **Peter Sheehan**
- **Campbell W. Perry**.[247]

In April 1960, four months before Martin Orne visited Sydney, George Hoben Estabrooks invited him to speak at a Colgate College symposium.[248] Estabrooks, father of the Manchurian Candidate, boasted eight years later:

> *The key to creating an effective spy or assassin rests in splitting a man's personality, or creating multi-personality, with the aid of hypnotism. This is not science fiction. This has and is being done. I have done it. It is child's play now to develop a multiple personality through hypnotism.*[249]

Martin Orne's presentation paper was later titled '*Antisocial Behaviour and Hypnosis*.' His experimental objective was to see if hypnotised subjects would carry out dangerous and harmful acts they normally would not. The resultant article, *Social Control in the Psychological Experiment: Antisocial Behaviour & Hypnosis,* published in the *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, was co-authored by Martin Orne and University of Sydney psychology student Frederick J. Evans. The abstract of the 1965 paper reads:

> *Rowland and Young found that hypnotized subjects were willing to carry out such apparently antisocial actions as grasping a dangerous reptile, plunging their hand into concentrated acid, and throwing the acid at an assistant.*[250]

Frederick Evans and Martin Orne subsequently assumed positions at the University of Pennsylvania, the USA's major MK-ULTRA research hub.[251] Australian psychologists Peter W.

---

[245] *The Canberra Times,* 1960. 27 July, 5.

[246] Campbell Perry (2001). Hypnosis in Australia 40 Years Ago: Recollections of Gordon Hammer, Martin Orne, and Philip Sutcliffe. *Australian Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, Nov, 29:2, 83-92. Australian Society of Hypnosis.

[247] Ibid.

[248] Colin Ross (2006). *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*. Manitou Communications.

[249] *Providence Evening Bulletin* (1968). 'To Sleep; Perchance to Kill?' Colgate University Archives, 13 May.

[250] F.J. Evans & M.T. (1965). Social Control in the Psychological Experiment: Antisocial Behaviour & Hypnosis, *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*. 1, 189-200.

[251] John F. Kihlstrom (2006). Frederick J. Evans, *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 49:1, 3-4.

Sheehan and Campbell W. Perry conducted Manchurian-candidate hypnosis experiments with this Pennsylvanian research network. Campbell Perry became a board member of the CIA's *False Memory Syndrome Foundation* headed by Martin Orne.

Wendy A. Fairfax-Thorn was a student in Phil Sutcliffe's Psychology department, studying hypnosis and multiple personality disorder with Subproject 84 psychologist Frederick J. Evans. In 1960, Wendy Thorn completed a University of Sydney thesis on posthypnotic amnesia, then presented her paper *Hypnosis and Suggestibility* to the ABBPS. In 1961, the ABBPS financed a post-graduate research scholarship to ANU (Australian National University) for Wendy Thorn to study the placebo effect. Her resultant 1962 ANU thesis noted: 'This study would have also lacked a great deal without the information, advice and materials supplied by Professor H.J. Eysenck (director of MK-ULTRA Subproject 111).[252] From 1963 to 1964, Wendy Thorn participated in hypnosis research with Frederick J. Evans while receiving assistance from the CIA-funded *Studies in Hypnosis* Project directed by Martin Orne. In 1963, Fred Evans attended Harvard on a Fulbright Scholarship to work and publish with Martin Orne.[253] Wendy Thorn later collaborated with Fred Evans and Hans Eysenck on MK-ULTRA research at Maudsley Hospital Institute of Psychiatry (IoP) in London.[254] [255] Wendy Thorn and Fred Evans subsequently co-published a paper on hypnotic amnesia in 1966.[256]

Phillip Sutcliffe had MK-ULTRA connections which led to Martin Orne commencing his MK-ULTRA hypnosis research at the University of Sydney. Peter Sheehan explained:

> *Phil had network connections with Martin Orne, and very quickly I got drawn into a very extensive program of research – that was funded in Australia – and then through the network and the associations and working with Phil Sutcliffe, I then went across to work with Martin Orne in Philadelphia.*

Phil Sutcliffe was influenced by his thesis examiner Hans Eysenck who directed MK-ULTRA Subproject 111.[257] In 1959, Phil Sutcliffe received the first University of Sydney PhD for his thesis *Hypnotic Behaviour: Fantasy or Simulation?* His thesis examiners were Gordon Hammer, Robert W. White (Harvard), and Hans Eysenck of London's Institute of Psychiatry which conducted CIA funded MK-ULTRA research. The examiners declared Sutcliffe's work 'a model for what a PhD thesis should be.' Robert White headed Harvard's Social Relations Department where MK-ULTRA doctors Henry A. Murray and Timothy Leary operated. After examining Phil Sutcliffe's thesis in November 1959, Hans Eysenck applied for a CIA grant to direct MK-ULTRA Subproject 111. The CIA Chemical Branch Chief concluded, 'Eysenck is one of the most skilful and productive psychologists on the international scene today and a grant to him would add prestige of the Society.'[258]

Peter Van Sommers: Phil Sutcliffe later connected with Peter Van Sommers, a University of Melbourne student who received a 1958 Fulbright Scholarship to become the first student in Experimental Psychology at Harvard's *Social Relations Department*.[259] At Harvard, Van Sommers placed electrodes in the brains of rats to create lesions used to control their behaviour. Harvard retained Van Sommers until 1961, after his Fulbright scholarship expired, because his research was valuable to DoD (Department of Defence) projects. Van Sommers also spent time at the University of Pennsylvania which offered the world's most cutting-edge psychology research laboratory. In the late 1960s, Van Sommers visited the Mecca of MK-ULTRA, Aldous Huxley's *Esalen Institute* in Big Sur, California.

---

[252] Wendy Anne Fairfax Thorn (July 1962). *The Placebo Response: A Study of the Personality Correlates of Placebo Reactors*. ANU.

[253] F.J. Evans & M.T. Orne. (1965). Motivation, performance, and hypnosis. *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*. 13, 103-16.

[254] Australian National University, *Annual Report for 1961*. Canberra.

[255] John F. Kihlstrom (2006). Frederick J. Evans, *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 49:1, 3-4.

[256] F.J. Evans & W.A.F. Thorn (1966) Two types of posthypnotic amnesia: Recall amnesia and source amnesia, *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 14:2, 162-179.

[257] John F. Kihlstrom (2006). Frederick J. Evans, *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 49:1, 3-4.

[258] Duncan Campbell (1979). CIA Funds Research by Eysenck. *New Statesman*, 11 May, 97.

SYDNEY UNI: AUSTRALIAN OCCULT & MK-ULTRA EPICENTRE

During the 1950s, '60s, and '70s, most leading universities in Australia (including Sydney, Western Australia, Melbourne, and Canberra's ANU) had staff and students in the MK-ULTRA network. The University of Sydney remained the epicentre of MK-ULTRA in Australia. My key MK-ULTRA perpetrators attended the University of Sydney. Harry Bailey graduated medicine in 1954. Leonas Petrauskas graduated with a diploma in Tropical Medicine in 1957 while Antony Kidman studied there. Kidman and Telford Conlon completed second year Chemistry together in December 1959, the same year Conlon's future wife Patricia Anne Carden passed third year English. John Manning Ward was History professor (1948-1979) while Anne was a history major, and Rosalind Croucher studied law in the 1970s. Ward became Vice-Chancellor (1981-1990). Holsworthy anaesthetist Colonel John Overton (Antony Kidman's next-door neighbour) graduated medicine in 1962 with heart transplant surgeon Victor Chang. Actor John Bell graduated from Sydney University in 1962.

My key perpetrators belonged to multiple secret societies including the Freemasons, Jesuits, Rosicrucians, Theosophical Society, the OTO (Ordo Templi Orientis), and self-styled esoteric groups. The various organisations were intertwined. Senior Australian Freemasons are closely tied to the international heads of Rosicrucianism. The OTO incorporate Jesuit teachings.

SYDNEY UNI: OTO & THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY BREEDING GROUND

The University of Sydney has a long occultic history. In 1882, the University of Sydney founding Chancellor John Smith became Sydney's first Theosophical Society member. John Smith was mentored by Emma Hardinge Britten who co-founded the Theosophical Society and the OTO. Smith was one of the select few to receive a letter from one of the 'Masters' (Morya and Koot Hoomi), Helena P. Blavatsky's spiritual guides to establishing the Theosophical Society. Blavatsky incorporated Buddhist Shambhala mythology into her occultic society and claimed to be in contact with a *Great White Lodge / Brotherhood* of Himalayan 'Masters', a group of highly developed humans. 'Master Morya' is described as a man 'living on the earth but possessed of developed senses that laughed at time and space.' OTO members are designated a number preceded by the title of 'Frater' which means fraternity brother of the 'Great White Brotherhood.' Australia's OTO Headquarters proudly advertised the following address - until my Candy Girl documentary was released:

PO Box 362
Wentworth Building
The University of Sydney
NSW 2006

---

[259] Peter Van Sommers interviewed by Alice Graner, Fulbright Scholars Oral History Project (National Library of Australia, 24 March 2010).

The Wentworth Building also contains the university of Sydney University's student services, student union, medical centre, banks, hairdresser, and shops. Gregory Tillet published the following on the University of Sydney OTO website:

> **AUSTRALIAN OTO HISTORY**
>
> *The original, pre-Crowleyan Order had, however, been brought to Australia around 1908 by Vyvyan Deacon, who became the first Grand Master for the Order in Australia, having received his authority from the Outer Head, Theodor Reuss. Deacon (Frater Memnon) established the Order in Sydney and Melbourne and, during a visit to New Zealand in 1920-2l, attempted to lay the foundations of the Order there.*
>
> *Between 1914, when the active work of the Order in Australia commenced, and 1930, when Deacon returned to-London, the Order attracted, and influenced, a number of eminent Australians. Notable amongst them were several involved in the arts and literature.*
>
> *The Order became dormant after the departure of its Grand Master, who died in London in 1938; his archives, authorities and regalia (such of it as survived the Blitz) were entrusted to his daughter's guardianship until a successor could be appointed. Forty-four years later the guardianship was relinquished, and the authority and symbols of office were passed to Frater Memnon's successor. Frater Iacchos who, upon his appointment issued a decree, 'Of the True Secret of The O.·.T.·.O.·.,' in which he re-affirmed the original, pre-Crowleyan traditions and working of the Order.*
> *The O.·.T.·.O.·. in Australia works the traditions of the Order established by its founders, revised only insofar as has been necessary to remove later accretions.*
> *The Crowleyan Order was established in Australia in the 1920's by Frank Bennett ('Frater Progradior') who had been trained by Crowley as a missionary to Australia. His work attracted a degree of hostile publicity but failed to achieve any real influence. Its limited activity ceased when Bennett returned to England.*

The international OTO Handbook lists Australia's OTO contact as:[260]

Kylie McKiernan
Quartermaster, Australia & New Zealand
PO Box 667
Toongabbie NSW 2146
Email: treasurer@otoaustralia.org.au

Kylie McKiernan is the Chief Risk Officer for the ABC (*Australian Broadcasting Commission*) at their Sydney office. The ABC is linked to the BBC which covered up the Luciferian pedophile crimes of Jimmy Savile. In 2015, British Intelligence agent Paul Barry mocked and slandered me on national television after I publicly spoke about my experience of government child sex trafficking which implicated the University of Sydney OTO.

---

[260] Ordo Templi Orientis (2002). *International Camp, Oasis & Lodge Master's Handbook*, Revised Spring Equinox.

The *OTO International Handbook* contains specific instruction not to publicly perform ritual animal sacrifice:

> *Don't sacrifice animals or perform any other actions or practices which might adversely affect the Order's reputation or legal standing, including public performance of the Mass of the Phoenix, Liber Jugorum, or explicit sexual acts at official or public-access events.*

My perpetrators were members of the University of Sydney OTO. Nicole Kidman and I witnessed her father Antony Kidman perform an OTO ritual murder of a five-year-old boy in the University of Sydney Great Hall. The ritual reflected Aleister Crowley's quote:

> *For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force, a male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim… But the bloody sacrifice, though more dangerous, is more efficacious; and for nearly all purposes human sacrifice is the best.*

ALF CONLON

University of Sydney Philosophy Professor John Anderson influenced psychiatrist Alfred Austin Justin Conlon and his 'small but persuasive group' of Australian intellectuals called the Directorate of Research and Civil Affairs (DORCA).[261] In 1939, Conlon was a 32-year-old medical student at the University of Sydney, and an elected member of the university Senate. When war broke out, Conlon became the university's Manpower Officer, which brought him into contact with the army hierarchy. As Manpower Officer, Conlon's expressed goal was to save Australia's intellectual cream from becoming cannon fodder for the British Empire. In 1942, Conlon convinced Brigadier Victor Stantke (Army Education Director) that the Army needed its own special research section. With zero military training or experience, Conlon became an Army Colonel. Conlon persuaded Prime Minister John Curtin to form, and appoint Conlon Chair of, the Prime Minister's Committee on National Morale. Conlon then convinced General Thomas Blamey (Commander-in-chief of the Australian Military Forces) that the research section should be upgraded to a directorate which advised on the civil government of Australian territories, particularly Papua New Guinea. The result was DORCA. The PNG campaigns (1944 – 1945) are partly attributed to General Blamey and PM Curtin falling under DORCA influence.

DORCA was staffed by University of Sydney employees and graduates who were heavily involved in the occult, associated with intelligence groups ASIO and CIA, had communist connections, and demonstrated massive international influence. Conlon assembled the following DORCA (later ASOPA) team:

- **Camilla Wedgwood** (English anthropologist, DORCA lecturer).
- **Margaret Mead** (American cultural anthropologist, married MK-ULTRA anthropologist Gregory Bateson).
- **William E.H. Stanner** (anthropologist, ANU lecturer, Aboriginal rights activist, advisor to my pedophile rapist PM Gough Whitlam).

---

[261] Peter Ryan (1972). *Encyclopaedia of Papua and New Guinea*, Melbourne University Press.

- **Julius Stone** (lawyer).
- **James Plimsoll** (banker, later head of External Affairs, Governor of Tasmania, Australian UN representative).
- **James McAuley** (DORCA lecturer, CIA/ASIO agent, poet, founding member of occultic Liberal Catholic Church).
- **Harold 'Hal' Stewart** (poet, Shin Buddhist, homosexual).
- **Ida Leeson** (Mitchell Librarian, member of Theosophical Society and Rudolph Steiner's Anthroposophical Society, Marxist lesbian feminist activist, pushed for a totalitarian New World Order).
- **Peter A Ryan** (journalist, WWII spy in PNG).
- **J. Keith Murray** (Queensland University agriculture professor, PNG Administrator, DORCA Principal).
- **Ralph Piddington** (DORCA Deputy Principal).
- **Julius Stone** (Oxford scholar, Sydney University law professor, radical Zionist, leftist minority rights activist).
- **Herbert Cole 'Nugget' Coombs** (economist, first Governor of the Reserve Bank of Australia, Governor Commonwealth Bank, ANU Chancellor, advised seven PMs over 30 years, drove business and politics behind the scenes).
- **John Robert Kerr** (wartime intelligence officer, Governor General of Australia, UNESCO Ambassador, my pedophile rapist).
- **Ian Hogbin** (DORCA lecturer. ANGAU officer Eddie Stanton wrote of Hogbin in his diary: 'He likes native boys.')
- **John Andrews** (DORCA lecturer).
- **John Legge** (DORCA lecturer).
- **Theodore 'Ted' George Henry Strehlow** (Anthropologist. Leading expert on Australian Aboriginal language, legend and ritual. DORCA lecturer.)

HIGH IQ RECRUITS

John Kerr and John Ryan became Alf Conlon's right-hand men. Conlon, Kerr, Ryan, Stewart, Hogbin, Plimsoll, and McAuley all graduated Fort Street High School, a selective school for intellectually gifted students located next door to the University of Sydney. Other DORCA staff graduated from alternative selective schools like Sydney Boys High. This is relevant to Conlon's hidden eugenicist agenda, indicated in this tribute:

> *Alf Conlon (1908–61) was a visionary. He would not have known it, but his ideology had similarities with the Italian Marxist Antonio Gramsci. Conlon had a belief that the ideas that shape society come from a fairly small elite united by shared intellectual premises, and he sought to use the chaos of the war to establish a new kind of elite in Australia. What Gramsci termed 'organic intellectuals' Conlon thought of as his intellectual underground. When the war had begun to pose a direct threat to Australia, he could see that the fallout was going to destroy the credibility of the existing elites and undermine the derived power of the conventional establishment. He recognised the possibility of using the chaos to build a new power group with progressive ideas, organic to Australian society and based on intellect. No Marxist, Conlon insisted his 'New Men' would be a classless elite, yet those he had in mind were lower-middle-class*

> *boys like himself who had come to university through the selective state school system. The poet James McAuley was typical of Conlon's incipient elite: brainy, ambitious, contemptuous and, most importantly, a product of Conlon's alma mater, Fort Street Boys High, Sydney, as were Hal Stewart, Ian Hogbin, Jim Plimsoll and a brilliant law graduate named John Kerr.*[262]

THE MANOR

ASOPA's Sydney headquarters were located directly next door to *The Manor* at 2 Iluka Road, Clifton Gardens, Mosman. The Manor is a 30-room mansion which contains an Egyptian temple. The Theosophical Society rented The Manor in 1922, purchased it in 1925, and in 1951 created *The Manor Foundation Ltd* to own and administer the property.

In a 1983 court case, occupants of The Manor claimed to practise a religion there for the purposes of tax exemption status, and supplied the following examples of rituals conducted there:

> *'…there was also a number of specific spiritual and educational disciplines to which they were expected to subject themselves. These involved attendance at a service of the Holy Eucharist which was a religious ceremony of the Liberal Catholic Church, somewhat similar to a communion service in the Anglican Church. This was held in the Manor Chapel each morning. There was also held each morning in the temple a short service of the Egyptian rite, which is the Theosophical ceremony of invocation... A solemn benediction service, also a service of the Liberal Catholic Church, took place every Monday night in the Chapel. Also, on Monday nights a further Egyptian rite service was held in the Temple.'*

National Archive documents reveal that ASIO suspected the Theosophical Society headquarters were a major Communist hub where Soviet spies gathered to plan their infiltration of Australia. Leaders of the Theosophical Society, Freemasons, Rosicrucians, and Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO) met at The Manor to plan their cultural takeover of Australia via the University of Sydney which housed the national OTO headquarters. Camilla Wedgewood's cousin, James I. Wedgwood, a Theosophist and Freemason, established the OTO in Australia.

THEOSOPHY LEGACY

During the 1920s, the Theosophical Society had about 7,000 members in the USA, 2,500 in Australia, and 20,000 in India. Theosophy was closely linked to the Indian independence movement, the Indian National Congress, whose most famous leader and revolutionary, Mahatma Gandhi, became associated with and influenced by Theosophy while studying law in London (1888 to 1890). Gandhi attended Theosophical Society meetings and met with Madame Blavatsky and Annie Besant.

The Theosophical Society took control of early Australia's social and political systems. Theosophy is based on the notion of Aryan superiority. The Theosophist Society members influenced our second Prime Minister Alfred Deacon to create the White Australia Policy. Alfred Deakin's daughter Ivy Deacon co-founded Australia's first *Eugenics Society* with the Australian Theosophical Society's leader, and members of the *Order of the Star in the East*.

---

[262] Cassandra Pybus (2012). *Conlon's Remarkable Circus*, in Scholars at War: Australian Social Scientists, 1939-1945. ANU.

Ivy Deacon’s son, Alfred Deakin Brooks, became the first head of ASIS (*Australian Secret Intelligence Service*).

The Theosophists and Co-Masons created Australia’s first abortion clinic, started our Eugenics movement, and controlled Australia’s Kindergarten Union who provided public childcare. Theosophist and Co-Mason Edith Cowan (who is on our $50 note) was the first Australian to advocate for forced sterilization and government removal of children from Australian citizens. Edith Cowan, who pushed to sexualize children, created Australia’s *Child Protection Society* and Children's Court, the two government organisations responsible for a massive child trafficking operation where children are still taken from innocent parents and handed to pedophile foster parents for sex trafficking.

Walter Burley Griffin, who designed Australia’s capital city Canberra, belonged to the *Anthroposophical Society*, an elite version of the Theosophical Society. Canberra’s town plan is based on Freemasonic, occultic symbology and sacred geometry.

2GB RADIO PEDOPHILES

In 1926, the Theosophical Society founded one of Australia's first public broadcast radio stations, 2GB. They named 2GB after Hermetic occultist Giordano Bruno. Initially operating out of *The Manor*, 2GB promoted the Theosophical Society, Freemasonry, Eugenics, racism, and anti-Christian sentiment. 2GB broadcast the Sunday mass from the Liberal Catholic Church (LCC), an occult group which met in a Redfern church building.

The LCC was initiated by Charles W. Leadbeater and Camilla Wedgewood’s brother James Ingall Wedgwood. The LCC fused Freemasonry, Theosophy, and the OTO (who held their initial ritual in the LCC’s Redfern church). Leadbeater was a prominent Theosophist leader who trained under Madame Blavatsky, co-authored books with Annie Besant, and pursued, ‘a certain kind of meditation connected with the development of the mysterious power called kundalini.’ A notorious pedophile, Leadbeater served as headmaster at the English Buddhist Academy in Ceylon, and wrote numerous books on clairvoyance, the astral plane, and the chakras.

Wesleyan evangelist Gordon Moyes became the conservative ‘Christian’ face of 2GB. I attended one of Moyes’ famous crusades in Tweed Heads when I was a teenager and well recall his façade of respectability, impeccable grooming, and neat navy suit. Moyes preached to my generation on whether teens should kiss. . . all the while gangraping children with fellow Freemasons. ‘*Big Tim, Little Tim’* documents Tim Roy’s experiences of ritual rape committed by multiple 2GB radio announcers including Gordon Moyes, who committed suicide while under police investigation; and Alan Jones, whose television appearances were momentarily suspended during police inquiry.

In 1973, Alan Jones was forced to resign from his position as a teacher at The King’s School in Sydney for sexually grooming students. On one occasion, ‘one of the masters found a letter, written by Jones to a boy, that had been left behind in a classroom desk. In it, Alan spoke of thinking about the boy late at night, expressing his love.’[263] Two of Alan Jones’ close associates were key members of Sydney’s pedophile network, lawyer John Marsden, and underbelly cop Roger Rogerson. According to multiple reports, all 2GB celebrities were pedophiles, including financier John Singleton. Tim Roy’s father worked at Daruk and sex trafficked Daruk boys to entertainers.

---

[263] Chris Masters (2006). *Jonestown: The Power and The Myth of Alan Jones*. Allen & Unwin.

JAMES McCAULEY

Founding member of the Liberal Catholic Church, James McCauley was an Australian Academic, Marxist (later anti-communist) and CIA/ASIO asset. A famous Australian poet, McCauley dedicated his poem *Winter Nightfall* to his friend Camilla Wedgwood. McAuley used sarcasm to inform the public that the Luciferian Order was operating in Australia:

> *A great number of the Australian university intellectuals who gravitated to Communism did so by an interesting path: The fact that many of us danced in diverse incoherent snatches instead of performing to the strict choreography of Stalin is not decisive. The eccentrics, the dissenters even from the orthodoxy of dissent, might re-explore Nietzsche, or Stirner, or Sorel, or the anarchism lighted up by the Spanish Civil War (as I did – along with exploring the literary esoterisms of Blake, Mallarme, Rilke, George and so on). Never mind, we were all 'enlightened'; we all belonged somehow to the order of illuminati.* [264]

JOHN KERR

Kerr was a Globalist and CIA agent who became principal of ASOPA in 1946, and later the first Secretary-General of the South Pacific Commission. In 1957, Kerr joined the executive board of the CIA's anti-communist advocacy group, *Association for Cultural Freedom*. In 1964, Kerr and future NSW Premier Neville Wran helped defend the counterculture *Oz* magazine (a propaganda tool used by the British Round Table) when it was prosecuted for obscenity. PM Gough Whitlam appointed Kerr as Governor-General in 1974.

ASOPA & WEAPONSIED ANTHROPOLOGY

ASOPA claimed their purpose was to police the Pacific Islands to expand Australia's sphere of global influence, and to train teachers and administrators for Papua New Guinea (PNG). They were in fact studying native tribes for weaponised anthropology, a Marxist method for understanding culture in order to find the key to subverting and destroying it (i.e., to social engineer a replacement Luciferian culture). ASOPA graduates attended field assignments in the Pacific Islands, including PNG and Manus Island, where they developed Australian colonies and conducted anthropological, medical, and anti-viral research connected to MK-NAOMI. Key anthropologists Camilla Wedgewood and Margaret Mead worked together at ASOPA.

MARGARET MEAD

A bisexual in later life, Hofjuden eugenicist Margaret Mead promoted the notion of sexual evolution throughout life. Mead pioneered Australia's sexual revolution and promoted sexual activity amongst pre-teen Western children based on her false reports of witnessing PNG tribal children engaging in sexual intercourse. Mead was subsequently outed as one of the greatest academic frauds of the 20th Century (yet the University of Queensland's Anthropology faculty celebrate her birthday). Mead was a member of the *Society for Psychical Research*, an occult group that consulted spirits.

An MK-ULTRA operative, Mead was instrumental in the Stanford Research Institute's *Changing Images of Man* project. The Stanford University faculty committee planned the Stanford Research Institute (SRI) at the Bohemian Grove pedophile summer camp of 1939 and established it in 1946. By 1965, most SRI projects were of a military and intelligence nature. Protesting Stanford students forced SRI to relocate off-campus in 1970.

---

[264] James McAuley (1960). *Australian Quarterly*, 14 May.

In 1968, the *US Office of Education* commissioned SRI to examine alternative future possibilities for the year 2000 and to derive policy implications for educating youth in ways more relevant to the NWO agenda. SRI reported which 'changes in the conceptual premises underlying Western society would lead to a desirable future.' SRI's conclusions were published in a book called *Changing Images of Man* (1974).[265] A blueprint for a vast social engineering project, the book blatantly attacks Protestant Christianity. Its Introduction to Chapter 4 reads:

> *At various times in history, man's image of himself was shaped by mythology, philosophy, and religion. In our contemporary culture, science has added a dominant formative contribution to our conception of the nature of the human being — through biology and life sciences, physics, psychology, brain research, evolutionary theory, and the growing investigation of consciousness states and parapsychological phenomena.*

CAMILLA WEDGEWOOD

Zionist Camilla Wedgewood was of the Darwin-Galton-Huxley-Wedgwood dynasty. Her parents were first cousins. Camilla's father Josiah Wedgwood was a British Labor politician, Army Colonel connected to Intelligence, and Zionist involved with the WW1 Jewish Legion and Mule Corp. Josiah was well involved with the Theosophical Society who published his book, *The Future of the Indo-British Commonwealth*, which promoted the creation of a NWO via universal Brotherhood, and determined Christianity is not the answer. The foreword by then Prime Minister of South Africa read: 'The New World Order will be a world of individualism controlled by Britain and America.' The SRI *Changing Images of Man* book parroted Josiah Wedgwood's content.

Camilla Wedgwood was into occultism, Freemasonry, and the Theosophical idea of a New World Order. She was a student of Rudolph Steiner, European spy, Freemason, member of the Order of the Illuminati, and OTO co-founder who claimed the 'Luciferic Impulse' manifested on Earth in 3000 BC. Camilla Wedgewood's mother Ethel was in a sexual relationship with Luciferian Theosophist Rudolf Steiner and translated most of his writings.

Camilla Wedgewood was a left-wing feminist who lectured at the University of Sydney. Appointed Principal of the university's Women's College in 1935, Wedgewood promoted Margaret Mead's false reports of sexual activity between tribal PNG children as the basis of condoning sex between prepubescent Western children, and she used her academic position to encourage sexual promiscuity among young women. She tellingly said post-war social change was the result of the intersection of 'the revolt of women and the revolt of youth.' In 1944, Alf Conlon commissioned Camilla Wedgwood as Lieutenant Colonel in the Australian Army where she served as a DORCA research officer. Wedgewood served two field years in PNG, and as senior ASOPA lecturer in Native Administration.

OPERATION MATCHBOX

Operation Matchbox was the codename for Australia's version of *Operation Paperclip.* Under Matchbox, Britain secretly organised the recruitment and transfer of at least 127 German scientists and engineers (including 31 Nazi party members and six SS) to Australia between 1946 and 1951.[266] Matchbox remained top secret until a journalist accidentally uncovered the secret operation in the National Archives of Australia.

---

[265] Joseph Campbell (1974). *Changing Images of Man*, Research Report, 4, May. Center for the Study of Social Policy, SRI International.

Operation Matchbox transferred chemical and biological weapons experts to Australian Military laboratories. In 1948, Operation Paperclip recruited Erich Traub, head of the Nazi's bioweapons projects.[267] Nazi bioweapons expert Vincent Zigas was recruited the same year. Vincent Zigas came from Estonia, a country which provided Nazi Germany with a National Legion during WWII. Vincent Zigas and Nazi physician Leonas 'Leo' Petrauskas (my main perpetrator and handler) were the 'dearest of friends.' When Operation Matchbox recruited Leonas Petrauskas to Australia in 1949, Zigas purchased him a house to help him settle in. National Archive documents confirm Leonas Petrauskas initially worked at Sydney's Concord Military Hospital.[268]

A 1949 document of the *Commonwealth Investigation Service* (ASIO's forerunner) lists Leonas Petrauskas and 'E. Traub' as having passed their security check for employment eligibility in PNG. Petrauskas and Zigas completed a four-month ASOPA course taught by Camilla Wedgewood and James McAuley before travelling to PNG where they shared a house together. Vincent Zigas became close friends with James McAuley and the godfather of his son.

Camilla Wedgewood introduced Leonas Petrauskas to Margaret Mead (wife of MK-ULTRA founder Gregory Bateson) on Manus Island in 1955. In the Preface of her 1956 book *New Lives for Old,* Margaret Mead thanked 'Leo' Petrauskas for assisting her in PNG, but misspelt his surname 'Petrauskis.'[269] In 1960, Petrauskas followed up research into heart disease and influenza by Camilla's nephew John Wedgwood. He also oversaw computer-based personality assessment at Saint Barts Hospital, London. Significantly, Leonas Petrauskas was involved with two Wedgewoods plus Margaret Mead in the space of 10 years.

While in PNG, Leonas Petrauskas wrote a study on the effects of poisoning by a Cone Fish sting on a child.[270] Petrauskas obtained a postgraduate qualification in Tropical Medicine at the University of Sydney in 1957. I witnessed Leonas Petrauskas use the cover of a blue ringed octopus sting to account for the death of the young boy murdered and raped by necrophiliac Paul Keating at Kurnell Beach in Sydney.

LEONAS PETRAUSKAS' OCCULT CONNECTIONS

Leonas Petrauskas came from Lithuania, a country with a strong pagan history. He connected with the Theosophical Society shortly after arriving in Australia. All the new immigrant events that Leonas Petrauskas participated in were held at the Theosophical Society. Leonas was involved with the *New Australians Cultural Association* (NACA) an organisation formed to assist newly arrived European immigrants settle into Australian life. Adyar Hall, a frequent home to NACA events, was owned by the Theosophical Society.[271] Adyar Hall was also used by the pro-Nazi *Rationalist Association,* and the *Australia First Movement* led by P.R. Stephenson (Aleister Crowley's associate). Leonas Petrauskas gave a talk for NACA at Adyar Hall in 1949. A previous NACA Vice-President was a leading member of the Theosophical Society.[272] Another NACA Vice-President was the grandson of a Prince initiated into Egyptian Freemasonry by Alessandro Cagliostro, an early occultist whom Aleister Crowley claimed to be an incarnation of. Eugene Goossens was notable NACA patron who was introduced to Thelema by Rosaleen Norton, the notorious Kings Cross Satanist. Goossens became Vice-President of CIA/ASIO front, *The Australian Congress of Cultural Freedom* with Ian Clunies-Ross (CSIRO head) serving as an Executive Member.

---

[266] Ian Traynor (1999). UK arranged transfer of Nazi scientists to Australia, *The Guardian*, 17 Aug.

[267] Hunt & Hunt (1991). Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990. St. Martin's Press, 340.

[268] NAA: A518, 280/3/2419

[269] Margaret Mead (1956). *New Lives for Old: Cultural Transformation - Manus, 1928-1953*. Harper Collins.

[270] L.E. Petrauskas (1955). A case of conus shell poisoning by 'bite' in Manus Island. *New Guinea Medical Journal,* 1:67-68.

[271] Mehmet Sabeheddin, Esoteric Australia, *New Dawn,* Special Issue 3.

PROJECT MK-NAOMI in PNG

MK-ULTRA was related to MK-NAOMI, a joint CIA/US Army chemical and biological weapons project based at Fort Detrick, Maryland, that ran from 1953 to 1970. The project involved, 'developing, testing, and maintaining biological agents and delivery systems for use against humans as well as against animals and crops.' MK-NAOMI received CIA funding through MK-ULTRA Subprojects 13, 30 and 50.[273]

Daniel Carleton Gajdusek, an American physician, received the 1976 Nobel Prize for research on the PNG kuru disease. In 1957, Frank McFarland Burnet organised with Joseph Smadel of Fort Detrick to send military-trained Gajdusek to study the Kuru Virus Vincent Zigas discovered in PNG.[274] Joseph Smadel had conducted military virus research with his colleague Joshua Lederberg.[275] Frank McFarland Burnet employed Vincent Zigas to study the Kuru Virus in PNG and collect samples of it for Burnet's Melbourne laboratory.[276] Gajdusek's studies in PNG were financed by the US Army under a contract titled, '*Field Studies on the Control of Infectious Disease of Military Importance*,' in connection with research at Fort Detrick.[277] Gajdusek sent samples of the virus to Smadel at the *National Institutes of Health* in Bethesda, Maryland.[278] Smadel was at the centre of all US bioweapons research. Gajdusek, Zigas, and Petrauskas worked together in PNG in 1959.[279] Between 1955 and 1977 Zigas regularly joined Gajdusek at the *National Institute of Health* in Bethesda, USA.

In 1957, Zigas met with Alex Sinclair, military psychologist and protégé of William Walters Sargant, the British end of MK-ULTRA.[280] Sinclair was sent to PNG to study the psychological effects of the Kuru Virus.[281] Sinclair later gave a speech, *Forcible Indoctrination* to the *Papua New Guinea Scientific Society*. Sinclair was involved with ECT (electroconvulsive 'therapy') and Deep Sleep Therapy brainwashing methods, and supported Sydney MK-ULTRA doctor Harry Bailey.[282] Alex Sinclair subsequently engaged in a Military Psychological Operation to influence PNG citizens' support of Australia's presence in their country.[283]

---

[272] Bogumila Zongollowicz, *Poninski, Alfred Emeryk (1896–1968)*, Australian Dictionary of Biography, National Centre of Biography, ANU.

[273] C.A. Ross (2006). *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*. Greenleaf Book Group.

[274] Caroline Richmond (2009). Carleton Gajdusek, *The Guardian*, 24 February.

[275] Letter (28 April 1949) from Joseph E. Smadel (Army Medical Center, Washington) to Joshua Lederberg.

[276] Caroline Richmond (2009). Carleton Gajdusek, *The Guardian*, 24 February.

[277] C.A. Kelleher (2004). *Brain Trust: The Hidden Connection Between Mad Cow and Misdiagnosed Alzheimer's Disease*. Paraview Pocket Books.

[278] Ibid.

[279] David Watters (2011). *Stitches in Time: Two Centuries of Surgery in Papua New Guinea*. Xlibris.

[280] Vincent Zigas (1990). *Laughing Death: The Untold Story of Kuru*. Humana.

[281] Ibid.

[282] World Heritage Encyclopedia, *Chelmsford Royal Commission,*

[283] Donald Denoon (2005). *A Trial Separation: Australia And the Decolonisation of Papua New Guinea*. Pandanus Books.

At Fort Detrick, Carleton Gajdusek transmitted a 'kuru like syndrome' into chimpanzees. The results of his experiment were published in Progress Report No.8 of the *Special Virus Cancer Program*. This program was used as cover for the extension of Project MK-NAOMI at Fort Detrick.

THEODOSIUS DOBZHANSKY

The *American Eugenics Society* published Carleton Gajdusek's Kuru research in 1962.[284] Soviet geneticist Theodosius Dobzhansky was Chairman of the *American Eugenics Society* the year before Gajdusek's Kuru research began.[285] Dobzhansky received a Fulbright Research Scholarship in 1959 to study the effects of Kuru and implement a eugenics policy of restricting the movement of the Kuru infected Fore tribe in PNG.[286] Dobzhansky did this while undertaking a PhD at the University of Sydney, which he received in 1960.[287] Dobzhansky was friends with Julian Huxley, and his daughter grew up to marry a CIA case officer.[288]

PNG PEDOPHILES

Paediatrician Carleton Gajdusek turned out to be a pedophile after he was convicted and sentenced for raping seven boys (of the 56 children) he brought back from PNG to use as live-in sex slaves. Gajdusek openly admitted to raping boys and approving of pedophilia. 'He remained unrepentant about his sexual relationships with the young boys. He often said he thought American law was unduly prudish and argued that he had chosen boys only from cultures where man-boy sex was common and unremarkable.' [289] Robert Gallo contributed $60,000 to Gajdusek's bail. In 1970, Robert Gallo spoke to NATO scientists on how to create AIDS-like viruses.[290]

CSIRO BIOWEAPONS DEVELOPMENT

The Fulbright scheme was used to station bioweapons experts in Australia. Arthur Galston (who helped develop Agent Orange at Fort Detrick in the 1950s) received a 1960 Fulbright Scholarship to work with the CSIRO.[291] A 1956 Fulbright scholarship was given to Joshua Lederberg of Fort Detrick to study *Clonal Selection Theory* with Sir Gustav Nossal and Sir Frank Macfarlane Burnet at the University of Melbourne.[292] Joshua Lederberg became key to bioweapons development after discovering bacteria can swap genes. His connection to Fort Detrick bioweapon research began in 1949. Joshua Lederberg received the 1958 Nobel Prize and moved to Stanford University. He became President of Rockefeller University, a member of the *Defence Science Board* and the mysterious *JASON Group*. Lederberg currently advises government on bioweapons and bioterrorism.

---

[284] D.C. Gajdusek (1962). *Kuru: An Appraisal of Five Years of Investigation*. American Eugenics Society.

[285] P.R. Winnick (2005). *A Jealous God: Science's Crusade Against Religion*. Thomas Nelson

[286] T. Dobzhansky (1960). The Kuru Disease in New Guinea. *Journal of Heredity*, 51:3, May-June, 110.

[287] University of Sydney, *1960 Senate Report*.

[288] Michael D. Coe (2006). *Final Report: An Archaeologist Excavates His Past*. Thames & Hudseon.

[289] Thomas H. Maugh (2008). D. Carleton Gajdusek dies at 85; Nobel Prize winner identified exotic disease, was unrepentant pedophile. *LA Times*, 18 December.

[290] Andre D. Davis (2010). *The God-Defined Self: A Layman's Perspective on Racism in America*. Eloquent Books.

[291] Dept. State International Educational Exchange Program, American Lecturers and Researchers Scholars Receiving US Government Awards the Fulbright Act, 1960-61 Academic Year. Professional Division, Office of Cultural Exchange, Bureau of Educational & Cultural Affairs, September 1960.

[292] Dept. State International Educational Exchange Program, American Lecturers and Researchers Scholars Receiving US Government Awards the Fulbright Act, 1957-58 Academic Year. Professional Activities Division, International Educational Exchange Service, 23 August 1957.

In 1960, Frank Macfarlane Burnet won a Nobel prize for his virus research. Macfarlane developed the Myxoma bioweapon with his CSIRO colleagues. Joseph Smadel of Fort Detrick also made contributions to the Myxoma bioweapon, at the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research.[293] Ian Clunies-Ross (CSIRO head), Macfarlane, and Frank Fenner injected themselves with Myxoma to demonstrate the rabbit-killing virus was harmless to humans. Fenner said of his CSIRO work experience:

> *If they can kill rabbits like that, we could get something that killed humans like that, it'd be wonderful. (Laughs) That's the sort of attitude you had to have if you were in that game*.[294]

Frank Macfarlane Burnet was Australian head of the PNG fieldwork conducted by Vincent Zigas and Daniel Gajdusek (of Fort Detrick). The bioweapons research was funded by eugenicists connected to Macfarlane's friend, Leonard Huxley. Erich Traub had been active at Fort Detrick from 1949 onwards.[295] That same year, Macfarlane used Traub's research on mice infected with the Lymphocytic Choriomeningitis Virus to help explain how immunity was formed against retroviruses (like Kuru).[296] [297] Macfarlane was also connected to early MK-NAOMI operations at Fort Detrick. Erich Traub was also affiliated with the *US Naval Medical Research Institute.*[298] [299] [300] At the time, the Navy was focussed on viruses and diseases in PNG.[301] Frank Macfarlane Burnet was a member of the Australia's *Defence Research and Development Policy Committee* which planned to develop bioweapons to wipe out the 'teeming hordes' of Asia.[302] Macfarlane attended a 1957 meeting with the DoD to discuss Australia's use of Biological Weapons - shortly after returning from the UK's notorious *Porton Down* Chemical and Biological Weapons research centre.[303] Porton Down was the facility MK-ULTRA scientist Frank Olson visited to study MI6 Mind Control operations using psychoactive drugs, and it is connected to Olson's Fort Detrick and Project MK-NAOMI.[304]

Frank Macfarlane Burnet was an outspoken eugenicist who proposed reducing the world population by billions. DoD documents released in 2003 show Macfarlane advocated pre-emptive biological warfare against Asian nations to stop their numbers threatening Australia. Macfarlane was involved with the *Australian Conservation Foundation* (ACF) via his close friend Francis Noble Ratcliffe of the CSIRO who established the ACF under Julian Huxley's guidance. Chief Justice Garfield Barwick was the first ACF head, and a 1960s USEFA (*US Educational Foundation in Australia*) Director with Leonard Huxley.

---

[293] T.M. Rivers, S.M. Ward & J.E. Smadel (1938). Infectious Myxomatosis of Rabbits: Studies of a Soluble Antigen Associated with the Disease. *J Exp Med*. Jan 1, 69:1, 31-48.

[294] ABC Radio: Rewind (15 January 2005). The scientist and weapons of mass destruction.

[295] Michael Carroll (2004). *The disturbing story of the government's secret germ lLaboratory*. Harper Collins.

[296] H. Fraenkel-Conrat & R.R. Wagner (1979). Comprehensive Virology, 14: virus-host interactions immunity to Viruses. Springer.

[297] T.W. Mak & M.E. Saunders (2006). *The immune response: Basic and clinical principles*. Elsevier Academic Press.

[298] Erich Traub (1951). *Studies on the in-vitro multiplication of Newcastle Disease virus in chicken blood*. Naval Medical Research Institute, National Naval Medical Centre.

[299] E. Traub & W.I. Capps (1953). *Experiments with chicken embryo-adapted Foot-and-Mouth disease and a method for the rapid adaption*. Naval Medical Research Institute, National Naval Medical Centre.

[300] Erich Traub (1953) *Studies in the mechanism of immunity of chickens to Newcastle Disease Virus*. Naval Medical Research Institute, National Naval Medical Centre.

[301] Smithsonian Institution Archives, Record Unit 7454, Harry Hoogstraal Papers.

[302] ABC Radio: Rewind (15 January 2005). The scientist and weapons of mass destruction.

[303] Biological warfare - Remarks by Sir MacFarlane Burnet, National Archives of Australia, A1209, 1958/5041.

[304] Raf Sanchez, Scientist Frank Olson was drugged with LSD and 'murdered by CIA.' *The Telegraph*, 28 November 2012.

FORD FUNDED ASOPA

During the Cold War, half of all Ford Foundation grants served the CIA. In 1963, Leonard Huxley brokered a deal with the Ford Foundation for $200,000 of funding to assist ASOPA. In 1964, Ford Foundation beneficiary Margaret Mead visited former ASOPA lecturer William E.H. Stanner at ANU where he headed the Research School which focussed on Pacific Studies.

ANU: MK-ULTRA RESEARCH UNIVERSITY

Alf Conlon was instrumental in forming the Australian National University (ANU) which he intended to be a full research university.[305] According to the 1946 ANU Act, Conlon, 'Nugget' Coombs, Douglas 'Pansy' Wright and others planned the Canberra facility to '*provide facilities for postgraduate research and study both generally and in relation to subjects of national importance to Australia*.' ANU was to contain one medical research, one physical sciences, and two social science schools. These schools corresponded to key CIA MK-ULTRA research interest areas, and Conlon's goal of introducing a new sociology.

ANU was part of Conlon's plan to attract Australian physicist Marcus Oliphant (who helped develop the atomic bomb) and other Australian scientists back to Australia. Coombs arranged for Oliphant to meet Australian Prime Minister Ben Chifley, when Chifley and his advisers were in London for the 1946 Commonwealth Prime Ministers' meeting. Oliphant became ANU Director of the Research School of Physical Sciences, and he encouraged his Birmingham scientists to follow. Oliphant's reputation was tarnished, and his security clearance lost when two of his Birmingham physics students, Alan Nunn-May and Klaus Fuchs, were exposed as Soviet spies in 1949 and 1950. ANU's first Psychology professor, Cecil A. Gibb, had the usual MK-Ultra qualifications and connections:

- Fort Street Boys High old boy.
- University of Sydney graduate.
- Head Army psychologist.
- PhD supervised by Raymond Cattell, University of Illinois.[306]
- Australian UNESCO Advisory Committee, 1960-64.
- UNESCO Delegate, 1962.
- ASS Fellow.
- Australian American Association.
- American Field Service Scholarship Scheme.
- Rotary President, 1973-74.

ANSTO, CSIRO & SYDNEY UNI

The security military agreement made between Australia and the USA in 1951 led to the establishment of the AAEC (*Australian Atomic Energy Commission*) in 1953 and the construction of two underground multi-story CIA research facilities: the AAEC nuclear reactor at Lucas Heights in 1958, and Pine Gap in 1967. The AAEC opening at Lucas Heights was attended by Herbert Coombs, Justice Michael Kirby, and Gough Whitlam. In 1987, the AAEC was renamed ANSTO (*Australian Nuclear Science and Technology Organisation*).

---

[305] S.G. Foster & M.M. Varghese (2009) *The Making of The Australian National University: 1946-1996*, ANU Press.

[306] Michael Cook (1994). Cecil Austin Gibb (1913–1994) *ANU Reporter*, 25 May, 11.

The AAEC's sister organisation was the CSIRO (*Commonwealth Scientific and Industrial Research Organisation*). In 1981, parts of the AAEC were split off and joined to the CSIRO. Founded in 1949, the CSIRO is a federal government agency responsible for scientific research including genetic engineering, industrial chemistry, and radio astronomy. The CSIRO established a research laboratory ('*National Standards Laboratory*') at the University of Sydney in 1939 which had three divisions, Electrotechnology, Metrology and Physics.

RICHARD CASEY, ASIO & ASIS

Richard Gardiner-Casey helped found the organisations involved in my child trafficking. His mother's maiden name Gardiner was preserved due to the value placed on the Gardiner Illuminati bloodline. My father-in-law and his sisters are typically proud of their Gardiner heritage also. My father-in-law's mother was a Gardiner and blood relative of Toni Gardiner (renamed 'Muna'), the English mother of the current King Hussein of Jordan. At my husband's annual Easter family gathering, those with Gardiner heritage (called 'Innies') sat together, while the 'Outties' were ostracised to a separate dining table.

Richard Casey was crucial to the establishment of Australia's Intelligence agencies.[307] ASIO (*Australian Security Intelligence Organisation*) and ASIS (*Australian Secret Intelligence Service*). ASIO was modelled on MI5 and it functions like the FBI. ASIS is our external security force and comparable to MI6 and the CIA.

Casey became Minister for External Affairs in 1951, the year of the military agreement between Australia and the USA. Casey met with MI5 at ASIO's new Melbourne headquarters in 1952. He established ASIS that same year and had it report directly to his position. Casey appointed as ASIS head Alfred Deakin-Brookes, grandson of former PM Deakin, and son of his friend Herbert Brookes. Casey founded ASIS with the backing of MI6. The CIA later helped develop ASIS by providing equipment and officer training. ASIS remained tied to MI6 and joined its 1952 covert radio network. In September 1953, Richard Casey travelled to the USA and met with CIA Director Allen Dulles.

Richard Casey held numerous influential positions:

- WWI Army Major.
- Elected MP in 1931 for anti-communist *United Australia Party*.
- Australian Treasurer 1935 – 39.
- Represented Australian PM to British Government (1924 – 1939).
- First Australian ambassador to the USA (1940 – 42).
- Heavily involved with the UN, from 1951.
- Minister in charge of the CSIRO (1950 – 60).
- Minister for External Affairs (1951 – 60).
- CSIRO Executive, 1960.
- Oversaw USEFA (1954 - 60), helped secure funding for establishing USEFA in 1959.[308]

---

[307] Frank Cain (1994). *The Australian Security Intelligence Organization: An Unofficial History*. Frank Cass.

[308] Richard Casey, *10th Anniversary of United States Educational Foundation in Australian*, speech notes delivered at US Embassy, Canberra, 26 November 1959.

- First non-British Governor-General, 1965 - 1969
- *Australian Conservation Foundation* (ACF) patron, 1966.

CASEY'S WAR on COMMUNISM

As Prime Minister Stanley Bruce's UK representative (1924-39), Richard Casey received information from MI5 regarding members of the Communist Party of Australia (CPA) travelling to Soviet Russia. This served as the impetus for the formation of ASIS and redevelopment of ASIO. Casey also developed long-term contacts with US Intelligence organisations. Churchill subsequently stationed Casey as an intelligence operative in Cairo (1942) and Bengal (1944). Upon returning to Australia, Casey became President of the conservative Liberal Party and set about infiltrating the CPA. He associated closely with ASIO Director-General Col. Spry, bypassing the Attorney-General ministry responsible for ASIO. Casey likely influenced Spry's decision to recruit anti-Communist university graduates to ASIO, including Michael Thwaites (Oxford Rhodes Scholar, WWII Naval Officer, a Qld Premiere's grandson).

AACF

In 1950, the CIA established the US *Congress for Cultural Freedom* to combat communism and Soviet propaganda. Its Australian branch was called the *Australian Association for Cultural Freedom* (AACF). In a letter (dated 11 June 1958) to founding AACF secretary H. Richard Krygier, Richard Casey said, 'I am indeed sympathetic towards the aims of your association.' Notable AACF members were Sir Eugene Gossens (Vice President), and Ian Clunies-Ross (CSIRO head). [309]

MRA, CIA & ASIO

Initially called the *Oxford Group*, Moral Rearmament was a Christian-spiritualist movement founded by Nazi supporter Frank Buchman who planned to use MRA to create '*…a one-world religion based largely on Teutonic, Aryan, and other pagan traditions mixed with Christianity. Buchman saw Islam, Buddhism, and Hinduism as being compatible with his brand of Christianity… Hitler, too, had an affection for Islam and Buddhism…'* [310]

MRA was hijacked and then directed by the CIA's Psychological Strategy Board and managed under the code name 'Packet.' [311] MRA was used as part of a Cold War Psychological Operation aimed at 'intellectuals, scholars and opinion forming groups' for purposes of breaking down 'world-wide doctrinaire thought patterns which have provided an intellectual basis for Communism.'

KIM BEAZLEY: HEAD, ASIO HEAD CHILD TRAFFICKING

Australia's MRA operation was led by Kim Beazley Snr, the CIA-ASIO spy who served as an ALP MP for 32 years. Leonas Petrauskas informed me that Beazley 'ran kids for ASIO' as part of a 'dirty tricks' counter-intelligence operation which used child prostitutes like me to compromise and control politicians. Beazley coordinated my trafficking to Parliament House and Fairbairn Airforce Base, Canberra, and Bohemian Grove, CA.

---

[309] National Archives of Australia: Record 12812130.

[310] Christopher Story (2006). *The New Underworld Order: Triumph of Criminalism the Global Hegemony of Masonic Intelligence*. Edward Harle.

[311] Frances Stonor Saunders (2000). *Who Paid the Piper? The CIA and the Cultural Cold War.* Granta Books.

In 2014, I went public regarding a 1985 ritual held inside Bathurst City Hall. Leonas Petrauskas drove me to the event which Kim Beazley Snr jointly presided over with Australian sporting icon Richie Benaud (OBE). The Bathurst City Hall ritual occurred on the same date as the Bathurst 1000 racing event, which coincided with the 55th birthday of Australian cricketing legend Richie Benaud. Richie Benaud attended Kim Beazley Senior's MRA Pleasant Sunday Afternoon gatherings, as did his closest friend and former cricket teammate Brian Booth who grew up in Bathurst and led Benaud's funeral service.

Kim Beazley's children were raised in MRA. His daughter Merrilyn described MRA as a cult, while her brother Kim Christian Beazley Jnr was pro-MRA. Beazley Jnr was a renown CIA supporter like his father, starring in a staged expose documentary about Pine Gap in the 1980s. Former Ambassador to the US and Minister of Defence, Beazley attended the Bohemian Grove Luciferian pedophile revels in 2012.

Beazley Snr promoted MRA propaganda in leading Australian newspapers, under the headings:

- *MRA Wins Red Leaders* [312]
- *MRA the Greatest threat to Communism* [313]
- *MRA a Good Antidote Against Communism* [314]
- *MRA Changes a Red Killer* [315]
- *[MRA is Communism's] Greatest Threat in the Battle for Men's Minds* [316]

Like Scientology, MRA was used in the CIA *Occultism in High Places* program which granted the CIA 'secret channels right into the minds of leaders not only in Africa and Asia but also in Europe.'[317] Beazley Snr achieved this by travelling overseas to attend MRA events and conferences in Europe and America, where he formed relationships with leftist or communist international leaders before feeding them MRA propaganda. Beazley used MRA to form a strong relationship between Australia and Japan.[318] Jim Wilcott, a CIA accountant based in early 1960s Japan, claimed MRA 'was covertly supported and used by the CIA.'

The MRA's ASIO network included Richard Casey [319] who attended MRA *Pleasant Sunday Afternoon* (PSA) gatherings at which Beazley preached anti-communism.[320] Casey hired an early intelligence agent, Michael Rayner Thwaites (AO), a poet with no relevant qualifications besides his MRA membership and anti-Communist stance. Thwaites told the media MRA was 'a tremendous asset to me in my work in ASIO.'[321] Thwaites attended the international MRA conferences as did Beazley Sr who wrote the foreword of Thwaites 1980 book, *Truth Will Out: ASIO and the Petrov.*

H.V. Evatt (Former ALP leader and Communist sympathizer) accused Beazley of working for ASIO. Evatt was suspicious when he discovered Beazley went behind his back and delivered information regarding probable Communist spies to the Prime Minister. Beazley admitted to such but denied ASIO involvement.[322] Beazley Snr served as an executive with key MK-ULTRA organisations:

---

[312] The Advertiser, 5 June 1954, 2.
[313] The Advertiser, 4 February 1954, 6.
[314] Illawara Daily Mercury, 25 August 1953, 3.
[315] The West Australian, 29 April 1964, 8.
[316] The Canberra Times, 25 August 1953, 2.
[317] Miles Copeland (1989). *The Game Player: Confessions of the CIA's Original Political Operative.* Aurum Press, 176-177.
[318] The Canberra Times, How MRA Changed Beazley, 5 November 1994, C5.
[319] Frank Cain (1994). *The Australian Security Intelligence Organization: An Unofficial History*. Frank Cass.
[320] Sunday Times, 20 October 1951, 6.
[321] The Age, 30 April 1980, 11.

- CSIRO Advisory Council (1965 - 72, under the auspices of Richard Casey and Leonard Huxley.
- ANU Council (1951 - 72, when Leonard Huxley was ANU Vice-Chancellor).
- Joint Committee on Foreign Affairs, Vice-Chair (1967 - 69, concerning Defence and Intelligence issues).

COMMUNISTS TARGETED

The CIA targeted Australian Communists via various direct and indirect means. In July 1949, ASIO raided the headquarters of the *Communist Party of Australia* whose membership had reached approximately 6,000. In 1950, Menzies' government tried to introduce the *Communist Party Dissolution Bill*.

ASOPA COMMUNIST SPIES

After the war, DORCA became ASOPA (Australian School of Pacific Administration). ASOPA originated at Holsworthy Army barracks as the Military School of Civil Affairs in the late 1940s before moving to Mosman. ASOPA was shut down in the 1980s after ASIO determined it was heavily infiltrated by Marxist Communists and operating as a Fifth Column. ASOPA subsequently became the offices for *OzAid Centre for Pacific Development and Training*, famously at the heart of the Clinton Foundation scandal tied to child trafficking.

LEONAS PETRAUSKAS: SOVIET DOUBLE AGENT

Leonas played for the Lithuanian basketball team. Lithuania shifted between Soviet and Nazi occupation. Leonas was an officer in the German-Lithuanian Army, working at hospitals under Nazi control that focused on eugenics. His daughter Krista Petrauskas loaned my researcher Steve McMurray her father's original Nazi papers for me to view. Leonas' family admitted he was close to the Luftwaffe for the purpose of navigating and escaping war torn areas, and said he saved the life of a German soldier.

Leonas deserted the Nazis and fled to Australia through the *International Refugee Organisation* where he served as a doctor specialising in internal medicine. A letter of reference (dated 30 April 1948) signed by 'Dr T. Maavere' states that Leonas Petrauskas was employed in the Medical Department of *PC International Refugee Organisation Ludwigsburg Resettlement Centre* from 1 July 1947 until 1 May 1948. He added: 'I know him as honest most reliable and hardworking internist and I recommend him highly.'

The IRO was a haven for European Fascists who were later recruited by Western Intelligence organisations including ASIO.[323] Australia's intelligence agencies were convinced Leonas Petrauskas was a Nazi or they would not have let him in. Considering he immigrated to Australia at his father's height of power, and his associates in Australia and PNG, it is evident Leonas Petrauskas was a loyal Communist rather than a National Socialist. Leonas Petrauskas and his associates were likely double spies for Soviet Russia.

---

[322] K.E. Beazley (2009). *Father of the House: The Memoirs of Kim E. Beazley*. Fremantle Press.

[323] Mark Aaron (1989). *Sanctuary! Nazi Fugitives in Australia.* William Heinemann.

Reichsärztekammer
Körperſchaft des öffentlichen Rechts
Ärztekammer Oberdonau

Linz-Oberdonau
Dinghoferſtraße 4, Ärztehaus
Fernſprecher 2 63 71
Bank-Konto:
Landes-Hypothekenanſtalt Linz Nr. 5891

Unſere Abteilung: Der Leiter
Unſer Zeichen: Dr.W./M.
Ihr Schreiben vom:
Ihr Zeichen:
Tag: 5.2.1945.

Bestätigung.

Herr Dr.Leonas Petrauskas wird der internen Abteilung des Allgemeinen Krankenhauses, Linz, Ausweiche Bad-Hall als Assistenzarzt zugewiesen.

Der Leiter i.V.:
(Dr.Wimmer).

Q/9178 - R 5061 44

Kipras Petrauskas**,** Leona's father, was a famous Lithuanian actor and opera singer with the National Opera Foundation. Kipras used his opera singer status to provide propaganda for one of the earlier Soviet revolutions. Kipras Petrauskas was highly influential in Soviet Russia from 1951 to 54. He received the Stalin Prize in 1951, the *Order of Lenin* (the highest Soviet award for both civilians and military personnel), the *Order of the Red Banner of Labour*, and he won the Popular Artists Award of the USSR. Kipras represented Lithuania within the Soviet Union. Shortly after Leonas migrated to Australia, Kipras was made Deputy to the Supreme Soviet Union, the highest branch of government within the Soviet Union, and the only body with the power to pass constitutional amendments.

Leonas Petrauskas' daughter Krista Petrauskas was also in the Theosophical Society, and closely associated with the AMORC Rosicrucian Order, a Luciferian Freemasonic group attended by Aleister Crowley and praised by Lenin. According to Krista, Rosicrucian Master Bergio Panikian (relative of the current Grand Master of AMORC Australia) 'saved her life.' ASIO investigated AMORC for many years, suspecting it was a front for Soviet Communists and enemies of the West. Krista associated with KGB spy Jim Cairns and his Marxist mistress Junie Morosi who worked for the CIA. Cairns was prominent in the Labour Party and a Marxist who started the counterculture in Australia.

ASSASSINATED SOVIET SPIES

Three of my key perpetrators were seemingly assassinated for being Communist spies: Patricia Anne Conlon, University of Sydney Vice Chancellor John Ward, and Chinese heart surgeon Victor Chang. Patricia 'Anne' Conlon (nee Carden) was Alf Conlon's daughter-in-law. Anne went by her middle name to distinguish herself from her mother Patricia. Her biography reads:

Patricia Anne Conlon *(1939-1979), feminist, Labor movement activist and public servant, was born on 2 November 1939 at Neutral Bay, Sydney. Anne was educated at St Joseph's Convent School, Neutral Bay, Monte Sant' Angelo College, North Sydney (dux 1956), and—on a teacher's scholarship—at the University of Sydney (BA, 1961; MA, 1973) where she became senior student at Sancta Sophia College.*

Renowned for her soprano voice, she competed in the City of Sydney Eisteddfod, and performed in choral and musical productions at school and university.

Disappointed at missing first-class honours in history, Carden taught in public high schools (which she found unrewarding) before and after spending 1964-65 on a postgraduate scholarship at the University of Saskatchewan, Canada. At St John's College, Sydney, on 29 September 1967 she married Telford James Conlon, a physicist belonging to a Labor-connected family.

In 1968 she became research assistant to John Manning Ward, professor of History at the University of Sydney, and in 1973 completed her master's thesis, Eyewitness Accounts of Australia—1815-1850. Her son was born in 1971 and her daughter in 1974.

A founding member (1972) of the Women's Electoral Lobby, Conlon stood unsuccessfully as the Australian Labor Party candidate for Mosman at a by-election for the Legislative Assembly in July 1972. Next year she was a convener of W.E.L.'s first national conference in Canberra. She helped to produce submissions on conciliation and arbitration legislation to the Federal government, on the disadvantaged position of single mothers to R.F. Henderson's commission of inquiry into poverty, and—with Edna Ryan—on the minimum wage for women to the 1974 national wage case.

Awarded a grant by the Australian National Advisory Committee of International Women's Year 1975, Conlon and Ryan expanded their research into a book, Gentle Invaders (1975), which was notable both for the depth and quality of its evidence, and for its pioneering work on the history of women and labour in Australia. Conlon published articles on issues involving women in the Electrical Trades Union's E.T.U. News, Catholic Weekly and Australian Quarterly. An article based on her thesis had appeared in 1970 in the Journal of the Royal Australian Historical Society. In 1976 she was appointed lecturer at the Australian Trade Union Training Authority.

A founding member (1977) of the New South Wales Women's Advisory Council, Conlon became special projects officer with the government's Women's Co-ordination Unit in February 1978. She worked on the Anti-Discrimination Act (1977), on an amendment to the maternity-leave provision and on the welfare of women prisoners. Her achievements impressed the premier Neville Wran.

Tall and striking, auburn haired and freckled, Conlon was witty, energetic, compassionate and extremely loyal. At Sancta Sophia she had been volatile and chronically unpunctual. Although she retained her Catholic faith, she broke for a time with the institutional Church because, she believed, it had failed to respond to the

> *women's cause. She was a good debater, and had presence and authority, but did not seek the limelight, preferring to be a 'backroom operator' and to rely on an impressive network of friends and supporters. Politically astute, she was one of the few women in WEL who belonged to the Australian Labor Party; she disavowed the prevailing philosophy that women should remain lobbyists and not join political parties.*
>
> *To her profound grief, her marriage collapsed and in January 1979 she was divorced. Six months later she was diagnosed as suffering from cancer. Survived by her children, she died on 13 December 1979 at Mater Misericordiae Hospital North Sydney. Hundreds of people packed a requiem Mass at nearby St Mary's Church; typically, she had meticulously arranged her own funeral, even the hymns sung by the choir of her old school. She is commemorated by an annual memorial lecture sponsored by the W.A.C. and by a building at Mulawa Training and Detention Centre for Women which bears her name.*[324]

Here are some details Anne Conlon’s biography missed:

- Anne grew up in Greenwich where Antony Kidman lived. She was born one year after Kidman, making them contemporaries.
- Anne’s husband Telford Conlon was close friends, co-authored research articles, worked in labs, and participated in the Sydney music and theatre scene with Antony Kidman.
- Telford wrote Defence science technology policy in Canberra, was involved in MK-ULTRA mind control genetics research, and with the CSIRO at Lucas Heights.
- Anne performed in the July 1960 production of *The Fairy Queen* at Sydney University Great Hall with Shakespearean actor John Bell.
- Anne received a social sciences scholarship to train at the University of Saskatchewan under MK-ULTRA professors Humphrey Osmond and Abraham Hoffer.
- Anne worked as Special Projects Officer for pedophile ALP Premier Neville Wran (Fort Street Boys High School graduate, implicated in corruption scandals, daughter was charged with murder).
- The Carden family has a history of HOGD affiliation. In England, Anne Rule Carden, whose son James immigrated from England to Australia, was a member of both the HOGD and Theosophical Society.
- Anne's father John 'Jack' Carden strangled her mother to death at their Neutral Bay home on 5 January 1984. During his court appearance, John Carden said why he killed his wife: ‘I have been blamed and abused for everything. I could not do anything right. I just could not take it anymore.’

Fabian Society

Patricia Anne Conlon was associated with the Australian Fabian Society and helped them advance socialism via Cultural Marxism (gradual and reformist activities instead of overt revolt). The Australian Fabians are closely tied to the ALP. Numerous ALP ministers were active members of the Fabians while in office, including Gough Whitlam, Bob Hawke

---

[324] Elizabeth Windschuttle, *Conlon, Patricia Anne (1939–1979)*, Australian Dictionary of Biography, National Centre of Biography, ANU.

(Communist Party associate), Paul Keating, and Neville Wran – all University of Sydney graduates, all pedophiles.

Faked Death

Anne Conlon said she was wanted for 'treason' and faked own death on 13 December 1979. She hid at the University of Sydney's Sancta Sophia College for five years, serving as a dorm supervisor under the alias 'Veronica' (or 'Ronnie') before being 'discovered' and died when I was 14 years old. Anne copied British Labor Party minister John Stonehouse who faked his own death after MI5 realized he was a Soviet spy.[325] Anne Conlon's National Archives file is sealed for reasons of 'national security' which further supports the notion she was a spy.

John Madden Ward

John Ward attended Fort Street Boys High School followed by the University of Sydney where he was heavily influenced by Marxist lecturer John Anderson. Ward hid Anne Conlon at Sydney University's Sancta Sophia College during his Vice-Chancellorship, and I recall the two having sex in her bed. John Ward was seemingly assassinated shortly after his retirement from Sydney University in 1990. Ward, his family, and several loyal university staff were aboard the rear carriage of a steam train returning from an excursion to the Hunter Valley. A bizarre series of events, including sand being scattered on the train tracks and someone pulling a handbrake, caused Ward's carriage to be struck and decimated by another train. Ward, his wife, daughter, and key staff were killed.

Victor Chang

Less than a year after the hit on Ward, famed Chinese heart surgeon (and Delta Colonel) Victor Chang was assassinated. NSW detectives initially publicly blamed Chang's murder on the Triads, one of Britain's assassination groups.

It seems my perpetrators, united by their involvement in MK-ULTRA and pedophilia, had divided loyalties. One faction, including 'Comrade' Gittinger, Petrauskas, the Conlons, Chang, and Ward, were loyal to Communist Russia and China. The opposing group, including Beazley Sr and Jr, Kerr, Hawke, and Casey, served the British Monarchy. This scenario makes more sense of the coup d'état the CIA conducted against Whitlam.

1975 CIA COUP

The existence of ASIS remained top secret, even from the Australian Government, until 1972 when Gough Whitlam's ALP government targeted ASIO and ASIS for exposure. Lionel Murphy authorised raids on ASIO headquarters in 1973. Whitlam established the *First Hope Commission* (1974-77) to investigate our intelligence services, and he removed both ASIO and ASIS directors in 1975. Whitlam threatened to name the CIA agents in Australia and refused to renew the CIA's lease on Pine Gap. Consistent with his election promise to 'expose Pine Gap!' Whitlam visited the underground base; however, during a subsequent press conference at which journalists asked him what he saw at Pine Gap, Whitlam (famous for his wit) became uncharacteristically vague and incoherent, muttering there was nothing to see. Whitlam presented as hypnotised.

The CIA conducted their coup d'état against Gough Whitlam in 1975. The film *Falcon and the Snowman* is based on the events surrounding this. During Whitlam's revolt against the CIA, they referred to the British Queen's representative as 'Our man Kerr.' The British Queen, in her role as Australia's Head of State, dismissed the Australian Prime Minister through her Governor-General, Sir John Kerr, amid a manipulated 'constitutional crisis.' Sir Garfield Barwick (Fort St Boys High Old Boy, Chief Justice of the High Court) advised Kerr to remove Whitlam. Governor-General and CIA agent John Kerr enacted archaic legislation to dismiss Whitlam. Traitor Bob Hawke assisted the coup d'état by calming the Unions who were about to mass strike in protest and shut the country down. Like all Trade Union leaders, Rhodes scholar Hawke attended leadership training at Harvard.

---

[325] Arthur Martin, Former Labour minister who faked his own death was Communist spy, *Daily Mail* [Online], 6 October 2009.

USEFA: MK-ULTRA FUNDING BODY

The Rhodes and Fulbright Scholarships were used to indoctrinate and train Australians of influence and power in England and the USA. USEFA (*US Educational Foundation in Australia*) was the Australian body of the Fulbright Scholarship and Lectureship Program.[326] The CIA used USEFA to transfer MK-ULTRA doctors between Australia and the USA. For example, only two psychology Fulbright Scholarships were provided in 1956, to: Raymond Cattell who attended the University of Melbourne where Oscar Adolph Oeser headed Psychology; and Daniel L. Adler who attended ANU. He attained his PhD with MK-ULTRA co-founder Kurt Lewin.[327]

USEFA was based at the ANU during its crucial years. The USA funded USEFA from its 1959 inception until 1965, via the IIE (*Institute of International Education*), a CIA conduit founded by Elihu Root (CFR founder, *Carnegie Endowment* co-founder, *Pilgrim's Society* member) and CFR member Stephen P. Duggan (aka, the 'Apostle of Internationalism').

ACADEMY OF SOCIAL SCIENCES IN AUSTRALIA

Founded in 1942 under the name *Social Science Research Council of Australia*, ASSA (*Academy of Social Sciences in Australia*) became a nexus of Intelligence and MK-ULTRA operatives. For example, the 1956 ASSA Council included the usual suspects: Alfred Conlon, Herbert C. 'Nugget' Coombs, Oscar A. Oeser, and Cecil A. Gibb. To further illustrate, ASSA is composed of four panels of fellows. 'Panel D' (Education, Psychology, and Social Medicine) was staffed by MK-ULTRA researchers: Ronald Taft, Peter W. Sheehan, John Phillip Sutcliffe, Jacqueline Goodnow, Kevin McConkey, and Alan Richardson.

ASSA was influenced by UNESCO and funded by the Carnegie Corporation.[328] The ASSA Council met with the heads of UNESCO Australia in October 1956 to decide the direction of their eugenics program in Australia. ASSA headquarters were located at ANU where Leonard Huxley served as chair.[329] [330] ASSA worked alongside the AAS (*Australian Academy of Science*).[331] Leonard Huxley sat on the AAS Council in 1956 and became Vice-President the following year.[332]

---

[326] Dept. State International Educational Exchange Program, American Lecturers and Researchers Scholars Receiving US Government Awards the Fulbright Act, 1957-58 Academic Year. Professional Activities Division, International Educational Exchange Service, 23 August 1957.

[327] Donald K. Routh (Ed.) (1982*). Learning, Speech, and the Complex Effects of Punishment*. University of Iowa.

[328] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *Annual Report* 1957.

[329] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *Annual Report* 1956.

[330] Leonard George Holden Huxley 1902-1988, Australian Academy of Science: Biographical Memoires of deceased Fellows. Australian Science Archives Project, University of Melbourne. [Online]

[331] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *Annual Report* (1957).

[332] Leonard George Holden Huxley 1902-1988, Australian Academy of Science: Biographical Memoires of deceased Fellows. Australian Science Archives Project, University of Melbourne.

LEONARD HUXLEY: AUSTRALIAN MK-ULTRA COORDINATOR

Thomas Huxley (1825-95) established the Huxley-Wedgewood family connection to Australia and PNG when he spent three years (1847-49) exploring the region. He met his wife in Sydney and later unsuccessfully applied for a position at the University of Sydney. His great grandson, Leonard George Holden Huxley (1902-88) closely associated with his relative Julian Huxley while attending Oxford on Rhodes Scholarship. Together Leonard and Julian helped establish and coordinate MK-ULTRA in Australia. Leonard Huxley served as an executive on numerous boards and committees: [333]

- University of Adelaide, Council (1953-60)
- ASS Council (1956); Vice-President (1957)
- ANU Vice-Chancellor (1960-67), Council (1956-59)
- USEFA Board (1960-65, oversaw Fulbright Lectureship granted to Martin Orne).
- CSIRO Board (1960, with Richard Casey).
- Australian/American Educational Foundation, Chair (1965-69)
- Australian Radio Research Board, Chair (1958-64)
- National Standards Commission, First Chair (1950-64)
- Radio Frequency Allocations Committee, Chair (1960-64)
- National Library of Australia, Council (1961-72)
- Committee on Space Research, Delegate (1959-60)
- Australian Institute of Physics, First President (1963-65)

Leonard Huxley approved the Fulbright Scholarship of Stanford University anthropologist John D. McCaffrey in 1956. MK-ULTRA co-founder Gregory Bateson was one of John McCaffrey's referees. John McCaffrey's Fulbright research proposal outlined a visual approach to recording feedback from Aborigines via their artwork. This study mirrored an unethical MK-ULTRA experiment by US Military doctor Alexander H. Leighton at the Japanese War Relocation Centre at Poston, Mojave Desert. Both studies aimed to learn about the concept of feedback which is relevant to understanding human personality.[334] The significance of feedback was discovered in a brainwashing experiment at McCaffrey's Stanford University.

Julian Huxley wrote a letter (dated 7 October 1953) to the wife of ASIO founder Richard Gardiner Casey, suggesting she ask her husband to facilitate the anthropological study of Indigenous Australians as follows: (a) release an amateur anthropologist from his federal Government position to pursue an expedition financed by a major US University; (b) finance the research of professional anthropologist Ted Strehlow (expert in Aboriginal spiritual knowledge including myths and 'ritual' and who previously taught at Conlon's DORCA), and (c) appoint Strehlow as a Social Studies Professor at ANU. Huxley said of Strehlow:

> *He has just made some colour films, one of which I saw, on some Aboriginal totemic ritual – it is the most wonderful record of a primitive ritual that I have ever seen. He still appears to have difficulty in getting money – a trivial sum – to put a good*

---

[333] Australian Academy of Science, Biographical Memoirs of Deceased Fellows: Leonard Holden Huxley 1902-1988.

[334] John Collier & Malcolm Collier (1986). *Visual Anthropology: Photography as a Research Method*. University of New Mexico.

> *soundtrack on it. I wonder if the Minister for Territories [Richard Casey] could help in this?... In haste – just leaving for Tasmania.*

Ted Strehlow subsequently received funding in 1954 from the Academy of Social Sciences in Australia (ASSA) for his study, *Pre-White Organisation of Aranda Tribe and Effect of Contact with White Settlers*.[335] In 1955, Strehlow received funding[336] for a pamphlet titled, *The sustaining ideal of Australian Aboriginal Societies*.[337] Strehlow went on to develop the ASSA *Aborigines Project* which was headed by ASOPA Principal Charles D. Rowley, with contributions from Ronald Taft and John Phillip Sutcliffe.[338] Two other MK-ULTRA operatives received ASSA research funding in 1956: Oscar A. Oeser and John Phillip Sutcliffe.

OSCAR ADOLPH OESER

Oscar Oeser was recruited as a British Intelligence officer by Ian Fleming, author of the James Bond series.[339] Oeser employed Tavistock founder Eric Trist to conduct research in 1935.[340] Oeser was the founding Professor of the University of Melbourne Psychology Department, and 1956 Chair of the Australian Psychological Society. In 1956, Oeser was in contact with Richard Gardiner Casey who founded Australia's intelligence organisations (ASIO and ASIS) in association with the CIA and MI6. As Minister for External Affairs, Richard Casey held authority over the USEFA / Fulbright Scheme in Australia until he left office in 1960. Oeser's name appears in the 1959 recommendations list for Fulbright Lecturer/Research scholars. Oeser received Leverhulme, Carnegie and Rockefeller scholarships to tour Asia, Europe, UK and the USA.

AUSTRALIAN LINKS TO CIA PERSONALITY RESEARCH

University of Western Australia

In 1949, psychologist Ronald Taft commenced work for the Rockefeller-funded *Institute of Personality Assessment and Research* (IPAR) with 'veterans of Henry Murray's OSS Assessment team.' In 1961, University of Western Australia's Professor Taft received a CIA Human Ecology Fund (HEF) research grant to study the *Relationship between Health, Personality and Environmental Factors in Groups*. That same year, Martin Orne received HEF finance for *Attitude Formation, Decision Matrices*. Robert E. Goodnow also received CIA funding for his 'Personality Studies' in 1961.

Jacqueline and Robert Goodnow

Ronald Taft and Alfred Hammer were closely tied to Jacqueline Goodnow, the Australian child psychologist who specialized in personality and cognition. Jacqueline interned at MK-ULTRA hub St. Elizabeth's Hospital in Washington, DC.[341] The Freemasonic *Scottish Rite*

---

[335] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *1956 Annual Report*.

[336] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *1957 Annual Report*.

[337] T.G.H Strehlow (1956). *The Sustaining Ideal of Australian Aboriginal Societies*, Pamphlet. Hawthorn Press, Melbourne.

[338] Social Science Research Council of Australia, *Annual Report* (1966-67).

[339] Alan Kennedy (2014). *Oscar and Lucy*. Lasserrade.

[340] Richard Trahair (2015). *Behaviour, Technology, and Organizational Development: Eric Trist and the Tavistock Institute*. Transaction Publishers.

[341] R.D. Walk (1990). *Jacqueline Jarrett Goodnow*. In O'Connell, A.N. (ed.). Women in Psychology: A Bio-bibliographic Sourcebook. New York, NY: Greenwood, 134, 137–40.

Schizophrenia Research Project (SRSRP) was based at the hospital. Winfred Overholser, the 32^{0} Freemason who ran St. Elizabeth's (1937-1962) was directly involved in the SRSRP project. In 1951, Jacqueline married Robert E. Goodnow who co-founded *Psychological Assessments Associates* (PAA) with CIA head psychologist (my perpetrator) John W. Gittinger. Robert Goodnow was PAA President and contributed to Gittinger's clandestine *Personality Assessment System* research.[342] In 1951, the Goodnows conducted PAS research and psychological assessment for Gittinger and the US Military in Munich, Germany. In 1959, Jacqueline followed Robert on his CIA-financed travel to locations including Hong Kong where she became a research fellow with the University of Hong Kong and conducted intelligence testing on Chinese children in 1960.[343]

MK-ULTRA victim Karen Wetmore said PAA conducted personality assessments on children at Vermont State Hospital. The PAA folded after its CIA operation was exposed. In 1971, *The Washington Post* reported, 'the new operating group is seeking to divest itself of the CIA financial sponsorship.' A year later, Sidney Gottlieb, head of CIA mind control operations, fled to Australia and disappeared without a trace. The Goodnows' official association with PAA ended in 1974 - the same year Gittinger first assessed me in Australia.
The Goodnows' son Christopher, born in Hong Kong, completed his PhD with Sir Gustav Nossal (Jesuit-schooled, Jewish eugenicist, University of Sydney biology major, works as a UN WHO consultant and for the *Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation*).

Macquarie University

Jacqueline and Robert Goodnow returned to Australia in 1972 and joined the Macquarie University *School of Behavioural Sciences* founded by Ian K. Waterhouse (an Australian Military Psychologist, and former Tavistock Clinic student). Peter Van Sommers became Associate Professor at Macquarie that same year. Alfred Hammer became Emeritus Professor at Macquarie also.

PROJECT MK-ULTRA TRANSFERRED TO AUSTRALIA

Antony Kidman also returned to Australia in 1972. John W. Gittinger regularly visited Australia to oversee MK-ULTRA, and train and supervise MK-ULTRA perpetrators including Antony Kidman. Gittinger used me to demonstrate his methods. MK-ULTRA's 1971 public exposure in the US preceded mass IQ testing in NSW government schools, recruitment in government children's homes and other institutions, and the removal of all psychiatric patients from Milson Island in the Hawkesbury River north of Sydney (which became a MK-ULTRA research facility). I deduce the CIA transferred the operation to socialist Australia where it was easier to conduct clandestine child recruitment.

ANTONY KIDMAN

Kidman studied psychology at the University of Sydney during Martin Orne's 1960 lectureship. From 1969 to 1972, Benjamin Weiss supervised Kidman in the *Laboratory of Preclinical Pharmacology* at St Elizabeth's Hospital, Washington DC. St Elizabeth's was an LSD research hub and served the *Scottish Rite Schizophrenia Research Program* (SRSRP). The lab was co-founded by LSD mind control researcher Joel Elkes and run by Erminio Costa who made critical discoveries regarding LSD effects on the human brain.[344] Costa, Elkes, and Weiss attended Scottish Rite sponsored events on Schizophrenia. Weiss later received hundreds of thousands of dollars in SRSRP research funding, and he chaired an SRSRP event. Kidman, Costa and Weiss published a research paper together in 1971.[345]

---

[342] Robert E. Goodnow (1962). *The Gittinger Theory of Personality*. [pas.org]

[343] Robert E. Goodnow (1961). *Analysis of differential abilities in the Chinese*. In J. Cohen, Measurement of personality traits resulting from the interaction of abilities and environment. Symposium presented at the meeting of the American Psychological Association, New York.

MAUDSLEY IoP: AUSTRALIAN MK-ULTRA BASE

The Institute of Psychiatry (IoP), Maudsley Hospital in London was the 'staging ground for European and African MK-ULTRA operations.'[346] Evidence suggests it was also a staging ground for Australian operations.

In 1936, Julian Huxley encouraged his friend Julian Trevelyan to participate in a mescaline study at the Maudsley.[347] Julian's brother Aldous Huxley later wrote about his experiences of taking mescaline.[348] Julian Trevelyan married the great-granddaughter of Charles Darwin, making him related to the Huxleys.

Most pre-WW2 IoP finance came from the Rockefeller Foundation, which enabled an exchange of doctors between the London's Maudsley and Nazi Germany.[349] The IoP was initially Tavistock clinic's competitor; but came under Tavistock control when the British Army and Intelligence crowd, including John Rawlings Rees and Eric Trist, commenced operations there. Julian Huxley later promoted the IoP work of Eliot Slater,[350] the British *Eugenics Society* Vice-Chair who worked extensively with William Walters Sargant (who served MI5 and MI6). From the late 1950s onward, the IoP was home to MK-ULTRA Sub-project 111 directed by Hans J. Eysenck.[351] Australian psychologist Donald W. McElwain conducted psychological experiments at Maudsley in the early 1950s.[352] [353]

Australian psychologist Wendy Thorn travelled to the IoP to conduct research with Hans Eysenck who lectured at the University of Sydney during his 1977 Australian tour.[354] Other Australian-Maudsley connections are apparent from William Sargant's involvement at the hospital, since he influenced serial killer Harry Bailey. MK-ULTRA sleep deprivation researcher Ardie Lubin was based at the IoP until he left to study with Jacqueline Goodnow at the *Walter Reed Army Institute of Research*. [355] [356]

---

[344] T.R Shapiro (2009). Erminio Costa, 85, Dies: A Discoverer of How Serotonin Works. *Washington Post*, 22 December 2009.

[345] A.D. Kidman, B. Weiss & E. Costa, Protein metabolism and amino acid accumulation in the rat submaxillary gland during reduced sympathetic activity. J Neurochem. 1971 Jun;18(6):817-26.

[346] Paul Robeson Jr. (2010). *The Undiscovered Paul Robeson: Quest for Freedom, 1939-1976*. Wiley.

[347] Philip Trevelyan (2013). *Julian Trevelyan: Picture Language*. Lund Humphries.

[348] Aldous Huxley (1954). *The Doors of Perception.* Chatto & Windus.

[349] V. Roelcke, P.J. Weindling & L. Westwood (2010). Germany and the Making of 'English' Psychiatry: The Maudsley Hospital, 1908–1939. In International Relations in Psychiatry: Britain, Germany, and the United States to World War II. Boydell & Brewer.

[350] K.R. Dronamraju & J. Needham (1993). *If I Am to Be Remembered: Correspondence of Julian Huxley*. World Scientific.

[351] Duncan Campbell, CIA Funds Research by Eysenck. In *New Statesman*, 11 May 1979, 97.

[352] Roderick D. Buchanan (2010). *Playing with Fire: The controversial career of Hans J. Eysenck*. Oxford University Press.

[353] D.W. McElwain & A. Lubin (1950) A note on the notion of psychological significance, *Australian Journal of Psychology*, 2:1, 43-51.

[354] Arthur Rudkin, Hans Eysenck – questioning the evidence, *Sydney Morning Herald*, 30 September 1977, 7.

[355] Ivy Bennett (Ed.) (1960). *Delinquent and Neurotic Children: A comparative study.* Tavistock.

[356] A.N. O'Connell & N.F. Russo (eds.) (1990). *Women in Psychology: A Bio-bibliographic Sourcebook.* Greenwood.

Antony Kidman's connection to the IoP is evidenced by Nicole Kidman visiting the Maudsley (now IoPPN) in 2016 to create the *Dr Antony Kidman Scholarship in Health Psychology*.[357]

MK-ULTRA 'INESCAPABLE SHOCK' RESEARCH

American banker and businessman, Joseph Seligman (d. 1880) was patriarch of the Hofjuden Seligman family. His home served as the first headquarters of Rothschilds' B'nai B'rith assassin group. CIA psychologist Martin Seligman continued the murderous legacy:

> *The CIA's 'enhanced interrogation techniques,' outlined in a controversial report released earlier this month from the Senate Intelligence Committee, was influenced by a Penn professor's research. Psychology professor Martin E.P. Seligman famously conducted studies at Penn in the 1960s that revealed a 'learned helplessness' in dogs subjected to repeated electric shocks. Instead of adjusting their behaviour upon receiving multiple shocks, the dogs remained in place, providing valuable insight into the workings of depressed or abused persons. Now, his research is being used for torture rather than healing according the Senate report.*[358]

Martin Seligman conducted torture research at America's MK-ULTRA hub, the University of Pennsylvania. He and Steven Maier electrocuted dogs trapped in cages. They observed some dogs became unresponsive and lost the ability to avoid the torture. Seligman called the resultant condition 'Inescapable Shock' - but changed this to the more palatable 'Learned Helplessness.'

Learned helplessness: ***The condition in which a person suffers from a sense of powerlessness arising from a traumatic event or persistent failure to succeed.***

Louis Jolyon West and B.F. Skinner repeated Seligman's electric shock experiments at Harvard using intellectually disabled children, some three years old. Martin Seligman spent a 1975 'sabbatical' at the Maudsley IoP where he met Hans Eysenck, studied phobias and obsessions, and developed Learned Helplessness methods.[359] Seligman attended the IoP alongside Stanley Rachman with whom he previously collaborated on Learned Helplessness research.[360] [361] [362]

Seligman's Learned Helplessness formed the basis of the CIA Torture Program.[363] In 2001, Seligman met with top CIA psychologists and agents at his house for what became known as 'the start of the program.'[364] This meeting occurred just months after Seligman met with Antony Kidman at the University of Technology, Sydney (UTS). The meeting included at least one Mossad agent plus psychologist James Mitchell who was paid $81 million to develop the CIA torture programme.

---

[357] Kings College London, Nicole Kidman establishes IoPPN Scholarship in Health Psychology, 22 March 2016.

[358] Dan Spinelli (2014). Penn prof. 'horrified' life's research is connected to CIA torture techniques. *The Daily Pennsylvanian,* 22 Dec.

[359] Roderick D. Buchanan (2010). *Playing with Fire: The controversial career of Hans J. Eysenck*. Oxford University Press.

[360] P. DeSilva, S. Rachman & M.E. Seligman (1977). Prepared phobias and obsessions: therapeutic outcome. Behav Res Ther.15:1, 65-77.

[361] Rachman & M.E. Seligman (1976). Unprepared phobias: 'Be prepared.' Behav Res Ther. 14:5, 333-8

[362] Dan Spinelli (2014). Penn prof. 'horrified' life's research is connected to CIA torture techniques. *The Daily Pennsylvanian,* 22 Dec.

[363] Maria Konnikova (2015). Trying to Cure Depression, but Inspiring Torture. *The New Yorker*, 14 Jan.

[364] Mark Benjamin (2010). 'War on Terror' Gets a Giant No-Bid Contract. *Salon*, 14 Oct.

In 2014, a *US Senate Select Committee on Intelligence* report concluded: (a) the CIA 'enhanced interrogation' program was counter-productive to its expressed goal of gathering intelligence; (b) James Mitchell developed a 'menu' of 20 torture techniques including waterboarding and sleep deprivation; and (c) Mitchell used SERE (*Survive, Evade, Resist, Escape*) tactics to develop the CIA torture program. SERE tactics were derived from Chinese brain-washing techniques used on US POWs during the Korean War.[365] [366] SERE includes MK-ULTRA methods found in the *Kubark Manual* (1963) and the CIA *Phoenix Program.*

(Incidentally, on 24 February 2004, Martin Seligman was one of only 40 or so guests who attended The Edge 'Billionaires Dinner' at Monterey, CA with child trafficking pedophile Jeffrey Epstein.)

The APA (*American Psychological Association*) commissioned an independent report to determine the role their organisation played in Seligman's CIA torture programme. The report revealed direct collusion at the highest levels of the APA which ensured psychologists like Martin Seligman and James Mitchell could participate in abusive torture methods.[367]

In 2010, the US Army awarded Martin Seligman a $31 million no-bid contract to develop a 'resilience training' program for soldiers. The resultant *Comprehensive Soldier Fitness Program* was an unethical research project under the guise of an exercise program.[368] Martin Seligman's unethical experiment denied soldiers' rights to informed consent and forced them to abandon critical thinking and respond more obediently using Positive Psychology. In a component called 'Spiritual Fitness' soldiers were told religion is essential to achieve better mental health. Positive Psychology promotes Tibetan Buddhism, meaning Buddhism was the religion forced on soldiers during Seligman's experiment. The US Army admitted the experiment's purpose was to produce an 'indomitable army.'

SELIGMAN & KIDMAN

Antony Kidman became a lifelong associate of Martin Seligman at the University of Pennsylvania where he studied under Aaron Tim Beck, father of CBT (*Cognitive Behavioural Therapy*). Kidman and Seligman subsequently published books together and introduced CBT and Positive Psychology to Australia.[369]

Martin Seligman conducted Learned Helplessness research at the IoP while Antony Kidman was involved with Learned Helplessness at the University of Sydney's *Kolling Institute of Medical Research*, which is located at the Royal North Shore Hospital. The resultant 1975 paper, *The Experimental Contusion Injury of the Spinal Cord in Sheep,* was co-authored by J.D. Yeo, W. Payne, B. Hinwood, and A.D. Kidman.[370] The researchers used an 'impounder' to simulate spinal trauma, paraplegia and sensory loss in the hind limbs of sheep. The spinal injury created a neurological response like electric shock, only more intense. While the other three researchers were interested in paraplegia and observing the efficacy of treatments applied to spinal cord trauma, biochemist Kidman focused on the post-trauma effects of norepinephrine. Kidman and his colleagues found:

---

[365] Scott Shane (2008). China Inspired Interrogations at Guantánamo. *The New York Times*, 2 July.

[366] A.D. Biderman (1957). Communist Attempts to Elicit False Confessions from Air Force Prisoners of War. *Bulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine*. September, 33:9, 616–625.

[367] James Risen (2015). Outside Psychologists Shielded US Torture Program, Report Finds. *The New York Times*, 10 July.

[368] Roy Eidelson (2011). The Dark Side of 'Comprehensive Soldier Fitness': mandatory 'resilience training' program for all US soldiers raises concerns. *Psychology Today*. 25 March.

[369] M.E.P. Seligman (Foreword, Antony Kidman) (1994). *Learned Optimism: Optimism is Essential for a Good and Successful Life: You too can Acquire it*. Random House.

[370] J.D. Yeo, W. Payne, B.G. Hinwood & A.D. Kidman (1975). The experimental contusion injury of the spinal cord in sheep. *Paraplegia*, 12, 275-296.

1. *A fourfold increase in the levels of or norepinephrine*;
2. *Low levels of dopamine within one hour have not been substantiated in more recent work by other laboratories*;
3. *The time interval following the trauma is important and further work on monoamine 'turnover' is necessary to elucidate this complex problem*.

The cause of the Learned Helplessness phenomena was unclear at that time of Kidman's sheep research, with some theorising it was a rapid norepinephrine depletion following the initial shock or trauma.[371] The resultant article cited a 1974 paper concerning a similar experiment with cats.[372] The cat study is cited in a 2007 article (titled, 'The Role of Stress in Recovery of Function After Spinal Cord Injury') which also cites Seligman's 1975 Learned Helplessness Theory. In other words, Kidman's sheep experiment was linked to Seligman's Learned Helplessness research via relevant citations, plus its aim, method, and neurotransmitter observations.

POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGY *IS* MK-ULTRA MIND CONTROL

Positive Psychology began in the 1960s with humanistic and existential psychology, which emphasized reaching innate potential and creating life meaning. MK-ULTRA doctor Abraham Maslow coined the term 'Positive Psychology' to describe his work. Albert Ellis, the 'unsung hero of positive psychology,' demonstrated his original work at a 1960s Esalen Institute seminar.[373] [374]

Positive Psychology is fundamentally connected to both Cognitive Behavioural Therapy (CBT) and Learned Helplessness.[375] Walter Reed Army Hospital psychologist Aaron T. Beck developed CBT with Albert Ellis. Positive Psychology is based on CBT.[376] Beck explained the similarities between CBT and Positive Psychology during a 2012 *Beck Institute* Workshop. Aaron Beck and Albert Ellis influenced Martin Seligman and Antony Kidman and their introduction of CBT and Positive Psychology to Australia. Seligman introduced Positive Psychology in his first address as American Psychological Association President in 1998, with fellow APA member Antony Kidman in attendance.[377]

---

[371] Symposium (1998). *The science of Optimism and Hope*. In Research Essays in Honour of Martin E.P. Seligman. Philadelphia, PA.

[372] N.E. Naftchi et al. (1974). Biogenic amine concentrations in traumatized spinal cords of cats. Effect of Drug Therapy. *Journal of Neurosurgery*. Jan, 40:1, 52-7.

[373] Walter T. Anderson (1983). *The Upstart Spring: Esalen and the Human potential Movement: The first Twenty Years*. Addison-Wesley.

[374] M.E. Bernard et al. (2010) Albert Ellis: Unsung hero of positive psychology, *The Journal of Positive Psychology*, 5:4, 302-10.

[375] Maria Konnikova (2015). Trying to Cure Depression, but Inspiring Torture. *The New Yorker*, 14 January.

[376] Dennis Greenberger (2014). The link between Cognitive Behavioural Therapy and Positive Psychology. *Advances in Cognitive Therapy.* June, 14:2.

[377] Antony Kidman (1998) Power and progress: Psychology in the new world, *Clinical Psychologist*, 2:2, 20.

Kirk J. Schneider criticised Seligman's Positive Psychology for distorting reality. He found high levels of positive thinking to correlate with 'Positive Illusion':

> *What the researchers don't help us to understand – and what will be essential to understand if we are ever to substantively broach human vitality – is how positivity ratios also appear to correlate with destructive human tendencies. For example, a growing body of research appears to suggest that what the researchers call high positivity – a disposition to pleasant, grateful, and upbeat feelings – also correlative with a dimension called 'positive illusion' (relative inaccuracy regarding reality); and that negativity (or what is generally characterized as mild to moderate depression) is correlated with relatively greater accuracy concerning reality. These findings, moreover, also appear to square with recent correlations between highly positive people and suppressed psychological growth, inability to self-reflect, and racial intolerance*.[378]

Positive Psychology reduces the individual's ability to critically think and understand reality, effects consistent with the goals of the eugenics project we know as MK-ULTRA.

Positive Psychology correlates with Positive Illusion - inaccuracy regarding reality

CIA Positive Psychology & Buddhism Conferences

Since 2006, Sydney has hosted yearly conferences that jointly promote Buddhism and Positive Psychology. The *Happiness and its Causes* conferences are organised by the Dalai Lama and the *Vajrayana Institute*. The Dalai Lama is a well-documented CIA asset with a long history of receiving CIA funding.

> *The Dalai Lama himself was on the CIA's payroll from the late 1950s until 1974, reportedly receiving $US15,000 a month ($US180,000 a year). The funds were paid to him personally, but he used all or most of them for Tibetan government-in-exile activities, principally to fund offices in New York and Geneva, and to lobby internationally.* [379]

In 1959, the Chinese ousted the Tibetan government run by the Dalai Lama and his band of aristocratic, nepotistic monks who collected taxes, and jailed, tortured and skinned alive dissenters. The monks' torture and mind control methods were documented and developed by Hitler and the CIA. The Dalai Lama was paid $1 million to endorse Keith Rainere's child trafficking NXVIM cult.[380] He also covered up sexual assaults committed by Tibetan Buddhist monks.

The first *Happiness and its Causes* conference was held in 2006 at the Sydney Masonic Centre.[381] Happiness Conferences mainly feature Positive Psychology practitioners, ecumenical religious leaders, and journalists (especially from the leftist, anti-victim ABC) who promote Positive Psychology and Tibetan Buddhism. Notable speakers include:

---

[378] Kirk J. Schneider (2010). Toward a Humanistic Positive Psychology: Why Can't We Just Get Along? *Psychology Today* [Online] 29 November.

[379] Michael Backman (2007). Behind Dalai Lama's Holy Cloak. *The Age*, 23 May.

[380] Ryan Perry (2018). Dalai Lama was paid $1 MILLION to endorse women-branding 'sex cult' after secret deal between Buddhist's celibate US emissary and his Seagram billionaire 'lover.' *Daily Mail*, 25 January.

[381] 2006 Conference brochure.

- **Antony Kidman** (My MK-ULTRA perpetrator.)
- **Michael Kirby** (Accused pedophile judge.)
- **Bob Carr** (Accused pedophile politician who attended Bohemian Grove.)
- **Sue Hawke** (Daughter of my pedophile rapist Bob Hawke.)
- **Paul Ekman** (US Army Chief Psychologist, CIA / MK-ULTRA psychologist.)
- **Martin Seligman** (Promoted Positive Psychology's potential role in schools.)
- **Sarah Edelman** (Psychologist at Antony Kidman's UTS Health Psychology Unit. Theosophical Society sells her meditation CDs.)
- **Graham Burrows** (Martin Orne associate, Australian False Memory Association.)
- **B. Alan Wallace** (Stanford University Tibetan Buddhist.)
- **Stephen Meek** (Principal Geelong Grammar School. First Australian principal to approve the *Positive Schools* program. Implicated in covering up pedophilia at Geelong Grammar School since 2004. Testified (2015) to Child Abuse Royal Commission that he was more interested in protecting his school's reputation than exposing pedophile staff.[382]
- **Tim Sharp** (Positive psychologist. Founded Australia's Happiness Institute. On World Happiness Forum. Lectures at Kidman's UTS.)
- **Russ Harris** (Leading Australian Acceptance Commitment Therapy trainer, said ACT 'has many parallels to Buddhism.')
- **Toni Noble** (Lead author of the pro-pedophile *Safe Schools Framework*. Proposed using Positive Psychology to achieve ASIO Director's stated objectives – 'greater social cohesion' to combat 'youth militant extremism' – during keynote address, 2015 *Positive Schools Conference.*)

ABC journalist conference speakers included Norman Swan (who interviewed Antony Kidman about treating psychosis with genitive CBT, months prior to Kidman's death), Sophie Scott, Margaret Throsby, Anne Deveson, Geraldine Doogue, Julie McCrossin, Richard Glover, Natasha Mitchell, Margaret Coffey and Phillip Adams.

EKMAN, DALAI LAMA & the CIA

In the late 1960s, Paul Ekman conduct weaponized anthropology research on the very same PNG tribe that Leonas Petrauskas, Vincent Zigas and Carelton Gadjusek exploited in their MK-NAOMI research.[383] Ekman's PNG research was funded by DARPA and AFOSR (*Air Force Office of Scientific Research*). Ekman collaborated with MK-ULTRA hub, the University of Western Australia, on weaponised anthropology in PNG. UWA lecturer Ronald Taft channelled CIA money into similar studies.[384]

---

[382] Henrietta Cook (2015). Sex abuse inquiry: Geelong Grammar principal Stephen Meek apologises to sexual abuse victims. *The Age*, 11 September.

[383] P. Ekman & W.V. Friesen. Constants across the cultures in the face and emotion. *J Pers Soc Psychol*. Feb 1971. 17:2, 124-9.

[384] David H. Price, Buying a piece of anthropology Part 1: Human Ecology and unwitting anthropological research for the CIA, *Anthropology Today*, June 2007, 23:3, 8-13.

Paul and his daughter Eve Ekman operate the *Paul Ekman Group* who do contract work for the CIA and FBI, and offer training in lie detection, body language analysis and other methods relevant to CIA interrogation and mind control operations. Two key employees are (1) Paul Kelly, whose experience includes Army Interrogation and Psychological Operations, liaises with police, military, NSA, FBI, and CIA, and (2) John Pearse, who worked in New Scotland Yard's Anti-Terrorist Branch, and designs and delivers 'counter-terrorism' seminars.

The 2016 *Happiness Conference*, attended by the Dalai Lama, headlined Eve Ekman. In 2000, B. Alan Wallace, Paul and Eve Ekman developed the *Cultivating Emotional Balance* project with the Dalai Lama. In 2001, Paul Ekman was invited to join the CIA Torture Program initiated at Martin Seligman's house. An email from Kirk Hubbard, CIA Senior Behavioural Scientist, notes, 'I have been in contact with Ekman and he is eager to do work for us.' Ekman denied joining the program but admitted his research assisted CIA interrogators.[385]

KIDMAN & LIZ MULLINAR

Liz Mullinar was Nicole Kidman's first agent and promoter who helped orchestrate her success. Mullinar cast the 1987 film *The Right-Hand Man*. Filming for this movie took place in 1985, in Bathurst, at the same time as the Bathurst City Hall Luciferian ritual.[386] The shoot began 9th October 1985 and went for 10 weeks.[387]

Liz Mullinar said she is a victim of a pedophile ring involving her Anglican father. She founded *Heal for Life,* which was Australia's leading SRA clinic, until reports emerged that the centre employed Satanic cult members. I corresponded with Mullinar immediately following Kidman's death and public exposure as a pedophile, but she denied any knowledge of Kidman's overwhelming and blatant involvement in pedophilia, Luciferianism, ritual abuse, and mind control.

Liz Mullinar was Chair of the Belvoir Street Theatre which Nicole Kidman owns shares in. Antony Kidman was linked to Belvoir via a play produced there in 2008. Kidman donated to the production of *The Pillowman*. An employee at the Health Psychology Unit Kidman headed assisted with production. The play featured the violent sadistic murder, mutilation and crucifixion of children by a psychotic killer – in the manner I witnessed Kidman crucify a young boy in the University of Sydney Great Hall.

Bruce Spence

This B-grade actor and rapist associated closely with Liz Mullinar and Antony Kidman. He was also involved in the Nimrod Theatre, and appeared in films including Mad Max, Dimboola, Blue World Order, The Matrix, and he voiced Sauron in Lord of the Rings. Spence was a University of Sydney OTO member who participated in the crucifixion ritual murder in the Great Hall. After I first reported Bruce Spence as my perpetrator, he responded by poking fun at me in a TV show which attempted to discredit my testimony. The program featured a group of people investigating a Luciferian cult, wearing tin foil hats. Bruce Spence played a Luciferian dressed in OTO ritual robes who devoured a baby before instructing a samurai sword wielding young female MK-ULTRA assassin to murder a pedophile hunter and 'make it look like an accident.'

---

[385] Paula Gordon (2016). Torture and the Psychologists. *Huffington Post*, 5 Aug.

[386] David Stratton (1990). *The Avocado Plantation: Boom and Bust in the Australian Film Industry.* Pan MacMillan.

[387] Production Round-up, *Cinema Papers*, Nov. 1985, 48.

BATHURST FOUNDED ON FREEMASONRY

While designing Bathurst's belltower, architect Henry Bialowas realised the entire town was originally designed according to hidden math and sacred geometry that depict the solar system and planets, and astrological themes. Bathurst was planned around the golden ratio and divided into squares that are numbered in a spiral formation. The central square, which contains a Catholic church, was intentionally left unnumbered because it sits at the omega point - which can't be named, numbered or bound, and begins and ends in infinity. Freemason Thomas Mitchell was Bathurst's town planner. Mitchell belonged to the 59th Regiment attached to its own Freemason military lodge, and his patron, George Murray, was Grandmaster of the London Lodge.

Bathurst contained several Freemason lodges, one of which David Waddel was Deputy. David's daughter Leila Ida Nerissa Bathurst-Waddel, an artist and musician, was Aleister Crowley's mistress. (A 'Bathurst' family in the UK was related to the British Royals). Leila Bathurst-Waddel helped establish the OTO in Australia and she became its highest-ranking member. The OTO has a female chapter called the *Order of the Eagle* into which I was initiated. Leila Bathurst-Waddle was posthumously inducted into the *Order of the Eagle* in April 1999. Russian Helena Blavatsky was posthumously inducted in 2000. During the Bathurst Luciferian ritual I attended, the cult hung a large satin *Order of the Eagle* banner on the Bathurst City Hall stage.

ENGADINE MEDICAL CENTRE

When I knew Leonas Petrauskas he lived within walking distance of my grandmother's Engadine house and owned and operated the local Engadine Medical Centre with fellow Luciferian John Melov. In 2015, an Engadine resident named Pat told Steve McMurray and I that Petrauskas referred her to Harry Bailey. Pat described both physicians as unethical and how her prescription of experimental medication resulted in her growing a beard. Pat's husband described bizarre experiments being performed on children at a small private Engadine hospital that Petrauskas and Melov owned and operated. He saw a five-year-old girl submerged in a tub of ice with tubes protruding from her orifices.

'COWBOY' HARRY BAILEY

Referring to the Tulane University psychosurgery experiments he conducted with Robert Heath (contractor to MK-ULTRA Subproject 68), Harry Richard Bailey boasted:

> *It was cheaper to use Niggers than cats, because they were everywhere, and they were cheap experimental animals.*[388]

Harry Bailey received a 15-month *World Health Organization* fellowship to study psychosurgery, ECT and Deep Sleep Therapy with Ewen Cameron and William Sargant.[389] Upon returning to Australia, he headed the new *Cerebral Surgery and Research Unit* at Callan Park Psychiatric Hospital in Sydney. In September 1957, the *Sydney Sunday* tabloid published an article about a Callan Park experiment, headlined: 'Human Guinea Pigs in Test: A Sydney mental specialist and 15 other volunteers deliberately sent themselves temporarily insane in recent mental research tests.' In this article, Bailey promoted LSD as a potential treatment for 'mental cases' and said his experiments were aimed at identifying the brain area affected by schizophrenia. Harry Bailey was appointed Medical Superintendent of Callan Park in 1959. In 1961 he entered private practice in Macquarie Street, where Sydney's early gay and lesbian activists protested after Bailey tried to 'cure' a man's homosexuality with lobotomy. Bailey's research associate Robert Heath did the same. Heath also paid a prostitute to have sex with a suicidal gay man whose brain response was read via an ECG.[390]

---

[388] H. Cheeves & D.N. Cheeves (2004). *Legacy*. Trafford, 234.

[389] Stephen Garton (2007). Harry Richard Bailey. In *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Vol. 17. ANU.

MK-ULTRA AT CHELMSFORD

Harry Bailey founded a private hospital with doctors John Herron, Ian Gardiner and John Gill. Chelmsford Private Hospital became Australia's worst psychiatric disaster where over 1,400 patients were subjected to hypnotic drugs, ECT and DST in a mostly experimental fashion without informed consent. The entire Chelmsford medical team were previously involved in a eugenics program of forced adoption at Sydney's Crown Street Hospital for Women where babies were taken from 'unfit' mothers and given to mothers deemed more appropriate.[391] A massive 64% of unwed mothers had their babies stolen at Crown Street Hospital. Harry Bailey used hypnotic drugs to make the reluctant birth mothers comply. He directly ordered the abortion of twin foetuses without the consent of a woman who was under the influence of hypnotic drugs.

Harry Bailey was William Sargant's Deep Sleep Therapy protégé and the two maintained contact during Bailey's MK-ULTRA work in Australia. Sargant authored *Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing*, a book lauded by Aldous Huxley. Harry Bailey competed with Sargant by seeing how long he could keep Chelmsford patients in a state of Deep Sleep. Ewen Cameron caused permanent damage to over 50 patients with his brainwashing experiments. Harry Bailey topped that statistic by killing at least 85 patients at Chelmsford Private Hospital via ECT, Deep Sleep Therapy, and drug experiments.[392]

Harry Bailey sexually seduced vulnerable Chelmsford patients, as young as 18 years old, and coerced them into signing their wills over to him. This was the case with Sharon Hamilton, a Chelmsford victim whose $100,000 estate went to Bailey following her suicide. Bailey also raped victims while they lay in drug-induced comas. In 1974, Bailey placed a young woman named Bronwyn Colefax in a drug-induced coma and repeatedly electrocuted her for a fortnight until her leg shrank to half its size and her brain was permanently damaged.

A 1967 coronial inquest into five Chelmsford deaths went nowhere. The hospital closed in 1979 following multiple complaints. Bronwyn Colefax became the first victim to sue Harry Bailey who 'suicided' via a drug overdose in 1985 while under investigation. The Grande Council, including Antony Kidman and Leonas Petrauskas, congregated in the University of Sydney's Maclaurin Hall to decide 'Cowboy' Harry Bailey's penance for threatening to expose MK-ULTRA in Australia.

In 1990, the *Chelmsford Royal Commission* concluded John Gill, 'must bear a large part of the responsibility for the consequences of Chelmsford both in terms of the suffering and sometimes deaths of patients.' John Gill was charged with manslaughter and maliciously inflicting grievous bodily harm, but our High Court ruled the deaths occurred too long ago to prosecute, and prosecution would constitute an 'abuse of process.' John Gill continued practising. Ian Herron was referred to the DPP regarding his involvement in the deaths of a police officer in 1974 plus a journalist in 1976, but no charges were laid. In 1980, a court awarded 'compensatory and aggravated damages' against Ian Herron for 'wrongful imprisonment, assault and negligence' against a former patient.

---

[390] Robert G. Heath (1972). Pleasure and brain activity in man: deep and surface electroencephalograms during orgasm. *J Nerv Ment Dis*, Jan, 154:1, 3-18.

[391] Origins Victoria (2011). Submission by G.A. Rickarby to Senate Inquiry into Commonwealth contribution to forced adoption policies and practices.

[392] Anthony James (2013). *Amputated Souls: The Psychiatric Assault on Liberty 1935-2011*. Imprint Academia.

Chelmsford, Scientology & the CIA

I met Bronwyn Colefax who gave me the facts surrounding her Chelmsford case. In the early 1980s, Bronwyn's lawyer warned the CIA were involved in Chelmsford and would tap her phone. The CIA employed their cult cut-out, the Church of Scientology, to exact damage control measures in the Chelmsford aftermath. The Scientologists established an advocacy and support service, *Citizens Commission on Human Rights,* for the many Chelmsford victims who came forward after Bronwyn Colefax tested the legal waters.[393] The Scientologists collected victim witness testimonies and evidence, thus enabling the CIA to target any victim who threatened to expose the fact that Chelmsford was a MK-ULTRA research centre.

Legal Hypocrisy

An investigative journalist wrote a 2016 book about Scientology in Australia which included a chapter about Scientology's involvement in Chelmsford. The chapter simply restated the facts of the *Chelmsford Royal Commission* findings concerning John Herron, Ian Gardiner, and John Gill.[394] In late 2018, a judge ruled the chapter defamed the Chelmsford doctors, ordered publishers to pay the Chelmsford doctors' legal costs, and ruled the defendants must prove the facts of the original Chelmsford case. So, 30 years after the Chelmsford doctors escaped prosecution because High Court judges ruled the case was too old, a judge decides the case is not too old. Bronwyn Colefax is outraged at the decision which she believes is an 'abuse of process.' Such a ruling would be impossible if Australia had a Bill of Rights. Australians have no Freedom of Speech; this sad fact, combined with our harsh defamation laws, protects Australian perpetrators. The only thing that makes sense of this judicial decision is that the CIA are desperate to continue the coverup of the MK-ULTRA crimes their doctors committed at Chelmsford Private Hospital.

MK-ULTRA & its AUSSIE CULTS

The CIA began using cult cut-outs to conceal Project MK-ULTRA mind control activities, in 1963. Australian cult cut-outs included Scientology, Mormonism, Buddhism, Yoga Ashram, Hare Krishna, Orange People, Kenja, Christian life Centre (aka, Hillsong) and the OTO. These child abuse cults provided fertile ground for MK-ULTRA victim recruitment.

The Orange People were led by Indian guru Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh. The cult established a large following in Sydney and Western Australia before moving to Oregon in the USA. The cult renamed themselves Osho and many Australian members settled on communal properties in and around Byron Bay, including a 40-hectare commune called Gondwana Sanctuary.

Kenja is minor cult was founded in 1982 by Ken Dyers who joined the Church of Scientology after leaving the Australian Army. In 1993 Dyers was charged with sexual offences against four young girls but escaped conviction. He was again charged with child sexual assault in 2005 but suicided before the case could return to court.

---

[393] Steve Cannane (2016). *Fair Game: The Incredible Untold Story of Scientology in Australia.* Harper Collins.

[394] Michael Bachelard, How a zombie case came back to life thanks to Australia's defamation law. *Sydney Morning Herald*. 2 December 2018.

Hare Krishna cult headquarters are located on a northern NSW farm. As a parole officer I encountered numerous cases of child abuse perpetrated at the Hare Krishna farm. Yet my true understanding came through my father who closely associated with its members, and the home midwifery association my mother worked with. The Krishna cult had its own midwife who delivered babies whose births went unregistered. My father attended Luciferian rituals, and witnessed an underground arsenal, at their Eungella compound. My younger siblings were ritually abused by members of this cult, notably a witch who used the cult pseudonym 'Roochie' and claimed her Indian-looking son, the product of an affair in India, was the result of a miraculous conception by Krishna. Roochie subsequently reverted to her original name, Sharon, and joined the Usana pyramid selling scheme which I discovered to be another satanic cult front.

The Family stemmed from the US *Children of God* pedophile cult which changed its name following negative publicity. Yoga teacher Anne Hamilton-Byrne led the Australian branch of *The Family*. Hamilton-Byrne was guided by Swami Muktananda, who worked with Wyatt Woodsmall, who instructed NXIVM co-founder Nancy Salzman in mind-control. Another notable cult associate is Julian Assange whose mother married Leif Meynell-Hamilton, a musician and member of *The Family*.

The Family was alternatively called *Santiniketan Park Association*, or *The Great White Brotherhood* - a term coined by Luciferian Helena Blavatsky and pedophile Charles Webster Leadbeater (high-ranking Freemason, Theosophist, and member of Aleister Crowley's OTO). According to Leadbeater, a colony was to be established in Baja California by the Theosophical Society under the guidance of the Masters of the Ancient Wisdom, for the intensive selective eugenic breeding of the sixth root race (i.e., a branch of the Aryan fifth root race).[395] Leadbeater's cult location moved from California to Australia. Hence the idea behind *The Family* was to foster an Aryan bloodline which would eventually reincarnate a New World leader.

Anne Hamilton-Byrne acquired 28 babies and young children during the 1960s and '70s. Some were the natural children of cult members, others stolen via a network of cult doctors, social workers and lawyers. One child victim, Sarah Hamilton-Byrne, said in her biography that medical practitioners in Melbourne and Geelong stole infants by telling mothers their babies had died at birth.[396] The children's identities were changed using false birth certificates or deed poll and given the surname 'Hamilton-Byrne.' They were told Anne Hamilton-Byrne was their biological mother, and to address adult cult members as 'Aunty' or 'Uncle.' (My perpetrators were similarly called my 'family' and I had to address members as 'Aunty' or 'Uncle.'). Hamilton-Byrne dressed the children alike and dyed their hair white. The kids were isolated from society and home-schooled at *Kia Lama* (*Uptop*), a rural property at Taylor Bay on Lake Eildon, Victoria where they were subjected to MK-ULTRA mind control methods including isolation, beatings, starvation, drugging, and sensory deprivation. They were administered LSD and subjected to sensory deprivation in a dark room when they reached adolescence.

---

[395] Annie Besant & C.W. Leadbeater (1947). Man: Whence, How and Whither. Theosophical Publishing House.

[396] Sarah Hamilton-Byrne (1995). *Unseen, Unheard, Unknown.* Penguin Books.

The Family recruited middle-class professionals, with one-third of members being nurses and other medical practitioners. It had numerous intelligence connections. Michael Stevenson-Helmer, a 19-year-old law student interested in eastern religion, later became a Family cult leader. Stevenson-Helmer comes from a prominent Jewish family including CIA agent Sir Zelman Cowen (Royal Australian Navy, B'nai B'rith member, Governor-General 1977-82) and KGB Agent Dr John Helmer who was also involved with *The Family*. Richard Casey visited 'Kai Lama' where they hid the kidnapped children, and he is rumoured to have made personal donations to the cult. The 'Santinekitan' property was owned by CIA agent Sir John Latham.

Raynor C. Johnson was The Family's true founder. A member of the *Society for Psychical Research*, Johnson worked for the University of Melbourne Physics Department at a time when the institution supported the RAAF (Royal Australian Air Force). Johnson recruited members to The Family by referring them to Hamilton-Byrne's hatha yoga classes. Raynor Johnson and Anne Hamilton-Byrne were mentored by Thomas Maughan (Theosophist, Chief Druid, British Navy Intelligence Officer). MK-ULTRA founder Aldous Huxley mentioned Raynor Johnson in his letter to MK-ULTRA doctor Humphrey Osmond:[397]

> *I liked the things you said for Dr Raynor Johnson's chapter on drugs and spiritual experience in his latest book.[398] An interesting book – tho' perhaps he multiplies spiritual entities beyond what is strictly necessary.*

Anne Hamilton-Byrne had other ties to RAAF Intelligence: she was raised on an RAAF base, and married an RAAF Lieutenant. Australian military children like her were commonly recruited into MK-ULTRA. Hamilton-Byrne married RAAF Intelligence Officer Lionel Harris who, she said, was killed by a KGB officer in 1955 while working for ASIS. Another RAAF connection was psychiatrist Lance Howard Whittaker, *The Family*'s principal MK-ULTRA doctor. Whittaker was an RAAF Wing Commander during the cult's heyday.

During the 1960s and '70s, *Family* cult member Marion Villimek owned *Newhaven Psychiatric Hospital* in Kew, a private facility staffed exclusively by *Family* cult members and associated MK-ULTRA doctors. At Newhaven, Whittaker conducted mind control research with Ronald Conway (RAAF, Freemason, Oscar Oeser protégé, and pedophile) and LSD studies with MK-ULTRA psychiatrist John Mackay. *The Family* used Newhaven to recruit new cult members from its patients, and to administer LSD to cult members. In the late '60s, an early cult recruit was given LSD, ECT plus two lobotomies. In 1992, *Newhaven* closed after an Inquest was ordered into the 1975 death of a Deep Sleep therapy patient.

Whittaker abandoned his wife and children at *The Family* property. He commenced work at the *Mayday Hills Psychiatric Hospital* in Beechworth in 1970, where he used sodium amytal on patients during therapy sessions, and he subjected severely psychotic patients to three-day Deep Sleep Therapy comas.

Sarah Hamilton-Byrne escaped the cult, alerted police who rescued the other children, and went on to graduate from high school and medicine. Police raided *Kia Lama* on 14 August 1987. Anne Hamilton-Byrne and her husband William subsequently fled overseas for six years. Police eventually extradited the couple back to Australia and charged them with conspiracy to defraud and commit perjury by falsely registering the births of three unrelated children as their own triplets. Lawyer Elizabeth Whitaker, wife of psychiatrist Howard Whitaker, acted as their co-defendant. The Hamilton-Byrnes pleaded guilty to the lesser charge of making a false declaration and were fined $5000. Anne Hamilton-Byrne lived comfortably to the ripe old age of 94 years. Police dropped a charge against Howard Whitaker who maintained the respect and support of Victoria's medical fraternity. The Australian government's coverup of *The Family* is indicative of Project MK-ULTRA.

---

[397] Michael Horowitz & Cynthia Palmer (Eds.) (1977). *Moksha: Aldous Huxley's Classic Writings on Psychedelics and the Visionary Experience*. Stonehill.

[398] Raynor Johnson (1959). *Watcher on the Hills: A Study of Some Mystical Experiences of Ordinary People*. Hodder and Stoughton.

Satyananda Yoga Ashram

This Luciferian offshoot renamed themselves Mangrove Yoga Ashram after the federal Royal Commission exposed them as Luciferian pedophiles in 2014. Children as young as four were starved, tortured, drugged, beaten, had their heads flushed down a toilet, and subjected to 'horrific' sexual and physical abuse at Satyananda Yoga Ashram in the 1970s and 1980s. Nine victims testified to the Royal Commission. One victim described being subjected to a Tibetan Buddhist black magic ritual at age six years. She was taken into a dark room lit with candles where a group of male swamis chanted, and gang raped her. The men restrained the girl while the Indian ashram leader raped her, cut her chest with a knife, and licked her blood.

Dr Sandra Smith is a psychiatrist who taught yoga at the Yoga Ashram and lied to the Royal Commission under cross examination about the abuse that occurred there. Sandra Smith and her lawyer husband Keith Allen implicated in a separate Royal Commission matter. Keith Allen was cross examined (in CS42) regarding a 2001 incident where he conspired to conceal the repeated rapes of two boys by Newcastle diocese Anglican priest George Parker. The Anglican diocese Vice Chancellor, Paul Rosser, defended the pedophile priest. The presiding judge, Ralph Coolahan, also worked for the Anglican Diocese. Keith Allen, a trustee of the Newcastle Anglican diocese, acted for victim Steven Smith. Keith Allen sent his client Steven Smith to his wife Dr Sandra Smith for a psychiatric evaluation, without disclosing to the plaintiff that the doctor was his wife. Dr Sandra Smith then leaked the sensitive information she gathered during her assessment of the plaintiff - to defendant George Parker's attorney, Paul Rosser. Anglican diocese records of George Parker's church attendance were subsequently doctored to contradict the sexual assault dates and times provided by the priest's victims. Notably the crucial date on which George Parker raped Steven Smith and another boy, was erased. The missing entries collapsed the case and provided an excuse for corrupt Judge Coolahan to set George Parker free. While cross examining Keith Allen, the Royal Commission accused him of evidence tampering, as the following newspaper article explains:

> **SOLICITOR DENIES 'FIXING' STATEMENT TO ROYAL COMMISSION**
> Ian Kirkwood, Newcastle Herald, 9 August 2016
>
> *…In other evidence, Mr Allen was taken to a church register that the defence of priest CJC used in a 2001 trial that was discontinued by the Director of Public Prosecutions after the document appeared to show that the priest was not in the place that his victims, CKA and CKB, had said he was.*
>
> *The commission heard that there were very few alterations through any of the pages of the register except for the page that was pertinent to the trial. The commission heard that numbers, apparently relating to the number of worshippers, had been*

> *rubbed out and altered. A crucial date, April 29, 1975, was not in chronological order, and two signatures for the one person appeared to be in different handwriting. Solicitor Peter O'Brien, for victims CKA and CKB, put it to Mr Allen that 'this document, sir, is a forgery, isn't it?'*

Fresh charges were laid against George Parker years later, but he died before facing court again. Keith Allen and Paul Rosser are still practising law instead of being charged with a criminal offence as the Royal Commission suggested.

I was contacted by a former child patient of psychiatrist Sandra Smith. In the 1980s, Dr Sandra Smith concealed the sexual and ritual abuse disclosed by the 13-year-old patient and her older sister. Sandra Smith told the victims' mother that the sisters' disclosure was a form of 'childhood sexual fantasy' and that 'young girls often fantasise this way about their fathers.' Sandra Smith's psychologist colleague agreed with her diagnosis. Sandra Smith and her colleague recommended the two sisters attend family therapy with their perpetrator father, which occurred. Dr Sandra Smith further advised the teenage victim to visit the Satyananda Yoga Ashram as a form of therapeutic intervention. Decades later, the girls' father served prison time for abusing his younger daughter (the older sister refused to testify). He also was convicted of sexually abusing his daughter's friend.

Krista Petrauskas

Leonas Petrauskas' daughter Krista Petrauskas associated with the Kundalini practising Satyananda Yoga Ashram located in Berowra on the NSW Central Coast. She stated in an email to my documentary producer: '*I lived here for the best part of a year. The shit hit the fan in 1986 or thereabouts after a murder*.' Krista also part-owned a Buddhist cooperative with Kabbala expert Ayya Khema in Obi, Queensland. Ayya Khema was influential in the USA and helped establish Buddhism in Australia.

Krista was involved with James McGarry, a hypnotist who likes to dress up in robes and founded the *Academy of Esoteric Sciences* (in 1985) and *Academy of Human Sciences* (1977). Immediately after we filmed my *Candy* Girl documentary and contacted Krista Petrauskas, she contacted McGarry. After I detailed Krista's crimes to the NSW Police, she and McGarry wiped their social media accounts, sold their properties, and disappeared.

* * *

MK-ULTRA in the MILITARY

The common goal is global uniting, global control.
- Kay Griggs

My friend observed to me: 'Obviously you know way more about their secret military ops, and they're afraid of you remembering it, and that's why you're still targeted.'

My therapist initially opted for ceasing memory reprocessing due to the seemingly endless supply of trauma memories. 'Doors within doors within doors,' he lamented. But stopping didn't work, because every time I am retraumatised I experience flashbacks, and new material spontaneously surfaces, usually concerning Delta Black Ops.

Contrary to CIA propaganda, someone merely mentioning something does not automatically trigger my memory of it. It takes way more provocation than that. To remember, I must be returned to the original state of mind I was in at the time of construction of the alter responsible for the memory.

Several years ago, an American mind control victim named Kirsty excitedly asked me: 'Did they make you fly planes? They made my sister and I fly planes.'

'No,' I answered.

'Are you sure? They made us all fly planes.'

No, I certainly had no memory of piloting planes...yet.

Years after Kirsty's prodding, I experienced a vivid visual flashback of flying over an orange-red coloured desert terrain snaked with what I guess were dry creek beds.

'Nevada!' the word popped into my head. The plane was tilted to the left, giving me a wonderful view of the Nevada desert. I was seated in the left side of a dark, unusual cockpit featuring computer screens and lit buttons instead of the typical flight panel. It was a B-2 stealth bomber. Although the B-2 was not officially operational until 1993, it featured in black operations a decade prior, deployed out of the Nevada desert. Its prototypes date back to the 1940's and were developed by *Operation Paperclip* Nazis at Area 51.

'Why the hell would they take kids for joy flights?' I complained to my Texan friend Ty.

'Err, Fiona,' she began, 'I don't know how it works in Australia, but over here the left side of the cockpit is the pilot's seat…'

'Oh, for fuck's sake! They had me *flying planes* now? Why the hell would I be flying a plane?!'

That made me ponder the possibility. A female 14-year-old would make an optimal pilot, being just old and tall enough to reach the controls, while retaining the superior eyesight, hand-eye coordination, dexterity, flexibility, and obedience of gifted youth. If the B-2 incorporated some type of symbiotic technology (which my gut tells me it did), that would help explain why DARPA would employ a 14-year-old female hypnotically enhanced Delta soldier with a weaponised psychic ability and an insane visual-spatial processing ability, to participate in a B-2 bombing raid.

My memory fragments include a long flight at night in a black B-2 stealth bomber ending in a bombing mission in Beirut. My Beirut memory includes the officer who assaulted me at Dulce: General Alfred M. Gray.

I was restrained in Aquino's torture chair at Dulce when the General approached me. He was grey-haired with a drunk's flushed bulbous nose. The fat gut behind his itchy green uniform, and brass buttons, pressed annoyingly against the right side of my face. He unzipped his trousers and exposed himself.

‘Don’t touch the merchandise,’ I warned through gritted teeth.

Ignoring me, he forced it into my mouth.

I bit down hard, and ground from side to side.

He screamed for help which came too late. He was rushed into theatre for surgery.

Our unit joked about the incident over dinner in the mess hall.

‘Hey,’ I threw my hands in the air in feigned innocence, ‘they never told me I couldn’t bite his dick off.’

The boys laughed hard.

Our team paid dearly for my insubordination. I was awoken that night by a violent pack rape committed by my team after which the boys snapped out of their trance, sighed, cried and apologised profusely for violating their beloved mascot.

‘It’s okay,’ I reassured and held them, ‘I’d rather *you* do it instead of those bastards.’

The following morning, I exited Dulce base via a narrow pedestrian door. Outside, to my right was a steep red slope. A dirt path wound down the hill and snaked up to a cave entrance in the hill to my right. Our Commander stood at ease outside the cave entrance, waiting for me. He handed me a knife and said with a hint of disappointment and disapproval, ‘Now go in and clean up your mess.’

In a split second, Alice, who felt loyal to my team was flung aside by Sascha, the alter specifically trained to unquestioning follow such repugnant orders. Inside the cave sat the three soldiers who raped me last night, their hands and feet bound. Sascha slit their throats, exited the cave, handed the knife back to our Commander, and returned to the base.

I knew the offending general was an alcoholic, and that was my initial clue to locating his identity. I searched through every picture I could find of US generals from that era. Then a flashback gave me a clue, as it linked me and the general to Beirut. I then found film footage of a drunk, slurring Alfred M. Gray Jr addressing dependents following the 23 October 1983 Beirut Marine Barracks Bombing.

When I encountered him in 1983, Major-General Alfred M. Gray was Commanding General of the Second Marine Division deployed to Beirut. He also led the combined UN forces that ‘responded’ to the bombing that they instigated, a bombing raid by a black B-2 Stealth Bomber under the cloak of night.

* * *

CHARLES A. BECKWITH

Delta Force originated in Vietnam with the Special Forces unit code-named *Project Delta* (aka, Operational Detachment B-52) which ran from 1964 to 1970. Charles Alvin Beckwith assumed command of Project Delta in Vietnam in 1965 and implemented his SAS experience to test and select soldiers for long-range reconnaissance operations in South Vietnam. Beckwith returned to Vietnam in 1968, commanding the 101st Airborne Division.

In 1977, Beckwith created *1st Special Forces Operational Detachment – Delta* (Delta Force). Delta Force’s first mission in early 1980, *Operation Eagle Claw*, was a disaster. Consequently, *160th Special Operations Aviation Regiment* was formed to provide transport for Delta Force and other special operations units, and the *Joint Special Operations Command* was formed in 1980 to oversee / plan / coordinate classified activities performed by combined elite special operations forces including:

- Army 1st Special Forces Operational Detachment - Delta (Delta Force)

- Naval Special Warfare Development Group (SEAL Team 6)
- Air Force 24th Special Tactics Squadron
- Army Intelligence Support Activity
- Army Regimental Reconnaissance Company
- Joint Communications Unit

Delta Force recruits are typically selected from Green Beret, Army Rangers, SEAL 6 and other special operations units. The CIA's highly secretive *Special Activities Division* and more specifically its elite *Special Operations Group*, often work with, and recruit, Delta Force operators. As MK-ULTRA victim 'Cisco Wheeler' asserted, all Delta Force recruits are mind control victims.

COLONEL ALFRED GRAY

Al Gray was Commandant of the Marine Corps. They called Al Gray 'The Commissar' (i.e., Communist political officer) because he was a 'Russian double agent.' Kay Griggs said, 'Al Gray ran all the dirty tricks for the Army' – the murders and assassinations. Al Gray ran everything in Vietnam. He also did all of the Special Ops training. Gray's loyal Marines were called 'Gray's Boys.' Al Gray was 'Deep State operative' who collaborated with a small group of generals – 'The Brotherhood' - who worked both sides (Democrat and Republican) but answered to Nelson Rockefeller. Al Gray and Jim Joy ran *Moral, Welfare & Recreation,* a network of military support and leisure services as a money laundering operation. They ran all the officer's clubs which employed topless women.

General Alfred Gray, US Marine Corp

The movie *A Few Good Men* starring Tom Cruise and Jack Nicholson, a movie about a Marine Colonel who ordered his boys to assault a Marine in Guantanamo Bay. The film was based on a true story. Colonel George Griggs was the Chief of Staff who tried to cover the incident up for Alfred Gray, the offending Colonel portrayed by Jack Nicholson.

The movie *A Few Good Men* is based on the true story of when Colonel Al Gray murdered a Marine at Guantanamo.

DELTA COMMANDER: WILLIAM BOYKIN

Lt. General William Gerald 'Jerry' Boykin was my Delta team trainer and commander. A native Virginian, here are some of Boykin's career highlights:

- 101st Airborne Division, Vietnam.
- *Phoenix* project operative, Vietnam.
- *Delta Force* (13 years as operations officer, troop commander, squadron commander, deputy commander, and unit commander).
- *Green Beret* trainer.
- *Army Ranger* trainer.
- Master High Altitude Parachutist.
- CIA Director General for *Operations, Readiness & Mobilisation.*
- *US Army Special Forces Command* (Airborne).
- *Under Secretary of Defence for Intelligence* (under George W. Bush).
- CIA Panama coup operative.
- Grand Chancellor, *Knights of Malta* (aka, Order of St John).
- Coordinated the massacre of Branch Davidian children, Waco.
- Swag of medals including the Legion of Merit.

Delta Commander William Gerald 'Jerry' Boykin

GI Joe: Green Beret

GI Joe

My team called him 'GI Joe' because he *was* GI Joe. Like the action figure, Commander Boykin played a multitude of military roles: Rangers, Green Beret, Delta Force, HALO parachute instructor, to name a few.

Lt. Col. Lewis H. 'Bucky' Burruss helped commander Boykin with Delta Force selection in 1978. Burruss 'participated in the ill-fated Iran raid, the invasion of Grenada and a number of classified operations in the Middle East, South and Central America and elsewhere.'[399]

Bizarrely, *Bucky Barnes* was a Marvel Comic character whose official status as Captain America's sidekick was a cover-up. Bucky began as a 16-year-old operative trained to conduct covert assassins and other things regular soldiers and Captain America wouldn't normally do. Bucky is a Soviet Union spy, a member of a group behind Nazism who are trying to reform the world on par with Hitler's views.

Jerry Boykin's latest CIA assignment is to pose as a staunch born-again Christian and sit on the board of Christian organisations. Boykin campaigned against gays in the military when he regularly attends homosexual Military orgies. In 2016, Boykin commented on Obama's unisex bathroom bills:

> *'The first man who goes in the restroom with my daughter will not have to worry about surgery.'*

I am convinced Lt. Gen. Boykin's daughter could beat the crap out of any adult male she randomly met, since that is precisely what he trained me to do as a young teenager.

I also recognise the face of Delta Commander Major General David L. Grange who spoke at the *Jerusalem Conference 2010.* I get the impression he may have been on the US Navy vessel when I almost drowned.

* * *

The US Military is a Mind Control Operation Run by Pedophile Rapists

> *The very word 'secrecy' is repugnant in a free and open society; and we are as a people inherently and historically opposed to secret societies, to secret oaths and to secret proceedings… For we are opposed around the world by a monolithic and ruthless conspiracy that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence - on infiltration instead of invasion, on subversion instead of elections, on intimidation instead of free choice, on guerrillas by night instead of armies by day. It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations.*
>
> \- JFK (27 April 1961)

---

[399] United States Army Special Operations Command. www.soc.mil/SWCS/RegimentalHonors/_pdf/sf_burruss.pdf

The public assumed JFK was talking about communism – and he was, but not in the way folks thought. America's last true President was describing the global shadow government administered and executed by '*The Firm*' and ruled by Lord Rothschild. The military arm of the 'machine' JFK described was led by Marine Corp General Alfred M. Gray, whose invisible army - a synthesis of various special forces and intelligence services - conducted clandestine assassinations, coup d'états, drug running, weapons trafficking, and money laundering operations.

Such is the testimony of Katherine 'Kay' Pollard Griggs, wife of Colonel George Raymond Griggs. Col. Griggs served as General Alfred Gray's Chief of Staff Marine-Atlantic. Grigg's career as a spy and Special Operations assassin began in Vietnam. A NATO Intelligence Wet Ops and Psychological Ops expert, Col. Griggs headed NATO Special Operations under Admiral Kelso, and the Intelligence Group that occupied Beirut prior to the Marine barracks bombing. He was also involved with the HALO program which trained assassins and Special Ops in the Philippines and Panama.

During a series of interviews, Kay Griggs exposed her husband's role in the military mind-control operation run by homosexual rapists and pedophiles. The interviews, now conspiracy classics, were conducted by Pastor Rick Strawcutte (1998), Jeff Rense (2005), and Daryl Bradford Smith (2005 and 2006). I will now share a synthesis of what Kay's husband blabbed to her when he was (regularly) drunk and dissociated.

Kay was extremely traumatised from domestic violence when she gave her initial marathon interviews, and the relevant information was scattered throughout. It took me a long time to patch her points together in a sequence. I intersperse Kay's testimony with clarification of important points, and include other sources that back her claims, like Douglas Valentine who interviewed many Vietnam operatives.

OPERATION PAPERCLIP

William J. Donovan promoted communists in, and recruited Nazis to, the OSS. Donovan also started the assassin program during the Vietnam War. William Donovan recruited Allen Dulles into the OSS in 1941. Dulles became CIA Director from 1952 until Kennedy sacked him in 1961. During his directorship Dulles oversaw the immigration of Nazi SS to the USA under *Paperclip*. He then oversaw Project MK-Ultra, the 1953 Iranian coup d'état, 1954 Guatemalan coup, Lockheed U-2 aircraft program, and the Bay of Pigs Invasion.

The entire German High Command were smuggled into the USA under *Operation Paperclip*. This wave of 200,000 plus Nazi imports included the entire team of Nazi rocket scientists headed by Von Braun, a group of Viennese sexual psychologists and psychiatrists (who continued their study of sexual perversion at Harvard, Yale, John Hopkins, and in Golden, CO), plus Reinhard Gehlen and his entire Nazi Military Intelligence / Psychological Operations revolutionary terrorist group (the *Abwehr)* who infiltrated the US Marine Corp and US Army. Civilian Conservation Corps camps were established for the Nazi immigrants to temporarily live in. Pinochet and the Nazi Intelligence Chief Reinhardt Gehlen relocated to Fort Hunt. Von Braun and many Nazis settled in Germantown, Maryland, which became the headquarters of *US Atomic Energy Commission,* the Nazi infiltrated organisation responsible for the Manhattan Project and human radiation experiments.

THE GERMAN DISEASE

The German High Command brought to America what was called the '*German Disease*' (i.e., homosexual pedophilia) which is imbedded in German culture. *Odenwaldschule* is an example of German pedophile culture. *Odenwaldschule* is a German boarding school that opened in 1910. From its inception, the school's teachers began sexually abusing students. Nuclear physicist Hans Bethe is a notable *Odenwaldschule* alumni. Bethe's Italian fellowship was funded by the Rockefeller Foundation in 1932. In 1935, Bethe moved to the USA where he worked on a particle accelerator at Cornell, followed by the *Manhattan Project*.

In the 1930s, the German High Command manipulated German politics so that the leaders were all pedophiles. The entire German High Command attended pedophile orgies in Naples, with orchestras and Italian boys procured and supplied by Italian Roman Catholic priests. Krupp, the German weapons manufacturers, took the German High Command to pedophile orgies hosted in the Blue Grotto on the Island of Capris, Italy.

This same group of Nazi homo-pedophiles infiltrated America's colleges, universities, military, government, and police. Kay Griggs said this explains today's child kidnapping and trafficking, and why it is being covered up - the infiltrated agencies conspire to cover up the truth.

DISCRIMINATION: MILITARY INTELLIGENCE PSY-OP

According to Kay Griggs, most senior Army and the Marine Corps are Marxist-existentialist communists and anarchists with German Ashkenazi heritage, and many are the offspring of the invading Nazi SS who were Ashkenazi homo-pedophile existentialist communists. Hitler (Ashkenazi) was recruited at a homosexual brothel.

I have additionally read that the Nazis targeted genuine Torah abiding Jews for elimination while employing Ashkenazi Talmudic Cabalists. That might explain why Lord Rothschild administered UK & Israel turned away boats of Jewish refugees who subsequently died in Nazi death camps.

Perhaps the Holocaust was a psychological operation with numerous benefits including the elimination of genuine Jews and Christians, and it provided a reason to establish Israel, and implement Lord Rothschild's NWO totalitarian agenda. This is Hegelian Dialectic, where the same group creates a problem to solve, followed by a solution.

The Firm use the same tactic to cover for their tradition / ritual of institutionalised homosexual pedophile rape. Fake 'born-again' Christian William 'Jerry' Boykin is a prime example. He publicly campaign against gays in the military while secretly attending homo-pedophile sexual orgies. These military perverts all worship Dagon, not the Biblical God.

ARMY- McCARTHY HEARINGS

In 1950, former Marine and Republican Senator Joseph R. McCarthy gave a speech in which he asserted, he had a list of 'members of the Communist Party and members of a spy ring' who were employed in the State Department. In 1954, McCarthy led subsequent investigations into the infiltration of communists in the US federal government, universities, military, Hollywood, media, etc, and accusations of sex crimes against prominent leaders. The investigations into communism ran concurrent to the 'Lavender Scare' where homosexuals were dismissed from government on the basis that homosexuality (which was illegal back then) increased their risk for blackmail. Senator McCarthy's untimely death at age 48 abruptly ended his investigations which threatened to expose the fact that a small band of German communist homo-pedophiles called *The Brotherhood* orchestrated a system of sexual blackmail and corruption operating at the highest levels of the US government, Military, and in Military Intelligence circles.

THE BROTHERHOOD

The Brotherhood is an enforcement arm of the Illuminati, connected with the Joint Chiefs, NSA, and the Whitehouse (which is run by the Military). Members wear different hats and are provided different passports with different names. This Brotherhood stem from the Nazis Intelligence hierarchy who illegally entered the USA under *Paperclip*. An alternative name is *The Firm.* [‘The Firm’ commonly refers to the British Queen and her intelligence agencies, or the CIA]. The Brotherhood is headed by a small, hierarchical group who answer to Nelson Rockefeller and the Rothschilds.

At the highest levels of the Marine Corps and the Army Special Op forces, the men are in the Brooklyn / New Jersey mob, a German-Hofjuden mafia group. The Firm are also involved with the Freemasons and related secret societies including *Opus Dei*, *B’nai Brith*, and *Skull & Bone, Cape & Gown* and *Order of Kappa Sigma* campus fraternities. This group even control the Jesuits. They are above the law and they protect each other.

ALL ROADS LEAD TO ROME

The German High Command were connected to *Opus Dei*, a right-winged Vatican-Freemason linked secret society. Former member and Oxford University professor John Roche described Opus Dei as ‘totalitarian’ and ‘fascist.’

Opus Dei is linked to Knights of Malta, a Vatican order linked to Freemasonry. Everyone involved with the world Trade Centre bombing were Knights of Malta. Here is a list of prominent Knights of Malta members:

- Gen. William ‘Jerry’ Boykin
- David Rockefeller
- Reinhard Gehlen (Nazi Intelligence; CIA)
- Heinrich Himmler
- Franz von Papen (Hitler enabler)
- Fritz Thyssen (Hitler’s financier)
- George W. Bush
- George Tenet (CIA chief during 9/11)
- Henry Kissinger (notorious pedophile)
- Rupert Murdoch
- Tony Blair (Westminster pedophile)
- Prescott Bush, Jr. (Nazi)
- Licio Gelli
- J. Edgar Hoover
- Joseph Kennedy
- Ronald E. Reagan (Bohemian Grove)
- Giscard d’Estaing
- Allen Dulles
- Oliver North
- George H.W Bush Snr (Nazi/CIA)
- William Casey
- James Jesus Angleton (CIA)
- William Simon (Citicorp)
- Francis X. Stankard (Chase Manhattan Bank)
- Justice Anton Scalia (Opus Dei)

Justice Scalia died under suspicious circumstances at Cibolo Creek ‘Rent Boy’ Ranch. The property is owned by John B. Poindexter who holds a leadership position in the *International Order of St. Hubertus*, a human hunting society linked to the Bohemian Grove. Poindexter served in Vietnam with the Marine Corp before becoming an investment banker in New York City. In 1985, Poindexter founded *J.B. Poindexter & Co.*, the world's largest manufacturer of commercial truck bodies. Kay Griggs said Marines commonly get their truck driver licences to facilitate their illegal drug and arms trafficking.

RECRUITMENT & INITIATION

Spread of the 'German Disease' resulted in a group of military child abuse victims called the *Pink Triangle* boys or *Cherry Marines* who went on to become Military Intelligence officers. Selection for the Military Intelligence sector began at Princeton and Yale, through their *Cap and Gown* or *Skull and Bones* secret societies. Vulnerable or neglected young boys from poor, abusive, or military families were selected, offered scholarships at prestigious boarding schools, and while apart from their parents, subjected to mind control, and 'turned' or conditioned toward homosexuality via rape by their teachers, academics, and the military intelligence hierarchy. This process makes the boys psychologically dependent on a predator mentor. Mind controlling young boys using sex is an old Marxist trick.

Only those military officers who participate in homosexual and pedophile orgies may rise through the ranks. The State Department calls those who are controlled 'Rising Stars.' Homosexuals rise through the military ranks much faster. All Special Operations members belong to *The Firm*. All new Colonels undergo an initiation ritual akin to Yale's *Skull and Bones* society and Princeton's *Cap and Gown* (the latter contains many Intelligence officers who have been raped). The *Skull and Bones* induction methods are used in the Army. This ritual stems from what the German High Command did, and before that it was practised in Greece. The US Chiefs of Staff must participate in the ritual where an initiate is placed in a coffin and he's the recipient of multiple oral and anal sex acts. This tradition is called '*Dining in'* or *'Shellback.'*

Kay Griggs maintained that the Special Ops, SEALS, and Al Gray's Marines were homosexuals and nudists who regularly attended pool sex parties and orgies. The military men typically started with the wild secretaries and progressed to homosexual orgies. At social Military gatherings, the military wives would leave the function at about 11 pm while the men stayed for the late night all-male orgy. Sex parties, homosexual enticements, pedophilia, embezzlement, and prostitution are used to control and keep *The Firm's* men from divulging secrets.

Israeli soldiers attended the sex parties also. Kay Griggs insisted that all British Military Intelligence officers are homosexuals, and that many teenage boys are recruited to MI6 from Eaton College via homo-pedophile rape.

PRINCETON PEDOPHILES

Princeton became a hub for German scientists imported under the guise of fleeing Nazi Germany. This wave of imports included the Nazi Psychological Operations group who continued their craft at Princeton. Hollywood's movie moguls stemmed from Princeton because Hollywood is part of the psychological operations propaganda machine.

Col. George Griggs was in 9th grade when the Princeton pedophiles first accessed him. *The Firm* sent Grigg's parents to California for eight years, giving the pedophiles exclusive access to their son. The Firm sent Griggs to board at the Hun School in Princeton, NJ. A British Marxist-Zionist group called the *Russell Trust* purchased the mansion for the Hun School which was started by Existentialist-Zionist Germans. The Hun School gave boys private flying lessons – and raped them. Griggs and his peers (Admiral Husband E. Kimmel's son, and the three sons of Saudi Arabian King Faisal) were subjected to mind control and rape by teachers, local men, and by the existentialist-communist Ashkenazi homo-pedophile German imports who occupied Princeton's *Institute for Advanced Study*. From 1933, the *Institute* became the academic base of Albert Einstein, J. Robert Oppenheimer, John von Neumann, Kurt Gödel, and Hermann Weyl. Einstein was a member of the same bisexual group as French existentialist-Marxist philosophers Albert Camus and Jean-Paul Sartre, and a close friend of serial pedophile rapist Charlie Chaplin. Griggs and his peers attended parties with the Einstein-Oppenheimer group. That is how Griggs became a *Pink Triangle Boy*, aka *Cherry Marine*. Griggs joined Princeton's Army Reserve Officers Training Corp, and then the Army chose the Marine Corp for him.

Col. Griggs subsequently endured four years of mind control at Princeton University. Kay Griggs considered John Forbes Nash a victim of the same Princeton mind control program. In 1954, Nash was arrested for indecent exposure in a sting operation targeting homosexual men. In the movie *A Beautiful Mind,* the interactions Nash 'imagined' having with US Military Intelligence struck me as real, and his paranoia (that communists were conspiring against him) seemed a cover contrived by complicit MK-ULTRA psychiatrists

VIETNAM

The Vietnam War is significant because that is where the key military leaders in charge of Joint Special Forces met and formed relationships. Many experiments were done on young soldiers in Vietnam. Further, combined mob-military partnership operations were conducted in Vietnam and Korea. The assassination squads began in Vietnam. '*MAC-SOG*' was a code word for sending out platoons to kill people in Vietnam (SOG = *Special Operations Group*).

THE BROTHERHOOD

All successful political, military, banking and businessmen are employed by The Brotherhood either by choice, conditioning, bribery, or blackmail. All members of the CFR (*Council on Foreign Relations*) are involved, as are all Marine Corp commandants. Here is a list of people Kay Griggs named as being involved in the criminal network:

- Gen. **Alfred Gray**: Princeton *Cap & Gown*; Marine Corp; Vietnam.
- Col. **George Griggs**: Princeton *Cap & Gown*; Marine Corp; Vietnam; Planned Bosnia & pre-positioned weapons in Norway; Planned Beirut Marine barracks bombing.
- Col. **Bob Edwards**: Princeton; Marine Corps; Psychological Warfare.
- **Donald Rumsfeld**: German; Princeton; US Navy; Whitehouse; NATO; Ran Wet, Dry & Psychological Operations.
- **William Colby:** Princeton; US Army; OSS; Vietnam; CIA Director.
- **George Schultz**: Princeton; Marine; US Secretary of State; Businessman.
- **Frank Carlucci**: Roomed with Rumsfeld at Princeton; US Navy; US Secretary of State; Businessman.
- **Allen W. Dulles:** Princeton; OSS Vienna; Spoke with Lenin; CIA Director, oversaw MK-Ultra, Iran coup, Bay of Pigs.
- Lt. Gen. **Brent Scowcroft**: US Air Force; Kissinger employee; NSA; British KBE.
- **Victor Harold Krulak**: Marine; Vietnam.
- **Lt. Col. Oliver L. North**: Marine; Vietnam; Indicted re Iran-Contra weapons trafficking.
- **Ben Bradlee**: Office of Naval Intelligence; *Washington Post* editor who broke Watergate with fellow CIA Intelligence Operatives Woodward & Bernstein.
- Gen. **Colin Luther Powell**: US Army; Rangers; Vietnam; Panama; Whitehouse.
- Gen. **John 'Jack' Sheehan**: Marine Corps; NATO; Campaigned against gays in the military when he attended homosexual orgies. His father organised Woodstock, a testing ground for drugs.

- **Heinz ('Henry') Kissinger**: German Ashkenazi, US Army Intelligence, Harvard, CIA Psychological Operations, Nelson Rockefeller employee, advisor to Nixon; Notorious pedophile who held orgies and raped boys Vietnam and Cambodia.
- B.Gen. **James 'Jim' R. Joy**: Marine; Vietnam; Waco; Director of Morale, Welfare & Recreation.
- Gen. **Carl Wade Stiner**: German heritage; Vietnam; Army Rangers; Snr Parachutist; Panama operational command.
- Gen. **William W. Hartzog**: German heritage; US Army; Vietnam; Snr Parachutist; Panama.
- Gen. **Creighton Williams Abrams**: US Army; Vietnam commander; Chief of Staff.
- **Caspar Willard Weinberger:** Ashkenazi; US Army; traitor on Douglas MacArthur's Intelligence staff; Whitehouse; Indicted re Iran-Contra weapons trafficking; British CBE recipient.
- **Albert Einstein:** German Ashkenazi; Princeton; organised German scientists' escapes to UK / USA Universities; took credit for Tesla's Nazi-stolen work; Pedophile; Friends with communist and violent child rapist Charlie Chaplin (his youngest victim was 6).
- **J. Robert Oppenheimer**: German Ashkenazi; Adler's experimental school NYC; PhD, University of Gottingen, German; Supported *Communist Party of America*. Father was in the Communist Party; Pedophile.
- Col **Barry Cantor**: US Air Force.
- Judge **John H. Moore**: US Navy; Threw his 1st wife into a mental institution.
- **Grover Cleveland Wright**: Marine; Virginian lawyer.
- **Carl Epting Mundy**: Son of German Nazi; Marine; Vietnam; CFR.
- **Clay LaVerne Shaw**: US Army, highly decorated WW2, OSS / CIA; Prosecuted for JFK assassination; Ran New Orleans Port trade; Known homosexual who serviced Army Generals with male prostitutes.
- **Thomas Parker Host**: Commandos assassin; mobster; controls VA port.
- **Walt W. Rostow**: Communist Russian Ashkenazi revolutionary terrorist; Behind the Dresden bombings in Germany during WWII and JFK's assassination; Attended Yale on scholarship at age 15; Oxford Rhodes scholar where he befriended pedophile Edward Heath and Lord Jenkins who founded a UK socialist party and oversaw radical social reforms on divorce, abortion and homosexuality. Wrote the report that caused the USA to enter the Vietnam war because he wanted to sell weapons. British OBE recipient.
- **Eugene Victor D. Rostow:** Blitzed Yale entrance exam; Lawyer.
- **Nicholas Rostow**: Ran Boston mob port and traded drugs with Mexico.
- **Robert B. Oakley:** Princeton; Office of Naval Intelligence; UN; Diplomat whose predecessor plus Pakistan's President were assassinated via plane crash; Director, State Department Office of Combating Terrorism.
- **Robert M. Gates**: PhD in Russian & Soviet history; US Air Force; Director CIA; Implicated in Iran-Contra scandal; Secretary of Defence; Planned Beirut Marine barracks bombing operation; National president of Boy Scouts & Eagle Scouts.
- **Jerry L. Unruh**: US Navy Vice-Admiral; Vietnam.

- **Tom Clancy:** Jesuit schooled; Army Reserves; spy/military propaganda novelist; Colin Powell associate.
- **Oliver 'Buck' Revell:** FBI; UN Delegate; National Security Council; pulled his son + son's wife off Lockerbie plane, on the tarmac, minutes before it took off.
- **Bill Clinton**: Yale *Skull & Bones*; Opposed Vietnam.
- **James Angleton:** Yale; US Army; CIA; homosexual.
- **J. Edgar Hoover:** Director FBI; Homosexual cross-dresser.
- **Mike Kemp**: 'ran naked around Bohemian Grove.'
- **Meyer Lansky**: Ashkenazi mobster.
- **Robert Carl 'Bud' McFarlane**: Naval Academy; Marine Corp; Vietnam; UN; Whitehouse; Indicted re Iran-Contra weapons trafficking.
- **Zbigniew Brzrenski**: US National Security Advisor; Answered to Nazi Intelligence head Reinhardt Gehlen.
- **George H.W. Bush Sr:** aka SS Nazi spy George 'Scherff'; Hitler's cousin; Son of Tesla's accountant; Orchestrated Tesla's Nazi murder; Yale Skull & Bones; US Navy; UN; CIA Director; Panama; JFK assassination.

George Bush pardoned the men indicted for secretly selling weapons to Iran and funnelling the money to support the Contras in Nicaragua. This may explain why:

Otto Skorzeny
Josef Mengele
George Scherff Jr.
George Scherff Sr.
Martin Bormann
Mother Scherff
Mrs. George Scherff
Reinhard Gehlen

George Bush with parents in 1950…

…and in Nazi Germany?

Kay Griggs said Otto Skorzeny was highly significant to *The Firm*. The following photos from Skorzeny's album were published by Eric Bermen who said he dated Skorzeny's granddaughter. According to Bermen, Skorzeny said the pictures capture the Nazi 'Scherff' family who escaped Germany under *Paperclip*, were given new identities and a backstory, and infiltrated the US Military and government. Kay Griggs agreed, the Nazi infiltrators were given false US identities and biographies. The supplier of these photos claims George H. Scherff Jr was the son of Dr. Nikola Tesla's German accountant, George H. Scherff, and that he was also Hitler's cousin. The group photo below captures a young Josef Mengele, Otto Skorzeny, and George Bush/Scherff. The following are close ups of the Bush trio in Nazi Germany, and then in the USA.

Next is a photo of Otto Skorzeny dining with an obese Josef Mengele. This looks remarkably like the Josef Mengele I encountered beneath the US Embassy in Australia and in the Australian Army's Milton Island bioweapons lab.

Otto Skorzeny dining with an obese Josef Mengele who looks just as I recall he did in the 1970s.

Bermen published many other photos from Skorzeny's album including happy snaps of Reinhart Gehlen in the USA, and Hitler who lived to a ripe old age under a new identity.

BEIRUT. 30 November 1983. Brigadier General Jim R. Joy (right) takes over command of the 22nd Marine Amphibious Unit from Colonel J.P. Faulkner during the unit's participation in a multinational peacekeeping operation.

7 December 1989. Pentagon. The Joint Chiefs of Staff (L to R): Gen. Alfred M. Gray (commandant Marine Corps); Gen. Carl E. Vuono, (Army); Admiral Carlisle A.H. Trost (Naval Operation); Gen. Larry D. Welsh (Air Force); Gen. Colin L. Powell (Army); Gen. Robert T. Herres (Air

US MILITARY CRIMINAL & FREEMASON ORIGINS

US Navy founder John Paul Jones was a notorious criminal, pedophile rapist, renegade, Cabalist, and Freemason. Similarly, the 1850s Marine Corp were Freemason funded assassins employed to protect ships. A German-trained Marine major, Jacob Zeiplin (Hofjuden) became head of the Marine Corps. Zeiplin changed the Marine uniforms to be like the Germans, with the pink helmets and everything, and the motto became the Rothschild coat of arms and various other symbols like the global new world order.

SPECIAL OPERATIONS

According to Col. Griggs, the Army term 'Joint' refers to the *Plans and Policies* group connected to the State Department, which ran operations to destabilise other countries. *The Firm* follow a communist agenda, their end goal being the destruction of Protestant Christian culture, and instalment of a global New World Order. They will do anything necessary to achieve their political and economic objectives, including killing innocent female and child US citizens. Their rationale is that killing a key leader, or killing 20 people, is preferable to war. The Firm's 'Special Operations' include:

- Assassinations
- Dirty Tricks
- Drug running
- Arms trafficking
- Creating wars and False Flag operations to test, demonstrate, and advertise weapons for illegal sale.
- Intentional destabilising and overthrow of governments.
- Training / Wet Ops (murders) from random shootings to large scale ops involving psychological warfare techniques.

1. DRUG / ARMS TRAFFICKING

The Marine Corps is the political arm of the group that controls the drug running and arms trafficking and who launder money from this. The Brotherhood is mob related. Mob funding and drug money pay for brand-new weapons. The Brotherhood run the ports, which allows them to freely traffic drugs and weapons. Retired military officers all get involved in drug and secondary weapons sales and running bikie gangs that aggravate crime to create a market for weapons sales. Col. Griggs was paid many thousands in AT&T stock, as payment for trafficking weapons in Beirut.

All illegal weapons sales go through the State Department. Israelis are the middlemen in the arms sales. The cash transactions go through Tel Aviv and the bank in Rome.

The Firm also manufacture and sell deadly chemicals and biological weapons. Generals Gray, Krulak, Scowcroft, Wilson, and Mundy sold the biologicals and chemicals to Saddam Hussein.

2. DIRTY TRICKS

Linda Tripp was a Delta Force Dirty Tricks expert operating under Gen. Carl Steiner. The Monica Lewinsky scandal was an Intelligence dirty tricks operation. The Firm made a failed attempt to assassinate Clinton via a plane crash.

3. MURDER INC

If someone talks and leaks information about *The Firm* and its operations, they are disappeared, neutralized, or ruined. [The same goes for helpful therapists, friends or family of victims and whistle-blowers.] The Special Forces commit the assassinations. The Marine Corps are particularly assassins for the mob. The Tel Aviv Israelis have assassin duo teams, each comprised of one Israeli plus an American Marine. These pairs are usually ‘flamers’ (homosexual kill teams that have sex with each other to create a bond of loyalty). To overcome jurisdictional limits, the Israeli would do assassinations in America and the American would do assassinations in Israel, etc. They trained at Quantico. They travelled to other countries to commit murders that were blamed on the Arabs.

Each Special Ops unit leaves its signature or mark (i.e., assassination method) to let others know which group did the job. Plane crashes were typical Special Operations. Princess Diana and John Denver were assassinated due to their campaign against land mines, because these weapons constituted a growth industry for the Navy in Texas. Diana had quickly formed a ‘critical mass’ that had to be quickly decapitated. If a critical mass is building, opposes the prevailing policy, and threatens something *The Firm* deem profitable or politically important, the key figures are routinely assassinated. To Kay Griggs' knowledge, *The Firm* ordered the following hits:

- Senator **Paul Wellstone** (+ wife & daughter): 2002 plane crash.
- Senator **Melvin E. Carnahan** (+ son): 2000 plane crash.
- **John Kennedy Jr**: 1999 plane crash, due to his growing popularity.
- **Enis W. Cosby**: Bill Cosby's son. Shot by Mossad.
- Senator **Ron Brown**: 1996 plane crash.
- **John A. Paisley**: CIA officer; Allegedly shot in 1978 & his body weighted & dumped in lake, after disclosing to therapy group plus CIA informant psychiatrist.
- **Nicholas G. Shadrin (aka, Nikolai Artmonov)**: CIA officer; Disappeared 1975.
- **Mary P. Meyer**: Wife of CIA officer Cord Meyer. 1964 death ruling = point blank gunshot wounds suggestive of a highly trained killer.
- **Ralph Sigler**: CIA officer; Electrocuted in 1977 via electrical wire plus wall socket by US Army assassins. His final words to his wife were: 'JUST LISTEN TO ME! Get you a respectable lawyer… sue the US Army. I'm dying. I never lied.'
- **Bill Clinton**: Failed hit via plane crash.

4. FALSE FLAGS

Beirut: Israeli assassins murdered 241 Marines in the Beirut bombing that was blamed on the Lebanese. The bombing was planned by Gen. Al Gray, Col. George Griggs, CIA Director Robert Gates, and Robert B. Oakley (Director of the State Department Office of Combating Terrorism), with Israeli Defence Minister Gen. Ariel Sharon.

Bosnia: Was a stage for training assassins, testing new weapons (like the B-2 stealth bomber), marketing weapons, and an opportunity to spend drug money.

Oklahoma: The bombing was planned by generals Steiner and Joy.

Waco: Generals Carl Steiner and Jim Joy conducted the Waco massacre as a live-fire training exercise. They brought in people from other countries. The pair were also in charge of the black helicopters. During the lead up to Waco, Steiner and Joy were involved in live-fire training operations in Panama, where they turn people loose and hunt them down. The training involved the CIA plus foreign mercenaries. They had been involved with Noriega (Panama leader who graduated from the School of the Americas).

Gen. Joy was in charge of Psychological Operations at Waco. Generals Joy and Sheehan trained the Special Ops forces who slaughtered innocent Branch Davidian children, shot a four-year-old blonde boy waving a white flag, in the head, pancaked a young girl with a tank, and fried the remaining kids with a giant flame thrower. Because the entire operation was originally marketed as being about rescuing the kids from the cult, right? I watched the entire video of these murders, including footage of the dead bodies, in the 1990s.

Panama: The war provided an opportunity to test new weapons. Generals Joy and Sheehan were behind the Panama invasion. Gen. Joy was in charge of Psychological Operations. [In 1995, SBS screened a television documentary about Panama in which American expats residing in Panama reported witnessing laser beams from helicopters slice tanks in half like a hot knife through butter.]

ASSASSIN TRAINING

The Firm will do anything necessary to get what they want politically and economically. They rationalize it by saying, killing a leader, or killing 20, is preferable to war.

Young soldiers are trained to kill using mind control, which is why the US Army has so many Special Operations specialists. Delta Force operatives do kills as part of their training. Young Army, Delta Force, Buds (the emerging Seals group) train by breaking into civilians' houses. SEALs commit cold murders when they graduate from training school. SEAL Teams 4, 6 and 8 are on the East Coast, odd numbers on the West Coast.

The SEAL graduation exercise is to do a cold kill. They just enter a hotel and whack somebody.

FOREIGN MERCENARIES

Mercenary training is occurring in the Army and the Air Force at the highest circles. Foreign assassins (especially Mossad agents) are employed to assassinate US citizens because they do not fall under US jurisdiction. [This helps to explain why the US Delta Force used an anonymous Australian child assassin.] US taxpayers fund foreign young mercenaries to kill innocent US citizens, including kids. Young foreigners train with the SEALS. The Israelis train with the Seals and commit Wet Ops in the USA.

NATO has a group of Assassins and Psychological Operations specialists who combine for operations to destroy targets. NATO rogue assassins from Australia, Britain, South Africa, etc, board a flight from Norfolk, then they go by a special helicopter to countries like Turkey, Iraq, or Algeria, to do wet ops. They murder five, 10, 20 people, and then blame it on the Arabs.

ASSASSIN TRAINING SCHOOLS

According to Kay Griggs, the following international schools exist for training assassins and Special Ops personnel:

- The US established Special Ops selection and training schools in Bosnia, Columbia and the Philippines.
- The British have a school in Indonesia.
- Pedophile Lord Mountbatten established an **Australian** training school for assassins in East Timor during WWII.
  [Australian independent Commando companies were fighting the Japs during WW2 in East Timor. The Japs got the upper hand, due to their brutal treatment of the locals. Owing to the resultant lack of local support, the Commandos were forced to withdraw from Timor.]

Delta Force are government assassins. The US Military trained Delta Force assassins at a HALO (High Altitude Low Opening) skydiving school in the Philippines. The Australians had a training school in the mountains of an island in East Timor. [HALO skydivers wear oxygen and jump at anything over 12,000 feet above sea level, to avoid radar detection, and pull at the lowest possible safe altitude. My father was a parachute instructor, notorious for his risk taking, who competed at the world games.]

Australia had a Delta Force assassin training school in East Timor

SILENCING TACTICS

1. St Elizabeth's Hospital

Army Intelligence employees who turn whistle-blower are targeted and thrown into St. Elizabeth's Hospital in Washington DC, the MK-ULTRA facility where Antony Kidman trained. Eastern State Hospital in Williamsburg is another facility used for silencing targeted individuals.

2. Electronic Weapons

Col. Griggs attended biological-electronic warfare Special Operations school. Kay Griggs displayed her husband's copy of, *Intelligence & Electronic Warfare Operations Field Manual (1983) of the US Army.* The manual explains how targets (i.e., dissidents and whistle-blowers) are subjected to the following methods:

> *An important part of electronic warfare is deception…*
>
> *Jamming is the deliberate radiation or re-radiation of electromagnetic energy to prevent or downgrade the reception of information by a receiver…*
>
> *MED (Manipulative Electronic Deception) is conducted by altering the electromagnetic profile of friendly forces. It seeks to counter hostile electronic warfare and Signals Intelligence (SIGENT) activities by manipulating friendly electronic-magnetic emissions. This is done by magnifying the technical characteristics and profiles which would provide an accurate picture of friendly intentions by deliberately transmitting false information.*

3. Chaplain Corp are Intelligence Informants

The Military Chaplain Corp are Intelligence officers who attended Yale. The Chaplain Corps collect information on Marines and their wives, and report this. If the Marine being monitored discloses the truth is a whistle-blower, or if the wife is a problem, they target them for silencing using chemicals, harassment, electronic warfare, and microchip implants. Wives are routinely murdered.

Phil Holwager, Chaplain for Fleet Marine Force Atlantic, helped hide Gol. Grigg's murder of his first wife, Suzanne Workman, during the Iran-Contra hearings, followed by Col. Grigg's violent beating (to the point of reconstructive surgery) of his second wife, Kay. Phil Holwager attended Yale with Gary Hart, and was friends with Yale graduate Pat Robertson [CBN televangelist].

4. Assassination

A Marine Corp hit squad was assigned to murder soldiers who revealed too much to their psychiatrists. The assassins are told the targets are 'enemies' or 'they've done bad things' to eliminate any sense of guilt or culpability.

PHOENIX PROJECT

Kay Griggs was friends with, and protected by, CIA Director William Colby until his murder. Little Creek Navy SEALS assassinated Colby the day before he was to testify before Congress about Iran-Contra affair because he threatened to expose Israel and the *Phoenix Program*.

William Colby gave author Douglas Valentine permission to interview CIA officials who had been involved in the *Phoenix Program* in South Vietnam. The CIA officers interviewed spoke freely with Valentine, thinking the interviews were for an inhouse training product. The CIA later rescinded Colby's permission, Special Ops assassinated Colby, and the CIA tried to supress publication of Valentine's book, *The Phoenix Program*.

Operation *Phoenix* was the CIA "assassination" program that resulted in the death of tens of thousands of civilians during the Vietnam War.'[400] The program was designed to identify and destroy the Viet Cong via population surveillance, infiltration, control, entrapment, capture, counterterrorism, interrogation, imprisonment, torture, rape and assassination. Operation *Phoenix* was designed, coordinated, and executed by the CIA in conjunction with:

- US Special Operations forces
- US Army Intelligence
- Australian Army Training Team Vietnam (AATTV)
- Australian Special Forces Operatives (SAS, Commandos).
- Vietnamese National Police Field Force (a CIA created and funded FBI equivalent).

[Note: Many Australian SAS and AATTV soldiers were unaware of the criminal nature of Phoenix. I have two Vietnam Veteran mates who were in those units.]

According to Valentine's interviewees, when trying to recruit agents, 'Bribes, sex, blackmail, and drugs all were legitimate means of recruitment.'[401] The attitude toward high-level VCI was: '…recruit them; if you can't recruit them, defect them…if you can't defect them, capture them; if you can't capture them, kill them.' These are the same methods the CIA employ to honeytrap politicians and businessmen.

The *Phoenix* program provided the blueprint for subsequent invasions and government coup d'états and destabilisations like Afghanistan, false flag operations like Waco and 9/11, and management of 'dissidents' and whistle-blowers like me.

Valentine's subsequent book, *CIA as Organised Crime* [402] documented Douglas Valentine's investigations into the CIA's role in controlling the global drug trade, terrorism and propaganda activity. The CIA trafficked opium and heroin from their secret bases in Laos, to generals and politicians on their payroll in South Vietnam. The CIA also infiltrated US federal drug law enforcement agencies, and commandeered their executive management, intelligence and foreign operations staffs, to facilitate drug traffickers and corrupt foreign officials.

---

[400] Douglas Valentine (2017). *The CIA as Organized Crime: How Illegal Operations Corrupt America and the World*. Clarity Press, p16.

[401] Douglas Valentine (2010). *The Phoenix Program*.

[402] Douglas Valentine (2010). *The Phoenix Program*.

The CIA *is* the US Military

Howard Bane (Yale) worked for the US Army before transferring to the CIA. He was appointed as head of the CIA's *Office of Terrorism* in 1977. The US Army created Delta Force under Bane. US Special Forces including Delta, SEAL Team 6, Army Rangers plus the navy and air force units that transport them, all performed mercenary work for the CIA. The Special Forces sit between the CIA and the Army, and function outside the Army's chain of command. They deal with civilians in a way that regular soldiers don't, like organising militias (locate local rebels), spread propaganda, and administer vaccinations. When Special Forces retire, they do mercenary work for the CIA around the world. 'The CIA is set up as a military organisation with a chain of command. Somebody tells you what to do, and you salute and do it.'[403]

As Kay Griggs said, the CIA is staffed by former Military Intelligence personnel; therefore, the CIA *is* the Military. That would explain why I recall a mix of Australian / US Military and Secret Service personnel, operatives, locations, and transportation.

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY RAPE

Together, Australia's Child Abuse Royal Commission (*Case Study 40*, *Australian Defence Force*) and the *Defence Abuse Response Taskforce* heard testimony from thousands of child cadets and adult military personnel who were raped in Australia's Defence Forces.

The *Defence Abuse Response Taskforce* produced a *Final Report* which indicates that 73% of reported sexual assault victims were male, and that the majority of these males were raped by homosexual perpetrators. The Child Abuse Royal Commission announced that 10.6% of reported child rapists were female.

In the Australian military, over 86% of rapes were homosexual assaults, and more than 50% of the female victims were raped by females. Additionally, many of the lesbian perpetrators were serial rapists. In all, the LGB demographic is the major source of child and adult rapists in the military. These figures are extraordinary and are not reflected in civilian statistics. The rapes of minors were organised by the military leadership.

Thousands of minors (under 18s) came forward to the Royal Commission and Defence Abuse Response Task Force to report they were sexually assaulted on military bases. The Australian Navy possesses the most debauched history of sexual misconduct. John Atkins was an officer cadet at HMAS Creswell at 13 years of age in 1953. When he complained about being sexually abused by 14-year-old boys the Navy did nothing.[404] Minors were routinely raped at multiple Navy bases.

Child Abuse Royal Commission: Rear Admiral did not ask leaving recruits if they were being abused

Philippa McDonald, *ABC News*, 23 June 2016

> *The senior naval officer appointed to stamp out a culture of abuse, bullying and violence at HMAS Leeuwin in the early 1970s has admitted he never thought to ask young recruits leaving the Navy specifically whether it was because of abuse…*
>
> *Rear Admiral Sinclair became Commander and Executive Officer at the naval base in 1972 in the aftermath of a damning investigation in 1971 which found assaults and*

---

[403] Ibid.

[404] John Atkins & Paul Evans (2015). *A Child in the Navy a Man Betrayed*. Xlibris.

> *sexual abuse were common at the base. The Retired Rear Admiral, who went on to become the Governor of New South Wales between 1990 and 1996, was accused by lawyers acting for sexual abuse survivors of failing to change the 'demeaning' culture at HMAS Leeuwin.*
>
> ***'Zero tolerance for homosexual activity at the time'***
>
> *During his evidence, Retired Rear Admiral Sinclair was also asked whether young naval recruits would have been fearful that by reporting sexual abuse, they would be discharged for 'homosexual activity.' At the time he said there was an attitude to 'be mindful of the experimentation factor' but a confidential naval order had a stated 'zero tolerance,' declaring it was necessary to 'stamp out evil.' The 1969 order, which was read in evidence today included:*
>
>> *The corrupting influence of such men is widespread and their eradication from the service is essential if the Navy is not to betray its trust towards the young men in its midst who may be perverted by them. Although no evidence has been detected to support the suggestion, there might be a direct connection between homosexuality and communism, the possibility of blackmail cannot be disregarded.*
>
> ***100 recruits each night sought refuge in chapel***
>
> *In earlier evidence, a former chaplain at HMAS Leeuwin in the late 1960's told the royal commission that the environment was so tough at the naval base his chapel became a refuge for young recruits. Peter Ball, 86, told the royal commission he took over in 1969 and that up to 100 boys would come to his chapel each night to seek refuge…*
>
> *Australian sailors were routinely subjected to the Crossing of the Equator sexual assault initiation ritual. The Military Police facilitated and participated in child rapes, as did civilian police to whom the rape victims turned to for help.*

The Royal Commission heard testimonies concerning the Australian Navy's 'Crossing of the Line' initiation ritual:

> *(iv) Physical abuse during initiation rituals. The Taskforce received a number of complaints regarding physical abuse in the context of initiation rituals on ships (see further section 16.6(c) below). During these incidents, complainants were often forcibly constrained and subjected to a range of physically and sexually abusive conduct. Many of these complainants described how members of senior rank were present during these ceremonies and participated as witnesses or were often involved in carrying out the abuse experienced by junior sailors.*

The above assault statistics are extremely under-reported. Rape in the military is the norm rather than the exception. Two of my friends were raped in the Navy. One friend of 20+ years only recently disclosed for the first time that she was gang raped by sailors on a Western Australian Navy base in her youth. Incidentally, my therapist treated a bloke who enlisted in the Australian Navy at age 16 years. During his first day aboard the ship, the teenager was taken to meet the Captain who immediately threw the lad face down and sodomised him.

Military homo-pedophilia is far more institutionalised and systematic than the latter example. HMAS Swan ('Fluffy Duck') was a large and powerful Navy vessel commissioned from 1970 to 1996. The Swan was specifically used to internationally sex traffic boys. When the prostituted boys turned 16 years, they were forcibly enlisted in the Australian Navy and assigned back to HMAS Swan, to help facilitate the sex trafficking of the next younger generation of victims.

Conclusion

Let us collate a list of facts that this plus previous chapters have examined:

- The Australian Army's Special Forces (SAS) were involved in the Phoenix Program.
- The CIA and US Special Forces created Delta Force.
- Australia had a Delta training base in East Timor.
- Holsworthy Army base is Australia's oldest military base.
- All CIA officers were formerly Military Intelligence. Special Operations forces work for the CIA. Conclusion: the CIA *is* the military.
- High ranking Special Forces, Military Intelligence, and CIA personnel are recruited as children, subjected to mind control methods, homosexual rape, and secret society initiation, to foster the required cult-like loyalty mentality.
- CIA psychiatrist Martin Orne, who abused children as part of MK-ULTRA, kicked off Project MK-ULTRA in Australia at Sydney University in 1960.
- The CIA and Special Forces are criminal and unethical organisations involved in drug running, weapons trafficking, and the torture and assassination of civilians.
- The Australian military facilitated a culture of teen and homosexual rape.

It's no stretch to fathom that the same group of psychopathic pedophiles subjected Australian children to trauma-based mind control and used them as Delta Force assassins.

'KILL OR BE KILLED'

My research into different combat knives led me to the Fairbairn-Skyes fighting knife, which in turn led me to the knife's designer. William Ewart Fairbairn designed fighting techniques for the British secret services, OSS, and allied special operations units including the Rangers. His mixed martial arts close combat fighting system certainly formed the basis of DELTA training, because I recognised everything that I read about it - especially Fairbairn's motto, '*Kill or be killed*.'

Before finding Jerry Boykin's identity, I well recalled our DELTA team Commander was a real-life GI Joe, with chiselled jaw, golden tan, and a buff chest. He typically dressed in camo trousers, a khaki t-shirt and cap. His fair buzz cut was greying at the temples. I guessed he was 35 years old when I was 14. The Commander had an American accent. He was the same guy who trained our team at Holsworthy in Australia, oversaw my Dagon training near drowning when I was chained and thrown off a US Special Ops navy vessel, and who led a mission to Honduras.

DELTA soldiers were programmed with unquestioning obedience and endurance. These qualities were achieved through training exercises focussing on survival of the fittest and elimination of the weakest. Training included real-life hunger games in which the weakest DELTA and regular Army recruits were killed by members of their own unit, and cannibalised. I recall several of these gut-wrenching exercises that occurred when I was 14 years old. One took place on the nearby Woronora Dam. Two dinghies full of soldiers hugged the far west bank. I was in the rear vessel when we were ambushed. Everyone in the front boat was mowed down by gun fire coming from the nearby bush. At this, I instinctively called for the boys in my boat to dive and swim underwater toward a rocky point to our back left. There we realised the weakest half of our team had been intentionally grouped in the front boat.

On another occasion, we were forced to hunt down a skinny young regular soldier who went by the nickname 'Skippy.' He was a simple, goofy-looking, harmless guy who worked as a cook. He wore camouflage trousers, an army cap over his brown hair, but for some reason he was dressed in a white singlet. Skippy was violently murdered in the Aussie bush by Aussie soldiers who pounced on him like wild animals, sliced open his chest, and pulled out his still beating heart.

Then I was ordered to select one soldier from my unit to challenge in a real-life round of hunger games. 'Hunt or be hunted!' I was told. I chose the weakest target, 'Jason-6.' We were released at dusk. I recall scrambling up a tree with a knife between my teeth and patiently waiting there for Jason to creep past in the expected hunched posture. I leapt onto him with the knife aimed at the back of his neck. Game over. My next memory is of being coated in blood, reaching up to the sky and screaming hysterically. My next memory is of being curled up in a foetal position in the corner of a concrete Holsworthy cell, mentally cracking. My next memory is of Anne Conlon arriving and yelling, 'Alice!' at me.

My most painful DELTA memory occurred on the spa mat in a gym constructed beneath Holsworthy. Our unit were lined up along the edge of the blue mat. I had just returned from Dulce where I trained under Aquino. The commander paired me up with my favourite Jason, the one who cared for me for eight years. I dislocated his shoulder during the ensuing wrestle. The boys laughed at Jason who groaned on the mat. I retired to the drinks cart for refreshments, glad that was over. The Commander approached me and quietly uttered those dreaded words:

'Finish him off.'

I eyeballed him fleetingly, swallowed my objection, rushed over to the mat where Jason lay moaning, grabbed him by the head, and snapped his neck.

Silence.

Not him! we all thought but dared not utter.

My therapist once commented, 'You never cry in therapy. In fact, I think you're the only one of my clients who doesn't cry.' I cried for the first time at the memory of killing Jason. I convulsed with mourning and remorse as I remembered seeing his pretty young brunette wife at Holsworthy, dressed in red, flanked by two small children.

Evidence of my DELTA training leaked into my regular life on several occasions. The first incident occurred at school when I was 16. Our art teacher tried to snatch a Stanley knife from my hand. I stood with my feet apart and locked each of my hands over either end of the blade. Ken Siddall was a tall, solid middle-aged man who regularly rowed. He used two hands and all his strength to try and jerk the knife from my grip. Terror washed over his face at realising not only could he not pull the knife from my hands, but my entire body was as still as a bronze statue. I did not move one single millimetre.

The second incident occurred during parole officer training in Sydney. I somehow ended up on the mat sparing with the man who trained prison guards in dirty combat. He was a short, fit man with advanced belts in three martial arts. I supposedly had no such training. Yet I immediately had this combat expert in a head lock, slapping the mat, and forcing a muffled, 'You got me!'

Then there were the few times I used a gun prior to my stroke. The most memorable occasion was on Hamilton Island when I was 33 years old and had my first try at clay pigeon shooting. During my first round, I tried singles and I hit every disc. During my second round, I tried doubles and I hit all but one double (although I did hit one of the two discs). By the end of my session, a crowd of men who had gathered behind me burst into applause. I wore no shoulder brace to protect my body from the kickback.

I later noticed that Delta soldiers are trained to shoot without aiming. Coincidentally, that is exactly the type of shooting I excelled at.

DELTA MISSIONS

Age 14 years is optimal for a female DELTA child soldier. The man who trained prison guards at NSW Corrective Services told me, 'Childless females under 23 years of age make the best assassins because they haven't yet developed a sense of their own mortality or been softened by motherhood.' Females are more physically and psychologically flexible, and more intuitive; which is why Hitler consulted female mediums.

As Kay Griggs explained, foreign mercenaries, including Australian soldiers, were employed to do international hits. I was regularly collected through my teens ('Hey, mum, just going to Mylie's place for a few days…') and transported for global operations. I recall 'Black Widow' style hits on pedophiles who thought they were in for a good time. I recall skydiving with a team into some mafia drug lord's remote villa in the mountains, decimating a pregnant wife at a baby shower, and navigating mountain terrain to rendezvous at a chopper. I recall snippets regarding a hit on some political figure in Havana, Cuba, beginning with a small white plane, an escorted walk through a waterside market, and wearing a burgundy patterned summer frock that cloaked a weapon holstered to my thigh. There was also a Delta mission in Tuscany. The list goes on and on…

Honduras

It was 1983 and I was 14 when our Delta team flew over Honduran rainforest in a large green military-looking helicopter. I sat at the front of an open door on the left side, with my legs dangling out. A mature Caucasian man sat in similar fashion to my left. He wore a desert brown coloured pocketed vest and cap. My vague thoughts about him included: possible American accent, possible journalist, possible soldier. The way he squinted his eyes as he sized me up reminded me of a bad actor. I detected he was lying.

I got up, approached the co-pilot and communicated for him to change coordinates. On my way back to my seat, I turned to my Commander standing behind the co-pilot and communicated: 'Drop Charlie.' Then I returned to my position at the door and observed the scenery below.

Moments later, two soldiers threw the stranger out the door, and I watched him scream to his death. Our Commander later praised my 'good call.'

I next recalled sitting with my team around a small campfire. I heard a suspicious background noise. I dropped to the ground and simultaneously swept the fire out with my rifle. Suddenly the night air lit up with gunfire. It reminded me of small fireworks clusters called 'Tom Thumbs' that we fooled about with as kids in the 1970's. I saw a grenade glistening in the sparse light. Someone, maybe me, tossed it out. Those are my memory snippets.

After writing the above, I went searching to see whether any American journalists were killed in Honduras in 1983. I found one. Dial Torgensen, a veteran correspondent for the *Los Angeles Times*. Although his profile photo I found did not match the chubbier guy with dark hair that I saw thrown from the chopper, I suspect he was somehow connected to that kill, and that Delta assassinated him also. Torgensen had served in Korea as an Army lieutenant. He and his photographer reportedly died when their car was ripped in half by Nicaraguan rocket-propelled antitank grenades. Their bodies and car were torn apart by the explosion – yet their driver survived with relatively minor injuries. This aroused my suspicions, so I searched for reports of discrepancy with the official account of the journalists' deaths. I found this:

> **2 SLAIN US JOURNALISTS FLOWN TO HONDURAN CAPITAL**
> Barbara Crosette, *New York Times*, 23 June 1983.
>
> *MANAGUA, Nicaragua, June 22 -The Nicaraguan Foreign Ministry issued a statement today denying the Honduran charges that its soldiers had killed the journalists. Then at a news conference, Foreign Minister Miguel d'Escoto Brockman, charged that the Honduran accusation contained contradictions and suggested that the journalists' bodies might have been brought to the border area after they were killed elsewhere.*
>
> *He said Honduran accounts did not explain who was driving the car in which the journalists died, who had authorized their trip to the border area, where else they had travelled that day or why the Government report of the incident did not come until several hours after it occurred. ''How is it possible that these journalists were allowed to go into that area without an escort?'' the Foreign Minister asked. ''These uncertainties lead us to think of the possibility that it was all a trap.''*
>
> *He said both journalists had been sympathetic to the Sandinista Government. He showed a copy of a book about Nicaragua for which Mr. Cross had taken photographs to accompany a text written by the Minister of Culture, Ernesto Cardenal. He said Mr. Torgerson had written ''reports favourable to the Sandinista revolution…''*

The Sandinistas' were heavily influenced by Marxism and maintained ties with the Soviet Union. In 1981, the CIA funded and trained the *Contras* to overthrow the Sandinista government.[405] I suspect a link between our DELTA team's presence in Honduras and Nicaragua in 1983, and the deaths of those two US journalists.

* * *

---

[405] ICJ (NICARAGUA v. UNITED STATES OF AMERICA) 27 June 1986.

MK-ULTRA in Hillsong Church

> *And for this reason, God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.* (2 Th. 2:11)

The *Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse* seemingly exposed multiple Australian church denominations for their coverup of heinous sex crimes against children. As I predicted and published in 2013, the Royal Commission took a 'sampling approach' to the massive child trafficking network known as the Australian churches. The Commission's approach buried the true nature and scope of church involvement in organised child trafficking. The Royal Commission featured notable cases from each of Australia's major denominations including the Roman Catholics, Salvation Army, Jehovah Witnesses, Anglicans, and Assemblies of God. None of these were new revelations, but cases that had already been prosecuted or published in the mainstream press. I will now follow suit and highlight one case example – Hillsong.

AZUSA STREET ORIGINS

The Australian branch of the Assemblies of God (AOG) was founded in 1937 and is our largest Pentecostal movement. It has approximately 1,000 affiliated churches. In 2007 the AOG changed its name to Australian Christian Churches (ACC). The AOG was a soft CIA target due to its Azusa Street 'revival' roots. The AOG claim to be a separate movement, but the pioneers of the Australian AOG movement were themselves influenced by Azusa and AOG USA.

The Azusa Street 'revival' was started by Charles Fox Parham. In 1907, Parham was arrested and charged with sodomy in Texas. William Seymour received 'Holy Spirit baptism' while at Bible school under Parham. Seymour began preaching about Holy Spirit baptism in a barn/warehouse on Azusa Street. A 'revival' began in April 1906 and lasted until 1913. During this time, thousands of people visited 312 Azusa St. to receive the Holy Spirit baptism, and thousands of Pentecostal missionaries established churches around the world.

Pentecostals and Charismatics revere Azusa as a genuine move of God in restoring the Church to true power and authority. However, the Azusa street meetings were filled with spiritualist mediums, hypnotists, and other occultists. While Pentecostals view Azusa as the birthplace of modern Pentecostalism, orthodox theologians expressed a completely different opinion of the movement:[406]

- '*the last vomit of Satan*.' (G. Campbell Morgan)
- '*emphatically not of God and founded by a Sodomite*.' (R.A. Torrey)
- '*disgusting...delusions and insanities. . . pandemoniums where exhibitions worthy of a madhouse or a collection of howling dervishes,*' '*heavy toll of lunacy and infidelity*.' (H.A. Ironside)
- '*Satan's preachers, jugglers, necromancers, enchanters, magicians, and all sorts or mendicants*.' (W.B. Godbey)

---

[406] Michael L. Brown (1996). *Holy Laughter to Holy Fire: America on the Edge of Revival*. Destiny Image, pp. 197-198.

- ‘*the conduct of those possessed, in which they fall to the ground and writhe in contortions, causing disarrangements of the clothing and disgraceful scenes, is more a characteristic of demon possession, than a work of the Holy Spirit*.’ (Clarence Larkin)

HILLSONG LINKS TO AZUSA

Four independent Pentecostal organizations survived the Azusa movement, including the AOG USA which formed in 1914. AOG USA produced closet gay pastors Jim Bakker and Paul Crouch who co-founded TBN before their 1973 fallout and built Disney-like Bible-themed parks. Crouch’s granddaughter won $2 million damages after Jan Crouch buried her rape at age 13 years by a TBN employee.

The AOG USA also produced kooks like William Branham who claimed an Angel called ‘Emma’ appeared, conversed with him, and gave him spiritual gifts. Branham influenced New Zealand pastor Ray Bloomfield, under whom Frank Houston served as assistant pastor.

Frank Houston’s church meetings were replete with the same strange physical manifestations witnessed at Azusa, John Arnott’s ‘Toronto blessing’, Brownsville, Pensacola, and Lakeland ‘revival’ featuring adulterous Todd Bentley who also claimed to be visited by Branham’s angel, Emma.

Frank Houston had John Arnott from Toronto, and Randy Clarke (who supposedly started the Toronto Blessing) preach at his Sydney AOG Church. Frank Houston was filmed attending the Brownsville ‘revival’ with founders John Kilpatrick and Steve Hill, and he had Lila Tahune of Bronwnsville Pensacola speak at his Sydney church.

KUNDALINI ROCK SPIDER CULT

A cancer is spreading throughout protestant Christendom, a Kundalini rock spider rock cult called Hillsong. Its founder adopted a slicker, more lucrative business marketing approach than his pedophile father who tolerated knicker-flashing middle-aged women embarrassing themselves by thrashing about the floor like tuna on a trawler boat. Brian Houston removed the plaque fixed to Hillsong Church which stated that Frank Houston founded it, and he used his ill-found ‘prosperity’ to fund his facelift, hair transplant, and his wife’s boob job.

Hillsong’s renovated, conservative image proved PR palatable for Prime Ministers, Police Commissioners, and pop stars who ignored Frank Houston’s irrelevant indiscretion. Mind controlled Hillsong slaves bark, ‘Don’t touch God’s anointed!’ at the suggestion their plastic dictator concealed crimes. Hillsong franchises continue to open shop the world over, most recently breaking into the lucrative US market. Numerous other churches of various denominations imitate the Hillsong corporate model. Most Australian churches pay for the right to use Hillsong’s B-grade pop tunes.

PUBLIC PERCEPTION

In October 2014, the Royal Commission held a public hearing into the responses by the AOG/ACC and affiliated Pentecostal churches to allegations of child sexual abuse made against Pastor William Francis (‘Frank’) Houston in 1999 and the response of *Sydney Christian Life Centre* and *Hills Christian Life Centre* (now called *Hillsong Church*) to those allegations. The Royal Commission also examined the response of the AOG/ACC to the allegations.

Frank Houston was an ordained Salvation Army officer at age 18 in New Zealand. He changed denominations twice, first to the Baptist church, and in 1960 he established his first AOG NZ church. From 1965 to 1971 he rose to the position of AOG NZ Superintendent. During those years, Frank Houston often visited Australia to preach.

In 1977, Frank Houston established the *Sydney Christian Life Centre* and was based in Australia. In 1978, Frank Houston's son, Brian Houston, and daughter-in-law, Bobbie Houston, joined the ministry there. In 1983, Brian and Bobbie Houston founded the *Hills Christian Life Centre* and the two churches merged in 1999 renaming itself *Hillsong Church* in 2001. Today Hillsong Church spans 12 countries including Australia. According to Hillsong, 11,000 people attend the Baulkham Hills site of the Hillsong Church each weekend and 35,000 across Australia.

Both the *Sydney Christian Life Centre* and *Hills Christian Life Centre* were affiliates of the AOG. Brian Houston was the National President of the AOG from 1997 to 2009. Today Hillsong Church is an affiliate of the ACC.

Royal Commission Victim 'AHA' (CS18) was first sexually assaulted by Frank Houston at age 7 years in 1969. His family members were good friends with Frank Houston who often visited from New Zealand to preach. In 1969 and 1970 Frank Houston, sometimes with his family, came and stayed in AHA's home in Sydney. Frank Houston would enter his bedroom at night and violently rape him while he was staying with them. To illustrate, Frank Houston would choke the young child while sodomising him. Such rapes occurred numerous times over a period of years but stopped when AHA reached puberty.

In October 1998, AHA's mother attended an AOG church called *Emmanuel Christian Family Church* and disclosed there that Frank Houston had sexually abused her son about '30 years ago.' The senior pastor of that Church at the time was Pastor Barbara Taylor. Taylor and 'evangelist' Kevin Mudford (aka, 'Mad Dog') visited AHA's house that evening and confronted the victim about his abuse disclosure.

In December 2002, further allegations of child sexual abuse were made by another victim, 'AHG' that Frank Houston sexually abused him in New Zealand.

In 2004, Frank Houston suffered an aneurism in the care of a non-Hillsong nurse and died in the shower. NSW Police Commissioner Andrew Scipione attended Frank Houston's funeral to honour the serial child rapist.

In February 2009, Brian Houston was told of further pedophile allegations concerning his father's rape of victim 'AHH' more than 30 years previously in New Zealand.

The Royal Commission concluded, no allegations of child sexual abuse against Frank Houston were referred to the police and no civil proceedings had been commenced in Australia relevant to allegations against him. The Royal Commission chastised Brian Houston for not reporting the abuse allegations to the police.

Brian Houston emerged from the public hearing to be confronted by a woman at whom he repeatedly screamed: 'I AM NOT A PEDOPHILE!' Security guards had to restrain Brian Houston from lunging at the woman.

THE COVERUP

That is the official story fed to the public. Now let me share what I heard from Hillsong victims and witnesses, of how the CIA systematically infiltrated the AOG, and how the satanic cesspit called Hillsong came to be.

Frank Houston was far more perverted than 'plain vanilla.' Trainee pastor Peter Laughton was 21 years old and Frank Houston was in his 50s when the talented young musician moved into the home Frank shared with his wife Hazel. Behind every Ahab there is a Jezebel, and Hazel Houston knew all about her husband's antics from the start. Even after the truth began emerging, Hazel pushed for Frank Houston's pastoral restoration, citing the

Biblical story of King David's affair with a married woman. Frank Houston took advantage of Peter Laughton with Hazel's knowledge.

HILLSONG – THE CHURCH WITH NO ANSWERS

David Marr, *The Sydney Morning Herald*, 4 August 2007.

> ***A fallen leader of faith***
> *FRANK HOUSTON was a charismatic preacher and a sick man. He won famous souls for Hillsong - jockey Darren Beadman was one of his scalps - and sexually abused young men.*
>
> *He was about 60 when he undertook to cure 23-year-old Peter Laughton's homosexuality. 'My counselling sessions by the senior minister were nothing more than sexual abuse disguised in the form of the need of a father's love and discipline,' Laughton says. 'Through my naivety, I enjoyed the naked beatings, the eternal bum caresses and masturbating into bottles, among other things.'*
>
> *Laughton was training to be a pastor. He says the abuse continued for about four years until 1984… Laughton's faith went first. He tells the Herald that before leaving the church in the early 1990s he gave an account to another pastor of the abusive therapy he'd received. But as far as Laughton is aware, no action was taken against the old man until he was forced into retirement by his son Brian after an allegation of pedophilia emerged in about 2000…*
>
> *Burying his father in 2004, Houston declared him a man who made mistakes but a preacher 'in a class of his own.'*

HOUSTON'S AOG TAKEOVER

Brian Houston was once heard talking with his mother Hazel about starting his own denomination. Brian responded: '*Why start your own when there is a perfectly good one that you can take over?*' He meant the AOG.

Brian Houston's AOG takeover attempt began in 1997 when he ran for the top Executive position, AOG General Superintendent (renamed National President). The current National President, Andrew Evans of Paradise AOG in South Australia, had held the office for 20 years. Andrew Evan's 2IC Phil Hills ran against Brian Houston for the 1997 leadership position. Credentialed ministers were entitled to vote, plus each church could nominate additional voting delegates at the rate of 1:100 congregants. Brian's own church, *Hills Christian Life Centre* (renamed Hillsong) was a mega church with thousands in attendance and therefore had incredible voting strength. To win the vote, Brian Houston bused hundreds of voting delegates to the 1997 Adelaide conference. That is how Brian Houston became AOG /ACC General Superintendent/National President for the next decade.

Prior to *hillsongification*, AOG churches were traditionally structured to run from the congregation up, and pastors were answerable to the people. Brian Houston's own *Hillsong* church was an incorporated entity run from the top down, which gave him absolute authority. Brian Houston used his position as National President to restructure the entire AOG organisation so that it too ran from the top down. This effectively gave the National Executive total control of the Australian AOG denomination. Many pastors within the AOG movement changed the governance of their own local churches to Brian's model, which gave local pastors incredible powers over their congregations, and in turn handed incredible power to the AOG Executive.

Brian Houston's takeover plan was interrupted by public revelation of his father's child sex crimes, and his focus subsequently turned to damage control. Brian Houston then used his position as National President, and the new power structure, to silence victims and coverup his father's emerging pedophilia. Another damage control move was Brian Houston taking over Frank Houston's Sydney church and merging it with Hillsong in 1999, before the AOG Executive officially acknowledged Frank Houston's pedophilia.

1999: NATIONAL EXECUTIVE COVERUP BEGAN

Everyone on the 1999 AOG Board was complicit in protecting pedophile Frank Houston, as captured in the minutes of a 'Special Executive Meeting' (22 December 1999) attended by John Lewis (Chairman), Brian Houston, David Cartledge, P. Hills, Steve Penny, Alun Davies, Danny Guglielmucci, Wayne Alcorn, and Keith Ainge who conspired as follows:

1. *It was agreed that the minutes of this meeting be kept confidential and in a special file.*
2. *It was noted that an allegation has been made against Rev. Frank Houston, of a single act of sexual abuse more than 30 years ago. The complainant does not wish to be identified and does not wish to make a formal complaint, but Frank Houston has confessed to the act.*
3. *It was agreed that the president of the AOG (Brian Houston) has acted appropriately in suspending the credential of F. Houston, standing him down from ministry and calling this special meeting of the National Executive.*
4. *It was agreed that:*
    - *F. Houston's credential be withdrawn forthwith*
    - *He be invited to enter the AOG restoration program*
    - *He be placed under the supervision of Ian Woods (State Superintendent NSW)*
    - *He refrains from Public ministry for 12 months*
    - *He not receive his credential until the NSW Superintendent recommends to the National Executive at the expiration of at least two years*
    - *He be offered counselling support if required.*
5. *It was agreed, in the interest of the complainant, not to notify the movement of this disciplinary action. (This is in line with our restoration policy)*
6. *It was agreed that B. Houston notify F. Houston of the decisions of the Executive.*
7. *It was agreed that J. Lewis and W. Alcorn meet with "Mad Dog" Morgan and inform him of the action that has been taken by the Executive.*
8. *It was agreed that B. Houston meet with the complainant and explain the process of discipline and restoration that has been followed. It was agreed that he be assured that his identity has not been disclosed at the Executive meeting and his desire for anonymity has been honoured. It was agreed that he be offered counselling if he desires it.*
9. *It was noted that legal advice has been obtained as to our obligations in this matter.*
10. *It was agreed that any inquiries in relation to this matter be directed to J. Lewis.*

AOG PLACED KIDS AT RISK

The AOG Executive lied to Australian ordained pastors concerning why Frank Houston resigned from his position. In a Special Executive Meeting report (dated 22 November 2000), Brian Houston outlined accusations that were raised against Frank Houston's 'inappropriate sexual behaviour with boys around 33 years ago' in New Zealand, 'involving between two and five people.'

A '*Special Elders Meeting*' was convened on 29 November 2000 to '*discuss matters relating to the apparent moral failure by Frank Houston some 30 years ago*.' This reads, '*Announcement to Church/s: It was agreed that a simple announcement concerning Frank's retirement would be sufficient at this stage*.'

A National Executive '*Report on trip of John Lewis and Keith Ainge to New Zealand and Sydney, 28th 29th November 2000*' reads: '*A total of six specific allegations have been investigated by the New Zealand executive relating to improper touching of genitals*.' This letter indicates a total of four victims were identified, and that '*at least 50 pastors in New Zealand are aware of the allegations… John Lewis Stressed that the Australian Executive preferred not to publish a statement… unless rumours became so bad that it was considered in the best interests of all concerned. The New Zealand executive agreed with this approach*.'

The AOG National Executive prepared a vague statement (dated 8 December 2000) '*as a response to individuals if they hear rumours and approach the executive for clarification*.' It reads: '*The National Executives of the Assemblies of God in Australian and New Zealand have had the very sad responsibility of investigating claims of a serious moral failure against Frank Houston*.'

The National Executive sent all Australian ordained AOG pastors a letter (dated 24 December 2001) telling them, '*Pastor Brian Houston received **a serious accusation** against his father, Frank Houston*,' and advising pastors, '*We can't see any reason for this to be announced to your church or further afield.'*

So, the National Executive knew Frank Houston was a serial pedophile, yet informed AOG local pastors of a single incident. The Executive verbally perpetuated the lie to inquiring pastors that Frank Houston experienced a 'one off' moment of 'moral failure' with a 'consenting 16-year-old.' Because local pastors were unaware of Frank Houston's crimes, the serial predator continued to preach and access AOG children right up until his 2004 death. I was given a recording of a sermon Frank Houston gave one month before his death in which he repeatedly commented on all the 'good-looking little boys' seated in the audience. This recording, plus witness testimony, contradicts the claim by AOG Executive and Brian Houston that Frank Houston suffered advanced Alzheimer's toward the end of his life.

HOUSTON SYSTEMATICALLY RESTRUCTURED AOG

Originally, the AOG National Conference was not an *entertainment spectacular replete with motivational speakers and workshops.* It was a simple gathering of ordained AOG pastors; a collective of autonomous fellowships which governed in voluntary cooperation. The pastors nominated and voted on its representatives who served the fellowship at district, state and national levels.

Yet Brian Houston restructured the AOG so that District leaders were selected by the State, and State leaders were appointed by the National Executive, and nominations to State, District and National leaders were approved by the National body. Brian Houston passed the restructuring off as a 'biblical model' of implementing 'vision.' He claimed God spoke to the executive relative to the direction of the movement, and they would lead the AOG into destiny. The restructuring in fact made the executives a select and elite club of Brian sycophants that left no means for rank and file ministers to rid themselves of corrupt leadership.

Brian Houston rewarded people who were complicit to the Frank Houston coverup (including like Ian Woods, John McMartin, Donna Crouch and Joel Abel) with positions on the National Executive. This ‘closed shop’ structure ensured the coverup stayed covered up.

The final blow to AOG leadership accountability occurred when Brian Houston removed the right of Pastors to raise business from the floor at the AOG/ACC Biennial Conference. Until Brian Houston and his minions did this, any ordained AOG pastor could ask embarrassing questions from the floor at National Conference. This right was removed under the pretence of ‘streamlining’ things, because AOG were a ‘growing movement’ and had to change for the sake of efficiency, and not consume valuable Conference time with mundane business matters that could be more efficiently dealt with on a day to day basis, etc.

The new AOG inquiry / complaints process was for Pastors to submit their questions to the District, who would submit them to the State, who would submit them to the National Executive for inclusion in the agenda (but only if they deemed the questions worthy). Every tier of governance was now stacked with ‘Brianites’ so nothing ‘uncomfortable’ would be raised at Conference, and dissenters were quickly and quietly identified. Obviously, questions about Frank Houston’s sex crimes and the Executive coverup of the same never made it to Conference for open discussion, under the new system. Further, the once freely available printed Directory of pastor’s names, addresses and contact details was done away with, leaving the Executive with the only means of contacting ordained ministers en masse.

2009 - 2019: HOUSTON REIGNS FROM A DISTANCE

After 10 years of coverup and restructuring to protect himself, Brian Houston resigned from the Executive in 2009. He was replaced by Wayne Alcorn (President) and Alun Davies (VP) who have held the same offices to date. Wayne Alcorn was Brian Houston’s partner in crime at the infamous 1999 meeting. The 1999 Executive members were bound by their criminal actions and fear of discovery. So, although no longer a National Executive, Brian Houston continued his influence via Hillsong staff who were on the Executive, especially Donna Crouch and Joel Abel whom he promoted and made wealthy following their involvement in burying Frank Houston’s pedophilia.

BIG $$ PASSED BETWEEN HILLSONG & AOG

Brian Houston also maintained influence over the AOG/ACC Executive by paying them $300,000 per year in dues. State and National dues are like a ‘franchise fee’ where local churches pay a percentage of their congregational tithes and offerings to the State and National Executives. The 2007 NSW Executive Meeting Minutes reveal, the State alone received at least $150,000 per annum; the National Executive typically received a similar amount. So, Brian Houston and Hillsong bought their enormous power and influence within the ACC.

The money flowed both ways, since the AOG/ACC would recommend their local pastors attend the annual Hillsong Conference plus the Women’s Conference run by Brian’s wife Bobbie. The AOG/ACC also endowed Bobbie with the position of National leader of *Australian Christian Women* (ACW) which directs thousands of Australian women to her annual ‘Colour’ Conferences. Thus, the AOG/ACC National and State conferences have become more Hillsong than ever and the local AOG/ACC churches are increasingly adopting a Hillsong style.

Hillsong music is never free, despite their gushing over how God gave them the lyrics and tunes. They pimp their merchandise to local, often struggling, AOG churches and charge copyright license through CCLI (*Christian Copyright Licensing International*), another money hungry scam that violates everything Jesus Christ stood for. The Biblical Jesus Christ condemned using a 'house of God' as a place of commercial trade and so stormed through his own church in a rage, tossing furniture and whipping people. But Hillsong sheep typically do not read the Word, for if they did, they would not support Hillsong.

Hillsong's commercial trading does not end there. Hillsong affiliates founded the Gloria Jeans café franchise. Some US mega-churches contain McDonalds outlets. In fact, most churches have replaced the traditional post-service cuppa and homemade slice with commercial cafes located within church buildings. The Biblical concept of tithing to feed the poor, widowed and disabled is replaced with paying for a pastor's fancy house and car, and wages for church positions that were once voluntary. Thus, most churches denominations have become apostate, just as the Bible predicted. Most churches have thrown out their Holy Ghost inspired, spiritually effective blood worship songs and hymns, and replaced these with repetitive, poorly written shite rock and heavy metal which are thrashed out by the next Australian Idol wannabes. The Bible has been edited, based on a discarded translation found dumped in an Egyptian monastery, by occultists and sexual perverts, to omit Lucifer's name, and stamped with occult symbols from my childhood.

POST RC: 60 MINUTES & NSW POLICE

By 2014, Frank Houston and his crimes were long buried. Everyone swallowed Brian's Houston's claim that his father's 'moral failure' was a 'one off' incident. Brian Houston and his partners in crime might have gotten away with the coverup had it not been for the Royal Commission's 2014 Public Hearing into Case Study 18. Simeon Beckett, council assisting the chair at the Royal Commission recommended that Brian Houston be referred to the police for concealing his father's child rapes.

> **SENIOR COUNSEL CALLS FOR HILLSONG FOUNDER TO BE REFERRED TO POLICE**
> Rick Morton, Dan Box, The Australian, 20 December 2014.
>
> *HILLSONG Church founder Brian Houston should be referred to police for investigation after he failed to report child sexual abuse carried out by his father, the royal commission's senior counsel has found.*
>
> *Simeon Beckett, counsel assisting the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sexual Abuse, also found Brian Houston - who was national president of the Pentecostal church umbrella organisation Assemblies of God when he heard about the abuse - had a "conflict of interest" and never told police about his father Frank Houston's abuse of a boy from the age of seven in 1970…*
>
> *Mr Beckett also found the Assemblies of God offered Frank Houston a chance to return to his ministry, despite the allegations and the fact this was against policy.*

The police dropped the investigation due to a 'lack of evidence.' Yet there had to be prima facie evidence for the Royal Commission to recommend prosecution in the first place. Some believe police dropped the case due to Brian Houston's close friendship with NSW Police Commissioner Andrew Scipione. On 23 October 2018, NSW MP David Shoebridge publicly called for legal action against Pastor Brian Houston for his pedophile protection crimes:[407]

> *It is now 49 years since the abuse started, 19 years since Brian Houston was aware of it, and three years after the royal commission delivered its damning report, yet nothing has happened. It is a fact that Brian Houston is a close friend of Prime Minister Scott Morrison, who mentioned him in his inaugural speech as one of his guiding lights. It is a fact that Brian Houston is also a friend of the former police commissioner of New South Wales Andrew Scipione. Police Commissioner Scipione attended at least one annual conference of Hillsong and numerous services and is reportedly on a first name basis with Brian Houston. In December 2016 then Premier Baird opened the Hillsong Epicentre in Baulkham Hills, with his friend Brian Houston in attendance. There is compelling evidence that Brian Houston knew, while he was a church leader, about the abuse and about the hush payments, and that he failed to tell the police. This is a crime. We have sent correspondence to the police commissioner urging action. We have yet to receive a reply.*
>
> *AHA has contacted my office for help. He is suffering from a life-threatening illness and is concerned justice will not be served in his lifetime. This would be a further obscene betrayal. Earlier this week the Prime Minister delivered a national apology. Survivors responded that it is actions, not words, they want. The Royal Commission told us a lot about power - how it can stand in the way of justice and how the powerful can exploit the powerless. The problem is that despite this week's apology the powerful still seem to be immune from prosecution. No-one, regardless of their friends, should be beyond the reach of the law. This weekend Mr Brian Houston will continue to preach, and this weekend AHA will continue to demand the justice he deserves.*

In NSW Parliament, on 24 September 2019, David Shoebridge raised the matter again:

> *On 23 October last year I spoke in this place about the repeated sexual abuse of a boy by Frank Houston in Sydney in the 1970s. On that occasion I referred to this boy has AHA as he was referred to in the Royal Commission. That boy is now a man called Brett Sengstock, a man who broke his silence to call publicly for justice; a brave man who deserves justice. The man who sexually assaulted Brett was Frank Houston, often known as the father of Hillsong, a serial paedophile. His son Brian Houston is the current leader of the Hillsong Church and best friend of Prime Minister Scott Morrison. Our Prime Minister is so enamoured of Brian Houston that he asked for him to be part of Australia's delegation to the United States, only to be refused by the Trump administration.*

---

[407] David Shoebridge, Child Sexual Abuse, Legislative Council Hansard, 23 October 2018.

Brian Houston and Hillsong's response to the Royal Commission's damning findings regarding the church, included the following:

> *'This Royal Commission did not directly involve Hillsong Church. The abuse committed by the late Frank Houston, the father of our senior pastor Brian Houston, occurred many years before Hillsong church existed, when he was a credentialed Assemblies of God minister in New Zealand.'*

This was also their legal defence against the claims from Brett Sengstock for compensation. This church whose so-called 'love offerings' for visiting pastors can raise hundreds of thousands of dollars each Sunday, avoided paying fair compensation to Brett on a legal technicality. These 'love offerings' are part of what make this brand of Pentecostalism so lucrative. While a pastor cannot take money from their own church, they can visit a neighbouring church and receive direct love offerings in cash or by cheque. This money will often be funnelled to a 'public benevolent institution' that the pastor has registered in his or her name. This then pays them a handsome tax-free wage and fringe benefits. In short, these 'love offerings' are a con.

Hillsong did eventually give some money to Brett for his damaged life and repeated assaults. He was promised a mere $10,000 hush payment at Thornleigh McDonald's by Frank Houston and Nabi Saleh. Even that cash was forthcoming only after a call with Brian Houston. Brett's testimony to the Royal Commission about this is illuminating. He said:

> *'About two months after my meeting with Pastor Frank at McDonalds, I telephoned Brian Houston as I had not yet received any money from Pastor Frank. We had a conversation to the following effect:*
>
> *'Me: "What's happening with the payment I was promised? I agreed to forgive your father."*
>
> *'Brian: "Yes, ok, I'll get the money to you. There's no problem …*
> *You know,* ***it's your fault all of this happened. You tempted my father****."'*

When Brett finally received a cheque from Hillsong there was no note from Brian, no apology, no compassion. There is a clear continuity in leadership from Frank to Brian of this church. In fact, the church leadership who failed to report Frank's abuse to the police despite holding numerous meetings to discuss the extent of his abuse in Australia and New Zealand, continue to lead the church. The Hillsong Church eventually stripped Frank Houston of his credentials, but it allowed him to retire on a generous pension and under a cloak of secrecy about his sexual offending. It has never publicly referred to the assaults on Brett. Its only statement referred to:

> *'… claims of a serious moral failure against Frank Houston. The incidents that have been investigated happened more than 30 years ago and Frank has admitted to the failure with great remorse.'*

> *The church has since falsely claimed that Frank did not preach again after this. This claim is clearly incorrect. I am aware of multiple occasions in which he was a visiting pastor at affiliated churches, with unhindered access to church families and their children. In this role he continued to receive so-called 'love offerings.'*
>
> *Brett deserves so much more than this cold, brutal dismissal from Hillsong. This church, and its significant wealth, was built on the preaching of Frank Houston, whose violence and disregard for Brett does not seem to trouble Frank's son and the current church leader. A church that reaps millions of dollars in tax-free love offerings cannot find the compassion or decency to pay Brett fair compensation for the harm done to him. Whatever the legalities, this is morally corrupt.*
>
> *I will finish by placing on the record what Brett wanted to tell his elected representatives about Scott Morrison's invitation to Brian Houston:*
>
> *'It's a slap in the face for sexual abuse victims. It's a slap in the face to the Royal Commission into institutional child sexual abuse, and it's a slap in the face to the Australian Laws. It makes Mr Morrison's apology to sexual abuse victims invalid.'*

* * *

PRIME MINISTER'S HILLSONG / POLICE CONNECTION

Prime Minister Scott Morrison and his wife attended pedophile Frank Houston's Waterloo church where kids were ritually murdered. The Morrisons were pastorally trained under, and likely married by, Frank Houston. The Morrisons reside next door to NSW Police Commissioner Mick Fuller. Scott Morrison's father was a NSW Police Officer. Scott Morrison is obviously using his personal connections with the NSW Police to prevent them charging Brian Houston.

Having weathered the Royal Commission, the only thing that bound Hillsong to the AOG/ACC was the civil action against them by victim AHA. *60 Minutes* journalists identified victim 'AHA' as Brett Sengstock and revealed that although both AOG/ACC Hillsong and AOG New Zealand acknowledged that Frank Houston repeatedly raped Brett Sengstock, Hillsong and the AOG spent hundreds of thousands of dollars on lawyers and tactics to deny him compensation and silence him altogether. Because Brett Sengstock was dying of cancer and at risk of losing his home to costs, he abandoned hope of justice and compensation, and instead signed the 'Cease and Desist' order AOG imposed on him in 2018.

Brett Sengstock's terminal cancer prognosis finally let Brian Houston and Hillsong off the hook, and they no longer needed the AOG/ACC. So, immediately after Brett Sengstock signed the order, Brian Houston broke away from ACC to form his own global denomination. This move saves Hillsong $300,000 per annum in dues. Yet Hillsong retains the benefits of a loyal following from within the ACC who buy Hillsong music, and who attend the Hillsong Conference and Women's Colour Conference. The only loser is the AOG/ACC who are left holding the can.

But Wait…

Unfortunately for Brian Houston and his pedo-protecting minions, the NSW legislation changed in late 2018, making concealing child sex abuse a 'serious' rather than a 'summary' offence. *60 Minutes* confirmed the police investigation is active and ongoing:

60 MINUTES: CHURCH FOUNDER UNDER POLICE INVESTIGATION OVER HANDLING OF FATHER'S SEX CRIMES

Garry McNab (60 Minutes Producer), *9News*, 18 November 2018.

> *Brian Houston, the founder of the Hillsong Church, is under investigation by New South Wales police over his handling of the sex crimes committed by his father Frank Houston… In 2014, Brian Houston gave evidence before the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Sex Abuse, which later found he had failed to take the matter to the police and had a conflict of interest in dealing with the complaints against his father. It has emerged that in the wake of the Royal Commission's findings, NSW Police began looking into his handling of his father's crimes, an investigation that was suspended because of lack of evidence. A NSW police spokesman said the investigation has been reopened and is now 'current and active.'*

JUSTICE

Of the 1999 AOG Executive, David Cartledge is dead from a brain tumour, while Danny Guglielmucci and Steve Penny both have advanced cancer. Ian Woods, the former NSW AOG President who sheltered Frank Houston at his church in the Hawkesbury and was promoted to the National Executive, died of prostate cancer. Miraculously, while multiple Hillsong executives who targeted Brett Sengstock to hide Frank Houston's crimes are dropping from cancer, Brett is hanging on.

NZ Commission into Institutional Abuse

Trouble is also brewing for Brian Houston in New Zealand where a Royal Commission into abuse in state care was expanded in late 2018 to include those abused by faith-based institutions such as churches and religious schools. Many AOG insiders suspected that Frank Houston was raping boys back when he was a Salvation Army officer. Allegations are now emerging that Frank Houston raped kids while a Salvation Army Officer in NZ, that the Salvos kicked him out for pedophilia, that the Salvos failed to report his pedophilia crimes to the police, and that all this was common knowledge within the Houston family - something Brian Houston has strenuously denied since 1999.

The NZ Royal Commission will highlight that the Australian and NZ AOG Executives were well informed that Frank Houston raped 15-year-old Peter Fowler plus six boys aged 10 years in Lower Hutt NZ in the 1970s. The NZ Executive sent all 50+ NZ AOG pastors letters informing them of the assaults in 1998, and they paid Peter Fowler $25,000 compensation in 2003.

Australian AOG Pastor and General Secretary, Phillip Powell, tried to expose these crimes from 1981 onwards, by sending faxes to Christian Life Centres (CLC) offices. Powell's faxes accused Frank Houston of sexually assaulting children and gave specific details of various assaults. Donald Elley read one of these faxes while working at Hillsong in 1983 and questioned Frank Houston about them. Pastor Powell continued sending the faxes until the 1990s when Frank Houston finally admitted he was a pedophile. In response, Frank and Brian Houston viciously and publicly slandered Phillip Powell and destroyed his reputation and career.

Phillip Powell supported Frank Houston's NZ child rape victim Peter Fowler. Here are relevant excerpts an email (dated 8 October 2014) Peter Fowlers sent Philip Powell:

I have not been invited to appear at the [Australian] Royal Commission, as my evidence relates to events that occurred outside Australia. However, I have given extensive evidence by telephone and the RC solicitors contacted me again today to ask if there were any questions I would like them to pose to Brian Houston when he appears tomorrow. I said that there were two:

NZ AOG formally advised me in 2003 that Brian Houston, Hillsong, Australian AOG and the Houston Family refused to cooperate with their investigation regarding my allegations and that they may have also deliberately obstructed the criminal investigation of Frank Houston's sexual abuse in New Zealand.

1. *Why did Brian Houston refuse to cooperate and why did he ultimately obstruct the NZ investigation?*
2. *Did Brian Houston, Hillsong or the Houston family, compensate NZ AOG for the $25,000 settlement that they made with me in 2003?*

The overwhelming thing that remains for me is what I perceive deeply as the inherent evil of Hillsong and all that it represents. You know exactly what I mean... the worship of wealth and materialism and the lack of any social justice in its approach to community and the Christianity it claims to represent. I find it abhorrent and deeply offensive. Hillsong is not a ministry in any sense of the word I understand. It is essentially just a business and its primary objective is profit and the creation of wealth for its shareholders...Brian and Bobbie! I imagine they will survive the Royal Commission with insincere words and PR designed to protect their empire. Unless Hillsong implodes due to greed, criminality or excessive consumption, I expect it will go on to the greater strength and power, damaging many lives and falsely representing Christ in the process. I can only hope that they will eventually be revealed...in this world or the next, for what they really are...the moneychangers who defiled the temple of God!

And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said to them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but you have made it a den of thieves —Matthew 21:12–13.

HILLSONG, RITUAL ABUSE & ANTONY KIDMAN

I chose Hillsong as my case example to illustrate a point: Where there is smoke there is fire. Whenever you see an institution engaging in child abuse coverup implicating police commissioners and prime ministers, know that the true story involves ritual abuse, mind control, and CIA child trafficking.

Hillsong took a Scientology approach to managing Frank Houston's child rape victims. Hillsong pumped millions of dollars (leeched from its mind-controlled masses and disgusted Australian taxpayers) into stalking, harassing and legally threatening victims, and bribing AOG Executives into assisting the coverup. This is because like Scientology, Hillsong is a CIA cult cut-out.

I have been contacted by multiple Hillsong victims (or their parent/therapist/pastor) whose testimonies combine to create a clear picture of Hillsong's connection to Antony Kidman and CIA child trafficking. Here are some brief examples:

1. A 24-year-old woman told me Hillsong prostituted her from age two to 22 years, and that Hillsong delivered her to Antony Kidman who subjected her to mind control procedures.
2. A therapist told me her client was subjected to ritual abuse and mind control perpetrated by Antony Kidman via Hillsong.
3. A mother said Hillsong targeted, abducted, prostituted and murdered multiple children, and subjected her daughter to MK-ULTRA soldier/assassin training. She supplied me with supporting documentary evidence that NSW Victim Services compensated her two children for witnessing Hillsong ritually murder 10-year-old Helen Karipidis in an upstairs room inside Hillsong church during a 1988 Christmas service. The mother also said Hillsong Youth Workers abducted 10-year-old Samantha Knight whose disappearance was falsely pinned on a scapegoat. The bodies of Samantha Knight and Helen Karipidis were never found. Both girls attended Hillsong kids club prior to their disappearance.

HILLSONG, PIE & COMMUNISTS

In 2017, I published the following letter on my blog sites:

Dear Fiona,

Thank you for standing up to these criminals. I have information for you which you might find interesting. I have to remain anonymous because going public would severely compromise my capacity to investigate this crime-ring.

In 1971 an Adelaide barrister from the Communist Party of Australia created the precursor to what later became the Pedophile Information Exchange. This lawyer was the late ELLIOT JOHNSON. The Pedophile Information Exchange was formed from earlier pedophile groups such as the Lewis Carroll Collectors Guild and the (homosexual) Peter Pan Club. Another founder of this organization (from the Peter Pan Club) was FRANK HOUSTON who also founded the pseudo-church The Assembly of God. Houston was pastor of the Surrey Hills Christian Centre which later morphed into Hillsong Church. Houston was an organizer for the Peter Pan Club when he was contacted by Elliot Johnson and asked to assist in forming a "united front" for organized pedophilia. This resulted in the formation of the Pedophile Information Exchange in February 1973. This organization was then exported to the United Kingdom.

I knew Johnson personally and I have always detested the man. I have heard Johnson boast of having killed Japanese prisoners of war in Papua New Guinea during WW2. Here are some quotes from Johnson;

- *'I shot half a dozen in one afternoon';*
- *'I shot dozens and dozens of them';*
- *'The others would bayonet them or cut their throats, but I was more humane about it – I shot them in the back of the head.'*

Johnson had a law degree at the time and knew perfectly well that his actions were a breach of the Geneva Convention. Johnson was a war criminal. Upon return to Australia Johnson became an operator for the Communist Party of Australia. This included bullying and indeed killing any Party dissidents.

The Communist Party loaned Johnson 50,000 pounds which Johnson used to found the Adelaide law firm Johnson and Withers. Johnson also bought a house and a flash motorcar. The loan was forgiven for services rendered.

In 1947 a man was found dead on Somerton Beach in Adelaide. This murder remains unsolved. The victim was a GRU man working for the USSR. He was collecting information on the development of British weapons in Australia. The Communist Party of Australia supported him and other Soviet agents (such as HV Evatt) with sexual services. The GRU man had been paired up with a local woman communist who he got pregnant. The naive chap then thought that he could marry the woman and live a family life in Australia. He contacted the Dept of External Affairs (called DFAT now) and asked for advice. However, that Dept had been so penetrated by communists that the GRU man was betrayed. He was told to attend the woman's house and await the arrival of Commonwealth security officers. Instead he was attended by Elliot Johnson (with fake ID) and two Communist Party thugs dressed up in suits and ties.

Johnson then poisoned the man with OLEANDER extract. This provides a deadly (cardiac) poison that kills within hours. As the man sickened, he was stripped and left to die. His corpse was then washed and redressed (by the woman – a nurse) and then transported to Somerton Beach by Elliot Johnson in his motorcar. This was one of the rare private cars in Adelaide at that time. The police had a couple of dozen model T Fords and Morris Minors.

Another Johnson killing was that of the Sydney physicist Dr Gilbert Bogle in 1961. Dr Bogle was a microwave physicist who had been working on microwave modulation for guided missile systems for the British. He was recruited into the Communist Party by his boss Dr Geoffrey Chandler using sex as the bait.

The pay in Australia was poor and Bogle applied for a job in the USA. Bogle had a PhD in microwave physics and the American pay was literally 20 times that of his Australian pay. The problem was that Bell was a high security laboratory and the job required a complete FBI background check. The Communist Party fearing for their spy ring then decided to murder Bogle and then delegated that task to Elliot Johnson and Geoffrey Chandler. Johnson gave the termination order and acted as field director for the kill. Geoffrey Chandler then administered OLEANDER poison to Gilbert Bogle in a rum drink at a cocktail party.

However, Bogle noticed the taste and commented upon it. Margaret Chandler then took a sip of the drink and was poisoned as well. Geoffrey Chandler then telephoned Elliot Johnson for instructions and was then ordered by Johnson to dump both bodies down by the river to die.

Johnson was the most professional and protected criminal in Australia. In 1983 the corrupt premier of South Australia JOHN BANNON then appointed the perverted murderer to the Supreme Court of South Australia. This is how Johnson became a Supreme Court judge. This should indicate to you just how much power the pedophiles have in South Australia.

I have very good reason for believing that Johnson was one of the principal members of what has been called 'The Family'. This is the name given to the gang that *killed children in Adelaide from the 1960's to the 1980's. It has been claimed that they are homosexuals. No! They raped and killed little girls too. I have personally heard one of Johnson's comrades admit to raping Jane Beaumont. This informant claims that the little girl and her younger siblings Anna and Grant were strangled by Elliot Johnson. I believe it as I have heard Johnson admit to killing Japanese POWs. Johnson admitted to me that he enjoyed killing (he said that it was cathartic) and that sometimes he would give them a head start and then hunt them down.*

Part of Johnson's motivations were terrorist. You might know about Red Terror. This was used by the Bolsheviks in 1918 to beat the Russian people into submission. The Muslim fanatics from Islamic State use it for this reason as well. This is why the Beaumont children were taken. This tactic really shocked Adelaide. It was not a safe town after all, and the government could not protect you. These criminals proved that they could defeat the police and thus reduce public confidence in them.

I hope that this information is of some use to you. I am sorry that I can't go public, but I have leaked a lot of information and even that has been risky.

So far four whistle-blowers have been killed in Adelaide for knowing too much and needless to say I do not want to be the fifth to die.

God bless you. Take good care of yourself. Remember me.

* * *

Remember: Every time you sing a Hillsong tune at church, or play a Hillsong album – you are funding the global child trafficking operation coordinated by the CIA.

Confessions of a Sydney Satanist

Satanism is a spiritual Darwinian theory based on predation.
- Frater 616

The general public can't fathom why Satanists do what they do. Why do people rape and murder kids? Just because people can't comprehend why, that does not negate the occurrence of such. Look at the extreme pornography available and how people become sexually aroused by watching someone defecating. Most find this disgusting. Yet many find it sexually arousing. I will tell you why. As serial killer Ted Bundy explained to Christian psychologist James Dobson just before his execution, it starts with soft porn. The nature of 'free' and perverted sex is that the person ceases to be aroused by a certain sex act and requires more extreme perversion to achieve arousal, until eventually the person is sexually aroused by killing kids. The person becomes addicted, and what began as 'free' begins to cost.

Other reasons for engaging in satanic crimes include the love of money, power, recognition and success. Perhaps the biggest contributing factor is a desire to regain control over life that was lost due to childhood trauma. A further reason is that some people who are born into a cult family are conditioned to it from birth. It is their family religion which they accept and practise just like people do in other religions which espouse strange beliefs and practises, like Mormonism which teaches each man is given his own planet to populate for all eternity with multiple wives. Ritual pedophilia and murder are integral to the religion of satanism. Followers of Lucifer are deceived into believing they inherit his kingdom when they die, just as Christians believe they go to heaven. This is the premise behind the deathbed confession of Sydney Satanist codenamed 'Frater 616' (or 'Petor Narsagonan').

'Frater 616' reportedly died in 2004. His confession was published on a 2010 Australian website (*loveforlife*) that was subsequently forcibly taken down. His words are consistent with everything I write in this book, and with my own experience of Satanism in Sydney during the 1970s and 80s. I probably attended rituals with this man. Frater 616 said he was recruited into Satanism in 1971 while attending a Sydney university. From his description, I perceive he was recruited into the University of Sydney's OTO. Don't ask me why a cult member would want such an admission published. All I can say is the following account is consistent with my experience of the same cult. Frater 616's confession captures the Satanist philosophy; it provides insight to their cult hierarchy, connections, recruitment methods, and influence. I omitted some revolting descriptions of rituals and porn, underlined important points, and clarified information in the footnotes.

* * *

Deathbed Confession
by Frater 616

Satanism flourishes beneath the scintillating midnight-blue wet streets and bedevilling phosphorescent lights of Australia's glittering capital cities. Its practitioners are from all walks of life. Although marginal types and those with predisposing personalities have always and will always be important to Satanism and its leaders' ends, they are merely tools. Their antinomian influence is now so pervasive as not to be readily noticed.

Amongst the highest echelons, some are politicians, medical doctors, high-ranking police officers, lawyers, advertising gurus, decorated military men, media personalities, fashion models, and social workers. Amongst the lowest (usually temporary) ranks are prostitutes, minor drug dealers, and a number of high school students. Some operate from the mists. Their victims are drip-fed straight amnesia by an assortment of mind control measures and psychological torture tactics that would leave any normal person numb with the dawning apprehension that things are not as they seem – and they have not been for a long, long time.

The most talented amongst them have lifestyles maintained on crime; but lacquered with a thin veneer of respectable professionalism and knowledge. They dress with elegance – timeless and calculating; networking and conspiring in a dream that money alone can't purchase. Often their personalities have a force that distorts the contours both of judgement and of everyday perception. I can't mention every name, but I will drop enough clues. The doctors refuse to say exactly how long I have but…

I became involved in the whole sordid business in the 1970s, a decade noted for little beyond sartorial bad taste and crushingly optimistic fatalism. The decade that began as a drug-crazed carry-over of the 1960s soon bequeathed androgynous glam-rock, the Watergate scandal and the shallow opportunism of 'Rollerball.' Science-fictionism stalked the streets with a rejected furtiveness bred of cowering beneath the backdrop of the Cold War and dancing with the resurrected agonies of another Asian based imperialistic conflict.

I fell through a crack in reality, having deliriously wandered amid the human wreckage and reached certain spiritual conclusions. In short, I do not know how I got there, but I know why. The 1970s were a dismal, incense-fuelled time that only those who lived through it can appreciate. The comprehensive dismissal of values and the adoption of pornography as the aesthetic standard by which all endeavour was to be categorised left its impressionistic fingerprints on everybody's imagination, mine included. I guess that I analysed and reacted differently. That is how I escaped the mundane – through one of western society's fault lines.

Credo quia absurdum!

I began dabbling in the black arts as an alienated university student. It was 1971 when I attended my first meeting – only to be led into an existence of happiness, sexual excess, acquisitive arousal and comfort. Within a week of meeting my Luciferian mentor I was operating a number of travel businesses in Sydney and flying to international destinations at least four times a year. I had a Jaguar, city apartment, holiday home in the country, access to a yacht on Sydney harbour and women. I was young and considered to be an up and coming star within the shadowy twilight of the Satanic infrastructure. The nether world was at my patent leather-soled feet. My suits were hand-make Italian; the cravats and neckties, Chinese silk and my nymphomaniac maids, French. (They dressed like French maids and would often wake me with a lesbian show.)

At that time the United States based Church of Satan was the very public face of a movement that had begun almost a century before and had culled its adherents from the renaissance of magic, which had begun in Germany and flowered in England [408] since the dying years of the nineteenth century. The Church of Satan was one of the front organizations for an ancient body whose very existence had never before been imagined. If you want more information on some of its past and most influential members you could do worse than study the late J.P. Morgan,[409] Drs. James McDonald and René Hardy, the Kennedy's (including

---

[408] Consistent with OTO history.

[409] US officials seized a J.P. Morgan owned ship trafficking $1.3 billion in cocaine, in 2019.

Jackie), Irving Berlin, Groucho Marx, Elvis Presley, Garner Ted Armstrong,[410] Sammy Davis Jr., Ronald Reagan, Edward Heath, Thomas Plantard de Saint-Claire or a search amongst the Bushes.[411]

I learnt and reflected the glamour of the black arts: divination, dark meditation, sacrifice, sexual vampirism, talismans, voodoo dolls and sex magic. My life was one of calculated excess and dazzling fulfilment. I smoked handmade Partagas Cuban cigars. I had a personal secretary who was happy to engage my every whim and find like-minded others if I wanted a change or had a colleague I needed to impress. I finished every day with a restaurant meal, bottle of French Champagne and Black Mass orgy of unforgettable and unspeakable delight.

The streets were more innocent, the people more naïve. The **American Intelligence Services** were still involved in funding the occult, but their influence was more ingratiating than dictatorial. In any event, many of **America's high-ranking military men were members of various Satanic Lodges** or kindred organizations. Often sensitive materials [i.e., drugs, weapons and sex trafficked children] and powerful figures – who operated from the comfort, safety and anonymity of the dark velvet shadows – were **transported on US and Australian Navy ships**. Oil tankers were another favourite. Materials (and indeed, people) have been concealed and lost on oil tankers for years. Remember, this was in the Seventies when America's organized crime syndicates were establishing the narcotics markets of the Western World, Australia included.

I knew her as Lilith, a High Priestess of an ultra-secretive Black Order of Typhon. Hers was the easy smile of a true neurotic and the body of an Angel. Her long cruel fingernails were enamelled in the chic and expensive titillations of her victims and their fantasies. Urolagnists worshipped at her feet and obeyed her every sadistic command. They were not the only ones. Her clientele included the top end of town and she frequented the boardrooms and bathrooms of power with an essence of mystery, wealth and alluring sluttiness that won her the attention and influence of very many.

I had first met her at a stately home in an inner Sydney suburb at one of the regular Black Masses held to strengthen the bonds of lust, occult knowledge and perversion. There she was indulging the Devil's faithful, teaching and being videoed for the 1970's black-market that existed in underground extreme porn: bestiality, **pedophilia**, body wastes and pain. After her services 'to the Dark Lord' she told me over a reefer and through exhaustion that she was only 17 and had met the Master. He had given her a mission.

Lilith was a child from one of Sydney's more self-conscious suburbs. Private school educated and with a future in her father's business, she sacrificed herself to help establish what is considered today, by those in the know, to be the most powerful and important Satanic organization in the world. That group comprises some of the most educated, wealthy, corrupt and corrupting people that have ever existed. And they operate out of Sydney, Australia – but their influence is international.

It transpired that she had been **flown to the United States to be tutored and initiated** into what was at that time, Anton LaVey's underground Satanic sisterhood of professional women with an aptitude for carnality and a conscience to match: the 'Ordo Cave Lupam.' Her high school teacher – an Adept in the Black Arts – had spotted Lilith while she was still only a schoolgirl. Like all Satanists, he believed that truth and salvation could be found through the exploration of repressed human needs; that pornography gave joy and joy gave strength.

---

[410] American evangelist, son of Herbert W. Armstrong, Worldwide Church of God founder.

[411] George Bush Snr & Jnr.

Through his dedication and perverse ability, he had secured her co-operation to begin her new education for her assigned task of political intrigue and influential debasement.

After completing her 'education' with the OCL Lilith was tutored by an English gentleman who I knew as Pindar. I never met him, but I worship the true father of the statutory heir. His were the 'Irish' mysteries of degradation and when his name was ever mentioned Lilith would often laughingly sing, '…the rosy red cheeks of the little children.'

Lilith **procured children** to satiate the debased lusts of many Satanists. These were taken from single girls by promises, for a fee or occasionally, **simply stolen. Babies were bred for their various purposes by 'Broodmares'** – young unemployed girls who were paid to hand over their 'produce'. Sometimes this magical pornography was filmed; sometimes children died. Once you have seen a **young child crucified** [412] or a baby kicked to death you are and can never be the same again. The most disturbing aspect of the Black Masses held in Sydney was and remains the ease with which victims were and continue to be obtained and the lack of any effective interest by the police (although a number of **Police Commissioners from various States were members of the Order**). This is not to suggest that Satanists are simply perverts or child killers.

The Alpha-Lodge to which I was a member placed a great deal of emphasis upon Magic, both in theory and practice. Demons were evoked and dispatched; sigils made and sacrifice and the letting of blood encouraged. In this regard, many who bask in their own limited knowledge believe that Aleister Crowley is the father of modern manifestations of Satanism, but this is incorrect. Perhaps Crowley is the grandfather of modern **left-hand path** groups, but their stepfather is Peter James Carroll, the founder of the Chaos Magick School. There are a number of reasons for this and the various Black Lodges within Australia have developed from their early twentieth century reliance upon recruiting from fringe Masonic groups, through High Magick in the nineteen twenties, Low Magick in the nineteen sixties and seventies to their current prospective candidates from amongst Chaos Magick practitioners (who are generally young, ambitious, enthusiastic, energetic and destined by their lifestyle choices to the shadowy world of Satanism).

A number of up-market Escort agencies in Australia and elsewhere are operated by Black Magicians. Yet brothels and pornography comprise only a small financial part of the International Satanic Empire. **Most of the money comes from drugs (the CIA)**, sophisticated blackmail, money lending and currency trading. Satanists of the highest order are behind a number of **wealthy Conservative, New Right Christian Churches and organizations in America**. These are some of contemporary Satanism's best cash-flow enterprises (mostly indirectly) and allow mass indoctrination and networking.

The aim of the Alpha Lodge remains, **illiteracy rates** in the western world of at least sixty-six percent by 2010 and the **destruction of at least seventy percent of the globe's population by the year 2030**. All governments count on their sheeple to respond in typical infantile fashions, including unconsciously identifying with a more powerful force – even if it enslaves, brutalizes and humiliates them… In this regard, the **infiltration of the United Nations by Satanists** – which began in the 1970s – has paid off extremely well already, as has the career of Henry Kissinger. It was Henry Kissinger who proposed the use of fundamentalist Christianity to bring about war, firstly in the Middle East and then globally. In this he was aided by a number of American Presidents subsequent to **Richard M. Nixon** handing over the reins to Gerald Ford – who was always one of ours!

---

[412] The OTO Ritual Crucifixion, like I witnessed in University of Sydney's Great Hall.

As the Headquarters of International Satanism is Sydney, Australia it is not surprising to learn that Norman Lindsay[413] – a former Magus of the Order – is considered a Satanic Saint. Indeed, there are a number of flourishing secret shrines dedicated to him and his memory throughout Australia and the United Kingdom. Every Equinox there are human sacrifices dedicated to him and the subtle but perverted influence his painting and children's literature continues to have. (Similar shrines exist in America under Henry Kissinger's authority, but he has altered both the structure and subtle ethos of the American Alpha Lodge Shrines.)

It was Lindsay who taught that every political solution lead to more complex and involuted problems. He counselled that the public is not concerned with satanic manipulators but only with petty criminals and little issues which affect their insignificant lives directly. As the status quo is maintained by the masses, it gets heavier the deeper it sinks and the greater its fears. The people can't succeed or achieve and so must sink deeper and hold on more strongly! The fact that for most people the days repeat endlessly until death relieves them speaks volumes about the (sub-) human condition!

Kissinger refined Hitler's 'Terror Technique' into the more subtle and powerful 'Tension Technique': building tension in society and then finding a scapegoat. Dark Path adepts do this in insignificant ways until they have the power and ability to move and direct people to more gross and hideous behaviours.

…

If you doubt the influence of Satanism in the modern world consider the following issues: According to the World Bank, Australia is the wealthiest (or second wealthiest, after South Africa) nation on Earth. No one knows the full extent of Australia's natural resources and yet the living standards of Australians is getting worse each year and while Australians are amongst the most highly taxed people in the world, we are quickly heading towards third world nation status. Who owns and controls the Reserve Bank of Australia (hint, it is the same people who own the American Federal Reserve and the Bank of England)?[414]

- Why do overseas-owned companies pay so little taxation in Australia and why does the Australian government (of whichever political persuasion) allow overseas mining conglomerates to rape our environment and give Australians back next to nothing in return?
- Why was fluoride put into Australia's water supply and why is it impossible to have it removed?
- Are you seeing a pattern here?
- Why is the media of the 'Free World' so heavily controlled and their shamefaced relationship to government so symbiotic?
- Why have the educational standards of the Western World been forced to '**dumb down**' (a process accelerated in the 1980s by both Spielberg and Lucas at the instigation of the Australian Alpha Lodge)?
- Why has multiculturalism been foisted upon the 'First' World (with the exception of Japan)?
- And who was behind the September the 11th operation?

---

[413] Norman Lindsay (1879-1969) a famous Australian artist and writer. I attended a ritual conducted in his creepy Blue Mountains home which became a museum.

[414] Rothschilds.

- Which country's 'Intelligence Agency' supplied the WMD story which 'caused' the Iraq invasion? (Hint, it was not a Christian or Islamic nation.)

…

Australian Satanists have always been at the forefront of high-quality videos and DVDs devoted to 'kiddie-porn.' Sheeple are such that although they scream about the importance of 'justice,' it is of no interest unless they are in some way harmed! Their morality is that of the herd, for the more that sheeple feel isolated yet together, the easier it is for Satanists to reign. Provide the subjects with the forbidden and they feel fragmented, weak, guilty and often worthless – all of which the Master Satanist employs for their own ends. In Australian-produced pedophile entertainment, certain avant-garde features predominate: sexual frenzy, degrading treatment, filth, coprophilia, torture, rape and death.

All of this is carefully crafted and augmented by aphrodisiacs and violence. Often the **women involved are far worse than the men** – little boys agonised by the cruel fingers, long tapered fingernails, teeth, cigarettes and perversions of ravishingly beautiful and debased female practitioners who are without restraint and have been maddened with heartless pride. Genital torture and castration are a constant theme. I will never forget the heartfelt sobs, desperate pleas, blood, tears and screams induced in many little boys by the agonizing use of alligator-clips, the application of the strap, whip, dildo, knee and the torment of **electric shock**!

Often Satanists advertise in free, youth culture street newspapers. This provides them with a constant supply of young teenage hopefuls to recruit or exploit (or both). Often **Street-kids are taken in, used and discarded**. It is only another missing teenager! Coffee shops, city entertainment complexes and even **evangelical youth-based churches** are still used to this day to lure the innocent and not so innocent, their hearts full of broken dreams from broken homes. (Thank you, **Lionel [Murphy]**.)[415]

…

Candidates are accepted and accessed over the required time for **character, imagination and intellect** – in that order.

Debauchery as a science is taught and maintained by programmes – strict in nature and observance.

Rituals are conducted, thought patterns established, relationships destroyed, and dependencies enhanced. Psychopaths are studied and emulated.

Some of **the deadliest, most effective and disarming assassins are women**.

…

Together and with time, those at the highest echelons of International Satanism believe that there is nothing they can't achieve. And if you knew even half of what they have already done you would agree.

…

The modern media is a pastiche of sex and soft eroticism. The Western world's drinking water has been laced with chemicals that exert powerful effects over time. Rates of depression, suicide, incest and bank interest continue to rise – but no one bothers to join the dots!

What do all of the following people have in common: Norman Lindsay, 'Sir' William McMahon, Garfield Barwick,[416] Lionel Murphy, Rosalyn Norton [who modelled for Norma

---

[415] Reference to Lionel Murphy introducing no-fault divorce which resulted in broken homes and kids.

[416] Graduated Fort St High School & University of Sydney; Chief Justice.

Lindsay], Clyde Cameron and Stephanie Bartholomew (aka, Abigail)? From where do more Australians get their news and why?[417] **What is Michael Aquino's interest in Australia's Pine Gap Facility** and why is discussion of the Base's use and purpose inadmissible within Australia's polite society and media?

I believe in one Prince, Satan, who reigns over this Earth, and in one Law which triumphs overall. I believe in one Temple, Our Temple to Satan, and in one Word which triumphs overall: The Word of ecstasy. And I believe in the Law of the Aeon,[418] which is sacrifice, and in the letting of blood. For which I shed no tears since I give praise to my Prince, the fire-giver, and look forward to his reign and the pleasures that are to come!

A number of Crown Service agents in Australia were relieved on the evening of 19th December 1967. A number of the President's men in Australia were quietly celebrating as the clock struck midnight on the 11th of November 1975. Both Intelligence Agencies had relations which were still trespassed by the ghost of Dr Ward. Both reacted to these events because of Australian Satanism, in the first case because H.R.H. Queen Elizabeth II would be saved embarrassments and in the second because Gough Whitlam was not one of them. On this point I am in no doubt, Sir John did his duty to the Princess and Inner Head of the Alpha Lodge Australasia. And Sir Garfield explained it!

Most people do not know that John W. Howard's first overseas trip, as Prime Minister of the Commonwealth of Australia was to receive his 33rd Masonic degree, for in matters of his true faith he manifests a decidedly disillusioned romantic apprehension. His is the perfect example of parallel lives and a compliant media well and truly out of their depth. The same could not be said for Harold [Holt] and his parties and the fact that people were noticing and indeed, Sir William was invited.

You have little if any idea of the history, connexions and the network of Australia's Sinister Lodges, the Temples within them or their adherents and puppets. Why are some politicians spectacularly successful and others dogged at every step? How was the New York based public relations firm paid by John for doing such a good job in the… elections? Has anyone bothered to check the Commonwealth of Australia's Department of Treasury records and would they know what they were looking for?

I became Outer Head of the Alpha Lodge Australasia in the same year a meteoric rise to power brought a change of federal government with a Prime Minister whose relationship to Satanism was tenuous and pedestrian at best. But then again, he liked to play around, and a number of our special people were happy to accommodate him, for a price. He craved respect and understated admiration and received both from us for the efforts he expended.

I left the Alpha Lodge – as best as one can – and tried to reclaim a more mundane if no less ingratiating lifestyle. I operated a media company publishing anti-Christian tractates, political pamphlets and pornographic videos, working for a number of organizations internationally.

…

Modern post-1980 Satanism is the result of some hard-learned truths and well-practiced procedures. Everyone knows that we are becoming more obvious – there are decreasing reasons to hide. The World of High Fashion – always a glittering ephemeral chimera – became an overtly successful recruiting ground for 'sweet young things' with a daring and glamorous nature. Multi-Billionaires increasingly sought the spiritual comfort and insider information the Satanic Alpha-Lodges could provide.

---

[417] A reference to Channel Nine.

[418] Thelema was founded on the idea that the 20th century marked the beginning of the Aeon of Horus, in which a new ethical code would be followed: 'Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law.'

…

Within the left-hand path, Satan is the Supreme Prince (the Hierarchy of Hell begins with The Prince). He is 'The Other', the bright Fire Giver and Illuminator! He is the only God who cares! Satanism is a spiritual Darwinian theory based on predation. Devoted Satanists dedicate themselves and their sex acts to their Dark Lord. Prayers are said, Chants intoned, or Invocations recited all as the basis of obtaining the blessings of Hell.

Unknown – if not always unsuspected – Infernal Temples exist in every major city throughout the world – Vatican City included! Every hour of every day and every night people are knowingly engaged in Satan's service. Human sacrifice – whether ritually and quicker or slowly and degradingly over time – is all harnessed to specific ends.

Politicians are introduced by a carefully graded set if criteria and situations that enable them to accept that their victims will be, "Our little secret". **Young children sexually molested and physically abused by politicians worldwide are quickly used as sacrifices**. In **Australia the bodies are hardly ever discovered**, for Australia is still a wilderness.

Overseas, cremation is the favoured method and although the Satanic Alpha Lodges of Australia have access to crematoria when needed, this is surprisingly rare. Believe it or not many bodies are 'dumped over the side' every week in a number of isolated bushland settings.

The emerging set of Satanic leaders is young, savvy, competent and heartless. They are masters and mistresses of their emotions and their intellect. Many are involved in business, politics, the legal profession and the arts. They are affluent, mobile and stylish examples to the next generation and therefore to the next generation of Satanists that power is glory, lust is nobility and liberty is the highest ideal of the new world man and woman. They use debasement of their victims as a ritual of power to themselves and their Deities. Often their victims are made to suffer in any number of situations. All of them are dedicated 'to creating the new men and women of the future' and 'to surpassing the Old Ones'.

Beginning in Sydney in the late 1980s was a now International Underground Sadomasochist society founded by Satanists. Victims are abused to death in grotesque rituals held in secluded chambers throughout the global metropolis and never-ending suburbs and bewildered housing estates. Although many who attend are unaware of anything except their ability to fulfil special needs and cultivated tastes, all of these gatherings are Satanic in nature and magickal in purpose. This dark, ultra-secretive society has been used to corrupt and destroy; to distil fear and ensure petrified silence! (Remember 'The Family' of South Australia? Ever wondered why so many people conveniently die from electrical fires?)

Bodily juices of all descriptions are sacred to Satanists and can be used for magickal purposes. The advent of sadomasochism as an accepted form of expression is due to the efforts of Satanists in subverting normalcy and inverting mainstream Christian values. The S&M Society was used as recruitment ground for some of the most perverted geniuses I have ever met. And with the advent of the World Wide Web, extreme hardcore Bathroom Sex came into its own as a sub-genre to be taken seriously.

…

(By way of only one example, today in co-educational facilities throughout the Western World, Bathroom Sex and ‘flute playing’ are rampant across all age groups. Thank you, High Priestess Monica and ‘White’ Witch Fiona Horne.)[419]

…

The Alpha Lodge has taken steps to try to ensure that after the next war the Tradition is maintained in the intervening centuries, before civilization, as we know it, begins again. At that time, **Satanism will be in the only religion and science**. We have secured the texts, books, relics and magickal weapons necessary for Our Dark Lord and I see the storm clouds gathering. Ritual activity is increasing. Social structures are almost totally eroded. The Sheeple gather for their slaughter. Vindex[420] walks amongst us now and very few know (or think that they do)

…

Rebellion!
Liberty!

...

Law is the product of man.
What God can create man can destroy!
It is always politics.
Even when people obey the law, it is a political decision.
Spirituality is a tool. The State has employed it, always.
For Homo sapiens are herd animals.
Hate yourself enough and the World hates with you.
Freedom is a two-edged sword.
- Count Hans Kolvenbach (Jesuit Order)

…

The Altar is always a human body – male, female, alert, drugged, alive or dead. In every case, the Altar is fresh and young. The mechanics of a High Satanic Black Mass are the same as in any theatre designed to re-open psychic gateways, inculcate dedication, glorify, rarefy and idealize spirituality. Only the aims differ. In Satanism, **sodomy is preferred because of its magickal effects**. The sacramental nature of Ezekiel 4:12-13, II Kings 18:27, Malachi 2:2-3 and Isaiah 16:11 are only fully understood by Satanists.[421] Even abstinence from all forms of satisfying and normal sexual congress is used to enable the destruction and replacement of old beliefs and standards... By pushing wider, the parameters of being and expanding ideas, Satanists experience the inherent transience and contingent nature of all things. The Black Mass – whether High Satanic or Low orgy – achieves this.

Any form of bizarre sexual congress is explored and encouraged because atrophied tastes need stronger stimulation.[422] **Children, the elderly, the mentally retarded and desperate are used at satanic ceremonies** throughout the world. The left-hand path caters for all tastes and responds to all needs. In Australia and throughout what used to be the Soviet Union, Downs Syndrome pornography is an expanding market and an acquired taste.[423]

---

[419] Fiona Horne now flies charter planes to the Caribbean, location of Jeffrey Epstein’s pedophile island.

[420] Rebel who dethroned Nero.

[421] Bible passages relating to dung.

[422] Atrophied means ‘having lost effectiveness or vigour due to underuse or neglect.’ After time, cult members become bored with perverted sex, and so need greater perversion to achieve sexual arousal and gratification.

[423] My Down Syndrome cousin reported that staff made such films at Bribie Island Care Independent Living Association, Queensland.

…

Viable, truly spiritual **Satanism is becoming more overt**. This is because of those who went before. And as the schedule works itself, the Alpha Satanic Lodges are growing ever more public. I will not mention names, front-organizations or interests. The time is when these will announce themselves – just like **Disneyland**! We infiltrated then built the modern media, created porno-film empires, turned 'Snuff' into art and liberated young people.

The Wand must be bedaubed.
The Cup drained.
The Sword dazzling.
The Disc penetrated.[424]

With Fire the Tunnel is penetrated.
With thirst the Cup is dazzled.
With Air the Sword is drained.
With soil the Disc bedaubed.[425]

Within the temple in the temple
Find here the Mysteries of the mysteries
The back passage is the shortest way
Turn Water into wine.

…

Satanists believe that the fear inspired by the atomic bomb and other weapons yet to come will be so great that everyone will refrain from using them… [deleted]. It will mean the division of the world among 2 or 3 vast superstates, unable to be overthrown by any internal rebellion. Their structure will be hierarchic, with the **Satanic caste at the top and outright slavery at the bottom**, and the crushing out of liberty would exceed anything the world has yet seen. Within each state the necessary psychological atmosphere will be maintained by a complete severance from the outside world, and by a continuous phoney war against rival states.[426] Civilizations of this type will remain stable for thousands of years. Have no fear!

* * *

CULT CASTE SYSTEM

Traditional high-end Satanic cults are organised like a caste system. Membership in the upper hierarchy is attainable by birth only, like the aristocracy. One can't marry or buy into the top classes. At the top of the pyramid sit the blue bloodlines headed by the Rothschilds. This ruling class is worshipped as demigods like the reverence shown for the Egyptian pharaohs. Beneath this class sit hundreds of 'mortal' family bloodlines that make up a kind of intelligentsia. This group is characterised as high IQ and are granted access to worldly success - so long as they play the game. If members of this class feel morally in conflict with the coven's activities, this usually manifests as 'mental illness,' and if they rebel against 'the family' they are disposed of.

---

[424] The Four Tarot Elements: Wand=Fire, Sword=Air, Cup=Water, Disc=Earth.

[425] The classical Hermetic elements: Fire, Air, Water, Earth.

[426] George Orwell's 1984.

Below this ruling class sit a menagerie of coven members that constitute the anarchy. In Europe these members are bound by location. In a young country like Australia they are united by things such as nationality or interest. For example, we have entire covens of people with Scottish heritage. Another group which is on par with the Scottish is the recent influx of lower-class English coven members with common accents. Australia grants these lower-class people the opportunity to escape the British class system in which they are nothings. Another rising Australian trend is the lesbian covens. Then there are the bikie gangs who do the dirty work. I used to sing the following insult at these lower castes when they got out of line:

IQ low,
Bloodline none.
Shit-kicking
Coven scum.

Conflict exists between the traditional Satanists and the modern self-styled covens. The lowest coven groups compete amongst each other for the unattainable power and status of the hierarchy whom they jealously despise. As portrayed in Harry potter series, the ruling classes look down upon the lower groups with contempt and view them as animalistic, annoyingly clumsy, grubby and highly dispensable. They are held in disdain because they approach tasks with aggression and brute strength, which risks exposing everybody. Their most common mistake is to put their own personal wants before the collective. Their other usual flaw is their propensity to embrace assumption and an overconfidence that stems from not having been thwarted - yet. That is the mistake people like Antony Kidman and Harry Bailey made. Like a pack of mongrel dogs, this group is rewarded for success and punished for failure. They tend to be motivated by primitive drives like sex and drugs rather than higher intellectual pursuits.

*   *   *

Addicted to the Occult

When asked why people are attracted to the occult, reformed Freemason Michael Witcoff responded:

> *I would say fundamentally it is that at some point in your past a door has been opened to evil, whether through your own greed, and your own ambition, and your own desires, or through trauma, which is of course not your choice, but then results in kind of a shattered personality that seeks to regain control of what you lost. And since you can't really do that, just in a secular way I think that a lot of broken people turn to the occult to find some sense of inner power to replace the power that they felt that they had been deprived of when they were younger… For me it was a power thing. I did not have a happy childhood… When I started to discover that you could manipulate the fibres of the universe to serve you, if you don't know any better, that's a very appealing pitch.* [427]

I believe my friend ('Alison') became attracted – and addicted – to the occult for similar reasons. A decade ago, Alison began paying a guru/witch for past life regression 'therapy', aura reading and manipulation, and kinesiology. George J. Goodheart was an occultist who derived kinesiology through psychic powers. 'Kinesiologists believe in an inner power, an "innate intelligence," which is said to be connected to the "universal intelligence" (God) through our nervous systems.'

Under Witchy's influence, Alison's brain and life slowly turned to shit. My friend became vague and started making poor decisions (which landed her in court on a serious charge). Alison abandoned responsibility for her own behaviour and blamed her issues on either other people, or her 'past life' experiences that Witchy implanted in her mind via suggestion.

Several years ago, Alison began divorce proceedings against her husband. Her primary approach to this procedure consisted of gathering with Witchy and another 'coven' participant, to summon her ex's aura, to command her ex's aura into giving her what she desired out of their financial settlement. When Alison divulged this to me, I urged her: "Get a divorce lawyer!" However, Alison ignored all of my free practical advice in favour of her paid esoteric charmer. Consequently, my friend got totally screwed over and her cunning ex won everything.

Alison had engaged in witchcraft. I define witchcraft as intentional manipulation of the elements in order to achieve one's will. Alison had in fact dabbled in black witchcraft – without having been instructed on the consequences of such, or how witches protect themselves against the inevitable backlash. Witchcraft carries its own set of rules, and if one wants to play with witchcraft, one must abide by its rules. My friend failed to do this.

Alison's enormous financial loss was blatant evidence that her guru was in fact a shit witch. Witchy lacked the visual spatial IQ and creativity essential for being good at the occult. Despite her loss, Alison continued paying Witchy exorbitant consultation fees. Why? Because Alison had become addicted to the occult. Occult addiction provides a neurological high akin to addiction to porn, drugs, sugar, or anything else. People are drawn to witchcraft out of curiosity, fascination and titillation, followed by a desire for power and control. What starts out as fun and thrilling morphs into blind servitude.

---

[427] Jay Dyer, *Lucifer & His Boys* (Interview), 29 April 2020.

Like an addict, Alison became highly secretive concerning her habit. She hid from family and friends her relationship with Witchy, their frequency of association, and the depth of their witchcraft involvement. Alison's sister, born psychic, predicts that my friend's life will continue turning to shit so long as she follows her guru – who is no guru. Witchy does not hold a key to mysterious knowledge worth paying a dime for.

It was only when an old associate ('Sophia') re-entered our lives that I discovered the truth. Alison's witch guru did to Sophia what she tried for years to do to me – drove her away. Witchy felt threatened by people like me and Sophia who perceived her craftiness and deception. Sophia introduced me to an astounding little 1908 book explaining every occult method Witchy had employed with Alison, titled:

> *Practical Mental Influence: A course of lessons on mental vibrations, psychic influence, personal magnetism, fascination, psychic self-protection, etc.*

Alison should have saved her dollars and downloaded the same occult info for free in that book. The book's author, William Walker Atkinson, was a prolific and influential writer of 100 occult books. Practical Mental Influence is arguably Atkinson's pivotal work. The text, published by the Masonic Temple in Chicago, provided Freemason initiates with a basic introduction to achieving business success using mind control techniques like covert hypnosis. This book is the missing link I failed to locate while writing the first edition of *Eyes Wide Open*. It simply provides a fundamental understanding of the following topics I addressed in this book:

- Nazi mind control experiments;
- CIA/MI6/US Military MK-Ultra / MK-Delta research and application;
- 1960s Hippie Movement;
- Modern New Age practises including Yoga, meditation and visualisation;
- Modern charismatic / Pentecostal / evangelical apostate churches that influence masses, and focus on prosperity and thinly disguised occult practises like laying on of hands (aka, Reiki) and visiting heaven (aka, Astral Projection);
- Motivational speakers who use Neuro-Linguistic Programming based business and sales tactics on individuals, and/or influence mass audiences;
- Modern Psychology practises, namely Jungian psychotherapy, Mindfulness, and CBT.

People don't produce this type of book anymore, since the information went underground and was weaponised. All modern self-help, motivational, New Age type books are a rehash of Atkinson's blueprint, wrapped in anecdotes, psycho-newspeak, and other crap to make it appear fresh and new.

Here is a summary of the book's points relevant to my experience of the research project called 'MK-Ultra,' and the practical application of that research, called 'MK-Delta.' Keep in mind, this information was published over 110 years ago.

Ch 10. OCCOULT KNOWLEDGE SOURCES

An introduction to the concept of Mental Influence is located at the rear of Atkinson's book, in Chapter 10:

> *'…we read in the pages of history about the mysterious powers recorded under the name of Witchcraft, Hexism, Voodoism, Black Magic, including the Hawaiian "Kahuna" work. And turning back the pages of history to Ancient Rome, Greece, Persia and Egypt, not to speak of India, ancient and modern, we find innumerable instances of the employment of and knowledge of, Mental influence in some of its forms.'* (p.75)

Ch 1. VIBRATION

Knowledge and manipulation of vibration is fundamental to the occult. Vibration is the basic force underlying everything: matter, force, energy, light, temperature, electricity, magnetism, colour. All forms of matter and energy are manifestations of different rates of vibration.

Ch 2. THOUGHT WAVES

Light, heat, electricity, magnetism, radio – all travel in waves. Human thoughts also travel in waves. Thoughts and feelings generate a type of high vibration energy called 'mental energy.' Mental energy may be compared to electromagnetic energy. This energy emanates from the individual in vibratory wave form. These thought waves can be projected to remotely influence the minds, thoughts and behaviour of others whose brains are in harmony. Note that Nazi scientists like Mengele studied twins, when twins tend to detect each other's thoughts and feelings at a long distance. Atkinson explained (p.17):

> *'When a Thought or Feeling is generated in the mind or brain of a person, the energy generated flows forth from the person in the forms of waves of mental energy, spreading from the immediate neighbourhood of the thinker to a distance proportioned to the strength of the thought or feeling. These Thought-Waves have the property of awakening similar vibrations in the minds of other persons coming within their field of force…'*

Thought waves are manifested in various forms and phases. Those released with great force travel far and manifest great influence. Others travel rapidly in a straight line to target certain individuals or places. This is the premise behind the witchcraft practise of casting curses, hexes and spells. Some thought waves are sent forth with great strength and power to sweep around and influence whoever falls in its forcefield. This is used in cases of mass mind control, like stirring up a crowd into a violent frenzy. Thought waves last a long time, even beyond the person's death. Hence locations like Auschwitz possess a distinct atmosphere due to the still-present energy from the strong thoughts and feelings of countless tortured and murdered souls.

Thought waves exert power when sent intentionally, and by someone with a strong will. Hence, MK-Ultra / Delta selected and developed candidates like me who naturally possessed exceptionally strong wills.

Ch 3. MENTAL INDUCTION

> *'Orators, actors, preachers and teachers send forth strong mental currents which tend to produce mental conditions on the part of their hearers corresponding to the feeling held by the mind of the speaker.'* (p.23)

This helps to explain the strong presence of witchcraft practitioners in the theatre, Hollywood, churches, schools and universities.

Ch 4. MENTAL CONCENTRATION

There are two essential ingredients for mentally influencing others' thoughts and behaviours:

1. Concentration (developed via Meditation), and
2. Visualisation.

This is why MK-ULTRA / DELTA candidates possessed an extreme visual-spatial IQ.

> *'…the highest forms of energy, force or power are manifested by bringing the force to a focus, centre, or common point, thereby directing to that point the entire energy employed, instead of allowing it to become dissipated over a larger area.'* (p.29)

I attended acting classes with top tutors in my youth, who literally called this process 'centring.' Similar terminology is employed by Yoga and meditation gurus.

> *'The occult masters have ever impressed upon their pupils the importance and necessity of acquiring the power of Mental concentration, and all trained and developed occultists have practiced and persevered toward this end, the result being that some of them attained almost miraculous mental powers and influence. All occult phenomena are caused in this way, and all occult power depends upon it. Therefore, the student of mental Influence should devote much thought, time and practice to this most important branch of the subject.'* (p.30)

This is why Yogis meditate for hours, and why Eastern practises were scouted by Nazis and formed the basis of CIA/Military black ops. This is the very process I was trained in by my Luciferian abusers, and which was weaponised within Delta Force.

> *'Mental Concentration, in practice, consists in focusing the mind upon a given subject, or object, firmly and fixed, and then holding it there for a certain time, fully intent upon its object, and not allowing itself to be diverted or attracted from its object. It likewise consists in the correlative power of then detaching the mind from that subject, or object, and either allowing it to rest, or else focus upon another object. In other words, it either gives undivided attention or else inhibits (or "shuts off") attention from given subject or object.'* (p.31)

Occultists avoid involuntary concentration, because it allows attention to escape the Will's control.

> *'The Mental Concentration of the occultists … is solely in control of the will, being applied when desirable, and taken off or inhibited when desired.'* (p.32)

Involuntary attention is a type of self-hypnotization; this is completely different to control of attention, which is an evidence of mastery.

> *'The secret of Mental concentration lies in the control of the Attention. And the control of the Attention lies in the exercise of the Will.'* (p.32)

> *'All of the occult authorities begin in teaching their pupils Attention as the first step toward Mental concentration. They instruct the pupil to examine some familiar object, and endeavour to see as many details as possible in the object. Then after hearing the pupil's report, the master sends him back to the task, bidding him seek for new details, and so on until the pupil has discovered about all concerning the object that can be discovered. The next day a new object is given him, and the process is repeated. First simple objects are given, then more complex ones, until at last, objects of great complexity are mastered. In this way not only is the power of close observation highly developed, but the faculty of Attention becomes so highly strengthened that the pupil is able to exert the greatest amount of Mental Concentration with scarcely the consciousness of effort. And such a person then becomes a very giant in the manifestation of Mental Influence. For he is able to hold his mind "one-pointed," as the Orientals describe it, until he has focused and directed a mighty degree of Mental Influence toward the desired object.'* (p.33)

> *'Among the practises imposed upon their pupils by the occult masters may be named Mathematics, Drawing, Analysis, etc.'* (p.34)

This is precisely what my Luciferian perpetrators taught me, and the very technique employed by CIA Head Psychologist John Gittinger in his programming efforts. This method is also the premise of Yoga meditation, Mindfulness, and numerous New Age techniques.

> *'The person who uses Mental Influence must certainly possess the power of focussing the force to a common point, in order to manifest the greatest amount of power and influence. And that faculty of focusing results from the training of the mind along the lines of Concentration. And Concentration arises from the mastery of Voluntary Attention.'* (p.34)

Ch 5. VISUALISATION

> *'What is known as a "Mental Image," in occultism, is the mental creation, in the imagination, of a "picture" of the things, events or conditions that one desires to be manifested or materialised in actual effect.'* (p.36)

> *'The occultist first builds up, in his imagination, a Mental Image or Picture of the conditions he wishes to bring about, and then by concentrating his influence through and around that picture he is able to manifest his influence strongly… The Mental*

> *Image gives shape and directions to the force which is being concentrated upon the desired object or subject.'* (p.36)
>
> *'An eminent authority, Sir Francis Galton, who was one of the leading authorities upon psychology of preceding generations, has said on this subject:*
>
> *"The free actions of a high visualising faculty is of much importance in connection with the higher processes of general thought. A visual image is the most perfect form of mental representation whatever the shape, position and relations of objects to space are concerned. The best workmen are those who visualise the whole of what they propose to do before they take a tool in their hands. Strategists, artists of all denominations, physicists who contrive new experiments, and in short, all who do not follow routine, have need of it."* (p.38)

Exactly. That is precisely what I argue in my pivotal chapter, *Relevance of Intelligence*. People who do not think in pictures, who have a dominant Left Brain that relies on words, can't even begin to understand this phenomenon. Atkinson asks:

> *'If one wishes to materialise anything by the use of the influence, is he not handicapped by a lack of a Mental Image of just what he wants to materialise, and is he not helped very much by the creation of a mental "pattern" or plan, in the shape of a mental picture, through and around which he may direct his thought-currents?'* (p.39)

This is why my friend's guru will always be a shit witch – her right, visual hemisphere is dysfunctional. Alison is also left brain dominant so she can't visualise things either. This explains why their efforts to summon and influence Alison's husband completely backfired.

> *'The occultists manifesting the greatest degree of Mental Influence acquire by practise this art of creating the Mental Images of that which they wish to materialise. They train their Imaginations in this way until the very act of creating the Mental Image acts strongly toward the actual materialisation of the thing itself. They see the desired thing, or event, as "actually existing" in their minds before they attempt to concentrate their Thought-Waves upon the task of accomplishing it. Then the Mental Picture, being completed and standing in strong outline, they focus their mental force through it… The imagination may be strengthened in many ways, the principle being constant and persistent practice. The practise of recalling to the memory of scenes previously witnessed, and then either describing them to others or else drawing a rough picture of them will help in this matter. Describe to others, scenes that you have witnessed, occurrences, details of appearances, etc, etc, until you are able to reproduce mentally the aspects and appearances of the things. Then you may begin to draw mental pictures of things desired as if they were being drawn on the screen of your mind. See mentally, the things as actually occurring – create a little playhouse of your own, in your mind, and there enact the plays that you wish to witness in actual life. When you have acquired this, you will be able to project your mental pictures on the screen of objectivity in actual life with far greater effect.'* (p40.)

In my chapter, *Relevance of Intelligence*, I explain how John Gittinger had me visualise and describe to him a layered cake in detail. The above training formed the basis for laying the various MK programs.

Ch 6. FASCINATION

The two direct uses of Mental Influence are:

1. Fascination (use of Mental Influence without hypnosis methods);
2. Hypnotism (use of Mental Influence with 'passes' or hypnotic methods).

Fascination is used to influence people via the following steps:

a. Forming a strong Thought of what s/he wishes the other person to do.
b. Silently, non-verbally projecting that Thought onto the target, charged with the force of a concentrated will.

> *'The thought should be sent forth with the strength that usually accompanies a strong spoken statement, but you must not actually "speak" the words aloud – you should merely say them strongly "in your mind."'* (p.46)

Atkinson illustrates the fascination method used by real estate agents and salesmen as follows:

> *'They form a thought that the other person desires their goods very much, and then they send out the Thought-Wave that, "You desire my goods – you want them very much – you have an irresistible longing for them," etc.'* (p.46)

Ch 7. HYPNOTIC INFLUENCE

With hypnosis, influence is increased via use of 'passes, strokings or eye-influence.' (p.50) Touching a subject is effective because, *'the nerves of the arms and fingers afford a highly sensitive conductor for the mental currents which may be propelled over them to the mind of the subject, or to his nerves and muscles.'* (p.52) *'It is also known that the eye has a peculiar property of transmitting the mental currents along the rays of light entering it and from thence to the eyes of the other person.'* (p.52) This is consistent with the research I reference concerning the measurement of an energy source emitted by the human stare. This relates to the occultic practise of giving someone the 'evil eye,' or cursing them via a stare.
The subject *'is rendered passive by a flow of mental energy calculated to render it more or less drowsy or sleepy, and therefore less calculated to set up powers of resistance to the Thought-Waves…'* However, a "deep sleep" condition is not necessary to render the will of the subject subservient' to the hypnotist. In other words, people can by hypnotised without realising it.
Hypnotic influence was formerly named 'Mesmerism' after Frederick Mesmer (Mozart's godfather). According to Atkinson (p.51), Mesmer re-discovered the 'force and its use' which 'was known to the Ancients centuries before Mesmer's time.' This is the same 'Force' that *Star Wars* movies promote to impressionable kids.

The hypnotist induces a passive state in the subject's mind, nerves or muscles, to reduce her ability to resist. He then 'gives his orders or "verbal suggestions" accompanied by a projection of his Thought-Waves into the' subject's mind. People differ in their 'degrees of impressionability to hypnotic influence – i.e., degrees of resistance.'

Atkinson provides some examples of exercising hypnotic influence which are the very techniques employed by the likes of Benny Hinn, Kenneth Copeland, and other charlatan 'church' leaders who practice that 'slaying in the spirit' Kundalini crap. Doesn't the following sound familiar?

> *'Then standing in front of the subject tell him to take his will off his legs and stand perfectly passive and relaxed. Then looking him straight in the eyes, say to him: "Now, I am going to draw you forward toward me by my mental power – you will feel yourself falling forward toward me – don't resist but let yourself toward me – I will catch you, don't be afraid – now come – come – come – now you're coming, this way, coming – here, you're coming, that's right," etc. You will find that he will begin to sway toward you and in a moment or two will fall forward in your arms… It will help matters if you hold your hands on each side of his head, but just in front of him, hot touching him, however, and then draw away your hands, toward yourself, saying at the same time: "Come now – come – you're coming," etc. This experiment may be reversed by standing behind the subject and drawing him backward. Be sure to catch him in your arms when he falls and protect him from a fall to the floor.'* (p.53-4)

And here is another tactic employed by Bethel BS 'churches':

> *'Or you may make him experience a feeling of heat and pain by touching your finger to his hand and telling him that it is hot.'* (p.54-5).

Atkinson offers a sound word of warning:

> *'Beware of people who are always putting their hands on you, or patting or stroking you, or wishing to hold your hands a lot of the time. Many persons do this from force of habit, but others do so with the intention of producing a mild form of hypnotic influence on you.'* (p.56)

Imagine the influence occultists like Witchy may exert under the guise of offering physical alternative therapies like remedial massage and kinesiology?

Ch 8. LONG-DISTANCE INFLUENCE

Here lies the occult technique Witchy unsuccessfully employed to influence Alison's ex into reaching a desired financial settlement:

> *'One of the most elementary, and yet one of the most effective, methods known to occultists is that of creating a mental Image of the person "treated"… in the sense of imagining him to be seated in a chair in front of the person treating him at a distance. The treater proceeds to give both verbal commands, and at the same time directs Thought-Waves toward the imaginary person seated before him. This process establishes a psychic condition between the treator and the actual person, although the latter may be removed from the treator by many miles of space. This was the method of the ancient magicians…* (p.60)

> *'A variation of the above, very common in former days, was to mould a clay or wax figure, calling it by the name of the person treated, and identifying it in the mind and imagination with the other person. A variation is also noticed in the cases where a photograph, lock of hair, article of clothing, etc., is used in this way as a psychic connecting link between the two persons. The practitioners of Black Magic, Witchcraft and other nefarious perversions of Mental Influence seemed to prefer these methods…'* (p61)

An Example of Long-Distance Influence:

A friend of mine serviced all the computers in a number of doctor surges, including my doctor. I was horrified the day she informed me she could access my medical files from her home computer. One day, I visited my friend's home unannounced, following 6 weeks I spent in hiding from my perpetrators. In my friend's bedroom I found a homemade altar to Satan. Above the table, on the wall, was a drawing of dragon with the word "DRAGON' emblazoned on it. The drawing had been created by my friend's 9-year-old daughter. Among other things, the table contained a wizard pewter talisman, some wooden flowers given by my young child, and a large sheep snow globe my friend purchased in New Zealand; she had given me a smaller version of the very same souvenir. These objects created a psychic link between my 'friend' and my family. I had my suspicions, nut at that moment I realised my friend was a witch, and she was accessing my medical records and supplying this information directly to my perpetrators.

The Treator sends his Thought-Waves toward the object, and in some cases actually talks (mentally) to the person by means of the medium mentioned. He may give commands, arguments, remonstrances, persuasion, etc., just as if the person were actually present.

The 'Astral Tube' is another form of distant influence. This is established similarly to the 'psychic-wire' and projected at the target. The astral tube is a 6 inch to 1-foot wide ring formed in the imagination as a 'vortex-ring' which lengthens and extends toward the target. This technique *'is employed in various forms of occult and psychic phenomena, such as clairvoyance and other forms of "psychomancy"*…' (p.63) This technique formed the basis of Projects like Looking Glass and Stargate, which I detail in my chapter regarding *MK-Delta*.

One of the most advanced forms of Mental Influence involves the person simply standing or sitting quietly and concentrating until he attains a state of calm called 'the Silence.' The person then creates a strong mental picture of the target plus the desired behaviour or external conditions. This technique requires 'Creative Will-power.'

Ch 9. MASS INFLUENCE

This refers to influencing the public, a crowd, or a large number of people simultaneously. Mass Influence *'is used by nearly all who succeed in any form of business or profession, in which success calls for the attracting of other people toward the occupation of the person in question,'* particularly politicians, businessmen, financers and military leaders. (p.66)

> *'The Mental Influence sent out by a strong businessman in a town will soon make itself felt in a subtle manner, and the store becomes a centre of attraction, although the public does not understand why. In the same way some lawyers spring into public*

> *favour, although not possessing greater ability than their legal brethren. And popular preachers make their influence felt in a community in similar ways…'* (p.70)
>
> *'Some masters of this art of influencing the public create a mental picture of themselves sending our great volumes of Thought-Waves for a time, and then after imparting a rotary motion to the waves, until at last they form a mental whirlpool rushing round and round and always sucking in toward the centre. An effort of this kind acts on the mental plane just as a physical whirlpool acts on the physical plane, that is, it draws into its power all that comes into contact with its force. This is one of the most powerful forms of Influencing En Masse and is used with great effect by many of the "strong men" of this age, who have acquainted themselves with the secrets of the ancient occultists. Ancient Occultism and Modern Finance seem far apart, but they are really working together to further the interests of some of these powerful minds of the day – and the public is paying the bill.'* (p.71)
>
> *'…an individual who has cultivated the faculty of concentration and has acquired the art of creating sharp, clear, strong mental images… Such a man frequently "sees" people coming to him and his enterprises and falling in line with his plans. He mentally "sees" money flowing into him, and all of his plans working out right.'* (pp. 71-2)
>
> *'Thought pictured in mental images and then vitalised by the force of the desire and will tend to objectify themselves into material being. That is the whole of the thing.'* (p.73)

Ch 11. BLACK MAGIC DANGERS

Atkinson warns: *'Before practising any of these experiments, read what we have said in the chapter on "Magic Black and White," and guard against employing the power for evil purposes, for the fate of the Black Magician is a sad one.'* (p.65-6)
In the same chapter, Atkinson concludes:

> *'Thoughts are like Boomerangs, in their tendency to return to their sender. To the poison of Black Magic, Nature gives the antidote of Right-Thinking.'*

Atkinson well understood and appreciated the relevance to the occult of left versus right hemispheric processing ability. It's nice to find such validation for my ideas and writings.

Ch 12. SELF-PROTECTION

Atkinson concluded his book with a chapter on how to protect oneself from others' attempts to exert mental influence. He recommended a method 'employed by the adepts in Occultism' and taught to 'the initiates of the occult brotherhoods and lodges all over the world.'

> '*This method of protection is based on the notion that within each of us… is what occultists know as the Flame of the Spirit. This is what you recognise in consciousness as the "I AM" consciousness – that consciousness of Being which is far above the consciousness of personality, or the things of personality… This consciousness comes to the individual by reason of his contact with the great One Life of the Universe… And*

> *in this part of man's consciousness, coupled with the sense of BEING an "I," there resides a spark from the Divine Flame of Life and power, which has been called the WILL of man… This inner Will is real power, and when once recognised may be drawn upon as a source of unending and unfailing Strength… every person may draw upon this source of strength within them to … repel the thought-vibrations of the lower plane.'*

Atkinson suggested, attempts to gain mental influence over you are repelled via *'remembering the strength imminent in your "I," aided by the statement (made silently to yourself): "I am an Immortal Spirit, using the Will within my Ego."'*

Conclusion

There is a God – and it's not you. "I AM" is reserved for the Creator God of the Bible. The greatest source of power over Mental Influence is free and not hidden beneath degrees of initiation. Having been raised with, and trained in, the content of Atkinson's book, I discovered that Christian prayer in Jesus' name trumps the occult, witchcraft, black magic, voodoo, etc. Every curse, hex, spell, ritual and blood sacrifice may be bound in Jesus' name and sent back from whence it came, since whatever is bound here on Earth is bound in Heaven.

The fundamental difference between witchcraft and Biblical Christianity is this: Witchcraft involves someone manipulating the external world and other people to achieve their own will. By contrast, Biblical Christianity concerns submitting our will to the all-powerful, all-knowing, omnipresent Creator God, and trusting Him with our future.

The Bible condemns the occult in its many forms:

> *And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.* (Rev 9:20-1)

* * *

An ‘Ejumacation’

There is physical and psychological pain in being thwarted, discouraged and diminished as a person. To have ability, to feel power you are never allowed to use, can become traumatic.

– Bob & Jan Davidson

My brother Dale once explained, ‘The reason why everyone hated Fiona at school was because she was always that little bit better than them at everything.’
That’s not entirely true – they hated me for other reasons.

As my old high school friend Justine Thomas put it, ‘Fiona makes me look at who I really am, and when I do that, I don’t like what I see.’ My husband calls this phenomenon The Mirror Effect.

My troubles began in Kindergarten when I was expelled from religion class. The ailing volunteer never divulged what I did to deserve such ostracism, but I must have tested Mrs Levett beyond what a Christian could endure. From then on, every week, while the other five-year-olds were grouped according to the only three denominations that existed in 1970’s Sydney, I spent scripture classes alone on a bench in the sun. Perhaps I had asked the wrong type of question? Or too many questions? Whatever the cause, it likely stemmed from my mother’s instructions for independent thinking.

If I inquired about a controversial topic, my mother typically followed a certain formula: First she explained what society generally thought about the issue, then she told me what she personally believed, and then Mum would conclude, ‘But now you have to form your own opinion.’

My mother employed ‘big’ words whenever she addressed me and my younger brother Dale. It didn’t matter whether we understood the words, she decided, because through our regularly hearing them in context we would eventually figure out their meaning. Not surprisingly, I was a fluent reader with a large vocabulary long before I commenced Kindergarten. This was just as well because somebody had to help teach the other kids. Seeing I could already read, it was only fair that Miss Angus employed me as a volunteer teacher aide. I was assigned three struggling students. We sat on small wooden chairs in a circle as I helped them sound out the words:

Look, Spot, look.
Find Dick and Jane.
Go, Spot, go.
Help Sally find Dick.
Help Sally find Jane.

Go, Spot.
Go and find Dick.
Go and find Jane.

Run, Spot, run.
Run and find Dick.
Run and find Jane.

Oh, oh, oh.
Spot can find Dick.
Spot can find Jane.

Oh, oh.
Spot can help Sally.
Spot can play.

I arrived home from my first day of Kindergarten at Revesby Primary School, snatched the *Dick and Jane* reader from my leather satchel, threw it down on my parents' coffee table and declared:

'That is *stupid*!'

There began my non-education. It was the experimental, self-enlightened 1970's. Under Gough Whitlam's government it was 'Time for a Change!' What a change it was. Times tables, spelling, punctuation, and grammar were tossed out, due to their alleged stifling impact on children's creativity, in favour of empty Marxist-inspired doctrine. Instead of studying History, English and Geography, the new curriculum asked students to express how we *felt* about the study of these subjects.

Twenty years later, during a lecture at teacher's college, my literacy professor labelled 1970's New South Wales as 'the most disastrous period in Australia's educational history.' He blamed the curriculum for producing a generation of virtual illiterates. The tragic *Dick and Jane* readers, he scoffed, were imported to Australia from the USA by the Education Minister's relative as a private money-making venture.

While overtly dumbing down the masses, the NSW Education Department simultaneously conducted a covert search for the brightest young state primary children in a mysterious government study. I was recruited without my mother's knowledge or consent.

My family dwelt in a blue asbestos box in Padstow, a poor white suburb in Western Sydney. My mother supplemented the revolutionary state curriculum as best she could, with public library visits plus the odd period of dance or music tuition. I was aged five when I had my first piano lesson. My tutor was convinced I had been taught before. My most vivid memory of piano was crying because I couldn't play a piece perfectly. Mind you, it was difficult to master the music when I had no piano to practise on. A friend offered our family a sound piano for free and all we needed to do was collect it, but my father didn't bother. There ended my beloved piano lessons for the next 10 years.

Our mother ensured that Dale and I had a constant supply of art materials to play with. Poverty plus parental disinterest had prevented Mum from pursuing her own dream of Art College admission. She and her nine siblings attended a small convent school in 1940s Brisbane where was she was caned and demeaned by unqualified Irish nuns. Mum attributed the nuns' insanity to the thick woollen habits they wore throughout the subtropical summer. At 14 years of age, my mother concluded that Catholicism was a fear-based religion and, at risk of being ex-communicated by her family, she abandoned it for life. My academically gifted 14-year-old mother moved to Melbourne alone to work in a canning factory.

My mother commenced art lessons after I started school. Subsequent weekends were marked by reluctant trips to the New South Wales Art Gallery, life drawing classes with models (including 60 Minutes reporter Ian Leslie) who didn't mind everyone looking at their bits, and landscape sketching trips with women dressed in long paisley skirts and large floppy felt hats. Mum won her first art show when fellow artist Irene Moore (Richard Tognetti's aunt) framed one of her portraits and entered it in an acquisition competition. The following year, Mum entered a work that she had painted in a Bankstown Art Society class. The judge, Fred Bates, refused to award Mum first prize because he believed her nude was too good to have been painted by a novice. Mum was just emerging on the Sydney art scene and aiming for the Archibald when my father burnt all of her art materials. He destroyed Mum's art career after we fled what I recall as his first violent outburst.

'You wait!' my father shouted from the lounge room where he sat with his half-brother. 'You wait 'til David leaves!'

Mum lowered Dale and I out our bedroom window. Minutes later, as we trotted down the dark street, I tried to explain: 'Mum, that wasn't Dad – that was the devil inside of him.'

My belief in the Biblical God was surprising, considering I was raised an atheist. Apart from a few religion classes at school, my exposure to Western religion consisted of my father hissing '*fucking pedophiles*!' through gritted teeth at the sight of any priest.

As for my mother, she embarked upon an Eastern quest for truth and meaning while I was vicariously towed along for the ride. Mum's spiritual journey began with a weekly philosophy group meeting at our central coast log cabin. Morning yoga sessions, a vegetarian diet and herbal remedies ensued. Strange books appeared on our shelves, with foreign titles like Yin-Yang, Kahlil Gibran and I-Ching.

I too was blessed with a new children's library consisting of books about meditation, finding my 'inner light' and astral travel. I dismissed these concepts as nonsensical and confusing. Yet my grasp of them didn't matter anyhow because, according to another kiddies' book, mankind was polluting us all into extinction. Images of planet Earth covered in Band-Aids (plasters), and atomic mushroom clouds, caused me nightmares. This occurred decades before society accepted the notion of 'climate change.'

The insomnia and vivid nightmares that plagued my childhood were captured in my first poem written at age six years. As car headlights reflected over my darkened bedroom, I grabbed a pen and wrote under the streetlight:

Traffick

With a honk and a beep
I can hear the traffick leap,
And a tiny touch of light
It could hit my feet.

With a bang and a bump,
What a lump!

Stop, stop!
Stop, stop!
I can't get to sleep!

But it would not stop,
No, not a bit.
So I tucked underneath,
And I did get to sleep.

My mother made me present a copy of Traffick to my Grade 2 teacher at Budgewoi primary school on the NSW Central Coast. Mrs Peach read my poem to the class. The small band of popular girls smiled sweetly at her – before secretly shooting me an acidic scowl. I would be dealt with at lunchtime, as usual. People debate a child's age of accountability. Following my Grade 2 experience I confidently place it at age seven years.

If Grade 2 turned me off my age peers, Grade 3 completely buried my innate passion for learning:

'What is it about bald heads and thick glasses that make pedophiles so attractive to children?' an English comedian once asked. The joke reminded me of my Grade 3 teacher at Budgewoi Primary School, Gary Balzola ('Mr B'). When he lost his temper, which was often, Mr B would throw his wooden blackboard duster hard at a boy's head. Girls were typically demeaned or ignored altogether.

Mr B owned a property and horses at Wyong. During the school holidays, he invited every boy in our class, and a select few boys from other classes, to stay at his farm. As the week went on, the boys gradually returned home until only a few remained. Two of these boys excitedly told me how they had slept in Mr B's bed. The last child to be collected from Mr B's farm was a shy blonde boy named Darren.

When school went back after the holidays, I was seated at my desk in our demountable classroom, watching a commotion outside. Darren stood in the playground with his back to the classroom. His head was lowered and his body trembled as he wept uncontrollably. Several children were huddled around his limp form, trying to console him.
Mr B shot out of our classroom and rushed toward Darren. Mr B told the kids to return inside the classroom while he spoke alone with Darren, his arm wrapped around the boy's small stature.

Inside the classroom, the kids began frantically whispering together.

'What's going on?' I asked the girl next to me.

She tightened her lips and raised her eyebrows: 'Mr B did something very rude to Darren.' It was far too rude to repeat.

At Christmas time, Mr B bought the forgiveness of every student in our class with a kilo of lollies, a can of soft drink and a coloured Parker pen. But I never forgave. And I never forgot. Externally, I maintained a toughened shell to withstand the war zone that was the school playground. But inside, I acknowledged Darren's demise into misery. Three years later, I understood why tears welled in Darren's eyes as he threw another boy over his shoulders during a classroom fight. Twenty years later, I did what I had wanted to do at age eight: I formally reported 'Mr B' to *Taskforce Argos* at Queensland's Police headquarters and signed a witness statement.

The detective cheerfully explained that his sex crime unit had been inundated with reports of child abuse, especially involving priests. He talked about how unbelieving the general public were. 'My own mother-in-law didn't believe me,' he chuckled, 'until we arrested her local parish priest.' Then the detective looked me dead in the eye and asked, 'Why are you reporting this?'

Because it happened to me too! I wanted to blurt out but restrained myself. Instead, I affirmed, 'Because it's the right thing to do.'

I further reported Mr B to the NSW Education Department's Child Protection unit which was established following the Wood Royal Commission. Then I located Mr B working at a newsagency. I phoned him and stated: 'I know what you did to Darren and I reported you to the police.' It felt good.

'Hey!' Mr B objected, 'I'll have you know that I'm still very good friends with some of my students!'

'Oh, I bet you are…'

The NSW Police sent me a letter in which they claimed that they were unable to locate Darren. The Education Department sent me a letter in which they claimed they could not substantiate my allegation against Mr B and they approved his return to teaching at Budgewoi Primary School.

While lower primary school was a horrendous enough experience, things only got worse for me in high school, especially when adolescence kicked in.I was 12 years old when my parents reconciled and relocated our family to a northern NSW farm. I attended a public high school in nearby Murwillumbah, or 'Murhole' as my sister nicknamed the country town. I renamed Murwillumbah High 'Pedo High' – which seemed justified after one of the principals was convicted for sexually abusing a male student. I laughed at the local newspaper's claim that the remaining staff members were 'shocked' by the allegations.

High school was as mind-numbingly tedious as primary school. I resigned myself to learning nothing at a secondary level after my first Grade 8 History project where the teacher, Mr Huxley, gave us the task of constructing a model Viking boat out of cardboard. I threw myself passionately into what I perceived as an enjoyable project and within two days I had crafted and painted a perfect model.

My cardboard boat received a contemptuous reception from the entire class, including Mr Huxley. 'You cut that out of a magazine!' one boy accused.

The following lesson, Mr Huxley brought a supply of green cardboard. I was instructed to abandon my completed model boat and join the class assembly line production of 30 stapled, uniform replicas of a basic paper boat.

The following four years were just a variation on that experience and my true ability never really manifested again. I recall a PE session during which I flogged one of the school's tennis champions, Amanda Swan, when I had never had a single lesson. I also remember the sewing classes during which I consistently earned perfect marks for my professional-standard garments. Apart from these glimpses I became stuck in a spiral of boredom, underachievement, and rebellion.

I didn't misbehave in every class – just for those teachers I disrespected. I didn't respect the manual arts teacher who exposed himself to me and who joked in my presence about 'getting into the pants' of a Grade 12 student. I didn't respect the science teacher and self-designated school photographer who continually photographed me and who took 'arty' shots of my naked classmate. I didn't respect the PE teacher who had sex with a female classmate. I didn't respect the English teacher who had a group orgy with her senior surfing students. I didn't respect the English teacher who had an affair with a Grade 11 student and who flirted with my brother's girlfriend. I didn't respect the careers teacher who made advances toward my brother and who drugged a Grade 11 boy at a party. The student awoke in the careers teacher's bed the following morning, naked with no memory of how he got there. The teacher stood naked in the doorway and minced, 'It's okay, sweetie.'

My hidden ability suddenly manifested in Grade 11. For some unknown reason, I began churning out unique interpretations of *Hamlet* that stunned the only person who showed an appreciation of my ideas – a University of New England professor whose lectures we attended. I took up rowing, won my first regatta race but lost my second, the final, to the Australian champion. I commenced Art classes and began painting like a professional. Then I won the female lead in the high school musical when I had not previously sung or acted.

'You-… you're not *Fiona's* mother, are you?!' the medical receptionist exclaimed when she spied our surname on my brother's medical file.

'Y-y-yes,' Mum hesitated, wondering what I had done wrong this time.

The receptionist disappeared. Minutes later she returned with the entire surgery who were all talking at once: 'You're Fiona's mother! We saw her in the musical last night. She was amazing!'

After seeing the school musical, my art teacher Ken Siddel told me, 'I just sat there watching you and Zoe and I realised – they're going to be famous!'

My academic turnabout divided the school staff room. On one side sat a minority group of intelligent teachers like Peter Cross who himself topped the state in History as a high school student. These people recognised and valued my ability.

On the opposition sat those teachers who resented their jobs – and me. They especially hated the fact that my new-found success highlighted their failure to teach. The main perpetrator of the teacher movement against me was the English/History teacher. Peter Wilcox had obviously never forgiven me for my blatant impertinence concerning his sexual affair with a Year 11 student named Louise – nor for the sailing incident.

The sailing incident occurred during a school sport lesson. Wilcox prided himself on being a skilled sailor and he taught sailing for school sport. A Japanese exchange student named Nozamu and I paired up to sail a catamaran. Our first and final sailing day was extremely windy. Wilcox gave our group basic sailing instructions. Unbeknownst to Mr Wilcox, I had learnt to sail on Budgewoi Lake under a great teacher named Leslie in my own Laser sailing boat in which I won my first race.

That sport day, every catamaran capsized within 10 metres of shore – except the boat Nozamu and I were on. The wind blew us up-river toward a rocky island that stuck out in the middle. It was impossible to simply turn about and aim directly for the boat shed where the other students had resigned. I had to tack against the wind just to get back to our shore. I aimed to land near the rocks upstream, from where Nozamu and I could tow the boat back. As the winds picked up and the cat almost tipped, Nozamu began panicking at the thought of falling into shark infested waters. His hysteria compromised our chances of staying upright, so I made Nozamu laugh and relax by pretending to be a pirate. Nearing the shore, I yelled out, 'Abandon ship!' in an Irish accent, just as Wilcox approached us. Anticipated congratulations on a fine bit of sailing, I shouted, 'Aye-aye, Sir!'

'Get off!' Wilcox screamed hysterically at us.

'Huh?' I was genuinely confused.

'You treat everything as a bloody joke, Fiona!'

'Oh…' I struggled for a response, 'Do you want me to take the boat back?'

'Just get off!'

A bewildered Nozamu muttered in my ear, 'What we do wrong? What we do wrong?'

'Never mind, Noza,' I assured him. 'Let's just go.'

Fully clothed in long socks and leather shoes, Wilcox leapt onto the boat and started sailing it back. Nozamu and I had just started walking back to the boat shed when we witnessed the expert sailor Mr Cock capsize just five metres from the shore.

Wilcox instigated staff room gossip about me which became so rife, fellow teacher Peter Cross complained about it to the mistress of girls, Mrs Garnham – who in turn told me. Ailsa Sharland, my private piano teacher, told me she overheard the same group of teachers speaking derogatively about me in the staffroom while relief teaching at Murhole High.

'Are you talking about Fiona?' Ailsa interrupted them.

‘Yes,’ they admitted.

‘I teach her piano. Fiona’s a genius!’

‘Oh, we know,’ they conceded. ‘We can tell from her essay writing.’

If my teachers thought I was so capable, they certainly never told me. Instead, at the start of Grade 12, Wilcox and his incompetent peers pressured the principal to transfer me to neighbouring Tweed River High. They threatened to strike if he didn’t.

I nicknamed my new school ‘Tweed Slut High’ for good reason. If you have seen the movie Muriel’s Wedding, this is based on a true story set in the Tweed Heads area. My new school was populated with girls who wore their skirts 20cm too short so that they just covered their knickers.

My senior teachers at Murhole had no knowledge of my forced transfer and appeared shocked at the news. My new school did not offer the same subjects or timetable, so I had to make major subject changes. I had to drop my top subject, 3U History, and pick up General Studies. My teacher for both History and General Studies was not given a record of my Grade 11 History marks, thus he instantly deducted from my final results the percentage of marks carried over from his existing students’ previous year and refused to let me make up the difference.

‘That’s unfair,’ I complained to Mr. Rogers, the deputy principal. ‘You make him change those marks!’ I knew Mr Rogers as the former English master of Murwillumbah High. I had spent most of Grade 9 English sitting outside his office.

‘It’s too late,’ he tried to explain.

‘Then I tell you what,’ I asserted in righteous indignation, ‘I’ll not be attending another one of his Ancient History or General Studies classes. From now on – I’ll teach myself!’

I further complained about my marks for 2U English. My new English teacher had preconceived opinions on me. He was married to one of the teachers from my previous school, a right bitch who had conspired to get rid of me – and who entertained a group orgy with her surfing students.

‘You read this essay,’ I threw my paper on the deputy’s desk.

Mr. Rogers read it carefully. It was a critique of Thomas Hardy’s Tess of the d’Urbervilles, a novel I despised from its opening multi-page description of a cow paddock. The essay question asked students to argue whether Tess was seduced or raped. Instead, I eloquently addressed the moral and political incorrectness of the essay question.

‘Fiona,’ Mr. Rogers sighed, ‘you write this sort of thing at university. For now, you’re at high school and you *must conform*.’

I refused to conform. I refused to write another essay on Tess of the d’Urbervilles. My stance cost me my English result and my overall tertiary entrance score. My final Higher School Certificate exam results read:

Ancient History	91
General Studies	88
Art (Advanced)	88
Art	89
Music	81
English (Advanced)	82
English	58

It was a miracle that I completed high school at all. Throughout my school years, my father constantly reminded me that I was a 'fuckwit,' 'shit-for-brains' and a 'moron.' His attack on my studies intensified during my HSC exam preparation. The highlight of the month-long study period was when my father decided to sandblast the house wall just outside my bedroom window where my study desk sat.

'YOU'RE GONNA FAIL!' his screaming could only just be heard over the shrill of the machine. 'YOU'RE FUCKING HOPELESS! YOU'RE GONNA FAIL!'

I learned how to balance academic study with my father's regular violence. His most memorable outburst was the cat incident. This occurred on our way to our piano lessons. It was dark. My father screamed hysterically at me in the manner which typically ended in his beating me in the stomach or head. But this time I was spared. At the end of our dirt road, our headlights shone on a box of abandoned kittens. Dad slammed on the brakes, jumped out of the car, and started throwing rocks at a kitten's head. I started screaming hysterically, jumped out of the car and ran barefoot down the road. I glanced back to see my father's figure silhouetted against the headlights. He was beating a kitten to death over the bonnet of the car. I stayed up all night, processing the incident in a painting that I titled *Dad Hates Cats*.

People often accuse child abuse victims: Why didn't you tell anyone? In my case, I did tell someone. I told my school Principal, Wally Wardman, who contested, 'But you never come to school with any bruises on you.' I didn't bother explaining I showed no physical evidence because my father knew how to beat me without leaving any signs. After meeting my father, the Principal described him as, 'gentle as a lamb.'

I reported my father's domestic violence to the local Tweed Heads child protection agency (DOCS) who dismissed my report and labelled me a 'drama queen' – even after my mother directly confirmed my testimony to them.

I even called the local police who were subsequently easily convinced by my father that I was just 'making shit up.' Immediately after the police left, my father flew into his most violent rage and threw me out of home. Consequently, I spent half of Grade 12 living at other peoples' homes.

By the end of high school, I was too mentally exhausted to attend university and sit more exams. So, I attended Sydney's top Art College instead.

My mother did her best to talk me out of attending art college: 'It takes ten years to undo the damage art college does to an artist,' she warned. She wanted me to study English literature instead.

While delivering me the 'you're expelled' lecture, Murwillumbah Principal Mr Dowling simultaneously commended my acting skills and ordered me to major in English and Drama at UNE as I was too young to audition for NIDA. Meanwhile, my piano teacher told me, 'If you take next year off and practise eight hours a day, the following year you will get into the Sydney Conservatorium as a concert pianist.'

I interviewed at Sydney's City Art Institute in Paddington. Outside the interview room I sat amidst a trembling group of candidates who clasped their professionally produced portfolio.

'What other art schools have you applied for?' the panel asked me.

'None. This is the best. Why would I bother going elsewhere?'

The three of them stared at me like stunned mullets.

I broke the silence, 'Would you like to see my folio?'

They sighed collectively, 'Oh, you have a folio?'

I pulled out a small wad of instant photographs that I had taken of my paintings and drawings and handed them to the panel.

'Wow,' one interviewer shook her head.

'Who taught you to draw?' one lecturer asked.

'No-one. I taught myself.'

'Who taught you to paint like this?'

'Klimt, Whiteley and Picasso,' I responded confidently.

Art College was everything my mother warned me it would be. I loathed every day of it. Art College was not about learning. I was never given explicit instruction in such basics as colour mixing or canvas stretching. Art College was about anticipating what the lecturers wanted. By the end of third year, painting students were expected to display their own 'style' – despite the fact that it took Picasso a lifetime to develop his characteristic style.

Art College was not about creativity; it was about conformity to the lecturers' personal tastes. I recall the day I told my history theory lecturer, Tess, that I considered Brett Whiteley to be one of Australia's master painters. She laughed condescendingly and said something so coded in 'art speak' that my brain could not process it.

Art College was not about artistic talent. Students were marked on their personalities, not their art. I recall a class in which a third-year student had not produced any work whatsoever, but because he could waffle art speak about the 'process' – he passed.

I laughed, 'The emperor is naked!'

Art College was not about producing aesthetically pleasing images. It was about glorifying the grotesque. I recall a piece of work that was displayed in a glass podium. It was an essay which began, '*There once was a Cunt*…' I recall another piece of work which received a good grade – a four-foot high sculpture of an erect penis. That student went on to exhibit photographs of pus-ridden skin diseases.

I later attended the top art colleges in Queensland and Western Australia and found them to teach the same crap. In the foyer of Queensland College of Art was displayed an exhibition of photographs featuring a decapitated pigs head and sexualised women dressed in leather outfits and whips. The student artist went onto be implicated in a notorious vampire murder involving a lesbian Satanist who routinely drank pigs' blood.

I committed the minimal time and effort required to obtain my first undergraduate degree. Every spare moment was spent attending theatre classes at Phillip Street Theatre, the *Australian Theatre for Young People*, followed by *The Actors Centre* where I benefited from NIDA teachers who had recently left Australia's top acting school over political issues. The highlight of my first year of tertiary education was a cabaret show held at ATYP. I was designated the role of a punk at a dinner party. I painted my face grotesquely, scrawled 'KILL' across my torn shirt and got lost in the improvisation. My performance brought the house down. The French mime teacher accosted me excitedly at the end of the show: 'Your face!' he delighted, 'It was like a mask! It was *fantastique*!'

'Here she is – the star!' another staff member declared. 'You were the funniest thing I have seen in ten years!'

After a year of attending more drama than art classes, I applied for NIDA, the Sydney based drama school. I was just 18 years old when I ignored warnings that I was well below the average age of 22 to get in. The first panel of judges were obviously impressed with my performance because they singled me out and excitedly asked, 'Where did you obtain your piece? Where have you worked before?' But the moment I heard who was judging my second audition I knew my acting days were over. The person in question had rushed back from interstate auditioning to be there – on my day. I recognised him from my secret childhood.

‘I’m surprised,’ my private drama coach, another NIDA graduate, concluded. ‘I thought you would get in.’

Disappointed, I simultaneously sensed that acting was a dangerous choice for someone with my background. The acting techniques I had been taught at *The Actors Cent re* included shamanic practises of centring, meditation, dissociation and channelling.I demonstrated a seemingly natural ability to completely lose myself in character, something which impressed others – but was spiritually unhealthy. Today, I appreciate that I was spared the fate of most successful actors. If an actor is not born into ritual abuse, they will pay for their fame one way or another, be it via the mandatory casting couch, drug abuse or forced to star in underground snuff and porn films.

My passion was for musical theatre. Consequently, my focus switched to classical singing. I had transferred to Art College in Brisbane when I auditioned at the Queensland Conservatorium for an evening course in concert and stagecraft for singers. At that point the Queensland Con was the place for singing in Australia. I was accepted and once in, I harassed the teacher, Leonard Lee, for private singing lessons. Leonard eventually agreed to give me a 30-minute trial lesson to explore my potential which he doubted I had. He played some scales and gave me instructions which I promptly followed.

‘Hmm,’ he raised his brow at my typically rapid response to teaching. ‘Okay,’ he conceded, ‘I’ll teach you.’ His ‘intercostal diaphragmatic breathing’ technique well suited my dramatic mezzo soprano voice. A short time later, his tune completely changed:

‘You’ve learned more in two months than my students typically learn in two years! It’s a big voice and difficult to control.’ I was subsequently overwhelmed with free lessons and talk of managing me in Europe. I had a 2.5 octave range with a strong top C.

Both my singing and piano teachers were world class musicians whose careers had been prematurely ended by tragedy. Being a perfectionist, the additional pressure I felt from them to succeed was suffocating. I just wanted to learn to sing and play before making any great life decisions. So, I quit music.

But perhaps the greatest impact on my confidence to pursue a career in music or theatre stemmed from something deeper and darker. I had just turned 16 when I made the decision to cut off from the Sydney-based pedophile network that abused and controlled me from my earliest memory. Psychologist and UTS lecturer Dr Antony Kidman led the inner Sydney branch of this network. In response to my announcement that I was leaving their organisation and did not want their support to ‘make it’ in any industry, Kidman slammed my fingers between a piano keyboard and lid, and hissed:

‘You will be *nothing* without us!’

* * *

The Family

There shall not be found among you anyone that makes his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that uses divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch.

- Deut 18:10

I did not intend to marry into an illuminati family. I met Jon halfway up a mountain on New Zealand's remote west coast. My brother and I were on our way down, while Jon was on his way up. A week later we encountered Jon again atop the gondolas in Queenstown. I laughed hysterically at his photo of an angora rabbit strapped to a rotisserie for shearing. Then I laughed all afternoon during the game off 'dirty word scrabble' that Jon instigated. Perhaps my contribution of the word 'alone' captured Jon's affection.

Upon our return home to Australia, my brother and I told our mother nothing about our trip except for, 'We met the funniest guy! Jon is the funniest person I've ever met.' Soon after our return I received a postcard – a photo of the stupid rabbit. On the back Jon had written a note saying he'd like to call in and visit on his way home to England.

Jon stayed six months. Not only was he funny, he was clever, generous, and the nicest guy I've ever met. Upon meeting him people would blurt, 'Are you going to marry him?'

After two months, Jon raised the subject of marriage.

'I don't want to get married,' I stated bluntly. 'I'm only twenty-one! I've just witnessed the worst marriage imaginable, and I don't want that. I want to work. I need intellectual stimulation.'

'You could have both,' he promised.

Days later, Jon made his first phone call to his mother in months. After that conversation, he never mentioned the 'm' word again.

I had never met Jon's English mother, but I instantly sensed that she had said something derogative about me. As usual, time proved my gut instinct right.

'What did she say about me?' I demanded.

'Nothing,' Jon lied.

'What did she say?'

'Nothing.'

'You're lying. What did she say?'

'Oh, she's just being over-protective – that's all.'

'*Uh-huh*. So, what overprotective thing did she say?'

'She just doesn't think you're the right one for me.'

'*Uh-huh*. And what do you think of what she said?'

'I think it's cute.'

'*Cute*... and what did you tell her about me?'

'I just said that I'm shacked up with this arty-farty born-again Christian.'

'*Wow*…how endearing.'

No matter how Jon described me, his mother was destined to treat me like convict scum. Actually, I don't possess a single convict gene. One set of my mother's grandparents were aristocrats from Kent, while the other originated from Scotland and were related to Nellie Melba.

Jon's parents, Eric and Frances, met at teacher's college where they studied to be Math/Physics teachers. Within days of meeting me, the couple challenged me to a game of

Scrabble. In retrospect, I would say they were testing my intelligence. Flogging Jon's parents at Scrabble by three hundred points remains one of my fondest memories of England.

Jon's father is a blood relation to the King of Jordan. Although this relationship was understated, it was certainly valued, as reflected in an Easter family tradition called 'Innies and Outies.' Jon's paternal relatives were unable to meet at Christmas time, so every Easter they gathered for a mock Christmas dinner instead. The family would divide between two tables, one table for the 'Innies' and one for the 'Outies.'

'What the hell are *Innies* and *Outies*?' I asked.

Someone explained, 'All of the Gardiner relatives are the *Innies* who sit at one table, while everyone else are *Outties* who sit at the other table.'

'Er, I don't think so,' I said. 'I'll be sitting with Jon.'

'Don't worry,' Frances said, 'You can sit at the Outtie table with me.'

'Why do you tolerate this?' I asked her.

'It's just a bit of fun,' everyone mused – everyone except the Outties.

This was my introduction to Jon's extended paternal family which included his intellectually disabled cousin. All the Innies except Jon made constant fun of her, which probably explained why Jon was her favourite. I wondered whether the Innies considered the girl to be an Innie or an Outtie…

Jon's father and I initially got on well. We shared a passion for musical theatre, and I genuinely preferred joining him for a game of social lawn bowls rather than hanging in pubs with my age peers. Eric struck me as upper class, and it puzzled me why someone like Eric even married Frances, until Jon told me that his father 'forced himself onto' her which resulted in pregnancy.

It was Jon's mother who instigated the trouble. To those familiar with the hit TV sitcom called *Everybody Loves Raymond*, combine the character of Marie with the face of Camilla Parker Bowls, and that's Frances.

'When Jon first told me about you, I told him "Just get rid of her!" But now I know why he stayed with you – it's your integrity.' That was a typical Frances insult: mixed with a compliment so that I got the message but had no evidence of it. Whenever I relayed Frances's exact words to Jon, he'd ask his mother whether she said them, to which she always replied, 'I didn't say that.'

Frances went so far as to bitch about me to Jon's friends whom she barely knew. 'Jon's mother has been saying some things about you,' one told me. 'She said you had "warped thinking."'

Frances regularly flew to Boston and paid a small fortune to her guru Robert Fritz for training in something called 'Structural Consultation.' Frances' definition of 'warped thinking' was defined according to structural consultation lingo. Like a newly converted Amway recruit, Frances bombarded everyone with this lingo, and she constantly asked me to undergo a 'session' with her. When I asked Frances to simply and clearly explain what structural consultation was, she replied, 'Let me see, I'm not sure that I could put it into words that you would understand.'

I understood plenty after reading the original three-hour transcript of the 'structural consultation' session that Jon underwent. The session began with Jon discussing a dilemma in his life –whether he should commit to me in marriage. During this first hour, Jon sounded integrated and he confidently expressed his own opinions. During the second hour Jon became increasingly confused as his beliefs were challenged and systematically stripped away by the 'Consultant.' In the final hour, the Consultant replaced Jon's original beliefs with her own contradictory, existentialist thinking.

'This is brainwashing!' I exclaimed to Jon. 'The transcript demonstrates a clear brainwashing process: discover your beliefs, destroy these, replace with new existentialist beliefs.'

But it was too late. The Jon I knew was gone. The new Jon started parroting his mother's criticisms and existential crap at me: 'But why do you care so much about people, Fiona? What's the point? Why go out of your way to help them?'

'Because it's the right thing to do. If good people stand around and do nothing, that's how things like the bloody holocaust happen! Isn't it obvious?!'

But still Jon persisted with his circle of existentialist meaningless nothingness. In the end, the only way to combat the structural consultation 'robotese' was to resort to moral absolutes like, 'Because the Bible says so.'

'Fiona, I want you to do this one structural consultation session with me,' Frances persisted.

'No.'

'Why not?'

'For the same reason I wouldn't let you hover a wedding ring over my stomach to predict how many children I might have - it transgresses my Christian beliefs.'

'Well, just put aside your beliefs for just one hour to do this session with me.'

'If I could just set aside my beliefs for an hour, they wouldn't be beliefs.'

'Well, if Jon ever comes to me and says, "Mum do you think Fiona and I could make a go of it in marriage?" I would have to say no based on the fact that you won't do this structural consultation session with me.'

Not surprisingly, Jon sat in limbo for six years, unable to marry me, unable to give me up. While he deliberated, we spent thousands on pre-internet phone bills and annual plane trips. Every time I saw my boyfriend, I went to war against his brainwashing. I stuck it out so long because I hoped that the person I had fallen in love with was still there somewhere.

At one point I decided that I should give up my country for Jon's. I obtained a two-year visa and told my family that I would not be back.

I had been living with Jon and his parents for six months, Jon had just become a Christian, we had just become engaged, and Jon had been away overseas for a fortnight, when Frances and I came to loggerheads. I was seated at the kitchen table of their large old farmhouse, completing an undergraduate Psychology assignment, when Frances entered the room. 'What are you doing?' she asked sweetly.

'An assignment.'

'What's it on?'

'Counselling Psychology.'

'What's the topic?'

'Informed consent.'

'What's that?'

'It's when you warn the client of the potential benefits and risks of entering into a therapeutic relationship.'

Frances's gay countenance transformed to a demonic scowl. '*Hmph!* Does it say there that you should warn the client that the therapist has a bias that could harm the client?!'

I assumed that she referred to a comment I had made about child abuse being so prevalent that perhaps the therapist should start with the assumption that every mentally ill client could be a victim, instead of the other way around. If the given statistic that one in two women had been abused, wouldn't it be logical to assume that it's the abused half that are more likely to comprise the mentally ill? It was only a passing thought, one of many that I had shared with Frances, but one which she, for some reason, took great offence at.

Something snapped inside of me. The words *Six years and I've had enough!* vibrated in my head. For six years I had tolerated constant criticism from this manipulative, condescending, undermining bitch! *You can't make Jon happy in marriage*. *You can't change him, Fiona*. *Fiona wouldn't be able to please you sexually, Jon, because she's a Christian and she's frigid*. For six years I had said nothing in response to her provocation. But now, I had finally had enough. I put down my pen.

'Frances?'

'Yes Fiona,' she smiled sweetly.

'Why do you hate me?'

Pause.

Frances: 'I'm not telling you.'

I went for the jugular. 'It happened to you too didn't it?'

'What are you talking about?'

'It was your father, wasn't it?'

As when Dorothy poured water on the wicked witch, Frances began shrieking hysterically: 'HOW DARE YOU!! HOW DARE YOU!! HOW DARE YOU ACCUSE MY BELOVED FATHER WHO IS NOT EVEN ALIVE TO DEFEND HIMSELF!!' She marched out of the house, slamming the 300-year-old oak door so hard, I thought its tiny square glass insert would shatter.

Bingo, I thought.

Fifteen minutes later, Frances returned, happily humming. She had structurally consulted her way back to Nirvana – or so it seemed.

'Frances.'

'Yes Fiona.'

'I haven't finished yet.'

'HOW DARE YOU!! HOW DARE YOU!!...' she continued screeching while exiting the lounge.

I followed her. 'Frances, you can't keep doing this anymore. Like it or not, your son and I are going to be married. You and I have to talk things out, wipe the slate clean, and start again.'

'No, I don't have to talk to you.'

'Well, if you refuse to, I have no option but to pack my things and leave.'

'That's your prerogative.'

I packed my belongings and left. I would have flown home to Australia if I hadn't already purchased a tour of Israel. So, I went to live with a friend named Ginny.

'You have to patch things up,' Ginny tried to convince me. 'For the sake of the family you have to patch things up with her.'

'That's a fallacy! Just because someone's family doesn't mean you tolerate their crap! I'm over it!'

A work colleague once described me well. She asked me for my star sign.

'Scorpio,' I responded.

The girl's eyes widened and her body stiffened. She said breathlessly, '*You*! I know *you*! My sister is one of you. I know all about you! You are extremely loyal. You'd do anything for anyone. But, when someone crosses you, or especially if they do something to someone you care about, you bulldoze their house and plough salt through their fields so that nothing ever grows again!'

I laughed. 'I'm not into star signs, but that's pretty accurate.'

I was just about to bulldoze Frances' house when Ginny convinced me to wait until Jon returned home. I agreed to Ginny's suggestion: when Jon returned, he would arrange a time for the four of us to sit down and talk things out. Ginny and I spent the next week rehearsing what I would say to Frances, until I could express myself without exploding into a tirade.

A week later, Jon and I met with his parents at their house. Jon and I sat together on the main couch in the lounge room. Eric sat on a chair opposite us, stroking his cat. We waited ten minutes while Frances repeatedly breezed by, humming loudly - yet another act of manipulation. Finally, she joined us.

'Right,' she stated in a sing-song tone as she sat down next to Eric, 'What did you want to see me about?'

'Well,' I began, 'during the past six months you have done a number of things which indicate some positive regard toward me. You gave me cheap board here, you gave Jon and I the use of your spare car, and you obviously put a lot of thought into my Christmas gift. These things indicate a certain amount of positive regard. On the other hand, you have done a number of things which indicate that you fell some negative regard toward me. For instance, you have talked negatively about me to other people behind my back: you told Jon that I wouldn't make him happy in marriage; you told Jon's friends that I have warped thinking; and you-...'

Frances looked at Eric and nodded. Eric nodded in agreement. Frances then stood up.

Me: 'What are you doing?'

Frances: 'I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*.' She parroted a structural consultation assertion.

Me: 'But we came here to talk.'

'I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*.'

'But you agreed to talk.'

'I don't have to sit here with my head on a chopping block.'

'No-one's head is on a chopping block. The idea was that you sit there and listen while I say everything I need to say, and then I sit here and listen while you say whatever you need to say. That's a conversation. Once we have both got everything off our chests, I am prepared to wipe the slate clean and never mention any of it again.'

'No, I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*.'

I turned to Jon, 'You better tell them what's at stake here.' I referred to the preliminary discussion that Jon and I had in which I vowed that if his mother refused to cooperate, I was permanently cutting off.

All eyes were on Jon. 'What do you think, Jon,' they asked.

Jon's body sunk in as he stared at his lap. 'I-I…I can't see why you can't just listen to what she's got to say. They're only words. What harm can words do?'

'I'm not prepared to sit here with my head on a chopping block… I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*… I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*…' On and on and on she droned until my brain reached saturation point.

'That's it!' My words silenced the room. 'You have rights, and so do I. I'm now going to exercise my rights. Jon and I are engaged. Relationships are difficult enough without someone actively trying to tear a couple apart. What Jon decides to do regarding his future relationship with you is his prerogative. But as for me, I promise me that you will *never* see me again. And another thing: I don't want you going about behind my back mouthing off about me to my children the way you have mouthed off to Jon's friends. Therefore, you will *never* set eyes upon your grandchildren!'

Eric sprung to life, bounding forward in his chair. '*YOU!*' he pointed and spat, 'How *dare* you! How *dare* you try and split up our family. We're a *very close* family.'

I centred. 'Oh, *close,* are you? What about the Indian girl boarding with you who molested Andrew when he was three? Andrew had to starve himself and punch his fist through the wall at age fifteen to get your attention! And what about the ballet dancer you had boarding with you who molested Jon when he was five? And what about the time your wife moved out and had an affair? You didn't know about that, did you Eric? But you're such a *close* family!'

'That's none of your business!'

'Of *course,* it's none of my business - just like my sexual relationship with Jon was none of your *wife's* business!'

'And just what are you going to tell our grandchildren about us!'

I smiled curtly. 'The truth: not a word more; not a word less.'

'And just what kind of job are *you* going to do raising *our* grandchildren?!'

'I'll raise them as a good Christian would.'

'*Well!*' he hissed venomously, 'There are *Christians* with a big 'C' and *Christians* with a little 'c'!

I guess I was a little-c Christian.

I stood up.

'W-Where are you going?' the now panicked couple chimed.

'I have a *right* to withdraw from this conversation at any time I *choose*.'

I exited the room.

'Wait!' they exclaimed. 'Come back! We want to talk!'

I swung around, reappeared in the loungeroom, pointed my finger at Frances and announced: 'Frances, I don't *ever* want to set my eyes upon you again - until the day you come *dragging* on your hands and knees, *begging* for my forgiveness.' I marched off.

Outside, the rain fell as I fumbled with the car key.

'Give me that!' It was Jon. This was it! Our relationship was finally over. He had finally decided to ditch me for his parents. He was here to confiscate my only means of transport out of their secluded property - the spare car. I would have to walk 20+ miles in the rain.

'Why?' I braced myself.

'Because I'm driving.'

Frances has never set eyes upon my children.

Jon immigrated to Australia in 1998. Shortly after his arrival, in the midst of wedding preparations, Jon confessed that he had cheating on me during the six years I waited for him to commit. Frances and most of Jon's friends had known all along. This information emerged in the context of a visitor from North Devon. A cult whore named Sharon Turner spent

Christmas with us and repaid my hospitality by, I deduced, fucking my fiancé. Upon her departure, Sharon handed me an envelope containing cash plus a note:

'For everything I used, abused and owe.'

I pulled out my paper and crayons, and asked Jon to draw hypnosis. Jon drew a swirl. Next I told him to draw a door over the swirl. Then I asked him to open the door and draw what was behind it. Jon drew his mother Frances.

I managed to extract a key trigger word: 'STANGOR.' I was seated next to Jon at our dining table when he drew this. My mother and 16-year-old brother Andrew were seated on the lounge nearby. As soon as the word was uttered, Jon slowly glanced sideways at me. His eyes were black and menacing.

Let it happen, a silent voice requested. So, I relaxed and willingly succumbed to what I felt, what I knew was about to occur. Suddenly, an invisible force threw me about two metres across the room and slammed my body into the wall. Then it picked me off the floor and slammed my limp form down like a rag doll – again, and again…

I looked over at Jon who shot me an evil smirk. I was unhurt. I had not even felt the physical impact of the assault. I picked myself up off the floor and returned to my seat next to Jon. 'Now,' I calmly asserted, 'Where were we?'

I used my art therapy skills to unveil Jon's intimate knowledge of elite European Luciferian practices. The most memorable demonstration of this was when Jon wrote out pages of spells in ancient Italian and drew his experience of attending a Satanic Olympics in Greece. The UK Rothschilds were directly involved.

During the course of the disclosures I discovered that Jon had been unfaithful during the entire six years I thought we were committed. Consequently, I shredded the wedding dress I was making, smashed up my engagement ring with hammer, and told Jon to go to hell. But by then Jon was genuinely broken and the person I had met six years earlier was back. So, I gave Jon an ultimatum: if he wanted me to stay, he must permanently cut of all ties with England, including his family. He agreed. We donned casual attire and wed alone in the Bundaberg courthouse one Wednesday morning.

I was pregnant with our second child when Jon's paternal aunt and her husband turned up on our doorstep one Sunday evening. The couple had obtained our address through their daughter who accessed our personal records while working for the Australian Taxation Office. The purpose of their visit was to accuse Jon: 'You've failed to fulfil your obligation to The Family.'

The Gardiners became increasingly desperate to contact Jon. On 10 July 2007, Eric sent us a bizarre letter that I never let Jon read:

Dear Jon,

Please bare with me.

I have tried and tried to courteously to you many years back with my father, and I've re-phrased comments as carefully as I can to you as Christianity.

However I've always been slightly uncertain to you, so I went back and re-phrased in a different way, but kept stepping back.

You were notified eventually that my father had eventually passed away 98 years ago, when you were expecting him to give information only to him back in 1998, if necessary to any of us.

I am not trying to be pedantic. Quite the reverse. So would you please bare with me and deal with my comments.

So, step by step I will re-write the items I have shuffled around on my behalf. They are all slightly different, so bare with each one separately, because I had tried to re-phrase one slightly, and none of them are properly correct.

Thanks, I hope sense

Eric.

Dear Jon

I trust that you will bare with me for a while. It was many years ago very late at night that you required me apparently as a non-Christian, not to be allowed to speak to you. I was still wake enough however to mention "Honour thy father and thy Mother," but that was clearly ignored for whatever reason.

I was simply told that should you need to notify me, you would tell it to my father. I sent information to you that he was elderly and could easily be disabled on his knowledge.

However as you requested me not to be non-Christian, I have politely stepped away on your behalf for these many years.

Now, however out of courtesy, I feel it essential to notify you that my father, your grandfather has passed away. I have found it very difficult how to do to you such courtesy on his behalf, and it has consequently taken a long time to finally decide to you – not to disrupt you, but for me to notify you "not wanting me"

Now, apparently, you are clearly involved in Christianity. I never had no objection in that, in that I have seen many interpretations of Christianity and other God systems, and to be academic, I simply don't know one God or the other.

You know that I am a Mathematician, and several years ago having read another book on it I found a superb statement, in effect that Mathematicians would rather admit that unless they know anything is perfect they would confirm that it might not be completely accurate, no matter how close.

So, if you care to think about it, I am logical, not pedantic, and later on in this information perhaps you can think about it more about me.

However, let us go back to the Christianity of your family (apparently apart from me)

Your mother and her parents we always involved at the Church at Arreton on the Isle of Wight. My father born in 1907 and was acknowledged at Farnham Congregational Sunday School in 1908 at February 25th in Farnham Surrey. As a German prisoner of war, his knowledge of Hitler's devastation, Killing Jews completedly [sic] distracted any thoughts of ever going to Church again (although later he did go to church for all his Children's marriages and his grandchildren's baptism including you and Michael).

Although I know he was never at the (royal Marines) St Andrew's Church in Scoutsea, but was always outside of the church as the Sergeant when the others came out to be re-assembled marching up and down (and at that time, I was at that Church as a chorister!! (for many, many years))

Earlier still, I was at the Methodist Church at Adair Rd, at about 4 or 5 years old, and the couples who were teaching the Children as Christianity decided to be married and asked me and another boy Andrew Hawkins, to be our equivalent, instead of give brides, at their church.

It was then slightly later that I moved to the Royal marines Church because I enjoyed singing as a Choirboy (it apparently didn't exist that way at the Methodist Church), but to youngsters Christianity was probably the same, just a variation the same way that adults and teachers differ from one to another. It allows sensible people to think!

Now bare with me about oddities, and about how often I keep quiet. With my 3 sisters all older than I am, clearly whenever we were together, Pippa is nearly 10 years ahead of me, and consequently she was obviously the one in charge of looking after younger children if Mum and Dad wer [sic] occasionally out.

So consequently I didn't ignore them, but thought differently, but accepted their suggestions, even though I had different ideas, and as their sensibility was fairly similar to mine, even if not exactly the same.

I was lucky as a youngster back in the World War, because originally my sisters went to Milton School, and they stayed at the same place after we had been Bombed away to a different Street at a different School.

So, I just went to their school (although in their days boys and Girls were in different Sections).

I as even more lucky at about 7 or 8 years in that at Milton some professionals from elsewhere wanted to have examinations to cheque [sic] for I.Q. youngsters as it hadn't been re-chequed [sic] for along time before the World War II.

About 6 or 8 intelligent boys from the School (including me) were asked to be tested on their behalf, to see how the previous I.Q. tests got re-organised.

Eventually we were told how well we were done – then the Professional asked if he could speak to me on my own. Most youngsters of high quality have Intelligence Quotient about 120, but the Profession then told me I was 146, and then just socially said to always "Keep ticking over, but not to embarrass your Colleagues"

As it happens, I have always kept quiet fairly out of my sisters also.

Now back to my 7 or 8 year old intelligence. At Milton I was well supported by excellent School teachers and many of my colleagues, all of us wanted to be as good as each other, I was usually No 1. (but not always!!) which made every one of us trying to be best for each other.

Eventually we did age 11 examinations. In those days Grammar Schools were important is able to get up to decent Universities. My 3 sisters were all capable into their Grammars, so I was automatically expected to the boys Grammar Schools matching them, which obviously I did.

The "Southern Grammar School" in Portsmouth blended all the boys together In the first year, and then picked up their best 30 geniuses or so and joined them in the second year differently form all the others.

I was in the second year, and we were told we were expected to be top quality skill, and would get up to 'A' Levels. So we would automatically get our 'O' levels up to 4 years (Not 5) so we can get up better to our 'A' levels sooner. And that's what we did.

But, luck again for me, a special expert at Hampshire wanted to have high equalities, all over the space to check some differentiation, so at some theatre he was inspected on Stage and all over the Hampshire Grammar Schools there were well over 400 pupils (so only about 10 to 15 each of best of us were taken)

Right at the beginning everyone was given a blank peace of paper, and he told us not to right down any number from 0 to 9, not now. At some item whilst giving information quite a long time, about some curiosity ago, he then said "Write it down." Everyone did, he then carried on with his other curious details. Then he gave information about the way in which people thought.

"How many of you wrote No 9." – I'll tell you about 100 of you. "Put your hand up", and about that number could be seen. Now "No 2" – "your [sic] is almost identical" – and it was.

Now No 1 was next at about 50, and so on smaller numbers 3, 4, etc etc. but clear enough to be seen approximately at his statements.

Eventually he then said, it is unusual for anyone writing No 8. Anyone??

I was the only one with No 8. Evidently this was the items which he had looked for checking different information. His statement simply said that the phrase he had created simply notifies that my way of thinking often looks differently from most other people, but also recognises their ideas, but many others don't recognise his alternative version.

So there you are, if you think about it, I often did versions of cricket, not the same as some other pedantics.

But you can also see that I might think differently from Christianity, but what phrase might that suggest?

Finally Jon once again.

I hope you can appreciate your family, that we wish to adore you and your family also.

One other thought, my Cousin Toni Gardiner was Christianity. She became married to King Hussein of Jordan, and out of courtesy she assisted unto his different Christianity. Her father still exists, but the King (now his son) has the courtesy for him in due course to be created in Christianity on his behalf. One of my family also!!

Best Wishes to Jon, your wife and your daughters.
Your Father
Eric

Eric's strange letter was purposely constructed to contain triggers, double meanings, and to deliver Jon a hidden message. It mentioned Eric's assessment, recruitment and initiation into the ancient male-only mystery cult of Mithraism. Initiation into the grades did not depend on age but on potential for knowledge acquisition, hence Eric's talk of IQ testing. Roman Mithraism had seven main grades and titles plus two mystery titles. At the 2nd grade, a male was dressed in a bridal veil and married to the pagan god Mithra:

1. Raven (Corax)	4. (Lion (Leo)	7. Father (Pater)
2. Bride (Nymphus)	5. Persona (Perses)	- Vulture
3. Soldier (Miles)	6. Courier of the Sun (Heliodromus)	- Cryfius

In 2009, Frances herself made the trip to Australia in search of us. Sensing her impending visit, I packed my family up and took them to live on a friend's remote property. Because our residence was under the owner's name, we were untraceable.

Suddenly, a strange man named Ian Brooks began searching for us, turning up at my father's residence and one of Jon's former workplaces. In a letter, Frances recommended Ian to Jon as 'one of the good ones' and claimed she met him in a fish and chip takeaway shop. I phoned this Ian and told him to stop harassing us or else we would be contacting the police. In response, this complete stranger whom Frances just happened to run into in a takeaway store started criticising me for 'breaking up The Family.'

Frances turned up at Jon's former cricket club where he had not played for a decade. Then she had one of Jon's acquaintances deliver us a letter in which she threatened to pursue and harass Jon unless she was contacted on a given mobile number. So, I phoned the evil bitch.

'Okay Frances, I received your threat, so here I am.'

'It wasn't threatening.'

I read the relevant section of her letter. 'That's a threat.'

'Can come and I see you?'

'No.'

'Why?'

'You were horrible to me. You treated me like convict scum.'

'I always had the utmost admiration and respect for you.'

'No, you didn't. You constantly criticised me to Jon and his friends. You tried to split Jon and me up when we were perfect for each other. He wanted to marry me the moment he met me – until you interfered. Marriage is tough enough without someone actively tearing the couple apart.'

'If I could go back into the past and change things I would. I was going through a very difficult time back then. I was involved in a cult and that was a very evil influence.'

'Don't go blaming structural consultation. Structural consultation didn't make you criticise me to Jon and his friends. You were an adult and responsible for your own decisions.'

'I'm a Christian now.'

'No, you're not. Jon and I are *real* Christians.'

'Fiona, you have my full apology. I am very sorry for what happened.'

'Sorry for *what*, Frances?'

'For everything that happened…'

'For trying to split me and Jon up.'

Sigh! 'For trying to split you and Jon up.'

'For criticising me to Jon's friends.'

'For criticising you to Jon's friends-… blah, blah, blah...'

'See, I don't think you're sorry for what you did. I think you feel sorry about the consequences of your actions. *You* did this, Frances. This is *your* fault. You stuffed up. We don't want anything from you. We don't want your money, and we don't want any position that your coven has to offer.'

'We're not Satanists.'

'The Gardiners are a major satanic bloodline. That's why they had that *Innies* and *Outties* table arrangement at Easter.'

'Oh, Fiona you know that never happened.'

I laughed. 'So now you're going to deny something that Jon witnessed many times! Goodbye Frances.'

Frances left Australia empty-handed. However, she continued to correspond with my estranged father, which prompted intervention from my brother Andrew who, second to me, has the clearest memories of his Illuminati training.'

'Oh, I'm so glad that you called!' Frances whined to Andrew, 'We're a family in mourning.'

'You're complaining to the wrong person,' Andrew dismissed her crocodile tears. 'I don't give a crap. I'm just here to fulfil my duty to my family, just as I was *trained* to do. My father told me everything and he is no longer of any use to you. So, from now on, I will be your point of contact. Feel free to contact me any time of the day or night.'

'Oh, Jon's *changed*. I don't recognise him anymore.'

'Yes, that's right. Jon *has* changed. I don't even recognise him. He's nothing like the Jon I knew fifteen years ago. That's what happens when you become a Christian. Jon and his family are covered by the blood of the Lamb. As long as they stay within God's will, your coven can't touch them.'

'But we're not Satanists. We're just a humble family of gardeners.'

'Yeah, I know. The famous Gardiner Illuminati family.'

'No, we're *gardeners*.'

'Yes, I know – the famous Gardiner satanic bloodline.'

'No, *gardener*. G-a-r-d-e-n-e-r!'

'It doesn't matter how you spell it, whether you add or drop a letter, it's still the same bloodline.'

Silence.

Frances's demeanour switched and she launched a scathing attack on me.

'Look, Frances,' Andrew mused, 'I understand your dilemma. You *have* to pursue Jon. You have no choice. You have to keep trying until your dying day. I understand your frustration. But it's not – going – to – happen. Over my dead body will you go anywhere near my nieces. I won't let it happen. I'm just fulfilling my duty to my *family*, Frances, just as I was *trained* to.'

* * *

Ritual Abuse in Australia

The ritual is kind of appealing, but you can get ritual in many other places as well. And I think a lot of that ritual has been knocked out of the Catholic Church. It's all become rather ordinary, I think.

- John Bell

My body trembled. 'If you don't do the EMDR now – I'm dead!'

My therapist thought for a moment. 'Let me speak with my partner. We might be able to use his room.'

Ten minutes later, I was seated on the carpeted floor of an office, leaning against a leather couch. This felt safer. No one could hear me scream in this dimly lit room.

'You ready?' she asked.

I nodded.

Her left hand held mine as she gracefully waved her fingers back and forth across my eyes. . . 'Now lie down and relax.'

I lowered my dopey form onto the mattress, and lay there face up with my eyes closed, waiting for the horror to come. . . A faint image appeared. People standing over me, chanting. Their robed forms silhouetted against the daylight behind them as I am lowered into the grave. The walls are smooth. My body stiffens as it touches the squishy cold corpse. The waft of rotting flesh strikes my nose. They shut the lid. Blackness.

I scream: 'JESUS GET ME OUT OF HERE!!' I arch my back, flay my arms, and scream. I scream, and scream, and scream until my lungs burn. No air. I can't breathe. I stop breathing. My heart stops. Then, light…

'Fiona, there's an amazing light on you!' my therapist wonders at the beam of light that penetrates the room and floods my limp form.

* * *

AUSTRALIAN NAZI HAVEN

It is difficult to determine what had the most detrimental impact on my father's mental health: witnessing dogs tear people apart in a German camp, being forced by his psychopathic stepfather to kneel for hours on dried peas. . . or being molested by Catholic priests during catechism classes at Engadine BoysTown.

It took my father 40 years to locate his original birth certificate. The document records he was born in Bonn, Germany. Mitek Frank Rylko was raised by Helena Milewska, a Lithuanian woman who collaborated with the Gestapo during the war. 'Helen' escaped the Russians by hiding in a German refugee camp, and her father served two years hard labour in a Siberian work camp for refusing to disclose her whereabouts.

My step-grandfather, Peter Holowczak, was hiding in the same camp as Helen, seeking immigration to Canada. His plans were thwarted after Helen convinced the authorities that Peter was her husband and the father of the young boy in her care. That child was my father.

So, Helen and Peter Holowczak joined the great wave of Eastern European war criminals offered asylum in Australia through the IRO (*International Refugee Organisation*). Theirs is a familiar story, documented in Mark Aaron's book *War Criminals Welcome: Australia, a Sanctuary for War Criminals Since 1945.* Mark Aaron explained in interview:

> *Most of the war criminals who settled in Australia were not Germans or Austrians. They were people from Central and Eastern Europe, from the Ukraine, the Baltic States, the central European countries of Czechoslovakia, Croatia and Serbia… These people had done deals with western intelligence organisations, having given them intelligence were then secreted or allowed to go to third countries like Australia…*[428]

Helen Holowczak & my father in a refugee camp

The Simon Wiesenthal Centre in Jerusalem has a classification system whereby they rate (from A to F) how cooperative a country is with the process of locating, investigating and trying Nazi war criminals. Australia is ranked F - the least cooperative. In 1999, the Simon Wiesenthal Centre declared Australia a haven for 'holocaust perpetrators and mass murderers' and demanded an investigation into Operation Matchbox, following the declassification of Australian government papers.[429]

My father was issued an Australian birth certificate in September 1962. This documents that Peter and Helen Holowczak married in Bathurst on 3 October 1949. The Holowczaks spent their initial days in a refugee camp near Bathurst, a country town situated north-west of Sydney. *Bathurst Migrant Camp* opened in May 1948 and closed in April 1952 and held up to 10,000 transient migrants at a time. A Polish Club was founded at the camp, indicating most interns were Polish. A similar camp was established at Parkes in NSW.

My father's Australian issued birth certificate documents that by September 1962, the Holowczaks resided at 14 McAlister Avenue in Engadine, a small suburb within the Sutherland Shire, south of Sydney. Many refugees settled in an area which ran from 'The Shire' to Wollongong. This group carried Slavic, Germanic, or Anglicised versions of their former surnames. They worked, attended orgies, raped children, and worshipped their pagan gods together just like they did in Nazi occupied Europe.

---

[428] ABC TV, Lateline, 21 May 2001.

[429] Ian Traynor, UK arranged transfer of Nazi scientists to Australia, *The Guardian*, 17 Aug 1999.

I grew up listening to 'Pop' entertaining me with stories about the 'olden days' in Poland, when he worked in 'the camp.'

'What did you do in the camp?' I asked excitedly.

'I trained the dogs.'

'What else did you do?'

'I killed the Jews.'

I was six. *Who are the Jews?* I puzzled, *and what did they do wrong?*

The location of 'the camp' was proudly displayed at the entrance to their Engadine house. A plaque decorated with the name 'LUBLIN' in a quaint folk-art style was fixed to their front wall.

Many inconsistencies and unexplained mysteries remain concerning my father's family history. Peter Holowczak despised Jews, yet some of my perpetrators he associated with claimed to be Jewish. So, either those perpetrators were lying to cover up their crimes, or a certain type of Jewish heritage was considered acceptable. I am not convinced the low IQ Lithuanian woman who raised him, who looked and behaved nothing like my high IQ family, is his mother, but suspect she stole my father as a prop to escape Europe. A few things make me suspect my paternal line contains some kind of hidden Jewish ancestry:

- My father used to tell people his mother was Jewish.
- John Gittinger told me my paternal line was 'Levite' which somehow qualified me for priestess Grande Dame candidacy.
- My real Polish grandfather once got drunk and told my cousin that his father, was Jewish. I doubt he would joke about being Jewish after living through the Holocaust and knowing the Nazis kidnapped his brother-in-law one night and murdered him in Auschwitz.
- My paternal great-grandfather taught the violin, a Jewish instrument.
- The Russian Jewish parents of my sister-in-law observed, my brothers were the spitting image of Eastern European Jews. Ashkenazi Jews were expelled from the Mediterranean and settled in Poland in the 12th century. Research indicates the Ashkenazi maternal line is mainly European, while the male line is predominantly middle eastern.

BOYSTOWN

I am a second-generation victim of ritual abuse at Engadine BoysTown, which was located next to St John Bosco church, and St John Bosco College. All three were an easy walk from McAlister Avenue. The Salesians of Don Bosco, an order of Catholic priests, established BoysTown in 1939 to house and educate troubled and orphaned boys. While claiming to train the boys in a range of trades, the only instructor was a butcher.

In 2002, Father Paul Gerard Barrett, priest and counsellor, was convicted of 100 accounts of pedophilia against six boys while vice-deputy principal at St John Bosco College in Engadine. The court heard Barrett photographed male and female students having sex. One of Barrett's victims, a 13-year-old male student, was lured by a female teacher. Barrett and the female teacher plastered the boy with alcohol before raping him. Police never charged the female teacher.

In 2008, Father Paul Raymond Evans was found guilty of 18 sex offences against seven boys committed while he worked at BoysTown in the 1970s and 1980s. Paul Evans was ordained as a Salesian Order priest in Regina Coeli Memorial Church in the nearby suburb of Beverly Hills where his relative, William Evans, was the first Parish Priest. Regina Coeli was built with donations from the US Army.

In 2012, police informed me a taskforce had been assigned to covertly investigate an Engadine BoysTown pedophile ring. Had this investigation been publicised, many more victims would have come forward, because that is the typical response to public exposure. Despite the secrecy, victims reported 247 Salesian priests to the federal Royal Commission, many of whom operated at St John Bosco College and Engadine BoysTown.

Engadine is wedged between a massive national park and 49,000 acres of bushland belonging to Holsworthy Barracks, an army base equipped with a military airport. Lucas Heights sits adjacent to Holsworthy and is the site of a 20-story underground CIA research facility and nuclear reactor. It is part of ANSTO (*Australian Nuclear Science and Technology Organisation*) which incorporated the CSIRO.

Peter Holowczak was friends with a fellow Slavic refugee also named Peter. I knew him as the 'dog breeder.' He lived on acreage near ANSTO in Lucas Heights. His house, a small asbestos box, was well hidden from the main road. The entrance to his sandy driveway off Old Illawarra Road was flanked by multiple signs nailed to trees and posts, warning trespassers to keep out and beware of his dogs. The property contained multiple sheds including a sawmill and dog kennels. A petite, fit dark-haired man, he trained Doberman and Rottweiler dogs, and sold dogs to the NSW police. Peter Holowczak purchased his Doberman dogs from this man. My family had two Doberman dogs from this breeder, so I know the quality of his dogs.

Helen was friends with another Lithuanian 'refugee' whose house was a short downhill walk away, in Fairview Avenue. Helen regularly attended Leonas Petrauskas' Engadine Medical Centre which was a short uphill walk.

Helen bore two sons in Australia and named them after their fathers. John, the only ginger-haired member of the family, was the bastard son of Helen's supervisor at the Wool Mill in Marrickville which was owned and run by the Scottish Vicars family. Helen's youngest son, David Ronald, was destined to be named 'Romance' until her Polish friend Raya Spakz convinced Helen that Australians do not name children or houses after literal events the way Polish people do. Peter thought David was his son and spoilt him until he left home at age 30 years. He knew John was not his and treated him indifferently. But he so resented and despised my father, he raped, beat, and tormented Dad until the kid left home at 13. Peter typically taunted my father while dishing up cabbage soup for dinner: 'Meat for you, David... meat for you, John…' Then he turned to my father and hissed in Polish, 'And none for *you* - you son of a *pig*!'

My real grandfather was not a pig. I travelled to Jelena Gora in Poland in 1990 to meet him and to my relief discovered Mitek Rylko to be everything the Holowczaks were not. My real 'Jadek' was smart, witty, ethical, classy, socially respected, and handsome. During the war he sided with the Polish resistance, instead of raping and murdering Jews in a death camp as Holowczak did.

I was 15 years old when my family realised Peter Holowczak and his vile surname were alien to us. The bombshell was dropped during lunch, following the birth of my baby brother. Peter could not stomach the honour of having my new brother named after him.

'Frank,' Peter began, 'I don't like the way you treat Fiona.'

‘But you treated me like that,’ Dad huffed.

‘Yes, but you are Fiona’s father. I am not your real father.’

My father was nothing like Peter Holowczak and did not treat me the way the Holowczaks treated him. Unlike the Holowczaks, my father never sexually or ritually abused us. Dad suffers complex PTSD and DID due to his horrendous childhood. Consequently, he became violent after he started self-medicating with alcohol. On rare occasions Dad dissociated and supported my allegations against the Holowczaks and their pedophile network. He once blurted out to my mother in front of someone, ‘Everything Fiona says about Satanism and Sydney is true, but we just don’t tell her for her own good!

Peter Holowczak was ritually murdered at Easter 1991. When Police delivered my father the solemn news, he began cheering and dancing around his front yard, singing loudly to the *Wizard of Oz* tune:

Ding-dong! The bastard’s dead!
The bastard’s dead!
The bastard’s dead!
Ding-dong! The fucking bastard’s D-E-E-E-E-A-D!

Peter’s death certificate says he committed suicide by hanging. Yet Helen told my mother a different story: A group of men arrived at her home that morning and told her to go shopping. Upon returning home she found Peter hanging by a noose in their chicken pen.

‘YOU KILLED HIM!’ Helen screamed at me in her lounge room following Peter’s death. Uncle John, Aunty Anita, my mother, and my future husband were present. I was there to confront Helen about ‘Pop’s’ sexual abuse of me throughout my childhood.

‘But Mum,’ Uncle John tried to explain, ‘Fiona wasn’t even here when dad died!’

‘YOU KILLED HIM!’ she insisted.

What Nanna meant was, Peter was killed *because* of me. The cult killed Peter because he drove me away from Sydney. The cult had regular access to me from age 18 months until my parents moved 1000 kilometers north of Sydney when I was 12 years old after which I visited Sydney at least once per year until my 16th birthday. I briefly lived with the Holowczaks during my first year of college but moved out after Peter began bullying me. I transferred to an interstate college and never looked back.

‘Plain Vanilla’

Peter Holowczak’s hanging triggered my implicit memories of incest. My ordeal began with two weeks of unprecedented vertigo and insomnia followed by dissociation during which I swallowed a bottle of sleeping pills. I had never been suicidal before and had no intention of harming myself. The incident threw me into the mental health system where my memories surfaced spontaneously without the use of hypnosis.

From my earliest memory, Helen Holowczak made me take baths with Peter and sleep in his room so he could rape me. Peter bribed me into silence by offering me *Quick-Eze* digestive lollies. He would also let me play with things from Nanna’s display cabinet, including a little tea-set which was made up of burgundy apples with faces on them and a miniature plastic tree with autumn-coloured leaves.

I was three when Peter locked me in an old refrigerator in his detached garage, the type that could only be opened from the outside. He threw cockroaches and other bugs on me, closed the door, and laughed as I screamed in terror.

On many occasions, Peter threatened to crush my little fingers in a vintage washing machine mangle.

Peter Holowczak owned a Doberman dog that he commanded in German. The dog was bred by the man who lived on Old Illawarra Road and wore a thick black leather collar around its neck with the name 'SATAN' stamped on it in capital letters. Peter made me get on all fours while the dog raped me from behind. He masturbated while he watched this. On one occasion, in Peter's bedroom, Peter sodomised my younger brother while the dog raped me. Pop's favourite game was hunt and rape. He would tell me to run and hide, then set 'Satan' the Doberman onto me. On one occasion I hid in between garage shelving, the dog found and barked crazily at me. I had to hide well or else the dog would rape me, just like the Nazis trained their dogs to rape Jewish women. Peter said he learnt to train dogs while working in the Nazi camps.

When I threatened to tell my parents what Pop was doing to me, he filled their concrete laundry tub with water, stood me on a wooden crate before the basin, grabbed my head by the hair and shoved it underwater. He held my head under until I almost drowned, then ripped it up again and hissed, 'This is what will happen to you if you tell -…' before plunging my head back under.

I was seven when Peter shoved my head into their outside unplumbed toilet. I vomited at the stench of raw sewerage while he sodomised me.

I was eight when he inserted a dove's head inside my vagina and held it there while it writhed and died.

I was eight when Peter put me into a box that lay in a hole in ground beneath his house, the same location he pretended to bury the neighbour's son three years earlier. He placed me in the box and told me I was going to die there, and then covered it up and left me there for hours.

I was 11 when Peter took me up his back yard, behind the sheds that housed his bees, chickens, and pigeons. He showed me a huge pile of dead bees at the back. He pointed to something in the pile and told me to take a closer look. I leaned over the pile of dead bees when - he pushed me into it. Dead bees went all over me and through my clothes. I screamed hysterically while Peter laughed. Suddenly the back neighbour yelled over the fence at Peter, 'What are you doing to her?!' Peter lied to the neighbour and said that I fell into the pile of bees.

I vividly recall the day the incest ended. I had a loud fight with Peter, yelled at him that Leonas Petrauskas ruled he was never to touch me again. Jan, the mother of my best friend Fiona LeCornu-Levett, interrupted and witnessed the argument when she arrived at the Engadine house to collect me. On our way to her Macquarie Fields home she repeatedly asked me, 'What was that about?' but I evaded the subject.

In 2018, the NSW state government determined on the balance of probabilities that Peter Holowczak did violently rape and physically assault me throughout my childhood. Victim's Services awarded me the maximum compensation amount - $10,000.

Luciferian Ritual Abuse

My memories of ritual abuse began with a vivid visual flashback of Peter Holowczak and his neighbour ritually murdering a three-year-old blonde boy on a table in the front room of 12 McAlister Avenue. The neighbour's obese wife went insane and 'committed suicide' following years of miscarriages. Peter placed the child's body in a coffin made of rough pine panels in a shallow mock grave beneath the west side of the Holowczak's house. I did not realise at age five that they would later move the body.

I attended rituals in the national park bushland surrounding the Sutherland Shire, in hidden basements, Freemason lodges (including Kidman's lodge at 317 Pacific Highway, North Sydney) and multiple Roman Catholic churches including Engadine BoysTown, St John Bosco church, Regina Coeli Memorial Church in Beverly Hills, and a wooden Catholic church that used to exist east of Engadine train station. Jesuit-trained Leonas Petrauskas presided over these rituals in which babies, children and adults were murdered in honor of their gods including Moloch/Molech, Baal, Dagon, Imhotep, Horus, Anubis, Thoth and Isis. My abusers seemed to have a god for every occasion, but Lucifer was lord of them all.

MOTTO = "HE WHO SWORDS & CONQUERS FOR BAAL"
CREED
F
LUCIT-ER
NIMRODs
HORUS
BAAL
chalice
"He"
Eye of Horus
"Swords"
B
"Baal"
plate

Luciferian Creed: 'He Who Swords and Conquers for Baal'

I was six when the cult taught me what would happen if I disclosed their identities and activities to anyone. I was taken into the depths of the bushland. There I was forced to watch the cult chain each of a 'traitor's' four limbs to a different vehicle. The four vehicles drove off in different directions as the man screamed then exploded into pieces.

On my sixth birthday, I was dressed in a new red, long dress and my hair was gathered in a part ponytail tied with a red ribbon. My uncle drove Nana to collect me from my home at the end of Virginia Street, Padstow, and took me to national park land situated on the coast, between the Sutherland Shire and Kiama. I recall subtropical looking trees and foliage, and a picnic table laden with sweets and coloured cordial. A group of blonde children were gathered around the table. The cordial was laced with drugs. It was daylight when I drank the cordial. It was dark when I awoke naked, strapped to the picnic table. Men and women dressed in black robes took turns at creeping up to me and whispering chants and the names of demonic entities into my ear.

Later that night, a group of men from the local hunting clubs arrived in pick-up trucks, dressed in caps and gingham shirts, carrying hunting and surveillance gear. The children and I were stripped naked. I was taken aside and instructed to take the children and hide them. Their lives were my responsibility, and if I failed - they would be killed. They painted something on my back before I briefed the children best I could. I had just turned six, but my mental age was far older. I desperately told the children they were to run for their lives, stay as quiet as possible, and find somewhere far away to hide.

A gun was fired to mark the start of the hunt. I shouted at the kids to run. I drove them from behind like a cattle dog and pushed them up over the first hill. We were halfway up the second hill when I heard gunfire. Kids began dropping around me. When I realised all hope was gone – I took off. I dissociated from the pain and ran for hours and miles over hill and dale, through the wild fauna. A search party did not find me until the following afternoon.

During the same visit, Nana dressed me in a what I called my 'Spanish dress.' Nanna made it, along with many of my frilly Candy Girl outfits. The dress was made of a fine white tulle with tiny red polka dots. The skirt layers were edged with thin red ribbon. Nanna took me to St John Bosco Church. On our way out at the end of the service, Nanna showed me off to the priest who took my face in his hand, commented on my being a pretty one, and told Nanna he'd like to see me later.

We returned to the church after Nanna fed Pop his typical Polish lunch of rye bread, pickles and slices of ox tongue sausage. Nanna walked me down the church aisle and to a door to the back right of the altar which led into the vestry. Nanna left me alone with the chubby old man. 'Do you want some Candy?' he asked me in his accent which was American or Irish; I couldn't tell the difference at age six. He brought me a sweet jar full of red and white bonbons. Of course, I did. The priest undressed as I sucked on the sweet. He removed his green sash and white robe to reveal a white singlet and y-front grandpa underwear. Then he lifted me into a wooden bench or table sat beneath a window, pulled down my knickers, and performed oral sex on me. Then he raped me.

This was the same priest I met in the cavern system beneath BoysTown. We reached the area via a secret door in one of the original BoysTown buildings. It might have been a kitchen or the butcher training workshop. A door at the back of some kind of larder or storeroom led to a set of stone or concrete steps. In the main ritual area, the priest sat in a row of Luciferian priests who presided over the ritual involving a young blonde boy being beaten to a pulp, and a lit cauldron.

I suspect the cavern system beneath Engadine BoysTown connects to the Holsworthy one, but can't clearly recall. The massive cavern system beneath Holsworthy links to ANSTO in Lucas Heights. I surmise this is a man-made extension of a natural system, constructed to covertly transport and store artillery during war.

This cavern system houses multiple ritual sites and altars. At the Holsworthy / ANSTO end it contains Dagon altar and pool rooms. At the BoysTown end sits a four-ways intersection, plus a large bronze statue of Baal. The bull sits upright and holds a bowl filled with oil. A furnace beneath the bull heats the oil. At age 14, I was subjected to an abortion performed by Leonas Petrauskas with the assistance of his daughter Krista whom he trained as a lay nurse. They placed the young foetus in the boiling oil.

BAAL
Nurse
Dr Mark

In the summer of 1975, I witnessed a 12-year-old girl named Michelle gang raped by local BoysTown priests and hanged to death on a gum tree on the rocky bank of the Weir, a dammed section of Woronora River, next to Engadine. Michelle was slim and wore her long dark hair in a side ponytail. She was dressed in a red t-shirt and white shorts. Michelle was kidnapped as she walked along a major road, by a white car containing men whom she knew and trusted. I was seated in the back. I saw them offer her a laced sweet from a white paper bag. I was dragged off into the bushes and raped by a 30-year-old priest named Stephen. As this was an unsanctioned assault, the perpetrator would pay for this with his life. I later recognised Michelle's naked body hanging from a meat hook in a cold room on the grounds of Holsworthy Barracks.

At age eight I suffocated during a rebirth ceremony at the abandoned Garrawarra Cemetery at Waterfall, south of Engadine. The cult lowered me onto a rotting corpse in an old grave and closed the lid. They chanted from the *Book of the Dead* as I screamed. I depleted the oxygen and passed out. I awoke in Sutherland Hospital on a metal table in a small internal room clad from floor to ceiling in blue tiles. An oxygen mask covered my mouth. Three people dressed in shower hats were silhouetted against a blinding overhead light.

'We nearly lost you,' a nurse cooed. 'Mummy's here.'

Mummy! I glanced at the woman in the doorway to the right of my feet. *You're not my mother!* It was the red-headed wife of Ken, the fat Engadine policeman. Dr Petrauskas convinced hospital staff to release me into the counterfeit's care.

When I was eight, Peter Holowczak forced me to watch the dog breeder tie down a female Doberman dog that I was fond of, chop its newborn pups in half, and chop the mother's back legs off while it was still alive. They told me the same would happen to me and my brother if I ever disclosed. Peter dragged me along the ground by my hair and threw me into a cage, from where I was forced to watch the dog breeder fed human remains to his hungry dogs.

At eight years of age, I witnessed Leonas Petrauskas clean up after Prime Minister Paul Keating raped and murdered a five-year-old blonde boy on a beach at Kurnell. Keating panicked and buried the boy in a shallow grave. The following morning, police cordoned off the area while Petrauskas spoke with Keating who was dressed casually in board shorts. Petrauskas ordered me to dig up the body. Then he wrote a death certificate saying the boy was poisoned by a blue-ringed octopus.

Very Secluded beach.
South Sydney – Sutherland Shire?
Paul Keating
Dr Mark called in to write a report.
Dr Mark w/ Keating talked about a blue-ringed octopus
Dr Mark instructed me to dig up the body.
Boy victim approx 6 yrs old?
Put in zipped body bag.
Me age 8
I'm kneeling over it

At age nine, I witnessed Leonas' daughter Krista Petrauskas seduce a curly blonde-haired surfer into the bushes at a beach near Kurnell. While having sex with the man, Krista drugged him using a hypodermic needle. Later that evening, the Cult ritually murdered the young man on the beach. They skewered him with a stake and burnt him alive.

I was nine when I witnessed multiple murders at the Caltex Oil Refinery at Kurnell. There I was lined up with a small group of children in front of a factory incinerator. Men threw the children alive into the furnace where they burnt to death. I was at the end of the line and made to think I would also be burnt. My friend was second last in the line. They threw her into the flames. I leapt after her, to save her, but one of the men grabbed me.

In the summer of 1984, I witnessed the red-headed wife of Ken the fat Engadine policeman lure a 15-year-old boy into her car at a south Sydney beach, probably Cronulla. The boy had sandy-coloured hair and was dressed in board shorts and a pale blue t-shirt which had the distinct 'Billabong' wave logo on its breast. The boy was tied to a stake and burnt to Moloch at the dog breeder's property on Old Illawarra Road in Lucas heights.

Ivan Milat, the notorious serial killer who ritually murdered backpackers, was a 'cleaner.' He and the Slavic dog-breeder did the dirty work, namely cleaning up and disposing of bodies. The bodies were usually fed to dogs. Any remains the dogs did not eat were dissolved in a large concrete bath in a shed on his property. Other bodies were cremated. These people dared not leave traces of evidence, upon threat of their lives. These two men regularly associated with Peter Holowczak. I was six years old when they forced me to watch them feed live children through an industrial mincer. The victims' remains were caught in a blue wading pool constructed of metal poles and plastic canvas. They threw me into the pool of blood and sludge at the end. I was 10 when they threw children off a cliff in the nearby bushland. I forget how old I was when they sliced a nine-year-old Down Syndrome girl in half on the dog-breeder's bandsaw.

BEACH PARTY!
KURNELL
DANCING TO DRUMS
EACH MOVE HAS SPECIFIC MEANING.
"HONEY TRAP"
SNAKE
SLUT
SURFER
Peeled like potato skin
CANNIBALISM
CHOICE MORSEL
VERILITY IMPARTED
SKEWERED ON POLE
I HATE HIPPIE DRUMS!

IVAN MILAT
MUMMY!!!!
LUCIFERIAN HALLOWEEN RITUAL
DOG BREEDER'S PROPERTY
ME age 6
Threw me in the pool of mince

VALIDATION

After going public about these crimes, I was contacted by people who corroborated my memories to varying degrees. Police raided the Holowczak's old house at 14 McAlister Avenue after it sold. During police investigations, the neighbour who owned the house next door at number 16 informed police that he had grown up in Engadine and exclaimed that much of what I described in my *Candy Girl* document fit his knowledge of the local area. He told police the dog breeder almost nabbed him and his mate as they rode past his house as children.

I was also contacted by Dr John Melov's son Peter who supported my testimony on social media. Peter Melov told me he personally had no abuse memories. So, my right hemisphere knowingly asked him one thing: 'Did you own a Doberman dog.' At first, he could not recall his family owning a dog. I listened knowingly as it dawned on him:

'Wait a minute!' he gasped. 'We *did* have a dog! How did I forget that?'

'Was it a Doberman?'

'Yes!'

More circumstantial evidence came from Stephen Masters who grew up in the same area. Stephen and his mate were shot at by Ivan Milat in the bushland behind the dog-breeder's Lucas Heights property. Stephen surmised no-one would have noticed the guns shots because locals would assume the noise came from the nearby rifle range. Further, Stephen Masters purchased a dog from the same breeder who relocated to 6th Avenue West Hoxton following the government reclamation of his property to build New Illawarra Road. It was Stephen who remembered the dog breeder's name was 'Peter' and that he bred dogs for the NSW Police Force.

Pete Melov
November 30 at 9:01pm ·

Fiona Barnett, and the Oz WIKILEAKS connection..

and how my FATHERS business partners, abused raped and murdered ...children...

MY Father was named in this statement..26.22 mins..in she clearly names my Father..

Boys town was regularly investigated for child abuse, nothing ever happened..

I have had major problems, with my fathers "business" partners, Darcy Grey, an alcoholic doctor, who had major personality disorders...extremely unstable..and "
Leo Petrauskis, came to dinner at our house dozens of times, he never talked to me, was aloof, and my father spent decades with this man.

I also had child molesters working in the school, my father never went through with any investigation. '
I complained about the child molesting teachers over and over..nothing was done....
Hundreds of boys, or thousands were molested..

I have just found out that this Woman, was around at the same time, as I left Engadine..

I grew up in Engadine, I have personal experience with everything she is talking about, except the abuse..on me
I have no memory of abuse, on me..

Again, the Medical centre she refers to, was my fathers business, with Darcy Grey, Leo [Mark] Petraskus..

I will be contacting Fiona personally..

This will answer alot of my questions about my entire family,this is why I have never got a;long with them..

Now that I think about what she is saying, this seems to fit, as we all as kids "knew" things went on at Boys Town, and I actually remember Darcy Grey, driving along, throwing empty beer cans, driving along..he was a doctor..

I have put this in a commercial setting, to let you know, as yet, I have not talked to Fiona, this would answer alot about why, things happened, that werent addressed..and why, we had a house, right next to Darcy Grey in the middle of the bush very near, to the place [I have been there, as a bushwalking kid..]

My parents knew alot of politicians, Rex Jackson, and numerous others..;;
And guess what Rex, looked after....
Children..
jailed for corruption for 10 years, got out on "good behaviour" after 3....

Minister for Youth and Community Services

From May 1976 to October 1981, Jackson held the post of Minister of the Department of Youth and Community Services (DoYCS), the former name for the Department of Family and Community Services (FaCS).[4] Under his tenure, the Department began funding youth refuges located in NSW, including Caretakers Cottage, Young People's Refuge and Taldamunde Youth Services.[8]

Talk about ...Rabbit holes..?
then after he comes out of "jail", his wife dies within 5 weeks, and he goes and gets an icecream van..to sell icecream, to...children....

SORRY, This is so deep, for me, and this needs to be put in a public medium..
thanks Fiona, it looks like this is ALL true..lifes full of knowledge, from knowledge you grow!...it explains really , why my "father" was so distant..he was hiding...heaps..very sick individual..

Lets get going, this is just got to go...!
Join a credit union, start spending money in businesses that create change, crowd fund change, and stop doing things that dont change..this

Fiona Barnett Candy Girl Documentary Part 1 of 2 / Satanic Ritual Abuse
Child Satanic Ritual Abuse
YOUTUBE.COM

SYDNEY UNI SATANISTS

My earliest memory of Sydney University is of peering through transparent white curtains to a skyline of the city, from a lecturer's office in the Chemistry faculty. I also recall a research lab in a basement with a high thin window with bars. I was six and lying in a dentist chair, being tortured by a very old man. He pulled out teeth and then put them back in again, without anaesthetic. I recall being in a dingy room with a window high on the wall – like a basement. The dentist had a thick foreign accent, his dark grey hair was slicked back with oil, and he had a v shaped hairline. His assistant was a psychology student dressed in a white lab coat. She had dark hair. I later encountered her in a post graduate class at Bond University. When I said I recognised her, she dismissed this with, 'I have one of those faces.' No, she does not. I recognised her. She is Serbian but Anglicised her name. She is now a registered psychologist who works with my perpetrators in Sydney.

Following this incident, I was disturbed by a Sesame Street film clip of a child visiting a dentist who told the child he had 20 strong white teeth. I was again disturbed in my late teens, by an educational poster in my dentist's waiting room informing the reader that if a tooth is knocked out, store it in liquid because it could be successfully planted into its socket.

LUCIFERIAN
HALLOWEEN
RITUAL

Origins of the 'skull and crossed bones.'

I watched Vice Chancellor John Ward butcher children during a Halloween ritual inside a University of Sydney building. Dressed in a bright red Halloween robe, he skinned a child alive and made a skull and crossed bones.

OTO RITUAL CRUCIFIXION

I was nine when I witnessed Antony Kidman preside over the ritual flaying of a young blonde boy in the Great Hall. Nicole Kidman was 11 years old and seated in the front row during the murder. This was an OTO themed ritual murder, with Kidman and four others dressed in camp, theatrical robes coloured according to the *Eastern Star* pentagram which dominates Freemasonry and its related cults.

SYDNEY UNI
5
Antony Kidman
ME 9

SYDNEY GRANDE DAME IDENTIFIED

Researcher Steve McMurray located the identity of the Sydney Grande Dame I knew as 'Veronica' or 'Ronnie.' Here is the description I provided Steve:

- Tall, attractive, slender, with red hair and white skin.
- Extremely intelligent and academic.
- Private school educated.
- Kind with moral integrity.
- Good at the arts: music, history, English and languages.
- Associated with Sancta Sophia College, University of Sydney.
- Graduated University of Sydney.
- Her parents owned a property and horses west of Sydney.
- I could not decide whether she was a schoolteacher, University of Sydney lecturer, or supervised the students at a girls' student college.
- She died during a ritual at St Mary's Cathedral when she was 45 and I was age 14 years.

Armed with this list to guide his search, Steve McMurray identified Patricia Anne Conlon (nee Carden). I last visited Anne Conlon in her Sancta Sophia living quarters when I was 14 years old. Her dorm featured a lounge area, ensuite, and a four-post bed. We ate in the communal dining room where Anne passed me off as her niece. During that visit, Anne told me she had been ‘discovered’ and was wanted for ‘treason.’ It was time for her to go, she told me. I begged her, ‘Don’t leave me with those men’ but she thought I could fend for myself since I had just completed my training in the USA. Anne explained to me that she had lost everything, was tired of hurting children, and had nothing to live for. She made a blood pact with me and made me swear to go through with the necessary ritual. She bequeathed to me her black onyx jewellery set which was subsequently stored in Nanna's bedroom.

'Veronica' aka Patricia Anne Conlon

Veronica
Grande
Dame

My drawing of 'Veronica' from implicit memory – before discovering her true identity.

I accompanied Anne Conlon on her final round of goodbyes during which she announced her decision and my succession. This was ill received by Antony Kidman who coveted the position for his daughter Nicole. I heard from two independent sources that Nicole is male. That, plus her unimpressive IQ, would have rendered her ineligible for Grande Dame nomination.

Volatile Rosalind Croucher also threw a tantrum at the news. She screamed that I was too young and demanded to know why I was chosen. She stopped mid-sentence and began to choke. She then collapsed to the floor, gasping for breath.

'That's why I chose her,' Anne concluded, and we left.

Anne Conlon and Janelle Kidman had associated for years due to the close relationship between their husbands. So, we took tea with Janelle Kidman whom I despised.

'Fiona has just returned from America,' Anne tried to make polite conversation.

'Oh really,' Janelle feigned interest. 'How did that go.'

Suddenly, Janelle's teacup exploded into pieces.

Anne chastised me as we drove away. I waited until she calmed down before I added,

'Yeah, but it was funny.'

She smiled. 'Yes, it was.'

Anne smiled once more, during a visit to a horse property north-west of Sydney, when I made a joke about her long chestnut hair being the same colour as the horse.

The Ritualistic Transfer of Power

Fritz Springmeier described the Grande Dame position as follows:

> *As a child of the Illuminati progressed through its programming, three people had oversight over its programming: its Grande Mother, its Grande Dame, and the Programmer... The Illuminati method for killing a Grande Dame and passing her spiritual power on is done with reverence. No blood is to be spilled out of respect for the elderly woman who gives up her life willingly. At death, the last breath is inhaled by the replacement to transfer the power... the Grande Dames, are often veiled in ritual and would wear robes with different coloured lining. The different colours of linings show the different grades.*

Anne Conlon and I rode in mournful silence to St Mary's Cathedral in Sydney City. The Cathedral was packed full of dignitaries, politicians, entertainers and priests including Cardinal George Pell. The cathedral doors were heavily guarded by NSW police. The opulent evening ritual featured Bach organ music and a full choir. There I drew in Anne's last breath and collapsed to the floor behind the altar, devastated. It was acceptable for me to show emotion on this special occasion because my grief proved the 'good bond' between a Grande Dame and her apprentice. I quickly composed myself and strode numbly down the cathedral aisle to eerie Baroque music I now hate.

BACKLASH

With Anne Conlon gone, I was fair game - just as I predicted. Antony Kidman took his rage out on me at a post-production party hosted at his Neutral Bay home on 27 October 1984. John Bell had produced King Lear at his *Nimrod Theatre Company*, with a cast of Australia's finest actors including Judy Davis and Colin Friels. It was the night before my 15th birthday. Leonas Petrauskas dropped me in front of Kidman's house and told me to ring the doorbell and say ‘Starchild is here.’ Bruce Spence answered the door. I was led through a room full of noise, alcohol and people snorting cocaine on a coffee table in the corner.

After the guests left, John Bell and Antony Kidman raped me in the loungeroom. Then they near drowned me in the pool. Kidman held my arms from behind while Bell danced like a monkey and plunged my head under with his foot. The following morning, I awoke in what looked like a basement. I was naked and tied to a chair. Kidman struck me repeatedly across the head and screamed: ‘Do you remember *now*?!’ His 17-year-old daughter Nicole Kidman leaned against the wall with her arms crossed, smirking at me. Later, Janelle curtly handed me my freshly laundered clothes.

ROSALIND CROUCHER

Rosalind Croucher studied law at Sydney University and specialised in private property law. She served as Acting Dean of the Sydney Law School, Deputy Chair of the University of Sydney Academic Board in 1999, Dean of the Macquarie University Law School, Chair of the Council of Australian Law Deans, Vice-President of the International Academy of Estate and Trust Law, and President of the Australian Law Reform Commission.

In 2017, Rosalind Croucher commenced her seven-year tenure as President of the *Australian Human Rights Commission*. Her first act in that role was to defend a pedophile who lied on his job application to a major bank by not declaring his criminal conviction for child pornography. The bank consequently terminated his employment within the three-month probationary period. Croucher declared the termination a violation of the pedophile’s human rights. Rosalind Croucher’s pro-pedophile stance is consistent with her violent sexual and physical abuse of me as a minor.

ORDER OF THE EAGLE RITUAL: BATHURST 1985

Rosalind Croucher organised the Luciferian ritual held in Bathurst City Hall on 6 October 1985, during the weekend of the famous Bathurst 1000 car race. It coincided with the birthday of Richie Benaud, Australian sporting legend and television commentator. Leonas Petrauskas drove me and a blonde 15-year-old boy named Thomas to the event. Thomas was another ‘chosen one’ in training at Regina Coeli in Beverly Hills. We sat in the front row of the upstairs mezzanine in the hall which was packed with robed VIPs including the Bathurst Mayor, St Stanislaus College priests, and NSW police. The massive population increase in Bathurst due to the car race disguised the crowd who congregated for this event.

A small group of robed Luciferians stood on the black stage: Rosalind Croucher, Richie Benaud, Kim Beazley Snr, Bruce Spence, and NSW Police Commissioner John Avery. A purple satin banner hung at the back of the stage. It was a rectangular shape and bore the Seal of Solomon. A large encircled spread eagle stood in the middle of the banner, its head locked to its right, its wings and legs were outstretched. The bird’s wings and claws fit three different invisible occult symbols: an encircled pentagram, an encircled hexagram, and the Freemason compass and square. Each banner corner featured a symbol inside a blue circle.

The five priests presided over the ritual caesarean of a heavily pregnant woman and the butchering of her baby. They ceremonially prepared the baby body and blood in a gold chalice and plate which were distributed as communion. This is the Luciferian black mass on which the Roman Catholic mass is based.

ORDER OF THE EAGLE RITUAL BANNER

(SEAL OF SOLOMON)

Order of the Eagle ritual banner, freehand drawn from implicit memory, ruled lines added afterwards.

SYMBOLOGY EXPLAINED

1. ***Rod of Asclepius*** (top left) A serpent entwined around a pole was the original symbol of modern medicine. The Rx symbol that doctors write on prescriptions stands for the Eye of Horus. The original Hippocratic Oath was sworn by pagan gods including Asclepius.
2. **Trident** (top right) or Psi, the Greek symbol for Psychology or Mind Control.
3. **Delta** (bottom left) Triangle divided into three triangles, represents the satanic trinity.
4. **Cleopatra's Needle** (bottom right) a circle dissected by a vertical line that began in its middle and exited its base. It is the 2D representation of a hypodermic needle penetrating a cell. The 3D equivalent is the obelisk which is meant to be a giant hypodermic needle and not a phallic symbol. Hence the name 'Cleopatra's needle.' It represents genetic engineering, cloning, transhumanism - true Alchemy.

‘You’re up,’ Petrauskas whispered into my ear. I made my way to the stage.

‘Let’s take you down a notch,’ Croucher smirked at me. A decaying rat was forced into my face and I was ordered to take a bite. I briefly hesitated but complied. Then Bruce Spence violently raped me on the altar in front of the crowd. After this I took a seat in the front row and watched a group of naked, hypnotised children line up at the front of the stage. Spence decapitated them with a samurai sword, and the crowd broke out into a frenzied bloody orgy. Kim Beazley held a decapitated head of a girl to my face and smirked, ‘Take ye eat.’ Finally, Rosalind Croucher urinated in my mouth while I was gang raped.

‘You flinched!’ Petrauskas yelled at me backstage.

‘No,’ I lied.

He led me to a back room to the right of the stage where Rosalind Croucher stood next to a mobile defibrillation unit. Petrauskas told me to sit in the chair. I obeyed. Then Croucher angrily began electrocuting me to the head.

‘Okay, that’s enough!’ Petrauskas warned her.

Croucher trembled with rage and continued. She had organised the entire event as an act of revenge against me.

‘Stop!’ Petrauskas yelled, ‘She is government property! You will get in big trouble!’

But Croucher persisted.

I snapped.

‘Stand down, Soldier!’ Petrauskas ordered.

Too late. I grabbed Croucher by the throat, lifted her off the floor, robotically turned my head toward Petrauskas and coolly stated: ‘Leave us.’

ESCAPING THE CULT

Three key incidents provided legitimate grounds for my leaving the cult. The first was Kidman and Bell’s rape at their post-production party, the second was Croucher’s violent assault at Bathurst, and the third was when the ‘Light Man’ turned up mid-ritual. The latter incident in a basement beneath one of the churches, either Regina Coeli or St John Bosco; I get confused because their street layout is similar, but I err in favour of Beverly Hills due to its larger size. Whichever church it was, there was a home opposite it owned by a Christian family. The cult called genuine praying Christians ‘Lights.’ The cult held meetings to devise strategies for driving out the ‘Lights’ because their Christian presence and prayer spiritually disrupted the impact of the cult’s witchcraft.

Large Catholic churches contain a second altar which sits directly beneath the public altar in an underground crypt. The stone crypt floor was lined with pews. I stood behind the altar, facing a room full of robed cult members. A baby lay face up on the altar, its head pointed to my right. I raised the ceremonial knife when – suddenly, white light flooded the room. I froze amidst the pandemonium of cult members diving beneath the pews, screaming, clasping their ears, and clawing at the floor to escape.

‘Fiona,’ a voice spoke out of the light, ‘Do you choose to do this?’

‘NO!’ I screamed and dropped the knife. ‘JESUS, HELP!!!’

I fled. The usual guards were gone from the front of the church. I ran down the street and through the front door of the Christian family’s home where they sat in their loungeroom watching television. Their faces looked like stunned mullets as I, fully robed and breathless, burst into their presence.

‘PRAY!’ I gasped and collapsed to my knees.

The Luciferian cult has its own judicial system called the Grande Council which meet to determine serious issues such as whether a cult member ought to be put to death. I was not present for the hearings against Peter Holowczak or Antony Kidman, but their deaths have the tell-tale signs of a Grande Council determination.

The Grande Council convened in the University of Sydney MacLaurin Hall. I was called to plead my case for leaving the cult. My desire to leave placed the cult in an awkward position since they could not simply replace a Grande Dame. Any new Grande Dame must draw in the dying breath of the previous one, and I had already taken that gig. The cult could not simply kill me, because I had to surrender my life willingly. I was unwilling. Besides, I was still a 'National Asset' as Gittinger said, in which governments jointly invested many millions. If it costs the government $1 million to train a regular soldier, imagine the cost of training a MK-DELTA child soldier.

My defence consisted of a scathing attack on Antony Kidman and Rosalind Croucher and how they had placed their personal hatred of me before the collective good. If anyone ought to serve penance – they should. The cult had promised me the Grande Dame position carried a level of respect, privilege and self-determination – none of which had been afforded me. My trump card was the 'Light Man' incident. I spoke of how from my earliest memory, the cult taught me that 'The Order' and their gods were omniscient, omnipresent, and omnipotent. I challenged them:

'My whole life you have told me that Lucifer is the most powerful being! Oh, yeah? Then who was *that?!! WHO WAS THAT IN THE BASEMENT?!'*

Silence.

'Until you can answer my question,' I pointed at the ceiling, 'I'm with HIM!'

They had no answer.

Kidman broke the silence. 'And what will you do now, without us?'

I had plenty of natural talent to fall back on, I argued.

'Like what,' Kidman asked.

I listed off my interests and abilities.

'There's a piano,' he motioned to the nearby instrument. 'Play something.'

I began to play. Kidman approached, watched me for a moment – then slammed the piano lid onto my hands. He leant on my trapped fingers, plunged his contorted face in mine, and spat: '*You will NEVER amount to ANYTHING without US*!'

True to his word, the cult has harassed me my entire life, thwarted my every attempt to find a place in society, sabotaged my every interest, passion, and pursuit, until I eventually ran out of options and energy. But there is one thing I succeeded at. I wrote this book.

* * *

IT HAPPENED

'It happened. Trust me I believe you. My family grew up with them on the North Shore, tight with the Kidmans. I have been hearing about these 'parties' they would throw since I was a child. And then much more in depth as an adult. And the abuse carried through. Very rich elite German 'Nazi' Sycophants. Powerful people in high positions. The North Shore was rife with them. Research the controlling interest her family had and still have in Australian land monopoly. Her Father ran a child mental asylum on the North Shore. Perfect access. As I am sure you are already well aware. Stay Strong Fiona. You are not alone. You are a brave catalyst, and a necessary one. People have gone to their graves affected and permanently damaged by this heinous debauched, North Shore ring. Thank you for shedding public light on the issue. Maybe Antonia would speak out. She always seemed less cold. Good luck. Keep fighting.'

Kat Kennedy Here's the deal. Fiona cannot be telling a lie. I have heard this story from my own family. My grandfather was a Nazi Satanist. I only survived by not living in the same state as him. My girl cousins were less fortunate and one of them was monarched. There is no way she could have told the exact same story without ever meeting or knowing Fiona or these other women. She is in the hospital fighting for her life and her lungs after being gassed as a child.

Fiona, you should not have to be defending yourself at this point. You have spoken the truth and people just need to wake up. Children are at risk currently and people need to WAKE UP!

* * *

Candy Girl Child Prostitute

There is the pervasive perception that female sexuality is less predatory than male.
- Wendy-Louise Walker

Candy Girl
You are my world
You look so sweet
You're a special treat
Candy girl
All I want to say
When you're with me
You brighten up my day
All I know
When I'm with you
You make me feel so good
Through and through
The way you walk
And the way you talk
You always look so good
You make me forget my thoughts.[430]

* * *

I drew back the sheer curtains and peered through the glass at the scene below. I had been here before, in this exact location. 'I want my Mummy,' I mumbled as tears welled in my eyes. I was dissociating, remembering. I turned and surveyed the room again. The furniture had been moved about but otherwise it all looked familiar. I dropped into a chair which faced the same direction as when I sat on 'Uncle Gough's' lap. I struggled to fathom the enormity of what I was seeing. The outlay of the green room next door was precisely as I had drawn it in therapy. The green leather couch was the very piece of furniture I was raped on over 40 years ago.

A small group of people burst through the doorway. Their jovial guide took a seat beside me and offered, 'You can join us if you like!' He continued rattling off facts and personal anecdotes about Gough Whitlam and Bob Hawke who both used this very office while serving as Prime Minister. There was too much respect and admiration in his tone.

'Stop!' I interjected. 'I can't take this.' I rose to my feet and continued. 'These men are not heroes. They're all pedophiles! They are chosen for these positions because they are pedophiles. ASIO trafficked kids here for their pedophile orgies. I was raped by Gough Whitlam right here in this room when I was a child, and I was raped in a pedophile orgy in that green room in there, and again in the red room down the hall.'

I went to leave. Suddenly a Chinese Australian man grabbed me by the arm. He looked me squarely in the eye and said, 'Thank you for sharing that. That must have been very difficult.'

---

[430] Maurice Starr & Michael Jonzun (1983). *Candy Girl*.

‘Yes,’ I nodded, ‘It has all been very difficult. Thank you for caring.’

I stormed out of Old Parliament House.

* * *

GRANDE *MADAM*

Patricia Anne Conlon became my substitute mother, teacher and confidant. She affectionately called me her ‘little anomaly.’ Anne was brilliant, vibrant, and intelligent; she instilled in me her love of classical piano, opera, Shakespeare, history, and horses. She also taught me how to fuck.

Grande Dame selection criteria include Aryan Root Race features: blue or green eyes, blonde or red hair, flawless complexion, physical beauty, creativity, and high intelligence. Grande Dames are bisexual temple whores with a preference for sex with young teenage girls. They are glorified madams who train children for prostitution. By age six I was a trained courtesan. My child prostitute name was *Candy Girl*.

Kim Beazley Senior was the ASIO operative who coordinated the Australian leg of the international child sex trafficking ring. Beazley coordinated my trafficking to VIPs nationally and abroad. I was transported nationally by government and military transport, and internationally via CIA cargo planes.

John Gittinger played my pimp. He personally delivered me to the pedophile orgy at Parliament House when I was six years old. We rode in a posh black car with silver trim and brown leather interior. It was driven by two security men with neat military style haircuts and black suits. I was dropped off at the rear entrance of what is now Old Parliament House. Gittinger accompanied me to the rear entrance where I was met by a servant dressed in a long-tailed tuxedo, then he returned to the nearby US consulate. The butler walked me through many rooms and stairs to Gough Whitlam’s private office. Whitlam was seated and dressed in a suit when he asked me if I would like a horsy ride on ‘Uncle Gough’s lap.’ He picked me up, faced me away from him, lowered me onto his erect penis, and raped me.

WHITLAM
"COME SIT ON UNCLE GOUGH'S LAP"
"HORSEY RIDE"
RAPE

I was raped again in a pedophile orgy held in the green room adjacent to Whitlam's office. I was made to perform oral sex on Governor General John Kerr on a leather lounge. A butler had a tray with a whipped cream canister and chocolate dipping sauce on it. These products were placed on Kerr's penis and I was instructed to lick them off. Lionel Murphy took me into the red room where I was raped on the red lounge.

Gough Whitlam's Communist pedophile cabinet

FAIRBAIRN MILITARY AIRPORT

I was taken to a modest single-story home in Queanbeyan which was owned by Helena Holowczak's Slavic 'refugee' friends. Bob Hawke attended a BBQ held in their backward. Hawke got drunk at the BBQ and led me to an area at the far end of the back yard. He raped me in a zucchini patch as I watched butterflies fluttering about the zucchini flowers. The blooms tell me this was late November.

I was dressed in a Shirley Temple dress and driven to Fairbairn military airport. Gittinger walked me across the tarmac where an unmarked military plane was parked. Gittinger said there was an important man waiting for me in the back of the plane. I was to board the plane alone via the back stairs and do whatever the man said. The man was former President Richard Nixon. He was lying naked in a large bed with a blanket covering his erection. A short glass containing amber liquid and ice sat on a set of drawers to his right. Nixon asked for my name.

'Candy Girl,' I replied.

Nixon instructed me to approach him. He thrust my head onto his penis and demanded oral sex. Then he pulled me on top off him and violently raped me. After he ejaculated, he smacked me around the head until my nose bled. Nixon tore my vagina such that it had to be sutured. An old female medic tut-tutted while suturing me, in a nearby building.

Gittinger
" there's someone very important in there. Be very nice to him and do what he says."

RICHARD NIXON IN BACK OF PLANE
to my right
- "What's your name?"
- "Candy Girl"
- "5"
" How old are you"
" Good"
" Come here"

Gittinger and two men in military uniform led me to a hangar containing a centrifuge used to train pilots. They asked me if I would like a ride in the machine which they promised was 'fun.' I could sure do with some fun. I nodded, and the military men awkwardly strapped me inside the pod. It was not fun. I vomited and passed out.

BOB & BEAZLEY at BOHEMIAN GROVE

In July 2012, Kim Beazley Junior (Australian Ambassador to the US) and Bob Carr (then Minister for Foreign Affairs) attended the annual all-male VIP pedophile summer camp at Australian taxpayers' expense. Bob Carr attended the previous year. FOI released documents show, Beazley expressed interest in attending Bohemian Grove again in 2014. The same documents reveal, the US government emailed our *Department of Foreign Affairs* (24 July 2012) regarding 'media talking points' and suggested responses to inquiries regarding Carr and Beazley's Bohemian Grove attendance. Here is their suggested response:

> *If asked: Why did you attend the Bohemian Grove conference – an event often linked to conspiracy theories – in San Francisco?*
>
> - *The Bohemian Grove conference provided the opportunity to engage with key US figures, including former US Secretaries of State Henry Kissinger, James Baker and George Shultz, and representatives of major American investors in Australia.*
> - *The conference followed separate talks with former Secretary of State Condoleezza Rice at the Stanford School of Business [18 July].*

This document was in reaction to the PR nightmare caused by Bob Carr's 18 July 2012 tweet:

> *Lunch with Condie Rice at Stanford, dinner tonight with [Henry] Kissinger and [George] Shultz. Then off with them to conference at Bohemian Grove.*

A Washington Post article introduced Bohemian Grove as follows:

> *Every July, some of the richest and most powerful men in the world gather at a 2,700-acre campground in Monte Rio, Calif., for two weeks of heavy drinking, super-secret talks, druid worship (the group insists they are simply 'revering the Redwoods'), and other rituals.*[431]

A more accurate description would be: 'Every year, elite male Luciferian pedophiles gather for a 16-day Bacchanalia-flavoured summer camp featuring drunken orgies, child hunts, and ritual human sacrifice to pagan gods.'

Peter Alexander Chernoff said he helped the Luciferian cult abduct a 10-year-old boy named Kevin Collins from San Francisco. He later witnessed San Francisco-based Michael Aquino ritually sacrifice the child at Bohemian Grove in the presence of George Bush Senior (a Nazi), Pope Ratzinger (a former Nazi), and Omaha businessman Warren Buffet who was implicated in the Franklin VIP child trafficking scandal. Famous Bohemian Grove attendees include Clint Eastwood, Ronald Reagan, and Richard Nixon.

---

[431] Elizabeth Flock, Bohemian Grove: Where the rich and powerful go to misbehave, *Washington Post*, 15 June 2011.

People assume the word *Bohemian* stems from the club's artistic origins. The true origin of this name formed the basis of my 2016 article *Bohemian Grove, Pedo Hunting Parties and Rent Boy Ranch*, written in the wake of USA Chief Justice Antony Scalia's untimely death. *The Washington Post* subsequently plagiarised my original article content that I allowed Scalia's victim, David Shurter, to premiere on his blog site. An Omaha child trafficking and ritual abuse victim, Shurter described USA Chief Justice Scalia as a violent Luciferian pedophile. When news broke of Scalia's odd death, the judge's former victims got talking. News spread fast among this group that Scalia had in fact been murdered by a 13-year-old boy at a Texan ranch. The child victim was apparently triggered by Scalia's sadistic approach to rape - and slit his perpetrator's throat. This version of events might explain why Scalia's family refused an autopsy, why a Texan judge ruled his death 'natural causes' without even viewing the body, and why the FBI declined to investigate Scalia's death after the marshals told them he died of natural causes.

This scenario gains credibility when we consider the history of the Cibolo Creek property where Scalia died. An article in *Veterans Day* online magazine originally referred to the property as, '*Rent Boy Ranch, playground for Mick Jagger and Charlie Sheen.*' The article was promptly blocked in the USA and later edited to exclude any reference to it being a pedophile establishment. So, what is it about this property, and why was it nicknamed 'Rent Boy Ranch'?

Cibolo Creek Ranch is a 30,000-acre VIP resort located in west Texas, 100 miles from the Mexican border, in the Chinati Mountains. Guests arrive by private jet at the Ranch's own private airport, and they typically include politicians, businessmen, and Hollywood figures like Mick Jagger, Bruce Willis, Tommy Lee Jones, Randy Quaid, Dick Cheney, and Charlie Sheen.

The owner of Cibolo Creek Ranch, John Poindexter, bought the property in 1988. A third-generation Texan, Poindexter runs a Houston-based manufacturing company. He is also a leader in an elite, all-male hunting club called the *International Order of Saint Hubertus*. This secret society was founded in the Kingdom of Bohemia (Czech Republic) in 1695 by Austrian Count Franz Anton von Spork. Membership is invitation only, and titles held within the society sound Freemason-like: Grand Master, Prior, Knight Grand Officer.

The *International Order of Saint Hubertus* frequently attend hunts hosted by Poindexter at the Cibolo Creek Ranch. In 2010, 53 members of the International Order of Saint Hubertus gathered at Cibolo Creek Ranch to hunt. Guests included members of the Houston chapter and from Mexico, and minor European royalty like Archduke Andreas Salvatore Hapsburg-Lothrengin (Prince of Tuscany, Hungary and Bohemia). Hapsburg-Lothrengin is of the Hapsburg dynasty who owned Židlochovice Chateau located in Austro-Hungarian (Czech Republic) and developed it into a VIP hunting manor. In 2006, prominent Washington lawyer C. Allen Foster, who holds a leadership position within the *Order of Saint Hubertus*, hired Židlochovice Chateau for a 40-guest hunting party. C. Allen Foster and Chief Justice Antony Scalia chartered a private plane together with the intention of hunting at Cibolo Creek Ranch the following day.

Two other private planes that landed at Cibolo Creek Ranch for the fatal weekend were linked to two other men who held leadership positions with the Texas chapter of the Order of Saint Hubertus. Following Scalia's death, Poindexter told reporters that he met Scalia at a 'sports group' gathering in Washington. The US Order of Saint Hubertus branch headquarters are in Washington D.C.

Cibolo Creek 'Rent Boy' Ranch was decorated in bizarre clay sculptures depicting demons, death, and dismembered bodies.

Rent Boy Ranch 'artwork' decor

Hunting, raping and killing children for sport is a common feature of elite Luciferian pedophile gatherings. Attendees at European pedophile hunts, named by victim witnesses, include King Albert II of Belgium, Prince Johan Friso of Holland, and Prince Alfrink Bernhard of Holland who was in the Nazi party.

In 1966, the USA branch of the Bohemian-founded all-male secret *Order of Saint Hubertus* (aka the *American Knights*) held its first ever meeting at the all-male secret Bohemian Club in San Francisco. The Bohemian Club owns Bohemian Grove.

So, Bohemian Grove is a Luciferian pedophile club that provides opportunity for attendees to engage in their favourite pastime – hunting children for sport. This is the real hunger games.

BOHEMIAN GROVE CA
SATANIC RITUAL
HUMAN SACRIFICE

TEDDY BEAR PICNIC

The CIA flew me to the USA when I was six years old. I was flown into California in the back of a CIA cargo plane. They gassed and stuffed me like an animal in a wooden crate filled with straw. I remember the pilots had American accents and asked me, ‘Are you okay, sweetheart?’

CARGO PLANE – TRAFFICKED TO USA, CA.

My first memory of Bohemian Grove is the ritual sacrifice of a woman by men in black robes. Their robes were taller with pointier caps compared to the Australian ones. My next memory is of being hunted for fun in the woods. A group of children and I were dressed in teddy bear costumes. We were instructed to hide amongst the redwood forest so that the guests could seek us. The hunt occurred at night while the song *Teddy Bears’ Picnic* played over loudspeakers hung throughout the forest. Those who got caught were raped through openings in their costumes. They screamed for their mothers as they were decapitated. My furry suit complete with ears, made me look like an Ewok in the *Star Wars* series; hence I found the film scene triggering.

The Simpsons voice actor Harry Shearer (who started out as a child actor) attended Bohemian Grove and made a 2002 movie about this called, *Teddy Bears' Picnic*. During an interview, Shearer dismissed the Grove’s Cremation of Care ritual as a bit of harmless fun.

PINK ONION CAMP

I was dressed as Candy Girl and taken to a pink, bubble themed cabin. The cabin had plastic inflatable furniture and a pink shag pile rug in the front room. It was occupied by the Reverend Billy Graham who greeted me dressed like Hugh Heffner in a satin smoking jacket. He handed me a pink cocktail and told me his good friend Richard Nixon had recommended me to him because I ‘liked to please men.’ He led me into a pink bedroom at the rear and raped me.

After publishing this experience, I was contacted by a man whose father worked at Bohemian Grove for 46 years, and he for three. He said the pink bubble cabin I described is the *Pink Onion Camp*, and that its headquarters are located at 702 Marshall St, in Redwood City, CA. I read elsewhere that the Pink Onion Camp cabins are famous for their pink bedsheets.

BOHEMIAN GROVE, CA.
"TEDDY BEAR'S PICNIC"
CHILD RAPE HUNT PARTY.

CLUB DISNEY

Following Bohemian Grove, Gittinger pimped me to a group of wealthy men drinking at an exclusive club located within Disneyland, CA. The bar had classic leather padding at its front, and mirrored shelving. The men played a round of poker to decide who would rape the little girl dressed up as Alice in Wonderland. CNN founder Ted Turner won. He took me into a bedroom out back and raped me. After this, Gittinger spun me in the tea-cup ride until I vomited and passed out.

DISNEYLAND CA
Dressed as ALICE in WONDERLAND

DISNEY LAND CA
"IT'S A SMALL WORLD"
RIDE - DRUGGED

PEDOWOOD

I was 14 when the CIA trafficked me to the Grande Dame of Hollywood. Scour the internet and you will find photos of Meryl Streep proudly flashing Luciferian hand signs, and brazenly praising known rapists Roman Polanski and Harvey Weinstein. Mainstream press call Streep the *Grande Dame of Hollywood* because she is in fact the Luciferian Grande Dame of the West Coast. In typical Grande Dame style, Streep is a red-haired bisexual who prefers sex with 14-year-old girls. I know because that is the age at which I was trafficked to her.

I have not found a photo of the Hollywood house I was trafficked to. From memory, it was decorated in a bland, minimalist, Scandinavian style. As I walked in the front door, the kitchen was to my right, with a dining table behind that. Directly in front of me was a lounge room with giant floor to ceiling windows and a view like in a high-rise apartment. But I think we were simply in a house situated on a steep block that overlooked the Hollywood hills, with a swimming pool directly below on the window. To my left of the front entrance was a wide hall which led smack into double doors. Behind the doors was a bedroom which had an ensuite to the right.

The party started with a ritual sacrifice on the dining table over which Streep presided. The victim lay face up on the table while her throat was slit. The blood was drained into a ceremonial bowl, mixed with drugs, and stirred with a brush made of a sprig of herbs. Everyone sipped from the bowl and then the revels began. I recall dancing with Streep to the ‘Funky Town’ soundtrack before she took me into the bedroom, chatted with me about what I wanted to do with my life, and used me for sex.

Luciferian Grande Dame of Hollywood

ANYTHING GOES

Cult members maintain a public façade of family respectability behind which they will fuck anything – males, females, kids, animals. . . *Anything*. I witnessed Kidman have sex with Bell, Whitlam have sex with Kerr, Conlon have sex with the Chancellor. Petrauskas used 12-year-old me in a threesome with the wife of Ken the fat Engadine policeman. Female cult members are just as sexually active and perverse as the men. It is just as typical for married cult women to lust after sex with children and each other. Cult members married and had children out of their duty to produce Illuminati babies.

I copped much criticism for saying Whitlam and other politicians were bisexual. Consider the following (7 October 2019) post to my Facebook page:

Simone Piggott Nothing surprises me anymore regarding the Australian Government and departments connected with it.
Years ago back in the late 70's my Mum,while in hospital, made friends with a lady in the next bed.
They used to meet for lunch and had long chats.
The things she spoke about were not known about at the time unless one had private information. Things about politicians and police, which corroborate much of what you say in your book. Her info didn't go as far as involvement with children, but about how Whitlam was bisexual or ac-dc as she put it. About parties that were had, swinging, about Cairns and Junie Morosi having an affair, and how Hawke withheld containers of ammunition headed for Vietnam during the war, as they sat on the docks, while he was leader of the FSPDU, as a power assertion move. A veteran she knew told her how they were left stranded in action with no ammo.
This info came out, it wasn't invented, she had no reason to invent anything, she knew things from places she worked.
Can you imagine how much other information is being withheld from the public because it doesn't fit in with political ideology, or character image, or the constitution. Power corrupts and Absolute Power corrupts Absolutely. Regardless of what party is in government. Now we have Morrison and his friend Brian Houston acting most improperly and deals going on. Again it is the people who are cheated of the Truth.

Sex with a trained prostitute is preferred because there is a vast difference between trained versus normal sex. Prostitute alters are trained to sexually pleasure both males and females. The age of the victim is irrelevant - since sexual skill is the attraction.

Dirty therapists know this, which is why male and female psychologists and psychiatrists commonly access a victim's sex alters for their own pleasure. For instance, I was contacted by the adult female victim of a female Lismore psychologist (an *Order of the Easter Star* member) who came under investigation for accessing and raping the victim's child alter.

When it comes to Cult sex, anything goes.

2020 Update

You would have to be at least my age to appreciate just how much Australians revered Prime Minister Bob Hawke. In 2015, the Australian Broadcasting Commission mocked me on national television for suggesting their icon was actually pedophile scum. The general public's perception of Bob Hawke was subsequently shattered four years later, on 8 December 2019, when Bob Hawke's daughter, Rosslyn Dillon, said she was raped three times by her father's mate Bill Landeryou (a Victorian Labor MP) and that Hawke prevented his daughter from reporting the rapes to the police in order to preserve his political career.[432] [433]

In 2015, an American victim of CIA child trafficking told me she attended a Satanic Ritual Abuse support group in the USA with Rosslyn Dillon.

* * *

---

[432] Amy Remeikis, Bob Hawke's daughter says he told her not to pursue rape allegations against former Labor MP, *The Guardian*, 8 Dec 2019.

[433] Caroline Overington, Daughter Rosslyn Dillon's rape claims mar Bob Hawke legacy, *The Australian*, 9 December 2019.

The Relevance of Intelligence

The difference between stupidity and genius is that genius has its limits.

'You need to write an Australian book on gifted education,' my friend suggested. She had just enrolled her son in a private school for gifted kids – the very program I had just withdrawn my daughter from.

'Sure,' I joked, 'I'll call it, *The Genius' Guide to Complete Idiots*.'

'Oh… don't you think that's a little harsh? I mean, couldn't you tone it down a bit? Think of something less confrontational?'

Me: 'Nope.'

Six months later, my friend phoned again. Her countenance had shifted. Through clenched teeth she spewed out a torrent of abuse about her son's so-called gifted education program. 'And I'll tell you another thing!' she spat, 'You write that book! You write that book - and you keep that *fucking title*!'

While it's perfectly acceptable for Australians to brag about their kids' selection for elite sporting teams, the very mention of a child's intellectual superiority invariably incurs criticism and victimisation from everyone, particularly schoolteachers. Australians are so entrenched in 'tall poppy syndrome,' I have attracted criticism for daring to suggest that I was the victim of an elite pedophile ring. *Oh, ELITE you say! So, you're not good enough to be abused by just any old pedophile ring. Yours must be an ELITE one!*

So, you can well imagine the criticism I copped for trying to explain the relevance of intelligence within the context of the MK-ULTRA selection process. The snidest criticism came from lawyer Michael Salter, self-appointed expert on 'complex trauma and organised sexual abuse' who worked for an ALP politician before parachuting into the DID industry with no relevant qualification:

> *We have a different standard regarding the public domain and publishing what you are unable to prove. Like saying that you have different brain structure. This reduces your credibility.*

Intelligence is the most important variable to understand when trying to fathom the MK-ULTRA mind control selection and programming process. Every victim of mind control I know was chosen based on their IQ level. It is important for the reader to understand there is nothing elitist about being highly intelligent, nor about merely discussing the topic of intelligence. I will now discuss the psychology behind this phenomenon.

Set aside your understanding of intelligence. You were taught the smartest people got dux at school, graduated university, were awkward nerds who became doctors and lawyers, right? Wrong. We are socially conditioned to confuse 'intelligent' with 'educated.' The brightest students were not, are not, and never will be, accommodated in Australia's education system. The smartest people in your Kindy classes did not graduate from high school. Their true ability went undetected. Instead, they were bullied for being more interested in the concept of lift rather than watching Sesame Street, found school mind numbingly tedious, mentally disengaged in class by Grade 3, and spent the following decade underachieving. The brightest children drop out of high school feeling persecuted, disillusioned, different, and dumb, and finish up blue-collar workers like my science genius brothers who dig dirt for a living. The smartest kids exhibit the following innate characteristics:

- Intensity
- Outstanding sense of humour
- Perfectionist
- Early or avid reader (e.g., perfectly pronounces any word in the KJV Bible at age 5).
- Rapid learner (Completes one school grade per month in conducive environment).
- Independent learner
- Extensive vocabulary (Understands the word ‘shoes’ at age two months, speaks full sentences by age one).
- Excellent memory (Usually photographic).
- Long attention span when interested (Spends days making craft or radios by age 6).
- Strong sense of social justice and fairness
- Emotional sensitivity
- Morality
- Compassion
- Extremely curious
- Questions authority
- Good at jigsaw puzzles
- Highly creative
- Ability with numbers
- Prefer older friends (of the same intelligence level).

INTELLIGENCE DEFINED

The military and secret services employ the traditional, scientific definition of intelligence as determined by comprehensive psychometric testing. Standardised tests of cognitive ability were initially designed for military recruitment purposes during the first world war. The armed forces and secret services have incorporated these tests in their selection processes ever since. For instance, former CIA case officer Philip Agee[434] described undergoing a battery of vocational, aptitude, and personality tests including: the Stanford-Binet, Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, Strong Interest Inventory, Wechsler Adult Intelligence Scale, Guilford’s Structure of Intellect, Kuder Occupational Interest Survey, and the Rorschach inkblot test.

Francis Galton, Lewis Terman, Letta Hollingworth, and Charles Spearman pioneered an evidence-based approach to the study of intelligence. Terman produced the Stanford-Binet intelligence test. Spearman created math formulae to identify a general innate component of intelligence (*g*) within this and later IQ tests. Terman and Hollingworth distinguished characteristics common to children who scored within the ‘giftedness’ ranges on the Stanford Binet. Discrimination between the highest intelligence levels is crucial because members of each IQ category share similar learning and psychological characteristics, capabilities, and needs.

The resultant, recognised giftedness categories are:

---

[434] Phillip Agee (1975). *Inside the Company: CIA Diary.* Penguin.

- Moderately gifted (IQ 130 to 144)
- Highly (IQ 145 to 159)
- Exceptionally (IQ 160 to 179)
- Profoundly (IQ 180+).

To provide context, the average IQ is 100, the average IQ of a schoolteacher is 110, and the average IQ of a doctor or lawyer is 120. An intelligence quotient of 120 is simultaneously the optimal IQ for academic achievement within a traditional school classroom. In other words, the average doctor or lawyer is not even moderately gifted.

These fundamental findings were later undermined by Renzulli, Sternberg and Gardner who fostered today's popular misconception that *everybody* is gifted when compared to a long-enough shopping list of possible talents. The idea that *everybody* is gifted forces *everybody* into the far-right tail of the normal distribution curve – a mathematical impossibility.

Modern psychologists and educators deny the notion of innate intelligence. They treat intelligence as nothing more than a person's acquired knowledge and skills. According to their conception of intelligence, differences between individuals' IQ scores stem from variation in environmental opportunity for acquiring the knowledge and skills necessary for performance on standardised intelligence tests.[435] This is a Marxist based fallacy.

As we explore in this chapter, military intelligence and secret service recruitment processes are based on the premise that intelligence is genetically predisposed and environmentally enhanced. In other words, people who lack the genes can't be nurtured into a genius. The army is not interested in warm egalitarian concepts delivered by Marxist university professors. The military simply want to know what works in the field, and whether they can trust Freddie with a tank.

Attributing individual differences in intelligence primarily to environmental factors - as mainstream educators and psychologists do - is like saying a natural brunette can change into a natural blonde without hair dye. Individual differences are genetically determined. Just as we inherit individual differences in hair colour, facial features, body type, and health issues from our ancestors, so we inherit differences in brain structure and function. Intelligence is the product of variation in brain structure, and a function of how fast our brains work due to this variation.

High IQ individuals share different brain structure and function compared to people with average IQ. Researchers are consistently proving that the brains of individuals who score highly on standardised intelligence tests are denser, more interconnected, and possess greater neural integrity. These factors create faster brain impulses, allowing high IQ people to react to (i.e., process) sensory input more quickly.

Intelligence is the product of variation in brain structure,
a function of how fast our brains work due to this variation.

---

[435] Arthur R. Jensen (1993). Why Is Reaction Time Correlated with Psychometric *g*? *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 2:2, April, 53-56.

PROCESSING SPEED

Eugenicist Francis Galton of the Darwin-Huxley-Wedgewood dynasty was the first to hypothesise that variation of sensory discrimination and speed of response to stimuli would reflect intelligence differences.[436] He measured thousands of subjects' reaction time to visual and auditory stimuli. Yet his conclusions regarding intelligence were publicly rejected as too simplistic. A modern reprise of Galton's research into reaction time and IQ differences have yielded results consistent with his original hypothesis. Numerous studies conducted globally prove that people with higher IQs are quicker at processing sensory stimuli. For example, a metanalysis of 14 studies conducted between 1884 to 2004, including one study by Galton, showed reaction time (which reflects a person's mental processing speed) indicates general intelligence.[437] A 2008 metanalysis of 172 studies, with a total of over 53,000 participants, found IQ to be correlated with mental speed, and concluded that phenotypic correlations between IQ and mental speed are attributable to correlated genetic factors.[438] A 2013 study showed that people with higher IQs have quicker reflexes and make faster perceptual judgments.[439]

Modern research is increasingly employing brain scans to reach similar conclusions. A 2009 study used Diffusion Tensor Imaging to compare neural integrity in 92 pairs of fraternal and identical twins. Results showed that faster processing speed is correlated with higher IQ, and that processing speed is genetically determined.[440] This study produced a strong correlation between the thickness of myelin (the insulation that coats neural wiring in the brain) and performance on the Weschler IQ test. The thicker the myelin, the faster the brain transmits messages, and the faster the brain processes sensory input. This research showed myelin integrity to be an inheritable determinant of IQ.

A 2012 study pooled brain scans and genetic data from 21,000 subjects scattered around the world, to find evidence of a genetic link to brain function and IQ.[441] A 2015 study used fMRI analysis to find a correlation between cognitive ability and greater connectivity between brain regions involved in higher-level cognition.[442] Another 2015 study (of 126 subjects) found fMRI scans of brain connectivity can predict fluid intelligence. [443] This same project discovered that everyone's brain connectivity is unique and can be solely used, like a fingerprint, to identify someone. A similar 2017 study employed R-fMRI data to accurately identify individuals, and significantly predict higher cognitive performance, based on their brain connectivity.[444]

---

[436] Arthur R. Jensen (1982). *Reaction Time and Psychometric g*? Free Press, 93-4.

[437] M. Khodadadi et al. (2014). Relationship between Intelligence and Reaction Time: A Review Study, *International Journal of Medical Reviews*, 1:2, Spring, 63-69.

[438] L.D. Sheppard & P.A. Vernon (2008). Intelligence and speed of information-processing: A review of 50 years of research. *Personality and Individual Differences*, 44:3, 535-551.

[439] M.D. Melnick et al. (2013). A Strong Interactive Link between Sensory Discriminations and Intelligence. *Current Biology*.

[440] M.C. Chiang et al. (2009). Genetics of Brain Fiber Architecture and Intellectual Performance. *Journal of Neuroscience*, 18 Feb, 29:7, 2212-2224.

[441] Stephanie Pappas (2012). Genes Tied To IQ, Brain Size in UCLA ENIGMA Study, Huffington Post, 15 April.

[442] Steve Conor (2015). Intelligent people's brains wired differently to those with fewer intellectual abilities, says study Independent, 28 Sep.

[443] E.S. Finn et al. (2015). Functional connectome fingerprinting: identifying individuals using patterns of brain connectivity, *Nature Neuroscience,* 18, 1664–71.

[444] J. Liu, X. Liao, M. Xia, & Y. He (2018). Chronnectome fingerprinting: Identifying individuals and predicting higher cognitive functions using dynamic brain connectivity patterns, *Hum Brain Mapp*, Feb, 39:2, 902-15.

The latter two studies refute criticism of the notion that gifted individuals possess different brain structure, as they show that *everyone* has different brain structure.

fMRI scans prove that EVERYONE has different brain structure.

IQ TESTS WORK

Properly administered, comprehensive IQ tests measure exactly what the pioneers of intelligence research designed them to. Lewis Terman adapted the Stanford Binet from its French predecessor, to identify intellectual giftedness. His subsequent 1960 version, the Stanford Binet L-M, is unmatched in its ability to recognise visual-spatial pre-schoolers. It also remains the only test which can identify the top two categories of intellectual giftedness.

David Wechsler's IQ test series (WAIS and WISC) are commonly employed by educational psychologists to identify academic giftedness. This is problematic because these tests were designed to identify intellectual *disability*, not ability. Bright kids often obtain false negative results on the WAIS (by as much as 30 IQ points) because they are timed and extremely boring. The problem with timing is it thwarts the gifted individual's characteristic thinking style and their consideration of all response alternatives. Hence *Working Memory* and *Processing Speed* scores are usually invalid and therefore ignored by specialist examiners. Giftedness guru Linda Kreger Silverman asserts that gifted children score highest in the three WISC index areas most heavily loaded for abstract reasoning: *Verbal Comprehension*, *Visual Spatial*, and *Fluid Reasoning*. She also recognises the Wechsler's one outstanding advantage: *Block Design* is the single best IQ measure of visual-spatial ability.

Comprehensive IQ tests like the Wechsler and Stanford-Binet provide an indication of brain laterality. They measure and compare the functioning of the two brain hemispheres and yield scores for Auditory-Sequential versus Visual-Spatial processing. The assessor looks for discrepancy between these two main scores when searching for cognitive deficiency. As a simple example (because test analysis gets extremely complex), a person who scores normally on the visual-spatial test items but significantly lower on auditory-sequential tasks may suffer an auditory processing problem. Conversely, someone who scores normally on auditory items but too low on visual items may have a visual processing impairment. Based on these results, kids may be prescribed educational interventions, or referred to relevant specialists for further assessment and treatment. Ignorant educators typically label IQ tests 'elitist' when their main use is identifying developmental and other disorders that hinder learning.

BRAIN LATERALITY

After grasping the concept of intelligence, the next important variable to understand is *brain laterality*. The brain is divided into two main hemispheres, left and right. Lateralization of hemispheric functioning means one hemisphere dominates the other while processing incoming stimuli. Stimuli are detected by five major senses (vision, hearing, taste, smell, and touch) and two lesser known ones (proprioceptive and vestibular).

Psychiatrist Iain McGilchrist wrote a book that provoked a paradigm shift in the world of neuroscience.[445] Based on an extensive literature review, he identified the autonomous roles of each brain hemisphere, thereby dispelling the myth that language processing is localised left, and imagery right. McGilchrist's thesis is that the hemispheres perform complementary yet conflicting roles. Sensory input enters the right hemisphere, is sent to the left for processing, and returns to the right for a new synthesis. This process is mediated by the corpus callosum. Split-brain cases studies, where the corpus callosum is surgically severed, indicate the two hemispheres are capable of independent thoughts, feelings, sensations, memories, desires, and will. The author recognises that brains of normal individuals may show bias toward one or the other hemisphere.

---

[445] Ian McGilchrist (2019). *The Master and his Emissary: The Divided Brain and the Making of the Western World*. Yale University Press.

RIGHT HEMISPHERE: 'Dr Jekyll'

The right hemisphere is larger and more connected compared to the left. It is sensitive to testosterone and noradrenalin, and it regulates the heart and blood pressure in response to emotion. The right sees things holistically and in context. It takes a broader perspective, including the left hemisphere's content. It is primarily interested in living things, and things external to itself. The right is capable of compassion, empathy, altruism, and morality. It is flexible to change and deals with new information. The right can espouse another's perspective. It understands humour, metaphor, sarcasm, sadness, and regulates tears. It processes music and art. It is better at science and math problems and has a broader, more sophisticated vocabulary.

The right brain is responsible for processing all aspects of emotion except anger. It reads micro facial expression, body language, detects deceit, resists the usual train of thought, perceives anomaly, and questions authority. It applies common sense. The right hemisphere is the seat of creativity and interest in God. It is better at maintaining four of the five types of attention, vigilance, alertness, sustained, and divided attention. The right better integrates sensory input, and carries information on touch, pain, and body position.

The right brain has longer working memory. It also contains episodic memory, which is memory for personal experience and emotions. The right synthesises complex information, perceives complex visual or conceptual patterns, and can make connections between seemingly unrelated pieces of information. The right appreciates uniqueness and individuality, and is concerned with the personal, and what exists apart from us. It has a sense of the past and future, and so can foresee consequences and make predictions. The right hemisphere is near impossible to silence.

Key Hemispheric Differences

LEFT BRAIN	**RIGHT BRAIN**
Narrow focus	Wide, flexible focus
Known	New
Predictable	Possibility
Division	Integration
Parts	Whole
Abstraction	Context
Categories	Individuals
Sameness	Differences
Rationale	Reason
Dead	Living
Apathy	Empathy
Anger	Emotional understanding, expression, affinity
Criminal	Moral sense
Explicit	Implicit

LEFT HEMISPHERE: ‘Mr Hyde’

The left hemisphere perceives fragments of information. It can’t see the whole, or the bigger picture. Its narrow perspective ignores right brain content. The left hemisphere is only interested in public domain facts. It can’t cope with new information, interprets everything according to existing knowledge, and denies discrepancies that do not fit the established paradigm. It deals with linear, sequential pieces of information. It sees things as fixed and equivalent. It labels, types, categorises, collects, and organises things. It compartmentalises things in classes that make no sense. It processes basic arithmetic yet can’t solve complicated math or science problems. The left brain is incapable of imagination or creativity and can’t deal with novelty or unpredictable situations. Only after something new has been repeated and becomes overfamiliar and lifeless does it pass to the left hemisphere for storage.

The left brain has a limited vocabulary of simple, highly related words. It does not perceive humour, irony, metaphor, or any complex language features. It exhibits only one of the five types of attention - focussed. The left brain is preoccupied with man-made, inanimate objects, and machines. It does not appreciate poetry, music, or beautiful realistic art. It is only interested in abstract art that is depersonalised and breaks living things into unrecognisable parts. The left brain can’t recognise emotion or body language. It is incapable of eye contact, and only sees the mouth. The left has no social skills, no empathy, no sense of *Theory of Mind* (the ability to place oneself in another’s position and imagine what that person is thinking).

The left brain lacks common sense. Fuelled by dopamine, it is preoccupied with sex and food. Having no sense of the future or of consequences, the left settles for instant gratification. The left hemisphere cares nothing for others, has no conscience, and is incapable of feeling guilt. Anger is its only emotion. The left brain is capable of malice, manipulation, lying, and wilful denial. It seeks power and control. It sees people as objects of use, or prey. The left brain is passive and easily silenced.

LEFT-BRAINED COMMUNIST SOCIETY

Western Society is increasingly being dominated by left hemispheric processing and the suppression of right hemispheric ability. This shift is disturbing considering the left brain’s intellectual limitations and capacity for evil. Operating in isolation, the left brain exhibits every negative human quality that is poisoning our society: it is selfish, deluded, superficial, dysfunctional, egotistical, psychopathic, narrow-minded, atheistic, and plain dumb. The dominance of left hemispheric processing has implications for science, medicine, psychology, education, government – everything.

Communism is the perfect example of left-brain indoctrination & right-brain suppression!

When the right hemisphere functions abnormally, the left takes its place. This problem is associated with various DSM diagnoses including autism and psychopathy, two groups incapable of empathy and motivated by their desire to control. When left-brain dominant people assume positions of power within education, medicine, law or the secret services, the results are what we see manifesting in this increasingly permissive and perverse society. Indeed, white-collared psychopaths administer a hierarchy of mindless, easily silenced left-brain minions within every area of Australian government. Rock the boat within any sector and you will surely experience the manifestation of the *Black Network*.

IMPLICATIONS FOR VICTIMS

1. Left-Brain Education System

Schools and universities teach to the left-brain and reward left-brain learning responses. Extreme left-brain functioning is the optimal learning style required for success, which explains why individuals with high-functioning autism excel in this environment. Law and medicine are the pinnacle courses that successful high school graduates aim for and yet these do not screen for unmanaged autism. Science is particularly saturated with individuals who have autism and whose right hemispheres simply do not work. People who operate solely from the left brain see those who use their right brain as a source of threat or discomfort that they try to manage or silence altogether. The incidence of autism is increasing exponentially, so expect a future society void of right-hemispheric processing ability.

2. Left-Brain Health Industry

Health professionals are a product of left-brain academia. This partly explains why health professionals deny the effectiveness of new, innovative, and sometimes alternative mental health assessment and treatment methods. It accounts for why doctors present as cold, inflexible, and lacking the empathy and insight essential for understanding and treating complex cases of extreme abuse. It reveals why psychiatrists rely on medical equipment, rigid diagnostic classification systems, and unquestioning drug prescription.

The psychiatric industry rigidly adheres to an outdated and disproven theory that all mental health problems stem from a biochemical imbalance. The DSM was based on this theory. The mental health industry is still preoccupied with labelling patients according to the DSM and making patients take drugs which are proven to perpetuate depression and other mental health conditions. Even if a patient's symptoms do not fit the listed classifications, that patient will certainly be stuffed into one or more inappropriate DSM categories. The diagnoses invariably escalate over time until the patient is eventually labelled Borderline Personality Disordered and therefore unfixable. Psychiatry focuses on what is wrong with the patient instead of what has happened to cause their distress.

Psychiatry forbids consideration of alternative causes of patient symptomology, and psychologists operate under the jurisdiction of psychiatry. Being obsessed with lists of rules and set procedures, the left-brain health administrators invariably punish dissidents who dare apply right-brain consideration to their assessment and treatment approach. Being obsessed with power and control, doctors commonly abuse their authority to punish staff and bright victims who refuse to comply with their ineffective and harmful treatments. Such patients are typically labelled 'noncompliant' and said to lack insight. The patients can then be labelled a danger to themselves and society. They are then sectioned, or placed on community treatment orders, and forced to take drugs which have been proven to have detrimental side effects such as uncontrollable shaking, Parkinson symptoms, and a 25-year reduction in life expectancy.

McGilchrist notes: MPD, BPD, schizophrenia, anorexia, and self-harming are all characterised by dissociation, hypnotisability, left hemispheric hyperactivity, and a suppressed right brain. Interestingly, victims of extreme abuse are misdiagnosed with those very DSM labels. The author made relevant connections but missed the right-brain bigger picture: (a) unethical hypnosis is used to *cause* dissociation and split-personalities within victims, and (b) schizophrenia, anorexia, and self-harming are *symptoms* of extreme abuse.

According to McGilchrist, processing of new information occurs in a RIGHT → LEFT → RIGHT hemispheric sequence. New stimuli enter and are 'grounded' in the right hemisphere.

The stimuli then pass to the left for - I surmise - comparison to previous experience, labelling, sequencing, and basic language application. McGilchrist says the information is then returned to the right brain for integration and storage. In mind control victims, the brain hemispheres are intentionally split, the left hemisphere is suppressed, and stimuli are prevented from being processed by the left hemisphere; resulting in the trauma symptomology we will explore later.

RIGHT → LEFT → RIGHT Brain Processing Order

IMPLICIT PROCESSING

The author's discussion of the right hemisphere's capacity for implicit processing is a crucial consideration for MK-ULTRA and MK-DELTA victims who were specifically selected based on their right hemispheric processing ability. McGilchrist states:

> *In fact, reasoning is of different kinds, and though linear sequential argument is clearly better executed by the left hemisphere, some types of reasoning, including deduction, and some types of mathematical reasoning, are mainly dependent on the right hemisphere. More explicit reasoning is underwritten by the left hemisphere, less explicit reasoning (such as is often involved in problem solving, including scientific and mathematical problem solving) by the right hemisphere. There is a relation between the pleasurable 'aha!' phenomenon of insight and the right amygdala, which mediates interactions between emotions and higher frontal cognitive function. In fact, an extensive body of research now indicates that insight, whether mathematical or verbal, the sort of problem solving that happens when we are, precisely, not concentrating on it, is associated with activation in the right hemisphere…*

When teenage science prodigy David Adair met Stephen Hawking, Hawking asked Adair for the source of his mathematic formulas. Adair reluctantly admitted that most of his solutions came to him in dreams. Stephen Hawking then replied, 'I get a lot of my ideas through dreams also. We dream on the same wavelength.' This demonstrates the right brain's implicit (unconscious) processing ability. Implicit problem solving commonly occurs during a relaxed, wakeful state in high IQ individuals, such as during creativity which is a mild dissociative state. Implicit reasoning explains how someone instantly produces the answer to a complex question but can't explain how they got there. 'I just know,' is their typical response. This is because they do not consciously know, since their right hemisphere processed the problem unconsciously. Implicit processing ability is characteristic of highly intelligent individuals with a visual-spatial learning preference. The higher the IQ, the more pronounced the implicit processing ability.

I will now explain how perpetrators screened for implicit processing ability in MK-ULTRA and MK-DELTA candidates.

VISUAL-SPATIAL LEARNERS

Because peoples' brains are wired differently, they process incoming stimuli differently. These processing differences have been observed by measuring Alpha and Beta brainwave activity during cognitive tasks. These studies show that people of average IQ typically rely on the left hemisphere when performing cognitive tasks, and the left side is activated during these tasks. Owing to greater brain connectivity, both brain hemispheres are activated when high IQ individuals perform cognitive tasks. Highly intelligent people also show dominant Alpha activity in the right brain hemisphere during processing.[446]

Within the specialist field of giftedness education and educational psychology, those who favour their left brain during cognitive processing are called *Auditory-Sequential Learners* (ASLs) while those who favour their right, or are bilaterally activated during processing, are called *Visual-Spatial Learners* (VSLs).

Owing to left hemisphere dominance, ASLs tend to think in words, they respond best to educational content presented in sequence with a reliance on rote learning, phonetic language acquisition, written text, and simple verbal explanation. This group are good at reading a textbook from start to finish, focussing on the class teacher, and regurgitating rote content in exams. However, this group can’t understand what they learn. Contextual understanding relies on right hemispheric activation, which they simply do not have. ASLs comprise most students. The ASLs who perform optimally in this traditional classroom (which is geared exclusively to ASLs) typically gain the top university entry scores.

Successful students learn by rote memory but can’t understand what they learn.

According to McGilchrist, deductive reasoning activates the right hemisphere’s visual areas in the absence of visual stimuli. Activation of the right hemisphere allows the gifted group to think in pictures. Hence, when you verbally describe something to a high IQ VSL, if they are interested in what you say, and are focused on your content, they will immediately convert your words into a movie in their head. Your words will then be permanently stored in this visual format, and the listener will never forget what you told them. This is called *eidetic* memory. You might know it as photographic memory. The higher the IQ, the more pronounced this ability.

I once asked a successful lawyer what separates average from exceptional lawyers. ‘Photographic memory!’ he quipped. The ability to visualise makes right hemispheric learning and processing far superior. The advantage to quickly recalling relevant legislation and cases is obvious. Additionally, the gifted individual’s lateral thinking ability serves them well in statutory interpretation.

Owing to their superior right brain functioning, gifted individuals only need to learn a concept once to understand and permanently remember it. This assists rapid knowledge acquisition. Yet high IQ’s must *understand* something in order to learn and memorise it. Hence, intelligent kids incessantly question everything. They are independent, lateral thinkers who make the best leaders. Intellectually gifted students prefer a holistic learning approach which starkly contrasts traditional schooling methods based on auditory-sequential repetition and phonetics. If permitted to learn the way their brains are wired to, exceptionally gifted children typically complete high school or university before their age peers finish primary school. Stanford University run a special school program for children who score IQ 145+ on the Wechsler or SB5, where they can do university level work from age five years. I know because my daughter was enrolled in their distance education program.

Australian students who score IQ 130+ on comprehensive measures are neglected educationally and psychologically. Consequently, they drop out of school mentally by Grade 3, and physically before high school graduation. The brightest students typically do not pursue tertiary studies in law or medicine. This well contributes to why most doctors and psychiatrists are ignorant and ineffective when it comes to working with victims of extreme abuse. It also explains why so many surgeons are butchers, since surgical skill requires high right brain visual-spatial processing ability. Generally, doctors are only good at following a sequential set of steps, such as anaesthesiology, but are quite useless, even dangerous, when faced with novel situations.

---

[446] A. Jahidin et al. (2013). Asymmetry Pattern of Resting EEG for Different IQ Levels, *Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences*, 97, 246-251.

Doctors are particularly susceptible to the Dunning-Kruger Effect, a cognitive bias in which people of average IQ have illusory superiority and mistakenly assess their intelligence level as greater than it is. They come to the field of medicine assuming they already possess all they need to know, when their average IQ level prevents them from understanding more complex concepts and discovering a whole body of information that sits outside their left-brain capacity and knowledge base.

CREATIVITY

Creativity is not synonymous with intellectual giftedness, meaning a person can be gifted and not so creative, or creative and not gifted. This puzzles me since creativity is associated with the right hemisphere, and high IQ people exhibit such high activation in this area. Highly intelligent people can produce different profiles where they score higher on left or right brain tasks. And people can be right brain dominant without being high IQ. So, I deduce creativity has to do with right hemispheric activity.

Lewis Terman defined genius as an individual who measured IQ 180+ on the Stanford Binet. CIA psychologist John Gittinger considered genius to be a combination of exceptionally high IQ plus extremely high creative ability. The creative and gifted child who scored profoundly on visual-spatial test items was the CIA's prime mind control target. The 'creative genius' was the ideal candidate for the range of CIA programs including MK-DELTA and Stargate which I discuss later.

Until recently, it has been impossible for mainstream psychologists to test creativity, because no one had defined the variable 'creativity' such that it can be operationalised and psychometrically tested. Mainstream scientists are only now starting to publish evidence of what I was mocked for saying years ago, that the CIA used brain scanning to assess victims for creativity. For example, a 2018 study used fMRI scans to show that creative thinking ability is characterized by a distinct brain connectivity profile.[447] Researchers reliably predicted an individual's ability to generate original ideas, from the strength of functional connectivity within a brain network associated with creative ability.

SENSORY PROCESSING DISORDER

Their unique brain structure and function enables high IQ individuals to receive and process greater amounts of sensory input at once. Gifted people can detect and respond to sensory stimuli more quickly. They can think more complex and abstract thoughts, scan visual images quicker, detect visual and cognitive patterns, and make connections between seemingly unrelated bits of information. They can read micro facial expressions and body language, perceive what others are thinking, and accurately predict their responses. These abilities make high IQ individuals good at researching, detecting, code breaking, and intelligence gathering. Their quick reflexes and superior hand-eye coordination allow them to control a speeding vehicle and reverse a trailer with high accuracy. Their superb memories and auditory processing capacity allow them to function as human tape-recorders and to rapidly acquire foreign languages. In a military setting, their high visual-spatial processing IQ scores flag them as potential elite sniper squad recruits. Combine superior reaction time, hand-eye coordination, physical strength, agility, sniper skills, physical fitness, and a whole lot of ability enhancement via brainwashing – and you have a potential super soldier. This might explain why the CIA targeted high IQ visual-spatial learners.

---

[447] R.E. Beaty et al. (2018). Robust prediction of individual creative ability from brain functional connectivity, PNAS, Jan 30, 115:5, 1087-92.

Unfortunately, that which enables gifted individuals to perform impressive cognitive tasks is the same thing that makes them hypersensitive to sensory stimuli. The higher the IQ, the greater the sensitivity to light, noise, touch, smell, taste, and emotional stimuli. Such sensitivity has been labelled a developmental condition, *Sensory Processing Disorder*. SPD contributes to why gifted people often turn to drugs and alcohol, to subdue the constant overwhelming barrage of sensory input.

Note that people on the autism spectrum are also prone to SPD. While they share hypersensitivity and certain cognitive abilities, autism must not be confused with giftedness. Remember McGilchrist's observation that these developmental disorders feature profound right hemispheric abnormality. In stark contrast, gifted individuals demonstrate exceptional right hemispheric functioning. Yet ignorant and jealous health professionals routinely misdiagnose intellectual giftedness as high-functioning autism.

Extreme visual-spatial processing ability renders gifted individuals susceptible to PTSD, and this can confound diagnosis. The high IQ victim is so sensitive that merely hearing a traumatic story second-hand affects them as though they witnessed the event first-hand. They turn the verbal rendition of the event into an internal movie so that the traumatic scene is permanently stored in memory and may be replayed. Their right hemisphere repeatedly plays an internal movie of a trauma incident.

This hypersensitivity makes the trauma-based nature of mind control programming especially painful for high IQ victims. Fundamental brainwashing techniques involve overwhelming the victim's nervous system with sensory stimuli. Sensory overload is achieved via the parallel infliction of loud screeching sounds, foul smells, electrocution, and forcing the eyelids open to view horrific images.

Gifted individuals have a greater capacity for empathy, to picture themselves in others' shoes, and anticipate how others might feel, think, and respond in a situation. This tendency to over-empathise also contributes to the gifted individual's sensory overload. Their capacity for empathy makes the sight of tortured animals and children extra painful. Their empathic nature places victims at risk of revolting against their handlers, which is why CIA perpetrators focus on breaking the individual's innate concern for humanity and redirecting loyalty toward cult members and fellow soldiers within their Delta units.

* * *

THE IQ END GAME

I no longer feel guilty confessing my IQ score, especially since subsequent events have validated this memory to my satisfaction. As part of my six years of psychology training, I was required to practise IQ assessment with colleagues. I played guinea pig for a student peer in 2007, prior to my vestibular stroke. I blitzed the entire Wechsler test battery, especially Block Design which I threw down as quick as humanly possible. I even blitzed the math problems when I suffer math phobia (yep, it's a real thing). I remember feeling so relaxed and unthreatened during testing, I calculated the math and blurted out the answers the moment my friend finished asking the questions. We were both stunned.

My therapist assessed me in early 2014. I underwent a battery of tests, the results of which indicated high IQ (despite my stroke damage). I also completed working memory training and my final learning index for this was more than double the average. My therapist provided an interviewer the following answers to questions regarding my intelligence level:

> ***Q. In addition to her cognitive assessment presented via the QEEG tests, what is your opinion as to Fiona's level of intelligence?***
> A. Fiona possesses a robust cognitive profile that is highly adaptive. Her cognition was assessed utilising the *IntegNeuro* and elevated scores were seen across the spectrum. To further support this she has a fast-Alpha peak of 11hz, as noted in her QEEG indicating high intelligence.
>
> ***Q. Would you describe Fiona Barnett as being gifted in any way?***
> A. Fiona is certainly gifted in many ways. She is a brilliant writer, researcher and thinker. He memory recall is astounding and her ability to put facts and incidents together to solve or resolve is phenomenal. She is artistic and apparently musical. She could be a brilliant teacher and a brilliant lawyer. I just hope she is arguing my case if that is ever necessary.
>
> ***Q. What do you understand about people who are gifted in some way?***
> A. Gifted people can present in many different ways. They are often highly sensitive, easily bored by the mundane aspects of life, and often brutally honest to the point of being socially questionable. They have an intensity in energy, imagination, intellect, sensitivity and emotion. They are a particularly vulnerable group, often rejected by peers due to their different tastes in life, interests etc. Different IQ levels also present with different needs, interests and sensitivities.

The greatest dose of IQ validation was injected when I had my own two children assessed for giftedness on the Stanford Binet 5. My kids were tested at age 8 years following problems with boredom and underachievement at school. My eldest scored in the >99.99th percentile, reaching the ceiling on certain subtests including visual-spatial processing. My youngest child scored one IQ point higher than her sister.

Sydney’s giftedness guru explained to me that my eldest daughter had the intellectual capacity of a 35-year-old. ‘She could be one in a million… but I’d need to assess her on the LM to know.’ The educational psychologist then advised me to pull my child out of her so-called giftedness program, concluding, ‘No school in the country can cater for this.’

Upon received my eldest child’s comprehensive psychological report, I exclaimed to the assessor, ‘Did you assess my child – or *me*?! What you wrote perfectly describes me.’ Then, after receiving the youngest’s report, I felt compelled to ask, ‘I don’t understand these newer tests and what their scores mean. I relate better to the old tests. How does the SB5 compare to the L-M?’

‘You can’t really compare them. It’s harder to achieve a high score on the new test. You only had to score highly in one area on the old test to boost your IQ score. You have to do well on every subtest to score highly now.’

‘So, can you give me a rough idea. Based on their SB5 scores and your experience at having tested kids on both tests, what do you expect my kids to score on the old L-M?’

‘In the one-seventies to one-eighties.’

‘I recall being tested on the SB L-M at age five. Obviously, I can’t access my original report, but I recall scoring one eighty overall, two hundred on visual-spatial processing. Is that score feasible?’

‘Absolutely! There’s three of you, all the same.’

The psychologist who tested my kids is the only Australian I trust to obtain an accurate assessment of a gifted child; the only professional I found who demonstrated an appreciation of the implications of being bright. Most mental health professionals and educators, including those who claim expertise in giftedness, are in fact useless. They are clueless to the basics of giftedness and visual-spatial processing, never mind nuances like Linda Silverman’s discovery of an obscure spike on the bell curve at the IQ 160 mark, or that IQ 160+ kids are susceptible to a unique type of *reactive hypoglycaemia*, or that such kids are prone to a type of *existentialist depression*. Consequently, giftedness characteristics are commonly misdiagnosed as indicators of autism, Aspergers, mania, depression, OCD, ADHD and BPD. Abnormality in the form of genius is routinely overlooked and mislabelled insanity.

If mental health professionals do not understand the basics of giftedness and visual-spatial learning, and if they label gifted people nuts just for being gifted, how can they begin to provide adequate services to high IQ victims of MK-ULTRA mind control?

While Australian educators ignore the intellectually gifted student - *others are watching*. School children are quietly tracked via performance on national competitions, online math and science programs, and participation in gifted education holiday camps. Australian Junior high school students identified as intellectually gifted are encouraged to participate in *The JASON Project*, an online science curriculum program purportedly designed to motivate and inspire students to pursue a science career. It was developed by NASA, NOAA, and the National Geographic Society, among others.

Universities are hunting grounds for recruitment into Australia’s secret services. Students who perform outstandingly at public universities are nominated by lecturers for life membership in an international academic society called *Golden Key*. At the end of their university degree, Golden Key graduates with an unblemished background and who participated in Golden Key training sessions hosted at Sydney’s head Freemason Lodge receive email invitations from ASIO, Australian Federal Police, and ASIS to jump the rigorous application process to the interview stage for potential employment.

And when the gifted science students graduate, they can join the real JASON Group of elite scientists who continue the Nazi legacy in deep underground military facilities, working on top secret projects that I discuss in the following chapter. Projects involving anti-gravity, stargates, plasma weapons, hadron colliders, and transhumanism - the forbidden mixing of human, animal and alien materials to develop the ultimate vaccination, with the goal of genetically altering human DNA. The resultant vaccine promises to make soldiers immune to sleep, hunger and injury, to enhance our physical, intellectual and spiritual capacities, and disengage the death gene. The recipients will then become all that Hollywood has been promising its viewers – immortal, superior men. . . supermen. Perhaps then, the communist egalitarianism that the Luciferian system has been pushing for will finally be achieved. This may be the fundamental reason why naturally gifted, bilateral processors are quashed like second class citizens, and why our situation will not improve.

If the Bible is to be taken seriously, God built into mankind a group of natural born leaders. The Biblical description of King David is a fine example of this select-group. David demonstrated classic giftedness characteristics including intensity, spiritual awareness, extreme social justice, loyalty, empathy, passion, moral reasoning, higher-order thinking, musical brilliance, and a talent for architecture and engineering. He passed his physical and psychological characteristics to his son Solomon, the most intelligent human who will ever be.

If today's gifted individuals were acknowledged, accommodated, and permitted to assume their natural leadership roles, instead of the left-brained psychopaths who educate and govern us, our society might better reflect the prosperity of Solomon's age instead of the evil, crime-ridden, decaying cesspit that it is.

Out of jealousy and a desire to be just like God, the enemy sought to destroy God's creation and replace it with an imitation. In this process, God's tall poppies were cut down - and idiocy took the throne. Failing to find his own dirt, the enemy manipulated, threatened, and deceived our bright minds into rearranging God's creation, his ultimate goal being the production of an imitation of God's elite which the devil calls his own.

* * *

Personality Assessment System

I've heard John [Gittinger] say, there's always something that someone wants; and with the PAS you can find out what it is. It's not necessarily sex or booze. Sometimes it's status, or recognition, or security.

- CIA Psychologist

Some people get flowers and chocolates as tokens of their partner's affection. I received dusty old IQ tests. In 2009, my husband began purchasing redundant IQ assessments on eBay. I found Jon's latest spending spree mildly amusing, like the time someone broke my favourite tea pot, and Jon made five eBay purchases before he attained an exact replacement. The various first edition Stanford Binet tests meant nothing to me, and I didn't quite understand what Jon's intention was - until *it* arrived. A mint condition SB L-M. I opened the box, took a brief look at its gleaming contents and sank into shock. I ran my fingers over the familiar pieces as my being was instantly transported back to 1974.

'I *know* this…' I whispered, overwhelmed by validation. '*You found it.*' Tears welled in my eyes. 'You found my test…'

* * *

GITTINGER: EVIL GENIUS

I was assessed on the SB L-M combined with the Wechsler *Block Design* when I was five years old. The optimal time to test for high intelligence is when the child is old enough to concentrate and understand, but prior to entering school where the highly variable quality of education acts as a confounding variable. I was assessed at Holsworthy Army Base by head CIA psychologist John W. Gittinger.

John Gittinger was the greatest psychometric testing expert the world has never known. An expert in interrogation and brainwashing, Gittinger served as the CIA's first operational psychologist, travelling the globe, collecting and advising on MK-ULTRA mind control methods. That is why he travelled to Australia and supervised my brain washing and reprogramming.

PERSONALITY ASSESSMENT SYSTEM

With CIA funding, Gittinger developed the PAS (Personality Assessment System), the most complex, versatile psychological test ever created. Mainstream psychologists are blind to the very existence of the PAS, never mind its staggering scope. The test was scarcely mentioned in my psychology textbooks which presented it as a mainstream tool for educational, vocational, and clinical work. The PAS was in fact the CIA's template for creating multiple personalities within child victims of mind control. The intelligence sector used the PAS to:

- Profile targets for recruitment as CIA agents;
- Profile politicians, entertainers and businessmen for blackmail and control by identifying their weaknesses (e.g., sexual proclivity and perversion);
- Profile whistle-blowers for tailored harassment methods;

- Tailor interrogation or torture methods to personality types;
- Profile international leaders and citizens in preparation for CIA infiltration and overthrow of their governments;
- Select candidates for psycho-energetic CIA programs including Remote Viewing, Project Stargate, and the Gateway Process;
- Profile international secret police;
- Identify suitable child prostitute and soldier candidates.
- Tailor the creation of multiple personalities to a victim's hemispheric processing style and brain wave patterning.

Based solely on Wechsler subtest scores, Gittinger could determine an individual's personality type plus the environmental factors that shaped them, accurately predict their reactions to social situations and stressors, identify their strengths and weaknesses, and match them to job tasks or roles. He could also reverse this process and predict Wechsler test scores from observed behaviour - something previously unheard of.

By all reports, no one could replicate Gittinger's understanding of the PAS. I surmise this is mainly due to the secretive nature of the PAS. Gittinger worked for the CIA during the entire time (1950s and 60s) he developed the PAS. Not surprisingly, most information about the PAS remains classified. Gittinger's original (1964) *Atlas*, essential for test interpretation, was never published, although a civilian version was published 30 years later. Most of the CIA-funded research conducted on the PAS at MK-ULTRA research epicentres was not published either, as this was fed directly into the CIA database. PAS research hubs included the University of Colorado, Columbia University, Ohio University, and Stanford University. PAS research was subsequently transferred to CIA cut-out organisations: SRI International, Psychological Assessments Associates Inc., and MARS Measurement Associates.

Another reason the PAS is unknown is because influential psychologists including Eysenck rejected it as impossible. Most psychologists are too left-brain to comprehend and implement the PAS. They feel threatened by nobodies like Gittinger who create something as brilliant as the PAS without possessing the obligatory PhD. Eysenck felt particularly threatened since he fancied himself an expert on intelligence and personality. Tellingly, his personality test is not used by the CIA, nor anyone else. I resented rote learning Eysenck's left-brained crap for exams because it was incomprehensible and incorrect.

The person who built the foundation of my knowledge base concerning intelligence theory and psychological testing was Gittinger himself. While studying psychology and gifted education, I was subconsciously guided by what Gittinger explained and demonstrated throughout my childhood. Each time he abused me, every time I was in his presence, he explained exactly what he was doing and why. This was his teaching approach, and it worked. I took to psychometric testing, interpretation, and report writing like I had been studying it for years – because I had.

Gittinger stored knowledge of the PAS and other relevant test instruments in my implicit memory system. Indications of this leaked during my psychology studies, notably a 2009 lecture on the MMPI (*Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory*). At the start of the class, students were provided preliminary information about an actual, deidentified female client, including her presenting symptomology plus a printout of the raw data from her MMPI test results. Our instructor asked us to examine the information and share our initial impressions with the class. I flicked over the pages, rapidly scanned the graphs, raised my hand, and asserted, ‘This client should not work with a male therapist.’ My classmates shot me a perplexed look, while our lecturer swallowed his surprise. Two hours later, our lecturer shared the conclusions that a psychiatric case management team came to after having worked with the client for six months. Their main finding was that the client should not work with a male therapist.

When I told my therapist that I was trying to decipher the CIA’s application of the PAS, he exclaimed, ‘You could write an entire book just on the PAS. You *are* the PAS!’

Understanding the PAS requires knowledge of intelligence and brain laterality, which is why I provided a detailed introduction to both concepts. The fundamental premise of the PAS is that intelligence and personality elements are present at birth but can be modified by external factors during development. The PAS recognises the significance of brain laterality, that some people are left-brain dominant, some right brain dominant, some are bilateral processors (meaning both brain hemispheres are highly active during cognitive processing), and some show no particular bias.

PAS interpretations were based on Wechsler subtest scaled scores, plus age and sex. Interpretations were derived from Gittinger’s *Atlas* (1964) which contained a description of every possible personality type. These descriptions were derived from many thousands of Weschler profiles submitted by psychologists worldwide. I doubt the CIA publicly divulged the true size and source of the PAS normative sample.

Gittinger identified three core personality dimensions (Cognitive, Procedural and Social). The resultant Primitive personality structure may change in the years preceding adolescence when it becomes fixed. Change stems from pressure during childhood from parents, siblings, teachers, or peers to acquire abilities absent from the original personality structure. This process is called *Compensation*, the most important dynamic in the PAS. Compensation results in a stable Basic personality level. Further change may occur after adolescence via Modification, which results in a third, *Surface* level of personality. Surface level personality changes are unstable and can break down under stress. Modification and the Surface personality are what we see when interacting with a person. Compensation and the Basic personality are what we learn about someone during closer association, and what they feel inside themselves.

MK-ULTRA victim files contain pages of PAS notation. This coding system starts as a nine-symbol shorthand to denote the strength of the three original (Primitive) tendencies (Cognitive, Emotional and Social), and the degree and direction of the resultant two adjustment levels (Compensation and Modification). Capital letters indicate the initial letter in the name of the three core (Primitive) tendencies. Thus, the letter E stands for Externalizer, I for Internaliser. Compensation, or the lack of it, is shown by a lower-case letter placed after the Primitive tendency capital letter. For example, Ic stands for Compensated I. The code becomes far more complicated than what has been published, until a victim’s records are full of PAS-based algebraic formula.

CORE PERSONALITY DIMENSIONS

The first core personality dimension (Cognitive) can be loosely compared to the idea of introvert versus extrovert. It can also be defined by what the child finds intellectually stimulating. The Primitive Cognitive dimension is determined by the Wechsler *Digit Span*, a genetically determined measure of auditory processing which is marginally influenced by learning. *Arithmetic* and *Information* indicate Basic and Surface levels.

I v E

Internalisers (I) are preoccupied with their own thoughts and ideas. They prefer to think than do. They are insulated and comfortable alone with their own company. They appear passive, aloof and emotionless. They can work efficiently in a distracting environment. They can easily store and retrieve information, which is why they score well on the *Digit Span* subtest. The I type is characteristically schizoid, and in the extreme autistic. I's are externally pressured to compensate by being more outgoing.

Externalizers (E) score low on *Digit Span*. E types are focused and dependent on their environment. They respond spontaneously and directly to people, and mainly detect changes in the environment. E's rely on their senses, are easily distracted, and do not like being alone. In the extreme, E's are moody and dominated by events. E's are pressured to compensate by responding less, being more self-sufficient, and more ideationally aware.

The second core dimension (Procedural) refers to a person's learning style, sensitivity to stimuli, and how they solve mechanical or procedural tasks. *Block Design* determines the Primitive Procedural level. *Similarities* and *Comprehension* indicate Basic and Surface personality levels.

R v F

Rigid (R) people are preoccupied with detail. R's are disposed toward order and organisation. They learn by rote, in a sequential manner, and don't need to understand the whole concept. They react to a limited number of specific, well-defined stimuli. Because they see one thing at a time, R types accept the external environment at face value. They can concentrate and are not easily distracted or confused. R's do not cope with multiple stimuli simultaneously. They are insensitive, logic-tight, and self-centred. In the extreme, R's are rigid and can't see the forest for the trees. R's are pressured to be more sensitive and flexible.

Flexible (F) people need to understand something to learn it. They must understand the reason behind a task before they will even attempt it. The F sees the whole picture and perceives connections between people and the environment. F's are overly aware of their environment and respond simultaneously to various stimuli. Consequently, they are easily distracted and confused, and find concentration more difficult. They are intuitive, imaginative and sensitive. They tolerate ambiguity, and notice subtleties and nuances. Their confusion and ability to perceive all aspects of a situation makes them unsure of the world. In the extreme, the F is chaotic. F's are pressured to concentrate, be less sensitive, and restrict their awareness.

A v U

The third dimension (Social) is a measure of social intelligence, or a person's ability to adapt to new social and cultural settings. The Primitive level is determined by the Wechsler *Picture Arrangement* subtest. Compensation and Modification are determined by *Picture Completion* and *Object Assembly*. High *Picture Arrangement* scores indicate socio-cultural adaptability.

Role Adaptive (A) types score highly on the *Picture Arrangement* subtest. A's are charismatic, charming, captivating, and attractive. They are socially versatile and confident. They can appear conforming and conventional, even if they are not. Their developmental environment determines whether they use their appeal to enhance, exploit, or avoid relationships. In the extreme, A's are social chameleons who lack integrity.

Conversely, Role Uniform (U) types present as socially awkward, aloof and inept. They tend to be socially ignored, anxious and avoidant. In the extreme, U's present the same in every social situation, even if this is inappropriate. U's are pressured or seduced into trying to be more sociable and charming.

Primitive Temperaments

The PAS recognises 8 possible base temperament combinations, as this table shows:[448]

Primitive	Traits	Style
IRA	Self-motivated, organized, procedural, socially effective.	Political
IRU	Self-motivated, self-concerned, organized, socially aloof.	Scientific
IFA	Self-centred, sensitive, socially active.	Artistic
IFU	Self-centred, sensitive, aloof.	Contemplative
ERA	Outgoing, organized, socially skilled.	Entrepreneurial
ERU	Environmentally attuned, organised, procedural, but socially restrained.	Technocratic
EFA	Outgoing, relating, sensitive, and socially involving.	Theatrical
EFU	Outgoing, sensitive, relating, dependent but socially awkward.	Defensive

RELEVANCE OF INTROVERSION: HYPNOTISABILITY

Gittinger targeted gifted female introverts. High IQ individuals tend to be introverts, hence the PAS Internaliser dimension is determined by high scores on Wechsler subtest items. A clue to the relevance of introversion is found in an excerpt from *The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism*:

> *In some research, women were easier to hypnotize than men, but only by a small percentage. In both sexes, the higher the IQ, the greater the hypnotic susceptibility. In one study, bright female introverts were most susceptible. Extroverts forget more over time than introverts, but they are better at retrieving information from deeply buried memory, especially if it's relatively inaccessible. Introverts are more affected by punishment, extroverts by reward. That data could be interpreted to make introverts preferred candidates for hypno-programming. They have better memory for unconscious instructions, less ability to recover repressed memory, and are more controllable by suggested suffering. More formal evaluations of hypnotisability are derived from Rorschach or TAT tests and from brainwave patterns (more alpha indicates more susceptibility). If the subject had an imaginary playmate in childhood, that also indicates susceptibility.*[449]

From I to E

Knowing my performance on the WAIS 10 years ago, I can see I was born an IFA. My mother clearly recalls my being an Internaliser until Nanna Holowczak took me to Canberra for a week when I was 3 years old. I left home an introvert and returned to my mother as an extrovert. Mengele split my core personality during that Canberra trip. I vaguely recall a discussion I had with Gittinger at age 14, in which he said being born an introvert did not matter because he could easily change an introvert into an extrovert.

---

[448] https://www.pasf.org/pasfj/bintro.pdf

[449] Carla Emery (1998). *Secret Don't Tell: The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism*.

I surmise my programmers forced a permanent change to my core personality in Canberra when I was aged 3. I wondered why I was changed from an I to an E. Perhaps it had something to do with the CIA's research findings that 100 percent of schizophrenics are Internalisers (with 80 percent being R's, and 75 percent U's) and they wanted to eliminate any predisposition to my breaking in that direction? Or perhaps they wanted to turn me from a secret-keeper into a talker? Or maybe they wanted me dependent on others instead of being so independent? Or else they wanted to distract me from reflecting inwards and discovering and fixing my dissociation? Then I read an article by one of Gittinger's CIA assistants which addressed the issue:

> *Compensation not only results in a conditioned change in the individual's behaviour; it builds in emotional qualities that shape the individual's motives, motivations, anxieties, loyalties, goals and guilt… If he is allowed to mature without the pressures and stresses of compensation, he acquires a basic personality that is psychologically very comfortable for him, and very consistent with his primitive style; but he will also be very bland, under motivated, and a sociologically immature person. His temperament and his sensitivities will be self-centred, and he will show little evidence of ambition or responsibility. In those areas where compensation takes place, the individual will show considerable drive, motivation and energy. Thus, the compensated I (or Ic) becomes a basic E (or e*, in PAS notation), and outperforms the primitive E's in being outgoing and environmentally active.* [450]

From this I deduce, compensated people make more passionate, motivated, loyal, and responsible DELTA soldiers and cult leaders

REFERENCE GROUP MODEL

Psychologist David Saunders joined Gittinger in 1957 and helped turn his intuitive use of the PAS into a standardised method which other CIA programmers could replicate. A talented statistician, Saunders created a mathematical *Reference Group Model* to supplement the PAS. He also helped develop PAS code into algebraic formula to make programming predictions and decisions.

David Saunders' *Reference Group Model* stemmed from a systematic examination of Wechsler data from many thousands of individuals. His model classified and categorised people into three dimensions (Primitive, Affiliations, and Stress) based on shared psychometric and behavioural characteristics. Gittinger's PAS combined with Saunders' *Reference Group Model* resulted in a tool that profiled every possible personality type, addressed every conceivable human behaviour, and accurately predicted reactions to any given situation.

The CIA used the PAS to profile mind control victims, identify weak points, and predict responses to the stress of the MK-ULTRA process. Perpetrators used PAS results to tailor CIA torture methods to the victim's personality type and psychological capacity. They used the *Reference Groups* to select an Alter's brain location, neural circuitry, personality, abilities, and role. This entire process was done in conjunction with EEG readings of the victim's brain, based on early PAS research on the relationship between PAS results and brainwave activity, particularly alpha activity (which also indicates IQ level).

---

[450] Marshall N. Heyman (1982). A Brief Explanation of the Personality Assessment System. *Personality Assessment System J*, 1:1 Spring, 7-10.

The Reference Model's Information Processing Style dimension includes four types of brain-hemispheric development: Left-Brained, Right-Brained, Bilateral, or Externally Controlled. Left and Bilateral processors are skilled at logical reasoning. Right-Brain and Bilateral processors are skilled at pattern recognition. Externally controlled types are not particularly skilled at either. Right-brained groups are predominantly female, while Left-brained are mainly male.

The reference Model's Stress Response Style encompasses three approaches to coping with multiple stimuli: *Poly-Actives* thrive on simultaneously accomplishing multiple tasks; *Pro-Actives* can only cope with finishing one task at a time; while *Re-Actives* must be instructed and guided to cope with any task.

Although there have been revisions, the following 1984 version of the PAS *Reference Groups* is the closest to my age as a victim and so the most relevant. The 96 groups are arranged in the following table which highlights the most important relationships among the groups:

Processing Style	**Right-Brain Dominant**	**Bilateral Processor**	**Left-Brain Dominant**	**Externally Controlled**
Stress Response Style	4	5	6	a
Pro-Active	Coach	Teacher	Manager	Disciple
	Specialist	Programmer	Exemplar	Mystic
	Individualist	Acolyte	Professional	Dedicated
	Pastor	Philosopher	Auditor	Puritan
	Nurturant	Conservator	Pragmatist	Dogmatist
	Consultant	Iconoclast	Technician	Sophist
	Counsellor	Physician	Tactician	Aristocrat
	Catalyst	Mediator	Analyst	Spartan
	3	8	7	b
Poly-Active	Showman	Seeker	Implementer	Exhibitionist
	Performer	Dilettante	Organiser	Enthusiast
	Devotee	Voyeur	Advocate	Perverse
	Director	Naturalist	Politician	Chauvinist
	Booster	Theorist	Aide	Empiricist
	Volunteer	Activist	Leader	Chameleon
	Entertainer	Perceiver	Entrepreneur	Polymorph
	Player	Spectator	Salesman	Speculum
*1999 Additions	(Priest)			
	2	9	1	c
Re-Active	Artisan	Authoritarian	Rule-keeping	Yeoman

	Operator	Obsessive	Team-Membership	Automaton
	Galatean	Detached	Opportunist	Possessed
	Interdependent	Counter-dependent	Competitor	Gladiator
	Adherent	Achiever	Participant	Reactor
	Compliant	Controlled	Game-Player	Actor
	Narcissist	Autocrat	Scorekeeper	Actress
	Hedonist	Counteractive	Prima Donna	Contrarian
*1999 Additions				(Warrior) (Soldier)
PAS Primitives	ERU	ERA		
	IRU	IRA		
	IFU	IFA		
	EFU	EFA		

**1999 revised role additions that impress me as pertinent to MK-ULTRA programming.*

The *Reference Group* table matches the complex Alter systems found in MK-ULTRA mind control victims. The model identifies the correct hemispheric location of each artificially created Alter's independent neural circuitry. It also clusters multiple roles relevant to one position within the cult hierarchy; for example, during her position as Grande Dame, Patricia Ann Conlon performed every role listed in Group 5 below:

Role	**Application**
Teacher	Instructed children in all aspects of cult life
Programmer	Principal MK-ULTRA handler and programmer
Acolyte	Assisted in Luciferian ritual ceremonial duties
Philosopher	Highly academic and intellectual
Conservator	Oversaw and protected cult trainees from injury
Iconoclast	Attacked established beliefs and institutions as a Marxist Communist ALP pioneer feminist
Physician	Cult herbalist, ritual surgeon, and counsellor
Mediator	Liaised between members of the cult hierarchy, CIA staff, and victims

The eight possible Primitive temperament combinations, and 12 ways for each combination to develop, results in 96 Reference Groups. Each Reference Group represents a combination of one of three Stress Response styles, with one of four patterns of Information Processing. This 3 x 4 x 8 factor arrangement allows for 4,096 personality combinations. Add to this the effect of the other PAS factors I have not mentioned here, and we can begin to fathom how the PAS comprehensively accounts for individual personality differences. Over 1.7 million different personality combinations may be calculated using the PAS. This figure supports my hypothesis that (a) the PAS is a prescription for multiple personality programming, and (b) the PAS accounts for the massive split-personality systems that 'poly-fragmented' victims and therapists have reported for decades.

* * *

CIA PROFILING

> *Spying is attractive to loonies. Psychopaths, who are people who spend their lives making up stories, revel in the field.*
>
> - Henry Murray, MK-ULTRA psychologist

It is important to understand the difference between the various CIA roles and responsibilities. CIA officers are those formally recruited and trained. CIA agents are the scumbags whom the officers blackmail, bribe, entice, threaten into being used. CIA assets are mind controlled assassins.

Several retired CIA employees wrote their memoires. Some detailed the psychometric testing they underwent during the recruitment process. Their testimonies reveal much about the application of the PAS, and the truth of CIA black operations.

Former CIA case officer Ralph McGehee[451] describes Gittinger's PAS as the 'most revealing test' he undertook. He described the ideal CIA case officer as the Externalized-Rigid-Adaptive (ERA) personality. ERA types possess the following characteristics:

- Magnetic, charming and captivating
- Make good first impressions
- Move easily in a variety of situations
- Appropriately express genuine or fake feelings
- Chameleon like (All things to all people)
- Can spot weaknesses in others and use these to their advantage
- React to a limited number of specific, well-defined stimuli
- Learn by rote
- Don't insist on perspective
- Psychologically insulated
- Have restricted awareness
- Self-centred and insensitive to others.

McGehee said the CIA rejected Case Officer candidates who have perspective, see subtleties, think before they act, and remain true to themselves despite outside social pressures.

McGehee himself scored highly (143) on the IQ testing component but noted this did not pose a problem. He said his application for the role of CIA case officer was almost rejected because the PAS identified him as Flexible. McGehee said his saving grace was his college football experience. The CIA recruited football players for paramilitary operations because they were 'not overly intellectual' They also recruited men with military backgrounds, or those who possessed some special talent.

---

[451] Ralph W. McGehee (1983). *Deadly Deceits: My 25 Years in the CIA*. Ocean Press.

In summary, the CIA prefer case officers to be externally controlled, left-brain sequential thinkers who: subvert their individuality for the team's benefit, blindly follow orders, can't join the dots to see the CIA's criminal objectives, won't question the CIA's motives, and don't care anyhow about the people the CIA use and abuse during their covert operations. The CIA exclude bright, lateral thinking, bilateral processors who might perceive the CIA are committing heinous crimes, and who possess the empathy and moral fortitude to object.

Former CIA operations officer Rueul Gerecht described case officers as 'bottom-feeders' who handle intelligence-collection and covert-action operations.[452] Such operations include the trafficking of drugs, arms and children, money laundering, and the financing of terrorist activities.

Case officers recruit and handle CIA agents using dirty methods like sexual blackmail, honey traps, and threats. Picture the CIA case officer as the pimp, and the agent as the reluctant prostitute. According to Gerecht, case officers 'search the strengths and weaknesses of character in the foreigners they want to recruit and run as agents; few things are off limits.'[453] The PAS is used to profile potential agents and to identify their key strengths and weaknesses for the CIA case officers to exploit. Thanks to Gittinger's training, CIA scouts determine a target's basic personality type just from observing whether they become withdrawn or garrulous when intoxicated with drugs or alcohol. This is precisely the type of behaviour case officers would observe in targets at recruitment parties such as occurred at pedophile Hugh Heffner's Playboy mansion.

Hugh Heffner, Jeffery Epstein, Jordan Belfort ('Wolf of Wall Street') are prime examples of CIA agents. Jimmy Savile was their UK equivalent. These men were ideally positioned to compromise politicians, Hollywood elite, royalty, and successful businessmen. Most people of influence are controlled with money, drugs, sex scandals, and pedophilia. The CIA also used prostitution and homosexuality as blackmail and honeypot tools back when they constituted criminal offences and were considered socially scandalous. At Heffner's Playboy Mansion, straight blackmail targets were lured with a promise of associating with scantily clad beautiful women and celebrities. Innocent targets were drugged and photographed with clearly underaged and / or male sex partners, and the staged photos were enough to create the leverage of control the CIA sought over the now-compromised targets.

Former CIA Officer John Kiriakou spoke at the *No War 2017: War and the Environment* conference held in Washington, DC on 22 September 2017. During this, Kiriakou confirmed the type of case officer the CIA recruits, and why:

> *There is no ethics training at the CIA. Nothing. The problem with that (besides the obvious) is what a CIA psychiatrist once told me; he said the CIA actively seeks to hire people who have sociopathic tendencies.*
>
> *Not sociopaths, but people with sociopathic tendencies. Sociopaths have no conscience; and with no conscience you can easily pass a polygraph exam because you don't react to anything. But sociopaths are impossible to control. People who have sociopathic tendencies do have a conscience, but they're willing to operate in moral, legal, and ethical grey areas.*

---

[452] Reuel Marc Gerecht (2013). *Spooky Sex: Inside the randy culture of the CIA*, Feb 21. [newrepublic.com]

[453] Ibid.

The problem is, there's no real way to weed out the sociopaths. And if you can't weed out the sociopaths, you can't weed out the psychopaths. And the psychopaths, because they're psychopaths, rise to the leadership positions.

So, let's say that you are a CIA case officer and you're working overseas. And it can be anywhere. Let's say the Middle East. You're in Egypt. You're in a hotel room and you have recruited a member of a bonafide terrorist group, Al-Quaeda, Hezbollah, ISIS, whatever it is. And this guy has been fantastic. Everything that he's told you has been true. And you've used his information to actually disrupt future terrorist attacks. So, he's been vetted and he's really great. So, you're in this hotel room and you're meeting with him. And at the start of the meeting he says:

> *'Listen, before we meet, I wanna tell you, I've given you everything, I've told you everything that's been true, you've saved American lives, now you're gonna do something for me. You're gonna go out and you're gonna get me a prostitute right now or I'm never cooperating with you again…'*

The answer is, 'Sure.' I mean, you know, he's a scumbag of course, but your job is to deal with scumbags, and you would be expected to go out and get him the prostitute.

What if he asks for a child prostitute?

Absolutely not, under any circumstances…

But that's not the CIA talking. (That's John Kiriakou talking.) Because there's no rule. Your job as a CIA case officer is to break the laws of the country you're serving; that's your job. Your job is to commit espionage, which in most countries is a death penalty crime. Your job is to convince people to commit treason for you, because they like you so much, or they like the money that you're giving them so much. So, because it's the nature of your job to break the law, there are no rules that are written for you to carry out that job.

Now the problem there is that most CIA case officers would procure the child prostitute. And even if they felt funny about it, they would be told by headquarters, 'You have a job to do. This is a bonafide source here. Go do your job.'

That's the problem, or the nature of the problem, of ethics in intelligence operations: there are no ethics in intelligence operations… You either enter the CIA with your own set of moral values, or you don't. And if you don't, you're probably going to do very well there.'

* * *

The Programming Matrix

MK was a CIA gig, not DoD.
- Lt. Col. Michael Aquino

'I need you to hold my hand lightly. Don't pull on it. You need to leave me under longer, so I have time to explore and see what I need to see. You need to ask me specific questions like what people are wearing, so I notice the detail. You can do this. You have good skills.'

'I know,' my therapist nodded, as if to convince herself. 'I do have good skills.'

'Why are you so hesitant?' I asked.

'I don't know.'

'It's just fear. . . fear of the unknown. Trust me. I know what I'm doing. Once I'm down there, I'll be able to guide myself to where I need to go.'

She waved her fingers back and forth across my face.

'Do it lots,' I urged, as I felt my dissociated form sink into the chair. 'I need to go very deep.' I closed my eyes and waited for the inevitable to appear. . .

'It's dark,' I note. 'I'm in a corridor. I'm the Gatekeeper. I'm walking towards a door. It's locked. Tell me to unlock the door.'

'Unlock the door.'

'I open the door. It's an office. The walls are lined with brown, wooden panels. There's filing cabinets and furniture. On my left is a chair, like a dentist chair. There's a little blonde girl in the chair. She's three. Kidman is leaning over her. He's sticking sharp things up her nails. He's putting a tube down her nose and pouring white liquid down it…'

I clasped my therapist's hand as she waved her fingers across my face. I ignored her growing ambivalence, closed my eyes, and relaxed into the leather couch. Inside my mind, my consciousness had boarded an invisible Tardis and was travelling to the targeted location. Then - darkness. I was the Gatekeeper again. I was living the scene from the Matrix movie where Neo stood in a white corridor in front of a row of doors, each door leading to a different scene of the matrix virtual reality program. Except, this room was black and confined. It was shaped like a pentagon. I was surrounded by five locked doors. I opened each door, stood back, and spoke:

'It's safe to come out now.'

A sea of blue-eyed blonde faces slowly emerged from the doorways, ranging in age from three to sixteen years. Some were clothed in frilled baby-doll dresses, ritual robes, martial arts gi, jodhpurs, or painting smocks. Some were naked, bloody, bleeding and bruised. They all appeared bewildered and frightened. Light emanating from the five doorways flooded the room which was now packed with a crowd. Suddenly every single person in that room realised what had happened, looked up at Heaven - and screamed in unity:

'GIVE ME *JUSTICE*!!'

I buried my head into the back of the couch, raised my hand to heaven – and screamed from some unfathomable place. I screamed until my consciousness left my body and I was oscillating between two dimensions. In the other dimension, I stood in the middle of a long, rectangular-shaped room that resembled an ornate palace ballroom. Tall elders dressed in stately robes and gold crowns were seated along the two lengths of the celestial hall. The elders stared at the floor in solemn, reverent, pensive silence as I pleaded my case against Antony Kidman. My cries in this world translated into language in that place which the elders understood. I saw the elders deliberate over Antony Kidman's judgement. I marvelled at the reverence they had for a single human life, even that of a most vile evil human being. I saw them reluctantly pass judgement over Kidman and condemn him to Death and Hell.

I lay on a couch throughout this integration process, with my husband seated next to me. My husband thought he should support me by holding my outstretched hand – something I resented because every time he touched me, I was sucked back into this world. Each time Jon released my hand I could see the celestial hall.

Afterwards, I explained everything I saw. Both my therapist and husband thought I was simply emotional and imagining things. I further detailed the experience to my therapist in an email that night. To everyone's astonishment, the following day the Australian media reported that Antony Kidman was dead. He had died under questionable circumstances in Singapore immediately after I witnessed his celestial judgement.

* * *

DID DEFINED

What is commonly called a 'multiple personality' or an 'alter' is no more than a brain area sectioned off by trauma-induced amnesia walls. A group of behaviours and memories are separated from the victim's general brain functioning, so that different 'personalities' within an individual possess independent neural circuitry.

All mind control programming is a variation on a theme, determined in part by the victim's own imagination and their predicted roles within both the CIA and the Luciferian Cult. Hence, while *Alice* and *Oz* are universally employed programming scripts, their application differs for each child victim. Think of this process as a computer game in which the player can partly determine its design. For this reason, the recovering victim can subvert the program, just like Neo did in *The Matrix*, since everything is occurring within the recovering victim's mind in the absence of the original programmer. This recovery process is easier when the original programmers are dead, and the bond with them severed.

The more creative and visual the child victim, the more highly skilled the programmer, the more sophisticated the technology used – the more seamless the result. Since my programming was perpetrated by the fathers of modern mind control at prime CIA and military intelligence facilities, and because I possessed maximum creative and visual-spatial capacity, my shifting between alters was relatively undetectable.

These factors may also account for why I have always been co-conscious during memory retrieval. Most victims of mind control are seriously dissociative during therapy work, or even daily existence, they have little to no recall for what just occurred during a therapy session. Not only have I always been completely aware of what is occurring during therapy - I have consistently planned and directed my own recovery process. I also believe my programmers intentionally designed me to be co-conscious for recall, since dissociative recall by individual alters would have facilitated instant download of information – and my brain stored too many military secrets for that. Co-conscious recall is difficult because the victim battles her own will to remember.

Memories for trauma are clearer than memories for everyday events. Flashback memories of trauma are extremely lucid and detailed, like a movie. Further, high IQ young children develop asynchronously compared to normal kids, and have superior, often photographic memories. My earliest memory is of being a toddler and waking up crying. To distract me, my father took me onto the balcony, pointed up at the dark sky and said, 'Look!

Look at the stars!' That is a clear memory. So, yes, it is highly plausible for me to recall memories of being tortured and abused at the same age.

My programming was laid at multiple Australian and US facilities during the early 1970s to mid-1980s, including the following:

- University of Sydney
- Chelmsford Hospital, Sydney
- US Embassy, Canberra
- Fairbairn Airforce base, Canberra
- Holsworthy Army Base
- ANSTO Nuclear Reactor, Lucas Heights
- Milson Island, Hawkesbury River
- Pine Gap
- Disneyland, CA
- Dulce, New Mexico
- Area 51, Nevada

A team of USA and Australian programmers, handlers, and military trainers were employed, with large teams of assistants at their disposal who worked around the clock during intense programming times:

- **Josef Mengele**
- **Louis Jolyon West**
- **Michael Aquino**
- **John Gittinger**
- **Wendy-Louise Walker**
- **Antony Kidman**
- **Leonas Petrauskas**
- **Patricia Ann Conlon**
- **Victor Chang**

JOSEF MENGELE in AUSTRALIA

In 1991, I drew a close-up of Kim Beazley Snr accurate enough for my mother to instantly recognise him. My art therapy was drawn directly from implicit memory. When I drew a scene or person, sometimes it was like the individual was posing for a portrait. Sometimes I knew what I was drawing, other times the image unfolded before my eyes as if I were observing someone else moving the pencil.

Josef Mengele was about 61 years old and fat like a toad when I met him at the US Embassy in Canberra. During therapy I had a flashback to his face which I drew. His serpent eyes were framed by full brows and dark circles beneath. His dark hair was slicked back.

A photo of an obese man seated at a table, said to be Josef Mengele, appeared on the internet. This photo better resembles my memory of Mengele than the person the CIA confirmed lived and died in South America. I believe that was a lookalike, promoted by the CIA as part of a Psychological Operation to distract the public from the international role Mengele played in Project MK-ULTRA, and to discredit witness testimonies like mine.

Helen Holowczak took me to Canberra for a week when I was three years old. A week provides ample time to lay base MK-ULTRA programming. During this trip, Helen took photos of me dressed like Alice In Wonderland in a pale blue frock, red shoes and white cardigan, indicating mild weather. My mother said I returned home from that Canberra excursion with a completely different core personality. I uncharacteristically ordered my mother out of my bedroom and told her I could clean it up myself. I further shocked her by dressing up and performing a promiscuous dance.

Josef Mengele laid my Core programming during that Canberra trip, in a lab beneath the US Embassy. The embassy was staffed with CIA pedophiles and hosted VIP pedophile orgies, like nearby Parliament House. A tunnel system existed beneath the US Embassy in which some of my abuse occurred. I was left naked and alone in a cage built into the side of a dark underground cave. I lost track of time but might have been left there for three days. During that time, Jesus appeared to me and taught me the first verse of the children's song *Jesus Loves Me*. Thirty years ago, I regressed under severe trauma and sang this to my mother exactly like a three-year-old would.

Young Josef Mengele.

Josef Mengele?

MENGELE aka WHITE RABBIT aka ANGEL
61 yo Josef Mengele drawn from implicit memory.

Lt. Col. Michael Aquino – Josef Mengele's secret son?

I was subsequently tortured in a lab by Mengele and his assistants. At the start of this process, Mengele promised I could attend a fete being held on the US Embassy grounds for the diplomats' children and their special guests. Mengele used the fete as a conditioning tool.

Since I was special now, I too was invited – so long as I cooperated. The fete featured red-and-white striped tents decorated with candy canes and lollipops, a fairy-floss maker, miniature pony rides, and a petting zoo. But I didn't enjoy any of it. I felt sick. I felt confused. I felt frightened. I felt as though there was something very wrong inside my head. *They broke my head!* I lamented. *They broke my head!* All I cared for was my mother.

'Mengele is the White rabbit!' The epiphany struck me during therapy.

Mengele and his team wore white lab coats. One assistant was a red-headed female medical doctor. Another was Antony Kidman. I heard the tune *Puppet on a String* as Mengele and his assistants circled me. They shoved me from side to side. They spun me around and around until I was dizzy...

Love is just like a merry-go-round, with all the fun of the fair…

They placed me in the centre of a blanket, gathered around its sides, and tossed me in the air until I was terrified…

One day I'm feeling down on the ground, then I'm up in the air…

Mengele electrocuted my left arm until it went limp. He picked it up and dropped it onto the table, and asked, 'Look, your arm is broken. Do you want your arm back?' I nodded and cried. I could have it back only if I did as he said. And if I were good, I would get a pony ride. He tied a string to my arm and manipulated it like a marionette.

In or out, there is never a doubt, just who's pulling the strings…

They strapped me to an examination bed and electrocuted me. They placed a giant electrode on my back plus zapped me all over with multiple cattle prods, even inside my vagina. My back arched violently as I screamed for my mother. They did this until I went quiet and still.

Fritz Springmeier and his wife Cisco Wheeler wrote that the initial MK-ULTRA splits were created in a sensory deprivation chamber using LSD, and that the brain naturally dissociates into five components. That is consistent with my experience. John C. Lilly designed the original MK-ULTRA sensory deprivation chamber. Using the chamber in combination with LSD, Lilly conducted research into penetrating the veil separating our dimension from others. His research was the premise for the 1980 film *Altered States*. Lilly achieved his goal.

My base MK-ULTRA programming was laid inter-dimensionally using a sensory deprivation tank, LSD, and musical tones. Once I was limp from electrocution, Mengele and his team led me to a room containing a black sensory deprivation tank filled with salty water. They fed me a sweet drink, put something on my head, and lay me inside the floatation tank. Either the electrocution or drugs, or both, prevented me from thrashing about. Voices and music were played on an audio system as I drifted into an LSD trip.

Suddenly, I fell through the floor and landed on a hard surface. I was in a black room surrounded by doors. A familiar voice told me I must leave a part of me behind if I wanted to escape the dark. I did as he instructed. This part became the Gatekeeper.

The Gatekeeper was eventually split into five personalities. I have a vague memory of watching each enter one of the five doors and the door closing behind them. At some stage the doors were assigned what became the standard colours: green, blue, red, white, yellow. These colours were associated with types of alters, tasks or programming as follows:

The green door housed splits that were intellectual, academic, artistic, or musical. The blue door contained soldier, Delta, assassin, psychic training including projects gateway and stargate, and military, horse riding, and martial arts costumes. The red door contained countless ritual abuse experiences and occult training. The white door housed hypnosis-induced roles and tasks, including Candy Girl. The yellow door contained drug programmes, knowledge, and drug-influenced assignments.

A dummy room was installed between this pentagon room and the doctors waiting room, to disguise and protect the Core programming. Consequently, entering the door marked 'Dr Kidman' led me to a dark pentagon room with the standard five coloured doors; however, each of the five doors housed a trap. For instance, the red door contained an inescapable maze. A series of knocks on each door opened access to the real pentagon room below. One knock on the green door, followed by two knocks on the blue, followed by three knocks on the red, four on the white, and five on the yellow, opened a chute in the floor which dropped into Mengele's Core program.

Green: Intellect
Blue: Soldier
Red: Ritual
White: Hypnosis
Yellow: Drugs

The Core

The core is the victim's soul or consciousness, the part that leaves our body when we die or astral project. It was my Core that effortlessly transitioned into the celestial dimension. According to Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, the Luciferian Order conducted research into what might occur were the victim's Core exposed to the dissociated parts. The result was instant integration. That is precisely what happened to me the moment I consciously saw the Core programming structure and met the alters hidden behind the five pentagon doors.

I believe the doctor waiting room was a disguise to hide the location of the Core split, because recalling Mengele's initial split was the point at which I achieved major spontaneous integration. I did not recall the doctor waiting room until years after my Core integration.

MILSON ISLAND: BIOWEAPONS & GENETIC ENGINEERING LAB

Australia's 'Lunatic Asylum' Horrors: 'It was one Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest in Reality'

Megan Palin, *news.com.au*, 6 Dec 2015.

> *IF the walls of the abandoned 'lunatic asylum' on Peat Island could speak they would tell of the horrors experienced by patients, including children, on a site plagued by death and despair. The eight-hectare island on the Hawkesbury River was established as an asylum for 'inebriates' in 1911 before it was reopened as a psychiatric hospital, just 50kms north of Sydney…*
>
> *Both media and government departments reported torture, multiple drownings and unexplained deaths of men and little boys. According to reports, 'Ward 4', was where the most brutal treatment took place. The mysterious deaths of child patients repeatedly made headlines over the years of the facility's operation. Among them was the case of Robert Bruce Walker, 8, who was found floating off the island after he had been 'put in the pen', a caged compartment, as punishment, in 1940… In May 1950, 11-year-old Robert Blackwood was found asphyxiated in a linen bin made of iron after only five months at the institution… Many other unexplained deaths also took place on the island. At least 300 patients who died at the institution were buried in unmarked graves at the nearby Brooklyn Cemetery.*
>
> *Reports of sexual and physical abuse, torture and a lack of thorough investigations also spilt out from under the closed doors of the site. One of the most shocking incidents made headlines across the country in 1983. 'A retarded youth's 10 fingernails were torn out while under temporary care in a psychiatric institution,' the Daily Telegraph reported in 1983. 'In a 39 page report the NSW deputy ombudsman Darryl Gunter, criticised the Health Department for not investigating the matter adequately. Mr Gunter's report stems from complaints by the youth's parents. They left their 17-year-old son at the Peat Island Hospital on the Hawkesbury River on January 10, 1981. When they collected him on January 28, he was without his fingernails. The parents rejected reports from doctors that a 12-year-old patient was responsible.'*

Peat Island and its close neighbour, Milson Island, served as MK-ULTRA / MK-NAOMI research facilities. Milson Island is larger and accessible by boat only. Both Peat and Milson featured hospitals. The Milson Island hospital was used by the military during WWII, and it contained a system of hidden doors for nurses to hide from violent patients. Milson Island psychiatric residents were transferred to the Peat Island hospital in the early 1970s, just after MK-ULTRA was exposed in the USA and moved to Australia.

Milson Island was a Federal Government facility. That is how the Australian and US military accessed it. Milson Island is Australia's equivalent of the USA's Plum Island. It started off as a military quarantine facility and merged into a MK-NAOMI bioweapons research facility. Lyme disease and Swine disease were being researched on Milson Island in 1961 to '62. When Lyme turned up in 1982, the Americans assumed there had been a leak on Milson Island.

Sydney University took over Lyme testing from 1988 to '94, tested 4,372 people and did not get one positive in that testing – because they used the ELISA test. Everyone tests negative to the ELISA test. It tests the immune system which is not stimulated by Lyme Disease. ELISA is the only test allowed under Medicare.

Great secrecy surrounds Milson Island which was recently demolished and developed into a recreational camp for children. Milton Island hospital is the only remaining building, and it looks like the hospital I was taken to where I again encountered Josef Mengele.

Leonas Petrauskas drove me to the Hawkesbury when I was about seven or eight years old. He collected me from Nanna's Engadine house in a blue sedan. It must have been summer because I wore a yellow gingham strap dress. I stuck my face out the open window and let the wind tangle my white hair.

'You can call me Leo,' he said. That was the trigger to engage in casual conversation. Usually I called him by his pseudonym Mark. 'Do you like monkeys?' he continued.

'Yes.'

'Would you like to see some monkeys?'

'Yes. Are we going to the zoo?'

'Sort of,' Leo promised. He got a sadistic kick out of surprising me with horror. We were visiting 'monkey island' where they did gene splicing, crossing monkey with human DNA. It was a real-life *Island of Doctor Moreau* that left me terrified of the *Planet of the Apes* films. The crossing of apes and humans is a scientifically possibility:

> **GOING APE Inside the bizarre world of human-chimp hybrids known as HUMANZEES – as a renowned scientist claims one was born in a Florida lab before being killed by panicked doctors**
> Mark Hodge, *The Sun,* 2 August 2019.
>
> *A HUMAN-chimpanzee hybrid was born in a Florida lab 100 years ago before being killed by panicked doctors, claims a renowned scientist.*
>
> *Evolutionary psychologist Gordon Gallup coined the term "humanzee" which refers to a human-chimp crossbreed - a scientifically possible hybridisation which was attempted throughout the 20th century. Details of the top-secret experiments come as Chinese scientists claim to have created a human-monkey hybrid in an incredible embryo-splicing trial that could eventually allow medics to harvest an endless supply of human organs for lifesaving transplants.*

> *Gallup, who developed the famous mirror "self-recognition" test which proved primates could acknowledge their own reflection, claims his former university professor told him that a humanzee baby was born at a research facility where he used to work.*
>
> *Speaking to The Sun Online, he said: "One of the most interesting cases involved an attempt which was made back in the 1920s in what was the first primate research centre established in the US in Orange Park, Florida. They inseminated a female chimpanzee with human semen from an undisclosed donor and claimed not only that pregnancy occurred, but the pregnancy went full term and resulted in a live birth. Gallup said the professor worked at Yerkes before the research centre moved to Emory University in Atlanta, Georgia in 1930. He added: "He told me the rumour was true. And he was a credible scientist in his own right."*
>
> *The most infamous humanzee project was conducted by Russian biologist Ilya Ivanov - also in the 1920s - who tried and failed to create a Soviet super-soldier using human sperm and female chimps. Another reported case happened in Maoist China in 1967 where a female primate became pregnant with a human-hybrid only to die from neglect after the lab's scientists were forced to abandon the project following the outbreak of the Cultural Revolution…*

I remember sitting on overgrown lawn outside a long hospital building on Milson Island, picking yellow flowers while Anne Conlon warned me that I was about to experience something 'unpleasant' and I should go to my 'happy place.' I was about to be raped by a giant ape chimera. I realised Ronnie usually turned up if they were about to kill me – or worse. She would always be there when I awoke from the nightmare, to comfort and counsel me.

Anne Conlon walked me inside the Milson Island hospital where a uniformed nurse sat behind a reception desk. The nurse walked me down the corridor and into a laboratory on the left. The lab contained caged monkeys and an office out the back. It was the lab in my induction scenario, behind the door marked 'White Rabbit.' My next memory is of being tied faceup to a medical table and raped by the obese greasy Doctor of Death who stood panting at the end of the bed. He made the giant *Planet of the Apes* monster rape me too.

KIDMAN'S CHARM
Ether
Spirit
fire
Energy
earth
Mass
water
Time
air
Space

Kidman's Eastern Star pendant

‘PAPPA’ KIDMAN

Kidman tampered with Mengele’s Core program when I was six years old, to overlay and link his *Order of the Easter Star* pendant as an induction trigger. This occurred at the Chelmsford MK-ULTRA facility in Sydney. Leonas Petrauskas drove me to meet Harry Bailey who fed me an LSD-laced jelly cup containing red candy frogs. The subsequent trip had me swimming through a green sea of jelly and giant frogs. Bailey administered ECT while Kidman inserted the trigger. I recall being alarmed and thinking: *Why are you messing with Comrade Gittinger’s work?* Kidman’s tampering caused my programming to malfunction and eventually break down.

2.
YELLOW DOOR - DRUGS.
MENGELE BASE PROGRAM
leads to multiple alters. caused by drugs
FUCK YOU all!
DRUGS
melodies cue programmed drug response → just like having consumed the drug.
HOW TO

I revisited Kidman’s *Order of the Eastern Star* pentagon room four years later, when my memories of Mengele and the US Embassy were triggered and began pushing through to my conscious mind in the form of emotional, visual and physical flashbacks. I peered behind the pentagon doors again, and discovered that each room contained a door in the far-right rear wall, which led to another room which contained another door, etc. Every room once housed a personality, so each room represented a walled-off cluster of independent neural circuitry. When I drew the five front rooms, I realised they had been trashed. The white door contained a pile of abandoned objects (used as triggers or inductions), instructions, and other paraphernalia. It felt like engaging in automatic writing as I accessed the brain area that held the memory. I drew a fob watch, an hourglass, Kidman’s Eastern Star pentagram pendant, and a Candy Girl dress.

The room behind the yellow door contained upturned furniture, and a pile of smashed glass chemistry vials, pill bottles, and books. I drew musical notes to represent melodies that cued programmed drug effects that replaced having to consume the drugs. Graffiti on the left wall read, ‘FUCK YOU ALL!’ The red room contained a smashed altar, books of spells, cauldrons, swastikas, pentagrams and hexagrams, knives and bones. The blue room contained a treadmill, a stargate, an overturned electric chair, guns, and a Delta training manual. The green room contained a pile of books on Tesla physics, history, Shakespeare, math and philosophy. The alters trashed the five front rooms before exiting.

4.
BLUE / DELTA ROOM or PROGRAM BASE
to all Soldier alters and tasks
Project Montauk
TRAINING MANUAL
DELTA
STARGATE PROJECT

P I could access the celestial judgement hall because my Core programming was laid inter-dimensionally. That is precisely what John C. Lilly discovered, how to lay inter-dimensional programming. Rupturing the Core programming instantly propelled me to the celestial hall dimension. Remembering the Core split instantly integrated most of my splits. Consequently, when I visited my programming subsequent to this core integration, I rarely encountered any alters but instead found racks and racks of their costumes. The programming sets and props were intact, but the characters were gone.

ROGRAMMING STRUCTURE

Induction

The main hypnosis induction script that accessed my programming began with me diving into the sea and swimming like *Aqua Man* to an underwater structure with a glass dome on top. I entered the glass dome which closed after me; the water drained. I passed through a set of sealed doors and reached the top of a metal spiral staircase. While descending the clockwise staircase, I spun in an anti-clockwise direction. Then I passed through another sealed door, descended a straight staircase, and entered a final sealed door.

Behind the final door lay a 1960s doctor surgery waiting room. The long thin room featured brown panel walls and doors. As I entered the room, an elevator stood to my left.

To the right of that a secretary sat typing at a desk which featured an old dial phone. To the right of the desk was a surgery door labelled *Dr Kidman*. Continuing right, the next door had a White Rabbit image instead of a name; it represented Joseph Mengele whose name was forbidden. The third door, at the opposite far end of the hall, was labelled *Dr West (aka Dr White)*. Two doors on the right wall were labelled *Dr Gittinger* and *Dr Aquino*.

White Rabbit
DR MENGELE
DR WEST
DR KIDMAN
DR GITTINGER
DR AQUINO
OPENED BY MENGELE'S LAB ASSISTANT W̄ LEFT HAND.
INDUCTION PROGRAM
DR WAITING ROOM

MAXWELL SMART INDUCTION

The elevator located behind the Secretary were connected to an induction based on the Maxwell Smart television program, specifically the opening scene where the TV character 'Agent Maxwell Smart' walks through a series of doors. The Secretary was a Gatekeeper plus a programmed assassin. She was connected to an office building the CIA occupied near the corner of George and Bathurst Streets, adjacent to Sydney Town Hall.

GITTINGER: THE 'CANDY MAN'

Recalling Gittinger's torture and programming was the second major step toward achieving integration. I was five years old when I was ordered to strip naked before a panel in the loungeroom of Leonas Petrauskas' Engadine home. Peter Holowczak walked me to the location which was a short distance from his McAlister Avenue house. A group of cult and MK-ULTRA perpetrators including Petrauskas, Gittinger, Kidman and Conlon inspected my flawless white form and asked me many questions about all sorts of things, especially my interests.

'Do you like to be special?' Gittinger asked.

I nodded shyly.

'*We'll* make you special…'

The men laughed knowingly.

Afterwards, I commenced a battery of tests at the underground CIA facility at Holsworthy Army Base. Gittinger administered EEGs, intelligence tests and personality questionnaires. He supervised tests of physical endurance, including running on a tread mill while wearing medical equipment. The team were so pleased with my performance, they rewarded Nanna Holowczak with whitegoods. From then on, Nanna called me her 'Special girl' and 'Purple girl' and she dressed me in purple outfits. 'What is your favourite colour?' nanna constantly asked me. 'Purple,' I responded. (Purple was not my favourite colour. My favourite colour is produced by mixing equal parts of phthalo blue and phthalo green. It is the colour I innately gravitated toward during the eye test I did in preparation for tinted glasses.)

Peter Holowczak did not share Nanna's enthusiasm. 'I'll give you the special,' he hissed. Pop dragged me to where he worked cleaning the trains and hoisted me in an agonising inside-out position from the carriage ceiling. 'Who's the special now!' he spat.

worked on the railways
Peter Holowczak
"Pop"
Engadine train station
Who's the special now ?!!
age 5
JEALOUSY
Wood train Cattle Carriage

Gittinger laid his base programming at the underground CIA facilities located at Holsworthy Army Barracks and ANSTO Lucas heights. He led me to a laboratory equipped with a hospital bed, EEG machine, video screens, and ECT and all the necessary gear for torturing and splitting a child. There Gittinger and his trainees, including Kidman, subjected me to an application of John Bowlby's Attachment research: [454]

---

[454] John Bowlby (1977). The Making and Breaking of Affectional Bonds: I. Aetiology and Psychopathology in the Light of Attachment Theory. *British Journal of Psychiatry, 130:*3, 201-210.

a) *Attachment behaviour is directed towards one or a few specific individuals, usually in clear order of preference.*
b) *An attachment endures, usually for a large part of the life cycle. Although during adolescence early attachments may attenuate and become supplemented by new ones, and in some cases are replaced by them, early attachments are not easily abandoned, and they commonly persist.*
c) *Many of the most intense emotions arise during the formation, maintenance, disruption, and renewal of attachment relationships. The formation of a bond is described as falling in love, maintaining a bond as loving someone, and losing a partner as grieving over someone. Similarly, threat of loss arouses anxiety and actual loss gives rise to sorrow; while each of these situations is likely to arouse anger…*
d) *The more experience of social interaction an infant has with a person the more likely he is to become attached to that person… Attachment behaviour remains readily activated until near the end of the third year; in healthy development it becomes gradually less readily activated thereafter.*
e) *An attachment can develop despite repeated punishment from the attachment figure.*
f) *Attachment behaviour is mediated by behavioural systems which are activated by certain conditions (e.g., strangeness, hunger, fatigue, fright) and terminated by other conditions (e.g., cuddling).*

Gittinger wiped my natural attachment to my mother by electrocuting me with multiple cattle prods. When I screamed for my mother he said, ‘Mummy doesn’t love you. I love you.’ Gittinger then applied B.F. Skinner’s conditioning research. He paired my cries for my mother with vomiting, poured Ipecac down my throat and said, ‘Mummy let us do this to you.’ Gittinger then implemented Seligman’s ‘Inescapable Shock’ research. He connected me to an EEC and electrocuting me with multiple cattle prods. He overwhelmed my senses by simultaneously showing me virtual reality scenes of death, violence and destruction, and delivering painful screeching sounds via a metal probe inserted into my right ear. He continued this until I dissociated from the pain and exhibited the desired brainwave pattern.

> *ECT, the invention of Dr Ugo Cerletti, another Spanish fascist, was often applied to various parts of the body, Wolf says, ‘usually the physical places that do not readily show or in tissue that heals quickly.’ High technology was combined with drugs, hypnosis and torture to create alter personalities. Years before Silicon Valley introduced virtual-reality computerware, children by the score told therapists they’d been forced to wear goggles that flashed 3-D images of horror and death.*[455]

REATTACHMENT TO ‘THE FAMILY’

After destroying my attachment to my birth mother and biological family, my brain was washed and ready for programming. Gittinger reattached me to the cult family (often referred to as ‘The Family’). He attached me principally himself and to my substitute mother (the Grande Dame) via love bombing and sexual assault. Patricia Anne Conlon secured the new attachment bond by breast feeding me like a baby and sexually assaulting me at the same time. Gittinger sexually assaulted me during his Candy Land programming.

---

[455] Alex Constantine (2014). Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America. Feral House, 152.

Gittinger
Mummy let us do this to you.
Attachment Violation
MUMMY!
IPECAC
vomit blood.
Holsworthy – Conditioning Pairing "Mummy" with vomitting

"You should feel honoured!! You're a national Assett!!"
Gittinger
HOLSWORTHY Age 5

CANDY-LAND PROGRAMMING

Having stripped me of my sense of self, Gittinger filled the void with a sense of ego and pride. He did this using Candy Land programming. I walked beside Gittinger through a Candy Land, along a path lined with giant candy canes that led to a distant castle.

Inside the Candy Land castle, Gittinger sat me on a throne inscribed with the title *Princess*. He placed a crown on my head and a serpent sceptre in my hand. He repeated: 'You are the chosen one. You are royalty. You are special. You are of the ruling class. . .' This was Princess and Pride programming, designed to instil pride in my high IQ, Luciferian bloodline, and Grande Dame candidacy.

I used to think Gittinger used a life-size Candy Land set with props, but today as mainstream technology catches up with the top-secret military technology that I experienced decades ago, I conclude it is plausible the military had the technology to produce a virtual reality Candy Land. I saw 'Disney,' 'Candy Land' and '©' printed on the side of a video cassette tape or box.

One of my therapy drawings from the Candy Land castle featured a treasure chest containing a key. This was a secret back door to my programming that Gittinger installed. He kept this secret from Antony Kidman whom he rightly described as a 'fucking idiot' following a critical incident when I was 10 years old. My mother spent most of my tenth year in hospital due to lead poisoning. I consequently spent all holidays and weekends at my evil grandparents' Engadine home. I have relatively little memory of that time due to the cult's unprecedented access to me.

I was repeatedly electrocuted and raped in a laboratory beneath ANSTO Lucas Heights at different developmental milestones. Gittinger used me to demonstrate the technique to a team of trainees dressed in white lab coats, including Antony Kidman. First, I was electrocuted until I became still. 'The subject is now ripe for programming,' Gittinger explained, as he lifted and dropped my limp arm. Then everyone left the room while Kidman stood at the bottom of the hospital bed and raped me. He flapped my limp legs together like butterfly wings as he penetrated me. Following this, Gittinger electrically stimulated specific parts of my brain to create implicit behavioural responses.

Egocentric PRIDE programming
"You are the chosen one You are royalty You are special You are of the ruling class"
PRINCESS
CANDY LAND CASTLE
High IQ
DNA testing
royal bloodline
Grande Dame
Ego
Gittinger
snake sceptre

MAINTENANCE

I have detailed memories of revisiting the ANSTO lab and experiencing a variation of this process every two years, at ages six, eight, 10, 12 and 14 years. This was to compensate for developmental changes in my body and brain. The session at age 14 ended with security prying my fingers from Kidman's crimson throat after he clumsily electrocuted my head.

HOLSWORTHY TORTURE
virtual reality goggles
fast video scenes death + destruction
SOUND
AGE 5 – 10 REPEATED
GITTINGER + KIDMAN

John Gittinger's programming was maintained outside the HOLSWORHTY AND ANSTO labs via regular rape and trauma perpetrated by the Holowczaks and their Luciferian cult associates. The murders seemed endless. I was forced to watch the ritual murder of a group of children in bushland near the dog breeder's home on Old Illawarra Road. The dog breeder and his close associate Ivan Milat tossed the kids off a cliff in broad daylight. Overcome with grief and fed up with the nightmare year that had been, I spontaneously decided to follow them. I ran and went to leap over the cliff edge – only to be stopped at the last minute by Milat who risked his life to tackle and catch me. If I had died, all in attendance would have paid with their lives – and they knew it. Like Gittinger said, I was a 'National Asset.'

Gittinger was urgently called to Australia to repair my programming. His dilemma was, the person who attempted suicide was not an alter that could easily be deactivated or disposed of. It was the real me and my memories from that year. Gittinger had to perform psychological surgery and reassign that part of me as his Gatekeeper. His remedy consisted of flatlining my heart to bring it under submission. Gittinger explained, the heart, being connected to the visual and emotional side of the brain, has its own intrinsic nervous system that processes information independently of the brain. Consequently, although my handlers had control of my mind, my heart overruled my brain and made the decision to escape.

Incidentally, it is the heart's intrinsic nervous system which allows a transplant to work. In a heart transplant recipient, the nerve connections between the donor heart and the recipient's brain do not immediately connect. Meanwhile, the transplanted heart relies solely on its intact nervous system. The heart's intrinsic nervous system explains why a transplant recipient sometimes adopts the donor's memories and personality characteristics. In fact, murders have been solved based on the recipient's access to the donor's final memories housed in the donated organ.

After prepping me with torture, Gittinger reassigned 10-year-old Intellectual Alice as Gatekeeper over his Wonderland foyer. *Alice in Wonderland* programming looks exactly like the Disney movie. I deduce that for most victims, Wonderland programming is triggered via sodomy – which is what the rabbit hole represents, the anal passage that the white rabbit (programmer) penetrates. However, Gittinger secretly changed my trigger to vaginal rape, to prevent 'fucking idiot' Antony Kidman accessing and ruining his programming, which he eventually did.

PROGRAMMING SCRIPTS

To mind control children, perpetrators use ancient programming scripts passed down through Luciferian dynasties. Scripts employed traditional nursery rhymes and fairy tales, modern cartoons based on ancient mythologies, and children's books series specifically written for programming purposes. Programming scripts included: *The Lion, Witch and the Wardrobe*, *Peter Pan*, *Lord of the Rings*, *Alice in Wonderland,* and *The Wonderful Wizard of Oz*. Note the word 'wonder' in the last two titles. *Oz* is Osiris, and mind control was developed in Ancient Egypt.

The authors of children's classics were linked to pedophilia scandals and/or occultic societies that practise pedophilia as a religious rite. Reformed Luciferian John Todd Collins outed close friends J.R.R. Tolkien and C.S. Lewis as HOGD members. J.R.R Tolkien's son 'Father John Tolkien' was outed in the UK press as a pedophile Catholic priest with a penchant for altar boys. C.S. Lewis' *Narnia* series features a character named Tumnus who is based on the pedophile god Pan. James M. Barrie's *Peter Pan* similarly paid homage to Pan. Barrie's concept of Lost Boys refers to boys' whose emotional development was stunted at the age at which they were first child raped and inherited the pedophile spirit of Pan. *Alice in Wonderland* series author Lewis Carroll was a pedophile who took naked photos of his obsession, a young child named Alice. Peter Pan author J.M. Barrie groomed the parents of three Davies boys and forged their will to gain custody of their sons after they were orphaned. Michael Davies suicided with his male lover at 21. Barrie had written him at age eight years, 'Dear Michael, I am very fond of you, but don't tell anyone.' Peter Davies burnt all of Barrie's letters, and said, 'It was all too much' before he also suicided. C.S. Lewis similarly took custody of young orphaned boys after marrying their dying mother. Underground pedophile networks were named *Peter Pan Club* and *Lewis Carroll Collectors Guild* because their founders recognised James M. Barrie (*Peter Pan*) and Lewis Carroll (*Alice in Wonderland*) as pedophiles.

The Narnia series charmed the Protestant churches during the 1980s. My protests of 'It's satanic' were met with 'Aslan represented Christ and the characters and story reflected the Bible.' The Holy Ghost does not inspire Christians to glorify Baphomet in fairy tales aimed at kids. My youth group leader (our pastor's daughter) justified screening occult-themed movies by arguing 'It's okay so long as good triumphed over evil at the end of the tale.' Dumb sheep similarly justify the Harry Potter books because 'at least it encourages kids to read.' The *Harry Potter* series contain the same Witchcraft 101 content taught to coven children. These books and films are programming and witchcraft teaching tools.

Ancient Egyptian and Babylonian programming scripts starring pagan gods were represented within Western culture as popular cartoon characters, for the expressed purpose of programming a new generation of child victims. Pagan gods Dagon and Diana were rebranded *Aqua Man* and *Wonder Woman*. These comic characters originally engaged in Luciferian themes of torture, kidnapping, sexual violence and sadism. The people who developed these characters were connected to MK-ULTRA. For instance, the Isis-worshipping character *Wonder Woman* was created by William Marston, MK-ULTRA psychologist and lie detector inventor. Marston hired Lauretta Bender as a consultant to develop the Wonder Woman comic. Lauretta Bender was a MK-ULTRA paediatric neuropsychiatrist who routinely electrocuted children, including toddlers, at Bellevue Hospital in New York. Marston described Wonder Woman as '…psychological propaganda for the new type of woman who, I believe, should rule the world.' Thus, Wonder Woman captures the Jezebel spirit of de-masculinisation of society, as promoted by the Luciferian Order.

Other cartoon characters incorporated in my programming were: Casper, Batman, Cat Woman, Top Cat, and Felix The Cat. I recall a *Cat Woman* programming sequence that was chanted at me in the Holsworthy lab. The program had nine levels based on a cat's nine lives. When Kidman reached level six, he shoved his face in mine, and stared into my left eye (which directly accessed my right brain hemisphere) and chanted: 'Number six! Number six! What do we find at number six? Number six has lots of *tricks*! There are *six* spirits at number six.'

Disneyland, Disneyworld and Walt Disney films were specifically developed for programming MK-ULTRA child victims like me. Famous pioneer psychologists and psychiatrists hired out Disneyland of a night to practice programming children. I was subjected to Candy Land and Disney Princess programming that focussed on the Evil Queen and Wicked stepmother characters. Disney movies used to create and reinforce my programming included: *Fantasia*, *Peter Pan (with a focus on Tinkerbell)*, *Sleeping Beauty*, *Cinderella*, *Snow White* and *Bambi.* Popular TV shows were also used, especially *Bewitched* and *I Dream of Jeanie.*

Certain songs were used to reinforce or trigger my MK-ULTRA programming. I would often find myself stuck in a thought loop with one of these, to stop me recalling my abuse.

The most memorable songs used on me were: *Queen of Hearts*, *The Candy Man*, *Wild Thing*, *Candy Girl*, and *Funky Town.*

The MK-ULTRA scientists abused me within a Luciferian ritual context. Scientists in white lab coats played a synthesiser chanting the names of these interdimensional entities, to insert them into and cement my programming. In a research lab beneath Holsworthy Army Base, technicians programmed the words, ‘Know this spirit, know this spirit, know this spirit…’ into a synthesiser and repeatedly played this up and down the keyboard at various speeds, while Kidman and others breathed ‘spirits’ into my mouth.

ALICE IN WONDERLAND PROGRAM

To access Gittinger’s Wonderland program during therapy, I visualized falling backwards through the rabbit hole with 10-year-old Intellectual Alice in hand. I knew the landing on the floor below to be hard and painful, so I said to Alice, ‘The landing doesn’t have to be hard. We can make it soft because we are in our head and can control what happens in our head.’ We landed on a black-and-white chequered foyer floor. The foyer walls were green (the colour of intelligence, favoured by high IQ people). A crystal chandelier hung from the ceiling. Five coloured doors were placed in the usual sequence from left to right – green, blue, red, white, yellow. Gatekeeper Intellectual Alice was able to unlock the doors, but not cross the threshold of any except the green one. (I deduce Alice was granted access to the green door to stop her going crazy with boredom.) The green door accessed the Wonderland set and characters people are familiar with, including the Mad Hatter’s tea party and the Queen of Hearts’ castle grounds. Various sections of the set were used for programmes. For example, the chessboard scene provided opportunity for storing programming using chess language (D4, A2, etc).

GITTINGER'S PROGRAM
ALICE IN WONDERLAND
GATE-KEEPER
IQ-10
SOLDIER-14
RITUAL-6
DOROTHY-12
GLINDA
GRANDE DAME
TO OZ

GATE KEEPER
INTELLECT ALICE
SOLDIER ALICE
RITUAL VICTIM ALICE
Alice the Intellect
Alice the soldier
Alice the ritual victim

DOROTHY - Behind Hypnosis Cloud.
GLINDA

Four keys were hidden in Gittinger's Wonderland foyer. These were decorated according to the four playing card symbols: hearts, clubs, diamonds and spades. I asked Intellectual Alice to locate the key to the green door, which she did. Alice unlocked the door and I accompanied her to the fully laden Tea Party. I used my counselling skills to communicate with Alice and win her trust. I asked her, 'Have you ever actually sampled this spread?' She shook her head. I suggested, 'Why don't you pour yourself a cup of tea? You like watching the way the tea comes out of the spout and into the cup. I know that because I am you.' We watched the black tea arc into the cup. Then I said, 'Why don't you eat something? Go on, try a doughnut. I know they're your favourite.

HOW TO REACH GLINDA ALTER
AVOID COWARD LION
= FEAR PROGRAM
AVOID TINMAN
= AXE MURDER
AVOID WINGED MONKEYS
AVOID POISON APPLES
tap sequence + sing 5 notes in tune to enter gate
REACH GLINDA
AVOID WIZARD = programme!
AVOID RUBY SLIPPERS = return to home program.
ride carriage to end of spiral
AVOID SCARECROW
= BURNT ALIVE PROGRAM
AVOID POPPIES
= SLEEP PROGRAM
1. Dorothy
2. Alice-intellect
3. Alice-soldier
4. Alice-ritually abused

WIZARD OF OZ PROGRAM

Together, the three Alice splits opened the white door to reveal a cloud of hypnosis from which 12-year-old Dorothy of *Oz* emerged. Dorothy held a fourth key in her right pocket. All four keys were designed according to playing cards (Hearts, Clubs, Spades, Diamonds). Dorothy opened the final, yellow door containing the yellow brick road to Emerald City. The alters locked arms and followed the yellow brick road. Obstacles avoided on the way included: poison apples, winged monkeys, Tin Man (a trigger for memories of axe murders), Cowardly Lion (fear program), Scarecrow (burnt alive program), and the Poppy Fields (sleep program).

Upon reaching the Emerald City gate, I tapped a sequence and sang a five-note tune to gain entry. Once inside, the spiral turned green. We boarded the carriage pulled by the horse that changes colours. We avoided the Wizard (another trap) plus the Ruby Slippers – the final trap. Once we reached the end of the spiral, Glinda appeared in a floating bubble. Glinda is the final programmed alter. Glinda is the Grande Dame programming attached to the Disney Princess programming laid in Candy Land and Disneyland. Gittinger laid *Princess* plus *Alice in Wonderland* programming at Disneyland in Anaheim, California when I was six years old. That is why I was dressed like Alice, drugged, placed on the *It's a Small World* boat ride, and spun on the Mad Hatter Tea Party Ride until I vomited.

DISNEY PRINCESS PROGRAM

The route from Emerald City to Glinda's Crystal Castle functioned like a computer game. It passed through the woods containing cottages occupied by twins Snow White and Rose Red plus the Seven Dwarfs, and by Rapunzel's tower. Glinda's castle contained five doors of Gem programming laid out in the usual colour arrangement: green (emerald), blue (sapphire), red (ruby), white (diamond), and yellow (topaz). Behind the emerald door, Sleeping Beauty (Briar Rose) lay asleep on a bed. At her feet sat the wardrobe from *The Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe*. A key stored in drawers beside Briar Rose's bed unlocked the wardrobe. The wardrobe led to a Snow Queen seated in a unicorn-pulled sleigh that transported me to an Ice Castle. A spell had to be broken to melt the castle, making this route a trap.

Returning to Glinda's Crystal Castle, behind the sapphire door Snow White lay on a bed in a coma. A small chest at the foot of her bed contained a key to a second wardrobe which led to Maleficent's castle.

Behind the ruby door was an imprisoned Cinderella. The diamond room was filled with shimmering light that morphed into the Swan Princess Ophelia. Finally, the topaz room contained a throne room occupied by the Grande Dame 'spirit' that Patricia Ann Conlon passed to me at her dying breath.

Alice, Cinderella, Sleeping Beauty, Dorothy, and Snow White all wear pale royal blue, consistent with their Princess-in-training status. The purpose of Princess programming is to teach the victim that *the end justifies the means*. To explain, every Disney Princess character loses her mother, father, or both. Each endures hardship of some kind, usually at the hands of a wicked stepmother (including the original Sleeping Beauty who suffered an evil mother-in-law). But at the end of their ordeal, each princess marries a prince and becomes Queen. In a cult context, this story line translates into the journey a Grande Dame candidate undertakes. The child victim's attachment to their birth parents is severed and they are reattached to a Grande Dame and a new 'Family' who put the victim through a gruelling, torturous training regime. The moral to the story is, the trauma and torture the Princess suffers during her trials or training, all becomes worth it the end when she is rewarded by being crowned Queen (Grande Dame). The Queen in turn becomes the next perpetrator, indicated by her dark alters or roles including the Evil Queen and Maleficent.

'DR WHITE'

During my trip to the USA at age six, I was also transported to Dulce, home of the Frankenstein lab purpose built for Col. Louis Jolyon West, Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, and John W. Gittinger, who were trained directly by Operation Paperclip's most clandestine recruit, Joseph Mengele. Dulce lab technicians strapped my naked body to a chair, plastered large electrode pads to my back and limbs, and attached a Medusa-mass of EEG electrodes to my head. My brain splits were colour-labelled: Green, Blue, Red, White, Yellow. For each colour, Dr West was codenamed 'Dr White.' He held a large sheet of coloured card in my face while a computer repeated the name of the colour: 'Red. Red. Red. Red. Red…' I was simultaneously electrocuted until my senses were overwhelmed and I surrendered my will to the insertion of their instruction. They stopped torturing me once they recognised the desired brainwave pattern on their monitors.

Beyond Dr West's surgery door lay a foyer with five coloured doors in the standard order. The green room contained shelves of books. I identified this as Gittinger's Test Library. One of the books had the title, *Nuances of Psychological Testing*. The blue room contained an armoury of guns, grenades, knives and other weapons. It also contained maps and racks of soldier costumes. The red room contained an occult library including books of spells, an altar, a skull, candles, and a voodoo doll. The white room contained racks of Disney costumes. The yellow room contained a pharmacy with books, drugs and chemistry lab equipment. This pocket of neural circuitry contained memories of drugs' mechanism of action, so that drug effects could be produced without physically administering the drug.

Soldier Costumes & Soldier Armory
swap
Gittingers Test Library
NUANCES OF PSYCH. TESTING
SPELLS
OCCULT LIBRARY
EMPTY DISNEY COSTUMES
Program w̄ drugs' mechanism of action.
PHARMACY
DR WEST'S DOORS

THE 'WHITE RABBIT'

Josef Mengele and Leonas Petrauskas accessed the surgery door marked with a white rabbit. Behind the door lay a foyer chiselled out of an underground cavern. Five coloured doors were arranged in an arc, lit dramatically from above. A large rug on the floor was decorated in an enormous Rothschild family crest, featuring a shield flanked by two animals on their hindquarters. Behind the green door lay an Auschwitz library. The blue room was full of shooting energy and a stargate, and it contained the Gateway Process. The red room was a ritual storeroom containing shelves of Luciferian books and potions. The white room contained racks of priestess robes. The yellow room contained a laboratory with research equipment, cages, and a creepy, mute lab assistant. It was Mengele's Milson Island lab.

DR MICHAEL AQUINO

The creepy lab assistant was the only one who could open the door to Dr Aquino’s foyer that was decorated with a Freemasonic chequered floor and five coloured doors. Aquino’s green room contained the Cabalistic Tree of Knowledge, a giant evergreen tree with an owl seated in its fork. The blue room contained Delta training, including a Montague chair and references to astral projection. The red room contained military rituals, Dagon worship, and a Dulce underground stone altar decorated with an encircled triangle (representing Alchemy). The white room contained a pink sacred lotus flower and the word *Om*. The yellow room contained a yellow brick road and a bubble which served as transport to Glinda’s crystal castle. This was a backdoor to Oz which linked to Gittinger’s yellow door.

DELTA TRAINING
MONTAGUE
KABAL
TREE OF
KNOWLEDGE
ASTRAL
PROJECTION
MILITARY RITUALS
DAGON
WORSHIP
SACRED LOTUS
"OM"
BACKDOOR TO OZ
(JOINS GITTINGER'S
YELLOW DOOR
GLINDA'S CRYSTA
CASTLE
Glinda's
Bubble
to
Crystal
Castle
DR AQUINO'S DOORS

MILITARY ORDER OF DAGON

The Ancient Roman Legions worshipped their mascot god. So do our modern Western military forces. Dagon is the god worshipped by the top US and Australian military brass. age 12 of Lt. Col. Michael Aquino’s original CV (dated 1 September 2018) boasts of his membership in the ‘*Esoteric Order of Dagon.’* Subsequent publications of Aquino’s CV deleted this revelation, following my going public about this. Here is the missing snippet:

- 12 -

Esoteric Order of Dagon 1988-

Honorary Member 1988

GRANDE DAME

The waiting room elevator provided Patricia Ann Conlon access to Gittinger's Grande Dame and Princess programming. The elevator accessed five floors of the Grande Dame training system. The blue floor contained leadership training including systems analysis and strategy, psychology and behaviour prediction, delegation, manipulation and motivation of subordinates' personality types, and maintaining distance from subordinates. The green floor pertained to training in academics and the arts, including classical music, history, English, theatre, painting and philosophy. The white floor related to temple prostitute instruction in the art of sex and seduction. The yellow floor pertained to teaching and supervision of cult children, such as lessons in occult knowledge delivered via nursery rhymes. For instance, *Mary Had a Little Lamb* represents the Christian child lured into the cult without parental awareness. The red floor was devoted to training in sorcery, ritual murder, and clandestine assassination via the 'kiss of death.'

The elevator accessed castles belonging to the Grande Dame's two faces, Glinda and Maleficent. Maleficent's thorny castle grounds were occupied by the Dragon she transformed into. The Disney dragon form of Maleficent represents the Ouroboros. The Ouroboros symbolises the life cycle of the Grande Dame's eternal spirit. This is achieved by the Grande Dame willingly submitting to ritual sacrifice at the hands of her successor who draws in her final breath. This tradition is considered a form of rebirth, the circle of life, and a means of attaining immortality, which is related to the Ouroboros symbolising alchemy. Immortality via transhumanism is the true goal of alchemy. This process of the serpent eating its own tail is reflected in the standard Disney Princess or traditional fairy tale ending where the abusive queen-stepmother-witch, dies at the hands of the princess who assumes her kingdom, role, identity, persona - alters.

This alternate castle entrance represents the dark, ruthless nature the Grande Dame is forced to adopt. The castle contains the Grande Dame's throne room and a robe room with costumes displayed on mannequins. The costumes consisted of high-collared purple robes worn by Disney's Maleficent and the Evil Queen. Each wore a gold crown and a ruby. Another costume was a red and purple ritual robe and a headpiece that was a cross between a top hat and a fez. Each outfit represents a personality or role. The Disney outfits mimicked those worn in real-life by Grande Dames officiating over rituals and ceremonies. Purple indicates cult royalty and symbolises rarity. The ruby symbolises sexuality and exclusivity.

'ACCESS DENIED'

In 2015, an Australian Military MK-ULTRA military programmer attempted to access my system. David and Raelene Thompson established 'Watchman Ministries' in 1992, at the height of SRA victim disclosure. The couple were recommended to me by Pastor Doug Riggs in the USA.

Although I sensed something was wrong, I pursued the excursion because my DID therapist manipulated my emotions. 'Do it for me,' she implored. So, I warned my therapist I might not see her again and departed for Adelaide in mid-May. I knew the trip was going to be interesting when I exited the plane and sensed two massive invisible beings escorting me through Adelaide airport. I was collected by David and his obese wife, who drove me to my accommodation in the remote Adelaide hills.

The Pastor and his wife spent the first few days grooming me. Every night they took me to dine in a nice restaurant. Each morning they drove me to a remote function centre for 'deprogramming' sessions that ran all day. They spent the first three days mapping the system of alters and identifying their names and roles. David asked me questions that I answered honestly and freely, while the wife took copious notes.

It happened on the fourth morning. David asked me to list a group of related personality fractures. I closed my eyes and effortlessly rattled off the information.

'Hang on!' he puzzled. 'Do you remember everything that was just said?'

'Yes,' I shrugged.

David Thompson's façade of kindness and gentleness suddenly gave way to contempt and rage. He swept his hand across pages of notes and diagrams. 'I've never seen this!'

Me: 'Seen what?'

'This!' He planted his finger on the notes, 'This combination!'

'What? Military mind control and ritual abuse? Why is it so hard to believe? Holsworthy was next door to Engadine BoysTown. It's physically possible.'

He shook his head. 'I've never seen any of this before!'

'Well,' I offered, 'I was programmed directly by the world's best. I was chosen from a pool of chosen ones. I was selected because of my unique combination of visual-spatial processing capacity, psychic ability, creativity, physical endurance, and Aryan features. Perhaps you haven't encountered this before because I was the *only one?*'

Fury washed over his face. It was quiz time. 'What's the difference between Monarch and MK-ULTRA?' he demanded.

'Oh, I don't care,' I shrugged. It's all the same *crap*.'

'No, it's not! See, you don't know anything!'

I squared my shoulders - and focussed.

He asked: 'Do you enjoy sex with your husband?'

'Oh, I'm completely normal in that department.'

'If you were a genuine victim,' he spat, 'you would be *sexually dysfunctional!*'

I stared at him. *No comment. Filthy prick. You're a programmer. You're trying to shock me into dissociating. . . Stay calm. Don't react. We're getting out of here.*

David threw his hands in the air like a bad actor. 'I'm cancelling this session! I'm going to have do some research, call some people. We'll resume tomorrow.'

'Sure,' I lied.

The couple drove me back to my secluded accommodation. There I phoned my mother who started praying. Then I phoned Jon, told him what had just occurred, and asked him whether he would not mind if I spent my remaining days in Adelaide sightseeing. I convinced my husband and Adelaide hosts that I was going to visit the Barossa. Jon called back and told me a hire car was booked and waiting for me at the airport. Then I phoned my therapist's office and left a message: 'He's a military programmer. He's after the access codes. I'm at risk and making a run for it.' I was on a train when my therapist returned my call. 'I'll be alright,' I assured her. 'I've been in this situation many times. My training has kicked in and I know what to do.' I navigated my way to the airport and boarded the first flight home.

David Thompson worked for the Australian military in an Adelaide division relevant to MK-ULTRA. The irony is, I ultimately used *him* to map and process my programming, which helped me integrate, since conscious awareness ruptures the programming.

Name	**Trigger**	**Use**	**Trainer**
Thespian	Star Child	Theatre Rituals Ceremonies	Kidman, Conlon, Bell
Candy Girl		Presidential prostitute	Gittinger
Kitten	Hello Kitty	Seduction Provocateur	Gittinger
Salome		All dancing types Ritual choreography	Kidman
Professor		Creative genius Intellect Strategist Tactical response Information gathering Interrogation	Gittinger Self-created offshoot?
Warrior	GI Joe	military training close combat martial arts deflection evasion weapons protector self-preservation escape	Gittinger Self-created offshoot?
Assassin		Kill on command	Gittinger
Snookie (?)		6-year-old Imprisoned underground Bonded with panda teddy Bore burden of isolation	Self-created
Imhotep		Surgeon Sacrifice Left-Handed Path	Petrauskas
Psychic Killer		The force Anger is an energy	Aquino
Psychic		Astral travel Prediction Telepathy	Aquino
Scorpio		Omega setting Internal clock Suicide programming Automatic response to ritual dates and memory recovery Russian roulette - unpredictable	

	'Hello Stranger'	Alpha setting Basic commands	
Sabrina		Witchcraft Magick with a 'k' Water, Fire, Earth, Ether	Petrauskas Conlon
Levite		Music Priestess Secret bloodline Kabala Chant: 'hidden, forbidden…' Access denied Eugenics DNA superiority Jason Project	Conlon, Petrauskas
Age 3		Core fractured	Mengele
Age 5		Core shattered	Gittinger
Sascha		Invisible friend Age 6-8? Took burden of NDE Independent Autonomous Pissed off	Self-created
Gatekeeper		Has access to all memories Holds keys to all doors	Mengele
Angel		Assassin Martial Arts Samurai sword	Mengele
Grande Dame		Coven leader Revenge killings Sadistic Contempt Intolerant of insubordination	Gittinger Conlon
Leviathan		Cloak Trickster Confuses conversation Misinterpretation Gamma entry	Non-Alter – 'alien'
Baal		Non-Alter Blood sacrifice Blood oath Gamma entry	Non-Alter – 'alien'

All anyone had to do was ask me the right questions and I would spew forth copious amounts of information. The first time I recall something is the most lucid it will ever be, then the detail fades over time. I had trouble recalling the entire system that I internally mapped in Adelaide over three days. I jotted down the following information a week or so later.

As you can see from the overview of my programming matrix, its complexity makes it near impossible for victims and therapists to identify and break. I must reiterate, the programming used on me does not serve as a blueprint for unravelling another individual’s programming. No two cases are the same. The perpetrators may use the same scripts, movies, songs and stories, yet two children will do different things with the same base material. The more a child’s imagination contributes to the program, the better the program sticks. Once when Gittinger wanted to create layering in a program, he asked me to think of something layered. I chose a layered cake. He then asked me to describe the cake in detail. I described layers of sponge, cream and fruit. Because Gittinger employed an image that my brain naturally gravitated toward, it provided a better chance of the program sticking. Each program also varies according to the perpetrator’s expertise level. Programming is an art which a skilled genius like Gittinger can get right, or a ‘fucking idiot’ like Antony Kidman can get very wrong.

* * *

MK-DELTA Child Soldier

No details of the MK-DELTA program have escaped the closely guarded files of the CIA.
- The Mind Manipulators

Our jeep stopped at the end of the ridge and we all filed out the back. We were high on a clearing above the fighting which was happening somewhere in the messy jungle below. The sound of gunfire was audible as I surveyed the site. Soldiers busied themselves behind me while our commander crouched over a black box and spoke through the mouthpiece. He gave me the all clear.

'Make sure everyone gathers in close,' I warned him. He nodded and disappeared behind me while I prepared myself. I sat on the ground, folded my legs into the lotus position, and rested my upturned palms on my knees so the tips of my thumbs and middle fingers gently touched. I closed my eyes, visualised a pink lotus flower, and began to hum:

Ommm. . .

I breathed in deeply and exhaled slowly, in . . . and out. . . until my head was at standing height and yet my feet did not touch the ground. Every breath drew in the surrounding Chi energy which I directed to my solar plexus. My entire being began to vibrate as I ran my mind over every detail of the imaginary lotus blossom, traced the nuances of each petal. . . A ringing noise intensified inside my head until suddenly - a massive white flash penetrated my eyelids.

It was done.

I tuned back into my external environment and noticed it was dead still: No more gunfire, no more bird songs. I opened my eyes and looked around. The soldiers cautiously lifted their heads behind me, and gasped as we all stood up to survey the damage. The surrounding tall trees were flattened like pick-up-sticks, their tips all pointing away from us. We were in the epicentre of what looked like the aftermath of a bomb blast.

* * *

Scheflin and Opton wrote *The Mind Manipulators* based on the FOI release of 10,000 pages of CIA MK-ULTRA related documents. While the documents contained no clues as to the purpose of MK-DELTA, they indicated: (a) MK-ULTRA was the research and development phase of a much larger program, and (b) MK-DELTA was the field application of MK-ULTRA and involved clandestine operations.[456]

DULCE

A memorandum (dated January 14, 1953) titled *Interrogation Techniques* states:

> *If the services of Major Louis J. West, USAF (MC), a trained hypnotist, can be obtained and another man [DELETED] well-grounded in conventional psychological interrogation and polygraph techniques, and the services of Lt. Colonel [DELETED], a well-balanced* ***interrogation research centre*** *could be established in an especially selected location.*

---

[456] Alan Scheflin & Edward Opton (1979). The Mind Manipulators. Paddington Press.

I am certain one of the names deleted from this document was Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino. The other omitted name could have been John C. Lilly, but I believe it was John W. Gittinger. In any case, all three collaborated with Major Louis West at the 'interrogation research centre' described in the proposal for MK-ULTRA Subproject 43:

> *…a unique laboratory must be organized and constructed. This laboratory will include a special chamber, in which all psychologically significant aspects of the environment can be controlled. This chamber will contain, among other things, a broad-spectrum polygraph for simultaneous recordings of a variety of psychophysiological reactions of the individual being studied. In this setting the various hypnotic, pharmacologic, and sensory-environmental variables will be manipulated in a controlled fashion and quantitative continuous recording of the reactions of the experimental subjects will be made.*

A Frankenstein laboratory fitting this description was built within an underground military base located near Dulce, New Mexico. 'Interrogation' means 'torture.' The documents refer to using drugs, hypnosis, sensory deprivation, and torture on children.

MAJOR WEST

In 1955, Major Louis Jolyon West was subcontracted for MK-ULTRA Subproject 43 experiments which examined the effects of Drugs, Hypnosis and Sensory Deprivation on behaviour. His Subproject 43 proposal was titled '*Psychophysiological Studies of Hypnosis and Suggestibility'* with its accompanying document '*Studies of Dissociative States*.' Here is a summary of the most pertinent points made in West's Subproject 43 proposal:

1. Several drugs are known to speed up hypnotic induction and deepen hypnotic trance states.
2. Experiments show sensory isolation increases suggestibility and the production of trance-like states.
3. Hypnosis can exert control over the autonomic nervous system.
4. Hypnosis can protect individuals from psycho-physiological reactions to poisons.
5. Using hypnosis plus autonomic drugs were used to identify exactly how and to what degree psychophysiological reactions occur to specific types of stress.
6. Repetition of verbal signals produces physiological and behavioural change.
7. Hypnotic suggestion can produce changes in physiological function including blood pressure.
8. Experimental hypnosis can produce every known dissociative condition including fugues, amnesias, sleep walking, multiple personalities**,** hypnagogic hallucinations, sleep paralysis, trance states, and Tourette's.

The main aim of Subproject 43 was to:

- Use hypnotic suggestion to produce physiological changes in skin conductance, skin temperature, and wound healing;
- Use mind altering drugs including LSD to produce and maintain dissociative states.

An earlier declassified letter (dated 11 May 1953) signed by Sidney Gottlieb documented a series of related hypnosis experiments that focussed on the following:

1. Hypnotically induced anxieties,
2. Hypnotically increasing ability to learn and recall complex written matter,
3. Polygraph responses under hypnosis,
4. Hypnotically increasing ability to observe and recall complex arrangements of physical objects,
5. Relationship of personality to susceptibility to hypnosis,
6. Recall of hypnotically acquired information by very specific signals.

JOHN C. LILLY

The Dulce laboratory contained an upright version of John C. Lilly's sensory deprivation tank. During the 1950s, the CIA funded John Lilly's development of the sensory deprivation tank and his research into brain waves and Altered States of Consciousness. In his book, *Programming and Meta-programming in the Human Biocomputer*[457] Lilly blatantly explained how children are programmed using LSD, his sensory deprivation tank, and implicit learning via classical and operant conditioning. Lilly compared the human mind to a bio-computer installed with programs that can be erased, modified and created. We are all born with 'programs' like eating, sleeping, and feeling pain ingrained in our genetic code. 'Meta-programming' is our ability to learn new information and develop ideas beyond these innate programs. Here are some quotes from Lilly's book:

> *I am interested in the processes of finding meta-programs (and methods and substances) which control, change, and create the basic meta-programs of the human computer.*
>
> …
>
> *Certain chemical substances have programmatic and/or meta-programmatic effects, i.e., they change the operations of the computer, some at the programmatic level and some at the meta-programmatic level. Some substances which are of interest at the meta-programmatic level are those that allow reprogramming, and those that allow and facilitate modifications of the meta-programs.* [Lilly used LSD for reprogramming, and ethyl alcohol for weakening meta-programming].
>
> …
>
> *Programs are carried out by excitation-inhibition-disinhibition patterns among and in neural masses and sheets (for example, the reticular activating-inhibiting system, the reward-punishment systems, the cerebral cortical conditionable systems).*
>
> *Special aspects and areas of stored programs can be visualized, felt, heard, lived through or replayed, or otherwise elicited from memory storage by means of special techniques and special instructions.*

Aldous Huxley said of his 'friend' John C. Lilly:

---

[457] John C. Lilly (1972). *Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer: Theory and Experiments*. Julian Press.

> *Lilly has probably gone further than anyone else in creating a limited environment. He immerses himself in a bath at the temperature of 96, has himself fastened into a harness so that he can hardly move, breathes only through a snorkel so that even his face is covered with water and there is no differentiation of sensation on any part of his body, and within three or four hours he is having tremendous visionary experiences.*

THE GATEWAY PROCESS

A military document (dated 9 June 1983) from Lt. Colonel Wayne M. McDonnell was addressed to the Commander of US Army Operational Group at Fort Meade. The document, *Analysis and Assessment of Gateway Process*, described the physics behind interdimensional astral projection that the military researched and weaponised. Lt. Colonel McDonnell's report began with the following recommendation:

> *The physics of altered human consciousness deals with some conceptualizations that are not easily grasped…in the context of ordinary 'left brain' linear thinking. So… parts of this paper will require not only logic but a touch of right brain intuitive insight.*

To understand the science used to scaffold black ops like the Gateway Process, ditch the left-brain slop they served us at school. Let us start with a short quiz:

1. When a human heart stops, paramedics start it again using:
    a. Electricity
    b. Gravity
2. Neurons communicate via a process which is:
    a. Electro-chemical
    b. Gravo-chemical
3. Brain waves are measured with an:
    a. EEG
    b. GEG
4. Light, x-rays, microwaves, infrared radiation, and radio waves are all caused by:
    a. Alternating electrical charge
    b. Gravity
5. The Bible says God is:
    a. Light
    b. Gravity
6. The fundamental force in the universe is:
    a. Electricity
    b. Gravity

TESLA'S ELECTRIC UNIVERSE

Tesla is the suppressed genius behind JASON technology, not Newton or Einstein. Tesla described pedophile Einstein's Theory of relativity as:

> *A mass of error and deceptive ideas violently opposed to the teachings of great men of science of the past and even to common sense. The theory wraps all the errors and fallacies and clothes them in magnificent mathematical garb which fascinates, dazzles and makes people blind to the underlying errors. The theory is like a beggar*

> *clothed in purple whom ignorant people take for a king. Its exponents are very brilliant men, but they are meta-physicists rather than scientists.*[458]

Proponents of Tesla's electric universe argue that theoretical physics is math - not science. Number manipulation alone proves nothing. Real physicists test and prove hypotheses via experimentation. Math ought to be reserved for use as a language to record and communicate experimental findings for others to replicate and build upon, not as a substitute for experimental findings.

Robert Otey argues that Newton's theory of gravity and the celestial mechanics is wrong. Newton based his concept that mass creatives gravity on his adjustment of Kepler's orbital equation. Newton fabricated a new element in his head called 'mass' and added it to Kepler's equation which was based on Kepler's observations of the solar system. When Kepler's equation and Newton's adjusted version of Kepler's equation are applied to the same motions, the sums all tally up the same. This means Newton's addition to Kepler's equation was unnecessary and did not prove the existence of 'mass.'

Otey explains, what Newton and Einstein called gravity is in fact a product of electricity. When an apple falls to the ground, this is not two masses being attracted to each other based on their mass. Instead, it is an example of electric current constantly seeking rest. The falling apple's electric vortex seeks rest in its nearest equipotential (i.e., the earth).
Consistent with this paradigm, Lt. Col. McDonnell's report on the Gateway Process states:

> *Solid matter, in the strict construction of the term, simply does not exist. Rather, atomic structure is composed of oscillating energy grids surrounded by other oscillating energy grids which orbit at extraordinarily high speeds… The point to be made is that the entire human being, brain, consciousness and all is, like the universe which surrounds him…an extraordinary complex system of energy fields. The so-called states of matter are actually variances in the state of energy, and human consciousness is a function of the interaction of energy in the two opposite states (motion vs rest)...*

The earth is enveloped by an electro-magnetic field, and the interaction between this and the electrical human body is the basis of the Gateway Process.

MUNROE INSTITUTE

During the 1950s, the CIA funded Robert Monroe's development of what is called the *Gateway Experience* or *Hemispheric Synchronization*. You might know it as Astral Projection. Newspapers and Army documents record that the US Army sent soldiers to Robert Monroe for training in the Gateway Process. I was told by a retired military consultant that 25 years ago standard British Army Military Police training incorporated Remote Viewing which enabled MPs to patrol UK bases located in foreign territories.

The Gateway Process is a method for inducing altered states of consciousness. It is the basis of remote viewing, astral projection, and the weaponization of psychic energy. John Gittinger's PAS was the main screening instrument for selection into the Gateway Process. The military selected creative and intelligent servicemen as Remote Viewing candidates. This is because high IQ creative people are natural bilateral processors with a strong right hemispheric and visual-spatial learning preference. They are also naturally intuitive with a hypersensitive nervous system that facilitates learning of the Gateway Process.

---

[458] *New York Times* (11 July 1935) p23 c8.

The Fort Meade document provides a detailed explanation of the physics behind the Gateway Process and its various applications. It begins with explaining how transcendental meditation, hypnosis, and biofeedback work, and how these three methods relate to hemispheric synchronization:

1. Hypnosis suppresses the left hemisphere. The left hemisphere screens, sorts and assigns meaning to stimuli before it lets information enter the right brain. Hypnosis disengages this left-brain function and allows direct access to the right hemisphere. The left hemisphere is disrupted via drowsiness, which is why the hypnotherapist initially suggests the client is ‘feeling sleepy.’ Then stimuli (including verbal suggestion) are immediately accepted and acted on by the right brain which processes and stores this information unconsciously. For example, suggesting the hypnotized person’s legs are numb generates an electrical reaction that induces a numb feeling. Or, suggesting the person has improved memory causes unused information storage capacity to become available. Hypnosis is used to speed up the early stages of the Gateway Process.

2. Transcendental Meditation ignores the left hemisphere. The person concentrates on drawing electromagnetic energy up the spinal cord. This creates acoustical standing waves in the cerebral ventricles which are then conducted to the grey matter in the cerebral cortex in the right hemisphere. These waves stimulate and eventually polarize the cortex.

3. Biofeedback teaches the left hemisphere to recognize the sensations which indicate the targeted right hemisphere areas are being accessed. Eventually, the left brain can consciously access areas in the right brain. This method is used to block pain, for example. Biofeedback is used to rapidly reach deep meditative states.

Hemispheric Synchronization is a state of consciousness where the left and right brain hemispheres work together as a whole. The left hemisphere relaxes, which places the body in a virtual sleep state. The EEG patterns of both hemispheres are simultaneously equal in amplitude and frequency.

Binaural Beats are used to induce hemispheric synchronization. Binaural beats are two sounds of slightly different frequencies. Each sound is delivered to a different ear and the right brain perceives the difference between the two frequencies. Various sound waves may be played, depending on the desired brain wave activity to be produced.

Altered States of Consciousness (aka, *Trance States*) are dissociative states of mind produced by the following esoteric practises:[459]

- Kundalini Yoga
- Zen Buddhism
- Shamanism
- Hallucinogenic psychedelic drugs
- Medium
- Transcendental Meditation
- Hypnosis
- Biofeedback
- Ritual dancing
- Ritual drumbeats
- Binaural beats
- Sensory deprivation.

---

[459] P. Flor-Henry, Y. Shapiro & C. Sombrun (2017). Brain changes during a shamanic trance: Altered modes of consciousness, hemispheric laterality, and systemic psychobiology, *Cogent Psychology*, 4(1).

Altered states of consciousness change brain function. They disengage the body from external stimuli, activate internal focus, and reconfigure connectivity between brain areas. The above methods produce the following brain changes: [460]

- Shift hemispheric dominance from Left to the Right brain. Simultaneously activate the right hemisphere and deactivate the left.
- Increased Alpha wave activity associated with relaxed wakefulness, creativity and free association.
- Increased Right brain Theta wave activity, as associated with visual imagery and not drowsiness.
- Bilateral increase in Gamma activity.
- Synchronized EEG activity between Left and Right frontal lobes. (Deeper trance deactivates the frontal lobes.)
- Activation of the parasympathetic nervous system, opioid release and pain decrease.
- Increased Delta activity in Right hemisphere.
- Bilateral increase in low Beta activity.

GATEWAY METHOD

The Gateway Process combines Transcendental Meditation techniques and hypnotic suggestion with listening to binaural beats. Different sound frequencies were employed depending on the desired state of consciousness, be it sleep, mental concentration or intuition and creativity. Training was delivered in the following sequence:

1. Engage in visualisation.
2. Engage in mantra chanting to create resonance.
3. Listen to Binaural Beats.
4. Relax to white noise sounds to suppress the Left brain and stimulate the Right.
5. Manipulate electromagnetic energy travelling through the body. (This is also purported to protect against 'entities' encountered during astral projection.)

Astral Projection is practised by many pagan cultures and called by different names:

- Buddhist light body
- Dream body
- Egyptian Ka
- Energy body
- Hindu body of bliss
- Tantric subtle body
- Taoist diamond body.

Leaving the physical body for astral travel requires three conditions:

1. Induction of Left-brain quietness and deep physical relaxation via REM frequencies.
2. Synchronization of brain hemisphere wave patterns.
3. Stimulation of Right hemisphere to gain heightened alertness. This does interfere with hemispheric synchronisation, but not before the high frequency range necessary for attaining out-of-body status is established.

---

[460] P. Flor-Henry, Y. Shapiro & C. Sombrun (2017). Brain changes during a shamanic trance: Altered modes of consciousness, hemispheric laterality, and systemic psychobiology, *Cogent Psychology*, 4(1).

When both brain hemispheres electrically fire at the same rate, this creates a chain reaction which results in the body oscillating at 7.5 hertz – the same rate the electromagnetic field in our external environment resonates at. This state of vibratory harmony transforms the world and beyond into an extension of the human body. The person's consciousness or soul, which is normally restricted within the confines of the physical body's regular rate of oscillation, may then transcend the body and move freely outside the physical body, including inter-dimensionally. This process is what esoteric cults term becoming 'one with the universe.' The space-time continuum can be transcended according to the same principle, so that the individual can travel inter-dimensionally.

DUALITY OF THE MIND

We possess two minds: the *explicit* (conscious) and *implicit* (non-conscious). The implicit mind is a separate and distinct entity linked to the Right hemisphere; hence the Right brain side is targeted for stimulation and dominance during the Gateway Process. With training, the implicit mind may accomplish the following esoteric skills:

- Move objects without physical contact (aka telekinesis)
- Communicate and receive intelligence via intuition (telepathy or problem-solving)
- Gain information about distant places or people (clairvoyance or remote viewing)
- Read minds or control them from afar (telepathy)
- Predict the future (precognition).

The Gateway Process is behind the weaponization of occultic practises including levitation, walking through objects, and psychic warfare. It enables subjects to physically choke and throw opponents using their will, and to cause mass destruction to our physical surrounds. Lt. Col. McDonnell alludes to this in his description of 'Colour Breathing.'

ADVANCED GATEWAY TECHNIQUES

Problem-Solving is where the individual consults interdimensional entities to find solutions to certain problems such as math and physics questions. The answers may strike the individual during the following days. Incidentally, this is what the Nazis, Tesla and Einstein engaged in to find their advanced technologies. Some genius scientists receive their solutions during dreams via this method.

Remote Viewing involves the Right hemisphere's implicit processing capability coupled with the use of a 'magic wand' which the military document compares to the 'sceptre' carried by 'monarchs' for the same purpose of remote viewing. Remote Viewing is a minor skill featured in the Gateway Process, yet it has been used as a smoke screen for the Stargate Project's end goal.

Colour Breathing involves focussing on certain colours to activate the body's own energies. The body's electromagnetic field draws energy from the earth's electrostatic field for its own use. Visualisation of colours cue set frequencies and amplitudes because colour is the result of different light wavelengths. Focussing on blue, for example, instantly reduces swelling in the subject's body, while red has the opposite effect. Note that red is close to the magenta colour of the lotus flower. The military do not state such but the colour breathing tool was weaponized and used to create the bomb blast in Central America when I was 14 years old.

PROJECT LOOKING-GLASS

Focus 15 of the Gateway Process involves transcending our space-time continuum to time travel into the subject's past, while ***Focus 21*** entails travelling into the future. I know from experience that Focus 15 formed the basis of *Project Looking-Glass* which involved peering into history. Looking-Glass was conducted at the Dulce lab in the mid-1980s. Alice Delta soldiers were hooked up to machinery including brain scans attached to computer monitors which displayed images transformed from the subjects' neural activity.

A rudimentary version of Looking-Glass technology was replicated in an experiment conducted *20 years ago* at the University of California. Berkley scientists recorded signals from the brain of a cat while it watched movie scenes, then reconstructed the recorded signals into images which they displayed on a computer monitor. The recorded images were fuzzy but recognizable versions of the movie scenes the cat watched. Here is the university's 1999 news release regarding their cat experiment:[461]

> *The team recorded signals from a total of 177 cells in the lateral geniculate nucleus - a part of the brain's thalamus that processes visual signals from the eye - as they played a digitized movie of indoor and outdoor scenes for the cat. Using simple mathematical filters, the researchers decoded the signals to generate a movie of what the cat actually saw. The reconstructed movie turned out to be amazingly faithful to the original.*
>
> *'This work demonstrates that we have a reasonable understanding of how visual information is encoded in the thalamus,' said Yang Dan… Theoretically, if someone could record from many more cells - the lateral geniculate nucleus contains several hundred thousand nerve cells in all - it should be possible to reconstruct exactly what the animal sees, she said… Dan sees the demonstration… as a step toward a larger goal of understanding how the entire brain works.*
>
> *The current understanding of how cells in this part of the brain respond to visual stimuli has been pieced together over decades by many researchers working with animals.*
>
> *'Our goal is to understand how information is processed in the brain, how it is encoded,' Dan said. 'By working backward, using the firing of nerve cells to reconstruct the original scene, we can see where we have been successful and where we haven't… We aren't the first to use this decoding technique, but instead of decoding the signals one at a time, we did it simultaneously to get a movie image of what the cat saw…'*
>
> *'We have provided a first demonstration that spatiotemporal natural scenes can be reconstructed from the ensemble responses of visual neurons,' the researchers concluded in their journal article.*[462]

The cat experiment was funded by the National Institutes of Health, the CIA cut-out that funded MK-ULTRA research.

---

[461] Robert Sanders (15 October 1999) News Release, University of California.

[462] G.B. Stanley, F.F. Li & Y. Dan (1999). Reconstruction of Natural Scenes from Ensemble Responses in the Lateral Geniculate Nucleus. *Journal of Neuroscience*, 15 Sep, 19:18, 8036-42.

STARGATE PROJECT

The *Gateway Process* was integral to the *Stargate Project*, a secret US Army unit officially established in 1978 at Fort Meade, Maryland, by the DIA (*Defence Intelligence Agency*) and *SRI International*. Formed in 1947, SRI (*Stanford Research Institute*) was a hub of MK-ULTRA activity. SRI separated from Stanford University in 1970 and changed its name to *SRI International* in 1977. The Director of Stanford University headed *SRI International* from 1979. Staffed by Scientologists, *SRI International* was the CIA cut-out behind the development and weaponization of Remote Viewing and the Gateway Process.

The US Army established the Stargate Project to investigate the potential for psychic phenomena in military and domestic intelligence applications. It was overseen by Lt. Frederick Holmes Atwater until 1987, under Maj. Gen. Albert Stubblebine. Lt. Atwater later became President of the Monroe Institute. In 2006, Lt. Atwater published a research report on the Monroe Institute website under the name 'Skip' Atwater. In this he explained: [463]

> *STARLINES is a program designed for the exploration of the expansive physical universe and its connectedness with consciousness itself . . . STARLINES delves into the inner realms of Focus – 34 / 35 and beyond, establishing and strengthening the link between Earth and the Galactic Core, the central point of our Milky Way galaxy, a consciousness **portal** or **Stargate** and a means to enter the creative stream of the Great Emitter.*

Lt. Atwater reported the results of a study involving 101 graduates of the STARLINES residential program conducted at the Monroe Institute. Participants achieved the Gateway Process consciousness level *Focus 34/35* during which they travelled inter-dimensionally and located and explored stargates, neighbouring star systems, and communicated with interdimensional entities (aka, 'extra-terrestrial beings' or 'intelligences'). Participants reportedly visited our Solar System, Alpha Centauri, Sirius, Arcturus, the Pleiades, and the Orion Nebula. Following astral exploration of Alpha Centaur, multiple participants independently reported encountering 'intelligent' lifeforms resembling 'giant ants' which Lt. Atwater said he previously personally experienced (pp. 44-45).

STARGATES

In correspondence (dated 9 January 2018) from the DIA to the *Committee on Armed Services* Chair, John McCain, the DIA listed 38 secret research programs and 'products produced under the AATIP contract.' Point 8. on the 'List of Attachments' reads, 'Traversable Wormholes, Stargates, and Negative Energy, Dr Eric Davis, *EarthTech International*.' According to their website, *EarthTech International* is:

> *A private-funded research organisation exploring novel ideas in basic and applied physics and engineering. . . Our research interests include theories of spacetime, gravity and cosmology; studies of the quantum vacuum; modifications of standard theories of electrodynamics; interstellar flight science; and the Search for Extra-Terrestrial Intelligence, specifically as these topics may apply to developing innovative space propulsion and sources of energy.*

---

[463] Frederick Holmes Atwater (2006). *Starlines Report* [monroeinstitute.org].

Wormholes are hyperspace tunnels through spacetime which connect remote regions in our universe, two different universes, different dimensions, or different times. A stargate is a special class of traversable wormhole with simple physics and flat entry and exit openings. Traversable wormholes allowed Delta soldiers to enter one side of the tunnel, travel through the throat, and exit the other side.

AIRFORCE SPACE COMMAND

Air Force Space Command became a major command of the US Air Force in September 1982. In December 2019 it was re-designated as the US Space Force. It is responsible for space warfare. Space warfare incorporates more than just satellites.

> *The Space Force was created in part to support NASA as it looks to set up permanent facilities on the Moon... It's plausible that the Space Force and other military branches could establish a presence on the Moon that accompanies NASA's Artemis program, which aims to set up shop on the Moon as a jumping-off point for travel to Mars. Does that require a Space Force astronaut corps to mirror NASA's? Maybe someday…*[464]

PEDOWOOD PROPAGANDA

The Stargate Project was 'officially' disbanded in 1995 and declared a waste of time and money. It was subsequently discredited via CIA-funded Hollywood films including *Stargate* (1994) and *Men Who Stare at Goats* (2004). The Stargate Project was in fact highly successful, otherwise the following would not have occurred: (a) The military and CIA continued pumping resources into Stargate for 17 years; (b) The US Army officer in charge of Stargate went on to become President of the Monroe Institute; and (c) All Stargate scientists continued work in the exact same field.

Consider the *Stargate* film a documentary. The film is loosely based on what was in fact achieved. The *Stargate* film 1994 release pre-empted the Stargate Project 1995 pretend-dissolution. That was no coincidence.

Earlier MK-ULTRA research scaffolded the Stargate Project, including Robert Monroe and John C. Lilly's work with inducing Altered States of Consciousness, and the investigations into psychic ability by physicists Russell Targ and Harold Puthoff. Their research culminated in teams of MK-DELTA soldiers physically visiting the locations identified by Gateway scouts. Delta teams initially trained in a three-story virtual reality holographic studio before entering the real Stargate and travelling through wormholes to a desert planet. Targ, Puthoff, Lilly, Atwater, and Stubblebine *knowingly* used and abused children who participated in the Stargate Project either as MK-ULTRA research subjects, or MK-DELTA child soldiers sent on field missions.

---

[464] Rachel Cohen (2020). For Clues About Space Force's Future, Look to Crew Dragon, *Airforce Magazine*, 27 May.

JASON PROJECT

DARPA and the JASON Group were formed in 1958 and 1960 respectively and were responsible for developing the science and technology that scaffolded the JASON Super Soldier Project and the related Looking-Glass and Stargate interstellar travel project. The elite JASON scientists operated out of Dulce in the USA and Pine Gap in Australia. DNA and reproductive materials collected from child victims at the CIA research facility at ANSTO in Lucas Heights were stored in liquid nitrogen flasks and transported to Pine Gap in central Australia for use in the JASON super soldier genetic engineering project.

In 1991, I was an inpatient in Gold Coast Hospital following an overdose. During my medical evaluation with a young female registrar, I pointed to the left side of my lower abdomen and asked, 'Can they extract eggs from here?' She drew a diagram and dismissed my concerns as impossible. Yet I remained unconvinced, plagued by the thought that eggs had been extracted from my left ovum. I later recalled the procedure which occurred at the ANSTO lab beneath Lucas Heights, and the excursion Gittinger took me on to witness the result at Pine Gap.

I began speaking of a 'JASON Project' and a 'JASON Group' in the early 1990s and was unable to find any reference to either, until Steve McMurray alerted me to a book on super soldiers edited by an ex-officer who works for the Australian Defence Academy.[465] Published after I went public, the book arbitrarily mentioned the following:

> *Perhaps this will be most clearly evidenced by my discussion of DARPA's JASON project. The JASON project entails the collecting of DNA from military personnel in order to identify genome sequences that define 'ideal' soldiers. These genome sequences, the JASON project (2010, p.1) suggests, can be used in order to genetically produce super soldiers.*

Here are some relevant extracts from the same book:

- *The modern 'military human enhancement' effort draws on the fields of neuroscience, pharmacology, biology, genetics, nanotechnology and robotics…*
- *DARPA's current unclassified projects focus on…improving cognitive abilities such as memory, attention and awareness through…pharmacological means…enhancing senses such as smell, sight, taste and hearing…altering human metabolism to allow for increased endurance, rapid healing and the digestion of otherwise indigestible materials…*
- *The Beijing Genome Institute (BGI) located in Hong Kong sequenced '2,000 school children to look for markers that correlate with educational test scores.'* (p.21)

---

[465] Jai Galliott & Mianna Lotz (Eds.) (2016) *Super Soldiers: The Ethical, legal and Social Implications*.

- *The next step is to develop a two-way communication interface with the brain. Neuroscience is working hard in decoding the human brain in order to develop a seamless brain-machine interface (BMI) to enhance sensory and motor abilities. Again, scientific research in this area has been ongoing for decades and a BMI is in reach within years. There are obvious military applications of BMIs:*

1. ***Cognitive augmentation**, which alarms soldiers to threats they do not consciously perceive and to respond before a conscious intention is formed, which could cut down effective response times by as much as 7-8 seconds (Kasanoff 2012);*
2. ***Synthetic telepathy**, which would allow soldiers to communicate silently amongst each other or with some distant command post (Piore 2011); and*
3. ***Thought-controlled weapons** (for example **fighter jets**) that take advantage of the grater abilities of the human brain compared to computer vision while significantly reducing human response times to threats (Aym 2010).*

Indeed, the JASON Group have been working on the JASON Project 'for decades.' JASON technology is far more advanced than the public are informed. I witnessed the achievement of all of this plus the technology featured in the following news article:

> **Army of the Future: Soldiers will be Able to Run at Olympic Speed and Won't Need Food or Sleep with Gene Technology**
>
> *DARPA is working on triggering genes that will make soldiers' bodies able to convert fat into energy more efficiently, so they are able to go days without eating while in the warzone… Helmets could enable soldiers to communicate telepathically… Washington's military scientists are also hoping to work out how to trigger cells to regrow limbs for soldiers maimed by enemy bombs and landmines… With well-documented cases already of young children regrowing fingers severed in accidents, DARPA is throwing significant sums at research to identify the physiological trigger and activate it in adults… One area of success has been in shutting off the trigger of sleep. A drug was tested on US Army helicopter pilots that enabled them to stay up longer than 40 hours, with their levels of concentration actually improving after nearly two days without rest.* [466]

Harvard genetics professor and transhumanist, George Church, listed the genes his university research team are modifying to enhance human abilities.[467] Here is a list of genes Harvard are targeting for enhancement, relevant to what I witnessed the JASON Group achieve decades ago: [468]

---

[466] Damien Gayle, *Army of the future: Soldiers will be able to run at Olympic speed and won't need food or sleep with gene technology*. Daily Mail [Online], 12 August 2012.

[467] Paul Ratner (2019). Read a Harvard geneticist's plan for redesigning humans. *Think Big*, 21 July.

[468] [arep.med.harvard.edu]

Gene	Effects
LRP5	Extra-strong bones
MSTN	Larger, leaner muscles
SCN9A	Insensitivity to pain
FAAH-OUT	Insensitivity to pain
BDKRB2	Deep diving, enhanced breath holding
HOXA11	Six-fingered hands, enhanced manipulation
EPOR	Increased oxygen transportation
EGLN1	High altitude tolerance
EPAS1	High altitude tolerance
MTHFR	High altitude tolerance
CTNNB1	Radiation resistance
TERT	Low aging
GRIN2B	Enhanced learning and memory
CCR5	Enhanced learning
FOXP2	Learn stimulus-response associations faster
NLGN3	Enhanced spatial learning abilities

Jeffrey Epstein's Foundation donated $6.5 million to fund Harvard's genetics research. George Church continued meeting with Epstein following the child trafficker's 2014 conviction.

The six-fingered hands listed by Harvard geneticists are a Nephilim trait noted in the Bible. This suggests Harvard are synthesising human and fallen angel (alien) DNA – as the JASON Group have already done. The JASON Group long ago developed a series of super soldier models. The basic MK-DELTA model was a mind-controlled human whose abilities were enhanced through hypnosis, drugs, sensory deprivation, esoteric means, etc. Another model had abilities enhanced through bio-chipping, bionics, and genetic modification using animal DNA. A more advanced model was a cloned hybrid created with genetic materials taken from human, animal and 'alien' specimens. I was of the first model, and I witnessed the other two.

Genetically engineered JASON Super Soldiers comprised the CIA terror forces that decimated Syria and other nations during the CIA-orchestrated 'Arab Spring' fundamentalist uprising. In 2016, Syria's representative to the United Nations publicly stated *twice* that ISIS forces were armed with 'genetically modified super soldiers' produced and supplied by the USA. In 2015, 7-foot tall soldiers were filmed beheading 21 Christians in Egypt. These soldiers were described as Caucasian, not Arabic, in appearance. They resembled the super soldiers I saw developed under Pine Gap 45 years ago.

The West are not the only ones developing super soldiers. In 2018, Vladimir Putin publicly warned the West that Russia were in the process of developing super soldiers which are 'worse than nuclear bombs.'

RADIOISOTOPES: MK-ULTRA, DELTA & NAOMI

I felt fine when I was falling asleep at 10pm. I awoke at 1am writhing in pain. The ringing in my ears was deafening, and I felt a sudden urge to vomit. 'Help me!' I moaned, 'They're radiating me!' I couldn't escape the escalating nausea and ran

> *outside to vomit. This happened twice. On the second round I threw up bitter bile. I prayed to God to make it stop. It felt like I was dying…*

Two days later, during therapy, I realised I had experienced another flashback. For some reason, I was injected with radioisotopes at age 6 years. I can't recall why, as I don't think anyone told me. Usually Gittinger would explain what he was doing and why he was doing it as he did it. But I doubt this was the case when they were injecting me. I have a faint image of staff in white lab coats. That's all. I also recall the words 'isotopes' being uttered. I have always associated the term 'PET scan' with this experience but can't tell you why.

People commonly assume my abusers used the 20-story underground ANSTO nuclear reactor facility at Lucas Heights due to its high security. No, they used a nuclear reactor site because of the nuclear reactor. Lucas heights nuclear reactor (HIFAR) operated from 1958 to 2007. The reactor was used to create a wide variety of radioisotopes. Radioisotopes were made from materials bombarded by neutrons in the reactor. CIA-ASIO scientists used the radioisotopes for various purposes relevant to MK-ULTRA, MK-DELTA, MK-NAOMI, and the JASON Project. Here is a list of possible uses of radioisotopes, suggested by my medical doctor friend:

Potential options for using radioisotopes with DELTA soldiers

1. ***Tracking***. Radioisotopes can be used for tracking purposes, possibly from satellites/drones/reconnaissance aircraft. Microchipping is inferior because it is vulnerable to being disabled with electro-magnetism. Rare radioisotopes can be created with a desired half-life (of decades if needs be). These isotopes can be injected into soldiers, allowing a small team to be simultaneously tracked.
2. ***Discoveries in unique physiology***. Radioisotopes can be paired with other molecules (e.g., glucose) in PET, fMRI and CT scanners, to track in real time which parts of the body (brain, thyroid, adrenal, etc) are up-taking (utilizing) the material. This could be used to determine what specific parts of the brain are active, and to what degree, to determine neurological function when compared to other individuals of known ability level. The brain primarily runs on glucose; therefore, attaching a radioisotope to a glucose molecule and injecting this into the body prior to a scan would allow scientists to see where glucose utilization is occurring specifically. If the utilization is occurring in the cortical region known as the homunculus, then there could potentially be some information gained about dexterity of the associated regions, especially if the uptake was simultaneously observed in the cerebellum (brain structure at the posterior base of the brain that coordinates movement). There seems to be an almost limitless number of possibilities in determining different aspects of brain function when using this modality.
3. ***Power generation***. With the advent of nanotechnology, it might be possible to inject Nano nuclear generators that utilize radioisotopes for fuel to supplement power for super soldiers that would exceed human production limitations. That's a stretch, but…

Radiation in Genetic Engineering & Virus Development

I visited my real paternal grandfather in Poland in 1990. While there I noticed the apples growing in my grandfather's communal garden were deformed, coated in large lumps. When I asked what was wrong with them, Jadek replied, 'Ah, Chernobyl.' Later I was watching Polish news on a black and white TV set with the family. A news story featured a rabbit with bird wings. 'What's that?!' I exclaimed. 'Ah, Chernobyl,' the family responded, unaffected.

My experiences in Poland bothered me. They made me ponder this fact: Radiation can alter the DNA code within any cell. I think this is a major clue to what the CSIRO, which was based at the Lucas heights nuclear reactor, were using radioisotopes for. ANSTO now have cyclotrons as well as reactors, enabling them to develop a wider range of nuclear materials for scientific research purposes. Remember, the CSIRO develop viruses, vaccines, and they genetically engineer plants and animals. Here are some more relevant points to consider:

- Radiation is crucial to studying and manipulating DNA.
- Radiation was used to develop x-rays that infer the structure and shape of DNA proteins and the 4 base chemicals.
- Radiation severs the chemical bonds that secure DNA strands.
- Radioisotopes are used when labelling cloned DNA.
- Radioisotopes are used in radioactive labelling techniques that are still extensively applied in gene manipulation experiments.
- Radioisotopes provide information about the disease state of a specific illness.
- Radioactive nucleotides are used to determine the rate of DNA synthesis.
- Radioisotopes are used for DNA sequencing, the process of determining the order of the DNA nucleotides (A, G, C, T).
- DNA sequencing is essential to the CRISPR procedure in which genetic code is edited.
- DNA can be designed and sequenced from the 4 building block chemicals and structured via additive manufacturing methods (i.e., sort of like 3D printing).

MK-NAOMI & CRISPR

There is more to the Project MK-NAOMI and their viral research than we think.

Note that the CRISPR-Cas9 was adapted from a naturally occurring genome editing system in *bacteria*. The bacteria capture snippets of DNA from invading *viruses* and use them to create DNA segments (called 'CRISPR arrays'). The CRISPR arrays let bacteria 'remember' the viruses (or closely related ones). To use CRISPR/Cas9, scientists first identify the sequence of the human genome they wish to edit. Then they create a specific Guide RNA to recognise that particular stretch of A-T-G-C in the DNA. The Guide RNA is attached to the DNA cutting enzyme Cas9, and then this complex is introduced to the target cells. It locates the target letter sequence and cuts the DNA. At that point, scientists can then edit the existing genome by either modifying, deleting, or inserting new sequences. It makes CRISPR a cut and paste tool for DNA editing.

If you want an indication of what has been occurring at ANSTO and the CSIRO, research the CVs of the scientists employed there, and what they were doing immediately prior to working there (sometimes there is a discrepancy between their previous work, and their ANSTO job description). For instance, some folks are into transfection, the process of artificially introducing nucleic acids (DNA or RNA) into cells, via an alternative means other than viral infection; this alters the cells' properties. Transfection is used to study gene function and regulation, produce transgenic organisms, and as a method of gene therapy. If this is what employees are doing today, this indicates what the Lucas Heights scientists were secretly up to 40 years ago.

Conclusion

The relevance of radiation to genetic engineering and virology makes sense of the countless thousands of subjects unwittingly recruited for clandestine radiation experiments performed by MK-ULTRA doctors in the USA, and which became the subject of the 1994 *Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments*.

The genetic engineering and virology processes I mention here are consistent with the Huxleyan eugenicist / trans-humanist agenda, and my childhood experiences at the CSIRO nuclear reactor facility at Lucas Heights.

MK-DELTA CLUES

In 1981, the 3rd Battalion, Royal Australian Regiment moved to Holsworthy. There they exhibited behaviour atypical of soldiers, included torturing and burning a cat. To my SAS Vietnam Veteran mate, the unit's misconduct suggests they underwent the type of unethical training I experienced in the Holsworthy tunnels.

I have heard from multiple sources that all modern military recruits are routinely microchipped and subjected to mind control without their conscious knowledge. For instance, my relative and her two friends applied to do a gap year with the Australian Army. My relative's application was botched by an administrator and she missed out. Her friends were successful. One friend subsequently described a weird incident that occurred during basic training where her entire group awoke one morning bleeding from the nose. She described nasal microchipping. As another example, during my Seattle conference presentation, an audience member told me he did not sleep for a decade due to whatever the US Army did to enhance his capabilities.

All DELTA Special Operations soldiers were subjected to MK-ULTRA mind control as children, before formally joining the armed forces as adults. I had the chance to test this notion in 2018 during communication with a currently serving DELTA Special Operations soldier in the USA. I asked Ryan whether he had ever heard of DELTA employing child soldiers. He heard 'on the grape vine' that child soldiers were trained, 'to keep up with the Russians,' but that the project 'went dark.' When I pressed Ryan for more information, he dissociated and began spewing out semi-coherent references to mind control programming.

My military training becomes evident in extreme, life or death situations. I automatically assume command in such a situation, like when we were being chased during the filming of Candy Girl documentary. Steve McMurray noticed that I reminded him of his father who was military trained at Holsworthy. Also, when I associated with a former SAS soldier who shares my background, he innately began responding to me like I was his superior.

ALICE & JASON

As young teenagers my friends and I would attend Blue Light discos sponsored by our local police. There we added our own chorus lines to charming 80s classics like The Radiators 'You Give me Head' and Smokies 'Living Next Door to Alice.' Our rendition of the latter went like this:

Cause for twenty-four years I've been living next door to Alice.
[Crowd: Alice! Who the Fuck is Alice?!]
Twenty-four years, just waiting' for a chance,
To tell her how I'm feeling, maybe get a second glance,
Now I've gotta get used to not living next door to Alice.
[Alice! Who the Fuck is Alice?!]

The Alice song bothered me for reasons which are now obvious. It was used as one of my programming songs. ALICE was the name given to every female MK-DETLA child soldier. Hence the 'Alice in Wonderland' and 'Alice Through the Looking-Glass' programming based on the mescalin-inspired writings of pedophile Lewis Carol. Every male DELTA soldier was code-named JASON. Hence the 'Jason Bourne' and 'Bourne Identity' predictive programming movie franchise

DELTA TRAINING

Holsworthy

My therapist waved her fingers back and forth across my eyes. 'Now just close your eyes and relax.'

I sunk into the leather recliner and did as instructed. I see nothing. . . nothing. . . nothing. . . Then, a picture started forming in my mind. A faint, distant, memory. *What's this? What am I seeing?* 'I'm six. It's night-time. Black boots. Men. Soldiers. Dragging me on the ground.' *Noooooooo!!*

Something flung me back in the chair. I leapt around and began clawing my way out backwards. *Hole. Hessian bag. Children. Thrown on top of the dead bodies. Warm bodies. Not scared of them. Comfortable. My friends.*

My therapist lunged forward and tucked my hair behind my ear. 'Oh, Fiona. Right now, I have more admiration for you than anyone.'

I curled up in a foetal position. 'I see a military truck. I see an Asian soldier. He's angry at me. He didn't like something I said, and so he put me in a Hessian bag and threw me into a hole in the ground. The hole is full of dead children. Their bodies are warm…'

It took minutes for me to recover. 'Are we going to do it again?' I asked.

Therapist nodded. She waved her fingers across my eyes again. I relaxed into the chair as before. 'I'm cold. Icy. There's a big freezer room. The Asian soldier, Chan, takes me to the entrance and tells me to go inside and look. I enter. To my right I see frozen carcasses hanging on meat hooks. There's another one -. . . THAT'S NOT *MEAT!* It's a girl! He's a cannibal! She's frozen! She's got long brown hair!'

'I knew you were going to say that.'

'What the hell! What is this? I need some crayons and paper.'

Therapist fetched some rudimentary art materials, and I drew the faint image to life. I drew the 12-year-old victim with dotted lines drawn on her like a carcass prepared for butchering. I drew the Asian soldier I knew as 'Colonel Chan' dressed in Australian Army uniform.

I called the Colonel 'Chan' because that is how his name sounded to a six-year-old child. 'Colonel Chan' was in fact Dr Victor Chang, the celebrated Chinese-Australian heart surgeon. Chang coordinated the Australian branch of the CIA's black-market organ trafficking operation. In 1991, Chang was gunned down in a North Sydney gutter like the common criminal scum he was. Colonel Chang and John Overton, the anaesthetist he graduated medical school with, were attached to Holsworthy's Health Battalion. John Overton lived next door to Antony Kidman.

Victor Chang trained DELTA child and adult soldiers at Holsworthy. Chang conducted the full basic army training I underwent at age six, at a makeshift camp site established in the bushland south of the main entrance. I was collected at night from a Holsworthy side gate on Heathcote Road, in an army Land Rover with a canvas canopy. I was dressed in a mini uniform and dog tags, and I trained and dined with male DELTA soldiers who called me 'Alice.' The

DELTA training camp included a mess tent and a cold storage room. The cold room was the final resting place of Michelle, the 12-year-old girl I witnessed BoysTown priests kidnap on Heathcote Road near Engadine, then rape and murder beside Woronora weir. Colonel Chang showed me Michelle's body hanging on meat hooks in the cold room, to traumatise me. She had broken surgical lines drawn all over her body in preparation for butchering. Victor Chang was a sadistic cannibal in charge of training DELTA recruits. All DELTA soldiers are forced to routinely engage in cannibalism.

HOLSWORTHY FREEZER ROOM
FROZEN GIRL HANGING ON MEAT HOOK
CANNIBALISM

MEAT HOOKS
AUSTRALIAN ARMY UNIFORM
Colonel CHAN DR
GIRL
HOLSWORTHY FREEZER

COLONEL CHAN
AUSTRALIAN ARMY

Vietnam Health Battalion Logo

My basic training was the same as adult recruits undergo, plus CIA torture and dissociation methods. I recall being chased barefoot and naked by a dog along an orange Holsworthy dirt track until I dissociated from the pain. Colonel Chang barked orders at me while his vicious dog ran beside him. He threatened the dog would rape me if it caught me. I believed him because he had already instructed the dog to rape me in a cage. I eventually collapsed with exhaustion. My favourite soldier picked me up and carried me back to base camp. I wrapped my arms around his neck and whispered into his ear, ‘I love you, Jason.’

‘I love you too, pumpkin,’ he whispered back. Weaknesses were always discovered and eliminated within DELTA.

Colonel Chang locked me in a cage located on the bottom floor of a seven-story underground facility remotely located at the south end of Holsworthy Barracks, in an area adjacent to Lucas Heights. There I was imprisoned with a small group of six-year-old children for approximately three days. The purpose was to make me bond with them so their impending slaughter would have a more traumatic impact. These children were specifically bred for MK-DELTA and they had never seen the outside world. They had not even seen daylight or trees. The group sat like obedient school students and listened intently to my vivid description of the world above. I described the ocean, its coral that looked like an underwater flower garden, and its waves that felt like great walls of water.

‘We heard this!’ the children exclaimed. ‘The Light Man told us this!’

‘Who is the Light Man?’ I asked.

They described how the Light Man sometimes visited their cage and told them stories about nature.

‘Oh!’ I realised. ‘I know Him! That’s Jesus!’

Colonel Chang slaughtered the children in front of me with a machete and threw their bodies into a hole in the ground. Chang told me I was next. He tied me inside a hessian bag and threw me on top of the warm bodies. I didn’t mind being close to my little friends.

I was reunited with these children four years later, during a near-death experience. It occurred while Gittinger flat-lined me at age 10. I found myself in a celestial garden. I heard laughing and children’s voices coming from behind a thicket of bushes in front of me. I walked through the foliage to reach a clearing in which a group of children were playing, cartwheeling, holding hands and dancing in a circle. They were clean, healthy, and dressed in white linen. They had aged four years. ‘Fiona!’ they yelled.

SASCHA

‘Sascha’ bore the pain of DELTA soldier training. I was six years old, dressed in a curly amber wig, strapped to a chair in front of two enormous television screens. My visual field was divided by a thin screen placed in front of my face, so my left eye could only see one giant screen, and my right eye could only view the other. Each screen was divided into six boxes. Each of the boxes played a different image. The six images in my left eye related to the six images in my right eye. But the images in my left eye were violent, while the ones in my right eye were peaceful. For example, one image in my right eye was a quiet garden, but the corresponding screen in my left eye showed the same scene being bombed. Another image in my right eye showed a cute bunny, but the corresponding in my left eye showed the same bunny being slaughtered. And so forth. Metal sound rods were simultaneously placed in ear each and played completely different sounds. Sweet classical music entered one ear, while horrendous sounds of screaming and terror the other. This nightmare continued until I heard an audible ‘Snap!’ echo through my head.

Entrance to cavern system
HOLSWORTHY MILITARY BASE
GROUND Floor Underground
Human sacrifice to DAGON
Worshipping DAGON
"Don't be so irreverant!"
That's a DUMB GOD!

DAGON

Dagon takes both reptilian and amphibian forms. The cavern system linking Holsworthy and Lucas Heights featured two main sacrificial areas dedicated to Dagon. A stone altar to reptilian Dagon is located beneath the Holsworthy end. Next to it stands a giant greenish metal statue of Dagon featuring scales and a dinosaur head and teeth. I attended rituals at this location with Gittinger, Kidman, Overton, DELTA soldiers, and senior military brass.

The bottom floor of ANSTO accesses a tunnel leading to a large cave with a rectangular Dagon ritual pool. The pool is made of stone and lined with steps on all sides. It connects to, and is fed by, a natural water source. At one end of the murky green pool sits a stone carving of a fish monster with fin fingers and sharp teeth. I was hoisted over this pool at age six years and dunked repeatedly until I nearly drowned. Patricia Anne Conlon supervised this and determined, 'She's had enough.'

I suffered another Dagon drowning ritual at 12 years of age, in the cavern system beneath Holsworthy. My hands were tied behind my back and my legs secured together. I was lowered head-first into a long thin container filled with water. My next memory is of convulsing on the ground in a pool of water. Then I saw a giant fish out of water beating its tail, exactly where my body just lay. My next memory is of flashing lights and something long and choking being inserted in my throat. My next memory is of waking in the ANSTO hospital bed with Anne Conlon sitting to my left, looking concerned. The point of this exercise was to train me to hold my breath and swim underwater. Drowning taught me to recognise my physical limits and recognise how far I could push my body before I drowned. It was also a ritual intended to evoke the 'spirit of Dagon.'

LUCAS HEIGHTS BASEMENT / TUNNEL SYSTEM
Veronica
DAGON Statue
pool
4

Veronica
"She's had enough!"

HOLSWORTHY CAVES
DAGON RITUAL
Drowned
Underwater Breath Holding Program

I experienced yet another Dagon training incident in the USA when I was 14 years old. I was chained to a weight and thrown overboard into the sea. I was supposed to use my Dagon training to hold my breath, and my newly acquired psychic abilities to break free. I next recall collapsing on deck with medical personnel and the DELTA Commander leaning over me.

'Did I do it?' I asked my Commander.

The other soldiers looked away in anger and disgust.

'You did good, soldier,' Commander muttered regretfully.

'This is *shit*, man!' one of the sailors complained…

DAGON AT DULCE

Dagon Hypnosis Induction

My memory of being thrown off the US naval vessel relates to my Dagon hypnosis induction which I adapted from the *Aqua Man* television show. Dagon *is* Aqua Man. The induction began with my diving off the navy boat. I then swam like Aqua Man to a submarine. I entered the submarine through a domed top, passed through a door, down a spiral metal staircase, through another door, down a straight staircase, and through another door which brought me to the doctor surgery waiting room with the elevator and five doors. This was the induction Aquino, Gittinger, Kidman, West, Petrauskas, and Anne Conlon used.

Josef Mengele created a deeper level of induction based on the same theme. His variation involved my diving from the US naval boat, bypassing the submarine, and entering an underwater stream. I spiralled down the stream to reach a large underwater citadel located on the ocean floor. I swam beneath a rocky craic and surfaced in a Dagon pool. I emerged from the pool via a wide set of stairs, passed through a castle door and entered Dagon's golden throne room. Two doors sat either side of the throne, red on the left and blue on the right. I opened the blue door and saw shadowy mermaids like tadpoles, swimming overhead. I walked through a glass aquarium tunnel to a door at the far end. Behind this door was a tall room with walls containing countless arched insets. Each inset housed a costumed mannequin which resembled a program or skill set. I stepped backwards into one of the costumes and suddenly recognised a style of martial arts where everything flowed in circles.

When I first opened the red door during therapy, a tsunami of blood gushed into the throne room. Behind this door lay a stone hallway lined with iron cages full of children. At the end of the hall was another door, and behind that was Mengele's lab in the US Embassy basement. A narrow window sat at the top of the wall to my right. Mengele sat in a chair below the window, behind a pale brown dentist chair. In the far-right corner behind Mengele was a blue door. Behind the door was a staircase with a metal rail which led to a stone tunnel. This basement laboratory was both real and used as a program setting, to confuse my memory.

MENGELE'S ANGEL

Mengele's main alter was named 'Angel.' It took three sessions to gain her cooperation and integrate her. I won Angel over by bowing before her on the floor and allowing her to behead me with her sword. 'I'm still going to talk to you!' I promised her. 'Nothing will stop me from talking to you.' Angel then granted me access to the memory of how she was created. Mengele covered my entire body with electrodes, including needle electrodes under my nails, a large metal electrode inserted into my vagina, and a dog collar electrode fastened around my neck so that whenever I cried out in pain, Mengele electrocuted my throat. Consequently, Angel was mute. Mengele electrocuted my entire body until I became limp and dissociated. He then created Angel by dressing me in an Asian outfit: white pants, a blue silk top, and a long straight black wig with a blunt fringe.

DELTA PSYCHIC WARFARE TRAINING

Aquino's psychic training occurred at Dulce, in a white room with an observation window. I sat strapped to a wooden electric chair. EEG electrodes were attached to my head and electrocution pads stuck to my back. Training consisted of being successful - or being electrocuted.

Tap, tap, tap…

'What did you see?' my therapist asked.

I saw a giant red swirl, which became a vortex, which morphed into thin red flags flapping in the breeze. Then I saw a close-up of a brown horse's head. An Ancient Asian warrior clad in segmented armour sat atop the horse, surrounded by multiple poles and flags. *Where have I seen this before?* I asked myself. *Shogun? Marco Polo? Is this China or Japan? It's China*. *This is Looking-Glass.*

Tap, tap, tap…

The mental images of the ancient scene appeared on a monitor for the doctors to view.

* * *

DELTA training progressed to my being lowered into a thick box made of grey metal that was filled with water. The lid was closed. I transferred to another dimension, a dark prison containing a frightening entity. I relayed whatever this thing told me, to the Dulce doctors.

On another occasion, Gittinger and Aquino somehow identified from my memory the exact coordinates of the celestial garden I visited during my near-death experience when Gittinger flat-lined me at age 10 years. They had me revisit the same location which I found void of people.

ALICE!

I'm shot . . . falling . . .

'Alice!' a soldier yells, 'Alice!' He emerges from a swirling sand cloud, dressed in desert camos, holding an unusual weapon in one hand. 'Alice!' He leans over my collapsed form. Then – the scene disappeared, and my 14-year-old form lay on the ground of a multi-story room painted blue. Staff in white lab coats sat behind a glass observation widow, two stories above, bathed in green light.

'Woah!' the boys marvelled nearby. Dressed in green t-shirts and trousers, they scratched their heads and peered at the hands in wonder.

I was weighed down in an electrified vest. I rose to my feet and went berserk at the 'white coats' behind the window. 'YOU FUCKING AMATEURS!' I screamed hysterically. Next, I am levitating. I'm at the widow, pounding the cracking glass. A unit of soldiers storm my right visual field, armed with a net and stun guns. They contain me like a wild animal and knock me out. When I come to, Aquino is placating me, 'Yes, they did the wrong thing.'

That was our training for the real event held in what resembled an aircraft hangar. The real deal involved us standing before a giant circular ring. Behind us is a three-sided enclosure, the walls and floor padded for a soft return landing.

‘Roll! Roll! Roll!’ I yell, leading my team through the swirling tunnel, unperturbed because I have experienced something similar: the *Doctor Who* time-tunnel I rode after suffocating in the Garrawarra cemetery grave when I was eight years old.

We were kitted out with a kind of plasma weapon. It was made of a light metal yet was heavy enough to handle kickback. It had a fat muzzle which was connected to the grip by a wing coated in undulating lines. When I described the weapon to my SAS Vietnam veteran mate, he said I accurately described recognisable engineering with a grip designed to cool.

We land in a desert. Suddenly, over the horizon crawls a creature which looked like a giant ant. It picked up one of the Delta soldiers in front of me and bit through him. The sight of this monster’s fangs protruding through the lad’s gut sent me berserk. I charged at the beast, dove beneath its 2.5-metre-high underbelly and sliced it open from top to tail with the laser. My next memory concerning that off-world assignment was receiving a medal of valour.

Further, what military geoengineer Phil Schneider said about Dulce being manned by ‘aliens’ is true - except they’re not off-world aliens. They are flood-disembodied Nephilim spirits inhabiting hybrid cloned bodies created from a mix of human, animal, and fallen angel DNA. Phil was ‘suicided’ with his catheter after delivering talks about the plasma battle between Special Forces and the Reptilian Nephilims beneath Dulce in which he had half his hand sliced off and his gut opened up. He publicly displayed his horrendous wounds plus samples of alien metals to back his testimony, and film footage of this is still circulating the net. Phil mistakenly went public before completing his promised book. The military death squads took him out before he could release the book.

Kay Griggs stated, the military is cloning humans. That is correct. I saw human cloning being conducted at Dulce and Pine Gap. The bodies are grown to full form in giant test tubes just like in the propaganda film, *The 6th Day*. When I was six years old, Gittinger showed me a massive Clone Army of Super Soldiers assembled like Stormtroopers on the floor of a three-story+ high auditorium carved beneath Pine Gap. They looked 7 ft tall, were dressed in black Nazi-style uniforms, and lacked male genitalia. Gittinger told me to take a look at the genitalia of one of them, and it looked like a Ken doll. This army was prepared for the coming Clone Wars.

A fleet of UFOs with NASA stamped on their shell were stored on an underground conveyor belt system at Pine Gap. These were back engineered from a combination of crashed craft plus the technology gleaned through mediums and scientists - including Tesla and Einstein - who communicated with the Fallen Angels using occult methods. Now the Nazi scientists use AI quantum computers to collect the desired information and instruction.

CERN END GAME

Someone asked me via social media, ‘*Do you have a sense of the End Game?’*

Yes, I do. The CERN large hadron collider in Switzerland is not about finding the hicks boson. CERN is a massive Stargate built on Tesla technology. CERN is powered by a quantum computer, the same type of computer that runs Google and NASA. Quantum computers are an advanced form of clairvoyance that make computations inter-dimensionally. Scientists punch math and physics problems into the quantum computer which are then processed by inter-dimensional ‘entities’, aka AI (Artificial Intelligence). Elon Musk (MIT, 2014) said:

> *With artificial intelligence we are summoning the demon. You know all those stories where there’s the guy with the pentagram and the holy water and he’s like… yeah he’s sure he can control the demon… doesn’t work out.*

Gordie Rose (*D-Wave* quantum computers and *Kindred AI*) clarified:

> *The things that that we are summoning into the world now are not demons, not evil, but more like the Lovecraftian Great Old Ones. They are entities not necessarily going to be aligned with what we want.* [469]

CERN's *Director for Research and Scientific Computing*, Sergio Bertolucci, said the hadron collider could open otherworldly doors to another dimension, allowing something to emerge from it.[470] Outside CERN headquarters sits an ancient statue to Shiva, the goddess of destruction. The Roman form of Shiva is Apollyon. CERN is partially situated in a French town named Saint-Genis-Pouilly. Pouilly is Latin for Appolliacum, aka Apollyon, aka Apollo. CERN is built on the site of a Roman temple to Apollo, and over a traditional gateway to the abyss.[471] Revelation 9 says:

> *And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. . . And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. . . And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.*

The Bible describes the end game in detail. Further information is found in books suppressed by the Synagogue of Satan: Enoch, Jasher and Jubilees. Jesus shared a relevant parable:

> *And when the King came in to see the guests, he saw there a man who was not wearing a wedding garment, and he said to him, 'Friend, how did you enter here without a wedding garment?' The intruder was speechless. Then the King said to the servants, 'Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

This parable refers to a celestial marriage feast attended exclusively by guests dressed in appropriate attire, that is, who gained immortality and new bodies through belief in Jesus Christ. The improperly 'dressed' intruder tried to attain immortality another way, via transhumanism technology. I deduce he used Stargate technology (CERN) to pierce the veil that separates this time-space dimension from Heaven.

Years ago, the television news reported that scientists had isolated the gene which turns off death. The Bible warns of accepting the 'mark' injected *in* our right hand or *in* forehead. The Greek meaning of the word 'mark' relates to the venomous bite of a serpent.

The mark is the ultimate vaccination, a synthesis of animal and Nephilim (serpent, fallen angel, 'alien') DNA that will alter human DNA, turn off the death gene, and seal a hellish fate. Hence Revelation describes people who seek death but are unable to die. The current vaccinations contain human and animal products and have been used to condition society to accept the hive mind horror to come.

---

[469] Gordie Rose (June 2017). 'Super-Intelligent Aliens are Coming to Earth.' TechVancouver conference.

[470] Lewis Page (2009). 'Something may come through' dimensional 'doors' at LHC. *The Register*, 6 Nov.

[471] Robert Bridge (2015). 10 mind-blowing facts about the CERN Large Collider you need to know. *Russia Today*, 31 Aug.

CERN is designed to pierce the veil that separates this time-space dimension from others, including Heaven and Hell. CERN is the Luciferian end game that pulls together all Nazi and JASON technology. Dulce, Pine Gap and other underground facilities are preparing technology for Armageddon in which they plan to storm Heaven and battle Christ Himself. The Gateway Process provided a peek behind the celestial curtains, while CERN is designed to completely tear the veil and release the demonic hordes. A real-life Star Wars is coming, and everyone will be forced to pick a side.

* * *

Wendy-Louise Walker

Hypnotic responsiveness is positively correlated with intelligence.
- Wendy-Louise Walker

* * *

‘Do a classic induction,’ I asserted. ‘Something very seventies.’

My therapist walked me through an imaginary forest. ‘…you come to a dark area in the woods where there’s a stone staircase that leads underground. You descend the stairs one at a time: Ten…nine…eight…’

Damn it! You’re doing it wrong again. You’re supposed to count forwards, not backwards. ‘Ahhhh!’ I moaned, ‘The right side of my head aches.’

‘Let’s go in there. Let’s go into that part of your brain.’

At the base of the imaginary stairs, I start to fall – down the rabbit hole. I land with a thud on the chequered floor.

‘Go through the green door…’ he suggests.

I walk through the empty garden. I hear a child crying. Eight-year-old Alice sits at the head of the Hatter’s tea party, weeping.

‘Put your arm around her,’ my therapist suggested.

‘No, she wants me to ask her what’s wrong.’

‘Ask her what’s wrong.’

‘She’s lonely and has no friends.’ *Alice,* I implore, ‘*Please show me what’s wrong?’*

I see a man’s naked crotch sat on a chair beneath a table. To my right, light shines through a draped tablecloth. I am in Nanna Holowczak’s kitchen.

‘I’m being raped. I’m very little. I’m beneath the table. His cock is in my mouth and I’m choking.’

Tap-tap-tap… My therapist then asks me the dreaded question I was avoiding – the whole reason for this session: 'Tell me about *Wendy-Louise Walker*…'

A vivid scene suddenly appears before me. I am in a little cave chiselled out of the bedrock. Thick black bars are in front of me. The cavern ceiling touches my head, obscures my view of the 'White Coats' and the upper part of their torsos as they move about the black-and-white chequered lab floor. It is the cage beneath Holsworthy, only this time it is not a fuzzy dreamy image. This is crisp and clear. This is the same cage where I bonded with the blonde children whom Chang and his Delta soldiers butchered, the same cage in which Chang ordered his dog to rape me, the same cage I was trapped in while the White Coats stood and laughed and mocked as they electrocuted me with cattle prods. One of those White Coats was Antony Kidman. Another was Wendy-Louise Walker.

Then I saw it, a close up of Walker's creepy face, her bulging eyes staring deep into mine.

'Was she hypnotising you?' my therapist guessed the obvious.

'Yes...'

'Now what do you see?'

'They're tossing me up and down in a white blanket, to teach me the sensation of falling, so they can use it my induction…'

'Now what's happening?'

'I see a small wading pool with striped sides. I think they're drowning me in it.' I cough. 'I think they're electrocuting my whole body in it. Is that possible? Can they electrify the water?'

'Yes, they certainly can.'

Suddenly, my body spasms in agony as the pain of whole-body electrocution hits. I scream, and scream, and scream at the top of my lungs, while simultaneously burying my being into the lounge, clawing through the fabric, trying to the escape the agony. This is the first time in six years I have abreacted so.

The moment passes, and I weep into the pillows.

Suddenly, I am flooded with scenes of child soldier training at Holsworthy, Jason and our team members encouraging me to keep going, to do things a certain way, to avoid Colonel Chang.

'I miss my team,' I quietly sobbed…

The vision suddenly changed again. This time I am looking down into the chaotic cockpit of a helicopter that is out of control and spinning, nose first, toward the ground. 'I see a helicopter spiralling! Our helicopter is crashing! It's spinning!'

'Okay,' my therapist asserted, 'Time to say goodnight to the helicopter. I'm bringing you back now.'

I emerged from the abreaction in shock. I had been triggered by reading Wendy-Louise Walker's research papers.

* * *

HYPNOSIS OPENS DOOR TO HEALING
Sydney Morning Herald, 18 March 2004

In the 1950s there were five big hypnosis labs in the world - four in North America and the other at Sydney University, under the guidance of professors John Phillip Sutcliffe *and Gordon Hammer. It was partly due to the interest they fostered that the research continues.*

Dr Wendy-Louise Walker was a student at Sydney University during that period. She went on to teach hypnosis at the university, delivers lectures for the Australian Hypnosis Society and has used hypnosis in psychological practice over the past 40 years.

'Hypnosis is variable, imaginative and very creative, but it is not a simple, single-treatment modality. We do not treat patients by hypnosis,' she says. 'During hypnosis the practitioner works with certain characteristics of the ***altered state of consciousness - suggestibility, increased imagination, and dissociation*** *- to facilitate the learning of new skills or the integration of different views.'*

A patient is able to distinguish between different mental functions; in pain relief, for example, a patient can be helped to change the perception of pain and to decrease the sensation of it.

Studies have shown distinct physiological changes in the brain during hypnosis. Research by US psychologist Dr Helen Crawford has demonstrated that during analgesic hypnosis, the executive functions of the frontal lobe activate to work with other parts of the brain to inhibit the perception of pain…

Walker has helped several patients apprehensive about the pain of childbirth. 'I train them to put themselves in hypnosis and ask them to choose a certain piece of music. When the music comes on, my patient takes herself serenely into hypnosis - you rehearse this. If people speak to her, she can respond, but in this state, she will register the sensation but not the pain.'

She is also treating several police officers suffering from post-traumatic stress disorder. 'I use music as a pathway to and through trance, with my words woven in with the repeated suggestion that, bit by bit, as they feel the glory of the music, the harmony, little bits of emotional debris from their traumas will begin floating away. The memory will stay clear, you don't want to lose that, but the emotional debris - the fear, the anger, the bitterness - will slowly float away over time.'

About 10 to 15 per cent of the population are seen as highly hypnotisable; the same percentage are not good subjects, and the rest are average. Barnier says: 'It's a figure that parallels the circumstances for any treatment. Some people are more susceptible to particular drugs than others.'

There are clinical measurements to gauge hypnotisability, but the best subjects tend to have good attention abilities and become easily absorbed in activities.

The Australian Society of Hypnosis runs regular courses for doctors, dentists and psychologists. A few years ago, Sydney GP Dr Monica Moore attended one and ended up introducing the technique into her practice. She sees the conscious mind as a *computer screen that allows about eight windows to be open at one time. 'The subconscious mind is the computer hard drive that sometimes makes connections that are not helpful. Hypnosis is a tool for reworking those connections in the subconscious mind…'*

* * *

Following the initial release of *Eyes Wide Open*, I was contacted by Ben, a retired navy seaman and lawyer. The first thing he said to me was: 'I've been trying to get hold of you for years!' Ben then stunned me with a story about his friend Keith Dawes, assistant to Wendy-Louise Walker:

In late 2015, Ben and Keith were watching television when my press conference footage appeared on TV. Suddenly, Keith blurted: 'Wendy and I have decided to help that girl.' Keith then told Ben about his and Wendy's MK-ULTRA work with the kids kept in cages beneath Holsworthy. By then Wendy had become a slave to the system she joined in her youth. She was not permitted to buy a home, in case she had to be uprooted and moved quickly. Following my 2015 documentary expose of Holsworthy, the military transferred the human lab rats to RAAF Base Glenbrook at the foot of the Blue Mountains and simultaneously moved Wendy to a rental property in nearby Leura.

Keith and Wendy's attempt to help me was an article they submitted for publication in the *Australian Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*. However, Graham Burrows redacted the paper. When Burrows died, Wendy tried to persuade Kevin McConkey to reinstate her paper in its original format, but he too refused. Wendy said a clue to Project MK-ULTRA being conducted at Holsworthy lay in the sample of children cited in her research publications, because those children were in fact the lab rats kept in cages beneath Holsworthy. Ben told me to read between the lines of those papers.

Ben said he felt unsure of Keith's testimony, until he was coincidentally contracted to assist with electrical work at the Glenbrook Air Force base. While at Glenbrook, the base's permanent electrician told Ben he wanted him to meet a strange character who, along with several other adult victims, lived in an area beneath the base's main building. The stranger had reddish-brown dark hair, and although he told Ben he was 57, he only looked only 40 years old. During their five-minute conversation, the man told Ben he was one of the caged kids raised at Holsworthy who had been transferred to RAAF Base Glenbrook. The stranger was permitted to roam the base due to his compliance. The other victims were not allowed out because they were either to aggressive or, according to the base electrician, 'Too far gone to save.' The stranger was familiar with the 'Light Man' that I mentioned in my story.

Graham Dene Burrows died on 10 January 2016, aged 77 years. Keith Dawes died on 2 June 2016, aged 67 years. After Keith died, Ben tried to locate Wendy, with the intention of getting a copy of the redacted article she allegedly wrote to help me. By the time he arrived at 20 Blackheath Street in Leura, the house was empty. Wendy Louise Walker had died on 30 August 2018, aged 83 years.

Perhaps Ben was right. Perhaps Walker and Dawes grew a conscience in their final days, and they intended to help me by publishing an article. Or maybe my instincts were more accurate: they were using an unwitting Ben to access and silence me again.

It was Ben's story that inspired me to take a closer look at Keith Dawes and Wendy-Louise Walker. I found major hints in Keith Dawes' CV, suggesting his involvement in Project MK-ULTRA:

- Sydney University (1970) BA in Psychology and Education (minors in Philosophy, Anthropology and Fine Arts); (1971) BSc in Psychology / Zoology (minors in Botany, Math, Physics, Chemistry, Medical Science); (1972) Dip Ed (Student placement at Fort St High School); (1984) Master of Psychology.
- Macquarie University (1986) Master of Science (Implicit & Explicit Memory in Post Hypnotic Amnesia).
- Australian Society of Hypnosis (1988) Dip. Clinical Hypnosis
- (2007) PhD (Tacit knowledge)
- (1972 to 1975) Taught Science at Fort St Boys High (selective school for gifted kids).
- (1983) Lectured at Mitchell College in Bathurst.
- (1986) Lectured in subject 'Exceptional Children' at Sydney University.
- (1990 to 2000) taught psychology at Sydney University.
- (2008 to 2010) taught tacit knowledge and implicit knowledge in France.

Wendy-Louise Walker was a Clinical and Forensic Psychologist, inaugural President of the NSW Psychologists Board, President of the Australian Society of Hypnosis, and Editor of the *Australian Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*. Her published writings focused on variables highly pertinent to MK-ULTRA. Viewed in the context of CIA mind control, Walker's writings provide insight to MK objectives and methods, and clues to healing from the abuse she and her fellow monsters perpetrated against the likes of me. Her writings support my hypotheses concerning the MK subject selection, abuse and integration processes I espoused in *Eyes Wide Open*.

Below I summarise Wendy-Louise Walker's pertinent writings on hypnosis. I urge you also to read between the lines. When Walker refers to 'damaged subjects' she is talking about MK-ULTRA victims like me. When she discusses the 'hypnotisability of highly gifted subjects' and the 'hypnotisability of child abuse victims' – she is talking about the Holsworthy victims. When she mentions the use of music to induce / trigger dissociation in gifted subjects – she is sharing their MK methods with the reader. Throughout her writings, Walker says, 'it seems that…' or 'I believe that…' When she does this, she is in fact sharing knowledge gained from MK-ULTRA experiments that is not published mainstream. I add the odd 'Note' to draw your attention to something I recognise as particularly relevant to the MK-ULTRA methods Walker and her associates used on me. I summarise and synthesise three of Walker's papers in this fashion:

1. *An Introduction to Hypnosis: Student Handbook*.[472]
2. *The Gifts and Vulnerabilities of the Highly Hypnotisable: Relevance for Therapy*.[473]
3. *Combining music and words as a pathway through hypnosis: Practical guidelines*.[474]

---

[472] Walker, W-L. (2014). *An Introduction to Hypnosis: Student Handbook*. Australian Society of Hypnosis, NSW.

[473] Walker, W-L. (2013). The Gifts and Vulnerabilities of the Highly Hyponotizable: Relevance for Therapy. *Australian Journal of Clinical & Experimental Hypnosis*, Vol 40, No.2, 77–83.

[474] Walker, W-L. (1998). Combining music and words as a pathway through hypnosis: Practical guidelines. In B.J. Evans & G.D. Burrows (eds) *Hypnosis in Australia*, 40-54. Australian Society of Hypnosis.

AN INTRODUCTION TO HYPNOSIS: STUDENT HANDBOOK

This Introduction was originally written in 2004 by Dr Wendy-Louise Walker for distribution to students starting the Diploma in Clinical Hypnosis conducted by the NSW Branch of the Australian Society of Hypnosis. In 2014, Walker gave permission for this publication to be provided to students undertaking the Diploma in all states.

DEFINITION OF HYPNOSIS

Hypnosis is an altered state of consciousness. It causes a partial lifting of the executive (i.e., background) controls of consciousness. Hypnosis acts on certain aspects of the altered state of consciousness, namely suggestibility, increased imagination, and dissociation. Hypnotic responsiveness is identified by measuring:

1. Absorption; i.e., the capacity to become lost in experience (Measure: *Tellengen Absorption Scale)*.
2. Dissociation proneness, which is inherited, and exaggerated or distorted by childhood abuse and over-strict punishment. (Measure: *Dissociative Experiences Scale*, which wrongly assumes all dissociation is abnormal).
3. Vividness of sensory imagery (Measure: *Betts Questionnaire of Mental Imagery*). Most gifted hypnosis subjects have good sensory imagery.

The hypnosis experience depends on an interaction of many variables, including the subject's hypnotisability, cognitive ability (especially vividness of imagery), expectations, and the hypnotist's suggestions. Hypnotic responsiveness is more an ability than a personality trait. Highly hypnotisable subjects naturally shift in and out of altered states of consciousness in everyday life.

During hypnosis, the practitioner's suggestions focus on progressively narrowing focus of attention, and on ignoring external and internal distractions. Hypnosis inductions involve the notion of moving. Classic inductions used on me in the 1970s moved down, deeper and deeper asleep. Modern inductions concentrate on moving further and further forward, into a meditational state. Hence the modern focus on meditation, as hypnosis and meditation are considered different paths to the same place.

THE HYPNOSIS PROCESS

Walker describes the hypnosis process, beginning with the three major consciousness control systems that hypnosis disables:

1. Attention. The subject enters hypnosis by (a) changing her focus of attention, and (b) progressively surrendering her executive control of consciousness to the hypnotist. Attention is the accessing, focussing control that influences what the mind processes. Attention is also involved in accessing memory. Attention can be under voluntary control when one is in active, directed, problem-solving mode of consciousness. Alternatively, attention can float randomly, unfocussed, and uncontrolled when one is in passive, receptive mode of consciousness. In hypnosis, the subject's attention is focused inward rather than on the external world. The hypnotist's instructions connect to the subject's inner world. The hypnotist directs the subject's focus of attention.

2. Critical Self-Awareness is a major consciousness control. It develops in childhood, and teenage years. It is the constant monitoring of one's own thoughts and actions that accompany waking consciousness. It reaches the forefront of attention when highly threatened or anxious; or it is a background hum when one is safely alone, reading a novel. This mechanism often malfunctions in the damaged patient, causing great subjective discomfort. Hypnosis causes a partial suspension of critical self-awareness. It may lift early in the hypnotic induction, since self-watching is incompatible with hypnosis. The suspension of this function allows the absorption in imagination, which is central to hypnosis.

3. Vigilant Monitoring is the scanning of the outside world, the detection and analysis of cues, physical and interpersonal, that accompanies waking consciousness. This is also partly suspended during hypnosis. This function is also disrupted in PTSD victims, since hypervigilance is a main PTSD symptom. This function must be partly suspended before one can enter hypnosis and, the further one goes into hypnosis, the more distant the threats within external reality become. This contributes also to the increased reality and vividness of involvement in imagined activities in hypnosis.

Abstracting, Comparing and Interpreting are the ongoing data processing of the mind-computer. There is a partial suspension of some of the abstracting, comparing, and interpreting functions of consciousness in hypnosis. The hypnotist's words are taken literally. The words elicit strong feelings and imagery. Music similarly provokes imagery and strong feelings during hypnosis. Owing to partial suspension of the abstracting, comparing and interpreting functions of consciousness, the subject tolerates logical incongruity.

DISSOCIATION (Double-Tracking)

Going into hypnosis, there is an increased ability to dissociate. Damaged, highly hypnotisable subjects have their fears and rages split off from the object. Dissociation can also refer to running parallel streams of consciousness. This is a normal phenomenon for the dissociation-prone, who are highly hypnotisable. Examples of double tracking in hypnosis include *automatic writing* and the *hidden observer* phenomenon (a part of the mind that functions separately, experiencing things which the subject is unaware of).

The term 'dissociation' can also denote a maladaptive defence mechanism of the personality, where whole parts of the ego system are separated by amnesia and function independently (e.g., multiple personalities).

Walker said:

Hypnosis can be used to treat the amnesia barriers between parts of consciousness and personality, and to achieve integration.

THE RELAXATION RESPONSE

Entering hypnosis is associated with the *relaxation response*, a combination of mental quiet and physical relaxation, accompanied by a slowing of heartrate, a lowering of blood pressure, and beneficial changes in body chemistry.

During hypnosis, one can be either unrelaxed, or re-live a dreadful trauma with powerful negative feelings, or imagine and experience with great subjective reality, vivid imagery and strong feelings.

The typical hypnosis state is one of eyes closed, physical relaxation, and inner focus of attention. Most inductions incorporate the notion of relaxation, and it is easier to enter hypnosis with accompanying relaxation than without it. This association between hypnosis and the relaxation response links up with the imaginative involvement dimension.

INVOLVEMENT & ABSORPTION: SENSORY IMAGERY & SUBJECTIVE REALITY

Hypnosis brings an increasing involvement and loss of self in the experience. Highly hypnotisable subjects have a greater capacity for involvement (e.g. in reading or daydreaming). In hypnosis, sensory imagery becomes more vivid. The subject also has an enhanced sense of subjective reality in what is being imagined. This increased involvement stems from the partial lifting of the three major consciousness control systems mentioned earlier. Absence of the analysing and damping-down effects of these monitoring systems permits the enhanced experience of feelings and sensory imagery.

What is imagined during hypnosis is more vivid, subjectively real, and elicits strong feelings compared to what is imagined in the waking state.

After reaching a certain level of hypnosis, in response to the hypnotist’s suggestions:

Gifted subjects may actually hallucinate something in one of the sensory modalities (commonly vision and hearing). Some subjects can hallucinate with their eyes open.

Hypnosis facilitates experiences like *synaesthesia* and *eidetic imagery* for those who can already do this.

[Note: *Synaesthesia* is the merging of senses that aren't normally connected. The stimulation of one sense causes an involuntary reaction in one or more of the other senses. *Eidetic imagery* is the ability to remember an image in so much detail, clarity, and accuracy that it is as though the image were still being perceived.]

The visual memories of high visual-spatial IQ children were enhanced using hypnosis, so they could recall location and target details. You can see how hypervigilance was enhanced through trauma, to produce desirable soldiers.

RESPONSE TO SUGGESTION

In hypnosis, there is an increased compliance with, and receptivity to, suggestion. The subject is likely to do and experience what the hypnotist suggests. The subject is receptive to post-hypnotic suggestion. The subject is more likely to incorporate the hypnotist's suggestions into her self-concept, little children incorporate the evaluative comments of their parents (good/bad, pretty/ugly, lovable/unlovable) into their developing self-concepts.

[Note the potential for using hypnosis to bond a victim to her perpetrator, to create new personalities, in a child whose brain has been washed clean and made ripe for suggestion.]

Highly hypnotisable subjects are more suggestible in the waking state compared to others, and hypnosis accentuates this. By the time they reach adulthood, gifted subjects develop protection against this suggestibility; but these protective controls dissolve again when they enter hypnosis.

[Note: This is another reason why high visual-spatial IQ kids made ideal MK-ULTRA candidates.]

Hypnotic suggestion can be effective in the waking state after hypnosis has ended, and these are called post-hypnotic suggestions. The hypnotist's suggestions or comments can create strong expectancies concerning the subject's hypnosis experience, and these expectancies partly determine what happens for the subject after hypnosis induction. Post-hypnotic suggestions link what has been learned, incorporated, or experienced in hypnosis, to the subject's external reality.

[Note: This explains how the hypnotist's suggestions are reinforced or triggered every time the MK subject hears a certain cue implanted during the hypnosis process.]

Loss of Awareness of Body Boundaries, Loss of Sense of Self as Separate

Awareness of body boundaries is the basic awareness of self as separate from the world. It is a basis for normal, waking consciousness. This awareness is exaggerated in damaged subjects. In sensory deprivation situations, this background awareness becomes unavailable, normal consciousness disintegrates, and the subject experiences non-unity and merges with other things. [Note: I was left alone in the dark, in a dungeon beneath Holsworthy, at a very young age. The sensory deprivation split off a section of my personality which I bonded with my panda teddy bear named 'Snookie.' The new personality took the name Snookie.]

Hypnosis blurs body boundaries so that the subject's sense of self feels separate from the world. Deep hypnosis achieves a sense of merging the self with the world, becoming 'one with universe,' as in meditation. If a subject enters what Walker called the 'psychedelic depths of trance' (a two-hour process) the sense of self is lost about halfway along the journey, after pushing through a fear barrier. Walker wrote:

Sensory deprivation experiments and the scraps of information that leak out about brain washing, support the notion that sense of ego boundaries is disrupted when sensory information about body in relation to environment is disrupted.

[Note: Wendy-Louise Walker and her pedophile comrades subjected me to the very 'sensory deprivation experiments' and 'brain washing' she referred to.]

PARTIAL LIFTING OF REPRESSION BARRIER

Wendy-Louise Walker wrote: Repressed traumatic memories are easier to access in hypnosis. Hypnosis partially lifts the executive controls of consciousness, which weakens the repression barrier. This, plus flexible focus of attention in response to therapist suggestion, allows access to, and reprocessing of, trauma memories normally unavailable to consciousness. This can be difficult, and sometimes one must use suggested optional amnesia as a safety mechanism, while the patient slowly comes to terms with the repressed trauma events.

Hypnosis accesses and reprocesses repressed trauma memories.

Walker said, 'Some of my own research or research I have supervised supports the notion that the repression barrier is somewhat weakened in hypnosis, with a significantly greater intrusion of primary process thought in hypnosis than in the waking state with highly hypnotisable subjects.'

[Note: To explain, *primary process thought* is intuitive and unconscious; it lets us react quickly and adaptively to our environments. *Secondary process thought* is more conscious and analytical. Creativity combines primary and secondary process thinking, to produce *tertiary process thought*. Walker was in fact talking about combining the left and right hemispheres.]

Primary process thought is the illogical, timeless thought carried out mostly in sensory imagery rather than in words; it is not grounded in reality and intrudes in dreams. Walker supervised research which found: While primary process thoughts intruded the fantasies of highly hypnotisable subjects more frequently in hypnosis rather than in the waking state, these subjects were more likely to have primary process thoughts intrude their waking fantasies or daydreams compared to less hypnotisable subjects. This suggests that highly hypnotisable people have less effective repression barriers. Gifted subjects prefer dissociation as a maladaptive defence, over repression.

Ideomotor Phenomena

This is unconscious movement during hypnosis (e.g., automatic writing). Following the hypnotist's suggestions, the subject can experience a hand feeling light, and lifting without apparent volition; hands can also feel heavy, and parts of the body can feel numb, or hot or cold. Gifted subjects experience ideomotor phenomena as non-voluntary. Ideomotor responses depend on the mechanism of dissociation.

AWARENESS OF TIME PASSING

During hypnosis, the subject does not process the cues used to register passage of time. This may result from the suspension of vigilant monitoring, an awareness of external reality. This may be what Ronald Shor called 'general reality orientation' - one of the dimensions along which he proposed consciousness changes when one enters hypnosis.

For highly gifted subjects, hypnosis so differs from the waking state that, shortly after returning to alert waking, they feel almost like the hypnotic experiences did not happen, or were unreal, and they're remembered in fragments, like a dream.

A short time after return to the waking state, the sensation may feel like water closing over a gap, resulting in continuity of memory from the early stage of induction to the end of the de-hypnotising, with nothing in between.

[Note: In other words, if you are High IQ, and you undergo hypnosis, you will naturally forget whatever happened during the session. Further, even if you attend hypnosis as a gifted adult, you are still vulnerable to abuse by the hypnotist. This explains why gifted kids were selected as MK-ULTRA subjects and why they forget being subjected to unethical hypnosis by MK perpetrators like Wendy-Louise Walker.]

HYPNOSIS & MEMORY

The lowering of anxiety and partial lifting of some important controls of consciousness during hypnosis, enables access to repressed or dissociated memories. '*Ernest Hilgard* *suggests that memories of events, registered on the peripheries of attention and stored in dissociated memory stores, may be accessed in hypnosis*.' Hypnosis does not automatically improve memory. After hypnosis, a gifted subject may lack memory of what was experienced in hypnosis.

Walker's research suggested, even when gifted subjects are able to recall and describe their experiences in hypnosis when back in the waking state, they tended to have some gaps in recall and to lose some of the detail. It was like trying to remember a dream straight after waking up. It is often easier for a subject to remember what happened in an earlier hypnosis session rather than in the waking state. This is consistent with the view of hypnosis as facilitating dissociation, with some difficulty in accessing memory of hypnotic experience in the waking state.

[Note: The relevance of this to intelligence gathering and soldier training, where MK handlers can hypnotise an asset subject and access a particular brain fragment (i.e., split personality, alter) that holds the memories of previous hypnosis / programming sessions. For example, a child asset who has been trained to service high officials, gather intelligence, hang at parties, and use eidetic memory to function as a human tape recorder. The handler later accesses the alter and has them play back the recording.]

HYONOSIS & CONTROL

The hypnotist directs the stream of consciousness, directs the focus of attention, and suggests the general content of consciousness. 'Hypnotists, especially those who are not hypnotisable themselves, often do not realise the responsibility that goes with such trust, nor the sense of vulnerability that accompanies it for the subject.'

TRANSFERENCE & HYPNOSIS

Hypnosis intensifies the therapeutic relationship, including the transference components. This is reflected in content of dream-like fantasies. Walker found this phenomenon occurs with clinical, but not research, subjects.

[Note: This phenomenon complicates and risks the therapeutic relationship which is discussed in subsequent chapters.]

LEVELS OF HYPNOSIS

There exists a deeper state of consciousness than is achieved in clinical hypnosis, which Walker called the 'psychedelic depths.' This is reached by slowly and carefully guiding a highly gifted subject further and further into hypnosis. Reaching this level of consciousness requires the subject to push through a fear barrier. This fear barrier involves the total suspension of critical self-awareness (vigilant monitoring and abstract interpreting having probably been suspended earlier in the voyage), loss of all sense of body boundaries and self, with reality becoming totally the ongoing experience of vivid and elaborate imagery.

Here is a summary of what happens at the different depths of consciousness:

Stage 1.

At very light depths, one can get the relaxation response and some lifting of both self-awareness and vigilant monitoring. This is all some people ever achieve and is pleasant and useful. Even here, there is probably increased responsiveness to suggestion, so positive suggestions about motivation to do therapeutic things and increased self-worth can be appropriate. At this depth, the relaxation response can be conditioned to an image, such as falling petals, feathers or snowflakes, or to words such as ‘breathe out and relax.’

Stage 2.

Some little distance further, critical self-awareness fades to a smaller voice, and there is marked increase in vividness of sensory imagery, subjective reality of imagined experience, the range of ideomotor responses available, and marked augmenting of affective response - most of the sorts of things one wishes to use therapeutically. Already also there is increased likelihood of intrusion of primary process thought, if the instructions to the subject allow a reasonably free rein for thoughts to flow. The subject is likely to take one's words in a very literal way, and there may be noticeable tolerance for logical incongruities.

Stage 3.

Going to what we as therapists call ‘deep’ - though not what I the researcher would call ‘deep’ - the subject is likely to be profoundly relaxed, unless abreacting or pretending to be awake (if instructed to do so). The subject is likely to be literal and compliant in response to our words, to be able to produce the hallucinatory responses he or she is capable of, to show total suggested amnesia, in general, to pass all or almost all the items of the standard tests of hypnotisability. At all these levels, the subject is able to talk with the hypnotist. Heart rate will vary from resting low for that person, to higher if a strong feeling, pleasant or unpleasant, is experienced.

[Note: Walker’s words ‘pretending to be awake (if instructed to do so).’ This suggests CIA handlers have discovered a way to disguise the fact that their assets were in a state of hypnosis, so that observers would not detect anything amiss. So, if someone tried to access the asset, the asset could throw them by pretending to be in the waking state.]

Stage 4: ‘Psychedelic’

‘Beyond that is ‘psychedelic’. There is not a great deal in the literature, but it was what was referred to in the old literature as the ‘somnambulistic’ level of trance. Sherman, in his unpublished doctoral dissertation, had a few subjects take themselves to the depths and found a drop-in amplitude of alpha waves in EEG. Even at this depth, hypnosis did not look like sleep. By the time they reach the fear barrier, pulse rate is very slow, and the reported strong fear does not result in increase in heart rate. However, at this time I find the EEG flooded with theta waves.’

‘As my subjects go far beyond the usual involvement in hypnosis, they become profoundly relaxed, immobile and cold. They no longer speak. Heartrate drops and breathing becomes slow and shallow. It takes a long time to go to the depths and I give my hypnotic virtuosi a long time to come back. I always maintain contact by holding the wrist in case verbal contact is lost.’

One does not use these levels of hypnosis therapeutically; it is unsafe and unnecessary. If a subject accidently goes a long way beyond the depth you meant, bring her slowly and confidently back to a good working depth.

[Note: *Wow!* Remember John C. Lilly’s research with altered states of consciousness using a combination of psychedelic drugs, hypnosis, sensory deprivation in salt-filled floatation tank, and simultaneous hook up to an EEG? I was subjected to this very process during my core splitting at the ‘psychedelic level’ of consciousness. This same level was sought in Project Stargate. During all the training phases of all these procedures, my brain wave activity was monitored. Drugs were used to lower the fear response. Theta waves were relevant to reaching the interdimensional level of dissociation I described in earlier chapters.]

HYPNOSIS ABILITY

People vary in their responsiveness to hypnosis and, when it is formally measured, hypnotisability is distributed in a large, unselected population, in a more or less normal distribution, more like an ability than a personality trait. About 2/10 of a large population will be very hypnotisable, about 2/10 won't respond at all, and the rest distributed in the typical bell-shaped normal distribution, from a little bit hypnotisable to quite hypnotisable.

FOCUS IN DISSOCIATION (aka, Double-Tracking)

Wendy-Louise Walker considered dissociation in the context of child development. Inheritance determines variability in proneness to double track or dissociate. Dissociation is not normal or abnormal, but simply a cognitive style. Those with a marked capacity to dissociate (whose upbringing did not inhibit development of the gift) are highly hypnotisable. Walker wrote:

> **We then divided our very-young dissociation-prone into two pathways:**
> **(1) those who were abused, or who suffered horrendously in childhood,**
> **(2) those who did not suffer undue damage.**

[Note: Walker gives no reference to the sample of children she refers to here. This sounds like the Holsworthy child victim sample Ben spoke of. Walker included 'burn victims' in the sample of very young kids who suffered horrendously in childhood. Does this mean kids were burned at Holsworthy, the way Nazis experimented with burns?]

THE RELATIVELY UNDAMAGED

The non-abused dissociation-prone child would naturally develop skills of double tracking (to alleviate boredom) and some splitting of affect and cognition (where appropriate). She would also develop capacity for loss of self in experience (i.e., 'absorption') to alleviate boredom and stress (e.g., love of nature, fiction), especially when her childhood lifestyle facilitated this. Such children learned spontaneously to use fantasy not just for fun or escape, but for rehearsing difficult situations.

We noted that highly hypnotisable people did not have a set particular personality type.

[Note: Having no set personality type allows for creating multiple new personalities within all MK child recruits. It also says that creating personalities will not affect hypnotisability.]

When highly hypnotisable subjects presented for therapy (whose hypnotic gifts hadn't been distorted by child abuse) Walker taught them about the gifts and vulnerabilities of the highly hypnotisable. This is the script she suggested using with clients:

> *You have a special kind of gift, being highly hypnotisable, that only about 1 or 2 in 20 people have. It is almost certainly inherited. Since you have doubtless learned that we get nothing for nothing, there is a flip side, a set of vulnerabilities that go with this gift, and it is important to recognise and manage these.*

[Note: Victims like me were continually told we were 'special.' Use of this word creeps me out and tells me this is grooming and predatory language. I would be concerned that any high IQ adult is vulnerable to being recruited via hypnosis administered by any member of the Australian Hypnosis Society.]

***Dissociation-proneness**. You have demonstrated in the hypnotisability scale that you can run two tracks of mental processes at once; the gift is great flexibility and interest. For flexibility you pay in error proneness in any complex system. When you are tired, have a hangover or have been stressed, it is easy to feel separated from the rest of the world; or less than a whole person.*

[Note: A hangover caused me to dissociate and experience a vivid visual flashback to serving in Nicaragua.]

When faced with life-threatening crisis, you are likely to split off from your panic or distress and focus just on calm problem solving, and this is fine as long as you retrieve and work through the feelings a bit later (not leaving them split-off and not accessible to memory as part of your life experience).

***High level of suggestibility** both in and out of altered states. This is one of the correlates of high hypnotisability and it means that, even in the waking state, people of this kind are extremely responsive to suggestion both in the sense of compliance (by behaviour or experience) and incorporation of the content of evaluative suggestions into the self-system. This is an open invitation to those in the family and workplace to play the highly hypnotisable with guilt and manipulation.*

[Note: Hence, CIA programmers use guilt and manipulation to control their victim.]

Recognising this, the subject must learn to be aware of the processes of suggestion and to evaluate which suggestions will be accepted and which rejected. This can cause a quite radical increase in experienced self-esteem! Further, self-talk is a very important medium of change for the highly hypnotisable, since they can respond to their own suggestions (compliance and incorporation into the self-concept) and, aware of this, they learn to recognise when they are producing negative feelings by their negative self-talk.

[Note: Hence why Gittinger had me write my own script, since the programming is better accepted and will stick if I create the scenario and imagery.]

***Capacity for loss of self in experience, absorption, vivid imagery**. This is the area of choice for selecting treatment methods in hypnosis for the highly hypnotisable, as it teaches them flexible and creative ways of living and of producing an harmonious and joyous inner life. This can involve using music as the pathway in, through and out of trance, using other artistic media like poetry if it suits your own style, eliciting and modifying emotional responses, rehearsing coping in difficult situations. I have a comprehensive workshop in imaginative involvement and music which I love teaching.*

Anxiety-proneness and proneness to phobia are associated with high hypnotisability, but on the other hand, such patients have the gifts to learn to manage the vulnerability with great style and flourish.

[Note: The above description fits the creative, high visual-spatial IQ individual I described in *Relevance of Intelligence*. High IQ children make the best hypnosis candidates, which is another reason why Gittinger targeted the likes of me.]

THE ABUSED OR BADLY DAMAGED HIGHLY HYPNOTISABLE

If dissociation-proneness, absorption and suggestibility are hallmarks of those who have inherited high hypnotisability, if these children are severely abused, sexually, physically or psychologically, the gifts of dissociation and absorption are their only coping mechanism. Their gifts develop in highly distorted and pathological ways, with multiple personality disorder and other highly abnormal dissociative disorders like fugue states at the extreme. Less extreme will be disorders of reality perception and self-perception, which may lead to mistaken diagnoses of schizophrenia or borderline personality.

Substance abuse distorts and amplifies tendency to dissociate. Alcohol is particularly potent.

Alcohol is dangerous when regularly combined with marijuana. However, opiates lessen dissociation proneness for a time, which may be why many formerly abused young people end up addicted to heroin.

These patients display a great range of symptoms and in therapy they often fear abuse, have a terrible lack of trust, and a terror of loss of control. They are horrendously difficult and complicated to work with but, of course, very rewarding sometimes.

The central aims of therapy are to achieve unity of personality, with acceptance and re-education of the less likeable parts, control, and a capacity for peace, joy and love.

Re-parenting is often a relevant concept in understanding what is needed in therapy. Teaching the patient eventually to understand and redevelop her hypnotic gifts is part of therapy.

[Note: Acceptance of the less likeable parts is what I found the most difficult aspect of the integration process. To integrate these splits or parts, I had to break their cycles of pain and feelings that manifested as mood swings or sensory flashbacks. I had to recall, observe, feel, and acknowledge (i.e., actually relive) the abuse experiences committed to create and maintain each part. Then I had to, in my mind, visualise comforting and verbally acknowledging their abuse. Then I had to visualise physically cleaning and dressing the part and move her to a pleasant mental location for her to permanently reside, to replace her previous nightmare place in my mind. For example, and in my mind, I physically bathed young alters in the bath in my early childhood home. Then I sat them on the 1960's vinyl lounge in my actual childhood home, turned on our old TV, and handed them two spoons and a jar of the Italian choc-hazelnut spread my mother would buy from an inner Sydney delicatessen.

The amazing thing is, during this reprocessing, I recalled details of our bathroom and lounge that I could not previously remember. This entire process aligns with Walker's emphasis on the therapist's reparenting of the child parts.]

GENERAL COMMENTS ON DISSOCIATION, REPRESSION & HYPNOSIS

That hypnosis partially suspends some important controls of consciousness, allows a great deal of flexibility in hypnotherapy. While hypnosis does not magically enhance memory, it facilitates retrieval of memories unaccessible to awareness, whether they be repressed, stored in somewhat dissociated memory banks, or simply overlaid by the passage of time and difficult to access.

Trains of thought or very strong feelings can be terminated appropriately in the session, and suggested amnesia can be used as an optional temporary defence to prevent the patient from being overwhelmed with distressing memories until she can cope with them.

INCREASED COMPLIANCE & SUGGESTION WITH HIGHLY HYPNOTISABLE

The general increase in compliance with suggestion means that subjects usually focus attention as requested, and experience or do what the hypnotist requested of them. Carried through into post-hypnotic suggestion, the therapist can influence motivation in the waking state, sometimes mood for a time; and suggestion, as mentioned earlier, is used to carry what is learned in the dissociated state of hypnosis into behaviour and experience in everyday life. Subjects in hypnosis are also more liable to incorporate statements by the hypnotist into their ego systems, their beliefs and values relating to themselves. The therapist must be careful not to create conflict by making suggestions that are contrary to the patient's central values or personal goals.

IMAGINATIVE INVOLVEMENT

Walker said: 'The increased vividness of sensory imagery in hypnosis, the enhanced subjective involvement in what is imagined, the loss of self in experience… This is my own very favourite area.' [Note: Walker preferred the main feature of MK programming.]

* * *

THE GIFTS & VULNERABILITIES OF THE HIGHLY HYPNOTIZABLE: RELEVANCE FOR THERAPY

This paper discusses the gifts and vulnerabilities of highly hypnotizable clients. It also explores the relevance for therapy of those in this category and the differences between those who are damaged (e.g., traumatized) and those who are not damaged.

Gordon Hammer taught: Only those in the far-right tail of the norm distribution are actually hypnotized at all.

Highly hypnotizable subjects experience major and complex shifts in consciousness, and they are simply different. This view is supported by the research and writings of the Spiegels, the Hilgards, and Wendy-Louise Walker's own work and self-observations.

Hypnotisability is more an ability, a cognitive style, rather than a personality trait. There is almost certainly a genetic factor in hypnotisability. The learning and experiences that foster or inhibit development of hypnotisability, are relevant to therapy. Walker wrote:

The role of abuse in childhood is almost certain to exaggerate, or make pathological, the capacity for dissociation and double tracking (c.f., compartmentalization) with which the highly hypnotizable are born.

[Note: Walker demonstrated familiarity with the notion that, traumatising high IQ kids induced the dissociation and brain compartmentalisation necessary for creating mind-controlled slaves.]

One study showed that undamaged highly hypnotizable subjects reported using dissociation when very upset as children…

Walker described the highly hypnotizable as 'probably stimulus hungry.'

For the highly hypnotizable, hypnosis accentuates a process they already practise. Focus of attention is the access key. Hypnotic suggestion is the driving program. Walker wrote:

The highly hypnotizable go in and out of altered states of awareness, and switch hemispheres, quite readily.

They do not need a 'crisis' or to have been abused, to shift. The undamaged highly hypnotizable keep themselves to themselves [i.e., introverts]. They may occupy all sorts of jobs but tend to gravitate to the arts. When they are actors, they go for method acting rather than Lawrence Olivier's carefully constructed performances.

Looser background controls of consciousness lead to greater flexibility, which leads both to creativity and to increased error. The highly hypnotizable are a group for whom background controls are very readily lifted; indeed, they often spontaneously shift this control. When highly hypnotizable people are damaged, upset or drunk, they can appear strange, but are clearly differentiated from schizophrenics.

DISSOCIATION PRONENESS

Dissociation is the double tracking of consciousness. It is not a disease process but something that some (1 to 2 in 20 people) do easily and habitually.

Double tracking is par for the course for the highly hypnotizable, engaging two competent sets of cognitive processes, with self-awareness and executive awareness flitting back and forth. This hinders total recall, since memory access is easier with material that was in the central focus of conscious attention. Advantage: great flexibility, rarely get bored, can get a lot done. Disadvantage: memory gaps, especially when tired. However:

The second consciousness track can often be accessed by entering other information, especially sensory information.

SPLITTING AFFECT FROM COGNITION

There may also be dissociation in the meaning of splitting of affective components of cognition and memory. Highly hypnotizable people use this as a conscious mechanism in an emergency. When it is unconscious and extensive, it is a defence mechanism. Advantage: excellent for crisis, can put terror aside, ride with the demands, carry on 'as if in a trance' [Note: An essential DELTA soldier ability]. For the non-damaged highly hypnotizable there is no problem: They need to process the feelings soon after the event, just postpone a little, meet the practicalities first, and then weep. [Note: This is why I was allowed moments to cry and grieve, under the supervision of Patricia Anne Conlon.] For the damaged, this is done automatically, non-volitionally, then it splits off feelings from perceptions and cognitions; if this is in a major way, life becomes unreal, bleak, two-dimensional, and they may be misdiagnosed as schizophrenic!

There can be a splitting off of whole systems.

Dissociation may also refer to the splitting off of relatively sizeable chunks of consciousness (systems of cognitions, motivations, and patterns of affect) separated by walls of amnesia.

There is major loss of control, with MPD and fugue states as the extreme. The damaged highly hypnotizable tend to use dissociation in a maladaptive way, as a defence, rather than repression. These major maladaptive dissociations may very likely be initiated and fostered in childhood.

Highly hypnotizable people, even those without damaged personalities, have more of a sense of multiplicity, they have looser controls of consciousness. Multiple personality is the abnormal extreme. An important goal with highly hypnotizable patients, who come for help because they have been damaged, is fostering a sense of flexible unity in the personality, of accepting the different facets. [i.e., Integration.]

The spontaneous emergence of primary process thought in the waking state is more frequent among the highly hypnotizable, and primary process thought is more frequent in hypnosis compared with the waking state.

EVERYDAY IMAGINITIVE INVOLVEMENT & SPONTANEOUS HYPNOSIS

Non-damaged highly hypnotizable people report this area with pleasure and commonly produce it on purpose and guard against it when it is likely to seem inappropriate. Damaged patients have less ability to shift consciousness and have a sense of loss of control of consciousness in everyday life, and a fear of this. Walker's own work on imaginative involvement suggests that it can be a great refuge and a rich and growth-provoking experience. Equally vividly, it can create a sense of doom. For example, if a husband is late home and the thought that he might be dead emerges, the highly hypnotizable can experience trains of imagery and affect which are quite commonly self- propelling. The flexibility and vivid loss of self in imagined experience with access to vivid emotional responses accessible to the highly hypnotizable, are great for problem solving, magical, but need to be kept on leash.

For the undamaged highly hypnotizable, this is the quality-of-life dimension. They automatically use this for stress management (e.g., get lost in nature, sparrows in rain puddles, off with music). They use it for problems-solving (e.g., rehearsal), for recreation.

They read novels and poetry and extend their life experience and spirituality. Sometimes things just ‘pop into their heads’…

The damaged highly hypnotizable tend to underutilize this dimension as a source of entertainment, wonder and joy. Also, it is their major source of unharnessed, negative and overwhelming suffering. The goal then is to teach them controls and limits. The negative future is created and reacted to, and negative suggestions are amplified imaginatively into complex vistas of creative suffering, with ensuing wear and tear on the body. The greatest gift of being highly hypnotizable becomes shut off, because it can generate such suffering. For therapy: Teach about the area, teach how to use self-direction, self-talk to direct these processes, controlled involvement.

SUGGESTIBILITY

Both damaged and undamaged highly hypnotizable people are highly suggestible, both in the sense of compliance with suggestion, and in terms of incorporating suggestion into the self-concept. The undamaged highly hypnotizable learn to protect themselves against undue invasion quite early in childhood. The damaged highly hypnotizable are confused and tortured by this dimension, and continue the suffering with negative self-talk, which acts as suggestion. Teach the damaged highly hypnotizable about their qualities, teach them to have imagined ‘force fields’ around them. Teach them to evaluate suggestions before responding or incorporating. Teach them to use self-talk in a positive and creative way. Education is a powerful modality in therapy and is very necessary for the highly hypnotizable. Teach further limiting and harnessing of their great gifts.

HYPNOTIST INTERACTION

There are differences here according to transference and reality components of the relationship, and according to whether it is taking place in the context of therapy or research. The highly hypnotizable can be very concrete in receiving instructions, but they may not always be compliant. Even in research, with the weakening of executive control in hypnosis, one may find spontaneous regression or abreaction. This occurs infrequently in research because of the contract. Interpersonal relationships are greatly intensified when we use hypnosis in therapy, especially with the highly hypnotizable. The relationship needs to be kept safe, and proper limits set.

HIGH HYPNOTISABILITY & MEMORY

Spiegel suggests that the highly hypnotizable have very good memory, but they are probably prone to amnesia gaps. Many of the memory problems of damaged highly hypnotizable patients are probably dissociative rather than repressive.

Gifted subjects are skilful at alternative accessing of memory stores, e.g., by using sensory imagery rather than words to access memory.

[Note: This points to Gittinger’s extensive combining of visualisation and hypnosis to structure multiple personalities. It also helps explain how and why *Art Ther*apy can effectively access MK memories. It also suggests that these memories are technically dissociated – not repressed, and that effective therapy should focus on integration.]

TREATMENT IMPLICATIONS

Walker emphasised the notion of, first of all, fostering a sense of control and unity at the central core of personality. Use hypnotic techniques in the beginning to foster this sense. Teach the subject what it feels like going in and out of hypnosis, and to defend against trancelike consciousness in inappropriate situations via voluntary barriers. Emphasize in and out of hypnosis, the joys of having a creative and flexible mind, but emphasize also that we get nothing for nothing. Anxiety proneness and the sense of the mind slipping out of gear, are liabilities that accompany the gift. For self-hypnosis, use ritual such as listening to a piece of beautiful music with trance directed by that music, and the direct suggestion with such beautiful music that no negative or discordant experience is possible. With highly hypnotizable clients, it is also very easy to transfer fragments of the hypnotic state into waking habits.

Highly hypnotizable people are unpredictable to hypnotize; they require sensitivity and attention; and 'routine' hypnosis is not suitable. Get constant feedback about what is being experienced and learn to use language appropriately. The damaged, highly hypnotizable person needs structure and clear definition of the hypnotic experience. Their needs are somewhat different from less hypnotizable people, and from my 40-plus years of experience with them, 'indirect' methods are often quite noxious to them.

* * *

COMBINING MUSIC & WORDS AS A PATHWAY THROUGH HYPNOSIS: PRACTICAL GUIDELINES

Music has powerful effects on consciousness and, combined with appropriate hypnotic words to guide attention and experience, makes a natural pathway into hypnosis. Music makes an effective deepening technique. Music can also be used as the primary focus of attention for induction. Also, when hypnosis is achieved, music can be an effective vehicle for carrying verbal suggestions, a primary stimulus for production of emotional experiences, or a background for therapeutic fantasy, guided imagery, or imaginal rehearsal.

Hilgard (1979) noted that her highly hypnotisable subjects were more likely than less hypnotisable ones to become absorbed in classical music rather than pop or jazz. [Note: I was raised with rock music and forced to watch *Countdown* weekly. While my teenage peers listened to The Cure, Sex Pistols and U2, I preferred Mozart, Handel and Bach.]

Sensory imagery elicited by 'imaginative' music is more vivid and subjectively real in hypnosis than in the waking state. Sensory imagery tends to be highly individual across different subjects. There is more loss of self in the experience of listening to music in hypnosis than in the waking state. [Note: Disney's *Fantasia,* which relied on this phenomenon, was used for programming.]

COMBINING MUSIC & WORDS FOR HYPNOSIS INDUCTION

If hypnotic instruction is combined with the correct consciousness-altering music, the two inputs augment each other. Music as a focus of attention is more attention-holding than watching a spot on the wall. Music reduces intrusive thoughts during moving into hypnosis.
Walker used flute, guitar, and lute music of Bach's *Arioso*, Boccherini, Vivaldi, Handel and others, and Celtic harp music. Highly hypnotisable subjects prefer music that captures consciousness (e.g., Baroque). Baroque chamber music can make excellent deepening music, a slow rendition of Pachelbel's *Canon*, can be powerful as a deepening pathway. Renaissance

dance music can also be effective, and the suggestion would be that the mind dance into hypnosis with the music.

When music is combined with the hypnotist's verbal suggestions, the highly hypnotisable can't recall the verbal suggestions after the hypnosis

[Note: MK-ULTRA programming is characterised by an inability to remember the abuse. The role of music in that process seems obvious, after reading Wendy-Louise Walker's hypnosis methods.]

* * *

CONCLUSION

Reading between the lines as Ben suggested, I found Wendy-Louise Walker's writings validated my memories. They strike me as clandestine instructions for accessing high-IQ trauma victims. They seem to elucidate things Walker can't mention in professional journals. Walker's writings suspiciously lack mainstream research references to support how she acquired much of her knowledge. She provides almost no referencing for how she reached her conclusions, what subjects were used, or the nature of the research from which her conclusions were drawn. Consequently, I'm inclined to believe Ben: Walker's knowledge of hypnosis was founded on unethical hypnosis, drug experiments, and Nazi-style torture and trauma conducted on little children kept in cages like lab rats beneath Sydney military bases.

* * *

I had a dream where I stumbled upon a five-year-old girl with long straight dark blonde hair floating face down in a starfish position I a shallow wading pool. It was me. My brain was telling me the age I was when Wendy-Louise Walker drowned and electrocuted me.

'That was horrendous,' I complained. 'That was the worst session in six years. It left me in shock for days. Jon accidentally startled me the next day and I screamed my head off again. I just don't want that again. I did a full year of that and it's just too painful.'

'What was so bad about last week?' my therapist asked.

'Oh, perhaps drowning plus whole-body electrocution in every orifice is incredibly painful!'

'But we've processed equally painful experiences before, like drowning and -…'

'Yeah, I know. The Dagon drowning ritual was worse. I don't know…'

'Can I tell you my take on it?'

I nodded.

'I reckon there's more.'

'Shut up! I don't want to hear that.'

'Well, we could do week-on, week-off, and concentrate on stabilising and calming you in between sessions?'

'That's just annoying. If we're gonna do it, I'd rather just rip the bandage off in one go.'

'That's what I figured.'

'I don't have a fucking choice, do I?! I'm between a rock and a hard place. If I don't do the memory recalling, I suffer all the same emotions and pain attached to the memories anyhow, and this keeps cycling until I diffuse it. So, I recall the trauma, integrate that part – and then it starts all over again with another memory. But at least the remaining stuff isn't compounded by the recently surfaced stuff.'

I phoned my friend who had experienced the same programming and asked her why she thought the previous session was so painful.

'Obviously it's opened up whole new batch of trauma memories.'

'Oh, shut up! That's exactly what my therapist said!'

They were both right.

The induction began with an image of my floating down to earth on a cloud.

'Like Monkey?' I asked.

'Yes, like Monkey.'

That's easy, I thought. *Monkey* was one of my favourite TV shows as a kid.

He began counting forwards to ten. 'What do you notice?'

'White haze. I see a pink lotus flower. Someone is sitting on a cloud, crossed-legged, beneath a rainbow. He's dressed in a gold-orange-yellowish robe. He's bald. He's a swami. He's wearing wooden beads. Keep counting.'

He began counting to 20.

'Black,' I said. Keep counting.'

'…twenty-nine…thirty.'

'Red. I see red. Keeping going.'

'…forty.'

'Pink. I see a birthday party. People are up close, dressed in party hats. One blows one of those whistles with a paper tongue.'

'…fifty.'

'Green. It's colour programming.'

'…sixty.'

'Yellow.'

'…seventy.'

'Orange.'

'…eighty.'

'Light blue. It's a multi-coloured stick of rock candy with segments of different flavours stuck together.'

'…ninety.'

'Light grey. It's changed. I see a pack of coloured *Textas* now.'

'…one hundred. What do you see?'

I continued counting in my own mind, taking myself deeper, to two hundred. I recalled standing in a vat of liquid, at Lucas Heights nuclear reactor, looking up at White Coats working on perforated metal deck surrounding reactor. I per down and see feet are in water. I am standing on some kind of translucent blue surface which is lit up from beneath. My arms are bound. 'I'm stuck. I can only see right. You have to guide me so I can turn my head.'

'Look around.'

'I see the exit to a corridor directly ahead. There is a light source behind me. My arms are tied. They're doing something with, with radioactivity. You know -…'

'Isotopes?'

'Yeah, something like that. I don't understand.'

At the end of the session, I was left feelings confused because I had not identified the part responsible for these memory fragments. I was still feeling the part's emotions. So, I did a 20-minute session with Ros, to identify who was holding the memory. I identified 'Red Alice' and that her system existed behind a red door at back of the Alice in Wonderland setting located behind Gittinger's green door.

I slipped right into Red Alice's memories and immediately remembered the missing fragments. 'Red Alice was the part trained in psychology. She was the one who scanned the MMPI data in class and concluded in minutes that the female patient should not work with a male therapist. Red Alice was trained by Wendy-Louise Walker. They trained me to maybe take her place at Holsworthy. That's why they let me study psychology. They thought I might go back and work for them. And I almost did. I actually started looking at applications for ASIO. I read their requirements and had never seen such a fit for my abilities. It was perfect. And Bond encouraged the ASIO application, saying how 'perfect' I would be for that job. They threw me out of psychology the moment they realised I wasn't going back.'

Red Alice's memory system clearly recalled the order and significance of the memory fragments. 'Wendy-Louise Walker visited me at Nanna's house. She did the induction in her kitchen. I was three. She attached the Red Alice alter to my sexual assault beneath the kitchen table. She was there for the assault, instigated and orchestrated it. Kidman was the one seated naked at the table. Wendy-Louise Walker created an induction based on a real stick of multi-coloured rock candy plus a packed of Textas. It all happened there in Nanna's kitchen. I remembered standing in the kitchen later at age 14, with my back to the sink, thinking about it.

'The birthday party was a mock party for my sixth birthday. It happened at Holsworthy, the day after the hunting party by the ocean above Kiama. I was upset about my birthday being ruined, so they put on party hats and teased me about it. Kidman was the man who blew the whistle in my face.

'And the incident at Lucas Heights occurred in the reactor room. They were agitating the molecules in my body with electricity, or something like that, to affect the radiation somehow? I don't exactly know what that was about.'

Doing voice dialogue with the parts calmed everything down in just 20 minutes. Ros typically asked: 'What was your role, job, what did you have to do?' and add, 'I'm really sorry you had to do that.' Ros doesn't create a whole lot of emotion but tries to keep the alter in her left brain while reminiscing. There is no exact formula for treatment, because the abuse process is too individualised. The process is tailored to the client's voice tone and body language during therapy.

The therapist quickly gains the part's respect and trust when he exhibits genuine care and concern for the person, plus demonstrates knowledge of the part's system, perpetrators, mind control techniques, and what the alter has generally experienced.

During my next session, the induction was based on coloured jellybeans, because that was another cue Wendy-Louise Walker used to hypnotise me. Again, I fell down the rabbit hole and landed on Gittinger's foyer floor. I headed directly for the red door located at the far end of the Wonderland set.

On the other side of the red door I found myself in a cluttered pantry lit up with a red light, like a photographer's dark room. I emerged into my grandmother's Engadine kitchen. It was broad daylight. I walked into the loungeroom. There I saw my 21-month-old self, wearing in a long-sleeved white flower girl dress. I stayed with Helena Holowczak while my mother was in hospital with my brother Dale who was born six weeks premature on 26 July 1971.

About the same time, I was back at Nanna's being measured for a flower girl dress for the wedding of Helen's Slavic friend. This was the very first time I was left alone with Nanna. I was there at least a week.

I was seated in a tiny chair with my little white head cocked to one side, leaning on my right hand. I was listening intently to Wendy-Louise Walker who sat opposite me on the lounge. Antony Kidman sat in an armchair to my right. It was Kidman who orally raped me beneath Helen's kitchen table. That is my first memory of being sexually assaulted – by psychologist Antony Kidman, in the presence and under the instruction of, psychologist Wendy-Louise Walker.

'Take the little girl and lead her into the kitchen,' my therapist suggested.

'I can do that,' I agreed. 'I can freeze frame the loungeroom scene.'

'Yes, because this is inside your mind and you are in control… Sit her at the table. With you… Now, is there anyone else who would like to join you?'

'A whole bunch. Their faces are blurred out. I'm confused.' A pain struck my heart. 'They stored Red Alice in my heart. They flatlined me at ten. The heart contains actual brain-like memory. Doctor Chang knew this. It was his specialty…'

My head began to throb – a tell-tale sign of electrocution and alter creation. An image returned to mind, the same one I had during the previous session. 'I remember being tall and leaning with my back to the kitchen sink, staring at the room and remembering back to when I was first abused by these people - in my grandmother's kitchen. It was her, leaning against the sink. You need to talk to Red Alice.'

Therapist: 'Invite her to sit at the table. I'll join her there.'

I visualised the four of us at the table. 'Hey, this is weird. I can actually picture us around the table!'

There ensued a heated discussion between Red Alice and my therapist, about her difficulty connecting with him.

'I'm sorry,' he eventually conceded.

I moved into Alice's mind and began to explain: 'Wendy-Louise Walker made me. She taught me psychology. I'm the one who rapidly scanned that MMPI in psychology class. They compartmentalised my natural ability and enhanced it by shutting out all distraction and increasing focus and a-…'

'Attention,' my therapist nodded.

'Which is the key to all enhancement. They were training me to take over from Wendy, to become a perpetrator. They had me do the same to other kids.'

I drew Red Alice seated at the table, for my therapist to see just how evil she was.

'She's dripping in blood,' I said.

'Hey,' he cooed, 'she was just a little kid. It wasn't her fault… Why don't you go put your arm around her?'

I'm so sorry, I consoled Alice. I led her into the bathroom nearby, ran a bath, and began to bathe her. The bath quickly filled with blood. So, I emptied and refilled the bath, and tried bathing her again, washing her hair. I almost had her clean when she grabbed a blade and slashed her left wrist.

'It's not working! She just slit her wrist. *She's* the one who slit my wrist all those years ago.' I showed my therapist the small scar on my left wrist. 'She was trying to communicate what happened. It's not working because she wants me to know what she did. That's the pattern: I remember what they made the part do, and then she can be washed and safely stored.'

Tap-tap-tap…

I mentally re-entered the small cluttered red-lit room. This time, I emerged into a Delta operation. It was dark and green. I wore night vision goggles. I saw a man seated on a lounge. It was an ambush… an assassination.

'She did assassinations. Delta shot entire families. Kids, everyone. We made it look like the father killed his entire family and blamed it on him. What a nightmare…' Sometimes Delta teams shot the adult members of a family and took their children for trafficking.

I had seen enough. I bathed Red Alice again, this time in the shower, due to the memory of my step-grandfather sexually abusing us in the bath. Alice broke down crying in the shower, her head flopped forward, and her wet body convulsed so she could hardly stand. I consoled her again and dried her. I turned and was surprised to find a long white linen dress suspended on a clothes hanger.

Now I had to find a place for her to rest, both her and the toddler.

'She's had enough of this world,' I explained. 'She wants out.'

I know where I can put you. You don't have to be here anymore.

I visualised a portal to the garden I saw during my childhood near death experiences, where the children were dressed in white linen.

I led Alice and my toddler self to the portal and said:

Go and wait for me there. *I'll join you later, when I'm done here...*

Integrating Red Alice was significant because suddenly, the evil perpetrated against me during my psychology studies at Bond University lost its rawness and faded into an old, distant, vague memory. Further, I suddenly lost my superior ability to create words with Scrabble letters. I was becoming like the Pink Floyd song: 'comfortably numb...'

The next therapy session began with a memory of a mobile made of phthalo blue-green coloured mica teardrops that hung at Wendy-Louise Walker's home. I was seated in a chair beneath an awning at the rear of her home, focussing my attention on the mobile.

Next, I revisited the house we ambushed at night. Again, I entered via the small room cluttered with pots and pans and emerged in the loungeroom. Again, I saw the green hue suggesting we wore night vision goggles. Again, I saw a chubby aging man seated on the couch. I put a bullet in the man's head and indicated to my three accomplices to search the three doorways to our right. I headed toward the dark opening to the kitchen ahead. I saw a flash of a small girl reclining on the old man but wondered if I were imagining things. I entered the kitchen and noticed a small pantry across the room. Inside the pantry I saw a small figure crouched in the corner.

'It's just a doll,' I told my therapist.

'Oh, that's okay,' he sighed.

'No,' I explained, 'I see a doll because it's okay to shoot a doll.'

Tap…tap…tap…

'I see flashes of blue, green and yellow doors.' I sighed, 'Of course. We did the red door. These are Wendy's other doors.'

Therapist: 'Let's open them up and see what's inside.'

Behind the yellow door I saw a Holsworthy science lab. 'I see a lab bench like we had in science at school, only there's a sink in it.' The picture cleared and I saw the torso of a young blonde boy lying on a metal table. 'It's a wet lab. This is where they did autopsies on the kids in cages. They cut them open to see the effects of their experiments. Lots of kids. An endless supply…'

Behind the blue door I saw my teenage self, standing in front of a chalk board, delivering lessons on strategy to a group of six-year-old children seated cross-legged on the floor. Wendy-Louise Walker and her friends sat observing from the back of the room, impressed with my teaching style.

Behind the green door I saw a classroom with rows of desks facing a board. My teenage self was sat at a desk, being taught the military application of psychological test after test after test… 'This is what clinicians use these tests,' said my instructor, 'but this is what the test was actually designed for…'

Therapist: 'Is there a white door?'

'There's always a white door,' I lamented.

Behind the white door was thick fog that cleared to reveal the fat Tibetan monk meditating beneath the rainbow. Then I noticed an endless hallway lined both sides with every coloured door, like a mega pack of Texta felt pens…

'Wendy created so many doors when I was young, so that whenever she needed to lay some new programming throughout my development, she just had to pick one of the ready-made coloured doors.

Therapist: 'Doors within doors…'

Our next session focussed on accessing the myriad of multicoloured doors that lay behind Wendy-Louise Walker's white door of hypnosis. My mind fell on the mica mobile at Walker's house. Then I recalled her making me focus on a shiny Christmas decoration hanging from the doorway lintel separating the kitchen and loungeroom of my grandmother's Engadine home.

I had to recall an irritated Red Alice from her hiatus to help me access the doors.

'I need the trigger word.'

It was ‘Black Widow.’

I opened a green door to my left and found a giant spider’s lair based on the demon in Lord of the Rings. Behind that I found a memories of luring targets with sex and assassinating them.

Next was a pink door. Behind this I saw a bunch of pink helium balloons. Then I saw lemon tea cake and women gathered for a baby shower in a mafia drug lord’s mountaintop mansion.

Behind a yellow door I saw a white civilian looking CIA plane. In the next snippet I saw me being accompanied by a Delta operative through a Havanan marketplace.

Behind a red door I saw terracotta brick paving in Tuscany…

The rainbow of doors represented Delta assignments and tactical programs laid by Wendy-Louise Walker at Holsworthy Army Base.

*　*　*

Psychology 101

You can be a psychologist like a rock star and have fame and money -
and that's what I intend to do.
- Martin Seligman, CIA psychologist

The white uniformed figures shifted in and out of focus as they rushed about my limp form, sticking things onto my chest, and inserting things into my arms.

‘Do you wish you were dead *now*?!’ someone yelled at me.

‘Nooo…’ I moaned.

‘Have you ever harmed yourself before?’

‘No.’

Two weeks prior, I was a typical college student with no medical history, when I suddenly began suffering vertigo and insomnia. I was walking sideways into walls and had not slept for a fortnight. My GP found no apparent cause for the vertigo, and he prescribed sleeping pills – which I took all at once.

‘What happened last night?’ a doctor asked me the following morning.

My brother’s fiancé, who was also my best friend and roommate, arrived home late last night. I had taken a sleeping pill long before Rosalind awoke me, giggling about suddenly ending her engagement to my brother and marrying Glen instead.

Glen?! I was confused. *She’s ditching her Tom Cruise lookalike high school sweetheart to marry some scumbag we just met at church?!* I wondered what it was about his coke bottle glasses and 70’s porn star moustache that she found so attractive. Only weeks ago, this Glen had gushed, ‘I don’t know who I love more, Fiona or Rosalind.’

Rosalind’s revelation proved too much after recent events. Two weeks prior, my step-grandfather was found hanged to death in his chicken coop.

I did not feel my body as I floated to the kitchen, fetched the medicine bottle, unscrewed the lid, and downed its entire contents. I did not feel the pills touch my throat. I did not wonder whether it might be dangerous. All I remember thinking is, *Now I’ll get to sleep*. I was found unconscious the following morning.

‘Have you ever seen a psychiatrist before?’ a young psychiatric registrar asked. He would go on to fail his final psychiatric exam six times. I now wonder why he was rejected by the medical fraternity. Was he that talentless compared to the other morons I encountered in the industry? Or perhaps his rejection was punishment for encouraging me to remember.

‘Yes,’ I answered.

‘Who?’

‘Ian Cole.’

‘When was that?’

‘I was sixteen.’

‘Until when?’

‘Until I left school at eighteen.’

‘Who referred you to him?’

‘No one. I was friends with his daughter, and we were talking on the phone.’

‘Are you depressed again?’ Zoe had asked.

I was 16. Wasn’t everyone depressed at 16? I had always suffered a kind of existential depression which exacerbated as my home life deteriorated. *What’s the meaning of life?* I clearly recall despairing at age five years. *What's the difference between dying when you are 80 and dying at eight, when you are going to die anyhow?*

'Here's Dad!' Zoe passed the call to Dr Ian Cole.

That is how I ended up in psychotherapy two school lunchtimes per week without my parents' knowledge or a doctor's referral. It was an unconventional therapeutic relationship in other ways. Sometimes I attended the mega parties Ian Cole hosted at his Upper Burringbar property, where the smoke of incense and marijuana entwined as adults and minors lounged on Japanese inspired décor, sharing bongs. The revels were an extension of the '60s counterculture, where budding artist Ian Cole partied with Sydney's avant-garde scene in which parents got drunk and high, leaving a generation of kids to be preyed on by the likes of Dave.

Dave climbed into a bed at Ian Cole's house where Zoe's 14-year-old friend Sharon lay asleep. Sharon awoke to Dave sexually assaulting her. Ian put Sharon's subsequent trauma response down to a lack of 'open-mindedness.'

'Open-minded' is how Zoe described her model boyfriend Craig's attitude toward being drugged and raped at a gathering of teachers including his uncle, the principal who covered up the Education Department pedophile ring I eventually exposed. The morning after the party, Craig awoke in the bed of our gay Murwillumbah high school Careers teacher with no memory of how he got there. Terry Cleal stood naked in the bedroom doorway, mincing at Craig, 'It's okay, sweetie.'

Zoe had sex with Craig when she was 13 years old. Ian Cole's reaction to this was warning her daughter, 'Hey, don't get pregnant.' Ian's youngest daughter Jessie had sex with her boyfriend Gabe very young also. The Cole's were a living example of Margaret Mead's sexual revolution. Ian divorced Zoe's mother Kerry when Zoe was three, after he was caught screwing a nurse named Jan at the psychiatric hospital he worked at. His high school sweetheart, Kerry, attempted suicide after discovering the reason for Ian's regular overnight stays at work.

Ian Cole discarded his family like a fast food container and started a new one with the nurse. Zoe felt displaced by this, especially after her mother remarried and had a son to a domestic violence perpetrator. Suddenly Zoe and her older sister Billie belonged to no family. People dismiss the impact of divorce on the displaced children of the first marriage and its contribution to youth suicide. 'I love all my children equally!' Ian protested following Zoe's death. Zoe felt differently.

Zoe moved in with Ian's new family at the start of high school. Her arrival shoved a bomb beneath Ian's slice of hippie paradise. I was the only one who realised this was no Brady Bunch moment. I was the only one who detected the mental pain Zoe was in. I was the only person Zoe warned that she was contemplating suicide.

Zoe's older sister, Billie, joined Ian's family a few years later and graduated from my high school. Billie presented as a cold character who preferred the Japanese culture she eventually adopted. I never understood Billie until I had a daughter just like her. Zoe felt inferior to Billie who was voted school captain, dux of her grade, came second in the state for Japanese translation, and won the regional debating final. Zoe's lousy high school certificate marks seemed to be the final straw. She left for Germany where she lamented to her friend Emma, 'I can never go home until I'm famous.' I know because I visited Emma in Hamburg after Zoe's death.

Zoe was living in Sydney when I received her final letter. It contained one standout sentence scrawled in alien handwriting: 'Sometimes I feel like *committing suicide*…' I tried to show the letter to its intended reader - her father - but he rejected my concerns. ‘No, no!’ Ian threw his hands up in protest, ‘What goes on between you and Zoe is your business.’ He refused to read the letter.

Zoe’s subsequent suicide in Amsterdam instigated a wave of mourning that extended from Murwillumbah to Byron Bay. How could someone so pretty, talented, popular and strong kill herself, they wondered. Everyone was shocked - except me.

‘There were no signs!’ her father exclaimed.

Yes, there were. Zoe had been dropping hints for years. She began cutting her wrist while living in Sydney with Ian’s friends. ‘She’s just attention-seeking,’ the psychiatrist couple concluded.

I met Zoe’s mother in a Sydney restaurant.

‘Billie had warned me about meeting up with you,’ Kerry confessed halfway through lunch.

‘Really. What did she say?’

‘She said you were very intense.’

‘Well,’ I sighed indignantly, ‘suicide is pretty intense.’

‘Suicide is a one-way street. When I saw Zoe, she was lying on a metal table. She looked like a frozen lump of meat. The only thing that seemed natural was her hair, so I stroked that. That wasn’t Zoe lying there. Zoe was somewhere else -…’

As Kerry spoke, my brain turned her description of my dead friend into a movie which was stored in long-term memory as if I had been standing in that morgue. The mental image never faded but functioned as a suicide deterrent.

‘You know,’ she continued ‘it’s amazing. I had a guy, sitting exactly where you are, last week try and convince me that I should use cocaine.’

I eyeballed Kerry and asserted, ‘Don’t listen to him. He was lying. Cocaine won’t fix this.’ Cocaine was the recreational drug of the moment, hailed for being non-addictive. I knew otherwise.

Kerry continued, ‘I couldn’t get an autopsy done on Zoe because they don’t do that on suicides in Holland. But I suspect Zoe was pregnant to some guy called Dave. She kept going on and on about some guy called Dave. Who the fuck is Dave?’

My gut dropped. ‘Ian has a friend called Dave. It’s not him, is it? He’s old enough to be Zoe’s father.’

Kerry showed me a picture of Zoe in Greece - with Dave.

‘That’s him! *Ugh!* He’s a Vietnam Veteran. He was a patient of Ian’s. He doesn’t work. He hangs around Ian a lot. He’s on some huge veteran pension. He convinced the government psychiatrist to grant him the highest pension rate by picking up the psychiatrist’s desk and throwing it through the window. I met him at Ian’s parties. My friend spied him talking to Billie in town, constantly perving down her top. He’s a sleaze.’

Dave was present during my final visit to Ian Cole’s Upper Burringbar home. I sat at the kitchen table until midnight, watching the men get drunk and reminisce about Zoe. Toward the end of my visit, Ian confessed he had recently battled the compulsion to chop his family up with a carving knife. ‘I had to throw the knife up the back paddock,’ he explained. Then he smiled knowingly at me, ‘Do you want to see Zoe?!’

‘Okay,’ I shrugged, wondering what was about to happen.

Minutes later, my former psychiatrist returned with a wooden urn containing Zoe’s ashes. He fetched a dessert spoon from the kitchen draw, opened the urn lid, scooped out a spoonful of Zoe’s ashes – and ate them.

'The intent being,' Dave commentated, 'to return Zoe from whence she came.'
Ian abruptly closed the urn, gathered it under his arm, and rushed outside. I followed behind and watched him unceremoniously scatter my friend's ashes amongst the ginger plants next to the kitchen widow.

'I'm *sane*!' I yelled at God on my drive home that night. '*I'm* sane! *That* was insane!'

I appealed to my current psychiatrist for help with Ian Cole's madness. Yet again, my concerns went unheeded. I was not surprised when Ian Cole committed suicide at his Upper Burringbar property two years later. Ian died of guilt. He paid a hefty price for 'free sex.'

A former close friend of Zoe's contacted me after reading the above story on my blog site. She and Zoe were best friends at an ACT primary school but lost contact after age 10. The friend unexpectedly encountered Zoe four years later at a Murwillumbah eisteddfod. Zoe did not greet her former best friend as expected. Instead, Zoe blurted something about being made to perform oral sex on an adult male - and walked off.

Some found my account of Ian eating Zoe's ashes far-fetched. Yet, Jessica Cole, the daughter Ian had with the nurse, subsequently published her memoir, *Staying*, which describes her father's decent into insanity following Zoe's suicide, including the time he was arrested for breaking into a stranger's house, smearing himself in excrement, and writing all over the walls.

* * *

USELESS PHYSICIANS

I have dealt with hundreds of counsellors, psychologists and psychiatrists as both a recipient and provider of mental health services. I have spoken to countless victims of ritual abuse and mind control. I have liaised with and advised therapists who work with victims. I experienced the criminal workings of the organisations that regulate and control the Australian mental health industry, and I have met other victims of these governing bodies. Based upon this wealth of experience, I must conclude that the Australian mental health industry is a putrid mess of dysfunction and corruption.

The experts in charge of the mental health industry responsible for determining who can practise what, are proven perpetrators. The therapists under their auspices are mostly complicit, lazy, incompetent, or nuts. Most therapists present to patients as condescending, unskilled, unempathetic, unethical, fearful, and generally useless. Most therapists are angry control freaks, of average intelligence, criminally insane, or sexual perverts. Most therapists lack the ethics, professionalism, and skill needed to support a client in general, never mind a victim of the most extreme abuse. Suitable therapists are rare. It took me 35 years to locate a clean, trauma-focussed, EMDR-trained, genuine Christian psychiatrist with expertise in treating ritual abuse and mind control.

I will now discuss the main reasons why victims of ritual abuse and mind control typically find it impossible to locate a suitable therapist who uses effective trauma and dissociation treatment methods. Australian therapists lack the ethics, knowledge and skills to effectively treat victims of extreme abuse, due to the following factors:

1. Australian universities have long been infiltrated by perpetrators of pedophilia and MK-ULTRA (as I demonstrated with Bond University);
2. Psychology theory and practise are based on MK-ULTRA experimentation;

3. Treatment interventions were designed to perpetuate and maintain trauma and dissociation; and
4. The CIA introduced denial theories which underpin all teaching, training, clinical and forensic practise in Australia.

MIND CONTROL ROOTS OF PSYCHOLOGY

The pioneers of psychology and psychiatry engaged in practises that were dubious, abhorrent, or just plain weird. Carl Jung based his writings on Alchemy and the ancient mystery cults, particularly Mithraism, and founded his own religious cult, the tenets of which are found in the New Age movement and the modern Kundalini-spirit-filled charismatic churches. [475] Sigmund Freud intentionally hid his clinical finding that his patients' 'hysteria' stemmed from dissociated memories of child sexual abuse:

> *The event of which the subject has retained an unconscious memory is an unusually early experience of sexual relations with actual excitement of the genitals, resulting from sexual abuse committed by another person; and the period of life at which this fatal event takes place is earliest youth – the years up to the age of eight or 10, before the child has reached sexual maturity. A passive sexual experience before puberty: this then is the specific cause of hysteria… In some 18 cases of hysteria I have been able to discover this connection in every single case and, where the circumstances allowed, to confirm it by therapeutic success.*[476]

Freud replaced his finding with the *Oedipus Complex* theory that children fantasise about have sex with their parents. Thanks to Freud, VIP pedophiles like his own grandson dismiss child abuse memories as 'false memories' and child abuse victims as 'fantasists.'
All modern psychology is mind control. Those Psychology 101 lectures we attended in college were a basic introduction to a military monster hidden in plain sight. Investigative journalist Hank Albarelli documented the CIA's employment of psychiatrists and psychologists to conduct their mind control experiments during the 1950s to '70s.[477] He concluded:

> *Virtually anyone that was anybody in terms of psychology or psychiatry in the United States… virtually every doctor in the '50s and '60s, was on the CIA payroll.*

Carl Rogers, father of humanistic psychology, documented his CIA recruitment in a 1956 memo to the University of Chicago's chancellor:

> *Dr Harold Wolff of Cornell Medical School is one of the world's leading authorities in psychosomatic medicine… A week ago, he asked me if I would serve with him as a consultant to the Department of Defence on a top-secret matter having to do with mental health. He said, 'I am asking the five top-ranking men in the country in this field to serve on this task. You are one of the five, and I hope you will serve.*

---

[475] Richard Noll (1994). *The Jung Cult*. Simon & Schuster.

[476] S. Freud (1896). Further remarks on the neuro-psychoses of defense. In J. Strachey (Ed) (1962) *The Complete Psychological Works of Sigmund Freud: The Standard Edition*, Vol 3. Hogarth Press.

[477] Hank P. Alberelli. (2009), *A Terrible Mistake: the Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments*. TrineDay.

Harold Wolff was a world-famous neurologist appointed by the CIA Director to investigate Soviet brainwashing methods. He and fellow researcher Hinkie were the first to identify that the 'Soviet technique rested on the cumulative weight of intense psychological pressure and human weakness.' [478]

Carl Rogers built on Ivan Pavlov's research in which the Soviet paired a bell with electrocution to trigger fear in dogs at the sound of the bell. In 1959, the Human Ecology Fund financed Rogers to conduct MK-ULTRA research which examined the 'Correlation of Psychological and Physiological Variables in Personality and Personality Change.' Roger's study involved attaching electrodes to patients to 'ascertain their inner state of mind' and contributed to MK-ULTRA Subproject 97 which examined:

> *Process of personality change during psychotherapy. Focus upon schizophrenics, with Control [group] composed of normal individuals. To provide certain techniques of influencing human behaviour that might have significance to the Agency.*

B.F. Skinner, known as the father of operant conditioning, studied human responses to environmental cues. Two corollaries of his operant conditioning were aversion therapy and desensitization. Aversion therapy uses traumatic reinforcement like electric shock to reduce an unwanted behaviour. Skinner was a consultant to Ole Ivar Lovaas, who was hired by Major Louis Jolyon West to conduct MK-ULTRA experiments at UCLA. Documented in mainstream newspapers and magazines, including *Psychology Today,*[479] these experiments involved behavioural conditioning of autistic children using cattle prods, physical violence, and electrocution via a metal floor.

John B. Watson, father of behaviourism, produced an animal phobia in the famous baby named Albert who consequently suffered permanent mental health issues in adulthood. Watson boasted: 'Give me the baby… I'll make it a thief, a gunman or a dope fiend. The possibilities of shaping in any direction are almost endless. Even gross differences in anatomical structure limits are far less than you may think… Men are built, not born.'

Carl Rogers, Rollo May, Aaron Beck, and Albert Ellis attended a 1985 precursor to the annual Evolution of Psychotherapy conferences organised by Jeffrey Zeig. A woman involved in a conference held in Anaheim in the early 1980s, told me the group hired out Disneyland for two nights. Their rationale for spending two evenings at the MK-ULTRA facility was to 'get in touch with their inner child.'

Freud, Jung, Skinner, Rogers, Watson, May, Beck, Ellis – their opinions and research underpin all psychology training.

NAZI 'THERAPIES'

The Nazis murdered at least 300,000 psychiatric patients. *Paperclip* resettled an estimated 5,000 Nazis, including prominent psychiatrists and behaviour modification experts, in the USA post WWII, with others immigrating later.[480] At least 137 Nazi scientists are known to have been resettled in Australia under *Matchbox*. These Nazis trained the MK-ULTRA perpetrators who fathered modern psychiatry and psychology and influenced the post-WWII transition from Freud's philosophical approach to physical interventions: anticonvulsants, antidepressants, deep-sleep therapy, drug abreaction sessions, electroshock, endocrine supplements, insulin shock, lobotomy, narco-hypnosis, and stimulants. These 'therapeutic' interventions are intended to induce and maintain trauma and dissociation and prevent integration. Treatment methods are inappropriate and ineffective if they:

---

[478] John D. Marks (1978). *The search for the Manchurian Candidate*. Thomas powers.

[479] O. Ivar Lovaas (1974). 'After you hit a child, you can't just get up and leave him; you are hooked to that kid.' Interview with Paul Chance, *Psychology Today*.

[480] Lenny Lapon (1986). *Mass Murderers in White Coats: Psychiatric Genocide in Nazi Germany and the United States*. Psychiatric Genocide Research Institute.

- Were used to cause the victim's trauma and dissociation in the first place.
- Perpetuate and maintain trauma and dissociation.
- Do not connect with the right hemisphere and implicit memory.
- Deny the existence and nature of the abuse.
- Do not retrieve and fully process the trauma memories.

DENIAL-BASED TECHNIQUES

Psychotherapy is based on Freud's denial of child abuse peppered with Jung's occultism. Talk therapy on its own is useless, because talking is a left-brain activity. Trauma memories are stored in the right hemisphere's implicit memory system and can't be accessed by verbal interactions based on left-brain cognitive or logical processes. Hence a victim can work hard at therapy for 20 years but make zero progress.

Behaviour Therapies include Positive Psychology, CBT (Cognitive Behavioural Therapy), ACT (Acceptance Commitment Therapy), DBT (Dialectic Behavioural Therapy), and Schema-Focussed Therapy. Behaviour therapies are ineffective and cruel because behaviour is a symptom of the underlying problem, not the problem itself. Based on CIA-funded torture experiments on children, these methods were designed to stop therapists and victims processing ritual abuse and mind control. Behavioural therapies contain a two-prong attack on recovering repressed memories:

1. ***Passivity**:* The basic premise of these techniques is for victims to loosely acknowledge they were abused but do nothing to explore the abuse experiences trapped in implicit memory. My Counselling Psychology lecturer taught us to, 'Just let the memories sit there. Let them be.' In other words, surrender, remain in the passive state of acceptance and learned helplessness that Seligman pioneered, because there is nothing we can do.
2. ***False Action**:* These therapies simultaneously misdirect victims' energies toward identifying and changing specific thoughts and behaviours. For example, thought loops implicitly created via conditioning are combated by thinking of a red *Stop* sign at every intrusive thought. Happiness is the therapeutic goal, and positive thinking and mental distraction are the keys to success. Positive thinking excludes focussing on negative topics like witnessing kids being butchered. Instead, if you force a smile, your brain will be tricked into following and you will eventually genuinely feel happier. Willpower is no match for sophisticated brainwashing techniques. It is like defending yourself against a warship with a popgun. These methods impose a mental discipline which the victim can't satisfy. When they surely fail, victims are blamed for exerting insufficient willpower.

Positive Psychology correlates with Positive Illusion - inaccuracy regarding reality

Antony Kidman, who introduced CBT to Australia, explained the application of CBT ‘for people suffering from psychosis’ in a 2014 ABC Radio interview:[481]

> NORMAN SWAN: *So, what do you do? Do you confront somebody, say, if you're starting to believe that the world is against you and people are talking about you?...*
> ANTONY KIDMAN: *Well, we do, but of course we don't challenge necessarily the fact that they say, 'People are trying to kill me,’ or 'There's people from the CIA or ASIO across the road in a car sending me messages'. The therapeutic approach is to say, well, 'What does that really mean?’ or ‘Just elaborate on how you feel about that?’ without saying 'That's a load of nonsense!' - but not accepting it either.*

Here is my retort to that interview. How should we *‘feel’* about the following?

- Kidman died four months after giving the above radio interview, as a direct consequence of my reporting his CIA abuse of me to the NSW Health Board.
- The NSW health board previously received similar complaints concerning Kidman.
- I have since heard from multiple Antony Kidman mind control victims or their therapists.
- I took photos of the head ASIO who stalked me at Marrickville, posted one on social media, and submitted a full body closeup shot to the police who took statements from the two credible witnesses to the incident, plus from two of the ASIO agents who panicked at being exposed.

Kidman’s notion of focussing on the victim’s *feelings* and what their memories *mean* for them - while denying the truth of the CIA-ASIO child trafficking victim’s experiences - is the same denial approach contained in *APS Guidelines on Repressed Memories* (written by MK-ULTRA psychologists):

- *Psychologists should seek to meet the needs of clients who report memories of abuse and should do this quite apart from the truth or falsity of those reports.*
- *Psychologists should explore with the client the meaning and implications of the memory for the client, rather than focus solely on the content of the reported memory.*

2020 Update

This year 30 senior Australian psychologists underwent training to become supervisors of trainee psychologists. The consensus between all 30 psychologists was that CBT has zero efficacy and simply does not work. Consequently, those 30 supervisors will not be spreading CBT to the next generation of therapists.

DISSOCIATIVE-BASED THERAPY TECHNIQUES

The following therapies stem from the mystery religions and incorporate methods which CIA perpetrators use to dissociate victims:

---

[481] ABC Radio National, Health Report, Cognitive behaviour therapy for psychosis, 5 May 2014.

Visualisation activates the right hemisphere and is used to facilitate dissociation for hypnosis, astral travel, and interdimensional access.

Chanting (*Om*) creates a resonance which causes the brain hemispheres to synchronise their frequencies with the frequency exerted by our physical surroundings. It is used to facilitate interdimensional access.

Transcendental Meditation is a dissociative tool is used by Asian cultures (Yogis, Tibetan monks, Ninjas, Shaolin Masters) and to tap into an esoteric power source, mute physical pain, lower heart rate and breathing for survival purposes, and summon Chi (electromagnetic energy) to increase physical strength, harness and weaponize psychic ability, levitate physically, move objects using the mind, and access other dimensions. MK-ULTRA victims were abused using the same esoteric practises.

Yoga in the 1970s consisted of healthy exercises that stimulated the vagus nerve, internally massaged the body, and exercised the eyes to improve visual processing. Modern yoga practises focus on mediation, chanting *Om*, awakening the chakras, and evoking Kundalini.

Mindfulness is both a denial and dissociative approach stemming from Taoist and Buddhist religions. Mindfulness incorporates dissociative techniques: transcendental meditation, visualisation, and astral projection. These practices repeat the victim's abuse experiences, promote dissociation, reinforce programming, and inhibit integration. The basic premise of Mindfulness is to live more *in the moment* and spend less time contemplating past stressors or worrying about future problems. Mindfulness encourages victims to change their perception of reality or themselves, which makes it another denial therapy. Mindfulness-based cognitive therapy (MBCT) combines mindfulness with CBT, thereby delivering a double dose of denial. Not surprisingly, UK and USA studies found meditation and mindfulness trigger panic, confusion, mania, depression, psychosis, and hallucinations.[482] [483]

Psychedelic Drugs open the veil that separates this dimension from other dimensions. The MK-ULTRA perpetrators I studied, used LSD to create the initial brain splits in MK-ULTRA victims, and for layering in subsequent programming. LSD and other hallucinogens return victims to the state of consciousness they were in when being tortured and programmed; they trigger and flood victims with trauma memories, preventing them from grounding, and placing them at risk of getting stuck in a flashback. Drugs also open victims up to spiritual problems. Any doctor who suggests using LSD as a treatment method for traumatised and dissociative clients is either dumb - or dirty.

Somatic Therapy is a grey area. Somatic therapy combines psychotherapy with physical activities, some of which are fine. When somatic activities involve meditation, yoga and theatre, that is unsuitable.

---

[482] Miguel Farias & Catherine Wikholm (2015), *The Buddha Pill: can meditation change you?* Watkins Publishing.

[483] Lazarus, A. (1976). Psychiatric problems precipitated by Transcendental Meditation. *Psychological Reports*, 39:2, 601–602.

Theatre (i.e., acting methods) employs shamanic practises of centring, meditation, visualisation, dissociation and channelling. Like John bell and Frater 6161 said, theatre is *ritual*. As in ritual, theatre summons entities into this dimension. As in ritual, actors invoke entities to possess them, so they can perform.

FRONTAL LOBE DESTRUCTION

Lobotomy, electrocution, and psychiatric drugs all disengage the frontal lobes by physically severing this area from the rest of the brain. ECT damages the *dorsolateral prefrontal cortical region*, the same area targeted in surgical lobotomy. ECT electrodes are placed over the frontal lobes and the most intensive electrical surge fries the memory centres in the tip of the temporal lobes. That is why CIA perpetrators used lobotomy, electrocution and psychiatric drugs to split the brain and repress memories.

Electrocution

Victims are subjected to copious amounts of electrocution in the form of cattle prodding, crash cart paddles, giant electrodes, electric chairs, and ECT. In adulthood, I had flashbacks of being electrocuted in different brain areas, depending on which ones they wanted to separate from the rest of the brain. They also precisely administered electrocution to specific brain regions via a needle inserted into my scalp. John C. Lilly pioneered the method for inserting electrodes into the brain to stimulate exact centres of anger, anxiety, fear, pain and pleasure. Lilly mapped the entire brain for this purpose.

As a result of electrocution, victims may suffer a lifetime of symptoms including heart attacks, strokes, nervous system damage, and memory loss. These conditions may occur in a victim's youth or degenerate with age. I suffered a heart attack at age 37, a stroke at 39, and now experience tingling, numbness and pain in my hands and limbs consistent with nervous system damage caused by electrocution.

ECT has zero therapeutic benefits for victims. Doctors claim ECT temporarily reduces anxiety, depression, and suicidal ideation, when these feelings are in fact symptoms that typically precede a trauma memory as it edges toward conscious recall. ECT stops the trauma memories surfacing. Like drugs, ECT is used to silence patients and so make the psychiatric staff feel more comfortable. The anaesthetic does not reduce the trauma felt during ECT. It simply buries the pain back beneath an amnesia wall. The anaesthetic increases the brain damage ECT causes.

Hospitals all over Australia still illegally administer excessive bouts of ECT without patient consent, including my local Tweed Heads District Hospital. A movement to outlaw ECT is backed by sound research has been blocked by pedophiles in power.

Drugs

During my 30-year recovery attempt, I was rarely prescribed drugs. The longest I ever took medication for was for three to six weeks. I have a hypersensitive nervous system which, I suspect, stems in part from the amount and variety of drugs that my perpetrators pumped into my system from a very young age. My sensitivity precludes me from taking most drugs, and I can only handle small doses.

A retired pharmacist gave me some advice: 'Never take the newer drugs. You'd be lucky if a new drug has been tested on 10,000 subjects, making you a human guinea pig. Stick to the old and tried drugs.' For example, the drug Cymbalta is making abuse victims suicidal, and withdrawal from it induces such bad side effects (such as heart problems) that people can’t withdraw from it. Some of the newer antidepressants have reportedly caused hallucinogenic type reactions.

Valium can be effective for immediate relief from fresh trauma and flashbacks but is too addictive for long-term usage. The older style beta-blockers (like Inderal) are seemingly effective for PTSD. For example, processing memories can trigger an adverse heart response. Beta-blockers may provide relief from the heart’s constant reaction to the stress of reliving traumatic memories during therapy and providing witness testimony to police and courts. While certain research studies suggest the beta-blockers are effective for trauma memory restructuring, I wonder whether their mechanism of action interferes with brain integration. One psychiatrist prescribed me an asthma medication to take when I anticipate being triggered or have just been triggered. This is effective for about two days, after which its effects reverse to cause anxiety and asthma.

NEUROFEEDBACK

Soviet neuroscientist Yuri Kropotov (who discovered the function of the basal ganglia) visited the Tweed Shire in 2015. During this he publicly stated, ‘Psychiatry has failed’ and that neurofeedback is the modern means of combating mental health disorders – that plus the lobotomies his Pavlovian brain institute regularly perform in St Petersburg.

I participated in Kropotov’s neurofeedback study in which data taken from thousands of Australian trauma victims was sent to the Pavlovian institute in Russia. The neurofeedback training programs used in the study, also designed by Russians, featured triggers including Egyptian occult symbols and walls of dripping blood.

My Russian relative (a victim of Soviet mind control) threw a fit when I joined the study. ‘You’ve been Total Recalled!’ she screamed at me. ‘They’re reprogramming you! You wouldn’t know *what* they’re doing to you! They can create a back door! They’re interested in you! You’re a fucking CIA asset! And now your entire brain has been downloaded and sent to the Russian equivalent of the CIA! Whatever happened to sovereign borders?! They’re sending sensitive information about how Australians respond to trauma - to *Russia*! They’re committing treason!’

Indeed, the alpha-theta biofeedback training induced a hypnotic trance state during which I was subliminally influenced. Immediately afterwards, I made an atypical, unprecedented misjudgement while driving, which caused a serious wreck and exacerbated my pre-existing head injury. I believe this was an attempted hit, because I almost suffered a similar accident one week prior. When I confronted my therapist over the neurofeedback-induced car crash, her work with the Russians, her relationship with local cult members, and her pedophile father, she became enraged, personally attacked and blamed me, and terminated therapy.

HYPNOSIS

On 21 November 2011, UK Channel 4 aired a program called *Derren Brown – The Assassin* featuring celebrity Stephen Fry. Hypnotist Derren Brown demonstrated that a person can be influenced under hypnosis to do that which they normally would not then forget the behaviour afterwards. Brown successfully hypnotised a person, programmed him to fire a gun more accurately under hypnosis, instructed him to shoot Stephen Fry upon spying a visual trigger, and to completely forget the incident afterwards.

Beware of hypnosis, particularly if you are at the start of your healing journey, or if you completely dissociate and lose all memory during therapy. A dirty doctor could do anything to you under hypnosis and you would not recall it. Because unethical hypnosis was used to abuse victims, the mere employment of hypnotherapy is triggering. Further, the victim was hypnotically programmed with hundreds of access codes, so unless the therapist knows those codes, or how to avoid their effects, they could trigger a programmed instruction for the victim to attack the therapist or themselves.

NLP (Neuro-Linguistic Programming)

> *NLP is a way of 're-patterning' the human brain to turn us into super-beings – confident, non-phobic, thin super-beings who can sell coals to Newcastle and know what people are thinking just by their eye movements. It is the theory that we are computers and can be reprogrammed as easily as computers can. You were abused as a child? That makes you a badly programmed computer who needs a spot of instant reprogramming. Forget therapy: just turn off the bit of the brain that remembers the abuse…*
>
> *I first heard of Bandler in 2002, when a former US special forces soldier told me he'd watched him, two decades earlier, bring a tiny girl into special forces and reprogram her in seconds to be a world-class sniper…*
>
> *If you hear voices in your head, [Bandler] says, tell the voices to shut the fuck up. 'If you suffered childhood abuse, don't go back and relive it in your mind. Once is enough!' He says psychotherapy is nonsense and a racket: therapists are rewarded for failure. The longer a problem lasts, the more the therapist is paid. Who cares about the roots of the trauma? 'Don't think about bad things!' Bandler says. 'There's a machine inside your brain that gets rid of shit that doesn't need to be there. Use it! I can give myself amnesia. I can just forget.' He clicks his fingers. 'Just like that.'* [484]

NLP is a subtle form of hypnosis that subconsciously influences victim behaviour. NLP is primarily based on the work of MK-UKTRA hypnotherapist Milton Erickson and psychotherapist Fritz Perls. It was founded in the 1970s by Capt. John Grinder (US Special Forces and Intelligence) and student Richard Bandler at the University of California in Santa Cruz under the supervision of MK-ULTRA anthropologist and linguist Gregory Bateson. In November 1986, Bandler stood trial for the shooting of prostitute Corine Christensen after he left the scene of her murder. Despite overwhelming forensic evidence that he shot Corine, Bandler used NLP techniques to sway the jury who later cried in regret for letting a killer escape.

NLP is aimed at activating the right hemisphere's implicit visual and emotional systems and deactivating left brain logic. NLP is used by cult and trafficking network members to gain a victim's trust, with the goal of manipulating or framing the target. NLP perpetrators employs the following tactics:

- *Glean Information:* Observe target's visual and auditory clues (eye movement, pupil dilation, winks) to determine the target's brain hemispheric processing preference, method of brain processing and memory storage, preferred sensory system arousal, and honesty. For instance, looking up indicates visual memory retrieval.

---

[484] Jon Ronson (2006). Don't Worry, Get Therapy. *The Guardian*, 20 May.

- *Establish Rapport:* Mirror victim's body language and speech to make them drop their guard and become suggestible.
- Use language that encourages visual imagery, to activate the right brain hemisphere which unquestioningly accepts suggestion. ('Can you see…' or 'Look at…')
- *Elicit* emotion in the target's right hemisphere by leading, language, and having the target visualise the perpetrators desired result.
- *Anchor* a suggestion in the target's mind by using physical cues (e.g., touching the target's shoulder).
- Use vague language to induce a hypnotic trance.
- Use permissive language. ('Feel free to...')
- Use gibberish to confuse the target and make them accept a lucid suggestion.

CIA DENIAL APPROACHES

Anthony 'Tony' Robbins popularised NLP which, he claims, has helped 'people with multiple personalities.'[485] This is concerning since investigative journalists recently exposed Tony Robbins' sexual misconduct and his abuse of vulnerable victims. At his conferences, Robbins employs mind control techniques including sleep deprivation, and he publicly berates victims of physical and sexual abuse who disclose in front of large crowds. Robbins said of a rape victim, 'She's fucking using all this stuff to try and control men.' Robbins negated the existence of abuse by attacking the notion of being a victim. He stated at a 2018 conference, '…victimhood is now rewarded in our culture. . . it's now leverage. Someone can now come and make claims about anybody…' Tony Robbins uses denial to blame victims for reacting normally to their trauma. Denial of sex abuse is a perpetrator trademark.

Not buying into the 'victimization narrative' was a dialogue feature of NLP practitioner Keith Raniere whose NXIVM cofounder was personally trained in NLP by Bandler. In his *Twelve-point Mission Statement* for the NXIVM sex trafficking operation, Raniere wrote: 'There are no ultimate victims; Therefore, I will not choose to be a victim.'

Child abuse denial is the CIA's trademark

USELESS PHYSICIANS

Therapists who possess no relevant knowledge, skills or experience with ritual abuse and mind control, are at a treatment loss when victims like me enter their practise. Few therapists are willing to adjust their usual practise protocol to research an entirely new area of expertise just to accommodate one client's unorthodox treatment needs. They are busy, and their time costs.

Ethical practitioners who do possess the capacity to work with victims of organised trafficking undoubtedly come under perpetrator surveillance. That is how child trafficking remains secret. Those who help victims typically find themselves professionally and personally threatened. If the therapist works under the umbrella of an organisation, that organisation tends to stop the therapist's efforts. If the therapist runs their own business, that business is usually targeted until the therapist is forced to choose between their livelihood and loyalty to the client.

---

[485] Tony Robbins (1991). *Awakening the Giant Within,* Simon & Schuster, 22.

Therapists are paid to care. No psychologist ever told me their initial reason for entering the industry was to help others. The majority were attracted due to their own unresolved personal issues. A portion were lured to the earning potential of a psychologist, or the travel opportunities it affords. I studied with a student whose goal was to work in New York and enjoy shopping on 5th Avenue. Some are motivated by their passion for research and a desire for social recognition. Many demonstrate unmanaged autism, which would explain why clients are treated robotically and without empathy. An alarming number of therapists seek sexual access to the vulnerable. A student I studied with said when she worked as an administrator for the NSW Psychology registration board in the 1980s, the main complaint she received everyday concerned psychologists taking sexual advantage of their clients. She added that she was raped by a University of Sydney psychology lecturer.

Psychiatrists and psychologists are trained to listen, feign empathy, and say little during sessions. Clients mistake this silence for intelligence or understanding. Like the proverb says, ‘Even a fool seems wise if he shuts his mouth.’ Therapists follow a clinical script which they began learning from day one of their training. At university, we were made to prepare and memorise such scripts. Our Counselling Psychology lecturer said empathy can be scripted, learnt, faked until achieved. That approach does not work with victims of ritual abuse and mind control, because their visual-spatial processing capacity enables them to read micro facial expressions and detect feigned empathy. Victims dismiss fake therapists as untrustworthy and plain stupid.

Many clients do not know the difference between psychiatrists and psychologists. Psychologists have a more varied repertoire of therapy interventions compared to doctors. At a minimum, psychologists have studied four years of psychology theory followed by two years of supervised clinical training acquired either through a university master program, or under the supervision of a community practitioner. Master program training is standardised and thus superior. But do not be impressed by a PhD, as this only demonstrates someone can complete a PhD. Most academics are arrogant, left-brain dominant, and cognitively inflexible.

Psychiatrists study medicine and are essentially drug pushers who attribute most mental health conditions to a biochemical imbalance. Most psychological issues stem from childhood trauma. Psychiatric facilities would quickly empty if doctors adopted a trauma-focused treatment approach. Psychiatrists religiously consult their diagnostic bible, the DSM (*Diagnostic and Statistical Manual for Mental Disorders*), a scientifically invalid collection of opinions. Basically, a group of men on the CIA payroll met and reached a consensus regarding what constitutes mental illness. The DSM has been used to silence victims ever since. Most mental health patients are typically forced into one or more DSM categories. My university psychology class were pressured to squeeze clients into at least one DSM category. If we did not do this, the case reports in our clinical folios had to be edited and resubmitted until we complied

Medical schools instil an inflated sense of self-importance. The University of NSW repeatedly told their medical students, ‘You are the chosen ones.’ How amusing, considering the average IQ of a medical doctor is 120 and the exceptionality they refer to starts at least two standard deviations above that. Egotistic therapists can’t work with victims of ritual abuse and mind control. In fact, they make the worst therapists in general. Pride and ego will always interfere with the therapist’s objectivity and motivation. Unfortunately, the mental health industry is full of egotists indoctrinated with an *us-and-them* mentality.

If a therapist is not altruistically motivated to be concerned for victims, when the client’s condition becomes critical, and the therapist is forced to choose between them and their café lifestyle, registration, reputation, research, business, overseas holidays, long weekends, interstate conference with all-inclusive wine tour, private school fees, regular restaurant dining, latest Tinder date, intellectual pursuits, social recognition, or personal safety – they will not choose the client. Most therapists will sell out and suddenly change a client's diagnosis to 'mentally ill' the moment the client exposes their professional inadequacy, insincerity, incompetence, and unwillingness to deviate from their 'money for old rope' routine.

If a victim bonds with one of these secular professionals for the purpose of processing extreme abuse, they risk being prematurely abandoned at a most crucial time. It is safer not to commence the recovery process at all, rather than die halfway through. And do not think the therapist will take responsibility for their part in the victim's downfall. They will justify their abandonment according to their code of therapeutic engagement and management, and ultimately blame the victim for their poor choices. The client was after all, just another personality disordered nut, and they have a filing cabinet full of those to fill the void. All mental health workers reserve their perceived right to hide behind a façade of professionalism. Arrogant or not, they will in times of stress, fear, or ignorance, revert to this default setting. Every psychologist and psychiatrist I have ever consulted fits this behavioural pattern. Here is an example:

I once thought I had found the perfect psychiatrist. This woman claimed to be a Christian, EMDR trained, and highly experienced at working with ritual abuse and mind control. The psychiatrist made a time to see me at short notice. By the time of my appointment, she had watched my Candy Girl documentary plus my Seattle conference presentation. I was impressed. The doctor bulkbilled my session to Medicare, listened intently to me, offered sound advice, prescribed a novel medication that I found beneficial, and agreed to be available if and when I ever needed a medico-legal report. Perfect… or so I thought.

I remained in light contact with the psychiatrist, sent her the odd text or email. The day came when I needed a medico-legal report. It had been 18 months since my initial consultation with the psychiatrist, when I confidently requested an appointment and a report. I was surprised by her email response:

I have only been able to do … supportive reports as appropriate for patients that I am treating.
I would have thought your psychologist, GP and neurologist reports are credible ...
I have not done a psychiatric assessment of you ... but supportive meeting x2 years ago...
I remember you telling me you are not dissociative... and whilst I accept the veracity of your statement, I have not seen anyone in clinical practice who has experienced severe CSA from preschool age and primary school age who had not had severe dissociation ... even DID... as an adaptive response to deal with the intolerable ...
Complex PTSD does in my clinical view involve dissociation...
I also have some concern that being interstate makes my clinical opinion potentially vulnerable ... I have had to battle in court in the past against a senior colleague who accused me of having 'a major confirmatory bias'... whilst the court outcome was successful for the victim, I was able to challenge as my assessment was detailed and there was medical and protective co-oberation.
It would seem that your residual struggles impacting on your functioning are neurological and somatic predominately ...
I am involved in current medico legal cases in which I have to be so meticulous....
I would have thought you would have had more than enough from what you have gathered already.

'So, she called you a fraud, Fiona?!' my psychologist exclaimed.
'Well, she didn't exactly say that-…'

'Yes, she basically did,' he insisted.

I sighed and nodded reluctantly. 'She might as well have called me a liar.'

'Did she bill you to Medicare?'

'Yes, and I provided her with a GP's referral.'

'And you have prescription medicine with her name on it?'

'Yup.'

'Then she fucking treated you, Fiona!'

'She's a blatant liar. I never told her I wasn't dissociative. I said I'm co-conscious during dissociation, and that my alter switches are seamless due to the sophisticated techniques and equipment used. She watched the Seattle conference video in which I talked all about that, and about the exact nature of my dissociation and integration.'

'Why did she do this?'

'I don't know. Threatened, I guess.'

'She might have been a setup. Or she's going to set you up, Fiona.'

'After everything I've done for victims all these years, at great personal risk, I ask for one thing, just *one* report – but no.'

'You've done enough. Time to stop saving the world.'

'Oh, trust me – I'm nearly cured of *that*.'

He laughed.

I sighed. 'So, can you recommend a new psychiatrist?'

'Err, no.'

'Huh?'

'I don't think any of them will want to get involved.'

'Why not?'

'Because you're Fiona Barnett.'

* * *

Alternatively, victims can line up at one of the community-based counselling services affiliated with the church denominations currently under the Royal Commission investigation for covering up child abuse. Non-government organisations dedicated solely to child abuse counselling are poorly staffed and are typically infiltrated with perpetrators. Child actor Sarah Monahan documented how Bravehearts tried to sabotage her lawsuit against the actor who sexually abused her on-set of the *Hey Dad* TV show. Paul Wilson's wife was on the Bravehearts advisory board. Following her husband's pedophile conviction, Bravehearts replaced her with the Bond University lecturer / Queensland Police detective who lied to destroy my psychology career.

Complex trauma resulting from severe child abuse requires years of therapy. During critical recovery times, multiple weekly sessions need to be interspersed with a residential care facility staffed by experts with specialist training. Unfortunately, no such thing exists in Australia. During the late 1980s and '90s, a standard therapy session lasted 60 minutes. The victim of severe child abuse could expect to attend two sessions per week. At university, I was taught that the APS recommended 1.5-hour sessions for highly traumatised victims to ensure they did not leave therapy in a hyper-aroused state. However, income greedy modern practitioners only offer one 50-minute therapy session per week. In accordance with industry guidelines, they deduct 10 minutes per hour for writing case notes and reports. Fifty minutes per week is ridiculously insufficient for victims of extreme child abuse to process their experiences.

Experienced psychologists may charge around $330 per session. Inexperienced or unskilled psychologists are usually desperate for clientele and therefore more willing to be paid $130 per hour to counsel victims of crime. Psychology receives scarce funding from the Australian government. Presently, Medicare will cover about six therapy sessions, which is just enough therapy to trigger a victim to suicide. Psychiatry is completely funded via Medicare and therefore more accessible to victims who have been too busy surviving to earn high incomes.

The moment you engage a therapist under a government scheme like Medicare, your personal information is recorded in a powerful system that may come back to bite you. Your case notes can be subpoenaed, and your diagnoses used against you in educational, professional, and legal settings. Therapists often operate within clinical teams, attend supervision, and debrief with peers, friends or relatives. In this way, therapists may unwittingly disclose your identity and whereabouts to your perpetrators. If your therapist knowingly reports to the network, they may use their position and connections to set you up for false internment in prison or hospital where victims are silenced. As a precaution, engage a counsellor who ranks low on the mental health power hierarchy, use a pseudonym, and pay in cash.

* * *

APS MK-ULTRA PERPETRATORS

The following heads of the APS (Australian Psychological Society) are known MK-ULTRA perpetrators:

ABBPS Chairpersons

1955-1956	Oscar Adolph Oeser
1957-1958	Cecil A. Gibb (Fort Street High School, University of Sydney)
1958-1959	Donald W. McElwain
1959-1960	Alfred Gordon Hammer
1962-1963	Ronald Taft

APS Presidents

1977-1978	Peter Sheehan
1984-1985	Ian K. Waterhouse
1993-1994	Kevin M. McConkey
2008-2010	Bob Montgomery (convicted child rapist)

* * *

‘Fiona,’ my therapist implored. ‘I read Gavan Palk’s reference. That’s the most amazing reference I’ve ever read.’

‘I know. I was so good at what I did. I just wanted to work with gifted kids. . .’

‘Fiona, would you like me to help you get your registration back?’

I closed my teary eyes and shook my head.

‘I mean later, when you’re ready?’

‘It’s too late,’ I lamented. ‘The damage is done. Honestly, if AHPRA turned around right now and offered me my rego - I’d tell them to go fuck themselves.’

‘Really?’

‘My passion for psychology is dead.’

*	*	*

Trauma-Focussed Integration

I shifted restlessly on the lounge which was grubby from a thousand clients' sweat and tears. I reluctantly began to speak, 'I was swimming laps yesterday. I got to my eighth lap and felt a sense of relaxation come over me, like I was finally cognitively digesting last week's session. Then I heard an inaudible voice say, 'It's okay. I'll take care of this.' Initially, I thought it might be a God thing because it felt similar – but that wasn't God. I said out aloud, "Who the fuck are *you*?"'

'Who was it?'

'An alter.'

'Do you want to talk with her?'

My eyes widened. 'No!'

'Why not?'

'I'm scared of her.'

'Oh, so you know who she is?'

'A name came to mind. Sascha.'

'Who's Sascha?'

'A scary Amazonian warrior. She's fierce.'

'Okay, so let's chat with her.'

I glared at him with trepidation.

'Of *course,* you want to do this!' My therapist positioned himself near me, placed a cushion on my lap, and motioned for me to rest my hands on it. 'So, I just want you to set up a meeting and have a chat.'

'Let's just get one thing straight: I am not going to let her into my mind and experience this from her perspective, coz that will end in one of two ways: either she seduces you - or beats you up.'

'Well, if those are my two choices, I suppose I choose seduction.'

I smiled. 'Yeah, well she did take out a therapist once when I was young.'

He began tapping my hands. I reluctantly cooperated. I began picturing a meeting room in my mind. It was a basement in Holsworthy, where Gittinger first assessed me. I saw pale grey concrete walls, a wooden table and two chairs. Sascha sat opposite me, dressed in Army uniform. She was seven-foot tall with auburn hair that fell past her shoulders in wavy layers. Her muscular arms were crossed in front of her chest.

I awkwardly began, *So, err, hi.*

The tapping stopped. 'What's going on?' my therapist asked.

I described the scene. 'I really don't want to talk with her. She's just one of those angry aggressive lesbian types that I don't gravitate toward.'

'Oh, so that's what this is about. She's gay and you feel uncomfortable with that.'

'Well, yeah. Amazonian warrior princess alters are man-hating lesbians. That's what the cult women are. The cult women are gay or bisexual. The only reason they get married is to fulfil their duty to breed Illuminati children. They tried to condition or train me to be the same. But I'm not.'

'So, you have an issue with her being gay.'

'Err, I also have an issue with a few other things – like her *killing people*!'

'Right.'

'She killed Jason!'

Psycho
Sascha
7 ft angry
Assassin

‘So, you didn’t do that. Sascha did.’

‘Of course, it wasn’t me! I had no bloody say in it! I didn’t even have time to think before she just took over, walked up to him - and snapped his neck!’

‘Okay, so I want you to talk to her. See what she has to say about this.’

I closed my eyes again while he resumed tapping my hands. I was back in the Holsworthy room, sitting opposite the angry lesbian. *So*, I tried again, *As you can see, we need to talk-* . . . Sascha leapt from her chair, grabbed me by the throat, and slammed me hard up against the wall.

The tapping stopped. ‘What’s happening?’

Me: ‘Well, I am dangling in the air with her fingers around my throat. You might want to tap a little longer next time.’

Tap-tap-tap . . .

Stand . . . down . . . Soldier . . . I managed.

She dropped me.

Now, I continued, *I am your commanding officer and you will do as I say. Sit down*.

She returned to her chair.

You are part of a unit. Right now, the unit is going in one direction, working toward a common objective, but you are doing your own thing, going the opposite way. You are causing chaos and jeopardising the entire team. It's not okay to just eat meat and drink beer. Some others in the unit want to eat fruit and veggies. And you can't go about swearing all the time – my mother and Jon are giving me grief over that. And lay off Jon! He's the one who supports the unit. He buys your beer!

The tapping ceased. 'What's happening,' my therapist asked again.

I relayed what just occurred.

He said, 'You're doing all the talking. We want to hear from her. I'm sure she has something to say.'

Tap-tap-tap . . .

I returned to the room. *You must talk*. *I am ordering you to talk.*

She scowled at me with contempt and spoke: *You think I'm stupid*.

'What did she say?' my therapist asked.

'She said, "You think I'm stupid!"'

'*Ohhh*, so you think she's stupid.'

'Well,' I stumbled, 'I think she's . . . all action.'

'So, you think she's stupid. Well, isn't that nice. That must make her feel really accepted.'

Tap-tap-tap . . .

Look, I began sheepishly, *I appreciate everything you've done. You've been out front this whole time, defending us all. You did all the hard work – and, you did it well. But now it's time for you to find something new to do instead of . . . killing people. You seem to like swimming. That Dagon training incident is obviously your thing, so maybe you can take care of the laps?*

She began to cry.

'What's happening?' my therapist asked.

'I made her cry.'

Tap-tap-tap . . .

There's more to you, I puzzled. I stretched to see what was behind Sascha. *There must be more of you.* Suddenly - the scene changed. I was in the Holsworthy underground. The rough walls were carved out of rock. A small girl sat on the ground before me. She looked no more than eight years old. Her auburn curls sat in layers. She was sobbing aloud. Her tears drew clean lines down her filthy face. A gun was slung over her shoulder.

'Why don't you approach her?' my therapist asked.

'Because she's holding an AK-forty-seven!'

'Talk to her. Find out what's going on.'

Suddenly, I was viewing things from the child's perspective, behind a cocked gun. It was like being in a computer shooting game as I kicked open a row of cell doors and mowed down the occupants. Then - I was back in front of the sobbing child, her clothes splattered in blood. I crouched down in front of her and examined her face. Her eyes faded to blue and I recognised myself.

She snatched the gun and pointed it at my eyes: *Back up!* she warned between clenched teeth, *Or I'll blow your fucking head off!*

I tilted my head to one side, smiled with pity, prised the gun from her little hands, scooped her tiny frame into my arms and hugged her close. Her entire body began to convulse against my chest. *It's okay*, I assured her. *I'm so sorry.* I began stroking her hair which fell off in a clump, revealing long, straight blonde hair. It was just a wig. They dressed me in a wig to create another alter who assumed responsibility for the killings.

‘She’s just a little kid,’ I gasped.

‘Yep, she’s just a kid,’ my therapist echoed.

I returned to the meeting room where Sascha had sat. Instead of the angry warrior, I saw a petite teenage girl dressed in khaki, staring shamefully at the floor. She sighed in resignation as she pulled off her auburn wig to reveal long straight blonde hair.

‘They’re just children,’ I shook my head. ‘Both are children. They’re minors.’

‘Yes, they are. It wasn’t their fault.’

‘What?!’ The words felt like a burning sword piercing my being.

‘It’s not your fault.’

I dropped my head into the couch and wept…

‘Come on,’ my therapist almost whispered as he gently placed my limp hands back on the cushion. He tapped as I cried and cried from some unfathomable place.

‘I want my mummy,’ I finally uttered. Just then I remembered Anne Conlon approaching to console me - but pushed the mental image away in disgust.

Eventually I settled, wiped my blurry eyes, and spoke. ‘My daughter made me do a personality test.’

He laughed. ‘Which one.’

‘I don’t know, some vocational test. She’s doing an intro psych unit and the lecturer has the class playing around with personality tests. She hassled me until I agreed to do it. She reckoned it was accurate. So, I did it. I couldn’t believe it. It was spot on. It perfectly described what I’m like in relationships, what I was like at work and uni. It explained how I can extract conversation out of anyone, and how that enables me to identify people’s strengths and delegate work tasks to them. Guess what profession it matched me to?’

‘What?’

‘Psychologist.’

We laughed.

‘And the other career choices were interests that I’ve already sort of pursued, like teaching, writing, journalism, and acting. It identified that I get bored easily and need jobs that are forever changing and allow me to be autonomous and creative. It also described me as the most friendly and caring personality type. . . I’m not a bad person.’

‘Who said you were a bad person?’

‘Oh, Bond and . . . all the other pedos.’

‘Well of course they’d say that - that’s what perpetrators do.’

‘I don’t help people because I was abused and now suffer *Save-the-world Syndrome*. I help people because that is a feature of my core personality. The test identified my core personality that exists apart from my child abuse. I am *more* than my abuse.’

His mouth gaped open at my pivotal realisation.

‘Wow.’ He sighed. ‘Let’s sit with that. You are more than your abuse.’

‘I am not solely defined by my child abuse. That test showed me I have a personality beneath the PTSD. I have a good, healthy personality that has *nothing* to do with my abuse.’

* * *

"Sascha"
HOLSWORTHY CAVERN FLOOR

14

AUSTRALIA'S THERAPEUTIC WASTELAND

I processed the first half of my abuse, primarily incest and ritual abuse experiences, during the early 1990s. My last drawings of that memory retrieval phase showed my being spun in an egg-like contraption in a CIA lab beneath ANSTO. I showed the drawings to my mother who asserted, 'That's enough now. You don't need to remember anymore.'

So, I stopped.

Stopping the memories was probably a good decision since I had insufficient therapeutic support at the time. Although I had seen psychiatrists since my sixteenth birthday, they caused more harm than good. The first committed suicide. The second failed his final psychiatry examination six times. The third dismissed my PTSD flashbacks of ritual abuse as a 'metaphor for incest,' and his nursing staff mocked me as I lay in a foetal position beneath my hospital bed, screaming at vivid images of babies being murdered. I defiantly poked my 20-year-old finger at the useless physician's face and asserted that while I may not have understood my memories, I refused to deny them. I also refused to numb myself with their vile drugs.

I was on my own. I had no way of understanding what I was experiencing. Australia offered no experts, no books, and the internet had not been invented. So, I implemented the only thing my state school education taught me – how to teach myself. I set about researching my condition.

After completing art college, I fell into post graduate studies in art therapy. That course contained an introductory unit of psychology. The study of psychology seemed more scientific than drawing Jungian mandalas, so I transferred to that. Psychology, followed by motherhood, led me to my ultimate passion – gifted education. The combination of academic knowledge of psychology, art psychotherapy, and gifted education, formed the foundation of my escape from the matrix. I also fell into supporting victims of ritual abuse and mind control, where I discovered how to bypass the conscious mind and access implicit memories using drawing.

Finally, 25 years after my first flashback, I possessed the knowledge, skill, and fortitude to finish the task. I found therapists capable of executing my design. But don't mistake this for some kind of happy ending. None of these practitioners wanted me on their books. Like most Australian therapists, they were clueless about ritual abuse and mind control. Yet this time round, I refused to let therapist inadequacy interfere with my goal. I planned every step of my integration process and hammered my therapists to help implement my plan. Eventually, my 35-year marathon paid off. I remembered what was done to me and why, which smashed the programming and facilitated integration.

WHY INTEGRATE?

Research indicates there are benefits to integration. One study found, 'Patients with dissociative disorder who integrated their dissociated self-states were found to have reduced symptomatology compared with those who did not integrate.' [486]

I was relatively high functioning immediately prior to integrating. I'm not saying I was perfectly healthy, but I was certainly as stable as 99 percent of the mental health workers I have ever met. Victims like me often present as high functioning, which is why victims are over-represented in the helping professions. Victims can compartmentalise their lives into roles (which is the only benefit of forced dissociation). For example, prior to my stroke, I coped easily with doing two master level degrees at once. I could totally immerse myself in academic study from dawn to midnight and block out all else. I felt most relaxed when writing research papers about complex issues - in a state of *Csikszentmihalyi's* 'flow.' Victims like me feel comfortable and function optimally under extreme stress. We perform amazingly under pressure in hospital emergency rooms and under cross examination in the court room. We are the type you want in a life-threatening situation like a terror attack. But don't ask us to stand in aisle six and decide which brand of tea to purchase. Soldiers with PTSD do the same, perform brilliantly in the field yet fail to cope with simple decisions at home. Someone has to take that slack.

---

[486] B. Brand, C. Classen, S. McNary, & P. Zaveri (2009). A Review of Dissociative Disorders Treatment Studies. *The Journal of nervous and mental disease*. 197. 646-54.

Before integration, I was impossibly demanding and stressful to live with. My children were vicariously traumatised to the point where they needed therapy themselves. My family felt responsible for fixing a situation only integration could alleviate. My husband's health was adversely affected by his constantly trying to placate me and juggle my mood swings. Our family safety was compromised by the vulnerability dissociation brings because a dissociative victim is accessible. Perpetrators trigger victims to keep the programming active, force the victim into error as part of a set-up, or access and instruct them under hypnosis.

When a victim is triggered by something that reminds them of the past, their right brain hemisphere is activated and reacts as if the trauma incident were presently occurring. They may feel angry, afraid, dizzy, and or nauseous, for example. Because their left brain is deactivated during a trigger, they do not know they are reliving a childhood trauma. Instead, they think they are emotionally reacting to something that is happening now. The left brain mistakes this right brain emotional perception as new stimuli related to the current surroundings and sets about doing its job of sequencing and ascribing context. It pins the blame on someone or thing in the victim's immediate environment. I typically blamed my husband and kids.

Trauma-Based Forced Dissociation damages the frontal lobes and splits these areas from the remaining brain. The frontal lobes conduct the brain, like someone conducts an orchestra. Frontal lobe executive dysfunction impairs the victim's ability to plan, organise, concentrate, remember, multi-task, make decisions, control emotions, put the brakes on inappropriate behaviour, and find the motivation to start a job task. The result is chaos, like when every instrument in an orchestra plays a different tune. When someone is not integrated, the burden of their chaotic mind falls onto others, mainly family. It takes a team of mental health workers, plus many thousands of dollars, to manage a dissociative client's daily life. The workload and associated costs are severely reduced by integration.

I integrated because I hate pain. I could not stand the physical pain caused by dissociation. I could not stand that sickly, confused sense of dread that consumed my being at Halloween and other significant ritual dates. I was tired of unconscious trauma memories manifesting as depression, anxiety, terror, anger, hypervigilance, nightmares, and inexplicable mood swings. I was tired of losing control of my emotions and will. My entire life was one big trauma response. Prior to integration, every decision I made was informed by my trauma experiences.

Sleep disturbance is another reason to integrate. Prior to dealing with my issues I suffered dreadful sleep disturbances. In my youth I awoke from nightmares, screaming. I had trouble falling and staying asleep. A clue to the relevance of consistent sleep is found in the following extract:

> *A study was carried out at Stanford University some years ago concerning the nature of brainwashing… Not interruption of sleep but lack of dreaming was important. Theories now suggest that what we experience during the day is processed through dreams at night; when this continuity is broken, we lose our psychological equilibrium and controls.*[487]

Sleep is essential for processing. Victims are typically programmed not to sleep, to stop them processing, remembering and integrating. I slept soundly for the first time in my life, after processing my ritual abuse memories in my early 20s.

CONVERTED

I spent two years trying to convince my DID friend to integrate, and all I got in return was constant resistance and arguments. Then, one day, she announced she was pursuing integration. When I asked why, she said the same thing I had been saying:

You feel all the pain and negative emotions associated with the torture and trauma anyhow, in a constant loop, so you may as well just face the fear, process the memory, and break the loop. That way, you have one less set of painful memories impacting your daily life. And with each integration, you begin to stabilise more and more.

INTEGRATION IS NO CURE-ALL

I had hoped integration would completely cure my PTSD. It didn't. Complex PTSD may be a permanent, developmental condition. The standard treatment for PTSD involves convincing the client that although they were unsafe during the original trauma, they are safe now. The problem is, the victim must remove herself from the source of trauma in order to heal. In the case of victims of ritual abuse and mind control, the abuse is ongoing thanks to perpetual harassment from the trafficking network. Thus, my fellow victims and I have *never* had the chance to completely recover.

Another limitation is that the brain only has so much plasticity when it comes to reversing personality changes forcibly created during development. It is like sending a young child to ballet to straighten out her twisted knees. The resultant changes stick for life. Similarly, I can't easily switch back to the introvert I was until age three years.

While a victim's brain can't be completely restored as though it were never tampered with, successful integration achieves remarkable clarity of mind and dramatic symptom reduction, making it a worthwhile goal. Integration completely removed many symptoms of forced dissociation, and dramatically reduced the intensity and duration of my PTSD symptomology. The difference between dissociation and integration is like comparing a nightmare with dawn.

INTEGRATE WHILE YOUNG

I tried to fully integrate in the early 1990s but lacked the therapeutic support to do so. Consequently, I had to wait another 25 years to finish the process. I found integration extra physically and mentally gruelling due to my older age. Young people bounce back more easily. With integration I began noticing the physical pain my body had always been in, particularly the nerve damage years of electrocution caused. My integration correlated with a sharp decline in my neurological health including memory and concentration. I think it caused brain damage. So, I recovered mentally just in time to begin my physical decline into old age.

---

[487] John Collier & Malcolm Collier (1986). *Visual Anthropology: Photography as a Research Method*. University of New Mexico, 121.

I integrated too late to do something constructive with my life. I am now too old and disabled to work, to start all over again in some career. Had I integrated 30 years ago I might have been able to establish myself in a chosen profession unheeded by susceptibility to triggers. Most importantly, I woke from my dissociative slumber to realise my kids were grown, and that I had not been psychologically (or sometimes physically) present for them. I longed to experience motherhood all over again with an in-tact mind.

These are the reasons I recommend victims pursue integration in their youth.

RECIPE FOR THERAPY SUCCESS

I will now explain what worked for me and why. I will offer my approach to the forced dissociation typically encountered within ritual abuse and MK-ULTRA mind control. I am not presenting my experience as a set formula for fixing this type of abuse. Like I said, no two cases are identical. Each victim's abuse is individually tailored to their unique combination of personality, environmental, and other variables. Individual subject characteristics, the quality of technology used, plus perpetrator skill, shape how abuse manifests in a victim's therapy and daily life. For example, my perpetrators were the MK-ULTRA pioneers and used military grade equipment. When I was spun (as all victims are) it was on sophisticated equipment instead of a home-made spit roast set-up. A further example of difference is, I received a Grande Dame version of the Princess programming other victims report experiencing. These differences likely contributed to why:

1. My personality switches were comparatively seamless and manifested as mood swings, instead of blatant *Sybil* style switching.
2. I was co-conscious during therapy, while most victims remain dissociative and typically emerge from a session oblivious to what just occurred.
3. I have never heard voices, when most of the DID survivors I know do so.

I tested highly intuitive, creative and intelligent. This may explain how I designed and drove my own therapy process in the required direction. I trusted that my implicit memory knew where to go, based on its intimate knowledge of what Gittinger did to me. Further, I had experienced therapy both as a client and a practitioner, which armed me with understanding of how people's brains typically respond to therapy, how trauma memories behave, and how productive therapy feels.

Another factor to consider is, my experience of ritual abuse and mind control is the most extreme example imaginable, incorporating the entire menu of child abuse possibilities. Therefore, my integration was destined to be unusually complicated, intense, and dangerous. So, to reiterate – do not use my experience as a blueprint for recovery.

MY AIM

The purpose of this chapter, and the entire book, is to validate victim's memories and trigger new ones. For therapists, I provide clues regarding what happened to their clients, and suggestions for guiding victims on the healing path. The most important thing therapists say I provide them is an understanding of the programming and the roles played by dissociative parts. Therapists say I have helped them to: realise what questions to ask of clients; gain the trust of dissociated parts; relieve the guilt and shame felt by parts; convey belief and validation of client experience; relieve repressed emotion; and make sense of the trauma experience.

My primary aim is to provide victims with a sense of hope in the face of impossible adversity. My message is this: If I can do it, if I can survive the ultimate abuse experience, so can you. There is a way out of your unique programming matrix, and with persistence and trust in your Right Hemisphere, your implicit brain will lead the way.

DEFINITIONS

Understanding begins with appropriate language usage. Psychology and psychiatry are saturated with language and labels that simply do not explain or match my abuse experiences. Consequently, I have adapted or created my own relevant terms.

1. Trauma-Based Forced Dissociation is a term I created to describe when a victim is intentionally traumatised, using refined techniques, to artificially induce the brain's natural ability to dissociate. To explain, the brain is created with a defence system that kicks in when overwhelmed by sensory input. Consequently, when someone goes through the windscreen during a car crash, they might recall the moment prior to this, or perhaps the ambulance ride afterwards, but typically not the moment of impact. The brain naturally dissociates to protect the person from feeling overwhelmed by the trauma.

In 1991, psychiatrist John Briere conducted a study of post-traumatic dissociation in 450 male and female adults receiving therapy for child sexual abuse. On average, the abuse started at age 6.5 years, lasted 11 years, and involved two perpetrators. Near 60 percent of subjects experienced abuse-related amnesia before the age of 18 years. The study also showed the likelihood of memory repression increased with certain variables: abuse at an earlier age, longer duration, and greater violence (e.g., multiple perpetrators, physical injury, threat of death if victim disclosed).[488]

Dirty doctors, psychologists, and neuroscientists conducted unethical research experiments to understand this natural dissociation phenomenon. They discovered how sensory overload techniques (including spinning, torture, auditory and visual stimulation, and psychotropic drugs) coupled with unethical hypnosis, could induce dissociation on demand. The result of trauma-based forced dissociation is a compartmentalised brain. Each 'alter' sits isolated behind amnesia walls and possesses its own network of neural circuitry. Experts in personality and motivation then load each isolated brain section with an independent set of memories and personality characteristics. The abusers also intentionally create neural circuits which act as thought loop traps, so that instead of processing the abuse memories, the victim's mind gets stuck in unproductive thought cycles in the form of intellectualisation, or obsessive thoughts.

2. Integration is the retracing and unravelling of the forced dissociation process. Integration results when the victim's brain overwrites the unhealthy neural pathways that perpetrators created via unethical conditioning, and then rewrites those pathways with new knowledge. This process depends on neuroplasticity, the brain's ability to change. Belief in the brain's plasticity is what enables the victim to cut replacement neural pathways and so achieve integration.

---

[488] John Briere & John Conte (1993). Self-reported amnesia for abuse in adults molested as children. *J Trauma Stress*, 6:21.

To illustrate, I suffered a vestibular system stroke in 2009 which affected my vision and balance. Following the stroke, I could not balance on one leg, when immediately prior to my injury I attended a weekly acrobatics class in which I effortlessly performed front walkovers. Thinking my stroke was in the visual processing system, I embarked upon a relevant rehabilitation program. While this did restore a significant amount of functioning including improved balance, a vestibular rehabilitation program six years later was life changing. My rehabilitation therapists attributed my success to my belief in neuroplasticity, in the brain's ability to cut new neural pathways to bypass my stroke damage. They drew comparison to a physiotherapy student who failed the same therapy program simply because he did not believe it could work.

My point is, victims must have faith in the therapy process. They must believe their subconscious brain knows exactly what happened to them and will tell them what steps to take in order to heal. In fact, the victim's brain will usually know better than any therapist.

3. Trauma-Focussed Therapy identifies and processes the traumatic incidents that initially caused the dissociation. It treats the cause instead of the symptoms of dissociation. Nothing substantial results from topical therapy techniques that superficially manage anxiety and depression, or which focus on meeting every dissociative part. The MK-ULTRA perpetrators know this, which is why their modern therapy approaches designed to keep victims in a perpetual state of dissociation, helplessness, vulnerability, and dependence on a psychiatric system that has failed to heal since its inception 100 years ago.

4. Developmental Trauma Injury (DTI) is a term derived by James Shanahan to describe a permanent condition caused by chronic early childhood trauma. This condition has no name within mainstream psychiatry, notably the DSM. While it lacks a name, it therefore has no treatment and can be misattributed to other inappropriate and unhelpful labels. This problem is by design since psychiatry traditionally taught doctors that child abuse has zero harmful effects.

Two DSM labels that mainstream psychiatry and psychology use are DID (formerly MPD) and PTSD. These terms do not adequately capture the complexity of ritual abuse and mind control. Trauma has its greatest impact during a child's first decade and becomes more like PTSD with age. So, PTSD does not accurately describe the impact of childhood trauma on a developing brain. The terms *Complex Trauma* and *Complex PTSD* have been used by trauma-focussed therapists, but they too are developmentally insensitive and not listed in the DSM. Van Der Kolk[489] provided an argument for the inclusion of *Developmental Trauma Disorder* in the DSM-5; however, the word *'disorder'* beguiles the criminal nature of what was inflicted upon victims. I think *Developmental Trauma Injury* best describes the impact of early-onset child abuse on development.

NATURE OF TRAUMA-BASED DISSOCIATION

Treating mind control victims requires an understand of what the perpetrators did to cause the dissociation. Knowing removes the power that mystery has over the victim and transitions the victim from learned helplessness into feeling empowered to act. Conscious awareness is the key to rupturing and collapsing the programming, just like the final scene of *The Matrix* film.

---

[489] B. van der Kolk (2005). Developmental Trauma Disorder: Toward a rational diagnosis for children with complex trauma histories. *Psychiatric Annals*. 35, 401-8.

The MK-ULTRA mind control process is based on trauma. Trauma is employed at every step of the way. Trauma is used to: create the initial attachment violation; bond victims to their perpetrators; fragment the brain into multiple personalities; program or condition a victim; and enhance a victims' natural abilities. Since mind control is trauma based, it is essential for victims and therapists to understand how perpetrators manipulate the human body's natural trauma response, and treat victims using a trauma-focussed therapy approach. There is a known typical response to chronic trauma experienced during childhood. This response kicks in when a child is exposed to multiple occurrences of sexual, physical or psychological abuse, or neglect. This trauma response is what most leading psychologists and psychiatrists in the 1950s - 70s were CIA-funded to study and artificially induce within a laboratory setting. Considered in the context of ritual abuse and mind control, the trauma process reveals how and why CIA perpetrators manipulated it.

CIA-funded scientists mapped exactly which part of the brain does what. The public have not been granted access to this information. Instead, a general idea of perpetrator methods is obtained from examining and comparing: what mainstream therapists know about the effects of chronic childhood trauma; the relationship of this to the attachment process; the content of mainstream scientific research publications relevant to trauma and memory; and the wealth of knowledge stored in victims' implicit memory.

Victims typically know what was done to them and why. Gittinger stored this information somewhere in my brain, in preparation for my becoming a programmer. While I do not immediately recall this content, if I follow a *hunch* it invariably leads to a flood of recall.

RIGHT → LEFT → RIGHT hemispheric processing model

IMPLICIT TRAUMA MEMORY STORAGE

A RIGHT → LEFT → RIGHT model of hemispheric processing makes sense of how the brain processes trauma. The right hemisphere is emotional, intuitive, tactile, and visual-spatial. It receives new stimuli including sight, taste, smell, sound, touch, and body position. The right brain functions implicitly. Its implicit functions include attention, learning, thinking, and memory. It communicates non-verbally via facial expression and body language. The left hemisphere compares new information with known information. It sequences and categorises new based on previous experience, which stamps the experience with a time-date-place. The left brain applies simple language to a new experience so it may be discussed by the victim.

Different types of memory are supported by different brain systems. One major distinction exists between short and long-term memory. Long-term memory is further divided into two categories:

- ***Explicit memory*** is conscious, verbal, comparative, and stored in the left hemisphere.
- ***Implicit memory*** is non-conscious, non-verbal, and is stored in the right hemisphere. It include visual images, emotions, and body sensations.

The right brain unconsciously stores and responds to emotions, faces, gestures, places, smells, sounds, and touch that a victim experienced in childhood. Body sensations are unconsciously regulated by the autonomic nervous system (which controls heartbeat, blood flow, breathing, digestion, etc). Hence a direct link between implicit memories and body reactions.

Traumatic memories are not processed like ordinary ones. Trauma causes the explicit memory system to fail and the implicit memory system to activate instead. Trauma experiences enter the right hemisphere. They are not passed to the left hemisphere for processing. Consequently, trauma memories remain fragmented and stuck in the right hemisphere as unconscious pictures, emotions, and physical sensations. Trauma memories lack the left-brain sequencing that makes sense of experience, and the language application needed to verbally describe experience. This is how repressed trauma memories form, and how the body remembers what the conscious mind forgets.

The body remembers what the conscious mind forgets

Research indicates trauma and dissociation are localised in the implicit right brain. For instance, fMRI research shows mainly right hemispheric activation in PTSD patients during dissociation.[490] Further, flashbacks activate the right hemisphere and deactivate the left. Specifically, Brodmann's area 19 lights up in the right brain while Broca's area blacks out in the left.

Flashbacks simultaneously activate the right brain and deactivate the left

HIPPOCAMPAL BYPASS

The hippocampus is essential for certain forms of learning and memory. Autobiographical memories rely on hippocampal processing and storage of *what*, *where* and *when* life events occur. The hippocampus is associated with implicit memory, including relational memory for face-scene pairings, incidental learning, long-term memory retrieval, and rapid associative learning. Chronic trauma damages the hippocampus and causes difficulty with storing and recalling information. During a trauma event, the flood of sensory information short-circuits the hippocampus. Trauma memories, including emotions and visual images, bypass hippocampal processing and move directly to implicit memory where they stay undigested, perpetually stuck in the age at which the trauma happened.

Mainstream scientists recently developed a prosthetic hippocampus. When a brain receives sensory input, it creates a memory that travels through multiple areas of the hippocampus. The signal is re-encoded at each area until it reaches the final region as a completely different signal that is sent off for long-term storage. DARPA (US Defence Advanced Research Projects Agency) commissioned university and hospital scientists to create an artificial memory system that interfered with this encoding system.[491] Researchers identified a brain's neural firing patterns, synthesised a neural firing code from this, and used an electrode implant to communicate this code. They then bypassed a section of neural pathway in the hippocampus and used their implant to bridge this gap by relaying the implant's neural message, in the brain's own code.

---

[490] Lanius et al. (2005). Functional connectivity of dissociative responses in posttraumatic stress disorder: a functional magnetic resonance imaging investigation. *Biol Psychiatry*. Apr 15, 57:8, 873-84.

[491] Robert E Hampson et al (2018). Developing a hippocampal neural prosthetic to facilitate human memory encoding and recall. *J. Neural Eng,* 15.

Publications on this project have been vague and varied. Depending on what we read, the device reportedly bypasses the hippocampus, is a hippocampal implant, forms new long-term memories, creates short-term memories, creates implicit memories, reinforces learning, replaces memory, or improves memory. Whatever the description, DARPA, who are solely into weaponizing everything they fund, developed a brain implant that can be used to implant implicit conditioning (programming), repress memory, and create false memories. Declassified documents reveal the US military have long possessed science and technology that is decades in advance of mainstream publication. It is therefore plausible that MK-ULTRA perpetrators possessed the technology for manipulating the hippocampus back in the 1970s.

PAVLOVIAN FEAR CONDITIONING

The hippocampus plays a role in regulating the fear response. Hippocampal damage prevents the person *consciously remembering* they were conditioned to fear something - but does not affect the actual *fear conditioning* itself. Also, strong emotions including fear naturally bypass the hippocampus and prove hard to extinguish.

The fear response is an example of classical conditioning, a type of implicit memory which formed the basis of MK-ULTRA mind control. Pavlov (1927) paired a bell (conditioned stimulus) with a shock (unconditioned stimulus). This pairing triggered an aversive emotional state (fear) at the sound of the bell. The conditioned stimulus elicits an innate behavioural response, plus physiological responses controlled by the autonomic nervous system or the endocrine systems.

Classical conditioning develops and maintains PTSD. Orval Hobart Mowrer's (1960) *Two-Factor Learning Theory* incorporated classical and operant conditioning. The first factor is learning by association (classical conditioning). The second factor is instrumental learning (avoidance behaviour) which involves consistent avoidance of both the conditioned stimulus (bell) and the unconditioned stimulus (electrocution). This theory explains PTSD triggers. The fear generated by child abuse is associated with other cues (e.g., medical procedures) which are avoided by the victim.

At age 10 years, I was conditioned with the fear response as follows. ANSTO staff strapped my body to a medical bed and connected my brain to an EEG. They electrocuted my chest with paddles every time the EEG monitor indicated I was starting to fall asleep. This produced terror, a heart reaction, and an adrenalin surge. Consequently, when extremely threatened in adulthood, my fear triggered a physical sensation, a flashback. Every time I began falling asleep, I was jolted awake by a massive adrenalin surge, chest pain, and a heart that exceeded 240 beats per minute – perhaps higher, as that was the measurement device's threshold.

FLASHBACKS

These are resurfacing visual images, sounds, smells, emotions, and physical sensations that were stored in the right brain's implicit memory during a trauma experience, and which flash into conscious awareness unchanged by the passing of time. During flashbacks, victims experience the images, emotions, and physical sensations they experienced during the trauma incident (which became frozen in time and remained undigested in the right hemisphere) as if they are experiencing them for the first time.

My first and clearest visual flashback occurred in 1991. I was sitting in a hospital bed when the room completely disappeared, and an entirely different scene appeared. It was like someone suddenly changed the channel on an enormous television screen. Suddenly I was looking close-up at a waterfall of blood cascading in slow motion. At the time I had no idea what I was seeing. After drawing the experience, I realised this was a memory from when I was five years old. I was kneeling in front of a table with my hands tied behind my back. My step-grandfather and his next-door neighbour were murdering the neighbour's three-year-old son on a makeshift altar in his front room. I was drugged, which explains why everything was a little fuzzy and moving in slow motion during my flashback.

My most bizarre visual flashback occurred early one morning. I awoke hungover from a party the night before. I awoke in a mildly dissociative state due to the alcohol which, according to Wendy-Louise Walker, causes dissociation. I was disturbed by light streaming through the window. Every time I closed my eyes, I saw a sepia-coloured film projected onto the back of my eyelids. I saw landscape moving away from me at a rapid pace. I opened my eyes, thinking I was imagining things, then closed them again. Next, I saw landscape moving toward me. I stayed with the image and soon realised it was a visual flashback. I was riding in the back of an army jeep with a unit of male soldiers dressed in combat gear and carrying guns. I was seated on the left side with my back to the outside. When I looked toward the front of the vehicle, I saw two soldiers: a driver on the left, and a passenger seated in the right-hand side wearing a helmet and holding a gun. When I looked out the rear of the jeep, I saw we were driving on a dirt road. The landscape resembled parts of Australia, but it wasn't. I explored this memory further using EMDR and remembered I was in Central America at age 14. I Googled the guns, uniforms and landscape I saw in my visual flashback and concluded it was Nicaragua.

My most memorable physical sensation flashback occurred when I was asleep. I suddenly awoke at 1am, screaming and arching at being electrocuted when I was 10 years old. It felt exactly like being electrocuted in the here and now. I could feel a huge 50cm wide electrode on my back and the individual pin pricks of heat. I screamed like I was being murdered. My startled husband stuffed a pillow over my face for fear of the neighbours phoning the police, which didn't help.

Some flashbacks last days. On one occasion I had a flashback of being drugged. I felt stoned for three days. The most excruciating episode was a three-day pain flashback which I likened to drug-free childbirth. Valium did nothing to reduce the pain.

Flashbacks like these are rare and increase in intensity and duration when the victim actively seeks integration. More commonly, repressed memories surface as comparatively mild physical sensations including: headaches, migraine, isolated external head pain, chest pain, limb pain, weakness, fatigue, sleepiness, racing heart, shortness of breath, dizziness, unsteadiness, vertigo, fainting, chest tightness, shaking, itchiness, sweating, nausea, stomach aches, numbness, tingling, surreal sense, choking sensation, hot flashes, cold chills, blurred vision, ringing in the ears, and irregular heartbeat. Victims, therapists, and doctors are typically clueless regarding the cause of these symptoms, so they treat them with drugs instead of identifying and treating the trauma that caused the symptoms.

> *Other symptoms of survivors include grand mal epileptic seizures with a temporary cessation of breathing. Doctors managed to strap one survivor to an EEG machine in the midst of a seizure – his brain waves registered normal – in other words, the fit was not a true grand mal, but a body memory of electric shocks years after the torture occurred.* [492]

---

[492] Alex Constantine (2014). Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America. Feral House, 152.

STATE-DEPENDENT MEMORY

Flashbacks are triggered when the victim returns to the state of mind they were in at the time of the original trauma. This mechanism is based on the concept of state-dependent memory which determines that memory retrieval works best when a victim is in the same state of consciousness they were in when the memory was created.

In 2015, researchers identified a brain mechanism that can (a) hide traumatic memories, and (b) retrieve those repressed memories.[493] Scientists administered to mice a drug that stimulates extra-synaptic GABA receptors. These receptors alter the brain's state and can make a person 'aroused, sleepy, alert, sedated, inebriated or even psychotic.' The drug made the mice mildly inebriated. The doped mice were put in a *Skinner box* and electrocuted. When the mice were returned to the same box the next day, they did not recall being electrocuted and so behaved normally. However, when scientists drugged them before putting them in the box again, the mice froze in fear. The mice remembered being electrocuted after they were returned to the same brain state created by the drug.

This experiment demonstrates that:

a. extra-synaptic GABA receptors help to encode trauma memories and store them in the subconscious memory system; and
b. trauma that occurs while extra-synaptic GABA receptors are activated can't be remembered unless the same receptors are reactivated.

In lay terms, this study indicates that drugs and electrocution can be used to create, and then access, repressed trauma memories. If a child is drugged while being electrocuted, the drug reroutes processing and forces the brain to store memories in the implicit system where they can't be consciously accessed. To access the implicit memory, the brain must be returned to the same state of consciousness as when the memory was stored - the same emotional mood, physical place, activity, drug-induced condition, or hypnosis-induced dissociative state. The mice study suggests something else – that *triggers* may be used to retrieve repressed memories.

TRIGGERS ARE TREASURES

Trauma causes the child's brain to create a neural pathway that is managed by the instinctual part of the brain. This lower brain area assumes control over brain and body functions including the *fight-flight* response. The new pathway is maintained by reminders of the original trauma. These reminders, or triggers, can be smells, tastes, sounds, sights, situations, or body movements. When exposed to the trigger, the child responds as if being traumatised again, and shifts into *fight-flight* mode.

Perpetrators regularly retraumatise the victim throughout childhood and adulthood, to keep desired neural pathways open, unwanted neural pathways shut, and the final programming structure intact. The CIA and their complicit organisations employ agent scum, informants, and provocateurs to continually harass, set-up, and retraumatise adult victims. To the outsider, this highly organised, standardised operation looks like the victim is either paranoid or - as one of my friends labelled me - a 'shit magnet.'

---

[493] Vladimir Jovasevi et al. (2015). GABAergic mechanisms regulated by miR-33 encode state-dependent fear. *Nature Neuroscience*, 18, 1265-71.

Victims of ritual abuse and mind control are conditioned to avoid triggers. People place trigger warnings at the start of videos and articles about the subject. Therapists are careful not to trigger their DID clients. In the early 1990s, therapists were taught to ‘respect patients’ defence mechanisms,’ which was another way of saying, do not trigger clients. This avoidance of triggers is another means of keeping victims stuck in their trauma cycle.

Since 1991, I have swum against the ignorant tide and encouraged victims to bulldoze through their defence mechanisms and embrace triggers. Triggers are the key to memory retrieval. Consider: when you lose your car keys, your memory must be triggered for you to recall where you left them. It’s a common-sense, right-brain concept.

Triggers are the key to memory retrieval

Here is an email to my therapist which provides an extreme example of how I used triggering to retrieve my memories. My co-consciousness allowed me to steer the therapy process. Using EMDR as an ignition, I could dive into my subconscious mind, target specific memories, fish these out and draw them into my conscious awareness.

20/02/2015 3:08 PM

This is what I need to do –
I need to deal with the attachment violation.
Whatever Gittinger did to abuse this phenomenon
has risen to the surface of my consciousness.
It is preventing me from functioning.
Unfortunately, I must endure more pain
before I can deal with it.
I can’t concentrate, study, function
In this state of distraction.

Anticipation of this planned remedy
is all that is sustaining me right now.
I need a double session asap.
I am getting Jon to download the footage of Gittinger,
join the several segments of his speaking,
repeat this footage over and over on a loop
and place the loop footage on a DVD.
Then, I need you to do the EMDR.
As soon as you have done the EMDR
I need Jon to play the Gittinger footage on our TV.
I need you to do the EMDR 3 times
allowing me to process and react between each dose.
I do not want you to refuse to repeat the EMDR –
no matter what you perceive my reaction to be.
I know exactly what I am doing
and you must trust me.
My heart will certainly hold up -
it was fine even during the flat-lining regression.
It is just a simulation and not the real thing,
if that makes sense.

You and Jon must not touch me during any of this -

unless I tell you to.
You must not talk during this process –
because saying the wrong thing pulls me out
and prevents me from revisiting the place I need to see.
I do not want to be grounded in any way to the present.
I must be allowed to completely relive this one.
Do not tell me that ‘it’s over’
or to ‘just let it be there, do not fight it’ –
These instructions are, and have always been,
Counter-productive and inapplicable to what I am doing.
I suspect I must travel back through 3 layers of programmed walls
to reach the attachment programming.

If we screw this up –
I will only have to start all over again
and I will not be able to move forward until this process is achieved.
I anticipate this will rip open the attachment programming.
If I have Gittinger’s voice playing on a loop in the background
I should be able to trigger myself
and steer my mind to locate the memory.
I do not care how exhausting or dangerous it looks –
It is only me revisiting the past.
I know when this is happening that I am not actually there.
I am more than prepared for this.
I am in no way at risk.
I just need you to trust me
and follow my instruction.

* * *

INTEGRATION RISKS

I do not suggest others copy how I did things. I knowingly, stubbornly flogged my body to its limits. I could have suffered a heart attack while processing the worst of my memories. Ideally, I should have had a medical team on standby during this stage of my healing and completed the most intense work as an inpatient in a suitable clinic with nursing staff and therapists who knew what they were doing. But this does not exist in Australia, so I winged it.

Integration is a dangerous, painful process, the risks of which should be carefully considered before commencing. Beside the risks associated with abreaction, know that memory recovery triggers the programmers’ built-in defence system. Each program is connected to a trauma incident which, when remembered, destroys the program. Consequently, programmers do everything to stop victims remembering their trauma. The programmers protect each program with a booby-trap which, when triggered, initiates conditioned pain, OCD thought loops, depression, anxiety, flooding, flashbacks, suicidal ideation, or the desire to self-harm. It is crucial for the victim to realise, these are not her thoughts, behaviours or will, but externally imposed thoughts and feelings. The victim must be relieved of the guilt and blame associated with artificially induced thoughts, feelings and behaviours. This includes being turned into a Manchurian Candidate and made to commit criminal acts they would otherwise shun from had they not been brainwashed zombies.

THERAPIST CHOICE

Integration starts with a suitable therapist. The last thing a victim needs is a lousy therapist who ditches them mid-integration. To maximise your chances of successful integration, select a therapist with a minimum 10 years of experience as a *trauma-focussed* practitioner. Ensure they possess advanced EMDR training and regularly update their skills at trauma-relevant workshops. You want someone stable who has worked on their own crap, and who entered the industry because they like helping people rather than to fix their own issues. Avoid someone who started off enthusiastic but has since become disillusioned with the industry. Ask them how and why they ended up in psychology, and whether they themselves have experienced therapy. If they become defensive at your probing, wave goodbye.

A therapist must be intelligent and intuitive enough to work with bright victims. Psychologists gained an idea of their IQ level while learning IQ testing. Ask your candidate therapist what their IQ is. If it is under 130, they will prove too left-brain dominant and narrow-minded, feel threatened by victims, not understand your cognitive style, and relish at every opportunity to disprove your intelligence. Sounds immature, but it happens *all* the time. Some therapists will even use the power imbalance to punish victims.

You need a therapist who is open-minded enough to appreciate that reality stretches beyond the limits of their own experience, so they do not mistake our legitimate experiences for insanity. You want someone who understands the spiritual dimension without erring toward the occult. Genuine Bible-believing Christian therapists are by far the best, but these are rare. Christianity is the cult’s favourite cover. Most churches are social clubs at best, child trafficking operations at worst. For this reason, avoid most church-based counselling services.

Therapist Gender

For all victims, there are benefits to experiencing both male and female therapists at different stages of their healing process. But the implications of therapist gender should be considered. Many therapists have sex with their clients. And I am not just talking about male therapists. Female therapists will seduce male or female clients. I know of a female therapist in my local area who had sex with a dissociative female client’s child alter. I researched the predator to find she was a proud member of the Freemason Order of the Eastern Star.

Sometimes an unsuspecting therapist can be seduced. The sexual advances of a young, attractive female specifically trained to target and arouse men can be hard for male therapists to resist, since the male brain shuts down at a certain point during arousal. This is one way a victim will test the therapist. If he fails the test, he will likely meet a less attractive personality with combat skills. So, I recommend female victims engage a female therapist until the Beta alter is an integrated conscious brain component.

Therapist Commitment

Embarking upon the integration process is akin to boarding a roller coaster. Once the ride commences, the individual has three options: endure until the end when integration is achieved, be captured by the cult and reprogrammed, or jump. The therapist must commit to supporting the victim for the duration of the ride *before* it begins. Pulling out half-way can kill a client. It is the therapist’s responsibility to ensure they have the knowledge and skills to do the job, and not chicken out the moment things become uncomfortable – as they surely will.

TRAUMA & ATTACHMENT

The impact of trauma is buffered by a child's attachment bond to their parents. If the attachment bond is missing, the child stops depending on others for help, and she can't regulate her emotions. Consequently, she becomes anxious, angry, and long to be cared for. Perpetrators intentionally destroy the child's natural attachment bond using torture to cause overwhelming trauma. They then take advantage of the child's longing for caring by using love bombing to create artificial attachment bonds between the child victim and her perpetrators. The bond between therapist and mind control victim is unique because it is influenced by the attachment violation perpetrated against the victim at a young age. The child's natural attachment to their biological mother was purposely and viciously severed. The victim was artificially bonded to a surrogate mother, the Grande Dame. My attachment with this person was particularly strong, considering my Grande Dame candidacy which made her my mentor and confidant. To further complicate the usual therapeutic relationship, most abusers are psychologists or psychiatrists.

All this guarantees the victim will displace their feelings for her abusers, plus their attachment issues, onto the therapist. Subsequently, apart from the standard cult harassment and threats, the therapist's greatest challenge is managing the client-therapist bond which must be firmly established before any major integration work starts.

THERAPEUTIC BONDING

The therapist provides a substitute attachment until the victim can develop a secure internal attachment. This process took me 18 months and it was a terrifying act of trust. Bonding with a therapist is essential for memory access and brain integration. Once the bond occurs, and all personality fragments agree to trust the therapist with their lives, the victim automatically transfers all feelings for the perpetrators onto the therapist. The upside to this situation is, the therapist is granted unprecedented access to the victim's mind and memories. The victim responds to the therapist's voice and instruction like a robot. Such passivity enables the victim to be pacified during times of extreme distress, by the mere sound of the therapist's voice.

The downside to this bonding is, the victim is totally dependent on the therapist for as long as the portal to her past is open. At each trauma, bout of excruciating pain, wave of fear or terror, the victim seeks the therapist's voice - like when a screaming baby settles upon hearing her mother. If that voice does not come, the victim's pain and panic escalate. As in a mother-child relationship, the victim is pacified by just knowing the therapist is contactable. Much internal chaos can be avoided if the therapist is merely available. A sense of availability reduces the number of times the victim needs to physically contact the therapist. If the therapist is largely unavailable, if the victim must demand, beg and work for every minute of productive therapy received, this exacerbates the victim's frustration, anger, exhaustion, and the sense that she is losing her mind.

As part of the bonding process, every front personality fragment will manifest and test the therapist, to determine whether they are intelligent, ethical, caring, humble, and spiritual enough to see the process through to its conclusion. Even after the therapeutic relationship is established, the victim will test the therapist at regular intervals, to check they are sufficiently committed for the victim to progress to the next level. The therapist may be challenged on every aspect of their existence. This makes the victim demanding, yet her demands are purpose driven: the victim is checking whether she will die during the encroaching integration process.

The bonding process is exacerbated within the client if the therapist maintains an *us-and-them* mentality toward clients. All the above can be avoided if the therapist presents as an equal to the client and discards the elitist attitudes typically fostered in therapists at university. Therapy only works once a mutual relationship, akin to friendship, is formed between the victim and therapist.

EFFECTIVE THERAPY APPROACHES

The therapeutic goal is to cut new neural pathways that allow the brain's isolated systems to work together. Effective therapy stimulates bilateral processing, releases the content of implicit memory, and lets the left brain transform right brain implicit emotional learnings and visual and somatic experiences into explicit verbal events. Effective therapy enables the victim to identify and verbalise emotion and make logical sense of the trauma experience, so she can cognitively *respond* rather than emotionally *react* to triggers. Responding involves the victim consciously recognising she has been triggered and taking practical steps to stimulate her vagus nerve and calm her sympathetic *fight-flight* system.

The therapeutic goal is to make all brain systems work together

THE INTEGRATION PROCESS

'Phase-orientated' therapy for DID follows three recognisable treatment stages:

- Establish safety, stabilisation and symptom reduction.
- Contain and process trauma memories and feelings.
- Integration and rehabilitation.[494]

However, treating DID stemming from ritual abuse and mind control is not that simple, for two reasons:

1. our abuse is ongoing due to constant targeting, and
2. our brain splits were intentionally, not organically, created.
3.

If your recovery can follow the above neat pattern – great. Mine could not. My treatment was a messy blur. I did identify a sequence to the memory retrieval process. I repeated three basic steps for each trauma incident:

1. Remember
2. Articulate
3. Abreact.

If I processed a memory according to these steps, it never bothered further. Sometimes revisited the same event that I experienced in more than one state of consciousness, in more than one personality state, or from a different physical position. For example, I processed being near drowned in a ritual pool in a cavern system beneath ANSTO and Holsworthy. Years later, I had to process this same experience, only this time it was a memory of being suspended in the air above the pool. My brain had somehow stored the single event as two separate experiences.

---

[494] International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (2011): Guidelines for Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder in Adults, Third Revision, *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation*, 12:2, 115-187.

Trauma memory recall typically starts with the victim experiencing a nightmare, emotion, visual image, or body sensation flashback. The victim then attends therapy which focusses on that symptom. Effective therapy accesses the visual images of the trauma incident, body sensations, and emotions experienced during the childhood trauma. The victim must verbally describe the trauma incident. At some stage, she must feel the repressed emotion that occurred with the abuse; this may be delayed, hitting the person the following day. Ongoing therapy intervention and aftercare are essential to the integration process. Drawing the abuse incident provides further detail and clarity. Swimming aids hemispheric digestion and soothes the sympathetic nervous system.

According to this sequence, I processed the first half of my memories using art therapy, and the second half using EMDR in conjunction with drawing. Internally, the process of art therapy and EMDR feel similar. Both bypass the unethical hypnosis, ECT, and drug effects to access implicit memory. Both allow victims to resurface and process trauma material at a manageable pace and intensity level. The brain only brings up what it can cope with at the time.

The brain only ever raises what it can cope with at the time

ART THERAPY

Art therapy is both a learned skill and an intuitive artform. Anybody can acquire basic skills, but it takes innate creative ability to read a drawing like a brain scan and direct the process. The victim does not need artistic ability to do art therapy. If they can draw stick figures, they can do art therapy. Besides, they soon free up and surprise themselves. The only material required are fat crayons in a range of colours and a pile of copying paper. It is important for the client to know that it does not matter whether what they draw is an actual event or a product of their imagination. All roads lead to Rome. The unconscious memory content will seep out in either symbolic or concrete form. Telling the client to *'just guess'* what might have happened to them, accesses implicit memory and stimulates intuition. And I found that repeating an instruction at least three times helps to bypass unethical hypnosis.

EMDR

When I first heard about EMDR, I dismissed it as a hypnosis offshoot. Like hypnosis, EMDR is a form of bilateral stimulation. Unlike hypnosis, it is non-suggestive. There are two main ways of delivering EMDR: (1) Directed eye movements, or (2) Alternating bilateral hand taps. I experienced both. When dealing with the strongest memories in the lead up to integration, the therapist would wave a hand back and forth across my eyes. I would then sit back and wait for whatever came to mind. My next therapist had me place my hands face down on a pillow and alternatively tap the tops of my hands.

During EMDR memory reprocessing, memories are retrieved from implicit memory, processed in working memory, and re-stored in long-term memory. The left brain reprocesses and reorganize the implicit trauma experiences; it sequences the event, applies context (time-date-place), and finds language to describe what happened. The pivotal trauma memories must be retrieved and fully processed, including re-experiencing, or abreacting, the emotions.

EMDR cognitively processes traumatic events.[495] The underlying neural mechanism of action of EMDR remains unknown. EMDR does not appear to produce the altered consciousness state associated with hypnosis.[496] EMDR may act as hemispheric synchronization.[497] The psychologist in charge of the Monroe Institute advertises EMDR as a form of hemispheric synchronization. Neurobiological models suggest EMDR increases interhemispheric communication via the corpus callosum. The most recent hypothesis is that EMDR simultaneously increases connectivity between the two hemispheres, plus within the right hemisphere.[498] [499] Trauma memories are disseminated into the right hemisphere as meaningless, dissociated fragments, like pieces of a shattered mirror. The goal of EMDR is to reassemble those visual, auditory, and somatosensory fragments.

ABREACTION

Freud coined the term *abreaction* to describe the release of the strong emotion associated with a repressed trauma memory. The emotion became stuck in time at the point of the original childhood trauma and is being properly processed for the first time, though abreaction. When a victim abreacts implicit trauma memories, the mind and body react as though the childhood event is presently happening. So, when I abreacted being flatlined at age 10 years, I was in danger of my heart stopping again in adulthood.

EMDR pioneer Shapiro devoted a significant portion of her original clinical manual to defining and describing abreaction, and to providing guidelines for using EMDR to accommodate abreaction of repressed emotions.[500] On page 96, the author specifically addressed the inherent risks associated with reprocessing near death experiences and torture by electrocution. Shapiro described how practitioners prepared for extreme cases by having resuscitation equipment and medical staff ready.

Abreaction is essential. Presently, I see no other way of processing the emotional trauma associated with extreme abuse. Yet mainstream therapy is changing the definition and therapeutic role of abreaction. One of my therapists argues that abreaction is too traumatising and has no place in the EMDR reprocessing experience. They prefer to focus on how I feel now about my childhood trauma, as an adult reflecting on the abuse, instead of at the time of the childhood abuse. This is the denial approach pushed by Antony Kidman and the APS guidelines on repressed memories.

‘FLASH’ EMDR

This latest addition was devised to address concerns about clients like me whose trauma memories are extremely intense, and who dissociate during EMDR. Flash EMDR produces favourable results in relatively minor trauma cases that involve natural dissociation and adult trauma experiences. It does not effectively process developmental trauma stemming from forced dissociation. Do not compare ritual abuse, trauma-based mind control, and ongoing cult and government harassment, with anything less. The intensity of repressed emotion and subsequent abreaction is proportionate to the severity of the trauma to which it is attached and must be treated accordingly.

---

[495] M. Pagani et al. (2012). Neurobiological correlates of EMDR monitoring - an EEG study. *PLoS ONE* 7:9.

[496] Nicosia, 1995

[497] R. Landin-Romero et al (2018). How Does Eye Movement Desensitization and Reprocessing Therapy Work? A Systematic Review on Suggested Mechanisms of Action. *Frontiers in Psychology*, *9*, 1395.

[498] M. Yaggie et al. (2016). Electroencephalography coherence, memory vividness, and emotional valence effects of bilateral eye movements during unpleasant memory recall and subsequent free association: implications for eye movement desensitization and reprocessing. *J. Emdr Pract*. 9, 79–97.

[499] B. Keller et al. (2016). The effects of bilateral eye movements on EEG coherence when recalling a pleasant memory. *J. Emdr Pract*. 8, 113–128.

[500] Shapiro, F. (2001). *Eye movement desensitization and reprocessing: Basic principles, protocols, and procedures* (2nd ed). Guilford Press.

Abreaction intensity is proportionate to trauma severity

THE VORTEX

I clearly recall the moment the 'vortex' to my past opened. It was during an initial EMDR session. I was suddenly struck with a memory and I nearly leapt from the chair. I describe the vortex as a deep, jagged wound, shaped like the opening an old-fashioned can opener cuts into a tin can. It remained open for 1.5 years and closed the day after Richie Benaud's death at Easter 2015. My brain informed me the moment it closed, by sending me a soft yet clear image of a thin veil of fresh flesh covering the wound.

The opened vortex allowed unprecedented access to my memories and let me relive and feel the pain associated with my child abuse. During therapy, my memories usually emerged as faint visual images followed by a flood of thoughts and feelings that I experienced at the time of the abuse. I would describe what I saw, before being struck with the repressed emotion. I abreacted the emotion and felt the physical sensations as though the trauma incident were presently occurring. I relived torture, spinning, drugging, unethical hypnosis, and electrocution. I felt the pain as though the torture were happening today.

I once heard a radio interview with a leading USA neurologist. He hypothesised that psychological pain registers in the brain as physical pain. The problem with nervous system pain is that others can't see it, and therefore they are likely to dismiss its severity. My pain was akin to having one's physical body smashed up in a car wreck and left to rot without anaesthetic for 1.5 years.

When a memory began surfacing, unless it was immediately processed my symptoms would exacerbate and I became increasingly at risk. The moment I finished processing my memory via EMDR and abreacted the accompanying feelings, the symptoms dissipated, and that memory immediately ceased to bother me.

The most critical times during the therapy process occurred when Gittinger's suicide programming was activated. Outside of the vortex being opened, and my being triggered, I was not a suicide risk. I did not even contemplate the notion of harming myself. However, mind control programming is layered with commands to involuntarily suicide.

Memory recovery was a violent experience that commenced with vertigo and ended with mild brain damage; it included memory loss and extreme light sensitivity. I suffered vertigo, nausea, chest pain, and cardiac dysrhythmia. The most critical 18 months of memory processing included Mengele's Core split plus Gittinger's attachment violation. These months took such a toll on my body, on several occasions I required physical nursing, which was non-existent.

GROUNDING

Despite being EMDR trained, my therapist knew nothing about grounding. I innately grounded myself to the present, to stop me becoming stuck or lost in the trauma memory. Visiting the past feels like dropping through a chasm in the floor, while holding someone's hand makes me feel like I will not fall. One time when I needed to wake up out of dissociation, I told my therapist to take my hand and squeeze it very hard. Although co-conscious during therapy and aware that I am not actually back there, I'm still at risk. I once got stuck mid-abreaction such that I looked at my therapist in terror and exclaimed, 'Don't leave me here!' At other times, when I needed to retrieve a deeply buried memory, I ensured no-one touched me.

HYPNOSIS

I used hypnosis long after I integrated my Core, and once I felt sufficiently stabilised. Hypnosis returned me to the state of consciousness I was in at the time of the abuse, thereby granting me unprecedented access to my hypnosis-related memories. I found it beneficial for processing deep, residual memories. My therapist combined hypnosis with EMDR, which accessed the most deeply buried memories.

If you could undergo hypnosis with a clean expert like Corydon Hammond, I'd say 'go for it.' Find Hammond's astounding *Greenbaum Speech* on YouTube and consult his hypnosis handbook[501] to gain idea of the base hypnotherapy skill and understanding required to work with ritual abuse and mind control. Review Shapiro's comparison of EMDR versus hypnotically induced abreaction.[502] Read *Secret Don't Tell: The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism* (1998) by Carla Emery, for a comprehensive overview of the history of unethical hypnosis. If your therapist does not know or agree with this reading material, move on. If your therapist mimics what Wendy-Louise Walker practised – run.

VOICE DIALOGUE

This is part of the *Hearing Voices* approach that I discovered via a retired therapist who had success treating adolescent youth labelled schizophrenic (i.e., 'traumatised'). She trained in trauma and Voice Dialogue and adapted this to working with the dissociated parts of mind control victims. I was thrilled to finally have an alternative therapy technique I could recommend to ritual abuse and mind control victims labelled psychotic, schizophrenic, bipolar, or personality disordered who were subsequently thrown in the 'too hard' basket. Psychiatry reduces everything to an illness originating in the victim, which is just another form of victim blaming. The Hearing Voices approach emerged from realising that peoples' environmental experiences are meaningful and determine the thoughts and behaviours that psychiatrists label symptomology. It explores the person's internal dialogue and how they make sense of the world, rather than what the DSM describes.

The Voice Dialogue method recognises that the right hemisphere's unconscious processes are more dominant than the left's conscious, logical nature. It focuses on attachment style, which develops and continues to motivate behaviour at an implicit level. The method is influenced by Transactional Analysis and recognises that everyone has different components of self, such as internal child part and an external parent part, that interact to cause conflict. Treatment consists of identifying these parts and their roles, and changing the relationships between parts, to facilitate emotional awareness and collaboration between the fragmented selves. When a client hears voices, that is usually an indication that a part of self has become disowned by the system and is screaming to be heard.

---

[501] Hammond, D.C. (1990) *Handbook of Hypnotic Suggestions and Metaphors*. American Society of Clinical Hypnosis.

[502] Shapiro, F. (2001). *Eye movement desensitization and reprocessing: Basic principles, protocols, and procedures* (2nd ed.). Guilford Press.

It is easy to see how the Hearing Voices approach is readily adapted to working with a dissociative victim of ritual abuse and mind control who has multiple personalities. The goal is to dialogue with the parts that hold trauma memories, dissociated feelings, emotions and sensations. The method allows the therapist to facilitate the processing of a trauma memory held by a part, without the Core person being exposed to the trauma memory. Voice Dialogue is about changing the relationship between the Core person and their dissociated parts. It also involves negotiating between the parts so that they do not assume dominance over the Core person, so that everyone is working together. It involves recognising that each part played a crucial role in helping the Core person survive extreme trauma. Another objective is to assign each part a new meaningful role, to replace the role imposed on them by perpetrators.

I intuitively engaged in the process of role reassignment by taking up Judo, classical singing, and shooting. I engaged in Voice Dialogue and used it as a therapy gap filler. I found one-hour therapy sessions insufficient; they left me dissociative and distressed, and my trauma-focussed therapist never recognised or addressed my front alters. So, after my weekly therapy session, I typically phoned my retired therapist friend who worked with me for another few hours to finish what my therapist had only just started. She would ask to speak with the alter who is aware of the trauma experience causing the symptoms, and simply ask what that alter knew. In response, I would download copious amounts of information stored in implicit memory. All someone ever had to do was ask me the right questions.

‘I’ BEFORE ‘WE’

There is a place for alter recognition, but this must be limited and purposeful. Alters are real, mini personalities with their own neural circuitry, who experienced and hold the memories of trauma. At some stage, alters and their trauma need to be acknowledged, validated, and relieved. Therapists mainly need to know front alter names and roles. Each front alter represents a myriad of back alters, so if you win over the front alter, you cover the alters hidden behind them.

My front alters were namely Soldier Alice, Intellectual Alice, Ritual Alice, Red Alice (a combination of the former three) and Glinda. Sascha and Angel were also front alters, but more hidden. Soldier Alice protected my internal system and co-operated with Intellect Alice to manage interaction with the environment. Ritual Alice stored the implicit trauma experiences and pain in her memory circuitry and threw childish tantrums in response to trauma triggers. Glinda took a back seat after I left the cult and Kidman cursed my creative endeavours. Ritual Alice attended university. Sascha endured the physical ardour. Angel guarded my Core.

I did not allow my parts to identify themselves or speak until long after I integrated my Core, and I refused to ever refer to myself as ‘we’ - because overindulgence in alters is unhealthy and inhibits integration. All alter attention and communication should be for gaining system trust, releasing trauma memories, and encouraging cooperation and integration. Which is why I recommend victims strictly address themselves as ‘I’ instead of ‘we.’ Too many therapists seem titillated by the notion of multiple personalities; they waste precious therapy time and money familiarising themselves with, and indulging in, every alter they can possibly find. The worst example of alter overindulgence occurred at Colin Ross’ conferences where organisers provided a preschool playroom, stuffed toys, and colouring-in activities to entertain child alters.

One victim's system may contain thousands of splits, and it would take many lifetimes to get to know every alter. Instead of mapping an entire alter system, and trying to speak with every alter, effective therapy focusses on identifying and processing the trauma incidents which that created the alters in the first place. A single torture session is used to create multiple alters within the victim. Therefore, if a victim processes the memories of a single trauma incident, they will integrate up to hundreds of related alters in one go. Therapy must be Trauma-Focussed, not alter-focussed, to integrate a system.

Effective therapy identifies the trauma that initially created the alters

REACHING THE CORE IS KEY

The greatest integration shortcut of all occurs when the victim remembers the trauma incident that split their Core. As I said, instant integration occurs when a victim's Core personality meets her splits. Victims often tell me they have no Core, that their therapist can't locate their Core, and they ask me, 'What is my Core?' Your Core is the you that existed before perpetrators touched you and messed with your brain. For some, this began in utero and so the victim has no memory of their personality being intact. The Core is your soul, spirit, or consciousness - the part of you that leaves your physical body when you die or astral travel. Consciousness exists apart from the physical body, which is why mainstream scientists are currently working on ways of transferring the soul or consciousness to other physical vessels, such as cloned or synthetic forms. Thereby the wealthy elite responsible for MK-ULTRA plan to cheat death and avoid judgement.

BILATERAL STIMULATION

During the most intense phase of my memory recovery process I swam a kilometre per day, six days a week. I found swimming crucial to integration for several reasons. Freestyle lap swimming is a bilateral action which stimulates the brain hemispheres to work together. I felt swimming digested the cognitive load I experienced during a therapy session. Swimming soothed the extreme autonomic nervous system arousal that occurred during therapy, and seemingly countered the dangerous impact therapy had on my heart. Mid-lap one day, I was struck by an inaudible sentence, 'You heart is regenerating.' The laps usually felt effortless and I physically sensed the integration.

An examination of left-brain Western plus bilateral Eastern conceptualisation helped me understand how and why swimming proved so essential to my integration and trauma recovery. The vagus nerve starts at the brain stem and connects to 'mini-brains' found in the body's major organs including the mesentery which wraps around the gut. The vagus nerve affects the heart, lungs, stomach, immune and endocrine systems. When stimulated, the vagus nerve activates the parasympathetic nervous system and calms the sympathetic system responsible for the 'fight-flight' response. The vagus nerve is stimulated by touch, movement or breath, such as deep diaphragmatic breathing, prayer, exercise, laughter, massage, and cold-water immersion. Swimming covers three of these.

The Chinese have long recognised the importance of the mesentery. They say the human body runs on Chi, which we know as electromagnetic energy, and the mesentery is the battery. This battery must be charged for the body to maintain energy. Caffeine is an artificial way Westerners charge the mesentery battery, while Chinese recommend deep diaphragmatic breathing as an appropriate mesentery stimulant. I found classical singing relaxing and therapeutic because my singing teacher employed the *intercostal diaphragmatic breathing* technique.

Typing was another bilateral activity that helped me to cognitively digest trauma between therapy sessions. I hand wrote letters to my first two therapists, and typed emails to my last. Being a bilateral activity, typing felt more integrating than handwriting. My emails began as a simple exchange of basic information about appointment times. As my situation became critical, I began using email as a journaling process. Even if my therapist did not immediately read my emails, knowing they were immediately received was key to pain relief. I tried journaling to myself, which proved an ineffective substitute.

HERBAL MEDICINES

Herbal medicines did what no drug ever could - settled my nervous system pain within one hour. You need live herbal tinctures made by an experienced herbalist, as these medicines are far more and potent and effective than dried herbs. The Australian drug authorities and medical doctors are eliminating herbalism in Australia. There are no more courses in pure herbalism, and Australia will not recognise overseas qualifications. I completed a short course in live herbal manufacturing which taught me more in one week than students learn in a four-year naturopathy degree.

Throw out your TV

EEG studies show that television converts the brain from Beta to Alpha plus near Delta wave activity associated with a mild trance-like state. TV reduces our ability to verbally communicate and to think critically. It suppresses our left brain and allows information to pass unedited into our right hemisphere. This is just more brainwashing and a reinforcement of MK-ULTRA programming. Therefore, it is important for the person trying to integrate from mind control to throw out their TV. No computer games either; read David Gillespie’s book *Teen Brain* (2019) about the detrimental impact of screens on the developing brain to understand why. In fact, read all of Gillespie’s amazing books. He was the first person to damn refined sugar and expose its connections to obesity, heart disease and mental health. It is helpful for victims to understand how fructose switched off the part of the brain that tells us we’re full, and that alcohol, the worst thing for neurological damage, is sugar and so has a similar effect.

* * *

DESTROYING THE MATRIX

Writing this book served as a double-edged sword. It continually triggered my memory for my abuse, which made me violently ill, but simultaneously allowed me to access and process and integrate more sections of compartmentalised neural circuitry.

While I foresaw the assassination of asset Isaac Kappy, I did not anticipate his murder occurring at the same time as the death of my pedophile perpetrator Bob Hawke. That was a triggering combination. I entered therapy the following week too depleted to relay the weeks’ events. I positioned myself on the couch and asked my therapist to combine EMDR with hypnosis.

‘Why am I doing that?’ he asked.

‘Because you devised the technique and I think it’s a good one.’

‘But why am I doing this today?’

‘Because my right hemisphere always knows what it’s doing, and it wants to do this.’

‘So, you’re going with your gut instinct?’

‘No. The mesentery has its own mini brain, but it is the right hemisphere that processes implicitly and tells me what to do without adding the reason why. I just wrote a book chapter all about it.’

‘How’s the book going?’

Nope. Was not going to discuss that either, as it was tied into a long week. ‘No words. Just do the therapy.’

He agreed, and soon I was dissociated enough to enter Mengele’s induction routine. I self-induced as usual, spiralled down the water channel. I surfaced in the Dagon ritual pool. Only, this time was different. Usually there were no characters. This time there were guards at the doors which opened automatically to reveal Dagon seated on his gold throne. I bowed on one knee to the entity, placing my arms overhead in the shape of a bishop’s hat. Suddenly, I barged through the left red ritual door and marched through the rows of caged blonde children, bellowing, ‘Someday I am going to save ALL of you!’ I opened the door to Mengele’s lab beneath the US Embassy in Canberra rushed toward the *Jabba The Hut* lookalike, shoved my fingers around his throat – and choked him.

I exited via the blue door in the corner and began running toward the escape hatch when suddenly I detoured to a program. I took a back door to the blue, soldier programming area where countless programs were stacked to the ceiling, represented by a myriad of ancient and modern military costumes from various countries. I took a long sword and began smashing everything in sight. When that proved too time consuming, I smashed at the walls and toppled the entire room in one go. Then I realised I was Angel, wielding a samurai sword.

Real pain struck my head. *Not this time!* I asserted, and visualised walking through my brain and slashing open blocked pathways to allow electric current flow through. The pain instantly disappeared. Next I was hit with genuine vertigo and nausea. Again, I pictured slashing open the closed neural circuitry. I saw the micro flesh, the multiple openings, and the flash of electric current as they opened. The vertigo disappeared immediately. Then I was assaulted with verbal thought loops. I tapped into where it was coming from – the left hemisphere – and slashed it too. I was replicating the visualisation technique that Mengele used to create the neural pathways and programs in the first place.

Finally, I climbed up Mengele’s blue soldier room and emerged through a vent onto the manicured lawn of the US Embassy.

‘When you’re ready,’ my therapist droned.

I described the carnage. ‘It’s like the final scene of The Matrix. I can destroy their programming because this is in my brain and I can do as I like. I am taking control.’

* * *

Dirty Doctors

People are bastard-coated bastards with bastard filling. – Scrubs (Ep. 407)

Fundamentally, your chosen therapist must not be a network operative. I have communicated with countless child abuse survivors including victims of ritual abuse and mind control. Their testimonies plus my own experience formed my conclusion that most therapists are either perpetrators or being handled by perpetrators. Dodging dirty doctors is a trial and error process.

It is important for vulnerable victims to not trust therapists just because they are high profile, lecture at seminars on trauma and dissociation, and write books on DID and MK-ULTRA. These are all CIA operatives. Think about it: the clean ones, like Corydon Hammond who presented the famous *Greenbaum Speech*, invariably get death threats and are quickly and permanently forced out of the industry.

I will now detail my personal experience of two Canadians therapists considered experts in ritual abuse, mind control and DID, to drive home my point: Trust no-one.

COLIN ROSS

George Bergen compiled a massive dossier of evidence against Colin Ross including copies of signed affidavits.[503] While I do not agree victims should follow Bergen's concluding recommendation to consult CIA doctor Richard Ofshe, his evidence is relevant to my experience of Colin Ross. Here is a summary of the dossier content:

From 1985 to 1991, Canadian psychiatrist Colin A. Ross worked at the St. Boniface General Hospital, University of Manitoba. He employed suggestive questioning, hypnosis, and age regression, and commonly prescribed overdoses of Halcion (triazolam) and sodium amytal injections. Ross also performed experimental drug testing on patients for large Drug Corporations.

Roma Elizabeth Hart was a patient of Colin Ross from 1986 to 1991. In a 1998 signed affidavit, Hart testified that all of Ross' MPD patients at St Boniface Hospital became suicidal, and that Ross encouraged his drug-induced patients to commit suicide. Hart named the 1991 death of Wanda Davenport as one of five wrongful deaths Ross caused at the hospital.

Colin Ross was dismissed from his position at St. Boniface General Hospital in 1991 for causing the wrongful deaths of five patients. This dismissal was covered up, permitting Ross to register in Texas. In July 1998, Texan authorities charged Colin A. Ross with fraud, gross negligence, fraudulent concealment, and conspiracy to commit fraud. Charges were also filed against Ross in the Manitoba Court of Queen's Bench in 1994 and 1997. Numerous complaints against Colin Ross were submitted to the College of Physicians and Surgeons of Manitoba, Texas State Board of Medical Examiners, Royal College of Physicians of Canada, and Canadian Psychiatric Association.

I was aware of Colin Ross' background when I agreed to present at a 2016 *Trauma and Dissociation* conference at the Radisson hotel in Seattle, and I knew that Ross was speaking at the conference. I did not know that Colin Ross sponsored the event. His ownership of the conference explained why it amounted to a marketing opportunity for therapists. Speakers who paid to attend and be heard were rewarded with stalls inside the hotel from which they peddled cards, stickers, $45 books and fridge magnets to vulnerable DID victims. It also explained why the Seattle conference also served as an advertisement for Colin Ross' Institute where clients entered non-suicidal and left in a box.

---

[503] George Bergen (1998). *Evidence Against Dr Colin A. Ross, Vol.1*. [archive.org]

It is normal for conference organisers to send speakers (especially international ones) a contract outlining what is required of the speaker and what is being provided to the speaker. This was promised but never delivered to me. Originally, I was told that my presentation was going to be professionally filmed. This never occurred either. I was also promised a plenary speaking session first thing Friday morning when the conference began. Plenary means speaking in the main, large room with no other competing sessions. Colin Ross' daughter Dana was given my spot instead. Victims and I had not heard of her.

The conference organisers hid me away in a tiny room at the end of a hall. The conference schedule was formatted such that it prevented people from finding me. Some attendees could not find me at all because my biography and presentation synopsis were missing from their folders. All folders were individually named, so in theory organisers could control who did and did not know I was speaking. Even when my information was in the folder, it was well buried.

Technical set-up of the conference rooms occurred on the Thursday. I was scheduled to speak early the following morning. Come Thursday evening, my room was not set up; it had no podium, no projector, no microphone, no computer, no cables, and no technical support. I could not deliver my presentation without basic equipment. I approached the conference organiser and asked why my room was not set up. She alleged she had specifically instructed the technician to do so, and to go phone him. Being Australian and having just arrived in the USA, I had no phone. I eventually found the technician who told me the conference organiser never instructed him to set up my room.

Meanwhile, the other speakers, aware of my plight, openly boasted of how glad they were that their rooms were set up for the next morning. Most of them accompanied Colin Ross to a posh seafood dinner at Seattle's famous fisherman's wharf. I was not invited. Besides, I was too busy trying to remedy the deficiencies of the conference organiser. I approached the senior Radisson hotel staff member assigned to the conference and requested a spare podium. The man contemptuously told me Radisson did not have another podium, pointed to a 50cm high coffee table, and spat, 'Use that!'

Thirty minutes remained before the Radisson locked their conference rooms for the evening. It was time to show the Yanks what Australians are famous for. I stole the essential equipment from another conference room belonging to the woman feeding her face with lobster after boasting the loudest about how pleased she was that her room was prepared. I demanded the conference organiser help me carry the equipment to my speaking room. Radisson staff locked the speaking rooms for the night. I retired to my room for a delivered burger and crap American TV.

The following morning, I quietly smiled to myself as the hotel foyer echoed a woman's hysterical cries: 'WHERE'S MY PODIUM?!' Oddly enough, Radisson staff immediately found that speaker a spare podium.

I delivered my talk to a keen audience which doubled in size once word got out about who and where I was. Following my two-hour presentation, a victim encountered her own therapist in the hall who exclaimed, 'I am so angry at Fiona's talk! I am so angry that no one has ever told me that information before!' Several victims voiced how angry they were for having made no progress following 20 years of therapy.

My second conference session was an opportunity for the audience to ask me questions. I commenced this with a scathing attack on the conference. 'How are all those books and stickers helping you?' I challenged them. 'How far along the healing path are you? Some of you have been in therapy twenty years and got nowhere! Why?'

After this, one therapist pulled me to the conference organiser in the foyer and practically shouted at her, 'Why wasn't Fiona in the main room?! She should have been a main speaker! She's amazing! What she said was amazing!'

Multiple attendees asked me to write the content of my presentation down, asked for my book, asked me to write a book, asked me when my book was being released. I had no book, I told them, nor any intention of writing one.

Another therapist approached me and said that her client, who was not suicidal, 'committed suicide' at Colin Ross' Institute. It should be impossible to commit suicide in such a facility. That is the point of a hospital for potentially suicidal DID clients.

'Do you trust Colin Ross?' I asked.

'I don't know…' she responded tearfully.

Only two fellow speakers introduced themselves to me over the entire four days. Most speakers glared or stared oddly at me and the victims who flocked to speak with me. My attendance had been used to market the conference and draw victims from all over, including Las Vegas, who came specifically to see me.

The true reason for inviting me to the USA came next: Alaska.

ALISON MILLER

A Tacoma Police social worker lured me to Alaska under the guise of assisting with a two-week intensive intervention with an alleged DID client. My assistant, Nicky, had been harping on about visiting Alaska, so the decision to go seemed an obvious way of pleasing her. So, I swapped my plans to visit my family in Canada, for Autumn in Alaska. Nicky and I travelled to Anchorage at our own expense.

Canadian psychologist Alison Miller was the DID expert supervisor in this case. Nicky and I were placed on a roster of volunteers who 'baby-sat' the client at night. We were collected from the airport in Anchorage by social worker Kimber Olson who drove us to a remote cottage in Eagle River Valley. Nicky and I were not briefed or given a chance to speak alone with Kimber, prior to being left alone with the client named Sarah. In fact, we never got to speak with Kimber about the client.

At the cottage, Kimber told Nicky and I (again, in front of the client) that Sarah was prone to self-harming by cutting. Kimber placed four rolls of cloth bandages on the table and told us what to do in the likely event Sarah cut herself. We were to bandage Sarah's wounds but not contact the hospital or the police because both departments contained members of the offending cult who ritually abused the client. The large collection of kitchen knives, and the hunting knife sitting in one of the cottage bedrooms also struck me as counterproductive. Kimber did not remove these in preparation for Sarah's stay, nor did she suggest they be removed. Nicky later removed and hid them of her own volition.

Nicky and I had no transport. The cottage had no cell phone reception. It did have a landline and internet access. Kimber said she would phone us with the internet password. She instructed me to provide the internet password to Sarah who worked in IT at a local University. Her being allowed computer access seemed to contradict the expressed goal of isolating the client from her alleged cult perpetrators. Kimber also permitted the client to go out with a friend (her former therapist) one evening, which also seemed counterproductive to severing external contact. *Why, then, are we in a cabin in the middle of nowhere?* I wondered. Yep, that is the point where I should have returned to Anchorage for some halibut and home-brewed root beer. But then I would not have the following awesome story, or dirt on Alison Miller.

The Eagle River cottage was situated in wild bear and moose territory where, I was later told, residents had been attacked while simply taking out their trash. Nicky and I were not warned of the potential risk associated with man-eating wildlife. I specifically asked whether it was safe for us to hike, whether there were bears, and whether I needed bear mace. I was told we were safe from bears and did not need mace. It was akin to my assuring visiting Alaskans it's safe to swim in the Aussie ocean at night.

So, the following day, Nicky and I went hiking on a nearby trail. The next day, I hiked for four hours to the top of a nearby mountain. . . alone. I noticed fresh berry-flavoured bear scat all over. Wide-eyed locals later told me I certainly was at risk of being attacked by a bear - or even a moose, and that the safest thing to do was make a lot of noise as you hike, to scare off the bears. I inadvertently did this.

Knowing I was trapped in a setup, I began dialoguing with God out aloud during my solo hike. I was on a remote mountain in the middle of Alaska with no-one to call me nuts. So, I went for it, voiced my anger aloud. 'Meet me at the top of that mountain!' I shouted at the sky. 'Come down and have it out with me, face to face!'

Every time I reached what I thought was the peak, my shoulders slumped at realising it was another optical illusion behind which the genuine peak teasingly sat. I repeatedly fell for the same deception. I pressed on, pointing at what must be the actual peak, and yelling at God like a lunatic, 'Meet me at the top of that mountain!'

Eventually, I reached the top. I was metres from the tip, and breathless, when something big, black and silent blocked out the blue sky. It buzzed directly over my head. Once it passed me, I heard the familiar hum of chopper blades.

My gut dropped. *Oh no!* A black helicopter – the type you only read about on conspiracy websites. The mechanical beast stopped nearby, turned sideways to me, and just hovered there, looking at me. *They got me! I'm dead!* I surveyed the scene for fresh ideas, knowing I was trapped. There was nowhere to hide. A dozen excuses for my death flashed through my mind - Stupid Aussie tourist fell off remote mountain during loan hike…

Suddenly, the took off toward Anchorage. I lifted my tablet and began filming its departure. Once it was out of sight, I looked around for somewhere to shelter. There was nothing except a small cleft in one side of the mountain top. I pressed myself against the cleft while I gathered myself.

The sound of chopper blades returned. I stretched my head around the corner to see a green army helicopter with a long thin gun on its nose. The craft travelled up the valley a little further, before turning around and returning to base. *That's more normal*, I sighed with relief, but filmed it anyhow. Then I started my decent. It was getting late and the Alaskan freeze would soon set in.

That evening, I watched in wonderment as my dissociated right brain had a little chat with the CIA asset we were babysitting. I smiled sweetly and warned Sarah: 'I'm confident my training more than equips me for whatever you think you have planned.'

Nicky and had already endured two sleepless night when the asset descended the stairs at 1am. She growled 'cunt' at me, turned off all the lights, and chanted: 'The shedding of blood for the atonement of sins.' Sarah entered the kitchen, pulled a large 40cm that she pre-planted in a drawer, and pointed this at Nicky who stood nearby. I approached, and Sarah began waved the knife back and forth between Nicky and me. Then I stepped between Nicky and the psycho. ‘Drop the *knife*!’ I demanded while mentally preparing to grab the nearby chair and smash it over her head.

Sarah froze. The knife fell from her raised hand. I switched on the light.

I spent the night chatting with Sarah in the loungeroom. I also emailed Kimber Olson and relayed what had just occurred.

The following morning, I phoned Kimber Olson. During our conversation, Kimber told me she had expected something like the knife incident to occur. She said Alison Miller had advised her not to spend the night with the client, and in her next breath she asked me to babysit Sarah alone in the cabin for one more night. Kimber acted surprised when I declined. I asked Kimber for Alison Miller’s phone number.

I phoned Alison who played down the knife incident, concluding the client would likely have used the knife on herself instead of us. I disagreed, as did the Seattle homicide detective I described the experience to, who pointed out the obvious clue - the knife was aimed at Nicky and I, not Sarah. Alison Miller also expected Nicky and I to babysit Sarah another night.

I emailed Kimber Olsen and told her Nicky and I were at risk and would leave with her as soon as possible. Kimber emailed me and said she would be collecting the client, and that Nicky and I may as well stay at the cottage another night. The set-up had become ridiculously obvious. Kimber repeatedly asked me whether I was going to inform the aggressive knife-wielding asset that we were leaving. I refused.

Despite the critical incident, Kimber delayed collecting Nicky and I until the following evening. This was disturbing because during the day, the client became increasingly agitated and aggressive toward us. Sarah berated me for speaking with Alison Miller about her. I responded, ‘Pulling a knife on us was a game changer.’

When Kimber Olson arrived, I asked to speak with her alone. She pulled a mocking face as though my request was strange, amusing even. During this conversation, Kimber said she had a bad gut feeling about staying overnight with the client. Kimber then informed us she would drop Nicky and I off at a hotel before taking the client back to her office for therapy. I did not want the client (or Kimber) knowing where we were staying, so I asked if we could instead use the internet at Kimber’s office block to locate a hotel. But Kimber dumped me and Nicky in the carpark outside her office block and made it clear we were not welcome inside to use her internet. It was dusk, below freezing, and we had no means of finding a hotel in Anchorage’s commercial district before sunset. We began walking.

The following day, I delivered my presentation to a group of therapists who were undergoing training in trauma and dissociation under Kimber Olson. The talk was well received.

‘How long have you been speaking at conferences?’ They asked me during question time.

‘This is my first time.’

‘Really? You wouldn’t know it. Tell people three years!’ they insisted.

I laughed.

Two experienced psychiatric workers spent the next few days showing us some well appreciated Alaskan hospitality. They fed us home-caught halibut and chartered a private boat to tour the glaciers. I wondered to the health professionals whether things were ‘done a little differently in Alaska.’

‘No,’ the horrified professionals informed me. Their colleague had severely breached Alaska’s ethical standards and protocols. The two women continually checked whether Kimber Olsen had contacted us yet. Nicky started showing signs of a trauma response, and the usual protocol was to debrief victims of a critical incident. Yet Kimber never even asked us asked us what happened, and never contacted us again. So, upon returning to Seattle, I arranged for the Tacoma Police Social Worker to take us to debrief with Alison Miller in nearby Canada. Miller agreed to this arrangement but cancelled at the last minute for unconvincing reasons. Alison Miller never communicated with us again.

* * *

When I returned home to Australia, I relayed my Alaskan adventure to former Special Forces soldier, Tim Roy. I did not say what I thought the black helicopter was. I simply relayed the details and then asked for Tim's opinion.

'Fiona,' Tim replied, 'that black helicopter was exactly what you thought it was.'

I knew the helicopter intended to pick me up on that mountain top. I knew, the moment its black belly passed over me. I knew it from its peculiar movements, the way it seemed to baulk and reconsider. *What stopped it from picking me up?* I puzzled - until it dawned on me: When the helicopter's occupants looked down at me, they did not see a lone figure atop that mountain. They saw someone with me. God had met me at the top of the mountain after all.

* * *

'Do you know Michael Salter,' the Alaskan therapists questioned me following my presentation.

'Never heard of him before the Seattle conference,' I responded.

The Tacoma Police social worker had shown me some texts between her and Salter that I found irritating. Fellow Australian Michael Salter presented on DID in Seattle and Alaska in 2015 and said the opposite to what I said: that the Australian government has never been involved in organised child abuse, ritual abuse or mind control, and that his studies concluded this type of abuse was non-existent.

'I will deal with Michael Salter when I return to Australia.'

Michael Salter describes himself as an 'expert' in 'complex trauma,' 'organised child abuse,' and 'complex forms of victimisation including organised abuse and technologically-facilitated abuse.' Salter wrote articles with titles like, 'Why does it take victims of child sex abuse so long to speak up?' and co-authored an article on DID with Warrick Middleton (who said ritual abuse is a 'metaphor for incest'). Michael Salter sits on the ISSTD (*International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation*) Board of Directors, and he is an Associate Editor of *Child Abuse Review* (journal of the British Association for the Study and Prevention of Child Abuse and Neglect). He previously sat on the *Blue Knot Foundation* Board of Directors (the organisation Tim Roy says sabotaged his case against VIP perpetrators by refusing to hand police copies of his evidence.)

I phoned Michael Salter on 11 April 2018, and introduced myself, 'Hi Michael, this is Fiona Barnett. I'm writing a book and I called you to clarify something. I spoke on trauma and dissociation in America, and the therapists I spoke with in Seattle and Alaska said they heard you speak previously, and that you told them there was no government involvement in ritual abuse and mind control in Australia. Is that right?'

Salter: 'I think they're referring to 2015 when I spoke on organised and ritual abuse. I talked about my research with forty or so survivors who, when describing electro-shock and other methods, did not do so in connection to the Australian military. It's a different situation to the US where there have been credible, consistent reports. Colin Ross has obtained evidence under FOI. We always have a challenge when allegations are not documented, when we go public with some things we think we know but can't prove. The trauma industry has suffered from people going public and making public claims about people and organisations which they couldn't prove. There is a need for evidence more than survivor testimony.'

Me: 'You say there's no evidence of CIA mind control in Australia. What about MK-ULTRA Subproject 84 that was conducted at Sydney University in 1960 under the supervision of Martin Orne? Orne and Evans subsequently published an article about that research in a major journal. MK-ULTRA research was conducted at every major Australian university.'

Salter: 'A few subproject names thrown about. That's just hearsay. That proves nothing.'

Me: 'In their published articles, these people acknowledge that their research was financed by the Human Ecology Fund - which was a CIA cut-out for funding MK-ULTRA research, as recorded in the US Library of Congress. That's called a paper trail! I'm in contact with James Rothstein who was appointed to the first taskforce in the US to investigate organised pedophilia. He discovered a VIP pedophile ring that went all the way to the Whitehouse. He said Watergate solely concerned trying to obtain VIP pedophile records being held at Democratic headquarters. He said they discovered an identical pedophile ring in Australia that involved Australian prime ministers, and he is placing me in touch with Australians who worked on this same ring. He said that every time he got somewhere, arrested or charged a VIP, it was shut down under national security. He said every cop who took this above street level was shut down. The same thing happens in Australia. That's exactly what happened to Reina Michaelson when she tried to expose this in Victoria.'

Salter raised his voice, 'I had a lot to do with that case and that is not what happened.'

Me: 'I know all about that case too. Reina told me that she was placed under something she called a D-notice, and when I saw her in Sydney, she said she was under surveillance by ASIO.'

Salter: 'This is an area that puts people under a lot of pressure, causing them to become paranoid. Reina talked about electronic weapons and people following her...'

Me: 'You mentioned Colin Ross. I spoke at his conference, only I didn't know it was his conference because that was hidden. When I was there, a therapist approached me and told me her client suspiciously died in Colin Ross' clinic. Then a retired detective told me he researched Colin Ross and found out he had a dubious background including being fired from a hospital for ethical breaches and having a disproportionate number of patients die in his care. Then victims complained to me that Ross mocked them during his conference presentation.'

Salter: 'Colin Ross is a weird dude! He's just weird! A lot of paranoia often arises in this field. Everybody currently working in this field is accused of being a perpetrator. That's the first accusation made. I've even been accused. Avoid exaggeration. We must be careful what we take public, what we can't prove.'

Me: 'What constitutes evidence?'

Salter: 'What are we proving? We can use victim testimony to prove that people are using electrodes.'

Me: 'So, you say you interviewed forty victims and concluded solely from their witness testimony that ritual abuse and mind control exist. Yet you dismiss the testimonies of victims who witnessed government organised child trafficking. What's the difference? How can you believe one witness testimony but not another?'

Salter: 'It's a big jump from making general claims to saying agencies are involved. Stepping forward with the VIP story gets us nowhere without the evidence. One reason perpetrators get away with it is because the public don't know the basics. The basic process of education is needed because people are stuck in a conspiracy mindset. Ninety-nine percent of professionals are good people. Most of my students want to become police officers. Police need to be trained in how to interview DID victims.'

Me: 'That's not the problem.'

Salter: 'Yes, it is! Police need to recognise what to do when a victim starts switching mid-interview.'

Me: 'I attended police interviews after I had integrated. The cop who took my statements was clean. But I was cold called by a lawyer who told me the cop above the one who took my statements, the one in charge of my investigation, was involved in the child trafficking network. Sure enough, she stopped my case. A lack of training may be a contributing factor, and it may be a tactic employed to prevent victims being helped, but the main problem is getting police to take our statements in the first place. Victims like me never get anywhere in the first place.'

Salter: 'I interviewed fifty survivors of severe abuse including ritual abuse, and many of them made statements and some saw their perpetrators convicted.'

Me: *Oh, fifty now?* 'You must be dealing with a different population. During the past few years, I've met hundreds of victims of government child trafficking, and not one of them had any success with the police or courts. What typically happens with us is, we make a complaint, the cops raid our home at five am and drag us off to prison for something that was dealt with twenty years ago.'

Salter: 'Saying there is a criminal hierarchy, or that the CIA was here, and posting it all over websites and YouTube, is pointless. Proving anything from thirty years ago is almost impossible.'

Me: 'That reminds me of the Royal Commission who told me to my face that they had no intention of helping current victims, that they exist to help future victims. My response to that is - current victims *are* the future.'

Salter: 'There is no organised child trafficking network. It's like drugs, lots of people and small groups all over the place deal in drugs; it's the same with pedophiles. There is no organised criminal hierarchy trafficking children.'

Me: 'There *is* a hierarchy - because I witnessed it. So, you're saying victims shouldn't bother reporting historical crimes?'

Salter: 'I'm not advising anyone to do anything.'

Me: 'I put in a historical complaint to the health board against Antony Kidman. He was dead within a month of my notification. His security team told the press that he was immediately placed on suicide watch following my complaint. See, I was not the first to complain about him.'

Salter: 'That's great!'

Me: 'The Daruk boys' home is currently under investigation because of my efforts. I pursued that matter, publicised it and harassed the police until they had to investigate.'

Salter: 'That's great!'

Me: 'My winning tactic was to come from a position of experience where I knew that I was dealing with a criminal hierarchy. And I achieved that outcome through what I published on my websites and YouTube. You say victims of organised pedophilia should not make police statements and should not publish our witness testimonies online. So, what you are effectively saying is - victims like me should not have a voice. I went and made police witness statements knowing they would go nowhere, because it was healing. Ask any genuine victim and they will tell you the most important thing to them is justice. All victims have a right to justice.'

Salter: 'We have a different standard regarding the public domain and publishing what you are unable to prove. Like, saying that you have different brain structure, reduces your credibility.'

Me: 'Sorry?' I asked incredulously, 'Are you talking about the scientific research published in peer edited journals in which functional MRi scans show that both brain hemispheres light up when high IQ people perform cognitive tasks, as opposed to when someone with an average IQ performs the same tasks, only the left hemisphere is activated?'

Salter snidely repeated, 'Saying that you have different brain structure reduces your credibility.'

Me: 'Are you familiar with the work of Linda Silverman, with the research I studied in gifted education and psychology?'

Salter: 'When you say something that contradicts history, you lose credibility. When you say Whitlam and Kerr, who were arch enemies, were in a homosexual relationship, you lose credibility.'

Me: 'Firstly, a mainstream journalist wrote an article saying exactly that.'

Salter: 'A *dodgy* journalist.'

Me: 'Secondly, I witnessed them having sex at a pedophile orgy at Parliament House, along with many other men from opposing political parties. Their public façades have nothing to with how these politicians act behind closed doors. And, who appointed John Kerr to the position of Governor General in the first place? Gough Whitlam did, against the better judgement of his party. So, Whitlam and Kerr certainly were not enemies at that time, were they? I spoke with a journalist who wrote favourable articles about me. He said he once spoke to a couple of spooks who told him that all senior politicians are pedophiles because that is how they are controlled, and he asked me if that was my experience. Do you know David Donovan who edits the Independent Australia journal that I wrote articles for?'

Salter: 'I know of him.'

Me: 'There's a reason he believed my story. Do you know the film Muriel's Wedding?'

Salter: 'Yes.'

Me: 'That film is mostly based on a true story that occurred in my local area. The character in the movie called Diedre Chambers is based on a real-life woman who ran a local post office with her husband; they had twin boys. David Donovan met one of the twins when he came to pest-control his house. When he realised David was a journalist, he said he had a story for him. When this twin was young, local mayor Tom Hogan (film-maker P.J. Hogan's father) took him to pedophile parties attended by politicians at Terranora Lakes Country Club, and on an helicopter with Prime Minister Bob Hawke and Opposition Leader Andrew Peacock who sat and got drunk together like they were old mates… Michael, I just think that when you tell people at conferences that you interviewed forty or fifty victims, and because they didn't say anything about government involvement you conclude there's no evidence of government involvement - I think you're better off saying nothing at all, otherwise you are only discrediting victims like me.'

Pause.

Salter: ‘Sorry to cut this short, but I have to get some work done. And sorry things got a little heated at the end.’

Me: ‘That’s okay. This has been a very productive conversation. You have just shown me the weaknesses in my story that I must address. You have shown me the exact direction in which I need to take my book. Thank you for that, Michael.’

Salter: ‘Oh, err…okay. Goodbye.’

‘Bye.’

I phoned the USA to bitch about Mr Salter with David Shurter who concluded, ‘You’ve been triggered because he just spoke to you the way our perpetrators did.’

Then I bitched to James Shanahan who told me Salter was a gay lawyer, and that he was one of the ‘40 to 50’ victims Salter interviewed for his PhD. James concluded, ‘He’s used people like me to advance himself. The fact he’s arguing with you and criticising you tells you what side he’s on.’

I spent my last embers of anger phoning Dr Reina Michaelson who asked me whether Salter had mentioned that he worked for a NSW Labor Party politician prior to entering the child abuse industry.

No, Michael Salter had not told me he previously worked for the pedophile political party that I was sex trafficked to and by as a child, just before he sprung out of nowhere to steer the narrative and advise therapists concerning ‘complex trauma and organised sexual abuse’ with zero relevant mental health qualifications or clinical experience.

* * *

A Life Sentence

I roll my eyes when some Uni communications student starts bleating a Noam Chomskyian critique of corporate media and why we shouldn't be trusted.
- Ross Coulthart, ASIO

ABUSE SURVIVOR FIONA BARNETT: THE 'CANDY GIRL'

Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 13 October 2015.

In the first of a two-part update, pedophile ring survivor Fiona Barnett shares her experiences since testifying before the Royal Commission into Institutional Responses to Child Abuse, including involvement in a documentary, the discovery of key abusers and her ongoing fight to have authorities investigate her allegations.

I left my 2013 Royal Commission hearing with dashed hopes and a reignited need for trauma counselling. So, I applied for counselling through NSW Victim Services, who allocated a psychologist at Living Well Psychology and Counselling.

Following my initial consultation and the disclosure of my Royal Commission statement, the psychologist wrote in a report to Victim Services that police investigated me for murdering the relative who abused me as a child — my step-grandfather and Nazi war criminal Peter Holowczak. (This pedophile actually committed suicide in Sydney whilst I was residing in Brisbane.) The psychologist's bizarre allegation contradicted everything I said during our initial meeting, plus the content of the Royal Commission statement I had shared. My subsequent complaint resulted in the psychologist appearing before a professional conduct panel.

NSW Victim Services subsequently approved a replacement psychologist. Soon after commencing therapy with me, my new therapist was allegedly stalked by thugs who followed her home one night from her clinic to her remote property and circled her car. Saunders consequently provided a formal witness statement about the incident to Detective Terry Frost of the Tweed Heads police. The same men simultaneously stalked my two friends who also reported their experiences to police. The thugs then tailgated me to my daughter's primary school, but I cut their car off and photographed its number plate.

I was again stalked and tailgated on the day of perpetrator Antony Kidman's funeral (see pictures above right). Journalist Jonica Bray, accompanied by a photographer and makeup artists, visited my home to interview me for a potential Woman's Day magazine story. This team and my family witnessed, photographed and spoke with the two men who allegedly admitted they had been hired to 'keep an eye on' me.

Since my 2013 hearing, I have fought to make formal witness statements to police.

In May 2014, my husband accompanied me to Tweed Heads police station where I spent two days detailing multiple crimes of child sex trafficking, abduction, rape and murder. Detective Terry Frost omitted many crimes involving perpetrators known to have since died. He concluded that while he found my allegations 'left field,' there were numerous unsolved historical murders in the locations I identified. He said he would immediately send my statements to Sutherland Shire police.

Prior to making these statements, I had spent a year reliving my childhood abuse with my psychologist.

The incidents of crime were so numerous and the therapy process so gruelling, my physical health was severely impacted. To illustrate, the therapy triggered vertigo and heart problems. On one occasion, these symptoms struck me in the surf and I nearly drowned. Consequently, my therapist was reluctant to work with my memories. This slowed the process down, so that by the time the precious opportunity to make witness statements with Detective Terry Frost arose, I had not finished processing everything. So, I avoided addressing many crimes during my initial statement making, aware of my legal right to include them later under my allocated event number: 54671514.

My subsequent attempts to report the remaining crimes were thwarted. My emails and phone calls to police were stonewalled for a year. Further, in contravention of my legal rights as a victim of crime, NSW police did not inform me of the progress of the statements I had made.

On 6 March 2015, I wrote to the NSW Police Commissioner and requested a chance to complete my witness statements. The Sex Crimes Squad replied on the Commissioner's behalf, informing me that my initial statements were now with Sutherland Shire detectives.

Also, in March 2015, I contacted the Federal Police regarding the crimes I experienced in Canberra — including being prostituted under the name 'Candy Girl' to Parliament House and to an international political leader in the back of a military airplane at Fairbairn Airport. My communication was ignored until I appealed to the Federal Police Commissioner. An Operation Attest officer named Louise Hawke contacted me and requested I email her details of my abuse. I did this and attached numerous crime scene illustrations. The officer subsequently phoned me and said that, while she believed my account, the historical nature of my complaints made them too difficult to prosecute. Officer Hawke assured me my information had been placed on file for future reference and referred me to ACT Victim Services, who said I qualified for counselling services but not compensation, because the ACT crimes committed against me had occurred prior to their 1985 cut-off date.

Last July, Australia's 60 Minutes aired a story about a Westminster pedophile ring titled, Spies, Lords and Predators. I was abused by an Australian equivalent of that UK ring, yet there are notable differences. I was trafficked to international VIPs both within Australia and overseas. This ring involved elements of the Australian military. My perpetrators operated in close collaboration with the USA government and they employed sophisticated methods for keeping their operation hidden.

Following the airing of their UK story, 60 Minutes were inundated with phone calls from Australian pedophile ring victims. A leading child abuse advocacy centre nominated me to 60 Minutes who are now working on an Australian version of their UK ring story. 60 Minutes told me they had narrowed their list of Australian victims to 30 possible interviewees. So, somewhere out there sit 29 alleged fellow victims of the same Australian VIP pedophile ring that abused me. I urge those potential interviewees to contact me via IA. It would be nice to have my memories validated by another human, instead of being constantly bashed by ignorance and denial.

As requested, I sent 60 Minutes reporter Ross Coulthart the information I had so far supplied state and federal police. Whilst interviewing my friends and associates, Coulthart questioned the validity of my testimony. He described my memory of being assaulted by a USA politician in the back of a USA military plane at an Australian military airport as far-fetched. Just what do people think international child trafficking looks like? If it is documented that the USA military and CIA have been involved in drugs and arms trafficking, would child trafficking be a physical or moral impossibility for these same people?

Ross Coulthart also questioned my memory that a Governor-General raped me during a pedophile orgy at Parliament House, based on something that all journalists apparently knew — that this married man was a closet homosexual. Such a conclusion ignores the nature of perpetrators' perverted fetishes and the various reasons why VIPs assault children. Within the context of the crime ring I witnessed, homosexuality, heterosexuality, paedophilia, bestiality and necrophilia were not mutually exclusive. Perpetrators did not always engage in these activities out of personal desire or preference, but rather as a means of exerting power and humiliating their victims.

This year, an independent documentary team began researching my child abuse experiences. These producers quickly found ample evidence to support my allegations. They discovered the identity of the man my siblings and I were instructed to call 'Dr Mark.' Leonas Petrauskas was the adopted son of a Lithuanian opera star, and he played basketball for Lithuania. (My Nazi war criminal grandmother was Lithuanian and friends with Petrauskas.) Petrauskas owned and worked at the Engadine Medical Centre on the corner of Boronia Ave and Old Princess Highway. The documentary team obtained copies of Petrauskas' family photo albums, passports and Nazi papers. These documents show he was the Nazi doctor who matched the description of him I have been supplying to institutions for 25 years.

Dr Petrasukas' crimes were so numerous, evidence of them erupted wherever we looked — and even where we didn't.

During the documentary excursion, I approached a couple in the Engadine McDonalds' car park and asked them for directions. Within minutes, the woman told me she was another victim of Dr Petrauskas, who referred her for deep sleep treatment with Harry Bailey at the notorious Chelmsford private hospital, which has reported links to Dr Ewan Cameron's unethical electroshock experiments in Canada.

Dr Petrauskas attended Sydney University at the same time as another key perpetrator, Dr Antony Kidman. The documentary team located Antony Kidman's former North Sydney home at 16 William Edward St, Longueville. This matched the description I provided the NSW Psychology Board in my complaint against him. Via realestate.com, I recognised the lounge room and pool in which I was sexually assaulted by Kidman and his famous stage actor friend who is still alive. The assault occurred during a post-production party held at Kidman's house.

My researchers located and interviewed another perpetrator — a woman who assisted Dr Petrauskas while he performed an abortion on me. I witnessed this same woman lure, drug and murder a young male surfer at a remote Kurnell beach.

If that is the type of information amateurs found in their spare time using a $60 internet connection, imagine what the NSW Police could achieve.

My documentary producer contacted the NSW Police media liaison officer and asked why police refused to take my remaining witness statements. The Detective who took my initial statements immediately contacted me and said he would not take my remaining statements until he had heard what Sutherland Police were doing regarding my initial statements. I argued that I had far more information to add to the content of my original statements.

The detective finally directed me to travel to Sydney to complete my witness statements there. Consequently, I approached a Sydney officer I trust and offered to attend Police Headquarters at my own expense. I am currently liaising with a Sutherland detective and have made tentative arrangements to meet her at Police Headquarters next month to finish my witness statements. I hope this occurs and that I can achieve some kind of closure to my child abuse history.

Upon finding the identity of Leonas Petrauskas, as well as another offending medical doctor who is still alive, I contacted the NSW Coroner and suggested he investigate every birth and death certificate these doctors ever signed. I said I had witnessed Dr Petrauskas fabricate medical documentation to cover for crimes including murders. The NSW Coroner said he could not conduct such an investigation without the direction of the NSW Police. So, I forwarded the NSW Coroner's response to the NSW Police Commissioner, asking him to direct the coroner to investigate my allegations. The Commissioner thanked me in writing for supplying the information and assured me it had been forwarded to the appropriate designation.

'What, the paper shredder?!' quipped my current Victim Services counsellor.

The corroborative evidence that my documentary makers continue to find in support of my allegations has been offered to the authorities. If the authorities are not interested in this evidence, perhaps the public is. My documentary, Candy Girl, is at the editing stage.

*　　*　　*

FIONA BARNETT: THE CANDY GIRL, THE ROYAL COMMISSION & THE NSW POLICE

Fiona Barnett, *Independent Australia*, 23 October 2015.

In the second part of her update, Fiona Barnett details the shocking mistreatment she has endured from certain NSW Police – and others – since testifying to the Child Abuse Royal Commission about her experiences as a victim of an international child sex trafficking ring.

The Child Abuse Royal Commission has invested government dollars in an initiative called 'Message to Australia':

> *…an opportunity for the people who have bravely told their stories to the Royal Commission to send a short message to the Australian community about their experience and their hopes for creating a safer environment for children in the future.*

Select victim messages will be published and stored in the public library — under 'BS.' If my message were selected for inclusion, it would read:

> *Don't come forward as I have done! Don't place your trust in investigative bodies, police and therapists. It's not worth the risk to you and your family. If you insist on attending professional counselling, do so under a pseudonym and pay cash.*

Here's why:

At my 2013 hearing, I made some reasonable requests: witness protection, a chance to provide my testimony to police and for police to investigate my allegations. Two years on, I am still waiting for these requests to be fulfilled. I have not heard from my Royal Commission case manager since March 2014 when I provided her with additional information. Instead, I have experienced an increase in police indifference and harassment.

Certain NSW Police dismissed my witness testimony against a VIP pedophile ring as unworthy of collection and investigation. However, they simultaneously used the witness statements I provided them as grounds for suspending my pistol licence. On 24 December 2014, its Firearms Registry gave me two days to surrender my licence or face possible criminal charges. Their deadline counted Christmas and Boxing Day as working days. It appears that Tweed Heads Police sent my witness statements to the state Firearms Registry (located in nearby Murwillumbah) instead of to Sutherland Shire detectives. When I confronted the detective with whom I made my statements about this action, he exclaimed: 'I didn't do that!' I told Detective Terry Frost I knew he was innocent.

During a recent conversation with the Sutherland detective inspector in charge of my case, I was informed that she only recently requested my statements from Tweed Heads Police and that she has not yet read them. I heard from the Firearms Registry months before NSW Police told me whether my witness statements were in the hands of Sydney detectives, or if my allegations were being investigated. Bettina Walker, manager of the NSW Police Firearms Registry, informed me that she had served 20 years as a police officer and: 'I know from experience the content of your statements is true.'

She said that I must undergo a psychiatric evaluation, based on my statement content, to determine whether I was a risk to myself or the public because of the crimes perpetrated against me in my childhood. This response from the NSW Police reminded me of AHPRA's similar treatment of my child abuse history. Members of the Murwillumbah Pistol Club said they had not previously seen police target someone's registration as they had mine. They concluded it was retaliation for my whistleblowing against an international child trafficking ring.

Certain NSW Police further contributed to my harassment, by ignoring my requests for their assistance. During Halloween 2014, I arrived home to find my child's dog baited and lying in a pool of blood. Days following the baiting, my next-door neighbour approached my property in a rage and started smashing at our locked front gate. He screamed at me: 'I should have killed that dog! I'm gonna kill that dog!' He motioned to jump our fence.

A friend (an ex-police officer) was visiting my home at the time. She instinctively intervened and managed the neighbour's violence. It took her five minutes to make him leave my property. She called the police who attended and provided an event number: 56705529. The police promised to at least caution the neighbour - but did not.

I am convinced the neighbour would have assaulted me, because he previously assaulted my brother without provocation. Shortly after moving from Wollongong (a major centre of my childhood abuse), the neighbour approached my brother, who was entering his car to attend work. The neighbour ambushed him from behind, grabbed him by the throat, and pinned him to his car. The neighbour, who my brother had not previously met, grinned and dared my brother: 'Go on! Hit me!'

By Easter 2015, harassment of my family reached unprecedented intensity. Our problem neighbour targeted us via his umpteenth vexatious complaint to local authorities — this time regarding a fence we legally erected years ago. Then another one of my high-profile perpetrators died, triggering another adverse reaction. Soon after, I suffered a mild head injury in a bizarre car accident. Not long later, our family therapist caved under the unique pressures of working with an incomparable case of 'complex trauma.' Losing our family therapist at such a critical moment, the timing appeared orchestrated. Just after our therapist emailed her sudden decision, our problem neighbour intentionally coated our property in asthma-inducing fibreglass debris for the third time this year.

Immediately after that, local police targeted our young daughter. Police attended our family home after 8pm on a Friday. They claimed a pink iPhone 4 had been reported missing three hours earlier and that the Find my iPhone app had determined it was located inside our home. The senior investigating officer dogmatically asserted that the phone app constituted infallible technology and was accurate to within two metres. She immediately concluded our 10-year-old daughter had stolen the phone, dismissing any testimony, evidence or suggestion our daughter might be innocent.

The officer was defensive, aggressive, sarcastic and evasive. She could not provide us with an event number. She threatened to visit our home and interview our daughter to "jog her memory" concerning the phone's whereabouts. She communicated to us that her questioning would frighten our child into confessing she stole the phone.

I told this officer she did not have permission to interview my child and that she would have to obtain a warrant. I went without sleep for two days while I placed my daughter in hiding and lodged a number of complaints to relevant authorities, including to the NSW Police Commissioner. This was not the first time I had been forced to hide my children.

The offending officer effectively accused my child of committing a crime while in the care of her school. Consequently, the school became heavily involved. The school's principal phoned police and told them it was impossible for our child to have come into contact with the missing phone. The senior investigating officer hung up on the principal who subsequently labelled her, '... a disgrace to the police force.'

My complaints resulted in a formal investigation – which is ongoing – an apology of sorts and a Police showbag being presented to my bewildered 10-year-old. Every investigating officer who attended our home said they had not witnessed the screen shot evidence. I have yet to be shown the alleged screen shot. I do not believe the evidence exists.

When I challenged the offending officer, by asking whether it was possible for someone to fabricate the screenshot, she agreed it 'could be a possibility' but that in 20 years of policing she could not see why that would occur. After ten years of intense harassment from a variety of course, including the polices, I fully appreciate why someone would seek to fabricate evidence against my family.

Such as when police ambushed three family homes and held guns to my husband, I believe the iPhone incident was fabricated as a means of re-traumatising my family and silencing my witness testimony. Police demonstrated far more enthusiasm for investigating a missing pink iPhone 4, than the countless incidents of child abduction, rape and murder I witnessed as a child victim of an international sex trafficking ring.

In September 2015, despite having been warned three times by the Tweed Shire Council not to, the offending neighbour again deliberately coated my home in fibre glass debris. A lawyer subsequently advised me to attend the local Court and apply for an AVO. I followed this instruction.

Tweed Heads Court staff asked me whether my children would be included on the AVO, to which I replied: 'Absolutely.' The Court then told me that only the police could take out the AVO. I said the police refused to do this. The Court instructed me to immediately march next door and ask the Tweed Heads police to take out the AVO on behalf of my family. I followed this instruction also.

A senior Tweed Heads police officer told me there were insufficient recent incidents for police to take out an AVO, that what the neighbour did in October 2014 constituted sufficient grounds, that he could not understand why officers did not do so in 2014, and that I would have to wait for the neighbour to build up a 'dossier' of offences and commit a serious act of violence against me or my family before police would act in our defence.

The officer provided me with yet another Event Number to add to my dossier: 61680488. He suggested that the neighbour continued to commit crimes against my family because I was ‘reactive.’ His theory for criminal motivation is inconsistent with the neighbour’s surprise physical attack on my brother who had never previously met the offender and so no reaction could have preceded that assault.

In short, the NSW Police have instructed me to wait for a violent man to successfully seriously injure me or my children in another surprise, unprovoked assault.

Forget Al Qaeda. Our family lives with the tangible threat of being intermittently terrorised by certain police and random citizens. People, including police and therapists, have offered glib remedies to our predicament: Just move house. Just act normal and polite when police turn up. Just ignore the neighbour. If you know you’re going to be attacked, just go on holiday.

We’ve tried all of that — and it doesn’t work. Such advice demonstrates ignorance of how elite crime rings operate. There is no avoiding an infinitely resourced network that has infiltrated every level of the Australian political and judicial system, as well as all the major establishment institutions. There is no reasoning with its members, whose confidence and arrogance stem from knowing they are protected.

The Australian public often say of child abuse victims: Why didn’t they speak up? Why didn’t they go to the police? If pedophile rings are as widespread as victims claim, why can’t the public see any evidence of it? Perhaps, after reading this article, people will better understand why.

I have endured decades of the types of incidents I describe here, including pet killings, attacks on my family and bizarre mistreatment from health professionals. I have experienced random, unprovoked attacks from complete strangers, an undesirable element within the police force and violent neighbours who suddenly migrate from significant childhood abuse locations. To the uninformed, these events appear to be mere coincidences or the result of something I must have done wrong. But to those with knowledge and experience, this is a recognisable pattern — the modus operandi of a powerful, well-funded child trafficking ring with a vested interest in silencing witnesses like me.

Therefore, when you see victims publicly testifying before the Royal Commission, or you encounter a masturbative collection of warm fuzzies boasting the title ‘Messages to Australia,’ spare a thought for the voiceless mass of victims like me, whose testimonies were indeed reported but will never be publicly disclosed or addressed — thereby preserving the myth of the existence of such abuse.

* * *

On Monday 2 November 2015, I took a 6am flight from Gold Coast airport to Sydney. I was scheduled to complete two days of police witness statements with two Sutherland detectives at Surrey Hills police station, beginning that day. During the flight, I sat in front of ABC *4 Corners* television presenter Kerry O’Brien who served as PM Gough Whitlam’s press secretary. The day before this flight, Kerry O’Brien launched his biography about his good friend of 40 years, Paul Keating. My press conference, which focussed on Paul Keating and Gough Whitlam being pedophiles, was held the Thursday before Kerry O’Brien’s weekend book launch. So, my press conference cast a shadow over the book launch of the journalist seated behind me for the next hour. (And people say there is no God.)

Nicky Davis, Australia's SNAP representative, was currently negotiating with ABC 4 Corners who expressed interest in interviewing me on television. They subsequently expressed greater interest in interviewing another victim of Bob Hawke who had come forward, the daughter of Bob Hawke's architect Kevin Borland (who had family photos featuring Bob plus two sisters who were willing to testify that she immediately disclosed Bob Hawke's assault to them).

I turned to the guest seated behind me and smiled, 'Hi, Kerry. I'm due to appear on your show.'

'Oh, really? Which story is that?'

'The VIP pedo ring. I'm the one who delivered the press conference last Thursday.'

Kerry O'Brien gasped in horror and dropped his gaze into the magazine on his lap.

'I'm on my way to Sydney to make two days of police witness statements.'

He stared in horror at his reading material, nodding out of synch with my words.

'Don't worry,' I assured him, 'The police will probably want to gag me from further media exposure anyhow.'

Kerry O'Brien announced his retirement from ABC Four Corners four days later.

After landing in Sydney, I spent the day providing witness statements in the company of Australia's SNAP representative, Nicky Davis, plus Sydney's top court support worker. The first day ended on the most traumatic part of the two days. For the first time in my life I described the crime scene where former Prime Minister Paul Keating raped and murdered a young blonde boy on a remote Kurnell beach, and doctor Leonas Petrauskas made me dig up the body. I began to sob. It took a moment for the three women to notice.

'Fiona are you okay?' they chimed.

No, I was not okay. I was contemplating the incident in depth for the first time in my life, simply because no one had ever asked me to detail it before. No therapist. No cop. No-one. No-one had ever cared enough to simply ask me what I saw.

Soon after, I floated out of the police station in a cloud of dissociation and headed toward Central train station. Nicky's voice was a distant echo as she insisted on accompanying me to Marrickville, an inner Sydney suburb where I was to meet Dr Reina Michaelson. I had booked accommodation at the Travelodge Hotel opposite Hyde Park in the city, but I sensed danger and cancelled at the last minute. I asked Reina to find me alternative accommodation and tell no one, including me. That way, I figured, if I did not know where I was staying, neither did anyone else. But ASIO already knew. The government obviously didn't want Reina and I speaking privately and comparing information, because ASIO began stalking Reina again from the moment we spoke. Reina even confronted an agent staking out her house in a white van. Reina had planned for us to meet at a café just outside Marrickville train station. So, I was surprised when she met me on the platform. We hugged. Then Reina's face went from smile to serious. 'Fiona, they're here for you.'

My gut dropped. 'Who's here?' knowing full well who she meant.

'There are two men stalking me. They're waiting for you outside the station.'

Nicky, Reina and I remained on the platform as we discussed our options. My training had already kicked in. Just then, a man brushed past us, growling menacingly.

'That's one of them!' Reina exclaimed.

I sized him up from behind. Military haircut, clean pressed blue work shorts, clean work boots, high viz yellow bib, off-grid communication device in his right hand. They were ASIO-T4 protective security thugs – and he was the ringleader.

Must protect Nicky and Reina, I thought. I noticed the smart phone in my hand and announced: 'I'm getting a photo.' I ran after the stalker and took several photos of him from behind. Then I got as close as possible to his back, positioned my phone, and yelled: 'Hey!' He turned around and I snapped a full-frontal shot. His face was clean shaven, his work clothes clean and crisp. It was 5pm and this guy had certainly not been at work all day. I spun around with the agility of an acrobat and took off toward Nicky and Reina.

'He's coming!' the girls exclaimed. We quickly exited the train station, but the stranger caught up with us just outside. His hands were tightly clenched, and his veins popped out of his outstretched neck as he struggled to contain his rage. I braced myself for a physical assault. I guarded my cell phone so he couldn't snatch it from me. His demeanour was reminiscent of the Holsworthy military thugs from my youth.

'Why did you take my photo!' he yelled at me. 'I was just returning home from work!'

I took a step forward and thrust my finger at his ugly face: 'You have been stalking her! (I pointed at Reina) and now you're stalking me! I'm calling the police!'

He flinched. 'No, *I'm* calling the police!'

We exited the platform with Nicky at rear. The thug walked a foot behind Nicky as he called police and alleged three women were harassing him. Nicky swung around and yelled for the person on the other end of the line to hear, 'If we are harassing you – then stop following us!'

Reina led us to a café around the corner from Marrickville train station. We sat at a table. 'There will be a fourth one standing across the road there,' I pointed across the road, 'observing the operation from a distance.'

'Yes, there was!' Reina and Nicky chimed. 'We saw him.'

A police car pulled up at the train station entrance which was out of our view. A young female officer began speaking with two of the ASIO agents. Nicky and Reina expressed their concern that the stalkers were trying for 'false arrest' against me. I noticed additional police cars circling us like sharks. 'Those guys only need one police mate,' I warned, 'and I'm stuffed.' I had asked the Sutherland detectives for their cell phone numbers in case something like this occurred, but they declined. I phoned Sutherland police station and asked for the detective who took my statement. The desk officer had no idea of my case and I had no time to explain it to him. 'Ma'am, stay there and we'll send an officer to you!'

No, I thought, *there are plenty police officers here already.*

Reina peeked around the corner again, to gauge what was happening.

'I'm out of here,' I told Nicky.

'No! You can't go!'

'I know what I'm doing. I must go now.'

'No, no! You can't go!'

'You're not listening. It's time for me to go.'

'Okay,' she resigned. 'Meet us at the Travel Lodge hotel.'

'Okay,' I lied.

In Nicky's words, she turned her head for a moment, looked back – I had disappeared into thin air.

I fled down a small backstreet at a brusque pace, but not so fast as to arouse suspicion. I turned right into the first tiny lane, to lose sight of the cop cars circling the main street. It was a dead end. At the far end of this lane, I pressed my body hard up against a slither of protruding brick wall and swapped my pink shirt for beige. I caught my breath and thanked God I had been swimming daily for the past two years.

I spied two shopkeepers chatting from their back porches. They were obviously wondering what I was doing. I offered, ‘Have you watched the news lately where they mentioned three prime ministers were pedophiles?’

‘I heard about that,’ responded one woman.

‘Well, that’s me. I’m the witness. I’m in Sydney making police statements and now I’m being chased by bad men.’

‘You go to police!’ her Asian friend demanded.

How could I explain? ‘Err, not really. That’s not the best thing right now. Some police are helping the pedophiles.’

Enough time had passed for me to move. I surveyed my options: scale a 10-foot brick wall at the dead end of the road or return the way I came. *I’m too old for this Jason Bourne shit!* I moaned. *I’m 46, not 26*.

The women read my mind. ‘You can go through that gate,’ one pointed to a spot behind me, ‘through their back yard, up their front veranda and out their front gate.’

‘Thanks,’ I waved and ran off. I traversed the suburban streets until I found a safe place to hide, from where I could monitor the passing traffic. My phone rang. It was my detective. I explained I was in a state of shock, trauma and dissociation, and I had to flee because I didn’t know whether the cops who turned up at the train station were good or bad. I asked her what my legal rights were concerning photographing a stranger on a station platform. She said she did not know but advised me to send the photos to multiple locations and delete them from my phone.

‘I’ve already done that,’ I said.

The detective tried to convince me to contact Nicky and Reina and reunite with them, otherwise there would be police looking for me out of concern for my safety.

‘Look,’ I explained, ‘unless you can convince me I’m not going to have some bullshit charge slapped against me by these pedo stalkers – I’m on the first flight out of here!’

‘No, don’t do that. We want you back tomorrow to finish the statements.’

‘From my perspective, I know it only takes one bad cop to cooperate with those stalkers. I need you to phone Marrickville police and sort this out. Then phone me back.’

I called my friend who lived in a nearby suburb.

‘What’s happening?’ she asked.

‘I’m in trouble. They’re after me. I’m hiding in the Marrickville backstreets.’

‘I’m at work. I’m forty-five minutes away. Can you get to my place?’

I hung up my mobile which immediately rang. It was my detective. She assured me I was not in trouble and that everything had been sorted with Marrickville police. She had contacted the female officer who responded to the stalkers’ call. ‘The men said they were perplexed that you took a photo, and that they were just innocently returning home from work.’

‘No. That’s not what they were doing. That’s not what two credible witnesses saw.’

‘The officer did suspect there was another side to the story. I’ve asked for her to send me her report.’

I emerged from my hiding place and walked down the street. I spied a man closing his business for the day and approached him, ‘Can you please call me a taxi from your phone? I don’t want to do it from mine.’ I explained my situation and that I was on the run from some unsavoury men.

He explained that there was a taxi depot nearby.

‘Can you please walk me to it?’

He agreed.

‘If you carry my bag for me,’ I held it out for him, ‘we will look like a couple.’

The stranger nodded and slung my black duffle bag over his shoulder. We walked several blocks to a taxi repair depot where my new friend instructed them to get me a taxi. Within 30 minutes, I was safe in the home of a prominent Sydney barrister.

That evening, I watched as ABC *Media Watch* presenter Paul Barry personally attacked me for daring to speak at a press conference about my child abuse, instead of critiquing the media’s coverage of my press conference as he was supposed to.

Reina Michaelson later phoned me and commented, ‘You were amazing. Everything you did was perfect.’

‘When will this end,’ I sighed.

‘Fiona, I think this is a life sentence.’

* * *

The NSW Police promised to visit my home and take an estimated five more days of witness statements. This never occurred. The NSW Police never contacted me again. The detective who took my statements did raid the Holowczak’s home with police dogs and did walk the streets interviewing neighbours who supported my account – but the police never told me this; I heard it from the residents. Later, I was contacted by a Sydney lawyer who basically told me the Sutherland detective in charge of my case, who grew up in Engadine, was a member of the child trafficking network she was supposedly investigating.

* * *

Reina was right: I serve a life sentence for crimes committed against me. Antony Kidman was right: I achieved nothing without the Luciferians’ support. The Luciferian network’s two-pronged attack - harassment and sabotage - is designed to make victims like me give up hope. It is designed to induce the state Kidman promoted: Learned Helplessness, ‘the condition in which a person suffers from a sense of powerlessness arising from a traumatic event or persistent failure to succeed.’

* * *

Source of Hope Within

Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. (1 Peter 3:15)

Bond University destroyed my career in October 2010. For two years leading up to that moment, I juggled study with debilitating stroke symptoms, rehabilitation, excessive scrutiny, sabotage, and my own children's special needs. Then suddenly my life was still. Suddenly I noticed I was deeply exhausted. Suddenly I had the time and headspace to sleep. I slept heavily most days. When not asleep, I watched Christian satellite television, listened to the Bible, or prayed. I prayed continually for three specific things: vindication, compensation, and reinstatement.

Three weeks into my hiatus, I fell into a deep sleep in front of the television. An hour later, I suddenly awoke. I was wide awake. I went from the deepest sleep, to being as awake as possible. My eyes remained shut as I heard a TV evangelist announce:

'GOD HAS HEARD YOUR PRAYERS!'

I immediately fell back into a deep slumber. Sometime later, I awoke again. My eyes stayed closed as I listened:

'DO NOT FRET ABOUT YOUR SCHOLASTIC CONCERNS.'

I fell deeply asleep again. Then I was suddenly alert, my still eyes closed.

'YOU WILL BE JUSTIFIED!'

I slept again, and again woke up to the pastor's loud voice:

'YOU WILL BE RECOMPENSED!'

Dead asleep. Then wide awake:

'YOU WILL BE REINSTATED!'

I fell asleep again. I awoke in time to hear the pastor's final words: 'I had not intended to give this sermon. I had something else planned. I don't know why I gave this sermon. Perhaps there is someone out there who needed to hear it.'

Jon ignored me when I tried to tell him that God spoke to me through the television set. So, I relayed the strange experience to my psychologist friend Luciana who laughed hard at my exhibiting classic signs of the very thing Bond tried framing me with.

The following Sunday, I awoke at 6am and could not fall back to sleep. I then did something I never usually did, I went into our lounge room, turned on the television and flicked through the Christian satellite channels. Jon then did something he never typically does. He emerged from the bedroom and joined me. We caught the end of a story about a university student who took a moral stand against something she believed in. The student was consequently victimised by university staff. What started as something small snowballed until the university was eventually investigated by a powerful external body. In response, the student said, many of the offending lecturers chose to resign instead of implementing the recommended changes. The remaining university lecturers approached the student and admitted she had been in the right all along.

Jon's mouth dropped open and he glanced at me like one of those rotating fairground clown heads that devour ping-pong balls.

'See,' I smiled, 'I told you the television was talking to me.'

I phoned Luciana and handed the phone to Jon who confirmed, 'Yes, Luciana, the television talked to me too.'

'Fiona,' Luciana marvelled, 'You're like a clairvoyant or something. People think you're weird because you say all these things without any evidence for it, and it makes you sound paranoid and crazy. But then, months later - it all comes true!'

* * *

Anything Except the Biblical Jesus Christ

In today's Western society it is acceptable to embrace all kinds of weird spiritual beliefs. It is fine to be a Zen Buddhist and believe in reincarnation, or to consult an Indian guru for advice on mantra. It is cool to embrace the Mormon belief that they will populate their own polygamist planet, or to experience Shamanic visions and communicate with animal spirits, or to dance naked in the forest and chant to Mother Earth. It is acceptable for people to gather in the mountains and wait for visitations from alien UFOs. It is normal to consult mediums and spirits to find out how your dead loved ones are faring in the afterlife. It is acceptable to speak of the ethereal concept of a 'Christ consciousness.' It is even okay to be a Satanist and attend conferences and ritual orgies. In fact, all these beliefs and practises are deemed 'culturally acceptable' by mental health practitioners. It is hip to be *anything* these days – except one thing: it is not okay to be a Bible believing Christian. If I say I communicate with *my* God, or if I experience strange events in the context of *my* Christian beliefs, then that apparently makes me crazy. I am labelled a crazy right-wing fundamentalist because the people doing the labelling are Luciferians who hate God and who strive to achieve the opposite of everything the Bible says.

My Secret Source of Strength

I was asked on social media: *To what do you attribute your ability to not only survive the unspeakable but thrive? You seem to be thriving to me. You are powerful.*

Firstly, I do not always thrive. My supporters simply do not get to witness my private meltdowns. I too was once fragile and frightened, and at times I still feel threatened and anxious; hence I still suffer with Complex PTSD. But I get what people mean. I seem to thrive relative to the condition most victims of extreme abuse are seemingly in. Many victims are curled up in foetal positions in the corner of some psychiatric ward. Or they have committed suicide already. But those are the visible victims. People do not realise that through mind control the filthy rich elite have created an invisible population of survivors who appear to function within society. These victims walk around oblivious to the content of their implicit memory systems. Their core issues manifest as numbness, or mental health issues for which they take prescription medicine, or else they drink, sex, or work to distract themselves from the unspeakable reality. Mental health issues only overcome those in conflict with their implicit involvement in clandestine cult and network activities.

And yes, I was born with innate abilities that helped me survive. The qualities that John Gittinger and his vile associates selected me for are the very same ones I employed to fight their programming. Their training is what I used to defend myself against their agents. I turned their skills on them and bit them on the arse like an angry dog. But I am only what God made me, and what Gittinger tampered with. God created me an introvert like every other member of my large family. Gittinger changed me to an extrovert. If Gittinger had not changed me to an extrovert, I would not have been able to speak publicly and interact with victims the way I have. It is as the Bible says:

> *But as for you, you thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save many people alive.*

My survival is testament to the existence and authority of Jesus Christ. My belief in the Biblical God and His only son Jesus Christ is the fundamental reason I managed to recover my memories without cracking or dying. That is my big secret. That is my source of hope in the face of adversity. That is where I found the courage and strength to defy my abusers and dare to heal. Deep down I know that Jesus Christ is Lord, that this world is under the temporary occupancy and rule of Lucifer and his vile minions, and that there is a real, tangible afterlife as described in the Bible. Yes, I am a crap Christian. My abusers specifically targeted my childhood belief in God and made it near impossible to relax, pray, concentrate on reading the Bible, and trust in an all-powerful, all-knowing, ever-present Creator.

My survival is testament to the existence and authority of Jesus Christ

It has been difficult to reconcile why this same God allowed one innocent child to experience so much pain and terror. I sometimes ask, why did God let one little girl experience more hell on earth than ten thousand lives combined? What is the point to all this? Why does God let bad things happen to innocent people? Why am I still here? It is not enough to just survive, with my head barely above the flood waters. I want a break. I want peace. When will God avenge me? When will he silence and destroy my enemies? Where is my vindication, compensation and reinstatement? Where is my Job-like ending? Job's life was a picnic compared to mine. His calamity struck all at once during his adulthood, and he had a stable childhood development to fall back on. I had no such base. These are the questions and arguments I share with God as I stomp around in frustration, anger and anxiety.

Why Do Bad Things Happen to Innocent People?

I was in my early 20s when I grasped the story and meaning of Job. Job was a wealthy, righteous and socially respected man. God and Satan had a wager at Job's expense. God instigated Satan's focus on Job by asking him whether he had considered Job and how upright he was. Satan responded by accusing God of wrapping Job up in cotton wool, and he challenged God by betting, if God took everything from Job, the man would curse God. So, God gave Satan permission to rob Job of his possessions, then his kids, then his health. Even worse, Job's wife began nagging him. Then Job's mates accused Job of having done something wrong to attract such calamity. In all this, Job still did not blame God.

For many Bible pages, Job debated with his three friends. He challenged God to appear so that he can have it out with Him in person, like I did atop that Alaskan mountain. Finally, God did appear before Job and his three friends. At this, Job dropped to the ground in terror. For many pages, God asked Job many questions about the natural world. God asked Job whether he is able to feed all the wild animals, control the weather, or physically wrestle wild beasts. Job crapped himself in awe and admitted he knew nothing about such things. Finally, God told Job: 'Listen, there is more going on in this world than you can imagine. So, until you know how to run the physical world, don't tell me how to run the spiritual world.' In the end, Job was restored, in a sense. He had a second family of kids who were the most handsome in the land, greater wealth, and was publicly vindicated before his mates.

Justice is Coming

People discredit the existence of the Biblical God by saying a loving God would never throw people in Hell. They also question why a caring God would let such horror happen to innocent children like me. Here is my understanding of such matters. Firstly, God gave humans free will to do as they choose. The things some people chose to do, the Bible says, are so evil that they never entered God's mind as being possible:

> *And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin.*

For a person to be judged and sentenced to prison, they must first commit the crime. God allows perpetrators to rape, torture, and kill children because if they did not physically act on their potential and desire for evil, they could not subsequently be judged and eternally punished by God, and so they would qualify for Heaven. I don't want to spend eternity with Luciferian pedophile scum like Kidman.

God showed Ezekiel a vision of the priests secretly performing cult rituals inside the Temple, and asked:

> *Is it nothing to the people of Judah that they commit these detestable sins, leading the whole nation into violence, thumbing their noses at me, provoking my anger? Therefore, I will respond in fury. I will neither pity nor spare them. And though they cry for mercy, I will not listen*.

> God then instructed an angel to: *Walk through the streets of Jerusalem and place a mark upon the foreheads of all who weep and sigh because of the abominations being committed in their city.*

> God then instructed five more angels to: *Follow him through the city and kill everyone whose forehead is not marked. Show no mercy; have no pity! Kill them all – old and young, girls and women and little children. But do not touch anyone with the mark. Begin here at the Temple. So, they began by killing the 70 leaders…*

> God said: *The sins of the people of Israel and Judah are very, very great. The entire land is full of murder; the city is filled with injustice. They are saying, 'The LORD doesn't see it! The LORD has abandoned the land!' …I will fully repay them for all they have done.*

God hates the satanic ritual murder of babies. Human sacrifice is the 'abomination that causes desolation' which will occur in the Third temple. Luciferian ritual and sacrifice are the root cause of social decline. The Old Testament is simply a history of God's chosen people oscillating between worshipping the Biblical God and worshipping Lucifer. When they served God, the Jews prospered. When they practised Satanism and sacrificed their babies to Moloch, their society fell apart.

So, it is today. The 350,000-strong Belgian march against their government's child trafficking operation proves that people power can't fix this. Only the direct intervention of

God can clean up the mess Western society is in for throwing out the Ten Commandments, school prayer, and Christian morals, in exchange for witchcraft and pornography, drugs and divorce. That is why another Passover is coming – to end this evil age. Instead of painting lamb's blood over their door lintels, an invisible mark is placed in the foreheads of those who believe in the Lamb of God. Those spiritually marked by God will be spared from the coming holocaust in which the Bible predicts two thirds of Jewish people will die.

> *I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the seal of the living God, and he called with a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to damage earth and sea, saying, 'Do not damage the earth or the sea or the trees, until we have marked the servants of our God with a seal in their foreheads.'*

God will exact justice. He will issue the death penalty. His order of vengeance will mimic that recorded in Ezekiel. It will start at the Temple, with allowing the Luciferians to perpetrate another holocaust against the apostate Christian churches and Jewish Synagogues, before turning His sword of justice against the Luciferians themselves.

What can we do to help?

People often asked me on social media, 'What can I do to help the plight of victims?' *I am only one voice*, they think. *How can I possibly make an impact on such a vast operation?* As the above Ezekiel vision shows – the most important thing is to care. If you care, that will influence your every action and at least prevent you from contributing to the problem. God marked and spared those who felt anguish over what the Luciferian pedophiles have done to mankind.

We have only two sides to choose from: good or evil, no shades of grey. This is increasingly evident as the Luciferian pedophiles make their move for global control. I have tried to relay in this book how this has come to be, and how their system of control works. Hopefully, this book helps to make sense of everything that does not make sense.

Jesus Christ instructed His followers to be witnesses for the truth. A witness takes the stand and tells the court what they personally experienced. Christians were not asked to play judge, jury, prosecutor, or defence attorney. We are not here to argue and prove. We are here to testify to what we believe and why, to explain the reason for our sense of hope when people ask.

A pastor asked me whether I was going to get someone reputable to write a forward in this book and so vouch for my credibility – and by extension, my sanity. I responded, 'Who do you suggest will raise their hand to have an ASIO target painted on their head? I have a psychiatrist who was the Royal Commission's first choice of expert witness to publicly testify regarding the impact of child abuse on adults. But she would be stripped of her registration if she endorsed this book. And who am I trying to convince anyhow? If people aren't convinced of my story after reading *Relevance of Intelligence* which contains complex, previously unpublished information - nothing will convince them. If people don't want to believe me, then my book is not for them. They are not my target audience. In fact, I don't *want* them to read my book.

'My target audience are the victims who recognise my testimony because they themselves *lived* it. My target audience are victims who don't dare respond to me on social media for fear of being detected. My audience is the person who writes to tell me: "You are the reason I get up in the morning," or "I believe in God because of you." Do you think I care what the public say about me? I am very experienced at being hated: I've been defamed on national TV by the ABC, I was slandered to the Psychology Board, I was continually vilified on social media. I just soldiered on through their incessant attacks, which is the reason I got so far with my story - I did not crumble at their insults. So, as if I care now what people, who don't want to know the truth, think of my book.'

'Your story is hard to swallow,' he concluded.

'Then they are going to have a hard time swallowing what the Bible says is coming next. My book is just the appetiser for the main course described in Revelation. The Bible says men's hearts will fail them for fear of what's coming. What do you think could cause people to drop dead in fear like that? If people can't handle my book, how will they handle it when what I witnessed under Pine Gap manifests and enters their own homes? My job is to just tell people what I experienced. Their choice how they receive it. Duty of care fulfilled.'

I left the most unbelievable things out of this book. I have tasted the spiritual and seen things that I can't begin to share here, things which prevent me from denying the existence and authority of God. My supernatural experiences of God's authority and power are relative to my experiences of the most vile and evil darkness. That is a fair balance.

I understand that God's nature is softer and gentler than I thought. I know that He only bothers disciplining and changing the character of those He cares about. I know He never pushes us beyond what we can endure but squishes us right up against that line. I know that somehow God weaves everything together so that in the end, it will all make sense. I know that God can take what people intended to harm and destroy me and turn it into the best thing that could have happened. Yet intellectually knowing and emotionally feeling are two different things. Life hurts. Life is pain.

Happiness stems from a word meaning 'luck.' Happiness is a transient state of being which depends on current external circumstances. Joy, however, transcends our physical surrounds, and is a result of belief and faith in God. I might not be happy with my worldly situation - *extremely* unhappy. I'm not that joyful either. But I do have a sense of hope. They can rob me of my social reputation and standing, destroy my career, kill my every interest, ruin my finances, break my marriage, threaten my kids, poison my pets, turn my family against me, take my friends, decimate my physical health, and publicly mock me in the media. The one thing they can never destroy is my belief in Jesus Christ.

True 'transhumanism' and eternal life are attained by simply believing in Jesus Christ, believing that He is who the Bible says He is. Remember the thief hanging next to Jesus during the crucifixion? All he said was, 'Jesus, remember me when you come into your Kingdom.' Jesus replied, 'Sure thing.' All the thief did to gain what these Luciferians have been struggling to invent themselves was believe and ask. No Kundalini serpent crap, no legalism, no exchange of money, no dressing and speaking the right way, no secret doctrine, no ten steps to this or eight steps to that, no magic, alchemy or technology. Just belief and request.

I believe God can restore me if he chooses. I believe He will indeed vindicate, compensate, and reinstate me. But exactly *how* He will do that, I have no idea. It will likely not occur in this life. And in the great scheme of things it does not matter. What matters is that Heaven and the Lake of Fire are real, tangible places – just as real as what we physically perceive right now. Have you ever sat too close to a campfire so that it became uncomfortable? Have you ever experienced a traumatic accident? Have you ever felt the pain of losing a loved one? Take every horrible thing that could happen to a human being and multiple it - and continue increasing it. The result does not begin to touch on what awaits our enemies. Justice does exist. God's justice will ultimately prevail.

Belief in God’s omnipotence, omniscience, and omnipresence is my secret survival tactic. That is my source of hope within.

* * *

2020: What the Future Holds

For before these days there was no hire for man, nor any hire for beast;
neither was there any peace to him that went out or came in because of the affliction:
for I set all men everyone against his neighbour.
(Zech 8:10)

Coming to a town near you…

DESTROYED BY FIRE
"Listen! Hear the cry of Babylon,
the sound of great destruction from the land of the Babylonians.
For the Lord is destroying Babylon.
He will silence her loud voice.
Waves of enemies pound against her;
the noise of battle rings through the city.
Destroying armies come against Babylon.
Her mighty men are captured,
and their weapons break in their hands.
For the Lord is a God who gives just punishment;
He always repays in full.
I will make her officials and wise men drunk,
along with her captains, officers, and warriors.
They will fall asleep and never wake up again!"
says the King, whose name is the Lord of Heaven's Armies.
This is what the Lord of Heaven's Armies says:
"The thick walls of Babylon will be levelled to the ground,
and her massive gates will be burned.
The builders from many lands have worked in vain,
for their work will be destroyed by fire!"

APATHY KILLS

For 50 years, I've watched my friends, family and peers stay perpetually drunk and stoned; worship grubby musicians whose 'music' grated on my nervous system; shag whoever and use abortion as birth control; marry just so they could play princess for a day – twice; dump their newborns into Soviet-style day care institutions for 'socialisation' and later wonder why their kids bit people; toss their marriages aside like fast food wrapping when things got a little tough; commit the same mistakes with a new batch of lives while leaving the first family feeling abandoned and suicidal; resort to plastic surgery to stay presentable for one last fling before they die; and ultimately blame a 'non-existent' God when everything went to shit.

And now, the entire world has gone to shit. And I will tell you who is responsible for our current situation:

- Those who thought they were good people because they didn't overtly harm others. What they didn't realise was, their selfish actions contributed to the destruction of society.
- Those who felt more passionate about basketball and soccer rather than justice.
- Those who put more time, energy and money into campaigning for the rights of the endangered bilby instead of aborted babies. [504]
- Those who preached against the evils of eating meat instead of supporting victims of child abuse.
- Those who taught evolutionary theory to science students, and then embraced the idea that we were created by aliens – while mocking the concept of a Biblical Creator.
- Those who 'explored their sexuality' (aka, became sluts), turned sex into their religion and replaced church with sex clubs (that surely transformed into pedophile kill venues after the 'straight' folks left for the night).
- Those 'millennial' assholes I studied with, for whom selfishness is so normal and justified, it's neurologically impossible for them to comprehend the concept of altruism.
- Those who mistook church for a social club and tolerated the infiltration of Freemasons and Satanists.
- Those morons who considered that Marxist mind-controlled imp Greta Thunberg a hero, when her social media pages were actually run by her father and a UN activist.
- Those hypocrites who condemned society for using plastic bags while knowingly peddling their kids to pedophiles for sex.
- Those who marched through major Australian cities to protest the election of some foreign country's leader but wouldn't bother rallying against child rape by Australian politicians.

I have spent my entire life resisting the underlying Nazi-Communist agenda. I watched in horror and confusion as Marxist-Lenin doctrine ruined my primary, secondary and tertiary education. Soviet psychologist Lev Vygotsky was resurrected to stalk me in every course I studied, from gifted education to psychology, to law. The emphasis was on everybody being the same, even if that meant denying the special needs of high IQ kids. Everybody got the same result, no matter how hard they tried. Zero value was placed on creativity, individuality, and being right. There was no right (except in math and science) because 'right' depended on your *frame of reference*, your *interpretation of reality*. There was no one reality – oh, except in Science, where eugenicist evolutionary theory was the only right, and believing in a Biblical God was so wrong. I was the *only* person who ever took a stand in social settings like the classroom, or work, or church. No one ever stood with me. It felt like those dreaded 'group' projects at school or university where I ended up doing the work of five people. And you know what? I'm tired of peoples' apathy – and so is God.

---

[504] The bilby is an endangered native Australian animal.

A TRUE PROPHET

A decade ago, Virginian John 'Jack' Johnson predicted exactly what is hitting America (and Australia) right now: unemployment, food shortages, inflation, riots, plus what is coming next. He wrote on his site (*United States Prophecy*):

> *We are going into a total economic crash and a great depression the likes that have never, ever come upon the earth. This is God's justice! For every evil thing that befalls man, 90% of the time it is self-inflicted. We did not learn our lesson from World War II and the Nazi's Third Reich, so now the Fourth Reich is coming into power right before our eyes. The Fourth beast, which is* ***World Communism****, has now come into play. This all could have been avoided had the church stood up against sorcery, witchcraft and communism! Thanks to the Clinton administration you now have over 800 FEMA Concentration camps for the Fourth Reich to imprison you; Which one will you be going to? This does not even touch the tip of the iceberg for what this nation has done.*

Jack saw a vision of America being invaded by Communist China and Russia and bombed with nuclear warheads:

> *During the same time as the vision about the state of Florida in July of 1995, God gave me a vision of a massive army coming down on America. He said, "John, I am going to allow the enemies of the United States to judge America. When America's enemies come, they will have no mercy on the men, women and children." I saw troop movement and they appeared to be Communist Chinese and Russian troops coming into the United States. As they came in, America was no match. I saw churches and synagogues were being levelled by heavy artillery. As the churches were being blown up, I saw Jews and Christians being herded up and shot like cattle in front of their churches and homes. I saw the troops killing children and infants with their bayonets. I saw the American people tormented beyond imagination. The troops were void of emotions. Their objective is to take the nation and take it hands down. All able-bodied working people will be forced into slave labour. Some will be taken to other countries and some left here. The soldier's main objective was to kill all Jews and Christians. As I am seeing all this horror I asked, "Lord, what is happening?" He said, "Because of the wickedness of the United States of America I am allowing her enemies to invade her lands."*

Judgement will begin with the church 'social clubs' thanks to the 'goat farmers' - the pretend pastors who put on a rock concert every week instead of preaching and teaching about intercessory prayer and spiritual warfare. These goat herders round their flocks up for the coming slaughter. The churches and synagogues will be wiped out because that is what

Americans chose. America has chosen Nazi-Communism over Biblical Christianity. Jack had a vision of the fate of these churches. God told him:

> *"This is all entertainment and spectacle. They do not care about me or my teachings, it is all entertainment. Ninety-nine percent of the worshiping that you see with this rock and roll band and with the golden calf is sin in my eyes!"*
>
> *After they hyped the people up with their worship, I noticed that not one song pertained to the cleansing blood of Christ Jesus for the remission of sin and for healing and deliverance. The worship was for entertainment and they deleted every song that pertained to the cleansing blood of Jesus Christ. The reason is because they are in gross sin and the thought of the blood of Jesus makes them cringe. Without hearing of the blood of Jesus they would not be made to think of their sin…*
>
> *The Pastor got up and read a few announcements and told how sweet everything is and how well everything is going. He spoke about the building funds and all that the church was doing...*
>
> [God] *said "Let me explain something to you. The goat farmers never preach on gross sin or wickedness. They never preach or talk about eternal damnation. They preach prosperity gospel and never talk about going into the Garden of Gethsemane to be tested and broken..."*
>
> *As I looked through the congregation, they were all clapping and cheering. They were all very wealthy and were making some kind of confession of Jesus, but deep down inside they did not know Him...*
>
> *The goat farmer pastor told the people/goats that God was going to bless everybody and told them to make sure they give their weekly tithe. He said to give ten percent of their weekly income and God would bless them tenfold.*
>
> *What amazed me was that the goat farmers are riding around in 60 and 70 thousand-dollar cars, living in $700,000 to one million-dollar homes, plus all the perks and per diems that go with it....*
>
> *I looked and beheld the prophets of the church, and they were prophesying about the great by and by and how great everything was and how God was going to bless them, and how God was going to take care of them and do all these great things, and that they were all going to have great wealth and prosperity...*
>
> *The goat farmer Pastor then gave a lukewarm, watered down message to the congregation... He never mentioned repentance of gross sin, sexual morality, witchcraft, sorcery, idolatry, pride, hatred, bitterness, envy, strife, lust, fornication, adultery...*
>
> *In the days to come, Russian T-9 tanks are going to level every church in the United States and this will be God's justice because the church of the West has become so*

> *satanically and demonically corrupt that God's red-hot anger is burning at them and they are too stupid to realize it.*
>
> *After this, I went outside and saw the sheep hanging on the gallows blocks. I approached the sheep and started talking to them and I asked, "Why have you been strung up by your hind quarters? Why are you hanging upside down here?" One sheep said, "I tried to warn the Pastor that the Satanists infiltrated the church and have set up shop here. I was told it was a bunch of nonsense and he told me not to talk such foolishness again and to get out and don't come back to this church speaking that type of nonsense."*
>
> *I talked to another sheep and he said, "I tried to warn the congregation to repent of their sins and humble themselves and bow down like a bent reed and repent of their idolatries and witchcraft. I was thrown out and told to shut up and that I was a heretic".*
>
> *I spoke to another sheep that is a prophet and asked, "Why are you strung up here?" He said, "Because I kept telling the pastor that the full and complete day of darkness is coming upon the world. I told the pastor that he needed to call the whole congregation to repentance and to be broken and contrite before the Lord because the great day of darkness is coming upon the earth. He told me to shut up that they didn't want any doomsday prophets in their church."*
>
> *I went down the line talking to the strung-up sheep and heard the horror stories of how they were abused and kicked out and how some of the sheep asked for humanitarian aid and groceries. The shepherds, these goat farmers, said "We don't have enough money so we can't help you." Yet it is amazing that they can drive around in a 60,000-dollar car and live in a million-dollar home with all the perks and per diems and couldn't take $150 to $200 out of his pocket to give to one of his congregational member's so they could get some groceries.*
>
> *God's red-hot anger is burning at these shepherds and the leaders of HIS flock. Little do they realize that the scripture will soon be fulfilled, for on that day God will separate the sheep from the goats. (Mat 25:32-33)*

Thankfully, a remnant of genuine Christians will escape this fate. Jack added (during a 2009 interview):

> *But, the sons and daughters of God are going to have a peace because God has been preparing for these past ten years for the things that are going to come. And we're gonna be like a lighthouse… and the people are gonna see the light and they're gonna come to those who have the light, and those that are earmarked for salvation, those are the ones, the stragglers who will be coming in. But as far as the rest of the nation and what's gonna come next year and down the line, it will be like Revelation 12:18, Babylon is fallen, fallen. It says it twice: fallen, fallen is Babylon the great. And as the nation is falling, the sons and daughters of God are gonna rise up with the light, they're gonna take the kingdom… God's gonna carry us through. He carried Noah through it, he carried Lot out of it.*

Other Christians have seen similar visions of America being bombed by Russia and China, including David Wilkerson and Dimitri Duduman (the Christian pastor who was tortured in Communist Romania). Like Jack Johnston, Duduman also saw a vision of a man who provided a similar message of hope for God's elect:

> *"I am the protector of America. America's sin has reached God. He will allow this destruction, for He can no longer stand such wickedness. God, however, still has people that worship Him with a clean heart as they do His work. He has prepared a heavenly army to save these people."*
>
> *As I looked, a great army, well-armed and dressed in white, appeared before me.*
>
> *"Do you see that?" the man asked. "This army will go to battle to save My chosen ones. Then, the difference between the Godly and the ungodly will be evident."*

* * *

Bible prophecy is playing out before our eyes. The first, white horseman of the apocalypse is given a crown ('corona' means 'crown'), and he rides forth to conquer the earth. Using the threat of a global 'pandemic' the Luciferian elite conquered the world within two weeks without firing a single shot (hence the first horseman wears white).

The second horseman wears red (bloodshed) and takes peace from the earth. This could signal war between countries, or war between neighbours, or war between family members. More Australians have died from domestic violence during this lockdown rather than Covid19, thanks to a lethal combination of families locked inside together for months, home schooling sugar-filled ADHD kids, and alcohol (coz that's so essential). And once the food supply chain is destroyed (thanks to weather manipulated floods, drought, intentionally lit bushfires / wildfires, shutdown of meat production, and banning of seed sales, etc), neighbours will turn on each other to source food for their starving families.

I expect a nuclear exchange featuring Iran is on the rise. But these are all wars and rumours of wars. The final war of Armageddon occurs at the end of the final seven years, and it is one I anticipate featuring an Independence Day like scenario.

What is true and what is a lie? No one can tell anymore - which is the objective. I sent a funny meme to several of my friends. It featured a realistic movie shot a giant spacecraft sitting over a major city, with the caption: '2020, what else could go wrong.' All three friends asked if the picture was real!

My NYC friend told me that Luciferian Freemason and son of my pedophile perpetrator Franklin Graham's Samaritan's Purse Central Park hospital was as empty as the nearby Sinai Hospital. Friends in Texas tell me their hospitals are empty, nurses have been sent home on full pay, and that doctors have been instructed to declare all deaths due to Covid19. Yet I also heard directly from mainland China contacts that there were indeed many flu-pandemic deaths there. But then I heard Covid19 was being used as an excuse for China to round up and execute dissidents. Perhaps that explains the footage I saw: piles of burning bodies, welded burning apartment blocks, people being shot in the streets, food supplies being dumped, and 'sick' folk having their necks snapped while being dragged from their homes? In any case, the Illuminati Li family are surely doing the Royal Rothschilds' bidding.

Most disturbingly, I watched a lengthy video in which a NYC nurse showed video evidence of how healthy patients presenting at the major Covid19 hospital she worked at were being systematically slaughtered by being intubated. Intubation led to a 100 percent death rate, except for one junkie who proved impervious to the sedation drugs and pulled his own tube out. The victims are predominantly poor, black, Hispanic and Asian folk, which suggests an Aryan eugenicist agenda.

In Australia and the UK, the government sent DO NOT RESCUSCITATE forms for the Disabled and elderly folk to sign.

COVID19 PREDICTIONS

An alleged 'David E. Goldberg' died after revealing: the US power grid will be shut down for three days, during which time 15 million dissidents will be rounded up under the guise of a flu epidemic. Citizens are identified as ‘dissidents’ by how much the supported the posts of fake CIA-Military social media agents. I can’t verify this claim, but the following story was published prior to the 2020 Covid19 ‘pandemic.’

> **Murdered for speaking out: Last Words of David Goldberg warning of mass murder of Americans**
> *Veterans Today*, 1 September 2019.
>
> *If Goldberg had a real White House source, and we believe he did, then the horrific things he warns of in his tedious but excusable monotone, things VT has confirmations of, explains what really began at 9/11 and why Israel has trained so many of our police, why they control all social media and press, why they control the DHS and why our own military is now an occupation army that, we learned yesterday, just created 200,000 fake people to gather the data Goldberg warns of.*
>
> *Goldberg says that his White House sources say that Trump is working with Zionists to round up millions of Americans after a staged power blackout. All rounded up by DHS/ICE, all typically white and suburban, will be murdered.*
>
> *Goldberg says that new alternative media organizations, particularly the ones exposing Israel and Zionism, those with the best work, highest standards, are run by Israel to tag activists for assassination…*
>
> *Goldberg, before he was murdered, says Israel plans to murder 15 million Americans using disease, accidents and eventually, as America becomes more Trumpish, simply outright murder.*
>
> *Stage one is a new strain of influenza being developed at the Lugar Lab in Tbilisi.*

ANGLO-SAXON MISSION

The aforementioned coming war with Iran echoes an interview Project Camelot published back in 2010. Bill Ryan interviewed a whistle-blower who said that in 2005 he witnessed a group of City of London Freemasons discuss the *Anglo-Saxon Mission* - the Illuminati plan where 'China catches a cold' and Iran is provoked to make first strike against the USA. Here is an excerpt from that interview:

In late 2005, I attended what I thought was a normal 3-monthly City security and financial planning meeting, since the usual crowd were emailed listed for attendance. The meeting turned out to be something entirely different. To my surprise (shock) this was very much a Masonic level meeting instead. No notes taken – word of mouth only.

At the meeting, mention was made that the Timeline for war against Iran was being delayed to a point where other contingencies had to be put in place. Contingencies were then mentioned, in quite a matter of fact fashion. First was the Israeli reluctance to strike and provoke Iran into armed action and that Israel promised that action would soon take place in order to provoke the required Iranian military response. (Israel soon after attacked Iranian backed Hezbollah bases in the Lebanon) That was my first surprise.

The second was mention of Japanese reluctance to create havoc within the fledging Chinese financial sectors.[505] *China was growing too quickly with the Chinese military the being main beneficiary. The third surprise was open talk about the use of biological weapons – when they would be used since timing appeared to be crucial.*

Then there was more talk centred on how Iran must be engaged militarily in order to provoke the desired military response from China. The talk continued about how long conventional weapons should be used, knowing they would be hopeless against a Chinese military onslaught in the region. It soon transpired that they were not making decisions. They were discussing something that had already been planned and so they were simply sharing that information between themselves. It also became clear that the central issue of the meeting was when the 'balloon' would go up.

Further issues dealt with finances, the moving of resources and protection of assets and the central control of these resources: the bringing in outlying assets. I recall the chain/sequence of events, which ran something like this:

They needed either the Iranians or the Chinese to be guilty of first use nuclear weapons in order to justify the next stage. (My information shows that the Iranians do indeed have a tactical nuclear capability) The next stage would be a measured regional nuclear response, enough to cause an immediate ceasefire. This ceasefire would create the time needed to put in place unified totalitarian western governments. Thereafter, or concurrent, biological weapons would be used against the Chinese population.

This would then set of another chain of events that would collapse the whole Chinese political and social infrastructure. This was mentioned as: Disease, followed by wide-spread food shortages, followed by mass starvation. Somehow, this would

---

[505] Was Tesla technology consequently employed to cause the 2011 earthquakes that devastated Fukushima's nuclear power plants?

> *then cause the Chinese military to attack eastern Russia. The biological agents were described as being flu like and would spread like wildfire.* ***It shocks and sickens me to describe these events. It shocks me even more to know that plausible events are being manipulated to cause the extinction of a whole part of the human race.***
>
> *The evidence was clear. There does indeed exist a timeline for future conflict that this country, the UK, was using this as some sort of world government business plan and many millions would die as a result. The plan is openly described in these circles as the Anglo-Saxon Mission.*

The 2019 anti-China protests in Hong Kong reek of CIA Gladio MO. In early 2020, Iran (funded by China), had a brief military exchange with the USA which ended with two earthquakes that destroyed Iran's two major nuclear power plants (what a Tesla-reeking coincidence). Then suddenly, China and Iran were struck with a flu-like epidemic which killed Iran's military leaders. China subsequently blamed the USA for releasing a bioweapon against them. That Wuhan hosted the 2019 world military games in October 2019, just prior to the outbreak, lends credibility to China's accusation. But then North Italy got hit hard, which makes little sense until we consider that area contains Europe's largest population of Chinese folk.

Is there a pandemic? Is it a hoax? Is it true in certain places? Is it a bioweapon designed to target specific non-Aryan ethnicities? Are the elderly and disabled being targeted for extermination like in Nazi Europe?

There is no consistency. Nothing makes sense - which is precisely the point.

At the end of George Orwell's classic *1984*, the protagonist is tortured and during interrogation he is repeatedly asked which countries are at war. Each time the victim provides a different answer, the torturer says he is wrong. Finally, Winston breaks down and responds: ‘I DON’T KNOW!’

That is the correct answer. We are not to question the Luciferian pedophiles in charge of this rising Fourth Reich. We are to placidly embrace their global Nazi-Communist totalitarian New World Order. We are to reach a point where, like a tortured MK-ULTRA child victim, we appeal to our perpetrators for relief from our pain and confusion and accept whatever solution they offer. That solution will be the very thing I wrote about in my 2019 book: the ultimate vaccination injected INTO our right hand or INTO our forehead, that changes our DNA, switches off the death gene, switches off our 'fundamental' ability to believe in God, and turns God's creation into something non-human...something Beast-like.

Revelation 12:13 says:

> *And he caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that has understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is 666.*

The Greek word for the number '6' is *stigma*, which means 'a mark, dot, puncture', or 'a mark from a pointed instrument, often as a sign of ownership: mark, brand, tattoo.' Strong's Concordance defines *stigma* as:

> *from a primary stizo (to 'stick', ie, prick); a mark incised or punched (for recognition of ownership), i.e. (figuratively) scar of service - mark.*

This definition is similar to that of *charagma*, the Greek word for 'mark.' Strong's Concordance defines *charagma* as:

> *a scratch or etching, i.e. stamp (as a badge of servitude), or scupltured figure (statue):--graven, mark.*

Strong's also notes that *charagma* is directly related to two other Greek words: (1) charax which means 'to sharpen to a point' and also describes a 'stake'; plus (2) charakter which means:

> *a graver (the tool or the person), i.e. (by implication) engraving ('character'), the figure stamped, i.e. an exact copy or (figuratively) representation): express image.*

Outside of the Bible, the earliest use of the word Charagma denoted the piercing bite of a serpent's fang.

I expect the Mark of the Beast is some kind of DNA altering vaccination that contains serpent (i.e., 'Nephilim,' aka 'alien,' aka 'fallen angel') DNA, plus animal DNA, and turns humans into an exact copy of the Nephilim-related Beasts who can't die. Does this explain where the Bible says those who take the Mark will seek death but not find it? It would explain how humans have been prepped for the Mark of the Beast, by being gradually injected with vaccinations containing foreign DNA, animal and aborted foetus materials.

In the Book of Revelation, St John could well have described seeing a hypodermic needles, or a wad of needles, piercing the human skin and injecting poison in the form of a Covid19 vaccine.

A Typical Barcode
027393 000146
A Typical Six
6 6 6

LUCIFERASE

Left-brained, high-functioning autistic Bill Gates is a self-proclaimed ‘vaccination expert’ who lacks relevant virology or medical qualifications. His family physician said Bill Gates never vaccinated his own kids. Yet Bill Gates campaigns for a global Covid19 quantum microneedle vaccination, a digital ID Immunity Passport, and an implantable device (patented No. 060606) for buying and selling cryptocurrency.

The *Human Implantable Quantum Dot Microneedle Vaccination Delivery System* that Gates funded, depends on a biochemical called *near infrared bioluminescence enzyme luciferase*. So, the enzyme that illuminates the quantum dot vaccination and makes it readable via a mobile device application after injection, is called LUCIFERASE. Someone calculated, removing the word ‘human’ from the phrase, *Human Implantable Quantum Dot Microneedle Vaccination Delivery System*, reduces the numerical value of the phrase to 666.

The Bible is clear: if you accept the Mark of the Beast, you will spend eternity burning in the Lake of Fire alongside the Luciferian pedophile scum running this shit show. It's your choice. The choice will be clear.

* * *

Now with 10% more conspiracy
for the same low price!

IF YOU ARE AT A LOSS TO UNDERSTAND WHAT'S CURRENTLY HAPPENING IN THE WORLD, especially in the USA, you won't do better than reading Fiona Barnett's Lockdown Edition of Eyes Wide Open. It's a miracle of God's grace that Fiona has survived sexual degradation and other extreme forms of physical abuse by perpetrators, many of whom she identifies by name.

With personal perseverance and the help of counsellors, therapists, a supportive husband, and two beautiful daughters who have inherited Fiona's exceptionally high IQ and abilities, she has also been "more than a conqueror" in overcoming years of CIA mind-control programming. But despite how far she has come, she still suffers from vivid memories and flashbacks of some of the most horrific events experienced.

'A little bit on the conspiracy side for my taste – but yeah, it's brilliant' ***BBC JOURNALIST***

'The only thing that makes sense of what's happening in the world'

'Truly paradigm-shattering stuff!... My eyes are now wide fucking open'

'An encyclopedia of the New World Order agenda'

'Amazing book. I couldn't put it down. You connect all the dots!'

'Just want to say a big SUCKED IN to everyone named and outed in this book. This is GOLD. Dare you to make some noise, you pieces of shit. Love you Fiona Barnett'

'You fucking nailed it, Fi'

www.pedophilesdownunder.com

BEARDEN
FER DE LANCE
12. 14 15:24
BRIEFING ON SOVIET SCALAR
ELECTROMAGNETIC WEAPONS

FER DE LANCE

Lieutenant Colonel Thomas E. Bearden (U.S. Army, Retired) PhD, is the author of numerous books, papers, briefings, and presentations dealing with anomalous phenomena, scalar electromagnetics, free energy devices, Soviet Tesla weapons, and Soviet scalar electromagnetic weather warfare.

Lt. Col. Bearden was previously a senior scientist and department manager with the Alabama division of a major aerospace company where he directed the company's design and production of expert systems (artificial intelligence) applications for the U.S. Army command control systems. He has more than 29 years experience in air defense systems, tactics, and operations; technical intelligence; nuclear weapons employment; computerized wargames; anti-radiation missile countermeasures; and military systems requirements.

Bearden obtained a Master of Science degree in nuclear engineering from the Georgia Institute of Technology and a Bachelor of Science degree in Mathematics from Northeast Louisiana University. He is a graduate of the U.S. Army Command and General Staff College.

When Fer De Lance was originally written, Tom was a member of Mensa, Society for the Investigation of the Unexplained, International Tesla Society, American Association for the Advancement of Science, Association of American Physics Teachers, the Air Force Association, the Association of the U.S. Army, the American Nuclear Society, and the American Defense Preparedness Association. He is currently the Director of the Association of Distinguished American Scientists (ADAS), Fellow Emeritus of the Alpha Foundation's Institute for Advanced Study, and is CEO of CTEC, Inc.

In private life, Tom has two sons and two daughters, and lives in Huntsville, Alabama with his wife, Doris.

"...In 1999, the Earth's first strategic sub-space war was silently fought and won..."

ISBN 0-9725146-1-9

Sweating done by red_gonzo.

Note: sometimes formatting of the text may be a little fuzzy. It's all because the OCR process didn't go as smoothly as I expected. Also there may be some errors inside text so be vigilant. In any case share this book, send emails to people about knowledge contained in it. Since this book talks about the most terrifying weapons present today the information in it is even more of value. But knowing an old saying »the knife cuts both ways« one can also use the same knowledge in order to heal ourselves since it seems that our body already does it using the physics described inside. Hopefully the latter will prove to be the most useful way to use this old but forgotten / supressed knowledge.

The contents include the 2002 update and the older 1986 briefing with slides.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

2002 OVERVIEW AND BACKGROUND 4

Mad Scramble of Soviet Science After the End of WWII 5

One Institute Had 2,000 PhDs and a Full Support Staff 7

Situation in the Early 1950s 8

1963 Deployment and Immediate Use of Scalar Interferometers 11

An Example of Russian Technology Astonishing Western Scientists 12

Softening of Metal at a Distance Was One Effect Used Against the Challenger 13

Energetics: Three Branches and a Strategic Deception Plan 14

Strategic Attacks Scheduled and Why We Were Not Destroyed 15

Attempts to Alert the Nation 18

The Responses 20

Effective Survival Treatment of Mass Casualties Could Be Developed 20

The Official Silence Was Deafening 22

The Long Dry Spell in Correcting Electrodynamics May Be Slowly Ending... 24

Engineerable Unified Field Theory Is Now Clearly Appearing 24

Examples of Some Major Non Sequiturs in Conventional Electrodynamics 25

Wide Confusion of Cause and Effect 26

CSRs: Engineering the Unobserved Causal Side To Create Functional Systems 27

Making the First CSR is Extremely Difficult; Making a Million Copies Is Easy 28

In 1999 The KGB Deployed Massive Numbers of CSRs for a Strategic Attack29

How the Asymmetrically Deployed Strategic Attack Was Stopped in Its Tracks 31

The Mostly-Ignored Time-Energy Interaction 32

Development of Threats and Scheduled Attacks Aborted 35

Live Destructive Tests Over and Near the U.S. Have Continued 38

The Scientific Basis For Energetics Weapons Is Established 39

Our Situation Here In the U.S. Is Precarious 39

The Dominant Weapons Are Quantum Potential Weapons 41
Cellular Time Reversal: Revolutionary Healing by a Team of French Scientists 43
Becker's Study of the Cellular Regeneration System 46
Need to Correct and Extend Classical Electrodynamics 48
The Situation Is Serious 48
A New Manhattan Project Is Warranted 49
2002 ENERGETICS WEAPONS THREAT TO THE U.S 51
The U.S. Narrowly Escaped Energetics Destruction Twice in 1997 51
Initiation of the Brazilian Energetics Weapon Program 52
Related Phenomena 54
Stalin *Personally* Initiated the Soviet Energetics Program with the Greatest Urgency 55
A Great Technical Breakthrough in Physics Can Always be Had in Four Years 55
A Typical Example: The Suppression of Cold Fusion 57
Revolutionary New Processes Are Hidden in the Cold Fusion Experimental Results 59
Stalin's Dictatorial Impact on Soviet Scientific Management's Response 62
Our Own Science Community's Progress During These Decades 63
U.S. Scientists Have Committed Monstrous Crimes and Gone Unpunished 66
Energetics: New Principles of Physics and How the Soviets Found Them 67
Longitudinal EM Wave Interferometry Energetics Was Almost Immediately Uncovered 68
By 1950 Russian Energetics Was Off and Running 69
Deployment of the Soviet Energetics Weapons and Their Quick Use 71
Why the Soviets Could Continue to Attack and Kill U.S. Targets with Impunity 73
The Science Behind the Soviet Energetics Weapons 77
The Importance of Scalar Photons and Time-Density Waves 80
Psychoenergetics: Engineering the Mind-Matter Interaction by Engineering Mind 81
Quantum Potential Weapons Are Utilized in All Three Energetics Branches... 84

The Importance of Longitudinal EM Waves.....84
Energy, Wave Energy, and Wave Speed are All Dramatically Altered.....86
A Process for Creating Longitudinal and Time-Density EM Waves.....87
Quantum Potentials and Multiply Connected Spacetime.....87
Need for Caution with QPs Used Against Biological Organisms.....89
A Hypothetical Example.....89
The QP Weapon Is a Superb Energy Amplifier "For Free".....91
Other Novel Uses of QP Weapons.....93
The U.S. Narrowly Escaped Destruction Twice in 1997 Alone.....95
Purpose of the Novel Attack on Captain Button.....96
Rogue Japanese (Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo) Have a Role.....100
Inducing the Gulf War Disease.....100
40-Years of Russian Induction of Diseases In U.S. Embassy Personnel.....104
Western Electrodynamics Is in Sad Shape.....105
Toward a Deeper Electrodynamics.....108
Time Is Highly Compacted Energy.....109
The New Transduction Model Explains the Cold Fusion Results and Mechanisms.....109
Why There Is a Time Delay in the Onset of Cold Fusion Phenomena.....1ll
The Early Soviet Longitudinal Wave Interferometers.....112
Khrushchev Killed the Thresher to Prevent His Own Dismissal.....112
Khrushchev Demonstrated the Powerful Blast Capability of Strategic Interferometry.....114
Weather Engineering Over North America.....115
Earthquakes to Order.....117
Readying the Weapons for the 1985 Readiness Demonstration Tests.....119
Meeting the 1985 Schedule for Readiness.....121
KGB Crews Regularly Practiced Against U.S. Rocket Launches from Cape Canaveral.....122
Kill of the Arrow DC: Practice Turned into Performance.....123
The Arrow Pilot Sensed the Lack of Power, But the Aircraft Was Immediately Hit.....124

Elements of the U.S. Government Deliberately Suppressed Vital Evidence... 125
Other Direct Energetics Signatures on the Arrow DC-8 126
Other Acts of War Completed the Milestone 127
Kill of the Titan Missile Over Vandenberg Air Force Base 128
Dead-Man Fuzing and Outside Assistance Deterred a Full Strategic Attack in 1986 129
What Really Happened in the Chernobyl Disaster 129
The High Side Risk Factor 131
The Low Side Risk Factor 132
Consequences of Not Taking Counterfire Action 132
My Recommendation to the Counterfire Group 132
The Group Fired and Took Out a Transmitter 133
Results at the Transmitter and at Chernobyl 133
Kill of the Challenger Included Use of Metal-Softening 135
Cold Molding: An Epilog to the Metal-Softening Donnybrook 136
Additional Update from Year 1998 to Year 2,000 Has Been Given 137
There is Also a Severe Bioenergetics (EM Biological Warfare) Threat 139
National Institute of Health Reaction 141
How the New Revolution in Medical Healing Works 142
What the French Researchers Showed 145
How the Regeneration Mechanism Was Finally Deciphered 147
Cellular and Body Rejuvenation are Possible, Once the Technology is Developed 149
How Many Americans Could Be Saved? 149
There Are No Resistant Strains to the New Technology, and There Cannot Be Any 150
Results of the Priore' Treatments Are Well-Documented and Independently Supported 151
The Present Threat Is Urgent, and Our Strategic Destruction is Still at Issue .151
Desperately Needed Defensive Capabilities Can be Provided by a QP Solution 152
In Conclusion 153

1986 FER DE LANCE INTRODUCTION & BRIEFING ON SOVIET SCALAR ELECTROMAGNETIC WEAPONS 157

Scalar Electromagnetics is Electrogravitation 157

Fer-de-Lance 157

Energetics and Directed-Energy Weapons (DEWs) 158

The Soviets Use a Deception Plan 158

Destruction of the Challenger in January 1986 161

Technological Surprise and a New Hiroshima 164

We Have Given Up Defense in the Larger Sense 164

1986—THE BRIEFING 167

Slide 001: Characterization 169

Slide 002: Outline 171

Slide 003: Elements of the Emerging Theory 172

Slide 004: Three Kinds of Electromagnetics 174

Slide 005: Bohm-Aharonov Effect 176

Slide 006: A-Field is Real 177

Slide 007: Quantum Non-Locality 179

Slide 008: Vector Mathematics has a Fundamental Problem 180

Slide 009: The Zero-Vector Axiom 182

Slide 010: Are These Systems Equal? 184

Slide 011: Infolded Systems are Excluded by Physics 185

Slide 012: Kaluza Geometry 186

Slide 013: A Potential is a Change in the Stress of Vacuum 187

Slide 014: Type of Potential Depends on the Particle(s) 190

Slide 015: A Potential Extends to Infinity & Involves the Entire Universe 192

Slide 016: A Natural Potential 194

Slide 017: An Artificial Potential 195

Slide 018: Producing an Artificial Potential 197

Slide 019: If No Observable Mass Flows: 199

Slide 020: Gravitational Potential: A Conglomerate of Stress Types 201

Slide 021: What Gravitational Field Is 202

Slide 022: EM Force Fields are Releases of Gravitational Potential via Observable Mass Flows 204

Slide 021: Scalar O-Wave Production 206

Slide 024: Scalar Electromagnetics 208

Slide 025: Rogers' Undersea & Underground Communications Systems 211

Slide 026: How does the Rogers System Work? 213

Slide 027: Scalar EM Waves are Emitted & Absorbed by the Nucleus 214

Slide 028: Nuclei of the Universe Continually Exchange Scalar EM Waves.. 216

Slide 029: Converting EM Field Energy to G-Field Energy & Vice-Versa 217

Slide 030: Normal EM Bleeds-Off G-Field 219

Slide 031: Scalar EM Forces 4-D G-Field 220

Slide 032: Detection of Electro-Gravitation 221

Slide 033: Scalar Wave Detector 226

Slide 034: Scalar Resonance 229

Slide 035: Scalar Resonance 231

Slide 036: Scalar Resonance Currents 234

Slide 037: Transverse Wave Interference 235

Slide 038: Transverse Wave Interference 236

Slide 039: Creating Energy at a Distance 239

Slide 040: Exothermic Mode (Scalar Interferometer) 240

Slide 041: Endothermic Mode (Scalar Interferometer) 242

Slide 042: Tesla's "Big Eye" for Remote Viewing 244

Slide 043: Site of Mystery Cloud 247

Slide 044: Mushroom Cloud from Sea off Japan near Russian Test Area 248

Slide 045: Mushroom Cloud Rising from Sea 249

Slide 046: Mushroom Cloud from Sea off Japan 251

Slide 047: Not a Known Natural Phenomenon 252

Slide 048: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Island 253

Slide 049: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Island 255

Slide 050: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Islands 256

Slide 051: Creating a Spatial 0-Field Pattern 257

Slide 052: Tesla Shield 258
Slide 053: Expanding Dome-like Phenomenon 260
Slide 054: Hemisphere & Globes 1977 261
Slide 055: Saryshagan Direction, September 1979 263
Slide 056: Continuous Tesla EMP Globe 266
Slide 057: Mysterious Light over North Pacific 268
Slide 058: White Sphere seen in North Atlantic 1976 269
Slide 059: Continuous Tesla Fireball 270
Slide 060: Terminal ABM System 272
Slide 062: ABM Defenses 275
Slide 063: Network of Virtual Transmitters 278
Slide 064: Network of Virtual Transmitters 281
Slide 065: Launch Phase ABM System 285
Slide 066: Soviet Command & Control Concept 287
Slide 067: Launch Phase ABM System (Anti-SLBM) 290
Slide 068: Detecting & Marking Missile Launch 291
Slide 069: Destroying the Launched Missiles 292
Slide 070: Shift to Anti-Sub Mode 293
Slide 071: Shifting to Earthquake Mode 295
Slide 072: Suppression Attack—MARVs (without defenses) 297
Slide 073: Suppression Attack—MARVs (with defenses) 298
Slide 074: Response to Counterforce Strike with No Defense 300
Slide 075: Response to Counterforce Strike with Defense 302
Slide 076: Clear Communications 305
Slide 077: Unique Communications 306
Slide 078: Mine Countermeasures—Orthodox System 308
Slide 079: Mine Countermeasures—Scalar EM Systems 309
Slide 080: Scalar Anti-Personnel Weapon 311
Slide 081 Afghanistan 312
Slide 082: Scalar Anti-Tank Weapon 314

Slide 083: Scalar Anti-Aircraft Weapon 315
Slide 084: Scalar Anti-Aircraft Weapon 316
Slide 085: An Effective Penetration Aid 318
Slide 086: Unique Capabilities: ATM/AD/AARTY 319
Slide 087: Unique Capabilities 320
Slide 088: Unique Capabilities 321
Slide 089: Unique Capabilities 322
Slide 090: Unique Capabilities: Penetrate Shielding 323
Slide 091: Multi-Purpose Weaponry 324
Slide 092: Multi-Purpose Weaponry 325
Slide 093: Multi-Purpose Weaponry 326
Slide 094: Unique Capabilities: Heat Extraction 327
Slide 095: Unique Capabilities: Cold Explosions 328
Slide 096: The Transmitter is the Major Weapon 330
Slide 097: Star Wars—The Final Frontier? 331
Slide 098: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart) 333
Slide 099: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart) 334
Slide 100: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart) 335
Slide 101: Summary (1) 336
Slide 102: Summary (1) 337
Slide 103: Summary (2) 338
Slide 104: Summary (3) 339
Slide 105: Summary (4) 340
Slide 106: Soviet Defense Against Missiles 341
Slide 107: Surprise by Using Secret Weapons 342
Slide 108: Something Russia Doesn't Want the U.S. to Know 343
1986 SLIDE REFERENCES 344
1986 ADDITIONAL SLIDE NOTES 345
1986 APPENDIX I 371
SOME IMPORTANT INDICATORS AND DESTRUCTIVE TESTING.. 373

INDICATORS AND SUCH 373
FINAL DRESS REHEARSAL BEFORE THE BIG SHOW 384
THE SHOW BEGINS 400
MORE FRIGHTENING THAN THE MIND OF MAN HAS EVER IMAGINED 403
SCALAR EM INOCULATION AND ITS IMPLICATIONS 408
1986 APPENDIX II 413
COMPUTER WORMS AND VIRUSES, AND THE IMPACT OF SCALAR EM 415
LARCENISTS 416
ARSONISTS 418
TERRORISM 419
ANTIBODIES 419
NATIONAL DEFENSE 419
THE WEST'S VULNERABILITY 421
CORE WARS REVISITED 424
A COMMERCIAL WORM 424
ADAM OSBORNE'S WARNING 425
"NOW YOU'VE DONE IT!" 426
TEEN CHALLENGE 427
"PEOPLE ARE BASICALLY GOOD" 429
FEDERAL FUNDS 430
SCALAR EM INNOCULATION AND ITS IMPLICATIONS 431
1986 APPENDIX III 437
CONTINUING THE SCENARIO 439
2002 TABLE OF FIGURES 443
2002 ENDNOTES 447

The Russians have sustained the largest weapons development program ever launched by any nation, and they have kept it effectively hidden from prying Western eyes. I have called this program "Fer-de-Lance," after the deadly South American pit viper of that name.

The dreaded fer-de-lance is a snake of great agility and lethal effect. It often ambushes its hapless prey, striking unexpectedly and without warning. Its first sudden strike is usually lethal to its victim, which promptly expires in writhing agony. Since the Soviet development of scalar EM weapons has been designed for the same purpose, the name seems appropriate.

2002

Overview[1] and Background of the Energetics[2] Weapons Threat

T. *E.* Bearden, Ph.D.
LTC, U.S. Army (Retired)
Director, ADAS

September 15, 1998
Update

Note: We have placed this update as a section in front of the original paper. This leads to some redundancy, which remains to insure clarity.

---

[1] This is an updated and slightly sanitized version of a paper originally prepared for and transmitted to selected Senators and Congresspersons.

[2] The present name of the old KGB is the Federal Security Services. The leopard's spots remain the same, regardless of its new name—at least for a die-hard old communist faction of it. Presently the helm of Russia has been turned over to a new Premier who has an extensive KGB background. However, Putin has chosen to differ from the traditional KGB outlook and seems intent on becoming America's trusted cheap oil partner and supplier, in a bid to help his economy and pump much-needed funds into it. His friendship with George Bush may be one of the turning **points** of this new century He at least has achieved sufficient control over much of the KGB to get on with trying to solve his economic problems and break the old "die-hard communist" mold a **bit**

2002 OVERVIEW AND BACKGROUND

For some time, Russia and several other nations have possessed highly advanced "extended-electromagnetics" *(energetics)* weapons of a very novel kind, using a dramatically extended electrodynamics theory {1}. To comprehend these weapons requires a combination of non-Abelian electrodynamics in at least the 0(3) gauge symmetry {2}, general relativity, Bohm's interpretation of quantum mechanics {3}, and the use of time-domain (scalar) energy, fields, and potentials to directly enter distant 3-spatial points without propagating energy through 3-space. It also requires correcting many of the serious errors in classical electrodynamics. Probably the most elegant and applicable extant model to deal with these phenomena and weapons is Sachs' {4} unification of general relativity and extended electrodynamics, particularly as implemented in O(3) electrodynamics. O(3) allows direct engineering by modified EM means.

Most of these energetics weapons are more advanced than what has previously been known to the U.S. military, intelligence, and scientific communities, although parts of the communities are finally making real progress in understanding such "revolutionary" areas. For example, every major weapons lab on earth seems to have discovered longitudinal EM waves and longitudinal EM wave weapons—the scalar interferometry we have been discussing for so long {5}. A major contributing factor holding back U.S. catch-up is that the flawed foundations of Maxwell's 1865 theory {6} have not been changed by the Western scientific community.

Historically, the scientific community exerts resistance to substantial innovation. Often 40 to 50 years are required to do what can be done with a concerted effort in four years. The Manhattan Project in WW II is a notable example of where the scientific community made a maximum effort and did a difficult job in four years. Also, "skunk works" efforts continue to be utilized for very rapid development when something really advanced is to be done and done quickly.

With the U.S. substantially behind in these "new" strategic superweapons, a new Manhattan Project would appear to be advisable and warranted. There are at least some indications that such may actually be going on at last. We hope the indications are true.

A sobering development that occurred early this year (2002) was China's deployment of both quantum potential (QP) weapons {7} and *negative energy* electromagnetic pulse (EMP) weapons (a type which we originally called the *MindSnapper* to disguise its true nature) {8,9}. The QP weapons are the dominant weapons on Earth today, followed closely by negative energy EMP weapons in second place. We have not been able to ascertain exactly how many nations have the negative energy EMP weapons, but it is at least five at the time of this writing.

The U.S. is still well behind in the use of special "engines" (special curvatures of spacetime and their dynamics, but achieved with higher group symmetry electrodynamics) for directly engineering the mind itself, and for producing *nonmaterial* robot systems made totally of such engines—"causal system robots" which we will mention later. Several of the Western nations do accomplish work in the mind control area, but use a sort of "brute force" method oriented on frequency and frequency changes, etc. where the true active mode is the unsuspected transformations of the U(1) electrodynamics to a higher group symmetry unified field theory electrodynamics, accomplished by the human body tissues and structures themselves.

Western scientists have not realized that all EM energy in 3-space actually comes from the time domain *to* each point in 3-space and *returns from* that 3-space point back to the time domain.[3] Hence "propagation" of 3-space EM energy is actually the propagation of a "circulation" of EM energy between the time domain and 3-space, involving each 3-space point presently said to be "occupied" by the energy. Unfortunately, Western science is still unaware that *no observable exists in time,* a priori, since by definition it has no extension in the time dimension at all {10}. Instead, an observable *continually recurs* as a frozen 3-space snapshot of an ongoing dynamic 4-space interaction, due to the continual repetition of the observation process which is the application of a *d/dt* operator to the ongoing 4-interaction. Hence, we "see" physical reality (3-space reality) similarly to the way we view a "motion picture" series of successive frozen frames. The major result of this flaw (mistaking a 3-space observable as a 4-spatial cause) in Western science is that Western science still extensively substitutes effect for cause—e.g., in the notion of a separate 3-force acting on a separate 3-mass. No such situation exists in nature, and nothing "moves" or "changes" in 3-space alone. For an entity to exist in time, it requires at least 4-space because a time length is required. Nonetheless, the West is making progress. If some of its scientific dogma can be overcome, the younger scientists will break free and readily do the job required for the defense of this nation.

Mad Scramble of Soviet Science After the End of WWII

During WW II the West produced a great technical breakthrough and obtained the atom bomb as a decisive new weapon. While speeding up his own atomic

---

[3] Specifically, energy comes from the time domain to the negative 3-charge, thence to the positive 3-charge, thence back to the time domain in a *4-circulation* of EM energy. With extra energy *appearing* and present at the negative charge due to entering 3-space there, and with less energy present at the positive charge due to the energy *leaving* 3-space there, there is a delta in energy density (pressure) across a dipolarity, oriented from negative to positive. That is the exact basis of the T. T. Brown unilateral thrust force, and the force used in the "lifters" experiments today. To calculate the **force, th**e long-unaccounted Heaviside energy flow component must also be accounted— not just the weak Poynting flow component.

weapons program[4] as a result, Stalin also ordered his own Academy of Sciences to quickly derive the next great new technical breakthrough, and he held the top scientific leaders themselves personally accountable to him, to see that it was done at all speed (Figure 1).

The Communists starved millions of Russian Kulaks to collectivize Soviet farming
Assembled Academy
Stalin

"The destiny of communism has been frustrated by the U S development of the atomic bomb That is not the last great technical breakthrough The next one WILL be Soviet! You will provide me with that great new technical breakthrough at all speed, or I will have your heads Do I make myself dear, comrades?"

Figure 1 Stalin's dictum removed any resistance from his scientific community.

Simply put, Stalin placed the heads of the Soviet scientific leaders on the chopping block, since he was an absolute dictator and often killed or imprisoned those who opposed his instructions. To survive, the leaders of the Soviet Academy had to demand the utmost of their subordinates, because they themselves had to report their progress or lack of it to a dictator who would and did take swift action if they did not produce results. Thus, Stalin simply bypassed the usual scientific posturing and protracted delay so typical of our Western scientific bureaucracies.[5] If the Directors of the Russian scientific community dragged their feet and did not push his desired program to the limit, their heads would roll—and some did.

---

[4] At the Potsdam conference, after Truman informed him the U.S. had just exploded a great new explosive weapon, Stalin secretly called the head of his nuclear weapons program and ordered him to accelerate the Soviet nuclear weapons program.

[5] As a simple example, the U.S. National Academy of Sciences, National Research Council, National Academy of Engineering, and the National Science Foundation—and all the electrical engineering departments at all the universities in the U.S.—have not yet recognized that all EM circuits and systems are in fact powered by EM energy extracted directly from the seething local vacuum by the source charges and dipoles in the circuit or system, and particularly by the broken symmetry of the source dipole in the generator or other primary power source. They also have not yet solved the more than a century-old source charge problem, but continue to support engineering models assuming that the charge *freely creates* real EM energy out of nothing at all, in total violation of the conservation of energy law, and pours that created energy out, freely and continuously, to establish its associated fields and potentials and their energy reaching across the universe. The agencies thus unwittingly advocate perpetual motion machines on a scale unparalleled in history. They continue to support an electrical engineering model and a classical

As a result of Stalin's forceful intervention, the entire Soviet scientific community was galvanized into a most intensive review of all of physics. The scientists desperately sought to quickly uncover potential breakthrough areas that could be developed into the great leap forward that Stalin demanded. They had to have progress, and they had to have it rapidly.

One Institute Had 2,000 PhDs and a Full Support Staff

Large review institutions were quickly set up, staffed with the best Soviet scientists and support translators and teams. One such search institute involved some 2,000 Ph.Ds along with their support staffs. Soviet ships brought in shiploads of copies of all the scientific journals of the West—from the beginning—, and they were reviewed paper-by-paper, page-by-page. Anything novel and implying new scientific possibilities, or anything that had not been adequately followed up, was laid aside in a "select" pile for further review and decision by the best Soviet theoreticians available {11}.

One gets a new physics by discovering shortcomings and flaws in the old one. This intensive Russian search almost immediately uncovered the deep flaws in classical electrodynamics—flaws that have been propagated throughout most other branches of science. Classical electrodynamics (and electrical engineering) is particularly beset by hoary flawed foundations problems, dating from at least 1865. As an example, the equations did and still do assume a material ether, and they have since the beginning! Not a single equation was changed when the

---

electrodynamics model which *do not even model* the active vacuum and its exchange with every charge, much less a *broken symmetry* in that exchange. So none of those agencies even knows what powers an electrical circuit, 45 years after the proof of broken symmetry was accomplished by Wu and her colleagues in 1957, and the Nobel Prize was then quickly awarded to Lee and Yang *the very same year* (1957) for predicting that broken symmetry revolution. In the modern view a charge is a dipolarity, when its vacuum interaction is considered. As a dipolarity, every charge exhibits the proven asymmetry of opposite charges, in its interaction with the active vacuum. The charge thus extracts and outpours real observable EM energy from the vacuum, freely and continuously, and it exhibits COP = oo. Those agencies—along with nearly all the rest of the U.S. scientific community—still naively assume that a COP>1.0 EM system (i) is impossible, (ii) is against the laws of nature, and (iii) is a forbidden perpetual motion machine. In nearly half a century since the discovery of the broken symmetry of opposite charges, those agencies have yet to apply that finding to electrical engineering and engineering curricula. Frankly, since they have dragged their collective feet for nearly a half century on extracting EM energy from the vacuum, what is needed is a Stalin to put his iron boot firmly to their posteriors and call their attention to it in language they cannot ignore. *The pollution of the planet for energy purposes and the imminent oil and energy wars that will ravish the earth are directly due (i) to this inexplicable dogma upheld by the scientific community and (ii) to the community's continued falsehoods equating EM COP>1.0 to perpetual motion machines.* The continuing failure to **incorporate** the **active vactnun** exchange—and its broken symmetry—into electrical engineering and classical **electromagetics a**lso poses an unacceptable threat to the continued survival of this nation.

Michelson-Morley experiments in the 1880s destroyed the material ether itself. The classical EM model also assumes a flat local spacetime (falsified by general relativity since 1915) and an inert vacuum (falsified in particle physics for several decades). It still assumes the same EM field in mass-free space as exists in mass—a non sequitur of major impact. Just to make the Maxwell-Heaviside equations easier to solve and avoid numerical methods, the *totally arbitrary* Lorentz symmetrical regauging[6] discards all EM systems far from equilibrium with their active vacuum environment. In fact, there is no "active vacuum environment" in the model, much less a broken symmetry in that exchange. Yet that very broken symmetry is exhibited by every charge and dipole {12}, and thus by every EM circuit and system. That asymmetry is involved in the continuously increasing giant negentropy poured out by every charge in the universe, thereby generating all EM fields and potentials and their energy, eventually reaching even across the universe, *and with perfect macroscopic order and time duration as long as one wishes*. Indeed, all electrodynamics is in total violation of the second law of thermodynamics, to any *macroscopic* size level and time duration desired.[7]

The terribly flawed electrodynamics model was completely overhauled by the Russian scientists *very* quickly, and the work was accomplished by some of the best nonlinear scientists in the world. Already present at the time were many things available to assist in dramatically extending {13} the hoary 1865 Maxwellian electrodynamics {6}. Gauge field theory was available since the turn of the 20th century, and the top theoreticians could readily see that something more than Abelian electrodynamics was firmly required in particle physics. The Yang-Mills {14} theory met that need in 1954 by originating non-Abelian gauge theory.

Situation in the Early 1950s

By 1950, Stalin's scientists had the beginnings of what they dubbed "energetics" {15,16}, which we would dub an "engineerable unified field theory" {17,18,19}. Longitudinal EM waves were primary {20,5} in that more fundamental approach. By the mid 1950s, one can pick out of the open literature {21} increasing incidences of prototype Russian energetics weapon testing around the world. In 1960, Khrushchev {22} spoke obliquely of these "fantastic new weapons" that were "just within the portfolio of the Soviet scientists," so to speak. Commercial aircraft sightings (Figure 2) and the reports of their captains and crews are also a particularly significant source of sightings of Russian energetics weapons tests, as are sightings by ships' crews (Figure 3) and ground observers (Figure 4).

---

[6] Actually a version of this symmetrical regauging was first performed by Ludwig Valentin Lorenz, "Ueberr die Identitat der Schwingungen des Lichts mit den elektrischen Stromen," *Ann. Phys. Chem.*, Vol. 131, 1867, p. 243-263—only two years after Maxwell published his seminal theory in 1865. The paper is also published in English, as Ludwig Valentin Lorenz, "On the identity of the vibrations of light with electrical currents," *Phil. Mag.*, Ser. 4, Vol. 34, 1867, p. 287-301. Unfortunately not much attention was paid to Lorenz's effort, since he independently derived electrodynamics. Decades later, when H. A. Lorentz also published symmetrical regauging of the Maxwell-Heaviside equations, he was given credit for it with no further mention of Lorenz. A proper historical summary of this has been given by J. D. Jackson and L. B. Okun, "Historical roots of gauge invariance," *Rev. Mod. Phys.*, Vol. 73, July 2001, p. 663-680. This is an excellent coverage of the history of who actually did what and when, and who got credit for it.

[7] This dramatically extends the size regions (microscopic through colloidal) and the time durations (momentary to two seconds) where the second law is known and proven not to necessarily apply.

18-27 km diameter
Asahi Evening News, Tokyo
June 22, 1982
Multiple tests seen per month, for years.
Pilots simply ceased reporting them.

Figure 2 Typical shield test, northern route to Japan, seen by passing airliner.

Mar. 20, 1969
Caribbean and Western North Atlantic
MOON
• Semicircle
• Milky white light
• Small, intense at first
• Dimmed as enlarged
• Grew to enormous size
• Lasted 10 minutes, then faded
50 degrees
70 degrees
Marine Observer 40:17, 1970

Figure 3 Giant missile shield test seen by passing ship's crew.

Missile Shield at Sary Shagan
London Sunday Times, 17 Aug 80
Sept. 1979
Seen twice from Afghanistan
20°
Toward Sary Shagan Missile Test Range over 100 miles away

Figure 4 Nick Downie's sighting from the ground of distant Soviet missile shield tests.

1963 Deployment and Immediate Use of Scalar Interferometers

The first huge scalar potential interferometers {23,24} of strategic range and power (Figure 5) were deployed by the Soviets in 1963, and one was used to kill the U.S.S. Thresher nuclear attack submarine (Figure 6), leaving clearly recognizable signatures {25}.

Since 1963, the Russians have had the equivalent of more than seven additional Manhattan Projects (using the Russian 5-year program instead of the 4-year Manhattan Project), back-to-back, in development of energetics weaponry. The energetics weapons have never been given to the regular Russian forces. Instead, all research, production, siting, manning, and employment are by the KGB and still under ruthless KGB control by die-hard communist factions {26}.

XMTR
BEAM OF LONGITUDINAL EM WAVES
• Energy effect in distant zone may be either heating or cooling, and slow (rising) or fast (explosive).
• Specific patterns of local spacetime curvature and dynamics (engines) may also be produced.
• Beams easily pass through Earth or ocean.
INTERFERENCE ZONE
BEAM OF LONGITUDINAL EM WAVES
XMTR

Figure 5 Scalar (longitudinal EM wave) interferometer.

APRIL 1963
© Hal Crawford 1978. Used by permission.

Figure 6 Kill of the U.S.S. Thresher. With her controls jammed, the hull of the doomed submarine implodes when she reaches crush depth

An Example of Russian Technology Astonishing Western Scientists

Some years ago, coordinating with a Western but non-US aerospace firm, I furnished the firm with the names and addresses of some Russian scientists in Moscow, since it was clear from their internet site that the scientists were on the fringes of the KGB energetics weapons program. An excellent European engineer fluent in Russian was sent in, several times. Several unusual things were demonstrated to him, including (i) transmitting enormous energy down a very thin wire, and (ii) cold molding, or turning metal into a liquid at room temperature, pouring it into a mold, and then letting it sit and harden. All without heating.

The engineer also closely questioned the Russian scientists about Russian . energetics weaponry, a subject the scientists were most reluctant to discuss. Finally they admitted the energetics weapons existed, and they actually obtained a meeting between the engineer and the KGB General who had directed the Soviet energetics weapon program for more than 20 years. In the meeting, the General coldly admitted the weapons, stated that "Of course you are not going to be allowed to see *those!"* and confirmed that somehow the Russians obtained everything the present author writes, as soon as he writes it {27}.

The engineer then brought the Russian scientists to his aerospace firm in that Western nation, where the scientists demonstrated cold molding to assembled scientists and some U.S. personnel. I forwarded a written explanation to the Western scientists of how the cold molding was performed technically. Later, on calling the engineer again, I discovered that the foreign authorities of that country had suddenly classified everything over there, and the engineer could no longer even talk to me without filing a Foreign Intelligence Contact Report. My own part in all this was completely open-source, pro bono, and I had already written of it openly and publicly.

Softening of Metal at a Distance Was One Effect Used Against the Challenger

At any rate, earlier I had openly advanced (and printed) the same mechanism, since it was the metal softening mechanism used by the KGB to kill the U.S. Challenger spacecraft in 1986. Publicly I had been resoundingly called a lunatic for advancing such a "preposterous" thesis. Nonetheless, metal softening by a distant LWI (longitudinal wave interferometer) was definitely utilized as part of the kill of the Challenger, as a close colleague here in the U.S. proved *experimentally,* detecting and demonstrating that metal-softening Russian signal prior to the kill of the Challenger. He amplified the signal and demonstrated on the bench its nearly instant softening of nails, rendering the nails momentarily as limp as wet noodles (Figure 7). Nails from the same box, not exposed to the signal, remained hard and could be hammered into a board. Not so the nails from the box that were exposed to the amplified Soviet signal! Those nails folded up like a wet noodle when tapped with a hammer, and could not be driven into a board.

Working unpaid with the foreign scientists, we had in fact obtained the "smoking gun" proving that this cold molding capability rigorously existed in the KGB inventory. Further, it had existed so long that the KGB had essentially *declassified* it so that the civilian Russian scientists seeking employment funds from the West could utilize it.

MAN IN THE LOOP
MAN NOT IN LOOP
CANCELLATION SIGNAL
DETECTION
SCALAR AMPLIFIER TUNED TO THE WOODPECKER

Figure 7 Proof of metal-softening signal: Golden softens nails with amplified Woodpecker signal.

Energetics: Three Branches and a Strategic Deception Plan

The *energetics* weapons use exotic polarizations of EM waves, quantum potentials, and the "infolded" LW electrodynamics (both scalar and longitudinal photons) inside and comprising every "ordinary" transverse EM field and wave. The KGB energetic weapons are categorized (Figure 8) according to what they are targeted against:

(1) against inert matter, fields, and potentials etc., that branch of weapons is called by the same name, *energetics* weapons.

(2) Against living tissue, bodies, cells, biofields, biopotentials, etc., they are known as *bioenergetic* weapons. Disease-induction electrodynamics such as used to irradiate the U.S. Embassy in Moscow are examples of bioenergetic weapons.

(3) Against the mind, thought, memory, behavior, and the mind-body coupling mechanism, they are known as *psychoenergetic* weapons. Particularly in the latter mode, these weapons also use time-polarized (scalar) EM waves and time-polarized (scalar) photons as well {28}.

NONLIVING SYSTEMS
LIVING SYSTEMS
Energetics
• Nonliving systems
• Scalar Interferometry
• Action-at-a-Distance
• Quantum Potential
• Vacuum Engines
• Spacetime Structuring
• Material, Field Effects
• Nuclei, Lattice Changes
• Hidden EM Variables
• SWZ Effects
Bioenergetics
• Living Systems (Bodies)
• Cells, cellular changes
• Master Cell Control (Popp)
• Spacetime Structuring
• Disease Induction, Remission
• Action-at-a-Distance
• Quantum Potentials
• Scalar Interferometry
• Hidden EM Variables
• SWZ Effects
Psychoenergetics
• Living Systems (Minds)
• Thoughts, Memories, Emotions
• Conscious/Unconscious Minds
• Spacetime Structuring
• Species, Biospheric Minds
• Action-at-a-Distance
• Quantum Potentials
• Scalar Interferometry
• Hidden EM Variables
• SWZ Effects
expansion

Figure 8 Three branches of Russian energetics weapons.

The KGB also implemented an elaborate and continuing deception plan, as is standard military practice for any great strategic attack plan. The KGB deception plan has been highly successful {29} in keeping the United States convinced that these weapons do not exist, and convinced that the standard strategic nuclear weapons possessed by the West are "leading" and "superior."

Strategic Attacks Scheduled and Why We Were Not Destroyed

Indeed, the West's nuclear weapons are inferior to Russian energetics weapons, particularly to the quantum potential weapons (Figure 9) deployed at the end of 1989 and to the newer "causal system" weapons deployed since the first of 1999, where *functional robot systems* (Figure 10) are made of nonmaterial spacetime curvatures and their dynamics only! In the event of a full strategic Russian energetics strike, an opening strike with quantum potential weapons {30} will dud all nuclear weapons on earth, all nuclear power systems, and all nuclear propulsion systems in about 10 minutes. This takes care of most of the U.S. strategic armament, *within the first 10 minutes.* The publicized strategic weapons of this nation have in my opinion been almost defenseless now for at least a full decade {31,32}, but I also believe that situation may be rapidly changing for the better.

A friendly little foreign nation *does* have such weapons including QP weapons that operate in multiply connected spacetime (MCS). That little nation has been responsible for our continued survival and has continued to deter the planned KGB strategic energetics strikes upon the West. There are indications (though still not certain) that at least one—and possibly two—other friendly Western nation also possesses such weapons.

N6
N7
N3
N1
N4
N2
N5
Any Depth

Figure 9 Quantum potential instantly attacking widely separated targets.

Internested patterns of spacetime curvatures
Highly Structured Einsteinian spacetime
Maxwellian Demons are EM hidden variables organized into dynamic ST curvature structures acting at all levels
Demons work at all levels
Exact ST curvature dynamics exists for any and all mass and EM system dynamics. For any mass system there is an exact ST curvature system that interacts with it to cause its functions and actions.

Figure 10 Causal system robots (CSRs). These are sets of ST curvature engines, with functions organized into a single complex weapon system with communication, propagation, weapons effects, and command and control functions incorporated. When the CSR interacts with mass, the mass performs those system functions.

Twice in 1997 alone *we were within days of the scheduled total strategic destruction of the U.S. by die-hard KGB energetic weapons,* with all-out strategic attacks actually scheduled in each case. The first attack was scheduled in latter February but was quickly countered. The attack was immediately rescheduled for May 1. The U.S. intelligence and scientific communities were apparently unaware of what was happening, and still do not believe it. However, as this author previously informed appropriate government agencies a few days prior to the attack scheduled for May 1, 1997, U.S. intelligence agencies certainly intercepted my urgent personal fax directly to the prime minister of the friendly little nation, urgently requesting that the "sane" command and control of the countering MCS/QP weapons be changed to "insane" control and spelling out the compelling reason why it was necessary.

In the insane weapons control mode, the computer periodically (say, every two hours) initiates launch sequence for the weapon, automatically. If any operating personnel remain alive on site, there is a designated short period in the sequence where the onsite personnel can countermand the order and abort the launch. If the order is not countermanded, the launch is not aborted and the "doomsday" weapon automatically fires. In that case, KGB military power and most of Russia would disappear from the face of the earth.

This was necessary to nullify the impending strikes of MindSnapper negative energy EMP weapons {33} on those critical friendly QP weapon sites to instantly kill all personnel on site. Strike by the MindSnapper instantly kills every living thing in the area, and a protracted contamination remains whereby the struck areas emit longitudinal EM waves. If one attempts to insert new crews to resume operation of the weapons, the crewmen sicken and then die in the entry attempt. First, increasingly severe interference between mind and body control occurs. Then the individuals waver, lose consciousness, go into seizures, and their minds gradually de-couple from their bodies and they die. Fortunately, alter my fax message the C3 system was changed to the insane mode, and the Russians were notified, just in the nick of time {34}. To prevent their own destruction by the certain insane counterstrike, the KGB aborted the looming strategic strikes.

Ironically, at about the very time that the KGB strategic armada was standing down, Secretary of Defense Cohen {35} was making the following statement in Georgia:

> *"Others are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves...So there are plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations...It's real, and that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts."*

Almost certainly Secretary Cohen had no knowledge that, so to speak, a great Sword of Damocles hanging over his head was being removed by a friendly little foreign nation at that very moment, as he uttered those words apparently referring to the older longitudinal EM wave interferometer weapons. I suspect that Dr. Cohen is to this day still unaware of the incidents that were ongoing at the time of his poignant statement.

Attempts to Alert the Nation

We alerted the President and the National Security Council as early as 1984 (Figure 54). In 1998 we also furnished selected Senators, Congresspersons, and certain high-level U.S. government agencies with color copies of a 200-page briefing and expose {36} of—among other things—these weapons, their testing, and their clandestine use against the U.S. since 1963. Because of the nearly 50 years of demonstrated induction of diseases {37, 38} (Figure 11) in personnel in the U.S. Embassy in Moscow (e.g., responsible for the deaths of three U.S. Ambassadors), we also included part of the briefing on the Priore work {39} (Figure 12) showing the remarkable cellular changes (time-reversal of diseased states back to a previous earlier healthy condition) that can be and had been experimentally induced by energetics under rigorous scientific controls.

Former U.S. Embassy in Moscow.

BACKGROUND

- Began in latter 1950s
- Discovered on VP Nixon's trip
- Initially thought to be *nuclear* radiation (Discovered w/Geiger counter?)
- High level target -- U.S. Ambassador
- Guarantees personal attention of:
  - U.S. Ambassador to USSR
  - U.S. President
  - NSA, CIA, DIA, NSC, etc.
  - Top consulting scientists
  - Leading U.S. scientific institutions
- Two U.S. Ambassadors died, another sickened
- Anomalous health changes in personnel, only in zero-field (zero potential gradient) areas!
- Four U.S. Presidents requested Soviets cease
  - Cut from 18 watts/sq cm to 2 Then again increased
- No one could understand what was going on
- Aluminum screens were placed over windows
- Moscow was declared a hazardous duty zone

Figure 11 Microwave radiation of U.S. Embassy in Moscow.

We proposed to the DoD a very rapid, high priority development program to develop portable suitcase-sized computer-controlled treatment devices (Figure 13) capable of saving a majority of mass casualties—e.g., from a professional large anthrax attack on a major population center.

Figure 12 Priore[1] laboratory and device for treating small animals.

Two blankets have antennas in them.
Uses an advanced but simple concept.
Eliminates plasma tube mixing etc.
Computer-controlled complex signal structure.
Irradiation for 2 minutes.
Three such treatments one week apart.
Unit can be made self-powering on vacuum energy.

Equipment Case
Computer
Control Unit
Signals
Function
Generator
Antenna Pad

See "Porthole Briefing" on website www.cheniere.org.

Figure 13 Portable unit for rapid treatment of mass casualties.

The Responses

The responses—or more exactly the near total lack thereof—by various U.S. government agencies were enlightening. E.g., the National Institutes of Health (NIH) never let the package out of its Policy (i.e., *political spin control)* section. It did not check a single scientific reference on a proven method documented in the hard French scientific literature for reversing terminal cancer, infectious diseases, etc. Not a single scientist called me to discuss such a proven, revolutionary effect. Instead, the NIH Policy section simply shipped the package over to the DOD as "their problem, not ours." That was because the package also explained how the Gulf War Disease was induced, including how semen can cause infection of the wife, and how the structured body biopotential of the sickened veteran can induce similar structuring of the biopotentials of his children by proximity, thus inducing various aspects of the disease.

Effective Survival Treatment of Mass Casualties Could Be Developed

Meanwhile, we had uncovered a way to dramatically speed up the Priore healing process, and use only normal transverse EM radiations for ready adaptation of existing equipment, while still forcing the same time-reversal of diseased and damaged cells back to normal. Just much faster. This meant that very small, suitcase-sized treatment units (Figure 13) could now be developed in a reasonable time—e.g., in two to three years, given a high priority, intense effort, adequate funding, and a carefully chosen scientific team.

So, we proposed a crash development by DOD of a small, suitcase-size portable device for quick, mass treatment of mass U.S. casualties following terrorist attacks on our cities using weapons of mass destruction. Eventually an innocuous reply (forced by my congressman) simply stated "it was not supported by the literature." In the package, of course, I had *specifically cited* the numerous scientific papers in the French scientific literature reporting and proving the experimental results. I had also worked 14 years to decipher the mechanism actually performing the revolutionary healing accomplished in rigorous animal testing by the Priore team. Eleven years after suppression of the Priore effort, the University of Bordeaux, which had been pressured into rejecting Priore's doctoral thesis, did approve and publish a doctoral thesis by Perisse on the work {40}.

The National Science Foundation (NSF) did not reply at all. Yet at the time the official strategic threat to the United States listed WMD attack on our cities and great population centers as the greatest threat of all (Figure 14). Today, as everyone knows we are in a war after the terrorist attack on the twin towers in New York and on the Pentagon on September 11, 2001. The U.S. government clearly recognizes that it is not a matter of if additional attacks on the U.S. cities and populace will occur, but *when.* The terrorists are also known to have already infiltrated weapons of mass destruction such as biological warfare weapons (anthrax, smallpox, bubonic plague, etc.) Nonetheless, apparently the NSF simply did not believe a novel but *rigorously demonstrated-in-the-1960s* unorthodox process that could potentially save most of those millions of Americans who otherwise will surely die—and who *are* going to die in the first major WMD strike on our population centers.

RECOGNIZED TODAY:
• Sabotage and interdiction
• Chemical and biological
• Nuclear materials
• Powerful explosives
• Assassination, hostages
• Contamination
• Shoulder-fired AD missiles
• Terrorism
• Nuclear weapons hidden in our cities (but shunned)
PRESENT BUT UNRECOGNIZED:
• Negative energy EMP weapons
• Quantum potential weapons
• EM biological warfare
• Scalar EM weapons
• EM disease induction and spreading of immune systems
• Alteration of behavior and emotions
• Alteration of memory and perception
• Control of thought and behavior
• Action at a distance effects
• Causal System Robots (CSRs)

Figure 14 The mass destruction weapons threat to our populace.

The entire scientific method is based on assigning priority to experimental truth rather than dogmatic belief. If experiments refute the theory, the theory must be changed and the experimental results accepted. Else one is not following scientific method. Apparently the National Science Foundation does not follow scientific method, nor does it seem interested in doing so. Neither do the National Institutes of Health. The decisive results of some 2,000 rigorous animal experiments reported in the refereed scientific literature in leading French journals, by multiple established French scientists, were simply ignored because the results are contrary to present dogma. Meanwhile, four years have been lost. During that four years, the portable units could have already been developed, mass produced, and made available to treat and save millions of coming U.S. civilian casualties. Apparently the lives of those Americans are not as important as maintaining the present medical dogma. When those millions do die—and they will—we shall most certainly remind those agencies of the caliber of their dedication to scientific method and of their service to their fellow Americans. In my personal view, ignoring a chance to save so many Americans is treason of a very special kind.

The Official Silence Was Deafening

Not a single scientist in any of those and other organizations seems to have taken the package seriously. Not one called me to discuss it, or apparently studied the references, etc. No one asked for a personal briefing. No one was interested in the actual photo of the strike of a Russian EM missile from a scalar interferometer, offset from a U.S. night shuttle launch (Figure 15) from Cape Canaveral in latter November 1985, or the photo of the actual registration point ball of light high in the air (Figure 16) over that same shuttle launch {41}. The same weapon then killed the Arrow DC-8 at Gander, Newfoundland about two weeks later (Figure 17). An eyewitness (or more than one) actually observed the streak of light from the sky that struck the Arrow DC-8 in the right fuselage ahead of the engines {42,43}, after the thrust of the engines were reduced during take-off by use of a negative energy (cooling) interferometer. A similar ball of light associated with the kill of a Titan missile fired from Vandenberg AFB in early 1986 {44} and printed in *Aviation Week & Space Technology* magazine, was also apparently of no concern.

EM MISSILE STRIKE
26 NOV 1985
(LIGHT DEVELOPMENT)
OFFSET FROM NIGHT SHUTTLE LAUNCH

PHOTO BY BOB GLADWIN

Scalar interferometer operator fires offset EM missile from Russia.

EM MISSILE STRIKE
26 NOV 1985
(DARK DEVELOPMENT)
OFFSET FROM NIGHT SHUTTLE LAUNCH

Figure 15 Soviet EM missile strike offset from U.S. shuttle launch at Cape Canaveral on 26 Nov. 1985. This is the smoking gun.

These remarks are intended to show the lack of understanding that has existed in our governmental, scientific, and intelligence communities of what energetics is and of the great energetics superweapons that have been developed. With the present rapidly growing interest in longitudinal EM waves, however, we suspect that such lack of understanding is now no longer the case. We certainly hope that is true, and we are

MARKER BEACON
Over Night Shuttle Launch
Cape Canaveral, Florida
26 Nov 1985
Photographed by George Suchary

Distant operator onsite in Russia slews away the registration point (the m arker beacon)

Two weeks later, the same weapon killed the Arrow DC-8 at its takeoff from Gander, Newfoundland.

26 Nov1985

Figure 16 Marker beacon above U.S. shuttle launch at Cape Canaveral, 26 Nov. 1985. Russian crews were using shuttle launches as practice ICBM launch targets.

ENGINE THRUST IS REDUCED
AIRCRAFT GLOWING (THRUST REDUCED)
FUEL EXPLOSION
EM MISSILE STRIKE (MULTIPLE INSTRUMENT SPIKES)
CYANIDE INHALATION
KINDLING (SELF-TARGETING)
TAIL-DOWN CRASH
ELECTROSTATIC COOLING OF ENGINE COMBUSTION
EXPLOSIVE PLASTICS IGNITION, FIRE, OUTGASSING
ABOUT HALF THE OCCUPANTS DIE
RECOVERY PERSONNEL IRRADIATED
TIME CHARGING OF ATOMIC NUCLEI (SLOW)
MATERIALS EMIT LONGITUDINAL WAVE EM RADIATION FROM TIME-CHARGE DECAY
SHARP TIME-CHARGING PULSE (STRIKE OF EM MISSILE)

Figure 17 Kill of the Arrow DC-8 at Gander, Newfoundland Dec. 12,1985.

much encouraged that at least one—and possibly two—friendly Western nations now possess quantum potential weapons.

The Long Dry Spell in Correcting Electrodynamics May Be Slowly Ending

In over 20 years of unrelenting effort, until 1999 we were unable to get any significant Western scientists of real "horsepower" (e.g., in non-Abelian electrodynamics, foundations errors in electrodynamics, advanced gauge field theory, general relativity, etc.) to meticulously examine conventional U(1) electrodynamics and its glaring errors, and to look at weapons implications of higher group symmetry electrodynamics.

Beginning about three years ago, however, a noted scientist, Dr. Myron Evans {45,2}, along with other theoretical scientists of the Alpha Institute's Institute of Advanced Study (AIAS), have been extending electrodynamics by developing the 0(3) electrodynamics. They also have deeply examined the Whittaker work of 1903 and 1904 on which the early part of the Russian energetics weapons are based {24}.

The AIAS analyses, and subsequent papers by Dr. Evans and Alex Labounsky as well as by the entire AIAS group, have clearly established the primary importance of time-like precursors of EM fields, operating in massfree spacetime where fields E and B cannot exist. These time-like precursors *create* all the rest of the conventional electrodynamic entities {46}. This is a dramatic extension to electrodynamics and physics across the board. More than 100 papers have been produced to date, with more than thirty published in journals such as *Foundations of Physics,* and many of the others are either accepted or still in the referee process with various journals. Some 60 of the papers were published as a single special edition of the *Journal of New Energy* (JNE) in latter 1999, and a second edition of *Modern Nonlinear Optics,* Wiley, 2001 has been published with many important papers.

However, the problem is that the scientific community, which is strongly committed to "business as usual", has funded none of this work. The conventional lead agencies of the community are still in the "ostrich position", with their heads buried very firmly in the sand with respect to the terrible damage they continue to enforce on this nation by their continued perpetuation of an old, long-archaic, inadequate electrodynamics and electrical engineering.

Engineerable Unified Field Theory Is Now Clearly Appearing

The rapidly emerging AIAS extension of electrodynamics has "met in the middle" with Sachs' {4} revolutionary generalization of general relativity and electrodynamics. For the first time, an *engineerable* unified field theory—employing 0(3) electrodynamic means—is now being produced. The AIAS work in 0(3) electrodynamics was shown to be an important subset of Sachs' approach. It also now provides the full, rigorous theoretical foundation and model for the Priore mechanisms and results.

We also comment most strongly that the important SU(2)xSU(2) electrodynamics as developed by Barrett (47) leads to essentially the same conclusions, since Barrett's electrodynamics is homomorphic with 0(3) electrodynamics. Barrett, of course, is one of the pioneers of ultrawideband radar—another scientific area that was fiercely opposed and suppressed by the orthodox U.S. establishment for some time. Ironically, today those very scientists who were so dogmatic in their vociferous condemnation of UWB radar, have assumed the mantle of "experts in the UWB field", sometimes even taking credit for having "advanced it" in the first place.

Examples of Some Major Non Sequiturs in Conventional Electrodynamics

In every textbook and millions of technical papers in the West, electrodynamicists routinely calculate the "magnitude of the scalar potential". Actually, not a single one—including Maxwell—calculated or calculates the *magnitude of the potential itself.* Instead, they universally calculate the *reaction cross section* of the potential at a point occupied by an assumed intercepting/collecting unit point *static* charge {48}. At best that is a representation of the *intensity* of the field at each point. The reaction cross section of the potential with a fixed unit point static charge is indeed a scalar value. The "scalar" potential itself, on the other hand, *is not* its own reaction cross-section at each point of itself, and it is not a scalar entity at all! Instead, it is a harmonic bundle of bidirectional EM longitudinal phase conjugate wavepairs, as shown by E. T. Whittaker in 1903 {49}. It is and always has been a multi-vectorial, multiwave entity. By slightly reinterpreting Whittaker's work to agree with quantum field theory, the scalar potential is also a circulation of EM energy from the time domain to 3-space and back to the time domain, at every point in space that is occupied by the potential.

Further, the "field" notion is utilized in two self-contradictory manners. On the one hand, it is assumed in the massless reaches of space, and on the other hand it is assumed in mass, *which is the only case in which a force field is properly defined.*[8] The so-called "electromagnetic field" existing in empty space is not an EM force field at all, but a curvature or curvatures of spacetime with assorted ilynamics. Spacetime is after all active, and being active means curvatures and ilynamics. As rigorously shown by the AIAS theoreticians, what exists in *spacetime*—before the force-fields appear on reacting charged mass—are time-like and longitudinal scalar potentials and fluxes. These "pre-EM field" entities in fact interact with mass to produce all the force fields (the electromagnetic fields). Mass is a *component* of force; simply by F == *d*p/dt, which is expanded into F = d(mv)/dt, which is ma + v*(dm/dt).* Note that both terms have mass as a component. Hence there is no force or forcefield when mass is absent. Present mechanics is seriously wrong (and has been wrong for hundreds of years) in assuming a separate massless force acting upon a separate mass.

---

[8] Since Maxwell and **the** original pioneers believed in a material ether filling all space, to them t**here** was not a single point anywhere in the universe that was devoid of mass. Hence to them there was only one kind of field: **the** kind that exists in mass.

Jackson, one of the ablest classical electrodynamicists of our day, adroitly states how electrodynamicists skirt that issue. Quoting, p. 249 of his *Classical Electrodynamics,* second edition: *"Most classical electrodynamicists continue to adhere to the notion that the EM force field exists as such in the vacuum, but do admit that physically measurable quantities such as force somehow involve the product of charge and field."*

Our comment is that one does not get an observable until after the interaction of a cause with a previous effect, to provide a change (a new effect). The 4-cause itself—in this case the field that actually exists in the vacuum—is never observed nor is it observable. Its *effect* (force with an affected observable mass as a component of it) is observed. The field in space and the field in matter thus do not even have the same fundamental units, but differ by a factor of m. In electrodynamics the m is avoided by "defining" the field as force per unit coulomb of "charge" (without saying or accounting "charged mass").

Wide Confusion of Cause and Effect

Present electrodynamics (and even the hoary old mechanics, as pointed out) has thoroughly confused the causal (4-space) side of the observation process with the effects (3-space) side—observation yields *3-spatial* entities, not 4-spatial. Indeed, as is well known, *time is not observable, even in theory.* That is really because observation is a *d/dt* process applied by the 3-space intermediary (e.g., mass) being acted upon by the causal (4-space) entity in spacetime, to produce a change in that intermediary (3-spatial) that results (is observed). *A priori,* the output of the observation process does not even exist in time, since its fundamental units are LLL and not LLLT. The observation process is thus *d/dt(LLLT)* => LLL.

Further, electrodynamics omits the fact that, not only does the causal entity act upon the intermediary to produce the *effect* (changes to the intermediary), but *those changes (effects) also act back (in reverse) through the intermediary to produce changes in the causal entity itself.* This mutual interaction between cause and effect (but never stressed in exactly that manner) is well known in GR, where the curvature of spacetime acts upon mass-energy to change it, and the resulting change in mass-energy also acts back upon spacetime to curve it. The omission of the latter "back reaction" in EM theory by Maxwell resulted in omitting half the energy, half the wave, and half the causal entity in spacetime, as well as half the effect. The missing half of the effect appears as the Newtonian third law reaction, which in electrodynamics is just mystically "assumed" to be an effect without a cause.

The vast importance of restoring this missing "back action of effect upon cause" is because it can be deliberately utilized to directly engineer the causal (4-space) state itself, producing nonmaterial "engines" and unobservable functioning robot systems comprised entirely of curvatures of spacetime and their dynamics. Such "causal system robots" (CSRs) can be designed and engineered to then perform almost any desired action upon normal mass systems they encounter. The robots also can easily penetrate vast depths of mass, which is mostly empty space filled with potentials, fields and waves—all of which are just bundles of longitudinal EM waves and their dynamics. "Mass" is actually a vast superhighway through which such CSRs can easily move at the speed of light {50}.

CSRs: Engineering the Unobserved Causal Side To Create Functional Systems

Understanding early on the mutual interaction between cause and effect that existed in their energetics, the Russians were able to engineer this totally new kind of system: the *causal system robot* or CSR (Figure 10). With sufficient theoretical development, one can "work backwards" by adroitly re-engineering the effect to obtain a desired causal system (spacetime curvature set along with its impressed dynamics; (Figure 18) corresponding to some physical system and its changes one desires to engender. One thereby directly creates a deterministic set of spacetime curvatures and impressed dynamics, which we call an "engine" (Figure 18). This *ST curvature engine* system can then function as a completely separate system {51} (Figure 10). One can communicate with it via longitudinal EM waves, control it, etc. By building in scalar interferometry functions, the **CSR** can be given "weapons" capabilities, etc.

- All levels of energy structures and all levels of time structures mold spacetime geometry.
- The "pattern" is called a *template* for a vacuum engine (spacetime curvature engine).
- Spatial and temporal structurings of the engine act upon mass at all levels.
- This produces a template of forces, for precise translations and stresses within the mass at all levels. The forces exist in both time and 3-space.

ACTIVE SPACETIME
STRUCTURING OF ACTIVE SPACETIME CURVATURES
DYNAMIC MASS

Figure 18 The principle of general relativity extended to include the concept of the vacuum engine.

In theory such a CSR can be assembled to perform any desired function or complex of functions upon matter, fields, potentials, etc. that is desired. In short, one can build real, functioning "infolded" (subspace) robot weapon systems using this "backward engineering of spacetime itself process. The huge underground facilities (hundreds) that the Russians continued to build after the collapse of the Soviet economy and the fall of the Soviet Union, apparently contained the full CSR development and control facilities as well as the operational systems employed for this totally new kind of weapon system.

A great engineering of the future lies in engineering CSRs, which already constitute a great leap forward past the material nanobot technology being pursued in the West.

Making the First CSR is Extremely Difficult; Making a Million Copies Is Easy

The development of a specific CSR with a specific set of functions is akin to developing a highly complex software system of major proportions (several tens of millions of lines of code). The job is extremely difficult, and tortuous "debugging" is required for a lengthy period. Once a single CSR is completed and debugged, however, the production of thousands or even many millions of copies is then a trivial task.

The CSR may be visualized as a sort of vast complex of longitudinal EM waves (recall, we are speaking of ST curvatures, not the conventional EM waves thought to operate on a flat spacetime. *All* EM waves operate in a curved spacetime *a priori*, as clearly shown by Sachs). It turns out that all matter is mostly empty space, filled with potentials and fields. Space itself, considering its energetics, may be taken as a giant scalar potential. All those potentials and fields and waves are in fact nothing but sets of longitudinal EM waves and dynamics. In short, they are vast superhighways for the travel of CSRs and the propagation of longitudinal EM waves.

A CSR can be embedded within any kind of EM potential, wave, or field. So to replicate one, one embeds it in a magnetic signal and records that signal on a diskette or other media. Then one makes millions of copies of the diskette, for perhaps 10 cents or less each. Or do it en masse, by first completing a CD-ROM with a hundred or two hundred CSRs embedded in its signals (Figure 19). Then simply reproduce the CD-ROM. Every reproduction has another hundred or two exact duplicates of those CSRs, made for almost no cost at all. With communications built into the CSRs, the command and control facilities take charge of them, give them individual numbers or designations, and a robot armada emerges with most unusual capabilities indeed.

The puzzling underground facilities in Russia (which our fellows apparently never deciphered and which remained a mystery) apparently contained the scientific teams, the research and development facilities, the production facilities, and the command and control facilities for the new vast CSR weapon complex. It was to see its first great employment at the end of 1999.

MAKE CSR
COMMAND AND CONTROL
A
INSERT CSR IN EM SIGNAL "CARRIER"
RECEIVE COMBAT RESULTS REPORTS FROM ATTACKING ROBOTS.
RECORD SIGNAL ON CD-ROM, TAPE, ETC.
REPLICATE CD-ROM EN MASSE
ACTIVATE, COMMAND, PARK EACH ONE. THEN DEPLOY EACH SEPARATELY, IN ARMY OF CSR'S ATTACKING MILLIONS OF TARGETS
A

Figure 19 **Mass reproduction of a CSR is simple and inexpensive. The CSR resides in, or propagates inside, any EM signal, potential, or field.**

In 1999 The KGB Deployed Massive Numbers of CSRs for a Strategic Attack

In latter 1999 the KGB began massively deploying these CSRs of various types throughout the Western world, particularly including the United States. They simply sent the CSRs back "inside" the potentials and fields and waves being emitted from radio stations, TV stations, power lines, satellites, communications systems, inside matter, etc. These CSRs were deployed and infiltrated in major command posts and installations throughout the U.S. and its allies. True to form, the KGB even "stimulated" some major computer systems in critical U.S. government facilities by having the robots "surface" some effects on the Computers, right through the firewall programs (whose EM signals and operations indeed provided nice superhighways for the robots). Our fellows **detected** the interference as a "sophisticated computer hacking attack" (puzzlingly from the Russian Academy of Science), and then the robots "submerged" again after deliberately performing actions to produce obvious changes and guarantee the U.S. detection of those changes. The purpose of this "stimulus and probe" was to see if the U.S. was aware of CSRs and CSR **technology.** We clearly showed we were not, and we still are not aware of them. Fur**ther,** the entire government apparatus—including all our vaunted national laboratories—knows absolutely nothing at all about CSRs, and none of the laboratories believe it. That is the same posture they've been in with respect to energetics weapons for a half-century. Apparently they will be in that same posture for another half century, left to their own devices.

However, I was not allowed to remain a casual onlooker for this new CSR armada! The KGB also planned to use me as a stimulus to ping the government yet another way, and then assess the government's response.

Here in Huntsville, suddenly I was personally struck by such a CSR right from my computer monitor, with the attack riding through the light from the monitor to my eyes and retinas and right into the brain and nervous system (Figure 20). This was the type of CSR that can lurk in any potential or field inside a computer, and then strike and kill the operator looking at the screen. The CSR took over control of the machine, split the screen so that only one-inch horizontal strips were luminous—one at the top and the other at the bottom of the screen with the middle dark. These two separated horizontal strips allowed scalar interferometry via the inner LWs comprising the light from the two strips. The LWI signals crossed in my vision center, where suddenly ordinary EM signals and waves were produced by the scalar interferometry occurring there.

Stimulating apparently the only analyst capable of recognizing a CSR attack and connecting it with the scheduled giant strategic CSR attack.

KGB General commanding the energetics weapon previously confirmed that what this analyst writes on his computer is received as soon as he writes it. Apparently accomplished by Tempest techniques or directly by energetics.

Figure 20 Present author struck by CSR in latter 1999 as a deliberate nonfatal stimulus.

I saw rapid blinding flashes like a hundred flashbulbs exploding at once right in my face. However, the signals representing those "flashes" were being created right there in my vision center. An external camera would have recorded only the weirdly separated screen display. It *would not* have shown the brilliant flashes of light I was seeing, unless it was set up stereoscopically. The strike was deliberately sustained for only about 10 seconds so as to be severe but nonlethal; about 30 seconds would be totally lethal. Violent fibrillation of the heart also resulted explosively, and I was instantly hypnogogic and seriously weakened by sudden hypoxia from near total lack of blood pumping (because of the fibrillation). The purpose was apparently to strike the only analyst in the U.S. who would recognize what the nature of the attack was, stimulate him, watch him try to notify the government, and then observe the government's reaction. It look four days to recover from the strike. But I knew immediately what had made the strike, and that I had been hit with a CSR weaponized by having a built-in scalar interferometry capability. It was also a very sophisticated CSR, as it showed by assuming complete "intelligent" control of my computer's functions.

When I finally recovered, I did notify the government and warn them of CSRs, exactly as anticipated by the KGB. As might be expected, the government's total disbelief and lack of reaction clearly showed they knew nothing of CSRs. They simply did not believe such weapons existed or even could exist. Sadly, once again one faced the "not invented here" syndrome. General relativity and its provision for spacetime curvatures and their associated dynamics (engines) operating back upon mass are apparently just supposed to remain a theoretical curiosity. Why, obviously no scientist in his right mind would think of weaponizing such!

A more correct answer is, *"Like hell they wouldn't!"* *American* scientists would not think of it, but *Russian* scientists with their national chess-playing psychology will immediately seize upon any opportunity—even many moves ahead in the game—and develop it and utilize it. They understand and use the boa constrictor. We only understand and use the immediate rattlesnake.

How the Asymmetrically Deployed Strategic Attack Was Stopped in Its Tracks

However, we also alerted the "little nation" that has advanced EM weapons technology, which—since early 1997—has been saving the U.S. by forcing the abortion of impending KGB energetics weapons attacks.

When I warned them in 1997 about the MindSnapper weapons and mind-control weapons used against Captains Button and Svoboda, unknown to me at the time they later reacted and suddenly destroyed those facilities in Russia (apparently with violent scalar interferometry strikes). So *that* mind-control type of attack being readied for 1999 was thwarted for a few years by these strikes sometime prior to mid-1998.

But to return to the CSRs. In the latter quarter of 1999, the Russians were developing and deploying throughout the West numerous kinds of CSRs. So the period at the end of 1999/first few days of 2000 attack was already scheduled for a massively programmed CSR attack. It was designed to cripple the entire **nation,** and perhaps even collapse it economically, yet all would be blamed on Y2K! Our scientific ignorance guaranteed that we would blame it on something **mundane that** our scientists could understand: Y2K problems in all the old software programs running so much of our automated systems, communications, and centralized functioning, accounting, banking, etc. In short, the KGB planned to give us a bicentennial gift: a Y2K nightmare far beyond our wildest fears.

After my recovery from the CSR strike in the latter quarter of 1999, I again urgently alerted the friendly nation of the development of CSRs and their widespread deployment—and informed them of the personal attack on me and specifically why it was made nonfatal. Of course I also alerted our own government. We were scheduled for a *real* Y2K problem that would curl one's hair, so to speak, with everything imaginable failing—and probably all blamed on Y2K.

Admirably, beginning just at the end of 1999, the friendly nation simply began methodically and massively cleaning out all the CSRs, and they disposed of them in very short order! Such CSR systems[9] may easily be located and destroyed by strategic longitudinal EM wave weapons {52}, when and if one has the longitudinal EM wave technology sufficiently developed. So Y2K came and went with only a few relatively minor incidents from the *normal* Y2k problems expected.[10]

However, unknown to our scientists and intelligence community, a great war of a very special kind—*the Earth's first strategic subspace war*—had just been silently fought and won, right there inside our power systems, command and control systems, major weapon systems, electrical power systems, electrical control systems of our nuclear submarines and strategic bombers and missiles, even inside the electronics of our nuclear warheads, etc. And not a bobble showed on the surface, anywhere. This was the first real "subspace" war, where weapons made of pure spacetime curvatures and dynamics were involved as the main offensive battle systems. LWI destruction of numerous CSRs inside potentials and fields in various electronic equipment throughout the nation, created little or no overt signs at all.

This time we won, thanks to the "good guys" and not to our own scientific community. Next time we may not be so fortunate.

The Mostly-Ignored Time-Energy Interaction

For some inexplicable reason, physicists in the West have omitted one-half the actual photon interaction.[11] If one allows the spatial energy component of the photon to interact, then one must also account for the simultaneous interaction of the time-component of the photon. A mass m absorbing a photon (ΔE)(Δt) becomes *masstime* (m+dm)t, not mass m. Mass *m* and masstime *mt* are as different as are force *F* and impulse *Ft.* No scientist in his right mind would ignore the *t* in *Ft* and consider just the force *F.* Yet that exact kind of giant *faux* ***pas*** has been done for many decades now in the photon interaction. And it is still ubiquitously done in physics. *Mass does not emit photons; masstime does.* Again, physicists confuse effect and cause.

---

[9] These early CSRs apparently had no "stealth" capabilities built-in, so they were easily detected and destroyed, rather like shooting fish in a rain barrel.

[10] Even so, a normally disastrous Y2K problem was narrowly averted, in the nick of time, by a concerted national software reprogramming effort massively mounted and costing billions of dollars. Otherwise, the expected "ordinary" Y2K problem would have been very bad indeed.

As the Russian energetics weapon scientists know full well, time is actually spatial energy compressed enormously, by at least the factor c^2. Hence time has at least the equivalent energy density of mass. The greatest amount of "energy" existing in a photon—particularly in lower frequency photons—is in that "time" part that is arbitrarily ignored and discarded. An ELF photon has enormously more total energy—by many orders of magnitude—than does a gamma ray photon.

Energy and time components in the photon are canonical. Low frequency photons are reduced in the magnitude of their *spatial* energy component and thereby maximized in their *time* components. For the ordinary (decompressed) *energy equivalency* of the time component, one must multiply the time in seconds by c^2. Halving the frequency, e.g., doubles the time component, whose spatial equivalent energy is now $(2t)\times(c^2)$. With respect to the original photon, the new total energy (achieved by halving the frequency) is given by $[(\Delta E)/2] \times [(2\Delta t) \times c^2] = [(\Delta E)(\Delta t)\times c^2]$. So halving the photon's frequency increases its total energy by a factor of c^2, which is approximately by a factor of 9×10^{16}. Hence photons actually carry enormously greater total energy (most is locked up as time) at low frequency than at high frequency. Indeed, the highest energy photon interactions in the universe are at low frequency, *if and when* a transduction of the available time-energy into spatial energy occurs.

This has been completely missed in the West, but not by the Russian energetics weapons scientists. They have been *engineering* that formidable new high energy but low frequency physics—a physics far more energetic than that used in our most energetic colliding beams in "conventional high energy physics".

The cold fusion processes[12] stumbled onto by Western scientists are using the

---

[11] I.e., except for accounting for the overall "action" (angular momentum) and such things as **minimum** action theorems, etc. Treating the photon's increment of time specifically as a formidably compressed piece of spatial EM energy does not appear in Western physics. It has **long** been utilized in the KGB's secret energetics weapon science.

[12] For an explanation of the use of time-reversal zones in cold fusion experiments, and some of the resulting new transmutation reactions that result, see T. E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*, "Chapter 10: Cold Fusion: Low Spatial-Energy Nuclear Reactions at High Time-Energy," Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA, 2002. Available from www cheniere.org. Statistically, the formation of significant time-reversal zones is guaranteed by **the transient** fluctuation theorem of Denis Evans et al., and by recent experimental work by Evans et al. proving that such zones (where the reactions run backwards) can and do occur at up to **micron** (colloidal) size and for up to two seconds in duration. We stress that this is a recognized, **proven** violation of the second law of thermodynamics already known to physics.

time-energy component of photon interactions, to generate enormous localized EM energy directly upon the interior quarks and gluons of nucleons {53}. We worked out a speculative explanation of the active time-energy transduction mechanisms that fits all the experimental phenomena, including the eerie instrument anomalies occurring in rigorous electrolyte experiments at China Lake for some years. That is included in my new book, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA, 2002, available from www.cheniere.org.

Of course consistency alone does not prove it conclusively; consistency is a necessary but not sufficient condition for proof. But at least the proposed explanation is consistent, and nothing else seems to be, at this time. In one chapter in my referenced new book we do cover the cold fusion mechanism and give specific new nuclear reactions producing the excess deuterium, tritium, and alpha particles in so many successful cold fusion experiments worldwide.

My "time-reversal zone" approach is stringent, because the recent work by Denis Evans *et al.* {54} has clearly shown that reactions can and do run in reverse—totally in violation of the second law of thermodynamics—at micron (colloidal) level in size and for up to two seconds in duration (and sometimes even a little longer). So experimental demonstration that the "time reversal zones" I assumed can and do indeed occur has now been accomplished by Evans *et al.* This provides strong experimental and theoretical support for the basic assumption (of the formation and momentary existence of localized time reversal zones that subsequently decay) we used to derive the fundamental cold fusion mechanism including some of the specific reaction equations for excess deuterium, tritium, and alpha particles now demonstrated in hundreds of successful experiments.

In a reversed zone *the law of attraction and repulsion of charges is reversed,* so that like charges attract—sometimes so closely that each enters the strong force region of the other, forming a quasi-nucleus (Figure 21). As the time-reversal zone subsequently decays back to a time-forward zone, the reduced strong force is restored much faster than the Coulomb force is reduced and then reversed back to normal. So during this readjustment decay process, the quasi-nucleus will simply change to an isomer and a known nucleus by quark-flipping to change an H+ ion to a neutron. Note that the "reversal zone" momentarily changes the Coulomb barrier—always the only thing that has really prevented chemical fusion and transmutation at low spatial energy—to a Coulomb attractor. Hence cold fusion—as now backed up by more than 600 successful experiments worldwide, by multiple laboratories and researchers in multiple nations—is an established fact and a herald for a vast new science based on deliberate and intentional reversal of the Coulomb barrier and use of time-energy.

With its usual perspicacity, the organized U.S. scientific community has flubbed it—and flubbed it badly—with respect to cold fusion. Its contribution has largely been a tirade of ad hominem attacks, slander, and libel of a viciousness seldom seen in the annals of science. Once again, the community is far more devoted to defending its cherished dogma (and its own rice bowls from the conventional Big Nuclear Science that cold fusion thoroughly upsets), than it is in applying scientific method which calls for *believing the experiments* and changing the dogmatic theory.

- Fermions time-reverse in even numbers
- Like charges cluster
- Aqueous solutions contain H+ ions, which are just protons
- Quarks flip as TR zone fades

$$2({}_1H_1 + {}_1H_1) \rightarrow 4({}_1H_1) \rightarrow 2({}_0n_1 + {}_1H_1) \rightarrow {}_2He_4 = \text{helium (alpha)}$$

Figure 21 Example of a time-reversed zone nuclear reaction common in successful cold fusion experiments.

Development of Threats and Scheduled Attacks Aborted

KGB energetics weapons have long constituted our single most pressing yet largely unrecognized national security problem. That problem has also increased with the growing development and deployment of such weapons by other nations such as China. Some 10 nations, for example, now have scalar interferometry weapons, and even the Japanese Yakuza has them and also has their own secret facilities for producing them in Japan, including small portable units developed for use in assassination and terrorist type warfare within a targeted nation—the United States of America.

Unknown to our government, we narrowly escaped destruction twice in the first half of 1997 from scheduled all-out strategic KGB energetics weapons attacks. **Only** the actions of a friendly small country countered the attacks and caused the **KGB** to abort on each occasion.

When the second scheduled Russian strategic attack was aborted just prior to May 1, 1997, a new KGB counter-counter for the friendly counter used by the **little** nation in latter April 1997 was already rapidly being deployed. The new **Russian** counter-counter—seizure and control of the mind of an operator at a distance, and complete control of his actions while he performs sophisticated technical tasks—was tested in two separate incidents {55}, first on Captain Button (Figure 22, Figure 23) and then on Captain Svoboda about two months later (Figure 24), each flying an A-10 Warthog aircraft over the U.S.

- Instant hypnogogic state
- Sense of horizontal direction skewed
- Sense of time distorted
- Dream-thinking, flew a "normal mission" off course for over an hour and then crashed
- At one point, circled. May have dropped ordnance there, dream-thinking he was on range and attacking a target

- Purpose: Test psychoenergetic control of person and his precise actions at a distance.
- Multiple weapons can take over manning of an installation
- Can control crew operations
- Can cause crew to switch off an insane assured destruction quantum potential weapon

Figure 22 Captain Button's bizarre flight to his death on 2 April 1997.

Armed with:
- Four 500-lb bombs
- 30 mm Gatling gun
April 2, 1997
UTAH
COLO.
1:40 p.m. Vail
Area enlarged
1:22 p.m. Aspden
1:05 p.m. Telluride
12:53 p.m. Cortez
ARIZONA
11:58 a.m. Breaks Formation near Goldwater Range
12:20 p.m. Young
NEW MEX.
12:11 p.m. Apache Junction
Barry M. Goldwater Air Force Range
DEPARTS
10:30 a.m. Tucson
Tombstone
Eagle
Vail
Glenwood Springs
COLO.
New York Mountain
Wasatch Range
■■■■ Flight path
Aspden

Figure 23 Captain Button's flyaway path to his eventual fatal crash.

The highly successful test against Captain Button (Figure 22, Figure 23) is particularly significant, as we have explained. Captain Button was controlled while performing highly technical operations, for more than a full hour, and one hour was apparently the acceptance test specification. Captain Svoboda (Figure 24) simply had her mental perception of up and down instantly reversed while climbing her A-10 warthog from low level ordnance delivery on target. Erroneously perceiving she was diving, she immediately "corrected" sharply to "climb", thereby diving headlong into the ground and perishing in the resulting explosion of her aircraft.

• Purpose: Stimulate U.S. in same area again
• Determine if U.S. aware of psychoenergetics
• U.S. showed it is completely unaware
?
?
● May 27, 1997
● Captain Amy Svoboda
● Experienced night flyer
● Night training mission
● From Davis-Montham AFB
● From same wing as Captain Button, who flew his A-10 off course for over an hour and then crashed on April 2.
• Shifted Svoboda's sense of up and down.
• Perceiving she was diving, Svoboda sharply "corrected", diving headlong into the ground and dying in the explosion.

Figure 24 Climbing out of low-level ordnance delivery, Captain Svoboda suddenly dives headlong to her death on 27 May 1997.

Svoboda's kill demonstrated a *tactical destruction* usage, whereas Button's test demonstrated a *strategic* hostile usage of the adversary's defending weapons crew to take action against the adversary's defending strategic weapons system. A new KGB strategic energetics attack against the United States—using the mind control (psychoenergetics) weaponry to take over the operators of the little nation's QP weapon sites and stand the sites back down for maintenance—was rescheduled apparently for latter 1997 to mid-1998 or so. It appears that the extensive preparations for that attack were totally destroyed clandestinely and very suddenly by the friendly little nation some time after we warned them, as we mentioned above.

However, still another Russian counter—the development of "weaponized engines" (functioning causal system robot weapons, "infolded electromagnetic" in form) consisting of organized and functioning systems of spacetime curvatures operating in and traveling through EM fields, potentials, waves, and signals—came on line (Figure 10, Figure 18). The KGB simply altered the attack plan for a Millennium Strike and completed the forward deployment of these eerie new CSR systems by introducing millions of them directly throughout U.S. facilities, command centers, weapon systems, power grids, ships, aircraft, submarines, missiles, nuclear warheads, computers, communications systems, etc.

We estimate that several million such systems were introduced in that manner, and readied for the Millennium Strike. The United States and its allies were and are almost totally unprepared for this dramatically new kind of strategic warfare that has been developed and deployed against us. No such weapons have previously existed in history. Consequently our national survival and the survival of our allies was once again at stake—and right on schedule during the critical period from mid-1999 through mid-2000 that we had predicted back in 1997.

The die-hard elements of the KGB indeed had a new millennium gift for us, but it was not at all the kind of gift we would appreciate. The KGB is not a monolith! This plot apparently did not include Putin, and it did not include the rest of the KGB, particularly that element reporting to Putin.

Live Destructive Tests Over and Near the U.S. Have Continued

Without elaboration, we believe that the Learjet crash incident and the EA-990 crash incident may have been very sophisticated tests of these new robotic causal EM systems. We also believe that the long years of Russian construction of over a thousand mysterious underground facilities, even though the Russian economy was collapsed and the citizens and soldiers were destitute, is significant. Those facilities apparently contain the set of command and control systems for this vast new strategic weapon system.

The facilities also include the "factories" where the CSRs are made, because the factories are unlike any other factories ever conceived. They do not build "physical" systems, but something more like "software." Only now the "software program" itself is an independent robotic system, with a full set of weapon systems functions, and capable of independent navigation and functioning anywhere, while remaining under KGB command and control via longitudinal EM wave communications infolded inside the potentials of earth, ocean, and space. The facilities also contain the operational forces, headquarters, and communication and control systems that maintain, deploy, and employ (fight) these CSR systems, and direct the battle.

The purpose of the 1998 document we sent to DoD—which did not include the causal robot system armadas later deployed throughout everything in the West—was to inform selected members of the Senate and Congress of the energetics threat situation and summarize it for them. Accordingly, we presented the background of the development and testing of the KGB energetics weapons since WW II, in some detail, for selected Legislators and their staffs. We also included some specifics on the failure of the U.S. scientific community to keep American science and technology abreast of that of our adversaries.

The Scientific Basis For Energetics Weapons Is Established

As pointed out above, the scientific basis for our early use of Soviet scalar EM interferometry is now rigorously established by work accomplished by the Alpha Foundation's Institute of Advanced Study. It is also rather "old hat" now **that** all major weapons labs have discovered longitudinal EM waves and are **actively** working on and with them. The Director of the AIAS, Dr. Myron Evans, is an eminent scientist and theoretician with over 600 papers in the hard science literature. He and his colleagues also have had zero funding for their work on the higher group symmetry electrodynamics necessary to understand such things as energetics. A combination of non-Abelian electrodynamics, advanced gauge field theory, and the impact of E. T. Whittaker's work shortly after the turn of the century has shown that scalar interferometry is real, and that weapons based on scalar interferometry can be a potent threat on the battlefield. The time-like (time-energy) basis for electrodynamics is now clearly established.

With this important new work, we are now only some 40 years behind the **Russian** weapons scientists! But we are beginning to close the gap—and hopefully that will be done very rapidly.

In 1999 after being personally attacked by a CSR, I again contacted the office of the leader of the friendly small nation and again furnished all the information we possess on the new CSR systems programmed by the KGB as a countering method against the small nation's QP weapons. The outcome was that the little nation destroyed the CSRs in time, as we stated above. We were lucky that (i) the KGB did attack me with one of the weapons, deliberately to "get my strong and immediate attention", and (ii) deliberately did not kill me with the strike. Otherwise, there would have been no warning to the little nation, and the U.S. a**nd** its allies would have experienced a "Y2K" problem worse than their wildest fears, possibly collapsing the economy of the United States and much of the developed world.

Our Situation Here In the U.S. Is Precarious

Meanwhile, our own scientific community apparently does little or nothing in **these** areas, except to castigate, slander and libel anyone daring to suggest that such "out of the box" weapons areas even exist. E.g., there does not appear to be a single U.S. scientist who knows how to create a *time-polarized* EM wave.[13] There do not seem to be any concerted programs to deal with t-polarized photons and t-polarized EM waves. Our scientists still firmly believe that one has to propagate spatial EM field energy through space to affect a target electromagnetically, when that was obsoleted by Russian "subspace EM longitudinal wave propagation" weapon systems deployed as early as 1963, and was completely obsoleted by deployment of quantum potential weapons in 1989.

Yet a close colleague of the present author has single-handedly developed and demonstrated prototype superluminal communication systems using the infolded (longitudinal EM wave) electrodynamics, and these systems would have been heading onto the market in latter 2001 except for the sudden bankrupting of the major backing company. There has not been any funding forthcoming for his revolutionary work, but only clumsy attempts to take it from him. It is my fear that the further clumsy takeover attempts will be successful, and this desperately needed technology will never see the light of day in defense of our nation. As a single example without further discussion, his work revolutionizes the present notions used in the rapid development of quantum communication and quantum computing, because it revolutionizes the very notion of the Q-bit, completely removing the statistics of the quantum state and making it engineerable. This of course is completely counter to present QM notions, but is consistent with the Bohm hidden variable approach to quantum mechanics.

Meanwhile, our own weapon scientists apparently still do not recognize the possibility of a superluminal longitudinal EM wave communication system, and appear to have no motivation or intention to develop such. This is in a way quite sad; quantum tunneling at more than four times the speed of light, of a clearly recognizable Mozart symphony, has already been demonstrated in a section of a waveguide {56}. Whatever one wishes to call it and however one wishes to do it, superluminal communication of intelligible signals has been clearly demonstrated in the laboratory. For the "infolded" longitudinal EM waves, all the "normal" or "envelope" EM waves, potentials, and fields are just great *superwaveguides* for such longitudinal EM wave "tunneling through subspace" at superluminal speeds.

---

[13] Keeping one's sense of humor, apparently there has also not been a U.S. scientist who even recognized and knew what actually powered an electrical circuit, until our solution to the source charge problem and publication of it in 1998. Eerily, even after the technical basis for a solution had been proven in particle physics in 1957, no one seemed to have applied the broken symmetry of opposite charges to the common dipole and to a dipolarity such as a scalar potential and a charge (with its associated virtual charges of opposite sign, in the modern view). Everyone accepted that the fields and potentials and their energy are established by their associated source charges, but no one had stated that the source charge receives its input energy from its asymmetry in its seething energy exchange with the active vacuum.

The Dominant Weapons Are Quantum Potential Weapons

Full-bore deployment of Russian quantum potential weapons occurred by the end of 1989, the first lab prototype weapon having been tested in April 1986 against the U.S. air attack on Libya (Figure 25). Beside Russia, two other nations—Brazil and the "little friendly nation"—also had developed quantum potential {57} weapons. The United States did not develop them, or at least apparently not just yet.

Mild quantum potential weapon tested against electronics in U.S. aircraft and missiles

EM energy arises from every point in spacetime inside the electronics

- 33 U.S. AIRCRAFT IN STRIKE
- MANY HIGH-POWERED TRANSMITTERS
  - COMMUNICATIONS
  - JAMMERS
  - RADARS
- SEVERE, UNEXPECTED "EMI" ENCOUNTERED
  - ONE F-111 DOWNED
  - NUMEROUS WEAPONS WENT ASTRAY
  - THREE FOREIGN EMBASSIES DAMAGED
  - SEVEN AIRCRAFT FORCED TO ABORT
- COMMANDERS: "US OR THEM?"

Washington Post 22 Jan. 1989, p. A4

Figure 25 U.S. air strike on Libya, April 1986.

Burlier this year (2002), China also deployed QP weapons, and we now find that an*other friendly* nation has them as well. That brings the total to five, as of this writing. Two of those are friendly, and a third is astraddle of the fence, so to speak. The other two are Russia (the KGB) and China.

At this point China could go either way, so it represents a future enigma. China has control of the Panama Canal, and has inserted more than 200,000 Chinese into Panama—which is on the way to gradually becoming a Chinese territory, as soon as the Chinese in Panama outnumber the native Panamanians. In addition, under the Clinton administration China gained access through two U.S. ports (with little checking, so anything can easily be inserted). China also has additional ports in the Western hemisphere. China is almost certain to eventually attack and seize Taiwan, which puts her on a collision course with the U.S., since the U.S. has an agreement to defend Taiwan. She has also declared the South China Sea—through which passes some 60% of the oil bound for Japan, and much oil for other nations also—to be Chinese territorial waters. China also has developed bioenergetics weapons, having long ago induced cancer into most of the GRU Russian representatives then serving in China. She almost certainly has or is rapidly working to develop psychoenergetics weapons as well.

So far as I am aware, there still exists not a single funded U.S. scientific program to directly correct the glaring errors in our own classical electrodynamics—such as those problems deplored by Nobelist Feynman and Wheeler {58,59,60}. Both knew that the force field concept in space was erroneous. As they put it, only the "potential" for the force field exists in space, in case some charged mass is available there for interaction. But the field itself is created by the interaction and is the effect of it. It does not exist before the interaction occurs. Yet all our texts continue to teach the disinformation of the "field in space." And our science community continues to fiercely defend such dogma, attacking and sometimes destroying the careers of those brave scientists who do try to change it.

One notes that time is multiply-connected, since in theory the same instant exists at every point in the universe. Or said another way, in any instant in time, every point in the universe simultaneously exists.

Operating in the time-domain as a causal system, and then turning out of one point there into any point in 3-space desired, is a means of producing "action at a distance" that obsoletes our old concept of transmitting the energy directly through space {61}.

Presently the U.S. scientific community has little predisposition toward energy turning into the time-domain, operating in the time-domain, then turning out of the time-domain into any desired point in 3-space, anywhere in the universe.[14] Every 3-space point in the universe simultaneously exists in (is superposed in) each point in time, as those points in time occur. In one sense, time can be considered to be the total multiple connectedness of space! We suspect that it may even be possible to interpret "instantaneous" communication—as by a quantum potential—in that "in here-out there" instantaneous fashion via "tunneling through the multiple connection of the time channel".

Finally, mass—being an observable and 3-spatial—does not exist in time. Mass continually turns into masstime (by photon absorption), then masstime turns back into mass (by photon emission). Masstime exists in time, but mass does not. U.S. scientists also seem unaware that the so-called "rate of flow of a mass through time" is generated by the sum total of all photon interactions (both virtual and observable) with that mass. The ubiquitous interaction of a mass with photons also causes that mass to continually recur, and thus to seemingly "continuously exist." It is continually observed, but it does not continuously exist! Since the photon interaction is engineerable, then it follows that a specific muss can be time-reversed back to an earlier state {62}.

---

[14] If one models the time domain in three dimensions instead of one, e.g., then in theory it becomes possible to "flip" a 3-dimensional mass object into the time 3-domain at a single "moment," then rotate from that "time 3-point" back into 3-space at a new 3-space location anywhere in the universe. Hence the "beam 'em up Scotty!" of the old Star Trek (and the more modern beaming version) may hold more of a promise than just for science fiction entertainment.

Cellular Time Reversal: Revolutionary Healing by a Team of French Scientists

Priore and eminent French scientists {39,40} unwittingly used the mechanism for time-reversing a mass and every part of it, to time-reverse diseased and damaged cells, including tumor cells, physically changing them back to their previous healthy physical state and condition in vivo. This included all parts of the cell, including its genetics. The Priore team demonstrated revolutionary cures of terminal tumors, infectious diseases, atheriosclerosis, and restored depressed immune systems.

BONE MARROW
Lymphocytes
Special Defense
General Defense
Feeding cells
Intestinal tissue, liver, etc.
Thymus
Complement system
B-lymphocytes
suppressor cells
plasma cells
antibodies
T-lymphocytes
killer cells
helper cells
complement factors
Monocytes
granulocytes
macrophage
bacterium (foreign invader)

Figure 26 Simplified diagram of the immune system.

The immune system (Figure 26) *heals nothing, not even its own damaged cells.* The human cellular regenerative system {63} is responsible for all healing in the body—and it utilizes time reversal of the damaged cells as the active healing mechanism. The regenerative system (Figures 27, 28, 29) pumps the damaged cells with longitudinal EM waves (and therefore with time-polarized EM waves, which always accompany longitudinal EM waves), inducing the cells and all their parts to add the phase conjugates, thereby forming time-polarized EM waves and pumping in the time-domain rather than the 3-space domain. This dramatically extends nonlinear optics to the time domain, and mass pumped in that fashion is time-reversed (propagated back along its own time-track, to a previous physical condition.

INJURY
INPUT STIMULATION DC SYSTEM (PAIN)
CENTRAL DC SYSTEM
GROWTH DIFFERENTIATION
LOCAL CELL INJURY FREE RADICALS
OUTPUT DC SYSTEM
TOTAL CURRENT OF INJURY DC SYSTEM
MITOSIS DEDIFFERENTIATION
STIMULATION OF REPAIR CELLS

Note: Becker only had conventional EM available, hence was unable to model the inner structuring and inner dynamics of the fields and potentials. *So he missed the deeper "engine and antiengine" mechanisms.*

"Robert O. Becker, "The significance of bioelectrical potentials," Bioelectrochemistry and Bioenergetics, Vol. 1, 1974, p. 191.

Figure 27 Becker's theoretical control system involved with response to injury.

Trauma Producing Tissue Loss
Local cellular effect
Local nerve effect
CNS effect
Alterations in hormone pattern (prolactin)
Alterations in local DC field pattern
Local electrical effects
Local and systemic pools of target cells
Dedifferentiation into primitive mesenchymal cells
Phase I
Blastema formation
Growth
Phase II
Redifferentiation into required cell types
Restoration of body part or tissue

"Becker & Spadaro, "Electrical stimulation of partial limb regeneration in mammals," Bull. N. Y. Acad. Med., 48(4), May 1972, p. 629.

Figure 28 Becker's proposed control system governing regeneration.

ADD PUMPS
B
CELL AS A PHASE CONJUGATE MIRROR
ANTIENGINE PRESENT?
N
Y
RESIDENT VACUUM ENGINE
PRIORÉ AMPLIFIED PUMPING
START
A
CYCLE
CELL AND INTERIOR SENSORS
LOCAL VICINITY SENSORS
NONLOCAL ALL-BODY SENSORS
APPLY ANTIENGINE
DELTA CATALOGS
CELLS AND INTERIORS
DELTA?
B
A
AEROBE
ANAEROBE
SELECT LOCAL
SWITCH TO AEROBE CONTROL SYSTEM
SELECT NONLOCAL
AEROBE
ANAEROBE
CROSS THRESHOLD BACK TO AEROBE?
SWITCH COMPARATIVE CATALOG
SWITCH TO ANAEROBE CATALOG
END OF AEROBE CATALOG?
SUM FOR ENTIRE BODY
SWITCH ON CENTRAL, OFF DECENTRAL GROWTH CONTROL; RESET IMMUNE SYSTEM
SWITCH OFF CENTRAL GROWTH CONTROL
SWITCH ON DECENTRAL GROWTH CONTROL
CONDITION IMMUNE SYSTEM TO ACCEPT

Figure 29 Author's deeper block diagram of the cellular regeneration system.

GRAVITON LATTICE TEMPLATES
SICKEN OR KILL
CELL CULTURE SAMPLE #1
QUARTZ CONTAINER
ENVIRONMENTAL SHIELDING
CELL CULTURE SAMPLE #2
QUARTZ CONTAINER
THIN WINDOW
GLASS: No Effect
QUARTZ: Delayed Effect
Divided bottle setup

Note: Minimum lattice is one harmonic interval: IR to UV is such a minimum G-lattice. Consider particularly the dielectric pathway in the emitting diseased cells and in the receiving targeted healthy cells.

Figure 30 Kaznacheyev's electromagnetic induction of cellular disease and disorder.

Kaznacheyev has shown that essentially any cellular disease or disorder can be electromagnetically induced in cells at a distance (Figure 30). Together with Becker's work, this shows that the cells can be altered either detrimentally (disease induction) or beneficially (disease elimination) by purely electromagnetic means. It would seem that diseases such as AIDS, e.g., could be rather dramatically cured by use of whole-body longitudinal EM wave radiation (with its simultaneously time-polarized EM wave radiation), as was done for other diseases by the Priore team and properly reported in the French scientific literature. We have also uncovered a process and method for causing the body to directly produce the time-polarized EM wave pumping, reducing the irradiation to perhaps 30 seconds of pumping instead of two or three hours {64}.

Becker's Study of the Cellular Regeneration System

In all our medical science, the only true healing procedures being utilized appear to be the use of Becker *et al.'s* tiny EM stimulation across otherwise intractable bone fractures {65} (Figure 31), to dedifferentiate (time-reverse) red blood cells, then redifferentiate (time-forward) them again twice to form osteoblasts, which are deposited in the fracture site to make new bone growth. All the other medical procedures seem to be *interventions,* not *healing.* After the intervention—which of course may be urgently necessary—it is then up to the body to heal itself (restore its cellular and tissue damage and functioning). So we have little *healing* science today, and in fact our medical establishment hardly funds any *healing* studies at all. EM radiation is usually considered as something that simply heats tissue. Our present medical science is deeply engrossed in studying the immune system. Again, the immune system heals nothing, not even its own damaged cells.

• Tiny DC currents (picoamperes)
• Pulsed DC current can be utilized
• Pulsed magnetic fields may be utilized
(+)
ELECTRODE
(-)
ELECTRODE
DC POWER SOURCE
BONE
BONE
FRACTURE SITE
RED BLOOD CELL DEDIFFERENTIATES
Shucks hemoglobin coat
Grows nucleus
NEW CELL REDIFFERENTIATES
Turns into type of cell that makes cartilage
NEW CELL REDIFFERENTIATES
Turns into type of cell that makes bone
Deposits in fracture site, healing the fracture

Figure 31 Becker's epochal bone fracture healing.

After the immune system "kills the bad guys" and saves the day, the battlefield is littered with residue and many cells of the body are damaged. The immune system sends in large scavenger cells that clean up the residue. And that's it for the immune system. Comparing it to an army's operation in the field, the immune system is the combat troops, not the medical services.

Restoration (healing) of the damaged cells back to normal is accomplished by the *cellular regeneration* system (Figure 29). This system is little known and little studied, but mostly studied by Becker (Figures 27, 28). It is a system that functions electrodynamically, but uses time-domain pumping to time-reverse the cells and their every part (including their genetics) back to an earlier state. In biology, the effect is called *dedifferentiation*, but without any knowledge of the actual EM mechanism.

So, within its capabilities, the cellular regenerative system in the body already uses longitudinally polarized EM waves, time-polarized EM waves (TPWs), and optical pumping by LWs and TPWs. Here we point out that neither the longitudinal photon nor the scalar (time-polarized) photon is individually observable; however, the combination of the two is observed as the instantaneous scalar potential {66}. With a little correction to properly make the phase conjugate replica wave a time-polarized EM wave, Whittaker's fundamental bidirectional EM longitudinal wave decomposition of the scalar potential (Figure 32) is consistent. Immediately the direct involvement of both the scalar photon and the longitudinal photon—and both the scalar EM wave and the longitudinal EM wave—are seen in Becker's bone-healing work using a scalar potential (Figure 31).

GALLOPING VELOCITY
Scalar Potential ϕ
...ETC.
✱ ✱ ✱ ...ETC.
V avg
Wavepair #3
HARMONICS
V avg
Wavepair #2
SUBHARMONICS
V avg
Wavepair #1
...ETC.
✱ ✱ ✱ ...ETC.
DISTANCE

The Structure Is:

A harmonic set of longitudinal wavepairs. In each wavepair the two waves superpose spatially, but travel in opposite directions. The two are phase conjugates and time-reversed replicas of each other. Thus they comprise a coupled longitudinal wave and antiwave. The photons must be coupled into photon/antiphoton pairs (gravitons) by a strong application of the distortion correction theorem of nonlinear optics. Each wave in the biwave pair is a galloping wave. Each wavepair is a standing electrogravitational wave.

Note: Think of the oscillations as velocity modulations. The time-density carried by the waves is oscillating.

Figure 32 Infolded longitudinal EM biwaves composition of a scalar potential, per Whittaker 1903.

Priore unwittingly stumbled onto the actual mechanism used by all biological systems in "healing" (cellular regeneration), and also recognized how to amplify it (Figure 12). But no one understood its exact nature, including Priore and the scientists who worked with him at the time, and the conventional community still does not understand it. The Russian scientists not only *understood* it early on, but *weaponized* it as well. So did the Chinese.

Need to Correct and Extend Classical Electrodynamics

The organized scientific community's protracted defense of a seriously flawed classical electrodynamics is long standing. The conventional, comfortable ways of "doing business as usual, leisurely" now threatens the survival of the nation itself. We need to quickly admit and correct long-standing EM errors—such as calculating a reaction cross-section of an entity and calling it the magnitude of the entity itself! Our electrical texts continue to make that fundamental mistake, and they have done it now for 100 years or more. We need to quickly change the classical EM model to include the active vacuum and its interaction, and we need to change all textbooks to clearly state that all EM energy in the universe comes from the active vacuum, via the asymmetry of the source charges in their fierce energy exchange with it.

We also need to point out that all primary electromagnetic entities—the charge, the field, the potential, and every joule of EM energy in the universe—totally violates the second law of thermodynamics. The charge produces continuously increasing negentropy, the field and the potential are formed at expanding light speed across the universe and are perfectly ordered (thereby totally violating the statistical mechanics basis of the second law), and every joule of EM energy is either field energy or potential energy, and hence violates the same statistical basis of the second law.

The Situation Is Serious

Admittedly these are strong statements highly critical of our scientific establishment's track record. But our national survival continues to be increasingly at stake, the situation is serious, and we must not continue to bury our collective heads in the sand like ostriches. We simply cannot continue to idly sit by and pontificate while other groups and nations methodically maneuver technically to cut our collective throats with advanced weapons we cannot defend against, once they find a way to "get by" the little nation that has been countering them for some years. Our own beloved nation may have less than 10 years {67} and perhaps less than three years to survive, unless the organized scientific community is galvanized to focus its very best scientific efforts in the energetics area.

So far, in truly innovative approaches to new methods for electrical energy, the U.S. scientific community is about as energetic as a sand terrapin sleeping in the tropical sun. There is no discernible move to recognize the seriousness of the problem, or to do anything effective about it. In 45 years, the asymmetry of the dipole (and the charge in its modern view as a dipolarity of special kind) has not made it across the university campus from the particle physics department to the electrical engineering department. In fact, the implication of broken symmetry to

electrical engineering and classical electrodynamics seems to still be completely unnoticed by the National Academy of Sciences, the National Science Foundation, our universities, and our great national laboratories. In the scientific community, other than work on vaccines etc., it is largely "business as usual."

A New Manhattan Project Is Warranted

Our need in the energetics weapons area is extreme, as are our needs in the medical area for quick, cheap, easy, and effective portable treatment of the coming mass casualties and our coming dramatic needs in energy. We *do* have superb scientists with the horsepower necessary to do something about it. The astounding, independent work of Sachs, the AIAS, and a few other scientists—which we stress has been unfunded—already clearly proves that. But unless we change the organized scientific community's normal rather snail-like pace—by a strong measure such as a Presidential Decision Directive and a declaration of a Nalional Emergency—the U.S. scientific community will overshoot the point of no return now approaching.

We need a new Manhattan-type project. We need it very quickly. If we do not change and focus our present scientific procedure, then—all too shortly—little that the scientific and intelligence communities are doing will be of value. We shall all be very, very dead or else in a new Dark Ages where most of the world economy has collapsed and freedom has largely disappeared from the face of the Earth.

T. E. Bearden, Ph.D.
Lieutenant Colonel, U.S. Army (Retired)
President & CEO, CTEC, Inc.
Director, Assoc. of Distinguished American Scientists

2002 ENERGETICS WEAPONS THREAT TO THE U.S.

T. E. Bearden 2000
Updated Oct. 1,2002

The U.S. Narrowly Escaped Energetics Destruction Twice in 1997

On two occasions in 1997 (latter February and on May Day), we were scheduled In be strategically attacked without warning and completely destroyed. Eerily, in public statements the leader of the Aum Shinrikyo sect (Figure 33) had foreshadowed the dates for the planned attacks, since his group was also involved—in fact, shooting down the TWA-800 (Figure 34) as advanced practice and stimulation of the U.S. to see if it knew what was afoot. Those two planned strategic strikes in 1997 were avoided only in the nick of time by actions of a friendly little foreign country, which was the only nation on earth at the time that could counter the KGB quantum potential (QP) weapons. I am sure that proper U.S. agencies intercepted my urgent personal faxes to the Defense Attache in Washington, DC and directly to the Prime Minister of the nation involved. Actions by that nation did succeed in averting our destruction in the nick of time.

- Formed in 1987. Over 60,000 members. More than $1 billion in gold and cash.
- Taught that U.S. would strike Japan with devastating blow in latter 1997
  - Japan should make preemptive strike first
  - AUM would get mass destruction weapons
  - Was developing BW weapons (anthrax, botulism, "Q" fever, etc.)
  - Developed own chemical weapons
- Sarin attack on Japanese subways
- Formed alliance with Japanese Yakuza
- AUM/Yakuza leased operational use of strategic Soviet energetics weapons in latter 1989
- Trained crews, planned to strike U.S. a terrible "pre-emptive" blow in 1997 by assisting KGB
- Using deception, killed targets such as TWA-800

AUM SHINRIKYO
"SUPREME TRUTH" CULT

Shoko Asahara, Leader

"I am certain that in 1997, Armageddon will break out. By 'break out' I mean that war will erupt and that it will not end soon. Violent battles will continue for a couple of years. During that time, the world population will shrink markedly... A Third World War will break out. I stake my religious future on this prediction. I am sure it will occur."

Figure 33 Planned KGB/Yakuza/Aum Shinrikyo attack in 1997 was foreshadowed in public statements made by Shoko Asahara.

Similar streak w/front glow, in clouds.
Photographed by Linda Kabot
EM Missile Strike
Electromagnetic Missile (glowing)
>20 eyewitnesses!
Turbulent Wake in Clouds
OTHER INDICATORS
Helicopter eyewitness to streak, initial strike glow, and then larger second glow.
Pilot eyewitnesses, multiple aircraft.
Radar tracked a nonsolid blip that closed with the aircraft.
Explosives ruled out.
Significantly differs from downing by a light SAM at envelope of its range.
Simple mechanical failure does not fit.
Second strike: An EM burst inside a/c explodes fumes in empty gas tank
1985 photos of Soviet EM missiles offset from shuttle launch.
1985 eyewitness of similar EM missile strike on Arrow DC-8 at Gander AFB, Newfoundland.
Multiple photos of EM missile tests over Western Australia (range).
Probable: U-2 explosion 7 Aug 96.
C-130 crash 22 Nov 96.
Emulation of surface-to-air missile (part of deception plan)
Emulation of a "leaking fuel" explosion (deception plan)

Figure 34 Kill of TWA Flight 800 on 17 July 1996 by Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo.

Only five nations or national groups have quantum potential (QP) weapons, though one or more additional nations are almost certainly working on them and may even have them. First of the five is the KGB in Russia (the weapons are not in the regular Russian forces, and never have been). Second is the friendly little foreign country to whom we presently owe our continued survival. The third is Brazil (which has had a small and successful QP weapon program for some time). China deployed QP weapons in early 2002, and I recently found that at least one other friendly nation has them as well. I'm not too impressed with that other friendly nation, since they played no role in saving our bacon in 1997. It appears they did not actually know the coming attacks were imminent. They certainly do not have Causal System Robot weapons, nor do they believe such weapons even exist.

Initiation of the Brazilian Energetics Weapon Program

Brazil implemented an energetics weapons program after it employed the repatriated Dr. Hellman, a German scientist taken to Russia after WW II along with the German radar team. Years after being taken to Russia, Hellman was repatriated and made his way back to Germany. In a news interview Hellman reported that he had worked directly on the development of Soviet secret EM weapons which could suddenly free/.e large areas of the ocean surface. That of course is a scalar interferometry weapon, producing negative (converging) EM energy rather than positive (diverging) EM energy in their distant interference zones.

Also, when the U.S. made David Bohm *persona non grata* in the McCarthy witch-hunts, Bohm was later employed in lecturing and teaching in Brazil for some time. At the time our own scientists continued to pontificate as to whether they *liked* or could *tolerate* Bohm's quantum potential and his hidden variable interpretation of quantum mechanics {3}. Meanwhile, the KGB weapon scientists and the Brazilian Hellman project seized upon Bohm's hidden variable theory with alacrity as soon as he published his seminal paper. Those two weapon groups were already familiar with the internal longitudinal EM wave structuring of potentials, fields, and waves (Whittaker 1903), and immediately saw the fantastic weapons implications of a deliberately structured quantum **potential,** containing a specific "engine" as desired. Most of our scientists still are unaware of it to this day, and are unaware of its formidable weapon implications when combined with Whittaker's 1904 superpotential paper, his 1903 potential decomposition, and quantum field theory. Most of our scientists still adhere to the Bohr interpretation of QM, which excludes the normal, everyday, observable, ordered universe we all inhabit and observe.[15]

The Bohm quantum potential is, after all, a scalar potential, and at least in theory it has a Whittaker biwave decomposition {68}. Even in the Coulomb gauge, the scalar potential has infinite velocity, as pointed out by Jackson.[16]

Several tests of the "cold explosion" Russian weapons referred to by Hellman have since been openly made. One major test seen by at least five jetliner crews was the anomalous rapidly rising cloud and subsequent extremely huge light globe (ABM energy shield) effects off the Kurils in April 1984 (Figure 35). Two excellent scientific articles on the physical phenomena observed in that incident are published in the prestigious journal *Science* {69}. We had explained the cold explosion phenomena and the ABM energy shield effects some years before that incident. Even ordinary superpotential theory {70} and longitudinal EM wave interferometry at a distance can substantiate the capability. We also positively confirmed by private sources that the scalar interferometry, the MindSnapper (negative energy EMP), and the cold explosion weaponry are real.

---

[15] This exclusion is euphemistically known as the "missing chaos" problem in quantum mechanics, and it is resolved in Bohm's hidden variable approach.

[16] **J.D Jackson,** *Classical Electrodynamics,* 2nd **Edn.,** John Wiley & Sons, New York, 1975, p. **222, 223.** Usually the instantaneous scalar potential contributes only to the near field.

not to scale
380 miles diameter
200 miles
Sequence of Events
• Geyser of water rose rapidly from surface, mushroomed out
• Reached 60,000 feet altitude in about two minutes
• Brilliantly glowing small globe then appeared in top of cloud
• Globe increased greatly in size and altitude
• Reached diameter of 380 miles
• Center reached altitude of 200 miles
What They Were
• Superpotential interferometry using longitudinal EM waves
• Cold explosion just above surface (as antiship, antifleet)
• Smaller, higher density spherical shell (Tesla globe) for one-on-one shooting
• Larger Tesla globe for large area targets such as ICBMs coming in from midcourse
• Use in, out of atmosphere

Figure 35 **Exothermic (cold) explosion off the Kurils 9 April 1984. A second test, an expanding globe of light, was added in the exothermic mode to demonstrate rapid serial switching between weapon modes.**

Related Phenomena

In 1969 in Toronto, Canada, Sid Hurwich demonstrated a device capable of "freezing" a pistol lying on a table so that the gun could physically not be moved and the trigger could not be pulled {71}. For this exhibition of *strong electrogravitation,* general relativistic fields initiated by the EM force field (including the usually unaccounted Heaviside nondiverged component that Lorentz arbitrarily discarded) as the agent of spacetime curvature were used {72}. The strength of the effect was attested by the fact that the hands of the observers' watches all showed "no passage of time" during the half hour they were in the room with Hurwich's device operating.[17]

Rapid development of that strong electrogravitational technology and concomitant energetics then proceeded in another nation. Weapons of such nature were then employed by that nation a few years later, in two well-known international incidents. Clear signatures of the nature of the weaponry utilized were present in those incidents. Details of these incidents will not be included in this paper.

---

[17] We point out that this is highly interesting itself, since it showed that the observers were operating in a different frame from that of the watches and the gun, which were "frozen". We also point out that recently light itself has been "stopped" in quantum experiments, yielding something quite similar.

Since the energetics weaponry already utilized special EM "hidden variables," Bohm's hidden variable theory and quantum potential were directly adapted into the program to dramatically extend it into the development of quantum potential weapons.

Stalin *Personally* Initiated the Soviet Energetics Program with the Greatest Urgency

While Stalin was at the Potsdam conference, at the close of WWII, the U.S. exploded the first atomic bomb in the desert. Truman informed Stalin in general terms that a powerful new U.S. weapon had been successfully tested. Secretly, Stalin already knew of our atomic bomb progress, for he had a spy in the program. While he was still at Potsdam, he then secretly called the Director of the Soviet atomic weapons program and directed a speed-up.

After we exploded two atomic bombs on Japan, the Japanese surrendered and WWII was over. See again Figure 1. Stalin vehemently ordered his Academy of Sciences to produce the next great technical breakthrough at all possible speed, since the American atomic bomb had frustrated his plan to wait two years after the war while the West speedily disarmed, then march into Europe and take it in six weeks. Now his massed troops could just be bombed back into the Stone Age by U.S. bombers using atomic bombs.

A Great Technical Breakthrough in Physics Can Always be Had in Four Years

The scientific community can have a great new technical breakthrough whenever its furious and dogmatic resistance to innovative discoveries or the possibility of innovative developments can be suspended. All that is necessary is a concentrated group of highly skilled, open-minded scientists, the money and facillities, and a strong headlock placed on the powerful but dogmatic scientific groups who would otherwise hamstring the program and destroy it.[18]

---

[18] Present day examples are (i) the cold fusion fiasco, where the U.S. scientific community has revealed furious determination to ignore more than 600 successful experiments worldwide, (ii) a similar fury against any and all research into extracting EM energy from the vacuum, even though all EM energy comes directly from the active vacuum via the proven asymmetry of source charges and dipoles, (iii) violent suppression of proven "extended electrodynamics" methods of rapidly curing severe diseases, even in terminal stage (resistance to anything except "cut, drug, burn" and anything that would interfere with the monstrous profits of the large pharmaceuticals), (iv) continuing dedication to an electrical engineering model that does not even model or apply what powers an electrical circuit, (v) continuing resistance to quantum potential research and development, (vi) slavish dedication to "big nuclear science", massive accelerators, dangerous nuclear power plants, and a "hot fusion WPA program", even though much higher energy physics than these programs advocate and use can be and is being done on the tabletop, using time-energy instead of spatial energy, and (vii) increasing "lock-up" of all research funds into the organized hierarchy's politically approved agenda. The community has deviated so far from scientific

We proved it in the WWII Manhattan Project, where we went from nearly zilch to the operational atomic bomb in 4 years. But we did it only by secretly bypassing the conventional U.S. scientific establishment. Einstein wrote to President Roosevelt *around* the scientific community, and when the President approved and ordered the highly classified program, conventional scientists not on the project were just parked on the sideline and ignored so that the job could be completed. The naysayers were also muzzled because of the extreme classification of the project; they faced jail if they engaged in their usual ad hominem attacks and dogmatic eloquence.

Further, today the "Skunk Works" approach repeatedly proves that bold new projects can be done, when the skilled scientists and facilities are mobilized and no adamant opposition by the conventional community is tolerated.

Numerous examples of the U.S. scientific community's suppression of innovation and new technology can easily be furnished. Such are well known to any historian of science. Cold fusion, the amorphous semiconductor by Ovshinsky, the first laser papers, ultrawideband radar, Mayer's original conservation of energy law, Boltzmann's work, Wegener's continental drift, flight of heavier-than-air machines, the rocket as a great strategic weapon, and hundreds of other examples come readily to mind. Such suppression has been *the* major characteristic of the organized scientific community since its inception, as pointed out by numerous leading scientists and authors. As Planck stated, usually one gets a new physics only after the old physicists who so adamantly oppose it just die off and get out of the way.

Today, the U.S. scientific community is in fact our "front line troops," although—except for a little lip service—the managers of the organized scientific community are blissfully unaware of it and have little or no sense of mission in out-of-the-box areas with respect to national survival. It is ironical, e.g., that our orthodox scientific community does not even know what powers an EM circuit—energy extracted directly from the vacuum by the asymmetry of the source charge (considered in its modern view as a dipolarity) and by the source

method in defending archaic theory in the face of experiments that falsify it, that the ubiquitous violation of the law of increasing entropy (second law of thermodynamics) by electrodynamics itself continues to be adamantly resisted using ad hominem and inflammatory attacks, slander and libel, and destruction of scientific careers of researchers. We flatly are not getting our taxpayer money's worth from our present scientific community, and—barring a Stalin-like shakeup from top to bottom—we are not going to get our money's worth in the future unless the community is forced to free up funds for young graduate students and postdoctoral scientists wishing to work in "out of the box" scientific areas. As Max Planck stated, *"An important scientific innovation rarely makes its way by gradually winning over and converting its opponents: it rarely happens that Saul becomes Paul. What does happen is that its opponents gradually die out, and that the growing generation is familiarized with the ideas from the beginning."* In other words, one doesn't get a scientific innovation until the old dogs so bitterly opposing it just die off and get out of the way. This long-known and stated characteristic of the scientific community—its fierce and unrelenting resistance to change and innovation—is presently the greatest threat to the survival of this nation.

dipole (Figure 36).

Generators make dipoles.
They do not add one watt to the attached powerline.
BOILER
STEAM TURBINE
GENERATOR
FLOW OF TIME-ENERGY (in vacuum)
SOURCE DIPOLE IN GENERATOR
giant energy flow wasted
"Make dipole" function
(Entropic)
"True negative resistor" function
(Giant negentropy)

Figure 36 Energy extracted from the vacuum by the asymmetry of the source dipole powers every electric power line and electric circuit.

A Typical Example: The Suppression of Cold Fusion

As an example, much of U.S. Science—dominated by nuclear factions since the advent of the atomic bomb in WWII—vehemently attacked cold fusion and the cold fusion researchers, including wholesale ad hominem attacks, with a viciousness seldom seen in the history of science. Many dogmatic scientists declared the entire field at best a mistake and at worst a fraud. Even the character of many of the leading cold fusion scientists was openly impugned and the researchers were slandered and libeled. All this was done by conventional dogmatic scientists who have not solved the fundamental source charge problem {10,12}, have no inkling that all EM energy in 3-space comes from the time-domain {10}, and have not a clue as to what really powers every EM circuit. Since they also do not know where the electrical energy driving the chemistry actually comes from, they have no knowledge of the effects of time-energy in electrolyte solutions.

They also appear to have little or no knowledge of the implications of Evans' and Searles' *transient fluctuation theorem*[19] in thermodynamics showing to what degree the second law of thermodynamics can be violated and reactions can run in reverse, nor its extension to the micron (colloidal) size level and to two seconds in duration.[20] If they did, then they would realize that the Coulomb barrier provided by *repulsion* of like charges (such as two H+ ions), often reverses into the *attraction* of like charges, with the barrier changing into the Coulomb attractor. This can last (by experimental proof shown by Evans *et al.)* up to two seconds, in a volume of fluid up to a micron in diameter. Hence it is not "against the laws of physics and thermodynamics" to observe attraction of two protons in an electrolyte so closely that each enters the strong force region of the other and the two form a quasi-nucleus. In the decay of this reversal zone, the preferred decay of the quasi-nucleus can be by quark flipping in one of the protons, yielding an atom of deuterium emerging from the decayed time reversal zone. Such results have been meticulously observed in many cold fusion experiments in multiple labs and nations, and by multiple researchers. Since these and other novel nuclear transmutation results are *replicated* experiments (more than 600, in multiple labs, multiple nations, and by multiple researchers), it means that no amount of theory can refute them or the results. The harsh skeptics launching the frenzied ad hominem attacks are thus revealed as the unscientific bigots they are, since they ignore substantial experimental results that contradict the prevailing theory. The excess energy production and inexplicable new nuclides (Figures 21, 37, 38) obtained by these multiple experimenters are completely inexplicable by ordinary nuclear interactions in the accepted theory.

---

[19] D.J. Evans and D. J. Searles, *Phys. Rev. E,* Vol. *50,* 1994. p. 1645.

- Fennions time-reverse in even numbers
- Like charges cluster
- Aqueous solutions contain H+ ions,
  which are just protons
- Quarks flip as TR zone fades

+
+
+
-
TIME REVERSAL ZONE

$$({}_1H_1 + {}_1H_1) \rightarrow ({}_0n_1 + {}_1H_1) = {}_1H_2 \text{ deuterium}$$

Figure 37 Electronuclear reaction in a time-reversed zone producing excess deuterium ions.

---

[20] G. M. Wang, E. M. Sevick, Emil Mittag, Debra J. Searles, and Denis J. Evans, "Experimental Demonstration of Violations of the Second Law of Thermodynamics for Small Systems and Short Time Scales," *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 89(5), 29 July 2002, 050601.

- As TR zone decays, quasi-nucleus is usually in an excited state
  - — Decay action starts from every point in spacetime inside the nucleons
  - — Moves from inside toward outside
  - — Strikes the nearly free quarks first
- Decay occurs by easy quark flip
- Quasi-nucleus transmutes to an isobar
- If quasi-nucleus is a stable state in a forward time zone, no decay occurs.

$$_1H_2 + {}_1H_2 \rightarrow {}_2He_4$$

Figure 38 Electronuclear reaction in a time-reversed zone producing excess alpha particles.

Meanwhile, the U.S. Patent Office has been instructed not to accept any patent applications that would interfere with present nuclear planning. Positive cold fusion results have also been successfully obtained in several U.S. government laboratories, including at China Lake where very strange instrumental effects have the experimental team puzzled. I proposed an explanation of those anomalies in August 1998, and have included it in my book just published in September 2002 {73}.

Revolutionary New Processes Are Hidden in the Cold Fusion Experimental Results

Once understood, cold fusion holds the breathtaking key to systems that consume *a tiny fraction of time flow itself as* a fuel to produce copious heat energy for the world's needs. Unknown to the conventional scientists, of course, electrodynamics itself already does this, but it has just not been recognized and accepted. Transducing one microsecond per second of time into transverse wave EM energy will produce some 9x10^{10} watts of real electrical power, if all the transduced EM energy is intercepted and used. This is the *real* way to extract energy from the vacuum and use it cleanly and cheaply.

To grasp such a notion, recall that the fundamental units used in physics are completely arbitrary. It is perfectly possible to express all physics in only a **single** fundamental unit—for example, *the joule*. Time then becomes totally a function of energy. So it is not so insane after all to express time as highly compressed energy. Mass is also highly compressed energy. That concept is now familiar after Einstein, the nuclear age, and $E = mc^2$. Time-as-energy is just as straightforward as mass-as-energy, but it has just not yet come into recognition.

The *use* of time as compressed energy, however, leads to some profoundly new types of electronuclear reactions presently unknown in particle physics. These new transduction reactions produce the new nuclides in cold fusion experiments, and generate the electronuclear interaction. We explain that in some detail in our new book, *Energy from the Vacuum,* previously cited {10}.

When interpreted as using time-energy, cold fusion shows us the way to a new electronuclear regime of nuclear reactions where nuclei, elements, and compounds can just be directly assembled by comparatively weak (in terms of *spatial* energy!) electromagnetic interactions. Presently we have made substantial progress in understanding the fundamental mechanisms generating these electronuclear reactions, after presenting preliminary results in August 1998.

As one example, time-reversing a single fermion (a particle with spin 1/2, 3/2, etc.) is precluded by the Pauli exclusion principle. But one can time reverse *two* of them, or any even number n, where they act as a semi-boson or group of semi-bosons. Simply put, if a time-reversal zone is established momentarily in the region where like charges exist, then the n-tuple fermion cluster can be achieved because the law of attraction and repulsion of charges is temporarily reversed {74,75}. This unexpected "attraction of paired fermions of like sign" will form quasi-nuclei in many cases, particularly in small clusters of two or four, etc.

Hence two H+ hydrogen ions (two protons) in such a time-reversal zone in a fluid are drawn together into a quasi-nucleus, which actually is an excited isomer of deuterium (Figure 37). Time-reversal zones are temporary in cold fusion experiments due to the statistics of their formation and the transient fluctuation theorem {76} of thermodynamics. As the time reversal zone decays, the quasi-nucleus of two protons is increasingly in an excited and unbalanced state. The excited-state *diproton* nucleus decays by flipping a quark in one proton, converting it to a neutron. That produces a *neutron + proton nucleus*, which is a deuterium ion, strictly by electronuclear means. Or four protons may cluster by "attraction in a time-reversal zone" and form a 4-p nucleus. That is an excited isomer of a helium nucleus. As the time-reversal zone decays, first one quark flips in one proton and then another quark flips in a second proton. That produces a helium nucleus - i.e., an *alpha particle.* Or two deuterium ions can attract and form a quasi-nucleus (Figure 38), which is already an exact isomer of a helium nucleus and thus easily decays into an alpha particle by simply "tightening" as the weakened strong force recovers faster than the Coulomb force can reduce, vanish, and resume in the opposite direction. The exact reaction equations for these reactions are given in my new book, *Energy from the Vacuum* {10}.

We filed an Invention Disclosure on the process of forming and using time-reversal zones to cause like charges to attract and unlike charges to repel *in vacuo,* in fluids, and in other media, resulting in the formation of semi-nuclei as excited isomer states of other nuclei, followed by decay into new nuclides. We will follow it with patent applications in the future. This represents a completely new kind of particle physics interaction presently not included in the textbooks, and not requiring high-energy processes. Literally thousands of new nuclear interactions—all *permissibly* violating the second law of thermodynamics because the statistics permit such violations and experiments prove it—are now possible.

Cold fusion does indeed hold a new kind of nuclear physics in its hand—but a physics presently considered very alien by our orthodox nuclear science community. For decades nuclear scientists have been seeking ever more *spatially* energetic particle smashing, believing that extreme high energy nuclear reactions and transmutations cannot possibly be done with charged particles at low *spatial* energy. One is sympathetic to the scientists, because even the concept of "low spatial energy transmutation" itself sounds like an oxymoron. And it would be, *if one were limited to spatial energy alone*, as is presently assumed by physicists. But one is also speaking of the neglected and compressed *huge time-energy* component of those low-spatial energy photons, and that is quite a different matter. The lower the spatial energy of the photon (the lower its frequency), the greater the amount of compressed energy transported in the time component as "time". The transposition of time-polarized EM energy into longitudinally polarized EM energy—and vice versa—is already justified in quantum field theory. Use of that extremely high energy component by its transposition or partial transposition into spatial energy in fact provides a much higher energy physics interaction than present orthodox high **energy** physics utilizes, knows, or considers.

Almost all the learned scientists are thinking *only* of spatial energy, since that is **the** only kind they have been "taught" to consider. Hence, from their view (i.e., on the premise of their implicit *assumption)* it is perfectly "logical" to condemn cold fusion, since in their view, "cold" implies low (spatial) energy and "fusion" implies high (spatial) energy transmutation. What is unknown to the orthodox community is that the "cold" in cold fusion also implies "extraordinarily high time-energy". So with a little transduction of highly compressed time-energy **into** spatial energy, "cold" fusion actually can imply "extremely high spatial **energy** made available by transduction" also.

As an example, the Chief Editor of *Science* recently had the courage {77} to **publish** results of sonoluminescence research reporting positive experimental transmutation results {78}. A paper was then published in *Nature* {79}, pointing out that the (spatial) energy involved is insufficient for such nuclear transmutation temperature, thereby implying that the reactions reported by the first researchers are not possible.

However, given formation of a time-reversal zone, this second paper is not necessarily applicable to the sonoluminescence fusion process, because the paper is based on an unwitting two-part premise that *(i) only spatial energy can be used for nuclear transmutation and (ii) no time-reversal zones exist to nullify that premise by having reactions (such as the law of attraction and repulsion of charges) run backwards.* That premise is already experimentally proven to be invalid by Evans et al., and it fails when the time reversal zone effect is considered.

We strongly stress that thermodynamics—both in theory and as demonstrated in experiments—not only allows but predicts—for a certain fraction of the time—the formation and existence of just such "reversal zones" where the usual reactions *run in reverse* {76}. It is also experimentally proven {54}. In that case a much higher energy—time energy—can be and is employed to convert the Coulomb barrier into the Coulomb attractor.[21] We know now (from the experimental demonstrations by Denis Evans et al.) that such "reversal zones" may be up to a micron in size and may endure for up to two seconds. The subsequent decay of that TRZ then allows the quasi-nuclei temporarily formed in it to decay by quark flipping alone, allowing the quasi-nucleus to easily transmute into a perfectly well known nuclear reaction product.

To quote Arthur C. Clarke, when a learned scientist says something is *possible*, he is probably right. When he says something is *impossible*, he is probably wrong.

Stalin's Dictatorial Impact on Soviet Scientific Management's Response

Stalin was a powerful dictator. He simply killed or jailed those who opposed his will. So after his blunt order (Figure 1) circa latter 1945 to find a great new technical breakthrough area quickly, his Academicians and high level science managers were faced with a severe dilemma: They could not afford to *oppose or criticize a vigorous search* for new innovations and a great breakthrough, and they could not remain passive. Their very lives depended on they themselves *personally finding such a breakthrough in great haste and presenting it to Stalin*. They had to actively spur the efforts of their most outstanding subordinates and Soviet science itself, or suffer dire personal consequences. Siberia and prison camps loomed for the lot of them unless they produced.

To put it bluntly, Stalin "got their collective attention" and their "whole-hearted support." Those few who resisted simply were shipped post-haste to the notorious prisons of Siberia, and worked to death in short order.

---

[21] We strongly point out that, when the reactions run backward and negentropy appears in those reversed regions, the conservation of energy law is violated unless time-energy is being converted to spatial energy. Either we must begin accounting time as energy, or we must give up the conservation of energy law itself. The obvious solution is to account the time energy being utilized, as well as the 3-space energy.

So the highest-level Soviet scientific managers now desperately demanded of their subordinate scientists *anything*—*anything at all*—that was novel and had breakthrough implications. An almost convulsive national scientific effort was launched immediately, with hardly a detracting voice. A great team of the very **best** Soviet scientists was rapidly formed and methodically searched the scientific literature of the world from beginning to end. Nothing even remotely like that search and review has ever occurred in the West.

For example, one great technical center set up by the Soviets had a staff of about 2000 Ph.D.s with associated translators, staffs, etc. The Soviets purchased and **hauled** in copies of all the scientific literature of the West—by the shiploads—to such centers. Their scientists then methodically went through the material, **journal** by journal, paper by paper, page by page. There are and always have **been** myriads of innovations and discoveries sitting on the shelf in the scientific **literature,** never followed up, or opposed by standard models and credos. The first tier of reviewing Soviet scientists was composed of excellent scientists. They skimmed out the "cream" into a select pile which the second tier then analyzed in depth. The second tier was composed of the best nonlinear scientists in **the** world—the "superscientists."

They were seeking *new principles of nature that could rapidly be developed into highly advanced technology*, and they found them—sitting there in the literature, already pointed out, and long ignored by the Western scientific community.

Shortly Stalin had his great new breakthrough area emerging, and they had their heads.

Our Own Science Community's Progress During These Decades

For decades foundations physicists (Bunge, Feynman, Wheeler, Lindsey, **Margenau,** etc.) in the U.S. have repeatedly pointed out the substantial foundations problems in electrodynamics. Nobelist Feynman and the great John Wheeler tried to "fix" the problem whereby electrodynamics still erroneously assumes force fields in a space filled with a *material ether* (unit point positive charge, unit point north pole, and unit point mass assumed at every point in **space).** Unfortunately they failed, primarily because their absorber theory {80} contradicted the photon hypothesis and hence quantum mechanics.

Meanwhile, our own National Science Foundation and National Academy of Sciences has directed only minimal work on correcting electrodynamics and dramatically extending it. Faraday and Maxwell—as did every other scientist at the time—rigorously assumed a material ether. Maxwell's equations also implicitly included that material ether assumption. They still do, even after Heaviside's truncation and Lorentz's symmetrical regauging, because none of the Maxwell-Heaviside equations were changed to eliminate the material fields in **space** (material ether) assumption after the Michelson-Morley experiments falsified it.

Every major university in America still teaches that implicit material ether, even though it was falsified over a century ago. That is an exact measure of the caliber of "foundations" work our own scientific community does if left alone. *In more than 100 years, they have not even chosen to root out the material ether from electrodynamics.*

Figure 39 This polluted and suffering planet. Direct result of the scientific community's adamant resistance to upgrading classical electrodynamics and electrical engineering.

The prevailing flippant attitude is that, "Well, your TV set works, doesn't it?" Yes it does, but we also do not have practical electrogravitation and inertial propulsion, nor do we have cheap clean EM energy from the vacuum. Instead, we have a severely polluted planet (Figure 39), ever increasing deaths from biospheric fumes and polluting byproducts, increasing destruction of species, and a monstrous unleashing of far more coal and hydrocarbon burning in our near future while the world tears itself apart and destroys its economy and civilization in a rising series of oil and energy wars. The direct responsibility for that mess lies directly with the scientific community and its fierce resistance to innovative research and development, and changing a century-old, long outmoded classical EM and electrical engineering model.

Wryly put, it's high time we "got the lead out" of EM field theory, where the lead is the material ether and other non-sequiturs cluttering the theory.

Such drastic modeling errors would not be tolerated of government-funded aerospace engineers and contractors developing a new missile system. So it should be equally intolerable in the government-funded scientific community and in fact in the civilian scientific community as well, and it should not be tolerated of either the National Academy of Sciences or the National Science Foundation.

Einstein {81} said it perfectly, as follows:

> *"...the scientist makes use of a whole arsenal of concepts which he imbibed practically with his mother's milk; and seldom if ever is he aware of the eternally problematic character of his concepts. He uses this conceptual material, or, speaking more exactly, these conceptual tools of thought, as something obviously, immutably given; something having an objective value of truth which is hardly even, and in any case not seriously, to be doubted... in the interests of science it is necessary over and over again to engage in the critique of these fundamental concepts, in order that we may not unconsciously be ruled by them."*

Upholding and perpetuating flawed electrodynamics models seriously impedes the progress of scientific development and revolutionary new technology.[22,23] At some point, one must legitimately question the upper management of the U.S. scientific community for not modifying classical EM and electrical engineering to include the active vacuum exchange with every charge and EM system. In not doing so, they continue to advocate perpetual motion source charges, creating energy from nothing, on a scale unparalleled in history.

It is little wonder that we do not have electrical power systems that successfully and freely utilize more than a trillionth of the vacuum energy they freely extract from the local vacuum. *There is not now and there never has been a single*

---

[22] Oddly, the conventional electrodynamics model assumes that every source charge freely creates energy out of nothing at all, and pours this energy out continuously in all directions, thereby establishing its associated EM fields and potentials at light speed, reaching out across the universe. From the 1960s alone, the total assumption of incredibly vast numbers of perpetual motion machines has been carefully hidden from the new students, so that today even many professors do not realize that in their model all EM fields and potentials, and every joule of EM energy in the universe, are assumed to be created by a vast assortment of perpetual motion machines called source charges. That problem has not been solved in electrical engineering or in classical electrodynamics, and if the scientists have their way, it is not going to be solved. Yet the basis for its solution—the asymmetry of opposite charges such as the dipolarity (in the modern view) of a source charge—has been in particle physics since 1957, with the award of the Nobel Prize to Lee and Yang in December of that year.

[22] One keeps one's sense of humor. The raucous skeptics and "defenders of the orthodox EM faith" who so noisily denounce legitimate COP>1.0 EM system researchers as "perpetual motion nuts", are themselves unwittingly the greatest perpetual motion nuts ever recorded in history. Further, they are so ignorant of what their present model actually means, that they do not even know it. It is one thing to be ignorant and to recognize it; it is quite another thing to be ignorant and so ignorant one does not know it—45 years after broken symmetry was rigorously established experimentally by Wu and her colleagues, and the Nobel Prize awarded to Lee and Yang.

electrical engineering department, professor, or textbook that knows what actually powers an EM circuit—real observable EM energy extracted from the local seething vacuum by the source charges and the source dipolarity.

Since our scientific community cannot seem to make such a simple change (as including the active vacuum's interaction with every charge and the charge's broken symmetry in that interaction) even 45 years after the basis for that change has been resoundingly proven in particle physics, our national survival is at stake and the nation itself is seriously threatened by the superweapons developed by the KGB over the last five decades. We would have already been totally destroyed—twice in 1997 alone—had it not been for the intervention of a friendly little foreign nation. My colleagues and I played a very small alerting role in those affairs, so we are speaking from experience, not from extrapolation. We would be quickly destroyed today, were it not for the continuing "balance of terror" provided by the little nation.

U.S. Scientists Have Committed Monstrous Crimes and Gone Unpunished

Rather sadly, we also point out another thing that has to be said: *scientists are no more moral or immoral than any other slice of American citizens.* A percentage of scientists is capable of committing horrible scientific crimes, as distasteful as such a statement may be. That includes the deliberate experimentation on humans, resulting in deaths. In short, at least manslaughter and perhaps even murder, since knowledge of the probable results was there beforehand.

One would think U.S. scientists would *never* scientifically condone and perform experiments leading to mass deaths for 30 years (i) as they did in the Tuskegee case in Alabama. Over 400 poor blacks were supposedly treated for syphilis, while actually not being treated at all, but were deliberately tricked and allowed to rot with syphilis so our "ethical" scientists could watch how their brains decayed, so to speak. Over 100 of those poor blacks died with the disease while the scientists cold-bloodedly watched them expire and kept meticulous records. Or (ii) as they did in the case of whole body nuclear radiation for 30 years—again by trickery, deceit, and illegal use of security classification to hide these acts—of helpless retarded children and others, some of whom also died.

Once these heinous incidents were exposed publicly, the political power of the scientific community is such that *no scientist was ever indicted or tried for these heinous mass murders, and none is going to be.* The scientific community *has* *not* fiercely called for punishment of these mass murderers amongst their midst—guilty of precisely the same kind of horrible actions for which we tried and executed war criminals at Nuremberg.

Incredibly, the President of the United States formally apologized for these incidents! He did not turn the case over to the Justice Department for prosecution of high crimes against humanity and mass murder, *as would have* *been done for ordinary citizens.* Had a single doctor in his private clinic done such things on his own, he would have been arrested, summarily tried, and either sentenced to life in prison or executed.

The sad thing is that there was really no sharp clamor from the scientific community to bring their fellow scientists to justice, a la Nuremberg. By their silence, the organized scientific community showed a side that scientists are loftily not supposed to possess. *So long as the scientific community continues to tolerate those mass murders of American citizens and not call for justice, then just so long do they stand convicted by their own resounding silence and inaction.*

We cite these painful incidents (there are others!) to point out that one must not deify the scientific community. The conduct of science is no better and no worse than the conduct of human affairs in other areas. Science is also a big business, and it has its moral scientists and its immoral scientists. It does its moral business and it does its immoral business.

We painfully submit that both sides of the scientific character must be considered, when one examines such things as the tolerance or intolerance of the scientific community to dramatic innovation and "out of the box" research. We have to consider it now, because it has become a serious threat to the continued survival of our nation. The conduct of scientific affairs will unavoidably include suppression, maneuvering, spin control, and fierce struggle for power and funds—such is in the very nature of human beings, and it is present in the scientific community on a bell-shaped curve as in all other human communities. It is ongoing widely today, and to an uncomfortably large extent much of science has been captured and effectively controlled by controlling the scientific funding and prescribing what research must be done for the funds available.

As the French say, "The more things change, the more they remain the same." Science is still the same way as it was when Planck made his famous statement. It will still be that way tomorrow, and a century from now. As with any other big enterprise, it has to have checks and balances imposed and enforced on it from outside—by the government itself. Little or no indication exists of that happening in the near future, until we get something like an anthrax spray attack on a large city, and have a million or more Americans dying in the streets.

Energetics: New Principles of Physics and How the Soviets Found Them

Under Stalin's whip, the Soviets particularly sought anything that indicated *possible new principles of nature.* It is no accident that Nobelist Petr Kapitsa later informed Nikita Khrushchev that a means of total neutralization of foreign missiles could only come from *a group of new principles in physics called energetics.* A group of new principles is precisely what energetics *is.* So if our scientific and intelligence communities wish to understand energetics, they must first understand the new principles it is based upon. They cannot just simply apply ordinary electrodynamics and "business as usual" as they have largely done. The massive Soviet scientific search program spurred by Stalin is where those new principles came from.

When the first tier of Soviet review scientists found something that had not been followed up, and saw that it had significant implications if found valid, that paper was laid aside into a "select" pile. That select pile then went to the "super" scientists, for full-blown review and analysis by some of the brightest and sharpest minds on the planet.

The Russians came up almost immediately with Whittaker's 1903 and 1904 work. That work shows a hidden electrodynamic *longitudinal* EM wavepair structure (in phase conjugate pairs) inside the scalar potential and comprising it.

This is a dramatic extension of electrodynamics to incorporate a full-infolded general relativity infolded inside the electrodynamics. Whittaker showed that scalar potential functions in interference already *create* all the "normal" fields and waves anyway (the beginning of superpotential theory). This novel interferometry and its inherent capability for action-at-a-distance did not elude the Russian superscientists. The superb Soviet scientific team came up with that and with much, much more.

Nothing like the comprehensive, intense review of the entire scientific literature has been accomplished by the U.S. scientific community. Nothing like it is being done now.

Longitudinal EM Wave Interferometry Energetics Was Almost Immediately Uncovered

At the end of WW II, the German radar team and infrared team were taken to Russia. Both teams were years ahead of their Western counterparts.

One of my close colleagues has validated that the German radar team had some severe instrumental anomalies while still in Germany. We think this is what they were:

In WW II the Germans invented radar absorbing materials, to coat their submarine snorkels and prevent Allied antisubmarine warfare bombers from tracking the snorkels and destroying the subs. A wide variety of highly nonlinear, doped materials were investigated. In addition to single beam radar cross section, the Germans also examined the materials in multi-beam illumination circumstances.

It appears that, in some multibeam experiments with some materials, conditions were just right so that the multi-illuminated absorbing material acted as a pumped phase conjugate mirror (PCM), and wave-to-wave interactions emerged. This meant that the absorber material PCM would suddenly gather up all the energy in the pumping beams, use one of the other beams as a signal input beam, and fire an amplified retroreflected pulse right back down the signal input beam, wrecking the experiment and creating havoc in surrounding equipment.

When the German radar team went to Russia, their knowledge of these anomalies went with them. In the desperate Russian scientific climate to find *lust such anomalies,* this startling and anomalous phenomenon would have been exhaustingly examined and studied, once the German radar engineers got to Russia to their new laboratories.

In short, it appears that the Russians quickly came up with what today is called "nonlinear phase conjugate optics," but first in the radar band rather than optics.[24] So before 1950, it appears that the Russians already had working phase conjugating pumped phase conjugate mirrors for the radar bands and in other bands.

Fisher {82} details that we Americans did not "stumble onto" practical phase conjugate optics experiments until Russian physicists briefed Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory scientists in 1972 about the strange wave in **many** of their optical experiments that "came out of nowhere and restored order **from** disorder." At that time, the KGB energetics weapon scientists had known aboutphase conjugate retroreflection and its amplified pumping, for more than 20 years. Indeed, the first giant strategic scalar interferometers had already been deployed and utilized to kill the U.S.S. Thresher nearly a decade earlier (Figure **6).**

By 1950 Russian Energetics Was Off and Running

By the beginning of the 1950s, the Russian scientists under iron KGB control were already experimenting with "scalar potential interferometry" at a distance, a la Whittaker 1904. Here transverse EM waves, EM fields, and EM energy—either *divergent* (heating) positive energy or *convergent* (cooling) negative enery—could be readily created at a distance {83} (Figures 40 and 41). Further, the longitudinal EM wavepairs used in this interferometry had the marvelous characteristic of easily penetrating right through the earth and ocean, with only a little intervening interaction, given that the LWs are sufficiently well made {84}. The interferometry "beams" can and do also move superluminally—again, right through the earth and ocean.

---

[24] **Of course, they would also have investigated it at all other bands as well.**

Meeting of timed pulses causes explosive cooling
COOLING IN INTERFERENCE ZONE
Ambient vacuum potential in distant interference zone
Φ_a
subspace
Bias
Heat extracted
subspace
XMTR/RCVR
XMTR/RCVR
Φ_T
Electrical ground potential of transmitter
Heat emerges at transmitter/receiver
Heat emerges at transmitter/receiver

Figure 40 Scalar interferometry in the endothermic (cooling) mode.

It is not accidental that Admiral Gorshkov, head of the Soviet Navy, would later bluntly state: *"We have made the oceans of the world transparent."* And so they had.

Energy input to transmitter/receiver
Energy input to transmitter/receiver
XMTR/RCVR
Φ_T
Electrical ground potential of transmitter
XMTR/RCVR
subspace
subspace
Bias
Heating in interference zone
Φ_a
Ambient vacuum potential in distant interference zone
Meeting of timed pulses causes explosive heating

Figure 41 Scalar interferometry in the exothermic (heating) mode.

By 1950, the Russian scientists were experimenting with deliberately creating and phase conjugating longitudinal EM waves, forming phase conjugate wavepairs. They then assembled the desired (mathematically calculated) sets of those waves, adjusted frequencies and magnitudes, phasing, etc., to produce EM potentials having a desired deterministic internal spacetime curvature set (internal spacetime engines) and dynamics.

As a result, by the mid-50s Russian weapon scientists were already experimenting in *bioenergetics* with the direct inductance of diseases and health changes via the transmission into human targets of such "internally structured" EM potentials, fields, and waves. They were also experimenting with the production of EM energy, potentials, fields, and waves at a distance, directly through the earth and the ocean. Either heating (energy flow divergence) (Figure 41) or cooling (energy flow reconvergence) (Figure 40) could be produced at will in the distant interference zone, merely by altering the bias voltage on the chassis grounds of the interferometer's transmitters. Rapid switching between the exothermic and endothermic modes thus was straightforward{85}, as demonstrated (Figure 35).

By the latter '50s, longitudinal wave interferometry weapons had already emerged from advanced engineering development and were in full production engineering toward deployment. The LIDA device {86} and even more advanced versions for directly affecting the human mind and its state of consciousness had emerged in *psychoenergetics* as one class of devices rather openly released and utilized. The LIDA uses structured EM microwaves {87} to induce a hypnogogic or cataleptic type of trance-like state in either a human or a cat. as tested years later by Dr. Ross Adey of the U.S. Early prototypes were purportedly used against our prisoners in North Korea during the Korean War to assist in their brainwashing by their North Korean Captors. Prisoners reported that its effects were irresistible.

Meanwhile, energetics weapon testing in several major modes was being conducted, particularly from Soviet research ships over remote regions of the ocean and at night. Descriptions of such tests—many of them seen by passing ship's captains—can readily be found in the open maritime literature. We gathered and published many such incidents and cited references.

Deployment of the Soviet Energetics Weapons and Their Quick Use

In January 1960 Khrushchev spoke obliquely of these "fantastic" new superweapons, just within the portfolio of the Soviet scientists, so to speak, in an important speech to the Presidium. Parts of that speech were reported in the *New York Times* {88}. No one in the West knew what Khrushchev was talking about. Our intelligence community, which bases many of its assessments on the tired old phrase "We have no evidence that..." simply treated it as propaganda, It wasn't, and the U.S.S. Thresher was to be destroyed (Figure 6) three years later by that same weapon Khrushchev was speaking of.

Khrushchev began rapidly inserting long-range missiles and nuclear warheads into Cuba in 1962, precipitating the Cuban Missile Crisis. Kennedy knew Khrushchev's strategic bombers and rockets were in horrible shape, due to direct information received from Colonel Oleg Penkovskiy, a Russian spy in our employ courtesy of British Intelligence. No one knew of the superweapons, but they were not yet operationally ready in Oct.-Nov. 1962. So Kennedy called Khrushchev's bluff and faced him off. Blustering awhile to obtain U.S. assurance that it would not invade Cuba, Khrushchev was forced to back down and withdraw the missiles. In his exuberance he had simply moved too fast in inserting the missiles into Cuba. Had he waited a few months later, the strategic superweapons would have been operational and ready. Any U.S. naval blockading force would have thus faced quick and eerie destruction or disabling, as was soon to be demonstrated in the case of the U.S.S. Thresher and its surface companion, the U.S.S. Skylark.

This severe loss of face by Khrushchev, before the Communist Party, made it imperative that he do something quite dramatic to stay in power, and do it as quickly as possible.

Khrushchev's first large, full-up, strategic longitudinal EM wave energetics interferometer weapon became operational on site by April 1, 1963. A few days later, Khrushchev employed it to kill the U.S.S. Thresher atomic submarine (Figure 6) underwater off the East Coast of the U.S. By simply creating EM noise in an interference zone placed on, in, and around the sub underwater, and thus jamming the sub's electrical controls so that it could not be controlled, the helpless sub sank to crush depth and imploded. The U.S.S. Skylark on the surface had multiple systems seriously jammed or rendered nonoperational. This was the Russian deception plan, to have the kill of the sub resemble an accident.

One day after the successful clandestine kill of the Thresher, the same weapon was used to demonstrate a powerful underwater electromagnetic burst 100 miles north of Puerto Rico (Figure 42). The energetics underwater burst equaled a substantial deep underwater nuclear explosion in size. The burst was seen by a passing U.S. jetliner crew and was reported to the FBI and the U.S. Coast Guard when the aircraft landed in Florida. A colleague interviewed the co-pilot of the aircraft, and relayed the interview information to me.

Khrushchev's Second Demonstration

Deep Underwater EM Explosion 11 Apr. 1963

(Similar to this photo set of a deep underwater nuclear **test** explosion)

Phenomena observed and reported by passing U S jetliner

100 miles north of Puerto Rico, over Puerto Rican Trench (One of the deepest parts of the ocean)

PHOTO 1
PHOTO 2
PHOTO 3
PHOTOS COURTESY OF U.S. NAVY

Figure 42 Deep underwater nuclear burst, demonstrating same water phenomenology produced by Khrushchev's second demonstration on 11 Apr. 1963, the day after killing the U.S.S. Thresher.

Why the Soviets Could Continue to Attack and Kill U.S. Targets with Impunity

Ironically, Khrushchev clearly demonstrated the inability of U.S. science to comprehend the numerous test incidents of Soviet LW interferometers, including the actual destruction of strategic U.S. targets (our latest and greatest nuclear attack submarine!) right off our coast. *The greatest strategic weakness of the U.S.—and the thing that may yet completely destroy all of us—is the continuing snail-like pace of U.S. scientific progress in revising, correcting, and extending its seriously flawed classical electrodynamics model. This scientific inertia placed us several decades behind in development of defenses in the areas of longitudinal EM wave weapons, quantum potential weapons, and causal system weapons. It countered our strategic nuclear armada for two decades. We were for some time analogous to the Spanish Navy with its wooden ships, when it faced and was destroyed by American steel ships. Hopefully at least some more modern work has now been accomplished in higher group symmetry electrodynamics, so that we are not quite as defenseless as we formerly were. But we still have a very long way to go.*

When one performs a standard strategic analysis on a nation, one of the areas examined in depth is called *national style.* One of the major characteristics in the U.S. **national** style is that we do not react to slowly increasing threats or changes

(Figure 43). That style particularly applies to the scientific community. Because of it, the Russians knew that our government only inches forward in achieving new *basic* science. We run at enormous speed, doing *applied* science. We are essentially Romans and great engineers. We are largely not Greeks and not great esthetics discoverers. We also will just ignore new threats if they emerge very slowly and are only gradually perceived, and we will hide behind that infamous phrase, "We have no evidence that..."

BOA CONSTRICTOR LIGHTNING STRIKE

Americans tend not to react to slowly increasing things, but react to rapidly increasing things.

Figure 43 America's national style: we do not react to slowly increasing threats.

In short, *we react to the coiled rattlesnake, not to the boa constrictor*. We are now in a long, bloody, costly war against terrorism because of that very characteristic of our national style. For decades, the slowly increasing infiltration of terrorists and their weapons was just ignored. Oh, yes, the official "threat studies" pointed it out, placidly.[25] But no one got very excited about it. The prevailing attitude was that "Ah, yes, but nothing like that will happen on *my* watch!"

As clearly demonstrated by their successful decades-long radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, the KGB chess masters knew that, if the test kills using

[25] Indeed, if one will look at the threat studies prior to William Cohen taking office as U.S. Secretary of Defense, one will find widespread complacency about the terrorist threat, and mostly just lip service to it. It was definitely not very important to most of the intelligence and scientific community. Cohen built a fire under the entire threat community, forcing them to get their act together and start actually studying the terrorist threat, asymmetrical warfare capabilities and dangers, and what could be done about it. He did force the research and threat communities to do a creditable job of studying it, and to publish reports detailing it. Unfortunately, the tenor of the political community outside SecDef Cohen's control was basically "business as usual, not to worry." September 11, 2001 changed all that forever. Once again we had waited until the rattlesnake struck and actually bit us, before the nation rose up and paid attention.

their superweapons were not too often repeated, and if they even vaguely resembled other things known in the world, the U.S. scientific community and government investigators would resist all suggestions of Russian superweapons and super technology using new principles of nature. And so would our intelligence community, since they rely on the scientific community for their scientific assessments. They were well aware of our historical "ostrich" position (Figure44).

We're running out of energy!
We must redouble our efforts!
We must gigantically centralize!
We have to keep polluting the Earth, if we are to have lots of electrical energy! There is no free lunch!
No!
Every dipole in the universe is a continuous free EM energy generator, continuously extracting and pouring out enormous EM energy from the active local vacuum.

Figure 44 The only energy resource problem is the theoretical ostrich problem in science. We *must* become theoretical owls, rather than ostriches.

The KGB deception just depended upon the U.S. tiger to keep its stripes and exhibit its normal reactions or lack thereof. They also utilized (i) a series of strategic deception plans, deliberately designed to perform the tests suggestive of discredited phenomena such as UFO reporting and "lights at night" types of things, and (ii) a continuing series of subtle and anomalous stimuli (probes) designed to rather slowly attract the attention of U.S. Government at high levels, and of state-of-the-art U.S. government scientific contractors as well. The trick was not to attract U.S. attention *too suddenly or too strongly.* Show them the slow boa constrictor, not the lightning-fast rattler, and see how they reacted, if at all. By their reactions, the KGB could assess whether or not the U.S. government, intelligence, and scientific communities understood what was happening.

Precisely as anticipated by the KGB, we showed them for some decades that we really had little or no comprehension of the superweapons and their testing right over our heads. Even today, at least in the open community there is still little recognition, even of the violent weather war raging right over our own heads since July 4, 1976 and easily recognized.[26]

A case in point was the deliberate induction of diseases and health changes in U.S. personnel in the U.S. Embassy in Moscow for over 40 years (Figure 11). On a continuing basis, this excellent intelligence probe showed (by the U.S.'s actions or lack thereof) that we knew nothing about energetics.

Another KGB probe method was to kill a target once in a while, such as a jetliner or a submarine (deliberately rather seldom here, because the U.S. military would react if a certain frequency threshold were exceeded). Such kills resemble or can be posed as natural accidents or terrorist incidents. Quite a number of such incidents have occurred over the last three decades. The National Transportation Safety Board (NTSB) does not have higher group symmetry electrodynamics in its knowledge base or on its "checklists", nor does it have scalar interferometry, psychoenergetics, bioenergetics, or quantum potentials. In total, the results of deliberate stimuli of the U.S. continually assured the KGB chess masters (with 100% certainty) that we were a complete novice in the energetics game, and we were a lamb increasingly ready for the slaughter.

The major contribution to the continued success of these deliberate measures by the KGB has been provided for decades *in the "nonreaction of our own scientific community to slowly increasing threats."* To a lesser extent, our own intelligence community has also not focused sufficiently open-minded and highly qualified scientists to comprehend what is occurring in "new principles of nature" phenomena. "In the box" electrical engineers with Bachelor of Science degrees often are the analysts who analyze and assess such "out of the box" phenomena. Good luck!

Ordinary radar engineers may analyze an ordinary radar rather well. They will never, never become aware of a radar beam carrying infolded spacetime curvature engines. Such is not even in their lexicon or in their belief structure. They have no understanding or experience at all with longitudinal or time-polarized EM waves—most have never even *heard* of time-polarized EM waves. Mention curvatures of spacetime and their dynamics as deliberate "engines" impressed *inside* EM fields and potentials and waves, and one gets a glaze right over the eyes of the intelligence analyst recipient.

Western science conceives the mind as a meat computer, and does not understand that mind operations are totally electromagnetic and causal, but nonphysical—meaning in the time domain rather than in 3-space. Mind operations primarily use time-polarized EM waves rather than the transductions into transverse EM waves that the scientists actually measure. Hence Western science has not the foggiest notion as to what Russian psychoenergetics is all about, or how it can even "be." Certainly Western science has had no notion of deliberately creating time-polarized EM waves for direct engineering within the mind itself and within the mind's time-EM operations.

---

[26] The weather war over our heads has been particularly violent, and violently resisted, this year (2002).

As Arthur C. Clarke puts it in his "third law," *"Any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic. "*

Our long fascination with our "normal" (optics, IR, UV, radar, COMINT, satellite photography, etc.) technological intelligence collection systems will certainly not lead to any great breakthrough understanding of Russian energetics weaponry. That could only have come through HUMINT or COMINT. HUMINT is an area which, in the past, we have mostly just neglected or given lip service to for decades—and that came back to bite us severely on September 11, 2001. Even when we use HUMINT, it will not yield energetics results if the managers and directors themselves (and the agent handlers in the field) have no understanding of it and do not even know the proper questions to ask. And the system will not deliver results if the Intelligence Collection Requirements do not address the proper issues because ordinary electrical engineers and conventional electrical physicists having no inkling of psychoenergetics, or how it works, drew them up.

COMINT, on the other hand, suffers from its own extraordinary prolific output -as well as by only conventional analysts and conventional scientists examming it. Warehouses of COMINT information often have not even been read in any way except a casual glance by a junior analyst, and certainly have not had serious foundations scientists examine it in detail. ELINT does a little better insofar as a human analyst looking at it, but then what is a conventional electrical engineer or radar engineer to make of a giant hemispherical globe that slowly forms and expands from a tiny "seed bubble" of intense glowing light that appears (Figure 35), as it did off the Kurils in April 1984? What will he label it? "Light phenomena?" Where are the technical descriptors of the actual process forming the phenomenon? Where are the implications as to the strategic military use of such phenomena? The reader can see the point. For decades our analysts ignored prolific reports of such incidents by the hundreds. Why, everybody knew it was glowing swamp gas!

One cannot even write a proper "intelligence collection requirement" if one does not understand the basic phenomenology. So essentially no one in U.S. intelligence was writing the proper intelligence collection requirements.

The Science Behind the Soviet Energetics Weapons

The science behind these weapons is called _energetics_. (See again Figure 8.) Energetics consists of three branches, depending upon the nature of what is being targeted. The branch targeted against nonliving matter is just called the same name: *Energetics*. Targeted against living cells and biological material, the nervous system, etc., that branch of energetics is called *bioenergetics*. Against the mind and its functions (which are time-like and thus involve scalar photons and time-polarized EM waves), energetics is called *psychoenergetics* {89}. See Figure 45. Psychoenergetics includes both the conscious[27] and unconscious mind[28] of the individual—and even Jung's collective unconscious mind[29] of the entire human species {90}, and in fact even the collective unconscious mind in all species on earth, which corresponds to Lovelock's *Gaia* concept.

LEVELS OF CONSCIOUSNESS AND UNCONSCIOUSNESS
CONSCIOUS MIND
PERSONAL UNCONSCIOUS
FAMILY
CITY
STATE
CREED
NATION
GEOGRAPHICAL AREA
SPECIES
BIOSPHERIC
UNIVERSAL
SPECIES
INFINITE BEING
GAIA

Figure 45 Mind levels are subject to engineering by higher group symmetry electromagnetic (psychoenergetic) weapons.

We remind the reader that we are talking *physics,* not metaphysics and not mysticism. Strong Soviet physics developments over a sustained period have occurred in all three energetics areas, and these areas continue to be developed at present.

Once a nation enters into LW EM development, it has just entered into unified field theory development also. Particularly with longitudinal EM waves, one is directly engineering general relativity itself, and spacetime itself, as well as the dynamics of spacetime curvatures and sets of such curvatures. But it is an even greater unified field theory than Western physicists suspect. Not only does it unite the four forces of physics, but it also unites mind and matter and their dynamics as well.

---

[27] The conscious mind is a very fast serial processor, processing one snapshot at a time.

[28] The unconscious mind is a massively parallel processor, doing a great many things simultaneously. It is totally conscious, but multiply so. Since the serial processor conscious mind can only "see a single slide projector in the viewgraph at one time", when it "looks at the unconscious mind" it sees a large number of slides simultaneously, hence just sees "black" or "nothingness" (no single thing).

[29] Jung himself labeled it a *mind* (and hence a living entity). His modern followers shudder at such a concept, and very much downplay the "mind" and "entity" aspect, preferring that it just go away.

We shall also refer to time-polarized EM waves as *time-density waves*. The reason is that a time-polarized EM wave is one where the EM energy is on the time-axis and oscillating along it, like the squeezing of an accordion. In short, it is a longitudinal EM wave on the 4th Minkowski axis *ict*, where the only variable is *t*. Hence it is a wave of the variation of time-density along that axis.

All three branches of KGB energetics use longitudinal EM waves, longitudinal EM wave interferometry, and Whittaker-structuring of fields and waves to provide organized curvatures of spacetime known as *spacetime engines* or *vacuum engines*. They also use time-polarized EM waves, as mentioned above. Any or all can also employ the quantum potential as well as negative energy EMP aspects. For now, the reader should just recognize that each infolded longitudinal EM wavepair comprising the scalar potential, includes both a *time-density wave* along the time axis and a longitudinal EM wave in 3-space {91}. So ordinary electrostatic scalar potential fi—ordinary voltage—is made of a harmonic structure of *coupled time-polarized and longitudinal EM wavepairs.*

Oscillations of time density oscillate the local rate of flow of time. In turn, since time has the energy density of mass, its spatial energy equivalence W is given by $W = c^2t$. Any change in a time density wave is a very powerful oscillation of loca1 spacetime curvature. So time-density waves constitute a very powerful form of infolded general relativity, inside potentials and hence inside all EM waves and fields. The KGB weapon scientists call that inner general relativity (time density waves) the *information content of the field*. Unfortunately our follows confuse that term with common "spectral analysis" which it very definitely is not. But as part of the deception plan, the Russians are quite happy to help them think it is exactly that, and in fact the Russians go to some pains to continue to help our fellows think that.

KGB energetics involves the use of a highly structured general relativity infolded inside electrodynamics—inside EM potentials, fields, and waves regardless of type. In addition, that very special GR is using the very strong EM force along the time axis as the main agent of curvature. By deliberately structuring these time-polarized EM waves and their dynamics, extremely powerful *spacetime curvature engines* can be employed, either created locally or at a real distance, or also globally in an entire selected distant region.

Once these spacetime curvature engines structure the distant targeted spacetime region. Then in that interference zone the engines therein act upon any mass present. In theory, any physical effect known can be engineered, according to general relativity, once one can create and utilize the proper set of spacetime curvatures (the proper set of spacetime curvatures and their dynamics). In GR, curvature of spacetime acts directly upon any mass present, and vice versa. With such technology one can therefore *engineer mass* to any level and at any distance (and eventually in any quantity) at will, using energetics methodology. *The engineered mass may be either living or inert* {92}. It follows that bioenergetics and psychoenergetics effects can also be engineered at a distance in similar manner. All it requires is the proper engines for the effects desired in the targets desired.

By using time-density waves and their dynamics, mind itself can be engineered and controlled at a distance as in the cases of Captains Button (Figures 22 and 23) and Svoboda (Figure 24).

The Importance of Scalar Photons and Time-Density Waves

Now we digress momentarily. Again, there are four major photon polarizations in quantum field theory {93}. The first two are *transverse* photons, polarized in the x- and y-direction respectively (transversely to the line of propagation, which is customarily taken along the *z*- axis). Ordinary transverse EM waves are comprised of such photons or blends thereof. Though ignored, EM waves prior to interaction with mass do *transport EM time-energy* as well as EM spatial energy, though in electrodynamics that time-energy transport has been ignored, thus confusing the effect with the cause.

The third polarization is a *longitudinal* photon, vibrating along the *z*- direction (the direction of propagation). Obviously longitudinal EM waves are comprised of such longitudinal EM photons.

The fourth polarization is a *scalar* photon, since it oscillates only along the time axis (the word "scalar" refers to the fact that it has no vector field component in 3-space). In American physics the latter photon is largely ignored since time is not an observable in quantum mechanics. However, such scalar photons do comprise time-density waves and EM time-energy currents, and they are involved in powerfully curving spacetime via oscillating the time domain. Hence by their oscillations they produce spacetime curvature oscillations, which in turn project small components into 3-space. Sufficient such coherent projection components are in fact longitudinal waves in 3-space.

The combination of the scalar and longitudinal photons is observable as the instantaneous scalar potential, and when Whittaker's 1903 decomposition of the scalar potential is slightly corrected, then the scalar potential is comprised of coupled pairs of waves, where each pair consists of a time-polarized EM wave coupled to a longitudinal EM wave. The combination of the scalar and longitudinal EM waves in the presence of charge is observable as the macroscopic scalar potential. Negative charge absorbs the time-polarized photon from the time domain and re-emits a longitudinal photon in 3-space, while the positive charge absorbs a longitudinal photon from 3-space and re-emits a time-polarized photon in the time domain.

Psychoenergetics: Engineering the Mind-Matter Interaction by Engineering Mind

We shall be interested in what actually constitutes a living biological system in **the** psychoenergetics view (Figure 46). Mind operations are *time-like* rather than existing in 3-space, and for that reason mind and its operations are not observable. Observation is a *d/dt* operator acting on an LLLT ongoing interaction, which removes the T and leaves a frozen LLL snapshot, via d/dt(LLLT) => LLL. *Imposition of observation itself breaks,* any and all connection with time-like operations, including mind and its operations.

The body's cells and their parts are linked by a mutual quantum potential. Mind and thought (from a mindworld) occupy the internal SW biwave structure of the QP to that body, being continually disconnected and reconnected by the photon interaction generatrix for the flow of time.
ALL POTENTIALS IN THE BODY ARE ASSOCIATED WITH AND CONNECTED TO THE QUANTUM POTENTIAL.
THE BRAIN AND NERVOUS SYSTEM ARE SPECIAL TUNERS/SWITCHERS BETWEEN INNER AND OUTER EM "SIGNALS".
DEEP CONTROL IS VIA VACUUM ENGINES: NESTED STRUCTURING OF THE SWZ BIWAVES INSIDE, AND COMPRISING, THE SCALAR POTENTIALS.

Figure 46 A living biological system (psychoenergetics view).

"Dynamics" involves "velocity", and in general relativity's 4-space velocity is rotation (Figure 47). Any mind-operation or change is dynamics and produces a small velocity, which is a small rotation. This projects a very small component into 3-space, in the physical body, but still in the virtual state. We are speaking of physics rather than metaphysics! *Sufficient* coherent mind operations (changes) have just such small (virtual) rotation components in 3-space that will project coherent little projection components (virtual) into 3-space. Coherently sustaining these components (intent) results in their coherent integration to breach the quantum threshold and become detectable (produce an observable 3-space result). That is how an "intent" change sustained in the mind becomes an actual physical energy input to the body and nervous system.

- An object moving with velocity v < c has rotated slightly out of 3-space toward the time dimension.
- Its "projection" back into 3-space is shorter, providing the Lorentz-Fitzgerald contraction.
- When velocity v = c, a full right-angle turn has been made, and the object has "lost" its projection along its direction of motion.
- Hence it appears as a 2-dimensional plane moving at the speed of light; in short, a photon or a light wave.

Lorentz-Fitzgerald Contraction

Figure 47 Velocity is rotation. Necessary to understand the mind-body coupling mechanism.

We again stress that the scalar potential is comprised of coupled time-density and longitudinal EM wavepairs. Mental operations also are time-density wave changes, hence they are changes to the interior of potentials, including the ambient potential of the vacuum itself. Potentials superpose, and their coherent internal structures add (integrate) coherently. Hence, mind changes can coherently integrate to produce minute but real, observable, physical input changes to the body system. *Mind permeates the body via the interlinked and superposed potentials of the body.* The living bio-organism's mind and its operations can be modeled as an organized operating wave dynamics inside a scalar potential and superposed potentials of the body of that organism. Since fields are made from the more fundamental potentials, these operations also function inside the fields of the body. The organized time-density dynamics constitute both the conscious mind and its operations and the unconscious mind and its operations. More subtle depths of the time-density dynamics also constitute the human collective unconscious mind functions and operations. Again, we are speaking physics, not mysticism.

See Figure 48. The "component projection" (coherent integration) process from time-like mind operations into 3-space in the body potentials introduces into the living body the *physical* commands correlated to the *mental intent* of that entity. This is the solution {94} to the long unresolved *philosophical problem of intent*, and addresses the unresolved physics problem of *just what constitutes the "observer."* But the subsequent physical changes accomplished by the responding body as a servomechanism, also produce small rotations into the time domain (into the mind domain) but in the virtual state. However, a series ol' coherent physical changes produces coherent virtual state changes in the mind realm, which in turn coherently integrate into perceptual input. In this fashion, the mind senses the response of the body to its order, and any errors in that response that need correction. The time delay gives also the sense of identity and personal persistence, hence creates the perception of self, the "responding body belonging to self," etc. Interwoven perceptions of coherent rotation changes from other 3-space phenomena that do not respond to mind intent, also create the perception of the "separate physical world." That these phenomena do not respond directly to mental intent creates the perception of the "separateness" of this "external" physical world, while the interweaving creates the perception of "existing simultaneously" with or in the external world.

Any change in the spatial body/brain produces a tiny coherent change in the time dimension and hence in mind.
t
dt
ΔL
FEEDBACK
Time Delay
Δt
INTENT
CHANGES
L
dL
Any change in the time-like mind produces a tiny coherent change in 3-space and hence in the brain-body.
A series of coherent intent-induced body changes integrates to an observable input.
BRAIN AS A TWO-WAY TRANSDUCER

Figure 48 Mind-body coupling mechanism at work.

All of that perception, dynamics, rotation, and processing is subject to direct engineering via psychoenergetics means.

Without further elaboration, we again stress that the conscious mind is a serial processor, whereas the unconscious is a massively parallel processor. Westerners are prone to equate self to consciousness or conscious mind operation alone. That is not the case. Consciousness is just one attribute of the self (of the total feedback loop having delay between feedforward and feedback).

The totality is the mind-body coupling mechanism (Figure 48) enabling a living biological system (Figure 46).

By using time-density waves formed of scalar photons, the mind realm also can be directly engineered by the same energetics technology. Hence, for the Russian energetics weapon scientists there followed the development of psychoenergetics as an entire class of breakthrough electromagnetic weaponry.

This resulted in the development of not only a unified physics of matter and space, but also a unified physics of mind and matter reaction. Any true unified field theory must integrate the observer and the unobserved as well as the various categories of the observed. It is now possible to *directly model and engineer both physical and mental reality and their interaction.* Russian psychoenergetics has been developed to do precisely this {95}.

Quantum Potential Weapons Are Utilized in All Three Energetics Branches

In addition to scalar interferometers, there is another category of energetics weapons used in all three branches. That category involves the use of *quantum potential weapons,* after David Bohm's quantum potential in his hidden variable interpretation of quantum mechanics {96}, published in *Physical Review* in 1952. We openly published one mechanism for creating a quantum potential {97}; there are others.

Presently these quantum potential weapons are the most powerful and most flexible weapons on earth. Nothing else can stand against them. Any nation not possessing QP weapons is already a second-rate power, regardless of how many nuclear missiles, bombers, and submarines it possesses, or how many high-energy lasers and high power microwave weapons it possesses.

The greatest problem the Soviets had was not in *making* the QP itself, but in (a) *localizing* its creation to the specific area or region desired, and (b) restricting its coupling to the type of equipment, entity, level, size, type of nuclei, etc. that was desired. We have not yet fully solved the problem of how they are able to do that, but have made a little progress upon it.

The Importance of Longitudinal EM Waves

The KGB energetics weapons use longitudinally polarized and time-polarized EM waves as their basis, rather than transversely polarized EM waves. There is a surge of renewed U.S. interest—and a revolution in electrodynamics—just underway in this country (and in the major weapons laboratories of other nations) *vis a vis* longitudinal EM wave solutions to the major equations of physics. E.g., one may check the Los Alamos National Laboratory Internet web site for summary papers by Rodrigues and Lu {98}. There are now formal EM wave solutions faster than light speed, slower than light speed, etc. {99}. There is also experimental support for superluminal tunneling of EM waves in waveguides {100}. In addition, as is well known, the speed of the ordinary scalar potential is infinite in the Coulomb (transverse) gauge {101}

Higher topological algebra is being used to embed the electrodynamics in most of the KGB energetics work. Maxwell's original theory {6} was some 20 quaternion and quaternion-like equations in 20 unknowns. Quaternion algebra has a higher topology than either vectors or tensors. Heaviside and others reduced the quaternion-like theory of Maxwell down to four equations in four unknowns—or to two coupled equations, depending upon how represented—and formed the much lower topology vector algebra in the process. This serously demoted the topology of electrodynamics and placed undue limitations upon what can be done with it. The subsequent mathematical promotion of electrodynamics to tensor algebra still did not recover much of the EM functioning possible in quaternion algebra. An even vaster, far more powerful electrodynamics emerges in *Clifford Algebra* electrodynamics, which may be **the** coming modern trend.

However, even with Clifford Algebra, there remain fundamental foundations difficulties—such as bluntly confusing *energy transport* with *energy dissipation, by* arbitrarily integrating the Poynting vector around a closed surface so as to select only the divergent portion of the Poynting energy flow. That produces the *energy dissipation flow* associated with the circuit, not the overall energy flow associated with it. The overall energy flow is some 10^{13} times greater in a nominal case, as (i) discovered by Heaviside in the 1880s, (ii) never even considered by Poynting, and (iii) deliberately discarded by Lorentz with a little integration trick {102} still used by classical electrodynamicists and electrical engineers. Electrical engineering departments, professors, and texts do not know and do not teach that all EM power sources—such as generators and batteries—actually pour out of their terminals a far greater energy flow than the meager shaft energy input to the generator or the chemical energy dissipated in the battery. Lorentz arbitrarily discarded the huge Heaviside nondiverged output energy flow component a century ago, with the observation that it "has no physical significance" {103,104}.

Part of the emerging electrodynamics revolution is intuitively obvious. Higher topology algebra used in one's electrodynamics model means that lots more things can be done—in circuits, equipment, and components. As an example, suppose one can only draw geometrical figures on a flat, uncurved plane. Then compare the figures there to what can be drawn when a third dimension is added so that the plane can be curved, twisted, folded, stretched, compressed, etc. in 3-dimensional space. That is similar to the dramatic differences between electrodynamics in a higher topology algebra and electrodynamics in the far more limited tensor and vector algebras.

Further, if someone's circuits *are working* in a higher topology, a lower topology analysis will not even see their true functioning. This turns out to be true for Tesla's work, where so many pundits have used vector or tensor algebra in the belief that they therefore knew what Tesla was doing. They did not, nor did they even use the proper tools to see what he did. For the proof, see Barrett's examination of Tesla's actual patented circuits, using quaternions {105}.

Energy, Wave Energy, and Wave Speed are All Dramatically Altered

The energy of a pure longitudinal EM wave (LW) is infinite (unlimited). In practice, only an imperfect LW is produced experimentally, and therefore its energy is finite, but that energy may be extremely large, and the wave's propagation may be many times faster than the speed of light. This is much like *quantum tunneling*, which has been measured to be superluminal. Nimtz *et al.*, e.g., have transmitted Mozart's 40th symphony through a barrier in a waveguide at 4.7 times the speed of light {100}. Other researchers have transmitted information at lesser velocities but still at greater than c, the speed of light in standard vacuum.

Einstein assumed light speed in vacuum to be universally constant. That is correct for *transverse* photons and *transverse* EM waves, but not necessarily for other polarizations. Instead, it can be a function of the energy density of the vacuum (i.e., its stress energy density), which can be a matter of the gauge and the wave polarization. Further, *c* as a constant applies to transverse polarized EM waves (which are "surface" waves of the medium, so to speak) and not to longitudinal or time-polarized EM waves (which are "subsurface" or "subspace" waves). In general, the speed of the EM wave can be a function of the energy density of the vacuum (i.e., its stress time-energy density). And it is also a function of the type of EM wave being utilized.

"Empty space" is filled and writhing with the continual transiting of higher order EM waves, the presence of standing high order EM waves, and energetically organized regions where the energy is in the LW mode and in the time-density mode. Indeed, space (more correctly, spacetime) itself is nothing but a plenum of such waves and their wave-to-wave interactions.

The longitudinal and time-density effects in empty space are correlated with seasonal and periodic variations of time-charging and longitudinal EM wave emissions from planets, stars, etc. As a result, the characteristics of empty space itself periodically vary, and these can be detected as variations in the speed of light through the affected space.

The interplanetary radar measurements, e.g., do indeed show several periodic variations of the speed of light in interplanetary space, on a weekly and essentially monthly basis. In this data the proclaimed constant speed of light is upheld only by averaging the measurements over a month-long period, as shown by Wallace {106}. Actually, the scientists are dealing with variations of the periodically varying local time-density of spacetime, but have not taken that into account.

There are also specialized "galloping wave" zones, created by variations in the interferometry of the interpassing and interfering longitudinal EM waves in space. Such galloping waves from wave interferometry are already known in the literature {107} from 0.1 to 100 times the speed of light, but they do this on a "surge forward and lag backward" mode about an *average* speed of c in the laboratory here on earth. In space away from planetary masses, that value "c" varies from its textbook value also.

All that has really been shown is that interplanetary space is *not quite* uniform after all, contrary to present scientific assumptions.

One would think that this *fundamental foundations anomaly* shown by the interplanetary radar measurements would excite the entire scientific community and trigger a massive scientific investigation. Instead, scientists such as Wallace who publish critical analyses showing that the data directly prove the variation of c in "ordinary" space, are just ignored and essentially "parked on the side-lines" until they eventually fade away.

A Process for Creating Longitudinal and Time-Density EM Waves

Today we know that some plasmas very often can produce a longitudinal EM wave from a transverse EM wave, and can produce a transverse EM wave from an input longitudinal EM wave. This was not known when the Priore team was performing its experimental work. However, it provides one method for producing and detecting longitudinal EM waves.

The Priore team in France unwittingly made longitudinal EM waves by inputing transverse EM waves into Priore's rotating plasma in a giant plasma tube (Figures 12 and 49).

- At the end of the project, Priore had developed a large unit to treat humans.
- A few were treated.
- Cures replicated what had been done in lab animals.
- The massive size of the unit and long treatment time (hours) made the process bulky and very inconvenient — and expensive.
- We proposed a way to do it with a suitcase-sized unit and a treatment time of two minutes.*

Giant coil around 12-ft long plasma tube
Pulsed DC Magnetic field
Table for reclining human body

*See *Porthole Briefing,* www.cheniere.org

Figure 49 Priore's large plasma tube installation in his 3-stories-high treatment facility for humans. Results obtained in animal experiments were also duplicated in human experiments.

Quantum Potentials and Multiply Connected Spacetime

It appears that a sufficiently clean longitudinal EM wave can be utilized to create a *quantum potential*, very similar to Bohm's notion, by iterative retroreflection between two phase conjugate reflectors. When sufficient *iterative self-targeting* occurs and persists, the waves eventually "snap in" and fully converge to laser-like beams without any energy divergence {97}. At that point, one has achieved an essentially "pure" LW, which has infinite velocity. For all practical purposes, there is then little or no difference between this wave and a quantum potential.

A pure longitudinal EM wave just "appears instantly" everywhere in space that it will be. It is already an element of a quantum potential. In this sense, all that a "quantum" potential is, is an ordinary scalar potential in which the composite EM longitudinal phase conjugate wavepairs really are pure longitudinal EM waves. It would seem that this also moves the gauge to the Coulomb gauge, so far as the potential is concerned. It follows that, by establishing significant and clean longitudinal EM wave contact between any two points via iterative retroreflections, one establishes a quantum potential if sufficient harmonics are established in the contact. The implications for "phase conjugate shooting" to go one step farther are obvious.

By "scanning" an area with the appropriate LW transmitter array, with deliberately imperfect LWs so that contact reaction occurs, and then decreasing the imperfections in the scanning by iterative retroreflection, it appears that a quantum potential can be created and connected between the transmitters and a desired distant region.

Essentially, in the case of pure longitudinal EM waves and quantum potentials, we must model the situation in terms of a *multiply connected spacetime*. The divergence-free waves are now pure longitudinal waves in one sense, and pure potential beams in another sense. In any case, the Coulomb gauge applies. As is well-known, the potential moves at infinite velocity in the Coulomb gauge.

Thus a single station can be connected by such a QP to any number of distant stations—by first "knitting them together" into a common multiply connected spacetime by iterative mutual LW self-targeting beams. It matters not if one or more distant station(s) is/are then moved beyond the star Sirius; the moment an energy signal appears in the initiating station, it is already instantly in each distant coupled station anywhere in the entire universe. There is no separation distance involved. Here *one no longer needs to propagate transverse EM wave energy painfully through space at the speed of light.* Instead, one is now dealing with multiply connected spacetime. One now has the instant appearance *in each and every distant coupled target* of the energy input into the single "transmitting" or "coupling" station. So the process is a startling and giant "energy amplification method" as should be expected from something that has infinite energy in the first place!

One vulnerability and disadvantage of a QP weapon is that, if the target is aware of one's coupling and also has QP technology, he can now immediately send back any energy form or "greetings" he wishes, from any one of his coupled targets. He can even do it inadvertently, without even knowing he has been coupled by a quantum potential. In other words, the QP provides a two-way street, if the target is aware of it and has the technology himself, *and even if he is unaware of it and does not have the technology.* For that reason, actual use of the QP weapon in strategic strikes requires caution and special considerations. Usually it requires very rapid single use and then cessation of any further usage.

Need for Caution with QPs Used Against Biological Organisms

Another QP weapon disadvantage is that rather extreme care must be rigidly exercised, particularly when linking living creatures. For living things, the QP is best utilized in the absolute minimum energy mode. E.g., *an extremely weak OP already links every member of the human species.* Suppose one increased that linkage intensity carelessly. Immediately the entire human race is in grave difficulty. Every death of a person feeds into every other living person. Every birth of a baby feeds into every living human. Even the fertilization of one **human** ova instantly feeds into all other ova. The integration of all those changes would totally disrupt—and instantly destroy—all human life on Earth. Since chimpanzees have very similar genetics to that of humans, all the chimps would probably die also. Other higher primates would also suffer or die, as would many other species.

What might be useful, of course, would be to use a QP to kill every smallpox, HIV, Ebola, and other dread disease pathogen on Earth. If so, it would first have to be made extraordinarily specific, else it could threaten all or most of the life on Earth.

A very useful adjunct would be to use a QP device to nearly instantly scrub and decontaminate (disinfect) an anthrax-contaminated large city—such as New York or Washington, D.C.—by instantly killing all the anthrax spores in that locality. Or to clean all the antibiotic-resistant staph pathogens out of U.S. hospitals by just killing them all instantly and periodically. Or to rid the Earth of necrotizing fasciitis—flesh eating disease pathogens.

An extremely localized QP could be used to connect with all HIV viruses and DNA inside an AIDS patient's own DNA. One could then kill the HIV viruses not yet integrated into the patient's cellular DNA. One could also time-reverse the patient's own HIV-infected DNA back to normal, effectively "removing" the HIV DNA already dumped into the patient's own infected cells. In theory, 100% of the HIV infection could be removed from the patient's body, restoring him or her to a completely HIV-free condition.

A Hypothetical Example

Suppose one arbitrarily increased the even weaker QP that presently joins all living things on Earth, regardless of species. Instantly every living thing on Earth would die, and the Earth would be instantly converted to a sterile planet.

Even though *physically embodied* life was gone, however, all the forms of those species would remain in spacetime activity, their vacuum engines—for both minds and bodies—forever embedded in the local potentials and fields of the material Earth. In other words, the Earth's potentials and the local spacetime potential would still be *dimensioned* and *conditioned* for the life forms that once moved upon it in physical form. The dimensioning and conditioning (engines) for every life form that ever lived on the Earth *exists now* at every point in the Earth and in the local spacetime. With proper application of energetics, in theory it is possible to recover any of these life forms desired, back into living form.

When one understands that environmental aspect, one understands why the Miller-Fox-Urey biogenesis experiments {108,109,110} (Figure 50) would still produce living organisms again. A *physically* dead planet or test flask is not necessarily a "completely dead" planet or flask, when one considers the presence of spacetime engines and dimensioned potentials. One recalls that these forms and engines contain not only physical forms, but also the mind-aspects and the mind/body coupling and dynamics aspects as well.

In short, the entire biochemical notion of biogenesis from truly inert matter devoid of any form of life or pattern of life appears to be a false premise. Since potentials reach to the end of the universe, then any structured potential structures *(dimensions)* the universal vacuum potential everywhere in the universe {111}. The Miller-Fox-Urey experiments were not performed in a truly "sterile" environment after all, when the new energetics is considered {112}. One realizes that the entire universe is alive; the mere presence of a single living microbe or other form anywhere establishes an entire living noosphere. The Russian researchers—such as Kaznacheyev {113}— into EM induction of disease in targeted cells at a distance also realized that biology included a noosphere, and it could be engineered.

- Engines of and from all life forms ever on earth or in the universe exist in the ambient vacuum potential.
- The Miller-Fox-Urey experiments were not in a "sterile" environment.
- Heat (IR) and UV constitute (1) a harmonic interval with a difference frequency, and (2) amplifying by the process previously shown.
- These experiments "kindled" previously living forms from the available gases etc. by amplifying the ancient living engines from their virtual state to the observable state, so that the masses were molded into the physical states of their templates.

Typical Biogenesis Experiments
To spark coil
Electrode
Sparking
Organic molecules
Gas molecules
Condenser
Gaseous mixture of ammonia, methane, carbon dioxide, hydrogen, and water vapor
Boiling water

Figure 50 Typical Miller-Fox-Urey biogenesis experimental apparatus.

Herman Kahn, then director of the Hudson Institute (a leading think tank), once remarked that it did not concern him that there existed mechanisms that would destroy all physical life on earth. Instead, he stated, it concerned him that he know almost 200 such mechanisms. The quantum potential weaponry is yet another doomsday weapon with a thousand lethal mechanisms to add to Kahn's list, were he still with us.

The QP Weapon Is a Superb Energy Amplifier "For Free"

In a multiply connected spacetime established between multiple separated (to the observer) stations, one can instantly input one megawatt of power into *every distant stution* by inputting it into a single station. Suppose that coupling station is coupled via QP to one million distant stations (scattered anywhere in the universe). Then in each distant coupled station there now instantly appears one megawatt of power, even though we have input only a single megawatt in our "transmitter" coupled station. This is a superb *one-on-many weapon system and energy amplifier*—perhaps the ultimate weapon system.[30]

AS an analogy for understanding, one can look at it this way. Put a dot (point) on a piece of paper. Mathematics tells us that an indefinite number of other points can be "superposed" directly on that original point. Now input some "energy" into the original point. It instantly appears in each and every other superposed point. That is precisely the way a quantum potential linkage between stations works, except that in normal singly-connected 3-space the points are *observed* by a normal observer to be widely separated. Aristotelian logic—which is an "either/or" logic—does not apply. Instead, a higher topology logic applies.[31]

---

[30] However, we should not be loo surprised at such "astonishing" effects, once we appreciate that with the quantum potential and pure longitudinal waves one is playing with infinite energy anyway.

The QP weapon can be used with microwatt input to induce low-level disease states or pre-disease states *(shadow disease states)* (Figure 51) in entire populations. Tests done in this fashion will violate the "vector carrier" aspect of infectious disease transmission. Instead, the tests will cause a few widely spaced nearly simultaneously cases of the disease being tested. Several such tests (e.g., with necrotizing fasciitis) have already been conducted in the populace of the United States.

MAGNITUDE OF
STRESS EFFECT
Observable state
Immune
system
reacts
BODY
Local cellular
changes
(electrical,
chemical,
physical)
ELECTRICAL,
CHEMICAL,
AND PHYSICAL
STRESS
T4
Physical Threshold
Pre-physical
change state
T3
Quantum Level
Virtual state
Inner EM System
Stress
T2
T1
"Shadow disease
state" when
immune system
reacts
SEPARATION FROM CONTACT POINT
Most stressed
location

Figure 51 The shadow disease state is that structured virtual state level of the promoting disease engine template, at which the immune system reacts.

Or a QP weapon can be used with megawatt or gigawatt input to blast multiple distant targets simultaneously. One may destroy, e.g., every single transmitter of a given type. Or one may instantly kill all ships and weapons and paraphernalia in a large naval task force steaming toward its target. Or if one wishes to take the ships and equipment, the weapon can just kill all the humans instantly in that task force. ICBM sites, e.g., are vulnerable and obsolete since 1990 to any nation possessing QP weapons. So are underwater nuclear submarines and long-range strategic bombers. The entire strategic and tactical armada we have built up so painfully over the decades is obsoleted—also meaning *countered*—by any enemy possessing sufficiently advanced energetics weapons, and particularly quantum potential weapons.

---

[31] We developed such a logic years ago, and have recently included **it** in *Energy from the* ***Vacuum*** 2002, *ibid.*

Other Novel Uses of QP Weapons

If an enemy has such QP weapons and you do not, you are easily and directly destroyed at will, once certain other deterrents are overcome. One of these previous deterrents that had to be overcome was the stability of nuclear weapons in our nuclear arsenal. To remove this stability and render them easily destroyed, the holder of a scalar interferometry capability could induce sudden massive fissioning and fusioning of many of the targeted onsite weapons if the scalar potential interferometers were used massively. However, the resulting tremendous nuclear explosions—many "in the dirt and dirty"—would also unacceptably damage the attacker. Further, major antagonists usually clandestinely introduced hidden nuclear weapons into the cities and target areas of their opponents, which practice was known as "dead man fuzing." The notion was that, even if one side suddenly destroyed the other, that destroyed side could still detonate its secret nuclear weapons hidden in the attacker's homeland territory, destroying him as well. In essence, the killed side (the "dead man") had set off the fuzing of his pre-planted weapons, to destroy the attacker even though the "dead man" was already dead.

One strong reason that the Russians pursued the quantum potential weapon so strongly was precisely because it offered a mechanism to solve this "dead-man fuzing" problem, removing it as a viable deterrent. Obviously it would be quite advantageous to be able to dud or destroy these hostile weapons in one's very midst, even though one did not know their locations, and pull the fangs of the dead-man fuzing installed by one's opponent.

There appear to be ways of directly connecting a QP, e.g., to every atomic nucleus of a given type, in a given region (say, in a region consisting of on the surface of the Earth, in the Earth to some depth, in nearby space, on the surface of the ocean, and beneath the ocean). Connection can be made, e.g., to every U235 nucleus and to every weapons grade plutonium nucleus. Or with the technology developed, the users ought to be able to make such connection only between certain pre-selected *localized amounts* of U235 nuclei or plutonium nuclei.

Now suppose that such a QP is established between weapon-sized groups of U235 atoms. Then one hits one U235 nucleus in such a group in an activator station with a neutron bullet. Voila! One simultaneously hits every other linked U235 atom (including the activator station—one just blew it to smithereens if it contained very many U235 nuclei) in such weapon-sized groups. The raw U235 in ores in nature is still okay if the ore contained only tiny traces of U235 nuclei. But all the "neutron-struck" fissionable nuclei in nuclear weapons worldwide—regardless of owner or location—fission in the weapons immediately. That destroys all the nuclear weapons on Earth—including the clandestine nuclear weapons that various nations have spirited into other nations perceived to be their enemies, as a "checkmate" against sudden surprise attack. *One* does not need to know where a weapon is at all.

However, it gets all the weapons by exploding them, and that itself could create a giant nuclear destruction and fallout problem that would probably do in most life on earth because a great many nuclear weapons will have exploded "in the dirt and dirty." In short, it is an entirely unacceptable solution to the dead-man fuzing problem.

Of course, no *sane* enemy would wish to use the QP in such fashion, because it is quite suicidal for him and essentially destroys civilization. But suppose the sane enemy is well aware of the exact nature of the new cold type nuclear reactions (we explained these in an initial rough paper given in August 1998 at an Energy conference in Utah). The energy initiating these "time-reversed" nuclear reactions starts from "inside" the nucleons in the nucleus and moves outward (that is true of any "reversed" zone).

- Via quantum potential joining U235 and Plutonium in warheads
- Includes weapons airborne, underwater, in storage
- Transmutations of the nuclides themselves
- Part of the initial barrage launched by Aum/Yakuza/KGB
- Will occur in the first minutes (10) of the strategic strike, following psychoenergetically crew-disabling QP weapons

Note: Duds both overt and covert nuclear weapons and weapons-grade materials -- including "suitcase-delivered" covert weapons on site in Russia which otherwise provide dead man fuzing

Figure 52 Simultaneous dudding of nuclear weapons worldwide. Also duds nuclear reactors and nuclear propulsion systems.

Direct *isomeric transmutation* then becomes a preferred decay reaction to induce in the nuclear weapons one wishes to dud. By gradually inducing (slowly "kindling") one of these transmutation reactions, one can just "transmute" the U235 to—say—an isomer such as U238, with some readjustment and energy balancing in the ensuing rebalancing decay processes. In that way, one gets no nuclear explosions. One can even choose the transformation or several successive transformations so as to minimize any resulting nuclear radiation. The attacker also destroys all the nuclear reactors, including those in civilian power plants, nuclear submarines, and elsewhere. But he gets just about all the nuclear weapons if he transforms both U235 and plutonium (Figure 52). In about 10 minutes he will dud them all, without any nuclear explosions, but he would probably allow about one hour "just for good measure and nearly 100% certainty."

This offered the Soviets the ideal solution to the worrisome hostile nuclear arsenals of the world, since they also had additional nonnuclear strategic weapons of a different kind and of great power.

Apparently that very kind of QP weapon became operational, on site in Russia, circa 1989 under KGB control. For the first time, it provided the KGB with a guaranteed solution to the nuclear dead-man fuzing problem that had until then prevented its massive use of the scalar potential interferometers (such as in 1985-1986 as originally envisioned by Brezhnev).

By almost simultaneously leasing the earlier scalar interferometer weapons to **the** Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo at the end of 1989, the KGB obtained an influx of vast new funds {114}. It thus concentrated even more intensely on the more advanced energetics weapons such as QP weapons and psychoenergetics weapons {115}.

So with a QP weapon one can attack multitudes of targets, using a single "coupler" or "transmitter," all without "propagating the EM energy through 3-s**pace."** Further, with the technology developed, only the number of outrigger stations coupled limits the energy amplification achievable. One can alter matter at any level, from the quarks in the protons and neutrons in the nucleus, to the lattice bonds, to the molecular bonds, etc. Or one can structure the emerging energy (that emerges directly out of the local spacetime itself), so that *structured local spacetime curvatures* (engines) appear in the target zone(s). These ST engines can be generated so as to perform macroscopic functions against real systems—e.g., jamming electronics, as against the U.S. air attack on Libya in April 1986 (Figure 25), or as was done by a longitudinal EM wave interferometer in the attack and kill of the U.S.S. Thresher (Figure 6) in April 1963 {116}.

The U.S. Narrowly Escaped Destruction Twice in 1997 Alone

On two occasions in 1997 the United States would have been utterly destroyed by the die-hard faction of the KGB, except for direct countering by a friendly little foreign nation. The present author and three colleagues played a very minor role by alerting that nation to the impending attacks. There was certainly no reason to contact officials of our own country; the U.S. was and is powerless to prevent such attacks, although *hopefully* that is changing! It made much better sense contact the only nation that could possibly avert our impending disaster. Of course we later also informed proper U.S. government officials of our actions.

The first strategic attack was scheduled for between early to mid-February, and involved (1) dudding all nuclear weapons, (2) striking the QP weapons in the little nation simultaneously, as well as extant scalar interferometer weapon sites in other foreign nations, and (3) then leisurely blasting cities, facilities, and installations with iterative and continued scalar interferometer strikes. This third phase would include work assigned to the Yakuza/Aum Shinrikyo teams. That is how the Yakuza (and Aum Shinrikyo) expected to revenge themselves for the Western defeat of Japan in WWII, and for the West's dropping the atomic bomb on Nagasaki and Hiroshima. To be able to "get in on the kill" is why the Aum Shinrikyo and Yakuza leased the scalar (longitudinal EM wave) interferometers from the Russians in the first place {117}.

These, along with negative energy EMP weapons, are the kind of energetics weaponry that now determines our fate, and against which the U.S. presently has still inadequate defenses. Our own scientific community does not believe such weapons even exist—apparently due to the "not-invented-here" syndrome. Most of the U.S. scientific community is thus relatively useless and outdated as far as contributing to the strategic survival of the United States is concerned.

Purpose of the Novel Attack on Captain Button

Hopefully, some scientists are aware of the strange incident that involved the mental seizure of Captain Button in his A-10 (Figure 22) and controlling him for well over an hour (Figure 23), including controlling his perceptions, intent, and actions while performing complex technical tasks. That was the test of a KGB *psychoenergetics* weapon, developing and to be deployed by the KGB. That was the "acceptance test", so to speak—deliberately conducted over the United States—for the KGB's system that would be produced in numbers sufficient to counter the QP weaponry, if the QPs of the little friendly nation were to be placed in the insane command and control mode. This was yet another Soviet counter, planned for the near future against the counter by which the little nation did force abortion of the KGB second attack (scheduled for May 1) in 1997.

The purpose of the attack on Captain Button can be understood as follows: The later second scheduled strategic attack on the U.S.—scheduled for May 1, 1997—was forcibly aborted after the friendly defending nation switched to an *insane* command and control mode. The insane C3 mode counters the MindSnapper type attack that instantly kills all on-site operators and renders the sites too "hot" for new personnel to come in from outside and control it. In short, the U.S. could have been destroyed in that scheduled May 1 attack, but with the change of the friendly QP weapons to insane C3, Russia would also have perished in the immediate quantum potential counterblow from the little nation[32] that would have been automatically delivered by the site weapons themselves. The May 1 attack had been predicated upon the fact that a preliminary MindSnapper (negative energy EMP) attack on the friendly QP weapon sites would have instantly killed all persons on site,[33] and neutralized the site for some months because of the resulting longitudinal EM radiation. However, the shift of the C3 of the QP weapons to insane mode rendered such a pre-emptive MindSnapper attack totally ineffective because Russia would still have been destroyed.

---

[32] There are also variations. As an example, the insane C3 can also include a separate channel requiring a countering "punch in" code every 15 minutes (as in a heightened alert status) or the control system will order the launch initiation (this accepts that all on site personnel have now been suddenly killed). So the insane control system is also flexible, and many variations and considerations are possible.

Hence another countering means was required, and in fact that additional system was already in development. It was a very sophisticated array of psychoenergetic weapons, each with a special, highly trained team of operators capable of fully controlling one targeted individual while he was directed and controlled to go about performing desired technical tasks. We estimate that it required one psychoenergetic weapon (very complex, multiple transmitters) and an operator team of perhaps 20 to 30 skilled operators (one for each major human function to be controlled) to adequately control the mind and actions of one distant person performing quite technical tasks. Hence several hundred such "weapon sets" were required to take over all persons on the targeted QP weapons sites in the friendly nation, have the controlled crews deactivate the QP weapons including using the security code and procedures to standdown for maintenance, etc.

Once the QP weapons were totally on standdown, then the MindSnapper would have struck suddenly and killed every living thing on site, neutralizing the site for several months due to subsequent strong longitudinal EM wave emissions from the struck site. No new crews could have entered the site and lived, so the sites could not be operated after MindSnapping, even though the QP weapons were still intact but just on standby. Of course, a third phase then would have involved strikes by scalar EM interferometers to leisurely and completely destroy the systems and sites, permanently taking out the physical system as well.[34] With the first two of that three-part series of strikes completed successfully, then the KGB weapon sites would have been absolutely free to blast North America and our European allies into smoking ruins, leisurely and at will, given the first 10 minutes of dudding all nuclear warheads worldwide, to take care of that old type of "dead man fuzing".

From the open reports of the Button incident, and from the kill of Captain Svoboda a few weeks later, the nature of the next strategic attack that would be scheduled was immediately apparent. Accordingly, we warned the little nation about the shift to a new attack plan, and estimated the new schedule between mid - 1999 and the first of 2000. Of course, we also passed that information on to our government as well, but apparently, no one believed it. The proper U.S. intelligence agencies, however, certainly intercepted my faxes to the little nation's Military Attache in Washington D.C., and particularly my fax a few days before May 1, sent directly to the Prime Minister of that nation and urging the change to an insane command and control system for the QP weapons and the reason why.

---

[33] We point out that it required a longer time to develop the more powerful negative energy EMP weapons capable of just destroying the sites, personnel and all. The first effective weapons of that type could easily kill personnel brains, nervous systems, and hearts while still doing little damage to the much more robust *QP* systems and on site equipment.

[34] We strongly believe there are shielding provisions at those sites, against scalar interferometry attacks, which reduces their effectiveness and delays their destructiveness. However, so far this analyst has not deciphered those shielding methods or mechanisms.

It turned out that, some months after I alerted them to the coming psychoenergetics, MindSnapper, and scalar interferometry attack in that order, to be scheduled between mid-to-end of 1999, apparently the friendly nation suddenly struck and utterly destroyed the KGB facilities for the MindController negative energy EMP weapons being painfully built up in sufficient number. Probably scalar interferometry weapons were used to destroy them. The onsite psychoenergetics crews and facilities were destroyed and neutralized completely.

Anyway, as we passed mid-1999, the type of "Y2K" problem we were worrying about was whether or not the attack was on, headlined by a psychoenergetics weapon strike on the little nation first, with the three phases as previously scheduled back in 1997.

Later, in early 1999 I realized the Russian/KGB development of the causal system robots (Figure 10), mentioned in the introduction. In the latter part of the third quarter of the year, working at my computer at night, I was struck by one of these very beasts from within my computer (Figure 20), in very bizarre but unmistakable fashion (previously detailed). In 10 seconds I was nearly killed and severely disabled for a period of time (it took four days to recover completely). Because of the features deliberately utilized by the CSR on my computer screen so I would recognize it, I grasped the nature of the attack (the KGB *wanted* me to recognize it, and live to tell about it!), how it was done, how it jammed the brain and vision center and strongly fibrillated the heart, upset the equilibrium, etc. I also realized that, in 20 seconds or so additional exposure, I would have been a very dead person, expiring with a very violent heart attack and severe brain embolisms. Note that the CSR deliberately struck directly from the computer screen through my retinas and onto the nervous system, passing through the vision center and flashing it tremendously, and jamming my mind, brain, and nervous system.

When I recovered shakily about four days later, I notified the small nation, once again, as best I could, giving the exact symptoms of the attack and explaining what it was. By then I knew what was coming down, the form it would take, and the deceptive cover (Y2K uncorrected errors!).

The little nation then quickly proceeded to search out—apparently *inside* the North American signals, potentials, fields, and waves "superhighways" for the CSRs—all the CSRs and destroy them in place. It turns out to be a fairly straightforward operation, once one possesses advanced longitudinal EM wave interferometry weapons and techniques. Locating a "very dense" and very dynamic set of LWs performing organized functions is analogous to a normal radar locating a large bomber in cloud cover. One "burst" from the LW "radar," and the targeted CSR is completely disrupted and electronically destroyed.

So a very short (lasting a few days) and strange strategic battle was fought in infolded space or subspace, inside our electrical and electrical systems and inside the fields, potentials, and waves in them. A mighty attacking armada of perhaps several million main battle systems was intercepted and destroyed throughout our homeland, without the slightest notice by our own government, scientific, and intelligence communities. And without a whimper of what is usually recognized as "combat actions".

Afterwards, a very simple and innocuous little message was received which, reading between the lines, simply meant "thank you very much." In short, my hard-pressed colleagues and I got a small "Attaboy!" for our role in alerting the friendly nation.

So Y2K and the Millennium Celebration came, while we waited to see if the CSRs were gone or if they would erupt with damage all over the U.S. Fortunately, they were gone like popping balloons, and so the *fourth* scheduled strategic attack upon the U.S. in the space of three years—this time actually launched—was successfully destroyed.

Whatever I can do to help the survival of my country I will continue to do without hesitation, regardless of whether the U.S. scientific, intelligence, and military communities are aware of the new threat or not, and regardless of whether they believe it or not. Presently our fate and that of the Western world rests on the shoulders of a small but advanced and friendly nation. That is beginning to change, it seems, but still not swiftly enough to suit our needs.

We simply must change all that, by developing QP weapons and defenses ourselves. It is not an option; as an example, China has now finished—as of earlier 2002—and deployed QP weapons. Almost simultaneously, China also finished and deployed the more powerful negative energy EMP (MindSnapper-type but much more powerful) weapons and deployed them as well. So we have entered a very dangerous period when the strategic changes that are likely to occur will be both massive and traumatic.

AS this is being written in early October 2002, it is obvious that our nation is also preparing to strike Iraq if need be, either with a coalition effort or alone. If so, then Saddam Hussein will certainly unleash whatever terrorist forces he has in North America. He will attempt to unleash upon us all the weapons of mass destruction at his command. This could even happen within the next 30 days, with the MidEast exploding, giant polarization of the Arab world, general chaos in the MidEast and upset of world oil supplies, and skyrocketing fuel and energy costs with severe impact upon the already seriously ailing U.S. stock market.

If Saddam Hussein succeeds in doing sufficient damage to our cities and energy infrastructure with more weapons of mass destruction than we have credited him with, then the potential economic collapse of the United States and much of the developed world is an uncomfortable possibility. If that happens, turf wars will erupt all over the world, the world economy may collapse, the KGB and rogue Japanese (Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo) will move and unleash further destruction, Pakistan and India are likely to erupt into a nuclear war, and several other regions may also erupt into nuclear war and use weapons of mass destruction. What China might do in such event is anybody's guess.

In short, the Armageddon we have so long feared, with the resulting collapse or destruction of much of civilization, could well be approaching. Let us hope that dark picture is terribly, terribly wrong, and that we successfully avoid Armageddon one more time!

Meanwhile, we would be in much better shape to weather the coming storm had our scientific community not grossly betrayed us. But if and when millions of Americans are dying in the streets with no effective means of treatment, and no effective defenses to prevent onslaught after onslaught against our nation, all those deaths and all that suffering will be directly the fault of our own organized scientific community.

Rogue Japanese (Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo) Have a Role

In the information briefing furnished the previously named agencies, we briefly detailed the elements of the attack, how our own nuclear weaponry can be dudded anywhere, etc.

We also detailed the strange role of the Japanese Yakuza and the Aum Shinrikyo, who leased the operational use of the early generations of KGB longitudinal wave interferometry weapons in 1990 directly from the KGB. The first down payment on the lease was $900 million. I previously furnished pertinent information on this to an investigative U.S. Government agency. Since then, the Yakuza have set up their own scalar interferometry weapons development facilities in Japan, including portable energetics weapons,[35] and have assumed a very secret and nearly unsuspected role somewhat similar to Bin Laden's role in the attacks of September 11, 2001—but much more deadly when the coming Armageddon erupts.

Inducing the Gulf War Disease

In 1986, the Russians had already solved the dead man fuzing problem theoretically, but had not yet completed the development and deployment of the necessary QP weaponry. The KGB's first "combat demonstration" test of the **ability** to localize a QP in a selected region of space was against the U.S. air attack on Libya in 1986. That test apparently used a laboratory apparatus to prove the process. In short, it was a major milestone whose success moved the system into full production engineering and production. The system was then developed at very high speed after the successful demonstration in 1986. The first strategic KGB QP weapon(s) became operational on site in latter 1989.

---

[35] We strongly suspect some of these portable weapons have already been infiltrated into the United States—e.g., to be used against nuclear power plants and other lucrative targets such as refineries, oil fields, etc.

It was this QP weapon that was used to generate the so-called *Gulf War Disease* in our soldiers in the MidEast. In the action package, I explained precisely how that was done. I have also finally placed the simplified gist of that explanation openly on the Internet for all to see (website www.cheniere.org). Those suffering U.S. veterans were *casualties of war,* not victims of just nerve gas whiffs or chemicals or their own stress, etc. The initial U.S. Government and U.S. scientific community's assertion that "it was all in their heads" and due to stress, insults every veteran who has ever served his nation. One justifiably has contempt for such treatment of our veterans. Sadly, the latest "studies" are **beginning** to conclude the same thing once again.

Apparently our intelligence and military command agencies have not yet learned t**he** lesson of the decades long Soviet microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, which was responsible for health changes of many kinds in U.S. personnel and was also responsible for the deaths of three U.S. Ambassadors to the Soviet Union. Apparently we are still using radar engineers and electrical engineers for electrodynamics analysis, and these analysts apparently still believe that in the absence of the EM fields there can be no induced EM effects. One sadly comments that, just as the electrical engineering departments of our universities have been unable to walk across the campus to the particle physics department and find out what the discovery of broken symmetry in 1957 portends for their discipline and model, then the intelligence community apparently has not yet learned that no EM analysis of such things as the microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow or the shootdown of the TWA-800 is worth a tinker's dam unless it is a higher group symmetry EM analysis. As Barrett showed, our fellows still have not grasped what Nikola Tesla already accomplished in actual patented circuits circa 1900 and shortly thereafter. Tensor analysis and vector analysis simply will not show what is really there.

Our veterans were hit with a "cocktail mix" of specialized disease "spacetime curvature engines" just below the observable threshold, in the "shadow" (virtual, but nearly observable) state[36] (Figure 53). The immune systems and the cellular regenerative systems do react to that shadow state level.

---

[36] One should think deeply about this, in terms of the solution to the source charge problem (which our engineers have not thought of very much, much less solved). Every charge already "engineers" the virtual stale at will, converting virtual energy into deterministic observable EM energy. That means we can directly engineer the virtual state vacuum itself if we put our minds to it. **Actually** Nobelist Lee has already pointed out that we have *not even tried to do this!* See T. D.

RESOURCES FOR DISEASE #1
RESOURCES FOR DISEASE #2
RESOURCES FOR DISEASE #3
RESOURCES FOR DISEASE #20
Immune system reacts to all 20 pre-disease conditions
Observable state
quantum level
Virtual state
Immune system reaction level
Interferometer or quantum potential weapons put in the disease templates for 20 diseases, deliberately kept in the "shadow state" magnitude

Figure 53 Spreading (thinning) the immune system's ability available to meet a new pathogen.

Such a "simultaneous mix" shadow induction "spreads" the reacting *finite* immune system and regenerative system (Figure 53) and their resources all across that entire mix of shadow diseases, so that only a much smaller portion of the immune system and of the regenerative system is directed against *any one* of the shadow diseases. This in turn greatly heightens (by a factor of 5 or more) the susceptibility of the body to all additional disease pathogens, and it greatly lowers the ability of the body to recover from any disease or biological warfare strike. In addition, the exposed veteran's body fluids and masses have accumulated a persistent "time-density charging" that very slowly decays (by emission of weak *longitudinal* EM waves) over months or even a few years.[37] The sperm from these veterans did indeed have the innate "engines" and therefore the capability to gradually infect their wives. So did the saliva in their mouths. The weak "dimensioned" LW radiation from their bodies could also slowly alter the cellular regeneration and immune systems of their family members in close proximity, over a period of time, thus inducing the disease in them {118,119,120}.

Lee, *Particle Physics and Introduction to Field Theory,* Harwood, New York, 1981, in his "Chapter 25: Outlook: Possibility of Vacuum Engineering," p. 824-828. On p. 383 Lee points out that the microstructure of the scalar vacuum field (i.e., of vacuum charge) *is not utilized.* We add that the West does not utilize it. It has been utilized for some decades in the former Soviet Union and now in the continuing KGB energetics and bioenergetics weapons programs.

[37] See T. D. Lee, "Can Time Be a Discrete Dynamical Variable?." *Phys. Lett.,* 122B(3,4), Mar. 10, 1983, p.217-220.

The induction of GWS in our troops was in fact a test for the *present* clandestine use—already ongoing—of that technique to spread the immune and regenerative systems of the targeted U.S. population. This in turn gradually makes us more susceptible to terrorist BW attacks and disease pathogens of all types *from anyone else.* This tactic is already in place and accomplished, and it will substantially increase the American civilian casualties in our cities when they are subjected to terrorist BW attacks in the near future. *Those attacks now will have some five times the effectiveness that our present planners estimate.* In short, it is going to insure the deaths of millions more Americans. The approaching war in the MidEast, with Saddam Hussein's unleashing of his terrorist assets in the U.S. to the maximum extent possible, thus will probably see a five-fold increase in the effectiveness of some of his mass destruction weapons that Hussein's assets are able to unleash on America.

The entire affair of the Gulf War Disease was both a preliminary test and also a magnificent intelligence probe by the KGB, to clearly demonstrate once again that the U.S. Government and the U.S. scientific community are still nearly totally unknowledgeable of QP weaponry, immune and regenerative system "spreading," disease induction by bioenergetics means, etc. It follows a methodology used with great success for four decades by the KGB,[38] and one that our own government, scientific community, and military community has yet to decipher. *So long as the threat only slowly increases, Americans remain complacent in their ignorance, ignoring the boa constrictor slowly strangling them, while awaiting the cobra seen in the distance?*[9] We have unwittingly cooperated with the KGB boa constrictor for four decades, even as it slowly prepared to crush us. In the Gulf War, that crushing moved to the next threshold, to actually inflict casualties and deaths on U.S. troops and totally get away with it because of the bioenergetics (in the Russian sense) ineptness of the U.S. scientific community.

---

[38] The decades-long microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy and induction of health changes and diseases, was a case in point. A high level target—the U.S. Ambassador—was involved, guaranteeing U.S. Government attention at the highest level. Puzzled, the U.S. government would then call in their most trusted EM scientific analysis groups. By the responsive actions then taken by **the U.**S. at the Embassy, the KGB could ascertain with absolute certainty whether or not our scientists knew of the use of infolded engines in bioenergetics. For more than four decades our actions assured them with 100% certainty that we knew nothing of what their "information content of the field and potential" actually was, or how it had been weaponized and was being used right in front of our faces and before the entire world.

[39] It is bizarre that our scientific community—even after those decades of EM induction of diseases and health changes in American personnel in the U.S. Embassy in Moscow—*still do not and cannot believe that conditioned EM radiation can induce cellular disease.* Such total blindness is inexplicable.

40-Years of Russian Induction of Diseases In U.S. Embassy Personnel

Sadly, our own fellows have never even figured out how the diseases and health changes were previously induced by the KGB for decades in personnel in the former American Embassy in Moscow. Three U.S. Ambassadors to the Soviet Union died as a result of their exposure to that radiation. Many other Americans on site were made ill or suffered health changes.

When Johns Hopkins scientists studied the problem, they found a most anomalous thing: no health changes occurred in areas *where the EM forcefields existed* in the microwave radiation. Instead, the health changes only occurred in areas where the potentials were gradient free so that the force fields were zero—and thus the potentials (and their specific internal "engines") were *persistent.* Using only a classical EM force field analysis—which does not show any of the internal longitudinal EM wave substructuring of the fields, potentials, and waves—the Johns Hopkins scientists erroneously concluded that it could not have been the weak microwave radiation causing the health difficulties, *because no such health difficulties occurred where the forcefields were present.* That is, they very naively assumed that "no force fields" meant no EM effects were possible. Their entire findings thus were based on a total non sequitur, the assumption that there can be no electromagnetically induced physical changes in matter in the absence of fields! The Aharonov-Bohm effect alone falsifies that entire premise. So does general relativity and higher group symmetry electrodynamics.

Actually, the Johns Hopkins scientists had just clearly proven the exact opposite: *that it indeed was the radiation that induced the health changes.* That is simply shown statistically, and it is a deep and continuing mystery how good scientists and their governmental overwatch did not notice the violation of inference methodology.

Simply put, there was 100 percent correlation to the presence of *gradient free EM potentials— the persistent kind.* There was zero correlation (or 100% anticorrelation) to the presence of the normal electric and magnetic fields—i.e., where the potentials changed over a very small region of space. Hence it could *only* have been the constant potentials, else we must throw out statistical inference theory altogether.

If the changes had *not* been caused by the EM radiation at all, one would have had some health changes in regions where fields were present and some health changes where the fields were absent. Considering the lengthy time the radiation persisted and the number of personnel affected, the statistics are decisive. Without question, the cause was indeed the persistent potentials where the **force** fields were zero. Whittaker's two papers—one in 1903 and the other in 1904- would then show how it was done. The 1904 paper and superpotential theory alone would *not* have explained it, since that alone does not include the "information content of the field"—i.e., spacetime curvature engines infolded inside the normal EM potentials, fields, and waves.

So, the U.S. government and U.S. scientific community "botched it badly," unfortunately, by elemental statistical inference standards. And unfortunately, they have continued to "botch it" to this day. Both the scientific community and the intelligence community missed it. Elementary statistics theory alone, coupled with the Johns Hopkins results, clearly indicates that the microwave radiation was causing the health changes, to a very high degree of confidence.

This demonstrates how "totally inexplicable" some of the effects generated by longitudinal EM wave interferometry and by "structured" or dimensioned potentials, fields, and waves can seem to our conventional scientists. If we examine the serious foundations flaws in classical electrodynamics and electrical engineering taught in our universities, and the near-total lack of higher group symmetry electrodynamics training, we can understand why our scientists and intelligence analysts did not and do not have the background required to properly assess the incidents and effects.

Western Electrodynamics Is in Sad Shape

Actually, numerous scientists have long pointed this out. For example, quoting Mario Bunge {121}: *"...it is not usually acknowledged that electrodynamics, both classical and quantal, are in a sad state."*

In quantum electrodynamics, it is the *potentials* that are the primary causes of all electromagnetic phenomena, not the force fields as used by Johns Hopkins and the Government in its analysis. We know that classical EM is wrong in its focus upon force fields as primary EM causes; the Aharonov-Bohm effect, Berry phase, and geometric phase work in some 20,000 papers in the physics literature already show that. Indeed, we also know that the classical force fields do not even exist apart from mass; in space, only the potential for such a force field exists, in case some charged matter is brought in to interact with the EM entity as it exists in mass-free space (as curvatures of spacetime).

The Aharonov-Bohm effect and its implications have been published in *Physical Review*—our most prestigious physics journal—since 1959. Later publications have included the Berry phase extension of the AB effect, and Aharonov and Anandan's further extension of the Berry phase to what is today called the geometric *phase.* The potentials are indeed the primary EM causes, and *the force fields do not even exist as such in mass-free space, but only in mass.* Yet our classical EM taught in our universities has not been changed in its fundamental acceptance of the material ether since 1865.

Every university in America is still teaching and defending a rather mangled electrodynamics where

(1) The material ether is still assumed, even though destroyed more than a

century ago by the Michelson-Morley experiments;

(2) The force fields are erroneously assumed to exist in massfree space, but in force-free form(!!!) when what actually exists there as an EM disturbance is a general relativistic perturbation of spacetime (i.e., an oscillation of the local curvature of spacetime). Actually, force identically is the time rate of change of momentum, where momentum is mass times velocity. Thus mass is a *component* of force and force field. There is no force or force field without mass. As Feynman put it, there is no force field in massless space; instead, there is only the potential for such a force field to be formed at the various points, should a charged mass be placed at (added to) each of them;

(3) The source charges are erroneously assumed to *create* their fields and potentials and all that energy in them, reaching across the entire universe from each and every charge, right out of nothing at all. This perpetual motion and creation of energy error continues even though particle physics has known (and proven, both theoretically and experimentally) that any charge (as a set of composite dipoles, when the charge is taken with its clustering virtual charges of opposite sign) is a broken symmetry in its fierce energy exchange with the vacuum. Hence the charge extracts that energy in its fields and potentials *from the active vacuum,* and outputs the extracted energy across space {122}.

Our own electrodynamicists and electrical engineering professors and departments would have us believe - and they continue to imply such in every university in America—that every charge is a perpetual motion machine clearly in violation of the master energy conservation dictum that *energy can neither be created nor destroyed.* The complete lack of scientific understanding that every charge extracts energy from the vacuum and freely and continuously pours it out as real observable EM energy, is reflected in rather silly "witch-hunts" {123} against electrical systems which exhibit more energy output than the operator himself inputs—i.e., systems which exhibit a coefficient of performance (COP) of COP>1.0, which are open EM systems far from equilibrium in their active environmental exchange.

Let us reason together! If the second law of thermodynamics really did prohibit COP>1.0 *electrical* systems, then it also would prohibit the demonstrated COP = oo of a solar cell array. It would also prohibit the demonstrated COP>1.0 *mechanical* systems such as a windmill, waterwheel, or sailboat—all of which have COP = oo! In other words, the second law cannot even be a law if it discriminates only one type of energy prohibited from being used for COP> 1.0,

For some inexplicable reason, EM COP>1.0 systems have come to be dogmatically labeled "perpetual motion machines" by the professional skeptics since EM systems must take their excess energy from the known active vacuum environment! In short, the dogmatic scientific community is saying that "windmill-type EM systems" with COP = oo are permissible for exchanges with *physically active and observable* environments (such as the sunlight used in solar cells, the heat in the air used in heat pumps, the water currents used hydroelectric power plants, the winds used in windmill power generation, etc.), but they are not permissible for exchanges with the proven modern active vacuum *virtual particle flux energy* environment, even though the discovery of **broken** symmetry in 1957 already proves that all EM energy is indeed freely taken from the seething vacuum environment by the asymmetry of the modern dipolarity of the source charge! We refer the interested reader to the proven broken symmetry of opposite charges {124}. We also refer the reader to Nobelist T. D. Lee's statement applicable to the skeptics' naive notion of symmetry. Finally, in modern physics all the major forces of nature are generated by the exchange of virtual particles. It is these forces that then translate against a resisting mass or entity to provide useful work. So all useful work in the universe already comes from the interactions of the seething virtual flux of the vacuum. On what distant planet have the skeptics been hiding while all this modern physics has been developed?

One must keep one's sense of humor! It is ironic but true that every major university in the U.S. continues to teach, uphold, and advocate—by implication—EM charges as ubiquitous perpetual motion machines, freely creating energy from nothing. And that is those professional skeptics and witch-hunters never mention that their own naive understanding of electrodynamics already implicitly assumes and teaches perpetual motion machines freely creating energy from nothing at all—and on a scale unparalleled in scientific history!

We have one chart with some 32 major foundations errors and flaws in the electrodynamics taught in all our schools; there are many others in addition. **This** erroneous teaching has so indoctrinated our graduate students that most **electrical** engineers no longer know the real difference between power (the rate of change of form of energy and thus the rate of production of work) and rate of energy flow (whether it is being dissipated or not).

Every textbook speaks of "sources furnishing power," when it is the rate of dissipation of energy in the individual loads and losses to provide the rate of doing work that *constitutes* power. Sources do not furnish power! They furnish energy flow (specifically, their source dipole furnishes energy flow, extracted and transduced directly from the active vacuum, and only a tiny bit of that enormous energy flow is diverged into the circuit and used). The various components of the receiving circuit interact with that energy flow to catch and dissipate a little of it, thus producing power and work locally in the intercepting and dissipating component.

A massive nondivergent (nonintercepted) energy flow has zero power (time-rate of doing work), but if intercepted and diverged, the divergence may develop enormous power (time rate of doing work) in and upon the interceptor, diverger, or collector. Even many physicists today are confused on the difference between rate of work and rate of energy flow per se. E.g., for about 30 years now, there has been a polite debate involving that very subject in the *American Journal of Physics.* It is still not completely resolved, because the argument has not actually addressed where all EM energy in fields, potentials, and waves comes from in the first place: directly from the seething vacuum via the asymmetry of the source charge. It also has not addressed the long unaccounted giant Heaviside nondiverged energy flow component.

Toward a Deeper Electrodynamics

The first thing the Soviet Academicians did after WW II was to completely overhaul electrodynamics, but in highly classified areas controlled totally by the KGB. Stalin's boot firmly planted on their backside saw to it, creating the terrible fear that if they failed to produce, they would surely die. Not having experienced such a "Stalin boot," our own scientific community continues leisurely onward, while it teaches 110 years old electrodynamic material filled with non-sequiturs.

The Russian use of the "information content of the field" euphemism is a case in point. Our fellows (in both the intelligence community and the scientific community) assume the Russians are speaking of simple transverse EM wave spectral analysis. Nothing could be farther from the truth. Let me explain.

In 1903, E.T. Whittaker—a leading theoretical physicist at the time—showed that any scalar potential is comprised of a harmonic set of bidirectional *longitudinal EM wavepairs.* Each pair consists of a longitudinal EM wave and its true phase conjugate replica (i.e., its "antiwave", or time-reversed twin, coupled together).

Unknown to Whittaker, that LW wavepair actually includes a *time-density wave* in the time domain, coupled to a longitudinal EM wave in 3-space. Per quantum field theory {66}, such a coupled pair would be observable as the scalar potential. Knowledge of this specialized coupling is necessary in order to properly decipher the Priore mechanism. That mechanism was demonstrated to *time-reverse* (dedifferentiate) a diseased or damaged cell and all its parts back to it previous normal state, *genetics and all.* The time-reversal was accomplished by "pumping" the cell and all its parts in the time-dimension so that time-reversal propagation of the mass-energy is achieved. The time-domain pumping is done by the associated time-density wave, which always accompanies any longitudinal EM wave a priori. So sometimes we sloppily say that the "longitudinal EM wave pumping" causes the time reversal of the mass, but it is really the associated time-density wave pumping that causes it. The time-density wave component also can cause *time charging* or *time-excitation charging* of a mass. During its alternate existence as masstime, the time portion is altered, and that is a time-excitation or time-energy excitation.

It turns out the human cellular regenerative system (Figure 29) also uses the same time-excitation charging methodology to produce time-pumping of the cell and all its parts. This produces a slow time-reversal (dedifferentiation) of damaged cells back to a previous state. This is in fact the basic mechanism for healing, as used by the living body.

Reversing aluminum, for example, just converts it back to ordinary aluminum. Not too interesting.

Reversing an HIV infected cell, however, would produce a healthy, normal cell with normal genetics. When a damaged cell turns into a cancerous cell, it is due to a process called *promotion* (change of the cell to a cancerous cell). *Reversing a* cancerous cell would change it back to a healthy, normal cell again—in short, it would constitute *demotion* of cancer and then healing of the damage in the now normal but damaged cell. In the AIDS patient, simply pumping the entire body with the time-density wave accompanying the longitudinal EM waves produced in a plasma—as Priore did for terminal tumors—would time-reverse all cells, completely ridding them of any residue of HIV infection. This would remove all the "HIV factories", thus completely solving the problem of AIDS. We have also uncovered a more advanced process where *matter can essentially be directly engineered in any conceivable manner,* including nuclear transmutation etc. We have filed a Provisional Patent Application and will file formal patent applications on those processes in the future, as soon as funds are available (patent attorneys are expensive!)

Time Is Highly Compacted Energy

Since time is energy compacted by some $9x10^{16}$, even small time-density changes can produce enormous spatial energy, should any of that compacted energy be *transduced* from time-density waves into transverse EM waves and thus into spatial EM energy. Such transduction can indeed occur in nonlinear materials and processes, such as in electrolysis.

The New Transduction Model Explains the Cold Fusion Results and Mechanisms

In August 1998, we presented a conference paper pointing out that cold fusion uses this very *transduction of EM wave types,* one into the other. We presented such new concepts as (i) TW to LW to TDW transduction and in the other direction also, (ii) time density charging of a particle to an excited time-density state (analogous to energy charging to an excited energy state), and (iii) the observation that excess phase conjugation in a local region can generate a time reversal zone where like charges attract and unlike charges repel.

With these concepts we were able to explain the excess heat appearing in the cold fusion experiments of hundreds of researchers. We also came up with (iv) a totally new class of nuclear reactions without the usual high-energy considerations. That is, we showed the exact nature of the electronuclear reaction that is forming the anomalous nuclides in cold fusion experiments. Production of the new nuclides was revealed to be simply what one would expect from this mechanism, as indeed was particle clustering of like-charged particles.

We also explained (v) all the instrumental anomalies occurring in a series of well-documented cold fusion electrolysis experiments at China Lake. In fact, (vi) we added a completely new term to the conservation of energy law, thereby extending it.

An updated explanation is included in my new book, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 2002, *ibid.* With the new transduction interactions, one must state that the total energy in (a) spatial energy form, (b) mass-energy form, and (c) time-energy form is what is conserved.

So when transduction occurs in cold fusion experiments (electrolysis), some of the time-density charge energy is gradually transduced into ordinary transverse EM wave energy, which as it scatters produces excess heat not accounted for in present particle physics interaction models.

Scientists with only the "old" 2-term Einstein conservation law in mind, will be firmly convinced that this excess heat represents a violation of conservation of energy, hence is impossible. So they will question the calorimetry ability of the cold fusion scientists, etc. Unfortunately, the more ardent defenders of the orthodox faith will unjustifiably impugn the intentions and morals of the experimenters themselves with vicious ad hominem attacks. Such has indeed been precisely the case. Many of the harsh scientific critics have acted like cur dogs in a pack attack, and not as scientists at all.

Once one analyzes cold fusion in the new 3-term conservation manner and with the new transduction concepts, one immediately sees that the *overall* conservation of energy is upheld, while the *special case* represented by the former energy conservation law (conservation of the sum of the spatial energy and the mass-energy) is *permissibly* violated. The former case was a special case in that it arbitrarily assumed that no transduction of time-energy into spatial energy or mass energy—or vice versa—occurred.

In essence, successful cold fusion experiments show that, via transduction, a bit of time itself can be "utilized for fuel" and transduced into ordinary EM energy. Energy-wise the system has become a nonlinear open dissipative system[40] far from thermodynamic equilibrium {125}. As such, it is permitted to (1) self-organize, (2) self-oscillate, (3) output more energy than it itself has, by merely receiving, converting, and using excess energy from its environment (in this case, from the transduction of a tiny bit of the time-charging that has occurred), (4) power itself while simultaneously powering a load or performing useful work, and (5) exhibit negentropy. With the exception of transduction of time-charge into excess energy, all of that is already in the thermodynamics texts, though it has not been clearly spelled out in electromagnetics texts. The source charge, e.g., exhibits all five of those capabilities. *The inclusion of the time-domain as part of the external active environment, however, is an extension of* ***previous*** *open dissipative system work by leading researchers such as* ***Prigogine.*** *It dramatically extends the meaning of "active environment".*

---

[40] But we point out one idiosyncrasy of thermodynamics, which defines a "closed system" as one in which mass does not cross the system boundary, but energy is free to exchange across that boundary {125}. Hence, eerily a "closed thermodynamic system" is actually an open system with respect to energy exchange between system and environment. As such, energy-wise the system can be a system far from energetic equilibrium with its external active environment, and still be considered a closed thermodynamic system! Energetically, a *closed thermodynamic system* that exchanges energy but not mass is permitted to exhibit COP>I .0 and even COP = oo!

Why There Is a Time Delay in the Onset of Cold Fusion Phenomena

With an energy-to-time compaction ration of $9\text{x}10^{16}$, energy processes have to transduce spatial energy into time for quite a while in order to build up very much *time-excitation charge*. This leads to an initial delay in the onset of the "new law" transduction phenomena, as directly shown by the vast majority of careful cold fusion experiments. This build-up occurs during the "palladium-lattice loading" time, e.g.

By the same token, there is a time delay after cutoff of the input power to such experiments, during which time the slowly decaying time-density charge by its transduction into spatial energy continues to maintain the anomalous new processes (such as excess heat production) as they slowly subside. So the hours-long or even days-long delay phenomena after input power shutdown are also explained by the new approach.

In summary, there exist some very anomalous but very good experiments by excellent scientists—more than 600 of them—that are at least totally consistent with the above new wave polarization transduction model. Consistency with experiments is the first element of proof (it is necessary but by itself it is not sufficient). The new model also contains and obeys the conventional conservation of energy law until the new transduction phenomena become observable, at which time the extended energy conservation law applies. So in its lower limit, the new model corresponds to the present model—again, another requirement of any model purporting to extend a scientific area past that area's conventional model description.

The KGB weapons scientists—not the regular Russian academic establishment—have about a 40-year lead on us in all these areas. While our own scientists have dallied and pursued the standard model, the Russian weapon scientists have produced the equivalent of 10 Manhattan Projects, back-to-back, in the "new" energetics area.

The Early Soviet Longitudinal Wave Interferometers

Using longitudinal EM waves, the early KGB energetics interferometers could pass their beams right through the earth and ocean. LWs readily penetrate matter, reacting with it only weakly.

Some LW interferometry was also done using ordinary EM waves as carriers for the LW wave functions. Each such transverse wave carrier is in fact two scalar potential functions (Whittaker 1904, the initiation of superpotential theory). In each scalar potential for which functions are extracted and used to make the normal transverse carrier wave, there exist LW biwave pairs comprising said potential. So by assembling the desired LW biwave subsets, the two scalar potentials and their resulting interference-produced carrier wave are internally structured as desired. This is the use of the so-called *internal information content of the field*. We speak of such a deliberately structured potential, field, or wave as having been *conditioned*, *dimensioned*, or *activated*. If these terms are deemed inappropriate, just use the more generic term "internally structured." Then one has to explain what the "internal" is, and how this "internal" can be "structured."

In the distant interferometry zone, those *dimensioned* potentials, fields, or carrier waves would interfere and produce the desired alterations in the local spacetime (including specific spacetime curvature engines). Remember, the potentials are just bundles of special waves. We are discussing a special form of nonlinear multiwave interferometry, where the individual waves and waveforms comprising the total wave package assembly constituting a carrier have been carefully chosen in advance.

In the local spacetime in the distant interference zone, such multiwave longitudinal EM wavepair interferometry creates ordinary EM waves and energy that arise directly from each and every point in that individual interference zone. We stress that ordinary transverse wave EM energy propagation through the intervening space between the interferometer transmitters and the distant target *does not occur.*

In January 1960, in a speech to the Presidium, those are the weapons then in final engineering development for production that Khrushchev spoke of as "fantastic new weapons".

Khrushchev Killed the Thresher to Prevent His Own Dismissal

The first deployed large force-structure interferometer weapons became operational circa 1 April 1963. Khrushchev was still smarting from his Cuban missile crisis fiasco and his humiliation by Kennedy. Having overplayed his hand and gotten caught,[41] Khrushchev was desperate to stay in power and not be thrown out by the Communist Party leaders for such a massive loss of face.

On April 10 of 1963 Khrushchev used his new interferometers to reach through the earth and ocean and "kindle" EM jamming in the electrical controls of the **U.S.S.** Thresher nuclear submarine underwater off the East Coast of the U.S. **The** reader should recall that, wherever the interference zone is established—including in the earth or underneath the ocean, in the atmosphere, or in space—the energy arises directly out of the local spacetime. *There is no Faraday shielding of such effects, which do not depend upon ordinary transverse wave EM field energy propagation through space*. The energy appears everywhere within the targeted object, simultaneously.

It is extremely important that the reader recognize the dramatic difference in the way energy propagates in the new mode as compared to the old "propagation through space" mode. In the old mode, energy transport arises in one spatial location and is considered to proceed serially through the intervening spatial points to the intercepting and interacting particle's location. The Poynting model presently uses only this mode. In other words, the energy propagates from *without* the object *to* the object, and thence *inward inside* the object, if possible as the object interacts.

On the other hand, when the energy arises at each and every point in spacetime, it then propagates outward from each arising point. Thus in the nucleus of an atom, the "energy flow" starts at all interior spatial points and flows or diffuses outward in all directions. So the energy "meets" and interacts with the quarks in the nucleons, *before* it meets the "nucleon as a whole" and translates it. For this reason, with energetics it is easier to alter and "flip" quarks in nucleons than it is to translate nucleons, since one is using the new energy propagation mode. *This simple reversal of the outside-to-inside energy propagation to an "inside-to-outside" mode, is a revolution in particle physics and effects on materials.*

In fact, the energy dramatically enters the "interior" areas of nuclei, nucleons, etc. in a manner heretofore impossible or extremely difficult to achieve by high-energy physics, which can only do it by smashing into the object with sheer brute kinetic energy. Therefore the new "inside to outside" energy propagation mode can produce—at feeble spatial energy—extraordinary nuclear interactions not possible by brute force "outside-to-inside" energy propagation means. By controlling the structuring of the arising of the energy at each point in spacetime, the energy structure interacting with the quarks and other interior components can be tailored to order. This is the primary secret of transmuting an element at a distance by a specialized energetics weapon. The structuring of the emerging internal energy can be deliberately tailored to change quarks in—say—some of the nucleons of U235 and plutonium nuclei. In this fashion nuclear warheads, nuclear powerplants, and nuclear propulsion systems of atomic submarines can be altered at a distance, beneath the earth's surface, beneath the ocean's surface, in space above the earth, etc.

---

[41] Oddly, had he simply waited a few more months or a year before injecting the missiles and nuclear warheads into Cuba, Khrushchev's strategic scalar interferometers would have become operational. With those in operation, a "Cuban missile crisis" might well have had a different outcome.

The EM "hash" emerging from the Russian interferometry simply jammed the electrical controls and systems of the Thresher *from inside its very electrical circuits.* Out of control and helpless, the Thresher sank to crush depth and imploded (Figure 6). The EM "splatter" from that interferometry, arising from the local spacetime throughout a surrounding region, engulfed the Skylark, the surface companion of the Thresher. The resulting spurious EM jamming severely interfered with multiple electronic systems on the Skylark. Several electronic systems just ceased working altogether. Their electrical forces were time-energy excited and time-reversed so that electron currents in them became impossible (blocked).

It required over an hour for the Skylark to transmit an emergency message back to the Navy that the sub was in difficulty, through all that interferometry jamming effects. The Russians undoubtedly "tracked" the sub till it imploded, then cut off the interferometry. As the "time-density charging" in the area slowly diminished, all failed electronic systems in the Skylark returned to full functioning. This was because the excess time-energy excitation just decayed away, so that electrical currents could again flow.

Khrushchev Demonstrated the Powerful Blast Capability of Strategic Interferometry

The next day, 100 miles north of Puerto Rico, the same KGB interferometer weapon was powerfully pulsed to produce a giant EM burst deep under the ocean's surface (Figure 42). A cone of water rose up from the surface to about a half-mile in height, observed by the startled crew of a passing U.S. jetliner and reported to the FBI and Coast Guard when the aircraft landed in Florida. As it rose, the cone of water spread into a cauliflower shape typical of a deep underwater nuclear burst that does not vent the gas bubble. Then that giant cauliflower of water fell back out of the sky and into the ocean. The second successful demonstration of Khrushchev's scalar interferometer weapon had been made for the benefit of the Presidium and the leaders of the Communist Party.

With those two dramatic tests, Khrushchev had killed the latest and greatest U.S atomic submarine and demonstrated the awesome power of energetics weapons. He had shown the leaders of the Communist Party that the U.S. had no inkling of his new superweapons. He had struck the U.S. a formidable blow in a direct act of war—but a new kind of *clandestine* energetics war—and gotten clean away with it. Now it was Kennedy, rather than Khrushchev, who had been duped. So had the entire U.S. Intelligence Community and the U.S. Scientific Community. Sadly, mostly they apparently remain duped or partially duped to this day.

Khrushchev managed to stay in power nearly two years longer by these two demonstrations. So the KGB/Soviets embarked on a decades-long program of buildup and development of the new weaponry, clandestinely, in order to take the U.S. by surprise attack and destroy it utterly.

In 1972 Brezhnev named 1985 as the target year when Russia would be able to do as it pleased, and would essentially control the land, the oceans, and space {126}. This was stated at a secret meeting of the European Communist parties in Europe. A British intelligence agent was in the meeting, and furnished the U.S. that information. Later it was openly released and published.

The Russians met that 1985 deadline, and the resulting increase in killing U.S. missiles and aircraft in 1985-1986 was most indicative. Other indicators such as massive weather engineering were already ongoing.

Weather Engineering Over North America

The first KGB weather engineering tests over the U.S., using their relatively new interferometers, produced signatures of anomalous perfectly round holes appearing in clouds. These experiments started in 1967 or thereabouts. The Russians gave us that very severe "deep freeze" winter of 1967, as an initial weather-engineering test of their energetics interferometry weapons.

The KGB communists do have a sense of historical dates, and they often do things on certain dates in symbolic fashion. Full-time Soviet weather engineering over North America started in earnest on July 4th, 1976—our Independence Day and our bicentennial. This was the KGB's "gift" to the United States on such a historic occasion. Full-bore weather engineering over the Americas has continued to this day, and even increased. It was passed into the hands of the Yakuza and the Aum Shinrikyo upon their leasing of those interferometers on site in Russia at the end of 1989. In 1985 I produced a rather crude videotape[42] (40 minutes) with pictures of the giant radial cloud signatures etc. associated with such weather engineering operations since 1976.

The *basic* weather engineering method is simple. Use an LW interferometer (LWI) to reach through the earth and *cool* the air in a region and produce a high-pressure area, due to the densification of the air. Use another interferometer to *heat an*other area and form a low-pressure area, due to the expansion of the air. Then carefully steer those *highs* and *lows* by gradually and slowing rotating the distant antennae and slowly adjusting the interferometry range simultaneously, according to a calculated schedule.

---

[42] T. E. Bearden, "Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America," 1985.

By that means, the LWIs easily catch, entrain, and steer the jetstreams largely responsible for our weather. Put sharp loops and twists in that steering, and the huge angular momentum of the jetstreams developed in those sharp turns and circles will spawn tornadoes, violent weather, etc.

The first complete weather engineering system over North America in 1976 also used the Woodpecker's normal EM carrier signals with dimensioning and internal assemblage of the composite longitudinal EM wavepairs. A giant "interference grid" was established over much of North America. A great deal of local adjusting of the interferometry in the grid was necessary. These local grid readjustments caused "sudden popouts" of EM energy, creating many atmospheric booms, rumbles, and explosions.

To really stir up big weather trouble, the Russians—and now the Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo—also heat or cool areas of the ocean where El Nino and similar "water engines" form. A dimensioned LW interferometer is required for this operation. By slowly and protractedly heating or cooling the water in one of the "warm water engines" fueling the weather, one causes a very significant, long-term, later effect on perhaps an entire continent.

One can create great droughts in some areas, great floods in others, etc. The KGB has been doing this extensively, since 1976. The great floods in Red China a few years ago are a direct example of KGB/Yakuza weather engineering, as is much of the extreme heat of 1998. In fact, thanks to the weather operations of the Yakuza under their KGB mentors, 1998 was the overall hottest year on record till then, since records were kept. At least for the summer of 2002, the record may have been broken again, with a significant season of giant forest fires burning away.

One purpose of the excess heating of the atmosphere, of course, is to do damage. An added "benefit" to the KGB is to furnish support to the environmentalists who are concerned about global warming. Understand, there is indeed such a thing as global warming. But by augmenting the atmospheric (and ice sheet) heating just a bit in a single year, the statistical analyses are skewed. The skewed analyses will show that the global warming problem is far more imminent than it really is, if the LWI engineering of it were suspended. Nobody on either side of the global warming debate seems aware of the LWI intervention that is ruining the results of their models and calculations.

In turn, the heightened global warming indications, detected as a result of the LWI interruptions, impel strong activist support for such things as the Kyoto treaty, *which is specifically designed to the strategic detriment of the U.S.* if and when the U.S. Senate ever approves it. The Kyoto treaty does not even apply to some 160 countries including Russia, China, etc. This focuses a certain proportion of our government time and effort in grappling with an inflated global warming problem, immediately. It directly fits the KGB strategy of "spreading" our government energy and attention all over the map, anywhere but upon the coming strategic energetics strike and upon energetics weaponry.

The die-hard section of the KGB strategists are chess players. *They will come at you anyway, anyhow, and anywhen that they can.* Everything that can be impressed to serve or support the overall objective, will be impressed and used. **That** is the overriding principle when analyzing Russian KGB strategy.

Khrushchev meant every word of it when he said to Nixon in their famous Kitchen Debate: *"We will bury you!"* Interestingly, to this day Americans and **their** government officials have continued to be deceived as to exactly what Khrushchev meant. He meant it literally.

Earthquakes to Order

According to U.S. Defense Secretary Cohen, electromagnetic induction of earthquakes is now recognized by the U.S. Department of Defense, considering **his** little-noticed statement in Georgia in 1997, which we previously quoted. An interesting exchange of induced earthquakes (Figure 54) had occurred in latter 1988 and early 1989. Here two sides seemed to be "counting rifles."

Opening bet (induced quakes)

- Quebec 25 Nov 88
- Pasadena 3 Dec 88

Raise you

- Armenia 7 Dec 88

Call - what do you have?

- Malibu 8 Jan 89

Four aces

- Soviet Central Asia 23 Jan 89

***Clear** table (stress relief)*

- Bakersfield CA et al. various

Figure 54 Counting rifles with earthquakes: Put up or shut up.

As Secretary Cohen made his April 1997 statement obliquely recognizing the scalar interferometer weapons, the little friendly nation had just completed countering and averting a massive strategic energetics strike upon the United States and Western Europe, scheduled for May 1, 1997 —just three days later. A little more than two months earlier, a previously scheduled attack had also been countered and averted by the same friendly little nation.

Once one can reach into or through the earth and ocean and create energy in a desired interference zone, induction of earthquakes is simple. Use the interferometers to deposit energy in a fault zone over a period of time. Keep it up, and the piezoelectric plates build up enough mechanical stress to forcibly "slip" and produce an earthquake.

Put the energy in very slowly, and one gets a long "overpotential" effect where the rocks do not slip for a long time, while the energy builds to higher levels due to the static friction of the rocks. Then there occurs a rather rapid catastrophic slip. In short, one produces a large destructive earthquake. The KGB weaponry can produce earthquakes of the highest magnitude if they work at it.

If one wishes to induce a quake in an area where there are no known faults, then one simply focuses the interference zone there inside the solid rocks and proceeds to deposit the energy, preferably rather quickly (in hours instead of days). The entire rock will be expanded and it will fracture, producing an anomalous so-called "flat plate" earthquake.

Around the early 1900s, the "normal" rate of large earthquakes was two or three per year. That gradually increased after WW II. During one week in year 2000, there were some 20 major earthquakes around the globe. Obviously, someone is doing it, since this is far beyond what could be expected naturally. Presently that "someone" is mostly the Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo, on site in Russia and leasing the LWIs. With the scheduled CSR attacks forcibly aborted, the KGB has the problem of restraining an increasingly impatient Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo group, while keeping them paying the lucrative lease money. Consequently, inducing some big earthquakes is one way to "keep the troops occupied and busy." Shooting down the occasional aircraft or missile is another way.

I worked for 8 years or more with an inventor (Floyd Sweet, now deceased) who had an energy device {127,128} sensitive to *artificially* induced quakes of that fashion, even such quakes thousands of miles away. The device would sit right on top of a *normal* quake and not react. We could tell within some 8-10 thousand miles—and often even for greater distances— which quakes were artificial and which were natural.

So during that period I was able to clearly ascertain what was going on, and who was doing what to whom, and which quakes were normal and which were manmade. Several artificial U.S. quakes, the Armenia quake, and a subsequent big quake in Russia were particularly interesting in the mid and latter 1980s. The huge 1976 China quake was directly induced by the KGB.

Figure 55 Brewer briefs President Reagan on Soviet scalar EM weapons October 1984, then briefs National Security Council

In 1984, on my behalf Roy Brewer {129} had briefed President Reagan on these scalar interferometry weapons (Figure 55), then briefed the National Security Council. Let us hope that these high level briefings may have borne at least some fruit.

Readying the Weapons for the 1985 Readiness Demonstration Tests

In latter April 1985 I received an urgent call from my close colleague Frank Golden. In his avionics repair work, he suddenly found that his best calibration instruments were very "noisy." He replaced one expensive instrument, and the second was "noisy," also. A third proved equally noisy. This was unparalleled. It was not the instruments, but instead it was all the electronics to be repaired, that were emitting electromagnetic noise!

So Frank borrowed one expensive instrument and brought it home for the weekend. He altered it by a proprietary method so that he could detect energetics radiation. Voila! The entire earth was alive with Soviet energetics signals. The weak interferometry of so many signals impinging into the weakly interacting electronic systems to be repaired, had generated the electronic noise his instruments had detected.

In response to Frank's call, I immediately proceeded to his location. I personally observed on the oscilloscope, as detected by Golden, some 27 pairs of Russian energetics signals, each of the two in a pair being 12 kilohertz apart. (We have previously explained why two frequencies are used, and one "pretends" one transmitted the difference frequency). Each of these frequency pairs represented the entire earth held in entrained resonance. Each pair was an "energy tap" in the earth, extracting enormous energy from the heat of the molten core of the earth itself and outputting it as 12 kilohertz power for transmission to giant interferometry weapon sites.

Each "tap" was extracting energy sufficient to power perhaps 4 to 6 of the giant intercontinental energetics interferometer weapons. We were observing something like 100 to 150 massive weapons on line and radiating. A full-up strategic dress rehearsal—or preparations for a full-up strategic attack on the U.S.—was underway.

Gorbachev was still a "new man on the job" at that time. Further, 1985 was the 40th anniversary of the end of WWII, and a very important occasion for the Communists and in fact for all Russians. The May Day celebrations that year went on for several days, not just on May 1.

What we were seeing were preparations for a massive May Day weaponry demonstration in and around May 1, 1985. We were observing the preparation and demonstrated readiness of all that great armada of Soviet energetics weapons, to meet Brezhnev's 1985 schedule laid down back in 1972 {126}.

Longitudinal EM wave communications to deep underwater Soviet subs, the huge interferometer armada, and everything else—all were being readied and demonstrated. I can assure the reader that observing full rehearsal of preparations for the next World War was a most sobering experience.

After May 1, most of the armada of interferometers was stood down again because it had been demonstrated that the "ready schedule" had been met. All but one of the giant energy taps in the Earth were also stood down again. That one remained active.

The May Day report to the heads of the Communist Party that year must have really been something!

As usual, apparently our own scientific and intelligence communities did not detect the main activities, and would not have believed it if one told them. They certainly did not believe it when I published it in 1986 in *Fer-de-Lance,* but labeled it sheer fantasy or at best total conjecture.

It was neither fantasy nor conjecture. It was direct experimental measurement. It was in fact what used to be called *scientific method.* The problem with our intelligence agencies was that they operated behind *policies.* Once the *policy* is decided, then regardless of what the intelligence analysis indicates, anything against the official *policy* is just ignored. This neat little *policy* method of doing business has resulted in making our intelligence agencies some of the most political-minded and manipulative groups on Earth.

Meeting the 1985 Schedule for Readiness

In 1985, KGB/Russian preparations began in earnest for the energetics weapons readiness projected for that year by Brezhnev in 1972. Being full-bore tests, these actually went after destruction of vehicles and killing people. These were actual acts of war. The so-called "Cold War" was not nearly so cold as pictured in the news media!

Early that year, an LWI was used to cool the combustion in the engines of a jet liner off the coast of San Francisco, bound for Los Angeles (Figure 56). This flamed-out the engines. The stricken craft fell 30,000 feet before the time-density "cooling" charge drained away, sufficient for the pilot to restart his engines and limp into San Francisco. Gravitational and inertial anomalies—*a clear signature of the use of this EM/GR weapon*—were exhibited upon the personnel in the cockpit. The official investigators ignored those signatures; after all, such is not in their standard checksheets! And everybody knows the standard checklists are already perfect!

SIX MILE DROP IN TWO MINUTES

CHINA AIRLINES FLIGHT 006
-TAIPEI TO LOS ANGELES-
19 FEB 1985
Interferometric cooling of combustion gases in engines
1 ENGINE FAILS. OTHERS REDUCE, THEN FAIL
41,000 FT UPPER LEVEL TROUGH; TURBULENT POCKET
Differing G-forces experienced anomalously by pilot and copilot. Impossible without unknown force also acting.
LANDING GEAR DOWN, DOORS TORN OFF
11,000 FT ENGINE RESTART
SAN FRANCISCO
9,000 FT RECOVERY

Figure 56 Extinguishing combustion in the engines of a jetliner 19 Feb. 1985.

KGB Crews Regularly Practiced Against U.S. Rocket Launches from Cape Canaveral

In a late Nov. 1985 night shuttle launch at Cape Canaveral, the Russian interferometer crews continued their practice of using the U.S. shuttle launches as convenient "simulated" ICBM launches, for energetics interferometer crew practice (Figures 15 and 16). EM missiles (balls of EM energy formed in the area by distant LW interferometry through the earth) were used as the "destructive agent", but were offset from the actual launch in order not to destroy the shuttle. This was *normal crew drill,* not combat operations. The practice range for energetics weapons is—as might be expected—the actual targeted area and targeted nation itself.

As shown in *Fer-de-Lance,* I published an actual picture (Figure 15) of such a KGB EM missile strike, offset from that shuttle launch in late Nov. 1985 and snapped by Bob Gladwin. I also published an actual picture of a second such EM ball of glowing energy (Figure 16), over the launch site for the same launch, and used as a registration point (the LWs deviate slightly in passage through the earth, since the potentials in the earth are not constant). George Suchary took the second photo.

A standard artillery "shift-from-known registration point" method of firing was being used. In other words, the crews establish LW track on that EM registration ball, right through the earth. That represents *a point having a known set of coordinates*—a registration point—established in the firing computer. Then when the targeted strategic missile (in this case the shuttle's main booster) ignites, the interferometer also tracks the huge ionization target of the exhaust with the same weapon system.

That gives a known *relative* location of the missile rear end, with respect to one's registration settings for the registration point ball of light. Then add some meters to move up onto the missile body proper, and voila! The center of the target missile that will be fired is now in the bulls-eye, so to speak. That is a standard "shift from a known registration point" method of shooting, well known to every artillery group on the planet. The "marker beacon" is what is known as a "high burst registration," except it is not a burst but a steady ball of energy maintained over the area as the registration point.

The distant rocket or missile can now be destroyed in a variety of ways:

(1) Just create a sudden EM surge arising right in that spacetime (that is, just pulse the interferometer). That burns out some of the inner electronics of the missile, causing partial or complete missile failure.

(2) Sharply pulse the interferometer to introduce EM energy surges and sparks in the fuel or solid propulsion, igniting it massively and blowing up the rocket. Works well for aircraft fuel tanks as well.

(3) Form another EM missile and hit the missile broadside with that, burning

through it and destroying it immediately.

(4) Hit it with an explosive EM missile internally, instantly exploding the missile into pieces. Or

(5) Hit it with several of the above simultaneously.

Suchary and Gladwin had captured the direct evidence of KGB dress rehearsal for the strike and kill of the Arrow DC-8 in Gander, Newfoundland about two weeks later.

Kill of the Arrow DC: Practice Turned into Performance

Two weeks later, the same KGB weapon tested against the Cape Canaveral shuttle launch was used to destroy the Arrow DC-8 at Gander, Newfoundland, killing some 256 occupants, 248 of them being U.S. soldiers returning from peace-keeping operations overseas. The aircraft *was not* iced up; later that was clearly established.

See Figure 17. As the ill-fated Arrow aircraft began its thrust down the runway for takeoff, it was already under LW interferometer track (the exhausts of the **engines** were being precisely tracked) by distant KGB operators. The KGB operators simply began to cool the combustion gases in the engine combustion chambers as had been done to a U.S. jetliner earlier that same year (Figure 56) off the coast of San Francisco (there they had completely flamed out the en**gines).** Now they did not want to flame out the engines during take-off, but just wanted to reduce the thrust of those engines.

So the available thrust of the engines began decreasing as the aircraft picked up speed on the runway toward takeoff, even though the turbines were rotating at full speed. For powered flight, it is the *thrust-per-drag ratio* that is important. One can reduce that ratio by ice-loading and therefore increasing the overall aircraft drag, as all Transportation Safety Board checksheets assume if the engines are at full rotation and if operation and icing conditions are present. Or one can reduce the ratio by reducing the engine thrust itself, as was done for the Arrow, even though the plane is de-iced. All the Transportation Safety Board checksheets *assume* that it has to be drag increase, and thus due to icing.

The National Transportation Safety Board (NTSB) investigators know nothing about longitudinal EM wave interferometry and its capabilities—and its development by several nations of the world. Neither do their checksheets. Sad**lly,** the NTSB is not even aware that the electrodynamics and electrical engineering it assumes is so perfect is in fact a decrepit old model based on century-old errors. They are unaware that much better electrodynamics models have long been developed for particle physics, because the crusty old classical model is totally inadequate. Their checksheets also are "unaware" of anything really modern such as electrodynamics models of the higher group symmetry **kind.**

The thrust reduction by combustion gas cooling *does not appear on the official checksheets and is never considered.* It is not considered to this day. It will probably still not be considered this century.

Observers on the ground heard those engines "laboring," which can be a direct symptom of combustion gas cooling and engine thrust reduction. Rough running and missing can be another, if the cooling increases. Engine flameout occurs when the combustion no longer can be sustained because of the dramatically lowered temperature of the gases.

The Arrow Pilot Sensed the Lack of Power, But the Aircraft Was Immediately Hit

See Figure 17. At rotation and liftoff, the pilot of the Arrow DC-8 immediately sensed his lack of lift, and started a slow turn to the right, apparently intending to come around and land again as an emergency measure. Meanwhile, crossed beams had formed in the sky above and off to the right side. From those crossed beams of light, there shot down a bright "streak" of light that struck the fuselage of the aircraft in the right side, ahead of the engines. That was the EM missile strike—just as had been offset from the shuttle launch two weeks earlier in Florida, and photographed by Bob Gladwin.

That piece of Arrow DC-8 fuselage hit by the EM missile, with the burned hole in it, was recovered and tested. Tests showed no explosive residues on the edges of the hole, so it *was not* made by a bomb or other explosive device. Instead, it was made by an EM missile of the type that over a decade later hit the TWA-800 several times off Long Island and killed it.

In the Arrow aircraft's kill, the fiery EM missile sharply ignited the plastics in the forward cabin, which explosively outgassed. One product of such outgassing is hydrogen cyanide. A whiff or two, and all the passengers in that section were already dying of cyanide poisoning. *In the autopsies of the recovered bodies, about half the passengers were already dead of cyanide poisoning before the plane impacted the ground and exploded*. They died while that aircraft was still flying and sinking tail-first toward the ground.

The results of those autopsies were deliberately withheld from the Canadian investigative board.

The impact of the EM missile on the Arrow DC-8 was clearly recorded by sharp, vertical EM surges (spikes) in traces on both data recorders on board the aircraft. In *Gravitobiology,* on p. 82 I printed the recorded sensor responses **for** that signature also.

Elements of the U.S. Government Deliberately Suppressed Vital Evidence

Several eyewitnesses, including Judy Parsons, physically observed the formation of the crossed beams in the sky. Parsons and perhaps others actually saw the streak-down and strike of the EM missile when it hit the doomed Arrow DC-8. Parsons tried to testify, but her testimony was never allowed to be heard by the Canadian Transportation Safety Board. A major U.S. News agency interviewed her, but then squelched the story for some "unknown reason." Other witnesses (who are still reluctant to come forward) did observe the strike of the EM missile also.

Why would the U.S. government deliberately suppress information relating to the cause of the deaths of 248 of our soldiers returning from peacekeeping missions overseas? Why were they so determined that this direct act of war be declared an "accident" in the face of overwhelming evidence that it was not an accident at all?

Iran Contra was not yet divulged at the time. Recall, at very high level our own fellows had directly violated the law, and were engaged in the illegal Iran Contra fiasco up to their eyeballs. Also, some officials in Washington in certain high U. S. Government circles were in near panic, in their personal (erroneous) firm belief that a MidEast-sponsored terrorist bomb had destroyed the Arrow. In that case, so they reasoned, with the murder of 248 of our soldiers, the American public would be so aroused and angry that they would force military action against the MidEast nation or group, and that would then reveal Iran Contra. *Too many highly placed people's hands were dirty!*

So extreme spin control was the major requirement. Damn how many American soilders had just been killed in an overt act of war against the U.S. Damn the implications of the use of eerie new weapons we did not possess. A hue and cry from the U.S. public would almost certainly reveal Iran Contra and smoke out the duly secrets. That must not happen at any cost. Some high officials—particularly the ones who engage in such illegal acts, in assassinations, murders, etc.—are far more interested in covering up their nefarious deeds than they are interested in any kind of justice or morality. Consequently, the fix was in.

So *U.S. officials placed enormous pressure on Canada to produce a finding of icing.* Lots of other skullduggery occurred, which probably constituted criminal activity by some U.S. officials. A high-ranking U.S. military officer arrived on site quickly, apparently under orders to erase that scene as fast as possible. He almost immediately wanted the Canadians to bulldoze over the site, even before recovery operations were complete and while the investigation was just getting underway. The site was bulldozed over in unseemly haste not long thereafter. That would appear to possibly constitute deliberate tampering with the evidence at an official site of investigation, on the part of whoever ordered the General to bulldoze the site precipitously.

In addition, witnesses such as Parsons were never allowed to testify. The Canadian Board waited until the half of its members who strongly opposed any ad hoc finding were absent, and hastily approved a finding of icing as the cause of the "accident." Later the disgruntled Board members who were absent when the "voting" occurred, issued their own minority report. Unfortunately they knew nothing of scalar interferometry and energetics weapons, and so they strongly believed it had to be sabotage and explosives.

Anyway, the blackguards hiding Iran Contra buried the incident, and the savage kill of 248 of our soldiers and 8 civilians went unpunished. Anyone such as the present author who pointed out what had really happened and why, was just branded a lunatic. After all, the blackguards who do not flinch at murder and unapproved assassination do not blink an eye at slander and libel.

The sad part is those fine young soldiers and the 8 civilians who were killed, and the grief and lasting changes made to their families. It is the children who had to grow up without their fathers, the mothers whose husbands were suddenly dead, etc. They deserved much better from their government than they got.

Other Direct Energetics Signatures on the Arrow DC-8

Meanwhile, in the lifting DC-8 the strike of the EM missile had also *time-density charged* the forward cabin materials. Those materials slowly decayed from their excited states via longitudinal EM wave emission. When a human body is subjected to fairly significant LW waves (accompanied with their time-density waves), it gets its internal immune system and cellular regeneration system "jammed," since these systems use LWs and accompanying time-density waves. The cells and tissues are also "time-energy charged" as well, and so spurious LWs continued to be slowly emitted in their tissues and cells locally, leading to gradual, general debilitation. After a time delay for the effects of this time-charge decay to be exhibited, such exposed persons will get sick with odd symptoms of various diseases such as influenza.

The ground handlers on the scene and exposed to the struck materials of the aircraft, were also exposed to longitudinal EM wave radiation from those materials which had been instantly "time-charged" at the powerful strike. Hence they were exposed to fairly significant LW waves, and should therefore have shown later symptomology.

Some 60 or so of the ground handlers actually retrieving the crash materials later sickened with all sorts of mysterious maladies: dizziness, stomach cramps, flu-like symptoms, weakness, nausea, fatigue, etc.—precisely what would be expected if some the materials they were handling were emitting longitudinal EM radiation, exposing them to significant LW radiation. That is a clear signature again of a strike by an EM missile, and the exposure of those retrievers to LW emissions. *In no normal way could 60 of those ground crewmen handling the wreckage debris all come down simultaneously with the exact symptoms of*

LW radiation sickness, unless that was what it actually was.

Many of those sickened persons remained debilitated for years. Probably a few are still alive and debilitated.

There are other signatures on the Arrow DC-8 kill. I did a small bit of work on the problem in the interests of Arrow airlines, but of course the conventional investigators they also hired could only conceive of an ordinary explosive. Nevertheless, I did tell them as best I could what happened to their aircraft, their crewmembers, and our own valiant soldiers.

Our troops on board the tragic Arrow DC-8 *did not* die from a simple over-iced plane that crashed as a result of carelessness in deicing operations. *They died as the result of an act of war against the U.S., carried out by the KGB as a test in an entire series to demonstrate the 1985 readiness that Brezhnev had specified in 1972.* That war is still partially ongoing and undeclared to this very day, with other players such as the Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo also now in the game—and possibly even the Chinese, who certainly have had the weapons for some time, and have had QP weapons and negative energy EMP weapons since earlier this year (2002).

With the kill of the Arrow DC-8, the KGB made its deadline that had been set down 13 years earlier by Brezhnev. To meet the 1985 schedule, something significant had to be killed successfully and clandestinely, no later than Dec. 31, 1985. The KGB made the schedule on December 12, 1985, by killing the Arrow DC-8 after a warm-up and full dress rehearsal against a U.S. night shuttle launch at Cape Canaveral about two weeks earlier. And they also demonstrated just how ignorant of such energetics weapons and their usage the U.S. government, scientific community, and investigative boards really were.

We were fortunate they did not just go ahead and kill that same shuttle in late November 1985. Instead, they waited and killed the Challenger a few months later.

Other Acts of War Completed the Milestone

Apparently the final demonstration of milestone completion called for the destruction of an aircraft, kill of an ICBM, kill of a space shuttle, induction of earthquakes, and demonstration of the new quantum potential weapon still in the advanced laboratory stage. The KGB completed much of the milestone demonstration in 1985. The remainder they completed in 1986.

In January 1986 they killed the space shuttle Challenger, and the very next night the KGB even gave a big party in Moscow, to celebrate the "perfect success of their active measures" against the shuttle. General Daniel O'Connor, former head of U.S. Army intelligence, personally issued an alert to many high-ranking U.S. government officials, pointing out the almost certain involvement of the KGB and the fact that the loss of the shuttle was almost certainly due to a hostile act by the Soviets.

In April 1986 (May Day report time was coming!) the KGB killed a Titan ICBM fired from Vandenberg Air Force Base. They also induced several large earthquakes for practice, and then began the induction of the long-dreaded "giant California quake" in the San Andreas Fault zone.

This latter induction of what would have been a massive quake in both San Francisco and Los Angeles, and all along the San Andreas Fault, was countered (destroyed) by a civilian group known to this author, with a backlash that resulted in the Chernobyl incident.

In April 1986 (for the same May Day report) the KGB also demonstrated the effectiveness of their newly emerging quantum potential weapon against the convenient U.S. air attack on Libya (Figure 25).

Kill of the Titan Missile Over Vandenberg Air Force Base

In 1986, the KGB began gingerly using those energetics interferometry weapons to kill other U.S. aircraft and several U.S. missiles, including killing a Titan 34-D fired from Vandenberg AFB on 18 April 1986. The Titan was killed 9 seconds after launch, partially crippling the U.S. space surveillance program. That kill was part of the demonstration of readiness milestone completion.

There was a completely decisive signature on the kill of the Titan. Simply check *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* 124 (17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 18, where a picture (the one taken from longer range) of the Titan explosion is printed. Look about an inch above that explosion, which is already well developed. There above the Titan explosion sits the KGB ball of light registration point, just as it was sitting over the night shuttle launch in Cape Canaveral in latter Nov. 1985 when videotaped by a private photographer.

I persuaded NBC engineer Ron Cole and his colleagues to analyze a copy of that video tape frame by frame. In 17 frames, that little ball of energy above the explosion moved off on its own course, independent of the Titan explosion. Since the launch area for such missile launches is controlled and there were no aircraft over the explosion, then one again has a very clear signature. The KGB killed the Titan, with 100% certainty.

That of course was a test of the interferometry weapons in the role of *Launch Phase ABM system*. Tested against the Arrow, the KGB operators were emulating test of the system in a *Launch Phase Antibomber role*. These were vital *strategic* weapon tests. I published details of the use of the weapons in many other roles.

Dead-Man Fuzing and Outside Assistance Deterred a Full Strategic Attack in 1986

We have previously documented and published why the U.S. was not fully attacked and destroyed by the Soviets in 1986. It was because of our nuclear facilities, warheads, etc. which would have exploded, creating great fallout hazards worldwide, and because of nuclear dead-man fuzing weapons clandestinely placed in Russia by one or more other nations.

A friendly small nation possessing energetics weapons also intervened directly in l986, and blew up several Russian missile ammunition storage sites, some five or so in six months. In one such explosion, about one third of all the missiles in the Russian Northern Fleet were destroyed. As we stated, the so-called "Cold War" was not nearly so cold as has been represented.

In short, the friendly little nation served notice on the Soviets that, if they moved against the West, the Soviet Union itself would suffer terribly. They put it in language clearly understood by the KGB. So any full-up strategic attack for that period was stalemated by that combination of factors.

A major concern for the Soviets was their inability to counter the dead-man fuzing problem posed by nuclear weapons clandestinely hidden inside Russia and by the nuclear warheads and reactors inside the targeted nation(s). They already had the quantum potential (QP) answer *theoretically,* and had conducted a demonstration test of a laboratory QP device, but they had not yet completed the *QP* weapon systems and deployed them.

Nonetheless, a very powerful strike of peculiar nature—induction of a giant earhquake in the San Andreas Fault zone, including in both Los Angeles and San Francisco—was scheduled. This strike would have caused billions of do11ars worth of damage and would have killed perhaps 200,000 Americans. The initiation of the strike was actually begun in April 1986—as the reader can begin to see**,** there was to be one helluva May Day report in 1986! Incredibly, a private group here in the U.S. then made a unique and unprecedented contribution that sa**ved t**he day for Los Angeles and San Francisco.

What Really Happened in the Chernobyl Disaster

Using **the** "inside" of the Woodpecker beams as superhighways for their longitudinal waves and interferometry, in April 1986 the KGB interferometers had started their build-up of substantial induced EM energy in the sides of the San Andreas Fault that runs through Los Angeles and up through San Francisco. Two beams were being used by the Soviets: One was coming down on the target from the North—coming over the North Pole regions and the ice caps—and one was coming around from the East and upon the target area. Completely (100%) certain signatures were present, including some ELF "chugger" waves symptomatic of the Soviet method of inducing very large quakes. The time-energy is being used, hence very low frequency ELF is employed to maximize the amount of time-energy available for transduction in the rocks on the side of the fault. The Soviets were building up a very large earthquake—indeed, to spawn a whole series of such quakes all along the San Andreas fault—with severe aftershocks following after the main quake had done terrible damage. In short, they were preparing to hit California with the "big one" that everybody had been anticipating and dreading for so long.

A private group contacted me. They stated they could take out one of the transmitters by producing a powerful (giant) phase conjugate replica signal pulse upon it that would backtrack right into the transmitter and catastrophically burn it out—a surface application of the "phase conjugate shooting" once considered for armed satellites that could shoot down rising hostile ICBMs at 10,000 miles distance. As I understood it, they had a new kind of essentially noise-free regenerative amplifier, used in a transmitter. This meant that *extreme amplification* could be achieved in a pulse response to a received Woodpecker signal, before the transmitter burned out.[43] Since the group had no knowledge of the exact KGB transmitter locations or the possible consequences of such an action, they asked my opinion as to the risks associated. This placed me in a real quandary.

At the time, the U.S. was literally under siege. We have mentioned some of the

---

[43] A very subtle but important point is this: An energy flow of any amount—say, 10^{20} joules per second—has absolutely *zero power* if none of that energy flow is diverted or changed in form. So if one has a truly perfect noise-free amplifier, and a pure noise-free energy signal input, the signal energy input can be directly and freely amplified without limit, so long as those noise-free conditions can be upheld. In short, that rigorously constitutes *regauging,* and the widely used **and** well-known axiom of gauge freedom—the ability to change the local energy density of a system or spacetime freely and at will—applies. Relativistically, such re-gauging is merely rotating the frame of the system away from the laboratory frame. This group indeed had such an amplifier, which I physically saw, and apparently has it today. Our present texts have not yet realized the real implications of gauge freedom: It means that one can freely amplify energy without limit, once certain conditions (no divergence of the energy or change of its form) are met. This does not violate energy conservation; the "potential energy of a system" is not a fixed number at all, but depends on the frame of the observer vis a vis the frame of the system. We point out that there really are no true conservation laws in general relativity unless introduced by arbitrary measured The great Hilbert already knew this in 1917, two years after the advent of Einstein's general relativity. Hilbert stated: "*/ assert... that for the general theory of relativity, i.e., in the case of general invariance of the Hamiltonian function, energy equations... corresponding to the* ***energy*** *equations in orthogonally invariant theories do not exist at all. I could even take this circumstance as the characteristic feature of the general theory of relativity."* [D. Hilbert, *Gottingen Nachrichten,* Vol. 4, 1917, p. 21]. Loskutov and Logunov commented as follows: *"In formulating the equivalence principle, Einstein actually abandoned the idea of the gravitational field as a Faraday-Maxwell field, and this is reflected in the pseudotensorial characterization of the gravitational field that he introduced. Hilbert was the first to draw attention to the consequences of this. ... Unfortunately, ... Hilbert was evidently not understood by his contemporaries, since neither Einstein himself nor other physicists recognized the fact that in general relativity conservation laws for energy, momentum, and angular momentum are in principle impossible."* ["Nonuniqueness of (he predictions of the general theory of relativity," *Sov. J. Part. Nucl,* 18(3), May-June 1987, p I79).

"target year" activities, such as kill of the Arrow DC-8, flameout of jet engines early in 1985, target practice against shuttle launches at Cape Canaveral in November 1985, etc. Actually kill of targets had continued in 1986. A huge earthquake followed by several large aftershocks had been used against Mexico City on 19 September 1985, causing great damage and demonstrating a little of what might be expected when they chose to hit Los Angeles and San Francisco much harder. The Mexico City quake had been preceded by an induced, giant hailstorm weeks earlier, and on the evening of 18 September 1985 by giant radial cloud signatures accompanying the generation of excess energy in the underlying rocks as the KGB prepared next day's giant Mexico City quake. The reader should recall that, working with Sweet during this period, I knew with certainty which earthquakes were natural and which were manmade.

U.S. missiles and aircraft had been hit, the Challenger had been destroyed, and the Titan 34-D had been destroyed at Vandenberg AFB on 18 April 1986, accompanied by a 100% indicator (the substantiated presence of the marker beacon for registration and shift firing). In addition, a little Richter 5.3 quake in the San Francisco Bay area had been induced by the Soviets on 31 March 1986, a quake which was correlated with preparatory activity on the Woodpecker transmitter signals the day before, showing Soviet induction of the energy to create the quake. Again, we had instrumental evidence that it was manmade.

That quake on 31 March had been a "warm-up" and practice for the big one now about to be induced in both Los Angeles and San Francisco, and along the San Andreas Fault. In fact, it appeared that the entire fault zone would be stimulated by deposit of excess energy all along its length. In that case, induction of a distrituted California quake of unprecedented extent and great magnitude was now in process, though just beginning. If that event or those events occurred, the loss of American lives and property would be staggering.

The High Side Risk Factor

The group's query to me presented a very difficult decision situation. Such huge Soviet interferometer beams, once built up, contain *enormous* longitudinal EM wave energy. If a Soviet transmitter were near large nuclear facilities, and were instantly blown and shorted, all that potential energy might flash directly into the ground.

In case of such a catastrophic transmitter failure, an enormously powerful longitudinal wave pulse would spread out in all directions in the surrounding earth. The first nuclear material the pulse encountered would be fissioned abruptly and very violently. If the transmitter were within a few kilometers of one or more of the large "monster" Soviet ICBM sites, the full-up explosion of several 30 or 40 megaton warheads might result—in the dirt and dirty. The resulting fallout and contamination would be massive, would spread round the world, and would eventually kill millions for years to come. Nuclear reactor stations were a similar risk; instant fission of all the fissionable material in one of them would constitute an unprecedented and giant nuclear explosion, in the dirt and dirty. That was the high side risk.

The Low Side Risk Factor

The low side risk would be that little or nothing at all would happen; perhaps a tremor induced in a nearby fault zone, etc. I knew that the Soviets—after an early Kyshtym transmitter failure—had produced such a flashover on a much smaller scale and that flashover had caused the nuclear explosion of nearby stored nuclear wastes. The resulting fallout contaminated some 1200 square kilometers, which is still contaminated to this day. I also knew that, after Kyshtym, the Soviets had installed safety devices on all their scalar interferometer transmitters in case of just such failures.

So if the safety devices held when the transmitter suddenly shorted out, they could hold the longitudinal EM wave beams and potentials long enough to drain the energy slowly and harmlessly into the earth over an extended period. That was the low side risk.

The *most likely* consequence, of course, would be somewhere in the middle, between the extreme upper risk and lower risk limits. In other words, we could expect some bad repercussions in the Soviet Union almost certainly, but hopefully it would mostly be confined to that spot.

Consequences of Not Taking Counterfire Action

If no action were taken, the risk to the U.S. was appalling. If the transmitters continued, then perhaps 200,000 Americans were going to die in Los Angeles and San Francisco and along the San Andreas Fault. Perhaps 300,000 more Americans would be injured, and many of them would also die. Enormous physical damage would also be done, and those basins would be disaster areas for some years to come. It would be interpreted by our inadequate scientific community as a great "natural" disaster caused by a giant earthquake, and the ghost of Khrushchev would have had one more laugh at us, with his words "We will bury you!" silently ringing in the ether.

My Recommendation to the Counterfire Group

To save those American lives, some reasonable element of risk had to be accepted. In other words, it became a classic "risk-to-benefit" military analysis, but one that was deadly serious. To me, as a military person the medium risk had to be accepted in such case.

I gave the group my reasoning. They then asked what I would personally do if my own finger were on the fire switch. I answered that I would take out the transmitter or transmitters and save those American lives, accept the medium risk, trust in God, and pray **for** the best. Military decisions often have to be made in just such uncertain conditions. If one's military could not make such tough decisions, then one's military forces would inevitably lose their wars.

The Group Fired and Took Out a Transmitter

The group thanked me, stated that they would fire, and hung up the phone. See Figure 57. They did fire on April 25, just as they promised, and they did destroy one of the KGB transmitters—apparently located some kilometers (perhaps 30?) from the Soviet nuclear reactors at Chernobyl.

At the moment the transmitter was hit and destroyed, engineer Bill Bise—out in the field with magnetic field detectors and measuring the Woodpecker beams—observed the abrupt failure of the Woodpecker transmitter beam coming around **the E**arth from the East. Thus, he actually detected the successful destruction of that distant interferometer transmitter. Unknowingly he had detected the results of a great counterstrike in a very dangerous strategic battle.

TAIL—END ESCAPED AND DISCHARGED
SAFETY CIRCUITS
GIANT STANDING SCALAR EM WAVE
MODIFIED RADAR
EGP
CHERNOBYL NUCLEAR REACTORS
STORAGE CELLS
SLOW DRAIN FIELD
• 25 Apr. 1986
–Bill Bise detects loss of East-West Woodpecker transmitter
–Safety circuits kick in
–Chernobyl shuts down nuclear reactors
• 26 Apr. 1986
–Safety circuits fail
–Potential flash-discharges
–Strikes nearest reactor
–U fuel rods flare in fission
–Ruptures container
–Spews out nuclear material

Figure 57 Chernobyl disaster 25-26 April 1986.

Results at the Transmitter and at Chernobyl

We were very, very lucky. At the destroyed transmitter site, the safety circuits kicked in and caught the huge beam potential and held it for about 24 hours, gradually draining down the intense beam energy into the earth in a slow manner all the while.

A **frantic** Russian message to the Chernobyl reactors galvanized the operators to immediately shut down those reactors (put in the cadmium control rods).

However, the uranium in the fuel rods was of course still sitting there. Chernobyl then waited with bated breath to see if the safety circuits would hold.

Then on 26 April, the safety circuits at the transmitter site finally crumbled, and a far weaker LW flashover occurred than would have occurred earlier without the safety. The spreading LWs in the earth struck the nearest reactor core at Chernobyl, preceded seconds before by a tremor induced in the earth at Chernobyl as the LWs arrived. *Part* of the struck uranium in the core fissioned immediately, venting the containment structure and spewing out radioactive material. Nuclear fallout spread over much of Europe. The rest of the disaster is well known.

That unknown group, in my estimation, saved a large number of American lives—at least 200,000 or more and perhaps as many as 300,000. They also prevented enormous physical damage to California, both to Los Angeles and San Francisco and to points in between. The members of that group are the unsung heroes of this bizarre episode. It is my hope that I may live to turn the names of those persons in for the award of a very high Presidential medal. Until then I will not reveal those names under any circumstance.

Whether or not the U.S. scientific and intelligence communities know it or believe it is of no concern. What matters is that a great many Americans are still alive, and their children born since then are alive. Those Americans otherwise would have been very, very dead or never born. I personally have reflected on those desperate circumstances many times. If I had it to do over again, I would unhesitatingly urge the same action: Fire and save those American lives, and accept the medium risk. And pray.

And I did pray after recommending the strike. In my opinion, this time my fervent prayers were answered. I am extraordinarily sorry for the civilian deaths that occurred; all one can say is that it was under severe circumstances and in a very peculiar—and very desperate—war.

The Soviets had many other interferometers on line. They induced a substantial earthquake in Mexico at the end of April. Thus they did complete their "earthquake footsteps" of the milestone. On 7 May they induced a 7.7 Richter quake in the Aleutian Islands. If 7.7 to 9.5 quakes had hit all along the San Andreas Fault in Los Angeles and San Francisco and in between, then the destructive scenario I had envisioned for the West Coast would have occurred.

OTHER CLOUDS MOVING WITH WIND APROX. 20 MPH (WEST TO EAST)
CLOUDS LEAVING OR JOINING ARC
UPPER EDGE IRREGULAR
STATIONARY ARC OF CLOUDS
WELL DEFINED LOWER EDGE
DATE: 11/12/86
TIME: 2130
OBSERVER LOOKING SOUTH FROM I-285, NEAR ROSWELL RD., ATLANTA, GA

Figure 58 "Bottling up" shield practice over Atlanta 12 Nov. 1986. With a real shield, aircraft or missiles flying into it (from inside or from outside) explode and are destroyed.

On 12 November 1986 the Soviets even placed a giant "dummy shield" (practice) over Atlanta, Georgia (Figure 58). If the shield had been real and not just practice, any aircraft and missiles flying into it would have been instantly exploded and destroyed. That mode—"bottling up" a strategic weapons area—is useful to nullify an entire strategic ICBM launch complex or a large bomber base, etc. It can also "bottle up" a large carrier task force at sea, including the aircraft and the Tomahawk missiles, the shells from the naval guns, etc.

Kill of the Challenger Included Use of Metal-Softening

As we mentioned, during that 1986 preparation period the Russians also destroyed the Challenger spacecraft (January 28, 1986). Numerous signatures abounded, all of which we have already published.

A few weeks before the kill of the Challenger, a close colleague had experimentally proven that a metal-softening signal was indeed placed on the Russian "woodpecker" signals (Figure 7). He did this quite simply: he wired himself into a receiver, through an intervening amplifier, and tuned the receiver to the Woodpecker signals.[44] Then he took nails from a can of nails he was using, and hit them with a hammer to drive them into planks. The nails all folded up instantly like totally wet noodles. A couple dozen, one right after the other. Simultaneously, his son—who was not connected to the Soviet signal—was pounding nails from the same box, normally and without difficulty. None of the nails picked up and pounded by his son experienced any difficulty or softness.

---

[44] Here he was taking advantage of the fact that the infolded LW signals inside the Woodpecker carrier wave, comprising the "engines" for metal-softening, also constitute "perfect" divergence-free EM energy, so to speak, at least overall. Amplifying the signal also amplifies the "engine" inside it. When connected to his body, "potentials superpose" is the rule, and that transferred the amplified engines to his body and into the EM field immediately surrounding his body. Hence he softened the hammer metal a tiny bit, and softened the much less tempered nails quite a bit more.

Then my friend disconnected himself from the signal, and waited a bit. Whereupon when he then used nails from that same box, he drove them in without difficulty. There were no more "wet noodle" nails.

We reach a very simple conclusion: When he connected to an amplified Woodpecker signal, his body was time-excitation charged (quick charge and quick decay) with a specific signal so that the nails he picked up were charged. Then when hit with the hammer, the nails acted as if made of very limp rubber without a rebound. When he disconnected from the amplified Woodpecker signal, and waited a moment for the induced charge in his body to dissipate, the nails also discharged their engines and quit acting like limp rubber bands when hit, and became normal nails with normal behavior. That would seem to be quite sufficient to prove the thesis.

The Challenger was then destroyed, as we previously printed, with numerous signatures of the hit, including even a KGB party in Moscow to celebrate the success of killing the vehicle (and getting away with it).

Cold Molding: An Epilog to the Metal-Softening Donnybrook

I was called a total lunatic for pointing out a metal-softening capability on the Russian signals. So be it. Metal softening is achieved by an engine which serves as a pumped phase conjugate mirror for the vibrations and signals in the lattice bonds of metals. Build up that engine in the metal until the precisely reversed and overlaid signals negate the normal signals, and one has "dissolved" the lattice bonds, converting the solid to a liquid. Lattice bond cancellation is not heating.

But that was not to be the end of the "metal softening" story.

A few years later, working informally with a large UK aerospace firm "for free", I furnished them an address in Moscow of some Russian scientists associated on the perimeter of the KGB energetics weapon program. The address had been taken from their cautious advertisement for business on the Internet and furnished to me by a correspondent. A UK engineer fluent in Russian was sent to meet with those scientists in Russia. They nervously showed him several novel things, one of which was "cold-molding" of metal. The liquefied the **metal**

The result was that a hammer blow onto a nail head resulted in the nail acting as a limp noodle upon impact.

without heating, poured it in a mold, and waited for the "effect" to wear off and the liquid to turn back into a solid again.

Briefly, an energetics charge (using LWs) was induced on the metal lattice vibrations, adding their phase conjugate replicas to the interior LWs comprising the lattice bond signals. The metal's atoms were time-density charged to an excited state (presently not recognized in Western science). Thereupon the metal lattice EM forces "dissolved" and the metal became liquid at room temperatures and without heating. The cool liquid metal was then poured into a mold. Then after awhile, the time-density charge and slowly drained away, and the metal resumed its normal solid state—all without any heating whatsoever.

On a subsequent trip the engineer brought that Russian team itself out of Russia and to the UK. The Russian scientists demonstrated cold molding to assembled UK scientists, and to some U.S. visitors. The phenomenon was physically demonstrated and proven.

I was correct about the metal softening then. We were also correct back there in 1986 about the metal-softening signal employed against the Challenger (together with several other things).

There are numerous other signatures on the death of the Challenger. Again, *the death of the Challenger was not an accident.* It was due to a deliberate act of war by the KGB. The KGB knew in advance—after substantial probing incidents—that they would get away with it. And they did so.

Additional Update from Year 1998 to Year 2,000 Has Been Given

In the action package we sent to the DoD in 1998, we told the rest of the KGB energetics weapons story up to that date. We gave the attack plans as we saw them and the most useful types of attacks to be expected.

I hope the reader is interested in this special energetics weapons information. High power microwave weapons, high energy lasers, and nuclear weapons are useful but no longer decisive weapons either strategically or on the battlefield against a foe equipped with such energetics weapons, and particularly against a foe equipped with quantum potential weapons and negative energy EMP weapons.

At present, we are intensely watching to see if we can pick up indicators for the next scheduled strategic attack, its probable timing, and the "new twists" included in it.

Presently, we have perhaps an 80% chance that the little nation can once again counter any new threat and cause the KGB to abort the impending attack. On the other hand, with Putin apparently limiting at least some of the action of the KGB, we have moved into our present asymmetrical warfare against terrorism—

and ultimately against the extensive terrorist teams and assets already infiltrated into our homeland.

As a single example, before the collapse of the former Soviet empire, the Russians long ago slipped in nuclear weapons (from 20 to 40 KT) and hid them in all our large cities and population centers, along with the Spetznaz teams to detonate them on command.[45] Several nations have introduced teams with normal sabotage assets and also with weapons of mass destruction such as radioactive nuclear materials (for a dirty bomb), anthrax, smallpox, bubonic plague, etc. Behind the scenes, the die-hard remnant of the old KGB crew are using QP weapons to "spread" the immune systems (Figure 53) of our populace and materially enhance any BW strikes that the terrorists unleash. The rogue Japanese team (Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo) on site in Russia are using their LWIs in a giant weather war and the occasional kill of an aircraft, etc. Over the decades Castro infiltrated some 10,000 guerrilla/special forces types trained in camps in Southern Mexico for decades. Probably at least half are still loyal and dedicated—and waiting to blow up bridges, power substations, high voltage power distribution system towers, dams, harbor facilities, refineries, pipelines (both oil and gas), etc. The first phase of WW III—delivery of the weapons of destruction and mass destruction to the targets along with means to unleash them—has already been accomplished.

We are particularly struggling against the rise of asymmetrical warfare—the superpower's paradox (Figure 59)—and our present involvement in that "new" kind of warfare is still quite foreign to us. Only time will tell how well we fare in this new type of war, which we will be engaged in for many years to come. Vice President Cheney rightly regards it as almost a state of perpetual warfare we shall have to learn to live with, as shown by his words on Oct. 21, 2001:

"The war on terrorism will not be over in our lifetime. It is different than the Gulf War was in the sense that it may never end. At least not in our lifetime. The way I think of it is, it's a new normalcy."

---

[45] See Stanislav Lunev (with Ira Winkler), *Through the Eyes of the Enemy,* Regnery, Washington, 1998. Lunev is a high-ranking GRU defector. He is a former Colonel in the GRU, the military counterpart of the KGB. In p. 22-33, he summarizes the Spetznaz capabilities. On p. 22-27, he summarizes Spetznaz use of nuclear weapons already on American soil. On p. 26, he gives some of the ways in which the Soviets easily brought nuclear weapons into the U.S. On p. 30 he confirms Russian seismic weapons. Use of EMP weapons is on p. 30-31. Use of very, very low frequency weapons to destroy the human brain, put people into a zombie-like state, and aid in brainwashing is confirmed on p. 31. And this is i**nformation** Okayed by the CIA for release!

LIBYA
EGYPT
SUDAN
SAUDI ARABIA
IRAN

Complex, expensive, high tech

Simple, cheap, low tech initially.
Later includes high tech and very high tech.

Figure 59 The superpower paradox: Asymmetric cheap WMD strategic strikes and destruction, later becoming extremely high tech and extreme yield.

There is Also a Severe Bioenergetics (EM Biological Warfare) Threat

The threat from bioenergetics is equally vivid. That old die-hard section of the KGB can now attack an entire population, e.g., with electrodynamically (energetics) induced diseases of any kind whatsoever, particularly when using QP weapons. Such attacks are totally immune to inoculations and antibiotic treatment. Any kind of strain or variation of a disease can also be induced in the pathogen pool for that disease. Against a foe who has such capabilities, our entire medical establishment—including all our emergency treatment procedures and agents—*is obsolete right now.* A vaccination and the presence of antibodies, e.g., does absolutely nothing against the EM induction of the exact physical effects and form of a disease, as shown in the decades-long "microwave radiation" of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow (Figure 11).

To the Assistant to the SecDef in such matters, in 1998 we furnished a 200+ page briefing package and loosely proposed a crash development of the new type of medical therapeutic treatment devices pioneered and proven by the Priore group in France in the 1960s and early 1970s. Later, Congressman Cramer queried that office for an answer.

Unfortunately the Assistant SecDef s office erroneously responded to Congressman Cramer that nothing in the literature supported the mechanisms proposed. Indeed, the package we furnished contained a *detailed list* citing the hard French scientific papers in the literature, reporting the exact experiments and the astounding results obtained. Some 2,000 highly successful animal experiments for more than a decade of experiments in fact supported the thesis, and higher group symmetry electrodynamics fully supports the ability to use EM means to make spacetime curvature engines, so that these engines then interact back upon the targeted matter to perform the actions desired. That it does not appear in conventional electrical engineering is of no consequence; it appears in physics and it is good physics, just on the cutting edge.

We also reported, explained, and cited Becker's epochal work (Figures 27 and 28), which is copiously published in the hard literature and which was an example of the fundamental mechanism also. Becker was twice nominated for a Nobel Prize for his outstanding work. Unfortunately, the Assistant SecDef s office responded with a non sequitur.

Packages were sent also to NIH, NSF, CDC, and several other government agencies. Not a single one of those agencies was interested enough to have a competent scientist contact me and discuss the area. I strongly doubt that a single scientist anywhere in the Government bothered to *seriously* read and ponder the material so painfully and expensively compiled and furnished. Lieutenant Colonel (Retired) Ken Moore and I worked our fingers to the bone for weeks, preparing that briefing, and we spent all the spare money doing it that we could rake up and obtain.

The near-total lack of response itself seems astounding, but it clearly shows the state of U.S. science with respect to novel energetics innovations, even long after those innovations have been experimentally proven and documented in the hard literature, and even after they have been weaponized against us. It is a direct indication of why the U.S. never deciphered what was going on in some four decades of Soviet weak microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, including the kill (eventual deaths) of three U.S. Ambassadors.

For decades there have been manipulations, to say the least, in the hotly contested field of the biological effects of EM radiation. We refer the interested reader to an excellent expose of that situation: The expose is by Dr. Andrew A. Marino, Ph.D., J.D., *Powerline Electromagnetic Fields and Human Health,* which is current. I believe it can be freely downloaded from: http://www.ortho.lsumc.edu/Faculty/Marino/PowerlineTOC.html. Dr. Marino has been personally and deeply involved in the investigation of EM bioeffects, in court cases, and in Blue Ribbon Panel investigations and proceedings. The book is an eye-opener, and it gives one a good view of the machinations in the EM bioeffects field. We quote directly from Dr. Marino, Chap. 6, p. 1:

> *"Oversimplistic as it may sound, whoever pays for EMF bioeffects research and analysis determines what data is produced and the way it is interpreted. Soon after the possibility that powerline EMFs were health risks was raised in a legal dispute involving the New York Public Service*

> *Commission, power companies and their trade associations, particularly the Electric Power Research Institute (EPRI), became massively involved in EM bioeffects research. Subsequently, the power industry dominated funding of the effects of powerline EMFs, both in terms of absolute dollars and compared with dollars from non-industry sources...the power companies and their trade associations were deeply deceitful regarding the information they provided to scientists and to the public regarding the potential health hazards of powerline EMFs."*

In the entire EM bioeffects field, there does not appear to be any mention of, study of, or recognition of EM bioeffects induced by the most powerful EM factors: longitudinal EM wave irradiation, time-polarized EM wave irradiation, and time-excitation charging of particles throughout the body and its cells, with resulting emission of transduced longitudinal and transverse EM radiation *from-within-to-without.*

National Institute of Health Reaction

NIH replied to my letter and action package from their *Policy*—read: *spin control*—Section. They noted that the package mentioned the Gulf War Syndrome, which was not in their mission area. So they just sent it off packing to DoD (simplest way to get rid of it, apparently no one seriously read it or even cared to read it). I queried them back by separate response letter about their lack of interest in a revolutionary proven new medical methodology well-documented to cure cancer and other dread diseases, in many hundreds of experiments by leading French medical scientists. This was certainly within their mission area.

They hastily replied from the *Policy* Section that, yes of course NIH was interested in all such things, and told me where to "submit a proposal." We never got out of their *Policy* department. Again, not a single competent scientist in the U.S.'s supposed master medical agency apparently even read the package or cared to call and discuss the matter. This was an indicator of their total lack of any grasp of the energetics threat, its testing, and its use to induce the Gulf War Disease.

Now perhaps one can see why we are so far behind the KGB energetics weapons scientists and weapons program.

Marino, *ibid.,* is particularly enlightening on the adamant opposition by appropriate sections of NIH vis a vis the harmful effect of nonionizing EM radiation.

No responses at all were received from the NSF and the CDC, or the other U.S. government agencies to which the package was furnished.

The CDC of course comes under NIH, and thus its responses or lack thereof would be dictated by the parent NIH policies. As for the NSF, Marino, *ibid.,* again is enlightening on the qualifications or lack thereof of its membership.

So as the reader can see, the top of the medical establishment in this nation is flatly not interested in any "controversial" or "out of the box" proven method for curing cancer, dread diseases, and mass treatment of those millions of American casualties that are coming in our cities and population centers. Again, they directly ignore scientific method's very premise: *If the experiment is replicated and contradicts the theory, accept the experiment and change the theory.* I personally concluded that the U.S. Medical establishment largely does not follow scientific method, but follows dogma and the already approved methodologies.

How the New Revolution in Medical Healing Works

For the reader who is a medical scientist and trained in physiology and biology, one might be interested in that revolutionary French therapeutic methodology and how it worked (before it was ruthlessly suppressed in the early 1970s).

Priore's apparatuses (Figures 12,49, and 60) simply pumped the cells of the entire body with longitudinal EM waves (each accompanied of course by its time-polarized twin, in a Whittaker pairing). The cells and every part of them are very nonlinear, so they act as pumped phase conjugate mirrors for Whittaker wave-pair engines resident in the cells and acting as "input signal complexes".

Once the cells are pumped by these now-established *time-density* waves, the damaged or diseased cellular masses slowly "charge up" with excess time-excitation. The irradiation took several hours, and this was the "activation" or "time-excitation charging" stage. Thereafter, the time-charge decayed slowly, all the while constituting *pumping* of every cell and every part of it, in the time domain.

The resident engine in the cell contains two components: (1) the normal or healthy component, and (2) the abnormal component representing disease or debility. Pumping these two components time-reverses both of them and amplifies that reversal. This creates amplified and incredibly precise *antiengines* in each cell and in each part of each cell. These antiengines override the weaker cellular engines resident. In turn, this "reversing" action of the antiengines causes the pumped cellular masses (actually the mass-energy, in its exact structure and dynamics)—at any and all levels, including the genetics—to be time-reversed back to normal. In biological instead of physics terms, it "dedifferentiated" the diseased or altered cells back to a previous healthy state by simply eliminating the diseased engine component. *This is a dramatic extension of nonlinear optical phase conjugation from the 3-space pumping domain to pumping in the complex (time) plane, and it is effective for time-reversing mass-energy at any and all frequencies. We accent that the cellular*

time *reversal back to a previous state includes all the cell's genetics and every* ***part*** *of the cell no matter how small.*

Time-reversing the cells back to normal state
START
SELECT A SET OF TRANSVERSE EM WAVES
MIX WAVES IN A PLASMA, CONVERT TO LONGITUDINAL EM WAVES
MIX OUTPUT INSIDE STRONG PULSED DC MAGNETIC FIELD
EXPOSE WHOLE BODY OF PATIENT TO DIMENSIONED MAGNETIC FIELD
CELL AND ALL ITS PARTS ARE PUMPED IN INNER EM CHANNEL IN TIME DOMAIN
VACUUM ENGINE FOR DISEASED CELL ALREADY PRESENT
ADJUST WAVE FREQUENCIES IF REQUIRED, AND IRRADIATE AGAIN
DISEASED CELL PHASE CONJUGATES ITS VACUUM ENGINE
FORMS AMPLIFIED VACUUM ANTIENGINE FOR CELL'S DISEASE VACUUM ENGINE
STOP
YES
NO
CELL RESTORED TO NORMAL?
ANTIENGINE CONTINUES TO ACT AND TIME-REVERSE CELL AND ALL ITS PARTS*
TIME-EXCITATION CHARGING ENDS. IRRADIATION IS HALTED.
*Includes genetics

Figure 60 Block diagram of Priore's healing (regenerative and time-reversing) process.

Normal cells are just backed up to a slightly younger condition. Diseased cells **have** their abnormal engine component overridden and reversed back to zero (its earlier state), so that only a slightly younger normal engine remains resident in the cell. This simultaneously reverses the cellular masses back to their previous healthy condition.

Contrast this direct healing mechanism to the action of the immune system.

The immune system itself does not *heal* anything. It contains the killers, the scavengers, the locators, the markers, the attackers, and the troops manning the ram**parts.** Usually after a fierce battle with invading hostile pathogens, it wins. Lots of cells still living are damaged in the melee. The immune system scavenger cells then scavenge up the residue littering the battlefield. But *the immune system itself cannot heal and restore a single damaged cell, including one of its own.*

That healing and restoration of damaged cells is the job of the *regenerative system,* still little known and inadequately studied today. Perhaps the most fundamental studies were mostly by Becker *et al.* some decades ago. The regenerative system (Figure 29) is an EM system in its operation, as clearly shown by Becker (Figures 27 and 28), yet it is able to physically differentiate and dedifferentiate cells from one form to another at will, and in highly selective fashion. The regenerative system acts within its limitations (only weak pumping can be done for the time-reversal of diseased or damaged cells) to eliminate the delta (the deviation from normal of the resident engines in the pumped cell). That restores the normal (healthy) engine and slightly amplifies it as well.

It is obviously of the utmost medical importance to understand and apply (and amplify) this little-known technical mechanism by which the regenerative system is able to restore damaged cells back to normal.

It turns out that *the regenerative system in its novel EM functioning uses precisely LW and TDW pumping of those damaged cells and gradually time-reverses their entire masses back to a normal healthy state, within its limitations.*

This is the secret of the mechanism of the cellular regenerative system—which is an electrodynamic system of very unusual nature. The exact mechanism has not previously appeared in the literature. It took me 14 years to uncover that fundamental mechanism, and another 4 or 5 to refine it a bit, even though both Priore and Becker (as well as others) applied it decades before without being able to fully decipher it.

The experimental proof is already in the literature, once one understands the higher topology EM unwittingly used by both Becker and the Priore team. The proper types of higher group symmetry electrodynamics required to understand the action of the cellular regenerative system are available. There exist scientists skilled in their application and use. These scientists and that higher group symmetry electrodynamics are little used, and are never used at all in the medical field. There exists no funding anywhere for higher EM examination and modeling of the functioning of the cellular regenerative system—i.e., for the fundamental healing process.

Just imagine what this could mean to medicine: *One can now develop a new medical science to amplify and apply nature's own proven method of restoration and healing of damaged cells, including all their damaged genetic material*. It matters not what caused the damage, whether pathogen or gamma radiation, whatever. This new therapeutic method is a totally new general relativistic process where powerful spacetime engines are created which work directly upon the damaged cell and every part of it, physically reversing the cell and all its parts precisely back to normal condition.

General relativity rigorously tells us that a precise spacetime curvature engine (set of precise spacetime curvatures) is present and active for every specific disease condition and every nuance in it. It also tells us this flawed (disease or damage carrying engine) continuously operates on the cellular mass at every level, maintaining the exact physical condition of the cell and its dynamics. By creating a precise "anti-engine" and amplifying and applying it, general relativity assures us that we are physically acting upon the cell and all its parts at every level, down to the smallest—to precisely return every part in perfect proportion back to a previous normal healthy condition. *Pautrizel directly proved the time-reversal to an actual earlier state of the cells and the organism* (Figure 61). Amplification by time-domain EM pumping, means that we can cause this time-reversal of the cells back to normal to happen much more quickly than can the body itself, which can only pump very weakly.

- Pautrizel compared identical treatment of immature rats with immature immune systems, and mature rats with mature immune systems.
- Treatment restored the damaged mature system back to full mature functioning, and it promptly recognized and dispatched the pathogens.
- Treatment restored the damaged immature system back to full immature functioning, unable to cope, and the pathogens promptly reinfected and killed the immature rat.
- The lesson: The body is indeed returned to a previous physical state. The pathogens themselves are not killed by the treatment, but by restoring the ability of the immune system to recognize and destroy them.
- Only *the previous ability* of the immune system is restored by the process.

PROF RAYMOND PAUTRIZEL
(Renowned Parasitologist)

Figure 61 Pautrizel's proof of time reversal of the stricken cells back to a previous state.

General relativity also assures us that any and every disease is subject to this novel treatment approach, even diseases which have resisted every other known therapy. The Sachs unified general relativity and electrodynamics, and GR/EM unification applications in O(3) electrodynamics produced by Evans, for the first time provide a solid theoretical basis for Priore's methodology and his evolutionary results. They also offer direct engineering of startling physical cures, once the technology is developed.

The profound implications of that treatment can be seen. Apparently, however, **our** leading governmental agencies and health agencies do not see it, do not wish to see it, have no appreciation for general relativistic effects in healing, and do not intend to have any appreciation for general relativistic effects in healing. Indeed, they seem totally uninterested in even trying to comprehend and research *the fundamental healing mechanism* demonstrated by nature herself.

What the French Researchers Showed

Among other things, the Priore team produced revolutionary cures of *terminal tumors, infectious trypanosomiasis, suppressed immune systems, and atheriosclerosis* in several thousand laboratory animals in rigid laboratory tests under rigorous protocols. Eminent scientists such as Robert Courrier and Raymond Pautrizel worked with the Priore team. Courrier was head of the Biology Section of the French Academy of Sciences at the time, also *Secretaire Perpetuel* of the Academy, and a noted scientist of high stature. Courrier personally presented the astounding Priore results to the entire assembled French Academy. He also sent his own most able scientist assistant to personally prepare the terminal tumor grafts on the lab animals before their treatment.

A world-renowned parasitologist who did enormously important work with Priore was Raymond Pautrizel, who is still alive at this writing though quite aged. Pautrizel was greatly persecuted for his years of determination and effort. Courtesy of Pautrizel via the late Christopher Bird, I personally have the very Ph.D. thesis that Priore himself submitted to the University of Bordeaux on his revolutionary work. That thesis was maliciously rejected in the suppression that was applied to the project. When the French Government changed to a Leftist government in the mid-70s, Government support was immediately withdrawn and the project was ruthlessly suppressed. Priore later sickened and died and that was the end of that. More than a decade later a brave and determined Pautrizel finally was able to get a doctoral thesis approved in the Priore work area, at the same university, by another doctoral candidate, Eric Perisse {40}.

There are two U.S. patents on the Priore device itself, and of course several French patents also.

All the above was rigorously documented in the 1998 package prepared and submitted by Ken Moore and I.

While Priore was still alive, a team with which I was connected attempted to mount a well-funded effort to restore the Priore methodology while Priore was still alive. We also were viciously suppressed. The lives of our financial backers and their families were threatened. The head of our project was viciously attacked financially and destroyed, fleeing the country for his very life. Whoever thinks that dramatically innovative medical science in this country is just sweet reason and scientific method, should have a strong enema to remove the serious blockages interfering with his perceptions.

This vicious outside suppression of our project so infuriated me that I made a solemn promise that, were it humanly possible, I would decipher the Priore process before I died. It took 14 years, but we made good on that promise. During the 20 years or so since our project was suppressed, it is heartbreaking to consider the millions of children and sickened and suffering people who could have been saved had the project continued and succeeded. It is heartbreaking now to consider the coming millions of casualties in our civilian populace in our cities, most of who are going to die from mass destruction weapons. And most of those would not have to die, would the scientific community waken from its long sleep and discover some modern physics and higher group symmetry electrodynamics—and their application to solve nature's mechanism for **healing.**

When one time-reverses the body's cells and all their parts, one forces the diseased cells to dedifferentiate back to healthy state. We strongly accent that this is accomplished by unified GR/EM processes involving precisely **organized** spacetime curvatures and their local actions in the cells and all their inner components, down to the finest level. It can be rigorously expressed in good unified physics, as expressed in an electrodynamics such as O(3).

The nondamaged or nondiseased cells just get a little younger. That is also highly beneficial; it reverses the ravages of aging, just a little. Indeed, one of the implications of the Priore mechanism is that aging can indeed be reversed by the process and treatment. Again, one must keep one's sense of humor. In order to get this technology and therapeutic method born, what seems to be needed is an extremely wealthy person, strongly desiring to live longer than the expected life span and do it in a vigorous, healthy body—and who is willing to fund the project with the necessary $60 million required so to redevelop and extend the Priore technology so it can be readily applied. A byproduct will be the saving of millions of American lives when those coming mass casualties from weapons of mass destruction occur in our cities.

How the Regeneration Mechanism Was Finally Deciphered

What took so long in deciphering the mechanism was the problem of how to make such precisely tailored and exact ST curvature engines, specifically so that they are *exact* antiengines for a specific disease and even a specific pathogen, and even for different versions of the engines for different cells in a single body having different strains of the same pathogen, having different body DNA, etc. For years, the solution of that task seemed hopeless. How on earth could one possibly work all that out in a hundred lifetimes, so that it could be precisely calculated even by an array of the most powerful computers on Earth?

After years of struggling with the problem, in one stroke of enlightenment it was revealed to be the simplest thing in all the world. Absolutely no calculation was necessary, and the exact amplified antiengine effect was a fairly simple and straightforward thing to obtain. General relativity tells us that every cellular mass and each part of it, has its own unique spacetime curvature engine, to the finest detail and an exact fit. As Wheeler put it so nicely {130}, *"Space acts on matter, telling it how to move. In turn, matter reacts back on space, telling it how to curve. "* The mass and its dynamics and the engine and its dynamics constantly interact upon each other, and "keep attuned and in perfect adjustment," so to speak.

That means that a "normal" cell already has just such a precise "normal" ST engine residing in it, and acting upon every component at every level—even in the atomic nuclei. Well, a diseased cell has an absolutely specific structuring, and therefore it also has an absolutely specific ST engine structuring. *A priori that* resident structuring for the diseased or damaged state in the individual cell differs (by some delta) from the structuring of the normal healthy cellular state for that individual cell.

Voila! That means that *the ST engine for the damaged cell can be decomposed into two parts (two engines):* (1) the normal "healthy cell" state engine, and (2) a delta ST engine that has been added to it so that together the two comprise the full ST engine for the exact individual condition of the cell.

What is now needed is a way to produce an exact antiengine of two parts: (1) one for the normal engine and (2) a second one for the delta (disease) engine. Applying this amplified and combined "antiengine" would overpower the resident combined engine, precisely reversing the cellular condition by reducing the delta to zero. Rigorously, the cellular mass and every part of it must then also revert to a previous physical state, or else we must complete discard general relativity itself.

Well, if we were to just time-reverse the resident engine and its two components, that would give us the perfect antiengine with its two components. Amplifying this antiengine would then produce one that was more powerful than the resident engine in the cell. Applying that amplified antiengine to the cell, that would not really change the "normal" engine component, but it would precisely reduce the delta engine component back to zero (its previous state, before it was there!) Voila! A specific healing signal of perfect structure, for the specific deviant condition of the individual cell and its every part.

Since we have a combined GR/EM to use, we can think electrodynamically about this general relativity problem. Immediately we see that phase conjugate optics is a candidate, since the "resident composite engine" can correspond to the "signal" or input wave, and the pumping of the nonlinear mass of the cell and its parts (where they act as nonlinear phase conjugate mirror materials) produces an exact phase conjugate replica (the exact amplified antiengine). The presence of that antiengine overrides the magnitude of the resident engine, and it moves the cell precisely back along the temporal path previously taken. In short, it applies a specific kind of dedifferentiation of the cell back to its previous healthy condition.

Since we extend phase conjugate pumping to the time-energy domain, then the resident composite engine and its time-stream component are the "input." The amplified antiengine and its time domain component will then forcibly propagate that pumped mass energy back over the time trajectory previously taken by it. In short, it will time-reverse the cell and all its parts back to a previous condition, completely eliminating the delta (disease or disorder). The beauty is that it will also reverse damaged or altered genetics, such as in the AIDS disease. It can do this prior to the appearance of health symptoms—it can be done as soon as the patient tests positive for HIV.

Since the antiengine is amplified, it moves the cell back to normal fairly rapidly (in a few hours, for example). At least the time charge for the reversal process is delivered in that period; one may allow (as Priore did) a full week for the time-charge and its transduction to continue reversing the cells. But it is much faster than the normal speed of the human regeneration system using the same process, because now we have greatly amplified the time-reversal rate.

It is therefore ideal for a method of quickly treating mass casualties, particularly since it can be developed and used in a portable unit about the size of a large suitcase (Figure 13).

Interestingly, during the radiation with LW EM radiation, one also pumps the pathogen and time-reverses it as well. Its "normal state" towards the beginning was a condition whereby it could move with relative immunity past the immune system's opposition, having deceived the immune system. In the treatment, a small amount of the pathogen is therefore converted back into this condition just shy of the beginning, where that part of the pathogens is resistant to the immune system. However, a very small, short "post treatment" irradiation with LW radiation for a much shorter interval and at weaker power, will clean up this altered pathogen residue by allowing the immune system to recognize it and destroy it. Pautrizel clearly demonstrated this significant fact.

Cellular and Body Rejuvenation are Possible, Once the Technology is Developed

One can in fact really accomplish *rejuvenation* of the aged and infirm, as the technology is developed. One could certainly solve the major problems of Medicare, and cut the patient load at least in half, relatively quickly and inexpensively. Of course lots of big U.S. drug companies will be rather violently opposed to any such idea, because much of their empire would be threatened. Much of the organized medical community depends largely on the Big Drug Approach. So the organized medical community will also vehemently oppose it, just as the formal medical science community in France viciously opposed it.

One could also produce cheap, portable LW treatment units *en masse,* which is what we were suggesting to the Assistant. SecDef. That way one could flood the emergency response system (response teams, hospitals, fire stations, police precinct stations, schools, etc.) with quick and effective treatment devices. They could be used to rapidly {131} treat those millions of American casualties that are going to occur when one or more of our cities are attacked in the near future by terrorist WMD attacks. This would save the lives of most of those stricken millions of Americans.

Mow Many Americans Could Be Saved?

For an anthrax attack on Washington, D.C., first generation equipment could save perhaps 70% of those sickened Americans, almost all of who are going to die with *present* capabilities. With second-generation equipment, one could save perhaps 90%.

For an anthrax attack without spreading via QP clandestine preparation of the populace, one would save 0.7 to 2.1 million Americans. With clandestine KGB QP spreading and a *5:*1 increase in the yield of the anthrax strike, one would save 3.5 to 10.5 million Americans.

For a truly nightmare attack (as a worst case scenario) perhaps 5 major cities might be attacked in such manner and to such degree. In that case, one is talking about saving 3.5 to 10.5 million Americans for the unspread attack case, and up to 17.5 to 52.5 million Americans for the spread case.

Further, the development of the necessary portable treatment units is doable and affordable, for mass treatment capability. Training on a portable machine could be done for a high school student in 30 minutes or less, and that student could then give emergency treatment effectively.

Absolutely nothing else out there can presently warrant such projections. Yet this is the very technology our own medical science community is eminently uninterested in, has no knowledge of, does not wish to obtain any knowledge of, and does not wish to scientifically discuss.

There Are No Resistant Strains to the New Technology, and There Cannot Be Any

A most interesting thing is that there cannot be a "resistant strain" of a pathogen for the new treatment methodology, *a priori.* No mass can shield against spacetime curvature effects. Slight adjustments of the controls will adjust the spacetime engines being utilized. Two or three hour's work with a developed unit and a lab team on a new strain would suffice to completely determine the required adjustments, once the technology is developed. The new information could then be quickly relayed to all stations treating patients. On each treatment device, adjusting a few dials and controls for the laptop computer controlling the unit will do the trick. The use of the final device would be so simple that a teenager could be trained to use it in less than 30 minutes.

Such new capabilities are urgently needed not only for the millions of civilian casualties we expect in the future, but also for support of our armed forces in the field. Frankly, the anthrax shots are not going to do them much good, once one realizes that the "spreading" of their immune and regenerative systems is already occurring via KGB quantum potential means. Camel pox is available to any terrorist foe, and has almost the identical actions and constitution as smallpox. Indeed, it is almost identical to smallpox.

The Gulf War Disease and Syndrome were just small preludes of what is to come and what is already being used against the entire U.S., though as yet very clandestinely. Look again at the Kaznacheyev work. *He clearly proved in thousands of successful experiments that any kind of cellular disease or damage or death whatsoever, can be induced at a distance by novel EM means.* Replication experiments were successfully accomplished at the University of Marburg and also at the University of Sydney.

Results of the Priore' Treatments Are Well-Documented and Independently Supported

The Priore team's results are well documented in the hard French scientific literature. At least one French doctoral thesis was eventually accepted upon the work. The astounding results really occurred. They were scientifically substantiated under rigorous protocols and even police-guarded labs for tests by a learn of outside scientists. To then deny those results simply because no one has *understood* the active mechanism until now, is to deny the scientific method itself: *Believe the experiment when it refutes the prevailing theory.*

There is also independent work by other scientists that strongly supports the Priore results, once the mechanism is finally understood.

Robert Becker *et al.* in the U.S. conclusively showed that living cells *in situ* can be dedifferentiated, redifferentiated, etc. by laughably weak currents (picoamperes) and DC potentials (which are comprised of those famous Whittaker pairs). Becker was unaware that his potentials included time density waves and longitudinal waves, as predicted by quantum field theory and as shown by Whittaker in 1903 (once one understands that a bidirectional phase conjugate longitudinal EM wavepair is a time-density EM wave coupled to a longitudinal EM wave). Application of such EM potentials by Becker transformed red blood cells into pre-cartilage cells, then further into pre-bone cells. That latter cell type was then deposited in bone fractures, healing them when nothing else would. Becker and others have demonstrated partial regeneration of limbs in small test mammals, using the technique. The bone-healing techniques were finally approved by the FDA and are often used in some hospitals for treating otherwise intractable bone fractures.

Since then,other scientists have shown the directed formation of other types of body cells from cells from distant parts of the body (i.e., muscle-type cells from cells produced in the bone marrow, etc.). Such things are now well documented in the U.S. literature, in at least several hundred papers and in the leading journals including *Nature, Science,* etc.

The Present Threat Is Urgent, and Our Strategic Destruction is Still at Issue

Our own medical community, our science community, and our intelligence community are at least 20 years or more behind the KGB right now. We are also behind the Chinese. In many respects our scientists have simply missed the biggest scientific breakthrough of the century.

It is urgent that we find some way to counter and avoid future strategic energetics attacks sure to be scheduled. The eventual attack actually launched—if the little nation's QP weapons can be countered first—would destroy the U.S. in about 2 hours. It only takes about 10 minutes, it seems, for the QP weapons *already deployed* to negate almost all our strategic nuclear arsenal. Thereafter, the KGB and Yakuza/Aum Shinrikyo can simply attack us at will and utterly destroy the U.S. To any loyal American, that is an entirely unacceptable solution.

The most urgent requirement would seem to be immediate and strong contact at the highest level between the U.S. government and the leaders of the little foreign nation (and the other friendly nation) that presently is guarding the ramparts and saving our necks. A cooperative crash program to develop our own QP weapons would seem to be the order of the day, if it can in any fashion be negotiated. But to have any chance of success, the President and the Congress will have to use the utmost care in selecting the U.S. negotiators and scientists to explore this possibility.

Immediate transfer of the requisite capabilities to the U.S. would be desirable, at least from our own view. From their view, of course, we do not necessarily resemble a trustworthy scientific partner at all, based on our past scientific performance, and it is up to the U.S. scientific community to prove to them that the leopard really has changed its spots. That would all have to be negotiated and worked out.

If that is not possible, then it is of extreme urgency that our own country embarks upon a new Manhattan Project to develop strategic quantum potential weapons and defenses. It would be a great relief to discover that such had already been started, but I fear not.

Desperately Needed Defensive Capabilities Can be Provided by a QP Solution

We pose one more very, very useful QP capability prior to closing. As we stated, if a large U.S. city is hit with—say—an anthrax attack done in professional manner, we would expect 1-3 million casualties, according to a well-known major U.S. government study. With immune/regenerative spreading presently already ongoing here in our populace by KGB QP weapons, that figure may actually increase by about 5-fold. So the casualties (prompt and delayed) might well reach 5-15 million, in a single *professional* anthrax spray attack by two persons from one light plane on a calm night dispensing 100 kilograms of anthrax spores sprayed over the city with a simple agricultural sprayer. With the indicated Priore technology and treatment units in all emergency response hands, at least 70% or so of those casualties could be saved. Otherwise, *presently almost all of them will die.* That dramatic saving of lives is one desperately needed capability that could be met.

But there is a further capability of LW technology that nothing else presently known can do without serious impact upon the populace.

After the prompt and shortly delayed casualties are mostly cured and the remaining fraction dies, a terrible problem of BW contamination still remains. No one anywhere really knows how to clean up an entire city from anthrax spores. But unless harshly decontaminated, that contaminated city is going to be effectively uninhabitable for decades to come, if only the present technology and methods are available. Islands of the coast of Scotland, where anthrax was tested decades ago, are still "hot" and contaminated—and off limits.

The indications are that our nation has developed chemical sprays that can kill and neutralize the anthrax, including in the lungs of the populace breathing the spray. On the other hands, it is indicated that the spray is a high physical stress factor, and some of the more debilitated citizens will be injured or even killed by the spray itself. This includes babies and small children, the aged, those with lung and breathing difficulties, etc. As a matter of national survival, desperate diseases do deserve desperate remedies. So while spraying the zone might itself sicken and kill some thousands of our weaker citizens, at least—so the thinking would go—it saves millions. This of course is similar to the use of triage—reserving treatment and scarce medical capabilities and supplies for treating those most likely to live and recover with treatment, rather than treating those more seriously affected and less likely to survive. Sadly, presently triage will almost certainly be necessary because of very short supplies and treatment teams, etc. So most of those 1 to 3 million casualties will simply be dragged aside and left to die, and just made as comfortable as possible.

However, the QP technology can be adapted to produce systems that can indeed do complete decontamination, very quickly, and without harm to the citizens in zone. The anthrax can simply be modified by specialized spacetime curvature engines—specialized EM fields and waves carrying hidden inner "information content of the field" engines that are designed specifically to change and destroy anthrax and nothing else. Eventually one could develop the capability to do it similarly for *any other* major contaminant, including nuclear radioactive materials contamination of a major city.

Any strategic and tactical analyst can immediately see the tremendous value of such capabilities.

In Conclusion

I hope the above admittedly lengthy overview is of interest to the reader and useful. If we are to survive the debacle that now looms before us in this new asymmetrical war we shall be in for decades, it will require the efforts of leading and dedicated Lawmakers and Overwatch persons. Without firm prodding, the military, scientific, and intelligence communities are likely to just continue their present pace until many or most of us all die suddenly.

The KGB energetics threat is still real and imminent; Russia is not a monolith and Putin still does not have complete control over the KGB. Another full strategic attack is sure to be scheduled before very long by either that die-hard faction of the KGB, the Yakuza/Aum Shinrikyo, the Chinese (particularly if they move against Taiwan and we defend), or someone. And so our possible deaths also to be taken into account, if we just continue to do business as usual.

Along with other Americans, I love my country and served it to the best of my ability for 20 years of active duty. It is the survival of America itself that is now at stake, both in the asymmetrical war against terrorists and in the continuing war against energetics weapons. Our scientific, military, and intelligence communities simply must be jolted awake and into massive efforts in energetics.

We have the scientists with the required capability. We have the facilities. We have the leadership, and we can do it if we can put this thing under a Presidential Decision Directive, under an Executive Order and a Declaration of National Emergency (along with the several already in effect).

Thomas E. Bearden, Ph.D.
Lieutenant Colonel, U.S. Army (Retired)
President and CEO, CTEC, Inc.
Director, Assoc. Distinguished American Scientists

1986

Fer De Lance

Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons

T. E. Bearden, Ph.D.
LTC, U.S. Army (Retired)
Director, ADAS

1986

Note: This is the original Fer De Lance briefing paper wich includes some minor text and artwork editing.

1986 FER DE LANCE INTRODUCTION & BRIEFING ON SOVIET SCALAR ELECTROMAGNETIC WEAPONS

This briefing presents the basic concepts of Soviet scalar electromagnetic weapons, some of the major types available, and evidence of their widespread testing.

Scalar Electromagnetics is Electrogravitation

Scalar electromagnetics is an extension of present electromagnetics (EM) to include gravitation. That is, it is a unified, and, what is more important, it is a unified engineering theory. Nikola Tesla initially discovered its basis.

In the scalar EM extension, EM field energy can be turned into gravitational field energy and vice versa. This exchange can be patterned and localized, in specific areas or objects. Such a controlled change of electromagnetics to gravitation is not possible in the normal EM or physics presently taught in Western textbooks. However, the bits and pieces of the theory have been scattered through the physics literature for some time, but no orthodox Western scientist seems to have realized that these anomalous portions could be integrated into a startling new physics. Unorthodox experimenters, inventors, and scientists have made discoveries in this arena for several decades, but again have not realized the exact implications or the precise manner in which their results could be combined with present electrical physics.

Fer-de-Lance

Such sluggishness is certainly not present in the Soviet Union. For over three decades, the Soviet Union has been developing electrogravitation and applying it to develop strange new secret weapons of incredible power and capability. They have sustained the largest weapons development program ever launched by any nation, and they have kept it effectively hidden from prying Western eyes. 1 have called this program "Fer-de-Lance," after the deadly South American pit viper of that name.

The dreaded fer-de-lance is a snake of great agility and lethal effect. It often ambushes its hapless prey, and strikes unexpectedly and without warning. Its first sudden strike is usually lethal to its victim, which promptly expires in writhing agony. Since the Soviet development of scalar EM weapons has been designed for the same purpose, the name seems appropriate.

The equivalent effort of about seven Manhattan projects has been poured into Fer-de-Lance by the Soviets, and the program has been successful almost beyond imagination. The eery weapons are now developed, deployed, and tested. The ambush has been completed; Fer-de-Lance is coiled and ready to strike.

Energetics and Directed-Energy Weapons (DEWs)

The ordinary Soviet name for this type of weapons science is energetics. In the West, that term is believed to be associated with conventional directed-energy weapons (DEWs) such as particle beam weapons, lasers, radio frequency (RF) directed-energy devices, etc. The Soviets do not limit the term in this way.

Western scientists are familiar only with directed-energy weapons where fragments, masses, photons, or particles travel through space and contact the target to deliver their effects. Hence in their thinking they limit the Soviet term "energetics" to the type of weapons they themselves understand - exotic but normal weapons using energy or mass traveling through space to impact a target.

However, it is possible to focus the potential for the effects of a weapon through spacetime itself, in a manner so that mass and energy do not "travel through space" from the transmitter to the target at all. Instead, ripples and patterns in the fabric of spacetime itself are manipulated to meet and interfere in and at the local spacetime of some distant target. There interference of these ripple patterns creates the desired energetic effect (hence the term energetics) directly in and through the target itself, emerging from the very spacetime (vacuum) in which the target is imbedded at its distant location. As used by the Soviets, energetics refers to these eerie new superweapons, as well as to the more mundane DEWs known to the West.

As a consequence of the Soviet breakthrough and decades of feverish development, monstrous strategic weapons undreamed of in the West are already in Soviet hands. A noose is slowly and steadily being tightened about our throats, and it is already the 11th hour.

The Soviets Use a Deception Plan

Concomitant with this supersecret development program, the Soviets developed and implemented an elaborate deception plan to conceal these startling weapons and their nature from Western eyes until it is too late. Soviet deception has been so successful that even when Western scientists are confronted with the actual Soviet tests of these weapons directly over their heads, they do not recognize the weaponry nor the nature of the effects produced.

As early as January 1960, Nikita Khrushchev announced the Soviet development of a new, fantastic weapon. On May 1, 1960 Soviet defensive radars - rigged as prototype weapons of this new kind - probably downed Francis Gary Powers's high-flying U-2 reconnaissance plane over the Soviet Union, precipitating a major diplomatic incident.

On April 10, 1963 one of the first new superweapons operationally deployed was used to destroy the U.S.S. Thresher atomic submarine underwater, off the east coast of the U.S. The next day, April 11, 1963 the same deployed superweapon was utilized in a different mode to produce a giant underwater explosion in the ocean over the Puerto Rican Trench, 100 miles north of Puerto Rico.

Over the years, various aircraft were interfered with or downed as tests of these Soviet weapons. A particular case involved the mysterious loss of F-111s in the Vietnam conflict. At least one downed F-l11 crew was recovered in the subsequent prisoner-of-war exchange. On that aircraft, all electrical systems suddenly were in difficulty simultaneously. All emergency indicator lamps were lit up, "like a Christmas tree." This was probably due to special Soviet teams converting some North Vietnamese SA-2 missile system radars to the scalar EM mode, and employing "scalar beam" interference to produce spurious EM noise throughout the electrical and electronic systems of the aircraft.

In late April/early May of 1985, the entire armada of Soviet strategic scalar EM superweapons was activated as a special celebration of the 40th anniversary of the end of WWII. Activation of this armada (which probably contained over 100 giant weapons), together with 27 giant power systems and a large number of command and control transmissions, was monitored on an advanced, proprietary detection system by Frank Golden. After the giant strategic exercise, which lasted several days, most of the weapons and power sources were once again stood down to "standby."

The NASA shuttle launches provided a convenient opportunity for Soviet testing of these superweapons in a Launch Phase ABM mode, where a launched missile can be detected and destroyed shortly after liftoff. At first, electromagnetic pulse (EMP) bursts on the early shuttle trajectory were deliberately delayed in time, to prevent actual destruction of the target and avoid alerting the U.S. that something unusual was happening.

The shuttle launch of November 26, 1985 saw a particularly significant-test of this kind. In this case, a very loud "sonic boom" or explosion occurred over the launch site 12 minutes after shuttle liftoff, when the shuttle was already away and downrange. At least two previous shuttle launches had also been used as pseudotargets, with delayed booms occurring over the launch site well behind the vehicles.

After the lack of U.S. reaction to these three tests showed that the U.S. still had no knowledge of the new technology and did not even recognize its employment, the Soviets apparently decided to proceed with tests where the target vehicles would actually be destroyed.

On December 12, 1985 the same Soviet weapon tested against the NASA shuttle launches may have deliberately interfered with the controls of an Arrow DC-8 taking off from Gander Air Force Base, Newfoundland. At an altitude of 100 feet, the aircraft - carrying over 250 U.S. soldiers and civilian crew members - lost power and sank into the ground tail-low, killing everyone on board. Three Canadian witnesses to the crash were interviewed over the Canadian Broadcast Corporation's television news on April 8, 1986 at 10 p.m. No flame or smoke issued from the plane before its descent and crash. However, the aircraft was seen to be mysteriously glowing with a yellow glow. That is a signature of the use of a scalar howitzer in the "continuous EM emergence" mode, similar to the manner in which the F-111s were downed in Vietnam. In short, the DC-8's electrical systems were interfered with by electromagnetic noise created throughout each increment of spacetime occupied by the aircraft. The powerful charge created in and on the aircraft also apparently caused the loss of two engines, one after the other. With its controls ineffective and power drastically reduced, the aircraft sank to earth, still in its "tail down" configuration from takeoff, and crashed and burned. The "yellow glow" was a corona due to the acquisition of a high electrical charge by the skin of the aircraft.

Other factors contributing to the crash may have been reduced lift due to poor engine maintenance, increased weight of the aircraft due to icing, and heavy loading. Still, no one has recognized the significance of the "yellow glow" or what it implies, or the possible connection between loss of the aircraft and previous Soviet testing of-a Launch Phase ABM system against U.S. shuttle launches.

As this book goes to press, the last two U.S. Air Force Titan 34-D missiles fired from Vandenberg Air Force Base in California have blown up shortly after launch. The first one blew up on Aug. 28, 1985 just after lift-off. That loss has been attributed to failure of a high-powered fuel pump, causing a massive oxidizer leak and a smaller fuel leak. The second Titan loss occurred on April 18, 1986 when the missile blew up 5 seconds after lift-off. Its loss is still under investigation and no determination of cause has been made. Apparently the shuttle and the Titan presently provide the only viable launch vehicles for launching U.S. "spy" satellites. The loss of these sensitive satellites - if indeed they constituted the payloads - cannot help but be damaging to our strategic surveillance capability. According to the Los Angeles Times, the single remaining KH-11 satellite was launched in December 1984 and, with an expected life of two to three years, it could stop functioning later this year.

Whether or not significant Woodpecker grid activity existed in the vicinity of the Titan launch of August 1985 is unknown at this time. However, significant activity in the grid definitely occurred before the April 18 Titan disaster and on the same day.

On Easter Sunday, Mar. 30, 1986 engineer Ron Cole observed significant **cloud** signatures of grid pattern activity, correlated with Soviet Woodpecker measurements. On April 18, the present author observed traces of a cloud **radial** over Huntsville, Alabama and took photographs of it. Preliminary reports from

Thousand Oaks, California indicate extensive grid activity again on April 18, the day the second Titan exploded.

At least the second of these two missile destructions shortly after launch is suspicious, since the grid positively was active during that time. Also, a clear trail of Launch Phase A8M system indicators exists back to the massive scalar exercise of April/May 1985. The first Titan explosion in Aug. 1985 thus falls within the Soviets' "now let's test them against U.S. launch vehicles" period. The second Titan loss follows highly suspicious losses of the Arrow DC-8 on Dec -T7 1985 and the Challenger on Jan. 28, 1986. The same Soviet weapon system that destroyed those targets may also have destroyed one or both of the critical Titans.

The Soviets have also been able to significantly engineer the weather over North America for more than a decade without being found out. They have tested a fantastic range of anti-ballistic missile (ABM) defense weapons for over two decades, and no one is the wiser in the West.

As previously stated, prior to the end of November, 1985, at least three "wet-run" tests of a Soviet "launch phase ABM system" against actual U.S. shuttle launches were made directly over Cape Canaveral itself, and still no one recognized what was happening or what sort of weapon was being tested. On December 12, destruction of the Arrow DC-8 in Newfoundland produced no indications that the Americans and Canadians knew anything about the nature of the weapon possibly used.

Accordingly, after a sufficient wait to test our reactions (if any), the Soviets prepared to actually destroy a shuttle after its launch.

Destruction of the Challenger in January 1986

As the whole world knows, on January 28, 1986 the shuttle Challenger was launched from Cape Canaveral, Florida after exposure to undesirable weather conditions, and disastrously exploded shortly after launch. The evidence seems to indicate that, as the rising vehicle was stressed, one end of its right booster broke loose, twisting away and into the main fuel tank, causing rupture, spillage of the fuel and catastrophic explosion. Several other anomalies still exist, however, and it is clear that a problem existed with at least one of the booster scals. All seven astronauts aboard the flight were killed in the fiery destruction of the vehicle.

Of course no one had recognized that the Soviets had already tested a launch-phase anti-ballistic missile (LPABM) system against three of our previous shuttle launches. These "wet-runs" used a deliberate "time offset" to delay the explosive emergence of electromagnetic energy in a launched shuttle's location along its trajectory. The delayed test shots resulted in very large "booms" above the Iaunch site after the shuttle was safely out of the area, but did not destroy the shuttle vehicles themselves. For example, the delayed-shot boom occurred 12 minutes after the evening launch of Nov. 26, 1985. Even a marker beacon (large light in the sky) was utilized on that launch shortly after lift-off. The marker beacon was photographed. In addition, another photograph taken in a time sequence shows another sudden streak of light coming down and ending in a burst of light. This was probably a spatially-offset test of the "pulse" mode for destroying the shuttle. The "light burst" would have been detected in the Soviet Union and scored against its intended offset position. However, another mechanism may have been used to cause destruction of the shuttle itself.

On Jan. 1, 1986 the presence of a metal-softening signal added on to the Soviet LPABM system's scalar EM transmissions was detected by a surprised Frank Golden. The metal-softening ability of the detected signal was experimentally verified by him. Golden also locally nullified the action of the scalar EM signal in a test, rather conclusively establishing (1) that it existed and (2) what it was. The signal was apparently being prepared for use against an upcoming U.S. shuttle launch.

Just prior to the launch of the shuttle in late January, 1986, the Soviets accomplished significant weather engineering over the U.S. The jet stream was severely bent southward in the middle of the U.S., bending rightward again to move across the Florida panhandle. Icy cold air from Canada was drawn far down, into Florida and onto the Challenger sitting on its launch pad. This exposure to cold outside its tested range was probably an additional factor contributing to the Challenger's failure. Positive signatures of the Soviet weather engineering and jet stream manipulation were observed and photographed by several persons, particularly in Alabama and California.

On January 28, 1986, the Soviet scalar EM weapon system effects were sharply localized in the launch zone. Localization involved higher frequencies being present; these are quite painful to small brains - whose hemispheres act as a scalar interferometer and detector - such as in birds. As commented upon by national news commentators, strangely the birds were not flying that morning. Indeed, they were staying down on the ground or avoiding the area, since the sky over the area was painful to them.

As the Challenger rose, the metal-softening signal would have been experienced in and around the boosters shortly after ignition, since the booster flame acts as a special "ion-plasma" turner/detector for the scalar signal. (Certain plasmas have a unique characteristic: they transform an input transverse wave to a longitudinal wave, or an input longitudinal wave to a transverse wave.) The effect of such a local signal is to "change mass in the immediate vicinity" with the particular scalar resonance signal. (Mass acts as a capacitance or accumulator for scalar resonance).

The ill-fated Challenger was doomed. After ignition, the booster flame acted as a ionic plasma detector/amplifier for the scalar metal-softening signal on the

Soviet Woodpecker grid. The metal in and around the booster flame was slowly and steadily weakening due to charge-up with the metal-softening pattern. This attributed to booster leakage from the already cold-damaged seal. The leaking booster poured out smoke and later flame, contributing to the impending disaster.

Substantial winds and air turbulence over the site increased the stress on the Challenger as it rose through this region. This also contributed to the impending disaster and may have been deliberately created there by Soviet weather engineering.

As the Challenger stressed, eventually one or more weakened metal mounts gave way, partially freeing the end of the right booster. The booster oscillated, rotating into the tank and rupturing it. Contact of the escaping liquid fuel and the flame resulted in a fiery explosion, destroying the vehicle.

Even so another anomalous flame or light was observed on the vehicle, and may have represented a very small additional "pulse mode energy form" produced by the Soviet weapon that was attacking the Challenger. The shock of the explosion probably killed the astronauts instantly, although the cabin appears to have remained essentially intact while it plunged several miles to the ocean below.

By treating excess cold exposure to the shuttle, inducing metal-softening in and around the ignited booster, and possible adding a deliberate "intensely hot spot", the Soviets caused the Challenger to weaken and destroy itself shortly after launch, in so subtle a fashion that NASA scientists would not suspect what had actually caused the mishap. The Soviets also had previously withdrawn all their trawlers and ships which normally shadow a shuttle launch, to prevent any suggestion of Soviet presence near or involvement in the catastrophic accident.

A few days later, sporadically intense "high frequency localization signals" were still present on the grid, at least at one hinge-point at Birmingham, Alabama. From 1-4 February 1986, many birds inadvertently flew into the zone when an intense breakout of these components occurred, and dead birds fell from the sky in substantial numbers.

* According to an Urgentgram sent out by General D. Graham, on the evening of the Challenger's loss, KGB headquarters held a party to celebrate "success of their active measure against the shuttle." Note that all Soviet scalar EM weapons - development, testing, deployment, and usage - is under command and control of the KGB.

Among other things, this briefing details the bizarre series of indicators that showed the Soviet intention to destroy the vehicle, and documents the accidental discovery of the signal with which they intended to cause the shuttle to fail and destroy itself.

Technological Surprise and a New Hiroshima

Sadly, the bureaucratic smugness of orthodox Western scientists has materially assisted the Soviet deception process. Most Western managerial scientists - particularly in weapons development activities — have continued to view the Soviets as ignorant peasants, still trying to clean the mud off their boots. This view, of course, is totally untrue and unwarranted.

It takes only a few examples to refute this attitude. In nonlinear mathematics, engineering and science, the Soviets have led their Western counterparts since the beginning. The electromagnetic pulse (EMP) effect of a nuclear explosion appeared in the ordinary Soviet scientific literature before Western scientists were even aware that the effect existed. The Soviets continue to lead the world in explosive welding, titanium forming and welding, etc. While the Soviet scientists exhibit little inclination to build good washing machines, they certainly do produce state-of-the-art technology — and beyond — in any area in which they focus their main efforts. (We do lead the Soviets in some areas such as computers, computer software, miniaturization, etc.)

Once before, a modern nation - the United States - developed a mighty weapon in secrecy and used it to force a powerful foe - Japan — to its knees. The mindbending atomic blows to Hiroshima, and shortly after to Nagasaki, showed once and for all that in the modern age technological surprise can prove instantly disastrous. Yet in our scientific arrogance, we have assumed that no one else will ever do such a thing. We have assumed that it certainly could never happen to us, and that the "secret weapon" scenario will never be repeated. On the contrary, it has happened again, someone else has done it, and it has happened to us.

It has also become fashionable in the West to believe that all the laws of physics are already discovered. We assume we already know all of them. While we have been pridefully crowing this tune, the Soviets have been steadily discovering new laws in secret, as well as new ways to circumvent the old laws.

We Have Given Up Defense in the Larger Sense

Meanwhile, to defend ourselves strategically, we have chosen to forego "defense" and rely almost totally on building a powerful strategic offense that is capable (we think!) of destroying our would-be enemies anywhere in the world. Our offensive striking power is based mostly on a triad of deterrent forces - land-based ballistic missiles, submarine-launched ballistic missiles, and strategic bombers. The cruise missile is presently being added to the triad. If this 4-part offense were nullified or destroyed by Soviet secret weapons, we would be powerless to prevent our own destruction and Soviet domination of the world.

We have been viewing ourselves as Samson, confident in the strength of our locks.

Yet literally our locks have been secretly shorn and the Philistines are already upon us. Indeed, Soviet energetics weapons are now capable of destroying our triad shield, our homeland, our armed forces in the field, and our population, quickly and efficiently. We have a new "gap" of monumental proportions: not a missile gap, not a submarine or bomber gap, and not even a particle beam or laser gap. We have a scalar electromagnetics or electrogravitation gap.

In this briefing, it is my purpose to show a portion of the Soviet weapons developments that have lead me to such dire conclusions. The Fer-de-Lance briefing is also an attempt to galvanize our leaders and scientists into action, for our present total vulnerability to the Soviet Fer-de-Lance weapons is intolerable and unacceptable.

Unless we achieve defenses — and quickly — our own demise in a fashion similar to the Hiroshima-Nagasaki scenario is inevitable and imminent.

CHARACTERIZATION

- SINGLE ANALYST
- PERSONAL INTERPRETATION
- UNOFFICIAL
- NO APPROVAL/DISAPPROVAL BY ANY
  - ¤ CORPORATION
  - ¤ GOVERNMENT AGENCY
- PREPARED
  - ¤ ON OFF-DUTY TIME
  - ¤ AT PERSONAL EXPENSE

Slide 001: Characterization

We point out at the beginning that this briefing and its interpretation are the result of 22 years of analysis and effort by a single analyst. It is entirely unofficial. It is not approved or disapproved by any corporation, company, or government agency. It has been prepared by this analyst at nights, on weekends, on holidays, and during off-duty time.

It has been prepared mostly at personal expense, though several grants and support have been received from R. J. Reynolds III, Peter Kelly, Mike Bearden, Interdimensional Sciences, Association of Distinguished American Scientists, and others. Very valuable assistance has been received from the U.S. Psychotronics Association and the Planetary Association for Clean Energy. These contributions are deeply appreciated and most gratefully acknowledged.

Graphics and artwork support by Hal Crawford, Margaret Wilson, Tommy Neumann, Ron Cole, and Lee Giles has been invaluable. My sincere thanks go to these artists who have made the presentation vivid and imaginative. A great deal of background support was given by Joe Gambill, Frank Golden, Tom Herold, Ken Moore, Pete Kelly, Eike Mueller and Mel Bartlett and is deeply appreciated.

Finally, the help of many other persons and colleagues too numerous to enumerate is also gratefully acknowledged.

If the U.S. bureaucracy ever moves and develops defenses against scalar EM weapons, it will largely be due to the support of the persons and organizations who have freely given of their talents and resources to further this effort.

OUTLINE

- THREE VIEWS OF ELECTROMAGNETICS
- EXTENDED AHARONOV-BOHM EFFECT
- SCALAR ELECTROMAGENTICS
- KILL/DAMAGE MECHANISMS
- VULNERABILITY
  - ¤ ELECTRONICS
  - ¤ PERSONNEL
  - ¤ EQUIPMENT
  - ¤ MATERIAL
- SUMMARY

Slide 002: Outline

This presentation does not attempt to cover the complete field of energetics weapons developed by the Soviet Union. Instead, it concentrates on the major areas necessary to understand the type of weapons likely to be unleashed on our strategic and tactical installations and our troops and their equipment. It does not attempt to present the frightful bio-electromagnetic weapons the Soviets have developed to be unleashed on our populace at large and on our troops in the field. Also, the briefing does not dwell on the historical progression, but on the types of weapons themselves.

Of necessity, it presents several shortcomings in classical EM, and presents three differing views of electromagnetics and what can be done with them. The briefing particularly stresses the Aharanov-Bohm (AB) effect. This mesoscopic effect, which produces action at a distance by pure EM flux and not EM force fields, has been extended by the Soviet weapons developers into the macroscopic world around us.

In addition, we develop the basic concepts of scalar electromagnetics and how electrogravitation is achieved. The basic concepts of scalar interferometry and scalar resonance are briefly advanced, and a few of the major kill and damage mechanisms are presented. The nearly total vulnerability of our present electronic equipment, personnel, communications, vehicles, aircraft, ships, missiles, submarines, nuclear weapons, and materiel is stressed.

Finally, a short summary is given to highlight the main points of the briefing.

ELEMENTS OF THE EMERGING THEORY

- FLAWS IN VECTOR THEORY
- ZERO-VECTOR SYSTEM
- KALUZA-KLEIN ASPECTS
- VACUUM/MASS EFFECTS
- SCALAR RESONANCE
- ELECTROGRAVITATION
- LOCAL GENERAL RELATIVITY
- IMPLICATIONS

Slide 003: Elements of the Emerging Theory

Specifically, we will point out some flaws in vector mathematics itself, particularly with the concept of the zero force vector. The zero force vector is a system of forces that sum to a zero resultant. Hence the components of the summation represent a patterned stress in the medium to which they are applied, or in which they are imbedded. This includes the vacuum (spacetime) medium. In classical electromagnetics, this vacuum stress due to a zero-vector summation of EM force fields has been totally omitted and ignored.

As such, the EM "zero" force-vector summation produces a "trapped internal EM flux and flux pattern, without resultant (external) force field" condition - precisely as does the Aharonov-Bohm effect. The components of the artificially zeroed system, however, can be transmitted and still maintain their special relationship and coherence. While the AB effect has been shown to hold for the mesoscale (a few thousands of angstroms), the zero-vector scalar EM effect can hold for hundreds of thousands of kilometers.

To provide a unified electrogravitation, we adapt Kaluza-Klein 5-dimensional gravitational concepts to the idea of the zero-vector stress system in vacuum-spacetime. We also point out how simultaneously varying the magnitudes of **the** force components of a stress, all in phase, produces a stress wave or scalar EM wave. Scalar waves are almost always absorbed and emitted by the nucleus of the atom, not by the electrons in orbit.

The relationship of mass and vacuum, and the constitution of the vacuum, are pointed out from the viewpoint of modern quantum mechanics.

How a scalar wave resonance differs from conventional EM resonance is developed briefly. Mass and inertia are the direct result of - and are - trapped scalar resonance. The trapping mechanism is the spin of the particle.

Severely limiting assumptions in ordinary general relativity (OGR) are pointed out. In OGR, it is assumed that the local frame is always a Lorentz frame, and never curved. In other words, local spacetime is always assumed to be flat. This **saves** the conservation laws, simplifies relativity, and reduces "general" relativity to special relativity with distant perturbations and curvatures.

By removing this ad hoc assumption, a much richer local general relativity results. This local general relativity is readily engineered. Note that, in OGR, the physicist has actually assumed that he can never "engineer" local general relativity! Indeed, with the scalar EM approach, he can easily do so, in contradiction to what is taught in all Western universities.

By engineering a local general relativity (LGR), the individual conservation laws can be violated locally. This includes the conservation of energy/momentum, and the conservation of charge, for example.

The major implication of this startling new engineering physics is that one can **engineer** physical reality itself. For example, elements can be transmuted with minuscule energy input, free energy devices are possible, action at a distance is possible, communication faster than light speed is possible, etc.

By using the zero-vector approach, the virtual state can be organized and made **largely** deterministic, rather than statistical. This means that the probabilities of the states propagated forward by the Schroedinger equation can be engineered and changed. Whether or not a certain quantum change shall emerge or not can be determined or substantially influenced in advance. Bohm's hidden variable **theory** now becomes directly engineerable. This is a drastic change to quantum mechanics and physics in general.

Another implication is that this is the final engineering, for it allows the direct engineering of physical reality itself. Humans must now find a way to resolve their differences peacefully, or shortly Man will destroy himself and his biosphere by his own hand.

3 KINDS OF ELECTROMAGNETICS

- CLASSICAL
  - POTENTIALS JUST MATHEMATICAL CONVENIENCES
  - ACTIONS CAUSED BY NONZERO FORCE FIELDS
  - NO ACTION WHEN FORCE FIELDS ZERO
- QUANTUM MECHANICS
  - POTENTIALS REAL
  - STATISTICAL SUBSTRUCTURE
  - FORCE FIELDS BY DIFFERENTIATIONS
  - ACTION WHEN FORCE FIELDS ZERO
- ARTIFICIAL POTENTIALS (ELECTRO-GRAVITATION)
  - POTENTIALS REAL
  - FORCE FIELDS EXTERNALLY ZEROED, INTERNALLY ACTIVE
  - ZEROS INDIVIDUALLY DIFFER
  - SCALAR INTERFEROMETRY
  - SCALAR RESONANCE

Slide 004: Three Kinds of Electromagnetics

There are actually three kinds - or three views - of EM. These are (1) the classical view, (2) the quantum mechanical view, and (3) the scalar EM or electrogravitational view.

In the classical view, the potentials are just mathematical conveniences and do not physically exist. The real causative agents are the force fields, and there is no longer any electromagnetics going on if the force fields reduce to zero. Further, the ideas of "charge" and "charged mass" have been made erroneously synonymous.

Of course the classical view was formed from the idea of a thin material ether, with electricity as a thin fluid, long before the discovery of the electron. Since most earlier scientists studied string waves and these are transverse, the EM wave was modeled as a transverse wave. Also, detection equipment actually detected transverse waves. The role of electron spin and drift velocity, which would have shown that force-field-causing EM waves in the vacuum could only be longitudinal, was not yet discovered. Maxwell's equations and the classical approach became so engrained that the basic derivations were never corrected for more modern discoveries.

The quantum mechanical view, on the other hand, regards the potentials as the real physical actants, and the force fields are just effects derived from the potentials by differentiating operators. Classically oriented physicists have adamantly opposed this foundations requirement of QM because it would require nearly a complete redo of EM theory. It would also rather drastically change our ideas of physical reality. For years a controversy has raged around the Aharonov-Bohm effect (which demonstrates the reality of the potentials, among other things). Only this year - 1986 - have most physicists finally accepted the AB effect with its implications (see Physics Today, Jan. 86). However, no changes have yet been made to EM theory and the basic classical approach to electrical physics and engineering.

Yet even the QM view is flawed, since it has not examined the structure of EM forces which sum to a vector zero. Such a system produces stress, and if the summation is in the vacuum itself, it produces stress of vacuum/spacetime. Rigorously, this is a gravitational effect, and the energies of the various EM components in the local region are locked into an artificial potential. From general relativity, this type of potential where the energy density of vacuum is altered is a gravitational potential. From Kaluza-Klein unified theory, it is at least a 5-dimensional gravitational potential.

If the individual force vector components of the vector zero are varying in magnitude - say, all in phase - then they produce a gravitational wave. The energy density of the local vacuum is being rhythmically varied. Call such an EM wave a scalar EM wave, where, by "scalar" we imply that, to an external observer, the EM force vector resultants are identically zero, but the local gravitational potential of the wave is varying. Thus this is an electrogravitational wave, and vector zeroing of EM force fields constitutes a means of changing EM field energy into G-field energy. On the other hand, by breaking up the coherence of the zero-vector summation of the EM forces, nonzero EM resultants are recovered, constituting the change of gravitational energy into EM energy.

A simple means to break zero-summed coherence is by interference of two or more such zero-vector waves.

In this, third view of EM, action at a distance is easily possible, and is the norm rather than the exception. In addition, a new kind of resonance - scalar resonance - exists. The scalar EM wave does not interact with orbital electrons, but rather with the interior of the nuclei of atoms. Thus the new scalar EM resonance is between nuclei and within nuclei.

BOHM-AHARONOV EFFECT

- IN FIELD-FREE REGIONS
    - ¤ E-FIELD IS ZERO
    - ¤ B-FIELD IS ZERO
- POTENTIALS STILL EXIST
    - ¤ CAUSE REAL EFFECTS
    - ¤ INTERFERENCE IS KEY
    - ¤ CONTAIN SUM-ZEROED SUBSTRUCTURE
- DOES NOT FOLLOW FROM
    - ¤ MECHANICS
    - ¤ CLASSICAL ELECTROMAGNETICS
- REQUIRED BY QUANTUM ELECTRODYNAMICS

Slide 005: Bohm-Aharonov Effect

In 1959, Aharonov and Bohm published a fundamental paper in Physical Review, which pointed out the QM implications of potentials as the real entities, while force fields were derived effects. They showed that, even in the presence of zero EM force fields, the potentials may still exist and produce real effects in physical systems. They also suggested experiments to prove these predictions.

Interference of the potentials is the key mechanism producing real effects in charged particle systems, even in the presence of zero E-field and zero B-field. Unfortunately the AB paper did not address the issue of zero-summed systems of EM force fields as one way of producing artificial potentials having unique characteristics

At any rate, the "AB effect," as it came to be called, was rather hotly resisted and debated over the years, until finally it has generally been accepted as proven in 1986. The principle represents a violation of both classical mechanics and classical electromagnetics. It is required, however, by quantum mechanics and quantum electrodynamics. And experiment has proved it.

(See Y. Aharonov and D. Bohm, "Significance of Electromagnetic Potentials in the Quantum Theory," Physical Review, Second Series, 115(3), Aug. 1, 1959, p 485-491.).

A-FIELD IS REAL
SOURCE
①
②
SOLENOID
L
I
B
J
A

A – FIELD CAN INFLUENCE THE MOTION OF ELECTRONS'.

MAGNETIC FIELD AND VECTOR POTENTIAL OF A LONG SOLENOID.

THE FEYNMAN LECTURES ON PHYSICS, VOLUME II

Slide 006: A-Field is Real

In classical EM, the vector magnetic potential (the A-field) had been defined as a mathematical convenience by the equation

$$\nabla \mathrm{x} A = B \qquad [1j$$

But if the potentials are real, then conceivably the A field can be loosed from its enchainment to the $\nabla \mathrm{x}$ operator. In that case, it becomes a free, new, and independent field of nature with potentially unique characteristics. For example, its defining equation shows that magnetic force field can be made from it, and the rightmost term of the equation

$$E = -\nabla Ø - dA/dt \ [2]$$

shows that its time rate of change makes an electric field.

Let us explain this in more simple terms, and somewhat more precisely than conventional theory. We will use the Kaluza unified G-EM interpretation and electron flow in our explanation.

In the A-field, we have a certain kind of 5-dimensional G-potential which can bleed-off as EM force fields in two ways: (1) in a swirl fashion, where the vortex producing the swirl moves parallel to electron movement, and the swirling is a torque or spin, and (2) in a linear fashion, where the time rate of change of the A-potential produces a linear E-field on the electrons.

The first bleed-off as given by equation [1] constitutes the magnetic B-field, and the second bleed-off as given by the rightmost term of equation [2] creates a component of the overall electrical E-field. (Bleed-off of the electrostatic scalar potential produces the other component of the E-field).

Now in general relativity (GR) theory, "the" G-potential is just a conglomerate of many things, each of which has the characteristic of curving spacetime. "The" gravitational field is not a single thing at all, but is composed of a collection of many things.

Thus if we realize that both the electrostatic scalar potential (Ø-field) and the magnetic vector potential (A-field) are components of the 5-d G-potential, then we see immediately that bleed-off of these two components of the 5-d G-potential creates all normal EM force fields.

It follows that, if we produce a zero-vector summation of the two or more EM bleed-offs, we are actually "putting as much back in" to the 5-d G-potential through its A and Ø components as we are taking out electromagnetically. In that case, the 5-potential is in a state of equilibrium with respect to EM bleed-off. It is now forced to bleed-off in the only other way it can: as ordinary 4-dimensional gravitational field. Thus by vector-zeroing EM force fields, we turn EM field energy into G-field energy and vice versa, via the intermediary of the 5-potential.

At any rate, soon after publication of the Aharonov-Bohm paper, experiments showed that, if the magnetic field is trapped inside a long solenoid, a phase shift still is induced in the two-slit electron experiment, even though - classically - no contact of the enclosed magnetic field and the moving electrons occurs. This phase shift is explained by the fact that the freed A-field exists outside the trapping solenoid, even though the B-field does not. Consequently, interaction of this free A-field with the electrons produces a phase shift of the QM interference detection pattern.

This proves that A-field is real and causes physical effects.

It also proves that a form of action at a distance is real, just as required by quantum mechanics.

Years ago, Frank Golden and this author - together with Dr. William Tiller - experimented with "free A-field" devices. Golden went on to develop prototype transmitters and receivers and a prototype underwater communication system.

Since that time, Gelinas has patented several curl-free magnetic vector **potential** (free A-field) devices: see U.S. patent no. 4,447,779, May 8, 1984; 4,429,288. Jan. 31, 1984; 4,429,280, Jan. 31, 1984; and 4,432,098, Feb. 14, 1984. These patents are assigned to Honeywell.

(See also Theodor Kaluza, Sitz. Berlin Preuss, Adad. Wiss. 966, 1921.).

QUANTUM NON-LOCALITY

"The non-local aspect of quantum systems is ... a general property of nature, and not just a freak situation manufactured in the laboratory."

PAUL DAVIES, SUPERFORCE
1984 (PAGE 48)

Slide 007: Quantum Non-Locality

Indeed, quantum systems exhibit nonlocal effects that are general properties of nature. These effects are not just freak situations manufactured in subtle laboratory experiments.

However, if spatial coherence in such microscopic effects can be induced and sustained, then action-at-a-distance can be obtained in large macroscopic systems. This is the engineering aspect of the scalar EM approach.

It is also the aspect that the Soviets have secretly weaponized for over three decades.

The zero-vector EM force-field summation of multiple EM waves is used to transport specific time-phased patterns of EM polarization of vacuum to a distance. There interference of two or more such patterns results in the interference of the internal patterns, breaking of the phase relations, and appearance of positive (added) or negative (extracted) EM energy in the intersection region.

VECTOR MATHEMATICS HAS A FUNDAMENTAL PROBLEM

IN ITS AXIOM FOR THE ZERO VECTOR,
VECTOR ANALYSIS DISCARDS ZERO VECTOR
SUMMATIONS OF ACTIVE SYSTEMS
OF VECTORS.

VECTOR ZERO IS MADE THE ABSENCE
OF ALL VECTORS

(IT CAN ALSO BE THE PRESENCE OF REAL
VECTORS WHOSE VECTOR SUM IS 0ī.)

Slide 008: Vector Mathematics has a Fundamental Problem

In its concept of the zero vector, vector mathematics discards zero-vector summations of active systems of vectors. It replaces such a summation with a zero vector. This is fine for mathematics as an abstract system, but it is in error when applied to real electromagnetic force fields of nature.

In the abstract mathematics, a vector zero summation is made the "absence of all finite vectors". Further, all vector zeros are made equal. No concept of the "internal stress" of the zero vector exists in abstract vector mathematics.

However, physically the zero summation or "balancing" of vector forces in a medium represents stress in that medium. In the physical case, a vector zero summation system of non-zero vectors has a dynamic substructure, and this substructure is an individual.

Obviously, in the physical case vector zero summations may materially differ, both in the pattern of stress and the magnitude of stress. They cannot all be equated. Further, they are not the absence of vectors, but represent the presence of vectors in a special manner. Such a zero summation of EM vector forces directly stresses the "medium" - which may be the vacuum itself.

In the physical case, several changes to the axioms of abstract vector mathematics are required. (1) the "potential" of a vector zero must be taken into account, such as is represented by the sum of the squares of the magnitudes of its vector components. (2) the specific deterministic pattern of the vector components comprising the zero must be taken into account. (3) The dynamic variation in both the deterministic directions and deterministic magnitudes of the components and of the overall pattern must be taken into account. (4) Frequencies of the changes in the direction, magnitude, and actual makeup of the vector zero must now be accounted for. That is, time and wavelengths are rigorously aspects of the vector zero, and these may be deterministic variables. Since time itself is now a variable aspect of the vector, the vector zero system can affect its "rate of time flow" in the observer's system. (5) Since a "reference vector zero" can be established at any point of a vector magnitude, then individual vectors themselves may have dynamic substructures inside a special "zero reference" in and on the vector. The patterned potential of a vector is a reality.

This leads to a system of "vectors nested inside vectors" ad infinitum. In other words, it leads to an infinite-dimensional system, and the "opening" of every finite closed vector system through its vector zeroes.

For application to physical electrogravitational systems, at least 5 dimensions are required, four of space and one of time.

Here we still are considering only a special case where all vector zero summations represent EM force field energy locked in a gravitational potential, or gravitational force field energy locked inside the EM potentials. That is, we are prescribing a system where the only intertranslation of energy is among mass, EM field, gravitational field, and vacuum virtual energy (anenergy).

(See T. E. Bearden Toward a New Electromagnetics: Part III: Clarifying the Vector Concept, Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org, 1983; Part 4: Vectors and Mechanisms Clarified, 1983. See also E. T. Whittaker, Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. 1, 367, 1903; Robert Bruce Lindsay and Henry Margenau, Foundations of Physics, Dover, New York, 1963, p. 283-287; Richard P. Feynman et al, The Feynman Lectures on Physics, Addison-Wesley, New York, **Vol.** I, p.2-4.).

THE ZERO-VECTOR AXIOM

- "THERE IS A UNIQUE VECTOR, $\bar{O}$, IN V (THE VECTOR SPACE) SUCH THAT

$$\bar{V} + \bar{O} = \bar{O} + \bar{V}"$$

$$O_i = O_j$$

- THIS MAKES ALL O_i EQUAL BY ASSUMPTION, SINCE THERE IS ASSUMED TO BE ONLY A SINGLE TYPE O WITHOUT REAL COMPONENTS

Slide 009: The Zero-Vector Axiom

This slide shows a standard mathematical statement of the zero-vector axiom, used in many texts.

As can be seen, all zero-vectors are made identical, and no substructure is considered.

Such an abstract system of vector mathematics does not fit physical reality. However, when all one's EM foundations concepts are strongly conditioned in this fashion, the gravitational aspects of EM are discarded.

Further, EM theory, experiments, and equipments will be developed along these limiting lines. In that case, EM engineering of gravitational effects will not be developed. One will assume that it is impossible to have a locally curved spacetime, and hence all local frames will be Lorentz frames. Therefore the conservation laws will rigorously apply.

Further, the nonlocal quantum effects will stay firmly in the microscopic world where they belong. Physical macro-reality will stay stable and predictable in a classical manner.

General relativity (in curved spacetimes) will be restricted to the special case of the local special relativistic (uncurved) spacetime, with only distant perturbations (spacetime curvatures).

The world will stay sane and "normal", and the totally variable insanity of physical reality will remain bottled up in the minute microworld or the distant maelstrom of suns, stars, black holes, etc.

The Aharonov-Bohm heresy will stay kaput in the real world and will not be unleashed beyond mesoscopic reality — a few thousand angstroms or so.

With such an error in the application of vector mathematics to physical science, we become "flatland physicists," so to speak. We become like skimmer bugs on the surface of a pond; we have no appreciation of the dynamics of the depths below or of the heavens above.

Worse, we condition our development of instruments according to the fixed notions in our heads. Then we use these "biased" instruments to do experiments that reaffirm our notions. Any deviation suggested to this is considered heresy and nonsense.

And as Max Planck once pointed out, you will get a new physics only when the old physicists — who so adamantly oppose it — die off.

ARE THESE SYSTEMS EQUAL?
$\bar{0}_1$
$\bar{0}_2$
$\bar{0}_3$
$\bar{0}_4$
$\bar{0}_5$
$\bar{0}_6$
$\bar{0}_7$

Slide 010: Are These Systems Equal?

Shown here are some representations of various very simple zero-vector systems. As can be seen, the stress magnitudes and the spin and dynamics of all of these systems are very different.

Further, their "stress potential" substructures are not composed of a huge collection of little random force vectors. Instead, their substructures are deterministic. If the components being put into the zeros are varied in direction and magnitude, but always sum to a zero resultant, then highly complex substructure dynamics may be created and utilized, infolded (Bohm's term) inside the zero vector.

In theory one can establish "channels" of communication and power (magnitude) transmission without ever surfacing a nonzero EM force field. In practice one can do this with very little EM spillout. Thus one can establish electrogravitational channels and energy transmission inside normal EM potentials and/or ordinary EM carrier waves.

One can use a conventional system of EM potentials, force fields, and waves as a special kind of "wiring circuit" in and through which to transmit and produce electrogravitational effects. By distant interference, EM effects at a great distance can be accomplished, yet no "ordinary EM energy" has passed between the transmitters and the distant interference zone.

INFOLDED SYSTEMS ARE EXCLUDED BY PHYSICS

DYNAMIC ZERO-VECTOR SYSTEMS ARE
NOT CONSIDERED IN ORDINARY GENERAL
RELATIVITY, CLASSICAL ELECTROMAGNETICS,
OR QUANTUM MECHANICS.

Slide 011: Infolded Systems are Excluded by Physics

Unfortunately, these infolded dynamic zero-vector systems have been eliminated from physics.

They are omitted in classical EM, ordinary general relativity (OGR), and quantum mechanics.

That is, they have been omitted in Western physics.

They have not been omitted in secret Soviet weapons labs and weapons development programs.

KALUZA GEOMETRY

- THEORDOR KALUZA, POLISH PHYSICIST
- UNIFIED THEORY OF ELECTROMAGNETICS AND GRAVITY (1921)
    - ¤ 5- DIMENSIONAL SPACETIME
    - ¤ 5-DIMENSIONAL GRAVITY FIELD
    - ¤ ELECTROMAGNETISM IS THAT PART THAT OPERATES IN THE FIFTH DIMENSION

Slide 012: Kaluza Geometry

In 1921, Theordor Kaluza, a Polish physicist, published a unified theory of electromagnetics and gravitation. Albert Einstein, who had had the paper for two years, recommended his paper for publication. In that theory, five dimensions - four space and one time - are utilized in the basic model. This gives a 5-dimensional spacetime.

In the model, electromagnetics and ordinary gravity are two aspects of a single more fundamental field: the 5-space gravity field. Electromagnetism is that part of the 5-field that operates (bleeds-off) in the fifth dimension.

The ordinary 4-space G-field is the small residue that spills over into our ordinary 4-space, and doesn't slide around into the fifth dimension and bleed-off there as electromagnetics.

Implicit in the theory, but not explicitly stated, is the fact that the 5-space G-potential bleeds-off in two fashions: (1) in the 5th dimension nearly unopposed, to produce what we see as EM force fields, and (2) in the ordinary 4-space we live in, which we see as ordinary gravitational field.

Normally almost all the force field bleed-off is in the fifth dimension as EM; only a minuscule bit bleeds off as 4-gravity.

Just as one example, between two electrons the 5-space G-potential bleeds-off into electric force field about 10^{42} times as much as it bleeds-off into 4-space G-field.

A POTENTIAL IS A CHANGE IN THE STRESS OF VACUUM
LINEAR REGION
SPACETIME CURVATURE
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 013: A Potential is a Change in the Stress of Vacuum

In physics, the idea of a "potential" is very poorly defined, if at all. The normal "definition" for the electrostatic scalar potential, for example, is not a definition at all. Instead, it's an abstract operation that tells how to mathematically calculate the magnitude of the potential, by pushing a unit charge in from infinity, against the potential field.

Now ultimately a definition must be an identity statement, not an operational statement about something.

Since I could find hardly anyone who actually understood what a potential was, and how or of what it was composed, I simply took quantum mechanics at face value and constructed this model.

First, the modern view of the vacuum is that it is not an emptiness, but a plenum. It's teeming with an incredible amount of raw energy, existing totally as the temporary bits of energy of virtual particles. That is, the vacuum "energy" exists as the nonintegrated energies of little particles which appear from nothing fare spontaneously created) and disappear into nothing (are spontaneously annihilated) almost instantly. This happens so fast that the little particle and its energy cannot individually be detected; it doesn't hang around long enough.

Hence the fleeting little booger is called a "virtual" particle. Like, "We had 'im there man, for just a moment, but he was gone before we could grab 'im!"

This kind of ghostly particle, however, is very real in modern physics. All observable forces are theorized to be due to the integration or collection of a large number of virtual forces created by exchange of these little particles.

However, this implies a peculiar thing about the vacuum "energy." Actually it's vacuum energies, for each little bit of energy only exists momentarily, then returns to the nothingness from which it came. That is, vacuum virtual energies are totally unintegrated. Each "bit" of virtual energy exists individually. These virtual energies cannot be "added up" to compute the "available energy" unless some collector or integrating mechanism puts them together.

That is, unless some kind of "zipper" is there to "zip them together" into macroscopic, observable energy. The usual "zipper" is a spinning, observable particle of mass. We say that the vacuum energy is unzipped and hence unobservable in that state. We say that "observable energy" is just zipped-together vacuum energies - integrated by and on a spinning, observable particle of mass.

So the vacuum can be visualized as a special sort of violent, unzipped plasma, where the particles of the plasma are fleeting and do not last. We can speak of it also as a sort of special unzipped gas, in the same manner.

The "pressure" of the vacuum gas we refer to as "stress." Due to its violent boiling activity, the vacuum gas is always under very high stress.

This "stressed virtual plasma" identically IS the vacuum and identically IS spacetime. Length, time, frame, mass, etc. - all arise by zipping operations (or understood zipping operations) in and of this raw vacuum/spacetime. When one uses the vacuum notion in this manner, one now uses the term "ether" again. However, this is not the old "thin material ether that hangs around"; this is an entirely new kind. It's a virtual flux and a virtual plasma.

The ether is also what we call "spacetime" in relativity. As can be seen, spacetime is stressed. Further, spacetime has a substructure.

By an uncurved spacetime, we mean one in which the stress of these virtual particles (the "pressure in the ethereal gas," so to speak) is constant from one place to another and from one time to another. Indeed, we also should mean **that** the stresses of the individual components of the entire plasma are constant from one place to another and from one time to another.

By definition, when we determine the lengths between every two points, we determine a frame. (Actually, we have prescribed a universal "length zipping" operation/mechanism as well as its characteristics.). A "linear frame" or "Lorentz frame" is one in which the pressure or stress remains constant. It may be higher than ambient vacuum, however, due to a particle's or an object's motion through the observer's ether. In the case of constant velocity, the particle/object encounters a higher level of virtual particle flux in the observer's ether, like a vehicle moving through raindrops. It encounters a constant rate of flux, however. In such constant velocity case, the moving object's frame is said to be "rotated," but not curved, with respect to the laboratory frame of the observer.

In a "curved" spacetime, we mean one in which the stress of vacuum increases or decreases from one place to another, or from one time to another, or both. At one fixed location, if spacetime is curved, then the stress is increasing or decreasing as a function of time. That is, the flux density of that area is changing. We may visualize the local frame as undergoing angular acceleration, rotating more or rotating less. This is a non-Lorentz frame, or curved spacetime. It is also a nonlinear vacuum.

In such a vacuum, local gradients exist in the flux of virtual particles. If affected by (coupled to) one or more of these gradients by a nonzero coefficient, a local object experiences effects (forces and actions) "without observable cause." Observably, conservation laws may be locally violated by these "virtual rivers" of vacuum by coupling, just as a paddlewheel dipped in a river violates its own local "conservation of energy" due to the river providing an energy source to it.

One must be very careful with the "pressure" analogy, however, when one utilizes unified theory (Kaluza theory). We now have a virtual plasma vacuum in five dimensions, not four. But the basic notions to enable our visualization and understanding still apply.

TYPE OF POTENTIAL DEPENDS ON THE PARTICLE(S)

ELECTROSTATIC
SCALAR POTENTIAL
VIRTUAL
PHOTONS
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 014: Type of Potential Depends on the Particle(s)

Now one can see that, by choosing the type or class of virtual particle, and looking at its potential or stress in the vacuum, one can have many kinds of "potentials" existing in the overall "gravitational potential" of vacuum spacetime.

For example, the stress of the virtual photon flux (which is what causes electrical charge) is called "electrostatic scalar potential."*

We can choose any other class of virtual particle we wish, and there exists a potential (and "change") for it. There are quark potentials, neutrinic potentials, etc.

Indeed, one of the reasons for ignoring Kaluza unified theory for so long was that it predicts a great many types of potentials and fields which have never been observed and which are unknown. Approximations, which neglected all these mysterious, and unknown fields, gave erroneous results. Perplexed physicists, seeking to simplify matters, simply turned away from it in frustration. They returned to it in the mid-70's when it appeared that 11-dimensional Kaluza-Klein theory possibly offered a complete unified theory.

Actually, the diversity of new fields in Kaluza theory was its strength not its weakness. That they are presently unobservable and undetectable is beside **the** point. Neither is time directly observable; however, we have worked out handy procedures and measurements of spatial quantities, which allow us to infer **time.** We have not just tried to drop it from physics!

And indeed the Kaluza theory is consistent with experiment when the higher fields are included. The message is, we must work out "clocks" for these new potentials and fields, so that they can be inferred with at least some degree of precision

- The character of movement also determines the type of potential. The longitudinal (radial) movement of the virtual photon flux is implied in electrostatic scalar potential. The swirl (tangential) component of this flux might be taken as the magnetostatic scalar potential - a magnetic pole - when the cw and ccw components of the swirl balance, but the sum of their absolute values differs from the sum of the absolute values of the corresponding tangential components in the swirl flux of the local ambient vacuum. If this swirl stress is higher than the vacuum swirl stress, this constitutes a north magnetic pole. If lower, it constitutes a south magnetic pole. If there is a prevalence of direction (cw or ccw) in the swirl (i.e., one component exceeds the other), this corresponds to the magnetic vector potential (the A-field) when the A-field is freed from the magnetic force field (B-field) — i.e., when A-field is freed from its $\nabla \mathrm{x}$ operator in the equation $\nabla \mathrm{x} A = B$. The bleed-off of the excess swirl stress from the north magnetic pole to the deficient swirl stress of the south magnetic pole constitutes the magnetic force field, B — usually referred to simply as the "magnetic field."

A POTENTIAL EXTENDS TO INFINITY & INVOLVES THE ENTIRE UNIVERSE

ø=0
ø>>0
ø=0
-∞
ø>0
+∞
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 015: A Potential Extends to Infinity & Involves the Entire Universe

As shown on this slide, the change in the stress of vacuum due to a potential tapers off to infinity. Its magnitude normally does not reduce to zero until infinity.

Some types of potentials reduce much faster or slower than others, however, and so - at some distance away from a common origin of the potentials, one or more may be neglected in its (their) overall effects on an experiment or system.

Also, the speed of propagation of potential is highly dependent upon (1) what type of virtual particle or particles produce its stress, (2) its magnitude, (3) its composition, and (4) the presence or absence of coupling objects and other interacting potentials.

Fundamental observable particles are like little spray pumps and little vacuum cleaners at the same time.

Each is emitting virtual particles into the vacuum in a spray or flux, and at the same time it is absorbing virtual particles from the vacuum spray or flux. It's a little dynamo, and nature furnishes its driving energy unceasingly.

However, each little virtual particle it emits is itself such a little simultaneous pump and vacuum cleaner. That is, it's also emitting an even finer (and faster) flux of smaller virtual particles, and at the same time it's also absorbing flux al this time finer level.

"Bigger fleas have smaller fleas to bite em;

And so on ad infinitum".

We may consider the vacuum to be made of an infinite number of virtual state layers or levels.

It is not too difficult to show that each of these successively deeper, nested "layers" of virtual state corresponds to a successively higher dimension being added to our 4-space basic spacetime. So hyperdimensions and deeper levels of virtual state are one and the same thing.

The basic "speed" of the first layer is c, the speed of light.

The basic "speed" of the second layer is c^2.

And so on.

This is interesting. We may directly engineer the virtual state by means of the vector zero (scalar electromagnetics) approach. By nesting vector zeros inside other vector zeros, we may directly engineer the deeper layers of virtual state, and consequently hyperdimensions.

Scalar electromagnetics thus is virtual state engineering and hyperspatial engineering at one and the same time.

Superluminal communications systems, hyperspace drive, and materialization and dematerialization are all hypothetically possible, using scalar electromagnetics. As the technology develops, we should see the development of many of the systems long thought impossible except in science fiction.

A NATURAL POTENTIAL
POTENTIAL
DIRECTIONS OF PARTICLES ARE RANDOM
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 016: A Natural Potential

There are two broad categories of EM potentials, depending upon the way in which they are formed.

The two categories of potential formation are: (1) natural, and (2) artificial.

The difference is in the virtual particle flux substructure that comprises the potential.

If the substructure of emerging and vanishing virtual particles is random and without deliberate order (polarization) except in one broad, overall sense, then that is a natural potential. As such, there is no deterministic functioning going on inside the substructure of the potential itself. The potential can only act "as a whole" on a charged particle system.

Natural potentials have substructures of random virtual vector components. Any small amount of coherence as a function of distance vanishes quickly (on the order of a few thousand angstroms at most, according to present Aharonov-Bohm experiments).

AN ARTIFICIAL POTENTIAL

POTENTIAL
Ø
DIRECTIONS OF PARTICLES ARE PARTIALLY ORDERED (POLARIZED)
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 017: An Artificial Potential

An artificial potential by definition has a substructure composed of deterministic observable vector components, summed to an overall zero vector. Coherence as a function of distance can be maintained over enormous macroscopic distances - even hundreds of thousand of kilometers - by simultaneous transmission of the entire cluster of substructure components as a coherent "zero" group.

To the conventional linear EM detector, at any point along its transmission path, this substructure is detected as a zero-E vector and a zero-H vector. Hence the conventional detector does not see the artificial potential, even if its "stress magnitude" (a function of the magnitudes of all summed components) changes.

Action at a great distance is possible with this artificial potential, however, if a highly nonlinear situation is met so that the phasing of the components is broken or significantly altered. In that case, the components do not sum to zero after their dephasing, and real EM force fields emerge. This "dephasing" can be made to occur at the distant nonlinearity.

Action at a great distance is not possible with the natural potential, but is possible with the artificial potential.

Further, with the transmitted artificial potential, VO must be applied from the transmitter to the distant interruption zone, as if there were no intervening space between.

Note that VO may be positive or negative. Thus energy may emerge at the distant disruption, or be extracted from there. In the first case, energy is input to the transmitter, to re-emerge at the distant dephasing zone. In the latter case, energy is extracted (disappears) from the distant dephasing zone and is received (reappears) back at the transmitter

PRODUCING AN ARTIFICIAL POTENTIAL

- MAKE AN ARTIFICIAL SPACETIME STRESS
  - OPPOSING E-FIELDS
  - OPPOSING B-FIELDS
- FORCE FIELDS SUM-ZEROED
  - SCALAR FIELD
  - ZERO VECTOR FIELD
  - E AND B FIELD COMPONENTS STILL EXIST AND ACT
  - ENVELOPE IS ZERO VECTOR
  - ENVELOPE IS SCALAR
  - DYNAMIC SUBSTRUCTURE EXISTS
- ENGINEERS BOHM'S "HIDDEN VARIABLES"
- BENDS SPACETIME

Slide 018: Producing an Artificial Potential

AN artificial potential is deterministically patterned spacetime stress, made by opposing E-fields and/or B-fields so that they sum to vector zeros in a special pattern.

The resulting zero-summed envelope has no EM force field, to an external observer/detector.

However, the infolded E-field and B-field vector components still exist and act. They may dynamically vary, so long as their summation is always kept to zero.

The simplest variation is to vary all their magnitudes at once, by the same degree. In that case, each one comprises an "EM wave." However, the summations of this cluster or "locked group" of waves still exhibit a zero-E and zero-B field to any external observer/detector. In other-words, to an external observer, one now has a varying wave of pure spatiotemporal stress, but one that has a deterministic structure. This is a scalar EM wave, or electrogravitational wave. It is also an alternating current of specific scalar pattern.

Varying the stress of spacetime locally, curves it locally. This violates the conventional assumption of restricted general relativity that local spacetime is uncurved (is a Lorentz frame).

By use of scalar EM waves with deliberate substructures, one can engineer Bohm's "hidden variables" so that quantum mechanics becomes deterministic rather than statistical. This is a drastic change to the common (Bohr) interpretation of quantum mechanics.

And Einstein's intuition that God does not play dice with the universe turns out to be correct after all.

Since physicists haven't seen where the real game was being played, it has all seemed bewilderingly statistical to them.

IF NO OBSERVABLE MASS FLOWS:

EM POTENTIALS PRODUCE SUSTAINED G-FIELD FLOWS OF VIRTUAL PARTICLES

VIRTUAL PARTICLE FLOW
LOW
Ø
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 019: If No Observable Mass Flows:

Since there are no observable mass particles flowing in vacuum, there are no observable force fields produced. Only virtual force fields can be produced in the virtual particle medium that is vacuum itself.

Thus (here is no observable E-field in the vacuum surrounding a charged point. There is, however, a virtual E-field there. When an observable charged particle such as an electron is introduced in the surrounding vacuum and "couples to" (integrates, zips together) the virtual E-field, an observable E-vector force is produced on and of the observable charged particle.

(For the classically trained electrical engineer or electrical physicist, the statement that no E or B fields as such exist in vacuum, is usually bewildering. Let me point out that any so-called "vector field" (such as the assumed E and B vacuum fields) can mathematically be replaced with two scalar fields. See E. T. Whittaker, Proc. Lond. Math. Soc.l, 366, 1903. What we are saying here is that the definition of an E field is in terms of force per unit charged mass. The scalar fields - which are actually what exist in vacuum - provide only a virtual or unzipped E field, until an observable spinning particle couples to both of them by virtue of its "dynamo flux pump" action. The ensemble, then, of two electrostatic scalar potentials coupled to a spinning observable particle, constitutes and is the so-called "E-field.")

When detecting these "vacuum E-fields," it is the free electrons in the electron gas in our probe or antenna which couple to the two "Whittaker scalar fields". These electrons produce ensembles that interact with each other collectively.

Charges in this electron-gas coupled medium is what we actually detect - not "what is in the vacuum."

To repeat this again for emphasis: The usual detector is an "electron-wiggle" detector. It detects changes in its own conduction electron gas, not in the vacuum itself. That is, the disturbance in the virtual-particle vacuum interacts with the observable particles of the electron gas, if (and only if) the spins of these observable particles couple the vacuum disturbance to the electrons and integrate their virtual components. After integration, an observable disturbance of the integrating object - say, the electron - results. It is this electron gas disturbance that is "detected" by almost all orthodox EM detectors.

If the spin of the observable conduction electrons cannot couple the electron to the vacuum flux disturbance, then the normal "simple" detector will not detect the disturbance. (By a "simple" detector we mean one in which the electrons are able to couple to the vacuum disturbance! Little circular definition here!)

Now most potentials reach to infinity before reducing to zero. The change in the virtual particle flux intensity of vacuum - which comprises the potential - decreases with distance from the potential. The magnitude of the change tails off" toward zero as one approaches infinity.

To any finite distance, then, there exists a decreased gradient in the change of the virtual flux intensity of vacuum, from a potential. Therefore virtual particles are flowing in the direction of the decrease of this gradient, just as gas molecules flow from a region of high pressure toward a region of lower pressure.

So there is a virtual particle "river" in the vacuum between any two separated points of different potential magnitude. The type of potential determines the type of virtual particle(s) in the river.

If the potential is natural, the gradient river does not carry any coherent substructure.

If the potential is artificial, the gradient river carries the coherent substructure everywhere within it. In this case, there is a flow or "river" of the virtual structure of this coherent pattern in the vacuum between two separated points of different "potential" in that pattern.

GRAVITATIONAL POTENTIAL: A CONGLOMERATE OF STRESS TYPES
SPACETIME CURVATURE
PROTONS
CHARGED PARTICLES
UNCHARGED PARTICLES
NEUTRINOS
ETC.
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 020: Gravitational Potential: A Conglomerate of Stress Types

Rigorously, all EM potentials are actually part of the overall 5-dimensional gravitational potential.

There is no such thing as "the" singular gravitational potential: instead, it is a conglomerate of different stress types and patterns, each of which is named for the type of action that produces it.

The movement of charged particles, for example, creates electromagnetic potentials. At any point in vacuum, the potential consists of a flux of virtual particles.

The vacuum contains a great variety of particle fluxes. There are virtual photons, virtual electrons, virtual positrons, virtual protons, virtual pions, virtual neutrinos, etc.

The conglomerate stress from all these virtual particle stresses constitutes the overall gravitational potential

WHAT GRAVITATIONAL FIELD IS

¤ NO SUCH THING AS "THE" G-FIELD

¤ G-FIELD IS A CONGLOMERATE OF:
  - MANY COMPONENT POTENTIALS
  - MANY OTHER ENTITIES

¤ "G-FIELD" IS CURVATURE OF SPACETIME

¤ ANY COMPONENT(S) OF THE CONGLOMERATE CAN BE USED TO CURVE SPACETIME

¤ FLOWS CAN EXIST BETWEEN PAIRS, TRIADS, ETC. WITHOUT APPRECIABLE CHANGE OF THE OVERALL CONGLOMERATE POTENTIAL

¤ ALL FORCE FIELDS REPRESENT BLEED-OFFS OF ONE OR MORE COMPONENTS OF G-FIELD

Slide 021: What Gravitational Field Is

As previously stated, there is no such single thing as "the" gravitational field, as is assumed in the Newtonian sense.

G-field is a conglomerate of many component potentials and other entities.

Rigorously, anything that "curves spacetime" is a gravitational field.

In the modern view, all forces ultimately arise, by some means, from the curving of spacetime. Thus all forces and force fields are related to - and caused by, so to speak - gravitational field.

If the vacuum stress is uniform from one place to another in an observer's **frame** then the observer's spacetime is uncurved. The observer's frame, is said to be linear or uncurved; or a Lorentz, frame. In such a situation the conservation laws rigorously apply for macroscopic, closed systems.

If the vacuum stress is not uniform from one place to another, then the spacetime is curved. In such a situation the conservation laws may be violated for macroscopic systems, since they are "opened" to the vacuum stress, and vacuum virtual particle flux gradients exist across the system or portions of it.

Note that the overall stress magnitude may be constant across a region, but its composition may change. That is, two or more components may vary canonically. In that case, the spacetime is uncurved in the gross external sense, but contains specialized "internal" curvature patterns locally. Depending upon reaction to the canonical infolded curvature patterns, some macroscopic systems will still exhibit conservation, but certain other macroscopic systems may not.

An example is symmetry breaking. Here charge, parity, and time symmetry may be violated individually or in pairs, but not all three simultaneously. An overall conservation law is obeyed, but any two of the three conservation laws can be (und are) violated.

EM FORCE FIELDS ARE
RELEASES OF GRAVITATIONAL POTENTIAL VIA OBSERVABLE MASS FLOWS

HIGH
Ø
∇Ø
OBSERVABLE PARTICLE
LOW
FLOW
LOW
Ø
LOW
VACUUM SPACETIME

Slide 022: EM Force Fields are Releases of Gravitational Potential via Observable Mass Flows

In Kaluza theory, we may take EM force fields to be the 5th dimensional "bleeding-off" of a 5-G potential. However, in vacuum alone this bleeding-off is totally within the virtual state. That is, only virtual EM force fields exist in vacuum.

By the ordinary term "EM force fields," physics has chosen to imply measureable or observable E and B force fields.

That implies that the 5-G potential gradient flows of virtual particle flux must be coupled to observable charged particles - such as electrons, protons, ions, etc. - before observable E and B force fields exist.

Rigorously, E and B force fields consist of the virtual E and B force fields coupled to observable charged particles. They do not "cause" a particle to accelerate; they are the product of the particle and its acceleration.

As these observable particles are themselves "spray pumps" producing virtual particle flux, then a collection of them represents an increased or decreased **flux** (for negative or positive charge) vis-a-vis the ambient background flux of vacuum. Nature furnishes the continuous power to drive these "virtual flux" pumps.

Normally, EM potentials are formed in natural and manmade electrical circuits by collections of these observable particle "spray pumps." Such collections of increased or decreased "spray flux" density, of course, represent 5-potentials, gravitationally.

Release of these pumps in conductors or in the vacuum itself results in creating E-fields and B-fields on and of the moving observable charged particles. But release of the observable-particle spray-pumps from the collection (the potential "pressure head" or "source") reduces the potential or "pressure" at the source.

Thus the formation of E and B fields represents the release of the 5-potentials. Hence EM force fields are the bleed-off of 5-dimensional G-potential via observable mass flow.

Since classical EM always seeks to create the force fields, it always bleeds-off and discards the gravitational effects that could be otherwise achieved.

To allow orthodox EM flow is to dissipate the gravitational effects.

Strangle the orthodox EM flows, and you can keep and use the amplified gravitational effects.

SCALAR Ō-WAVE PRODUCTION
+5
+Ē
$\bar{E}_0=\bar{0}$
-Ē
-5
VIRTUAL GROUND
SPINNING
CHARGED PARTICLE
WILL NOT PRECESS
+10
+φ
$\phi_0=\bar{0}$
-φ
-10
COMPRESSIVE
STRESS
TENSILE
STRESS
STRESS LEVEL
ON SPACETIME

Slide 023: Scalar O-Wave Production

We now visualize the formation of waves of pure stress in the spacetime medium (in the vacuum). These we call scalar EM waves, Tesla waves, electrogravitational waves, longitudinal EM waves, waves of pure potential, electrostatic/magnetostatic waves, and zero-vector EM waves. All these terms are synonymous. Each sheds its own particular light upon the nature of these waves or of their original discoverer, Nikola Tesla.

We use a gedanken experiment, or thought experiment, in which we can be "perfect."

Thus we have two single-frequency EM sine waves whose E-field componenls are shown on the slide. The two waves are of the same frequency, traveling together in the same direction, and superposed 180 degrees out of phase with each other.

In this case, at any spatial point, the summation E and B fields are vector zeros.

However, if we plot the spatiotemporal (vacuum) stress induced by the wave, wo see that it constitutes a sine wave, with compressive stress in one half cycle and tensile stress in the second half cycle.

Rigorously this defines a "longitudinal" EM wave - or what Tesla called a "sound wave in the nonmaterial ether."

Also, rigorously it is a gravitational wave, for it is a wave of the curvature of spacetime (nonlinearity of vacuum) itself. That is, what is changing in the wave is the vacuum stress, or intensity of the virtual particle flux of vacuum. That is identical to changing the curvature of spacetime. In one half-cycle, spacetime is curved positively. In the second half-cycle, spacetime is curved negatively.

Since the increase or decrease of the intensity of virtual particle flux (vis-a-vis the ambient vacuum's virtual flux intensity) represents electrical charge, then in one half-cycle negative charge is represented, and in the other half-cycle positive charge is represented. This directly explains the "positron-electron pair" representation of an electromagnetic photon - the "photon" being one wavelength.

In one half-cycle, time moves slower. In the second half-cycle, time moves faster. Thus scalar waves can also be considered to be "tempic" waves (to use Wilbur Smith's term), or oscillations of the rate of flow of time itself, about the ambient rate of time flow. Since these oscillations are variations in the curvature of spacetime, then they represent gravitational or force-generating waves, when coupled to a mass.

Variations in the rate of flow of time produce force, just as any other type of curvature in space-time does.

SCALAR ELECTROMAGNETICS

- ZERO-VECTOR ENVELOPE
- DELIBERATE, ORDERED SUBSTRUCTURE
  - SPECIFIC PATTERN
  - DETERMINISTIC
  - CONSTITUTES "HIDDEN VARIABLES"
  - PHASING IS KEY
- TO MAKE A SCALAR BEAM
  - USE PHASE-LOCKED FORCE-FIELD BEAMS
  - TWO OR MORE
  - STANDARD BEAMING ANTENNA
  - CONVENTIONAL BASIC CIRCUITS
  - SLIGHT CIRCUIT MODIFICATIONS

Slide 024: Scalar Electromagnetics

To rehash: scalar waves are zero-vector waves. Patterned E and B fields exist in a relationship where their summation equals vector zero. Electromagnetically, the zero EM "envelope" of a scalar EM wave is composed of a zero-summation of infolded finite EM force-vectors.

However, the internal (infolded) substructure is deliberate, macroscopic, and ordered. Vacuum is polarized deterministically by the wave, and macroscopic spacetime is locally curved by it.

These substructure components constitute Bohm's "hidden variables." They can be manipulated and varied at will. Phasing, beaming, frequency, superposition, interference, resonance, and Fourier expansion are the keys to scalar EM engineering.

To make a scalar beam, special modifications are made to the EM wave transmitter so that, effectively, the transmitter transmits multiple transmissions simultaneously, and these vectorially sum to zero. This is the same thing as transmitting multiple phase-locked EM force-field beams simultaneously, in **the** sum-zeroed fashion.

Standard beaming antennas and conventional circuits can readily be utilized with slight modifications.

Any radar can be converted to a scalar EM radar quite simply. Indeed, a modification kit to accomplish that can be developed and held until the **scalar** mode is desired. The modification kit can be quickly installed to provide the scalar capability.

Scalar radars, for example, cannot track "corner reflector" targets. However, they can magnificently track smoothly filleted corners; rounded, smoothly curved surfaces; and curved or flat metalized dielectrics. Against aerial targets using special construction to lower their cross-section to normal radars, the application of the scalar radar mode is immediately obvious.

Scalar waves pass through the electron shells of an atom and interact with the nucleus. They are continually absorbed and emitted by all nuclei in the universe.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER.

Any large collection of nuclei - such as a star or a planet - is a strong absorber and radiator of scalar wave radiation.

The Sun is a particularly strong source of scalar radiation. This radiation penetrates the Earth deeply, interacting more and more with the deeper layers which, under greater mechanical stress, are more nonlinear. Most of the heat in the molten core of the Earth comes from the dephasing of a portion of this absorbed scalar radiation from the Sun, liberating ordinary EM energy as heat.

The Earth also re-radiates scalar wave radiation back to the Sun. The Sun and Earth are thus coupled into a "scalar" system in equilibrium or near-equilibrium. Each body in the couplet possesses both a feed-forward and a feedback loop.

The Earth also radiates scalar wave radiation to the Moon, and the Moon reradiates scalar radiation back to the Earth. The Earth and Moon also are coupled into a "scalar" system in equilibrium or near-equilibrium. Again, each body in the couplet possesses both a feed-forward and a feedback loop.

The Sun and Moon are correspondingly coupled into a scalar system in equilibrium or near-equilibrium, each with both a feed-forward and a feedback loop.

The Earth, Sun, and Noon thus form a triad-coupled system of special importance to the stability of our existence here on Earth, and the stability of our biosphere.

And so on with all the other planets in the solar system, and combinations thereof.

The solar system is thus a very sensitive scalar-coupled system, with strong subsystems within it.

ADDED FOR THE BRIEFER:

Actually this scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of the large Soviet strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a "pulse" mode, pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon systems results. Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled system may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous. Indeed, a solar response could be stimulated so that the Sun would violently belch and destroy our biosphere, among other effects. The simplest doomsday stimulation would be for a violent expulsion of Solar EM energy and particles to occur. If this were due to resonance, the expulsion of Solar EM energy and particles would continue during some decay time. In that case, fiery destruction of the earth, strongly indicative of Biblical prophecy, would result. Particularly sensitive are the resonances of the sun-earth, sun-moon, and earth-moon systems.

Note the abnormal influence of the moon on tides - tides of both the tectonic plates and the oceans. One cannot help but point out that, if the earth-moon resonant system were overstimulated, one might expect violent earthquakes of extraordinary magnitude, and tremendous tidal waves hundreds of feet in height. (The potential connection to legends of earth-destroying floods, evidences of extreme water levels in mountains, and legends of ancient cataclysmic destruction of supposedly advanced technological oceanic cultures is obvious.)

Accordingly, use of huge scalar EM weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself. It is not accidental that in 1960 Khrushchev stated that his new fantastic weapon could - if unrestrainedly used - destroy all life on earth.

This appalling backlash potential is apparently what prompted Brezhnev in 1975 to make so strong an effort to get agreement to outlaw the development of "new weapons of mass destruction" more frightful than the mind of man had even dreamed of. Gromyko even introduced such a draft agreement into the proceedings of the United Nations. The first article of the draft agreement indicated that the nature of the weapons referred to would be negotiated. Sadly, the entire Western world did not even know what the Russians were talking about.

ROGERS' UNDERSEA & UNDERGROUND COMMUNICATIONS SYSTEMS

- SECRETLY USED BY U.S. IN WWI
- COMMUNICATED TO SUBS UNDERWATER
  - ANY DEPTH, UP TO 30 KHZ
  - REDUCED DEPTH, – 30 KHZ
- COMMUNICATED TO EXPEDITIONARY HQ OVERSEAS
  - 5000 TIMES STRONGER THAN AERIAL
  - STATIC-FREE
- DECLASSIFIED IN 1919
  - TO REVOLUTIONIZE COMMUNICATIONS
  - TO END ALL SURFACE ANTENNAS
- MYSTERIOUSLY "LOST"
- REDISCOVERED AND "LOST" 3 TIMES AFTER WWII

Slide 025: Rogers' Undersea & Underground Communications Systems

In an article in the March 1919 issue of the Electrical Experimenter, a real bombshell was released on an unsuspecting world.

In that issue, details of the Rogers'undersea and underground communication systems were released. These systems had been classified SECRET during WWI, and used to communicate with (1) U.S. submarines underwater around the world, and (2) U.S. Expeditionary Forces Headquarters overseas.

Subs at any submerged depth could be reached with transmitters of frequencies up to 30 kiloHertz. At reduced depths, frequencies above 30 kHz could be used.

At the headquarters of U.S. overseas forces, the signals were received through the earth. They were 5,000 times stronger than aerial signals through the atmosphere, and static-free.

The Rogers' systems were covered by a series of patents. They used special antennas implanted in the ground.

While the patents are somewhat confused, several of the diagrams in the Electrical Experimenter reveal that the antennas were producing scalar waves. Scalar waves can indeed travel through the earth and through the ocean. Indeed, if good quality scalar waves are made, then frequencies well above 30 kHz can be sent through the ocean. Multi-megahertz frequencies, for example, are easily achievable. (The problem, of course, is that these waves are pure zero-vector artificial potentials that do not move electrons in the conduction gas of a conventional antenna/receiver combination. Normal receivers and detectors do not see them. Special underwater detectors - such as those developed by Frank Golden - are required.).

With the startling declassification and revelation of the Rogers' systems, it was expected that all communications would be revolutionized, and that all surface antennas would be removed.

Strangely, this entire technology faded away quickly, as if it had never been. Certain powerful interests did not wish the extended electromagnetics to be discovered or taught. That, after all, would lead to free energy and loss of economic control of the citizens. That was precisely why Nikola Tesla had already been suppressed.

According to the important research of Dr. Robert Beck, the same scalar technology has been rediscovered and mysteriously "lost" at least three times after World War II!

Today the orthodox establishment is still suppressing it.

One wonders why no orthodox physicist - with the single exception of Dr. Hooper (see U.S. patents 3,610,971, Oct. 5, 1971 and 3,656,013, Apr. 11, 1972) - seems to have experimented with deliberately constructed zero-vector EM waves and devices, and published his results in the literature.

One would think that any university physics department would wish to explore such a gaping void with at least a few graduate student experiments, if for no other reason than scientific curiosity, particularly when the experiment is easily performed, it is totally different from anything else in the theory or literature, and the implications may be formidable. A true scientist in that related field ought to try it!

HOW DOES THE ROGERS SYSTEM WORK?

"WE DO NOT KNOW AS YET HOW THE ROGERS SYSTEM WORK.

... ROGERS HIMSELF TAKES THE VIEW— AND HE IS SECONDED BY TESLA—THAT THE TRANSOCEANIC MESSAGES WHICH HE RECEIVES ... ARE NOT HERZIAN WAVES ..."

H. GERNSBACK
ELECTRICAL EXPERIMENTER
6(11), MARCH 1919, PAGE 52

Slide 026: How does the Rogers System Work?

In the same March 1919 issue of Electrical Experimenter, Hugo Gernsback pointed out that no one as yet knew how the Rogers' system actually worked.

Rogers himself believed he was not using conventional Hertzian waves.

Nikola Tesla himself confirmed that the underground and undersea waves were not Hertzian waves.

If so, they could only have been scalar waves.

SCALAR EM WAVES ARE EMITTED & ABSORBED BY THE NUCLEUS

Slide 027: Scalar EM Waves are Emitted & Absorbed by the Nucleus

Normally scalar EM waves do not couple to orbital electrons. Entering into the atom, incoming scalar EM waves penetrate the electron shells without interaction. They continue, penetrating into the interior of the closely packed nucleus, where the extreme nonlinearity of the charged virtual particle flux that binds the nucleons together distorts the scalar wave, dephasing its summed EM vector components. This produces a nonzero EM resultant and polarized pattern directly inside the virtual particle charge flux of the nucleus.

The new EM resultant immediately couples the distorted scalar wave to the nucleus, resulting in absorption of the wave and incorporation of its polarization pattern into the nucleus' virtual flux. This in turn results in a slightly excited nucleus. Normally the excited nucleus will promptly decay by emitting another scalar wave, which passes through the orbital electron shells and radiates out into the universe.

However, as can be seen, if the same strong scalar pattern is constantly radiated into the nucleus and absorbed by it, the excitation of the nucleus "charges up," leading to decay by other modes. In this manner the nucleus can be engineered even transmuted - by rather minuscule power of the engineering radiation signal.

This is how living biological systems are able to transmute elements, as discovered by Louis Kervran. (Kervran was nominated for the 1977 Nobel Prize for this work.). The biosystem produces scalar EM waves. If the appropriate signal is employed into and on the appropriate nucleus, a changed element emerges. In this fashion chickens denied sufficient calcium in their diet, but allowed a surplus of potassium, are able to transmute some of the potassium into calcium. Note that one of the isotopes of potassium is an isomer of normal calcium. Transmutation of this potassium isomer to calcium is easiest.

NUCLEI OF THE UNIVERSE CONTINUALLY EXCHANGE SCALAR EM WAVES

Slide 028: Nuclei of the Universe Continually Exchange Scalar EM Waves

Thus scalar EM waves are continually exchanged by all nuclei of the universe, and the vacuum is - among other things - a seething cauldron of scalar radiation.

In fact, it is this seething scalar wave cauldron that creates the virtual particles and the virtual particle flux of vacuum itself. (Since the scalar EM wave represents an oscillation of the curvature of spacetime, and since everything - virtual or observable - is a curvature of spacetime, then scalar waves can be taken as the universal generatrix.

The intensity of the trapped scalar flux in the nucleus of an atom is responsible for the mass and inertia of the nucleus.

Mass is localized trapped scalar resonance.

The trapping agent is the spin of a particle.

The mass and inertia of the particle are due to the scalar resonance that is trapped. Increasing the amplitude of the trapped scalar resonance increases the mass and inertia; decreasing the amplitude decreases the mass and inertia.

CONVERTING EM FIELD ENERGY TO G-FIELD ENERGY & VICE-VERSA

5-D G-FIELD
EM FIELD
4-D G-FIELD
ZERO VECTOR EM SYSTEM

Slide 029: Converting EM Field Energy to G-Field Energy & Vice-Versa

According to Kaluza theory, there are no such things as a separate EM field and a separate gravity field. Instead, in five dimensions there is only one field: the 5-d gravitational field. The EM field is the 5th dimensional aspect, while our normal 4-dimensional G-field is the other aspect of the 5-field, in our normal 4-space.

Thus we may say that the 5-field is composed of two components: the 5th dimensional component (our normal EM field) and the component occupying our normal 4 dimensions (our normal G-field).

The 5-d "force" field, of course - or the 5-space analogy to a force field - would be due to a gradient or "bleed-off of the 5-d gravitational potential. This gradient in turn is composed of two components: the 5th dimensional "bleed-off" outside our normal 4-space (this outer bleed-off is our normal EM force field) and the bleed-off inside our normal 4-space (this inner bleed-off is our normal G-field).

Normally the 5-potential bleeds-off outside our 4-space as EM field, far greater than it bleeds-off inside our world as G-field. Between two electrons, for example, the electric field is about 10^{42} times as strong as the G-field. Since in the Kaluza view there is only one 5-d G-potential that is causing both force fields, this shows that there is an incredibly greater EM bleed-off of the 5-

potential between the two electrons than there is a G-field bleed-off between them.

As shown on the diagram, the 5-d G-field is normally comprised almost entirely of the 5th dimensional EM field. Only a small 4-space G-field component exists.

However, suppose we were to "block" the bleed-off of the 5-potential in the EM mode. Then none of the 5-potential could bleed-off in the 5th dimensional EM field. Instead, it would be forced to bleed-off into the 4-space G-field. In our two-electron example, this "perfect case" would result in the disappearance of the E-field between the two electrons, and the G-field between them would increase to about 10^{42} times its normal strength.

The end result would be that, by blocking the EM force field bleed-off, EM field is converted to G-field. In addition, EM field energy is converted to G-field energy. With the extremely amplified gravitational and inertial effects that result, one can now accomplish direct engineering of gravitation, mass, and inertial effects.

We can effectively accomplish this "blocking the EM bleed-off by opposing EM force fields so that they sum to vector zero. This is the same as summing various 5th dimensional gradients of the 5-potential to a zero vector resultant. In that case, as much "EM bleed-back to 5-potential" occurs as there is "EM bleed-off from 5-potential." This places the 5-potential in equilibrium with respect to EM bleed-off.

Also, another nice thing results: Since we can readily vary the magnitudes of the EM force field components of the vector zero summation, we can actually form phased "zero vector waves" by increasing and decreasing the magnitudes of all the component EM vectors in phase, but retaining their vector summation always equal to zero.

In that case we have produced a very simple 5-space G-potential wave, which concomitantly forces phase-locked variations in the 4-space G-potential. In short, we have produced an electrogravitational (EG) wave, or scalar EM wave for short. This wave described is the simplest EG scalar wave we can produce; much more complex EG waves can be produced and used for highly **specialized** purposes.

The scalar EG wave changes EG potential energy into 4-gravity potential energy in one half-cycle, and changes 4-G potential energy into EG potential energy in the other half-cycle. However, the EG potential energy in the first half-cycle does not react electromagnetically in linear circumstances, since it is electromagnetically a linear vector zero.

So our scalar EG wave actually oscillates energy back and forth between a locked-in 5th dimensional EM potential and a 4-space G-potential. As can be seen, to the linear 4-space observer this scalar EG wave appears as a purely gravitational wave, with G-potential magnitude varying in a wavelike manner.

NORMAL EM BLEEDS-OFF G-FIELD

!!
5-D G-FIELD
BIG PRESSURE TANK
??
WHOOSH
4-D
G-FIELD BLEED
5th
DIMENSIONAL
EM BLEED
(ACCUMULATOR)

Slide 030: Normal EM Bleeds-Off G-Field

For easy visualization, we may regard the situation in the analogy shown on the slide.

The 5-potential of 5-space vacuum is like a high pressure in a big tank. The tank has a huge open door in the 5th dimension, leading to rapid bleed-off of the 5-presure through the big door; that is, as EM field. Only a very small hole in the tank normally exists in our own 4-space world, so only a very small amount of the pressure bleeds off as our G-field.

SCALAR EM FORCES 4-D G-FIELD

??
5-D G-FIELD
BIG PRESSURE TANK
EM
ZERO
VECTOR
(ACCUMULATOR)
BOOM!
5th
DIMENSIONAL
EM BLEED
B
E
4-D
G-FIELD BLEED

Slide 031: Scalar EM Forces 4-D G-Field

As can be seen however, if we shut the big door so that we have only a little bleed-off through the seals, then most of the pressure is forced to bleed-off through the small opening, greatly enlarging it. In that case, most of the 5-potential bleeds-off as 4-G force field.

The mass exposed to such increased 4-G bleed-off exhibits a much greater mass and inertia.

In fact, mass itself can act as an accumulator for the effect, and it can increase its ability to store trapped scalar resonance. This increases its inertia.

By the use of scalar EM (blocking the EM bleed-off), we can input normal EM energy and obtain powerful gravitational and inertial effects. Many other powerful effects can also be obtained.

DETECTION OF ELECTRO-GRAVITATION

- WHEN ORDINARY EM FORCE FIELDS ARE INTERFERED/SUMMED TO PRODUCE ZERO, AND ARE ALSO LOCKED TOGETHER, THEY PRODUCE STRESS OF VACUUM (GRAVITATIONAL POTENTIAL OF FIELD).
  THIS IS ELECTRO-GRAVITY.
- WHEN ELECTRO-GRAVITATIONAL FIELDS ARE INTERFERED/SUMMED TO PRODUCE ZERO, AND ARE LOCKED TOGETHER, THEY PRODUCE ORDINARY ELECTRO-MAGNETIC FORCE.

Slide 032: Detection of Electro-Gravitation

Here are two magic rules in the scalar electrogravitational business:

(1) When ordinary EM force fields are interfered or summed so that they produce vector zero, and the fields are locked together, they produce stress of vacuum (5-potential). One component of this 5-potential is the 4-space G-potential. Since bleed-off as a gradient of this 4-space G-potential is all that is allowed, then the EM destructive interference/zero summation bleeds-off to produce gravitational force field. This is because opposing equal forces, which sum to a vector zero force field resultant, actually produce a stress potential having stress energy of spacetime. And that is a curvature of spacetime, hence gravitational.

In short, total destructive interference of EM waves or force fields produces excess stress potential energy in spacetime, and therefore gravitational force field on detecting/coupled particles.

(2) When electrogravitational fields are interfered/summed to produce vector zero, this destructive interference/zero summation bleeds-off to produce ordinary electromagnetic force field.

In short, destructive interference of scalar EM waves or fields (electrogravitational waves or fields) produces electromagnetic force fields on detecting/coupled particles.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

Mathematically we can summarize this as follows;

$$G_{(1-4)} = G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{m}) + G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{EM}) \qquad [3]$$

$$G_{(1-5)} = G_5 + G_{(1-4)} \qquad [4]$$

If $\mathbf{E} = \Sigma \mathbf{å}_i E_i = \mathbf{0},\ E_i \neq \mathbf{0};\ \mathbf{B} = \Sigma \mathbf{å}_i B_i = \mathbf{0},\ B_i \neq \mathbf{0}$ [5]

then $G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{m}) = G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{EM}) = G_5 = G_{(1-5)}$ [6]

and $G_5 = G_{(1-4)} = f[\Sigma(\mathbf{å}_i\,|\mathbf{E}_i|^2)] + g[\Sigma(\mathbf{å}_i\,|\mathbf{B}_i|^2)]$ [7]

and $G_{(1-5)} = G_5 = G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{m}) = G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{EM}) = f(\phi) + g(\mathbf{A})$ [8]

Where:

$G_{(1-5)}$ is the 5-d G potential, or total G-stress on dimensions 1-5.

G_5 is the combined EM potential, or G-stress on dimension 5 only.

$G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{m})$ is the normal 4-d G-potential of mass alone, or the G-stress due to mass-gravity.

$G_{(1-4)}(\mathrm{EM})$ is any extra 4-d G-potential of mass due to conversion from G_5 stress (normally zero).

E and B are the electric and magnetic force fields.

ϕ is the electrostatic scalar potential.

A is the magnetic vector potential.

Thus the age-old scientific dream of direct engineering of gravitational field — and of spacetime itself — can now become reality. To start, one simply makes an intense EM vector zero and varies its stress intensity and internal pattern of summed components. One also varies the reference potential at which the patterned EM stress zero is created, and the frequency of internal component variation.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER.

He that has ears, let him hear.

Here is the secret of antigravity

The "electrical charge" of a charged particle — such as one of the orbital electrons of an atom or one of the protons of its nucleus — represents a difference in flux intensity (potential) between the local particle and its ambient vacuum.

It's the continual bleed-off of gravitational charge as electrical charge.

If that bleed-off is reversed or stopped, a drastic effect on the gravitational potential and charge ensues. The 5-potential and 5-charge have become 4-G-potential and 4-d-charge respectively.

Thus "charging" an object with its scalar EM pattern charges it gravitationally.

Now the only "bleed-off channel" is through the 4-G force field.

Further, in a nucleus the nucleons continually change back and forth between proton and neutron, so the electrical charge is "spread" throughout the nucleus and shared by all the nucleons.

Further, each element (actually each isotope) has its own unique "ensemble pattern" of Fourier expansion scalar frequencies, amplitudes, etc. This pattern, of course, can be reproduced artificially and transmitted by modified EM transmitters (i.e., by scalar EM transmitters). There is, however, a sort of "master key" scalar EM (EG) pattern for nucleons (protons and neutrons which are changing back and forth into each other by exchange of virtual charge currents).

If one "reverses the charge" by inverting this pattern, and then "charges up a mass with the inverted charge," to the external observer the charging mass just gets lighter and lighter, and its inertia gets less and less. Eventually it seems (to him) to acquire negative mass and negative inertia, and just accelerate away from the earth. The object "falls upward" instead of "falling downwards."

There are also some weird time effects. The object can be moving slower through time than the laboratory observer, or even be moving backwards through time with respect to the laboratory observer. (Don't believe everything they laught you in relativity; none of those professors had ever engineered a single general relativistic situation. Little that they teach in GR is based on direct experiment. Most of what they teach is already experimentally proven to be incomplete or in need of further extension.).

But back to our slide.

Inside the pattern itself, it's just a quite normal pattern. No change in or on the object seems to have occurred, to it, if the charge is evenly accomplished throughout the object. Indeed, to an internal observer it's the external environment that seems to have suddenly gotten very strange! This is what occasionally happens to a hapless aircraft or ship that experiences anomalous spatiotemporal difficulty in an *occasionally scalar-active* area such as the Bermuda triangle. Under the right conditions, the vehicle's gravitational charge is affected by anomalous changes in the scalar radiation from the earth in that area. To the passengers and crew, it is the external environment that suddenly seems weird. In addition, on-board EM and inertial instruments may be affected, and other electrogravitational effects may also occur, due to differing rates of charge in different parts of the vehicle.).

"Reversing or lowering the EG-charge" is controlled by means of biasing the ground potential on the ensemble pattern transmitters. These transmitters can even be on-board the vehicle itself. (Remember, in scalar EM to transmit is also to receive. A vehicle can change its own bias potential (with respect to local vacuum G-potential) by properly transmitting, which translates to "receiving potential charge." The charge current can either be negative or positive (its potential can be lowered or increased vis-a-vis that of the vacuum.) Think of this as handling positive and negative energy, which means positive and negative gravity.

By "fiddling" with this, you can float metal. Or a human body. Or a battleship. Or a high-speed vehicle containing a crew.

You can even "dematerialize it" or "teleport it."

The Philadelphia Experiment may have been real after all. If so, the test ship and its personnel were "blasted" into this strange realm, instead of making a gentle, controlled entry.

Suppose you materially lower or reverse (adjust) the gravitational charge (gravitation 5-potential with zero-summed EM to throttle EM bleed-off). At zero gravitational charge, to the external observer, such an assumed vehicle would seem to have no mass and no inertia. It is capable of extreme accelerations, right angle turns at full speed, etc. It is also right on the point of dematerialization, and may appear to be glowing or just a vehicle of light.

If the pilot wishes to "land," of course he must adjust the charge on the vehicle.

If the pilot wishes to "dematerialize" or "teleport," again he must adjust the charge on the vehicle.

If he wishes to go "hyperspatial," again he must adjust the charge on the vehicle and allow the proper bleed-off to produce a hyperspatial force. That's done with nested zero summations and nested patterns of scalar EM transmission.

That is, he can charge and bias the vehicle in multiple, nested zero-summations simultaneously.

That is necessary for hyperspatial control and travel.

Note that in lower hyperspace such a vehicle could do some very strange things. Such as "penetrate" solid matter (actually, it goes "around" the 3-space matter in a 4th Kaluza-Klein space).

We might expect to see such vehicles glowing. Their various surface features and mechanisms might appear to be glowing or revolving lights, etc.

They could exhibit incredible "aerodynamic performance," seemingly in the atmosphere. Actually they would not be moving "through" the atmosphere at all but through a higher space outside each particle of atmosphere.

They could seem to materialize and dematerialize.

They could seem to plunge into the ocean or rise out of it.

They could even seem to operate under the ocean or inside the earth itself.

Such anomalous vehicle performances have been seen all over the world, particularly since a few years after WWII.

SCALAR WAVE DETECTOR*

(DETECTS ELECTROGRAVITATIONAL WAVES)

FARADAY CAGE
RESONANT TUNING CIRCUIT
C
REMOTE TUNING
OSCILLOSCOPE
MAGNET
PREAMP
SHIELDED
CABLE
CURVED SPACETIME

* BEDINI VERSION OF DEA/FARETTO DETECTOR

033

NOTE: MAGNET > 40,000 gauss

Slide 033: Scalar Wave Detector

On this slide we show a concept for a detector for scalar EG waves. This is the Bedini scalar wave detector, adapted from an original concept by Dea and Faretto.

The idea is quite simple: install a very powerful bar magnet vertically inside a grounded Faraday cage. Then install an open-ended coil longitudinally above the magnet so that a line through the longitudinal axis of the magnet passes through the longitudinal axis of the coil above it. The open end of the coil does not touch the magnet.

Connect the other end of the coil to a variable tuning capacitor, so that the coil and capacitor form a tunable, series-LC-oscillatory circuit. The output of the capacitor is connected to a transistorized preamplifier inside the cage. A tuning shaft for the capacitor is very carefully passed through a small hole in the shield to allow tuning from outside.

The output of the preamp passes very carefully through a small hole in the shield, through a shielded cable, to an adjacent oscilloscope. The cable shield in also grounded to reference ground potential.

The theory is as follows: Suppose a normal EM wave appears inside the cage, above the magnet or closely adjacent thereto. In that case a coupled **oscillation** appears in the field of the magnet, and this oscillation is coupled to the coil immediately above it. If the oscillation is within the bandwidth of the tuned series LC circuit, detection occurs. This is amplified by the preamp and passed to the oscilloscope, where it is displayed on the scope.

Note that the detector detects normal EM wave. Now our problem is: how do we get an EG wave to be detected? And how do we assure that we do not detect ordinary EM waves from outside?

Actually this is simple. Ordinary waves (except for quite low frequency) will be grounded out by the Faraday shield, and will not penetrate the cage. Thus these normal EM waves cannot enter the cage and appear above the magnet. They will not be detected.

Scalar EG waves, on the other hand, will enter the cage since they do not couple to conduction electrons in the metal of the cage. Above the pole of the magnet, spacetime is locally bent. After all, a pole is a magnetostatic scalar potential, which is a part of the conglomerate called "G-potential." The pole represents an increase (or decrease, depending upon whether it is a north or a south pole) in the magnetostatic component of the local G-potential. This is a curvature of spacetime. An EG wave entering this region adds a varying component of magnetostatic G-potential, which bleeds-off in the coil as an ordinary EM wave.

Another way to view the detector is to model the EG wave as a longitudinal wave, and an ordinary EM wave as a transverse wave. When the EG wave enters the curved spacetime region above the magnet, to the coil (the "observer" in this case) the longitudinal aspect of the EG wave appears to be rotating back and forth, so that an oscillating transverse component is present. This transverse component appears to the coil as an ordinary EM field, and so the LC circuit detects it if it is in the proper frequency band.

Yet another way to view the situation is to realize that an EG wave entering the magnet results in an oscillation component added to the magnetostatic scalar potential (pole strength) of the magnet. Accordingly, the magnet is a receiver for scalar waves, which are detected to "bleed-off as an oscillation of the magnetic field strength of the magnet. Coupling of this oscillating magnetic field to the coil creates an oscillating current flow into the capacitor. This oscillates the voltage input to the preamp, which amplifies and feeds the signal to the oscilloscope for display.

In fact rather like the latter view! It is important to remember that a magnetostatic potential and an electrostatic potential can be oscillated by a scalar EG wave. By placing a magnetic material inside a Faraday cage, the oscillation of the magnetostatic scalar potential (pole strength of the magnet) can be used as the EG detecting mechanism. By placing a chargeable material inside a Faraday cage, the oscillation of the electrostatic scalar potential can be detected. (Possible examples of the latter type detectors are given by Hodowanec, Radio Electronics, April 1986.)

Note also that one may detect waves at one reference level and not at another. Changing the bias on the zero-reference ground of the Bedini detector affects the detection. To look inside a normal EM carrier (such as the Woodpecker) and see what scalar signals are riding upon it, the carrier may be used to bias the reference ground of the Bedini detector.

To produce a spectrum analyzer, simply use additional series resonant LC tuning circuits in parallel (put multiple taps on the coil, and wire each tap to a separate tuning capacitor of different capacitance). Again, varying the zero reference level is important, as is varying the strength of the magnet.

Golden also has invented an excellent series of scalar wave detectors based upon quite different proprietary principles.

The bottom line is: we can indeed rigorously detect and measure scalar EG waves. When one considers the large sums of money presently being spent to bury large aluminum cylinders etc. in an attempt to detect gravitational waves, one wonders why some funds could not be released to a few unorthodox researchers by the National Academy of Sciences to fund the proven creation and detection of electrogravitational waves!

Note from TEB: I understand that it took Bedini about 600 attempts before he got the device to work. It was then handed over to a different party to produce, who made some "improvements," and the device then failed to work.

SCALAR RESONANCE
$\bar{E}_R = \bar{0}$
λ_1
λ_2
E
B
B
E
$\bar{B}_R = \bar{0}$

NOTE:
CAVITY IS
RESONANT
TO EITHER
WAVE
INDIVIDUALLY

WAVE AND ANTI-WAVE SUPERPOSE AND
MOVE ALONG TOGETHER, BACK AND FORTH

Slide 034: Scalar Resonance

Here we explain a new kind of resonance: scalar EH resonance, or electrogravitational resonance.

First, imagine we have a standard resonant cavity, represented by the two walls in our diagram. In this cavity we have a resonant EM wave moving back and forth, represented by the forward-most plane. In accordance with convention, we show the E-field vector and the B-field vector at right angles in this moving wave front. As the wave front moves back and forth, the vectors vary back and forth; however, at any one point between the walls, the two vectors always have the same value. Thus our resonant EM wave forms a standing wave in the cavity.

Now imagine that a second wave front, precisely like the first and of the same frequency, is superposed over the first wave front and travels along with it. This second wave - the "antiwave" - has its force vectors 180 degrees out of phase with the force vectors of the reference wave. Hence the E-fields and B-fields of the two superposed waves always sum to vector zeros, anywhere in the cavity. To an external observer, the cavity contains no ordinary electromagnetic force fields, hence no ordinary EM energy.

However, the energy density of a single EM sine wave in vacuum is given by

$$[E^2+B^2]/8\pi \qquad [9]$$

This energy density is always positive. Hence the energy density of the two waves at any point x between the walls is equal to

$$[E^2+B^2]/4\pi \qquad [10]$$

where

$$E = E(x) \; ; \; B = B(x) \qquad [11]$$

Thus the energy density of vacuum varies with x. But, rigorously, since the resultant E and B fields are zero, this describes a standing gravitational wave. Hence we have a standing EG wave, existing in the resonant cavity. This is an example of scalar resonance. Rigorously the cavity has mass and inertia, to an outside observer, as a result of the two warps in spacetime it contains.

Note that in one half-cycle the energy density of vacuum is greater than ambient, and in the other half-cycle it is less. In the region of one half-cycle, time flows at a faster rate than to the ambient observer, and in the other half-cycle time flows at a slower rate than to the ambient observer.

One half-cycle appears to contain negative electrical charge, and the other appears to contain positive charge.

One half-cycle appears to contain a north pole (positive magnetostatic scalar potential), and the other half-cycle appears to contain a south pole (negative magnetostatic scalar potential).

Perhaps now one can begin to understand why a continuously accelerated orbital electron in the atom does not radiate EM energy, completely in violation of Maxwell's equations. The electron is naught but a complex aspect of a standing scalar resonance, existing between the nucleus and the orbit.

SCALAR RESONANCE

- NOT IN PRESENT TEXTBOOKS
- CONTROLS NATURE OF PARTICLE
- BENDS SPACETIME
- CONTROLS MASS
- CONTROLS INERTIA
- CONTROLS GRAVITY
- CAN FLOW
- A “MASS” IS LIKE A CAPACITANCE
- HAS A SCALAR MAGNITUDE
- HAS SPECIFIC PATTERNING

Slide 035: Scalar Resonance

Scalar resonance is not in the conventional textbook.

Scalar resonance is a particular zero-summed multi-resonance, electromagnetically, so that it does not act in an electromagnetic manner.

A scalar resonance is a standing electrogravitational wave. It can be made e**lectrically,** but it is not electrical in behavior.

In any scalar resonance, spacetime is curved, and it is the magnitude (and direction; of this spacetime curvature that is oscillating in "standing wave" fashion. In respect to stress of the vacuum medium, one half of a standing sine wave of scalar resonance is tensile; the other half is compressive. However, this is with respect to the local ambient stress of vacuum.

"Mass" of a particle is just a characteristic exhibited by a trapped scalar resonance. Usually this trapping is done by the "spin" of the individual particle.

The concept of "mass" may be compared to the concept of "capacitance." That is, a mass is an accumulator for scalar waves; that is, for scalar resonances. It is continually being "charged" and "discharged" by absorption and emission of sca**lar** waves from and to the ambient vacuum scalar wave flux.

Indeed, the magnitude of a mass may be defined in terms of the absolute value of this "switching" (absorption = switch in; emission = switch out) rate. In a very early paper I defined the mass of an object as proportional to the absolute value of the sum of the input and output switching rates, where each "switch" represents a change of action of h/(4). (Bearden, Quiton/Perceptron Physics: A Theory of Existence, Perception, and Physical Phenomena, Mar. 1973, AD 763210, available through NTIS.) In that scheme, one kilogram of mass equals a switch rate of 17.053 x 10^{50} switches per second. An object is in a Lorentz frame when the switch-in and switch-out rates are equal in a given direction. If, in addition, the in-out rates in all directions are constant, the object is "stationary" with respect to a Lorentz observer. If not constant in all directions, the object is in a curved spacetime with respect to a Lorentz observer. In that case either the object's local spacetime is warped or the object is in a generalized, accelerated frame.

In the normal linear spacetime, the "charging" and "discharging" are equal in all directions; hence the "mass" exhibited in any direction is the same.

With respect to an "external observer's" equilibrium flux, a moving object encounters an increased amount of flux rate along its line of motion, just as a moving object in a rainstorm encounters more raindrops per second in the direction of its path, than does a stationary object. Encountering increased scalar wave flux (with respect to the external observer) forces the moving object to absorb and emit scalar waves at a higher rate along its direction of motion than when it is not moving. Thus to the external observer, the mass of the object has increased, insofar as any disturbing force along its line of motion is concerned.

At right angles to its line of motion, however, the flux rate is precisely the same as when the object is at rest. Therefore the "mass" of the moving object with respect to any disturbing force at right angles to its line of motion has not changed, as seen by the external Lorentz observer.

Thus is explained both parts of one of the alltime great mysteries of special relativity: (1) how the mass of an object increases with respect to its motion, and (2) why the mass only increases with respect to its line of motion, and not at right angles to it.

The inertia of a particle is due to its mass, i.e., to the total magnitude of its trapped scalar resonance.

The gravitational attraction between two masses is due to their spacetime curvature. Further, mass is like a capacitance. It can trap additional scalar waves as trapped resonance; hence increase its magnitude or "inertial charge." Or, it can discharge more scalar waves than it absorbs; hence decrease its magnitude or "inertial charge."

Those scalar waves emitted from resonance are emitted as a pattern ensemble of the resonance. Hence they may be regarded as constituting a current of scalar resonance leaving the mass-accumulator-object. Scalar waves absorbed into trapped resonance may be regarded as constituting a current of scalar resonance into the mass-accumulator-object. Thus it is proper to speak of scalar resonance as being able to "flow."

Further, it is possible to increase the mass of an object directly, by transmitting scalar EM waves to it so that it absorbs them. (By "absorbing" scalar waves one means that more enter the object than leave it, so the object acts as an inertial accumulator charging up with inertial charge. This is done by insuring that the reference potential of the scalar wave transmitter is higher than the reference potential of the irradiated object.)

It is also possible to decrease the mass of an object directly, by transmitting scalar EM waves to it so that it emits more than it absorbs. (By "emitting" scalar waves one means that more leave the object than enter it, so the object acts as if it were an inertial accumulator that is discharging its inertial charge. This is done by insuring that the reference potential of the scalar wave transmitter is lower than the reference potential of the irradiated object.)

As can be seen, the scalar wave "transmitter" is actually somewhat comparable to a heat pump; it can either act as an "energy transmitter" or as an "energy extractor," depending upon the difference in potential between "transmitter" and "receiver."

Finally, scalar resonance can have a specific pattern: both in frequency and in spatial curvature aspects, as well as "rate of flow of time" aspects. Indeed, scalar-wise every object has its individual "scalar pattern" which is a unique fingerprint. Since that print is spatiotemporal, it is a product of the object's entire past history. Thus - scalar-wise - no two objects are identical.

This brings up another rather amazing potential: If a reasonably precise scalar pattern of an object can be "irradiated" and resonated with scalar waves, energy may be created in or extracted from the distant object, just as stimulating one tunning fork can excite another at a distance by sympathetic resonance. We leave it as an exercise for the reader to ascertain the relevance of this statement to clairvoyance, radionics, remote viewing, etc.

For the skeptic, however, we must point out that - rigorously - quantum mechanics requires that, continually, in any localized region of spacetime, the "pattern" of any object in the universe appears momentarily in the virtual state, purely from statistical considerations alone. So long as the situation remains statistical, any place in the universe can continue to have the "ghosts" of everything present there, in an ethereally thin pattern, and the observable world will not be affected by it. However, if one can discriminate and scalarly "charge" or "discharge" individual patterns in this "ghost-realm," action-at-a-distance is directly possible, as is materialization and dematerialization. If one accepts that even thought itself produces such virtual "ghost-patterns" in the virtual particle flux of vacuum, then it is at least theoretically possible to even materialize thoughts and thought images.

We have entered a new kind of reality where the old rules and the old limitations do not necessarily apply.

SCALAR RESONANCE CURRENTS

CURRENTS OF SCALAR RESONANCE CAN FLOW TO CHARGE A MASS WITH ADDITIONAL "MASS" AND "INERTIA," OR TO DISCHARGE IT.

MASS ACCUMULATOR
MASS ACCUMULATOR
R_1
R_2
$\dot{R}$

Slide 036: Scalar Resonance Currents

As we pointed out, we can often greatly simplify matters by considering currents of scalar resonance. These currents flow from higher potential to lower potential, regardless of whether we are considering "transmission" or "reception."

Indeed, to "transmit at lower potential" is to receive, and to "receive at higher potential" is to transmit.

Thus the "transmitter-receiver" is a special system where simply biasing the two nodes differently determines which way the scalar resonance current will flow.

We may increase or decrease an object's inertia and mass, simply by properly biasing the transmitter-receiver system's two nodes.

In one accidental experiment of some hours in duration, Golden charged up an area so that, locally, all clocks became erratic. This included electrical clocks, battery-driven watches, wind-up kitchen clocks, and a pendulum-operated grandfather's clock. The rate of flow of time itself was apparently altered in the local area by the accumulated charge, which took some four days to drain off and discharge. At the end of the four days of discharge, all clocks and watches had returned to normal.

TRANSVERSE WAVE INTERFERENCE

XMTR #1
XMTR #2
ENERGY ZONES
INTERFERENCE ZONE
ZERO ENERGY LINES
(δ-LINES)

Slide 037: Transverse Wave Interference

On this slide we show the orthodox representation of EM wave interference.

The chart is stylized since we assume two single-frequency EM waves that intersect and interfere in the indicated region.

In the interference zone, in-phase wave amplitudes add (constructive interference) while out-of-phase wave amplitudes subtract (destructive interference). In our stylized mode, we show the zero-summed locations as lines.

Conventionally, these interfering waves are considered to be transverse waves in vacuum.

The point is, in this scheme we think of "putting in the waves of finite amplitude, and creating the zero-amplitude regions by destructive interference." We create additional waves of increased-amplitude regions by constructive iterference.

Note that this view is only half correct. It addresses the electromagnetics, but not the gravitational aspects. Actually the regions of destructive EM interference are regions of constructive G-interference, and the regions of constructive EM interference are regions of destructive G-interference.

TRANSVERSE WAVE INTERFERENCE
ENERGY ZONES
INTERFERENCE ZONE
XMTR #1
ZERO ENERGY LINES
(δ-LINES)
XMTR #2

Slide 038: Transverse Wave Interference

Here we show the same interference situation, only now we think of transmitting scalar EM waves, which we model as longitudinal waves.

Again we assume two single-frequency scalar EM waves that intersect and interfere in the indicated region.

However, to an external observer, each of these waves individually appears to have zero E and H fields, hence to contain zero EM energy. That is, conventionally we seem to be transmitting waves of "pure potential," without any "force field" amplitudes whatsoever. We say we are transmitting waves of "artificial potential," since we deliberately constructed the zero-vector-summation scalar waves in the first place.

In the interference zone, a strange thing now happens. The relative magnitudes of the artificial potential of one wave with respect to the artificial potential of the other depend upon the phase relationship between the two. Further, whether the "gradient" so established appears negative or positive also depends upon the phase relationship between the two.

What results is most interesting: the out-of-phase condition now produces an EM gradient whose sign and magnitude are functions of the location within the interference zone.

Thus one now has real, non-zero EM potential gradients, both electrical and magnetic. And so real EM energy has emerged in an interference pattern within the area.

Ironically, we get essentially what we had before! Only now we have "put in the zero-reference lines, and produced the non-zero gradient (energy) zones."

In other words, we have recreated ordinary EM energy at a distance, directly from the interference of gravitational potential energy (anenergy).

And, to the laboratory observer, there has been no "EM wave" energy flow through the intervening space.

This was Tesla's secret of "wireless transmission of energy to a distance without losses."

Further, in a hypothetically perfect case, the interference represents a sort of "energybottle."

But now recall our need to take the sign of the scalar current into account. In this energy bottle, then, EM energy emerges and stabilizes - if and only if our transmitters are at higher reference potential than the ambient interference zone. If our transmitters are biased at lower potential, then energy is extracted from the energy bottle and re-emerges back at the transmitters, where it must be extracted and disposed of, if the transmitters are not to be burned out.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

If we interfere two transmitters in a region of great energy -such as the molten core of the earth itself- and bias the transmitters negatively, we can extract enormous energy directly from that distant source!

Indeed, a slight variation of this effect is precisely how the Soviet Union obtains the enormous energy with which to power its incredibly powerful strategic "continent-buster" scalar EM weapons. Scalar frequency pairs - 12 kiloHertz apart - are transmitted into the earth itself on some portion of the earth's "giant scalar resonance" frequency curve. Biasing the two transmitters differently with respect to each other produces a high potential difference (voltage) between them. At the same time, biasing them both negative with respect to the earth's molten core produces a scalar resonance current from the core to the two transmitters. In the "outer loop" between the two scalar transmitters, there appears a gigantic voltage and gigantic electrical current that can be captured by appropriate means. This electrical power is tapped off and transmitted to incredibly powerful scalar EM weapon systems. There special accumulators and switchers are are utilized to provide the power of many Niagaras to each weapon.

Just before May 1, 1985 the Soviet Union performed a "full-up" operational test of their entire strategic scalar EM weapons complex. This test was detected and monitored periodically by Frank Golden. Some 27 of these giant Soviet "power taps" were locked into the molten core of the earth, producing forced (entrained) scalar resonance of the entire planet on 54 controlled frequencies under our very feet. The remainder of the scalar frequency spectrum was ablaze with literally hundreds of Soviet scalar transmitters: probably the entire strategic scalar command and control system to underwater submarines, higher command centers, distant commands, etc. was activated in the giant exercise.

For several days, the system was exercised on a mind-boggling scale, apparently as part of the Soviet Union's highly accentuated 40th anniversary celebration of the end of World War II.

Ironically, not a single U.S. intelligence agency, laboratory, or scientist detected this monstrous exercise for the new Soviet leader, Gorbachev. Not a one of them had a detector for scalar EM radiation, and not a one of them officially believes the exercise ever happened.

CREATING ENERGY AT A DISTANCE

SCALAR
XMTR #1
VECTOR
ENERGY ZONE
(ENERGY BOTTLE)
SCALAR
INTERFEROMETER
SCALAR
XMTR #2

Slide 039: Creating Energy at a Distance

A most useful device is obtained if one uses a scalar interferometer where the two transmitters transmit beams that intersect at a distance.

In the interference zone, an energy bottle is created.

By biasing the transmitter reference potentials well above that of the distant energy bottle, EM energy emerges in that zone. In that case the interferometer is operating in the exothermic mode.

By biasing the transmitter reference potentials well below that of the distant energy bottle, EM energy is extracted from the distant zone and emerges from the transmitter. In that case the interferometer is operating in the endothermic mode.

If the transmitters transmit continuously, the effect in the distant zone is continuous.

If each transmitter transmits a pulse, and the two pulses meet in the distant intersection zone, then an explosive emergence or extraction of energy occurs at the distant interference zone, depending upon whether the interferometer is operating in the exothermic or the endothermic mode.

EXOTHERMIC MODE (SCALAR INTERFEROMETER)

∇Φ APPLIES
ACROSS HERE
ΦEM
ΦEM
ENERGY
ΔΦ
BIAS
EXOTHERMIC
EMISSION
Φo
Φo
TRANSMITTERS
(INTERFEROMETER)
INTERFERENCE
ZONE

Slide 040: Exothermic Mode (Scalar Interferometer)

For a scalar interferometer, "del phi" (the gradient of the potential) applies between the transmitter site and the distant intersection site, not to the intervening space in between. Thus one speaks of "energy flow" as being between transmitter and intersection, without any "in between." In the intervening space, all the energy exists as locked-in artificial potential, not EM force field energy (gradient bleed-off of potential).

In the exothermic mode, the ground potential of the transmitter is biased well above the ground potential of ambient vacuum. Energy enters the transmitter and "disappears", to "reappear" in the distant interference zone.

If continuous wave transmission is used, the energy continuously appears in the distant zone.

If pulse transmission is used and timed so that the two scalar pulses meet in the distant zone, energy explosively appears there.

If multiple frequencies are transmitted in the manner of a Fourier expansion of a particular geometric form, then a 3-dimensional energy form appears at the distant intersection. In this manner, a spherical or hemispherical shell (a globe of "dome" of EM energy) can be created at a distance. If pulse transmission is used, this will be an impulsive or explosive emergence of that energy form. If continuous transmission is used, this will be a continuous glowing form.

By feeding incredibly powerful transmitters with large amounts of energy extracted from the earth's molten core by "energy taps," very large spherical globes and hemispherical domes of EM energy can be created. The energy in the interference "shell" of such a sphere or hemisphere is sufficiently dense to lift Dirac matter from the Dirac sea of the vacuum. Thus the shell contains a glowing plasma.

Many such scalar howitzer signatures have been seen over the oceans, particularly over the North Pacific by jet airliners flying into and out of Japan. Also, such globes and domes of light have been seen deep within the Soviet Union, by observers in Afghanistan and by pilots of aircraft landing in Iran.

In the impulsive exothermic mode, a large visible flash will occur if EM energy in the visible spectrum is produced. "Flashes" in the infrared may similarly occur, if the emerging energy is in that spectral band. In September 1979 our Vela satellites detected such a large "nuclear flash" over the South Atlantic, off the southern coast of Africa. A second "nuclear flash" detected by the Vela satellites in 1980 was in the infrared only. Some years ago, a series of Momalous "flashes" and "booms" occurred off the east coast of the United States. These were due to the orientation and alignment -and registration - of one or more Soviet "scalar howitzers" - scalar EM interferometers in the exothermic mode.

Large "booms" occurred over the shuttle launch site at Cape Canaveral, associated with three shuttle launches prior to the end of November 1985. These were tests of such exothermic scalar EM howitzers, being tested as part of the Soviet Launch Phase ABM system. In that mode, the scalar pulses from the two transmitters are injected into special zero-reference scalar EM "channels" established in the EM carriers of the Woodpecker over-the-horizon radars. The scalar pulses travel through these channels, traveling in the ordinary EM beam of the transmitter and following it in its curvature around the earth in the earth-ionospheric waveguide. The scalar pulses are timed, phased, and oriented so as to meet the rising shuttle. In these tests the transmissions were offset in time so the shuttle would not actually be destroyed, but the system could be tested against actual shuttle launches in the U.S.

The specific uses of these various exothermic modes will be covered in later parts of the briefing.

ENDOTHERMIC MODE (SCALAR INTERFEROMETER)

TRANSMITTER/RECEIVERS (INTERFEROMETER)
INTERFERENCE ZONE
Φ_0
Φ_0
ENERGY
$\Delta\phi$ BIAS
ENDOTHERMIC (EXTRACTION)
ϕ_{EM}
ϕ_{EM}
$\nabla\phi$ APPLIES ACROSS HERE

Slide 041: Endothermic Mode (Scalar Interferometer)

In the endothermic mode, the bias on the transmitters is such that energy is extracted from the distant intersection zone, to re-emerge at the transmitters. There the energy must be caught and disposed of if it is not to burn out the transmitters. When very large amounts of energy are extracted from distant points, the Soviets often use a "dump" method of temporarily capturing, and storing in an accumulator, the heat energy emerging at the transmitters. A "scalar energy tap" established into the accumulator then feeds a second howitzer in the exothermic mode. This howitzer is focused on a distant dumpsite - often Bennett Island, where U.S. weather satellites continually observe exhausts.

In the impulsive endothermic mode, energy is impulsively extracted from the distant intersection zone. In the atmosphere this results in a very sharp cooling, or a "cold explosion." It also results in the type of boom and rumble often associated with thunder after a lightning bolt.

On April 9, 1984 the Soviet Union tested such a "cold explosion" off the coast of Japan, near the Kuril Islands. In the suddenly induced low pressure "cold zone" above the ocean, ocean water was sharply sucked up from the ocean, forming a dense cloud. Then air rushing in to the low pressure zone forced the cloud upward, forming a mushroom much like that of an atomic explosion in visual appearance, except for the absence of a flash and the absence of a giant shock wave moving out away from the site of the explosion. (In this case the

Soviets controlled the rise time of the pulse so that no "giant atmospheric boom" occurred.).

As the cloud rises, it expands by mixing - very similar to a giant thunderhead buildup, except much faster. In this case the cloud rose to 60,000 feet in about 2 minutes, spreading out until it reached a diameter of about 200 miles. The pilots and crews of several Boeing 747 jet airliners in the general vicinity saw the incident. Sometime after that, a U.S. weather satellite photo of the area occurred. The cloud in that photo has an anomalous density distribution, differing from that of all other clouds in the area.

TESLA'S "BIG EYE" FOR REMOTE VIEWING
CAN BE FOCUSED TO A SPECIFIC DEPTH IN THE EARTH, THE OCEAN, OR INSIDE AN ENCLOSURE.
SCAN
SCALAR RCVR/XMTR
SMALL NEGATIVE BIAS
TARGET EXTRACTION ZONE
SCANNED INTERFERENCE SCREEN
SMALL NEGATIVE BIAS
SCALAR RCVR/XMTR
SCAN

Slide 042: Tesla's "Big Eye" for Remote Viewing

Nikola Tesla also planned a very special use for his endothermic scalar interferometer. He planned to produce what he called his "big eye to see at a distance."

This is accomplished as shown on the diagram. First, the system is only weakly endothermic, so that only a small amount of energy is extracted from the **distant** target. Also, the beams are "scanned" by an open receiver, timewise, from side to side and top to bottom. By scanning yet another single beam through the intersection zone and phasing its pulses, an even better representation can be obtained. Thus the receiver produces a representation of the energy extracted from various locations within the distant endothermic zone. By displaying the received signals on an appropriately scanned screen, a representation of the distant scene in the intersection zone can be created. Indeed this is a special kind of "microwave interferometry," and - with modern techniques - the imagery obtained might be surprisingly good. With development, it might even become as good as the image presently obtained by side-looking acquisition radars.

Interestingly enough, since scalar EM beams will easily penetrate the earth or the ocean, one can also look beneath the earth or beneath the ocean with this type of scanning scalar interferometer.

The importance of this capability to strategic and tactical reconnaissance is obvious. Camouflage, cover, and concealment have no effect on such a **system.** One can easily look inside buildings and into underground facilities. With a small system such as this, the U.S. Marines at Khe Sahn would have had **little** difficulty locating the tunnels continually dug under the perimeter by the Viet Cong. And targets under jungle canopies are directly visible.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

It requires little imagination to see that this system is easily adapted to produce an "underwater radar." With such devices, the problem posed by the underwater nuclear submarine is solved. For example, an entire area can be continually searched, much like acquisition radar systems do now. A submarine can be detected and tracked, and none of its ordinary detectors will detect anything out of the ordinary. By using a separate pair of beams in the exothermic mode, powerful scalar pulses can be fired at the distant sub, intersecting at the submarine in a violent EMP throughout the sub and its armament. Thus the sub and all its missiles are destroyed instantly.

Or, continuous exothermic transmission can be used by the targeting weapon at lesser power, gradually interfering with the sub's electrical systems and causing it to lose control. The sub then sinks to crush depth and implodes.

Precisely that scenario seems to be what happened on April 10, 1963 to the U.S.S. Thresher nuclear submarine. It left a signature: the sub's surface companion, the nearby U.S.S. Skylark, was in the "splatter zone" of the underwater scalar interference. That is, spurious EM noise was being generated In all the Skylark's electrical systems, some of which were actually disabled. So intense was the "electronic jamming" that it required over an hour and a half for the Skylark to transmit an emergency message back to its headquarters that the Thresher was in serious trouble and contact with it had been lost. Some of the Skylark's communication systems actually failed, but later resumed operation inexplicably, once the jamming was gone. That type of "jamming" of multiple bands and multiple electronic equipments, of course, together with the anomalous failure of electronic equipment and its later mysterious recovery, were direct signatures of the use of the exothermic scalar interferometer against the undersea target area in the vicinity of the Skylark.

The very next day, Apr. 11, 1963, the same Soviet scalar EM howitzer system was tested in the "destroy submarine" pulse mode. A huge underwater EM blast occured off the coast of Puerto Rico, about 100 miles north of the island. The underwater explosion caused a huge boiling of the surface of the ocean, followed by the rising up of a giant mushroom of water about a third of a mile high. The mushroom of water then fell back into the ocean, completing the signuture.

Fortunately the startled crew of a passing U.S. jetliner that was just passing its checkpoint in that area saw the entire incident. (See Robert J. Durant, "An Underwater Explosion - or What?", Pursuit, 5(2), April 1972, p. 30-31.)

These two incidents were full-up operational tests of Khrushchev's newly deployed superweapons. He probably staged this dramatic one-two punch in a desperate effort to recover face with the Communist Party after his disastrous facedown by Kennedy in the Cuban Missile Crisis a few short months previously. Apparently the attempt was successful, since he remained in power another year before being deposed.

SITE OF MYSTERY CLOUD
SOVIET UNION
SEA OF OKHOTSK
KOREA
SAKHALIN I.
KAMCHATKA PEN.
JAPAN
KURIL I.
APPROXIMATE LOCATION OF CLOUD
LOCATION OF JAL FLIGHT #36 WHEN PILOT SAW CLOUD

Slide 043: Site of Mystery Cloud

On this slide we show the location of the "cold explosion" off the coast of Japan on April 9, 1984. The site of the explosion was only about 200 miles from downtown Tokyo. The crews of several jet airliners, including Japan Air Lines Flight 36, saw it.

MUSHROOM CLOUD FROM SEA OFF JAPAN NEAR RUSSIAN TEST AREA
150 MI. DIA.
200 MI. FROM TOKYO
SOUTH OF KURIL ISLANDS
5:14 a.m. PST
9 APRIL, 1984

Slide 044: Mushroom Cloud from Sea off Japan near Russian Test Area

A short time before, the Soviets had hastily announced missile tests would be conducted into a zone some distance away from the cold explosion site. This may have been intended as deception to cover this incident, should any foreign nation indicate they understood what was going on.

It also was a direct "stimulus" to the Japanese and the rest of the world: That is, stimulate the system and see if the scientists recognize what happened. If they do, then they know about scalar EM weapons. If they don't, then their countries know nothing of scalar EM weapons, and those countries are defenseless against them.

At any rate, at about 5:14 a.m. Pacific Standard Time on April 9, 1984, a **giant** mushroom cloud erupted above the ocean south of the Kuril Islands. The mushroom rose rapidly, expanding as it rose. In two minutes it had reached **an** altitude of 60,000 feet and a diameter of about 200 miles.

One pilot of a Boeing 747 who observed the cloud was a former B-52 bomber pilot. He described the cloud as very similar to a mushroom cloud from a gigantic nuclear explosion, except there was no flash of visible light. Taking evasive action, he turned off course away from the blast, and braced for a blast shock wave, which never came.

MUSHROOM CLOUD RISING FROM SEA (COLD EXPLOSION)

- 0514 HOURS, 9 APRIL 1984
- GRAY-WHITE CLOUD APPEARED
- ROSE 60,000 FT IN 2 MINUTES
- 180 MILES S.E. OF HOKKAIDO
  200 MILES FROM TOKYO
  SOUTH OF KURIL ISLANDS
- SOVIET MISSILE TESTING SCHEDULED
  ABOUT 350 MILES AWAY
  AT 2100 HOURS, 9 APRIL 1984

Slide 045: Mushroom Cloud Rising from Sea

Indeed, this highly anomalous cloud was due to a cold explosion - a test of a Soviet scalar EM howitzer in the pulsed endothermic mode.

In the weapon's targeted interference zone, EM energy (heat) was rapidly withdrawn when the biased endothermic extraction occurred. Above the ocean an intense low-pressure zone was created. Water from the ocean was sucked up, as if by a giant vacuum cleaner. The water was violently broken into droplets, forming a dense cloud, with a strong upward momentum.

The surrounding higher-pressure air rushed into the low-pressure zone, pushing the rising dense cloud of water vapor upward as its upward momentum continued. Mixing caused rapid expansion of the rising cloud, causing its density to thin measurably as it rose and expanded. An effect very similar to the formation of a strong thunderhead resulted, except much faster.

The mixing cloud also resembled the mushroom cloud from a giant nuclear explosion, just as an emerging thunderhead does.

But no outward blast wave resulted as does from a nuclear explosion. Also, no visible flash occurred, probably as a result of deliberate design by the Russians.

Thus a beautiful "stimulus" and test was conducted: quite a few airliners were "pinged," providing a high-level stimulus to competent observers. The news was sure to be reported by them to several nations. The press was sure to pick up the story. This was a high order stimulus to see whether the U.S., Japan, or other potential adversaries of the Soviet Union recognized the testing of a cold explosion weapon.

By our reaction, we assured them (with high confidence) that we still knew nothing of scalar EM interferometry or cold explosions.

MUSHROOM CLOUD FROM SEA OFF JAPAN

- FIVE BOEING 747s FLEW THROUGH OR NEAR THE CLOUD
  - NO CONTAMINATION
  - NON-NUCLEAR
- OCEAN 21,000 FEET DEEP
  - TOO DEEP FOR SUBMARINE VOLCANO TO CAUSE CLOUD
  - INDICATES MAN-MADE PHENOMENON

Slide 046: Mushroom Cloud from Sea off Japan

Five Boeing 747's flew through or near the cloud on their way to Anchorage, Alaska. The aircraft were checked at Anchorage for radioactive contamination, but nothing was found. This showed that the huge "explosion" had been non-nuclear.

The ocean in the area is also about 21,000 feet deep. That is really too deep for a submarine volcano to have erupted and caused the cloud. (Besides, a volcano would have continued to snort at least a bit, and so that appears to be out of the question as a possible cause of the incident.)

In short, a manmade phenomenon is indicated.

Indeed, we know it was a cold explosion. As I've stated previously, a colleague has in fact produced the basic effect over a dish of water in the laboratory, using a small scalar interferometer in the endothermic mode.

NOT A KNOWN NATURAL PHENOMENON

- DR. DANIEL A. WALKER ET AL
- GEOPHYSICIST, UNIV. OF HAWAII
- MONITORS ARRAY OF HYDROPHONES
  - ON OCEAN BOTTOM
  - RECORDS SIGNALS (SEISMIC, VOLCANIC)
- DATA SHOWS ABSENCE OF ANY NATURAL SEISMIC OR VOLCANIC EVENT THAT COULD HAVE CAUSED THE APRIL 9 PHENOMENON OFF THE COAST OF JAPAN
- PUBLISHED IN SCIENCE

Slide 047: Not a Known Natural Phenomenon

Further, the story does not end there.

A geophysicist at the University of Hawaii, Dr. Daniel A. Walker, together with his colleagues monitor an array of hydrophones on the ocean bottom, recording signals such as seismic incidents, volcano eruptions, etc.

Dr. Walker and his colleagues performed a comprehensive analysis of the data recorded by the hydrophones in and around the time of the incident in question. The data shows the absence of any natural seismic or volcanic event that could have caused the April 9th phenomenon off the coast of Japan.

He and his colleagues concluded that it was either an as yet unknown natural phenomenon, or a man-made phenomenon.

Their report is published in Science. (Walker et al, "Kaitoku Seamount and the Mystery Cloud of 9 April 1984," Science, 227(4687), Feb. 8, 1985, p. 607-611.)

EXPLOSIVE EVENTS SEEN ON SOVIET ISLAND

Slide 048: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Island

Here are two U.S. weather satellite photos of the anomalous exhausts on Bennett Island we previously referred to.

The exhaust in the left picture is about 150 miles long, and is nearly horizontal (about 1.5 degrees above the horizontal). It is entirely consistent with the continuous exhaust from a "dumping transfer" scalar EM howitzer in the continuous exothermic mode. (The primary howitzer, of course, was activated in the endothermic mode.)

I think any open-minded investigator must admit that that is indeed a very powerful jet-like exhaust, and not like anything one ever sees from a natural volcano or geological gas vent. If anyone knows of such an anomalous volcanic or geological exhaust, I would be most delighted to see a photo or report. To my knowledge, no such natural photo exists, and no such natural exhaust has ever **been** reported.

The right picture shows the "puff of an explosive emergence of the exhaust. In other words, this one is the exhaust from a "dumping transfer" howitzer used in the pulsed exothermic mode. Since it did not have so much energy to dump, it could dump it in a pulse. Again, the primary howitzer, of course, was activated in the endothermic mode.

Over 100 weather satellite photos of these anomalous exhausts have been taken since 19**74.**

One or more U.S. aircraft have even been vectored through the exhausts, and samples of the exhaust taken and analyzed. The exhaust is made up of a little clay and mud and water, and is colder than the surrounding air.

EXPLOSIVE EVENTS SEEN ON SOVIET ISLAND

Slide 049: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Island

U.S. weather analysts euphemistically call these exhausts from Bennett Island plumes.

Here is another U.S. weather satellite photo, showing the twin emergence of multiple puffs.

One might expect such exhausts if the secondary "dumping transfer" howitzer is operated in the continuous mode, with continuous extraction by "power tapping" the accumulator of the primary howitzer. In that case, the signature of the exhaust would expose the operation of the primary howitzer. For example, this exhaust would indicate multiple puffs, hence probably multiple frequencies and multiple primary transmitters, each phased in a controlled manner. That of course indicates the production of Fourier expansion forms - of 3-dimensional geometrical forms - by the primary howitzer(s). Since these are puffs, it may indicate the explosive formation of distant spherical balls of energy by the primary howitzer. This in turn indicates the use of a howitzer system in the "pulse firing" mode, which can be used against missiles, ships, aircraft, ground targets, armored vehicles, underwater targets, etc.

EXPLOSIVE EVENTS SEEN ON SOVIET ISLANDS
0 500 1000 km
0 500 1000 mi
Arctic Ocean
Wrangel Is.
Bennett Is.
Bering Strait
UNITED STATES
Bering Sea
U.S.
Barents Sea
Novaya Zemlya
SWEDEN
FINLAND
Murmansk
Petrozavodsk
St. Petersburg
Arkhangel'sk
MOSCOW
Nizhniy Novgorod
Kazan'
Yekaterinburg
Volgograd
Chelyabinsk
Astrakhan'
Omsk
Novosibirsk
Krasnoyarsk
Irkutsk
Ural Mts.
Noril'sk
Siberia
Lena
Yakutsk
Magadan
North Pacific Ocean
Sea of Okhotsk
Amur
Kholmsk
Khabarovsk
Nakhodka
JAPAN
050

Slide 050: Explosive Events seen on Soviet Islands

This slide shows the location of three areas of interest relative to Soviet scalar EM weapons testing.

Wrangel Island, north of the northeastern portion of the Soviet mainland, is associate with tests of these weapons in large circular breakups of the ocean's ice cover. This of course could aid submarines that wished to surface and fire cruise missiles, or submarines that wished to fire from underwater and needed the **ice** broken up.

Strangely enough, Wrangel Island has a most peculiar history: legally it still belongs to the U.S., but has been "given" to the Soviet Union without permission of the U.S. Senate, which is illegal.

Bennett Island, a little farther to the west and still north of the Soviet **mainland,** is noted for its phenomenal number of anomalous exhausts as previously discussed.

North of the Soviet mainland and near its middle lies the large island of Novaya Zemlya. Weather satellites have taken pictures of anomalous circulations over this island, which are further candidates for exhausts from scalar EM howitzer operations.

CREATING A SPATIAL 0-FIELD PATTERN

TRUNCATED FOURIER EXPANSION (3D)

$$y = y_0 + f_1(\lambda_1) + f_2(\lambda_2) + \ldots + f_n(\lambda_n)$$

$$z = z_0 + g_1(\lambda_1) + g_2(\lambda_2) + \ldots + g_n(\lambda_n)$$

NOTE:
INTERFERENCE OF TWO SUCH SCALAR HEMISPHERES CREATES A "GLOWING HEMISPHERICAL SHELL"

Slide 051: Creating a Spatial 0-Field Pattern

On this slide we show that a hemispherical dome (or other regular shape) can be composed from scalar waves by 3-dimensional Fourier expansion. By truncating the expansion - say after 10 or 12 frequency terms - a good representation of the desired form can be obtained with a practical number of frequencies, and in turn a practical number of transmitters. A computer is used to compute the multiplying functions for each frequency, and the entire complex of frequencies is then transmitted to produce the scalar form. By interfering two such scalar forms, a 3-dimensional shell of locked-in, ordinary EM energy is formed in space.

Interference of two such scalar hemispherical surfaces creates a "glowing hemispherical shell or dome of energy."

Interference of two such scalar spherical surfaces creates a "glowing spherical shell or globe of energy."

Both such geometric forms have been repeatedly seen.

TESLA SHIELD

3–D SCALAR
INTERFEROMETRY
(HEMISPHERICAL SHELL)

Slide 052: Tesla Shield

Of particular interest is the hemispherical shell of energy, which years ago I dubbed the "Tesla shield."

As shown on this slide, two scalar hemispherical surfaces are created, using multiple frequency transmitters and truncated Fourier series expansions. Interference of the two scalar hemispheres creates a great, glowing hemispherical shell of ordinary electro-magnetic energy. In the shell, the energy density is sufficient to lift Dirac matter from the Dirac Sea of vacuum. The shell is thus filled with a glowing plasma.

Such a shell may be several hundred miles in diameter at the base. The enormous energy required to form such a defense shell is obtained by a "scalar power tap" into the molten core of the earth itself, as previously explained. In late April/early May of 1985, 27 such "power taps" were placed in the earth by the Soviets. If each tap is capable of powering four to six large scalar EM weapons, then the Soviet strategic scalar EM arsenal contains over 100 monstrous superweapons capable of generating exothermic explosions, endothermic explosions, engineering the weather, locating and destroying underwater submarines, detecting and destroying ballistic missiles shortly **after** launch, detecting and destroying long range strategic bombers as soon as they are airborne, etc.

At any rate, the giant Tesla shield is useful against any penetrating vehicle. If the shell is not so large, its energy density may be very high. In **that** case, **the intense** plasma heating will fuse and even vaporize metallic bodies. In addition, any vehicle encountering the shell is subjected to an extremely intense EMP arising everywhere inside its circuitry. EM shielding is of no use against the creation of energy throughout the spacetime of the circuits; such shielding only helps against energy flow through space in the conventional sense.

Thus the electronics of any vehicle encountering the shield are instantly dudded, whether or not they are shielded against ordinary electromagnetic interference (EMI). This includes the electronics operating a nuclear warhead, carried by a re-entry vehicle. Electrically everything penetrating the shell is totally dudded. Further, explosive materials are exploded when such an EMP is encountered, and combustible materials are fiercely consumed or set afire. Ablative shielding suffers an interesting catastrophe: since energy does not try to "flow into" the shielding but "arises everywhere in it simultaneously", "ablation" occurs everywhere throughout the ablative material, simply exploding it instantly. In addition, for smaller Tesla shells (say of 50 miles diameter) the energy density is sufficient to melt or vaporize metals such as in missile structures.

With such a Tesla shield, there is no need to discriminate true warhead-bearing re-entry vehicles from decoys, chaff, etc. The entire "mess" entering the shield is simply "cleaned up" and "sterilized" or destroyed. The shield can take care of ICBMs/IRBMs and their nuclear warheads, strategic bombers and their nuclear **bombs,** cruise missiles and their nuclear warheads, re-entry vehicles and their warheads, decoys, chaff, etc.

EXPANDING DOME-LIKE PHENOMENON

Slide 053: Expanding Dome-like Phenomenon

Here we show one instance of apparent Soviet testing of the Tesla shield (hemispherical shell of energy) over the ocean. This incident occurred in the Caribbean and Western North Atlantic Ocean on Mar. 20, 1969 and is reported in the Marine Observer, Vol. 40, 1970, p. 17. A semicircle of milky white light, quite intense at first, was sighted on the horizon. The semicircle enlarged, dimming as it expanded. The incident lasted for about 10 minutes. Seen from a passing ship, the top of the hemisphere reached a sighting elevation angle of about 50 degrees, while the base of the hemisphere of light subtended an arc of about 70 degrees. This is directly indicative of a test of the Tesla shield, first as a small, more intense shield and then expanding to greater size for a less intense shield whose primary destructive mechanism is EMP. Note that the EMP in a Tesla shield is locally contained in the energy-bottle shell. It is not an ordinary EMP of energy radiated out of the shell.

HEMISPHERE & GLOBES 1977
MODERATELY LUMINOUS HEMISPHERE FORMED IN APPROXIMATELY THREE MINUTES
SECOND LUMINOUS PATCH(S)
FOR TEN SECONDS SEARCHLIGHT SHINED DOWN BRIGHT LUMINOUS PATCH
30 DEGREES
DISAPPEARED AFTER APPROXIMATELY TEN MINUTES
40 DEGREES
MARINE OBSERVER VOL 48:Pg.21-22, 1978
054

Slide 054: Hemisphere & Globes 1977

Here is a second instance of apparent Soviet testing of the hemispherical Tesla shield over the ocean. This time it is combined with simultaneous testing of two smaller scalar interferometers creating Tesla globes of EM energy.
This incident occurred at 23 degrees 5 minutes north, 17 degrees 25 minutes west. It was sighted and reported by a British ship, H.M.V. Kinpurnie Castle, on Mar. 24, 1977. The report is in the Marine Observer. Vol. 48, 1978, p. 21-22.

First a large, moderately luminous hemisphere of light formed, requiring about 3 minutes to do so. Seen from the ship, the top of the hemisphere was at a sighting elevation angle of about 30 degrees, while the base subtended an arc of about 40 degrees. This was the basic Tesla shield.

Then two other luminous globes or patches of light, each of about 1 degree diameter as seen from the ship, formed in the same area; one inside the shield and one outside it. From the glowing globe inside the shield, a light beam similar to a giant searchlight shone down to the ocean's surface for about 10 seconds.

Again the phenomena lasted about 10 minutes and then disappeared.

The luminous globe or patch inside the hemisphere might be the test of a second weapon deployed from a Soviet aircraft in the area. If so, the aircraft has placed a **strong** spherical shield around itself. In addition, the aircraft is utilizing some sort of scalar interferometer beam weapon in an underwater mode. Probably this would imply a "shot" at a hostile nuclear submarine inside the shielded zone. Thus this aircraft would have the scalar EM equipment to search for the underwater sub and detect it, and also to concentrate interference energy upon it underwater, destroying it quickly.

Suffice it to say that it is possible to perform scalar interferometry by means of a single beam, in a proprietary process discovered by a close colleague. Thus the "glowing beam to the ocean" resembling a searchlight makes very good sense in the anti-submarine role. The same weapon, of course, could also attack any hostile surface vessel that might have been inside the shielded area at its formation.

The second luminous globe or patch, outside the hemisphere, is probably from a second scalar interferometer from the naval task force, simulating the continuous attack of a certain target (missile or aircraft) outside the protective dome.

As can be seen, this phenomenon is directly indicative of the types of operations one would expect from the testing of Soviet scalar EM weapons at sea, possibly to protect a Soviet naval task force during simulated combat operations.

ARTIST'S CONCEPT

SARYSHAGAN DIRECTION, SEPTEMBER 1979 (SEEN FROM AFGHANISTAN)

MULTIPLE EVENTS SEEN IN SEPTEMBER 1979 FROM AFGHANISTAN

STRANGE LURID GLOW THAT FLARED SILENTLY OVER THE HINDU KUSH; AS DESCRIBED BY NICK DOWNEY.

THE SUNDAY TIMES AUGUST 17, 1980

WITNESS TO A SUPER-WEAPON?

Slide 055: Saryshagan Direction, September 1979

The London Sunday Times of 17 August 1980 contained information and a photo-sketch of incidents of sighting of the testing of very large Tesla globes deep within the Soviet Union. British war cameraman Nick Downie made the sightings from Afghanistan. The phenomena seen were in the direction of the Saryshagan Missile Test Range, which - according to the U.S. Defense Department's Soviet Military Power, 1986 - contains one or more large directed energy weapons (DEWs).

Even though Downie was seeing the giant globe of light from a great distance, it flared silently over the Hindu Kush and expanded to subtend an arc of about 20 degrees, dimming as it expanded. (An arc of 20 degrees subtended by an object many hundreds of miles distant indicates an object of well over a hundred miles in diameter. This gives some idea of the enormous energy being controlled and manipulated by these Soviet weapons.).

Downie saw the sight on more than one occasion in September 1979.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

In the same month - September 1979 - a stationary luminous globe containing a vertical stripe of black in the center was seen in the sky off Saint Petersburg, Florida. This particular type of sighting in that area has been previously correlated with times of known activity at Saryshagan.

Further, in the same month U.S. nuclear-warning Vela satellites detected a mysterious "nuclear flash" over the South Atlantic, off the coast of Africa. Controversy has raged in U.S. intelligence and scientific circles to this day as to whether a nuclear explosion or some other mechanism produced the flash.

Indeed, the flash may have been produced by a scalar EM howitzer from Saryshagan as one more "ping" of the U.S. intelligence system, to ascertain whether or not it knew anything about scalar EM howitzers. Again, the negative response told them with high confidence that (1) we still didn't know about scalar EM stuff, and (2) we were still absolutely defenseless against the Soviet scalar EM weaponry.

In 1980, a second "Vela flash" was reported. This time it occurred in the infrared region only, which positively rules out any sort of nuclear explosion. Even this increased stimulus still evoked a U.S. action that revealed total ignorance of scalar EM weaponry.

An alternate possibility for the September 1979 Vela flash also exists: countries not hostile to the U.S. may have tested a scalar EM weapon that produced the flash.

At any rate, from Downie's sightings, it is highly probably that the DEW weaponry at Saryshagan Missile Test Range was active in September 1979, and was producing huge Tesla globes. If the DEWs at Saryshagan can produce the giant luminous Tesla globe, they almost certainly are scalar EM interferometers and can produce the giant Tesla shields as well. Downie reported other earlier sightings of similar phenomena seen by Afghans deep within the Soviet Union in the same direction toward Saryshagan.

Briefly let us cover the uses of such a "giant globe" or spherical shell of glowing EM energy and plasma.

By placing such a "giant globe" thousands of kilometers out away from the defended heartland, an entire arc of the sky can be defended against long-range ballistic missile attack in midcourse. During their midcourse trajectory, the attacking missiles would have to penetrate the globular shell twice, exposing them to giant internal EMPs twice. A very high probability thus exists that all missiles entering the space occupied by the globe are dudded upon entry and/or exit. This includes the electronics inside the nuclear warheads themselves. Also, this is particularly effective against MIRV and MARV missile carriers, since the multiple re-entry vehicles are normally still on the main vehicle during most of midcourse. The use of this midcourse ABM globe defense greatly reduces the number of vehicles arriving at the latter part of midcourse and at the terminal phase of their trajectory.

By using a smaller, more intense globe and placing it on incoming clusters of objects or single objects, both EMP and intense local heating are used against the objects. This is suitable in the latter part of midcourse and in the **terminal** phase of ICBM's, IRBM's, SLBM's, and cruise missiles. It is also useful against incoming strategic bombers and their air-to-surface missiles, both ballistic and cruise.

Two modes of the globes - especially the small ones - can be used. First, the continuous mode can be used to "fry" or vaporize incoming objects in a relatively small volume (say two or three tens of kilometers in diameter). Second, the "pulse" mode can be used to "service" all incoming objects, whether or not they have passed through the "large globe" midcourse defense. This provides an additional guarantee of killing the objects; discrimination is not required, just service all of them. The exposure of all incoming objects to multiple attacks raises the probability of kill to essentially 100%, or as close to that as one wishes. Of course the incoming vehicle may still encounter a terminal defense consisting of the Tesla shield and associated roving "quickshot" small intense globes.

In short, with these systems an essentially 100% ABM and anti-bomber defense is possible. Further, the Soviets have possessed such an effective defense for two decades, just as they have openly stated.

CONTINUOUS TESLA EMP GLOBE

TEHERAN, IRAN
JUNE 17, 1966

SEEN FROM NEAR
MEHRABAD AIRPORT

OBSERVED BETWEEN
4 TO 5 MINUTES

SEEN BY TWO AIRCRAFT

ARTIST'S CONCEPT

Slide 056: Continuous Tesla EMP Globe

Here is another verified incident of a gigantic test of a Soviet scalar EM howitzer deep within the Soviet Union.

This is a CIA report, released under the Freedom of Information Act. One can be quite sure that the incident occurred as stated.

The phenomenon was seen from two aircraft approaching Mehrabad Airport in Teheran, Iran on June 17, 1966 and reported by their pilots.

On the far horizon deep within the Soviet Union, an intense spherical ball of light appeared, "sitting on the horizon" so to speak. The globe of light increased to enormous size, dimming as it did so, literally filling an arc of the distant sky as it expanded. The sighting was shielded from most ground observers' view at the airport itself due to an intervening mountain range that masked most of tin-phenomenon from the ground.

The silent, expanding globe was observed for four or five minutes before it faded away.

BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

Again, this is positive evidence of the testing of a giant scalar EM interferometer, in the "midcourse ABM globe" type of action.

However, note the date - mid 1966! The Soviets have therefore been testing such scalar weapons of enormous size and power for at least two decades. This implies that development must have started at least a decade earlier, or in the mid '50s.

Still earlier in January 1960 Nikita Khrushchev had announced the development of a "fantastic" Soviet weapon, one that could even destroy all life on earth if unrestrainedly used. In 1962 the ebullient Khrushchev was forced to back down and lose face before John Kennedy in the Cuban Missile Crisis. Khrushchev's missiles and bombers were in woeful shape, as Kennedy well knew (by courtesy of the Soviet spy, Colonel Oleg Penkovsky). Kennedy did not know that Khrushchev's new superweapons were nearing deployment, but were not yet quite ready.

To save face and prevent his immediate ouster, Khrushchev apparently conducted a startling two-strike demonstration of his new weapons as soon as they became operationally ready. On April 10, 1963 he detected and destroyed **the** U.S.S. Thresher nuclear submarine using a scalar EM howitzer in the underwater "continuous" mode.

The next day he demonstrated the "pulsed" underwater destruction mode for **nuclear** subs by producing a giant underwater EM explosion underneath the ocean 100 miles north of Puerto Rico. Ironically, just as the Atlantic was coming a**live** with U.S. naval vessels searching for the lost Thresher, a second test of the weapons that had finished off the sub occurred to the south of them, unnoticed and disregarded, even though seen and reported (to the FBI and the U.S. Coast Guard) by a passing U.S. jetliner's pilot and crew, who observed the underwater explosion.

We thus can peg the development of these weapons by the Soviets as starting **well** before 1960. The first operational deployment of the giant strategic weaponry occurred in early 1963.

Note that the 1966 testing observed here is completely consistent with this estimated development schedule.

Thus large Soviet strategic scalar EM weapons have been operational on site for 23 years! This implies that at least three additional generations of the scalar EM weapons have been developed and deployed by now.

MYSTERIOUS LIGHT OVER NORTH PACIFIC

SEEN FROM 42° N LAT, 153° E LONG

JUNE 18, 1982
OBSERVED IN
NORTHERN PACIFIC
700 KM EAST OF KUSHIRO

SEEN BY TWO AIRCRAFT:
JAL FLIGHT 403
JAL FLIGHT 421

NOTE:
SUCH INCIDENTS ARE
REPEATEDLY SEEN BY JETLINER
CREWS OVER THE NORTH PACIFIC

ASAHI EVENING NEWS, TOKYO
JUNE 22, 1982

Slide 057: Mysterious Light over North Pacific

Incidents of Soviet testing of the Tesla shield and the Tesla globe weapons are routinely observed by airline pilots flying over the North Pacific into and out of Japan.

This is one typical example. Two jetliners, Japan Air Line flights 403 and 421, sighted and reported a large glowing globe of light sitting just beyond the horizon and extending well above it. The aircraft were in the vicinity of 42 degrees N latitude and 153 degrees longitude at the time. The sighting was thus about 700 miles east of Kushiro.

The pilots estimated the diameter of the ball as at least 18-27 kilometers. Depending upon the actual distance to the sphere, it may have been of much larger size.

This incident is reported in the Asahi Evening News, Tokyo, June 22, 1982.

The jet airliner pilots flying over these waters have reported many other **similar** sightings.

2115
2120
OBS ELEV. 24° 30'
2125

WHITE SPHERE SEEN IN NORTH ATLANTIC 1976

JUNE 22, 1976
2113 — 2140 HOURS
OBSERVED IN NORTH ATLANTIC

- 2113: ORANGE GLOW BEHIND CLOUDS
- 2115: WHITE SPHERE OBSERVED ALT 10°, BEARING 290°
- WHITE SPHERE DEVELOPED AS SHOWN
- STARS COULD BE SEEN THROUGH SPHERE AT ALL TIMES
- BY 2140 THE SPHERE HAD DISAPPEARED

MARINE OBSERVER, 47:66, 1977

Slide 058: White Sphere seen in North Atlantic 1976

Here is another sighting closer to home.

This incident was observed from a passing ship on June 22, 1976 in the North Atlantic, at about 2113-2140 hours. It is reported in the Marine Observer, Vol. 47. 1977, p. 66.

First, an orange glow was sighted behind some distant clouds. A couple of minutes later, a glowing white sphere of light was observed to the left of the orange glow, just above the clouds. The white sphere then slowly expanded to a much larger sphere, dimming as it expanded. At its maximum size, the top of the white sphere reached about 24 degrees 30 minutes elevation angle to the observer. Development to maximum size required about 10 minutes.

By 2140 hrs the sphere had faded and disappeared. The sphere was sufficiently thin that the stars could be seen through it at all times.

Again this incident strongly fits the large Tesla globe mode of a Soviet scalar EM interferometer.

The significance and role of the orange glow are not known at this time.

ARTIST'S CONCEPT

CONTINUOUS TESLA FIREBALL

SEPTEMBER 10, 1976
BETWEEN
MOSCOW AND LONDON

SEEN BY
BRITISH EUROPEAN AIRWAYS
FLIGHT 831

CIA REPORT
RELEASED UNDER FOIA

Slide 059: Continuous Tesla Fireball

Here is another incident that represents a stimulus to the British government, to see if the British are aware of scalar electromagnetics.

Again, this is a CIA report released under the Freedom of Information Act, so the details are reliable.

On Sep. 10, 1976 British European Airways flight 831, flying between Moscow and London and over Lithuania at the time, observed an intense ball of light above the clouds below the aircraft. The light was so intense that it lit up the sky in the entire vicinity.

The concerned pilot reported the glowing object to the Soviet ground authorities with whom he was in contact. He received the harsh instructions to ignore the light, and essentially to continue on his way out of there.

Here we see an incident involving a small, intense Tesla globe, of the kind with which the defense could "service" objects that had already penetrated a large midcourse globe, or aircraft approaching the defended area.

Obviously the Soviet authorities were tracking the aircraft, and knew it was in the vicinity. It seems logical, then, that they deliberately placed the brightly glowing ball beneath the aircraft so that the pilot and crew could not fail to observe it.

The strange message to the pilot was simply designed to increase the intensity of the stimulus. The stimulus was to be something like, "The Soviets are doing something in research and development that allows them to create intense balls of glowing light at a distance, and place these objects in the air in and around aircraft, possibly to intercept them." The purpose, of course, was to observe the British government's reaction after the incident was reported by the pilot upon his arrival at London.

Again the reaction of the British - and the U.S. as well - was as predicted. Again we showed that we knew nothing of scalar electromagnetic weapons, and did not recognize one when we encountered its effects.

TERMINAL ABM SYSTEM

HIGH ALTITUDE DEFENSE SUPPRESSION BURST
DECOYS
WARHEAD
GAMMA RAYS
EMP
DEBRIS
SCATTERING AND ABSORPTION
X-RAYS
SCATTERING AND ABSORPTION
IR-VISIBLE-UV
SCATTERING AND ABSORPTION
RF NOISE
HEMISPHERES OF INTENSE LIGHT BANDS (WITH ELECTRON PLASMAS LIFTED FROM DIRAC SEA)
FARADAY CAGES ABSORB RF NOISE
SHIELDING EQUIPMENT/INSTALLATIONS

Slide 060: Terminal ABM System

Very neat things can be done if one nests several Tesla shields - say three or four - concentrically, one inside the other. In that case even the nuclear radiation (such as gamma rays) from a defense-suppressive high altitude nuclear burst can be handled.

For example, suppose three such concentric shields are placed over a large vital area. Further, suppose a high altitude nuclear burst is placed up above the outer shield. Gamma radiation almost instantly strikes the plasma in the outer shell, where it is absorbed, scattered, and re-radiated at lower temperature. (That, after all, is what plasmas do.)

Inside the first shell, the scattered radiation is now in the x-ray and ultra-violet region. Let us track the most lethal component, the x-rays.

The scattered x-rays then strike the second plasma shell, and are absorbed, scattered, and re-radiated at lower temperature. Inside the second shell the scattered radiation is now in the visible and infrared region, with a little ultraviolet.

This optical radiation in turn strikes the third plasma shell, and is absorbed, scattered, and re-radiated at still lower temperature. Inside the third shell most of the energy is now in the form of radiofrequency (RF) energy, with a little IR and visible band spectral energy content.

At this point, ordinary electromagnetic interference (EMI) shielding of electronic equipments on the ground and inside the third shield can take care of any RF interference resulting from the emergent RF noise.

As can be seen, three shells are sufficient to convert the gamma and x-ray radiation (and ultraviolet and infrared) mostly to harmless RF energy before all three shells are penetrated. Thus the tactic of deliberate defense suppression by a preliminary high altitude nuclear burst can be countered by multiple Tesla shields.

In addition, of course, any ordinary vehicles penetrating all three shields are exposed to successive violent EMP's, and are almost certainly electrically dudded. The vehicles are also subjected to multiple periods of intense heating, so combustibles, fuels, explosives, and ablatives are destroyed. In addition, metal structures may be melted or vaporized.

Think of it this way: anything that hits one of these Tesla shields goes phht! Just **like** a bug hitting an electrified bugkiller screen.

For years passing ships have observed and reported such multiple-shield "light phenomena" over remote regions of the ocean. U.S. intelligence has routinely **not** paid any heed to reports of "lights at night" over remote ocean areas, and so Soviet tests in this manner have remained relatively unnoticed by officialdom.

TWO ARCS IN THE SKY
VERY BRIGHT ARC
TEN MINUTES LATER A SECOND, DIMMER, ARC APPEARED.
150°
INDIAN OCEAN / 1800 GMT / JUNE 1, 1961

Slide 061: Two Arcs in the Sky

Just to list one incident involving the testing of multiple concentric Tesla shields, here is an early test conducted in mid-1961 over the Indian Ocean.

The incident occurred at 1800 hrs. Greenwich mean Time (GMT) and was observed by a passing ship. The report is contained in Marine Observer, Vol. 32, 1962, p. 64.

First the ship's crew observed a gigantic, very bright arc of light on the horizon or beyond it, with both ends passing below the line of sight to the horizon. This was in fact probably a large Tesla shield, but of such low intensity that only **its** intersection arc could clearly be seen. The arc subtended an arc of about 150 degrees across its diameter at the bottom. After about 10 minutes, a second **and** dimmer arc appeared, concentrically inside the first one. The ship thus was observing what probably was the nesting of two giant hemispheres (of EM energy) to provide a multiple Tesla shield.

This was probably a test of an early research and development prototype, since Khrushchev had only announced his new "fantastic weaponry" in development in his January, 1960 speech to the Soviet Presidium. And apparently land-based weapons such as this prototype probably did not become deployed and operational until April 1963. However, even in 1961 the Soviets would have been developing and testing prototypes of the weapon adapted for naval task force protection and usage.

Several other similar phenomena involving nested hemispheres or giant concentric arcs of light have been seen by mariners at sea.

ABM DEFENSES
CONTINUOUS EMP GLOBE
(DUDS ELECTRONICS)
FIREBALL (CONTINUOUS)
[VAPORIZES VEHICLE]
DETECTION &
TRACKING
FIREBALL [PULSE]
HOWITZER
USA
SHIELD
USSR

Slide 062: ABM Defenses

When the various capabilities of Tesla shields, globes, and scalar howitzers are integrated together into an ABM defense, a most formidable Soviet strategic defense capability is apparent.

On this slide we deal only with midcourse and terminal phase ABM defense. Later we shall cover the application of these weapons to launch phase ABM defense, primary phase bomber defense, underwater antisubmarine defense, etc.

Suppose the U.S. is provoked to desperately launch a missile attack toward Russia, as indicated on the slide.

First would come the launch phase destruction of the launched missiles, which we will cover shortly.

Any remaining missiles in midcourse would encounter extremely large, glowing spheres of light, where the EM energy density is contained and held in the spherical shell "energy bottle" of the glowing globes. Each globe might cover an are of up to about 20 degrees, as seen from the Soviet defended area. Missiles carrying MIRV and MARV payloads would not yet have deployed their re-entry vehicles.

As a missile and its payload encounter one of the globular shells, an intense EMP is suddenly experienced throughout the missile and all of its components. Again, EMI shielding is of no consequence since the EMP arises in each increment of spacetime throughout the vehicle volume. The result is instantaneous dudding of all electronic circuitry, including the electronics of the nuclear warheads themselves. The HE content of the nuclear warhead system is violently exploded, totally destroying the configuration of the warhead. A low-order nuclear detonation may occur, but more likely the warhead's nuclear material is just broken up, finely divided, and set afire.

In addition, all combustible materials are set fiercely afire or destroyed. Explosive materials such as booster propellants and HE explosives are violently exploded. Ablative and plastic materials literally explode into pieces, torn apart by sudden violent ablation and outgassing everywhere within. The remnants of the vehicle are now total duds, as is the payload, including re-entry vehicle, nuclear warhead electronics, nuclear materials from the disruption and explosion of the HE portion of the warhead system, etc.

Still, each piece of the debris must pass through the glowing shell once more before it exits. Thus a second "shot", precisely as effective as the first, still awaits each and every piece of the debris plunging along inside the shell as it exits.

As the debris continues on to the latter part of midcourse and early terminal phase, any portions large enough to track are subjected to small, intense Tesla globes where the energy density in the shell is many orders of magnitude greater than in the larger globe used in earlier midcourse. This part of the defense system simply services each incoming "blob" methodically, probably first in the pulse mode. Later, any blobs still remaining are given the maximum "continuous heating" mode with a small Tesla globe, to actually vaporize metals and materials.

In the unlikely event that anything active still remains, or that an object has managed to elude the large and small Tesla fireballs, a Tesla shield is still to bo encountered, towering over the protected area. For significant targets this shield will be concentric, and will contain three or more concentric Tesla shields. Again, the approaching vehicle will be subjected to multiple EMP's and severe heating throughout its volume. In addition, the concentric shields will "clean up and sterilize any gamma radiation and EMP resulting from any deliberate high altitude defense suppression nuclear burst that somehow (inconceivably!) gets through the launch phase ABM system, and the Tesla-globe midcourse and earl terminal phase defenses.

As can be seen, the system complex represents a most formidable defense **that** certainly approaches 100% effectiveness against the present triad, and even against the addition of cruise missiles.

In addition, since these weapons suffer from very strange constraints and limitations, the scalar transmitters are actually dual mode: they become conventional radars by simply switching into the ordinary EM mode. They arc part of the more conventional ABM defense system complexes we presently recognize in the Soviet Union. In this conventional role, backup ABM missile interceptors are available, to be employed in case the conventional role must be assumed.

Later we will address the reason for the strange limitations that must be placed upon unqualified use of the large scalar EM systems, particularly in the pulse or "burst" nodes.

NETWORK OF VIRTUAL TRANSMITTERS

Slide 063: Network of Virtual Transmitters

In July 1976 the U.S. received very special Bicentennial greetings from the Soviet Union.

At that time, communications systems of the world in the 3-30 megaHertz band suddenly met substantial interference from extremely powerful, chirped Soviet transmitters that were suddenly activated. These transmitters continue their transmissions to this day.

Estimates of the power of these enormous transmitters vary, but figures range as high as several hundred megawatts, with a nominal figure being 100 megawatts.

These powerful transmitters were promptly nicknamed "Woodpeckers" because of the characteristic sound of the chirped signal when received. That is, the received signal made a "pecking" sound much like a woodpecker's beak hitting a block of wood.

Several nations protested, but the powerful signals have continued, right down to this day. The only Soviet response was to add a "spread spectrum" capability, so that the transmitter did not dwell too long on one specific frequency, but shifted periodically to other frequencies.

These transmitters have apparently never been precisely located by U.S. intelligence, but their beams carry much of the characteristics of an **over-the** horizon (OTH) radar. They have been dubbed OTH-radars by U.S. intelligence, and can without question perform that mission, in addition to some very interesting missions which U.S. intelligence does not assess.

Soviet Military Power, Department of Defense, 1985, p. 45 shows the direct intersection over the United States of the Woodpecker radar beams used in an OTH-role. We show an illustration of that intersection on this slide.

In addition, we show an additional "scanner" beam that can be scanned across the intersection "grid" over the U.S., formed by waveform interference of two main Woodpecker beams.

These Woodpecker transmitters have a great many diverse functions.

First, they can be used in a conventional over-the-horizon radar node, since their beams follow the earth-ionosphere waveguide and curve around the earth. In this mode they can detect missiles at launch and thereafter, and strategic bombers when taking off and thereafter.

However, these scalar interference grid weapons have many other uses.

First, they can be used to biologically attack entire populations in a targeted area. This aspect is not covered in this briefing. Suffice it to say that phase-locked ELF modulation signals ot 10 Hz and less are often detected on multiple Woodpecker frequencies simultaneously. In a target area, this modulation - if sufficiently stronger than the Schumann resonance of the earth's magnetic field - will entrain a percentage of the brains into "forced entrainment." In that case, these human brains are "synchronized" to the Woodpecker signals so that multiple coherent frequencies are phase-locked into them. That is, multiple coherent EM channels directly into these entrained brains now exist. At that **point,** Fourier expansions may be used to attack specific portions of the brain geometrically.

In addition, scalar EM disease patterns can be modulated upon the carriers, again with Fourier expansions. Specific biological effects can be induced in the entrained populace at will, limited only by the state of the art of the Soviet technology used to attack them. Possible induced effects include instantaneous **death,** heart seizure, severe emotional disruption, loss of control of internal functions, diseases, disabling of the immune system, and even implantation of **thoughts,** emotions, and ideas which are interpreted by the targeted subjects as their own.

While further discussion of this area is beyond the scope of this briefing, the biological aspects of the Woodpecker transmitters are horrible. It suffices to say that, in thousands of experiments, Kaznacheyev demonstrated that almost any **kind** of cellular death and disease pattern could be electromagnetically transmitted. Kaznacheyev reported the effect in the near ultraviolet. Experimenters at the University of Marburg in West Germany duplicated the experiments in the infrared.

The bottom line is that photons themselves can carry death and disease patterns between cells. Scalar E*M* technology allows the synthesis of the actual potential pattern (which after all represents total control of charge and charge distribution, hence biochemistry in the cell) of a particular cellular disease or death mechanism. Symptoms (and cellular death from them!) of nuclear radiation, chemical poisoning, bacterial infection, and other mechanisms were successfully induced by the Kaznacheyev experiments.

Dr. Popp of West Germany has published an analysis of the virtual photon master control system of the cells. Since scalar EM represents the deliberate ordering of virtual particle flux into deterministic patterns, the master control system can readily be entered with scalar techniques to induce disease and disorder at will.

NETWORK OF VIRTUAL TRANSMITTERS

WOODPECKER INTERFERENCE GRID
(SCALAR COMPONENTS)

Slide 064: Network of Virtual Transmitters

On this slide we diagrammatically represent the Soviet woodpecker interference grid over the U.S. This grid can easily be used to influence and control the weather, and for over a decade the Soviets have manipulated the weather over the U.S. and other parts of the world.

By the peculiar title of this slide, we wish to call attention to the fact that, in the exothermic mode of scalar interferometry riding on the woodpecker radar signals, each of the woodpecker grid interference cells can act as a little "virtual transmitter." It's exactly as if the Soviets had been permitted to enter the U.S. and build thousands of EM transmitters at regular intervals all over the country!

And of course it's even worse. In the endothermic mode, it's as if the Soviets had been permitted to enter the U.S. and build thousands of "cold generators" all over the U.S. That is, in that mode, each of the "transmitters" can actually extract electromagnetic energy.

These two modes have enabled the Soviet Union to drastically manipulate the weather at will over the U.S. during the last decade (and similarly, for other places as well.)

(For a disclosure of the Soviet weather control operations over the U.S., see T.E. Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, 1985, available from The Tom Bearden Website www.cheniere.org. We will only summarize here.).

Briefly, inside various reference level zeros on the ordinary EM woodpecker carriers, scalar "channels" are established. Scalar beams, signals, and interferometer pulses and transmissions can be transmitted through these reference channels as if directly through a wire. Phasing, pulse shaping, and Fourier expansion formation of geometric forms are then the key to be used in scalar interferometry through the internal scalar channels of the Soviet woodpecker signals.

By choosing one or more grid cells and using scalar interference there in the exothermic continuous mode, local heating and expansion of the air, and formation of a high-pressure area, occurs.

By choosing one or more grid cells and using scalar interference there in the endothermic continuous mode, local cooling and shrinking of the air, and formation of a low-pressure area, occurs.

By electromagnetic "rotation" of the interfering scalar beams, the hotspots and coldspots can be moved along a desired path and at a desired speed.

By these methods the entire jetstream across the U.S. can be deviated and controlled to a large degree. Moisture can be drawn from the Pacific beyond Southern California and Mexico, and collided over the southern U.S. with extremely cold air brought down from Canada, producing ice storms such as those in and around February 1, 1985.

Violent thunderstorm activity can be induced and directed. By adding "spin", these same storms can be induced to form extensive tornados.

By sustained weather engineering operations, drought or excessive rain and flooding can be induced in areas of the U.S. as desired. Crops can be destroyed or heavily damaged by severe and unseasonal weather.

If the grid is placed in the ground on scalar EM carriers instead of normal EM carriers (and the woodpecker "radars," can switch to, or add, scalar carrier mode whenever they wish), it can be used as an anti-submarine weapon, as we shall see later. It can also be used to cause substantial ocean effects that have drastic consequences on the world's weather - such as the anomalous El Nino of 1982-83.

By localizing one spot of heating at the top of a thunderstorm anvil, and another spot of cooling at its side, a localized downburst can be created. Our weather satellites have detected just such an anomalous combination heating and cooling of thunderstorm anvils over the U.S. While there may exist natural mechanisms to cause this anomalous dual pattern, it may also be caused by Soviet weather engineering, which can cause either broad-area or highly localized effects.

All these types of weather engineering incidents have been deliberately created over the U.S. by the Soviet Union.

Perhaps the greatest weather effects can be induced by altering some of the large-scale normal mechanisms that influence and control our weather. Thus the **artificially** induced El Nino of 1982-83 was a case in point, causing drastic weather upsets worldwide for a year or more.

Thelast decade has seen weather so anomalous that it could only occur once in 1200 years by chance. It has not been due to normal chance, but by Soviet weather engineering, particularly since the advent of the Woodpecker transmitter complexes.

ADDITIONAL BACKGROUND FOR THE BRIEFER:

The Woodpecker transmitters can carry scalar components, which, in addition to biological strikes, can be used for many other purposes such as to

1. Influence and control the weather,
2. Deviate the giant jetstreams of the upper atmosphere,
3. Detect, track and destroy missiles shortly after launch,
4. Detect, track and destroy strategic bombers and other aircraft,
5. Attack land and ocean surface targets by large aerial electromagnetic explosions: the EM explosion produces the fireball, the thermal effects, and the blast wave of a nuclear explosion without the nuclear radiation and radioactive fallout contamination;
6. Attack surface land and ocean targets by large "cold explosions", where living things freeze almost instantly, leaving the surface facilities and equipment intact,
7. Attack land and ocean surface targets by severe internal electromagnetic disruption, so that all electronics are dudded,
8. Attack personnel on land and sea by direct destruction of their nervous systems with an internally induced strong EMP,
9. Disrupt the operation of distant facilities, equipment, and personnel or destroy food crops in large areas by severe cold or severe heating, or even startling oscillation between the two.

In addition, the scalar aspects of the Woodpecker transmitters can be beamed through the earth and ocean as surface waves or at a given depth to intersect at a distant region. This mode can be used to

10. Cause distant earthquakes in a distant fault zone by depositing energy in the rocks there, increasing the plate stress until slippage occurs at a fault zone,

11. Cause large, anomalous rocking of an entire plate or large area, by depositing and extracting energy from alternate areas, causing buckling of the large rock plate,
12. Set up an interference grid under the water, so that underwater submarines can be detected, tracked, and destroyed on station and with their missiles still unfired,
13. Attack naval vessels and task forces through the water and through their hulls, without warning,
14. Attack missile silos and nuclear storage sites "before launch", directly through the earth itself,
15. Initiate the full nuclear explosion of implosion-type nuclear warheads on-board missiles on station,
16. Initiate full nuclear explosion of implosion-type nuclear warheads in storage sites and ready reserve,
17. Destroy seaborne and ocean-bottom-mounted mines and underwater sensors, even including entire "fields" of them,
18. Detect and destroy hostile torpedoes, ship-to-underwater anti-submarine missiles, and dumped anti-submarine munitions and charges,
19. "Pump" the electrical grounding of distant electrical power distribution and generation systems so that the system catastrophically fails,
20. "Pump" the electrical grounding of distant electrical power systems so that radio and television transmitters, power grids, and wiring complexes in buildings and facilities radiate a desired scalar wave component or signal complex at equipment and personnel.

All in all, the woodpecker transmitter complexes and other associated scalar EM weaponry are most useful in the major missions required in war.

LAUNCH PHASE ABM SYSTEM

- "BIG EYE" SCANS GRID SQUARES, DETECTS PENETRATION
- COMPUTER TRIGGERS MULTIPLE TRANSMITTERS
- PULSES PHASED SO EMP PULSE OCCURS IN DESIRED SQUARE
- PENETRANT IS DUDDED OR DESTROYED

Slide 065: Launch Phase ABM System

On this slide we show the use of the Woodpecker grid in the Launch Phase **ABM** system role.

The scalar components establish an interference grid over the U.S., at some altitude above the earth. One or more separate scalar interferometers transmit through scalar channels established in the Woodpecker's normal EM carriers, scanning through the grid square cells one by one in the "just barely extract energy" endothermic mode.

Back in the Soviet Union, the energy extracted passes through a scanned receiver biased just so that the normal energy extracted from the distant atmosphere does not show on a scanning screen. Any substantial amount of additional energy appearing in the cell - such as from the jet engines of a large aircraft or the rocket exhaust of a large missile - will be detected.

The **operation** of this weapon is four-fold: (1) the scanning interferometer or "big eye" scans the grid squares, detects penetration, and tracks the rising missile. (2) A separate scalar EM interferometer (a howitzer) is controlled by a computer and fired through a separate scalar EM channel opened in the ordinary EM woodpecker carriers. (3) Two timed scalar pulses are fired so that they converge and meet in the grid cell containing the rising missile. This results in the **sudden** emergence of a violent EMP pulse throughout the missile and the surrounding vicinity. (4) All missile and warhead electrical and electronic systems are instantly dudded and destroyed. In addition, fuels, propellants, and explosives of the missile are immediately ignited, explosively destroying the penetrating missile.

That takes care of the missile target. (The same weapon, of course, can be used against airborne strategic bombers - including Stealth-type bombers. In fact, Gary Powers' high flying aircraft was probably shot down in 1960 by a "jury-rigged" scalar EM howitzer using modified radars and timed scalar pulses to provide an aerial explosion and EMP.)

The Woodpecker grid/howitzer weapon system can be placed over the ocean and used against cruise missiles, naval surface-to-air and surface-to-surface missiles, submarine-launched ballistic and cruise missiles, etc. Placed over a carrier task force, it can also take care of the aircraft launched by the carrier as fast as they are launched. It can also handily take care of the missiles launched by guided-missile cruisers of the accompanying task force.

Now let's take a look at the command and fire control end of this weapon system, way back in the Soviet Union.

SOVIET COMMAND & CONTROL CONCEPT

CCCP
• MARK • READY • FIRE • KILL

Slide 066: Soviet Command & Control Concept

On this slide we show a postulated Soviet fire control system for the grid weapon.

Two or more operators sit at a control console, facing a giant display (screen). The display contains a grid, which represents the distant interference grid of the Woodpecker carriers (or scalar EM carriers, if in the underground or underwater mode). A distant missile launched into the real interference grid overhead will cause a spot of light to appear in the appropriate grid square (cell) on the operators' screen. The operators will track the displayed target, select firing mode and type of action, engage the target, and assess whether or not the distant target is killed or missed by the firing.

When a missile is launched in the distant area over which the Woodpecker grid has been placed, it quickly rises through one of the scanned grid cells on its upward journey. As it penetrates the cell, additional energy is extracted (since part of the missile's exhaust energy is now extracted also). At the screen in the Soviet Union, the additional energy received rises above bias, causing a "bloom" or spot of light to appear on the screen at the appropriate grid cell representation.

The distant operator has now detected the missile launch and its location. He places a marker over the target track and activates the computer, also inputting the type of firing or action to be performed. In this case, let us say he wishes a burst of **energy** to emerge inside the distant launched missile, and has activated that mode of firing action.

The computer computes the necessary parameters for another scalar interferometer channel in the exothermic mode, and for firing at the location of the rising missile so that two scalar pulses will meet in the cell penetrated by the rising missile on the other side of the earth. As the channel is opened, the firing solution settled, and the interferometer howitzer readied, the computer activates indicators on the console notifying the operator. When all is ready, a "ready-to-fire" light is lit on the console.

Upon receiving the command to fire and destroy the missile, the operator presses the fire button. The computer fires the activated scalar EM howitzer in the pulse mode. The operator continues to watch his screen.

When the pulses meet in the distant grid cell, a violent EMP suddenly arises in and throughout the missile and its surrounding vicinity. This explodes the missile propellants and warheads, destroying the target.

On the distant screen, a sudden drastic "blossoming" of the target results from the sudden extraction of a great deal of additional energy by the scanning scalar interferometer. The operator thus knows he has made a "kill."

Should for some reason the target be missed, additional energy will still be extracted by the scanning interferometer from the grid cell/vicinity in which the EMP suddenly emerges. The distant operator will still see a bloom on his scope, but not nearly so great as when the missile explodes. He thus knows that the EMP effect of the firing has occurred, but the target has been missed (he will see the bloom in its offset location as well). In that case, the operator can quickly mark the EMP location, hit the switch, and the computer will automatically correct and fire again.

At any rate, for a miss a large "sonic boom" or blast still results in the EMP emergence zone from sudden heating of the air. These are precisely the type of booms that were associated with three NASA shuttle launches prior to the end of 1985. These were actual testing of this weapon system, using the shuttle launches to provide a target, and delaying the burst some minutes so the shuttle would not actually be destroyed. On Nov. 26, 1985 a "marker beacon" (glowing ball of light) was also created over the site. This was probably to orient **satellites** and other detection systems. Some 12 minutes after that nighttime launch, **a** large blast occurred over the site, heard for hundreds of miles up and down **the** coast. Shortly after, the light suddenly moved away very rapidly - faster than **a** jet aircraft.

If many missiles are being launched, the operator marks them rapidly, one **after** the other, and the howitzer fires burst after burst at them, decimating the launched missiles, one after the other. In this fashion most of the counterstrike missiles launched by the U.S. would be destroyed shortly after launch, greatly reducing the number of missiles that make it to midcourse.

However, apparently the loss of the shuttle launched on Jan. 28, 1986 was caused by the addition of a metal-softening pattern in the exothermic mode, in and around the booster, using the actual booster ionic flames as a receiver-amplifier. This led to the failure of one of the supports and the partial breakaway of the right booster. The booster rotated into the tank, causing damage and the resulting explosion when the venting main fuel hit the booster flame.

By spread spectrum techniques and proper timing and phasing, one system of Woodpecker transmitters can set up multiple interference grids, in various parts of the world. The scanners and howitzers can operate in the appropriate zones, again by spread spectrum techniques and proper timing and phasing.

In fact, the latest versions probably can operate in the "ordinary EM carrier" (atmospheric) mode and the "scalar EM carrier" (underwater and in the earth) mode simultaneously - again by timed switching between EM and scalar EM carriers, spread spectrum techniques, and timing and phasing of howitzers and Manners.

Thus a single system can operate in the earth, underwater, and atmospheric modes. It can operate against the very wide range of different targets previously mentioned. It can do all this "simultaneously," from a real-time practical viewpoint.

LAUNCH PHASE ABM SYSTEM (ANTI-SLBM)
CCCP

Slide 067: Launch Phase ABM System (Anti-SLBM)

Here we show the operation of the system in the atmosphere over the ocean, to destroy sub-launched ballistic missiles such as Poseidon and Polaris. The system operation shown uses the normal EM Woodpecker carrier frequencies, with scalar components to establish the interference grid, and scalar channels for the scanners and howitzers. The grid can be set up by this method anywhere in the world.

As can be seen, during their early launch phase, this mode will take care of the missiles launched from underwater U.S., British, and French nuclear submarines.

Remember, this is just one mode in which the system is operating. It can at the same time have other interference grids at other locations, and even in other modes, including underwater grids used against the submarines themselves, it can be engaging a multitude of targets of a wide variety of types, essentially all simultaneously.

DETECTING & MARKING MISSILE LAUNCH

Slide 068: Detecting & Marking Missile Launch

Here we show the missiles launched from the underwater submarines, when just detected in the atmosphere over the ocean. As each rising missile is detected, an operator at the screen places a cursor (a "marker") over the detected track spot on the scope.

The computer quickly computes the firing parameters and indicates when the system is "ready to fire."

By using additional scalar scanner frequencies in the multi-gigaHertz range and fine scanning, the operator is able to accomplish non-cooperative target identification.

After the operator places a cursor over a target, the advanced system fine-scans and identifies it as hostile, then continues the track in automatic.

When the operator presses the fire button for a designated target, the computer intiates fire by the appropriate scalar EM howitzer through established grid scalar firing channels.

DESTROYING THE LAUNCHED MISSILES

Slide 069: Destroying the Launched Missiles

On this slide we temporarily omit the interference grid and diagrammatically show the operation of the scalar EM howitzer. As shown, two pulses are fired so that they meet in the grid cell where the rising missile is located. A drastic EM pulse suddenly emerges everywhere throughout the missile and its vicinity causing instant missile destruction.

Of course, individual howitzers not in the Woodpecker carrier's scalar channel can also fire at the missiles in the purely scalar exothermic mode. Or they can utilize the large "Tesla globe" in the continuous mode, the small Tesla "ball of light" in the continuous or pulsed mode, etc.

Also, continuous EM energy can be caused to emerge in a broader, "defocused" interference area causing electronic dudding of circuits in vehicles over a wider area. This is a very useful mode to use against mass attacks by many aircraft and/or many missiles at the same time. That is, the entire formation can be attacked in the "dud electronics" mode, and then followed up by more intense servicing of each individual hapless target.

Again, in 1960 Gary Powers was probably downed by a crude prototype scalar interferometer "howitzer" obtained by modifying two ordinary radars. At least the Soviets had previously been unable to down a penetrating U-2 with missiles they possessed. We know the scalar howitzers were in development, for Khrushchev had announced to the Presidium in January 1960 that a new "fantastic weapon" was in development. A development prototype was probably used to down Powers' aircraft.

SHIFT TO ANTI-SUB MODE
(UNDERWATER)
CCCP

Slide 070: Shift to Anti-Sub Mode

In the underwater mode portrayed on this slide, the Woodpecker transmitters have been switched to "scalar carriers" mode and the carrier beams transmitted through the ground and into the ocean underwater. (Remember, an artificial EM potential that does not couple to charged particles or ions will travel through the ocean, but a force field will not.)

Thus a giant scalar interference grid is now established underwater. Additional scalar beams in the weakly endothermic mode scan this grid. When a submarine enters the grid, it substantially changes the potential in that cell, and the scanner picks this up. The distant screen now displays the sub as a "track" of light in the appropriate grid square cell. The computer switches in fine-scanning and non-cooperative target identification. It identifies the target as hostile and alerts the operator (by blinking the track and changing its color to red, for example).

As before, the operator marks the target and enters the firing mode and type of action desired. Again, let us assume the "EMP burst" mode of destruction is to be used. The computer computes the firing parameters and readies the howitzer, When the commander gives the command to fire, the operator presses the firing button. The computer fires the howitzer.

Two scalar pulses proceed through the howitzer scalar channel and meet in the submarine. Throughout the sub and its vicinity, a violent EMP is suddenly experienced, knocking out the electrical systems, electronic equipment, and igniting propellants and explosives in the on-board missiles and armament. This explodes the submarine, missiles, and torpedoes instantly.

At the distant command console, the scanners detect the violent eruption of energy from the exploding submarine. It appears on the screen as a sudden strong blossoming of the track. The operator assesses that the target has been destroyed. He immediately engages another target if one is present.

If the EMP is off-course and misses, the scanners still pick up a smaller blossoming in the offset location. The operator immediately knows he has missed the target. He marks the offset bloom, presses the switch for "Correct!" and the computer makes the firing correction. When the operator again gets a Ready-to-Fire light illuminated, he presses the firing button and fires again at the target, this time with corrections applied.

Again, the same Woodpecker system - using timing, phasing, scalar/EM switching and spread-spectrum techniques - may be involved in several grids and many types of targets. When in a target-rich environment, the firing operators may be very busy indeed.

As we shall later see, the same weapon system may also be firing in the "cold explosion" or pused endothermic mode, where intense bursts of instant and severe freezing are unleashed in the target zone.

SHIFTING TO EARTHQUAKE MODE

Slide 071: Shifting to Earthquake Mode

The uses of the complex grid, scanners, and scalar howitzers is limited only by human ingenuity and state-of-the-art of the technology developed.

By shifting to the scalar-carrier mode and transmitting in the surface layer of the earth, the interference zone can be established in a distant region of the earth, beneath the earth's surface.

Suppose we establish a very small interference grid in the earth at and around a distant fault zone. Then by steadily depositing energy in the zone in the continous exothermic mode, the stress in the fault area is steadily and gradually increased. Eventually the plates on each side of the fault will slip, and a "natural appearing earthquake" occurs. If the energy is deposited slowly and gently, a gentler quake can usually be effected. If the energy is deposited fairly rapidly, a higher peak stress can usually be reached before the rocks slip, and a larger, more destructive earthquake results.

By making a wider grid in the earth in a larger area, a strange kind of earthquake can be induced, whether or not a fault zone exists in the area. By pouring energy out of alternate cells and extracting energy from the others, a "wave-like" buckling tensile and compressive stress is created throughout the zone. As this continues, the entire plate area will try to oscillate, moving and causing an anomalous sort of "rocking, flat earthquake" throughout a large area.

Not too many days after the destruction of the Challenger on January 28, 1986, such an anomalous "flat earthquake" occurred in the U.S., near the Great Lakes, involving some 10 states. This was probably the subsequent testing of an additional weapons mode of the same Soviet scalar EM system that destroyed the shuttle.

SUPPRESSION ATTACK - MARV'S (WITHOUT DEFENSES)

DELIVERED BY ONE VEHICLE
(MARV'S)
MULTIPLE MANEUVERABLE
RE-ENTRY VEHICLES
EACH MANEUVERS AND
ATTACKS A DIFFERENT TARGET

Slide 072: Suppression Attack—MARVs (without defenses)

Now to shift the emphasis a bit, and look at the impact on some "normal" strategic systems and concepts.

On this slide we show the basic idea of suppression attack against an enemy's ground based missile force in fixed-site silos. The attack uses multiple maneuverable re-entry vehicles (MARVs) delivered by a single carrier missile, which acts as a "bus." The bus ejects the MARVs at the appropriate time, and each of the MARVs heads toward its predesignated target, maneuvering as it re-enters the atmosphere and proceeds to the target. The maneuver makes conventional intercept of the MARV by conventional anti-ballistic missiles more difficult.

In this manner, missile silos without defenses may be caught by surprise and destroyed.

The "bus" concept actually multiplies the number of targets a single launched missile can attack, and the maneuvering of the MARV increases the difficulty of defending the target area by orthodox means.

SUPPRESSION ATTACK – MARVs WITH DEFENSES

(OVERKILL CAPABILITY MAXIMIZES P_k)

Slide 073: Suppression Attack—MARVs (with defenses)

Now suppose some of the scalar EM defenses we have discussed are added to the picture.

On this slide we show a similar missile field, defended by a Tesla dome and by multiple scalar howitzers.
The howitzers take the incoming buses under attack during the early midcourse phase, by means of very large spherical EMP globes. Many of the buses - and their entire payloads, including the nuclear warheads themselves - are dudded by these midcourse defenses.

Servicing of dudded vehicles that have penetrated the globe now occurs farther along in midcourse. Each dud vehicle may be serviced, for example, with a small globe in the continuous mode for an appreciable number of seconds. This causes vaporization or fusing of the physical structures of the vehicles.

Groupings of incoming vehicles may also be serviced by medium-sized globe in the pulse mode. This assures dudding, and is especially useful for clearing away chaff and debris with smaller ballistic coefficients. It also is useful to further insure that the nuclear warheads themselves are totally dudded.

An additional wrinkle is to place scalar signal patterns - that affect and transmute a nuclear warhead's radioactive nuclei - onto a continuous globe. In short, by the proper scalar signals it is possible to transmute plutonium and uranium into harmless elements, and it can be done at a distance. The 4th and 5th generation Soviet scalar EM technology is probably capable of doing **this**

This insures that, not only are the incoming nuclear warheads electromagnetically inert, but they are also nuclearly inert and incapable of generating nuclear explosions.

Still another wrinkle - particularly useful against implosion-type weapons - is to utilize a scalar signal pattern that causes sudden generation of neutrons in the active material (plutonium or uranium). This harmlessly explodes the nuclear warheads while they are far away from their intended targets and out in space. The burst mode is probably the most useful for this tactic.

Note that, if desired, this same tactic - exploding the nuclear weapons themselves - can also be utilized in the Launch Phase ABM system grid against the missiles after launch. This capability converts an adversary's intended nuclear attack against you to an actual attack against himself!

Also note that the adapted grid system in the surface of the earth can be used to explode the nuclear warheads in ICBMs while they are still in the silos, or to explode nuclear warheads in storage. In the underwater mode, the nuclear warheads in the Poseidon and Polaris missiles on-board the nuclear submarines can be exploded in a similar manner. In fact, the nuclear reactor used to furnish the power for the nuclear submarines can also be exploded or disabled in this manner, as can land-based and ship-based reactors.

Again, this actually turns an adversary's own nuclear weapons against him. His own weapons can be used to obliterate him. Without scalar defenses, possessing the capability of nuclear attack becomes a serious detriment!

But back to our slide. Just in case something gets through this formidable defense somehow, the Tesla Shield (dome) provides the final reiteration that takes care of any residue "leakage."

The sum total of these defenses fully justifies the 1968 Soviet statement in Military Strategy that the USSR has achieved a 100% defense, and the West has

RESPONSE TO COUNTERFORCE STRIKE – WITH NO DEFENSE (FIRST STRIKE)

Slide 074: Response to Counterforce Strike with No Defenst

Here we show the orthodox concept of response to a surprise counterforce nuclear strike when the surprised force has no defenses.

A great percentage of the attacked missile silos are destroyed. The surprised side thus is able to mount only a limited strike in retaliation. Perhaps he is able to launch some remaining silo-based missiles that escaped destruction. He is also able to launch missiles from any of his underwater nuclear submarines that escaped. Some of his strategic bombers may have escaped destruction on the ground or while airborne on station; these surviving bombers can be directed to proceed with strategic reprisal against the enemy.

As can be appreciated, this entire concept is now totally obsoleted by the Soviet possession of scalar EM weapons.

The "mutual assured destruction" capability - or MAD concept as it was so aptly named! - is no longer mutual.

And for two reasons: (1) the Soviet surprise attack could destroy essentially all our Triad forces wherever they are, in the first attack. (2) Even if a very small number of our strategic forces survive, the puny strike we could attempt to launch could be repeatedly decimated from launch to terminal phase.

The restraint on the Soviets is not because of our Triad forces. The restraint is twofold: (1) a second nation has scalar EM weapons, and would undoubtedtly unleash them upon the Soviet Union with great violence if such a massive world-wide destruction of U.S. forces occurred or was threatened (is it really "accidental" that six major Soviet missile ammunition storage sites mysteriously exploded within seven months?); (2) the closed-loop scalar radiation exchange system of Earth-Sun could be inadvertently "tweaked" in the feedback loop from Earth to Sun, so that a large solar scalar resonance was stimulated. In that case the Sun could emit a mighty resonant "burp" that would simply wipe out all life on Earth in a fiery shower.

The "terror" in the "balance of terror" between nations has just increased by many, many orders of magnitude.

The biblical prophecy that the Earth will be wiped out by "fire and brimstone from heaven" is very near fulfillment now.

Put another way, the pucker factor - even on the Russians who may contemplate unleashing Armageddon - is higher than any Western strategic analyst has ever imagined, even in his wildest nightmares.

Truly these weapons are "more frightening than the mind of man has imagined," as Brezhnev put it in 1975.

The frightening scalar EM weapons can be used, but only very, very gingerly indeed**.** If a slight mistake is made, everybody loses everything.

RESPONSE TO COUNTERFORCE STRIKE – WITH DEFENSE

Slide 075: Response to Counterforce Strike with Defense

On this slide we show the impact of scalar defenses against an adversary who possesses only the orthodox nuclear weapons and delivery systems, and makes a "first strike" by surprise against his opponent.

In this case, the attacked opponent has scalar EM defenses.

With just the midcourse and terminal scalar EM howitzer defenses, almost all of the attacking missiles and re-entry vehicles are destroyed.

If for some reason (such as to prevent triggering the sun and destroying the world inadvertenly!) the attacked adversary does not wish to attack strategically with scalar EM weapons, he may now launch a massive retaliatory strike on his opponent.

And if that opponent has no ABM defenses, he's just bought the farm.

What a funny coincidence! Long ago, we crazy Americans chose to put all **our** eggs in the offensive basket. That is, we thought the Soviets cannot dare to strike us because we will have enough surviving missiles to penetrate any orthodox defense and destroy them in return. They would also have the same "mutual assured destructon (MAD)" capability, of course!

The MAD concept was aptly acronymmed - it was an insane idea from its inception. That is, the Soviets were not supposed to defend their cities **and** populace, and neither were we. That way, you see, we could destroy their citizenry at will, and they could destroy ours at will. We deliberately agreed to that, thinking - in our insanity - that the Soviets agreed also.

Of course the Soviets weren't playing the same lunatic's game at all. They simply fed our own garbage back to us, and we importantly thought we were negotiating something. Unknown to us, they were secretly building and deploying scalar EM defenses even then. Since we didn't know of any other defense, we assumed the Soviets could not defend their citizenry with ABMs any better than we could defend ours with ABMs. So we blithely scrapped our ABMs.

The high government officials of the United States of America grossly violated our constitution and their sworn oaths of office. Our constitution specifically charges the government of the United States to defend the people of the United States. That means our officials are specifically charged with defending our people. Yet they deliberately agreed not to do so, and they deliberately sacrificed us in advance.

They committed treason of the highest kind, by deliberately surrendering us to total destruction anytime the big balloon goes up.

The constitution doesn't charge the government with surrendering our citizens to destruction under any circumstances. It charges the government with defending us against destruction.

Ronald Reagan is the first U.S. president in some time to see through the MAD concept. At least he stands forthrightly for defense. It's just a shame that the government and scientific leaders under him aren't aware of the Soviet scalar weapon developments, so they could brief him on these startling developments.

Be sure you understand what the government leaders before Reagan have been saving. For years, our official policy has effectively said to the Russians: "We will allow each side a token defense only. We deliberately will not defend ourselves, so that anytime you decide to strike us you can destroy us. In return, however, we do not think you will want to strike us, for we believe that - before we become ashes from that strike - we can get enough away at you, to destroy you as well. Of course we believe you are in the same sort of boat."

Then we said, "There! That's settled! What a relief! Nobody can strike anybody anymore. Now can we talk about partial disarmament and on-site inspection?" The Soviets just kept their astonished amusement to themselves and kept building scalar defenses (and scalar offenses as well!). Their deception plan called for imbedding the scalar EM weapons in ordinary systems when possible, and hiding the scalar EM weapons tests in ordinary weapons tests when possible. Of course they had to be adamant in their opposition to on-site inspection; after all, even Western scientists, if allowed on site with the dual-mode weapons, might suspect something was different and possibly things were amiss.

The Soviet deception has worked like a charm. The U.S. MADmen who created and implemented the MAD doctrine have succeeded in prejudicing two generations of academicians and elected U.S. leaders against the need for effective defense. A vast wasteland of inane paper studies - learnedly dealing with ABM's, penetration tactics, leakage, force and counterforce, radar blackout, electronic warfare, etc. etc. - has been churned out by our military, industrial, and university "think tanks" to clog the minds, efforts, and literature of our defense and governmental establishments.

Our homeland has no effective ABM defense (and very little defense against aircraft or subsonic cruise missiles).

Our field army has no effective ABM defense (or air defense). Our naval forces have no effective ABM defense (although they are better defended against air attack than the field army). Yet ballistic missiles - and to some extent cruise missiles - have supposedly been our greatest threat for decades, followed closely by the secondary threat of massed aircraft attack.

A cynic might take the stand that, if our Defense Department hasn't been allowed to defend us (with deployed weapon systems, not by "paper studies") against what we ourselves have proclaimed is our biggest threat, then why is it called the Defense Department? Why not call it the No-defense Department'?

Understand, a great many fine, hard-working people in DoD have certainly tried to get adequate defenses developed and deployed. The sheer weight of the bureaucracy and its mind-numbing entanglements has prevented it.

But it's even worse. Our bureaucrats - both in government and in "big, organized science" - have been so caught up in the "Russians are really just ignorant peasants" syndrome and the "not-invented-here" (NIH) syndrome **that** they've not recognized the greatest scientific and technical breakthrough in history. Such a breakthrough - far greater in importance that the nuclear bomb has been made, developed, and deployed by the Soviet Union, all in secrecy and behind the smokescreen of a masterful deception plan.

We've totally missed the most incredible "secret superweapons" development program of all times, and the worldwide testing of the weapons themselves.

Hiroshima and Nagasaki should serve as object lessons in the price of ignorance of such technological breakthroughs.

History does repeat itself. But this time it's not we Americans who got the growl new superweapon first.

CLEAR COMMUNICATIONS

STANDARD COMPLETE JAMMING
CLEAR SCALAR COMMUNICATIONS

Slide 076: Clear Communications

Now let us rapidly give some unique capabilities that one can do with scalar EM in smaller things. Not only can scalar EM weapons be used in the big "continent burning" strategic weapons, but they can also be used for a variety of smaller defense tasks.

For example, one can establish a zero reference anywhere one wishes in an ordinary carrier. Inside that zero, one can establish as many independent "carriers" as one wishes, and hide them completely from ordinary detectors.

The way to do that is easy. Take as complex a signal as you wish. Subtract it from zero. That gives a "complement" which, when summed with the original signal, will produce the zero. Then only a scalar detector can go inside the zero and pullout the individual components.

So take a carrier wave. Let the enemy jam it completely, with gobs of power.

Your scalar communication channel stays serenely there, calm and unjammed. The enemy thinks you're jammed and can't communicate. Meanwhile, you continue to communicate just fine.

Or be real smart. Take one of those components inside the first zero. Pick a zero reference inside it. Hide still more carrier components inside the second zero. Do this as many times as you wish.

You can put all the telephone calls in the United States of America on one carrier. And you can keep them clear, right through total jamming.

UNIQUE COMMUNICATIONS
2-WAY HIGH DATA RATE
SOVIET

Slide 077: Unique Communications

But that's still not all.

You can also communicate with your submarines underwater. High data rate. Chat away as you wish. You can scramble, frequency hop, encrypt, the works. They can also communicate back to you.

Remember. EM force fields of any appreciable frequency won't travel through the water. Natural EM potentials grab charged particles and ions, so they won't travel through the ocean either. But artificial potentials don't grab onto charged particles or ions, and they will go through the ocean quite nicely.

Everything - aircraft, ships, shore installations, submarines, etc. - can communicate like gangbusters if they possess scalar EM technology.

In fact, you can even build scalar EM underwater radar if you wish.

The airborne scalar EM radar can see under the ocean with a little adjustment. perhaps as well as a conventional side-looking radar sees distant targets today, The airborne scalar EM radar can detect and track the underwater submarine while tooling along.

In fact, the airborne scalar EM radar can then destroy the sub, by using a **little** scalar interferometry. And it's even possible to do scalar interferometry with a single transmitter! How, is proprietary to a friend.

In fact, you can even use your enemy's jamming transmission as a "wire" along which to establish your scalar EM channels. You can use these scalar channels In the "weakly endothermic mode" to locate his transmitter and "lock-in" on it. You can "walk" the lock-in right past his encryption function to the "clear" Input, and receive and record that in the clear. All this from a distance.

You can then destroy his equipment if you wish, or just continue to monitor him in the clear if it's important to do so. Perhaps now we can understand what the decades-long weak microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow is all about. Or why the Soviets are building a nice new Embassy, bristling with antennas, on the high ground in Washington, D.C.

MINE COUNTERMEASURES – ORTHODOX SYSTEM

MINE HUNTER
SONAR
SUBMERSIBLE
TV CAMERA
CHARGE

Slide 078: Mine Countermeasures—Orthodox System

Take something like mine countermeasures, for example. Finding and destroying mines - particularly those placed on the bottom in relatively shallow areas such as ports and rivers - is a really tough problem.

Presently it's often done as portrayed on this slide.

Here a minehunter ship uses an underwater sonar to locate the mine, or what resembles a mine. Then it directs a submersible robot vehicle to proceed over to the object and examine it with an underwater television camera. If it's a mine, the submersible places a remotely operated charge beside it, then chugs away. When it reaches a safe distance away, the charge is exploded, causing the mine to detonate.

A very painful process. Very time consuming, and very difficult.

MINE COUNTERMEASURES – SCALAR EM SYSTEMS

MINE HUNTER
SCALAR ACQUISITION SYSTEM

Slide 079: Mine Countermeasures—Scalar EM Systems

Now try the same thing while using scalar EM underwater systems. The scalar EM acquisition system is really a sophisticated scalar radar. It scans a large area rapidly, locating moored mines, bottom-planted mines, and drifting mines.

The acquisition system is also a scanned "underwater eye." The operator in the surface vessel can tell whether or not it's a mine he's located.

Once the target mine is detected, a computer computes the firing parameters for a scalar interferometry pulse to hit it and destroy it. The operator fires the pulse, destroying the mine.

The same system that detects the mine at a distance identifies and destroys it at a distance. In this way large areas can be quickly scanned and swept clean of mines.

If a suspicious object is detected and one is still not quite sure it's a mine, shoot it anyway! If it's a mine, it explodes. If it's just a rock, nothing happens. So the same system can do "discrimination by fire."

The same system is useful to destroy midget submarines, bottom crawlers, etc.

It can also wipe out whole arrays of underwater sensors by electromagnetically dudding them.

It can take on a sub if it has to! Here it would just gently kindle EM energy inside the sub's controls, causing it to lose control of all its systems. The sub would then sink to crush depth and implode. The scalar EM mine sweeping system could, of course, simply "blow" the sub, but might itself get caught in the resulting explosion.

SCALAR ANTI-PERSONNEL WEAPON

Slide 080: Scalar Anti-Personnel Weapon

From a military viewpoint, these scalar EM weapons are really quite all-around weapons.

For example, they are very lethal against personnel.

Set in the "high intensity pulse mode," one blast and a person's nervous system is destroyed instantly. Total, instantaneous death results. One can blast away at entire groups of infantrymen, for example. It's the peak power that's important, not the average power. So the weapon doesn't require too much battery power.

Set on a lower intensity pulse mode, one zap can simply knock out a person, rendering him instantly unconscious.

Quite useful if one needs prisoners to interrogate. Also very silent, which is useful in operations employing stealth and surprise.

AFGHANISTAN
INSTANT DEATH
DEPLOYED ROCKET WITH DECOY GAS CHEMICALS
BODIES DO NOT DECAY FOR MORE THAN 30 DAYS

Slide 081: Afghanistan

The Soviets are employing just such a scalar "death ray" weapon in Afghanistan, apparently in the noses of some of their HIND helicopters.

These choppers usually fire gas rockets to camouflage the testing of the tactical scalar death ray. For example, they may fire rockets filled with nerve gas, and some persons will die convulsively from the chemical.

Those hit by the scalar EM weapon, however, have a most peculiar death mode,

Death comes instantly and totally. There is no convulsion, no response. The entire nervous system is destroyed instantly. Every living cell in the body is killed instantly, including all bacteria, germs, etc.

A body hit with this thing falls like a limp rag and lies where it falls. It doesn't decay in even 30-45 days. In a macabre fashion, it's been reduced to something like food irradiated with nuclear radiation; everything is killed, so the material is preserved for an extended period before any decay can set in.

Western military authorities have speculated that this strange death is due to some sort of eery new gas.

However, even with the most virulent gas, some seconds are required for a body to die. And while it's dying it goes into convulsions. Violent convulsions.

This eery, instant death that leaves a non-decaying corpse is not due to a gun, This is the signature of a high-powered pulse kill using a scalar EM weapon

The associated gas rockets are the disguise used to fool our intelligence analysts.

They're just part of the Soviet deception plan.

ADDITIONAL NOTES AND REFERENCES

15. For details of the mysterious, instant deaths in Afghanistan, see Yossef Bodansky, "Soviets testing chemical agents in Afghanistan," Jane's Defence Weekly, 1(13), Apr. 7, 1984, p. 508

SCALAR ANTI-TANK WEAPON

ARMOR HAS NO EFFECT

Slide 082: Scalar Anti-Tank Weapon

Such weapons are also effective against armored vehicles, for example.

They can be carried by personnel, mounted on vehicles, mounted in helicopters, etc.

They are truly all-purpose weapons.

An infantryman with a bazooka-sized scalar EM pulse weapon can easily knock out a tank with one shot. The armor has no effect; scalar EM goes right through conductive shielding and Faraday cages.

And with the same weapon he can knock out another tank, and another, and another...

SCALAR ANTI-AIRCRAFT WEAPON

Slide 083: Scalar Anti-Aircraft Weapon

And, if a helicopter or a fixed-wing aircraft attacks him, he can bring the same weapon to bear on it.

He can knock down a chopper or a jet. With one shot.

And another. And another.

Also, it's a line-of-sight weapon. He doesn't have to compute lead angle and all that jazz. Just aim, get the target in his sights, and pull the trigger.

RADAR INVISIBILITY
ENERGY CAPTURED
(NO REFLECTION)
ACQ RADAR
TRACK RADAR
ENERGY BOTTLE
(INTERFERENCE PATTERN
BETWEEN FOURIER
EXPANSION PATTERNS)

Slide 084: Scalar Anti-Aircraft Weapon

Another neat trick you can do with scalar EM is make an aircraft invisible **to** ordinary radar.

Just use multiple transmitters on the airplane to establish a spherical interference shell, in the bandwidth of the threatening radar, around the aircraft.

When the signal pulse (or continuous wave) from the ground-based radar **strikes** the "energy bottle" in the shell, it interferes with it and is diffracted, scattered, and partially absorbed.

The ground-based radar doesn't get any coherent return pulse or return signal reflected from the target.

Radars don't track aircraft; they track the reflection of their own signal bouncing off aircraft. No reflected signal, no aircraft - as far as a radar is concerned.

To shield against a passive radar (one which tracks emissions from the aircraft), just detect and complement your own emissions so that "near zeroes" result In the spectrum of interest.

Or do both, to protect against both.

It's even possible to cool the exhaust and heated surfaces of the aircraft by a scalar EM adaptation of electrostatic cooling. Theoretically it's even possible to cause the aircraft to "disappear" optically. Takes a bit of doing, but it's possible The basic scheme here is that, when a photon hits the target from a given direction, it's absorbed totally, and a corresponding or "matching" photon is emitted from the opposite side in the same direction the original photon was going. In that fashion, the light emitted from the target from one direction seems to have "passed through it" from the other direction.

Since that's what empty space does, then what a distant observer sees is "empty space," so far as he can tell.

AN EFFECTIVE PENETRATION AID (CM AGAINST ACQN & TRACKING)

XLTR/XMTR ANTENNA
MAIN RV
X/X ANTENNA
AUX #1
X/X ANTENNA
AUX #2
FOURIER EXPANSION
ENERGY BOTTLE
TRACK RADAR

Slide 085: An Effective Penetration Aid

Of course you can do the same thing for re-entry vehicles.

Use some multiple antennas on a vehicle. Or better yet, use satellite RV's to carry the extra transmitters necessary for scalar interferometry.

Deploy the interferometer RV's and activate the scalar EM transmitters. Place an energy bottle Fourier expansion interference shell around the ensemble in the bandwidth of interest.

Radars in that bandwidth now will be unable to detect the incoming ensemble. If nothing detects the threat, nothing is going to shoot at it or react to it.

This can also be used on a bus vehicle during midcourse, for example.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES: ATM/AD/AARTY

Slide 086: Unique Capabilities: ATM/AD/AARTY

But the uniqueness of scalar EM devices and weapons doesn't end there.

You can hit lots of other threats that are presently difficult or impossible to effectively handle.

For example, on the tactical battlefield, the same scalar EM radar interferometer system can defend against tactical missiles (ATM role), aircraft (AD role), cruise missiles (ACM role), and even artillery and mortar shells (AARTY role).

How the devil, you might ask, can it defend against artillery and mortar shells?

Simple. Sweep the artillery or mortar barrage with closely spaced pulses. Sorta like a machinegun. Or more like a phased-array radar.

If the peak power in the sweeping pulses is sufficient, the explosives are sparked and detonated. Fuses are destroyed.

So even mortar and artillery rounds can be destroyed, by the same system providing air defense and anti-tactical missile defense.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES
ROUND IN CHAMBER EXPLODES
NUCLEAR WARHEAD
ELECTRONICS DUDDED
AMMO
HE EXPLODES

Slide 087: Unique Capabilities

That's still not all.

An incredible number of different types of targets can be attacked with scalar EM weapons.

For example, aircraft equipped with scalar EM weapons can attack targets such as loaded artillery pieces. The round in the chamber explodes, destroying the weapon.

It can also attack nearby stored ammunition. Again, the high explosive in the ammunition explodes, destroying the store.

Even underground missiles can be attacked. The scalar pulse will go right through the overhead cover and dud the electronics, including the nuclear warhead. It will also detonate the HE in the warhead and detonate the fuels and propellants.

A great variety of other targets can also be attacked, as we shall see.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES

PERSONNEL
DIE
INSTANTLY
AMMUNITION
EXPLODES
FUEL
EXPLODES
ELECTRONIC
SYSTEMS
DUDDED

Slide 088: Unique Capabilities

For example, suppose one attacks a tank.

With scalar EM pulse, the personnel die instantly. Total personnel kill is achieved.

All electronic systems of the tank are dudded. Total systems kill is achieved.

The ammunition in the tank explodes. Total kill is achieved.

The fuel explodes. This is another total kill mechanism.

That tank has been killed totally, by a variety of mechanisms, all simultaneously.

That's a k-kill in any analyst's book.

And **don't** worry about retrieval and repair. That tank is finished permanently.

Even **the** most modern tank is just as vulnerable as the most obsolete.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES

ELECTRICAL SYSTEMS DUDDED
PILOT DIES INSTANTLY
ENGINE FLAMEOUT
FUEL EXPLODES
ELECTRONICS DUDDED

Slide 089: Unique Capabilities

Suppose one attacks a fighter-bomber aircraft.

Again, the kill is catastrophic from multiple simultaneous kill mechanisms.

The pilot and crew die instantly. Total destruction of their nervous systems.

The electrical systems are dudded.

The electronics in all avionics and ordnance is dudded.

The fuel explodes.

HE in on-board or out-board ordnance explodes.

The jet engine flames out if the pulse is powerful enough.

That aircraft is finished. Permanently.

And it's point-and-shoot, line-of-sight.

Even the most modern aircraft is just as vulnerable as the most obsolete.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES: PENETRATE SHIELDING

INSTANT DEATH OF
SHIELDED PERSONNEL
HIGH
PEAK
PULSE
POWER
WEAK
AVERAGE
POWER

Slide 090: Unique Capabilities: Penetrate Shielding

Shielding is ineffective.

The scalar pulse (or continuous wave) can go anywhere gravity can go.

It penetrates the steel hull of tanks and armored vehicles.

It penetrates underground shelters and bunkers.

It penetrates pillboxes and fortifications.

Foxholes are no protection. Just shoot through the earth into them.

There is no longer any place to hide.

MULTI-PURPOSE WEAPONRY

AMMO DUMP
GASOLINE DUMP
RADIOS AND COMMO GEAR
RADAR

Slide 091: Multi-Purpose Weaponry

These scalar EM weapons are all-purpose. Things such as ammunition dumps, radar systems, radios and communication gear, communications centers, gasoline dumps, etc. can easily be destroyed.

Not only that, but the weapons can be swept, giving area coverage.

You can hit both point targets and area targets.

MULTI-PURPOSE WEAPONRY

Slide 092: Multi-Purpose Weaponry

Look at what a weapon a helicopter becomes.

The same vehicle, equipped with scalar EM weapons, can engage and destroy jet aircraft, other helicopters, cruise missiles, personnel, and armored vehicles.

It can also hit all the other targets we've been talking about. Any vehicle equipped with scalar EM weapons becomes a formidable destroyer on the battlefield.

And "reconnaissance by fire" takes on a particularly lethal meaning.

For example, don't worry about the enemy in cover and concealment, or highly camouflaged.

Don't worry about decoys or dummy positions.

Just sweep the area with scalar EM fire. The actual targets will be discriminated by fire and destroyed.

MULTI-PURPOSE WEAPONRY

ATTACKS MOST TARGETS

Slide 093: Multi-Purpose Weaponry

As can be seen on this slide, most targets of interest can be attacked.

A single aircraft can sink an aircraft carrier or destroy a battle cruiser from afar.

It can also destroy aircraft, ground installations, artillery, personnel, nuclear weapons storage sites, tanks, vehicles, fuels, and combustibles.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES: HEAT EXTRACTION

- IN A ZONE, INSULATION HAS NO EFFECT.
- EXTERNAL HEATING HAS NO EFFECT.

SCALAR
INTERFEROMETER
(ENDOTHERMIC)
FROZEN TANK
FROZEN
SOLDIERS
IN ARCTIC GEAR

Slide 094: Unique Capabilities: Heat Extraction

Or one can get truly exotic.

To prevent destroying equipment and installations, the endothermic mode can be utilized.

Cold explosions can be used to freeze tanks, personnel, and equipment.

The equipment and tanks thaw out.

The personnel thaw out too, but they are dead when they do. Heaters and arctic clothing are no protection.

UNIQUE CAPABILITIES: COLD EXPLOSIONS

50 MILES
50 MILES
50 MILES
NEUTRALIZATION
WITHIN SECONDS

Slide 095: Unique Capabilities: Cold Explosions

For example, suppose three cold explosions, each 50 miles in diameter, are placed upon the front-line strength of NATO.

In seconds there is no longer any "front line strength" of NATO. Every living thing is frozen into a block of ice.

A few more of these things placed on selected rear area installations, and the battle is over before it gets started. Say in about one minute flat!

Suppose NATO is quickly defeated - say in two days. And then the Russians offer us a "Dunkirk." They agree to allow us to evacuate the beaten remnant of our forces.

Are we going to evoke a strategic nuclear exchange, or are we effectively "decoupled" from Europe? Particularly if the Soviets also offer sweeping accommodations to the Europeans, and they accept? If we punch the strategic button, we guarantee our own absolute destruction. (MAD doctrine and all **that,** old chap!)

Whether or not we could do anything to the Russians is a matter of conjecture.

For a demonstration, they could even invite us to launch a couple of missiles, and destroy them over our heads shortly after launch.

And they could take out a few submarines under the ocean, just to make it believable.

And destroy some SAC bombers that are orbiting on station.

Or take out a U.S. Naval Task Force, with a nuclear carrier, as a demonstration that they mean business.

Would a sane President go ahead and destroy us, or accept the Soviet's "Monroe Doctrine" and an "armistice"?

If the Soviets thought he was seriously contemplating ordering a nuclear strike, they could immediately destroy all our nuclear armaments where they sit. Our own weapons would obliterate us!

What would Congress do - after the Soviet Union had demonstrated its absolute power, offered a Dunkirk and armistice, and threatened our total destruction if we "reached for the holster," so to speak - when it realized the President might actually be contemplating evoking assured national suicide?

What would you do if you were a Congressman? If you were the President?

THE TRANSMITTER IS THE MAJOR WEAPON

Slide 096: The Transmitter is the Major Weapon

As shown on this slide, with scalar EM the transmitter becomes the major weapon on the battlefield.

Almost every type of target of any importance can be easily and effectively attacked and destroyed or nullified by scalar EM weapons.

Small wonder the Soviets do not discard their thousands of "old" radars!

How effective do you suppose some of their "old" transmitters on their "old" aircraft might be?

What chance do you think SAC bombers would have against thousands of "old" radar-directed gun sites and "obsolete" air defense missile sites?

Could it be that even something like the old SA-1 could be startlingly effective?

STAR WARS—THE FINAL FRONTIER?
SPACE-BASED SENSOR
CHEMICAL LASER BATTLESTATION
ELECTROMAGNETIC RAILGUN
MID-COURSE PHASE
SPACE-BASED SENSOR
EXOATMOSPHERE INTERCEPTOR
AIRBORNE SENSOR
TERMINAL PHASE
SUBMARINE-LAUNCHED BALLISTIC MISSILE
POST-BOOST
BOOST PHASE
ICBM
TACTICAL BALLISTIC MISSILE
BOOST
USA
USSR
GROUND-BASED RADAR SYSTEM
ENDOATMOSPHERE INTERCEPTORS
GROUND-BASED RADAR SYSTEM
EUROPE

Slide 097: Star Wars—The Final Frontier?

But what of our advanced concepts, such as the strategic defense initiative?

Here we show some of the expensive and complex components of that powerful system.

We have ground-based radars, endoatmospheric interceptors, exoatmospheric interceptors, airborne sensors, space-based sensors, chemically propelled interceptors, electromagnetic railguns, particle beam weapons, high energy lasers, etc. all tied together by a massive command and control system. This massive, expensive system is designed to detect and destroy missiles, including ICBMs, IRBMs, cruise missiles, SLBNs, etc.

*The s*ystem detects the missile launches and engages them from launch on in to the terminal phase.

Massive systems. Electromagnetic marvels. Nuclear-pumped lasers of staggering power. Perhaps even x-ray and gamma ray lasers. Directed energy RF weapons. Stupendous railguns. Sensors everywhere. Giant webs of communications. Banks of computers and control systems.

And it's totally vulnerable to scalar EM interferometer weapons. Giant scalar EM "radars" can simply sweep through all that like a scythe through standing hay.

As it stands, it's obsolete before its design is even finished.

It's obsolete to Soviet scalar EM weapons that are already deployed and operationally tested in place!

Without scalar EM weapons and defenses, all our present weapons and concepts are deadly vulnerable.

The war is over before it hardly gets started. It's not a war; it's more like a clay pigeon shoot.

Understand, if orthodox science was all the Russians possessed, the Strategic Defense Initiative would be the way to go.

But they do possess something else, and presently they have all the trump cards in the deck.

COMPARISON OF EM CONCEPTS

CHARACTERISTIC	THEORY		
	CLASSICAL EM	QM VIEW	SCALAR EM (ARTIFICIAL o)
VACUUM SPACETIME	LINEAR NO CHARGE	LINEAR, CHARGED (VIRTUAL) STATISTICALLY	NONLINEAR, CHARGED (VIRTUAL) W/ DETERMINISTIC COMPONENTS
VIRTUAL SUBSTRUCTURE	NONE (FLUID EQUATIONS)	YES STATISTICAL	YES. STATISTICAL. DETERMINISTICALLY WEIGHTED
FORCE IN VACUUM?	CAUSE YES	EFFECT YES	EFFECT NO
ZERO FORCE FIELDS	NO EFFECT	BOHM-AHARONOV EFFECTS	SUBSTRUCTURE EFFECTS, ENGINEERABLE
POTENTIALS	FICTICIOUS	REAL, PRIMARY. STATISTICAL SUBSTRUCTURES	REAL, PRIMARY. DETERMINISTIC SUBSTRUCTURES
CAUSATIVE AGENT	FORCE FIELDS	POTENTIALS	POTENTIALS AND INFOLDED FIELDS OF SUBSTRUCTURES

Slide 098: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart)

On this slide and the three that follow, we show a comparison of some of the major characteristics of the three kinds of electromagnetics.

We compare the classical, the quantum mechanical, and the scalar EM (electrogravitational) views of electromagnetics

Notice the differences between the three in regards to vacuum spacetime, virtual substructure, force, whether or not force exists in vacuum, the effect of zero force fields, potentials, and what is to be regarded as causative agents.

COMPARISON OF EM CONCEPTS

CHARACTERISTIC	THEORY		
	CLASSICAL EM	QM VIEW	SCALAR EM (ARTIFICIAL ø)
CHARGE CONSERVATION	YES	YES	NOT NECESSARILY
ACTION AT A DISTANCE	NO	NO, EXCEPT BOHM-AHARONOV EFFECTS	YES, SCALAR INTERFEROMETRY
SCALAR (ZERO-VECTOR) RESONANCE	NO	NO	YES
INERTIA IS ELECTRICAL	NO	NO	YES
GRAVITY IS ELECTRICAL	NO	NO	YES
MASS IS ELECTRICAL	NO	NO	YES

Slide 099: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart)

Now note the differing views of charge conservation, action at a distance, scalar resonance, and whether inertia, gravity, and mass are electrical.

COMPARISON OF EM CONCEPTS

CHARACTERISTIC	THEORY		
	CLASSICAL EM	QM VIEW	SCALAR EM (ARTIFICIAL ø)
CHARGE	WITH MASS	WITH MASS	MASSLESS
RELATIVISTIC EFFECTS DUE TO	VELOCITY	VELOCITY, INTERFERING POTENTIALS	INTERFERING POTENTIALS
HIDDEN VARIABLE	NO	STATISTICAL, NEGLIGIBLE	DETERMINISTIC, MAJOR ROLE
VECTOR THEORY APPLIED TO EM	OK	OK	REQUIRES REVISION
VACUUM EM WAVE	TRANSVERSE	TRANSVERSE	LONGITUDINAL W/ SWIRLS
ENERGY/MASS CONSERVATION	YES	YES	NOT NECESSARILY, AN ENERGY CONSERVED

Slide 100: Comparison of EM Concepts (Chart)

Continuing, note the differences in the views of charge, what relativistic effects are due to, whether or not one has hidden variables and whether they are enginerrable, how vector theory is applied to electromagnetics, the nature of the EM wave in vacuum, and conservation of energy/mass.

SUMMARY (1)

- AHARONOV-BOHM EFFECT
  - ¤ VERIFIED
  - ¤ MESOSCOPIC SCALE (CENTIMETERS)
  - ¤ NEED MACROSCOPIC COHERENCE
  - ¤ POTENTIAL WEAPON IMPLICATIONS
  - ¤ PROBABLE SOVIET WEAPONIZATION
- 6 TO 8 ADDITIONAL ORDERS OF MAGNITUDE NEEDED

Slide 101: Summary (1)

Now we examine the three views for whether or not electro-gravitational waves exist and what they interact with, the number of required spacetime dimensions the type of geometry, the nature of a zero-summed EM vector, local and distant relativity aspects, and whether or not the probability states propagated by the Schroedinger equation can be deterministically engineered.

As can be seen from the last four slides, the three views are quite different, and the scalar EM view is drastically different.

SUMMARY (1)

- AHARONOV-BOHM EFFECT
  - ¤ VERIFIED
  - ¤ MESOSCOPIC SCALE (CENTIMETERS)
  - ¤ NEED MACROSCOPIC COHERENCE
  - ¤ POTENTIAL WEAPON IMPLICATIONS
  - ¤ PROBABLE SOVIET WEAPONIZATION
- 6 TO 8 ADDITIONAL ORDERS OF MAGNITUDE NEEDED

Slide 102: Summary (1)

In summary, we can now state unequivocally that the Aharonov-Bohm effect has been conclusively proven, at least for the mesoscopic scale over a few thousand Angstroms, and possibly over a few centimeters.

But in these experimental proofs; the "natural" type of potential has been used, it is basically incoherent in its substructure, dooming the effect to stay small.

By utilizing macroscopic EM force fields and waves to zero-sum and comprise artificial potentials, the coherence can be maintained over a macroscopic distance - even for hundreds of thousands of kilometers.

The weapons implications - only some of which we have set forth in this treatise - are mindboggling.

SUMMARY (2)

- ZERO-VECTOR (SCALAR) EM SYSTEMS
  - ¤ SCALAR EM WAVES
  - ¤ KEY TO ELCTROGRAVITATION
- DETECTORS
  - ¤ INITIAL DETECTORS DEVELOPED
  - ¤ NEED IMPROVED DETECTORS
- INITIAL THEORY BEGUN
- PRELIMINARY EXPERIMENTS SUPPORT

Slide 103: Summary (2)

Zero-vector (scalar) EM systems are the key to scalar EM waves, which are actually electrogravitational waves.
Scalar wave detectors nave been developed and are being improved. Further improvement is needed. This development is limited only by funds.

The initial theory has been begun. More work is needed. Again, this development is limited only by funds.

Preliminary experiments support the scalar EM concepts.

Equipment can be designed and made to work electro-gravitationally.

And it has been.

SUMMARY (3)

- INTERFERENCE PHENOMENA ARE KEY
  - ¤ ACTION AT A DISTANCE
  - ¤ EXOTHERMIC MODE
  - ¤ ENDOTHERMIC MODE
  - ¤ 3-D FOURIER EXPANSIONS (TRUNCATED)
- EFFECTS IN/ON NUCLEUS
- NOT ENERGY TRANSMISSION THROUGH SPACE
- SHIELDING INEFFECTIVE

Slide 104: Summary (3)

Interference phenomena are key.

One can get action at a distance - even over hundreds of thousands of kilometers.

One can engineer gravitational and inertial effects.

One can engineer the nucleus, including transmute it, easily and cheaply. One could clean up all the nuclear wastes.

Electromagnetic energy can be produced at a distant target, or extracted from a distant **target.**

This is is not energy transmission through space in the form of EM force fields. Instead, it is transmission through spacetime in the form of electrogravitational potentials.

Conventional EM shielding is ineffective against scalar EM.

SUMMARY (4)

- MOST SYSTEMS ARE VULNERABLE
  - ¤ ELECTRONICS (INCLUDING OF FUZING/WARHEAD)
  - ¤ PERSONNEL
  - ¤ EXPLOSIVES/PROPELLANTS/FUELS
  - ¤ ORDNANCE
  - ¤ SHIPS/SUBMARINES/TORPEDOES
  - ¤ AIRCRAFT/HELICOPTERS/MISSILES/DRONES
  - ¤ TANKS/APCs/WEAPONS CARRIERS/SP ARTY
  - ¤ COMMUNICATIONS/SATELLITES/RADARS/C^3I
  - ¤ DEW SYSTEMS
  - ¤ SURVEILLANCE/SENSOR SYSTEMS
  - ¤ MINES/ARTY ROUNDS/NUCLEAR WARHEADS

Slide 105: Summary (4)

Almost every weapon system we presently have - or are developing - is totally vulnerable to scalar EM weaponry.

This includes personnel, electronics (including fuzing and warhead), explosives, propellants, fuels, ordnance, ships, submarines, torpedoes, aircraft, helicopters, missiles, drones, rockets, tanks, armored vehicles, weapons carriers, self-propelled and towed artillery, communications, satellites, radars, command and control, directed energy weapon systems, surveillance and sensor systems, mines, artillery rounds and ammunition, nuclear warheads, etc.

We are in dire straits. We need a "Manhattan Project" of the highest priority. Now!

The Soviets have already had the equivalent of seven or eight Manhattan Projects in this area.

SOVIET DEFENSE AGAINST MISSILES

"In our country the problem of eliminating rockets in flight has been successfully solved by Soviet science and technology...

It is interesting to note that the problem of anti-missile defense is far from being solved in the West."

SOKOLOVSKIY
MILITARY STRATEGY
THIRD EDITION, 1968

Slide 106: Soviet Defense Against Missiles

Here is a significant statement by Sokolovskiy, contained in Military Strategy, 3rd edition, 1968.

This is not propaganda. The Soviets really do have an effective missile defense. We do not. At the present rate we're going, we may not have one in the year 2000 - if we live that long.

SURPRISE BY USING SECRET WEAPONS

"Each side secretly develops new means of warfare in order to employ them unexpectedly. History knows many examples how the employment of a new weapon initially gave considerable success because the enemy, caught unawares and not knowing the combat capabilities of this weapon, was for some time incapable of effective counteraction."

V. YO SAVKIN
THE BASIC PRINCIPLES OF OPERATIONAL
ART AND TACTICS
MOSCOW, 1972

Slide 107: Surprise by Using Secret Weapons

The Soviets took to heart the lesson of our secret development of the atomic bomb. Thrust suddenly upon a fanatical nation, the atomic bomb brought the empire of Japan to its knees.

Other lesser examples - such as the impact of the German V-l and V-2 missiles and jet fighter - also were not lost on the Soviets.

SOMETHING RUSSIA DOESN'T WANT THE U.S. TO KNOW

"Of particular importance is basic research aimed at discovering still unknown attributes of matter, phenomena, and the laws of nature, and developing new methods for their study and use to reinforce the state's defense capability."

COMMENTS:

¤ PORTION OF A BOOK BY MARSHALL GRECHKO

¤ DELETED FROM ENGLISH TRANSLATION, BY SPECIFIC REQUEST OF THE U.S.S.R.

Slide 108: Something Russia Doesn't Want the U.S. to Know

But Marshall Grechko said it even plainer.

He made it clear that the Soviet Union has actively searched for great technical breakthrough areas, particularly in discovering new laws of nature, unknown attributes of matter, and new phenomena, and developing their use for defense.

He made it so clear that the Soviet Union formally requested the U.S. State Department to have deleted from its. English translation that portion of his book.

That is a positive signature that the statement is exceedingly sensitive to the Soviets. In other words, it's a real tipoff.

So of course the State Department leaned on the publisher and got that section eliminated.

ADDITIONAL NOTES AND REFERENCES

1. Nikola Tesla, "The Problem of Increasing Human Energy," Century magazine, June 1900, p. 208-209. In this article Tesla spoke of using standing waves to produce distant effects and locate objects such as ships. At this point he was thinking of a scalar radar locator, something more advanced than even our radar today. It was also capable of producing electrical effects at any part of the globe. To quote: "Stationary waves... mean something more than telegraphy without wires to any distance... For instance, by their use we may produce at will, from a sending station, an electrical effect in any particular region of the globe; we may determine the relative position or course of a moving object, such as a vessel at sea, the distance traversed by the same, or its speed..."

2. Nikola Tesla, "The True Wireless," Electrical Experimenter, May 1919, p. 87.

3. T. E. Bearden, Comments on the New Tesla Electromagnetics: Part I: Discrepancies in Present EM Theory, Tesla Book Co., 1580 Magnolia, Millbrae, CA 94030, 1982.

4. T. E. Bearden, Toward a New Electromagnetics: Part III: Clarifying the Vector Concept, Tesla Book Co., 1580 Magnolia, Millbrae, CA 94030, 1983.

5. T. E. Bearden, Toward a New Electromagnetics: Part 4: Vectors and Mechanisms Clarified, Tesla Book Co., Millbrae, California, 1983, p. 6, 39.

6. T. E. Bearden, Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons, Tesla Book company, 1981

7. T. E. Bearden, Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons, 1 hr. 40 min. videotape, Weather Engineering, POB 1472, Huntsville, AL 35807, 1981.

8. T. E. Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, Weather Engineering, POB 1472, Huntsville, AL 35807, 1985.

9. T. E. Bearden, Star Wars Now! The Bohm-Aharonov Effect, Scalar Interferometry, and Soviet Weaponization, Tesla Book Co., 1984

10. Stefan T. Possony, "The Tesla Connection," Defense & Foreign Affairs, Aug. 1984, p. 12-14, 27.

11. Stefan T. Possony, "Psy-War: Soviet device experiment," Defense & Foreign Affairs Daily, 12(104), June 7, 1983, p. 1-2. Reports on Dr. Ross Adey's investigation of the Soviet LIDA device which is used to bombard human brains with radio waves in the 40 MHz region. Also reports on work by A. S. Davydov of the Ukrainian Academy of Sciences, who discovered how the blood-brain barrier can be penetrated by low-frequency radio waves so that brain cells are affected.

12. Fritz Albert Popp, "Photon storage in biological systems," in Electromagnetic Bioinformation: Proceedings of the Symposium, Marburg, Sep. 5, 1977. Edited by Fritz Albert Popp et al, Munchen, Wien, and Baltimore, 1979, p. 123-149. Dr. Popp has discovered, both theoretically and experimentally, that mitogenetic radiation from cells can be seen as a sort of "waste" from a virtual electromagnetic field with a high coherence. This field has a tendency to become stationary over the whole organism. In addition, it includes the storage of "virtual" coherent photons. (In other words, there is a master EM field with high coherence, stationary over the whole body. This is the cells' master control system. Storage of virtual photons -- i.e., scalar signals -- occurs in this field.).

13. To gain an appreciation of the Aharonov-Bohm effect, see Y. Aharonov and D. Bohm, "Significance of Electromagnetic Potentials in the Quantum Theory," Physical Review, Second Series, 115(3), Aug. 1, 1959, p. 485-491. For an exhaustive discussion of the Aharonov-Bohm effect and a large number of references, see S. Olariu and I. Iovitzu Popescu, "The quantum effects of electromagnetic fluxes," Reviews of Modern Physics, 57(2), April 1985. See also Bertram Schwarzschild, "Currents in normal-metal rings exhibit Aharonov-Bohm effect," Physics Today, 39 (1), Jan. 1986, p. 17-20.

14. For details of the mysterious explosions of six major Soviet missile ammunition storage sites in seven months, see photograph, Jane's Defence Weekly, 2(3), July 28, 1984, p. 92; see also Mark Daly, "Goa and Goblet SAMs in Severomorsk explosion," Jane's Defence Weekly, 2(6), Aug. 18, 1984, p. 224; Derek Wood, "Soviets' northern fleet disabled... 'not viable' for six months," Jane's Defence Weekly, 2(1), July 14, 1984, p.3; Derek Wood, "Six explosions in the past seven months," Jane's Defence Weekly, 2(1), July 14, 1984, p. 3; John Moore, "The aftermath of Severomorsk," Jane's Defence Weekly, 2(6), Aug. 18, 1984, p. 224.

15. For details of the mysterious, instant deaths in Afghanistan, see Yossef Bodansky, "Soviets testing chemical agents in Afghanistan," Jane's Defence Weekly, 1(13), Apr. 7, 1984, p. 508.

16. For details of the Enhanced-V cloud signature of severe weather, see Gary Ellrod, "Dramatic examples of thunderstorm top warming related to downbursts," National Weather Digest, 10(2), May 1985, p. 7-13; T. J. Fujita, "Manual or Downburst Identification for Project Nimrod," SMRP Research Paper No.156, University of Chicago, 1978; D. W.McCann, ., The Enhanced-V: A Satellite Observable Severe Storm Signature," Monthly Weather Review, 111, 1978, p. 887-894.

17. For a good discussion of the modern view of the vacuum, see
I.J.R. Aitchison, "Nothing's plenty: The vacuum in modern quantum field theory," Contemporary Physics, 26(4), 1985, p. 333-391.

18. For a discussion of the ring interferometer experiments related to quantum and gravitational effects, see G.E. Stedman, "Ring interferometric tests of classical and quantum gravity," Contemporary Physics, 26(4), 1985, p. 311-332.

19. For information on self-induced transparency with pulsated light, see E. L. Hahn, Scientific American, June 1967. This is a scalar EM effect. The phenomenon is observed only in insulators, not in conducting materials. A dielectric tends to stop the flow of electrons, thus stopping the bleed-off of the Kaluza-Klein 5-potential as EM force fields. Thus through the insulator or dielectric, an electrogravitational pulse is transmitted. When this pulse emerges from the other side of the

dielectric, then electrons are free to move again and form ordinary EM fields, resulting in resumed EM bleed-off of the KK (Kaluza-Klein) 5-potential. Thus ordinary photons strike the dielectric, changing into electrogravitational waves which transit the opaque dielectric, and these EG waves transform back to EM waves on the far side of the dielectric. Advanced scalar EM application of this effect can make an object optically invisible.

20. For a lucid and profound presentation of the entire subject of elementary particle physics and quantum field theory, see T. D. Lee, Particle physics and introduction to field theory, Harwood Academic Publishers, New York, 1967. Subjects covered include those at the forefront of current research. Chapter 16, "Vacuum as the source of asymmetry," is particularly important. Here Lee concisely covers the idea of degenerate vacuum states, vacuum structuring, and vacuum effects causing symmetry breaking (violation of conservation laws). An excellent coverage of asymmetries and observables is given on p.181-188. For example, whenever symmetry is spontaneously broken, a nonobservable (virtual entity) has become observable. Thus there exist mechanisms for the direct translation between virtual and observable states.

Most engineers are unaware that physics has already rigorously proven (both theoretically and experimentally} that conservation of energy can be physically violated, even by excitation of the vacuum.

However, in the present assumption of a randomized virtual microstructure of a vacuum potential, these broken symmetry effects are individually confined to very small microlevels. For example, on p. 383, Lee points out that the microscopic structure of the scalar vacuum field (i.e., of vacuum charge or "potential") is not utilized.

This of course is reasonable if all vacuum potentials used in particle physics are treated as having a randomized microstructure of virtual particle flux vectors. Since any appreciable directional coherence in such a randomized microstructure could persist only over extremely tiny distances, then the microstructure of vacuum degenerate states has negligible local effects in ordinary macroscopic systems.

In other words, these conservation violation effects would be very difficult to coherently capture and utilize to provide "free energy, emerging from the vacuum."

The randomized momentary coherences, however, are responsible for the violent microfluctuations of the EM fields, well-known in classical electrodynamics. An approach such as taken by Yater or Moray would be necessary to achieve a vacuum energy tap under such conditions. To achieve usable macroeffects, a very large collection of charge or magnetic material, etc. would be required before the probability of usable coherences would become sufficiently large. Therefore this area is neglected in practical physics and engineering.

However, this is precisely where scalar EM is lost in conventional theory and engineering practice. In scalar EM, the coupling together of macroscopic EM force field vectors into a summed zero system means that the vacuum potential's microstructure is now macroscopically ordered by that system. Further, it is sustained during translation through space. In such case, one has produced directional gravitational potential gradients that have macroscopic range and form. Further, by coherently varying the amplitude of the individual components of the zero vector system, a gravitational wave -- a controlled oscillation of the degenerate states or vacuum -- is produced. By processing the EM components, this gravitational wave can be narrowed, formed into a beam, and projected. Two such beams can be interfered, even at a great distance, producing G-interference and causing EM effects to emerge in the distant interference zone. Thus scalar EM profoundly affects quantum mechanics, quantum field theory, particle physics, general relativity, and electromagnetics.

21. For some strong and pertinent critique of present scientific bias, see Ruggero Maria Santilli, Ethical probe on Einstein's followers in the U.S.A.: An insider's view, Alpha Publishing, POB 82, Newtonvllle, MA 02160. Santilli is a highly published physicist and the editor of a refereed scientific journal, the Hadronic Journal. After lengthy attempts to correct injustices within the Scientific system, to no avail, he finally has gone public with his specific charges. Santilli references senior Russian physicist G. Yu. Bogoslovsky, whose 1984 paper "Generalization of Einstein's relativity theory for the anisotropic spacetime," whose research would have been impossible in the U.S. Quoting Santilli: "He would have been discredited, humiliated, and chased out of these institutions [Harvard, M.I.T., and Yale] beyond any reasonable doubt by ample documentation on similar cases." Again to quote Santilli: "Papers bearing the title of 'Generalization of Einstein's relativity' are routinely permitted with human dignity at Moscow University in the U.S.S.R., but they are absolutely inconceivable today at the departments of physics of Harvard University, of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, of Yale University and of other similar institutions in the U.S.A., as numerous senior scientists would readily testify."

You see, dear reader, there has been a deep scientific conspiracy in the U.S. to prevent any change in the severe restrictions placed on general relativity by Einstein. This has reduced GR to a sort of "special relativity, with only distant perturbations." Specifically, it has excluded scalar electromagnetics and branded as heresy the inconceivable idea that general relativity could be local, and engineerable.

Now you know why the Soviets have been able to develop these monstrous weapons for over three decades while our scientists slept at the wheel. Scientific arrogance and pride has been our greatest enemy.

See also Bryan G. Wallace, "The great speed of light in space coverup," Scientific Ethics, 1(1), Feb. 1985, p. 2-3; "Radar testing of the relative velocity of light in space," Spectrosc. Lett. 2, 1969, p. 361; Wallace, "Letter to the editor," Physics Today, 36(1), 1983, p. 11; "Letter to the editor," Physics Today, 37(6), 1984, p. 15. See M.E. Ash et al, Astron. J., 72, 1967, p. 72. Direct experiments on Einstein's second postulate, in the 1961 interplanetary radar contact with Venus, challenge whether relativity is correct. Variations of over 30,000% of the best possible general relativity fit the MIT Lincoln Lab could generate were measured. The variations were not random but contained diurnal, lunar, and synodic periodic components. See also Bryan G. Wallace, Spectrosc. Lett. 4, 1971, p. 79 for an analysis of published 1961 data on the interplanetary radar contact with Venus that concludes that the data showed a component that was relativistic in the Galilean c+v sense. See also Wallace, "The Unified Quantum electrodynamic ether," Foundations of Physics, 3, 1973, p. 381. which details Measurements strongly challenging the Einstein assumption of the constant velocity of light, and deals with the nature of the ether. See also Thomas E. Phipps, Jr., "Critique of accepted theories of special relativity and electromagnetism," Scientific Ethics, 1(2), Apr. 1985, p. 17-23.

22. For a sample of Soviet scientific freedom from narrow-minded bias in general relativity, see V. I. Denisov and A. A. Logunov, "The inertial mass defined in the general theory of relativity has no physical meaning," Teor. i Matemat. Fizika, 51(2), May 1982, p. 163-170 (In Russian). See also A. A. Vlassov and V. I. Denisov, "Einstein's formula for gravitational radiation is not a consequence of the general theory of relativity," Teor. i. Matemat. Fizika, 53(3), Dec. 1982, p. 406-418. Here we find that the intensity of gravitational radiation and the total intensity determined in the general theory of relativity in accordance with Einstein's formulas depend on the choice of the coordinate system, so that they can be made to vanish or even become negative. [Note by T.E.B.: If local curvature is

engineerable, as in scalar EM, the local choice of coordinate systems can itself be directly engineered. This clearly implies that scalar EM can thus produce either "positive" intensity radiation or "negative" intensity radiation; thus it can "produce energy at a distance" or "extract energy from a distance.]
Continuing with Denisov: This result is a particular consequence of the general assertion to the effect that in general relativity there are no energy-momentum conservation laws for a system consisting of matter and the gravitational field. [Note by T.E.B.: Thus we can have an energy source or energy sink appear in the distant interference region, where matter has been lifted from the Dirac sea and exposed to the highly nonlinear interfering EG fields.]. See also V. I. Denisov and A. A. Logunov, "New theory of spacetime and gravitation, "Teor. and Matemat. Fizika, 50(1), July 1982, p. 3-76. Points out that ". . . the gravitational field in general relativity is completely different from other physical fields and is not a field in the spirit of Faraday and Maxwell." (p. 3, English version).

23. In the Proceedings of the Tesla Centennial Symposium, an IEEE Centennial Activity, Colorado College, Colorado Springs, Colorado, Aug. 9-11, 1984, see Richard A. Blade, "Modification of Maxwell's equations in free space to account for nonzero photon mass and scalar electromagnetic waves," p. 91-92; Jack Y. Dea, "Scalar fields: their prediction from classical electromagnetism and interpretation from quantum mechanics," p. 94-98; Robert W. Bass, "Self-sustained non-Hertzian longitudinal wave oscillations as rigorous solutions of Maxwell's equations of electromagnetic radiation," p. 89-90; T. E. Bearden, "Tesla's electromagnetics and its Soviet weaponization," p. 119-138.

24. To see the limiting assumptions imposed on general relativity that results in the severely restricted "ordinary general relativity" taught in almost all Western universities. see Charles W. Misner, Kip S. Thorne and John Archibald Wheeler, Gravitation, W. H. Freeman and Co., San Francisco, CA, 1973, p. 19-21, 71-72, 367-369. Among other things, these arbitrary restrictions save the conservation laws. When they are removed. the conservation laws can be violated.

25. Several anomalous events -- skyquakes, booms, or earthquakes -- have been documented in Europe. See H. W. Haak. "The Seismic event of November 9, 1983: Earthquake or sonic boom." Seismic Activity in Western Europe, (With particular consideration of the Liege Earthquake of November 8, 1983), Ed. by Paul Melchior, D. Reidel Publishing Co., 1985, p. 215-222. For such events in the United States, see S. Claflin-Chalton and G. J. MacDonald, "Sound and light phenomena," The Mitre Corporation, McLean, Virginia 22102, Nov. 1978.

26. Fundamental experiments were performed by Eotvos et al. in the early 1920s. See R.V. Eotvos, D. Pekar and E. Fekete, Ann. Phys. (Leipzig) 68, 1922, p. 11. Actually a fifth force of nature due to hypercharge may have been found by these experiments. See Ephraim Fischbach et al. "Reanalysis of the Eotvos experiment," Physical Review Letters, 56(1), Jan. 6, 1986, p. 3-6. See also F. D. Stacey and G. J. Tuck, Nature 292, 230 (1981); S. C. Holding and G. J. Tuck, Nature 307, 714 (1984); G. W. Gibbons and B. F. Whiting, Nature 291, 636 (1981); F. D. Stacey, in Science Underground, edited by M. M. Nieto et al., AIP Conference proceedings No. 96, (American Institute of Physics, New York, 1983, p. 285. See also S. H. Aronson et al, Physical Review Letters 48, 1982, p.1306; Physical Review D 28, 1983, p. 476, 495. Also, comparison of satellite and terrestrial determinations of the gravitational field constant reveals significant disagreement: see R. H. Rapp, Geophys. Res. Lett. 7, 1974, p. 35; Bull. Geod. 51, 1977, p. 301.

27. John J. A. O'Neill. "Tesla cosmic ray motor may transmit power 'round the earth: Famed scientist, on eve of 76th birthday, says he has succeeded in harnessing 'penetrating rays' to operate small motive device." Brooklyn Eagle, July 10,1932. Tesla reported he had harnessed "cosmic rays" and caused them to operate a small motive device. Tesla's use of "cosmic rays," however, encompassed scalar EM radiation. Tesla later seems to have progressed to a simpler motive unit. In the Kansas City Journal-Post, Sep. 10, 1933, he stated: My power generator will be of the simplest kind -- just a big mass of steel, copper and aluminum, comprising a stationary and rotating part, peculiarly assembled." A similar type of "gravitational turbine" seems to have been invented by John Bedini.

28. To see just how arbitrary and postulational are present "definitions" of mass and force, see Robert Bruce Lindsay and Henry Margenau, Foundations of Physics, Dover Publications, New York, 1963, p. 283-287. Note on p. 283 that a "field of force" at any point is actually defined only for the case when a unit mass is present at that point. Also see Richard P. Feynman, Robert B. Leighton, and Matthew Sands, The Feynman Lectures on Physics, Addison-Wesley, New York, Vol. 1, 1963, p. 2-4 for a definition of the electric field in the context of its potentiality for producing a force. This problem did not exist for the original foundation of electromagnetic force fields in vacuum, since the vacuum was assumed to be a material ether. With the modern view a nonmaterial ether has emerged, yet the classical electromagnetic theory has not been made sufficiently rigorous in distinguishing "observable" and "virtual" electromagnetic force fields.

29. E. P. Battey-Pratt and T. J. Racey, "Geometric Model for Fundamental Particles," International Journal of Physics, Vol. 19, No. 6, 1980, p. 437-475.

30. Some years ago, Dr. William Tiller produced very important "free A-field" theoretical work which showed waves which did not fall off as $1/r^2$. Interesting theoretical work in scalar wave theory has also been advanced by Dea. See Jack Dea, "Fundamental Fields and Phase Information," presented at the 1985 U.S. Psychotronics Association Conference, Bergamo Center, Dayton, Ohio, July 1985. Dea has formulated an important theory for vacuum EM scalar waves, derived from Maxwell's equations with zero E and B fields. He predicts waves whose intensity falls off with distance as $1/r$ instead of $1/r^2$, and detection of these waves by various means. He shows simple generators for the waves. Detection is quantum mechanically by electron interference, not by single electrons. Thus such scalar waves will pass through normal Faraday shields. In his theory Dea does not address the question of spin vortexes in vacuum scalar waves. It is the present author's view that all vacuum waves are scalar waves, and the primary distinction between the "transverse" EM wave and the longitudinal scalar wave is simply the presence or absence of spin-vortexes. Indeed, one may argue that the present "vector wave" EM theory can be replaced by a scalar wave theory. In 1903 Whittaker proved that any vector field can be replaced by two scalar fields. See E. T. Whittaker, Proc. Lond. Math. Soc.1, 367, 1903. By implication, since a vector wave is simply a moving vector field, it can be replaced by two moving scalar fields.

31. David Jones, "Israel's Secret Weapon," Weekend Magazine, Dec.17, 1977.

32. John Hutchinson, private communication. Masses of wood, metal, etc. -- some weighing over 60 lbs. -- have been levitated by Hutchinson.

33. For a description and details of the April 9, 1984 incident off Japan, see Daniel A. Walker, Charles S. McCreery, and Fermin J. Oliveira, "Kaitoku Seamount and the Mystery Cloud of 9 April

1984," Science, 227(4684), Feb. 8, 1985, p. 607-611. See also transcription from Japan Airlines flight 036 to Anchorage International Flight Service, 9 April 1984, at 1406 Greenwich mean time, Federal Aviation Administration (FAA) — Alaska Region; Jim Derry, Special Agent, FAA-Alaska Region, interviews with Captain C.H. McDade, Japan Airlines Flight 036, with Captain Cornelis Vander Berg, KLM Royal Dutch Airlines Flight 868; with First Officer Reint Sol, KLM Royal Dutch Airlines Flight 868, and with Captain Mike Howe, Flying Tiger Lines Flight 078, Anchorage Daily News, 10 April 1984, p. A-l; Anchorage Daily News, 12 April 1984, p. A-l; Honolulu Advertiser, 10 April 1984, p. B-l; Newsweek, 30 April 1984, p. 25, Gregg Ripee, "Mushroom cloud sighted off Japan," Los Angeles Daily News, 11 April 1984, p. 1,8; Ross Gelbspan, "Mystery cloud baffles scientists," Boston Sunday Globe, 13 Jan. 1985, p. 1, 14; T.E. Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, 1985. See also McKenna, Daniel L. & Daniel Walker,"Mystery Cloud: Additional Observations", Science, 234(4775), Oct. 24, 1986, p. 412-413.

34. For a description of the April 11, 1963 anomalous underwater explosion north of Puerto Rico, see Robert J. Durant, "An Underwater Explosion — or What?", Pursuit, 5(2), April 1972, p. 30-31.

35. For details of the loss of the U.S.S. Thresher and the interference experienced by the U.S.S. Skylark, see John Bentley, The Thresher Disaster, Doubleday, Garden City, N. Y., 1975, particularly p. 164. Some of the communications systems of the Skylark experienced temporary failure, but were not disabled, later resuming operation.

36. The Soviet Union has a well-established history of interfering with and destroying aircraft; for example, for a listing see "Soviet and Warsaw Pact air incidents," Jane's Defence Weekly, 3(2), Jan. 12, 1985, p. 58.

37. For details of the anomalous "nuclear flashes" detected by U.S. Vela satellites, see "Scientists Fail to Solve Vela mystery," Science, 207, 1 Feb. 1980, p. 504-506. "Satellite Evidence Shows 'possibility' of Nuclear Test, DOD Says," Aerospace Daily, Oct. 29, 1979, p. 286. "A Flash of Light," Newsweek, Nov. 5, 1979, p. 64-65. "Was It a Nuclear Device?", Newsweek, July 21, 1980, p. 19. "Diverging Views," Washington Roundup, Aviation Week & Space Technology, July 21, 1980, p. 15. Philip J. Klass, "Clandestine Nuclear Test Doubted," Aviation Week & Space Technology, Aug. 11, 1980, p. 67, 69, 71-72. "Debate continues on the Bomb That Wasn't," Science, 209, 1 Aug. 1980, p. 572-573. "Navy Lab Concludes the Vela Saw a Bomb," Science, 209, 29 Aug. 1980, p. 996-997. See also Jack Anderson and Dale Van Atta, United Press Syndicate, "CIA knew South African-Israeli nuclear test was coming," Birmingham Post-Herald, Apr. 26, 1985, p. A5. The latter article repeats the CIA/DIA argument that the Vela incidents represent concurrent South African-Israeli testing of atomic weapons. Taiwan is considered a possible third partner. According to Anderson and Van Atta, a South African navy contingent was "in the area" at the time of the 1979 Vela detection, and Israel and South Africa were cooperating on an atomic bomb project as early as 1966. Apparently U.S. announcement of an impending South African atomic test in the Kalahari Desert in 1977 led to such an outcry that the test was suspended. Anderson and Van Atta cite succeeding visits to South Africa by Israeli scientists, technicians, and defense officials. However, since the actual Vela detections showed some deviations from what would be expected from nuclear tests, one can speculate that Anderson and Van Atta have presented evidence for the development of scalar electromagnetic weapons by two additional countries. One may further speculate that this could reveal what has been checking the Soviets from simply moving against the West with scalar electromagnetic weapons.

Indeed, the mysterious destruction of six major Soviet missile ammunition storage areas within the space of seven months could have been a preemptive measure and warning to the Soviets if they had actually been considering moving against the West. Also, other incidents reported in the South Atlantic may possibly be associated with the program producing the "Vela flashes." For example, see N.W.C. Rutherford, "Unidentified Phenomena," Marine Observer, 51, 1981, p. 186 for a description of a great bluish-white flash and small bolt of lightning, indicating some sort of anomalous electrical discharge, on Dec. 23, 1980 at 2245 hours (10:45 p.m.). Many other anomalous flashes for which no known causative mechanism exists have been detected by satellites. For example, the OSO-2 and OSO-5 satellites have detected about one mysterious short (less than 0.1 sec) flash about every ten orbits, at times when the fields of view of the telescopes were well above the earth. As many as three of the satellite's photometers have detected a flash simultaneously. These flashes must be removed from any discussion of satellite-observed lightning; see J. G. Sparrow and E. P. Ney, "Lightning Observations by Satellite," Nature, 232, 1971, p. 540.

38. For a description of sightings of enormous glowing globes of light deep within the Soviet Union in the direction of Saryshagan, see Gwynne Roberts, "Witness to a Super Weapon?", The Sunday Times, London, England, Aug. 17, 1980. Several incidents were observed by Downie and others.

39. For an artist's conception of a directed energy weapon installation at Saryshagan, see Aviation Week & Space Technology, July 28, 1980, p. 48. For a DOD sketch, see Soviet Military Power, 1985. Obviously classically-trained U.S. military analysts, with no knowledge of scalar interferometry, have not considered the installation as a candidate hyperspatial howitzer.

40. For a description of multiple pilot sighting (from Iran) of an enormous glowing globe of light deep within the Soviet Union, see Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) Information Report No. CO-B-321/15354-66, "Sighting of Unusual Phenomenon on Horizon Near Iranian/USSR Border," Sep. 8, 1966, released on 15 Dec. 1978 under the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA). The sighting occurred at 2142 hours (9:42 p.m.).

41. For details of sighting of the intensely glowing ball of light near British European Airways flight 831 between Moscow and London, see CIA Foreign Intelligence Information Report CO-B-324/33601-76, "Aerial observation of intense Source of Light," Nov. 18, 1976, released on 15 Dec. 1978 under the FOIA. The incident occurred between 1800 and 1900 hours (6:00-7:00 p.m.). The light was observed for 10-15 minutes, until the aircraft had flown past and left the light behind.

42. For other examples of pertinent 1ight phenomena: F. S. Angus and G. Carling, "Optical Phenomenon: Caribbean Sea; Western North Atlantic," Marine Observer, 40, Jan. 1970, p. 17-18; R. A. Holmes, "Unidentified Phenomenon, off Barbados, West Indies," Marine Observer, 40(229), July 1970, p. 107-108; H. K. Dyer, "Unidentified Phenomenon: Western North Atlantic," Marine Observer, 43, July 1973, p.114. For a 1961 double concentric hemispheric shape observed in the Indian Ocean, see Marine Observer, 32, 1962, p. 64. For a particularly significant combination of forms, see Marine Observer, "Unidentified Phenomenon," 48, 1978, p. 21-22. Also, on the night of July 26, 1984 the pilot and crew of a Boeing 747 (American carrier) flying from Tokyo to Fairbanks, near the Kuriel Islands, at 47 5'44" N: 161 00'05" E, noticed a slowly expanding hemisphere of white light off to their left above the horizon. The shell of light continued to expand over a 10-minute

period until ahead of them and to the right. The crew braced for a shock wave which never arrived. Their weather radar saw nothing out of the ordinary. The shell of light had sharp edges and was semi-transparent so that stars became visible through it. (Richard F. Haines, private communication, Sept. 27, 1984). See also Richard Hall, "Aerial anomalies at sea," The Info Journal, 4(3), May 1975, p. 6-9 for an unusual light phenomenon seen in the Caribbean by the R.M.S. Carmania (British). The phenomenon occurred four times at precise hourly intervals, strongly suggesting an artificial origin. See also F. Shepherd, "Cloud: Strait of Gibraltar," Marine Observer, 51(273), July 1981, p. 107-108 for an incident of associated cloud, arch, and anomalous pressure effects. For another significant airline sighting by Japan Airlines flights 403 and 421 of a giant, expanding globe of light on June 18, 1982, in the North Pacific, 100 km. east of Kushiro, see the Asahi Evening News, Tokyo, Japan, June 22, 1982. For additional evidence that nomadic tribesmen passing through Kazakhstan repeatedly observe such gigantic light phenomena in close association with Saryshagan missile test range, and that Soviet deception planners foster the notion of "UFO activity" as a Red Herring, see Robert Jackson, "KGB takes to the flying saucers!", Northern Echo, Darlington, England, March 15, 1984.

43. For details of Khrushchev's announcement of a Soviet superweapon, see Max Frankel, "Khrushchev Says Soviet Will Cut Forces a Third; Sees 'Fantastic Weapon'", New York Times, Jan. 15, 1960, p. 1.

44. See Christopher S. Wiren, "Brezhnev Calls for Accord against 'Terrifying Arms,'" New York Times, June 14, 1975, p. 1, 11. In a major Kremlin speech on June 13, 1975, Leonid I. Brezhnev included a statement that one major concern not covered by existing agreements was "assuming ever greater urgency with each passing day." Calling for a ban on new weapons of mass destruction, the Soviet leader stated: "The level of modern technology is such that a serious danger arises of creating weapons more terrifying than nuclear ones." He stated, "The reason and conscience of humanity dictate the necessity of erecting an insurmountable barrier to the development of such weapons." See also Malcolm W. Browne, "Senatorial Group Received by Brezhnev," New York Times, July 3, 1975, p. 2. Leonid Brezhnev repeated his proposal to a group of U.S. senators on July 2, stating that the capability to develop more terrible weapons was obvious. He emphasized, however, that he "had no particular weapon in mind." Here he may have been deliberately misleading the U.S. senators, to prevent revealing that the Soviet Union had already developed such weapons, and was horrified at their potential for total destruction. E.g., if massive and rapid scalar explosions occur, the linearity of spacetime -- and the orderly flow of time itself -- may be seriously perturbed throughout the earth and its adjacent space. From a general relativistic viewpoint, such an event might well prove catastrophic for the entire biosphere. Boris N. Ponomarev, a Soviet national party secretary, again raised the same issue to a delegation of visiting U.S. congressmen in the Kremlin on Aug. 11, 1975; see Christopher S. Wren, "Moscow Now Pressing Disarmament." New York Times, Aug. 12, 1975, p. 6. At the United Nation's thirtieth session of the General Assembly on Sept. 23, 1975, Foreign minister Andrei A. Gromyko strongly raised the same issue, warning that science can produce "ominous" new weapons of mass destruction. He urged that all countries, led first by the major powers, should sign an agreement to ban the development of these unspecified new weapons. He even offered a draft, entitled "Prohibition of the Development and Manufacture of New Types of Weapons of Mass Annihilation and of New Systems of Such Weapons." The first article provided that the types of these new weapons would be "specified through negotiations on the subject." Because of its fixation on nuclear weapons, the West may have lost its only opportunity to prevent the spread of scalar electromagnetic weapons of power unprecedented even by nuclear arms. Of course, it may also have

been a Soviet ploy to prohibit the U.S. from developing scalar electromagnetics defensive weaponry to counter the massive strategic scalar electromagnetics weapons already developed, tested, and deployed by the Soviet Union. Certainly in 1973 at a secret meeting in Prague with European communist leaders, Brezhnev had laid out a firm statement of Soviet domination of the world by 1985. See "Secret Speech: Did Brezhnev Come Clean?", National Review, 29(8), Mar. 4, 1977, p. 248, 250. Brezhnev's speech contained statements such as: "We are achieving with detente what our predecessors have been unable to achieve using the mailed fist...come 1985 we will be able to extend our will wherever we need to." Brezhnev stated the Soviet Union would control the oceans of the world, 90% of the land, and the air and space above. A front-page Boston Globe article on Feb. 11, 1975 was the first to carry the story. A copy of Brezhnev's secret speech was obtained by British intelligence in 1973, but denigrated by Secretary of State Kissinger. Apparently the first official U.S. reference to Brezhnev's startling speech did not appear until the 1976 National Intelligence Estimate. Although the big intelligence bureaucracies can do a fantastic job with "current intelligence," their record at predicting a drastic change is woeful, precisely because of the political nature of bureaucracies. See "What is Intelligence," Colonel William V. Kennedy et all, Intelligence Warfare: Penetrating the Secret World of Today's Advanced Technology Conflict, with an introduction by Dr. Ray S. Cline, Crescent Books, New York, 1983, p. 8-23. Intelligence Warfare is heartily recommended as the single book which best gives the reader a grasp of modern technical intelligence organizations, capabilities, and operations.

45. For details of Soviet weather engineering operations over the U.S., see Thomas E. Bearden, "USSR: New beam energy possible?", Defense & Foreign Affairs Daily, 13(111), June 12, 1984, p. 1-2. Cloud signature patterns reported in the article have been repeatedly sighted over multiple areas in the U.S. A series of anomalous "hole in the cloud" patterns, possibly associated with early Soviet weather engineering efforts over the U.S., was widely seen in 1967-68. See Weatherwise, 21(4), Aug. 1968, cover and p. 143; 21(5), Oct. 1968, p. 194-195, 204-205; 21(6), Dec. 1968, p. 238-245. Peculiar stationary blocking patterns have also been observed to occur and influence weather over the U.S., leading to severities such as the winter of 1976-77. See K. K. Tung and R. S. Lindzen, "A theory of stationary long waves, Part 1, A simple theory of blocking; Part 2: Resonant Rossby waves in the presence of realistic vertical shears; Part 3, Quasi-normal modes in a singular waveguide," Monthly Weather Review, 107(6), June 1979, p. 714-774. See also T. E. Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, videotape, 1985 for an expose or the physics and some major incidents of major Soviet weather engineering, including details and photographs of cloud signature patterns. See also C. B. Baker, "Soviet Weather Mayhem," Youth Action News, Nov. 1983, P.O.B. 312, Alexandria, Virginia 22313, p. 1-8; C. B. Baker, "Diabolic Soviet Warfare," Youth Action News, Nov. 1984; For a conventional Soviet look at weather modification (possibly intended to mislead the West), see E. T. Protasevich, "Microwave weather modification," Soviet Technical Physics Letters, 7(3), March 1981, p. 114-115. For a downburst mechanism, see Gary Ellrod, "Dramatic examples of thunderstorm top warming related to downbursts," National Weather Digest, 10(2) May 1985, p. 7-13. See Art and Kay Westermann, Weather War — Worldwide, Liberty Bell Books, POB 288, Sedona, Arizona 86336, 1983. See also U.S. Senate Resolution on Environmental warfare, July 11, 1973.

46. For details of the Soviet Woodpecker beams bending around the earth and intersecting over the U. S., see Christopher Chant and Ian Hogg, Nuclear War in the 1980's?, Harper & Row, New York, 1983, p. 71. See also Soviet Military Power, U.S. Department of Defense, 1985, p. 45. The

intersection forms an interference grid. Scalar EM channels added to the Woodpecker carriers then provide a corresponding sca1ar EM interference grid in the scalar area.

When adjusting the scalar interferometry components of the grid, bursts in the interference and discharges of energy as well as bursts of energy extractions occur. This leads to the production of anomalous aerial phenomena such as explosions, rumblings, airquakes, etc. In addition, direct Bohm-Aharonov forces may be engendered in ground structures, shaking buildings and windows, etc. without seismic disturbances. Such anomalous disturbances have been widely noted in the open U.S. press. E.g., particularly see Kenneth F. Bunting and Daniel M. Weintraub, "Mysterious Rumbles Jar Southland," Los Angeles Times, Dec. 8, 1984, CC(II), p. 1,10; Let Scarr, "People shook up over mystery shakes," The San Diego Union, Dec. 8, 1984, p. Bl, 4. Following this and a Dec. series of anomalous aerial disturbances off the Los Angeles/San Diego coast, a sharp and unexpected weather front appeared, racking the area with high winds on the night of Dec. 12, producing widespread damage and power outages. The newly-formed front moved on to produce significant snowstorms in other areas. See Ted Thackery, Jr., "Winds Kill Two, Wreak Havoc as They Sweep Through the Southland," Los Angeles Times, Dec. 14, 1984, MF/Part II, p. 1,8; "Even Tucson gets snow in storm that dumps 20 inches," AP release, Los Angeles Herald Examiner, Dec. 14, 1984, p. A-12. During several months prior to the December 1984 Los Angeles incident, anomalous electrical failures and outages had occurred in the San Diego and Southern California area, possibly due to scalar interferometry adjustments in the Woodpecker grid over the area. For other typical incidents possibly associated with adjustment of the interference grid, see "Who boomed? Odd Noise unnerves Ohioans," Journal, Milwaukee, Wisconsin, Dec. 28, 1982; "Tremors shake Miss. Gulf Coast," Times-Picayune, New Orleans, Louisiana, Feb. 27, 1983; Sandra Skowron, "Sonic boom is just Mother Nature," Beaver Co. Times, Beaver Falls, Penn., Jan 13, 1983; "Booms in Rockland, New York Times, Mar. 1. 1979, Sec. 8, p. 82; "Loud 'boom' unexplained," Star-Beacon, Ashtabula, Ohio, Feb. 21, 1983; Paul Senecton, "The word is now IDENTIFIED," Mail, Hartlepool, England, Feb. 3, 1985: On Jan. 23, 1974 a mysterious explosion over North Wales rocked a 60-mile radius area. Associated anomalous light phenomena were also seen. Hundreds and hundreds of anomalous booms, aerial rumbles, and aerial explosions, many accompanied by flashes or anomalous shaking of ground structures, buildings, windows, etc., have occurred over the U.S. and other Western nations in the 60's, 70's, and 80's.

On occasion, an aircraft at the proper altitude and position can conceivably experience interference in its electrical systems and in its engine combustion processes due to exothermic kindling or endothermic extraction of electromagnetic energy. The combustion processes of aircraft engines produce highly ionized gases in very nonlinear conditions. These can act as strong dephasers and decouplers of the vector EM components of a vector zero summation in a scalar interference zone. Exothermic interference would have little effect on combustion, but strong endothermic interference can result in engine flameout. Anomalous simultaneous failure of jet and propeller-driven aircraft engines sometimes occurs. For high altitude grids, this can result in engine flameouts, but restart and recovery after unusual loss of altitude has dropped the aircraft out of the scalar interference zone. Several candidate incidents over and near the U.S. exist, particularly where power failures were experienced by multiple aircraft. The more usual exothermic case, however, if substantial could result in anomalous loss of control of the aircraft. For a recent candidate incident, see "Jetliner drops 32,000 feet; 400 aboard; 50 are injured," Associated Press release, Huntsville Times, Feb. 20, 1985, p. 1 and "China Airlines Pilot Denies Cockpit Error," Associated Press release, Huntsville Times, Feb. 21, 1985, p. A-9. Deliberate use of this effect as an anti-strategic-bomber weapon capable of destroying bombers at or shortly after takeoff is possible (the Arrow DC-8 which crashed just after takeoff from Gander Air Force Base, Newfoundland on December 12, 1985 may have been deliberately interfered with by just such a Soviet weapon -- see extensive newspaper and TV news coverage of that event).

In scalar EM interference with aircraft, certain signatures may occur. Different instruments may sharply contradict each other, since their activation and inactivation is no longer a simple function. The pilot's instrument panel, for example, may indicate failure of the control system, when actually it has not failed, and the flight recorder may record that the control system is still operating. In such case, the pilot may take proper action based on his own instrumental readings, yet these actions may be contraindicated for the actual status of the aircraft, resulting in opposing pilot/autopilot actions. Tentative indications of the jetliner that anomalously dropped 32,000 feet and recovered are that apparently such anomalous instrument disagreements occurred. Another signature is that, as the EM charge accumulates in and on the aircraft, its skin charges up electrically, producing a glowing corona similar to St. Elmo's fire. The Arrow DC-8 was observed to be glowing yellow by eyewitnesses, according to the Canadian Broadcast Corporation's 10:00 p.m. network TV news on April 8, 1986.

47. T. E. Bearden, Star Wars Now! The Bohm-Aharonov Effect, Scalar Interferometry, and Soviet Weaponization, Tesla Book Co., Millbrae, California, 1984, p. 19-22.

48. For a paper possibly related to the first Bedini scalar wave detector from the "free A-field is a scalar field" view, see Robert R. Lewis, "Aharonov-Bohm effect for trapped ions," Physical Review A, 28(3), Sept. 1983, p. 1228-1235. This paper analyzes the role of the Aharonov-Bohm effect for the bound states of a charged particle in the superposition of two fields: a uniform magnetic field plus the vector potential of a solenoid. Gives exact solutions for a solenoid of zero size and discusses the corrections due to a solenoid of finite size. Shows that a series of new "betatron resonances" appear in the spectrum, dependent on the flux quantum number. The fundamental betatron resonance remains narrow and unshifted for solenoid radii large enough to broaden and shift the cyclotron resonance. See also W. Ehrenburg and R. E. Siday, Proc. Phys. Soc. London, Sect. B62, 1949, p. 8 which, among other things, discusses the effect of the vector potential in electron interferometry, where the insertion of a tiny solenoid between the interfering paths is shown to give an additional phase difference proportional to the flux through the solenoid. The resulting shift in the fringe system is called the Aharonov-Bohm effect.

49. Frank Golden has developed a most important and precise scalar EM detection system to display scalar EM signals on a cathode ray tube. His important measurements have mapped the scalar resonant frequency responses of the entire earth. Two completely different types of scalar instrumentation show precise agreement on the frequency maps. The measurements show that the Soviet Union has for some time entrained the entire earth into giant scalar electromagnetic resonances on two frequencies approximately 12 kilohertz apart. It is the opinion of the author that the beat frequency between these two giant resonances is utilized by the Soviet Union to extract enormous power from the earth, essentially by a mechanism that Golden has uncovered. A complex of four to eight weapon systems might reasonably be powered from the single bi-resonant tapping source. In April 1985 Golden discovered the rather sudden activation of many other scalar frequencies with characteristics resembling command and control communications. In addition, a significant number of additional paired scalar resonances had been entrained upon the earth. It is the

opinion of the author that this showed a major activation of the Soviet strategic scalar electromagnetic defense system, with the power up of from 80 to 100 weapons, along with the complete command and control system. Golden has previously built a prototype of an actual Soviet scalar communications system and demonstrated that it works. Because of the impending mayday and the 1973 statement by Brezhnev indicating that 1985 was a critical planning year, the sudden activation of such massive numbers of weapons and communications was alarming. Accordingly, the author discreetly notified certain contacts to alert the U.S. system. Golden then detected the periodic turn-on and turn-off of the systems, indicating a large command and control exercise rather than preparations for direct tactical use. An additional difference, however, was the change from scalar electric to scalar magnetic field on many of the large transmitters. This is indicative of electrostatic location, targeting, and adjustment of the target on the earth and then switching to the "power input" mode. It is the opinion of the author that this indicated the choice of a geological target and proceeding to attack that geological target in the "slow buildup" mode. Again, proper contacts were so notified.

50. A very good coverage of the Soviet microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow is given in Paul Brodeur, The Zapping of America, W. W. Norton & Co., New York, 1977, passim. None of our U.S. Embassy security personnel knew of scalar interferometry, nor did they possess scalar electromagnetics detectors. Further, orthodox U.S. scientists were also ignorant of scalar electromagnetics. The Soviets were thus in a position to tailor the radiation signals and precisely determine what our on-site personnel would detect. Details of the effects on U.S. Embassy personnel, possibly associated with the microwave radiation, are given by Brodeur. A great number of related releases by the open news media also exist. For example, see Robert C. Toth, "Radiation Devices Bug U.S. Embassy," Huntsville Times, reprinted from the Los Angeles Times, Feb. 8, 1976; "U.S. Screening out Soviet 'Listening Rays'," United Press International release, Washington D.C. Star, Feb. 11, 1976; Norman R. Beebe, "Nixon Exposed to Radiation In Russia?", Associated Press release, Huntsville Times, Apr. 30, 1976; Barton Reppert, "U.S. Scientists Puzzled Over Embassy Radiation Effect," Associated Press release, Huntsville Times, May 28, 1976; Barton Reppert, "Radiation Entering Embassy in Moscow through Phone Line," Associated Press Release, Huntsville Times, May 28,1976. See also Martin Ebon, Psychic Warfare: Threat or Illusion, McGraw Hill Book Co., New York, 1983.

51. For details of the electromagnetic transmission of cellular disease and death, see Vlail P. Kaznacheyev, "Information function of ultraweak light flows in biological systems," Problems in Biophysics, Novosibirsk, 1967, p. 7-18. Kaznacheyev et al, "Conditions necessary for appearance of distant intercellular interactions after UV-radiation," Bulletin Experimentalnoy Biologii i Meditsiny, (5), 1979, p. 468-471; Distant intercellular interactions in a system of two cultures connected by optical contact," Ultraweak Luminescence Biology, Moscow, 1972, p. 224-227; "Distant intercellular interactions caused by UV-radiation," Photobiology of a Living Cell, Leningrad, 1979, p. 221-223; "Studies on the biological role of electromagnetic emission as a factor of adaptive behavior of cells under conditions of latitude changes," Abstracts of the second all-union conference devoted to the problem of human adaptation to different geographical, climatic, and labor conditions, Novosibirsk, 1977, p. 101-104; Vlail P. Kaznacheyev, S. P. Shurin and L. P. Mikjhailova, "Distant intercellular interactions in a system of two tissue cultures," Official Bulletin of the committee on inventions and discoveries affiliated to the council of ministers of the USSR, Discovery no. 122 (19), 1973, p. 3, also printed in Psychoenergetic Systems, 1(3), Mar. 1976, p. 141-142; "Apparent Information Transfer

Between Two Groups of Cells," Psychoenergetic Systems, 1(1), Dec. 1974, p. 37.

52. For evidence of anomalous scalar reflection out of the scalar grid caused by a Navy chaff drop, See "Navy sabotages traffic lights, TV sets," United Press International, PM cycle, Jan. 11, 1985; "Power blackout blamed on anti-radar particles," United Press International, AM cycle, Jan. 11, 1985; "Power Disrupted Briefly After Navy Plane Drops Metallic Strands," Associated Press, AM cycle, Jan. 16, 1985.

53. A good summary of the early incidence of the Soviet Woodpecker signals is given by Bradley Wells, "The Russian woodpecker: a continuing nuisance," CQ, Nov. 1984.

54. A particularly important Soviet Paper is E. B. Smetanin, "Electromagnetic field in a space with curvature -- new solutions," Soviet Physics Journal, 25(2), Feb. 1982, p. 107-111. In this paper, a solution to the stated problem is obtained, which may be regarded as a classical model of a charged particle that has both a magnetic moment and a nonzero magnetic charge density. Interaction with spacetime curvature can disrupt the gauge invariance of the EM field, and it can also reestablish invariance in an initially noninvariant theory. (Hutchinson has had anomalous breaks of metal caused by standing scalar waves, which seems to be due to a mechanism that produces monopoles and deposits them in the metal at standing-wave nodes. This paper should be directly applicable.)

See also Yu. S. Vladimirov and A. A. Kozlenkov, "6-optics and a general theory of gravitation and electromagnetism," Soviet Physics Journal, 27(12), Dec.1984, p. 1039-1041; V. G. Bagrov and M. D. Noskov, "New exact solution of the Dirac equation. XI," Soviet Physics Journal, 27(12), Dec. 1984, p. 1030-1034. See particularly V. I. Petukhov and I. A. Kuzin, "Weak processes in the field of a gravitational wave," Soviet Physics Journal, 27(12}, Dec. 1984, p. 1025-1029.

In the latter paper it is significant that the decay probability increases in a locally curved spacetime, and that solutions are obtained for circularly polarized waves.

(In EM waves, circularly polarized waves have special characteristics in nonlinear isotropic media: exact solutions exist. Also, when two longitudinal sine waves of differing frequencies are transmitted into a nonlinear isotropic medium, the apparent difference frequency is transmitted as a sine wave, undistorted. This characteristic has been used by Westinghouse to produce improved sonar transmission through seawater, for example. The scalar EM (electrogravitational) wave may be represented as a longitudinal EM wave. Immediately, if one wishes to produce a pure scalar EG wave in the nucleus of an atom, two frequencies should be transmitted such that their difference is the frequency wished. Or circularly polarized waves may be utilized.)

Note that, by implication, one should be able to deliberately tailor scalar EM waves to greatly speed the decay of long-lived radioisotopes, such as are contained in radioactive wastes from nuclear reactors and other processes.

55. For some evidence of continuing persistence of the higher frequency scalar components applied to the scalar grid on Jan. 28, 1986 to localize the effects when attacking the Challenger, see "Poison suspected in unexplained deaths of birds," Huntsville Times, AP release, Feb. 6, 1986. From 1-4 Feb.

1986, various kinds of dead birds -- such as blackbirds, cardinals, sparrows and bluebirds -- plummeted to the ground in Birmingham, Alabama. At first some sort of mysterious poison was suspected, but later was ruled out. During this period, the woodpecker grid was particularly active in weather engineering operations. Multiple sightings of giant cloud radials occurred in various places throughout the U.S. The retention of the high frequency components possibly was intensified in the Birmingham area sporadically during the period. Birds flying into this zone would be killed if their brains acted as scalar receivers and were sufficiently jammed by the signals. Normally Huntsville (further north) is a "hinge point" for increased scalar activity, to start the Jetstream bending northeast to move along the Appalachian mountain chain. However, just before 28 January the jetstream had been diverted further south than usual by the Soviet interference, bringing unseasonably cold weather to Florida and the waiting Challenger on its launch pad. Probably hinge points further south than Huntsville were needed for this operation. If these more southern points were retained for a few days, and the high frequency components were retained, then an inadvertent high intensity area of these components may have sporadically occurred in the Birmingham area, killing the birds.

For description of the Apr. 18, 1986 Titan blast and its ramifications to the spy satellite program, see James Gerstenzang and Ralph Vartabedian," Los Angeles Times News Service, "Titan Blast to Hurt Spy Program," Huntsville Times, Apr. 19, 1986.

56. For another very important paper indeed, see Vu. G. Ignat'ev, "Relativistic kinetics of an anisotropic plasmalike medium with damping in a field of gravitational radiation," Soviet Physics Journal, 27(12), Dec. 1984, (English translation: Plenum, June 1985), p. l066-1069. If we substitute the vacuum "virtual plasma" for the observable plasma, this paper may be part of the smoking gun to show that the Soviet Union has developed scalar electromagnetics. Extrapolating from this paper, the amplitude of the "induced longitudinal field" is proportional to the square of the amplitude of the gravitational wave (GW) in an initially isotopic medium, but reduces to a linear proportionality as the medium develops nonlinearities (anisotropies or inhomogeneities). Whereas conventional GW are considered to be weak, the scalar GW may be very strong since we ourselves determine the variation in the energy density of vacuum it involves. Further, sharply spiked scalar EM (EG) pulses may develop appreciably more amplitude that the linearly calculated amplitude from the magnitudes of the zero-summation components. The end result is that (1) we can produce powerful gravity waves using the scalar EM approach, (2) local spacetime can be curved, producing violation of the conservation laws, and (3) the assumption of a local Lorentz frame made by Einstein as a limitation on ordinary general relativity is falsified.

In passing, note that immediately one also has a clear basis for the excess local production of energy when the battery furnishing power to a DC series motor is sharply spiked backwards in a "recharging" fashion. Further, the ions in the battery (which are several hundred thousand times as massive as an electron) possess a resonance on the order of 16 megahertz in a typical lead-acid battery. Under the correct conditions, the ions collect the excess energy (due to the initial square effect) produced by a sharp pulse of recharging potential. The ions are shocked into resonance and, on reversal, "overshoot" and deliver this excess energy to the plates, recharging the battery. Thus such a system can violate linear conservation of energy because spacetime is locally curved by the spiking, and excess energy from the excited local vacuum is collected by the ions and delivered to the plates. This is precisely the effect upon which the first Bedini free-energy motor depended. The timing and adjustment, however, are highly critical and difficult, and the battery takes a rather severe beating.

57. For details and photographs of highly anomalous exhausts seen on Bennett Island, see "Explosive Events Seen on Soviet Island," Aviation Week & Space Technology, Sept. 26, 1983, p. 31. NOAA-6 and NOAA-7 weather satellite photographs of massive smoke plumes, one of them 150 miles long and nearly horizontal, are shown. Also, in U.S. weather satellite photos of Novaya Zemlya, similar plumes have been detected, making this location a tentative candidate for a second Soviet "exhaust site." See also Letter John M. Miller, Geophysical Institute, University of Alaska, Jan. 4, 1985 with attachment, "Bennett Island plume cases recently found." Satellite photos showing actual circular breaking of arctic ice have also been taken near Wrangel Island. See Sam Bishop, "UA photos show Soviets break ice for missiles," Fairbanks Daily News-Miner, Dec. 15, 1984, p. 1,3; Craig Covault, "Soviet Abi1ity to Fire through Ice Creates New SLBM Basing Mode," Aviation Week & Space Technology, Dec. 10, 1984, p. 16-17. Wrangel Island in fact has a bizarre history: it belongs to the U. S., but has been illegally given to the Soviets and occupied and used by them. For details, see "Wrangle over Wrangel and the Weather War," Don Bell Reports, 32(9), Mar. 8, 1985.

58. For details of anomalous blinding (probably by scalar EM means) of U.S. satellites, see Philip J. Klass, "Anti-Satellite Laser Use Suspected," Aviation Week & Space Technology, Dec. 8, 1975, p. 12-13. For details of anomalous failures and recoveries of a British satellite, see Joe Schwartz, Nature, 280, July 12, 1979, p. 95.

59. For other possible evidence of traces of Soviet scalar EM activity over the oceans, see George D. Curtis, "An electromagnetic radiation pattern over the ocean," Undersea Technology, 5(8), Aug. 1964, p. 29-30, 40. In producing a scalar wave, there exists a sort of "signal to noise" ratio of the desired scalar wave to an accompanying, undesired normal EM component. Due to practical equipment imperfections, the generated scalar wave inevitably is accompanied by a small residue of ordinary EM wave. While measures can be taken to further purify the scalar wave, a residue always remains. Curtis may have detected the weak EM residue accompanying early Soviet interference gridding for weather control testing over the U.S.

60. Interactions which occurred between Khrushchev and renowned physicist and Nobelian P. Kapitsa are of interest. Khrushchev desired absolute defense of the Soviet Union so that the Soviets might be able to launch any action desired without risk or serious concern. Kapitsa informed the Soviet leader that, if a means of total neutralization of foreign missiles was to be found, it could only come from a group of new principles in physics which was called " energetics." The term "energetics," of course, was contracted from "psychoenergetics," and is essentially the expanded physics/electromagnetics that this author has dubbed scalar electromagnetics.

Strangely, a portion of a book by Marshal Grechko was deleted from its English translation at the specific request of the Soviet Union to the U.S. State Department. The passage stated: "Of particular importance is basic research aimed at discovering still unknown attributes of matter, phenomena, and the laws of nature, and developing new methods for their study and use to reinforce the state's defense capabilities."

The most definitive Soviet book on military strategy is titled Military Strategy (Voyennaya

Strategiya). See V. D. Sokolovskiy, Soviet Military Strategy, third edition, edited with an analysis and commentary by Harriet Fast Scott, Crane, Russak & Company, Inc., New York, 1975. There are three editions, the latest in 1968. In the third edition, the exotic weapons normally proposed for defense against strategic ballistic missiles -- such as particle beams, high energy lasers, exotic nuclear warheads, plasma weapons, antigravitational weapons, etc. -- are discussed and discounted by implication. The statement is made several times that 100% defense against missiles and aircraft is possible. A statement is also made that it is interesting to note that this capability (a solution to the strategic missile defense problem) has been achieved by the Soviet Union, but not by the West (e.g., p. 298.) In the same edition, a previous definition of antimissile defense obviously consisting of radars, computers, and interceptor missiles is deleted (see author's note 190, p. 454).

The Soviets also recognize the great importance of technical surprise: "The experience of war shows that warring sides quite often have tried to employ new types of weapons to this end to achieve surprise, which are a surprise for the enemy or are little known to him. Each side secretly develops new means of warfare in order to employ them unexpectedly. History knows many examples how the employment of a new weapon initially gave considerable success because the enemy, caught unaware and not knowing the combat capabilities of this weapon, was for some time incapable of effective counteraction… The mass introduction of new weapons into an army usually cannot remain secret for long for the other side. -- New means of warfare, and in mass numbers, are impossible to create often and quickly. In this regard, the sides have begun to take other paths concerning the attainment of surprise along with searches for new weapons and their sophistication." V. Ye. Savkin, of The Basic Principles Operational Art and Tactics, Moscow, 1972, U.S. Air Force translation, U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C. 20402.

61. The Soviets have not discarded most of their old radars, and have continued to develop, build, and deploy giant new radars (in apparent violation of SALT agreements), which U.S. analysts always analyze in conventional fashion. It is fairly straightforward, simple, and inexpensive to modify an ordinary pencil beam radar to produce scalar wave beams and geometrical scalar Fourier expansion forms. Radars can provide a wide array of totally new and unexpected capabilities when utilized in the scalar electromagnetics mode. Even older Soviet radars, with antiaircraft gun sites and older surface-to-air missile sites, will exhibit new and startlingly advanced capabilities against ballistic and cruise missiles and Strategic Air Command bombers. Since there are many thousands of these older Soviet radars still operationally deployed, in the scalar mode the Soviet strategic defense may well approach 100%, just as Military Strategy implies. Also, the antiaircraft and antimissile defense capability of Soviet land forces may be far greater than anything presently estimated by U.S. analysts.

62. To the physicists, engineers, and researchers who have made the tough sledding to this point, congratulations! Here's a bonus for you.

Turn to page 32, equation [7]. Time differentiate it (this is left as an exercise for the reader). Collect terms and study the result intensely.

Now you have the reason why rise time is so important from a scalar EM viewpoint. You can also see why spiking the innate inductance of any system very sharply is so important. Fast rise time greatly increases the value of the time derivative terms, and your gravito-inertial effects go up with the collective squares of your zero-vector summed components. Any system has at least a little inductance. For sharp spikes, the gravitational potential goes very high. The inductance of the system momentarily opposes any current (translation: opposes any current bleed-off, or EM force field bleed-off). During that time you've got the 4-space G-potential to use. If you need to hold it longer to use it, then increase the inductance.

Now you can see why extremely rapid discharge of properly tuned, giant Tesla coils give gravitational and inertial effects sometimes.

You can see why the sharp "EMP" (electromagnetic pulse) from a nuclear explosion or EMP generating device can penetrate the ocean.

That's why the spikes (such as used by the neurophone) can carry messages directly into the brain and nervous system. You also should see why the Soviet woodpecker carriers (a Soviet over-the-horizon radar system) are loaded with scalar EM spikes (Bedini has precisely detected them from 50 Hz to 10 MHz; Golden has detected them into the gigahertz range.) to work on the humans in the targeted area. They're zapping the hell out of us. And they have done something similar at the U.S. Embassy in Moscow for decades.

Bedini has developed a simple, cheap device to mess up the phaselocking of the scalar EM spikes on the woodpecker carriers. It's based on the fact that the Russkies use a lot of circularly polarized transmitters when they make the spikes. Here's what to do: Take 4 strong bar magnets and an old (but operational) long-playing record turntable. Set it on 33-1/3 RPM speed. Glue the magnets on the top of the turntable, standing vertically, symmetrically placed around the turntable's outer edge. Place them so that on one a north pole is up, on the next a south pole is up, then a north up, then a south up. Now turn the turntable on and let it run. This gadget makes a slowly rotating magnetostatic wave. (Yes, it will also make a rotating "magnetic" wave, which is actually two rotating magnetostatic waves.). These rotating magnetostatic waves will interfere with the scalar spikes, changing them to EM (electromagnetism) and slowly rotating their phase. This breaks the phaselock of the Soviet circularly polarized scalar EM signal on the human brain. This gadget will protect the average large room.

But back to our differentiated equation.

Now you should also see why the first Bedini motor is so "devilishly difficult" to adjust. You've got to get the effect and examine it in well under 20 nanoseconds. You'll need an oscilloscope of 350 MHz range or so. Microwave-quality bench equipment is necessary; the ordinary electrical and electronic shop equipment is not good enough. You can also see why the ordinary lead-acid battery takes such a beating. However, a special battery certainly can be designed to take it. Now you know.

Okay, you tigers. Go get 'em.

63. Now here's a final bonus for the persistent reader.

This time, see J. N. Brittingham, "Focus Wave Modes in Homogeneous Maxwell's Equations:

Transverse Electric Mode," J. Appl. Phys. 54, 1983, p. 1179-1189; T. T. Wu and R. W. P. King, "Comment on 'Focus Wave Modes in Homogeneous Maxwell's Equations: Transverse Electric Mode' [J. Appl. Phys. 54, 1179 (1983)]", J. Appl. Phys. 56, 1984, p. 2587; T. T. Wu and H. Lehmann, "Spreading of Electromagnetic Pulses," J. Appl. Phys. 58, 1985, p. 2064-2065; T. T. Wu, "Electromagnetic Missiles," J. Appl. Phys. 57, 1985, p. 2370-2373. Pay particular attention to the latter paper.

Because of the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI) and other programs, great interest has recently been kindled in using EM pulses to carry energy from a high-powered source to a target. However, so far almost all the work is still couched in terms of purely ordinary (though sophisticated) electromagnetics. It still involves the EM concept of "EM energy flow through the intervening space from the transmitter to the target." As such, the work to date still suffers from all the self-imposed ills and limitations of using the classical force fields concept of EM.

However, the theoretical work of these referenced papers is of great interest to us here.

In the first paper, Brittingham sparked a great deal of interest with theoretical work which promised a permanently focused 3-dimensional concentration of EM energy that propagates in a straight line with the speed of light. That is, this mode used a newly formulated wave packet (called the "focus wave mode") that acted as a non-dissipating EM soliton.

In the second reference, it was concluded that Brittingham's focused wave packet actually satisfied Maxwell's equations, but not the associated boundary conditions.

[Comment by this reviewer: both of these formulations use "linear time" and a "linear frame," ignoring the local general relativity aspects. Indeed, Brittingham's "focused wave packet" can be made by the zero-vector approach! However, it will not be an "EM" packet, it will be a pulse (or oscillating wave, depending upon how it is made) of 5-gravity potential. As such, it contains a multiplicity of locked-in, 5th-dimensional, non-zero EM gradients in and EM gradients out. Collectively these gradients themselves constitute a deterministic "flux of gradients" or an EM flux in the 5th dimension, with no resultant effective current of EM gradients. In other words, it's possible to build a "flux of gradients" and to have a "current of gradients," just as in ordinary EM it's possible to have a "flux of virtual particles" and a "current of virtual particles." The argument concerning the EM boundary conditions of Maxwell's equations is not relevant in such a case. The only boundary involved is the zero itself.]

Be that as it may, the 4th reference is of direct interest. In this paper, Wu has done us a great service. He shows that, under transient excitation, an antenna of finite size can transmit energy to a faraway receiver so that the energy decreases as slowly as one wishes. An electromagnetic pulse of energy with such slow decay is conveniently referred to as an "electromagnetic missile."

The electromagnetic missile has important applications, according to Wu. One possible application is the transmission of information in a manner that is very difficult to intercept or jam. A second possible application is to destroy or disable a distant target. However, Wu feels that so much energy is required [remember, he is speaking of EM non-zeroed force fields traveling through ordinary space] that a like1y radiating source must be something like a nuclear explosion. However, as Wu points out, a nuclear explosion produces a powerful EM pulse which includes frequencies from microwaves to gamma rays. To weaponize the explosion to produce a coherent beam, the nuclear explosion must be controlled to produce a coherent radiating source and a pulsed laser-like EM beam. Wu points out that such a technology is difficult and has not been developed.

We comment as follows: It is certainly true that enormous energy is required if the waves in the pulse remain electromagnetic -- that is, if they have non-zero resultant E and B fields to the external observer.

On the other hand, if we form a complex of waves in opposition so that we control the energy content of each individual component wave, but blend all the waves so that their collective envelope wave has zero E-field and zero B-field resultants, then -- to the external observer -- the EM energy is infolded and unzipped electromagnetically. It is now electrogravitational energy, and limitations of "EM force field energy flowing through space or through a physical medium" need no longer apply. However, we may still look at each EM component wave as an individual EM wave, moving in the Kaluza-Klein 5th dimension that is wrapped-around each and every point in our ordinary 4-space. In other words, to the ordinary 4-spacetime observer, each component wave has a special channel around every point of his space, not through it. Thus we have established multiple EM channels "just outside" each point of observer space. These we call "scalar channels," and EM energy can move through each one as if it were moving through a wire. The relative potentials between the "ends of each wire" determine in which direction the "EM energy current" flows along the wire.

And in each of these "special channels," we just have a normal kind of space (to the internal observer). Wu's paper assures us that we can get as much of the input energy to the distant target as we desire. The problem then is how to break the zero-summed EM envelope (and hence the "zero channel" for each component EM energy wave) in the distant target itself, spilling the infolded contents of all the special channels back into ordinary spacetime as EM energy (either positive or negative).

That, of course is easily done by interference in the distant zone. As previously stated, there is a way in which we can even perform this interference in a single scalar beam. Since the newly formed EM energy emerges from each and every increment of spacetime occupied by the distant target, it already emerges inside the very vitals of the target. It does not have to translate through the intervening ordinary space between transmitter and target. Instead, it goes through the Kaluza-Klein fifth dimension. It translates along a line through our space, but not through our space. With the scalar EM approach, we transmit EM energy through hyperspace, not through normal space.

Hereafter we will adapt and expand Wu's SDI term "electromagnetic missile" to include these electrogravitational aspects. In other words, we include the "scalar EM missile", which consists of an infolded multiple of Wu's ordinary EM missiles moving together coherently in special sheathed hyperspace channels.

In Appendix I we show an anomalous photograph taken by Bob Gladwin, just before the shuttle launch of Nov. 26,1985. While the photograph may be an artifact, it also is a candidate for the test strike of such a Soviet scalar "electromagnetic missile" tested against an aiming point offset from the shuttle launch which followed a few seconds later. The test was accomplished before the shuttle was launched, and offset from it, so that it positively would not endanger the shuttle itself. The conditions under which this spectacular photograph was taken happened to coincide with the special conditions required to photograph such scalar EM energy. Those conditions are clarified and explained in the Appendix.

My deep appreciation goes to Mr. Gladwin for allowing me to use this photograph. As we will point out in Appendix I, the video camera caught a picture of the Soviet scalar EM marker beacon associated with the Titan explosion of April 18, 1986. One can rest assured that the Soviets probably destroyed that vehicle, using a scalar EM missile.

APPENDIX 1: SOME IMPORTANT INDICATORS AND DESTRUCTIVE TESTING

Some of the indicators which bear on the use of the Soviet scalar electromagnetic grid via the Woodpecker EM carrier beams are given in this appendix. along with other information believed pertinent to overall scalar EM effects.

IN ADDITION, THE THESIS OF ACTUAL LIVE TESTING OF THESE WEAPONS BY THE SOVIETS -- TO INCLUDE THE DESTRUCTION OF A TROOP-CARRYING U.S. AIRCRAFT, A SHUTTLE, AND A TITAN MISSILE -- IS ADVANCED AND INDICATORS PRESENTED.

An anomalous photograph taken by Bob Gladwin is presented which possibly may have captured the "smoking gun" -- the strike of a Soviet scalar EM missile at an offset aim point near the shuttle Atlantis, just before its launch on Nov. 26, 1985. However, this photograph is caveated since it may also represent an anomalous but ordinary artifact. captured in some as yet unknown manner. The manner in which such a photograph may have been taken -- when normally the scalar energy does not show on a photo -- is explained.

Another photograph taken by George Suchary after the launch did capture the Soviet "marker beacon" utilized in the test firing, however. This independent photograph is presented, and adds credence to the thesis that the Gladwin photograph captured the test of a Soviet scalar EM pulse missile.

- INDICATORS AND SUCH -

1. Continual cloud radials have repeatedly been seen and photographed over Los Angeles, California or its vicinity.

Los Angeles is also apparently a "hinge point" for bending and controlling the jetstream. Three typical radials seen to form one after the other by Margaret Wilson (and sketched and airbrushed by her) in the greater Los Angeles area are shown in figures 1, 2, 3, and 4. These radials were formed on Sunday, Jan. 26, 1986. Ms. Wilson had heard my Saturday night "Soviet Weather Engineering" broadcast over KABC Los Angeles, and my request that anyone who saw the typical radial cloud formation should photograph or draw it, noting time and location, and send the photos or drawings to me.

As Margaret described it. "To my astonishment, the next day I not only saw one, but three in the sky at the same time.

The time of the first one was Sunday, Jan. 26, at 1:15 p. m.

. . . I stepped out the back door for some minor errand and noticed a fan of long straight clouds in the sky. The sky had been filled with dark clouds most of the morning but this had been breaking up and the western half of the sky was now clear with these lines of clouds spread out on it. I immediately thought of your request and tried to see the bottom of the fan which was hidden behind bushes and a garage. When I stepped into the street, I saw there was a semi-circle beneath them.

Not having film and a wide-angle lens on my camera. I knew I couldn't capture it in its entirety. I am, however, a retired commercial airbrush artist so I quickly sketched the formation. It is illustration #1.

It was in the western sky, the base of the central semi-circle sitting about 15 degrees above the ocean horizon. It was very clear and sharply defined. The semi-circle was broken at the top and the two broken ends curled inward like commas. As I sketched the wind deformed it somewhat, the right half of the whole formation sliding down away from the left.

Ten minutes later it was getting quite clear of clouds except for a bank over the Santa Monica Mountains to the north and there, straight north, another fan was forming. As I watched it took shape -- illustration #2. The same broken semi-circle (with commas') but this time the bases of the rays were feathered about half-way out with end halves long straight wisps.

As I sketched, another fan had begun to take shape further east. It was hard to tell its size but I had estimated the first one at about 15 miles across and the second a little larger and the third larger yet. At the peak of its formation it looked like illustration #3. ...There in the middle of the central circle, hazy and a little faint was what looked like the top of a mushroom cloud. Or was it only a distant thunderhead that coincidentally found its way to a place behind the formation? The arms of the last, largest formation were rather wavy and feathery like some gigantic sea creature. It did not disperse as fast as the others, but held for a couple of hours, though it was pretty distorted by then. I could not estimate its size as I wasn't sure of its altitude.

Were they aircraft contrails? Certainly not! There was an airliner in the sky at the time -- a mere scratch on the smooth blue sky (see illustration #3, right center.).

The three formations were present in the sky at the same time although the first was getting quite distorted by the upper level winds before the last reached its peak.

Tuesday our weather changed from hot and sunny to rainy as the weather man said the path of the jetstream altered, and then there was the space shuttle explosion.

...The Russians seemed very sincere in their sympathy for the loss of our astronauts but only two days later it was printed in TASS and I personally heard Vladimir Posner say that Russia hoped that the United States would now realize what could happen if the S.D.I. program was further pursued. Was this friendly concern or a threat? It is very evident that if the S.D.I. can destroy a missile in flight, it can also destroy one on the ground. This would immediately put all Russian missiles in [reach of] our arsenal. They are already in place in the most desirable target areas -- their own launch sites. I'd be panicky too if I were a Soviet leader."

[Ed. comment: My sincere thanks to this thoughtful lady who took the time to sketch the cloud radial phenomena occurring in the Los Angeles "jetstream pivot point" at this critical time, just prior to the launch and destruction of the Challenger.

Anomalous cloud grid activity (formation and dissolution) in
the Los Angeles area has been positively correlated with Soviet Woodpecker activity by engineer Ron Cole, with 100% correlation in 30 straight Woodpecker measurement runs. Statistically, of course, this
is quite decisive.].

2. Continual cloud radials have repeatedly been seen and photographed over Huntsville, Alabama, associated with weather engineering and grid activity. Typical radials seen by this author are shown in Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, 1985. Huntsville is apparently a pivot point or "hinge point" for bending and controlling the jetstream.

3. Spectacular cloud grid patterns have been seen over Huntsville, Alabama and Los Angeles, California. An excellent videoclip of one of the Los Angeles area grids, personally observed and shot by KABC Open Mind talk show host Bill Jenkins, is shown in Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, 1985. An artist's sketch of an earlier gigantic grid, extending from horizon to horizon in every direction, seen over Huntsville, Alabama by Tom Bearden and Ken Moore, is also shown in the tape. The videotape is available from P.O. Box 1472, Huntsville, AL 35807. Sketches and details of another highly anomalous grid pattern observed in the greater Los Angeles area by engineer Ron Cole are shown in figures 5 and 6.

The reason that clouds of water droplets and/or ice particles detect the scalar interferometry and form signature patterns is simple: Consider each H_2O molecule as having two light little hydrogen atoms hanging on to the much heavier oxygen atom. The covalent sharing with the oxygen atom of the electron from each hydrogen atom means that (1) the electrostatic scalar potential between the H ion and the O ion it is bonded to, is rhythmically varying as the electron is shared back and forth, (2) this varying potential contains "electron spin holes" since it is made by the moving electron, (3) two such varying potentials exist since there are two H atoms sharing covalent electrons with the O atom, (4) the two H ions are at an angle of over 100 degrees with respect to each other, (5) the molecule assembly thus constitutes one part (one half, so to speak) of a scalar interferometer with imbedded electron spin holes for electron hooking, (6) Incident scalar waves from outside the system interact with the "half scalar interferometer." This scalar interferometry interaction is coupled to the covalent bonding electron because of the internal spin hole pattern of the molecular half of the interferometer. The coupled electron moves with the scalar pattern's changes, causing an observable interaction with and in the electrical structure and ionic potential of the molecule, (7) the weak H to H hydrogen bonding between molecules connects resulting ionic potential changes to the structuring of the entire macroscopic cloud assembly. Thus by scalar interferometry with the H_2O "half interferometers", an incident scalar EM pattern is detected and translated into patterns of E and B force fields. The H_2O molecules then "line up" in accord with the electrical patterns detected.

Thus the clouds form "signature patterns" according to the incident scalar EM radiation patterns. Giant cloud radials in the targeted area are probably due to the type and shape of antennas -- including the type and shape of the electrical wires establishing the antennas' ground planes -- 640used by the Soviet Union to project the scalar waves. Note that such "radial" antenna patterns were occasionally used by James Harris Rogers in his underground and undersea scalar EM transmission system.

[For Rogers' patents, see U.S. patent numbers 1,316,188, Radiosignaling system, Sept.16, 1919; 1,322,622, Wireless Signaling System, Nov. 25, 1919 (figure 6 of this patent clearly shows a "radial wire" ground plane antenna); 1,349,103, Radiosignaling system, Aug. 10, 1920 (the fourth version in figure 1 shows inside/outside variation which, for the long waves used, to a distant observer appears as a varying magnetostatic scalar potential using opposing B fields); 1,349,104, Radiosignaling system, Aug. 10, 1920; 1,220,005, Wireless Signaling System, Mar. 20, 1917; 1,303,729, Wireless signaling system, May 13, 1919; 1,303,730, Radiosignaling system, May 13,1919; l,315,862, Radiosignaling system, Sept. 9, 1919; also 958,829, Method and Apparatus for Producing High Frequency Oscillating Currents, May 24,1910.].

4. Anomalous power outages in Ventura County, Southern California on Nov. 8 and 9, 1985. Again, engineer Ron Cole, who lives in the affected area, investigated and reports as follows:

"On the evening of 11-8-85 in a rural area of Ventura County known as Carlisle Canyon, a strange electrical phenomenon began to occur at about 10:15 p.m. Our first observation was that random white dots began to appear on the TV screen, then began to increase in size and brightness. The brighter the dots got, the dimmer certain lights in our home became. Yet later we found that, when some lighting circuits were dimming, other circuits were causing lights to shine much brighter than normal. After a bit of checking, we were able to determine that lighting circuits common to pole 1 of the service transformer were the ones that were seeing a reduction in voltage, while all circuits on pole 2 were seeing an increase in voltage.

There is another interesting condition that was observed on the TV screen. The dots were in sync with the vertical field or frame rate of the signal. This means that the interference had to be of a frequency of 59.7 Hz or 29.85 Hz. Normal power line interference will form a grouped dash pattern across the screen and will strobe upward at the rate difference of 59.7 Hz or 29.85 Hz. In the 8 November case, there was no strobing of the dots whatsoever.

These conditions continued off and on for the rest of the entire evening and were observed by no less than six other persons that I know of. They were observed over the entire TV frequency spectrum, low band VHF, high band VHF, and on two UHF channels. Line interference is almost always most prominent on the low band VHF frequencies only.

These anomalous events would take place on a somewhat irregular time pattern; anywhere from 3 to 10 minutes apart. They would always last for about 2 minutes.

At 12:30 a.m. I went to bed and was not aware of any further activities until 6:20 a.m., at which time I was awakened by several sharp snapping or cracking sounds coming from the walls of my house. I rolled over and went back to sleep, only to be reawakened about 15 minutes later by my wife, who informed me that the power and phones were out. My comment was, "Some dummy must have crashed into a power pole," and I dozed off again.

At 10:15 a.m. the power and phones came back on line. Shortly after, our phone began to virtually ring off the hook. About a dozen neighbors up and down the canyon wanted me to check out their electrical wiring and various appliances. All of them were trying to explain their individual encounters and what took place when the power went out. Such things as wires snapping in walls, singing and humming sounds coming from wiring in walls, strong smell of ozone, light bulbs exploding, buzzing coffee pots, and a handful of other phenomena all took place just before the power went out at 6:20 a.m.

A typical example was that of Rob Steel. [Ed: Name changed for this report; his real name is in my files.] Rob lives four miles down the canyon from us. He had just turned on the lights in his barn and was getting ready to feed the livestock, when he realized he had left several needed items in the garage located about 75 yards from the barn. Upon entering the garage, he saw the garage lights began to flicker, then go to a dim orange glow. Upon stepping from the garage area, Steel saw that lights in the barn were so bright that he thought the entire structure was about to explode. He froze in his tracks for a moment and his whole house and garage began to hum. Then everything went out.

An interesting point to inject is that Mr. Steel's home and several others farther down the canyon from us are being fed from a different 19 kv power feeder source than the 14 kv feeder that supplies us and most homes in the canyon.

At about 2 p.m. on 11-9-85 I was in contact with the power utility company (Southern California Edison Company) to inquire as to the cause of the power outage. My first assumption was wrong. No power poles had been knocked down; only a ceramic fuse in the 19 kv feeder system had blown and a two-pole oil breaker had kicked out on the 14 kv feeder system. Load charge recorders at the power company show that both fuse devices kicked out at exactly the same time, but they are in no way common to each other as to load distribution. They only supply power to adjacent areas.

Also, the phone company has no record of its service being out, yet the phone service was restored when the power was restored. The phone company does not use Edison Company's power to power its phones. Again, the only commonality is that the phones and phone lines were in the same area.

Numerous magnetic breakers, used as manual switch devices for well pumps and other services, were on when power was returned. These switches had previously set in their off state.

A strong electrical-type ozone odor was detected at five locations at the time the power went out.

Later we found that a Research and Development laboratory in a nearby area measured 29 Hz intermittent signals late on the night of 11-8-85. These signals were interfering with some critical tests the lab personnel were trying to accomplish. The laboratory itself did not experience a power outage.

At this point in time, the only realistic surmise we can come up with is that a tremendous ELF or scalar ground wave was adding and subtracting to the grounded neutral service side of the power pole transformers so as to sum in and out of phase. When peak nodes were achieved, all line transformers ended up back-feeding the feeder lines out of phase, causing the final power outage.

Twenty-one persons are aware of the strange conditions of the power outage and prior events. [Ed: Their names are in my files.]"

Editor's comment: Another anomalous power outage also occurred in the same area. This occurrence is possibly associated with effects of the scalar interference grid adjustments. If the Soviets were preparing for a major test of the grid in the Launch Phase ABM mode, substantial tests and exercises may have been performed before the actual "wet run" against the shuttle launch on Nov. 26, 1985 -- about two and a half weeks after the anomalous power outage at Carlisle Canyon.

See the Rogers' patents, referenced above, for ideas of how scalar EM signals couple to the power lines and telephone lines.

As this book goes to press, John Bedini has notified me that his new and very sensitive developmental scalar detector positively verifies scalar frequency "spike" activity on the Woodpecker grid (and possibly the ground reference) from 50 Hz to 10 MHz. A normal instrument will definitely not see these signals. John's lab is at Sylmar, California and about 70 miles from Carlisle Canyon.

5. During the Skylab mission, NASA astronauts observed and photographed a mysterious green glow of the atmosphere. The glow was over 1,000 miles long and over 100 miles wide. From Carlisle Canyon, Ventura County, California the sky has also been observed to possess a mysterious green glow from horizon to horizon, on three occasions. [Editor's comment: It is hypothesized that this green glow is associated with grid activity in the Launch Phase ABM System mode.]

6. Just prior to the hapless launch of the Challenger on Jan. 28, 1986, the Soviet Union sharply bent the jetstream down through the center part of the country, then curved it eastward across the Florida panhandle. This exposed the waiting Challenger on the launch pad to severe cold air, brought down from Canada by the sharply deviated jetstream. The use of the scalar interferometry aspects of the Woodpecker grid for weather engineering over the U.S. has been documented previously. [Bearden, Soviet Weather Engineering Over North America, 1-hr. videotape, 1985;

Bearden, "USSR: New beam energy possible?", Defense & Foreign Affairs Daily, 13(111), June 12, 1984, p. 1-2.]. Wilson's cloud radial sightings on Jan. 26, 1986 and Cole's giant cloud grid sightings on Jan. 24, 1986 are directly connected with adjusting the Woodpecker grid and deviating the jetstream, to carry cold air to the Florida launch site.

7. The previous testing of the grid in the Launch Phase ABM/Anti-bomber Mode, using actual jet aircraft as "wet-run" targets, has been demonstrated by various anomalous incidents.

As one probable example, see "Jetliner drops 32,000 feet; 400 aboard; 50 are injured," AP release, Huntsville Times, Feb. 20, 1985, p. 1 and "China Airlines Pilot Denies Cockpit Error," AP release, Huntsville Times, Feb. 21, 1985, p. A-9. In this incident (see figure 7) a Boeing 747, flying at 42,000 feet and bound for Los Angeles, experienced unusual engine flameouts while still out from San Francisco. In a hair-raising plunge toward the earth, the pilot fought to restart the engines and regain control of the aircraft. After a fall of some 32,000 feet in two minutes, the engines finally restarted, and the pilot was able to fly into San Francisco and land safely.

We have already explained how the Soviets are able to track the aircraft's jet engines. Later in this Appendix we show just how accurately an actual "scalar EM missile" may be focused by the Soviets on a hapless target. If a negatively biased pulse or continuous wave scalar EM "energy extraction" beam hits the engines, the extraction of energy will result in engine flameout. (No heat energy, no combustion of the fuel.). This is apparently what happened to this aircraft. In the presence of "splatter" from the extraction beam targeted at the engines, the aircraft instruments were seriously affected. Different instruments have different responses to such an anomalous scalar EM kindling effect. Thus a signature would be that the instruments disagree with each other, and need not record what actually occurred. This appears to have been the case, constituting a signature that scalar EM was targeted against the aircraft. The pilot's instruments apparently indicated that the control system had failed, while the flight recorder apparently indicated that it had not.

Let us assume this was a Soviet test. When the distant Soviet operator turned off the extractor beam, the engines returned to normal state after a "discharge time constant" period. They normalized before the plane struck the ground, so the pilot was able to restart the engines and proceed.

Notice that this was a limited test to cause engine flameout only. If the scalar EM missile had been used against the aircraft in the "pulse" mode, it would instantly have exploded in mid-air.

The crash of an India jet aircraft outside Great Britain may have been a test of the same weapon in the pulsed "destroy aircraft" mode, since there are indications that the aircraft suffered an anomalous midair explosion. Another candidate for such a possible "shoot-down" of a jet aircraft is an (Italian) Itavia DC-9 that crashed into the Mediterranean in June, 1980. Both Itavia and the Italian Transportation Minister Salvatore Formica believed that a missile struck the jetliner and was the likely cause of the crash. It may have been a scalar EM missile and a full-up test by the Soviet Union. See "Plane was probably hit, judge says," Birmingham Post-Herald, Jan. 17, 1981.

Also the present author has knowledge of at least one instance in the early 1980's when an American-made tactical ballistic missile was anomalously destroyed shortly after being launched by troops in Europe. The destruction was anomalous and a large hole was inexplicably burned through the side of the missile -- exactly as if it had been struck by a scalar EM missile test in the anti-tactical missile (ATM) role.

8. As another example of airborne scalar EM activity in the Woodpecker grid, in January 1985 a U.S. Navy-dispensed chaff cloud, dispensed well-offshore from San Diego, California was caught by an unexpected wind and blown toward the city. (See figure 8.). As the chaff cloud moved in, significant failures of electrical systems and electrical components resulted. Power was disrupted to as many as 60,000 homes by the incident.

The sudden, unpredicted wind was suggestive of a wind blowing toward an artificially created low pressure area. Under certain conditions, a specialized structure such as that of a piece of sophisticated chaff will reflect scalar waves of frequencies within its cut bandwidth. If scalar modulation frequencies within the chaff bandwidth were present on the Woodpecker carrier grid above and surrounding San Diego, a myriad of reflecting bits of chaff in the moving chaff cloud would produce myriads of random, invisible "fireflies" of EM energy kindled at a distance, from random scalar interferometry, in a zone surrounding the cloud. As these invisible "firefly" pulses of

EM energy pulsed inside components of the electrical systems and electrical controls in San Diego and vicinity, extensive and random internal electrical interference occurred. This lead to widespread, anomalous electrical failures throughout the city.

Note that this activity preceded the huge Soviet scalar EM exercise of April-May 1985. The grand exercise would certainly have been scheduled well in advance by Soviet strategic forces controlling the scalar EM howitzers and Woodpecker grid weapons, and adjustments and smaller tests would have been being made for some months before the tests.

9. Other anomalous "electrical strikes" certainly exist, suggesting Soviet testing may occur widely throughout the world, yet be reported as ordinary but anomalous phenomena. An example which comes readily to mind is the anomalous blast (or blasts) that struck Bell Island, off the east coast of Newfoundland, on April 2, 1978. Persons on the shore of Conception Bay reported seeing fireballs coming down out of the sky and hitting the island, according to Royal Canadian Mounted Police. Highly anomalous atmospheric electrical activity preceded the blast. This may have been Soviet testing of scalar-created electromagnetic missiles. Extensive information on this incident can be obtained from P.A.C.E., 100 Bronson Ave., Apt. 1001, Ottawa, Canada T1R 6G8.

As another possible example, villages in an area of West Donegal in Ireland have been terrorized by freak "lightning bolts" for over two years. Roofs have been literally stripped off, windows smashed, telephones and television sets blown up, and pipelines wrecked. On Dec. 25, 1984 a mighty blast caused a three-day blackout: it accompanied a snowstorm, the first "white Christmas" in the area in 20 years. See "Bolts from the blue," Fortean Times, Issue no. 45, Winter 1985, p. 5.

10. Scalar spikes or pulses from the Soviet testing may also cause other anomalies, including deaths of unsuspecting persons using the telephone. For a candidate event of this type, see "Killer Phones," Fortean Times, Issue no. 45, Winter 1985, p. 8-9; also AP release, Huntsville Times, May 30, 1985; AP newswire June 2, 1985; and New York Times, Sep. 11,1985.

On May 21, 1985, five days after passing a complete physical examination, 17-year-old Jason F. Findley of

Piscataway, New Jersey was on the phone at his grandmother's house, talking to his girl friend. An odd click occurred on the line, followed by a gasp from Findley and then only the TV playing in the background. His grandmother found him unconscious, still clutching the phone in his hand. Rushed to Muhlenberg hospital, he was pronounced dead shortly afterwards. An autopsy could not determine the cause of death, and the telephone company found the phone working properly, properly grounded, and no evidence of excess electrical charge. Findley was lying on a wooden bed which would not conduct electricity. He had a hemorrhage of the inner ear. There had been an electrical storm over Scotch Plains, New Jersey the night Findley died.

AP wire services were told by the special forensic investigator with the New Jersey medical examiner's office that about six people had died in the U.S. in similar circumstances. Others had reported being knocked unconscious by "high voltage shock" from their telephones. Several weeks before Findley's death, another man from Whitehouse Station, New Jersey had been found unconscious with a telephone in his hand. According to the Consumer Product Safety Commission in Washington, D. C., in 1984 nearly 12,000 people in the U. S. were taken to emergency rooms with injuries related to telephones. A hundred of them died, although exact details were not revealed.

Note that the giant Soviet scalar exercise of May 1985 had been detected and verified by Golden. Substantial activity in the Soviet weapon complex, and in the Woodpecker grid over the U.S, continued throughout May and beyond. A phone line may by chance detect one or more atmospheric scalar EM pulses, just as occurred in the blackout in Ventura County, California on Nov. 8-9, 1985. These scalar pulses can travel along a phone line and be broadcast into a person's ear and brain from the telephone earpiece. The proper scalar EM pulse can induce both "acoustic shock" in the inner ear and "electrical shock" conditions in the nervous system. The pulse may also interrupt the body's electrical timing pulses to the heart, causing the heart to stop without physical damage. The scalar EM shock to the brain and nervous system can knock the person unconscious or, if sufficiently strong, kill him instantly. The condition is worsened if the person is ungrounded, since then he acts as a large, open-ended capacitance in series with the telephone instrument's inductance. In such case, the scalar resonance of the equivalent series LC circuit can be sharply excited and resonated. By the nonlinearities of the body and nervous system, the scalar resonance can be translated into an ordinary electrical pulse or resonance. Since the scalar power is not translated into ordinary power except inside the nonlinearities of the human capacitor/nervous system, no damage to the telephone or phone lines need happen. [At the ComTec exhibit in Las Vegas in 1984, John Bedini demonstrated powering a 200-watt speaker system through a 100-foot length of #40 magnet wire, using scalar EM means. He put some 200 "watts equivalent" of scalar energy through the tiny wire to the speakers, where a small Bedini translator translated it back into ordinary electrical "force field" energy, powering the speakers. This was much to the astonishment of the technical audience, since the wire was quite cool and exhibited no evidence of heating, even though by conventional thinking it should have been instantly melted.]

The bottom line is: With increased Soviet scalar weapons activity over the U.S., the telephone system is likely to become more hazardous to humans using it, when the instrument is connected to the external wire. A radio phone is much safer against anomalous scalar EM "spiking."

11. The metal-softening detected and verified by Frank Golden on Jan. 1, 1986 is certainly indicative of a new mechanism or effect added to the Woodpecker grid. The highly specialized nature of the particular detector/amplifier which Golden was using provides strong evidence that the signal was actually derived by recording the scalar EM signals produced by a human cerebrum (two cerebral hemispheres connected by the corpus callosum, forming a scalar interferometer) when the human was successfully performing psychokinesis (metal-bending). The fact that Golden was able to nullify the signal locally by special methods worked out by him lends further credence to this hypothesis. In any event, three hours of very objective experimental data strongly support this thesis. It is therefore indicated that (1) the metal-softening signal had been added for a purpose, and (2) something made of metal was going to be softened, leading to its failure. Certainly the Challenger would have been an ideal target; softening the metal on its boosters and fasteners by even a small percentage would significantly reduce the vehicle's ability to withstand the

stress during launch. This of course is circumstantial evidence only, but the finger of suspicion is there nonetheless. It is a fact that the metal-softening signal was and is in the Soviet Woodpecker-repertoire; it is a presumption that it was intended for use against the Challenger.

- FINAL DRESS REHEARSAL BEFORE THE BIG SHOW -

12. The shuttle launch from Cape Canaveral on the evening of Nov. 26, 1986 seemed smooth as silk to the army of official observers and onlookers. In reality the Soviet Union clandestinely conducted one or more Launch Phase ABM System tests against the vehicle, using it as a convenient target.

Figures 9, 10, 11, and 12 are included to give the reader some preliminary background on the highly significant events which occurred in conjunction with this flight, and previous to it. These figures are newspaper articles from the News Tribune, Fort Pierce, Florida. The articles are used by permission.

Anomalous atmospheric "booms" and airquakes had occurred in the Florida area for over three and a half years prior to the launch. Sixteen counties, most of them on the northern Gulf coast or close to it, had reported booms during the two-year period preceding April 1984. State and local emergency preparedness officials and U.S. Air Force Base representatives met but could not resolve the mystery of what was causing all the anomalous booms.

In fact, many booms had occurred in and around the gulf coast of Florida, particularly offshore from St. Petersburg, starting from several years earlier.

These anomalous booms were caused by the Soviets adjusting and testing the Woodpecker scalar EM grid for weather engineering and potential weapons use. The booms and airquakes were certainly not confined to Florida alone, but also occurred at many other locations throughout the U. S. and Europe.

Mysterious, highly localized seismic microquakes also had occurred at widely scattered locations throughout the U. S.

On at least two shuttle flights prior to the Nov. 26, 1985 launch, large anomalous "booms" had occurred over or around the launch site after launch. No one in NASA knew what they were or what caused them.

So prior to Nov. 26, the Soviets had already prepared and tested the Launch Phase ABM system mode of the grid against at least two U.S. shuttle launches. However, so eerie and strange are the scalar EM weapons that they had been able to do so without the U. S. government even becoming aware of what was going on. In the Kremlin, they must have marveled at our continued ignorance.

At any rate, they tested the Launch Phase ABM system again on Nov. 26, and this time private U.S. citizens happened to capture at least some evidence of what was going on. It still would have died there without surfacing, except for a curious chain of events. Let me briefly recount those events.

****

Lucius Farish publishes a fine little monthly newsclipping collection called UFO Newsclipping Service (Route 1, Box 220, Plumerville, AR 72121). In it she includes clippings on all sorts of anomalies, including UFO's, strange light phenomena, etc. Because of my long work in UFOs (for some time now, placed on the back burner due to the press of my work in Soviet scalar electromagnetic weapons), I've subscribed to Farish's service for several years.

And this time my unorthodox interests certainly paid off. Farish published a clipping of the article, "NASA officials stumped by strange light, boom," by Susan Burgess, News Tribune writer (see figure 10). The moment I read the article, I realized that the Soviets had actually tested the Launch Phase ABM System's area mode against the shuttle launch of Nov. 26, 1985. Further, George Suchary had taken a picture of the marker beacon as it was slewed away at the conclusion of the test.

With alacrity I contacted Ms. Burgess and, through her, George Suchary. Both were very helpful, and Mr. Suchary gave me permission to use his important photograph of the light moving away after the test.
Ms. Margery Bril , the kind librarian at the News Tribune, sent me four clippings.

After reading the article by Julie Enders, Showcase Editor of the News Tribune, I contacted her also. Although extremely busy, Ms. Enders kindly gave me additional details, including the fact that Bob Gladwin had taken a series of eight stills of the launch itself, and in one frame an anomalous, curving line of light with a splash on the end appeared.

At first I thought it might be the answer to a dream. Very tentative information suggested that the "curved light with a splash on the end" might have occurred in one of the pictures taken during the launch sequence itself, with the light striking directly under the shuttle shortly after it lifted off. I was positive the Soviets could strike at the shuttle (or a missile) with a "scalar EM pulse" missile, but hardly dared hope someone could have actually been lucky enough to get a photograph of it.

From my acquaintance with two masters of paranormal photography -- the indomitable Trevor James Constable and a close friend, Joe Gambill -- I understood how one could possibly get a picture of such a strike -- assuming it occurred -- at night, when the same picture could not have been taken in the daylight. I also understood why the camera might catch it when the human eye would not see it.

It seemed that, between them, these friendly, cooperative persons just might have gathered together the positive evidence to prove that the Soviets had struck at the shuttle with an offset test of a scalar EM missile, using a marker beacon for adjustment. (As it turned out. it was not to be as definite as that!) However, time was of the essence.

The Soviet tests had definitely included a test in the "area burst" mode, which can catch and destroy several missiles fired from a deployed silo complex at once. The clinching evidence I had needed for so long on a Soviet test of the pulse mode -- the scalar EM pulse missile -- just might be there in one of Bob Gladwin1s photographs. But there was no time to lose; such evidence is fleeting. and unless I moved quickly, it was likely to fade away and disappear forever. With persistence, the rest followed swiftly. Mr. Suchary graciously gave me permission to use his photographs. These of course prove that the marker beacon was there. (In addition, it was seen by numerous persons.). The News Tribune gave me permission to print the articles. Mr. Gladwin furnished his negatives and gave me full permission to analyze and use his photographs. Personal friends, Everett and Shirley Edwards, printed the photographs in their private darkroom so the negatives would not be out of safe hands for even a moment.

At the time, this book was almost finished. If the photo of the candidate Soviet use of the electromagnetic missile was accurate, quick work would be necessary if it was to be included. My friend and publisher, John Ratzlaff. had already agreed to swiftly publish this large output as soon as I could get it to him. At Omni Video Publishing, Ms. Electra Briggs was alerted to the potential importance of what was coming. She and Mr. Glenn Shoemaker swung by my house from New Orleans, and a quick, informal videoclip was taped, announcing the book. (Murphy's law -- if anything can go wrong, it will -- got me there. Inexplicably, in my near-total fatigue from months of 19-hour days and 7-day weeks on this project, I spoke the date of the Titan explosion as April 19th, knowing full well it was the 18th! It happens. Electra suggested she slap a correcting statement over the video. Done. Be ready to get it out. It's too important; don't sweat the small stuff.)

Zerox copies of the photos were received. There in the fifth photo (or so it seemed) was an unequivocal strike of the scalar EM missile, in the launch sequence itself. The assumed strike seemed to have occurred right under the shuttle, a few seconds after liftoff.

The evidence seemed complete. All that was left was to receive the actual negatives and verify the sequence. At last we seemed to have the smoking gun. The Soviets would have been caught redhanded.

Based on the advance zerox copies, the manuscript was altered. Everything was ready. And then the negatives came in.

In this business, you learn to meet and accept a lot of failures. Things often go astray, and don't wind up as they seem at first blush. This time was no exception. Murphy got us again! The photos on the negative were in a different order then they had been on the zerox copies.

There's no mistaking the order in which the pictures were taken. There they are on the negatives, one right after the other, and clearly numbered. And the curving light with a splash at the end did not occur during the launch sequence at all. Instead, it was taken before the launch -- just how long remained to be seen. Everett and Shirley took the photo and developed it at both extremes: very dark and very light, to bring out all the details possible.

The results were most interesting. As shown on the lighter print (figure 13), the light does not curve down out of the sky and strike toward the ground, it turns up toward the sky and strikes above the distant treeline. Further, as shown on the darker print (figure 14), it does consist of a little ball of light, just like a scalar EM missile would appear. No apparent structure to hold the light appears in either picture, though one could not positively rule this out completely without microdensitometer tests. (One can inadvertently get artifacts like this by focusing on a ball-like light bulb, for example, and then moving the camera while the shutter is still open. On the other hand, there is no evidence that this happened at all, and no street lamp post or other foreign object in the photo.)

(The remaining photos of the liftoff sequence are shown in figure 15.).

We called Mr. Gladwin. He verified that the photos had been taken in order, one right after the other. He had not had the camera on a tripod, but had steadied it on a railing. In other words, the "light streak with a burst on it" had been taken just before the liftoff. Also, Mr. Gladwin had not observed 'the marker beacon, and had not attempted to photograph any such "light in the sky." In fact, visually he had not observed any such streak and burst of light in any scene he was photographing.

So the question is, exactly what did Mr. Gladwin photograph in that photo, just prior to the shuttle's liftoff? The answer is. we just don't know for sure.

Let's run through the two possibilities:

(1) He may have snapped an artifact while moving the camera. If so, the camera was definitely quite still at least most of the time the lens was open, for the treeline is quite clear in the lighter photo, which reduces light saturation and shows details more clearly. Further, there is no evident support or structure attached to the light itself; it seems to be a "disembodied" light. So this possibility is ambiguous, though reasonable. Mr. Gladwin does not recall any such movement of the camera; it was steady while he was shooting.

(2) He may still have snapped a scalar EM missile. If so, it means the Soviets fired a "small test" of the exothermic pulse or scalar EM missile in advance of the actual shuttle launch. Let's pursue that for a moment, and suppose it to be true.

The Soviets already had the marker beacon up in the sky -- that's certain. Many persons saw it. Soviet trawlers off shore and Soviet satellites could also have given the actual position of the marker beacon. Thus the Soviet LPABM System would have had (a) the actual parameters the computer had used to transmit the beacon, and (b) the actual location at which the beacon emerged. Comparison of (a) and (b) is much like having a "meteorological data message" in field artillery: One has the corrections to apply for specific conditions of the medium that cause deviation.

These corrections can then be applied to calculated or "table" data to adjust firing for real-world conditions.

So far so good. The Soviets had the exact position of the registration beacon, and could apply corrections for a shot of the scalar EM missile. They certainly would know the exact position of the shuttle on its launch pad.

If a fairly substantial offset for the scalar EM missile shot were used, "mett corrections" could be applied and a small scalar missile could be zinged in, stopping momentarily at the final offset "strike" position so that a track could be obtained by the scanner extraction beam. Then by comparing the detected offset position of the "burst" of the scalar EM missile to the detected offset position of the marker beacon, the difference could be applied to the beacon's true position to get the true strike position of the missile. The offset used could then be subtracted to give the location where the missile would have struck without the offset, had it actually been fired at the rising shuttle after liftoff. This "adjusted final strike position" could be compared to the shuttle's expected early trajectory (which varies only slightly from standard for the first few seconds) to determine the expected combat success of the shot. It's a little roundabout, but it's a very safe way to do it if one wants quite positive assurance that the missile will not strike the shuttle and destroy it. Since the Soviets delayed the "area burst" and its concomitant atmospheric "boom" to T + 12 minutes, it is evident that a large offset was used for the area strike -- probably about 10 extra minutes -- to positively assure that there would be no actual damage or threat to the shuttle.

It seems logical, then, that they might fire the small scalar EM missile well offset from the shuttle, and just before its launch, to prevent any possibility of actual damage to the shuttle.

So there you have it. Mr. Gladwin's photograph is consistent with such a careful, safe scalar EM missile test by the Soviets, prior to the actual liftoff of the shuttle. On the other hand, it's not possible to say with certainty that that is what it is. It may simply be a very peculiar artifact. In fac, if it were not for the other indicators, one would most certainly not consider such a bizarre possibility as an offset Soviet scalar EM missile strike at the shuttle.

If the "streak" photo is examined as a candidate for a sca1ar EM missile test, then one other thing must be explained: Why did the film capture the test when observers did not see it at all? That, of course, we can explain!

So back to our presentation. Here I'm going to assume -- and accent that this is a postulation -- that the Gladwin photo actually represented a scalar EM missile test. We will run through a possible sequence of events, based on that assumption. We will hypothesize the LPABM system operation and the Soviet conduct of the test. The major events here in the U.S. may be quite real; those assumed to occur in the Soviet Union, of course, are "author's license" -- but hopefully realistic.

****

The evening of Nov. 26, 1985 is perfect. At Cape Canaveral, the shuttle Atlantis is poised on its launch pad waiting to move majestically into the heavens on its impending journey. As launch time approaches, everything is as smooth as a cat's whisker. There is, however, just one small anomaly.

A mysterious light is hanging up in the sky, staying still for awhile, then gently rocking back and forth. The light is a Soviet marker beacon for a scalar EM howitzer. The howitzer, employed in a special scalar EM channel contained in the Woodpecker transmitters and interference grid, will shoot through the EM carriers at an aiming point offset from the shuttle.

Since this is still to be a nondestructive test, no chances will be taken. The pulse mode will be used, and a "scalar EM missile" -- a bundle of energy buried in hyperspace around its moving zero-point in this world -- will be fired directly at an offset aiming point prior to launch of the shuttle. A substantial offset in distance will be used to prevent posing any danger of inadvertently hitting the shuttle on its launch pad.

The marker beacon is necessary for precision. Its desired position will be calculated and the beacon will be placed on station. By placing this source of continuous EM energy in the area, it can be detected by the scanning "energy extraction beam" and tracked by the distant Soviet operator. Soviet trawlers and satellites monitoring the test will report the true position of the marker beacon, which will deviate from the calculated location due to conditions of the channel medium (the Woodpecker beams) at the time. Comparison of the beacon's true position to its desired, calculated position "registers" the marker beacon and yields the "meteorological corrections" which must be applied to standard firing table calculations. These corrections can be applied to any further shot into the area to correct its aim, just as standard field artillery applies registration corrections in the target area.

When the shuttle boosters ignite, an additional track will be obtained from it. The offset from the received track of the marker beacon and the received track of the shuttle booster flame thus will give the exact correction or "shift" from the marker beacon settings that should be used to set the howitzer's aim. In other words, a "relative" firing, offset from the marker beacon registration track, will automatically compensate for any vagaries of the medium experienced by the beams in transmission.

The Russians, being excellent artillerymen, have simply applied the standard artillery technique of shifting from a known registration point.

The Soviet Launch Phase ABM System is cocked and ready. This is the last test in the "wet run" series in which an offset will be used. If everything goes as planned, future shots will move into the next phase, where actual U.S. targets will be destroyed. The two great powers are already at war, but one of them does not know it yet. Because of the importance of this last test before the next step in hostilities commences, Gorbachev himself is monitoring the test.

The countdown begins. In Florida a great many persons are observing the event. George Suchary has already spotted a strange light hanging in the sky, where none ought to be. Bob Gladwin, resting his camera on a railing, prepares to snap his first picture so that he will be sure to have a sequence completely across the launch.

Deep within the Soviet Union, a large display screen is illuminated. The marker beacon's track is clearly shown on the display, as are synthetic symbols for the shuttle on its launch pad, several Soviet ships off the coast of Florida, and several Soviet satellites.

The control officer barks, "Missile test! Proceed!" The simulation officer presses a switch, and a simulated shuttle launch track appears.

The operator responds immediately, "Launch detected!" The identification officer, scanning the frequency components and the signature of the energy extracted from the launch, calls out, "Missile! Target hostile!" He presses a button, and a light illuminates on the panel, marking the target as a hostile missile. The launch track begins to blink.

The control officer announces, "Prepare to fire!" "Pulse mode!" "Strength one!" "Test!" "Apply burst offset!" The operator rapidly flips switches, setting the mode of fire and the offset. Instantly lights light to show that the computer has computed the shift and offset, and corrections. A red "Ready to Fire" light illuminates and a low siren begins its wobbulating growl.

The control officer orders, "Fire!" The operator presses the fire switch. A "Fire" light appears. A slight, deep shudder is felt briefly as the howitzer fires its scalar EM pulse missile of deadly energy. On the screen, the path of the scalar EM missile is traced out as it speeds toward its target far over the horizon.

In Florida, George Suchary is getting more and more curious about that pesky light. Bob Gladwin is preparing to snap his first photo as the final seconds of the countdown tick away.

On the distant Soviet screen, a sudden small burst appears, superposed over the synthetic shuttle track. The operator yells, "Burst!" On a smaller screen, a vertical profile shows the strike directly underneath the target. Immediately a blinking "Target Killed" light appears as the computer assesses the shot a kill.

The operator excitedly calls out, "Kill !" "Direct Hit!" Cheering breaks out from the firing team and the onlookers. Gorbachev and his entourage are smiling broadly and clapping. The cheering quickly hushes as the crew and participants continue to watch the track of the rising shuttle, and prepare for the launch and the next test.

Bob Gladwin has snapped his first picture (figures 13 and 14) leaving the shutter open a bit to allow for the nighttime conditions. As luck would have it, the scalar EM missile strike Occurs during the time the shutter is open. The film has captured the strike by a special process, even though human eyes have not seen it. (We will explain that shortly.).

At 7:29 the Atlantis's boosters ignite and the vehicle begins to rise smoothly off the launch pad. She will continue to rise, then pitch over to a 45 degree angle and proceed down range..

Bob Gladwin is snapping pictures regularly, one after the other.

In the local Florida area, hundreds and hundreds of persons are watching the flawless launch. The tip-off of the Indian River Community College basketball game and the St. Lucie County School Board meeting are held up while participants watch the Atlantis begin to rise serenely upward.

In the Kremlin, another track has appeared on the control screen display. Once again the sharp-eyed operator snaps, "Launch detected!" The identification officer, scanning the frequency components, tersely rasps "Missile! Target hostile!" Again he presses a button, and a light lights on the panel, marking the target as a hostile missile.

The control officer orders, "Simulate multiple firings!" The simulation officer acknowledges, "Multiple firings simulated!" and presses a button to cause the computer to simulate multiple launches on the display.

Immediately other synthetic target tracks begin to appear on the display screen, one by one, clustered around the shuttle launch at various separation distances, pre-arranged to represent multiple firings from a missile silo complex for this exercise. A special audio alarm sounds as each track appears.

The operator immediately calls out, "Multiple tracks! Missile launches!" and then "Identified hostile!"

The control officer orders, "Prepare to fire!" "Area pulse mode!" "Test!" "Apply time offset ten!"

The operator flips switches rapidly, acknowledging. Lights illuminate on the console, showing status of preparation for firing. The "Ready to Fire" light illuminates and the low siren begins again.

Back in Florida, Bob Gladwin has stopped snapping photographs. George Suchary has gone into his house to find his Polaroid camera and take a picture of that pesky light still hanging up there in the sky.

Back in Russia, the fire control officer orders, "Fire!" The operator presses the fire switch. The "Fire" light illuminates, immediately blinking, and the siren changes tone. On the display screen, all target tracks are blinking. A large light on the console comes on, showing that an "exercise time offset" of 10 minutes has been applied. A digital clock starts ticking off the minutes.

Minutes pass as the offset time ticks down.

Back in Fort Pierce, George Suchary is coming out to take photographs of that darn light, which is still hanging up there!

Folks are streaming back into the Indian River Community College gymnasium for the basketball game. Attendees at the St. Lucie County School Board meeting are wandering back inside, to get ready for the meeting.

More minutes pass.

Back at the control console in the Kremlin, the offset clock ticks down to zero. The siren ceases its wobbulating tone and holds a steady note. The "Fire" light ceases blinking and illuminates with steady brilliance. A deep shudder is felt as the howitzer fires again. On the screen, the rapid trace of the mighty scalar EM serpent is shown as it races toward its target.

Suddenly it reaches the target area, and a large blossoming light appears, covering all the target tracks. The operator announces, "Burst!"

All the target tracks flare brightly, then dwindle and die. The "Targets killed" light illuminates and the operator yells, "Kill! All targets killed!"

Wild jubilation breaks out. Everyone is grinning and clapping. Gorbachev personally congratulates the fire control officer and pumps his hand. The tension relaxes visibly. In the noise, the operator touches a joystick and slews away the marker beacon, preparing to shut down the system.

The final test has been a crowning success. Now the real first phase of active combat begins. "And the fools don't even know it yet!" a grinning Gorbachev delightedly announces.

Back in Fort Pierce, precisely 12 minutes after liftoff, high in the atmosphere above the launch site and a little downrange, a tremendous rumbling boom suddenly rocks the coast for hundreds of miles in each direction. The blast is heard as far north as Charleston and as far south as Key West.

George Suchary is taking pictures (figure 10) as the hanging light in the sky suddenly begins to move away, obeying the controls of a Russian operator thousands of miles away. Bob Gladwin has already finished snapping his photographs (figures 13, 14, and 15) of the launch and taken down his camera.

The anomalous light disappears rapidly in the distance, moving faster than any jet aircraft.

People gradually resume their normal activities, talking about the beautiful evening and the perfect launch. Many of them have noticed the strange light that hovered and bobbled in the sky, then sped away.

The final Soviet registration of their eerie weapons for World War III has been completed. A totally different kind of Pearl Harbor -- more akin to a Trojan Horse -- has been prepared for the unsuspecting United States.

Countdown toward Armageddon begins.

****

George Suchary's photograph of the marker beacon, just after it had started slewing away, is shown in figure 10, as printed in the News Tribune.

Bob Gladwin's photographs of the shuttle launch are shown in figures 13, 14, and 15.

Figures 13 and 14 show two developments of the same shot, one light and one dark. The light one shows the treeline in focus in the distance, with the light streak and burst.

Figure 15 shows liftoff of the shuttle and its rise and tilt over on the first part of its trajectory.

Figure 16 shows a possible detailed interpretation of the first Gladwin photo. The simulated aim point was offset from the shuttle, and the strike was directly at the offset point. The computer computed the burst strike strike of the scalar EM missile from the adjusted registration data, and determined whether or not the target was killed.

The control precision is shown by the small size of the scalar EM missile.

The strike of the weapon is caught by the camera, but not seen by the naked eye. None of the many hundreds of onlookers saw the strike, though all of them saw the shuttle launch.

There is a very good reason for that, though it is not commonly known.

Constable

The reason is that Bob Gladwin's camera was utilizing a form of photography pioneered -- to the best of my knowledge -- by Trevor James Constable. At least I learned about it from Constable's books and articles. I then told it to my good friend, Joe Gambill, and Joe applied and adapted it to the unusual photography which he performs. Both Constable and Gambill are masters of this type of photography. Once I got deeply into scalar electromagnetics, I finally figured out what was going on in this methodology.

Briefly, here's the way it works. Scalar energy, of course, has to be detected by some sort of interference phenomenon. There exists a very special way to get a camera to perform such interference for you.

In the EM spectrum, the infrared and the ultraviolet have a special relationship to each other. The ultraviolet is exactly twice the frequency of the infrared, if the two zones are properly chosen. In other words, the UV is the first harmonic of the IR.

The scalar EM energy, since it operates in the Kaluza hyperspace surrounding every point in ordinary space, may be considered to be composed of pure spin. (That is, it's moving in a dimension where each particle of that dimension is spinning). Harmonics there are spin harmonics.

In this photon-interaction produced level of reality (the ordinary world), the IR and UV bands are more closely connected to the "shadow world" in which scalar energy moves. Thus there is a sort of shadowy "swirling" of the scalar energy near the IR and the UV. Entry of the scalar energy into this world, through the IR and UV windows by a kind of "harmonic interferometry," is normally prevented by the presence of visible light. That is, visible light "squelches" the "paranormal channel" that lurks beneath the IR and UV zones.

To make use of the IR and UV interference source zones, Constable covered his camera lens with a special filter (18A) which is opaque to the visible light spectrum and transparent to the IR and UV. Note that the film is sensitive to the IR and UV region we are talking about, but the human eye is not.

When pointed at a sufficiently strong source of scalar energy, such a specially filtered camera has unique characteristics. It strips out the visible spectrum, but still admits the IR and UV spectrum. The scalar energy surges through these two source windows, and phaselocks harmonically. That is, the scalar energy entering through the UV window fits twice neatly in the scalar energy entering through the IR window. This interference, on the film, is (recall) swirling in frequency. The net result is that the film records the interfering scalar energy as visible spectrum energy.

Infrared film can be used to increase the response in many circumstances.

Both Constable and Gambill have rigorously proven this technique in literally thousands of "paranormal" photographs. (They do not necessarily use my scalar EM terminology, but the technique is rigorous and works, regardless of terms.)

Under nighttime conditions, sometimes the particular lens and film combination will phaselock between IR and UV for incident scalar EM energy. This is particularly true when a relatively strong source of IR is in the vicinity.

While Bob Gladwin was taking his photographs, there was no suppression of the IR/UV phase-lock effect by visible light because it was night and there was hardly any visible light entering his lens.

Thus his camera lens and film formed an IR/UV phase-locked interferometer that detected and recorded the strike of the scalar EM missile underneath the shuttle, even though human eyes did not detect it.

At this point it would be interesting to know whether NASA may have had IR cameras focused on this shuttle launch (which was at night). If so, it would also be interesting to know whether any of them may have developed the IR/UV phaselocked interferometer effect, and captured the strike of the weapon.

Note that daylight shots would automatically break the IR/UV phase-lock possibility, by jamming out the effect with visible light, unless a special filter is used to filter out the visible light but leave both the IR and UV.

One would hope that both NASA and the U.S. Air Force will take note and discreetly add a specially filtered camera to the instrumentation observing and recording all future daylight launches.

To recapitulate the major events at the shuttle launch on Nov. 26., 1985, see figure 17. A marker beacon was placed in the vicinity, high over the area, for precise registration and location of tracks relative to it. A scalar EM missile strike may have occurred just prior to launch, and offset from the shuttle.

Then the shuttle lifted off. The exercise called for simulating multiple launches from a missile field. The area code was computed, and the fire order given. A substantial time delay -- say, 10 minutes or more -- was used to absolutely assure that the actual shuttle was well away from the engage blast.

Twelve minutes after launch, the delayed firing in an area "multiple missile kill" mode occurred, producing a massive boom heard for hundreds of miles up and down the east coast. After the boom, the marker beacon was slewed away, and photographed by George Suchary just as it moved.

The shuttle moved on downrange and went merrily on its way, blithely unaware of the jaws of the tiger that had snapped shut behind it.

To the Soviets, this final test of the preparation phase was highly successful. They were now ready to increase the risk level and fire the first round of World War III.

13. On Dec. 12, 1985 the same Soviet weapon tested against the previous NASA shuttle launches and against various aircraft may have deliberately interfered with the controls of an Arrow DC-8 taking off from Gander Air Force Base, Newfoundland. At an altitude of 100 feet, the aircraft -- carrying over 250 U.S. soldiers and civilian crew members -- lost power and sank into the ground tail-low, killing everyone on board. It was a tragedy of enormous proportions to the U.S., and especially to the families and friends of the brave servicemen and crewmembers who lost their lives.

Three Canadian witnesses to the crash were interviewed over the Canadian Broadcast network television news on April 8, 1986 at 10:00 p.m. No flame or smoke issued from the plane before its descent and crash.

However, witnesses reported seeing the aircraft mysteriously glowing with a yellow halo. That is a signature of the use of a scalar howitzer in the "continuous EM emergence" mode, similar to the manner in which several F-111's were downed in Vietnam.

In short, the DC-8's electrical systems were interfered with by electromagnetic energy and noise created throughout each increment of spacetime occupied by the aircraft. A powerful charge was rapidly created in and on the aircraft structures and skin. The "yellow glow" seen by the witnesses was a corona due to the skin of the aircraft acquiring a high electrical charge.

Something also apparently caused the rapid loss of two engines, one after the other. This indicates that the distant Soviet operator may have struck at the engines, one after the other, with a scalar "energy extractor beam." Thus he apparently tracked the aircraft as it moved down the runway, then used two modes against it: one to create serious EM interference with the electrical systems of the aircraft, and one to disable the engines.

With its controls ineffective and power drastically reduced, the doomed aircraft sank to earth, still in its "tail down" configuration from takeoff, and crashed and burned.

Admittedly other factors may also have contributed to the crash. These included reduced lift due to poor engine maintenance, increased weight of the aircraft due to icing, and heavy loading. However, normally the aircraft could still have taken off and flown to its destination. (See "Arrow Air was absolutely safe, FAA official says," UPI release, Birmingham Post-Herald, Apr. 17, 1986.)

To date, no official seems to nave recognized the sinister significance of the "yellow glow" or what it implies. No one seems to have connected the loss of this aircraft, the mysterious booms over U.S. shuttle launches, the Woodpecker interference grid, the anomalous loss of the U.S.S. Thresher, the high altitude "booms" off the east coast of the U.S. some years back, the puzzling loss of two critical Titan launch vehicles in a row, anomalous engine flameouts of civilian jetliners, etc.

Certainly officialdom has not recognized that a Soviet Launch Phase ABM System is being tested directly over its collective head, to include actual destruction of U.S. aircraft, missiles, and space vehicles with concomitant severe loss of American lives.

Direct and diabolical acts of war have been committed upon us by the Soviet Union, but in a fashion that still eludes our erstwhile pundits.

However, it is not as simple as that. To even energize giant scalar EM weapons is to run a risk -- to all mankind -- so horrendous that it boggles the imagination. Truly it deserves Brezhnev's 1975 phrase, "...more frightful than the mind of man has ever imagined."

Shortly we will reveal exactly what he meant.

- Apr. 18, 1986: Death of a Titan -

14. As this book goes to press, the last two U.S. Air Force Titan 34-D missiles fired from Vandenberg Air Force Base in California have blown up shortly after launch. The first one blew up on Aug. 28, 1985 just after lift-off. That loss has been attributed to failure of a high-powered fuel pump, causing a massive oxidizer leak and a smaller fuel leak. The second Titan loss occurred on April 18, 1986 when the Missile blew up 5 seconds after lift-off. Its loss is still under investigation and no determination of cause has been made. Apparently the shuttle and the Titan presently provide the only viable launch vehicles for launching U.S. "spy" satellites. The loss of these sensitive satellites -- if indeed they constituted the payloads -- cannot help but be damaging to our strategic surveillance capability. According to the Los Angeles Times, the single remaining KH-11 satellite was launched in December 1984 and, with an expected life of two to three years, it could stop functioning later this year.

Whether or not significant Woodpecker grid activity existed in the vicinity of the Titan launch of August 1985 is unknown at this time. However, significant activity in the grid definitely occurred before the April 18 Titan disaster and on the same day.

On Easter Sunday, 30, 1986 engineer Ron Cole observed significant cloud signatures of grid pattern activity, correlated with Soviet Woodpecker measurements. On April 18, the present author observed traces of a cloud radial over Huntsville, Alabama and took photographs of it. Preliminary reports from Thousand Oaks, California indicate extensive grid activity again on April 18, the day the second Titan exploded.

At least the second of these two missile destructions shortly after launch is highly suspicious, since the grid positively was active during that time. Also, a clear trail of Launch Phase ABM system indicators exists back to the massive scalar exercise of April/May 1985. The first Titan explosion in Aug. 1985 thus falls within the Soviets' "now let's test them against U.S. launch vehicles" period.

The second Titan loss follows highly suspicious losses of the Arrow DC-8 on Dec. 12, 1985 and the Challenger on Jan. 28, 1986. The same Soviet weapon system that destroyed those targets probably also destroyed one or both of the critical Titans.

At least, on the second Titan explosion, the Soviets left another signature. In one of the videotapes taken of the explosion, the marker beacon can be seen well , above the exploding debris, moving away from the explosion site.

See for yourself! Refer to "Titan Explosion Cripples U. S. Launch, Surveillance Capability," Aviation Week & Space Technology, 124(17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 16-19. Specifically, look at the color photo of the explosion on p. 18.

Look well above the explosion (about one inch on the page) and to the left (about one inch on the page) of the center of the top of the fireball portion. There you will see a little light, caught in the very act of moving away.

At my rather frantic urging, engineer Ron Cole sought out a copy of the original videotape. He and a team spent two hours, going through this portion of the tape frame by frame. The light is there. It's real. And it moves on out of there, well above the explosion and independent of it.

It's the Soviet marker beacon, caught in the very act. Here I want to express my sincere appreciation to Ron Cole for his untiring efforts to nail this light down. Without his dedication to supporting this investigation, it would have been impossible to say for sure that the light was there.

So we have caught the bear red-handed, with his fingers in the cookie jar. If the marker beacon is there, you may rest assured that the Soviets destroyed that Titan missile, with very high probability. [See also "Investigators Search for Clues to Cause of Titan Blast," Aviation Week & Space Technology, 124(17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 19-20; also "Titan Accident Prompts Funding, Technology and Policy Questions," AW&ST, 124(17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 21.].

Continue

Figure 1. Wilson's first cloud radial

Figure 2. Wilson's second cloud pattern

JET AIRCRAFT

Figure 3. Wilson's third cloud radial

Figure 4.

PLACEMENT OF WILSON'S THREE RADIALS

Figure 5.

VIEW FROM WESTLAKE OVER VENTURA COUNTY, CA

1-24-86, 280• WEST/NORTH-WEST

11:45 AM PST

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
A
B
C
C
◇ CLOUD RADIAL I.D.
9 LATERAL CROSS RADIALS
WERE COUNTED IN GRID PATTERN.
280°
230°
330°
N
Ⓐ PINE MTN.
Ⓑ SULPHUR MTN.
Ⓒ THOUSAND OAKS HILLS

Figure 6.

GRID VECTOR APPROXIMATION

1-24-86 VENTURA COUNTY, CA

TOP VIEW
CITY OF VENTURA, CA.
[1]
[2]
[3]
[4]
[5]
[6]
[7]
[8]
[9]
7
6
5
4
3
2
1
0°
N
270° W.
E 90°
S
180°
280° APROX. VIEW ANGLE FROM WEST LAKE
APROX. 28 MILES
[ ] CROSS RADIALS
◇ IN LINE RADIALS

Figure 7.

SIX-MILE DROP IN TWO MINUTES

CHINA AIRLINES FLIGHT 006
- TAIPEI TO LOS ANGELES -
19 FEB 1985

41,000 FT
UPPER LEVEL
TROUGH;
TURBULENT
POCKET
1 ENGINE FAILS,
OTHERS REDUCE,
THEN FAIL
LANDING GEAR
DOWN, DOORS
TORN OFF
11,000 FT
ENGINE
RESTART
SAN
FRANCISCO
9,000 FT
RECOVERY

Return to Fer de Lance Index

The Tom Bearden Website

Fer de Lance

Figure 8.

SAN DIEGO CHAFF INCIDENT, JAN. 1985

GRID
CHAFF CLOUD
RANDOM SCALAR INTER FEROMETRY
SAN DIEGO
SAN DIEGO INCIDENT
JANUARY 1985

Return to Fer de Lance Index

EM Missile Strike, Offset from Night Shuttle Launch

Cape Canaveral, Florida

EM MISSILE STRIKE
26 NOV 1985

(LIGHT DEVELOPMENT)

OFFSET FROM NIGHT SHUTTLE LAUNCH

PHOTO BY BOB GLADWIN

EM MISSILE STRIKE
26 NOV 1985

(DARK DEVELOPMENT)

OFFSET FROM NIGHT SHUTTLE LAUNCH

MARKER BEACON
Over Night Shuttle Launch
Cape Canaveral, Florida

26 Nov 1985
Photographed by George Suchary

© T.E. BEARDEN 1995

The Smoking Gun on 26 Nov. 1985

Longitudinal EM Wave Interferometry: Exothermic

Energy input to transmitter/receiver

Energy input to transmitter/receiver

XMTR/RCVR

XMTR/RCVR

Φ_T

Electrical ground potential of transmitter

subspace

subspace

Bias

Heating in interference zone

Φ_a

Ambient vacuum potential in distant interference zone

Meeting of longitudinal EM waves causes heating

ⓒ T.E. BEARDEN 1999

Longitudinal EM Wave Interferometry: Endothermic

Meeting of longitudinal EM waves causes cooling

COOLING IN INTERFERENCE ZONE

Ambient vacuum potential in distant interference zone

Φ_a

subspace

Heat extracted

Bias

XMTR/RCVR

XMTR/RCVR

subspace

Φ_T

Electrical ground potential of transmitter

© T.E. BEARDEN 1996

Heat emerges at transmitter/receiver

Heat emerges at transmitter/receiver

- More Frightening Than the Mind of Man Has Ever Imagined -

Brezhnev's unheeded 1975 characterization of these weapons as "more frightening than the mind of ran has ever imagined" has very real justification. In a moment we shall explain what he meant. We shall also explain why the Russians may be serious about substantial nuclear disarmament.

There is now a "balance of terror" loose in the world that makes the old MADmen's MAD concept look like a sunny day in Hawaii.

Let me explain just a little of what I mean.

The scalar EM can and does use an ordinary EM beam as a medium. Many, many scalar EM channels can be infolded into an ordinary carrier. Thus the amount of energy stored in the carrier as "electrogravitational" energy has little to do with the feeble amount of electromagnetic energy stored in the EM carrier signal.

Thus in one sense, when the Soviets are employing the big "continent buster" weapons, literally hundreds of millions -- or even billions -- of watts of energy may be infolded into the seemingly weak carrier beams. All this energy is in the scalar EM channels established in the carriers.

Plus which, the scalar beams are employed in a "standing wave" node. Each scalar standing wave is like a gigantic "capacitor": It is highly charged. Under normal conditions, it has a charge and discharge time constant as well. If something were to "short circuit" one of these huge standing waves -- say, one with a thousand megawatts in it -- all that stored electrogravitational charge would discharge through the short circuit into whatever is on the other end of the short, and into the ground itself. In other words, the earth itself in that location would receive a mighty electrogravitational pulse (EGP). The ground in a region surrounding the discharge point would "charge up" just like a capacitor, and would transmit the EGP as a hemispherical current into the earth and spreading around it. This is where the real problem cores in.

The problem, as originally discovered by Wilhelm Reich [orgone energy was and is real, and is simply one form of scalar electromagnetics], is that radioactive material has a very great affinity for this EGP and undergoes a drastic reaction to it. Crudely, it works like this:

Imagine the vacuum as a virtual particle gas. This gas is under extremely high "pressure" or, more correctly, internal Stress. This stress is a gravitational potential.

However, the stress of the ambient vacuum is normally about the same in most localities. So a chunk of radioactive material doesn't experience a difference in vacuum potential across itself or throughout itself. In other words, the scalar EM fluxes in and out of every part of the nucleus are very high, but of equal magnitudes. The radioactive nucleus, however, is "unbalanced"; that is, it has an extra bit of unresolved EG potential which it would very much like to get rid of or discharge, by spitting out one or more particles. That is, it would like to "decay" to a more stable configuration. A nucleus that is trying to decay to a more stable configuration is a radioactive nucleus.

Remember, the radioactive nucleus is involved in a tremendously dynamic virtual particle flux exchange with the vacuum potential. And a part of it isn't quite in balance in that flux. Sooner or later the right "bobble" in the input flux will come along, and the nucleus will decay and emit a particle and/or radiation. By measuring the level of decay activity in a certain amount of the radioactive material, we can determine a "decay constant," or basically the probability that a nucleus will decay in one second. We can then determine how long it will take that chunk of material to decay away to a stable, relatively inert material. Some materials only require a few minutes to decay, while others may require thousands of years.

Now if you suddenly and drastically change the stress of the vacuum in which a radioactive nucleus is imbedded, you change the potential placed on the unbalanced nucleus. You hit it, in other words, with a strong EG potential pulse -- an EGP. That instantly unbalances the nucleus and it decays explosively. That is, it changes the decay constant and the probability of decay.

Basically that's what happens in a nuclear implosion weapon: You hit the radioactive hunk of material in the center with a very high, imploding pressure wave, which is carrying an EGP. The EGP causes all the nuclei to decay nearly instantly, producing a nuclear explosion.

The bottom line is: strong EGPs wreak havoc if they happen to hit anything radioactive. Such as nuclear warheads, in missiles or in storage. Such as nuclear reactors. Etc.

Now do you begin to see the problem? Let me spell it out.

Suppose the Soviets have activated some of their giant scalar EM transmitters, to place a giant weather engineering grid over the U.S., or to knock down a Challenger or a Titan. They've got their scalar EM beams all charged up. One of the giant Woodpecker transmitters has -- let's say -- 500 megawatts in its infolded scalar EM standing waves. Everything is going good. They're socking it to the Americans and the Europeans.

All those multiple scalar EM frequencies they're using to form the patterns, etc. have to all be absolutely phaselocked. Therefore all the transmitters have to be rigorously phaselocked, too.

And suddenly something goes wrong. A major amplifier/transmitter controlling or stabilizing the phaselocking malfunctions. The phaselock is disturbed, and begins to quiver.

Emergency circuits react instantly, trying to stabilize the situation and restore the quivering phaselock. Little "shorts" are being applied to the circuitry and to the "giant capacitor" that is the scalar EM standing waves. Dumps and discharges of EM energy are beginning to flash in the transmitter and associated circuits -- and into the ground. These make the situation more unstable. Feverishly the emergency circuits struggle to contain this thing -- and Wham! they cave in, all at once.

Now you get a mighty and continuing discharge of the scalar EM energy in that standing wave back into the transmitter and into the ground. It burns out the transmitter. And the discharge continues as the "capacitor" drains all its EG energy into the earth in a giant pulse.

Around the transmitter site, the EGP is transmitted radially away, still very much like a standing scalar wave. It reaches the first nuclear facility. Let's suppose it's a nuclear reactor. Specifically, let's suppose it's a nuclear reactor at Chernobyl.

If you'll check Soviet Military Power, DoD, 1986 you'll find that there's a big ABM radar site not far from Chernobyl. And Canadian sources verify that one of the large Woodpecker transmitters seems to be sitting in that general location. Now check "The Soviet Nuclear Disaster," The Wall Street Journal, Apr. 30, 1986, p. 24. Check the small drawing in the lower right corner of the bigger drawing. Here you can see that a Woodpecker transmitter located near Chernobyl would ideally transmit nearly due west to intersect over the U.S., entering across North America from its east. Other Soviet "over-the-horizon (OTH) radar transmitters" go over the north polar regions, to enter the U.S. from the North. The two then form a giant interference grid over the U.S. (You can see that in Soviet Military Power.).

Suppose you were in the field in the U.S., measuring the Woodpecker signals. Suppose the stronger beam was coming from the east. You would be able to see this with your instruments.

Now suppose the giant transmitter near Chernobyl got into the type of failure we're talking about. The emergency circuits panic and cut down the EM carriers, trying to drain away the standing scalar waves in a controlled fashion. Then your instruments would suddenly record the "new" direction as coming from the north, since the east carrier is gone.

That's exactly what engineer Bill Bise detected out in California, about the time it appears the reactor at Chernobyl began to get in trouble.

Let's continue with our scenario. Suppose the emergency circuits at the discharging Chernobyl transmitter contain things for awhile. The standing scalar waves are steadily draining into the earth. The EG potential starts to rise at the Chernobyl nuclear power plant.

In the nuclear reactors, the decay constant of the uranium in the fuel rods changes. Additional radioactivity begins to pour out of the uranium. The reactor alarms go off, and the crew takes measures to reduce the problem. The control rods go further in, to slow it down.

But the EG charge keeps increasing. The radioactivity of the uranium continues to increase. The control rods go further in to counteract this. The electrical controls begin to act up, showing anomalous indications. The radioactivity increases. In panic, the controls are fought until the control rods go all the way in. The reactor should in fact now be shut down completely, in normal circumstances.

Things settle and hold a bit. The scalar EG charge increases. Finally the "shutdown" reactor starts to increase in radioactivity again. The control rods can't handle it. Everything is heating up, including the graphite moderator. Back at the transmitter, the emergency circuits finally are overwhelmed and give in. They fail all at once. The dreaded "uncontrolled short circuit" now exists between the collapsing standing wave and the earth. A gigantic discharge of EGP into the earth occurs at the transmitter site.

In the desperate reactor, suddenly a great EGP appears. Instantly the uranium goes intensely radioactive. A gigantic pressure of heat, steam, graphite and radioactive materials bursts out of the reactor, breaching the building and erupting violently into the atmosphere. The core melts down. The graphite moderator ignites. You've got the realization of the nuclear engineer's worst fears: core meltdown and reactor out of control. It's afire and spewing deadly radioactivity out by the gobs. And the heat! It's like hell itself opened up for business in this spot.

At any rate, something very similar to that seems to have happened at Chernobyl.

This author believes something similar happened in 1957 in the Southern Urals. (See Zhores A. Medvedev, Nuclear Disaster in the Urals, Translated by George Saunders, W. W. Norton & Co., 1979, p. 150.). In the Kyshtym area, an explosion of nuclear wastes stored underground occurred in the winter of 1957-58. The area for miles around was contaminated, and is still contaminated to this day.

Recall, Khrushchev spoke of a fantastic weapon in development in January 1960. Early prototypes of the weapon would have been in development and testing in 1957. Probably at that time there were no emergency control circuits to handle standing wave collapse, or only primitive circuits at best.

If the failure of a transmitter occurred in full-power experiments, the unrestrained collapse of the standing scalar EM wave would most certainly have produced a large EGP in the ground, and instantly activated the nuclear wastes stored nearby. Eyewitness accounts reportedly stated that the wastes exploded, and that is totally consistent with our thesis. It is in fact a scalar EM accident signature.

Any nuclear facility at all is an incredible and monstrous risk whenever scalar EM weapons are active.

Of course, one's nuclear facilities are at risk if one's enemy has scalar EM weapons and fires at them, as we covered earlier in this book.

However, they are at terrible risk even from one's own scalar EM weapons. The consequences ot a relatively simple electronic failure can be catastrophic; not only for the local nation, but for the earth as a whole.

To show what we mean:

Suppose a similar scalar EM accident -- such as seems possibly to have happened at Chernobyl -- occurs at some other giant Soviet "radar" facility. Further, suppose this particular transmitter is not too many tens of kilometers away from a Soviet missile silo complex. Just to really throw in the grit, suppose these missiles are the "big monsters" with--- say -- a 50 megaton warhead in each missile. Suppose there are 10 of them in the complex.

Let's say this accident occurs "catastrophically" -- that is, the emergency control circuits are overwhelmed immediately and a discharge of all the scalar energy begins at once.

A giant EGP strikes the earth, spreads in all directions, and strikes the waiting monster missiles. In their implosion trigger warheads and in their fissionable and fusionable payload, everything goes at once. Actually, it goes better than when normally triggered. So each one goes at about 100 megatons.

You've just had a monstrous 1,000 megatons of nuclear explosion in the earth. You get a giant earthquake. If it's not too far from the ocean, you get a tidal wave also. You get incredible amounts of lethal dirt and debris, radioactive and deadly, hurled violently into the air.

This is just about the equivalent of a "normal all-out nuclear war!"

And what about the other side's detection and early warning systems? Who's going to alert whom, and for what? How many missiles get launched?

I think you see the point.

And I haven't even covered what a giant EGP can do to humans. If it's truly a catastrophic failure, you can get an EGP that can wipe out half a mighty nation in one burst!

And if the discharge happens to tickle the Sun and Moon's feedback loops the wrong way, you'll get convulsions of the earth, mighty burps of the sun raining fire and brimstone on the earth, and a violent increase in the interior heat of the earth's molten core, with a concomitant eruption of that core right up though the mantle.

In other words, it could be "back to the beginning" for the earth, and start all over -- if, that is, some semblance of an earth survived.

The Soviets know full well the implications of their giant scalar EM weapons. (Remember, I estimate they have over a hundred of these monsters, based on Frank Golden's detection of their full-up exercise in April/May 1985.).

Scalar EM weapons have added a totally new dimension to the meaning of the word "terror". If one develops them and his adversary does not, nothing on earth can stand against them. So in Man's present state, the temptation to develop them is nearly irresistible.

On the other hand, if one's adversary already has developed them, one is already totally defeated unless one also develops them. Again, the need to develop them is imperative.

Yet, whenever one activates a large scalar EM weapon, one immediately places the entire earth in deadly peril. The slightest misstep, and it's curtains for everyone. And it's curtains for the earth as well.

So one is damned if one does, and damned if one does not.

We have reached the final turning point in human history. The clock is ticking away the last years -- or days -- of the lives of all humans on earth. There has never been such a threat.

We simply have come to the crossroads. somehow, all Mankind has to change.

Infatuated with the thirst for ultimate power, we are facing two doors. Behind one is a beautiful lady, and the fulfillment of all man's dreams: control of physical reality itself. Behind the other is the deadliest tiger ever dreamed of in our wildest nightmares.

Which is it to be, the lady or the tiger?

SCALAR EM INOCULATION AND ITS IMPLICATIONS

My appreciation goes to Gary North for his openly sharing the above important information with the public. Human nature being what it is, one or more of his more dire scenarios is going to happen sooner or later.

The problem becomes enormously more compounded if the hostile agent or agents possesses sophisticated scalar EM technology.

With scalar technology, there exists the potential that the worm or virus can be implanted from a distance. If scalar scanning devices of sufficient precision can be developed, then major software residing in a chip, a computer, or on a disk can be read from a distance. With scalar EM methods, the ordinary software "guards" are totally ineffective. The scalar "reader" could simply read off the software directly as the disk or device goes about its normal operations.

After the software is read, a germ or a virus is designed to produce a particular problem as desired and upon special stimulus. Then a scalar "imprinter" device is used to produce the necessary digital pulses directly upon the media in which the software resides. The required code has now been .implanted. In effect, the operating system has been injected from a distance, and contaminated with the desired "sleeping agent" -- germ or virus. From there on, it's just like Gary North's scenarios.

So the scalar EM technology can probably be used (at least eventually) to place "mines" in systems in advance, for damage or destruction at a future date. At least it's possible in principle.

However, it's not the injection of computers and equipment that bothers me. It's the injection of human beings. Here's generally how it can be done (and possibly is being done).

Basically, human brains have various rhythmic waves which represent "envelope pulsations" of the entire electrical system. However, it is not the EM force fields represented by these pulsations which are important: it is the summed-zero (scalar) patterning of the entire complex of neuron firings which represents the real activity of the brain -- and represents it thoughts and emotions. A storage system for these patternings exists, but it's a scalar pattern storage, not an E and B field storage. The storage system is in the nuclei of the tissues of the nervous system itself, not in electrical or electrochemical potentials.

At any rate, the human brain rhythms are also "riding along" relatively entrained to the Schumann resonance of the earth's magnetic field. So all the patterning of the brain is grouped together into giant overall orders, and one or more of these is normally synchronized to our natural environment.

If a varying magnetic signal of extremely low frequency -- say 10 hertz -- bombards the brain with greater power than the earth's magnetic field, it is possible for the brain's rhythm to be "forcibly entrained" to synchronize with that signal, rather than with the normal Schumann resonance. If a large number of brains are forcibly entrained to such a signal, and the signal is artificial, then a master coherent phasing of all the brains to the transmitted signal has been accomplished.

And that can be utilized -- and is utilized -- by the Soviet Union. On the Woodpecker signals, Bob Beck has detected up to 16 carriers, each with a 10 Hertz modulation, and with all the 10 Hz modulations in phase.

Let's stress what we're saying here. At times, the Woodpecker signals have shown 16 carrier frequencies which contain the same 10 Hertz modulation, and which are all kept coherently sync-locked.

If those signals and the modulations are strong enough, the brains in a targeted area demodulate the 10 Hertz signal and phase-lock to it -- actually, to them. At that point, the brains are entrained to a 10-Hertz driver, and 16 channels of multimegahertz frequencies are locked-in to the brain.

Now if the Soviets have broken the genetic code of the human brain (which they have) and succeeded in developing the ability to implant thoughts, emotions, pictures, etc. (which at least to a degree they have), then they can simply record the proper signals from human guinea pigs, using scalar technology and instrumentation. They can tailor those signals and add them onto the Woodpecker carriers, using scalar EM techniques. By using most of the sixteen carriers as a means to express Fourier frequency expansions, specific areas and functions of the brain can be targeted.

Notice that the distant transmitters al ready "know" the correct phasing; just use the 10 Hertz modulation signal as a reference. In that case, phasing takes care of itself inside the captured human brains.

The brain has a unique characteristic. If a signal arises inside it, it interprets that it itself originated the signal. Thus for the first time in history , true unwitting "robot" actions and emotions can be engendered in masses of human beings.

But it's still worse. The Kaznacheyev experiments (see references) proved conclusively that electromagnetic signals can carry and transmit cellular disease and death patterns into a targeted biosystem. You can rest assured that the Soviets continued on to actually measure and determine a wide variety of death and disease scalar patterns. All of that can be added on to the Woodpecker carriers so that the population in the intersection grid area is devastated. One can even test it out in advance by producing a modified pattern of a disease in the targeted populace, and keeping the percentage of brains entrained down to a small level. This lowers the number of persons "injected" from a distance to a small percentage of the populace. Then the outbreak of the "new strain" of a familiar disease -- such as influenza, pneumonias, and something like AIDS -- can be monitored to provide targeting and effectiveness data. Notice that a series of diseases was experienced by U.S. personnel assigned to the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, probably as a result of the so-called "weak microwave radiation" of the Embassy by the Soviet Union.

But that's not all. Much more subtle effects can be produced in the targeted populace, without anyone getting wise. Cancers and leukemias should be relatively easy to induce. Also, the immune system can simply be attacked directly. If done slowly, a series of common, ordinary diseases will just seem to get "tougher and tougher to cure." Actually it's not the disease that got tougher, it is the immune systems that got weaker. It is my opinion that precisely that sort of testing -- against the immune system -- has been accomplished by the Soviet Union against the U.S. since about October, 1985. A great percentage of influenza patients during the period from then until now have had complications. So much so that multiple sessions -- as many as 3 to 5 -- of antibiotics are necessary before the patient recovers. At least in the Huntsville, Alabama "hinge pin" area, that seems to have been the case. This author personally experienced this, having influenza and follow-on complications for a period of seven months -- something quite different indeed for him.

But it's even worse.

The human scalar EM nervous system ("inside" the ordinary EM signals and functioning of the system) also has its own resident "software." It has special storage media contained in its brain. its cells, and its genetic material, and its actual nucleons. All of these storage media are continually telecommunicated with via scalar EM means. The "stability" of what each of us is, is largely conditioned by those recordings. As personalities we literally "are" what we have experienced, felt, thought, and did. Our whole "functioning conscious system" has been evolved by our experience, and it continues to be "us" by means of continual reference to the record base.

I hope you now realize that the actual record base itself can conceivably be altered by scalar electromagnetic means, even from a distance. Even by the hidden scalar EM content of 16

Woodpecker carriers, locked into a captured brain and pouring in their deadly content. It is conceivable that even what one is can be taken from him, and what someone decides he will be, he will be.

A totally new -- and ultimate -- form of "slavery" has emerged.

Also, look at all this scalar EM functioning of the human system as a special kind of cybernetics. A scalar EM computing software and hardware system.

What if scalar techniques are used to plant "worms" and "viruses" in this system? With hidden triggers? What about a series of them, so that a range of "eruptive software diseases" can be stimulated at will?

And guess what. Such scalar EM "worms" and "viruses" can even be induced by contact with or consumption of "contaminated" water and food. Or saliva. Or other body fluid.

So you can see the possibilities of "seeding" a population with a staggering variety of time-bombs.

I think you begin to see the point. Now you can change North's "Soviet blackmail" scenario drastically. In a new scenario, Gorbachev simply announces to Reagan that a graduated series of specific sweeping changes are going to happen in our population -- changes which we are absolutely powerless to stop. The last stages are various deaths. The master "trigger" for this series has already been initiated. Incidentally, the Soviet populace has been carefully "seeded" with the proper antidotes. The Russian leader demands certain things (very similar to what North's scenario utilized). Unless his demands are met, a "killer virus" will be activated by a special signal. If so, everyone dies. The first step change in the series will start to occur in a few hours. And it does.

In fact, this scenario could be added to North's scenario, and both used simultaneously. What do you think the President and the Congress would do? Or could do?

There are other even more diabolical possibilities, but these should be quite sufficient to illustrate the point.

Pandora's box has already been spilled, and the end of humanity is ticking away like a time-bomb. It's already nearly midnight, and the watchman hasn't even sounded the alarm yet.

I certainly can anticipate the next question: Have the Soviets already "seeded" the populations of the U.S. and other selected western nations with scalar EM viruses and germs"?

The answer is, I simply don't know. And just like Gary North, I don't know what if anything can be done about it if they have. This researcher certainly doesn't have all the answers. An immediate national crash program to develop scalar EM defenses is essential if we are not simply to be crushed beneath the hammer and sickle. It takes funding, people, facilities, and time.

In some 22 years of unrelenting struggle to convince the system we've got a terrible problem, I've hardly been able to move it off dead-center (no pun intended). This book, produced under extreme workload stress, is all I can do to raise the alarm. I've given it my very best shot.

What happens now remains to be seen. Other hands, hearts and minds are going to have to take up the task and carry it forward. This researcher has reached his limit, and has no more left to give.

1986 APPENDIX II

COMPUTER WORMS AND VIRUSES, AND THE IMPACT OF SCALAR EM

Source: - Gary North, "Electronic Aids (Parts 1 and 2)," Remnant Review, 12(20), Nov. 1, 1985, p. 1-8; 12(20), Nov. 15, 1985, p. 1-8. POB 8204, Fort Worth, TX 76124. Phone (817) 595-2691.

Annotation: - Two deliberately un-copyrighted issues to alert the public to software worms and viruses, and their implications for drastic interruption of society. Describes a hypothetical scenario in which drastic scrambling and destruction of banks' computer tapes, files, and records occur due to software worms and viruses. Written in first person by Gary North. [Slightly edited.]

Article: - "Worms." Earlier this year, I read a very interesting article on a major problem facing computer software (programs) development companies. A program comes on one or more 5.25-inch plastic discs. It takes only a few seconds to copy a program on one disc to a blank disc, which costs $3. Yet these programs normally run at least $250, and usually sell at $495, and sometimes cost thousands. Very few are less than $100. So you have a major temptation: make a $500 asset out of a S3 asset. Insert the $500 program into drive A, write "COPY A:*.*.B:" and hit the "enter key;" sixty seconds later, you have a $500 program in drive B.

There are ways to make this copying more difficult. The companies code the programs, and force you to have a control disc in drive A at all times. These "copy protected" programs are a hassle for users. We cannot put them on "hard (big) disc" easily, and sometimes the control disc dies for some reason. Then what? Your data are locked in your hard disc or on a floppy disc, but you can't get to the data because the control disc is not functioning. You order a replacement. Weeks go by.

Last year, several firms came up with a solution. It is called a worm. A worm is a command that is built deep into the complex code that creates the program itself. These are incredibly complex codes, and it is easy to bury a command in them. They cannot be traced.

What does the worm do? It "eats" things. Say that you are a software thief. You make a copy of a non-copy-protected disc, either to use on a second computer, or to give (or sell) to a friend. The program works just fine. But when the program is copied to a new disc, the worm is "awakened." It bides its time, maybe for many months, maybe for years. The program's user is blissfully unaware that a monster lurks inside his pirated program. He continues to enter data, make correlations, etc. He becomes completely dependent on the program.

Then, without warning, the worm strikes. Whole sections of the data disappear. Maybe the data storage disc is erased. Maybe it is just scrambled. Even his backup data discs have worms in them. Everything he entered on those discs is gone. Forever.

Can you imagine the consternation of the user? He has become dependent on a booby-trapped program. His business could simply disappear. For the savings of $500 (stolen program), he could lose everything he has.

Several firms threatened to insert worms into their programs. But then they backed off. They are afraid that lawsuits initiated against them might go against them in court. They could be hit for damages suffered by the thieving victims. Juries might decide that the punishment, a bankruptcy) was too much for the crime (a $500 theft).

So far, no worms are lurking in any commercial software programs — as far as I know and the industry knows, anyway. But what if a disgruntled programmer was to hide one in a master copy of, say, Lotus 1-2-3, the most popular business program on the market? What if ten thousand copies a month go out for, say, three years? Then, without warning, every company that has started using them loses three years of data? They sue Lotus. Lotus goes bankrupt paying lawyers. No company in the industry is willing to talk about this sabotage threat publicly. Obviously.

LARCENISTS

I just happened to stumble across an article on worms in a computer magazine. It occurred to me that it might be possible to use the worm technique as a form of deliberate sabotage rather than just as a copy protection device. But what did I know? I'm not a computer expert.

I know a computer expert, however. I mean, a real expert — one of those people you occasionally read about. In the world of business, they're called "space cadets." They operate somewhere in between the asteroid belt and Jupiter. But this one is different. He's a businessman, too.

I got him to sit down with me to discuss the problem of worms. It turned out that he has a real fascination for the topic. He tells me that there are advanced design worms, called 'viruses' by 'hackers' — computer freak programming geniuses. "The software virus is the most terrifying thing I've ever come across," he told me. And then he showed me why. My initial scenario is based on only a portion of his estimation of the threat. It gets a lot worse.

He gave me a 90-minute FIRESTORM CHAT interview. He must remain anonymous. He used to be a software developer for programs that were used in the U.S. banking system, but is now employed in a highly sensitive job in a related industry. Therein lies his problem. If he were to tell the story of what he is capable of doing to these banks, his firm might lose a lot of sales. He can't "go public." Let's call him Tom.

Let me summarize briefly some of the details he gave to me. They floored me. They're going to floor you.

(1) Jackpotting. The rush is on in the banking world to get automated teller machines (ATM's) into shopping malls, supermarkets, and in front of every bank. We've all seen them. Just walk up, punch in your card number, ask for cash, and you get it.

In a busy location, one of these machines can hold as much as $250,000 in cash, mostly small bills. These machines are controlled by computer. They are hooked up to the bank's computer system, usually by phone lines. This local line, Tom tells me, is what computer freaks call THE LOOP. The loop is wide open to tampering. He says that what computer thieves are doing is to hook up a cheap Apple II computer, tie into the phone lines, break into the ATM, and get it to empty itself. This is "jackpotting."

He tells me that ATM thieves are hitting banks continually, but nothing is getting to the press. The banks have yet to show a profit with the ATM's so far, which is understandable. They are hoping to get their machines placed in key locations, so "market share" is crucial to their plans. They are suffering horrendous losses in the short run in the hope that long-run profits will pay off, if and when a defense is developed.

The banks are saying nothing because of their fear that if the extent of the losses gets into the press, they will be forced by pressure from depositors — bank runs — to cancel the ATM's. The losses are horrendous, he says. At present, there is no known defense, given the communications technology.

(2) Rounding Off. This is the "preferred" computer bank theft system. Someone on the inside who has access to the software takes advantage of the banks' need to round off numbers. The programs carry numbers out to 13 places. Banks can't use all that space. So when they balance the books (interest rates at, say, 9.873), they just don't count every tenth of a cent. The program is assumed to round off the numbers randomly. What does the bank care? But the thief has set up bank accounts that absorb those random tenths or hundredths of a cent. In millions of dollars worth of transactions (federal funds, etc.), programmers in some cases have stashed away hundreds of thousands of dollars — maybe millions — over a few years. No one knows how much of this goes on.

How could a bank spot this? The books would always balance to the penny. How would the accountants ever know?

I think of a story that Adam Osborne tells in his paperback book, Running Wild. The president of a large firm was looking out his window one day, and he noticed two Rolls Royce cars parked next to each other. He inquired as to the owners. They were two men in the data processing department. He called in investigators, and the cars and the men disappeared. They fled to Brazil and took their cars with them; **Brazil** has no extradition treaty with the U.S. Years later, as

Osborne was writing the story, the firm still hadn't figured out what they had done.

ARSONISTS

These are the fearful ones, far more than the larcenists. These are the practical jokers who get into a major data bank and trash things. It's a kind of multimillion-dollar "Kilroy was here" graffitti.

How easy is it to get in? Incredibly easy. The boy in "War Games" really could have broken into most firms' telephone-connected computers. Computer programs exist that allow the user to hook up his computer to a phone line and randomly dial numbers until they hear the telltale whine of a computer line. It then notes the phone number and goes on its way, searching out more lines.

They can do it by long distance, free of charge. The telephone company has a tough time tracing those who use various sorts of electronic black boxes to call anywhere on earth at no charge. Some people get caught, of course. "The tip of the iceberg," says Tom.

How do they get in? Easy: few systems are protected, once you locate the line. If one is, he says, you create a deliberate error. Most programs then collapse the protective shell, and the hacker finds himself inside the heart of the system. Tom has designed a program that keeps this from happening to his company's programs, but few companies have anything like it.

It's very easy to get in if someone has "logged on," — opened his terminal's connection to the main computer — if the system is connected to phone lines. Or anyone in the company can just tap in, if someone has left his desk and left the computer on. It's common to forget and leave an open terminal.

He showed me. He says anyone can get fired for leaving a computer on. He demonstrated his point. With 40 computers on line, he ran a quick search and found two of them "logged on," despite the fact that it was after hours. All the security in the world can't do anything if a computer line is open. It's like a burglar alarm; it's worthless if you leave the door unlocked or leave the keys lying around. That janitor you hired. Is he a computer illiterate? Or a plant?

Once inside, what can you do? Steal a fortune? Yes, if you really know the system. He told me he could easily steal $3 million from a local bank, even as an outsider. He would then offer to give it back and keep his mouth shut about how easy it was if the bank would pay him 10% the take. He thinks most banks would capitulate for fear of the publicity. In any case, he knows that he probably wouldn't get caught.

How about creating a new identity? The grade-changing scene in "War Games" is true. You could even create a new identity, give yourself high grades in any academic discipline, just by breaking into a university's database. There is very little security here, he says.

But for sheer vindictiveness, for sheer envy, consider the possibilities of a virus-implanter. He gets inside the computer for a major communications link: telephones, large information database, bank wire transfer, or whatever. Then he lays the egg: a tiny, untraceable brief instruction. Inside a huge database are just a few characters. These float inside a system, seeking to devour certain kinds of data, or executing certain routines.

There is a game played by computer freaks called "Core War." They try to implant these killer messages, which seek out each other and battle one another. If you find one morning that yours has been consumed, you lost the battle. That was probably the origin of worms and viruses.

TERRORISM

Say that a revolutionary terrorist group, or some anti-zionist group gets a "ringer" into a system. He might be a computer genius type. Everyone knows they are either oriental, dark-skinned people with accents, or teenagers. The firms don't hire teenagers, but they hire a lot of foreigners. They may even check the guy's credentials. Electronic credentials. (Ha!) Then they turn the guy loose in the system.

The virus is implanted deep inside the system. It can then be transferred to any other bank's computer by means of EFT (electronic funds transfer). Maybe it is triggered when someone with a peculiar name and address opens a bank account. Three days later: Bam! The data disappear. They haul out the back-up tapes. Bam! The virus is on them, too. It is a process of infection, contamination, and incubation. There is no known defense. Not yet. This is the bottom line.

ANTIBODIES

The designer of a virus can also design an "antibody." The antibody is a counter-virus agent that seeks out a virus and destroys it. But like other antibodies, it must be specific. The only way today that an antibody system can be created is to know what kind of a virus is involved beforehand.

Tom says that people are now selling antibodies at very high prices. Who is paying? Big companies that suspect that there is a virus present in their computers. In all probability, the guy selling the antibody created and injected the virus. But now can any businessman prove it? So he pays the blackmail.

NATIONAL DEFENSE

A Soviet agent or American spy working for the Soviets penetrates any of a dozen computers used by the military. He plants a virus. The computers talk to each other, and the virus spreads to all of them. It tells them to execute a certain routine when a certain command is entered at a missile-controlling terminal. That command might interfere with a routine that activates a missile or launches it. Upon reading that command, the virus shuts down the computer, or scrambles the executing program, or scrambles the data. No more "launch on warning." No more launch at all. Dead metal.

Scenario: The President of the United States receives a telephone call on the "red phone" — the direct link to Moscow. He lifts the receiver and says, "Hello."

"Mr. President, this is Michael Gorbachev. You must recognize my voice. I have very little time. I will come directly to the point. You have refused to back down on your threat to implement your Strategic Defense Initiative. You intend to go ahead with space-based weapons. My military staff informs me that they think that the United States has the technology to implement it, and that it could place my nation's military strategy in jeopardy. We cannot allow you to do this.

"If we allow you to deploy the SDI, it will be too late for us to respond effectively. Therefore, we are taking the initiative today. I issued orders this morning to put Soviet military units on immediate alert. We are abiding by your biblical rule to announce the initiation of hostilities before striking. Neither the Japanese nor the Germans gave us this courtesy. If you do not come to terms with us, we will launch a first strike against your nation in three hours. We will delay for one day, if you agree to follow a precise procedure that I will outline shortly.

"At one time we feared nuclear retaliation. We no longer do. Within two hours, you will know why not. I suggest that you instruct your ballistic missile team to prepare your missiles for a strike. Then, to prove to yourself that we no longer are concerned about retaliation, launch one or two of them. As far as I am concerned, launch all of them. But please instruct your senior military commanders to report back to you concerning the effects of their instruction. I suggest that you try launching three or four as a test. We don't care which ones.

"Mr. President, let me tell you what is going to happen. As soon as anyone attempts to launch a missile, that missile's computer guidance system will shut down. It will lock up tight, and you will not be able to unlock it within the time you need to respond to our attack. Two hours and thirty minutes from now, your nation will have no remaining Minuteman III missiles to respond with, should you finally unlock your frozen computers.

"I suggest that you contact your senior officers now. You will have to mobilize them within 60 minutes. The test should take about 30 minutes. I will telephone you again in 90 minutes to present our terms of surrender." Click.

The President calls the Joint Chiefs. If he is lucky, he will be able to locate two of the three in time. They will be paralyzed. Who wouldn't be? But in all likelihood, they will at least test Gorbachev's theory. They will order one or (wo missiles launched. The computer guidance system on both will shut down the system. They will try two or three more, with the same result. They will attempt to launch one from a submarine, with the same result.

The President brings in senior Congressional officials and the remaining Joint Chiefs member to the White House.

Exactly 90 minutes after he had hung up, Gorbachev telephones back. He presents his list of demands. First, the immediate removal of U.S. troops from Europe. Second, the withdrawal of personnel from Diego Garcia Island in the Indian Ocean. Third, the breaking of diplomatic relations with Red China and Taiwan. Fourth, the removal of all U.S. troops from Korea. Fifth, a moratorium on all debts owed to U.S. banks by the Soviet Union and its client states. Sixth, the removal of all Minuteman III missiles from their silos. Seventh, the return of all U.S. submarines to port. If he agrees, and the orders are delivered within two hours, the Soviet Union will delay launching a first strike. The President complies.

They might do it with our communications satellites, Tom says. You might do it with any aspect of U.S. data transmission. The virus could sit dormant in a system for years, and no one would know. Triggered, it would then strike.

THE WEST'S VULNERABILITY

The West has become increasingly dependent on computers. We can no longer function without them. The Third world hasn't. Neither has the U.S.S.R. Their technology is still pre-computer. They are inefficient, but they are far less vulnerable.

Tom says that the world of computers presumes that almost everyone is essentially honest, and that all the brightest programmers must be honest. They aren't. Thus, the members of the entire system — banks, national defense, large and small businesses, public utilities — have opened themselves to attack. The attackers are invisible.

"Nothing I have seen in all my years of computers scares me as much as this does," he says. "The system has been designed in terms of a far older set of standards, especially with respect to security. It is totally vulnerable."

He compares it to plague, or venereal disease. People copy each other's software to save a few bucks. They use public access databases. They use "loops" — the phone lines. Yet these transmission belts of information can become transmission belts of collapse.

This is what I have harped on for twenty years: the potential for a collapse of the division of labor. We become rich by means of a brilliant technology, yet we become dependent on it to an extent that no previous society ever has.

Centralized institutions are most vulnerable, but because we use public transmission lines, from microwave transmissions to cables in the ground, each local unit is vulnerable. Those who would choose to bring down the system need only plant electronic viruses in a handful of major common-use databases or transmission sources, and live years or ten years later, the disease hits.

It could bring down the system if technological defenses are not developed. Nothing on the immediate horizon points to a solution, he says. The silence of those who should know what to do indicates that they don't know what to do, but they don't want panic to spread.

Is this fantasy? Last summer a 23-person team broke in (by phone) to Chase Manhattan Bank's computer.

Break-in: - Continuation of part 1, a treatise on worms and viruses in cybernetic systems.

"Maybe you saw the article buried somewhere in your newspaper. I saw it in the New York Times (Oct. 19):

> "A group of at least 23 teen-age computer users broke into a Chase Manhattan Bank computer installation by telephone in July and August and "significantly damaged" bank records, the Federal Bureau of Investigation said yesterday.
>
> Chase officials insisted that no money was stolen or transferred out of customer accounts as a result of the break-ins, and said no intrusions have been detected recently. But Federal officials, in an affidavit, said that in several cases the youths changed passwords, preventing customers — and in one case a unit of the bank itself — from gaining access to their own computer files."

And where were these teen-agers located? In San Diego, across the continent! It gets even more ludicrous:

Federal officials said that most of the offenders were probably too young to be prosecuted.

Robert D. Rose, the assistant United States Attorney handling the case, said: "We're not yet sure what we are going to do. But these things can get out of hand — it did get out of hand — and we have to treat them seriously."

Treat what seriously! "These things?" What things? If they can't legally treat the electronic trespassers seriously, just what is the man talking about? He is talking about the topic, above all topics, that bank and government officials don't want to face: the vulnerability of their computer records.

I have seen no follow-up on this story in the conventional press. A brief article did appear in the computer-oriented tabloid, Info World (Oct. 28). It turns out that the students had broken into the fifes of Interactive Data Corp. of Waltham, Massachusetts, which maintains the bank's financial records. The break-ins were discovered in late July. They had obtained the toll-free 800 number which was restricted (Ha!) to Interactive Data subscribers. As late as October 9, an illegal entry was observed. In short, it took ten weeks after the break-ins were discovered to put a stop to them.

The response of the bank's bureaucracy was predictable. It will ever be thus: "Bank officials are claiming that the FBI exaggerated the nature of the activities of the suspected individuals. A spokesperson for Chase Manhattan said that Interactive's customers were not prevented from accessing their accounts and that none of Interactive's data was altered or manipulated in any way." In response, FBI supervisory agent John Kelso said that the FBI has sworn affidavits from bank officials that say data has been manipulated or damaged. "That sounds pretty serious to me," he volunteered.

Here is the capper: Interactive Data has 25,000 subscribers who are tied into that toll-free phone line. Try keeping tight security on a system with 25,000 users. Chase Manhattan couldn't. If they can't, who can?

And if Chase Manhattan Bank was vulnerable to 23 teenagers who are too young to prosecute, consider its vulnerability to just one envy driven genius who knows all about electronic viruses. The students that did this were apparently just goofing around. But what if just one malevolent computer freak decided to "get even" with Chase Manhattan? What if he had phoned in just once or twice, implanted a long-dormant data-killing virus, and quit? What if he had tied its detonation to, say, a calendar clock in the Interactive computer? If it took security forces from July until early October 15 to raid the 23 students' homes, they would never have spotted one break-in. They could not have traced it, either. Conclusion: we have a risk-free opportunity for electronic arson. We face a potential electronic epidemic. And when I say "we" I mean the entire financial system of the West.

Sure, all the bank "spokespersons" in the world will tell you, "No problem." But there is a problem. A horrendous problem.

At this point, it really gets interesting. Chase Manhattan Bank has just announced that we will be able to set up our own personal electronic banking facilities with them by buying an expanded version of *Managing Your Money*, Andrew Tobias' home financial management.

Citicorp and Bank of America have opted for *Dollars and Sense* a rival program. You will be able to pay monthly bills electronically, balance your "checkbook," monitor your net worth, buy and sell stocks, etc., etc., just by dialing Citicorp or Chase Manhattan. Fantastic! But despite all the assurances, I get nervous. Yes, I know no one will be able to break in and tamper with the numbers. But 23 teenagers shouldn't have been able to do it, either. And now we're talking about a lot more subscribers than 25,000.

Obviously, the master program used by the banks will prohibit easy entry. Unfortunately, someone has to write the program. Can you imagine the blackmail possibilities? Some hotshot programmer could build-in a bomb, and then threaten to detonate it. In fact, he could merely pretend to have inserted a virus. Who would want to call his bluff? Not Chase Manhattan, I would bet.

CORE WARS REVISITED

In May of 1984, A. K. Dewdney published an article in Scientific American's "Computer Recreations" column. It was a light-hearted-piece on how computer experts can get involved in playing this exciting game of "blow up your opponent's defenses." You know: recreation! In the March 1985 issue, he wrote a follow-up. It begins:

"When the column about Core War appeared last may, it had not occurred to me how serious a topic I was raising. My descriptions of machine-language programs, moving about in memory and trying to destroy each other, struck a resonant chord. According to many readers, whose stories I shall tell, there are abundant examples of worms, viruses and other software creatures living in every conceivable computing environment. *Some of the possibilities are so horrifying that I hesitate to set them down at all.*"(emphasis added.)

It turns out that tne French nave been enjoying a novel on the international implications, *Softwar: La Guerre Douce,* by Breton and Beneich. A translation is scheduled for publication here by Holt, Rinehart & Winston. The study revolves around the sale of a high-power computer to the Soviet Union. The U.S. allows its export because it has a "software bomb" in it. When the U.S. Weather Service announces a certain temperature at St. Thomas in the Yirgin Islands, the program proceeds to subvert every piece of software in the Soviet Union.

A pair of Italian programmers was "inspired" by the translation of Dewdney's original article to dream up a virus (a virus is a computer-to-computer killer, whereas a worm is resident in one man's computer). They figured out that by infecting a disk operating system disk (these start computers and tell them what to do with programs and electronics), and then installing it on disks used by the biggest computer shop in the city, they could create an epidemic. They decided not to do it. In short, the only restraint is self-restraint.

A high school student in Pittsburg wrote a virus that was subtler than a data-destroying virus, which at least tells us that we have a problem. His virus created a plague of very subtle errors in the disk operating system. "All of this seems pretty juvenile," he wrote, but "Oh woe to me! I have never been able to get rid of my electronic plague. It infested all of my disks, and all of my friends' disks." He wrote a program to destroy the virus (an "antidote" to it) but it is not anywhere near as effective as the virus is.

Warning: do not copy disks from your friends' copies. This act of piracy could cost you plenty.

A COMMERCIAL WORM

Just a few days after I wrote "Electronic AIDS, Part 1," 1 read a column in the Washington Times, the conservative (Moonie-owned) daily newspaper. One of the reporters has a computer. He had purchased a newly released program from

Microsoft Co., called "Access." Understand that Microsoft supplies the disk operating system that is used by the IBM PC, the most popular microcomputer. In other words, this is no backyard company. It is one of the two or three software giants in the U.S. (Its owner is under age 30, which tells you something about who is pioneering the microcomputer revolution).

As he was setting up his computer to take advantage of this telecommunications program, a warning flashed on his screen: "The weed of crime bears bitter fruit. Now trashing your program disk." Wham! He lost all his files — probably a couple of year's worth of work. Sure, he was probably smart enough to have made back-up copies, but think of the risk. And what if it had been a worm that kept silent for a few years, infecting all of his back-up disks?

He called Microsoft, and they gave him the runaround. They told him that they were not responsible. Some programmer had put in the worm in order to zap program pirates, but the journalist insisted that he was an original buyer. Tough luck, they told him. Obviously, they didn't know that he was a reporter.

Then he published his article. All of a sudden, the victim was not some average buyer. He was big trouble. Things started moving. InfoWorld (Oct. 28) reports that Microsoft has admitted that a programmer put in the worm, but without permission. The offending text has now been removed, we are assured. But what if it had sat in the master for three years? Here is the premier firm in the software.

This is not idle speculation. It has already happened, verifying my hypothetical scenario within a few days after I published it.

Can you imagine the absolute havoc that a dormant worm or virus could create if it were imbedded in all updates of Microsoft's masters of PC DOS and MS DOS, the operating systems for all IBM microcomputers and IBM-compatible microcomputers? It could cost the U.S. economy billions, and some microcomputer-dependent firms wouldn't survive. Any Microsoft spokesman who says, "It's impossible; it could never happen," has to explain how it already did happen to "Access."

ADAM OSBORNE'S WARNING

You may know the name Adam Osborne. He invented the revolutionary portable computer, the Osborne 1. Before there was an Osborne 2, the company went bankrupt. Compaq, the most successful first-year firm in U.S. history (over $100 million in sales in its 12 months of operations) and others built imitations that were far superior.

That isn't my point, however. Adam Osborne was "present at the creation" of the microcomputer industry. He created Osborne publications, and then sold out to McGraw Hill. He knows what is going on. In his delightful paperback book, Running Wild, which is a history of the microcomputer (desk top) revolution, 1975-82, he offers this warning. He says that three areas should not be allowed to be computerized: 1) bank money transfers; 2) the stock market; 3) elections.

All three are just about fully computerized. Another ten years, or maybe five, and they will be 100% computerized. Several firms allow microcomputer buying and selling of stocks (e.g., Charles Schwab), and New York Stock Exchange floor transactions eventually will be fully computerized, at which time it will be pressured to get rid of the "specialists" who make (and sometimes manipulate) the market, short-term — Richard Ney's hated "Wall Street Gang" — but the price of getting rid of them may turn out to be horrendously high.

"The great fortunes of the 21st century," Osborne predicts, "will be the legacies of the great computer thieves of the 20th."

Three years ago, I used a firm to supply computer services I needed. The head of it was a former businessman, quite young, and a true "space cadet." I've quoted him in the last issue. I call him Tom. He operated in a world far removed mentally from the rest of us. He is a nice fellow, a Christian, and a moral philosopher of sorts.

He ran the operations of the local elections. He did it fairly inexpensively. He told me why: "I want to keep these elections honest. It would be incredibly simple to rig the program to produce whatever outcome I wanted in close races. If I can do it, anyone with enough skill to set up the system could do it."

I asked him if he thought Osborne was correct in his predictions about bank theft. "It would be a piece of cake for me to steal three or four million from any local bank. I could go in the next week, offer to give the money back, keep 10% as a finder's fee, and promise not to tell the press how easy it was to steal. They would probably pay me my 10% just to keep me quiet."

Look, These people are geniuses. Worse, they are geniuses in a very narrow field technically, which is now being used to control darned near everything. This unique intellectual-technical skill is the possession of literally a handful of people, mostly under 35 years of age. They are "fooling around" with Chase Manhattan Bank's computers. What happens when a few of them stop fooling around and get deadly serious?

Computer program designers keep telling us that there is no 100% secure way to defend data banks. Maybe there will be a 98% secure system someday, but not now. To defend itself, the system relies on the integrity of youth. In short, self-government is the major defense.

And where have they learned self-discipline? In the public schools?

"NOW YOU'VE DONE IT!"

About four years ago, I read an article in the *Rolling Stone,* the tabloid aimed at rock music fans. It was the only article I ever read in that periodical. It was a gem.

It described a subculture of students at Stanford University, "hackers." These people are computer freaks. The mainframe computer at Stanford was cheaper to use after midnight, so from midnight to 6 a.m., the hackers gathered at their terminals. They lived on candy bars, junk food, and high-technology dreams.

One of the games they played was breaking into each other's programs. It was considered the mark of a master hacker to be able to crack another hacker's defenses. They would spend hours trying. They were "hacker-crackers."

One bright fellow then designed a classic booby trap. He wrote a program that warned trespassers not to tamper with it. This, of course, alerted every would-be electronic safe cracker to the challenge. It was a complex program, and it took days to crack it. Then, after repeated warnings, the successful trespasser got a surprise. Japanese letters appeared on his screen. Roughly translated, the words proclaimed, "Now you've done it!"

At that point, the victim's computer screen went blank. Then the names of all his own computer files appeared on the screen — files that may have taken years to assemble. One by one, they blipped off the screen. In horror, the victim would stare at the screen, unable to stop the process.

As it turned out, the booby trap was only a practical joke. It really didn't erase all the victim's files. It only listed the names, and then erased them. But for a horrifying few minutes, the victim wouldn't know this.

Hackers play games. Very interesting games.

The kind of people who spend six hours, midnight to 6 a.m., trying to break into each other's programs are different from the rest of us. Among their ranks are some highly individualistic people. Some of them are libertarians. I mean anarchists. They are electronic "don't tread on me" sorts of people. They do not appreciate bureaucracy. They appreciate being pushed around even less.

The folks at Chase Manhattan really do have a problem. Do you attempt to prosecute a legally un-prosecutable kid? A kid who has already cracked your computer system? I don't think you do. You play the role of stern but appreciative banker. "Son, I am impressed by your ability to break in. But understand, we are honest people. There is a code of honor here. You wouldn't want to break that code — of honor, I mean — would you?" Because if this kid gets angry, he can do it again. Quietly. And next time, he deposits a virus.

Of course, Chase may hire a programming team to create an unbreakable system. Sure. "Hire fox A. Give him chain link fence B. Hire him to build fence B around chicken coop C."

TEEN CHALLENGE

Suppose that the public gets wind of the threat to the whole banking system that is posed by viruses. What do the bankers (or anyone else) announce to the public? "We want to assure you that our computer program is impenetrable. No one can break in. It is foolproof."

Here is the challenge — rather like the Stanford program that announced: "Do not trespass." These kids see breaking-in as a challenge, a kind of sport. They do not regard it as theft. They do not regard it as vandalism, even if it costs a company millions of dollars to unscramble. They may be ethical in other respects, but they think of "core wars" as a game.

How would you like to be the 60-year-old banker who doesn't know a byte from usury, but whose public relations department tells him to inform the public that nobody can crack his bank's code? To cite Mr. T in "Rocky III," that bank is dead meat. So are its depositors.

But if he keeps quiet, and the story still gets out about the vulnerability of the system, one or two small "virus-demolished" banks could trigger a collapse of the system, as people do the only smart thing: run for cash. The whole fractional reserve banking system would deflate; only the FED's printing presses could "save the day," in a wave of fiat money.

What I am saying is this: I think that we will see the end of fractional reserve banking in our day. At the very least, I think we will see it subjected to tremendous shocks. People will lose faith in electronic promises made by bureaucrats who do not know anything about the monsters that their efficient computers can be turned into.

Attack on Martinsburg. Now, let's take it a step farther. Some day some state or Federal bureaucrat is going to step on the toes of some genius entrepreneur who has created a software development firm. The bureaucrat will try to wrap this entrepreneur in red tape. Or maybe — just maybe — he will try to sock him with a tax bill that the entrepreneur regards as unfair.

In Martinsburg, West Virginia, there is a large computer. It is owned and operated by the Internal Revenue Service. Into it, over the next five years, the I.R.S. apparently intends to deposit all the records it can assemble on every U.S. taxpayer. This computer database will be the biggest in the world. It is the tool by which the I.R.S. hopes to increase taxpayer compliance. And it may succeed. For a while.

This is one reason for saving all letters to and from the I.R.S. If the I.R.S. becomes dependent on its computer system, which is likely, then any short-circuiting of its database could create havoc for tax collecting. If word gets out that a major failure has hit the I.R.S., the tax revolt could multiply overnight. You would see the deficit become astronomical. If the I.R.S. continues to tie its "voluntary" compliance program to the myth of the "all-seeing computer," then news of the computer's scrambling could backfire.

It is possible that the story of the I.R.S. database is a myth. Maybe they aren't going to build it. But if the public believes that such computer power is at the disposal of the I.R.S., and taxpayers then learn either that the system has been blown, or that it was mythical from the start, the tax revolt could spread like an epidemic. The electronic epidemic-could trigger a tax revolt epidemic.

He who lives on the cutting edge of technology eventually dies on the cutting edge of technology.

"PEOPLE ARE BASICALLY GOOD"

Let's return to my taped interview with "Tom." In a 90-minute interview, we covered a lot of ground. But one topic that stands out in my mind is our discussion of the pre-supposition that goes into the creation of a computer-based society. The computer people have all adopted the assumption that undergirds modern science, namely that, participants are well meaning, that they will not fake their experiments, and that they will play fair. If scientists had to check every aspect of every article, science could not advance very fast.

What about the computer industry? The whole system rests on faith: "Men are not malevolent. They are not envy-driven. They will not deliberately seek to destroy the work of some random victim." Tom says categorically that this assumption is false. There are bad people with tremendous computer skills, and modern society has not restructured its economic institutions to protect itself.

Here is one example of a break-in technique. Someone phones in to a computer, which has been left open temporarily by some user. The lock is unlatched; he needs no key to get in. He then seeks to penetrate the inner core of the program, such as a bank's program. He creates a deliberate error, which all too often triggers a kind of electronic explosion. The protective shell self-destructs, and the invader now finds himself inside the system, where far fewer defense mechanisms exist.

Tom designed his own firm's defense against this tactic. His program automatically records the source of the error, and throws the user out of the program. The program has protection against deliberate errors, but most of them don't, he says. A major error simply collapses the program's outer shell.

In my previous issue, I speculated that a Soviet spy or agent could penetrate U.S. computers. Note: I did not assume that he would simply phone in; I assumed that a disloyal programmer, or a team, could plant the virus as insiders. From there, the virus would spread through the system through normal telecommunications. Several people have written in to tell me that a wrecker cannot destroy the system by penetrating it from the outside. They may be correct. But when informed that I am assuming an inside job by someone with access to a major computer, the critics have admitted that this might be possible.

The weed of crime bears bitter fruit: for honest, computer-dependent people.

FEDERAL FUNDS

The Federal Funds bank transfer lines allow banks to borrow money overnight. Hundreds of billions of dollars go across these lines every working day. The bank's computers communicate with each other by means of this telecommunications hook-up. What if someone were to plant a long-delay virus in the software that operates these transfers? And what banker has even thought about this problem?

What if this scenario was to take place: a virus triggers the disruption of bank records — not a total breakdown initially, but disruptions in the data? It might be weeks or months before auditors recognized the extent of the problem.

As rumors begin to leak out about complex accounting or other data-management problems of major banks all over the U.S. (including off-shore branches), the various banking regulatory agencies would be swamped with crises and outside rumors. Then, all at once, bank computers begin breaking down.

The rumors then explode. The lines appear in front of banks. The only answer at this point is to print up paper money. It would be printed by the hundreds of billions in order to offset the deflationary effects of bank runs (paper money that is pulled out but not re-deposited in another bank).

You could topple the fractional reserve banking system all over the world. The entire payments system could easily become engulfed in chaos. Debits and credits would no longer be meaningful. A pure paper money inflation would replace the manipulated, "fine-tuned" monetary inflation of modern central banking.

All of a sudden, market-created alternative currencies would be revived. It would then be metallic cash that talks loudest. Silver dimes are not electronic. "They can't be infected electronically." They still circulate when banks are "temporarily closed, due to circumstances beyond our control."

The loss of efficiency would be initially horrendous, I would guess. The division of labor would break down. You could then have the crash that lurks in the minds and suspicions of average depositors. Who says it cannot happen? A lot of public relations firms hired by the banks — computer illiterates in high places?

What we have is an internal bank money wire system that is totally vulnerable to some vindictive programmer. There is little doubt in my mind that the bankers are desperately fearful of this sort of vandalism. It could topple people's confidence in the fractional reserve banking system, and confidence is the only thing that keeps it going.

Conclusion. Technologically, there is no solution at this point. I have no heartening message. Maybe later; not now. Keep precious metal coins. Don't assume that it can't happen here. It can. The only thing holding it back is the restraining hand of God, through the temporary self-restraint of a technological priesthood.

[Reviewer's comment: I was unaware of the problem of computer worms and viruses until I read Gary North's two articles. His open release of this important information is appreciated.]

SCALAR EM INNOCULATION AND ITS IMPLICATIONS

My appreciation goes to Gary North for his openly sharing the above important information with the public. Human nature being what it is, one or more of his more dire scenarios is going to happen sooner or later.

The problem becomes enormously more compounded if the hostile agent or agents possesses sophisticated scalar EM technology.

With scalar technology, there exists the potential that the worm or virus can be implanted from a distance. If scalar-scanning devices of sufficient precision can be developed, then major software residing in a chip, a computer, or on a disk can be read from a distance. With scalar EM methods, the ordinary software "guards" are totally ineffective. The scalar "reader" could simply read off the software directly as the disk or device goes about its normal operations.

After the software is read, a germ or a virus is designed to produce a particular problem as desired and upon special stimulus. Then a scalar "imprinter" device is used to produce the necessary digital pulses directly upon the media in which the software resides. The required code has now been implanted. In effect, the operating system has been injected from a distance, and contaminated with the desired "sleeping agent" — germ or virus. From there on, it's just like Gary North's scenarios.

So the scalar EM technology can probably be used (at least eventually) to place "mines" in systems in advance, for damage or destruction at a future date. At least it's possible in principle.

However, it's not the injection of computers and equipment that bothers me. It's the injection of human beings. Here's generally how it can be done (and possibly is being done).

Basically, human brains have various rhythmic waves, which represent "envelope pulsations" of the entire electrical system. However, it is not the Et, force fields represented by these pulsations which are important: it is the summed-zero (scalar) patterning of the entire complex of neuron firings which represents the real activity of the brain — and represents its thoughts and emotions. A storage system for these patternings exists, but it's a scalar pattern storage, not an E and B field storage. The storage system is in the nuclei of the tissues of the nervous system itself, not in electrical or electrochemical potentials.

At any rate, the human brain rhythms are also "riding along" relatively entrained to the Schumann resonance of the earth's magnetic field. So all the patterning of the brain is grouped together into giant overall orders, and one or more of these is normally synchronized to our natural environment.

If a varying magnetic signal of extremely low frequency — say 10 hertz — bombards the brain with greater power than the earth's magnetic field, it is possible for the brain's rhythm to be "forcibly entrained" to synchronize with that signal, rather than with the normal Schumann resonance. If a large number of brains are forcibly entrained to such a signal, and the signal is artificial, then a nester coherent phasing of all the brains to the transmitted signal has been accomplished.

And that can be utilized — and is utilized — by the Soviet Union. On the Woodpecker signals, Bob Beck has detected up to 16 carriers, each with a 10-Hertz modulation, and with all the 10 Hz modulations in phase.

Let s stress what we're saying here. At times, the Woodpecker signals have shown 16 carrier frequencies that contain the same 10-Hertz modulation, and which are all kept coherently sync-locked.

If those signals and the modulations are strong enough, the brains in a targeted area demodulate the 10-Hertz signal and phase-lock to it — actually, to them. At that point, the brains are entrained to a 10-Hertz driver, and 16 channels of multimegahertz frequencies are locked-in to the brain.

Now, if the Soviets have broken the genetic code of the human brain (which they have) and succeeded in developing the ability to implant thoughts, emotions, pictures, etc. (which at least to a degree they have), then they can simply record the proper signals from human guinea pigs, using scalar technology and instrumentation.

They can tailor those signals and add them onto the Woodpecker carriers, using scalar EM techniques. By using most of the sixteen carriers as a means to express Fourier frequency expansions, specific areas and functions of the brain can be targeted.

"Notice that the distant transmitters already "know" the correct phasing, just use the 10 Hertz modulation signal as a reference. In that case, phasing takes care of itself inside the captured human brains.

The brain has a unique characteristic. If a signal arises inside it, it interprets that it itself originated the signal. Thus for the first time in history, true unwitting robot actions and emotions can be engendered in masses of human beings.

But it's still worse. The Kaznacheyev experiments (see references) proved conclusively that electromagnetic signals can carry and transmit cellular disease and death patterns into a targeted biosystem. You can rest assured that the Soviets continued on to actually measure and determine a wide variety of death and disease scalar patterns. All of that can be added on to the Woodpecker carriers so that the population in the intersection grid area is devastated. One can even test it out in advance by producing a modified pattern of a disease in the targeted populace, and keeping the percentage of brains entrained down to a small level. This lowers the number of persons "injected" from a distance to a small percentage of the populace. Then the outbreak of the "new strain" of a familiar disease — such as influenza, pneumonia, and something like AIDS — can be monitored to provide targeting and effectiveness data. Notice that a series of diseases was experienced by U.S. personnel assigned to the U.S. Embassy in Moscow, probably as a result of the so-called "weak microwave radiation" of the Embassy by the Soviet Union.

But that's not all. Much more subtle effects can be produced in the targeted populace, without anyone getting wise. Cancers and leukemia should be relatively easy to induce. Also, the immune system can simply be attacked directly. If done slowly, a series of common, ordinary diseases will just seem to get "tougher and tougher to cure." Actually it's not the disease that got tougher, it is the immune systems that got weaker. It is my opinion that precisely that sort of testing — against the immune system — has been accomplished by the Soviet Union against the U.S. since about October 1985. A great percentage of influenza patients during the period from then until now have had complications. So much so that multiple sessions — as many as 3 to 5 — of antibiotics are necessary before the patient recovers. At least in the Huntsville, Alabama "hinge pin" area, that seems to have been the case. This author personally experienced this, having influenza and follow-on complications for a period of seven months — something quite different indeed for him.

But it's even worse.

The human scalar EM nervous system ("inside" the ordinary EM signals and functioning of the system) also has its own resident "software." It has special storage media contained in its brain, its cells, and its genetic material, and its actual nucleons. All of these storage media are continually telecommunicated with via scalar EM means. Those recordings, largely condition the "stability" of what each of us is. As personalities we literally "are" what we have experienced, felt, thought, and did. Our whole "functioning conscious system" has been evolved by our experience, and it continues to be "us" by means of continual reference to the record base.

I hope you now realize that the actual record base itself can conceivably be altered by scalar electromagnetic means, even from a distance. Even by the hidden scalar EM content of 16 Woodpecker carriers, rocked into a captured brain and pouring in their deadly content. It is conceivable that even what one is can be taken from him, and what someone decides he will be, he will be.

A totally new — **and** ultimate — form of "slavery" has emerged.

Also, look at all this scalar EM functioning of the human system as a special kind of cybernetics. A scalar EM computing software and hardware system.

What if scalar techniques are used to plant "worms" and "viruses" in this system? With hidden triggers? What about a series of them, so that a range of eruptive software diseases can be stimulated at will?

And guess what. Such scalar EM "worms" and "viruses" can even be induced by contact with or consumption of "contaminated" water and food. Or saliva. Or other body fluid.

So you can see the possibilities of "seeding" a population with a staggering variety of time-bombs.

I think you begin to see the point. Now you can change North's "Soviet blackmail" scenario drastically. In a new scenario, Gorbachev simply announces to Reagan that a graduated series of specific sweeping changes are going to happen in our population — changes which we are absolutely powerless to stop. The last stages are various deaths. The master "trigger" for this series has already been initiated. Incidentally, the Soviet populace has been carefully "seeded" with the proper antidotes. The Russian leader demands certain things (very similar to what North's scenario utilized). Unless his demands are met, a "killer virus" will be activated by a special signal. If so, everyone dies. The first step change in the series will start to occur in a few hours. And it does.

In fact, this scenario could be added to North's scenario, and both used simultaneously. What do you think the President and the Congress would do? Or could do?

There are other even more diabolical possibilities, but these should be quite sufficient to illustrate the point.

Pandora's box has already been spilled, and the end of humanity is ticking away like a time bomb. It's already nearly midnight, and the watchman hasn't even sounded the alarm yet.

I certainly can anticipate the next question: Have the Soviets already "seeded" the populations of the U.S. and other selected western nations with scalar EM viruses and germs7

The answer is, I simply don't know. And just like Gary North, I don't know what if anything can be done about it if they have. This researcher certainly doesn't have all the answers. An immediate national crash program to develop scalar EM defenses is essential if we are not simply to be crushed beneath the hammer and sickle. It takes funding, people, facilities, and time.

In some 22 years of unrelenting struggle to convince the system we've got a terrible problem, I've hardly been able to move it off dead-center (no pun intended). This book, produced under extreme workload stress, is all I can do to raise the alarm. I've given it my very best shot.

What happens now remains to be seen. Other hands, hearts and minds are going to have to take up the task and carry it forward. This researcher has reached his limit, and has no more left to give.

APPENDIX III: CONTINUING THE SCENARIO

On May 3, 1986 a stunning loss of a U.S. Delta rocket carrying a critically-needed weather satellite occurred. The rocket suffered a shutdown of its main engine during launch and began to veer off course, causing the range safety officer to destroy it.

The takeoff of the blue and white Delta "workhorse" from launch Pad A at Cape Canaveral at first appeared picture-perfect. About a minute later, six of the nine booster rockets were expended and the remaining three switched on. Shortly after that, the rocket seemed to lose power. The main liquid-fueled engine had suddenly shut down, with the three strap-on boosters still burning. The rocket then had no stability and started to slowly drift off course, creating an increasing angle of attack. Within a few seconds, the nose cone snapped off under the severe stress. The U.S. Air Force range safety officer then sent a destruct command to the stricken rocket, which exploded in a ball of flame.

The Delta, built by McDonnell Douglas, had previously piled up a continuous string of 43 successful launches. Since 1960, 177 launches have occurred, and the success rate has been 94%. The Delta is one of the most reliable rockets ever built.

The unexpected shutdown of the main engine was perplexing. At a news conference following the mishap, William Russell. NASA's Delta project manager. stated: "It was a very sharp shutdown. almost as if it were a command shutdown."

Preliminary data, such as turbine speed and temperatures in and around the engine, "all appeared to be very normal." Russell said.

It may well have been a "command shutdown," unknown to Bill Russell and his NASA engineers.

Preliminary runs of the videotapes of the incident, aired by the national TV news media, show that during liftoff, a mysterious light approached the rocket from below and from the side. rising and striking the vehicle. This light and its path are strongly reminiscent of the first anomalous "light streak and ball" photo taken by Bob Gladwin just prior to the shuttle launch on November 26, 1985.

Let' s suppose that on May 3 the Soviet scalar EM grid was in the launch Phase ABM system mode and was tracking the launch of the Delta rocket.

If the anomalous light that moved up and contacted the rocket was a small ball of continuous electromagnetic energy formed by a distant Soviet scalar EM howitzer, then the rocket's main engine control circuits would have received a sudden and continuous pulse of EM power. This would probably have shutdown the engine by an actual "command" signal, artificially delivered. *

---

*Engineers have now determined that such a shorting of the engine circuitry occurred, causing engine shutdown.

Certainly such mysterious switching of satellite circuits has occurred before, probably due to Soviet scalar EM precision testing. For example, the British Ariel VI satellite has exhibited very strange anomalies in its command and control circuitry -- in fact, with very precise control switching being exhibited as if from an external source.

Thus a very small scalar EM missile may have been utilized by the Soviets to disrupt the control circuits in the rocket. A resulting pulse of power in the engine shutdown command circuit could have "ordered" the shutdown of the main engine -- just as it appeared.

It remains to be seen whether or not the Soviets used a "marker beacon" associated with the disruption of the Delta launch. One news photograph seems to contain a suggestion of such a light, but the videotapes must be studied frame by frame before it can be ascertained exactly what if anything is really there.

If a marker beacon was not used, the distant Soviet operator could simply have "popped out" the continuous EM ball of energy, tracked it and the ascending rocket exhaust, and "joysticked" the scalar EM missile up into the rocket.

Analysis of this incident is continuing, so nothing is certain as we go to press.

However, if this incident was indeed another Soviet kill, then it will have served the Russians well. Much of the world's media attention will now be focused on NASA's launch difficulties, and away from the recent Chernobyl nuclear reactor disaster in the Soviet Union. It's bound to take some of the media pressure off the Soviets.

In addition, it further cripples the U.S. satellite program. Loss of this critical weather satellite payload seriously reduces U.S. weather monitoring capabilities.

Further, the U.S. space program now appears to be all but grounded by the Challenger, Titan, and Delta explosions. For example, it will require about 18 months for the U.S. to redesign the shuttle so that America's shuttle program can get going again. So things are delayed until summer of 1987 at the earliest.

Meanwhile, the Russians are set to grasp the lead in the space race. In 1985 they launched about 100 rockets, five times as many as the U.S. They have a shuttle program of their own, well underway, with a flight expected within months. Earlier this year, they launched Mir, a second generation space station; a U.S. version is still some eight years away.

Charles Vick, of Huntsville, Alabama's Space and Rocket Center, summed it up: "They have their standard military program, a shuttle program and the equivalent of an Apollo program, all within a 10-year period. It's awesome."

An experienced propagandist like Gorbachev certainly understands the advantages of a strong Soviet push into space, such as (1) military advantage, (2) national prestige, (3) scientific achievement, and (4) projecting an image in the world's news media that the Soviets are first in space exploration.

So the failure of the Delta rocket provides many benefits to the Soviet Union.

It also continues to exercise and demonstrate Soviet mastery of the skies over North America itself.

Meanwhile, two U.S. nuclear submarines have "inadvertently" run aground in the last month or so.

Gorbachev again seems disposed toward a summit meeting soon.

If it's held, the agenda may be quite different from the one President Reagan is prepared for.

The clock ticks on toward midnight.

2002 ENDNOTES

1. It is actually a unified field theory since the infolded electrodynamics inside all EM potentials, fields, and waves is utilized—and the internal electrodynamics forms spacetime curvatures and dynamics of those ST curvatures.

2. M. W. Evans, "0(3) Electrodynamics," *Modern Nonlinear Optics,* 2nd Edition, M. W. Evans (Ed.), Wiley, New York, 2001, Vol. 2, p. 79-267.

3. David J. Bohm, "A Suggested Interpretation of the Quantum Theory in Terms of'Hidden' Variables, I and II." *Phys. Rev.,* 85(2), Jan. 15, 1952, p. 166-179 (Part I); 180-193 (Part II); — "Quantum theory as an indication of a new order in physics." A:, *Found. Phys.,* Vol. 1, 1971, p. 359; B: "Implicate and explicate order in physical law," *Found. Phys.,* 3(2), 1973, p. 139-168.

4. Mendel Sachs, General *Relativity and Matter,* Reidel, 1982; — "Symmetry in Electrodynamics: from Special to General Relativity, Macro to Quantum Domains," *Modern Nonlinear Optics,* 2nd Edition, Wiley, New York, Vol. 2, p. 677-706.

5. M. W. Evans, P. K. Anastasovski, T. E. Bearden et al., "On Whittaker's Representation of the Electromagnetic Entity in Vacuo, Part V: The Production of Transverse Fields and Energy by Scalar Interferometry," *J. New Energy,* 4(3), Winter 1999, p. 299-301 gives a basic mathematical expose of scalar interferometry.

6. James Clerk Maxwell, "A dynamical theory of the electromagnetic field," *Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc,* Vol. 155, 1865, p. 71, 459. Orally presented in 1864. This was Maxwell's definitive presentation of his theory, with 20 quaternion and quaternion-like equations in 20 unknowns. Also in *The Scientific Papers ofJames Clerk Maxwell,* edited by W. D. Niven, Dover, New York, 1952, Vol. 1, p. 526-604.

7. In T. E. Bearden, *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org, 1991 we first exposed the quantum potential weapon and some of its uses and characteristics.

8. A negative energy EMP weapons strikes the target or target area with an extreme pulse of negative energy empty Dirac Sea 4-holes. As a result, the free electrons flowing in electrical currents in the struck target instantly disappear by re-absorption into the Dirac Sea. A living body struck by such a blast is totally and instantly dead in every smallest part, since all its brain and nervous system currents, cellular currents, etc. are instantly and totally extinguished. The Russians tested this weapon in the 1980s in their war in

Afghanistan, against two Afghan villages. I spent two hours in Washington D.C. with the then-representative of the Mujahedin to the U.S. Government, verifying the incidents and going over the exact characteristics of the instantaneous deaths of those villagers. With such a sudden death, the mind-body interconnection loop is instantly severed, so that the mind is instantly snapped loose from its connection to the body—hence my use of the term "MindSnapper." The struck body usually emits longitudinal EM waves for an extended period, so that vultures and other predators will not approach the bodies and eat them. All bacteria, viruses, etc. in the body are also killed instantly, and the body does not decay, even in 30 or 60 days.

9. As can be seen, the negative energy EMP weapon is an all-purpose weapon extremely effective against every kind of target: missiles, aircraft, communications, satellites, ships and particularly aircraft carriers, personnel, generators, power systems, the electronics of nuclear warheads, submarines, tanks and vehicles, and the electrical and electronic controls of any kind of machinery or equipment. Such weapons are the second most powerful weapons on earth. In the first part of 2002, a U.S. 2-carrier task force maneuvered in the South China Sea as a precautionary warning to the Chinese that we would defend Taiwan. Unknown to that fleet, tracking it and trained on it were the newly deployed Chinese negative energy EMP weapons, which could have destroyed the entire task force—everything in it—with a few shots in less than 10 minutes.

10. T. E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA, 2002. Chapters 1 and 2 give a deeper coverage of this and similar foundations principles.

11. As is well known, Russian theoreticians have always been the best nonlinear scientists on Earth, since the beginning. They still are.

12. See T. E. Bearden, "Giant Negentropy from the Common Dipole," *J. New Energy,* 5(1), Summer 2000, p. 11-23 for solution of the source charge problem. On DoE restricted website http://www.ott.doe.gov/electromagnetic/ and on www.cheniere.org. The problem of the source charge can be solved by treating (with the modern quantum field theory viewpoint) the "isolated" observable charge and its cluster of virtual charges of opposite sign as a composite dipole. Because of the broken symmetry of its opposite charges, any dipole or dipolarity continuously receives virtual energy from the seething vacuum, transduces it into real observable EM energy, and pours out observable photons in all directions at the speed of light. See also E. T. Whittaker, 1903, *ibid.* There is a scalar potential between the ends of each dipole. The scalar potential may be decomposed into a bidirectional set of longitudinal EM phase conjugate energy from the time dimension (from the imaginary plane) and outputs that EM energy in the real 3-space. 3-space conservation of energy flow

is violated, but 4-space conservation of energy flow is upheld. This rigorously follows from the discovery of broken symmetry of opposite charges in 1957—one of the types of asymmetry for which Lee and Yang received the Nobel Prize.

In classical electrodynamics, the charged particle itself is *assumed* to be the source of its own fields and potentials. In other words, the charge is implicitly considered to be *creating*—right out of nowhere—the Poynting energy flow it continuously pours out across the universe in all directions. That makes the charge a perpetual motion machine of the grossest kind, violating the maxim that energy can neither be created nor destroyed.

So the greatest perpetual motion advocates of all times are our own classical electrodynamicists and electrical engineering departments and professors who still ignore the active vacuum interaction that is missing from the classical model. They thereby ignore that the charge is a broken 3-symmetry in its violent exchange of virtual energy with the active vacuum, and merely organizes and emits in observable form a fraction of the energy it continuously receives from the imaginary plane (from the time domain). Yet, that broken symmetry has been known in particle physicists, both experimentally and theoretically, for 45 years.

When Maxwell wrote his theory, neither the electron, the atom, nor the nucleus had been discovered. There was no knowledge of the Drude electron gas, electron spin, etc. There was no knowledge of the nucleus of the atom, and even the atom itself was still contentious. A thin material ether (fluid) was believed to fill all space, so that no point in all the universe was empty of mass. Consequently, E and B were conceived as physical force fields in a material medium—the luminiferous ether. All Maxwell's equations—including the subset selected and modified by Heaviside that today are called "Maxwell's equations"—assume this material ether to this day.

Electricity was thought to be a "thin material electric fluid" running through wires like water through a pipe. The magnitude of the potential was not used; its reaction cross-section was calculated and erroneously used as its magnitude, as it is today (although a good electrodynamicist does know that it is only the *intensity* of the potential, not its magnitude).

Faraday believed that his "lines of force" were taut physical "strings" in this material ether, and that EM perturbations were the vibrations of these taut strings. As he clearly states in his 1873 *Treatise...*, Maxwell sought to capture Faraday's work exactly. He simply *assumed* Faraday's "plucked taut string" waves. Later the measurement in instruments of what was actually the lateral gyroprecession of electrons in receiving wires was thought to prove that the incoming ether vibrations were transverse, like those string waves, because the detected electric **fluid (electron** precession) waves in the receiving wire were transverse. The drift velocity of electrons longitudinally in a wire (in a typical case, several inches per hour) was unknown. A charge *q* was just a piece of electric fluid, much like a cubic centimeter or other volume of fluid; it had no connotation of "charged particle." There was no concept in all of physics of EM energy flowing through space. There was no knowledge that the same fields created in the transmission wire, which perturbs the Drude electrons laterally, also perturbs the positively charged nuclei laterally, in the opposite direction, highly damped but with equal energy.

There was no way to realize that the energetic perturbation of the curvature of spacetime around the sending wire antenna, by the Drude electron perturbation energy, is simultaneously accompanied by an equal and opposite perturbation of the curvature of spacetime in the opposite direction (energy density, not amplitude of the disturbing wave, determines the degree of curvature of the surrounding spacetime). Hence Maxwell omitted precisely one half the EM energy, one half the EM wave, and one-half the electrodynamics. As a consequence, the "Newton's third law recoil" of the nuclei today is thought to spontaneously arise as if some mystical demon observes the Drude electron perturbations, and simultaneously kicks the positively charged nuclei in the equal and opposite direction. Hence Newton's third law, so to speak, is erroneously still omitted from classical electrodynamics, and the better texts say so.

In the 1880s, the Michelson-Morley experiments falsified the material ether. Not a single one of the Maxwell-Heaviside equations were ever changed to this day. Instead, the electrodynamicists eventually announced that, since there was no longer an ether, they were not using one! Then a total non sequitur was incorporated: that in massfree space, the same E and B fields (defined as material entities and thus existing only in mass) still remain but the forces go to zero. Simple algebra reveals this clever, insidious faux pas, using the E-field as an example: First, F == d/dt(mv), so mass is a component of force. (This reveals the great error due to the hoary old notion that a separate force acts upon a separate mass; the mass is a component of the force, and the force is a coupled system of a curvature of spacetime and a charged mass.). Then E == F/q, which rigorously holds when mass is present.

Now for whatever reason, let F = 0. Then F/q = 0 and E = 0 also, else we must discard algebra. What actually remains is easily explained in general relativity terms (available since before 1920). The couplet of a curvature of spacetime and a charged mass is broken up by absenting the mass. What remains is that specific curvature of spacetime. GR assures us that curved ST acts upon mass, and that any force involves a curvature of ST. Yet in more than 80 years, this erroneous old "material ether remnant" in electrodynamics has been fiercely defended. Every textbook today uses and confuses the E and B fields in two dichotomous fashions: (1) as massive force fields existing only in the presence of mass, and as "massless force-free fields" existing only in the absence of mass. This of course is a non sequitur.

13. E. T. Whittaker, "On the Partial Differential Equations of Mathematical Physics," *Math. Ann.*, Vol. 57, 1903, p. 333-355. The "scalar" potential itself is not even a *scalar entity*, as shown rigorously by Whittaker. Instead, it is a harmonic series of bidirectional EM longitudinal phase conjugate wavepairs, and it decomposes into that series. Hence it is a *multiwave, multivectorial entity.*

14. C. N. Yang and R. L. Mills, "Conservation of Isotopic Spin and Isotopic Gauge Invariance," *Phys. Rev.*, Vol. 96, 1954, p. 191.

15. The term "energetics" simply means *energy as the primary thing in the universe.* Rankine first used it. G. Helm in 1887 revived Rankine's term "energetics" and factored energy into an *intensity* factor and an *extensity* factor (which today we would call potential and kinetic energies). William Ostwald in 1893, 1895, and 1901 raised the concept of "energetics" (energy as the primary thing in the universe) to the forefront. Thus when the Russians developed new extensions and principles in weapons physics, they simply used the historical notion of "energy as the primary thing in the universe" and adopted the earlier name for it: *energetics.*

16. Later when Khrushchev demanded a 100% antimissile defense, famed Russian Nobelist Petr Kapitsa answered, *"If a means of total neutralization of foreign missiles is to be found, it can only come from a group of new principles in physics, called energetics".*

17. See T. E. Bearden, "Mind Control and EM Wave Polarization Transductions, Part I", *Explore,* 9(2), 1999, p. 59; Part II, *Explore,* 9(3), 1999, p. 61; Part III, *Explore,* 9(4,5), 1999, p. 100-108. It appears that Sachs' unified GR and EM approach is perhaps the best Western physics model to apply to analysis of the KGB energetics weapons. However, because of the third branch *(psychoenergetics:* engineering the mind directly), Sachs' work would appear to need further extension along the lines indicated by the present author in the cited paper.

18. See T. E. Bearden, "EM Corrections Enabling a Practical Unified Field Theory with Emphasis on Time-Charging Interactions of Longitudinal EM Waves," *J. New Energy,* 3(2/3), 1998, p. 12-28; — *Energy from the Vacuum,* 2002, *ibid.* For nuclear transmutation at a distance (e.g., dudding all nuclear weapons by transmuting U235 and weapons grade plutonium), extension is required along the lines indicated by the present author in these references.

19. See M. Sachs, *ibid.,* also M. Sachs, "Relativistic Implications of Electromagnetic Field Theory," in T. W. Barrett and D. M. Grimes, eds., *Advanced Electromagnetism,* World Scientific, 1995, p. 551. The Sachs theory

already expresses the greatest generalization possible of electrodynamics, and fully justifies the preceding view.

20. See Whittaker, 1903, *ibid.;* — "On an Expression of the Electromagnetic Field Due to Electrons by Means of Two Scalar Potential Functions," *Proc. Lond. Math. Soc,* Series 2, Vol. 1, 1904, p. 367-372. The latter paper was published in 1904 and orally delivered in 1903. Per these two Whittaker papers, it is known that (i) ordinary EM fields and waves are the result of interference of two or more scalar potential functions, (ii) scalar potentials are comprised of harmonic sets of bidirectional EM phase conjugate wavepairs, (iii) all ordinary EM fields and waves and potentials have LW EM dynamics internally, and (iv) in theory, this "infolded" electrodynamics can be engineered. Sachs' theory dramatically extends the richness of that internal electrodynamics ignored in the West, and highlights the general relativity (sets of spacetime curvatures, or "engines", involved).

21. E.g., *Marine Observer* was a rich source for Russian energetics weapons testing in remote ocean areas, sighted by ships' captains and crews and entered into the ships' logs.

22. Portions of Khrushchev's statements to the Presidium are given in Max Frankel, "Khrushchev Says Soviet Will Cut Forces a Third; Sees 'Fantastic Weapon'," *New York Times,* Jan. 15, 1960, p. 1.

23. See Whittaker 1903 and 1904, *ibid.,* for the original basis of scalar interferometry and its creation of any kind of EM field, potential, and wave in the interference zone.

24. Also see M. W. Evans, P. K. Anastasovski, T. E. Bearden et al., On Whittaker's Representation of the Electromagnetic Entity in Vacuo, Part V: The Production of Transverse Fields and Energy by Scalar Interferometry, *J. New Energy,* 4(3), Winter 1999, p. 76 for mathematical proof of scalar interferometry. There are several other AIAS papers in the same issue of *JNE,* dealing with interferometry and with the implications of the Whittaker papers.

25. As an example, the U.S.S. Skylark, surface companion of the Thresher, was beset by mysterious "jamming" of multiple types of EM systems in multiple bands. So bad was it that it required more than an hour to get an emergency message to Naval headquarters that the Thresher was in serious difficulty. Later, as the scalar interferometry died away, all the EM systems aboard the Skylark resumed normal functioning. The Skylark was in fact in a "splatter zone" of the underwater interference zone around the Thresher.

26. Circa the end of 1989, the earlier longitudinal EM wave weapons on site in Russia were leased to a rogue Japanese group comprised of Aum Shinrikyo and Yakuza, who have been operating those weapon systems—on site in Russia—since then. Senator Sam Nunn's investigations revealed the presence

of the Aum Shinrikyo in Russia, to include establishing a university there. His investigators missed the Yakuza involvement and also missed the exotic weaponry aspects as one might expect.

27. I concluded from this remark that TEMPEST techniques are probably used at some nearby site not too distant from my home here in Huntsville, to read and record my work as I write it on the computer. That appears to be a good assumption.

28. As a small example of what can be done, see a series of papers by M. W. Evans, P. K. Anastasovski, T. E. Bearden et al, published in *J. New Energy*, 4(3), Special Issue, Winter 1999. The papers are: (a) "On Whittaker's Representation of the Electromagnetic Field in Terms of Two Scalar Potentials, Part I"; (b) "An Experimental Test of the Existence of Whittaker's *g* and/Fluxes in the Vacuum"; (c) "On Whittaker's Representation of the Classical Electromagnetic Field in Vacuo, Part II: Potentials Without Fields"; (d) "On Whittaker's F and G Fluxes, Part III: The Existence of Physical Longitudinal and Timelike Photons"; (e) "Representation of the Vacuum Electromagnetic Field in Terms of Longitudinal and Time-like Potentials: Canonical Quantization"; (f) "On Whittaker's Analysis of the Electromagnetic Entity, Part IV: Longitudinal Magnetic Flux and Time-Like Potential Without Vector Potential and Without Electric and Magnetic Fields"; (g) "On Whittaker's Representation of the Electromagnetic Entity in Vacuo, Part V: The Production of Transverse Fields and Energy by Scalar Interferometry"; and (h) "On Extending Whittaker's Theory, Part VI: Photons Without Fields and Vector Potentials".

29. As an example, one part of the strategic deception plan was devoted to convincing the West that Soviet psychoenergetics was nothing but a technical wrinkle upon the rather harmless Western parapsychology. This part of the program was completely successful for decades. Another very clever use of deception is to allow release of some real scientific advances that lead the West, but are not too important to the KGB in the weapons arena. The increasing emphasis on torsion fields is an example of this "deception by giving good information that directs the adversary upon a path one wishes him to take", effectively steering him away from the path one wishes him to avoid. Lately, however, there is an uproar amongst the academicians in the Russian Academy of Sciences over this very point, that torsion fields being presented as the "end all, be all" is simply disinformation.

30. With their deployment of QP weapons in 2002, the Chinese are also on the way to having this capability.

31. The multiply connected spacetime (MCS) or quantum potential weapons went on site circa latter 1989. A laboratory prototype had been tested against the U.S. air attack on Libya in April 1986. For details of the extremely anomalous jamming **of aircraft** and missile guidance and control systems in that

attack on Libya, see Mark Thompson, "Mixed signals may have misguided U.S. weapons," *The Washington Post,* Jan. 22, 1989, p. A-4.

32. One or more QP weapons also apparently induced the Gulf War Disease in MidEast forces in the Gulf War. We have previously explained the peculiar anomalies, how it was done, why the endemic natives did not contract the disease, why the French forces did not contract it but U.S., British, and Canadian forces did, etc. We briefly discussed quantum potential weapons in T. E. Bearden, *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics,* In T. E. Bearden, *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org, 1991.

33. (a) Yossef Bodansky, "Soviets testing chemical agents in Afghanistan," *Jane's Defence Weekly,* 1(3), Apr. 7, 1984, p. 508 gives something of the two Soviet tests of this weapon in Afghanistan. In addition to the fierce blast of empty Dirac Sea 4-holes, these weapons produce a powerful time-polarized EM pulse in the area, producing a very sharp "jerk" in the rate of flow of time, (b) The mind-body coupling mechanism—which cannot withstand such a sharp jerk in the rate of flow of time—has been given by T. E. Bearden, "Mind Control and EM Wave Polarization Transductions," *Explore,* 1999, *ibid.* This sharp "jerk" in time-flow instantly snaps the mind-body coupling mechanism for any living thing in the struck area. A very small version of this weapon was tested twice in Afghanistan, where the bodies in the "mind-snapped" zone died instantly, fell like limp rags, never twitched, and did not decay or get molested by insects or scavengers for the 30 days it required the Mujahedin to fight their way back into the two struck villages. The Mujahedin thought it was some new, extremely fast acting nerve gas, which they dubbed "smerch" or "death wind".

34. Two Ph.D. scientists were working closely with me on this entire effort, as was another close colleague. There was much more involved in the effort that is so briefly mentioned here.

35. Secretary of Defense William Cohen at an April 1997 counterterrorism conference sponsored by former Senator Sam Nunn. Quoted from DoD News Briefing, Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen, Q&A at the Conference on Terrorism, Weapons of Mass Destruction, and U.S. Strategy, University of Georgia, Athens, Apr. 28, 1997.

36. T. E. Bearden, *Energetics: Extensions to Physics and Advanced Technology for Medical and Military Applications,* CTEC Proprietary, Mar. 21, 1998, 200+ page inclosure to CTEC Letter to Gen. (Ret.) Walter Busby, Deputy Secretary of Defense for Counterproliferation and Chemical and Biological Defense, March 21, 1998. Copies were sent to various other U.S. government agencies, including to NIH, CDC, the USAF, etc.

37. See Vlail Kaznacheyev and L. P. Mikhailova, *Ultraweak Radiation in Intercellular Interactions,* [in Russian], Novosibirsk, 1981. An English exposition of much of the Kaznacheyev material is given in Vlail Kaznacheyev, "Electromagnetic Bioinformation in Intercellular Interactions," *Psi Research,* 1(1), Mar. 1982, p. 47-76. The work of Vlail Kaznacheyev led to the understanding of how to electromagnetically transmit cellular death and disease into targeted cells (or bodies) at a distance, and involved thousands of lab experiments. Highly sanitized work revealing the results but not the mechanisms, were permitted in order to stimulate the West to see if it knew about energetics.

38. See Stanislov Lunev and Ira Winkler, *Through the Eyes of the Enemy: Russia's Highest Ranking Military Defector Reveals Why Russia Is More Dangerous Than Ever,* Regnery, Washington, D.C., 1998. The Red Chinese also were able to decipher the Russian EM disease transmission methodology, early on. As a strange kind of "poetic justice" action the Chinese induced cancer into many Russian spies stationed in the Russian Embassy in China. Quoting Lunev, p. 160: "...I *was not the only person who was stationed in Beijing to come down with cancer...Almost all of the GRU officers stationed in China with me have been diagnosed with cancer. People assigned to the embassy had told me that they were picking up high levels of radiation from the apartment building around the embassy compound. Whether it was a form of high-tech monitoring or a conscious effort to harm our health, it seems to have been successful. So much so that in 1992 the GRU was asked to investigate the high rate of cancer among embassy officials. The findings, however, have never been made public; in part, no doubt, because of the rapprochement between Russia and China."*

39. See my "Porthole Briefing", on www.cheniere.org. Also see "Le Probleme Priore," *Rapport de la Commission de I'Academie des Sciences a Monsieur le Ministre d'Etat charge de la Recherche et de la Technologie,* France, 1982, p. 1-22; J. B. Bateman, "Microwave Magic," Office of Naval Research London Conference report, ONRL C-14-77, 1977; —*A Biologically Active Combination of Modulated Magnetic and Microwave Fields: The Priore Machine,* Office of Naval Research, London, Report R-5-78, Aug. 16, 1978; — "Staging the Perils of Nonionizing Waves," *European Scientific Notes,* ESN 32-3-85-88, 1978; T. E. Bearden, "Energetics Update and Summary," Parts 1, *Explore More,* No. 1, 1996, p. 13-18; Part 2, *Explore,* 8(1), 1997, 53-56; Part 3, *Explore,* 8(2), 1997, p. 42-45; Christopher Bird, "The Case of Antoine Priore and His Therapeutic Machine: A Scandal in the Politics of Science," Explore, 5(5-6), 1994, p. 97-110; R. Cambar, "Rapport general des travaux de la Commission de Controle constituee en vue de verifier l'un des effets biologiques obtenu par l'utilisation de l'appareillage de Priore A. Bordeaux," [General findings of the work of the control commission formed to verify one of the biological effects obtained by use of the apparatus of A. Priore at Bordeaux],

1969; R. Courrier, "Expose de M. le professeur R. Courrier Secretaire perpetuel de 1'Academie des Sciences fait au cours d'une reunion a l'lnstitut sur les effects de la machine de M. A. Priore 26 Avril 1977" [Presentation by Professor R. Courrier, Perpetual Secretary of the Academy of Sciences, made at the meeting of the Academy on the effects of the machine of M. A. Priore.]; Jean-Michel Graille, *Dossier Priore: A New Pasteur Affair,* De Noel, Paris, 1984 [in French]; Antoine Priore, "Apparatus for producing radiations penetrating living cells," U.S. Patent No. 3,368,155, Feb. 6, 1968; — "Method of producing radiations for penetrating living cells," U.S. Patent No. 3,280,816, Oct. 25, 1966; — "Procede et dispositif de production de rayonnements utilisables notamment pour le traitement de cellules vivantes," [Procedure and Assemblage for Production of Radiation Especially Serviceable for the Treatment of Living Cells], Republique Francais Brevet d'Invention P.V. No. 899.414, No. 1,342,772, Oct. 7, 1963; A. Priore, *Guerison de la Trypanosomiase Experimentale Aigue et Chronique par L'action Combinee de Champs Magnetiques et D'Ondes Electromagnetiques Modules* [Healing of intense and chronic experimental trypanosomiasis by the combined action of magnetic fields and modulated electromagnetic waves], thesis submitted in candidacy for the doctoral degree, 1973—rejected when the project was suppressed.

40. Eric Perisse, *Effets des Ondes Electromagnetiques et des Champs Magnetiques sur le Cancer et la Trypanosomiase Experimentale* [Effects of Electromagnetic Waves and Magnetic Fields on Cancer and Experimental Trypanosomias], Doctoral thesis, University of Bordeaux No. 83, March 16, 1984. Although Priore's own thesis was suppressed in 1973, Pautrizel nevertheless finally succeeded in getting this doctoral thesis by Perisse approved on the work, at the University of Bordeaux which had rejected Priore's thesis, after eleven more years had passed. Considering the viciousness of the suppression, this was a major accomplishment.

41. The photo was taken by George Suchary of the registration point (ball of light) high over the Nov. 1985 night shuttle launch from Cape Canaveral. For a photo of the same kind of "ball of light" registration point above the kill of a Titan missile launched from Vandenberg AFB in early 1986, see reference 39 below.

42. The picture by Canadian investigators showing the hole burned through the right fuselage ahead of the engines of the Arrow DC-8 is shown in T. E. Bearden, *AIDS: Biological Warfare,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org , 1988, p. 52.

43. See T. E. Bearden, *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org, 1991, p. 82. Two sensors on-board the Arrow DC-8 independently recorded the sharp electrical spike generated by the strike of the EM missile.

44. "Titan Explosion Cripples U.S. Launch Surveillance Capability," *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* 124(17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 16-19. Specifically see the picture of the explosion on p. 18. It clearly shows the Soviet marker beacon (little ball of light) well above the missile explosion. General background on the Titan explosion and investigation is given in "Investigators Search for Clues to Cause of Titan Blast," *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* 124(17), Apr. 28, 1986, p. 19-20.1 persuaded NBC engineer Ron Cole with a team of engineers to examine the videotape of the explosion, frame by frame. In 17 frames the ball-of-light (registration point) is visible, and moves away completely independent of the explosion. No "bogies on the range" were reported at Vandenberg AFB.

45. Dr. Evans is co-discoverer with Vigier of the B(3) field, now well established but still not in the textbooks. He is the Director of the Alpha Foundation's Institute of Advanced Study (AIAS) and has over 600 papers and books in the literature.

46. M. W. Evans, P. K. Anastasovski, T. E. Bearden et al., "On Whittaker's F and G Fluxes, Part III: The Existence of Physical Longitudinal and Timelike Photons," *J. New Energy,* 4(3), 1999, p. 68-71; — "Representation of the Vacuum Electromagnetic Field in Terms of Longitudinal and Time-Like Potentials: Canonical Quantization," *ibid.*, p. 82-88; — "On Extending Whittaker's Theory, Part VI: Photons Without Fields and Vector Potentials," *ibid.*, p. 79-81.

47. Terence W. Barrett, "Electromagnetic Phenomena Not Explained by Maxwell's Equations," in Lakhtakia, A. (ed.): *Essays on the Formal Aspects of Electromagnetic Theory,* World Scientific Publishing, River Edge, NJ, 1993, p. 6-86; — "On the distinction between fields and their metric: the fundamental difference between specifications concerning medium-independent fields and constitutive specifications concerning relations to the medium in which they exist." *Ann. Fond. Louis de Broglie,* 14(1), 1989, p. 37-75; — and D. M Grimes. [Eds.] *Advanced Electromagnetism: Foundations, Theory, & Applications.* World Scientific, (Singapore, New Jersey, London, and Hong Kong), Suite 1B, 1060 Main Street, River Edge, New Jersey, 07661, 1995. In the latter book see T.W. Barrett, "Sagnac Effect: A Consequence of Conservation of Action Due to Gauge Field Global Conformal Invariance in a Multiply-Joined Topology of Coherent Fields," p. 278-313.

48. But see Craig F. Bohren, "How can a particle absorb more than the light incident on it?" *Am. J. Phys.,* 51(4), Apr. 1983, p. 323-327. By *resonating* the intercepting charged particle, its reaction cross section increases, and more EM energy is collected and re-radiated by the charge than is input to it by the conventional accounting (which only accounts the input Poynting energy that would be intercepted by a *static* charge). The conventional input energy

calculation therefore ignores the huge nondiverged Heaviside component surrounding the Poynting component and wasted. The resonant particle sweeps out past the usual Poynting component into the unaccounted Heaviside input component, and collects excess energy. The Bohren experiment with resonant charged particles produces COP =18. Metallic particles at ultraviolet frequencies are one class of such particles and insulating particles at infrared frequencies are another. For independent confirmation of the Bohren experiment, see H. Paul and R. Fischer, {Comment on "How can a particle absorb more than the light incident on it?'}," *Am. J. Phys.,* 51(4), Apr. 1983, p. 327.

49. E. T. Whittaker, 1903, *ibid.*

50. A beneficial use, e.g., would be to use such CSRs to investigate and report the interior of the sun and planets, including the Earth and its core. Since a CSR can also travel "through" the interior of a light beam, in theory such could be dispatched back into some of the nearer stars to also explore and report their interior.

51. This is no more curious than stating that sets of waves and their dynamics can exist in space, without interacting with mass, and that they can then later interact with a mass system to change it in specifically designed manner. Since longitudinal EM waves and their dynamics are "infolded" inside ordinary EM waves, fields, and potentials, they are also infolded "inside" the ambient vacuum potential, which itself is a part of the local vacuum potential. In short, one forms highly complex LW wavesets and functional dynamics, in essentially a sort of "subspace" as popularized by the Star Trek television series. The LW "engines" are identically ST curvature engines. A close colleague of the present author has in fact already invented and rigorously demonstrated such a communication system, but his former funding by several very large communications companies collapsed before he could develop and employ this system for the commercial market.

52. This is easily understood if one shifts one's vision from "space" to "subspace." Subspace is filled with (literally is composed of) longitudinal EM waves and their dynamics. The CSR's are quite unique, enormous systems "singing away" with longitudinal EM waves. So a longitudinal EM wave interferometer can easily locate them by sweeping its beams through subspace, as a radar sweeps to track aircraft in space. Once the CSR target "pings", the system automatically hits it with a profusion of interacting LWs, completing disrupting and destroying its dynamics. Scratch one system. Probably several million such systems were destroyed throughout the West (command centers, power grids, submarines, nuclear bombers, etc.) in rapid fire order, all without any external "spatial" sign other than perhaps a wee bit of very low level "EM noise" briefly as a struck CSR fractured.

53. See M. Sachs, *Quantum Mechanics from General Relativity,* Reidel, 1986. Sachs'unified field theory, e.g., applies equally to the quarks and gluons, as it does to the nucleons, the atoms, molecules, and macroscopic objects and phenomena. See also M. Sachs, "Symmetry in Electrodynamics: From Special to General Relativity, Macro to Quantum Domains," in *Modern Nonlinear Optics,* Second Edition, 3 vols., M. W. Evans (ed.), Wiley, 2001; vol. 1, p. 677-706.

54. G. M. Wang, E. M. Sevick, Emil Mittag, Debra J. Searles, and Denis J. Evans, "Experimental Demonstration of Violations of the Second Law of Thermodynamics for Small Systems and Short Time Scales," *Phys. Rev. Lett.,* 89(5), 29 July 2002, 050601.

55. The tragic death of Captain Hess was also very probably such a test. Hess, perfectly normal and happy, laid out his uniform in the early morning and then went for his customary morning jog. He suddenly veered aside, sat down in a path and stabbed himself 26 times, all deep stab wounds, four of which would be totally incapacitating (two right through the heart) to any normal individual experiencing normal shock, etc. To a psychoenergetically controlled individual where shock does not occur nor does emotion or pain, this is understandable. Add this to the incidents involving Captains Button and Svoboda, and one begins to see the picture.

56. W. Heitman and G. Nimtz, "On Causality Proofs of Superluminal Barrier Transversal of Frequency Band Limited Wave Packets," *Phys. Lett. A196,* 1994, p. 154-158. Aichmann and Nimtz and co-workers at the University of Cologne have transmitted 8.7 GHz microwaves (free space wavelength 3.4 cm) traveling in a rectangular wave-guide that contains a "barrier" section of reduced dimensions. They have recently transmitted Mozart's 40th Symphony as frequency modulated microwaves through a barrier wave-guide at an FTL group velocity of 4.7 c, receiving audibly recognizable music from the microwave photons that survived their barrier passage. The transit time through the barrier was about 81 picoseconds and was observed to be constant for barriers with widths varying from 4.0 cm to 11.4 cm.

57. Quantum mechanics in fact requires instantaneous transmission of effects. A mishmash of learned contention would have us believe one can "transmit" energy instantly, but not intelligence. This argument has essentially stymied our scientific establishment so that it has not really funded strong investigation in this area. It is a stupid argument: Simply transmit one change, then a second one, then a third one, in serial order, where the "order" contains the intelligence. No different from Morse code. Somehow the pundits so certain that intelligence cannot be superluminally transmitted seem to have forgotten what "intelligence" is. They also seem to have assumed that one superluminal change can be **transmitted** on order, but a second, third, and fourth cannot.

58. Feynman and Wheeler tried very hard to formulate a new absorber theory of electrodynamics to eliminate many of the fierce foundations problems. Wheeler described the effort this way: *"...we may summarize the account of radiation reaction given by Wheeler and Feynman in 1945. In it every charged particle is envisaged as coupled to every other charged particle by a field that is symmetric in time: half advanced, half retarded. Interconnections run forward and backward in time in such numbers as to make an unbelievable maze. That weaving together of past and future seems to contradict every normal idea of causality. However, when the number of particles is great enough to absorb completely the signal starting out from any source, then this myriad of couplings adds up to a simple result: the familiar retarded actions of everyday experience, plus the familiar force of radiative reaction with its familiar sign."* [John Archibald Wheeler, "Law without law," in *Quantum Theory and Measurement.,* preprint, p. 39].

Unfortunately, when the foundations of any science are closely examined in their roots, one runs into the age-old bane of the philosopher: ultimately opposites are identical, at least prior to the observation (separation) action to separate them. It follows that all scientific reasoning is circular at its most primary basis.

59. See Charles W. Misner, Kip S. Thorne and John Archibald Wheeler, *Gravitation,* W. H. Freeman, San Francisco, CA., 1973, p. 71. Wheeler spoke of that inescapable fact in this manner: *"Here and elsewhere in science, as stressed not least by Henry Poincare, that view is out of date which used to say, 'Define your terms before you proceed.' All the laws and theories of physics, including the Lorentz force law, have this deep and subtle character, that they both define the concepts they use (here B and E) and make statement about these concepts. Contrariwise, the absence of some body of theory, law and principle deprives one of the means properly to define or even to use concepts. Any forward step in human knowledge is truly creative in this sense: that theory, concept, law, and method of measurement—forever inseparable—are born into the world in union."*

60. Also see T. E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* 2001, *ibid,* for a rework and extension of Aristotelian logic to eliminate its present fatal flaw, extending it into a 5-law logic.

61. The very notion of "propagation of energy through space" is radically extended in the extended unified EM and GR being pursued by AIAS and Sachs. Time-like EM energy currents dominate in the vacuum. E.g., see M. W. Evans et al., "Representation of the Vacuum Electromagnetic Field in Terms of Longitudinal and Time-like Potentials: Canonical Quantization," *J. New Energy,* 4(3), Winter 1999, p. 82.

62. Multiwave interactions (between transverse EM waves) produce time-reversed EM waves (phase conjugate replicas of the signal wave input). That method time-reverses EM energy in waveform. To time-reverse EM energy in mass form, simply pump that mass with time-polarized EM waves. As an alternative, it may be pumped with longitudinal EM waves (which are always accompanied by time-polarized EM waves anyway), and the pumped mass is also pumped in the time-domain because of the presence of the time-polarized EM waves in the pumping. We previously filed an invention disclosure with the U.S. Patent Office dealing with how to do that.

63. Mostly studied by Becker. See (a) R. O. Becker, "The control system governing bone growth in response to mechanical stress," *J. Ark. Med. Soc,* Vol. 62, 1966, p. 404; (b) — and David G. Murray, "The electrical control system regulating fracture healing in amphibians," *Clinical Orthopaedics and Related Research,* Vol. unk, No. 73, Nov.-Dec. 1970, p. 169-198. This latter paper is the definitive technical exposition by Becker of his electrical control system ideas and findings. Good references for the educated layperson are (c) R. O. Becker, "A technique for producing regenerative healing in humans," *Frontier Perspectives,* 1(2), Fall/Winter 1990, p. 1-2; (d) Robert O. Becker and Gary Seldon, *The Body Electric: Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life,* William Morrow and Company, New York, 1985; and (e) Robert O. Becker, *Cross Currents: The Promise of Electromedicine, the Perils of Electropollution,* Tarcher, St. Martin's Press, New York, 1990.

64. A provisional patent application has been filed on the process, and an overview of the method can be seen as the "porthole briefing" on my website www.cheniere.org.

65. (a) C. A. L. Bassett; R. O. Becker, and R. J. Pawluk, "Effects of electric currents on bone in vivo," *Nature,* Vol. 204, Nov. 14, 1964, p. 652-654. The complete electrical control system (conventional EM theory) for the healing of bone fractures is given in (b) R. O. Becker, *Clinical Orthopedics and Related Research,* Vol. 73, 1970, p. 169. A paper "putting it all together" is (c) R. O. Becker, J. *Bioelec,* Vol. I, 1982, p. 239.

66. F. Mandl and G. Shaw, *Quantum Field Theory,* Wiley, 1984, Revised Edition 1993, under the heading "5.2 Covariant Quantization" and "5.3 The Photon Propagator" in Chapter 5. The longitudinal and scalar photon polarizations are not directly observable, but only in combination, where they manifest as the instantaneous Coulomb (i.e., electrostatic) potential interaction, *"which emerges as an exchange of longitudinal and scalar photons."* So the common old electrostatic scalar potential is actually comprised of longitudinal EM waves and time-polarized EM waves.

67. With the MidEast increasingly set to explode, we may be facing the unleashing of weapons of mass destruction, a vast shortage and curtailment of

available oil and energy, and a total collapse of the Western economy and therefore most of the world economy, in as little as three or four years, if the impending energy crisis worldwide is not resolved quickly. See T. E. Bearden, ADAS position paper, "The Unnecessary Energy Crisis: How to Solve It Quickly," *ibid.* As this is written, we have already had a warning shot across our bow: the vicious terrorist attacks on September 11, 2001. We are in Afghanistan and elsewhere in a war against terrorism, and anyone can see the escalation in the MidEast toward war between the U.S. and Iraq, and almost certainly a resulting explosion in the MidEast and unleashing of the hostile terrorists assets and mass destruction weapons already inside the United States. Since modern economies are based on cheap energy, and cheap energy is largely based on cheap oil, then with surging energy demands worldwide we shall see "oil wars" erupt and rage worldwide, with terrorist retaliations and attacks—using weapons of mass destruction—occurring in U.S. cities. *Unless energy from the vacuum is quickly developed and deployment begun at high speed, we risk the coming collapse of the world economy, great destruction of populaces, and a new Dark Ages.*

68. E. T. Whittaker, 1903, *ibid.*

69. Daniel A. Walker, Charles S. McCreery, and Fermin J. Oliveira, "Kaitoku Seamount and the Mystery Cloud of 9 April 1984," *Science,* Vol. 227, Feb. 8, 1985, p. 607-611; Daniel L. McKenna and Daniel A. Walker, "Mystery Cloud: Additional Observations," *Science,* Vol. 234, Oct. 24, 1986, p. 412-413.

70. Superpotential theory was initiated by E. T. Whittaker, extending earlier concepts advanced by G. Johnstone Stoney. See E. T. Whittaker, *Proc. Lond. Math. Soc,* Series 2, Vol. 1, 1904, p. 367-372. Nisbet extended the Whittaker and Debye two-potential solutions of Maxwell's equations to points within the source distribution. This is a full generalization of the vector superpotentials (for media of arbitrary properties) together with their relations to such scalar potentials as those of Debye. See A. Nisbet, *Physica,* Vol. 21, 1955, p. 799. Also, A. Ricci in 1901 introduced what might be called the magnetization potential, satisfying a certain equation, as an alternate to the Hertz vector. This was a part of early vector superpotentials. For an excellent overview discussion of superpotentials and related things, see Melba Phillips, "Classical Electrodynamics," in *Principles of Electrodynamics and Relativity,* Vol. IV of *Encyclopedia of Physics,* edited by S. Flugge, Springer-Verlag, 1962. Phillips discusses, for example, that Whittaker 1903 (note: oral delivery; paper was published in 1904) was the first to prove that one can derive a general electromagnetic field from two scalar functions, which are really components of the vector superpotentials, with proper choices of the gauge functions. Whittaker's method is well known in the treatment of transverse electric and transverse magnetic modes of a cylindrical cavity or a waveguide. Nisbet has shown that this result may be extended within the source distribution (assumed

given) by a suitable choice of stream functions. The Debye potentials and the Bromwich potentials are essentially radial components of the vector potentials of which Whittaker potentials are the real parts. So in general the particular integral (the stream potentials) of the inhomogeneous Maxwell equations may be so chosen that the complementary function can be expressed in terms of only two scalars, which are components of the vector superpotentials. The Whittaker and the Debye-Bromwich potentials are special cases of two vector superpotentials.

71. David Jones, *Vancouver Sun Times,* Weekend Magazine, Dec. 17, 1977, p. 17.

72. For more specific information on the production of practical antigravity and an experiment demonstrating it, see T. E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA, 2002, Chapter 8. Approach to Antigravity.

73. T. E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, CA, 2002, Chapter 10. Cold Fusion: Low Spatial-Energy Nuclear Reactions at High Time-Energy. By inadvertently using highly compressed time-energy, cold fusion researchers are actually using—on the tabletop—higher energy density than our present high-energy physics uses in its largest accelerators. The conventional scientific community does not have a single scientific program dedicated to using time as energy, even when one's physics model can legitimately be made of a single fundamental unit. When the joule is chosen as that unit, then time becomes totally a function of energy, just as is mass. The use of mass-energy gave us the nuclear age; the use of time-energy will give us a far greater age, if we can ever get the scientific community off its duff and moving.

74. Further, the second law of thermodynamics has long been known not to apply to a single charge, atom, or molecule or to a small group. For such microscopic phenomena, there will occur reversed reactions a certain small fraction of the time. But also see G. M. Wang, E. M. Sevick, Emil Mittag, Debra J. Searles, and Denis J. Evans, "Experimental Demonstration of Violations of the Second Law of Thermodynamics for Small Systems and Short Time Scales," *Phys. Rev. Lett.,* 89(5), 29 July 2002, 050601. These researchers have experimentally proven that the second law can be and is violated for much larger scales—up to micro (colloidal) size—and for much longer times (up to two seconds). Hence it is now proven that such "reversed zones" where reactions run backwards for quite a bit, can and do in fact occur on the colloidal scale, sufficient for the formation of large clusters of like charges. Evans and his colleagues have pointed out that these results dramatically affect chemistry.

75. Shoulders has been creating and using such charge clusters for years. See Kenneth R. Shoulders, "Energy Conversion Using High Charge Density,"

U.S. Patent # 5,018,180, May 21, 1991; — "Energy Conversion using High Charge Density," U.S. Patent No. 5,123,039, 1992; — "Method and Apparatus for Production and Manipulation of High Density Charge," U.S. Patent #5,054,046, 1991; — U.S. Patent #5,054,047, 1991; — "Circuits Responsive To and Controlling Charged Particles," U.S. Patent 5,148,461, 1992; — and Steve Shoulders, "Observations on the Role of Charge Clusters in Nuclear Cluster Reactions,"J. *New Energy,* 1(3), Fall 1996, p. 111-121.

76. D. J. Evans and D. J. Searles, *Phys. Rev. E,* Vol. 50, 1994, p. 1645.

77. See Donald Kennedy, "To Publish or Not to Publish," *Science,* Vol. 295, 8 Mar. 2002, p. 1793.

78. R. P. Taleyarkhan, C. D. West, J. S. Cho, R. T. Lahey Jr., R. I. Nigmatulin, and R. C. Block, "Evidence for Nuclear Emissions During Acoustic Cavitation," *Science,* Vol. 295, 8 Mar. 2002, p. 1868-1873. Quoting from the abstract: "In cavitation experiments with deuterated acetone, tritium decay activity above background levels was detected. In addition, evidence for neutron emission near 2.5 million electron volts was also observed, as would be expected for deuterium-deuterium fusion. Control experiments with normal acetone did not result in tritium activity or neutron emissions."

79. Yuri T. Didenko and Kenneth S. Suslick, "The energy efficiency of formation of photons, radicals and ions during single-bubble cavitation," *Nature,* Vol. 418, July 25, 2002, p. 394-397.

80. E.g., see John Archibald Wheeler and Richard Phillips Feynman, *Phys. Rev.* 59, 1941, p. 683; —"Interaction with the Absorber as the Mechanism of Radiation," *Rev. Mod. Phys.,* 17(2, 3), Apr.-Jul. 1945, p. 157-181.

81. Albert Einstein, "Foreword," in Max Jammer, *Concepts of Space: The History of Theories of Space in Physics,* Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1969, p. xi-xii.

82. Robert A. Fisher, [Ed.], *Optical Phase Conjugation,* Academic Press, NY, 1983, p. xv.

83. Basically, the choice between distant heating in the interference zone, or distant cooling, is as simple as how one biases the ground potential used for the electrical grounds of the interferometer transmitters. Biasing well above the ambient potential in the distant IZ produces divergent EM energy (heat) forming and radiating in the distant zone. Biasing well below the ambient IZ potential produces convergent EM energy (cold) forming and radiating in the distant zone.

84. Mass is mostly empty space filled with EM potentials, fields, and waves. Since these potentials, fields, and waves are simply bundles of longitudinal EM waves and their impressed dynamics, it follows that mass itself

is mostly a "giant superhighway" for the transmission of LWs. This is actually a sort of "subspace" transmission "right through" matter, so to speak.

85. As demonstrated by such dual serial usage by a giant interferometer in the anomalous and explosive "cloud" phenomena near the Kurils in April 1984. For excellent descriptive articles and a hard look at the phenomena, see Walker et al., *Science, ibid.*

86. See "Soviet device uses radio waves as tranquilizer," AP release, *Huntsville [Alabama] Times,* May 19, 1983. See also W. Ross Adey, "Biological effects of low energy electromagnetic fields," *Proc. NATO Adv. Study Inst. on Advances in Biological Effects and Dosimetry of Low Energy Electromagnetic Fields,* Plenum Press, New York, 1983, p. 359-391. Adey apparently was aware only of ordinary U(l) electrodynamics. He describes the **LIDA** device as follows: *"Soviet investigators have also developed a therapeutic device utilizing low frequency square wave modulation of a radiofrequency field. This instrument know as the LIDA, was developed by L. Y. Rabichev and his colleagues in Soviet Armenia, and is designed for the 'treatment of neuropsychic and somatic disorders, such as neuroses, psychoses, insomnia, hypertension, stammering, bronchial asthma, and asthenic and reactic disturbances.' It is covered by U.S. Patent #3,773,049. In addition to the pulsed RF field, the device also delivered pulsed light, pulsed sound, and pulsed heat. Each stimulus train can be independently adjusted in intensity and frequency. The radiofrequency field has a nominal carrier frequency of 40 MHz and a maximum output of approximately 40 watts. The RF field is applied to the patient on the sides of the neck through two disc electrodes approximately 10 cm. in diameter. The electrodes are located at a distance of 2-4 cm from the skin. Optimal repetition frequencies are said to lie in the range from 40 to 80 pulses per minute. Pulse duration is typically 0.2 sec. In a 1-year trial period, the instrument was used on 740 patients, including adults and children. Positive therapeutic effects were claimed in more than 80 percent of the cases treated."* We accent that this is one of the simplest Russian psychoenergetics devices, obsoleted very early on, and thus released very early for public use.

87. Since U.S. researchers are unaware of the EM wave polarization transduction mechanisms, and in general have no instruments for detecting longitudinal EM waves, the specific transduction effects on humans would not be measured by U.S. laboratories. Hence the U.S. scientists could only think of it in conventional electrodynamic terms, and remained totally unknowledgeable about the specific transduction mechanisms in the human body producing time-polarized EM waves and effects from the device.

88. Max Frankel, "Khrushchev Says Soviet Will Cut Forces a Third; Sees 'Fantastic Weapon'," New *York Times,* Jan. 15, 1960, p. 1.

89. For a simplified introduction to psychoenergetics and the mind-matter coupling mechanism, see T.E. Bearden, "Mind Control and EM Wave Polarization Transductions, Part I", *Explore,* 9(2), 1999, p. 59; Part II, *Explore,* 9(3), 1999, p. 61; Part III, *Explore,* 9(4,5), 1999, p. 100-108.

90. One of the serious goals of the die-hard KGB psychoenergetics scientists appears to be to achieve the capability of directly engineering the entire human collective unconscious mind. The plan envisioned is to convert the human species into a sort of "giant ant species" where each one has perfect, machine-like niche and function (except, of course, for the elite Communist masters). In short, they conceived back there in the 1960s that such a "perfect communist state" for all humanity was in fact possible to achieve technically, with sufficient development of psychoenergetic technology. They are apparently well along the way toward achieving that goal. [The U.S. has not even conceived such a scientific possibility, and modern cognitive science in the West seems bent on the rather astounding proposition that mind itself does not even exist!]. We point out that no type of physical defense is even possible against such a capability engineered into the collective human unconscious, once it is achieved. The only "counter" is to use the same technology (it has to first be developed) to "re-engineer" what will have been done. But our fellows have not even conceived the possibility of the threat, much less the cause or the counter. Hence they continue to totally misunderstand what happened to Captains Button, Svoboda, and Hess in successful mind-control tests achieved perfectly at great distance.

91. To see the nature of the time-density wave (which is basically a longitudinal EM wave along the time axis), due to the perfect correlation between time-energy flow currents and variations with respect to longitudinal EM waves, see T.E. Bearden, "Giant Negentropy from the Common Dipole," 2000, *ibid.* Not stressed in the paper is the fact that the same dipolar negentropy with correlated EM time-energy currents and EM spatial energy currents, exists in the "individual" photon. Further, they can occur in coupled photon-antiphoton pairs, yielding the graviton. For time-polarized EM photons, it appears that two photon-antiphoton pairs are coupled, yielding the "supergraviton." Elsewhere we have briefly and addressed these novel formations as hypotheses.

92. Induction of specific diseases and health changes in the U.S. Embassy in Moscow over four decades, included causing the deaths of three U.S. Ambassadors. It was accomplished by implementing desired disease-pattern "engines" infolded inside field-free potentials. The Johns Hopkins study of the radiation patterns revealed a most significant finding: All the affected persons were in regions of the Embassy where the Russian microwave radiation *fields* were absent. In short, where the field-free—and thus very stable—potentials existed. Since these scientists (and most others in classical EM) consider that EM effects are caused only by fields, they concluded (totally erroneously) that

these health changes could not have been caused by the microwave radiation. To the contrary, they had just clearly proven that the radiation was indeed the cause. They showed a 100% correlation to the *presence of field-free potentials,* and a 100% anticorrelation to where the fields were present. This was for induced phenomena over several years. Had the radiation not been the culprit, then some health changes would have occurred where the fields were present, and some would have occurred where they were absent. That is not what happened at all, and this inexplicable logical non sequitur against common statistical inference was the accepted decision. The truly revealing aspect was that *apparently the entire U.S. Intelligence community had no competence or capability in higher group symmetry electrodynamics.*

93. E.g., see Lewis H. Ryder, *Quantum Field Theory,* Cambridge University Press, 2nd Edition, 1996, p. 147+ which covers the four photon polarizations. See also F. Mandl and G. Shaw, *Quantum Field Theory,* Wiley, 1984, Revised Edition 1993, under the heading "5.2 Covariant Quantization" and "5.3 The Photon Propagator" in Chapter 5.

94. We elaborate on this somewhat, in "Mind Control and EM Wave Polarization Transductions", *ibid.*

95. Again, we point out the unified field approach of Mendel Sachs as probably being the best Western model in which to grapple with these phenomena.

96. David J. Bohm, "A Suggested Interpretation of the Quantum Theory in Terms of'Hidden' Variables, I and II." *Phys. Rev.,* 85(2), Jan. 15, 1952, p. 166-179 (Part I); 180-193 (Part II).

97. T. E. Bearden, *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics,* Cheniere Press, Santa Barbara, Ca. www.cheniere.org, 1991.

98. W. A. Rodrigues Jr. and J.-Y. Lu, "On the existence of undistorted progressive waves (UPWs) of arbitrary speeds 0 < v < oo in nature," *Found. Phys.,* 27(3), 1997, p. 435-508. A slightly corrected version is downloadable as hep-th/9606171 on the Los Alamos National Laboratory web site. It includes corrections to the published version.

99. W. A. Rodrigues Jr. and J. Vaz Jr., "Subluminal and Superluminal Solutions in Vacuum of the Maxwell Equations and the Massless Dirac Equation," *Adv. Appl. Clifford Algebras,* Vol. 7(S), 1997, p. 457-466.

100. E.g., see A. Enders and G. Nimtz, *Phys. Rev. Lett.,* Vol. 48, 1993, p. 632. Enders, Aichmann, Nimtz and co-workers at the University of Cologne have transmitted 8.7 GHz microwaves (free space wavelength 3.4 cm) traveling in a rectangular wave-guide that contains a "barrier" section of reduced dimensions. They transmuted Mozart's 40th Symphony as frequency modulated

microwaves through a barrier wave-guide at an FTL group velocity of 4.7c, receiving audibly recognizable music from the microwave photons that survived their barrier passage.

101. J. D. Jackson, *Classical Electrodynamics,* 2nd Edition, Wiley, New York, 1975, p. 222.

102. See H. A. Lorentz, *Vorlesungen Uber Theoretische Physik an der Universitat Leiden, Vol. V, Die Maxwellsche Theorie (1900-1902),* Akademische Verlagsgesellschaft M.B.H., Leipzig, 1931, "Die Energie im elektromagnetischen Feld," p. 179-186. Figure 25 on p. 185 shows the Lorentz concept of integrating the energy flow vector around a closed cylindrical surface surrounding a volumetric element. This is the procedure which arbitrarily selects only a small component of the total energy flow in space outside a circuit and associated with it—specifically, the small Poynting component diverged by the surface charges into the conductors to power the electrons—and then treats that tiny component as the "entire" vast energy flow (which may be a trillion or more times greater in magnitude). Thereby Lorentz arbitrarily discarded all the huge *Heaviside* energy transport component that does not strike the circuit at all, is not diverged into the conductors, and is just wasted. See Oliver Heaviside, *Electrical Papers,* Vol. 2, 1887, p. 94. Quoting: *"It [the energy transfer flow] takes place, in the vicinity of the wire, very nearly parallel to it, with a slight slope towards the wire... . Prof. Poynting, on the other hand, holds a different view, representing the transfer as nearly perpendicular to a wire, i.e., with a slight departure from the vertical. This difference of a quadrant can, I think, only arise from what seems to be a misconception on his part as to the nature of the electric field in the vicinity of a wire supporting electric current. The lines of electric force are nearly perpendicular to the wire. The departure from perpendicularity is usually so small that I have sometimes spoken of them as being perpendicular to it, as they practically are, before I recognized the great physical importance of the slight departure. It causes the convergence of energy into the wire."*

103. When it is associated with positive energy fields and potentials from positive mass, positive energy source charges, we have nominated that long-unaccounted Heaviside energy flow component as the source of the excess gravity holding the arms of the spiral galaxies together (a solution to the dark matter problem). When it is associated with negative energy fields and potentials from negative-energy Dirac Sea holes in 4-space, we have nominated that unaccounted energy flow component as the source of the excess antigravity responsible for accelerating the expansion of the universe (a solution to the dark energy problem).

104. About a year from now, Bedini and I will also release a very novel use of this Heaviside energy flow component in inverted circuits—circuits that

operate almost completely in reverse from normal textbook circuits. This is a totally new kind of circuit that we hope will revolutionize power systems and electronic control systems. Until our intellectual property rights are secured, we are not releasing any details at all.

105. Terence W. Barrett, "Tesla's Nonlinear Oscillator-Shuttle-Circuit (OSC) Theory," *Ann. Fond. Louis de Broglie,* 16(1), 1991, p. 23-41. Tesla was able to shuttle energy around in his circuits at will. Barrett went on to improve the process and patent two versions. See T. W. Barrett, "Active Signalling Systems," U.S. Patent No. 5,486,833, Jan. 23, 1996. This is a signaling system in time-frequency space for detecting targets in the presence of clutter and for penetrating media. See also T. W. Barrett, "Oscillator-Shuttle-Circuit (OSC) Networks for Conditioning Energy in Higher-Order Symmetry Algebraic and RF Phase Conjugation," U.S. Patent No. 5,493,691. Feb. 20, 1996.

106. Bryan G. Wallace, "The Unified Quantum Electrodynamic Ether," *Found. Phys.,* 3(3), Sept. 1973, p. 381-388.

107. William G. Harter, John Evans, Roberto Vega, and Sanford Wilson, "Galloping waves and their relativistic properties," Am. J. *Phys.,* 53(7), July 1985, p. 671-679. Most waves caused by a single frequency source have a galloping motion. The only exceptions are the very special cases of absolutely pure moving waves or absolutely pure standing waves. The superposition and resulting interference of two oppositely moving waves generally yield a wave having nonuniform motion; in short, the wave rushes forward rapidly, then slows appreciably, etc. A relativistic example is given in which the source frame observes a very nonuniformly galloping wave whose velocity varies between 0.01 c and 100 c, even though its average velocity is c. Relativistic properties of interfering electromagnetic plane waves are discussed.

108. S. L. Miller, "The Formation of Organic Compounds on the Primitive Earth," *Ann. NYAcad. Sci.,* Vol. 69, 1957, p. 260; — *Bioch. Biophys. Acta.,* Vol. 23, 1957, p. 480-489; — *Science,* Vol. 117, May 15, 1953, p. 528-529; — and H. C. Urey, "Organic Compound Synthesis on the Primitive Earth," *Science,* Vol. 130, 1959, p. 245-251.

109. R. Harada and S. Fox, "Thermal Synthesis of Natural Amino-Acids from a Postulated Primitive Terrestrial Atmosphere," *Nature,* 201(4917), 1964, p. 335-336; S.W. Fox, "How Did Life Begin?", *Science,* 132(3421), July 22, 1960, p. 200-208; — and S. Yuyama, "Abiotic Production of Primitive Protein and Formed Microparticles," *N.Y. Acad. Sci. Ann.,* Vol. 108, June 1963, p. 487-494; — and K. Harada, "Thermal Copolymerization of Amino Acids to a Product Resembling Protein," *Science,* 128(333), 1958, p. 1214; — and M. Middlebrook, "Anhydrocopolymerization of Amino Acids Under the Influence of Hypothetically Primitive Terrestrial Conditions," *Federation Proc.* Vol. 13, Mar. 1954, p. 211.

110. H. C. Urey, "On the Early Chemical History of the Earth and the Origin of Life," *Proc. Nat. Acad. ScL,* 38(4), 1952, p. 351-363.

111. I.e., one may speak of the "potential" of a specific engine of a former life form, and then realize that the potential for that form reduces in magnitude inversely as the radial distance from the Earth. However, it does not reduce to zero until an infinite distance is reached.

112. As an example, a great EM energy flow—produced by the cross product ExH of the earth's magnetic field and the earth-to-electrosphere electric field—flows from West to East around the earth, nearly parallel to the equator. Infolded in that great EM energy flow are all the structures of all the genetics and life forms on earth, or that have ever been on earth and conditioned the natural scalar potential of the earth. The vials in the laboratory experiments of Miller, Fox, and Urey were all continually bathed in that great energy flow, which within it contained the entire life structure and dynamics of the planet. So no "inert" experiments were ever performed, contrary to the interpretations of the scientific community.

113. Vlail Kaznacheyev and L. P. Mikhailova, *Ultraweak Radiation in Intercellular Interactions*, [in Russian], Novosibirsk, 1981 [an English exposition of much of the Kaznacheyev work is given in Vlail Kaznacheyev, "Electromagnetic Bioinformation in Intercellular Interactions," *Psi Research,* 1(1), Mar. 1982, p. 47-76.] Kaznacheyev, e.g., appears to have headed the Soviet team actually producing the basis for the disease-inducing technology utilized for four decades in the microwave radiation of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow.

114. Specifically, the down payment was $900 million in gold. The lease is probably about $1 billion per year. Thus the Yakuza acquired very powerful strategic weapons, and became a secret power to be reckoned with internationally and strategically. Since 1990, weather engineering over the U.S. and occasional shootdown of aircraft (such as the TWA-800) have been by rogue Japanese fingers on the scalar interferometer weapon triggers, on site in Russia.

115. The Yakuza has also transferred some of the longitudinal EM wave interferometry technology to their Japanese facilities. One such system has apparently been deployed in the power grid, and has been used to kill some government officials who opposed the Yakuza. This information was obtained by some brave Japanese risking their lives to get the information to the present author.

116. Many important KGB weapon tests happened in April of various years; the KGB weapons folks were simply preparing for their May Day reports, and each wished to have a good one.

117. Sen. Sam Nunn's investigation teams verified that the Aum Shinrikyo were actively seeking the "Tesla Weapons", with the Aum Shinrikyo even visiting the Tesla Museum in Beograd for that purpose. We have 100% certain confirmation of the Yakuza and Aum Shinrikyo leasing of the scalar interferometers from the KGB and Russian Mafia (working for the KGB) at the end of 1989 or first few days of 1990. Sen. Nunn's report confirms that the Aum Shinrikyo set up a University in Moscow. Our comment is that this is where the Russians actually taught the Japanese crews the science and technical functions so that they could successfully man and use the scalar (longitudinal EM wave) interferometry weapons.

118. Recall that in the 1950s and early 1960s, Kaznacheyev et al., *ibid.,* had already clearly proven that nearly any form of cellular change, damage, or disease could be induced in cells at a distance by purely electrodynamic means.

119. In the kill of the Arrow DC-8 at Gander, Newfoundland on 12 Dec. 1985, the struck aircraft did charge up with time-density charging, and many pieces of the wreckage did indeed emit longitudinal EM waves thereafter for some time. Consequently, the Canadian recovery crews working the site and handling the materials, were exposed to longitudinal EM wave radiation for varying degrees of exposure. It follows that many of those on-site handlers should have later come down with physical ailments, with symptoms such as flu-like features, weakness, heart palpitations, headaches, dizziness, disturbance of equilibrium, and with various infections because of weakened immune systems. They also should have had weakened cellular regenerative (healing) systems, so their physical problems would endure and largely remain. About five dozen of the recovery personnel did come down with those exact symptoms, and many remained disabled or debilitated for some years.

120. We have also explained (a) why the French forces in the Gulf War did not get GWS, while American, British, and Canadian forces did, (b) why the native population did not exhibit GWS, and (c) the remaining anomalous phenomena associated, such as the semen "infecting" the wife, the children catching similar or related conditions from sustained close proximity to their father's biofields (transmission of engines), etc.

121. Mario Bunge, Foundations of Physics, Springer-Verlag, New York, 1967, p. 176.

122. T. E. Bearden, "Giant Negentropy from the Common Dipole," J. *New Energy,* 5(1), Summer 2000, p. 11-23 gives the solution to the long-vexing source charge problem. The paper is also carried on DoE restricted website http://www.ott.doe.gov/electromagnetic/ and on www.cheniere.org

123. Two examples of inane articles and actions in this respect, revealing no knowledge that every charge in the universe already exhibits COP = oo, are (a)

Graham P. Collins, "There's No Stopping Them: Perpetual Motion is alive and well at the U.S. Patent Office," and (b) Resolution by the Executive Board at the June 2002 meeting of the American Physical Society (APS) as follows: *"The Executive Board of the American Physical Society is concerned that in this period of unprecedented scientific advance, misguided or fraudulent claims of perpetual motion machines and other sources of unlimited free energy are proliferating. Such devices directly violate the most fundamental laws of nature, laws that have guided the scientific progress that is transforming our world."* So the learned APS has just declared the source charge as an unacceptable "free energy" machine and perpetual motion machine, since the charge simply sits there and continuously pours out real observable EM energy in all directions at the speed of light, without any observable EM energy input. Thus the APS has implicitly declared all EM fields and potentials and their energy—which includes every joule of EM energy in the universe, in matter or in space—to be unacceptable byproducts of perpetual motion nonsense. We heartily call upon the APS in the name of science to enforce their resolution in the orthodox academic community, who are the greatest perpetual motion advocates in history. To be consistent with their own resolution, they must root out and destroy—from all texts and universities and from the scientific literature—any mention whatsoever of charge, field, potential, and EM energy. Either they must do that, or stand hoisted on their own petard as a dogmatic group still very much unaware of why the Nobel Prize was awarded to Lee and Yang in 1957 and what the proof—by Wu et al.—of the asymmetry of opposite charges means with respect to the source charge considered in its modern quantum field theory view as a dipolarity of a bare infinite central charge surrounded by clustering virtual charges (also infinite charge) of opposite sign in the active vacuum. Every electrical engineering department and professor and textbook still uses a model and teaches a subject assuming that every charge in the universe freely creates energy from nothing at all. Further, the APS in every annual meeting also tolerates, encourages, and publishes multiple papers and presentations with the same such unacceptable perpetual motion assumptions in them. Such is the lofty understanding of our present organized scientific community, which seems much more politically bent than scientifically bent. The simple Bohren experiment and the entire area of negative resonance absorption of the medium has long been established in nonlinear optics, and such experiments widely yield a nominal COP = 18. In other words, the experiments nominally output 18 times as much energy as the operator inputs, and the excess input energy is furnished absolutely for free from the active vacuum's exchange. In this case the Executive Board of the APS is not even aware of what its own physics discipline has long proven and accepted in particle physics, for nearly a half century. Neither are the self-appointed defenders of the faith, who also are totally unaware of what physics has already proven with a Nobel Prize awarded nearly a half century ago.

124. C. S. Wu, E. Ambler, R. W. Hayward, D. D. Hoppes and R. P. Hudson, "Experimental Test of Parity Conservation in Beta Decay," *Phys. Rev.*, Vol. 105, 1957, p. 1413. We also quote Nobelist T. D. Lee as follows: *"Since nonobservables imply symmetry, any discovery of asymmetry must imply some observable. The experiment of Wu, Ambler, Hayward, Hoppes and Hudson... established the asymmetry between the positive and negative signs of electricity."* [T. D. Lee, *Symmetries, Asymmetries, and the World of Particles*, U. Wash. Press, Seattle, 1988, p. 11.].

125. Dilip Kondepudi and Ilya Prigogine, *Modern Thermodynamics: From Heat Engines to Dissipative Structures*, Wiley, New York, 1998, reprinted with corrections 1999.

126. See "Secret Speech: Did Brezhnev Come Clean?" *National Review*, 29(8), Mar. 4, 1977, p. 248, 250

127. For the energy description of this device and some results, see Floyd Sweet and T. E. Bearden, "Utilizing Scalar Electromagnetics to Tap Vacuum Energy," *Proc. 26th Intersoc. Energy Conversion Engineering Conf. (IECEC '91)*, Boston, Massachusetts, p. 370-375.

128. Also see my book, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 2002, *ibid*, which includes photographs of the self-powering Sweet device, courtesy of Walter Rosenthal.

129. Roy Brewer was very active in Hollywood Unions against Communists when they were busily penetrating the Hollywood complex. He was a staunch anti-communist, fighting them out of control of the unions, way back when. Ronald Reagan was a personal friend of his of long standing, and Roy had open access to the White House when Reagan was President.

Roy briefed Reagan on the Russian scalar weapons, and Reagan believed him. Three times, Reagan ordered his Secretary of Defense to take action in that area, but neither of the three did so because the U.S. Intelligence Community did not believe it and adamantly opposed any such action. We took quite a beating in those days, for quite a long time (some years), before certain key parts of the Government finally believed us, checked it out experimentally, and found that it worked.

Roy also introduced me to the Duke de Grantsmesnil, one of the last of the great old British intelligence men, now unfortunately deceased. In the hectic 1997 days when we were trying desperately to warn a little friendly nation (and our own) against a coming great strategic strike on the U.S. and other allies, the Duke played a major role in introducing us directly to higher political levels in that little nation - which was the only nation on earth that could counter the pending strike. The first planned strike scheduled in February 1997 was successfully countered, only to be immediately rescheduled. In the second incident, the attack was scheduled for May 1, 1997. We finally realized why the hostile nation could reschedule and go ahead, and needed then to warn the little nation of the reason in some detail. We had tried everything to get certain information through, and all means had failed. A former ambassador of that nation to Great Britain was also assassinated during that struggle. Roy Brewer was one of the key fellows assisting in that attempt, as were other personal colleagues of mine who also were witnesses and direct participants in those desperate events. When all else failed, I finally just faxed the Prime Minister directly, in the clear, some five days before the attack, urging the most urgent and immediate action possible by the Prime Minister. A complete change in command and control of the weapon was required, and that change had to be made and then the hostile nation had to be notified that the change was in place (and probably shown that it was). The Prime Minister accepted the message and the necessary action was carried out immediately. So two days or so before the actual attack was scheduled, that great hostile armada began standing down. Oh, the hostile nation and its leaders could have easily destroyed the entire United States in two hours or so, without fail! But then their own country would have promptly disappeared from the face of the earth. So they stood down. And our own Intel community never even picked it up (they did get my messages alerting the U.S. Government, but thought it was a joke or something). They, of course, also intercepted my open fax to the Prime Minister, and so were all over me for that one for a while thereafter.

Interestingly, at the very time that great armada was just beginning to stand down, then Secretary of Defense William Cohen made the following statement at a conference in Georgia: "Others are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves...so there are plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations...It's real, and that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts, and that's why this is so important." Secretary of Defense William Cohen at an April 1997 counterterrorism conference sponsored by former Senator Sam Nunn. Quoted from DoD News Briefing, Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen, Q&A at the Conference on Terrorism, Weapons of Mass Destruction, and U.S. Strategy, University of Georgia, Athens, Apr. 28, 1997.

Ironically, the Secretary was referring to the earlier scalar interferometer weapons, and now the quantum potential weapons etc. He was completely unaware that a great strategic strike had actually been scheduled and was just being aborted as he was speaking those words.

Roy Brewer is one of those fellows who has been a great American, has served his country admirably during his lifetime, and contributed greatly to preventing a planned take-over by the Communists of the labor unions of America. In addition, he helped set up the contacts with the friendly **liltle foregn nation, so** that on four occasions planned attacks to destroy the United States have been successfully aborted or handled.

As you know, one of the great failures in the Communist plan to have America go communist was their failure with the labor unions. And we owe that failure to the steadfast efforts of some staunch folks like Roy Brewer. He helped save our nation when many of us were still wearing knee pants.

130. Wheeler's principle, as stated in W. Misner, K. S. **Thorne, and J.** A. Wheeler, *Gravitation*, W.H. Freeman and Co., San Francisco, 1973, p. 5.

131. With the new improvements we uncovered, treatment time can be reduced to 5 minutes per patient. Three such treatments one week apart would be what are required. Hence one machine station could treat a patient every five minutes, around the clock. With sufficient portable treatment units, mass treatment for mass casualties would become a practical reality.

The Evidence of Earth's Lost Civilization

FINGERPRINTS OF THE GODS

BY THE AUTHOR OF *THE SIGN AND THE SEAL*

GRAHAM HANCOCK

$17.00

Could the story of mankind be far older than we have previously believed? Using tools as varied as archaeo-astronomy, geology, and computer analysis of ancient myths, Graham Hancock presents a compelling case to suggest that it is.

In *Fingerprints of the Gods,* Hancock embarks on a worldwide quest to put together all the pieces of the vast and fascinating jigsaw of mankind's hidden past. In ancient monuments as far apart as Egypt's Great Sphinx, the strange Andean ruins of Tiahuanaco, and Mexico's awe-inspiring Temples of the Sun and Moon, he reveals not only the clear fingerprints of an as-yet-unidentified civilization of remote antiquity, but also startling evidence of its vast sophistication, technological advancement, and evolved scientific knowledge.

A record-breaking number one best-seller in Britain, *Fingerprints of the Gods* contains the makings of an intellectual revolution, a dramatic and irreversible change in the way that we understand our past—and so our future.

And *Fingerprints of the Gods* tells us something more. As we recover the truth about prehistory, and discover the real meaning of ancient myths and monuments, it becomes apparent that a warning has been handed down to us, a warning of terrible cataclysm that afflicts the Earth in great cycles at irregular intervals of time — a cataclysm that may be about to recur.

GRAHAM HANCOCK was formerly East Africa correspondent for *The Economist* and a correspondent for the London *Sunday Times.* His *The Sign and the Seal* (Crown, 1992), an international best-seller, documented his real-life quest for the Ark of the Covenant. He has appeared on television with Michael Palin in his recent *Pole to Pole* series, and on the BBC and CNN, as well as the National Geographic's *Explorer* series. His next book is *The Message of the Sphinx,* written with Robert Bauval.

Praise for Graham Hancock's *The Sign and the Seal*

"A reading experience of pure gold . . . History buffs, Bible scholars, anyone who likes a great intellectual detective yarn will plunge into *The Sign and the Seal* and not come up for air until the end." —*Seattle Times*

Praise for *Fingerprints of the Gods*

"A fancy piece of historical sleuthing . . . intriguing and entertaining and sturdy enough to give a long pause for thought." —*Kirkus Reviews*

"Readers will hugely enjoy their quest in these pages of inspired storytelling." —*The Times*, London

Cover design by Larry Lurin

Three Rivers Press
New York
http://www.randomhouse.com/

EAN
9 780517 887295
90000
ISBN 0-517-88729-0

FINGERPRINTS OF THE GODS

Also by Graham Hancock

Journey Through Pakistan
Ethiopia: The Challenge of Hunger
AIDS: The Deadly Epidemic
Lords of Poverty
African Ark: Peoples of the Horn
The Sign and the Seal: A Quest for the Lost Ark of the Covenant
The Message of the Sphinx (with Robert Bauval)

Fingerprints of the Gods

Graham Hancock

Photographs by Santha Faiia

Three Rivers Press
New York

Copyright © 1995 by Graham Hancock
All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or
transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including
photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system,
without permission in writing from the publisher.

Published by Three Rivers Press, a division of Crown Publishers, Inc.,
201 East 50th Street, New York, New York 10022.
Member of the Crown Publishing Group.

Originally published in Great Britain by William Heinemann, Ltd.,
an imprint of Reed Consumer Books Ltd., in 1995.
First American hardcover edition published by
Crown Publishers, Inc., in 1995.

Random House, Inc. New York, Toronto, London, Sydney, Auckland www.randomhouse.com

THREE RIVERS PRESS and colophon are trademarks of
Crown Publishers, Inc.

Printed in the United States of America

Line illustrations by R. J. Cook

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Hancock, Graham.

Fingerprints of the gods / by Graham Hancock.—1st American ed.
Includes index.

1. Lost continents. 2. Civilization, Ancient. 3. Antarctica-Discovery
and exploration. 4. World maps—To 1800. I. Title.
GH751.H293 1995 930-dc20 95-6964

ISBN 0-517-88729-0 15

14 13 12 11 10

For Santha ... for being there.
With all my love.

Contents

Contents 5
Acknowledgements..........10
Part I 12
  Chapter 1 13
    Ancient sources 14
    A man ahead of his time 19
    Piri Reis and his sources..........21
    Legacy of a lost civilization?..........21
  Chapter 2 23
    Ross Sea 24
    Mercator and Buache..........25
    The epoch of the map-makers..........27
    South America..........31
    Sea levels and ice ages..........32
  Chapter 3 35
    The mysteries of longitude..........35
    Precision instruments..........38
    The lost mathematicians 39
Part II 42
  Chapter 4 43
    The riddle of the lines 43
    Linemakers, map-makers 48
  Chapter 5 50
    'Foam of the Sea' 50
    Citadel of Viracocha 51
    The bearded stranger..........52
  Chapter 6 54
    Civilizing mission..........56
    The work of demons?..........57
  Chapter 7 60
    Casting down the giants..........60
    Ancient traditions 62
    Time capsule..........63
    Machu Picchu dreaming 64
    Jigsaw puzzle..........66
  Chapter 8 68
    Rumours of a cataclysm 69
  Chapter 9 73
    Boats, water and salvation..........73
    Reed boats of Suriqui..........75
    Road to Tiahuanaco ... .76
  Chapter 10 77
    Sunken temple..........78
    Pyramid 79
    Gateway of the Sun 81
  Chapter 11 83
    Fish-garbed figures 85
    Images of extinct species..........87
  Chapter 12 92

        Struggle and abandonment 94
        An artificial language 97
        Mexico....................97
Part III....................99
    Chapter 13 100
        Slaughterhouses 101
        Children of the Fifth Sun 103
        Lightbringer....................105
    Chapter 14 107
        Viracocha's Mexican twin 107
        Cosmic struggle....................110
        Fire serpents....................111
        Serpent Sanctuary 112
    Chapter 15 114
        Tears for the past....................115
        Gigantic men of deformed stature....................117
        Remnants....................118
        Pyramids upon pyramids 120
    Chapter 16 122
        Santiago Tuxtla....................124
        Tres Zapotes....................124
    Chapter 17 127
        San Lorenzo....................127
        La Venta....................128
        Deus ex machina....................133
        Whispers of ancient secrets....................134
    Chapter 18 136
        Hypothetical third party 138
        Villahermosa to Oaxaca....................141
    Chapter 19 143
        Monte Alban: the downfall of masterful men 148
        Legacy 149
    Chapter 20 151
        Pacal's tomb 152
        Pyramid of the Magician....................154
        A science of prophecy....................157
    Chapter 21 158
        Knowledge out of place....................160
        Someone else's science?....................161
    Chapter 22 165
        The Citadel, the Temple and the Map of Heaven....................166
        Egypt and Mexico—more coincidences?....................168
        Hints of forgotten wisdom....................171
    Chapter 23 174
        Erasing messages from the past....................175
        Eternal numbers....................176
        Mathematical city....................180
Part IV 183
    Chapter 24 184
        And the ark went upon the face of the waters....................184
        Central America 187
        South America....................188
        North America....................190
        Water water everywhere 190
        Greece, India and Egypt....................192

- On the trail of a mystery 194
- Chapter 25 197
  - Indescribable cold, fire, earthquakes and derangement of the skies 199
  - A monster chased the sun 201
- Chapter 26 203
  - Cinderella's slipper 205
- Chapter 27 207
  - Alaska and Siberia: the sudden freeze 208
  - A thousand Krakatoas, all at once 211
  - Global flooding 212
  - A token of good faith 217
- Part V 219
  - Chapter 28 222
    - The wild celestial dance 222
    - Recondite influences 224
    - The wobble of a deformed planet 226
    - A great secret of the past 230
  - Chapter 29 232
    - When did the ancients first work out precession? 235
  - Chapter 30 240
    - At the mill with slaves 242
    - Openers of the way 246
  - Chapter 31 250
    - Computing the Great Return 251
    - Better than Hipparchus 252
    - Times of decay 253
    - Dogs, uncles and revenge 258
    - Scientists with something to say 260
  - Chapter 32 262
    - A message in the bottle of time 263
    - Mill of pain 264
- Part VI 267
  - Chapter 33 268
    - Inexplicable precision 269
    - Black hole in history 271
    - Ships in the desert 272
  - Chapter 34 274
    - Time and motion 274
    - Rampant stupidity 276
    - The guardian and the vision 278
    - Under Egyptian skies 279
    - Thinking like giants 281
  - Chapter 35 283
    - Trivializing the mystery 284
    - The cupboard was bare 286
    - Bottlenecks in the well-shaft 290
    - Not like other tombs 291
    - A certain smell 292
    - Overview 295
  - Chapter 36 297
    - A singular oppression 297
    - The moving finger writes and having writ it moves on 300
    - Pandora's Box 303
  - Chapter 37 305
    - The Beacon 305

    Mind games of the pyramid builders 307
    Unknown dark distance 309
    The Queen's Chamber 312
    Instrument 313
  Chapter 38 316
    Antechamber 317
    Stone enigmas 319
    Ceremony of the sarcophagus 322
    The game-master 324
  Chapter 39 328
    Temple of the giants 329
    Lord of Rostau 332
    Vastly, remotely, fabulously ancient 333
    Whose Sphinx is it anyway? 335
Part VII 339
  Chapter 40 340
    Bauval's Stars and West's Stones 341
    The way of the jackal 345
  Chapter 41 347
    Connections and similarities 349
    Gift of the Gods? 350
  Chapter 42 354
    Broken images of a lost technology? 355
    Repositories of a lost science? 356
    The train of the Sun and the dweller in Sirius 359
    Millions of years and the movements of the stars 361
    Copies, or translations? 363
    Last records of the First Time? 364
  Chapter 43 367
    Records of prehistory 367
    Gods, Demigods and Spirits of the Dead 369
    Diodorus Siculus and Herodotus 370
    The Turin Papyrus and the Palermo Stone 372
  Chapter 44 375
    Breath of the divine serpent 376
    Osiris and the Lords of Eternity 378
    Serene stability 381
  Chapter 45 383
    Atef Crown 383
    Seventeen centuries of kings 385
    Hypogeum 385
    The most ancient stone building in Egypt 387
    Frankfort's facts 391
    Setting sail across seas of sand and time 393
  Chapter 46 397
    Kick-start 398
    Climate Change 399
    Unseen connections? 400
    'Where is the rest of this civilization?' 400
  Chapter 47 402
    John West 402
    Robert Schoch's geology: Unriddling the Sphinx 404
    Legendary civilizations 407
    Magellan and the first dinosaur bone 408
    The problem of transmission 410

    Second opinion 411
  Chapter 48 413
    Geodetic marker 414
    Doing things by degrees 416
    The Pyramid/Earth ratio 417
    Matching fingerprints? 419
    Navigators in the Boat of Millions of Years 420
    The signature of a distant date 423
  Chapter 49 425
    The Orion Mystery 426
    The First Time 428
    The platform 430
    The cult 431
    The machine 434
    The second signature 436
    Forcing the question 440
Part VIII 441
  Chapter 50 442
    Geophysical impossibilities 442
    Library angels 444
    The missing piece of the puzzle 444
    Gravitational influences 447
    The lost continent 448
  Chapter 51 450
    A lifeless polar desert 452
    Exhibit 1 453
    Exhibit 2 454
    Exhibit 3 455
    Exhibit 4 455
    Exhibit 5 455
    Exhibit 6 455
    Exhibit 7 455
    Exhibit 8 456
    Exhibit 9 456
    Exhibit 10 457
    The icy executioner 458
    Mars and earth 460
    Memories of the polar dawn? 461
    An epoch of turmoil and darkness 462
    Exhibit 11 463
    Exhibit 12 463
    Exhibit 13 464
    Exhibit 14 464
  Chapter 52 466
    For the benefit of future generations of mankind 468
    More than just Kilroy was here 470
    The civilizers 472
    Transmitting the essence 473
    An urgent mission 475
    Walking in the last days 479
    The end of the world 480
    At the millstone grinding 482
Selected Bibliography 483

Acknowledgements

Fingerprints of the Gods could not have been written without the generous, warm-hearted and sustaining love of my partner Santha Faiia—who always gives more than she takes and who enriches the lives of everyone around her with creativity, kindness and imagination. All the photographs in the book are her work.

I am also grateful for the support and encouragement of our six children—Gabrielle, Leila, Luke, Ravi, Sean and Shanti—each one of whom I feel privileged to know.

My parents, Donald and Muriel Hancock, have been incredibly helpful, active and involved through this and many other difficult times and projects. Together with my uncle James Macaulay they have also patiently read the drafts of the evolving manuscript, offering a wealth of positive suggestions. Thanks, too, to my oldest and closest friend, Peter Marshall, with whom I have weathered many storms, and to Rob Gardner, Joseph and Sherry Jahoda, Roel Oostra, Joseph and Laura Schor, Niven Sinclair, Colin Skinner and Clem Vallance, all of whom gave me good advice.

In 1992 I suddenly found that I had a friend in Lansing, Michigan. His name is Ed Ponist and he got in touch with me soon after the publication of my previous book, *The Sign and the Seal*. Like a guardian angel he volunteered to devote a hefty chunk of his spare time to helping me out in the US with research, contacts and the collection of documentary resources of relevance to *Fingerprints of the Gods*. He did a brilliant job, always sending me the right books just when I needed them and finding references that I didn't even know existed. He was also an accurate weather-vane on the quality of my work, whose judgement I quickly learned to trust and respect. Last but not least, when Santha and I went to Arizona, to the Hopi Nation, it was Ed who came with us and who opened the way.

Ed's initial letter was part of an overwhelming deluge of mail that I received from around the world after writing *The Sign and the Seal.* For a while I tried to answer all the letters individually. Eventually, however, I got swamped with the new work on *Fingerprints* and had to stop replying. I feel bad about this, and would like to take this opportunity to thank everybody who wrote to me and to whom I did not write back. I'm intending to be more systematic in the future because I enormously value this correspondence and appreciate the high-quality information that it frequently turns out to contain ...

Other researchers who have helped me on *Fingerprints of the Gods* have been Martin Slavin, David Mestecky and Jonathan Derrick. In addition I would like to thank my Anglophone editors on both sides of the Atlantic,

Tom Weldon at Heinemann, Jim Wade at Crown and John Pearce at Doubleday Canada, as well as my literary agents Bill Hamilton and Sara Fisher, for their continuing commitment, solidarity and wise counsel.

My warmest appreciation also to those co-researchers and colleagues who have become my friends during the course of this investigation: Robert Bauval in Britain (with whom I shall be co-authoring two future books on related subjects), Colin Wilson, John Anthony West and Lew Jenkins in the United States, Rand and Rose Flem-Ath and Paul William Roberts in Canada.

Finally I want to pay tribute to Ignatius Donnelly, Arthur Posnansky, R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, Charles Hapgood and Giorgio de Santillana—investigators who saw that something was badly wrong with the history of mankind, who had the courage to speak out against intellectual adversity, and who pioneered the momentous paradigm shift that is now irrevocably under way.

Part I

Introduction

The Mystery of the Maps

Chapter 1

A Map of Hidden Places

8 RECONNAISSANCE TECHNICAL SQUADRON (SAC)
UNITED STATES AIRFORCE
Westover Airforce Base
Massachusetts

6 July 1960

SUBJECT: Admiral Piri Reis World Map

To: Professor Charles H. Hapgood,
Keene College,
Keene, New Hampshire.

Dear Professor Hapgood,

Your request for evaluation of certain unusual features of the Piri Reis World Map of 1513 by this organization has been reviewed.

The claim that the lower part of the map portrays the Princess Martha Coast of Queen Maud Land Antarctica, and the Palmer Peninsula, is reasonable. We find this is the most logical and in all probability the correct interpretation of the map.

The geographical detail shown in the lower part of the map agrees very remarkably with the results of the seismic profile made across the top of the ice-cap by the Swedish-British Antarctic Expedition of 1949.

This indicates *the coastline had been mapped before it was covered by the ice-cap.*

The ice-cap in this region is now about a mile thick.

We have no idea how the data on this map can be reconciled with the supposed state of geographical knowledge in 1513.

HAROLD Z. OHLMEYER
Lt Colonel, USAF
Commander

Despite the deadpan language, Ohlmeyer's letter[1] is a bombshell. If Queen Maud Land was mapped before it was covered by ice, the original cartography must have been done an extraordinarily long time ago.

How long ago exactly?

Conventional wisdom has it that the Antarctic ice-cap, in its present extent and form, is millions of years old. On closer examination, this notion turns out to be seriously flawed—so seriously that we need not assume the map drawn by Admiral Piri Reis depicts Queen Maud Land as it looked millions of years in the past. The best recent evidence suggests that Queen Maud Land, and the neighbouring regions shown on the map, passed through a long ice-free period which may not have come completely to an end until about six thousand years ago.[2] This evidence, which we shall touch upon again in the next chapter, liberates us from the burdensome task of explaining who (or what) had the technology to undertake an accurate geographical survey of Antarctica in, say, two million BC, long before our own species came into existence. By the same token, since map-making is a complex and *civilized* activity, it compels us to explain how such a task could have been accomplished even six thousand years ago, well before the development of the first true civilizations recognized by historians.

---

[1] Letter reproduced in Charles H. Hapgood FRGS, *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* Chilton Books, Philadelphia and New York, 1966, p. 243.

Ancient sources

In attempting that explanation it is worth reminding ourselves of the basic historical and geological facts:

1. The Piri Reis Map, which is a genuine document, not a hoax of any kind, was made at Constantinople in AD 1513.[3]
2. It focuses on the western coast of Africa, the eastern coast of South America and the northern coast of Antarctica.
3. Piri Reis could not have acquired his information on this latter region from contemporary explorers because Antarctica remained undiscovered until AD 1818,[4] more than 300 years after he drew the map.
4. The ice-free coast of Queen Maud Land shown in the map is a colossal puzzle because the geological evidence confirms that the latest date it could have been surveyed and charted in an ice-free condition is 4000 BC.[5]
5. It is not possible to pinpoint the *earliest* date that such a task could have been accomplished, but it seems that the Queen Maud Land littoral may have remained in a stable, unglaciated condition for at least 9000 years before the spreading ice-cap swallowed it entirely.[6]

---

[2] Ibid., pp. 93-98, 235. The period lasted from about 13000 BC to 4000 BC according, for example, to the findings of Dr Jack Hough of Illinois University, supported by experts at the Carnegie Institution, Washington DC. John G. Weiphaupt, a University of Colorado specialist in seismology and gravity and planetary geology, is another who supports the view of a relatively late ice-free period in at least parts of Antarctica. Together with a number of other geologists, he places that period in a narrower band than Hough et al.—from 7000 BC to 4000 BC.

[3] Ibid., preface, pp. 1, 209-211.

[4] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, I:440.

[5] *Maps of The Ancient Sea Kings,* p. 235.

[6] Ibid.

6 There is no civilization known to history that had the capacity or need to survey that coastline in the relevant period: between 13,000 BC and 4000 BC.[7]

In other words, the true enigma of this 1513 map is not so much its inclusion of a continent not discovered until 1818 but its portrayal of part of the coastline of that continent under ice-free conditions which came to an end 6000 years ago and have not since recurred.

How can this be explained? Piri Reis obligingly gives us the answer in a series of notes written in his own hand on the map itself. He tells us that he was not responsible for the original surveying and cartography. On the contrary, he admits that his role was merely that of compiler and copyist and that the map was derived from a large number of source maps.[8] Some of these had been drawn by contemporary or near-contemporary explorers (including Christopher Columbus), who had by then reached South America and the Caribbean, but others were documents dating back to the fourth century BC or earlier.[9]

Piri Reis did not venture any suggestion as to the identity of the cartographers who had produced the earlier maps. In 1963, however, Professor Hapgood proposed a novel and thought-provoking solution to the problem. He argued that some of the source maps the admiral had made use of, in particular those said to date back to the fourth century BC, had themselves been based on even *older* sources, which in turn had been based on sources originating in the furthest antiquity. There was, he asserted, irrefutable evidence that the earth had been comprehensively mapped before 4000 BC by a hitherto unknown and undiscovered civilization which had achieved a high level of technological advancement:[10]

> It appears [he concluded] that accurate information has been passed down from people to people. It appears that the charts must have originated with a people unknown and they were passed on, perhaps by the Minoans and the Phoenicians, who were, for a thousand years and more, the greatest sailors of the ancient world. We have evidence that they were collected and studied in the great library of Alexandria [Egypt] and that compilations of them were made by the geographers who worked there.[11]

---

[7] Historians recognize no 'civilizations' as such prior to 4000 BC.

[8] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* pp. 220-4.

[9] Ibid., p. 222.

[10] Ibid., p. 193

[11] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings* (revised edition), Turnstone Books, London, 1979, preface.

Piri Reis map (original)

Redrawing to show detail

AZIMUTHAL EQUIDISTANT PROJECTION
CENTERED NEAR
CAIRO
PACIFIC OCEAN
ATLANTIC OCEAN
ARCTIC OCEAN
NORTH AMERICA
SOUTH AMERICA
AFRICA
ASIA
INDIAN OCEAN
AUSTRALIA
ALL DISTANCES FROM CENTER OF PROJECTION ARE CORRECT

The US Airforce map shows the probable projection that governed the layout of the ancient Piri Reis map.

From Alexandria, according to Hapgood's reconstruction, copies of these compilations and of some of the original source maps were transferred to other centres of learning—notably Constantinople. Finally, when Constantinople was seized by the Venetians during the Fourth Crusade in 1204, the maps began to find their way into the hands of European sailors and adventurers:

> Most of these maps were of the Mediterranean and the Black Sea. But maps of other areas survived. These included maps of the Americas and maps of the Arctic and Antarctic Oceans. It becomes clear that the ancient voyagers travelled from pole to pole. Unbelievable as it may appear, the evidence nevertheless indicates that some ancient people explored Antarctica when its coasts were free of ice. It is clear, too, that they had an instrument of navigation for accurately determining longitudes that was far superior to anything possessed by the peoples of ancient, medieval or modern times until the second half of the eighteenth century.
>
> This evidence of a lost technology will support and give credence to many of the other hypotheses that have been brought forward of a lost civilization in remote times. Scholars have been able to dismiss most of that evidence as mere myth, but here we have evidence that cannot be dismissed. The evidence requires that all the

> other evidence that has been brought forward in the past should be re-examined with an open mind.[12]

Despite a ringing endorsement from Albert Einstein (see below), and despite the later admission of John Wright, president of the American Geographical Society, that Hapgood had ‘posed hypotheses that cry aloud for further testing’, no further scientific research has ever been undertaken into these anomalous early maps. Moreover, far from being applauded for making a serious new contribution to the debate about the antiquity of human civilization, Hapgood until his death was cold-shouldered by the majority of his professional peers, who couched their discussion of his work in what has accurately been described as ‘thick and unwarranted sarcasm, selecting trivia and factors not subject to verification as the bases for condemnation, seeking in this way to avoid the basic issues’.[13]

A man ahead of his time

The late Charles Hapgood taught the history of science at Keene College, New Hampshire, USA. He wasn’t a geologist, or an ancient historian. It is possible, however, that future generations will remember him as the man whose work undermined the foundations of world history—and a large chunk of world geology as well.

Albert Einstein was among the first to realize this when he took the unprecedented step of contributing the foreword to a book Hapgood wrote in 1953, some years before he began his investigation of the Piri Reis Map:

> I frequently receive communications from people who wish to consult me concerning their unpublished ideas [Einstein observed]. It goes without saying that these ideas are very seldom possessed of scientific validity. The very first communication, however, that I received from Mr. Hapgood electrified me. His idea is original, of great simplicity, and—if it continues to prove itself—of great importance to everything that is related to the history of the earth’s surface.[14]

The ‘idea’ expressed in Hapgood’s 1953 book is a global geological theory which elegantly explains how and why large parts of Antarctica could have remained ice-free until 4000 BC, together with many other anomalies of earth science. In brief the argument is:

1 Antarctica was not always covered with ice and was at one time much warmer than it is today.

---

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., foreword. See also F. N. Earll, foreword to C. H. Hapgood, *Path of the Pole,* Chilton Books, New York, 1970, p. viii.

[14] From Einstein's foreword (written in 1953) to Charles H. Hapgood, *Earth's Shifting Crust: A Key to Some Basic Problems of Earth Science,* Pantheon Books, New York, 1958, pp. 1-2.

2 It was warm because it was not physically located at the South Pole in that period. Instead it was approximately 2000 miles farther north. This 'would have put it outside the Antarctic Circle in a temperate or cold temperate climate'.[15]
3 The continent moved to its present position inside the Antarctic Circle as a result of a mechanism known as 'earth-crust displacement'. This mechanism, in no sense to be confused with plate-tectonics or 'continental drift', is one whereby the lithosphere, the whole outer crust of the earth, 'may be displaced at times, moving over the soft inner body, much as the skin of an orange, if it were loose, might shift over the inner part of the orange all in one piece'.[16]
4 During the envisaged southwards movement of Antarctica brought about by earth-crust displacement, the continent would gradually have grown colder, an ice-cap forming and remorselessly expanding over several thousands of years until it attained its present dimensions.'[17]

Further details of the evidence supporting these radical proposals are set out in Part VIII of this book. Orthodox geologists, however, remain reluctant to accept Hapgood's theory (although none has succeeded in proving it incorrect). It raises many questions.

Of these by far the most important is: what conceivable mechanism would be able to exert sufficient thrust on the lithosphere to precipitate a phenomenon of such magnitude as a crustal displacement?

We have no better guide than Einstein to summarize Hapgood's findings:

> In a polar region there is continual deposition of ice, which is not symmetrically distributed about the pole. The earth's rotation acts on these unsymmetrically deposited masses, and produces centrifugal momentum that is transmitted to the rigid crust of the earth. The constantly increasing centrifugal momentum produced in this way will, when it has reached a certain point, produce a movement of the earth's crust over the rest of the earth's body ..."[18]

The Piri Reis Map seems to contain surprising collateral evidence in support of the thesis of a geologically recent glaciation of parts of Antarctica following a sudden southward displacement of the earth's crust. Moreover since such a map could only have been drawn *prior* to 4000 BC, its implications for the history of human civilization are staggering. Prior to 4000 BC there are supposed to have been no civilizations at all.

At some risk of over-simplification, the academic consensus is broadly:

- Civilization first developed in the Fertile Crescent of the Middle East.

---

[15] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* 1966 ed., p. 189.
[16] Ibid., p. 187.
[17] Ibid., p. 189.
[18] Einstein's foreword to *Earth's Shifting Crust*, p. 1

- This development began after 4000 BC, and culminated in the emergence of the earliest true civilizations (Sumer and Egypt) around 3000 BC, soon followed by the Indus Valley and China.
- About 1500 years later, civilization took off spontaneously and independently in the Americas.
- Since 3000 BC in the Old World (and about 1500 BC in the New) civilization has steadily 'evolved' in the direction of ever more refined, complex and productive forms.
- In consequence, and particularly by comparison with ourselves, all ancient civilizations (and all their works) are to be understood as essentially primitive (the Sumerian astronomers regarded the heavens with unscientific awe, and even the pyramids of Egypt were built by 'technological primitives').

The evidence of the Piri Reis Map appears to contradict all this.

Piri Reis and his sources

In his day, Piri Reis was a well-known figure; his historical identity is firmly established. An admiral in the navy of the Ottoman Turks, he was involved, often on the winning side, in numerous sea battles around the mid-sixteenth century. He was, in addition, considered an expert on the lands of the Mediterranean, and was the author of a famous sailing book, the *Kitabi Bahriye,* which provided a comprehensive description of the coasts, harbours, currents, shallows, landing places, bays and straits of the Aegean and Mediterranean Seas. Despite this illustrious career he fell foul of his masters and was beheaded in AD 1554 or 1555.[19]

The source maps Piri Reis used to draw up his 1513 map were in all probability lodged originally in the Imperial Library at Constantinople, to which the admiral is known to have enjoyed privileged access. Those sources (which may have been transferred or copied from even more ancient centres of learning) no longer exist, or, at any rate, have not been found. It was, however, in the library of the old Imperial Palace at Constantinople that the Piri Reis Map was rediscovered, painted on a gazelle skin and rolled up on a dusty shelf, as recently as 1929.[20]

Legacy of a lost civilization?

As the baffled Ohlmeyer admitted in his letter to Hapgood in 1960, the Piri Reis Map depicts the *subglacial topography,* the true profile of Queen Maud Land Antarctica *beneath* the ice. This profile remained completely hidden from view from 4000 BC (when the advancing ice sheet covered it) until it was revealed again as a result of the comprehensive seismic survey of Queen Maud Land carried out during 1949 by a joint British-Swedish scientific reconnaissance team.[21]

---

[19] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* pp. 209-11.

[20] Ibid., p. 1.

If Piri Reis had been the only cartographer with access to such anomalous information, it would be wrong to place any great weight on his map. At the most one might say, 'Perhaps it is significant but, then again, perhaps it is just a coincidence.' However, the Turkish admiral was by no means alone in the possession of seemingly impossible and inexplicable geographical knowledge. It would be futile to speculate further than Hapgood has already done as to what 'underground stream' could have carried and preserved such knowledge through the ages, transmitting fragments of it from culture to culture and from epoch to epoch. Whatever the mechanism, the fact is that a number of other cartographers seem to have been privy to the same curious secrets.

Is it possible that all these map-makers could have partaken, perhaps unknowingly, in the bountiful scientific legacy of a vanished civilization?

---

[21] Ibid., pp. 76-7 and 231-2.

Chapter 2

Rivers in the Southern Continent

In the Christmas recess of 1959-60 Charles Hapgood was looking for Antarctica in the Reference Room of the Library of Congress, Washington DC. For several consecutive weeks he worked there, lost in the search, surrounded by literally hundreds of medieval maps and charts.

> I found [he reported] many fascinating things I had not expected to find, and a number of charts showing the southern continent. Then, one day, I turned a page and sat transfixed. As my eyes fell upon the southern hemisphere of a world map drawn by Oronteus Finaeus in 1531, I had the instant conviction that I had found here a truly authentic map of the real Antarctica.
>
> The general shape of the continent was startlingly like the outline of the continent on our modern maps. The position of the South Pole, nearly in the center of the continent, seemed about right. The mountain ranges that skirted the coasts suggested the numerous ranges that have been discovered in Antarctica in recent years. It was obvious, too, that this was no slapdash creation of somebody's imagination. The mountain ranges were individualized, some definitely coastal and some not. From most of them rivers were shown flowing into the sea, following in every case what looked like very natural and very convincing drainage patterns. This suggested, of course, that the coasts may have been ice-free when the original map was drawn. The deep interior, however, was free entirely of rivers and mountains, suggesting that the ice might have been present there.[1]

Closer investigation of the Oronteus Finaeus Map by Hapgood, and by Dr Richard Strachan of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, confirmed the following:

1. It had been copied and compiled from several earlier source maps drawn up according to a number of different projections.[2]
2. It did indeed show non-glacial conditions in coastal regions of Antarctica, notably Queen Maud Land, Enderby Land, Wilkes Land, Victoria Land (the east coast of the Ross Sea), and Marie Byrd Land.[3]
3. As in the case of the Piri Reis Map, the general profile of the terrain, and the visible physical features, matched closely seismic survey maps of the *subglacial* land surfaces of Antarctica.[4]

The Oronteus Finaeus Map, Hapgood concluded, appeared to document 'the surprising proposition that Antarctica was visited and perhaps settled by men when it was largely if not entirely non-glacial. It goes without saying that this implies a very great antiquity ... [Indeed] the Oronteus Finaeus Map takes the civilization of the original map-makers back to a time contemporary with the end of the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere.'[5]

---

[1] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings* (henceforth *Maps),* p. 79.

[2] Ibid., p. 233.

[3] Ibid., p. 89.

[4] Ibid., p. 90. These maps were made in 1958, International Geophysical Year, by survey teams from several different nations.

NOVA, ET INTEGRA VNIVERSI ORBIS DESCRIPTIO
PARS BOREALIS
PARS AVSTRALIS

The Oronteus Finaeus map, showing Antarctica with ice-free coasts, mountains and rivers.

Ross Sea

Further evidence in support of this view arises from the manner in which the Ross Sea was shown by Oronteus Finaeus. Where today great glaciers like the Beardmore and the Scott disgorge themselves into the sea, the 1531 map shows estuaries, broad inlets and indications of rivers. The unmistakable implication of these features is that there was no ice on the Ross Sea or its coasts when the source maps used by Oronteus Finaeus were made: 'There also had to be a considerable hinterland free of ice to feed the rivers. At the present time all these coasts and their hinterlands are deeply buried in the mile-thick ice-cap, while on the Ross Sea itself there is a floating ice-shelf hundreds of feet thick.'[6]

The Ross Sea evidence provides strong corroboration for the notion that Antarctica must have been mapped by some unknown civilization during the extensively ice-free period which ended around 4000 BC. This is emphasized by the coring tubes used, in 1949, by one of the Byrd Antarctic Expeditions to take samples of sediment from the bottom of the Ross Sea. The sediments showed numerous clearly demarcated layers of stratification reflecting different environmental conditions in different epochs: ‘coarse glacial marine’, ‘medium glacial marine’, ‘fine glacial marine’, and so on. The most surprising discovery, however, ‘was that a number of the layers were formed of fine-grained, well-assorted sediments, such as are brought down to the sea by rivers flowing from temperate (that is, ice-free) lands ...’[7]

---

[5] Ibid., p. 149.
[6] Ibid., p. 93-6.

Using the ionium-dating method developed by Dr W. D. Urry (which makes use of three different radioactive elements found in sea water[8]), researchers at the Carnegie Institute in Washington DC were able to establish beyond any reasonable doubt that great rivers carrying fine-grained well-assorted sediments had indeed flowed in Antarctica until about 6000 years ago, as the Oronteus Finaeus Map showed. It was only after that date, around 4000 BC, ‘that the glacial kind of sediment began to be deposited on the Ross Sea bottom ... The cores indicate that warm conditions had prevailed for a long period before that.’[9]

Mercator and Buache

The Piri Reis and Oronteus Finaeus Maps therefore provide us with a glimpse of Antarctica as no cartographer in historical times could possibly have seen it. On their own, of course, these two pieces of evidence should not be sufficient to persuade us that we might be gazing at the fingerprints of a lost civilization. Can three, or four, or six such maps, however, be dismissed with equal justification?

---

[7] Ibid., p. 97.

[8] For a detailed description of the process see *Maps,* P. 96.

[9] Ibid., page 98.

The Mercator map, showing Antarctica's mountains and rivers covered by ice.

Is it safe, or reasonable, for example, for us to continue to ignore the historical implications of some of the maps made by the sixteenth-century's most famous cartographer: Gerard Kremer, otherwise known as Mercator? Best remembered for the Mercator projection, still used on most world maps today, this enigmatic individual (who paid an unexplained visit to the Great Pyramid of Egypt in 1563[10]) was reportedly 'indefatigable in searching out ... the learning of long ago', and spent many years diligently accumulating a vast and eclectic reference library of ancient source maps.[11]

Significantly, Mercator included the Oronteus Finaeus map in his *Atlas* of 1569 and also depicted the Antarctic on several he himself drew in the same year. Identifiable parts of the then undiscovered southern continent on these maps are Cape Dart and Cape Herlacher in Marie Byrd Land, the Amundsen Sea, Thurston Island in Ellsworth Land, the Fletcher Islands in the Bellinghausen Sea, Alexander I Island, the Antarctic (Palmer) Peninsula, the Weddell Sea, Cape Norvegia, the Regula Range in Queen Maud Land (as islands), the Muhlig-Hoffman Mountains (as islands), the Prince Harald Coast, the Shirase Glacier as an estuary on Prince Harald Coast, Padda Island in Lutzow-Holm Bay, and the Prince Olaf Coast in Enderby Land. 'In some cases these features are more distinctly recognisable than on the Oronteus Finaeus Map,' observed Hapgood, 'and it seems clear, in general, that Mercator had at his disposal source maps other than those used by Oronteus Finaeus.'[12]

---

[10] He left his graffito there. See Peter Tompkins, *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* Harper & Row Publishers, New York, p. 38, 285.

[11] *Maps,* p. 102.

And not only Mercator.

Philippe Buache, the eighteenth-century French geographer, was also able to publish a map of Antarctica long before the southern continent was officially 'discovered'. And the extraordinary feature of Buache's map is that it seems to have been based on source maps made earlier, perhaps *thousands of years earlier,* than those used by Oronteus Finaeus and Mercator. What Buache gives us is an eerily precise representation of Antarctica as it must have looked *when there was no ice on it at all.*[13] His map reveals the subglacial topography of the entire continent, which even we did not have full knowledge of until 1958, International Geophysical Year, when a comprehensive seismic survey was carried out.

That survey only confirmed what Buache had already proclaimed when he published his map of Antarctica in 1737. Basing his cartography on ancient sources now lost, the French academician depicted a *clear waterway* across the southern continent dividing it into two principal landmasses lying east and west of the line now marked by the Trans-Antarctic Mountains.

Such a waterway, connecting the Ross, Weddell and Bellinghausen Seas, would indeed exist if Antarctica were free of ice. As the 1958 IGY Survey shows, the continent (which appears on modern maps as one continuous landmass) consists of an archipelago of large islands with mile-thick ice packed between them and rising above sea level.

The epoch of the map-makers

As we have seen, many orthodox geologists believe that the last time any waterway existed in these ice-filled basins was millions of years ago. From the scholarly point of view, however, it is equally orthodox to affirm that no human beings had evolved in those remote times, let alone human beings capable of accurately mapping the landmasses of the Antarctic. The big problem raised by the Buache/IGY evidence is that those landmasses *do* seem to have been mapped when they were free of ice. This confronts scholars with two mutually contradictory propositions.

---

[12] Ibid., pp. 103-4.

[13] Ibid., p. 93.

CARTE
DES TERRES AUSTRALES

The Buache map, with landmasses which show Antarctica very much as it would have looked before it became covered by ice.

Which one is correct?

If we are to go along with orthodox geologists and accept that millions of years have indeed elapsed since Antarctica was last completely free of ice, then all the evidence of human evolution, painstakingly accumulated by distinguished scientists from Darwin on, must be wrong. It seems inconceivable that this could be the case: the fossil record makes it abundantly clear that only the unevolved ancestors of humanity existed millions of years ago—low-browed knuckle-dragging hominids incapable of advanced intellectual tasks like map-making.

Are we therefore to assume the intervention of alien cartographers in orbiting spaceships to explain the existence of sophisticated maps of an ice-free Antarctica? Or shall we think again about the implications of Hapgood’s theory of earth-crust displacement which allows the southern continent to have been in the ice-free condition depicted by Buache as little as 15,000 years ago?[14]

---

[14] For a fuller discussion of the evidence behind this theory see Part VIII of this book and Hapgood's *Earth's Shifting Crust.*

Above left and right **Redrawings of the Mercator and Oronteus Finaeus maps showing the progressive glaciation of Antarctica.** ***Below left*** **Redrawing of the Buache map.** ***Below right*** **The subglacial topography of Antarctica, according to modern seismic surveys.**

An early nineteenth-century Russian map showing that the existence of Antarctica was at that time unknown. The continent was 'discovered' in AD 1818. But could it have been mapped thousands of years earlier than that by the cartographers of an as yet unidentified high civilization of prehistory?

Is it possible that a human civilization, sufficiently advanced to have mapped Antarctica, could have developed by 13,000 BC and later disappeared? And, if so, how much later?

The combined effect of the Piri Reis, Oronteus Finaeus, Mercator and Buache Maps is the strong, though disturbing, impression that Antarctica may have been *continuously surveyed* over a period of several thousands of years as the ice-cap gradually spread outwards from the interior, increasing its grip with every passing millennium but not engulfing all the coasts of the southern continent until around 4000 BC. The original sources for the Piri Reis and Mercator Maps must therefore have been prepared towards the end of this period, when only the coasts of

Antarctica were free of ice; the source for the Oronteus Finaeus Map, on the other hand, seems to have been considerably earlier, when the ice-cap was present only in the deep interior of the continent; and the source for the Buache Map appears to originate in even earlier period (around 13,000 BC), when there may have been no ice in Antarctica at all.

South America

Were other parts of the world surveyed and accurately charted at widely separated intervals during this same epoch; roughly from 13,000 BC to 4000 BC? The answer may lie once again in the Piri Reis Map, which contains more mysteries than just Antarctica:

- Drawn in 1513, the map demonstrates an uncanny knowledge of South America—and not only of its eastern coast but of the Andes mountains on the western side of the continent, which were of course unknown at that time. The map correctly shows the Amazon River rising in these unexplored mountains and thence flowing eastwards.[15]
- Itself compiled from more than twenty different source documents of varying antiquity,[16] the Piri Reis Map depicts the Amazon not once but *twice* (most probably as a result of the unintentional overlapping of two of the source documents used by the Turkish admiral[17]). In the first of these the Amazon's course is shown down to its Para River mouth, but the important island of Marajo does not appear. According to Hapgood, this suggests that the relevant source map must have dated from a time, perhaps as much as 15,000 years ago, when the Para River was the main or only mouth of the Amazon and when Marajo Island was part of the mainland on the northern side of the river.[18] The second depiction of the Amazon, on the other hand, *does* show Marajo (and in fantastically accurate detail) despite the fact that this island was not discovered until 1543.[19] Again, the possibility is raised of an unknown civilization which undertook continuous surveying and mapping operations of the changing face of the earth over a period of many thousands of years, with Piri Reis making use of earlier and later source maps left behind by this civilization.
- Neither the Orinoco River nor its present delta is represented on the Piri Reis Map. Instead, as Hapgood proved, 'two estuaries extending far inland (for a distance of about 100 miles) are shown close to the site of the present river. The longitude on the grid would be correct for the

---

[15] *Maps,* p. 68.
[16] Ibid., p. 222.
[17] Ibid., pp. 64-5.
[18] Ibid., p. 64.
[19] Ibid., p. 65.

Orinoco, and the latitude is also quite accurate. Is it possible that these estuaries have been filled in, and the delta extended this much, since the source maps were made?'[20]

- Although they remained undiscovered until 1592, the Falkland Islands appear on the 1513 map at their correct latitude.[21]
- The library of ancient sources incorporated in the Piri Reis Map may also account for the fact that it convincingly portrays a large island in the Atlantic Ocean to the east of the South American coast where no such island now exists. Is it pure coincidence that this 'imaginary' island turns out to be located right over the sub-oceanic Mid-Atlantic Ridge just north of the equator and 700 miles east of the coast of Brazil, where the tiny Rocks of Sts. Peter and Paul now jut above the waves?[22] Or was the relevant source map drawn deep in the last Ice Age, when sea levels were far lower than they are today and a large island could indeed have been exposed at this spot?

Sea levels and ice ages

Other sixteenth-century maps also look as though they could have been based on accurate world surveys conducted during the last Ice Age. One was compiled by the Turk Hadji Ahmed in 1559, a cartographer, as Hapgood puts it, who must have had access to some 'most extraordinary' source maps.[23]

The strangest and most immediately striking feature of Hadji Ahmed's compilation is that it shows quite plainly a strip of territory, almost 1000 miles wide, connecting Alaska and Siberia. Such a 'land-bridge', as geologists refer to it, did once exist (where the Bering Strait is now) but was submerged beneath the waves by rising sea levels at the end of the last Ice Age.[24]

The rising sea levels were caused by the tumultuous melting of the ice-cap which was rapidly retreating everywhere in the northern hemisphere by around 10,000 BC.[25] It is therefore interesting that at least one ancient map appears to show southern Sweden covered with remnant glaciers of the kind that must indeed have been prevalent then in these latitudes. The remnant glaciers are on Claudius Ptolemy's famous Map of the North. Originally compiled in the second century AD, this remarkable work from the last great geographer of classical antiquity was lost for hundreds of years and rediscovered in the fifteenth century.[26]

---

[20] Ibid., p. 69.
[21] Ibid., p. 72.
[22] Ibid., p. 65.
[23] Ibid., p. 99.
[24] Ibid.
[25] Ibid., p. 164.

Ptolemy was custodian of the library at Alexandria, which contained the greatest manuscript collection of ancient times,[27] and it was there that he consulted the archaic source documents that enabled him to compile his own map.[28] Acceptance of the possibility that the original version of at least one of the charts he referred to could have been made around 10,000 BC helps us to explain why he shows glaciers, characteristic of that exact epoch, together with 'lakes ... suggesting the shapes of present-day lakes, and streams very much suggesting glacial streams ... flowing from the glaciers into the lakes.'[29]

It is probably unnecessary to add that no one on earth in Roman times, when Ptolemy drew his map, had the slightest suspicion that ice ages could once have existed in northern Europe. Nor did anyone in the fifteenth century (when the map was rediscovered) possess such knowledge. Indeed, it is impossible to see how the remnant glaciers and other features shown on Ptolemy's map could have been surveyed, imagined or invented by any known civilization prior to our own.

The implications of this are obvious. So, too, are the implications of another map, the 'Portolano' of Iehudi Ibn Ben Zara, drawn in the year 1487.[30] This chart of Europe and North Africa may have been based on a source even earlier than Ptolemy's, for it seems to show glaciers much farther south than Sweden (roughly on the same latitude as England in fact)[31] and to depict the Mediterranean, Adriatic and Aegean Seas as they might have looked before the melting of the European ice-cap.[32] Sea level would, of course, have been significantly lower than it is today. It is therefore interesting, in the case for instance of the Aegean section of the map, to note that a great many more islands are shown than currently exist.[33] At first sight this seems odd. However, if ten or twelve thousand years have indeed elapsed since the era when Ibn Ben Zara's source map was made, the discrepancy can be simply explained: the missing islands must have been submerged by rising sea levels at the end of the last Ice Age.

---

[26] Ibid., p. 159.

[27] See Luciano Canfora, *The Vanished Library,* Hutchinson Radius, London, 1989

[28] *Maps,* p. 159.

[29] Ibid., p. 164.

[30] Ibid., p. 171

[31] Ibid., pp. 171-2.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid., pp. 176-7.

Once again we seem to be looking at the fingerprints of a vanished civilization—one capable of drawing impressively accurate maps of widely separated parts of the earth.

What kind of technology, and what state of science and culture, would have been required to do a job like that?

Chapter 3

Fingerprints of a Lost Science

We saw that the Mercator World Map of 1569 included an accurate portrayal of the coasts of Antarctica as they would have looked thousands of years ago when they were free of ice. Interestingly enough, this same map is considerably *less* accurate in its portrayal of another region, the west coast of South America, than an earlier (1538) map also drawn by Mercator.[1]

The reason for this appears to be that the sixteenth-century geographer based the earlier map on the ancient sources which we know he had at his disposal, whereas for the later map he relied upon the observations and measurements of the first Spanish explorers of western South America. Since those explorers had supposedly brought the latest information back to Europe, Mercator can hardly be blamed for following them. In so doing the accuracy of his work declined: instruments capable of finding longitude did not exist in 1569, but appear to have been used to prepare the ancient source documents Mercator consulted to produce his 1538 map.[2]

The mysteries of longitude

Let us consider the problem of longitude, defined as the distance in degrees east or west of the prime meridian. The current internationally accepted prime meridian is an imaginary curve drawn from the North Pole to the South Pole passing through the Royal Observatory at Greenwich, London. Greenwich therefore stands at o° longitude while New York, for example, stands at around 74° west, and Canberra, Australia, at roughly 150° east.

---

[1] *Maps,* p. 107.

[2] Ibid.

Longitude
Latitude

It would be possible to write an elaborate explanation of longitude and of what needs to be done to fix it precisely for any given point on the earth's surface. What we are concerned with here, however, is not so much technical detail as the accepted *historical* facts about humanity's growing knowledge of the mysteries of longitude. Among these facts, this is the most important: *until a breakthrough invention in the eighteenth century, cartographers and navigators were unable to fix longitude with any kind of precision.* They could only make guesses which were usually inaccurate by many hundreds of miles, because the technology had not yet been developed to allow them to do the job properly.

Latitude north or south of the equator did not pose such a problem: it could be worked out by means of angular measurements of the sun and stars taken with relatively simple instruments. But to find longitude equipment of an altogether different and superior calibre was needed, which could combine position measurements with time measurements. Throughout the span of known history the invention of such equipment had remained beyond the capacities of scientists, but by the beginning of the eighteenth century, with rapidly increasing sea traffic, a mood of impatience and urgency had set in. In the words of an authority on the period, 'The search for longitude overshadowed the life of every man afloat, and the safety of every ship and cargo. Accurate measurement seemed an impossible dream and "discovering the longitude" had become a stock phrase in the press like "pigs might fly".'[3]

---

[3] Simon Bethon and Andrew Robinson, *The Shape of the World: The Mapping and Discovery of the Earth,* Guild Publishing, London, 1991, p. 117.

What was needed, above all else, was an instrument that would keep the time (at the place of departure) with perfect accuracy during long sea journeys despite the motion of the ship and despite the adverse conditions of alternating heat and cold, wet and dry. ‘Such a Watch’, as Isaac Newton told the members of the British government’s official Board of Longitude in 1714, ‘hath not yet been made’.[4]

Indeed not. The timepieces of the seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries were crude devices which typically lost or gained as much as a quarter of an hour *per day.* By contrast, an effective marine chronometer could afford to lose or gain that much only over several years.[5]

It was not until the 1720s that the talented English clockmaker John Harrison began work on the first of a series of designs which resulted in the manufacture of such a chronometer. His objective was to win the prize of £20,000 offered by the Board of Longitude ‘for the inventor of any means of determining a ship’s longitude within 30 nautical miles at the end of a six weeks’ voyage’.[6] A chronometer capable of fulfilling this condition would have to keep time to within three seconds per day. It took almost forty years, during which several prototypes were completed and tested, before Harrison was able to meet these standards. Finally, in 1761, his elegant Chronometer No. 4 left Britain on board HMS *Deptford* bound for Jamaica, accompanied by Harrison’s son William. Nine days into the voyage, on the basis of longitude calculations made possible by the chronometer, William advised the captain that they would sight the Madeira Islands the following morning. The captain offered five to one that he was wrong but agreed to hold the course. William won the bet. Two months later, at Jamaica, the instrument was found to have lost just five seconds.[7]

Harrison had surpassed the conditions set by the Board of Longitude. Thanks to the British government’s bureaucratic dithering, however, he was not awarded the £20,000 prize money until three years before his death in 1776. Understandably, it was only when he had the funds in his hands that he divulged the secrets of his design. As a result of this delay, Captain James Cook did not have the benefit of a chronometer when he made his first voyage of discovery in 1768.[8] By the time of his third voyage, however (1778-9), he was able to map the Pacific with impressive accuracy, fixing not only the correct latitude but the correct longitude of every island and coastline.[9] Henceforward, ‘thanks to Cook’s care and Harrison’s chronometer ... no navigator could have an excuse for failing to find a Pacific island ... or for being wrecked on a coastline appearing from nowhere.'[10]

---

[4] Ibid., p. 121.
[5] Ibid., p. 120.
[6] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 3:289.
[7] *Shape of the World,* pp. 123-4.
[8] Ibid., p. 125.
[9] Ibid., p. 131.

Indeed, with their accurate longitudes, Cook's Pacific maps must be ranked among the very first examples of the precise cartography of our modern era. They remind us, moreover, that the making of really good maps requires at least three key ingredients: great journeys of discovery; first-class mathematical and cartographic skills; sophisticated chronometers.

It was not until Harrison's chronometer became generally available in the 1770s that the third of these preconditions was fulfilled. This brilliant invention made it possible for cartographers to fix longitude precisely, something that the Sumerians, the Ancient Egyptians, the Greeks and the Romans, and indeed all other known civilizations before the eighteenth century were supposedly unable to do. It is therefore surprising and unsettling to come across vastly older maps which give latitudes and longitudes with modern precision.

Precision instruments

These inexplicably precise latitudes and longitudes are found in the same general category of documents that contain the advanced geographical knowledge I have outlined.

The Piri Reis Map of 1513, for example, places South America and Africa in *the correct relative longitudes*,[11] theoretically an impossible feat for the science of the time. But Piri Reis was candid in admitting that his map was based on far earlier sources. Could it have been from one of these sources that he derived his accurate longitudes?

Also of great interest is the so-called 'Dulcert Portulano' of AD 1339 which focuses on Europe and North Africa. Here latitude is perfect across huge distances and the total longitude of the Mediterranean and Black Seas is correct to within half a degree.[12]

Professor Hapgood comments that the maker of the original source from which the Dulcert Portulano was copied had 'achieved highly scientific accuracy in finding the ratio of latitude to longitude. He could only have done this if he had precise information on the relative longitudes of a great many places scattered all the way from Galway in Ireland to the eastern bend of the Don in Russia.'[13]

The Zeno Map[14] of AD 1380 is another enigma. Covering a vast area of the north as far as Greenland, it locates a great many widely scattered places at latitudes and longitudes which are 'amazingly correct'.[15] It is

---

[10] Ibid.

[11] *Maps,* pp. 1, 41.

[12] Ibid., p. 116.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid., pp. 149-58.

[15] Ibid, p. 152.

‘unbelievable’, asserts Hapgood, ‘that anyone in the fourteenth century could have found accurate latitudes for these places, to say nothing of accurate longitudes’.[16]

The Oronteus Finaeus World Map also commands attention: it successfully places the coasts of Antarctica in correct latitudes and relative longitudes and finds a remarkably accurate area for the continent as a whole. This reflects a level of geographical knowledge not available until the twentieth century.[17]

The Portolano of Iehudi Ibn Ben Zara is another map notable for its accuracy where relative latitudes and longitudes are concerned.[18] Total longitude between Gibraltar and the Sea of Azov is accurate to half a degree, while across the map as a whole average errors of longitude are less than a degree.[19]

These examples represent only a small fraction of the large and challenging dossier of evidence presented by Hapgood. Layer upon layer, the cumulative effect of his painstaking and detailed analysis is to suggest that we are deluding ourselves when we suppose that accurate instruments for measuring longitude were not invented until the eighteenth century. On the contrary, the Piri Reis and other maps appear to indicate very strongly that such instruments were *re-discovered* then, that they had existed long ages before and had been used by a civilized people, now lost to history, who had explored and charted the entire earth. Furthermore, it seems that these people were capable not only of designing and manufacturing precise and technically advanced mechanical instruments but were masters of a precocious mathematical science.

The lost mathematicians

To understand why, we should first remind ourselves of the obvious: the earth is a sphere. When it comes to mapping it, therefore, only a globe can represent it in correct proportion. Transferring cartographic data from a globe to flat sheets of paper inevitably involves distortions and can be accomplished only by means of an artificial and complex mechanical and mathematical device known as map projection.

There are many different kinds of projection. Mercator’s, still used in atlases today, is perhaps the most familiar. Others are dauntingly referred to as Azimuthal, Stereographic, Gnomonic, Azimuthal Equidistant, Cordiform, and so on, but it is unnecessary to go into this any further here. We need only note that *all successful projections require*

---

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 98.

[18] Ibid., p. 170.

[19] Ibid., p. 173.

the use of sophisticated mathematical techniques of a kind supposedly unknown in the ancient world[20] (particularly in the deepest antiquity before 4000 BC when there was allegedly no human civilization at all, let alone one capable of developing and using advanced mathematics and geometry).

Charles Hapgood submitted his collection of ancient maps to the Massachusetts Institute of Technology for evaluation by Professor Richard Strachan. The general conclusion was obvious, but he wanted to know *precisely* what level of mathematics would have been required to draw up the original source documents. On 18 April 1965 Strachan replied that a very high level of mathematics indeed would have been necessary. Some of the maps, for example, seemed to express 'a Mercator type projection' long before the time of Mercator himself. The relative complexity of this projection (involving latitude expansion) meant that a trigonometric coordinate transformation method must have been used.

Other reasons for deducing that the ancient map-makers must have been skilled mathematicians were as follows:

1 The determination of place locations on a continent requires at least geometric triangulation methods. Over large distances (of the order of 1000 miles) corrections must be made for the curvature of the earth, which requires some understanding of spherical trigonometry.

2 The location of continents with respect to one another requires an understanding of the earth's sphericity, and the use of spherical trigonometry.

3 Cultures with this knowledge, plus the precision instruments to make the required measurements to determine location, would most certainly use their mathematical technology in creating maps and charts.'[21]

Strachan's impression that the maps, through generations of copyists, revealed the handiwork of an ancient, mysterious and technologically advanced civilization, was shared by reconnaissance experts from the US Airforce to whom Hapgood submitted the evidence. Lorenzo Burroughs, chief of the 8th Reconnaissance Technical Squadron's Cartographic Section at Westover Air Base, made a particularly close study of the Oronteus Finaeus Map. He concluded that some of the sources upon which it was based must have been drawn up by means of a projection similar to the modern Cordiform Projection. This, said Burroughs:

> suggests the use of advanced mathematics. Further, the shape given to the Antarctic Continent suggests the possibility, if not the probability, that the original source maps were compiled on a stereographic or gnomonic type of projection involving the use of spherical trigonometry.
>
> We are convinced that the findings made by you and your associates are valid, and that they raise extremely important questions affecting geology and ancient

---

[20] Ibid., p. 225ff.

[21] Ibid., p. 228.

history ...’22

Hapgood was to make one more important discovery: a Chinese map copied from an earlier original on to a stone pillar in AD 1137.[23] This map incorporates precisely the same kind of high quality information about longitudes as the others. It has a similar grid and was drawn up with the benefit of spherical trigonometry. Indeed, on close examination, it shares so many features with the European and Middle Eastern maps that only one explanation seems adequate: it and they must have stemmed from a *common source*.[24]

We seem to be confronted once again by a surviving fragment of the scientific knowledge of a lost civilization. More than that, it appears that this civilization must have been at least in some respects as advanced as our own and that its cartographers had ‘mapped virtually the entire globe with a uniform general level of technology, with similar methods, equal knowledge of mathematics, and probably the same sorts of instruments’.[25]

The Chinese map also indicates something else: a *global legacy* must have been handed down—a legacy of inestimable value, in all probability incorporating much more than sophisticated geographical knowledge.

Could it have been some portion of this legacy that was distributed in prehistoric Peru by the so-called ‘Viracochas’, mysterious bearded strangers said to have come from across the seas, in a ‘time of darkness’, to restore civilization after a great upheaval of the earth?

I decided to go to Peru to see what I could find.

---

[22] Ibid., pp. 244-5.
[23] Ibid., p. 135.
[24] Ibid., p. 139.
[25] Ibid., pp. 139, 145.

Part II

Foam of the Sea

Peru and Bolivia

Chapter 4

Flight of the Condor

I'm in southern Peru, flying over the Nazca lines.

Below me, after the whale and the monkey, the hummingbird comes into view, flutters and unfolds her wings, stretches forward her delicate beak towards some imaginary flower. Then we turn hard right, pursued by our own tiny shadow as we cross the bleak scar of the Pan-American highway, and follow a trajectory that brings us over the fabulous snake-necked 'Alcatraz': a heron 900 feet long conceived in the mind of a master geometer. We circle around, cross the highway for a second time, pass an astonishing arrangement of fish and triangles laid out beside a pelican, turn left and find ourselves floating over the sublime image of a giant condor with feathers extended in stylized flight.

Just as I try to catch my breath, another condor almost close enough to touch materializes out of nowhere, a real condor this time, haughty as a fallen angel riding a thermal back to heaven. My pilot gasps and tries to follow him. For a moment I catch a glimpse of a bright, dispassionate eye that seems to weigh us up and find us wanting. Then, like a vision from some ancient myth, the creature banks and glides contemptuously backwards into the sun leaving our single-engined Cessna floundering in the lower air.

Below us now there's a pair of parallel lines almost two miles long, arrow straight all the way to vanishing point. And there, off to the right, a series of abstract shapes on a scale so vast—and yet so precisely executed—that it seems inconceivable they could have been the work of men.

The people around here say that they were not the work of men, but of demigods, the Viracochas,[1] who also left their fingerprints elsewhere in the Andean region many thousands of years ago.

The riddle of the lines

The Nazca plateau in southern Peru is a desolate place, sere and unwelcoming, barren and profitless. Human populations have never concentrated here, nor will they do so in the future: the surface of the moon seems hardly less hospitable.

If you happen to be an artist with grand designs, however, these high and daunting plains look like a very promising canvas, with 200 square miles of uninterrupted tableland and the certainty that your masterwork won't be carried away on the desert breeze or covered by drifting sand.

---

[1] Tony Morrison with Professor Gerald S. Hawkins, *Pathways to the Gods,* Book Club Associates, London, 1979, p. 21. See also *The Atlas of Mysterious Places,* (ed. Jennifer Westwood), Guild Publishing, London, 1987, p. 100.

It's true that high winds do blow here, but by a happy accident of physics they are robbed of their sting at ground level: the pebbles that litter the pampa absorb and retain the sun's heat, throwing up a protective force-field of warm air. In addition, the soil contains enough gypsum to glue small stones to the subsurface, an adhesive regularly renewed by the moistening effect of early morning dews. Once things are drawn here, therefore, they tend to stay drawn. There's hardly any rain; indeed, with less than half an hour of miserly drizzle every decade, Nazca is among the driest places on earth.

If you are an artist, therefore, if you have something grand and important to express, and if you want it to be visible for ever, these strange and lonely flatlands could look like the answer to your prayers.

Experts have pronounced upon the antiquity of Nazca, basing their opinions on fragments of pottery found embedded in the lines and on radiocarbon results from various organic remains unearthed here. The dates conjectured range between 350 BC and AD 600.[2] Realistically, they tell us nothing about the age of the lines themselves, which are inherently as undatable as the stones cleared to make them. All we can say for sure is that the most recent are at least 1400 years old, but it is theoretically possible that they could be far more ancient than that—for the simple reason that the artefacts from which such dates are derived could have been brought to Nazca by later peoples.

---

[2] *Pathways to the Gods,* p. 21.

The principal figures of the Nazca plateau.

The majority of the designs are spread out across a clearly defined area of southern Peru bounded by the Rio Ingenio to the north and the Rio Nazca to the south, a roughly square canvas of dun-coloured desert with forty-six kilometres of the Pan-American highway running obliquely through it from top-centre to bottom right. Here, scattered apparently at random, are literally hundreds of different figures. Some depict animals and birds (a total of eighteen different birds). But far more take the form of geometrical devices in the form of trapezoids, rectangles, triangles and straight lines. Viewed from above, these latter resemble to the modern eye a jumble of runways, as though some megalomaniac civil engineer had been licensed to act out his most flamboyant fantasies of airfield design.

It therefore comes as no surprise, since humans are not supposed to have been able to fly until the beginning of the twentieth century, that the Nazca lines have been identified by a number of observers as landing strips for alien spaceships. This is a seductive notion, but Nazca is perhaps not the best place to seek evidence for it. For example, it is difficult to understand why extra-terrestrials advanced enough to have crossed hundreds of light years of interstellar space should have needed landing strips at all. Surely such beings would have mastered the technology of setting their flying saucers down vertically?

Besides, there is really no question of the Nazca lines ever having been used as runways—by flying saucers or anything else—although some of them look like that from above. Viewed at ground-level they are little more than grazes on the surface made by scraping away thousands of tons of black volcanic pebbles to expose the desert's paler base of yellow sand and clay. None of the cleared areas is more than a few inches deep and all are much too soft to have permitted the landing of wheeled flying vehicles. The German mathematician Maria Reiche, who devoted half a century to the study of the lines, was only being logical when she dismissed the extraterrestrial theory with a single pithy sentence a few years ago: 'I'm afraid the spacemen would have gotten stuck.'

If not runways for the chariots of alien 'gods', therefore, what else might the Nazca lines be? The truth is that no one knows their purpose, just as no one really knows their age; they are a genuine mystery of the past. And the closer you look at them the more baffling they become.

It's clear, for example, that the animals and birds antedate the geometry of the 'runways', because many of the trapezoids, rectangles and straight lines bisect (and thus partly obliterate) the more complex figures. The obvious deduction is that the final artwork of the desert as we view it today must have been produced in two phases. Moreover, though it seems contrary to the normal laws of technical progress, we must concede that the *earlier* of the two phases was the more advanced. The execution of the zoomorphic figures called for far higher levels of skill and technology than the etching of the straight lines. But how widely separated in time were the earlier and later artists?

Scholars do not address themselves to this question. Instead they lump both cultures together as 'the Nazcans' and depict them as primitive tribesmen who unaccountably developed sophisticated techniques of artistic self-expression, and then vanished from the Peruvian scene, many hundreds of years before the appearance of their better-known successors, the Incas.

How sophisticated were these Nazcan 'primitives'? What kind of knowledge must they have possessed to inscribe their gigantic signatures on the plateau? It seems, for a start, that they were pretty good observational astronomers—at least according to Dr Phillis Pitluga, an astronomer with the Adler Planetarium in Chicago. After making an intensive computer-aided study of stellar alignments at Nazca, she has concluded that *the famous spider figure was devised as a terrestrial diagram of the giant constellation of Orion,* and that the arrow-straight lines linked to the figure appear to have been set out to track through the ages the changing declinations of the three stars of Orion's Belt.[3]

The real significance of Dr Pitluga's discovery will become apparent in due course. Meanwhile, let us note that the Nazca spider also accurately depicts a member of a known spider genus—*Ricinulei.*[4] This, as it happens, is one of the rarest spider genera in the world, so rare indeed that it has only been found in remote and inaccessible parts of the Amazon rainforest.[5] How did the supposedly primitive Nazcan artists travel so far from their homeland, crossing the formidable barrier of the Andes, to obtain a specimen? More to the point, why should they have wanted to do such a thing and how were they able to duplicate minute details of *Ricinulei's* anatomy normally visible only under a microscope,[6] notably the reproductive organ positioned on the end of its extended right leg?

---

[3] Personal communications with Dr Pitluga.

Such mysteries multiply at Nazca and none of the designs, except perhaps the condor, really seems quite at home here. The whale and the monkey are, after all, as out of place in this desert environment as the Amazonian spider. A curious figure of a man, his right arm raised as though in greeting, heavy boots on his feet and round eyes staring owlishly forward, cannot be said to belong to any known era or culture. And other drawings depicting the human form are equally peculiar: their heads enclosed in halos of radiance, they do indeed look like visitors from another planet. Their sheer size is equally noteworthy and bizarre. The hummingbird is 165 feet long, the spider 150 feet long, the condor stretches nearly 400 feet from beak to tail-feathers (as does the pelican), and a lizard, whose tail is now divided by the Pan-American highway, is 617 feet in length. Almost every design is executed on the same cyclopean scale and in the same difficult manner, by the careful contouring of a single continuous line.

Similar attention to detail is to be found in the geometrical devices. Some of these take the form of straight lines *more than five miles long,* marching like Roman roads across the desert, dropping into dried-out river beds, surmounting rocky outcrops, and never once deviating from true.

This kind of precision is hard, but not impossible, to explain in conventional commonsense terms. More puzzling by far are the zoomorphic figures. How could they have been so perfectly made when, without aircraft, their creators could not have checked the progress of their work by viewing it in its proper perspective? None of the designs is small enough to be seen from ground level, where they appear merely as a series of shapeless ruts in the desert. They show their true form only when seen from an altitude of several hundred feet. There is no elevation nearby that provides such a vantage point.

---

[4] Firm identification of the Nazca spider with *Ricinulei* was first made by Professor Gerald S. Hawkins. See Gerald S. Hawkins, *Beyond Stonehenge,* Arrow Books, London, 1977, p. 143-4.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid., p. 144.

Linemakers, map-makers

I'm flying over the lines, trying to make sense of it all.

My pilot is Rodolfo Arias, lately of the Peruvian Airforce. After a career in jet fighters he finds the little Cessna slow and uninspiring and treats it like a taxi with wings. Once already we've been back to the airstrip at Nazca to remove a window so that my partner Santha can point her cameras vertically down at the alluring glyphs. Now we're experimenting with the view from different altitudes. At a couple of hundred feet above the plain Ricinulei, the Amazonian spider, looks like he's going to rear up and snatch us in his jaws. At 500 feet we can see several of the figures at once: a dog, a tree, a weird pair of hands, the condor, and some of the triangles and trapezoids. When we ascend to 1500 feet, the zoomorphs, hitherto predominant, are revealed merely as small scattered units surrounded by an astonishing scribble of vast geometric forms. These forms now look less like runways and more like pathways made by giants—pathways that crisscross the plateau in what seems at first a bewildering variety of shapes, angles and sizes.

As the ground continues to recede, however, and as the widening perspective on the lines permits more of an eagle's-eye view, I begin to wonder whether there might not after all be some *method* to the cuneiform slashes and scratches spread out below me. I am reminded of an observation made by Maria Reiche, the mathematician who has lived at Nazca and studied the lines since 1946. In her view

> The geometric drawings give the impression of a cipher-script in which the same words are sometimes written in huge letters, at another time in minute characters. There are line arrangements which appear in a great variety of size categories together with very similar shapes. All the drawings are composed of a certain number of basic elements ...[7]

As the Cessna bumps and heaves across the heavens, I also remember it is no accident that the Nazca lines were only properly identified in the twentieth century, after the era of flight had begun. In the late sixteenth century a magistrate named Luis de Monzon was the first Spanish traveller to bring back eyewitness reports concerning these mysterious 'marks on the desert' and to collect the strange local traditions that linked them to the Viracochas.[8] However, until commercial airlines began to operate regularly between Lima and Arequipa in the 1930s no one seems to have grasped that the largest piece of graphic art in the world lay here in southern Peru. It was the development of aviation that made the difference, giving men and women the godlike ability to take to the skies and see beautiful and puzzling things that had hitherto been hidden from them.

---

[7] Maria Reiche, *Mystery on the Desert,* Nazca, Peru, 1989, p. 58.

[8] Luis de Monzon was the *corregidor,* or magistrate, of Rucanas and Soras, near Nazca, in 1586. *Pathways to the Gods,* p. 36; *Atlas of Mysterious Places,* p. 100.

Rodolfo is steering the Cessna in a gentle circle over the figure of the monkey—a big monkey tied in a riddle of geometric forms. It's not easy to describe the eerie, hypnotic feeling this design gives me: it's very complicated and absorbing to look at, and slightly sinister in an abstract, indefinable way. The monkey's body is defined by a continuous unbroken line. And, without ever being interrupted, this same line winds up stairs, over pyramids, into a series of zig-zags, through a spiral labyrinth (the tail), and then back around a number of star-like hairpin bends. It would be a real *tour de force* of draughtsmanship and artistic skill on a sheet of notepaper, but this is the Nazca desert (where they do things on a grand scale) and the monkey is at least 400 feet long and 300 feet wide ...

Were the linemakers map-makers too?

And why were they called the Viracochas?

Chapter 5

The Inca Trail to the Past

No artefacts or monuments, no cities or temples, have endured in recognizable form for longer than the most resilient religious traditions. Whether expressed in the Pyramid Texts of Ancient Egypt, or the Hebrew Bible, or the Vedas, such traditions are among the most imperishable of all human creations: they are vehicles of knowledge voyaging through time.

The last custodians of the ancient religious heritage of Peru were the Incas, whose beliefs and ‘idolatry’ were ‘extirpated’ and whose treasures were ransacked during the thirty terrible years that followed the Spanish conquest in AD 1532.[1] Providentially, however, a number of early Spanish travellers made sincere efforts to document Inca traditions before they were entirely forgotten.

Though little attention was paid at the time, some of these traditions speak strikingly of a great civilization that was believed to have existed in Peru many thousands of years earlier.[2] Powerful memories were preserved of this civilization, said to have been founded by the Viracochas, the same mysterious beings credited with the making of the Nazca lines.

‘Foam of the Sea’

When the Spanish *conquistadores* arrived, the Inca empire extended along the Pacific coast and Andean highlands of South America from the northern border of modern Ecuador, through the whole of Peru, and as far south as the Maule River in central Chile. Connecting the far-flung corners of this empire was a vast and sophisticated road system: two parallel north-south highways, for example, one running for 3600 kilometres along the coast and the other for a similar distance through the Andes. Both these great thoroughfares were paved and connected by frequent links. In addition, they exhibited an interesting range of design and engineering features such as suspension bridges and tunnels cut through solid rock. They were clearly the work of an evolved, disciplined and ambitious society. Ironically, they played a significant part in its downfall: the Spanish forces, led by Francisco Pizarro, used them to great effect to speed up their ruthless advance into the Inca heartland.[3]

---

[1] See, for example, Father Pablo Joseph, *The Extirpation of Idolatry in Peru* (translated from the Spanish by L. Clark Keating), University of Kentucky Press, 1968.

[2] This is the view of Fernando Montesinos, expressed in his *Memorias Antiguas Historiales del Peru* (written in the seventeenth century). English edition translated and edited by P. A. Means, Hakluyt Society, London, 1920.

The capital of the Inca empire was the city of Cuzco, a name meaning 'the earth's navel' in the local Quechua language.[4] According to legend it was established by Manco Capac and Mama Occlo, two children of the Sun. Here, though the Incas worshipped the sun god, whom they knew as *Inti,* quite another deity was venerated as the Most Holy of all. This was Viracocha, whose namesakes were said to "have made the Nazca lines and whose own name meant 'Foam of the Sea.'[5]

No doubt it is just a coincidence that the Greek goddess Aphrodite, who was born of the sea, received her name because of 'the foam [*aphros*] out of which she was formed'.[6] Besides, Viracocha was always depicted uncompromisingly as a *male* by the peoples of the Andes. That much about him is known for certain. No historian, however, is able to say how ancient was the cult of this deity before the Spanish arrived to put a stop to it. This is because the cult seemed always to have been around; indeed, long before the Incas incorporated him into their cosmogony and built a magnificent temple for him at Cuzco, the evidence suggests that the high god Viracocha had been worshipped by *all* the civilizations that had ever existed in the long history of Peru.

Citadel of Viracocha

A few days after leaving Nazca, Santha and I arrived in Cuzco and made our way to the site of the Coricancha, the great temple dedicated to Viracocha in the pre-Colombian era. The Coricancha was of course long gone. Or, to be more exact, it was not so much gone as *buried* beneath layers of later architecture. The Spanish had kept its superb Inca foundations, and the lower parts of its fabulously strong walls, and had erected their own grandiose colonial cathedral on top.

Walking towards the front entrance of this cathedral, I remembered that the Inca temple that had once stood here had been covered with more than 700 sheets of pure gold (each weighing around two kilograms) and that its spacious courtyard had been planted with 'fields' of replica corn also fashioned out of gold.[7] I could not help but be reminded of Solomon's temple in far-off Jerusalem, also reputed to have been adorned with sheets of gold and a marvellous orchard of golden trees.[8]

---

[3] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 6:276-7.

[4] Paul Devereux, *Secrets of Ancient and Sacred Places,* Blandford Books, London, 1992, p. 76. See also *Peru,* Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1991, p. 168.

[5] *The Facts on File Encyclopaedia of World Mythology and Legend,* London and Oxford, 1988, p. 657.

[6] Macrobius, cited in Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechend, *Hamlet's Mill,* David R. Godine, Publisher, Boston, 1992, p. 134. See also A. R. Hope Moncreiff, *The Illustrated Guide to Classical Mythology,* BCA, London, 1992, p. 153.

[7] *Peru,* p. 181.

Earthquakes in 1650 and again in 1950 had largely demolished the Spanish cathedral of Santo Domingo which stood on the site of the temple of Viracocha, and it had been necessary to rebuild it on both occasions. Its Inca foundations and lower walls survived these natural disasters intact, thanks to their characteristic design which made use of an elegant system of interlocking polygonal blocks. These blocks, and the general layout of the place, were almost all that was now left of the original structure, apart from an octagonal grey stone platform at the centre of the vast rectangular courtyard which had once been covered with 55 kilograms of solid gold.[9] On either side of the courtyard were ante-chambers, also from the Inca temple, with refined architectural features such as walls that tapered upwards and beautifully-carved niches hewn out of single pieces of granite.

We took a walk through the narrow, cobbled streets of Cuzco. Looking around, I realized it was not just the cathedral that reflected Spanish imposition on top of an earlier culture: the whole town was slightly schizophrenic. Spacious, balconied, pastel-shaded colonial homes and palaces towered above me but almost all of them stood on Inca foundations or incorporated complete Inca structures of the same beautiful polygonal architecture used in the Coricancha. In one alleyway, known as Hatunrumiyoc, I paused to examine an intricate jigsaw puzzle of a wall made of countless drystone blocks all perfectly fitted together, all of different sizes and shapes, interlocking in a bewildering array of angles. The carving of the individual blocks, and their arrangement into so complicated a structure could only have been achieved by master craftsmen possessed of very high levels of skill, with untold centuries of architectural experimentation behind them. On one block I counted twelve angles and sides in a single plane, and I could not slip even the edge of a piece of thin paper into the joints that connected it to the surrounding blocks.

The bearded stranger

It seemed that in the early sixteenth century, before the Spanish began to demolish Peruvian culture in earnest, an idol of Viracocha had stood in the Holy of Holies of the Coricancha. According to a contemporary text, the *Relacion anonyma de los costumbres antiguos de los naturales del Piru,* this idol took the form of a marble statue of the god—a statue described ‘as to the hair, complexion, features, raiment and sandals, just as painters represent the apostle Saint Bartholomew'.[10] Other accounts of Viracocha likened his appearance to that of the Saint Thomas.[11] I examined a number of illustrated ecclesiastical manuscripts in which these two saints appeared; both were routinely depicted as lean, bearded white men, past middle age, wearing sandals and dressed in long, flowing cloaks. As we shall see, the records confirmed this was exactly the appearance ascribed to Viracocha by those who worshipped him. Whoever he was, therefore, he could not have been an American Indian: they are relatively dark-skinned people with sparse facial hair.[12] Viracocha's bushy beard and pale complexion made him sound like a Caucasian.

---

[8] *Tan. Terumah,* XI; also, with slight variations, *Yoma* 39b. Cited in *The Jewish Encyclopaedia,* Funk and Wagnell, New York, 1925, vol. II, p. 105.

[9] *Peru,* p. 182.

Back in the sixteenth century the Incas had thought so too. Indeed their legends and religious beliefs made them so certain of his physical type that they initially mistook the white and bearded Spaniards who arrived on their shores for the returning Viracocha and his demigods,[13] an event long prophesied and which Viracocha was said in all the legends to have promised. This happy coincidence gave Pizarro's *conquistadores* the decisive strategic and psychological edge that they needed to overcome the numerically superior Inca forces in the battles that followed.

Who had provided the model for the Viracochas?

---

[10] *The Facts on File Encyclopaedia* ..., p. 658.

[11] See, for example, H. Osborne, *South American Mythology,* Paul Hamlyn, London, 1968, p. 81.

[12] For further evidence and argument in this regard, see Constance Irwin, *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* W. H. Allen, London, 1964, pp. 31-2.

[13] J. Alden Mason, *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* Penguin Books, London, 1991, p. 135. See also Garcilaso de la Vega, *The Royal Commentaries of the Incas,* Orion Press, New York, 1961, pp. 132-3, 147-8.

Chapter 6

He Came in a Time of Chaos

Through all the ancient legends of the peoples of the Andes stalked a tall, bearded, pale-skinned figure wrapped in a cloak of secrecy. And though he was known by many different names in many different places he was always recognizably the *same* figure: Viracocha, Foam of the Sea, a master of science and magic who wielded terrible weapons and who came in a time of chaos to set the world to rights.

The same basic story was shared in many variants by all the peoples of the Andean region. It began with a vivid description of a terrifying period when the earth had been inundated by a great flood and plunged into darkness by the disappearance of the sun. Society had fallen into disorder, and the people suffered much hardship. Then

> there suddenly appeared, coming from the south, a white man of large stature and authoritative demeanour. This man had such great power that he changed the hills into valleys and from the valleys made great hills, causing streams to flow from the living stone ...[1]

The early Spanish chronicler who recorded this tradition explained that it had been told to him by the Indians he had travelled among on his journeys in the Andes:

> And they heard it from their fathers, who in their turn had it from the old songs which were handed down from very ancient times ... They say that this man travelled along the highland route to the north, working marvels as he went and that they never saw him again. They say that in many places he gave men instructions how they should live, speaking to them with great love and kindness and admonishing them to be good and to do no damage or injury one to another, but to love one another and show charity to all. In most places they name him Ticci Viracocha ...[2]

Other names applied to the same figure included Huaracocha, Con, Con Ticci or Kon Tiki, Thunupa, Taapac, Tupaca and Illa.[3] He was a scientist, an architect of surpassing skills, a sculptor and an engineer: ‘He caused terraces and fields to be formed on the steep sides of ravines, and sustaining walls to rise up and support them. He also made irrigating channels to flow ... and he went in various directions, arranging many things.’[4]

---

[1] *South American Mythology,* p. 74.

[2] Ibid.

[3] Arthur Cotterell, *The Illustrated Encyclopaedia of Myths and Legends,* Guild Publishing, London, 1989, p. 174. See also *South American Mythology,* p. 69-88.

[4] Francisco de Avila, 'A Narrative of the Errors, False Gods, and Other Superstitions and Diabolical Rites in Which the Indians of the Province of Huarochiri Lived in Ancient Times', in *Narratives of the Rites and Laws of the Yncas* (trans, and ed. Clemens R.

Viracocha was also a teacher and a healer and made himself helpful to people in need. It was said that 'wherever he passed, he healed all that were sick and restored sight to the blind.'[5]

This gentle, civilizing, 'superhuman', Samaritan had another side to his nature, however. If his life were threatened, as it seems to have been on several occasions, he had the weapon of heavenly fire at his disposal:

> Working great miracles by his words, he came to the district of the Canas and there, near a village called Cacha ... the people rose up against him and threatened to stone him. They saw him sink to his knees and raise his hands to heaven as if beseeching aid in the peril which beset him. The Indians declare that thereupon they saw fire in the sky which seemed all around them. Full of fear, they approached him whom they had intended to kill and besought him to forgive them ... Presently they saw that the fire was extinguished at his command, though stones were consumed by fire in such wise that large blocks could be lifted by hand as if they were cork. They narrate further that, leaving the place where this occurred, he came to the coast and there, holding his mantle, he went forth amidst the waves and was seen no more. And as he went they gave him the name Viracocha, which means 'Foam of the Sea'.'[6]

The legends were unanimous in their physical description of Viracocha. In his *Suma y Narracion de los Incas,* for example, Juan de Betanzos, a sixteenth-century Spanish chronicler, stated that according to the Indians, he had been 'a bearded man of tall stature clothed in a white robe which came down to his feet and which he wore belted at the waist'.[7]

Other descriptions, collected from many different and widely separated Andean peoples, all seemed to identify the same enigmatic individual. According to one he was:

> A bearded man of medium height dressed in a rather long cloak ... He was past his prime, with grey hair, and lean. He walked with a staff and addressed the natives with love, calling them his sons and daughters. As he traversed all the land he worked miracles. He healed the sick by touch. He spoke every tongue even better than the natives. They called him Thunupa or Tarpaca, Viracocha-rapacha or Pachaccan ...[8]

In one legend Thunupa-Viracocha was said to have been a 'white man of large stature, whose air and person aroused great respect and veneration'.[9] In another he was described as 'a white man of august appearance, blue-eyed, bearded, without headgear and wearing a *cusma,* a jerkin or sleeveless shirt reaching to the knees'. In yet another, which seemed to refer to a later phase of his life, he was revered as 'a wise counsellor in matters of state' and depicted as 'an old man with a beard and long hair wearing a long tunic'.[10]

Markhem), Hakluyt Society, London, 1873, vol. XLVIII, p. 124.

[5] *South American Mythology,* p. 74.

[6] Ibid., p. 74-6.

[7] Ibid., p. 78.

[8] Ibid., p. 81.

[9] John Hemming, *The Conquest of the Incas,* Macmillan, London, 1993, p. 97.

[10] *South American Mythology,* p. 87.

Civilizing mission

Above all else, Viracocha was remembered in the legends as a teacher. Before his coming, it was said, ‘men lived in a condition of disorder, many went naked like savages; they had no houses or other dwellings than caves, and from these they went forth to gather whatever they could find to eat in the countryside.’[11]

Viracocha was credited with changing all this and with initiating the long-lost golden age which later generations looked back on with nostalgia. All the legends agreed, furthermore, that he had carried out his civilizing mission with great kindness and as far as possible had abjured the use of force: careful instruction and personal example had been the main methods used to equip the people with the techniques and knowledge necessary for a cultured and productive life. In particular, he was remembered for bringing to Peru such varied skills as medicine, metallurgy, farming, animal husbandry, the art of writing (said by the Incas to have been introduced by Viracocha but later forgotten), and a sophisticated understanding of the principles of engineering and architecture.

I had already been impressed by the quality of Inca stonework in Cuzco. As my research in the old town continued, however, I was surprised to discover that by no means all the so-called Inca masonry could be attributed with any degree of archaeological certainty to the Incas. It was true that they had been masters in the manipulation of stone, and many monuments in the Cuzco area were indisputably their work. It seemed, however, that some of the more remarkable structures routinely attributed to them could have been erected by earlier civilizations; the evidence suggested that the Incas had often functioned as the restorers of these structures rather than their original builders.

The same appeared to be true of the highly developed system of roads connecting the far-flung parts of the Inca empire. The reader will recall that these roads took the form of parallel highways running north to south, one along the coast and the other through the Andes. All in all more than 15,000 miles of surfaced tracks had been in regular and efficient use before the time of the Spanish conquest, and I had assumed that the Incas had been responsible for all of them. I now learned that it was much more likely that they had inherited the system. Their role had been to restore, maintain and unify a pre-existing network. Indeed, though it was not often admitted, no expert could safely estimate how old these incredible highways were or who had built them.[12]

The mystery was deepened by local traditions which stated not only that the road system and the sophisticated architecture had been ‘ancient in the time of the Incas’, but that both ‘were the work of white, auburn-haired men' who had lived thousands of years earlier.[13]

---

[11] Ibid., p. 72.

[12] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 26:42.

One legend described Viracocha as being accompanied by 'messengers' of two kinds, 'faithful soldiers' (*huaminca*) and 'shining ones' (*hayhuaypanti*). Their role was to carry their lord's message 'to every part of the world'.[14]

Elsewhere there were phrases such as: 'Con Ticci returned ... with a number of attendants'; 'Con Ticci then summoned his followers, who were called viracocha'; 'Con Ticci commanded all but two of the viracocha to go east ...'[15]; 'There came forth from a lake a Lord named Con Ticci Viracocha bringing with him a certain number of people ...'[16]; 'Thus those viracochas went off to the various districts which Viracocha had indicated for them ...'.[17]

The work of demons?

The ancient citadel of Sacsayhuaman lies just north of Cuzco. We reached it late one afternoon under a sky almost occluded by heavy clouds of tarnished silver. A cold grey breeze was blowing across the high-altitude tundra as I clambered up stairways, through lintelled stone gates built for giants, and walked along the mammoth rows of zig-zag walls.

I craned my neck and looked up at a big granite boulder that my route now passed under. Twelve feet high, seven feet across, and weighing considerably more than 100 tons, it was a work of man, not nature. It had been cut and shaped into a symphonic harmony of angles, manipulated with apparent ease (as though it were made of wax or putty) and stood on its end in a wall of other huge and problematic polygonal blocks, some of them positioned above it, some below it, some to each side, and all in perfectly balanced and well-ordered juxtaposition.

Since one of these astonishing pieces of carefully hewn stone had a height of twenty-eight feet and was calculated to weigh 361 tons[18] (roughly the equivalent of *five hundred* family-sized automobiles), it seemed to me that a number of fundamental questions were crying out for answers.

How had the Incas, or their predecessors, been able to work stone on such a gargantuan scale? How had they cut and shaped these Cyclopean boulders so precisely? How had they transported them tens of miles from distant quarries? By what means had they made walls of them, shuffling the individual blocks around and raising them high above the ground with such apparent ease? These people weren't even supposed to have had the wheel, let alone machinery capable of lifting and manipulating dozens of irregularly shaped 100-ton blocks, and sorting them into three-dimensional jigsaw puzzles.

---

[13] Ignatius Donnelly, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* Harper & Brothers, New York, 1882, p. 394.

[14] From the 'Relacion anonyma de los costumbres antiguos de los naturales del Piru', reported in *The Facts on File Encyclopaedia ...*, p. 657.

[15] *Pears Encyclopaedia of Myths and Legends: Oceania, Australia and the Americas,* (ed. Sheila Savill), Pelham Books, London, 1978, pp. 179-80.

[16] *South American Mythology,* p. 76.

[17] Ibid.

[18] *The Conquest of the Incas,* p. 191.

I knew that the chroniclers of the early colonial period had been as perplexed as I was by what they had seen. The respected Garcilaso de la Vega, for example, who came here in the sixteenth century, had spoken with awe about the fortress of Sacsayhuaman:

> Its proportions are inconceivable when one has not actually seen it; and when one has looked at it closely and examined it attentively, they appear to be so extraordinary that it seems as though some magic had presided over its construction; that it must be the work of demons instead of human beings. It is made of such great stones, and in such great number, that one wonders simultaneously how the Indians were able to quarry them, how they transported them ... and how they hewed them and set them one on top of the other with such precision. For they disposed of neither iron nor steel with which to penetrate the rock and cut and polish the stones; they had neither wagon nor oxen to transport them, and, in fact, there exist neither wagons nor oxen throughout the world that would have sufficed for this task, so enormous are these stones and so rude the mountain paths over which they were conveyed ...[19]

Garcilaso also reported something else interesting. In his *Royal Commentaries of the Incas* he gave an account of how, in historical times, an Inca king had tried to emulate the achievements of his predecessors who had built Sacsayhuaman. The attempt had involved bringing just one immense boulder from several miles away to add to the existing fortifications: 'This boulder was hauled across the mountain by more than 20,000 Indians, going up and down very steep hills ... At a certain spot, it fell from their hands over a precipice crushing more than 3000 men.'[20] In all the histories I surveyed, this was the only report which described the Incas actually building, or trying to build, with huge blocks like those employed at Sacsayhuaman. The report suggested that they possessed no experience of the techniques involved and that their attempt had ended in disaster.

This, of course, proved nothing in itself. But Garcilaso's story did intensify my doubts about the great fortifications which towered above me. As I looked at them I felt that they could, indeed, have been erected before the age of the Incas and by some infinitely older and more technically advanced race.

Not for the first time I was reminded of how difficult archaeologists found it to provide accurate dates for engineering works like roads and drystone walls which contained no organic compounds. Radiocarbon was redundant in such circumstances; thermo-luminescence, too, was useless.

---

[19] *Royal Commentaries of the Incas,* p. 233.

[20] Ibid., p. 237.

And while promising new tests such as Chlorine-36 rock-exposure dating were now being developed their implementation was still some way off. Pending further advances in the latter field, therefore, 'expert' chronology was still largely the result of guesswork and subjective assumptions. Since it was known that the Incas had made intensive *use* of Sacsayhuaman I could easily understand why it had been assumed that they had *built* it. But there was no obvious or necessary connection between these two propositions. The Incas could just as well have found the structures already in place and moved into them.

If so, who had the original builders been?

The Viracochas, said the ancient myths, the bearded, white-skinned strangers, the 'shining ones', the 'faithful soldiers.'

As we travelled I continued to study the accounts of the Spanish adventurers and ethnographers of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries who had faithfully recorded the ancient, pre-contact traditions of the Peruvian Indians. What was particularly noticeable about these traditions was the repeated emphasis that the coming of the Viracochas had been associated with a terrible deluge which had overwhelmed the earth and destroyed the greater part of humanity.

Chapter 7

Were There Giants Then?

Just after six in the morning the little train jerked into motion and began its slow climb up the steep sides of the valley of Cuzco. The narrow-gauge tracks were laid out in a series of Z shapes. We chugged along the lower horizontal of the first Z, then shunted and went backwards up the oblique, shunted again and went forward along the upper horizontal—and so on, with numerous stops and starts, following a route that eventually took us high above the ancient city. The Inca walls and colonial palaces, the narrow streets, the cathedral of Santo Domingo squatting atop the ruins of Viracocha's temple, all looked spectral and surreal in the pearl-grey light of a dawn sky. A fairy pattern of electric lamps still decorated the streets, a thin mist seeped across the ground, and the smoke of domestic fires rose from the chimneys over the tiled roofs of countless small houses.

Eventually the train turned its back on Cuzco and we proceeded for a while in a straight north-westerly direction towards our destination: Machu Picchu, the lost city of the Incas, some three hours and 130 kilometres away. I had intended to read, but lulled by the rocking motion of the carriage, I dropped off to sleep instead. Fifty minutes later I awoke to find that we were passing through a painting. The foreground, brightly sunlit, consisted of flat green meadows sprinkled with little patches of thawing frost, distributed on either side of a stream across a long, wide valley.

In the middle of my view, dotted with bushes, was a large field on which a handful of black and white dairy cows grazed. Nearby was a scattered settlement of houses outside which stood small, dark-skinned Quechua Indians dressed in ponchos, balaclavas and colourful woollen hats. More distant were slopes canopied in fir trees and exotic eucalyptus. My eye followed the rising contours of a pair of high green mountains, which then parted to reveal folded and even more lofty uplands. Beyond these soared a far horizon surmounted by a jagged range of radiant and snowy peaks.

Casting down the giants

It was with understandable reluctance that I turned at last to my reading. I wanted to look more closely at some of the curious links I thought I had identified connecting the sudden appearance of Viracocha to the deluge legends of the Incas and other Andean peoples.

Before me was a passage from Fr. Jose de Acosta's *Natural and Moral History of the Indies,* in which the learned priest set out 'what the Indians themselves report of their beginning':

> They make great mention of a deluge, which happened in their country ... The Indians say that all men were drowned in the deluge, and they report that out of Lake Titicaca came one Viracocha, who stayed in Tiahuanaco, where at this day there are to be seen the ruins of ancient and very strange buildings, and from thence came to Cuzco, and so began mankind to multiply ...[1]

Making a mental note to find out more about Lake Titicaca, and the mysterious Tiahuanaco, I read the following passage summarizing a legend from the Cuzco area:

> For some crime unstated the people who lived in the most ancient times were destroyed by the creator ... in a deluge. After the deluge the creator appeared in human form from Lake Titicaca. He then created the sun and moon and stars. After that he renewed the human population of the earth ...[2]

In another myth

> The great Creator God, Viracocha, decided to make a world for men to live in. First he made the earth and sky. Then he began to make people to live in it, carving great stone figures of giants which he brought to life. At first all went well but after a time the giants began to fight among themselves and refused to work. Viracocha decided that he must destroy them. Some he turned back into stone ... the rest he overwhelmed with a great flood.[3]

Very similar notions were, of course, found in other, quite unconnected, sources, such as the Jewish Old Testament. In Chapter six of the *Book of Genesis,* for example, which describes the Hebrew God's displeasure with his creation and his decision to destroy it, I had long been intrigued by one of the few descriptive statements made about the forgotten era before the Flood. According to the enigmatic language of that statement, 'There were giants in the earth in those days ...'.[4] Could the 'giants' buried in the biblical sands of the Middle East be connected in some unseen way to the 'giants' woven into the fabric of pre-Colombian native American legends? Adding considerably to the mystery was the fact that the Jewish and Peruvian sources both went on, with many further details in common, to depict an angry deity unleashing a catastrophic flood upon a wicked and disobedient world.

On the next page of the sheaf of documents I had assembled was this Inca account of the deluge handed down by a certain Father Molina in his *Relacion de las fabulas y ritos de los Yngas:*

> In the life of Manco Capac, who was the first Inca, and from whom they began to

---

[1] José de Acosta, *The Natural and Moral History of the Indies,* Book I, Chapter four, in *South American Mythology,* p. 61.

[2] Ibid., p. 82.

[3] D. Gifford and J. Sibbick, *Warriors, Gods and Spirits from South American Mythology,* Eurobook Limited, 1983, p. 54.

[4] *Genesis* 6:4.

> boast themselves children of the Sun and from whom they derived their idolatrous worship of the Sun, they had an ample account of the deluge. They say that in it perished all races of men and created things insomuch that the waters rose above the highest mountain peaks in the world. No living thing survived except a man and a woman who remained in a box and, when the waters subsided, the wind carried them ... to Tiahuanaco [where] the creator began to raise up the people and the nations that are in that region ...[5]

Garcilaso de la Vega, the son of a Spanish nobleman and an Inca royal woman, was already familiar to me from his *Royal Commentaries of the Incas.* He was regarded as one of the most reliable chroniclers of the traditions of his mother's people and had done his work in the sixteenth century, soon after the conquest, when those traditions had not yet been contaminated by foreign influences. He, too, confirmed what had obviously been a universal and deeply impressed belief: 'After the waters of the deluge had subsided, a certain man appeared in the country of Tiahuanaco ...'[6]

That man had been Viracocha. Wrapped in his cloak, he was strong and august of countenance' and walked with unassailable confidence through the most dangerous badlands. He worked miracles of healing and could call down fire from heaven. To the Indians it must have seemed that he had materialized from nowhere.

Ancient traditions

We were now more than two hours into our journey to Machu Picchu and the panorama had changed. Huge black mountains, upon which not a trace of snow remained to reflect the sunlight, towered darkly above us and we seemed to be running through a rocky defile at the end of a narrow valley filled with sombre shadows. The air was cold and so were my feet. I shivered and resumed reading.

One thing was obvious amid the confused web of legends I had reviewed, legends which supplemented one another but also at times conflicted. All the scholars agreed that the Incas had borrowed, absorbed and passed on the traditions of many of the different civilized peoples over whom they had extended their control during the centuries of expansion of their vast empire. In this sense, whatever the outcome of the historical debate over the antiquity of the Incas themselves, nobody could seriously dispute their role as transmitters of the ancient belief systems of all the great archaic cultures—coastal and highland, known and unknown—that had preceded them in this land.

And who could say just *what* civilizations might have existed in Peru in the unexplored regions of the past? Every year archaeologists come up with new finds which extend the horizons further and further back in time. So why shouldn't they one day discover evidence of the penetration into the Andes, in remote antiquity, of a race of civilizers who had come from overseas and gone away again after completing their work? That was what the legends seemed to me to be suggesting, legends that most of all, and most clearly, had immortalized the memory of the man/god Viracocha striding the high windswept byways of the Andes working miracles wherever he went:

---

[5] Fr.. Molina, 'Relacion de las fabulas y ritos de los Yngas', in *South American Mythology,* p. 61.

[6] *Royal Commentaries of the Incas.*

> Viracocha himself, with his two assistants, journeyed north ... He travelled up the cordillera, one assistant went along the coast, and the other up the edge of the eastern forests ... The Creator proceeded to Urcos, near Cuzco, where he commanded the future population to emerge from a mountain. He visited Cuzco, and then continued north to Ecuador. There, in the coastal province of Manta, he took leave of his people and, walking on the waves, disappeared across the ocean.[7]

There was always this poignant moment of goodbye at the end of every folk memory featuring the remarkable stranger whose name meant 'Foam of the Sea':

> Viracocha went on his way, calling forth the races of men ... When he came to the district of Puerto Viejo he was joined by his followers whom he had sent on before, and when they had joined him he put to sea in their company and they say that he and his people went by water as easily as they had traversed the land.[8]

Always this poignant goodbye ... and often a hint of science or magic.

Time capsule

Outside the window of the train things were happening. To my left, swollen with dark water, I could see the Urubamba, a tributary of the Amazon and a river sacred to the Incas. The air temperature had warmed-up noticeably: we had descended into a relatively low-lying valley with its own tropical micro-climate. The mountain slopes rising on either side of the tracks were densely covered in green forests and I was reminded that this was truly a region of vast and virtually insuperable obstacles. Whoever had ventured all this way into the middle of nowhere to build Machu Picchu must have had a very strong motive for doing so.

Whatever the reason had been, the choice of such a remote location had at least one beneficial side-effect: Machu Picchu was never found by the *conquistadores* and friars during their days of destructive zeal. Indeed, it was not until 1911, when the fabulous heritage of older races was beginning to be treated with greater respect, that a young American explorer, Hiram Bingham, revealed Machu Picchu to the world. It was realized at once that this incredible site opened a unique window on pre-

---

[7] *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* p. 237.

[8] Juan de Batanzos, 'Suma y Narracion de los Incas', in *South American Mythology,* p. 79.

Colombian civilization; in consequence the ruins were protected from looters and souvenir hunters and an important chunk of the enigmatic past was preserved to amaze future generations.

Having passed through a one-horse town named Agua Caliente (Hot Water), where a few broken-down restaurants and cheap bars leered at travellers from beside the tracks, we reached Machu Picchu Puentas Ruinas station at ten minutes past nine in the morning. From here a half-hour bus ride on a winding dirt road up the side of a steep and forbidding mountain brought us to Machu Picchu itself, to the ruins, and to a bad hotel which charged us a nonsensical amount of money for a not very clean room. We were the only guests. Though it had been years since the local guerrilla movement had last bombed the Machu Picchu train, not many foreigners were keen to come here any more.

Machu Picchu dreaming

It was two in the afternoon. I stood on a high point at the southern end of the site. The ruins stretched out northwards in lichen-enshrouded terraces before me. Thick clouds were wrapped in a ring around the mountain tops but the sunlight still occasionally burst through here and there.

Way down on the valley floor I could see the sacred river curled in a hairpin loop right around the central formation on which Machu Picchu was based, like a moat surrounding a giant castle. The river showed deep green from this vantage point, reflecting the greenness of the steep jungle slopes. And there were patches of white water and wonderful sparkling gleams of light.

I gazed across the ruins towards the dominant peak. Its name is Huana Picchu and it used to feature in all the classic travel agency posters of this site. To my astonishment I now observed that for a hundred metres or so below its summit it had been neatly terraced and sculpted: somebody had been up there and had carefully raked the near-vertical cliffs into a graceful hanging garden which had perhaps in ancient times been planted with bright flowers.

It seemed to me that the entire site, together with its setting, was a monumental work of sculpture composed in part of mountains, in part of rock, in part of trees, in part of stones—and also in part of water. It was a heartachingly beautiful place, certainly one of the most beautiful places I have ever seen.

Despite its luminous brilliance, however, I felt that I was gazing down on to a city of ghosts. It was like the wreck of the *Marie Celeste,* deserted and restless. The houses were arranged in long terraces. Each house was tiny, with just one room fronting directly on to the narrow street, and the architecture was solid and functional but by no means ornate. By way of contrast certain ceremonial areas were engineered to an infinitely higher standard and incorporated giant blocks similar to those I had seen at Sacsayhuaman. One smoothly polished polygonal monolith was around twelve feet long by five feet wide by five feet thick and could not have weighed less than 200 tons. How had the ancient builders managed to get it up here?

Intihuatana
Principal Temple

Machu Picchu.

There were dozens of others like it too, and they were all arranged in the familiar jigsaw puzzle walls of interlocking angles. On one block I was able to count a total of thirty-three angles, every one intermeshed faultlessly with a matching angle on an adjoining block. There were massive polygons and perfect ashlars with razor-sharp edges. There were also natural, unhewn boulders integrated into the overall design at a number of points. And there were strange and unusual devices such as the Intihuatana, the ‘hitching post of the sun’. This remarkable artefact consisted of an elemental chunk of bedrock, grey and crystalline, carved into a complex geometrical form of curves and angles, incised niches and external buttresses, surmounted at the centre by a stubby vertical prong.

Jigsaw puzzle

How old is Machu Picchu? The academic consensus is that the city could not have been built much earlier than the fifteenth century AD.[9] Dissenting opinions, however, have from time to time been expressed by a number of more daring but respectable scholars. In the 1930s, for example, Rolf Muller, professor of Astronomy at the University of Potsdam, found convincing evidence to suggest that the most important features of Machu Picchu possessed significant astronomical alignments. From these, through the use of detailed mathematical computations concerning star positions in the sky in previous millennia (which gradually alter down the epochs as the result of a phenomenon known as precession of the equinoxes), Muller concluded that the original layout of the site could only have been accomplished during ‘the era of 4000 BC to 2000 BC’.[10]

In terms of orthodox history, this was a heresy of audacious proportions. If Muller was right, Machu Picchu was not a mere 500 but could be as much as 6000 years old. This would make it significantly older than the Great Pyramid of Egypt (assuming, of course, that one accepted the Great Pyramid’s own orthodox dating of around 2500 BC).

There were other dissenting voices concerning the antiquity of Machu Picchu, and most, like Muller, were convinced that parts of the site were thousands of years older than the date favoured by orthodox historians.[11]

Like the big polygonal blocks that made up the walls, this was a notion that looked as though it might fit with other pieces of a jigsaw puzzle—in this case the jigsaw puzzle of a past that didn't quite make sense any more. Viracocha was part of that same puzzle. All the legends said his capital had been at Tiahuanaco. The ruins of this great and ancient city lay across the border in Bolivia, in an area known as the Collao, twelve miles south of Lake Titicaca.

---

[9] *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* p. 163.

[10] Cited in Zecharia Sitchin, *The Lost Realms,* Avon Books, New York, 1990, p. 164.

[11] Another scholar, Maria Schulten de D'Ebneth, also worked with mathematical methods (as opposed to historical methods which are heavily speculative and interpretive). Her objective was to rediscover the ancient grid used to determine Machu Picchu's layout in relation to the cardinal points. She did this after first establishing the existence of a central 45° line. In the process she stumbled across something else: ‘The sub-angles that she calculated between the central 45° line and sites located away from it ... indicated to her that the earth's tilt ("obliquity") at the time this grid was laid out was close to 24° o’. This means that the grid was planned (according to her) 5125 years before her measurements were done in 1953; in other words in 3172 BC.’ *The Last Realms,* pp. 204-5.

We could get there, I calculated, in a couple of days, via Lima and La Paz.

Chapter 8

The Lake at the Roof of the World

La Paz, the capital city of Bolivia, nestles in the uneven bottom of a spectacular hole in the ground more than two miles above sea level. This plunging ravine, thousands of feet deep, was carved in some primeval age by a tremendous downrush of water that carried with it an abrasive tide of loose rocks and rubble.

Provided by nature with such an apocalyptic setting, La Paz possesses a unique though slightly sleazy charm. With its narrow streets, dark-walled tenements, imposing cathedrals, garish cinemas and hamburger bars open till late, it generates an atmosphere of quirky intrigue which is oddly intoxicating. It’s hard going for the pedestrian, however, unless equipped with lungs like bellows, because the whole of the central district is built up and down the sides of precipitous hills.

La Paz airport is almost 5000 feet higher than the city itself on the edge of the Altiplano—the cold, rolling uplands that are the dominant topographical feature of this region. Santha and I landed there well after midnight on a delayed flight from Lima. In the draughty arrivals hall we were offered coca tea in little plastic cups as a prophylactic against altitude sickness. After considerable delay and exertion, we extracted our luggage from customs, hailed an ancient American-made taxi, and clanked and rattled down towards the dim yellow lights of the city far below.

South America
Lake Titicaca
La Paz
Tiahuanaco

Lake Titicaca.

Rumours of a cataclysm

Around four o'clock the next afternoon we set off for Lake Titicaca in a rented jeep, fought our way through the capital's incomprehensible permanent rush-hour traffic-jams, then drove up out of the skyscrapers and slums into the wide, clear horizons of the Altiplano.

At first, still close to the city, our route took us through a zone of bleak suburbs and sprawling shantytowns where the sidewalks were lined with auto-repair shops and scrap yards. The more distance we put between ourselves and La Paz, however, the more attenuated the settlements became, until almost all signs of human habitation ceased. The empty, treeless, undulating savannahs, distantly bordered by the snow-covered peaks of the Cordillera Real, created an unforgettable spectacle of natural beauty and power. But there was also a feeling of otherworldliness about this place, which seemed to float above the clouds like an enchanted kingdom.

Although our ultimate destination was Tiahuanaco, we were aiming that night for the town of Copacabana on a promontory near the southern end of Lake Titicaca. To reach it we had to cross a neck of water by improvised car ferry at the fishing town of Tiquine. Then, with dusk descending, we followed the main highway, now little more than a narrow and uneven track, up a series of steep hairpin bends and on to the shoulder of a mountain spur. From this point a contrasting panorama unfolded: the dark, dark waters of the lake below appeared to lie at the edge of a limitless ocean drowned in sombre shadows, and yet the jagged peaks of the snowcapped mountains in the distance were still drenched in dazzling sunlight.

From the very beginning Lake Titicaca seemed to me a special place. I knew that it lay some 12,500 feet above sea level, that the frontier between Peru and Bolivia passed through it, that it covered an area of 3200 square miles and was 138 miles long by about 70 miles wide. I also knew it was deep, reaching almost 1000 feet in places, and had a puzzling geological history.

Here are the mysteries, and some of the solutions that have been proposed:

1 Though now more than two miles above sea level, the area around Lake Titicaca is littered with millions upon millions of fossilized sea shells. This suggests that at some stage the whole of the Altiplano was forced upwards from the sea-bed, perhaps as part of the general terrestrial rising that formed South America as a whole. In the process great quantities of ocean water, together with countless myriads of living marine creatures, were scooped up and suspended among the Andean ranges.[1] This is thought to have happened not more recently than about 100 million years ago.[2]

2 Paradoxically, despite the mighty antiquity of this event, Lake Titicaca has retained, until the present day, ‘a marine icthyofauna’[3], in other words, though now located hundreds of miles from any ocean, its fish and crustacea feature many oceanic (rather than freshwater) types. Surprising creatures brought to the surface in fishermen’s nets have

---

[1] Professor Arthur Posnansky, *Tiahuanacu: The Cradle of American Man,* Ministry of Education, La Paz, Bolivia, 1957, volume III p. 192. See also Immanuel Velikovsky, *Earth in Upheaval,* Pocket Books, New York, 1977, pp. 77-8: ‘Investigation into the topography of the Andes and the fauna of Lake Titicaca, together with a chemical analysis of this lake and others on the same plateau, has established that the plateau was at one time at sea level, 12,500 feet lower than it is today ... and that its lakes were originally part of a sea-gulf ... Sometime in the past the entire Altiplano, with its lakes, rose from the bottom of the ocean ...’

[2] Personal communication with Richard Ellison of the British Geological Survey, 17 September 1993. Ellison is the author of the BGS Overseas Geology and Mineral Resources Paper (No. 65) entitled *The Geology of the Western Corriera and Altiplano.*

[3] *Tiahuanacu,* III, p. 192.

included examples of *Hippocampus* (the seahorse).[4] In addition, as one authority has pointed out, 'The various species of *Allorquestes* (*hyalella inermis*, etc.) and other examples of marine fauna leave no doubt that this lake in other periods was much saltier than today, or, more accurately, that the water which formed it was from the sea and that it was damned up and locked in the Andes when the continent rose.'[5]

3 So much, then, for the events which may have created Lake Titicaca in the first place. Since its formation this great 'interior sea', and the Altiplano itself, has undergone several other drastic and dramatic changes. Of these by far the most notable is that the lake's extent appears to have fluctuated enormously, indicated by the existence of an ancient strandline visible on much of the surrounding terrain. Puzzlingly, this strandline is not level but *slopes* markedly from north to south over a considerable horizontal distance. At the northernmost point surveyed it is as much as 295 feet higher than Titicaca; some 400 miles farther south, it is 274 feet lower than the present level of the lake.[6] From this, and much other evidence, geologists have deduced that the Altiplano is still gradually rising, but in an unbalanced manner with greater altitudes being attained in the northern part and lesser in the southern. The process involved here is thought to have less to do with changes in the level of Titicaca's waters themselves (although such changes have certainly occurred) than with changes in the level of the whole terrain in which the lake is situated.[7]

4 Much harder to explain in such terms, however, given the very long time periods major geological transformations are supposed to require, is irrefutable evidence that *the city of Tiahuanaco was once a port, complete with extensive docks, positioned right on the shore of Lake Titicaca*.[8] The problem is that Tiahuanaco's ruins are now marooned about twelve miles south of the lake and *more than 100 feet higher* than the present shoreline.[9] In the period since the city was built, it therefore follows that one of two things must have happened: either the level of lake has fallen greatly or the land on which Tiahuanaco stands has risen comparably.

5 Either way it is obvious that there have been massive and traumatic

---

[4] *Tiahuanacu,* J. J. Augustin, New York, 1945, volume I, p. 28.

[5] Ibid.

[6] See, for example, H.S. Bellamy, *Built Before the Flood: The Problem of the Tiahuanaco Ruins,* Faber & Faber, London, 1943, p. 57.

[7] Ibid., p. 59.

[8] *Tiahuanacu,* III, pp. 192-6. See also *Bolivia,* Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1992, p. 156.

[9] Ibid. See also Harold Osborne, *Indians of the Andes: Aymaras and Quechuas,* Routledge and Kegan Paul, London, 1952, p. 55.

> physical changes. Some of these, such as the rise of the Altiplano from the floor of the ocean, certainly took place in remote geological ages, before the advent of human civilization. Others are not nearly so ancient and must have occurred after the construction of Tiahuanaco.[10] The question, therefore, is this: *when* was Tiahuanaco built?
>
> The orthodox historical view is that the ruins cannot possibly be dated much earlier than AD 500.[11] An alternative chronology also exists, however, which, although not accepted by the majority of scholars, seems more in tune with the scale of the geological upheavals that have occurred in this region. Based on the mathematical/astronomical calculations of Professor Arthur Posnansky of the University of La Paz, and of Professor Rolf Muller (who also challenged the official dating of Machu Picchu), it pushes the main phase of construction at Tiahuanaco back to *15,000 BC.* This chronology also indicates that the city later suffered immense destruction in a phenomenal natural catastrophe around the eleventh millennium BC, and thereafter rapidly became separated from the lakeshore.[12]

We shall be reviewing Posnansky's and Muller's findings in Chapter Eleven, findings which suggest that the great Andean city of Tiahuanaco flourished during the last Ice Age in the deep, dark, moonless midnight of prehistory.

---

[10] *Earth In Upheaval,* p. 76: 'The conservative view among evolutionists and geologists is that mountain-making is a slow process, observable in minute changes, and that because it is a continuous process there never could have been spontaneous upliftings on a large scale. *In the case of Tiahuanaco, however, the change in altitude apparently occurred after the city was built,* and this could not have been the result of a slow process ...'

[11] See, for example, Ian Cameron, *Kingdom of the Sun God: A History of the Andes and Their People,* Guild Publishing, London, 1990, pp. 48-9.

[12] *Tiahuanacu* II, p. 91 and I, p. 39.

Chapter 9

Once and Future King

During my travels in the Andes I had several times re-read a curious variant of the mainstream tradition of Viracocha. In this variant, which was from the area around Lake Titicaca known as the Collao, the deity civilizing-hero had been named Thunupa:

> Thunupa appeared on the Altiplano in ancient times, coming from the north with five disciples. A white man of august presence, blue-eyed, and bearded, he was sober, puritanical and preached against drunkenness, polygamy and war.[1]

After travelling great distances through the Andes, where he created a peaceful kingdom and taught men all the arts of civilization,[2] Thunupa was struck down and grievously wounded by a group of jealous conspirators:

> They put his blessed body in a boat of totora rush and set it adrift on Lake Titicaca. There ... he sailed away with such speed that those who had tried so cruelly to kill him were left behind in terror and astonishment—for this lake has no current ... The boat came to the shore at Cochamarca, where today is the river Desguardero. Indian tradition asserts that the boat struck the land with such force it created the river Desguardero, which before then did not exist. And on the water so released the holy body was carried many leagues away to the sea coast at Africa ...[3]

Boats, water and salvation

There are curious parallels here to the story of Osiris, the ancient Egyptian high god of death and resurrection. The fullest account of the original myth defining this mysterious figure is given by Plutarch[4] and says that, after bringing the gifts of civilization to his people, teaching them all manner of useful skills, abolishing cannibalism and human sacrifice, and providing them with their first legal code, Osiris left Egypt and travelled about the world to spread the benefits of civilization to other nations as well. He never forced the barbarians he encountered to accept his laws, preferring instead to argue with them and to appeal to their reason. It is also recorded that he passed on his teachings to them by means of hymns and songs accompanied by musical instruments.

---

[1] *South American Mythology,* p. 87.

[2] Ibid., p. 44.

[3] Antonio de la Calancha, *Cronica Moralizada del Orden de San Augustin en el Peru,* 1638, in *South American Mythology,* p. 87.

[4] Good summaries of the Plutarch account are given in M. V. Seton-Williams, *Egyptian Legends and Stories,* Rubicon Press, London, 1990, pp. 24-9; and in E. A. Wallis Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* Oxford University Press, 1934, pp. 178-83.

While he was gone, however, he was plotted against by seventy-two members of his court, led by his brother-in-law Set. On his return the conspirators invited him to a banquet where a splendid coffer of wood and gold was offered as a prize to any guest who could fit into it exactly. Osiris did not know that the coffer had been constructed precisely to his body measurements. As a result, when the assembled guests tried one by one to get into it they failed. Osiris lay down comfortably inside. Before he had time to get out the conspirators rushed forward, nailed the lid tightly closed and sealed even the cracks with molten lead so that there would be no air. The coffer was then thrown into the Nile. It had been intended that it should sink, but it floated rapidly away, drifting for a considerable distance until it reached the sea coast.

At this point the goddess Isis, wife of Osiris, intervened. Using all the great magic for which she was renowned, she found the coffer and concealed it in a secret place. However, her evil brother Set, out hunting in the marshes, discovered the coffer, opened it and, in a mad fury, cut the royal corpse into fourteen pieces which he scattered throughout the land.

Once more Isis set off to save her husband. She made a small boat of papyrus reeds, coated with pitch, and embarked on the Nile in search of the remains. When she had found them she worked powerful spells to reunite the dismembered parts of the body so that it resumed its old form. Thereafter, in an intact and perfect state, Osiris went through a process of stellar rebirth to become god of the dead and king of the underworld—from which place, legend had it, he occasionally returned to earth in the guise of a mortal man.[5]

Although there are huge differences between the traditions it is bizarre that Osiris in Egypt and Thunupa-Viracocha in South America should have had all of the following points in common:

- both were great civilizers;
- both were conspired against;
- both were struck down;
- both were sealed inside a container or vessel of some kind;
- both were then cast into water;
- both drifted away on a river;
- both eventually reached the sea.

Are such parallels to be dismissed as coincidences? or could there be some underlying connection?

---

[5] *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* p. 180.

Reed boats of Suriqui

The air was Alpine cold and I was sitting on the front of a motor launch doing about twenty knots across the icy waters of Lake Titicaca. The sky above was clear blue, reflecting aquamarine and turquoise tints inshore, and the vast body of the lake, glinting in copper and silver tones, seemed to stretch away for ever ...

The passages in the legends that spoke of vessels made of reeds needed to be followed up because I knew that 'boats of totora rush' were a traditional form of transport on this lake. However, the ancient skills required to build craft of this type had atrophied in recent years and we were now headed towards Suriqui, the one place where they were still properly made.

On Suriqui Island, in a small village close to the lakeshore, I found two elderly Indians making a boat from bundled totora rushes. The elegant craft, which appeared to be nearly complete, was approximately fifteen feet long. It was wide amidships, but narrow at either end with a high curving prow and stern.

I sat down for a while to watch. The more senior of the two builders, who wore a brown felt hat over a curious peaked woollen cap, repeatedly braced his bare left foot against the side of the vessel to give additional leverage as he pulled and tightened the cords that held the bundles of reeds in place. From time to time I noticed that he rubbed a length of cord against his own perspiring brow—thus moistening it to increase its adhesion.

The boat, surrounded by chickens and occasionally investigated by a shy, browsing alpaca, stood amid a litter of discarded rushes in the backyard of a ramshackle farmhouse. It was one of several I was able to study over the next few hours and, though the setting was unmistakably Andean, I found myself repeatedly overtaken by a sense of *déjà vu* from another place and another time. The reason was that the totora vessels of Suriqui were virtually identical, both in the method of construction and in finished appearance, to the beautiful craft fashioned from papyrus reeds in which the Pharaohs had sailed the Nile thousands of years previously. In my travels in Egypt I had examined the images of many such vessels painted on the walls of ancient tombs. It sent a tingle down my spine to see them now so colourfully brought to life on an obscure island on Lake Titicaca—even though my research had partially prepared me for this coincidence. I knew that no satisfactory explanation had ever been given for how such close and richly detailed similarities of boat design could occur in two such widely separated places. Nevertheless, in the words of one authority in ancient navigation who had addressed himself to this conundrum:

> Here was the same compact shape, peaked and raised at both ends with rope lashings running from the deck right round the bottom of the boat all in one piece

> ... Each straw was placed with maximum precision to achieve perfect symmetry and streamlined elegance, while the bundles were so tightly lashed that they looked like ... gilded logs bent into a clog-shaped peak fore and aft.[6]

The reed boats of the ancient Nile, and the reed boats of Lake Titicaca (the original design of which, local Indians insisted, had been given to them by 'the Viracocha people'[7]), had other points in common. Both, for example, were equipped with sails mounted on peculiar two-legged straddled masts.[8] Both had also been used for the long-distance transport of exceptionally heavy building materials: obelisks and gargantuan blocks of stone bound for the temples at Giza and Luxor and Abydos on the one hand and for the mysterious edifices of Tiahuanaco on the other.

In those far-off days, before Lake Titicaca became more than one hundred feet shallower, Tiahuanaco had stood at the water's edge overlooking a vista of awesome and sacred beauty. Now the great port, capital city of Viracocha himself, lay lost amid eroded hills and empty windswept plains.

Road to Tiahuanaco ...

After returning from Suriqui to the mainland we drove our hired jeep across those plains, raising a cloud of dust. Our route took us through the towns of Puccarani and Laha, populated by stolid Aymara Indians who walked slowly in the narrow cobbled streets and sat placidly in the little sunlit plazas.

Were these people the descendants of the builders of Tiahuanaco, as the scholars insisted? Or were the legends right? Had the ancient city been the work of foreigners with godlike powers who had settled here, long ages ago?

---

[6] Thor Heyerdahl, *The Ra Expeditions,* Book Club Associates, London, 1972, pp. 43, 295.

[7] Ibid., p. 43.

[8] Ibid., p. 295.

Chapter 10

The City at the Gate of the Sun

The early Spanish travellers who visited the ruined Bolivian city of Tiahuanaco at around the time of the conquest were impressed by the sheer size of its buildings and by the atmosphere of mystery that clung to them. ‘I asked the natives whether these edifices were built in the time of the Inca,’ wrote the chronicler Pedro Cieza de Leon, ‘They laughed at the question, affirming that they were made long before the Inca reign and ... that they had heard from their forebears that everything to be seen there appeared suddenly in the course of a single night ...’[1] Meanwhile another Spanish visitor of the same period recorded a tradition which said that the stones had been lifted miraculously off the ground, ‘They were carried through the air to the sound of a trumpet.’[2]

Not long after the conquest a detailed description of the city was written by the historian Garcilaso de la Vega. No looting for treasure or for building materials had yet taken place and, though ravaged by the tooth of time, the site was still magnificent enough to take his breath away:

> We must now say something about the large and almost incredible buildings of Tiahuanaco. There is an artificial hill, of great height, built on stone foundations so that the earth will not slide. There are gigantic figures carved in stone ... these are much worn which shows their great antiquity. There are walls, the stones of which are so enormous it is difficult to imagine what human force could have put them in place. And there are the remains of strange buildings, the most remarkable being stone portals, hewn out of solid rock; these stand on bases anything up to 30 feet long, 15 feet wide and 6 feet thick, base and portal being all of one piece ... How, and with the use of what tools or implements, massive works of such size could be achieved are questions which we are unable to answer ... Nor can it be imagined how such enormous stones could have been brought here ...[3]

---

[1] Pedro Cieza de Leon, *Chronicle of Peru,* Hakluyt Society, London, 1864 and 1883, Part I, Chapter 87.

[2] *Indians of the Andes: Aymaras and Quechuas,* p. 64. See also *Feats and Wisdom of the Ancients,* Time-Life Books, Alexandria, Virginia, 1990, p. 55.

[3] *Royal Commentaries of the Incas,* Book Three, Chapter one. See, for example, version published by Orion Press, New York, 1961 (translated by Maria Jolas from the critical annotated French edition of Alain Gheerbrant), pp. 49-50.

Kalasasaya
Former shoreline of Lake Titicaca
Gateway of the Sun
Subterranean Temple
Akapana Pyramid
Puma Pumku

Tiahuanaco.

That was in the sixteenth century. More than 400 years later, at the end of the twentieth century, I shared Garcilaso's puzzlement. Scattered around Tiahuanaco, in defiance of the looters who had robbed the site of so much in recent years, were monoliths so big and cumbersome yet so well cut that they almost seemed to be the work of super-beings.

Sunken temple

Like a disciple at the feet of his master, I sat on the floor of the sunken temple and looked up at the enigmatic face which all the scholars of Tiahuanaco believed was intended to represent Viracocha. Untold centuries ago, unknown hands had carved this likeness into a tall pillar of red rock. Though now much eroded, it was the likeness of a man at peace with himself. It was the likeness of a man of power ...

He had a high forehead, and large, round eyes. His nose was straight, narrow at the bridge but flaring towards the nostrils. His lips were full. His distinguishing feature, however, was his stylish and imposing beard, which had the effect of making his face broader at the jaws than at the temples. Looking more closely, I could see that the sculptor had portrayed a man whose skin was shaved all around his lips with the result that his moustache began high on his cheeks, roughly parallel with the end of his nose. From there it curved extravagantly down beside the corners of his mouth, forming an exaggerated goatee at the chin, and then followed his jawline back to his ears.

Above and below the ears, on the side of the head, were carved odd representations of animals. Or perhaps it would be better to describe these carvings as representations of *odd* animals, because they looked like big, clumsy, prehistoric mammals with fat tails and club feet.

There were other points of interest. For example, the stone figure of Viracocha had been sculpted with the hands and arms folded, one below the other, over the front of a long, flowing robe. On each side of this robe appeared the sinuous form of a snake coiling upwards from ground to shoulder level. And as I looked at this beautiful design (the original of which had perhaps been embroidered on rich cloth) the picture that came into my mind was of Viracocha as a wizard or a sorcerer, a bearded, Merlin-like figure dressed in weird and wonderful clothes, calling down fire from heaven.

The 'temple' in which the Viracocha pillar stood was open to the sky and consisted of a large, rectangular pit, like a swimming pool, dug out six feet below ground level. Its floor, about 40 feet long by 30 feet wide, was composed of hard, flat gravel. Its strong vertical walls were formed from precisely dressed ashlar blocks of varying sizes laid closely against one another without mortar in the joints and interspersed with taller, rough-hewn stelae. A set of steps was let into the southern wall and it was down these I had come when I had entered the structure.

I walked several times around the figure of Viracocha, resting my fingers on the sun-warmed stone pillar, trying to guess its purpose. It was perhaps seven feet tall and it faced south, with its back to the old shoreline of Lake Titicaca (originally less than six hundred feet away).[4] Ranged out behind this central obelisk, furthermore, there were two others, of smaller stature, possibly intended to represent Viracocha's legendary companions. All three figures, being severely, functionally vertical, cast clean-edged shadows as I gazed at them, for the sun was past its zenith.

I sat down on the ground again and looked slowly all around the temple. Viracocha dominated it, like the conductor of an orchestra, and yet its most striking feature undoubtedly lay elsewhere: lining the walls, at various points and heights, were dozens and dozens of human heads sculpted in stone. These were complete heads, protruding three dimensionally out of the walls. There were several different (and contradictory) scholarly opinions as to their function.

Pyramid

From the floor of the sunken temple, looking west, I could see an immense wall into which was set an impressive geometrical gateway made of large stone slabs. Silhouetted in this gateway by the afternoon sun was the figure of a giant. The wall, I knew, enclosed a parade-ground-sized area called the Kalasasaya (a word in the local Aymara language meaning simply ‘Place of the Upright Standing Stones’[5]). And the giant was one of the huge time-worn pieces of sculpture referred to by Garcilaso de la Vega.

---

[4] *Bolivia,* p. 156 (map).

I was eager to take a look at it, but for the moment my attention was diverted southwards towards an artificial hill, 50 feet high, which lay almost directly ahead of me as I climbed the steps out of the sunken temple. The hill, which had also been mentioned by Garcilaso, was known as the Akapana Pyramid. Like the pyramids at Giza in Egypt, it was oriented with surprising precision towards the cardinal points. Unlike those pyramids its ground-plan was somewhat irregular. Nonetheless, it measured roughly 690 feet on each side which meant that it was a hulking piece of architecture and the dominant edifice of Tiahuanaco.

I walked towards it now, and spent some time strolling around it and clambering over it. Originally it had been a clean-sided step-pyramid of earth faced with large andesite blocks. In the centuries since the conquest, however, it had been used as a quarry by builders from as far away as La Paz, with the result that only about ten per cent of its superb facing blocks now remained.

What clues, what evidence, had those nameless thieves carried off with them? As I climbed up the broken sides and around the deep grassy troughs in the top of the Akapana, I realized that the true function of the pyramid was probably never going to be understood. All that was certain was that it had not been merely decorative or ceremonial. On the contrary, it seemed almost as though it might have functioned as some kind of arcane ‘device’ or machine. Deep within its bowels, archaeologists had discovered a complex network of zig-zagging stone channels, lined with fine ashlars. These had been meticulously angled and jointed (to a tolerance of one-fiftieth of an inch), and had served to sluice water down from a large reservoir at the top of the structure, through a series of descending levels, to a moat that encircled the entire site, washing against the pyramid’s base on its southern side.[6]

So much care and attention had been lavished on all this plumbing, so many man-hours of highly skilled and patient labour, that the Akapana made no sense unless it had been endowed with a significant purpose. A number of archaeologists, I knew, had speculated that this purpose might have been connected with a rain or river cult involving a primitive veneration of the powers and attributes of fast-flowing water.

One sinister suggestion, which implied that the unknown ‘technology’ of the pyramid might have had a lethal purpose, was derived from the meaning of the words *Hake* and *Apana* in the ancient Aymara language still spoken hereabouts: ‘*Hake* means “people” or “men”; *Apana* means “to perish” (probably by water). Thus *Akapana* is a place where people perish ...’[7]

---

[5] H. S. Bellamy and P. Allan, *The Calendar of Tiahuanaco: The Measuring System of the Oldest Civilization,* Faber & Faber, London, 1956, p. 16.

[6] For a detailed discussion of the hydraulic system of the Akapana see *Tiahuanacu:* II, pp. 69-79.

Another commentator, however, after making a careful assessment of all the characteristics of the hydraulic system, proposed a different solution, namely that the sluices had most probably been part of ‘a processing technique—the use of flowing water for washing ores, perhaps?’[8]

Gateway of the Sun

Leaving the western side of the enigmatic pyramid, I made my way towards the south-west corner of the enclosure known as the Kalassaya. I could now see why it had been called the Place of the Upright Standing Stones for this was precisely what it was. At regular intervals in a wall composed of bulky trapezoidal blocks, huge dagger-like monoliths more than twelve feet high had been sunk hilt-first into the red earth of the Altiplano. The effect was of a giant stockade, almost 500 feet square, rising about twice as far above the ground as the sunken temple had been interred beneath it.

Had the Kalasasaya been a fortress then? Apparently not. Scholars now generally accept that it functioned as a sophisticated celestial observatory. Rather than keeping enemies at bay, its purpose had been to fix the equinoxes and the solstices and to predict, with mathematical precision, the various seasons of the year. Certain structures within its walls, (and, indeed, the walls themselves), appeared to have been lined up to particular star groups and designed to facilitate measurement of the amplitude of the sun in summer, winter, autumn and spring.[9] In addition, the famous ‘Gateway of the Sun’, which stood in the north-west corner of the enclosure, was not only a world-class work of art but was thought by those who had studied it to be a complex and accurate calendar carved in stone:

> The more one gets acquainted with the sculpture the greater becomes one’s conviction that the peculiar lay-out and pictorialism of this Calendar cannot possibly have been the result merely of the ultimately unfathomable whim of an *artist,* but that its glyphs, deeply senseful, constitute the eloquent record of the observations and calculations of a *scientist* ... The Calendar could not have been drawn up and laid out in any other way than this.[10]

My background research had made me especially curious about the Gateway of the Sun and, indeed, about the Kalasasaya as a whole. This was so because certain astronomical and solar alignments which we review in the next chapter had made it possible to calculate the approximate period when the Kalasasaya must originally have been laid out. These alignments suggested the controversial date of 15,000 BC—about seventeen thousand years ago.

---

[7] Ibid., I, p. 78.

[8] *The Lost Realms,* p. 215.

[9] *Tiahuanacu,* II, pp. 44-105.

[10] *The Calendar of Tiahuanaco,* pp. 17-18.

Chapter 11

Intimations of Antiquity

In his voluminous work *Tiahuanacu: the Cradle of American Man,* the late Professor Arthur Posnansky (a formidable German-Bolivian scholar whose investigations at the ruins lasted for almost fifty years) explains the archaeo-astronomical calculations which led to his controversial re-dating of Tiahuanaco. These, he says, were based 'solely and exclusively on the difference in the obliquity of the ecliptic of the period in which the Kalasasaya was built and that which it is today'.[1]

What exactly is 'the obliquity of the ecliptic', and why does it make Tiahuanaco 17,000 years old?

According to the dictionary definition it is 'the angle between the plane of the earth's orbit and that of the celestial equator, equal to approximately 23° 27' at present'.[2]

To clarify this obscure astronomical notion, it helps to picture the earth as a ship, sailing on the vast ocean of the heavens. Like all such vessels (be they planets or schooners), it *rolls* slightly with the swell that flows beneath it. Picture yourself on board that ship as it rolls, standing on the deck, gazing out to sea. You rise up on the crest of a wave and your visible horizon increases; you fall back into a trough and it decreases. The process is regular, mathematical, like the tick-tock of a great metronome: a constant, almost imperceptible, nodding, perpetually changing the angle between yourself and the horizon.

Now picture the earth again. Floating in space, as every schoolchild knows, the axis of daily rotation of our beautiful blue planet lies slightly tilted away from the vertical in its orbit around the sun. From this it follows that the terrestrial equator, and hence the 'celestial equator' (which is merely an imaginary extension of the earth's equator into the celestial sphere) must also lie at an angle to the orbital plane. That angle, at any one time, *is* the obliquity of the ecliptic. But because the earth is a ship that rolls, its obliquity *changes* in a cyclical manner over very long periods. During each cycle of 41,000 years the obliquity varies, with the precision and predictability of a Swiss chronograph, between 22.1° and

---

[1] *Tiahuanacu,* II, p. 89.

[2] *Collins English Dictionary,* London, 1982, p. 1015. In addition, Dr John Mason of the British Astronomical Association defined obliquity of the ecliptic in a telephone interview on 7 October 1993: 'The earth spins about an axis which goes through its centre and its north and south poles. This axis is inclined to the plane of the earth's orbit around the sun. This tilt is called the obliquity of the ecliptic. The current value for the obliquity of the ecliptic is 23.44 degrees.'

24.5˚.[3] The sequence in which one angle will follow another, as well as the sequence of all previous angles (at any period of history) can be calculated by means of a few straightforward equations. These have been expressed as a curve on a graph (originally plotted out in Paris in 1911 by the International Conference of Ephemerids) and from this graph it is possible to match angles and precise historical dates with confidence and accuracy.

Posnansky was able to date the Kalasasaya because the obliquity cycle gradually alters the azimuth position of sunrise and sunset from century to century.[4] By establishing the solar alignments of certain key structures that now looked 'out of true', he convincingly demonstrated that the obliquity of the ecliptic at the time of the building of the Kalasasaya had been 23˚ 8' 48". When that angle was plotted on the graph drawn up by the International Conference of Ephemerids it was found to correspond to a date of 15,000 BC.[5]

Of course, not a single orthodox historian or archaeologist was prepared to accept such an early origin for Tiahuanaco preferring, as noted in Chapter Eight, to agree on the safe estimate of AD 500. During the years 1927-30, however, several scientists from other disciplines checked carefully Posnansky's 'astronomic-archaeological investigations'. These scientists, members of a high-powered team which also studied many other archaeological sites in the Andes, were Dr Hans Ludendorff (then director of the Astronomical Observatory of Potsdam), Dr Friedrich Becker of the Specula Vaticanica, and two other astronomers: Professor Dr Arnold Kohlschutter of the University of Bonn and Dr Rolf Muller of the Astrophysical Institute of Potsdam.[6]

At the end of their three years of work the scientists concluded that Posnansky was basically right. They didn't concern themselves with the implications of their findings for the prevailing paradigm of history; they simply stated the observable facts about the astronomical alignments of various structures at Tiahuanaco. Of these, the most important by far was that the Kalasasaya had been laid out to conform with observations of the heavens made a very long time ago—much, much further back than AD 500. Posnansky's figure of 15,000 BC was pronounced to be well within the bounds of possibility.[7]

If Tiahuanaco had indeed flourished so long before the dawn of history, what sort of people had built it, and for what purpose?

---

[3] J. D. Hays, John Imbrie, N. J. Shackleton, 'Variations in the Earth's Orbit: Pacemaker of the Ice Ages', in *Science,* vol. 194, No. 4270, 10 December 1976, p. 1125.

[4] Anthony F. Aveni, *Skywatchers of Ancient Mexico,* University of Texas Press, lago, p. 103.

[5] *Tiahuanacu,* II, p. 90-1.

[6] *Tiahuanacu,* II, p. 47.

[7] Ibid., p. 91.

Fish-garbed figures

There were two massive pieces of statuary inside the Kalasasaya. One, a figure nicknamed *El Fraile* (The Friar) stood in the south-west corner; the other, towards the centre of the eastern end of the enclosure, was the giant that I had observed from the sunken temple.

Carved in red sandstone, worn and ancient beyond reckoning, El Fraile stood about six feet high, and portrayed a humanoid, androgenous being with massive eyes and lips. In its right hand it clutched something resembling a knife with a wavy blade like an Indonesian kris. In its left hand was an object like a hinged and case-bound book. From the top of this ‘book’, however, protruded a device which had been inserted into it as though into a sheath.

From the waist down the figure appeared to be clad in a garment of fish scales, and, as though to confirm this perception, the sculptor had formed the individual scales out of rows and rows of small, highly-stylized fish-heads. This sign had been persuasively interpreted by Posnansky as meaning fish in general.[8] It seemed, therefore, that El Fraile was a portrayal of an imaginary or symbolic ‘fish man’. The figure was also equipped with a belt sculpted with the images of several large crustaceans, so this notion seemed all the more probable. What had been intended?

I had learned of one local tradition I thought might shed light on the matter. It was very ancient and spoke of ‘gods of the lake, with fish tails, called Chullua and Umantua’.[9] In this, and in the fish-garbed figures, it seemed that there was a curious out-of-place echo of Mesopotamian myths, which spoke strangely, and at length, about amphibious beings, ‘endowed with reason’ who had visited the land of Sumer in remote prehistory. The leader of these beings was named Oannes (or *Uan*).[10] According to the Chaldean scribe, Berosus:

> The whole body of [Oannes] was like that of a fish; and had under a fish’s head another head, and also feet below, similar to those of a man, subjoined to the fish’s tail. His voice too, and language, was articulate and human; and a representation of him is preserved even to this day ... When the sun set, it was the custom of this Being to plunge again into the sea, and abide all night in the deep; for he was amphibious.[11]

According to the traditions reported by Berosus, Oannes was, above all, a civilizer:

> In the day-time he used to converse with men; but took no food at that season;

---

[8] Ibid., I, p. 119.

[9] Ibid., II, p. 183.

[10] *Myths from Mesopotamia,* (trans, and ed. Stephanie Dalley), Oxford University Press, 1990, p. 326.

[11] Fragments of Berossus, from Alexander Polyhistor, reprinted as Appendix 2 in Robert K. G. Temple, *The Sirius Mystery,* Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont, 1987, pp. 250-1.

> and he gave them an insight into letters and sciences, and every kind of art. He taught them to construct houses, to found temples, to compile laws, and explained to them the principles of geometrical knowledge. He made them distinguish the seeds of the earth, and showed them how to collect fruits; in short, he instructed them in every thing which could tend to soften manners and to humanise mankind. From that time, so universal were his instructions, nothing has been added materially by way of improvement ...[12]

Surviving images of the Oannes creatures I had seen on Babylonian and Assyrian reliefs clearly portrayed *fish-garbed men.* Fish-scales formed the dominant motif on their garments, just as they did on those worn by El Fraile. Another similarity was that the Babylonian figures held unidentified objects in both their hands. If my memory served me right (and I later confirmed that it did) these objects were by no means identical to those carried by El Fraile. They were, however, similar enough to be worthy of note.[13]

The other great 'idol' of the Kalasasaya was positioned towards the eastern end of the platform, facing the main gateway, and was an imposing monolith of grey andesite, hugely thick and standing about nine feet tall. Its broad head rose straight up out of its hulking shoulders and its slab-like face stared expressionlessly into the distance. It was wearing a crown, or head-band of some kind, and its hair was braided into orderly rows of long vertical ringlets which were most clearly visible at the back.

The figure was also intricately carved and decorated across much of its surface almost as though it were tattooed. Like El Fraile, it was clad below the waist in a garment composed offish-scales and fish symbols. And, also like El Fraile, it held two unidentifiable objects in its hands. This time the left-hand object looked more like a sheath than a case-bound book, and from it protruded a forked handle. The right-hand object was roughly cylindrical, narrow in the centre where it was held, wider at the shoulders and at the base, and then narrowing again towards the top. It appeared to have several different sections, or parts, fitted over and into one another, but it was impossible to guess what it might represent.

---

[12] Ibid.

[13] Jeremy Black and Anthony Green, *Gods, Demons and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia,* British Museum Press, 1992, pp. 46, 82-3.

Assyrian relief of fish-garbed figure.

Images of extinct species

Leaving the fish-garbed figures, I came at last to the Gateway of the Sun, located in the north-west corner of the Kalasasaya.

It proved to be a freestanding monolith of grey-green andesite about 12½ feet wide, 10 feet high and 18 inches thick, weighing an estimated 10 tons.[14] Perhaps best envisaged as a sort of Arc de Triomphe, though on a much smaller scale, it looked in this setting like a door connecting two invisible dimensions—a door between nowhere and nothing. The stonework was of exceptionally high quality and authorities agreed that it was ‘one of the archaeological wonders of the Americas’.[15] Its most enigmatic feature was the so-called ‘calendar frieze’ carved into its eastern façade along the top of the portal.

---

[14] Figures and measurements from *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* p. 92.

At its centre, in an elevated position, this frieze was dominated by what scholars took to be another representation of Viracocha,[16] but this time in his more terrifying aspect as the god-king who could call down fire from heaven. His gentle, fatherly side was still expressed: tears of compassion were running down his cheeks. But his face was set stern and hard, his tiara was regal and imposing, and in either hand he grasped a thunderbolt.[17] In the interpretation given by Joseph Campbell, one of the twentieth century’s best-known students of myth, ‘The meaning is that the grace that pours into the universe through the sun door is the same as the energy of the bolt that annihilates and is itself indestructible ...’[18]

I turned my head to right and left, slowly studying the remainder of the frieze. It was a beautifully balanced piece of sculpture with three rows of eight figures, twenty-four in all, lined up on either side of the elevated central image. Many attempts, none of them particularly convincing, have been made to explain the assumed calendrical function of these figures.[19] All that could really be said for sure was that they had a peculiar, bloodless, cartoon-like quality, and that there was something coldly mathematical, almost machinelike, about the way they seemed to march in regimented lines towards Viracocha. Some apparently wore bird masks, others had sharply pointed noses, and each had in his hand an implement of the type the high god was himself carrying.

The base of the frieze was filled with a design known as the ‘Meander’—a geometrical series of step-pyramid forms set in a continuous line, and arranged alternately upside down and right side up, which was also thought to have had a calendrical function. On the third column from the right-hand side (and, more faintly, on the third column from the left-hand side too) I could make out a clear carving of an elephant’s head, ears, tusks and trunk. This was unexpected since there are no elephants anywhere in the New World. There had been, however, in prehistoric times, as I was able to confirm much later. Particularly numerous in the southern Andes, until their sudden extinction around 10,000 BC,[20] had been the members of a species called *Cuvieronius,* an elephant-like proboscid complete with tusks and a trunk, uncannily similar in appearance to the ‘elephants’ of the Gateway of the Sun.[21]

---

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid.

[17] See Joseph Campbell, *The Hero with a Thousand Faces,* Paladin Books, London, 1988, p. 145.

[18] Ibid., p. 146.

[19] The calendrical function of the Gateway of the Sun is fully described and analysed by Posnansky in *Tiahuanacu: The Cradle of American Man,* volumes I-IV.

[20] *Quaternary Extinctions: A Prehistoric Revolution,* Paul S. Martin, Richard G. Klein, eds. The University of Arizona Press, 1984, p. 85.

I stepped forward a few paces to take a closer look at these elephants. Each turned out to be composed of the heads of two crested condors, placed throat to throat (the crests constituting the ‘ears’ and the upper part of the necks the ‘tusks’). The creatures thus formed still looked like elephants to me, perhaps because a characteristic visual trick the sculptors of Tiahuanaco had employed again and again in their subtle and otherworldly art had been to use one thing to depict another. Thus an apparently human ear on an apparently human face might turn out to be a bird’s wing. Likewise an ornate crown might be composed of alternate fishes’ and condors’ heads, an eyebrow a bird’s neck and head, the toe of a slipper an animal’s head, and so on. Members of the elephant family formed out of condors’ heads, therefore, need not necessarily be optical illusions; on the contrary, such inventive composites would be perfectly in keeping with the overall artistic character of the frieze.

Among the riot of stylized animal figures carved into the Gateway of the Sun were a number of other extinct species as well. I knew from my research that one of these had been convincingly identified by several observers as Toxodon[22]—a three-toed amphibious mammal about nine feet long and five feet high at the shoulder, resembling a short, stubby cross between a rhino and a hippo.[23] Like *Cuvieronius,* Toxodon had flourished in South America in the late Pliocene (1.6 million years ago) and had died out at the end of the Pleistocene, about 12,000 years ago.[24]

---

[21] Ibid.

[22] See *The Calendar of Tiahuanaco,* p. 47. Posnansky's work is also replete with references to Toxodon.

[23] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 11:878.

[24] Ibid., 9:516. See also *Quaternary Extinctions,* pp. 64-5.

***Top left:* Detail from Tiahuanaco's Gateway of the Sun showing proboscid, tusked elephant-like figure. *Top right:* Biological reconstruction-drawing of *Cuverionius,* a South American proboscid, once common in the Tiahuanaco area but extinct since approximately 10,000 BC. *Above left:* Unidentified animal, possibly *Toxodon,* carved on the side of the Viracocha figure in the Subterranean Temple. *Above right:* Another possible representation of *Toxodon* from Tiahuanaco. The raised nostrils are indicative of a semi-aquatic animal, somewhat like a modern hippopotamus in its habits, which is what *Toxodon* is known to have been.**

Reconstruction-drawing of *Toxodon,* a South American species that became extinct in the eleventh millennium BC.

To my eye this looked like striking corroboration for the astro-archaeological evidence that dated Tiahuanaco to the end of the Pleistocene, and further undermined the orthodox historical chronology which made the city only 1500 years old, since Toxodon, presumably, could only have been modelled from life. It was therefore obviously a matter of some importance that *no fewer that forty-six Toxodon heads* had been carved into the frieze of the Gateway of the Sun.[25] Nor was this creature's ugly caricature confined only to the Gateway. On the contrary, Toxodon had been identified on numerous fragments of Tiahuanacan pottery. Even more convincingly, he had been portrayed in several pieces of sculpture which showed him in full three-dimensional glory.[26] Moreover representations of other extinct species had been found: the species included *Shelidoterium,* a diurnal quadruped, and *Macrauchenia,* an animal somewhat larger than the modern horse, with distinctive three-toed feet.[27]

---

[25] *The Calendar of Tiahuanaco,* pp. 47-8.

Such images meant that Tiahuanaco was a kind of picture-book from the past, a record of bizarre animals, now deader than the dodo, expressed in everlasting stone.

But the record-taking had come to an abrupt halt one day and darkness had descended. This, too, was recorded in stone—the Gateway of the Sun, that surpassing work of art, had never been completed. Certain unfinished aspects of the frieze made it seem probable that something sudden and dreadful had happened which had caused the sculptor, in the words of Posnansky, 'to drop his chisel for ever' at the moment when he was 'putting the final touches to his work'.[28]

---

[26] *Tiahuanacu,* III, p. 57, 133-4, and plate XCII.
[27] Ibid., I, pp. 137-9; *Quaternary Extinctions,* pp. 64-5.
[28] *Tiahuanacu,* II, p. 4.

Chapter 12

The End of the Viracochas

We saw in Chapter Ten that Tiahuanaco was originally built as a port on the shores of Lake Titicaca, when that lake was far wider *and more than 100 feet deeper* than it is today. Vast harbour constructions, piers and dykes (and even dumped cargoes of quarried stone at points beneath the old waterline), leave no doubt that this must have been the case.[1] Indeed, according to the unorthodox estimates of Professor Posnansky, Tiahuanaco had been in active use as a port as early as 15,000 BC, the date he proposed for the construction of the Kalasasaya, and had continued to serve as such for approximately another five thousand years, during which great expanse of time its position in relation to the shore of Lake Titicaca hardly changed.[2]

Throughout this epoch the principal harbour of the port city was located several hundred metres south-west of the Kalasasaya at a site now known as *Puma Punku* (literally, the Puma Gate). Here Posnansky's excavations revealed two artificially dredged docks on either side of: 'a true and magnificent pier or wharf ... where hundreds of ships could at the same time take on and unload their heavy burdens'.[3]

One of the construction blocks from which the pier had been fashioned still lay on site and weighed an estimated *440 tons*.[4] Numerous others weighed between 100 and 150 tons.[5] Furthermore, many of the biggest monoliths had clearly been joined to each other by I-shaped metal clamps. In the whole of South America, I knew, this masonry technique had been found only on Tiahuanacan structures.[6] The last time I had seen the characteristic notched depressions which proved its use had been on ruins on the island of Elephantine in the Nile in Upper Egypt.[7]

---

[1] *Tiahuanacu,* II, p. 156ff; III, p. 196.

[2] Ibid., I, p. 39: 'An extensive series of canals and hydraulic works, dry at present, but which are all in communication with the former lake bed, are just so many more proofs of the extension of the lake as far as Tiahuanacu in this period.'

[3] Ibid., II, p. 156.

[4] *Bolivia,* p. 158.

[5] *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* p. 93.

[6] Ibid.

[7] For example on the paving blocks above the Nilometer at Elepantine Island, Aswan. I am indebted to US film maker Robert Gardner for pointing this similarity out to me.

Former level of
Lake Titicaca
Tiahuanaco

12,000 years ago, when Lake Titicaca was more than 100 feet deeper than it is today, Tiahuanaco would have been an island, as shown above.

Equally thought-provoking was the appearance of the symbol of the cross on many of these ancient blocks. Recurring again and again, particularly at the northern approach to Puma Punku, this symbol always took the same form: a double crucifix with pure clean lines, perfectly balanced and harmonious, deeply recessed into the hard grey stone. Even according to orthodox historical chronology these crosses were not less than 1500 years old. In other words, they had been carved here, by a people with absolutely no knowledge of Christianity, a full millennium before the arrival of the first Spanish missionaries on the Altiplano.

Where, come to that, had the Christians obtained their crosses? Not only from the shape of the structure to which Jesus Christ was nailed, I thought, but from some much older source as well. Hadn't the Ancient Egyptians, for example, used a hieroglyph very like a cross (the *ankh,* or *crux ansata*) to symbolize life ... the breath of life ... eternal life itself?[8] Had that symbol originated in Egypt, or had it perhaps occurred elsewhere, earlier still?

With such ideas chasing one another around my head, I walked slowly around Puma Punku. The extensive perimeter, which formed a rectangle several hundred feet long, outlined a low pyramidal hill, much overgrown with tall grass. Dozens and dozens of hulking blocks lay scattered in all directions, tossed like matchsticks, Posnansky argued, in the terrible natural disaster that had overtaken Tiahuanaco during the eleventh millennium BC:

> This catastrophe was caused by seismic movements which resulted in an overflow of the waters of Lake Titicaca and in volcanic eruptions ... It is also possible that

---

[8] *The Encyclopedia of Ancient Egypt* ed. Margaret Burson), Facts on File, New York and Oxford, 1991, p. 23.

> the temporary increase in the level of the lake may have been caused in part by the breaking of the bulwarks on some of the lakes further to the north and situated at a greater altitude ... thus releasing the waters which descended toward Lake Titicaca in onrushing and unrestrainable torrents.[9]

Posnansky's evidence that a flood had been the agent of the destruction of Tiahuanaco included

> The discovery of lacustrine flora, *Paludestrina culminea,* and *Paludestrina andecola, Ancylus titicacensis, Planorbis titicacensis,* etc., mixed in the alluvia with the skeletons of human beings who perished in the cataclysm ... and the discovery of various skeletons of *Orestias,* fish of the family of the present *bogas,* in the same alluvia which contain the human remains ...[10]

In addition, fragments of human and animal skeletons had been found lying

> in chaotic disorder among wrought stones, utensils, tools and an endless variety of other things. All of this has been moved, broken and accumulated in a confused heap. Anyone who would dig a trench here two metres deep could not deny that the destructive force of water, in combination with brusque movements of the earth, must have accumulated those different kinds of bones, mixing them with pottery, jewels, tools and utensils ... Layers of alluvium cover the whole field of the ruins and lacustrine sand mixed with shells from Titicaca, decomposed feldspar and volcanic ashes have accumulated in the places surrounded by walls ...[11]

It had been a terrible catastrophe indeed that had overwhelmed Tiahuanaco. And if Posnansky was right, it took place more than 12,000 years ago. Thereafter, though the flood waters subsided, 'the culture of the Altiplano did not again attain a high point of development but fell rather into a total and definitive decadence'.[12]

Struggle and abandonment

This process was hastened by the fact that the earthquakes which had caused Lake Titicaca to engulf Tiahuanaco were only the first of many upheavals in the area. These initially resulted in the lake swelling and overflowing its banks but they soon began to have the opposite effect, slowly reducing Titicaca's depth and surface area. As the years passed, the lake continued to drain inch by inch, marooning the great city, remorselessly separating it from the waters which had previously played such a vital role in its economic life.

At the same time, there was evidence that the climate of the Tihuanaco area had become colder and much less favourable for the growing of crops than had previously been the case,[13] so much less favourable that today staples such as maize cannot ripen properly and even potatoes come out of the ground stunted.[14]

---

[9] *Tiahuanacu,* I, p. 55.

[10] Ibid., I, p. 39.

[11] Ibid., III, pp. 142-3.

[12] Ibid., I, p. 57.

[13] Ibid., I, p. 56, and II, p. 96.

Although it was difficult to piece together all the different elements of the complex chain of events that had occurred, it seemed that 'a period of calm had followed the critical moment of seismic disturbance' which had temporarily flooded Tiahuanaco.[15] Then, slowly but surely, 'the climate worsened and became inclement. Finally there ensued mass emigrations of the Andean peoples towards locations where the struggle for life would not be so arduous.'[16]

It seems that the highly civilized inhabitants of Tiahuanaco, remembered in local traditions as 'the Viracocha people', had not gone without a struggle. There was puzzling evidence from all over the Altiplano that agricultural experiments of an advanced and scientific nature had been carried out, with great ingenuity and dedication, to try to compensate for the deterioration of the climate. For example, recent research has demonstrated that astonishingly sophisticated analyses of the chemical compositions of many poisonous high-altitude plants and tubers had been undertaken by *somebody* in this region in the furthest antiquity. Such analyses, furthermore, had been coupled with the invention of detoxification techniques which had rendered these otherwise nutritious vegetables harmless and edible.[17] There was as yet 'no satisfactory explanation for the development of these detoxification processes', admitted David Brow-man, associate professor of Anthropology at Washington University.[18]

---

[14] Quoted in *Earth in Upheaval,* citing Sir Clemens Markham, pp. 75-6.

[15] *Tiahuanacu,* III, p. 147.

[16] Ibid.

[17] David L. Browman, 'New Light on Andean Tiahuanaco', in *American Scientist,* volume 69, 1981, pp. 410-12.

[18] Ibid., p. 410. According to Browman: 'Plant domestication in the Altiplano required the simultaneous development of detoxifying techniques. The majority of the plants [which were in regular use in ancient Tiahuanaco] contain significant levels of toxins in an untreated state. For example, the potato species that are most resistant to frost and that grow best at high altitudes also contain the highest levels of glycoalkaloid solanine. In addition, the potato contains an inhibitor for a wide range of digestive enzymes necessary for breaking down proteins—a particularly unfortunate trait at high altitudes where differential partial oxygen pressure already impairs the chemistry of protein breakdown ...'

The detoxification technique developed at Tiahuanaco to make these potatoes edible also had a preservative effect. Indeed, each of these two important qualities was a by-product of the other. 'Altiplano farmers', explains Browman, 'have, for several thousand years produced the freeze-dried potato, or *ch'uno,* by a process of freezing, leaching, and sun drying. The initial explanation for this process was that it produced a food product that could be stored for long periods of time ... six years or more ... But we can now suggest another rationale. Leaching and sun-drying are necessary to remove the majority of the solanine and to lower excessive nitrate levels, and the subsequent cooking of freeze-dried products destroys the inhibitors of digestive enzymes. Rather than arguing that freeze-drying was motivated only by a desire to produce a secure food base, one could hold that this technology was mandatory to make the potato available

Likewise, in the same ancient period, *somebody* as yet unidentified by scholarship went to great lengths to build raised fields on the newly exposed lands that had so recently been under the waters of the lake—a procedure which created characteristic corrugated strips of alternately high and low ground. It was not until the 1960s that the original function of these undulating patterns of earthen platforms and shallow canals was correctly worked out. Still visible today, and known as *waru waaru* by the local Indians, they proved to be part of a complex agricultural design, perfected in prehistoric times, which had the ability 'to out-perform modern farming techniques'.[19]

In recent years some of the raised fields were reconstructed by archaeologists and agronomists. These experimental plots consistently yielded three times more potatoes than even the most productive conventional plots. Likewise, during one particularly cold spell, a severe frost 'did little damage to the experimental fields'. The following year the crops on the elevated platforms survived an equally ruinous drought: 'then later rode high and dry through a flood that swamped surrounding farmlands'. Indeed this simple but effective agricultural technique, invented by a culture so ancient that no one today could even remember its name, had proved such a success in rural Bolivia that it had attracted

---

as a usable nutritive source. Both factors are clearly present.

'The other plants identified as early domesticates at the Titicaca sites have similar levels of toxins, and all require the use of various detoxification techniques to make them suitable for human consumption. *Oca* has significant amounts of oxalates; *quinoa* and *canihua* have high levels of hydrocyanic acid and the alkaloid saponin; *amaranth* is a nitrate accumulator and has high levels of oxalates; *tarwi* contains the poisonous alkaloid lupinine; beans contain varying levels of the cyanogenetic glycoside phaseolunatin; and so on ... In some cases the detoxifying procedures serendipitously result in an end-product that has excellent storage features, multiplying the beneficial effects of the technology. Where the detoxification technology does not have this added effect—for example, in the case of *quinoa, amaranth* and *tarwi*—the plants generally already have excellent natural storage characteristics. There is as yet no satisfactory explanation for the development of these detoxification processes ...' 'New Light on Andean Tiahuanaco'.

[19] At the heart of the system were 'the earthen platforms about 3 feet high, 30-300 feet long and 10-30 feet wide. These elevated earthworks are separated by canals of similar dimensions and built out of the excavated soil. Over time the platforms were periodically fertilized with organic silt and nitrogen-rich algae scooped from the bottom of the canals during the dry season. Even today ... the sediment in the old canals is much richer in nutrients than the soil of the surrounding plains.

'But the platform-canal system was not merely a way of enriching infertile ground. It also appears to have created a climate that both extended the high-altitude growing season and helped crops survive hard times. During the area's frequent periods of drought, for example, the canals provided vital moisture, while the higher level of the platforms raised plants above the worst effects of the region's frequent floods. Moreover the canal water may have acted as a kind of thermal storage battery absorbing the sun's heat during the day and radiating it back into the freezing night, to create a blanket of relatively warm air over the growing plants.' *Feats and Wisdom of the Ancients,* pp. 56-7.

the attention of governmental and international development agencies and was now under test in several other parts of the world as well.[20]

An artificial language

Another possible legacy of Tiahuanaco, and of the Viracochas, lay embedded in the language spoken by the local Aymara Indians—a language regarded by some specialists as the oldest in the world.[21]

In the 1980s Ivan Guzman de Rojas, a Bolivian computer scientist, accidentally demonstrated that Aymara might be not only very ancient but, significantly, that it might be a 'made-up' language—something deliberately and skillfully *designed.* Of particular note was the seemingly artificial character of its syntax, which was rigidly structured and unambiguous to an extent thought inconceivable in normal 'organic' speech.[22] This synthetic and highly organized structure meant that Aymara could easily be transformed into a computer algorithm to be used to translate one language into another: 'The Aymara Algorithm is used as a bridge language. The language of an original document is translated into Aymara and then into any number of other languages.'[23]

Was it just coincidence that an apparently artificial language governed by a computer-friendly syntax should be spoken today in the environs of Tiahuanaco? Or could Aymara be a legacy of the high learning that legend attributed to the Viracochas? If so, what other legacies might there be? What other incomplete fragments of an old and forgotten wisdom might be lying scattered around—fragments which had perhaps contributed to the richness and diversity of many of the cultures that had evolved in this region during the 10,000 years before the conquest? Perhaps it was the possession of fragments like these that had made possible the drawing of the Nazca lines and enabled the predecessors of the Incas to build the 'impossible' stone walls at Machu Picchu and Sacsayhuaman?

Mexico

The image I could not get out of my mind was of the Viracocha people leaving, 'walking on the waters' of the Pacific Ocean, or 'going miraculously' by sea as so many of the legends told.

---

[20] Ibid.

[21] Evan Hadingham, *Lines to the Mountain Gods,* Harrap, London, 1987, p. 34.

[22] 'Aymara is rigorous and simple—which means that its syntactical rules always apply, and can be written out concisely in the sort of algebraic shorthand that computers understand. Indeed, such is its purity that some historians think it did not just evolve, like other languages, but was actually constructed from scratch.' *Sunday Times,* London, 4 November 1984.

[23] M. Belts, 'Ancient Language may Prove Key to Translation System', *Computerworld,* vol. IX, No. 8, 25 February 1985, p. 30.

Where had these seafarers been going? What had their objective been? And why, come to think of it, had they made such dogged efforts to stay in Tiahuanaco for so long before admitting defeat and moving on? What had they been trying to achieve there that had been so important to them?

After several weeks work on the Altiplano, travelling back and forth between La Paz and Tiahuanaco, it became clear that neither the otherworldly ruins nor the libraries of the capital were going to provide me with any further answers. Indeed, in Bolivia at least, the trail seemed to have gone cold.

It was not until I reached Mexico, 2000 miles north, that I picked up its traces again.

Part III

Plumed Serpent

Central America

Chapter 13

Blood and Time at the End of the World

Chicken Itza, northern Yucatan, Mexico

Behind me, towering almost 100 feet into the air, was a perfect ziggurat, the Temple of Kukulkan. Its four stairways had 91 steps each. Taken together with the top platform, which counted as a further step, the total was 365. This gave the number of complete days in a solar year. In addition, the geometric design and orientation of the ancient structure had been calibrated with Swiss-watch precision to achieve an objective as dramatic as it was esoteric: on the spring and autumn equinoxes, regular as clockwork, triangular patterns of light and shadow combined to create the illusion of a giant serpent undulating on the northern staircase. On each occasion the illusion lasted for 3 hours and 22 minutes exactly.[1]

I walked away from the Temple of Kukulkan in an easterly direction. Ahead of me, starkly refuting the oft-repeated fallacy that the peoples of Central America had never succeeded in developing the column as an architectural feature, stood a forest of white stone columns which must at one time have supported a massive roof. The sun was beating down harshly through the translucent blue of a cloudless sky and the cool, deep shadows this area offered were alluring. I passed by and made my way to the foot of the steep steps that led up to the adjacent Temple of the Warriors.

At the top of these steps, becoming fully visible only after I had begun to ascend them, was a giant figure. This was the idol of Chacmool. It half-lay, half-sat in an oddly stiff and expectant posture, bent knees protruding upwards, thick calves drawn back to touch its thighs, ankles tucked in against its buttocks, elbows planted on the ground, hands folded across its belly encircling an empty plate, and its back set at an awkward angle as though it were just about to lever itself upright. Had it done so, I calculated, it would have stood about eight feet tall. Even reclining, coiled and tightly sprung, it seemed to overflow with a fierce and pitiless energy. Its square features were thin-lipped and implacable, as hard and indifferent as the stone from which they were carved, and its eyes gazed westwards, traditionally the direction of darkness, death and the colour black.[2]

---

[1] *Mexico,* Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1992, pp. 839.

[2] Ronald Wright, *Time Among the Maya,* Futura Publications, London, 1991, pp. 343.

Group of the thousand columns
Temple of the Warriors
Temple of Kukulkan

Chichen Itza.

Rather lugubriously, I continued to climb the steps of the Temple of the Warriors. Weighing on my mind was the unforgettable fact that the ritual of human sacrifice had been routinely practised here in pre-Colombian times. The empty plate that Chacmool held across his stomach had once served as a receptacle for freshly extracted hearts. 'If the victim's heart was to be taken out,' reported one Spanish observer in the sixteenth century,

> they conducted him with great display ... and placed him on the sacrificial stone. Four of them took hold of his arms and legs, spreading them out. Then the executioner came, with a flint knife in his hand, and with great skill made an incision between the ribs on the left side, below the nipple; then he plunged in his hand and like a ravenous tiger tore out the living heart, which he laid on the plate ...[3]

What kind of culture could have nourished and celebrated such demonic behaviour? Here, in Chichen Itza, amid ruins dating back more than 1200 years, a hybrid society had formed out of intermingled Maya and Toltec elements. This society was by no means exceptional in its addiction to cruel and barbaric ceremonies. On the contrary, *all* the great indigenous civilizations known to have flourished in Mexico had indulged in the ritualized slaughter of human beings.

Slaughterhouses

Villahermosa, Tabasco Province
I stood looking at the Altar of Infant Sacrifice. It was the creation of the

---

[3] Friar Diego de Landa, *Yucatan before and after the Conquest* (trans, with notes by William Gates), Producción Editorial Dante, Merida, Mexico, 1990, p. 71.

Olmecs, the so-called 'mother-culture' of Central America, and it was more than 3000 years old. A block of solid granite about four feet thick, its sides bore reliefs of four men wearing curious head-dresses. Each man carried a healthy, chubby, struggling infant, whose desperate fear was clearly visible. The back of the altar was undecorated; at the front another figure was portrayed, holding in his arms, as though it were an offering, the slumped body of a dead child.

The Olmecs are the earliest recognized high civilization of Ancient Mexico, and human sacrifice was well established with them. Two and a half thousand years later, at the time of the Spanish conquest, the Aztecs were the last (but by no means the least) of the peoples of this region to continue an extremely old and deeply ingrained tradition.

They did so with fanatical zeal.

It is recorded, for example, that Ahuitzotl, the eighth and most powerful emperor of the Aztec royal dynasty, 'celebrated the dedication of the temple of Huitzilopochtli in Tenochitlan by marshalling four lines of prisoners past teams of priests who worked four days to dispatch them. On this occasion as many as 80,000 were slain during a single ceremonial rite.'[4]

The Aztecs liked to dress up in the flayed skins of sacrificial victims. Bernardino de Sahagun, a Spanish missionary, attended one such ceremony soon after the conquest:

> The celebrants flayed and dismembered the captives; they then lubricated their own naked bodies with grease and slipped into the skin ... Trailing blood and grease, the gruesomely clad men ran through the city, thus terrifying those they followed ... The second-day's rite also included a cannibal feast for each warrior's family.[5]

Another mass sacrifice was witnessed by the Spanish chronicler Diego de Duran. In this instance the victims were so numerous that when the streams of blood running down the temple steps 'reached bottom and cooled they formed fat clots, enough to terrify anyone'.[6] All in all, it has been estimated that the number of sacrificial victims in the Aztec empire as a whole had risen to around 250,000 a year by the beginning of the sixteenth century.[7]

What was this manic destruction of human life for? According to the Aztecs themselves, it was done to delay the coming of the end of the world.[8]

---

[4] Joyce Milton, Robert A. Orsi and Norman Harrison, *The Feathered Serpent and the Cross: The Pre-Colombian God-Kings and the Papal States,* Cassell, London, 1980, p. 64.

[5] Reported in *Aztecs: Reign of Blood and Splendour,* Time-Life Books, Alexandria, Virginia, 1992, p. 105.

[6] Ibid., p. 103.

[7] *The Feathered Serpent and the Cross,* p. 55.

[8] Mary Miller and Karl Taube, *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1993, pp. 96.

Children of the Fifth Sun

Like the many different peoples and cultures that had preceded them in Mexico, the Aztecs believed that the universe operated in great cycles. The priests stated as a matter of simple fact that there had been four such cycles, or 'Suns', since the creation of the human race. At the time of the conquest, it was the Fifth Sun that prevailed. And it is within that same Fifth Sun, or epoch, that humankind still lives today. This account is taken from a rare collection of Aztec documents known as the *Vaticano-Latin Codex:*

> First Sun, *Matlactli Atl*: duration 4008 years. Those who lived then ate water maize called atzitzintli. In this age lived the giants ... The First Sun was destroyed by water in the sign *Matlactli Atl* (Ten Water). It was called *Apachiohualiztli* (flood, deluge), the art of sorcery of the permanent rain. Men were turned into fish. Some say that only one couple escaped, protected by an old tree living near the water. Others say that there were seven couples who hid in a cave until the flood was over and the waters had gone down. They repopulated the earth and were worshipped as gods in their nations ...
>
> Second Sun, *Ehecoatl*: duration 4010 years. Those who lived then ate wild fruit known as *acotzintli*. This Sun was destroyed by *Ehecoatl* (Wind Serpent) and men were turned into monkeys ... One man and one woman, standing on a rock, were saved from destruction ...
>
> Third Sun, *Tleyquiyahuillo*: duration 4081 years. Men, the descendants of the couple who were saved from the Second Sun, ate a fruit called *tzincoacoc*. This Third Sun was destroyed by fire ...
>
> Fourth Sun, *Tzontlilic*: duration 5026 years ... Men died of starvation after a deluge of blood and fire ...9

Another 'cultural document' of the Aztecs that has survived the ravages of the conquest is the 'Sun Stone' of Axayacatl, the sixth emperor of the royal dynasty. This huge monolith was hewn out of solid basalt in AD 1479. It weighs 24.5 tons and consists of a series of concentrically inscribed circles, each bearing intricate symbolic statements. As in the codex, these statements focus attention on the belief that the world has already passed through four epochs, or Suns. The first and most remote of these is represented by *Ocelotonatiuh,* the jaguar god: 'During that Sun lived the giants that had been created by the gods but were finally attacked and devoured by jaguars.' The Second Sun is represented by the serpent head of *Ehecoatl,* the god of the air: 'During that period the human race was destroyed by high winds and hurricanes and men were converted into monkeys.' The symbol of the Third Sun is a head of rain and celestial fire: 'In this epoch everything was destroyed by a rain of fire from the sky and the forming of lava. All the houses were burnt. Men

---

[9] From the *Vaticano-Latin Codex 3738,* cited in Adela Fernandez, *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* Panorama Editorial, Mexico City, 1992, pp. 21-2.

were converted into birds to survive the catastrophe.' The Fourth Sun is represented by the head of the water-goddess *Chalchiuhtlicue:* 'Destruction came in the form of torrential rains and floods. The mountains disappeared and men were transformed into fish.'[10]

The symbol of the Fifth Sun, our current epoch, is the face of *Tonatiuh,* the sun god himself. His tongue, fittingly depicted as an obsidian knife, juts out hungrily, signalling his need for the nourishment of human blood and hearts. His features are wrinkled to indicate his advanced age and he appears within the symbol *Ollin* which signifies Movement.[11]

Why is the Fifth Sun known as 'The Sun of Movement'? Because, 'the elders say: in it there will be a movement of the earth and from this we shall all perish.'[12]

And when will this catastrophe strike? Soon, according to the Aztec priests. They believed that the Fifth Sun was already very old and approaching the end of its cycle (hence the wrinkles on the face of Tonatiuh). Ancient meso-American traditions dated the birth of this epoch to a remote period corresponding to the fourth millennium BC of the Christian calendar.[13] The method of calculating its end, however, had been forgotten by the time of Aztecs.[14] In the absence of this essential information, human sacrifices were apparently carried out in the hope that the impending catastrophe might be postponed. Indeed, the Aztecs came to regard themselves as a chosen people; they were convinced that they had been charged with a divine mission to wage war and offer the blood of their captives to feed Tonatiuh, thereby preserving the life of the Fifth Sun.[15]

Stuart Fiedel, an authority on the prehistory of the Americas, summed up the whole issue in these words: 'The Aztecs believed that to prevent the destruction of the universe, which had already occurred four times in the past, the gods must be supplied with a steady diet of human hearts and blood.'[16] This same belief, with remarkably few variations, was shared by all the great civilizations of Central America. Unlike the Aztecs, however, some of the earlier peoples had calculated *exactly* when a great movement of the earth could be expected to bring the Fifth Sun to an end.

---

[10] Eric S. Thompson, *Maya History and Religion,* University of Oklahoma Press, 1990, p. 332. See also *Aztec Calendar: History and Symbolism,* Garcia y Valades Editores, Mexico City, 1992.

[11] Ibid.

[12] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 24.

[13] Peter Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1987, p. 286.

[14] John Bierhorst, *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* William Morrow & Co., New York, 1990, p. 134.

[15] *World Mythology,* (ed. Roy Willis, BCA, London, 1993, p. 243.

[16] Stuart J. Fiedel, *The Prehistory of the Americas,* (second edition), Cambridge University Press, 1992, pp. 312-13.

Lightbringer

No documents, only dark and menacing sculptures, have come down to us from the Olmec era. But the Mayas, justifiably regarded as the greatest ancient civilization to have arisen in the New World, left behind a wealth of calendrical records. Expressed in terms of the modern dating system, these enigmatic inscriptions convey a rather curious message: the Fifth Sun, it seems, is going to come to an end on 23 December, AD 2012.[17]

In the rational intellectual climate of the late twentieth century it is unfashionable to take doomsday prophecies seriously. The general consensus is that they are the products of superstitious minds and can safely be ignored. As I travelled around Mexico, however, I was from time to time bothered by a nagging intuition that the voices of the ancient sages might deserve a hearing after all. I mean, suppose by some crazy offchance they weren't the superstitious savages we'd always believed them to be. Suppose they knew something we didn't? Most pertinent of all, suppose that their projected date for the end of the Fifth Sun turned out to be correct? Suppose, in other words, that some truly awful geological catastrophe is already unfolding, deep in the bowels of the earth, as the wise men of the Maya predicted?

In Peru and Bolivia I had become aware of the obsessive concern with the calculation of time shown by the Incas and their predecessors. Now, in Mexico, I discovered that the Maya, who believed that they had worked out the date of the end of the world, had been possessed by the same compulsion. Indeed, for these people, just about everything boiled down to numbers, the passage of the years and the manifestations of events. The belief was that if the numbers which lay beneath the manifestations could be properly understood, it would be possible to predict successfully the timing of the events themselves.[18] I felt disinclined to ignore the obvious implications of the recurrent destructions of humanity depicted so vividly in the Central American traditions. Coming complete with giants and floods, these traditions were eerily similar to those of the far-off Andean region.

Meanwhile, however, I was keen to pursue another, related line of inquiry. This concerned the bearded white-skinned deity named Quetzalcoatl, who was believed to have sailed to Mexico from across the seas in remote antiquity. Quetzalcoatl was credited with the invention of the advanced mathematical and calendrical formulae that the Maya were later to use to calculate the date of doomsday.[19] He also bore a striking resemblance to Viracocha, the pale god of the Andes, who came to Tiahuanaco ‘in the time of darkness’ bearing the gifts of light and civilization.

---

[17] Professor Michael D. Coe, *Breaking the Maya Code,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1992, pp. 275-6. Herbert Joseph Spinden's correlation gives a slightly earlier date of 24 December, AD 2011. See *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 286.

[18] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 286.

[19] *World Mythology,* p. 240. See also *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 9:855, and Lewis Spence, *The Magic and Mysteries of Mexico,* Rider, London, 1922, pp. 49-50.

Chapter 14

People of the Serpent

After spending so long immersed in the traditions of Viracocha, the bearded god of the distant Andes, I was intrigued to discover that Quetzalcoatl, the principal deity of the ancient Mexican pantheon, was described in terms that were extremely familiar.

For example, one pre-Colombian myth collected in Mexico by the sixteenth-century Spanish chronicler Juan de Torquemada asserted that Quetzalcoatl was ‘a fair and ruddy complexioned man with a long beard’. Another spoke of him as, ‘*era Hombre blanco;* a large man, broad browed, with huge eyes, long hair, and a great, rounded beard—*la barba grande y redonda.*’[1] Another still described him as

> a mysterious person ... a white man with strong formation of body, broad forehead, large eyes, and a flowing beard. He was dressed in a long, white robe reaching to his feet. He condemned sacrifices, except of fruits and flowers, and was known as the god of peace ... When addressed on the subject of war he is reported to have stopped up his ears with his fingers.[2]

According to a particularly striking Central American tradition, this ‘wise instructor ...’

> came from across the sea in a boat that moved by itself without paddles. He was a tall, bearded white man who taught people to use fire for cooking. He also built houses and showed couples that they could live together as husband and wife; and since people often quarreled in those days, he taught them to live in peace.[3]

Viracocha’s Mexican twin

The reader will recall that Viracocha, in his journeys through the Andes, went by several different aliases. Quetzalcoatl did this too. In some parts of Central America (notably among the Quiche Maya) he was called Gucumatz. Elsewhere, at Chichen Itza for example, he was known as Kukulkan. When both these words were translated into English, they turned out to mean exactly the same thing: Plumed (or Feathered) Serpent. This, also, was the meaning of Quetzalcoatl.[4]

There were other deities, among the Maya in particular, whose identities seemed to merge closely with those of Quetzalcoatl. One was Votan, a great civilizer, who was also described as pale-skinned, bearded and wearing a long robe. Scholars could offer no translation for his name but his principal symbol, like that of Quetzalcoatl, was a serpent.[5] Another closely related figure was Itzamana, the Mayan god of healing, who was a robed and bearded individual; his symbol, too, was the rattlesnake.[6]

---

[1] Juan de Torquemada, *Monarchichia indiana,* volume I, cited in *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* pp. 37-8.

[2] *North America of Antiquity,* p. 268, cited in *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* p. 165.

[3] *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* p. 161.

[4] See Nigel Davis, *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* Penguin Books, London, 1990, p. 152; *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* pp. 141-2.

What emerged from all this, as the leading authorities agreed, was that the Mexican legends collected and passed on by Spanish chroniclers at the time of the conquest were often the confused and conflated products of extremely long oral traditions. Behind them all, however, it seemed that there must lie some solid historical reality. In the judgement of Sylvanus Griswold Morley, the doyen of Maya studies:

> The great god Kukulkan, or Feathered Serpent, was the Mayan counterpart of the Aztec Quetzalcoatl, the Mexican god of light, learning and culture. In the Maya pantheon he was regarded as having been the great organizer, the founder of cities, the former of laws and the teacher of the calendar. Indeed his attributes and life history are so human that it is not improbable that he may have been an actual historical character, some great lawgiver and organizer, the memory of whose benefactions lingered long after death, and whose personality was eventually deified.[7]

All the legends stated unambiguously that Quetzalcoatl/Kukulkan/Gucumatz/Votan/Itzamana had arrived in Central America from somewhere very far away (across the 'Eastern Sea') and that amid great sadness he had eventually sailed off again in the direction whence he had come.[8] The legends added that he had promised solemnly that he would return one day[9]—a clear echo of Viracocha it would be almost perverse to ascribe to coincidence. In addition, it will be recalled that Viracocha's departure across the waves of the Pacific Ocean had been portrayed in the Andean traditions as a miraculous event. Quetzalcoatl's departure from Mexico also had a strange feel about it: he was said to have sailed away 'on a raft of serpents'.[10]

All in all, I felt Morley was right in looking for a factual historical background behind the Mayan and Mexican myths. What the traditions seemed to indicate was that the bearded pale-skinned foreigner called Quetzalcoatl (or Kukulkan or whatever) had been not just one person but probably several people who had come from the same place and had belonged to the same distinctively non-Indian ethnic type (bearded, white-skinned, etc.). This wasn't only suggested by the existence of a

---

[5] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* pp. 98-9.

[6] Ibid, p. 100.

[7] Sylvanus Griswold Morley, *An Introduction to the Study of Maya Hieroglyphs* (introduction by Eric S. Thompson), Dover Publications Inc., New York, 1975, pp. 16-17.

[8] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* Paul Hamlyn, London, 1989, pp. 437, 439.

[9] Ibid., p. 437.

[10] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* p. 62.

'family' of obviously related[11] but slightly different gods sharing the symbol of the snake. Quetzalcoatl/Kukulkan/Itzamana was quite explicitly portrayed in many of the Mexican and Mayan accounts as having been accompanied by 'attendants' or 'assistants'.

Certain myths set out in the Ancient Mayan religious texts known as the Books of Chilam Balam, for instance, reported that 'the first inhabitants of Yucatan were the "People of the Serpent". They came from the east in boats across the water with their leader Itzamana, "Serpent of the East", a healer who could cure by laying on hands, and who revived the dead.'[12]

'Kukulkan,' stated another tradition, 'came with nineteen companions, two of whom were gods offish, two others gods of agriculture, and a god of thunder ... They stayed ten years in Yucatan. Kukulkan made wise laws and then set sail and disappeared in the direction of the rising sun ...'[13]

According to the Spanish chronicler Las Casas: 'The natives affirmed that in ancient times there came to Mexico twenty men, the chief of whom was called Kukulkan ... They wore flowing robes and sandals on their feet, they had long beards and their heads were bare ... Kukulkan instructed the people in the arts of peace, and caused various important edifices to be built ...'[14]

Meanwhile Juan de Torquemada recorded this very specific pre-conquest tradition concerning the imposing strangers who had entered Mexico with Quetzalcoatl:

> They were men of good carriage, well-dressed, in long robes of black linen, open in front, and without capes, cut low at the neck, with short sleeves that did not come to the elbow ... These followers of Quetzalcoatl were men of great knowledge and cunning artists in all kinds of fine work.[15]

Like some long-lost twin of Viracocha, the white and bearded Andean deity, Quetzalcoatl was depicted as having brought to Mexico all the skills and sciences necessary to create a civilized life, thus ushering in a golden age.[16] He was believed, for example, to have introduced the knowledge of writing to Central America, to have invented the calendar, and to have been a master builder who taught the people the secrets of masonry and architecture. He was the father of mathematics, metallurgy, and astronomy and was said to have 'measured the earth'. He also founded productive agriculture, and was reported to have discovered and introduced corn—literally the staff of life in these ancient lands. A great doctor and master of medicines, he was the patron of healers and diviners 'and disclosed to the people the mysteries of the properties of plants'. In addition, he was revered as a lawgiver, as a protector of craftsmen, and as a patron of all the arts.

---

[11] Not only obviously related but specifically related. Votan, for example, was often referred to as the grandson of Quetzalcoatl. Itzamana and Kukulkan were sometimes confused by the Indians who transmitted their legends to Spanish chroniclers shortly after the conquest. See *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* p. 100.

[12] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 347.

[13] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 439.

[14] James Bailey, *The God-Kings and the Titans,* Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1972, p. 206.

[15] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* pp. 37-8.

[16] According to the sixteenth century chronicler Bernardino de Sahagun: 'Quetzalcoatl was a great civilizing agent who entered Mexico at the head of a band of strangers. He imported the arts into the country and especially fostered agriculture. In his time maize was so large in the head that a man might not carry more than one stalk at a time and cotton grew in all colours without having to be dyed. He built spacious and elegant houses, and inculcated a type of religion which fostered peace.'

As might be expected of such a refined and cultured individual he forbade the grisly practice of human sacrifice during the period of his ascendancy in Mexico. After his departure the blood-spattered rituals were reintroduced with a vengeance. Nevertheless, even the Aztecs, the most vehement sacrificers ever to have existed in the long history of Central America, remembered 'the time of Quetzalcoatl' with a kind of nostalgia. 'He was a teacher,' recalled one legend, 'who taught that no living thing was to be harmed and that sacrifices were to be made not of human beings but of birds and butterflies.[17]

Cosmic struggle

Why did Quetzalcoatl go away? What went wrong?

Mexican legends provided answers to these questions. They said that the enlightened and benevolent rule of the Plumed Serpent had been brought to an end by Tezcatilpoca, a malevolent god whose name meant 'Smoking Mirror' and whose cult demanded human sacrifice. It seemed that a near-cosmic struggle between the forces of light and darkness had taken place in Ancient Mexico, and that the forces of darkness had triumphed ...

The supposed stage for these events, now known as Tula, was not believed to be particularly old—not much more than 1000 years anyway—but the legends surrounding it linked it to an infinitely more distant epoch. In those times, outside history, it had been known as Tollan. All the traditions agreed that it had been at Tollan that Tezcatilpoca had vanquished Quetzalcoatl and forced him to quit Mexico.

---

[17] *The God-Kings and the Titans,* p. 57.

Pyramid B
Pyramid C
Ball Court
Ball Court

Tula

Fire serpents

Tula, Hidalgo Province

I was sitting on the flat square summit of the unimaginatively named Pyramid B. The late-afternoon sun was beating down out of a clear blue sky, and I was facing south, looking around.

At the base of the pyramid, to the north and east, were murals depicting jaguars and eagles feasting on human hearts. Immediately behind me were ranged four pillars and four fearsome granite idols each nine feet tall. Ahead and, to my left lay the partially unexcavated Pyramid C, a cactus-covered mound about 40 feet high, and farther away were more mounds not yet investigated by archaeologists. To my right was a ball court. In that long, I-shaped arena, terrible gladitorial games had been staged in ancient times. Teams, or sometimes just two individuals pitted against each other, would compete for possession of a rubber ball; the losers were decapitated.

The idols on the platform behind me had a solemn and intimidating aura. I stood up to look at them more closely. Their sculptor had given them hard, implacable faces, hooked noses and hollow eyes and they seemed without sympathy or emotion. What interested me most, however, was not so much their ferocious appearance as the objects that they clutched in their hands. Archaeologists admitted that they didn't really know what these objects were but had tentatively identified them anyway. This identification had stuck and it was now received wisdom that spearthrowers called *atl-atls* were held in the right hands of the idols and 'spears or arrows and incense bags' in the left hands.[18] It didn't seem to matter that the objects did not in any way resemble *atl-atls,* spears, arrows, or incense bags.

Santha Faiia's photographs will help the reader to form his or her own impression of these peculiar objects. As I studied the objects themselves I had the distinct sense that they were meant to represent devices which had originally been made out of metal. The right-hand device, which seemed to emerge from a sheath or hand-guard, was lozenge-shaped with a curved lower edge. The left-hand device could have been an instrument or weapon of some kind.

I remembered legends which related that the gods of ancient Mexico had armed themselves with *xiuhcoatl,* 'fire serpents'.[19] These apparently emitted burning rays capable of piercing and dismembering human bodies.[20] Was it 'fire serpents' that the Tula idols were holding? What, for that matter, were fire serpents?

Whatever they were, both devices looked like pieces of technology. And both in certain ways resembled the equally mysterious objects in the hands of the idols in the Kalasasaya at Tiahuanaco.

Serpent Sanctuary

Santha and I had come to Tula/Tollan because it had been closely associated both with Quetzalcoatl and with his arch-enemy Tezcatilpoca, the Smoking Mirror.[21] Ever-young, omnipotent, omnipresent and omniscient, Tezcatilpoca was associated in the legends with night, darkness and the sacred jaguar.[22] He was 'invisible and implacable, appearing to men sometimes as a flying shadow, sometimes as a dreadful monster'.[23] Often depicted as a glaring skull, he was said to have been the owner of a mysterious object, the Smoking Mirror after which he was named, which he made use of to observe from afar the activities of men and gods. Scholars quite reasonably suppose that it must have been a primitive obsidian scrying stone: 'Obsidian had an especial sanctity for the Mexicans, as it provided the sacrificial knives employed by the priests ... Bernal Diaz [Spanish chronicler] states that they called this stone "Tezcat". From it mirrors were also manufactured as divinatory media to be used by wizards.'[24]

Representing the forces of darkness and rapacious evil, Tezcatilpoca was said in the legends to have been locked in a conflict with

---

[18] *Mexico,* pp. 194-5.

[19] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* pp. 185, 188-9.

[20] Ibid.

[21] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 437.

[22] *The Feathered Serpent and the Cross,* pp. 52-3.

[23] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 436.

[24] *The Magic and Mysteries of Mexico,* p. 51.

Quetzalcoatl that had continued over an immense span of years.[25] At certain times one seemed to be gaining the upper hand, at certain times the other. Finally the cosmic struggle came to an end when good was vanquished by evil and Quetzalcoatl driven out from Tollan.[26] Thereafter, under the influence of Tezcatilpoca's nightmarish cult, human sacrifice was reintroduced throughout Central America.

As we have seen, Quetzalcoatl was believed to have fled to the coast and to have been carried away on a raft of serpents. One legend says, 'He burned his houses, built of silver and shells, buried his treasure, and set sail on the Eastern Sea preceded by his attendants who had been changed into bright birds.'[27]

This poignant moment of departure was supposedly staged at a place called Coatzecoalcos, meaning 'Serpent Sanctuary'.[28] There, before taking his leave, Quetzalcoatl promised his followers he would return one day to overthrow the cult of Tezcatilpoca and to inaugurate an era when the gods would again 'accept sacrifices of flowers' and cease their clamour for human blood.[29]

---

[25] *World Mythology*, p. 237.

[26] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology*, p. 437.

[27] Ibid.

[28] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces*, pp. 139-40.

[29] *The Feathered Serpent and the Cross*, pp. 35, 66.

Chapter 15

Mexican Babel

We drove south-east from Tula, by-passing Mexico City on an anarchic series of fast freeways that dragged us through the creeping edge of the capital's eye-watering, lung-searing pollution. Our route then took us up over pine-covered mountains, past the snowy peak of Popocatepetl and thence along tree-lined lanes amid fields and farmsteads.

In the late afternoon we arrived at Cholula, a sleepy town with 11,000 inhabitants and a spacious main square. After turning east through the narrow streets, we crossed a railway line and pulled to a halt in the shadow of *tlahchiualtepetl,* the 'man-made mountain' we had come here to see.

Once sacred to the peaceful cult of Quetzalcoatl, but now surmounted by an ornate Catholic church, this immense edifice was ranked among the most extensive and ambitious engineering projects ever undertaken anywhere in the ancient world. Indeed, with a base area of 45 acres and a height of 210 feet, it was three times more massive than the Great Pyramid of Egypt.[1] Though its contours were now blurred by age and its sides overgrown with grass, it was still possible to recognize that it had once been an imposing ziggurat which had risen up towards the heavens in four clean-angled 'steps'. Measuring almost half a kilometre along each side at its base, it had also succeeded in preserving a dignified but violated beauty.

The past, though often dry and dusty, is rarely dumb. Sometimes it can speak with passion. It seemed to me that it did so here, bearing witness to the physical and psychological degradation visited upon the native peoples of Mexico when the Spanish *conquistador* Hernan Cortez almost casually 'beheaded a culture as a passer-by might sweep off the head of a sunflower'.[2] In Cholula, a great centre of pilgrimage with a population of around 100,000 at the time of the conquest, this decapitation of ancient traditions and ways of life required that something particularly humiliating be done to the man-made mountain of Quetzalcoatl. The solution was to smash and desecrate the temple which had once stood on the summit of the ziggurat and replace it with a church.

Cortez and his men were few, the Cholulans were many. When they marched into town, however, the Spaniards had one major advantage: bearded and pale-skinned, dressed in shining armour, they looked like the fulfillment of a prophecy—had it not always been promised that

---

[1] Figures from *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* p. 56.

[2] Ibid., p. 12.

Quetzalcoatl, the Plumed Serpent, would return 'from across the Eastern Sea' with his band of followers?[3]

Because of this expectation, the naive and trusting Cholulans permitted the *conquistadores* to climb the steps of the ziggurat and enter the great courtyard of the temple. There troupes of gaily bedecked dancing girls greeted them, singing and playing on instruments, while stewards moved back and forth with heaped platters of bread and delicate cooked meats.

One of the Spanish chroniclers, an eyewitness to the events that followed, reported that adoring townsfolk of all ranks 'unarmed, with eager and happy faces, crowded in to hear what the white men would say'. Realizing from this incredible reception that their intentions were not suspected, the Spaniards closed and guarded all the entrances, drew their weapons of steel and murdered their hosts.[4] Six thousand died in this horrible massacre[5] which matched, in its savagery, the most bloodstained rituals of the Aztecs: 'Those of Cholula were caught unawares. With neither arrows nor shields did they meet the Spaniards. Just so they were slain without warning. They were killed by pure treachery.'[6]

It was ironic, I thought, that the *conquistadores* in both Peru and Mexico should have benefited in the same way from local legends that prophesied the return of a pale, bearded god. If that god was indeed a deified human, as seemed likely, he must have been a person of high civilization and exemplary character—or more probably two different people from the same background, one working in Mexico and providing the model for Quetzalcoatl, the other in Peru being the model for Viracocha. The superficial resemblance that the Spanish bore to those earlier fair-skinned foreigners opened many doors that would otherwise certainly have been closed. Unlike their wise and benevolent predecessors, however, Pizarro in the Andes and Cortez in Central America were ravening wolves. They ate up the lands and the peoples and the cultures they had seized upon. They destroyed almost everything ...

Tears for the past

Their eyes scaled with ignorance, bigotry and greed, the Spanish erased a precious heritage of mankind when they arrived in Mexico. In so doing they deprived the future of any detailed knowledge concerning the brilliant and remarkable civilizations which once flourished in Central America.

What, for example, was the true history of the glowing 'idol' that rested in a sacred sanctuary in the Mixtec capital Achiotlan? We know of this curious object through the writings of a sixteenth-century eyewitness, Father Burgoa:

---

[3] Ibid., pp. 3-4.

[4] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 6.

[5] *Mexico,* p. 224.

[6] Contemporary account cited in *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 6.

> The material was of marvellous value, for it was an emerald of the size of a thick pepper-pod [capsicum], upon which a small bird was engraved with the greatest skill, and, with the same skill, a small serpent coiled ready to strike. The stone was so transparent that it shone from its interior with the brightness of a candle flame. It was a very old jewel, and there is no tradition extant concerning the origin of its veneration and worship.[7]

What might we learn if we could examine this 'very old' jewel today? And how *old* was it really? We shall never find out because Fr. Benito, the first missionary of Achiotlan, seized the stone from the Indians: 'He had it ground up, although a Spaniard offered three thousand ducats for it, stirred the powder in water, poured it upon the earth and trod upon it ...'[8]

Equally typical of the profligate squandering of the intellectual riches concealed in the Mexican past was the shared fate of two gifts given to Cortez by the Aztec emperor Montezuma. These were circular calendars, as big as cartwheels, one of solid silver, and the other of solid gold. Both were elaborately engraved with beautiful hieroglyphs which may have contained material of great interest. Cortez had them melted down for ingots on the spot.[9]

More systematically, all over Central America, vast repositories of knowledge accumulated since ancient times were painstakingly gathered, heaped up and burned by zealous friars. In July 1562, for example, in the main square of Mani (just south of modern Merida in Yucatan Province) Fr. Diego de Landa burned thousands of Maya codices, story paintings and hieroglyphs inscribed on rolled-up deer skins. He also destroyed countless 'idols' and 'altars', all of which he described as 'works of the devil, designed by the evil one to delude the Indians and to prevent them from accepting Christianity ...'[10] Elsewhere he elaborated on the same theme:

> We found great numbers of books [written in the characters of the Indians] but as they contained nothing but superstitions and falsehoods of the devil we burned them all, which the natives took most grievously, and which gave them great pain.[11]

Not only the 'natives' should have felt this pain but anyone and everyone—then and now—who would like to know the truth about the past.

Many other 'men of God', some even more ruthlessly efficient than

---

[7] *The Magic and Mysteries of Mexico,* pp. 228-9.

[8] Ibid.

[9] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 7.

[10] *Yucatan before and after the Conquest,* p. 9. See also *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 20.

[11] *Yucatan before and after the Conquest,* p. 104.

Diego de Landa, participated in Spain's satanic mission to wipe clear the memory banks of Central America. Notable among these was Juan de Zumarraga, Bishop of Mexico, who boasted of having destroyed 20,000 idols and 500 Indian temples. In November 1530 he burned a Christianized Aztec aristocrat at the stake for having allegedly reverted to worship of the 'rain-god' and later, in the market-place at Texcoco, built a vast bonfire of astronomical documents, paintings, manuscripts and hieroglyphic texts which the *conquistadores* had forcibly extracted from the Aztecs during the previous eleven years.[12] As this irreplaceable storehouse of knowledge and history went up in flames, a chance to shake off at least some of the collective amnesia that clouds our understanding was lost to mankind for ever.

What remains to us of the written records of the ancient peoples of Central America? The answer, thanks to the Spanish, is less than twenty original codices and scrolls.[13]

We know from hearsay that many of the documents which the friars reduced to ashes contained 'records of ages past'.[14]

What did those lost records say? what secrets did they hold?

Gigantic men of deformed stature

Even while the orgy of book-burning was still going on, some Spaniards began to realize that 'a truly great civilization had once existed in Mexico prior to the Aztecs'.[15] Oddly enough, one of the first to act on this realization was Diego de Landa. He appears to have undergone 'Damascus-road experience' after staging his *auto-da-fé* at Mani. In later years, determined to save what he could of the ancient wisdom he had once played such a large part in destroying, he became an assiduous gatherer of the traditions and oral histories of the native peoples of the Yucatan.[16]

Bernardino de Sahagun, a Franciscan friar, was a chronicler to whom we owe much. A great linguist, he is reported to have 'sought out the most learned and often the oldest natives, and asked each to paint in his Aztec picture writing as much as he could clearly remember of Aztec history, religion and legend'.[17] In this way Sahagun was able to accumulate detailed information on the anthropology, mythology and social history of ancient Mexico, which he later set down in a learned twelve-volume work. This was suppressed by the Spanish authorities. Fortunately one copy has survived, though it is incomplete.

---

[12] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 21.

[13] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* p. 34.

[14] Ibid.

[15] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 23.

[16] *Yucatan before and after the Conquest.*

[17] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 24.

Diego de Duran, a conscientious and courageous collector of indigenous traditions, was yet another Franciscan who fought to recover the lost knowledge of the past. He visited Cholula in AD 1585, a time of rapid and catastrophic change. There he interviewed a venerated elder of the town, said to have been more than one hundred years old, who told him this story about the making of the great ziggurat:

> In the beginning, before the light of the sun had been created, this place, Cholula, was in obscurity and darkness; all was a plain, without hill or elevation, encircled in every part by water, without tree or created thing. Immediately after the light and the sun arose in the east there appeared gigantic men of deformed stature who possessed the land. Enamoured of the light and beauty of the sun they determined to build a tower so high that its summit should reach the sky. Having collected materials for the purpose they found a very adhesive clay and bitumen with which they speedily commenced to build the tower ... And having reared it to the greatest possible altitude, so that it reached the sky, the Lord of the Heavens, enraged, said to the inhabitants of the sky, 'Have you observed how they of the earth have built a high and haughty tower to mount hither, being enamoured of the light of the sun and his beauty? Come and confound them, because it is not right that they of the earth, living in the flesh, should mingle with us.' Immediately the inhabitants of the sky sallied forth like flashes of lightning; they destroyed the edifice and divided and scattered its builders to all parts of the earth.[18]

It was this story, almost but not quite the biblical account of the Tower of Babel (which was itself a reworking of a far older Mesopotamian tradition), that had brought me to Cholula.

The Central American and Middle Eastern tales were obviously closely related. Indeed, the similarities were unmissable, but there were also differences far too significant to be ignored. Of course, the similarities could be due to unrecorded pre-Colombian contacts between the cultures of the Middle East and the New World, but there was one way to explain the similarities *and* the differences in a single theory. Suppose that the two versions of the legend had evolved separately for several thousands of years, but prior to that both had descended from the same remotely ancient ancestor?

Remnants

Here's what the *Book of Genesis* says about the 'tower that reached to heaven':

> Throughout the earth men spoke the same language, with the same vocabulary. Now as they moved eastwards they found a plain in the land of Shinar, where they settled. There they said to one another, 'Come, let us make bricks and bake them in the fire.' For stone they Used bricks and for mortar they used bitumen. 'Come,' they said, 'let us build ourselves a town and a tower with its top reaching heaven. Let us make a name for ourselves, so that we may not be scattered about the

---

[18] Diego de Duran, 'Historia antiqua de la Nueve Espana', (1585), in Ignatius Donelly, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* p. 200.

> entire earth.’
>
> Now Yahewh [the Hebrew God] came down to see the town and the tower that the sons of man had built. ‘So they are all a single people with a single language!’ said Yahweh. ‘This is but the start of their undertakings! There will be nothing too hard for them to do. Come, let us go down and confuse their language on the spot so that they can no longer understand one another.’
>
> Yahweh scattered them thence over the whole face of the earth, and they stopped building the tower. It was named Babel, therefore, because there Yahweh confused the language of the whole earth. It was from there that Yahweh scattered them over the whole face of the earth.[19]

The verse which most interested me suggested very clearly that the ancient builders of the Tower of Babel had set out to create a lasting monument to themselves so that their name would not be forgotten—even if their civilization and language were. Was it possible that the same considerations could have applied at Cholula?

Only a handful of monuments in Mexico were thought by archaeologists to be more than 2000 years old. Cholula was definitely one of them. Indeed no one could say for sure in what distant age its ramparts had first begun to be heaped up. For thousands of years before development and extension of the site began in earnest around 300 BC, it looked as though some other, older structure might have been positioned at the spot over which the great ziggurat of Quetzalcoatl now rose.

There was a precedent for this which further strengthened the intriguing possibility that the remnants of a truly ancient civilization might still be lying around in Central America waiting to be recognized. For example, just south of the university campus of Mexico City, off the main road connecting the capital to Cuernavaca, stands a circular step pyramid of great complexity (with four galleries and a central staircase). It was partially excavated in the 1920s from beneath a mantle of lava. Geologists were called to the site to help date the lava, and carried out a detailed examination. To everyone’s surprise, they concluded that the volcanic eruption which had completely buried three sides of this pyramid (and had then gone on to cover about sixty square miles of the surrounding territory) must have taken place *at least seven thousand years ago*.[20]

This geological evidence seems to have been ignored by historians and archaeologists, who do not believe that any civilization capable of building a pyramid could have existed in Mexico at such an early date. It is worth noting, however, that Byron Cummings, the American archaeologist who originally excavated the site for the National Geographical Society, was convinced by clearly demarcated stratification layers above and below the pyramid (laid down both before and after the volcanic eruption) that it was 'the oldest temple yet uncovered on the American continent'. He went further than the geologists and stated categorically that this temple 'fell into ruins some 8500 years ago'.[21]

---

[19] *Genesis* 11:1-9.

[20] Reported in *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* p. 199. See also *The God-Kings and the Titans,* p. 54, and *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 207.

Pyramids upon pyramids

Going inside the Cholula pyramid really did feel like entering a man-made mountain. The tunnels (and there were more than six miles of them) were not old: they had been left behind by the teams of archaeologists who had burrowed here diligently from 1931 until funds ran out in 1966. Somehow, these narrow, low-ceilinged corridors had borrowed an atmosphere of antiquity from the vast structure all around them. Moist and cool, they offered an inviting and secretive darkness.

Following a ribbon of torchlight we walked deeper inside the pyramid. The archaeological excavations had revealed that it was not the product of one dynasty (as was thought to have been the case with the pyramids at Giza in Egypt), but that it had been built up over a very long period of time—two thousand years or so, at a conservative estimate. In other words it was a collective project, created by an inter-generational labour force drawn from the many different cultures, Olmec, Teotihuacan, Toltec, Zapotec, Mixtec, Cholulan and Aztec, that had passed through Cholula since the dawn of civilization in Mexico.[22]

Though it was not known who had been the first builders here, as far as it had been possible to establish the earliest major edifice on the site consisted of a tall conical pyramid, shaped like an upturned bucket, flattened at the summit where a temple had stood. Much later a second, similar structure was imposed on top of this primordial mound, i.e. a second inverted bucket of clay, and compacted stone was placed directly over the first, raising the temple platform to more than 200 feet above the surrounding plain. Thereafter, during the next fifteen hundred years or so, an estimated four or five other cultures contributed to the final appearance of the monument. This they did by extending its base in several stages, but never again by increasing its maximum height. In this way, almost as though a master plan were being implemented, the man-made mountain of Cholula gradually attained its characteristic, four-tier ziggurat shape. Today, its sides at the base are each almost 1500 feet long—about twice the length of the sides of the Great Pyramid at Giza—and its total volume has been estimated at a staggering three million cubic metres.[23] This makes it, as one authority succinctly states, 'the largest building ever erected on earth.'[24]

---

[21] Byron S. Cummings, '*Cuicuilco and the Archaic Culture of Mexico', University of Arizona Bulletin,* volume IV:8, 15 November 1933.

[22] *Mexico,* p. 223. See also Kurt Mendelssohn, *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1986, p. 190.

Why?

Why go to all that trouble?

What sort of name for themselves were the peoples of Central America trying to make?

Walking through the network of corridors and passageways, inhaling the cool, loamy air, I was uncomfortably conscious of the great weight and mass of the pyramid pressing down upon me. It was *the largest building in the world* and it had been placed here in honour of a Central American deity of whom almost nothing was known.

We had the *conquistadores* and the Catholic Church to thank for leaving us so deeply in the dark about the true story of Quetzalcoatl and his followers. The smashing and desecration of his ancient temple at Cholula, the destruction of idols, altars and calendars, and the great bonfires made out of codices, paintings and hieroglyphic scrolls, had succeeded almost completely in silencing the voices of the past. But the legends did offer us one graphic and powerful piece of imagery: a memory of the 'gigantic men of deformed stature' who were said to have been the original builders.

---

[23] *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* p. 190.

[24] Ibid.

Chapter 16

Serpent Sanctuary

From Cholula we drove east, past the prosperous cities of Puebla, Orizaba and Cordoba, towards Veracruz and the Gulf of Mexico. We crossed the mist-enshrouded peaks of the Sierra Madre Oriental, where the air was thin and cold, and then descended towards sea level on to tropical plains overgrown with lush plantations of palms and bananas. We were heading into the heartlands of Mexico’s oldest and most mysterious civilization: that of the so-called Olmecs, whose name meant ‘rubber people’.

Dating back to the second millennium BC, the Olmecs had ceased to exist fifteen hundred years before the rise of the Aztec empire. The Aztecs, however, had preserved haunting traditions concerning them and were even responsible for naming them after the rubber-producing area of Mexico’s gulf coast where they were believed to have lived.[1] This area lies between modern Veracruz in the west and Ciudad del Carmen in the east. In it the Aztecs found a number of ancient ritual objects produced by the Olmecs and for reasons unknown they collected these objects and placed them in positions of importance in their own temples.[2]

Looking at my map, I could see the blue line of the Coatzecoalcos River running into the Gulf of Mexico more or less at the midpoint of the legendary Olmec homeland. The oil industry proliferates here now, where rubber trees once flourished, transforming a tropical paradise into something resembling the lowest circle of Dante’s Inferno. Since the oil boom of 1973 the town of Coatzecoalcos, once easy-going but not very prosperous, had mushroomed into a transport and refining centre with air-conditioned hotels and a population of half a million. It lay close to the black heart of an industrial wasteland in which virtually everything of archaeological interest that had escaped the depredations of the Spanish at the time of the conquest had been destroyed by the voracious expansion of the oil business. It was therefore no longer possible, on the basis of hard evidence, to confirm or deny the intriguing suggestion that the legends seemed to make: that something of great importance must once have occurred here.

---

[1] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 126.

[2] *Aztecs: Reign of Blood and Splendour,* p. 50.

Gulf of Mexico
Chichen Itza
Uxmal
Tula
Teotihuacan
Tres Zapotes
San Lorenzo
La Venta
Palenque
Uaxactun
Tikal
Pacific Ocean

The Olmec sites of Tres Zapotes, San Lorenzo and La Venta along the Gulf of Mexico, with other Central American archaeological sites.

I remembered that Coatzecoalcos meant ‘Serpent Sanctuary’. It was here, in remote antiquity, that Quetzalcoatl and his companions were said to have landed when they first reached Mexico, arriving from across the sea in vessels ‘with sides that shone like the scales of serpents’ skins’.[3] And it was from here too that Quetzalcoatl was believed to have sailed (on his raft of serpents) when he left Central America. Serpent Sanctuary, moreover, was beginning to look like the *name* for the Olmec homeland, which had included not only Coatzecoalcos but several other sites in areas less blighted by development.

First at Tres Zapotes, west of Coatzecoalcos, and then at San Lorenzo and La Venta, south and east of it, numerous pieces of characteristically Olmec sculpture had been unearthed. All were monoliths carved out of basalt and similarly durable materials. Some took the form of gigantic heads weighing up to thirty tons. Others were massive stelae engraved with encounter scenes apparently involving two distinct races of mankind, neither of them American-Indian.

Whoever had produced these outstanding works of art had obviously belonged to a refined, well organized, prosperous and technologically advanced civilization. The problem was that absolutely nothing remained, except the works of art, from which anything could be deduced about the character and origins of that civilization. All that seemed clear was that ‘the Olmecs’ (the archaeologists were happy to accept the Aztec designation) had materialized in Central America around 1500 BC with their sophisticated culture fully evolved.

---

[3] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces*, pp. 139-40.

Santiago Tuxtla

We passed the night at the fishing port of Alvarado and continued our journey east the next day. The road we were following wound in and out of fertile hills and valleys, giving us occasional views of the Gulf of Mexico before turning inland. We passed green meadows filled with flame trees, and little villages nestled in grassy hollows. Here and there we saw private gardens where hulking pigs grubbed amongst piles of domestic refuse. Then we crested the brow of a hill and looked out across a giant vista of fields and forests bound only by the morning haze and the faint outlines of distant mountains.

Some miles farther on we dropped into a hollow; at its bottom lay the old colonial town of Santiago Tuxtla. The place was a riot of colour: garish shop-fronts, red-tile roofs, yellow straw hats, coconut palms, banana trees, kids in bright clothes. Several of the shops and cafés were playing music from loudspeakers. In the Zocalo, the main square, the air was thick with humidity and the fluttering wings and songs of bright-eyed tropical birds. A leafy little park occupied the centre of this square, and in the centre of the park, like some magic talisman, stood an enormous grey boulder, almost ten feet tall, carved in the shape of a helmeted African head. Full-lipped and strong-nosed, its eyes serenely closed and its lower jaw resting squarely on the ground, this head had a sombre and patient gravity.

Here, then, was the first mystery of the Olmecs: a monumental piece of sculpture, more than 2000 years old, which portrayed a subject with unmistakable negroid features. There were, of course, no African blacks in the New World 2000 years ago, nor did any arrive until the slave trade began, well after the conquest. There is, however, firm palaeoanthropological evidence that one of the many different migrations into the Americas during the last Ice Age *did* consist of peoples of negroid stock. This migration occurred around 15,000 BC.[4]

Known as the ‘Cobata’ head after the estate on which it was found, the huge monolith in the Zocalo was the largest of sixteen similar Olmec sculptures so far excavated in Mexico. It was thought to have been carved not long before the time of Christ and weighed more than thirty tons.

Tres Zapotes

From Santiago Tuxtla we drove twenty-five kilometres south-west through wild and lush countryside to Tres Zapotes, a substantial late Olmec centre believed to have flourished between 500 BC and AD 100. Now reduced to a series of mounds scattered across maize fields, the site had been extensively excavated in 1939-40 by the American archaeologist Matthew

---

[4] Ibid., p. 125.

Stirling.

Historical dogmatists of that period, I remembered, had held tenaciously to the view that the civilization of the Mayas was the oldest in Central America. One could be precise about this, they argued, because the Mayan dot-and-bar calendrical system (which had recently been decoded) made possible accurate dating of huge numbers of ceremonial inscriptions. The earliest date ever found on a Mayan site corresponded to AD 228 of the Christian calendar.[5] It therefore came as quite a jolt to the academic status quo when Stirling unearthed a stela at Tres Zapotes which bore an earlier date. Written in the familiar bar-and-dot calendrical code used by the Maya, it corresponded to 3 September 32 BC.[6]

What was shocking about this was that Tres Zapotes was not a Maya site—not in any way at all. It was entirely, exclusively, unambiguously Olmec. This suggested that the Olmecs, not the Maya, must have been the inventors of the calendar, and that the Olmecs, not the Maya, ought to be recognized as 'the mother culture' of Central America. Despite determined opposition from gangs of furious Mayanists the truth which Stirling's spade had unearthed at Tres Zapotes gradually came out. The Olmecs were much, *much* older than the Maya. They'd been a smart, civilized, technologically advanced people and they did, indeed, appear to have invented the bar-and-dot system of calendrical notation, with the enigmatic starting date of 13 August 3114 BC, which predicted the end of the world in AD 2012.

Lying close to the calendar stela at Tres Zapotes, Stirling also unearthed a giant head. I sat in front of that head now. Dated to around 100 BC,[7] it was approximately six feet high, 18 feet in circumference and weighed over 10 tons. Like its counterpart in Santiago Tuxtla, it was unmistakably the head of an African man wearing a close-fitting helmet with long chin-straps. The lobes of the ears were pierced by plugs; the pronounced negroid features were furrowed by deep frown lines on either side of the nose, and the entire face was concentrated forwards above thick, down-curving lips. The eyes were open and watchful, almond-shaped and cold. Beneath the curious helmet, the heavy brows appeared beetling and. angry.

Stirling was amazed by this discovery and reported,

> The head was a head only, carved from a single massive block of basalt, and it rested on a prepared foundation of unworked slabs of stone ... Cleared of the surrounding earth it presented an awe-inspiring spectacle. Despite its great size the workmanship is delicate and sure, the proportions perfect. Unique in character among aboriginal American sculptures, it is remarkable for its realistic treatment. The features are bold and amazingly negroid in character ...[8]

---

[5] *Mexico,* p. 637. See also *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 24.

[6] Ibid.

[7] *Mexico,* p. 638.

[8] Matthew W. Stirling, 'Discovering the New World's Oldest Dated Work of Man', *National*

Soon afterwards the American archaeologist made a second unsettling discovery at Tres Zapotes: children's toys in the form of little wheeled dogs.[9] These cute artefacts conflicted head-on with prevailing archaeological opinion, which held that the wheel had remained undiscovered in Central America until the time of the conquest. The 'dogmobiles' proved, at the very least, that the *principle* of the wheel had been known to the Olmecs, Central America's earliest civilization. And if a people as resourceful as the Olmecs had worked out the principle of the wheel, it seemed highly unlikely that they would have used it just for children's toys.

Geographic Magazine, volume 76, August 1939, pp. 183-218 *passim*

[9] Matthew W. Stirling, 'Great Stone Faces of the Mexican Jungle', *National Geographic Magazine,* volume 78, September 1940, pp. 314, 310.

Chapter 17

The Olmec Enigma

After Tres Zapotes our next stop was San Lorenzo, an Olmec site lying south-west of Coatzecoalcos in the heart of the 'Serpent Sanctuary' the legends of Quetzalcoatl made reference to. It was at San Lorenzo that the earliest carbon-dates for an Olmec site (around 1500 BC) had been recorded by archaeologists.[1] However, Olmec culture appeared to have been fully evolved by that epoch and there was no evidence that the evolution had taken place in the vicinity of San Lorenzo.[2]

In this there lay a mystery.

The Olmecs, after all, had built a significant civilization which had carried out prodigious engineering works and had developed the capacity to carve and manipulate vast blocks of stone (several of the huge monolithic heads, weighing twenty tons or more, had been moved as far as 60 miles overland after being quarried in the Tuxtla mountains).[3] So where, if not at ancient San Lorenzo, had their technological expertise and sophisticated organization been experimented with, evolved and refined?

Strangely, despite the best efforts of archaeologists, not a single, solitary sign of anything that could be described as the 'developmental phase' of Olmec society had been unearthed anywhere in Mexico (or, for that matter, anywhere in the New World). These people, whose characteristic form of artistic expression was the carving of huge negroid heads, appeared to have come from nowhere.[4]

San Lorenzo

We reached San Lorenzo late in the afternoon. Here, at the dawn of history in Central America, the Olmecs had heaped up an artificial mound more than 100 feet high as part of an immense structure some 4000 feet in length and 2000 feet in width. We climbed the dominant mound, now heavily overgrown with thick tropical vegetation, and from the summit we could see for miles across the surrounding countryside. A great many lesser mounds were also visible and around about were several of the deep trenches the archaeologist Michael Coe had dug when he had excavated the site in 1966.

---

[1] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* pp. 268-71. See also Jeremy A. Sabloff, *The Cities of Ancient Mexico: Reconstructing a Lost World,* Thames and Hudson, London, 1990, p. 35. *Breaking the Maya Code,* p. 61.

[2] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* p. 268.

[3] *Aztecs: Reign of Blood and Splendour,* p. 158.

[4] 'Olmec stone sculpture achieved a high, naturalistic plasticity, yet it has no surviving prototypes, as if this powerful ability to represent both nature and abstract concepts was a native invention of this early civilization.' *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 15; *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 55: 'The proto-Olmec phase remains an enigma ... it is not really known at what time, or in what place, Olmec culture took on its very distinctive form.'

Coe's team made a number of finds here, which included more than twenty artificial reservoirs, linked by a highly sophisticated network of basalt-lined troughs. Part of this system was built into a ridge; when it was rediscovered water still gushed forth from it during heavy rains, as it had done for more than 3000 years. The main line of the drainage ran from east to west. Into it, linked by joints made to an advanced design, three subsidiary lines were channelled.[5] After surveying the site thoroughly, the archaeologists admitted that they could not understand the purpose of this elaborate system of sluices and water-works.[6]

Nor were they able to come up with an explanation for another enigma. This was the deliberate burial, along specific alignments, of five of the massive pieces of sculpture, showing negroid features, now widely identified as 'Olmec heads'. These peculiar and apparently ritualistic graves also yielded more than sixty precious objects and artefacts, including beautiful instruments made of jade and exquisitely carved statuettes. Some of the statuettes had been systematically mutilated before burial.

The way the San Lorenzo sculptures had been interred made it extremely difficult to fix their true age, even though fragments of charcoal were found in the same strata as some of the buried objects. Unlike the sculptures, these charcoal pieces could be carbon-dated. They were, and produced readings in the range of 1200 BC.[7] This did not mean, however, that the sculptures had been carved in 1200 BC. They could have been. But they could have originated in a period hundreds or even thousands of years earlier than that. It was by no means impossible that these great works of art, with their intrinsic beauty and an indefinable numinous power, could have been preserved and venerated by many different cultures before being buried at San Lorenzo. The charcoal associated with them proved only that the sculptures were *at least as old* as 1200 BC; it did not set any upper limit on their antiquity.

La Venta

We left San Lorenzo as the sun was going down, heading for the city of Villahermosa, more than 150 kilometres to the east in the province of

---

[5] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 36.

[6] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* p. 268.

[7] Ibid., pp. 267-8. *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 55.

Tabasco. To get there we rejoined the main road running from Acayucan to Villahermosa and by-passed the port of Coatzecoalcos in a zone of oil refineries, towering pylons and ultra-modern suspension bridges. The change of pace between the sleepy rural backwater where San Lorenzo was located and the pockmarked industrial landscape around Coatzecoalcos was almost shocking. Moreover, the only reason that the timeworn outlines of the Olmec site could still be seen at San Lorenzo was that oil had not yet been found there.

It had, however, been found at La Venta—to the eternal loss of archaeology ...

We were now passing La Venta.

Due north, off a slip-road from the freeway, this sodium-lit petroleum city glowed in the dark like a vision of nuclear disaster. Since the 1940s it had been extensively ‘developed’ by the oil industry: an airstrip now bisected the site where a most unusual pyramid had once stood, and flaring smokestacks darkened the sky which Olmec star-gazers must once have searched for the rising of the planets. Lamentably, the bulldozers of the developers had flattened virtually everything of interest before proper excavations could be conducted, with the result that many of the ancient structures had not been explored at all.[8] We will never know what they could have said about the people who built and used them.

Matthew Stirling, who excavated Tres Zapotes, carried out the bulk of the archaeological work done at La Venta before progress and oil money erased it. Carbon-dating suggested that the Olmecs had established themselves here between 1500 and 1100 BC and had continued to occupy the site—which consisted of an island lying in marshes to the east of the Tonala river—until about 400 BC.[9] Then construction was suddenly abandoned, all existing buildings were ceremonially defaced or demolished, and several huge stone heads and other smaller pieces of sculpture were ritually buried in peculiar graves, just as had happened at San Lorenzo. The La Venta graves were elaborate and carefully prepared, lined with thousands of tiny blue tiles and filled up with layers of multicoloured clay.[10] At one spot some 15,000 cubic feet of earth had been dug out of the ground to make a deep pit; its floor had been carefully covered with serpentine blocks, and all the earth put back. Three mosaic pavements were also found, intentionally buried beneath several alternating layers of clay and adobe.[11]

La Venta’s principal pyramid stood at the southern end of the site. Roughly circular at ground level, it took the form of a fluted cone, the rounded sides consisting of ten vertical ridges with gullies between. The pyramid was 100 feet tall, almost 200 feet in diameter and had an overall mass in the region of 300,000 cubic feet—an impressive monument by any standards. The remainder of the site stretched for almost half a kilometre along an axis that pointed precisely 8° west of north. Centred on this axis, with every structure in flawless alignment, were several smaller pyramids and plazas, platforms and mounds, covering a total area of more than three square miles.

---

[8] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 30.

[9] Ibid., p. 31.

[10] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* pp. 268-9.

[11] Ibid., p. 269.

There was something detached and odd about La Venta, a sense that its original function had not been properly understood. Archaeologists referred to it as a ‘ceremonial centre’, and very probably that is what it was. If one were honest, however, one would admit that it could also have been several other things. The truth is that nothing is known about the social organization, ceremonies and belief systems of the Olmecs. We do not know what language they spoke, or what traditions they passed to their children. We don’t even know what ethnic group they belonged to. The exceptionally humid conditions of the Gulf of Mexico mean that not a single Olmec skeleton has survived.[12] In reality, despite the names we have given them and the views we’ve formed about them, these people are completely obscure to us.

It is even possible that the enigmatic sculptures ‘they’ left behind, which we presume depicted them, were not ‘their’ work at all, but the work of a far earlier and forgotten people. Not for the first time I found myself wondering whether some of the great heads other remarkable artefacts attributed to the Olmecs might not have been handed down like heirlooms, perhaps over many millennia, to the cultures which eventually began to build the mounds and pyramids at San Lorenzo and La Venta.

Reconstruction of La Venta. Note the unusual fluted-cone pyramid that dominates the site.

If so, then who are we speaking of when we use the label ‘Olmec’? The mound-builders? Or the powerful and imposing men with negroid features who provided the models for the monolithic heads?

Fortunately some fifty pieces of ‘Olmec’ monumental sculpture, including three of the giant heads, were rescued from La Venta by Carlos Pellicer Camara, a local poet and historian who intervened forcefully when he discovered that oil-drilling by the PEMEX company jeopardized the ruins. By determined lobbying of the politicians of Tabasco (within which La Venta lies), he arranged to have the significant finds moved to a park on the outskirts of the regional capital Villahermosa.

---

[12] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 28.

Taken together these finds constitute a precious and irreplaceable cultural record—or rather a whole library of cultural records—left behind by a vanished civilization. But nobody knows how to read the language of these records.

Above left: **Profile view of the head of the Great Sphinx at Giza, Egypt.** ***Above right:*** **Profile view of Olmec Head from La Venta, Mexico.** ***Below left:*** **Front view of the head of the Sphinx.** ***Below right:*** **Front view of Olmec Head. Compare also** ***opposite page, top left:*** **Sphinx-like Olmec sculpture from San Lorenzo, Mexico. Is it possible that the many similarities between the cultures of pre-Columbian Central America and Ancient Egypt could have stemmed from an as-yet-unidentified 'third-party' civilization that influenced both widely separated regions at a remote and early date?**

Centre: Double-puma statue at Uxtnal, Mexico. *Bottom:* Double-lion

symbolism from Ancient Egypt, depicting the *Akeru,* lion gods of yesterday and today (*Akeru* was written in hieroglyphs as). The religions of both regions share many other common images and ideas. Also noteworthy is the fact that *p'achi,* the Central American word for 'human sacrifice', means, literally 'to open the mouth'—which calls to mind a strange Ancient Egyptian funerary ritual known as 'the opening of the mouth'. Likewise it was believed in both regions that the souls of dead kings were reborn as stars.

Deus ex machina

Villahermosa, Tabasco province

I was looking at an elaborate relief that had been dubbed 'Man in Serpent' by the archaeologists who found it at La Venta. According to expert opinion it showed 'an Olmec, wearing a head-dress and holding an incense bag, enveloped by a feathered serpent'.[13]

The relief was carved into a slab of solid granite measuring about four feet wide by five feet high and showed a man sitting with his legs stretched out in front of him as though he were reaching for pedals with his feet. He held a small, bucket-shaped object in his right hand. With his left he appeared to be raising or lowering a lever. The 'head-dress' he wore was an odd and complicated garment. To my eye it seemed more functional than ceremonial, although I could not imagine what its function might have been. On it, or perhaps on a console above it, were two x-shaped crosses.

I turned my attention to the other principal element of the sculpture, the ‘feathered serpent’. On one level it did, indeed, depict exactly that: a plumed or feathered serpent, the age-old symbol of Quetzalcoatl, whom the Olmecs, therefore, must have worshipped (or at the very least recognized). Scholars do not dispute this interpretation.[14] It is generally accepted that Quetzalcoatl’s cult was immensely ancient, originating in prehistoric times in Central America and thereafter receiving the devotion of many cultures during the historic period.

---

[13] *The Cities of Ancient Mexico,* p. 37.

The feathered serpent in this particular sculpture, however, had certain characteristics that set it apart. It seemed to be more than just a religious symbol; indeed, there was something rigid and structured about it that made it look almost like a piece of machinery.

Whispers of ancient secrets

Later that day I took shelter in the giant shadow cast by one of the Olmec heads Carlos Pellicer Camara had rescued from La Venta. It was the head of an old man with a broad flat nose and thick lips. The lips were slightly parted, exposing strong, square teeth. The expression on the face suggested an ancient, patient wisdom, and the eyes seemed to gaze unafraid into eternity, like those of the Great Sphinx at Giza in lower Egypt.

It would probably be impossible, I thought, for a sculptor to *invent* all the different combined characteristics of an authentic racial type. The portrayal of an authentic combination of racial characteristics therefore implied strongly that a human model had been used.

I walked around the great head a couple of times. It was 22 feet in circumference, weighed 19.8 tons, stood almost 8 feet high, had been carved out of solid basalt, and displayed clearly ‘an authentic combination of racial characteristics’. Indeed, like the other pieces I had seen at Santiago Tuxtla and at Tres Zapotes, it unmistakably and unambiguously showed a negro.

The reader can form his or her own opinion after examining the relevant photographs in this book. My own view is that the Olmec heads present us with physiologically accurate images of *real* individuals of negroid stock—charismatic and powerful African men whose presence in Central America 3000 years ago has not yet been explained by scholars. Nor is there any certainty that the heads were actually carved in that epoch. Carbon-dating of fragments of charcoal found in the same pits tells us only the age of the charcoal. Calculating the true antiquity of the heads themselves is a much more complex matter.

It was with such thoughts that I continued my slow walk among the strange and wonderful monuments of La Venta. They whispered of ancient secrets—the secret of the man in the machine ... the secret of the negro heads ... and, last but not least, the secret of a legend brought to life. For it seemed that flesh might indeed have been put on the mythical bones of Quetzalcoatl when I found that several of the La Venta sculptures contained realistic likenesses not only of negroes but of tall, thin-featured, long-nosed, apparently Caucasian men with straight hair and full beards, wearing flowing robes ...

---

[14] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* p. 270.

Chapter 18

Conspicuous Strangers

Matthew Stirling, the American archaeologist who excavated La Venta in the 1940s, made a number of spectacular discoveries there. The most spectacular of all was the Stele of the Bearded Man.

The plan of the ancient Olmec site, as I have said, lay along an axis pointing 8° west of north. At the southern end of this axis, 100 feet tall, loomed the fluted cone of the great pyramid. Next to it, at ground level, was what looked like a curb about a foot high enclosing a spacious rectangular area one-quarter the size of an average city block. When the archaeologists began to uncover this curb they found, to their surprise, that it consisted of the upper parts of a wall of columns. Further excavation through the undisturbed layers of stratification that had accumulated revealed that the columns were ten feet tall. There were more than 600 of them and they had been set together so closely that they formed a near-impregnable stockade. Hewn out of solid basalt and transported to La Venta from quarries more than sixty miles distant, the columns weighed approximately two tons each.

Why all this trouble? What had the stockade been built to contain?

Even before excavation began, the tip of a massive chunk of rock had been visible jutting out of the ground in the centre of the enclosed area, about four feet higher than the illusory ‘curb’ and leaning steeply forward. It was covered with carvings. These extended down, out of sight, beneath the layers of soil that filled the ancient stockade to a height of about nine feet.

Stirling and his team worked for two days to free the great rock. When exposed it proved to be an imposing stele fourteen feet high, seven feet wide and almost three feet thick. The carvings showed an encounter between two tall men, both dressed in elaborate robes and wearing elegant shoes with turned-up toes. Either erosion or deliberate mutilation (quite commonly practised on Olmec monuments) had resulted in the complete defacement of one of the figures. The other was intact. It so obviously depicted a Caucasian male with a high-bridged nose and a long, flowing beard that the bemused archaeologists promptly christened it ‘Uncle Sam’.[1]

I walked slowly around the twenty-ton stele, remembering as I did so that it had lain buried in the earth for more than 3000 years. Only in the brief half century or so since Stirling’s excavations had it seen the light of day again. What would its fate be now? Would it stand here for another thirty centuries as an object of awe and splendour for future generations to gawp at and revere? Or, in such a great expanse of time, was it possible that circumstances might change so much that it would once again be buried and concealed?

---

[1] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* p. 144.

Perhaps neither would happen. I remembered the ancient calendrical system of Central America, which the Olmecs had initiated. According to them, and to their more famous successors the Mayas, there just weren't any great expanses of time left, let alone three millennia. The Fifth Sun was all used up and a tremendous earthquake was building to destroy humanity two days before Christmas in AD 2012.

I turned my attention back to the stele. Two things seemed to be clear: the encounter scene it portrayed must, for some reason, have been of immense importance to the Olmecs, hence the grandeur of the stele itself, and the construction of the remarkable stockade of columns built to contain it. And, as was the case with the negro heads, it was obvious that the face of the bearded Caucasian man could only have been sculpted from a human model. The racial verisimilitude was too good for an artist to have invented it.

The same went for two other Caucasian figures I was able to identify among the surviving monuments from La Venta. One was carved in low relief on a heavy and roughly circular slab of stone about three feet in diameter. Dressed in what looked like tight-fitting leggings, his features were those of an Anglo-Saxon. He had a full pointed beard and wore a curious floppy cap on his head. In his left hand he extended a flag, or perhaps a weapon of some kind. His right hand, which he held across the middle of his chest, appeared to be empty. Around his slim waist was tied a flamboyant sash. The other Caucasian figure, this time carved on the side of a narrow pillar, was similarly bearded and attired.

Who were these conspicuous strangers? What were they doing in Central America? When did they come? And what relationship did they have with those other strangers who had settled in this steamy rubber jungle—the ones who had provided the models for the great negro heads?

Some radical researchers, who rejected the dogma concerning the isolation of the New World prior to 1492, had proposed what looked like a viable solution to the problem: the bearded, thin-featured individuals could have been Phoenicians from the Mediterranean who had sailed through the Pillars of Hercules and across the Atlantic Ocean as early as the second millennium BC. Advocates of this theory went on to suggest that the negroes shown at the same sites were the 'slaves' of the Phoenicians, picked up on the coast of West Africa prior to the trans-Atlantic run.[2]

The more consideration I gave to the strange character of the La Venta sculptures, the more dissatisfied I became with these ideas. Probably the

---

[2] Ibid., p. 141-42.

Phoenicians and other Old World peoples *had* crossed the Atlantic ages before Columbus. There was compelling evidence for that, although it is outside the scope of this book.[3] The problem was that the Phoenicians, who had left unmistakable examples of their distinctive handiwork in many parts of the ancient world,[4] had *not* done so at the Olmec sites in Central America. Neither the negro heads, nor the reliefs portraying bearded Caucasian men showed any signs of anything remotely Phoenician in their style, handiwork or character.[5] Indeed, from a stylistic point of view, these powerful works of art seemed to belong to no known culture, tradition or genre. They seemed to be without antecedents either in the New World or in the Old.

They seemed rootless ... and that, of course, was impossible, because all forms of artistic expression have roots somewhere.

Hypothetical third party

It occurred to me that one plausible explanation might lie in a variant of the 'hypothetical third party' theory originally put forward by a number of leading Egyptologists to explain one of the great puzzles of Egyptian history and chronology.

The archaeological evidence suggested that rather than developing slowly and painfully, as is normal with human societies, the civilization of Ancient Egypt, like that of the Olmecs, emerged *all at once and fully formed.* Indeed, the period of transition from primitive to advanced society appears to have been so short that it makes no kind of historical sense. Technological skills that should have taken hundreds or even thousands of years to evolve were brought into use almost overnight—and with no apparent antecedents whatever.

For example, remains from the pre-dynastic period around 3500 BC show no trace of writing. Soon after that date, quite suddenly and inexplicably, the hieroglyphs familiar from so many of the ruins of Ancient Egypt begin to appear in a complete and perfect state. Far from being mere pictures of objects or actions, this written language was complex and structured at the outset, with signs that represented sounds only and a detailed system of numerical symbols. Even the very earliest hieroglyphs were stylized and conventionalized; and it is clear that an advanced cursive script was it common usage by the dawn of the First Dynasty.[6]

---

[3] *Fair Gods and Store Faces, passim.* See also Cyrus H. Gordon, *Before Columbus: Links Between the Old World and Ancient America,* Crown Publishers Inc, New York, 1971.

[4] See, for example, (a) Maria Eugenia Aubet, *The Phoenicians and the West,* Cambridge University Press, 1993; (b) Gerhard Herm, *The Phoenicians,* BCA, London, 1975; (c) Sabatino Moscati, *The World of the Phoenicians,* Cardinal, London, 1973.

[5] This can be confirmed in any of the works cited in note 4.

[6] W. B. Emery, *Archaic Egypt,* Penguin Books, London, 1987, p. 192.

What is remarkable is that there are no traces of evolution from simple to sophisticated, and the same is true of mathematics, medicine, astronomy and architecture and of Egypt's amazingly rich and convoluted religio-mythological system (even the central content of such refined works as the *Book of the Dead* existed *right at the start* of the dynastic period).[7]

The majority of Egyptologists will not consider the implications of Egypt's early sophistication. These implications are startling, according to a number of more daring thinkers. John Anthony West, an expert on the early dynastic period, asks:

> How does a complex civilization spring full-blown into being? Look at a 1905 automobile and compare it to a modern one. There is no mistaking the process of 'development'. But in Egypt there are no parallels. Everything is right there at the start.
>
> The answer to the mystery is of course obvious but, because it is repellent to the prevailing cast of modern thinking, it is seldom considered. *Egyptian civilization was not a 'development', it was a legacy.*[8]

West has been a thorn in the flesh of the Egyptological establishment for many years. But other more mainstream figures have also confessed puzzlement at the suddenness with which Egyptian civilization appeared. Walter Emery, late Edwards Professor of Egyptology at the University of London, summed up the problem:

> At a period approximately 3400 years before Christ, a great change took place in Egypt, and the country passed rapidly from a state of neolithic culture with a complex tribal character to one of well-organized monarchy ...
>
> At the same time the art of writing appears, monumental architecture and the arts and crafts develop to an astonishing degree, and all the evidence points to the existence of a luxurious civilization. All this was achieved within a comparatively short period of time, *for there appears to be little or no background to these fundamental developments in writing and architecture.*[9]

One explanation could simply be that Egypt received its sudden and decisive cultural boost from some other known civilization of the ancient world. Sumer, on the Lower Euphrates in Mesopotamia, is the most likely contender. Despite many basic differences, a variety of shared building techniques and architectural styles[10] does suggest a link between the two regions. But none of these similarities is strong enough to infer that the connection could have been in any way causal, with one society directly influencing the other. On the contrary, as Professor Emery writes:

> The impression we get is of an *indirect* connection, and perhaps the existence of a third party, whose influence spread to both the Euphrates and the Nile ... Modern

---

[7] Ibid., p. 38. See also *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* (trans. E.A. Wallis Budge), British Museum, 1895, Introduction, pp. xii, xiii.

[8] John Anthony West, *Serpent in the Sky,* Harper and Row, New York, 1979, p. 13.

[9] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 38.

[10] Ibid., pp. 175-91.

> scholars have tended to ignore the possibility of immigration to both regions from some hypothetical and as yet undiscovered area. [However] a third party whose cultural achievements were passed on independently to Egypt and Mesopotamia would best explain the common features and fundamental differences between the two civilizations.[11]

Among other things, this theory sheds light on the mysterious fact that the Egyptians and Sumerian people of Mesopotamia appear to have worshipped virtually identical lunar deities who were among the *oldest* in their respective pantheons (*Thoth* in the case of the Egyptians, *Sin* in the case of the Sumerians).[12] According to the eminent Egyptologist Sir E.A. Wallis Budge, 'The similarity between the two gods is too close to be accidental ... It would be wrong to say that the Egyptians borrowed from the Sumerians or the Sumerians from the Egyptians, but it may be submitted that the literati of both peoples borrowed their theological systems from some common but exceedingly ancient source.'[13]

The question, therefore, is this: what was that 'common but exceedingly ancient source', that 'hypothetical and as yet undiscovered area', that advanced 'third party' to which both Budge and Emery refer? And if it left a legacy of high culture in Egypt and in Mesopotamia, why shouldn't it have done so in Central America?

It's not good enough to argue that civilization 'took off' much later in Mexico than it had in the Middle East. It is possible that the initial impulse could have been felt at the same time in both places but that the subsequent outcome could have been completely different.

On this scenario, the civilizers would have succeeded brilliantly in Egypt and in Sumer, creating lasting and remarkable cultures there. In Mexico, on the other hand (as also seems to have been the case in Peru), they suffered some serious setback—perhaps getting off to a good start, when the gigantic stone heads and reliefs of bearded men were made, but going rapidly downhill. The light of civilization would never quite have been lost, but perhaps things didn't pick up again until around 1500 BC, the so-called 'Olmec horizon'. By then the great sculptures would have been hoary with age, ancient relics of immense spiritual power, their all-but-forgotten origins wrapped in myths of giants and bearded civilizers.

If so, we may be gazing at faces from a much more remote past than we imagine when we stare into the almond eyes of one of the negro heads or into the angular, chiselled Caucasian features of 'Uncle Sam'. It is by no means impossible that these great works preserve the images of peoples from a vanished civilization which embraced several different ethnic groups.

That, in a nutshell, is the 'hypothetical third party' theory as applied to

---

[11] Ibid., pp. 31, 177.

[12] Ibid., p. 126.

[13] E. A. Wallis Budge, *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* Oxford University Press, 1934, p. 155.

Central America: the civilization of Ancient Mexico did not emerge without external influence, and it did not emerge as a result of influence from the Old World; instead certain cultures in the Old World and in the New World may both have received a legacy of influence and ideas from a third party at some exceedingly remote date.

Villahermosa to Oaxaca

Before leaving Villahermosa I visited CICOM, the Centre for Investigation of the Cultures of the Olmecs and Maya. I wanted to find out from the scholars there whether there were any other significant Olmec sites in the region. To my surprise, they suggested that I should look farther afield. At Monte Alban, in Oaxaca province hundreds of kilometres to the southwest, archaeologists had apparently unearthed 'Olmecoid' artefacts and a number of reliefs thought to represent the Olmecs themselves.

Santha and I had intended to drive straight on from Villahermosa into the Yucatan Peninsula, which lay north-east. The journey to Monte Alban would involve a huge detour, but we decided to make it, in the hope that it might shed further light on the Olmecs. Besides, it promised to be a spectacular drive over immense mountains and into the heart of the hidden valley where the city of Oaxaca lies.

We drove almost due west past the lost site of La Venta, past Coatzecoalcos once again, and on past Sayula and Loma Bonita to the road-junction town of Tuxtepec. In so doing, by degrees we left behind countryside scarred and blackened by the oil industry, crossed long gentle hillsides carpeted in lush green grass, and ran between fields ripe with crops.

At Tuxtepec, where the sierras really began, we turned sharply south following Highway 175 to Oaxaca. On the map it looked barely half the distance that we had driven from Villahermosa. The road, however, proved to be a complicated, nerve-racking, muscle-wrenching, apparently endless zig-zag of hairpin bends—narrow, winding and precipitous—which went up into the clouds like a stairway to heaven. It took us through many different layers of alpine vegetation, each occupying a specialized climatological niche, until it brought us out above the clouds in a place where familiar plants flourished in giant forms, like John Wyndham's triffids, creating a surreal and alien landscape. It took twelve hours to drive the 700 kilometres from Villahermosa to Oaxaca. By the time the journey was over, my hands were blistered from gripping the steering-wheel too tight for too long around too many hairpin bends. My eyes were blurred and I kept having mental retrospectives of the vertiginous chasms we had skirted on Highway 175, in the mountains, where the triffids grew.

The city of Oaxaca is famous for magic mushrooms, marijuana and D.H. Lawrence (who wrote and set part of his novel *The Plumed Serpent* here in the 1920s). There is still a bohemian feel about the place and until late at night a current of excitement seems to ripple among the crowds filling its bars and cafés, narrow cobbled streets, old buildings and spacious plazas.

We checked into a room overlooking one of the three open courtyards in the Hotel Las Golondrinas. The bed was comfortable. There were starry skies overhead. But, tired as I was, I couldn't sleep.

What kept me awake was the idea of the civilizers ... the bearded gods and their companions. In Mexico, as in Peru, they seemed to have confronted failure. That was what the legends implied, and not only the legends, as I discovered when we reached Monte Alban the next morning.

Chapter 19

Adventures in the Underworld, Journeys to the Stars

The ‘hypothetical third party’ theory explains the similarities and fundamental differences between Ancient Egypt and Ancient Mesopotamia by proposing that both received a common legacy of civilization from the same remote ancestor. No serious suggestions have been made as to where that ancestral civilization might have been located, its nature, or when it flourished. Like a black hole in space, it cannot be seen. Yet its presence can be deduced from its effects on things that can be seen—in this case the civilizations of Sumer and Egypt.

Is it possible that the same mysterious ancestor, the same invisible source of influence, could also have left its mark in Mexico? If so, we would expect to find certain cultural similarities between Mexico’s ancient civilizations and those of Sumer and Egypt. We would also expect to be confronted by immense differences resulting from the long period of divergent evolution which separated all these areas in historical times. We would, however, expect the differences to be less between Sumer and Egypt, which were in regular contact with each other during the historical period, than between the two Middle Eastern cultures and the cultures of far-off Central America, which enjoyed at most only haphazard, slight and intermittent contacts prior to the ‘discovery’ of the New World by Columbus in AD 1492.

Eaters of the dead, earth monsters, star kings, dwarves and other relatives

For some curious reason that has not been explained, the Ancient Egyptians had a special liking and reverence for dwarves.[1] So, too, did the civilized peoples of ancient Central America, right back to Olmec times.[2] In both cases it was believed that dwarves were directly connected to the gods.[3] And in both cases dwarves were favoured as dancers and were shown as such in works of art.[4]

In Egypt’s early dynastic period, more than 4500 years ago, an ‘Ennead’ of nine omnipotent deities was particularly adored by the priesthood at Heliopolis.[5] Likewise, in Central America, both the Aztecs and the Mayas believed in an all-powerful system of nine deities.[6]

---

[1] See, for example, *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 69-70; also Jean-Pierre Hallet, *Pygmy Kitabu,* BCA, London, 1974, pp. 84-106.

[2] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 82.

[3] Ibid., *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 69-70, and *Pygmy Kitabu,* pp. 84-106.

[4] Ibid.

[5] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 85.

The *Popol Vuh,* the sacred book of the ancient Quiche Maya of Mexico and Guatemala, contains several passages which clearly indicate a belief in 'stellar rebirth'—the reincarnation of the dead as stars. After they had been killed, for example, the Hero Twins named Hunahpu and Xbalanque 'rose up in the midst of the light, and instantly they were lifted into the sky ... Then the arch of heaven and the face of the earth were lighted. And they dwelt in heaven.'[7] At the same time ascended the Twins' 400 companions who had also been killed, 'and so they again became the companions of Hunahpu and Xbalanque and were changed into stars in the sky.'[8]

The majority of the traditions of the God-King Quetzalcoatl, as we have seen, focus on his deeds and teachings as a civilizer. His followers in ancient Mexico, however, also believed that his human manifestation had experienced death and that *afterwards he was reborn as a star*.[9]

It is therefore curious, at the very least, to discover that in Egypt, in the Pyramid Age, more than 4000 years ago, the state religion revolved around the belief that the deceased pharaoh was reborn as a star.[10] Ritual incantantations were chanted, the purpose of which was to facilitate the dead monarch's rapid rebirth in the heavens: 'Oh king, you are this Great Star, the Companion of Orion, who traverses the sky with Orion ... you ascend from the east of the sky, being renewed in your due season, and rejuvenated in your due time ...'[11] We have encountered the Orion constellation before, on the plains of Nazca, and we shall encounter it again ...

Meanwhile, let us consider the *Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead.* Parts of its contents are as old as the civilization of Egypt itself and it serves as a sort of Baedeker for the transmigration of the soul. It instructs the deceased on how to overcome the dangers of the afterlife, enables him to assume the form of several mythical creatures, and equips him with the passwords necessary for admission to the various stages, or levels, of the underworld.[12]

Is it a coincidence that the peoples of Ancient Central America preserved a parallel vision of the perils of the afterlife? There it was widely believed that the underworld consisted of nine strata through which the deceased would journey for four years, overcoming obstacles and dangers on the way.[13] The strata had self-explanatory names like 'place where the mountains crash together', 'place where the arrows are fired', 'mountain of knives', and so on. In both Ancient Central America and Ancient Egypt, it was believed that the deceased's voyage through the underworld was made in a boat, accompanied by 'paddler gods' who ferried him from stage to stage.[14] The tomb of 'Double Comb', an eighth-century ruler of the Mayan city of Tikal, was found to contain a representation of this scene.[15] Similar images appear throughout the Valley of the Kings in Upper Egypt, notably in the tomb of Thutmosis III, an Eighteenth Dynasty pharaoh.[16] Is it a coincidence that the passengers in the barque of the dead pharaoh, and in the canoe in which Double Comb makes his final journey, include (in both cases) a dog or dog-headed deity, a bird or bird-headed deity, and an ape or ape-headed deity?[17]

---

[6] *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* p. 148.

[7] *Popol Vuh: The Sacred Book of the Ancient Quiche Maya,* (English version by Delia Goetz and Sylvanus G. Morley from the translation by Adrian Recinos), University of Oklahoma Press, 1991, p. 163.

[8] Ibid., 164.

[9] Ibid., p. 181; *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America*, p. 147.

[10] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* (trans. R. O. Faulkner), Oxford University Press, 1969. Numerous Utterances refer directly to the stellar rebirth of the King, e.g. 248, 264, 265, 268, and 570 ('I am a star which illumines the sky'), etc.

[11] Ibid., Utt. 466, p. 155.

[12] *The Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead,* (trans. R. O. Faulkner), British Museum Publications, 1989.

The seventh stratum of the Ancient Mexican underworld was called *Teocoyolcualloya:* 'place where beasts devour hearts'.[18]

Is it a coincidence that one of the stages of the Ancient Egyptian underworld, 'the Hall of Judgement', involved an almost identical series of symbols? At this crucial juncture the deceased's heart was weighed against a feather. If the heart was heavy with sin it would tip the balance. The god Thoth would note the judgement on his palette and the heart would immediately be devoured by a fearsome beast, part crocodile, part hippopotamus, part lion, that was called 'the Eater of the Dead'.[19]

Finally, let us turn again to Egypt of the Pyramid Age and the privileged status of the pharaoh, which enabled him to circumvent the trials of the underworld and to be reborn as a star. Ritual incantations were part of the process. Equally important was a mysterious ceremony known as 'the opening of the mouth', always conducted after the death of the pharaoh and believed by archaeologists to date back to pre-dynastic times.[20] The high priest and four assistants participated, wielding the *peshenkhef,* a ceremonial cutting instrument. This was used 'to open the mouth' of the deceased God-King, an action thought necessary to ensure his resurrection in the heavens. Surviving reliefs and vignettes showing this ceremony leave no doubt that the mummified corpse was struck a hard physical blow with the *peshenkhef.*[21] In addition, evidence has recently emerged which indicates that one of the chambers within the Great Pyramid at Giza may have served as the location for the ceremony.[22]

---

[13] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 37.

[14] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* pp. 128-9.

[15] Reproduced in *National Geographic Magazine,* volume 176, Number 4, Washington DC, October 1989, p. 468: 'Double Comb is being taken to the underworld in a canoe guided by the "paddler twins", gods who appear prominently in Maya mythology. Other figures—an iguana, a monkey, a parrot, and a dog—accompany the dead ruler.' We learn more of the mythological significance of dogs in Part V of this book.

[16] Details are reproduced in John Romer, *Valley of the Kings,* Michael O'Mara Books Limited, London, 1988, p. 167, and in J. A. West, *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* Harrap Columbus, London, 1989, pp. 282-97.

[17] In the case of Ancient Egypt the dog represents *Upuaut,* 'the Opener of the Ways', the bird (a hawk) represents Horus, and the ape, Thoth. See *The Traveller's Key To Ancient Egypt,* p. 284, and *The Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead,* pp. 116-30. For Ancient Central America see note 15.

[18] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 40.

[19] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* (trans. E. A. Wallis Budge), Arkana, London and New York, 1986, p. 21.

All this finds a strange, distorted twin in Mexico. We have seen the prevalence of human sacrifice there in pre-conquest times. Is it coincidental that the sacrificial venue was a pyramid, that the ceremony was conducted by a high priest and four assistants, that a cutting instrument, the sacrificial knife, was used to strike a hard physical blow to the body of the victim, and that the victim's soul was believed to ascend directly to the heavens, sidestepping the perils of the underworld?[23]

As such 'coincidences' continue to multiply, it is reasonable to wonder whether there may not be some underlying connection. This is certainly the case when we learn that the general term for 'sacrifice' throughout Ancient Central America *was p'achi,* meaning 'to open the mouth'.[24]

Could it be, therefore, that what confronts us here, in widely separated geographical areas, and at different periods of history, is not just a series of startling coincidences but some faint and garbled common memory originating in the most distant antiquity? It doesn't seem that the Egyptian ceremony of the opening of the mouth influenced directly the Mexican ceremony of the same name (or vice versa, for that matter). The fundamental differences between the two cases rule that out. What does seem possible, however, is that their similarities may be the remnants of a shared legacy received from a common ancestor. The peoples of Central America did one thing with that legacy and the Egyptians another, but some common symbolism and nomenclature was retained by both.

This is not the place to expand on the sense of an ancient and elusive connectedness that emerges from the Egyptian and Central American evidence. Before moving on, however, it is worth noting that a similar 'connectedness' links the belief systems of pre-Colombian Mexico with those of Sumer in Mesopotamia. Again the evidence is more suggestive of an ancient common ancestor than of any direct influence.

---

[20] See, for example, R. T. Rundle-Clark, *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1991, p. 29.

[21] Henri Frankfort, *Kingship and the Gods,* University of Chicago Press, 1978, p. 134. *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* e. g. Utts. 20, 21.

[22] Robert Bauval and Adrian Gilbert, *The Orion Mystery,* Wm. Heinemann, London, 1994, pp. 208-10, 270.

[23] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* pp. 40, 177.

[24] *Maya History and Religion,* p. 175.

Take the case of Oannes, for example.

'Oannes' is the Greek rendering of the Sumerian Uan, the name of the amphibious being, described in Part II, believed to have brought the arts and skills of civilization to Mesopotamia.[25] Legends dating back at least 5000 years relate that Uan lived under the sea, emerging from the waters of the Persian Gulf every morning to civilize and tutor mankind.[26] Is it a coincidence that *uaana,* in the Mayan language, means 'he who has his residence in water'?[27]

Let us also consider Tiamat, the Sumerian goddess of the oceans and of the forces of primitive chaos, always shown as a ravening monster. In Mesopotamian tradition, Tiamat turned against the other deities and unleashed a holocaust of destruction before she was eventually destroyed by the celestial hero Marduk:

> She opened her mouth, Tiamat, to swallow him.
> He drove in the evil wind so that she could not close her lips.
> The terrible winds filled her belly. Her heart was seized,
> She held her mouth wide open,
> He let fly an arrow, it pierced her belly,
> Her inner parts he clove, he split her heart,
> He rendered her powerless and destroyed her life,
> He felled her body and stood upright on it.[28]

How do you follow an act like that?

Marduk could. Contemplating his adversary's monstrous corpse, 'he conceived works of art',[29] and a great plan of world creation began to take shape in his mind. His first move was to split Tiamat's skull and cut her arteries. Then he broke her into two parts 'like a dried fish', using one half to roof the heavens and the other to surface the earth. From her breasts he made mountains, from her spittle, clouds, and he directed the rivers Tigris and Euphrates to flow from her eyes.[30]

A strange and violent legend, and a very old one.

The ancient civilizations of Central America had their own version of this story. Here Quetzalcoatl, in his incarnation as the creator deity, took the role of Marduk while the part of Tiamat was played by Cipactli, the 'Great Earth Monster'. Quetzalcoatl seized Cipactli's limbs 'as she swam in the primeval waters and wrenched her body in half, one part forming the sky and the other the earth'. From her hair and skin he created grass, flowers and herbs; 'from her eyes, wells and springs; from her shoulders, mountains'.[31]

---

[25] Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* Oxford University Press, 1990, p. 326; Jeremy Black and Anthony Green, *Gods, Demons and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia,* British Museum Press, 1992, pp. 163-4.

[26] *Gods, Demons and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia,* p. 41.

[27] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 169; *The God-Kings and the Titans,* p. 234.

[28] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 53-4.

[29] Ibid., p. 54.

[30] Ibid. See also *Gods, Demons and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia,* p. 177.

Are the peculiar parallels between the Sumerian and Mexican myths pure coincidence or could both have been marked by the cultural fingerprints of a lost civilization? If so, the faces of the heroes of that ancestral culture may indeed have been carved in stone and passed down as heirlooms through thousands of years, sometimes in full view, sometimes buried, until they were dug up for the last time by archaeologists in our era and given labels like 'Olmec Head' and 'Uncle Sam'.

The faces of those heroes also appear at Monte Alban, where they seem to tell a sad story.

South Platform
Observatory
North Platform

Monte Alban.

Monte Alban: the downfall of masterful men

A site thought to be about 3000 years old,[32] Monte Alban stands on a vast artificially flattened hilltop overlooking Oaxaca. It consists of a huge rectangular area, the Grand Plaza, which is enclosed by groups of pyramids and other buildings laid out in precise geometrical relationships to one another. The overall feel of the place is one of harmony and proportion emerging from a well-ordered and symmetrical plan.

Following the advice of CICOM, whom I had spoken to before leaving Villahermosa, I made my way first to the extreme south-west corner of the Monte Alban site. There, stacked loosely against the side of a low pyramid, were the objects I had come all this way to see: several dozen engraved stelae depicting negroes and Caucasians ... equal in life ... equal in death.

---

[31] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 59; Inga Glendinnen, *Aztecs,* Cambridge University Press, 1991, p. 177. See also *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 144.

[32] *Mexico,* p. 669.

If a great civilization had indeed been lost to history, and if these sculptures told part of its story, the message conveyed was one of racial equality. No one who has seen the pride, or felt the charisma, of the great negro heads from La Venta could seriously imagine that the original subjects of these magisterial sculptures could have been slaves. Neither did the lean-faced, bearded men look as if they would have bent their knees to anyone. They, too, had an aristocratic demeanour.

At Monte Alban, however, there seemed to be carved in stone a record of the downfall of these masterful men. It did not look as if this could have been the work of the same people who made the La Venta sculptures. The standard of craftsmanship was far too low for that. But what was certain—whoever they were, and however inferior their work—was that these artists had attempted to portray the same negroid subjects and the same goatee-bearded Caucasians as I had seen at La Venta. There the sculptures had reflected strength, power and vitality. Here at Monte Alban the remarkable strangers were corpses. All were naked, most were castrated, some were curled up in foetal positions as though to avoid showers of blows, others lay sprawled slackly.

Archaeologists said the sculptures showed ‘the corpses of prisoners captured in battle’.[33]

What prisoners? From where?

The location, after all, was Central America, the New World, thousands of years before Columbus, so wasn’t it odd that these images of battlefield casualties showed not a single native American but only and exclusively Old World racial types?

For some reason, orthodox academics did not find this puzzling, even though, by their reckoning, the carvings were extremely old (dating to somewhere between 1000 and 600 BC[34]). As at other sites, this time-frame had been derived from tests on associated organic matter, not on the carvings themselves, which were incised on granite stele and therefore hard to date objectively.

Legacy

An as yet undeciphered but fully elaborated hieroglyphic script had been found at Monte Alban,[35] much of it carved on to the same stele as the crude Caucasian and negro figures. Experts accepted that it was ‘the earliest-known writing in Mexico'.[36] It was also clear that the people who had lived here had been accomplished builders and more than usually preoccupied with astronomy. An observatory, consisting of a strange arrowhead-shaped structure, lay at an angle of 45° to the main axis (which was deliberately tilted several degrees from north-south).[37] Crawling into this observatory, I found it to be a warren of tiny, narrow tunnels and steep internal stairways, giving sightlines to different regions of the sky.[38]

---

[33] *The Cities of Ancient Mexico,* p. 53.

[34] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 53; *Mexico,* p. 671.

[35] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* pp. 53-4; *The Cities of Ancient Mexico,* p. 50.

The people of Monte Alban, like the people of Tres Zapotes, left definite evidence of their knowledge of mathematics, in the form of bar-and-dot computations.[39] They had also used the remarkable calendar,[40] introduced by the Olmecs and much associated with the later Maya,[41] which predicted the end of the world on 23 December AD 2012.

If the calendar, and the preoccupation with time, had been part of the legacy of an ancient and forgotten civilization, the Maya must be ranked as the most faithful and inspired inheritors of that legacy. 'Time' as the archaeologist Eric Thompson put it in 1950, 'was the supreme mystery of Maya religion, a subject which pervaded Maya thought to an extent without parallel in the history of mankind.'[42]

As I continued my journey through Central America I felt myself drawn ever more deeply into the labyrinths of that strange and awesome riddle.

---

[36] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* pp. 54.

[37] *Mexico,* pp. 669-71.

[38] For further details, see *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 17: 'These buildings probably confirm knowledge of a large body of star lore.'

[39] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 53.

[40] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 350.

[41] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* pp. 44-5.

[42] J. Eric Thompson, *Maya Hieroglyphic Writing,* Carnegie Institution, Washington DC, 1950, p. 155.

Chapter 20

Children of the First Men

Palenque, Chiapas Province

Evening was settling in. I sat just beneath the north-east corner of the Mayan Temple of the Inscriptions and gazed north over the darkening jungle where the land dropped away towards the flood plain of the Usumacinta.

The Temple consisted of three chambers and rested on top of a nine-stage pyramid almost 100 feet tall. The clean and harmonious lines of this structure gave it a sense of delicacy, but not of weakness. It felt strong, rooted into the earth, enduring—a creature of pure geometry and imagination.

Looking to my right I could see the Palace, a spacious rectangular complex on a pyramidal base, dominated by a narrow, four-storied tower, thought to have been used as an observatory by Maya priests.

Around about me, where bright-feathered parrots and macaws skimmed the treetops, a number of other spectacular buildings lay half swallowed by the encroaching forest. These were the Temple of the Foliated Cross, the Temple of the Sun, the Temple of the Count, and the Temple of the Lion—all names made up by archaeologists. So much of what the Maya had stood for, cared about, believed in and remembered from earlier times was irretrievably lost. Though we'd long ago learned to read their dates, we were only just beginning to make headway with the deciphering of their intricate hieroglyphs.

I stood and climbed the last few steps into the central chamber of the Temple. Set into the rear wall were two great grey slabs, and inscribed on them, in regimented rows like pieces on a chequerboard, were 620 separate Mayan glyphs. These took the form of faces, monstrous and human, together with a writhing bestiary of mythical creatures.

Palace
Temple of the Foliated Cross
Temple of the Sun
Temple of the Lion
Temple of the Inscriptions

Palenque.

What was being said here? No one knew for sure because the inscriptions, a mixture of word pictures and phonetic symbols, had not yet been fully decoded. It was evident, however, that a number of the glyphs referred to epochs thousands of years in the past, and spoke of people and gods who had played their parts in prehistoric events.[1]

Pacal's tomb

To the left of the hieroglyphs, let into the huge flagstones of the temple floor, was a steep descending internal stairway. This led to a room buried deep in the bowels of the pyramid, where the tomb of Lord Pacal lay. The stairs, of highly polished limestone blocks, were narrow and surprisingly slippery and moist. Adopting a crabbed, sideways stance, I switched on my torch and stepped gingerly down into the gloom, steadying myself against the southern wall as I did so.

This damp stairway had been a secret place from the date when it was originally sealed, in AD 683, until June 1952 when the Mexican archaeologist Alberto Ruz lifted the flagstones in the temple floor. Although a second such tomb was found at Palenque in 1994,[2] Ruz had the honour of being the first man to discover such a feature inside a New World pyramid. The stairway had been intentionally filled with rubble by its builders, and it took four more years before the archaeologists cleared it out completely and reached the bottom.

---

[1] *The Atlas of Mysterious Places* (ed. Jennifer Westwood), Guild Publishing, London, 1987, p. 70.

[2] *The Times,* London, 4 June 1994.

When they had done so they entered a narrow corbel-vaulted chamber. Spread out on the floor in front of them were the mouldering skeletons of five or possibly six young victims of sacrifice. A huge triangular slab of stone was visible at the far end of the chamber. When it was removed, Ruz was confronted by a remarkable tomb. He described it as ‘an enormous room that appeared to be graven in ice, a kind of grotto whose walls and roof seemed to have been planed in perfect surfaces, or an abandoned chapel whose cupola was draped with curtains of stalactites, and from whose floor arose thick stalagmites like the dripping of a candle.’[3]

The room, also roofed with a corbel vault, was 30 feet long and 23 feet high. Around the walls, in stucco relief, could be seen the striding figures of the Lords of the Night—the ‘Ennead’ of nine deities who ruled over the hours of darkness. Centre-stage, and overlooked by these figures, was a huge monolithic sarcophagus lidded with a five-ton slab of richly carved stone. Inside the sarcophagus was a tall skeleton draped with a treasure trove of jade ornaments. A mosaic death mask of 200 fragments of jade was affixed to the front of the skull. These, supposedly, were the remains of Pacal, a ruler of Palenque in the seventh century AD. The inscriptions stated that this monarch had been eighty years old at the time of his death, but the jade-draped skeleton the archaeologists found in the sarcophagus appeared to belong to a man half that age.[4]

Having reached the bottom of the stairway, some eighty-five feet below the floor of the temple, I crossed the chamber where the sacrificial victims had lain and gazed directly into Pacal’s tomb. The air was dank, full of mildew and damp-rot, and surprisingly cold. The sarcophagus, set into the floor of the tomb, had a curious shape, flared strikingly at the feet like an Ancient Egyptian mummy case. These were made of wood and were equipped with wide bases since they were frequently stood upright. But Pacal’s coffin was made of solid stone and was uncompromisingly horizontal. Why, then, had the Mayan artificers gone to so much trouble to widen its base when they must have known that it served no useful purpose? Could they have been slavishly copying a design-feature from some ancient model long after the *raison d’être* for the design had been forgotten?[5] Like the beliefs concerning the perils of the afterlife, might Pacal’s sarcophagus not be an expression of a common legacy linking Ancient Egypt with the ancient cultures of Central America?

Rectangular in shape, the heavy stone lid of the sarcophagus was ten inches thick, three feet wide and twelve and a half feet long. It, too, seemed to have been modelled on the same original as the magnificent engraved blocks the Ancient Egyptians had used for this exact purpose.

---

[3] Quoted in *The Atlas of Mysterious Places,* pp. 68-9.

[4] Ibid. Michael D. Coe, *The Maya,* Thames and Hudson, London, 1991, pp. 108-9.

[5] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* pp. 94-5.

Indeed, it would not have looked out of place in the Valley of the Kings. But there was one major difference. The scene carved on top of the sarcophagus lid was unlike anything that ever came out of Egypt. Lit in my torch beam, it showed a clean-shaven man dressed in what looked like a tight-fitting body-suit, the sleeves and leggings of which were gathered into elaborate cuffs at the wrists and ankles. The man lay semi-reclined in a bucket seat which supported his lower back and thighs, the nape of his neck resting comfortably against some kind of headrest, and he was peering forward intently. His hands seemed to be in motion, as though they were operating levers and controls, and his feet were bare, tucked up loosely in front of him.

Was this supposed to be Pacal, the Maya king?

If so, why was he shown operating some kind of machine? The Maya weren't supposed to have had machines. They weren't even supposed to have discovered the wheel. Yet with its side panels, rivets, tubes and other gadgets, the structure Pacal reclined in resembled a technological device much more strongly than it did 'the transition of one man's living soul to the realms of the dead',[6] as one authority claimed, or the king 'falling back into the fleshless jaws of the earth monster',[7] as another argued.

I remembered 'Man in Snake', the Olmec relief described in Chapter Seventeen. It, too, had looked like a naïve depiction of a piece of technology. Furthermore, 'Man in Snake' had come from La Venta, where it had been associated with several bearded figures, apparently Caucasians. Pacal's tomb was at least a thousand years younger than any of the La Venta treasures. Nevertheless, a tiny jade statuette was found lying close to the skeleton inside the sarcophagus, and it appeared to be much older than the other grave-goods also placed there. It depicted an elderly Caucasian, dressed in long robes, with a goatee beard.[8]

Pyramid of the Magician

Uxmal, Yucatan

On a stormy afternoon, 700 kilometres north of Palenque, I began to climb the steps of yet another pyramid. It was a steep building, oval rather than square in plan, 240 feet long at the base and 120 feet wide. It was, moreover, very high, rising 120 feet above the surrounding plain.

Since time out of mind this edifice, which did look like the castle of a necromancer, had been known as the 'Pyramid of the Magician' and also as the 'House of the Dwarf'. These names were derived from a Maya legend which asserted that a dwarf with supernatural powers had raised the entire building in just one night.[9]

---

[6] *The Atlas of Mysterious Places,* p. 70.

[7] *Time Among the Maya,* p. 298.

[8] *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* pp. 95-6.

The steps, as I climbed them, seemed more and more perversely narrow. My instinct was to lean forward, flatten myself against the side of the pyramid, and cling on for dear life. Instead I looked up at the angry, overcast sky above me. Flocks of birds circled, screeching wildly as though seeking refuge from some impending disaster, and the thick mass of low-lying cloud that had blotted out the sun a few hours earlier was now so agitated by high winds that it seemed to boil.

The Pyramid of the Magician was by no means unique in being associated with the supernatural powers of dwarves, whose architectural and masonry skills were widely renowned in Central America. ‘Construction work was easy for them,’ asserted one typical Maya legend, ‘all they had to do was whistle and heavy rocks would move into place.’[10]

A very similar tradition, as the reader may recall, claimed that the gigantic stone blocks of the mysterious Andean city of Tiahuanaco had been ‘carried through the air to the sound of a trumpet’.[11]

In both Central America and in the far-off regions of the Andes, therefore, strange sounds had been associated with the miraculous levitation of massive rocks.

What was I to make of this? Maybe, through some fluke, two almost identical ‘fantasies’ could have been independently invented in both these geographically remote areas. But that didn’t seem very likely. Equally worthy of consideration was the possibility that common recollections of an ancient building technology could have been preserved in stories such as these, a technology capable of lifting huge blocks of stone off the ground with ‘miraculous’ ease. Could it be relevant that memories of almost identical miracles were preserved in Ancient Egypt? There, in one typical tradition, a magician was said to have raised into the air ‘a huge vault of stone 200 cubits long and 50 cubits broad’?[12]

---

[9] *Mexico: Rough Guide,* Harrap-Columbus, London, 1989, p. 354.

[10] *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* p. 8. *Maya History and Religion,* p. 340.

[11] See Chapter Ten.

[12] E. A. Wallis Budge, *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* The Medici Society Ltd., 1911, volume II, p. 180.

Pyramid of the Magician
Nunnery Quadrangle
Great Pyramid

Uxmal.

The sides of the stairway I was climbing were richly decorated with what the nineteenth-century American explorer John Lloyd Stephens described as 'a species of sculptured mosaic'.[13] Oddly, although the Pyramid of the Magician had been built long centuries before the Conquest, the symbol most frequently featured in these mosaics was a close approximation of the Christian cross. Indeed there were two distinct kinds of 'Christian' crosses: one the wide-pawed *croix-patte* favoured by the Knights Templar and other crusading orders in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries; the other the x-shaped Saint Andrew's cross.

After climbing a further shorter flight of steps I reached the temple at the very top of the Magician's pyramid. It consisted of a single corbel-vaulted chamber from the ceiling of which large numbers of bats hung suspended. Like the birds and the clouds, they were visibly distressed by the sense of a huge storm brewing. In a furry mass they shuffled restlessly upside down, folding and unfolding their small leathery wings.

I took a rest on the high platform that surrounded the chamber. From here, looking down, I could see many more crosses. They were everywhere, literally all over this bizarre and ancient structure. I remembered the Andean city of Tiahuanaco and the crosses that had been carved there, in distant pre-Colombian times, on some of the great blocks of stone lying scattered around the building known as Puma Punku.[14] 'Man in Snake', the Olmec sculpture from La Venta, had also been engraved with two Saint Andrew's crosses long before the birth of Christ. And now, here at the Pyramid of the Magician in the Mayan site of

---

[13] John. L. Stephens, *Incidents of Travel in Central America, Chiapas and Yucatan,* Harper and Brothers, New York, 1841, vol. II, p. 422.
[14] See Chapter Twelve.

Uxmal, I was confronted by crosses yet again.

Bearded men ...

Serpents ...

Crosses ...

How likely was it to be an accident that symbols as distinctive as these should repeat themselves in widely separated cultures and at different periods of history? Why were they so often built into the fabric of sophisticated works of art and architecture?

A science of prophecy

Not for the first time I suspected that I might be looking at signs and icons left behind by some cult or secret society which had sought to keep the light of civilization burning in Central America (and perhaps elsewhere) through long ages of darkness. I thought it notable that the motifs of the bearded man, the Plumed Serpent, and the cross all tended to crop up whenever and wherever there were hints that a technologically advanced and as yet unidentified civilization might once have been in contact with the native cultures. And there was a sense of great age about this contact, as though it took place at such an early date that it had been almost forgotten. I thought again about the sudden way the Olmecs had emerged, around the middle of the second millennium BC, out of the swirling mists of opaque prehistory. All the archaeological evidence indicated that from the beginning they had venerated huge stone heads and stele showing bearded men. I found myself increasingly drawn to the possibility that some of those remarkable pieces of sculpture could have been part of a vast inheritance of civilization handed down to the peoples of Central America many thousands of years *before* the second millennium BC, and thereafter entrusted to the safekeeping of a secret wisdom cult, perhaps the cult of Quetzalcoatl.

Much had been lost. Nevertheless the tribes of this region—in particular the Maya, the builders of Palenque and Uxmal—had preserved something even more mysterious and wonderful than the enigmatic monoliths, something which declared itself even more persistently to be the legacy of an older and a higher civilization. We see in the next chapter that it was the mystical science of an ancient star-gazing folk, a science of time and measurement and prediction—a science of prophecy even—that the Maya had preserved most perfectly from the past. With it they inherited memories of a terrible, earth-destroying flood and an idiosyncratic legacy of empirical knowledge, knowledge of a high order which they shouldn't really have possessed, knowledge that we have only reacquired very recently ...

Chapter 21

A Computer for Calculating the End of the World

The Maya knew where their advanced learning originated. It was handed down to them, they said, from the First Men, the creatures of Quetzalcoatl, whose names had been Balam-Quitze (Jaguar with the Sweet Smile), Balam-Acab (Jaguar of the Night), Mahucutah (The Distinguished Name) and Iqui-Balam (Jaguar of the Moon).[1] According to the *Popol Vuh,* these forefathers:

> were endowed with intelligence; they saw and instantly they could see far; they succeeded in seeing; they succeeded in knowing all that there is in the world. The things hidden in the distance they saw without first having to move ... Great was their wisdom; their sight reached to the forests, the rocks, the lakes, the seas, the mountains, and the valleys. In truth, they were admirable men ... They were able to know all, and they examined the four corners, the four points of the arch of the sky, and the round face of the earth.[2]

The achievements of this race aroused the envy of several of the most powerful deities. 'It is not well that our creatures should know all,' opined these gods, 'Must they perchance be the equals of ourselves, their Makers, who can see afar, who know all and see all? ... Must they also be gods?'[3]

Obviously such a state of affairs could not be allowed to continue. After some deliberation an order was given and appropriate action taken:

> Let their sight reach only to that which is near; let them see only a little of the face of the earth ... Then the Heart of Heaven blew mist into their eyes which clouded their sight as when a mirror is breathed upon. Their eyes were covered and they could only see what was close, only that was clear to them ... In this way the wisdom and all the knowledge of the First Men were destroyed.[4]

Anyone familiar with the Old Testament will remember that the reason for the expulsion of Adam and Eve from the Garden of Eden had to do with similar divine concerns. After the First Man had eaten of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil,

> The Lord God said, 'Behold, the man has become as one of us, to know good and evil. Now, lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live for ever, [let us] send him forth from the Garden of Eden ...'[5]

The *Popol Vuh* is accepted by scholars as a great reservoir of uncontaminated, pre-Colombian tradition.[6] It is therefore puzzling to find such similarities between these traditions and those recorded in the *Genesis* story. Moreover, like so many of the other Old World/New World links we have identified, the character of the similarities is not suggestive of any kind of direct influence of one region on the other but of two different interpretations of the same set of events. Thus, for example:

---

[1] *Popol Vuh,* p. 167.

[2] Ibid., pp. 168-9.

[3] Ibid., p. 169.

[4] Ibid.

[5] *Genesis,* 4:22-4

- The biblical Garden of Eden looks like a metaphor for the state of blissful, almost 'godlike', knowledge that the 'First Men' of the *Popol Vuh* enjoyed.
- The essence of this knowledge was the ability to 'see all' and to 'know all'. Was this not precisely the ability Adam and Eve acquired after eating the forbidden fruit, which grew on the branches of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil'?
- Finally, just as Adam and Eve were driven out of the Garden, so were the four First Men of the *Popol Vuh* deprived of their ability to 'see far'. Thereafter 'their eyes were covered and they could only see what was close ...'

Both the *Popol Vuh* and *Genesis* therefore tell the story of mankind's fall from grace. In both cases, this state of grace was closely associated with *knowledge,* and the reader is left in no doubt that the knowledge in question was so remarkable that it conferred godlike powers on those who possessed it.

The Bible, adopting a dark and muttering tone of voice, calls it 'the knowledge of good and evil' and has nothing further to add. The *Popol Vuh* is much more informative. It tells us that the knowledge of the First Men consisted of the ability to see 'things hidden in the distance', that they were astronomers who 'examined the four corners, the four points of the arch of the sky', and that they were geographers who succeeded in measuring 'the round face of the earth'.[7]

Geography is about maps. In Part I we saw evidence suggesting that the cartographers of an as yet unidentified civilization might have mapped the planet with great thoroughness at an early date. Could the *Popol Vuh* be transmitting some garbled memory of that same civilization when it speaks nostalgically of the First Men and of the miraculous geographical knowledge they possessed?

Geography is about maps, and astronomy is about stars. Very often the two disciplines go hand in hand because stars are essential for navigation on long sea-going voyages of discovery (and long sea-going voyages of discovery are essential for the production of accurate maps).

Is it accidental that the First Men of the *Popol Vuh* were remembered not only for studying 'the round face of the earth' but for their contemplation of 'the arch of heaven'?[8] And is it a coincidence that the outstanding achievement of Mayan society was its observational astronomy, upon which, through the medium of advanced mathematical calculations, was based a clever, complex, sophisticated and very accurate calendar?

---

[6] *Popol Vuh,* Introduction, p. 16. See also *The Magic and Mysteries of Mexico,* p. 250ff.

[7] *Popol Vuh,* pp. 168-9.

[8] Ibid.

Knowledge out of place

In 1954 J. Eric Thompson, a leading authority on the archaeology of Central America, confessed to a deep sense of puzzlement at a number of glaring disparities he had identified between the generally unremarkable achievements of the Mayas, as a whole and the advanced state of their astro-calendrical knowledge, 'What mental quirks,' he asked, 'led the Maya intelligentsia to chart the heavens, yet fail to grasp the principle of the wheel; to visualize eternity, as no other semi-civilized people has ever done, yet ignore the short step from corbelled to true arch; to count in millions, yet never to learn to weigh a sack of corn?'[9]

Perhaps the answer to these questions is much simpler than Thompson realized. Perhaps the astronomy, the deep understanding of time, and the long-term mathematical calculations, were not 'quirks' at all. Perhaps they were the constituent parts of a coherent *but very specific body of knowledge* that the Maya had inherited, more or less intact, from an older and wiser civilization. Such an inheritance would explain the contradictions observed by Thompson, and there is no need for any dispute on the point. We already know that the Maya received their calendar as a legacy from the Olmecs (a thousand years earlier, the Olmecs were using exactly the same system). The real question, should be, where did the Olmecs get it? What kind of level of technological and scientific development was required for a civilization to devise a calendar as good as this?

Take the case of the solar year. In modern Western society we still make use of a solar calendar which was introduced in Europe in 1582 and is based on the best scientific knowledge then available: the famous Gregorian calendar. The Julian calendar, which it replaced, computed the period of the earth's orbit around the sun at 365.25 days. Pope Gregory XIII's reform substituted a finer and more accurate calculation: 365.2425 days. Thanks to scientific advances since 1582 we now know that the *exact* length of the solar year is 365.2422 days. The Gregorian calendar therefore incorporates a very small plus error, just 0.0003 of a day—pretty impressive accuracy for the sixteenth century.

Strangely enough, though its origins are wrapped in the mists of antiquity far deeper than the sixteenth century, the Mayan calendar achieved even greater accuracy. It calculated the solar year at 365.2420 days, a minus error of only 0.0002 of a day.[10]

---

[9] J. Eric Thompson, *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* Pimlico, London, 1993, p. 13.

Similarly, the Maya knew the time taken by the moon to orbit the earth. Their estimate of this period was 29.528395 days—extremely close to the true figure of 29.530588 days computed by the finest modern methods.[11] The Mayan priests also had in their possession very accurate tables for the prediction of solar and lunar eclipses and were aware that these could occur only within plus or minus eighteen days of the node (when the moon's path crosses the apparent path of the sun).[12] Finally, the Maya were remarkably accomplished mathematicians. They possessed an advanced technique of metrical calculation by means of a chequerboard device we ourselves have only discovered (or rediscovered?) in the last century.[13] They also understood perfectly and used the abstract concept of zero[14] and were acquainted with place numerations.

These are esoteric fields. As Thompson observed,

> The cipher (nought) and place numerations are so much parts of our cultural heritage and seem such obvious conveniences that it is difficult to comprehend how their invention could have been long delayed. Yet neither ancient Greece with its great mathematicians, nor ancient Rome, had any inkling of either nought or place numeration. To write 1848 in Roman numerals requires eleven letters: MDCCCXLVIII. Yet the Maya had a system of place-value notation very much like our own at a time when the Romans were still using their clumsy method.[15]

Isn't it a bit odd that this otherwise unremarkable Central American tribe should, at such an early date, have stumbled upon an innovation which Otto Neugebauer, the historian of science, has described as 'one of the most fertile inventions of humanity'.[16]

Someone else's science?

Let us now consider the question of Venus, a planet that was of immense symbolic importance to all the ancient peoples of Central America, who identified it strongly with Quetzalcoatl (or Gucumatz or Kukulkan, as the Plumed Serpent was known in the Maya dialects).[17]

Unlike the Ancient Greeks, but like the Ancient Egyptians, the Maya understood that Venus was both 'the morning star' and 'the evening star'.[18] They understood other things about it as well. The 'synodical revolution' of a planet is the period of time it takes to return to any given point in the sky—as viewed from earth. Venus revolves around the sun every 224.7 days, while the earth follows its own slightly wider orbit. The composite result of these two motions is that Venus rises in exactly the same place in the earth's sky approximately every 584 days.

---

[10] William Gates's notes (p. 81) to Diego de Landa's *Yucatan before and after the Conquest.*

[11] This is evident from the Dresden Codex. See, for example, *An Introduction to the Study of Maya Hieroglyphs,* p. 32.

[12] *The Maya,* p. 176; *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 291; *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* p. 173.

[13] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 287.

[14] *The Maya,* p. 173.

[15] *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* pp. 178-9.

[16] Cited in *The Maya,* p. 173.

[17] *World Mythology,* p. 241.

Whoever invented the sophisticated calendrical system inherited by the Maya had been aware of this and had found ingenious ways to integrate it with other interlocking cycles. Moreover, it is clear from the mathematics which brought these cycles together that the ancient calendar masters had understood that 584 days was only an *approximation* and that the movements of Venus are by no means regular. They had therefore worked out the exact figure established by today's science for the *average* synodical revolution of Venus over very long periods of time.[19] That figure is 583.92 days and it was knitted into the fabric of the Mayan calendar in numerous intricate and complex ways.[20] For example, to reconcile it with the so-called 'sacred year' (the *tzolkin* of 260 days, which was divided into 13 months of 20 days each) the calendar called for a correction of four days to be made every 61 Venus years. In addition, during every fifth cycle, a correction of eight days was made at the end of the 57th revolution. Once these steps were taken, the *tzolkin* and the synodical revolution of Venus were intermeshed so tightly that the degree of error to which the equation was subject was staggeringly small—one day in 6000 years.[21] And what made this all the more remarkable was that a further series of precisely calculated adjustments kept the Venus cycle and the *tzolkin* not only in harmony with each other but in exact relationship with the solar year. Again this was achieved in a manner which ensured that the calendar was capable of doing its job, virtually error-free, over vast expanses of time.[22]

Why did the 'semi-civilized' Maya *need* this kind of high-tech precision? Or did they inherit, in good working order, a calendar engineered to fit the needs of a much earlier and far more advanced civilization?

Consider the crowning jewel of Maya calendrics, the so-called 'Long Count'. This system of calculating dates also expressed beliefs about the past—notably, the widely held belief that time operated in Great Cycles which witnessed recurrent creations and destructions of the world. According to the Maya, the current Great Cycle began in darkness on 4 *Ahau* 8 *Cumku,* a date corresponding to 13 August 3114 BC in our own calendar.[23] As we have seen, it was also believed that the cycle will come to an end, amid global destruction, on 4 *Ahau* 3 *Kankin:* 23 December AD 2012 in our calendar. The function of the Long Count was to record the elapse of time since the beginning of the current Great Cycle, literally to count off, one by one, the 5125 years allotted to our present creation.[24]

---

[18] *The Maya,* p. 176.

[19] *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* p. 170; *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 290.

[20] *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* p. 170.

[21] Ibid., 170-1.

[22] Ibid., 169.

[23] *Breaking The Maya Code,* p. 275.

The Long Count is perhaps best envisaged as a sort of celestial adding machine, constantly calculating and recalculating the scale of our growing debt to the universe. Every last penny of that debt is going to be called in when the figure on the meter reads 5125.

So, at any rate, thought the Maya.

Calculations on the Long Count computer were not, of course, done in our numbers. The Maya used their own notation, which they had derived from the Olmecs, who had derived it from ... nobody knows. This notation was a combination of dots (signifying ones or units or multiples of twenty), bars (signifying fives or multiples of five times twenty), and a shell glyph signifying zero. Spans of time were counted by days (*kin*), periods of twenty days (*uinat*), 'computing years' of 360 days (*tun*), periods of 20 *tuns* (known as *katun*), and periods of 20 *katuns* (known as *bactun*). There were also 8000-*tun* periods (*pictun*) and 160,000-*tun* periods (*calabtun*) to mop up even larger calculations.[25]

All this should make clear that although the Maya believed themselves to be living in one Great Cycle that would surely come to a violent end they also knew that time was infinite and that it proceeded with its mysterious revolutions regardless of individual lives or civilizations. As Thompson summed up in his great study on the subject:

> In the Maya scheme the road over which time had marched stretched into a past so distant that the mind of man cannot comprehend its remoteness. Yet the Maya undauntedly retrod that road seeking its starting point. A fresh view, leading further backward, unfolded at every stage; the mellowed centuries blended into millennia, and they into tens of thousands of years, as those tireless inquirers explored deeper and still deeper into the eternity of the past. On a stela at Quiriga in Guatemala a date over 90 million years ago is computed; on another a date over 300 million years before that is given. These are actual computations, stating correctly day and month positions, and are comparable to calculations in our calendar giving the month positions on which Easter would have fallen at equivalent distances in the past. The brain reels at such astronomical figures ...[26]

Isn't all this a bit *avant-garde* for a civilization that didn't otherwise distinguish itself in many ways? It's true that Mayan architecture was good within its limits. But there was precious little else that these jungle-dwelling Indians did which suggested they might have had the capacity (or the need) to conceive of really *long* periods of time.

It's been a good deal less than two centuries since the majority of

---

[24] Ibid., pp. g, 275.

[25] José Arguelles, *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology,* Bear and Co., Santa Fe, New Mexico, 1987, pp. 26; *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 50.

[26] *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* pp. 13-14, 165.

Western intellectuals abandoned Bishop Usher's opinion that the world was created in 4004 BC and accepted that it must be infinitely older than that.[27] In plain English this means that the ancient Maya had a far more accurate understanding of the true immensity of geological time, and of the vast antiquity of our planet, than did anyone in Britain, Europe or North America until Darwin propounded the theory of evolution.

So how come the Maya got handy with big periods like hundreds of millions of years? Was it a freak of cultural development? Or did they inherit the calendrical and mathematical tools which facilitated, and enabled them to develop, this sophisticated understanding? If an inheritance was involved, it is legitimate to ask what the original inventors of the Mayan calendar's computer-like circuitry had intended it to do. What had they designed it for? Had they simply conceived of all its complexities to concoct 'a challenge to the intellect, a sort of tremendous anagram', as one authority claimed?[28] Or could they have had a more pragmatic and important objective in mind?

We have seen that the obsessive concern of Mayan society, and indeed of all the ancient cultures of Central America, was with calculating—and if possible postponing—the end of the world. Could this be the purpose the mysterious calendar was designed to fulfill? Could it have been a mechanism for predicting some terrible cosmic or geological catastrophe?

---

[27] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 12:214.

[28] *The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* p. 168.

Chapter 22

City of the Gods

The overwhelming message of a large number of Central American legends is that the Fourth Age of the world ended very badly. A catastrophic deluge was followed by a long period during which the light of the sun vanished from the sky and the air was filled with a tenebrous darkness. Then:

> The gods gathered together at Teotihuacan ['the place of the gods'] and wondered anxiously who was to be the next Sun. Only the sacred fire [the material representation of Huehueteotl, the god who gave life its beginning] could be seen in the darkness, still quaking following the recent chaos. 'Someone will have to sacrifice himself, throw himself into the fire,' they cried, 'only then will there be a Sun.'[1]

A drama ensued in which two deities (Nanahuatzin and Tecciztecatl) immolated themselves for the common good. One burned quickly in the centre of the sacred fire; the other roasted slowly on the embers at its edge 'The gods waited for a long time until eventually the sky started to glow red as at dawn. In the east appeared the great sphere of the sun, life-giving and incandescent ...'[2]

It was at this moment of cosmic rebirth that Quetzalcoatl manifested himself. His mission was with humanity of the Fifth Age. He therefore took the form of a human being—a bearded white man, just like Viracocha.

In the Andes, Viracocha's capital was Tiahuanaco. In Central America, Quetzalcoatl's was the supposed birth-place of the Fifth Sun, Teotihuacan, the city of the gods.[3]

---

[1] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* pp. 25-6.

[2] Ibid., pp. 26-7.

[3] *Ancient America,* Time-Life International, 1970, p. 45; *Aztecs: Reign of Blood and Splendour,* p. 54; *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 24.

Pyramid of the Moon
Pyramid of the Sun
Pyramid of the Quetzalcoatl
The Citadel

Teotihuacan.

The Citadel, the Temple and the Map of Heaven

Teotihuacan, 50 *kilometres north-east of Mexico City*
I stood in the airy enclosure of the Citadel and looked north across the morning haze towards the Pyramids of the Sun and the Moon. Set amid grey-green scrub country, and ringed by distant mountains, these two great monuments played their parts in a symphony of ruins strung out along the axis of the so-called 'Street of the Dead'. The Citadel lay at the approximate mid point of this wide avenue which ran perfectly straight for more than four kilometres. The Pyramid of the Moon was at its northern extreme, the Pyramid of the Sun offset somewhat to its east.

In the context of such a geometric site, an exact north-south or east-west orientation might have been expected. It was therefore surprising that the architects who had planned Teotihuacan had deliberately chosen to incline the Street of the Dead 15° 30' east of north. There were several theories as to why this eccentric orientation had been selected, but none was especially convincing. Growing numbers of scholars, however, were beginning to wonder whether astronomical alignments might have been involved. One, for example, had proposed that the Street of the Dead might have been 'built to face the setting of the Pleiades at the time when it was constructed'.[4] Another, Professor Gerald Hawkins, had suggested that a ‘Sirius-Pleides axis’ could also have played a part.[5] And Stansbury Hagar (secretary of the Department of Ethnology at the Brooklyn Institute of the Arts and Sciences), had suggested that the street might represent the Milky Way.[6]

---

[4] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 67.

Indeed Hagar went further than this, seeing the portrayal of specific planets and stars in many of the pyramids, mounds and other structures that hovered like fixed satellites around the axis of the Street of the Dead. His complete thesis was that Teotihuacan had been designed as a kind of ‘map of heaven’: ‘It reproduced on earth a supposed celestial plan of the sky-world where dwelt the deities and spirits of the dead.’[7]

During the 1960s and 1970s Hagar’s intuitions were tested in the field by Hugh Harleston Jr., an American engineer resident in Mexico, who carried out a comprehensive mathematical survey at Teotihuacan. Harleston reported his findings in October 1974 at the International Congress of Americanists.[8] His paper, which was full of daring and innovative ideas, contained some particularly curious information about the Citadel and about the Temple of Quetzalcoatl located at the eastern extreme of this great square compound.

The Temple was regarded by scholars as one of the best-preserved archaeological monuments in Central America.[9] This was because the original, prehistoric structure had been partially buried beneath another much later mound immediately in front of it to the west. Excavation of that mound had revealed the elegant six-stage pyramid that now confronted me. It stood 72 feet high and its base covered an area of 82,000 square feet.

Still bearing traces of the original multicoloured paints which had coated it in antiquity, the exposed Temple was a beautiful and strange sight. The predominant sculptural motif was a series of huge serpent heads protruding three-dimensionally out of the facing blocks and lining the sides of the massive central stairway. The elongated jaws of these oddly humanoid reptiles were heavily endowed with fangs, and the upper lips with a sort of handlebar moustache. Each serpent’s thick neck was ringed by an elaborate plume of feathers—the unmistakable symbol of Quetzalcoatl.[10]

What Harleston’s investigations had shown was that a complex mathematical relationship appeared to exist among the principal structures lined up along the Street of the Dead (and indeed beyond it). This relationship suggested something extraordinary, namely that Teotihuacan might originally have been designed as a precise scale-model of the solar system. At any rate, if the centre line of the Temple of Quetzalcoatl were taken as denoting the position of the sun, markers laid out northwards from it along the axis of the Street of the Dead seemed to indicate the correct orbital distances of the inner planets, the asteroid belt, Jupiter, Saturn (represented by the so-called 'Sun' Pyramid), Uranus (by the 'Moon' Pyramid), and Neptune and Pluto by as yet unexcavated mounds some kilometres farther north.[11]

---

[5] *Beyond Stonehenge,* pp. 187-8.

[6] Cited in *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* pp. 220-1.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Hugh Harleston Jr., ‘A Mathematical Analysis of Teotihuacan’, XLI International Congress of Americanists, 3 October 1974.

[9] Richard Bloomgarden, *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan,* Editur S. A. Mexico, 1993, p. 14.

[10] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 215.

If these correlations were more than coincidental, then, at the very least, they indicated the presence at Teotihuacan of an advanced observational astronomy, one not surpassed by modern science until a relatively late date. Uranus remained unknown to our own astronomers until 1787, Neptune until 1846 and Pluto until 1930. Even the most conservative estimate of Teotihuacan's antiquity, by contrast, suggested that the principal ingredients of the site-plan (including the Citadel, the Street of the Dead and the Pyramids of the Sun and the Moon) must date back *at least* to the time of Christ.[12] No known civilization of that epoch, either in the Old World or in the New, is supposed to have had any knowledge at all of the outer planets—let alone to have possessed accurate information concerning their orbital distances from each other and from the sun.

Egypt and Mexico—more coincidences?

After completing his studies of the pyramids and avenues of Teotihuacan, Stansbury Hagar concluded: 'We have not yet realized either the importance or the refinement, or the widespread distribution throughout ancient America, of the astronomical cult of which the celestial plan was a feature, and of which Teotihuacan was one of the principal centres.'[13]

But was this just an astronomical 'cult'? Or was it something approximating more closely to what we might call a science? And whether cult or science, was it realistic to suppose that it had enjoyed 'widespread distribution' only in the Americas when there was so much evidence linking it to other parts of the ancient world?

For example, archaeo-astronomers making use of the latest star-mapping computer programmes had recently demonstrated that the three world-famous pyramids on Egypt's Giza plateau formed an exact terrestrial diagram of the three belt stars in the constellation of Orion.[14] Nor was this the limit of the celestial map the Ancient Egyptian priests had created in the sands on the west bank of the Nile. Included in their overall vision, as we shall see in Parts VI and VII, there was a natural feature—the river Nile—which was exactly where it should be had it been designed to represent the Milky Way.[15]

---

[11] Ibid., pp. 266-9.

[12] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 67.

[13] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 221.

[14] *The Orion Mystery.*

The incorporation of a 'celestial plan' into key sites in Egypt and Mexico did not by any means exclude religious functions. On the contrary, whatever else they may have been intended for it is certain that the monuments of Teotihuacan, like those of the Giza plateau, played important religious roles in the lives of the communities they served.

Thus Central American traditions collected in the sixteenth century by Father Bernardino de Sahagun gave eloquent expression to a widespread belief that Teotihuacan had fulfilled at least one specific and important religious function in ancient times. According to these legends the City of the Gods was so known because 'the Lords therein buried, after their deaths, did not perish but turned into gods ...'[16] In other words, it was 'the place where men became gods'.[17] It was additionally known as 'the place of those who had the road of the gods',[18] and 'the place where gods were made'.[19]

Was it a coincidence, I wondered, that this seemed to have been the religious purpose of the three pyramids at Giza? The archaic hieroglyphs of the Pyramid Texts, the oldest coherent body of writing in the world, left little room for doubt that the ultimate objective of the rituals carried out within those colossal structures was to bring about the deceased pharaoh's transfiguration—to 'throw open the doors of the firmament and to make a road' so that he might 'ascend into the company of the gods'.[20]

The notion of pyramids as devices designed (presumably in some metaphysical sense) 'to turn men into gods' was, it seemed to me, too idiosyncratic and peculiar to have been arrived at independently in both Ancient Egypt and Mexico. So, too, was the idea of using the layout of sacred sites to incorporate a celestial plan.

Moreover, there were other strange similarities that deserved to be considered.

Just as at Giza, three principal pyramids had been built at Teotihuacan: the Pyramid/Temple of Quetzalcoatl, the Pyramid of the Sun and the Pyramid of the Moon. Just as at Giza, the site plan was not symmetrical, as one might have expected, but involved two structures in direct alignment with each other while the third appeared to have been deliberately offset to one side. Finally, at Giza, the summits of the Great Pyramid and the Pyramid of Khafre were level, even though the former was a taller building than the latter. Likewise, at Teotihuacan, the summits of the Pyramids of the Sun and the Moon were level even though the former was taller. The reason was the same in both cases: the Great Pyramid was built on lower ground than the Pyramid of Cephren, and the Pyramid of the Sun on lower ground than the Pyramid of the Moon.[21]

---

[15] Ibid.

[16] Bernardino de Sahagun, cited in *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 23.

[17] *Mexico: Rough Guide,* p. 216.

[18] *The Atlas of Mysterious Places,* p. 158.

[19] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 24.

[20] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* Utt. 667A, p. 281.

Could all this be coincidence? Was it not more logical to conclude that there was an ancient connection between Mexico and Egypt?

For reasons I have outlined in Chapters Eighteen and Nineteen I doubted whether any direct, causal link was involved—at any rate within historic times. Once again, however, as with the Mayan calendar, and as with the early maps of Antarctica, was it not worth keeping an open mind to the possibility that we might be dealing with a legacy: that the pyramids of Egypt and the ruins of Teotihuacan might express the technology, the geographical knowledge, the observational astronomy (and perhaps also the religion) of a forgotten civilization of the past which had once, as the *Popul Vuh* claimed, 'examined the four corners, the four points of the arch of the sky, and the round face of the earth'?

There was widespread agreement among academics concerning the antiquity of the Giza pyramids, thought to be about 4500 years old.[22] No such unanimity existed with regard to Teotihuacan. Neither the Street of the Dead, nor the Temple of Quetzalcoatl, nor the Pyramids of the Sun and the Moon had ever been definitively dated.[23] The majority of scholars believed that the city had flourished between 100 BC and AD 600, but others argued strongly that it must have risen to prominence much earlier, between 1500 and 1000 BC. There were others still who sought, largely on geological grounds, to push the foundation date back to 4000 BC before the eruption of the nearby volcano Xitli.[24]

Amid all this uncertainty about the age of Teotihuacan, I had not been surprised to discover that no one had the faintest idea of the identity of those who had actually built the largest and most remarkable metropolis ever to have existed in the pre-Colombian New World.[25] All that could be said for sure was this: when the Aztecs, on their march to imperial power, first stumbled upon the mysterious city in the twelfth century AD, its colossal edifices and avenues were already old beyond imagining and so densely overgrown that they seemed more like natural features than works of man.[26] Attached to them, however, was a thread of local legend, passed down from generation to generation, which asserted that they had been built by giants[27] and that their purpose had been to transform men into gods.

---

[21] *The Ancient Kingdoms Of Mexico,* p. 74; *The Traveller's Key To Ancient Egypt,* pp. 110-35.

[22] See, for example, Ahmed Fakhry, *The Pyramids,* University of Chicago Press, 1969.

[23] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* pp. 230-3.

[24] Ibid.

[25] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* p. 282.

[26] *Mysteries of 'the Mexican Pyramids,* pp. 11-12.

[27] Ibid.

Hints of forgotten wisdom

Leaving the Temple of Quetzalcoatl behind me, I recrossed the Citadel in a westerly direction.

There was no archaeological evidence that this enormous enclosure had ever served as a citadel—or, for that matter, that it had any kind of military or defensive function at all. Like so much else about Teotihuacan it had clearly been planned with painstaking care, and executed with enormous effort, but its true purpose remained unidentified by modern scholarship.[28] Even the Aztecs, who had been responsible for naming the Pyramids of the Sun and the Moon (an attribution which had stuck though no one had any idea what the original builders had called them) had failed to invent a name for the Citadel. It had been left to the Spaniards to label it as they did—an understandable conceit since the 30-acre central patio of La Ciudadela was surrounded by massively thick embankments more than 23 feet high and some 1500 feet long on each side.[29]

My walk had now brought me to the western extreme of the patio. I climbed a steep set of stairs that led to the top of the embankment and turned north on to the Street of the Dead. Once again I had to remind myself that this was almost certainly not what the Teotihuacanos (whoever they were) had called the immense and impressive avenue. The Spanish name Calle de los Muertos was of Aztec origin, apparently based on speculation that the numerous mounds on either side of the Street were graves (which, as it happened, they were not).[30]

We have already considered the possibility that the Way of the Dead may have served as a terrestrial counterpart of the Milky Way. Of interest in this regard is the work of another American, Alfred E. Schlemmer, who—like Hugh Harleston Jr.—was an engineer. Schlemmer's field was technological forecasting, with specific reference to the prediction of earthquakes,[31] on which he presented a paper at the Eleventh National Convention of Chemical Engineers (in Mexico City in October 1971).

Schlemmer's argument was that the Street of the Dead might never have been a street at all. Instead, it might originally have been laid out as a row of linked reflecting pools, filled with water which had descended through a series of locks from the Pyramid of the Moon, at the northern extreme, to the Citadel in the south.

As I walked steadily northward towards the still-distant Moon Pyramid, it seemed to me that this theory had several points in its favour. For a start the 'Street' was blocked at regular intervals by high partition walls, at the foot of which the remains of well-made sluices could clearly be seen. Moreover, the lie of the land would have facilitated a north-south hydraulic flow since the base of the Moon Pyramid stood on ground that was approximately 100 feet higher than the area in front of the Citadel. The partitioned sections could easily have been filled with water and might indeed have served as reflecting pools, creating a spectacle far more dramatic than those offered by the Taj Mahal or the fabled Shalimar Gardens. Finally, the Teotihuacan Mapping Project (financed by the National Science Foundation in Washington DC and led by Professor Rene Millon of the University of Rochester) had demonstrated conclusively that the ancient city had possessed 'many carefully laid-out canals and systems of branching waterways, artificially dredged into straightened portions of a river, which formed a network within Teotihuacan and ran all the way to [Lake Texcoco], now ten miles distant but perhaps closer in antiquity'.[32]

---

[28] Ibid., p. 213.

[29] Ibid.

[30] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 72.

[31] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* pp. 271-2.

There was much argument about what this vast hydraulic system had been designed to do. Schlemmer's contention was that the particular waterway he had identified had been built to serve a pragmatic purpose as 'a long-range seismic monitor'—part of 'an ancient science, no longer understood'.[33] He pointed out that remote earthquakes 'can cause standing waves to form on a liquid surface right across the planet' and suggested that the carefully graded and spaced reflecting pools of the Street of the Dead might have been designed 'to enable Teotihuacanos to read from the standing waves formed there the location and strength of earthquakes around the globe, thus allowing them to predict such an occurrence in their own area'.[34]

---

[32] Ibid., p. 232.

[33] Ibid., p. 272.

[34] Ibid.

Reconstruction of Teotihuacan, looking down the Way of the Dead from behind the Pyramid of the Moon. The Pyramid of the Sun lies to the left of the Way of the Dead. Visible in the distance beyond it is the pyramid-temple of Quetzalcoatl inside the large compound of the citadel.

There was, of course, no proof of Schlemmer's theory. However, when I remembered the fixation with earthquakes and floods apparent everywhere in Mexican mythology, and the equally obsessive concern with forecasting future events evident in the Maya calendar, I felt less inclined to dismiss the apparently far-fetched conclusions of the American engineer. If Schlemmer were right, if the ancient Teotihuacanos had indeed understood the principles of resonant vibration and had put them into practice in seismic forecasting, the implication was that they were the possessors of an advanced science. And if people like Hagar and Harleston were right—if, for example, a scale-model of the solar system had also been built into the basic geometry of Teotihuacan—this too suggested that the city was founded by a scientifically evolved civilization not yet identified.

I continued to walk northwards along the Street of the Dead and turned east towards the Pyramid of the Sun. Before reaching this great monument, however, I paused to examine a ruined patio, the principal feature of which was an ancient 'temple' which concealed a perplexing mystery beneath its rock floor.

Chapter 23

The Sun and the Moon and the Way of the Dead

Some archaeological discoveries are heralded with much fanfare; others, for various reasons, are not. Among this latter category must be included the thick and extensive layer of sheet mica found sandwiched between two of the upper levels of the Teotihuacan Pyramid of the Sun when it was being probed for restoration in 1906. The lack of interest which greeted this discovery, and the absence of any follow-up studies to determine its possible function is quite understandable because the mica, which had a considerable commercial value, was removed and sold as soon as it had been excavated. The culprit was apparently Leopoldo Bartres, who had been commissioned to restore the time-worn pyramid by the Mexican government.[1]

There has also been a much more recent discovery of mica at Teotihuacan (in the ‘Mica Temple’) and this too has passed almost without notice. Here the reason is harder to explain because there has been no looting and the mica remains on site.[2]

One of a group of buildings, the Mica Temple is situated around a patio about 1000 feet south of the west face of the Pyramid of the Sun. Directly under a floor paved with heavy rock slabs, archaeologists financed by the Viking Foundation excavated two massive sheets of mica which had been carefully and purposively installed at some extremely remote date by a people who must have been skilled in cutting and handling this material. The sheets are ninety feet square and form two layers, one laid directly on top of the other.[3]

Mica is not a uniform substance but contains trace elements of different metals depending on the kind of rock formation in which it is found. Typically these metals include potassium and aluminum and also, in varying quantities, ferrous and ferric iron, magnesium, lithium, manganese and titanium. The trace elements in Teotihuacan’s Mica Temple indicate that the underfloor sheets belong to a type which occurs only in Brazil, some 2000 miles away.[4] Clearly, therefore, the builders of the Temple must have had a specific need for this particular kind of mica and were prepared to go to considerable lengths to obtain it, otherwise they could have used the locally available variety more cheaply and simply.

Mica does not leap to mind as an obvious general-purpose flooring material. Its use to form layers *underneath* a floor, and thus completely out of sight, seems especially bizarre when we remember that no other ancient structure in the Americas, or anywhere else in the world, has been found to contain a feature like this.[5]

---

[1] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 202.

[2] Ibid. *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan,* p. 16.

[3] *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan,* p. 16.

[4] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 8:90, and *The Lost Realms,* p. 53.

It is frustrating that we will never be able to establish the exact position, let alone the purpose, of the large sheet that Bartres excavated and removed from the Pyramid of the Sun in 1906. The two intact layers in the Mica Temple, on the other hand, resting as they do in a place where they had no decorative function, look as though they were designed to do a particular job. Let us note in passing that mica possesses characteristics which suit it especially well for a range of technological applications. In modern industry, it is used in the construction of capacitors and is valued as a thermal and electric insulator. It is also opaque to fast neutrons and can act as a moderator in nuclear reactions.

Erasing messages from the past

Pyramid of the Sun, Teotihuacan

Having climbed more than 200 feet up a series of flights of stone stairs I reached the summit and looked towards the zenith. It was midday 19 May, and the sun was directly overhead, as it would be again on 25 July. On these two dates, and not by accident, the west face of the pyramid was oriented precisely to the position of the setting sun.[6]

A more curious but equally deliberate effect could be observed on the equinoxes, 20 March and 22 September. Then the passage of the sun's rays from south to north resulted at noon in the progressive obliteration of a perfectly straight shadow that ran along one of the lower stages of the western façade. The whole process, from complete shadow to complete illumination, took exactly 66.6 seconds. It had done so without fail, year-in year-out, ever since the pyramid had been built and would continue to do so until the giant edifice crumbled into dust.[7]

What this meant, of course, was that at least one of the many functions of the pyramid had been to serve as a 'perennial clock', precisely signalling the equinoxes and thus facilitating calendar corrections as and when necessary for a people apparently obsessed, like the Maya, with the elapse and measuring of time. Another implication was that the master-builders of Teotihuacan must have possessed an enormous body of astronomic and geodetic data and referred to this data to set the Sun Pyramid at the precise orientation necessary to achieve the desired equinoctial effects.

---

[5] *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan*, p. 16.

[6] *Mexico: Rough Guide*, p. 217.

[7] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, p. 252.

This was planning and architecture of a high order. It had survived the passage of the millennia and it had survived the wholesale remodelling of much of the pyramid's outer shell conducted in the first decade of the twentieth century by the self-styled restorer, Leopoldo Bartres. In addition to plundering precious evidence that might have helped us towards a better understanding of the purposes for which the enigmatic structure had been built, this repulsive lackey of Mexico's corrupt dictator Porfirio Diaz had removed the outer layer of stone, mortar and plaster *to a depth of more than twenty feet* from the entire northern, eastern and southern faces. The result was catastrophic: the underlying adobe surface began to dissolve in heavy rains and to exhibit plastic flow which threatened to destroy the whole edifice. Although the slippage was halted with hasty remedial measures, nothing could change the fact that the Sun Pyramid had been deprived of almost all its original surface features.

By modern archaeological standards this was, of course, an unforgivable act of desecration. Because of it, we will never learn the significance of the many sculptures, inscriptions, reliefs and artefacts that had almost certainly been removed with those twenty feet of the outer shell. Nor was this the only or even the most regrettable consequence of Bartres's grotesque vandalism. There was startling evidence which suggested that the unknown architects of the Pyramid of the Sun might have intentionally incorporated scientific data into many of the key dimensions of the great structure. This evidence had been gathered and extrapolated from the intact west face (which, not accidentally, was also the face where the intended equinoctial effects could still be seen), but thanks to Bartres, no similar information was likely to be forthcoming from the other three faces because of the arbitrary alterations imposed upon them. Indeed, by drastically distorting the original shape and size of so much of the pyramid, the Mexican 'restorer' had possibly deprived posterity of some of the most important lessons Teotihuacan had to teach.

Eternal numbers

The transcendental number known as *pi* is fundamental to advanced mathematics. With a value slightly in excess of 3.14 it is the ratio of the diameter of a circle to its circumference. In other words if the diameter of a circle is 12 inches, the circumference of that circle will be 12 inches x 3.14 = 37.68 inches. Likewise, since the diameter of a circle is exactly double the radius, we can use *pi* to calculate the circumference of any circle from its radius. In this case, however, the formula is the length of the radius multiplied by *2pi.* As an illustration let us take again a circle of 12 inches diameter. Its radius will be 6 inches and its circumference can be obtained as follows: 6 inches x 2 x 3.14 = 37.68 inches. Similarly a circle with a radius of 10 inches will have a circumference of 67.8 inches

(10 inches x 2 x 3.14) and a circle with a radius of 7 inches will have a circumference of 43.96 inches (7 inches x 2 x 3.14).

These formulae using the value of *pi* for calculating circumference from either diameter or radius apply to all circles, no matter how large or how small, and also, of course, to all spheres and hemispheres. They seem relatively simple—with hindsight. Yet their discovery, which represented a revolutionary breakthrough in mathematics, is thought to have been made late in human history. The orthodox view is that Archimedes in the third century BC was the first man to calculate *pi* correctly at 3.14.[8] Scholars do not accept that any of the mathematicians of the New World ever got anywhere near *pi* before the arrival of the Europeans in the sixteenth century. It is therefore disorienting to discover that the Great Pyramid at Giza (built more than 2000 years before the birth of Archimedes) and the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan, which vastly predates the conquest, both incorporate the value *of pi.* They do so, moreover, in much the same way, and in a manner which leaves no doubt that the ancient builders on both sides of the Atlantic were thoroughly conversant with this transcendental number.

The principal factors involved in the geometry of any pyramid are (1) the height of the summit above the ground, and (2) the perimeter of the monument at ground level. Where the Great Pyramid is concerned, the ratio between the original height (481.3949 feet[9]) and the perimeter (3023.16 feet[10]) turns out to be the same as the ratio between the radius and the circumference of a circle, i.e. *2pi.*[11] Thus, if we take the pyramid's height and multiply it by *2pi* (as we would with a circle's radius to calculate its circumference) we get an accurate read-out of the monument's perimeter (481.3949 feet 2 x 3.14 = 3023.16 feet). Alternatively, if we turn the equation around and start with the circumference at ground level, we get an equally accurate read-out of the height of the summit (3023.16 feet divided by 2 divided by 3.14 = 481.3949 feet).

Since it is almost inconceivable that such a precise mathematical correlation could have come about by chance, we are obliged to conclude that the builders of the Great Pyramid were indeed conversant with *pi* and that they deliberately incorporated its value into the dimensions of their monument.

Now let us consider the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan. The angle of its sides is 43.5°[12] (as opposed to 52° in the case of the Great Pyramid[13]). The Mexican monument has the gentler slope because the perimeter of its base, at 2932.8 feet,[14] is not much smaller than that of its Egyptian counterpart while its summit is considerably lower (approximately 233.5 feet prior to Bartres's, 'restoration'[15]).

---

[8] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 9:415.

[9] I. E. S. Edwards, *The Pyramids of Egypt,* Penguin, London, 1949, p. 87.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Ibid., p. 219.

[12] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 55.

[13] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 87, 219.

The *2pi* formula that worked at the Great Pyramid does not work with these measurements. A *4pi* formula does. Thus if we take the height of the Pyramid of the Sun (233.5 feet) and multiply it by *4pi* we once again obtain a very accurate read-out of the perimeter: 233.5 feet x 4 x 3.14 = 2932.76 feet (a discrepancy of less than half an inch from the true figure of 2932.8 feet).

This, surely, can no more be a coincidence than the *pi* relationship extrapolated from the dimensions of the Egyptian monument. Moreover, the very fact that both structures incorporate *pi* relationships (when none of the other pyramids on either side of the Atlantic does) strongly suggests not only the existence of advanced mathematical knowledge in antiquity but some sort of underlying *common purpose.*

The height of the Pyramid of the Sun x *4pi* = the perimeter of its base. The height of the Great Pyramid at Giza x 2*pi* = the perimeter of its base.

As we have seen the desired height/perimeter ratio of the Great

---

[14] *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* p. 74.

[15] *Mexico,* p. 201; *The Atlas of Mysterious Places,* p. 156.

Pyramid (*2pi*) called for the specification of a tricky and idiosyncratic angle of slope for its sides: 52°. Likewise, the desired height/perimeter ratio of the Pyramid of the Sun (*4pi*) called for the specification of an equally eccentric angle of slope: 43.5°. If there had been no ulterior motive, it would surely have been simpler for the Ancient Egyptian and Mexican architects to have opted for 45° (which they could easily have obtained and checked by bisecting a right angle).

What could have been the common purpose that led the pyramid builders on both sides of the Atlantic to such lengths to structure the value of *pi* so precisely into these two remarkable monuments? Since there seems to have been no direct contact between the civilizations of Mexico and Egypt in the periods when the pyramids were built, is it not reasonable to deduce that both, at some remote date, inherited certain ideas from a common source?

Is it possible that the shared idea expressed in the Great Pyramid and the Pyramid of the Sun could have to do with *spheres,* since these, like the pyramids, are three-dimensional objects (while circles, for example, have only two dimensions)? The desire to symbolize spheres in three-dimensional monuments with flat surfaces would explain why so much trouble was taken to ensure that both incorporated unmistakable *pi* relationships. Furthermore it seems likely that the intention of the builders of both of these monuments was not to symbolize spheres in general but to focus attention on one sphere in particular: the planet earth.

It will be a long while before orthodox archaeologists are prepared to accept that some peoples of the ancient world were advanced enough in science to have possessed good information about the shape and size of the earth. However, according to the calculations of Livio Catullo Stecchini, an American professor of the History of Science and an acknowledged expert on ancient measurement, the evidence for the existence of such anomalous knowledge in antiquity is irrefutable.[16] Stecchini's conclusions, which relate mainly to Egypt, are particularly impressive because they are drawn from mathematical and astronomical data which, by common consent, are beyond serious dispute.[17] A fuller examination of these conclusions, and of the nature of the data on which they rest, is presented in Part VII. At this point, however, a few words from Stecchini may shed further light on the mystery that confronts us:

> The basic idea of the Great Pyramid was that it should be a representation of the northern hemisphere of the earth, a hemisphere projected on flat-surfaces as is done in map-making ... The Great Pyramid was a projection on four triangular surfaces. The apex represented the pole and the perimeter represented the equator. This is the reason why the perimeter is in relation *2pi* to the height. The

---

[16] The most accessible presentation of Stecchini's work is in the appendix he wrote for Peter Tompkins, *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* pp. 287-382.

[17] See *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 95.

> Great Pyramid represents the northern hemisphere in a scale of 1:43,200.[18]

In Part VII we shall see why this scale was chosen.

Mathematical city

Rising up ahead of me as I walked towards the northern end of the Street of the Dead, the Pyramid of the Moon, mercifully undamaged by restorers, had kept its original form as a four-stage ziggurat. The Pyramid of the Sun, too, had consisted of four stages but Bartres had whimsically sculpted in a fifth stage between the original third and fourth levels.

There was, however, one original feature of the Pyramid of the Sun that Bartres had been unable to despoil: a subterranean passageway leading from a natural cave under the west face. After its accidental discovery in 1971 this passageway was thoroughly explored. Seven feet high, it was found to run eastwards for more than 300 feet until it reached a point close to the pyramid's geometrical centre.[19] Here it debouched into a second cave, of spacious dimensions, which had been artificially enlarged into a shape very similar to that of a four-leaf clover. The 'leaves' were chambers, each about sixty feet in circumference, containing a variety of artefacts such as beautifully engraved slate discs and highly polished mirrors. There was also a complex drainage system of interlocking segments of carved rock pipes.[20]

This last feature was particularly puzzling because there was no known source of water within the pyramid.[21] The sluices, however, left little doubt that water must have been present in antiquity, most probably in large quantities. This brought to mind the evidence for water having once run in the Street of the Dead, the sluices and partition walls I had seen earlier to the north of the Citadel, and Schlemmer's theory of reflecting pools and seismic forecasting.

Indeed, the more I thought about it the more it seemed that water had been the dominant motif at Teotihuacan. Though I had hardly registered it that morning, the Temple of Quetzalcoatl had been decorated not only with effigies of the Plumed Serpent but with unmistakable aquatic symbolism, notably an undulating design suggestive of waves and large numbers of beautiful carvings of seashells. With these images in my mind, I reached the wide plaza at the base of the Pyramid of the Moon and imagined it filled with water, as it might have been, to a depth of about ten feet. It would have looked magnificent: majestic, powerful and serene.

---

[18] Stecchini, in appendix to *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 378. The perimeter of the Great Pyramid equals exactly one-half minute of arc—see *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* p. 279.

[19] *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan,* p. 20.

[20] *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* pp. 335-9.

[21] Ibid.

The Akapana Pyramid in far-off Tiahuanaco had also been surrounded by water, which had been the dominant motif there—just as I now found it to be at Teotihuacan.

I began to climb the Pyramid of the Moon. It was smaller than the Pyramid of the Sun, indeed less than half the size, and was estimated to be made up of about one million tons of stone and earth, as against two and a half million tons in the case of the Pyramid of the Sun. The two monuments, in other words, had a combined weight of three and a half million tons. It was thought unlikely that this quantity of material could have been manipulated by fewer than 15,000 men and it was calculated that such a workforce would have taken at least thirty years to complete such an enormous task.[22]

Sufficient labourers would certainly have been available in the vicinity: the Teotihuacan Mapping Project had demonstrated that the population of the city in its heyday could have been as large as 200,000, making it a bigger metropolis than Imperial Rome of the Caesars. The Project had also established that the main monuments visible today covered just a small part of the overall area of ancient Teotihuacan. At its peak the city had extended across more than twelve square miles and had incorporated some 50,000 individual dwellings in 2000 apartment compounds, 600 subsidiary pyramids and temples, and 500 ‘factory’ areas specializing in ceramic, figurine, lapidary, shell, basalt, slate and ground-stone work.[23]

At the top level of the Pyramid of the Moon I paused and turned slowly around. Across the valley floor, which sloped gently downhill to the south, the whole of Teotihuacan now stretched before me—a geometrical city, designed and built by unknown architects in the time before history began. In the east, overlooking the arrow-straight Street of the Dead, loomed the Pyramid of the Sun, eternally ‘printing out’ the mathematical message it had been programmed with long ages ago, a message which seemed to direct our attention to the shape of the earth. It almost looked as though the civilization that had built Teotihuacan had made a deliberate choice to encode complex information in enduring monuments and to do it using a mathematical language.

Why a mathematical language?

Perhaps because, no matter what extreme changes and transformations human civilization might go through, the radius of a circle multiplied by *2pi* (or half the radius multiplied by *4pi*) would always give the correct figure for that circle’s circumference. In other words, a mathematical language could have been chosen for practical reasons: unlike any verbal tongue, such a code could always be deciphered, even by people from unrelated cultures living thousands of years in the future.

---

[22] *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* pp. 188-93.

[23] *The Prehistory of the Americas,* p. 281. See also *The Cities of Ancient Mexico,* p. 178 and *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, pp. 226-36.

Not for the first time I felt myself confronted by the dizzying possibility that an entire episode in the story of mankind might have been forgotten. Indeed it seemed to me then, as I overlooked the mathematical city of the gods from the summit of the Pyramid of the Moon, that our species could have been afflicted with some terrible amnesia and that the dark period so blithely and dismissively referred to as 'prehistory' might turn out to conceal unimagined truths about our own past.

What is prehistory, after all, if not a time forgotten—a time for which we have no records? What is prehistory if not an epoch of impenetrable obscurity through which our ancestors passed but about which we have no conscious remembrance? It was out of this epoch of obscurity, configured in mathematical code along astronomical and geodetic lines, that Teotihuacan with all its riddles was sent down to us. And out of that same epoch came the great Olmec sculptures, the inexplicably precise and accurate calendar the Mayans inherited from their predecessors, the inscrutable geoglyphs of Nazca, the mysterious Andean city of Tiahuanaco ... and so many other marvels of which we do not know the provenance.

It is almost as though we have awakened into the daylight of history from a long and troubled sleep, and yet continue to be disturbed by the faint but haunting echoes of our dreams ...

Part IV

The Mystery of the Myths

1. A Species with Amnesia

Chapter 24

Echoes of Our Dreams

In some of the most powerful and enduring myths that we have inherited from ancient times, our species seems to have retained a confused but resonant memory of a terrifying global catastrophe.

Where do these myths come from?

Why, though they derive from unrelated cultures, are their storylines so similar? why are they laden with common symbolism? and why do they so often share the same stock characters and plots? If they are indeed *memories,* why are there no historical records of the planetary disaster they seem to refer to?

Could it be that *the myths themselves* are historical records? Could it be that these cunning and immortal stories, composed by anonymous geniuses, were the medium used to record such information and pass it on in the time before history began?

And the ark went upon the face of the waters

There was a king, in ancient Sumer, who sought eternal life. His name was Gilgamesh. We know of his exploits because the myths and traditions of Mesopotamia, inscribed in cuneiform script upon tablets of baked clay, have survived. Many thousands of these tablets, some dating back to the beginning of the third millennium BC, have been excavated from the sands of modern Iraq. They transmit a unique picture of a vanished culture and remind us that even in those days of lofty antiquity human beings preserved memories of times still more remote—times from which they were separated by the interval of a great and terrible deluge:

> I will proclaim to the world the deeds of Gilgamesh. This was the man to whom all things were known; this was the king who knew the countries of the world. He was wise, he saw mysteries and knew secret things, he brought us a tale of the days before the flood. He went on a long journey, was weary, worn-out with labour, returning he rested, he engraved on a stone the whole story.[1]

The story that Gilgamesh brought back had been told to him by a certain Utnapishtim, a king who had ruled thousands of years earlier, who had survived the great flood, and who had been rewarded with the gift of immortality because he had preserved the seeds of humanity and of all living things.

It was long, long ago, said Utnapishtim, when the gods dwelt on earth: Anu, lord of the firmament, Enlil, the enforcer of divine decisions, Ishtar, goddess of war and sexual love and Ea, lord of the waters, man's natural friend and protector.

---

[1] *The Epic of Gilgamesh,* Penguin Classics, London, 1988, p. 61.

> In those days the world teemed, the people multiplied, the world bellowed like a wild bull, and the great god was aroused by the clamour. Enlil heard the clamour and he said to the gods in council, 'The uproar of mankind is intolerable and sleep is no longer possible by reason of the babel.' So the gods agreed to exterminate mankind.'[2]

Ea, however, took pity on Utnapishtim. Speaking through the reed wall of the king's house he told him of the imminent catastrophe and instructed him to build a boat in which he and his family could survive:

> Tear down your house and build a boat, abandon possessions and look for life, despise wordly goods and save your soul ... Tear down your house, I say, and build a boat with her dimensions in proportion—her width and length in harmony. Put aboard the seed of all living things, into the boat.[3]

In the nick of time Utnapishtim built the boat as ordered. 'I loaded into her all that I had,' he said, 'loaded her with the seed of all living things':

> I put on board all my kith and kin, put on board cattle, wild beasts from open country, all kinds of craftsmen ... The time was fulfilled. When the first light of dawn appeared a black cloud came up from the base of the sky; it thundered within where Adad, lord of the storm was riding ... A stupor of despair went up to heaven when the god of the storm turned daylight to darkness, when he smashed the land like a cup ...
>
> On the first day the tempest blew swiftly and brought the flood ... No man could see his fellow. Nor could the people be distinguished from the sky. Even the gods were afraid of the flood. They withdrew; they went up to the heaven of Anu and crouched in the outskirts. The gods cowered like curs while Ishtar cried, shrieking aloud, 'Have I given birth unto these mine own people only to glut with their bodies the sea as though they were fish?'[4]

Meanwhile, continued Utnapishtim:

> For six days and nights the wind blew, torrent and tempest and flood overwhelmed the world, tempest and flood raged together like warring hosts. When the seventh day dawned the storm from the south subsided, the sea grew calm, the flood was stilled. I looked at the face of the world and there was silence. The surface of the sea stretched as flat as a roof-top. All mankind had returned to clay ... I opened a hatch and light fell on my face. Then I bowed low, I sat down and I wept, the tears streamed down my face, for on every side was the waste of water ... Fourteen leagues distant there appeared a mountain, and there the boat grounded; on the mountain of Nisir the boat held fast, she held fast and did not budge ... When the seventh day dawned I loosed a dove and let her go. She flew away, but finding no resting place she returned. Then I loosed a swallow, and she flew away but finding no resting place she returned. I loosed a raven, she saw that the waters had retreated, she ate, she flew around, she cawed, and she did not

---

[2] Ibid., p. 108.

[3] Ibid., and *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 110.

[4] *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 112-13; *Gilgamesh,* pp. 109-11; Edmund Sollberger, *The Babylonian Legend of the Flood,* British Museum Publications, 1984, p. 26.

> come back.[5]

Utnapishtim knew that it was now safe to disembark:

> I poured out a libation on the mountain top ... I heaped up wood and cane and cedar and myrtle ... When the gods smelled the sweet savour they gathered like flies over the sacrifice ...'[6]

These texts are not by any means the only ones to come down to us from the ancient land of Sumer. In other tablets—some almost 5000 years old, others less than 3000 years old—the 'Noah figure' of Utnapishtim is known variously as Zisudra, Xisuthros or Atrahasis. Even so, he is always instantly recognizable as the same patriarchal character, forewarned by the same merciful god, who rides out the same universal flood in the same storm-tossed ark and whose descendants repopulate the world.

There are many obvious resemblances between the Mesopotamian flood myth and the famous biblical story of Noah and the deluge[7] (see note). Scholars argue endlessly about the nature of these resemblances. What really matters, however, is that in each sphere of influence the same solemn tradition has been preserved for posterity—a tradition which tells, in graphic language, of a global catastrophe and of the near-total annihilation of mankind.

---

[5] *Gilgamesh,* p. 111.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Extracts from the *Book of Genesis,* Chapters Six, Seven and Eight:

God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart ... And God said, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence ... And behold I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth to destroy all flesh wherein is the breath of life from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die.

Saving only Noah and his family (whom he instructed to build a great survival ship 450 feet long x 75 feet wide x 45 feet high), and ordering the Hebrew patriarch to gather together breeding pairs of every living creature so that they too might be saved, the Lord then sent the flood:

In the selfsame day entered Noah and Ham and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's wife, and the wives of his sons with them, into the Ark—they and every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind, and every fowl after his kind, every bird of every sort. And they went in unto Noah into the Ark, two and two of all flesh wherein is the breath of life. And they that went in, went in male and female of all flesh, as God had commanded, and the Lord shut them in.

And the flood was upon the earth; and the waters increased and bare up the ark, and it was lifted up above the earth. And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. And the high hills that were under the whole heaven were covered ... And every man was destroyed, all in whose nostrils was the breath of life, and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark.

In due course, 'in the seventh month in the seventeenth day of the month, the Ark came to rest upon the mountains of Ararat. And the waters decreased continually until the tenth month':

And it came to pass at the end of forty days, that Noah opened the window of the ark which he had made: And he sent forth a raven, which went forth to and fro until the waters were dried up from the earth. Also he sent forth a dove from him, to see if the waters were abated from off the face of the ground; but the dove found no rest for the sole of her foot, and she returned unto him into the ark, for the waters were on the face of the whole earth.

And he stayed yet another seven days; and again he sent forth the dove out of the ark.

Central America

The identical message was preserved in the Valley of Mexico, far away across the world from Mounts Ararat and Nisir. There, culturally and geographically isolated from Judaeo-Christian influences, long ages before the arrival of the Spaniards, stories were told of a great deluge. As the reader will recall from Part III, it was believed that this deluge had swept over the entire earth at the end of the Fourth Sun: 'Destruction came in the form of torrential rain and floods. The mountains disappeared and men were transformed into fish ...'[8]

According to Aztec mythology only two human beings survived: a man, Coxcoxtli, and his wife, Xochiquetzal, who had been forewarned of the cataclysm by a god. They escaped in a huge boat they had been instructed to build and came to ground on the peak of a tall mountain. There they descended and afterwards had many children who were dumb until the time when a dove on top of a tree gave them the gift of languages. These languages differed so much that the children could not understand one another.[9]

A related Central American tradition, that of the Mechoacanesecs, is in even more striking conformity with the story as we have it in *Genesis* and in the Mesopotamian sources. According to this tradition, the god Tezcatlipoca determined to destroy all mankind with a flood, saving only a certain Tezpi who embarked in a spacious vessel with his wife, his children and large numbers of animals and birds, as well as supplies of grains and seeds, the preservation of which were essential to the future subsistence of the human race. The vessel came to rest on an exposed mountain top after Tezcatilpoca had decreed that the waters of the flood should retire. Wishing to find out whether it was now safe for him to disembark, Tezpi sent out a vulture which, feeding on the carcasses with which the earth was now strewn, did not return. The man then sent out other birds, of which only the hummingbird came back, with a leafy branch in its beak. With this sign that the land had begun to renew itself,

---

And the dove came in to him in the evening; and, lo, in her mouth was an olive leaf plucked off; so Noah knew that the waters were abated from off the earth ... And Noah went forth ... and builded an altar unto the Lord, and offered burnt offerings on the altar. And the Lord smelled the sweet savour ...

[8] *Maya History and Religion,* p. 332.

[9] Sir J. G. Frazer, *Folklore in the Old Testament: Studies in Comparative Religion, Legend and Law* (Abridged Edition), Macmillan, London, 1923, p. 107.

Tezpi and his family went forth from their ark, multiplied and repopulated the earth.[10]

Memories of a terrible flood resulting from divine displeasure are also preserved in the *Popol Vuh.* According to this archaic text, the Great God decided to create humanity soon after the beginning of time. It was an experiment and he began it with 'figures made of wood that looked like men and talked like men'. These creatures fell out of favour because 'they did not remember their Creator':

> And so a flood was brought about by the Heart of Heaven; a great flood was formed which fell on the heads of the wooden creatures ... A heavy resin fell from the sky ... the face of the earth was darkened and a black rain began to fall by day and by night ... The wooden figures were annihilated, destroyed, broken up and killed.'[11]

Not everyone perished, however. Like the Aztecs and the Mechoacanesecs, the Maya of the Yucatan and Guatemala believed that a Noah figure and his wife, 'the Great Father and the Great Mother', had survived the flood to populate the land anew, thus becoming the ancestors of all subsequent generations of humanity.[12]

South America

Moving to South America, we encounter the Chibcas of central Colombia. According to their myths, they had originally lived as savages, without laws, agriculture or religion. Then one day there appeared among them an old man of a different race. He wore a thick long beard and his name was Bochica. He taught the Chibcas how to build huts and live together in society.

His wife, who was very beautiful and named Chia, appeared after him, but she was wicked and enjoyed thwarting her husband's altruistic efforts. Since she could not overcome his power directly, she used magical means to cause a great flood in which the majority of the population died. Bochica was very angry and exiled Chia from the earth to the sky, where she became the moon given the task of lighting the nights. He also caused the waters of the flood to dissipate and brought down the few survivors from the mountains where they had taken refuge. Thereafter he gave them laws, taught them to cultivate the land and instituted the worship of the sun with periodic festivals, sacrifices and pilgrimages. He then divided the power to govern among two chiefs and spent the remainder of his days on earth living in quiet contemplation as an ascetic. When he ascended to heaven he became a god.[13]

---

[10] Lenormant, writing in *Contemporary Review,* cited in *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* p. 99.

[11] *Popol Vuh,* p. 90.

[12] Ibid., p. 93.

Farther south still, the Canarians, an Indian tribe of Ecuador, relate an ancient story of a flood from which two brothers escaped by going to the top of a high mountain. As the water rose the mountain grew higher, so that the two brothers survived the disaster.[14]

When they were discovered, the Tupinamba Indians of Brazil venerated a series of civilizing or creator heroes. The first of these heroes was Monan (ancient, old) who was said to have been the creator of mankind but who then destroyed the world with flood and fire ...[15]

Peru, as we saw in Part II, is particularly rich in flood legends. A typical story tells of an Indian who was warned by a llama of a deluge. Together man and llama fled to a high mountain called Vilca-Coto:

> When they reached the top of the mountain they saw that all kinds of birds and animals had already taken refuge there. The sea began to rise, and covered all the plains and mountains except the top of Vilca-Coto; and even there the waves dashed up so high that the animals were forced to crowd into a narrow area ... Five days later the water ebbed, and the sea returned to its bed. But all human beings except one were drowned, and from him are descended all the nations on earth.[16]

The Araucnaians of pre-Colombian Chile preserved a tradition that there was once a flood which very few Indians escaped. The survivors took refuge on a high mountain called Thegtheg ('the thundering' or 'the glittering') which had three peaks and the ability to float on water.[17]

In the far south of the continent a Yamana legend from Tierra del Fuego states: 'The moon woman caused the flood. This was at the time of the great upheaval ... Moon was filled with hatred towards human beings ... At that time everybody drowned with the exception of those few who were able to escape to the five mountain peaks that the water did not cover.'[18]

Another Tierra del Fuegan tribe, the Pehuenche, associate the flood with a prolonged period of darkness: 'The sun and the moon fell from the sky and the world stayed that way, without light, until finally two giant condors carried both the sun and the moon back up to the sky.'[19]

---

[13] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 440; *Atlantis: the Antediluvian World,* p. 105.

[14] *Folklore in the Old Testament,* p. 104.

[15] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 445.

[16] *Folklore in the Old Testament,* p. 105.

[17] Ibid., p. 101.

[18] John Bierhorst, *The Mythology of South America,* William Morrow & *Co.,* New York, 1988, p. 165.

[19] Ibid., pp. 165-6.

North America

Meanwhile, at the other end of the Americas, among the Inuit of Alaska, there existed the tradition of a terrible flood, accompanied by an earthquake, which swept so rapidly over the face of the earth that only a few people managed to escape in their canoes or take refuge on the tops of the highest mountains, petrified with terror.[20]

The Luiseno of lower California had a legend that a flood covered the mountains and destroyed most of mankind. Only a few were saved because they fled to the highest peaks which were spared when all the rest of the world was inundated. The survivors remained there until the flood ended.[21] Farther north similar flood myths were recorded amongst the Hurons.[22] And a legend of the Montagnais, belonging to the Algonquin family, related how Michabo, or the Great Hare, re-established the world after the flood with the help of a raven, an otter and a muskrat.[23]

Lynd's *History of the Dakotas,* an authoritative work of the nineteenth century which preserved many indigenous traditions that would otherwise have been lost, reports an Iroquois myth that 'the sea and waters had at one time infringed upon the land, so that all human life was destroyed'. The Chickasaws asserted that the world had been destroyed by water 'but that one family was saved and two animals of every kind'. The Sioux also spoke of a time when there was no dry land and when all men disappeared from existence.[24]

Water water everywhere

How far and how widely across the myth memories of mankind do the ripples of the great flood spread?

Very widely indeed. More than 500 deluge legends are known around the world and, in a survey of 86 of these (20 Asiatic, 3 European, 7 African, 46 American and 10 from Australia and the Pacific), the specialist researcher Dr Richard Andree concluded that 62 were entirely independent of the Mesopotamian and Hebrew accounts.[25]

---

[20] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 426.

[21] *Folklore in the Old Testament,* pp. 111-12.

[22] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 431.

[23] Ibid., pp. 428-9; *Folklore in the Old Testament,* p. 115. In this version the character of Michabo is called Messou.

[24] From Lynd's *History of the Dakotas,* cited in *Atlantis: the Antediluvian World,* p. 117.

[25] Frederick A. Filby, *The Flood Reconsidered: A Review of the Evidences of Geology, Archaeology, Ancient Literature and the Bible,* Pickering and Inglis Ltd., London, 1970, p. 58. Andree was an eminent German geographer and anthropologist. His monograph on diluvial traditions is described by J. G. Frazer (in *Folklore in the Old Testament,* pp. 46-7) as 'a model of sound learning and good sense set forth with the utmost clearness and conciseness ...'

For example, early Jesuit scholars who were among the first Europeans to visit China had the opportunity in the Imperial Library to study a vast work, consisting of 4320 volumes, said to have been handed down from ancient times and to contain ‘all knowledge’. This great book included a number of traditions which told of the consequences that followed ‘when mankind rebelled against the high gods and the system of the universe fell into disorder’: ‘The planets altered their courses. The sky sank lower towards the north. The sun, moon and stars changed their motions. The earth fell to pieces and the waters in its bosom rushed upwards with violence and overflowed the earth.’[26]

In the Malaysian tropical forest the Chewong people believe that every so often their own world, which they call Earth Seven, turns upside down so that everything is flooded and destroyed. However, through the agency of the Creator God Tohan, the flat new surface of what had previously been the underside of Earth Seven is moulded into mountains, valleys and plains. New trees are planted, and new humans born.[27]

A flood myth of Laos and northern Thailand has it that beings called the Thens lived in the upper kingdom long ages ago, while the masters of the lower world were three great men, Pu Leng Seung, Khun K’an and Khun K’et. One day the Thens announced that before eating any meal people should give them a part of their food as a sign of respect. The people refused and in a rage the Thens created a flood which devastated the whole earth. The three great men built a raft, on top of which they made a small house, and embarked with a number of women and children. In this way they and their descendants survived the deluge.[28]

In similar fashion the Karens of Burma have traditions of a global deluge from which two brothers were saved on a raft.[29] Such a deluge is also part of the mythology of Viet Nam, where a brother and a sister are said to have survived in a great wooden chest which also contained two of every kind of animal.[30]

Several aboriginal Australian peoples, especially those whose traditional homelands are along the tropical northern coast, ascribe their origins to a great flood which swept away the previous landscape and society. Meanwhile, in the origin myths of a number of other tribes, the cosmic serpent Yurlunggur (associated with the rainbow) is held responsible for the deluge.[31]

There are Japanese traditions according to which the Pacific islands of Oceania were formed after the waters of a great deluge had receded.[32] In Oceania itself a myth of the native inhabitants of Hawaii tells how the world was destroyed by a flood and later recreated by a god named Tangaloa. The Samoans believe that there was once an inundation that wiped out almost all mankind. It was survived only by two human beings who put to sea in a boat which eventually came to rest in the Samoan archipelago.[33]

---

[26] Reported in Charles Berlitz, *The Lost Ship of Noah,* W. H. Allen, London, 1989, p. 126.

[27] *World Mythology,* pp. 26-7.

[28] Ibid., p. 305.

[29] *Folklore in the Old Testament,* p. 81.

[30] Ibid.

[31] *World Mythology,* p. 280.

[32] E. Sykes, *Dictionary Of Non-Classical Mythology,* London, 1961, p. 119.

Greece, India and Egypt

On the other side of the world, Greek mythology too is haunted by memories of a deluge. Here, however (as in Central America) the inundation is not viewed as an isolated event but as one of a series of destructions and remakings of the world. The Aztecs and the Maya spoke in terms of successive ‘Suns’ or epochs (of which our own was thought to be the Fifth and last). In similar fashion the oral traditions of Ancient Greece, collected and set down in writing by Hesiod in the eighth century BC, related that prior to the present creation there had been four earlier races of men on earth. Each of these was thought more advanced than the one that followed it. And each, at the appointed hour, had been ‘swallowed up’ in a geological cataclysm.

The first and most ancient creation had been mankind’s ‘golden race’ who had ‘lived like the gods, free from care, without trouble or woe ... With ageless limbs they revelled at their banquets ... When they died it was as men overcome by sleep.’ With the passing of time, and at the command of Zeus, this golden race eventually ‘sank into the depths of the earth’. It was succeeded by the ‘silver race’ which was supplanted by the ‘bronze race’, which was replaced by the race of ‘heroes’, which was followed by the ‘iron’ race—our own—the fifth and most recent creation.[34]

It is the fate of the bronze race that is of particular interest to us here. Described in the myths as having ‘the strength of giants, and mighty hands on their mighty limbs’,[35] these formidable men were exterminated by Zeus, king of the gods, as a punishment for the misdeeds of Prometheus, the rebellious Titan who had presented humanity with the gift of fire.[36] The mechanism the vengeful deity used to sweep the earth clean was an overwhelming flood.

In the most widespread version of the story Prometheus impregnated a human female. She bore him a son named Deucalion, who ruled over the country of Phthia, in Thessaly, and took to wife Pyrrha, ‘the red-blonde’, daughter of Epimetheus and Pandora. When Zeus reached his fateful decision to destroy the bronze race, Deucalion, forewarned by Prometheus, made a wooden box, stored in it ‘all that was necessary’, and climbed into it with Pyrrha. The king of the gods caused mighty rains to pour from heaven, flooding the greater part of the earth. All mankind perished in this deluge, save a few who had fled to the highest mountains. 'It also happened at this time that the mountains of Thessaly were split asunder, and the whole country as far as the Isthmus and the Peloponnese became a single sheet of water.'

---

[33] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 460, 466.

[34] C. Kerenyi, *The Gods of the Greeks,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1974, pp. 226-9.

[35] Ibid.

[36] *World Mythology,* pp. 130-1.

Deucalion and Pyrrha floated over this sea in their box for nine days and nights, finally landing on Mount Parnassus. There, after the rains had ceased, they disembarked and sacrificed to the gods. In response Zeus sent Hermes to Deucalion with permission to ask for whatever he wished. He wished for human beings. Zeus then bade him take stones and throw them over his shoulder. The stones Deucalion threw became men, and those that Pyrrha threw became women.[37]

As the Hebrews looked back on Noah, so the Greeks of ancient historical times looked back upon Deucalion—as the ancestor of their nation and as the founder of numerous towns and temples.[38]

A similar figure was revered in Vedic India more than 3000 years ago. One day (the story goes)

> when a certain wise man named Manu was making his ablutions, he found in the hollow of his hand a tiny little fish which begged him to allow it to live. Taking pity on it he put it in a jar. The next day, however, it had grown so much bigger that he had to carry it to a lake. Soon the lake was too small. 'Throw me into the sea,' said the fish [which was in reality a manifestation of the god Vishnu] 'and I shall be more comfortable.' Then he warned Manu of a coming deluge. He sent him a large ship, with orders to load it with two of every living species and the seeds of every plant, and then to go on board himself.'[39]

Manu had only just carried out these orders when the ocean rose and submerged everything, and nothing was to be seen but Vishnu in his fish form—now a huge, one-horned creature with golden scales. Manu moored his ark to the horn of the fish and Vishnu towed it across the brimming waters until it came to rest on the exposed peak of 'the Mountain of the North':[40]

> The fish said, 'I have saved thee; fasten the vessel to a tree, that the water may not sweep it away while thou art on the mountain; and in proportion as the waters decrease thou shalt descend.' Manu descended with the waters. The Deluge had carried away all creatures and Manu remained alone.[41]

With him, and with the animals and plants he had saved from destruction, began a new age of the world. After a year there emerged from the waters a woman who announced herself as 'the daughter of Manu'. The couple married and produced children, thus becoming the ancestors of the present race of mankind.[42]

---

[37] *The Gods of the Greeks,* pp. 226-9.

[38] *World Mythology, pp.* 130-1.

[39] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 362.

[40] Ibid., *Satapatha Brahmana,* (trans. Max Muller), cited in *Atlantis: the Antediluvian World,* p. 87.

[41] Ibid. See also *Folklore in the Old Testament,* pp. 78-9.

Last but by no means least, Ancient Egyptian traditions also refer to a great flood. A funerary text discovered in the tomb of Pharaoh Seti I, for example, tells of the destruction of sinful humanity by a deluge.[43] The reasons for this catastrophe are set out in Chapter CLXXV of the *Book of the Dead,* which attributes the following speech to the Moon God Thoth:

> They have fought fights, they have upheld strifes, they have done evil, they have created hostilities, they have made slaughter, they have caused trouble and oppression ... [Therefore] I am going to blot out everything which I have made. This earth shall enter into the watery abyss by means of a raging flood, and will become even as it was in primeval time.[44]

On the trail of a mystery

With the words of Thoth we have come full circle to the Sumerian and biblical floods. 'The earth was filled with violence', says *Genesis:*

> And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, 'The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and behold I will destroy them with the earth.'[45]

Like the flood of Deucalion, the flood of Manu, and the flood that destroyed the Aztecs' 'Fourth Sun', the biblical deluge was the end of a world age. A new age succeeded it: our own, populated by the descendants of Noah. From the very beginning, however, it was understood that this age too would in due course come to a catastrophic end. As the old song puts it, 'God gave Noah the rainbow sign; no more water, the fire next time.'

The Scriptural source for this prophecy of world destruction is to be found in 2 Peter 3:

> We must be careful to remember that during the last days there are bound to be people who will be scornful and [who will say], 'Everything goes on as it has since it began at the creation'. They are choosing to forget that there were heavens at the beginning, and that the earth was formed by the word of God out of water and between the waters, so that the world of that time was destroyed by being flooded by water. But by the same word, the present sky and earth are destined for fire, and are only being reserved until Judgement Day so that all sinners may be destroyed ... The Day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, and then with a roar the sky will vanish, the elements will catch fire and fall apart, and the earth

---

[42] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 7:798. *The Rig Veda,* Penguin Classics, London, 1981, pp. 100-1.

[43] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 48.

[44] From the Theban Recension of *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* quoted in *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* p. 198.

[45] *Genesis,* 6:11-13.

> and all that it contains will be burnt up.[46]

The Bible, therefore, envisages two ages of the world, our own being the second and last. Elsewhere, in other cultures, different numbers of creations and destructions are recorded. In China, for instance, the perished ages are called *kis,* ten of which are said to have elapsed from the beginning of time until Confucius. At the end of each *kis,* 'in a general convulsion of nature, the sea is carried out of its bed, mountains spring up out of the ground, rivers change their course, human beings and everything are ruined, and the ancient traces effaced ...'[47]

Buddhist scriptures speak of 'Seven Suns', each brought to an end by water, fire or wind.[48] At the end of the Seventh Sun, the current 'world cycle', it is expected that the 'earth will break into flames'.[49] Aboriginal traditions of Sarawak and Sabah recall that the sky was once 'low' and tell us that 'six Suns perished ... at present the world is illuminated by the seventh Sun'.[50] Similarly, the Sibylline Books speak of nine Suns that are nine ages' and prophesy two ages yet to come—those of the eighth and the ninth Sun.'[51]

On the other side of the Atlantic Ocean, the Hopi Indians of Arizona (who are distant relatives of the Aztecs[52]) record three previous Suns, each culminating in a great annihilation followed by the gradual re-emergence of mankind. In Aztec cosmology, of course, there were four Suns prior to our own. Such minor differences concerning the precise number of destructions and creations envisaged in this or that mythology should not distract us from the remarkable convergence of ancient traditions evident here. All over the world these traditions appear to commemorate a widespread series of catastrophes. In many cases the character of each successive cataclysm is obscured by the use of poetic language and the piling up of metaphor and symbols. Quite frequently, also, at least two different kinds of disaster may be portrayed as having occurred simultaneously (most frequently floods and earthquakes, but sometimes fire and a terrifying darkness).

All this contributes to the creation of a confused and jumbled picture. The myths of the Hopi, however, stand out for their straightforwardness and simplicity. What they tell us is this:

> The first world was destroyed, as a punishment for human misdemeanours, by an all-consuming *fire* that came from above and below. The second world ended when the terrestrial globe toppled from its axis and everything was covered with

---

[46] 2 *Peter* 3:3-10.

[47] See H. Murray, J. Crawford et al., *An Historical and Descriptive Account of China,* 2nd edition, 1836, volume I, p. 40. See also G. Schlegel, *Uranographie chinoise,* 1875, p. 740.

[48] Warren, *Buddhism in Translations,* p. 322.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Dixon, *Oceanic Mythology,* p. 178.

[51] *Worlds in Collision,* p. 35.

[52] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 6:53.

> *ice.* The third world ended in a universal *flood.* The present world is the fourth. Its fate will depend on whether or not its inhabitants behave in accordance with the Creator's plans.[53]

We are on the trail of a mystery here. And while we may never hope to fathom the plans of the Creator we should be able to reach a judgement concerning the riddle of our converging myths of global destruction.

Through these myths the voices of the ancients speak to us directly. What are they trying to say?

---

[53] *World Mythology,* p. 26. Details of the Hopi world destruction myths are in Frank Waters, *The Book of the Hopi,* Penguin, London, 1977.

Chapter 25

The Many Masks of the Apocalypse

Like the Hopi Indians of North America, the Avestic Aryans of pre-Islamic Iran believed that there were three epochs of creation prior to our own. In the first epoch men were pure and sinless, tall and long lived, but at its close the Evil One declared war against Ahura Mazda, the holy god, and a tumultuous cataclysm ensued. During the second epoch the Evil One was unsuccessful. In the third good and evil were exactly balanced. In the fourth epoch (the present age of the world), evil triumphed at the outset and has maintained its supremacy ever since.[1]

The end of the fourth epoch is predicted soon, but it is the cataclysm at the end of the first epoch that interests us here. It is not a flood, and yet it converges in so many ways with so many global flood traditions that some connection is strongly suggested.

The Avestic scriptures take us back to a time of paradise on earth, when the remote ancestors of the ancient Iranian people lived in the fabled Airyana Vaejo, the first good and happy creation of Ahura Mazda that flourished in the first age of the world: the mythical birthplace and original home of the Aryan race.

In those days Airyana Vaejo enjoyed a mild and productive climate with seven months of summer and five of winter. Rich in wildlife and in crops, its meadows flowing with streams, this garden of delights was converted into an uninhabitable wasteland of ten months' winter and only two months summer as a result of the onslaught of Angra Mainyu, the Evil One:

> The first of the good lands and countries which I, Ahura Mazda, created was the Airyana Vaejo ... Then Angra Mainyu, who is full of death, created an opposition to the same, a mighty serpent and snow. Ten months of winter are there now, two months of summer, and these are cold as to the water, cold as to the earth, cold as to the trees ... There all around falls deep snow; that is the direst of plagues ...'[2]

The reader will agree that a sudden and drastic change in the climate of Airyana Vaejo is indicated. The Avestic scriptures leave us in no doubt about this. Earlier they describe a meeting of the celestial gods called by Ahura Mazda, and tell us that 'the fair Yima, the good shepherd of high renown in the Airyana Vaejo', attended this meeting with all his excellent mortals.

---

[1] *The Bundahish* Chapters I, XXXI, XXXIV, cited in William F. Warren, *Paradise Found: The Cradle of the Human Race at the North Pole,* Houghton, Mifflin and Co., Boston, 1885, p. 282.

[2] *Vendidad,* Fargard I, cited in Lokamanya Bal Gangadhar Tilak, *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* Tilak Publishers, Poona, 1956, pp. 340-1.

It is at this point that the strange parallels with the traditions of the biblical flood begin to crop up, for Ahura Mazda takes advantage of the meeting to warn Yima of what is about to happen as a result of the powers of the Evil One:

> And Ahura Mazda spake unto Yima saying: 'Yima the fair ... Upon the material world a fatal winter is about to descend, that shall bring a vehement, destroying frost. Upon the corporeal world will the evil of winter come, wherefore snow will fall in great abundance. ...
>
> 'And all three sorts of beasts shall perish, those that live in the wilderness, and those that live on the tops of the mountains, and those that live in the depths of the valleys under the shelter of stables.
>
> 'Therefore make thee a *var* [a hypogeum or underground enclosure] the length of a riding ground to all four corners. Thither bring thou the representatives of every kind of beast, great and small, of the cattle, of the beasts of burden, and of men, of dogs, of birds, and of the red burning fires.[3]
>
> 'There shalt thou make water flow. Thou shall put birds in the trees along the water's edge, in verdure which is everlasting. There put specimens of all plants, the loveliest and most fragrant, and of all fruits the most succulent. All these kinds of things and creatures shall not perish as long as they are in the *var.* But put there no deformed creature, nor impotent, nor mad, neither wicked, nor deceitful, nor rancorous, nor jealous; nor a man with irregular teeth, nor a leper ...'[4]

Apart from the scale of the enterprise there is only one real difference between Yima's divinely inspired *var* and Noah's divinely inspired ark: the ark is a means of surviving a terrible and devastating flood which will destroy every living creature by drowning the world in water; the *var* is a means of surviving a terrible and devastating 'winter' which will destroy every living creature by covering the earth with a freezing blanket of ice and snow.

In the *Bundahish,* another of the Zoroastrian scriptures (believed to incorporate ancient material from a lost part of the original *Avesta*), more information is provided on the cataclysm of glaciation that overwhelmed Airyana Vaejo. When Angra Mainyu sent the 'vehement destroying frost', he also 'assaulted and deranged the sky'.[5] The *Bundahish* tells us that this assault enabled the Evil One to master 'one third of the sky and overspread it with darkness' as the encroaching ice sheets tightened their grip.[6]

---

[3] *Vendidad,* Fargard II, cited in *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* pp. 300, 353-4.

[4] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 320.

[5] West, *Pahlavi Texts* Part I, p. 17, London, 1880.

[6] Ibid.; Justi, *Der Bundahish,* Leipzig, 1868, p. 5.

Indescribable cold, fire, earthquakes and derangement of the skies

The Avestic Aryans of Iran, who are known to have migrated to western Asia from some other, distant homeland,[7] are not the only possessors of archaic traditions which echo the basic setting of the great flood in ways unlikely to be coincidental. Indeed, though these are most commonly associated with the deluge, the familiar themes of the divine warning, and of the salvation of a remnant of mankind from a universal disaster, are also found in many different parts of the world in connection with the sudden onset of glacial conditions.

In South America, for example, Toba Indians of the Gran Chaco region that sprawls across the modern borders of Paraguay, Argentina and Chile, still repeat an ancient myth concerning the advent of what they call 'the Great Cold'. Forewarning comes from a semi-divine hero figure named Asin:

> Asin told a man to gather as much wood as he could and to cover his hut with a thick layer of thatch, because a time of great cold was coming. As soon as the hut had been prepared Asin and the man shut themselves inside and waited. When the great cold set in, shivering people arrived to beg a firebrand from them. Asin was hard and gave embers only to those who had been his friends. The people were freezing, and they cried the whole night. At midnight they were all dead, young and old, men and women ... this period of ice and sleet lasted for a long time and all the fires were put out. Frost was as thick as leather.[8]

As in the Avestic traditions it seems that the great cold was accompanied by great darkness. In the words of one Toba elder, these afflictions were sent 'because when the earth is full of people it has to change. The population has to be thinned out to save the world ... In the case of the long darkness the sun simply disappeared and the people starved. As they ran out of food, they began eating their children. Eventually they all died ...[9]

The Mayan *Popol Vuh* associates the flood, with 'much hail, black rain and mist, and indescribable cold'.[10] It also says that this was a period when 'it was cloudy and twilight all over the world ... the faces of the sun and the moon were covered.'[11] Other Maya sources confirm that these strange and terrible phenomena were experienced by mankind, 'in the time of the ancients. The earth darkened ... It happened that the sun was still bright and clear. Then, at midday, it got dark ...[12] Sunlight did not return till the twenty-sixth year after the flood.'[13]

---

[7] *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* p. 390ff.

[8] *The Mythology of South America,* pp. 143-4

[9] Ibid., p. 144.

[10] *Popol Vuh,* p. 178.

[11] Ibid., p. 93.

[12] *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* p. 41.

[13] *Maya History and Religion,* p. 333.

The reader may recall that many deluge and catastrophe myths contain references not only to the onset of a great darkness but to other changes in the appearance of the heavens. In Tierra del Fuego, for instance, it was said that the sun and the moon 'fell from the sky'[14] and in China that 'the planets altered their courses. The sun, moon and stars changed their motions.'[15] The Incas believed that 'in ancient times the Andes were split apart when the sky made war on the earth.'[16] The Tarahumara of northern Mexico have preserved world destruction legends based on a change in the sun's path.[17] An African myth from the lower Congo states that 'long ago the sun met the moon and threw mud at it, which made it less bright. When this meeting happened there was a great flood ...'[18] The Cahto Indians of California say simply that 'the sky fell'.[19] And ancient Graeco-Roman myths tell that the flood of Deucalion was immediately preceded by awesome celestial events.[20] These events are graphically symbolized in the story of how Phaeton, child of the sun, harnessed his father's chariot but was unable to guide it along his father's course:

> Soon the fiery horses felt how their reins were in an unpractised hand. Rearing and swerving aside, they left their wonted way; then all the earth was amazed to see that the glorious Sun, instead of holding his stately, beneficent course across the sky, seemed to speed crookedly overhead and to rush down in wrath like a meteor.'[21]

This is not the place to speculate on what may have caused the alarming disturbances in the patterns of the heavens that are linked with cataclysm legends from all over the world. For our purposes at present, it is sufficient to note that such traditions seem to refer to the same 'derangement of the sky' that accompanied the fatal winter and spreading ice sheets described in the Iranian *Avesta*.[22] Other linkages occur. Fire, for example, often follows or precedes the flood. In the case of Phaeton's adventure with the Sun, 'the grass withered; the crops were scorched; the woods went up in fire and smoke; then beneath them the bare earth cracked and crumbled and the blackened rocks burst asunder under the heat.'[23]

Volcanism and earthquakes are also mentioned frequently in association with the flood, particularly in the Americas. The Araucanians of Chile say quite explicitly that 'the flood was the result of volcanic eruptions accompanied by violent earthquakes.'[24] The Mam Maya of Santiago Chimaltenango in the western highlands of Guatemala retain memories of 'a flood of burning pitch' which, they say, was one of the instruments of world destruction.[25] And in the Gran Chaco of Argentina, the Mataco Indians tell of 'a black cloud that came from the south at the time of the flood and covered the whole sky. Lightning struck and thunder was heard. Yet the drops that fell were not like rain. They were like fire ...'[26]

---

[14] See Chapter Twenty-four.

[15] Ibid.

[16] *National Geographic Magazine, June* 1962, p. 87.

[17] *The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* p. 79.

[18] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 481.

[19] *The Mythology of all Races,* Cooper Square Publishers Inc., New York, 1964, volume X, p. 222.

[20] See particularly the writings of Hyginus, cited in *Paradise Found,* p. 195. See also *The Gods of the Greeks,* p. 195.

[21] *The Illustrated Guide to Classical Mythology,* p. 15-17.

[22] The Iranian *Bundahish* tells us that the planets ran against the sky and created confusion in the entire cosmos.

[23] *The Illustrated Guide to Classical Mythology,* p. 17.

A monster chased the sun

There is one ancient culture that perhaps preserves more vivid memories in its myths than any other; that of the so-called Teutonic tribes of Germany and Scandinavia, a culture best remembered through the songs of the Norse scalds and sages. The stories those songs retell have their roots in a past which may be much older than scholars imagine and which combine familiar images with strange symbolic devices and allegorical language to recall a cataclysm of awesome magnitude:

> In a distant forest in the east an aged giantess brought into the world a whole brood of young wolves whose father was Fenrir. One of these monsters chased the sun to take possession of it. The chase was for long in vain, but each season the wolf grew in strength, and at last he reached the sun. Its bright rays were one by one extinguished. It took on a blood red hue, then entirely disappeared.
>
> Thereafter the world was enveloped in hideous winter. Snow-storms descended from all points of the horizon. War broke out all over the earth. Brother slew brother, children no longer respected the ties of blood. It was a time when men were no better than wolves, eager to destroy each other. Soon the world was going to sink into the abyss of nothingness.
>
> Meanwhile the wolf Fenrir, whom the gods had long ago so carefully chained up, broke his bonds at last and escaped. He shook himself and the world trembled. The ash tree Yggdrasil [envisaged as the axis of the earth] was shaken from its roots to its topmost branches. Mountains crumbled or split from top to bottom, and the dwarfs who had their subterranean dwellings in them sought desperately and in vain for entrances so long familiar but now disappeared.
>
> Abandoned by the gods, men were driven from their hearths and the human race was swept from the surface of the earth. The earth itself was beginning to lose its shape. Already the stars were coming adrift from the sky and falling into the gaping void. They were like swallows, weary from too long a voyage, who drop and sink into the waves.
>
> The giant Surt set the entire earth on fire; the universe was no longer more than

---

[24] *Folklore in the Old Testament,* p. 101.

[25] *Maya History and Religion,* p. 336.

[26] *The Mythology of South America,* pp. 140-2.

> an immense furnace. Flames spurted from fissures in the rocks; everywhere there was the hissing of steam. All living things, all plant life, were blotted out. Only the naked soil remained, but like the sky itself the earth was no more than cracks and crevasses.
>
> And now all the rivers, all the seas, rose and overflowed. From every side waves lashed against waves. They swelled and boiled slowly over all things. The earth sank beneath the sea ...
>
> Yet not all men perished in the great catastrophe. Enclosed in the wood itself of the ash tree Yggdrasil—which the devouring flames of the universal conflagration had been unable to consume—the ancestors of a future race of men had escaped death. In this asylum they had found that their only nourishment had been the morning dew.
>
> Thus it was that from the wreckage of the ancient world a new world was born. Slowly the earth emerged from the waves. Mountains rose again and from them streamed cataracts of singing waters.[27]

The new world this Teutonic myth announces is our own. Needless to say, like the Fifth Sun of the Aztecs and the Maya, it was created long ago and is new no longer. Can it be a coincidence that one of the many Central American flood myths about the fourth epoch, 4 *Atl* ('water'), does not install the Noah couple in an ark but places them instead in a great tree just like Yggdrasil? '4 *Atl* was ended by floods. The mountains disappeared ... Two persons survived because they were ordered by one of the gods to bore a hole in the trunk of a very large tree and to crawl inside when the skies fell. The pair entered and survived. Their offspring repopulated the world.'[28]

Isn't it odd that the same symbolic language keeps cropping up in ancient traditions from so many widely scattered regions of the world? How can this be explained? Are we talking about some vast, subconscious wave of intercultural telepathy, or could elements of these remarkable universal myths have been engineered, long ages ago, by clever and purposeful people? Which of these improbable propositions is the more likely to be true? Or are there other possible explanations for the enigma of the myths?

We shall return to these questions in due course. Meanwhile, what are we to conclude about the apocalyptic visions of fire and ice, floods, volcanism and earthquakes, which the myths contain? They have about them a haunting and familiar realism. Could this be because they speak to us of a past we suspect to be our own but can neither remember clearly nor forget completely?

---

[27] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 275-7.

[28] *Maya History and Religion,* p. 332.

Chapter 26

A Species Born in the Earth's Long Winter

In all that we call 'history'—everything we clearly remember about ourselves as a species—humanity has not once come close to total annihilation. In various regions at various times there have been terrible natural disasters. But there has not been a single occasion in the past 5000 years when mankind as a whole can be said to have faced extinction.

Has this always been so? Or is it possible, if we go back far enough, that we might discover an epoch when our ancestors were nearly wiped out? It is just such an epoch that seems to be the focus of the great myths of cataclysm. Scholars normally attribute these myths to the fantasies of ancient poets. But what if the scholars are wrong? What if some terrible series of natural catastrophes did reduce our prehistoric ancestors to a handful of individuals scattered here and there across the face of the earth, far apart, and out of touch with one another?

We are looking for an epoch that will fit the myths as snugly as the slipper on Cinderella's foot. In this search, however, there is obviously no point in investigating any period prior to the emergence on the planet of recognizably modern human beings. We're not interested here in *Homo habilis* or *Homo erectus* or even *Homo sapiens neanderthalensis.* We're interested only in *Homo sapiens sapiens,* our own species, and we haven't been around very long.

Students of early Man disagree to some extent over how long we have been around. Some researchers, as we shall see, claim that partial human remains in excess of 100,000 years old may be 'fully modern'. Others argue for a reduced antiquity in the range of 35-40,000 years, and yet others propose a compromise of 50,000 years. But no one knows for sure. 'The origin of fully modern humans denoted by the subspecies name *Homo sapiens sapiens* remains one of the great puzzles of palaeoanthropology,' admits one authority.[1]

About three and a half million years of more or less relevant evolution are indicated in the fossil record. For all practical purposes, that record starts with a small, bipedal hominid (nicknamed Lucy) whose remains were discovered in 1974 in the Ethiopian section of East Africa's Great Rift Valley. With a brain capacity of 400cc (less than a third of the modern average) Lucy definitely wasn't human. But she wasn't an ape either and she had some remarkably 'human-like' features, notably her upright gait, and the shape of her pelvis and back teeth. For these and other reasons, her species—classified as *Australopithecus afarensis*—has been accepted by the majority of palaeoanthropologists as our earliest direct ancestor.[2]

---

[1] Roger Lewin, *Human Evolution,* Blackwell Scientific Publications, Oxford, 1984, p. 74.

About two million years ago representatives of *Homo habilis,* the founder members of the *Homo* line to which we ourselves belong, began to leave their fossilized skulls and skeletons behind. As time went by this species showed clear signs of evolution towards an ever more 'gracile' and refined form, and towards a larger and more versatile brain. *Homo erectus,* who overlapped with and then succeeded *Homo habilis,* appeared about 1.6 million years ago with a brain capacity in the region of 900cc (as against 700cc in the case of *habilis*).[3] The million or so years after that, down to about 400,000 years ago, saw no significant evolutionary changes—or none attested to by surviving fossils. Then *Homo erectus* passed through the gates of extinction into hominid heaven and slowly—very, very slowly—what the palaeoanthropologists call 'the sapient grade' began to appear:

> Exactly when the transition to a more sapient form began is difficult to establish. Some believe the transition, which involved an increase in brain size and a decrease in the robustness of the skull bones, began as early as 400,000 years ago. Unfortunately, there are simply not enough fossils from this important period to be sure about what was happening.'[4]

What was definitely *not* happening 400,000 years ago was the emergence of anything identifiable as our own story-telling, myth-making subspecies *Homo sapiens sapiens.* The consensus is that 'sapient humans must have evolved from *Homo erectus'*,[5] and it is true that a number of 'archaic sapient' populations did come into existence between 400,000 and 100,000 years ago. Unfortunately, the relationship of these transitional species to ourselves is far from clear. As noted, the first contenders for membership of the exclusive club of *Homo sapiens sapiens* have been dated by some researchers to the latter part of this period. But these remains are all partial and their identification is by no means universally accepted. The oldest, part of a skullcap, is a putative modern human specimen from about 113,000 BC.[6] Around this date, too, *Homo sapiens neanderthalensis* first appears, a quite distinct subspecies which most of us know as 'Neanderthal Man'.

Tall, heavily muscled, with prominent brow ridges and a protruding face, Neanderthal Man had a bigger average brain size than modern humans (1400cc as against our 1360cc).[7] The possession of such a big brain was no doubt an asset to these 'intelligent, spiritually sensitive, resourceful creatures'[8] and the fossil record suggests that they were the dominant species on the planet from about 100,000 years ago until 40,000 years ago. At some point during this lengthy and poorly understood period, *Homo sapiens sapiens* established itself, leaving behind fossil remains from about 40,000 years ago that are undisputably those of modern humans, and supplanting the Neanderthals completely by about 35,000 years ago.[9]

---

[2] Donald C. Johanson and Maitland C. Eddy, *Lucy: The Beginnings of Humankind,* Paladin, London, 1982, in particular, pp. 28, 259-310.

[3] Roger Lewin, *Human Evolution,* pp. 47-49, 53-6; *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 6:27-8.

[4] *Human Evolution,* p. 76.

[5] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 18:831.

[6] *Human Evolution,* p. 76.

[7] Ibid., p. 72.

In summary, human beings like ourselves, whom we could pass in the street without blinking an eyelid if they were shaved and dressed in modern clothes, are creatures of the last 115,000 years at the very most—and more probably of only the last 50,000 years. It follows that if the myths of cataclysm we have reviewed do reflect an epoch of geological upheaval experienced by humanity, these upheavals took place within the last 115,000 years, and more probably within the last 50,000 years.

Cinderella's slipper

It is a curious coincidence of geology and palaeoanthropology that the onset and progress of the last Ice Age, and the emergence and proliferation of modern Man, more or less shadow each other. Curious too is the fact that so little is known about either.

In North America the last Ice Age is called the Wisconsin Glaciation (named for rock deposits studied in the state of Wisconsin) and its early phase has been dated by geologists to 115,000 years ago.[10] There were various advances and retreats of the ice-cap after that, with the fastest rate of accumulation taking place between 60,000 years ago and 17,000 years ago—a process culminating in the Tazewell Advance, which saw the glaciation reach its maximum extent around 15,000 BC.[11] By 13,000 BC, however, millions of square miles of ice had melted, for reasons that have never properly been explained, and by 8000 BC the Wisconsin had withdrawn completely.[12]

The Ice Age was a global phenomenon, affecting both the northern and the southern hemispheres; similar climatic and geological conditions therefore prevailed in many other parts of the world as well (notably in eastern Asia, Australia, New Zealand, and South America). There was massive glaciation in Europe, where the ice reached outward from Scandinavia and Scotland to cover most of Great Britain, Denmark, Poland, Russia, large parts of Germany, all of Switzerland, and big chunks of Austria, Italy and France.[13] (Known technically as the Wurm Glaciation, this European Ice Age started about 70,000 years ago, a little later than its American counterpart, but attained its maximum extent at the same time, 17,000 years ago, and then experienced the same rapid withdrawal, and shared the same terminal date).[14]

---

[8] Ibid., p. 73.
[9] Ibid., p. 73, 77.
[10] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 12:712.
[11] *Path of the Pole,* p. 146.
[12] Ibid., p. 152; *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 12:712.

The crucial stages of Ice Age chronology thus appear to be:

1 around 60,000 years ago, when the Wurm, the Wisconsin and other glaciations were well under way;

2 around 17,000 years ago, when the ice sheets had reached their maximum extent in both the Old World and the New;

3 the 7000 years of deglaciation that followed.

The emergence of *Homo sapiens sapiens* thus coincided with a lengthy period of geological and climatic turbulence, a period marked, above all else, by ferocious freezing and flooding. The many millennia during which the ice was remorselessly expanding must have been terrifying and awful for our ancestors. But those final 7000 years of deglaciation, particularly the episodes of very rapid and extensive melting, must have been worse.

Let us not jump to conclusions about the state of social, or religious, or scientific, or intellectual development of the human beings who lived through the sustained collapse of that tumultuous epoch. The popular stereotype may be wrong in assuming that they were all primitive cave dwellers. In reality little is known about them and almost the only thing that can be said is that they were men and women *exactly like ourselves* physiologically and psychologically.

It is possible that they came close to total extinction on several occasions during the upheavals they experienced; it is also possible that the great myths of cataclysm, to which scholars attribute no historical value, may contain accurate records and eyewitness accounts of real events. As we see in the next chapter, if we are looking for an epoch that fits those myths as snugly as the slipper on Cinderella's foot, it would seem that the last Ice Age is it.

---

[13] John Imbrie and Katherine Palmer Imbrie, *Ice Ages: Solving the Mystery,* Enslow Publishers, New Jersey, 1979, p. 11.

[14] Ibid., p. 120; *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 12:783; *Human Evolution,* p. 73.

Chapter 27

The Face of the Earth was Darkened and a Black Rain Began to Fall

Terrible forces were unleashed on all living creatures during the last Ice Age. We may deduce how these afflicted humanity from the firm evidence of their consequences for other large species. Often this evidence looks puzzling. As Charles Darwin observed after visiting South America:

> No one I think can have marvelled more at the extinction of species than I have done. When I found in La Plata [Argentina] the tooth of a horse embedded with the remains of Mastodon, Megatherium, Toxodon, and other extinct monsters, which all co-existed at a very late geological period, I was filled with astonishment; for seeing that the horse, since its introduction by the Spaniards in South America, has run wild over the whole country and has increased its numbers at an unparalleled rate, I asked myself what could have so recently exterminated the former horse under conditions of life apparently so favourable?[1]

The answer, of course, was the Ice Age. That was what exterminated the former horses of the Americas, and a number of other previously successful mammals. Nor were extinctions limited to the New World. On the contrary, in different parts of the earth (for different reasons and at different times) the long epoch of glaciation witnessed several quite distinct *episodes* of extinction. In all areas, the vast majority of the many destroyed species were lost in the final seven thousand years from about 15,000 BC down to 8000 BC.[2]

At this stage of our investigation is it not necessary to establish the specific nature of the climatic, seismic and geological events linked to the various advances and retreats of the ice sheets which killed off the animals. We might reasonably guess that tidal waves, earthquakes, gigantic windstorms and the sudden onset and remission of glacial conditions played their parts. But more important—whatever the actual agencies involved—is the stark empirical reality that mass extinctions of animals *did* take place as a result of the turmoil of the last Ice Age.

This turmoil, as Darwin concluded in his *Journal,* must have shaken ‘the entire framework of the globe’.[3] In the New World, for example, more than seventy genera of large mammals became extinct between 15,000 BC and 8000 BC, including all North American members of seven families, and one complete order, the Proboscidea.[4] These staggering losses, involving the violent obliteration of more than forty million animals, were not spread out evenly over the whole period; on the contrary, the vast majority of the extinctions occurred in just two thousand years, between 11,000 BC and 9000 BC.[5] To put this in perspective, during the previous 300,000 years only about twenty genera had disappeared.[6]

---

[1] Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species,* Penguin, London, 1985, p. 322.

[2] *Quaternary Extinctions,* pp. 360-1, 394.

[3] Charles Darwin, *Journal of Researches into the Natural History and Geology of Countries Visited during the Voyage of HMS* Beagle *Round the World;* entry for 9 January 1834.

[4] *Quaternary Extinctions,* pp. 360-1, 394.

The same pattern of late and massive extinctions was repeated across Europe and Asia. Even far-off Australia was not exempt, losing perhaps nineteen genera of large vertebrates, not all of them mammals, in a relatively short period of time.[7]

Alaska and Siberia: the sudden freeze

The northern regions of Alaska and Siberia appear to have been the worst hit by the murderous upheavals between 13,000 and 11,000 years ago. In a great swathe of death around the edge of the Arctic Circle the remains of uncountable numbers of large animals have been found—including many carcasses with the flesh still intact, and astonishing quantities of perfectly preserved mammoth tusks. Indeed, in both regions, mammoth carcasses have been thawed to feed to sled dogs and mammoth steaks have featured on restaurant menus in Fairbanks.[8] One authority has commented, 'Hundreds of thousands of individuals must have been frozen immediately after death and remained frozen, otherwise the meat and ivory would have spoiled ... Some powerful general force was certainly at work to bring this catastrophe about.'[9]

Dr Dale Guthrie of the Institute of Arctic Biology has made an interesting point about the sheer *variety* of animals that flourished in Alaska before the eleventh millennium BC:

> When learning of this exotic mixture of sabre-tooth cats, camels, horses, rhinos, asses, deer with gigantic antlers, lions, ferrets, and saiga, one cannot help wondering about the world in which they lived. This great diversity of species, so different from that encountered today, raises the most obvious question: is it not likely that the rest of the environment was also different?[10]

The Alaskan muck in which the remains are embedded is like a fine, dark-grey sand. Frozen solid within this mass, in the words of Professor Hibben of the University of New Mexico:

> lie the twisted parts of animals and trees intermingled with lenses of ice and layers of peat and mosses ... Bison, horses, wolves, bears, lions ... Whole herds of

---

[5] Ibid., pp. 360-1; *The Path of the Pole,* p. 250.

[6] *Quaternary Extinctions,* p. 360-1.

[7] Ibid., p. 358.

[8] Donald W. Patten, *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch: A Study in Scientific History,* Pacific Meridian Publishing Co., Seattle, 1966, p. 194.

[9] *The Path of the Pole,* p. 258.

[10] David M. Hopkins et al., *The Palaeoecology of Beringia,* Academic Press, New York, 1982, p. 309.

> animals were apparently killed together, overcome by some common power ... Such piles of bodies of animals or men simply do not occur by any ordinary natural means ...'[11]

At various levels stone artefacts have been found 'frozen in situ at great depths, and in association with Ice Age fauna, which confirms that men were contemporary with extinct animals in Alaska'.[12] Throughout the Alaskan mucks, also there is:

> evidence of atmospheric disturbances of unparalleled violence. Mammoth and bison alike were torn and twisted as though by a cosmic hand in Godly rage. In one place we can find the foreleg and shoulder of a mammoth with portions of the flesh and toenails and hair still clinging to the blackened bones. Close by is the neck and skull of a bison with the vertebrae clinging together with tendons and ligaments and the chitinous covering of the horns intact. There is no mark of knife or cutting instrument [as there would be if human hunters, for example, had been involved]. The animals were simply torn apart and scattered over the landscape like things of straw and string, even though some of them weighed several tons. Mixed with piles of bones are trees, also twisted and torn and piled in tangled groups; and the whole is covered with a fine sifting muck, then frozen solid.[13]

Much the same picture emerges in Siberia where catastrophic climatic changes and geological upheavals occurred at around the same time. Here the frozen mammoth graveyards, 'mined' for their ivory since the Roman era, were still yielding an estimated 20,000 pairs of tusks every decade at the beginning of the twentieth century.[14]

Once again, some mysterious factor appears to have been at work in bringing about these mass extinctions. With their woolly coats and thick skins, mammoths are generally considered adapted to cold weather, and we are not surprised to come across their remains in Siberia. Harder to explain is the fact that human beings perished alongside them,[15] as well as many other animals that in no sense can be described as cold-adapted species:

> The northern Siberian plains supported vast numbers of rhinoceroses, antelope, horses, bison, and other herbivorous creatures, while a variety of carnivores, including the sabertooth cat, preyed upon them ... Like the mammoths, these other animals ranged to the extreme north of Siberia, to the shores of the Arctic Ocean, and yet further north to the Lyakhov and New Siberian Islands, only a very short distance from the North Pole.[16]

Researchers have confirmed that of the thirty-four animal species living in Siberia prior to the catastrophes of the eleventh millennium BC—including Ossip's mammoth, giant deer, cave hyena and cave lions—no less than twenty-eight were adapted *only to temperate conditions*.[17] In this context, one of the most puzzling aspects of the extinctions, which runs quite contrary to what today's geographical and climatic conditions lead us to expect, is that the farther north one goes, the more the mammoth and other remains *increase* in number.[18] Indeed some of the New Siberian Islands, well within the Arctic Circle, were described by the explorers who first discovered them as being made up almost entirely of mammoth bones and tusks.[19] The only logical conclusion, as the nineteenth-century French zoologist Georges Cuvier put it, is that 'this eternal frost did not previously exist in those parts in which the animals were frozen, for they could not have survived in such a temperature. The same instant that these creatures were bereft of life, the country which they inhabited became frozen.'[20]

---

[11] Professor Frank C. Hibben, *The Lost Americans,* cited in *The Path of the Pole,* p. 275ff.

[12] F. Rainey, 'Archaeological Investigations in Central Alaska', *American Antiquity,* volume V, 1940, page 307.

[13] *Path of the Pole,* p. 275ff.

[14] *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 107-8.

[15] A. P. Okladnikov, 'Excavations in the North' in *Vestiges of Ancient Cultures,* Soviet Union, 1951.

[16] *The Path of the Pole,* p. 255.

There is a great deal of other evidence which suggests that a sudden freeze took place in Siberia during the eleventh millennium BC. In his survey of the New Siberian Islands, the Arctic explorer Baron Eduard von Toll found the remains 'of a sabre-tooth tiger, and a fruit tree that had been 90 feet tall when it was standing. The tree was well preserved in the permafrost, with its roots and seeds. Green leaves and ripe fruit still clung to its branches ... At the present time the only representative of tree vegetation on the islands is a willow that grows one inch high'.[21]

Equally indicative of the cataclysmic change that took place at the onset of the great cold in Siberia is the food the extinct animals were eating when they perished: 'The mammoths died suddenly, in intense cold, and in great numbers. Death came so quickly that the swallowed vegetation is yet undigested ... Grasses, bluebells, buttercups, tender sedges, and wild beans have been found, yet identifiable and undeteriorated, in their mouths and stomachs.'[22]

Needless to say, such flora does not grow anywhere in Siberia today. Its presence there in the eleventh millennium BC compels us to accept that the region had a pleasant and productive climate—one that was temperate or even warm.[23] Why the *end* of the last Ice Age in other parts of the world should have been the *beginning* of fatal winter in this former paradise is a question we shall postpone until Part VIII. What is certain, however, is that at some point between 12-13,000 years ago a destroying frost descended with horrifying speed upon Siberia and has never relaxed its grip. In an eerie echo of the Avestic traditions, a land which had previously enjoyed seven months of summer was converted almost overnight into a land of ice and snow with ten months of harsh and frozen winter.[24]

---

[17] A. P. Okladnikov, *Yakutia before its Incorporation into the Russian State,* McGill-Queens University Press, Montreal, 1970.

[18] *The Path of the Pole,* p. 250.

[19] *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 107. Wragnell, the explorer, observed on Bear Island (Medvizhi Ostrova) that the soil consisted of only sand, ice and such a quantity of mammoth bones that they seemed to be the chief substance of the island. On the Siberian mainland he observed that the tundra was dotted with mammoth tusks rather than Arctic shrubbery.

[20] Georges Cuvier, *Revolutions and Catastrophes in the History of the Earth,* 1829.

[21] Cited in *Path of the Pole,* p. 256.

[22] Ivan T. Sanderson, 'Riddle of the Quick-Frozen Giants', *Saturday Evening Post,* 16 January 1960, p. 82.

[23] *Path of the Pole,* p. 256.

A thousand Krakatoas, all at once

Many of the myths of cataclysm speak of times of terrible cold, of darkened skies, of black, burning, bituminous rain. For centuries it must have been like that all the way across the arc of death incorporating immense tracts of Siberia, the Yukon and Alaska. Here, 'Interspersed in the muck depths, and sometimes through the very piles of bones and tusks themselves, are layers of volcanic ash. There is no doubt that coincidental with the [extinctions] there were volcanic eruptions of tremendous proportions.'[25]

There is a remarkable amount of evidence of excessive volcanism during the decline of the Wisconsin ice cap.[26] Far to the south of the frozen Alaskan mucks, thousands of prehistoric animals and plants were mired, all at once, in the famous La Brea tar pits of Los Angeles. Among the creatures unearthed were bison, horses, camels, sloths, mammoths, mastodons and at least *seven hundred* sabre-toothed tigers.[27] A disarticulated human skeleton was also found, completely enveloped in bitumen, mingled with the bones of an extinct species of vulture. In general, the La Brea remains ('broken, mashed, contorted, and mixed in a most heterogeneous mass'[28]) speak eloquently of a sudden and dreadful volcanic cataclysm.[29]

Similar finds of typical late Ice Age birds and mammals have been unearthed from asphalt at two other locations in California (Carpinteria and McKittrick). In the San Pedro Valley, mastodon skeletons were discovered still standing upright, ungulfed in great heaps of volcanic ash and sand. Fossils from the glacial Lake Floristan in Colorado, and from Oregon's John Day Basin, were also excavated from tombs of volcanic ash.[30]

Although the tremendous eruptions that created such mass graves may have been at their most intense during the last days of the Wisconsin, they appear to have been recurrent throughout much of the Ice Age, not only in North America but in Central and South America, in the North Atlantic, in continental Asia, and in Japan.[31]

---

[24] Ibid., p. 256. Winter temperatures fall to 56 degrees below zero.

[25] Ibid., p. 277.

[26] Ibid., p. 132.

[27] R. S. Luss, *Fossils,* 1931, p. 28.

[28] G. M. Price, *The New Geology,* 1923, p. 579.

[29] Ibid.

[30] *Earth In Upheaval,* p. 63

It is difficult to imagine what this widespread volcanism might have meant for people living in those strange and terrible times. But those who recall the cauliflower-shaped clouds of dust, smoke and ash ejected into the upper atmosphere by the eruption of Mount Saint Helens in 1980 will appreciate that a large number of such explosions (occurring sequentially over a sustained period at different points around the globe) would not only have had devastating local effects but would have caused a severe deterioration in the world's climate.

Mount Saint Helens spat out an estimated one cubic kilometre of rock and was small-scale by comparison with the typical volcanism of the Ice Age.[32] A more representative impression would be the Indonesian volcano Krakatoa, which erupted in 1883 with such violence that more than 36,000 people were killed and the explosion was heard 3000 miles away. From the epicentre in the Sunda Strait, *tsunamis* 100 feet high roared across the Java Sea and the Indian Ocean, carrying steamships miles inland and causing flooding as far away as East Africa and the western coasts of the Americas. Eighteen cubic kilometres of rock and vast quantities of ash and dust were pumped into the upper atmosphere; skies all over the world were noticeably darker for more than two years and sunsets notably redder. Average global temperatures fell measurably during this period because volcanic dust-particles reflect the sun's rays back into space.[33]

During the episodes of intense volcanism which characterized the Ice Age, we must envisage not one but many Krakatoas. The combined effect would at first have been a great intensification of glacial conditions, as the light of the sun was cut by the boiling dust clouds, and as already low temperatures plummeted even further. Volcanoes also inject enormous volumes of carbon dioxide into the atmosphere, and carbon dioxide is a 'greenhouse gas', so it is reasonable to suppose, as the dust began to settle during periods of relative calm, that a degree of global warming would have occurred. A number of authorities attribute the repeated advances and retreats of the great ice sheets to precisely this see-saw interaction between volcanism and climate.[34]

Global flooding

Geologists agree that by 8000 BC the great Wisconsin and Wurm ice-caps had retreated. The Ice Age was over. However, the seven thousand years

---

[31] *Path of the Pole,* p. 133, 176.

[32] *The Evolving Earth,* Guild Publishing, London, 1989, p. 30.

[33] *Ice Ages: Solving the Mystery,* p. 64.

[34] *Path of the Pole,* pp. 132-5.

prior to that date had witnessed climatic and geological turbulence on a scale that was almost unimaginable. Lurching from cataclysm to disaster and from misfortune to calamity, the few scattered tribes of surviving humans must have led lives of constant terror and confusion: there would have been periods of quiescence, when they might have hoped that the worst was over. While the melting of the giant glaciers continued, however, these episodes of tranquillity would have been punctuated again and again by violent floods. Moreover, sections of the earth's crust hitherto pressed down into the asthenosphere by billions of tons of ice would have been liberated by the thaw and begun to rise again, sometimes rapidly, causing devastating earthquakes and filling the air with terrible noise.

Some times were much worse than others. The bulk of the animal extinctions took place between 11,000 BC and 9000 BC when there were violent and unexplained fluctuations of climate.[35] (In the words of geologist John Imbrie, 'a climatic revolution took place around 11,000 years ago.'[36]) There were also greatly increased rates of sedimentation[37] and an abrupt temperature increase of 6-10 degrees Centigrade in the surface waters of the Atlantic Ocean.[38]

Another turbulent episode, again accompanied by mass extinctions, took place between 15,000 BC and 13,000 BC. We saw in the previous chapter that the Tazewell Advance brought the ice sheets to their maximum extent around 17,000 years ago and that a dramatic and prolonged thaw then ensued, completely deglaciating millions of square miles of North America and Europe in less than two thousand years.

There were some anomalies: all of western Alaska, the Yukon territory in Canada, and most of Siberia including the New Siberian Islands (now among the coldest parts of the world), remained unglaciated until the Ice Age was near its end. They acquired their present climate only about

---

[35] Ibid., p. 137. A major change from glacial to post-glacial conditions occurred about 11,000 years ago. This temperature change was 'sharp and abrupt' *(Polar Wandering and Continental Drift,* Society of Economic Paleontologists and Mineralogists, Special Publication No. 10, Tulsa, 1953, p. 159). Dramatic climate change around 12,000 years ago is also reported in C.C. Langway and B. Lyle Hansen, *The Frozen Future: A Prophetic Report from Antarctica,* Quadrangle, New York, 1973, p. 202. See also *Ice Ages,* pp. 129, 142; see also *Quaternary Extinctions,* p. 357: 'The last 100,000 years of glacial expansion, as recorded by oxygen-isotope ratios in deep-sea cores from the Atlantic and the Equatorial Pacific, terminated ABRUPTLY around 12,000 years ago. A very rapid ice melt caused a rapid rise in sea level... Detailed land fossils show a major movement of plant and animal species at the time, especially into formerly glaciated terrain. American megafaunal extinctions occurred during a time of rapid climatic change as seen in fossil pollen and small animal records.'

[36] *Ice Ages,* p. 129.

[37] *Path of the Pole,* p. 137.

[38] 'The relative change is shown by the change in the relative abundance of cold and warm water planktonic foraminfera, and the absolute change is given by oxygen isotope ratio determinations on the fauna.' *Polar Wandering,* p. 96.

12,000 years ago, apparently very abruptly, when the mammoths and other large mammals were frozen in their tracks.[39]

Elsewhere the picture was different. Most of Europe was buried under ice two miles thick.[40] So too was most of North America where the ice-cap had spread from centres near Hudson Bay to enshroud all of eastern Canada, New England and much of the Midwest down to the 37th parallel—well to the south of Cincinnati in the Mississippi Valley and more than halfway to the equator.[41]

At its peak 17,000 years ago, it is calculated that the total ice volume covering the northern hemisphere was in the region of six million cubic miles, and of course there were extensive glaciations in the southern hemisphere too as we noted. The surplus water flow from which these numerous ice-caps were formed had been provided by the world's seas and oceans which were then about 400 feet lower than they are today.[42]

It was at this moment that the pendulum of climate swung violently in the opposite direction. The great meltdown began so suddenly and over such vast areas that it has been described 'as a sort of miracle'.[43] Geologists refer to it as the Bolling phase of warm climate in Europe and as the Brady interstadial in North America. In both regions:

> An ice-cap that may have taken 40,000 years to develop disappeared for the most part, in 2000. It must be obvious that this could not have been the result of gradually acting climatic factors usually called upon to explain ice ages ... The rapidity of the deglaciation suggests that some extraordinary factor was affecting the climate. The dates suggest that this factor first made itself felt about 16,500 years ago, that it had destroyed most, perhaps three-quarters of the glaciers by 2000 years later, and that [the vast bulk of these dramatic developments took place] in a millennium or less.'[44]

---

[39] The reader may recall that inexplicably warm conditions prevailed in the New Siberian Islands until this time, and it is worth noting that many other islands in the Arctic Ocean were also unaffected for a long while by the widespread glaciations elsewhere (e.g. on Baffin Island the remains of alder and birch trees preserved in peat indicate a relatively warm climate extending at least from 30,000 to 17,000 years ago. It is also certain that large parts of Greenland remained enigmatically ice-free during the Ice Age. *Path of the Pole,* p. 93, 96.

[40] *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 114; *Path of the Pole,* pp. 47-8.

[41] *Ice Ages,* p. 11. *Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 117; *Path of the Pole,* p. 47.

[42] *Ice Ages,* p. 11; *Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 114.

[43] *Path of the Pole,* p. 150.

[44] *Path of the Pole,* pp. 148-9, 152, 162-3. In North America, where the ice reached its maximum extent between 17,000 and 16,500 years ago, geologists have made the following discoveries: 'Leaves, needles and fruits' that flourished around 15,300 years ago in Massachusetts; 'A bog which developed over glacial material in New Jersey at least 16,280 years ago, immediately after the interruption of the ice advance.'; 'In Ohio we have a postglacial sample dated about 14,000 years ago. And that was spruce wood, suggesting a forest that must have taken a few thousand years, by conservative estimate, to get established. What, indeed, does this mean? Does it not clearly suggest that the ice cap, estimated to have been at its maximum at least a mile thick in Ohio, disappeared from Delaware County in that state within only a few centuries?'

Likewise, 'in the Soviet Union, in the Irkutsk area, deglaciation was complete and

Inevitably the first consequence was a precipitous rise in sea levels, perhaps as much as 350 feet.[45] Islands and land bridges disappeared and vast sections of low-lying continental coastline were submerged. From time to time great tidal waves rose up to engulf higher land as well. They ebbed away, but in the process left unmistakable traces of their presence.

In the United States, 'Ice Age marine features are present along the Gulf coast east of the Mississippi River, in some places at altitudes that may exceed 200 feet.'[46] In bogs covering glacial deposits in Michigan, skeletons of two whales were discovered. In Georgia marine deposits occur at altitudes of 160 feet, and in northern Florida at altitudes of at least 240 feet. In Texas, well to the south of the farthest extent of the Wisconsin Glaciation, the remains of Ice Age land mammals are found in marine deposits. Another marine deposit, containing walrus, seals and at least five genera of whales, overlies the seaboard of the north-eastern states and the Arctic coast of Canada. In many areas along the Pacific coast of North America Ice Age marine deposits extend 'more than 200 miles inland.'[47] The bones of a whale have been found north of Lake Ontario, about 440 feet above sea level, a skeleton of another whale in Vermont, more than 500 feet above sea level, and another in the Montreal-Quebec area about 600 feet above sea level.[48]

Flood myths from all over the world characteristically and recurrently describe scenes when humans and animals flee the rising tides and take refuge on mountain tops. The fossil record confirms that this did indeed happen during the melting of the ice sheets and that the mountains were not always high enough to save the refugees from disaster. For example, fissures in the rocks on the tops of isolated hills in central France are filled with what is known as 'osseous breccia', consisting of the splintered bones of mammoths, woolly rhinoceroses and other animals. The 1430 feet peak of Mount Genay in Burgundy 'is capped by a breccia containing remains of mammoth, reindeer, horse and other animals'.[49] Much farther south, so too is the Rock of Gibraltar where 'a human molar and some flints worked by Paleolithic man were discovered among the animal bones.'[50]

Hippo remains, together with mammoth, rhinoceros, horse, bear, bison,

---

postglacial life fully established by 14,500 years ago. In Lithuania another bog developed as early as 15,620 years ago. These two dates taken together are rather suggestive. A bog can develop much faster than a forest. First, however, the ice must disappear. And let us not forget that there was a great deal of ice.'

[45] *Ice Ages,* p. 11, *Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 117, *Path of the Pole,* p. 47.

[46] R. F. Flint, *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch,* 1947, pp. 294-5.

[47] Ibid., p. 362.

[48] *Earth in Upheaval,* p. 43; in general, pp. 42-4.

[49] Ibid., p. 47. Joseph Prestwich, *On Certain Phenomena Belonging to the Close of the Last Geological Period and on their Bearing upon the Tradition of the Flood,* Macmillan, London, 1895, p. 36.

[50] *On Certain Phenomena,* p. 48.

wolf and lion, have been found in England, in the neighbourhood of Plymouth on the Channel.[51] The hills around Palermo in Sicily disclosed an 'extraordinary quantity of bones of hippopotami—in complete hecatombs'.[52] On the basis of this and other evidence, Joseph Prestwich, formerly professor of Geology at Oxford University, concluded that Central Europe, England, and the Mediterranean islands of Corsica, Sardinia and Sicily were all completely submerged on several occasions during the rapid melting of the ice sheets:

> The animals naturally retreated, as the waters advanced, deeper into the hills until they found themselves embayed ... They thronged together in vast multitudes, crushing into the more accessible caves, until overtaken by the waters and destroyed ... Rocky debris and large blocks from the sides of the hills were hurled down by the currents of water, crushing and smashing the bones ... Certain communities of early man must have suffered in this general catastrophe.[53]

It is probable that similar flood disasters occurred in China at much the same time. In caves near Peking, bones of mammoths and buffaloes have been found in association with human skeletal remains.[54] A number of authorities attribute the violent intermingling of mammoth carcasses with splintered and broken trees in Siberia 'to a great tidal wave that uprooted forests and buried the tangled carnage in a flood of mud. In the polar region this froze solid and has preserved the evidence in permafrost to the present.'[55]

All over South America, too, Ice-Age fossils have been unearthed, 'in which incongruous animal types (carnivores and herbivores) are mixed promiscuously with human bones. No less significant is the association, over truly widespread areas, of fossilized land and sea creatures mingled in no order and yet entombed in the same geological horizon.'[56]

North America was also badly affected by flooding. As the great Wisconsin ice sheets melted they created huge but temporary lakes which filled up with incredible speed, drowning everything in their paths, then drained away in a few hundred years. Lake Agassiz, for example, the largest glacial lake in the New World, once occupied an area of 110,000 square miles, covering large parts of what are now Manitoba, Ontario and Saskatchewan in Canada, and North Dakota and Minnesota in the United States.[57] Remarkably, it endured for less than a millennium, indicating a catastrophically sudden episode of melting and flooding followed by a period of quiescence.[58]

---

[51] Ibid., p. 25-6.

[52] Ibid., p. 50.

[53] Ibid., p. 51-2.

[54] J. S. Lee, *The Geology of China,* London, 1939, p. 370.

[55] *Polar Wandering,* p. 165.

[56] J. B. Delair and E.F. Oppe, 'The Evidence of Violent Extinction in South America', in *Path of the Pole* p. 292.

[57] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1:141.

[58] Warren Upham, *The Glacial Lake Agassiz,* 1895, p. 240.

A token of good faith

It was long believed that human beings did not reach the New World until around 11,000 years ago, but recent finds have steadily pushed that horizon back. Stone implements dating to 25,000 BC have been identified by Canadian researchers in the Old Crow Basin in the Yukon Territory of Alaska.[59] In South America (as far south as Peru and Tierra del Fuego) human remains and artefacts have been found which have been reliably dated to 12,000 BC—with another group between 19,000 BC and 23,000 BC.[60] With this and other evidence taken into account, 'a very reasonable conclusion on the peopling of the Americas is that it began at least 35,000 years ago, but may well have included waves of immigrants at later dates too.'[61]

Those newly arriving Ice Age Americans, trekking in from Siberia across the Bering land bridge, would have faced the most appalling conditions between 17,000 and 10,000 years ago. It was then that the Wisconsin glaciers, all at once, went into their ferocious meltdown, forcing a 350-foot rise in global sea levels amid scenes of unprecedented climatic and geological turmoil. For *seven thousand years of human experience,* earthquakes, volcanic eruptions and immense floods, interspersed with eerie periods of peace, must have dominated the day-to-day lives of the New World peoples. Perhaps this is why so many of their myths speak with such conviction of fire and floods and times of darkness and of the creation and destruction of Suns.

Moreover, as we have seen, the myths of the New World are not in this respect isolated from those of the Old. All around the globe, a remarkable uniformity reveals itself over issues such as 'the great flood' and 'the great cold' and 'the time of the great upheaval'. It is not just that the same experiences are being recounted again and again; that, on its own, would be quite understandable since the Ice Age and its after-effects were global phenomena. More curious by far is the way in which the same symbolic motifs keep recurring: the one good man and his family, the warning given by a god, the seeds of all living things saved, the survival ship, the enclosure against the cold, the trunk of a tree in which the pregenitors of future humanity hide themselves, the birds and other creatures released after the flood to find land ... and so on.

Isn't it also odd that so many of the myths turn out to contain descriptions of figures like Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha, said to have come in the time of darkness, after the flood, to teach architecture, astronomy, science and the rule of law to the scattered and devastated tribes of survivors.

Who were these civilizing heroes? Were they figments of the primitive imagination? Or gods? Or men? If they were men, could they have tampered with the myths in some way, turning them into vehicles for transporting knowledge through time?

---

[59] *Human Evolution,* p. 92.

[60] Ibid.; see also *Quaternary Extinctions,* p. 375.

[61] *Human Evolution,* p. 92.

Such notions seem fanciful. But, as we shall see in Part V, astronomical data of a disturbingly accurate and scientific nature turns up repeatedly in certain myths, as time-worn and as universal in their distribution as those of the great flood.

Where did their scientific content come from?

Part V

The Mystery of the Myths

2. The Precessional Code

North Celestial pole
Ecliptic
Celestial equator
South celestial pole

The Celestial Sphere.

Chapter 28

The Machinery of Heaven

> Although a modern reader does not expect a text on celestial mechanics to read like a lullaby, he insists on his capacity to understand mythical 'images' instantly, because he can respect as 'scientific' only page-long approximation formulas, and the like.
>
> He does not think of the possibility that equally relevant knowledge might once have been expressed in everyday language. He never suspects such a possibility, although the visible accomplishments of ancient cultures—to mention only the pyramids or metallurgy—should be a cogent reason for concluding that serious and intelligent men were at work behind the stage, men who were bound to have used a technical language ...[1]

The quotation is from the late Giorgio de Santillana, professor of the History of Science at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. In the chapters that follow, we shall be learning about his revolutionary investigations into ancient mythology. In brief, however, his proposition is this: long ages ago, serious and intelligent people devised a system for veiling the technical terminology of an advanced astronomical science behind the everyday language of myth.

Is Santillana right? And if he is right, who were these serious and intelligent people—these astronomers, these ancient scientists—who worked behind the stage of prehistory?

Let us start with some basics.

The wild celestial dance

The earth makes a complete circuit around its own axis once every twenty-four hours and has an equatorial circumference of 24,902.45 miles. It follows, therefore, that a man standing still on the equator is in fact in motion, revolving with the planet at just over 1000 miles per hour.[2] Viewed from outer space, looking down on the North Pole, the direction of rotation is anti-clockwise.

While spinning daily on its own axis, the earth also orbits the sun (again in an anti-clockwise direction) on a path which is slightly elliptical rather than completely circular. It pursues this orbit at truly breakneck speed, travelling as far along it in an hour—66,600 miles—as the average motorist will drive in six years. To bring the calculations down in scale, this means that we are hurtling through space much faster than any bullet, at the rate of 18.5 miles *every second.* In the time that it has taken you to read this paragraph, we have voyaged about 550 miles farther along earth's path around the sun.[3]

---

[1] *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 57-8.

[2] Figures from *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 27:530.

With a year required to complete a full circuit, the only evidence we have of the tremendous orbital race we are participating in is the slow march of the seasons. And in the operations of the seasons themselves it is possible to see a wondrous and impartial mechanism at work distributing spring, summer, autumn and winter fairly around the globe, across the northern and southern hemispheres, year in and year out, with absolute regularity.

The earth's axis of rotation is tilted in relation to the plane of its orbit (at about 23.5° to the vertical). This tilt, which causes the seasons, 'points' the North Pole, and the entire northern hemisphere away from the sun for six months a year (while the southern hemisphere enjoys its summer) and points the South Pole and the southern hemisphere away from the sun for the remaining six months (while the northern hemisphere enjoys its summer). The seasons result from the annual variation in the angle at which the sun's rays reach any particular point on the earth's surface and from the annual variation in the number of hours of sunlight received there at different times of the year.

The earth's tilt is referred to in technical language as its 'obliquity', and the plane of its orbit, extended outwards to form a great circle in the celestial sphere, is known as the 'ecliptic'. Astronomers also speak of the 'celestial equator', which is an extension of the earth's equator into the celestial sphere. The celestial equator is today inclined at about 23.5° to the ecliptic, because the earth's axis is inclined at 23.5° to the vertical. This angle, termed the 'obliquity of the ecliptic', is not fixed and immutable for all time. On the contrary (as we saw in Chapter Eleven in relation to the dating of the Andean city of Tiahuanaco) it is subject to constant, though very slow, oscillations. These occur across a range of slightly less than 3°, rising closest to the vertical at 22.1° and falling farthest away at 24.5°. A full cycle, from 24.5° to 22.1°, and back again to 24.5°, takes approximately 41,000 years to complete.[4]

So our fragile planet nods and spins while soaring along its orbital path. The orbit takes a year and the spin takes a day and the nod has a cycle of 41,000 years. A wild celestial dance seems to be going on as we skip and skim and dive through eternity, and we feel the tug of contradictory urges: to fall into the sun on the one hand; to make a break for the outer darkness on the other.

---

[3] Ibid.

[4] J. D. Hays, John Imbrie, N.J. Shackleton, 'Variations in the Earth's Orbit, Pacemaker of the Ice Ages', *Science,* volume 194, No. 4270, 10 December 1976, p. 1125.

Recondite influences

The sun's gravitational domain, in the inner circles of which the earth is held captive, is now known to extend more than fifteen *trillion* miles into space, almost halfway to the nearest star.[5] Its pull upon our planet is therefore immense. Also affecting us is the gravity of the other planets with which we share the solar system. Each of these exerts an attraction which tends to draw the earth out of its regular orbit around the sun. The planets are of different sizes, however, and revolve around the sun at different speeds. The combined gravitational influence they are able to exert thus changes over time in complex but predictable ways, and the orbit changes its shape constantly in response. Since the orbit is an ellipse these changes affect its degree of elongation, known technically as its 'eccentricity'. This varies from a low value close to zero (when the orbit approaches the form of a perfect circle) to a high value of about six per cent when it is at its most elongated and elliptical.[6]

There are other forms of planetary influence too. Thus, though no explanation has yet been forthcoming, it is known that shortwave radio frequencies are disturbed when Jupiter, Saturn and Mars line up.[7] And in this connection evidence has also emerged

> of a strange and unexpected correlation between the positions of Jupiter, Saturn and Mars, in their orbits around the sun, and violent electrical disturbances in the earth's upper atmosphere. This would seem to indicate that the planets and the sun share in a cosmic-electrical balance mechanism that extends a billion miles from the centre of our solar system. Such an electrical balance is not accounted for in current astrophysical theories.[8]

---

[5] *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* pp. 288-9. Fifteen trillion miles is equivalent to fifteen thousand billion miles.

[6] *Ice Ages,* pp. 80-1.

[7] *Earth in Upheaval,* p. 266.

[8] *New York Times,* 15 April 1951.

Variation in obliquity of pole
Plane of orbit (ecliptic)
Pole of the ecliptic

The obliquity of the ecliptic varies from 22.1° to 24.5° over a cycle of 41,000 years.

Pole of the ecliptic
Pole of the Earth
Venus
Mercury
Earth
Moon

Inner planets of the solar system.

The *New York Times,* from which the above report is taken, does not attempt to clarify matters further. Its writers are probably unaware of just how much they sound like Berosus, the Chaldean historian, astronomer and seer of the third century BC, who made a deep study of the omens he believed would presage the final destruction of the world. He concluded, 'I Berosus, interpreter of Bellus, affirm that all the earth inherits will be consigned to flame when the five planets assemble in Cancer, so arranged in one row that a straight line may pass through their spheres.'[9]

A conjunction of five planets that can be expected to have profound gravitational effects will take place on 5 May in the year 2000 when Neptune, Uranus, Venus, Mercury and Mars will align with earth on the other side of the sun, setting up a sort of cosmic tug-of-war.[10] Let us also note that modern astrologers who have charted the Mayan date for the end of the Fifth Sun calculate that there will be a most peculiar arrangement of planets at that time, indeed an arrangement *so* peculiar that 'it can only occur once in 45,200 years ... From this extraordinary pattern we might well expect an extraordinary effect.'[11]

No one in his or her right mind would rush to accept such a proposition. Nevertheless, it cannot be denied that multiple influences, many of which we do not fully understand, appear to be at work within our solar system. Among these influences, that of our own satellite, the moon, is particularly strong. Earthquakes, for example, occur more often when the moon is full or when the earth is between the sun and the moon; when the moon is new or between the sun and the earth; when the moon crosses the meridian of the affected locality; and when the moon is closest to the earth on its orbit.[12] Indeed, when the moon reaches this latter point (technically referred to as its 'perigree'), its gravitational attraction increases by about six per cent. This happens once every twenty-seven and one-third days. The tidal pull that it exerts on these occasions affects not only the great movements of our oceans but those of the reservoirs of hot magma penned within the earth's thin crust (which has been described as resembling 'a paper bag filled with honey or molasses swinging along at a rate of more than 1000 miles an hour in equatorial rotation, and more than 66,000 miles an hour in orbit'[13]).

The wobble of a deformed planet

All this circular motion, of course, generates immense centrifugal forces and these, as Sir Isaac Newton demonstrated in the seventeenth century, cause the earth's 'paper bag' to bulge outwards at the equator. The corollary is a flattening at the poles. In consequence, our planet deviates slightly from the form of a perfect sphere and is more accurately described as an 'oblate spheroid'. Its radius at the equator (3963.374 miles) is about fourteen miles longer than its polar radius (3949.921 miles).[14]

---

[9] Berossus, Fragments.

[10] Skyglobe 3.6.

[11] Roberta S. Sklower, 'Predicting Planetary Positions', appendix to Frank Waters, *Mexico Mystique,* Sage Books, Chicago, 1975, p. 285ff.

[12] *Earth in Upheaval,* p. 138.

[13] *Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 49.

For billions of years the flattened poles and the bulging equator have been engaged in a covert mathematical interaction with the recondite influence of gravity. 'Because the Earth is flattened,' explains one authority, 'the Moon's gravity tends to tilt the Earth's axis so that it becomes perpendicular to the Moon's orbit, and to a lesser extent the same is true for the Sun.'[15]

At the same time the equatorial bulge—the extra mass distributed around the equator—acts like the rim of a gyroscope to keep the earth steady on its axis.[16]

Year in, year out, on a planetary scale, it is this gyroscopic effect that prevents the tug of the sun and the moon from radically altering the earth's axis of rotation. The pull these two bodies jointly exert is, however, sufficiently strong to force the axis to 'precess', which means that it wobbles slowly in a clockwise direction opposite to that of the earth's spin.

This important motion is our planet's characteristic signature within the solar system. Anyone who has ever set a top spinning should be able to understand it without much difficulty; a top, after all, is simply another type of gyroscope. In full uninterrupted spin it stands upright. But the moment its axis is deflected from the vertical it begins to exhibit a second behaviour: a slow and obstinate reverse wobble around a great circle. This wobble, which *is* precession, changes the direction in which the axis points while keeping constant its newly tilted angle.

A second analogy, somewhat different in approach, may help to clarify matters a little further:

1 Envisage the earth, floating in space, inclined at approximately 23.5° to the vertical and spinning around on its axis once every 24 hours.
2 Envisage this axis as a massively strong pivot, or *axle,* passing through the centre of the earth, exiting via the North and South Poles and extending outwards from there in both directions.
3 Imagine that you are a giant, striding through the solar system, with orders to carry out a specific task.
4 Imagine approaching the tilted earth (which, because of your great size, now looks no bigger to you than a millwheel).
5 Imagine reaching out and grasping the two ends of the extended axis.
6 And imagine yourself slowly beginning to inter-rotate them, pushing

---

[14] Figures from *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 27:530.

[15] Ibid.

[16] *Path of the Pole,* p. 3.

one end, pulling the other.

7 The earth was already spinning when you arrived.

8 Your orders, therefore, are not to get involved in its axial rotation, but rather to impart to it its *other* motion: that slow clockwise wobble called precession.

9 To fulfill this commission you will have to push the northern tip of the extended axis up and around a great circle in the northern celestial hemisphere while at the same time pulling the southern tip around an equally large circle in the southern celestial hemisphere. This will involve a slow swivelling pedalling motion with your hands and shoulders.

10 Be warned, however. The ‘millwheel’ of the earth is heavier than it looks, so much heavier, in fact, that it’s going to take you 25,776 years[17] to turn the two tips of its axis through one full precessional cycle (at the end of which they will be aiming at the same points in the celestial sphere as when you arrived).

11 Oh, and by the way, now that you’ve started the job we may as well tell you that you’re never going to be allowed to leave. As soon as one precessional cycle is over another must begin. And another ... and another ... and another ... and so on, endlessly, for ever and ever and ever.

12 You can think of this, if you like, as one of the basic mechanisms of the solar system, or, if you prefer, as one of the fundamental commandments of the divine will.

---

[17] Jane B. Sellers, *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* Penguin, London, 1992, p. 205.

13,000 years ago the North Pole pointed towards Vega, as it will do again in 12,500 years from now.
The North Pole today points towards Polaris.

Precession.

In the process, little by little, as you slowly sweep the extended axis around the heavens, its two tips will point to one star after another in the polar latitudes of the southern celestial hemisphere (and sometimes, of course, to empty space), and to one star after another in the polar latitudes of the northern celestial hemisphere. We are talking here, about a kind of musical chairs among the circumpolar stars. And what keeps everything in motion is the earth's axial precession—a motion driven by giant gravitational and gyroscopic forces, that is regular, predictable and relatively easy to work out with the aid of modern equipment. Thus, for example, the northern pole star is presently alpha Ursae Minoris (which we know as Polaris). But computer calculations enable us to state with certainty that in 3000 BC alpha Draconis occupied the pole position; at the time of the Greeks the northern pole star was beta Ursae Minoris; and in AD 14,000 it will be Vega.[18]

---

[18] Skyglobe 3.6.

A great secret of the past

It will not hurt to remind ourselves of some of the fundamental data concerning the movements of the earth and its orientation in space:

- It tilts at about 23.5° to the vertical, an angle from which it can vary by as much as 1.5° on either side over periods of 41,000 years.
- It completes a full precessional cycle once every 25,776 years.[19]
- It spins on its own axis once every twenty-four hours.
- It orbits the sun once every 365 days (actually 365.2422 days).
- The most important influence on its seasons is the angle at which the rays of the sun strike it at various points on its orbital path.

Sunrise on Summer Solstice
Sunrise on the Equinoxes
Sunrise on Winter Solstice
North

Equinoxes and solstices.

Let us also note that there are four crucial astronomical moments in the year, marking the official beginning of each of the four seasons. These moments (or cardinal points), which were of immense importance to the ancients, are the winter and the summer solstices and the spring and autumn equinoxes. In the northern hemisphere the winter solstice, the shortest day, falls on 21 December, and the summer solstice, the longest day, on 21 June. In the southern hemisphere, on the other hand, everything is literally upside down: there winter begins on 21 June and summer on 21 December.

---

[19] Precise figure from *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 205.

The equinoxes, by contrast, are the two points in the year on which night and day are of equal length all over the planet. Once again, however, as with the solstices, the date that marks the onset of spring in the northern hemisphere (20 March) marks that of autumn in the southern hemisphere, and the date for the onset of autumn in the northern hemisphere (22 September) marks the onset of spring in the southern hemisphere.

Like the subtler variations of the seasons, all this is brought about by the benevolent obliquity of the planet. The northern hemisphere's summer solstice falls at that point in the orbit when the North Pole is aimed most directly *towards* the sun; six months later the winter solstice marks that point when the North Pole is aimed most directly *away* from the sun. And, logically enough, the reason that day and night are of exactly equal length all over the planet on the spring and autumn equinoxes is that these mark the two points when the earth's axis of rotation lies broadside-on to the sun.

Let us now take a look at a strange and beautiful phenomenon of celestial mechanics.

This phenomenon is known as 'the precession of the equinoxes'. It has rigid and repetitive mathematical qualities that can be analysed and predicted precisely. It is, however, extremely difficult to observe, and even harder to measure accurately, without sophisticated instrumentation.

In this, there may lie a clue to one of the great mysteries of the past.

Chapter 29

The First Crack in an Ancient Code

The plane of the earth's orbit, projected outwards to form a great circle in the celestial sphere, is known as the ecliptic. Ringed around the ecliptic, in a starry belt that extends approximately 7° north and south, are the twelve constellations of the zodiac: Aries, Taurus, Gemini, Cancer, Leo, Virgo, Libra, Scorpius, Sagittarius, Capricornus, Aquarius and Pisces. These constellations are irregular in size, shape and distribution. Nevertheless (and one assumes by chance!) their spacing around the rim of the ecliptic is sufficiently even to bestow a sense of cosmic order upon the diurnal risings and settings of the sun.

To picture what is involved here, do the following: (1) mark a dot in the centre of a blank sheet of paper; (2) draw a circle around the dot, about half an inch away from it; (3) enclose that circle in a second, larger, circle.

The dot represents the sun. The smaller of the two concentric circles represents the earth's orbit. The larger circle represents the rim of the ecliptic. Around the perimeter of this larger circle, therefore, you should now draw twelve boxes, spacing them evenly, to represent the constellations of the zodiac. Since there are 360° in a circle, each constellation can be considered to occupy a space of 30° along the ecliptic. The dot is the sun. The inner of the two concentric circles is the earth's orbit. We know that the earth travels on this orbit in an anti-clockwise direction, from the west towards the east, and that every twenty-four hours it also makes one complete rotation around its own axis (again from the west towards the east).

From these two movements two illusions result:

1 Each day as the planet turns from west to east, the sun (which is of course a fixed point) appears to 'move' across the sky from east to west.
2 Roughly every thirty days, as the spinning earth journeys along its orbital path around the sun, the sun itself slowly appears to 'pass' through one after another of the twelve zodiacal constellations (which are also fixed points), and again it appears to be 'moving' in an east-west direction.

On any particular day of the year, in other words, (corresponding on our diagram to any point we care to choose around the inner concentric circle marking the earth's orbit), it is obvious that the sun will lie *between* an observer on the earth and one of the twelve zodiacal constellations. On that day what the observer will see, so long as he or she is up and about well before dawn, is the sun rising in the east in the portion of the sky occupied by that particular constellation.

Beneath the clear and unpolluted heavens of the ancient world, it is easy to understand how human beings might have felt reassured by regular celestial motions such as these. It is equally easy to understand why the four cardinal points of the year—the spring and autumn equinoxes, the winter and summer solstices—should everywhere have been accorded immense significance. Even greater significance was accorded to the conjunction of these cardinal points with the zodiacal constellations. But most significant of all was the constellation in which the sun was observed to rise on the morning of the spring (or vernal) equinox. Because of the earth's axial precession, the ancients discovered that this constellation was *not* fixed or permanent for all time but that the honour of 'housing' or 'carrying' the sun on the day of the vernal equinox circulated—*very, very slowly*—among all the constellations of the zodiac.

In the words of Giorgio de Santillana: 'The sun's position amongst the constellations at the vernal equinox was the pointer that indicated the "hours" of the precessional cycle—very long hours indeed, the equinoctial sun occupying each zodiacal constellation for almost 2200 years.[1]

The *direction* of the earth's slow axial precession is clockwise (i.e., east to west) and thus in opposition to the direction of the planet's annual path around the sun. In relation to the constellations of the zodiac, lying fixed in space, this causes the point at which the spring equinox occurs 'to move stubbornly along the ecliptic in the opposite direction to the yearly course Direction in which the vernal point shifts as a result of precession of the sun, that is, against the "right" sequence of the zodiacal signs (Taurus→ Aries→ Pisces→ Aquarius, instead of Aquarius→ Pisces→ Aries→ Taurus).'[2]

---

[1] *Hamlet 's Mill,* p. 59.

[2] Ibid., p. 58.

Direction in which the vernal point shifts as a result of precession
Direction of the annual 'path of the sun' through the 12 houses of the zodiac.
Sagittarius
Scorpio
Capricorn
Libra
Ecliptic
Aquarius
Virgo
Vernal Equinox
East Horizon
West
Pisces
Leo
Aries
Cancer
Taurus
Gemini

During the course of each year the earth's movement along its orbit causes the stellar background against which the sun is seen to rise to change from month to month: Aquarius→ Pisces→ Aries→ Taurus→ Gemini→ Cancer→ Leo, etc, etc. At present, on the vernal equinox, the sun rises due east between Pisces and Aquarius. The effect of precession is to cause the 'vernal point' to be reached fractionally earlier in the orbit each year with the result that it very gradually shifts through all 12 houses of the zodiac, spending 2160 years 'in' each sign and making a complete circuit in 25,920 years. The direction of this 'processional drift', in opposition to the annual 'path of the sun', is: Leo→ Cancer→ Gemini→ Taurus→ Aries→ Pisces→ Aquarius. To give one example, the 'Age of Leo', i.e. the 2160 years during which the sun on the vernal equinox rose against the stellar background of the constellation of Leo, lasted from 10,970 until 8810 BC. We live today in the astrological no man's land at the end of the 'Age of Pisces', on the threshold of the 'New Age' of Aquarius. Traditionally these times of transition between one age and the next have been regarded as ill-omened.

That, in a nutshell, is the meaning of 'precession of the equinoxes'. And that is exactly what is involved in the notion of the 'dawning of the Age of Aquarius'. The famous line from the musical *Hair* refers to the fact that every year, for the last 2000 years or so, the sun has risen in Pisces on the vernal equinox. The *age* of Pisces, however, is now approaching its end and the vernal sun will soon pass out of the sector of the Fish and begin to rise against the new background of Aquarius.

The 25,776-year cycle of precession is the engine that drives this majestic celestial juggernaut along its never-ending tour of the heavens. But the details of exactly *how* precession moves the equinoctial points from Pisces into Aquarius—and thence onwards around the zodiac—are also worth knowing.

Remember that the equinoxes occur on the only two occasions in the year when the earth's tilted axis lies broadside-on to the sun. These are when the sun rises due east all over the world and day and night are of equal length. Because the earth's axis is slowly but surely *precessing* in a direction opposite to that of its own orbit, the points at which it lies broadside-on to the sun must occur fractionally earlier in the orbit each year. These annual changes are so small as to be almost imperceptible (a one degree shift along the ecliptic—equivalent to the width of your little finger held up to the horizon—requires approximately seventy-two years to complete). However, as de Santillana points out, such minute changes add up in just under 2200 years to a 30° passage through a complete house of the zodiac, and in just under 26,000 years to a 360° passage through a complete cycle of precession.

When did the ancients first work out precession?

In the answer to this question lies a great secret, and mystery, of the past. Before we try to penetrate the mystery and to learn the secret, we should acquaint ourselves with the 'official' line. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* is as good a repository as any of conventional historical wisdom, and this is what it tells us about a scholar named Hipparchus, the supposed discoverer of precession:

> **Hipparchus**, also spelled HIPPARCHOS (b. Nicaea, Bithynia; d. after 127 BC, Rhodes), Greek astronomer and mathematician who discovered the precession of the equinoxes ... This notable discovery was the result of painstaking observations, worked upon by an acute mind. Hipparchus observed the positions of the stars, and then compared his results with those of Timocharis of Alexandria about 150 years earlier and with even earlier observations made in Babylonia. He discovered that the celestial longitudes were different and that this difference was of a magnitude exceeding that attributable to errors of observation. He therefore proposed precession to account for the size of the difference and he gave a value of 45' or 46' (seconds of arc) for annual changes. This is very close to the figure of 50.274 seconds of arc accepted today ...'[3]

First, a point of terminology. Seconds of arc are the smallest subdivisions of a degree of arc. There are 60 of these arc seconds in one arc minute, 60 minutes in one degree, and 360 degrees in the full circle of earth's path around the sun. An annual change of 50.274 seconds of arc represents a distance somewhat under one-sixtieth of one degree so that it takes roughly 72 years (an entire human lifetime) for the equinoctial sun to migrate just one degree along the ecliptic. It is because of the observational difficulties entailed in detecting this snails' pace rate of change that the value worked out by Hipparchus in the second century BC is hailed in the *Britannica* as a 'notable discovery'.

---

[3] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 5:937-8. See also *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 205, where the precise figure of 50.274 is given.

Would this discovery seem so notable if it turned out to be a rediscovery? Would the mathematical and astronomical achievements of the Greeks shine so brightly if we could prove that the difficult challenge of measuring precession had been taken up thousands of years *before* Hipparchus? What if this heavenly cycle, almost 26,000 years long, had been made the object of precise scientific investigations long epochs before the supposed dawn of scientific thought?

In seeking answers to such questions there is much that may be relevant which would never be accepted by any court of law as concrete proof. Let us not accept it either. We have seen that Hipparchus proposed a value of 45 or 46 seconds of arc for one year of precessional motion. Let us therefore not attempt to dislodge the Greek astronomer from his pedestal as the discoverer of precession unless we can find a significantly more accurate value recorded in a significantly more ancient source.

Of course, there are many potential sources. At this point, however, in the interests of succinctness, we shall limit our inquiry to universal myths. We have already examined one group of myths in detail (the traditions of flood and cataclysm set out in Part IV) and we have seen that they possess a range of intriguing characteristics:

1. There is no doubt that they are immensely old. Take the Mesopotamian flood story, versions of which have been found inscribed on tablets from the earliest strata of Sumerian history, around 3000 BC. These tablets, handed down from the dawn of the recorded past, leave no room for doubt that the tradition of a world-destroying flood was ancient even then, and therefore originated long before the dawn. We cannot say how long. The fact remains that no scholar has ever been able to establish a date for the creation of any myth, let alone for these venerable and widespread traditions. In a very real sense they seem always to have been around—part of the permanent baggage of human culture.
2. The possibility cannot be ruled out that this aura of vast antiquity is not an illusion. On the contrary, we have seen that many of the great myths of cataclysm seem to contain accurate eye-witness accounts of real conditions experienced by humanity during the last Ice Age. In theory, therefore, these stories could have been constructed at almost the same time as the emergence of our subspecies *Homo sapiens sapiens,* perhaps as long as 50,000 years ago. The geological evidence, however, suggests a more recent provenance, and we have identified the epoch 15,000-8000 BC as the most likely. Only then, in the whole of human experience, were there rapid climatic changes on

the convulsive scale the myths so eloquently describe.

3. The Ice Age and its tumultuous demise were global phenomena. It is therefore perhaps not surprising that the cataclysm traditions of many different cultures, widely scattered around the globe, should be characterized by a high degree of uniformity and convergence.
4. What is surprising, however, is that the myths not only describe shared experiences but that they do so in what appears to be a shared symbolic language. The same 'literary motifs' keep cropping up again and again, the same stylistic 'props', the same recognizable characters, and the same plots.

According to Professor de Santillana, this type of uniformity suggests a guiding hand at work. In *Hamlet's Mill,* a seminal and original thesis on ancient myth written in collaboration with Hertha von Dechend (professor of the History of Science at Frankfurt University) he argues that:

> universality is in itself a test when coupled with a firm design. When something found, say, in China, turns up also in Babylonian astrological texts, then it must be assumed to be relevant if it reveals a complex of uncommon images which nobody could claim had risen independently by spontaneous generation. Take the origin of music. Orpheus and his harrowing death may be a poetic creation born in more than one instance in diverse places. But when characters who do not play the lyre but blow pipes get themselves flayed alive for various absurd reasons, and their identical end is rehearsed on several continents, then we feel we have got hold of something, for such stories cannot be linked by internal sequence. And when the Pied Piper turns up both in the German myth of Hamelin and in Mexico long before Columbus, and is linked in both places to certain attributes like the colour red, it can hardly be a coincidence ... Likewise, when one finds numbers like 108, or 9 x 13 reappearing under several multiples in the *Vedas,* in the temples of Angkor, in Babylon, in Heraclitus' dark utterances, and also in the Norse Valhalla, it is not accident ...[4]

Connecting the great universal myths of cataclysm, is it possible that such coincidences that cannot be coincidences, and accidents that cannot be accidents, could denote the global influence of an ancient, though as yet unidentified, guiding hand? If so, could it be that same hand, during and after the last Ice Age, which drew the series of highly accurate and technically advanced world maps reviewed in Part I? And might not that same hand have left its ghostly fingerprints on another body of universal myths? those concerning the death and resurrection of gods, and great trees around which the earth and heavens turn, and whirlpools, and churns, and drills, and other similar revolving, grinding contrivances?

According to Santillana and von Dechend, all such images refer to celestial events[5] and do so, furthermore, in the refined technical language of an archaic but 'immensely sophisticated' astronomical and mathematical science:[6] 'This language ignores local beliefs and cults. It concentrates on numbers, motions, measures, overall frames, schemas—on the structure of numbers, on geometry.'[7]

---

[4] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 7.

[5] Ibid.; *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt.*

[6] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 65.

Where could such a language have come from? *Hamlet's Mill* is a labyrinth of brilliant but deliberately evasive scholarship, and offers us no straightforward answer to this question. Here and there, however, almost with embarrassment, inconclusive hints are dropped. For example, at one point the authors say that the scientific language or 'code' they believe they have identified is of 'awe-inspiring antiquity'.[8] On another occasion they pin down the depth of this antiquity more precisely to a period at least '6000 years before Virgil'[9]—in other words 8000 years ago or more.

What civilization *known to history* could have developed and made use of a sophisticated technical language more than 8000 years ago? The honest answer to this question is 'none', followed by a frank admission that what is being conjectured is nothing less than a forgotten episode of high technological culture in prehistoric times. Once again, Santillana and von Dechend are elusive when it comes to the crunch, speaking only of the legacy we all owe to 'some almost unbelievable ancestor civilization' that 'first dared to understand the world as created according to number, measure and weight.'[10]

The legacy, it is clear, has to do with scientific thinking and complex information of a mathematical nature. Because it is so extremely old, however, the passage of time has dissipated it:

> When the Greeks came upon the scene the dust of centuries had already settled upon the remains of this great world-wide archaic construction. Yet something of it survived in traditional rites, in myths and fairy-tales no longer understood ... These are tantalising fragments of a lost whole. They make one think of those 'mist landscapes' of which Chinese painters are masters, which show here a rock, here a gable, there the tip of a tree, and leave the rest to imagination. Even when the code shall have yielded, when the techniques shall be known, we cannot expect to gauge the thought of these remote ancestors of ours, wrapped as it is in its symbols, since the creating, ordering minds that devised the symbols have vanished forever.'[11]

What we have here, therefore, are two distinguished professors of the History of Science, from esteemed universities on both sides of the Atlantic, claiming to have discovered the remnants of a coded scientific language *many thousands of years older* than the oldest human civilizations identified by scholarship. Moreover, though generally cautious, Santillana and von Dechend also claim to have 'broken part of that code'.[12]

This is an extraordinary statement for two serious academics to have made.

---

[7] Ibid., p. 345.
[8] Ibid., p. 418.
[9] Ibid., p. 245.
[10] Ibid., p. 132.
[11] Ibid., pp. 4-5,348.
[12] Ibid., p. 5.

Chapter 30

The Cosmic Tree and the Mill of the Gods

In their brilliant and far-reaching study *Hamlet's Mill,* Professors de Santillana and von Dechend present a formidable array of mythical and iconographic evidence to demonstrate the existence of a curious phenomenon. For some inexplicable reason, and at some unknown date, it seems that certain archaic myths from all over the world were 'co-opted' (no other word will really do) to serve as vehicles for a body of complex technical data concerning the precession of the equinoxes. The importance of this astonishing thesis, as one leading authority on ancient measurement has pointed out, is that it has fired the first salvo in what may prove to be 'a Copernican revolution in current conceptions of the development of human culture.'[1]

Hamlet's Mill was published in 1969, more than a quarter of a century ago, so the revolution has been a long time coming. During this period, however, the book has been neither widely distributed among the general public nor widely understood by scholars of the remote past. This state of affairs has not come about because of any inherent problems or weaknesses in the work. Instead, in the words of Martin Bernal, professor of Government Studies at Cornell University, it has happened because 'few archaeologists, Egyptologists and ancient historians have the combination of time, effort and skill necessary to take on the very technical arguments of de Santillana.'[2]

What those arguments predominantly concern is the recurrent and persistent transmission of a 'precessional message' in a wide range of ancient myths. And, strangely enough, many of the key images and symbols that crop up in these myths—notably those that concern a 'derangement of the heavens'—are also to be found embedded in the ancient traditions of worldwide cataclysm reviewed in Chapters Twenty-four and Twenty-five.

In Norse mythology for example, we saw how the wolf Fenrir, whom the gods had so carefully chained up, broke his bonds at last and escaped: 'He shook himself and the world trembled. The ash-tree Yggdrasil was shaken from its roots to its topmost branches. Mountains crumbled or split from top to bottom ... The earth began to lose its shape. Already the stars were coming adrift in the sky.'

In the opinion of de Santillana and von Dechend, this myth mixes the familiar theme of catastrophe with the quite separate theme of precession. On the one hand we have an earthly disaster on a scale that seems to dwarf even the flood of Noah. On the other we hear that ominous changes are taking place in the heavens and that the stars, which have come adrift in the sky, are 'dropping into the void.'[3]

---

[1] Livio Catullo Stecchini, 'Notes on the Relation of Ancient Measures to the Great Pyramid', in *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* pp. 381-2.

[2] Martin Bernal, *Black Athena: The Afro-asiatic Roots of Classical Civilization,* Vintage Books, London, 1991, p. 276.

Such celestial imagery, repeated again and again with only relatively minor variations in myths from many different parts of the world, belongs to a category earmarked in *Hamlet's Mill* as 'not mere storytelling of the kind that comes naturally'.[4] Moreover the Norse traditions that speak of the monstrous wolf Fenrir, and of the shaking of Yggdrasil, go on to report the final apocalypse in which the forces of Valhalla issue forth on the side of 'order' to participate in the terrible last battle of the gods—a battle that will end in apocalyptic destruction:

> 500 doors and 40 there are
> I ween, in Valhalla's walls;
> 800 fighters through each door fare,
> When to war with the Wolf they go.[5]

With a lightness of touch that is almost subliminal, this verse has encouraged us to *count* Valhalla's fighters, thus momentarily obliging us to focus our attention on their total number (540 x 800 = 432,000). This total, as we shall see in Chapter Thirty-one is mathematically linked to the phenomenon of precession. It is, unlikely to have found its way into Norse mythology by accident, especially in a context that has previously specified a 'derangement of the heavens' severe enough to have caused the stars to come adrift from their stations in the sky.

To understand what is going on here it is essential to grasp the basic imagery of the ancient 'message' that Santillana and von Dechend claim to have stumbled upon. This imagery transforms the luminous dome of the celestial sphere into a vast and intricate piece of machinery. And, like a millwheel, like a churn, like a whirlpool, like a quern, this machine turns and turns and turns endlessly (its motions being calibrated all the time by the sun, which rises first in one constellation of the zodiac, then in another, and so on all the year round).

The four key points of the year are the spring and summer equinoxes and the winter and summer solstices. At each point, naturally, the sun is seen to rise in a different constellation (thus if the sun rises in Pisces at the spring equinox, as it does at present, it must rise in Virgo at the autumn equinox, in Gemini at the winter solstice and in Sagittarius at the summer solstice). On each of these four occasions for the last 2000 years or so, this is exactly what the sun has been doing. As we have seen, however, precession of the equinoxes means that the vernal point will change in the not so distant future from Pisces to Aquarius. When that happens, the three other constellations marking the three key points will change as well (from Virgo, Gemini and Sagittarius to Leo, Taurus and Scorpius)—almost as though the giant mechanism of heaven has ponderously switched gears ...

---

[3] The reader will recall from Chapter Twenty-five how Yggdrasil, the world tree itself, was not destroyed and how the progenitors of future humanity managed to shelter within its trunk until a new earth emerged from the ruins of the old. How likely is it to be pure *coincidence* that exactly the same strategy was adopted by survivors of the universal deluge as described in certain Central American myths? Such links and crossovers in myth between the themes of precession and global catastrophe are extremely common.

[4] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 7.

[5] *Grimnismol* 23, the Poetic *Edda,* p. 93, cited in *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 199; *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 162; Elsa Brita Titchenell, *The Masks of Odin,* Theosophical University Press, Pasadena, 1988, p. 168.

Like the axle of a mill, Santillana and von Dechend explain, Yggdrasil 'represents the world axis' in the archaic scientific language they have identified: an axis which extends outwards (for a viewer in the northern hemisphere) to the North Pole of the celestial sphere:

> This instinctively suggests a straight, upright post ... but that would be an oversimplification. In the mythical context it is best not to think of the axis in analytical terms, one line at a time, but to consider it, and the frame to which it is connected, as a whole:... As radius automatically calls circle to mind so axis should invoke the two determining great circles on the surface of the sphere, the equinoctial and solstitial colures.[6]

These colures are the imaginary hoops, intersecting at the celestial North Pole, which connect the two equinoctial points on the earth's path around the sun (i.e. where it stands on 20 March and 22 September) and the two solstitial points (where it stands on 21 June and 21 December). The implication, is that: 'The rotation of the polar axis must not be disjointed from the great circles that shift along with it in heaven. The framework is thought of as all one with the axis.'[7]

Santillana and von Dechend are certain that what confronts us here is *not a belief but an allegory.* They insist that the notion of a spherical frame composed of two intersecting hoops suspended from an axis is not under any circumstances to be understood as the way in which ancient science envisaged the cosmos. Instead it is to be seen as a 'thought tool' designed to focus the minds of people bright enough to crack the code upon the hard-to-detect astronomical fact of precession of the equinoxes.

It is a thought tool that keeps on cropping up, in numerous disguises, all over the myths of the ancient world.

At the mill with slaves

One example, from Central America (which also provides a further illustration of the curious symbolic 'cross-overs' between myths of precession and myths of catastrophe), was summarized by Diego De Landa in the sixteenth century:

---

[6] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 232-3.

[7] Ibid., p. 231.

> Among the multitude of gods worshipped by these people [the Maya] were four whom they called by the name *Bacab.* These were, they say, four brothers placed by God when he created the world at its four corners to sustain the heavens lest they fall. They also say that these Bacabs escaped when the world was destroyed by a deluge.[8]

It is the opinion of Santillana and von Dechend that the Mayan astronomer-priests did not subscribe for a moment to the simple-minded notion that the earth was flat with four corners. Instead, they say, the image of the four Bacabs is used as a technical allegory intended to shed light on the phenomenon of precession of the equinoxes. The Bacabs stand, in short, for the system of coordinates of an astrological age. They represent the equinoctial and solstitial colures, binding together the four constellations in which the sun continues to rise at the spring and autumn equinoxes and at the winter and summer solstices for epochs of just under 2200 years.

Of course it is understood that when the gears of heaven change, the old age comes crashing down and a new age is born. All this, so far, is routine precessional imagery. What stands out, however, is the explicit linkage to an earthly disaster—in this case a flood—which the Bacabs survive. It may also be relevant that relief carvings at Chichen Itza unmistakably represent the Bacabs as being bearded and of European appearance.[9]

Be that as it may, the Bacab image (linked to a number of badly misunderstood references to 'the four corners of heaven', 'the quadrangular earth', and so on) is only one among many that seem to have been designed to serve as thought tools for precession. Archetypal among these is, of course, the 'Mill' of Santillana's title—Hamlet's Mill.

It turns out that the Shakespearean character, 'whom the poet made one of us, the first unhappy intellectual', conceals a past as a legendary being, his features predetermined, preshaped by longstanding myth.[10] In all his many incarnations, this Hamlet remains strangely himself. The original Amlodhi (or sometimes Amleth) as his name was in Icelandic legend, 'shows the same characteristics of melancholy and high intellect. He, too, is a son dedicated to avenge his father, a speaker of cryptic but inescapable truths, an elusive carrier of Fate who must yield once his mission is accomplished ...'[11]

In the crude and vivid imagery of the Norse, Amlodhi was identified with the ownership of a fabled mill, or quern, which, in its time, ground out gold and peace and plenty. In many of the traditions, two giant maidens (Fenja and Menja) were indentured to turn this great contraption, which could not be budged by any human strength. Something went wrong, and the two giantesses were forced to work day and night with no rest:

---

[8] *Yucatan before and after the Conquest,* p. 82.

[9] See, for example, *The God-Kings and the Titans,* p. 64. It may also be relevant that other versions of 'the Bacabs' myth tell us that 'their slightest movement produces an earth tremor or even an earthquake' *(Maya History and Religion*, p. 346).

[10] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 2.

[11] Ibid.

Forth to the mill bench they were brought,
  To set the grey stone in motion;
He gave them no rest nor peace,
  Attentive to the creak of the mill.

Their song was a howl,
  Shattering silence;
'Lower the bin and lighten the stones!'
  Yet he would have them grind more.[12]

Rebellious and angry, Fenja and Menja waited until everyone was asleep and then began to turn the mill in a mad whirl until its great props, though cased in iron, burst asunder.[13] Immediately afterwards, in a confusing episode, the mill was stolen by a sea king named Mysinger and loaded aboard his ship together with the giantesses. Mysinger ordered the pair to grind again, but this time they ground out salt. At midnight they asked him whether he was not weary of salt; he bade them grind longer. They had ground but a little longer when down sank the ship:

The huge props flew off the bin,
  The iron rivets burst,
The shaft tree shivered,
  The bin shot down.[14]

When it reached the bottom of the sea, the mill continued to turn, but it ground out rock and sand, creating a vast whirlpool, the Maelstrom.[15]

Such images, Santillana and von Dechend assert, signify precession of the equinoxes.[16] The axis and 'iron props' of the mill stand for:

> a system of coordinates in the celestial sphere and represent the frame of a world age. Actually the frame defines a world age. Because the polar axis and the colures form an invisible whole, the entire frame is thrown out of kilter if one part is moved. When that happens a new Pole star with appropriate colures of its own must replace the obsolete apparatus.[17]

Furthermore, the engulfing whirlpool:

---

[12] *Grottasongr,* 'The Song of the Mill', in *The Masks of Odin,* p. 198.
[13] Ibid., p. 201.
[14] *Grottasongr,* cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 89-90.
[15] Ibid., p. 2.
[16] Ibid.
[17] Ibid., p. 232.

> belongs to the stock-in-trade of ancient fable. It appears in the *Odyssey* as Charybdis in the Straits of Messina, and again in other cultures in the Indian Ocean and the Pacific. It is found there, too, curiously enough, with an overhanging fig-tree to whose boughs the hero can cling as the ship goes down, whether it be Satyavrata in India or Kae in Tonga ... The persistence of detail rules out free invention. Such stories have belonged to the cosmographical literature since antiquity.[18]

The appearance of the whirlpool in Homer's *Odyssey* (which is a compilation of Greek myths more than 3000 years old), should not surprise us, because the great Mill of Icelandic legend appears there also (and does so, moreover, in familiar circumstances). It is the last night before the decisive confrontation. Odysseus, bent on revenge, has landed in Ithaca and is hiding under the magic spell of the goddess Athena, which protects him from recognition. Odysseus prays to Zeus to send him an encouraging sign before the great ordeal:

> Straightaway Zeus thundered from shining Olympus ... and goodly Odysseus was glad. Moreover, a woman, a grinder at the mill, uttered a voice of omen from within the house hard by, where stood the mills of the shepherd of the people. At these handmills twelve women in all plied their task, making meal of barley and of wheat the marrow of men. Now all the others were asleep, for they had ground out their task of grain, but this one alone rested not yet, being the weakest of all. She now stayed her quern and spake the word ... 'May the [enemies of Odysseus] on this day, for the last time make their sweet feasting in his halls. They that have loosened my knees with cruel toil to grind their barley meal, may they now sup their last!'[19]

Santillana and von Dechend argue that it is no accident that the allegory of the 'orb of heaven that turns around like a millstone and ever does something bad'[20] also makes an appearance in the biblical tradition of Samson, 'eyeless in Gaza at the mill with slaves'.[21] His merciless captors unbind him so that he can 'make sport' for them in their temple; instead, with his last strength, he takes hold of the middle pillars of that great structure and brings the whole edifice crashing down, killing everybody.[22] Like Fenja and Menja, he gets his revenge.

The theme resurfaces in Japan,[23] in Central America,[24] among the Maoris of New Zealand,[25] and in the myths of Finland. There the Hamlet/Samson figure is known as Kullervo and the mill has a peculiar name: the Sampo. Like Fenja and Menja's mill it is ultimately stolen and loaded on board a ship. And like their mill, it ends up being broken in pieces.[26]

---

[18] Ibid., p. 204.

[19] *Odyssey* (Rouse translation), 20:103-19.

[20] Trimalcho in Petronius, cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 137.

[21] John Milton, *Samson Agonistes,* 1:41.

[22] *Judges,* 16:25-30.

[23] In Japanese myth the Samson character is named Susanowo. See Post Wheeler, *The Sacred Scriptures of the Japanese,* New York, 1952, p. 44ff.

[24] In slightly distorted form in the *Popol Vuh's* account of the Twins and their 400 companions (see Chapter Nineteen). Zipcana, son of Vucub-Caquix sees the 400 youths dragging a huge log they want as a ridgepole for their house. Zipcana carries the tree without effort to the spot where a hole has been dug for the post to support the ridgepole. The youths try to kill Zipcana by crushing him in the hole, but he escapes and brings down the house on their heads, killing them all. *Popol Vuh,* pp. 99-101.

It turns out that the word 'Sampo' has its origins in the Sanskrit *skambha,* meaning 'pillar or pole'.[27] And in the *Atharvaveda,* one of the most ancient pieces of north Indian literature, we find an entire hymn dedicated to the Skambha:

> In whom earth, atmosphere, in whom sky is set, where fire, moon, sun, wind stand fixed ... The Skambha sustains both heaven and earth; the Skambha sustains the wide atmosphere; the Skambha sustains the six wide directions; into the Skambha entered all existence.

Whitney, the translator (*Atharvaveda* 10:7) comments in some perplexity: 'Skambha, lit, prop, support, pillar, strangely used in this hymn as frame of the universe'.[28] Yet with an awareness of the complex of ideas linking cosmic mills, and whirlpools and world trees and so on, the archaic Vedic usage should not seem so strange. What is being signalled here, as in all the other allegories, is *the frame of a world age*—that same heavenly mechanism that turns for more than 2000 years with the sun rising always in the same four cardinal points and then slowly shifts those celestial coordinates to four new constellations for the next couple of thousand years.

This is why the mill always breaks, why the huge props always fly off the bin in one way or another, why the iron rivets burst, why the shaft-tree shivers. Precession of the equinoxes merits such imagery because, at widely separated intervals of time it does indeed change, or break, the stabilizing coordinates of the entire celestial sphere.

Openers of the way

What is remarkable about all this is the way that the mill (which continues to serve as an allegory for cosmic processes) stubbornly keeps on resurfacing, all over the world, even where the context has been jumbled or lost. Indeed, in Santillana and von Dechend's argument, it doesn't really matter if the context is lost. 'The particular merit of mythical terminology,' they say, 'is that it can be used as a vehicle for handing down solid knowledge independently from the degree of insight of the people who do the actual telling of stories, fables, etc.'[29] What matters, in other words, is that certain central imagery should survive and continue to be passed on in retellings, however far these may drift from the original storyline.

---

[25] In Maori traditions the Samson character is known as Whakatu. See Sir George Grey, *Polynesian Mythology,* London, 1956 (1st ed. 1858), p. 97ff.

[26] Cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 104-8.

[27] Ibid., p. 111.

[28] Ibid., 233.

[29] Ibid., 312.

An example of such drift (coupled with the retention of essential imagery and information) is found among the Cherokees, whose name for the Milky Way (our own galaxy) is 'Where the Dog Ran'. In ancient times, according to Cherokee tradition, the 'people in the South had a corn mill', from which meal was stolen again and again. In due course the owners discovered the thief, a dog, who 'ran off howling to his home in the North, with the meal dropping from his mouth as he ran, and leaving behind a white trail where now we see the Milky Way, which the Cherokee call to this day ... "Where the Dog Ran".'[30]

In Central America, one of the many myths concerning Quetzalcoatl depicts him playing a key role in the regeneration of mankind after the all-destroying flood that ended the Fourth Sun. Together with his dog-headed companion Xolotl, he descends into the underworld to retrieve the skeletons of the people killed by the deluge. This he succeeds in doing, after tricking Miclantechuhtli, the god of death, and the bones are brought to a place called Tamoanchan. There, like corn, they are milled into a fine meal on a grindstone. Upon this ground meal the gods then release blood, thus creating the flesh of the current age of men.[31]

Santillana and von Dechend do not think that the presence of a canine character in both the above variants of the myth of the cosmic mill is likely to be accidental. They point out that Kullervo, the Finnish Hamlet, is also accompanied by 'the black dog Musti'.[32] Likewise, after his return to his estates in Ithaca, Odysseus is first recognized by his faithful dog,[33] and as anyone who has been to Sunday school will remember, Samson is associated with foxes (300 of them to be precise[34]), which are members of the dog family. In the Danish version of the Amleth/Hamlet saga, 'Amleth went on and a wolf crossed his path amid the thicket.'[35] Last but not least an alternative recension of the Kullervo story from Finland has the hero (rather weirdly) being 'sent to Esthonia to bark under the fence; he barked one year ...'[36]

Santillana and von Dechend are confident that all this 'doggishness' is purposive: another piece of the ancient code, as yet unbroken, persistently tapping out its message from place to place. They list these and many other canine symbols among a series of 'morphological markers' which they have identified as likely to suggest the presence, in ancient myths, of scientific information concerning precession of the equinoxes.[37] These markers may have had meanings of their own or been intended simply to alert the target audience that a piece of hard data was coming up in the story being told. Beguilingly, sometimes they may also have been designed to serve as 'openers of the way'—conduits to enable initiates to follow the trail of scientific information from one myth to another.

---

[30] James Mooney, 'Myths of the Cherokee', Washington, 1900, cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 249, 389; Jean Guard Monroe and Ray A. Williamson, *They Dance in the Sky: Native American Star Myths,* Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston, 1987, pp. 117-18.

[31] *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* p. 70.

[32] Cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 33.

[33] Homer, *The Odyssey,* Book 17.

[34] *Judges,* 15:4.

[35] Saxo Grammaticus, in *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 13.

[36] Ibid., p. 31.

Thus, even though none of the familiar mills and whirlpools is in sight, we should perhaps sit up and pay attention when we learn that Orion, the great hunter of Greek myth, was the owner of a dog. When Orion tried to ravish the virgin goddess Artemis she produced a scorpion from the earth which killed him and the dog. Orion was transported to the skies where he became the constellation that bears his name today; his dog was transformed into Sirius, the Dog Star.[38]

Precisely the same identification of Sirius was made by the ancient Egyptians,[39] who linked the Orion constellation specifically to their god Osiris.[40] It is in Ancient Egypt too that the character of the faithful celestial dog achieves its fullest and most explicit mythical elaboration in the form of Upuaut, a jackal-headed deity whose name means 'Opener of the Ways'.[41] If we follow this way opener to Egypt, turn our eyes to the constellation of Orion, and enter the potent myth of Osiris, we find ourselves enveloped in a net of familiar symbols.

The reader will recall that the myth presents Osiris as the victim of a plot. The conspirators initially dispose of him by sealing him in a box and casting him adrift on the waters of the Nile. In this respect does he not resemble Utnapishtim, and Noah and Coxcoxtli and all the other deluge heroes in their arks (or boxes, or chests) riding out the waters of the flood?

Another familiar element is the classic precessional image of the world-tree and/or roof-pillar (in this case combined). The myth tells us how Osiris, still sealed inside his coffer, is carried out into the sea and washed up at Byblos. The waves lay him to rest among the branches of a tamarisk tree, which rapidly grows to a magnificent size, enclosing the coffer within its trunk.[42] The king of the country, who much admires the tamarisk tree, cuts it down and fashions the part which contains Osiris into a roof pillar for his palace. Later Isis, the wife of Osiris, removes her husband's body from the pillar and takes it back to Egypt to undergo rebirth.[43]

---

[37] Ibid., pp. 7, 31.

[38] *World Mythology,* p. 139. It should also be noted that, like Samson, Orion was blind—the only blind figure in constellation mythology. See *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 177-8.

[39] Mercer, *The Religion of Ancient Egypt,* London, 1946, pp. 25, 112.

[40] Ibid. *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 39: 'the ancient Egyptians are known to have identified Orion with Osiris'.

[41] Also rendered Wapwewet and Ap-uaut. See, for example, E. A. Wallis Budge, *Gods of the Egyptians,* Methuen and Co., London, 1904, vol. II, pp. 366-7.

[42] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* Introduction, p. L.

The Osiris myth also includes certain key numbers. Whether by accident or by design, these numbers give access to a 'science' of precession, as we shall see in the next chapter.

---

[43] Ibid. Though a mill, as such, is nowhere to be seen, many Ancient Egyptian reliefs depict two of the principal characters in the Osiris myth (Horus and Seth) jointly operating a giant *drill,* again a classic symbol of precession. *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 162: 'This feature is continuously mislabelled the "uniting of the two countries" whether Horus and Seth serve the churn or, as is more often the case, the so-called Nile Gods.'

Chapter 31

The Osiris Numbers

Archaeo-astronomer Jane B. Sellers, who studied Egyptology at the University of Chicago's Oriental Institute, spends her winters in Portland, Maine, and summers at Ripley Neck, a nineteenth-century enclave 'downcast' on Maine's rocky coast. 'There,' she says, 'the night skies can be as clear as the desert, and no one minds if you read the Pyramid Texts out loud to the seagulls ...[1]

One of the few serious scholars to have tested the theory advanced by Santillana and von Dechend in *Hamlet's Mill,* Sellers has been hailed for having drawn attention to the need to use astronomy, and more particularly precession, for the proper study of ancient Egypt and its religion.[2] In her words: 'Archaeologists by and large lack an understanding of precession, and this affects their conclusions concerning ancient myths, ancient gods and ancient temple alignments ... For astronomers precession is a well-established fact; those working in the field of ancient man have a responsibility to attain an understanding of it.'[3]

It is Sellers's contention, eloquently expressed in her recent book, *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* that the Osiris myth may have been deliberately encoded with a group of key numbers that are 'excess baggage' as far as the narrative is concerned but that offer an eternal calculus by which surprisingly exact values can be derived for the following:

1. The time required for the earth's slow precessional wobble to cause the position of sunrise on the vernal equinox to complete a shift of **one degree** along the ecliptic (in relation to the stellar background);
2. The time required for the sun to pass through one full zodiacal segment of **thirty degrees**;
3. The time required for the sun to pass through two full zodiacal segments (totalling **sixty degrees**);
4. The time required to bring about the 'Great Return'[4], i.e., for the sun to shift **three hundred and sixty degrees** along the ecliptic, thus fulfilling one complete precessional cycle or 'Great Year'.

---

[1] *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* author biography.

[2] For example by Robert Bauval in *The Orion Mystery,* pp. 144-5.

[3] *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 174.

[4] This phrase was coined by Jane Sellers, whom also detected the precessional calculations embedded in the Osiris myth.

Computing the Great Return

The precessional numbers highlighted by Sellers in the Osiris myth are 360, 72, 30 and 12. Most of them are found in a section of the myth which provides us with biographical details of the various characters. These have been conveniently summarized by E. A. Wallis Budge, formerly keeper of Egyptian Antiquities at the British Museum:

> The goddess Nut, wife of the sun god Ra, was beloved by the god Geb. When Ra discovered the intrigue he cursed his wife and declared that she should not be delivered of a child in any month of any year. Then the god Thoth, who also loved Nut, played at tables with the moon and won from her five whole days. These he joined to the 360 days *of which the year then consisted* [emphasis added]. On the first of these five days Osiris was brought forth; and at the moment of his birth a voice was heard to proclaim that the lord of creation was born.[5]

Elsewhere the myth informs us that the 300-day year consists of '12 months of 30 days each'.[6] And in general, as Sellers observes, 'phrases are used which prompt simple mental calculations and an attention to numbers'.[7]

Thus far we have been provided with three of Sellers's precessional numbers: 360, 12 and 30. The fourth number, which occurs later in the text, is by far the most important. As we saw in Chapter Nine, the evil deity known as Set led a group of conspirators in a plot to kill Osiris. The number of these conspirators was 72.

With this last number in hand, suggests Sellers, we are now in a position to boot-up and set running an ancient computer programme:

12 = the number of constellations in the zodiac;

30 = the number of degrees allocated along the ecliptic to each zodiacal constellation;

72 = the number of years required for the equinoctial sun to complete a precessional shift of one degree along the ecliptic;

360 = the total number of degrees in the ecliptic;

72 x 30 = 2160 (the number of years required for the sun to complete a passage of 30 degrees along the ecliptic, i.e., to pass entirely through any one of the 12 zodiacal constellations);

2160 x 12 (or 360 x 72) = 25,920 (the number of years in one complete precessional cycle or 'Great Year', and thus the total number of years required to bring about the 'Great Return').

---

[5] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* Introduction, page XLIX.

[6] Cited in *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 204.

[7] Ibid.

Other figures and combinations of figures also emerge, for example:

> 36, the number of years required for the equinoctial sun to complete a precessional shift of half a degree along the ecliptic;
>
> 4320, the number of years required for the equinoctial sun to complete a precessional shift of 60 degrees (i.e., two zodiacal constellations).

These, Sellers believes, constitute the basic ingredients of a precessional code which appears again and again, with eerie persistence, in ancient myths and sacred architecture. In common with much esoteric numerology, it is a code in which it is permissible to shift decimal points to left or right at will and to make use of almost any conceivable combinations, permutations, multiplications, divisions and fractions of the *essential* numbers (all of which relate precisely to the rate of precession of the equinoxes).

The pre-eminent number in the code is 72. To this is frequently added 36, making 108, and it is permissible to multiply 108 by 100 to get 10,800 or to divide it by 2 to get 54, which may then be multiplied by 10 and expressed as 540 (or as 54,000. or as 540,000, or as 5,400,000, and so on). Also highly significant is 2160 (the number of years required for the equinoctial point to transit one zodiacal constellation), which is sometimes multiplied by 10 and by factors often (to give 216,000, 2,160,000, and so on) and sometimes by 2 to give 4320, or 43,200, or 432,000, or 4,320,000, *ad infinition.*

Better than Hipparchus

If Sellers is correct in her hypothesis that the calculus needed to produce these numbers was deliberately encoded into the Osiris myth to convey precessional information to initiates, we are confronted by an intriguing anomaly. If they are indeed about precession, the numbers are out of place in time. The science they contain is too advanced for them to have been calculated by any known civilization of antiquity.

Let us not forget that they occur in a myth which is present at the very dawn of writing in Egypt (indeed elements of the Osiris story are to be found in the Pyramid Texts dating back to around 2450 BC, in a context which suggests that they were exceedingly old even then[8]). Hipparchus, the so-called discoverer of precession lived in the second century BC. He proposed a value of 45 or 46 seconds of arc for one year of precessional motion. These figures yield a one-degree shift along the ecliptic in 80 years (at 45 arc seconds per annum), and in 78.26 years (at 46 arc seconds per annum). The true figure, as calculated by twentieth century science, is 71.6 years.[9] If Sellers's theory is correct, therefore, the 'Osiris numbers', which give a value of 72 years, are *significantly more accurate* than those of Hipparchus. Indeed, within the obvious confines imposed by narrative structure, it is difficult to see how the number 72 could have been improved upon, even if the more precise figure had been known to the ancient myth-makers. One can hardly insert 71.6 conspirators into a story, but 72 will fit comfortably.

---

[8] Ibid., pp. 125-6ff; see also *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts.*

Working from this rounded-up figure, the Osiris myth is capable of yielding a value of 2160 years for a precessional shift through one complete house of the zodiac. The correct figure, according to today's calculations, is 2148 years.[10] The Hipparchus figures are 2400 years and 2347.8 years respectively. Finally, Osiris enables us to calculate 25,920 as the number of years required for the fulfillment of a complete precessional cycle through 12 houses of the zodiac. Hipparchus gives us either 28,800 or 28,173.6 years. The correct figure, by today's estimates, is 25,776 years.[11] The Hipparchus calculations for the Great Return are therefore around 3000 years out of kilter. The Osiris calculations miss the true figure by only 144 years, and may well do so because the narrative context forced a rounding-up of the base number from the correct value of 71.6 to a more workable figure of 72.

All this, however, assumes that Sellers is right to suppose that the numbers 360, 72, 30 and 12 did not find their way into the Osiris myth by chance but were placed there deliberately by people who understood—and had accurately measured—precession.

Is Sellers right?

Times of decay

The Osiris myth is not the only one to incorporate the calculus for precession. The relevant numbers keep surfacing in various forms, multiples and combinations, all over the ancient world.

An example was given in Chapter Thirty-three—the Norse myth of the 432,000 fighters who sallied forth from Valhalla to do battle with 'the Wolf'. A glance back at that myth shows that it contains several permutations of 'precessional numbers'.

Likewise, as we saw in Chapter Twenty-four, ancient Chinese traditions referring to a universal cataclysm were said to have been written down in a great text consisting of precisely 4320 volumes.

Thousands of miles away, is it a coincidence that the Babylonian historian Berossus (third century BC) ascribed a total reign of 432,000 years to the mythical kings who ruled the land of Sumer before the flood? And is it likewise a coincidence that this same Berossus ascribed 2,160,000 years to the period 'between creation and universal catastrophe'?[12]

---

[9] *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 205.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Ibid.

Do the myths of ancient Amerindian peoples like the Maya also contain or enable us to compute numbers such as 72, 2160, 4320, etc. We shall probably never know, thanks to the conquistadores and zealous friars who destroyed the traditional heritage of Central America and left us so little to work with. What we can say, however, is that the relevant numbers do turn up, in relative profusion, in the Mayan Long Count calendar. Details of that calendar were given in Chapter Twenty-one. The numerals necessary for calculating precession are found there in these formulae: 1 *Katun* = 7200 days; 1 *Tun* = 360 days; 2 *Tuns* = 720 days; 5 *Baktuns* = 720,000 days; 5 *Katuns* = 36,000 days; 6 *Katuns* = 43,200 days; 6 *Tuns* = 2160 days; 15 *Katuns* = 2,160,000 days.[13]

Nor does it seem that Sellers's 'code' is confined to mythology. In the jungles of Kampuchea the temple complex of Angkor looks as though it could have been purpose-built as a precessional metaphor. It has, for example, five gates to each of which leads a road bridging the crocodile-infested moat that surrounds the whole site. Each of these roads is bordered by a row of gigantic stone figures, 108 per avenue, 54 on each side (540 statues in all) and each row carries a huge Naga serpent. Furthermore, as Santillana and von Dechend point out in *Hamlet's Mill,* the figures do not 'carry' the serpent but are shown to 'pull' it, which indicates that these 540 statues are 'churning the Milky Ocean'. The whole of Angkor 'thus turns out to be a colossal model set up with true Hindu fantasy and incongruousness' to express the idea of precession.[14]

---

[12] Ibid., p. 196.

[13] *Skywatchers of Ancient Mexico,* p. 143.

[14] *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 162-3; see also *Atlas of Mysterious Places,* pp. 168-70.

Churning the Milky Ocean, one of the several 'thought tools' for precession encountered in ancient myths.

The same may be true of Java's famous temple of Borobudur, with its 72 bell-shaped stupas, and perhaps also of the megaliths of Baalbeck in the Lebanon—which are thought to be the world's biggest blocks of cut stone. Long predating Roman and Greek structures on the site, the three that make up the so-called 'Trilithion' are as tall as five-storey buildings and weigh over 600 tons each. A fourth megalith is almost 80 feet in length and weighs 1100 tons. Amazingly these giant blocks were cut, perfectly-shaped and somehow transported to Baalbeck from a quarry several miles away. In addition they were skillfully incorporated, at a considerable height above ground-level into the retaining walls of a magnificient temple. This temple was surrounded by 54 columns of immense size and height.[15]

---

[15] See, for example, *Feats and Wisdom of the Ancients,* Time-Life Books, 1990, p. 65.

In the subcontinent of India (where the Orion constellation is known as Kal-Purush, meaning Time-Man[16]), we find that Sellers's Osiris numbers are transmitted through a wide range of media in ways increasingly difficult to ascribe to chance. There are, for instance, 10,800 bricks in the Agnicayana, the Indian fire altar. There are 10,800 stanzas in the *Rigveda,* the most ancient of the Vedic texts and a rich repository of Indian mythology. Each stanza is made up of 40 syllables with the result that the entire composition consists of 432,000 syllables ... no more, and no less.[17] And in *Rigveda* 1:164 (a typical stanza) we read of 'the 12-spoked wheel in which 720 sons of Agni are established'.[18]

In the Hebrew Cabala there are 72 angels through whom the Sephiroth (divine powers) may be approached, or invoked, by those who know their names and numbers.[19] Rosicrucian tradition speaks of cycles of 108 years (72 plus 36) according to which the secret brotherhood makes its influence felt.[20] Similarly the number 72 and its permutations and subdivisions are of great significance to the Chinese secret societies known as Triads. An ancient ritual requires that each candidate for initiation pay a fee including '360 cash for "making clothes", 108 cash "for the purse", 72 cash for instruction, and 36 cash for decapitating the "traitorous subject".'[21] The 'cash' (the old universal brass coin of China with a square hole in the centre) is of course no longer in circulation but the *numbers* passed down in the ritual since times immemorial have survived. Thus in modern Singapore, candidates for Triad membership pay an entrance fee which is calculated according to their financial circumstances but which must always consist of multiples of $1.80, $3.60, $7.20, $10.80 (and thus, $18, $36, $72, $108.00, or $360, $720, $1,080, and so on.[22]

Of all the secret societies, the most mysterious and archaic by far is undoubtedly the Hung League, which scholars believe to be 'the depository of the old religion of the Chinese'.[23] In one Hung initiation ritual the neophyte is put through a question and answer session that goes:

Q. What did you see on your walk?

---

[16] Ananda K. Coomaraswamy and Sister Nivedita, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists,* George G. Harrap and Company, London, 1913, p. 384.

[17] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 162.

[18] *Rig Veda,* 1:164, cited in *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* p. 168.

[19] Frances A. Yates, *Girodano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition,* the University of Chicago Press, 1991, p. 93.

[20] Personal communication from AMORC, San Jose, California, November 1994.

[21] Leon Comber, *The Traditional Mysteries of the Chinese Secret Societies in Malaya,* Eastern Universities Press, Singapore, 1961, p. 52.

[22] Ibid., p. 53.

[23] Gustav Schlegel, *The Hung League,* Tynron Press, Scotland, 1991 (first published 1866), Introduction, p. XXXVII.

A. I saw two pots with red bamboo.

Q. Do you know how many plants there were?
A. In one pot were 36 and in the other 72 plants, together 108.

Q. Did you take home some of them for your use?
A. Yes, I took home 108 plants ...

Q. How can you prove that?
A. I can prove it by a verse.

Q. How does this verse run?
A. The red bamboo from Canton is rare in the world.
In the groves are 36 and 72.
Who in the world knows the meaning of this?
When we have set to work we will know the secret.

The atmosphere of intrigue that such passages generate is accentuated by the reticent behaviour of the Hung League itself, an organization resembling the medieval European Order of the Knights Templar (and the higher degrees of modern Freemasonry) in many ways that are beyond the remit of this book to describe.[24] It is intriguing, too, that the Chinese character *Hung,* composed of *water and many,* signifies *inundation,* i.e. the Flood.

Finally, returning to India, let us note the content of the sacred scriptures known as the *Puranas.* These speak of four ‘ages of the earth’, called Yugas, which together are said to extend to 12,000 ‘divine years’. The respective durations of these epochs, in ‘divine years’, are Krita Yuga = 4800; Treta Yuga = 3600; Davpara Yuga = 2400; Kali Yuga = 1200.[25]

The *Puranas* also tell us that ‘one year of the mortals is equal to one day of the gods’.[26] Furthermore, and exactly as in the Osiris myth, we discover that the number of *days* in the years of both gods and mortals has been artificially set at 360, so one year of the gods is equivalent to 360 mortal years.[27]

The Kali Yuga, therefore, at 1200 years of the gods, turns out to have a duration of 432,000 mortal years.[28] One Mahayuga, or Great Age (made up of the 12,000 divine years contained in the four lesser Yugas) is equivalent to 4,320,000 years of mortals. A thousand such Mahayugas (which constitute a Kalpa, or Day of Brahma) extend over 4,320,000,000 ordinary years,[29] again supplying the digits for basic precessional calculations. Separately there are Manvantaras (periods of Manu) of which we are told in the scriptures that 'about 71 systems of four Yugas elapse during each Manvantara.'[30] The reader will recall that one degree of precessional motion along the ecliptic requires 71.6 years to complete, a number that can be rounded down to 'about 71' in India just as easily as it was rounded up to 72 in Ancient Egypt.

---

[24] For fuller details see *The Hung League* and J. S. M. Ward, *The Hung Society,* Baskerville Press, London, 1925 (in three volumes).

[25] W. J. Wilkins, *Hindu Mythology: Vedic and Puranic,* Heritage Publishers, New Delhi, 1991, p. 353.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid.

The Kali Yuga, with a duration of 432,000 mortal years, is, by the way, our own. 'In the Kali Age,' the scriptures say, 'shall decay flourish, until the human race approaches annihilation.'[31]

Dogs, uncles and revenge

It was a dog that brought us to these decaying times.

We came here by way of Sirius, the Dog Star, who stands at the heel of the giant constellation of Orion where it towers in the sky above Egypt. In that land, as we have seen, Orion is Osiris, the god of death and resurrection, whose numbers—perhaps by chance—are 12, 30, 72, and 360. But can chance account for the fact that these and other prime integers of precession keep cropping up in supposedly unrelated mythologies from all over the world, and in such stolid but enduring vehicles as calendar systems and works of architecture?

Santillana and von Dechend, Jane Sellers and a growing body of other scholars rule out chance, arguing that *the persistence of detail is* indicative of a guiding hand.

If they are wrong, we need to find some other explanation for how such specific and inter-related numbers (the only obvious function of which is to calculate precession) could by accident have got themselves so widely imprinted on human culture.

But suppose they are *not* wrong? Suppose that a guiding hand really was at work behind the scenes?

Sometimes, when you slip into Santillana's and von Dechend's world of myth and mystery, you can almost feel the influence of that hand ... Take the business of the dog ... or jackal, or wolf, or fox. The subtle way this shadowy canine slinks from myth to myth is peculiar—stimulating, then baffling you, always luring you onwards.

Indeed, it was this lure we followed from the Mill of Amlodhi to the myth of Osiris in Egypt. Along the way, according to the design of the ancient sages (if Sellers, Santillana and von Dechend are right) we were first encouraged to build a clear mental picture of the celestial sphere. Second, we were provided with a mechanistic model so that we could visualize the great changes precession of the equinoxes periodically effects in all the coordinates of the sphere. Finally, after allowing the dog Sirius to open the way for us, we were given the figures to calculate precession more or less exactly.

---

[29] Ibid., pp. 353-4.

[30] Ibid., p. 354.

[31] Ibid., p. 247.

Nor is Sirius, in his eternal station at Orion's heel, the only doggish character around Osiris. We saw in Chapter Eleven how Isis (who was both the wife and sister of Osiris[32]) searched for her dead husband's body after he had been murdered by Set (who, incidentally, was also her brother, and the brother of Osiris). In this search, according to ancient tradition, she was assisted by dogs (jackals in some versions).[33] Likewise, mythological and religious texts from all periods of Egyptian history assert that the jackal-god Anubis ministered to the spirit of Osiris after his death and acted as his guide through the underworld.[34] (Surviving vignettes depict Anubis as virtually identical in appearance to Upuaut, the Opener of the Ways.)

Last but not least, Osiris himself was believed to have taken the form of a wolf when he returned from the underworld to assist his son Horus in the final battle against Set.[35]

Investigating this kind of material, one sometimes has the spooky sense of being manipulated by an ancient intelligence which has found a way to reach out to us across vast epochs of time, and for some reason has set us a puzzle to solve in the language of myth.

If it were just dogs that kept cropping up again and again, it would be easy to brush off such weird intuitions. The dog phenomenon seems more likely to be coincidence than anything else. But it isn't just dogs.

The ways between the two very different myths of Osiris and Amlodhi's Mill (which nonetheless both seem to contain accurate scientific data about precession of the equinoxes) are kept open by another strange common factor. Family relationships are involved. Amlodhi/Amleth/Hamlet is always a son who revenges the murder of his father by entrapping and killing the murderer. The murderer, furthermore, is always the father's own brother, i.e., Hamlet's uncle.[36]

This is precisely the scenario of the Osiris myth. Osiris and Seth are brothers.[37] Seth murders Osiris. Horus, the son of Osiris, then takes revenge upon his uncle.[38]

Another twist is that the Hamlet character often has some sort of incestuous relationship with his sister.[39] In the case of Kullervo, the

---

[32] For details of these complicated family relationships, see *Egyptian Book of the Dead,* Introduction, p. XLVIIIff.

[33] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, p. 366.

[34] *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 71.

[35] *Gods of the Egyptians,* II, p. 367.

[36] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 2.

[37] *Egyptian Book of the Dead,* Introduction, p. XLIX-LI.

[38] Ibid.

[39] *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 32-4.

Finnish Hamlet, there is a poignant scene in which the hero, returning home after a long absence, meets a maiden in the woods, gathering berries. They lie together. Only later do they discover that they are brother and sister. The maiden drowns herself at once. Later, with 'the black dog Musti' padding along at his heels, Kullervo wanders into the forest and throws himself upon his sword.[40]

There are no suicides in the Egyptian myth of Osiris, but there is the incest of Osiris and his sister Isis. Out of their union is born Horus the avenger.

So once again it seems reasonable to ask: what is going on? Why are there all these apparent links and connections? Why do we have these 'strings' of myths, ostensibly about different subjects, all of which prove capable in their own ways of shedding light on the phenomenon of precession of the equinoxes? And why do all these myths have dogs running through them, and characters who seem unusually inclined to incest, fratricide and revenge? It surely drives scepticism beyond its limits to suggest that so many identical literary devices could keep on turning up purely by chance in so many different contexts.

If not by chance, however, then who exactly was responsible for creating this intricate and clever connecting pattern? Who were the authors and designers of the puzzle and what motives might they have had?

Scientists with something to say

Whoever it was, they must have been smart—smart enough to have observed the infinitesimal creep of precessional motion along the ecliptic and to have calculated its rate at a value uncannily close to that obtained by today's advanced technology.

It therefore follows that we are talking about highly civilized people. Indeed, we are talking about people who deserve to be called scientists. They must, moreover, have lived in extremely remote antiquity because we can be certain that the creation and dissemination of the common heritage of precessional myths on both sides of the Atlantic did *not* take place in historic times. On the contrary the evidence suggests that all these myths were 'tottering with age' when what we call history began about 5000 years ago.[41]

The great strength of the ancient stories was this: as well as being for ever available for use and adaptation free of copyright, like intellectual chameleons, subtle and ambiguous, they had the capacity to change their colour according to their surroundings. At different times, in different continents, the ancient tales could be retold in a variety of ways, but would always retain their essential symbolism and always continue to transmit the coded precessional data they had been programmed with at the outset.

---

[40] Ibid., p. 33.

[41] Ibid., p. 119.

But to what end?

As we see in the next chapter, the long slow cycles of precession are *not* limited in their consequences to a changing view of the sky. This celestial phenomenon, born of the earth's axial wobble, has direct effects on the earth itself. In fact, it appears to be one of the principal correlates of the sudden onset of ice ages and their equally sudden and catastrophic decay.

Chapter 32

Speaking to the Unborn

It is understandable that a huge range of myths from all over the ancient world should describe geological catastrophes in graphic detail. Mankind survived the horror of the last Ice Age, and the most plausible source for our enduring traditions of flooding and freezing, massive volcanism and devastating earthquakes is in the tumultuous upheavals unleashed during the great meltdown of 15,000 to 8000 BC. The final retreat of the ice sheets, and the consequent 300-400 foot rise in global sea levels, took place only a few thousand years before the beginning of the historical period. It is therefore not surprising that all our early civilizations should have retained vivid memories of the vast cataclysms that had terrified their forefathers.

Much harder to explain is the peculiar but distinctive way the myths of cataclysm seem to bear the intelligent imprint of a guiding hand.[1] Indeed the degree of convergence between such ancient stories is frequently remarkable enough to raise the suspicion that they must all have been 'written' by the same 'author'.

Could that author have had anything to do with the wondrous deity, or superhuman, spoken of in so many of the myths we have reviewed, who appears immediately after the world has been shattered by a horrifying geological catastrophe and brings comfort and the gifts of civilization to the shocked and demoralized survivors?

White and bearded, Osiris is the Egyptian manifestation of this universal figure, and it may not be an accident that one of the first acts he is remembered for in myth is the abolition of cannibalism among the primitive inhabitants of the Nile Valley.[2] Viracocha, in South America, was said to have begun his civilizing mission immediately after a great flood; Quetzalcoatl, the discoverer of maize, brought the benefits of crops, mathematics, astronomy and a refined culture to Mexico after the Fourth Sun had been overwhelmed by a destroying deluge.

Could these strange myths contain a record of encounters between scattered palaeolithic tribes which survived the last Ice Age and an as yet unidentified high civilization which passed through the same epoch?

---

[1] See Chapter Twenty-four for details of flood myths. The same kind of convergence among supposedly unconnected myths also occurs with regard to precession of the equinoxes. The mills, the characters who work and own and eventually break them, the brothers and nephews and uncles, the theme of revenge, the theme of incest, the dogs that flit silently from story to story, and the exact *numbers* needed to calculate precessional motion—all crop up everywhere, from culture to culture and from age to age, propagating themselves effortlessly along the jet-stream of time.

[2] *Diodorus Siculus,* Book I, 14:1-15, translated by C. H. Oldfather, Loeb Classical Library, London, 1989, pp. 47-9.

And could the myths be attempts to communicate?

A message in the bottle of time

'Of all the other stupendous inventions,' Galileo once remarked,

> what sublimity of mind must have been his who conceived how to communicate his most secret thoughts to any other person, though very distant either in time or place, speaking with those who are in the Indies, speaking to those who are not yet born, nor shall be this thousand or ten thousand years? And with no greater difficulty than the various arrangements of two dozen little signs on paper? Let this be the seal of all the admirable inventions of men.[3]

If the 'precessional message' identified by scholars like Santillana, von Dechend and Jane Sellers is indeed a deliberate attempt at communication by some lost civilization of antiquity, how come it wasn't just written down and left for us to find? Wouldn't that have been easier than encoding it in myths? Perhaps.

Nevertheless, suppose that whatever the message was written on got destroyed or worn away after many thousands of years? Or suppose that the language in which it was inscribed was later forgotten utterly (like the enigmatic Indus Valley script, which has been studied closely for more than half a century but has so far resisted all attempts at decoding)? It must be obvious that in such circumstances a written legacy to the future would be of no value at all, because nobody would be able to make sense of it.

What one would look for, therefore, would be a *universal language,* the kind of language that would be comprehensible to any technologically advanced society in any epoch, even a thousand or ten thousand years into the future. Such languages are few and far between, but mathematics is one of them—and the city of Teotihuacan may be the calling-card of a lost civilization written in the eternal language of mathematics.

Geodetic data, related to the exact positioning of fixed geographical points and to the shape and size of the earth, would also remain valid and recognizable for tens of thousands of years, and might be most conveniently expressed by means of cartography (or in the construction of giant geodetic monuments like the Great Pyramid of Egypt, as we shall see).

Another 'constant' in our solar system is the language of time: the great but regular intervals of time calibrated by the inch-worm creep of precessional motion. Now, or ten thousand years in the future, a message that prints out numbers like 72 or 2160 or 4320 or 25,920 should be instantly intelligible to any civilization that has evolved a modest talent for mathematics and the ability to detect and measure the almost imperceptible reverse motion that the sun appears to make along the ecliptic against the background of the fixed stars (one degree in 71.6 years, 30 degrees in 2148 years, and so on).

---

[3] Galileo, cited in *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 10.

The sense that a correlation exists is strengthened by something else. It is neither as firm nor as definite as the number of syllables in the Rigveda; nevertheless, it feels relevant. Through powerful stylistic links and shared symbolism, myths to do with global cataclysms and with precession of the equinoxes quite frequently intermesh. A detailed interconnectedness exists between these two categories of tradition, both of which additionally bear what appear to be the recognizable fingerprints of a conscious design. Quite naturally, therefore, one is prompted to discover whether there might not *be* an important connection between precession of the equinoxes and global catastrophes.

Mill of pain

Although several different mechanisms of an astronomical and geological nature seem to be involved, and although not all of these are fully understood, the fact is that the cycle of precession does correlate very strongly *with the onset and demise of ice ages.*

Several trigger factors must coincide, which is why not every shift from one astronomical age to another is implicated. Nevertheless, it is accepted that precession does have an impact on both glaciation and deglaciation, at widely separated intervals. The knowledge that it does so has only been established by our own science since the late 1970s.[4] Yet the evidence of the myths suggests that the same level of knowledge might have been possessed by an as yet unidentified civilization in the depths of the last Ice Age. The clear suggestion we may be meant to grasp is that the terrible cataclysms of flood and fire and ice which the myths describe were in some way *causally connected* to the ponderous movements of the celestial coordinates through the great cycle of the zodiac. In the words of Santillana and von Dechend, 'It was not a foreign idea to the ancients that the mills of the gods grind slowly and that the result is usually pain.'[5]

Three principal factors, all of which we have met before, are now known to be deeply implicated in the onset and the retreat of ice ages (together, of course, with the diverse cataclysms that ensue from sudden freezes and thaws). These factors all have to do with variations in the earth's orbital geometry. They are:

1 The obliquity of the ecliptic (i.e., the angle of tilt of the planet's axis of

---

[4] *Ice Ages;* John Imbrie et al., 'Variations in the Earth's Orbit: Pacemaker of the Ice Ages' in *Science,* volume 194, No. 4270, 10 December 1976.

[5] *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 138-9.

rotation, which is also the angle between the celestial equator and the ecliptic). This, as we have seen, varies over immensely long periods of time between 22.1 degrees (the closest point that the axis reaches to vertical) and 24.5 degrees (the furthest it falls away from the vertical);

2. The eccentricity of the orbit (i.e., whether the earth's elliptical path around the sun is more or less elongated in any given epoch);

3. Axial precession, which causes the four cardinal points on the earth's orbit (the two equinoxes and the winter and summer solstices) to creep backwards very, very slowly around the orbital path.

We are dipping our toes into the waters of a technical and specialized scientific discipline here—one largely outside the scope of this book. Readers seeking detailed information are referred to the multidisciplinary work of the US National Science Foundation's CLIMAP Project, and to a keynote paper by Professors J. D. Hays and John Imbrie entitled 'Variations in the Earth's Orbit: Pacemaker of the Ice Ages' (see Note 4).

Briefly, what Hays, Imbrie and others have proved is that the onset of ice ages can be predicted when the following evil and inauspicious conjunctions of celestial cycles occur: (a) **maximum eccentricity**, which takes the earth millions of miles further away from the sun at 'aphelion' (the extremity of its orbit) than is normal; (b) **minimum obliquity**, which means that the earth's axis, and consequently the North and South poles, stand much closer to the vertical than is normal; and (c) **precession of the equinoxes** which, as the great cycle continues, eventually causes winter in one hemisphere or the other to set in when the earth is at 'perihelion' (its closest point to the sun); this in turn means that summer occurs at aphelion and is thus relatively cold, so that ice laid down in winter fails to melt during the following summer and a remorseless build-up of glacial conditions occurs.[6]

Levered by the changing geometry of the orbit, 'global insolation'—the differing amounts and intensity of sunlight received at various latitudes in any given epoch—can thus be an important trigger factor for ice ages.

Is it possible that the ancient myth-makers were trying to *warn* us of great danger when they so intricately linked the pain of global cataclysms to the slow grinding of the mill of heaven?

This is a question we will return to in due course, but meanwhile it is enough to observe that by identifying the significant effects of orbital geometry on the planet's climate and wellbeing, and by combining this information with precise measurements of the rate of precessional motion, the unknown scientists of an unrecognized civilization seem to have found a way to catch our attention, to bridge the chasm of the ages, and to communicate with us directly.

---

[6] 'Variations in the Earth's Orbit: Pacemaker of the Ice Ages'.

Whether or not we listen to what they have to say is, of course, entirely up to us.

Part VI

The Giza Invitation

Egypt 1

Chapter 33

Cardinal Points

Giza, Egypt, 16 March 1993, 3:30 a.m.

We walked through the deserted lobby of our hotel and stepped into the white Fiat waiting for us in the driveway outside. It was driven by a lean, nervous Egyptian named Ali whose job it was to get us past the guards at the Great Pyramid and away again before sunrise. He was nervous because if things went wrong Santha and I would be deported from Egypt and he would go to jail for six months.

Of course, things were not supposed to go wrong. That was why Ali was with us. The day before we'd paid him 150 US dollars which he had changed into Egyptian pounds and spread among the guards concerned. They, in return, had agreed to turn a blind eye to our presence during the next couple of hours.

We drove to within half a mile of the Pyramid, then walked the rest of the way—around the side of the steep embankment that looms above the village of Nazlet-el-Samaan and leads to the monument's north face. None of us said very much as we trudged through the soft sand just out of range of the security lights. We felt excited and apprehensive at the same time. Ali was by no means certain that his bribes were going to work.

For a while we stood still in the shadows, gazing at the monstrous bulk of the Pyramid reaching into the darkness above us and blotting out the southern stars. Then a patrol of three men armed with shotguns and wrapped in blankets against the night chill came into view at the northeastern corner, about fifty yards away, where they stopped to share a cigarette. Indicating that we should stay put, Ali stepped forward into the light and walked over to the guards. He talked to them for several minutes, apparently arguing heatedly. Finally he beckoned to us, indicating that we should join him.

'There's a problem,' he explained. 'One of them, the captain here, [he indicated a short, unshaven, disgruntled looking fellow] is insisting that we pay an extra thirty dollars otherwise the deal is off. What do you want to do?' I fished around in my wallet, counted out thirty dollars and handed the bills to Ali. He folded them and passed them to the captain. With an air of aggrieved dignity, the captain stuffed the money into his shirt pocket, and, finally, we all shook hands.

'OK,' said Ali, 'let's go.'

Inexplicable precision

As the guards continued their patrol in a westerly direction along the northern face of the Great Pyramid, we made our way around the northeastern corner and along the base of the eastern face.

I had long ago fallen into the habit of orienting myself according to the monument’s sides. The northern face was aligned, almost perfectly, to true north, the eastern face almost perfectly to true east, the southern to true south, and the western face to true west. The average error was only around three minutes of arc (down to less than two minutes on the southern face)[1]—incredible accuracy for any building in any epoch, and an inexplicable, almost supernatural feat here in Egypt 4500 years ago when the Great Pyramid was supposed to have been built.

An error of three arc minutes represents an infinitesimal deviation from true of less than 0.015 per cent. In the opinion of structural engineers, with whom I had discussed the Great Pyramid, the need for such precision was impossible to understand. From their point of view as practical builders, the expense, difficulty and time spent achieving it would not have been justified by the apparent results: even if the base of the monument had been as much as two or three degrees out of true (an error of say 1 per cent) the difference to the naked eye would still have been too small to be noticeable. On the other hand the difference in the magnitude of the tasks required (to achieve accuracy within three minutes as opposed to three degrees) would have been immense.

---

[1] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 208.

Overview of Giza from the north looking south, with the Great Pyramid in the foreground.

Obviously, therefore, the ancient master-builders who had raised the Pyramid at the very dawn of human civilization must have had powerful motives for wanting to get the alignments with the cardinal directions just right. Moreover, since they had achieved their objective with uncanny exactness they must have been highly skilled, knowledgeable and competent people with access to excellent surveying and setting-out equipment. This impression was confirmed by many of the monument's other characteristics. For example, its sides at the base were all almost exactly the same length, demonstrating a margin of error far smaller than modern architects would be required to achieve today in the construction of, say, an average-size office block. This was no office block, however. It was the Great Pyramid of Egypt, one of the largest structures ever built by man and one of the oldest. Its north side was 755 feet 4.9818 inches in length; its west side was 755 feet 9.1551 inches in length; its east side was 755 feet 10.4937 inches; its south side 756 feet 0.9739 inches.[2] This meant that there was a difference of less than 8 inches between its shortest and longest sides: an error amounting to a tiny fraction of 1 per cent on an average side length of over 9063 inches.

Once again, I knew from an engineering perspective that the bare figures did not do justice to the enormous care and skill required to achieve them. I knew, too, that scholars had not yet come up with a convincing explanation of exactly how the Pyramid builders had adhered consistently to such high standards of precision.[3]

---

[2] J. H. Cole, *Survey of Egypt,* paper no. 39: 'The Determination of the Exact Size and Orientation of the Great Pyramid of Giza', Cairo, 1925.

What really interested me, however, was the even bigger question-mark over another issue: why had they imposed such exacting standards on themselves? If they had permitted a margin of error of 1-2 per cent—instead of less than one-tenth of 1 per cent—they could have simplified their tasks with no apparent loss of quality. Why hadn't they done so? Why had they insisted on making everything so difficult? Why, in short, in a supposedly 'primitive' stone monument built more than 4500 years ago were we seeing this strange, obsessional adherence to machine-age standards of precision?

Black hole in history

Our plan was to climb the Great Pyramid—something that had been strictly illegal since 1983 when the messy falls of several foolhardy tourists had forced the government of Egypt to impose a ban. I realized that we were being foolhardy too (particularly in attempting the climb at night) and I didn't feel good about breaking what was basically a sensible law. By this stage, however, my intense interest in the Pyramid, and my desire to learn everything I could about it, had over-ridden my common sense.

Now, after parting company with the guard patrol at the north-eastern corner of the monument, we continued to make our way surreptitiously along the eastern face towards the south-eastern corner.

There were dense shadows among the twisted and broken paving stones that separated the Great Pyramid from the three much smaller 'subsidiary' pyramids lying immediately to its east. There were also three deep and narrow rock-cut pits which resembled giant graves. These had been found empty by the archaeologists who had excavated them, but were shaped as though they had been intended to enclose the hulls of high-prowed, streamlined boats.

Roughly halfway along the Pyramid's eastern face we encountered another patrol. This time it consisted of two guards, one of whom must have been eighty years old. His companion, a teenager with pustulant acne, informed us that the money Ali had paid was insufficient and that fifty more Egyptian pounds would be required if we were to proceed. I already had the notes in my hand and gave them to the lad without delay. I was past caring how much this was costing; I just wanted to make the climb and get down and away before dawn without being arrested.

---

[3] The conventional explanations, as given in *The Pyramids of Egypt,* for example, are entirely unsatisfactory, as Edwards himself admits; see pp. 85-7, 206-41.

We walked on, reaching the south-eastern corner at a little after 4:15 a.m.

Very few modern buildings, even the houses we live in, have corners that consist of perfect ninety degree right angles; it is common for them to be a degree or more out of true. It doesn't make any difference structurally and nobody notices such minute errors. In the case of the Great Pyramid, however, I knew that the ancient master-builders had found a way to narrow the margin of error to almost nothing. Thus, while falling short of the perfect ninety degrees, the south-eastern corner achieved an impressive 89° 56' 27". The north-eastern corner measured 90° 3' 2"; the southwestern 90° 0' 33", and the north-western was just two seconds of a degree out of true at 89° 59' 58".[4]

This was, of course, extraordinary. And like almost everything else about the Great Pyramid it was also extremely difficult to explain. Such accurate building techniques—as accurate as the best we have today—could have evolved only after thousands of years of development and experimentation. Yet there was no evidence that any process of this kind had ever taken place in Egypt. The Great Pyramid and its neighbours at Giza had emerged out of a black hole in architectural history so deep and so wide that neither its bottom nor its far side had ever been identified.

Ships in the desert

Guided by the increasingly perspiring Ali, who had not yet explained why it was necessary for us to circumnavigate the Pyramid before climbing it, we now began to make our way in a westerly direction along the monument's southern side. Here there were two further boat-shaped pits, one of which, although still sealed, had been investigated with fibre-optic cameras and was known to contain a high-prowed sea-going vessel more than 100 feet long. The other pit had been excavated in the 1950s. Its contents—an even larger seagoing vessel, a full 141 feet in length[5]—had been placed in the so-called Boat Museum, an ugly modern structure that gangled on stilts beneath the south face of the Pyramid.

Made of cedarwood, the beautiful ship in the museum was still in perfect condition 4500 years after it had been built. With a displacement of around 40 tons, its design was particularly thought-provoking, incorporating, in the words of one expert, 'all the sea-going ship's characteristic properties, with prow and stern soaring upward, higher than in a Viking ship, to ride out the breakers and high seas, not to contend with the little ripples of the Nile.'[6]

---

[4] Ibid., p. 87.

[5] See Lionel Casson, *Ships and Seafaring in Ancient Times,* University of Texas Press, 1994, p. 17; *The Ra Expeditions,* p. 15.

[6] *The Ra Expeditions,* p. 17.

Another authority felt that the careful and clever design of this strange pyramid boat could potentially have made it 'a far more seaworthy craft than anything available to Columbus'.[7] Moreover, the experts agreed that it had been built to a pattern that could only have been 'created by shipbuilders from a people with a long, solid tradition of sailing on the open sea.'[8]

Present at the very beginning of Egypt's 3000-year history, who had those as yet unidentified shipbuilders been? They had not accumulated their 'long, solid tradition of sailing on the open sea' while ploughing the fields of the landlocked Nile Valley. So where and when had they developed their maritime skills?

There was yet another puzzle. I knew that the Ancient Egyptians had been very good at making scale models and representations of all manner of things for symbolic purposes.[9] I therefore found it hard to understand why they would have gone to the trouble of manufacturing and then burying a boat as big and sophisticated as this if its only function, as the Egyptologists claimed, had been as a token of the spiritual vessel that would carry the soul of the deceased king to heaven.[10] That could have been achieved as effectively with a much smaller craft, and only one would have been needed, not several. Logic therefore suggested that these gigantic vessels might have been intended for some other purpose altogether, or had some quite different and still unsuspected symbolic significance ...

We had reached the rough midpoint of the southern face of the Great Pyramid when we at last realized why we were being taken on this long walkabout. The objective was for us to be relieved of moderate sums of money at each of the four cardinal points. The tally thus far was 30 US dollars at the northern face and 50 Egyptian pounds at the eastern face. Now I shelled out a further 50 Egyptian pounds to yet another patrol Ali was supposed to have paid off the day before.

'Ali,' I hissed, 'when are we going to climb the Pyramid?'

'Right away, Mr. Graham,' our guide replied. He walked confidently forward, gesturing directly ahead, then added, 'We shall ascend at the south-west corner ...'

---

[7] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* pp. 132-3.

[8] *The Ra Expeditions,* p. 16.

[9] See, for example, Christine Desroches-Noblecourt, *Tutankhamen,* Penguin Books, London, 1989, pages 89, 108, 113, 283.

[10] A.J. Spencer, *The Great Pyramid Fact Sheet,* P.J. Publications, 1989.

Chapter 34

Mansion of Eternity

Have you ever climbed a pyramid, at night, fearful of arrest, with your nerves in shreds?

It's a surprisingly difficult thing to do, especially where the Great Pyramid is concerned. Even though its top 31 feet are no longer intact, its presently exposed summit platform still stands more than 450 feet above ground level.[1] It consists, moreover, of 203 separate courses of masonry, with the average course height being about two and a quarter feet.[2]

Averages do not tell you everything, as I discovered soon after we began the climb. The courses turned out to be of unequal depth, some barely reaching knee level while others came up almost to my chest and created formidable obstacles. At the same time the horizontal ledges between each of the steps were very narrow, often only a little wider than my foot, and many of the big limestone blocks, which had looked so solid from below, proved to be crumbling and broken.

Somewhere around 30 courses up Santha and I began to appreciate what we had let ourselves in for. Our muscles were aching and our knees and fingers stiff and bruised—yet we were barely one-seventh of the way to the summit and there were still more than 170 courses to climb. Another worry was the vertiginous drop steadily opening beneath us. Looking down along the ruptured contours that marked the line of the southwestern corner, I was taken aback to see how far we had already climbed and experienced a momentary, giddying presentiment of how easy it would be for us to fall, head over heels like Jack and Jill, bouncing and jolting over the huge layers of stone, breaking our crowns at the bottom.

Ali had permitted a pause of a few moments for us to catch our breaths, but now he signalled that we should press on and began to climb again. Still using the corner as a guideline, he rapidly disappeared into the darkness above.

Somewhat less confidently, Santha and I followed.

Time and motion

The 35th course of masonry was a hard one to clamber over, being made of particularly massive blocks, much larger than any of the others we had so far encountered (except those at the very base) and estimated to weigh between 10 and 15 tons apiece.[3] This contradicted engineering logic and commonsense, both of which called for a progressive decrease in the size and weight of the blocks that had to be transported to the summit as the pyramid rose ever higher. Courses 1-18, which diminished from a height of about 55.5 inches at ground level to just over 23 inches at course 17, did obey this rule. Then suddenly, at course 19, the block height rose again to almost 36 inches. At the same time the other dimensions of the blocks also increased and their weight grew from the relatively manoeuvrable range of 2-6 tons that was common in the first 18 courses to the more ponderous and cumbersome range of 10-15 tons.[4] These, therefore, were really *big* monoliths that had been carved out of solid limestone and raised more than 100 feet into the air before being placed faultlessly in position.

---

[1] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 8.

[2] Peter Lemesurier, *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* Element Books, Shaftesbury, 1987, p. 225.

To have worked effectively the pyramid builders must have had nerves of steel, the agility of mountain goats, the strength of lions and the confidence of trained steeplejacks. With the cold morning wind whipping around my ears and threatening to launch me into flight, I tried to imagine what it must have been like for them, poised dangerously at this (and much higher) altitudes, lifting, manoeuvring and positioning exactly an endless production line of chunky limestone monoliths—the smallest of which weighed as much as two modern family cars.

How long had the pyramid taken to complete? How many men had worked on it? The consensus among Egyptologists was two decades and 100,000 men.[5] It was also generally agreed that the construction project had not been a year-round affair but had been confined (through labour force availability) to the annual three-month agricultural lay-off season imposed by the flooding of the Nile.[6]

As I continued to climb, I reminded myself of the implications of all this. It wasn't just the tens of thousands of blocks weighing 15 tons or more that the builders would have had to worry about. Year in, year out, the real crises would have been caused by the *millions* of 'average-sized' blocks, weighing say 2.5 tons, that also had to be brought to the working plane. The Pyramid has been reliably estimated to consist of a total of 2.3 million blocks.[7] Assuming that the masons worked ten hours a day, 365 days a year, the mathematics indicate that they would have needed to place 31 blocks in position every hour (about one block every two minutes) to complete the Pyramid in twenty years. Assuming that construction work had been confined to the annual three-month lay-off, the problems multiplied: four blocks a minute would have had to be delivered, about 240 every hour.

---

[3] Dr. Joseph Davidovits and Margie Morris, *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* Dorset Press, New York, 1988, pp. 39-40.

[4] Ibid., p. 37.

[5] John Baines and Jaromir Malek, *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1990, p. 160; *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 229-30.

[6] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 229.

[7] Ibid., p. 85.

Such scenarios are, of course, the stuff construction managers' nightmares are made of. Imagine, for example, the daunting degree of coordination that must have been maintained between the masons and the quarries to ensure the requisite rate of block flow across the production site. Imagine also the havoc if even a single 2.5 ton block had been dropped from, say, the 175th course.

The physical and managerial obstacles seemed staggering on their own, but beyond these was the geometrical challenge represented by the pyramid itself, which had to end up with its apex positioned exactly over the centre of its base. Even the minutest error in the angle of incline of any one of the sides at the base would have led to a substantial misalignment of the edges at the apex. Incredible accuracy, therefore, had to be maintained throughout, at every course, hundreds of feet above the ground, with great stone blocks of killing weight.

Rampant stupidity

How had the job been done?

At the last count there were more than thirty competing and conflicting theories attempting to answer that question. The majority of academic Egyptologists have argued that ramps of one kind or another must have been used. This was the opinion, for example, of Professor I.E.S Edwards, a former keeper of Egyptian Antiquities at the British Museum who asserted categorically: 'Only one method of lifting heavy weights was open to the ancient Egyptians, namely by means of ramps composed of brick and earth which sloped upwards from the level of the ground to whatever height was desired.'[8]

John Baines, professor of Egyptology at Oxford University, agreed with Edwards's analysis and took it further: 'As the pyramid grew in height, the length of the ramp and the width of its base were increased in order to maintain a constant gradient (about 1 in 10) and to prevent the ramp from collapsing. Several ramps approaching the pyramid from different sides were probably used.'[9]

To carry an inclined plane to the top of the Great Pyramid at a gradient of 1:10 would have required a ramp 4800 feet long and more than three times as massive as the Great Pyramid itself (with an estimated volume of 8 million cubic metres as against the Pyramid's 2.6 million cubic metres).[10] Heavy weights could not have been dragged up any gradient steeper than this by any normal means.[11] If a lesser gradient had been chosen, the ramp would have had to be even more absurdly and disproportionately massive.

---

[8] Ibid., p. 220.

[9] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 139.

[10] Peter Hodges and Julian Keable, *How the Pyramids Were Built,* Element Books, Shaftesbury, 1989, p. 123.

The problem was that mile-long ramps reaching a height of 480 feet could not have been made out of ‘bricks and earth’ as Edwards and other Egyptologists supposed. On the contrary, modern builders and architects had proved that such ramps would have caved in under their own weight if they had consisted of any material less costly and less stable than the limestone ashlars of the Pyramid itself.[12]

Since this obviously made no sense (besides, where had the 8 million cubic metres of surplus blocks been taken after completion of the work?), other Egyptologists had proposed the use of *spiral* ramps made of mud brick and attached to the sides of the Pyramid. These would certainly have required less material to build, but they would also have failed to reach the top.[13] They would have presented deadly and perhaps insurmountable problems to the teams of men attempting to drag the big blocks of stone around their hairpin corners. And they would have crumbled under constant use. Most problematic of all, such ramps would have cloaked the whole pyramid, thus making it impossible for the architects to check the accuracy of the setting-out during building.[14]

But the pyramid builders *had* checked the accuracy of the setting out, and they *had* got it right, because the apex of the pyramid was poised exactly over the centre of the base, its angles and its corners were true, each block was in the correct place, and each course had been laid down level—in near-perfect symmetry and with near-perfect alignment to the cardinal points. Then, as though to demonstrate that such *tours-de-force* of technique were mere trifles, the ancient master-builders had gone on to play some clever mathematical games with the monument’s dimensions, presenting us, for example, as we saw in Chapter Twenty-three, with an accurate use of the transcendental number *pi* in the ratio of its height to its base perimeter.[15] For some reason, too, it had taken their fancy to place the Great Pyramid almost exactly on the 30th parallel at latitude 29° 58’ 51”. This, as a former astronomer royal of Scotland once observed, was ‘a sensible defalcation from 30°’, but not necessarily in error:

> For if the original designer had wished that men should see with their body, rather than their mental eyes, the pole of the sky from the foot of the Great Pyramid, at an altitude before them of 30°, he would have had to take account of the refraction of the atmosphere; and that would have necessitated the building standing not at

---

[11] Ibid., p. 11.

[12] Ibid., p. 13.

[13] Ibid., p. 125-6. Failure to reach the top would be because spiral ramps and linked scaffolds overlap and exceed the space available long before arrival at the summit.

[14] Ibid., p. 126.

[15] See Chapter Twenty-three; *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 219; *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 139.

30° but at 29° 58’ 22”.[16]

Compared to the true position of 29° 58’ 51”, this was an error of less than half an arc minute, suggesting once again that the surveying and geodetic skills brought to bear here must have been of the highest order.

Feeling somewhat overawed, we climbed on, past the 44th and 45th courses of the hulking and enigmatic structure. At the 40th course an angry voice hailed us in Arabic from the plaza below and we looked down to see a tiny, turbaned man dressed in a billowing kaftan. Despite the range, he had unslung his shotgun and was preparing to take aim at us.

The guardian and the vision

He was, of course, the guardian of the Pyramid’s western face, the patrolman of the fourth cardinal point, and he had not received the extra funds dispensed to his colleagues of the north, east and south faces.

I could tell from Ali’s perspiration that we were in a potentially tricky situation. The guard was ordering us to come down at once so that he could place us under arrest. ‘This, however, could probably be avoided with a further payment,’ Ali explained.

I groaned. ‘Offer him 100 Egyptian pounds.’

‘Too much,’ Ali cautioned, ‘it will make the others resentful. I shall offer him 50.’

More words were exchanged in Arabic. Indeed, over the next few minutes, Ali and the guard managed to have quite a sustained conversation up and down the south-western corner of the Pyramid at 4:40 in the morning. At one point a whistle was blown. Then the guards of the southern face put in a brief appearance and stood in conference with the guard of the western face, who had now also been joined by the two other members of his patrol.

Just when it seemed that Ali had lost whatever argument he was having on our behalf, he smiled and heaved a sigh of relief. ‘You will pay the extra 50 pounds when we have returned to the ground,’ he explained. ‘They’re letting us continue but they say that if any senior officer comes along and sees us they will not be able to help us.’

We struggled upwards in silence for the next ten minutes or so until we had reached the tooth course—roughly the halfway mark and already well over 250 feet above the ground. We gazed over our shoulders to the southwest, where a once-in-a-lifetime vision of staggering beauty and power confronted us. The crescent moon, which hung low in the sky to the south-east, had emerged from behind a scudding cloud bank and projected its ghostly radiance directly at the northern and eastern faces of the neighbouring Second Pyramid, supposedly built by the Fourth

---

[16] Piazzi Smyth, *The Great Pyramid: Its Secrets and Mysteries Revealed,* Bell Publishing Company, New York, 1990, p. 80.

Dynasty Pharaoh Khafre (Chephren). This stunning monument, second only in size and majesty to the Great Pyramid itself (being just a few feet shorter and 48 feet narrower at the base) appeared lit up, as though energized from within, by a pale and unearthly fire. Behind it in the distance, slightly offset among the dark desert shadows, was the smaller Pyramid of Menkaure (Mycerinus), measuring 356 feet along each side and some 215 feet in height.[17]

For a moment, against the glittering backdrop of the inky sky, I experienced the illusion of being in motion, of standing at the stern of some great ship of the heavens and looking back at two other vessels which seemed to follow in my wake, strung out in battle order behind me.

So where was this convoy going, this squadron of pyramids? And were the prodigious structures all the work of megalomaniac pharaohs, as the Egyptologists believed? Or had they been designed by mysterious hands to voyage eternally through time and space towards some as yet unidentified objective?

From this altitude, though the southern sky was partially occluded by the vast bulk of the Pyramid of Khafre, I could see all the western sky as it arched down from the celestial north pole towards the distant rim of the revolving planet. Polaris, the Pole Star, was far to my right, in the constellation of the Little Bear. Low on the horizon, about ten degrees north of west, Regulus, the paw-star of the imperial constellation of Leo, was about to set.

Under Egyptian skies

Just above the 150th course, Ali hissed at us to keep our heads down. A police car had come into view around the north-western corner of the Great Pyramid and was now proceeding along the western flank of the monument with its blue light slowly flashing. We stayed motionless in the shadows until the car had passed. Then we began to climb again, with a renewed sense of urgency, heading as fast as we could towards the summit, which we now imagined we could see jutting out above the misty predawn haze.

For what seemed like five minutes we climbed without stopping. When I looked up, however, the top of the Pyramid still seemed as far away as ever. We climbed again, panting and sweating, and once again the summit drew back before us like some legendary Welsh peak. Then, just when we'd resigned ourselves to an endless succession of such disappointments, we found ourselves at the top, under a breathtaking canopy of stars, more than 450 feet above the surrounding plateau on the most extraordinary viewing platform in the world. To our north and east, sprawled out across the wide, sloping valley of the River Nile, lay the city of Cairo, a jumble of skyscrapers and flat traditional roofs separated by the dark defiles of narrow streets and interspersed with the needle-point minarets of a thousand and one mosques. A film of reflected street-lighting shimmered over the whole scene, closing the eyes of modern Cairenes to the wonder of the stars but at the same time creating the hallucination of a fairyland illuminated in greens and reds and blues and sulphurous yellows.

---

[17] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 125.

I felt privileged to witness this strange, electronic mirage from such an incredible vantage point, perched on the summit platform of the last surviving wonder of the ancient world, hovering in the sky over Cairo like Aladdin on his magic carpet.

Not that the 203rd course of the Great Pyramid of Egypt could be described as a carpet! Measuring just under 30 feet on each side (as against the monument's side length of around 755 feet at the base) it consisted of several hundred waist-high limestone blocks, each of which weighed about five tons. The course was not completely level: a few blocks were missing or broken, and rising towards the southern end there were the substantial remains of about half an additional step of masonry. Moreover, at the very centre of the platform, someone had arranged for a triangular wooden scaffold to be erected, through the middle of which rose a thick pole, just over 31 feet long, which marked the monument's original true height of 481.3949 feet.[18] Beneath this a scrawl of graffiti had been carved into the limestone by generations of tourists.[19]

The complete ascent of the Pyramid had taken us about half an hour and it was now just after 5 a.m., the time of morning worship. Almost in unison, the voices of a thousand and one muezzins rang out from the balconies of the minarets of Cairo, calling the faithful to prayer and reaffirming the greatness, the indivisibility, the mercy and the compassion of God. Behind me, to the south-west, the top 22 courses of Khafre's Pyramid, still clad with their original facing stones, seemed to float like an iceberg on the ocean of moonlight.

Knowing that we could not stay long in this bewitching place, I sat down and gazed around at the heavens. Over to the west, across limitless desert sands, Regulus had now set beneath the horizon, and the rest of the lion's body was poised to follow. The constellations of Virgo and Libra were also dropping lower in the sky and, much farther to the north, I could see the Great and Little Bears slowly pacing out their eternal cycle around the celestial pole.

I looked south-east across the Nile Valley and there was the crescent moon still spreading its spectral radiance from the bank of the Milky Way.

---

[18] Ibid., p. 87.

[19] 'One is irritated by the number of imbeciles' names written everywhere,' Gustave Flaubert commented in his *Letters From Egypt.* 'On the top of the Great Pyramid there is a certain Buffard, 79 rue St Martin, wallpaper manufacturer, in black letters.'

Following the course of the celestial river, I looked due south: there, crossing the meridian, was the resplendent constellation of Scorpius dominated by the first-magnitude star Antares—a red supergiant 300 times the diameter of the sun. North-east, above Cairo, sailed Cygnus the swan, his tail feathers marked by Deneb, a blue-white supergiant visible to us across more than 1800 light years of interstellar space. Last but not least, in the northern sky, the dragon Draco coiled sinuously among the circumpolar stars. Indeed, 4500 years ago, when the Great Pyramid was supposedly being built for the Fourth Dynasty Pharaoh Khufu (Cheops), one of the stars of Draco had stood close to the celestial north pole and had served as the Pole Star. This had been alpha Draconis, also known as Thuban. With the passing of the millennia, however, it had gradually been displaced from its position by the remorseless celestial mill of the earth's axial precession so that the Pole Star today is Polaris in the Little Bear.[20]

I lay back, cushioned my head in my hands and gazed directly up towards the zenith of heaven. Through the smooth cold stones I rested on, I thought I could sense beneath me, like a living force, the stupendous gravity and mass of the pyramid.

Thinking like giants

Covering a full 13.1 acres at the base, it weighed about six million tons—more than all the buildings in the Square Mile of the City of London added together,[21] and consisted, as we have seen, of roughly 2.3 million individual blocks of limestone and granite. To these had once been added a 22-acre, mirror-like cladding consisting of an estimated 115,000 highly polished casing stones, each weighing 10 tons, which had originally covered all four of its faces.[22]

After being shaken loose by a massive earthquake in AD 1301, the majority of the facing blocks had subsequently been removed for the construction of Cairo.[23] Here and there around the base, however, I knew that enough had remained in position to permit the great nineteenth century archaeologist, W.M. Flinders Petrie, to carry out a detailed study of them. He had been stunned to encounter tolerances of less than one-hundredth of an inch and cemented joints so precise and so carefully aligned that it was impossible to slip even the fine blade of a pocket knife between them. 'Merely to place such stones in exact contact would be careful work', he admitted, 'but to do so with cement in the joint seems almost impossible; it is to be compared to the finest opticians' work on a scale of acres.'[24]

---

[20] Skyglobe 3.6.

[21] *How the Pyramids Were Built,* p. 4-5.

[22] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* pp. 232, 244.

[23] Ibid., p. 17.

Of course, the jointing of the casing stones was by no means the only 'almost impossible' feature of the Great Pyramid. The alignments to true north, south, east and west were 'almost impossible', so too were the near- perfect ninety-degree corners, and the incredible symmetry of the four enormous sides. And so were the engineering logistics of raising millions of huge stones hundreds of feet in the air ...

Whoever they had been, therefore, the architects, engineers and stonemasons who had designed and successfully built this stupendous monument must indeed have 'thought like men 100 feet tall', as Jean-François Champollion, the founder of modern Egyptology, had once observed. He had seen clearly what generations of his successors were to close their eyes to: that the pyramid builders could only have been men of giant intellectual stature. Beside the Egyptians of old, he had added, 'we in Europe are but Lilliputians.'[25]

---

[24] Cited in *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 90.

[25] Ibid., p. 40. Champollion of course, deciphered the Rosetta Stone.

Chapter 35

Tombs and Tombs Only?

Climbing down the Great Pyramid was more nerve wracking than climbing up. We were no longer struggling against the force of gravity, so the physical effort was less. But the possibilities of a fatal fall seemed greatly magnified now that our attention was directed exclusively towards the ground rather than the heavens. We picked our way with exaggerated care towards the base of the enormous mountain of stone, sliding and slithering among the treacherous masonry blocks, feeling as though we had been reduced to ants.

By the time we had completed the descent the night was over and the first wash of pale sunlight was filtering into the sky. We paid the 50 Egyptian pounds promised to the guard of the pyramid’s western face and then, with a tremendous sense of release and exultation, we walked jauntily away from the monument in the direction of the Pyramid of Khafre, a few hundred metres to the south-west.

Khufu, Khafre, Menkaure ... Cheops, Chephren, Mycerinus. Whether they were referred to by their Egyptian or their Greek names, the fact remained that these three pharaohs of the Fourth Dynasty (2575-2467 BC) were universally acclaimed as the builders of the Giza pyramids. This had been the case at least since Ancient Egyptian tour guides had told the Greek historian Herodotus that the Great Pyramid had been built by Khufu. Herodotus had incorporated this information into the oldest surviving written description of the monuments, which continued:

> Cheops, they said, reigned for fifty years, and on his death the kingship was taken over by his brother Chephren. He also made a pyramid ... it is forty feet lower than his brother’s pyramid, but otherwise of the same greatness ... Chephren reigned for fifty-six years ... then there succeeded Mycerinus, the son of Cheops ... This man left a pyramid much smaller than his father’s.[1]

---

[1] Herodotus, *The History* (translated by David Grene), University of Chicago Press, 1987, pp. 187-9.

The Great Sphinx
Pyramid of Menkaure
Causeway
Valley Temple of Khafre
Causeway
Sphinx Temple
Causeway
The Great Pyramid
Pyramid of Khafre

Site plan of the Giza necropolis

Herodotus saw the monuments in the fifth century BC, more than 2000 years after they had been built. Nevertheless it was largely on the foundation of his testimony that the entire subsequent judgement of history was based. All other commentators, up to the present, continued uncritically to follow in the Greek historian's footsteps. And down the ages—although it had originally been little more than hearsay—the attribution of the Great Pyramid to Khufu, the Second Pyramid to Khafre and the Third Pyramid to Menkaure had assumed the stature of unassailable fact.

Trivializing the mystery

Having parted company with Ali, Santha and I continued our walk into the desert. Skirting the immense south-western corner of the Second Pyramid, our eyes were drawn towards its summit. There we noted again the intact facing stones that still covered its top 22 courses. We also noticed that the first few courses above its base, each of which had a 'footprint' of about a dozen acres, were composed of truly massive blocks of limestone, almost too high to clamber over, which were about 20 feet long and 6 feet thick. These extraordinary monoliths, as I was later to discover, weighed 200 tons apiece and belonged to a distinct style of masonry to be found at several different and widely scattered locations within the Giza necropolis.

On its north and west sides the Second Pyramid sat on a level platform cut down out of the surrounding bedrock and was thus enclosed within a wide trench more than 15 feet deep in places. Walking due south, parallel to the monument's scarred western flank, we picked our way along the edge of this trench towards the much smaller Third Pyramid, which lay some 400 metres ahead of us in the desert.

Khufu ... Khafre ... Menkaure ... According to all orthodox Egyptologists the pyramids had been built as tombs—and only as tombs—for these three pharaohs. Yet there were some obvious difficulties with such assertions. For example, the spacious burial chamber of the Khafre Pyramid was empty when it was opened in 1818 by the European explorer Giovanni Belzoni. Indeed, more than empty, the chamber was starkly, austerely bare. The polished granite sarcophagus which lay embedded in its floor had also been found empty, with its lid broken into two pieces nearby.[2] How was this to be explained?

To Egyptologists the answer seemed obvious. At some early date, probably not many hundreds of years after Khafre's death, tomb robbers must have penetrated the chamber and cleared all its contents including the mummified body of the pharaoh.

Much the same thing seemed to have happened at the smaller Third Pyramid, towards which Santha and I were now walking—that attributed to Menkaure. Here the first European to break in had been a British colonel, Howard Vyse, who had entered the burial chamber in 1837. He found an empty basalt sarcophagus, an anthropoid coffin lid made of wood, and some bones. The natural assumption was that these were the remains of Menkaure. Modern science had subsequently proved, however, that the bones and coffin lid dated from the early Christian era, that is, from 2500 years after the Pyramid Age, and thus represented the 'intrusive burial' of a much later individual (quite a common practice throughout Ancient Egyptian history). As to the basalt sarcophagus—well, it could have belonged to Menkaure. Unfortunately, however, nobody had the opportunity to examine it because it had been lost at sea when the ship on which Vyse sent it to England had sunk off the coast of Spain.[3] Since it was a matter of record that the sarcophagus had been found empty by Vyse, it was once again assumed that the body of the pharaoh must have been removed by tomb robbers.

A similar assumption had been made about the body of Khufu, which was also missing. Here the scholarly consensus, expressed as well as anyone by George Hart of the British Museum, was that 'no later than 500 years after Khufu's funeral' robbers had forced their way into the Great Pyramid 'to steal the burial treasure'.[4] The implication is that this incursion must have occurred by or before 2000 BC—since Khufu is believed to have died in 2528 BC.[5] Moreover it was assumed by Professor I.E.S Edwards, a leading authority on these matters, that the burial treasure had been removed from the famous inner sanctum now known as the King's Chamber and that the empty 'granite sarcophagus' which stood at the western end of that sanctum had 'once contained the King's body, probably enclosed within an inner coffin made of wood'.[6]

---

[2] *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* p. 54.

[3] Ibid., p. 55.

[4] George Hart, *Pharaohs and Pyramids,* Guild Publishing, London, 1991, p. 91.

All this is orthodox, mainstream, modern scholarship, which is unquestioningly accepted as historical fact and taught as such at universities everywhere.[7]

But suppose it isn't fact.

The cupboard was bare

The mystery of the missing mummy of Khufu begins with the records of Caliph Al-Ma'mun, a Muslim governor of Cairo in the ninth century AD. He had engaged a team of quarriers to tunnel their way into the pyramid's northern face, urging them on with promises that they would discover treasure. Through a series of lucky accidents 'Ma'mun's Hole', as archaeologists now refer to it, had joined up with one of the monument's several internal passageways, the 'descending corridor' leading downwards from the original concealed doorway in the northern face (the location of which, though known in classical times, had been forgotten by Ma'mun's day). By a further lucky accident the vibrations that the Arabs had caused with their battering rams and drills dislodged a block of limestone from the ceiling of the descending corridor. When the socket from which it had fallen was examined it was found to conceal the opening to another corridor, this time *ascending* into the heart of the pyramid.

There was a problem, however. The opening was blocked by a series of enormous plugs of solid granite, clearly contemporaneous with the construction of the monument, which were held in place by a narrowing of the lower end of the corridor.[8] The quarriers were unable either to break or to cut through the plugs. They therefore tunnelled into the slightly softer limestone surrounding them and, after several weeks of backbreaking toil, rejoined the ascending corridor higher up—*having bypassed a formidable obstacle never before breached.*

The implications were obvious. Since no previous treasure-seekers had penetrated this far, the interior of the pyramid must still be virgin territory. The diggers must have licked their lips with anticipation at the immense quantities of gold and jewels they could now expect to find. Similarly—though perhaps for different reasons, Ma'mun must have been impatient to be the first into any chambers that lay ahead. It was reported that his primary motive in initiating this investigation had not been an ambition to increase his vast personal wealth but a desire to gain access to a storehouse of ancient wisdom and technology which he believed to lie buried within the monument. In this repository, according to age-old tradition, the pyramid builders had placed 'instruments of iron and arms which rust not, and glasse which might be bended and yet not broken, and strange spells ...'[9]

---

[5] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

[6] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 94-5.

[7] *The Pyramids of Egypt* by Professor I. E. S. Edwards is the standard text on the pyramids.

[8] W. M. Flinders Petrie, *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh* (New and Revised Edition), Histories and Mysteries of Man Ltd., London, 1990, p. 21.

---

[9] John Greaves, *Pyramidographia,* cited in *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 230.

The Great Pyramid: entrance and plugging blocks in the ascending corridor.

King's Chamber
Grand Gallery
Queen's Chamber
Ascending Passage

The Great Pyramid: detail of corridors, shafts and chambers.

But Ma'mun and his men found nothing, not even any down-to-earth treasure—and certainly not any high-tech, anachronistic plastic or instruments of iron or rustproof weapons ... or strange spells either.

The erroneously named 'Queen's Chamber' (which lay at the end a long horizontal passageway that branched off from the ascending corridor) turned out to be completely empty—just a severe, geometrical room.[10]

More disappointing still, the King's Chamber (which the Arabs reached after climbing the imposing Grand Gallery) also offered little of interest. Its only furniture was a granite coffer just big enough to contain the body of a man. Later identified, on no very good grounds, as a 'sarcophagus', this undecorated stone box was approached with trepidation by Ma'mun and his team, who found it to be lidless and as empty as everything else in the pyramid.[11]

Why, how and when exactly had the Great Pyramid been emptied of its contents? Had it been 500 years after Khufu's death, as the Egyptologists suggested? Or was it not more likely, as the evidence was beginning to suggest, that the inner chambers of the pyramid had been empty all along, from the very beginning, that is, from the day that the monument had originally been sealed? Nobody, after all, had reached the upper part of the ascending corridor before Ma'mun and his men. And it was certain, too, that nobody had cut through the granite plugs blocking the entrance to that corridor.

Commonsense ruled out the possibility of any earlier incursion—unless there was another way in.

---

[10] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 11.

[11] *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 120.

Bottlenecks in the well-shaft

There was another way in.

Farther down the descending corridor, more than 200 feet beyond the point where the plugged end of the ascending corridor had been found, lies the concealed entrance to another secret passageway, deep within the subterranean bedrock of the Giza plateau. If Ma'mun had discovered this passageway, he could have saved himself a great deal of trouble, since it provided a readymade route around the plugs blocking the ascending corridor. His attention, however, had been distracted by the challenge of tunnelling past those plugs, and he made no effort to investigate the lower reaches of the descending corridor (which he ended up using as a dump for the tons of stone his diggers removed from the core of the pyramid).[12]

The full extent of the descending corridor was, however, well-known and explored in classical times. The Graeco-Roman geographer Strabo left quite a clear description of the large subterranean chamber it debouched into (at a depth of almost 600 feet below the apex of the pyramid).[13] Graffiti from the period of the Roman occupation of Egypt was also found inside this underground chamber, confirming that it had once been regularly visited. Yet, because it had been so cunningly hidden in the beginning, the secret doorway leading off to one side about two-thirds of the way down the western wall of the descending corridor, remained sealed and undiscovered until the nineteenth century.[14]

What the doorway led to was a narrow well-shaft, about 160 feet in extent, which rose almost vertically through the bedrock and then through more than twenty complete courses of the Great Pyramid's limestone core blocks, until it joined up with the main internal corridor system at the base of the Grand Gallery. There is no evidence to indicate what the purpose of this strange architectural feature might have been (although several scholars have hazarded guesses).[15] Indeed the only thing that is clear is that it was engineered at the time of the construction of the pyramid and was not the result of an intrusion by tunnelling tomb-robbers.[16] The question remains open, however, as to whether tomb-robbers might have *discovered* the hidden entrance to the shaft, and made use of it to siphon off the treasures from the King's and Queen's Chambers.

Such a possibility cannot be ruled out. Nevertheless, a review of the historical record indicates little in its favour.

---

[12] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 58.

[13] *The Geography of Strabo,* (trans. H. L. Jones), Wm. Heinemann, London, 1982, volume VIII, pp. 91-3.

[14] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 58.

[15] In general, it is assumed to have been used as an escape route by workers sealed within the pyramid above the plugging blocks in the ascending passage.

[16] Because, over a distance of several hundred feet through solid masonry, it joins two narrow corridors. This could not have been achieved by accident.

For example, the upper end of the well-shaft was entered off the Grand Gallery by the Oxford astronomer John Greaves in 1638. He managed to descend to a depth of about sixty feet. In 1765 another Briton, Nathaniel Davison, penetrated to a depth of about 150 feet but found his way blocked by an impenetrable mass of sand and stones. Later, in the 1830s, Captain G.B. Caviglia, an Italian adventurer, reached the same depth and encountered the same obstacle. More enterprising than his predecessors, he hired Arab workers to start excavating the rubble in the hope that there might be something of interest beneath it. Several days of digging in claustrophobic conditions followed before the connection with the descending corridor was discovered.[17]

Is it likely that such a cramped, blocked-up shaft could have been a viable conduit for the treasures of Khufu, supposedly the greatest pharaoh of the magnificent Fourth Dynasty?

Even if it hadn't been choked with debris and sealed at the lower end, it could not have been used to bring out more than a tiny fraction of the treasures of a typical royal tomb. This is because the well-shaft is only three feet in diameter and incorporates several tricky vertical sections.

At the very least, therefore, when Ma'mun and his men battered their way into the King's Chamber around the year AD 820, one would have expected some of the bigger and heavier pieces from the original burial to be still in place—like the statues and shrines that bulked so large in Tutankhamen's much later and presumably inferior tomb.[18] But *nothing* was found inside Khufu's Pyramid, making this and the alleged looting of Khafre's monument the only tomb robberies in the history of Egypt which achieved a clean sweep, leaving not a single trace behind—not a torn cloth, not a shard of broken pottery, not an unwanted figurine, not an overlooked piece of jewellery—just the bare floors and walls and the gaping mouths of empty sarcophagi.

Not like other tombs

It was now after six in the morning and the rising sun had bathed the summits of Khufu's and Khafre's Pyramids with a fleeting blush of pastel-pink light. Menkaure's Pyramid, being some 200 feet lower than the other two, was still in shadow as Santha and I skirted its north-western corner and continued our walk into the rolling sand dunes of the surrounding desert.

I still had the tomb robbery theory on my mind. As far as I could see the only real 'evidence' in favour of it was the absence of grave goods and mummies that it had been invented to explain in the first place. All the other facts, particularly where the Great Pyramid was concerned, seemed to speak persuasively against any robbery having occurred. It was not just a matter of the narrowness and unsuitability of the well-shaft as an escape route for bulky treasures. The other remarkable feature of Khufu's Pyramid was the absence of inscriptions or decorations anywhere within its immense network of galleries, corridors, passageways and chambers, and the same was true of Khafre's and Menkaure's Pyramids. In none of these amazing monuments had a single word been written in praise of the pharaohs whose bodies they were supposed to house.

---

[17] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* pp. 56-8.

[18] See Nicholas Reeves, *The Complete Tutankhamun,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1990.

This was exceptional. No other proven burial place of any Egyptian monarch had ever been found undecorated. The fashion throughout Egyptian history had been for the tombs of the pharaohs to be *extensively* decorated, beautifully painted from top to bottom (as in the Valley of the Kings at Luxor, for example) and densely inscribed with the ritual spells and invocations required to assist the deceased on his journey towards eternal life (as in the Fifth Dynasty pyramids at Saqqara, just twenty miles to the south of Giza.)[19]

Why had Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure done things so differently? Had they not built their monuments to serve as tombs at all, but for another and more subtle purpose? Or was it possible, as certain Arab and esoteric traditions maintained, that the Giza pyramids had been erected long before the Fourth Dynasty by the architects of some earlier and more advanced civilization?

Neither hypothesis was popular with Egyptologists for reasons that were easy to understand. Moreover, while conceding that the Second and Third Pyramids were completely devoid of internal inscriptions, lacking even the *names* of Khafre and Menkaure, the scholars were able to cite certain hieroglyphic 'quarry marks' (graffiti daubed on stone blocks before they left the quarry) found inside the Great Pyramid, which did seem to bear the name of Khufu.

A certain smell ...

The discoverer of the quarry marks was Colonel Howard Vyse, during the destructive excavations he undertook at Giza in 1837. Extending an existing crawlway, he cut a tunnel into the series of narrow cavities, called 'relieving chambers', which lay directly above the King's Chamber. The quarry marks were found on the walls and ceilings of the top four of these cavities and said things like this:

THE CRAFTSMEN-GANG,
HOW POWERFUL IS THE WHITE CROWN OF KHNUM—

---

[19] See *Valley of the Kings;* for Saqqara (Fifth and Sixth Dynasties) see *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* pp. 163-7.

KHUFU
KHUFU
KHNUM-KHUFU
YEAR SEVENTEEN[20]

It was all very convenient. Right at the end of a costly and otherwise fruitless digging season, just when a major archaeological discovery was needed to legitimize the expenses he had run up, Vyse had stumbled upon the find of the decade—the first incontrovertible proof that Khufu had indeed been the builder of the hitherto anonymous Great Pyramid.

One would have thought that a discovery of this nature would have settled conclusively any lingering doubts over the ownership and purpose of that enigmatic monument. But the doubts remained, largely because, from the beginning, 'a certain smell' hung over Vyse's evidence:

1. It was odd that the marks were the only signs of the name Khufu ever found anywhere inside the Great Pyramid.[21]
2. It was odd that they had been found in such an obscure, out-of-the-way corner of that immense building.
3. It was odd that they had been found *at all* in a monument otherwise devoid of inscriptions of any kind.
4. And it was extremely odd that they had been found only in the top four of the five relieving chambers. Inevitably, suspicious minds began to wonder whether 'quarry marks' might also have appeared in the lowest of these five chambers had that chamber, too, been discovered by Vyse (rather than by Nathaniel Davison seventy years earlier).[22]
5. Last but not least it was odd that several of the hieroglyphs in the 'quarry marks' had been painted upside down, and that some were unrecognizable while others had been misspelt or used ungrammatically.[23]

Was Vyse a forger?

I know of one plausible case made to suggest he was exactly that,[24] and although final proof will probably always be lacking, it seemed to me incautious of academic Egyptology to have accepted the authenticity of the quarry marks without question. Besides, there was alternative hieroglyphic evidence, arguably of purer provenance, which appeared to indicate that Khufu could not have built the Great Pyramid. Strangely, the same Egyptologists who readily ascribed immense importance to Vyse's quarry marks were quick to downplay the significance of these other, contradictory, hieroglyphs, which appeared on a rectangular limestone stela which now stood in the Cairo Museum.[25]

---

[20] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 211-12; *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* p. 71.
[21] *Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 96.
[22] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 35-6.
[23] Zecharia Sitchin, *The Stairway To Heaven,* Avon Books, New York, 1983, pp. 253-82.
[24] Ibid.

The Inventory Stela, as it was called, had been discovered at Giza in the nineteenth century by the French archaeologist Auguste Mariette. It was something of a bombshell because its text clearly indicated that both the Great Sphinx and the Great Pyramid (as well as several other structures on the plateau) were *already in existence* long before Khufu came to the throne. The inscription also referred to Isis as the 'Mistress of the Pyramid', implying that the monument had been dedicated to the goddess of magic and not to Khufu at all. Finally, there was a strong suggestion that Khufu's pyramid might have been one of the three subsidiary structures alongside the Great Pyramid's eastern flank.[26]

All this looked like damaging evidence against the orthodox chronology of Ancient Egypt. It also challenged the consensus view that the Giza pyramids had been built as tombs and only as only. However, rather than investigating the anachronistic statements in the Inventory Stela, Egyptologists chose to devalue them. In the words of the influential American scholar James Henry Breasted, 'These references would be of the highest importance if the stela were contemporaneous with Khufu; but the orthographic evidences of its late date are entirely conclusive ...'[27]

Breasted meant that the nature of the hieroglyphic writing system used in he inscription was not consistent with that used in the Fourth Dynasty but belonged to a more recent epoch: All Egyptologists concurred with this analysis and the final judgement, still accepted today, was that the stela had been carved in the Twenty-First Dynasty, about 1500 years after Khufu's reign, and was therefore to be regarded as a work of historical fiction.[28]

Thus, citing orthographic evidence, an entire academic discipline found reason to ignore the boat-rocking implications of the Inventory Stela and at no time gave proper consideration to the possibility that it could have been based upon a genuine Fourth Dynasty inscription (just as the New English Bible, for example, is based on a much older original). Exactly the same scholars, however, had accepted the authenticity of a set of dubious 'quarry marks' without demur, turning a blind eye to their orthographic and other peculiarities.

Why the double standard? Could it have been because the information contained in the 'quarry marks' conformed strictly to orthodox opinion that the Great Pyramid had been built as a tomb for Khufu? whereas the information in the Inventory Stela contradicted that opinion?

---

[25] James Henry Breasted, *Ancient Records of Egypt: Historical Documents from the Earliest Times to the Persian Conquest,* reprinted by Histories and Mysteries of Man Ltd., London, 1988, pp. 83-5.

[26] Ibid., p. 85.

[27] Ibid., p. 84.

[28] Ibid., and *Travellers Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 139.

Overview

By seven in the morning Santha and I had walked far out into the desert to the south-west of the Giza pyramids and had made ourselves comfortable in the lee of a huge dune that offered an unobstructed panorama over the entire site.

The date, 16 March, was just a few days away from the Spring Equinox, one of the two occasions in the year when the sun rose precisely due east of wherever you stood in the world. Ticking out the days like the pointer of a giant metronome, it had bisected the horizon this morning at a point a hair’s breadth south of due east and had already climbed high enough to shrug off the Nile mists which clung like a shroud to much of the city of Cairo.

Khufu, Khafre, Menkaure ... Cheops, Chephren, Mycerinus. Whether you called them by their Egyptian or their Greek names, there was no doubt that the three famous pharaohs of the Fourth Dynasty had been commemorated by the most splendid, the most honourable, the most beautiful and the most enormous monuments ever seen anywhere in the world. Moreover, it was clear that these pharaohs must indeed have been closely associated with the monuments, not only because of the folklore passed on by Herodotus (which surely had some basis in fact) but because inscriptions and references to Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure had been found in moderate quantities, *outside* the three major pyramids, at several different parts of the Giza necropolis. Such finds had been made consistently in and around the six subsidiary pyramids, three of which lay to the east of the Great Pyramid and the other three to the south of the Menkaure Pyramid.

Since much of this external evidence was ambiguous and uncertain, I found it difficult to understand why the Egyptologists were happy to go on citing it as confirmation of the ‘tombs and tombs only’ theory.

The problem was that this same evidence was capable of supporting—as equally valid—a number of different and mutually contradictory interpretations. To give just one example, the ‘close association’ observed between the three great pyramids and the three Fourth Dynasty pharaohs could indeed have come about because these pharaohs had built the pyramids as their tombs. But it could also have come about if the gigantic monuments of the Giza plateau had been standing long before the dawn of the historical civilization known as Dynastic Egypt. In that case, it was only necessary to assume that in due course Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure had come along and built a number of the subsidiary structures around the three older pyramids—something that they would have had every reason to do because in this way they could have appropriated the high prestige of the original anonymous monuments (and would, almost certainly, be viewed by posterity as their builders).

There were other possibilities too. The point was, however, that the evidence for exactly who had built which great pyramid, when and for what purpose was far too thin on the ground to justify the dogmatism of the orthodox ‘tombs and tombs only’ theory. In all honesty, it was *not clear* who built the pyramids. It was *not* clear in what epoch they had been built. And it was *not at all clear* what their function had been.

For all these reasons they were surrounded by a wonderful, impenetrable air of mystery and as I gazed down at them out of the desert they seemed to march towards me across the dunes ...

Chapter 36

Anomalies

Viewed from our vantage point in the desert south west of the Giza necropolis, the site plan of the three great pyramids seemed majestic but bizarre.

Menkaure's pyramid was closest to us, with Khafre's and Khufu's monuments behind it to the north-east. These two were situated along a near perfect diagonal—a straight line connecting the south-western and north-eastern corners of the pyramid of Khafre would, if extended to the north-east, also pass through the south-western and north-eastern corners of the Great Pyramid. This, presumably, was not an accident. From where we sat, however, it was easy to see that if the same imaginary straight line was extended to the south-west it would completely miss the Third Pyramid, the entire body of which was offset to the east of the principal diagonal.

Egyptologists refused to recognize any anomaly in this. Why should they? As far as they were concerned there was *no* site plan at Giza. The pyramids were tombs and tombs only, built for three different pharaohs over a period of about seventy-five years.[1] It made sense to assume that each ruler would have sought to express his own personality and idiosyncrasies through his monument, and this was probably why Menkaure had 'stepped out of line'.

The Egyptologists were wrong. Though I was unaware of it that March morning in 1993, a breakthrough had been made proving beyond doubt that the necropolis did have an overall site plan, which dictated the exact positioning of the three pyramids not only in relation to one another but in relation to the River Nile a few kilometres east of the Giza plateau. With eerie fidelity, this immense and ambitious layout modelled a *celestial* phenomenon[2]—which was perhaps why Egyptologists (who pride themselves on looking exclusively at the ground beneath their feet) had failed to spot it. On a truly giant scale, as we see in later chapters, it also reflected the same obsessive concern with orientations and dimensions demonstrated in each of the monuments.

A singular oppression ...

Giza, Egypt, 16 March 1993, 8 a.m.

At a little over 200 feet tall (and with a side length at the base of 356 feet) the Third Pyramid was less than half the height and well under half the mass of the Great Pyramid. Nevertheless, it possessed a stunning and imposing majesty of its own. As we stepped out of the desert sunlight and into its huge geometrical shadow, I remembered what the Iraqi writer Abdul Latif had said about it when he had visited it in the twelfth century: 'It appears small compared with the other two; but viewed at a short distance and to the exclusion of these, it excites in the imagination a singular oppression and cannot be contemplated without painfully affecting the sight ...'[3]

---

[1] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

[2] *The Orion Mystery.*

The lower sixteen courses of the monument were still cased, as they had been since the beginning, with facing blocks quarried out of red granite ('so extremely hard', in Abdul Latif s words, 'that iron takes a long time, with difficulty, to make an impression on it').[4] Some of the blocks were very large; they were also closely and cunningly fitted together in a complex interlocking jigsaw-puzzle pattern strongly reminiscent of the cyclopean masonry at Cuzco, Machu Picchu and other locations in far-off Peru.

As was normal, the entrance to the Third Pyramid was situated in its northern face well above the ground. From here, at an angle of 26° 2', a descending corridor lanced arrow-straight down into the darkness.[5] Oriented exactly north to south, this corridor was rectangular in section and so cramped that we had to bend almost double to fit into it. Where it passed through the masonry of the monument its ceiling and walls consisted of well-fitted granite blocks. More surprisingly, these continued for some distance below ground level.

At about seventy feet from the entrance, the corridor levelled off and opened out into a passageway where we could stand up. This led into a small ante-chamber with carved panelling and grooves cut into its walls, apparently to take portcullis slabs. Reaching the end of the chamber, we had to crouch again to enter another corridor. Bent double, we proceeded south for about forty feet before reaching the first of the three main burial chambers—if burial chambers they were.

These sombre, soundless rooms were all hewn out of solid bedrock. The one that we stood in was rectangular in plan and oriented east to west. Measuring about 30 feet long x 15 wide x 15 high, it had a flat ceiling and a complex internal structure with a large, irregular hole in its western wall leading into a dark, cave-like space beyond. There was also an opening near the centre of the floor which gave access to a ramp, sloping westwards, leading down to even deeper levels. We descended the ramp. It terminated in a short, horizontal passage to the right of which, entered through a narrow doorway, lay a small empty chamber, Six cells, like the sleeping quarters of medieval monks, had been hewn out of its walls: four on the eastern side and two to the north. These were presumed by Egyptologists to have functioned as 'magazines ... for storing objects which the dead king wished to have close to his body.'[6]

---

[3] Abdul Latif, *The Eastern Key,* cited in *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 126.

[4] Ibid.

[5] *Blue Guide:* Egypt, A & C Black, London, 1988, p. 433.

Coming out of this chamber, we turned right again, back into the horizontal passage. At its end lay another empty chamber,[7] the design of which is unique among the pyramids of Egypt. Some twelve feet long by eight wide, and oriented north to south, its walls and extensively broken and damaged floor were fashioned out of a peculiarly dense, chocolate-coloured granite which seemed to absorb light and sound waves. Its ceiling consisted of eighteen huge slabs of the same material, nine on each side, laid in facing gables. Because they had had been hollowed from below to form a markedly concave surface, the effect of these great monoliths was of a perfect barrel vault, much as one might expect to find in the crypt of a Romanesque cathedral.

Retracing our steps, we left the lower chambers and walked back up the ramp to the large, flat-roofed, rock-hewn room above. Passing through the ragged aperture in its western wall, we found ourselves looking directly at the upper sides of the eighteen slabs which formed the ceiling of the chamber below. From this perspective their true form as a pointed gable was immediately apparent. What was less clear was how they had been brought in here in the first place, let alone laid so perfectly in position. Each one must have weighed many tons, heavy enough to have made them extremely difficult to handle under any circumstances. And these were no ordinary circumstances. As though they had set out deliberately to make things more complicated for themselves (or perhaps because they found such tasks simple?) the pyramid builders had disdained to provide an adequate working area between the slabs and the bedrock above them. By crawling into the cavity, I was able to establish that the clearance varied from approximately two feet at the southern end to just a few inches at the northern end. In such a restricted space there was no possibility that the monoliths could have been lowered into position. Logically, therefore, they must have been raised from the chamber floor, but how had that been done? The chamber was so small that only a few men could have worked inside it at any one time—too few to have had the muscle-power to lift the slabs by brute force. Pulleys were not supposed to have existed in the Pyramid Age[8] (even if they had, there would have been insufficient room to set up block-and-tackle). Had some unknown system of levers been used? Or might there be more substance than scholars realized to the Ancient Egyptian legends that spoke of huge stones being effortlessly levitated by priests or magicians through the utterance of ‘words of power’?[9]

---

[6] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 127.

[7] It was in this chamber that Vyse found the intrusive burial (of bones and a wooden coffin lid) referred to in Chapter Thirty-Five. The basalt coffin where he also found (later lost at sea) is believed to have been part of the same intrusive burial and to have not been older than the Twenty-sixth Dynasty. See, for example, *Blue Guide, Egypt,* p. 433.

[8] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 220.

Not for the first time when confronted by the mysteries of the pyramids I knew that I was looking at an *impossible* engineering feat which had nevertheless been carried out to astonishingly high and precise standards. Moreover, if Egyptologists were to be believed, the construction work had supposedly been undertaken at the dawn of human civilization by a people who had not accumulated any experience of massive construction projects.

This was, of course, a startling cultural paradox, and one for to which no adequate explanation had ever been offered by an orthodox academic.

The moving finger writes and having writ it moves on

Leaving the underground chambers, which seemed to vibrate at the core of the Third Pyramid like the convoluted, multi-valved heart of some slumbering Leviathan, we made our way along the narrow entrance corridor and into the open air.

Our objective now was the Second Pyramid. We walked along its western flank (just under 708 feet in length), turned right and eventually came to the point on its north side, about 40 feet east of the main north-south axis, where the principal entrances were located. One of these was carved directly into the bedrock at ground level about 30 feet in front of the monument; the other was cut into the northern face at a height of just under 50 feet. From the latter a corridor sloped downwards at an angle of 25° 55’.[10] From the former, by which we now entered the pyramid, another descending corridor led deeply underground then levelled off for a short distance, giving access to a subterranean chamber, then ascended steeply and finally levelled off again into a long horizontal passageway, heading due south (into which also fed the upper corridor that sloped down from the entrance in the north face).

High enough to stand up in, and lined at first with granite and then with smoothly polished limestone, the horizontal passageway was almost at ground level, that is, it lay directly beneath the pyramid’s lowest course of masonry. It was also extremely long, running dead straight for a further 200 feet until it debouched in the single ‘burial chamber’ at the heart of the monument.

As we have already noted, no mummy had ever been found in this latter chamber, nor any inscriptions, with the result that the so-called Pyramid of Khafre was wholly anonymous. Latter-day adventurers had, however, carved *their* names on to its walls—notably the former circus strongman Giovanni Battista Belzoni (1778-1823) who had forced his way into the monument in 1818. His huge and flamboyant graffito, daubed in black paint high on the south side of the chamber, was a reminder of basic human nature: the desire that all of us feel to be recognized and remembered. It was clear that Khafre himself had been far from immune from this ambition, since repeated references to him (as well as a number of flattering statues) appeared in the surrounding funerary complex.[11] If he had indeed built the pyramid as his tomb, it seemed inconceivable that such a man would have failed to stamp his name and identity *somewhere* within its interior. I found myself wondering yet again why Egyptologists were so unwilling to consider the possibility that the funerary complex might have been Khafre's work and the pyramid someone else's?

---

[9] See, for example, *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, p. 180.

[10] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 117.

But *who* else's?

---

[11] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt*, p. 123.

Above **Chamber and passageway system of the Pyramid of Menkaure.**
Below **Chamber and passageway system of the Pyramid of Khafre.**

In many ways this—rather than the absence of identifying marks—was the central problem. Prior to the reigns of Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure there was not a single pharaoh whose name could be put forward as a candidate. Khufu’s father Sneferu, the first king of the Fourth Dynasty, was believed to have built the so-called ‘Bent’ and ‘Red’ Pyramids at Dahshur, about thirty miles south of Giza—an attribution that was itself mysterious (if pyramids were indeed tombs) since it seemed strange that one pharaoh required two pyramids to be buried in. Sneferu was also credited by some Egyptologists with the construction of the ‘Collapsed’ Pyramid at Meidum (although a number of authorities insisted that this was the tomb of Huni, the last king of the Third Dynasty).[12] The only other builders in the Archaic Period had been Zoser, the second pharaoh of the Third Dynasty, to whom was attributed the construction of the 'Step Pyramid' at Saqqara,[13] and Zoser's successor, Sekhemkhet, whose pyramid also stood at Saqqara. Therefore, despite the lack of inscriptions, it was now assumed as obvious that the three pyramids at Giza *must* have been built by Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure and *must* have been intended to serve as their tombs.

---

[12] *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* p. 49.

We need not reiterate here the many shortcomings of the 'tombs and tombs only' theory. However, these shortcomings were not limited to the Giza pyramids but applied to *all the other* Third and Fourth Dynasty Pyramids listed above. Not a single one of these monuments had ever been found to contain the body of a pharaoh, or any signs whatsoever of a royal burial.[14] Some of them were not even equipped with sarcophagi, for example the Collapsed Pyramid at Meidum. The Pyramid of Sekhemkhet at Saqqara (first entered in 1954 by the Egyptian Antiquities Organization) did contain a sarcophagus—one, which had certainly remained sealed and undisturbed since its installation in the 'tomb'.[15] Grave robbers had never succeeded in finding their way to it, but when it was opened, it was empty.[16]

So what was going on? How come more than twenty-five million tons of stone had been piled up to form pyramids at Giza, Dahshur, Meidum and Saqqara if the only point of the exercise had been to install empty sarcophagi in empty chambers? Even admitting the hypothetical excesses of one or two megalomaniacs, it seemed unlikely that a whole succession of pharaohs would have sanctioned such wastefulness.

Pandora's Box

Buried beneath the five million tons of the Second Pyramid at Giza, Santha and I now stepped into the monument's spacious inner chamber, which might have been a tomb but might equally have served some other as yet unidentified purpose. Measuring 46.5 feet in length from east to west, and 16.5 in breadth from north to south, this naked and sterile apartment was topped off with an immensely strong gabled ceiling reaching a height of 22.5 feet at its apex. The gable slabs, each a massive 20-ton limestone monolith, had been laid in position at an angle of 53° 7' 28" (which exactly matched the angle of slope of the pyramid's sides).[17] Here there were no relieving chambers (as there were above the King's Chamber in the Great Pyramid). Instead, for more than 4000 years—perhaps far more—the gabled ceiling had taken the immense weight of the second largest stone building in the world.

---

[13] Ibid., pp. 36-9.

[14] Ibid., p. 74.

[15] Ibid., p. 42.

[16] Ibid.

[17] *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 123; *The Pyramids Of Egypt,* p. 118.

I looked slowly around the room, which reflected a yellowish-white radiance back at me. Quarried directly out of the living bedrock, its walls were not at all smoothly finished, as one might have expected, but were noticeably rough and irregular. The floor too was peculiar: of split-level design with a step about a foot deep separating its eastern and western halves. The supposed sarcophagus of Khafre lay near the western wall, embedded in the floor. Measuring just over six feet in length, quite shallow, and somewhat narrow to have contained the wrapped and embalmed mummy of a noble pharaoh, its smooth red granite sides reached to about knee height.

As I gazed into its dark interior, it seemed to gape like the doorway to another dimension.

Chapter 37

Made by Some God

I had climbed the Great Pyramid the night before, but as I approached it in the full glare of midday, I experienced no sense of triumph. On the contrary, standing at its base on the north side, I felt fly-sized and puny—an impermanent creature of flesh and blood confronted with the awe-inspiring splendour of eternity. I had the impression that it might have been here for ever, 'made by some god and set down bodily in the surrounding sand', as the Greek historian Diodorus Siculus commented in the first century BC.[1] But which god had made it, if not the God-King Khufu whose name generations of Egyptians had associated with it?

For the second time in twelve hours, I began to climb the monument. Up close in this light, indifferent to human chronologies and subject only to the slow erosive forces of geological time, it reared above me like a frowning, terrifying crag. Fortunately, I only had six courses to clamber over, assisted in places by modern steps, before reaching Ma'mun's Hole, which now served as the pyramid's principal entrance.

The *original* entrance, still well-hidden in the ninth century when Ma'mun began tunnelling, was some ten courses higher, 55 feet above ground level and 24 feet east of the main north-south axis. Protected by giant limestone gables, it contained the mouth of the descending corridor, which led downwards at an angle of 26° 31' 23". Strangely, although itself measuring only some 3 feet 5 inches x 3 feet 11 inches, this corridor was sandwiched between roofing blocks 8 feet 6 inches thick and 12 feet wide and a flooring slab (known as the 'Basement Sheet') 2 feet 6 inches thick and 33 feet wide.[2]

Hidden structural features like these abounded in the Great Pyramid, manifesting both incredible complexity and apparent pointlessness. Nobody knew how blocks of this size had been successfully installed, neither did anybody know how they had been set so carefully in alignment with other blocks, or at such precise angles (because, as the reader may have realized, the 26° slope of the descending corridor was part of a deliberate and regular pattern). Nobody knew either *why* these things had been done.

The Beacon

Entering the pyramid through Ma'mun's Hole did not feel right. It was like entering a cave or grotto cut into the side of a mountain; it lacked the sense of deliberate and geometrical purposefulness that would have been conveyed by the original descending corridor. Worse still, the dark and inauspicious horizontal tunnel leading inwards looked like an ugly, deformed thing and still bore the marks of violence where the Arab workmen had alternately heated and chilled the stones with fierce fires and cold vinegar before attacking them with hammers and chisels, battering rams and borers.

---

[1] *Diodorus Siculus,* Harvard University Press, 1989, p. 217.

[2] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 88; *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* pp. 30-1.

On the one hand, such vandalism seemed gross and irresponsible. On the other, a startling possibility had to be considered: was there not a sense in which the pyramid seemed to have been designed to *invite* human beings of intelligence and curiosity to penetrate its mysteries? After all, if you were a pharaoh who wanted to ensure that his deceased body remained inviolate for eternity, would it make better sense (a) to advertise to your own and all subsequent generations the whereabouts of your burial place, or (b) to choose some secret and unknown location, of which you would never speak and where you might never be found?

The answer was obvious: you would go for secrecy and seclusion, as the vast majority of the pharaohs of Ancient Egypt had done.[3]

Why, then, if it was indeed a royal tomb, was the Great Pyramid so conspicuous? Why did it occupy a ground area of more than thirteen acres? Why was it almost 500 feet high? Why, in other words, if its purpose was to conceal and protect the body of Khufu, had it been designed so that it could not fail to attract the attention—in all epochs and under all imaginable circumstances—of treasure-crazed adventurers and of prying and imaginative intellectuals?

It was simply not credible that the brilliant architects, stonemasons, surveyors and engineers who had created the Great Pyramid could have been ignorant of basic human psychology. The vast ambition and the transcendent beauty, power and artistry of their handiwork spoke of refined skills, deep insight, and a complete understanding of the symbols and primordial patterns by which the minds of men could be manipulated. Logic therefore suggested that the pyramid builders must also have understood exactly what kind of beacon they were piling up (with such incredible precision) on this windswept plateau, on the west bank of the Nile, in those high and far away times.

They must, in short, have wanted this remarkable structure to exert a perennial fascination: to be violated by intruders, to be measured with increasing degrees of exactitude, and to haunt the collective imagination of mankind like a persistent ghost summoning intimations of a profound and long-forgotten secret.

---

[3] In the isolated Valley of the Kings in Luxor in upper Egypt, for example.

Mind games of the pyramid builders

The point where Ma'mun's Hole intersected with the 26° descending corridor was closed off by a modern steel door. Beyond it, to the north, that corridor sloped up until it reached the gables of the monument's original entrance. To the south, as we have seen, the corridor sloped down for almost another 350 feet into the bedrock, before opening out into a huge subterranean chamber 600 feet beneath the apex of the pyramid. The accuracy of this corridor was astonishing. From top to bottom the average deviation from straight amounted to less than 1/4-inch in the sides and 3/10-inch on the roof.[4]

Passing the steel door, I continued through Ma'mun's tunnel, breathing in its ancient air and adjusting my eyes to the gloom of the low-wattage bulbs that lit it. Then ducking my head I began to climb through the steep and narrow section hacked upwards by the Arab diggers in their feverish thrust to by-pass the series of granite plugs blocking the lower part of the ascending corridor. At the top of the tunnel two of the original plugs could be seen, still *in situ* but partially exposed by quarrying. Egyptologists assumed that they had been slid into their present position from above[5]—all the way down the lag-foot length of the ascending corridor from the foot of the Grand Gallery.[6] Builders and engineers, however, whose trend of thought was perhaps more practical, had pointed out that it was physically impossible for the plugs to have been installed in this way. Because of the leaf-thin clearance that separated them from the walls, floor and ceiling of the corridor, friction would have foiled any 'sliding' operation in a matter of inches, let alone 100 feet.[7]

The puzzling implication was therefore that the ascending corridor must have been plugged while the pyramid was still being built. But why would anyone have wished to block the main entrance to the monument at such an early stage in its construction (even while continuing to enlarge and elaborate its inner chambers)? Moreover, if the objective had been to deny intruders admission, wouldn't it have been much easier and more efficient to have plugged the *descending* corridor from its entrance in the north face to a point below its junction with the ascending corridor? That would have been the most logical way to seal the pyramid and would have made plugs unnecessary in the ascending corridor.

There was only one certainty: since the beginning of history, the single known effect of the granite plugs had not been to prevent an intruder from gaining access; instead, like Bluebeard's locked door, the barrier had magnetized Ma'mun's attention and inflamed his curiosity so that he had felt compelled to tunnel his way past them, convinced that something of inestimable value must lie beyond them.

---

[4] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 19.

[5] Discussed in *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 230ff.

[6] Dimension from *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 114.

[7] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 230ff.

Might this not have been what the pyramid builders had *intended* the first intruder who reached this far to feel? It would be premature to rule out such a strange and unsettling possibility. At any rate, thanks to Ma'mun (and to the predictable constants of human nature) I was now able to insert myself into the unblocked upper section of the original ascending corridor. A smoothly cut aperture measuring 3 feet 5 inches wide x 3 feet 11 inches high (exactly the same dimensions as the descending corridor), it sloped up into the darkness at an angle of 26° 2' 30"[8] (as against 26° 31' 23" in the descending corridor).[9]

What was this meticulous interest in the angle of 26°, and was it a coincidence that it amounted to half of the angle of inclination of the pyramid's sides—52°.[10]

The reader may recall the significance of this angle. It was a key ingredient of the sophisticated and advanced formula by which the design of the Great Pyramid had been made to correspond precisely to the dynamics of spherical geometry. Thus the original height of the monument (481.3949 feet), and the perimeter of its base (3023.16 feet), stood in the same ratio to each other as did the radius of a sphere to its circumference. This ratio was *2pi* (2 x 3.14) and to express it the builders had been obliged to specify the tricky and idiosyncratic angle of 52° for the pyramid's sides (since any greater or lesser slope would have meant a different height-to-perimeter ratio).

In Chapter Twenty-three we saw that the so-called Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan in Mexico also expressed a knowledge and deliberate use of the transcendental number *pi;* in its case the height (233.5 feet) stood in a relationship of *4pi* to the perimeter of its base (2932.76 feet).[11]

The crux, therefore, was that the most remarkable monument of Ancient Egypt and the most remarkable monument of Ancient Mexico both incorporated *pi* relationships long before and far away from the official 'discovery' of this transcendental number by the Greeks.[12] Moreover, the evidence invited the conclusion that something was being signalled by the use of *pi*—almost certainly the *same* thing in both cases.

Not for the first time, and not for the last, I was overwhelmed by a sense of contact with an ancient intelligence, not necessarily Egyptian or Mexican, which had found a way to reach out across the ages and draw people towards it like a beacon. Some might look for treasure; others, captivated by the deceptively simple manner in which the builders had used *pi* to demonstrate their mastery of the secrets of transcendental numbers, might be inspired to search for further mathematical epiphanies.

---

[8] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 91.

[9] Ibid., p. 88.

[10] Or 51° 50' 35" to be exact, Ibid., page 87; *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 112.

[11] See Chapter Twenty-three.

[12] Ibid.

Bent almost double, my back brushing against the polished limestone ceiling, it was with such thoughts in my mind that I began to scramble up the 26° slope of the ascending corridor, which seemed to penetrate the vast bulk of the six million ton building like a trigonometrical device. After I had banged my head on its ceiling a couple of times, however, I began to wonder why the ingenious people who'd designed it hadn't made it two or three feet higher. If they could erect a monument like this in the first place (which they obviously could) and equip it with corridors, surely it would not have been beyond their capabilities to make those corridors roomy enough to stand up in? Once again I was tempted to conclude that it was the result of a deliberate decision by the pyramid builders: they had made the ascending corridor this way because they had wanted it this way (rather than because such a design had been forced upon them.)

Was there motive in the apparent madness of these archaic mind games?

Unknown dark distance

At the top of the ascending corridor I emerged into yet another inexplicable feature of the pyramid, 'the most celebrated architectural work to have survived from the Old Kingdom'[13]—the Grand Gallery. Soaring upwards at the continuing majestic angle of 26°, and almost entirely vanishing into the airy gloom above, its spacious corbelled vault made a stunning impression.

It was not my intention to climb the Grand Gallery yet. Branching off due south at its base was a long horizontal passageway, 3 feet 9 inches high and 127 feet in length, that led to the Queen's Chamber.[14] I wanted to revisit this room, which I had admired for its stark beauty since becoming acquainted with the Great Pyramid several years previously. Today, however, to my considerable irritation, the passageway was barred within a few feet of its entrance.

---

[13] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 93.

[14] Dimensions from *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 121, and *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 93.

King's Chamber
Grand Gallery
Queen's Chamber

The Grand Gallery and the King's and Queen's Chambers with their northern and southern shafts.

The reason, though I was unaware of it at the time, was that a German robotics engineer named Rudolf Gantenbrink was at work within, slowly and painstakingly manoeuvring a $250,000 robot up the narrow southern shaft of the Queen's Chamber. Hired by the Egyptian Antiquities Organization to improve the ventilation of the Great Pyramid, he had already used his high-tech equipment to clear debris from the King's Chamber's narrow 'southern shaft' (believed by Egyptologists to have been designed as a ventilation shaft in the first place) and had installed an electric fan at its mouth. At the beginning of March 1993 he transferred his attentions to the Queen's Chamber, deploying *Upuaut,* a miniaturized remote-controlled robot camera to explore *its* southern shaft. On 22 March, some 200 feet along the steeply sloping shaft (which rose at an angle of 39.5° and was only about 8 inches high x 9 inches wide),[15] the floor and walls suddenly became very smooth as *Upuaut* crawled into a section made of fine Tura limestone, the type normally used for lining sacred areas such as chapels or tombs. That, in itself, was intriguing enough, but at the end of this corridor, apparently leading to a sealed chamber deep within the pyramid's masonry, was a solid limestone door complete with metal fittings ...

It had long been known that neither this southern shaft nor its counterpart in the Chamber's northern wall had any exit on the outside of the Great Pyramid. In addition, and equally inexplicably, neither had originally been fully cut through. For some reason the builders had left the last five inches of stone intact in the last block over the mouth of each of the shafts, thus rendering them invisible and inaccessible to any casual intruder.

---

[15] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 24.

Why? To make sure they would never be found? Or to make sure that they *would* be found, some day, under the right circumstances?

After all, there had from the beginning been two conspicuous shafts in the King's Chamber, penetrating the north and south walls. It should not have been beyond the mental powers of the pyramid builders to predict that sooner or later some inquiring person would be tempted to look for shafts in the Queen's Chamber as well. In the event nobody did look for more than a thousand years after Caliph Ma'mun had opened the monument to the world in AD 820. Then in 1872 an English engineer named Waynman Dixon, a Freemason who 'had been led to suspect the existence of the shafts by their presence in the King's Chamber above',[16] went tapping around the Queen's Chamber's walls and located them. He opened the southern shaft first, setting his 'carpenter and man-of-all-work, Bill Grundy, to jump a hole with a hammer and steel chisel at that place. So to work the faithful fellow went, and with a will which soon began to make a way into the soft stone [limestone] at this point, when lo! after a comparatively very few strokes, flop went the chisel right through into something or other.'[17]

The 'something or other' Bill Grundy's chisel had reached turned out to be 'a rectangular, horizontal, tubular channel, about 9 inches by 8 inches in transverse breadth and height, going back 7 feet into the wall, and then rising at an angle into an unknown, dark distance ...'[18]

It was up that angle, and into that 'unknown dark distance', 121 years later, that Rudolf Gantenbrink sent his robot—the technology of our species having finally caught up with our powerful instincts to pry. Those instincts were clearly no weaker in 1872 than in 1993; among the many interesting things the remote-controlled camera succeeded in filming in the Queen's Chamber shafts was the far end of a long, sectioned metal rod of nineteenth century design which Waynman Dixon and the faithful Bill Grundy had secretly stuffed up the intriguing channel.[19] Predictably, they had assumed that if the pyramid builders had gone to the trouble of constructing and then concealing the shafts, then they must have hidden something worth looking for inside them.

The notion that there might have been an *intention* from the outset to stimulate such investigations would seem quite implausible if the final upshot of the discovery and exploration of the shafts had been a dead-end. Instead, as we have seen, a door was found—a sliding, portcullis door with curious metal fittings and an enticing gap at its base beneath which the laser-spot projected by Gantenbrink's robot was seen to disappear entirely ...

---

[16] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 92.

[17] *The Great Pyramid: Its Secrets and Mysteries Revealed,* p. 428.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Presentation at the British Museum, 22 November 1993, by Rudolf Gantenbrink, of footage shot in the shafts by the robot camera *Upuaut.*

Once again there seemed to be a clear invitation to proceed further, the latest in a long line of invitations which had encouraged Caliph Ma'mun and his diggers to break into the central passageways and chambers of the monument, which had waited for Waynman Dixon to test the hypothesis that the walls of the Queen's Chamber might contain concealed shafts, and which had then waited again until arousing the curiosity of Rudolf Gantenbrink, whose high-tech robot revealed the existence of the hidden door and brought within reach whatever secrets—or disappointments, or further invitations—might lie behind it.

The Queen's Chamber

We shall hear more of Rudolf Gantenbrink and *Upuaut* in later chapters. 16 March 1993, however, knowing nothing of this, I was frustrated to find the Queen's Chamber closed, and glared resentfully through the metal grille that barred its entrance corridor.

I remembered that the height of that corridor, 3 feet 9 inches, was not constant. Approximately 110 feet due south from where I stood, and only about 15 feet from the entrance to the Chamber, a sudden downward step in the floor increased the standing-room to 5 feet 8 inches.[20] Nobody had come up with a convincing explanation for this peculiar feature.

The Queen's Chamber itself—apparently empty since the day it was built—measured 17 feet 2 inches from north to south and 18 feet 10 inches from east to west. It was equipped with an elegant gabled ceiling, 20 feet 5 inches in height, which lay exactly along the east-west axis of the pyramid.[21] Its floor, however, was the opposite of elegant and looked unfinished. There was a constant salty emanation through its pale, rough-hewn limestone walls, giving rise to much fruitless speculation.

In the north and south walls, still bearing the incised legend OPENED 1872, were the rectangular apertures discovered by Waynman Dixon which led into the dark distance of the mysterious shafts. The western wall was quite bare. Offset a little over two feet to the south of its centre line, the eastern wall was dominated by a niche in the form of a corbel vault 15 feet 4 inches high and 5 feet 2 inches wide at the base. Originally 3 feet 5 inches deep, a further cavity had been cut in the back of this niche in medieval times by Arab treasure-seekers looking for hidden chambers.[22] They had found nothing.

Egyptologists had also been unable to come to any persuasive conclusions about the original function of the niche, or, for that matter, of the Queen's Chamber as a whole.

---

[20] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 92-3.

[21] Ibid., p. 92; *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 23.

[22] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 92.

All was confusion. All was paradox. All was mystery.

Instrument

The Grand Gallery had its mysteries too. Indeed it was among the most mysterious of all the internal features of the Great Pyramid. Measuring 6 feet 9 inches wide at the floor, its walls rose vertically to a height of 7 feet 6 inches; above that level seven further courses of masonry (each one projecting inwards some 3 inches beyond the course immediately below it) carried the vault to its full height of 28 feet and its culminating width of 3 feet 5 inches.[23]

Remember that structurally the Gallery was required to support, *for ever,* the multi-million ton weight of the upper three-quarters of the largest and heaviest stone monument ever built on planet earth. Was it not quite remarkable that a group of supposed ‘technological primitives’ had not only envisaged and designed such a feature but had completed it successfully, more than 4500 years before our time?

Even if they had made the Gallery only 20 feet long, and had sought to erect it on a level plane, the task would have been difficult enough—indeed extraordinarily difficult. But they had opted to erect this astonishing corbel vault at a slope of 26°, and to extend its length to a staggering 153 feet.[24] Moreover, they had made it with perfectly dressed limestone megaliths throughout—huge, smoothly polished blocks carved into sloping parallelograms and laid together so closely and with such rigorous precision that the joints were almost invisible to the naked eye.

The pyramid builders had also included some interesting symmetries in their work. For example, the culminating width of the Gallery at its apex was 3 feet 5 inches while its width at the floor was 6 feet 9 inches. At the exact centre of the floor, running the entire length of the Gallery—and sandwiched between flat-topped masonry ramps each 1 foot 8 inches wide—there was a sunken channel 2 feet deep and 3 feet 5 inches wide. What could have been the purpose of this slot? And why had it been necessary for it to mirror so precisely the width and form of the ceiling, which also looked like a ‘slot’ sandwiched between the two upper courses of masonry?

I knew that I was not the first person to have stood at the foot of the Grand Gallery and to have been overtaken by the disorienting sense of being ‘in the inside of some enormous instrument of some sort.’[25] Who was to say that such intuitions were completely wrong? Or, for that matter, that they were right? No record as to function remained, other than in mystical and symbolic references in certain ancient Egyptian liturgical texts. These appeared to indicate that the pyramids had been seen as devices designed to turn dead men into immortal beings: to ‘throw open the doors of the firmament and make a road’, so that the deceased pharaoh might ‘ascend into the company of the gods’.[26]

---

[23] Ibid., p. 93; *Traveller’s Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 115.

[24] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 93.

[25] *Traveller’s Key to Ancient Egypt*, p. 115.

I had no difficulty accepting that such a belief system might have been at work here, and obviously it could have provided a motive for the whole enterprise. Nevertheless, I was still puzzled why more than six million tons of *physical* apparatus, intricately interlaced with channels and tubes, corridors and chambers, had been deemed necessary to achieve a mystical, spiritual and symbolic objective.

Being inside the Grand Gallery did feel like being inside an enormous instrument. It had an undeniable aesthetic impact upon me (admittedly a heavy and domineering one), but it was also completely devoid of decorative features and of anything (figures of deities, reliefs of liturgical texts, and so on) which might be suggestive of worship or religion. The primary impression it conveyed was one of strict functionalism and purposefulness—as though it had been built to do a job. At the same time I was aware of its focused solemnity of style and gravity of manner, which seemed to demand nothing less than serious and complete attention.

By now I had climbed steadily through about half the length of the Gallery. Ahead of me, and behind, shadows and light played tricks amid the looming stone walls. Pausing, I turned my head, looking upwards through the gloom towards the vaulted ceiling which supported the crushing weight of the Great Pyramid of Egypt.

It suddenly hit me how dauntingly and disturbingly *old* it was, and how completely my life at this moment depended on the skills of the ancient builders. The hefty blocks that spanned the distant ceiling were examples of those skills—every one of them laid at a slightly steeper gradient than that of the Gallery. As the great archaeologist and surveyor Flinders Petrie had observed, this had been done

> in order that the lower edge of each stone should hitch like a pawl into a ratchet cut into the top of the walls; hence no stone can press on the one below it, so as to cause a cumulative pressure all down the roof; and each stone is separately upheld by the side walls which it lies across.[27]

And this was the work of a people whose civilization had only recently emerged from neolithic hunter-gathering?

I began to walk up the Gallery again, using the 2-foot-deep central flooring slot. A modern wooden covering fitted with helpful slats and side railings made the ascent relatively easy. In antiquity, however, the floor had been smoothly polished limestone, which, at a gradient of 26°, must have been almost impossible to climb.

How had it been done? Had it been done at all?

---

[26] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 281, Utt. 667A.

[27] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 25.

Looming ahead at the end of the Grand Gallery was the dark opening to the King’s Chamber beckoning each and every inquiring pilgrim into the heart of the enigma.

Chapter 38

Interactive Three-Dimensional Game

Reaching the top of the Grand Gallery, I clambered over a chunky granite step about three feet high. I remembered that it lay, like the roof of the Queen's Chamber, exactly along the east-west axis of the Great Pyramid, And therefore marked the point of transition between the northern and southern halves of the monument.[1] Somewhat like an altar in appearance, the step also provided a solid horizontal platform immediately in front of the low square tunnel that served as the entrance to the King's Chamber.

Pausing for a moment, I looked back down the Gallery, taking in once again its lack of decoration, its lack of religious iconography, and its absolute lack of any of the recognizable symbolism normally associated with the archaic belief system of the Ancient Egyptians. All that registered upon the eye, along the entire 153-foot length of this magnificent geometrical cavity, was its disinterested regularity and its stark machine-like simplicity.

Looking up, I could just make out the opening of a dark aperture, chiselled into the top of the eastern wall above my head. Nobody knew when or by whom this foreboding hole had been cut, or how deep it had originally penetrated. It led to the first of the five relieving chambers above the King's Chamber and had been extended in 1837 when Howard Vyse had used it to break through to the remaining four. Looking down again, I could just make out the point at the bottom of the Gallery's western wall where the near-vertical well-shaft began its precipitous 160 foot descent through the core of the pyramid to join the descending corridor far below ground-level.

Why would such a complicated apparatus of pipes and passageways have been required? At first sight it didn't make sense. But then nothing about the Great Pyramid did make much sense, unless you were prepared to devote a great deal of attention to it. In unpredictable ways, when you did that, it would from time to time reward you.

If you were sufficiently numerate, for example, as we have seen, it would respond to your basic inquiries into its height and base perimeter by 'printing out' the value of *pi.* And if you were prepared to investigate further, as we shall see, it would download other useful mathematical tidbits, each a little more complex and abstruse that its predecessor.

There was a programmed feel about this whole process, as though it had been carefully prearranged. Not for the first time, I found myself willing to consider the possibility that the pyramid might have been designed as a gigantic challenge or learning machine—or, better still, as an interactive three-dimensional puzzle set down in the desert for humanity to solve.

---

[1] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 25.

Antechamber

Just over 3 feet 6 inches high, the entry passage to the lung's Chamber required all humans of normal stature to stoop. About four feet farther on, however, I reached the 'Antechamber', where the roof level rose suddenly to 12 feet above the floor. The east and west walls of the Antechamber were composed of red granite, into which were cut four opposing pairs of wide parallel slots, assumed by Egyptologists to have held thick portcullis slabs.[2] Three of these pairs of slots extended all the way to the floor, and were empty. The fourth (the northernmost) had been cut down only as far as the roof level of the entry passage (that is, 3 feet 6 inches *above* floor level) and still contained a hulking sheet of granite, perhaps nine inches thick and six feet high. There was a horizontal space of only 21 inches between this suspended stone portcullis and the northern end of the entry passage from which I had just emerged. There was also a gap of a little over 4 feet deep between the top of the portcullis and the ceiling. Whatever function it was designed to serve it was hard to agree with the Egyptologists that this peculiar structure could have been intended to deny access to tomb robbers.

---

[2] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 94.

The antechamber.

Genuinely puzzled, I ducked under it and then stood up again in the southern portion of the Antechamber, which was some 10 feet long and maintained the same roof height of 12 feet. Though much worn, the grooves for the three further 'portcullis' slabs were still visible in the eastern and western walls. There was no sign of the slabs themselves and, indeed, it was difficult to see how such cumbersome pieces of stone could have been installed in so severely constricted a working space.

I remembered that Flinders Petrie, who had systematically surveyed the entire Giza necropolis in the late nineteenth century, had commented on a similar puzzle in the Second Pyramid: 'The granite portcullis in the lower passage shows great skill in moving masses, as it would need 40 or 60 men to lift it; yet it has been moved, and raised into place, in a narrow passage, where only a few men could possibly reach it.'[3] Exactly the same observations applied to the portcullis slabs of the Great Pyramid. If they were portcullis slabs—gateways capable of being raised and lowered.

The problem was that the physics of raising and lowering them required they be shorter than the full height of the Antechamber, so that they could be drawn into the roof space to allow the entry and exit of legitimate individuals prior to the closure of the tomb. This meant, of course, that when the bottom edges of the slabs were lowered to the floor to block the Antechamber at that level, an equal and opposite space would have opened up between the top edges of the slabs and the ceiling, through which any enterprising tomb-robber would certainly have been able to climb.

---

[3] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 36.

The Antechamber clearly qualified as another of the pyramid's many thought-provoking paradoxes, in which complexity of structure was combined with apparent pointlessness of function.

An exit tunnel, the same height and width as the entrance tunnel and lined with solid red granite, led off from the Antechamber's southern wall (also made of granite but incorporating a 12-inch thick limestone layer at its very top). After about a further 9 feet the tunnel debouched into the King's Chamber, a massive sombre red room made entirely of granite, which radiated an atmosphere of prodigious energy and power.

Stone enigmas

I moved into the centre of the King's Chamber, the lung axis of which was perfectly oriented east to west while the short axis was equally perfectly oriented north to south. The room was exactly 19 feet 1 inch in height and formed a precise two-by-one rectangle measuring 34 feet 4 inches long by 17 feet 2 inches wide. With a floor consisting of 15 massive granite paving stones, and walls composed of 100 gigantic granite blocks, each weighing 70 tons or more and laid in five courses, and with a ceiling spanned by nine further granite blocks each weighing approximately 50 tons,[4] the effect was of intense and overwhelming *compression.*

At the Chamber's western end was the object which, if the Egyptologists were to be believed, the entire Great Pyramid, had been built to house. That object, carved out of one piece of dark chocolate-coloured granite containing peculiarly hard granules of feldspar, quartz and mica, was the lidless coffer presumed to have been the sarcophagus of Khufu.[5] Its interior measurements were 6 feet 6.6 inches in length, 2 feet 10.42 inches in depth, and 2 feet 2.81 inches in width. Its exterior measurements were 7 feet 5.62 inches in length, 3 feet 5.31 inches in depth, and 3 feet 2.5 inches in width[6] an inch too wide, incidentally, for it to have been carried up through the lower (and now plugged) entrance to the ascending corridor.[7]

Some routine mathematical games were built into the dimensions of the sarcophagus. For example, it had an internal volume of 1166.4 litres and an external volume of exactly twice that, 2332.8 litres.[8] Such a precise coincidence could not have been arrived at accidentally: the walls of the coffer had been cut to machine-age tolerances by craftsmen of enormous skill and experience. It seemed, moreover, as Flinders Petrie admitted with some puzzlement after completing his painstaking survey of the Great Pyramid, that these craftsmen had access to tools 'such as we ourselves have only now reinvented ...'[9]

---

[4] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 94-5; *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* p. 64.

[5] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 94-5.

[6] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 30.

[7] Ibid., p. 95.

[8] Livio Catullo Stecchini in *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 322. Stecchini gives slightly more accurate measures than those of Petrie (quoted) for the internal and external dimensions of the pyramid.

Petrie examined the sarcophagus particularly closely and reported that it must have been cut out of its surrounding granite block with straight saws '8 feet or more in length'. Since the granite was extremely hard, he could only assume that these saws must have had bronze blades (the hardest metal then supposedly available) inset with 'cutting points' made of even harder jewels: 'The character of the work would certainly seem to point to diamond as being the cutting jewel; and only the considerations of its rarity in general, and its absence from Egypt, interfere with this conclusion ...'[10]

An even bigger mystery surrounded the hollowing out of the sarcophagus, obviously a far more difficult enterprise than separating it from a block of bedrock. Here Petrie concluded that the Egyptians must have:

> adapted their sawing principle into a circular instead of a rectilinear form, curving the blade round into a tube, which drilled out a circular groove by its rotation; thus by breaking away the cores left in such grooves, they were able to hollow out large holes with a minimum of labour. These tubular drills varied from 1/4 inch to 5 inches diameter, and from 1/30 to 1/5 inch thick ...[11]

Of course, as Petrie admitted, no actual jewelled drills or saws had ever been found by Egyptologists.[12] The visible evidence of the kinds of drilling and sawing that had been done, however, compelled him to infer that such instruments must have existed. He became especially interested in this and extended his study to include not only the King's Chamber sarcophagus but many other granite artefacts and granite 'drill cores' which he collected at Giza. The deeper his research, however, the more puzzling the stone-cutting technology of the Ancient Egyptians became:

> The amount of pressure, shown by the rapidity with which the drills and saws pierced through the hard stones, is very surprising; probably a load of at least a ton or two was placed on the 4-inch drills cutting in granite. On the granite core No 7 the spiral of the cut sinks 1 inch in the circumference of 6 inches, a rate of ploughing out which is astonishing ... These rapid spiral grooves cannot be ascribed to anything but the descent of the drill into the granite under enormous pressure ...[13]

Wasn't it peculiar that at the supposed dawn of human civilization, more than 4500 years ago, the Ancient Egyptians had acquired what sounded like industrial-age drills packing a ton or more of punch and capable of slicing through hard stones like hot knives through butter?

---

[9] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 103.

[10] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 74.

[11] Ibid., p. 76.

[12] Ibid., p. 78.

[13] Ibid.

Petrie could come up with no explanation for this conundrum. Nor was he able to explain the kind of instrument used to cut hieroglyphs into a number of diorite bowls with Fourth Dynasty inscriptions which he found at Giza: 'The hieroglyphs are incised with a very free-cutting point; they are not scraped or ground out, but are ploughed through the diorite, with rough edges to the line ...'[14]

This bothered the logical Petrie because he knew that diorite was one of the hardest stones on earth, far harder even than iron.[15] Yet here it was in Ancient Egypt being cut with incredible power and precision by some as yet unidentified graving tool:

> As the lines are only 1/150 inch wide it is evident that the cutting point must have been much harder than quartz; and tough enough not to splinter when so fine an edge was being employed, probably only 1/200 inch wide. Parallel lines are graved only 1/30 inch apart from centre to centre.[16]

In other words, he was envisaging an instrument with a needle-sharp point of exceptional, unprecedented hardness capable of penetrating and furrowing diorite with ease, and capable also of withstanding the enormous pressures required throughout the operation. What sort of instrument was that? By what means would the pressure have been applied? How could sufficient accuracy have been maintained to scour parallel lines at intervals of just 1/30-inch?

At least it was possible to conjure a mental picture of the circular drills with jewelled teeth which Petrie supposed must have been used to hollow out the lung's Chamber sarcophagus. I found, however, that it was not so easy to do the same for the unknown instrument capable of incising hieroglyphs into diorite at 2500 BC, at any rate not without assuming the existence of a far higher level of technology than Egyptologists were prepared to consider.

Nor was it just a few hieroglyphs or a few diorite bowls. During my travels in Egypt I had examined many stone vessels—dating back in some cases to pre-dynastic times—that had been mysteriously hollowed out of a range of materials such as diorite, basalt, quartz crystal and metamorphic schist.[17]

For example, more than 30,000 such vessels had been found in the chambers beneath the Third Dynasty Step Pyramid of Zoser at Saqqara.[18] That meant that they were at least as old as Zoser himself (i.e. around 2650 BC[19]). Theoretically, they could have been even older than that, because identical vessels had been found in pre-dynastic strata dated to 4000 BC and earlier,[20] and because the practice of handing down treasured heirlooms from generation to generation had been deeply ingrained in Egypt since time immemorial.

---

[14] Ibid., pp. 74-5.

[15] *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* p. 8.

[16] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 75.

[17] *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* p. 118.

[18] *Egypt: Land of the Pharaohs,* Time-Life Books, 1992, p. 51.

[19] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

Whether they were made in 2500 BC or in 4000 BC or even earlier, the stone vessels from the Step Pyramid were remarkable for their workmanship, which once again seemed to have been accomplished by some as yet unimagined (and, indeed, almost unimaginable) tool.

Why unimaginable? Because many of the vessels were tall vases with long, thin, elegant necks and widely flared interiors, often incorporating fully hollowed-out shoulders. No instrument yet invented was capable of carving vases into shapes like these, because such an instrument would have had to have been narrow enough to have passed through the necks and strong enough (and of the right shape) to have scoured out the shoulders and the rounded interiors. And how could sufficient upward and outward pressure have been generated and applied within the vases to achieve these effects?

The tall vases were by no means the only enigmatic vessels unearthed from the Pyramid of Zoser, and from a number of other archaic sites. There were monolithic urns with delicate ornamental handles left attached to their exteriors by the carvers. There were bowls, again with extremely narrow necks like the vases, and with widely flared, pot-bellied interiors. There were also open bowls, and almost microscopic vials, and occasional strange wheel-shaped objects cut out of metamorphic schist with inwardly curled edges planed down so fine that they were almost translucent.[21] In all cases what was really perplexing was the precision with which the interiors and exteriors of these vessels had been made to correspond—curve matching curve—over absolutely smooth, polished surfaces with no tool marks visible.

There was no technology known to have been available to the Ancient Egyptians capable of achieving such results. Nor, for that matter, would any stone-carver today be able to match them, even if he were working with the best tungsten-carbide tools. The implication, therefore, is that an unknown or secret technology had been put to use in Ancient Egypt.

Ceremony of the sarcophagus

Standing in the King's Chamber, facing west—the direction of death amongst both the Ancient Egyptians and the Maya—I rested my hands lightly on the gnarled granite edge of the sarcophagus which Egyptologists insist had been built to house the body of Khufu. I gazed into its murky depths where the dim electric lighting of the chamber seemed hardly to penetrate and saw specks of dust swirling in a golden cloud.

---

[20] For example, see Cyril Aldred, *Egypt to the End of the Old Kingdom,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1988, p. 25.

[21] Ibid., p. 57. The relevant artefacts are in the Cairo Museum.

It was just a trick of light and shadow, of course, but the King's Chamber was full of such illusions. I remembered that Napoleon Bonaparte had paused to spend a night alone here during his conquest of Egypt in the late eighteenth century. The next morning he had emerged pale and shaken, having experienced something which had profoundly disturbed him but about which he never afterwards spoke.[22]

Had he tried to sleep in the sarcophagus?

Acting on impulse, I climbed into the granite coffer and lay down, face upwards, my feet pointed towards the south and my head to the north.

Napoleon was a little guy, so he must have fitted comfortably. There was plenty of room for me too. But had Khufu been here as well?

I relaxed and tried not to worry about the possibility of one of the pyramid guards coming in and finding me in this embarrassing and probably illegal position. Hoping that I would remain undisturbed for a few minutes, I folded my hands across my chest and gave voice to a sustained low-pitched tone—something I had tried out several times before at other points in the King's Chamber. On those occasions, in the centre of the floor, I had noticed that the walls and ceiling seemed to collect the sound, to gather and to amplify it and project it back at me so that I could sense the returning vibrations through my feet and scalp and skin.

Now in the sarcophagus I was aware of very much the same effect, although seemingly amplified and concentrated many times over. It was like being in the sound-box of some giant, resonant musical instrument designed to emit for ever just one reverberating note. The sound was intense and quite disturbing. I imagined it rising out of the coffer and bouncing off the red granite walls and ceiling of the King's Chamber, shooting up through the northern and southern 'ventilation' shafts and spreading across the Giza plateau like a sonic mushroom cloud.

With this ambitious vision in my mind, and with the sound of my low-pitched note echoing in my ears and causing the sarcophagus to vibrate around me, I closed my eyes. When I opened them a few minutes later it was to behold a distressing sight: six Japanese tourists of mixed ages and sexes had congregated around the sarcophagus—two of them standing to the east, two to the west and one each to the north and south.

They all looked ... amazed. And I was amazed to see them. Because of recent attacks by armed Islamic extremists there were now almost no tourists at Giza and I had expected to have the King's Chamber to myself.

What does one do in a situation like this?

---

[22] Reported in P. W. Roberts, *River in the Desert: Modern Travels in Ancient Egypt,* Random House, New York and Toronto, 1993, p. 115.

Gathering as much dignity as I could muster, I stood upright, smiling and dusting myself off. The Japanese stepped back and I climbed out of the sarcophagus. Cultivating a businesslike manner, as though I did things like this all the time, I strolled to the point two-thirds of the way along the northern wall of the King's Chamber where the entrance to what Egyptologists refer to as the 'northern ventilation shaft' is located, and began to examine it minutely.

Some 8 inches wide by 9 inches high, it was, I knew, more than 200 feet in length and emerged into open air at the pyramid's 103rd course of masonry. Presumably by design rather than by accident, it pointed to the circumpolar regions of the northern heavens at an angle of 32° 30'. This, in the Pyramid Age around 2500 BC, would have meant that it was directed on the upper culmination of Alpha Draconis, a prominent star in the constellation of Draco.[23]

Much to my relief the Japanese rapidly completed their tour of the King's Chamber and left, stooping, without a backward glance. As soon as they had gone I crossed over to the other side of the room to take a look at the southern shaft. Since I had last been here some months before, its appearance had changed horribly. Its mouth now contained a massive electrical air-conditioning unit installed by Rudolf Gantenbrink, who even now was turning his attentions to the neglected shafts of the Queen's Chamber.

Since Egyptologists were satisfied that the King's Chamber shafts had been built for ventilation purposes, they saw nothing untoward in using modern technology to improve the efficiency of this task. Yet wouldn't *horizontal* shafts have been more effective than sloping ones if their primary purpose had been ventilation, and easier to build?[24] It was therefore unlikely to be an accident that the southern shaft of the King's Chamber targeted the southern heavens at 45°. During the Pyramid Age this was the location for the meridian transit of Zeta Orionis, the lowest of the three stars of Orion's Belt[25]—an alignment, I was to discover in due course, that would turn out to be of the utmost significance for future pyramid research.

The game-master

Now that I had the Chamber to myself again, I walked over to the western wall, on the far side of the sarcophagus, and turned to face east.

The huge room had an endless capacity to generate indications of mathematical game-playing. For example, its height (19 feet 1 inch) was exactly half of the length of its floor diagonal (38 feet 2 inches).[26] Moreover, since the King's Chamber formed a perfect 1 x 2 rectangle, was it conceivable that the pyramid builders were unaware that they had also made it express and exemplify the 'golden section'?

---

[23] Robert Bauval, *Discussions in Egyptology* No. 29, 1994.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid. See also *The Orion Mystery,* p. 172.

Known as *phi,* the golden section was another irrational number like *pi* that could not be worked out arithmetically. Its value was the square root of 5 plus 1 divided by 2, equivalent to 1.61803.[27] This proved to be the 'limiting value of the ratio between successive numbers in the Fibonacci series—the series of numbers beginning 0, 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13—in which each term is the sum of the two previous terms.'[28]

Phi could also be obtained schematically by dividing a line A-B at a point C in such a way that the whole line A-B was longer than the first part, A-C, in the same proportion as the first part, A-C, was longer than the remainder, C-B.[29] This proportion, which had been proven particularly harmonious and agreeable to the eye, had supposedly been first discovered by the Pythagorean Greeks, who incorporated it into the Parthenon at Athens. There is absolutely no doubt, however, that *phi* illustrated and obtained at least 2000 years previously in the King's Chamber of the Great Pyramid at Giza.

---

[26] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 117; *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* p. 64.

[27] John Ivimy, *The Sphinx and the Megaliths,* Abacus, London, 1976, p. 118.

[28] Ibid.

[29] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 191.

C
North wall
Northern shaft
Entrance
A
Sarcophagus
B
Floor
D
11.18 royal cubits
10 royal cubits
16.18 royal cubits
20 royal cubits

At the very beginning of its Dynastic history, Egypt inherited a system of measures from unknown predecessors. Expressed in these ancient measures, the floor dimensions of the King's Chamber (34 ft. 4" x 17 ft. 2") work out at exactly 20 x 10 royal cubits', while the height of the side walls to the ceiling is exactly 11.18 royal cubits. The semi-diagonal of the floor (A-B) is also exactly 11.18 royal cubits and can be 'swung up' to C to confirm the height of the chamber. *Phi* is defined mathematically as the square root of 5 + 1 + 2, i.e. 1.618. Is it a coincidence that the distance C-D (i.e. the wall height of the King's Chamber plus half the width of its floor) equals 16.18 royal cubits, thus incorporating the essential digits of *phi?*

To understand how it is necessary to envisage the rectangular floor of the chamber as being divided into two imaginary squares of equal size, with the side length of each square being given a value of 1. If either of these two squares were then split in half, thus forming two new rectangles, and if the diagonal of the rectangle nearest to the centreline of the King's Chamber were swung down to the base, the point where its tip touched the base would be *phi,* or 1.618, in relation to the side length (i.e., 1) of the original square.[30] (An alternative way of obtaining *phi,* also built into the King's Chamber's dimensions, is illustrated on the previous page.)

The Egyptologists considered all this was pure chance. Yet the pyramid builders had done *nothing* by chance. Whoever they had been, I found it hard to imagine more systematic and mathematically minded people.

---

[30] Ibid. See also *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* pp. 117-19.

I'd had quite enough of their mathematical games for one day. As I left the King's Chamber, however, I could not forget that it was located in line with the 50th course of the Great Pyramid's masonry at a height of almost 150 feet above the ground.[31] This meant, as Flinders Petrie pointed out with some astonishment, that the builders had managed to place it 'at the level where the vertical section of the Pyramid was halved, where the area of the horizontal section was half that of the base, where the diagonal from corner to corner was equal to the length of the base, and where the width of the face was equal to half the diagonal of the base'.[32]

Confidently and efficiently fooling around with more than six million tons of stone, creating galleries and chambers and shafts and corridors more or less at will, achieving near-perfect symmetry, near-perfect right angles, and near-perfect alignments to the cardinal points, the mysterious builders of the Great Pyramid had found the time to play a great many other tricks as well with the dimensions of the vast monument.

Why did their minds work this way? What had they been trying to say or do? And why, so many thousands of years after it was built, did the monument still exert a magnetic influence upon so many people, from so many different walks of life, who came into contact with it?

There was a Sphinx in the neighbourhood, so I decided that I would put these riddles to It ...

---

[31] *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* p. 64.

[32] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 93.

Chapter 39

Place of the Beginning

Giza, Egypt, 16 March 1993, 3:30 p.m.
It was mid afternoon by the time I left the Great Pyramid. Retracing the route that Santha and I had followed the night before when we had climbed the monument, I walked eastwards along the northern face, southwards along the flank of the eastern face, clambered over mounds of rubble and ancient tombs that clustered closely in this part of the necropolis, and came out on to the sand-covered limestone bedrock of the Giza plateau, which sloped down towards the south and east.

At the bottom of this long gentle slope, about half a kilometre from the south-eastern corner of the Great Pyramid, the Sphinx crouched in his rock-hewn pit. Sixty-six feet high and more than 240 feet long, with a head measuring 13 feet 8 inches wide,[1] he was, by a considerable margin, the largest single piece of sculpture in the world—and the most renowned:

> A shape with lion body and the head of a man
> A gaze blank and pitiless as the sun.[2]

Approaching the monument from the north-west I crossed the ancient causeway that connected the Second Pyramid with the so-called Valley Temple of Khafre, a most unusual structure located just 50 feet south of the Sphinx itself on the eastern edge of the Giza necropolis.

This Temple had long been believed to be far older than the time of Khafre. Indeed throughout much of the nineteenth century the consensus among scholars was that it had been built in remote prehistory, and had nothing to do with the architecture of dynastic Egypt.[3] What changed all that was the discovery, buried within the Temple precincts, of a number of inscribed statues of Khafre. Most were pretty badly smashed, but one, found upside down in a deep pit in an antechamber, was almost intact. Life-sized, and exquisitely carved out of black, jewel-hard diorite, it showed the Fourth Dynasty pharaoh seated on his throne and gazing with serene indifference towards infinity.

At this point the razor-sharp reasoning of Egyptology was brought to bear, and a solution of almost awe-inspiring brilliance was worked out: statues of Khafre had been found in the Valley Temple therefore the Valley Temple had been built by Khafre. The normally sensible Flinders

---

[1] Measurements from *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 106.
[2] W. B. Yeats, 'The Second Coming'.
[3] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 48.

Petrie summed up: 'The fact that the only dateable remains found in the Temple were statues of Khafre shows that it is of his period; since the idea of his appropriating an earlier building is very unlikely.'[4]

But why was the idea so unlikely?

Throughout the history of Dynastic Egypt many pharaohs appropriated the buildings of their predecessors, sometimes deliberately striking out the cartouches of the original builders and replacing them with their own.[5] There was no good reason to assume that Khafre would have been deterred from linking himself to the Valley Temple, particularly if it had not been associated in his mind with any previous historical ruler but with the great 'gods' said by the Ancient Egyptians to have brought civilization to the Nile Valley in the distant and mythical epoch they spoke of as the First Time.[6] In such a place of archaic and mysterious power, *which he does not appear to have interfered with in any other way,* Khafre might have thought that the setting up of beautiful and lifelike statues of himself could bring eternal benefits. And if, among the gods, the Valley Temple had been associated with Osiris (whom it was every pharaoh's objective to join in the afterlife),[7] Khafre's use of statues to forge a strong symbolic link would be even more understandable.

Temple of the giants

After crossing the causeway, the route I had chosen to reach the Valley Temple took me through the rubble of a 'mastaba' field, where lesser notables of the Fourth Dynasty had been buried in subterranean tombs under bench-shaped platforms of stone (*mastaba* is a modern Arabic word meaning bench, hence the name given to these tombs). I walked along the southern wall of the Temple itself, recalling that this ancient building was almost as perfectly oriented north to south as was the Great Pyramid (with an error of just 12 arc minutes).[8]

The Temple was square in plan, 147 feet along each side. It was built in to the slope of the plateau, which was higher in the west than in the east. In consequence, while its western wall stood only a little over 20 feet tall, its eastern wall exceeded 40 feet.[9]

Viewed from the south, the impression was of a wedge-shaped structure, squat and powerful, resting firmly on bedrock. A closer examination revealed that it incorporated several characteristics quite alien and inexplicable to the modern eye, which that must have seemed almost as alien and inexplicable to the Ancient Egyptians. For a start, there was the stark absence, both inside and out, of inscriptions and other identifying marks. In this respect, as the reader will appreciate, the Valley Temple could be compared with a few of the other anonymous and frankly undatable monuments on the Giza plateau, including the great pyramids (and also with a mysterious structure at Abydos known as the Osireion, which we consider in detail in a later chapter) but otherwise bore no resemblance to the typical and well-known products of Ancient Egyptian art and architecture—all copiously decorated, embellished and inscribed.[10]

---

[4] Ibid., p. 50.

[5] Margaret A. Murray, *The Splendour that was Egypt,* Sidgwick & Jackson, London, 1987, pp. 160-1.

[6] See Part VII, for a full discussion of the 'First Time'.

[7] Discussed in Part VII; see also Part III for a comparison of the Osirian rebirth cult and of the rebirth beliefs of Ancient Mexico.

[8] *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* p. 47.

[9] Measurements from *The Pyramids and Temples of Egypt,* p. 48, and *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 108.

Another important and unusual feature of the Valley Temple was that its core structure was built entirely, *entirely,* of gigantic limestone megaliths. The majority of these measured about 18 feet long x 10 feet wide x 8 feet high and some were as large as 30 feet long x 12 feet wide x 10 feet high.[11] Routinely exceeding 200 tons in weight, each was heavier than a modern diesel locomotive—and there were hundreds of blocks.[12]

Was this in any way mysterious?

Egyptologists did not seem to think so; indeed few of them had bothered to comment, except in the most superficial manner—either on the staggering size of these blocks or the mind-bending logistics of how they might have been put in place. As we have seen, monoliths of up to 70 tons, each about as heavy as 100 family-sized cars, had been lifted to the level of the King's Chamber in the Great Pyramid—again without provoking much comment from the Egyptological fraternity—so the lack of curiosity about the Valley Temple was perhaps no surprise. Nevertheless, the block size was truly extraordinary, seeming to belong not just to another epoch but to another *ethic* altogether—one that reflected incomprehensible aesthetic and structural concerns and suggested a scale of priorities utterly different from our own. Why, for example, insist on using these cumbersome 200-ton monoliths when you could simply slice each of them up into 10 or 20 or 40 or 80 smaller and more manoeuvrable blocks? Why make things so difficult for yourself when you could achieve much the same visual effect with much less effort?

And how had the builders of the Valley Temple lifted these colossal megaliths to heights of more than 40 feet?

---

[10] In addition to the three Giza pyramids, the Mortuary Temples of Khafre and Menkaure can be compared with the Valley Temple in terms of their absence of adornment and use of megaliths weighing 200 tons or more.

[11] *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 211; also *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV, 1993.

[12] For block weights see *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 215; *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 242; *The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 144; *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* p. 51; *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV, 1993.

At present there are only two land-based cranes in the world that could lift weights of this magnitude. At the very frontiers of construction technology, these are both vast, industrialized machines, with booms reaching more than 220 feet into the air, which require on-board counterweights of 160 tons to prevent them from tipping over. The preparation-time for a single lift is around six weeks and calls for the skills of specialized teams of up to 20 men.[13]

In other words, modern builders with all the advantages of high-tech engineering at their disposal, can barely hoist weights of 200 tons. Was it not, therefore, somewhat surprising that the builders at Giza had hoisted such weights on an almost routine basis?

Moving closer to the Temple's looming southern wall I observed something else about the huge limestone blocks: not only were they ridiculously large but, as though to complicate still further an almost impossible task, they had been cut and fitted into multi-angled jigsaw-puzzle patterns similar to those employed in the cyclopean stone structures at Sacsayhuaman and Machu Picchu in Peru (see Part II).

Another point I noticed was that the Temple walls appeared to have been constructed in two stages. The first stage, most of which was intact (though deeply eroded), consisted of the strong and heavy core of 200-ton limestone blocks. On to both sides of these had been grafted a façade of dressed granite which (as we shall see) was largely intact in the interior of the building but had mainly fallen away on the outside. A closer look at some of the remaining exterior facing blocks where they had become detached from the core revealed a curious fact. When they had been placed here in antiquity the backs of these blocks had been cut to fit into and around the deep coves and scallops of *existing weathering patterns* on the limestone core. The presence of those patterns seemed to imply that the core blocks must have stood here, exposed to the elements, for an immense span of time before they had been faced with granite.

---

[13] Personal communication from John Anthony West. See also *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV.

Valley Temple
Sphinx Temple
The Great Sphinx

The Sphinx and the Sphinx Temple with the Valley Temple of Khafre.

Lord of Rostau

I now moved around to the entrance of the Valley Temple, located near the northern end of the 43-foot high eastern wall. Here I saw that the granite facing was still in perfect condition, consisting of huge slabs weighing between 70 and 80 tons apiece which protected the underlying limestone core blocks like a suit of armour. Incorporating a tall, narrow, roofless corridor, this dark and imposing portal ran east to west at first, then made a right-angle turn to the south, leading me into a spacious antechamber. It was here that the life-size diorite statue of Khafre had been found, upside down and apparently ritually buried, at the bottom of a deep pit.

Lining the entire interior of the antechamber was a majestic jigsaw puzzle of smoothly polished granite facing blocks (which continued through the whole building). Exactly like the blocks on some of the bigger and more bizarre pre-Inca monuments in Peru, these incorporated multiple, finely chiselled angles in the joints and presented a complex overall pattern. Of particular note was the way certain blocks wrapped around corners and were received by re-entering angles cut into other blocks.

From the antechamber I passed through an elegant corridor which led west into a spacious T-shaped hall. I found myself standing at the head of the T looking further westwards along an imposing avenue of monolithic columns. Reaching almost 15 feet in height and measuring 41 inches on each side, all these columns supported granite beams, which were again

41 inches square. A row of six further columns, also supporting beams, ran along the north-south axis of the T; the overall effect was of massive but refined simplicity.

What was this building for? According to the Egyptologists who attributed it to Khafre its purpose was obvious. It had been designed, they said, as a venue for certain of the purification and rebirth rituals required for the funeral of the pharaoh. The Ancient Egyptians themselves, however, had left no inscriptions confirming this. On the contrary, the only written evidence that has come down to us indicated that the Valley Temple could *not* (originally at any rate) have had anything to do with Khafre, for the simple reason that it was built before his reign. This written evidence is the Inventory Stela, (referred to in Chapter Thirty-five), which also indicated a much greater age for the Great Pyramid and the Sphinx.

What the Inventory Stela had to say about the Valley Temple was that it had been standing during the reign of Khafre's predecessor Khufu, when it had been regarded not as a recent but as a remotely ancient building. Moreover, it was clear from the context that it was not thought to have been the work of any earlier pharaoh. Instead, it was believed to have come down from the 'First Time' and to have been built by the 'gods' who had settled in the Nile Valley in that remote epoch. It was referred to quite explicitly as the 'House of Osiris, Lord of Rostau[14] (Rostau being an archaic name for the Giza necropolis).[15]

As we shall see in Part VII, Osiris was in many respects the Egyptian counterpart of Viracocha and Quetzalcoatl, the civilizing deities of the Andes and of Central America. With them he shared not only a common mission but a vast heritage of common symbolism. It seemed appropriate, therefore, that the 'House' (or sanctuary, or temple) of such a wise teacher and lawgiver should have been established at Giza within sight of the Great Pyramid and in the immediate vicinity of the Great Sphinx.

Vastly, remotely, fabulously ancient

Following the directions given in the Inventory Stela—which stated that the Sphinx lay 'on the north-west of the House of Osiris'[16]—I made my way to the north end of the western wall that enclosed the Valley Temple's T-shaped hall. I passed through a monolithic doorway and entered a long, sloping, alabaster floored corridor (also oriented north-west) which eventually opened out on to the lower end of the causeway that led up to the Second Pyramid.

---

[14] *Ancient Records of Egypt,* volume I, p. 85.

[15] See, for example, Miriam Lichtheim, *Ancient Egyptian Literature,* University of California Press, 1976, volume II, pp. 85-6.

[16] *Ancient Records of Egypt,* volume I, p. 85.

From the edge of the causeway I had an unimpeded view of the Sphinx immediately to my north. As long as a city block, as high as a six-storey building it was *perfectly* oriented due east and thus faced the rising sun on the two equinoctial days of the year. Man-headed, lion-bodied, crouched as though ready at last to move its slow thighs after millennia of stony sleep, it had been carved in one piece out of a single ridge of limestone on a site that must have been meticulously preselected. The exceptional characteristic of this site, as well as overlooking the Valley of the Nile, was that its geological make-up incorporated a knoll of hard rock jutting at least 30 feet above the general level of the limestone ridge. From this knoll the head and neck of the Sphinx had been carved, while beneath it the vast rectangle of limestone that would be shaped into the body had been isolated from the surrounding bedrock. The builders had done this by excavating an 18-foot wide, 25-foot deep trench all around it, creating a free-standing monolith.

The first and lasting impression of the Sphinx, and of its enclosure, is that it is very, very old—not a mere handful of thousands of years, like the Fourth Dynasty of Egyptian pharaohs, but vastly, remotely, fabulously old. This was how the Ancient Egyptians in all periods of their history regarded the monument, which they believed guarded the ‘Splendid Place of The Beginning of all Time’ and which they revered as the focus of ‘a great magical power extending over the whole region’.[17]

This, as we have already seen, is the general message of the Inventory Stela. More specifically, it is also the message of the ‘Sphinx Stela’ erected here in around 1400 BC by Thutmosis IV, an Eighteenth Dynasty pharaoh. Still standing between the paws of the Sphinx, this granite tablet records that prior to Thutmosis’s rule the monument had been covered up to its neck in sand. Thutmosis liberated it by clearing all the sand, and erected the stela to commemorate his work.[18]

There have been no significant changes in the climate of the Giza plateau over the last 5000 years.[19] It therefore follows that throughout this entire period the Sphinx enclosure must have been as susceptible to sand encroachment as when Thutmosis cleared it—and, indeed, as it still is today. Recent history proves that the enclosure can fill up rapidly if left unattended. In 1818 Captain Caviglia had it cleared of sand for the purposes of his excavations, and in 1886, when Gaston Maspero came to re-excavate the site, he was obliged to have it cleared of sand once again. Thirty-nine years later, in 1925, the sands had returned in full force and the Sphinx was buried to its neck when the Egyptian Service des

---

[17] *A History of Egypt,* 1902, volume 4, p. 80ff, ‘Stela of the Sphinx’.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Karl W. Butzer, *Early Hydraulic Civilization in Egypt: A Study in Cultural Ecology,* University of Chicago Press, 1976.

Antiquités undertook its clearance and restoration once more.[20]

Does this not suggest that the climate could have been very different when the Sphinx enclosure was carved out? What would have been the sense of creating this immense statue if its destiny were merely to be engulfed by the shifting sands of the eastern Sahara? However, since the Sahara is a young desert, and since the Giza area in particular was wet and relatively fertile 11,000-15,000 years ago, is it not worth considering another scenario altogether? Is it not possible that the Sphinx enclosure was carved out during those distant green millennia when topsoil was still anchored to the surface of the plateau by the roots of grasses and shrubs and when what is now a desert of wind-blown sand more closely resembled the rolling savannahs of modern Kenya and Tanzania?

Under such congenial climatic conditions, the creation of a semi-subterranean monument like the Sphinx would not have outraged common sense. The builders would have had no reason to anticipate the slow desiccation and desertification of the plateau that would ultimately follow.

Yet, is it feasible to imagine that the Sphinx could have been built when Giza was still green—long, long ago?

As we shall see, such ideas are anathema to modern Egyptologists, who are nevertheless obliged to admit (to quote Dr Mark Lehner, director of the Giza Mapping Project) that ‘there is no direct way to date the Sphinx itself, because the Sphinx is carved right out of natural rock.’[21] In the absence of more objective tests, Lehner went on to point out, archaeologists had ‘to date things *by context’.* And the context of the Sphinx, that is, the Giza necropolis—a well-known Fourth Dynasty site—made it obvious that the Sphinx belonged to the Fourth Dynasty as well.[22]

Such reasoning was not regarded as axiomatic by Lehner’s distinguished predecessors in the nineteenth century, who were at one time convinced that the Sphinx long predated the Fourth Dynasty.

Whose Sphinx is it anyway?

In his *Passing of Empires,* published in 1900, the distinguished French Egyptologist Gaston Maspero, who made a special study of the content of the Sphinx Stela erected by Thutmosis IV, wrote:

> The stela of the Sphinx bears, on line 13, the cartouche of Khafre in the middle of a gap ... There, I believe, is an indication of [a renovation and clearance] of the Sphinx carried out under this prince, and consequently the more or less certain proof that the Sphinx was *already covered with sand* during the time of Khufu and

---

[20] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* pp. 106-7.

[21] Mark Lehner, 1992 AAAS Annual Meeting, Debate: How Old is the Sphinx?

[22] Ibid.

> his predecessors ...[23]

The equally distinguished Auguste Mariette agreed—naturally enough since he had been the finder of the Inventory Stela (which, as we have seen, asserted matter-of-factly that the Sphinx was standing on the Giza plateau long before the time of Khufu).[24] Also generally concurring were Brugsch (*Egypt under the Pharaohs,* London, 1891), Petrie, Sayce and many other eminent scholars of the period.[25] Travel writers such as John Ward affirmed that 'the Great Sphinx must be numberless years older even than the Pyramids'. And as late as 1904 Wallis Budge, the respected keeper of Egyptian Antiquities at the British Museum, had no hesitation in making this unequivocal assertion:

> The oldest and finest human-headed lion statue is the famous 'Sphinx' at Giza. This marvellous object was in existence in the days of Khafre, the builder of the Second Pyramid, and was, most probably, very old even at that early period ... The Sphinx was thought to be connected in some way with foreigners or with a foreign religion which dated from predynastic times.[26]

Between the beginning and the end of the twentieth century, however, Egyptologists' views about the antiquity of the Sphinx changed dramatically. Today there is not a single orthodox Egyptologist who would even discuss, let alone consider seriously, the wild and irresponsible suggestion, once a commonplace, that the Sphinx might have been built thousands of years before Khafre's reign.

According to Dr Zahi Hawass, for example, director of Giza and Saqqara for the Egyptian Antiquities Organization, many such theories have been put forward but have 'gone with the wind' because 'we Egyptologists have solid evidence to state that the Sphinx is dated to the time of Khafre.'[27]

Likewise, Carol Redmont, an archaeologist at the University of California's Berkeley campus, was incredulous when it was suggested to her that the Sphinx might be thousands of years older than Khafre: 'There's just no way that could be true. The people of that region would not have had the technology, the governing institutions or even the will to build such a structure thousands of years before Khafre's reign.'[28]

When I first started to research this issue, I had assumed, as Hawass appeared to claim, that some incontrovertible new evidence must have been found which had settled the identity of the monument's builder. This was not the case. Indeed there are only *three* 'contextual' reasons why the construction of the anonymous, uninscribed and enigmatic

---

[23] Gaston Maspero, *The Passing of Empires,* New York, 1900.

[24] See Chapter Thirty-five.

[25] For a general summary of these views see John Ward, *Pyramids and Progress,* London, 1900, pp. 38-42.

[26] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, pp. 471-2 and volume II, p. 361.

[27] Interview in *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV, 1993.

[28] Cited in *Serpent In The Sky,* p. 230.

Sphinx is now so confidently attributed to Khafre:

1 **Because of the cartouche of Khafre on line 13 of the Sphinx Stela erected by Thutmosis IV:** Maspero gave a perfectly reasonable explanation for the presence of this cartouche: Thutmosis had been a restorer of the Sphinx and had paid due tribute to an earlier restoration of the monument—one undertaken during the Fourth Dynasty by Khafre. This explanation, which bears the obvious implication that the Sphinx must *already* have been old in Khafre's time, is rejected by modern Egyptologists. With their usual telepathic like-mindedness they now agree that Thutmosis put the cartouche on to the stela to recognize that Khafra had been the original builder (and *not* a mere restorer).

   Since there had only ever been this single cartouche—and since the texts on either side of it were missing when the stela was excavated, is it not a little premature to come to such hard-and-fast conclusions? What sort of 'science' is it that allows the mere presence of the cartouche of a Fourth Dynasty pharaoh (on a stele erected by an Eighteenth Dynasty pharaoh) to determine the entire identification of an otherwise anonymous monument? Besides, even that cartouche has now flaked off and cannot be examined ...

2 **Because the Valley Temple next door is also attributed to Khafre:** That attribution (based on statues which may well have been intrusive) is shaky to say the least. It has nevertheless received the wholehearted endorsement of the Egyptologists, who in the process decided to attribute the Sphinx to Khafre too (since the Sphinx and the Valley Temple are so obviously connected).

3 **Because the face of the Sphinx is thought to resemble the intact statue of Khafre found in the pit in the Valley Temple:** This, of course, is a matter of opinion. I have never seen the slightest resemblance between the two faces. Nor for that matter had forensic artists from the New York Police Department who had recently been brought in to do an Identikit comparison between the Sphinx and the statue[29] (as we shall see in Part VII).

All in all, therefore, as I stood overlooking the Sphinx in the late afternoon of 16 March 1993, I considered that the jury was still very much out on the correct attribution of this monument—either to Khafre on the one hand or to the architects of an as yet unidentified high civilization of prehistoric antiquity on the other.[30] No matter what the current flavour of the month (or century) happened to be with the Egyptologists, the fact was that *both* scenarios were plausible. What was needed, therefore, was some completely hard and unambiguous evidence which would settle the matter one way or the other.

---

[29] Ibid., pp. 230-2; *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV.

[30] At least one orthodox Egyptologist, Selim Hassan, has admitted that the jury is still out on this issue. After twenty years of excavations at Giza he wrote, 'Except for the mutilated line on the Granite Stela of Thutmosis IV, which proves nothing, there is not one single ancient inscription which connects the Sphinx with Khafre. So, sound as it may appear, we must treat this evidence as circumstantial until such a time as a lucky turn of the spade will reveal to the world definite reference to the erection of this statue.' Cited in *Conde Nast Traveller,* February 1993, pp. 168-9.

Part VII

Lord of Eternity

Egypt 2

Chapter 40

Are There Any Secrets Left in Egypt?

During the early evening of 26 November 1922 the British archaeologist Howard Carter, together with his sponsor Lord Carnarvon, entered the tomb of a youthful pharaoh of the Eighteenth Dynasty who had ruled Egypt from 1352-43 BC. The name of that pharaoh, which has since resounded around the world, was Tutankhamun.

Two nights later, on 28 November, the tomb's 'Treasury' was breached. It was filled with a huge golden shrine and gave access to another chamber beyond. Rather unusually, this chamber, although heaped with a dazzling array of precious and beautiful artefacts, had no door: its entrance was watched over by an extraordinarily lifelike effigy of the jackal-headed mortuary god Anubis. With ears erect, the god crouched doglike, forepaws stretched out, on the lid of a gilded wooden casket perhaps four feet long, three feet high and two feet wide.

The Egyptian Museum, Cairo, December 1993

Still perched astride his casket, but now locked away in a dusty glass display case, Anubis held my attention for a long, quiet moment. His effigy had been carved out of stuccoed wood, entirely covered with black resin, then painstakingly inlaid with gold, alabaster, calcite, obsidian and silver—materials used to particular effect in the eyes, which glittered watchfully with an unsettling sense of fierce and focused intelligence. At the same time his finely etched ribs and lithe musculature gave off an aura of understated strength, energy and grace.

Captured by the force field of this occult and powerful presence, I was vividly reminded of the universal myths of precession I had been studying during the past year. Canine figures moved back and forth among these myths in a manner which at times had seemed almost plotted in the literary sense. I had begun to wonder whether the symbolism of dogs, wolves, jackals, and so on, might have been *deliberately* employed by the long-dead myth-makers to guide initiates through a maze of clues to secret reservoirs of lost scientific knowledge.

Among these reservoirs, I suspected, was the myth of Osiris. Much more than a myth, it had been dramatized and performed each year in Ancient Egypt in the form of a mystery play—a 'plotted' literary artefact, passed down as a treasured tradition since prehistoric times.[1] This tradition, as we saw in Part V, contained values for the rate of precessional motion that were so accurate and so consistent it was extremely difficult to attribute them to chance. Nor did it seem likely to be an accident that the jackal god had been assigned a role centre-stage in the drama, serving as the spirit guide of Osiris on his journey through the underworld.[2] It was tempting, too, to wonder whether there was any significance in the fact that in ancient times Anubis had been referred to by Egyptian priests as the 'guardian of the secret and sacred writings'.[3]) Under the grooved edge of the gilded casket on which his effigy now crouched was found an inscription: 'initiated into the secrets'.[4] Alternative translations of the same hieroglyphic text rendered it variously as 'he who is upon the secrets', and as 'guardian of the secrets'.[5]

---

[1] See, for example, Rosalie David, *A Guide to Religious Ritual at Abydos,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1981, in particular p. 121.

But were there any secrets left in Egypt?

After more than a century of intensive archaeological investigations, could the sands of this antique land yield any further surprises?

Bauval's Stars and West's Stones

In 1993 there was an astonishing new discovery which suggested that there was much still to learn about Ancient Egypt. The discoverer, moreover, was not some astigmatic archaeologist sieving his way through the dust of ages but an outsider to the field: Robert Bauval, a Belgian construction engineer with a flair for astronomy who observed a correlation in the sky that the experts had missed in their fixation with the ground at their feet.

What Bauval saw was this: as the three belt stars of the Orion constellation crossed the merdian at Giza they lay in a not quite straight line high in the southern heavens. The lower two stars, *Al Nitak* and *Al Nilam,* formed a perfect diagonal but the third star, *Mintaka,* appeared to be offset to the observer's left, that is, towards the east.

---

[2] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, pp. 262-6.

[3] Lucy Lamy, *Egyptian Mysteries,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1986, p. 93.

[4] Jean-Pierre Corteggiani, *The Egypt of the Pharaohs at the Cairo Museum,* Scala Publications, London, 1987, p. 118.

[5] Ibid.; see also R. A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy,* Inner Traditions International, Rochester, 1988, pp. 182-3.

5h40'
5h36'
5h32'
0°
1°
2°

The three pyramids of Giza plotted against the three belt stars of the Orion constellation.

Curiously enough (as we saw in Chapter Thirty-six), this was exactly the site-plan of the three enigmatic pyramids of the Giza plateau. Bauval realized that an aerial view of the Giza necropolis would show the Great Pyramid of Khufu occupying the position of *Al Nitak,* and the Second Pyramid of Khafre occupying the position of *Al Nilam,* while the Third Pyramid of Menkaure was offset to the east of the diagonal formed by the other two—thus completing what seemed at first to be a vast diagram of the stars.

Was this indeed what the Giza pyramids represented? I knew that Bauval’s later work, which had been wholeheartedly endorsed by mathematicians and astronomers, had borne out his inspired hunch. His evidence (reviewed fully in Chapter Forty-nine) showed that the three pyramids were an unbelievably precise terrestrial map of the three stars of Orion's belt, accurately reflecting the angles between each of them and even (by means of their respective sizes) providing some indication of their individual magnitudes.[6] Moreover, this map extended outwards to the north and south to encompass several other structures on the Giza plateau—once again with faultless precision.[7] However, the real surprise revealed by Bauval's astronomical calculations was this: despite the fact that some aspects of the Great Pyramid did relate astronomically to the Pyramid Age, the Giza monuments as a whole were so arranged as to provide a picture of the skies (which alter their appearance down the ages as a result of precession of the equinoxes) not as they had looked in the Fourth Dynasty around 2500 BC, but as they had looked—and *only* as they had looked—around the year 10,450 BC.[8]

I had come to Egypt to go over the Giza site with Robert Bauval and to question him about his star-correlation theory. In addition I wanted to canvass his views on what sort of human society, if any, could have had the technological know-how, such a very long while ago, to measure accurately the altitudes of the stars and to devise a plan as mathematical and ambitious as that of the Giza necropolis.

I had also come to meet another researcher who had challenged the orthodox chronology of Ancient Egypt with a well-founded claim to have found hard evidence of a high civilization in the Nile Valley in 10,000 BC or earlier. Like Bauval's astronomical data, the evidence had always been available but had failed to attract the attention of established Egyptologists. The man responsible for bringing it before the public now was the American scholar, John Anthony West, who argued that the specialists had missed it—not because they had failed to find it, but because they had found it and had failed to interpret it properly.[9]

West's evidence focused on certain key structures, notably the Great Sphinx and the Valley Temple at Giza and, much farther south, the mysterious Osireion at Abydos. He argued that these desert monuments showed many scientifically unmistakable signs of having been weathered by *water,* an erosive agent they could only have been exposed to in sufficient quantities during the damp 'pluvial' period that accompanied the end of the last Ice Age around the eleventh millennium BC.[10] The implication of this peculiar and extremely distinctive pattern of 'precipitation induced' weathering, was that the Osireion, the Sphinx, and other associated structures were built before 10,000 BC.[11]

---

[6] *The Orion Mystery.*
[7] Ibid.
[8] Ibid.
[9] *Serpent in the Sky,* pp. 184-242.
[10] Ibid., 186-7.

A British investigative journalist summed up the effect:

> West is really an academic's worst nightmare, because here comes somebody way out of left-field with a thoroughly well thought out, well presented, coherently described theory, full of data they can't refute, and it pulls the rug out from beneath their feet. So how do they deal with it? They ignore it. They hope it'll go away ... and it won't go away.[12]

The reason the new theory would not, under any circumstances, go away, despite its rejection by droves of 'competent Egyptologists', was that it had won widespread support from another scientific branch of scholarship—geology. Dr Robert Schoch, a professor of Geology at Boston University, had played a prominent role in validating West's estimates concerning the true age of the Sphinx, and his views had been endorsed by almost 300 of his peers at the 1992 annual convention of the Geological Society of America.[13]

Since then, most often out of the public eye, an acrimonious dispute had begun to smoulder between the geologists and the Egyptologists.[14] And though very few people other than John West were prepared to say as much, what was at stake in this dispute was a complete upheaval in accepted views about the evolution of human civilization.

According to West:

> We are told that the evolution of human civilization is a linear process—that it goes from stupid cavemen to smart old us with our hydrogen bombs and striped toothpaste. But the proof that the Sphinx is many, many thousands of years older than the archaeologists think it is, that it preceded by many thousands of years even dynastic Egypt, means that there must have been, at some distant point in history, a high and sophisticated civilization—just as all the legends affirm.[15]

My own travels and research during the preceding four years had opened my eyes to the electrifying possibility that those legends could be true, and this was why I had come back to Egypt to meet West and Bauval. I was struck by the way in which their hitherto disparate lines of enquiry[16] had converged so convincingly on what appeared to be the astronomical and geological fingerprints of a lost civilization, one that might or might not have originated in the Nile Valley but that seemed to have had a presence here as far back as the eleventh millennium BC.

---

[11] Ibid.

[12] *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV, 1993.

[13] *Conde Nast Traveller,* February 1993, p. 176.

[14] E.g, American Association for the Advancement of Science, Chicago, 1992, Debate: How Old is the Sphinx?

[15] *Mystery of the Sphinx.*

[16] John West and Robert Bauval worked in isolation, unaware of each other's findings, until I introduced them.

The way of the jackal

Anubis, guardian of the secrets, god of the funerary chamber, jackal-headed opener of the ways of the dead, guide and companion of Osiris ...

It was around five o'clock in the afternoon, closing-time at the Cairo Museum, when Santha pronounced herself satisfied with her photographs of the sinister black effigy. Down below us guards were whistling and clapping their hands as they sought to herd the last few sightseers out of the halls, but up on the second floor of the hundred-year-old building, where ancient Anubis crouched in his millennial watchfulness, all was quiet, all was still.

We left the sombre museum and walked down into the sunlight still bathing Cairo's bustling Tahrir Square.

Anubis, I reflected, had shared his duties as spirit guide and guardian of the secret writings with another god whose type and symbol had also been the jackal and whose name, Upuaut, literally meant Opener of the Ways.[17] Both these canine deities had been linked since time immemorial with the ancient town of Abydos in upper Egypt, the original god of which, Khenti-Amentiu (the strangely named 'Foremost of the Westerners') had also been represented as a member of the dog family, usually lying recumbent on a black standard.[18]

Was there any significance in the repeated recurrence at Abydos of all this mythical and symbolic doggishness, with its promise of high secrets waiting to unfold? It seemed worthwhile trying to find out since the extensive ruins there included the structure known as the Osireion, which West's geological research had indicated might be far older than the archaeologists thought. Besides, I had already arranged to meet West in a few days in the upper Egyptian town of Luxor, less than 200 kilometres south of Abydos. Rather than flying directly to Luxor from Cairo, as I had originally planned, I now realized that it would be perfectly feasible to go by road and to visit Abydos and a number of other sites along the way.

Our driver, Mohamed Walili, was waiting for us in an underground car-park just off Tahrir Square. A large genial, elderly man, he owned a battered white Peugeot taxi normally to be found standing in the rank outside the Mena House hotel at Giza. Over the last few years, on our frequent research trips to Cairo, we had struck up a friendship with him and he now worked with us whenever we were in Egypt. We haggled for some time about the appropriate daily rate for the long return journey to Abydos and Luxor. Many matters had to be taken into account, including the fact that some of the areas we would be passing through had recently been targets of terrorist attacks by Islamic militants. Eventually we agreed on a price and arranged to set off early the following morning.

---

[17] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, p. 264.

[18] *Blue Guide, Egypt,* p. 509; see also *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* pp. 211-15; *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 31ff; *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 197.

Chapter 41

City of the Sun, Chamber of the Jackal

Mohamed picked us up at our hotel in Heliopolis at 6 a. m. when it was still half dark.

We drank small cups of thick black coffee at a roadside stall and then drove west, along dusty streets still almost deserted, towards the River Nile. I had asked Mohamed to take us through Maydan al-Massallah Square, which was dominated by one of the world's oldest intact Egyptian obelisks.[1] Weighing an estimated 350 tons, this was a pink granite monolith, 107 feet high, erected by Pharaoh Senuseret I (1971-1928 BC). It had originally been one of a pair at the gateway of the great Heliopolitan Temple of the Sun. In the 4000 years since then the temple itself had entirely vanished, as had the second obelisk. Indeed, almost all of ancient Heliopolis had now been obliterated, cannibalized for its handsome dressed stones and ready-made building materials by countless generations of the citizens of Cairo.[2]

Heliopolis (City of the Sun) was referred to in the Bible as On but was originally known in the Egyptian language as Innu, or Innu Mehret—meaning 'the pillar' or 'the northern pillar'.[3] It was a district of immense sanctity, associated with a strange group of nine solar and stellar deities, and was old beyond reckoning when Senuseret chose it as the site for his obelisk. Indeed, together with Giza (and the distant southern city of Abydos) Innu/Heliopolis was believed to have been part of the first land that emerged from the primeval waters at the moment of creation, the land of the 'First Time', where the gods had commenced their rule on earth.[4]

Heliopolitan theology rested on a creation-myth distinguished by a number of unique and curious features. It taught that in the beginning the universe had been filled with a dark, watery nothingness, called the Nun. Out of this inert cosmic ocean (described as 'shapeless, black with the blackness of the blackest night') rose a mound of dry land on which Ra, the Sun God, materialized in his self-created form as Atum (sometimes depicted as an old bearded man leaning on a staff):[5]

---

[1] 'Saqqara, Egypt: Archaeologists have discovered a green limestone obelisk, the world's oldest-known complete obelisk, dedicated to Inty, a wife of Pharaoh Pepi I, Egypt's ruler almost 4300 years ago, who was regarded as a goddess after her death.' *Times,* London, 9 May 1992; see also *Daily Telegraph,* London, 9 May 1992.

[2] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 173-4; Rosalie and Anthony E. David, *A Biographical Dictionary of Ancient Egypt,* Seaby, London, 1992, pp. 133-4; *Blue Guide, Egypt,* p. 413.

[3] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 110.

[4] George Hart, *Egyptian Myths,* British Museum Publications, 1990, p. 11.

[5] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 110; *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 66;

> The sky had not been created, the earth had not been created, the children of the earth and the reptiles had not been fashioned in that place ... I, Atum, was one by myself ... There existed no other who worked with me ...[6]

Conscious of being alone, this blessed and immortal being contrived to create two divine offspring, Shu, god of the air and dryness, and Tefnut the goddess of moisture: 'I thrust my phallus into my closed hand. I made my seed to enter my hand. I poured it into my own mouth. I evacuated under the form of Shu, I passed water under the form of Tefnut.'[7]

Despite such apparently inauspicious beginnings, Shu and Tefnut (who were always described as 'Twins' and frequently depicted as lions) grew to maturity, copulated and produced offspring of their own: Geb the god of the earth and Nut, the goddess of the sky. These two also mated, creating Osiris and Isis, Set and Nepthys, and so completed the Ennead, the full company of the Nine Gods of Heliopolis. Of the nine, Ra, Shu, Geb and Osiris were said to have ruled in Egypt as kings, followed by Horus, and lastly—for 3226 years—by the Ibis-headed wisdom god Thoth.[8]

Who were these people—or creatures, or beings, or gods? Were they figments of the priestly imagination, or symbols, or ciphers? Were the stories told about them vivid myth memories of real events which had taken place thousands of years previously? Or were they, perhaps, part of a coded message from the ancients that had been transmitting itself over and over again down the epochs—a message only now beginning to be unravelled and understood?

Such notions seemed fanciful. Nevertheless I could hardly forget that out of this very same Heliopolitan tradition the great myth of Isis and Osiris had flowed, covertly transmitting an accurate calculus for the rate of precessional motion. Moreover the priests of Innu, whose responsibility it had been to guard and nurture such traditions, had been renowned throughout Egypt for their high wisdom and their proficiency in prophecy, astronomy, mathematics, architecture and the magic arts. They were also famous for their possession of a powerful and sacred object known as the Benben.[9]

The Egyptians called Heliopolis Innu, the pillar, because tradition had it that the Benben had been kept here in remote pre-dynastic times, when it had balanced on top of a pillar of rough-hewn stone.

The Benben was believed to have fallen from the skies. Unfortunately, it had been lost so long before that its appearance was no longer

---

From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt, p. 140.

[6] Papyrus of Nesiamsu, cited in *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy,* pp. 188-9; see also *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* pp. 141-3.

[7] *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* p. 142. In other readings Shu and Tefnut were spat out by Ra-Atum.

[8] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 27. The figure 3126 is given in some accounts.

[9] *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* p. 13; C. Jacq, *Egyptian Magic,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1985, p. 8; *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

remembered by the time Senuseret took the throne in 1971 BC. In that period (the Twelfth Dynasty) all that was clearly recalled was that the Benben had been pyramidal in form, thus providing (together with the pillar on which it stood) a prototype for the shape of all future obelisks. The name Benben was likewise applied to the pyramidion, or apex stone, usually placed on top of pyramids.[10] In a symbolic sense, it was also associated closely and directly with Ra-Atum, of whom the ancient texts said, 'You became high on the height; you rose up as the Benben stone in the Mansion of the Phoenix ...'[11]

Mansion of the Phoenix described the original temple at Heliopolis where the Benben had been housed. It reflected the fact that the mysterious object had also served as an enduring symbol for the mythical Phoenix, the divine Bennu bird whose appearances and disappearances were believed to be linked to violent cosmic cycles and to the destruction and rebirth of world ages.[12]

Connections and similarities

Driving through the suburbs of Heliopolis at around 6:30 in the morning I closed my eyes and tried to summon up a picture of the landscape as it might have looked in the mythical First Time after the Island of Creation[13]—the primordial mound of Ra-Atum—had risen out of the flood waters of the Nun. It was tempting to see a connection between this imagery and the Andean traditions that spoke of the emergence of the civilizer god Viracocha from the waters of Lake Titicaca after an earth-destroying flood. Moreover there was the figure of Osiris to consider—a conspicuously *bearded* figure, like Viracocha, and like Quetzalcoatl as well—remembered for having abolished cannibalism among the Egyptians, for having taught them agriculture and animal husbandry, and for introducing them to such arts as writing, architecture, and music.[14]

The similarities between the Old and New World traditions were hard to miss but even harder to interpret. It was possible they were just a series of beguiling coincidences. On the other hand, it was possible that they might reveal the fingerprints of an ancient and unidentified global civilization—fingerprints that were essentially the same whether they appeared in the myths of Central America, or of the high Andes, or of

---

[10] *Kingship and the Gods,* p. 153.

[11] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 246.

[12] For a more detailed discussion see *The Orion Mystery,* p. 17. Bauval suggests that the Benben may have been an oriented meteorite: 'From depictions it would seem that this meteorite was from six to fifteen tons in mass ... the frightful spectacle of its fiery fall would have been very impressive ...', p. 204.

[13] *The Penguin Dictionary of Religions,* Penguin Books, London, 1988, p. 166.

[14] E.g. *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* Introduction, p. XLIX; *Qsiris And The Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, pp. 1-11.

Egypt. The priests of Heliopolis, after all, had taught of the creation, but who had taught *them?* Had they sprung out of nowhere, or was it more likely that their doctrine, with all its complex symbolism, was the product of a long refinement of religious ideas?

If so, when and where had these ideas developed?

I looked up to discover that we had left Heliopolis behind and were winding our way through the noisy and crowded streets of down-town Cairo. We crossed over to the west bank of the Nile by way of the 6 October Bridge and soon afterwards entered Giza. Fifteen minutes later, passing the massive bulk of the Great Pyramid on our right, we turned south on the road to upper Egypt, a road which followed the meridional course of the world's longest river through a landscape of palms and green fields fringed by the encroaching red wastes of pitiless deserts.

The ideas of the Heliopolitan priesthood had influenced every aspect of secular and religious life in Ancient Egypt, but had those ideas developed locally, or had they been introduced to the Nile Valley from elsewhere? The traditions of the Egyptians provided an unambiguous answer to questions such as these. All the wisdom of Heliopolis was a legacy, they said, and this legacy had been passed to humankind by the gods.

Gift of the Gods?

About ten miles south of the Great Pyramid we pulled off the main road to visit the necropolis of Saqqara. Rearing up on the desert's edge, the site was dominated by a six-tier ziggurat, the step-pyramid of the Third Dynasty Pharaoh Zoser. This imposing monument, almost 200 feet tall, was dated to approximately 2650 BC. It stood within its own compound, surrounded by an elegant enclosure wall, and was reckoned by archaeologists to be the earliest massive construction of stone ever attempted by humanity.[15] Tradition had it that its architect was the legendary Imhotep, 'Great of Magic', a high priest of Heliopolis, whose other titles were Sage, Sorcerer, Astronomer and Doctor.[16]

---

[15] humanity.15 Tradition had it that its architect was the legendary Imhotep, 'Great of Magic', a high priest of Heliopolis, whose other titles were Sage, Sorcerer, Astronomer and Doctor.16

[16] Ibid., p. 158.

Step Pyramid of Zoser
Pyramid of Unas

Saqqara.

We shall have more to say about the step-pyramid and its builder in a later chapter, but on this occasion I had not come to Saqqara to see it. My sole objective was to spend a few moments in the burial chamber of the nearby pyramid of Unas, a Fifth Dynasty pharaoh who had reigned from 2356 to 2323 BC.[17] The walls of this chamber, which I had visited several times before, were inscribed from floor to ceiling with the most ancient of the Pyramid Texts, an extravaganza of hieroglyphic inscriptions giving voice to a range of remarkable ideas—in acute contrast to the mute and unadorned interiors of the Fourth Dynasty pyramids at Giza.

A phenomenon exclusively of the Fifth and Sixth Dynasties (2465-2152 BC), the Pyramid Texts were sacred writings, parts of which were thought to have been composed by the Heliopolitan priesthood in the late third millennium BC, and parts of which had been received and handed down by them from pre-dynastic times.[18] It was the latter parts of these Texts, dating to a remote and impenetrable antiquity, which had particularly aroused my curiosity when I had begun to research them a few months previously. I had also been amused—and a little intrigued—by the strange way that nineteenth century French archaeologists appeared almost to have been directed to the hidden chamber of the Pyramid Texts by a mythological 'opener of the ways.' According to reasonably well-documented reports, an Egyptian foreman of the excavations at Saqqara had been up and about at dawn one morning and had found himself by the side of a ruined pyramid looking into the bright amber eyes of a lone desert jackal:

> It was as if the animal were taunting his human observer ... and inviting the puzzled man to chase him. Slowly the jackal sauntered towards the north face of

---

[17] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

[18] *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* p. 147: 'Judging by the Pyramid Texts, the priests of Heliopolis borrowed very largely from the religious beliefs of the predynastic Egyptians ...' See also *The Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead,* p. 11.

> the pyramid, stopping for a moment before disappearing into a hole. The bemused Arab decided to follow his lead. After slipping through the narrow hole, he found himself crawling into the dark bowels of the pyramid. Soon he emerged into a chamber and, lifting his light, saw that the walls were covered from top to bottom with hieroglyphic inscriptions. These were carved with exquisite craftsmanship into the solid limestone and painted over with turquoise and gold.'[19]

Today the hieroglyph-lined chamber beneath the ruined pyramid of Unas is still reached through the north face by the long descending passage the French archaeological team excavated soon after the foreman's astonishing discovery. The chamber consists of two rectangular rooms separated by a partition wall, into which is let a low doorway. Both rooms are covered by a gabled ceiling painted with myriads of stars. Emerging stooped from the cramped passage, Santha and I entered the first of the two rooms and passed through the connecting doorway into the second. This was the tomb chamber proper, with the massive black granite sarcophagus of Unas at its western end and the strange utterances of the Pyramid Texts proclaiming themselves from every wall.

Speaking to us directly (rather than through riddles and mathematical legerdemain like the unadorned walls of the Great Pyramid), what were the hieroglyphs saying? I knew that the answer depended to some extent on which translation you were using, largely because the language of the Pyramid Texts contained so many archaic forms and so many unfamiliar mythological allusions that scholars were obliged to fill in the gaps in their knowledge with guesswork.[20] Nevertheless it was generally agreed that the late R. O. Faulkner, a professor of the Ancient Egyptian Language at University College London, had produced the most authoritative version.[21]

Faulkner, whose translation I had studied line by line, described the Texts as constituting 'the oldest corpus of Egyptian religious and funerary literature now extant' and added, 'they are the least corrupt of all such collections and are of fundamental importance to the student of Egyptian religion ...'[22] The reason *why* the Texts were so important (as many scholars agreed), was that they were the last completely open channel connecting the relatively short period of the past that humanity remembers to the far longer period that has been forgotten: 'They vaguely disclose to us a vanished world of thought and speech, the last of the unnumbered aeons through which prehistoric man has passed, till finally he ... enters the historic age.'[23]

---

[19] *The Orion Mystery,* pp. 57-8.

[20] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* pp. 166; *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. V: 'The Pyramid Texts ... include very ancient texts ... There are many mythological and other allusions of which the purport is obscure to the translator of today ...'

[21] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts.*

[22] Ibid., p. v.

[23] James Henry Breasted, *The Dawn of Conscience,* Charles Scribner's Sons, New York,

It was hard to disagree with sentiments like these: the Texts did disclose a vanished world. But what intrigued me most about this world was the possibility that it might have been inhabited not only by primitive savages (as one would have expected in remote prehistory) but, paradoxically, by men and women whose minds had been enlightened by a scientific understanding of the cosmos. The overall picture was equivocal: there were genuinely primitive elements locked into the Pyramid Texts alongside the loftier sequences of ideas. Nevertheless, every time I immersed myself in what Egyptologists call 'these ancient spells', I was impressed by the strange glimpses they seemed to afford of a high intelligence at work, darting from behind layers of incomprehension, reporting on experiences that 'prehistoric man' should never have had and expressing notions he should never have been able to formulate. In short, the effect the Texts achieved through the medium of hieroglyphs was akin to the effect the Great Pyramid achieved through the medium of architecture. In both cases the dominant impression was of *anachronism*—of advanced technological processes used or described at a period in human history when there was supposed to have been no technology at all ...

1944, p. 69.

Chapter 42

Anachronisms and Enigmas

I looked around the grey-walled chamber of Unas, up and down the long registers of hieroglyphs in which the Pyramid Texts were inscribed. They were written in a dead language. Nevertheless, the constant affirmation, repeated over and over again in these ancient compositions, was that of *life*—eternal life—which was to be achieved through the pharaoh's rebirth as a star in the constellation of Orion. As the reader will recall from Chapter Nineteen, (where we compared Egyptian beliefs with those of Ancient Mexico), there were several utterances which voiced this aspiration explicitly:

> Oh King, you are this Great Star, the Companion of Orion, who traverses the sky with Orion ... you ascend from the east of the sky being renewed in your due season, and rejuvenated in your due time ...'[1]

Though undeniably beautiful there was nothing inherently extraordinary about these sentiments, and it was by no means impossible to attribute them to a people assessed by the French archaeologist Gaston Maspero as having 'always remained half savage'.[2] Furthermore, since Maspero had been the first Egyptologist to enter the pyramid of Unas,[3] and was considered a great authority on the Texts, it was hardly surprising that his opinions should have shaped all academic responses to this literature since he began to publish translations from it in the 1880s.[4] Maspero (with a little help from a jackal) had brought the Pyramid Texts to the world. Thereafter, the dominance of his particular prejudices about the past had functioned as a filter on knowledge, inhibiting variant interpretations of the more opaque or puzzling utterances. This seemed to me to be unfortunate to say the least. What it meant was that, despite the technical and scientific puzzles raised by monuments like the Great Pyramid at Giza, scholars had ignored the implications of some striking passages in the Texts.

These passages sounded suspiciously like attempts to express complex technical and scientific imagery *in an entirely inappropriate idiom.* Maybe it was coincidence, but the result resembled the outcome that we might expect today if we were to try to translate Einstein's Theory of Relativity into Chaucerian English or to describe a supersonic aircraft in vocabulary derived from Middle High German.

---

[1] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* lines 882, 883; see also, *inter alia,* lines 2115 and 2116.

[2] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 117.

[3] He did so on 28 February 1881; see *The Orion Mystery,* p. 59.

[4] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. v.

Broken images of a lost technology?

Take for example some of the peculiar equipment and accessories designated for the pharaoh's use as he journeyed to his eternal resting place among the stars:

> The gods who are in the sky are brought to you, the gods who are on earth assemble for you, they place their hands under you, they make a *ladder* for you that you may ascend on it into the sky, the doors of the sky are thrown open to you, the doors of the starry firmament are thrown open for you.[5]

The ascending pharaoh was identified with, and frequently referred to, as 'an Osiris'. Osiris himself, as we have seen, was frequently linked to and associated with the constellation of Orion. Osiris-Orion was said to have been the first to have climbed the great ladder the gods had made. And several utterances left no doubt that this ladder had not extended upwards from earth to heaven but downwards from heaven to earth. It was described as a *rope-ladder*[6] and the belief was that it had hung from an 'iron plate' suspended in the sky.[7]

Were we dealing here, I wondered, simply with the bizarre imaginings of half-savage priests? Or might there be some other explanation for allusions such as these?

In Utterance 261, 'The King is a flame, moving before the wind to the end of the sky and to the end of the earth ... the King travels the air and traverses the earth ... there is brought to him a way of ascent to the sky ...'[8]

Switching to dialogue, Utterance 310 proclaimed,

'O you whose vision is in his face and whose vision is in the back of his head, bring this to me!'

'What ferry-boat shall be brought to you?'

'Bring me: "It-flies-and-alights".'[9]

Utterance 332, supposedly spoken by the King himself, confided, 'I am this one who has escaped from the coiled serpent, I have ascended in a blast of fire having turned myself about. The two skies go to me.[10]

And in Utterance 669 it was asked, 'Wherewith can the King be made to fly-up?'

The reply was given: 'There shall be brought to you the *Hnw*-bark [italicized word untranslatable] and the ... [text missing] of the *hn*-bird [italicized word untranslatable]. You shall fly up therewith ... You shall fly up and alight.'[11]

---

[5] Ibid., p. 227, Utt. 572.

[6] Ibid., p. 297, Utt. 688: 'Atum has done what he said he would do for this King; he ties the rope-ladder for him.'

[7] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, p. 241.

[8] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 70, Utt. 261.

[9] Ibid., p. 97.

[10] Ibid., p. 107.

Other passages also seemed to me worthy of more thorough investigation than they have received from scholars. Here are a few examples:

> O my father, great King, the aperture of the sky-window is opened for you.[12]
>
> 'The door of the sky at the horizon opens to you, the gods are glad at meeting you ... May you sit on this iron throne of yours, as the Great One who is in Heliopolis.[13]
>
> O King, may you ascend ... The sky reels at you, the earth quakes at you, the Imperishable Stars are afraid of you. I have come to you, O you whose seats are hidden, that I may embrace you in the sky ...[14]
>
> The earth speaks, the gate of the earth god is open, the doors of Geb are opened for you ... May you remove yourself to the sky upon your iron throne.[15]
>
> O my father the King, such is your going when you have gone as a god, your travelling as a celestial being ... you stand in the Conclaves of the horizon ... and sit on this throne of iron at which the gods marvel ...[16]

The constant references to iron, though easy to overlook, were puzzling. Iron, I knew, had been a rare metal in Ancient Egypt, particularly in the Pyramid Age when it had supposedly only been available in meteoritic form.[17] Yet here, in the Pyramid Texts, there seemed to be an embarrassment of iron riches: iron plates in the sky, iron thrones, and elsewhere an iron sceptre (Utterance 665C) and even iron bones for the King (Utterances 325, 684 and 723).[18]

In the Ancient Egyptian language the name for iron had been *bja,* a word that meant literally 'metal of heaven' or 'divine metal'.[19] The knowledge of iron was thus regarded as yet another gift from the gods ...

Repositories of a lost science?

What other fingerprints might these gods have left behind in the Pyramid Texts?[20]

---

[11] Ibid., p. 284.

[12] Ibid., p. 249, Utt. 604.

[13] Ibid., pp. 253-4, Utt. 610.

[14] Ibid., p. 280, Utt. 667.

[15] Ibid., p. 170, Utt. 483.

[16] Ibid., p. 287, Utt. 673.

[17] B. Scheel, *Egyptian Metalworking and Tools,* Shire Egyptology, Aylesbury, 1989; G. A. Wainwright, 'Iron in Egypt', *Journal of Egyptian Archaeology,* vol. 18, 1931.

[18] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* pp. 276, 105, 294, 311.

[19] *Egyptian Metalworking and Tools,* p. 17; 'Iron in Egypt', p. 6ff.

[20] Among the many mysterious aspects of the Pyramid Texts it is perhaps inevitable that a fully qualified Opener of the Ways should put in an appearance. 'The doors of the sky are opened to you, the starry sky is thrown open for you, the jackal of upper Egypt comes down to you as Anubis at your side.' *(The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* pp.

In my readings—here and there among the most archaic of the Utterances—I had come across several metaphors that seemed to refer to the passage of *epochs of precessional time.* These metaphors stood out from the surrounding material because they were expressed in what had become a clear and familiar terminology to me: that of the archaic scientific language identified by Santillana and von Dechend in *Hamlet's Mill.*[21]

The reader may recall that a cosmic 'diagram' of the four props of the sky was one of the standard thought tools employed in that ancient language. Its purpose was to assist visualisation of the four imaginary bands conceived as framing, supporting and defining a precessional world age. These were what astronomers call the 'equinoctial and solstitial colures' and were seen as hooping down from the celestial north pole and marking the four constellations against the background of which, for periods of 2160 years at a time, the sun would consistently rise on the spring and autumn equinoxes and on the winter and summer solstices.[22]

The Pyramid Texts appear to contain several versions of this diagram. Moreover, as is so often the case with prehistoric myths which transmit hard astronomical data, the precessional symbolism is interwoven tightly with violent images of terrestrial destruction—as though to suggest that the 'breaking of the mill of heaven', that is the transition every 2160 years from one zodiacal age to another, could under ill-omened circumstances bring catastrophic influences to bear on terrestrial events.

Thus it was said that

> Ra-Atum, the god who created himself, was originally king over gods and men together but mankind schemed against his sovereignty, for he began to grow old, his bones became silver, his flesh gold and his hair [as] lapis lazuli.[23]

When he realized what was happening, the ageing Sun God (so reminiscent of Tonatiuh, the bloodthirsty Fifth Sun of the Aztecs) determined that he would punish this insurrection by killing off most of the human race. The instrument of the havoc he unleashed was symbolized at times as a raging lioness wading in blood and at times as the fearsome lion-headed goddess Sekhmet who 'poured fire out of herself and savaged mankind in an ecstasy of slaughter.[24]

The terrible destruction continued unabated for a long period. Then at last Ra intervened to save the lives of a 'remnant', the ancestors of present humanity. This intervention took the form of a flood which the

---

288-9, Utt. 675.) Here, as in other contexts, the function of the canine figure seems to be to serve as a *guide* to secret hoards of esoteric information often linked to mathematics and astronomy.

[21] See Part V for full details.

[22] Ibid.

[23] *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 181.

[24] The pouring fire allusion is cited in Jean-Pierre Hallet, *Pygmy Kitabu,* p. 185.

lioness thirstily lapped up and then fell asleep. When she awoke, she was no longer interested in pursuing the destruction, and peace descended upon the devastated world.[25]

Meanwhile Ra had resolved to 'draw away' from what was left of his creation: 'As I live my heart is weary of staying with Mankind. I have gone on killing them [almost] to the very last one, so the [insignificant] remnant is not my affair ...'[26]

The Sun God then rose into the sky on the back of the sky-goddess Nut who (for the purposes of the precessional metaphor about to be delivered) had transformed herself into a cow. Before very long—in a close analogy to the 'shaft-tree' that 'shivered' on Amlodhi's wildly gyrating mill—the cow grew 'dizzy and began to shake and to tremble because she was so high above the earth.'[27] When she complained to Ra about this precarious state of affairs he commanded, 'Let my son Shu be put beneath Nut to keep guard for me over the heavenly supports—which exist in the twilight. Put her above your head and keep her there.'[28] As soon as Shu had taken his place beneath the cow and had stabilized her body, 'the heavens above and the earth beneath came into being'. At the same moment, 'the four legs of the cow', as Egyptologist Wallis Budge commented in his classic study *The Gods of the Egyptians,* 'became the four props of heaven at the four cardinal points'.[29]

Like most scholars, Budge understandably assumed that the 'cardinal points' referred to in this Ancient Egyptian tradition had strictly terrestrial connotations and that 'heaven' represented nothing more than the sky above our heads. He took it for granted that the point of the metaphor was for us to envisage the cow's four legs as positioned at the four points of the compass—north, south, east and west. He also thought—and even today few Egyptologists would disagree with him—that the simple-minded priests of Heliopolis had actually *believed* that the sky had four corners which were supported on four legs and that Shu, 'the skybearer *par excellence',* had stood immobile like a pillar at the centre of the whole edifice.[30]

Reinterpreted in the light of Santillana's and von Dechend's findings, however, Shu and the four legs of the celestial cow look much more like the components of an archaic scientific symbol depicting the frame of a precessional world age—the polar axis (Shu) and the colures (the four legs or 'props' marking the equinoctial and solstitial cardinal points in the annual round of the sun).

Moreover, it is tempting to speculate *which* world age was being signalled here ...

---

[25] *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 181-5.

[26] Ibid., p. 184.

[27] Ibid., p. 185.

[28] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, p. 94.

[29] Ibid., p. 92-4.

[30] Ibid., p. 93.

With a cow involved it could have been the Age of Taurus, although the Egyptians knew the difference between bulls and cows as well as anyone. But a much more likely contender—at any rate on purely symbolic grounds—is the age of Leo, from approximately 10,970 to 8810 BC.[31] The reason is that Sekhmet, the agent of the destruction of Mankind referred to in the myth, was *leonine* in form. What better way to symbolize the troubled birth of the new world age of Leo than to depict its harbinger as a rampaging lion, particularly since the Age of Leo coincided with the final ferocious meltdown of the last Ice Age, during which huge numbers of animal species all over the earth were suddenly and violently rendered extinct.'[32] Mankind survived the immense floods and earthquakes and rapid changes of climate that took place, but very probably in much reduced numbers and much reduced circumstances.

The train of the Sun and the dweller in Sirius

Of course the ability to recognize and define precessional world ages in myth implies that the Ancient Egyptians possessed better observational astronomy and a more sophisticated understanding of the mechanics of the solar system than any ancient people have hitherto been credited with.[33] There is no doubt that knowledge of this calibre, if it existed at all, would have been highly regarded by the Ancient Egyptians, who would have transmitted it from generation to generation in a secretive manner. Indeed, it would have ranked among the highest arcana entrusted to the keeping of the priestly elite at Heliopolis and would have been passed on, in the main, through an oral and initiatory tradition.[34] If, by chance it had found its way into the Pyramid Texts, is it not likely that its form would have been veiled by metaphors and allegories?

I walked slowly across the dusty floor of the tomb chamber of Unas, noting the heavy stillness in the air, casting my eyes over the faded blue and gold inscriptions. Expressed in coded language several millennia before Copernicus and Galileo, some of the passages inscribed on these walls seemed to offer clues to the true heliocentric nature of the solar system.

---

[31] Skyglobe 3.6.

[32] See Part IV.

[33] For a detailed discussion see *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy.*

[34] The issue of priestly secrecy and the oral tradition is discussed at length in *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* e.g. p. 43: 'It is impossible to think that the highest order of the priests did not possess esoteric knowledge which they guarded with the greatest care. Each priesthood ... possessed a "Gnosis", a "superiority of knowledge", which they never put into writing ... It is therefore absurd to expect to find in Egyptian papyri descriptions of the secrets which formed the esoteric knowledge of the priests.' See also page 27, and *Sacred Science,* pp. 273-4.

In one, for example, Ra, the Sun God, was depicted as seated upon an iron throne encircled by lesser gods who moved around him constantly and who were said to be ‘in his train’.[35] Likewise, in another passage, the deceased Pharaoh was urged to ‘stand at the head of the two halves of the sky and weigh the words of the gods, the aged ones, who revolve around Ra.’[36]

If the ‘aged ones’ and the ‘encircling gods’ revolving around Ra should prove to be parts of a terminology referring to the planets of our solar system, the original authors of the Pyramid Texts must have enjoyed access to some remarkably advanced astronomical data. They must have known that the earth and the planets revolved around the sun rather than vice versa.[37] The problem this raises is that neither the Ancient Egyptians at any stage in their history, nor even their successors the Greeks, or for that matter the Europeans until the Renaissance, are supposed to have possessed cosmological data of anything approaching this quality. How, therefore, can its presence be explained in compositions which date back to the dawn of Egyptian civilization?

Another (and perhaps related) mystery concerns the star Sirius, which the Egyptians identified with Isis, the sister and consort of Osiris and the mother of Horus. In a passage addressed to Osiris himself, the Pyramid Texts state:

> Thy sister Isis cometh unto thee rejoicing in her love for thee. Thou settest her upon thee, thy issue entereth into her, and she becometh great with child like the star Sept [Sirius, the Dog Star]. Horus-Sept cometh forth from thee in the form of Horus, dweller in Sept.[38]

Many interpretations of this passage are, of course, possible. What intrigued me, however, was the clear implication that Sirius was to be regarded as a *dual entity* in some way comparable to a woman ‘great with child’. Moreover, after the birth (or coming forth) of that child, the text makes a special point of reminding us that Horus remained a ‘dweller in Sept’, presumably suggesting that he stayed close to his mother.

Sirius is an unusual star. A sparkling point of light particularly prominent in the winter months in the night skies of the northern hemisphere, it consists of a *binary* star system, i.e. it is in fact, as the Pyramid Texts suggest, a ‘dual entity’. The major component, Sirius-A, is what we see. Sirius-B, on the other hand—the dwarf-star which revolves around Sirius A—is absolutely invisible to the naked eye. Its existence did not become known to Western science until 1862, when US astronomer Alvin Clark spotted it through one of the largest and most advanced telescopes of the day.[39] How could the scribes who wrote the Pyramid

---

[35] Pyramid Texts cited in *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 158.

[36] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 146.

[37] *Sacred Science,* pp. 22-5, 29.

[38] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 93.

[39] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 10:845.

Texts possibly have obtained the information that Sirius was two stars in one?

In *The Sirius Mystery,* an important book published in 1976, I knew that the American author Robert Temple had offered some extraordinary answers to this question.[40] His study focused on the traditional beliefs of the Dogon tribe of West Africa—beliefs in which the binary character of Sirius was explicitly described and in which the correct figure of fifty years was given for the period of the orbit of Sirius-B around Sirius-A.[41] Temple argued cogently that this high quality technical information had been passed down to the Dogon from *the Ancient Egyptians* through a process of cultural diffusion, and that it was to the Ancient Egyptians that we should look for an answer to the Sirius mystery. He also concluded that the Ancient Egyptians must have received the information from intelligent beings from the region of Sirius'.[42]

Like Temple, I had begun to suspect that the more advanced and sophisticated elements of Egyptian science made sense only if they were understood as parts of an inheritance. Unlike Temple, I saw no urgent reason to attribute that inheritance to extra-terrestrials. To my mind the anomalous star knowledge the Heliopolitan priests had apparently possessed was more plausibly explained as the legacy of a lost human civilization which, against the current of history, had achieved a high level of technological advancement in remote antiquity. It seemed to me that the building of an instrument capable of detecting Sirius-B might not have been beyond the ingenuity of the unknown explorers and scientists who originated the remarkable maps of the prehistoric world discussed in Part I. Nor would it have daunted the unknown astronomers and measurers of time who bequeathed to the Ancient Maya a calendar of amazing complexity, a data-base about the movements of the heavenly bodies which could only have been the product of thousands of years of accurately recorded observations, and a facility with very large numbers that seemed more appropriate to the needs of a complex technological society than to those of a 'primitive' Central American kingdom.[43]

Millions of years and the movements of the stars

Very large numbers also appeared in the Pyramid Texts, in the symbolic 'boat of millions of years', for example, in which the Sun God was said to navigate the dark and airless wastes of interstellar space.[44] Thoth, the god of wisdom ('he who reckons in heaven, the counter of the stars, the measurer of the earth') was specifically empowered to grant a life of millions of years to the deceased pharaoh.[45] Osiris, 'king of eternity, lord of everlasting', was described as traversing millions of years in his life.'[46] And figures like 'tens of millions of years' (as well as the more mind-boggling 'one million of millions of years')[47] occurred often enough to suggest that some elements at least of Ancient Egyptian culture must have evolved for the convenience of scientifically minded people with more than passing insight into the immensity of time.

---

[40] *The Sirius Mystery.*

[41] Ibid., p. 3.

[42] Ibid., p. 1.

[43] See Part III.

[44] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* p. cxi.

Such a people would, of course, have required an excellent calendar—one that would have facilitated complex and accurate calculations. It was therefore not surprising to learn that the Ancient Egyptians, like the Maya, had possessed such a calendar and that their understanding of its workings seemed to have declined, rather than improved, as the ages went by.[48] It was tempting to see this as the gradual erosion of a corpus of knowledge inherited an extremely long time ago, an impression supported by the Ancient Egyptians themselves, who made no secret of their belief that their calendar was a legacy which they had received 'from the gods'.

We consider the possible identity of these gods in more detail in the following chapters. Whoever they were, they must have spent a great deal of their time observing the stars, and they had accumulated a fund of advanced and specialized knowledge concerning the star Sirius in particular. Further evidence for this came in the form of the most useful calendrical gift which the gods supposedly gave to the Egyptians: the *Sothic* (or Sirian) cycle.[49]

The Sothic cycle was based on what is referred to in technical jargon as 'the periodic return of the heliacal rising of Sirius', which is the first appearance of this star after a seasonal absence, rising at dawn just ahead of the sun in the eastern portion of the sky.[50] In the case of Sirius the interval between one such rising and the next amounts to *exactly* 365.25 days—a mathematically harmonious figure, uncomplicated by further decimal points, which is just twelve minutes longer than the duration of the solar year.[51]

The curious thing about Sirius is that out of an estimated 2000 stars in the heavens visible to the naked eye it is the only one to rise heliacally at this precise and nicely rounded interval of 365 and a quarter days—a unique product of its 'proper motion' (the speed of its own movement through space) combined with the effects of precession of the equinoxes.[52] Moreover, it is known that the day of the heliacal rising of Sirius—New Year's Day in the Ancient Egyptian calendar—was traditionally calculated at Heliopolis, where the Pyramid Texts were compiled, and announced ahead of time to all the other major temples up and down the Nile.[53]

---

[45] Ibid., p. cxviii. See also *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 400.

[46] *The Egyptian Book of the Dead,* p. 8.

[47] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, p. 248.

[48] For a full discussion see *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* particularly pp. 328-30.

[49] *Sacred Science,* p. 27.

[50] *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 27.

[51] *Sacred Science,* p. 172.

I remembered that Sirius was referred to directly in the Pyramid Texts by 'her name of the New Year'.[54] Together with other relevant utterances (e.g., 669[55]), this confirmed that the Sothic calendar was *at least* as old as the Texts themselves,[56] and their origins stretched back into the mists of distant antiquity. The great enigma, therefore, is this: in such an early period, who could have possessed the necessary know-how to observe and take note of the coincidence of the period of 365.25 days with the heliacal rising of Sirius—a coincidence described by the French mathematician R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz as 'an entirely exceptional celestial phenomenon'?[57]

> We cannot but admire the greatness of a science capable of discovering such a coincidence. The double star of Sirius was chosen because it was the only star that moves the needed distance and in the right direction against the background of the other stars. This fact, known four thousand years before our time and forgotten until our day, obviously demands an extraordinary and prolonged observation of the sky.[58]

It was such a legacy—built out of long centuries of precise observational astronomy and scientific record-keeping—that Egypt seems to have I benefited from at the beginning of the historical period and that was expressed in the Pyramid Texts.

In this, too, there lies a mystery ...

Copies, or translations?

Writing in 1934, the year of his death, Wallis Budge, former Keeper of Egyptian Antiquities at the British Museum and the author of an authoritative hieroglyphic dictionary,[59] made this frank admission:

---

[52] Ibid., p. 26-7. For numbers of stars visible to the naked eye see Ian Ridpath and Wil Tirion, *Collins Guide to Stars and Planets,* London, 1984, p. 4.

[53] *Sacred Science,* p. 173.

[54] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 165, line 964. *Sacred Science,* p. 287.

[55] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* pp. 165, 284; *Sacred Science,* in particular p. 287ff.

[56] The established archaeological horizon of the calendar can indeed be pushed back even further because of the recent discovery, in a First Dynasty tomb in upper Egypt, of an inscription reading, 'Sothis, herald of the New Year' (reported in *Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* p. 40.)

[57] *Sacred Science,* p. 290.

[58] Ibid., p. 27.

[59] E. A. Wallis Budge, *An Egyptian Hieroglyphic Dictionary,* (2 volumes), John Murray, London, 1920.

> The Pyramid Texts are full of difficulties of every kind. The exact meanings of a large number of words found in them are unknown ... The construction of the sentence often baffles all attempts to translate it, and when it contains wholly unknown words it becomes an unsolved riddle. It is only reasonable to suppose that these texts were often used for funerary purposes, but it is quite clear that their period of use in Egypt was little more than one hundred years. Why they were suddenly brought into use at the end of the Fifth Dynasty and ceased to be used at the end of the Sixth Dynasty is inexplicable.'[60]

Could the answer be that they were copies of an earlier literature which Unas, the last pharaoh of the Fifth Dynasty, together with several of his successors in the Sixth Dynasty, had attempted to fix for ever in stone in the tomb chambers of their own pyramids? Budge thought so, and felt the evidence suggested that some at least of the source documents must have been exceedingly old:

> Several passages bear evidence that the scribes who drafted the copies from which the cutters of the inscriptions worked did not understand what they were writing ... The general impression is that the priests who drafted the copies made extracts from several compositions of different ages and having different contents ...'[61]

All this assumed that the source documents, whatever they were, must have been written in an archaic form of the Ancient Egyptian language. There was, however, an alternative possibility which Budge failed to consider. Suppose that the task of the priests had been not only to *copy* material but to *translate* into hieroglyphs texts originally composed in another language altogether? If that language had included a technical terminology and references to artefacts and ideas for which no equivalent terms existed in Ancient Egyptian, this would provide an explanation for the strange impression given by certain of the utterances. Moreover, if the copying and translating of the original source documents had been completed by the end of the Sixth Dynasty, it was easy to understand why no more 'Pyramid Texts' had ever been carved: the project would have come to a halt when it had fulfilled its objective—which would have been to create a permanent hieroglyphic record of a sacred literature that had already been tottering with age when Unas had taken the throne of Egypt in 2356 BC.

Last records of the First Time?

Because we wanted to cover as much of the distance to Abydos as was possible before nightfall, Santha and I reluctantly decided that it was time to get back on the road. Although we had originally intended to spend only a few minutes, the sombre gloom and ancient voices of the Unas tomb chamber had lulled our senses and almost two hours had passed since our arrival. Stooping, we left the tomb and climbed the steeply angled passageway to the exit, where we paused to allow our eyes to adjust to the harsh mid-morning sunlight. As we did so, I took the opportunity to look over the pyramid itself, which had fallen into such a crumbling and thoroughly dilapidated state that its original form was barely recognizable. The core masonry, reduced to little more than a nondescript heap of rubble, was evidently of poor quality, and even the facing blocks—some of which were still intact—lacked the finesse and careful workmanship demonstrated by the older pyramids at Giza.

---

[60] *From Fetish to God In Ancient Egypt*, pp. 321-2.
[61] Ibid., p. 322.

This was hard to explain in conventional historical terms. If the normal evolutionary processes that govern the development of architectural skills and ideas had been at work in Egypt, one would have expected to find the opposite to be true: the design, engineering and masonry of the Unas Pyramid should have been superior to these of the Giza group, which, according to orthodox chronology, had been built about two centuries previously.[62]

The uncomfortable fact that this was not the case (i.e., Giza was ‘better’ than Unas and not vice versa) created knotty challenges for Egyptologists and raised questions to which no satisfactory answers had been supplied. To reiterate the central problem: everything about the three stunning and superb pyramids of Khufu, Khafre and Menkaure proclaimed that they were the end products of hundreds, perhaps even thousands of years of accumulated architectural and engineering experience. This was not supported by the archaeological evidence which left no doubt that they were among the earliest pyramids ever built in Egypt—in other words, they were not the products of the mature phase of that country’s pyramid-building experiment but, anomalously, were the creations of its infancy.

A further mystery also cried out for a solution. In the three great pyramids at Giza, Egypt’s Fourth Dynasty had reared up mansions of eternity—unprecedented and unsurpassed masterpieces of stone, hundreds of feet high, weighing millions of tons apiece, which incorporated many extremely advanced features. No pyramids of comparable quality were ever built again. But only a little later, beneath the smaller, shabbier superstructures of the Fifth and Sixth Dynasty pyramids, a sort of Hall of Records seemed to have been deliberately created: a permanent exhibition of copies or translations of archaic documents which was, at the same time, an unprecedented and unsurpassed masterpiece of scribal and hieroglyphic art.

In short, like the pyramids at Giza, it seemed that the Pyramid Texts had burst upon the scene with no apparent antecedents, and had occupied centre-stage for approximately a hundred years before ‘ceasing operations’, never to be bettered.

Presumably the ancient kings and sages who had arranged these things had known what they were doing? If so, their minds must have contained a plan, and they must have intended a strong connection to be seen between the completely uninscribed (but technically brilliant)—pyramids at Giza, and the brilliantly inscribed (but technically slipshod) pyramids of the Fifth and Sixth Dynasties.

---

[62] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

I suspected, too, that at least part of the answer to the problem might lie in the pyramid-field of Dahshur, which we passed fifteen minutes after leaving Saqqara. It was here that the so-called 'Bent' and 'Red' Pyramids were located. Attributed to Sneferu, Khufu's father, these two monuments (by all accounts very well preserved) had been closed to the public many years ago. A military base had been built around them and they had for a long while been impossible to visit—under any circumstances, ever ...

As we continued our journey south, through the bright colours of that December day, I was overtaken by a compelling sense that the Nile Valley had been the scene of momentous events for humanity long before the recorded history of mankind began. All the most ancient records and traditions of Egypt spoke of such events and associated them with the epoch during which the gods had ruled on earth: the fabled First Time, which was called Zep Tepi.[63] We shall delve into these records in the next two chapters.

---

[63] *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, p. 263.

Chapter 43

Looking for the First Time

Here is what the Ancient Egyptians said about the First Time, Zep Tepi, when the gods ruled in their country: they said it was a golden age[1] during which the waters of the abyss receded, the primordial darkness was banished, and humanity, emerging into the light, was offered the gifts of civilization.[2] They spoke also of intermediaries between gods and men—the Urshu, a category of lesser divinities whose title meant 'the Watchers'.[3] And they preserved particularly vivid recollections of the gods themselves, puissant and beautiful beings called the Neteru who lived on earth with humankind and exercised their sovereignty from Heliopolis and other sanctuaries up and down the Nile. Some of these Neteru were male and some female but all possessed a range of supernatural powers which included the ability to appear, at will, as men or women, or as animals, birds, reptiles, trees or plants. Paradoxically, their words and deeds seem to have reflected human passions and preoccupations. Likewise, although they were portrayed as stronger and more intelligent than humans, it was believed that they could grow sick—or even die, or be killed—under certain circumstances.[4]

Records of prehistory

Archaeologists are adamant that the epoch of the gods, which the Ancient Egyptians, called the First Time, is nothing more than a myth. The Ancient Egyptians, however, who may have been better informed about their past than we are, did not share this view. The historical records they kept in their most venerable temples included comprehensive lists of all the kings of Egypt: lists naming every pharaoh of every dynasty recognized by scholars today.[5] Some of these lists went even further, reaching back beyond the historical horizon of the First Dynasty into the uncharted depths of a remote and profound antiquity.

Two lists of kings in this category have survived the ravages of the ages and, having been exported from Egypt, are now preserved in European museums. We shall consider these lists in more detail later in this chapter. They are known respectively as the Palermo Stone (dating from the Fifth Dynasty—around the twenty-fifth century BC), and the Turin Papyrus, a nineteenth Dynasty temple document inscribed in a cursive form of hieroglyphs known as hieratic and dated to the thirteenth century BC.[6]

---

[1] *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* pp. 263-4; see also Nicolas Grimal, *A History of Ancient Egypt,* Blackwell, Cambridge, 1992, p. 46.

[2] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 16.

[3] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, pp. 84, 161; *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* pp. 124, 308.

[4] *Osiris And The Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 352.

[5] Michael Hoffman, *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* Michael O'Mara Books, 1991, pp. 12-13; *Archaic Egypt,* pp. 21-3; *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 138-9.

In addition, we have the testimony of a Heliopolitan priest named Manetho. In the third century BC he compiled a comprehensive and widely respected history of Egypt which provided extensive king lists for the entire dynastic period. Like the Turin Papyrus and the Palermo Stone, Manetho's history also reached much further back into the past to speak of a distant epoch when gods had ruled in the Nile Valley.

Manetho's complete text has not come down to us, although copies of it seem to have been in circulation as late as the ninth century AD.[7] Fortuitously, however, fragments of it were preserved in the writings of the Jewish chronicler Josephus (AD 60) and of Christian writers such as Africanus (AD 300), Eusebius (AD 340) and George Syncellus (AD 800).[8] These fragments, in the words of the late Professor Michael Hoffman of the University of South Carolina, provide the 'framework for modern approaches to the study of Egypt's past'.[9]

This is quite true.[10] Nevertheless, Egyptologists are prepared to use Manetho only as a source for the historical (dynastic) period and repudiate the strange insights he provides into prehistory when he speaks of the remote golden age of the First Time. Why should we be so selective in our reliance on Manetho? What is the logic of accepting thirty 'historical' dynasties from him and rejecting all that he has to say about earlier epochs? Moreover, since we know that his chronology for the historical period has been vindicated by archaeology,[11] isn't it a bit premature for us to assume that his pre-dynastic chronology is wrong because excavations have not yet turned up evidence confirming it?[12]

---

[6] *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* pp. 12-13; *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 200, 268.

[7] *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* p. 12.

[8] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 23; *Manetho,* (trans. W. G. Waddell), William Heinemann, London, 1940, Introduction pp. xvi-xvii.

[9] *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* p. 11.

[10] Ibid., p. 11-13; *Archaic Egypt,* pp. 5, 23.

[11] See, for example, *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* pp. 11-13.

[12] This is a particularly important point to remember in a discipline like Egyptology where so much of the record of the past has been lost through looting, the ravages of time, and the activities of archaeologists and treasure hunters. Besides, vast numbers of Ancient Egyptian sites have not been investigated at all, and many more may lie out of our reach beneath the millennial silt of the Nile Delta (or beneath the suburbs of Cairo for that matter), and even at well-studied locations such as the Giza necropolis there are huge areas—the bedrock beneath the Sphinx for example—which still await the attentions of the excavator.

Gods, Demigods and Spirits of the Dead

If we are to allow Manetho to speak for himself, we have no choice but to turn to the texts in which the fragments of his work are preserved. One of the most important of these is the Armenian version of the *Chronica* of Eusebius. It begins by informing us that it is extracted 'from the *Egyptian History* of Manetho, who composed his account in three books. These deal with the Gods, the Demigods, the Spirits of the Dead and the mortal kings who ruled Egypt ...'[13] Citing Manetho directly, Eusebius begins by reeling off a list of the gods which consists, essentially, of the familiar Ennead of Heliopolis—Ra, Osiris, Isis, Horus, Set, and so on:[14]

> These were the first to hold sway in Egypt. Thereafter, the kingship passed from one to another in unbroken succession ... through 13,900 years— ... After the Gods, Demigods reigned for 1255 years; and again another line of kings held sway for 1817 years; then came thirty more kings, reigning for 1790 years; and then again ten kings ruling for 350 years. There followed the rule of the Spirits of the Dead ... for 5813 years ...'[15]

The total of all these periods adds up to 24,925 years and takes us far beyond the biblical date for the creation of the world (some time in the fifth millennium BC[16]). Because it suggested that biblical chronology was wrong, this created difficulties for Eusebius, a staunchly Christian commentator. But, after a moment's thought, he overcame the problem in an inspired way: 'The year I take to be a lunar one, consisting, that is, of 30 days: what we now call a month the Egyptians used formerly to style a year ...'[17]

Of course they did no such thing.[18] By means of this sleight of hand, however, Eusebius and others succeeded in boiling down Manetho's grand pre-dynastic span of almost 25,000 years into a sanitized dollop a bit over 2000 years which fits comfortably into the 2242 years orthodox biblical chronology allows between Adam and the Flood.[19]

A different technique for downplaying the disturbing chronological implications of Manetho's evidence is employed by the monk George Syncellus (*c.* AD 800). This commentator, who relies entirely on invective, writes, 'Manetho, chief priest of the accursed temples of Egypt [tells us] of gods who never existed. These, he says, reigned for 11,895 years ...'[20]

Several other curious and contradictory numbers crop up in the fragments. In particular, Manetho is repeatedly said to have given the enormous figure of 36,525 years for the *entire* duration of the civilization of Egypt from the time of the gods down to the end of the thirtieth (and last) dynasty of mortal kings.[21] This figure of course, incorporates the 365.25 *days* of the Sothic year (the interval between two consecutive heliacal risings of Sirius, as described in the last chapter). More likely by design than by accident, it also represents 25 cycles of 1460 Sothic years, and 25 cycles of 1461 *calendar* years (since the ancient Egyptian civil calendar was constructed around a 'vague year' of 365 days exactly).[22]

---

[13] *Manetho,* p. 3.

[14] Ibid., pp. 3-5.

[15] Ibid., p. 5.

[16] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 12:214-15.

[17] *Manetho,* p. 5.

[18] There is absolutely no evidence that the Ancient Egyptians *ever* confused years and months, or styled one as the other; ibid, p. 4, note 2.

[19] Ibid., p. 7.

[20] Ibid., p. 15.

What, if anything, does all this mean? It's hard to be sure. Out of the welter of numbers and interpretations, however, there is one aspect of Manetho's original message that comes through loud and clear. Irrespective of everything we have been taught about the orderly progress of history, what he seems to be telling us is that civilized beings (either gods or men) were present in Egypt for an immensely long period *before* the advent of the First Dynasty around 3100 BC.

Diodorus Siculus and Herodotus

In this assertion, Manetho finds much support among classical writers.

In the first century BC, for example, the Greek historian Diodorus Siculus visited Egypt. He is rightly described by C.H. Oldfather, his most recent translator, as 'an uncritical compiler who used good sources and reproduced them faithfully'.[23] In plain English, what this means is that Diodorus did not try to impose his prejudices and preconceptions on the material he collected. He is therefore particularly valuable to us because his informants included Egyptian priests whom he questioned about the mysterious past of their country. This is what they told him:

> 'At first gods and heroes ruled Egypt for a little less than 18,000 years, the last of the gods to rule being Horus, the son of Isis ... Mortals have been kings of their country, they say, for a little less than 5000 years ...[24]

Let us review these figures 'uncritically' and see what they add up to. Diodorus was writing in the first century BC. If we journey back from there for the 5000 years during which the 'mortal kings' supposedly ruled, we get to around 5100 BC. If we go even further back to the beginning of the age of 'gods and heroes', we find that we have arrived at 23,100 BC, when the world was still firmly in the grip of the last Ice Age.

---

[21] Ibid., p. 231; see also *The Splendour that was Egypt,* p. 12.

[22] Like the Maya, (see Part III), the Ancient Egyptians made use for administrative purposes of a civil calendar year (or vague year) of 365 days exactly. See *Skywatchers of Ancient Mexico,* p. 151, for further details on the Maya vague year. The Ancient Egyptian civil calendar year was geared to the Sothic year so that both would coincide on the same day/month position once every 1461 calendar years.

[23] *Diodorus Siculus,* translated by C.H. Oldfather, Harvard University Press, 1989, jacket text.

[24] Ibid., volume I, p. 157.

Long before Diodorus, Egypt was visited by another and more illustrious Greek historian: the great Herodotus, who lived in the fifth century BC. He too, it seems, consorted with priests and he too managed to tune in to traditions that spoke of the presence of a high civilization in the Nile Valley at some unspecified date in remote antiquity. Herodotus outlines these traditions of an immense prehistoric period of Egyptian civilization in Book II of his *History.* In the same document he also hands on to us, without comment, a peculiar nugget of information which had originated with the priests of Heliopolis:

> During this time, they said, there were four occasions when the sun rose out of his wonted place—twice rising where he now sets, and twice setting where he now rises.[25]

What is this all about?

According to the French mathematician Schwaller de Lubicz, what Herodotus is transmitting to us (perhaps unwittingly) is a veiled and garbled reference to a *period of time*—that is, to the time that it takes for sunrise on the vernal equinox to precess against the stellar background through one and a half complete cycles of the zodiac.[26]

As we have seen, the equinoctial sun spends roughly 2160 years in each of the twelve zodiacal constellations. A full cycle of precession of the equinoxes therefore takes almost 26,000 years to complete (12 x 2160 years). It follows that one and a half cycles takes nearly 39,000 years (18 x 2160 years).

In the time of Herodotus the sun on the vernal equinox rose due east at dawn against the stellar background of Aries—at which moment the constellation of Libra was 'in opposition', lying due west where the sun would set twelve hours later. If we wind the clock of precession back half a cycle, however—six houses of the zodiac or approximately 13,000 years—we find that the reverse configuration prevails: the vernal sun now rises due east in Libra while Aries lies due west in opposition. A further 13,000 years back, the situation reverses itself once more, with the vernal sun rising again in Aries and with Libra in opposition.

This takes us to 26,000 years before Herodotus.

If we then step back another 13,000 years, another half precessional cycle, to 39,000 years before Herodotus, the vernal sunrise returns to Libra, and Aries is again in opposition.

The point is this: with 39,000 years we have an expanse of time during which the sun can be described as 'twice rising where he now sets', i.e. in

---

[25] *The History,* pp. 193-4. In the first century AD a similar tradition was recorded by the Roman scholar Pomponious Mela: 'The Egyptians pride themselves on being the most ancient people in the world. In their authentic annals one may read that since they have been in existence, the course of the stars has changed direction four times, and that the sun has set twice in the part of the sky where it rises today.' (Pomponious Mela, *De Situ Orbis.*)

[26] *Sacred Science,* p. 87

Libra in the time of Herodotus (and again at 13,000 and at 39,000 years earlier), and as 'twice setting where he now rises', i.e. in Aries in the time of Herodotus (and again at 13,000 and 39,000 years earlier).[27] If Schwaller's interpretation is correct—and there is every reason to suppose it is—it suggests that the Greek historian's priestly informants must have had access to accurate records of the precessional motion of the sun going back *at least* 39,000 years before their own era.

The Turin Papyrus and the Palermo Stone

The figure of 39,000 years accords surprisingly closely with the testimony of the Turin Papyrus (one of the two surviving Ancient Egyptian king lists that extends back into prehistoric times before the First Dynasty).

Originally in the collection of the king of Sardinia, the brittle and crumbling 3000-year-old papyrus was sent in a box, without packing, to its present home in the Museum of Turin. As any schoolchild could have predicted, it arrived broken into countless fragments. Scholars were obliged to work for years to piece together and make sense of what remained, and they did a superb job.[28] Nevertheless, more than half the contents of this precious record proved impossible to reconstruct.[29]

What might we have learned about the First Time if the Turin Papyrus had remained intact?

The surviving fragments are tantalizing. In one register, for example, we read the names often Neteru with each name inscribed in a cartouche (oblong enclosure) in much the same style adopted in later periods for the historical kings of Egypt. The number of years that each Neter was believed to have reigned was also given, but most of these numbers are missing from the damaged document.[30]

In another column there appears a list of the mortal kings who ruled in upper and lower Egypt after the gods but prior to the supposed unification of the kingdom under Menes, the first pharaoh of the First Dynasty, in 3100 BC. From the surviving fragments it is possible to

---

[27] As the following table makes clear:

VERNAL EQUINOX	SUNRISE	IN OPPOSITION (DUE WEST) AT SUNRISE
Fifth century BC (time of Herodotus)	Aries	Libra
Approx 13,000 years before Herodotus	Libra	Aries
Approx 26,000 years before Herodotus	Aries	Libra
Approx 39,000 years before Herodotus	Libra	Aries

[28] See, for example, Sir A.H. Gardner, *The Royal Cannon of Turin,* Griffith Institute, Oxford.

[29] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 4.

[30] For further details, *Sacred Science,* p. 86.

establish that nine ‘dynasties’ of these pre-dynastic pharaohs were mentioned, among which were ‘the Venerables of Memphis’, ‘the Venerables of the North’ and, lastly, the Shemsu Hor (the Companions, or Followers, of Horus) who ruled until the time of Menes. The final two lines of the column, which seem to represent a summing up or inventory, are particularly provocative. They read; ‘... Venerables Shemsu-Hor, 13,420 years; Reigns before the Shemsu-Hor, 23,200 years; Total 36,620 years’.[31]

The other king list that deals with prehistoric times is the Palermo Stone, which does not take us as far back into the past as the Turin Papyrus. The earliest of its surviving registers record the reigns of 120 kings who ruled in upper and lower Egypt in the late pre-dynastic period: the centuries immediately prior to the country’s unification in 3100 BC.[32] Once again, however, we really have no idea how much *other* information, perhaps relating to far earlier periods, might originally have been inscribed on this enigmatic slab of black basalt, because it, too, has not come down to us intact. Since 1887 the largest single part has been preserved in the Museum of Palermo in Sicily; a second piece is on display in Egypt in the Cairo Museum; and a third much smaller fragment is in the Petrie Collection at the University of London.[33] These are reckoned by archaeologists to have been broken out of the centre of a monolith which would originally have measured about seven feet long by two feet high (stood on its long side).[34] Furthermore, as one authority has observed:

> It is quite possible—even probable—that many more pieces of this invaluable monument remain, if we only knew where to look. As it is we are faced with the tantalising knowledge that a record of the name of every king of the Archaic Period existed, together with the number of years of his reign and the chief events which occurred during his occupation of the throne. And these events were compiled in the Fifth Dynasty, only about 700 years after the Unification, so that the margin of error would in all probability have been very small ...’[35]

The late Professor Walter Emery, whose words these are, was naturally concerned about the absence of much-needed details concerning the Archaic Period, 3200 BC to 2900 BC,[36] the focus of his own specialist interests. We should also spare a thought, however, for what an intact

---

[31] Ibid., p. 86. See also *Egyptian Mysteries,* p. 68.

[32] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 5; *Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 200.

[33] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 5; *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 9:81.

[34] *Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 200.

[35] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 5.

[36] *Egypt to the End of the Old Kingdom,* p. 12.

Palermo Stone might have told us about even earlier epochs, notably Zep Tepi—the golden age of the gods.

The deeper we penetrate into the myths and memories of Egypt's long past, and the closer we approach to the fabled First Time, the stranger the landscapes that surround us become ... as we shall see.

Chapter 44

Gods of the First Time

According to Heliopolitan theology, the nine original gods who appeared in Egypt in the First Time were Ra, Shu, Tefnut, Geb, Nut, Osiris, Isis, Nepthys and Set. The offspring of these deities included well-known figures such as Horus and Anubis. In addition, other companies of gods were recognized, notably at Memphis and Hermopolis, where there were important and very ancient cults dedicated to Ptah and to Thoth.[1] These First Time deities were all in one sense or another gods of creation who had given shape to chaos through their divine will. Out of that chaos they formed and populated the sacred land of Egypt,[2] wherein, for many thousands of years, they ruled among men as divine pharaohs.[3]

What was 'chaos'?

The Heliopolitan priests who spoke to the Greek historian Diodorus Siculus in the first century BC put forward the thought-provoking suggestion that 'chaos' was a flood—identified by Diodorus with the earth-destroying flood of Deucalion, the Greek Noah figure:[4]

> In general, they say that if in the flood which occurred in the time of Deucalion most living things were destroyed, it is probable that the inhabitants of southern Egypt survived rather than any others ... Or if, as some maintain, the destruction of living things was complete and the earth then brought forth again new forms of animals, nevertheless, even on such a supposition, the first genesis of living things fittingly attaches to this country ...[5]

Why should Egypt have been so blessed? Diodorus was told that it had something to do with its geographical situation, with the great exposure of its southern regions to the heat of the sun, and with the vastly increased rainfall which the myths said the world had experienced in the aftermath of the universal deluge: 'For when the moisture from the abundant rains which fell among other peoples was mingled with the intense heat which prevails in Egypt itself ... the air became very well tempered for the first generation of all living things ...'[6]

Curiously enough, Egypt does enjoy a special geographical situation: as is well known, the latitude and longitude lines which intersect just beside the Great Pyramid (30° north and 31° east) cross more dry land than any others.[7] Curiously, too, at the end of the last Ice Age, when millions of square miles of glaciation were melting in northern Europe, when rising sea levels were flooding coastal areas all around the globe, and when the huge volume of extra moisture released into the atmosphere through the evaporation of the ice fields was being dumped as rain, Egypt benefited for several thousands of years from an exceptionally humid and fertile climate.[8] It is not difficult to see how such a climate might indeed have been remembered as 'well tempered for the first generation of all living things'.

---

[1] *Kingship and the Gods,* pp. 181-2; *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 209, 264; *Egyptian Myths,* pp. 18-22. See also T. G. H. James, *An Introduction to Ancient Egypt,* British Museum Publications, London, 1979, p. 125ff.

[2] Cyril Aldred, *Akhenaton,* Abacus, London, 1968, p. 25: 'It was believed that the gods had ruled in Egypt after first making it perfect.'

[3] *Kingship and the Gods,* pp. 153-5; *Egyptian Myths,* pp. 18-22; *Egyptian Mysteries,* pp. 8-11; *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 10-28.

[4] See Part IV.

[5] *Diodorus Siculus,* volume I, p. 37.

[6] Ibid.

The question therefore has to be asked: whose information about the past are we receiving from Diodorus, and is the apparently accurate description of Egypt's lush climate at the end of the last Ice Age a coincidence, or is an extremely ancient tradition being transmitted to us here—a memory, perhaps, of the First Time?

Breath of the divine serpent

Ra was believed to have been the first king of the First Time and ancient myths say that as long as he remained young and vigorous he reigned peacefully. The passing years took their toll on him, however, and he is depicted at the end of his rule as an old, wrinkled, stumbling man with a trembling mouth from which saliva ceaselessly dribbles.[9]

Shu followed Ra as king on earth, but his reign was troubled by plots and conflicts. Although he vanquished his enemies he was in the end so ravaged by disease that even his most faithful followers revolted against him: 'Weary of reigning, Shu abdicated in favour of his son Geb and took refuge in the skies after a terrifying tempest which lasted nine days ...'[10]

Geb, the third divine pharaoh, duly succeeded Shu to the throne. His reign was also troubled and some of the myths describing what took place reflect the odd idiom of the Pyramid Texts in which a non-technical vocabulary seems to wrestle with complex technical and scientific imagery. For example, one particularly striking tradition speaks of a 'golden box' in which Ra had deposited a number of objects—described, respectively, as his 'rod' (or cane), a lock of his hair, and his *uraeus* (a rearing cobra with its hood extended, fashioned out of gold, which was worn on the royal head-dress).[11]

A powerful and dangerous talisman, this box, together with its bizarre contents, remained enclosed in a fortress on the 'eastern frontier' of Egypt until a great many years after Ra's ascent to heaven. When Geb came to power he ordered that it should be brought to him and unsealed in his presence. In the instant that the box was opened a bolt of fire (described as the 'breath of the divine serpent') ushered from it, struck dead all Geb's companions and gravely burned the god-king himself.[12]

---

[7] *Mystic Places,* Time-Life Books, 1987, p. 62.

[8] *Early Hydraulic Civilization in Egypt,* p. 13; *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* pp. 27, 261.

[9] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 11.

[10] Ibid., p. 13.

[11] Ibid., pp. 14-15.

It is tempting to wonder whether what we are confronted by here might not be a garbled account of a malfunctioning man-made device: a confused, awe-stricken recollection of a monstrous instrument devised by the scientists of a lost civilization. Weight is added to such extreme speculations when we remember that this is by no means the only golden box in the ancient world that functioned like a deadly and unpredictable machine. It has a number of quite unmissable similarities to the Hebrews' enigmatic Ark of the Covenant (which also struck innocent people dead with bolts of fiery energy, which also was 'overlaid round about with gold', and which was said to have contained not only the two tablets of the Ten Commandments but 'the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod.')[13]

A proper look at the implications of all these weird and wonderful boxes (and of other 'technological' artefacts referred to in ancient traditions) is beyond the scope of this book. For our purposes here it is sufficient to note that a peculiar atmosphere of dangerous and quasi-technological wizardry seems to surround many of the gods of the Heliopolitan Ennead.

Isis, for example (wife and sister of Osiris and mother of Horus) carries a strong whiff of the science lab. According to the Chester Beatty Papyrus in the British Museum she was 'a clever woman ... more intelligent than countless gods ... She was ignorant of nothing in heaven and earth.'[14] Renowned for her skilful use of witchcraft and magic, Isis was particularly remembered by the Ancient Egyptians as 'strong of tongue', that is being in command of words of power 'which she knew with correct pronunciation, and halted not in her speech, and was perfect both in giving the command and in saying the word'.[15] In short, she was believed, by means of her voice alone, to be capable of bending reality and overriding the laws of physics.

These same powers, though perhaps in greater degree, were attributed to the wisdom god Thoth who although not a member of the Heliopolitan Ennead is recognized in the Turin Papyrus and other ancient records as the sixth (or sometimes as the seventh) divine pharaoh of Egypt.[16]

---

[12] Ibid.

[13] *Hebrews* 9:4. For details of the Ark's baleful powers see Graham Hancock, *The Sign and the Seal,* Mandarin, London, 1993, Chapter 12, p. 273ff.

[14] Cited in *Egyptian Myths,* p. 44.

[15] Sir E. A. Wallis Budge, *Egyptian Magic,* Kegan Paul, Trench, London, 1901, p. 5; *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, p. 214.

[16] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 27. If Set's usurpation is included as a

Frequently represented on temple and tomb walls as an ibis, or an ibis-headed man, Thoth was venerated as the regulative force responsible for all heavenly calculations and annotations, as the lord and multiplier of time, the inventor of the alphabet and the patron of magic. He was particularly associated with astronomy, mathematics, surveying and geometry, and was described as 'he who reckons in heaven, the counter of the stars and the measurer of the earth'.[17] He was also regarded as a deity who understood the mysteries of 'all that is hidden under the heavenly vault', and who had the ability to bestow wisdom on selected individuals. It was said that he had inscribed his knowledge in secret books and hidden these about the earth, intending that they should be sought for by future generations but found 'only by the worthy'—who were to use their discoveries for the benefit of mankind.[18]

What stands out most clearly about Thoth, therefore, in addition to his credentials as an ancient scientist, is his role as a benefactor and civilizer.[19] In this respect he closely resembles his predecessor Osiris, the high god of the Pyramid Texts and the fourth divine pharaoh of Egypt, 'whose name becometh *Sah* [Orion], whose leg is long, and his stride extended, the President of the Land of the South ...'[20]

Osiris and the Lords of Eternity

Occasionally referred to in the texts as a *neb tem,* or 'universal master',[21] Osiris is depicted as human but also superhuman, suffering but at the same time commanding. Moreover, he expresses his essential dualism by ruling m heaven (as the constellation of Orion) and on earth as a king among men. Like Viracocha in the Andes and Quetzalcoatl in Central America, his ways are subtle and mysterious. Like them, he is exceptionally tall and always depicted wearing the curved beard of divinity.[22] And like them too, although he has supernatural powers at his

---

reign, we have seven divine pharaohs up to and including Thoth (i.e., Ra, Shu, Geb, Osiris, Set, Horus, Thoth).

[17] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 400; Garth Fowden, *The Egyptian Hermes,* Cambridge University Press, 1987, pp. 22-3. see also *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* pp. 121-2; *Egyptian Magic,* pp. 128-9; *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 27-8.

[18] Manetho, quoted by the neo-Platonist Iamblichus. See Peter Lemesurier, *The Great Pyramid Decoded,* Element Books, 1989, p. 15; *The Egyptian Hermes,* p. 33.

[19] See, for example, *Diodorus Siculus,* volume I, p. 53, where Thoth (under his Greek name of Hermes) is described as being 'endowed with unusual ingenuity for devising things capable of improving the social life of man'.

[20] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, p. 307.

[21] *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 179; *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 16.

[22] *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* pp. 9-10, 16; *Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 44; *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume II, pp. 130-1; *From Fetish to God in*

disposal, he avoids the use of force wherever possible.[23]

We saw in Chapter Sixteen that Quetzalcoatl, the god-king of the Mexicans, was believed to have departed from Central America by sea, sailing away on a raft of serpents. It is therefore hard to avoid a sense *of déjà vu* when we read in the *Egyptian Book of the Dead* that the abode of Osiris also 'rested on water' and had walls made of 'living serpents'.[24] At the very least, the convergence of symbolism linking these two gods and two far-flung regions is striking.

There are other obvious parallels as well.

The central details of the story of Osiris have been recounted in earlier chapters and we need not go over them again. The reader will not have forgotten that this god—once again like Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha—was remembered principally as a benefactor of mankind, as a bringer of enlightenment and as a great civilizing leader.[25] He was credited, for example, with having abolished cannibalism and was said to have introduced the Egyptians to agriculture—in particular to the cultivation of wheat and barley—and to have taught them the art of fashioning agricultural implements. Since he had an especial liking for fine wines (the myths do not say where he acquired this taste), he made a point of 'teaching mankind the culture of the vine, as well as the way to harvest the grape and to store the wine ...'[26] In addition to the gifts of good living he brought to his subjects, Osiris helped to wean them 'from their miserable and barbarous manners' by providing them with a code of laws and inaugurating the cult of the gods in Egypt.[27]

When he had set everything in order, he handed over the control of the kingdom to Isis, quit Egypt for many years, and roamed about the world with the sole intention, Diodorus Siculus was told,

> of visiting all the inhabited earth and teaching the race of men how to cultivate the vine and sow wheat and barley; for he supposed that if he made men give up their savagery and adopt a gentle manner of life he would receive immortal honours because of the magnitude of his benefactions ...[28]

Osiris travelled first to Ethiopia, where he taught tillage and husbandry to the primitive hunter-gatherers he encountered. He also undertook a number of large-scale engineering and hydraulics works: 'He built canals, with flood gates and regulators ... he raised the river banks and took precautions to prevent the Nile from overflowing ...'[29] Later he made his

---

Ancient Egypt, p. 190; *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 230.

[23] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 2.

[24] Chapter CXXV, cited in ibid., volume II, p. 81.

[25] See Parts II and III for Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha. A good summary of Osiris's civilizing attributes is the *New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology,* p. 16. See also *Diodorus Siculus,* pp. 47-9; *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, pp. 1-12.

[26] *Diodorus Siculus,* p. 53.

[27] Ibid.; *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 2.

[28] *Diodorus Siculus,* p. 55.

[29] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 11.

way to Arabia and thence to India, where he established many cities. Moving on to Thrace he killed a barbarian king for refusing to adopt his system of government. This was out of character; in general, Osiris was remembered by the Egyptians for having

> forced no man to carry out his instructions, but by means of gentle persuasion and an appeal to their reason he succeeded in inducing them to practise what he preached. Many of his wise counsels were imparted to his listeners in hymns and songs, which were sung to the accompaniment of instruments of music.'[30]

Once again the parallels with Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha are hard to avoid. During a time of darkness and chaos—quite possibly linked to a flood—a bearded god, or man, materializes in Egypt (or Bolivia, or Mexico). He is equipped with a wealth of practical and scientific skills, of the kind associated with mature and highly developed civilizations, which he uses unselfishly for the benefit of humanity. He is instinctively gentle but capable of great firmness when necessary. He is motivated by a strong sense of purpose and, after establishing his headquarters at Heliopolis (or Tiahuanaco, or Teotihuacan), he sets forth with a select band of companions to impose order and to reinstate the lost balance of the world.[31]

Leaving aside for the present the issue of whether we are dealing here with gods or men, with figments of the primitive imagination or with flesh-and-blood beings, the fact remains that the myths *always* speak of a *company* of civilizers: Viracocha has his 'companions', as have both Quetzalcoatl and Osiris. Sometimes there are fierce internal conflicts within these groups, and perhaps struggles for power: the battles between Seth and Horus, and between Tezcatlipoca and Quetzalcoatl are obvious examples. Moreover, whether the mythical events unfold in Central America, or in the Andes, or in Egypt, the upshot is also always pretty much the same: the civilizer is eventually plotted against and either driven out or killed.

The myths say that Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha never came back (although, as we have seen, their return to the Americas was expected at the time of the Spanish conquest). Osiris, on the other hand, did come back. Although he was murdered by Set soon after the completion of his worldwide mission to make men 'give up their savagery', he won eternal life through his resurrection in the constellation of Orion as the all-powerful god of the dead. Thereafter, judging souls and providing an immortal example of responsible and benevolent kingship, he dominated the religion (and the culture) of Ancient Egypt for the entire span of its known history.

---

[30] Ibid., p. 2.

[31] Ibid., 2-11. For Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha see Parts II and III. Interestingly enough, Osiris was said to have been accompanied on his civilizing mission by two 'openers of the way': *(Diodorus Siculus* page 57), 'Anubis and Macedo, Anubis wearing a dog's skin and Macedo the fore-parts of a wolf ...'

Serene stability

Who can guess what the civilizations of the Andes and of Mexico might have achieved if they too had benefited from such powerful symbolic continuity. In this respect, however, Egypt is unique. Indeed, although the Pyramid Texts and other archaic sources recognize a period of disruption and attempted usurpation by Set (and his seventy-two 'precessional' conspirators), they also depict the transition to the reigns of Horus, Thoth and the later divine pharaohs as being relatively smooth and inevitable.

This transition was mimicked, through thousands of years, by the mortal kings of Egypt. From the beginning to the end, they saw themselves as the lineal descendants and living representatives of Horus, son of Osiris. As generation succeeded generation, it was supposed that each deceased pharaoh was reborn in the sky as 'an Osiris' and that each successor to the throne became a 'Horus'.[32]

This simple, refined, and stable scheme *was already fully evolved and in place at the beginning of the First Dynasty*—around 3100 BC.[33] Scholars accept this; the majority also accept that what we are dealing with here is a highly developed and sophisticated religion.[34] Strangely, very few Egyptologists or archaeologists have questioned where and when this religion took shape.

Is it not to defy logic to suppose that well-rounded social and metaphysical ideas like those of the Osiris cult sprung up fully formed in 3100 BC, or that they could have taken such perfect shape in the 300 years which Egyptologists sometimes grudgingly allow for them to have done so?[35] There must have been a far longer period of development than that, spread over several thousands rather than several hundreds of years. Moreover, as we have seen, every surviving record in which the Ancient Egyptians speak directly about their past asserts that their civilization was a legacy of 'the gods' who were 'the first to hold sway in Egypt'.[36]

The records are not internally consistent: some attribute much greater antiquity to the civilization of Egypt than others. All, however, clearly and firmly direct our attention to an epoch far, far in the past—anything from 8000 to almost 40,000 years before the foundation of the First Dynasty.

Archaeologists insist that no material artefacts have ever been found in Egypt to suggest that an evolved civilization existed at such early dates, but this is not strictly true. As we saw in Part VI, a handful of objects and structures exist which have not yet been conclusively dated by any scientific means.

---

[32] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, p. 273. See also in general, *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts.*

[33] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 122; *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 98.

[34] See, in general, *Kingship and the Gods; Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection; The Gods of the Egyptians.*

[35] *Archaic Egypt,* p. 38.

[36] *Manetho,* p. 5.

The ancient city of Abydos conceals one of the most extraordinary of these undatable enigmas ...

Chapter 45

The Works of Men and Gods

Among the numberless ruined temples of Ancient Egypt, there is one that is unique not only for its marvellous state of preservation, which (rare indeed!) includes an intact roof, but for the fine quality of the many acres of beautiful reliefs that decorate its towering walls. Located at Abydos, eight miles west of the present course of the Nile, this is the Temple of Seti I, a monarch of the illustrious nineteenth Dynasty, who ruled from 1306-1290 BC.[1]

Seti is known primarily as the father of a famous son: Ramesses II (1290-1224 BC), the pharaoh of the biblical Exodus.[2] In his own right, however, he was a major historical figure who conducted extensive military campaigns outside Egypt's borders, who was responsible for the construction of several fine buildings and who carefully and conscientiously refurbished and restored many older ones.[3] His temple at Abydos, which was known evocatively as 'The House of Millions of Years', was dedicated to Osiris,[4] the 'Lord of Eternity', of whom it was said in the Pyramid Texts:

> You have gone, but you will return, you have slept, but you will awake, you have died, but you will live ... Betake yourself to the waterway, fare upstream ... travel about Abydos in this spirit-form of yours which the gods commanded to belong to you.[5]

Atef Crown

It was eight in the morning, a bright, fresh hour in these latitudes, when I entered the hushed gloom of the Temple of Seti I. Sections of its walls were floor-lit by low-wattage electric bulbs; otherwise the only illumination was that which the pharaoh's architects had originally planned: a few isolated shafts of sunlight that penetrated through slits in the outer masonry like beams of divine radiance. Hovering among the motes of dust dancing in those beams, and infiltrating the heavy stillness of the air amid the great columns that held up the roof of the Hypostyle

---

[1] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

[2] Dates from *Atlas of Ancient Egypt.* For further data on Ramesses II as the pharaoh of the exodus see Profuses K. A. Kitchen, *Pharaoh Triumphant: The Life and Times of Ramesses II,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1982, pp. 70-1.

[3] See, for example, *A Biographical Dictionary of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 135-7.

[4] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 384.

[5] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* pp. 285, 253.

Hall, it was easy to imagine that the spirit-form of Osiris could still be present. Indeed, this was more than just imagination because Osiris was physically present in the astonishing symphony of reliefs that adorned the walls—reliefs that depicted the once and future civilizer-king in his role as god of the dead, enthroned and attended by Isis, his beautiful and mysterious sister.

In these scenes Osiris wore a variety of different and elaborate crowns which I studied closely as I walked from relief to relief. Crowns similar to these in many respects had been important parts of the wardrobe of all the pharaohs of Ancient Egypt, at least on the evidence of reliefs depicting them. Strangely, however, in all the years of intensive excavations, archaeologists had not found a single example of a royal crown, or a small part of one, let alone a specimen of the convoluted ceremonial headdresses associated with the gods of the First Time.[6]

Of particular interest was the Atef crown. Incorporating the *uraeus,* the royal serpent symbol (which in Mexico was a rattlesnake but in Egypt was a hooded cobra poised to strike), the central core of this strange contraption was recognizable as an example of the *hedjet,* the white skittle-shaped war helmet of upper Egypt (again known only from reliefs). Rearing up on either side of this core were what seemed to be two thin leaves of metal, and at the front was an attached device, consisting of two wavy blades, which scholars normally describe as a pair of rams' horns.[7]

In several reliefs of the Seti I Temple Osiris was depicted wearing the Atef crown, which seemed to stand about two feet high. According to the *Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead,* it had been given to him by Ra: 'But on the very first day that he wore it Osiris had much suffering in his head, and when Ra returned in the evening he found Osiris with his head angry and swollen from the heat of the Atef crown. Then Ra proceeded to let out the pus and the blood.'[8]

All this was stated in a matter-of-fact way, but—when you stopped to think about it—what kind of crown was it that radiated heat and caused the skin to haemorrhage and break out in pustulant sores?

---

[6] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 386.

[7] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 59.

[8] Chapter 175 of the *Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead,* cited in *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* p. 137.

Temple of Ramesses II
Osireion
Seti I Temple

Abydos.

Seventeen centuries of kings

I walked on into the deeper darkness, eventually finding my way to the Gallery of the Kings. It led off from the eastern edge of the inner Hypostyle Hall about 200 feet from the entrance to the temple.

To pass through the Gallery was to pass through time itself. On the wall to my left was a list of 120 of the gods of Ancient Egypt, together with the names of their principal sanctuaries. On my right, covering an area of perhaps ten feet by six feet, were the names of the 76 pharaohs who had preceded Seti I to the throne; each name was carved in hieroglyphs inside an oval cartouche.

This tableau was known as the ‘Abydos King List’. Glowing with colours of molten gold, it was designed to be read from left to right and was divided into five vertical and three horizontal registers. It covered a grand expanse of almost 1700 years, beginning around 3000 BC with the reign of Menes, first king of the First Dynasty, and ending with Seti’s own reign around 1300 BC. At the extreme left stood two figures exquisitely carved in high relief: Seti and his young son, the future Ramesses II.

Hypogeum

Belonging to the same class of historical documents as the Turin Papyrus and the Palermo Stone, the list spoke eloquently of the continuity of tradition. An inherent part of that tradition, was the belief or memory of a First Time, long, long ago, when the gods had ruled in Egypt. Principal among those gods was Osiris, and it was therefore appropriate that the Gallery of the Kings should provide access to a second corridor, leading to the rear of the temple where a marvellous building was located—one associated with Osiris from the beginning of written records in Egypt[9] and described by the Greek geographer Strabo (who visited Abydos in the first century BC) as 'a remarkable structure built of solid stone ... [containing] a spring which lies at a great depth, so that one descends to it down vaulted galleries made of monoliths of surpassing size and workmanship. There is a canal leading to the place from the great river ...'[10]

A few hundred years after Strabo's visit, when the religion of Ancient Egypt had been supplanted by the new cult of Christianity, the silt of the river and the sands of the desert began to drift into the Osirieon, filling it foot by foot, century by century, until its upright monoliths and huge lintels were buried and forgotten. And so it remained, out of sight and out of mind, until the beginning of the twentieth century, when the archaeologists Flinders Petrie and Margaret Murray began excavations. In their 1903 season of digging they uncovered parts of a hall and passageway, lying in the desert about 200 feet south-west of the Seti I Temple and built in the recognizable architectural style of the Nineteenth Dynasty. However, sandwiched between these remains and the rear of the Temple, they also found unmistakable signs that 'a large underground building' lay concealed.[11] 'This hypogeum', wrote Margaret Murray, 'appears to Professor Petrie to be the place that Strabo mentions, usually called Strabo's Well.'[12] This was good guesswork on the part of Petrie and Murray. Shortage of cash, however, meant that their theory of a buried building was not tested until the digging season of 1912-13. Then, under the direction of Professor Naville of the Egypt Exploration Fund, a long transverse chamber was cleared, at the end of which, to the north-east, was found a massive stone gateway made up of cyclopean blocks of granite and sandstone.

The next season, 1913-14, Naville and his team returned with 600 local helpers and diligently cleared the whole of the huge underground building:

> What we discovered [Naville wrote] is a gigantic construction of about 100 feet in length and 60 in width, built with the most enormous stones that may be seen in Egypt. In the four sides of the enclosure walls are cells, 17 in number, of the height of a man and without ornamentation of any kind. The building itself is divided into three naves, the middle one being wider than those of the sides; the division is produced by two colonnades made of huge granite monoliths supporting architraves of equal size.[13]

Naville commented with some astonishment on one block he measured in the corner of the building's northern nave, a block more than twenty-five feet long.[14] Equally surprising was the fact that the cells cut into the enclosure walls had no floors, but turned out, as the excavations went deeper, to be filled with increasingly moist sand and earth:

---

[9] See Henry Frankfort, *The Cenotaph of Seti I at Abydos,* 39th Memoir of the Egypt Exploration Society, London, 1933, p. 25.

[10] *The Geography of Strabo,* volume VIII, pp. 111-13.

[11] Margaret A. Murray, *The Osireion at Abydos,* Egyptian Research Account, ninth year (1903), Bernard Quaritch, London, 1904, p. 2.

[12] Ibid.

[13] *The Times,* London, 17 March 1914.

> The cells are connected by a narrow ledge between two and three feet wide; there is a ledge also on the opposite side of the nave, but no floor at all, and in digging to a depth of 12 feet we reached infiltrated water. Even below the great gateway there is no floor, and when there was water in front of it the cells were probably reached with a small boat.[15]

The most ancient stone building in Egypt

Water, water, everywhere—this seemed to be the theme of the Osireion, which lay at the bottom of the huge crater Naville and his men had excavated in 1914. It was positioned some 50 feet below the level of the floor of the Seti I Temple, almost flush with the water-table, and was approached by a modern stairway curving down to the south-east. Having descended this stairway, I passed under the hulking lintel slabs of the great gateway Naville (and Strabo) had described and crossed a narrow wooden footbridge—again modern—which brought me to a large sandstone plinth.

Measuring about 80 feet in length by 40 in width, this plinth was composed of enormous paving blocks and was entirely surrounded by water. Two pools, one rectangular and the other square, had been cut into the plinth along the centre of its long axis and at either end stairways led down to a depth of about 12 feet below the water level. The plinth also supported the two massive colonnades Naville mentioned in his report, each of which consisted of five chunky rose-coloured granite monoliths about eight feet square by 12 feet high and weighing, on average, around 100 tons.[16] The tops of these huge columns were spanned by granite lintels and there was evidence that the whole building had once been roofed over with a series of even larger monolithic slabs.[17]

---

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

[16] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* p. 391.

[17] *The Cenotaph of Seti I at Abydos,* p. 18.

Plan of the Osireion.

To get a proper understanding of the structure of the Osireion, I found it helpful to raise myself directly above it in my mind's eye, so that I could look down on it. This exercise was assisted by the absence of the original roof which made it easier to envisage the whole edifice in plan. Also helpful was the fact that water had now seeped up to fill all of the building's pools, cells and channels to a depth of a few inches below the lip of the central plinth, as the original designers had apparently intended it should.[18]

Looking down in this manner, it was immediately apparent that the plinth formed a rectangular island, surrounded on all four sides by a water-filled moat about 10 feet wide. The moat was contained by an immense, rectangular enclosure wall, no less than *20 feet thick*,[19] made of very large blocks of red sandstone disposed in polygonal jigsaw-puzzle patterns. Into the huge thickness of this wall were set the 17 cells mentioned in Naville's report. Six lay to the east, six to the west, two to the south and three to the north. Off the central of the three northern cells lay a long transverse chamber, roofed with and composed of limestone. A similar transverse chamber, also of limestone but no longer with an intact roof, lay immediately south of the great gateway. Finally, the whole structure was enclosed within an outer wall of limestone, thus completing a sequence of inter-nested rectangles, i.e., from the outside in, wall, wall, moat, plinth.

Another notable and outstandingly unusual feature of the Osireion was that it was not even approximately aligned to the cardinal points. Instead, like the Way of the Dead at Teotihuacan in Mexico, it was oriented to the east of due north. Since Ancient Egypt had been a civilization that could and normally did achieve precise alignments for its buildings, it seemed to me improbable that this apparently skewed orientation was accidental. Moreover, although 50 feet higher, the Seti I Temple was oriented along exactly the same axis—and again not by accident. The question was: *which was the older building?* Had the axis of the Osireion been predetermined by the axis of the Temple or vice versa? This, it turned out, was an issue over which considerable controversy, now long forgotten, had once raged. In a debate which had many connections with that surrounding the Sphinx and the Valley Temple at Giza, eminent archaeologists had initially argued that the Osireion was a building of truly immense antiquity, a view expressed by Professor Naville in the London *Times* of 17 March 1914:

> This monument raises several important questions. As to its date, its great similarity with the Temple of the Sphinx [as the Valley Temple was then known] shows it to be of the same epoch when building was made with enormous stones without any ornament. This is characteristic of the oldest architecture in Egypt. I should even say that we may call it the most ancient stone building in Egypt.[20]

---

[18] Ibid., p. 28-9.

[19] E. Naville, 'Excavations at Abydos: The Great Pool and the Tomb of Osiris', *Journal of Egyptian Archaeology,* volume I, 1914, p. 160.

[20] *The Times,* London, 17 March 1914.

Reconstruction of the Osireion.

Describing himself as overawed by the ‘grandeur and stern simplicity’ of the monument’s central hall, with its remarkable granite monoliths, and by ‘the power of those ancients who could bring from a distance and move such gigantic blocks’, Naville made a suggestion concerning the function the Osireion might originally have been intended to serve: ‘Evidently this huge construction was a large reservoir where water was stored during the high Nile ... It is curious that what we may consider as a beginning in architecture is neither a temple nor a tomb, but a gigantic pool, a waterwork ...[21]

Curious indeed, and well worth investigating further; something Naville hoped to do the following season. Unfortunately, the First World War intervened and no archaeology could be undertaken in Egypt for several years. As a result, it was not until 1925 that the Egypt Exploration Fund was able to send out another mission, which was led not by Naville but by a young Egyptologist named Henry Frankfort.

---

[21] Ibid.

Frankfort's facts

Later to enjoy great prestige and influence as professor of Pre-Classical Antiquity at the University of London, Frankfort spent several consecutive digging seasons re-clearing and thoroughly excavating the Osireion between 1925 and 1930. During the course of this work he made discoveries which, so far as he was concerned, 'settled the date of the building':

1 A granite dovetail in position at the top of the southern side of the main entrance to the central hall, which was inscribed with the cartouche of Seti I.

2 A similar dovetail in position inside the eastern wall of the central hall.

3 Astronomical scenes and inscriptions by Seti I carved in relief on the ceiling of the northern transverse chamber.

4 The remains of similar scenes in the southern transverse chamber.

5 An ostracon (piece of broken potsherd) found in the entrance passage and bearing the legend 'Seti is serviceable to Osiris'.[22]

The reader will recall the lemming behaviour which led to a dramatic change of scholarly opinion about the antiquity of the Sphinx and the Valley Temple (due to the discovery of a few statues and a single cartouche which seemed to imply some sort of connection with Khafre). Frankfort's finds at Abydos caused a similar *volte-face* over the antiquity of the Osireion. In 1914 it was 'the most ancient stone building in Egypt'. By 1933, it had been beamed forward in time to the reign of Seti I—around 1300 BC—whose cenotaph it was now believed to be.[23]

Within a decade, the standard Egyptological texts began to print the attribution to Seti I as though it were a fact, verifiable by experience or observation. It is not a fact, however, merely Frankfort's interpretation of the evidence he had found.

The only facts are that certain inscriptions and decorations left by Seti appear in an otherwise completely anonymous structure. One plausible explanation is that the structure must have been built by Seti, as Frankfort proposed. The other possibility is that the half-hearted and scanty decorations, cartouches and inscriptions found by Frankfort could have been placed in the Osireion as part of a renovation and repair operation undertaken in Seti's time (implying that the structure was by then ancient, as Naville and others had proposed).

What are the merits of these mutually contradictory propositions which identify the Osireion as (a) the oldest building in Egypt, and (b) a relatively late New Kingdom structure?

---

[22] *The Cenotaph of Seti I at Abydos,* pp. 4, 25, 68-80.

[23] Ibid., in general.

Proposition (b)—that it is the cenotaph of Seti I—is the only attribution accepted by Egyptologists. On close inspection, however, it rests on the circumstantial evidence of the cartouches and inscriptions which prove nothing. Indeed part of this evidence appears to contradict Frankfort's case. The ostracon bearing the legend 'Seti is serviceable to Osiris' sounds less like praise for the works of an original builder than praise for a restorer who had renovated, and perhaps added to, an ancient structure identified with the First Time god Osiris. And another awkward little matter has also been overlooked. The south and north 'transverse chambers', which contain Seti I's detailed decorations and inscriptions, lie *outside* the twenty-foot-thick enclosure wall which so adamantly defines the huge, undecorated megalithic core of the building. This had raised the reasonable suspicion in Naville's mind (though Frankfort chose to ignore it) that the two chambers concerned were 'not contemporaneous with the rest of the building' but had been added much later during the reign of Seti I, 'probably when he built his own temple'.[24]

To cut a long story short, therefore, everything about proposition (b) is based in one way or another on Frankfort's not necessarily infallible interpretation of various bits and pieces of possibly intrusive evidence.

Proposition (a)—that the core edifice of the Osireion had been built millennia before Seti's time—rests on the nature of the architecture itself. As Naville observed, the Osireion's similarity to the Valley Temple at Giza 'showed it to be of the same epoch when building was made with enormous stones'. Likewise, until the end of her life, Margaret Murray remained convinced that the Osireion was not a cenotaph at all (least of all Seti's). She said,

> It was made for the celebration of the mysteries of Osiris, and so far is unique among all the surviving buildings of Egypt. It is clearly early, for the great blocks of which it is built are of the style of the Old Kingdom; the simplicity of the actual building also points to it being of that early date. The decoration was added by Seti I, who in that way laid claim to the building, but seeing how often a Pharaoh claimed the work of his predecessors by putting his name on it, this fact does not carry much weight. It is the style of the building, the type of the masonry, the tooling of the stone, and not the name of a king, which date a building in Egypt.[25]

This was an admonition Frankfort might well have paid more attention to, for as he bemusedly observed of his 'cenotaph', 'It has to be admitted that no similar building is known from the Nineteenth Dynasty.'[26]

Indeed it is not just a matter of the Nineteenth Dynasty. Apart from the Valley Temple and other Cyclopean edifices on the Giza plateau, no other building remotely resembling the Osireion is known from *any* other epoch of Egypt's long history. This handful of supposedly Old Kingdom structures, built out of giant megaliths, seems to belong in a unique category. They resemble one another much more than they resemble any other known style of architecture and in all cases there are question-marks over their identity.

---

[24] 'Excavations at Abydos', pp. 164-5.

[25] *The Splendour that was Egypt,* pp. 160-1.

[26] *The Cenotaph of Seti I at Abydos,* p. 23.

Isn't this precisely what one would expect of buildings not erected by any historical pharaoh but dating back to prehistoric times? Doesn't it make sense of the mysterious way in which the Sphinx and the Valley Temple, and now the Osireion as well, seem to have become vaguely connected with the names of particular pharaohs (Khafre and Seti I), without ever yielding a single piece of evidence that clearly and unequivocally *proves* those pharaohs built the structures concerned? Aren't the tenuous links much more indicative of the work of restorers seeking to attach themselves to ancient and venerable monuments than of the original architects of those monuments—whoever they might have been and in whatever epoch they might have lived?

Setting sail across seas of sand and time

Before leaving Abydos, there was one other puzzle that I wanted to remind myself of. It lay buried in the desert, about a kilometre north-west of the Osireion, across sands littered with the rolling, cluttered tumuli of ancient graveyards.

Out among these cemeteries, many of which dated back to early dynastic and pre-dynastic times, the jackal gods Anubis and Upuaut had traditionally reigned supreme. Openers of the way, guardians of the spirits of the dead, I knew that they had played a central role in the mysteries of Osiris that had been enacted each year at Abydos—apparently throughout the span of Ancient Egyptian history.

It seemed to me that there was a sense in which they guarded the mysteries still. For what was the Osireion if was not a huge, unsolved mystery that deserved closer scrutiny than it has received from the scholars whose job it is to look into these matters? And what was the burial in the desert of twelve high-prowed, seagoing ships if not also a mystery that cried out, loudly, for solution?

It was the burial place of those ships I was now crossing the cemeteries of the jackal gods to see:

> *The Guardian, London, 21 December 1991:* A fleet of 5000-year-old royal ships has been found buried eight miles from the Nile. American and Egyptian archaeologists discovered the 12 large wooden boats at Abydos ... Experts said the boats—which are 50 to 60 feet long—are about 5000 years old, making them Egypt's earliest royal ships and among the earliest boats found anywhere ... The experts say the ships, discovered in September, were probably meant for burial so the souls of the pharaohs could be transported on them. 'We never expected to find such a fleet, especially so far from the Nile,' said David O'Connor, the expedition leader and curator of the Egyptian Section of the University Museum of

> the University of Pennsylvania ...[27]

The boats were buried in the shadow of a gigantic mud-brick enclosure, thought to have been the mortuary temple of a Second Dynasty pharaoh named Khasekhemwy, who had ruled Egypt in the twenty-seventh century BC.[28] O'Connor, however, was certain that they were not associated directly with Khasekhemwy but rather with the nearby (and largely ruined) 'funerary-cult enclosure built for Pharaoh Djer early in Dynasty I. The boat graves are not likely to be earlier than this and may in fact have been built for Djer, but this remains to be proven.'[29]

A sudden strong gust of wind blew across the desert, scattering sheets of sand. I took refuge for a while in the lee of the looming walls of the Khasekhemwy enclosure, close to the point where the University of Pennsylvania archaeologists had, for legitimate security reasons, reburied the twelve mysterious boats they had stumbled on in 1991. They had hoped to return in 1992 to continue the excavations, but there had been various hitches and, in 1993, the dig was still being postponed.

In the course of my research O'Connor had sent me the official report of the 1991 season,[30] mentioning in passing that some of the boats might have been as much as 72 feet in length.[31] He also noted that the boat-shaped brick graves in which they were enclosed, which would have risen well above the level of the surrounding desert in early dynastic times, must have produced quite an extraordinary effect when they were new:

> Each grave had originally been thickly coated with mud plaster and whitewash so the impression would have been of twelve (or more) huge 'boats' moored out in the desert, gleaming brilliantly in the Egyptian sun. The notion of their being moored was taken so seriously that an irregularly shaped small boulder was found placed near the 'prow' or 'stern' of several boat graves. These boulders could not have been there naturally or by accident; their placement seems deliberate, not random. We can think of them as 'anchors' intended to help 'moor' the boats.[32]

Like the 140-foot ocean-going vessel found buried beside the Great Pyramid at Giza (see Chapter Thirty-three), one thing was immediately clear about the Abydos boats—they were of an advanced design capable of riding out the most powerful waves and the worst weather of the open seas. According to Cheryl Haldane, a nautical archaeologist at Texas A-and-M University, they showed 'a high degree of technology combined with grace'.[33] Exactly as was the case with the Pyramid boat, therefore (but at least 500 years earlier) the Abydos fleet seemed to indicate that a people able to draw upon the accumulated experiences of a long tradition of seafaring had been present in Egypt from the very beginning of its 3000 year history. Moreover I knew that the earliest wall paintings found in the Nile Valley, dating back perhaps as much as 1500 years before the burial of the Abydos fleet (to around 4500 BC) showed the same long, sleek, high-prowed vessels in action.[34]

---

[27] *Guardian,* London, 21 December 1991.

[28] David O'Connor, 'Boat Graves and Pyramid Origins', in *Expedition,* volume 33, No. 3, 1991, p. 7ff.

[29] Ibid., pp. 9-10.

[30] Sent to me by fax 27 January 1993.

[31] David O'Connor, 'Boat Graves and Pyramid Origins', p. 12.

[32] Ibid., p. 11-12.

[33] *Guardian,* 21 December 1991.

Could an experienced race of ancient seafarers have become involved with the indigenous inhabitants of the Nile Valley at some indeterminate period before the official beginning of history at around 3000 BC? Wouldn't this explain Egypt's curious and paradoxical—but nonetheless enduring—obsession with ships in the desert (and references to what sounded like sophisticated ships in the Pyramid Texts, including one said to have been more than 2000 feet long)?[35]

In raising these conjectures, I did not doubt that religious symbolism had existed in Ancient Egypt in which, as scholars endlessly pointed out, ships had been designated as vessels for the pharaoh's soul. Nevertheless that symbolism did not solve the problem posed by the high level of technological achievement of the buried ships; such evolved and sophisticated designs called for a long period of development. Wasn't it worth looking into the possibility—even if only to rule it out—that the Giza and Abydos vessels could have been parts of a cultural legacy, not of a land-loving, riverside-dwelling, agricultural people like the indigenous Ancient Egyptians but of an advanced seafaring nation?

Such seafarers could have been expected to be navigators who would have known how to set a course by the stars and who would perhaps also have developed the skills necessary to draw up accurate maps and charts of the oceans they had traversed.

Might they also have been architects and stonemasons whose characteristic medium had been polygonal, megalithic blocks like those of the Valley Temple and the Osireion?

And might they have been associated in some way with the legendary gods of the First Time, said to have brought to Egypt not only civilization and astronomy and architecture, and the knowledge of mathematics and writing, but a host of other useful skills and gifts, by far the most notable and the most significant of which had been the gift of agriculture?

There is evidence of an astonishingly early period of agricultural advance and experimentation in the Nile Valley at about the end of the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere. The characteristics of this great

---

[34] See Cairo Museum, Gallery 54, wall-painting of ships from Badarian period *c.* 4500 BC.

[35] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 192, Utt. 519: 'O Morning Star, Horus of the Netherworld ... you having a soul and appearing in front of your boat of 770 cubits ... Take me with you in the cabin of your boat.'

Egyptian ‘leap forward’ suggest that it could only have resulted from an influx of new ideas from some as yet unidentified source.

Chapter 46

The Eleventh Millennium BC

If it were not for the powerful mythology of Osiris, and if this civilizing, scientific, law-making deity was not remembered in particular for having introduced domesticated crops into the Nile Valley in the remote and fabled epoch known as the First Time, it would probably not be a matter of any great interest that at some point between 13,000 BC and 10,000 BC Egypt enjoyed a period of what has been described as 'precocious agricultural development'—possibly the earliest agricultural revolution anywhere in the world identified with certainty by historians.[1]

As we saw in recent chapters, sources such as the Palermo Stone, Manetho and the Turin Papyrus contain several different and at times contradictory chronologies. All these chronologies nevertheless agree on a very ancient date for the First Time of Osiris: the golden age when the gods were believed to have ruled in Egypt. In addition, the sources demonstrate a striking convergence over the importance they accord to the *eleventh millennium BC* in particular,[2] the precessional Age of Leo when the great ice sheets of the northern hemisphere were undergoing their final, ferocious meltdown.

Perhaps coincidentally, evidence unearthed since the 1970s by geologists, archaeologists and prehistorians like Michael Hoffman, Fekri Hassan and Professor Fred Wendorff has confirmed that the eleventh millennium BC was indeed an important period in Egyptian prehistory, during which immense and devastating floods swept repeatedly down the Nile Valley.[3] Fekri Hassan has speculated that this prolonged series of natural disasters, which reached a crescendo around or just after 10,500 BC (and continued to recur periodically until about 9000 BC) might have been responsible for snuffing out the early agricultural experiment.[4]

At any rate, that experiment *did* come to an end (for whatever reason), and appears not to have been attempted again for at least another 5000 years.[5]

---

[1] *Egypt before the Pharaohs.,* pp. 29, 88.

[2] To give yet another example, here is Diodorus Siculus (first century BC) passing on what he was told by Egyptian priests: 'The number of years from Osiris and Isis, they say, to the reign of Alexander, who founded the city which bears his name in Egypt [fourth century BC], is over ten thousand ...' *Diodorus Siculus,* volume I, p. 73.

[3] *Egypt before The Pharaohs,* p. 85.

[4] Ibid., p. 90.

[5] *A History of Ancient Egypt,* p. 21.

Kick-start

There is something mysterious about Egypt's so-called 'palaeolithic agricultural revolution'. Here, quoted from the standard texts (Hoffman's *Egypt before The Pharaohs* and Wendorff and Schild's *Prehistory of the Nile Valley*) are some key facts from the little that is known about this great leap forward that occurred so inexplicably towards the end of the last Ice Age:

1. 'Shortly after 13,000 BC, grinding stones and sickle blades with a glossy sheen on their bits (the result of silica from cut stems adhering to a sickle's cutting edge) appear in late Palaeolithic tool kits ... It is clear that the grinding stones were used in preparing plant food.'[6]

2. At many riverside sites, at exactly this time, fish stopped being a significant food source and became a negligible one, as evidenced by the absence of fish remains: 'The decline in fishing as a source of food is related to the appearance of a new food resource represented by ground grain. The associated pollen strongly suggests that this grain was barley, and significantly, this large grass-pollen, tentatively identified as barley, makes a sudden appearance in the pollen profile just before the time when the first settlements were established in this area ...'[7]

3. 'As apparently spectacular as the rise of protoagriculture in the late Palaeolithic Nile Valley was its precipitous decline. No one knows exactly why, but after about 10,500 BC the early sickle blades and grinding disappear to be replaced throughout Egypt by Epipalaeolithic hunting, fishing and gathering peoples who use stone tools.'[8]

Scanty though the evidence may be, it is clear in its general implications: Egypt enjoyed a golden age of agricultural plenty which began around 13,000 BC and was brought to an abrupt halt around the middle of the eleventh millennium BC. A kick-start to the process appears to have been given by the introduction of already domesticated barley into the Nile Valley, immediately followed by the establishment of a number of farming settlements which exploited the new resource. The settlements were equipped with simple but extremely effective agricultural tools and accessories. After the eleventh millennium BC, however, there was a prolonged relapse to more primitive ways of life.

The imagination is inclined to roam freely over such data in search of an explanation—and all such explanations can only be guesswork. What is certain is that the none of the evidence suggests that palaeolithic Egypt's 'agricultural revolution' could have been a local initiative. On the contrary it feels in every way like a transplant. A transplant appears suddenly, after all, and can be rejected equally fast if conditions change, just as settled agriculture seems to have been rejected in ancient Egypt after the great Nile floods of the eleventh millennium BC.

---

[6] *Egypt before The Pharaohs,* p. 88.

[7] Fred Wendorff and Romuald Schild, *Prehistory of the Nile Valley,* Academic Press, New York, 1976, p. 291.

[8] *Egypt before the Pharaohs,* pp. 89-90.

Climate Change

What was the weather like then?

We've noted in earlier chapters that the Sahara, a relatively young desert, was green savannah until about the tenth millennium BC; this savannah, brightened by lakes, boiling with game, extended across much of upper Egypt. Farther north, the Delta area was marshy but dotted with many large and fertile islands. Overall the climate was significantly cooler, cloudier and *rainier* than it is today.[9] Indeed, for two or three thousand years before and about a thousand years after 10,500 BC it rained and rained and rained. Then, as though marking an ecological turning-point, the floods came. When they were over, increasingly arid conditions set in.[10] This period of desiccation lasted until approximately 7000 BC when the 'Neolithic Subpluvial' began with a thousand years of heavy rains, followed by 3000 years of moderate rainfall which once again proved ideal for agriculture: 'For a time the deserts bloomed and human societies colonized areas that have been unable to support such dense populations since.'[11]

By the birth of dynastic Egypt around 3000 BC, however, the climate had turned around again and a new period of desiccation had begun—one that has continued until the present day.

This, then, in broad outline, is the environmental stage upon which the mysteries of Egyptian civilization have been played out: rain and floods between 13,000 BC and 9500 BC; a dry period until 7000 BC; rain again (though increasingly less frequent) until about 3000 BC; thereafter a renewed and enduring dry period.

The expanse of years is great, but if one is looking for a First Time within it which might accord with the golden age of the gods, one's thoughts turn naturally to the mysterious epoch of early agricultural experimentation that shadowed the great rains and floods between 13,000 BC and 10,500 BC.

---

[9] Ibid., p. 86.

[10] Ibid., pp. 97-8.

[11] Ibid., p. 161.

Unseen connections?

This epoch was crucial not only for the Ancient Egyptians but for many peoples in other areas. Indeed, as we saw in Part IV, it was the epoch of dramatic climate shifts, rapidly rising sea levels, earth movements, floods, volcanic eruptions, bituminous rains and darkened skies that was the most probable source of many of the great worldwide myths of universal cataclysm.

Could it also have been an epoch in which 'gods' really did walk among men, as the legends said?

On the Bolivian Altiplano those gods were known as the Viracochas and were linked to the astonishing megalithic city of Tiahuanaco, which may have pre-existed the immense floods in the Andes in the eleventh millennium BC. Thereafter, according to Professor Arthur Posnansky, though the flood-waters subsided, 'the culture of the Altiplano did not again attain a high point of development but rather fell into a total and definitive decadence.'[12]

Of course, Posnansky's conclusions are controversial and must be evaluated on their own merits. Nevertheless, it is interesting that both the Bolivian Altiplano and Egypt should have been scoured by immense floods in the eleventh millennium BC. In both areas too, there are signs that extraordinarily early agricultural experiments—apparently based on introduced techniques—were attempted and then abandoned.[13] And in both areas important question-marks have been raised over the dating of monuments: the Puma Punku and the Kalasasaya in Tiahuanaco, for example, which Posnansky argued might have been built as early as 15,000 BC,[14] and, in Egypt, megalithic structures like the Osireion, the Great Sphinx and the Valley Temple of Khafre at Giza, which John West and the Boston University geologist Robert Schoch have dated on geological grounds to earlier than 10,000 BC.

Could there be an unseen connection linking all these beautiful, enigmatic monuments, the anomalous agricultural experiments of 13,000-10,000 BC, and the legends of civilizer gods like Osiris and Viracocha?

'Where is the rest of this civilization?'

As we set out on the road from Abydos to Luxor, where we were to meet John West, I realized that there was a sense in which all the connections would look after themselves if the central issue of the antiquity of the monuments could be settled. In other words, if West's geological evidence proved that the Sphinx was more than 12,000 years old, the history of human civilization was going to have to be rewritten. As part of that exciting process, all the other strange, anachronistic ‘fingerprints of the gods’ that kept appearing around the world, and the sense of an undercurrent of ancient connections linking apparently unrelated civilizations, would begin to make sense ...

---

[12] See Chapter Twelve.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

When West’s evidence was presented in 1992 at the annual meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science it had been taken seriously enough to be publicly debated by the Chicago University Egyptologist Mark Lehner, director of the Giza Mapping Project, who—to the astonishment of almost everybody present—had been unable to come up with a convincing refutation. ‘When you say something as complex as the Sphinx dates to 9000 or 10,000 BC,’ Lehner had concluded:

> it implies, of course, that there was a very high civilization that was capable of producing the Sphinx at that period. The question an archaeologist has to ask, therefore, is this: if the Sphinx was made at that time then where is the rest of this civilization, where is the rest of this culture?[15]

Lehner, however, was missing the point.

If the Sphinx did date to 9000 or 10,000 BC, the onus was not on West to produce other evidence for the existence of the civilization which produced it, but on Egyptologists and archaeologists to explain how they had got things so wrong, so consistently, for so long. So could West prove the antiquity of the Sphinx?

---

[15] AAAS Annual Meeting, 1992, Debate: How Old is the Sphinx?

Chapter 47

Sphinx

‘Egyptologists,’ said John West, ‘are the last people in the world to address any anomaly.’

Of course, there are many anomalies in Egypt. The one West was referring to at that moment, however, was the anomaly of the Fourth Dynasty pyramids: an anomaly because of what had happened during the Third, Fifth and Sixth Dynasties. Zoser’s Step Pyramid at Saqqara (Third Dynasty) was an imposing edifice, but it was built with relatively small, manageable blocks that five or six men working together could carry, and its internal chambers were structurally unsound. The pyramids of the Fifth and Sixth Dynasties (although adorned inside with the beautiful Pyramid Texts) were so poorly built and had collapsed so completely that today most of them amount to little more than mounds of rubble. The Fourth Dynasty pyramids at Giza, however, were wonderfully well made and had endured the passage of thousands of years more or less intact.

It was this sequence of events, or rather its implications, that West felt Egyptologists should have paid more attention to: ‘There’s a discrepancy in the scenario that reads “building kind of rubbishy pyramids that are structurally unsound, suddenly building absolutely unbelievable pyramids that are structurally the most incredible things ever conceived of, and then immediately afterwards going back to structurally unsound pyramids.” It doesn’t make sense ... The parallel scenario in, say, the auto-industry would be inventing and building the Model-T Ford, then suddenly inventing and building the ’93 Porsche and making a few of those, then forgetting how to do that and going back to building Model-T Fords again ... Civilizations don’t work this way.’

‘So what are you saying?’ I asked. ‘Are you saying that the Fourth Dynasty pyramids weren’t built by the Fourth Dynasty at all?’

‘My gut feeling is that they weren’t. They don’t look like the mastabas in front of them. They don’t look like any other Fourth Dynasty stuff either ... They don’t seem to fit in ...’

‘And nor does the Sphinx?’

‘And nor does the Sphinx. But the big difference is that we don’t have to rely on gut feelings where the Sphinx is concerned. We can prove that it was built long before the Fourth Dynasty ...’

John West

Santha and I had been fans of John Anthony West ever since we had first started travelling in Egypt. His guide-book, *The Traveller's Key* had been a brilliant and indispensable introduction to the mysteries of this ancient land, and we still carried it with us. At the same time his scholarly works, notably *Serpent in the Sky,* had opened our eyes to the revolutionary possibility that Egyptian civilization—with its manifold glimpses of high science apparently out of place in time—might *not* have developed entirely within the confines of the Nile Valley but might have been a legacy of some earlier, greater and as yet unidentified civilization 'antedating dynastic Egypt, and all other known civilizations, by millennia'.[1]

Tall and strongly built, West was in his early sixties. He had cultivated a neatly trimmed white beard, was dressed in a khaki safari-suit and wore an eccentric nineteenth-century pith helmet. His manner was youthful and energetic and there was a roguish sparkle in his eyes.

The three of us were sitting on the open upper deck of a Nile cruiser, moored off the corniche in Luxor just a few yards downstream from the Winter Palace Hotel. To our west, across the river, a big red sun, distorted by atmospheric refraction, was setting behind the cliffs of the Valley of the Kings. To our east lay the battered but noble ruins of the Luxor and Karnak temples. Beneath us, transmitted through the hull of the boat, we could feel the lap and flow of the water as it rolled by on its meridional course towards the far-off Delta.

West had first presented his thesis for an older Sphinx in *Serpent in the Sky,* a comprehensive exposition of the work of the French mathematician R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz. Schwaller's research at the Luxor Temple between 1937 and 1952 had unearthed mathematical evidence which suggested that Egyptian science and culture had been far more advanced and sophisticated than modern scholars had appreciated. However, as West put it, this evidence had been set out in 'abstruse, complex and uncompromising language ... Few readers seem comfortable with raw Schwaller. It's a bit like trying to wade directly into high energy physics without extensive prior training.'

Schwaller's principal publications, both originally in French, were the massive three-volume *Temple de l'Homme,* which focused on Luxor, and the more general *Roi de la théocratie Pharaonique.* In this latter work, subsequently translated into English as *Sacred Science,* Schwaller made a passing reference to the tremendous floods and rains which devastated Egypt in the eleventh millennium BC. Almost as an afterthought, he added:

> A great civilization must have preceded the vast movements of water that passed over Egypt, which leads us to assume that the Sphinx already existed, sculptured in the rock of the west cliff at Giza—that Sphinx whose leonine body, except for the head, shows indisputable signs of water erosion.'[2]

---

[1] *Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt; Serpent in the Sky,* p. 20.

[2] *Sacred Science,* p. 96.

While working on *Serpent,* West was struck by the possible significance of this remark and decided to follow it up: 'I realized that if I could prove Schwaller's offhand observation empirically, this would be ironclad evidence for the existence of a previously unidentified high civilization of distant antiquity.'

'Why?'

'Once you've established that water was the agent that eroded the Sphinx the answer is almost childishly simple. It can be explained to anybody who reads the *National Enquirer* or the *News of the World.* It's almost moronically simple ... The Sphinx is supposed to have been built by Khafre around 2500 BC, but since the beginning of dynastic times—say 3000 BC onwards—there just hasn't been enough rain on the Giza plateau to have caused the very extensive erosion that we see all over the Sphinx's body. You really have to go back to before 10,000 BC to find a wet enough climate in Egypt to account for weathering of this type and on this scale. It therefore follows that the Sphinx must have been built before 10,000 BC and since it's a massive, sophisticated work of art it also follows that it must have been built by a high civilization.'

'But John,' Santha asked, 'how can you be so sure that the weathering *was* caused by rain water? Couldn't the desert winds have done the job just as well? After all even orthodox Egyptologists admit that the Sphinx has existed for nearly 5000 years. Isn't that long enough for these effects to have been caused by wind erosion?'

'Naturally that was one of the first possibilities that I had to exclude. Only if I could show that wind-borne abrasive sand couldn't possibly have brought the Sphinx to its present condition would there be any point in looking further into the implications of water erosion.'

Robert Schoch's geology: Unriddling the Sphinx

A key issue turned out to be the deep trench that the monument was surrounded by on all sides: 'Because the Sphinx is set in a hollow,' West explained, 'sand piles up to its neck within a few decades if it's left untended ... It has been left untended often during historical times. In fact through a combination of textual references and historical extrapolations it's possible to prove that during the 4500 years that have elapsed since it was ostensibly built by Khafre it's been buried to its neck for as much as 3300 years.[3] That means that in all this time there has

---

[3] West's detailed evidence is set out in *Serpent in the Sky,* pp. 184-20. Concerning the covering of the Sphinx by sand he arrives at the following table:

	Sphinx buried
Chephren-Tuthmosis IV *c.* 1300 years	1000 years
Thuthmosis IV-Ptolemies *c.* 1100 years	800 years
Ptolemies-Christianity *c.* 600 years	0 years
Christianity-Present day *c.* 1700 years	1500 years

only been a cumulative total of just over 1000 years in which its body has been susceptible to wind-erosion; all the rest of the time it's been protected from the desert winds by an enormous blanket of sand. The point is that if the Sphinx was really built by Khafre in the Old Kingdom, and if wind erosion was capable of inflicting such damage on it in so short a time-span, then other Old Kingdom structures in the area, built out of the same limestone, ought to show similar weathering. But none do—you know, absolutely unmistakable Old Kingdom tombs, full of hieroglyphs and inscriptions—none of them show the same type of weathering as the Sphinx.'

Indeed, none did. Professor Robert Schoch, a Boston University geologist and specialist in rock erosion who had played a key role in validating West's evidence, was satisfied as to the reason for this. The weathering of the Sphinx—and of the walls of its surrounding rock-hewn enclosure—had not been caused by wind-scouring at all but by thousands of years of heavy rainfall long ages before the Old Kingdom came into being.

Having won over his professional peers at the 1992 Convention of the Geological Society of America,[4] Schoch went on to explain his findings to a much wider and more eclectic audience (including Egyptologists) at the 1992 Annual Meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science (AAAS). He began by pointing out to delegates that 'the body of the Sphinx and the walls of the Sphinx ditch are deeply weathered and eroded ... This erosion is a couple of metres thick in places, at least on the walls. It's very deep, it's very old in my opinion, and it gives a rolling and undulating profile ...'[5]

Such undulations are easily recognizable to stratigraphers and palaeontologists as having been caused by 'precipitation-induced weathering'. As Santha Faiia's photographs of the Sphinx and the Sphinx enclosure indicate, this weathering takes the distinctive form of a combination of deep vertical fissures and undulating, horizontal coves—'a classic textbook example,' in Schoch's words, 'of what happens to a limestone structure when you have rain beating down on it for thousands of years ... It's clearly rain precipitation that produced these erosional

---

Chephren-present day, *c.* 4700 years	3300 years

[4] 'An abstract of our team's work was submitted to the Geological Society of America, and we were invited to present our findings at a poster session of at the GSA convention in San Diego—the geological Superbowl. Geologists from all over the world thronged to our booth, much intrigued. Dozens of experts in fields relevant to our research offered help and advice. Shown the evidence, some geologists just laughed, astounded [as Schoch had been initially] that in two centuries of research, no one, geologist or Egyptologist, had noticed that the Sphinx had been weathered by water.' *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 229; *Mystery of the Sphinx.* NBC-TV, 1993. 275 geologists endorsed Schoch's findings.

[5] AAAS, Annual Meeting 1992, Debate: How Old is the Sphinx?

features.'[6]

Wind/sand erosion presents a very different profile of sharp-edged horizontal channels selectively scoured out from the softer layers of the affected rock. Under no circumstances can it cause the vertical fissures particularly visible in the wall of the Sphinx enclosure. These could only have been 'formed by water running down the wall',[7] the result of rain falling in enormous quantities, cascading over the slope of the Giza plateau and down into the Sphinx enclosure below. 'It picked out the weak spots in the rock,' Schoch elaborated, 'and opened them up into these fissures—clear evidence to me as a geologist that this erosional feature was caused by rainfall.'[8]

Although in some places obscured by repair blocks put in place by numerous restorers over the passing millennia, the same observation holds true for the scooped-out, undulating, scalloped coves that run the entire length of the Sphinx's body. Again, these are characteristic of precipitation-induced weathering because only long periods of heavy rainfall beating down on the upper parts of the immense structure (and cascading over its sides) could have produced such effects. Confirmation of this comes from the fact that the limestone out of which the Sphinx was carved is not uniform in its composition, but consists of a series of hard and soft layers in which some of the more durable rocks recede farther than some of the less durable rocks.[9] Such a profile simply could not have been produced by wind erosion (which would have selectively chiselled out the softer layers of rock) but 'is entirely 'consistent with precipitation-induced weathering where you have water, rain water beating down from above. The rocks higher up are the more durable ones but they recede back farther than some of the less durable rocks lower in the section which are more protected.'[10]

In his summing up at the AAAS meeting, Schoch concluded:

> It's well known that the Sphinx enclosure fills with sand very quickly, in just a matter of decades, under the desert conditions of the Sahara. And it has to be dug out periodically. And this has been the case since ancient times. Yet you still get this dramatic rolling, erosional profile in the Sphinx enclosure ... Simply put, therefore, what I'm suggesting is that this rolling profile, these features seen on the body and in the Sphinx ditch, hark back to a much earlier period when there was more precipitation in the area, and more moisture, more rain on the Giza plateau.'[11]

As Schoch admitted, he was not the first geologist to have noticed the 'anomalous precipitation-induced weathering features on the core body of the Sphinx'.[12] He was, however, the first to have become involved in public debates over the immense *historical* implications of this weathering. His attitude was that he preferred to stick to his geology:

---

[6] *Mystery of the Sphinx.*

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

[11] AAAS Annual Meeting 1992.

> I've been told over and over again that the peoples of Egypt, as far as we know, did not have either the technology or the social organization to cut out the core body of the Sphinx in pre-dynastic times ... However, I don't see it as being my problem as a geologist. I'm not seeking to shift the burden, but its really up to the Egyptologists and archaeologists to figure out who carved it. If my *findings* are in conflict with their *theory* about the rise of civilization then maybe its time for them to re-evaluate that theory. I'm not saying that the Sphinx was built by Atlanteans, or people from Mars, or extra-terrestrials. I'm just following the science where it leads me, and it leads me to conclude that the Sphinx was built much earlier than previously thought ...'[13]

Legendary civilizations

How much earlier?

John West told us that he and Schoch had 'a friendly debate going' about the age of the Sphinx: 'Schoch puts the date somewhere between 5000 BC and 7000 BC *minimum* [the epoch of the Neolithic Subpluvial] mainly by taking the most cautious view allowed by the data to hand. As a professor of Geology at a big university, he's almost constrained to take a conservative view—and it's true that there were rains between 7000 BC and 5000 BC. However, for a variety of both intuitive and scholarly reasons, I think that the date is much, much older and that most of the weathering of the Sphinx took place in the earlier rainy period before 10,000 BC ... Frankly, if it was as relatively recent as 5000 to 7000 BC, I think we'd probably have found other evidence of the civilization that carved it. A lot of evidence from that period *has* been found in Egypt. There are some strange anomalies within it, I'll admit,[14] but most of it—the vast bulk—is really quite rudimentary.'

'So who built the Sphinx if it wasn't the pre-dynastic Egyptians?' 'My conjecture is that the whole riddle is linked in some way to those legendary civilizations spoken of in all the mythologies of the world. You know—that there were great catastrophes, that a few people survived and went wandering around the earth and that a bit of knowledge was preserved here, a bit there ... My hunch is that the Sphinx is linked to all that. If I were asked to place a bet I'd say that it predates the break-up of the last Ice Age and is probably older than 10000 BC, perhaps even older than 15,000 BC. My conviction—actually it's more than a conviction—is that it's *vastly old?*

---

[12] Ibid. The relevant geologists include Farouk El Baz, and Roth and Raffai.

[13] Extracts from *Mystery of the Sphinx* and AAAS meeting.

[14] Under the category of anomalies, West made specific reference to the bowls carved out of diorite and other hard stones described in Part VI.

This was a conviction I increasingly shared—and, I reminded myself, that most nineteenth-century Egyptologists had shared it too. Nevertheless the Sphinx's appearance argued against such intuitions since there was no doubt that its head *looked* conventionally pharaonic. 'If it's as old as you think it is,' I now asked John, 'then how do you explain that the sculptors depicted it wearing the characteristic *nemes* head-dress and *uraeus* of dynastic times?'

'I'm not bothered about that. In fact, as you know, Egyptologists contend that the face of the Sphinx resembles the face of Khafre—its one of the reasons why they claim it must have been built by him. Schoch and I have looked into this very carefully. We think, from the proportions of the head relative to the rest of the body, that it's been *recarved* during dynastic times—and that's why it looks very dynastic. But we don't think it was ever meant to represent Khafre. As part of our ongoing research into these issues we had Lieutenant Frank Domingo, a forensic artist with the New York Police Department, come over and do point by point comparisons between the face of the Sphinx and the face of Cephren's statue in the Cairo Museum. His conclusion was that in no way was the Sphinx ever intended to represent Khafre. It's not just a matter of it being a different face—it's probably a different race.[15] So this is a very ancient monument that was recarved at a much later date. Originally it may not even have had a human face. Maybe it started out with a lion's *face* as well as a lion's body.'

Magellan and the first dinosaur bone

After my own explorations at Giza I was interested to know whether West's research had cast doubt on the orthodox dating of any of the other monuments on the plateau—particularly the so-called Valley Temple of Khafre.

'We think there's quite a lot of stuff that may be older,' he told me. 'Not just the Valley Temple but also the Mortuary Temple up the hill, probably something to do with the Menkaure complex, maybe even the Pyramid of Khafre ...'

'What in the Menkaure complex?'

'Well, the Mortuary Temple. And actually I'm only using the conventional attribution of the Pyramids for convenience here ...'

---

[15] 'After reviewing my various drawings, schematics and measurements, my final conclusion concurs with my initial reaction: the two works represent two separate individuals. The proportions in the frontal view and especially the angles and facial protrusion in the lateral views, convinced me that the Sphinx is not Khafre. If the ancient Egyptians were skilled technicians and capable of duplicating images, then these two works cannot represent the same individual.' Frank Domingo, cited in *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 232. See also AAAS 1992, for Schoch's views on the recarving of the Sphinx's head.

‘OK. So do you think it’s possible that the pyramids are as old as the Sphinx too?’

‘It’s hard to say. I think something was there where those pyramids now are—because of the geometry. The Sphinx was part of a master-plan. And the Khafre Pyramid is maybe the most interesting in that respect because it was definitely built in two stages. If you look at it—maybe you’ve noticed—you’ll see that its base consists of several courses of *gigantic* blocks similar in style to the blocks of the core masonry of the Valley Temple. Superimposed above the base, the rest of the pyramid is composed of smaller, less precisely engineered stuff. But when you look at it, knowing what you’re looking for, you see instantly that it’s built in two separate bits. I mean I can’t help but feel that the vast blocks on the bottom date from the earlier period—from the time the Sphinx was built—and that the second part was added later—but even then not necessarily by Khafre. As you go into this you begin to realize that the more you learn the more complex everything becomes. For example, there may even have been an intermediate civilization, which actually would correspond to the Egyptian texts. They talk themselves about two long prior periods. In the first of these Egypt was supposedly ruled by the gods—the Neteru—and in the second it was ruled by the Shemsu Hor, the “Companions of Horus”. So, as I say, the problems just get more and more complicated. Fortunately, however, the bottom line stays simple. The bottom line is the Sphinx wasn’t built by Khafre. The geology proves that it’s a hell of a lot older ...’

‘Nevertheless the Egyptologists won’t accept that it is. One of the arguments they’ve used against you—Mark Lehner did so—goes something like this: “If the Sphinx was made before 10,000 BC then why can’t you show us the rest of the civilization that built it?” In other words, why don’t you have any other evidence to put forward for the presence of your legendary lost civilization apart from a few structures on the Giza plateau? What do you say to that?’

‘First off, there *are* structures outside Giza—for example the Osireion in Abydos, where you’ve just come from. We think that amazing edifice may relate to our work on the Sphinx. Even if the Osireion didn’t exist, however, the absence of other evidence wouldn’t worry me. I mean, to make a big deal out of the fact that further confirmatory evidence *hasn’t been found yet* and to use this to try to scuttle the arguments for an older Sphinx is completely illogical. Analogously it’s like saying to Magellan ... “Where are the other guys who’ve sailed round the world? Of course it’s still flat.” Or in 1838 when the first dinosaur bone was found they would have said, “Of course there’s no such thing as a giant extinct animal. Where’s the rest of the skeletons? They’ve only found one bone.” But once a few people began to realize that this bone could only be from an extinct animal, within twenty years the museums of the world were filled up with complete dinosaur skeletons. So it’s sort of like that. Nobody’s thought to look in the right places. I'm absolutely certain that other evidence will be found once a few people start looking in the right places—along the banks of the ancient Nile, for example, which is miles from the present Nile, or even at the bottom of the Mediterranean, which was dry during the last Ice Age.'

The problem of transmission

I asked John West why he thought that Egyptologists and archaeologists were so unwilling to consider that the Sphinx might be a clue to the existence of a forgotten episode in human history.

'The reason, I think, is that they're quite fixed in their ideas about the linear evolution of civilization. They find it hard to come to terms with the notion that there might have been people, more than 12,000 years ago, who were more sophisticated than we are today ... The Sphinx, and the geology which proves its antiquity, and the fact that the technology that was involved in making it is in many ways almost beyond our own capacities, contradicts the belief that civilization and technology have evolved in a straightforward, linear way ... Because even with the best modern technology we almost couldn't carry out the various tasks that were involved in the project. The Sphinx itself, that's not such a staggering feat. I mean if you get enough sculptors to cut the stone away they could carve a statue a mile long. The *technology* was involved in taking the stones, quarrying the stones, to free the Sphinx from its bedrock and then in moving those stones and using them to build the Valley Temple a couple of hundred feet away ...'

This was news to me: 'You mean that the 200-ton blocks in the Valley Temple walls were quarried right out of the Sphinx enclosure?'

'Yes, no doubt about it. Geologically they're from the identical member of rock. They were quarried out, moved over to the site of the Temple—God knows how—and erected into forty-foot-high walls—again God knows how. I'm talking about the huge limestone core blocks, not the granite facing. I think that the granite was added much later, quite possibly by Khafre. But if you look at the limestone core blocks you'll see that they bear the marks of exactly the same kind of precipitation-induced weathering that are found on the Sphinx. So the Sphinx and the core structure of the Valley Temple were made at the same time by the same people—whoever they may have been.'

'And do you think that those people and the later dynastic Egyptians were connected to each other in some way? In *Serpent in the Sky* you suggested that a legacy must have been passed on.'

'It's still just a suggestion. All that I know for sure on the basis of our work on the Sphinx is that a very, very high, sophisticated civilization capable of undertaking construction projects on a grand scale was present in Egypt in the very distant past. Then there was a lot of rain.

Then, thousands of years later, in the same place, pharaonic civilization popped up already fully formed, apparently out of nowhere, with all its knowledge complete. That much we can be certain of. But whether or not the knowledge that Ancient Egypt possessed was the same as the knowledge that produced the Sphinx I really can't say.'

'How about this,' I speculated: 'The civilization that produced the Sphinx wasn't based here, at least not originally ... It wasn't in Egypt. It put the Sphinx here as some sort of a marker or outpost ...'

'Perfectly possible. Could be that the Sphinx for that civilization was like, let's say, what Abu Simbel [in Nubia] was for dynastic Egypt.'

'Then that civilization came to an end, was extinguished by some sort of massive catastrophe, and that's when the legacy of high knowledge was handed on ... Because they had the Sphinx here they knew about Egypt, they knew this place, they knew this country, they had a connection here. Maybe people survived the ending of that civilization. Maybe they came here. ... Does that work for you?'

'Well, it's a possibility. Again, going back into the mythologies and legends of the world, many of them tell of such a catastrophe and of the few people—the Noah story that's prevalent through endless civilizations—who somehow or other retained and passed on knowledge. The big problem with all this, from my point of view, is the transmission process: how exactly the knowledge does get handed on during the thousands and thousands of years between the construction of the Sphinx and the flowering of dynastic Egypt. Theoretically you're sort of stuck—aren't you?—with this vast period in which the knowledge has to be transmitted. This is not easy to slough off. On the other hand we do know that those legends we're referring to were passed on word for word over countless generations. And in fact oral transmission is a much surer means of transmission than written transmission, because the language may change but as long as whoever's telling the story tells it true in whatever the language of the time is ... it surfaces some 5000 years later in its original form. So maybe there are ways—in secret societies and religious cults, or through mythology, for example—that the knowledge could have been preserved and passed on before flowering again. The point, I think, with problems as complex and important as these, is simply not to dismiss any possibilities, no matter how outrageous they may at first seem, without investigating them very, very thoroughly ...'

Second opinion

John West was in Luxor, leading a study group on Egypt's sacred sites. Early the next day he and his students went south to Aswan and Abu Simbel. Santha and I journeyed north again, back towards Giza and the mysteries of the Sphinx and the pyramids. We were to meet there with the archaeo-astronomer Robert Bauval. As we shall see, his stellar correlations provided startling independent corroboration for the geological evidence of Giza’s vast antiquity.

Chapter 48

Earth Measurers

Follow these instructions carefully:

Draw two parallel straight lines vertically down a sheet of paper, about seven inches long and a bit under three inches apart. Draw a third line, also vertical, also parallel and of equal length, exactly mid-way between the first two. Write the letter 'S'—for 'South'—at the top end of your diagram (the end farthest away from you), and the letter 'N' for 'North' at the bottom end. Add the letters 'E' for 'East' and 'W for 'West' in their appropriate positions at either side of the diagram, to your left for East and to your right for West.

What you are looking at are the outlines of a geometrical map of Egypt incorporating a perspective very different from our own (where 'North' is always equated with 'Up'). This map where 'Up' is 'South' seems to have been worked out an enormously long time ago by cartographers with a scientific understanding of the shape and size of our planet.

To complete the map you should now mark a dot on the central of the three parallel lines about an inch to the south of ('up' from) the northern end of the diagram. Then draw two more lines diagonally down from this point, respectively to the north-east and north-west, until they reach the northern ends of the two outermost parallel lines. Finally link those parallel lines directly with horizontal lines running east to west at the northern and southern ends of the diagram.

The shape produced is a meridional rectangle (oriented north-south). This rectangle is seven inches long by just under three inches wide and has a triangle demarcated at its northern (lower) end. The triangle represents the Nile Delta and the dot at the apex of the triangle represents the apex of the Delta—a point on the ground at 30˚ 06' north and 31˚ 14' east, very close to the location of the Great Pyramid.

Longitude 32° 38′ east
Longitude 31° 14′ east
Longitude 29° 50′ east
River Nile
Site of the Great Pyramid
Nile delta

Map showing the geometric conception of Egypt, with the Great Pyramid at the apex of the Nile delta. The Egyptians traditionally thought of south as 'up'.

Geodetic marker

Whatever else it may be, it has long been understood by mathematicians and geographers that the Great Pyramid serves the function of a geodetic marker (geodetics being the branch of science concerned with determining the exact position of geographical points and the shape and size of the earth[1]). This realization first dawned in the late eighteenth century when the armies of revolutionary France, led by Napoleon Bonaparte, invaded Egypt. Bonaparte, who had cultivated a deep interest in the enigmas of the pyramids, brought with him a large number of scholars, 175 in all, including several 'greybeards' gathered from various universities who were reputed to have acquired 'a profound knowledge of Egyptian antiquities', and, more usefully, a group of mathematicians, cartographers and surveyors.[2]

One of the tasks the savants were set, after the conquest was completed, was to draw up detailed maps of Egypt. In the process of doing this they discovered that the Great Pyramid was perfectly aligned to true north—and of course to the south, east and west as well, as we saw in Part VI. This meant that the mysterious structure made an excellent reference and triangulation point, and a decision was therefore taken to use the meridian passing through its apex as the base-line for all other measurements and orientations. The team then proceeded to produce the first accurate maps of Egypt drawn up in the modern age. When they had finished, they were intrigued to note that the Great Pyramid's meridian sliced the Nile Delta region into two equal halves. They also found that if the diagonals running from the pyramid's apex to its north-eastern and north-western corners were extended (forming lines on the map running north-east and northwest until they reached the Mediterranean), the triangle thus formed would neatly encapsulate the entire Delta area.[3]

Let us now return to our map, which also incorporates a triangle representing the Delta. Its other main components are the three parallel meridians. The eastern meridian is at longitude 32° 38' east—the official eastern border of Ancient Egypt from the beginning of dynastic times. The western meridian is at longitude 29° 50' east, the official western border of ancient Egypt. The central meridian is at longitude 31° 14' east, exactly midway between the other two (1° 24' away from each).[4]

What we now have is a representation of a strip on the surface of planet earth that is exactly 2° 48' wide. How long is this strip? Ancient Egypt's 'official' northern and southern borders (which bore no more relationship to settlement patterns than the official eastern and western boundaries) are marked by the horizontal lines at the top and bottom of the map and are located respectively at 31° 06' north and 24° 06' north.[5] The northern border, 31° 06' north, joins the two outer ends of the estuary of the Nile. The southern border, 24° 06' N, marks the precise latitude of the island of Elephantine at Aswan (Seyne) where an important astronomical and solar observatory was located throughout known Egyptian history.[6] It seems, that this archaic land, sacred since time began—the creation and habitation of the gods—was originally conceived of as a *geometric construct* exactly seven terrestrial degrees in length.

---

[1] *Collins English Dictionary,* p. 608.

[2] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 38. Much of the material in this chapter is based directly on the work of Peter Tompkins and of Professor Livio Catullo Stecchini.

[3] Ibid., p. 46.

[4] Ibid., p. 181.

[5] Ibid., p. 299.

Within this construct, the Great Pyramid appears to have been carefully sited as a geodetic marker for the apex of the Delta. The latter, which we have indicated on our map, is located at 30° 06' N 31° 14' E—a point in the middle of the Nile at the northern edge of modern Cairo. Meanwhile the pyramid stands at latitude of 30°N (corrected for atmospheric refraction) and at longitude 31° 09' E, an error of just a few minutes of terrestrial arc to the south and west. This 'error', however, does not appear to have resulted from sloppiness or inaccuracy on the part of the pyramid builders. On the contrary, a close look at the topography of the area suggests that the explanation should be sought in the need to find a site suitable for all the astronomical observations that had to be taken for accurate setting-out, and with a sufficiently stable geological structure on which to park, for ever, a six-million-ton monument almost 500 feet high with a footprint of over thirteen acres.

The Giza plateau fits the bill on all counts: close to the apex of the Delta, elevated above the Valley of the Nile, and equipped with an excellent foundation of solid limestone bedrock.

Doing things by degrees

We were driving north from Luxor to Giza in the back of Mohamed Walilli's Peugeot 504—a journey of just over 4 degrees of longitude, i.e., from 25° 42' N, to the 30th parallel. Between Asiut and El Minya, a corridor of conflict in recent months between Islamic extremists and Egyptian government forces, we were provided with an armed escort of soldiers, one of whom wore plain clothes and sat in the passenger seat beside Mohamed fondling an automatic pistol. The others, about a dozen men armed with AK47 assault rifles, were distributed equally between two pick-up trucks which sandwiched us front and rear.

'Dangerous people live here,' Mohamed had confided out of the corner of his mouth when we had been stopped at a road-block in Asiut and ordered to wait for our escort. Now, although obviously rattled at being obliged to match the high speed of the escorting vehicles, he seemed to relish the kudos of being part of an impressive convoy, lights flashing and sirens wailing, weaving in and out of the slower traffic on the main highway from upper to lower Egypt.

I looked out of the car window for a while at the unchanging spectacle of the Nile, at its fertile green banks and the red haze of the deserts a few miles away to east and west. This was Egypt, the real organic Egypt of today and yesterday, which overlapped (but spread out far beyond) the strange 'official' Egypt of the map described, a rectangular fiction exactly seven terrestrial degrees in length.

---

[6] Ibid., pp. 179-81.

In the nineteenth century the renowned Egyptologist Ludwig Borchardt expressed what is still the conventional wisdom of his colleagues when he remarked, 'One must absolutely exclude the possibility that the ancients may have measured by degrees.'[7] This was a judgement that seemed increasingly unlikely to be tenable. Whoever they may have been, it was obvious that the original planners and architects of the Giza necropolis had belonged to a civilization which knew the earth to be a sphere, knew its dimensions almost as well as we do ourselves, and had divided it into 360 degrees, just as we do today.

The proof of this lay in the creation of a symbolic official 'country' exactly seven terrestrial degrees in length, and in the admirably geodetic location and orientation to the cardinal points of the Great Pyramid. Equally persuasive was the fact, already touched on in Chapter Twenty-three, that the perimeter of the pyramid's base stood in the relationship 2*pi* to its height and that the entire monument seemed to have been designed to serve as a *map-projection*—on a scale of 1:43,200—of the northern hemisphere of our planet:

> The Great Pyramid was a projection on four triangular surfaces. The apex represented the pole and the perimeter represented the equator. This is the reason why the perimeter is in relation 2*pi* to the height.[8]

The Pyramid/Earth ratio

We have demonstrated the use of *pi* in the Pyramid[9] and need not go into this matter again; besides, the existence of the *pi* relationship, though interpreted as *accidental by* orthodox scholars, is not contested by them.[10] But are we seriously supposed to accept that the monument could also be a representation of the northern hemisphere of the earth projected on flat surfaces at a scale of 1:43,200? Let us remind ourselves of the figures.

According to the best modern estimates, based on satellite observations, the equatorial circumference of the earth is 24,902.45 miles and its polar radius is 3949.921 miles.[11] The perimeter of the Great Pyramid's base is 3023.16 feet and its height is 481.3949 feet.[12] The scaling-down, as it turns out, is not *absolutely* exact, but it is very near. Moreover, when we remember the bulge at the earth's equator (our planet being an oblate spheroid rather than a perfect sphere), the results achieved by the pyramid builders seem even closer to 1:43,200.

---

[7] Cited in Ibid., p. 333.

[8] See Chapter Twenty-three, and Stecchini in *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 378.

[9] See Chapter Twenty-three.

[10] Accepted, for example, by Edwards, Petrie, Baines and Malek, and so on.

[11] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 27:530.

[12] *The Pyramids of Egypt,* p. 87.

How close?

If we take the earth's equatorial circumference, 24,902.45 miles, and scale it down (divide it) by 43,200 we get a result of 0.5764 of a mile. There are 5280 feet in a mile. The next step, therefore, is to multiply 0.5764 by 5280, which produces a figure of 3043.39 feet. The earth's equatorial circumference scaled down 43,200 times is therefore 3,043.39 feet. By comparison, as we have seen, the perimeter of the Great Pyramid's base is 3,023.16 feet. This represents an 'error' of only 20 feet—or about three-quarters of 1 per cent. Given the razor-sharp accuracy of the pyramid builders, however (who normally worked to even finer tolerances), the error is less likely to have resulted from mistakes in the construction of the giant monument than in an underestimation of our planet's true circumference *by just 163 miles,* probably caused in part by failure to take account of the equatorial bulge.

Let us now consider the earth's polar radius of 3949.921 miles. If we scale it down 43,200 times we get 0.0914 of a mile: 482.59 feet. The earth's polar radius scaled down 43,200 times is therefore 482.59 feet. By comparison the Great Pyramid's height is 481.3949 feet—just a foot less than the ideal figure, an error of barely one-fifth of one per cent.

As near as makes no difference, therefore, the perimeter of the Great Pyramid's base is indeed 1:43,200 of the equatorial circumference of the earth. And as near as makes no difference, the height of the Great Pyramid above that base is indeed 1:43,200 of the polar radius of the earth. In other words, during all the centuries of darkness experienced by Western civilization when knowledge of our planet's dimensions was lost to us, all we ever needed to do to rediscover that knowledge was to measure the height and base perimeter of the Great Pyramid and multiply by 43,200!

How likely is this to be an 'accident'?

The commonsense answer is 'not very likely at all,' since it should be obvious to any reasonable person that what we are looking at could only be the result of a deliberate and carefully calculated planning decision. Commonsense, however, has never been a faculty held in high esteem by Egyptologists, and it is therefore necessary to ask whether there is anything else in the data which might confirm that the ratio of 143,200 is a purposeful expression of intelligence and knowledge, rather than some numerical fluke.

The ratio itself seems to provide that confirmation, for the simple reason that 43,200 is *not* a random number (like, say, 45,000 or 47,000, or 50,500, or 38,800). On the contrary it is one of a series of numbers, and multiples of those numbers, which relate to the phenomenon of precession of the equinoxes, and which have become embedded in archaic myths all around the world. As the reader can confirm by glancing back at Part V the basic numerals of the Pyramid/Earth ratio crop up again and again in those myths, sometimes directly as 43,200 sometimes as 432, as 4320, as 432,000, as 4,320,000, and so on.

What we appear to be confronted by are two remarkable propositions, back-to-back, as though designed to reinforce one another. It is surely remarkable enough that the Great Pyramid should be able to function as an accurate scale-model of the northern hemisphere of planet earth. But it is even more remarkable that the *scale involved* should incorporate numbers relating precisely to one of the key planetary mechanisms of the earth. This is the fixed and apparently eternal precession of its axis of rotation around the pole of the ecliptic, a phenomenon which causes the vernal point to migrate around the band of the zodiac at the rate of one degree every 72 years, and 30 degrees (one complete zodiacal constellation) every 2160 years. Precession through two zodiacal constellations, or 60 degrees along the ecliptic, takes 4320 years.[13]

The constant repetition of these precessional numbers in ancient myths could, perhaps, be a coincidence. Viewed in isolation, the appearance of the precessional number 43,200 in the pyramid/earth ratio might also be a coincidence (although the odds against this must be astronomical). But when we find precessional numbers in *both* these very different media—the ancient myths and the ancient monument—it really does strain credulity to suppose that coincidence is all that is involved here. Moreover, just as the Teutonic myth of Valhalla's walls leads us to the precessional number 432,000 by inviting us to *calculate* the warriors who 'go to war with the Wolf (500 plus 40 multiplied by 800, as saw in Chapter Thirty-three), so the Great Pyramid leads us to the precessional number 43,200 by demonstrating through the *pi* relationship that it might be a scale-model part of the earth and then by inviting us to *calculate* that scale.

Matching fingerprints?

At El Minya our escort vehicles left us, though the plain-clothes soldier in the front seat stayed with us until Cairo. We paused for a late lunch of bread and felafel in a boisterous, noisy village, then motored north again.

Throughout all this, my thoughts remained focused on the Great Pyramid. Obviously it was not an accident that so immense and conspicuous a structure should occupy a key geographic and geodetic location in a part of the world that appeared, bizarrely, to have been conceived of and 'geometrized' as a rectangular, symbolic construct exactly seven terrestrial degrees in length. But it was the pyramid's other function as a three-dimensional map projection of the northern hemisphere that particularly interested me because it suggested a 'match' with the ancient but advanced maps of the world described in Part I. Those maps, which made use of spherical trigonometry and a range of sophisticated projections, had been claimed by Professor Charles Hapgood to provide tangible, documentary evidence that an advanced civilization with a comprehensive knowledge of the globe must have flourished during the last Ice Age. Now here was the Great Pyramid proving to have a cartographic function *vis-à-vis* the northern hemisphere and also incorporating a sophisticated projection. As one expert explained:

---

[13] See Part V.

> Each flat face of the Pyramid was designed to represent one curved quarter of the northern hemisphere, or spherical quadrant of 90 degrees. To project a spherical quadrant on to a flat triangle correctly, the arc, or base, of the quadrant must be the same length as the base of the triangle, and both must have the same height. This happens to be the case *only* with a cross-section or meridian bisection of the Great Pyramid, whose slope angle gives the *pi* relation between height and base ...[14]

Was it possible that surviving copies and compilations of ancient maps—like the Piri Reis Map, for example—might in some cases go back to source documents produced by the same culture that skillfully incorporated its knowledge of the globe into the dimensions of the Great Pyramid (and indeed into the carefully geometrized dimensions of Ancient Egypt itself)?

I could hardly forget that Charles Hapgood and his team had spent months trying to work out where the original projection of the Piri Reis Map had been centred. The answer they finally obtained was Egypt and specifically Seyne (Aswan) in upper Egypt[15]—where, as we have seen, an important astronomical observatory was situated at latitude 24° 06' N, the official southern border.

Needless to say, precise astronomical observations would have been essential for calculations of the circumference of the earth and of latitude positions.[16] But for how long *before* the historical period had the Ancient Egyptians and their ancestors been making such observations? And had they indeed learned this skill, as they stated forthrightly in their traditions, from the gods who had once walked among them?

Navigators in the Boat of Millions of Years

The god believed by the Ancient Egyptians to have taught the principles of astronomy to their ancestors was Thoth: 'He who reckons in heaven, the counter of the stars, the enumerator of the earth and of what is therein, and the measurer of the earth.'[17]

---

[14] *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* p. 189.

[15] *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* p. 17ff.

[16] See, for example, *The Shape of the World,* p. 23.

Normally depicted as a man wearing an ibis mask, Thoth was a leading member of the elite company of First Time deities who dominated religious life in Ancient Egypt from the beginning to the end of its civilization. These were the great gods, the Neteru. Although they were believed in one sense to be self-created, it was also openly acknowledged and understood that they had a special connection of some kind with another land—a fabulous and far-off country referred to in the ancient texts as Ta-Neteru, the 'land of the gods'.[18]

Ta-Neteru was thought to have had a definite earthly location a very long way south of Ancient Egypt—seas and oceans away—farther even than the spice country of Punt (which probably lay along East Africa's Somali coast).[19] To confuse matters, however, Punt was also spoken of sometimes as the 'Divine Land', or 'God's Land', and was the source of the sweet-smelling frankincense and myrrh especially favoured by the gods.[20]

Another mythical paradise was also linked to the Neteru—an 'abode of the blessed', where the best of humans were sometimes taken—which was believed to be 'situated away beyond a large expanse of water'. As Wallis Budge observed in his important study, *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* 'the Egyptians believed that this land could only be reached by means of a boat, or by the personal help of the gods who were thought to transport their favourites thither ...'[21] Those lucky enough to gain entry would find themselves in a magical garden consisting of 'islands, interconnected by canals filled with running water which caused them to be always green and fertile'.[22] On the islands in this garden, 'the wheat grew to a height of five cubits, the ears being two cubits long and the stalks three, and the barley grew to a height of seven cubits, the ears being three cubits long and the stalks four.'[23]

Was it from a land such as this,, superbly irrigated and scientifically farmed, that the agriculture bringer Osiris, whose title was 'President of the Land of the South',[24] had voyaged to Egypt at the dawn of the First

---

[17] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 400.

[18] Ibid., volume I, p. 443; volume II, pp. 7, 287.

[19] Ibid., volume II, p. 7, where the deity Amen-Ra is addressed in a hymn: 'The gods love the smell of thee when thou comest from Punt, thou eldest-born of the dew, who comest from the Divine Land (Ta-Neteru).' See also volume II, p. 287. Punt is thought by many scholars to have been located on the Somali coast of East Africa where the trees that produce frankincense and myrrh ('the food of the gods') are still grown today.

[20] Ibid.

[21] *Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume I, p. 98; Pyramid Texts of Pepi I, Mer-en-Rah and Pepi II, translated in Ibid., volume II, p. 316, where the maritime connections of the land of the blessed are made clear.

[22] Ibid., volume I, p. 97.

[23] Ibid., pp. 97-8.

[24] Ibid., volume II, p. 307.

Time? And was it from a land such as this, accessible only by boat, that ibis-masked Thoth had also made his way, crossing seas and oceans to deliver the priceless gifts of astronomy and earth-measurement to the primitive inhabitants of the prehistoric Nile Valley?

Whatever the truth behind the tradition, Thoth was remembered and revered by the Ancient Egyptians as the inventor of mathematics, astronomy and engineering.[25] 'It was his will and power', according to Wallis Budge, 'that were believed to keep the forces of heaven and earth in equilibrium. It was his great skill in celestial mathematics which made proper use of the laws upon which the foundation and maintenance of the universe rested.'[26] Thoth was also credited with teaching the ancestral Egyptians the skills of geometry and land-surveying, medicine and botany. He was believed to have been the inventor 'of figures, of the letters of the alphabet, and of the arts of reading and writing'.[27] He was the Great Lord of Magic'[28] who could move objects with the power of his voice, 'the author of every work on every branch of knowledge, both human and divine'.[29]

It was to the teachings of Thoth—which they guarded jealously in their temples and claimed to have been handed down from generation to generation in the form of forty-two books of instruction[30]—that the Ancient Egyptians ascribed their world-renowned wisdom and knowledge of the skies. This knowledge was spoken of almost in awe, by the classical commentators who visited Egypt from the fifth century BC onwards.

Herodotus, the earliest of these travellers, noted:

> The Egyptians were the first to discover the solar year, and to portion out its course into twelve parts ... It was observation of the course of the stars which led them to adopt this division ...[31]

Plato (fourth century BC) reported that the Egyptians had observed the stars 'for ten thousand years'.[32] And later, in the first century BC, Diodorus Siculus left this more detailed account:

> The positions and arrangements of the stars as well as their motions have always been the subject of careful observation among the Egyptians ... From ancient times to this day they have preserved the records concerning each of these stars over an incredible number of years ...[33]

---

[25] Veronica Ions, *Egyptian Mythology,* Newnes Books, London, 1986, p. 84.

[26] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, pp. 407-8.

[27] Ibid., volume I, p. 414.

[28] *Egyptian Mythology,* p. 85.

[29] *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 414.

[30] Ibid., pp 414-15.

[31] *The History,* 2:4.

[32] Reported in E. M. Antoniadi, *L'Astronomie egyptienne,* Paris, 1934, pp. 3-4; see also Schwaller, p. 279.

[33] *Diodorus Siculus,* volume I, pp. 279-80.

Why should the Ancient Egyptians have cultivated an almost obsessional interest in the long-term observation of the stars, and why in particular should they have kept records of their movements 'over an incredible number of years'? Such detailed observations would not have been necessary if their only interest, as a number of scholars have seriously suggested, had been agricultural (the need to predict the seasons, which any country-born person can do). There must have been some other purpose.

Moreover, how did the Ancient Egyptians get started on astronomy in the first place? It is not an obvious hobby for a valley-dwelling landlocked people to develop on their own initiative. Perhaps we should take more seriously the explanation they themselves offer: that their ancestors were taught the study of the stars by a god. We might also pay closer attention to the many unmistakably maritime references in the Pyramid Texts.[34] And there could be important new inferences to draw from ancient Egyptian religious art in which the gods are shown travelling in beautiful, high-prowed, streamlined boats, built to the same advanced ocean-going specifications as the pyramid boats at Giza and the mysterious fleet moored in the desert sands at Abydos.

Landlocked people do not as rule become astronomers; seafaring people do. Is it not possible that the maritime iconography of the Ancient Egyptians, the design of their ships, and also their splendid obsession with observing the stars, could have been part of an inheritance passed on to their ancestors by an unidentified seafaring, *navigating* race, in remote prehistory? It is really only such an archaic race, such a forgotten maritime civilization, that could have left its fingerprints behind in the form of maps which accurately depict the world as it looked before the end of the last Ice Age. It is really only such a civilization, steering its course by the stars 'for ten thousand years' that could have observed and accurately timed the phenomenon of equinoctial precession with the exactitude attested in the ancient myths. And, although hypothetical, it is only such a civilization that could have measured the earth with sufficient precision to have arrived at the dimensions scaled down in the Great Pyramid.

The signature of a distant date

It was almost midnight by the time that we reached Giza. We checked into the Siag, a hotel with an excellent pyramid view, and sat out on our balcony as the three stars of Orion's belt tracked slowly across the southern heavens.

It was the disposition of these three stars, as archaeo-astronomer Robert Bauval had recently demonstrated, that served as the celestial template for the site-plan of the three Giza pyramids. This, in itself, was a remarkable discovery, suggesting a far higher level of observational astronomy, and of surveying and setting-out skills, than scholars had attributed to the Ancient Egyptians. Even more remarkable, however—and the reason that I had arranged to meet him at Giza the next morning—was Bauval's contention that the pattern traced out on the ground (in almost fifteen million tons of perfectly dressed stone) matched exactly the pattern in the sky during the epoch of 10,450 BC.

---

[34] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* for example pp. 78, 170, 171, 290.

If Bauval was correct, the pyramids had been devised, using the changes precession effects in the positions of the stars, as the permanent architectural signature of the eleventh millennium BC.

Chapter 49

The Power of the Thing

On a scale of 1:43,200 the Great Pyramid serves as a model, and map-projection, of the northern hemisphere of the earth. What absolutely excludes the possibility that this could be a coincidence is the fact that the scale involved is keyed in numerically to the rate of precession of the equinoxes—one of earth's most characteristic planetary mechanisms. It is therefore clear that we are confronted here by the manifestation of a deliberate planning decision: one intended to be recognizable as such by any culture which had acquired (a) an accurate knowledge of the dimensions of the earth and (b) an accurate knowledge of the rate of precessional motion.

Thanks to the work of Robert Bauval, we can now be certain that another deliberate planning decision was implemented in the Great Pyramid (which—it is increasingly apparent—must be understood as a device designed to fulfill many different functions). In this case the plan was a truly ambitious one involving the Second and Third Pyramids as well, but it bears the fingerprints of the same ancient architects and builders who conceived of the Great Pyramid as a scale model of the earth. Their hallmark seems to have been precession—perhaps because they liked its mathematical regularity and predictability—and they used precession to devise a plan which could be understood properly only by a scientifically advanced culture.

Ours is such a culture, and Robert Bauval is the first to have worked out the basic parameters of the plan—a discovery for which he has received public acclaim and will in due course, get the scientific recognition he deserves.[1] Belgian by nationality, born and brought up in Alexandria, he is tall, lean, clean-shaven, forty-something, and going a little thin on top. His most notable feature is a stubborn lower jaw which characterizes his tenacious, inquiring personality; he speaks with a hybrid French-Egyptian-English accent and is decidedly oriental in manner. He has a first-class mind and is always restlessly accumulating and analysing new data relevant to his interests, finding new ways to look at old problems. In the process, entirely by accident, he has succeeded in transforming himself into a kind of magician of esoteric knowledge.

---

[1] Robert Bauval's *The Orion Mystery* (Heinemann, London; Crown, New York; Doubleday, Canada; List, Germany; Planeta, Spain; Pygmalion, France, etc.) was an international bestseller when it was published in 1994. Egyptologists closed ranks against its implications, which they refused to discuss, but many distinguished astronomers hailed Bauval's findings as a breakthrough.

The Orion Mystery

The roots of Bauval's discoveries at Giza go back to the 1960s when the Egyptologist and architect Dr. Alexander Badawy and the American astronomer Virginia Trimble demonstrated that the southern shaft of the King's Chamber in the Great Pyramid was targeted like a gun-barrel on the Belt of Orion during the Pyramid Age—around 2600 to 2400 BC.[2]

Bauval decided to test the southern shaft of the Queen's Chamber, which Badawy and Trimble had not investigated, and established that it had been sighted on the star Sirius during the Pyramid Age. The evidence that proved this was provided by the German engineer Rudolf Gantenbrink as a result of measurements taken by his robot *Upuaut* in March 1993. This was the robot that had made the startling discovery of a closed portcullis door blocking the shaft at a distance of about 200 feet from the Queen's Chamber. Equipped with a high-tech on-board clinometer, the little machine had also provided the first-ever completely accurate reading of the shaft's angle of inclination: 39° 30'.[3]

As Bauval explains:

> I did the calculations and these established that the shaft had been targeted on the meridian transit of Sirius around the epoch 2400 BC. There couldn't be any doubt about it at all. I also recalculated the Orion's Belt alignment worked out by Badawy and Trimble with new data that Gantenbrink gave me on the inclination of the southern shaft of the King's Chamber. He'd measured that at 45 degrees exactly, whereas Badawy and Trimble had worked with Flinders Petrie's slightly less accurate measurement of 44° 30'. The new data enabled me to refine Badawy's and Trimble's date for the alignment. What I found was that the shaft had been precisely targeted on Al Nitak, the lowest of the three belt stars, which crossed the meridian at altitude 45 degrees around the year 2475 BC.[4]

Up to this point Bauval's conclusions had been well within the chronological bounds set by orthodox Egyptologists, who normally dated the construction of the Great Pyramid to around 2520 BC.[5] If anything, the alignments the archaeo-astronomer had come up with suggested that the shafts had been built a little *later,* rather than earlier, than conventional wisdom allowed.

As the reader is aware, however, Bauval had also made another discovery of an altogether more unsettling nature. Once again it involved the stars of Orion's Belt:

> They're slanted along a diagonal in a south-westerly direction relative to the axis of the Milky Way and the pyramids are slanted along a diagonal in a southwesterly direction relative to the axis of the Nile. If you look carefully on a clear night you'll also see that the smallest of the three stars, the one at the top which the Arabs call Mintaka, is slightly offset to the east of the principal diagonal formed by the

---

[2] Virginia Trimble, cited in *The Orion Mystery,* p. 241.

[3] Ibid., p. 172.

[4] Personal communications/interviews, 1993-4.

[5] *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* p. 36.

> other two. This pattern is mimicked on the ground where we see that the Pyramid of Menkaure is offset by exactly the right amount to the east of the principal diagonal formed by the Pyramid of Khafre (which represents the middle star, Al Nilam) and the Great Pyramid, which represents Al Nitak. It's really quite obvious that all these monuments were laid out according to a unified site plan that was modelled with extraordinary precision on those three stars. ... What they did at Giza was to build Orion's Belt on the ground.'[6]

There was more to come. Using a sophisticated computer programme[7] capable of plotting the precessionally induced changes in the declinations of all the stars visible in the sky over any part of the world in any epoch, Bauval found that the Pyramids/Orion's Belt correlation was general and obvious in all epochs, but specific and exact in only one:

> At 10,450 BC—and at that date only—we find that the pattern of the pyramids on the ground provides a perfect reflection of the pattern of the stars in the sky. I mean it's a *perfect* match—faultless—and it cannot be an accident because the entire arrangement correctly depicts two very unusual celestial events that occurred only at that time. First, and purely by chance, the Milky Way, as visible from Giza in 10,450 BC, exactly duplicated the meridional course of the Nile Valley; secondly, to the west of the Milky Way, the three stars of Orion's Belt were at the lowest altitude in their precessional cycle, with Al Nitak, the star represented by the Great Pyramid, crossing the meridian at 11° 08'.[8]

Position today
Position c. 2500 BC
Position c. 10,450 BC
Great Pyramid

Precession and the stars of Orion's belt.

The reader is already familiar with the way the earth's axial precession causes sunrise on the vernal equinox to migrate along the band of the zodiac over a cycle of about 26,000 years. The same phenomenon also affects the declination of all visible stars, producing, in the case of the Orion constellation, very gradual but significant changes in altitude. Thus from its highest point at meridian transit (58° 11' above the southern horizon as viewed from Giza) it takes Al Nitak about 13,000 years to descend to the low point, last registered in 10,450 BC, that is immortalized in stone on the Giza plateau—i.e. 11° 08'. As another 13,000 years pass, the belt stars very slowly rise again until Al Nitak is back at 58° 11'; then during the next 13,000 years they gradually fall once more to 11° 08'. This cycle is eternal: 13,000 years up, 13,000 years down, 13,000 years up, 13,000 years down, for ever.[9]

---

[6] Personal communications/interviews.
[7] Skyglobe 3.6.
[8] Personal communications/interviews.

> It's the precise configuration for 10,450 BC that we see on the Giza plateau—as though a master-architect came here in that epoch and decided to lay out a huge map on the ground using a mixture of natural and artificial features. He used the meridional course of the Nile Valley to depict the Milky Way, as it looked then. He built the three pyramids to represent the three stars, exactly as they looked then. And he put the three pyramids in exactly the same relationship to the Nile Valley as the three stars then had to the Milky Way. It was a very clever, very ambitious, very exact way to mark an epoch—to freeze a particular date into architecture if you like ...[10]

The First Time

I found the implications of the Orion correlation complicated and eerie.

On the one hand, the Great Pyramid's southern shafts 'precessionally anchored' the monument to Al Nitak and Sirius in 2475-2400 BC, dates which coincided comfortably with the epoch when Egyptologists said the monument had been built.

On the other hand the disposition of all three of the pyramids in relation to the Nile Valley eloquently signalled the much earlier date of 10,450 BC. This coincided with the controversial geological findings John West and Robert Schoch had made at Giza, which suggested the presence of a high civilization in Egypt in the eleventh millennium BC. Moreover, the disposition of the pyramids had not been arrived at by any random or accidental process but seemed to have been deliberately chosen because it marked a precessionally significant event: the lowest point, the beginning, the First Time in Orion's 13,000-year 'up' cycle.

I knew that Bauval believed this astronomical event to have been linked symbolically to the mythical First Time of Osiris—the time of the gods, when civilization had supposedly been brought into the Nile Valley—and that his reasoning for this derived from the mythology of Ancient Egypt which directly associated Osiris with the Orion constellation (and Isis with Sirius).[11]

Had the historical archetypes for Osiris and Isis actually come here in the First Time, twelve and a half thousand years ago?[12] My research into Ice Age mythologies had persuaded me that certain ideas and memories could linger in the human psyche for many millennia, transmitted from generation to generation by oral tradition. I could therefore see no prima facie reasons why the Osirian mythology, with its strange and anomalous characteristics, should not have originated as far back as 10,450 BC.

---

[9] Skyglobe 3.6

[10] Personal communications/interviews.

[11] See Chapters Forty-two to Forty-four.

However, it was the civilization of dynastic Egypt that had elevated Osiris to the status of the high god of resurrection. That civilization was one that had few known antecedents, and none at all recognizable in the remote epoch of the eleventh millennium BC. If the Osirian mythology had been transmitted across 8000 years, therefore, then what culture had transmitted it? And had this culture also been responsible for *both* the astronomical alignments proven to have been manifested by the pyramids: 10,450 BC and 2450 BC?

These were among the questions I planned to put to Robert Bauval in the shadow of the pyramids. Santha and I had arranged to meet him at dawn, at the Mortuary Temple of Khafre, so that the three of us could watch the sun come up over the Sphinx.

---

[12] 'The Egyptians ... believed that they were a divine nation, and that they were ruled by kings who were themselves gods incarnate; their earliest kings, they asserted, were actually gods, who did not disdain to live on earth, and to go about up and down through it, and to mingle with men.' *The Gods of the Egyptians,* volume I, p. 3.

The pyramids and the belt stars of Orion at 10,450 BC, meridian view.

The platform

Positioned beside the eastern face of the Second Pyramid, the largely ruined Mortuary Temple was a spooky, grey, cold place to be at this hour. And as John West had indicated during our conversation at Luxor, there could be little doubt that it belonged to the same severe, imposing and unadorned style of architecture as the better-known Valley Temple. Here, at any rate, were the same enormous blocks, weighing 200 tons or more each.[13] And here too was the same intangible atmosphere of vast antiquity and awakening intelligence, as though some epiphany might be at hand. Even in its present, much despoiled state, this anonymous structure, which Egyptologists had called a Mortuary Temple, was still a place of power that seemed to draw its energy from an epoch far in the past.

I looked up at the huge mass of the Second Pyramid's eastern face just behind us in the pearl-grey dawn light. Again, as John West had pointed out, there was much to suggest that it might have been built in two different stages. The lower courses, up to a height of perhaps thirty feet, consisted largely of cyclopean limestone megaliths like those in the temples. Above this height, however, the remainder of the pyramid's gigantic core had been formed out of much smaller blocks weighing around two to three tons each (like the majority of the blocks in the Great Pyramid).

Had there been a time when a twelve-acre, thirty-foot-high megalithic *platform* had stood here on the 'hill of Giza', west of the Sphinx, surrounded only by nameless square and rectangular structures such as the Valley and Mortuary Temples? In other words, was it possible that the Second Pyramid's lower courses might have been built *first,* before the other pyramids—perhaps long before, in a much earlier age?

The cult

That question was still on my mind when Robert Bauval arrived. After exchanging a few chilly pleasantries about the weather—a cold desert wind was blowing across the plateau—I asked him, 'How do you account for the 8000-year gap in your correlations?'

'Gap?'

'Yes; shafts that seem to have been aligned in 2450 BC and a site-plan that maps star positions in 10,450 BC.'

'Actually, I see two explanations that both make some kind of sense,' said Bauval, 'and I think the answer has to be one or the other of these ... Either the pyramids were designed as a sort of "star-clock" to mark two particular epochs, 2450 and 10,450 BC, in which case we actually can't say *when* they were built. Or they were built up over ...'

'Hang on with that first point,' I interrupted. 'How do you mean "star-clock"? How do you mean we can't say when they were built?'

'Well, let's assume for a moment that the pyramid builders knew precession. Let's assume they were able to calculate the declination of particular star-groups backwards and forwards in time, just as we can today with computers ... Assuming they could do that then, no matter which epoch they lived in, they'd have been able to make a model of what the skies over Giza looked like in 10,450 BC or 2450 BC as required, just as we could. In other words, if they'd built the pyramids in 10,450 BC they would have had no difficulty in calculating the correct angles of inclination for the southern shafts so that they would be sighted on Al Nitak and Sirius around 2450 BC. Likewise, if they'd lived in 2450 BC they'd have had no difficulty in calculating the correct site-plan to reflect the position of Orion's Belt in 10,450 BC. Agreed?'

---

[13] The Mortuary Temple was excavated by von Sieglin in 1910 and was found to consist of blocks of varying sizes weighing 'between 100 and 300 tons'. *Blue Guide: Egypt,* p. 431.

'Agreed.'

'OK. That's one explanation. But the second explanation, which I personally favour—and which I think the geological evidence also supports—is that the whole Giza necropolis was developed and built up over an enormously long period of time. I think it's more than possible that the site was originally planned and laid out at around 10,450 BC, so that its geometry would reflect the skies as they looked then, but that the work was completed, and the shafts of the Great Pyramid aligned, around 2450 BC.'

'So you're saying that the *ground-plan* of the Pyramids could date back to 10,450 BC?

'I think it does. And I think that the geometrical centre of that plan was located more or less where we're standing now, right in front of the Second Pyramid ...'

I pointed out the large blocks in the lower courses of the huge edifice: 'It even *looks* like it was built in two stages, by two completely different cultures ...'

Bauval shrugged. 'Let's speculate ... Maybe it wasn't two different cultures, Maybe it was one culture, or *cult*—the cult of Osiris, perhaps. Maybe it was a very long-lived, very ancient cult dedicated to Osiris that was here in 10,450 BC and was still here in 2450 BC. Maybe what happened was that some of the ways that this cult did things changed over time. Maybe they used huge blocks in 10,450 BC and smaller blocks in 2450 BC ... It seems to me there's a lot here that supports this notion, a lot that says "very ancient cult", a lot of evidence that has just never been investigated ...'

'For example?'

'Well, obviously the astronomical alignments of the site. I've been among the first to start looking into those properly. And the geology: the work that John West and Robert Schoch have been involved in at the Sphinx. Here are two sciences—both hard, empirical, evidence-driven sciences—that have never been applied to these problems before. But now that we have started to apply them, we're beginning to get a whole new reading on the antiquity of the necropolis. And I honestly think we've just scratched the surface and that much more will emerge from the geology and the astronomy in the future. In addition, nobody's yet made a really detailed study of the Pyramid Texts from anything other than the so-called "anthropological" perspective, which means a preconceived notion that the priests of Heliopolis were a bunch of half-civilized witch-doctors who wanted to live for ever ... Actually they *did* want to live for ever but they certainly weren't witch-doctors ... They were highly civilized, highly *initiated* men and they were, in their own fashion, scientists, as we can judge from their works. Therefore I suggest that it's as scientific or at least quasi-scientific documents that the Pyramid Texts need to be read, not as mumbo-jumbo. I'm already satisfied that they respond to precessional astronomy. There may be other keys too: mathematics, geometry—particularly geometry ... Symbolism ... What's needed is a multi-disciplinary approach to understanding the Pyramid Texts ... and to understanding the pyramids themselves. Astronomers, mathematicians, geologists, engineers, architects, even philosophers to deal with the symbolism—everybody who can bring a fresh eye and fresh skills to bear on these very important problems should be encouraged to do so.'

'Why do you feel the problems are so important?'

'Because they have a colossal bearing on our understanding of the past of our own species. The very careful, very precise site-planning and setting-out that appears to have been done here in 10,450 BC could only have been the work of a highly-evolved, probably technological civilization. ...'

'Whereas no such civilization is supposed to have existed anywhere on earth in that epoch ...'

'Exactly. It was the Stone Age. Human society was supposed to have been at a very primitive level, with our ancestors wearing skins, sheltering in caves, following a hunting-gathering way of life and so on and so forth. So its rather unsettling to discover that civilized people seem to have been present in Giza in 10,450 BC, who understood the obscure science of precession extremely well, who had the technical capacity to work out that they were witnessing the *lowest* point in Orion's precessional cycle—and thus the beginning of the constellation's 13,000 year upwards journey—and who set out to create a permanent memorial of that moment here on the plateau. By putting Orion's Belt on the ground in the way they did they knew that they were freezing a very specific moment in time.'

A perverse thought occurred to me: 'How can we be so sure that the moment that they were freezing was 10,450 BC? After all, Orion's Belt takes up that same configuration in the southern sky, west of the Milky Way at 11-plus degrees above the horizon, once every 26,000 years. So why shouldn't they have been immortalizing 36,450 BC or even the precessional cycle that began 26,000 years before that?'

Robert was clearly ready for this question. 'Some ancient records do suggest that Egyptian civilization had roots going back almost 40,000 years,' he mused, 'like that strange report in Herodotus that talks about the sun rising where it once set and setting where it once rose ...'

'Which is also a precessional metaphor ...'

'Yes. Precession again. Most peculiar the way it always keeps cropping up ... At any rate, you're right, they could have been marking the beginning of the *previous* precessional cycle ...'

'But do you think they were?'

'No. I think 10,450 BC is the more likely date. It's more within the range of what we know about the evolution of *homo sapiens.* And although it still leaves a lot of years to account for before the sudden emergence of dynastic Egypt around 3000 BC, it isn't *too* long a period ...'

'Too long a period for what?'

'It's the answer to your question about the 8000-year gap between the alignment of the site and the alignment of the shafts. Eight thousand years is a very long time but it isn't too long for a dedicated highly motivated cult to have preserved and nurtured and faithfully passed on the high-knowledge of the people who invented this place in 10,450 BC.'[14]

The machine

How high was the knowledge of those prehistoric inventors?

'They knew their epochs,' said Bauval, 'and the clock that they used was the natural clock of the stars. Their working language was precessional astronomy and these monuments express that language in a very clear, unambiguous, scientific manner. They were also highly skilled surveyors—I mean the people who originally prepared the site and laid out the orientations for the pyramids—because they worked to an exacting geometry and because they knew how to align the base-platforms, or whatever it was they built, perfectly to the cardinal points.'

---

[14] Just as any great Christian cathedral, however modern (for example the twentieth-century gothic cathedral on Nob Hill in San Francisco), expresses the thinking, symbolism and iconography of the Judaeo-Christian 'cult' which has roots at least 4000 years old, it should not be impossible to imagine a cult enduring for 8000 years in Ancient Egypt and thus linking the epoch of 10450 BC to 2,450 BC. The completion of the pyramids at that time, like the completion of a cathedral today, would therefore have resulted in structures that expressed extremely old ideas. Plentiful evidence exists within Ancient Egyptian tradition which seems to attest to the existence and preservation of such ancient ideas. For example, 'King Nefer-hetep [XIIIth Dynasty] was a loyal worshipper of Osiris and hearing that his Temple [at Abydos] was in ruins, and that a new statue of the god was required, he went to the temple of Ra-Atum at Heliopolis, and consulted the books in the library there, so that he might learn how to make a statue of Osiris which should be like that which had existed in the beginning of the world ...' *(Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection,* volume II, p. 14). Also *Sacred Science;* pp. 103-4, explains that the construction of temples in the Ptolemaic and late periods of Egyptian history continued to obey very ancient specifications: 'All the plans always refer to a *divine book;* thus the temple of Edfu was rebuilt under the Ptolemies according to the *book of foundation composed by Imhotep,* a book descended from heaven to the north of Memphis. The temple of Dendera followed *a plan recorded in ancient writings dating from the Companions of Horus.*'

'Do you think they also knew that they were marking out the site of the Great Pyramid on latitude 30° North?'

Bauval laughed: I'm certain they knew. I think they knew everything about the shape of the earth. They knew their astronomy. They had a good understanding of the solar system and of celestial mechanics. They were also incredibly accurate and incredibly precise in everything they did. So, all in all, I don't think anything really happened here by chance—at least not between 10,450 and 2450 BC. I get the feeling that everything was planned, intended, carefully worked out ... Indeed I get the feeling that they were fulfilling a long-term objective—some kind of *purpose,* if you like, and that they brought this to fruition in the third millennium BC ...

'In the form of the fully built pyramids which they then precessionally anchored to Al Nitak and to Sirius at the time of completion?'

'Yes. And also, I think, in the form of the Pyramid Texts. My guess is that the Pyramid Texts are part of the puzzle.'

'The software to the Pyramids' hardware?'

'Quite possibly. Why not? At any rate it's certain that there's a connection. I think what it means is that if we're going to decode the pyramids properly then we're going to have to use the Texts ...'

'What's your guess?' I asked Bauval. 'What do you think the purpose of the pyramid builders really might have been?'

'They *didn't* do it because they wanted an eternal tomb,' he replied firmly. 'In my view, they had no doubts at all that they would eternally live. They did it—whoever did it—they have transmitted the power of their ideas through something that is to all intents and purposes eternal. They succeeded in creating a force that is functional in itself, provided you understand it, and that force is the *questions* it challenges you to ask. My guess is that they knew the human mind to perfection. They knew the game of ritual ... Right? I'm serious. They knew what they were doing. They knew that they could initiate people far ahead in the future into their way of thinking even though they couldn't be there themselves. They knew that they could do this by creating an eternal machine, the function of which was to generate questions.'

I suppose that I must have looked puzzled.

'The machine is the pyramids!' Bauval exclaimed, 'the whole of the Giza necropolis really. And look at us. What are we doing? We're asking questions. We're standing out here, shivering, at an ungodly hour, watching the sun come up, and we're asking questions, lots and lots of questions just as we've been programmed to do. We're in the hands of real magicians here, and real magicians know that with symbols—with the right symbols, with the right questions—they can lead you into *initiating* *yourself.* Provided, that is, you are a person who asks questions. And, if you are, then the minute you start asking questions about the pyramids you begin to stumble into a whole series of answers which lead you to other questions, and then more answers until finally you initiate yourself ...'

'Sow the seed ...'

'Yes. They were sowing the seed. Believe me, they were magicians, and they knew the power of ideas ... They knew how to set ideas growing and developing in people's minds. And if you start with such ideas, and follow the process of reasoning like I did, you arrive at things like Orion, and 10,450 BC. In short, this is a process that works on its own. When it enters, when it settles into the subconscious, it is a self-willing conversion. Once it's there you can't even resist it ...'

'You're talking as though this Giza cult, whatever it was—revolving around precession, and geometry, and the pyramids, and the Pyramid Texts—you're talking as though it still exists.'

'In a sense it does still exist,' Robert replied. 'Even if the driver is no longer at the wheel, the Giza necropolis is still a machine that was designed to provoke questions.' He paused and pointed up to the summit of the Great Pyramid where Santha and I had climbed, at dead of night, nine months previously. 'Look at its power,' he continued. 'Five thousand years on it still gets you. It involves you whether you like it or not ... It forces you into a process of thinking ... forces you to learn. The minute you ask a question about it you've asked a question about engineering, you've asked a question about geometry, you've asked a question about astronomy. So it forces you to learn about engineering and geometry and astronomy, and gradually you begin to realize how sophisticated it is, how incredibly clever and skilful and knowledgeable its builders must have been, which forces you to ask questions about mankind, about human history, eventually about yourself too. *You want to find out.* This is the power of the thing.'

The second signature

As Robert, Santha and I sat out on the Giza plateau that cold December morning at the end of 1993, we watched the winter sun, now very close to solstice, rising over the right shoulder of the Sphinx, almost as far south of east as it would travel on its yearly journey before turning north again.

The Sphinx was an equinoctial marker, with its gaze directed precisely at the point of sunrise on the vernal equinox. Was it, too, part of the Giza 'grand plan'?

I reminded myself that in any epoch, and at any period of history or prehistory, the Sphinx's due east gaze would *always* have been sighted on the equinoctial rising of the sun, at both the vernal and the autumnal equinoxes. As the reader will recall from Part V, however, it was the vernal equinox that was considered by ancient man to be the marker of the astronomical age. In the words of Santillana and von Dechend:

> The constellation that rose in the east, just before the sun, marked the 'place' where the sun rested ... It was known as the sun's 'carrier' and the vernal equinox was recognised as the fiducial point of the 'system' determining the first degree of the sun's yearly cycle ...'[15]

Why should an equinoctial marker have been made in the shape of a giant lion?

In our own lifetimes, the epoch of AD 2000, a more suitable shape for such a marker—should anyone wish to build one—would be a representation of a fish. This is because the sun on the vernal equinox rises against the stellar background of Pisces, as it has done for approximately the last 2000 years. The astronomical Age of Pisces began around the time of Christ.[16] Readers must judge for themselves whether it is a coincidence that the principal symbol used for Christ by the very early Christians was not the cross but the fish.[17]

During the preceding age, which broadly-speaking encompassed the first and second millennia BC, it was the constellation of Aries—the Ram—which had the honour of carrying the sun on the vernal equinox. Again, readers must judge whether it is a coincidence that the religious iconography of that epoch was predominantly ram-oriented.[18] Is it a coincidence, for example, that Yahweh, God of Old Testament Israel, provided a ram as a substitute for Abraham's offered sacrifice of his son Isaac?[19] (Abraham and Isaac are assumed by biblical scholars and archaeologists to have lived during the early second millennium BC[20]). Is it likewise coincidental that rams, in one context or another, are referred to in almost every book of the Old Testament (entirely composed during the Age of Aries) but in not a single book of the New Testament?[21] And is it an accident that the advent of the Age of Aries, shortly before the beginning of the second millennium BC, was accompanied in Ancient Egypt by an upsurge in the worship of the god Amon whose symbol was a ram with curled horns?[22] Work on the principal sanctuary of Amon—the Temple of Karnak at Luxor in upper Egypt—was begun at around 2000 BC[23] and, as those who have visited that temple will recall, its principal icons are rams, long rows of which guard its entrances.

The immediate predecessor to the Age of Aries was the Age of Taurus—

---

[15] *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 59.

[16] Ibid.; *Sacred Science,* p. 179.

[17] *Oxford Dictionary of the Christian Church,* Oxford University Press, 1988, p. 514.

[18] *Sacred Science,* p. 177.

[19] *Genesis:* 22:13

[20] *Jerusalem Bible,* chronological table, p. 343.

[21] *King James Bible,* Franklin, Computerized First Edition.

[22] *The Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* p. 20.

[23] Ibid., p. 133.

the Bull—which spanned the period between 4380 and 2200 BC.[24] It was during this precessional epoch, when the sun on the vernal equinox rose in the constellation of Taurus, that the Bull-cult of Minoan Crete flourished.[25] And during this epoch, too, the civilization of dynastic Egypt burst upon the historical scene, fully formed, apparently without antecedents. Readers must judge whether it is a coincidence that Egyptians at the very beginning of the dynastic period were already venerating the Apis and Mnevis Bulls—the former being considered a theophany of the god Osiris and the latter, the sacred animal of Heliopolis, a theophany of the god Ra.[26]

Why should an equinoctial marker have been made in the form of a lion?

I looked down the slope of the Giza plateau towards the great leonine body of the Sphinx.

Khafre, the Fourth Dynasty pharaoh believed by Egyptologists to have carved the monument out of bedrock around 2500 BC, had been a monarch of the Age of Taurus. For almost 1800 years before his reign, and more than 300 years after it, the sun on the vernal equinox rose unfailingly in the constellation of the Bull. It follows that if a monarch at such a time had set out to create an equinoctial marker at Giza, he would have had every reason to have it carved in the form of a bull, and none whatsoever to have it carved in the form of a lion. Indeed, and it was obvious, there was only *one* epoch when the celestial symbolism of a leonine equinoctial marker would have been appropriate. That epoch was, of course, the Age of Leo, from 10,970 to 8810 BC.[27]

Why, therefore, should an equinoctial marker have been made in the shape of a lion? Because it was made during the Age of Leo when the sun on the vernal equinox rose against the stellar background of the constellation of the Lion, thus marking the coordinates of a precessional epoch that would not experience its ‘Great Return’ for another 26,000 years.

Around 10,450 BC the three stars of Orion’s Belt reached the lowest point in their precessional cycle: west of the Milky Way, 11° 08’ above the southern horizon at meridian transit. On the ground west of the Nile, this event was frozen into architecture in the shape of the three pyramids of Giza. Their layout formed the signature of an unmistakable epoch of precessional time.

Around 10,450 BC, the sun on the vernal equinox rose in the constellation of Leo. On the ground at Giza, this event was frozen into architecture in the shape of the Sphinx, a gigantic, leonine, equinoctial marker which, like the second signature on an official document, could be taken as a confirmation of authenticity.

---

[24] *Sacred Science*, p. 177.

[25] As early as 3000 BC. See *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 3:731.

[26] *Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt,* pp. 27, 171.

[27] Skyglobe 3.6.

The eleventh millennium BC, in other words, soon after the 'Mill of Heaven' broke, shifting sunrise on the spring equinox from Virgo into the constellation of Leo, was the only epoch in which the due east facing Sphinx would have manifested exactly the right symbolic alignment on exactly the right day—watching the vernal sun rising in the dawn sky against the background of his own celestial counterpart ...

Looking due east at dawn on the vernal equinox in 10,450 BC. The Sphinx and the constellation of Leo.

Forcing the question

'It can't be a coincidence that such a perfect alignment of the terrestrial and the celestial occurs at around 10,450 BC,' said Robert. 'In fact I don't think coincidence is any longer an issue. To me the real question is *why?* Why was it done? Why did they go to such lengths to make this enormous statement about the eleventh millennium BC?'

'Obviously because it was an important time for them,' suggested Santha.

'It must have been very, *very* important. You don't do something like this, create a series of vast precessional markers like these, carve a Sphinx, put up three pyramids weighing almost 15 million tons, unless you have some hugely important reason. So the question is: *what was that reason?* They've forced this question by making such a strong, imperative statement about 10,450 BC. Really, they've forced the question. They want to draw our attention to 10,450 BC and it's up to us to work out why.'

We fell silent, for a long while as the sun climbed the sky south-east of the Great Sphinx.

Part VIII

Conclusion

Where's the Body?

Chapter 50

Not a Needle in a Haystack

When I was only a few months into this investigation, my research assistant sent me a fifteen-page letter explaining why he had decided to resign. At that stage I hadn't yet begun to put the pieces of the puzzle together and I was working more on hunches than on hard evidence. I was captivated by all the mysteries, anomalies, anachronisms and puzzles, and wanted to learn as much about them as I could. My researcher, meanwhile, had been looking into the long, slow processes by which some *known* civilizations had come into global history.

It transpired that, in his opinion, certain significant economic, climatic, topographical and geographical preconditions had to be met before a civilization could evolve:

> So if you are looking for a hitherto undiscovered civilization of great originators who made it on their own, separate from any of the ones we already know, *you are not looking for a needle in a haystack.* You are looking for something more like a city in its hinterland. What you are looking for is a vast region which occupied a land area at least a couple of thousand miles across. This is a landmass as big as the Gulf of Mexico, or twice the size of Madagascar. It would have had major mountain ranges, huge river systems and a Mediterranean to sub-tropical climate which was buffered by its latitude from the adverse effects of short-term climatic cooling. It would have needed this relatively undisturbed climate to last for around ten thousand years ... Then the population of several hundred thousand sophisticated people, we are to believe, suddenly vanished, together with their homeland, leaving very little physical trace, with only a few surviving individuals who were shrewd enough to see the end coming, wealthy enough and in the right place, with the resources they needed to be able to do something about escaping the cataclysm.

So there I was without a researcher. My proposition was *a priori* impossible. There could be no lost advanced civilization because a landmass big enough to support such a civilization was too big to lose.

Geophysical impossibilities

The problem was a serious one and it continued to nag at the back of my mind all the way through my own research and travels. It was, indeed, this exact problem, more than any other, which had scuppered Plato's Atlantis as a serious proposition for scholars. As one critic of the lost continent theory put it:

> There never was an Atlantic landbridge since the arrival of man in the world; there is no sunken landmass in the Atlantic: the Atlantic Ocean must have existed in its present form for at least a million years. In fact it is a geophysical impossibility for

> an Atlantis of Plato's dimensions to have existed in the Atlantic ...[1]

The adamant and assertive tone, I had long ago learnt, was entirely justified. Modern oceanographers had thoroughly mapped the floor of the Atlantic Ocean and there was definitely no lost continent lurking there.

But if the evidence that I was gathering did represent the fingerprints of a vanished civilization, a continent had to have got lost *somewhere,*

So where? For a while I used the obvious working hypothesis that it might be under some other ocean. The Pacific was very big but the Indian Ocean looked more promising because it was located relatively close to the Middle East's Fertile Crescent, where several of the earliest known historical civilizations had emerged with extreme suddenness at around 3000 BC. I had plans to go chasing rumours of ancient pyramids in the Maldive Islands and along the Somali coast of East Africa to see if I could pick up any clues of a lost paradise of antiquity. I thought I might even work in a trip to the Seychelles.

The problem was the oceanographers again. The floor of the Indian Ocean, too, had been mapped and it didn't conceal any lost continents. *Ditto* every other ocean and every other sea. There seemed to be nowhere now under water into which a landmass big enough to have nurtured a high civilization could have vanished.

Yet, as my research continued, the evidence kept mounting that precisely such a civilization had once existed. I began to suspect that it must have been a maritime civilization: a nation of navigators. In support of this hypothesis, among other anomalies, were the remarkable ancient maps of the world, the 'Pyramid Boats' of Egypt, the traces of advanced astronomical knowledge in the astonishing calendar system of the Maya, and the legends of seafaring gods like Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha.

A nation of navigators, then. And a nation of builders, too: Tiahuanaco builders, Teotihuacan builders, pyramid builders, Sphinx builders, builders who could lift and position 200-ton blocks of limestone with apparent ease, builders who could align vast monuments to the cardinal points with uncanny accuracy. Whoever they were, these builders appeared to have left their characteristic fingerprints all over the world in the form of cyclopean polygonal masonry, site layouts involving astronomical alignments, mathematical and geodetic puzzles, and myths about gods in human form. But a civilization advanced enough to build like that—rich enough, sufficiently well organized and mature to have explored and mapped the world from pole to pole, a civilization smart enough to have calculated the dimensions of the earth—simply could *not* have evolved on an insignificant landmass. Its homeland, as my researcher had rightly pointed out, must have been blessed with major mountain ranges, huge river systems and a congenial climate, and with many other obvious environmental prerequisites for the development of an advanced and prosperous economy: good agricultural lands, mineral resources, forests, and so on.

---

[1] Galanopoulos and Bacon, *Lost Atlantis,* p. 75.

So where could such a landmass have been located, if not under any of the world's oceans?

Library angels

Where could it have been located and *when* might it have disappeared? And if it had disappeared (and no other explanation would do) then *how, why,* and *under what circumstances?*

Seriously, how do you lose a continent?

Commonsense suggested that the answer had to lie in a cataclysm of some kind, a planetary disaster capable of wiping out almost all physical traces of a large civilization. But if so, why were there no records of such a cataclysm? Or perhaps there were.

As my research progressed I studied many of the great myths of flood, fire, earthquakes and ice handed down from generation to generation around the world. We saw in Part IV that it was difficult to resist the conclusion that the myths were describing real geological and climatic events, quite possibly the different local effects of the *same* events in all cases.

During the short history of mankind's presence on this planet, I found that there was only one known and documented catastrophe that fitted the bill: the dramatic and deadly meltdown of the last Ice Age between 15000 and 8000 BC. Moreover, as was more obviously the case with architectural relics like Teotihuacan and the Egyptian pyramids, many of the relevant myths appeared to have been designed to serve as vehicles for encrypted scientific information, again an indication of what I was coming to think of as 'the fingerprints of the gods'.

What I had become sensitized to, although I did not properly realize its implications at the time, was the possibility that a strong connection might exist between the collapsing chaos of the Ice Age and the disappearance of an archaic civilization which had been the stuff of legend for millennia.

It was at this moment exactly that the library angels intervened ...

The missing piece of the puzzle

The novelist Arthur Koestler, who had a great interest in synchronicity, coined the term 'library angel' to describe the unknown agency responsible for the lucky breaks researchers sometimes get which lead to exactly the right information being placed in their hands at exactly the right moment.[2]

At exactly the right moment, one of those lucky breaks came my way. The moment was the summer of 1993. I was at a low ebb physically and spiritually after months of hard travel, and the geophysical impossibility of actually *losing* a continent-sized landmass was beginning to undermine my confidence in the strength of my findings. It was then that I received a letter from the town of Nanaimo in British Columbia, Canada. The letter referred to my previous book *The Sign and the Seal,* in which I had made passing mention of the Atlantis theory and of traditions of civilizing heroes who had been 'saved from water':

> 19 July 1993
> Dear Mr. Hancock,
>
> After 17 years of research into the fate of Atlantis, my wife and I have finished a manuscript entitled *When the Sky Fell.* Our frustration is that despite positive feedback about the book's approach from the few publishers who have seen it, the mere mention of Atlantis closes minds.[3] In *The Sign and the Seal* you write of 'a tradition of secret wisdom started by the survivors of a flood ...' Our work explores sites where some survivors might have relocated. High altitude, fresh-water lakes made ideal post-deluge bases for the survivors of Atlantis. Lake Titicaca and Lake Tana [in Ethiopia, where much of *The Sign and the Seal* was set] fit the climatic criteria. Their stable environment provided the raw materials for restarting agriculture.
>
> We have taken the liberty of enclosing an outline of *When the Sky Fell.* If you are interested we will be pleased to send you a copy of the manuscript.
>
> Sincerely,
> Rand Flem-Ath

I turned to the enclosure and there, in the first few paragraphs, found the missing piece of the jigsaw puzzle I had been looking for. It meshed perfectly with the ancient global maps I had studied—maps which accurately depicted the *subglacial topography* of the continent of Antarctica (see Part I). It made perfect sense of all the great worldwide myths of cataclysm and planetary disaster, with their differing climatic effects. It explained the enigma of the huge numbers of apparently 'flash-frozen' mammoths in northern Siberia and Alaska, and the 90-foot tall fruit trees locked in the permafrost deep inside the Arctic Circle at a latitude where nothing now grows. It provided a solution to the problem of the extreme suddenness with which the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere melted down after 15,000 BC. It also solved the mystery of the exceptional worldwide volcanic activity that accompanied the meltdown. It answered the question, 'How do you lose a continent?' And it was solidly based in Charles Hapgood's theory of 'earth-crust displacement'—a radical geological hypothesis with which I was already familiar:

---

[2] See, for example, Brian Inglis, *Coincidence,* Hutchinson, London, 1990, p. 48ff.

[3] *When the Sky Fell,* with an Introduction by Colin Wilson and Afterword by John Anthony West, is published by Stoddart, Canada, 1995.

> Antarctica is our least understood continent [wrote the Flem-Aths in their outline]. Most of us assume that this immense island has been ice-bound for millions of years. But new discoveries prove that parts of Antarctica were free of ice *thousands of years ago,* recent history by the geological clock. The theory of ‘earth-crust displacement’ explains the mysterious surge and ebb of Antarctica’s vast ice sheet.

What the Canadian researchers were referring to was Hapgood’s suggestion that until the end of the last Ice Age—say the eleventh millennium BC—the landmass of Antarctica had been positioned some 2000 miles further north (at a congenial and temperate latitude) and that it had been moved to its present position inside the Antarctic Circle as a result of a massive displacement of the earth’s crust.[4] This displacement, the Flem-Aths continued, had

> also left other evidence of its deadly visit in a ring of death around the globe. All the continents that experienced rapid and massive extinctions of animal species (notably the Americas and Siberia) underwent a massive change in their latitudes ...
>
> The consequences of a displacement are monumental. The earth’s crust ripples over its interior and the world is shaken by incredible quakes and floods. The sky appears to fall as continents groan and shift position. Deep in the ocean, earthquakes generate massive tidal waves which crash against coastlines, flooding them. Some lands shift to warmer climes, while others, propelled into polar zones, suffer the direst of winters. Melting ice caps raise the ocean’s level higher and higher. All living things must adapt, migrate or die ...
>
> If the horror of an earth-crust displacement were to be visited upon today’s interdependent world the progress of thousands of years of civilization would be torn away from our planet like a fine cobweb. Those who live near high mountains might escape the global tidal waves, but they would be forced to leave behind, in the lowlands, the slowly constructed fruits of civilization. Only among the merchant marine and navies of the world might some evidence of civilization remain. The rusting hulls of ships and submarines would eventually perish but the valuable maps that are housed in them would be saved by survivors, perhaps for hundreds, even thousands of years. Until once again mankind could use them to sail the World Ocean in search of lost lands ...

As I read these words I remembered Charles Hapgood’s account of how the layer of the earth that geologists call the lithosphere—the thin but rigid outer crust of the planet—could at times be displaced, moving in one piece ‘over the soft inner body, much as the skin of an orange, if it were loose, might shift over the inner part of the orange all in one piece.’[5]

Thus far, I felt I was on familiar ground. But then the Canadian researchers made two vital connections which I had missed.

---

[4] See Part I.

[5] Ibid.

Section through the earth. The crustal displacement theory envisages the possibility of periodic displacements of the entire crust in one piece. Often less than 30 miles thick, the crust rests on a lubricating layer known as the asthenosphere.

Gravitational influences

The first of these was the possibility that *gravitational* influences (as well as the variations in the earth's orbital geometry discussed in Part V) might, through the mechanism of earth-crust displacement, play a role in the onset and decline of Ice Ages:

> When the naturalist and geologist Louis Agassiz presented the idea of ice ages to the scientific community in 1837 he was met with great skepticism. However, as evidence slowly gathered in his favour, the skeptics were forced to accept that the earth had indeed been gripped by deadly winters. But the trigger of these paralysing ice ages remained a puzzle. It was not until 1976 that solid evidence existed to establish the timing of ice ages. The explanation was found in various astronomical features of the earth's orbit and the tilt of the axis. Astronomical factors have clearly played a role in the timing of glacial epochs. But this is only part of the problem. Of equal importance is the *geography* of glaciation. It is here that the theory of earth-crust displacement plays its role in unravelling the

> mystery.
>
> Albert Einstein investigated the possibility that the weight of the ice-caps, which are not symmetrically distributed about the pole, might cause such a displacement. Einstein wrote: ‘The earth’s rotation acts on these unsymmetrically deposited masses, and produces centrifugal momentum that is transmitted to the rigid crust of the earth. The constantly increasing centrifugal momentum produced this way will, when it reaches a certain point, produce a movement of the earth’s crust over the earth’s body, and *this will displace the polar regions towards the equator.*
>
> When Einstein wrote these words [1953] the astronomical causes of ice ages were not fully appreciated. When the shape of the earth’s orbit deviates from a perfect circle by more than one per cent, the gravitational influence of the sun increases, exercising more pull on the planet and its massive ice sheets. Their ponderous weight pushes against the crust and this immense pressure, combined with the greater incline in the earth’s tilt [another changing factor of the orbital geometry] forces the crust to shift ...

The connection with the onset and decline of ice ages?

Very straightforward.

In a displacement, those parts of the earth’s crust which are situated at the North and South Poles (and which are therefore as completely glaciated as Antarctica is today) shift suddenly into warmer latitudes and begin to melt with extraordinary rapidity. Conversely, land that has hitherto been located at warmer latitudes is shifted equally suddenly into the polar zones, suffers a devastating climate change, and begins to vanish under a rapidly expanding ice-cap.

In other words, when huge parts of northern Europe and north America were heavily glaciated in what we think of as the last Ice Age, it was not because of some mysterious slow-acting climatic factor, but rather because those areas of land were then situated much closer to the North Pole than they are today. Similarly, when the Wisconsin and Wurm glaciations described in Part IV began to go into their meltdown at around 15,000 BC the trigger was not global climate change but a shift of the ice-caps into warmer latitudes ...

In other words: there is an Ice Age going on right now—inside the Arctic Circle and *in Antarctica.*

The lost continent

The second connection the Flem-Aths made followed logically from the first: if there was such a recurrent, cyclical geological phenomenon as earth-crust displacement, and if the last displacement had shifted the enormous landmass we call Antarctica out of temperate latitudes and into the Antarctic Circle, it was possible that the substantial remains of a lost civilization of remote antiquity might today be lying under two miles of ice at the South Pole.

It was suddenly clear to me how a continent-sized landmass, which had been the home of a large and prosperous society for thousands of years, could indeed get lost almost without trace. As the Flem-Aths concluded: ‘It is to icy Antarctica that we look to find answers to the very roots of civilization—answers which may yet be preserved in the frozen depths of the forgotten island continent.’

I hauled out my researcher’s resignation letter from the files and started to check off his preconditions for the emergence of an advanced civilization. He wanted ‘major mountain ranges’. He wanted ‘huge river systems’. He wanted ‘a vast region which occupied a land area at least a couple of thousand miles across’. He also wanted a stable, congenial climate for ten thousand years, to allow time for a developed culture to evolve.

Antarctica is by no means a needle in a haystack. It’s a huge landmass, much, much bigger than the Gulf of Mexico, about seven times larger than Madagascar—indeed roughly the size of the continental USA. Moreover, as seismic surveys have demonstrated, there *are* major mountain ranges in Antarctica. And as several of the ancient maps seem to prove, unknown prehistoric cartographers, who possessed a scientific understanding of latitude and longitude, depicted these mountain ranges *before* they disappeared beneath the ice-cap that covers them today. These same ancient maps also show ‘huge river systems’ flowing down from the mountains, watering the extensive valleys and plains below and running into the surrounding ocean. And these rivers, as I already knew from the Ross Sea cores,[6] had left physical evidence of their presence in the composition of ocean bottom sediments.

Last but not least, I noted that the earth-crust displacement theory did not conflict with the requirement for 10,000 years of stable climate. Prior to the supposed sudden shift of the crust, at around the end of the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere, the climate of Antarctica would have been stable, perhaps for a great deal longer than 10,000 years. And if the theory was right in suggesting that Antarctica’s latitude in that epoch had been about 2000 miles (30 degrees of arc) further north than it is today, the northernmost parts of it would have been situated in the vicinity of latitude 30° South and would, indeed, have enjoyed a Mediterranean to sub-tropical climate.

Had the earth’s crust really shifted? And could the ruins of a lost civilization really lie beneath the ice of the southern continent?

As we see in the following chapters, it might have ... and they could.

---

[6] Ibid. See Part I and Chapter Fifty-one for details.

Chapter 51

The Hammer and the Pendulum

Although beyond the scope of this book, a detailed exposition of the earth-crust displacement theory is to be found in Rand and Rose Flem-Ath's *When the Sky Fell* (published by Stoddart, Canada, 1995).

As noted, this geological theory was formulated by Professor Charles Hapgood and supported by Albert Einstein. In brief, what it suggests is a complete slippage of our planet's thirty-mile-thick lithosphere over its nearly 8000-mile-thick central core, forcing large parts of the western hemisphere southward towards the equator and thence towards the Antarctic Circle. This movement is not seen as taking place along a due north-south meridian but on a swivelling course—pivoting, as it were, around the central plains of what is now the United States. The result is that the north-eastern segment of North America (in which the North Pole was formerly located in Hudson's Bay) is dragged southwards out of the Arctic Circle and into more temperate latitudes while at the same time the north-western segment (Alaska and the Yukon) swivels northwards into the Arctic Circle along with large parts of northern Siberia.

In the southern hemisphere, Hapgood's model shows the landmass that we now call Antarctica, much of which was previously at temperate or even warm latitudes, being shifted *in its entirety* inside the Antarctic Circle. The overall movement is seen as having been in the region of 30 degrees (approximately 2000 miles) and as having been concentrated, in the main, between the years 14,500 BC and 12,500 BC—but with massive aftershocks on a planetary scale continuing at widely-separated intervals down to about 9500 BC.

According to the earth-crust displacement theory, large parts of Antarctica were positioned outside the Antarctic circle prior to 15,000 BC and thus could have been inhabited, with a climate and resources suitable for the development of civilization. A cataclysmic slippage of the crust then shifted the continent to the position it occupies today—dead centre within the Antarctic circle.

Suppose that, before the displacement of the earth's crust, a great civilization had grown up in Antarctica, when much of it was located at green and pleasant latitudes? If so, that civilization might easily have been destroyed by the effects of the displacement: the tidal waves, the hurricane-force winds and electric storms, the volcanic eruptions as seismic faults split open all around the planet, the darkened skies, and the remorselessly expanding ice-cap. Moreover, as the millennia passed, the ruins left behind—the cities, the monuments, the great libraries, and the engineering works of the destroyed civilization—would have been ever more deeply buried beneath the mantle of ice.

Little wonder, if the earth-crust displacement theory is correct, that all that can be found today, scattered around the world, are the tantalizing fingerprints of the gods. These would be the traces, the echoes of the works and deeds, the much misunderstood teachings and the geometrical edifices left behind by the few survivors of Antarctica's former civilization who had made it across the turbulent oceans in great ships and settled themselves in faraway lands: in the Nile Valley, for example (or perhaps, first, around Lake Tana at the headwaters of the Blue Nile), and in the Valley of Mexico, and near Lake Titicaca in the Andes—and no doubt in several other places as well ...

Here and there around the globe, in other words, the *fingerprints* of a lost civilization remain faintly visible. The *body* is out of sight, buried under two miles of Antarctic ice and almost as inaccessible to archaeologists as if it were located on the dark side of the moon.

Fact?

Or fiction?

Possibility?

Or impossibility?

Is it a geophysical *possibility* or a geophysical *impossibility* that Antarctica, the world's fifth-largest continent (with a surface area of almost six million square miles) could (a) previously have been located in a more temperate zone and (b) have been shifted out of that zone and into the Antarctic Circle within the last 20,000 years?

Is Antarctica movable?

A lifeless polar desert

'Continental drift' and/or 'plate-tectonics' are key terms used to describe an important geological theory that has become increasingly well understood by the general public since the 1950s. It is unnecessary to go into the basic mechanisms here. But most of us are aware that the continents in some way 'float around', relocate and change position on the earth's surface. Common sense confirms this: if you take a look at a map of the west coast of Africa and the east coast of South America it's pretty obvious that these two landmasses were once joined. The time-scale according to which continental drift operates is, however, immense: continents can typically be expected to float apart (or together) at a rate of no more than 2000 miles every 200 million years or so: in other words, very, very slowly.[1]

Plate-tectonics and Charles Hapgood's earth-crust displacement theory are by no means mutually contradictory. Hapgood envisaged that both could occur: that the earth's crust did indeed exhibit continental drift as the geologists claimed—almost imperceptibly, over hundreds of millions of years—but that it also occasionally experienced very rapid one-piece displacements which had no effect on the relationships *between* individual landmasses but which thrust entire continents (or parts of them) into and out of the planet's two fixed polar zones (the perennially cold and icy regions surrounding the North and South Poles of the axis of spin).

---

[1] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 3:584.

Continental drift?

Earth-crust displacement?

Both?

Some other cause?

I honestly don't know. Nevertheless, the simple facts about Antarctica are really strange and difficult to explain without invoking some notion of sudden, catastrophic and geologically recent change.

Before reviewing a few of these facts, let us remind ourselves that we are referring to a landmass today oriented by the curvature of the earth so that the sun never rises on it during the six winter months and never sets during the six summer months (but rather, as viewed from the Pole, remains low above the horizon, appearing to transcribe a circular path around the sky during each twenty-four hours of daylight).

Antarctica is also by far the world's coldest continent, where temperatures on the polar plain can fall as low as minus 89.2 degrees centigrade. Although the coastal areas are slightly warmer (minus 60 degrees centigrade) and shelter huge numbers of seabird rookeries, there are no native land mammals and there is only a small community of cold-tolerant plants capable of surviving lengthy winter periods of total or near-total darkness. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* lists these plants laconically: 'Lichens, mosses and liverworts, moulds, yeasts, other fungi, algae and bacteria ...'[2]

In other words, although magnificent to behold in the long-drawn-out antipodean dawn, Antarctica is a freezing, unforgiving, almost lifeless polar desert, as it has been throughout mankind's entire 5000-year 'historical' period.

Was it always so?

Exhibit 1

***Discover The World Of Science Magazine,* February 1993, page 17:** 'Some 260 million years ago, during the Permian period, deciduous trees adapted to a warm climate grew in Antarctica. This is the conclusion palaeobotanists are drawing from a stand of fossilized tree stumps discovered at an altitude of 7000 feet on Mount Achernar in the Transantarctic mountains. The site is at 84° 22' south, some 500 miles north of the South Pole.

' "The interesting thing about this find is that it's really the only forest, living or fossil, that's been found at 80 or 85 degrees latitude," says Ohio State University palaeobotanist Edith Taylor, who has studied the fossil trees. "The first thing we palaeobotanists do is look for something in the modern records that is comparable, and there are no forests growing at that latitude today. We can go to the tropics and find trees growing in a warm environment, but we can't find trees growing in a warm environment with the light regime these trees had: 24 hours of light in the summer and 24 hours of dark in the winter." '[3]

---

[2] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 1:440.

Exhibit 2

Geologists have found no evidence of *any* glaciation having been present anywhere on the Antarctic continent prior to the Eocene (about 60 million years ago.)[4] And if we go as far back as the Cambrian (*c.* 550 million years ago) we find irrefutable evidence of a warm sea stretching nearly or right across Antarctica, in the form of thick limestones rich in reef-building *Archaeocyathidae:* 'Millions of years later, when these marine formations had appeared above the sea, warm climates brought forth a luxuriant vegetation in Antarctica. Thus Sir Ernest Shackleton found coal beds within 200 miles of the South Pole, and later, during the Byrd expedition of 1935, geologists made a rich discovery of fossils on the lofty sides of Mount Weaver, in latitude 86° 58' S., about the same distance from the Pole and about two miles above sea level. These included leaf and stem impressions and fossilized wood. In 1952 Dr Lyman H. Dougherty, of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, completing a study of these fossils, identified two species of a tree fern called *Glossopteris,* once common to the other southern continents (Africa, South America, Australia) and a giant fern tree of another species ...'[5]

---

[3] *Discover The World Of Science,* February 1993, p. 17. The fifteen mineralized tree stumps, presumably the remnant of a much larger forest, range from three and a half to seven inches in diameter. They were saplings of a well-known genus of seed fern, *Glossopteris* [found in much of the southern hemisphere's coal]. Unlike true ferns, seed ferns had seeds instead of spores, were often treelike, and are now extinct ... All around the Mount Achernar tree stumps, Taylor's colleagues found the tongue-shaped imprints of fallen *Glossopteris* leaves.

Deciduous trees are an indicator of a warm climate, and so is the absence of 'frost rings'. When Taylor analysed the growth rings in samples from the stumps she found none of the ice-swollen cells and gaps between cells that arise when the growth of a tree is disrupted by frost. That means there wasn't any frost in the Antarctic at that time.

'In our memory Antarctica has always been cold,' says Taylor. 'It's only by looking at fossil floras that we can see what potential there is for plant communities. This fossil forest, growing at 85 degrees latitude, gives us some idea of what is possible with catastrophic climate change.' N.B. The trees were killed by a flood or mudflow—another impossibility in Antarctica today.

[4] *The Path of the Pole,* p. 61.

[5] Ibid., pp. 62-3.

Exhibit 3

Admiral Byrd's own comment on the significance of the Mount Weaver finds: 'Here at the southernmost known mountain in the world, scarcely two hundred miles from the South Pole, was found conclusive evidence that the climate of Antarctica was once temperate or even sub-tropical.'[6]

Exhibit 4

'Soviet scientists have reported finding evidence of tropical flora in Graham Land, another part of Antarctica, dating from the early Tertiary Period (perhaps the Paleocene or Eocene) ... Further evidence is provided by the discovery by British geologists of great fossil forests in Antarctica, of the same type that grew on the Pacific coast of the United States 20 million years ago. This of course shows that after the earliest known Antarctic glaciation in the Eocene [60 million years ago] the continent did not remain glacial but had later episodes of warm climate.'[7]

Exhibit 5

'On 25 December 1990 geologists Barrie McKelvey and David Harwood were working 1830 metres above sea level and 400 kilometres [250 miles] from the South Pole in Antarctica. The geologists discovered fossils from a deciduous southern beach forest dating from between two and three million years ago'.[8]

Exhibit 6

In 1986 the discovery of fossilized wood and plants showed that parts of Antarctica may have been ice free as little as two and a half a million years ago. Further discoveries showed that some places on the continent were ice-free 100,000 years ago.[9]

Exhibit 7

As we saw in Part I, sedimentary cores collected from the bottom of the

---

[6] In Dolph Earl Hooker, *Those Astounding Ice Ages,* Exposition Press, New York, 1958, page 44, *citing National Geographic Magazine,* October 1935.

[7] *Path of the Pole,* p. 62.

[8] Rand Flem-Ath, *Does the Earth's Crust Shift?* (MS.).

[9] Daniel Grotta, 'Antarctica: Whose Continent Is It Anyway?', *Popular Science,* January 1992, p. 64.

Ross Sea by one of the Byrd Antarctic Expeditions provide conclusive evidence that 'great rivers, carrying down fine well grained sediments' did flow in this part of Antarctica until perhaps as late as 4000 BC. According to the report of Dr Jack Hough of the University of Illinois: 'The log of core N-5 shows glacial marine sediment from the present to 6000 years ago. From 6000 to 15,000 years ago the sediment is fine-grained with the exception of one granule at about 12,000 years ago. This suggests an absence of ice from the area during that period, except perhaps for a stray iceberg 12,000 years ago.'[10]

Exhibit 8

The Orontaeus Finnaeus World Map reviewed in Part I accurately depicts the Ross Sea as it would look if it were free of ice and, in addition, shows Antarctica's ranges of lofty coastal mountains with great rivers flowing from them where only mile-deep glaciers are to be found today.[11]

Charles Hapgood, *The Path Of The Pole,* 1970, page 111ff: 'It is rare that geological investigations receive important confirmation from archaeology; yet in this case, it seems that the matter of the deglaciation of the Ross Sea can be confirmed by an old map that has somehow survived many thousands of years ... It was discovered and published in 1531 by the French geographer Oronce Fine [Oronteus Finnaeus] and is part of his Map of the World ...

It has been possible to establish the authenticity of this map. In several years of research the projection of this ancient map was worked out. It was found to have been drawn on a sophisticated map projection, with the use of spherical trigonometry, and to be so scientific that over 50 locations on the Antarctic continent have been found to be located on it with an accuracy that was not attained by modern cartographic science until the 19th century. And, of course, when this map was first published, in 1531, nothing at all was known of Antarctica. The continent was not discovered in modern times until about 1818 and was not fully mapped until after 1920 ...'[12]

Exhibit 9

The Buache Map, also reviewed in Part I, accurately depicts the *subglacial* topography of Antarctica.[13] Does it do so by chance or might the continent indeed have been entirely ice-free recently enough for the cartographers of a lost civilization to have mapped it?

---

[10] *Path of the Pole,* p. 107.

[11] See Part I.

[12] *Path of the Pole,* p. 111ff.

[13] See Part I for details.

Exhibit 10

The reverse side of the coin. If the lands presently inside the Antarctic Circle were once temperate or tropical, what about lands inside the *Arctic* Circle? Were they affected by the same dramatic climate changes, suggesting that some common factor might have been at work?

- 'On the island of Spitzbergen (Svalbard), palm leaves ten and twelve feet long have been fossilized, along with fossilized marine crustaceans of a type that could only inhabit tropical waters. This suggests that at one time the temperatures of the Arctic Ocean were similar to the contemporary temperatures of the Bay of Bengal or the Caribbean Sea. Spitzbergen is half way between the northern tip of Norway and the North Pole, at a latitude of 80 degrees N. Today, ships can reach Spitzbergen through the ice only about two or at the most three months during the year.'[14]

- There is firm fossil evidence that stands of swamp cypress flourished within 500 miles of the North Pole in the Miocene [between 20 million and 6 million years ago], and that water-lillies flourished in Spitzbergen in the same period: 'The Miocene floras of Grinnell Land and Greenland, and Spitzbergen, all required temperate climatic conditions with plentiful moisture. The water lillies of Spitzbergen would have required flowing water for the greater part of the year. In connection with the flora of Spitzbergen it should be realized that the island is in polar darkness for half the year. It lies on the Arctic Circle, as far north of Labrador as Labrador is north of Bermuda.[15]

- Some of the islands in the Arctic Ocean were never covered by ice during the last Ice Age. On Baffin Island, for example, 900 miles from the North Pole, alder and birch remains found in peat suggest a much warmer climate than today less than 30,000 years ago. These conditions prevailed until 17,000 years ago: 'During the Wisconsin ice age there was a temperate-climate refuge in the middle of the Arctic Ocean for the flora and fauna that could not exist in Canada and the United States.'[16]

- Russian scientists have concluded that the Arctic Ocean was warm during most of the last Ice Age. A report by academicians Saks, Belov and Lapina covering many phases of their oceanographic work highlights the period from about 32,000 to about 18,000 years ago as being one during which particularly warm conditions prevailed.[17]

---

[14] *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* pp. 109-10.

[15] *Path of the Pole,* p. 66.

[16] Ibid., pp. 93, 96.

- As we saw in Part IV, huge numbers of warm-blooded, temperate adapted mammal species were instantly frozen, and their bodies preserved in the permafrost, all across a vast zone of death stretching from the Yukon, through Alaska and deep into northern Siberia. The bulk of this destruction appears to have taken place during the eleventh millennium BC, although there was an earlier episode of large-scale extinctions around 13,500 BC.[18]

- We also saw (Chapter Twenty-seven) that the last Ice Age came to an end between 15,000 and 8000 BC, but principally between 14500 and 12,500 BC, with a further outburst of extraordinarily intense activity in the eleventh millennium BC. During this geologically brief period of time, glaciation up to two miles deep covering millions of square miles which had taken more than 40,000 years to build-up suddenly and inexplicably melted: 'It must be obvious that this could not have been the result of the gradually acting climatic factors usually called upon to explain ice ages ... The rapidity of the deglaciation suggests that some extraordinary factor was affecting climate ...'[19]

The icy executioner

Some extraordinary factor was affecting climate ...

Was it a 30° one-piece shift of the lithosphere that abruptly terminated the Ice Age in the northern hemisphere (by pushing the most heavily glaciated areas southwards from the northern pole of the spin axis)? If so, why shouldn't the same 30° one-piece shift of the lithosphere have swivelled a largely deglaciated six-million-square-mile *southern hemisphere* continent from temperate latitudes to a position directly over the southern pole of the spin axis?

On the issue of the movability of Antarctica, we now know that it *is* movable and, more to the point, that it has moved, because trees have grown there and trees simply cannot grow at latitudes which suffer six months of continual darkness.

What we do not know (and may never know for certain) is whether this movement was a consequence of earth-crust displacement, or of continental drift, or of some other unguessed-at factor.

Let us consider Antarctica for a moment.

We have already seen that it is big. It has a land area of 5.5 million square miles, and is presently covered by something in excess of seven million *cubic* miles of ice weighing an estimated 19 *quadrillion* tons (19 followed by 15 zeros).[20] What worries the theorists of earth-crust displacement is that this vast ice-cap is remorselessly increasing in size and weight: 'at the rate of 293 cubic miles of ice each year—almost as much as if Lake Ontario were frozen solid annually and added to it.'[21]

---

[17] Ibid., p. 99.

[18] See Part IV.

[19] Ibid.

The fear is that when it is coupled with the effects of precession, obliquity, orbital eccentricity, the earth's own centrifugal motion, and the gravitational tug of the sun, moon and planets, Antarctica's huge, ever-expanding burden of glaciation could provide the final trigger-factor for a massive displacement of the crust:

> The growing South Pole ice-cap [wrote Hugh Auchincloss Brown, somewhat colourfully, in 1967] has become a stealthy, silent and relentless force of nature—a result of the energy created by its eccentric rotation. The ice-cap is the creeping peril, the deadly menace and the executioner of our civilization.[22]

Did this 'executioner' cause the end of the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere by setting in motion a 7000-year shift of the crust between 15,000 BC and 8000 BC—a shift that was perhaps at its most rapid, and would have had its most devastating effects, between 14,500 BC and 10,000 BC?[23] Or were the sudden and dramatic climate changes experienced in the northern hemisphere during this period the result of some other catastrophic agency simultaneously capable of melting millions of cubic miles of ice and of sparking off the worldwide increase in volcanism that accompanied the melt-down?[24]

Modern geologists are opposed to catastrophes, or rather to catastrophism, preferring to follow the 'uniformitarian' doctrine: 'that existing processes, *acting as at present,* are sufficient to account for all geological changes'. Catastrophism, on the other hand, holds that 'changes in the earth's crust have generally been effected *suddenly* by physical forces.'[25] Is it possible, however, that the mechanism responsible for the traumatic earth changes which took place at the end of the last Ice Age could have been a geological event both catastrophic and uniform?

The great biologist Sir Thomas Huxley remarked in the nineteenth century:

> To my mind there appears to be no sort of theoretical antagonism between Catastrophism and Uniformitarianism; on the contrary, it is very conceivable that catastrophes may be part and parcel of uniformity. Let me illustrate my case by analogy. The working of a clock is a model of uniform action. Good timekeeping means uniformity of action. But the striking of a clock is essentially a catastrophe.

---

[20] *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 1991, 1:440; John White, *Pole Shift,* A.R.E. Press, Virginia Beach, 1994, p. 65.

[21] *Pole Shift,* p. 77: Twenty billion tons of ice are added each year at Antarctica.

[22] H. A. Brown, *Cataclysms of the Earth,* pp. 10-11.

[23] See Part IV.

[24] Ibid.

[25] *Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch,* p. 228.

> The hammer might be made to blow up a barrel of gunpowder, or turn on a deluge of water and, by proper arrangement, the clock, instead of marking the hours, might strike at all sorts of irregular intervals, never twice alike in the force or number of its blows. Nevertheless, all these irregular and apparently lawless catastrophes would be the result of an absolutely uniformitarian action, and we might have two schools of clock theorists, one studying the hammer and the other the pendulum.[26]

Could continental drift be the pendulum?

Could earth-crust displacement be the hammer?

Mars and earth

Crustal displacements are thought to have taken place on other planets. In the December 1985 issue of *Scientific American,* Peter H. Schultz drew attention to meteorite impact craters visible on the Martian surface. Craters in polar areas have a distinctive 'signature' because the meteorites land amid the thick deposits of dust and ice that accumulate there. Outside the *present* polar circles of Mars, Schultz found two other such areas: 'These zones are antipodal; they are on opposite faces of the planet. The deposits show many of the processes and characteristics of today's poles, but they lie near the present-day equator ...'

What could have caused this effect? Judging from the evidence, Shultz put forward the theory that the mechanism appeared to have been 'the movement of the entire lithosphere, the solid outer portion of the planet as one plate ... [This movement seems to have taken place] in rapid spurts followed by long pauses.'[27]

If crustal displacements can happen on Mars, why not on earth? And if they *don't* happen on earth, how do we account for the otherwise awkward fact that *not a single one* of the ice-caps built up around the world during previous Ice Ages seems to have occurred at—or even near—either of the present poles.[28] On the contrary, land areas bearing the marks of former glaciation are very widely distributed. If we cannot assume crustal shifts, we must find some other way to explain why the ice-caps appear to have reached sea level within the tropics on three continents: Asia, Africa and Australia.[29]

Charles Hapgood's solution to this problem is simple, extremely elegant and does not affront commonsense:

> The only ice age that is adequately explained is the present ice age in Antarctica. This is excellently explained. It exists, quite obviously, because Antarctica is at the pole, and for no other reason. No variation of the sun's heat, no galactic dust, no volcanism, no subcrustal currents, and no arrangements of land elevations or sea

---

[26] Thomas Huxley cited in *Path of the Pole,* p. 294.
[27] *Scientific American,* December 1985.
[28] *Path of the Pole,* pp. 47-9.
[29] Ibid., p. 49.

> currents account for the fact. We may conclude that the best theory to account for an ice age is that the area concerned was at the pole. We thus account for the Indian and African ice sheets, though the areas once occupied by them are now in the tropics. We account for all ice sheets of continental size in the same way.[30]

The logic is close to inescapable. Either we accept that the Antarctic ice cap is the *first* continent-sized ice sheet *ever* to have been situated at a pole—which seems improbable—or we are obliged to suppose that earth-crust displacement, or a similar mechanism, must have been at work.

Memories of the polar dawn?

Our ancestors may have preserved in their most ancient traditions memories of a displacement. We saw some of these memories in Part IV: cataclysm myths that appear to be eyewitness accounts of the series of geological disasters which accompanied the end of the last Ice-Age in the northern hemisphere.[31] There are other myths too, which may have come down to us from that epoch between 15,000 and 10,000 BC. Among these are several which speak of lands of the gods and of former paradises, all of which are described as being in the south (for example, the Ta-Neteru of the Egyptians) and many of which seem to have experienced polar conditions.

The great Indian epic, *Mahabaratha,* speaks of Mount Meru, the land of the gods:

> At Meru the sun and moon go round from left to right every day, and so do all the stars ... The mountain by its lusture, so overcomes the darkness of night, that the night can hardly be distinguished from the day. ... The day and night are together equal to a year to the residents of the place ...[32]

Similarly, as the reader will recall from Chapter Twenty-five, Airyana Vaejo, the mythical paradise and former homeland of the Avestic Aryans of Iran, seems to have been rendered uninhabitable by the sudden onset of glaciation. In later years it was spoken of as a place in which: 'the stars, the moon and the sun are only once a year seen to rise and set, and a year seems only as a day.'[33]

In the *Surya Siddhanta,* an ancient Indian text, we read, 'The gods behold the sun, after it has once arisen, for half a year.'[34] The seventh Mandala of the *Rigveda* contains a number of 'Dawn' hymns. One of these (VII, 76) says that the dawn has raised its banner on the horizon with its usual splendour and reports in Verse 3 that a period of *several days* elapsed between the first appearance of the dawn and the rising of the sun that followed it.[35] Another passage states, 'many were the days between the first beams of the dawn and actual sunrise'.[36]

---

[30] Ibid., p. 58.

[31] See Part IV.

[32] *The Mahabaratha,* cited in *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* pp. 64-5.

[33] Ibid., pp. 66-7.

[34] Cited in *Paradise Found: The Cradle of the Human Race at the North Pole,* p. 199.

Are these eyewitness accounts of polar conditions?

Although we can never be sure, it may be relevant that in Indian tradition the Vedas are believed to be revealed texts, passed down from the time of the gods.[37] It may also be relevant that in describing the processes of transmission, all the traditions refer to the *pralayas* (cataclysms) which occasionally overtake the world and claim that in each of these the written scriptures are physically destroyed. After each destruction, however, certain *Rishis* or 'wise men' survive who

> repromulgate, at the beginning of the new age, the knowledge inherited by them as a sacred trust from their forefathers in the preceding age ... Each *manvantara* or age thus has a Veda of its own which differs only in expression and not in sense from the antediluvian Veda.[38]

An epoch of turmoil and darkness

As every schoolboy geographer understands, true north (the North Pole) is not quite the same thing as magnetic north (the direction compass needles point). Indeed the magnetic north pole is presently situated in northern Canada, about 11 degrees from the true North Pole.[39] Recent advances in the study of palaeomagnetism have proved that the earth's magnetic polarity has *reversed itself more than 170 times* during the past 80 million years ...[40]

What causes these field reversals?

While he was teaching at the University of Cambridge the geologist S. K. Runcorn published an article in *Scientific American* which made a pertinent point:

> There seems no doubt that the earth's magnetic field is tied up in some way to the rotation of the planet. And this leads to a remarkable finding about the earth's rotation itself ... [The unavoidable conclusion is that] the earth's axis of rotation has changed also. In other words, the planet has rolled about, changing the location of the geographical poles.[41]

Runcorn appears to be envisaging a complete 180-degree flip of the poles, with the earth literally tumbling—although similar palaeomagnetic readings would result from a slippage of the crust *over* the geographical poles. Either way, the consequences for civilization, and indeed for all life, would be unimaginably dreadful.

---

[35] *Arctic Home in the Vedas,* p. 81.

[36] Ibid., p. 85.

[37] Ibid., pp. 414, 417.

[38] Ibid., p. 420.

[39] *Pole Shift,* p. 9.

[40] Ibid.

[41] Ibid., p. 61.

Of course, Runcorn may be wrong; perhaps field reversals can occur in the absence of any other upheavals.

But he may also be right.

According to reports published in *Nature* and *New Scientist,* the last geomagnetic reversal was completed just 12,400 years ago—during *the eleventh millennium BC*.[42]

This is of course the very millennium in which the ancient Tiahuanacan civilization in the Andes seems to have been destroyed. The same millennium is signalled by the alignments and design of the great astronomical monuments on the Giza plateau, and by the erosion patterns on the Sphinx. And it was in the eleventh millennium BC that Egypt's 'precocious agricultural experiment' suddenly failed. Likewise it was in the eleventh millennium BC that huge numbers of large mammal species all around the world vanished into extinction. The list could continue: abrupt rises in sea level, hurricane-force winds, electrical storms, volcanic disturbances, and so on.

Scientists expect the next reversal of the earth's magnetic poles to occur around AD 2030.[43]

Is this an intimation of planetary disaster? After 12,500 years of the pendulum, is the hammer about to strike?

Exhibit 11

Yves Rocard, Professor of the Faculty of Sciences at Paris: 'Our modern seismographs are sensitive to the 'noise' of limited agitation at every point in the earth, even in the absence of any seismic wave. One may in this noise discern a man-made vibration (for example, a train four kilometers away, or a big city ten kilometers off) and also an atmospheric effect (from changing pressure of the wind on the soil) and sometimes one registers also the effects of great storms at a distance. Yet there remains a continued rolling noise of cracklings in the earth which owes nothing to any [such] cause ...'[44]

Exhibit 12

'The North Pole moved ten feet in the direction of Greenland along the meridian of 45 degrees west longitude during the period from 1900 to 1960 ... a rate of six centimetres (about two and a half inches) a year. [Between 1900 and *1968,* however,] the pole moved about twenty feet. [The pole therefore] moved ten feet between 1960 and 1968, at a rate of about ten centimetres (four inches) a year ... If both these observations were accurate when made, as we have every right to expect in view of the eminence of the scientists involved, then we have here evidence that the lithosphere may be in motion at the present time [and that it is experiencing] a geometrical acceleration of the *rate* of motion ...[45]

---

[42] *Nature,* volume 234, 27 December 1971, pp. 173-4; *New Scientist,* 6 January 1972, p. 7.

[43] J. M. Harwood and S. C. R. Malin writing in *Nature,* 12 February 1976.

[44] *The Path of the Pole,* op. cit., Appendix, pp. 325-6.

Exhibit 13

USA Today, Wednesday 23 November 1994, page 9D:

'INTERACTIVE IN ANTARCTICA: Students Link With South Pole Scientists

'A live remote broadcast from the South Pole featuring Elizabeth Felton, a 17-year-old graduate of Chicago public schools, will take place Jan 10. Felton will use US Geological Survey data to reposition the copper marker designating the Earth's geographic South Pole to compensate for the annual slippage of the ice sheet.'[46]

Is it just the ice sheet that is slipping, or is the entire crust of the earth in motion? And was it just an 'unusual interactive education project' that took place on 10 January 1995, or was Elizabeth Felton unknowingly documenting the continued geometrical acceleration of the rate of motion of the crust?

Scientists do not think so. As we shall see in the final chapter, however, the coming century is signalled in a remarkable convergence of ancient prophecies and traditional beliefs as an epoch of unprecedented turmoil and darkness, in which iniquity will be worked in secret, and the Fifth Sun and the Fourth World will come to an end ...

Exhibit 14

Kobe, Japan, Tuesday 17 January 1995: 'The suddenness with which the earthquake struck was almost cruel. One moment we were fast asleep, an instant later the floor—the entire building—had turned to jelly. But this is no gently undulating liquid motion. This is jarring, gut-wrenching shuddering of awesome proportions ...

'You are in bed, the safest place in the world. Your bed is on the floor, what you used to think of as solid ground. And with no warning the world has turned into a sickening roller-coaster ride, and you want to get off.

'Possibly the most frightening part is the sound. This is not the dull rumble of thunder. This is a deafening, roaring sound, coming from everywhere and nowhere, and it sounds like the end of the world.' (Eyewitness report on the Kobe earthquake by Dennis Kessler, *Guardian,*

---

[45] Ibid., p. 44.

[46] *USA Today,* 23 November 1994, p. 9D.

London, 18 January 1995. The tremor lasted 20 seconds, registering 7.2 on the Richter scale, and killed more than 5000 people.)

Chapter 52

Like a Thief in the Night

There are certain structures in the world, certain ideas, certain intellectual treasures, that are truly mysterious. I am beginning to suspect that the human race may have placed itself in grave jeopardy by failing to consider [the implications of these mysteries.

We have the ability, unique in the animal kingdom, to learn from the experiences of our predecessors. After Hiroshima and Nagasaki, for example, two generations have grown to adulthood in awareness of the horrific destruction that nuclear weapons unleash. Our children will be aware of this too, without experiencing it directly, and they will pass it on to their children. Theoretically, therefore, the knowledge of what atom bombs do has become part of the permanent historical legacy of mankind, whether we choose to benefit from that legacy or not is up to us. Nevertheless the knowledge is there, should we wish to use it, because it has been preserved and transmitted in written records, in film archives, in allegorical paintings, in war memorials, and so on.

Not all testimony from the past is accorded the same stature as the records of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. On the contrary, like the Canonical Bible, the body of knowledge that we call ‘History’ is an edited cultural artefact from which much has been left out. In particular, references to human experiences prior to the invention of writing around 5000 years ago have been omitted *in their entirety* and myth has become a synonym for delusion.

Suppose it is not delusion?

Suppose that a tremendous cataclysm were to overtake the earth today, obliterating the achievements of our civilization and wiping out almost all of us. Suppose, to paraphrase Plato, that we were forced by this cataclysm ‘to begin again like children, in complete ignorance of what had happened in early times’.[1] Under such circumstances, ten or twelve thousand years from now (with all written records and film archives long since destroyed) what testimony might our descendants still preserve concerning the events at the Japanese cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki in August 1945 of the Christian era?

It is easy to imagine how they might speak in mystical terms of explosions that gave off a ‘terrible glare of light’ and ‘immense heat’.[2] Nor would we be too surprised to find that they might have formulated a ‘mythical’ account something like this:

---

[1] Plato, *Timaeus and Critias,* Penguin Classics, 1977, p. 36.

[2] *The Bhagavata Purana,* Motilal Banardass, Delhi, 1986, Part I, pp. 59, 95.

> The flames of the Brahmastra-charged missiles mingled with each other and surrounded by fiery arrows they covered the earth, heaven and space between and increased the conflagration like the fire and the Sun at the end of the world ... All beings who were scorched by the Brahmastras, and saw the terrible fire of their missiles, felt that it was the fire *of Pralaya* [the cataclysm] that burns down the world.[3]

And what of the *Enola Gay* which carried the Hiroshima bomb? How might our descendants remember that strange aircraft and the squadrons of others like it that swarmed through the skies of planet earth during the twentieth century of the Christian era? Isn't it possible, probable even, that they might preserve traditions of 'celestial cars' and 'heavenly chariots' and 'spacious flying machines', and even of 'aerial cities'.[4] If they did, would they perhaps speak of such wonders in mythical terms a little like these:

- 'Oh you, Uparicara Vasu, the spacious aerial flying machine will come to you—and you alone, of all the mortals, seated on that vehicle will look like a deity.'[5]

- 'Visvakarma, the architect among the Gods, built aerial vehicles for the Gods.'[6]

- 'Oh you descendant of the Kurus, that wicked fellow came on that all-traversing automatic flying vehicle known as Saubhapura and pierced me with weapons.'[7]

- 'He entered into the favourite divine palace of Indra and saw thousands of flying vehicles intended for the Gods lying at rest.'[8]

- 'The Gods came in their respective flying vehicles to witness the battle between Kripacarya and Arjuna. Even Indra, the Lord of Heaven, came with a special type of flying vehicle which could accommodate 33 divine beings.'[9]

All these quotations have been taken from the *Bhagavata Purana* and from the *Mahabaratha,* two drops in the ocean of the ancient wisdom literature of the Indian subcontinent. And such images are replicated in many other archaic traditions. To give one example (as we saw in Chapter Forty-two), the Pyramid Texts are replete with anachronistic images of flight:

---

[3] Ibid., p. 60.
[4] Dileep Kumar Kanjilal, *Vimana in Ancient India,* Sanskrit Pustak Bhandar, Calcutta, 1985, p. 16.
[5] Ibid., p. 17.
[6] Ibid., p. 18.
[7] Ibid.
[8] Ibid.
[9] Ibid., p. 19.

> The King is a flame, moving before the wind to the end of the sky and to the end of the earth ... the King travels the air and traverses the earth ... there is brought to him a way of ascent to the sky ...[10]

Is it possible that the constant references in archaic literatures to something like aviation could be valid historical testimony concerning the achievements of a forgotten and remote technological age?

We will never know unless we try to find out. And so far we haven't tried because our rational, scientific culture regards myths and traditions as 'unhistorical'.

No doubt many are unhistorical. but at the end of the investigation that underlies this book, I am certain that many others are not ...

For the benefit of future generations of mankind

Here is a scenario:

Suppose that we had calculated, on the basis of sound evidence and beyond any shadow of a doubt, that our civilization was soon to be obliterated by a titanic geological cataclysm—a 30° displacement of the earth's crust, for example, or a head-on collision with a ten-mile-wide nickel-iron asteroid travelling towards us at cosmic speed.

Of course there would at first be much panic and despair. Nevertheless—if there were sufficient advance warning—steps would be taken to ensure that there would be some survivors and that some of what was most valuable in our high scientific knowledge would be preserved for the benefit of future generations.

Strangely enough, the Jewish historian Josephus (who wrote during the first century AD) attributes precisely this behaviour to the clever and prosperous inhabitants of the antediluvian world who lived before the Flood 'in a happy condition without any misfortunes falling upon them':[11]

> They also were the inventors of that peculiar sort of wisdom which is concerned with the heavenly bodies, and their order. And that their inventions might not be lost—upon Adam's prediction that the world was to be destroyed at one time by the force of fire, and at another time by the violence and quantity of water—they made two pillars, one of brick, the other of stone: they inscribed their discoveries upon them both, that in case the pillar of brick should be destroyed by the Flood, the pillar of stone might remain and exhibit these discoveries to mankind; and also inform them that there was another pillar of brick erected by them ...[12]

Likewise, when the Oxford astronomer John Greaves visited Egypt in the seventeenth century he collected ancient local traditions which attributed the construction of the three Giza pyramids to a mythical antediluvian king:

---

[10] *The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts,* p. 70, Utt. 261.

[11] *The Complete Works Of Josephus,* Kregel Publications, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1991, p. 27.

[12] Ibid.

> The occasion of this was because he saw in his sleep that the whole earth was turned over, with the inhabitants of it lying upon their faces and the stars falling down and striking one another with a terrible noise ... And he awaked with great feare, and assembled the chief priests of all the provinces of Egypt ... He related the whole matter to them and they took the altitude of the stars, and made their prognostication, and they foretold of a deluge. The king said, will it come to our country? They answered yes, and will destroy it. And there remained a certain number of years to come, and he commanded in the mean space to build the Pyramids ... And he engraved in these Pyramids all things that were told by wise men, as also all profound sciences—the science of Astrology, and of Arithmeticke, and of Geometry, and of Physicke. All this may be interpreted by him that knowes their characters and language ...[13]

Taken at face value, the message of both of these myths seems crystal clear: certain mysterious structures scattered around the world were built to preserve and transmit the knowledge of an advanced civilization of remote antiquity which was destroyed by a terrifying upheaval.

Could this be so? And what are we to make of other strange traditions that have come to us from the dark vault of prehistory?

What are we to make, for example, of the *Popol Vuh,* which speaks in veiled language about a great secret of the human past: a long-forgotten golden age when everything was possible—a magical time of scientific progress and enlightenment when the ‘First Men’ (who were ‘endowed with intelligence’) not only ‘measured the round face of the earth’ but ‘examined the four points of the arch of the sky’.

As the reader will recall, the gods became jealous at the rapid progress made by these upstart humans who had ‘succeeded in seeing, succeeded in knowing, all that there is in the world.’[14] Divine retribution quickly followed: ‘The Heart of Heaven blew mist into their eyes ... In this way all the wisdom and all the knowledge of the First Men [together with their memory of their] origin and their beginning, were destroyed.’[15]

The secret of what happened was never entirely forgotten because a record of those distant First Times was preserved, until the coming of the Spaniards, in the sacred texts of the original *Popol Vuh.* The abuses of the conquest made it necessary for that primordial document to be concealed from all but the most highly-initiated sages and replaced with a watered-down substitute written ‘under the law of Christianity’:[16] ‘No longer can be seen the book of *Popol Vuh* which the kings had in olden times ... The original book, written long ago, existed—but now its sight is hidden to the searcher and to the thinker ...’[17]

On the other side of the world, among the myths and traditions of the Indian subcontinent, there are further tantalizing suggestions of hidden secrets. In the *Puranic* version of the universal flood story, shortly before the deluge was unleashed, the fish god Vishnu warned his human protégé that he 'should conceal the Sacred Scriptures in a safe place' to preserve the knowledge of the antediluvian races from destruction.[18] Likewise, in Mesopotamia, the Noah figure Utnapishtim was instructed by the god Ea 'to take the beginning, the middle and the end of whatever was consigned to writing and then to bury it in the City of the Sun at Sippara'.[19] After the waters of the flood had gone, survivors were instructed to make their way to the site of the City of the Sun 'to search for the writings', which would be found to contain knowledge of benefit to future generations of mankind.[20]

---

[13] John Greaves, *Pyramidographia,* cited in *Serpent in the Sky,* p. 230.

[14] *Popol Vuh,* p. 168.

[15] Ibid., p. 169.

[16] Ibid., p. 79.

[17] Ibid., p. 79-80.

Strangely enough, it was the City of the Sun in Egypt, Innu, known by the Greeks as Heliopolis—which was regarded throughout the dynastic period as the source and centre of the high wisdom handed down to mortal men from the fabled First Time of the gods. It was at Heliopolis that the Pyramid Texts were collated, and it was the Heliopolitan priesthood—or rather the Heliopolitan cult—that had custody of the monuments of the Giza necropolis.

More than just Kilroy was here

Let us return to our scenario:

1 we know that our late twentieth-century, post-industrial civilization is about to be destroyed by an inescapable cosmic or geological cataclysm;

2 we know—because our science is pretty good—that the destruction is going to be *near-total;*

3 mobilizing massive technological resources, we put our best minds to work to ensure that at least a remnant of our species will survive the catastrophe, and that the core of our scientific, medical, astronomical, geographical, architectural and mathematical knowledge will be preserved;

4 we are of course aware how slim are our chances of succeeding on both counts; nevertheless, galvanized by the prospect of extinction, we make an almighty effort to build the Arks or Vars or strong enclosures in which the chosen survivors can be protected, and we focus our considerable ingenuity on ways to transmit the essence of the knowledge we have accumulated during the 5000 years of our recorded history.

---

[18] *The Bhagavata Purana,* cited *in Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* p. 88.

[19] Berossus Fragments cited in *The Sirius Mystery,* p. 249.

[20] Ibid.

We start by preparing for the worst. We assume that there will be survivors but that they will be blasted back into the Stone Age by the cataclysm. Realizing that it may take ten or twelve thousand years for a civilization as advanced as our own to rise again like a phoenix from the ashes, one of our top priorities is to find a way to communicate with that postulated future civilization. At the least we would want to say to them: KILROY WAS HERE! and to be sure they got the message no matter what language they spoke or what ethical, religious, ideological, metaphysical or philosophical leanings their society might exhibit.

I'm sure we'd want to say more than just 'Kilroy was here'. We'd want, for example, to tell them—those distant grandchildren of ours—*when* we had lived in relation to their time.

How would we do that? How would we express, say, AD 2012 of the Christian era in a language universal enough to be worked out and understood twelve thousand years hence by a civilization that would know nothing of the Christian or of any of the other eras by which we express chronology?

One obvious solution would be to make use of the beautiful predictability of the earth's axial precession, which has the effect of slowly and regularly altering the declination of the entire star-field in relation to a viewer at a fixed point, and which equally slowly and regularly revolves the equinoctial point in relation to the twelve zodiacal constellations. From the predictability of this motion it follows that if we could find a way to declare: WE LIVED WHEN THE VERNAL EQUINOX WAS IN THE CONSTELLATION OF PISCES we would provide a means of specifying our epoch to within a single 2160-year period in every grand precessional cycle of 25,920 years.

The only drawback to this scheme would become evident if a civilization equivalent to our own failed to arise within 12,000 or even 20,000 years of the cataclysm, but took much longer—perhaps as much as 30,000 years. In that case, a monument or calendrical device declaring 'we lived when the vernal equinox was in the constellation of Pisces' would no longer be unambiguous. If discovered by a high culture flourishing at the very beginning of a future Age of Sagittarius for example it could be read as meaning 'we lived 4320 years before your time'—that is, two full precessional 'months' prior to the Sagittarian Age (the 2160-year 'months' of Aquarius and Capricorn). But it could also mean 'We lived 30,240 years before your time', that is those two 'months' plus the full previous precessional cycle of 25,920 years. The Sagittarian archaeologists would not only have to use their wits to work out the meaning of the message (i.e. WE LIVED WHEN THE VERNAL EQUINOX WAS IN PISCES), but would need to decide from other clues *which* Age of Pisces we had lived in: the most recent, or the one in the previous precessional cycle, or perhaps even the cycle before that.

Geology would naturally be of assistance in making such broad judgements ...

The civilizers

If we could find a way of saying WE LIVED IN THE AGE OF PISCES, and could specify the altitude above the horizon of certain identifiable stars in our own epoch (say, the prominent belt stars of the Orion constellation), we would be able to signal our dates to future generations with greater precision. Alternatively we could do as the builders of the Giza pyramids appear to have done and lay out our monuments in a pattern on the ground reflecting exactly the pattern of the stars in the sky in our time.

There would be several other options and combinations of options open to us, depending on our circumstances, on the level of technology available to us, on the extent of the early warning we were given, and on which chronological facts we wanted to transmit.

Suppose, for example, that there was not time to make proper preparations prior to the catastrophe. Suppose that the disaster, like 'the Day of the Lord' in 2 Peter 3, crept up on us unseen 'as a thief in the night?'[21] What prospects might humanity be faced with?

Whether as the result of an asteroid strike or an earth-crust displacement or some other cosmic or geological cause, let us assume:

1. massive devastation all around the world;
2. the survival of only relatively small numbers of people, the majority of whom rapidly revert to barbarism;
3. the presence, among this remnant, of a minority of well-organized visionaries—including master-builders, scientists, engineers, cartographers, mathematicians, medical doctors and the like—who dedicate themselves to salvaging what they can and finding ways to transmit the knowledge to the future for the benefit of those who might eventually understand it.

Let us call these hypothetical visionaries 'the civilisers'. As they banded together—at first to survive, later to teach and to share ideas—they might take on something of the manner and belief systems of a religious cult, developing a clear sense of mission and of shared identity. No doubt they would make use of powerful and easily recognizable symbols to strengthen and express this sense of common purpose: the men might wear distinctive beards, for example, or shave their heads, and certain archetypal imagery like the cross and the serpent and the dog might be used to link the members of the cult together as they set out on their civilizing missions to relight the lamps of knowledge around the world.

---

[21] 2 *Peter* 3:10.

I suspect, if the situation were bad enough after the cataclysm, that many of the civilizers would fail, or meet with only limited success. But let us suppose that one small group had the skill and dedication sufficient to create a lasting and stable beach-head, perhaps in a region which had suffered relatively little damage in the disaster. Then let us suppose that some other unexpected disaster were to occur—an aftershock or series of aftershocks from the original catastrophe perhaps—and the beach-head was almost totally annihilated.

What might happen next? What might be salvaged from this wreckage of a wisdom cult which had itself been salvaged from a greater wreck?

Transmitting the essence

If the circumstances were right it seems possible that *the essence of the cult* might survive, carried forward by a nucleus of determined men and women. I suspect, too, with the proper motivation and indoctrination techniques, plus a means of recruiting new members from among the half-savage local inhabitants, that such a cult might perpetuate itself *almost indefinitely.* This could happen, however, only if its members (like the Jews awaiting the Messiah) were prepared to bide their time, for thousands and thousands of years, until they felt confident that the moment had come to declare themselves.

If they did that, and if their sacred objective were indeed to preserve and transmit knowledge to some evolved future civilization, it is easy to imagine how the cult members might be described in terms similar to those used for the Egyptian wisdom god Thoth who was said to have

> succeeded in understanding the mysteries of the heavens [and to have] revealed them by inscribing them in sacred books which he then hid here on earth, intending that they should be searched for by future generations but found only by the fully worthy ...[22]

What might the mysterious ‘books of Thoth’ have been? Is it necessary to suppose that all the information they were purported to contain should have been transmitted in *book* form?

Is it not worth wondering, for example, whether Professors de Santillana and von Dechend might have earned their place among the ‘fully worthy’ when they decoded the advanced scientific language embedded in the great universal myths of precession? In so doing, is it not possible that they might have stumbled upon one of the metaphorical ‘books’ of Thoth and read the ancient science inscribed upon its pages?

Likewise, what about Posnansky’s discoveries at Tiahuanaco, and Hapgood’s maps? What about the new understanding that is dawning concerning the geological antiquity of the Sphinx at Giza? What about the questions raised by the gigantic blocks used in the construction of the

---

[22] *The Egyptian Hermes,* p. 33.

Valley and Mortuary Temples? What about the secrets now being teased, one by one, from the astronomical alignments and dimensions and concealed chambers of the pyramids?

If these, too, are readings from the metaphorical books of Thoth, it would seem that the numbers of the 'fully worthy' are increasing, and that new and even more startling revelations may soon be at hand ...

To return briefly and for the last time to our evolving scenario:

1 at the beginning of the twenty-first century of the Christian era, near the cusp of the Age of Pisces and the Age of Aquarius, civilization as we know it is destroyed;

2 among the devastated survivors a few hundred or a few thousand individuals band together to preserve and transmit the fruits of their culture's scientific knowledge into a distant and uncertain future;

3 these civilizers split into small groups and spread across the globe;

4 by and large they fail, and perish; nevertheless, in certain areas, some do succeed in making a lasting cultural impression;

5 after thousands of years—and perhaps several false starts—a branch of the original wisdom cult influences the emergence of a fully fledged civilization ...

Of course the parallel for this last category is once again to be found in Egypt. I would seriously propose as a hypothesis for further testing that a scientific wisdom cult, made up of the survivors of a great, lost, *maritime* civilization, could perhaps have established itself in the Nile Valley as early as the fourteenth millennium BC. The cult would have been based at Heliopolis, Giza and Abydos, and perhaps at other centres as well, and would have initiated Egypt's early agricultural revolution. Later, however, beaten down by the huge floods and other disturbances of the earth which took place in the eleventh millennium BC, the cult would have been obliged to cut its losses and withdraw until the turmoil of the Ice Age was over—never knowing whether its message would survive the subsequent dark epochs.

Under such circumstances, the hypothesis suggests that a huge and ambitious building project would have been one way cult members could preserve and transmit scientific information into the future independently of their physical survival. In other words, if the buildings were large enough, capable of enduring through immense spans of time and encoded through and through with the cult's message, there would be hope that the message would be *decoded* at some future date even if the cult had by then long since ceased to exist.

The hypothesis proposes that this is what the enigmatic structures on the Giza plateau are all about:

1 that the Great Sphinx is indeed, as we have argued in previous chapters, an equinoctial marker for the Age of Leo, indicating a date in our own chronology of between 10,970 BC and 8810 BC;

2 that the three principal pyramids are indeed laid out in relation to the Nile Valley to mimic the precise dispositions of the three stars of Orion's Belt in relation to the course of the Milky Way in 10,450 BC.

This is a pretty effective means of 'specifying' the epoch of the eleventh millennium BC by using the phenomenon of precession, which has been rightly described as the 'only true clock of our planet'.[23] Confusingly, however, we also know that the Great Pyramid incorporates star shafts 'locked in' to Orion's Belt and Sirius at around 2450 BC.[24] The hypothesis resolves the anomaly of the missing years by supposing the star shafts to be merely the later work of the same long-lived cult that originally laid out the Giza ground-plan in 10,450 BC. Naturally, the hypothesis also suggests that it was this same cult, towards the end of those 8000 missing years, that provided the initiating spark for the sudden and 'fully formed' emergence of the literate historical civilization of dynastic Egypt.

What remains to be guessed at are the *motives* of the pyramid builders, who were presumably the same people as the mysterious cartographers who mapped the globe at the end of the last Ice Age in the northern hemisphere. If so, we might also ask why these highly civilized and technically accomplished architects and navigators were obsessed with charting the gradual glaciation of the enigmatic southern continent of Antarctica from the fourteenth millennium BC—when Hapgood calculates that the source map referred to by Phillipe Buache was drawn up—down to about the end of the fifth millennium BC?

Could they have been making a permanent cartographical record of the slow obliteration of their homeland?

And could their overwhelming desire to transmit a message to the future through a variety of different media—myths, maps, buildings, calendar systems, mathematical harmonies—have been connected to the cataclysms and earth changes that caused this loss?

An urgent mission

The possession of a conscious, articulated history is one of the faculties that distinguishes human beings from animals. Unlike rats, say, or sheep, or cows, or pheasants, we have a past which is separate from ourselves. We therefore have the opportunity, as I have said, to learn from the experiences of our predecessors.

Is it because we are perverse, or misguided, or simply stupid that we refuse to recognize those experiences unless they have come down to us in the form of *bona fide* 'historical records'? And is it arrogance or ignorance which leads us to draw an arbitrary line separating 'history' from 'prehistory' at about 5000 years before the present—defining the records of 'history' as valid testimony and the records of 'prehistory' as primitive delusions?

---

[23] By Robert Bauval, personal communication.

[24] See Part VII.

At this stage in a continuing investigation, my instinct is that we may have put ourselves in danger by closing our ears for so long to the disturbing ancestral voices which reach us in the form of myths. This is more an intuitive than a rational feeling, but it is by no means unreasonable. My research has filled me with respect for the logical thinking, high science, deep psychological insights, and vast cosmographical knowledge of the ancient geniuses who composed those myths, and who, I am now fully persuaded, descended from the same lost civilization that produced the map-makers, pyramid builders, navigators, astronomers and earth-measurers whose fingerprints we have been following across the continents and oceans of the earth.

Since I have learned to respect those long-forgotten and still only hazily identified Newtons and Shakespeares and Einsteins of the last Ice Age, I think it would be foolish to disregard what they seem to be saying. And what they seem to be saying to us is this: that cyclical, recurrent and near-total destructions of mankind are part and parcel of life on this planet, that such destructions have occurred many times before and that they will certainly occur again.

What, after all, is the remarkable calendrical system of the Mayas if it is not a medium for transmitting exactly this message? What, if not vehicles for the same sort of bad news are the traditions of the four previous 'Suns' (or sometimes of the three previous 'Worlds') passed down in the Americas since time immemorial? By the same token, what might be the function of the great myths of precession which speak not just of previous cataclysms but of cataclysms to come and which (through the metaphor of the cosmic mill) link these earthly disasters to 'disturbances in the heavens'? Last but by no means least, what burning motive impelled the pyramid builders to erect, with such care, the powerful and mysterious edifices on the Giza plateau?

Yes, they were saying, 'Kilroy was here'.

And, yes, they found an ingenious way to tell us when they were here.

Of these things I have no doubt.

I am also impressed by the enormous lengths they went to to provide us with convincing proof that theirs was a serious and scientifically advanced civilization. And I am even more impressed by the sense of urgency—of a vitally important mission—that seems to have enlightened all their works and deeds.

I go on intuition again, not on evidence.

It's my guess that their underlying objective could have been to transmit a warning to the future, and that this warning could be to do with a global cataclysm, perhaps even a recurrence of the same cataclysm that so clearly devastated mankind at the end of the last Ice Age when 'Noah saw that the earth had tilted, and that its destruction was near, and cried out in a bitter voice: "Tell me what is being done on the earth that the earth is so afflicted and shaken ..." '[25] These words are from the Hebrew Book of Enoch, but similar afflictions and shakings have been foretold in all the Central American traditions that speak of the demise of the present epoch of the world—an epoch, as the reader will recall, in which 'the elders say [that] there will be a movement of the earth and from this we shall all perish.'[26]

The reader will also not have forgotten the date calculated by the Ancient Maya calendar for the end of the world:

> The day will be 4 Ahau 3 Kankin [corresponding to 23 December AD 2012], and it will be ruled by the Sun God, the ninth Lord of the Night. The moon will be eight days old, and it will be the third lunation in a series of six ...[27]

In the Mayan scheme of things we are already living in the last days of the earth.

In the Christian scheme of things too, the last days are understood to be upon us. According to the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania: 'This world will perish just as surely as did the world before the Flood ... Many things were foretold to occur during the last days, and all of these are being fulfilled. This means that the end of the world is near ...'[28]

Similarly the Christian psychic Edgar Cayce prophesied in 1934 that around the year 2000: 'There will be a shifting of the poles. There will be upheavals in the Arctic and the Antarctic that will make for the eruption of volcanoes in the Torrid areas ... The upper portion of Europe will be changed in the twinkling of an eye. The earth will be broken up in the western portion of America. The greater portion of Japan must go into the sea.'[29]

Curiously the epoch of the year 2000, which figures in these Christian prophecies, also coincides with the Last Time (or highest point) in the great upwards cycle of the belt stars of the Orion constellation, just as the epoch of the eleventh millennium BC coincided with the First Time (or lowest point) of that cycle.

And curiously, also, as we saw in Chapter Twenty-eight:

> A conjunction of five planets that can be expected to have profound *gravitational*

---

[25] 1 *Enoch,* LXV, in *The Apockryphal Old Testament* (ed. H.F.D. Sparks), Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1989, p. 247.

[26] *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* p. 24.

[27] *Breaking the Maya Code,* p. 275.

[28] *Will The World Survive?* Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, 1992.

[29] Circulating File, *Earth Changes,* Extracts from the Edgar Cayce Readings, Edgar Cayce Foundation, Virginia Beach, 1994, p. 36.

> effects will take place on 5 May in the year 2000, when Neptune, Uranus, Venus, Mercury and Mars will align with the Earth on the other side of the sun, setting up a sort of cosmic tug-of-war ...[30]

Could the recondite influences of gravity, when combined with our planet's precessional wobble, the torsional effects of its axial rotation, and the rapidly growing mass and weight of the Antarctic ice-cap, be enough to spark off a full-scale crustal displacement?

We may never know, one way or another—unless it happens. Meanwhile, I do not think the Egyptian scribe Manetho was being less than literal when he spoke of a harsh and deadly cosmic power at work in the universe:

> Just as iron is likely to be attracted and led after the loadstone, but often turns away and is repelled in the opposite direction, so the salutary, good and rational movement of the world at one time attracts, conciliates and mollifies that harsh power; then again, when the latter has recovered itself, it overthrows the other and reduces it to helplessness ...[31]

In short, through metaphors and allegories, I suspect the ancients may have tried to find many ways to tell us *exactly* when—and why—the hammer of global destruction is going to strike again. I therefore think, after 12,500 years of the pendulum, that it would only be wise for us to devote more of our resources to studying the signs and messages that have come down to us from that dark and terrifying period of amnesia which our species calls prehistory.

A speeding up of physical research at the Giza plateau would also be highly desirable—not only by Egyptologists determined to resist any threats to the scholarly status quo but by eclectic teams of investigators who could bring some of the newer sciences to bear on the challenges of this most enigmatic and impenetrable of sites. The Chlorine-36 rock-exposure dating technique mentioned in Chapter Six, for example, looks like a particularly promising means of resolving the impasse over the antiquity of the Pyramids and the Sphinx.[32] Likewise, if the will is there, then a way can be found to get through to whatever lies beyond the little door concealed in the Great Pyramid 200 feet up the southern shaft of the Queen's Chamber. At the same time serious efforts should be made to investigate the contents of the large, square-edged and apparently man-made cavity in the bedrock, deep beneath the paws of the Sphinx, that was discovered when a seismic survey was carried out at the site in 1993.[33]

---

[30] See Part V.

[31] *Manetho,* pp. 191-3.

[32] The Chlorine-36 rock-exposure dating technique has been developed by Professor David Bowen of the Department of Earth Sciences at the University of Wales. In *The Times* of London, 1 December 1994, Brown observed:

'One way of resolving the controversy of the ages of the Sphinx and the Pyramids may be through the application of Chlorine-36 rock-exposure dating. This provides an estimate of the time that has elapsed since a rock was first exposed to the atmosphere. In the case of the Sphinx and the Pyramids this would be when the rocks were first exposed by quarrying activity ...'

In 1994 Bowen ran preliminary tests on the famous 'bluestones' of Stonehenge in England, hitherto believed to date to 2250 BC. What the tests showed was that these 123 four-ton monoliths could have been quarried during the last Ice Age—perhaps as early as 12000 BC. See *The Times,* London, 5 December.

Last but not least, far away from Giza, I suspect that our efforts might also be repaid if we were to undertake a proper investigation of the subglacial landscapes of Antarctica—much the most likely continent to hide the complete remains of a lost civilization. If we could establish what destroyed that civilization, then we might be in a better position to save ourselves from a similar cataclysmic fate.

In making these latter suggestions I am, of course, fully aware that there are many who will be scornful and will assert the uniformitarian view that 'all things will continue as they have done since the beginning of creation.'[34] But I am also aware that such 'scoffers in the last days'[35] are those who for one reason or another are deaf to the testimony of our forgotten ancestors. As we have seen, this testimony appears to be trying to tell us that a hideous calamity has indeed descended upon mankind from time to time, that on each occasion it has afflicted us suddenly, without warning and without mercy, like a thief in the night, and that it will certainly recur at some point in the future, obliging us—unless we are well prepared—to begin again like orphaned children in complete ignorance of our true heritage.

Walking in the last days

Hopi Indian Reservation, May 1994: Across the high plains of Arizona, for days and days and days, a desolate wind had been blowing. As we drove across those plains towards the tiny village of Shungopovi, I went over in my mind all I had seen and done in the previous five years: my travels, my research, the false starts and dead-ends I had encountered, the lucky breaks, the moments when everything had come together, the moments when everything seemed about to fall apart.

I had travelled a long road to get here, I realized—far longer than the 300-mile freeway that had whisked us up into these austere badlands from Phoenix, the state capital. Nor did I expect to return with any great degree of enlightenment.

Nevertheless, I had made this journey because the science of prophecy is still believed to be alive among the Hopi: Pueblo Indians, distantly related to the Aztecs of Mexico, whose numbers have been reduced by attrition and misery to barely 10,000.[36] Like the Ancient Maya whose descendants all across the Yucatan are convinced that the end of the world is coming in the year 2000 *y pico* (and a little),[37] the Hopi believe that we are walking in the last days, with a geological sword of Damocles hanging over us.[38] According to their myths, as we saw in Chapter Twenty-four:

---

[33] *Mystery of the Sphinx,* NBC-TV, 1993.

[34] 2 *Peter* 3:4.

[35] 2 *Peter* 3:3.

> The first world was destroyed, as a punishment for human misdemeanours, by an all-consuming fire that came from above and below. The second world ended when the terrestrial globe toppled from its axis and everything was covered with ice. The third world ended in a universal flood. The present world is the fourth. Its fate will depend on whether or not its inhabitants behave in accordance with the Creator's plans ...'[39]

I had come to Arizona to see whether the Hopi thought we were behaving in accordance with the Creator's plans ...

The end of the world

The desolate wind, blowing across the high plains, shook and rattled the sides of the trailer-home we sat in. Beside me was Santha, who'd been everywhere with me, sharing the risks and the adventures, sharing the highs and the lows. Sitting across from us was our friend Ed Ponist, a medical-surgical nurse from Lansing, Michigan. A few years previously Ed had worked on the reservation for a while, and it was thanks to his contacts that we were now here. On my right was Paul Sifki, a ninety-six-year-old Hopi elder of the Spider clan, and a leading spokesman of the traditions of his people. Beside him was his grand-daughter Melza Sifki, a handsome middle-aged woman who had offered to translate.

'I have heard,' I said, 'that the Hopi believe the end of the world is coming. Is this true?'

Paul Sifki was a small, wizened man, nut-brown in colour, dressed in jeans and a cambric shirt. Throughout our conversation he never once looked at me, but gazed intently ahead, as though he were searching for a familiar face in a distant crowd.

Melza put my question to him and a moment later translated her grandfather's reply: 'He says, "why do you want to know"?'

I explained that there were many reasons. The most important was that I felt a sense of urgency: 'My research has convinced me that there was an advanced civilization—long, long ago—that was destroyed in a terrible cataclysm. I fear that our own civilization may be destroyed by a similar cataclysm ...'

---

[36] *Community Profile: Hopi Indian Reservation,* Arizona Department of Commerce.

[37] *Breaking the Maya Code,* p. 275.

[38] *Book of the Hopi.*

[39] *World Mythology,* p. 26.

There followed a long exchange in Hopi, then this translation: ‘He said that when he was a child, in the 1900s, there was a star that exploded—a star that had been up there in the sky for a long while ... And he went to his grandfather and asked him to explain the meaning of this sign. His grandfather replied: “This is the way our own world will end—engulfed in flames ... If people do not change their ways then the spirit that takes care of the world will become so frustrated with us that he will punish the world with flames and it will end just like that star ended.” That was what his grandfather said to him—that the earth would explode just like that exploding star ...’

‘So the feeling is that this world will end in fire ... And having viewed the world for the past ninety years, does he believe that the behaviour of mankind has improved or worsened?’

‘He says it has not improved. We’re getting worse.’

‘So in his opinion, then, the end is coming?’

‘He said that the signs are already there to be seen ... He said that nowadays nothing but the wind blows and that all we do is have a weapon pointed at one another. That shows how far apart we have drifted and how we feel towards each other now. There are no values any more—none at all—and people live any way they want, without morals or laws. These are the signs that the time has come ...’

Melza paused in her translation, then added on her own account: ‘This terrible wind. It dries things out. It brings no moisture. The way we see it, this kind of climate is a consequence of how we’re living today—not just us, but your people as well.’

I noticed that her eyes had filled with tears while she was talking. ‘I have a cornfield,’ she continued, ‘that’s really dry. And I look up into the sky and try to pray for rain, but there is no rain, no clouds even ... When we’re like this we don’t even know who we are.’

There was a long moment of silence and the wind rocked the trailer, blowing hard and steady across the mesa as evening fell around us.

I said quietly, ‘Please ask your grandfather if he thinks that anything can now be done for the Hopi and for the rest of mankind?’

‘The only thing he knows,’ Melza replied when she had heard his answer, ‘is that so long as the Hopi do not abandon their traditions they may be able to help themselves and to help others. They have to hold on to what they believed in the past. They have to preserve their memories. These are the most important things ... But my grandfather wants to tell you also, and for you to understand, that this earth is the work of an intelligent being, a spirit—a creative and intelligent spirit that has designed everything to be the way it is. My grandfather says that nothing is here just by chance, that nothing happens by accident—whether good or bad—and that there is a reason for everything that takes place ...’

At the millstone grinding

When human beings from around the globe, and from many different cultures, share a powerful and overwhelming intuition that a cataclysm is approaching, we are within our rights to ignore them. And when the voices of our distant ancestors, descending to us through myths and sacred architecture, speak to us of the physical obliteration of a great civilization in remote antiquity (and tell us that our own civilization is in jeopardy), we are entitled, if we wish, to stop our ears ...

So it was, the Bible says, in the antediluvian world: ‘For in those days, before the Flood, people were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, right up to the moment that Noah went into the Ark, and they suspected nothing till the flood came and swept all away.’[40]

In the same manner it has been prophesied that the next global destruction will fall upon us suddenly ‘at an hour we do not suspect, like lightning striking in the east and flashing far into the west ... The sun will be darkened, the moon will lose its brightness, the stars will fall from the sky and the powers of heaven will be shaken ... Then of two men in the fields, one is taken, one left; and of two women at the millstone grinding, one is taken, one left ...’[41]

What has happened before can happen again. What has been done before can be done again.

And perhaps there is, indeed, nothing new under the sun ...

---

[40] *Matthew,* 24: 38-39.

[41] *Matthew,* 24: 27-41.

Selected Bibliography

Aldred, Cyril, *Akhenaton,* Abacus, London, 1968.
——*Egypt to the End of the Old Kingdom,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1988.
Ancient America, Time-Life International, 1970.
Ancient Egyptian Book of the Dead (trans. R. O. Faulkner), British Museum Publications, 1989. *Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts* (trans. R. O. Faulkner), Oxford University Press, 1969.
Antoniadi, E. M., *L'Astronomie egyptienne,* Paris, 1934.
Apocryphal Old Testament (ed. H. F. D. Sparks), Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1989.
Arguelles, José, *The Mayan Factor: Path Beyond Technology,* Bear & Co., Santa Fe, New Mexico, 1987.
Atlas of Mysterious Places (ed. Jennifer Westwood), Guild Publishing, London, 1987.
Aubet, Maria Eugenia, *The Phoenicians and the West,* Cambridge University Press, 1993.
Aveni, Anthony F., *Skywatchers of Ancient Mexico,* University of Texas Press, 1990.
Aztec Calendar: History and Symbolism, Garcia y Valades Editores, Mexico City, 1992.
Aztecs: Reign of Blood and Splendour, Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1992.

Bailey, James, *The God-Kings and the Titans,* Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1972.
Baines, John and Malek, Jaromir, *Atlas of Ancient Egypt,* Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1990.
Bauval, Robert and Gilbert, Adrian, *The Orion Mystery,* Wm. Heinemann, London, 1994.
Bellamy, H. S., *Built Before the Flood: The Problem of the Tiahuanaco Ruins,* Faber & Faber, London, 1943.
——and Allan, P., *The Calendar of Tíahuanaco: The Measuring System of the Oldest Civilization,* Faber & Faber, London, 1956.
Berlitz, Charles, *The Lost Ship of Noah,* W. H. Allen, London, 1989.
Bernal, Martin, *Black Athena: The Afroasiatic Roots of Classical Civilization,* Vintage Books, London, 1991.
Bethon, Simon and Robinson, Andrew, *The Shape of the World: The Mapping and Discovery of the Earth,* Guilt Publishing, London, 1991.
Bhagavata Purana, Motilal Banardess, Delhi, 1986.
Bierhorst, John, *The Mythology of South America,* Wm. Morrow & Co., New York, 1990.
——*The Mythology of Mexico and Central America,* Wm. Morrow & Co., New York, 1990.
Black, Jeremy and Green, Anthony, *Gods, Demons and Symbols of Ancient Mesopotamia,* British Museum Press, 1992.
Bloomgarden, Richard, *The Pyramids of Teotihuacan,* Editur S. A., Mexico, 1993.
Blue Guide: Egypt, A & C Black, London, 1988.
Bolivia, Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1992.
Breasted, J. H., *Ancient Records of Egypt: Historical Documents from the Earliest Times to the Persian Conquest,* Histories and Mysteries of Man, London, 1988.
——*The Dawn of Conscience,* Charles Scribners Sons, New York, 1944.
Butzer, Karl W., *Early Hydraulic Civilization in Egypt: A Study in Cultural Ecology,* University of Chicago Press, 1976.

Cameron, Ian, *Kingdom of the Sun God: A History of the Andes and Their People,* Guild Publishing, London, 1990.
Campbell, Joseph, *The Hero with a Thousand Faces,* Paladin Books, London, 1988.
Canfora, Luciano, *The Vanished Library,* Hutchinson Radius, London, 1989.
Casson, Lionel, *Ships and Seafaring in Ancient Times,* University of Texas Press, 1994.
Cieza de Leon, Pedro, *Chronicle of Peru,* Hakluyt Society, London, 1864 and 1883.
Coe, Michael D., *The Maya,* Thames & Hudson, 1991.

——*Breaking the Maya Code,* Thames & London, 1992.
Cole, J. H., *Survey of Egypt,* Cairo, 1925.
Comber, Leon, *The Traditional Mysteries of the Chinese Secret Societies in Malaya,* Eastern Universities Press, Singapore, 1961.
Community Profile: Hopi Indian Reservation, Arizona Department of Commerce.
Complete Works of josephus, Kriegel Publications, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1991.
Cooraswamy, Ananda K. and Sister Nivedita, *Myths of the Hindus and Buddhists,* George G. Harrap & Co., London, 1913.
Corteggiani, Jean-Pierre, *The Egypt of the Pharoahs at the Cairo Museum,* Scala Publications, London, 1987.
Cotterell, Arthur, *The Illustrated Encyclopaedia of Myths and Legends,* Guild Publishing, London, 1989.
Cuvier, Georges, *Revolutions and Catastrophes in the History of the Earth,* 1829.

Darwin, Charles, *Journal of Researches into the Natural History of Countries Visited during the Voyage of HMS* Beagle *Round the World.*
——*The Origin of Species,* Penguin, London, 1985.
David, Rosalie, *A Guide to Religious Ritual at Abydos,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1981.
——and David, Anthony E., *A Biographical Dictionary of Ancient Egypt,* Seaby, London, 1992.
Davidovits, Joseph and Morris, Margie, *The Pyramids: An Enigma Solved,* Dorset Press, New York, 1988.
Davis, Nigel, *The Ancient Kingdoms of Mexico,* Penguin Books, London, 1990.
Desroches-Noblecourt, Christine, *Tutunkhamen,* Penguin Books, London, 1989.
Devereux, Paul, *Secrets of Ancient and Sacred Places,* Blandford Books, London, 1992.
Diodorus Siculus (trans. C. H. Oldfather), Loeb Classical Library, London, 1989; Harvard University Press, 1989.
Donnelly, Ignatius, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World,* Harper & Brothers, New York, 1882.

Edwards, I. E. S., *The Pyramids of Egypt,* Penguin, London, 1949.
Egypt: Land of the Pharaohs, Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1992.
Egyptian Book of the Dead (trans. E. A. Wallis Budge), British Museum, 1895; Arkana, London and New York, 1986.
Emery, W. B., *Archaic Egypt,* Penguin Books, London, 1987.
Encyclopaedia of Ancient Egypt (ed. Margaret Bunson), Facts on File, New York and Oxford, 1991.
Encyclopaedia Britannica, 1991 edition.
Epic of Gilgamesh, Penguin Classics, London, 1988.
Evolving Earth, Guild Publishing, London, 1989.

Facts on File Encyclopaedia of World Mythology and Legend, New York and Oxford, 1988.
Fakhry, Ahmed, *The Pyramids,* University of Chicago Press, 1969.
Feats and Wisdom of the Ancients, Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1990.
Fernandez, Adela, *Pre-Hispanic Gods of Mexico,* Panorama Editorial, Mexico City, 1992.
Fiedel, Stuart J., *The Prehistory of the Americas,* Cambridge University Press, 1992.
Filby, Frederick A., *The Flood Reconsidered: A Review of the Evidences of Geology, Archaeology, Ancient Literature and the Bible,* Pickering & Inglis, London, 1970.
Flem-Ath, Rand and Rose, *When the Sky Fell,* Stoddart, Canada, 1995.
Flint, R. F., *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch,* 1947.
Fowden, Garth, *The Egyptian Hermes,* Cambridge University Press, 1978.
Frankfort, Henry, *The Cenotaph of Seti I at Abydos,* 39th memoir of the Egypt Exploration Society, London, 1933.
——*Kingship and the Gods,* University of Chicago Press, 1978.

Frazer, J. G., *Folklore in the Old Testament: Studies in Comparative Religion, Legend and Law,* Macmillan, London, 1923.

Gardner, A. H., *The Royal Canon of Turin,* Griffith Institute, Oxford.
Geography of Strabo (trans. H. L. Jones), Wm. Heinemann, London, 1982.
Gifford, D. and Sibbick, J., *Warriors, Gods and Spirits from South American Mythology,* Eurobook Ltd., 1983.
Gleninnen, Inga, *Aztecs,* Cambridge University Press, 1991.
Gordon, Cyrus H., *Before Columbus: Links between the Old World and Ancient America,* Crown Publishers, New York, 1971.
Grey, George, *Polynesian Mythology,* London, 1956.
Grimal, Nicholas, *A History of Ancient Egypt,* Blackwell, Cambridge, 1992.

Hadigham, Evan, *Lines to the Mountain Gods,* Harrap, London, 1987.
Hallet, Jean-Pierre, *Pygmy Kitabu,* BCA, London, 1974.
Hancock, Graham, *The Sign and the Seal,* Mandarin, London, 1993.
Hapgood, Charles H., *Earth's Shifting Crust: A Key to Some Basic Problems of Earth Science,* Pantheon Books, New York, 1958.
——*Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings,* Chillon Books, Philadelphia and New York, 1966; Turnstone Books, London, 1979.
——*The Path of the Pole,* Chilton Books, New York, 1970.
Hart, George, *Egyptian Myths,* British Museum Publications, 1990.
——*Pharoahs and Pyramids,* Guild Publishing, London, 1991.
Hawkins, Gerald S., *Beyond Stonehenge,* Arrow Books, London, 1977.
Hemming, John, *The Conquest of the Incas,* Macmillan, London, 1993.
Herm, Gerard, *The Phoenicians,* BCA, London, 1975.
Herodotus, *The History* (trans. David Grene), University of Chicago Press, 1987.
Heyerdahl, Thor, *The Ra Expeditions,* BCA, London, 1972.
Hodges, Peter and Keable, Julian, *How the Pyramids Were Built,* Element Books, Shaftesbury, 1989.
Hoffman, Michael, *Egypt before the Pharoahs,* Michael O'Mara Books, London, 1991.
Homer, *Odyssey* (Rouse translation).
Hooker, Dolph Earl, *Those Astrounding Ice Ages,* Exposition Press, New York, 1958.
Hopkins, David M. et al., *The Paleoecology of Beringia,* Academic Press, New York, 1982.

Imbre, John and Imbrie, Katherine Palmer, *Ice Ages: Solving the Mystery,* Enslow Publishers, New Jersey, 1979.
Inglis, Brian, *Coincidence,* Hutchinson, London, 1990.
Ions, Veronica, *Egyptian Mythology,* Newnes Books, London, 1986.
Irwin, Constance, *Fair Gods and Stone Faces,* W. H. Allen, London, 1964.
Ivimy, John, *The Sphinx and the Megaliths,* Abacus, London, 1976.

Jacq, C., *Egyptian Magic,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1985.
Jewish Encyclopaedia, Funk and Wagnell, New York, 1925.
Johanson, Donald C. and Eddy, Maitland C., *Lucy: The Beginnings of Mankind,* Paladin, London, 1982.
Joseph, Pablo, *The Extirpation of Idolatry in Peru* (trans. L. Clark Keating), University of Kentucky Press, 1968.

Kanjilal, Dileep Kumar, *Vimana in Ancient India,* Sanskrit Pustak Bhandar, Calcutta, 1985.
Kerenyi, C., *The Gods of the Greeks,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1974.
Kitchen, K. A., *Pharaoh Triumphant: The Life and Times of Ramesses II,* Aris and Phillips, Warminster, 1982.

Lamy, Lucy, *Egyptian Mysteries,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1986.
Landa, Diego de, *Yucatan before and after the Conquest* (trans. William Gates), Produccion Editorial Dante, Merida, Mexico, 1990.
Langway, C. C. and Hansen, B. Lyle. *The Frozen Future: A Prophetic Report from Antarctica,* Quadrangle, New York, 1973.
Lee, J. S., *The Geology of China,* London, 1939.
Lemesurier, Peter, *The Great Pyramid: Your Personal Guide,* Element Books, Shaftesbury, 1987.
——*The Great Pyramid Decoded,* Element Books, Shaftesbury, 1989.
Lewin, Roger, *Human Evolution,* Blackwell Scientific, Oxford, 1984.
Lichtheim, Miriam, *Ancient Egyptian Literature,* University of California Press, 1976.
Luss, R. S., *Fossils,* London, 1931.

Mantheo (trans. W. G. Waddell), Wm. Heinemann, London, 1940.
Mason, J. Alden, *The Ancient Civilizations of Peru,* Penguin Books, London, 1991.
Maspero, Gaston, *The Passing of Empires,* 1902.
Mendelssohn, Kurt, *The Riddle of the Pyramids,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1986.
Mexico, Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1992.
Mexico: Rough Guide, Harrap-Columbus, London, 1989.
Miller, Mary and Taube, Karl, *The Gods and Symbols of Ancient Mexico and the Maya,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1993.
Milton, Joyce; Orsi, Robert, and Harrison, Norman, *The Feathered Serpent and the Cross: The Pre-Colombian God-Kings and the Papal States,* Cassell, London, 1980.
Moncrieff, A. R. Hope, *The Illustrated Guide to Classical Mythology,* BCA, London, 1992.
Monroe, Jean Guard and Williamson, Ray A., *They Dance in the Sky: Native American Star Myths,* Houghton Mifflen Company, Boston, 1987.
Montesinos, Fernando, *Memorias Antiguas Historiales del Peru* (trans, and ed. P.A. Means), Hakluyt Society, London, 1920.
Morley, S. G., *An Introduction to the Study of Maya Hieroglyphics,* Dover Publications, New York, 1975.
Morrison, Tony, with Hawkins, Gerald S., *Pathways to the Gods,* BCA, London, 1979.
Moscati, Sabatino, *The World of the Phoenicians,* Cardinal, London, 1973.
Murray, H., Crawford, J. et al., *An Historical and Descriptive Account of China,* London, 1836.
Murray, Margaret A., *The Splendour that was Egypt.* Sidgwick & Jackson, London, 1987.
——*The Osireion at Abydos,* Bernard Quaritch, London, 1904.
Mystic Places, Time-Life Books, Virginia, 1987.
Mythology of All Races, Cooper Square Publishers, New York, 1964.
Myths from Mesopotamia (trans, and ed. Stephanie Dalley), Oxford University Press, 1990.

Narratives of the Rights and Laws of the Yncas (trans, and ed. Clemens R. Markham), Hakluyt Society, London, 1873.
New Larousse Encyclopaedia of Mythology, Paul Hamlyn, London, 1989.

Okladnikov, A. P., *Yakutia before Its Incorporation into the Russian State,* McGill-Queens University Press, Montreal, 1970
Osborne, H., *Indians of the Andes: Aymaras and Quechuas,* Routledge and Kegan Paul, London, 1952.
——*South American Mythology,* Paul Hamlyn, London, 1968.
Oxford Dictionary of the Christian Church, Oxford University Press, 1988.

Patten, Donald W., *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Epoch: A Study in Scientific History,* Pacific Merdian Publishing Co., Seattle, 1966.
Pears Encyclopaedia of Myths and Legends: Oceania, Australia and the Americas (ed.

Sheila Savill), Pelham Books, London, 1978.
Penguin Dictionary of Religions, Penguin Books, London, 1988.
Peru, Lonely Planet Publications, Hawthorne, Australia, 1991.
Petrie, W. M. Flinders, *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh,* (Revised Edition), Histories and Mysteries of Man, London, 1990.
Plato, *Timaeus and Critias,* Penguin Classics, London, 1977.
Popol Vuh: The Sacred Book of the Ancient Quiche Maya, (English version by Delia Goetz and S. G. Morley from the translation by Adrian Recinos), University of Oklahoma Press, 1991.
Posnansky, Arthur, *Tiahuanacu: The Cradle of American Man,* (4 volumes), J. J. Augustin, New York, 1945.
Prestwich, Joseph, *On Certain Phenomena Belonging to the Close of the Last Geological Period and on their Bearing upon the Tradition of the Flood,* Macmillan, London, 1895.

Quarternary Extinctions: A Prehistoric Revolution (eds. Paul S. Martin and R. G. Kline), University of Arizona Press, 1984.

Reeves, Nicholas, *The Complete Tutankhamun,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1990.
Reiche, Maria, *Mystery on the Desert,* Nazca, Peru, 1989.
Ridpath, Ian and Tirion, Wil, *Collins Guide to Stars and Planets,* London, 1984.
Rig Veda, Penguin Classics, London, 1981.
Roberts, P. W., *River in the Desert: Modern Travels in Ancient Egypt,* Random House, New York and Toronto, 1993.
Romer, John, *Valley of the Kings,* Michael O'Mara Books, London, 1988.
Rundle-Clark, R.T., *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1991.

Sabloff, Jeremy A., *The Cities of Mexico: Reconstructing a Lost World,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1990.
Santillana, Giorgio de and von Dechend, Hertha, *Hamlet's Mill,* David R. Godine, Boston, 1992.
Scheel, B., *Egyptian Metalworking and Tools,* Shire Egyptology, Aylesbury, 1989.
Schlegel, Gustav, *Uranographie chinoise,* 1875.
——*The Hung League,* Tynron Press, Scotland, 1991.
Schwaller de Lubicz, R. A., *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy,* Inner Traditions International, Rochester, Vermont, 1988.
Sellers, Jane B., *The Death of Gods in Ancient Egypt,* Penguin, London, 1992.
Seton-Watson, M. V., *Egyptian Legends and Stories,* Rubicon Press, London, 1990.
Sitchin, Zecharia, *The Stairway to Heaven,* Avon Books, New York, 1983.
——*The Lost Realms,* Avon Books, New York, 1990.
Smyth, Piazzi, *The Great Pyramid: Its Secrets and Mysteries Revealed,* Bell Publishing Co., New York, 1990.
Sollberger, Edmund, *The Babylonian Legend of the Flood,* British Museum Publications, 1984.
Spence, Lewis, *The Magic and Mysteries of Mexico,* Rider, London, 1922.
Spencer, A. J., *The Great Pyramid Fact Sheet,* P. J. Publications, 1989.
Stephens, John L., *Incidents of Travel in Central America, Chiapas and Yucatan,* Harper and Brothers, New York, 1841.
Sykes, E., *Dictionary of Non-Classical Mythology,* London, 1961.

Temple, Robert K. G., *The Sinus Mystery,* Destiny Books, Rochester, Vermont, 1987.
Thompson, J. Eric, *Maya Hieroglyphic Writing,* Carnegie Institution, Washington DC, 1950.
——*Maya History and Religion,* University of Oklahoma Press, 1990.
——*The Rise and Fall of Maya Civilization,* Pimlico, London, 1993.

Tilak, Lokamanya Bal Gangadhar, *The Arctic Home in the Vedas,* Tilak Bros., Poona, 1956.
Titchenell, Elsa B., *The Masks of Odin,* Theosophical University Press, Pasadena, 1988.
Tompkins, Peter, *Secrets of the Great Pyramid,* Harper & Row, New York, 1978.
——*Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids,* Thames & Hudson, London, 1987.

Upham, Warren, *The Glacial Lake Agassiz,* 1895.

Vega, Garcilaso de la, *The Royal Commentaries of the Incas,* Orion Press, New York, 1961.
Velikovsky, Immanuel, *Earth in Upheaval,* Pocket Books, New York, 1977.

Wallis Budge, E. A., *Egyptian Magic,* Kegan Paul, London, 1901.
——*A History of Egypt,* 1902.
——*Gods of the Egyptians,* Methuen & *Co.,* London, 1904.
——*Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrections,* Medici Society, London, 1911.
——*An Egyptian Hieroglyphic Dictionary,* (2 volumes), John Murray, London, 1920.— *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt,* Oxford University Press, 1934.
Ward, John, *Pyramids and Progress,* London, 1900.
Ward, J. S. M., *The Hung Society,* (3 volumes), Baskerville Press, London, 1925.
Warren, William F., *Paradise Found: The Cradle of the Human Race at the North Pole,* Houghton, Mifflin & Co., Boston, 1885.
Waters, Frank, *Mexico Mystique,* Sage Books, Chicago, 1975.
——*The Book of the Hopi,* Penguin, London, 1977.
Wendorff, Fred and Schild, Romuald, *Prehistory of the Nile Valley,* Academic Press, New York, 1976.
West, John Anthony, *Serpent in the Sky,* Harper & Row, New York, 1979.
——*The Traveller's Key to Ancient Egypt,* Harrap-Columbus, London, 1989.
Wheeler, Post, *The Sacred Scriptures of the Japanese,* New York, 1952.
White, John, *Pole Shift,* A. R. E. Press, Virginia Beach, 1994.
Wilkins, W. J., *Hindu Mythology: Vedic and Puranic,* Heritage Publishers, New Delhi, 1991.
World Mythology (ed. Roy Willis), BCA, London, 1993.
Wright, Ronald, *Time Among the Maya,* Futura Publications, London, 1991.

FIRE FROM THE SKY

Battle of Harvest Moon &

The True Story of Space Shuttles

By "One Who Knows"

PART	**DESCRIPTION**
01	SECRET WARS
02	AMERICAN BOLSHEVIKS
03	COUNTDOWN TO NUCLEAR WAR
04	TUNGSTEN SATELLITE
05	GENETIC REPLICAS
06	COSMOSPHERES AND ALIENS
07	THE SECOND SHUTTLE
08	CRASH AND REVENGE
09	RUSSIAN COMMAND OF SPACE
10	MORE RUSSIAN WARNINGS
11	STEALTH PROGRAM
12	4 OF 5 AMERICANS TO DIE
13	FALKLANDS U.S. BASE DESTROYED
14	END OF THE WORLD 9-17-82
15	NOTHING IS NOT NOTHING IN PHYSICS

16 HAARP SCALAR ELECTROMAGNETICS

17 JONESTOWN MASSACRE HOAX

18 RUSSIAN MISSILE BASE

19 BATTLE OF THANKSGIVING 1978

20 GUYANA COVERUP

21 U.S.S. THRESHER

22 OPERATION PAPERCLIP

23 ASSASSINATION CONNECTIONS

24 GERMAN SCIENTISTS AND ALIENS

25 HITLER AND ANTARCTICA

26 POLAR DEFENSE

27 GERMAN NUCLEAR BOMBS

28 GERMAN FLYING SAUCERS

29 ALBERT EINSTEIN: BOLSHEVIK SPY

30 KENNEDY-NAZI CONNECTIONS

FIRE FROM THE SKY:

Battle of Harvest Moon & True Story of Space Shuttles

PART 1:

As I begin writing this report [1994], the news is telling about a strange USAIR airplane crash in Pennsylvania. Next day a plane crashed in Moscow. CNN told about a fireball that was reported from Bakersfield California, to Medford Oregon. They said it occurred about 6 or 6:15 in the morning on Saturday, September 10 (1994) and was so bright that the light shining through windows woke up some people. They showed a house in San Rafael with a hole in the roof from a piece of something falling from the sky.

An Ariane rocket was launched from French Guyana and was lost, a day before. Several earthquakes have occurred in California, including one that CNN showed on a map, southwest of Lake Tahoe. About 15 minutes later, CNN began telling about the Space Shuttle firing lasers at Earth and showed a view of Earth, with Lake Tahoe in the upper right corner of the screen. If you put the two together, then you see that the Columbia Space Shuttle is firing laser beams at Earth "for environmental purposes," precisely where the earthquakes are occurring. The President went to Camp David , then when the President returned (?), a plane crashed into the White House. Later he gave a speech in a room of the White House, then just after he left a fire broke out in the room. Rosh Hashanah is recently passed (September 6-7, 1994), and Yom Kippur is coming up (September 15, 1994). The President has ordered 8,300 Navy, 1,800 Marine and 4,000 Army personnel along with 15 or 20 warships to [prepare to] invade Haiti.

SECRET WARS BETWEEN POWERS THAT BE

If what you are about to read does not scare the pants off you, then you must not be wearing any. Pay attention and this information may save your life. The purpose of this article is to inform you briefly about some of the secret wars that are going on between the Powers-That-Be that are struggling for control of the world.

In 1978, I was head of a Mensa special interest group called the Doomsday Club News and Intelligence Report. I wrote a newsletter for the Club. In the May, 1978, issue I said:

"WAR is an ever-present danger, much closer than most people realize. Now Russia is testing 'killer satellites' and laser and particle beam weapons, while the U.S. is undertaking a major program to develop counterbeam weapons - a real Star Wars battle is taking shape. War in space is now possible and the likelihood of it grows. A program is now under way to determine the feasibility of using the Space Shuttle for defense purposes." What I did not know at that time, was the fact that the space war had already started. This manuscript will provide more details.

In the same newsletter, I mentioned that Richard Helms of the CIA had been fired by President Carter, and recommended that the reader contact the Security & Intelligence Fund (at address included) for more information. I listed the staff members a s James Angleton, Elbridge Durbrow, Brig Gen. Robert Richardson, Former Secy. of Navy and Treasury Robert Anderson, former Chief of Naval Operations Admiral G. W. Anderson, and other names that become important later in this story.

SHIFTING DEFENSE STRATEGIES

On page 10, I said: "The U.S. is shifting its defense to sub-launched ballistics missiles and air-launched cruise missiles, as silo-based ICBMs become vulnerable to a pre-emptive first strike by the Soviet Union." The B-52, F-14, F-15, and F-16 will be equipped with cruise missiles over the next five years, in the Pacific Region. This posture indicates admission that nothing standing still in the U.S. can be protected - only aircraft and submarines have a chance of surviving a first strike.

"Independent congressional studies already have been completed that show that by 1980 the Russians could conduct a first strike against the Minuteman force with a strong probability of being able to destroy the majority of U.S. ICBMs, and that by as early as 1981 the U.S. will no longer have a sufficient deterrent to preclude a Soviet first strike." I continued with a quote from Aviation Week & Space Technology, (p. 14, Apr. 3, 1978), about the numbers of missiles that we and Russia had. Later on the page I mentioned about Defense Secretary Harold Brown proposing a sharp increase in civil defense spending, including funding a study to plan faster evacuation of cities during threat of a nuclear attack. What was going on? Why was the U.S. shifting its defense strategy, and suddenly emphasizing the importance of civil defense?

In my July issue of the DCN&IR newsletter, I quoted General George S. Brown, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, who said: "What the Soviets are doing is unsettling, principally because none of us know why." I said: "General Alexander Haig, Supreme Allied Commander in Europe , warned Washington in March of the fundamental change in the Warsaw Pact Air Arm to "an offensive character." I continued by saying that I felt that Russia was preparing to defend itself from the threat of a rearmed Germany. I mentioned that most of the U.S. nuclear force was on German soil. On page 7 I said that " Japan , for the first time since World War II, has ordered its armed forces to prepare defense plans to protect itself from foreign attack."

On page 10, I quoted Alexander Solzhenitsyn as saying, "No weapons, no matter how powerful, can help the West until it overcomes its loss of willpower. To defend oneself, one must be ready to die."

PARTICLE BEAM TECHNOLOGY RIDICULED

Th cover headline article of my October 1978 issue was NUCLEAR WEAPONS - SOON OBSOLETE! The following is what that article said:

General George Keegan - grad of Harvard, flew 56 combat missions in WWII, earned Distinguished Service Cross in Vietnam , Executive VP of U.S. Strategic Institute, Chief of U.S. Air Force Intelligence. About two years ago he retired from the Air Force, because he saw some critical dangers to the U.S. that he was not allowed to reveal to the public. He tried to warn the Powers in the White House but they laughed at him. So about 19 months ago he made the first public references to secret Russian research on *charged-particle beam weapons.* Aviation Week & Space Technology magazine followed up on his information and determined that he was essentially correct. However, President Carter and Defense Secretary Harold Brown, both badly briefed by the CIA, ridiculed Keegan.

U.S. scientists at Lawrence Livermore Lab (bicycle riding distance from me) undertook Project See-Saw to determine if the U.S. could build particle beam weapons. The decision was that it was presently impossible to build such a weapon and since we are so far ahead of the Soviets technologically, it was ridiculous to think they were building one. Keegan revealed his findings on Soviet particle beam developments to CIA head William Colby in 1975. Colby convened the Nuclear Intelligence Panel which determined that, since the US could not build such a weapon, it was impossible that the Soviets were doing it. Colby never passed the information from the Air Force intelligence on to the President or Secretary of Defense.

Keegan retired and started making the information public, through the American Security Council (of which I am a member of the National Advisory Board) and other groups. His story was greeted with high-level official sneering, the most acrimonious sneers coming from the self-styled "nuclear engineer" President Jimmy Carter and Defense Secretary Harold Brown (formerly from Lawrence Livermore Lab). "But despite the official denials, the Soviets continued their work, carrying at least eight electron-beam experiments into space on board Cosmos, Soyuz and Salyut spacecraft..." (AW & ST) and conducting tests at Semipalatinsk and Sarova. "At the same time, younger U.S. physicists, uninhibited by the ego problems of their elders, also were making progress on the key techniques required for beam weapons development. □□Now the tide has turned. A full-scale U.S. effort to tackle the technology required to determine the feasibility of beam weapons development is being organized at the highest level in the Pentagon. Even the most stubborn skeptics now acknowledge that leaving this field uncontested to the Soviets is a risk the U.S. cannot afford to take. Because of the extreme public embarrassment this series [of articles] will bring to... President Jimmy Carter, and Defense Secretary Harold Brown, who saw his contemporaries try and fail in Project See-Saw, there is still an attempt to shroud the program in official secrecy" (Aviation Week & Space Technology, Oct. 2, 1978).

The article states, "Experts on Capitol Hill, who have surveyed all the evidence including secret data not available to us, have concluded that Gen. Keegan's assessment was essentially correct..." Edward Teller has informed key senators that Gen. Keegan's analysis was right on the core of the matter."

The Soviets have already successfully tested particle beam weapons (as has France !). " U.S. particle beam weapons experts who have access to U.S. intelligence information and personal contacts with Russian physicists involved in magnetic and plasma physics programs believe the Soviets will field a ground-based proton beam weapon between 1980-1983."

SIPAPU PROJECT

The Pentagon has initiated a program called "Chair Heritage" to field our own system by about 1982. It formerly was mostly a Navy program at the Naval Post-graduate facility in Monterey CA, but is now being combined with the Army SIPAPU project (space beams, as opposed to beams carried on Navy vessels) and others - it seems that now everybody who is anybody is getting involved (Lawrence Livermore Lab, Sandia Corp., Defense Nuclear Agency, CIA, Hughes Aircraft, Lockheed, University of Texas , Austin Research Associates, etc.).

If you remember, Russia beat us into space with Sputnik, then we went into a crash program to get ahead of them. Vannevar Bush once said that it was impossible to build a ballistics missile capable of going 3000 miles, but within 10 years Russia had them and we were just beginning a crash program to catch up.

Now we are once again in a race for strategic superiority, but this time Russia may field their system in 2 years while it appears that we require at least 5 years - but then things can change quickly.

A problem we now have is the top leadership - the President and Secretary of Defense - may hold back progress because they do not like to admit their mistake. In the past, there were several intelligence services, all in competition with each other trying to be the most accurate and when one service goofed, the other pointed it out. Now, Carter has unified the intelligence services under Stansfield Turner and all intelligence reports must be through Turner before they get to the Defense Secretary or President from men such as Gen. Keegan, Gen. Singlaub, etc. It also creates the chance that the President can be considerably misinformed or uninformed. This, in the long run, could be an even greater danger to the U.S. than the particle beam weapon!

PARTICLE BEAM CAPABILITIES

So what is a particle beam weapon? It is similar to a laser, but it is not a laser. Lasers shoot a beam of electromagnetic radiation (light), while particle beam weapons shoot a beam of sub-atomic particles (electrons, protons, ions, etc.). What this means is that NUCLEAR WEAPONS MAY SOON BECOME OBSOLETE.

Whoever puts satellites with particle beam weapons into orbit first (property controlled by complex sensors and computers) can control the world. ANY GUIDED MISSILE OR AIRCRAFT CAN THEN BE ZAPPED OUT OF EXISTENCE IN A FRACTION OF A SECOND AFTER LAUNCH.

Under those conditions, we will still have nuclear bombs, but it would be impossible to deliver them against an enemy who is protected by particle beams.

An editorial in AW & ST said, "For beam weapons offer the promise of reducing strategic nuclear weapons to a negligible factor in the future. If successfully deployed, beam weapons can end the long reign of nuclear terror introduced by the ballistic missile and its thermonuclear warhead. If the Soviets achieve this capability first, it will give them enormous crucial leverage in imposing their political will on the rest of the world. If the U.S. achieves it first, there will be no need for flimsy SALT agreements, and in a dead heat, the citizens of this planet can look forward to a shifting of international tensions from the strategic nuclear area to more conventional and less devastating weapons."

If you want to know what particle beam weapons are like, just watch "Star Wars" or Battlestar Galactica."

This is the end of the quote from my 1978 newsletter. And now, as Paul Harvey would say, for the rest of the story!

Russia launched the Intercosmos 17 octagon space vehicle on September 26, 1977. The *Encyclopedia Brittanica* says its purpose was for "international scientific research in charged particles and micrometeorites." What, a charged particle satellite? Already in space? What did we just read above? "If the Soviets achieve this capability FIRST, it will give them enormous crucial leverage in imposing their political will on the rest of the world."

WAR IN SPACE

The Battle of the Harvest Moon began on September 17, 1977. Russia began destroying our spy satellites using "killer satellites." On September 27, Russia destroyed our SECRET MOON BASE. On September 29, 1977, Russia launched the Salyut 6 manned space station into orbit.

First, let's explore a little background. The book *War In Space* by James Canan, 1982, Harper & Row, p. 153 says:

"High-energy weapons, their perils and their promise, began penetrating the congressional consciousness in the late seventies, and it was Major General George J. Keegan USAF - 'crazy George' to his critic, 'brilliant George' to his admirers - who started it all. Keegan undoubtedly harbored one of the very highest IQs ever to grace the military establishment, which is, stereotypes to the contrary, saying quite a lot.

Keegan was in Air Force intelligence for many years, and in charge of it, starting in 1972, for five... By the mid-seventies, Keegan's Air Force intelligence empire, as his critics dubbed it, had a population of about 50,000 and was spending nearly $3 billion a year. Keegan had access to HUMINT sources inside Russia and elsewhere, to all the albums of the photorecce satellites and all the tapes of the ELINT satellites."

P. 155: "In 1972, a young civilian scientist in the employ of Air Force intelligence had come to Keegan with 'evidence of a Soviet effort to develop one of the greatest strategic weapons of all time - a beam weapon of great, high energy that would be used to destroy ballistic missiles in flight for the ultimate defense of the Soviet Union.'

Having spent three years studying nuclear physics at the graduate level, Keegan took it upon himself to team up with that young scientist in the examination of evidence gleaned from unclassified Soviet scientific papers. He concluded that the young man was onto something, and he put his troops to work. With Keegan in direct control, an Air Force intelligence team sifted and collated reports from inside Russia and from satellite photographs and communications intercepts concerning a sprawling complex of buildings, pipes, and what-not at Semipalatinsk in south-central Soviet Asia.

What the Soviets had built there - starting with their underground positioning of two huge spheres in the early 1970s - was a facility for the testing of charged-particle beams... a sizable segment of the U.S. scientific community jumped all over Keegan, accusing him of trafficking in paranoia."

P. 157: "In 1974, two years after General Keegan began sounding off in top-secret circles about the Russian work at Semipalatinsk , particle beams came back into vogue at the Pentagon. A Defense Department document described what happened: the Navy initiated its "Chair Heritage' program involving electron beam development [for] 'application to defense of ships against all forms of attack by aircraft and missiles... The Army also began a separate program to demonstrate the production of high-current ion beams.'

The first Army program, called 'SIPAPU' (an American Indian word for sacred fire) is controlled by the Ballistic Missile Defense Command at Redstone Arsenal, Alabama, and centered at the Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory. Chair Heritage, transferred to DARPA control in 1980, is being conducted by the Lawrence Radiation Laboratory at Livermore..." I trust that some of my readers will take note of that word "Sipapu."

SECRET PROJECTS

Until mid-1979, I worked for Control Data Corporation in Sunnyvale , California, in the "skunk works" division. One of the projects on which I worked was Chair Heritage.

For confirmation for researchers, I will provide the following information: My boss was Phil Myers. Program Managers were JM Moore (TIGS, IOS projects), Jack Crawford, JL Smith, CR Shuler, LH Woodward, WA Osborne, and others.

Some of the projects were code named STC, RFREDA, BRONCO, MARE ISLAND , A4, LATFAC, DALFAC, RKYDSO, etc. It would do you no good to know what these names stood for - TIGS stood for Terminal Integrated Graphics, IOS was Integrated Operating Systems, DALFAC was Dallas Facility, etc.

Just suffice to say that we had the world's most powerful computers (Star 100 which was a Cray computer, etc.) and we were involved in the U.S. 's most secret projects. Our customers included the weather facility at Monterey CA, (weather satellites do more than observe the weather), Cheyenne Mountain in Colorado, DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency), NASA, and, oh yes, THE IRS. One of my friends spent all his free time away from the job studying anti-gravity, so it was not too hard to guess what his job concerned.

General Keegan and Carter's Secretary of Defense Harold Brown did not see eye to eye - could the fact that Brown's father was a Russian Jew (I forget his real name) have had anything to do with it? As a military officer, Keegan was forbidden to say anything to the public, so in January 1977 Keegan resigned and set up the civilian American Security Council and began traveling over the country giving speeches to try to awaken everybody. He failed.

Keegan died in March, 1993. His obituary in the *New York Times* said, "He asserted that the Soviet Union was building a civil-defense system that would ensure a reasonable rate of survival from nuclear exchange. He also believed that the Russians were close to deploying futuristic charged particle-beam weapons." The book *Deep Black: Space Espionage and National Security* by William E. Burrows, Random House, a history of spy satellites, has more information on Keegan.

SKYLAB MISSIONS

Have you ever REALLY wondered why the U.S. never went to the moon again? Do you remember *Skylab?* The official story is *Skylab* was launched May 14, 1973. It was to be America 's manned space station. On 5/25/73 a Saturn rocket carried the first crew (Conrad, Kerwin & Weitz) to *Skylab,* a mission that lasted nearly a month.

The second crew (Alan Bean, Owen Garriott, and Jack Lousma) was launched 7/28/73, a mission that lasted nearly two months. Both missions were plagued by failures, leaks and other problems.

The third manned *Skylab* mission began November 14 with Gerald Carr, William Pogue and Edward Gibson. It was said that the mission was delayed six days because of cracks in the Saturn rocket's tail fins.

Russia had launched a space station on April 3, but on April 14 it blew up, what was described as a "catastrophic malfunction."

"BAD LUCK" AT NASA

After the amazing successes of the Apollo missions, for some reason NASA started having all kinds of bad luck. "In the U.S. the success of the first flight of the Space Shuttle orbiter was clouded by two catastrophic failures of previously reliable rocket launch vehicles.

After preliminary taxi test on the runway and flights mated to its Boeing 747 jet carrier plane, the Shuttle orbiter Enterprise was pronounced ready for release from its mother plane. On August 12, at Edwards Air Force Base in California, astronauts Fred W. Haise, Jr., and C. Gordon Fullerton guided the Enterprise to a 'superslick' landing on the floor of Rogers Dry Lake 5 minutes and 23 seconds after being released from the 747.

A second flight, with astronauts Joe H. Engle and Richard H. Truly, on September 13 was equally successful. Haise and Fullerton put the Enterprise through yet another landing ten days later. An ill omen appeared at the Kennedy Space Center in Florida in mid-May, when a small, strap-on solid-propellant booster rocket fell from its bracket on the first stage of a Delta vehicle and damaged it. The booster was being prepared to launch the Orbital Test Satellite for ESA.

The satellite was destroyed on September 13 when its Delta launch vehicle exploded one minute after lift-off, apparently because one of its solid-propellant strap-on rockets detonated. Only 16 days later, a Centaur booster with an Intellsat 4A communications satellite on board also went up in flames only one minute after launch" (*Encyclopedia Brittanica Book of the Year,* 1978, p. 638.

Friends, it's time you learned the real story. In October, 1977, a newly operational Russian Cosmos Interceptor shot down *Skylab. Skylab,* along with its crew of five American astronauts secretly aboard, died in a giant fireball over the United States. NASA immediately initiated a prolonged cover-up of what had happened. How do I know? Suffice it to say, I have a very high-up source of information.

END OF PART 1.

PART 2:

NASA wanted everyone to forget about that mysterious headline-making fireball, so they pretended that *Skylab* was still in orbit but sinking unexpectedly. NASA used stories about the Space Shuttle as part of their *Skylab* cover-up. They pretended that perhaps the Shuttle would come along in time to save *Skylab.* This was simply a double lie by NASA. First, *Skylab* could never be saved because it had already been destroyed. Secondly, the United States was in no position at that time to launch the Shuttle or anything else of a military nature into space. Russia was deploying her secret new Space Triad of advanced manned space weapons.

Russian Cosmos Interceptors had starting sweeping the skies clear of American Spy Satellites, and Russian hovering electrogravitic weapons platforms, the Cosmospheres, were making headlines by creating enormous air booms along the coasts of America , and still do so. All of these things took place just as America's Space Shuttle Program was getting off the ground.

AMERICAN BOLSHEVIKS - MASTERS OF DECEPTION

The result was a complete reorganization of the Shuttle Program. The old plans to bathe it in continuous publicity were tossed. The "Bolsheviks" in our government, who had replaced the Rockefeller cartel in many areas of power, cast a net of secrecy over all the new military plans. We were never told about the capabilities of the training Shuttle *Enterprise,* and we were never told about the many things which were going on at White Sands in the military Shuttle Program. By keeping these things secret, the Bolsheviks placed themselves in a powerful position to deceive us and the deceit has continued non-stop.

We were never told about the modified NASA 747 which carried a complete replica of the crew quarters and cargo bay of a Shuttle - and still does. We were unaware that that airplane, originally intended for training, was to become a Bolshevik tool of deception against us. When we saw video tapes of astronauts in the simulated Shuttle cockpit, we naturally thought it was the real thing. Seeing a notebook float in mid-air for a few seconds next to the astronauts, we were supposed to think they were weightless because they were in orbit.

We were given no clue that those moments of weightlessness had taken place months earlier in a mock-up. Further, what would you do if you were an astronaut faced with the fact that Russia has just turned the corner and can destroy your nation with one blast? Do you not think that a good patriot would go along with the game? However, that brings us to a serious problem - perhaps the pictures fooled a lot of Americans and the world - they did not fool the new rulers of Russia. They had learned the previous fall what the flight of the * Columbia * was really all about and, when the *Columbia* was launched on April 12, the Russians were ready and waiting!

LAUNCH OF THE COLUMBIA INTO ODD ORBIT

The real mission plan was for a short mission. The astronauts were supposed to get into orbit and deploy the military satellite from the *Columbia's* cargo bay very quickly; then they were to return to Earth - not aboard the Shuttle but in a very special re-entry capsule. Two days later they were supposed to land the disguised Shuttle *Enterprise* at Edwards Air Force Base as the final act in the falsified drama staged for our benefit.

For the first time in three years the Pentagon was hoping to get a Spy Satellite into orbit that could not be shot down immediately by Russia. This attempt was destined to continue by our nerdniks into disaster after disaster.

You must know what happened in the front end to have any idea what continues. If you can think back to American space launches of the past, some may have noticed something very unusual about the launch of the *Columbia.* In the past, manned space launches from Cape Canaveral were always made toward the southeast, toward the equator, but not so with the *Columbia.* It was launched to the northeast, away from the equator. The reason for this was the secret space reconnaissance mission of the *Columbia.*

In its public news releases, NASA told everyone that *Columbia* was launching into a 44-degree orbit - that is, it would never go farther north or south than 44 degrees above and below the equator. But the actual orbit chosen for the *Columbia* was a 69-degree orbit. A 69-degree orbit was chosen because it would take the * Columbia , and the Spy Satellite inside it, all the way north to the Arctic Circle and beyond. That is the kind of orbit that is necessary if a spy satellite is to fly reconnaissance over Russia.

The northeast launch of the *Columbia* was done in order to enable the Spy Satellite to start gathering data over Russia only minutes after the *Columbia* reached orbit. Time was of the essence in any attempt to spy on Russia. Every American spy satellite launched at Russia during the prior three years had been blinded or shot down before gathering much data.

The secret flight plan for the * Columbia * was completely different from what NASA claimed in public. The plan called for *Columbia* to be launched on an initial northeast course in the general direction of Bermuda, then roughly 2-1/2 minutes after launch, *Columbia* was to begin an unorthodox course change - a wide sweeping turn into the north. This unprecedented curving launch was intended as an evasive sneak past any Russian Cosmospheres that might be waiting overhead. Still accelerating on its curving course, the *Columbia* was supposed to pass about 100 miles east of Cape Hatteras, North Carolina. Roughly 200 miles east of Washington, D.C., the Shuttle's main engines were to cut off. After coasting in silence for a few seconds, the fuel tank was scheduled to cut loose as the *Columbia passed 100 miles east of New Jersey.

For the next two minutes the Shuttle and its fuel tank were to be coasting onward past the east tip of Long Island , over Boston , and onward toward Maine. During that time the Shuttle was supposed to maneuver away from the fuel tank, using small maneuvering jets.

Finally, just as the *Columbia* passed over New Brunswick, Canada, the flight plan called for the orbital maneuvering engines to be fired. Somewhere over the Labrador Sea, flying upside-down, the *Columbia* was scheduled to reach Earth orbit. As soon as it did so, the flight plan called for astronauts Young and Crippen to go to work fast.

COLUMBIA'S SPY MISSION

In less than ten minutes time they were supposed to open up the cargo bay doors and turn on the sensors of the Spy Satellite resting inside. As they did these things, the *Columbia* was to be racing over the south tip of Greenland, out over the middle of the Denmark Strait between Greenland and Iceland, above the Arctic Circle, and then dipping back southward toward northern Norway, Finland, and Russia. According to the flight plan, the * Columbia * was scheduled to cross the Russian border just south of the strategic Kola Peninsula. This would be only some less than 23 minutes after lift-off. At that instant initial reconnaissance over Russia was to be under way. The Spy Satellite inside the cargo bay, even though not yet deployed, would have had a perfect view downward through the open doors of the upside-down shuttle.

The *Columbia* was intended to fly over a course across Russia that began just west of the strategic White Sea in extreme Northwestern Russia. From there the planned course of the *Columbia* was to take it southeastward over some 2500 miles of strategic Russian territory. During the first minute alone, the satellite was expected to see parts of the highly sensitive Kola Peninsula , the White Sea , including the super secret submarine yards near Kazan, one of the bases of Russia 's flying ABM system. This system uses charged particle beams carried by supersonic TU-144 Transports.

Toward the end of the first pass over Russia the Spy Satellite was expected to gather data on two more of Russia's four Cosmodromes - those of Baiokonur and Tyuratam. In between, numerous other war targets were also to come under scrutiny. The spy satellite in the * Columbia 's* cargo bay was expected to see all that during its very first pass over Russian territory. It would all take only 8-1/2 minutes. Then the * Columbia * would have crossed the border with Afghanistan , heading toward India. Barely 10 minutes later, the Spy Satellite was to be radioing its data down to the American receivers at Diego Garcia in the Indian Ocean.

Now, that WAS the plan. The military planners were confident that their Spy Satellite would get at least this planned first look at Russia. They were sure that * Columbia 's* curving launch and the short time involved would prevent Russia from thwarting the mission. * Columbia * took off from Cape Canaveral at 7:00 A.M. Eastern Time, that Sunday morning. By 7:23 * Columbia * was expected to be over Russia already. By 7:31 * Columbia * was expected to be leaving Russian skies, and by 7:45 that same Sunday morning the military planners expected to have their first reconnaissance data from Russia.

RUSSIANS FOIL PLAN

The plan sounded plausible but the 'planners' were falling victim to the very intelligence gap which they themselves created in America years before. Russian Intelligence agents were able to learn the general outlines of the * Columbia * mission plan some six months prior to launch. It is worse today, for there are more KGB agents in the CIA than there are "loyal" Americans.

Fully a month before the public roll-out of the *Columbia * at the Cape in November of 1980, the Russian Space Command was studying the problem. There was no question about one thing: The * Columbia 's* mission could not be allowed to succeed.

Given even a shred of up-to-date reconnaissance data, the Bolsheviks in America were determined to set off a nuclear war. Even so, there was a question about the best way to spoil the mission. Several possibilities were considered, including sabotage or simply blasting the * Columbia * out of the sky. All were rejected because they shared one weakness. Each alternative would halt one Shuttle mission, but it would not stop the Shuttle Program as a whole, and Russia 's goal was to completely shut down the Space Shuttle Program.

At last they hit upon the solution. What was needed was a Space Age version of the famous U-2 incident of two decades prior. In the waning days of the Eisenhower Administration, Russia had publicly accused the United States of invading its air space with spy flights. That was before the era of Spy Satellites, and invading other countries' air space was a serious charge in the eyes of the world.

American spokesmen tried to diffuse the growing furor while carefully avoiding a definitive denial of the charges; but the Russians kept it up. Finally President Eisenhower became so exasperated that he flatly denied, in public, that America was flying spy planes over Russia.

That was exactly what the Russians were waiting for. The Russians promptly did what American Intelligence specialists thought they could not do - they shot down a high-flying U-2 on a flight over Russia. The name of the CIA pilot, the late Francis Gary Powers, filled the headlines world-wide overnight. The Russians had made a liar of the President of the United States.

A summit had been scheduled between President Eisenhower and Nikita Kruschev, but the Russians icily called it off. In studying the * Columbia * situation, the Russians decided to make the focus of similar nature. After all, all they would need would be to land that Shuttle intact.

Russia protested continuously about the military nature of the Shuttle Program, and perceived they would be able to shock the world with the truth of it by simply proving it. They would put the crashed Shuttle on public display together with its nuclear-powered, laser-firing Spy Satellite. The Kremlin liked the plan, and agreed to it. To further emphasize the parallels with the 1960 U-2 incident, Russia had recently proposed a summit with the United States. The plan was to withdraw the summit proposal in protest after shooting down the * Columbia. *

The Russian Space Command went to work several months earlier to get ready. They were faced with a big order: to bring down the * Columbia * on Russian Territory without totally destroying it. As recently as only a year prior it would have been totally impossible to even consider such a thing. However, the Russians now had a new space tool to do the job. It was the third version of the Russian levitating weapons platform, the Cosmosphere. They were and are called "Super Heavies" by the Russian Space Command.

"SUPER HEAVIES" MAKE READY

The Russian Super Heavy Cosmospheres were still considered experimental in nature but had vast improvements integrated since the early 1980s. Even so, by '80/81 the Russians had already built seven of them. In terms of volume, they are bigger than the Goodyear Blimp, they are even bigger than the biggest dirigibles ("zeppelins") of the '30s. They could carry a payload of more than 50 tons, far more than the Space Shuttle; and they were equipped with powerful electromagnetic propulsion which could take the Cosmosphere all the way to orbital speed. In short, the jumbo Cosmosphere was actually Russia 's Space Shuttle. It was fully operational.

In order to carry out their attack on the Space Shuttle * Columbia ,* Russia 's entire fleet of seven jumbo Cosmospheres were made ready. Five were outfitted with special grappling equipment to enable them to seize a very large object in space. The other two were outfitted with neutron particle beam weapons. These weapons were the same type as were used in the " Battle of the Harvest Moon" in September 1977.

* COLUMBIA * BLASTS OFF

At 7:00 A.M. Sunday morning, April 12, 1981, the rocket engines of the Space Shuttle * Columbia * roared to life. Moments later the giant solid boosters were fired, and the * Columbia * took off. As it climbed, it rolled around and started leaning into the flight path toward space. As we watched on television, it rapidly dwindled off into the northeast. The solid boosters separated and peeled away to each side. Moments later the * Columbia * vanished from the TV screen.

The television scene then shifted to the alleged Mission Control in Houston - all of this had been set up well in advance. Yes, I know you will find this hard to believe!

The NASA computer-controlled map started tracking the alleged course of the *Columbia.* According to the map, * Columbia * was heading out over the Atlantic toward Bermuda ; but at that moment, free of the solid boosters, * Columbia * was already starting its long sweeping curve to the north. One hundred fifty miles east of Charleston South Carolina, Russia's fleet of 7 jumbo Cosmospheres were hovering high over the ocean as the Space Shuttle approached on its elaborate curving path, upside-down with the huge fuel tank on top.

COSMOSPHERES INTERCEPT SHUTTLE

The two Cosmospheres armed with neutron beams closed in on the * Columbia * from below and a bit to the rear, where they could not be seen by Young or Crippen. The other five jumbo Cosmopheres with their grappling equipment, flew in formation above and well behind the fuel tank to be out of the line of fire. The Cosmopheres pace the Shuttle until it reached a predetermined altitude and speed.

Then the armed Cosmospheres opened up with their neutron beams. Firing at point-blank range, each Cosmosphere fired just two bursts from its beam weapon, "WHOOMP! WHOOMP!" The first salvo flooded the cockpit area and an area near the engines in the rear. Young and Crippen died instantly, the neutron radiation having totally disrupted all activity of their nervous systems, brains, eyes, and hearts.

At the same time the Shuttle's engines shut down. A fraction of a second later, the second salvo flooded neutron radiation into the nose and an area beneath the cargo bay. These shots were calculated to derange and shut down the * Columbia 's* flight computers - that is, all the computers except one. The Russians wanted the backup computer to take over and do its job - that is, make an emergency automatic re-entry and crash landing in Russia. They anticipated that it would do so because the backup computer is heavily shielded against radiation. The shielding is a material more efficient than lead. It is GOLD!

The Russians fully expected that "Gold Computer," as it is known in certain circles, would take over after the engines shut down.

Within some 10 seconds after the engines shut down, the fuel tank, still a third full, was automatically cast loose. The Gold Computer was now flying the Shuttle. The five jumbo Cosmospheres with grappling equipment, fastened onto the fuel tank. Then using their powerful electromagnetic propulsion, they veered away with the tank. From its northeasterly course, the tank was swerved around over the North Atlantic in a great arc until it was heading southeast instead. The Cosmospheres then accelerated to orbital speed and cast the fuel tank loose.

Three years prior to this the First Cosmospheres had sen a message by way of enormous air booms along America 's East Coast. Do you remember hearing the discussion on the news about the mysterious "sonic booms" that were being heard along the coast? Now Russia 's newest Cosmospheres were using the Shuttle fuel tank to send a chilling new message to America 's Bolshevik war planners.

Meanwhile the armed Cosmospheres followed the *Columbia * itself. Having had its engines shut down prematurely, the * Columbia * was well below orbital speed. It was following a ballistic path, just like an ICBM, into the heart of Russia. It looked as though the Russian plan was going to work to perfection - but then the unexpected happened.

A NO-WIN SITUATION

One of * Columbia 's* deranged computers apparently began to function. The brief shut-down had thrown it out of synchronization with the Gold Computer, so the two computers apparently did not communicate with one another. As the * Columbia * passed over the border of Russia , it was flying right-side-up instead of upside-down under control of the Gold Computer.

But the other computer opened up the cargo bay doors right on schedule. As the Shuttle began to re-enter over Russia , hot air flooded the cargo bay. Heat sensors in the Spy Satellite detected the heat build-up, which was programmed into the Satellite's computer as a sign of "attack damage." Finally, the temperature built up to a critical point, activating a self-destruct circuit in the Satellite. The Spy Satellite exploded, blowing the * Columbia * to bits.

The Russians had hoped for a crash landing in recognizable form. Instead, the * Columbia * ended up in wreckage strewn along a line some 85 miles long in central Russia southeast of the City of Kazan and the citizens had to be told a research satellite had fallen out of orbit. As it turned out, neither the American Bolsheviks nor the Russians got what they wanted. But there were destined to be more attempts, each just as foolish as the one before it.

END OF PART 2.

PART 3:

On November 24, 1980, America 's Manned Space Program suddenly started showing signs of life after near death. It was the day when the Space Shuttle * Columbia * was rolled out into public view at the Kennedy Space Center in Florida. It was the first public appearance by the Shuttle in almost two years. The Shuttle arrived at Cape Canaveral two years prior, in March of 1979.

From then until November of 1980 the Shuttle * Columbia * remained in hiding in a very large metal cocoon called the "Orbiter Processing Facility," but on November 24 suddenly the cocoon opened up and out popped the Space Shuttle.

It was not a very long trip set for that day - about 300 yards to the nearby Vehicle Assembly Building, where it disappeared once again as if by magic. For the first time in nearly six years the United States was committing itself in public to manned missions into space. The roll-out of the * Columbia * took almost everyone by surprise.

America 's Space Shuttle Program was a full three years behind schedule. Since late in 1977 we heard about nothing but problems, delays, and more problems with the Space Shuttle. In fact, just five days before, Dr. George Low, former director of the *Apollo* Moon Program, summarized it all in total disgust when he said, "Today I wonder whether we could start another *Apollo,* much less accomplish it."

The *Apollo* moon landing program was another program filled with lies, smoke and mirrors, but I will save that story for some other time. For now, the centerfold of *Spotlight* newspaper for September 5, 1994, will give you some hint of the lies involved.

POST-LUNAR "QUARANTINE" FARCE

Another recent source of information on this subject was an article called "The Great Lunar Quarantine" in *Air & Space* magazine for February/March 1994. If you remember, when the moon-landing astronauts came back they had to be quarantined for three weeks. Thinking minds questioned the reasons for this.

On page 39, the article states: "The problem was that [the quarantine] was all show," says Gerald Wasserburg, John D. MacArthur professor of geology and geophysics at the California Institute of Technology, who is still fuming 25 years later. "It really didn't prevent contamination. The people from Fort Detrick [the Army's biological warfare facility], who really knew how to contain pathogens, though it was ludicrous. It was all part of a fraud, but it couldn't be stopped because it was coming from such a high political level. Do you suppose there was some other reason for the debriefing, er, quarantining?

SPACE SHUTTLE COUNTDOWN TO NUCLEAR WAR

After three years on hold, the countdown was under way. There was a total air of urgency about it. Corners were being cut, safety precautions were being overstepped, unheard of risks were being taken; and when reporters asked why these things were being done, they received only double talk instead of answers.

The Space Shuttle was the most complex American spacecraft built to that point. There were more things to go wrong than ever before, and the entire future of America 's Manned Space Program depended on the shuttle. In fact, we were told that within a few years the Shuttle would be launching practically all American satellites.

As far as we were told, America had put all its eggs in one basket. The old NASA would have proceeded step by step with the greatest of care. Every manned spacecraft had made its first trip or two into space without astronauts to insure no loss of life in case of problems.

INVISIBLE FACTIONS AT WAR

In 1981 things were done in a very strange manner indeed. The facts were, our American Bolsheviks were getting ready for nuclear war, and a wartime rush mentality dominated. They wanted to take out the Russians before they got any stronger. It was a case of certain Russian and American forces at war with other Russian and American forces! The very first Shuttle was to be manned and was to go all the way into high orbit. There was no regard for the safety of the astronauts; however, we did not know that they had been training in the *Enterprise.* Remember the *Enterprise ?* Whatever happened to it, do you know? I was telling people at that time that something fishy was going on.

For all intents and purposes, the new rocket engines of the Space Shuttle were radically untested, as far as anyone was aware. There were three main engines called SSMEs by NASA. Those engines had never flown into space prior to that time; in fact, they had never so much as been fired all together until just eight days prior to the flight.

On that day, the three engines were fired for only 20 seconds on the pad at the Cape. NASA did not run the risk of running them longer even though those engines were supposed to be reusable, launch after launch. Instead, based on a mere twenty-second test, NASA would have two astronauts risk their lives on the engines and, in the actual launch into space, the engines would have to operate full-bore for a minimum of nine minutes.

NASA knowingly gambled that the three fresh engines on * Columbia * would last long enough to get into orbit. The engines were only one example of NASA's unexplained haste because if * Columbia * didn't reach orbit, the next question was: Could it return? NASA didn't have the foggiest notion.

The recent launching of the Hubble telescope smacks of the same subterfuge for the "duplicate" scope which was launched was truly another attempt to fool the Russians and again the attempt was total disaster as only an evil empire can create.

HUMPTY-DUMPTY TILES

In 1980 the new Thermo Protection Systems was radically new. All of the previous spacecraft had "heat shields" which carried away heat by burning away during re-entry, therefore they could be used only once. But the Shuttle was supposed to be reusable over and over, so it required a different kind of shield. They developed a lightweight ceramic, broken up into more than 30,000 small pieces called "tiles." Strange thing, they said a "few" fell off each time but not to worry, it was OK. How could it be OK? The heat would have burned a hole where the tile was missing. I remember they said they could not fly the * Enterprise * because they "forgot" to put heat shields on it, then the * Enterprise * just sort of faded from the picture. Then the * Columbia * flew with heat shields dropping off of it? Remember? Did you notice? Did you smell a rat? I did!

For at least two years before the original launch we had been hearing tales about problems with tiles. It began when the Shuttle * Columbia * arrived at Cape Canaveral in March of 1979 on the back of a jumbo jet. Many tiles had been lost or damaged during the flight and the *Columbia * looked like it had smallpox - and that was just from riding piggyback in the atmosphere.

GROUNDED BY THE BEAR

The tile controversy made a perfect cover story to explain away the 3-year grounding of the Space Shuttle. The real reason was that America had been locked out of military space missions since late 1977. In August of 1977 the first pre-flight tests of the Space Shuttle took place. A Shuttle was carried aloft aboard a jumbo jet and cut loose and guided to a landing by the astronauts. It seemed that the age of the space shuttle was about to dawn.

RUSSIAN COSMONAUTS IN SPACE

Russia 's space program seemed completely silent. What we didn't know was that Russia had been deploying her secret particle beam weapons in space, and on September 17, 1977, Russia started smashing our spy satellites in what was called the Battle of the Harvest Moon. They launched their *Salyut-6* Space Station into orbit on September 29, 1977, and thus began a steady stream of Russian cosmonauts back and forth into space. They even took cosmonauts from at least seven other countries including Cuba and Vietnam into space with them, while we just wrung our hands.

RUSSIAN BOLSHEVIKS FLOCK TO AMERICA

The Bolsheviks had been kicked out of power in Russia , and the American Bolsheviks had been waiting long and watching for a moment of weakness among their enemies - the secret new rulers of Russia. The Bolsheviks wanted desperately to regain their former positions of power in Russia ; but for years, Russia 's new rulers had been expelling the Bolsheviks, who then flocked mostly to the United States.

The Bolsheviks had originally been put into power in Russia by the Rockefeller Cartel in November 1917. They were called Communists but were merely sadistic dictators and later had been kicked out of the Kremlin. By the last half of

1980, they began to regain power in Russia so the decision was made to go ahead with the space shuttle mission.

A top secret American spy satellite had been developed by the National Reconnaissance Office, a secret project that Control Date worked on (I did the paperwork for the people who programmed the satellite computer).

OVERT FIRST-STRIKE BY U.S. - ALMOST

Russia destroyed an American spy satellite on September 20, 1977, and a week later put our secret Moon Base out of action. Seven months later, Russia finished destroying all our spy and early warning satellites. Since then, we have tried several times to deploy spy satellites to get targeting information to launch a nuclear war, a war we have come very close to starting several times. All we found out was the Russia had moved the targets around and we dared not launch (although some wanted to anyway).

BOLSHEVIKS PLAN NUCLEAR FIRST STRIKE AGAINST RUSSIA

Yes, there was a full-blown plan for the U.S. to launch a first-strike nuclear war against Russia. The nuclear first strike against Russia relied heavily on missiles, including America 's secret Minuteman TX mobile missile (not the MX that the media talked about), but it could not succeed without up-to-date information on the targets in Russia. The American Bolsheviks were doing all they could to get us into a nuclear war, while they had survival shelters for themselves (but not the rest of us!). Russia had and has extensive survival shelters, working civil defense plans, and great storage facilities full of wheat, corn, oats and other supplies we gave to them (we "sold" the supplies to them, knowing they would not pay us back).

U.S. CITIZENRY TOTALLY EXPENDABLE

In the book *Deep Black: Space Espionage and National Security* General George Keegan tells of the Russian civil defense shelters. He found that every factory in Russia had a shelter. The city of Moscow had 75 underground command post/shelters, each one the size of the Pentagon. Yes, that's what he said. They were each covered with 100 feet of reinforced concrete and four hundred feet of dirt. He said they were each 2 or 3 times as strong as Hoover Dam.

Every military city in Russia and most other cities had them. Keegan said that it would take five hundred billion dollars to build just one. I typed that right, billion with a "B," read it again. He said they were *plush,* they even had railroad trains going into them. They have shelters along the road from the airport into downtown Moscow.

Russia is fully committed if necessary to fighting a nuclear war and surviving. The United States , however, has no civil defense system at all - except for a very exclusive system for the Elite. Our program was officially called MAD, "Mutually Assured Destruction." However, we would have been the only ones destroyed. If you had 20 minutes warning that hydrogen bombs were about to be dropped all across America , WHAT WOULD YOU DO?

I know what many of you will say. "I don't worry about it, whatever is God's will, will be." That type of brainwashing has gotten us into this mess. God's will, is for us to have free will. If you want to step in front of a railroad train, God will let you. He will not stop you! And if you do nothing about the mess you/we are in, God will let you die! If the Russians want to attack this country, or if we want to attack them, God will allow it - He allows free will to all sides!

The American Bolsheviks were doing all they could to get set for nuclear war, so they were desperate for new, up-to-date reconnaissance data from Russia. Russia knew this, that is why they finished perfecting a survival plan. We, however, were totally expendable, then and now. We filled their silos with survival supplies and emptied ours.

The elite Bolsheviks had, by this time, developed a satellite which they believed could survive in orbit for a while if they launched it in secret and took devious routes of flight.

END OF PART 3.

PART 4:

Remember *Sputnik?* I first saw it one day as I was out in the field choppin' cotten (it pains me to realize that some of my readers will not even know what choppin' cotten is). *Sputnik I* was a 184 pound ball launched by an SS-6 ICBM by Russia at 9:36 P.M. on October 4, 1957. It was highly polished to make it easier to see, and carried a radio transmitting at a frequency that made it easy for ham radio operators to track. Our government made fun of the rocket, contemptuously calling by the code name Sapwood. The MIT humor magazine *Voodoo* had a cartoon of a cutaway *Sputnik* with a bearded Russian inside saying, "Beep...beep...beep."

A month later Russia launched the Sputnik 2, which weighed 1,119 pounds which was in the warhead range. Although we still made fun of Russia (the Senate majority leader said we were going to launch a better satellite, with chrome trim and windshield wipers), President Eisenhower took special note of the missile. Russia had leap-frogged our expensive bomber system and was becoming able to deliver warheads with their ICBMs. Between 1956 and 1960 Ike sent over 20 U-2 flights over Russia to try to learn Russia 's missile capabilities. Every U-2 flight was monitored by radar by Russia. Our Air Force reported that Russia would have a thousand ICBMs by 1961.

Two years after *Sputnik* we launched our *Discoverer* satellite, which had a camera and did a lot more than beep. We had a program called Pied Piper which did become SAMOS (Satellite and Missile Observation System). The first SAMOS launch was October 11, 1960, which failed, and SAMOS 2 was launched into orbit on January 31, 1961. The final SAMOS 30 was November 27, 1963, although officially the final *Discoverer* was 38 launched on February 27, 1962. At this point the program was changed and some of the satellites were back-named. The new program was KeyHole, and the satellites were called KH-1s (*Discoverers* were renamed KH-4s).

One of the most secret branches of the government was/is the National Reconnaissance Office, established officially on August 25, 1960. I believe that one reason for its establishment had to do with flying saucers, but that is another story. NRO developed the KH-11 (By a man named Kennan) spy (photo [and other]-reconnaissance) satellite in 1972. One of the projects I worked on at Control Data involved the KH-11. The KH-11 was used for such things as finding where the hostages were held in the Iranian Embassy and supposedly for observing the heat shield tiles on the Shuttle. It is obvious to me that they were also used to observe flying saucers, but then we all know flying saucers "*do not* exist* so I must be wrong, right?

America knew that Russia 's orbital fleet of manned Cosmos Interceptors would destroy the Shuttle, but planners hoped that before this happened the satellite would be able to radio back enough targeting information for a nuclear missile first strike. The first mission was a frantic rush job, and had to be manned because of the secret cargo.

If the Shuttle reached orbit, the astronauts were to be required to deploy the military satellite inside the cargo bay. The satellite was basically a spy satellite, but it was also much more. In order to do its job, it was designed to fend off Russian space weapons for as long as possible. As a result, it would be nothing less than a robot battle station in space. It was a "hardened satellite" able to withstand an attack without being easily destroyed, or so they hoped. It was equipped with active defenses, it could "shoot back."

All the components of the satellite were crammed into the cargo bay of the Shuttle *Columbia.* They were already there when the * Columbia * was rolled out the prior November. Once in orbit, the job of the astronauts, John Young and Robert Crippen, would be to assemble it and to get it operating, and rapidly.

TUNGSTEN SATELLITE POSES THREAT TO COSMOSPHERES

Once it would be assembled and floating in space, the satellite would look like a giant rotating tin can perhaps 30 feet long and 20 feet in diameter, but on closer inspection it would seem to be made more like a wooden barrel except that the barrel staves are all made of tungsten.

Inside the outermost tungsten barrel was another smaller barrel and inside that was a still smaller barrel. At the very center was the heart of the satellite itself. The tungsten barrels were separated from one another by a foot or more of space. There was also considerable space between the innermost barrel and the core satellite. The tungsten barrels constitute the passive defense of the satellite. If a Charged Particle Beam blast would strike the outermost barrel, it would vaporize a spot on the barrel but in the process it would absorb energy and diffuse the beam. In theory, that would greatly reduce the damage done to the second barrel and do no damage whatsoever to the innermost barrel. Tungsten has the highest melting point of any workable metal in service at the time, so this system of particle beam shields was expected to last through a number of battles.

The three-layer tungsten shield system was also instrumented. When a blast would strike it, the blast pattern would be sensed as an initial indication of from which direction came the attack. A computer within the core satellite would then activate a secret new target acquisition system called LADAR (Laser Direction And Ranging). The removable barrel stave sections of the rotating tungsten shields would be opened. LADAR would peek out through the openings as they rotated past in ultra-fast scanning.

In the black void of space, LADAR was expected to be much more efficient than radar, picking up the Russian attacker very quickly, and the moment it would do so, the American robot battle station would open fire. When it did so, it would pose a major threat even to a Russian Cosmos Interceptor because the American satellite would be armed with a giant carbon dioxide gas dynamic blaser (CDDB).

END OF PART 4.

PART 5:

The CDDB was a more compact version of the laser, which was successfully tested aboard a modified KC-135 jet tanker. It produced intense infrared radiation with a power of over one megawatt - which is 1,000,000 watts. An industrial 10,000 satellite laser was 100 times more powerful. I was not as powerful as the Russian Charged Particle Beam, but it was powerful enough that it should be able to cripple or destroy the Russian attacker. All this hinged, of course, on actually getting the Shuttle and payload deployed.

According to the plan, the * Columbia * was intended to lift off on a sunny morning in mid-April, 1981. Millions would be watching on television as Young and Crippen roared upward into the sky and into orbit. Then the scene would shift to the standard coverage of Young and Crippen in their cockpit, and for a little over two days the coverage would continue off and on. There would be cockpit scenes, scenes in Mission Control, and so on, and there would be some seemingly unexpected problems, nothing serious but just enough to add a touch of spice to the story and the real stuff. Television viewers would have no suspicion that they were only watching excerpts from numerous simulations of the flight. In its cover-up of the SKYLAB fiasco, NASA learned well the techniques of deception.

Meanwhile, there would be no television coverage at all of the real flight except for the initial lift-off. Instead, when Young and Crippen reached orbit, they would go to work instantly. They would depressurize the cabin, open the cargo hatch, and move the robot spy satellite component away from the *Columbia.* They would also remove a *Gemini*-type two-man space capsule from the *Columbia* cargo bay. After moving these things several hundred yards away from the *Columbia,* the two astronauts would close the cargo bay by remote control.

They would maneuver down underneath the * Columbia * for a quick visual inspection of the condition of the thermal tiles, but the urgency of setting up the robot satellite would leave no time for any attempt to repair any tiles. If the astronauts were to do that, they would lose precious time both in setting up the satellite and in making good their own escape in the *Gemini* capsule. This is why NASA refused to include a tile repair kit on the first Shuttle mission. As NASA administrator, Robert Forsch, said in a news conference, "I felt in the end that it would be likely to increase risk, perhaps not risk with regard to the tile system but risk with regard to the safety of the whole flight."

After a very brief inspection, the astronauts would turn over control of the * Columbia * to NASA in Houston with the words: "Okay for retrofire." Then they would float away from the *Columbia* and set to work immediately on assembling the robot spy satellite. It was expected that they would complete the job within about four orbits. As soon as the robot satellite would be assembled and operating, Young and Crippen would board their *Gemini*-type space capsule.

If all went according to plan, they would drop out of orbit and splash down in the Pacific Ocean. It would only be the evening of the same day of launch, but on television the falsified NASA coverage would still be showing tapes of Young and Crippen in the simulated cockpit of the *Columbia.* Young and Crippen would be then picked up at sea after their secret splashdown. From there they were to be transported to Edwards Air Force Base in California to await further events and orders.

Some 12 hours after the launch from Cape Canaveral , Houston would send a retrofire signal to the now unmanned *Columbia.* The Shuttle's engines would fire. Somewhere over the Indian Ocean the Space Shuttle would enter the atmosphere. It would be the first complete test of the Shuttle's thermo-tiles. If they worked, *Columbia* would survive re-entry. Then at lower altitude, piloting of the * Columbia * would be taken over by remote control. If all went well, the *Columbia* would touch down in the great sandy desert of western Australia.

For years I used an HP-41CX hand held calculator until I wore out the keys. When I bought it, the ads said that the Shuttle astronauts carried one of these in orbit so that it would take over and land the Shuttle in case the on-board computer failed. I probably still have that literature around somewhere. The point is, the Shuttle can easily be landed (launched and flown, for that matter) by computer.

It was planned that all of these things would take place during the first day of the supposed 54-hour mission of Young and Crippen. Then for the final act of the charade, we would be told on television that the *Columbia was re-entering over the Pacific Ocean; and finally, lo and behold the Space Shuttle would glide into view. Everyone would watch in awe and fascination as the Shuttle dipped lower and lower over Edwards Air Force Base, California, to the resounding double boom of the shock waves giving physical proof of the journey. The fact that everything passing through the sound barrier in flight would give a boom would be totally overlooked in the intrigue and relief of the moment.

Finally the craft would touch down on the dry lake bed and gradually brake to a stop, and out would climb Young and Crippen. Everyone would assume that they were climbing out of the * Columbia ,* HOWEVER THEY WOULD ACTUALLY BE DISEMBARKING FROM THE *ENTERPRISE.* It was the *Enterprise* which we saw in those landing tests in August of 1977, and it would be the familiar *Enterprise* which we would see making another perfect landing. The craft would have been touched a bit to appear that it had come from space, but that was intentional fraud.

This was, of course, a desperate gamble. However, if the mission worked, it would carry off a major deceit pattern for privacy to the program, but it would also bring the entire world much closer to thermonuclear war. Although failure was anticipated and carefully covered, and as it turned out was necessary, we would be on the road to one incredible hoax following another in ever-increasing magnitude. This, of course, has been the subsequent course of events. April 12, 1981, was the 20th anniversary of the first manned flight into space. It was the anniversary of the first orbital flight by Russian cosmonaut Yuri Gagarin. It also became a day of total confusion and disarray among the Bolshevik masters of America 's Space Shuttle program.

Less than eight minutes after launch that Sunday morning, they knew something had happened to the *Columbia.* We were still hearing the sound effects of a seemingly successful flight, courtesy of the NASA tape recording from Houston. But the military controllers at White Sands who were following the real flight were hearing nothing at all. * Columbia * had failed to arrive over the Indian Ocean on schedule.

More bad news came: NORAD was tracking the fuel tank of the Shuttle. It was not supposed to be in orbit at all - but there it was, in orbit. That looked impossible, to say the least.

That evening, Sunday, April 12, the Shuttle's fuel tank re-entered over the Gulf of Mexico just south of Louisiana. The tank had ruptured but there was still a sizable amount of liquid hydrogen and oxygen inside. When the tank re-entered, it heated up and set off an enormous explosion and also created a giant cloud at the fringes of space.

Goldplating, which is used extensively in the Shuttle fuel tank because of its heat transfer properties, was vaporized and scattered through the clouds which was interesting in itself and gave a wondrous show. The result was the same as when gold is added in tiny quantities to stained window glass - a brilliant pinkish-red color. The giant pink cloud, with chunks of ruined fuel tank flashing in the sun, created headlines as it passed to the northeast over Louisiana and Mississippi. Meanwhile our "good old boys" poo-poohed it all as, "a natural phenomenon."

The American elite Bolsheviks were not quite sure what had happened to the *Columbia,* but they did know that as far as Space was concerned, the Shuttle Program was their only hope. They had three more orbital Shuttles hidden away at White Sands and they intended to launch them all, no matter what the odds might be, so the NASA cover-up of the * Columbia * disaster went right on according to plan.

GENETIC REPLICAS OF HUMANS

In the late part of the 1970s the existence of man-made genetic replicas of human beings was made public. The revealers were locked away instantly and the key tossed. It was disbelieved although motion pictures were made as sci-fi and the subject buried under threat of penalty of death to disclosers. They, however, did (and do) exist and were pressed into service right before our eyes. We didn't even blink at them - no sir, we just gobbled up the lie, chewed it and swallowed it in total.

If I have not lost you yet, this will probably do it. Genetic replicas? Human robots? You can't be serious! you will say. Call them look-alike stand-ins if that will make it easier for you to believe, but they were in fact GENETIC COPIES. You need to study what is going on in such places as Dulce New Mexico! The Bible says that at the end time it will be like it was at the time of Noah, and records show that at the time of Noah, genetic manipulation was going on!

Using stand-ins is a common procedure. For instance, the book *The Strange Death of Franklin D. Roosevelt* by Emmanuel M. Josephson, copyright 1948, said in the chapter titled "Roosevelt's Odd Ailments and His Strange Death" that both Roosevelt and Churchill were poisoned at the Teheran conference with Stalin. "At Teheran Roosevelt and Churchill met with Stalin to confirm the division of the World between them. During the conference, Roosevelt had been prevailed upon by the Russians to stay at the Russian Embassy because, the Russians said, the American Embassy was not safe.

At the Russian Embassy, it is reported, a special courtesy was extended to the guests. They were assigned a special waiter who served them exclusively. It was later discovered that the waiter was a physician who specialized in the science of poisoning, toxicology. The use of doctors under Russia 's state medical system in disposing of persons whom the powers-that-be wished out of the way, by poisoning them, has been attested to in the Moscow purge trials. Dr. Levine testified that he had been ordered by his superiors to poison Maxim Gorki and had done so.

"Shortly after their departure, Winston Churchill became extremely ill. He was hurried TO EGYPT where he was so sick that his death was expected momentarily. But his life was saved by a protege of his, Sir Arthur Fleming, the discoverer of penicillin."

" Roosevelt also was extremely ill on his return. He was unable to walk or stand unassisted, and never recovered his strength." Friends, the man who was elected as President for the 4th term was NOT ROOSEVELT ! When he died, "Admiral McIntyre, FDR's physician, is reported to have said that Roosevelt 's body was not embalmed; that in less than four hours after death, it had turned black, a reaction that occurs among other cases, in event of arsenic poisoning" (p. 285).

On page 286, it says, "A careful study of the few photographs of Roosevelt released in 1944 raised the question of whether they are really photographs of Roosevelt or of a stand-in. It was widely known that there were a number of stand-ins who resembled Roosevelt so closely that they appeared for him on occasions. If the suspicions raised by the photographs are well founded, the mystery deepens. What did happen to Roosevelt? Who was it that campaigned and was re-elected in 1944?"

Who indeed? Remember, that book was written in 1948. On page 287 it says evidence indicated that Roosevelt had killed himself with a "small silver pistol." It says, "His burial without autopsy was a criminal act and a flagrant violation of the law. There is more in this situation than meets the eye." Ah, so! He ends the chapter by saying, "The deception perpetrated on the public in regard to Roosevelt 's health is characteristic of that which prevailed in all matters during his Administration." The situation is much worse, NOW, friends!

SYNTHETICS

Tuesday morning, April 14, genetic replicas called "Synthetics" of the then late astronauts, Young and Crippen, were readied at White Sands. They were programmed to take a computerized ride on the training Shuttle *Enterprise.* The Young and Crippen entities boarded the * Enterprise * which was mounted on top of the launched 747. After rocket fuel was loaded for the Shuttle, the 747 took off and headed west, avoiding commercial air traffic. The launched 747 headed out over the Pacific until it was several hundred miles west of Los Angeles. Then it turned back east toward the California coast. On television we were told that the non-existent * Columbia * was re-entering from orbit.

Meanwhile the * Enterprise ,* re-labeled * Columbia ,* was cut loose from the 747 and fired its rockets. It sped up to a speed of nearly 6,000 miles per hour, then we watched it as it made that dramatic race in from the sea to a precise computer landing at Edwards Air Force Base. It was all timed to agree as closely as possible with the official NASA timetable to further convince us of the security and efficiency of the system.

Even so, a technical mistake was made that morning and as a result we were told that the Shuttle would land six minutes early. Think about it, six minutes in orbit corresponds to nearly a 2,000 mile error in the location of the Shuttle, but on TV nobody bothered to so much as question it. Everyone just smiled and said how lovely a day to watch a Shuttle land.

Following the dramatic landing, former astronaut Gene Cernan expressed surprise on ABC television. He said the Shuttle simply did not look scorched enough for a ship that had re-entered from orbit. Likewise, when the synthetics called Young and Crippen emerged, they did not act like men who had been weightless for two days.

Instead they bounded down the access steps and pranced around with restless energy but no one questioned it in the least. After all, we had all seen that Shuttle landing for ourselves and hundreds had been first-hand witnesses to the landing at Edwards; we had also heard and felt those sonic booms. Surely the government would not lie to us.

IDENTICAL SHUTTLES WAITING

Three more identical Shuttles like the * Columbia * were waiting their turn in the desert at White Sands. Each would have the same label, "* Columbia ,*" painted on its side. The first * Columbia * was now quite dead along with its crew, but thanks to "doubles" the *Columbia * would continue to live on as the astronauts would be removed from public view except on rare and "distant" occasions when appearance would be inevitable and actors would be able to carry out the assignments.

On April 28, 1981, we were all tuned in to our TV boxes to watch President Reagan's address. The speech was to gain and build support for the Administration's budget, but most people were interested because it was the first speech by the President since the assassination attempt nearly a month earlier. People were too absorbed in the dramatic re-appearance of a wounded President to pay much attention to anything else. No one cared very much that the Space Shuttle "* Columbia *" supposedly arrived back in Florida that day - on the back of its transport ship. The *Columbia * was a great success as far as the citizens knew - we had seen EVERYTHING OURSELVES ON TELEVISION.

END OF PART 5.

PART 6:

SPACE SUPERIORITY TOUTED

Based on that ONE Space Shuttle flight, we were then being told on all sides that we were once again on top in space. We were told that now we were five to ten years ahead of those poor, stupid Russians.

The Shuttle which we all saw land at Edwards Air Force Base in California was the training Shuttle *Enterprise.* I had simply been relabeled with the name " Columbia " on the side. When the Shuttle landed in California April 14, we were initially told that it would be flown immediately back to Florida, but as the days went by, the Shuttle just stayed in California. NASA created one excuse after another to explain away the delays to the public.

Meanwhile, frantic meetings were going on, involving key, joint military and NASA personnel. Things had not gone according to plan, and they were not sure what to do next. One faction insisted that NASA should go ahead according to the original plan. That plan called for a switch in Shuttles between California and Florida. On Day One a modified "747" would take off from Edwards Air Force Base, California, with the Shuttle * Enterprise * riding piggyback. News cameras would be on hand to record the take-off. The * Enterprise * would then be flown to its home base at White Sands, New Mexico. Meanwhile the public would be told that the "747" with the Shuttle had made an overnight stopover. Then on Day Two another modified "747" carrying a different Shuttle, would take off from White Sands and fly to Florida.

Once again, reporters would be on hand to watch the landing at Cape Canaveral. The new Shuttle, of course, would have the name " Columbia " on the side just as the * Enterprise * did. In that way the training Shuttle, * Enterprise ,* was to be returned to home base and a fresh orbital-only Shuttle sent to Florida. The switch would be made without the public suspecting a thing, and, after all, it is only the American public from which the above top secret secrets are maintained. The participants, by accident, believe the cover-up is in national security to prevent acceleration of the obvious war under way. Who is going to tell?

In those meetings behind closed doors about the situation, others protested that it would be foolish to go ahead as originally planned without more information. It was obvious that somehow the Russians had destroyed the * Columbia ,* but the question was: "How?" The military Shuttle planning group agreed that they needed the answer to that question, otherwise there would be no way to devise countermeasures to give the next Shuttle flight a better chance. You see, they never considered telling the truth and shutting down the upcoming plans.

Finally, it was agreed all around that the first urgent need was to buy time, so NASA spokesmen were told to give the press a series of stalling stories about the post-flight Shuttle procedures in California. Meanwhile, every available avenue of Intelligence world-wide was pressed to come up with an answer to that crucial question: "What happened to the Space Shuttle, *Columbia?*"

Day by day we saw well orchestrated brief new reports about the postflight checkouts of the Shuttle at Edwards Air Base. The Shuttle was then lifted onto the back of the "747," by the take-off kept being pushed back one day after another. The military shuttle planning group was drawing a blank from their intelligence sweep about the * Columbia. *

The Shuttle stayed on the ground a week longer than originally planned, and still no answer came about the *Columbia.* You see, if by chance the Russians turned up with the *Columbia* in tow the fallout would be worse than disastrous because, for the first day or so, the exchange could not be explained away as "preventing public panic."

NASA ran out of excuses for further stalling without raising unwelcome questions. The secret Shuttle planning team was still in no position to prepare for a second orbital mission, and yet appearances had to be maintained at all costs and every passing day became more critical.

The U.S. Government was crowing loudly about the supposed stunning success of the Shuttle because it was the only hope left for America in space. The Space Shuttle was the only program, other than Defense, which was given increased funding by the Reagan Administration. There was also the incredible fear that if the Russians did, in fact, have the Shuttle intact, the entire cover-up would be exposed world-wide. The Russians, on the other hand, had no proof and couldn't come forward with actions which would have caused all-out war.

WHITE SANDS CHOICES

Before the Shuttle * Enterprise * left California aboard its "747," the Shuttle planning group had to make a decision: Should they, or should they not, make the planned switch between Shuttles at White Sands? There were three more orbital-rated Shuttles at White Sands, and a specific mission was planned for each one.

One of the planners summed up the dilemma in these words: "How can we send an orbital bird to the Cape ?" STS-2, 3, and 4 may require major modifications in order to get past the Russians. We won't know what those modifications are until we get the missing feedback on STS-1. I say send the *Enterprise.* We can keep it sub-orbital by faking an abort - shut-down one engine before Press-to-MECO and let * Enterprise * return to Kennedy. That will keep * Enterprise * out of danger from 'Ivan.' It will also keep the ball rolling while giving us more time to set up a successful orbital shot."

Someone else asked: "What about the public relations impact? One thing we don't need is to abort a mission this early in the program."

The reply: "Would you rather lose another orbital bird to Ivan? Besides, if we do it right, we could end up with even more public support. You know what I mean - the idea that the Shuttle is safe even if something does go wrong, and so on."

There was a very long silence, followed by more discussion, but finally the suggestion was adopted.

On Monday, April 27, the "747" bearing the Shuttle * Enterprise * took off from Edwards Air Force Base, California. The following day we were shown the same Shuttle, the training Shuttle * Enterprise ,* landing in Florida. There was no switch made.

The secret Shuttle planners were still feeling their way and they left open an avenue for plan changes. Therefore, it would be the training Shuttle * Enterprise * that would later roll off the launch pad in Florida, that summer. It would look just like the * Columbia * did before its April launch, mated to a giant fuel tank and huge solid-rocket boosters.

WILL THE REAL PLAYERS AND PROPS STAND UP, PLEASE

NASA was then shooting for the very early launch date of September 30, 1981. According to the plans the launch would proceed smoothly for the first few minutes. Unlike the * Columbia ,* the * Enterprise * would not veer north toward the kind of orbit forbidden by Russia.

Then, one engine would shut down prematurely. It would be earlier in the flight than the point at which contact with * Columbia * was lost in April. Then, as we were still watching on television, the * Enterprise * would return for its alleged "emergency" landing at Kennedy.

By that time, the * Enterprise * had made so many computerized landings that NASA had confidence that the landing would be made safely. If other plans could be substituted as the summer progressed, so could the "flight" sequence be changed, even to aborting the launch at the pad.

There would, of course, be an uproar about the aborted space flight, but it would not last long because no citizen would risk the lives of astronauts to a possible accident. The entire scenario of an abortion would "only prove the efficiency of the computer check system and safety measures."

The hopes were, of course, to buy time and gain information regarding the first launch.

BACK TO AIR-BLASTS

Let's go back to December of 1978 when air blasts at sea began shaking homes and frightening thousands along America 's East Coast. For a while government spokesmen tried to ignore them; but the booms, now known and recognized as Air Quakes, would not go away. In fact, they steadily increased in number and were also soon experienced on the West Coast and inland U.S. , as well.

As no explanations could be offered, they were next ridiculed in the controlled major media, but that tactic quickly changed, too, because too many people were hearing them to accept it all as a big joke. Then the tactic was to simply report them, promising follow-up and then simply never following up.

The news projectors never move from the scripts given them and there would be practically no fear of slip-ups. NOte this for yourselves during prime time newscasts; flip channels and you will hear the verbatim new items being read from the master script.

After these quakes had been going on unexplained for several months, the government tried to explain it all away by blaming the whole thing on freak weather conditions. Alleged experts were trotted out to impress the public with the mumbo jumbo about unusually cold air layers, ozone depletion, northern lights, electrical disturbances, and so on, ad nauseum.

Waving their arms about in master performances, other experts were touting that the booms were due to military aircraft, perhaps a hundred miles out to sea since nothing showed up on any radar screens.

Others managed to actually keep a straight face as they told you that the booms were caused by the *Concorde* supersonic transport and all but grounded the *Concorde* forever. They told you that the shock waves from that plane were striking America 's East Coast more than an hour ahead of the plane itself, and with incredible force, having "built up incredible sonic force as it traveled."

Explanations like these were ridiculous on their face; yet most Americans, eager to be pacified, accepted these insults to their intelligence at face value and even marched to stop the *Concorde* from landing in the U.S. Facts are that most of the quakes taking place nationwide were kept out of the press, and people calmed down.

For instance, there are almost daily Air Quakes in areas around an Air Force Base where you might find sophisticated aircraft capable of supersonic speeds. Usually, the later seen jet craft are not the cause of the blasts but are the INSPECTION TEAMS CHECKING OUT THE LOCATION OF THE BLAST.

Those of you who do not believe such a thing could be, had better think back to some unexplained booms you have noted and the media could give no explanation. As the phenomenon continued, people simply returned to sleep and ignored the interruption in their thoughts - simply no longer caring one way or another.

As early as December of 1977 it was told publicly, and suppressed governmentally, that the quakes were caused from newly operational Russian Cosmospheres firing their Particle Beam weapons in a defocused mode into the air over the Atlantic Ocean - and later over the Pacific. This information came forth right out of our top intelligence systems.

In 1977, there were some seven Cosmospheres hovering over the U.S. , but in the months that followed the numbers grew into the hundreds worldwide. Now you can find out more if you can get your hands on the materials from the Mitre Corporation because the government sponsored a study done by them. The material was quietly released and then faded into oblivion.

The report listed 594 air quakes of major impact between December 1977 and the following June. By June, of course, those alleged "freak cold air layers" had to be long gone. The study did its best to blame the booms on aircraft noises, anyway, but 181 air quakes were impossible to link to anything, even artificially, or to any acceptable excuse, so the report lamely concluded that they must be of some natural origin, and yet the government and military were fully aware of the origin.

The Cosmospheres are Russia 's version of the Hovering Weapons Platforms of which the late General Thomas Power tried in vain to give a warning over 15 years ago. General Power was former head of Air Force Research and Development and then of the Strategic Air Command. He knew what he was talking about and made every effort possible to alert the American people over the ensuing years but his efforts were suppressed and went ignored.

As the numbers of Cosmospheres multiplied worldwide during the following year, UFO sightings likewise mushroomed. Is it any wonder that the U.S. officially does not recognize UFOs and calls them weather balloons or swamp gas?

SPACE ALIENS?

The "panic" which the government is trying to keep from us is not from "aliens;" if aliens were the problem then we would have been conquered long ago. The problems come from very Earth-oriented, physical humans at the controls.

Most UFO sightings are in fact Identified Flying Objects; they are Russian Cosmospheres. This is not to say that alien flying saucers do not exist, for the same intelligence that identifies and tracks the Soviet Cosmospheres has confirmed the existence of craft that are not from Earth.

Every astronaut of our moon landing programs has said they were followed by flying saucers, before Russia developed their Flying Platforms. Does this give you a hint as to the REAL reason why the astronauts were quarantined after they came back from the "moon?"

They had to undergo "debriefing" - they had to be taught how to keep their mouths shut about what they saw. Neil Armstrong said that when he stepped onto the moon, there were at least two "flying saucers" already sitting there watching him. He later had a mental breakdown. However, some of the moon program was also "smoke and mirrors."

IT'S ONLY A PAPER MOON...

The Center spread of the September 5, 1994, issue of *Spotlight* newspaper has an article by a man who points out some of the obvious problems with the moon program. The author, who used the name R. Ren_, has written a book called *IT'S ONLY A PAPER MOON (PUBLISHED TITLE IS NASA MOONED AMERICA)* in which he points out some scientific facts such as the space ships and space suits do not provide enough radiation protection for the astronauts to accomplish what they claim to have done (if the suits work, why don't they use them with nuclear reactor accidents?). He says that "the landings were faked and that the Apollo program was a very successful and expensive government hoax - a hoax that is about to be repeated using Mars as the new 'celestial' target." The Hubble Telescope is another NASA hoax - try reading *THE HUBBLE WARS* by Eric Chaisson.

WHY ALL THE AID TO RUSSIA ?

Why does our government give massive aid in money, food and technology to Russia ? Could it be to keep those Cosmospheres stationed in appropriate orbit to take out every major dam, fault line, populated city and military base in our nation? The International Banker Elite know what is going on and have situated themselves to take advantage of the destruction of five out of every six persons on earth (according to their OWN PLANS). The only reason it has not happened already is that "They" have held off until they could finish gold-plating their commode handles and stocking their underground warehouses.

THOSE UNDERGROUND FACILITIES

On this subject, here are some hints for UFO researchers. There are sonic quakes over Southern California that have been traced to an Aurora aircraft and OTHER CRAFT going to Groom Lake Nevada. If you plot that course backwards, you come to Australia. Check out the underground facilities at Pine Gap, Australia, if you want to know more about one of the hideouts of the "Elite." The research shows that one of these craft flies over 4,000 miles per hour, but one who should know says they can fly over 8,000 miles an hour. That craft can get to Australia quicker than I can get home from work.

UFOs have always been attracted by aircraft, rockets, and spacecraft, especially when those are new or experimental. The Cosmospheres are not exception to this rule. Wherever Cosmospheres are congregated UFOs will always show up and there is no exception to this rule. The "alien" craft observe and monitor the human craft.

ALIEN CRAFT MONITORING

A good example of this monitoring was witnessed in New Zealand as the secret bases there were under surveillance by the Russians. On December 30, 1978, an Australian television news crew made headlines worldwide by filming what they called UFOs from an airplane over New Zealand. The film, some seven minutes long, was purchased by the BBC and by the CBS TV Network. On January 2, CBS showed less than 50 SECONDS of the film which showed a glowing spherical object, and most of the objects sighted that evening by the camera crew and other observers were described as spheres of LIGHT.

However, as the film clip was shown, a soundtrack was played. The Australian newsman described a different object. He said it looked like a flying saucer. Walter Cronkite did not say whether or not the soundtrack had been recorded simultaneously with the film clip that was being shown.

In any case, the spherical object in the film was a Russian Cosmosphere, but the attempts to discredit the film were an echo of the ridiculous government stories about the air quakes the prior year. On the evening of January 25 Walter Cronkite of CBS News reminded viewers of the New Zealand UFOs; then he went on: "Well, the New Zealand Air Force reported today that freak atmospheric conditions, not visitors from outer space, were responsible. Investigators said one definite cause was an unusually bright "Venus" rising in the eastern sky."

PAY ATTENTION - THIS IS FROM "EARTH"

The "friendly" "alien" craft will show strobing "COLORED" lights of red, green, yellow, blue. They are stationed in non orbiting sequence in strategic placements. The Cosmospheres do not strobe, and are stationed to appear as stars and planets. This is the real reason that there is a lot of hocus pocus involved with the Hubble Telescope, they cannot afford to let us see what that can see.

END OF PART 6.

PART 7:

RUSSIAN SPHERES AND PLATFORMS, AND HELP FROM ALIENS

The Russian craft are not always visible; actually they are almost never visible and from an orbiting standpoint they are as any other satellite which would be too small to be seen by the eye alone. They are shielded by a very sophisticated stealth shielding system. The "aliens" sometimes neutralize the Russian systems in hope that we will see them and wake up to what is happening, but we are too brainwashed to accept the truth.

You may ask, if the aliens are benevolent, why don't they help us? Who would they help? Which side is the "good guys?" We have to first ask for their help, then we have to accept their help and follow their rules. Instead, both the American and Russian (and other) governments have tried to shoot them down.

The flurries of UFO sightings over Australia and New Zealand were actually due to Cosmospheres with monitoring alien craft along with some of our own monitoring craft with sufficient speed capability.

The U.S. in the 1970s decided to outflank Russia by deploying Minuteman and other nuclear missiles all over the world, since our main bases such as Edwards, White Sands, etc., were all monitored by Russian Cosmospheres. We believed that we could disable the Cosmospheres long enough to launch a missile attack against Russia. We came very close to doing just that several times, but each time we were defeated by the Cosmospheres which saved the world from nuclear nightmare. Who are the "Good guys," friends?

COBALT ION BOMS AND LASERS

It is well known to U.S. scientific intelligence analysts that the Cosmospheres hover by floating in the earth's electro-static field. They also presume that the Russians use the same techniques we would use in order to aim their Particle-beam weapons - that is, a combination of infrared detection and radar. They reasoned that if the Cosmospheres can be disturbed from their hovering positions and if their sensing systems can be blinded, their particle-bam weapons would do no good - even if they fired they would be aimed wildly and miss our rockets as they would be launched.

The solution devised was called a Cobalt Ionization Bomb. Unlike a normal cobalt bomb, such a device is not designed to create a tremendous blast; its primary purpose, instead, is to create tremendous quantities of totally ionized cobalt atoms stripped of all their electrons, leaving bare nuclei. The plan is to detonate these at various locations in the upper fringes of the atmosphere, as high as possible, but below the hovering altitude of the Cosmospheres.

The result will be an enormous storm of electrons, spreading horizontally in the Earth's magnetic field to pass underneath the Cosmospheres. When you hear in the news that we have recently launched a satellite that "illuminates the electrostatic/magnetic field," does that make more sense now? And do you remember that the launch was considered to be a secret military mission? It would also disrupt the infrared and radar systems used to watch the missiles below; and while the Cosmospheres are briefly incapacitated in this manner, our rulers planned to launch our ICBMs right past them.

Meanwhile, ground-based high-power lasers would be used in the effort to shoot down the Cosmospheres. But, my friends, your masters fell victim to the very intelligence gap which they themselves brought about years past, which I wrote about in my newsletters in 1978, because the Russians well understand the importance of surprise, including technological surprise. And so, while they have allowed their space triad to become known in intelligence circles because of it deployment, they still have a master secret weapon in reserve for the war itself.

This weapon is a system to protect the Achilles' heel of their beam-weapons - the ability to aim them accurately. It is called "Psychoenergetic Range Finding" or PRF. PRF does not rely on conventional radiations like infrared or radar - instead, it is based upon detection of the actual atomic signature of the target, and normal jamming techniques have no effect whatsoever on PRF. Therefore, when the American cobalt ionization bombs explode, the Cosmospheres would be able to aim right through the electron storms to blast our missiles or ANYTHING ELSE in the target.

In November an alternate plan for the second launch was presented. This plan would be an abbreviated orbital mission. So, the second Space Shuttle launch took place from Cape Canaveral Florida, on November 12, 1981, seven months after the first launch.

Some seven hours after launch it was announced that the flight was going to be cut short. Therefore, the secret plan for an abbreviated mission was verified and under way. As an excuse, NASA pretended that a faulty fuel cell was responsible for shortening the mission.

The abbreviated Space Shuttle mission in November was the legacy of the total disaster which engulfed the first Shuttle launch in April. In November, just as the prior April, no part of the real Shuttle flight was heard other than the Florida take-off. The identical theatrical techniques that were used to fool the public in April were again utilized, including some of the same taped segments - no one noticed, not even when the story did not match the sound or pictures.

Remember, we watched the *Columbia* take off but it was the *Enterprise* that landed in California.

The *Enterprise* was a very specially designed Shuttle, unlike the *Columbia* or the three other Shuttles which secretly existed at White Sands. The *Enterprise* was a training Shuttle with its cargo bay filled with rocket fuel tanks. Launched from the top of an airborne 747, the *Enterprise* was able to make short suborbital flights into space, but due to its fuel tanks it could carry no payload in its cargo bay.

In the wake of the secret Space Shuttle disaster in April, the military Shuttle planners sent the *Enterprise* to Florida.

Originally, they were simply trying to buy time. But time was going by quickly because the American Bolsheviks were on an accelerated timetable to bring about WAR! Arguments broke out among the military Shuttle planners over the original plan to throw away a launch just to keep up appearances.

A scheme was finally constructed to use the *Enterprise* itself in November for a military mission.

COMPUTER SCAPEGOATS

Just as computers are handy for helping with the workloads of people, they also make handy scapegoats to cover a massive multitude of errors and omissions. This time a computer problem would be the important factor in deliberately shortening the second Shuttle flight - as information to be lied forth to the public. So, on the evening before the launch, there was a sudden flurry of activity at Cape Canaveral.

Supposedly a data processing module aboard the Shuttle - that is, part of its computer system - "was misbehaving." We were told that a replacement was flown in, and we saw workmen rushing to install something aboard the Shuttle. It was all going on, literally, at the very last minute, just before the large external tanks started being loaded with rocket fuel.

The last minute rush at Pad 39-A that evening on November 11 was not to load a computer module as we were told - and shown. Instead, special photo reconnaissance equipment was installed in the rear deck of the crew compartment. It was arranged to look out of the two overhead windows. The * Enterprise * was unable to carry a spy satellite in its cargo bay as mentioned earlier, so instead the * Enterprise * itself was turned into a spy satellite.

The makeshift spy apparatus installed in the crew compartment rear deck was not as good as that of a regular spy satellite, but the military planners were desperate. By the way, you can fool your friends quite easily but you can rarely fool your enemy for they are watching most closely and the Russians knew, moment by moment, what was happening.

It would soon be four years since Russia finished destroying all of the American spy satellites with her fleet of Killer Satellites. The military Shuttle team was hoping to use "surprise" in order to get at least a little bit of reconnaissance over Russia. It was hoped that the Russians would consider the *Enterprise* to be no threat since it could not carry anything in its cargo bay.

NASA, also, did everything it could to convince the Russians that a non-threatening orbit would be used. Finally, the launch time was shifted by about 2-1/2 hours on the morning of November 12th. That was intended to make it harder for the Russian Cosmos INTERCEPTORS to readjust their orbits to attack the * Enterprise. *

The last item reflects a deadly intelligence error made by the United States military Shuttle team. They knew about Russia 's orbital cosmos interceptors, the Killer Satellites. They also knew about the first generation Cosmospheres, Russia's Levitating Weapons Platforms. Both were first deployed some four years prior. The American planners knew that the Space Shuttle COULD probably outrun the "first-generation" Cosmospheres, therefore they believed that the orbiting cosmos interceptors were the main threat to the Shuttle.

WHAT THEY DID NOT KNOW - BUT DID SUSPECT - WAS THAT RUSSIA HAD DEVELOPED AND DEPLOYED A SMALL FLEET OF SEMI-EXPERIMENTAL SECOND GENERATION COSMOSPHERES. In April there had been seven in operation - by November there were at least eight or nine. The new Cosmospheres were called "Super Heavies, or "Jumbos," and could outrun and outlift anything America had, including the Shuttle. The Russians even gave NASA pointed information about them as far back as the April launch.

There were some in America 's intelligence community who correctly interpreted what happened and informed the planners. But the American Bolsheviks who controlled America 's military space program were refusing to accept it. They were explaining away the fragments of intelligence about the new Russian Jumbo Cosmospheres and thereby guaranteeing their own failure.

When the * Enterprise * took off there were no human pilots aboard. It was a known suicide mission. The * Enterprise * followed an evasive, curving launch, just as the * Columbia * had done in April. It headed toward the north which would indicate a near polar orbit. When it passed over Russia the * Enterprise * was to be upside down with its spy camera staring downward through the crew compartment windows.

Five nice bit fat Jumbo Cosmospheres were right on hand and kept pace along with quite a good number of "alien" craft, as it climbed toward orbit. Moscow was instantly notified of the course it was taking - but the Russians were told not to fire on the Shuttle. Instead the Russian Ballistic Missile Defense Forces were alerted. The Russians knew war was coming and the decided to use the approach of the Shuttle as a good test drill.

PROTECTION SYSTEMS

It had been known for two years that Russia had been preparing to deploy a new anti-ballistic missile system and underground shelter systems were improved and renovated along with new shelters being installed and totally updated for the population security. Our government did nothing for us good tax-paying citizens. The new missile system was based on charged particle beam weapons fired from modified supersonic TU-144s Jet Transports. On November 12 a squadron of TU-144s were scrambled to intercept and shoot down the * Enterprise. *

The Jumbo Cosmospheres continued pacing the Shuttle from a distance as a backup if the TU-144s should fail - but they, of course, did not fail. THE * ENTERPRISE * SWEPT DOWNWARD FROM THE NORTH ACROSS THEIR STRATEGIC KOLA PENINSULA. AS IT CROSSED OVER THE WHITE SEA THE BIG JETS BEGAN FIRING UPWARD WITH THEIR BEAM WEAPONS AT THE SHUTTLE FAR ABOVE. THE THIRD BEAM BLAST TORE THROUGH THE MID-SECTION OF THE SHUTTLE AND IT BROKE IN HALF JUST BEHIND THE CREW COMPARTMENT AND DISINTEGRATED.

NASA went ahead with its made-for-television space movies and followed the preplanned script for a shortened mission. They knew within the hour after launch that the * Enterprise * had been destroyed. Having learned about Russia 's plans, in April, to create an international incident with the crashed Shuttle, they wanted to complete the flight, in the world's eyes, quickly.

The Shuttle landing at Edwards Air Force Base, California, on November 14th was a replay of the Shuttle we saw the previous April. Literally, those long distance telephoto shots of the Shuttle swooping in from the stratosphere were the very same ones that were shown in April. NASA merely fed videotapes of the long distance scenes from April to the networks and added a fresh narrative to them. The only part of the landing that was live in November was the terminal portion which could be seen from the ground.

The Shuttle we were shown landing was one of the new Shuttles from White Sands. It had been carried aloft by the launch aircraft, boosted to a modest speed and altitude by a pair of solid fuel booster rockets - enough to produce sonic resonance, and then it swooped down to the delight of the attending crowd.

Since we all witnessed how well that second Shuttle worked out the next launch was already set for March, just three months from that perfect landing. It was planned to launch the third Shuttle right on schedule. Well, * Enterprise * would no longer be an embarrassing problem to NASA.

We now had a new Shuttle, the third we were shown with " Columbia " on it and it awaited at Cape Canaveral. Its cargo bay awaited a NEW secret military pay load. That particular Shuttle had really been modified and ARMED FOR BATTLE in space. Our idiot Bolshevik military planners continued and still continue to refuse to understand what they are really up against - and thusly, another tragedy was already in the final stages of being made.

OVERVIEW OF WORLD EVENTS

To give an overview of the world events coincidental to the Shuttle launches, we need to go back to the attempted assassination of Reagan, March 30. That news flashed myriads of questions around the world instantly as old concerns were triggered. Would some other country try to take advantage in some way? Most of all, would Russia decide to invade Poland ? At that time headlines were telling us that an invasion might be imminent. As it turned out then, our worries about that were unfounded but we had no way to know.

Instead of "invading," the Russians were in the process of cooling down the latest "Solidarity" labor crisis. Likewise, other nations around the world generally acted with restraint following news of the shooting and literally, without much surprise or reaction, for the planners know the plans. That is, all except one - the lone exception was ISRAEL ! You may want to look closely at the next bits of information and see what you can discern.

ISRAEL

The timing could not have been more precise, *if it had been planned in advance.* As the first shocking bulletins of the shooting flashed across America , Israeli war planes were starting their engines. As White House spokesmen were gathering to brief the press, ISRAELI FIGHTER BOMBERS WERE GATHERING OVER LEBANON.

Through that afternoon and evening Americans huddled around their television sets for the latest word from George Washington University Hospital, completely transfixed on the happenings of our own day and totally distracted from anything else which might be occurring in the world.

Meanwhile, Lebanese villagers were huddling in basements and bombed-out shelters as Israeli missiles and bombs exploded all around them. On the BBS World Service and other short-wave radio news reports around the world, the sudden new Israeli raids on Lebanon that day were very big news indeed. But not so in America.

News of the presidential shooting and its aftermath drowned out everything else just exactly as it was supposed to do and you will never be told what REALLY happened with that shooting incident - but it didn't go exactly or precisely as planned but it did its job - after all, we ALL saw it, didn't we?

It was not until Syrian troops began making moves in response to the Israeli raids that Lebanon began to enter our consciousness in America. Day by day, the Israelis and Syrians lashed out at one another more and more, directly and through surrogates in Lebanon.

On April 28, Israeli jets shot down two Syrian helicopters over Lebanon. It was tremendous news overseas, but in the U.S. it was completely ignored in favor of an all-networks coverage of the President's speech to Congress the same evening. It was not until the following day, April 29, that the Lebanon crisis received billing in the American controlled major media.

MIDDLE EAST CRISIS

The Syrians had moved Russian SAM-6 anti-aircraft missiles into the Beka Valley of Lebanon. This was Syria 's answer to Israel 's shooting down of two of her helicopters the day prior over Zahle. Thus, the Middle East missile crisis was born.

END OF PART 7.

PART 8:

U.S. - JAPAN FEUD

Another looming crisis was the growing FEUD between the U.S. and Japan. It seemed as if Washington couldn't do anything right toward the Japanese. On the morning of April 10, 1981, the first attempt to launch the Space Shuttle * Columbia * took place at Cape Canaveral. It ended in failure due to a computer problem, but it was the top story that day in America. It all but buried the news story that was tops that day in Japan.

The prior day, an American submarine had sunk a small Japanese freighter, supposedly by ramming it. Then the submarine had left the scene without making any attempt to rescue survivors. Worse yet, because the U.S. had not even admitted the incident to Japanese authorities until some 36 hours after the incident, the episode raised more and more questions in Japanese minds.

NAVY HAS DIFFERENT STORY - AS USUAL

The U.S. Navy issued a report about it which differs drastically from the testimony of the 13 Japanese survivors. The Navy report even put the location of the collision 3-1/2 miles away from where it actually happened. The Japanese wanted to know WHY!

The Japanese began demanding answers to that and many other puzzling questions about the incident. The supposedly "accidental" sinking of the Japanese freighter was only the opening gun in the Washington-Tokyo feud.

One shock after another from America rocked Japan. American naval vessels sailed through Japanese fishing fleets, cutting fishing nets to ribbons. Suddenly, there were revelations that American ships with nuclear weapons aboard were using Japanese ports regularly, in secret.

Secretary of State Haig canceled a visit to Japan. Even the visit of Prime Minister Suzuki to Washington recently had backfired on him. He agreed to language in a joint communique that led to accusations in Japan that Suzuki was making a secret military alliance with the United States. The irony of it all was that Suzuki's troubles were due to the fact that he was resisting any such military alliance.

The facts, of course, were that an attempt was being made to pressure the Japanese because of the massive amounts of counterfeit money from South America and the Antarctic. In addition, the Bolsheviks in the U.S. wanted Japan to re-arm, to become the policemen of the Western Pacific. Suzuki's predecessor, Prime Minister Ohira, was ready to go along with America 's Bolsheviks despite stern warnings from Russia not to.

Then, surprise of surprises, Ohira died suddenly and Suzuki replaced him. Suzuki didn't want to re-arm Japan , and so America 's Bolsheviks wanted him out of office. Japan had endured all kinds of shocks in those particular months, but they all had one common denominator: they all involved loss of face for Japan as a whole and especially for Prime

Minister Suzuki, and that is most painful for such an Oriental people.

In Asia , loss of face is a very, very serious matter. By using it as a political weapon, America 's Bolsheviks believed they could bring down the Suzuki government. Whoever would follow Suzuki would have to talk "peace" for domestic consumption, but he wold have to prepare for war if he was to get along with Washington.

OTHER PLACES

Elsewhere in Asia , Red China and Vietnam had recently engaged in very heavy border fighting with many casualties. Meanwhile, the so-called Reagan Administration was preparing to declare openly that it would sell America 's most sophisticated weapons to Red China. Might you agree that the cancer eating away at America had caused total insanity? Do you think it has improved in the years since? Well, it surely has gotten far worse. You have no idea what kind of a decade the 1980s really was.

In Europe , too, there was turmoil at the hands of Bolshevik agents. The government of Italy had just been brought down in a tremendous scandal involving a massive conspiracy of many of the country's leading citizens. In West Germany , Chancellor Helmut Schmidt was under fire from forces who wanted to undo the balance he had struck between East and West.

And in France the Bolsheviks won a tremendous victory in the election. Until then, France had enjoyed a special relationship with Russia as well as with the West. The relationship was one of trust built up laboriously beginning with the former President Charles de Gaulle; but the new French President, Mitterrand, was working as fast as possible to change that. Mitterrand would try to bring France into the anti-Russian camp, headed by the American Bolsheviks. Note his current presence at every open meeting and secret meeting and put your own puzzle pieces in place.

At the time, crises large and small were multiplying and compounding all around us, and by and large they were not accidental. They were part and parcel of the deliberate war build-up strategy of the Bolsheviks in America. By turning the world into a cauldron of crises, they were setting the stage for NUCLEAR WAR NO. ONE. The entire world was filled with unrest just like the uneasy Balkans just prior to World War I. Has the confusion lessened?

World War I was set off, seemingly by accident, by the assassination of Archduke Ferdinand of Austria by terrorists.

When the Space Shuttle * Columbia * took off on its ill-fated flight on April 12, 1981, a fleet of special airplanes were aloft to help track it. The U.S. was depending heavily on its fleet of advanced range-instrumentation aircraft. These were flying radar and communications stations known as "Froop Snoots" for their huge bulbous nose.

This special airplane was a modified military Boeing 707, designated *EC-135N.* When they were not involved in space shots, the *EC-135Ns* also have many other uses, including the tracking of Russian satellites. There were only a few of these *EC-135ns,* so they were all very important. When the Space Shuttle * Columbia * took off in April, there were only eight of them.

The Space Shuttle Program was an indispensable key to the underway war plans of the Bolsheviks, and the *EC-135Ns* were crucial to the Shuttle Program. On May 6, 1981, an *EC-135N,* nicknamed the *"Boss Hog,"* took off from its base in Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio. It headed east on what was to be a routine training flight. As the modified 707 flew eastward, it was heading for an unexpected rendezvous.

Hovering high over the rolling hills of western Maryland, a lone Cosmosphere was waiting for the *Boss Hog.* At 10:51 A.M. Eastern Time the pilot of the jet radioed the words "Flight level 29" to controllers on the ground. The plane was at 29,000 feet.

Moments later the Cosmosphere fired its Charged Particle Beam weapon downward at the jet plane passing miles below it. The beam blasted a hole through the top of the fuselage and another out through the bottom. Explosive decompression emptied the cabin of its air. The blast also set off a secondary explosion, turning the jet into a ball of flames.

At the same time control cables through the tail were destroyed, and the jet turned violently nose down. Instead of gliding to a crash many miles away, the ruined airplane dropped like a rock, almost straight down.

Radar traffic controllers were startled to see the plane disappear suddenly from their screens, but it was all documented. It was all over before they even knew anything had happened, however.

On the ground, eyewitnesses heard a boom-boom-boom, and moments later a giant ball of fire came screaming downward out of the clouds. For at least ten minutes small pieces of debris from the plane kept settling earthward for miles around.

In any air disaster as violent as that one, the investigation usually extends over a period of months - but not this one. On Friday May 29, just over three weeks after the crash, the Air Force quietly announced that its investigation was already over and there had been "some type of pilot error" doing something to the whatchit which engaged the wrong whichit and poo! The Air Force knew what had blown their radar plane out of the air, but they also declared that "for the time being the results would not be made public."

While the Air Force was still reeling from the crash of the valuable *EC-135N,* it became the Navy's turn to have some fun. Is any of this beginning to allow you to piece together what "probably" happened to all those naval excursions? How about gun turret blow-outs, etc.?

The particle beams ARE SO EXACTING THAT THEY CAN BE SHOT RIGHT INTO A JET TURBINE - IN FLIGHT. Once again Russia 's target was a highly sophisticated electronic warfare jet. The plane involved was an EA-6B Prowler based on the nuclear supercarrier, *USS Nimitz.*

On the night of Tuesday, May 26 (1981) the *Nimitz* was engaged in night-landing exercises just off the East Coast. Carrier landings are always dangerous, and night landings especially so; but the EA-6B has a special advantage. It is equipped with an Automatic Carrier Landing System to permit safe landings even in conditions of zero visibility.

Partly as a result, the Prowlers are known as some of the safest of all carrier aircraft; but on the night of May 26 one of Russia 's new Jumbo Cosmospheres was hovering high above the *Nimitz.* It was one of the two which are armed with a Neutron Particle Beam Weapon.

As the EA-6B approached the *Nimitz* to land, the Cosmosphere waited. At a critical moment of the final approach, the Cosmosphere fired. The invisible neutron beam instantly killed the crew of three and temporarily deranged the airplane's electronic systems.

Being suddenly without guidance, the jet veered to the right and crashed into a deck full of airplanes. The toll: 14 dead, 48 injured, and 20 aircraft destroyed or damaged. It was the Navy's worst flight-deck disaster since the early 1950s.

U.S. TAUNTS RUSSIA

During those times there was a lot of hocus pocus about "national security." What did that mean? Could there be any such thing as National Security without National Survival?

Funny thing - our leaders kept telling us that the threat to our security was Russia. Then, while we were not looking, they turned right around and TAUNTED THE RUSSIANS. Here is an example.

The supercarrier *Nimitz* entered port only very briefly after the fiery crash of the EA-6B. It entered port on May 28 and left again just two days later, May 30. The official story was that it was heading for the Caribbean for continued exercises.

The *Nimitz,* however, was ordered to the north, not to the south. In a drastic departure from normal procedure, an American carrier group was ordered into the Norwegian and Barents Seas , right on the doorstep of Russia. The deployment was expected to be brief, but it was indeed most dangerous to say the very least. It was in insane act of bravado by the American Bolsheviks, like walking up to a bully and throwing salt into an open wound.

The Russians had had their day and felt no need to push their advantage but undoubtedly there would come a time when the push would go too far.

LIES: BIG THEN AND BIG NOW

The lie of National Security was as big a lie then as it is now. The more we pretend to spend on National Security the less security we can achieve. Those who secretly control America 's destiny (and thus the world) cannot stand the truth and this is why only the truth can begin to loosen our bonds.

There was so much going on at this time that I do not have time to even begin to mention is all, in Iran , Central America, Israel, etc. In January, 1982, Russia renewed geophysical warfare involving weather modification and artificial earthquakes - something which is going on now more than ever. Parts of Canada suffered such extreme blizzard conditions that a "National Emergency" was declared.

For over four years Russian electrogravitic weapons platforms called Cosmospheres had been hovering high over the U.S. They first announced their presence by creating giant air booms along the coasts. Their number continued to multiply and they patrolled continuously over all types of American strategic target areas.

Our American Bolshevik planners planned to shoot down as many Cosmospheres as possible using high-power lasers, when war came. Until late 1981, it was all but impossible for us to even detect the presence of the Cosmospheres floating overhead.

They were invisible to normal radar, except at very close range, but by late 1981 one crash weapons program had come up with a system that could sometimes detect the spheres and allow laser aiming. The new technique was called "Computer-Enhanced Infrared." It was an extremely sensitive means of detecting the heat radiation given off by Cosmospheres. It was recognized by the acronym CEIR (pronounced seer).

On the evening of January 12, 1982, a complete operational test was carried out against a Cosmosphere which was patrolling high over central New Jersey. CEIR was used to aim a ground-based high-power laser at the Cosmosphere, then the laser was fired. A section of the Cosmosphere erupted into blue-green flames.

As the flames started to spread, the crew accelerated the Cosmosphere toward the coast because all Cosmospheres are under very strict orders to make certain that their craft NEVER fall into non-Russian hands, and they were making for the sea post haste. The stricken Cosmosphere, trailing blue-green flames, was seen over a very large area of eastern Pennsylvania and central New Jersey.

It had been hovering at an altitude of more than 40 miles, but it came down fast. Its semi-rigid shell started crumpling. It passed over Atlantic City at low altitude and plunged into the water just a few miles off shore. Many witnesses watched as the remains of the Cosmosphere burned, floating on the surface of the water for some ten minutes. The whole incident created a sensation in the local region, but official Government spokesmen treated it all as a usual non-event!

The first downing of a Cosmosphere created shock waves in the Kremlin. It was decided very quickly that a clear message would be sent to the Pentagon that they would pay dearly if the incident should be repeated.

The Russians knew that a laser had shot down their Cosmosphere so the very next day (January 13) an Air Florida

Boeing 737 jetliner Flight 90 with laser warfare specialists aboard was caused to crash in Washington D.C. The plane crashed into a crowded bridge, broke into pieces, and sank into the river moments after takeoff from National Airport during a snowstorm. The crash claimed the life of 74 of the 79 persons on the plane and 4 others in vehicles on the bridge. Perhaps you remember seeing some of the rescue attempts.

Isn't war fun?

FOLLOW-ON CRASHES

Then followed a string of crashed and near-crashes - all of them supposedly unexplainable. All four Air Force Thunderbird demonstration jets were made to crash. A Boeing 737 in California dropped far below its flight path, seemingly without cause, and narrowly missed disaster as it clipped some power lines.

And strangest of all, a Japan Air Lines DC-8 crashed into Tokyo Bay on February 9th during the final moments of its landing approach. It was a perfect flying day, clear and sunny. The DC-8 was only 1000 yards from touchdown, flying in a gentle glide. There were no mechanical problems.

Suddenly, the pilot acted as if he were dazed. Reportedly he reached over and reversed thrust on two of the four jet engines. The big jet nosed downward; it smashed into light stanchions marking the approach path and crashed into the shallow water; 24 persons were killed and some 150 others were injured.

Later, in the hospital, the pilot said he had blacked out. The co-pilot reportedly said he, too, suddenly felt woozy, but fought it and remained conscious.

Suddenly there was a release of information regarding UFOs and cover-ups of alien visitors and thus and so.

NEUTRON BEAMS

Neutron beams disrupt electronic instruments and also the mental and nervous systems of people. The Russians were saying to the American Bolshevik Pentagon in effect: "If you shoot down any more Cosmospheres, there would be no place to hide."

In February of 1982, there were three main Power Factions struggling to become king-of-the-hill. One faction was that of the Rockefeller cartel - the multinational complex of Big Oil, Big Banking, and Big Business.

Another faction was the Bolshevik-Zionist Axis with headquarters shared between New York City and Jerusalem.

The third faction was that of the NEW rulers of Russia who had expelled most of the Bolsheviks formerly in power there.

ROCKEFELLER-RUSSIAN CARTEL

A new operational relationship was in the works between Russia 's new ruler and the Rockefeller cartel. The arrangement, however fell far short of the prior closeness.

The new arrangement was one of, basically an agreement not to damage one another as a matter of deliberate policy. The prime objective was to free both of them (the Russians and the Rockefeller cartel) to deal with their now mutual enemy, the American Bolsheviks who had infiltrated key policy-making government positions in Washington.

The main area in which the Rockefeller cartel could be helpful to the Russians was in the economic sphere. The American Bolshevik-dominated foreign policy in the U.S. was a policy of economic starvation against Russia and her satellites. The Rockefeller cartel was in a position to partially blunt those policies by cooperating with Russia in the

East-West trade.

American Bolshevik economic warfare against the Soviet bloc was most apparent right then in the plight of Poland. The American Bolsheviks were finally succeeding in using the Solidarity Labor Union to push Poland into martial law. Martial Law was being used as an excuse to make the Polish people suffer even more at America 's hands. A thinly disguised food embargo was in place by the U.S. against Poland. Even chicken feed was being held back in order to create disaster for Poland 's own chicken farms. Everything possible was being done to drive the Polish people to such desperation that open revolt would erupt.

The collapse of Poland posed a military threat to Russia and was an economic drain as well. Russia 's new rulers were working with an unwieldy, centralized economy left behind by the expelled Bolsheviks. It could not be changed overnight so the Russians were vulnerable to economic warfare. In order to avoid economic disaster, the Russians were pushing hard for new ways to raise hard Western currency. One such move was a major coup in U.S. Treasury securities but, for the long term, the Russians wanted to establish more stable and mutually beneficial economic ties with the West.

SIBERIAN GAS PIPELINE

The centerpiece of Russia 's economic drive became the Siberian gas pipeline for Western Europe. It was a 25 billion dollar project, the biggest ever between the Soviet Union and the West. It would be completed in 1984.

The Bolsheviks were trying to completely stop the pipeline project, but the Rockefeller oil and business cartel was working diligently to assist the go-ahead of the project. In mid-February the U.S. Chamber of Commerce, a long-time Rockefeller public relations organ, went public about the pipeline. It called the Reagan embargo against pipeline equipment a strategy of economic warfare against Russia.

The "Joint Economic Committee" of Congress endorsed the pipeline project and in Europe , American multinational oil companies were lining up in support of the gas pipeline - all of them, that is, except one, Mobil Oil. Unlike the other members of the Rockefeller Big Oil cartel, Mobil Oil in West Germany had been publicly opposing the gas pipeline which, of course, was most interesting in itself.

To the Russians the gas pipeline was a matter of economic survival and, with all-out war on the horizon, the Kremlin had no patience with those who said one thing and did another. The Russians regarded Mobil's position against the pipeline as a double cross, in effect siding with the Bolsheviks in America. Russia 's rulers decided to give Mobil Oil strong reasons to rethink their position, and fast.

On Thursday, February 11, the Russian container ship, *Mekhanik Tarasov,* departed from a port in Quebec, Canada, bound for Leningrad. It headed northeast up the St. Lawrence River , then out through the Gulf of St. Lawrence into the Atlantic.

After skirting the south coast of Newfoundland, the *Tarasov* set course east by northeast. Its course was chosen to take it very close to the world's largest semisubmersible oil rig, passing it on the south. Guess what? - the rig was the *Ocean Ranger,* operated by none other than Mobil Oil. It was supposedly unsinkable - just like the *Titanic.*

The *Tarasov,* like many other Russian merchant ships, possessed a military capability that was not admitted. As it neared the giant oil rig in a mounting storm, it launched a homing torpedo with a low-yield nuclear warhead toward the rig.

Just before 1:00 A.M. Monday morning, February 15, the torpedo reached its target, one of the giant underwater pontoons. Nuclear explosions under water are far more confined than those in the air, and this one was well hidden by the hurricane-force winds and pounding waves. A hole was blasted in the pontoon, and the *Ocean Ranger* started settling toward the side.

The crew gave a trouble call by radio; half an hour later they reported that they were manning the lifeboats. But the Japanese-built *Ocean Ranger* was designed to be the world's most unsinkable oil rig! A corner of the upper platform dipped into the water and then stopped. The rig stayed afloat, listing at a crazy angle.

The roughnecks stopped boarding the lifeboats, hoping the boats would not be needed, after all. Then a Cosmosphere hovering above the rig took aim at the corner of the rig which had dipped into the water. A powerful blast from its charged particle beam weapon blew a hole in the partially submerged corner.

Immediately, the *Ocean Ranger* heeled over and sank. It went down so fast that it was too late for lifeboats to be launched successfully, and all hands were lost.

The freighter *Tarasov* continued on course after sinking the oil rig. The Russians expected that the freighter would be long gone before anyone figured out what had happened - but they miscalculated!

At around 2:00 P.M. that same afternoon, Monday, February 15th, an American attack submarine was closing in on the *Tarasov.* The sub fired a single torpedo at the *Tarasov,* hitting it broadside. Water surged in through a giant hole below the waterline, and the freighter started sinking.

Like the crew of the Cosmosphere that was shot down over New Jersey, the crew of the *Tarasov* had strict orders to protect the secrets of their ship, and so the Russian captain refused assistance from a nearby Danish freighter as his ship sank with its secrets.

Well, Mobil Oil certainly got the message and, just two days later, Mobil Oil shut down the other two oil rigs which had been nearby and towed them ashore.

I recommend you take a second look at all the "oil spill" accidents that have been happening.

END OF PART 8.

PART 9:

RUSSIAN COMMAND OF SPACE AND THE MOON

On February 5, 1982, Vice President Bush made himself conspicuous by a trip to Cape Canaveral Florida. He was photographed with astronauts inside the European-orbital science laboratory called "Space Lab." It was planned to place Space Lab into orbit by Space Shuttle in late 1983. Bush also announced that Space Shuttle flight No. 3 was scheduled for March 22, 1982. It was supposed to be a week in duration.

For public consumption, NASA spokesmen were continuing to pretend that the Shuttle was merely carrying out leisurely test flights. We were told that the Space Shuttle Program was basically a peaceful civilian program in spite of the all-military crews flying the Shuttles. But the peaceful image of the Space Shuttle Program was a total lie. The fact was that the Space Shuttle flights under way were a part of a crash, er, sorry about that, program by the U.S. to regain a military toe-hold in space.

The United States had been virtually locked out of the military use of space by the Russians since late 1977. Russia 's domination of space for those prior four years and longer had been highlighted by numerous manned space flights. Those included cosmonauts from nine countries other than Russia.

Meanwhile, the U.S. went more than five years without admitting to any manned space flight attempts. The Russian, long-duration space spectaculars in Earth orbit were sufficient to build Russia 's prestige in the public eye but the

Soviet Space Program involved more than was revealed publicly.

Since mid-October 1977, the Moon had been a Russian outpost. There were seven manned long-range particle beam installations on the near side and at least one large base on the far side. In the past, regular missions were flown to and from the Moon in order to resupply the bases and rotate crews, and slowly but surely, the Kremlin was inching its way toward breaking the news about its control of the Moon.

They were already beginning to drop hints about it as in the example of a publication circulated in the U.S. called *Soviet Life* in February, 1982. It stated: "Today spaceships shuttle between the Earth and the Moon with greater frequency than did the first voyages to the New World."

At the top of the page was a nighttime photo of a moonship ready to blast off from a Russian Cosmodrome. Below was a picture of the Earth as seen from space, and in between was a statement in bold type designed to give another hint about the moon flights which stated, "From a distance of 70,000 kilometers above the Earth, the planet looks peaceful and even defenseless. The common goal is to protect our blue and green home."

Friends, "satellites" are not used at altitudes of 70,000 kilometers. The highest orbit that is generally useful for Earth satellites is the geosynchronous orbit for stationary satellites over the equator. Seventy-thousand kilometers is almost twice that far from the Earth. The only time a spacecraft reaches that far from the Earth is when it is on its way to or from the Moon or another planet.

Russia 's interest in space extended far beyond military factors. The plans of Russia's new rulers were for the colonization of the solar system. Those plans were moving ahead steadily; in fact, at that time there were two Russian spacecraft approaching the planet Venus and sending back a steady stream of reports from the men aboard.

The Russians settled on Venus first, not Mars. It was the first target beyond the Moon for experimental colonization. Now do you better understand the inability of our government to allow a "Hubble Telescope" into space? The Russians first started landing unmanned craft on Venus in 1975! They learned some key facts that were yet unknown to the U.S. in 1982 when the Shuttle Program was starting up.

In 1978 the Russians began a series of increasing long-duration manned orbital space flights which were widely publicized. Those were gradually extended to six months and more to learn how well crews would stand up to interplanetary space travel. Late in 1981 those long-duration orbital flights were completed. The Russians had learned everything they really needed to know.

On October 30 and November 4, 1981, two Russian spaceships blasted off for Venus. Both ships were manned by Russian Cosmonauts, and both were prepared to land on Venus by early February (the first week) of 1982.

The comparison between the space program of the U.S. and Russia was a study in tragic ironies. Americans were being told that the Space Shuttle was primarily a civilian-oriented project, but it was actually military. We were being told that it was the world's first reusable spacecraft, but a Shuttle was actually being lost on every flight.

We were being told that the Space Shuttle had put us years ahead of Russia , but we had actually slipped years behind. We were often told that our Rulers wanted only peaceful activities in space, but they were shutting down almost all of the entire civilian scientific space program. Funding was continuing for one or two peaceful projects which were too visible to cancel without an uproar, such as the space telescope. The follow-up on projects to explore the solar system were being lopped off and discarded because they contributed nothing to our leaders' plans for war.

We were told that the Russians had nothing but war and conquest on their minds; but it was the Russians, not the Americans, who at that moment had two teams of spacemen ready to land on Venus. They were going there for reasons which had nothing to do with war.

The Russians were exploring the land of Venus. They were going there to explore the solar system simply because it was "out there." Russia's new rulers believed that it was man's destiny to move into space. The urge to explore that motivated their Viking ancestors of old was alive and well in the Russian Space Program. The only real prayer of equality for the U.S. was to somehow bring Russia to her knees economically and hence the orchestrated civil wars.

I know you will find this hard or impossible to believe. It is time for the truth to come forth. Why don't you try to prove me WRONG? Or better still, why don't you decide to seriously find out for yourself what is going on?

You might try reading *SOMEBODY ELSE IS ON THE MOON* by George Leonard, Little, Brown & Co. *Publishers Weekly* said of the book, "Leonard has been clued by a pseudonymous ex-NASA scientist (his book's *Deep Throat*), and his photos from the 'haunted photo tub of NASA,' are truly mind-boggling when one begins to see what he sees: immense 'rigs' apparently 'mining' the moon; strange 'geometricities,' markings, symbols; lights, evidences of change and movement."

Or obtain Richard Hoagland's tapes and books such as Hoagland's *Mars, Vol. 3, The Moon-Mars Connection* (...our latest findings on the Moon").

On February 16, 1982, the Space Shuttle was moved out to the launch pad at Cape Canaveral , five days ahead of schedule. This would be America 's third Shuttle that was being used. The first, of course, was the real * Columbia * and was destroyed in the prior April. It was replaced by the training Shuttle * Enterprise * which landed at Edwards Air Force Base and was taken to Florida. The * Enterprise * flight in the previous November was simply a stop-gap measure while a third Shuttle could be extensively modified.

The new Shuttle at Cape Canaveral was one of the three secret Shuttles from White Sands. It had undergone extensive modification since the first Shuttle disaster ten months prior. It looked the same as the original * Columbia ,* at least from a distance, but the Shuttle was actually far, far different.

The Shuttle sitting on the pad was armed "to the teeth" for battle. The basic mission of the third Shuttle was the same as that of the first Shuttle's almost a year earlier. Its payload was a heavily armored laser-firing robot battle station designed for space reconnaissance over Russia. Russian space weapons finished destroying all of America 's Spy Satellites nearly four years prior.

That meant America 's war planners would be shooting almost blind at Russia if they began a war without somehow acquiring new reconnaissance date. The Space Shuttle was trying to solve that problem by getting a new hardened satellite into orbit. That was what the Space Shuttle flights were all about - attempts at reconnaissance so that nuclear war could be launched.

After each Shuttle would take off from Florida it followed a long, swooping curved launch into the north in order to immediately fly over Russia. The American Bolshevik military planners believed that if they could once get their new superspy satellite into orbit, it would do the job. They were confident that it could survive any attacks by Russian space weapons long enough to radio back large amounts of reconnaissance data and once they had that information, the Pentagon would be ready to take America to war.

In the spring of 1981, the * Columbia * was destroyed before the Spy Satellite could be deployed. Likewise, the makeshift * Enterprise * mission in November 1981 was a failure, but the military Shuttle planners believed it would be a different story with their Shuttle No. 3 preparing for launch.

In the cargo bay of this Shuttle there was a new robot reconnaissance battle station like the one previously described. There was also an additional laser mounted in the forward end of the cargo bay just behind the crew compartment. It was a hydrogen fluoride gas dynamic laser mounted vertically, aimed upward. It was equipped with a swiveling head consisting of mirrors that could aim the beam around a wide range of angles. The hydrogen fluoride laser in the cargo bay was intended mainly to protect the Shuttle while it climbed toward orbit.

The * Columbia * had come under fire shortly prior to reaching orbit. Intelligence analysts in the U.S. had eventually obtained enough information about what happened to decide on installing the cargo bay laser.

As a Shuttle climbs, the air grows thinner and thinner, dwindling to almost nothing long before rocket engines shut off. At the earliest possible moment, the modified cargo bay doors which had no hinges on the third Shuttle, would be blown off by special explosives. As the cargo bay doors would flutter away from the Shuttle, it would leave the upper half of the bay open. The cargo bay laser would be ready to fire from that moment onward. It was equipped with the same system called CEIR as previously described.

Since a laser thusly equipped successfully shot down a Cosmosphere in January (1982), the Shuttle planners believed the Shuttle would reach orbit safely. Once in orbit planners believed that the main threats to the Shuttle would be Russia 's orbiting Cosmos Interceptors. Those manned killer satellites were responsible for sweeping the skies clear of American Spy Satellites. In order to deal with that threat, there were truly radical modifications to the third Shuttle.

Whenever the space Shuttle was discussed, it was always emphasized that Shuttle astronauts could work in their shirt sleeves - no need for space suits because riding in a Shuttle was almost like riding in an airliner. Not so this time.

When Col. Jack Lousma and Col. C. Gordon Fullerton would lift off in this Shuttle, they would be in spacesuits. What's more, they would be depending on their spacesuits because their crew cabin would not be pressurized. The whole lower front portion of their ship below the flight deck had been turned into a weapons bay. As soon as the Shuttle would reach orbit, the nose would open up to the vacuum of space, the nose would fold downward and back, somewhat like certain cargo aircraft whose noses fold upward to load and unload.

As soon as the nose opened up, a complex laser system would emerge. The system had five tubular sections aimed up, down, to each side, and straight ahead. Each laser tube had a swiveling mirrorhead for beam aiming like that of the cargo bay laser mentioned earlier. Once deployed, the Nose Laser System would be able to fire in almost any direction, the only exception would be a narrow corridor to the rear of the Shuttle.

The Nose Laser System was described as a nuclear punt helium plasma laser with five resonators. The nuclear power pack could fire any one of the five laser tubes at a given time. It was not so powerful as the cargo bay laser but, unlike the cargo bay laser, the Nose Laser System could operate for a long time on an intermittent basis and the Shuttle planners believed it would be powerful enough to disable the manned Russian killer Satellites.

Under the protection of the Nose Laser System, Lousma and Fullerton were to deploy the robot Spy Satellite. As soon as it was deployed, they were to return to Earth in a small Gemini-type re-entry capsule. That part of the plan was the same as previously pointed out for the first flight. Meanwhile, the Shuttle would remain in orbit.

The Nose Laser System was programmed to keep right on zapping any Russian Cosmos Interceptors that would come within range. It would continue doing so until it would be destroyed or the nuclear laser ran down, which could be a very long time. It would constitute a very dangerous nuisance in space, and the Russians would have little choice but to destroy it. The American Bolsheviks hoped the Russians would lost a lot of spaceships and men before they succeeded in doing so.

NUCLEAR WAR NUMBER ONE

If the military Shuttle planners were right in their calculation, the third Shuttle mission could turn into a battle royal in space. If they were wrong, they planned to try again. The fourth Shuttle mission was already scheduled for the Fourth of July. After that, no matter what happened with the Space Shuttle, they were planning to go ahead anyway in setting off Nuclear War Number One.

During the holiday season of 1981 from around Thanksgiving into 1982, Three major crises had besieged us. First, there were stories about the alleged Libyan "hit men" bent on assassinating top leaders of the U.S. Government; secondly, there was the military crackdown in Poland ; and thirdly, as soon as world eyes were riveted on Poland , came ISRAEL 'S ILLEGAL ANNEXATION of the Syrian Golan Heights.

On the surface these three crises might appear to have been unrelated, but they were all closely related indeed, and were certainly not what they appeared to be. Each was a consequence of the complex secret war plan for the joint military junta of the United States and Israel !

Ever since early spring of the year 1981 this war plan was reported to us, the public, but the big cover-up would sweep over us and it would be buried for no one would listen AND THE BRINGERS OF TRUTH WERE INCARCERATED, PUT UP FOR RIDICULE OR SIMPLY KILLED AND NONE OF THE CITIZENS SEEMED TO NOTICE - WORSE, WE DIDN'T CARE IN THE LEAST TO GET RID OF THOSE "WARMONGERS."

The conflicts were intended to gradually escalate until the time would be ripe. Then an American nuclear first strike would be launched against Russia. Nuclear war would break out in such a way that it would appear to be accidental. America 's nuclear forces would not realize that they were firing the first shots of nuclear war. Instead, they would be given false information that would trigger all-out retaliation against a non-existent Russian attack!

The prelude to all-out nuclear war was planned to include war in the Middle East. In the joint war plan of the American Bolsheviks and the Israeli military planners, the Middle East war was the responsibility of Israel. This was making Israel the eye of a growing hurricane of violence.

The crises continued to expand and grow outward without seeming control. Close to Israel , the top priority was to do everything possible to destroy the Camp David Peace Accords, so called. That is why President Sadat of Egypt was assassinated a few weeks prior (Oct. 6).

By early December we were being told that a group of three to six "hit men" were thought to be in the United States. It was claimed that they were gunning for the President and several other top Government officials. The U.S. shot down two Libyan jets and killed a child of Khadafy, trying to program him to behave like a madman. These plans were well laid to try to create situations to push us closer to nuclear war.

The old Bolsheviks from Russia who had gained control of America 's military policies had been trying to trigger revolution in Poland. They first attempted to do so by subverting the Roman Catholic Church and already turmoil was stewing in the Vatican. About three years earlier an attempt was made to turn the Catholic Church strongly anti-Russian in its policies. On September 28, 1978, thirty-three days after his election, the newly-elected pope, John Paul II, was murdered by poisoning and yet we are told he died in his sleep.

In my February, 1979, issue of *Doomsday Club News & Intelligence Report* newsletter, I said that there was evidence that Pope John Paul I had been murdered and that the Pope who took his place was a KGB agent! Malachi Martin wrote a popular book about the new Pope, *THE KEYS OF THIS BLOOD,* but what you did not know was that Martin was a Jew using a fake name, and THE NEW POPE WAS NOT WHAT HE SEEMED TO BE, EITHER! A book called *IN GOD'S NAME* by David Yallop came out in 1984 with proof of the murder of the previous Pope, and Lawrence Patterson in his newsletter revealed the Jew hoaxer using the name Malachi Martin.

For those of you who still have a copy of my newsletter, why don't you check up on me: On page 6 of the February 1979 issue I said, "The present Pope (Pope John Paul II) will not last very long. I will go on record and emphasize it - *THE PRESENT POPE WILL LAST PROBABLY LESS THAN FIVE TO SEVEN YEARS"* (emphasis copied). Ah, I goofed, you will say, because he is still there. But let me quote from a book called *BLOOD AND ASHES,* a Phoenix Journal, which on page 133 says: "The Bolsheviks within the Vatican who engineered his election wanted only his potentially anti-Russian image, not the man himself and so he, too, WAS DONE AWAY WITH BY POISONING AND REPLACED BY A 'DOUBLE' ON NOVEMBER 21, 1978. THE NEW 'ACTOR POPE' THEN BEGAN ISSUING A STEADY STREAM OF STIFF STATEMENTS AGAINST ALLEGED RUSSIAN REPRESSION OF POLAND.

"The American Bolsheviks fully planned to use their power in the Vatican to set off what would be known as the 'Pope's Revolution' in Poland... Russian Intelligence was able to replace the Bolshevik actor Pope with their own 'double'."

Yallop, in his book on page 301, says: "Many millions of words have been written since the election of Karol Wojtyla in attempts to analyze and understand what kind of man he is. As can be seen, he is the kind of man who could allow men like Villot, Cody, Marcinkus, Mennini, de Strobel, de Bonis, and Poletti to remain in office. There can be no defense on the grounds of ignorance. Marcinkus is directly answerable to the Pope, and it is inconceivable that the Pope could be unaware of the degree of guilt that clings to Marcinkus." Marcinkus, my friends, was a member of the Jewish Mafia in Cicero Illinois who eventually gained control of the Vatican 's BILLIONS (that's dollars) (see book by that name, for instance) and killed the previous pope. Don't you just love religion and preachers?

END OF PART 9.

PART 10:

THE FAKE POPE

The fake pope was scheduled to visit Poland to set off a revolution, but Russian Intelligence was able to stop it. Having had their Vatican intrigue spoiled for the moment, the Bolshevik planners in American started down a different route.

Their agents within Poland started agitation for an independent labor union to be known as Solidarity. Solidarity was created solely for the purpose of making conditions steadily worse in Poland until an unavoidable confrontation would be created with the government. Eventually they were successful and martial law was declared.

The news of martial law in Poland reached the West early Sunday, December 13th (1981). The very next day the Begin government in Israel launched the third Christmas crisis. On that day the Israeli government announced its surprise decision to annex the Golan Heights.

The Golan Heights is along the northeast corner of Israel 's border with Syria , and is Syrian territory. They have been occupied by Israeli troops ever since the 1967 war and then by Israeli civilian settlements, but under every rule of international law the Golan Heights belongs to Syria.

As always, the Begin government defended its actions in arrogantly self-righteous terms as it made a mockery of the rule of law!

World-wide, the reaction was universal condemnation of Israel , and within Israel itself there was also bitter criticism. The U.S. was in a most difficult position of what face to show publicly. Time slipped by while urgent secret decisions were made about how to handle the situation publicly.

Then, on December 18, the United States half-heartedly announced that it would suspend "indefinitely" the allegedly new strategic cooperation agreement with Israel. In response Israel canceled altogether the new agreement with America.

BY MUTUAL AGREEMENT BEHIND CLOSED DOORS, THE U.S. AND ISRAEL STRUCK AN ARM'S-LENGTH POSE FOR PUBLIC CONSUMPTION. This was specifically for the purpose of freeing Israel 's hands to act without restraint later on.

Israel Prime Minister Rabin summed it up with the words, quote: "Annexing the Golan Heights is the beginning of the end of ' Camp David '."

Well, at that time all the plans of the American Bolsheviks and the Zionists in Israel were still on track. They were shooting for Middle East war to break out before the end of the summer of 1982. From there, step by step, they planned to make the conflict escalate with other crises continuing to multiply world-wide.

On July 6, 1982 the "ISRAELI" government announced that American troops would be sent to Lebanon , if necessary. Hours later, Reagan announced that, "Yes, in principle, he was prepared to send in the Marines as part of a 'truce agreement'."

DIRTY POOL

For public consumption, assurances were given that this would be done under certain comforting conditions. Supposedly, if the Marines are sent in it will only be temporary to police a truce, not fight, and only if all sides agree to their presence.

Doesn't if sound like a rerun - "We are just there to insure Iraq doesn't invade our little brother, Saudi Arabia ," and, "We are in Haiti only to preserve Democracy." Iraq had no intention of invading Saudi Arabia - then or later. Saddam Hussein was 'called in' to Kuwait to protect the interests of the Kuwaitis from being absorbed by the U.S. interests and a collapse brought on by calling of notes following default by the Kuwaitis, to the bankers. Dirty pool.

The following day a letter of warning against sending in the Marines was delivered to Reagan from Soviet President Brezhnev. It was a cryptic warning containing no specific threats. In diplomatic language it simply said, "Don't do it."

Anti-war warnings from Moscow were becoming increasingly urgent and frequent. On July 7 the Brezhnev warning against sending U.S. Marines into Lebanon was issued, and only six days later the Ustinov warning against an American nuclear first strike was issued. Does this surprise you? Don't you remember that little tidbit of news?

Russia's anti-war warnings included not only words but also deeds, my friends. The Kremlin was run by men who knew that words without deeds were useless against the American Bolsheviks. That is why we were given warnings a month prior to this that Russian preemptive measures must be expected to start taking place. Those pre-preemptive measures got under way promptly, in the form of warning strikes to send a clear, clean message.

The first of those warning strikes took place on Sunday morning, June 27 (1982). Millions of Americans watched the launch of Space Shuttle No. 4 that morning on television. You watched until the two solid rocket boosters separated and fell away from the Shuttle. Moments later a Jumbo Cosmosphere, which was pacing the Shuttle from a distance, fired two quick blasts at the falling boosters which were no longer visible on television.

The Cosmosphere's beam weapon blew a hole in the side of each $18,000,000 booster shell. An Air Force C-130 airplane was tracking the boosters and saw their parachutes open, but when the spent boosters hit the water they just kept right on sinking. Thanks to the holes which had been neatly blown into their sides - they certainly didn't float. Recovery teams watched helplessly as $36,000,000 worth of space hardware sank in several thousand feet of water.

Embarrassed NASA officials tried to explain away the loss of the two Shuttle boosters with the lie that the parachutes did not open (on both of them?). The odds are astronomical against the parachutes failing that way on TWO BOOSTERS, but they had no other excuse that they dared make public.

WARNINGS!

The *Encyclopedia Brittanica Book of the Year* says of this incident: "* Columbia 's* fourth launch from Kennedy Space Center was on June 27, with astronauts Thomas K. Mattingly and Henry W. Hartsfield, Jr. Fittingly enough, it landed on July 4 at Edwards Air Force Base in California, greeted by Pres. Ronald Reagan and an estimated 500,000 fellow citizens. A major problem occurred when the two booster rockets plunged into the Atlantic , apparently because of parachute failures. There was no danger to the * Columbia ,* however. Experiments included the first one to be developed by a private company. It was designed to produce certain pharmaceuticals continuously with high purity. The astronauts also helped save the first 'getaway special' when a defective circuit prevented power from reaching the canister."

Meanwhile, the Russian message was indeed clear. Had they cared to, the Russians could have destroyed the Shuttle itself on nationwide television, no less, instead of only the boosters. They were saving our government"s "face" to use more advantageously during the ensuing years. They certainly have managed to do that very nicely, at our expense.

Next came the Aeroflot crash in Moscow followed by the reprisal on July 9 against the Pan Am jet in New Orleans (a Pan American World Airways Boeing 747 jet carrying 145 persons crashed in Kenner, LA, shortly after taking off from New Orleans, exploded, and plowed through four residential streets; the accident, which killed 153 persons including 8 on the ground, was the second worst air disaster in U.S. history involving a single plane.) Both events were acts of war - the secret war which both sides were beginning to mention openly in public. The Russian message to the American Bolsheviks here was: "You are not as secure as you pretend you are."

Six days later the Russians reminded the Bolsheviks in the U.S. of their combined capabilities in geophysical warfare, a widespread sabotage here. As far back as 1977 we had been warned that the Russians were on a campaign of planting nuclear mines where they could destroy countless dams around the United States. Those devices are still there, waiting for use at the press of a button from a detonator trigger well out of our reach or ability to control.

How could subversive workers get within our boundaries without our knowing? They can't There are as many Russian KGB agents in our CIA as Americans. Our government thought, at the time, the mines were a big bluff because it was the Russians themselves who announced their presence to our government.

On July 15, 1982, the Kremlin said, "Think again" to the Bolshevik pentagon. That day northern Colorado was reeling from incredible rainstorms, the product of Russian weather modification. Dams in the area were straining to hold back the onslaught of water. Then a low-yield underwater mine was detonated at the base of the Lawn Lake Dam. The dam blew open, and the flood waters rampaged down the canyon and through the resort town of Estes Park. The government frantically tried to cover its tracks by saying they had been worried about that dam, but the disaster actually came with absolutely no warning because the dam was ruined instantly by the explosion.

MORE WARNINGS

The very next day there was still another Russian warning shot. This time it was couched in the centuries-old language of naval warfare, updated to the Space Age.

When confrontations take place at sea there are times when a warship will fire a shot across the bow of another ship. The shot is aimed to barely miss the ship, whistling past just in front of it. A shot across the bow is perhaps the most unmistakable military message on the face of the Earth. It means: "Halt immediately or you will be destroyed."

On July 16 a United Airlines DC-10 took off from Boston bound for Los Angeles. Among the passengers of the big jet were certain key members of the Bolshevik ruling group here in America.

For a while the flight progressed without incident but as the jet flew westward at 39,000 feet a Russian Cosmosphere was stationing itself to intercept it. The Cosmosphere hovered several miles off to one side of the jet's flight path and a few hundred feet above it. The charged particle beam weapon of the Cosmosphere was aimed horizontally to fire a shot across the bow of the speeding DC-10.

As the jet approached, the Cosmosphere crew charged up the beam weapon for a maximum energy blast in a defocused mode. This produces a violent air blast like those heard that winter along America 's East Coast and elsewhere. At precisely the right instant the Cosmosphere fired its shot across the bow of the oncoming DC-10.

The tremendous air blast just above the DC-10's altitude created a huge shock wave of downward-racing air. An instant later the DC-10 flew into it. Passengers later told reporters that they heard a big bang, then the whole plane shook as it was squashed downward as if by a giant hand. Everyone not wearing a seat belt was thrown to the ceiling, which is a long way on a DC-10. Many people were hurt, several seriously; then the episode was over as quickly as it had started.

The jet flew on to Los Angeles without further incident - but to certain individuals on the plane, the airborne shot across the bow was meant as a clear warning! It certainly meant something to the military and government personnel because they had been warned it would happen. It clearly said, "Halt now in your war plans or you will be destroyed."

The next warning shot took place on July 22. This was aimed squarely at the weapons specialists among the American Bolsheviks in the U.S. That day the first full-range test flight of the Army's new Pershing-2 missile took place at Cape Canaveral. The Pershing-2 is the nuclear missile which the Reagan Administration wanted to place in Europe where it could attack Russia. Europe would be used as a launching pad.

A few seconds after the Pershing-2 lifted off from Cape Canaveral it was bathed in neutron radiation from a Russian Cosmosphere high above. Remember, neutron radiation totally deranges all kinds of electronic equipment. As a result, the Pershing-2's guiding system went crazy.

The climbing missile flopped over on its side, then started cartwheeling through the lovely Florida skies. Seventeen seconds after lift-off, the Range Safety Officer pushed the self-destruct button and the missile blew up.

The Russian message to the Bolsheviks in the U.S. was very plain indeed. The plans to use missiles to help destroy Russia would not succeed. The attempt to do so would only rain destruction on America itself.

END OF PART 10.

PART 11:

NUCLEAR WAR ONE

The Reagan-Begin Axis of Bolsheviks and Zionists intended to manipulate those crises, and more to come, to pave the way for war. Suddenly, certain crises would combine to trigger a chain of events leading to Nuclear War One. The joint military junta of the United States Pentagon and Israel were working on a fast timetable for all of this. They were aiming for deadline time of midsummer 1982 for the final war sequence to begin; fulfillment of the plan was set for September.

This would involve regional conflicts in the Middle East and elsewhere which gradually would escalate to engulf the superpowers. The whole thing was being set up to make nuclear war appear unavoidable. At last all-out nuclear war itself would break out between the United States and Russia. It would be made to appear accidental, but as we have detailed in the past, Nuclear War One would actually begin with an AMERICAN FIRST STRIKE AGAINST RUSSIA.

Up to that point, the secret war planners in the U.S. had been expecting that it would take many months for the final war buildup to run its course. For example, a Mideast war might be triggered by the summer of 1982, but it could take until the spring of 1983 for the resulting nuclear war to actually erupt. That plan had actually been changed and by winter 1982 drastic changes took place in the secret war planning under way in America.

The timetable for Nuclear War One was speeded up by many months in order to render the oncoming winter an ally. This was when the target date was set for mid-September 1982. That was little more than six months from the third Shuttle launch and thus the desperate need for intelligence surveillance information regarding the Soviet Union. Well, then a major intelligence coup was scored by the American Bolsheviks which would allow for fairly accurate targeting.

Two high-ranking soviet generals were spirited out of Russia and brought to Washington. Those two men were

Bolsheviks whom Russia's new non-Bolshevik rulers failed to detect and weed out. In Intelligence parlance, they remained as "moles" in Russia's military apparatus.

Now they had been brought to America, and they brought with them a wealth of data about Russia 's current military posture. Thanks to those two former Bolshevik Soviet generals the secret war planners in the U.S. now had enough information.

If they could get more data from Space Shuttle flights Nos. 3 and 4, so much the better, but if neither of those two flights was successful, the war planners intended to wait no longer and go with ground intelligence. They wanted to make use of the intelligence obtained from the Soviet generals while it was still fresh and changes could not be made in the Soviet Union who would suspect treason. Therefore, the deadline to attack the Russians was rescheduled.

If the U.S. had realized and listened, we would have all realized that the fourth launch was a crossing line to countdown to war.

COUNTDOWN TO NUCLEAR WAR I

In early 1982 there was a tremendous hidden struggle for power that was dividing the U.S. government. On one side were the American Bolsheviks whose chief government operative was Secretary of Defense Caspar Weinberger. On the other side was the Rockefeller cartel whose chief government spokesman was Secretary of State Alexander Haig. Weinberger and Haig were constantly at each other's throats in the news, and worse, in private. Caught in the middle was the puppet, President Reagan.

Reagan was installed by the Rockefeller cartel but came to be largely under Bolshevik control after the assassination "attempt" in March of 1981. By February of 1982 the American military was dominated by the Bolsheviks, but that had not always been so.

By 1982 a plan for a Rockefeller cartel-backed military coup was being set in motion (again) and this time it was a crash program. The Rockefeller cartel could not afford to let their Bolshevik enemies succeed in setting off nuclear war; therefore, the military coup must take place before the American Bolshevik surprise attack against Russia. If possible, the coup would be carried out before the fourth Space Shuttle flight planned for the summer of 1982, because the war was scheduled immediately following that flight.

The man who was in charge of the military coup preparations was a four-star Army General who was also Secretary of State - General Alexander Haig. If you remember the Falkland Islands War occurred about this time and the Bolsheviks foiled the coup. Haig was fired and Bolshevik George P. Shultz took his place, on June 25th.

FALKLANDS WAR

You need to know the facts behind the Falkland Islands War, the shooting of the *U.S.S. Liberty* by the Israelis, the turmoil in Central America, developments towards the Iran-Iraq war, Libya's Kadhafi, Afghanistan, Poland, etc. Things were and are not as you think they are, friends!

I have mentioned about doubles. For example, on March 6 the BBC quoted a *London Times* article questioning whether or not Khomeini was still alive. The article expressed suspicions that fake pictures were being used showing the "double" for Khomeini.

HOW MANY FINGERS DO YOU SEE?

I remember, I believe, the article was in *Reader's Digest,* an article that said that when Khomeini went into exile to Paris, he was missing a finger. When he later returned to Iran , Khomeini was not missing any fingers. Khomeini was quite a miracle worker, don't you think? Or could somebody be pulling a fast one?

The Reagan-Begin Axis, in cahoots with their Zionist partners in Israel , were going all out to try to start a nuclear war.

The Manhattan Project went from a decision to make the bomb (on the day before Pearl Harbor in December 1941), to a working bomb exploded on Hiroshima in August, 1945. And this was before computers.

In 1982, a new program was started similar to the Manhattan Project. It was called the "Stealth" program, and, surprise, surprise, it succeeded the same year! It succeeded because of the immense computing power of the Control Data Corporation Star 100 and Cray computers (an offshoot of Control Data).

The most secret branch of the Stealth Program was developing aircraft that would be invisible to more than just radar. They must be invisible even to the eye. These invisible "Phantom" war planes would carry special electromagnetic gear.

You see, there was already the capability, for Russia had the know-how to cause the Cosmos Interceptors and Cosmospheres to be invisible. All that was really needed was to get defectors and most defectors had a "price" under which they will bargain.

The equipment included superconducting magnets which were maintained at temperatures close to absolute zero. The cryogenic equipment creates an enormously powerful electromagnetic field around the aircraft. The field is designed according to the principles of Einstein's "Unified Field Theory."

Einstein never completely finished his Field Theory, but it was studied by numerical techniques using the Star 100 and Cray computers and others and integration became a simple game. By this method, enough could be learned, coupled with stolen information, to apply the Unified Field Theory to the new "Phantom" war planes.

Think of the magnificent possibilities. Time is a function of the measurement of movement of "things" - atoms, matter, and stuff. At absolute zero, atoms stop moving. Time stops. When atoms speed up in relation to surroundings, time speeds up. Frequency is everything.

When you understand the rules, wondrous things are possible. For hints of the possibilities, study the Philadelphia Experiment and Project Montauk. Read *A BRIEF HISTORY OF TIME* by Stephen Hawking or *HYPERSPACE, A SCIENTIFIC ODYSSEY THROUGH PARALLEL UNIVERSE, TIME WARPS, AND THE 10TH DIMENSION* by Michio Kaku.

This is why the government must keep the Stealth aircraft a "national security" secret. They have revealed the part of the secret telling that the shape of the surfaces affects the radar signature, to explain the strikes in Iraq and so on, but they don't want you to know the rest of the secrets. By revealing this much, they kept the Stealth program from being scuttled by Congress.

Under this program they can send 22 planes into battle, and 22 planes return. Mission accomplished! You do not see all the others that also went into battle, and those that are lost are made up for so that you see the same number return.

When the invisibility field would be turned on, a "Phantom" war plane would be encased in a sort of electromagnetic bubble. Light that strikes the field from any direction divides, passes around the plane, comes together again on the other side, and goes on. The effect is like a boulder in a stream - water flowing toward the boulder divides, goes around it and then comes together again on the other side.

When you "see" something, light bounces off the object and strikes your eyes. Your eyes then recognize the pattern. If something comes between you and the object, you can no longer see it. But if the light from the object goes around the obstruction, you see the original object, but not the obstruction. This is how Phantom planes work, although up close they can be dimly detected, while farther away they are totally invisible. Do you now understand why so many

"UFO" sightings are blurry?

Radar behaves the same way as light, it just has a different wavelength, so Phantom planes are invisible to both light and radar, unless they turn off their fields. This explains some of the reported sonic booms where there was no visible airplane.

The Russians, however, can see through these fields using sophisticated infrared beam detectors.

Phantom war planes are totally immune to lasers because a laser is just a beam of intense light. An invisibility field also would give protection against the Russian Particle Beam system in tracking ability but the plan backfired because the Russians had already developed anti-invisible shield technology. Ordinarily, charged particles are far easier to deflect than light, so the charged particle beam is no match for the light-deflecting shield. Ah, but when you get into pulsed neutron beams - you have a real handful of troubles.

And so that leaves only neutron beam weapons. Russia's neutron beam would penetrate the invisibility shield, but ways were thought to have been found to shield against neutron radiation well enough to make neutron beams ineffective in stopping a Phantom war plane. This was conceived as true because extremely effective shielding would be part of the basic design of the Phantom war plane whereby the plane would have to first be "located" in order to be fired upon. The basic design would require such sophisticated shielding in order to prevent derangement of the electronic instruments as well as the crew, if it were a manned craft.

So the result of the program would be craft which would be undetectable by conventional means, and it was believed to be invulnerable to all of Russia's beam weapons. Those beam weapons had been the key to Russia's military superiority since late 1977, so the Phantom war plane was the hope-for weapon to attack Russia in the upcoming planned nuclear strike.

The Phantom war plane had one recognized major drawback. In a way, its greatest strength would also be its greatest weakness. When the invisibility field would be turned on, incoming light waves would not strike the plane; instead, the light flows around the plane. That is what makes the plane invisible to observers at a distance but, at the same time, the field prevents light waves from the outside world from reaching the cockpit of the plane. In other words, the pilot cannot see anything outside the invisibility field. He is required by physical law to fly blind.

There was only one technique known in the West by which a Phantom war plane could be navigated. It is called "Inertial Guidance," a technique used for ICBMs. In Inertial Guidance, a computerized system keeps track of all the forces and maneuvers experienced by the vehicle. By adding these up over time, the system calculates where it is without reference to the outside world. For a Phantom war plane, the Inertial Guidance problem is very difficult. The guidance system must operate for as long as several hours while the plane flies to its target. That gives lots of time for errors to build up which would send the plane off course, but the problem was thought to be solved sufficiently to utilize the Phantom planes in the attack.

New Inertial Guidance technology had been developed using lasers in place of the old mechanical gyros used in ICBMs, and so the supersecret Phantom war plane project had basically succeeded in concept - and, for all intents and purposes, we now had a new superweapon. It was revolutionary, prototypes were flying and a rush production program was already under way by the early 1980s. The secret war planners expected to have an operational fleet ready by summer, 1982. This was the "pacing item" in the short war timetable.

Because of inertial guidance, absolutely accurate reconnaissance data on Russian targets was totally critical to the war planning. When Phantom war planes would take off to attack Russia, they would have to know ahead of time exactly where the target would be. Therefore, for a year the Space Shuttle had been making a desperate attempt to obtain the needed target information from space. It would be the first new data since Russia destroyed our Spy Satellites in 1978. The first two Shuttle flights were NOT successful in their secret military mission, but in February, 1982, Shuttle No. 3 was more successful. The war planners now obtained the most crucial target data needed for a Phantom war plane attack against Russia. As a result, a whole new war plan was being prepared for the coming planned nuclear war.

America 's war strategists were eager for war because they believed they could achieve victory over Russia - the concept of victory, however, DID NOT INCLUDE THE AMERICAN PEOPLE. THE SECRET WAR STRATEGISTS WERE PREPARING TO SACRIFICE AMERICA AND MOST OF HER PEOPLE ON THE ALTAR OF WORLD DOMINATION - AND ONLY THE TIME AND PLACE HAS CHANGED.

END OF PART 11.

PART 12:

WAR STRATEGY

The radically new Phantom war plane caused an equally radical revision of the master war strategy of the U.S. Elements of several past strategies were being blended together to create a new and grander plan. It was the new grand master strategy which America 's war planners were counting on to bring them victory in Nuclear War One, and they planned to use the war plan very quickly - by Autumn of 1982, with or without the proper surveillance hoped for by Shuttle flight No. 3.

Strategic nuclear war planning in Washington was being carried out under the code name "Project Z." The letter "Z" was chosen because it is the final letter of the alphabet. The war planners were confident that this would be the last war plan they would need against Russia. War planning under Project Z was so secret that it was not being done at the Pentagon itself; instead, an elite group of war strategists were assembled at a special war room in downtown Washington. The war room was hidden away in a building which would never be suspected for the purpose. It was practically within the shadow of the White House.

The elite war planners for Nuclear War One were a very small group. Their job was to think in terms of the big overall picture. They had at their fingertips computer terminals with which they could access any information they needed from other government computers (using PROMIS software stolen from Inslaw, for instance). This included not only Pentagon data banks but also the computer files of all other government agencies.

By May the Project Z planners had already arrived at the broad outlines for their master war plan. Countless details and refinements still lay ahead, but the basic strategy was already decided. That strategy bears looking at herein.

The Project Z strategy for Nuclear War One was a three-phase plan - that is, the war planners intended for the war to proceed in three distinct phases known as: Phase 1 - Initiation; Phase 2 - Attrition; and Phase 3 - Domination.

The major process was based on ever-increasing world crises, like those that led up to World War I. We were seeing that process in full swing all around us. It was planned that these crises escalate for about six additional months and finally the spark would be set off. The Project Z war planners were concerned with the military acts from that initial spark onward.

Phase Number One: In their plan, the Initiation Phase would begin with an American surprise attack against Russia. The surprise attack would use the new Phantom war planes. They would be the key to the outcome of the rest of the war.

In the summer of 1978 America had begun major shifting to a first-strike nuclear strategy against Russia. It would be a first strike. It would be to knock out the Earth bases for Russia 's space triad of strategic weapons. If that could be done, Russia 's overwhelming military power in space would soon wither and perish.

That would leave the U.S. and Russia on more equal terms for the rest of the war. The plan was to use a combination of Subcraft and Unmanned Aircraft called RPVs for the initial attack. That plan was actually attempted some two years prior but ended in total failure because Subcraft of RPVs were no match for Russia 's Cosmospheres with their beam weapons, but the new Phantom war planes were almost ready and the plan was being revived in updated form.

Phantom war planes were intended to be based in at least three countries on Russia's doorstep. These basing areas were: northern Norway; eastern Turkey; and most critical of all, Sinkiang Province in northwestern China. Now you know why Reagan and others became so cozy with China! Already, high-powered lasers were being moved into those areas. They were equipped with the new aiming device called CEIR (see-er). Those lasers had the proven ability to shoot down Cosmospheres. They would be used to protect the Phantom war planes from destruction on the ground by Cosmospheres.

The Phantom war planes which would be used were unmanned. They were equipped with robot pilots which would be programmed for a one-way trip. The invisible robot pilot and aircraft would fly through Russian air space, invulnerable to any beam-weapon attacks. Anti-aircraft missiles fired at them would be unable to home in on them, and so the Project Z planners believed that the robot Phantom planes would reach their targets.

Those targets were Russia's four Cosmodromes for rockets plus several Cosmosphere installations in central Siberia. The invisible robot planes would crash like kamikazes into their targets. Seemingly out of the clear blue sky, all of Russia 's space bases would suddenly vanish in thermonuclear fireballs.

In addition to Russia's space bases, the Phantom war plane assault would also be directed at one other category of prime targets. These were the bases for Russia's flying Anti-missile System. The system consisted of a fleet of TU-144 Supersonic Transports equipped with particle-beam weapons. They were supposed to provide Russia's final line of defense against incoming missile warheads. American Phantom war planes would be programmed to destroy the TU-144 bases.

Phase #1 was continuing on a very tight timetable by May, 1982. If the invisible war plane attack would succeed, a furious counterattack by Russia was guaranteed. Project Z called for the U.S. to beat Russia to the punch. The entire U.S. nuclear arsenal was to be fired at Russia.

It would be done by creating the false indication that America was under nuclear attack. The method which would be employed was known as Electromagnetic Pulse or EMP. EMP is a phenomenon associated with nuclear blasts at the fringes of space. The strategic forces were programmed to consider an EMP episode to be positive proof of a Russian attack. Under those circumstances, they were instructed to counterattack against Russia without waiting for any further orders.

In the Project Z timetable, the Phantom was plane explosions in Russia would be followed moments later by nuclear detonations over North America. These would be the warheads of American high-speed missiles called ACMs. They would be launched into the sky from various locations around the U.S. to create a violent EMP episode. The Strategic/Nuclear Forces, obeying orders, would launch what they would believe to be a retaliation against Russia.

As the American ACMs would be launched into the sky over our heads, still another event was to be underway. Keep in mind the episode of January, 1982, whereby a Russian Cosmosphere had been shot down for the fist time - over New Jersey. In the same way, high-power lasers located in many places around the U.S. would be shooting down as many Cosmospheres as possible.

By the time our ICBMs were launched a few minutes later, it could be expected that many of the threatening Cosmospheres overhead would have been destroyed. They would be unable to blast all of our missiles as they were launched, and many would survive to be on their way to Russia. Thanks to the initial Phantom war plane attack, Russia 's flying ABM system would also be out of action. Stripped of all her defenses against missile attack, the Soviet Union would soon be aflame with a sea of nuclear firestorms.

In the Project Z war plan, the arrival of American ICBMs on Russian targets would mark the end of Phase #1, the

Initiation Phase.

PHASE TWO: THE ATTRITION PHASE

Phase Number Two: This is the Attrition Phase. During Phase #2 the war planners envisioned extreme damage to both the U.S. and to Russia , with the war gradually running down. First there would be a rain of Russian missile warheads on the U.S. There would also be missile attacks on certain other targets around the world where American Military Forces were located, but the real destruction would be right in the U.S. itself.

The Project Z war planners did not expect America , as you know it, to survive a nuclear exchange. Unlike Russia , the U.S. has no Civil Defense worthy of the name, let alone hardened blast shelters and, because of the need for total surprise in the attack against Russia 's space bases, the ensuing nuclear exchanges would come without warning. Vacationers would be on beaches, businessmen would be making deals, housewives would be in supermarkets, children would be at play, etc.

In my July 1978 newsletter I warned that it was the policy of the U.S. to NOT warn its population. Suddenly air raid sirens might start to blare, as they would do so on a summer day in Hiroshima years ago, but it would be too late. The America you know and love would die in a thousand Hiroshimas. The war schemers have planned for all that and have only updated the plans to suit changes in happenings TODAY.

While you and your children vanish from the face of the Earth, they fully intended and still intend to be riding out any attack they have caused, inside Government war bunkers build with your taxpayer money, at Camp David, Mount Weather , Pine Gap, China Lake and DOZENS of other locations. Do you have your passes to these places? I thought not.

4 OF 5 AMERICANS TO DIE

Gradually, over a period of many months, they fully expected the conflict between Russia and the U.S. to sputter out. Both sides would be exhausted and ruined; both would lose the capacity to carry the war any further.

In Russia , the wound would be grievous - up to 50 million dead and millions more injured and dying. BUT IN THE U.S. THE WOUND WOULD BE MORTAL. The Project Z war planners had figured it out on their computers. If we were lucky, from 40 to 50 million Americans might survive at the end of the war. All the rest would have been killed outright in the nuclear attacks or would have died of injuries and disease. Nuclear War One would leave medical care virtually nonexistent in what would be left of America.

The American Bolsheviks intended to ride out the war after setting it off. They would wait until the stalemate point would be reached with both sides unable to fight any longer. That would mark the end of Phase #2, the Attrition Phase.

PHASE THREE: FINAL

Phase Number Three: Finally, the Project Z war plan would move into the third and final phase. That phase, of course, would be world domination by the SATANIC BOLSHEVIKS/ZIONISTS (PARASITES) who already controlled and control the U.S. military.

In the final phase as planned for 1982, the Bolsheviks/Zionists in America would be taking advantage of secret preparations which began long, long prior.

One arm of the prior plan had been strategy which required the U.S. to give the impression that it was growing steadily weaker, disarming unilaterally, closing military bases, and so on, but that was only for public consumption. The secret side of the strategy involved an actual buildup of armaments, in secret. This necessitated a secret government, which was set up by Jimmy Carter, Oliver North, George Bush, et al., under the smokescreen of FEMA -

the Federal Emergency Management Agency.

When the Bolsheviks/Zionists in the U.S. seized power from the Rockefellers, they continued the stockpiling of secret reserves of armaments world-wide, and especially in Israel. It was well planned that as the war began to sputter, all these armaments would be brought into the open.

Even if the entire populations of the U.S. and Russia were destroyed, that would still leave 95% of the world's population alive, and under total domination of the "Elite." Both the Bolsheviks and the Zionists despise and loathe both the Russians and the Americans and world domination could only come to the bankers and global cartel through massive damage and/or destruction to both major powers.

Where does all this leave our ally Great Britain ? Could it be they plan to survive free and clear in domination of the world?

On March 30, 1982, one day behind schedule, we got to see a Shuttle landing at the White Sands Missile Range New Mexico. White Sands is the true nerve center of the Space Shuttle Program, regardless of what the media tells you otherwise.

The third Shuttle flight, regardless of which Shuttle did what, represented another "first" and that one was not visible on television. For the first time a Space Shuttle had succeeded in its secret military mission. By so doing, another barrier was removed in the path to nuclear war.

The third Shuttle mission took place nearly a year after the first flight of April, 1981. A comparison between the first and third flights is a study in ironies.

In the April fiasco, publicity about the first flight was designed to give the impression that it was unnaturally perfect. Meanwhile, the secret military mission - which you did not see - was a disaster. With the third flight, it was the other way around.

>From start to finish the publicity emanating from NASA gave the impression that the Shuttle was plagued with problems. NASA wanted to be able to explain it away if disaster should strike again but, as it turned out, the military mission in space, hidden from our eyes, was a success and the loss of one more Shuttle was not so detrimental to the program as a whole.

TROUBLES

Space Shuttle No. 3 was supposed to orbit a special new Spy Satellite. It was hardened against attack from Russia 's space weapons and armed with a robot-controlled laser that could shoot back. In addition, the Shuttle itself was armed with lasers on this third try.

The public image of a troubled, plagued Shuttle flight actually got underway several days prior to launch, thanks to the weather. Drenching rainstorms turned Edwards Air Force Base in California, used for the prior two landings, into a wet bog. The tight military schedule of the Shuttle Program required that the flight take off on schedule anyway, so for public consumption a 23-car railroad train loaded with equipment was sent from California to New Mexico.

Ostensibly, NASA was setting up a spur-of-the-moment landing site at the White Sands Missile Range. This was done so that the central role of White Sands Missile Range in the Shuttle Program would not be suspected by the public and would also delete the need for substitute Shuttles in the landing itself because it is publicly closed.

Space Shuttle No. 3 lifted off from Cape Canaveral only an hour behind schedule on Monday morning, March 22nd. Beginning at the moment of liftoff, NASA started laying the basis for a cover-up story should the military mission fail.

First you heard the pre-recorded voice of Shuttle Commander Jack Lousma saying unexplained white flakes were flying past the windshield. Later, after the Shuttle was out of sight, we were told that one of the power packs called an APU was not functioning. These initial hints of possible trouble had been pre-recorded for broadcast during the launch - for a reason. There was fear that the Shuttle might be destroyed by Russian space weapons before reaching orbit altitude.

Had that happened, the Shuttle managers wanted to be able to initiate a cover-up which would not reveal the military situation; but as it turned out, the preparations paid off and, through the radical new maneuver already discussed, the Shuttle did at least reach proper altitude.

When the Shuttle No. 3 took off, it headed into the northeast. Long-distance cameras followed it until the two solid rockets separated and fell away. Then, as the Shuttle disappeared from sight, it started its long sweeping turn into the north. It was heading toward a near-polar orbit so that it would pass over Russia. This much of the flight plan was the same as in the past, but this time a critical new feature was added.

Less than 30 seconds after the Shuttle disappeared from TV cameras, the cargo-bay doors were blasted completely off. This opened up a field of fire for the defensive laser at the front of the cargo bay. Then the Shuttle and its giant external tanks started rotating slowly in a space-age version of a barrel-roll.

In World War II, fighter pilots made use of the barrel roll to avoid bullets from enemy airplanes. Likewise, the Space Shuttle used a barrel roll to protect itself against probable attack from Russian Cosmospheres. By rotating like a corkscrew, the Shuttle made it impossible for a Cosmosphere to approach safely from any direction. The barrel roll maneuver was a very risky one, however, for the Shuttle. The Shuttle and tank were not designed with "aerobatics" in mind but calculations showed that it should survive a slow roll, and somehow it did.

One of the biggest questions about the barrel roll stunt was what it would do to the astronauts Lousma and Fullerton. They were required to withstand these dizzying gyrations for about six minutes. At the same time, the Shuttle was still accelerating with up to three times the force of gravity; and because of the peculiar design of the Shuttle and fuel tank, the gyrations were sickening indeed.

Military space doctors knew that at best Lousma and Fullerton would be very sick for some time after reaching this low orbit. Their wild, bruising, spinning ride would end abruptly in weightlessness. That is a combination guaranteed to derange the equilibrium of even the toughest astronaut. Nothing remotely like it has ever been done. Doctors were rightly worried that even if the two survived the mission and returned to Earth, there could be permanent damage to their equilibrium.

When orbit was reached, they did indeed become violently ill. That is why you heard those reports about nausea striking both men. NASA wanted to pave the way for a plausible public explanation if they should not appear well when they returned to Earth. At the same time, the Shuttle planners knew perfectly well why they were sick. That is why NASA spokesmen acted so unconcerned when discussing the space sickness with reporters. When they called it "motion sickness," they were making a gross understatement.

Lousma and Fullerton were to begin work immediately upon reaching proper orbit - sick or not. Their extensively modified crew compartment was to be depressurized already - automatically - with the two men depending upon their space suits. This plan had to be modified slightly when the barrel roll was added to the flight plan.

HARD ON THE CREW

When the Shuttle reached orbit the astronauts were in space suits, but the cabin was still pressurized. They were allowed several minutes to get from the flight deck to the Gemini-type escape capsule stored below. Once inside the escape capsule they then depressurized the cabin; then the Nose Laser System deployed automatically to protect the Shuttle against any attacks by Russian space weapons. This allowed Lousma and Fullerton to recover from space sickness while inside the capsule.

For the ensuing two days or so, getting well was their main task. It was a period of total vulnerability, of depending on the untried Automatic Laser System for protection. The Shuttle planners wanted to have the excuse ready later should the Shuttle be attacked and destroyed. So the day after the launch you were shown TV pictures of missing tiles on the nose of the Shuttle. According to those pictures at least a dozen tiles in the black area were lost.

If that had really happened, it would have been cause for extreme alarm. Later a NASA spokesman downplayed it, saying the tiles were noncritical. But there is no such thing as a noncritical black tile. The black tiles supposedly lost are to withstand temperatures above 1500 degrees Fahrenheit. Under th tile there is nothing but a piece of felt called a "strain isolation pad" which would not last five seconds in those temperatures, and under the felt is the metal skin of the Shuttle. It is made of aluminum, which loses its strength above 350 degrees. If exposes to 1500 degree heat by a few missing tiles, the Shuttle could not possibly avoid very severe, crippling damage or destruction by rupturing.

PRE-RECORDED HOAX

The nice NASA space movies we saw on TV were a pre-recorded hoax to provide an excuse if something went wrong, but it didn't. The astronauts recovered, went to work, and deployed the new military satellite. Meanwhile, NASA spokesmen waved aside the alleged tile problem as minor. It had served its purpose and was no longer needed.

Throughout the remainder of the week we heard about one problem after another. Supposedly the cargo bay doors would not close and I guess not, since they were blown completely away, the toilet would not work, three out of four communications channels went out, one of the three crucial data display screens in the cockpit failed, etc. None of these stories was true; all were devised to provide blather material and cover story for possible problems with the secret military mission. But in the end none of them was needed and so NASA spokesmen just waved them aside as unimportant.

The secret military mission was a success, so the pretended mission which was cooked up for TV was declared an overwhelming success, also.

END OF PART 12.

PART 13:

Late Friday night, March 26th (1982), Lousma and Fullerton finished deploying the new Superspy Satellite. It had taken longer than planned, but it was done. The Shuttle was left in orbit. The astronauts re-entered their Gemini-type escape capsule, fired its retrorockets, and dropped out of orbit to an Indian Ocean splashdown. From there they were flown nonstop to the White Sands Missile Range, New Mexico.

The Shuttle directors took advantage of a sandstorm at White Sands to delay the public landing for an extra day while the astronauts recuperated. Then the next morning they boarded one of the two remaining secret Shuttles at White Sands. The Shuttle took off from the north end of the immense White Sands Range, using small solid rockets. Just moments before 11:00 A.M. it made its appearance on TV. They swooped in from the north, dropped down over the mountains, and touched down in a cloud of white dust. Finally, after a respectable wait, out stepped Lousma and Fullerton all rested and refreshed.

On Memorial Day, May 30, 1982, Richard Halloran leaked the existence of Project Z in an article in the *New York Times.* The article said: "PENTAGON DRAWS UP FIRST STRATEGY FOR FIGHTING A LONG NUCLEAR WAR. Defense Department policy makers in a new five-year defense plan have accepted the premise that nuclear conflict with the Soviet Union could be protracted, and have drawn up their first strategy for fighting such a war."

It did not say, however, that the plans were to launch the war in three months. The article went on to mention that the plan was laid out in an unpublished document of 125 pages. It was drafted for approval by a man who served Satan directly, Secretary of Defense, Caspar Weinberger.

Caspar Weinberger is a most interesting guy, but his story is so mind-boggling that I will have to save it for some other time. The U.S. Pentagon was controlled by the Bolsheviks who formerly controlled Russia. Weinberger was the highest *visible* agent of the Bolsheviks in the U.S. government at that time.

BITTER RIVALS: WHY ROCKEFELLERS HAD TO BE TAKEN OUT

The nuclear war plan of the Bolsheviks was moving most quickly, but the U.S. Government was a house divided. The Bolsheviks were opposed by their bitter rivals, the Rockefeller cartel. Their top visible operative in the federal government at the time was Secretary of State Alexander Haig. The often visible feuding between Haig and Weinberger was only a pale shadow of that deadly power struggle behind the scenes. Unlike the Bolsheviks, the Rockefeller factions did not want nuclear war. In a word, they couldn't "afford" it. They would lose everything, and so the Rockefeller faction was working feverishly to head off the Bolshevik nuclear war plan.

The new anti-Bolshevik rulers of Russia were also against nuclear war. The anti-Bolshevik, anti-nuclear war attitudes of the Rockefeller cartel and the Kremlin led to a limited coalition between them. The most spectacular result from this Rockefeller-Russian coalition was the Falklands War raging between Argentina and Britain.

The Falklands was the visible aftermath to cover warfare which took place during April, 1982. The Rockefeller cartel and the Russians joined forces to destroy certain military installations and weapons reserves. These were key ingredients in the final phase of the Project Z war plan.

The whole operation began at South Georgia Island on April 3. With the help of Argentina a joint Rockefeller-Russian commando team was able to knock out the giant hidden naval base there. The base, built during the 1960s, was originally controlled through the U.S. Government by the Rockefeller cartel but the Bolsheviks acquired control of the bases in the late 1970s when they also seized control of the American Pentagon.

The major base was contained within a giant man-made cavern hollowed out inside a mountain near the water. With the camouflaged ship entrances sealed, the base was bombproof, but the joint Rockefeller-Russian commando team succeeded in attacking the base by drilling a shaft through the mountain. Then a compact Russian neutron bomb was inserted through the shaft and detonated inside the cavernous naval base. The process took several weeks. The Thatcher government which - like the U.S. government - was Bolshevik controlled, dispatched the Royal Navy.

First, it was supposed to dislodge the heavily-armed Rockefeller-Russian military force before it could destroy the naval base, then it was to move on to the Falklands for the publicly-admitted fighting. The Royal Navy arrived several days too late to save the secret base on South Georgia Island. But by that time the panicking Thatcher government had already committed some two-thirds of the Royal Navy to the South Atlantic. On top of that, at least one British ship had already been sunk by Russia in connection with the secret South Georgia operation. That left the Thatcher government with no choice but to engage Argentina in battle, otherwise it would have been impossible to explain away Britain's huge deployment to the South Atlantic, much less the heavy losses which had been sustained.

On April 30 the British blockade of the Falklands was just beginning. Later that day President Reagan announced that the U.S. was actively siding with Britain. The announcement was a victory for the Pentagon war faction. Right away warfare around the Falklands started heating up quickly.

On May 1, the British launched bombing raids against the airport at Port Stanley, and on May 2 a British submarine torpedoed Argentina's second largest ship, the cruiser *General Belgrano.* It sank within 24 hours, leaving a death toll of more than 300 Argentine sailors. The sinking of the *Belgrano* was expected to demoralize the Argentines, but instead it enraged them. The *Belgrano* had been sunk at a time when it was not threatening the British forces. The Argentines decided it was time to start playing their ace-in-the-hole against the British.

Argentina had been given certain promises in return for making the secret South Georgia operation possible. One of these was the promise of covert military assistance by Russia against Britain. Specifically, it was pledged that the Russians would intervene in parallel with Argentine air and naval operations in ways designed to even the odds. In this way Argentina's military leaders could take full credit for both their own and covert Russian attacks on the British. At the same time, the procedure was designed to keep Russia's role in the fighting quite obscure.

I simply do not have time to go into what the real truth was about the Falklands War, just suffice to say that what you were told was worlds away from the truth.

On August 24, 1982, another Cosmosphere was blasted out of the sky over the New York City vicinity, to be sure the New Jersey shot event could be duplicated. It created a high-speed fireball, described in the *New York Times* as a possible asteroid burning up.

When the American Phantom war planes would be launched into Russia on Z-Day, they would be swarming toward only six primary and about a dozen secondary targets. The six primary targets were the Russian Space bases, four Cosmodromes at Baikonur, Tyuratam, Plesetsk, and Kaspusin Yar, and two Cosmosphere facilities at Semipalatinsk and Novosibirsk.

As for the dozen or so secondary targets, those were the complex of Russian flying ABM bases. The system consisted of anti-missile particle beam weapons carried aboard converted TU-144 Supersonic Transports. The Transports were mysteriously removed from service in June 1978 for conversion to anti-missile defense but by September 1982 the system was fully operational. The intent was to knock them all out, if possible, to make the American follow-up attack more devastating.

Some other "stuff" came down about then, also. It was determined that if the strike against those bases failed, the war plan was doomed. There was only one satisfactory geographic location from which to launch a strike against the Russian Cosmosphere areas and that location was Sinkiang Province, China. The Bolsheviks must have access to Sinkiang Province at all costs it was decided - so - the Carter Administration unexpectedly dumped Taiwan on December 15, 1978, and suddenly announced full diplomatic relations with Peking.

END OF THE WORLD PLANNED FOR

THE "END OF THE WORLD" WAS SET FOR 3:00 P.M. E.D.T., FRIDAY, SEPTEMBER 17, 1982. This was the second date set to launch Nuclear War One (the first in late January of 1980 had been postponed). This date, by the way, WAS THE "FEAST OF TRUMPETS."

At EXACTLY 3:01 P.M. E.D.T. all of Russia would be in darkness. When the Indian Ocean Satellite signal would arrive confirming the attack, it would be followed within a minute or so by the EMP episode described above.

If you were watching TV or listening to the radio, there would suddenly be horrendous static and possibly permanent damage to the receivers. There would have been a total power blackout and the telephones would have gone dead. Russian short-range underwater launched missiles were planted along OUR shores and in the Great Lakes in 1976 and 1977 (and are still there). We would have had from 24 to 10 minutes to live depending on how far from the launchers we would be.

In addition, Russia had Moon bases and Cosmospheres overhead, both armed with their charged particle beam weapons.

So what happened? The Superspy Satellite launched in March 1982 by the third Shuttle had detected something most puzzling in Russia. The puzzle consisted of large numbers of small domed installations arranged in rings around strategic Russian targets. There was a ring of those domes around each Cosmodrome and around each Comosphere Base in particular. They were obviously defensive weapons of some sort.

There were heated discussions about what they might be. Actually, they were Rail Guns. I shall not spend more time on them, if you want to know more, do your own research. The information is available to the public. For now, I will just say the Rail Guns cannot be deflected by electronic defenses.

Because of the arguments over the uncertainty of success, the attack was called off five hours before launch time. It was rescheduled. IT WAS RESCHEDULED FOR FEAST OF TRUMPETS, ROSH HASHANAH, THURSDAY, SEPTEMBER 20, 1990.

This last one was also rescheduled and that date also passed. The time was again reset for a later date for the launch of Nuclear War One.

Guess for when the new date was set?

Please review the first paragraph of this paper. I will copy it for you here:

"As I begin writing this report, the news is telling about a strange USAIR airplane crash in Pennsylvania. Next day a plane crashed in Moscow. CNN told about a fireball that was reported from Bakersfield, California, to Medford, Oregon. They said it occurred about 6 or 6:15 in the morning on SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 10 (1994) and was so bright that the light shining through windows woke up some people. They showed a house in San Rafael with a hole in the roof from a piece of something falling from the sky. An Ariane rocket was launched from French Guyana and was LOST, a day before.

Several earthquakes have occurred in California, including one that CNN showed on a map, southwest of Lake Tahoe. About 15 minutes later, CNN began telling about the Space Shuttle firing lasers at Earth and showed a view of Earth, with Lake Tahoe in the upper right corner of the screen.

If you put the two together, then you can see that the *Columbia* Space Shuttle is firing laser beams at Earth 'for environmental purposes,' precisely where the earthquakes are occurring. The President went to Camp David, then when the President returned (?), a plane crashed into the White House. Later he gave a speech in a room of the White House, then just after he left a fire broke out in the room. Rosh Hashanah is recently passed, and Yom Kippur is coming up. The President has ordered 8,300 Navy, 1,800 Marine and 4,000 Army personnel along with 15 or 20 warships to *[prepare to]* invade Haiti."

Now, as I finish this article, as I am typing this the TV is telling that Carter and Colin Powell have arranged for the invasion of Haiti to be called off.

The payload launched from Guyana was a relay mirror satellite for the weapon carried on *Columbia.* It was to be fired into earthquake lines in Southern California to trigger bombs that have been placed there, to set off earthquakes. The resulting destruction would allow the government to bring in FEMA and declare martial law.

There are presently thousands of Russian troops across the border in Mexico and Baja California. The headline of the August 1994 *Criminal Politics* newsletter says, "International Zionism Planning War in Mexico, 300 Tons of Soviet Hardware Landed in Veracruz." Recent articles in *SPOTLIGHT* newspaper and several other newspapers across the country, including the *San Francisco Chronicle,* have reported on thousands of Russian troops and military equipment presently seen inside the U.S. Clinton called two aircraft carriers into the Caribbean and called up the Reserves (usually, you call up the reserves when you are losing the battle!). The relay satellite for the Shuttle was shot out of the sky by a "FLYING SAUCER."

The USAIR flight that was shot down, probably by a Russian beam weapon (the pilot said "traffic," and the cockpit recorder recorded what is described as a "WHOOMP, WHOOMP" sound) WAS CARRYING PAUL OLSON, WHO HAD JUST TESTIFIED CONCERNING AN UPCOMING DRUG TRIAL.

CNN is talking about the Shuttle in orbit firing lasers at Earth. The President just happened to be sleeping across the street when an airplane crashed into the White House, and later he gave a speech in a room in the White House and walked out and a fire broke out where he had just been.

September 6 was Rosh Hashanah and September 15 was YOM KIPPUR. Today as I finish this article it is September 18. I had to work, today, at a trade show. One of my customers was a Russian. I have a man (whose boss is Secretary of State Warren Christopher) speaking on audio cassette tape saying he PLANTED A NUCLEAR BOMB UNDER THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS IN AUSTIN.

Friends, there is much more that I could say, but I am tired. It is time you started doing YOUR OWN HOMEWORK. That is, if you care. DO YOU?

MAY YOU LIVE TO HAVE ANOTHER DAY!

END OF PART 13.

PART 14:

THE REST OF THE STORY

God did not say, "Righteousness will make you free." He did not say, "Obedience shall make you free." Obedience to a preacher, pope, pastor or guru WILL NOT DO IT. Neither will counting beads, ringing gongs, sitting cross-legged or chanting mantras. HE SAID THAT "THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE." (John 8:32)

We have lost a great deal of our freedoms, (and what is so appalling, most people are not even aware of it!) and are fast losing the rest. This must mean there is not much truth known and being taught! It is time we search for real truth!

I have been asked for the rest of the story about what happened with the American Space Shuttle Program, so I will try to add more information as I have a chance. Now to continue the story.

In my previous writing, I said that the "End of the World" was set for 3:00 PM E.D.T., Rosh Hashanah (Feast of Trumpets), Friday, September 17, 1982.

At exactly 3:01 PM E.D.T. all of Russia would be in darkness. When the Indian Ocean Satellite signal would arrive confirming the American Phantom aircraft attack, it would be followed within a minute or so by the EMP episode described previously. This would signal all U.S. military forces to launch a full scale "retaliatory" nuclear attack against Russia.

Obviously this did not happen, and I did not go into detail at the time about what really happened.

A syndicated article published by *NEWSDAY* said that on June 10, 1982: "President Reagan stunned allies at the NATO summit by telling them that as far as he is concerned the Soviet Union is at war with the United States, European officials said last week. The statement, which came as the President was summing up his views on the two-day meeting in Bonn, so surprised the other heads of state that they remained silent, and NATO Secretary General Joseph Luns immediately adjourned the session, according to these officials who were present at the summit a month ago."

For several years prior the war had raged between the U.S. and the Soviet Union. There was just no public admission of the fact that the war was already under way between the superpowers.

On July 13, *Pravda* published a speech by Soviet Defense Minister Marshal Ustinov which said that the U.S. was orchestrating a trade, credit and technological war against the Soviet Union. He also gave a blunt warning to

Washington that a: "...pre-emptive first-strike use of nuclear weapons could not insure an American victory."

This indicated that Russia's new leaders knew about the Reagan Administration plan to launch nuclear war soon and they were prepared to defeat the Bolshevik-triggered American first strike if it was carried out. The Satanic Bolshevik-Zionist (Reagan/Begin) axis did not listen. They plunged right ahead with plans for all-out nuclear war.

They had a 5-part plan.

Part 1 was to stir up as much internal turmoil in Russia and her satellites as possible. This included sabotaging an Aeroflot jet which crashed in Moscow on July 6 (are any of you watching what is currently going on over there?)

Part 2 called for conditioning the American people for war (anything like that going on now?).

Part 3 of the plan involved the Space Shuttle Program. *Columbia STS-1* was launched April 12, 1981, on the 20th anniversary of the first orbital space flight of Russian Yuri Gagarin (and about two weeks after the "attempted assassination" of President Reagan). It was shot down by two Russian Cosmospheres. Astronauts John Young and Robert Crippen were burned up when it crashed 85 miles south of Kazan in central Russia. A fake landing was staged at Edwards Air Force Base using the Shuttle *Enterprise* and actors.

Columbia STS-2 was launched November 12, 1981. It supposedly carried Astronauts Joseph Engle and Richard Truly. In fact there were no human pilots aboard. It was shot down by Russian TU-144 jet airplanes using beam weapons, over the White Sea (near Finland on your map).

Columbia STS-3 was launched March 22, 1982. It was supposed to orbit a special new Spy Satellite. It was hardened against attack from Russia's space weapons and armed with a robot-controlled laser that could shoot back. In addition, the Shuttle itself was armed with lasers on this third try. It landed one day behind schedule on March 30, 1982 at White Sands. That is, something landed. Astronauts Lousma and Fullerton successfully deployed a new laser-armed spy satellite then abandoned ship and entered an escape capsule and returned to Earth splashdown in the Indian Ocean. From there they were flown to White Sands Missile Range, where they later faked another Shuttle landing.

The "End of the World" was set for 3:00 PM E.D.T., Friday, Rosh Hashanah, Feast of Trumpets, September 17, 1982. However, what the Superspy Satellite found scared them into waiting, and the new launch date for Nuclear War One was eventually rescheduled for Feast of Trumpets, Thursday, September 20, 1990. This is where I left off in the previous article.

STS-4 was launched June 24, 1982, with Astronauts Thomas Mattingly and Henry Hartsfield (STS is Space Transportation System). Its purpose was to deploy a satellite that would be used to confirm the Phantom aircraft attack which was then the go-ahead for launching the nuclear missiles upon Russian targets. The Attack Confirmation Sensor was placed in geostationary orbit over the Indian Ocean by an auxiliary rocket. It was a cryogenic satellite - that is, it was maintained at super-cold temperatures close to absolute zero. This cold state was intended to protect the satellite from detection by Russian space weapons which would be partially based on "heat" (infrared) sensors.

For several years prior to 1982 the American scientific Intelligence analysts knew that the Russians had a new technology for target acquisition. The Russian technique was not radar, nor was it any other conventional means of detecting and tracking targets. The technique was deadly accurate, reliable, and, unlike radar, impossible to jam. Analysts were convinced they had figured out what the Russian technique was. They believed it was a Russian version of computer-enhanced infra-red detection. This was then developed in the U.S. and was called CEIR (see-er).

Shortly after development, a CEIR-equipped American laser was used to shoot down a Russian Cosmosphere. All objects warmer than absolute zero emit infra-red radiation. The warmer the object is, the more infra-red for sensors to detect it. The only way to hide from CEIR is, therefore, to reduce the temperature as low as possible. That is why the

Air Force Attack Confirmation Sensor was a cryogenic satellite.

When our government tells us that the Shuttle payloads are carrying equipment to peer through clouds and electronic shields around planets and so on, don't you believe it. They are trying to develop a weapon they feel will give them the advantage when they launch all-out nuclear war, which they have tried to do several times. What do you think is really going on now with Korea, Haiti, Bosnia, Iraq, etc.?

Back to Shuttle mission #4. A liquid helium cooling system was originally used to keep the satellite only a few degrees above absolute zero, reducing infra-red emissions to nearly nothing.

The cryogenic design of the Air Force satellite was what gave the Bolshevik war planners so much confidence that it would succeed. They were sure that the Russians would be unable to find it in time to destroy it before it was used in war.

WRONG! The Pentagon Bolsheviks were wrong about the new Russian target-tracking technique. It was not an infra-red technique at all; instead, it was a revolutionary system which detects the atomic vibrations of matter. The Russians call it Psychoenergetic Range Finding, or PRF. The Russians regarded it as their master secret weapon. The longer it remained a mystery to the American Bolsheviks, the better it would be for Russia and so, when Space Shuttle #4 launched the Attack Confirmation Sensor in June, the Russians began the game playing.

GAME PLAYING

Instead of destroying the satellite right away, they allowed it to be orbited successfully. The Russians knew that the Attack Confirmation Satellite could do them no harm until war itself was about to begin, so they allowed it to stay there untouched for as long as possible. The result was exactly as expected: The long term survival of the Air Force Sensor convinced the Bolsheviks that they were right about Russia using CEIR. The Pentagon had walked right into a major intelligence blunder and the Russians were encouraging them to keep it up.

Throughout the summer Rockefeller cartel operatives within the CIA fed updates about the Pentagon war plan to the Russians. Those reports continued to say that the war timetable was remaining unchanged, targeted for mid-September, so the Russian Space Command let the Air Force Sensor alone for the interim time.

Meanwhile, the Russians began preparing in a totally unsuspected way for the moment when they would destroy the satellite. Those preparations had to do with Russia's international telephone service.

MEN IN OUR COUNTRY WERE PLANNING AN ALL-OUT FIRST-STRIKE HYDROGEN BOMB WAR WITH RUSSIA! Our government, friends. THEY HAD A BACKUP PLAN. If something happened to the Attack Confirmation Sensor, they could still tell whether or not the Phantom planes took out the Russian space bases, because the attack would shut down the Soviet telephone system!

Or so they thought.

In order to keep our Intelligence analysts from guessing what was afoot, the Russians resorted to a little disinformation in the right places. They created falsified leaks that there were unsettled conditions in the Kremlin, a power struggle (just like what is said to be going on over there right now). The Bolsheviks in the U.S., who are always struggling for power, swallowed the bait completely. First, in June of 1982 the Soviet Union drastically reduced the number of telephone links to the West. They also made clouded threats to reduce service still further at a later date.

The next major step was to suddenly cut off all automatic dialing service to and from the West. The U.S. Bolsheviks were startled but still did not suspect what it really meant. They were too preoccupied with rumblings of trouble in China to worry for long about Russia's telephones.

On April 21 the Rockefeller faction scored a major gain, while all eyes were on the Falklands crisis. The Bolshevik

Admiral Bobby Inman was forced out as Deputy Director of the CIA and replaced by the Rockefeller man John McMahon. On June 24 the Shuttle was launched, and the next day a coup occurred when Rockefeller operative Alexander Haig was forced TO RESIGN and Bolshevik/Zionist (BZ) GEORGE SHULTZ took over as Secretary of State.

The World War III (Nuclear War I) date was set for September 17 (Feast of Trumpets), but on September 1 Communist Party Chairman Hu Yaobang dropped a bombshell at the Party Congress in Peking. He declared that China should no longer ally itself with the U.S. against Russia; instead Hu said China should regard both superpowers as equal threats but at the same time he included some conciliatory language toward Russia and said high Russian officials would come to China to begin talks around mid-month at China's invitation!

By disowning the Sino-American alliance, Hu Yaobang made it clear that the secret American Stealth attack-base IN CHINA WAS IN SERIOUS JEOPARDY.

That base, located in Red China's western Sinkiang Province, was essential for the intended attack on Russia's two Cosmosphere bases in Siberia. That war base was the reason for the joint communique of August 17 by the U.S. and Red China concerning Taiwan.

The communique committed the U.S. to discontinue arms delivery to Taiwan at some future date in violation of Reagan's past pledges. The communique was agreed to in order to head off a threatened shutdown of the Stealth base by the Chinese, but it was not enough to satisfy the Chinese.

On September 6 former President Richard Nixon arrived in Peking, adding further to the troubles of the Pentagon war-planners (think about what has happened recently with Clinton-Carter, Korea-Haiti and such. THINK!) Nixon had long been cooperating with the Rockefeller cartel.

Nixon went to Peking as a Rockefeller envoy and one with far more credibility for the Chinese than anyone the Bolsheviks had. Nixon shocked the Chinese by confirming what Russian sources had already told them - that the Stealth base was about to be used in war.

Nixon then counseled them not to shut down the base outright at that time for fear of undesirable reactions by the trigger-happy Pentagon Bolsheviks. Instead, he urged the Chinese to start interfering with operations of the Stealth base by bureaucratic devices. That is one thing the Chinese are very, very good at, and they accepted Nixon's advice.

By September 9 the American Stealth base in Sinkiang Province was effectively put out of action. Critical base personnel were tangled up in Chinese "red" tape, preventing them from reporting for duty. The Chinese were giving hints to Washington that all this was due to continued dissatisfaction over Taiwan but the real reason was that they wanted no part of a nuclear war with Russia and Russia would have taken that base right off the map.

The Kremlin received word through Rockefeller channels on September 9 that the Sinkiang Province Stealth base had been effectively neutralized. At that point the Russians could rest assured that even if the Pentagon went through with its nuclear attack plan, Russia's Cosmospheres would survive quite nicely. Russia's critical space triad of strategic weapons COULD NOT BE DESTROYED.

The next Friday, September 10, there was a sudden total shutdown of most International Telephone service to and from Russia but, in order to send a message to America's Bolshevik war planners, a few selected circuits were kept open. Those included Leningrad, Kiev, Minsk, and Tallinn. Their significance lay in the fact that none were targets planned for the initial Stealth attack.

The phone lines were cut off at 7:10 AM E.D.T., or 2:10 PM Moscow time. Moments later the Russian Space Command went to work.

A Russian Jumbo Cosmosphere was parked in a pseudo-orbit about two miles above the Air Force Attack

Confirmation satellite. It had been there for well over two months - from the moment the satellite was launched into orbit from Space Shuttle #4.

By using its electromagnetic propulsion system at low power the Cosmosphere had remained on station instead of slowly drifting away as a normal satellite would and, parked as it was above the downward looking Air Force satellite, the presence of the Cosmosphere was never detected.

The time had come! The Cosmosphere aimed its beam weapon and fired. Shortly after 7:10 AM E.D.T. on Friday, September 10, there was very bad news for the Bolsheviks. At the newly operational Air Force Space Command in Colorado Springs (which used Control Data Corporation computers) there was a sudden loss of signal from their Indian Ocean satellite.

At first they could not believe that their critical Attack Confirmation Satellite had been attacked. All sorts of things were tried in an effort to reestablish contact with the satellite - all to no avail. The satellite no longer existed!

However, their attitude was, it really didn't matter. America was going to be sucked into a totally annihilating war at any rate. We are speaking about reactions and actions regarding the planned war - not what was or was not actually possible.

As that Friday morning of September 10 wore on, the "Project Z" war planners were convened in crisis conference. The question was: What do we do now?

Someone suggested falling back to the back-up plan based on the telephones. "We can still go with the back-up plan - every target in Russia that is attacked by our birds will be obliterated. If international telephone service to Russian target areas is suddenly cut off at zero hour, we can assume that our birds made it."

There is always someone who didn't get the word. Nearly everyone yelled at him, "The Russian phones are already shut down!!"

For a while there was an atmosphere of near panic. Some were sure that a first strike by Russia was sure to follow and that the Pentagon should push the Nuclear Button without delay.

Others argues that if that were the Kremlin's intention, it was already too late - Russia's missiles would be on the way already. Someone suggested that the whole Project Z war plan be aborted and rescheduled for later on.

Everyone agreed on one thing: without the Attack Confirmation Sensor, any attack on Russia had become far more risky. After launching the Stealth planes from Norway and Turkey, it would just have to be assumed that they had destroyed their targets. But, you see, THEY WOULD NOT HAVE! With the Attack Confirmation Satellite gone there would be no way to confirm that, so the all-out follow-up attack by America's nuclear forces might run into a lot more than just the trouble which might have been expected. Not much has changed, friends, we are still ruled by snakes!

The Russians kept the International phone lines shut down for seven hours that day. They wanted to make sure that if the Pentagon Bolsheviks pushed the Panic Button, they would obtain absolutely no intelligence at all by monitoring telephone circuits. After the first two hours of the morning blackout, Secretary of State George Shultz was asked by reporters about it. Shultz told them, "It is very significant," but would say no more.

The idiots still planned to go through with it, and the go-ahead was set for Rosh Hashanah. Project Z would continue on schedule. Meanwhile, every effort would be made to cut through the Chinese red tape that was restricting use of the critical base in Sinkiang Province. At the same time, it was decided to set other plans in motion, too, just in case Project Z should finally fall through.

The countdown continued until Z-Day, Friday morning on September 17. At about 8:30 AM in Washington, a well-known national newspaper reporter was interviewed on the Washington NBC radio station, WRC. The reporter of the

Washington Post called attention to the war warning he had learned about as set forth herein.

He outlined the plan briefly for everyone listening in the Washington metropolitan area, and he added that, "if the Pentagon did have such a plan, public exposure through information brought forth had probably reduced the chances that it would be carried out!"

SATAN CANNOT FUNCTION IN LIGHT!

The countdown was called off with less than five hours to go. It has been rescheduled and aborted at least four times since then, including, as well as I can figure it out, the last time was Rosh Hashanah (Feast of Trumpets) this past month (September 1994).

When ancient Israel was warned about Nebuchadnezzar, they said, "We are God's people, God will protect us." The survivors were marched naked into captivity in Babylon. In 70 AD the Jews in Jerusalem said, "We are God's people, God will save us." They all died.

I continually hear good people today saying, "I can not do anything about it; I leave it up to God; it is HIS will." BUT GOD SAYS, I GIVE YOU FREE WILL, NOT PROPHECIES. PROPHECIES SHALL FAIL, UNLESS YOU CHOOSE THEM (I Cor. 13:8). If you sit and do nothing, while your enemy works to destroy you, then you will be destroyed. Free Will is God's Will. So be it.

Have a nice day.

END OF PART 14.

PART 15:

FORWARD by the Author

Many who read "Fire >From The Sky" (Parts 1-14) were shocked at the story. Some have said "I don't believe it" or "It can't be!"

It is true, whether you believe it or not. For those of you who want to better understand, I will try to share with you some of the things I have learned. I will reveal here some more things that "our" government wants to keep TOP SECRET.

The *FIRE FROM THE SKY* material told of anti-gravity Cosmospheres, invisible ships, and other "far out" stuff such as "Psychoenergetic Range Finding." "Psycho" is right, you may think.

Before you make judgments about something about which you know nothing, why not try to learn more about it?

This material is for those of you who wish to research and learn more about the subject.

THE MARVEL OF EMPTY SPACE

Many top scientists are recently talking about "Universes" coming into existence out of "nothing" and such. How can this be, isn't this thinking a form of insanity?

Those of you who completed your brainwashing classes (I believe you called them college and university courses) a few years ago, may not be aware that the top scientists are now discussing about things coming into existence out of nothing, etc.

Science News, Feb. 18, 1995, in an article called "Making universes, constants out of nothing" (p. 102) says, "Quantum cosmology posits that incredibly tiny universes spontaneously nucleat out of nothing." Weren't we taught that "spontaneous generation" is along the line of "old-wives' tales?"

If you stop and think, you will realize that the material universe had to come into existence out of "nothing," or else it had to have existed forever with no beginning. If you check current literature, you will find much discussion among top physicists, mathematicians, etc., about these questions.

For an example, read "Nothing's plenty: The vacuum in modern quantum field theory" by I.J.R. Aitchison, *Contemporary Physics,* 26(4), 1985, pp. 887-894.

Or see Yu. G. Itnat'ev, "Relativistic kinetics of an anisotropic plasmalike medium with damping in the field of gravitational radiation," *Soviet Physics Journal,* 27(12), Dec. 1984, (English translation: Plenum, June 1985), pp. 1066-1069. The article is about producing energy from a vacuum.

Michio Kaku, author of *Hyperspace, A Scientific Odyssey Through Parallel Universes, Time Warps, and the 10th Dimension,* speaks of empty space "bubbling" and the universe coming into existence from these "bubbles."

Fritjof Capra, in *The Tao of Physics,* (Bantam Paperbacks, p. 208), says:

The distinction between matter and empty space finally had to be abandoned when it became evident that virtual particles can come into being spontaneously out of the void, and vanish again into the void, without any nucleon or other strongly interacting particle being present... the vacuum is far from empty. On the contrary, it contains an unlimited number of particles which come into being and vanish without end.

Here, then, is the closest parallel to the Void of Eastern mysticism in modern physics. Like the Eastern Void, the "physical vacuum" - as it is called in field theory - is not a state of mere nothingness, but contains the potentiality for all forms of the particle world. These forms, in turn, are not independent physical entities, but merely transient manifestations of the underlying Void. As the *sutra* says, "Form is emptiness, and emptiness is indeed form."

The relation between the virtual particles and the vacuum is an essentially dynamic relation; the vacuum is truly a "living Void," pulsating in endless rhythms of creation and destruction. The discovery of the dynamic quality of the vacuum is seen by many physicists as one of the most important findings of modern physics. From the role as an empty container of the physical phenomena, the void has emerged as a dynamic quantity of utmost importance. The results of modern physics thus seem to confirm the words of the Chinese sage Chang Tsai: "When one knows that the Great Void is full of *Ch'i,* one realizes that there is no such thing as nothingness."

This science of applying the physics of creating "something" out of "nothing" is variously called "energetics," "Psychoenergetics," "scalar electromagnetics," "orgone energy," "radionics," etc.

Air & Space magazine, June/July 1995, in the article by Frank Kuznik (p. 70) about making a vacuum, starts:

Can something ever come of nothing? Alex Ignatiev fervently hopes so. Ignatiev, a University of Houston physics and chemistry professor, is scribbling equations for that very process on a board in his cluttered campus office.

Fer-De-Lance, by Col. T.E. Bearden, p. 106, #60, says:

Interactions which occurred between Krushchev and renowned physicist and Nobelian P. Kapitsa are of interest. Krushchev desired absolute defense of the Soviet Union so that the Soviets might be able to launch any action desired without risk of serious concern. Kapitsa informed the Soviet leader that, if a means of total neutralization of foreign missiles was to be found, it could only come from a group of new principles in physics which was called

"Energetics." The term "energetics," of course, was contracted from "psychoenergetics," and is essentially the expanded physics/electromagnetics that this author (Bearden) has dubbed, *scalar electromagnetics.*

Now you know what "psychoenergetics" in the *Fire From The Sky* document is the same as what T.E. Bearden calls "scalar electromagnetics" and the Russians call "energetics." (The Russian rocket that supplies their Mir [Russian for "World"] Space Station is called "Energia.") Bearden has had a considerable amount of writings published on the subject. For a list of his books, contact the Tesla Book Company, P.O. Box 121873, Chula Vista, CA 91912. To further track this information, take note of the following:

So about 1950 or so, the Soviet Union would have started phenomenology experimentation in earnest, with phase conjugate radar mirrors and phase conjugate radars. This is what was referred to as *energetics.* The Soviets began a massive program in energetics about the time of the beginning of the Korean War (p. 86, *Aids, Biological Warfare* by T.E. Bearden).

Building upon Whittaker's important work, I formulated a conceptual revision to electromagnetics, which I dubbed *scalar electromagnetics* to accent that the observable EM vector force fields did not exist as such in a vacuum, but dynamic scalar fields did ["vacuum" is not empty]. I also wished to call strong attention to the fact that observable force does not exist until an observable particle of mass is coupled to the interference of the two scalar fields (much like in the Aharonov-Bohm effect). The Soviets, of course, call this area *energetics.* Energetics technology has been used in gigantic weapons programs of the Soviet Union for decades, and it appears to be developed under the most highly classified program that the Soviets possess. All development and deployment of energetics weapons is under the KGB and controlled directly by that organization, not by the Soviet Armed Forces (p. 88, *Aids, Biological Warfare).*

P. 89 says scalar electromagnetics "allowed the direct engineering of the unified field theory, including structuring the vacuum, curving local spacetime, and producing effects at a distance [like shooting down aircraft] and in higher dimensions."

Please take special note of the above key identification terms "phase conjugate mirrors," as this helps us to identify this subject in other literature! At this point you do not need to understand what it is talking about, just remember the term.

ZERO IS NOT NOTHING

We think of vacuum as zero, nothing, empty, nada, nichts, zilch. If we have 7 rocks and we take away 7 rocks, then we have no rocks, zero rocks.

Later we learn that this is not always so. If we have 7 pieces of matter and 7 pieces of anti-matter, when combined we have zero, although we actually have 14 pieces. You may say that they canceled out each other and you now have nothing. Think of what you are saying. Are you saying that 14 things can be combined and cease to exist and become nothing? Then isn't it conversely possible that "nothing" can yield or be divided into 14 "real" "things."

In algebra we add seven plus-ones to seven minus-ones and get a sum total of zero, again in spite of the fact that there are actually 14 numbers.

Bearden states it as: "Although zero is the absence of just a *single* thing, it can be the presence of *multiple* things" (p. 98, *AIDS*).

You already know that "empty space" is not too empty - it contains radio waves, radar waves, gravity, cosmic rays, etc. Even when these are removed, Bearden and others point out that what we think of as "empty space" actually consists of an incredible amount of positive and negative forces that cancel each other out and sum to zero, thus appearing to be "not there." By "curving space" and such, some forces become "out of balance" and the result is light, or gravity, etc. Normally this is expressed as positive gravity, but under the right conditions, the gravitation force is reversed. This is called anti-gravity. And, yes, my friends, the Russians (and now others) have anti-gravity.

Note: For those readers who might already understand Bearden, I am aware that he says that force does not exist in a vacuum. ("But if force CONSISTS OF mass welded to acceleration, it cannot exist in the absence of mass. Hence force does not exist in vacuum... Therefore neither magnetic field nor gravitational field exist in vacuum. The greatest error in physics has been the assignment of a force as a cause, and thus assigning it to the vacuum. The force is an *EFFECT,* and it never exists in a vacuum, a priori." (Toward A New Electromagnetics Part 4: Vectors And Mechanisms Clarified, slide 14.) The problem is physics and electronics as taught in universities are WRONG and there are problems with definitions, so in this brief introduction, I will say things in a simplified way that may not be correct in a higher understanding, but are necessary steps in beginning to understand. My purpose is not to explain the mechanics of exactly "how it works," I am not qualified to do that. My purpose is to encourage you to break through your brainwashing and WAKE UP to reality and see who is your REAL ENEMY. A *knowledge* of these things *IS* a MATTER OF LIFE AND DEATH.

END OF PART 15.

PART 16:

HAARP, THE SYSTEM (HIGH-FREQUENCY ACTIVE AURORAL RESEARCH PROGRAM)

If all this energy is available from empty space, then how come we are still using fossil fuels, you might ask? The answer is simple. The powers that control us are very rich. They got very rich by controlling such things as the energy (mostly oil and nuclear) industry. The last thing in the world they want is for us to have free energy, which is what results from understanding psychoenergetics (scalar electromagnetics, energetics, etc.).

What does all this mean to you? Let's look at one example. There is a major government project being built in Alaska called the "HAARP" Program. "High-Frequency Active Auroral Research Program." One of the patents for this project claims that it can "cause... total disruption of communications over a very large portion of the Earth... disrupting not only land-based communications, but also airborne communications and sea communications (both surface and subsurface)... missile or aircraft destruction, deflection, or confusion... weather modification... by altering solar absorption... ozone, nitrogen, etc., concentrations could be artificially increased..."

I have a friend who returned from Canada recently. He was in contact with Nick Begich, Jr., who is monitoring the HAARP project (contact Nick at P.O. Box 201393, Anchorage, AK 99520). The friend was told that the government did a full wattage power-up test of HAARP on December 14, 1994.

This date is rather interesting when you match it with the following article which appeared in the *Austin American-Statesman* newspaper on the next day, December 15, 1994.

Western cities in the dark after 8-state mystery blackout. *Power surge might have triggered outages for up to 2 million people, by Richard Cole, AP.

SAN FRANCISCO - An unexplained power surge in the West Coast's main electrical transmission line caused blackouts and other power power disruptions across eight Western states early Wednesday, shutting down a nuclear plant and forcing doctors to operate by flashlight.

As many as two million customers from Arizona to Washington went without power for periods ranging from a few seconds to several hours when a stretch of the giant 500-kilovolt Pacific power grid went dead just after midnight.

The blackout darkened the homes of 1 million California customers and interrupted power to patches of Arizona, Nevada, Utah, Oregon, Washington, Idaho and Montana.

An initial inspection showed no breaks in the section where the trouble began, a 60-mile line between Tracy and Fresno in California's Central Valley.

"We believe it was a power surge from outside our service area, and a substation tripped to prevent an overloading of our system, just as a circuit breaker would do in your house," said Bill Sessa, Pacific Gas & Electric Co. spokesman.

Now let's look more closely at one of the HAARP patents (excerpted from HAARP file downloaded from the Internet):

INVENTOR: Peter Koert, Washington, DC ASSIGNEE: APTI, Inc., Washington, DC (U.S. Corp.) APPL-NO: 07/524,435 DATE FILED: May 17, 1990 INT-CL: [5] HO4B 7/00; HO1Q 3/22 US-CL-ISSUED: 342/367, 372 US-CL-CURRENT: 342/367, 372 SEARCH-FLD: 342/367, 353, 371, 372; 455/64 REF-CITED:

U.S. PATENT DOCUMENTS

3,445,844 5/1969 Grossi et al. 342/367 4,253,190 2/1981 Csonka 455/12 4,686,605 8/1987 Eastlund 361/231 4,712,155 12/1987 Eastlund et al. 361/231 4,817,495 4/1989 Drobot 89/1.11 ART-UNIT: 222 PRIM-EXMR: Gregory C. Issing LEGAL-REP: Foley & Lardner

ABSTRACT:

This invention relates to generation of an Artificial Ionospheric Mirror (AIM), or a plasma layer in the atmosphere. The AIM is used like the ionosphere to reflect RF energy over great distances. A tiltable AIM is created by a heater antenna controlled in phase and frequency. The heater antenna phase shift scans a beam to paint a plasma layer. Frequency is changed to refocus at continually higher altitudes to tilt the plasma layer.

Here is a quotation from *Youth Action News* concerning HAARP:

Dr. Bernard J. Eastlund's Aug. 13, 1991 patent (No. 5,038,664) describes the system now being implemented in the U.S. HAARP transmitter:

If the particles which form the plasma along the Earth's field lines continued to move with a constant pitch angle, often designated "alpha," they would soon impact on the Earth's surface. However, in converging force field, the pitch angle does change in such a way as to allow the particle to turn around and avoid impact.

The point at which the particle turns around is called the mirror point. This process is repeated at the other end of the field line. The particle again turns around and this is called the "conjugate point" of the original mirror point. The particle is therefore trapped and bounces between the two magnetic mirrors. The particle can continue oscillating in space in this manner for long periods of time. (Letter with July 1994 copy of *Youth Action News,* P.O. Box 312, Alexandria, VA 22313.)

I think it is obvious that the HAARP project is the same as the scalar electromagnetics phase conjugate mirrors that Bearden describes in articles he has written detailing Russian weather warfare against the United States and the shoot-down of the *Challenger* Space Shuttle, the destruction of numerous rockets and missiles, and relative to the ongoing (including recent) shoot-downs of many aircraft (such as the USAIR crash near Pittsburgh). And now, it was revealed soon after the Oklahoma City Federal Building bombing, that there were two bomb blasts, the second of which came from overhead pulse beam blasts. (*CONTACT: The Phoenix Project* newspaper, April 25, 1995, p. 31. For subscriptions, call 1-800-800-5565.)

CONFUSION

One of the results that scalar electromagnetics can produce, as listed above, is "confusion." We hear of controllers becoming "confused" in Iraq and shooting down our own helicopters. We hear of a pilot trying to land on a carrier and becoming "confused" and crashing.

Recently in the news we hear of a helicopter pilot in Korea who got "confused" and strayed across the border and was shot down. In today's newspapers, as I write these notes, is an article which states: "Human error alone was to blame for a U.S. Army helicopter straying into North Korea and getting shot down last winter, but no one involved should be punished, the Army said in a report Thursday. It said Hilemon and Hall had become disoriented in unfamiliar terrain." (*Austin American Statesman,* "Army blames none for North Korea shootdown," p. A3, June 23, 1995.)

This sounds reasonable enough until you stop and think. It is almost impossible for today's highly sophisticated military vehicles to become "lost," unless something pretty major happens, because of geo-positioning satellites and such. Any fisherman can buy a little hand-held device that will tell him where he is. How can pilots flying one of the world's most dangerous borders just "stray" across?

Do you remember the infamous raid into Iran to rescue the hostages during President Carter's administration, April 24-26, 1980? If you recall, the raid failed, because the helicopters got lost and had their equipment fouled because of sandstorms and the pilots got "confused" and crashed into each other. It was a very embarrassing incident for the United States.

These were the most highly-trained people in the world (U.S. Army Special Forces Delta Teams) flying the best equipment in the world, and they got defeated by "dust storms?" Did it never occur to any of the pilots to simply fly above the dust storms? Doesn't that suggest there must be more to the story?

Let's examine this event more closely. Col. Charlie Beckwith was the officer in charge of the Delta Teams and writes of the event in his book *Delta Force.* (Harcourt Brace Janovich, with Donald Knox, copyright 1983.)

Three troop-carrying MC-130s and three fuel-bearing EC-130s left from Masirah Island off the coast of Oman and flew to a desert spot in Iran. There they were to wait 30 minutes for eight helicopters to arrive. Then the 118 man assault force would load on to the RH-53D helicopters and continue the raid.

For some reason, the helicopters were up to an hour and a half late. When the helicopters started arriving, Beckwith quoted them as saying, "Its been a hell of a trip," and "words to the effect that if we had any sense we would move the helios out into the desert and load everyone on C-130s and go home."

Strange words for the most highly-motivated, gung-ho soldiers in the military, don't you think? "I didn't understand how tough a time he'd really had; and he didn't elaborate on his statement." Two helicopters never arrived at all, and the six that did eventually arrive came from scattered in all directions.

One pilot said, "I don't know who's really running things at my level, but I'll tell you this much, that some very careful consideration ought to be given to calling off this operation. You have no idea what I've been through. The damndest sandstorm I've ever seen hit us. It was tough! I gotta tell you, I'm not sure we're going to make it. I'm really not sure we can make it."

"Here were two very strong officers whom we'd observed and knew, who now were pretty well shattered.

"Things were so confused that the mission was called off. They began to load back onto the C-130s to leave. I turned around and began to walk quietly toward the head of the line. It was nearly 2:40 A.M. Some of the C-130 pilots had started to gun their engines. Dust was blowing all around. Between wind gusts, I saw one of the choppers lift off and bank to the left. It slid slightly backward. Then, BALLLOOEE! It wasn't a bomb, not a CRACK! It was a THUMP!"

Next a "gasoline" explosion. A blue fireball ballooned into the night. Obviously, the chopper I'd just seen lift off - it had been Major Schaefer's - had struck the northernmost EC-130, the one on which Blue Element had just boarded" (pp.

244-248).

P. 251: "Just two hours into the mission, this helicopter received an indication that one of its main rotor blades was about to malfunction. It landed at once. Another helicopter (Number Eight) landed with it. When it was determined that Number Six could not proceed farther, its crew climbed aboard the other chopper, which then proceeded to Desert One. Helicopter Number Five, the one in which Colonel Pittman was flying, turned back to the carrier four-fifths of the way to Desert One, when after flying through several cyclonic sandstorms, it began experiencing instrument problems."

Dr. Peter Beter recorded the following comments on this incident a month later on June 28, 1980, which were published in *Wisconsin Report* newspaper on July 31, 1980. (Dr. Beter was an attorney practicing before the U.S. Supreme Court, appointed to U.S. Export-Import Bank by President Kennedy, was involved in intelligence activities, originator of the term "stagflation", responsible for revealing that there is no gold in Fort Knox, and had many intelligence contacts. He had access to very high-level sources of information.) [Quoting:]

The American Commandoes who were sent into Iran tried their best to follow orders and do their duty; but unknown to them, those who had planned the raid did not intend for it to succeed. They were supposed to reach Teheran but discovered too late that they were too small a force to do the job. As soon as the Commandoes ran into big trouble, that was to be used as an excuse for American navy jets to strafe Teheran; and with American passion stirred up, the Iran crisis was to escalate with additional military moves. But for more than a year now, Russian Intelligence has been informed about even the most secret plans in Washington; and so the Russians were ready.

They unraveled the latest Bolshevik war plan in two ways. First the huge armada of cosmospheres were floating overhead on April 25 as the American helicopter force entered Iran. Using their weather modification capabilities, the Cosmospheres intensified dust storms in the area. They also utilized microwave brain-scrambling radiation to cause nausea, disorientation, and fatigue among the helicopter crews. The Russian brain-scrambler is the same technology which I first revealed in Audio Letter No. 20.

The Russians were hoping to cause the mission to be given up as hopeless without casualties, but the American Commando force reached its first check point, regrouped and prepared to continue.

So the Cosmospheres turned up their brain-scrambling transmitters to full power. One helicopter took off but veered off crazily, and sliced into a C-130 Troop Transport airplane. Two others prepared to take off. The Cosmospheres overhead fired low-power bursts from their Particle Beams, rotor blades flew off, and the helicopters went nowhere. At that point it was obvious that it was all over.

The raid was aborted, and all energy shifted to efforts to explain away the disaster to the public. Soon the charred bodies of slain Commandoes were flown home to Dover Air Force Base, Delaware. It was the second time in less than two years for Dover to receive bodies from a secret Commando raid by the United States! The first time they had paid the price for a successful operation was in Guyana [Jonestown]. On April 28... Cyrus Vance resigned as Secretary of State in protest.

In the next paragraph, Beter continues by telling of Russian pulse beams triggering the eruption of Mt. St. Helens on May 18, but that is another story.

Don't you think you NEED to learn and understand what has been going on?

The single best source of ongoing and background information is *CONTACT* newspaper. For subscription information, call 1-800-800-5565 or write Contact, Inc., P.O. Box 27800, Las Vegas, NV 89126.

For Dr. Beter's information, write to the *Wisconsin Report,* P.O. Box 45, Brookfield, WI 53008-0045.

Also write for the Tesla Book Company's catalog and order *Fer-De-Lance* and/or *AIDS: Biological Warfare* by Lt.

Col. Tom E. Bearden, Tesla Book Company, P.O. Box 121873, Chula Vista, CA 91912.

For [*more*] Tesla information contact International Tesla Society, P.O. Box 5636, Colorado Springs, CO 80931.

Truth is the only thing that can save you. Learning Truth is a lifelong journey. May you enjoy the trip.

END OF PART 16.

PART 17:

THE JONESTOWN MASSACRE HOAX

In studying what the truth is behind many of the events in recent history, you will find some amazing interconnections. Once you realize that the same "elite" groups of conspirators are behind many of our problems, it should not be surprising that there are connections because it is the same people involved.

A better known example that could be given of this is E. Howard Hunt. Most researchers know that Hunt was involved in such seemingly unrelated events as the Bay of Pigs invasion, the Kennedy assassination and Watergate. If you "do your homework," you will find connections between the Jonestown massacre, the Waco massacre, and the Oklahoma City federal building bombing.

To understand the Jim Jones Jonestown tragedy, you need to understand some of the background.

In 1976-79, I worked in the classified section of Control Data Corporation. Control Data had the world's most powerful computers at that time, and they were used by the U.S. in its most secret and most important projects. I was also coordinator for the Mensa Special Interest Group called the "Doomsday Club."

I wrote a newsletter called the *Doomsday Club News and Intelligence Report.* I learned some things that concerned me about what Russia was doing and quoted an article from the Oct. 2, 1978, *Aviation Week and Space Technology* magazine in my October newsletter.

I learned, for instance, that Russia had been shooting down our spy satellites. What I did not know at the time was that Dr. Peter David Beter was also concerned because he was getting information superior to some of our intelligence services about what was really going on.

For example, in June 1976, Dr. Beter received information that Russia had planted a nuclear bomb on Mt. Desert Island, Maine, near the Seal Harbor home of Nelson Rockefeller. He reported the information to General George S. Brown, Chairman of the Joints Chiefs of Staff, who had the information checked AND FOUND THE BOMB.

Nelson Rockefeller immediately put his home up for sale, although it had been in the Rockefeller for two generations. Dr. Beter said, "But my report of June 1976 about the Seal Harbor bomb led to far more than the present unsettled real estate conditions there. It proved to high intelligence that the Dr. Beter Audio Letter could be trusted to tell the truth; and from that point onward, I began receiving large amounts of intelligence information that is not entrusted to any other public information channel." (Dr. Beter Audio Tape #39 recorded 10/29/78.)

Dr. Beter continued to give Gen. Brown such information as the precise location of Russia's secret missile and bomb emplacement, including some that had been planted on American soil and in U.S. rivers, near dams, etc. Russia would plant them, Dr. Beter would tell Brown, and Brown would have them removed.

The Bolsheviks in our government who were working with Russia arranged to have Brown replaced, and the bombs were no longer removed. On October 1, 1976, President Gerald Ford (a secret Communist and member of the

Michigan Mafia) signed what has been called the treasonous Red Friday Agreement and the Russians were allowed to continue without interference.

In Beter's Audio Letter #39, recorded 10/29/78, and printed in *Wisconsin Report* of November 16, 1978, he quoted the same October 2nd article from *Aviation Week* that I quoted in *my* October 1978 newsletter, about Russia attaining Particle Beam weapons technology. In his letter he said, "Last September 1977 I reported Russia's first operational use of Particle Beam weapons in space.

On September 20, 1977, the Russians blasted an American Spy Satellite into a huge fireball in space as it passed over the Petrozvodsk Observatory in northern Russia. And barely a week later, on September 27, 2977, the secret American Moon Base in Copernicus Crater was silenced by Russia's neutron-beam attack from Earth orbit. America had just lost the Battle of the Harvest Moon. Immediately America was forced to stop short in her secret Beam-weapons race with Russia, for suddenly our Unseen Rulers were teetering on the edge of war itself - and Russia suddenly was calling the shots."

And now, friends, you know what the Apollo Moon Landing (hoax) was about - it was a cover for the real above-top-secret military missions. Although top secret, hints of the base have appeared here and there. The December 1993/January 1994 issue of *Air & Space* magazine, in the article "Securing the High Ground," said:

"Details of the moon base, which were contained in a thick secret report called 'Military Lunar Base Program or S.R. 183 Lunar Observatory Study,' were revealed by the Air Force Ballistic Missile Division's Directorate of Space Planning and Analysis *in April 1960.* The heart of S.R. (Study Requirement) 183 was an underground lunar-Based Earth-Bombardment System that would insure 'positive retaliation' in the event of a Soviet attack against the United States. Although the report said that construction of the missile complex could be postponed for three or four years, it called for active planning for the base to begin '*immediately* if maximum military advantage is to be derived from a lunar program."

The broad outlines of the moonbase plan had been published in the April and September 1959 issues of *Aviation Week.* Richard Hoagland, R. Ren_, Bill Kaysing, and others have determined that the NASA moon landings as presented were hoaxed and they discuss what might really have happened. Hoagland has found evidence of the remains of highly advanced structures on the Moon AND Mars. What Hoagland does not know is that *some* of those structures could be American built. This is a story that remains to be told.

You will wonder where Beter got his information, including information that not even our highest intelligence services knew. Most of you are not ready for the answer to THAT QUESTION, but for those of you who are ready, I will tell you that the answer is revealed on page 204 of *Missing the Lifeboat?* Phoenix Journal #86 and page 29 of *Ascension or Never-Never Land?* Phoenix Journal #98. [Call 1-800-800-5565 to order.]

On May 25, 1961, President Kennedy (in his state of the union address, not the inaugural address as sometimes reported) made the famous speech in which he said: "I believe that this nation should commit itself to achieving the goal, before this decade is out, of landing a man on the Moon and returning him safely to Earth."

Apparently he did not know at the time, although he soon began to learn, that at the time he made that statement, there was a base already on the Moon. A year later, on May 22, 1962, a space probe landed on Mars and confirmed the existence of an environment which could support life. Not long afterward the construction of a colony on the planet Mars was begun in real earnest.

If you want to learn more, I suggest you research the subject known among the UFO crowd as "Alternative 3" (the book by that name is about 75% true and 25% disinformation). "Bob Grodin" was a pseudonym for an astronaut who saw the real base. The moonbase was set up by our *actual* rulers, known as Bilderbergers (this project was headed by the particular group known as the Jason Society), with headquarters in Switzerland.

They have meetings to make their plans and *Spotlight* newspaper likes to brag that it is able to penetrate the meetings. What *Spotlight* doesn't know is the main meetings were conducted on a nuclear submarine under the

Polar ice cap. There are fewer party crashers there. For proof that NASA has lied to you, contact Richard Hoagland of the Mars Mission. While you are at it, ask him about Dan Quayle. *(The Mars Mission,* 122 Dodd St. Weehawken, NJ 07087).

The RAND Corporation developed nuclear powered machinery for creating the underground tunnels at the base. The machinery was also used in the U.S. to build a huge network of underground tunnels and complexes. You might want to read *Underground Bases and Tunnels - What is the Government Trying to Hide?* by Richard Sauder, a book available from *Spotlight* newspaper.

People who worked on the Apollo programs and in NASA will say that I do not know what I am talking about, after all, they were "there," they "know." For serious open-minded researcher, those who realize that something is fishy with NASA and want to know the real truth, I will tell you that the *REAL* Moon vehicles operate out of S-4 in Nevada (and sometimes Area 51), not to mention the Russian bases.

CUBAN MISSILE CRISIS

In 1962, it was learned that Russia was deploying nuclear missiles in Cuba. The information was obtained from photos taken by a U2 aircraft piloted by Roger Chaffee. President John F. Kennedy, thanks to information provided to him by the Russian defector Colonel Oleg Penkovsky, knew Russia's military weaknesses and warned Khruschev to pull the missiles out. Khruschev was in no position to stand up to Kennedy, so he removed the missiles. The story has been written many times in books and articles.

The U2 pilot Roger Chaffee later was chosen as an astronaut on Apollo 1, commanded by veteran astronaut Gus Grissom (Mercury and Gemini flights). The evidence indicates Chaffee, Grissom and White were murdered, perhaps because Grissom did not like to cooperate in the hoax.

Grissom told his wife, "If there ever is a serious accident in the Space Program, it's likely to be me." Grissom tried to get NASA chief administrator Joe Shea to go through the Apollo test with him. Chaffee had never been in space, but was a veteran of secret intelligence missions such as the U2 flights. NASA had 7 oxygen fire accidents before Grissom, Chaffee, and White were "accidently" burned up in Apollo I in January, 1967.

General Phillips, Frank Borman's superior, did an investigation which was withheld from the public as "classified." Why classified? What were they hiding? Eight astronauts died of "accidents" in 1967. Is it any wonder that the other astronauts "got with the program?" For more details see *NASA Mooned America!* by R. Ren_. (R. Ren_, 31 Burgess Place, Passaic, NJ 07055.)

What Kennedy did *not* know when the Cuban Missile Crisis occurred was that Russia was very close to deploying a totally new weapons system. Khruschev lost much face with his countrymen, temporarily. To regain face with his leaders, on April 10, 1963, he tested his new weapons system by destroying the *U.S.S. Thresher* nuclear submarine. That is another story for another time.

What all the many books about the Cuban Missile Crisis did not tell you, however, was where Khruschev moved those missiles.

At that time the secret Rockefeller/Soviet alliance was in full swing, and the long range joint plans for a controlled Nuclear War were moving right along. Both sides were looking ahead toward an eventual double-cross, but that still lay far in the future at that time. The deliberate strengthening of Russia at America's expense was part of their joint plan for World Government and conquest.

The Cuban Missile Crisis of 1962 threw a temporary monkey wrench into the program when President Kennedy intervened personally and stopped the nuclear arming of Cuba; and for doing that, and other humane "indiscretions," he lost his life in Dallas barely a year later. For additional information on Kennedy's secret plans, read *Final Judgment* by Michael Collins Piper, available from *Spotlight* newspaper, 300 Independence Ave. SE, Washington, D.C. 20003.

PART 18:

GUYANA

Kennedy's successor, Lyndon Johnson, made sure that *he* followed the script more carefully. In the wake of the Cuban crisis, the Russians needed a new forward base in the Caribbean area for strategic purposes until the heat was off in Cuba. To accommodate Russia, Guyana was selected for this purpose, and David Rockefeller saw to it that a Marxist named Forbes Burnham became Prime Minister. In return, the Chase Manhattan Bank became fiscal agent for Guyana, giving Rockefeller access to the gold produced in Guyana; and as a key factor in all this, then-President Lyndon Johnson in 1965 turned over the American Air Base, Atkinson Field, to Guyana.

America's right to retain control over the base for several more decades was simply thrown away without any excuses offered. Atkinson Field, which was then renamed Temehri Airfield, is south of Georgetown, the capital city. This is the airfield to which American helicopters carried bodies to be airlifted to America after the Jonestown disaster.

When Johnson gave the Temehri Airfield to Marxist Guyana, he handed Russia a very large plum indeed. The Temehri Airfield is the largest in all of Latin America, larger even than New York's largest airport, the John F. Kennedy Airport; and its location makes it ideal for ferrying Cuban troops and supplies to Africa.

As a result, Johnson's action on behalf of the Rockefellers robbed the United States of an important logistic connection to Africa while opening the door for Cuban troops. Our later troubles with Cuban troops in Angola and elsewhere in Africa were partly the result.

For a number of years, Russian military activity in Guyana was heavily concentrated around the vicinity of the Temehri Airfield. In 1974, the Russians placed missiles in sites that ringed the airfield. Then the missiles were pulled out from those locations and moved to a separate missile complex west of Georgetown, over the following two years.

In that new complex, the missiles were deployed at sites scattered over an area some 30 miles in diameter. In the approximate center was a Command and Control installation commanded by Russian personnel. And the plot began to thicken.

After the missile base relocation was completed, the missile complex was centered at a point about 70 miles northwest of Temehri Airfield. It was no accident that the Peoples' Temple kibbutz was located so close to the missile base.

At the time the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) was established in WW II, Nelson Rockefeller already had a strong presence in Latin America with his own agency called the Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs. I am reminded of a story told to me by a friend who, as a young German in South America, was arrested for being German and sent to a concentration camp in Texas for the duration of World War II. Later he often returned to South America. He told me of the time he lived near the border of Colombia and Venezuela and admired the huge beautiful field of flowers owned by Rockefeller. Did you know that Rockefeller loved flowers and was in the flower business? What kind of flowers, you ask?

POPPIES!

ORIGINS OF THE PEOPLES' TEMPLE

The origins of the Peoples' Temple in the 1950s had nothing to do with government intrigues. It was not until about 1970 that certain elements of the United States intelligence community began to infiltrate and subvert the Peoples'

Temple. The Rockefeller brothers have always had a standard practice of supporting not only the faction in power but also spies and opponents to that faction - and who doesn't want a little "free" funding and support money? In this manner they are always in a position, at least theoretically, to cut down anyone who tries to break free of their control.

In the case of Guyana, the Rockefellers wanted to have such a tool in Guyana as a check on Forbes Burnham, the Prime Minister, whom they had put in power with the use of their money. Certain elements within the United States intelligence community under general coordination by the CIA were given the task of finding ways of accomplishing this.

In the course of evaluating various options, it was concluded that the Peoples' Temple would prove ideal. The psychological profile of the leader, Jim Jones, indicated that he could be converted into a powerful tool of the Unseen Rulers. Contrary to reports in the controlled major media, Jim Jones was born a Jew, and he already exhibited tendencies toward kibbutz-style organization that could be channeled into useful directions. This would be brought about through a combination of both conscious and unconscious factors.

At the conscious level, money and powerful political support would be channeled in his direction; at the unconscious level, the technique of psychological programming would be employed.

Gradually, Jim Jones would lose control of his own personality and become what our Unseen Rulers wanted him to be. The process would inevitably create tremendous internal conflicts and turn Jim Jones into a troubled and dangerous man.

CHANGES IN BEHAVIOR

By 1973, changes in Jones' behavior began to be noticed by his friends and followers. His conversion into a semi-conscious agent of death and intrigue was underway in earnest by that time. That same year the mushrooming funds of the Peoples' Temple were used to launch the agricultural kibbutz at Jonestown, Guyana, though only a few people went there at that time.

Guyana was a rigid Marxist police state, and no one could have launched a new enterprise like the Commune without its approval by Forbes Burnham; but David Rockefeller agents made sure that Burnham received all the assurances he needed that the Jones compound would fit neatly into the Marxist environment of Guyana.

At the same time, Forbes Burnham had begun double-crossing David Rockefeller, exactly as had been feared. He was now playing ball politically but he was hiding much of Guyana's gold production in caves in the mountains. David Rockefeller found this out sometime later, but by then the much bigger problem was developing from a double-cross by Russia so Burnham was left untouched in order to make way for bigger things.

By summer 1974, the Rockefeller brothers were still soundly in bed with the Kremlin, and there were already ominous signs that something was happening in Russia which they did not understand; but they simply could not imagine that their old Kremlin allies, the Bolsheviks, were being overthrown.

Public warnings about Guyana missiles were denied or ignored. The planned and programmed Nuclear War was being blueprinted for the late 1970s and they did not want the plan to be spoiled by public awareness; but two years later Russia's all-out military double-cross of America began with the Underwater Missile Crisis of 1976, another story for another time.

MAJOR TARGET

The Guyana missile base was one of the major targets of the revised planning. When this planning began more than two years prior, the Space Battle of the Harvest Moon still lay in the future. It seemed quite inconceivable that America could lose its secret beam-weapons base which was soon to be operational on the Moon; and so long as they had this Moon Base to depend on, our Unseen Rulers thought they could not lose. But in light of the Underwater Missile double cross, they wanted to be able to pull as many of Russia's military teeth as possible. In this way, their destruction of Russia would be even more complete than originally planned.

The planners of Operation Guyana were given a difficult problem to solve. The objective was to wipe out the Russian missile base in Guyana by removing the threat it posed to the Panama Canal and southern American cities; but this was to be a pre-war operation carried out covertly and with complete surprise. It had to be covertly, because neither the United States nor Russia could afford to have it known that the base ever existed; and the surprise had to be complete, because with even the briefest warning the base could be reinforced and defended by Cuban troops.

From these requirements it was concluded that a commando-style raid would be necessary, something like the Israeli raid at Entebbe Airport in Uganda in July 1976. Any other kind of attack would have required our leaders to do what President Kennedy did in 1962, that is, tell the American people what was afoot and ask for our support. At all costs, the one thing our Unseen Rulers were determined not to do was to tell us anything. The problem then arose - how to get the joint attacking forces into Guyana in a force large enough and fast enough to do the job without betraying their hand.

Wiping out a base like that one in Guyana, after all, was no small task. It was then concluded that somehow some very sudden, massive, compelling excuse would have to be provided in order to enable the secret joint military to enter Guyana temporarily. The excuse, whatever it was, would have to be so visible as to tie Russia's hands so that Russia could not retaliate in Guyana without giving away what she had been up to there; and the excuse would have to appear non-military yet require military expertise.

Furthermore, some provision would have to be made for ALL casualties in the missile-base attack to be removed from Guyana after the raid, otherwise their presence in Guyana could have been made the basis of an international incident trumped up around some different story unrelated to the secret missile base.

For example, the government of Guyana, following Russian dictates, might have publicly displayed the bodies of the joint military forces killed in the attack and said they were killed in an attempted coup d'etat against Forbes Burnham. It was a very big order, but the Jonestown kibbutz proved to be the answer. All that was necessary was to arrange for many hundreds of American citizens to die *suddenly* in Guyana and under conditions guaranteeing instant massive publicity.

The sheer enormity of the tragedy would require military involvement, and the location of Jonestown was made to order. Helicopters commuting between the Temehri Airfield and Jonestown would naturally fly over the missile complex - whose details were known in spite of expert camouflage. This meant that joint special armed forces could be set down near the perimeters of the missile base and later recovered, along with casualties, with relative ease.

And as the reporters at the Temehri Airfield watched helicopters leaving to the northwest and return from the same direction, they were led to assume that all were going to and from Jonestown some 150 miles away. They had no way of knowing that many of the flights were to and from the Russian missile base, which lay in the same direction but only half as far distant.

IN THE BEGINNING OF THE SCHEME

When it was decided to use mass deaths at Jonestown as a cover for the missile-base attack, Jonestown was functioning only as an outpost of the Peoples' Temple. There were not enough people there to provide a sufficiently major incident to serve the intended purpose, and so, through both direct and indirect means, Jim Jones was persuaded to go to the Guyana kibbutz himself, taking as many of his flock as would follow him.

That turned out to be about 25% to 30%, and by following him they automatically identified themselves as the group most highly dependent upon Jones personally. They were also most susceptible to the combined influences of exhaustion, intimidation, and isolation from outside help - in other words, just right for thorough brainwashing.

Ever since the days of the Korean War it had been known conclusively that brainwashing techniques can cause many people to do all kinds of things. Even hardened American GIs in Korea fell victim to brainwashing in surprising numbers because they did not understand what they were up against. The Jonestown victims were anything but hardened soldiers.

In August 1977, Jim Jones left for Guyana with his large sacrificial flock. That same month, United Nations Ambassador Andrew Young carried a message to Prime Minister Forbes Burnham of Guyana. He said that under certain conditions the United States and the World Bank would increase its aid to Guyana - that is, line Burnham's pocket by a factor of ten times more than previous levels. And so the key disaster of Jonestown was set into motion shortly before the Battle of the Harvest Moon.

POOR LEO RYAN

To trigger the whole tragedy and in a blare of publicity, the interest of late Congressman Leo J. Ryan was developed and programmed.

In a display of courage that is practically unknown today in the U.S. Congress, Ryan went to Guyana knowing that it might be dangerous. But what he did not know, of course, was that he had been lured into making a trip whose tragic outcome was planned well in advance.

Congressman Ryan and those who died with him at Port Kaituma Airport were casualties in the secret war that was leading up to Nuclear War One. And so were the hundreds of other American civilians who died in the so-called "mass suicide" at Jonestown, Guyana.

As the time approached for Congressman Ryan to make his anticipated trip to Guyana, other activities were set in motion on the diplomatic and military state. It was essential that Russia's attention be diverted away from Guyana until too late to take action to protect the missile base.

Russia's prize in the Western Hemisphere, of course, is Cuba; and so in the final days before the Battle of Guyana on Thanksgiving Day 1978, the trumped up MIG-23 crisis was used to divert Russian attention to Cuba. Only too late did the Kremlin discover that the real target was not Cuba but Guyana.

PART 19:

THE BATTLE OF THANKSGIVING DAY 1978

Close aides of the late Congressman Leo Ryan have reported publicly that his ill-fated decision to go to Guyana was triggered by a State Department report to him that he found totally unsatisfactory. This reaction of Ryan's had been correctly predicted and, in fact, deliberately encouraged. With elections coming up, Congressman Ryan decided to schedule the trip after the election during the Congressional recess.

This was a quite natural decision, and had also been anticipated by the planners behind the scenes. No politician would miss the opportunity to campaign right up to election day.

As the time approached for his trip, the false issue of the Cuban MIG-23 crisis erupted. The Carter Administration had learned nearly a year prior that the Russians were going to send the MIG-23s to Cuba and decided that it would be a perfect pretext for a fake crisis. The MIG-23 can carry certain types of nuclear weapons as claimed; but even this role it is a tactical weapon best suited for support of ground or naval forces.

The MIG-23 in and of itself did not threaten America in the same way that the 1962 Cuban missiles did, and so when the United States began playing up the MIG-23s, it was very obvious to the Kremlin that this was a deliberate effort to stir up public tension over Cuba.

The questions were: Exactly what was the United States up to? Would the Carter Administration be so crazy as to invade Cuba? Such a thing sounded irrational, but America's Unseen Rulers were behaving more and more irrationally.

This, too, was partially deliberate and was intended to keep the chess players in the Kremlin off balance, but it was also partly a result of the increasing degree of control over America by those Satanic schizophrenics, the Bolsheviks.

Cuba was, after all, very important to Russia, for Russia was looking ahead to world domination after Nuclear War I; and for that, Cuba is Russia's main beach-head in the Western Hemisphere. Even more urgently, Cuba was the unadmitted home of Russia's Caribbean Submarine Fleet, and that fleet had repeatedly moved into attack positions in the Gulf of Mexico over the prior two years and more during periods of tension.

As if that were not enough, there were concentrations of nuclear weapons in at least four land locations in Cuba. One was near the north coast roughly 10 miles inland southeast of Cardenas. This location is 150 miles due south of Cape Sable, Florida. A second site was about 150 miles to the east-southeast of that and about 10 miles inland from the north coast. One hundred twenty five miles farther to the southeast was a third concentration 15 miles northeast of Marti, well inland. A fourth nuclear site was near the eastern tip of Cuba, 18 miles north-northwest of the United States Naval Base at Guantanamo Bay.

With all this at stake, American publicity over the MIG-23s caused worry in the Kremlin. And in early November the tension increased when the United States began sending SR-71 reconnaissance flights over Cuba - shades of 1962 and the U-2.

In response, massive formations from the Atlantic, Pacific, and Caribbean Submarine Fleets of the Russian Navy began fanning out along America's east, west, and gulf coasts on November 6. They did not deploy into attack formations but their sheer numbers signaled a clear warning to Washington. At that moment they were still on station, many with neutron weaponry.

Then during the week immediately preceding the tragedies in Guyana the MIG-23 pseudo crisis built to a climax. Beginning on Tuesday, November 14, a huge combined American and British naval Task Force began heading toward Cuba. By midweek, Cuban defense forces were on full alert, and on Thursday, November 16, a group of twelve United States Senators in Moscow - supposedly to discuss the SALT talks - met with Russia's Kosygin.

There they pressed the alleged issue of the Cuban MIG-23 argument, calling it a "false issue." As a former test pilot and America's first astronaut in orbit, Senator John Glenn knew what he was talking about, but Kosygin's anger over the other comments about the MIGs provided the United States intelligence community with valuable proof that the decoy action toward Cuba was working. The next day, November 17, Russia publicly admitted sending MIG-23s to Cuba, calling them strictly defensive weapons.

The same day an editorial in the *Washington Post* typified the crescendo of media attention to the Cuban MIG-23s. It was titled: "A New Cuban Missile Crisis?" The very next day, Saturday, November 18, Congressman Leo Ryan, three newsmen and a woman seeking to escape from Jonestown were slaughtered at the Port Kaituma Airport. At least a dozen other people were also wounded, but there was no effort to destroy the airplane filled with terrified escapees from Jonestown. Instead, many witnesses were left alive, and a smaller plane managed to take off right after the airport massacre and report the attack in the capital, Georgetown.

Immediately world attention was focused on Guyana, and meanwhile the mass murder at Jonestown - wrongly called a mass suicide - was underway.

At this point, the elaborate decoy action toward Cuba was no longer needed, so the Pentagon announced that a routine naval exercise was in progress which would approach no closer to Cuba than 50 miles. Cuban defense forces relaxed, but the real action was only beginning in Guyana. The methodical executions of Congressman Ryan and three prominent newsmen had guaranteed that Jonestown would shortly be in the glare of publicity. Having guaranteed this publicity, Jim Jones then ordered the mass executions at the Jonestown kibbutz.

DETAILS OF MASSACRE

The complete details of the Jonestown disaster may never be known publicly. It is certain, however, that very few if any of those who died there willingly took their own lives. Some were tricked, not realizing that the death rites were real. Many more resisted, but they were weak, helpless, and confronted with armed execution squads. So by various means, several hundred people were poisoned with potassium cyanide, many by being forcibly injected. Many more fled into the jungle, where U.S. Army Green Berets and British SAS special forces troops tracked them down and killed them with a shot to the temple.

Finally, when the mass murder was completed, the executioners performed their final task of stage-managing the horrible death scene. In order to achieve the surprise needed in attacking the Russian missile base, it was critically important that the first reports from Jonestown described the scene as a mass suicide. Only in this way could its actual military significance be hidden long enough to fool the Russians.

Therefore, all the bodies free of gunshot wounds were carefully arranged in neat rows and other groupings, suggesting at first sight that everyone died willingly and deliberately. This was the scene that greeted Guyanese troops late the following day, Sunday, November 19. It was more than 24 hours after the kibbutz victims died and the executioners, including the real Jim Jones, were long gone. Jim Jones did not die at Jonestown.

COUNTERS AFRAID OF DISEASE

The Guyanese troops were afraid of possible disease but counted the bodies as accurately as possible without close handling or moving the bodies. The total they reported was 409 on that Sunday night. The initial impression of a mass suicide was seized upon by the controlled major media of the United States. Without waiting for an investigation, the media drummed away at the suicide image of Jonestown as if it were a proven fact. After a few days a few people did begin to raise questions, but by then the initial image of suicide had served its purpose of opening Guyana's doors to the United States.

For example, on Tuesday, November 21, Jim Jones' surviving son, Steven, said in a Georgetown press conference, "There's no way it could have been mass suicide." And that same day, according to the *Washington Star,* a Guyanese source pointed out a serious medical discrepancy in the Jonestown kibbutz death scene. He said, "If you die of cyanide, which seems to have been the poison, your body goes into spasm and contortion death, but at Jonestown everyone looked totally relaxed."

The reason for this discrepancy was that by the time the Guyanese troops arrived, all the bodies had been rearranged. They were also placed face down for the most part. This was so that the widely publicized news photos would not ruin the desired impression of calm by letting you see the victims' final expression of agony.

THE NIGHTMARE CONTINUED

To continue the nightmare charade to fool the Russians, the United States at first publicly urged Guyana to collect and bury the hundreds of bodies. As arranged, Guyana replied in effect that it was America's problem and that America should take the bodies back to the United States - just as planned. To facilitate this huge and hideous task, Guyana obligingly agreed to waive the usual Guyanese law that requires any body to be autopsied before removal from the country. With this arrangement, the United States achieved the carte blanche military access to Guyana that was needed.

Russian intelligence realized what was afoot by early Monday, November 20, but it was already too late to stop it. Russia could hardly announce to the world that, "We have a secret nuclear missile base in Guyana and the United

States is getting ready to destroy it." That would have rallied world opinion behind America; and, although Russian Cosmoshperes quickly converged over Guyana, they, too, were useless in the covert conditions of battle there.

Their Charged Particle Beam Weapons could have made short work of the commando-style forces, but in the process they would have wiped out the Russian base itself. The Guyana missiles had become only a minor factor in Russia's military power since the Battle of the Harvest Moon the year prior. They were not valuable enough to Russia to declare open war on their account. And so under these conditions, Russia was powerless to act once the Jonestown tragedy had been staged.

As Thanksgiving Day approached, huge American transports, helicopters, troops, and medical teams swarmed into Guyana. In a remote corner of the huge Temehri Airfield a command post was established for the twin operations of Jonestown and the Russian missile base.

As some of the troops began the nauseating task of cleaning up the Jonestown kibbutz, other joint attack forces were taking up positions around the missile base in preparations for the surprise raid. Meanwhile, day after day the death count reported at Jonestown remained unchanged at 409.

Then on Thanksgiving Day itself, the Battle of Guyana took place. Crack military forces experienced in jungle and surprise warfare moved in on the Russian complex, striking all the dispersed sites simultaneously. Like the Entebbe raid, the battle itself did not last long. It had to be over quickly to be successful.

First the small crews on site near each missile were overwhelmed, and then killed. The missiles themselves were quickly disabled. Next the military forces converged on the Missile Command and Control Center, where a bloody pitched battle took place.

When the smoke cleared, every single person manning the missile base had been killed, including the Russian commanders.

When the battle was over, American helicopters from Temehri Airfield began landing within the ruined missile complex and flying out the wounded. Then the remaining attackers were left with two more jobs before they could retire from the area. First, they were under strict orders to leave no bodies in the attacking forces on Guyanese soil, and so the entire area was scoured until every single member of the attacking force had been accounted for. Their bodies, like those of the victims at Jonestown, were sealed in Vietnam-type body bags and collected in clearings where helicopters could land to pick them up.

Finally, the combined forces were under orders to remove the nuclear warheads from the missiles and take them back to Georgetown for airlift to the United States. Specially trained members of the attacking force had set to work on this task immediately after the initial attacks on the missile crews.

By early Friday, November 24, all the warheads had been removed. They, too, were placed in body bags, one per bag, with some jungle foliage stuffed in to give the bag a reasonable appearance.

Of course none of this war was apparent to the reporters at Temehri Airfield, whose access to the American Command Post there was carefully controlled. When wounded members of the attacking force were flown back to the Airfield, after the Battle of Guyana on Thanksgiving afternoon, they were kept out of sight of the reporters. Otherwise, when reporters occasionally saw body bags being moved from place to place they just naturally assumed that all contained victims from Jonestown. They had no way of knowing that some contained slain Commandoes and that others contained Russian nuclear warheads. The continual cargo of death from the Jonestown kibbutz made the perfect cover for the aftermath of the Battle of Guyana.

WHERE COULD THEY TAKE ALL THOSE BODIES?

Many reporters were totally puzzled at the choice of Dover Air Force Base in Delaware for the Guyana airlift. Most of the Jonestown victims were from California, and there is a mortuary facility, similar to the Dover facility, at Oakland Air Force Base in California. Dover was chosen to facilitate transfer of the Russian nuclear warheads to the nearby Aberdeen Proving Ground and Arsenal. This was done by means of shallow flights from Dover to Phillips Air Force Base.

Originally the Guyanese count of 409 had been accepted as firm by United States officials in Guyana. That had raised questions as to where the rest of the one thousand or so residents reported to be in Jonestown had gone. Finally, on Thanksgiving Day, with the body clean-up operation well under way, a military spokesman told reporters, "The evaluation that we have made is simply that there were not many more people in Jonestown at the time of the suicide." But even as he spoke, the Battle of Guyana was raging at the Russian missile base. By midday on Friday, the day after Thanksgiving, 485 body bags had already arrived at the Temehri Airfield. The "bodies" of warheads from the Russian missile base were destined to raise the total far beyond the total of 409 bodies originally counted by the Guyanese at the kibbutz. It was a bad mistake, the kind of thing that happens in the heat of battle. Something had to be done, and quickly.

So, on that Friday after Thanksgiving, a breathless and nervous Pentagon spokesman at the Temehri Airfield made a stunning announcement over CBS television [some of us call it CIABS Television, don't we, Dan Rather?]: "The original count of persons found dead at the Jonestown site has been found to be seriously in error. It now appears there may be as many as 780 bodies, total, found at the site. They were found simply buried under other bodies. There were larger adults that were grouped together, and under their bodies were found bodies, and under their bodies were found the bodies of smaller adults and children."

Rather a curious mass suicide, I would say.

Badgered by incredulous reporters, the Government embellished the cover story later on. The *Washington Star* quoted the same spokesman as saying Friday night: "Near the center of the pile of bodies, near the assembly hall, they were three deep in some areas. They were in layers with blankets between them." Wasn't it just nice of all those people to fall over in well orchestrated and neat rows?

The story was so unbelievable that within two days the United States Government dismissed its own story about the blankets as a "rumor." Still the basic idea of bodies on top of bodies had to be maintained, so on Saturday, November 25, another Air Force spokesman tried to make it all sound plausible in the following words:

"From what I observed, the people, when they committed suicide, would line up in nice neat little circles, children in front of them, and as they died they folded into the interior of the circle."

Even though the story kept getting curiouser and curiouser, nearly everybody accepted it hook, line, sinker and fish!

The Guyana cover-up was world-wide in its dimensions - it had to be. In Guyana, Deputy Prime Minister Reid made the first public announcement to the Guyanese people about Jonestown on Friday afternoon, November 24, in parliament. Then he refused to answer questions, and rushed out to cries of "Shame, Shame" and "Cover-up" from parliament members.

And in the United States on Thanksgiving Day, FBI Director William Webster said that the: "FBI disaster squad had positively identified the body of James Warren Jones through fingerprint identification records." This was a lie, and at that moment Jim Jones was making good his preplanned escape from Guyana.

HOW DID JIM JONES GET OUT?

The plans for removal of Jones were laid well in advance. An ocean-going boat, well stocked with supplies and money, was waiting for him near the river town of Bartica, 35 miles southwest of Georgetown. In order to make his way to Bartica from Jonestown, Jones had a Safe Conduct Pass.

In the early morning of Thanksgiving Day, as the Battle of Guyana was beginning, Jones headed downstream toward Georgetown. Shortly after noon Guyana time his boat left the mouth of the Essequibo River into the Atlantic Ocean.

From there Jones followed a complicated itinerary which was designed to prevent his being followed; but in spite of that, he was followed. From Guyana Jones headed due east for about 330 miles and then turned south, landing near La Mere, French Guyana, at about 5:30 A.M. local time, November 27. From there he traveled by land to the capital of Cayenne, and took an airplane across the Atlantic Ocean to Freetown, Sierra Bissau Airport, arriving there approximately 7:00 P.M. local time, November 28.

There, less than two hours later, he boarded a DC-3 and took off. His route took him eastward to Tambacounda, (Senegal); from there onward into Mali with stops at Segou, Mopti, and Gao; then onward to Agadez (Niger), and Largeau (Chad). From there his plane continued to Atbaqra (Sudan), and then a short final hop to Port Sudan where he arrived shortly after 4:00 A.M., November 30, local time.

When he arrived at Port Sudan, Jones found a Turboprop Executive Transport waiting for him which was owned and operated by Israeli Intelligence. Within 20 minutes the plane took off with Jones and headed up the middle of the Red Sea toward the Gulf of Aqaba. At 6:30 A.M. local time on November 30, Jones' plane landed briefly at Elath, the back door to Israel; then on to a private airport outside of Jerusalem, arriving at 7:20 A.M. local time. From there he headed to a nearby location for an intelligence briefing.

I have information that Jones was in Israel for about 7 or 8 years then was killed by his "keepers" as being too dangerous to have around. However, I have other information that conflicts with this, so I do not know his current status.

I have heard preachers giving sermons making a point by telling about Jim Jones and Jonestown. They are really just snorting in the wind; they have no notion of truth and are merely reinforcing the brainwashing that has been laid upon them.

PART 20:

LT. COL. JAMES "BO" GRITZ AND JONESTOWN

The officer in charge of all U.S. Army Special Forces for Latin America at the time of the Jonestown holocaust was Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz. Gritz was the original soldier after which the movie character "Rambo" was patterned. Gritz was the most decorated soldier to come out of the Vietnam war.

The Guyana massacre was carried out by Bo Gritz' men (along with British SAS troops). *Flatland* (#10) magazine, in an interview with Gritz, asked him:

Question: You trained Special Forces that went into Jonestown? What was the precise nature of the operation?

"I don't know precisely because it was a compartmentalized operation. The only thing that I do know for certain is what the Sergeant I quote coming out of Jonestown, he was insistent because he was disgusted, on writing this book. He was, without compromise, going to call it *All the Niggers Are Dead.* I asked him, 'Why would you want to entitle anything such an offensive way?' 'It doesn't make a difference what your color, your creed, your sex,' he said, 'when you are treated the way they were, that's what you are; you're a nigger, you're nothing else.' I think that those soldiers saw things that affected them and made them very angry. I've seen other things like that in combat where there have been abuses. I wrote about one of them in my book where the Captain tortured the young severely and the young Sergeant put on a swastika and said, "If I'm going to act like a Nazi I'm going to look like one.' I think that the same kind of negative impact occurred in Jonestown."

Gritz has more about Jonestown in his autobiography, *Called to Serve.* Perhaps you simply cannot believe what I am telling you. Will you believe it if told to you by the Green Beret officer in charge of the men who did the killing? He admits that the information was "compartmentalized" and it was not until later that he learned what his men were actually doing. The following information is from pages 584-587 of his book:

"The true story of the Jonestown camp in Guyana has been brought to light through an extensive investigation conducted by John Judge, from Philadelphia and Washington, D.C., and other dedicated researchers and investigators. The truth, which was thoroughly suppressed by the American media, is that it was actually a slave-labor camp run by Jones with the assistance of the CIA. Most of the information which follows is from John Judge's summary of the investigation, supplemented with information provided by Special Forces teams I had earlier trained and commanded, who were sent in to 'clean up the remains of Jonestown.'

"Most of the black and Hispanic poor people and social activists who became the inmates of the camp were brought there either by force or coercion, or lured under false pretenses, where extensive experiments of drug-induced mind control were performed on them. Even before they were moved to Guyana, reports of beatings, kidnappings, sexual abuse and mysterious deaths had leaked out to the press about the earlier Peoples' Temple in Ukiah, California.

"Jim Jones had a very interesting past which was overlooked by the media: During the time his friend Dan Mitrione was teaching torture techniques to the Brazilian and Argentineans, Jones was also sent to Brazil where his house, transportation and groceries were provided to him by the U.S. Embassy, and he frequently traveled to Belo Horizonte, the CIA headquarters in Brazil.

"Jones had been contacted in Ukiah by 'Christian missionaries' from World Vision (World Vision is a CIA controlled front operation), an evangelical order which had performed espionage work for the CIA in Southeast Asia. Most of Jones' top lieutenants were from wealthy, educated backgrounds, many with connections to the military or intelligence agencies. These were the people who were involved in setting up the bank accounts, complex legal transactions and financial agreements which put people under the control of the Peoples' Temple.

"Some of Jones' Lieutenants were: Dr. Lawrence Layton was chief of Chemical and Biological Warfare Research at Dugway Proving Grounds in Utah for many years and later worked as Director of Missile and Satellite Development at the Navy Propellant Division at Indian Head, Maryland. His wife, Lisa, was the daughter of Hugo Phillips, who had represented the huge Nazi manufacturing cartel, I.G. Farben, as a stockbroker. Their daughter, Debbie, met and married George Philip Blakey, whose parents had extensive stock holdings in Solve Drugs, a division of I.G. Farben.

"Blakey was reputed to be training mercenaries in Jonestown who were sent to work with CIA-backed UNITA forces in Angola. Terri Buford's father, Admiral Charles T. Buford, worked with Naval Intelligence. Marie Katsaris' father was minister with the Greek Orthodox Church, thought to be a conduit of CIA funding, and she claimed she had proof he was a CIA agent. The 'official survivors' were represented upon their return to the U.S. by Joseph Blatchford, an attorney who had been named in a prior scandal involving CIA infiltration of the Peace Corps.

"The people who were taken from San Francisco to begin their 'new life' in Guyana were bussed to Florida and arrived in Guyana bound and gagged, where they were forced to work 16 hours or more daily, and were fed on minimum rations. As more and more rumors began to filter back to the United States of druggings, beatings, torture, sexual humiliations and coercion at the Guyana site, Congressman Leo Ryan decided to go to Guyana and verify the situation for himself.

"Ryan had challenged the CIA's overseas operations before, as a member of the House Committee responsible for oversight on intelligence. He was co-author of the controversial Hughes-Ryan Amendment, which would have required advance CIA disclosure to the congressional committees of all planned covert operations. The amendment would be defeated shortly after his death in Jonestown.

"With Ryan on the way to Jonestown, the secrecy surrounding the camp would be broken and desperate measures would need to be taken to keep the truth from escaping, much less the inmates. In a futile attempt to test their conditioning methods, the leaders at Jonestown apparently tried to implement an actual suicide drill, but it was obviously ignored. Official stories first numbered the victims at 408, but later revised the toll upward to 913. It was claimed that some 505 bodies had been covered by those of the first 408 who had fallen directly on top of them, confusing those who had been counting from aerial photographs. - a blatant and ridiculous attempt at cover-up.

"However, the first reports were true - 408 had died, and 700 fled to the jungle where British Black Watch troops and American Special Forces were conducting 'training exercises.' Of the 700, 505 who had been deliberately shot in the jungle were added to the count of those who had supposedly committed suicide by drinking cyanide-laced Kool Aid.

"The truth is that nearly 400 inmates were forced to die by injection, according to the Chief Guyanese medical examiner, Dr. Mootoo, who arrived at Jonestown within hours of the massacre. He found needle marks on the left shoulder blades of 80-90% of the victims, and the others had been shot or strangled.

"As Chief Medical Examiner, Mootoo's testimony to the Guyanese Grand Jury led to their conclusion that all but three of the people who had died at Jonestown were murdered by 'persons unknown.' Several pictures show the gunshot wounds on the bodies as well. The U.S. Army spokesman, Lt. Col. Schuler, told the press, 'No autopsies are needed. The cause of death is not an issue here,' and the forensic doctors who later performed the autopsies at Dover, Delaware, were never made aware of Dr. Mootoo's findings.

"Guyanese troops discovered a large cache of drugs, enough to control the entire population of Georgetown, Guyana (pop. 200,000), for over a year. One footlocker contained 11,000 doses of Thorazine, a dangerous tranquilizer, and others such as sodium pentothal (truth serum), chloral hydrate (a hypnotic), demerol, Thallium (confuses thinking), haliopareael and Largatil (powerful tranquilizers) and many others. It was very evident that Jonestown was a tightly-run concentration camp, complete with medical and psychiatric experimentation.

"Direct orders to cover up the cause of death came from the top levels of the American Government. Zbigniew Brzezinski, President Carter's national security advisor, authorized Robert Pastor to order Lt. Col. Gordon Sumner to strip the bodies of the medical bracelets they had been forced to wear for identification. Pastor later served as Deputy Director of the CIA.

"One of the Special Forces sergeants assigned to the Jonestown massacre was so outraged about what he had witnessed that he had decided to describe the events in a book. While the Secrecy Act prevented him from detailing all that went on, SFC Inman carefully hid the entire story within his title: *All The Niggers Are Dead!* When I asked that he explain the crudeness of so naming his report, he replied, 'Sir, that's what they were. Both blacks and whites were niggers; that's what any slave is; that's what they were. That was our final radio message when the job we were assigned was finished.' I could tell by his bitterness that the government had no fear that the book would ever be printed. He just needed someone to vent his anger on.

"Guyanese Prime Minister Forbes Burnham rose to power as the result of a CIA-inspired coup against the recalcitrant Guyanese leader Cheddi Jagan. Richard Dwyer, a CIA agent working as Deputy Chief of Mission at the U.S. Embassy in Guyana, was shown to have been at the scene at the time of the massacre and at the airport strip, where he failed to order Guyanese troops, armed with machine guns, to defend Ryan and his staff.

"Chief Consular Officer Richard McCoy, who was described as 'close to [Jim] Jones,' worked for military intelligence and was 'on loan' from the Defense Department at the time of the massacre. Dan Webber, who was sent to the Jonestown site the day after, was also named as a CIA agent.

"U.S. Ambassador John Burke, who had served in the CIA since 1963 and had worked with Dwyer in Thailand, according to Philip Agee, tried to stop Ryan's investigation. The State Department concealed all reports of violations at Jonestown from Congressman Leo Ryan, while the Embassy regularly provided Jones with copies of all congressional inquiries under the Freedom of Information Act.

"According to current reports, Jonestown has been 're-populated' with over 1,000 Laotion Hmong people who grew opium and served under General Vang Pao during our 'secret war' in Laos and Cambodia. According to these reports, World Vision was also attempting to move the population from the island of Dominica to Jonestown.

"In addition to the already mentioned torture camp, Colonia Dignidad, another is reported to be located at Pisgua, Chile. Inside Guyana itself is another 'religious community,' named Hilltown, also operated under iron discipline, with 8,000 blacks from Guyana and the U.S. They were allowed to clear the Jonestown site of shoes and weapons, both of which are in short supply in Guyana. It may only be a matter of time before another Jonestown is exposed. It is sad to know that what started out to be an information gathering organization has turned into an instrument of the dragon."

PART 21:

IN THE BEGINNING...

In the March 1919 issue of *Electrical Experimenter* magazine, details of the Roger's underground communication system were released. This system was later classified SECRET and used to communicate with submarines during World War I. It involved using frequencies through the ground and water. The signals were 5,000 times stronger than signals through the air.

The patents are confusing to most engineers, but to someone who understands, it is obvious that the transmitters were using scalar waves. If you wonder if it could be possible for scientists to devise the type of technology written about in the early *Fire From The Sky* articles, you need to be aware that this technology has been around for a long time. Actually, for a very long time.

For instance, in 1977, Louis Kervran won the Nobel Prize for showing that plants and animals (his main experiments were with chickens) use "scalar wave" type technology to transmute elements, for instance, turning potassium into calcium. This is impossible according to the "laws" of physics currently taught in schools. The ruling Elite does not want you "common folk" to have this type of knowledge, as it will undermine their control over you. So the "laws" they teach are WRONG.

While the oil barons sabotaged Nikola Tesla's efforts to provide cheap or free energy to the world, the Russians took an interest in his material and developed it.

Nikita Kruschev asked his physicists, specifically Pyorte (Peter) Kapitsa, to develop a system for total defense against missiles and aircraft. By studying Tesla and others they were successful and, in 1960, Kruschev announced the development of a "fantastic" Soviet weapon, one that could destroy all life on the world. ("Kruschev Says Soviets Will Cut Forces a Third; Sees 'Fantastic Weapon'," by Max Frankel, *New York Times,* Jan. 15, 1960, p. 1.) However, it was not quite ready and in 1962 Kruschev was forced to back down during the Cuban Missile Crisis. This caused him to lose much face with his government and people.

U.S.S. THRESHER AND THE U-2

As things were not going well with Kruschev, he decided to use the weapons system before it was fully operational and on April 10, 1963, he successfully detected and destroyed the nuclear submarine *U.S.S. Thresher,* using an underwater scalar howitzer. The next day, they celebrated by firing a pulse blast creating a tremendous underwater explosion about 100 miles north of Puerto Rico, south of where they had sunk the *Thresher.*

Col. Tom Bearden described the event: "It left a signature: the sub's surface companion, the *U.S.S. Skylark,* was in the splatter zone of the underwater scalar interference. That is, spurious EM noise was being generated in all the *Skylark's* electrical systems, some of which were actually disabled. So intense was the "electronic jamming" that it required over an hour and a half for the *Skylark* to transmit an emergency message back to its headquarters that the *Thresher* was in serious trouble and contact with it had been lost.

Some of the *Skylark's* communication systems actually failed, but later resumed operation inexplicably, once the jamming was gone. That type of "jamming" of multiple bands and multiple electronic equipment, of course, together with the anomalous failure of electronic equipment and its later mysterious recovery, were direct signatures of the use of the exothermic scalar interferometer against the undersea target area in the vicinity of the *Skylark.*

"The very next day, April 11, 1963, the same Soviet scalar EM howitzer system was tested in the "destroy submarine" pulse mode. A huge underwater EM blast occurred off the coast of Puerto Rico, about 100 miles north of the island. The underwater explosion caused a huge boiling up of a giant mushroom of water about a third of a mile high. The mushroom of water then fell back into the ocean, completing the signature.

"Fortunately the entire incident was seen by the startled crew of a passing U.S. jetliner which was just passing its checkpoint in that area." (See Robert J. Durant, "An Underwater Explosion - or What?" *Pursuit,* 5(2), April 1972, p. 30-31.) For more information on the *Thresher* disaster and *Skylark* problems, see John Bentley, *The Thresher Disaster,* Doubleday, Garden City, N.Y., 1975, particularly p. 164.

"These two incidents were full-up operational tests of Kruschev's newly-deployed superweapons. He probably staged this dramatic one-two punch in a desperate effort to recover face with the Communist Party after his disastrous facedown by Kennedy in the Cuban Missile Crisis a few short months previously. Apparently the attempt was successful, since he remained in power another year before being deposed."

There is also evidence that the U-2 flight of Francis Gary Powers was shot down by this technology. Bearden says: "In fact, Gary Powers' high-flying aircraft was probably shot down in 1960 by a 'jury-rigged' scalar EM howitzer using modified radars and timed scalar pulses to provide an aerial explosion and EMP." (*Fer-De-Lance,* by Tom Bearden, p. 65.)

END OF PART 21.

PART 22:

TOTAL RUSSIAN DEFENSE

In 1968, the Soviets made a statement in *Military Strategy* that the USSR has achieved a 100% defense, and the West has not (*Sokolovsky,* 3rd Edition). Were they telling the truth, and if so, to what were they referring? It is only a matter of life and death, you know.

Dr. Edward Teller said in 1987: "Today, the Soviets have a monopoly on defense and they intend to keep it. We have done practically nothing about civil defense." He also said, "The Soviets have worked for the past 10 years perfecting laser weapons and now have a laser capable of shooting 1,000 miles without its beam *spreading more than 5 feet"* (Jan.-Feb. 1987 *Fusion*).

PROJECT PAPERCLIP

Before we continue in time sequence of what happened, I want to go back and point out some connections you need to know. The earlier *Fire From The Sky* material says that Russia succeeded in developing anti-gravity levitating platforms, which are the same things as commonly called flying saucers. In fact the Soviets used former Nazi scientists to achieve their advances.

The Nazis actually originated the "flying saucers," and they got their ideas and information concerning them from extraterrestrials. This is what all the records indicate. I will give you some leads and if you are serious, you can do your own research and prove it to yourself. You don't have to believe me or anyone else - check it out for yourself!

For information about the Nazi scientists, I suggest you study material about Project Paperclip. (*Project Paperclip* by Clarence Lasby; *The Torbitt Document* by William Torbitt; *The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination* by Mae Brussell; etc.) A former member of that operation is a *good friend of mine.* Among the Germans (Austrians) involved in Paperclip was a *Communist spy named Henry Kissinger* - you've heard of him, perhaps?

Another German was Werner von Braun, who was brought to this country and became head of the U.S. space program. Von Braun worked for a German general named Walter Dornberger, and had been an *SS Sturmbannfuhrer* since 1937. Dornberger was in charge of Peenemunde. At the end of the war, von Braun and 115 other German scientists surrendered to the Americans and were brought to Fort Bliss Texas (just across the state line from White Sands Missile Range New Mexico).

In 1950 they were transferred to the Redstone Arsenal at Huntsville, Alabama. Col. Tom Bearden was a nuclear physicist at Redstone Arsenal. Von Braun's original security report said: "He was an SS officer but no information is available to indicate that he was ardent Nazi. Subject is regarded as a potential security threat by the Military Governor."

Von Braun played down his SS membership and said that it was only honorary, and that "his real reason for working in the Nazi missile program, he said, had been the potential usefulness of his machines in 'space travel'" (*Blowback,* p. 39).

Dornberger was convicted as a war criminal, then later was secretly brought to the U.S. at the request of von Braun to High Commissioner John J. McCloy. He went to work for Bell Aircraft (Bell Textron) where he worked on the space program as director of R&D (James "Bo" Gritz, *Called to Serve,* p. 511). He was also a special CIA consultant (*The Nazi Hunters,* p. 217).

Eventually he served on the board of several aerospace companies. He helped develop a nuclear powered trans-atmospheric vehicle (TAV). These vehicles began operating out of Area 51 in Nevada, and other places. Dornberger became a boss of Bell Aerospace Corporation and had about 30 former Nazi scientists working for him. A man named Stanton Friedman is going around the country saying he has worked on these type of nuclear propulsion systems. He sells videos with photos.

McCloy was Assistant Secretary of War and blocked the executions of many Nazi war "criminals." He is the one who was overseer of the internment of Japanese-Americans in concentration camps in California. In 1949 he became High Commissioner in Germany and pardoned convicted war criminals such as Alfred Krupp and Dr. Hjalmar Schact (who went to work for Aristotle Onassis).

He became legal counsel to the "Seven Sisters" oil companies, one of which was managed by the father of CIA agent George de Mohrenschildt who was a Nazi spy in WW II. "George's cousin, the movie producer Baron Constantine Maydell, was one of the top German Abwehr agents in North America , and was recruited by Gehlen..." (Gritz, p. 538).

OPERATION SUNRISE

According to Col. Bo Gritz, former head of U.S. Army Special Forces for Latin America , "General Reinhard Gehlen, Hitler's chief intelligence officer against the Soviet Union , had struck a deal with the Americans (Called OPERATION SUNRISE) that was not, for obvious reasons, released to establishment media. The principal negotiators were Allen Dulles and William Casey of the OSS , Sir William Stephenson for the British, and SS General Karl Wolff, head of the Gestapo in Italy and former chief of Heinrich Himmler's personal staff" (p. 562).

Operation SUNRISE developed into Operation OVERCAST with General Walter Dornberger and Werner von Braun, and then became Project PAPERCLIP, BLOODSTONE AND BELARUS, etc. (ibid.).

John McCloy, by the way, would later serve the Warren Commission and helped cover up the assassination of JFK.

He became head of the World Bank, head of the Chase Manhattan Bank, head of the Ford Foundation, chairman of the Council on Foreign Relations, and co-author of *Freedom From War, The United States Program For General And Complete Disarmament In A Peaceful World* (Department of State Publication 7277).

Von Braun had an assistant named Fred Wolff: "...that matter had been amply met through Dr. von Braun's suggestions (which Wolff sketched out quickly to receive von Braun's check)." *War For The Moon* by Martin Caidin, E.P. Dutton, 1959, chapter "Project Moon," p. 61 (this book was illustrated by Fred Wolff). Note above that the head of the Gestapo in Italy , Karl Wolff, was working with von Braun. Was Fred's name originally Karl, or was he a son? We are not talking Smith or Jones here, how many men named Wolff (spelled with two f's) that were close friends of von Braun were there in this very small organization?

Gehlen, von Braun and Dornberger continued to have considerable influence on American politics, as evidenced from this quote from *Blowback,* p. 64: "Gehlen also played a role in the creation of the famous missile gap of the 1950s. 'Gehlen provided us [the CIA] with specific reports on the Soviet ICBM program,' Victor Marchetti says. 'He said, "We have two reliable reports confirming this," and they [the Soviets] have just installed three missiles at that site,' et cetera, claiming that they had contacts among the German scientists captured by the Russians at the end of the war." The intelligence reports were transmitted to the Pentagon through interagency channels, and word about the alarming new development eventually leaked from there into the press.

"Walter Dornberger added fuel to this fire in 1955 by publishing alarming speculations that the Soviets might attack from the sea, using shorter-range missiles deployed in floating canisters off the coast of the United States. He was deeply involved in the United States ' own ICBM program at this point, and his opinions were given considerable weight in public discussions."

PROJECT OVERCAST

On July 19, 1945, the Joint Chiefs of Staff approved a program called Operation Overcast. Under this program, 350 German scientists and technicians would be brought into the United States for a period of six months. The program was labeled Top Secret to keep it from the American public. (Ashman, Charles & Wagman, Robert J., *The Nazi Hunters,* Warner Books, p. 212.)

When the Nazi scientists were brought into the U.S., they were first put up at Camp Overcast. Camp Overcast was at Wright Field, which later became famous among UFO researchers as Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, home of the infamous Hangar 18. Even Senator Barry Goldwater was not allowed access to this facility.

Rabbi Stephen Wise, head of the American Jewish Congress, discovered that the wife of one of the Wright Field rocket team was a former Nazi Party official and in May 1946 said: "This operation [Paperclip, formerly called Overcast] is all the more deplorable at a time when officials of our government find every possible reason for failing to fulfill the declared policy of President Truman to rescue as many victims of the Nazi terror as our immigration laws permit... As long as we reward the former servants of Hitler while leaving his victims in DP camps, we cannot even pretend that we are making any real effort to achieve the aims we fought for."

Rabbi Stephen Wise is also famous for the quote: "Some call it Communism; I call it Judaism!"

When the Germans were first brought into New York, "At Port Washing, they lived in comfortable conditions at a castle that had been build by the multimillionaire Jay Gould. They soaked in marble bathtubs and ate in an imposing dining room" (p. 203, *American Swastika* by Charles Higham).

"In August 1945, General Walter Bedell Smith's private plane was used to fly Gehlen and five of his general staff to the American capital. They traveled in plain clothes, one of their members using a violin case for a suitcase. It is interesting to note that Bedell Smith was Eisenhower's chief of staff" (p. 260, *American Swastika*).

On March 4, 1946, the operation was changed to Operation Paperclip, with no limits on the time or to the number of

Germans.

Another German brought in, who was not a scientist, was Otto von Bolschwing. He was educated at the University of London and the University of Breslau. He joined the Nazi Party on April 1, 1932 and developed an import/export business, owned a coal mine, and was involved with several drug companies.

When the war broke out, he joined the SS and became an intelligence officer, working with the German branches of General Electric and Standard Oil. He was in charge of important funds that came through Nazi connections with Allen Dulles in the Schroeder Bank of New York. In 1945 he was contacted by the Army CIC and in 1947 was a member of the Gehlen organization. He came to the United States and got a job with Alfred Driscoll, former governor of New Jersey and president of Warner-Lambert drug company.

Later he joined the Transinternational Computer Investment Corporation (TCI) in Silicon Valley, California and became vice-president of the company. Reinhard Gehlen worked for TCI during the time he was helping Richard Nixon run for President.

MICHAEL PAINE

Those who studied the assassination of President Kennedy perhaps will recall that Lee Harvey Oswald's wife Marina was staying with Ruth Paine. On April 30, 1961, Oswald married Marina Pruskova in the Soviet Union. He wrote to U.S. Senator John Tower for help in returning to the United States, and it was granted. Remember, Oswald had denounced and left the United States, then he asked a U.S. Senator for help in returning, and got it! Why did he pick Tower to ask, and why did Tower help him? Tower took Lyndon Johnson's place in the Senate and later became head of the Armed Services Committee.

A special non-quota immigrant permit was issued for Oswald's wife. Oswald and Marina arrived in the U.S. on June 13, 1962 and went to Dallas. "He returned to Dallas on October 2, 1963, and was met by fellow CIA agents George de Mohrenschildt and Ruth and Michael Paine. Michael Paine worked for Nazi war criminal Gen. Walter Dornberger at Bell-Textron in Dallas" (Gritz, p. 529). Next page - "Most of Oswald's contacts in Dallas, in fact, were with persons hired by Dornberger."

The majority of people who testified about Oswald before the Warren Commission were carefully selected Dornberger associates. Gritz says of these very people: "Eastern European and Russian emigre groups supplied by Gehlen were the personnel initially trained for these missions at a special camp set up at Oberammergau in 1946, under the command of General Sikes and SS General Burckhardt, and with the assistance of Henry Kissinger and Lucius Clay. The camp held 5,000 anti-communist elements who were prepared there and called themselves "Special Forces" (p. 564).

This was the origin of the U.S. Army Special Forces and on the next page Gritz says: "Many of the remainder underwent special guerrilla training as Special Forces recruits at Fort Bragg, North Carolina and helped form the nucleus of the present-day Green Berets. They would later be quite at home at their first assignment - the SS Bad Tolz Flint Kaserne in the heart of the Bavarian Alps."

And on page 566 Gritz says: "Gehlen's immediate staff of about 350 agents, in fact, were brought en masse to the U.S. Army's Historical Division. Almost all resistance to using Nazi war criminals to accomplish the CIA's missions seemed to have been overcome by the time Allen Dulles became Director in 1953." The Nazi SS Death's Head insignia was adopted as the symbol of the U.S. Army Special Forces (p. 567).

CIA agent George de Mohrenschildt's boss in the CIA was George Bush. De Mohrenschildt had a close friend, John W. Mecom, who was one of the incorporators of the San Jacinto Fund which was used to launder Bush's drug money. ("Surreptitious Entry: The CIA's Operations in the United States," by Thomas B. Ross of the *Chicago Sun Times* in *The CIA File,* edited by Robert L. Borosage and John Marks (Viking, 1976), and quoted in *The Mafia, CIA &

George Bush* by Pete Brewton, p. 317.)

De Mohrenschildt had another friend, Jean de Menil, president of Schlumberger Corporation. Jim Garrison tells of Schlumberger being the source of weapons involved in anti-Castro operations and in Algeria. In 1977, hours after arranging to meet an investigator for the House Select Committee on Assassinations, de Mohrenschildt joined the long line of people involved in the Kennedy assassination who "committed suicide."

If you have the stomach to check into it, you will find that Presidents Johnson, Nixon, Reagan and Bush *shot* their way into the Presidency. And people keeping a list have identified over 30 people close to President Clinton who have been murdered or at least died under mysterious circumstances. If you count the wars, our Presidents have been responsible for the deaths of thousands of people. Tell me, friend, are you a Republican or a Democrat?

Oswald told a public stenographer that an "engineer" (Michael Paine) offered to publish a book about the Soviet Union for Oswald if he would write it. The Paines began to subsidize the Oswalds and later Mrs. Oswald moved in with the Paines, where she and Ruth chatted every day in Russian.

Lee Harvey Oswald then went to New Orleans and became involved with the "Fair Play For Cuba Committee." The head of that committed was a Jew named V.T. Lee, real name Tappin. Researchers of Lee Harvey Oswald must take into account the fact that there were several people claiming to be Oswald.

While living with the Paines, Oswald practiced shooting with a rifle he kept in their garage. Some say he took a pot-shot at General Walker at this time. In September, it was announced that President Kennedy would visit Dallas, and three weeks later Mrs. Paine called Mr. Truly, the manager of the Texas School Book Depository and got Oswald at job working there, under the name of "O.H. Lee." (*New York Post,* Dec. 10, 1963, p. 22.)

END OF PART 22.

PART 23:

MORE ASSASSINATION CONNECTIONS

Immediately after Kennedy was assassinated there were three main investigations launched - by the Texas Attorney General, the FBI, and the U.S. Congress. On Dec. 9, 1963, seventeen days after the assassination, the Communist *Worker* Newspaper demanded that the three investigations be stopped and that only Earl Warren do the investigation. Three days later, President Johnson ordered the three groups to stop and put Earl Warren in charge, exactly as the Communists had ordered.

Warren immediately began destroying evidence. While the other groups were finding information of multiple people involved, Arlen Specter came up with the "magic bullet" theory to explain what happened. No one else supported that theory except Gerald Ford, but that became the conclusion of the Warren Commission. Gerald Ford, whose real name was Leslie Lynch King (*American Heritage Dictionary,* 1979), in his book *Portrait of the Assassin,* page 51, tells about Lee Harvey Oswald being on the payroll of the American Red Cross while in Russia. The current head of the Red Cross is Elizabeth Dole, the wife of Senator Bob Dole. Specter has become prominent recently in the Waco and Ruby Ridge investigations, and is campaigning for President. Does it sound like maybe the Communists were behind the assassination of Kennedy? If only it were that simple! We need to pay attention to who and what these people are, as their names come up in all kinds of strange places.

Ruth Paine's husband Michael worked as an engineer at Bell Aerospace for the German ex-General Dornberger, head of research for Bell. Paine was part of the Gehlen operation.

Werner von Braun became a close personal friend of J. Edgar Hoover and soon after he came to the U.S. he also became a close personal friend of Lyndon B. Johnson. Von Braun worked with Hoover in security projects at the Tennessee Valley Authority, the Redstone Arsenal and later in the National Space Agency. In 1958 Lyndon Johnson, majority leader of the Senate, helped push through the National Space Act, which gave funding to von Braun.

The Navy and Air Force were in charge of the U.S. missile programs when Russia launched its Sputnik satellite in October of 1957. Two weeks later, they launched the much larger Sputnik II which carried a dog into space. The Russians had put a six-ton package into orbit, while two months later the Navy tried to launch a three-and-half-pound grapefruit-size satellite on their Vanguard missile. It rose a grand height of four feet and blew up, on national television. Eisenhower was reminded about the little-known bunch of Nazis at Huntsville, so he gave them the go-ahead. Less than two months later, the (ex) Nazis put America's first satellite, Explorer I, into orbit on January 31, 1958.

"Sputnik forced two space agendas on the United States, one public, the other top secret." (Burrows, William E., *Deep Black - Space Espionage And National Security,* Random House, 1986, p. 138.)

Reinhard Gehlen was head of the Nazi Abwehr spy organization during WW II, and at the end of the war he approached the OSS and offered to work for them, with his team and records. They accepted and brought many of his team into the U.S. under Projer Paperclip.

Gehlen remained chief of the West German Intelligence service until he retired in 1968. Frank Wisner, who worked for Allen Welsh Dulles, was a Wall Street lawyer who became head of Dulles' Secret Intelligence Branch and was responsible for the Gehlen organization. Working with Wisner were Harvard grad Harry Rositzke who worked in the same room with Arthur Schlesinger, Jr. and Richard Helms, who later became Director of the CIA in 1966.

One of Wisner's team was George Bookbinder, who later became President of the Rand Development Corporation. It was the Gehlen organization that dug the famous Berlin tunnel. They, especially the Rand Corporation, became good at digging tunnels (except they have not quite conquered that annoying "hum"!).

PEOPLE OF EARTH/SHAN

The book *Air America* says, during the Vietnam conflict, "An HQ was established in Singapore where Frank Wisner, the Deputy Director of Plans for the CIA, went personally to head the operation." (Robbins, Christopher, *Air America,* New York: Avon Books, 1979, p. 70).

Air America was the secret CIA airline involved in Operation Phoenix in the Vietnam war. One of the pilots was John Lear of UFO fame. The name Phoenix was a translation from the Phung Hoang, a mythical bird the Vietnamese said had magical powers to bring news of peace. The CIA bought drugs from Khun Sa, leader of the "Shan" people.

Bo Gritz, in *Called To Serve,* tells that Khun Sa tried to STOP the drug trade and was forced to continue by the Americans. On page 300, Gritz tells that President Reagan offered to recognize Shanland as a new and independent nation. I suppose it is "only coincidence" that the command ship ("flying saucer") of the ships involved with UFO legend Billy Meier was called the "Phoenix" and the extraterrestrials involved said that their name for Earth was "Shan."

The man in charge of the CIA Vietnam drug operation was Richard Armitage, who later became Assistant Secretary of Defense. Armitage shipped the drugs to Manuel Noriega in Panama, who shipped them to George Bush, head of the CIA and later President, at Bush's drug bases in Mena, Arkansas, Homestead Air Force Base in Florida, and through the Zapata and Black Rose and such Bush family operations.

Armitage had a best friend named Erich von Marbod, also a Gehlen Organization person and a friend of Bo Gritz. At the end of the war in Vietnam, "he [Armitage] and Erich secreted tons of munitions in strategic caches around Southeast Asia. Erich's friends read like a global Who's Who. He was a best friend to the Shah of Iran. He is also very close to James Schlesinger, who was appointed Director of the CIA by Richard Nixon in December 1972. Schlesinger later became Secretary of Defense from 1973-1975 and Secretary of the Department of Energy from 1977-1979" (Gritz, p. 300). Erich "...was a protege of Henry Kissinger."

NIXON, BUSH & DONOVAN

On page 572 of his book, Gritz says: "The Indonesian campaign marked the entry of the CIA into large-scale operations, and although it was a failure, the more the Agency failed in the future, the more it grew and prospered. Oddly enough, the man who had helped back Dulles and Frank Wisner [remember, Wisner was over Gehlen's Nazi spy network] on the campaign was Richard Nixon."

In 1969, Richard Nixon was in California campaigning and one of his campaign supporters was Reinhard Gehlen, former Nazi head of the German Secret Service (Abwehr). Gehlen was with a high-tech firm called TCI (Transinternational Computer Investment Corp.) that worked on classified Defense Department projects. His translator for German projects was Helene von Damme, who was also Governor Ronald Reagan's personal appointments secretary and personal secretary to Reagan when he became President. Von Damme later became U.S. Ambassador to Austria. Von Damme was former secretary to the Nazi German High Command.

William Donovan, head of OSS, and Allen Dulles, head of OSS in Europe under Donovan (who later became head of the CIA until President Kennedy fired him - it was said that he told Kennedy, "You can't fire me, you don't even know who I work for!"), and J. Edgar Hoover, head of the FBI, brought Reinhard Gehlen and his Abwehr spy group into the United States. One of the men involved was counter-intelligence officer William P. Clark. Clark married Werner von Braun's niece, Joan von Braun (Brauner). Clark at one time was a member of the Council on Foreign Relations.

Clark moved to San Luis Obispo in California and joined Ronald Reagan. He became President Reagan's National Security Advisor on the National Security Council. A suit was filed in Southern California naming William Clark as being involved in the Kennedy assassination. Researchers Mae Brussell, William Torbitt, District Attorney Garrison, and others say Lyndon Johnson, J. Edgar Hoover, Werner von Braun, and Walter Dornberger were involved in the Kennedy assassination. Also involved were Richard Nixon, George Bush and Allen Dulles.

Col. Bo Gritz, in *Called To Serve* (p. 534), quotes a memo written by an FBI staff assistant in 1947: "Nixon intervened on behalf of a Chicago gangster who was about to be called as a witness before a congressional committee... It is my sworn statement that one Jack Rubinstein of Chicago, noted as a potential witness for hearings of the House Committee on Un-American Activities, is performing information functions for the staff of Congressman Richard Nixon, Republican of California. It is requested Rubinstein not be called for open testimony in the aforementioned hearings. That same year Rubinstein moved to Dallas, Texas, and changed his name to JACK RUBY..."

Sam Giancana bragged that Nixon was controlled by the "Mob," see the book *Double Cross* written by his brother.

GEHLEN AND THE GERMAN GENERAL STAFF

Dick Russell in *The Man Who Knew Too Much* is one of the researchers with many details of the involvement of Nixon, Bush, and Dulles and said, "Willoughby was in regular correspondence with Allen Dulles - before JFK fired Dulles - and with ex(?) Nazis who ran the CIA's European-based spy network" (p. 707).

Gehlen was responsible for reviving the Nazi German General Staff after the war by placing his agent Adolph Heusinger in charge of the German General Staff. *Der Spiegel* said: "It is quite true that General Gehlen had engaged the former Chief of Wehrmacht Opertions for a purpose other than his espionage service. The West German spy boss did not at that time think of confining himself to merely collecting and sifting information. Two years before Adenauer offered soldiers to the Allies, General Gehlen was, with General Heusinger, already engaged in assembling a new general staff high command." (*Der Spiegel,* Feb. 29, 1956.)

The Heusinger Wehrmacht were involved in the space race (remember, it was the Germans who started rockets, "flying saucers," etc.). The book *Heusinger of the Fourth Reich* by Charles R. Allen, Jr., said: "The conservative columnist Edgar Ansel Mower on September 28, 1962 reported that the West German newspaper *Die Welt* of Hamburg devoted a lengthy series to the vigorous efforts being made by the West German Defense Ministry to perfect 'death rays' (LASERS) which, when fired from a space platform, 'WOULD BURN, VAPORIZE, DESTROY ANY KNOWN MATTER AND MATERIAL BY ITS FANTASTIC ENERGY CONCENTRATION OF MILLIONS OF WATTS and, from the DISTANCE OF THE MOON, WOULD TAKE EXACTLY 1.3 SECONDS TO KILL." (*Long Island Daily Press,* September 28, 1962). Note they were talking, in 1962, of lasers from a Moon base.

WILLIAM CLARK

Paperclip Operation member William Clark was one who pressured to pardon Ollie North. Clark has a ranch in California called the "Eagles Nest." There was (is?) a machine gun in Clark's living room which came from a National Guard Armory robbery in Oxnard, California. The rest of the weapons from the robbery were stored at a hideout at the Branch Davidian compound in Waco, Texas. When "they" wanted "their" guns back, David Koresh did not want to give them back. Oh, friends, why don't you check up on your leaders?! Why waste your time on soap operas, when the real thing is so much more "interesting"?!

As another interesting "coincidence," not that our present Jewish Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Gen. John Shalikashvili (who succeeded the part-Jewish, part black CFR member Gen. Colin Powell) speaks English with a foreign accent and was born in Soviet Georgia. The media has reported that his father was a major in the Nazi Waffen SS. In spite of this, he is the darling of the Zionists, with strong support from Les Aspin, the Simon Wiesenthal Center, Senator Carl Levin, etc.

When Reagan became Governor of California, he appointed William Clark as Superior Court Judge in San Luis Obispo County. Later Reagan appointed him Deputy Secretary of State. When James Watt resigned as Secretary of the Interior, William Clark replaced him. Reagan appointed Clark's wife Joan Brauner (von Braun) Clark as alternate United States representative to the United Nations General Assembly.

Ray Renick says: "The American headquarters of the Gehlen Organization is in San Luis Obispo County. The main office is called "Eagles Nest." Many public officials, judges, supervisors and law enforcement personnel are personal friends and business associates (in drug trafficking, no less) with the Gehlen Organization and "Eagles Nest." Judge William P. Clark and Mrs. Joan Clark (nee von Braun, Brauner) are the executives behind the Gehlen Organization, "Eagles Nest" and the Zapata Cattle Company's drug trafficking interest. [The cattle are brought in from Mexico. Cattle have four stomachs.] Ronald Reagan is a slient partner in the San Luis Obispo cattle/drug business. Remember, Clark was one of the original architects of "Project Paperclip"! The Zapata Cattle Company is affiliated with George Bush's Zapata Oil Company of Houston, Texas (REF: "The SLO Connection," Barrons article "The Mexican Connection") - Sept. 19, 1988.

A major law firm for the Gehlen Organization is Sinsheimer, Schiebelhut, and Baggett.

The Gehlen Organization, copying Hitler's New Order, established a concentration camp system in San Luis Obispo County. It was called the California Specialized Training Institute. It developed plans called the *King Alfred Plan, Operation Cable Splitter, Operation Garden Plot,* and *REX-84* and was later renamed as the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA). You can get more information on these subjects from Militia of Montana, Bo Gritz, *Spotlight Newspaper,* etc.

Also brought in under *Paperclip* was Henry Kissinger. The U.S. Army 44th CIC and 970th CIC Detachments negotiated the surrender of the German Army in Northern Italy and Austria in Operation Sunrise from which Paperclip took over. Later the Vatican provided documents and help for many Nazis to escape to South America, including Martin Bormann.

Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands created a group that became known as the Bilderbergers. Many "conservative" researchers have come to recognize the Bilderbergers as an important force for the "New World Order." What they probably don't know, though, is that Bernhard was a former Nazi SS storm trooper.

Some of the *Paperclip* surrender operation personnel included Theodore Shackley and Heide Kingsbury (daughter of General Galland, designer of the Messerschmidt ME 262). Kingbury became secretary and court transcriber to Judge William Clark. Shackley became head of Operation *Phoenix* in Vietnam (Laos). Shackley was head of JM Wave, code name of the CIA Miami office during the Bay of Pigs and Kennedy assassination events (Furiati, p. 41). (Furiati, Claudia, *ZR Rifle - The Plot To Kill Kennedy And Castro,* Ocean Press, Victoria, Australia, 1994. From declassified Cuban records of the Kennedy assassination.)

For more information see *Reinhard Gehlen, Master Spy* (I can't find my copy at the moment and don't remember the author). In 1968, after the Kennedy assassination, Gehlen retired to his chalet in Bavaria. The chalet was a gift from Allen Dulles. *The General Was A Spy* by Heinz Hohne and Hermann Zolling,, *Project Paperclip* by Clarence Lasby, *Shootdown* by R.W. Johnson (tells about Clark's involvement in the shootdown of Korean Airlines 007), *Project Paperclip* by Ray Renick, and the *Torbitt Document* by William Torbitt are all resources for more information. The most accurate source of information for a general overview are the *Phoenix Journals* and *CONTACT* newspaper.

END OF PART 23.

PART 24:

GERMAN SCIENTISTS AND ALIENS

Here is something you should think seriously about. The ONE thing that "everybody" agrees on. Christians, atheists, Republicans, Democrats, Communists, whatever, is that the Nazis were degenerate, sick, nuts, weird, the ultimate evil. I ask you: realistically, how can this be?

Is it possible that this is another "lie?" You ask, am I saying the Nazis were not evil? What is your definition of evil? Does the evidence support what you believe? How can a whole nation of Germans - many of them our brothers and sisters and direct ancestors - all be totally evil? Were they that different from us? Was our government telling us the truth? Has the government ever told us the truth about ANYTHING?

Let's go back to Werner von Braun. IN 1959, (in *News Europa,* Jan. 1, 1959), von Braun states this about extraterrestrials in an interview: "We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base of operations is at present unknown to us" (when asked about the deflection of a U.S. satellite). "More I cannot say at present. We are now engaged in entering into a closer contact with those powers, and in six or nine months' time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter."

The great German space pioneer Hermann Oberth said, "We cannot take credit for our record advancement in certain scientific fields alone; we have been helped." When asked who helped, he said: "The people of other worlds." (Robin Collyns, *Did Spacemen Colonize the Earth?* London: Pelham Books, 1974, p. 236.)

Noted German rocket expert Dr. Walter Riedel said: "I'm convinced that saucers have an out-of-world basis." (April, 1952, *LIFE* magazine, p. 96.)

The *American Weekly* of October 24, 1954, quoted Professor Oberth of Germany: "It is my thesis that flying saucers are real and that they are space ships from another solar system."

General Douglas MacArthur, quoted in the *The New York Times,* Oct. 8, 1955, said "The nations of the world will have to unite - for the next war will be an interplanetary war. The nations of the Earth must someday make a common front against attack by people from other planets."

There is plenty of proof that "flying saucers" are real. The questions now are, what are they, and from where do they come?

NICAP

The National Investigations Committee On Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) was founded in 1956 by Navy physicist Thomas Townsend Brown. Brown is known as the discoverer of the electrogravitic capacitance effect. He was former Vice President of Douglas Aircraft (one of the founding groups of the RAND Corporation). NICAP gained a reputation as being a CIA front operation. For many years it was headed by Marine Major Donald Keyhoe.

In *Der Weltraum Rueckt Uns Nagher, Blanvalet Verlag,* Chapter III, by; Major Keyhoe, he says that the U.S. infiltrated 600 scientists into Bohemia in tank crew uniforms, in 1945, to check out some of the U.F.O. bases. Vice-Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, a former director of the CIA, was a board member of NICAP for years.

Colonel Joseph Bryan III, chief of the CIA psychological warfare staff and Count Nicolas de Rochefort of the same CIA staff were board members. Karl Pflock was chairman of NICAP's Washington sub-committee. John Acuff "who was alleged to have CIA affiliations" per the *UFO Encyclopedia* by John Spencer, took over as head of NICAP. Then Acuff did a curious thing, according to *Cosmic Patriot Files, Vol. 2,* by the "Committed of 12 to Save the Earth,"* edited by Commander X, p. 137, Acuff sold classified CIA documents to a Nazi organization in Canada called Samisdat.

Samisdat is the publisher of two books called *UFOs, Nazi Secret Weapon?* by Mattern-Friedrich and *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions* by Christof Friedrich, both of which were available from Samisdat Publishers, 206 Carlton St., Toronto, ONT., M5A 2L1, Canada, or from Liberty Bell Publications, Reedy, WV, 25270.

A video called *UFO Secrets of WW II German Flying Saucers* and one called *UFO Secrets of the Third Reich,* both produced by the American Academy of Dissident Scientists, are available and a phone number from the tapes is: 310-473-9717. (American Academy of Dissident Scientists, 10970 Ashton Ave. #310, Los Angeles, CA 90024. One of their Presidents is Vladimir Terziski.

Acuff was kicked out and replaced by CIA agent Alan Hall in 1979. Christof Friedrich campaigned to become Prime Minister of Canada. A Jewish radio announcer interviewed Friedrich to try to discredit him, but the result was the firing, blacklisting, and subsequent persecution of the Jewish moderator.

Cosmic Patriot Files (currently available from ads in UFO publications and most UFO book dealers) says in *Vol. 2*, p. 131 that in 1945 the Germans began transferring their flying saucer projects to a secret underground base near the South Pole. Also in 1945, General Hans Kammler disappeared from Germany and went to the South Pole on German U-Boat U-977, and German flying saucers began appearing over the United States.

Samisdat was selling a manuscript called "The Lightning & the Sun" by Savitri Devi, a "guru" from India whose book connected roots of Naziism with the pyramid in Egypt and Pharoah Akhn-aton and the "ancient cult of the Sun."

Willard McIntyre, a friend of Stuart Nixon, who was the assistant to NICAP President John (Jack) Acuff, accused Acuff of selling the material to Samisdat and of intending to merge Samisdat and NICAP. One NICAP board member, the Jewish Senator Barry Goldwater, was quite upset upon learning about the involvement with Samisdat, considered a Nazi organization.

Goldwater was busy running for President and no doubt would not appreciate the link to Nazis and UFOs. The head of his Presidential Campaign Committee was someone you have perhaps heard of, named Ronald Reagan. Goldwater was Chairman of the Senate Intelligence Committee and the Senate Armed Services Committee. He tried to obtain entrance to the infamous Hangar 18 at Wright-Patterson and was denied. There was more going on with this situation than we are allowed to know.

Anyway, Acuff had to go and was forced out. A new board was voted in which included two new board members: one was Senator Goldwater's aide, Charles Lombard, and the other was John Fisher. If you recall, in the early *Fire From The Sky* writings, I said that General George Keegan, head of Air Force Intelligence, inspired the founding of the American Security Council to try to warn the American public of what was happening. The President of the American Security Council was - did you guess it? - John Fisher. A Co-Chairman of the Council was Senator Robert Dole. The members of this council did not understand who was the real enemy, and they were sabotaged.

"NICAP continued to have confidential UFO data leaked to it during Acuff's tenure. Late in 1976, for example, an officer in the Pentagon provided Acuff with copies of a number of classified documents, including the now-famous Iranian report and several other 'hot' reports." This had to be stopped, so Acuff was canned and retired CIA agent Alan Hall was brought in to replace him. "Not much is known about Hall's background, except he evidently worked in some technical capacity - perhaps with the Office of Scientific Intelligence..." My-Oh-My. What tangled webs.

THEN CAME 1947

The famous Roswell crash occurred in 1947. That year, Operation Majestic-12 was supposedly established by Truman to control the UFO situation, the National Security Act was passed, Project SIGN was established at Wright-Patterson and the CIA was established. Admiral James Forrestal was soon appointed Secretary of Defense, later to be murdered when he was tossed out of a hospital window by CIA agents, because he wanted to tell about the flying saucers.

The Roswell, New Mexico, crash of a flying saucer in 1947 has been described by the government as nothing but a weather balloon. Yet, an investigation by the Government Accounting Office and others has shown that all records pertaining to this event were illegally destroyed.

Another strange thing about this event is that the government must have released HUNDREDS of these "weather balloons" in 1947 - or - perhaps they were not weather balloons? A file in the MUFON computer bulletin board called *1947.SIT* lists the reported sightings of UFOs during 1947, sorted by state. There were 853 events and 3283 witnesses *reported.* How many more were not reported? Quite a lot of "weather balloons," don't you think?

In 1951, Congress was talking about turning Antarctica into a nuclear test area, but suddenly changed their mind when Washington was buzzed by UFOs and pictures of flying saucers over the White House appeared on the front pages of newspapers.

ANTARCTICA

In early 1980, I received the following letter from Christof Friedrich of Samisdat, written in 1979, the same year John Acuff was kicked out of NICAP for selling classified CIA documents to Samisdat. As it is too long, I will quote only part of it.

"SEARCH FOR HITLER'S ANTARCTIC U.F.O. BASES. Due to an overwhelming number of letters and telephone calls requesting details about our new books, new products, speaking tours, psychic research projects and our intensive experimental UFO-construction programs, we have to use this less personal form of keeping in touch with our many friends and collaborators around the world.

"Your response to our most recent mailout and activities has been most encouraging! We have received orders and enquiries from as far away as Nomea in the South Pacific, Easter Island, Chile, Argentina, Brazil, Venezuela, Panama, Mexico, Soviet Satellite countries, China, South Africa, Persia, the Congo, Australia, Japan, as well as from every country in Western Europe and almost every state in the U.S.A.

Not only is this response extensive, it is massive - a clear indication on the part of knowledgeable UFO researchers and members of the public that they are tired of the 'junk food' being served up by old-line UFO groups and publications who expound the official CIA-KGB alibi that all UFOs are extraterrestrial. What the UFO-watching world wants now is the real meat of the matter - a serious investigation of UFOs whose origins are terrestrial. SAMISDAT is the only organization making such an effort, but we are not alone, for we have thousands of supporters like yourself who want to know the truth which the saucer-charlatans have for 30 years tried to cover up with fairy tale fantasies of 'little green men.' It is people like yourself who have made SAMISDAT the most active UFO organization and publisher on Planet Earth!

[I want to insert a question to readers who consider themselves serious UFO researchers. Have you ever heard of Samisdat? That's what I thought. Continuing:]

"Certainly we can be proud of this achievement which is the result, not only of our own Herculean efforts and sacrifices, but of your faithful support during this 5-year-long struggle against the forces of vested interest, deceit and prejudice which have attempted to hide the UFO story under a cloak of childish nonsense and outright lies.

For many years we have determinedly pursued this new course of investigation, firm in the knowledge that man is able to achieve that which he perceives. Our researchers' keen sense of direction and perception has guided them unerringly in their discovery of seemingly insignificant clues and the derivation of meaningful patterns therefore. Only such devoted and painstaking research could succeed in unEarthing the present array of facts which indicate the Earthly origin of most flying saucers. As one vital discovery has led to another, we have reached certain conclusions which are logical and inescapable, however unpopular they may be today.

"Our discoveries have led us into the production of a number of currently suppressed and sometimes vilified books which are now underground best-sellers. *UFOS - NAZI SECRET WEAPON?* was our first title, now sold out in five complete editions. Our second book, *SECRET NAZI POLAR EXPEDITIONS,* is coming up fast and has sold out two full editions. Foreign language translations of these books are selling briskly, and it is becoming obvious to everyone that the media-enforced blockage of the truth has now been broken. Three additional books are currently under production and these will round out our Phase I Publishing Program: *THE CIA-KGB-UFO COVERUP, THE ANTARCTICA THEORY* and *THE LAST BATTALION.*

"During the course of our research, we have discovered some of the original German flying saucer scientists who are still alive! These space pioneers are, of course, old men now in their 70s and 80s. Our interviews with them will be incorporated into our regular lecture program as well as into our future books.

"We have also been able to establish research teams in Canada, the U.S.A. and in particular, Germany, whose task it is to rediscover basic principles of wingless flight which brought the original Nazi UFOs into being. Already, these teams have designed and constructed small scale models, some using conventional power and others which have propulsion systems unprecedented in today's aerospace technology. With additional research, we hope to make available several different models in kit form for hobby-builders." END OF QUOTE.

ADMIRAL BYRD AND OPERATION HIGHJUMP

Also in 1947, Admiral Richard E. Byrd led 4,000 military troops from the U.S., Britain and Australia in an invasion of Antarctica (Operation Highjump and follow-up), but encountered heavy resistance from Nazi flying saucers and had to call off the invasion. A Rear-Admiral who was in that invasion has retired in Texas, and said he was shocked when he read the *Fire From The Sky* material. He knew there were a lot of aircraft and rocket shoot-downs but did not realize the situation was so bad.

The invasion of ANTARCTICA consisted of three battle groups from Norfolk, VA, on Dec. 2, 1946. They were led by Byrd's command ship, the ice-breaker *Northwind,* and consisted of the catapult ship *Pine Island,* the destroyer *Brownsen,* the aircraft-carrier *Phillipines Sea,* the U.S. submarine *Sennet,* two support vessels *Yankee* and *Merrick,* and two tankers *Canisted* and *Capacan,* the destroyer *Henderson* and a floatplane ship *Currituck.* A British-Norwegian force and a Russian force, and I believe some Australian and Canadian forces were also involved.

On March 5, 1947 the *El Mercurio* newspaper of Santiago, Chile, had a headline article "On Board the Mount Olympus on the High Seas" which quoted Byrd in an interview with Lee van Atta: "Adm. Byrd declared today that it was imperative for the United States to initiate immediate defence measures against hostile regions. The admiral further stated that he didn't want to frighten anyone unduly but that it was a bitter reality that in case of a new war the continental United States would be attacked by flying objects which could fly from pole to pole at incredible speeds. (Earlier he had recommended defence bases at the North Pole.) Admiral Byrd repeated the above points of view, resulting from his personal knowledge gathered both at the north and south poles, before a news conference held for International News Service."

When Byrd returned to the States, he was hospitalized and was not allowed to hold any more press conferences. In March 1955, he was placed in charge of Operation Deepfreeze which was part of the International Geophysical Year (1957-1958) exploration of the Antarctic. He died, some have suggested he was murdered, in 1957. UFO researchers are familiar with a diary purported to be Admiral Byrd's diary which tells of an entrance to a hollow Earth at the poles and a being called THE MASTER. The diary is generally considered to be a hoax, but even if it is a hoax, it is an indication that there was SOMETHING going on upon which to build the hoax.

UFO researchers are also aware of strange sightings of flying saucers with swastikas or iron crosses on them, "aliens" speaking German, etc. An example is the American Reinhold Schmidt, whose father was born in Germany, who tells in his book *Incident At Kearney* (Nebraska) that he was taken on a flying saucer on several occasions. He said the crew spoke German and acted like German soldiers. He said they took him to the Polar region (if someone were making up a story, why would they claim to be taken, of all places, to the pole?)

After returning he was subjected to persecution by the U.S. Government. His description of the flying saucers matched pictures captured from the Germans. In 1959, three large newspapers in Chile reported front page articles about UFO encounters where the crew members appeared to be German soldiers. IN the 1960s there were reports in New York and New Jersey of flying saucer "aliens" who spoke German, or English with a German accent.

In the Julius and Ethel Rosenberg atomic espionage trials, they spoke of "warships of space." Since they had access to top secret information, about what were they talking?

END OF PART 24.

PART 25:

HITLER ESCAPED!

I remember hearing, in the 1950s, rumors that Hitler had escaped to a secret Nazi base at the South Pole. In 1952, Dwight D. Eisenhower said: "We have been unable to unearth one bit of tangible evidence of Hitler's death. Many people believe that Hitler escaped from Berlin."

When President Truman asked Joseph Stalin at the Potsdam conference in 1945 whether or not Hitler was dead, Stalin replied bluntly, "No." Stalin's top army officer, Marshall Gregory Zhukov, whose troops were the ones to occupy Berlin, flatly stated after a long thorough investigation in 1945: "We have found no corpse that could be Hitler's."

The chief of the U.S. trial counsel at Nuremburg, Thomas J. Dodd, said: "No one can say he is dead." Major General Floyd Parks, who was commanding general of the U.S. sector in Berlin, stated for publication that he had been present when Marshall Zhukov described his entrance to Berlin, and Zhukov stated he believed Hitler might have escaped. Lt. Gen. Bedell Smith, Chief of Staff to Gen. Eisenhower in the European invasion and later Director of the CIA, stated publicly on Oct. 12, 1945, "No human being can say conclusively that Hitler is dead."

Col. W.J. Heimlich, former Chief, United States Intelligence, at Berlin, stated for publication that he was in charge of determining what had happened to Hitler and after a thorough investigation his report was: "There was no evidence beyond that of hearsay to support the theory of Hitler's suicide." He also stated, "On the basis of present evidence, no insurance company in America would pay a claim on Adolph Hitler."

Nuremburg judge Michael Mussmanno said in his book *Ten Days to Die,* "Russia must accept much of the blame (to the extent that it still exists) that Hitler did not die in May 1945." However, Mussmanno stated that he interviewed Hitler's personal waiter, his valet, his chauffeur, his two secretaries, pilots, top generals, etc., and they all agreed perfectly that Hitler committed suicide. He said they could not have gotten together afterward and made up a story that agreed in perfect detail without one flaw anywhere, so they must be telling the truth and he was absolutely convinced that Hitler committed suicide. The story at first sounds convincing, until you realized that they could have memorized a story BEFOREHAND and these were all people who almost WORSHIPPED Hitler. Do witnesses ever agree *perfectly* in detail in real life?

Former Secretary of State Jimmy Byrnes in his book *Frankly Speaking* (as quoted in the April 1948 *The Cross and The Flag*): "While in Potsdam at the Conference of the Big Four, Stalin left his chair, came over and clinked his liquor glass with mine in a very friendly manner. I said to him: 'Marshal Stalin, what is your theory about the death of Hitler?' Stalin replied: "He is not dead. He escaped either to Spain or Argentina.'"

I still have the September, 1948, issue of a magazine called *The Plain Truth* with the headline article: "IS HITLER ALIVE, OR DEAD?," subtitled: "Here is summarized the conclusions of an exhaustive three-year investigation - together with reasons for believing Hitler may be alive and secretly planning the biggest hoax of all history."

Another article in November, 1949, says "The Nazis went underground, May 16, 1943!" and details a meeting at the residence of Krupp von Bohlen-Halbach, the head of I.G. Farben, etc., at which they planned "for World War III."

Another article in August, 1952, entitled "HITLER DID NOT DIE," subtitled "Adolph Hitler's fake suicide in his Berlin Bunker now is exposed as History's greatest hoax! Positive evidence comes to light that Hitler did not die - here's new evidence that Hitler is alive, directing Nazi underground, today!"

The June, 1952, issue of *The Plain Truth* is headlined: "HITLER *May Be Alive!"* The article states: "Now, NEW FACTS, or purported facts, leak out. It's reported now that in 1940 the Nazis started to amass tractors, planes, sledges, gliders, and all sorts of machinery and materials IN THE SOUTH POLAR REGIONS - that for the next 4 years Nazi technicians built, on an almost unknown CONTINENT, Antarctica, the Fuhrer's SHANGRILA - a new Berchtesgaden.

The report says they scooped out an entire mountain, built a new refuge completely camouflaged - a magic mountain hide-a-way. The recently discovered continent is larger than Europe - 5,600 miles from Africa, 1,900 miles from the southern tip of South America, 4,800 miles from Australia.

It is NOT a mere ice-covered surface, but a real continent, with plains, valleys, mountain peaks up to 15,000 feet. The temperature in the interior is around zero (?) in the summer, and never drops below 20 or 30 degrees below in the winter. In other words, it is not as cold as in parts of North Dakota or Canada."

Bonjour magazine, the *Police Gazette,* and the Paris newspaper *Le Monde* all had articles about Hitler's South Pole hideaway. Admiral Doenitz, in 1943, stated, "The German submarine fleet has even now established an earthly paradise, an impregnable fortress, for the Fuhrer, in whatever part of the world." Although he did not specify where the exact location was, *Bonjour* pointed out that in 1940 Nazi engineers had begun construction of buildings that were to withstand temperatures to 60 degrees below zero.

There have been strong rumors, from the end of the War, that Hitler escaped to the South Pole. Yet, most people simply REFUSE to believe the evidence, the idea that Hitler survived the war is just unacceptable! It is too upsetting to too many people!

There is plenty of PROOF that the Americans and Russians LIED about what happened to Hitler, and there are strong rumors that he escaped to Antarctica. There is ample proof that a major group of Nazis escaped to Argentina. What do YOU think? Why did Admiral Byrd lead an *invasion to Antarctica,* and why the extreme secrecy about the whole situation?

In 1981, Donald McKale wrote *Hitler: The Survival Myth* to try to lay to rest the questions about what happened to Hitler. The flyleaf says: "In this book a distinguished historian examines the postwar world's most absorbing and persistent mystery, revealing why it has endured and where the mystery leads" (emphasis mine). The back flyleaf says "Absolute certainty about what happened still eludes us today."

Just recently on TV there are STILL programs telling "at last, the final, once and for all, this is the real story" about what happened to Hitler, yet they all do not really answer the question. A recent TV program, called "What Really Happened to Adolph Hitler," after investigating numerous stories, ends by saying that, in spite of Glasnost and the new freedom of access to Russian files, the files on Hitler are still some of the most highly classified items of the Soviets.

The *Diario Illustrado* of Santiago, Chile, January 18, 1948 issue, said: "On 30th of April, 1945, Berlin was in dissolution but little of that dissolution was evident at Templehof Airfield. At 4:15 p.m. at JU52 landed and S.S. troops directly from Rechlin for the defence of Berlin disembarked, all of them young, not older than 18 years.

The gunner in the particular plane was an engineer by the name of B... whom I had known for a number of years and for whom I had endeavored to get exemption from military service. He sought to tank up and leave Berlin as quickly as possible. During this re-fueling interval Mr. B... was suddenly elbowed in the ribs by his radio operator with a nod to look in a certain direction.

At about 100-120 meters he saw a sleek Messerschmitt Jet Model 332 [an editorial comment says this should be an ARADO 234]. Br. B.. and the radio operator saw, and without any doubt whatsoever, standing in front of the jet, their Commander in Chief, Adolf Hitler, dressed in field-grey uniform and gesticulating animatedly with some Party functionaries, who were obviously seeing him off.

For about ten minutes whilst their plane was being refuelled the two men observed this scene and around 4:30 p.m. they took to the air again. They were extremely astonished to hear during the midnight military news bulletin, some seven and a half hours later, that Hitler had committed suicide."

On a Canadian Broadcasting Corporation program called *As It Happens,* September 17th, 1974 at 7:15 p.m., a Prof. Dr. Ryder Saguenay, oral surgeon from the Dental Faculty of the University of California at Los Angeles, said that Hitler had ordered a special plane to leave from Berlin with all medical and dental records, especially X-rays, of all top Nazis for an unknown destination. He said that the dental records used to identify Hitler's body were drawn from MEMORY by a dental assistant, who disappeared and was never found.

An editorial in *Zig Zag,* Santiago, Chile, January 16, 1948, states that on April 30th, 1945, Flight Captain Peter Baumgart took Adolf Hitler, his wife Eva Braun, as well as a few loyal friends by plane from Tempelhof Airport to Tondern in Denmark (still German controlled). From Tondern, they took another plane to Kristiansund in Norway (also German controlled). From there they joined a submarine convoy. (*U.F.O. Letzte Geheimwaffe des III Reiches,* Mattern, pp. 50-51.)

The Jewish writer Michael Bar-Zohar in *The Avengers,* p. 99, said: "In 1943 Admiral Doenitz had declared: 'The German U-boat fleet is proud to have made an earthly paradise, an impregnable fortress for the Fuhrer, somewhere in the world.' He did not say in what part of the world it existed, but fairly obviously it was in South America."

The German writer Mattern said that Admiral Doenitz told a graduating class of naval cadets in Kiel in 1944: "The German Navy has still a great role to play in the future. The German Navy knows all hiding places for the Navy to take the Fuhrer to, should the need arise. There he can prepare his last measures in complete quiet."

The Germans say they were in contact with extraterrestrials. Now consider what Ronald Reagan, who was involved with the formerly Nazi Gehlen spy organization, said to Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev at the November 1985 Geneva summit conference: He told him, "How much easier your task and mine might be in these meetings that we held if suddenly there was a threat to this world from another species from another planet outside in the universe. We'd forget all the little local differences that we have between our countries, and we would find out once and for all that we really are all human beings here on this earth together." (*International Herald Tribune and Daily Telegraph,* 5 Dec. 1985.)

On September 21, 1987, Reagan spoke before the General Assembly of the United Nations and said: "I occasionally think, how quickly our differences worldwide would vanish if we were facing an alien threat from outside this world. And yet I ask, is not an alien force already among us?"

On May 4, 1988, at Chicago's Palmer House Hotel, Reagan said: "I've often wondered, what if all of us in the world discovered that we were threatened by an outer... a power from outer space, from another planet."

You of course have heard about Reagan's Star Wars program. If you study what was reported *after* the Gulf War about the Patriot missiles, you will find that the Patriot missile program and the Star Wars program were a big lie and the money was spent on something other than what we were told. The Patriot missiles never shot down a Scud, as learned by Congressional inquiry and reported by Israel.

There are so many facets to this story, it is hard to explain one part because it will not make sense unless you understand the other parts.

END OF PART 25.

PART 26:

POLAR DEFENSES

One thing that Admiral Byrd stated in a press conference after his defeat at Antarctica was that the Antarctic continent should be surrounded by a "wall of defence installations since it represented the last line of defence for America." Although the U.S. and Russia had been allies during the war, suddenly the "Iron Curtain" was created and we and the Russians became enemies.

Both the Soviets and the United States ringed the poles with defense and detection bases, and in between was the barren no-man's-land of the poles where absolutely nobody lived, or did they? Could it be that we pretended we were protecting against the Russians and they pretended they were protecting against us, while really we and they were both scared of what was in between us - the Nazi Last Battalion?

UFO researchers should now begin to see the light of why the Navy has always been in the lead of UFO research. And you should now understand why, right from the beginning, they issued shoot-to-kill orders against any UFOs and why the situation was so highly classified! And anti-communist researchers have more clues now as to why we were giving aid to the Soviets at the same time we were calling them our enemies!

UFOs - NAZIS OR ALIENS?

Let me be sure you understand, though, that NOT ALL UFOs ARE NAZIS. Originally they were Nazi with some alien. Later the U.S. developed UFOs, and the Russians, and who knows who else. But all along there really were extraterrestrials, that is from where some of the technology originally came. Read the lives of Walter Russell, Nikola Tesla, the world's most advanced mathematician Ramanujan, etc., and they all say they were in contact with "gods" (The Goddess Namagiri, in the case of Ramanujan) or they had "enlightenment" from a "cosmic messenger" as in the case of Walter Russell. Russell is one who understood true physics, as opposed to the deceptions taught in modern physics.

RUSSIAN SPACE PROGRAM

Let's return to the origin of the Russian space program. The Russians also captured many German rocket and space scientists. Later the chief Russian physicist was Kapitsa, who once headed an atomic research laboratory at Cambridge University. (*Assault on the Unknown, The International Geophysical Year* by Walter Sullivan, McGraw-Hill Book Co., New York, p. 56. Part of the IGY explorations were covers for secret investigations into the Nazi UFO base at Antarctica, see books referenced elsewhere.) The Russians were successful in their endeavors and in 1972, at a meeting of Communist leaders in Prague, Brezhnev stated that the Soviets would be able to dominate the world by 1985. He specifically stated they would control the oceans, 90% of the land, and the air and space. He said they would control, not invade and conquer.

In 1974, the construction of the Tara directed-energy facility at Saryshagan was begun.

In 1975, a Soviet article in *International Life* talks about weather war, changing the nature of lightning, increasing the power of lightning, and using directed energy of tremendous power at specific targets. It tells of using "atmospheric electricity" to suppress mental activity of large groups of people.

On June 13, 1975 - he repeated his call for a ban on doomsday weapons to visiting U.S. Senators. They could not understand what he was talking about.

In August 1975 - Ponomarev made the same proposal to a group of U.S. congressmen visiting the Kremlin, same result.

In November of 1975 - large amounts of hydrogen gas with traces of tritium were detected at Semipalatinsk by U.S. Air Force TRW reconnaissance satellites. General George Keegan had been paying special attention to this facility ever since one of his men warned him of something "fishy" there in 1972. This was evidence confirming his suspicions of Soviet particle beam research.

In October-December of 1975 - the Soviets destroyed at least five U.S. satellites over the Indian Ocean.

In 1976 - the State Department revealed that the U.S. Embassy in Moscow had been continuously under some sort of microwave radiation attack from the Soviets. Two ambassadors were killed, other people got sick. All Embassy employees were given a 20% hazardous duty pay increase.

In 1976 - Soviet nuclear physicist Rudakov visited the U.S., and gave a talk which was immediately classified and the blackboard ripped down and carried away. Material which was open public scientific material in the USSR was considered classified here in the U.S. Who was being kept in the dark?

March 30, 1976 - a huge unexplained boom occurred over the Netherlands. Probable Soviet scalar howitzer test.

July 4, 1976 - Independence Day! Russia joined our celebrations by activating its giant *Woodpecker transmitters* causing worldwide interference in all frequencies from 3 to 30 MHz. Transmissions have been continuous ever since. Later the U.S. government said these were merely Russian over-the-horizon radar.

September 10, 1976 - European Airways Flight 831, Moscow to London, saw a huge blinding ball of light below them. Pilot contacted Soviets, was told to not ask questions. This was probably a test to measure the British reaction and to determine if the British knew what it was.

In 1976 - Sweden detected evidence of nuclear explosions from Semipalatinsk but without seismic activity.

In 1976 - Legionnaires Disease strikes in downtown Philadelphia. Kills 34, 187 others got sick. Dr. P. David Beter said this was actually caused by Soviets releasing plutonium gas, but Bearden says it was a scalar electromagnetic attack.

SCALAR WEAPONS ACTIVATED

March 24, 1977 - a luminous patch of light appeared off the coast of Spanish Sahara, Africa, and a large globe of dynamic lights appeared over it. Bearden says this was a test of the Tesla shield which shields everything within it from any outside attack.

June 11, 1977 - Soviet scientist gave a report to *Los Angeles Times* journalist Robert Toth (who was in Moscow) which spoke of energy coming from the vacuum of space. KGB quickly arrested both and charged them with possessing Soviet state secrets. Most American scientists at the time thought energy from the vacuum was nonsense.

September 26, 1977 - Russia launched the Intercosmos 17 octagon space vehicle and destroyed the U.S. moon base, as mentioned in earlier *Fire From The Sky* material. Soviets also destroyed our spy satellites and "took the high ground." Russia has prevented us from controlling space ever since.

December 1977 and later - mysterious unexplained booms began occurring off the U.S. coasts. This was, according to Bearden, Soviet weapon registration and calibration, and according to Beter was warnings to our government.

Also in 1977 - Russia began weather war in earnest. Two huge hot spots in the Pacific were created which caused an El Ni±o effect and resulted in one of the most severe winters on record. For more information, read Tom Bearden's materials and check his reference material.

January 27, 1978 - all three engines fail on a Boeing 727 off U.S. east coast, restart one by one as plane falls 8,000 feet. Bearden says this was a Soviet test and warning. Four planes crash in 6 days NW of Las Vegas in February, 1978. From this point on the aircraft events and crashes are too numerous to list and are still ongoing. Atmospheric booms were reported over Texas coast, Nova Scotia, South Carolina.

April 2, 1978 - 39 pilots in a race off Florida experience "time loss" on synchronized watches. Unexplained lights and lighted objects seen and tracked on radar over Florida.

For more information on scalar EM bird kills, earthquakes, Tesla shield observations, crashes, and much more as part of Soviet man-caused events, see Tom Bearden's material, Dr. Beter's material, and related material from other authors. There are far too many for me to list.

COALITION INSIDER

In December, 1978, I received Vol. 1, No. 1 of the *Coalition Insider,* a report of the Coalition for Peace Through Strength. This was published by the American Security Council, started by General George Keegan after he resigned as head of Air Force Intelligence to become a private citizen so he could warn about the Soviet particle beam and other weapons developments. The back page article entitled "Soviets Have Satellite Killers" says: "At a news conference recently, Defense Secretary Harold Brown revealed that the Soviet Union has placed into operation a space interceptor satellite capable of shooting down U.S. military and civilian satellites." How did he know the capabilities of these interceptors? Because they had already knocked out our satellites!

The article further stated: "Last year, the Soviet Union denounced the U.S. for even considering the development of a similar space interceptor satellite, capable of shooting down Soviet interceptor satellites, before they could knock out our reconnaissance satellites. Any such plans, warned Moscow, would be in 'direct violation' of the treaty for peaceful uses of space. But, the Soviets already had a 'killer satellite' of their own!"

The co-chairman of the press conference is pictured; his name was Senator Robert Dole.

NORTHERN BOOK HOUSE

Also in 1978 I received a packet of Communist literature from the Soviet distributor Northern Book House, Box 1000, Gravenhurst, Ontario, Canada. At the time, I considered the material as worthless nonsense garbage. Now, as I review it, I am shocked. They talk about humans and animals responding to "electromagnetic waves." They talk about Soviet scientist Dr. N. A. Kozyrev's study of earthquakes on the moon. They talk about getting energy out of the vacuum.

They brag about the "world's first supersonic aircraft," the Soviet TU-104, introduced in 1956 (they ignore the German supersonic bomber code-named Horten XVIII, made in 1945). I'll just quote the article: "Remember back to 1956? World's first jet passenger plane. Changed whole course of flying (vastly increased people carried).

When NN [*Northern Neighbors,* publication of Northern Book House] said it (15 years ago), hor-hor-hor, such exaggerating! Plane was, of course, famous Soviet TU-104, long far ahead of USA. Now they've {Russia] got the TU-144 supersonic aircraft.

And where is USA? Where NN said it would be. Far behind USSR's. But darn it all, we missed out! We didn't say USA would not have any SST at all, like it hasn't. Sorry, but don't expect to see us exaggerate all the time. These days it's hard to see how far behind USA is falling."

Oh, but now we are far ahead of them, we are told. Our supersonic passenger transport is the, ah, er, it's the - somebody help me out here, please? And our space station is the ah, er, oh - never mind. We have Disney World, so there!

They quote a *U.S. News & World Report* article "U.S. Superiority Has Ended," April 5, 1971. The centerfold of the magazine is a spread of pictures of the inside of their space station and the four men working there for months at a time. They point out that the U.S. astronauts have to crash land in the ocean on return, while Soviet astronauts land on the ground.

The next page is an article condemning Zionism as racism! One of the articles tells of the Russian educational system. In their system, there is no homework, all study is done at school. Everybody learns another language starting in Grade One. In some of the schools physical training consists of three hours a day! No wonder they win all the Olympic medals. Oh well, they are probably just bragging.

KAMMLER

Anybody familiar with Nazi Germany will be familiar with Himmler, Speer, Bormann and such but few have ever heard of Hans Kammler. Kammler was a General in the SS, rather an accomplishment any way you look at it. Kammler "was regarded by many in the Nazi hierarchy as the most powerful man in Germany outside the Cabinet." (*Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia,* by Tom Agoston, Dodd, Mead & Co., p. 4.)

Kammler, whose position of authority was directly under Himmler, was in charge of Hitler's most secret projects, specifically projects such as the world's first jet engines and rockets. He had over 14 million people working for him, mostly building underground factories. Agoston said his projects were equivalent to being in charge of building the Great Pyramids of the Coliseum in Rome. Speer said that he believed that Kammler was being considered to take his (Speer's) position.

Working under Kammler in charge of rockets was General Walther Dornberger, who with Dr. Werner von Braun, developed the V-2 rocket. Working with Kammler at the "Reich's most advanced high-technology military research center" at the Skoda armament complex in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia was General Dr. Wilhelm Voss. Some of the projects at Skoda remain secret to this day, but it is acknowledged that among the projects was one by Dr. Franz Josef Neugebauer, "a specialist in thermal systems for aircraft nuclear propulsion." (Agoston, p. 12.)

Albert Speer, in his book *Spandau, The Secret Diaries,* brags that it was he who ordered Werner Heisenberg to stop building an atomic bomb and concentrate on a "uranium motor" for aircraft. Towards the end of the war, Hitler even made Goering and Speer subordinate to Kammler. Eisenhower admits in *Crusade In Europe* that the Nazis were within 6 months of developing advanced weapons that would have changed the outcome of the war.

RUDOLPH HESS AND SECRET GERMAN SPACE BASE

Rudolph Hess, Hitler's best friend and second in command, went to England to try to stop the war with Britain and was arrested as a "war criminal" on May 10, 1941 and was kept from having any contact with the public until he was recently murdered. He was the only prisoner in Spandau prison. Ones who paid any attention to his situation at all have wondered what was the big secret he knew that made him so dangerous to the Allies? Perhaps the answer is revealed in Friedrich's book *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions* on page 34: Hess "was entrusted with the all-important Antarctic file... Hess, himself, kept the Polar File..."

If you look at a map of Antarctica you will see that a portion of Queen Maud Land is called new Schwabenland. This is the part of the continent nearest to South Africa. The Germans made a major expedition to this area in 1938-1939 and began the construction of a major base. For details of this expedition, see the book by Friedrich. This book has pictures of the *warmwater* ponds and other information that will surprise you. It has maps showing that Admiral Byrd's Operation Highjump (Naval Task Force 68) military invasion landed on the side opposite the German bases. The book tells of a major food item in the area called krill. Ever heard of "Krill?" The maps of Operation Highjump say that they left the German side of the continent unexplored.

A man who was very influential in modern German post-war politics was Hans-Ulrich Rudel, a frequent guest speaker in German military and political circles. Rudel was the man groomed by Hitler to become his successor. It is known that Rudel made frequent trips to Tierra del Fuego at the tip of South America nearest Antarctica. One of Martin Bormann's last messages from the bunker in Berlin to Doenitz mentioned Tierra del Fuego.

The book, *UFOs, Nazi Secret Weapon?* says (p. 8) "Hitler's appraisal of the Jews can best be summed up as contained in '*THE PROTOCOLS OF THE LEARNED ELDERS OF ZION.' This is a very important aspect of the whole U.F.O. story, because in it, we find the seeds for many far-reaching decisions made 30 years later." Do you have any idea what such a politically "incorrect" subject such as the *PROTOCOLS* could have to do with UFOs?

A book called *America's Aircraft Year Book* tells about the U.S. using captured German scientists at Ft. Bliss and Wright Field. "Among those in the German group at Wright Field were Rudolph Hermann, Alexander Lippsisch, Heinz Schmitt, Helmut Heinrich, and Fritz Doblhoff and Ernst Kugel. Hermann was attached to the Peenemunde Research Station for Aerodynamics, where Germany's V-2 rockets were hatched and launched against England. A specialist in supersonics, he was in charge of the supersonic wind tunnel at Kochel in the Bavarian Alps. He also was a member of the group entrusted with Hitler's futuristic plans to establish a space-station rocket-refueling base revolving as a satellite about the Earth at a distance of 4,000 miles - a scheme which he and certain high-ranking AAF officers in 1947 still believed to be feasible."

Later evidence shows that most or all of the craft and flying saucer scientists disappeared. The available evidence indicates they went to South America or Antarctica.

The *El Mercurio* and *Der Weg* papers told of a large submarine convoy discovered by the British Navy at the end of WW II. All available Allied units engaged the convoy and were totally destroyed except for the Captain of one destroyer, who was reported as saying, "May God help me, may I never again encounter such a force."

On July 10, 1945, more than two months after the end of the War, the German submarine U-530 surrendered to Argentine authorities. The Commander was Otto Wermoutt. The sub had a crew of 54 men (the normal sub crew was 18 men) and the cargo consisted of 540 barrels of cigarettes and unusually large stocks of food. The Commander was 25 years old, the second officer was 22, and the crew was an average of 25 except for one man who was 32 years old. This was an unusually young crew and upon questioning it was learned that they all claimed that they had no relatives.

A map from a Spanish book called *Is Hitler Alive?* with the route of the Fuhrer convoy shows it passed alongside South Georgia Island, where later a secret underground base was the focus of a secret battle during the Falkland Islands War.

On April 4, 1944 at 4:40 a.m. the German submarine U-859 left on a mysterious mission carrying 67 men and 33 tons of mercury sealed in glass bottles in watertight tin crates. The sub was sunk by a British submarine and most of the crew died. One survivor on his death bed about 30 years later told about the expensive cargo and some divers checked out his story and found the mercury. For what purpose was this mercury to be used? And where were they trying to take it?

There are many other stories of other U-boats and German survivors, mostly in the Southern Hemisphere. The Germans and other European nations required very meticulous registration records of everybody, including their relatives, employment, addresses, children, etc., and at the end of the war the Allies, cross checking these records, taking into account casualties and deaths, determined that there were 250,000 persons unaccounted for.

WERNER HEISENBERG

Hitler signed the order for the atomic bomb to be built on September 26, 1939. The top scientist on this project was Dr. Werner Heisenberg. (Powers, Thomas, *Heisenberg's War,* Alfred A. Knopf, 1993, p. 16.) Heisenberg won the Nobel Prize for physics in 1932 "for the creation of quantum mechanics." He was professor of theoretical physics at Leipzig and later Director of the Max Planck Institute for Physics. His best friend, until the war, was Niels Bohr. Edward Teller received his doctorate by studying under Heisenberg (Powers, vii).

Thomas Powers wrote the book *Heisenberg's War, The Secret of the German Bomb,* in which one of the main themes was trying to account for the fact that Germany was far ahead of the rest of the world in developing the bomb and yet the Allies were astonished when they found the primitive experimental reactor at the end of the war that was supposedly the best the Germans were able to accomplish. Excuses such as German inefficiency, etc., do not fit the evidence, and to say that the Germans were more moral than the American Jews that developed the bomb is not politically acceptable.

It is known that the Germans were also working on the hydrogen bomb, and the Allies frantically bombed the heavy water plants. There are many books and movies about the heroes who stopped the German nuclear efforts, yet somewhere in the hoopla you find that at least one large load of heavy water was never accounted for.

In a speech in June 1949, Vannevar Bush tells that the Allies were extremely concerned that the Germans were ahead of them on the bomb, but finally found out "they had not accomplished five percent of the undertaking which had been brought to success... in this country." He blamed their failure on typical German "regimentation in a totalitarian system." But if you think about it with an open mind, you should realize that "regimentation in a totalitarian system" is usually MORE efficient, especially when it comes to making weapons.

Powers explores Heisenberg's explanation that the Germans "had used their influence as experts to direct the work into the channels which have been mapped in the foregoing report." But the "foregoing report" did not explain what happened. Powers said: "His account is incomplete. Something is withheld" (p. 482). On the last page he sums up by saying, "No one denies what Samuel Goudsmit found in southern Germany in 1945 - a small-scale program of atomic research that posed no threat to the Allies. It is the difficulty of assigning reasons for the failure that have kept the issue tender for nearly fifty years."

When Field Marshall Erhard Milch visited the Gottow laboratories in 1945 where atomic research was being carried out, he asked Heisenberg, "How big would a bomb have to be in order to destroy New York or London?" Heisenberg replied: "About as big as a pineapple, and we will have a basketful for the Fuhrer by Christmas...!" (Mattern-Friedrich, *UFOs, Nazi Secret Weapon?,* p. 77. Some of the material in the book came from classified documents obtained from the CIA. See elsewhere in this text.) (It takes 33 pounds of highly-enriched uranium or 13 pounds of plutonium to make a small atomic bomb).

In 1943 Niels Bohr escaped from Denmark to London and reported that Germany was making the bomb. They also had proof that the Germans had "cornered the major supplies of uranium and also of thorium."

END OF PART 26.

PART 27:

WHO CREATED THE ATOMIC BOMB?

Boris Pash, head of security for the Manhattan Project, and scientist Samuel Goudsmit followed the lead tanks into Paris and into Germany, looking for the German nuclear laboratory, which they found in Strasbourg. This was called Operation Alsos (Greek for "Groves"). Peter Goodchild in his book *J. Robert Oppenheimer, Shatterer of Worlds,* p. 110 said: "Very soon a picture of the Germans' progress began to emerge. They revealed that Hitler had been told of the possibilities of a nuclear weapon in 1942 and that there had been a whole series of uranium pile experiments.

But the crucial facts were that even as late as August 1944 the experiments were still at an early stage. The Germans had neither the certain information that an explosive chain reaction was possible, nor did they have the material or the mechanism to make their bomb. It was apparent that the project had moved forward hardly at all since 1942. There were one or two people in Washington who, when they read Goudsmit's final report, suspected that the information had come too easily, but most people believed it."

It is possible that Germany DID develop the bomb, and the Allies kept it secret? In *Heisenberg's War,* p. 481, Vannevar Bush is quoted as saying in June 1949: "The Nazis wanted an atomic bomb; we knew that. They had as good a chance at it as we had. In the tense years up to 1945 we thought that they were close competitors, even that they might be six months ahead of us. Then after Stuttgart fell and the Alsos mission did its work, we found out. The Nazis had not even reached first base." Surprise, surprise. Or was it lie, lie?

My best guess, based on the evidence, is that there is a strong possibility Germany DID develop the atomic bomb! The Americans managed to capture some of them in early 1945, then on August 6, 1945, dropped one on Hiroshima. This would account for J. Robert Oppenheimer's curious statement that the bomb dropped on Hiroshima was made in Germany. Could the Germans have taken some bombs with them when Hitler escaped? Was the submarine convoy protected by nuclear weapons, and were they what stopped Operation Highjump? Perhaps not, that is just conjecture, but I strongly suspect we got the "bomb" from the Germans.

In *Blowback,* "the first full account of America's recruitment of Nazis, and its disastrous effect on our domestic and foreign policy" by Christopher Simpson, he states: "On July 6 [1945] the Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS) specifically authorized an effort to 'exploit... chosen, rare minds whose continuing intellectual productivity we wish to use' under the top secret project code-named Overcast... At first this was justified on the grounds that German scientists might be useful in the continuing war against Japan" (p.33).

When the Allies found the German atomic bomb laboratory, they were amazed that it was just a small concrete reactor in a cave, too small to go critical. Yet they went to considerable trouble in a top secret program to grab these scientists because they might be useful in defeating Japan? What were they going to do, throw radioactive concrete at the Japanese? Tom Agoston in *Blunder!* says (p. 38) that "Unknown to Allied scientists, the Germans had been able to build up a sizeable stockpile of U-235 and had held up to two tons, as well as two tons of heavy water."

William Stevenson, in *A Man Called Intrepid,* says "The Germans had the man [Heisenberg] whose theoretical work was the basis of the bomb" (p. 456) and "In the military field, the view prevailed in 1939 that the country with the greatest chance of brining together the pieces was Germany."

Let's see now, the atomic bomb was a German idea, they had the best scientists, they had a proven ability to develop advanced weapons, they had plenty of raw material, and yet their "bomb" consisted of nothing more than some radioactive concrete in a cave in a hill at the base of a church? (*Heisenberg's War,* p. 421.) The German laboratory was captured on April 21, 1945, then three months later on July 16 a bomb was tested at Alamogordo, New Mexico. Then on August 6, 1945, one was dropped on Hiroshima, and August 9 on Nagasaki. This is not counting the nuclear explosion in the Oakland, California, area, but we are not supposed to know about that.

Pash and Goudsmit in Operation Alsos captured several tons of uranium and "it was shipped to Britain and then the United States, transformed into uranium hexaflouride gas for isotope separation at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, and finally in the form of U-235 used to destroy Hiroshima." (*Heisenberg's War,* p. 362.)

Most classified files from World War II have been routinely declassified under the provisions of the U.S. Freedom of Information Act. Tom Agoston (*Blunder!,* p. 124) said of the Alsos information, "The files continued to be suppressed and remain under lock and key in Washington, well beyond the thirty-year rule. The motive for this remains a four-decade mystery."

He also said that the testimony of Albert Speer, referring to General Kammler, "The transcript continues to be classified beyond the normal thirty-year rule, and is not expected to be made public before 2020."

Kammler disappeared at the end of the War and it was reported that he committed suicide (four different versions). If he were dead, why the secrecy? Kammler was regarded as "the most important man in Germany outside the Cabinet." The chain of command was Hitler to Himmler to Himmler's Deputy SS General Karl Wolff to SS General Oswald Pohl to Kammler, and later the link was more direct.

Dr. Wilhelm Voss told Agoston what happened to Kammler was a "hot matter" that could not be revealed. Agoston said one of Kammler's close associates was Rudolph Hess, who flew to Britain on a secret mission in May 1941. "The secret British file that might explain why he flew to Britain will remain closed until the year 2020" (p.160).

What clinched the proof for me was when I read in Phoenix Journal #18 (*Blood And Ashes*), speaking of the Manhattan Project, "Of course, they utilized the German production urn and, actually, the bomb used on Japan was constructed in Germany" (p. 159). The author of those Journals is "One Who Knows."

GERMAN SUBMARINES IN SOUTH ATLANTIC

The newspaper *France Soir* had the following account: "Almost 1-1/2 years after cessation of hostilities in Europe, the Islandic Whaler, "Juliana" was stopped by a large German U-boat. The Juliana was in the Antarctic region around Malvinas [now Falkland] Islands when a German submarine surfaced and raised the German official naval Flag of Mourning - red with a black edge.

The submarine commander sent out a boarding party, which approached the Juliana in a rubber dinghy, and having boarded the whaler demanded of Capt. Hekla part of his fresh food stocks. The request was made in the definite tone of an order to which resistance would have been unwise. The German officer spoke a correct English and paid for his provisions in U.S. dollars, giving the Captain a bonus of $10 for each member of the Juliana crew. Whilst the food stuffs were being transferred to the submarine, the submarine commander informed Capt. Hekla of the exact location of a large school of whales. Later the Juliana found the school of whales where designated."

The French *Agence France Press* on 25 September 1946, said: "The continuous rumours about German U-boat activity in the region of Tierra del Fuego (Feuerland, in German), between the southernmost tip of Latin America and the continent of Antarctica are based on true happenings."

There have been stories and books written about Germans counterfeiting U.S. currency and otherwise obtaining

American money printing plates, which may account for the German use of American money.

The Guinness Book of World Records says that the "greatest unsolved robbery" was the disappearance of the entire German treasury at the end of the war.

RAND CORPORATION

In January 1946 industrialist Donald Douglas approached the Army Air Force with a plan for government and industry to work together on long range strategic planning. This was called Project RAND, a name coined by Arthur Raymond from Research ANd Development. Much of their first government money went to the von Braun team. (McDougall, Walter al....*the Heavens and the Earth, A Political History of the Space Age,* Basic Books, New York, 1985, p. 89.)

LESLIE R. GROVES

Groves is known as the General in charge of the Manhattan Project which built the Atomic Bomb. He was chosen because he is the one who supervised the building of the Pentagon, and by 1942 was in charge of all U.S. military construction everywhere. After the war he went to work for Remington Rand Corporation.

BORIS PASH

"The stakes in the search for the scientific expertise of Germany were high. The single most important American strike force, for example, was the Alsos raiding team, which targeted Axis atomic research, uranium stockpiles, and nuclear scientists, as well as Nazi chemical and biological warfare research. The commander of this assignment was U.S. Army Colonel Boris Pash, who had previously been security chief of the Manhattan Project - the United States' atomic bomb development program - and who later played an important role in highly secret U.S. covert action programs.

Pash succeeded brilliantly in his mission, seizing top German scientists and more than 70,000 tons of Axis uranium ore and radium products. The uranium taken during these raids was eventually shipped to the United States and incorporated in U.S. atomic weapons." (Simpson, Christopher, *Blowback,* Collier Books, New York, 1988, p. 26.)

"Another notable Bloodstone veteran is Boris Pash, a career intelligence officer identified in the Final Report of the U.S. Senate's 1975-1976 investigation into U.S. intelligence activities as the retired director of the CIA unit responsible for planning assassinations" (*Blowback,* p. 108).

Blowback, p. 152-153 says: "The records of Operation Bloodstone add an important new piece of information to one of the most explosive public issues of today: the role of the U.S. government - specifically the CIA - in assassinations and attempted assassinations of foreign officials. According to a 1976 Senate investigation, a key official of Operation Bloodstone is the OPC officer who was specifically delegated responsibility for planning the agency's assassinations, kidnappings, and similar 'wet work.'

"Colonel Boris Pash, one of the most extraordinary and least known characters in American intelligence history... his work for U.S. intelligence agencies places him in the critical office given the responsibility for planning postwar assassination operations... Colonel Pash is one of the few remaining originals of U.S. intelligence, and his experience in 'fighting the communists' goes back to the 1917 Russian Revolution.

He was in Moscow and Eastern Europe in those days with his father, a missionary of Russian extraction, and the young Pash spent much of the Soviet civil war working on the side of the White armies, then with Czarist refugees who had fled their country. In the 1920s Pash signed on as a reserve officer with the U.S. military intelligence service... he... played a role in the internment of Japanese civilians in California, and was soon assigned as chief counterintelligence officer on the Manhattan Project, the supersecret U.S. effort to develop the atomic bomb. (More than a decade later it was Colonel Pash's testimony that helped seal the fate of scientist Robert Oppenheimer in the well-known 1954 security case.)

Before the war was out, it will be recalled, Colonel Pash led the series of celebrated special operations known as the Alsos Mission that were designed to capture the best atomic and chemical warfare experts that the Nazis had to offer.

"After the war Colonel Pash served as the army's representative on Bloodstone in the spring of 1948, when the tasks of that project, including recruiting defectors, smuggling refugees out from behind the Iron Curtain, and assassinations, were established. Bloodstone's 'special operations,' as defined by the Pentagon, could 'include clandestine warfare, subversion, sabotage and... assassination,' according to the 1948 Joint Chiefs of Staff records. In March 1949, Pash was assigned by the army to the OPC division of the CIA... His five-man CIA unit, known as PB/7, was given a written charter that read in part that 'PB/7 will be responsible for assassinations, kidnapping, and such other functions as from time to time may be given it... by higher authority.'"

From *Dulles* by Leonard Mosley (A Biography of Eleanor, Allen and John Foster. London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1978.), we find, p. 459: "But now he [Allen Dulles] was interested in the more sinister Agency experiments in mind-bending drugs, portable phials of lethal viruses, and esoteric poisons that killed without trace. Allen's sense of humor was touched when he learned that the unit working on these noxious enterprises was called the *Health Alteration Committee* (directed by Dr. Sidney Gottlieb and Boris Pash)... Richard Bissell... had now succeeded Frank Wisner as deputy director of Plans..."

To learn more about the mind-control and torture experiments of Pash and Gottlieb, read *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse* by Gordon Thomas (Bantam Books, New York, 1989).

One of the people they killed was Frank Olson (a CIA germ warfare doctor whose specialty was anthrax), while they were working on Subproject-68, also known as MK-ULTRA. MK-ULTRA started as *Project Bluebird,* set up on April 20, 1950, by CIA Director Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter (who later was a member of NICAP), and on July 20, 1950, they began using sodium amytal, Benzedrine and other drugs to "brainwash" prisoners.

In September 1950, the *Miami News* published an article under the headline BRAIN WASHING TACTICS which was considered the first formal use of the term. One of Gottlieb's partners was Dr. Harold Wolff, who appears to be a Paperclip doctor. He worked with Parke-Davis and "...remained closely connected with the M-K Ultra brainwashing project" (p. 191). He helped set up an apartment and introduce LSD to the hippies in San Francisco, and worked on Project Mindbender (a Manchurian-Candidate type operation) with William Buckley.

Isn't it interesting that so many of the participants in the most secret of secrets of World War II are still very involved in the Kennedy assassination and other more current affairs. Many books and articles have been written about the CIA being involved in the JFK assassination, and now you know that the man in charge of CIA assassinations was Boris Pash, formerly chief of security for the Manhattan Project. He was also head of the group trying to capture Hitler's advanced technology, including "flying saucers" and other secrets.

The book *ZR Rifle - The Plot To Kill Kennedy And Castro* by Claudia Furiati, p. 36, says that a man named William Harvey had been in charge of the CIA post in West Berlin until 1960, then was placed in charge of CIA assassinations by Richard Bissell in 1961. The plans to assassinate political leaders was code-named *ZR-RIFLE,* headed by Harvey. Bo Gritz said on p. 525 of his book: "The Kennedy assassination was code-named 'ZR-RIFLE'." It seems apparent to me that Harvey and Pash were wearing the same pair of pants.

In 1941, Ian Fleming, the future creator of the "James Bond" stories, and at that time a high ranking officer of British Intelligence, suggested to William Donovan that he set up a specially trained and selected assassination unit. PB/7 (Pash Boris Seven) was the original of the "Agent 007" concept. If my memory is correct, I believe Nixon stated that William Harvey was the real 007.

I assume Pash was Agent 001, or perhaps he had seven agents working for him (originally five). If you want to understand more of how these various factions such as CIA, KGB, Nazis, Communists, FBI, etc., can be fighting each other and working together at the same time, you need to understand who was above them, controlling them. To understand that, look to British Intelligence! You will find British Intelligence to be an operation of British and European

Royalty and "Aristocracy"!

E. Howard Hunt, while in prison in December, 1975, in an interview with the *New York Times,* said that the head of the CIA assassination unit was Boris Pash. Pash was assigned to Angleton at this time (see *Final Judgment,* p. 207). Angleton was head of the Israel desk of the CIA and was very pro-Israel. He was also closely involved with Meyer Lansky.

In *Cold Warrior,* the biography of James Jesus Angleton by Tom Mangold, he says on page 362: "I would like to place on the record, however, that Angleton's closest professional friends overseas, then and subsequently, came from the Mossad (the Israeli intelligence-gathering service) and that he was held in immense esteem by his Israeli colleagues and by the state of Israel, which was to award him profound honors after his death." His place was taken after his death by William Colby. When Kissinger wanted to "get LaRouche," he turned to Angleton for help. Angleton's tombstone is in Hebrew.

On page 97 of *Final Judgment,* Piper says that "The ZR/Rifle Team, in fact, was one of Angleton's pet in-house CIA projects, which he ran in conjunction with his CIA colleague, William Harvey."

According to Claudia Furiati, Joseph Schreider was in charge of the CIA laboratories and of developing poisons for assassinations, and says that Harvey was in charge of political assassinations, working out of the Miami office run by [Paperclip] Shackley, and was working with Schreider to try to poison Castro. Above we have Boris Pash and Sidney Gottlieb working together in the same manner. We have Pash and Harvey in the same locations, doing the same jobs, in charge of the same projects - talk about featherbedding. I believe that Harvey was actually at headquarters in Langley, over Shackley in Miami.

Blowback, p. 153, says that Pash "...served as the Army's representative on Bloodstone in the spring of 1948, when the tasks of that project, including recruiting defectors, smuggling refugees out from behind the Iron Curtain, and assassinations, were established. In March 1949, Pash was assigned by the Army to the OPC division of the CIA."

Harvey died June 6, 1976, according to Dick Russell, and Pash was in his 80s in 1988 according to Simpson.

END OF PART 27.

PART 28:

GERMAN FLYING SAUCERS

Hitler's advanced technology included intercontinental ballistic missiles, vertical takeoff aircraft, jet engines, cruise missiles, sound cannons, and many other advanced items. The Allies captured plans for what became the Boeing 747 Jumbo jet. Among the most secret items captured were plans for flying disks, that were at first called "Krautmeteors." Based on the evidence, they were built as early as around 1933 and went into mass production in 1940. Scientists involved in these projects were Bellonzo, Schriever, Miethe and Victor Schauberger.

Schauberger developed the "flying hat" type disc that was later seen over the United States. The final version was the Bellonzo-Schriever-Miethe Diskus, as large as 135 feet and some up to 225 feet in diameter. They traveled over 2,000 km/hr and were planned to go over 4,000 km/hr. In 1945 they could reach a speed of 1,300 mph and an altitude of 40,000 feet in less than three minutes. The Germans developed the Delta wing craft, and were working on stealth technology, etc.

Many pilots saw the strange craft over Germany. However, as soon as a craft was built, Hitler ordered it disassembled and shipped somewhere - probably Antarctica. None of the craft were captured by the Allies, although some of the scientists were captured and then mostly disappeared, but can somewhat be traced to Bell Textron and to places such as Area 51, which, surprise!, is infamous for its UFO sightings.

Here are some examples of news items during WW II concerning Germany's UFOs, from the *New York Times:*

NEW YORK TIMES, December 14, 1944:

"Floating Mystery Ball Is New German Weapon. SUPREME HEADQUARTERS, Allied Expeditionary Force, Dec. 13 - A new German weapon has made its appearance on the western air front, it was disclosed today.

"Airmen of the American Air Force report that they are encountering silver colored spheres in the air over German territory. The spheres are encountered either singly or in clusters. Sometimes they are semi-translucent."

and, "SUPREME HEADQUARTERS Dec. 13 (Reuters) - The Germans have produced a "secret" weapon in keeping with the Christmas season.

"The new device, apparently an air defense weapon, resembles the huge glass balls that adorn Christmas trees. There was no information available as to what holds them up like stars in the sky, what is in them or what their purpose is supposed to be."

FALKLAND ISLANDS WAR

The Falkland Islands War had more to do with Nazis than with Argentina, for more details of what happened please refer to the *Phoenix Journals.*

The Germans, from their Antarctica base, began to infiltrate into Argentina, Chile, etc., and bought large tracts of land and swept up corporations. They also invested in corporations in Germany and elsewhere, with plans to make a comeback. They used the German treasury, captured treasure from other nations, and counterfeit American currency printed on real U.S. currency printing plates given to the Russians and captured by the Germans.

Some plates were stolen by Assistant Secretary of the U.S. Treasury Harry Dexter White (real name Weiss) under Henry Morgenthau and sent to the Soviets for use in occupied Germany. He also arranged for the mass theft of tons of our special money-paper. When J. Edgar Hoover went to President Truman with all the evidence that the Assistant Secretary of the Treasury was a Communist spy and thief, Truman of course removed Weiss (White) from his job - and promoted him to head of the International Monetary Fund. I kid you not, look it up. The story has a rather common ending - when a controversy developed in the press concerning this incident, Weiss became a "suicide."

GERMAN ECONOMIC "MIRACLE"

For more information on how the "economic miracle" was accomplished after the war by the Germans, you can read such books as *Martin Bormann, Nazi in Exile* by Paul Manning ("...Bormann became the guiding force in the 'economic miracle' that led to the rebirth of German industry and finance in the thirty-five years following political and military defeat. In the waning months of World War II, as the Third Reich was tottering and finally crumbling in defeat, Bormann set up 750 corporations scattered among those nations that had remained neutral. Those corporations received the fleeing wealth of Germany and became the power base that enabled Germany to climb back to economic and political strength." From flyleaf). This book expands on the meeting in Strasbourg on August 10, 1944, mentioned in Michael Bar-Zohar's book *The Avengers.*

In 1986, while researching these subjects, we received 161 pages under a Freedom of Information search concerning what happened to the German treasury at the end of WW II. Many of these documents had been SECRET until declassification to fulfill our request. One document was No. 19,489, November 27, 1944, Subject: Transmitting Intelligence Report No. EW-Pa 198 [?, barely readable] by G-2 Economic Section, the Secretary of State, from Lt. Col. John W. Easton, Economic Warfare Division.

The cover letter stated "I have the honor to enclose Intelligence Report No. EW-Pa 198 by G-2 Economic Section, SHAEF [*Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Forces*], dated November 7, 1944, describing the plans of German industrialists for the post-war resurrection of Germany. Among the topics dealt with in this report are: patents, financial reserves, exportation of capital, and the strategic placing of technical personnel." It is obvious that Manning quoted from these documents in his book on Bormann.

In describing the meeting of August 10,1944, in Stasbourg, some sentences in the documents stand out: "German industrialists must, it was said, through their exports increase the strength of Germany. They must also prepare themselves to finance the Nazi Party which would be forced to go underground as Maquis (in Gebirgverteidigungsstellengehen). From now on the government would allocate large sums to industrialists so that each could establish a secure post-war foundation in foreign countries.

Existing financial reserves in foreign countries must be placed at the disposal of the Party so that a strong German Empire can be created after the defeat. It is also immediately required that the large factories in Germany create small technical offices or research bureaus which would be absolutely independent and have no known connection with the factory. These bureaus will receive plans and drawings of *new weapons* as well as documents which they need to continue their research and which must not be allowed to fall into the hands of the enemy" [author emphasis].

The last sentences in this document are, "After the defeat of Germany the Nazi Party recognizes that certain of its best known leaders will be condemned as war criminals. However, in cooperation with the industrialists it is arranging to place its less conspicuous but most important members in positions with various German factories as technical experts or members of its research and designing offices."

Some of the documents were concerning "Looted Gold (1945-1948). Accession Number 56-75-101, Agency Container Number 169, File Number BIS/2/00." These documents concern Germany's "looted" gold being transferred to the Bank for International Settlements in Switzerland. One important paragraph (#9) says: "It is clear both from correspondence and from testimony that the management of the B.I.S. during the war was 'in the hands of the Administration Council, in which the Axis representatives have an authoritative influence,' and that in 1942 the Germans favored the reelection of President McKittrick whose 'personal opinions' they characterized as 'safely known'."

Enclosed in the file is a clipping from the *New York Times,* date not included but appears to be in 1945, that states: "McKITTRICK SLATED FOR POST AT CHASE. He Will Take Over Duties as Vice President of Bank Here Next Autumn. Thomas H. McKittrick, American banker who has served as president of the Bank for International Settlements [B.I.S.] since the beginning of 1940, will become a vice president of the Chase National Bank of New York next fall, Winthrop W. Aldrich, chairman of the board of Chase, announced yesterday." The article ends by quoting McKittrick: "I realize it is my duty to perform a neutral task in wartime. It is an extremely difficult and trying thing to do, but I do the best I can."

Another formerly Top Secret document declassified was "Subject: Conversation in Switzerland with Mr. McKittrick, President of the Bank for International Settlements" from Orvis A. Schmidt to Secretary of the Treasury Morgenthau, dated March 23, 1945. It describes McKittrick's dealings with the real head of the Nazi banking system, a Vice President named Puhl.

"Puhl was described by McKittrick as a career banker who had been with the Reichsbank for some twenty years, who does not share the Nazi point of view... the Swiss National Bank said that in order to be sure they were not obtaining looted gold they had requested a member of the Reichsbank, whom they regarded to be trustworthy, to certify that each parcel of gold which they purchased had not been looted. The person who had done this certifying was Puhl."

Puhl was Reichsbank Senior Vice President Emil Johann Rudolf Puhl. He was in charge of taking booty into the bank and was in charge of it for the Nazis. His Senior Shipping Clerk Albert Thoms said that they needed up to thirty men to help him sort and repack the valuables, which consisted of "millions in gold marks, pounds sterling, dollars and Swiss francs, 3,500 ounces of platinum, over 550,000 ounces of gold, and 4,638 carats in diamonds and other precious stones, as well as hundreds of pieces of works of art" (p. 226, *Aftermath,* Ladislas Farago, Avon, 1974).

This material was shipped out of the country in Operation Fireland or Aktion Feuerland in German, which Farago explained in a footnote in his book on Bormann: "The transaction was named 'Land of Fire' after the archipelago of Tierra del Fuego at the southern extremity of Argentina and Chile, the area to which some of the shipments were originally consigned" (p. 228). On the next page Farago said: "Only a relatively small portion of the SS treasure was impounded by Bormann and sent overseas in the course of Aktion Feuerland. Much of it is still missing."

Germany had developed self-sufficiency before the end of the war, and was manufacturing their own oil, produced "butter" from coal, invented powdered milk, developed freeze drying, learned to store flour indefinitely, were growing their food in greenhouses on chemical "soil," etc. These projects were also necessary for survival of the secret UFO force, which Hitler called the "Last Battalion," at the Antarctic.

The counterfeiting of British and American money was under Operation Bernhard. The fake British notes have been often discussed in books and articles about Bernhard, but the fake American currency is not as well known. Recently the U.S. announced that it was issuing new money to counteract the counterfeit, which was said to be coming from Saddam Hussein and Lebanon. It would be more correct to say it is coming from South America, but that money is supposed to all be drug money. Life gets complicated.

When *CONTACT* newspaper first ran the series on *Fire From The Sky,* it followed with a reprint of the information about the truth about the Falkland Islands War. In that series, it revealed that the Russians, working with Rockefeller forces, defeated the British Bolshevik forces on South Georgia Island.

If you have not read that series, this information may not make sense to you. It is important to know that information, if you intend to try to understand what is happening. Nazi forces were involved in the Falkland Islands War, on the side of the Russians. This is hard to believe if you have no idea of what IS.

The Russians were nationalists, as opposed to the Zionist Bolsheviks who took their country away from them. The Zionist Bolsheviks were trained in the lower East Side of New York City and financed by New York and London bankers. They invaded Russia, killed the Tzar and many Nationalists and took over the government.

Can you begin to see how someone like Boris Pash, with a Russian Nationalist family background, could work with Nazi Gestapo and SS agents? Even the American General George Patton said we should have fought WITH the Nazis against the Bolshevik Communists. Patton said there was an international conspiracy of Zionist bankers who were the world's problem (see *Patton's Papers,* Vol. 2, p. 735 for example).

In 1982, on April 20, Hitler's birthday, the Russian/Rockefeller/Nazi commando force broke through and inserted a neutron bomb into the underground naval base at South Georgia Island.

For more of the story of what *really happened in the Falkland Islands crisis, read the January 17, 1995, issue of *CONTACT: The Phoenix Project* newspaper or Phoenix Journal #13, *Skeletons In The Closet. (Contact,* Inc., P.O. Box 27800, Las Vegas, NV 89126 or call 1-800-800-5565. For *Phoenix Journals,* write Phoenix Source Distributors, Inc., P.O. Box 27353, Las Vegas, NV 89126 or call 1-800-800-5565. The phone numbers are the same, but the mailing addresses are different.)

Alexander Haig was the General representing the Rockefellers. In his book *Caveat,* the chapter on the Falklands starts: "On March 28, 1982, a Sunday, the British Ambassador, Nicholas ("Niko") Henderson, brought me a letter from Lord Carrington. A party of Argentineans, wrote the foreign secretary, had landed nine days earlier on the island of South Georgia, a British possession lying in the South Atlantic a few degrees above the Antarctic Circle and some 600 miles to the east of the Falkland Islands, a British Crown colony." I'll bet you thought the Falkland Islands War was about the Falkland Islands!

Much ado was made in the media about the conflict between Jeane Kirkpatrick and Alexander Haig. Kirkpatrick is a

Zionist and was the U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations. She has a regular feature column in *The Jewish Press* newspaper, "The Largest Independent Anglo-Jewish Weekly Newspaper." Haig has had a long relationship with Henry Kissinger, to whom Haig became senior military advisor in 1969. Remember that Kissinger came out of the Paperclip Operation personnel.

In January 1982, Reagan replaced his national security advisor, Richard Allen, with William P. Clark, another Paperclip person, and who was Haig's deputy. Nixon said, "When you see the lights burning late in Henry's [Kissinger] office, it's usually Al Haig." (*War In The Falklands, the Full Story* by the *Sunday Times* of London Insight Team, Harper & Row, New York, 1982, p. 123.)

END OF PART 28.

PART 29:

If you doubt the fact that the Nazis never gave up and that they planned to continue the war after their defeat in Germany, and planned to make a comeback to finally achieve their goal, then perhaps you should read the following books:

Connell, Brian, *A Watcher On The Rhine,* William Morrow & Co., New York, 1957. "Old wine in new bottles," how the Nazis have come back into power.

Horne, Alistair, *Return To Power,* Fredrick A. Praeger, Inc., New York, 1956. "The struggle for unification, rather than any revival of Nazism, may one day force Germany out of the Western camp."

Tetens, T.H., *The New Germany And The Old Nazis,* Random House, New York, 1961. "A frank and often shocking account which details how 'Hitler's own' have managed to return to power in almost every walk of German life..."

Winkler, Paul, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy,* Charles Scribner's Sons, 1943. "Secret Germany behind the mask."

White, Theodore H., *Fire In The Ashes,* William Sloane Associates, New York, 1953. The fire of Nazism in the ashes of Europe.

Sayers, Michael and Kahn, Albert E., *The Plot Against The Peace,* Book Find Club, New York, 1945. "...uncovers Nazi Germany's secret plans for a Third World War."

Schultz, Sigrid, *Germany Will Try It Again,* Reynal & Hitchcock, New York, 1944. Does the title give you a clue?

Dornberg, John, *Schizophrenic Germany,* MacMillan Company, New York, 1961. "Is the new West Germany of the postwar years as democratic as we have been led to believe, or does Nazism still smolder?"

Lord Russell, Brigadier, of Liverpool, C.B.E., M.C., *Return of the Swastika?" David McKay Co., New York, 1969. Russell was part of the Nuremberg prosecution team.

There are more, these just happen to be the ones in my personal library. I read them, mostly about 20 or 30 years ago. I do not mean to give the impression that Germany is the source of the world's problems; Germany has simply been a part of a much bigger picture. Other valuable books that will give you insight are:

Bacque, James, *Other Losses,* Stoddart Publishing Co., Canada, 1989. The truth about how Eisenhower murdered thousands of German prisoners of war AFTER the surrender. Many of those starving soldiers and piles of dead bodies you have seen in atrocity photos were NOT Jews, they were Germans. Don't argue with me, read the book. General George Patton wrote in 1945 that Eisenhower was using "practically Gestapo methods" in torturing and killing

German POWs. You can obtain the book probably from *Spotlight* Newspaper if you can't find it otherwise.

Sutton, Anthony C., *Wall Street And The Rise Of Hitler, '76 Press, Seal Beach, Calif., 1976.

ALBERT EINSTEIN

Albert Einstein is a good example of another deception and hoax involved with the atomic bomb program. When many people think of the atomic bomb they think of Einstein. He was presented as the world's greatest scientist, and a hero of the atomic bomb program. Upon closer inspection, you will find that his major contributions were his use of his influence to obtain President Roosevelt's support for the bomb and he was the one personally responsible for bringing the major Communist atomic spy Klaus Fuchs into the Program. The Russians know nothing about the atomic bomb until Fuchs brought it to their attention in 1942. (*Heisenberg's War,* p. 524).

Thanks to Fuchs, (and to a massive amount of Secret material illegally shipped through Lend-Lease) they were able to explode their own bomb in 1949. Einstein was a communist cell member with Fuchs. Fuchs was the top scientist on the Manhattan Project and he gave the atomic secrets to the Soviets. (Jordan, George Recey, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* Harcourt, Brace and Co., New York, 1952.)

We are taught that Einstein is the author of the Theory of Relativity, yet evidence has come for the proving that the real author was Mileva Maric, Einstein's first wife.

Einstein had a reputation at the Swiss Polytechnic Institute in Zurich of being a man with poor work habits and was often reprimanded for laziness during all his school years, including the University. He developed a romance with classmate Mileva who helped him with his math. His autobiography says "In my work participated a Serbian student Mileva Maric who I married later." She had an illegitimate daughter in 1902, which they gave up for adoption. They got married in 1903, separated in 1912 and divorced in 1919. This is when Einstein married his cousin Elsa. The original manuscript of the *The Theory of Relativity* submitted for publication had Maric's name on it as co-author.

For more proof, see the article "Theory of Relativity - Who is its Real Author?" by Dr. Rastko Maglic and J. W. McGinnis, President, International Tesla Society, in the Jul/Aug 1994 issue of *Extraordinary Science* magazine, which contains references for further documentation.

Einstein was a hoax and fraud saddled on the scientific community to prevent them from learning too much and to promote Jews as being superior, sort of Nazism in reverse.

Einstein's famous equation "E=MC squared" is WRONG, or at best only partially correct. His definition of energy is WRONG, his definition of mass is WRONG, C is defined as the top speed possible for anything, then it is squared, which would be even faster and thus contradicts the definition. Light is described as a constant, which is WRONG as defined. In a higher understanding, light does not move, our perception of the speed of light is WRONG.

Those who REALLY understand, and who can prove it by creating matter out of "nothing" for instance, say that the original WHITE LIGHT is invisible and still. Read books by Walter Russell for more information.

Einstein was a Zionist with membership in at least 16 Communist front organizations such as Friends of the Soviet. Einstein was head of the Jewish Black Book Committee, which was listed as a Communist front in the 1947 House Un-American Activities Committee Report.

The correct science being discovered and revealed by such as Nikola Tesla, Walter Russell, Tom Bearden, Andrija Puharich, etc., was suppressed to prevent humanity from achieving energy independence (and thus political and military independence) from the Rockefeller/Rothschild oil/nuclear energy barons. This same technology leads to understanding of good health, and thus independence from the drug/medical crowd, who happen to be the same oil crowd crooks.

PAUL ROSBAUD

Rosbaud was one of Britain's top spies in Nazi Germany. He worked as scientific adviser for the publishing firm of Springer Verlag. He came to know Albert Einstein, Peter Kapitsa, Niels Bohr, Ernest Rutherford, Leo Szilard, Otto Hahn, and others of importance in the quest for the Bomb. Kapitsa was the one later credited by Tom Bearden with creating Russia's advanced Tesla technology weapons. Kapitsa won the Nobel Prize in 1978 for his work on the physics of low temperatures and very strong magnetic fields, areas that were pursued in developing anti-gravity platforms.

Rosbaud was code named The Griffin. History books say that the Allies found out from The Griffin that Germany did not have the atomic bomb, and thus the military could advance with more confidence. A book entitled *The Griffin* by Arnold Karmish (Houghton Mifflin, Boston, 1986, on page 199, chapter titled "Double-Cross" tells of this):

"On Sunday, December 26, 1943, the day the *Scharnhorst* was sunk, the major headline in the London *Sunday Express* was THE SECRET WEAPON MAY NOT COME OFF. Beneath it was a long and accurate feature article by Kai Siegbahn, the son of Lise Meitner's reluctant host, Manne Siegbahn. He explained the fundamentals of nuclear energy and described the prewar research. As for the bomb, Siegbahn concluded: 'Despite all the secretiveness about researching in the uranium problem, I venture to say that the uranium bomb is still non-existent, except as a research objective It is rather difficult to say if it is possible at all to construct such a bomb, but for the present it seems as if an essential link is missing for making the uranium bomb a reality.'

Even more remarkable, the *Sunday Express* went beyond Siegbahn's opinion to assure its readers that 'it may therefore be a source of consolation to know that able Swedish atoms-scientists believe that the Germans have not succeeded in creating atom explosives.' The *Express* explained its sources for the information by saying, 'Swedish scientists had close contacts with German scientists until the Germans recently arrested Norwegian professors and students.' Among those recently arrested was, of course, Odd Hassel.

"Press security on the atomic bomb was extremely tight in the United States and even tighter in Britain, so the article's appearance seemed at first a puzzle. The *Express* was owned by William Maxwell Aitken, Lord Beaverbrook, formerly minister of war production and now lord privy seal. Lord Beaverbrook was intimately familiar with the history of the atomic bomb project and its present course, and he was in constant touch with his editors about what they should print. It was quite clear, then, that Kai Siegbahn's article was no accident - but what was its purpose?

"It was not hard to discern the reassuring purpose of the message to the British public. Rumors about Hitler's secret weapons had been rife, and the actions against Rjukan had focused attention on the bomb. But the Gestapo and the Abwehr also read the British papers.

"From the exploit of Jacques Allier to the attacks on the Norwegian installations, the Germans had kept reading the lesson that heavy water was essential for atomic research and that the Allies would do anything to halt production. Now, an article by a distinguished neutral scientist - apparently published with official approval - carried the strong implication that the British were still in a research stage and without much hope of 'making the uranium bomb a reality.'

"The article was, of course, a deliberate SIS plant, conceived in the Double-Cross Committee (The XX Committee), chaired by John Masterman of MI-5."

Lies were and are standard operating procedure for both sides. The article continues: "The top SIS expert on the Abwehr was Frank Foley [who worked with Masterman] of Section V, so he was recruited to the XX Committee as a senior advisor. In the early months, his work was interrupted by a special assignment, conducting the lengthy interrogation of Rudolf Hess. When he returned four months later, Foley took up the deception business once more."

So you see that the ones involved with lying about the bomb were the same ones very interested in what was said by Rudolf Hess. Hess' information remained highly classified long after the war, until he was recently murdered so that they could close Spandau Prison and keep him from talking. In the book *Journey Into Madness, The True Story of

Secret CIA Mind Control And Medical Abuse* by Gordon Thomas, p. 152, tells of one of the heads of the CIA mind-control programs, Dr. Grant Cameron, going to Nuremberg to "establish the state of mind of Rudolf Hess." I wonder if that is "establish" as in "to determine," or as in "to create."

Rosbaud was a close friend with Goudsmit who ran Operation Alsos with Boris Pash. Goudsmit "formed a close friendship with Rosbaud that endured until Paul died" (p. 241).

After the war, Rosbaud formed Pergamon Press with Robert Maxwell. Maxwell went on to become a British "press baron" (p. 250, *The Griffin*) and was working with the Israeli Mossad selling Israeli briefcase nuclear bombs like the ones used in the New York Trade Center bombing. (Interview with Galen Winsor by Tom Valentine, *Radio Free America,* March 23, 1993. These bombs were used by Special Forces as early as 1960 per Sgt. Joe Garner, "Army vet tested nuclear 'suitcase bombs' in 60s," *Houston Chronicle,* January 23, 1995. Also see "Backpack Nukes for 'Nam, Inside SF's Super-Secret A-Bomb Project" in *Soldier Of Fortune,* May 1995.)

The information that spy Rosbaud, who was Jewish, provided is mentioned in a U.S. Department of Justice memorandum dated April 26, 1955, which reads: "[Rosbaud] returned to Germany determined to assist England and its allies at all costs. This he accomplished. The records in this matter contain official corroboration that Dr. Rosbaud remained in Berlin during World War II for the purpose of obtaining certain technical intelligence for the United States and the United Kingdom. This information was extremely useful and invaluable for the allied cause and involved great risk on the part of Dr. Rosbaud. His activities on behalf of the allied cause were successful and of such importance that even today they cannot be disclosed and are still highly classified."

When you read the book, you see that the most important information that Rosbaud provided was the non-existent status of the German bomb. Yet, the exact details are still "highly classified." So what's the big deal, why is the information still above top secret (top secret items have been declassified)? Makes one wonder, doesn't it?

Another curious "coincidence" is that, after Samisdat published the Nazi UFO information, two journalists from Springer Publishers flew to Toronto to interview Ernst Zundel (head of Samisdat) in person. Samisdat used to sell an audiotape of the interview.

SAMUEL ABRAHAM GOUDSMIT

Another curiosity is Goudsmit. He turns up in interesting places. He supported Oppenheimer during Oppenheimer's espionage trials. The APRO (Aerial Phenomena Research Organization, founded in 1952) *Bulletin,* August 1975, contained information obtained from declassified (and well sanitized) CIA records concerning the Robertson Panel which was convened in 1953 to study UFOs. Dr. H.P. Robertson was an expert in cosmology at California Institute of Technology, director of the Weapons System Evaluation Group in the Office of the Secretary of Defense and a CIA classified employee.

The panel was convened by the Office of Scientific Intelligence of the CIA and included Dr. Samuel Abraham Goudsmit, theoretical physicist and Chairman of the Physics Department, Brookhaven National Laboratories. Goudsmit was rather a heavy dude to be "wasting" time on UFOs that the government maintained did not exist. Other OSI panel members were Panel Chairman Dr. Howard Percy Robertson, on leave from his job as professor of Mathematical Physics at California Institute of Technology to be full time to OSI; physicist Dr. Luis Walter Alvarez, University of California, Berkeley, a specialist in magnetism and microwaves (it was speculated that the Roswell UFO was shot down by microwaves) and according to UFO researchers a member of Majestic-12 and the Jason Group; geophysicist Lloyd Viel Berkner, President of Associated Universities, Inc., which operated the particle accelerators of the Brookhaven National Laboratories (according to David Jacobs, *The UFO Controversy in America,* Berkner "accompanied Admiral Byrd" on Antarctic expeditions. Berkner is generally listed as a member of Majestic-12 and the Jason Group); astronomer Dr. Thornton Leigh Page, Deputy Director, Office of Operations Research, Johns Hopkins University and formerly a physicist with *Naval* ordnance.

Others included Frederick Clark Durant, a rocket engineer; astronomer Dr. Joseph Allen Hynek, Ohio (home of Wright-Patterson) State University who was also a consultant to the U.S. Air Force Air Technical Intelligence Center (which did the UFO Blue Book Project). The Panel interviewed a long list of Generals and Chiefs and other Big Boys and Heavy Dudes.

Fred Durant met regularly with Stuart Nixon, assistant to John Acuff, head of NICAP. (Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret,* William Morrow & Co., New York, 1988, p. 349.) Durant worked with von Braun, Krafft Ehricke, Harvard astronomer Fred Whipple, Maryland physicist Fred Singer, Navy Commander George Hoover and others on Ehricke's Moonbase and Marsbase projects.

Army General John Medaris was in charge of the Army Ballistic Missile Agency over von Braun and on March 20, 1959, received a directive for a study of a manned lunar base. "General Medaris organized a crash effort to carry out the study, which became Project Horizon. Less than three months later, on June 8, the study was completed.

On the first page of the study (four or five volumes of which have been declassified), the conclusions are stated: Military, political and scientific considerations indicate that it is imperative for the United States to establish a lunar outpost at the earliest practicable date... Project Horizon represents the earliest feasible capability for the U.S. to establish a lunar outpost" [Project Horizon 1959, vol. 1, p. 1]. (Marsha Freeman, *How We Got To The Moon, The Story of the German Space Pioneers,* 21st Century Science Associates, Washington, D.C., 1993, p. 210.)

Ehricke worked with Dornberger at Bell until 1954 when he went with Convair Astronautics in California which was in charge of building space stations and the lunar base. *The Washington Star,* December 29, 1958, described the Convair station as "the brainchild of Krafft Ehricke." Durant, Whipple and George Hoover were part of the Office of Naval Research. Whipple's assistant, J. Allen Hynek, was part of the Robertson Panel, as was Durant.

In UFO researcher William Steinman's correspondence with Grant Cameron, he states: "I contacted Dr. Alvarez in private, when he admitted that he did take part in the recovery of a saucer in Mexico. He would not go into detail concerning the events and who else was involved." Steinman wrote the book *UFO Crash At Aztec* which is an excellent source for more information on these men. Unfortunately it is a large, heavily documented book but with no index.

Dr. Lloyd Berkner is also listed in *Assault On The Unknown, The International Geophysical Year* as the head of the American part of the International Geophysical Year study. He was radio man on the first Byrd Expedition to the Antarctic and developed the sounder that charts the radio-reflecting layers of the atmosphere. Berkner was Chairman of the Space Science Board of the National Academy of Sciences. Operation Highjump is not mentioned, but Berkner was part of Operation Deepfreeze at the Antarctic in 1957-1958, headed by Byrd until his death, as were Werner von Braun and Frederick C. Durant. Berkner became a Navy Rear Admiral.

Another Antarctic scientist was Dr. Carl Augustus Heiland, who worked with Vannevar Bush and who was part of the on-site recovery team of the Aztec UFO crash (p. 85, *UFO Crash At Aztec*). He appears to be a Paperclip scientist, as he received his Doctorate from the University of Hamburg. Another very important scientist was Dr. Eric Henry Wang. I will not go into his story at this time, except to quote Steinman: "The subject of Dr. Eric Henry Wang remains one of the most touchy and sensitive areas in all ufology" (p. 282). Dr. Eric Wang was head of the Office of Special Studies of the Air Materials Command at Wright-Patterson AFB. He was an Austrian-born graduate of the Vienna Technical Institute and "a close associate of Victor Schauberger." (Hamilton, William F., *Cosmic Top Secret,* Inner Light, 1991, p. 23.) Steinman's book has a whole chapter on Nazi German "flying disk" projects, many of which used Schauberger's designs.

Goudsmit concluded that UFO sightings were "due to a formation of ducks or other birds." The official conclusion of the panel was that interest in UFOs was dangerous and that the situation should be downplayed and covered up. Jacobs said that Robertson showed the final report of the panel to General Charles Cabell, director of Air Force intelligence and later Deputy Director of the CIA in charge of clandestine operations, "who expressed satisfaction with it."

Cabell's brother Earl was the Mayor of Dallas during the Kennedy assassination, and apparently was the one who ordered the motorcade to change routes into the ambush area. Earl later went to work for Howard Hughes. General

Cabell was the person who briefed President Kennedy prior to the Bay of Pigs invasion. Robert Groden in *High Treason* quotes Victor Marchetti as saying that Clay Shaw, David Ferrie, E. Howard Hunt, Frank Sturgis, Bernard Barker, Charles Cabell, and Richard Nixon "were all working together in the CIA's Bay of Pigs planning operation."

Kennedy later fired Cabell. Cabell and Richard Bissell were in charge of the U-2 program. Lee Harvey Oswald was given a job within one week of his arrival in Dallas working on maps for the U-2 flights (Jim Garrison, *On The Trail of The Assassins*). In 1957, Oswald was a radar operator at the U-2 base in Atsugi, Japan.

General Cabell ordered the re-activation of Project Grudge on October 27, 1951, and on December 11, 1951, Major General John A. Stamford, "having replaced Major General Cabell as director of intelligence, was given a full briefing of the service's UFO program by Captain Edward J. Ruppelt and Colonel Frank Dunn, chief of the Air Technical Intelligence Center." (Flammonde, Paris, *UFOs Exist!* Ballantine Books, New York, 1976, p. 392-393.)

According to Leonard Moseley, *Dulles,* p. 366, Bissell "was a friend of Frank Wisner, and had first met Foster [John Foster Dulles] when Eleanor threw a party at McLean for her brothers, Vice-President Nixon, Bob Bowie, and other members of the administration." I don't have the proof, but I'll bet that Cabell and Bissell and Boris Pash were very cozy, especially when Cabell was second in command under Allen Dulles. Recall that Wisner was the CIA head of the Gehlen Nazi spy group.

END OF PART 29.

PART 30:

THE KENNEDY-NAZI CONNECTION

JFK's father, Joseph Kennedy, had a reputation of being pro-Nazi or at least pro-Hitler. Joe was a bootlegger and a member of the Mafia, although he hated the Jewish Mafia (Mishpucka) boss Meyer Lansky (real name Maier Suchowljansky). He was U.S. Ambassador to Britain but was recalled because of his pro-Hitler viewpoint. His code clerk was Tyler Kent, which is a story in itself.

In the book *Final Judgment* by Michael Collins Piper, you will find a story about DeWest Hooker. Hooker was a good friend of both Joseph Kennedy and George Lincoln Rockwell, Commander of the American Nazi Party. Piper tells of the arrangement made with Hooker and Rockwell to help JFK get elected. Hooker said, "Frankly, as far as I'm concerned, it was my work that got Johnny Kennedy in the White House." I suggest you read the book, it is available from *Spotlight* Newspaper or Liberty Lobby. If I quote small portions from it you probably would find it too hard to believe! I assure you the story is true, for I know well the man who was the bodyguard and stenographer/scribe to Commander Rockwell.

When Senator Joe McCarthy was conducting the hearings on Communists in the government, his assistant, seated at the same desk beside him, was Robert Kennedy. The Senator at the desk beside McCarthy was Senator John F. Kennedy. JFK was an *insider* who KNEW the source of the problems. When he became President, he fired the CIA heads, installed his brother as Attorney General, and said he was going to put the United States back on the silver standard, stop the Vietnam War, eliminate government involvement with the Mafia, and eliminate the Federal Reserve problem. It has also been reported that he was going to tell the truth about UFOs. Ten days after he gave a speech at Columbia University making these statements, he was murdered.

NAZI IMBECILES?

When Dornberger went to work for Bell, Bell recruited another former German army scientist, Krafft Ehricke, "who had been an adviser on the German wartime atom bomb project" according to Jack Manno, *Arming The Heavens* (Dodd, Mead & Co., 1948). We read a book that says Germany had no atomic bomb project, we read another that says they did. Manno said that Wolfgang Noggerath was brought in and put in charge of what became the Polaris missile. Willy

Fiedler was brought in and made chief of planning of the underwater launch systems for submarines.

Let me summarize for you the story as presented. We Americans were far ahead of the stupid Nazi Germans,although we had not yet made any atomic bombs. As the war was ending, we sent in teams and frantically searched for the German atomic scientists. We captured some of those dumb, incompetent scientists, quickly brought them to the United States in top secret programs that are still highly classified, we put those stupid losers in CHARGE of our projects, and we suddenly started making Atomic Bombs. An missiles - and satellites - and whatever else.

I just want to be sure you got the story straight.

COVER AND CONCEALMENT

Speaking of lies and deception, it would be reasonable to think that if our spy satellites were destroyed in 1977, as stated in *Fire From The Sky,* then there would have been all kinds of repercussions and a lot of people who depend on those satellites would know about it. How was the truth kept secret?

One part of the answer is revealed in a book called *The Falcon And The Snowman* by Robert Lindsey (Pocket Books, New York, 1979). This book tells the story of Christopher John Boyce. Boyce went to work for TRW on July 29, 1974. TRW is the company that made the Viking probe that went to Mars and the satellites which provided General George Keegan with information on the Russian activities at Semipalatinsk and such.

Boyce worked in the top-secret "black box" section, he was the man with the keys and codes to access the vault. He had access to Projects Rhyolite, Argus, Pyramider and "Project 20,030" files, projects which involved spy satellite data coming to the American base at Pine Gap (code named Moreno), Australia, near Alice Springs. He learned things that upset him, such as the CIA interference in Australian elections, the U.S. was lying to other governments, etc. Read the book for more of the story. He began stealing and selling secret documents to the Russian Embassy in Mexico and in January, 1977, he was arrested and charged with espionage.

"It came out during the Boyce-Lee trial that data from these satellites goes to a readout station in Australia - but *not* the one that monitors the early warning satellites. Instead, the data goes to a CIA-run complex in a valley called Pine Gap. After the Pine Gap computers have processed the data, it goes to the TRW Defense and Space Systems headquarters in Redondo Beach, California" (p.111, *The New High Ground* by Thomas Karas).

It was claimed that as a result of his selling secrets to the Soviets, the Soviets changed and encoded their transmissions, camouflaged their facilities, etc., so that the spy satellites suddenly no longer worked. Stansfield Turner, director of the CIA, said the results of Boyce's spying were "distressing, perhaps appalling."

As a result of his spying, we are told, the CIA no longer had satellite coverage of Iran, for instance, leading to the Iranian hostage crisis. Do you remember when the CIA was criticized for being surprised at the fall of the Shah and for not foreseeing the Iranian Hostage Crisis? In truth the U.S. DID know beforehand, as they orchestrated those events, but it is too much to try to cover here. Oh, what a tangled web... NOTHING is as it is presented to the public by our media and leaders.

"Our intelligence community is in disarray. A major satellite intelligence system, developed and deployed at a cost of billions of dollars over the past decade, without Soviet knowledge, has been compromised by intelligence procedures as porous as Swiss cheese." This was a statement made on December 8, 1878, by William Clements who was Deputy Secretary of Defense at the time Boyce worked in the Vault and who later became governor of Texas.

Would you be surprised to learn that Boyce may have been manipulated/set-up? Even the author of the book noticed mysteries: "Why TRW would place a $140-a-week, twenty-one-year-old college dropout in such a sensitive national-security position in the first place is, at least in retrospect, a puzzle. Circumstantially, TRW's decision to leave the Pyramider papers unlocked in the vault where Chris could read them shortly before his departure suggests they could have been left as bait. And there was the mystery of Daulton's [Boyce's assistant in crime] fingerprints on the circuit boards.

An FBI fingerprint expert testified that he had found Daulton's prints on a circuit board from one of the encrypting machines in the vault. Yet both the two spies, when denials meant nothing regarding whether they might be convicted or not, insisted that Daulton had never entered the vault nor had he ever touched the circuit boards. And certainly, the presence of a U.S. Embassy official at the Soviet Embassy on the morning of Daulton's arrest added another curiousity to the case" (p. 422).

Boyce's partner Daulton claimed that all along he was working undercover for the CIA. "The affair of the snowman and the spy who called himself the Falcon was an episode that demonstrated amazing ineptitude on the part of the Central Intelligence Agency" (p. 423).

Boyce's defense attorney George Chelius later developed a lucrative law practice in Orange County, California, catering to businessmen and land developers (p. 427).

A similar event was when William Kampiles sold the Russians a complete manual on the KH-11 (sometimes called the Big Bird, but technically not the same) satellite in March 1978. Kampiles was an operations clerk at CIA headquarters and resigned in October 1977, just after the Russian destruction of our satellites. In February 1978 he went to Athens, Greece. On February 23, he went to the Soviet Embassy and started making arrangements to sell them the documents. He was arrested and went to trial in November 1978 and was sentenced to 40 years.

The facility at Pine Gap, Australia, is something that needs a closer look. Stan Deyo, in *The Cosmic Conspiracy,* tells of a multi-national consortium at Pine Gap that have "radical atmospheric vehicles." In other words, UFOs have been seen going in and out of Pine Gap. Deyo mentions that Dr. Vannevar Bush (claimed to be a member of MJ-12) made repeated visits to the area. Deyo says they are conducting research on crashed UFO residue at Pine Gap.

I will close this section with something to ponder: Astronomer Dr. James Greenacre and four colleagues at a conference on "Moon Problems" in New York in 1964 said that on 29 October 1963 they observed several colorful spots on the moon that moved in formation. One month later Greenacre observed the same phenomena.

The May 1966 issue of *UFO Nachrichten.* Vol. 117, said: "Prof. Dr. Greenacre saw on or close to the moon at least 31 space craft of gigantic size. Some were from 300 meters to 4.8 kilometers long. They were in motion while being observed through the telescopes. Also, clearly discernible were numerous smaller craft approximately 150 meters in diameter, which moved past or alongside the huge craft, the 'mother craft' occasionally changing color, as in the often-reported, pulsating style."

Keep looking up.

END OF PART 30.

DISCLAIMER: "I know one thing for certain; that I know no thing (nothing) for certain." – One who knows.

"It's what you learn after you know it all that counts." - Earl Weaver.

Notes

EMAIL FROM AUTHOR OF "FIRE FROM THE SKY" RECEIVED APRIL 3, 2001:

Subject: FW: [CTRL] Battle of Harvest Moon & True Story of Space Shuttles
Date: Tue, 3 Apr 2001 13:57:51 -0500
From: Dale Stonehouse stoney@cloudnet.com
To: "'ufonews@..................."

Gordon, Calvin Burgin, the author of the Fire From The Sky series, recently posted this to a mailing list in response to a post of mine. Thought you might be interested in what he has to say.

Dale Stonehouse

-----Original Message-----

From: Calvin Burgin [mailto:wrldline@TEXAS.NET]
Sent: Sunday, March 25, 2001 8:01 PM
To: CTRL@LISTSERV.AOL.COM
Subject: [CTRL] Battle of Harvest Moon & True Story of Space Shuttles

-Caveat Lector-

Dale, I am on the Conspiracy Theory Research List and saw the message you sent. I have to smile at your statement "Calvin is quite sensitive about any questioning of his conclusions about the world" and you said I stopped communicating with you because of something you said.

No, my friend, the medium of email does not convey the nuances of messages and people often misunderstand. If I was sensitive about what people thought about what I write I would not write it. I have no ill will nor any other negative feeling against you or your questions! I am just very busy, and I routinely get about 50 to 150 emails A DAY (many from this list) and I simply cannot keep up with all of it.

By the way, I appreciate your posting the Fire From The Sky document on the internet, at the time I did not know how and was not even on the internet (except for some business networks that technically was internet I suppose).

As to Bush, Hoover, etc. being shape-shifters, I did not think that was a question -- how would I know whether they are or not? Although in fact the Russians made their breakthrough in scalar technology in the 1970's and developed clones in the late 1970's using physics that involves holograms, which could lead to more understanding of the shape-shifting phenomena. At some point, everything in the universe is a shape-shifter. You can find more than you wanted to know on this from Tom Bearden, Walter Russell and David Icke.

Since I am the "One Who Knows" of the original Battle of the Harvest Moon document, how about I make some statements to clear up some points (which will only cause more questions, I know).

The name "One Who Knows" was not my idea, it was given to me by a man who was in solitary confinement in prison as a direct result of what he knew about the Mena, Arkansas, Bush/Clinton drug operation. It is explained in my Fire From the Sky document, the various internet versions of it may or may not contain the story.

In the 1970's I worked in the secret section of Control Data Corporation in Sunnyvale, Calif. CDC had the world's most powerful computers at the time: the Cyber series, the Star 100, the Cray (Seymour Cray worked for Control Data. Later when he started his own company, Norris the owner of CDC financed the Cray Corporation and owned part of it). As a direct result we worked on the United States' most secret projects. Such as weather satellites -- which do more than weather, such as the computers under Cheyenne Mountain, and such as spy satellites. I had two security clearances, one official and one unofficial.

The security clearances and all are really beside the point, because most everything I wrote was already written somewhere else. Although I am the author of the Fire From The Sky document, I point out that it is just quotations from others. I was a compiler more than an author.

You stated that the writings were channeled through George Green and Doris Ekker from Hatonn (pronouncedd Aton). Well, Green was just a publisher, Doris was the channeler and the channeled material was mostly spiritual. The Battle of the Harvest Moon material did not come from Hatonn, it came from Dr. P. D. Beter who was involved in clandestine activities for MI6 and the Queen of England, he was assigned to the Export/Import Bank by President Kennedy.

Beter praticed law before the U.S. Supreme Court, he knew Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff General George Brown personally and had secret contacts with Brown. Beter also had contact with extraterrestrials, he was the go-between between Brown and Hatonn. Brown got canned and later murdered because of that contact.

Yes, some of the Nazi's escaped and made contacts that lead directly to Ronald Reagan and George Bush. I am sure you know this already.

Yes, the astronauts went to the moon - but NASA lied about the whole program and gave us a false story. Check with Richard Hoagland, R. Rene, etc. Many have seen that the NASA material is hoaxed and have concluded that we did not go to the moon. We went to the moon all right, but that true story is highly classified. One of the original plans for the moon program is in the back of the book The Day After Roswell by Philip Curso.

I used to get a note every week from a man who was the camera operator for the moon landing hoaxed films. He died a few months ago now so I can't refer you to him. Just do your homework --the year that Gus Grissom, Edgar White and Roger Chaffee (Chaffee was U2 pilot with Frances Gary Powers and pilot that took the pictures that led to the Cuban Missile Crisis. The man who read the pictures and reported to the President is one of my customers, he works for the Texas Department of Transportation, and another of the U2 pilots is a friend of mine who is also my competitor, his business is the same as mine and his shop is across town from me) and a total of 8 astronauts were MURDERED the same year because they resisted the hoax. The rest of the astronauts got the message and went along with the program.

You stated "neither interviewed anyone with first hand knowledge." Well, talking about real first hand knowledge can get you suicided. I was first hand and I saw some of what was happening and I just point out to others some of what is going on. In fact, I know more than I tell but no one would even understand it if I told it much less believe it. So it is no different from if I knew nothing -- just do your own homework and I can help you know where to look if you wish.

"Contact was financed primarily through money provided by a wealthy eccentric from Austin, TX." Once again, no. Dave Overton the "wealthy eccentric" was my friend and customer, he bought the gold from me. When he died, the newspaper interviewed me and then printed a fantasy story that had little to do with the truth. They did not use ANYTHING that I told them, as far as I rememember and could tell. Dave tried to give the gold to Contact, but George Green stole it. It was not used in any way to finance Contact, they never got it. Just recently the gold was disposed but it still did not go to Contact.

When Contact Newspaper printed my letters to the man in solitary confinement which became the Fire From the Sky document, even they got some things wrong. One thing that comes to mind, I wrote that the National Reconnaissance Office developed the KH-11 satellite and I said it had a Byeman name Kennan. The proofreaders changed that to "by a man named Kennan." No, it was right exactly as I wrote it, the Byeman names were a method of code nameing. One of the projects that I worked on at Control Data was the KH-11. They also had SI (Special Intelligence) and TK (Talent-Keyhole) codenames, but that is ancient history now.

The U2 was Byeman code named Idealist and the SR71 (I did the billing for the SR71 program) was Oxcart. Tony Craddock, researcher and web master for CSETI told me that he has contacts in the NSA, Pentagon, CIA etc. and they all confirmed that everything in the Fire From The Sky document was true. Even the cloning of humans which began in the 1970s. You might contact him and see what he is willing to tell, and while you are at it, consider supporting CSETI, they have given presentations to the United Nations, the Pentagon, all the Chiefs of Staff of the military, etc., trying to break the secrecy seal on the UFO subject. Once the seal is broken, you people are going to be shocked, I can assure you. He is at http://www.cseti.org.

Best to you and all.

Calvin Burgin AKA "One Who Knows" (how would you like to be stuck with that name? grin)

www.ctrl.org

DECLARATION & DISCLAIMER

==========

CTRL is a discussion & informational exchange list. Proselytizing Propagandic screeds are unwelcomed. Substance-not soap-boxing-please!

These are sordid matters and 'conspiracy theory'-with its many half-truths, mis-directions and outright frauds-is used politically by different groups with major and minor effects spread throughout the spectrum of time and thought.

That being said, CTRLgives no endorsement to the validity of posts, and always suggests to readers; be wary of what you read. CTRL gives no credence to Holocaust denial and nazi's need not apply.

Let us please be civil and as always, Caveat Lector.

==

From the Trenches

A Victim and Therapist Talk About Mind Control and Ritual Abuse

WENDY HOFFMAN
AND ALISON MILLER

KARNAC

FROM THE TRENCHES

FROM THE TRENCHES

A Victim and Therapist Talk About Mind Control and Ritual Abuse

Wendy Hoffman and
Alison Miller

KARNAC

First published in 2018 by
Karnac Books Ltd
118 Finchley Road, London NW3 5HT

Copyright © 2018 to Wendy Hoffman and Alison Miller.

The rights of Wendy Hoffman and Alison Miller to be identified as the authors of this work have been asserted in accordance with §§77 and 78 of the Copyright Design and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data

A C.I.P. for this book is available from the British Library

ISBN 978 1 78220 601 9

Edited, designed and produced by The Studio Publishing Services Ltd
www.publishingservicesuk.co.uk
email: studio@publishingservicesuk.co.uk

Printed in Great Britain

www.karnacbooks.com

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION xiii

SECTION I: UNDERSTANDING MIND CONTROL

A dozen myths therapists might believe 3
Alison Miller

Pieces of self 8
Wendy Hoffman

How to talk with a multiple 10
Alison Miller

Imposed internal and political structures 24
Wendy Hoffman

Hand signals 29
Wendy Hoffman

Disinformation 32
Alison Miller

The choice 36
Wendy Hoffman

The extra danger of character flaws 40
Wendy Hoffman

Satanic mythology *vs*. genuine evil 44
Alison Miller

SECTION II: LIES

Fifty lies they might have told you: why they told them, how they made you believe them, and what you can do about it 53
Alison Miller

SECTION III: BONDS AND BETRAYAL

Why and how they prevent bonding throughout life 87
Wendy Hoffman

Family relationships 101
Wendy Hoffman

Love in cult families 104
Wendy Hoffman

Family-hunger, planted therapists, and romances 106
Wendy Hoffman

Therapists' responses to survivors: countertransference and attunement 109
Alison Miller

SECTION IV: THE HORRORS OF THE ABUSE

Therapists and horror 123
Alison Miller

The purpose of infant torture 128
Wendy Hoffman

Spinning 132
Wendy Hoffman

Sexual horrors 134
Wendy Hoffman

Anger displacement training 138
Wendy Hoffman

How to make an assassin 142
Wendy Hoffman

Gang wars and the bandwagon 145
Wendy Hoffman

In love with death 149
Wendy Hoffman

Politicians' use of victims 152
Wendy Hoffman

Twenty-first century Nazis 154
Wendy Hoffman

The frequency of programming 156
Wendy Hoffman

Conscious and unconscious perpetrators 159
Alison Miller

Things I wish I did not know 162
Alison Miller

SECTION V: SAFETY

The "angel" of suicide 167
Wendy Hoffman

To die or not to die 170
Wendy Hoffman

Programmed suicide and therapists 173
Alison Miller

Current contact 175
Wendy Hoffman

Handlers 179
Wendy Hoffman

Called back 182
Wendy Hoffman

Why and how survivors are gathered 184
Alison Miller

Danger, DANGER 187
Wendy Hoffman

Discarding the interventionist God 190
Alison Miller

When they persist in trying to murder you . . . 194
Wendy Hoffman

Spy school: clues we missed 198
Alison Miller

SECTION VI: THE SURVIVOR'S DAILY LIFE

Ask inside 211
Alison Miller

Mind-controlled and frozen in time 214
Wendy Hoffman

The strong and brave ones
(previously known as the garbage kids) 217
Alison Miller

Survivors and illness 219
Wendy Hoffman

Things will not last forever 223
Wendy Hoffman

Rushed 225
Wendy Hoffman

SECTION VII: THE HEALING PROCESS

How to begin to console the inconsolable 229
Wendy Hoffman

The body remembers 232
Wendy Hoffman

Ten keys to recovery 235
Alison Miller

The nobility of survivors 237
Wendy Hoffman

Self-esteem loosens mind control 240
Wendy Hoffman

The pool of emotions underneath 249
Wendy Hoffman

When a program engulfs you 253
Wendy Hoffman

When you have killed 257
Alison Miller

Giving up dissociation 260
Wendy Hoffman

Is there an end to the healing process? 262
Wendy Hoffman

SECTION VIII: ODES ABOUT MIND CONTROL
by Wendy Hoffman

To the Mind-Controlled 267
To the Front Person 268
To the Unloved, Rejected and Abandoned 269
To the Learning Disabled 269
To Spies, Thieves and Mules 270
To the Sexual Slaves Within 271
To Mothers 272
To Kidnappers 272
To Trained Assassins 273
To Witches 273
To the Plant-Therapists 274
To Those Who Couldn't Protect 274
To the Beaten 275
To Mourners 276
To the Co-Conscious 276
To the Integrated 276
To Confidence 277
To Gratitude 278

REFERENCES 279

INDEX 281

Note

Some names and descriptions of perpetrators have been changed and disguised out of necessity.

Should anything suspicious happen to Wendy Hoffman or Alison Miller or her family, then all names and locations of perpetrators will be released.

For Philippa and Tim,
whose dedicated support has made all the difference

INTRODUCTION

Dear Reader,

Let us introduce ourselves. We are two old women in our seventies who are still laboring and fighting in the trenches of the psychological and spiritual war against the evils of mind control and ritual abuse.

Wendy Hoffman, LCSW-C, is an American licensed clinical social worker who, more importantly, was a victim of organized mind control and ritual abuse from birth. She lived most of her life with her brain segmented and partitioned into thousands of parts, each trained for a specific task by the mind controllers. Struggling to get free, she eventually found the way to access her dissociated memories and reunite her brain. She has written two memoirs about her life experiences, *The Enslaved Queen* (2014) and *White Witch in a Black Robe* (2016a), as well as *Forceps* (2016b) a book of poetry about the rebirth of her self.

Alison Miller, PhD, is a Canadian clinical psychologist who worked initially in child and family therapy and parent education but, since 1990, has worked with survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. She has written *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control* for therapists, and *Becoming Yourself: Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse* for survivors.

We connected initially as therapist and client, and worked very hard to undo Wendy's mind control. Over the past few years, as our knowledge and understanding of these evils have increased, we have each been writing small articles or essays on various topics connected with the battle we are fighting. We have gathered these essays together into this book, *From the Trenches*. Rather than having a logical development of ideas from chapter to chapter, this book has collected the essays into topical sections, ending with Wendy's odes to the different kinds of inner parts, some of who lived her mind-controlled life, and also live in other survivors' inner worlds.

You may read them in any order you wish. Some of these essays are directed primarily to survivors, others to therapists and support people. If you are inexperienced with the subject matter, you might want to read our other books first, since some of the material in this book is quite advanced and will make the most sense to someone who understands how mind control works and what atrocities the mind controllers perpetrate.

We want to encourage survivors to find their whole selves and not give in to the fears perpetrators put in them, therapists to brave the complexities and horrors of this challenging and fascinating work, and supporters to rally to help those who have been victimized from infancy for the misfortune of being born into the wrong family. Every time someone gets free or desires to be free, victims, their therapists and helpers make another tear, another slit in the membrane of the soul of evil. We are all in this together, and together we can bring this empire down. It may not be completed in this generation, but it has begun.

Wendy and Alison

Protest

Ella Wheeler Wilcox

To sin by silence, when we should protest,
Makes cowards out of men. The human race
Has climbed on protest. Had no voice been raised
Against injustice, ignorance, and lust,
The inquisition yet would serve the law,
And guillotines decide our least disputes.
The few who dare, must speak and speak again
To right the wrongs of many. Speech, thank God,
No vested power in this great day and land
Can gag or throttle. Press and voice may cry
Loud disapproval of existing ills;
May criticise oppression and condemn
The lawlessness of wealth-protecting laws
That let the children and childbearers toil
To purchase ease for idle millionaires.

Therefore I do protest against the boast
Of independence in this mighty land.
Call no chain strong, which holds one rusted link.
Call no land free, that holds one fettered slave.
Until the manacled slim wrists of babes
Are loosed to toss in childish sport and glee,
Until the mother bears no burden, save
The precious one beneath her heart, until
God’s soil is rescued from the clutch of greed
And given back to labor, let no man
Call this the land of freedom.

SECTION I

UNDERSTANDING MIND CONTROL

A dozen myths therapists might believe

Alison Miller

Therapists with the usual kinds of training believe some myths that can impede their effectiveness in treating survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Here are some I have heard.

1. *Myth*: *DID (dissociative identity disorder, which used to be called multiple personality disorder, MPD) is rare, if it exists at all*. The reality is it that it affects at least 1% of the population. And if you include the people whose hundreds or thousands of segregated and organized parts are hidden behind a deceptive front, it is probably a much greater number. Many more people have ego states from unhappy or frightening experiences and can be overcome by strong emotions or false beliefs without actually having DID. They do not have access to the original cause of those emotional states, so tend to blame them on the present.

2. *Myth*: *Hearing voices always indicates psychosis.* The term "schizophrenia" means "split mind," which means having a dissociative disorder rather than a brain disease. Historically, the two conditions became mixed up. Now we are aware that dissociative people, whom I shall call multiples, are survivors of severe childhood trauma, whereas genuine schizophrenics might well have a brain disease. Many people who hear voices are dissociative, and are hearing other

parts of themselves talking to them or to one another. Other people hear thoughts out loud in their heads. This does not mean they are psychotic. Hallucinations can be flashbacks of abuse, and apparent delusions can be beliefs implanted by perpetrators (See the section on Lies.) Many people who have dissociative disorders are misdiagnosed as schizophrenic, especially if they talk about demons, or Satan, or the CIA, or mind control. They are likely to be survivors of organized abuse, and might be trying to tell their story to people who just write them off as deluded.

3. *Myth*: *People who frequently change their mood and emotional state, their perceptions, and their attitudes suffer from bipolar disorder and/or attention deficit disorder and/or schizophrenia*. Before diagnosing someone with any disorder that requires chemical treatment, it is important to rule out dissociative disorders, the conditions in which someone has many, relatively independent, "selves." Apparent attention deficit disorder can also really be hypervigilance, someone who has been abused constantly looking around for danger. Apparent bipolar disorder, especially the rapid-cycling type, can really be dissociative switching as different parts come to the forefront.

4. *Myth*: *There are effective brief therapy methods, such as cognitive–behavioral therapy, which will cure survivors*. When a person is severely abused on a regular basis for his or her entire childhood, and usually beyond, it is dishonoring to the survivor to suggest that three or four, or even a dozen, sessions of some special technique will clear up all the effects of this abuse. Victims of mind control and ritual abuse have suffered more than any other group of victims that I have heard of. We rightly make a big fuss about post traumatic stress disorder in military veterans and victims of rape. But what about victims of complex trauma, including emotional abandonment, infant and ongoing torture, child prostitution, and forced perpetration for years on end? Let us not kid ourselves about brief magic cures. "Empirically validated therapies" are useful for single contained problems. Recovery from mind control and ritual abuse rightfully takes years.

5. *Myth*: *The front person ("host") in a dissociative individual is real and the others are not*. All parts of a person are parts of the same brain, whose electrical circuits were segregated by severe early trauma. The front person is just a part who is specialized for dealing with daily life, which means that this part knows little or nothing about the trauma

or the life of the other parts. The average multiple has a series of front people at different stages of life. They are no more real or unreal than the other parts. Front people often say that they feel unreal, because they are only a small part of a person.

6. *Myth*: *Therapists should always work just with the front person, not talk to the "alters."* Multiplicity cannot be resolved without communication with the inside parts who hold the memory narratives, body sensations, and feelings from the trauma. The front person is sometimes too fragile to handle knowing those memories, and, in any case, he or she cannot find out what happened without communicating with the inside parts. Therapy with just the front person will get nowhere, because symptoms such as anxiety and depression, flashbacks and nightmares arise mainly from the hidden parts.

7. *Myth*: *All ritual abusers are satanists.* Many different groups use mind control on children: extremist political groups, intelligence agencies, organized crime, child pornographers, and, yes, satanists. All these groups also attempt to control the general population via the media.

8. *Myth*: *Survivors do not have the ability to recognize whether their memories are real*. Perpetrator groups put a lot of effort into convincing their victims that the memories that pop up unbidden are imagination, or something they saw on television, or anything other than reality. They also put a lot of effort into convincing society that certain kinds of bad things do not really happen, so if someone believes they happened to him or her, that person must be deceived and be having "false memories," possibly suggested by a therapist.

The reality is that survivors have very real memories, but these include memories of deceptions such as simulated murder and people in costumes. They also have memories of being told, while under the influence of drugs, hypnosis, and torture, that something quite different happened. Perpetrator groups work hard to make sure that what survivors believe to be their memories are distorted. They disguise identities. They often tell their lies to child parts in adults, as well as to actual children, giving false interpretations of what happened, interpretations which the child or child part has to accept or face dire consequences. It is, therefore, a very difficult task for a survivor to put together the entirety of a memory accurately. It requires bringing together all the insiders who have any part of that memory, including the part where they were taught false interpretations.

Still, many survivors know from bodily sensations as well as emotions that they must have had such experiences, regardless of whether the general public believes them or mother says they are invented. The body does not lie. Survivors can be strong and persistent in sorting out reality from the distortions taught to them by the perpetrators.

9. *Myth*: *Ritual abuse survivors are overly concerned about holidays and special dates, and these do not really matter*. These dates matter most to survivors of abuse by ritualistic, usually satanic, cults. That is because these groups expect their victims to attend rituals on these dates, which include the victim's own and family members' birthdays as well as major Christian and pagan holidays. Sometimes, a survivor is actually safe, but even then he or she is likely to have flashbacks and nightmares of the abuse that happened on these dates. More often, the survivor is still in touch with family members and is expected to attend the rituals.

10. *Myth*: *Demons attached to, or inserted in, children are real and must be ousted*. While I recognize that we cannot say with certainty whether or not evil spiritual entities exist, I can say, with quite a bit of certainty, that the "demons" that are attached to, or inserted in, children by ritually abusing perpetrator groups are simply child parts of the person, split off by a combination of drugs, threats, torture, terror, and forced perpetration. I have been working with ritual abuse survivors for twenty-seven years, and I have never met a real demon, but I have met a considerable number of fake demons. I have had clients on whom exorcisms or deliverances were performed, and the result was that "demon" parts went into hiding out of fear, taking with them the memories which needed to be processed for healing. They were afraid to be known to me because of the fear that I might try to destroy them. I have heard of other cases where these parts became angry and punished the rest of the personality system. Would you not do that if someone tried to kick you out of the only society you knew?

11. *Myth*: *Most survivors are not currently harassed*. Perpetrator groups who deliberately create dissociative disorders in their victims are very concerned about keeping their criminal activities, such as rape, murder, child prostitution, and pornography, secret. If a survivor begins to remember and tell about things that the group wants kept secret, parts of the survivor report this to a group member, and harassment begins. There is re-abuse, along with serious threats

to the survivor, the person the survivor tells, and anyone the survivor loves. Harassment of survivors is very common, and might be lifelong. Survivors tend to believe the threats, including those to therapists, so might not tell their therapists about what is happening in the present. It is important to realize that physical harm to a therapist is very rare, because it can compromise the group's security. Perpetrator groups prefer to remain hidden from therapists, and find ways to discredit effective therapists, such as inducing clients to sue them or making complaints to their licensing boards.

Therapists, pay attention to subtle changes in your clients. If a client is suddenly angry at you without cause, as in the example I give in "Therapists' responses to survivors" (later in this book), it could indicate that perpetrators are trying to turn him or her against you. If a survivor client has physical symptoms which do not appear to arise from a physical cause, he or she could have been beaten up and not remember it. These things could arise from cult-loyal parts of them doing their jobs, but if that is not the case, the next possibility is current harassment that they do not remember. Wendy had persistent ear pain, especially when she took a plane journey to a conference and when she flew to visit me. The doctors could not find the cause afterwards. She was unaware that she had been beaten up just before taking the journeys. Doctors do not look for adults' symptoms being caused by current abuse.

12. *Myth*: *Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse cannot recover*. This is what the perpetrators want them, and you, to believe. Yes, people whose brains have been subdivided from birth through horrific experiences will need to undergo a long journey of recovery. But they can recover, their minds can be whole again, and they can become the persons they choose to be. The younger they begin this process, the longer they will have to live their own lives.

Pieces of self

Wendy Hoffman

If you are going to have a brain that is smashed into pieces, your perpetrators have to start when you are young—in infancy or before. The first splits are usually done when you are about one month old or under. Perpetrators create thirteen distinct sections of the mind then, one after the other, sometimes without a pause. Jobs will be assigned to each division and extensive trainings will begin as the infant victim ages. They teach visual and aural cues to trigger the robotic parts the mind controllers created. Years later, the perpetrators might braid and twist together pieces from some of the thirteen columns, or "edifices," or "rivers" to be used for more complex and secret criminal tasks. Life does not improve as you age unless you achieve prolonged physical safety.

Your task, if you are a victim attempting to find your way through these mazes of torture and dissociation, is to find the very young infant parts, and the memories of the infant splits. Just acknowledging that these splits exist helps loosen the whole internal mind control structure.

As you get to know the older parts created to do horrendous jobs for no money or reward and without you knowing what you had done, as you begin to take in the reality of your life as a blind automaton, as you realize you have been only a mindless puppet with tight strings intact, you will find all that overwhelming. Despair can be great, anger greater. Plus sadness that you have not had a life you can call your own. Integration—when the divisions of the mind self-erase and you get to know your abused selves—usually occurs in waves. After the one or two tidal waves when most of the pieces of brain come together, you often find fail-safe measures. There is should-you-ever-integrate-programming. Mine was placed under layers of psychedelic plastic sheets. Here, my infamous mind controller sectioned off little pieces of my main role—that of being one of the Illuminati queens—and hid them "never to be found" under these toxic barricades.

First, you work either up the internal hierarchy to the leaders of the system or down the hierarchy to the tortured infants. These parts spontaneously meld together. There might be one or more tidal waves of coming together. Always be on the lookout for a section or sections you have not found yet. Huge drug and electrical walls separate internal sections. The sections of your mind weave and braid together. Even if you do not want one solid chunk of mind, it will happen. Roots gravitate to water. Birds copulate in the air. Our minds want to be whole. We were created to be whole. Nature is stronger than crime. We can go back to our evolutionary beginnings. We can become both a new person and who we were from the beginning, as if untampered with. Humans cannot fight nature. Humans cannot fight God. Our lives can be un-usurped.

Look for the little pieces of self that are hidden away even after the major integrations. Even if these parts seem dead, carry them home, no matter how heavy they are. Lug them down masonic steps, out of burning buildings, unlock prison gates, open freezer doors, rip open barricades. Have a joyous celebration of reunification. Now you are whole. Now you are you. No one took your soul away permanently. You are the more powerful.

How to talk with a multiple*

Alison Miller

We tend to assume other people are like ourselves, unless they are in some way visibly different. For example, when someone has a different skin color or a strong foreign accent, we are aware that they may be different. But when they look and sound the same as us, it is difficult for us to understand that they may be different in their background and way of thinking.

One of the kinds of people we often have difficulty understanding is the person with a dissociated identity, an identity split into many selves rather than a single one. This condition used to be called "multiple personalities." In this essay, I am using the term "multiple," because some of my clients who are multiple prefer it to the more general term "dissociative," which can have many meanings. Everyone dissociates to some extent—for example, many people dissociate certain emotions and never consciously feel them. Everyone also has different parts of the self, but most of the population is not multiple.

People who have been through severe childhood abuse or other trauma have often learned to handle life through several different

---

* Much of the material in this chapter was also in Chapter Three of *Healing the Unimaginable*.

"selves" rather than a single unified self. Becoming many selves rather than one is a biological process in the brain that results from severe early trauma, which is often life threatening. Becoming multiple is not something that the person chooses, and it cannot begin in adulthood, only in early childhood. It is not just a product of creative imagination. Although all these "selves" are really parts of one person, they may experience themselves and one another as separate people.

A multiple's experience of life is very different from that of someone who has never been multiple. For someone who has always been a single personality, it is difficult to understand how a person who is multiple thinks. Often relatives and friends of a multiple, as well as support people and even therapists and other professionals, are unclear about how to talk to such a person. Here are a few thoughts which might help you understand the people you know who have multiple, rather than single, identities.

Talking with a multiple is like talking with someone from another culture

Although a multiple might not be visibly different from anyone else, the way he or she thinks is incredibly different, at least as different as the way someone thinks who comes from a completely different culture. We do not (or, at least, we should not) blame people from other cultural backgrounds for being different from us and for not completely understanding our culture. It is important to treat a multiple person with dignity and respect, just as you would someone from a foreign culture whose values and customs you do not yet understand.

First of all, do not assume that a multiple is really like you. They may look the same, but they are different. The dominant culture is one of non-multiples, so multiples have learned to hide their multiplicity and imitate those of us who are have a single personality ("singletons"). But it is only an imitation. Survivors of the kind of enforced mind control addressed in this book are all multiple, whether or not they are aware of it. They are programmed to hide their multiplicity, as mind control depends on multiplicity, and the people who abused them to make them multiple do not want any visible signs of the abuse.

A person who has a single personality cannot become a multiple at will. It requires many severe early traumatic experiences (such as sexual abuse and/or torture) to make a person's brain put up the barriers which give them several or many identities. Survivors of childhood mind control usually have hundreds of separately trained parts. Similarly, a multiple cannot become a singleton until and unless the barriers between the parts of the self ("alter personalities" or inner selves) are removed. Those barriers were put up for a purpose, so that the child could survive the abuse (from the victim's perspective), and so that the child will not remember what happened (from the abusers' perspective.) People who are multiple cannot think like us, and we cannot think like them, but we can learn to understand one another with respect for our differences.

Once you recognize the multiple is different from you, it is important to ask him or her to be your teacher about being multiple. You cannot just guess about it; you have to ask. Those multiples who are aware of their condition are usually glad to be asked. They get very lonely because they are not understood by other people. Child personalities in adult bodies, for example, sometimes feel nobody else understands them or recognizes their existence. They often like to be known, recognized, and talked to as the age they feel they are rather than the age the body is. Although you must be careful with this—child parts are all different: some are shy and some are outgoing; some like attention and others hate it.

When you ask what it is like to be multiple, be careful not to treat the person as if she or he is a curiosity. I remember how embarrassed I felt on my first night as a student in India, when I got changed for bed in a university residence, and a crowd of young women gathered to stare at me to see whether I was the same color all over! Just because a person is different does not mean she is less than human. I did not like having to "perform" (for example, sing English hit parade songs) for other students in India, while they all giggled at me and talked about how cute I was. Similarly, multiples do not like having to "perform" (for example, let child parts come out) for the entertainment of singletons. They are people, too, and their human dignity is important.

For a multiple, being multiple is his or her normal state of mind. It is difficult for him or her to understand how singletons think, and he or she may think it is you who are strange. That is, if he or she even knows that you are not like him or her. I have met several multiples who just assume that everyone else "loses" periods of time (when another "front person" part is in charge of the body), finds themselves in places without knowing how they got there, and/or hears voices or audible thoughts inside their head.

We singletons are well adapted for living in safety, being conscious of everything that happens to us. A multiple is well adapted for living with ongoing trauma. I once heard a prison psychologist say he would not treat multiples in prison, because to survive well in prison you needed to be multiple, as prison is so traumatic. Even in normal life there are sometimes advantages to being multiple. I knew a multiple who had a part called "Brain" who memorized all her textbooks and was able to remember everything on exams word for word. I knew another who had parts with all kinds of special "idiot savant" abilities. When a part is able to focus on only one thing, without the distractions of emotions, everyday life, and other thoughts, he or she may be able to perform that task exceptionally well. Abuser groups use this to train parts in special skills such as memorizing information to deliver to politicians.

Just as you should not assume that someone from another culture should want to join your culture and give up his or her own, do not assume that a multiple wants to become a singleton. Some do, some do not. Many well-adapted multiples, whose parts cooperate well, prefer to stay as a community of coordinated selves rather than become a single self. They feel that they would be lonely without insiders to talk with. They forget, however, that many of those insiders are still in pain or trapped in horrible memories, and also that leaving programming untouched can put them in danger.

Talking with a multiple is like talking with people who change places undetectably

Imagine there are a number of identical brothers or sisters who impersonate one another. They are able to change places so fast that you cannot detect it, so fast that you may talk to many within one conversation. However, if you know them as individuals, you learn to recognize them not by their physical appearance but by their characteristic moods, tones of voice, facial expressions, and other body language. It is the same with alter personalities (parts) of multiples. They *look* the same, but they act differently. You may also see physical evidence of them changing places in eye movements, body tremors, losing track of conversation, and other subtle signs. Most multiples, however, do not show dramatic physical symptoms of “switching.” Many (but not all) deliberately designed multiples have a “front” or “shell” part who is out all the time, along with other parts who change behind the shell. The shell part bridges the transitions smoothly so the individual does not appear multiple at all. However, such people sometimes have parts who can take over entirely, with the front part disappeared inside and unaware that time has been lost. The larger the number of parts, the less detectable will be the switches. And the more inner communication is established between the parts (usually through therapy), the easier will be the transitions between parts being “out” (in control of the body), since some may listen in on others’ conversations in the world. Often, the only sign of a switch might be the body language of another part. Survivors of complex mind control may be trained to switch seamlessly and to sound like adults at all times, except when their external controllers call out hidden child parts for torture, training, or reporting. Others are designed to look “crazy” through constant switching.

One confusing thing about many multiples is that at one time they may completely know and believe that they are multiple, and at another time they may deny it completely. Most multiples have at least one “front person,” whose purpose is to deal with the normal outside world and handle everyday normal life. When a child is being abused on an ongoing basis, he or she needs to be able to function even though the abuse is occurring. So, the child develops a “front person” (formerly known as the “host” personality, in contrast to the “alter” personalities) who is unaware of the abuse and also of the multiplicity. The term “host” is a misleading term, developed by singletons who assumed that the front person is more real or more important than the other parts. That is why I prefer “front person.”

Sometimes there are several front people, each of whom assumes he or she is the real one and is amnestic for the existence of the others. Some front people have a great deal of difficulty accepting that they are multiple. The word “personalities” or “alters” might frighten them. Whether the person acknowledges that he or she is multiple, then, depends on who is “out” in conscious control of the body and on how much contact the front person has with the “inside world.” Some multiples always have the front person present in everyday life and in therapy sessions, even when another part is in control of the behavior and feelings. These people are generally not diagnosed with dissociative identity disorder (DID), and do not "lose time" in the same way that those who are diagnosed with DID do, in the middle of a regular day. Some people used to be visibly multiple when they were young, but with maturity and a stable, safe life, have developed a strong person who handles all of present-day life. Many things are easier for such people than for DID multiples, because they do not lose time or find money has been spent on toys. However, it is easier for such a person than for someone with DID to assume that negative feelings are caused by present situations when they actually come from old traumas which have been triggered by something in the present. Parts with these feelings are often lurking just behind the front person. One such multiple described herself as having someone like a plastic lens in the front, with four chairs just behind it, and different people occupying those chairs at different times.

Multiples who have accepted their multiplicity often call their parts "people"; this is who they are to them. They are just as real to them as people on the outside. Other multiples, who are less aware of those on the inside, find "parts" or "inner children" more acceptable terms. Although the parts or "selves" feel themselves to be complete persons, each tends to have a specific function and most of them are, in a way, one-dimensional. Do not assume that the front personality is the "real" person and the other personalities are less real. A question such as, "Is this Jane, or one of the alters?" is very irritating to multiples, especially if it happens not to be Jane who is "out." The front person is just a part, often one with little power in the system, little memory of what happened, and limited energy or emotions. In my experience, multiples in whom there is one strong front person tend to be those who were abused or traumatized for only a brief period of time, usually outside the home. Their long period of safety allowed them to build a strong "outside world" personality, but they still have hidden split-off parts, who either come out only occasionally or never come out but influence their behavior and feelings from time to time. Do not assume that the front person is able to control the behavior of the other parts if he or she only "takes responsibility." If a multiple's front person tells you that someone inside wants to kill her, for example, she is telling you that she does not have control over it, and telling her to take control will not help.

Since parts change places a lot, you should not assume that the person you are talking to remembers what the body has seen, heard, done, or said, even five minutes ago. Amnesia is a major distinguishing characteristic of multiples, especially if they have DID. If the part who was "out" when something happened has "gone inside", the person will not remember what happened. Multiples learn to cover up for loss of time. It is common that a multiple who does not yet know he or she is multiple does not realize time has been lost, and will deny doing things he or she has been seen doing, leading to a reputation as a liar. When a multiple realizes that another part may have done it, he or she will often pretend to remember the incident to hide the time loss. However, the awareness may spur some on to delve into their minds and discover dissociation.

When meeting new inside parts, do not assume they are orientated in time and place. They often believe they are still living in the situation where the abuse occurred, or some other past time. Often, they do not know that the body has grown up. I find it helpful to have a newspaper or magazine with a recent date to show them the year, and to have a mirror so they can see what their body looks like now, though sometimes this is too great a shock for them if many years have gone by, and many multiples are afraid of mirrors because mirrors were used to deceive them.

Kinds of parts or personalities

Many, usually a majority, of the parts feel themselves to be children, so you should not assume you are talking to an adult at all times. There could be some who are too young to talk or to understand language. Although it is controversial among therapists who treat people with dissociated identities, I believe that child parts of a multiple split off during childhood, not later, and are still developmentally children. They are not "normal" children, however. The "happy" ones tend to deny negative reality and get themselves into abusive situations. The "unhappy" ones hold strong emotions such as fear and anger. Child parts are often concrete and literal in their thought processes and awkward with their bodies, and might hold superstitious childish beliefs, communicated to them by abusers during the person's actual childhood. I have had the experience of an adult woman sitting on the floor and putting out her feet for me to tie her shoes, assuming she was in preschool. I have been with an adult man when he stood on his head on my office couch, because the child that he “was” at that moment preferred that position. I have been with adults whose “out” personalities knew no English, but spoke languages the person had learned in early childhood and then forgotten. I have had a woman fall down my office stairs because a baby part who did not know how to walk came “out” at the top of the stairs. (After that, I started making home visits to her.)

Some therapists who work with dissociative disorders believe that child parts are actually adults’ conceptions of what children are like, rather than actual children. I do not believe this myself, but I do believe that a part who says he or she is older than the body is not really older, but is a child’s, or a young adult’s, conception of an older person. And an opposite-sex part (a male in a female body, for instance) is more like a young girl’s idea of what a boy is like than like a real boy. Boys in women’s bodies usually represent the part of the person who has traits that are traditionally considered masculine, such as bravery or anger; girls in men’s bodies often have supposedly “feminine” traits such as fear. It is not worth arguing with parts about whether they really are what they believe they are. It is more important to treat the whole person with respect, in whatever aspect he or she presents to you (though it is important for all parts eventually to learn that they share a single body in the real world). The person had very important reasons for making parts the way they are. For example, a part may be a boy because boys do not have vaginas so he cannot be vaginally raped.

Some parts experience themselves as blind or deaf or mute, often as a result of a literal response to their abusers (“Do not talk about this” or “Do not look”). Some are “copy” parts (the technical term is “introjects”) who believe they are someone else entirely; for example, a relative or an abuser. Do not deny the experience of any part. Each genuinely believes it is the person’s mother, or a person of the opposite sex, or a dog, even though they are mistaken.

Some multiples have parts who think they are supernatural beings, such as demons. If they say this, they are mistaken. Often a child who has been shamed, verbally abused, and told they are evil, or made to do evil things by an abuser, can believe him or herself to be a demon. Some perpetrator groups actually tell child parts they are demons or devils or ghosts. Trying to exorcise “demon” parts of a person will only hinder their progress. Such parts need to be cared for like any child, and the responsibility for their abuse given back to the abusers rather than to any part of the child.

It is important to realize that parts have separate memories, feelings, and approaches to life, and do not necessarily know what the other parts do or think, even though they are actually all parts of one person. Each part, including the front person, is very limited. Although he or she has a sense of separate identity and agency, he or she is unable to feel some emotions or engage in some behaviors. Many parts, especially front people, feel hollow, depersonalized, or uncertain of their identity, precisely because they *are* just part of a whole. Nevertheless, they and others in the system experience them as separate (wounded) people.

Multiples and responsibility

Alter personalities (parts) hold memories only of the experiences in the person's life which those parts have actually lived. One part cannot be held responsible for events they actually do not remember or had no control over. I once treated a ten-year-old girl who had just one inner part in addition to the main person, a three-year-old with the same name as her. When she got bored in school, the ten-year-old would "go inside" her head, and the three-year-old would come "out" into the body and behave like a three-year-old, which was inappropriate for the classroom. The ten-year-old would then find herself in the school office in trouble with the principal, without any idea of what had happened. While the whole person could be said to be responsible for the behavior, the ten-year-old was not, and the three-year-old was too young to realize what was wrong with her behavior. Sometimes, when an inappropriate behavior happens, the front person just does not know about it, and is only aware of "lost time." At other times, the front person may be conscious of what is happening but unable to control it.

Be especially careful about assigning responsibility and blame—the part you are talking to may not be responsible for a behavior or even know about it. Most multiples have been abused emotionally as well as (usually) physically and sexually, and are very sensitive to blame. The whole story of their lives in the "outside" world is of being held responsible for things they do not remember doing. They are accused of lying and manipulating. They might, at times, lie and manipulate, especially when parts are out who are very young or who cannot feel pain or cannot feel guilt. But much of the time they just do not know what happened, or know but had no control over it.

If you want to deal with issues of responsibility, find and talk with the part who is actually responsible. This may be either the part who performed the behavior, or another part who made him or her do it. Remember to be gentle even with the part who is responsible. People who lie and manipulate, whether or not they are multiple, have usually learned to do this because of living with severe punishment. It takes experience in a safe world to learn more direct strategies of getting needs met.

Talking with a multiple is like talking on the phone with a group of housemates

Although only one part at a time can control the multiple's voice and actually talk with you, many can hear you and can send messages to you. Talking to a multiple is like being on the phone to someone in a large house. Only one person at a time is able to speak to you but the house phone has a speaker which broadcasts your words to others in the vicinity, so that they can hear you and can speak to the one on the phone and send messages to you. The person who was on the phone a minute ago may be nearby listening or may be completely out of the room. Those outside the range of the speaker cannot hear you, but someone can be sent to get them.

Do assume that some others inside can hear you even when one part is on the outside, or can be sent a message. This applies even when the presenting part is deaf, catatonic, or a baby. You can talk through the presenting part to others in the system. Not everyone can hear you, but many, especially the important ones, can. Especially with a mind-controlled multiple, the important parts are always listening in order to guard the person's safety and the perpetrator group's security in the outside world.

When multiples begin therapy, they often do not have very good internal communication. It is important to assist them in improving this communication. I frequently ask other parts to speak to the one on the "phone" to me, letting this one know the answer to some question I asked. For example, when a part was grieving because she did not remember what her dead mother looked like, I asked the others listening to give her a picture of her mother, and she not only saw a picture, she heard her mother's voice. I encourage the one on the "phone" (talking with me) to "ask inside" to the others and get to know them. I respect the ones who come out spontaneously to talk with me, but I also ask to speak to others, and if they will not (or are not permitted to) speak to me directly, then I ask that messages be relayed back and forth to them.

Talking with a multiple is talking with someone who has been badly abused

Although DID stands for "dissociative identity disorder," I regard it as mental injury rather than mental illness. The way a person becomes multiple is through severe and prolonged early trauma, usually child abuse. Many of the parts of a multiple have known nothing but abuse. So they will expect you to abuse them, since they assume this is the normal state of affairs. I remember informing one seductive child part that I was not going to have sex with her. She responded indignantly, "Why not? That's what kids are *for*." Other parts have cowered, waiting for me to hit them, or been afraid to look up lest I look scary, or waited suspiciously for my next move.

Many multiples have lived with people who were themselves multiple, and changed unexpectedly from warm and loving to cruel and abusive. They will expect you to change in this way, and only time will prove to them that you do not. Do not take a multiple's negative expectations personally. Be consistently warm and respectful, and keep your promises, so that parts can learn to trust you. It is also important to take responsibility and apologize for your mistakes, so that the multiple's true experience of your mistakes is validated, and he or she learns the difference between mistakes and deliberate cruelty. Most multiples have been severely punished for making mistakes, and the example of someone who can acknowledge her or his own mistakes without dwelling on them is a healthy one for them.

Do not ever tell a multiple to "grow up." One teenage multiple who became my client spent a long time with a previous therapist until finally a young part gained the courage to come out and sit at the therapist's feet. The therapist told her to grow up and act her age. It was devastating to her, and prevented any disclosure of what had happened to her.

Do not ever tell a multiple to “forget the past.” The past did unbelievably serious damage to the person, so much damage that parts of him or her are still stuck in childhood and are unable to grow up without help. Non-multiples often assume that the front person is able to control the behavior and feelings of the other parts, and is “living in the past” by “allowing” them to exist. This just is not true. The dissociation that split off the parts happened as a physiological process in early childhood, and cannot be dropped at will. The front person is often one of the least powerful parts in the system.

There is a difference between spontaneous multiplicity and deliberately designed multiplicity. Organized perpetrator groups use drugs, electricity, and torture to create the kind of personality system they want. People abused by these groups may have a set of parts created by abuse at home, but they also have complicated organized personality systems.

Talking with a multiple is like talking with a family whose members usually do not get along

Do not expect the person who is multiple to be consistent or to have internal harmony. At the start of therapy, most multiples have internal battles for control. The front person often has little or no control over switching. The parts may fight to be “out”, or may push others “out” in order to stay inside. Decision-making is difficult, and decisions made by one part will be reversed by another, until internal communication and problem-solving have been learned. Simple things like shopping or eating can become incredibly difficult. Other survivors are, at least apparently, high functioning.

Democratic decision-making is not usually learned in the childhood of a multiple. Their families are typically arbitrary dictatorships, in which adults demand that they constantly obey out of fear of punishment, even when the rules are inconsistent. It is not, therefore, surprising that, until the person has been in the recovery process some time, parts often cannot agree on decisions. That is the nature of multiplicity. “Eww, Jane got us dressed this morning,” or “I do not like her having sex with *my* body” are typical comments of parts about one another. They will often express anger and even hatred for one another. It is hard for them to realize that they all represent legitimate parts of one person, and to respect how each part helped the person survive the extreme situation in which they grew up.

Helping a multiple

The very things which helped the person as a child survive extreme trauma now get in the way of their effective living as an adult. If a child has to live with carers who hurt her, and cannot escape it, it is better for her not to know it some of the time. But when she is an adult, it does not work very well for her not to remember some of what happens in her everyday life. It does not work very well for her to have different inside "people" make opposite decisions for her life, and reverse one another's decisions, spend her money on things that different parts of her would never buy, take her places that other parts of her would never go, and so on. If an adult is still being abused, it is better for that person to have conscious awareness of it so he or she can decide what to do about it.

Those of us who were more fortunate in our early experiences can help the parts of the multiples we know to learn about love, trust, and cooperation. We can do this by being loving, trustworthy, and cooperative.

A first step in teaching cooperation is to be careful not to show favoritism among parts. Every part is there for a purpose, and is an important part of the system. Most hostile parts are using anger to protect vulnerable parts inside, usually young children. Do not be afraid of hostile parts. "Every persecutor is a misguided protector." Acknowledge that they are protectors, and offer to work with them to improve their, and your, ability to protect the client and the hurt parts. Especially in ritually abused clients, hostile parts (including demons) often turn out to be young children. If they seem dangerous, talk with them at first through another part. But do not act scared, or it will be a self-fulfilling prophecy. If you like all parts, it will help them learn to like and accept one another.

Help them "talk inside." Although talking internally may seem to make the person "more" multiple, in that they will hear voices and become aware of more parts, it will actually improve communication between the front person and the other parts, and the long-term result will be that they will become better organized and work more like an integrated person. The goal is "co-consciousness," with whichever part is "out" in the body being aware of the needs and viewpoints of all the other parts, so that effective decisions can be made by the whole person rather than by just one part at a time.

Do not talk too much about integration or fusion between parts, especially at the start. In many cases, parts are afraid that if this happens they will die. It works better to talk about walls between "inside people" no longer being needed than about the "people" disappearing or merging. Respect their choice not to fuse until and unless they are ready. My experience is that as parts share experiences and memories, the walls between them dissolve, either gradually (when they are co-conscious much of the time) or suddenly (during a major piece of memory work), and the integration naturally happens when they are ready. Not all survivors will be capable of integration, and it can be dangerous to insist on it. It takes inordinate strength to tolerate awareness of all of a life of horrendous abuse.

Imposed internal and political structures

Wendy Hoffman

As soon as children have any capacity to understand shapes, their programmers begin to install imagined geometric structures within them. Different groups use different structures and arrange and layer them in specific ways. I can only talk about the one installed in me, which started out as a pyramid or triangle. Although other survivors may have different structures, they may have similar sections and types of training since these groups employ proven formulas for mind control. Perpetrators record most mind control interventions in official books that are now computerized.

The programmers show a small child a physical representation of the geometric shape that they plan to use, and tell that child to imagine that shape inside his or her mind. This shape will be the centerpiece of the internal structure within which the various mind-controlled parts of the person will be lodged. Programmers will add other shapes in various sizes and orientations later, but the first shape is usually most dominant.

My central pyramid was right side up and divided into five horizontal sections. The first installed section was the Kaballah, a corruption of the authentic Kaballah. Originally known as the "tree of life," the real Kaballah is a mystical religion that aspires for purity. Those groups that hijack this ancient philosophy turn it on its head and render it a means for achieving evil. Here it breathes its beliefs into the whole interior system. The Kaballah tree has branches that extend throughout the body and life, and its many leaves hold numerous divisions and programs.

If the child-victim is one of those who is designated to have the Kaballah system installed, when the mind control begins, the programmer tortures the infant-victim until thirteen personalities or brain splits are achieved. Each split in the infant is assigned a color and a letter (mine were in a foreign language) and (in my case, at least) given a doll representing it as an internal "person." Each doll was placed in a container on the bumper guard of my crib. These original parts become the basis for future mind control. The basic structure of the infant's fractured mind becomes cemented about a year or two after these initial splits.

The Kaballah tree has branches which are represented as pathways, and in their hidden cult life, children are forced to walk along pathways which represent these branches. During these pathway trainings, the leaders traumatize the toddler or child to teach lies such as that the child will never escape, is worthless, will always be watched, and that they belong with these cult members and not with regular people in the outside world. This constitutes the Kaballah foundation. All its training is torture-based.

In my internal structure, the next lower level going upward toward the apex of the pyramid was Luciferianism. This sub-religion permeated my whole structure. These cults, including some Masonic groups, worship Lucifer. Little distinction exists between Lucifer and Satan, though Satan is represented more in nature and Lucifer in politics. Perpetrators and unwilling members can come from two groups. Luciferianism is usually one of the groups dominating people from multiple groups of this criminal world.

Within the pyramid, next came the Illuminati, with deep roots in the Kaballah groups. The Illuminati use multiple innocuous names for themselves such as "Pinnacle of Small Changes" or "Movement of Small Increases." These titles disguise its ruthless ambition to conquer and dominate the world. I'll use the commonplace term 'Illuminati' in this essay even though this popular term is not how the original group identifies themselves.

On top of that horizontal division was MKUltra, indicating secret experiments in mind control. The perpetrators who created this division steal children's minds and render them unknowing slaves who perform roles that corrupt governments need for their continuation in power. People continue these hidden crimes today. This group has no overt religious affiliations.

The apex of this pyramid within my internal system was Nazism. I am writing primarily about western "democracies" and their groups vying for supremacy, because that is the part of the world I was trained in. In my memoir *White Witch in a Black Robe*, I write that the racism this group is known for is a golden apple thrown out to distract the angry masses from its real purpose. Like the Illuminati members, the Nazi group wants to conquer and control the world. Nazism is in competition with the Illuminati, sometimes one or the other being in power politically. People would be amazed how many twenty-first century Nazis exist. Many look like ordinary people, some even show leftist leanings. When some of the cruder members slip into their Nazi personas and drop their masks, they stalk about in a bullying way as their true natures are exposed. Some people belonging to minority groups have been coerced into working for Nazis. Both the Nazis and the Illuminati worship Lucifer (even if some of their leaders don't believe in the religion). Traditional organized crime (called the Mafia, although it is not necessarily Italian) with its money-making demands for child prostitution and pornography, smuggling illegal goods and drugs, stealing babies, mounting animal fights and other crimes, were located in the Nazi section of my internal structure and were conducted by people connected with the Nazis in my life. Depending on which group has political ascendancy in a particular country, that section of mind-controlled people's inner structures will be placed above the section created by other groups.

The programmers who inserted the right-side up pyramid internally could also turn it upside down to reflect external politics. That means that sometimes the Illuminati with its roots planted in the Kaballah group would be higher, and sometimes the Nazi would rule internally and in the world. Both the Illuminati and Nazi groups believe they have the right to impose such a structure on the universe. We see this push and pull in world politics as at least the developed world becomes steadily more satanic. The stereotype of a few hidden individuals making decisions and ruling the world is an accurate portrayal. Sometimes persons who are hidden Illuminati leaders rule, and at other times those who are hidden Nazi leaders rule. This tug of war shows in political elections, even recent ones. The groups vie with each other. Each group wants exclusive power. But they are all Luciferians the way denominations of other religions are still under the same umbrella, and they often work together.

All the groups consider a mind controlled person a worthwhile specimen to own, and they secretly steal from one another. One group can plant parts with codes and triggers in victims' minds, and other groups may suspect something, but won't be able to find them. These thefts are not recorded in the victims' general records but only in the records of the group that conducted the theft.

There is a boom of conspiracy theories, as people try to figure out what is behind frightening global events. Few people realize that these satanic groups order assassinations. Isolated and unattached assassins are rare, if they exist at all. Many if not most of the political assassinations are from one of these groups fighting the other, using mind-controlled people as assassins. The conspiracy theorists, who are often good-hearted people who try but can't conceive of the extent of human evil, get that wrong, and the people who know through experience are unable to provide proof.

Who an infant born into these groups will become and how they will be used are set in its earliest days of life. There are no choices. Only mind control.

What countries become depends on which group's candidate wins an election with a pre-arranged agreement of who will win. It seems pre-arranged by hidden rulers and the groups appear to take turns, though not in a neat order. On occasion, a candidate without satanic affiliations runs in an election. That candidate will either be persuaded to withdraw or will lose, sometimes by a small margin. Citizens are looking for change and a better way, but Illuminati and Nazis don't want to give up their grip. And people adamantly don't want to hear this truth. Their resistance makes it easy for the criminal groups. Some people notice that the wealthy have entitlements but not the poor, or that the climate has changed and the environment is perhaps permanently spoiled, but they don't want to know the true nature of their elected officials. If a government official who is from satanism appears to do something right, it will be a matter of throwing the masses a crumb. Rulers from satanism do not mean to do good.

Even though some important world leaders are satanists, it doesn’t follow that they have permanently won this battle. People can still object, rebel and protest. Even if leaders have sold out, the world is not forever lost. There are far fewer satanists than ordinary life people. Courageous citizens of the normal world can rise up and demand safety and justice.

Hand signals

Wendy Hoffman

After those who are chosen to be victims of mind control have just been born, perpetrators immediately begin fluttering their hands in the infants' faces. Of course, the infant victims have no idea what the hand movements signify. The programmers are sensitizing the babies to hand motions and teaching them to watch hands closely.

By the time these babies are toddlers, perpetrators begin to attach assigned meanings to the movements. Over time, the children learn the specific hand sequence to sit, go, lie down, fall asleep, be quiet, run, leave, enter, drop the evidence, hide something in specific places, such as under the steps, deny, murder, shoot, kidnap, steal, poison, drop a pill in a drink, forget everything, or remember nothing. Each one has its own configuration of fingers, wrist motions and right- or left-handedness. Parts of the person can be called out by pressure on the victim's left shoulder. A hand signal coupled with a visual cue or sound is sufficient for a trained, programmed assassin part of a person to perform a murder in public, and I believe this has happened.

Before I began my authentic recovery and was still thwarted by close-down specialists, something occurred that stunned me. I was a graduate student studying social work. My field placement was in

Harlem. I led a group of parents who had lost their children to government agencies, addicts trying hard, or not so hard, to stop drinking and drugging, and people straight from the ghettoes who had few, if any, social advantages. We explored the outside world. We made trips to the library, which most had never visited, walked around the neighborhood, talked about the emotional issues plaguing their lives. Our bonds became closer. At the end of the term, I had to leave because I was a student. They gave a party for me on the last day, paying for refreshments with their own meager money. This would be our last time together and was a tender time for us all. During the party, a secretary stood in the doorway, called my name and simultaneously motioned with the middle finger of her left hand. Had she used her right finger, I would not have risen like a mindless robot and left the room. Had she not innocently combined my name with the hand movement, I would not have had a hidden part emerge, obeying what some inside child part thought was a handler's order. By the time I came out of my trance, the members of my group had dissipated. I missed out on my last goodbye and they missed out on all of my gratitude. I did not consciously know yet of all the mind-controlled parts inside me. I had not yet met the several thousands of them, but I knew then that something was terribly wrong with me and that I was vulnerable to any wind, that I was not my own person.

When people who have been mind-controlled begin their journey into knowledge, they are often afraid to go outside because they fear hand signals. At survivors' conferences about mind control, victims are sent to give vulnerable speakers and participants hand signals. An administrator might ask the audience to cease using hand signals and, as happened at a recent conference, many in the audience persist in trying to trigger people. One older woman claimed she had a skin problem that made her scratch her face repeatedly. That seemed like a reasonable explanation and people felt sympathy for her. However, during a break in the conference talks, she sought me out, switched, and performed elaborate hand signals inches from my nose. Her programmed hand signals meant that I belonged to the cult and should return. Some of the hand signals meant that I should commit suicide. Most of the people using their hands in this way do not know what they are doing. Their front person is oblivious and the parts of them performing these actions are responding to programmed commands.

Perpetrator groups are serious about making their victims sensitive to responding to hand signals and also accomplished in demonstrating these signals to others. Perpetrators can, thereby, control people in public without saying a word. They also teach and practice foot signals and many other visual cues. Some groups are more intent on using hand signals than others. For example, the ritually abusing group of Masons use them extensively but most perpetrator groups rely on them to some degree.

Survivors who received hand signal trainings cannot be fully free until they associate how they were trained to respond to, and give, hand signals. This remembering is a giant step toward not being an automaton, and it makes going out in public safer. When someone makes a deliberate hand signal in my face now, the muscles around my brain tense and my mind slides into a memory of when that signal was programmed into my brain. I am then not vulnerable to it.

At times, it can be helpful to use a hand signal to avoid danger. When I was working as a therapist, a client stood up during a therapy session and advanced toward me with her arms and hands out. It was clear to me that she intended to strangle me, not because she wanted to, but because she had been given instructions to do so. I did a hand signal back to her, and she switched and took her seat.

Disinformation*

Alison Miller

Today, I looked at the description of yet another book about mind control and ritual abuse, purporting to describe what really goes on and offering a cure. Books, websites, YouTube videos, speakers at conferences, you name it—plenty of information is out there. But how do you tell the difference between genuinely helpful information and disinformation, which means information that purports to be true but is designed to mislead you?

The trick with disinformation is to include lots of correct information. However, that correct information consists of things that are already known, so the writer is not revealing anything new. When you have become hooked on reading the writing of someone who seems to know the truth, you suddenly discover that the truth you know has been mixed with something you have not heard before, which might, on first reading, seem utterly outrageous, such as "All ritual abuse and mind control is being managed at the highest level by aliens," or "The cult is breeding half-human, half-animal creatures [chimeras] and keeps them in secret underground locations." Besides disinformation about what the abusers do, there is disinformation about the healing process, such as "The true subconscious can instantly heal all the parts if they just say they want healing," or "The way to resolve dissociated traumatic memories is to just avoid the negative and focus instead on the details of positive memories," or "If you rebalance your body's energies, you will be healed."

---

* A version of this chapter was published in the online journal *Survivorship*, Summer 2017.

In order to sort out truth from deliberately planted fiction, you need to engage your critical thinking skills. A philosophy web page (http://philosophy.hku.hk/think/criticalct.php) defines critical thinking as "the ability to think clearly and rationally about what to do or what to believe. It includes the ability to engage in reflective and independent thinking, and includes understanding the logical connections between ideas, evaluating arguments, and detecting inconsistencies and mistakes in reasoning." These are skills the abuser group did *not* want you to develop. They wanted you to believe what they said and obey them without questioning. Learning critical thinking is an important part of recovery.

Let us apply critical thinking skills to the examples I gave above from disinformation sources. "All ritual abuse and mind control are being managed at the highest level by aliens." Some versions of this one involve human-sized lizard-like creatures, others the gray aliens we see in abduction stories. I have been a reader of science fiction since I was about fourteen, and one thing I have learned is that creatures from other planets would not be two-legged and two-armed creatures like us, or like the lizards and grays. Genuine aliens might well breathe other gases than oxygen and have different shapes from any living earthly creatures (see the film *Arrival* for an example.) However, human beings could easily put on the kind of rubber masks you can buy around Halloween in order to look like aliens. Which is more likely?

How about "The cult is breeding half-human, half-animal creatures and keeps them in secret underground locations?" You cannot disprove this. However, I know (because my son is a researcher on the human genome in the world's leading university for this subject) that genomics has not advanced anywhere near the point where something like this could be done, and this would hold true even if there were secret cult or government research somewhere else. The speaker I heard on this topic believed she had given birth to such beings and was communicating with them telepathically. She was very sincere.

Very sincerely deluded. When I spoke with another ritual abuse survivor who had an inside part who believed itself to be a chimera, I investigated a little more and discovered it was a young girl who could run fast and was told she was half horse. As for the speaker who heard her "children" telepathically, my logical thinking tells me that the voices she heard were probably dissociated child parts of herself who had been told they were her children and were chimeras.

Another purpose of disinformation is to make the general public, including therapists, believe that if they think ritual abuse or mind control is real, they also have to believe in things they find completely impossible, such as some of the more outrageous claims made by the disinformation websites. So they dismiss the truth along with the falsehoods.

What about the healing methods that might be disinformation? As a survivor, you are hungry for anything that will help relieve your distress, especially if it is quick and easy rather than requiring you to work through what really happened to you. So you seize upon the correct descriptions of your experiences, and then think that if the author was able to describe what happened to you, he or she must be offering a correct understanding and proposal for cure. But this is not so.

Perpetrator groups are very eager to divert survivors away from anything which will genuinely help them heal, as healing will involve discovering what happened to them and even why it happened. These are secrets the perpetrator groups guard closely. The disinformation books and websites are meant for you to discover and share with other survivors, and they will lead you away from the truths you do not yet know, not towards them.

"The true subconscious can instantly heal all the parts if they just say they want healing." Apply your critical thinking skills and say "I wish," but know it will not happen. This one seems a bit more plausible: "The way to resolve dissociated traumatic memories is to just avoid the negative and focus instead on the details of positive memories." There are plenty of therapists who try to do this. If you have had such a therapist, you may be aware of whether or not it actually works. Many mind control and ritual abuse survivors have to struggle very hard to come up with any positive memory, and might end up inventing one to please such a therapist. Finally, "If you rebalance your body's energies you will be healed." This requires moving your body in certain ways and allowing someone to touch your body. Such new approaches are currently quite popular, and have replaced the Christian "deliverances" as the favorite of cult-involved therapists. Be very careful about this: body movements and touches and signals can actually set off programming in survivors. Some "energy therapists" are very sincere and accidentally do this; others work for the bad guys, and what they do will close down your personality system and prevent you from healing.

Apply your critical thinking. Years of research have shown that the way to resolve dissociated traumatic memories is, first, to develop communication with your inside parts, and second, to put the traumatic memories together. See http://www.isst-d.org/default.asp?contentID=49, which are the guidelines for therapists put out by the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation. Every survivor would like to find a solution that did not involve getting near the horrific content and overwhelming negative feelings of the traumatic memories. It is tempting to jump at the chance of an easy and positive way of healing. Unfortunately, it does not work, and anyone who tells you it works is either misled or trying to mislead you. It might even cripple you.

When you go online, or purchase books, or attend conferences teaching about mind control and ritual abuse, keep your critical thinking abilities in the forefront of your mind. You can learn to distinguish between information and disinformation.

The choice

Wendy Hoffman

My therapist and intelligent, informed friends who know about this field have told me for years that I am not responsible for what cult perpetrators do. "They did that, not you," they say. Of course, I do not believe them. It just did not sink in or I would not let it sink in even after I heard it multiple times. Media messages sink in after two exposures, sometimes three, but I just could not receive that all this evil was not my fault. Ridiculous, I know.

Then one day, by chance, I read an interview with the Iranian Shirin Ebadi in the March 2016 issue of *TIME Magazine*. Even non-skeptical people realize that all forms of popular media are now controlled by criminal groups who distort the news and give us false messages. So it is particularly ironic and strange that a turning point for me came from a typical popular media publication. The interviewer asked the Nobel Peace Prize winner, whose family suffered because of her quest for freedom and justice and whose colleagues were jailed, whether she felt responsible for the prison sentences that followed her revolutionary work. She answered it was not she who harassed the victims, but the government. "It's the Iranian government that has to feel the guilt," she says ("13 Questions with Shirin Ebadi," March 17, 2016). Something clicked in my fragmented brain.

The credit goes to my therapist and friends who coached my thinking for years. The lawyer's comment was the tipping point.

I had escaped from my criminal group. Probably the leaders punished people I loved and had to leave behind unwillingly, just as they had with Ebadi. It is not I who tortured them. It is the criminal group. My heart is finally absorbing this lucidity.

I have a small garden behind my new home. Being a city person, it is a novelty for me. I did not even know what slugs and snails were, though I knew that snails are considered a French delicacy. At first I mistook the slimy slugs for my dog's feces. Experienced gardeners told me how to eradicate them. Put out shallow containers of beer. Sprinkle salt on them. I could not use the chemical poisons because of my dog. I also had tall, elegant lupin plants in my garden. The slugs and snails destroyed them and others. I had to cut everything back. I experimented with the recommended means of death. The beer worked in the beginning, but then the network of insect communication must have tipped newcomers off. I only found bits of leaves in the beer. I preferred the salt. The snails went back into their portable homes and the slugs shriveled to look like fetuses. The insects shrank into themselves the way I did when I was tortured. Like me, they looked for a place where only they could reside no matter what happened to their bodies. I noticed that baby snails and slugs fought harder than the grown-ups. One day, my soul rebelled. I asked myself what am I doing? I asked myself, why does my lupin have more of a right to life than the preying insects? The lupin is gorgeous, the insects disgusting to me, but who am I to choose one over the other?

The criminal leaders and experts evaluate their members whom they consider their property when they are infants and young children. The evaluators are looking to see what will motivate each individual. One aspect of the evaluation is to see which of these brand new human beings will place their own survival above others', and which will place others' survival above their own. The groups feel that is an important distinction. Their methodology is to threaten and terrorize each child. "Do this or we will kill him," they say. "Do this or we will skin him alive." Some children will do anything to spare another's life. That spared life could be a loved one's or not. It could belong to a stranger. Perpetrators can threaten to bomb the whole world, and these sensitive ones would sacrifice themselves to that lie also. As we saw in Alison's essay, children believe lies.

Some children put themselves first. They might not want their family and friends skinned alive and murdered, but mostly they do not want to be hurt themselves. They have to be manipulated in a different way. Usually, they are bribed. “Do this and we will give you that,” evaluators say. Everything is for self-aggrandisement. They become the people who are given the important, well-paying jobs in society even though they are often not particularly competent and not equipped to be leaders.

This assessment period is short-lived. Children show their deeper natures fast. A normal person told me that children growing up in normal environments take much longer to find this preference out about themselves. They go through developmental stages and finally choose how they want to live. Cult children are born onto a battlefield. They have no childhoods. They make adult-type decisions as infants. They are a different kind of person.

Executioners use small cult children’s hands to perform the slaughters during rituals and organized killing events. The executioners usually wear massive black leather gloves for their effect, insert the ritual knife into the child’s hands and cover the child’s hands with their own. “It’s your fault we had to kill this person.” “It’s your fault we had to kill this animal.” The animal is often a beloved pet. These lies will fill the first kind of child with unbearable guilt and grief. The second type of child will also despair and come to look for ways to build him or herself up. Neither type of child is particularly resilient after extreme trauma and will most likely carry these traumas throughout life.

Whether people put themselves or other people first is not caused by their being born into this kind of cult. The tendency may be genetic and from other early environmental influences. The preference has nothing to do with intelligence, analytic ability, creativity, or education. It is a primal tendency closely linked to survival—either the survival of the soul or of the body. People with no connections to criminal perpetrators eventually display the same distinctions. When the sensitive children realize they have done something wrong, they can become suicidal. When the self-important ones become agitated, they might have homicidal ideation.

I was controlled for the vast majority of my life by the fear of causing others to be hurt. I lost the one boy who loved me when I was four and a half. I do not cry easily, but I still cry when I think of him, almost seventy years later. I lost all my children, one after the other, but the inside part who lost one of my eight children did not know about the others. Each mother was isolated and uninformed, even though we all shared the same body. So I engaged in the same mistaken thinking time and time again, wanting to save a child. Finally, because I had some help, I extricated myself from my desire to try to save my adult child and left my grandchildren, too. It was difficult to leave them all, even though they had been programmed to hate me. Even as an escapee, I felt guilty that I might be causing them harm.

The Iranian lawyer, instead, was empowered. "It's not I who . . ." That statement did not lead to my freedom, which had already been achieved, but it stripped away layers of guilt and despair from my heart and even my brain.

We act according to our conscience and principles, not according to evil's attempted manipulations.

Even after recovery, instances reveal themselves from the deep layers of brain, instances where the fear of hurting others (or being hurt yourself, for some) had been used to control you. The life review of the freed entails many times when wrong decisions were made, and a few when right decisions were accomplished. It only takes one or two crucial correct choices to gain freedom, to leave behind the threats and manipulations. With freedom, you have the time to find yourself, long ago lost to perpetrators. You can make the choice to turn your back on your perpetrators fast, but it does take a lifetime to digest all that has happened. You can work through the shock of each tortuous event that occurred in the past, but the post-recovery shock of what your life as a whole has been could stick throughout the rest of your life. Some might be able to shake it off. I have not been able to.

After recovery, you stand as if in shock. This shock will not dissipate by itself. To lose the shock, you have to accept your life. How could anyone accept a life like those that I describe? This is where the flow towards healing can stop. There is no way to accept what happened to you and countless others. No way.

And so we continue. Still grieving and in shock, but we take one step and then another. We have this awful knowledge, but life is calm now and we can help others. We make the best of this life.

The extra danger of character flaws

Wendy Hoffman

The criminal groups test their victims from early childhood on. They want to know what talents and interests they inherited so that they can usurp them for their own purposes. They also want to know what weak spots each personality has in case they need to be punished. Therefore, they ascertain whether a victim will suffer more if he or she is humiliated professionally and in public or whether physical torture would be more effective. Ordinary life schools do not do such thorough investigations.

From my observations, it is survivors' character flaws that keep them attached to the perpetrator group. These blemishes could go unnoticed in ordinary life. Most people have some personality frailty or vulnerability but when unravelling mind control, these deficits can become deadly.

Starved of real recognition (a need of every human), some survivors end up overly hungry for attention, feeling special and important. Perhaps someone held a more special role earlier in life and then lost it. A girl was told to function as a sex goddess and then lost her looks and was demoted. A boy was trained in activities requiring strength but then did not grow very big. A young child showed potential to be a psychic or a witch and these abilities did not develop and crashed. There are many other scenarios that can leave adult survivors longing for some singled out recognition or sense of special importance.

If the cult wants to use the person's abilities in cult life only, the programmers will say, for example,

"Here, with us, you are important."

"We need you."

"You are special."

"Only you can help us."

"Only you have the knowledge and understand."

But if the person is no longer needed or used, he or she is just dropped, humiliated, and closed down, experiencing a hole that flails around to be filled. Only the wrong people will want to fill it.

If you spot this kind of yearning emptiness in yourself, be on guard. Do not fall in love with the handsome leader who tells you you are beautiful. He means you no good. Do not accept that function at a ritual. It is meant to manipulate you. Do not want to be a valued member of a group more than anything. The group will lead you to destruction.

There are survivors who never experienced compassion from others. They were left alone as small children even though their bodies had been tortured. They called out and no one came. No adult. Not even another child. As adults, they remain in that child-state of yearning for comfort from another human being.

We know that in these criminal cults there are programmers who know how to separate victims' brains into slivers and render them unthinking, hypnotised automatons.

There is another group that is not as powerful as programmers but is still used extensively. Members of this group are called "matriarchs." People describe them as being "natural mothers." They have an intuitive sense of how to court people, build them up, and make them dependent. Soon, the comfort-seekers find these matriarchs and stop seeing clearly. They are finally getting the comfort their child selves craved and that blinds them, one hopes temporarily, to the dangerous pit they have fallen into. Apparently supportive partners or spouses can also give comfort while keeping the dependent survivor in a helpless, childish state.

If you are arrested in a small child state of complaining and wanting everyone to comfort you, know that you are courting danger. The wrong people will be happy to rescue you from loneliness and isolation and keep you trapped as a slave who carries out enemies' bidding.

There are adult survivors who, as children, were stripped of any remnant of self-esteem. They believed what their adult and peer torturers told them and think that they have nothing to offer the world. These are the people who will go after the positions of power in these criminal groups and will let sail down the river any whisper their souls or their higher wisdom selves deliver.

If you are a person with such horrendous self-esteem, know that having a position of power in these groups will often seal your fate and render you a doomed victim.

Be aware that you do not feel good about yourself, and protect yourself from enemies who will prey on your lack. Try to spot aspects of yourself that you admire. Remember when you acted with integrity. Yes, there were such times. Push away people who tempt you with destructive forces.

If the cult offers to place you in a high level administrative job in the real world, be cautious. The criminal leaders are not honoring your abilities, though you might want to think so. They are using you as a stooge. They will tell you exactly what to do and how. You might get a large salary but you will remain a puppet with no conscience.

Know your limitations. If you would not be able to achieve such a high position on the basis of your own abilities, do not let empty ambition leave you vulnerable to being used even more and contributing to more of the evil in the world.

Many more character flaws can lead people further into being a puppet of these criminal groups. If you have justifiable rage attacks, the controllers may make you into an assassin. If you tend toward addictions, they may make you into a prostitute or drug pusher or both. If you often become hysterical, they will send a partner who can balance you out and support you but who will not be a friend. The person who helps you cope with histrionic reactions will probably become your handler or programmer. That person may level out your instability but will not want your welfare and will order you to do things to your detriment.

Try to know and accept yourself even though you are mind-controlled and your mind might still be in slivers and pieces. Try to heal your childhood of torture and deprivations so that your enemies cannot place you in an even deeper hole.

Healing from this kind of mind torture is one of the most difficult recoveries. I do not think anyone would disagree about that. Some may even say it is not possible. However, enough people have healed to say definitively that it is possible and happening right now. Minds are becoming integrated.

Satanic mythology *vs.* genuine evil

Alison Miller

A long time ago, people thought bad/unfortunate was the same as bad/evil. So, if someone suffered, it must be a divine punishment for something they had done wrong. Even today, we sometimes confuse these things. People who survive earthquakes, for example, feel especially chosen by God to survive, and thank God for this, without realizing that they are, by implication, thanking God, for killing all those who did not survive. Until recently we called natural disasters "acts of God."

When ancient people realized that what happens to someone is not always his or her fault, they looked for external causes. Many things do have external causes. Not having the science to discover bacteria and viruses and faults in the earth's crust, early people invented mythical beings to account for all the things that go wrong. Ancient religions tend to be filled with deities that are a cross between human beings and animals, some beneficent and some malign. This is probably because, in ancient times, wild animals were one of the greatest threats people faced. A person merged with a powerful beast would have great power. Among other supposedly supernatural beings, people invented a red devil with horns and a tail and a vaguely human or bipedal goat-like body. As time went on, they added more demonic beings, also tending to be red and horned. Recently, in an attempt to explain ritual abuse, some writers (notably David Icke) have added bipedal lizard-like aliens.

Unfortunately, ever since the poet John Milton wrote *Paradise Lost* in 1667, one particular set of mythical beings seem to have won out in the popular imagination. Milton combined three ideas from the Bible to fashion a tale of an entire class of supernatural beings like the Greek or Roman or Egyptian gods, one of whom rebelled against God and took others with him. The ideas he combined were:

1. The adversary or tempter character ("Satan", e.g., in the book of Job, or the story of Jesus in the wilderness) who has the job of testing people's motives to strengthen their character.
2. The notion of "devils" (external forces causing unpleasant effects such as diseases—nowadays we would identify many of them as bacteria or viruses, and others as natural phenomena like the shifting of the earth's crust).
3. A brief reference to Lucifer falling from heaven. Lucifer, the light-bringer, usually referred to the planet Venus, the brightest star in the sky. In its context, the prophet Isaiah was prophesying doom for a foreign king who was oppressing his people, a man who appeared temporarily bright but would be brought down.

Milton, 450 years ago, put these together into an impressive and exciting narrative about an evil being, Lucifer/Satan, who rebelled against God's rule. Many Christians think this story is actually in the Bible; it is not. Satanists, like evangelical Christians, believe it but think the rebel, rather than God, deserves to run the universe. The story is not all that different from similar stories in more ancient mythologies. Ritual abusers who worship Satan or Lucifer often also worship Egyptian or other pagan deities as well. More recent Christians have elaborated on all the demonic entities that supposedly work on behalf of Satan's kingdom.

When I hear the acronym "SRA," standing for satanic ritual abuse, I shudder. People who call what we are dealing with SRA frequently equate mind control abuses, including those engaged in by religious Satan-worshippers, with the involvement of a host of supernatural entities, most of them red and horned and having some kind of a physical body which gives them that appearance. Many such people believe that victims must experience “deliverance” from possession or oppression by such entities.

Various polytheistic religions involve rituals in which people dress up as gods or demons, and go into alternative states in which they are supposedly possessed by the god or demon they represent. Satanism does this also, according to Stella Katz (Chapter Seven of *Healing the Unimaginable*). A man in a devil suit (skin-tight and red with horns and a tail) rapes a toddler in the satanic baptism ceremony, and rapes a nine-year-old painfully (he wears a penis sheath with spikes on it) in the ceremony of marriage to Satan. People wear costumes impersonating demons, and rape a child of about three in order to create demon parts in that child. The child passes out, wakes up costumed as a demon, and is shown a “mirror” on which a picture of demon is painted. It is given a demon name and taught how to behave like a demon.

Most of us do not take literally the various gods and demons of religions other than the ones we are familiar with, Christianity and Judaism. We do not assume that when an ancient Greek or a Mayan dressed in a costume, he actually became, or was possessed by, the entity that costume represented. Yet, somehow, some of us believe this about the demonology we have inherited within Christianity.

Surely our understanding of dissociation can inform us about what has happened within a little child who is raped and tortured into inviting in a “demon” or signing an agreement to serve Satan. The child’s brain, in the interest of basic survival, has split off a part that will say or do whatever it is told to say or do. Are we to really believe that some named demon has entered this child, and the only solution is to oust it through “deliverance” or “exorcism?” Surely we are beyond that. Surely we can see that what happened was a dissociative split caused by overwhelming trauma.

Nevertheless, we are faced with the reality that what people do in this kind of religion can only be described as evil. It is impossible to experience or work with victims of mind control abuses, especially ritual abuse, without becoming sickeningly, and frighteningly, aware of the existence of evil. We have to grapple with the reality that the things that happen to mind-controlled and ritually abused people are not just unfortunate examples of “hurt people hurting others.” There is deliberate evil intent on the part of perpetrators. Perhaps many or most perpetrators have split minds themselves, so they are unable to feel empathy for their victims. Even the "conscious" ones have hidden child parts, but have lost contact with them.

Forced perpetration is, in my view, the most evil of all the things ritually abusing cults engage in. A little child's hand, in the hand of an adult abuser, is made to stab another creature, perhaps even a person, to death. Older children are given choices between two evils. "Kill this animal or we will kill your baby brother." "Cut this person or we will cut her much more painfully." When they choose the lesser evil, they are told how evil they are for making this choice.

Whenever I hear (or read) someone referring to this kind of abuse as "SRA," I hear the implication that an actual supernatural being who looks like the guy in the red suit is involved. This bothers me immensely. There might well be evil forces beyond our understanding that vie with the good for the heart or soul of each human being. However, literalizing them into physical beings with red skin, horns, and tails takes our focus away from what these abusers may be doing to the humanity of their victims, and what is necessary to restore that humanity.

A client of mine who grew up in a satanic cult family had a near-death experience, in which she died temporarily and had to be revived. When we processed this memory in a therapy session, she went through all the traditional components of the near-death experience, including leaving her body, passing through a tunnel, meeting a being of light, and finally experiencing a review of the choices she had made in her life with regard to whether they were good or evil. In the life review, she reported being shown that some of the evil things she had been made to do by the cult perpetrators were not considered evil choices on her part, as she had not really had a choice between right and wrong. But some smaller decisions in everyday life in which she had chosen to be mean or petty were shown (by the being of light) to be wrong.

Abusers can make very young children believe they are evil or possessed on the basis of the actions those children are forced to commit. But why do we adults believe it? We should know better.

As we learn more about mind control and ritual abuse, we are forced to think through our view of evil, of right and wrong choices, and perhaps of what Christians call "sin." How does a person come to choose evil? How does a person become a perpetrator? Leave aside the forced choices and forced behaviors. What are the choices that count?

Read Wendy's essay on "Character flaws" again. She is talking about temptation, in the traditional sense. The temptation to boost your self-esteem by lording it over others, to deal with your financial insecurity by turning to greed and exploiting others, the temptation to deny your vulnerability by torturing and raping others, the temptation to get love by imprisoning someone and forcing them to "love" you, the temptation to achieve safety by compromising with abusers. Evil enters through temptation, the temptation to violate the Golden Rule, which is "treat others the way you would like them to treat you." A person becomes a perpetrator through a series of such choices.

The cults know this. Forget the trappings of satanism, the costumes, the supposed legions of demons. These are mere window dressing to confuse and deceive and distract children and onlookers. The temptations, even within satanism, are the same old ones that exist anywhere, but with heightened possibilities. Someone who wants to aggrandize himself by making others feel small might, in regular life, become a spouse abuser; in satanism he might become a torturer. In regular life, a smart person who wants to exploit others through greed can become a real estate magnate; a less intelligent person might simply become a loan shark. In satanism, the less smart person can become a university president (with manipulated promotions), the smarter person a master programmer who directs torturers and can rape anyone he wants, including helpless children. In satanism, a person who will sacrifice others in order to avoid personal suffering will become an obedient torturer or a stealer of children. In regular life, he might become a politician who tries to keep vulnerable refugees out of a "safe" country, or a devotee of such a politician. The choices that lead to evil are the same within and outside satanism.

The people who direct the international perpetrator networks know this. They are not deceived by the trappings. As Wendy wrote, they look for the person's individual vulnerability to temptation, and they provide precisely the type of temptation to which each individual is most vulnerable.

As an Illuminati "queen," Wendy was chosen to assume a high position in the international cult network. For this position, she was supposed to be possessed by myriad demons which were simulated through deceptions such as we have previously discussed. But, to her mind, the real evil was not in these supposed demons, it was in the temptation to power and cruelty. Throughout her life she was invited to accept and enjoy the power her position would give her if she would only become a “conscious” perpetrator and identify with the goals of the perpetrator group. Choosing to kill with her own hands was particularly important to the group, and because she steadfastly refused to do so, she was eventually discarded by the group. The boy she grew up with, who was designated to be the “king” to her “queen,” lusted after power, and was given significant authority within the group.

Walt Kelly’s “Pogo” cartoon for the first Earth Day in 1970 has a caption: “We have seen the enemy, and he is us.” There are many people who live regular lives who would become perpetrators if given the opportunity. It is repeated yielding to temptation that destroys the soul. This is a primary objective of satanic groups. The truly demonic takes control of us when we repeatedly yield to what is commonly known as sin—envy, lust for power, control, cruelty, sexual perversion, material possessions, or status. This can happen to anyone, regardless of whether they are exposed to satanism.

SECTION II

LIES

Fifty lies they might have told you: why they told them, how they made you believe them, and what you can do about it

Alison Miller

Child abusers who use mind control, whether they belong to a cult, a military or government group, or an organized criminal group which uses children as sexual slaves, all attempt to brainwash their victims to believe certain lies. "Mind control" refers to deliberately splitting a child's brain circuitry into different parts, training all parts to obey, and indoctrinating and training each part so that he or she will do a specific job assigned by the abusers. The abusers who do this tell the children many lies, for the purpose of controlling the children and preventing them from speaking out about their abuse, even after they grow up, so that the abusers can continue perpetrating these abuses without being caught. In addition, each specific lie has a specific purpose, which benefits the abusers but not the children.

The creation of these false beliefs and trained behaviors is sometimes referred to as "programming." These abusers use trickery (fake stage magic, illusions, and drugs) as well as torture and threats to make children believe the lies. They also deliberately create new parts ("inside people") in each child they abuse. The one or ones who live most of their daily lives and function socially in the outside world often do not know of the beliefs, training, or even the existence of the other parts. This is important for the lies and tricks to be effective. This article summarizes some of the most common lies told by these abusers, the purpose of each lie, and the methods they use to make children believe the lies.

If you are a survivor reading this, I suggest you might want to write down some thoughts you or your parts have that could possibly be lies the perpetrators told you. Then see whether those thoughts are in this list. Or you could ask your inside parts to listen while you read each lie out loud, and note which lies they believe so you can read the explanations of these lies to them.

Lies about the reality of the abuse

1. *Lie*: You got the idea that you were abused from something you read or saw on television, or from someone else's experience, or from your therapist.

The truth: Many people read such stories or watch such programs, but know that these things did not happen to them. All qualified therapists have been trained not to make suggestions that will influence clients' beliefs about what has happened to them.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to believe that your memories were not real, so that you would not try to find out more about them or tell anyone else about them. They also did not want anyone else to believe you.

How they made you believe it: Survivors of extreme abuse often do not remember much of their past, so it is very easy for people who have power in their lives, such as their parents, to convince them that nothing bad happened to them. Most people want to please their parents.

What to do about it: You might want to avoid reading other people's stories of abuse, or watching television programs about these abuses, whether or not the programs suggest that these things really happen. Then you can be sure that you are not picking up ideas from these sources.

Think seriously about who has made suggestions to you, either that you were abused or that you were not. Can you trust their word? Has anyone pressured you to believe one way or the other? If so, you might want to make it clear to that person that your thoughts are your own and you do not appreciate their suggestions. Possibly the people who deny what you say are part of the perpetrator group.

2. *Lie*: If you get flashbacks of awful abuses, they must be dreams or imagination or signs that you are crazy. Nothing bad really happened to you.

The truth: Flashbacks do not come from imagination, especially if they have body sensations as part of them. Dreams can be related to things you have seen in films or on television, but they might also be related to things that have happened to you. If you have seen screen images which remind your inside parts of their experiences, a dream might combine the story on the screen with actual memories.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to believe that your memories were not real, so that you would not try to find out more about them or tell anyone else about them.

How they made you believe it: If you had a dream or a memory of the abuse in childhood, they would tell you that it was a dream or that you had an active imagination. It was reassuring to you to believe it was not real. They may have simulated a murder that you attended, and then you saw the person alive the next day. When you told this to your parents, they said you must have dreamed the murder.

What to do about it: Pay attention to dreams and flashbacks; write them down and see what information they give you about your life experiences.

Lies about your abusers' powers and character

3. *Lie*: The abusers know things and do things by real magic.

The truth: The abusers had lots of training in how to deceive children. They used "stage magic," hypnosis, and drugs, as well as torture and threats, to make you believe lies. They did not have any real magic.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to always be afraid of them and to believe they knew what you were thinking and saying, so that you would not reveal the abuse.

How they made you believe it: You were a child, and children do not always understand adults' tricks. You did not know whether magic was real or not. Stage magicians deceive children for fun; abusers have learned to use this stage magic to deceive children for their evil purposes. For example, a client of mine believed “Satan’s eyes” were always watching her. This was a memory of being outside in the dark with the “eyes” she saw being flashlights surrounding her. Another client as a child was put in a room with plastic ears glued to the walls, and talked to someone while a hidden microphone recorded what she said. She was then punished for what she had said, and told that all walls had ears, though some are invisible.

What to do about it: Communicate with your inside parts to find out how each apparently magic trick was done. This article has told you how some of them were done. You may have others. You can find out the tricks by talking inside. The abusers set you up so that each part knows things that other parts do not know. You can find out the truth when you share your knowledge with one another inside your head. You can also look up the comedy duo Penn and Teller, who debunk apparent magic.

4. *Lie*: Everything the abusers told you was true.

The truth: Some things were true, but many things were not true. You can only find out which was which through internal communication.

What to do about it: Think for yourself, now that you are an adult, and critique the information the abusers gave you to see whether or not you now think it could be true. If something is really true, it will resonate as a truth for you. You might find that when something resonates this way, you feel angry or sad, and you might want to avoid thinking about it any further. If this is the case, it will be helpful for you to follow the thread of emotions and thoughts and ask yourself why you are avoiding this. Shed light on it so that you can find the real truth, which is the only way you will be able to heal and to move forward in life. Recognize that if you were deceived, you were a child, so it is not your fault you were deceived. As an adult, you probably still have child parts inside you. Be determined to get at the truth. If one thing the abusers said to you was a lie, then perhaps other things that were said to you were lies or tricks (fabricated events).

5. *Lie*: The perpetrators or the group will always know where you are and what you are saying.

The truth: This was true when you were a child and the abusers had control of you, but it is not true now. They do not have the time or resources to keep track of everyone they have abused, especially people who have relocated to another place, so they train some parts of you to report to them. Older survivors who are far away from their origins might now have no one to report to.

Why they told this lie: They knew they would not have the time or resources to keep track of you at all times once you grew up, but they did not want you to know that and disobey them.

How they made you believe it: (a) They knew where you were in your childhood. When they had you in childhood, they were adults and you were a child. When they abused you, it was in a place that they were in control of. You could only hide in places they knew, so there were not any places you could hide successfully. When they found you, they might say it was by magic, but it was not. Phrases like "Mothers have eyes in the back of their heads" reinforced the belief.

But now that you are an adult, it is unlikely that they can find you easily, especially if you have moved to another town or country. Some of your "inside children" may believe they still live in the places where they were abused; they do not know that your body has grown up and moved to a place where the abusers are not around. Some survivors, though not all, are left alone in adulthood, after the abusers close down their personality systems. They are found only if some part of them tells the abusers they are remembering and talking about the abuse.

(b) Other people. Sometimes, other people, such as your own family members, may have had the job of telling the abusers where you were or what you said when you were a child. They might still have this job. If you are not telling these people things now, the abusers will not know. Often, survivors feel an urge to call a "safe" family member, who is actually not a safe person. Such people also notice and report changes in your energy, hopefulness, body care, friendships, concentration, and learning.

(c) Reporter parts. You probably have one or more inside parts or people who have the job of reporting to your abusers if you ever begin to tell or remember what they did to you. Here's a question to think about: Why would the abusers need parts of you to report to them where you are or what you have said, if they already know? The answer is that they would not. They gave parts the job of reporting because they knew that when you are an adult they would not be able to keep track of what you do or say. If there is some part of you who feels he or she just *has* to tell your mother, brother, uncle or somebody from your childhood what you are saying or what you do in therapy, be suspicious. Make sure that part does not act on this impulse.

(d) Hidden microphones. Reporter parts are trained through tricks usually involving microphones. When you were a child, they might have put you in a room where they had hidden a microphone. They would listen to whatever you said when you thought they were not listening, and then they came in and punished you for what you said. They might have told you that they knew by magic, or that some small animal or bird or insect told them, or that they watched from the shadows, or that there was something like a microphone or transmitter which they put in your body which let them know your location, or that the walls had ears. All these were lies. The reporter parts were the ones punished, and they were told they always had to tell what they had said or where they were before they got punished for not telling. The truth is that the rooms you are in now do not have hidden microphones so no one outside these rooms can hear what you say.

What to do about it: Look for your reporter parts and explain to them why they should not report anything you have told anyone about what happened to you. If they report regularly, have them just say that nothing has been done or said against the rules of the group who abused you. The truth now is that if your reporter parts do not tell the abusers things, the abusers will not know. So, it is very important that the reporters stop reporting the truth to the abusers. If they are supposed to call at regular times, they can just talk about unimportant things or even tell lies. The abusers lied to you, so why should you not lie to them? See Lie #6 about lying to abusers. If the reporter parts do not believe they are safe and refuse to cooperate, do not disclose abuses until you and your therapist have worked with these parts sufficiently to get their cooperation. They might agree to be put to sleep when you talk to your therapist about what happened to you, or to have their memories wiped by other parts who know how to do it, so that they will not have to report about disclosures. Or you can have them report to "inside copies" of the abusers.

6. *Lie*: Your abusers always know if you are lying, so you must always tell the truth to them or you will be punished.

The truth: There has been a lot of research into whether or not people can tell when other people are lying, and they cannot. Your abusers cannot tell if you lie to them.

How they made you believe it: When you were a child, your family and/or abusers knew a lot about your life. They may have set you up to lie to them about something they already knew, then punished you for lying.

What to do about it: Realize that although in most situations telling the truth is the right thing to do, there are some situations (when someone's life or health, including your own, is at stake), it may be right to lie, especially to people who cannot be trusted. If you decide to lie to your abusers, practice that lie so you can do it effectively.

7. *Lie*: You can trust the people who abused you, your "family," but you cannot trust anyone else.

The truth: There are many people who are trustworthy and will not betray you or let you down. You cannot trust people who are part of a group that abuses children. Your abusers are the very people you can never trust, whether or not they are your biological family. They are the people who abused you, and who made you watch or take part in abuses of helpless children, adults, and animals. How could you possibly trust people who have behaved like this, regardless of how "nice" or "normal" they might seem at other times? You can rely on the fact that they will hurt you and lie about it!

How they made you believe it: They had someone whom you believed was not one of them hurt you or betray your trust. That person was actually one of them. They may have had a family member or a cult member rescue you. They arranged your personality system so that the parts who were rescued do not know the abuse which the other parts experienced by family or group members, including the same people who rescued you.

Also, when you were very young, they might have set up some kind of a trick situation, where you had to choose between people whom you believed were outsiders to the perpetrator group or family, and members of that group or family. If you chose to go to the outsiders, they abused you. If you chose to go to the group members, they were nice to you and rewarded you. The trick was that the people who were supposedly “outsiders” were not really outsiders; they were just group members you had not met before. And the group members who were nice to you were not always nice in this way but some part in you created just for this situation did not know that.

What to do about it: When all your internal parts share information with one another, you can discover the lie in this kind of training. Some part who is older than the one trained here can share what he or she knows about what else those “outsiders” and those “nice people” did at other times.

Do not trust anyone who has abused you at any time. Many abusers in these perpetrator groups are dissociative, and their “nice” parts may not even know what their abusive parts do.

With true outsiders, take your time to evaluate whether or not you can trust them. Share information internally so that those parts of you who make the decisions have all the necessary information to know whether people are trustworthy. Many people can be trusted with some information but not with everything you have to tell.

8. *Lie*: The group can kill you or take you away at any time and no one can stop it from happening.

The truth: It is very risky for an abuser group to kill someone or permanently kidnap them. If that person is known in the world, there will be an investigation, and abuser groups do not want that to happen. The victims they kill are usually street people or unregistered children (whom no outsiders know exist), not people with real-world identities. Groups can temporarily kidnap survivors to re-abuse them, but they let them go. In the past they kidnapped children and sometimes killed adults with known identities, but it is now almost always too risky for them to do this, particularly if the person has disclosed abusers’ identities to an outsider like a safe therapist or doctor.

How they made you believe it: You probably saw the abusers appear to kill someone, or even kidnap a child, back in the days when parents did not watch their children as closely as they do now.

What to do about it: Know that you are very probably safe from being killed or permanently abducted, but if an abuser group actually knows where you are, take precautions so that they will not take you somewhere and re-abuse you.

Survivors who come from very high-ranking cult families, who are being used in important jobs for the perpetrator group, or who have knowledge of publicly known crimes, are likely to be tracked more thoroughly than rank-and-file survivors. Unfortunately, modern technology makes it easier to discover someone's address, or follow them via tracking their cellphone. So if you are one of those survivors who is important to the perpetrator group, you may have to be extra careful not to make yourself vulnerable to abduction. You also have to remember that some cult people are experts in disguises and know how to con people and present a likeable front, and may try to befriend you. For example, if they hear that you are ill, they might move in to "help" you, but will actually torture you.

Lies about obedience and disobedience

9. *Lie*: You are "good" if you obey the abusers, and "bad" if you do not.

The truth: You know deep inside what is good and bad. It is bad to hurt people or animals. The abusers use "good" to mean obedient and "bad" to mean disobedient. But there is a higher form of goodness, based on the Golden Rule—"treat other people the way you would like them to treat you." If obeying someone means violating the Golden Rule, it is not really good at all. Somewhere deep down inside you, you know this. You did not want to obey many times because you knew what they were doing was wrong. Most of the time what the abusers told you to do was bad, even though they told you it was good.

Why they told this lie: To confuse you and to make you disobey your own conscience. Children believe what adults say, and trust the adults to know better than they do.

How they made you believe it: They said it a lot. They talked all the time, as many parents do, about being "good" in terms of obedience. If you refused to do something you knew would hurt yourself or someone else, they said you were bad. They punished you for trying to escape, for talking to outsiders, for acts of kindness. They punished you for being disobedient, and they sometimes rewarded you for being obedient.

What to do about it: You still have your conscience, and underneath all the training the abusers gave to parts of you, you still know that it is right to care for yourself and other people and wrong to hurt yourself or others. Know that the guilty and fearful feelings you get when you disobey the abusers is just left over from all the punishment and lies they told you. Trust in your own inner knowledge of what is good and bad. If you are in doubt, ask someone you trust who is not one of the abusers. Try to get back to the higher morality of the Golden Rule, and base your behavior on trying to treat others and yourself with kindness and compassion rather than having to obey anyone who would make you do harm.

10. *Lie*: You have to remain loyal and obedient to the people who abused you, because you made vows or promises to them. If you do not, you are a traitor and deserve punishment.

The truth: Vows or promises made by children are not legally valid. Children who are forced to make vows or promises under duress, including "marriage" vows, are not legally bound to keep those promises. Even if you signed an agreement or contract consciously as an adult, it is not valid if it was coerced or signed by one part of you without the knowledge of the main "real world" person.

Why they told you this lie: They used your desire to be a loyal person who keeps your word, as well as your fear of death and pain, to make you keep their crimes a secret.

How they made you believe it: Many children abused by organized perpetrator groups were forced to watch a supposed "traitor" being tortured, raped, and/or apparently murdered, and sometimes forced to hold the knife or other instrument that was used. Some of these crimes are simulated, but others are real, and the children forced to be there believe they are real.

Under this kind of duress, a child splits off parts that are desperate to be loyal. When these parts do what is required of them, including making vows, they are rewarded by the abusers.

What to do about it: Vows made by a child under duress are not legally valid, so you do not have to do anything other than recognize this.

Some survivors like to make formal statements which deliberately contradict the vows they were forced to make, for example, "divorcing Satan" if they were "married" to him.

11. *Lie*: If you disobey your abusers, someone you love, or your pet, or another vulnerable child will be punished or will die.

The truth: When you were a child, they could punish someone else to make you obey their instructions. If you are still in contact with the perpetrators now, and they want to continue to use you, they are able to punish someone else (though they are unlikely to actually kill that person). But they will only do it when you are present to watch or take part. If you are no longer in physical contact with them, no one will be harmed because you disobey their instructions. They will continue harming other children, but you have no control over that, only over how you yourself can become and stay safe. Children and adult survivors do not need abusers, even if they are mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters, grandparents, sons, daughters, best friends, spouses, or lovers.

How they made you believe it: When you disobeyed as a child, they punished a younger child, perhaps your little brother or sister, for your disobedience. Or they harmed or killed a child or an animal and told you it was because of your disobeying them. They might even have made you harm someone, telling you that if you did not do it they would harm you as well as that person, or they would hurt that person worse than you would. They did this when you were a child under their control in order to make you do things you would not otherwise agree to do. They used your own love and compassion against you.

What to do about it: Refuse to believe this lie, and keep yourself physically safe and away from any of the abusers. Do not return to them and give them the opportunity to harm you or someone else in your presence. If you are unable to keep physically away from the abusers, consider relocating to another part of the country or the world, but only do this when no part of you is reporting your location to the abusers.

12. *Lie*: Your internal leaders must always make the other parts obey, and punish them if they disobey, or the abusers will find these inner people and punish them severely.

The truth: Your abusers probably did put some inner “people” in charge of the others, and instruct them to keep all parts of you obeying the abusers’ instructions through threats and punishments. However, if you have physically moved away from your abusers, and they are no longer able to physically capture and punish you, your internal leaders no longer have to perform internal punishments and give warnings. The abusers will not punish these leaders if they stop doing their jobs, because they can only punish any parts of you if they have your body to punish.

Why they told this lie: They wanted to continue to have control of you when you were far away from them. They knew that you would grow up and move away, so they gave those parts the job of making everyone inside you continue to obey them.

How they made you believe it: It was actually true when you were a child and under the control of the abusers. Those parts were put in charge and punished if any parts under their authority disobeyed. But the abusers can only do this if they have your body to punish.

What to do about it: Make sure that all parts, especially those who were put in charge, know what year it is, how old your body is, where you live, and how far away you are from your abusers. Many parts can be "stuck in the past" and still think it is 1968 or 1987 or some other year when you were still physically a child and the abusers were in charge of you. The parts who were put in charge need to be fully informed about the situation, and if they realize they are no longer in danger, then they can stop punishing the others and learn to work together with all parts for your safety and healing.

13. *Lie*: If you do as you are told, you will rise to be the highest member of the coven.

The truth: Ritual abusers say this to every child they abuse. Every ritually abused child has within him or her parts such as the high priest or priestess, the bride of Satan, and possibly the programmers. These lies are told to these parts to keep them in line. The persons to lead the next generation of the group are usually chosen at birth, and no one else can rise to those positions.

How they made you believe it: By creating these parts and telling them these lies. There are many reasons parts of you would want to believe this—it would give them some importance, safety, and a sense of purpose and belonging.

What to do about it: Just realize you were lied to.

Lies about keeping in contact with your abusers

14. *Lie*: If you go to the abusers, you will not be punished, and if you obey and go back, you will get a special treat.

The truth: If you have been disloyal in any way, such as going to see a safe therapist or telling anyone anything about the abuse, you will be punished when you return to the abusers. The "special treat" could be a chance to harm or kill some creature, with a cheap ring and a fake "promotion" given to you afterward. Or it might be a chance to be hurt. You may be rewarded with sex or given drugs in an attempt to get you addicted.

If you do not go to them, they will not be able to hurt you or to make you hurt any other creature.

How they made you believe it: There might have been an event in your childhood where you were rewarded for going to them.

What to do about it: Do not go to them! Try to educate those parts who go to them about what actually happens when you get there, so they will not want to go there anymore.

15. *Lie*: If you do not return to the abusers on birthdays and other special dates, they will hurt someone else.

The truth: They will only do this if you are there to watch or to be forced to take part in hurting the other person.

How they made you believe it: On one or more occasions in childhood you were late or did not show up for one of their events, when they were still in control of you. As a punishment, they hurt someone else while you watched, or made you hurt someone.

What to do about it: Make sure that you do not go back to the abusers. They might still hurt other people, of course, but not because of you. You might want to change the date on which you celebrate your birthday, or just pretend you do not have a birthday at all.

16. *Lie*: If you do not return to the abusers on birthdays and other special dates, they will hunt you down and punish you.

The truth: This might be true if you still live in the vicinity of your abusers. It is not true if you live far away from them. They cannot just leave their lives and travel across the continent or the world to find you, and force you to travel back with them.

How they made you believe it: They played games when you were a child, during which you had to hide and they inevitably found you. They did hunt you down and punish you when you were a child if you tried to be absent from one of their events.

What to do about it: Assess carefully whether you are far enough away from the abusers. You might need to make careful plans to move away from them if they are still able to abduct you easily. If you plan to move away, make sure that no inside "reporter" reports your plans and your new location to the abusers.

17. *Lie*: If you do not tell the abusers what you have told outsiders about them, the abusers will know you have told outsiders, and will hunt you down and punish you.

The truth: If you do not report to the abusers, they will know nothing about what you have or have not told others (as long as those others were not people sent by the abuser group.)

Why they told this lie: To protect themselves from being punished for their crimes; to stop any possible exposure of their crimes as quickly as possible.

How they made you believe it: See Lie #3 under "Lies about abusers' powers", above. They triggered you to tell someone, and listened with a hidden microphone, when you were a child. Or the person you told was actually one of them. There are no hidden microphones now, the walls do not have ears, there is no all-seeing eye that will see you, and no creatures will report to the abusers if you do not report to them. Those were all lies they told to convince you that they know whatever you say. There are still people who seem safe but are actually part of the group, however.

What to do about it: Make sure that the reporter parts do not report to abusers. If you have to talk to a family member who is part of the abusive group, make sure that reporter parts are ready to lie or do not know anything you have told an outsider.

18. *Lie*: You always have to answer the phone, or something bad will happen.

The truth: Your phone is under your control. Nothing will happen if you do not answer it.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to always be accessible to them, to report about your life and any disclosures you have made, and to be told where and when to go back to them.

How they made you believe it: They set up a scenario when you were a child where you were punished by them or by someone impersonating "Satan" when you did not answer the phone.

What to do about it: Turn your phone to voicemail, get Call Display, and then you can decide whether or not to answer calls or to listen to messages.

19. *Lie*: Even on the phone, inside parts of you have to come out if they are asked for.

The truth: Your abusers do not actually know which part of you they are talking to.

Why they told this lie: They wanted to have complete control of you, and part of that control is getting out the parts who are too fearful to disobey them.

How they made you believe it: They punished you until the part they wanted would come out, so all the parts learned to come out when called out.

What to do about it: Try to avoid talking with any abusers who might call out parts. But if you do find yourself talking to them, remember that they do not know which part they are talking to, and keep a strong part out who will not obey them or is capable of lying to them when they ask questions which could get you into trouble.

20. *Lie*: You always have to answer the door and open it, even if you do not want to see the person who comes to the door.

The truth: You are an adult and your life is your own. If you have a good sturdy lock on your door, you do not have to open it to anyone you do not want to see, and they will not break the door down now.

Why they told this lie: They wanted to be able to get hold of you and re-abuse you after you moved away from them.

How they made you believe it: They might have broken down a door and punished you as a child if you locked a door against them.

What to do about it: Keep a strong lock on your door and make sure that no part of you comes out to unlock and open the door if your abusers come to the door.

Lies about what will happen if you tell

21. *Lie*: It is not safe to tell anyone what happened to you. If you tell a therapist or a doctor they will disbelieve you, say you are crazy, and lock you up in a mental institution where you will be drugged, restrained, and possibly abused. They might actually abuse you themselves.

The truth: A therapist or doctor who is not part of the perpetrator group will not personally abuse you if you tell them what happened. There is a chance that they will think you are mentally ill, lock you up in a mental hospital, and/or put you on drugs to treat your "illness." However, it is actually difficult to get admitted to a psychiatric facility these days, and even if you were admitted, you would likely be out in a few days. There is also a chance that they will believe you and give you the help that you need. It depends on how well educated they are about abuse and trauma. You will not be abused in hospital unless the group who abused you has access to that hospital. Some hospitals are safe and supportive for survivors; some are not.

Why they told this lie: They do not want their secrets discovered because their acts were crimes, and they could be tried and imprisoned for what they did to you.

How they made you believe it: When you were a child or a teenager you might have been taken to a "therapist" or a "doctor" who was actually one of the abuser group. They might have abused you in their office. They might have put you in a place you believed to be a mental institution and given you strong drugs which made you feel crazy, and you might have been abused there. This was a trick to make you think that therapists and doctors who are not part of the abuser group cannot be trusted.

(a) Many children who are being abused on an ongoing basis are taught not to go to doctors about their injuries or illnesses. Doctors attached to the abusive group treat them and often abuse them.

Parents who permit their children to be abused, or who abuse them, do not want any doctor who is not part of the perpetrator group to discover injuries, because they could then get in trouble with the law, and their children could be taken from them and put into safe foster homes. If a child is abused so badly that he or she has to be hospitalized, the parents lie to the doctors and social workers, and the child is too frightened to talk because he or she will be returned to the family.

(b) In some cases, the group may have used real doctors or therapists who were members of their group. But this does not mean that all such people belong to these groups. Most doctors and most therapists are sincere, good people who want to help. However, many of them are completely unaware that there are groups who torture and brainwash children, and some might find it difficult to believe and might think you are deluded.

What to do about it: Therapists can be enormously helpful to survivors of extreme and organized child abuse. However, not all therapists understand dissociation and people who have other "parts" or "people" inside. If possible, the therapist you choose to talk to will be recommended by someone you trust (not a family member or another unhealed survivor). Ideally, he or she should have experience both with people with different parts inside and with survivors of the kind of abuse you experienced.

However, do not tell the therapist a lot of information about the abuses you suffered until you know that your therapist is not part of the abuser group, and no inside part of you is reporting your disclosures to the abusers. If the reporters do not report, the abusers do not know you are talking to an outsider. If the reporters do report to the abusers, the group will do something to make you stop talking.

Once you are sure that no part of you is reporting your disclosures to the abusers, go ahead and talk to your therapist. You need to talk about what happened to you in order to recover from it. Your abusers will not know, and you will be safe with the therapist, as long as the therapist is not part of the abuser group.

If you have an illness or injury, it is wise to go to a medical professional to have it assessed and treated. However, do not go to the one you had in childhood unless you are 100% sure that person is safe. Most doctors are not involved with perpetrator groups. A doctor can also document any visible injuries from your abuse.

22. *Lie*: It is not safe to tell the police what happened to you. They will lock you up in prison because you are a murderer or a rapist. You will be abused when you are locked up.

The truth: A court will never jail someone for crimes in which they were forced to participate as a child. Children are not responsible for these crimes; the adults who made them take part are responsible.

Why they told this lie: They do not want their secrets discovered because their acts were crimes, and the adults could be tried and imprisoned for what they did to you.

How they made you believe it: When you were a child you may have been introduced to an abuser you did not know dressed in a police uniform, and triggered to tell this person something that the abusive group did to you. You might have been triggered to remember and tell about a crime in which you were forced to participate. The "police officer" (who was actually one of the abuser group) then abused you, said you were a murderer or a rapist, and locked you up in a place you believed to be a prison, where he or other "officers" or "inmates" abused you.

What to do about it: It is probably unwise to talk to law enforcement about what happened to you until and unless you have your memories completely clear and you are far away from where the abuse happened. The police will not lock you up or call you a criminal or abuse you themselves. However, police have to talk to the alleged abusers, who will then know you are talking about what they did and could decide to come and punish you. You might need to report your abuses in order to get funding for therapy from a crime victims' assistance fund, and other state or county benefits. This is a safe thing to do as long as you are far away from your abusers. If you do talk to the police, it is wise to have a good therapist with you or at least seeing you regularly when you do this.

23. *Lie*: There is a bomb inside you. If you talk about the abuse, the bomb will go off and kill you and anyone near you.

The truth: There is no bomb inside you.

Why they told this lie: They did not want the dirty secrets of their abuse revealed.

How they made you believe it: They did a fake operation, putting you to sleep in a place that appeared to be a hospital and having you wake up with a bandage. They might have showed you an X-ray of the bomb inside someone. That X-ray was of someone else's body, not yours. They probably used the same X-ray for all the children.

What to do about it: Help those inner people or parts involved in this memory to discover how the trick was done. Have them share with one another all parts of the memory.

24. *Lie*: There is a creature inside you. If you talk about the abuse, the creature will eat you up from inside.

The truth: There is no creature inside you.

Why they told this lie: They did not want the dirty secrets of their abuse revealed.

How they made you believe it: They might actually have put a real creature in a body cavity, then removed it when you were unconscious or had a different part of you out in the body.

What to do about it: Help those inner people or parts involved in this memory to discover how the trick was done. Have them share with one another all parts of the memory.

25. *Lie*: People you tell about the abuse and their families will be hurt or killed.

The truth: Organized abusers do not kill people who have identities in the real world; it is too risky because there would be an investigation.

How they made you believe it: When you were a child, they might have given you someone to talk to about the abuse, and then killed or pretended to kill that person.

What to do about it: Keep on talking to people you know you can trust, especially your therapist. The more you tell, the more careful the group will be not to get discovered. But get all your inside parts to agree to this so that some of them do not punish you for telling outsiders. It may be difficult to get them to agree, but while you wait for consensus, those parts whom the abusers put in charge can give new orders that everyone must obey—that you should talk and not keep the cult's evil secret.

Lies about life and death and reality

26. *Lie*: Your life will always be so unbearable that it is better to die.

The truth: The feeling that your life is unbearable is a feeling from a memory when your abusers made you feel this way through a combination of drugs and torture and verbal abuse. There may be parts inside you whose job is to give you flashbacks and body memories, especially memories of times when you were made to harm someone. If you have escaped from the abusers, your life can become much happier when these parts stop doing the jobs the abusers assigned them.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to be dead rather than telling the world about the horrible things they were doing.

How they made you believe it: They put you, as a child, in an unbearable situation, in which you were not only abused but also told repeatedly that you were worthless, a waste of space, and ought to be dead. They then instructed some parts to make you feel the feelings from this awful situation if you began to remember or talk about the abuse.

What to do about it: Find the parts who are making you have these feelings, and help them know that you are now safe and they no longer have to force you to feel this way; nothing will happen to them if they stop doing this.

27. *Lie*: If you (a particular inside person) kill the body, you will not die.

The truth: If the only body you have in this real world is killed, all parts of you will die. Even if you have a separate body from the others in your inside world, you share the same body with them in the real world outside.

How they made you believe it: They split off a part who could not feel anything in the body, probably because of anesthetic drugs. They told that part that he or she was not one of you, and did not belong to the body. They promised that part a great reward if he or she killed the body. They might have given that part a taste of the reward—strong "happy" drugs or enjoyable sex, or food after being starved. This is no different from the training of the assassins and suicide bombers trained in the Middle East with hashish to believe that they will go to paradise to enjoy sexual pleasures.

What to do about it: Again, do not believe the lies. You can test to see whether any inside being is part of the body this way: Mark something on your hand. Then ask that being to come out and see whether or not what you have marked is on its hand.

28. *Lie*: It is honorable to die for the cause of the abusers.

The truth: There is no honor in dying for the beliefs of someone who forced you to obey them when you were a child, without knowing whether those beliefs are right. The honorable thing is to find out whether those beliefs are really true and are worth giving your life for.

How they made you believe it: They pounded this idea into your head, telling you not to think, just to obey. They made you repeat their beliefs and your vows of loyalty and your promise to die for the cause. They might have told you that you are a soldier in a great army.

What to do about it: Think for yourself. You have a choice. Decide what all parts of you together believe. Do not give away your most precious possession, your life, for things you were brainwashed to believe.

29. *Lie*: Dead people can come back to life if they have special powers.

The truth: No one has the power to become alive again once they are dead, although doctors can restart the heart of someone who dies in hospital if they do it right away.

How they made you believe it: You saw someone important killed, but it was actually a trick. Then, when you saw that person alive again they told you it was because he had special powers.

What to do about it: You do not have to believe what adults told you when you were little. Ask your parts if any of them know what trick was used to make you think a person was actually killed when that person was alive later. For example, a bag of blood could be placed on top of the person and stabbed.

30. *Lie*: Eating someone's flesh and drinking human blood makes you wise and powerful.

The truth: Some occult religious groups and cannibalistic tribes believe this. If this were the case, the people who abused you would really be wise as well as powerful in the real world. Usually they are not.

How they made you believe it: You were a child when they told you this, and you believed what adults say.

What to do about it: You are now old enough to think for yourself and decide the beliefs that make sense to you, not to blindly follow what you were told.

31. *Lie*: Spiders, worms, snakes, or insects will eat you alive or bite or sting you to death.

The truth: Most of these creatures are just harmless creatures and do not eat people.

How they made you believe it: When you were very little, they put you in among these creatures and told you that if you moved or made a sound these creatures would bite you, sting you, or eat you up. You believed what adults told you.

What to do about it: Read or watch nature shows about the creatures you are afraid of so that you can learn the truth about them.

32. *Lie*: Everyone you know is linked to the abuser group and knows your every move, and will report back to your abusers.

The truth: Most people do not even know about the kind of abuse you experienced, and would be shocked to hear about it. However, some well-meaning people might not believe that people can do such evil things, and might talk to your family members, believing that you need help for such crazy thoughts. This is particularly true for children and teens. Also, especially if you are of high value to the abuser group, they may have encouraged you to move into a neighbourhood where many people were part of the group, and they may have selected friends for you who were part of the group.

How they made you believe it: They introduced you to people you thought were not part of the group, and they did turn out to be group members, who were sent to you by the group.

What to do about it: Take your time in getting to know people and do not blurt out your experiences to everyone. See whether they can be trusted with smaller disclosures, and if they can, then you can tell them more. However, if you are of high value to the cult and are being pursued in adulthood, it is wise not to speak about the organized abuse at all unless you are certain the person you are speaking to is not part of the group. Be cautious about people who rush in to befriend you if you move to a new location. Watch people for inconsistencies in behaviors or opinions, such as saying “we” instead of “I,” which would show they might be multiple. Notice whether they forget things they have previously said. If you know one person in a group belongs to a criminal cult, be suspicious of the other people in this person’s group. Satanists often cluster together. Make up your mind that being alone is not the worst thing.

Lies about who you are

33. *Lie*: If you have been made to harm some person or animal, you are evil and a perpetrator, rather than a victim.

The truth: When you were made to do this, you were in an impossible situation, and you were not there of your own free will. You would not blame the knife for what a person made it do. You were in the same situation as the knife, being used as a tool or a weapon rather than choosing to do evil, even though you might have been used by adults to accomplish evil things.

How they made you believe it: They put you in a situation where a helpless person or animal was being hurt or even killed, and they forced you to take part in this, either by physically holding you in position and moving your arm, or by threats of death to you and/or those you loved if you did not comply with their orders. If you refused, they hurt you or the other victim until you split off a part who would do what they wanted. They then told you that you were evil and “special” like them, that you belonged to them, no one else would ever want you, and that if you ever told anyone about what happened, you would be arrested and charged for the crime.

What to do about it: Although you may feel sorrow and remorse about what happened, do not believe the lie that you were responsible for it. You endured spiritual abuse by being made a part of these crimes. Get acquainted with the parts of yourself who refused to do these things, so that you can see that you as a whole person would never choose this evil. Those parts were probably discarded by the perpetrator group, and they will add strength to you when you find them.

34. *Lie*: Your abusers live inside you.

The truth: Everyone who lives inside you is a part of you and is not anyone else.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to believe they were present when you grew up and they were actually far away from you.

How they made you believe it: Organized abusers like to create parts who are supposed to be internal copies of themselves. Those parts are supposed to speak to the others in their voice, do whatever they do, and bring back memories of the abuses they have done to the other parts, particularly if the other parts disobey and try to get well.

What to do about it: If you hear the abusers' voices, those are either the voices of the internal parts who are supposed to "be" the abusers, or they are memories of the abusers replayed by parts whose job is to make you believe the abusers are inside you. You may notice that the voices always say the same thing in the same way: that is because they are "playbacks" of memories. There are other parts inside who make you hear these voices. Speak to the parts who make you hear those voices, tell them they are also hurt children like you, and they do not have to be the abusers or obey them any longer. Offer them new names and new things to do, jobs which are more interesting than impersonating abusers who cannot hurt you now. For example, parts who play tapes of scary voices can play relaxing music inside.

35. *Lie*: God hates you because of the evil you have done—or, God approves what this group does and hates you because you do not obey your orders.

The truth: Those who believe in God, the good force in the universe, believe that He does not hate people; God only hates evil itself. Many survivors, or parts of survivors, never wanted to participate in evil, but were given forced "lesser of two evils" choices. God would never reject them, and would feel only compassion for them. Others may have been tempted by rewards, or traded someone else's safety for their own. Those who believe in a good God would say that when someone is truly sorry for having participated in evil, God willingly forgives them.

Why they told this lie: They wanted you to feel you had been rejected by God so that you would only go to them and their deities (like Satan or Lucifer) for acceptance.

How they made you believe it: Some human man impersonated God or Jesus when you were a child, and told you he hated you and wanted nothing to do with you because you were evil. He might have abused you as well.

What to do about it: Recognize that this was a trick. Try to find your own spirituality by connecting to the powerful and loving force of good in the universe, who will accept you, and forgive you if you are in need of forgiveness.

36. *Lie*: If you love or get attached to people or animals, something bad will happen to them.

The truth: Nothing will happen to any person you love because you love them, either through you, by the perpetrator group, or by magic. However, the perpetrators sometimes hurt pets.

How they made you believe it: They either harmed or forced you to harm, maybe even kill, someone you loved when you were a small child. They may have held your hands around the knife that the executioner was using. Then they told you repeatedly that you are evil and that the evil in you would harm anyone you got close to. They pretended this was happening, and may have simulated harm to someone who was near you. They may have told you to kill someone psychically, then had someone fall down to make you believe you had killed that person. They may have told you that they will kill anyone you tell about what they did.

What to do about it: Do not believe the lies. Seek out safe friends. Form an attachment to your therapist if he or she is good; this attachment to a good person will help you heal from the evil you were exposed to.

37. *Lie*: You have animals, demons, monsters, aliens, or other people's spirits inside you.

The truth: Everyone inside you is a part of you, no matter how they behave or what they look like in your inner world.

Why they told this lie: They wanted to keep most parts of you afraid to disobey, so they made some parts look and sound frightening to the others, and told them to punish or frighten the other parts so they would not disobey the abusers' instructions.

How they made you believe it: When you were a young child, they used trickery to make you believe these things. They drugged you, dressed you up in a costume, and told you that you were a demon, an animal, a monster, or an alien. They may have shown you a "mirror" which was really just a picture of some creature pasted on top of the mirror, not a real mirror. They did things to your body and told you they were putting their spirit or their seed in you, so they would be inside you. These experiences were so frightening that you split off parts who believed the lies, and these parts were given instructions to growl or to say frightening things.

What to do about it: Recognize that all parts of you who appear to be something else are really just child parts, who were hurt and told lies. Help them know that you are safe now, so they can take off their costumes, stop doing the jobs they were given, and be children again.

38. *Lie*: You are the child of the devil and belong only to the abusers who worship him.

The truth: If you were born in a garage, that does not make you a car. And being born into a coven family does not make you their property. You are a free human being and can choose who you will belong to and how you behave.

How they made you believe it: Some of your parts have no memories except the ones of being in rituals or other abusive scenarios. So they believed what they were told about who they were.

What to do about it: Share the other kinds of memories, such as school and friendships, with them, and help them understand that you are all parts of one child who was horribly abused.

39. *Lie*: You are going to hell, and will be there for eternity with Satan or Lucifer, and your only choice is whether you will be hurt there or hurt others.

The truth: No one in this life knows exactly what happens after we die. Nothing you have done in this life, especially if you were forced to do it, has earned you an eternity in hell.

How they made you believe it: They may have simulated "hell" with fire and dry ice for smoke, and people in devil costumes, in a place here on earth. They hurt you and they may have given some of your parts the choice of doing the hurting rather than being hurt. They might have made a part of you believe she was Satan's or Lucifer's bride through a sexual act by a person impersonating him, and they may have made a part believe he or she was Satan's or Lucifer's child because it was split off by a rape by someone in a costume, putting in his "seed" (sperm). (This can be done to boys as well as girls.)

What to do about it: Recognize that these were all tricks done when you were a child, that "hell" was not really the afterlife but a place on earth, and that your abusers have no control over what happens after you die. Tell the parts who were forced to hurt others that they were tricked, and they do not have to take the abusers' side to avoid being harmed after death. Develop your own understanding of what happens after death rather than taking anyone's word for it.

Recognize that being raped by someone in a devil or Beast costume does not make you either his bride or his child; it makes you his victim. Disown your "husband" or "father" or false "god."

40. *Lie*: You are going to heaven, where you will have to spend eternity with God or Jesus telling you that you are bad, and punishing you.

The truth: No one in this life knows exactly what happens after we die. It is up to you whether or not you believe in God or Jesus. Know, however, that those sincere souls who believe in God or in Jesus see him as being good, kind, and forgiving, not as punishing through torture.

How they made you believe it: Different survivors' experiences differ here. You may have been sexually abused and/or rejected by a priest, or told by a priest or minister that God rejected you or that you needed to have sex with him in order for God to forgive you. Abusers might have simulated "heaven" with someone in a costume pretending to be God or Jesus. At Christmas, you might have been forced to kill what you believed was the baby Jesus. At Easter you might have been forced to participate in nailing someone to a cross. Then "God" or "Jesus" rejected you, verbally and possibly physically abused you, and may even have raped you.

What to do about it: Realize that the people who hurt you were not God or Jesus, but human beings from the abuser group. Realize that if you had to hurt or kill anyone, it was not your free choice, and that person can forgive you, and that person was not really God or Jesus. That person might or might not have really died, but you were not responsible for it.

Align yourself with the good spiritual force that is within all humanity and all of nature, and reject the evil that the abusers forced upon you. Ask forgiveness from anyone you have hurt, in your imagination if not in person.

41. *Lie*: You have special powers that can be used at any time to destroy people's lives.

The truth: You have no special powers. Even if you have some psychic ability, many people (and animals) have that and scientific studies show that it is generally not very reliable.

How they made you believe it: They may have staged a situation in which you believed you killed or harmed someone just by being with them or by using the "power" they trained you in. It was all a trick.

What to do about it: Do not be tempted by the illusion of special powers. Instead, learn how to cooperate with all your parts internally so that you can become a peaceful, healthy human being with all parts working together for recovery.

42. *Lie*: People you know and like or love will always leave you and end up hating you.

The truth: People like those who treat them kindly, and do not like those who mistreat them. However, infiltrators from the perpetrator group usually start by appearing unusually helpful and kind.

How they made you believe it: They told you repeatedly that people would abandon you. They might have allowed you to become friends with someone who then turned on you. This was a setup; the other person was obeying their orders.

What to do about it: Choose your own friends from among the people who treat you with kindness, after checking with all your insiders about whether those people are consistently kind and honest. Treat them the way you would like them to treat you, and they will not leave you or hate you.

43. *Lie*: Your brain or your heart has been replaced by that of another person or creature.

The truth: Every part of your body is the original part you were born with.

Why they told this lie: They wanted complete control over you, and they wanted you to believe that your body belonged to them rather than to you.

How they made you believe it: When you were a young child, they put you on an operating table and did a fake "operation" to replace some part of your body. They showed you the brain or heart they were supposedly putting into you. You were young enough to believe that this was possible. It is not. It was a trick.

What to do about it: Try to explain gently to the young parts that what the abusers said they were doing is actually impossible. If some inside part was watching from outside the body, that part may be able to show you how the trick was done.

44. *Lie*: You were abducted by aliens.

The truth: The people who hurt you in childhood were human beings.

Why they told this lie: They wanted to make sure no one would believe you if you talked about what really happened to you.

How they made you believe it: When you were a child, they drugged and hypnotized you, then people in costumes pretended to be aliens, and took you to a place that looked like a spaceship and abused you there. They might have used films while you were drugged so you thought the things in the films were happening to you.

What to do about it: Recognize that although you may remember something, it might not have been what your abusers said it was. Their abuses are full of tricks and lies, and this was a trick to make your memories appear unreal. Do not let this memory make you stop talking about your other memories.

45. *Lie*: You are a robot, or a computer, or a sex machine, or a killing machine, not a person. Or you have robots inside you who control your mind and body.

The truth: You are a human being, and all your inside parts are parts of that human being.

How they made you believe it: When each part was split off by the abusers' torture, it was told a lie about who or what it was, and the other parts were also told this lie.

What to do about it: Recognize that each part of you, even the ones who have believed they are these things, are human parts, and were created by you, not to serve the abusers but to keep you alive and as safe as possible. Treat the child parts like children, with kindness, and let them begin to play and learn instead of having to do the jobs they were assigned by the abusers.

46. *Lie*: You are a soldier and your duty is to obey without thinking, and never to cry, vomit, show compassion for others, or show soft emotions like fear or sadness.

The truth: It is illegal all over the world for children to be soldiers. When armies make children act as soldiers, they are violating their human rights. You are not, and should not be, a soldier. All emotions are important and positive parts of being human. In case you did not know, you are a human being and part of being human is experiencing and expressing a whole range of emotions, from joy to anger to sadness. Emotions tell us all what is going on inside us and what the truth is.

How they made you believe it: They dressed you up in a uniform and adults in uniforms who called themselves generals or commanders or captains used their power, their size, and their loud voices to frighten you and make you obey. They made you engage in training just like an adult soldier. They might have made you watch films of soldiers marching or fighting. They talked about pride in fighting for their glorious cause, and dying for it. They gave you fake promotions. They shouted at you and told you to obey, not think for yourself. They punished you if you cried, vomited, showed fear or sadness, or showed compassion for others who were being hurt.

What to do about it: Realize that it was not legal for anyone to enslave a child as a soldier. Children need to play and to discover their own interests, not to obey orders unquestioningly. Realize you are now free, and do not have to obey the people who enslaved you as a child.

Allow the parts of you who feel the softer emotions to share with the others, so that your emotions can guide you to the truth.

47. *Lie*: If you fight back against your abusers, you are a traitor and should be punished.

The truth: These people were abusers, and it is right to fight against abuse. If you fought, this showed you were courageous, not a traitor.

How they made you believe it: They punished you whenever you fought against them or refused to do what they told you to do.

What to do about it: Reclaim all the parts of you who fought back, and use their energy now to fight for your healing and to stop child abuse.

48. *Lie*: If you cry or have soft emotions like sadness or compassion, you are weak.

The truth: All emotions are messages to tell you what is going on. Sadness means you have been hurt or suffered a loss; compassion means you care for someone else who is being hurt, and what is happening to them is wrong. Crying is a healthy way to release sad or hurt feelings so you can heal.

How they made you believe it: They punished you severely if you cried or showed emotions like sadness or compassion.

What to do about it: Reclaim your right to cry and to feel what you feel. Recognize that no one will punish you for your feelings now. If any parts of you punish you internally for crying, explain to them that crying is not wrong, that things are different now, and that you will not get into trouble from the abusers if you cry now. Accept and care for the inside parts of you who feel these emotions. Emotions are an important part of your being. Their purpose is to let you know what you need.

49. *Lie*: All parts of you must stay in their assigned "places" in your inner world or structure.

The truth: No one outside your own head knows where your parts are inside, and once you remove parts from their assigned places and move them to places where they can heal, no one outside you will know where they are.

Why they told this lie: They wanted it to be easy for them or future abusers to find each part they had trained.

How they made you believe it: They trained a part of you when you were a very young child with a model of your inner world or structure, to put every part in its place. They told you that everyone must stay in his or her place. They may have punished your parts when they were found somewhere they were not allowed to be. They may have located some parts at certain locations in the body so that a touch on those spots would bring them out.

What to do about it: You can make all kinds of changes to your inner world, and your abusers will never know what changes you have made, as long as no part of you tells them. You can put in healing places, places for play, and places for learning.

50. *Lie*: All parts of you were created only to do the jobs assigned to them by their designers, and if they do not do these jobs they will have no purpose.

The truth: The abusers (who may have called themselves "designers" or "creators" or "manufacturers") did not "create" any of your parts, they only split the existing child into more and more parts by means of abuse, torture, and terror. All of you are parts of one person who was not allowed to develop his or her own interests and abilities.

How they made you believe it: When a part of you was newly split off, that part would not remember what happened to the ones who existed before it, so it believed what the abusers told it about who it was and why it was there, especially because of fear.

What to do about it: Let all your inside parts know that they are human, free them from the jobs they were assigned, and allow them to choose new jobs which reflect their own healthy and positive interests and abilities.

These are some of the most common lies that mind controllers tell their victims. It will empower you to know that they are lies, and you do not have to believe them any longer. Deep down inside you, when you share information and emotions among all your parts, you know the truth. You now have choices that you did not have in childhood. If there are other things your abusers told you, you need to question these things, and consult with your inside parts to discover the truth. As you do this, you will regain your freedom and control of your own life.

SECTION III

BONDS AND BETRAYAL

Why and how they prevent bonding throughout life

Wendy Hoffman

There are two kinds of people in the world—those who have had a mother's love and those who have not.

Having a mother's love seems to be fundamental to having a certain assurance. The expanse of life is so vast and overwhelming that infants need mothers to ease them into it. The deprivation can lead to a long insecurity. Despite the physical pain of torture, degradation, humiliation, being forced to do evil to others—despite all this, being motherless is probably the hardest to bear.

The mother-loved seem to walk through life engulfed in a cloud of being valued and cherished. Those who were deprived of this basic attachment, through no fault of their own, have to fight for self-assurance and to eschew a sense of rootlessness.

Mind controllers have to eliminate the sense of primary attachment in order to gain control of the infant's mind. If the mind controllers are to have the perfect specimen, then they must have a *tabula rasa* (blank slate) from birth or almost from birth. Mind control can be imposed on children and even older children, but infants from multi-generational families are their best bet, because the mind controllers have access to the child from conception, and can prevent the bond that knits together the infant's disparate states.

Bonding permeates all aspects of life, like self-esteem. This essay is about why and how satanic cult perpetrators attempt to prevent its child members from bonding.

Pre-natal and newborn mind control

It is difficult for people to believe that others would deliberately separate children from their mothers physically, emotionally, and spiritually. It is even more difficult to believe that they would start working on fetuses still in the mother's womb. Specific programmers begin the electroshock in the sixth month of pregnancy. They place electrodes on the pregnant woman's skin and thereby blast the fetus. The mother loses contact with the unborn child because of the physical pain on her tender, stretched skin. The programmers have sowed the seeds of an attachment disorder even before the child is born. The effect is somewhat similar to that of the mother who drinks and uses drugs excessively or who becomes seriously ill during the pregnancy. The destructive maneuver of electroshock on the fetus is repeated at intervals throughout the remaining three months of the pregnancy. Persons destined for leadership positions receive this barbaric treatment. Those are the unfortunate individuals the leaders believe must be utterly controlled.

Some mothers, even at young ages, will have insight into the programmers' purpose. Some might even unconsciously remember their own experiences before they were born. Those mothers will stay connected to the child despite the pain. Programmers cannot tell whether the mother has remained connected. Therefore, they cause the infant physical pain after its birth by doing something like pricking its foot. The baby will cry. If it accepts comfort, it is bonded. If it cannot be comforted, it is not bonded. If the infant is bonded, he or she cannot hold a leadership position and might not be allowed to live.

People scheduled to have secondary roles in the cult do not all get this pre-birth torture. But shortly after birth, the perpetrators break the beginning bond with all cult infants. The infants will need comforting in myriad ways and the mothers will be restrained from giving it. A mother will be forced recurrently to starve her baby and render it sleep-deprived. The cult leaders then have the raw material they need, for this child's mind will be far easier to shatter and the child will be more prone to have a trauma relationship with the handler.

Trauma bonds are different from affection bonds. Trauma bonds come from desperation and deprivation, not love and abundance. This first step of deception has been completed. It will be sealed by the time the child is five years old. The emotional pain can shatter the heart. Now the child will have a dissociated brain and a dissociated heart.

In healing from this aspect of this abuse, reach out to these suffering fetuses and newborns within your mind, hold, feed, and comfort them. Tell them you love them. All this is done mentally. Make sure they stay warm and not dehydrated or hungry. Rock and sing to them. Keep them away from mean or toxic people, if possible. Eventually, they will be incorporated into the wholeness of the brain. They have been waiting for the rest of the internal system's acknowledgement all these years.

The bonds between infants and parents, especially mothers, are broken in cult families when infants' emotions are the hottest and most inflexible. While babies are still in their cribs, master programmers set up scenarios to teach them that their mothers do not love or care about them. For example, a handler hurts the child physically, and the mother is forced to walk by the crib without looking at the child who has been starved and is dehydrated and crying. Or the mother feeds a sibling while the starving infant watches.

Children hold on to intense feelings, especially those of rejection and abandonment, which can exist throughout life. When this kind of rejection is repeated often, the child will be wary, reluctant, and later unable, to bond with the mother. Rage then replaces bonding. The drive to be close to people can be strong enough to overcome some of these fearful, angry emotions temporarily, but the fear and anger are likely to surface, along with a conviction that people do not, and will never, care. Survivors might get close to some people, but not thoroughly close. In addition, further programming throughout their lives makes them unable to relax fully with another human being. They can often relate peacefully to animals, however.

All the survivor can do during the healing process is be aware of these parts, talk with them, listen to them, offer them comfort and, if possible, safety from perpetrators. Try to find out, meaning let them or an internal witness tell you how this disruption occurred. You can see your mother as forced to reject you rather than as choosing to reject you, and as a powerless victim trapped in a web of evil, at a time when there were not resources or therapists to help.

In another world, your original mother might have been able to love you. That anger from manufactured rejection can be turned into a healthy self-love, looking to the future while understanding the hideous past.

Cult children are taught how to kill themselves. In case these children do not follow the rules or have minds that cannot be split into pieces, programmers have to arrange for their possible termination. Programmers give mothers the job of helping train their children to attempt suicide. The children are quick to understand that their mothers want them dead. Adah Sachs wrote an article about infanticidal attachment in the book she co-edited, *Forensic Aspects of Dissociative Identity Disorder* (2008). She points out that you cannot switch off bonding. If the parent wants the infant dead, the infant will try to accommodate the parent's wishes, most likely, in an effort to survive. This understanding seals the lack of attachment further. Ironically, mothers might participate in instructing their children to kill themselves in order to save their children's lives. Children who have not mastered the basic rules of cult life are usually expendable. For some survivors, knowing that parents or leaders want them dead is enough to stop suicidal ideations and plans. Why kill yourself because your enemies want you to?

Because life is particularly difficult for survivors, it helps to find one bit of pleasure each day. The pleasure could be in nature, food, animals, hot showers, books, music, sports, and possibly another human, should there be a kind and loving one in your life. Humans who are kind when in their ordinary life personas but not, of course, in their cult personas will not be sufficient. Find a way to allow comfort and pleasure to interrupt the horrors even if the reprieve of pleasure is for a short time.

The sacrificed

Survivors of mind control grow up in a culture that labels some as expendable and disposable. That means their lives are not valued. Leaders can decide when they will die. They can be murdered for disobedience, perhaps for trying to escape, though in general children raised to be expendable do not have the fight left in them to be rebellious. Usually, they are murdered at one of the prescribed ages, such as six or thirteen. Six and sixteen are more common for females; thirteen, eighteen, or thirty-three for males. Their deaths are usually in front of large gatherings—during high-holiday or specially arranged rituals. Some awful lie will be attached to their deaths. For example, children who loved these victims will be taught not to love or those loved ones will be murdered, and other children are told these people were killed because they were traitors, so they should not be a traitor.

It is all orchestrated. Children from birth to about six years old are routinely deprived of love. Then, as if magically, they receive a friend. The cult leaders carefully choose a friend from among their population of sacrificial victims bred for this purpose. Suddenly, for the children who will survive, life is quasi-normal. Someone loves them. There is companionship. They can share with another child and tell their secrets, though they do not know the hidden-life secrets, already well buried and almost irretrievable. Life becomes sweet, worthwhile. They bloom as a person. For about a year. The duration can vary, but at the end of the allotted time, the child who has tasted love is forced to participate in the murder of his or her friend. Naturally, that makes the child afraid to love and guilt-ridden. A particularly compelling account of this cruelty is Stella Katz's "For Miranda," in Alison Miller's *Healing the Unimaginable, Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control* (London: Karnac Books, 2012, p. 211).

The mind control message is that love is not allowed, that the cult leaders will murder any person or animal you love. Is this not the worst betrayal, worse even than not knowing your personal history or what your mind is doing at any given moment? To lose the ability to love or to be afraid to love is greater than even losing the ability to think in an organized way because of the mind control and recurrent concussions administered all through childhood to some. To be afraid to love strips people of humanity, even if the fear of loving is to protect beloveds.

If you were born into a criminal mind control type cult, you have to ask whether there is anything in life that is not betrayal.

The victims' mothers grieve. How do you compensate the mothers for what grew in their bodies? The siblings become more insecure. Will it happen to them? Will they be next? What did their sibling do wrong? Why wasn't I nicer? They swim in grief and guilt, as do some of the parents. *What could I have done to protect?* they ask themselves.

This is a world where some are not deemed worthy of life, where freedom counts for nothing. Sadness bursts in this world. People here would have wanted more. If some person or animal known to a cult-raised child becomes ill or injured, or dies, the child is told it is his or her fault. This cements the message that it is not safe to love anyone.

Survivors have to steel themselves; otherwise the loss will eat their leg off. Growing up in an evil world can take away hope. The goodness in these "expendable" victims gave hope to the victims who knew them. Now those victims believe that to love will cause death. Survivors become numb, sometimes only feeling their grief and fear at 3 a.m.

People have different ideas about the afterlife and no one knows for certain. It is possible that the special friend who was murdered young protects you during your life, places a protective shield over your body so that you do not feel the injuries as gravely as you would have otherwise. That has been my experience.

As they live their lives as survivors, some remembering what has occurred, many not knowing—as they proceed with their lives, they notice in themselves a hypersensitivity to loss, abandonment, and rejections. Those who have lost these innocent loved ones carry that pain everywhere. When a fickle friend drops them for the new person on the block, they suffer enormously. When their work is rejected or they are fired, the sting goes deep. The foundation of their lives is loss, and that makes a huge difference to how you develop. The survivors of the "expendables" often gravitate to those who will not live long, who are physically or psychologically vulnerable. It is as if their grief searches for an object. Those with pre-natal programming may find abandonment almost impossible to deal with.

Again, knowing the source of these emotions paves the way for healing them. It was not your fault that your friend was murdered. That murder is not sufficient reason to stop you from loving in the future. The more you understand this, the more you can release unearned guilt and try to relate to others in love. This is not your guilt. It is someone else's.

There is much unrequited love in survivors. That love can be given to yourself as a first act in nurturing yourself back into being who you are and are meant to be. When you are young, you have no way of knowing who you really are, but, as an adult, you can figure it out.

You can take a close look at yourself with the purpose of finding qualities you admire. Forget about surface qualities or even intelligence and talents. Go deeper than genetic gifts. Look at what you have done with yourself to have emerged from this background with humanity, strength and *the ability to think*. Your therapist or supportive friends can help you look deeply into your own soul and pull out the qualities that lead to good self-esteem. There are qualities in everyone that can create self-admiration and a healthy pride. You can learn how to mother yourself. Mothers are meant to make their children feel secure, loved, and capable, with self-esteem the opposite of what happens during mind control preparations.

Survivors, as adults, can do this for themselves.

Good people

In every nook of the world, good people exist. They might be the minority, but they are there. There are rescuers who always have an eye out for how to help people; there are people who grew up in wholesome families and want to share the enormous gift they received of having decent parents; there are benign people with good hearts who want to help everywhere. There are those who admire courage and those who fight to improve and repair the world. There are people who naturally generate wellbeing and love.

Accepting good people into our lives is a challenge for cult torture survivors. We have been programmed to love only our handlers, who control and oversee all aspects of our lives. We do not necessarily love the malicious handlers on our own. We are taught under torture and drugs to transfer our love from a true object such as the child who was sacrificed to the next person assigned to control us. It is no wonder that a handler is often commanded to be a spouse. And when a person from the army of the good enters our lives, we are programmed to reject that person.

Someone good will enter your life when you are a child and an adult and even in old age. This occurrence is an opportunity to find the childhood memory of the one person who loved you in childhood, if you do not have that memory already. You can still bask in that child's love even if they forced you to participate in that soul's death. You tasted love no matter how it ended and no matter that it was prearranged. You know what love is. It can be sifted out from its surrounding tragedies. A good soul touched your life. You were blessed.

The sacrifice certainly constrains the child's ability and willingness to love, but it is not that one-dimensional. The child basked in love for a year. The threat is real, but so is the experience of love's strength.

Children who are programmed not to bond are also placed repeatedly in traumatic situations. Ironically, trauma creates its own kind of intense bonding. War survivors attest to this phenomenon. Their connections to others who share their life-threatening experiences, their sense that only other such survivors can understand, create a bond. Survivors have both an undercoating of not being able to bond and the life experience of extreme bonding—a bonding that untraumatized people probably do not experience and perhaps understand.

Now you might be amazed at what seems to you the fuss normal people make, and, in your opinion, compared to what you have been through, about what seems like nothing much. Remember, however, that normal people think and feel with their whole minds whereas, until you are integrated, experiences in you are encapsulated and felt in only designated sections of the mind. Even small disappointments and hurts are more painful when felt with the whole mind all together.

You can betray your mind control, programmers, handlers, and, unfortunately, your family, know your past and emerge a free person who accepts love and is not programmed to push it away. You can love your child or children. You can finally love yourself. You can stop this dance with betrayal and enter life and become acquainted with freedom and love and with what others consider normal life. They did not have to fight for it with everything in them. You do.

Love becomes a choice. Does one stay paralyzed in fear or go forward to give love to someone else and to receive it? As adults, survivors can go back to those feelings of being afraid to love, see the lies and set-ups and, one hopes, undo the taught and irrational fears.

How they keep you with them

If you were born into a generational criminal mind control cult, your mother might have left you to be sexually abused by other relatives, who may have raped and drugged you; your father might have sold you to scientists who experimented on you; you might have been gang-raped frequently, and you might have been mind-controlled so that you do not know your history or what any one part of your mind is doing at any time. Programmers usurp all aspects of your life and humanity so that you cannot choose a career, or even where to live. They dictate your life and you do not know it because of the mind control these same perpetrators put into you. It does not matter that it is not legal. They have gotten away with it for hundreds of years, and duplicity has increased since families allowed the Nazi scientists and doctors such as Mengele and, now, newer ones to experiment on their children. And currently there is technology to enhance mind control procedures.

Cult children turned adults but still with child parts inside tend to love too much or not enough. They still respond on an infantile level because they have many unhealed, needy infants inside. If they are afraid to love, they may become closed, crisp, withholding adults. If they let their huge infantile need for love be expressed, they will find that partners and friends can never give enough to soothe that need, and they may become ashamed, or blame those who will not or cannot give what a mother should have given years earlier. Then, as they age, they learn to hold back and not give too much, because it will not be reciprocated. Most people have not lived through the heart of evil, or perhaps have had one bad thing happen to them and then strove to avoid any mention of evil in anyone's life. Unlike most normal people, cult people know first-hand what humans are capable of.

From the beginning, survivors have been programmed to believe that their families and cult groups are the only places where they will be accepted. If you come from a cult family and the family members have not healed and are programmed, if you want to be free, it is necessary to leave your family. To leave, survivors have to overcome their fears and this malevolent programming. It might be necessary for them even to abandon younger siblings. The difficulty in bonding makes it easier to leave but it can still be very painful, if not excruciating. Sometimes, a younger sibling will contact the escaped survivor, but the escapee should probably not respond. It could be a setup. The sibling might have been programmed to lure the escapee back home.

Marriage

Many cult marriages are pre-arranged, and people marry other cult victims who also have difficulty bonding. The miseries this abuse causes can seem never-ending. Some cult victims manage to marry a non-cult spouse, and they have a better chance of growing into a close supportive relationship. But the innocent partner will be confused and bewildered and might not be sufficiently protective.

Some people manage to escape their cult families at a young enough age that they can marry unabused mates whom they choose and have children with. They then had a bad beginning but a good ending to their lives, though they will present challenges to their partners through their fear and rage.

As survivors allow themselves to become close to another person, the pain of early disappointments might arise. It helps to have a knowledgeable-about-mind-control, compassionate mate who encourages communication and saying what is held back out of fear. That person can help you break down the walls when your fears become a high tide. You also can drop your mask and be real in that person's presence. As you heal and perhaps bond for real, whirls of pain will swim out of your body. That is the healing process. It interrupts stasis and forces the putrid out. The softness in you that had been frozen can defrost and lead you to the right people. You can feel your heart and mind for the first time.

If you are terrified of bonding with another human, start with an animal. If a dog is too demanding, begin with a cat. Animals can see essentials. They might help you. They know about love, especially if you feed them.

It is unclear whether the deepest fissures in the bonding process can be healed. If people can retrieve the memories of the early programming not to bond, which happens very young, they may be able to heal and erase those scars. Some people can make a commitment to love and even marry. Some need quiet, space around them, and an inordinate amount of solitude to manage the many painful memories each part of their brain is dealing with constantly.

Coming out of this kind of abuse, people often display extremes of behavior. Some become selfish and will do little or nothing for other people. Others work too hard on relationships and/or buy too many gifts for others. Mind control programming forms some of these traits but others are from natural, inherent tendencies. As survivors become healthier, some unhealthy friendships lose their power.

People who have not been loved or properly loved can be hungry and fierce. They can grasp at the possibility of love too hard. Unconsciously, survivors may gravitate to people like their family members. Here is where everyday psychology steps in. Perhaps they want to win over someone with the same deficiencies as their parents or siblings, and make that person more lovable and capable of loving. That is a common and known disaster course. Or, more likely, they were simply mind-controlled to love an undesirable and harmful person.

This kind of prescribed bonding with enemies and simultaneous and consequential pushing away of good people dominate cult members' lives until they untangle the mind control programs and free themselves. You have swung from fierce bonding with enemies to lukewarm bonding with good people. The first part of your life was removed from your control. The second part contains free will. That means you can choose whom to love and even whether to love.

Parenthood

Eventually, children are born to the grief-stricken victim who remains in these criminal cults. Again, that is how cults work. They need something to motivate the victim to be compliant. Having a baby to love ignites the feelings of comfort and security that the original friend brought into the survivor's life. Even a pet can provoke the early knowledge of love. Having a child or pet also creates increased anxiety. You want to protect this being at any cost. You also want to protect your own ability to love.

Many people who cannot bond and cannot love or who overlove can bond to their own newborns. These newborns are often taken away, sometimes the moment they are born. This theft leaves wounds in the mother and child. The leaders of these cults usually leave one child in the biological mother's care, but only so that they have another weapon to control the parent and make her afraid to leave. New mothers sometimes hate their newborns from the moment of their birth, if not before. These mothers realize that their babies will keep them trapped in these mind control cults.

Most survivors unfortunate enough to have had children find it impossible to leave their children or child. They often wait until their children are adults. It is unclear whether it is better for the children if the parent stays in an active cult situation with them. Parents who leave children could possibly return to rescue the children later after they have healed outside this family and cult group. If they stay, they will have to do terrible things to their own children. If they leave, someone else will be forced to do horrible things to these children. The people who keep contact with unsafe family members are usually among those who are re-programmed repeatedly.

Some people leave their families and never really find new families. Families can be insular and not welcoming of newcomers, especially newcomers with such a past. Still, it is far better to be out of a cult family, no matter what the consequences or loneliness. And many people are integrated into other families.

Workplace relationships

The work world can trigger left over feelings from one's family of origin. If bosses and administrators are fair and respectful, they can unknowingly play a strong role in helping survivors heal. They can help teach survivors that people in authority can be just and care about them as individuals. The beginning feelings of the ability to bond can start in a work environment with trust in, and respect for, a boss or supervisor. But if superiors and the overseeing administration are unfair and use people as pawns, for example, overworking and underpaying them while they take the big salaries and bonuses for themselves, or criticizing and micromanaging, then survivors might experience rage and become uncooperative. This kind of work experience can make them rebellious, which is not necessarily bad. If they can object to, and eventually break away from, a disrespectful, hostile work environment, they might eventually be able to break away from programmers, handlers, and abusive families.

When survivors enter the work world, they might automatically treat people who are lazy and not doing their lesser jobs in a cult way, which means abusively and rudely, without even realizing it. The work environment is a place where these actions and attitudes can be brought to awareness promptly and, one hopes, corrected.

Therapy

As survivors grow to want healing, many enter therapy. A major aspect of therapy is learning to bond with your therapist. This is why it is so important for the chosen therapist to be a healthy and wholesome person who does not use people. Survivors have had enough of false bonding with the deficient and sick. There is an element of falsity even with good therapy transferences. A therapist is not seen as a real human being with problems and illnesses like everyone else in the world. It is not a give-and-take relationship. But its one-sidedness can be healing and address the survivor's wounds and deficits in the hothouse type of environment of therapy needed to cure the scars left by grave insults.

The more the bonding issues heal, the freer emerging cult survivors become to have a fuller life, be comfortable with themselves, and become who they were meant to be before the insidious programming and mind control.

When you love, it can hurt your heart, but some pains are worth it. Think of them as birth pains, hard to bear but necessary. We are not really human unless we love. We cannot really parent, or even own a pet, without love in our hearts. It behoves us to undo the programming not to love and join the human race. Grief can overwhelm the human heart, but so can genuine love.

Programmers depend on your remaining unattached and unbonded. Defy them. On the other hand, if you choose to live alone and as a recluse, that is your prerogative and privilege. You deserve to live exactly as you choose.

A drop of color in a glass of water changes the color of the water. Just a drop. I can see from writing about much of my life that my family was trapped under evil. My grandfather was once a scared little boy in Galicia until they forced him to decide to be evil, this grandfather who attempted to destroy so many young minds. My mother was like a firefly closed in a glass jar with only one hole punctured for air. Even when the firefly changed colors fast, it remained lidded and caught. My sister was afraid. My legal father was still a child doing whatever he could not to be a victim. This next generation is under the lid of this oppression. My son and I had a hostile relationship. Now I can see that he was afraid I would be killed, and I was afraid he would be killed, should we show our love. We protected each other by not being close. That's more loving than spending all our holidays together.

I had a year of a boy's love. Sixty years later, I had a friend who nurtured. And another friend who cared enough about me to point me to a therapist who cared that I become free. I had three dogs who loved me. That was all I had. Drops in an expanse but enough to fight the doom that has oppressed my life. A small amount of love can undo what man has contrived for generations, from the beginning of time. Love is that potent.

Family relationships*

Wendy Hoffman

In this whole field of horrendous abuse and evil, the kicker is family relationships. Criminals like the Nazis in Nazi Germany, by contrast, are reputed to have had good family relationships even while they murdered in the cities, towns, and concentration camps. The family relationships in criminal cults, however, are not warm and friendly, except on the surface.

In these families, there are two lives going on simultaneously: the hidden life of tortuous mind control administered in electroshock chairs with drugs and additional forms of torture, secret outdoor and indoor rituals, and inner parts that on command emerge to do an assignment. There is every kind of abuse and emotional, mental, physical, sexual perversion possible. There is also soul-abuse. All that is going on underneath.

On the surface is ordinary life with work and school, family meals, weekends with outings, parties, shopping, films, maybe golf, tennis, or swimming. There's the adults cleaning the house and doing the laundry, the children's sports and music recitals and homework and projects. Cult families do what normal families do in normal life.

---

* Versions of this essay and the following two were presented at the Survivorship Ritual Abuse and Child Abuse 2016 Conference "Stop Mind Control and Programs", in Oakland, CA.

How do you segue from the worse kind of abuses and torture to an innocent and seemingly normal kind of everyday life? It takes serious mind control starting in infancy not to know the other life. Not only do the abusers usurp your mind and capacity to think and be yourself, they deprive you of a family.

Most survivors of criminal satanic cults do not know how bad their families are. Many idealize them. "I had the best childhood." "My parents loved me." "Life was so peaceful." "My parents cared about me," they say. They recite from their programming to love their families, to idealize their perpetrators.

It is not that they are lying. Some have been trained from birth not to know what is going on, to be blind to reality, not to ever see the whole picture. There are the secret mind control and the innocuous everyday life. Never were the two meant to join hands and live in the light together. There is the family life according to the front person and what society is allowed to see, and life according to the insiders who experienced it.

If there are mind control and torture occurring in what might be called sub-life, this experience has to bleed into everyday life. Parents might have different alters to accomplish hidden cult tasks, but those deeds and feelings resonate in everyday life. The separation between the two lives is never 100%. In addition, some parents will have become "conscious", which means that they will have a partial memory of their secret cult life. They may know consciously how they have treated their children in programming sessions and rituals. Their emotions from one of their roles will leak through into their other roles.

Some relatives are allowed to show kindness, perhaps a grandparent, so that the leaders can threaten to kill that one person if you try to run away, and use that person as someone your inside parts report to about whether you are about to relocate or what you have disclosed to your therapist.

If you have not had adequate family relationships, to recover from this horrendous abuse is to know what your real family life was—perhaps is—like, both the hidden and known parts of it. It is a bit like being a citizen of a country, growing up to believe your country is righteous and fair and discovering later its terrible and criminal abuses of human rights. Organizations created to stop family abuses do not know what happens in these families. Even the victims do not consciously know what occurs in their unfortunate lives.

Incest

Memories of family involvement often start with incest memories. My memories began with bizarre physical abuse—my mother's peeing on me—followed quickly by sexual abuse memories. Incest exists in the normal world, whereas organized criminal abuse with drugs and electroshock usually does not. Incest in cult families can be extensive and involve many relatives. There is also enforced sexual abuse with the family pet. Cult leaders mandate sexual abuse of children for many reasons. They intend to destroy children's self-esteem so that they will start to think of themselves as non-human objects designed to do others' bidding. Incest inserts a rift in family relationships and creates intense jealousy between the incestuous abuser's spouse and the child victim and between siblings. The wronged spouse might take revenge on the child victim, sometimes killing that child or coming close. Incest occurs frequently in families of ordinary life and has similar consequences. But, in cult families, it also begins the preparations for using children as unpaid pornography and prostitution servants for the Mafia groups. Incest teaches these children that their only worth is their use as sex objects. For some satanic criminal cult survivors, there are probably porno flicks floating around the internet today. And snuff porno flicks in which someone is really or supposedly killed.

Children have reporters in them. Those are parts not known to the rest of the internal system. They report everything that happens to them. They can be called out or they can report spontaneously. Parents are told that if they do not sexually abuse their children, their children will be skinned and sacrificed. With the parent watching, the programmers question the children's reporter-parts to ascertain whether they were sexually abused. If the children say they have not been sexually abused, they may or may not be tortured and murdered. The whole thing might be a manipulative lie. But there's no guarantee. Leaders need robots who hate themselves. Parents sexually abuse their children in some cases to save those children's lives. While in a different personality, the same parents might sexually abuse to possess their children and manifest their own hatred.

Love in cult families

Wendy Hoffman

There can be love in these families—deep, genuine, protective love. Here is the love: Some cult parents who are prisoners fight as hard as they can to overcome their mind control, love and protect their children. They have a whole foundational level of destruction within themselves, and still they attempt to be good parents. Surely their children feel the vibrations of that love. Those children may be more loved than even normal children who grow up in ordinary normal families where the parents do not have to fight with everything in them to protect and honor their children. If you are a survivor, you might have had one or two such parents. Or you might be such a parent.

But not all parents are like that. Some, many, children are left with the hidden knowledge that their parents hate and resent them and wish them dead, while, in ordinary life, these same parents go through the motions of being good parents. Unconsciously, children seethe at the hypocrisy.

Love can grow in thick darkness. That love can have the deepest roots. It might not be noticeable, but it is there. It shows when parents mess up a little of their children's programming. When they drop hints about the truth of their lives in normal life. In some cult families, the supposed parent might not be biological. A parent can state in an offhand way who the biological parent is, or whether the child the adult is raising is a biological one.

Those parents might just be blabbermouths, or they might truly want their child to know the truth. They might want their children to know the truth to hurt them, or to help them know reality. For example, my legal father told me who my biological father was. I had thought my legal father was my biological father.

Perhaps the ultimate sign of love is when parents arrange for their children to escape from this criminal world and live far away with a safe family. Cult parents can be like the mother who stood before King Solomon and preferred her child not to be destroyed even if it meant giving up custody of that child. They resemble the parents who lived during the Holocaust and put their children on the transport trains to freedom, not knowing whether they would ever see or find them again and thinking they would not—all so that their children might be safe and live. That's love. Love flourishes in war. Trapped survivors of satanic cult abuse are constantly at war.

Amazingly, love in these cults can also look like leaving your child behind and escaping yourself. The model of escaping into freedom may give a more important message than remaining and suffering and being forced to abuse your children and other people's children. Even grandparents are forced to abuse. I began one of my memoirs with a scene about being forced to abuse my grandchildren.

Family-hunger, planted therapists, and romances

Wendy Hoffman

Some survivors who understand and acknowledge their prior family life, if that family life was horrendous, often remain family-hungry. When you do not have a family for support and love, you are essentially an orphan. Some cult victims are orphans but they do not realize it until they engage in recovery. Many dangers float around the state of being family-hungry. One of the most pernicious dangers of being in this state is the vulnerability to being dominated by cult-planted therapists and handlers. Survivors in general tend to become over-dependent on their therapists. No one else, usually, has heard their stories or understood them. With planted therapists, as with families, two simultaneous relationships exist. There is the everyday, normal life relationship where survivors' front people think the therapist is interested and helping them, and the secret relationship where the insider victims are being closed down, and memories erased from their minds. The hidden relationship is close to murder.

Say you have reported, without your front person's knowledge, to your handler that you are about to have, or are having, significant or break-through memories. From their perspective, you have to be stopped and they will erase your mind to accomplish this. You might get a phone call, probably in the middle of the night or early morning.

This caller will use code words to trigger obedient, robotic inside parts. The caller will call out your memorizers to record the information in your brain and do something like give that part of you a phone number and time to call one of their planted cult therapists, who might not be local. Your front person will know nothing of this conversation. You go to where the voice on the phone tells you to go—to the planted therapist's office.

There might be a hidden black electroshock chair and a team there to program you, depending on their resources and how much of a threat they consider you to be. Then you will be referred to a local planted therapist, medical, Christian, secular, new age, energy specialist—whoever is available and has time in their schedule. The planted therapists are usually paid well, in addition to what they charge you for being mind-controlled. You will end up in what you think is therapy with that person. From there you will have extensive torture sessions to close down any memories of your cult secret life and not to remember that this therapist is a double agent. All while your front person loves and is devoted to the therapist and does not have a clue what is really going on. Your front person will not know that he or she was programmed to love this therapist. But there is one clue. You feel, and possibly journal, chronic anger that never seems to quiet down or resolve. Why should it resolve? This team of double agents is in the process of taking your mind away yet again.

In addition to electroshock, other forms of torture, and drugs, double agents use hand signals, show playing and Tarot cards and other visual cues, and use other nonverbal means and code words to give you close down signals. To the programmed front person, they appear caring and devoted and to give the kind of devotion and acceptance that has not been in your life previously. To the inside parts being worked over, they are vicious and malevolent.

Cult adult survivors long for love, and they also live in normal society in which people get married and start new families. Most marriages are arranged. The two victims usually prefer this marriage to being tortured and murdered. Some marriages occur for social and political reasons and are supposed to look good to the outside world. Some marriages are for punishment, especially if one of the spouses is not obedient enough. Most survivors have handlers to watch them throughout their lives or until they become conscious or trusted. Before marriage, a family member is often the handler. Then the spouse is often the handler. A political leader might have a spouse who is that person's handler. With a spouse as a handler, there is little or no privacy. The handler-spouse does not have to be as bright or ambitious as the watched spouse. The handler-spouse simply needs to know all that goes on in that person's life and know the code words, signals, and triggers that control the victim. The front person of the watched spouse has no idea that the other spouse is a handler. Handler is a new term from military/political circles, and is not necessarily what these cults call this role. There are most likely other, newer terms. Some are made to marry pedophiles who are not cult members. Some cults may allow someone to marry outside their group but keep their affiliations with the group. Other survivors rebel and marry an outsider and get away with it. If a survivor is single, the cult may send a boyfriend or girlfriend—or even just a friend—to get close to the survivor and become the handler.

And so we may be left in a family-hungry state, craving family love, thinking we love our perpetrator families, being bonded to enemies, and hating ourselves and not knowing why our lives turned out so awful. This is all mind control.

Therapists' responses to survivors: countertransference and attunement

Alison Miller

I would like to separate out some particular kinds of responses which are common in therapists treating survivors of extreme and organized abuse. If you are a therapist, you may recognize some of these in yourself, and if you are a client, you may recognize them in your present or past therapist.

Part 1: Countertransference

The term "transference" refers to the way in which a client may project to a therapist things from a previous relationship, for example with a parent. Therapists are expected to recognize this, and gently help the client see what is going on without taking it personally.

A related term, "countertransference," has been used to mean many things, but its primary meaning has been a therapist's reaction to a client's transference. I am going to tell you a story regarding my experience with one client, whom I only saw once for an extended session. I do not know whether she had been victimized by an organized group; if she had, she was not aware of it. But the way she treated me illustrates a very strong negative transference, and my response shows my countertransference.

The abusive client

She called several times over a period of weeks. She was seeking a therapist for early childhood trauma. She was living on a disability pension because her trauma history made her unable to function. She now spent all day, every day, writing about her suffering. Each message said that she was "in a regressed state" when she called. She did not know whether or not to come and see me. We swapped messages for a while. She had a lot of questions for me about how I worked. I offered to see her for half price. One time she reached me, asked a couple of her questions, and made an appointment. Then she cancelled it, saying she had more questions. Eventually, I suggested she come in for a free meeting in which she could ask her questions face to face, and she agreed to do this, and showed up.

She said she'd been in therapy for thirteen years with various therapists. Some of them had triggered her into continuous flashbacks by going into the trauma prematurely. Others had given her advice she was unable to follow, which did not feel realistic for her, such as to go for a walk every day. One had "feelings" for her but kept on seeing her for years after acknowledging this. One of the therapists had worked with her inner child parts, but she had been upset that he talked with the parts and not with her, even though she was present for these conversations. Her most recent therapist had been a wonderful, gentle woman who had discontinued working with her because her neediness had triggered the therapist's own trauma.

As I listened to her talk about the previous therapists, I began to be seduced into seeing all the mistakes they had made, and believing I could, of course, do better than they had. I would be the savior that no one else had been. Though I would not make any of the mistakes they had made. Oh yes, all my years of experience had paid off and I would avoid all these traps.

She stated that she had a lot of trauma about being controlled and disempowered. And she had many young parts that she had to control. She had names for all her "thought patterns" but she did not know whether or not those were the parts. I suggested she think this question in her head, and see whether she would get an answer. She reacted immediately. I was telling her what to do. I said I did not intend that, just a mild suggestion of something she could try if she liked. "Now you're trying to make me feel guilty."

We returned to the parts. She said there was a critic who held imaginary conversations with other people. "You must be thinking I'm very difficult to work with." I asked why she said that. "Because I'm so complicated, because I've had so many bad experiences and I do not trust anybody." She said that besides the early abuse by her father, who lived with her and her mother until she was three, she had a whole childhood of emotional abuse by a controlling mother, who told her what she thought and felt and believed and would do with her life. She explained that her mother's constant control and criticism made her have a constant inner commentary about whomever she was talking with.

I asked what the commentary had said about me. "You were trying to control me when you told me to think a question in my head and listen for the answer." "Your tone of voice on the phone message when you said I should press '1' sounded very bossy." After she came up with each interpretation of my behavior, I would explain it, and she would seem to accept my explanation. We would talk a little more about her and her prior experiences (mostly of therapy). I saw a hurt childish expression on her face, followed immediately by a skeptical expression. "Do you have a protector part around?" "No, I was having thoughts about what you said." "What thoughts?" "I thought you were trying to make me feel guilty." It went on like this. I said "I saw a skeptical expression on your face again. What were you thinking?" "How do you know I was skeptical? Now you're telling *me* what *I* think."

I disclosed that I had had a very critical husband, who would tell me his interpretation of my motives and then refuse to hear my explanation. It was like throwing gasoline on the fire. Aha! I had disclosed an area of vulnerability. I could be hurt by people imputing nasty motives to me. I "hadn't worked through my stuff," as she put it. She was yearning for a therapist who had worked through their stuff so thoroughly that nothing she did could upset them. She was the client, they were the therapists. I suggested that statements about how she felt when I said or did any particular thing would be preferable to her telling me what she thought my motives were. No, she was a survivor of child abuse, so she was entitled to behave any way she liked, she could not help it, and any therapist worth their salt had to be strong enough not to be upset by it.

Time went by. I began to feel sucked into a vortex. An old, familiar feeling, which nothing but a divorce had been sufficient to get rid of. No, I wasn't just "getting triggered." It was being done to me. She wanted to take out on a therapist all the anger she had at her mother by treating someone the way her mother had treated her. And any therapist with a messiah complex (which most of us have a bit of) would be seduced into trying to master the situation, work through the transference and countertransference, and would eventually fail. I began to realize why there were so many notches on her gun.

. . . "Well," I finally said, "I do not see how we're going to be able to get through this. I do not have a solution. I cannot work with someone who keeps 'mind-reading,' making statements about my motives, telling me that I'm trying to control or manipulate or induce guilt. And you cannot just make statements about how you feel in relation to my behavior; you need to describe the bad motives you assume I have. I cannot imagine conducting therapy in which I am having to monitor every move and every facial expression so that it doesn't make you think I'm trying to do the things your mother did. Mind-reading is intrusive, and if you cannot or will not stop yourself doing it, I guess I cannot work with you. That's enough; I'm tired." I stood up. It had been two and a half hours, on a day that I'd been going to have off.

She sat there stunned for several minutes. This is not how it was supposed to go. I was supposed to face my challenges and try to work with her, see my own inadequacies and self-deceptions in the process, and let her continue to accuse me of all those things and try to provoke me into doing all those things, while I tried desperately to keep my cool. And instead I said that I would not work with her. She sat there for a while waiting for me to change my mind. I started to pack up. Finally, she said, "Can you suggest another therapist?" I thought about it. "No, I cannot," I said. "You need someone who's less sensitive." "You mean *more* sensitive," she said. "No, I mean *less* sensitive. Someone who won't get hurt when they're continuously accused of unkind motives . . . But the problem is, any therapists I know who are that insensitive are also egotistical and controlling, and you've said you do not like those things. So I really cannot think of someone to recommend." She did not know what to say. She left meekly, saying "Thank you for your time" as she went out the door.

I hoped she'd write about it for a good week or two, trying to figure out what happened. Maybe she would learn something. I did. I learned to recognize and refuse an invitation to be abused.

Maybe what this woman was doing was "projective identification"—trying to make me feel as bad as her mother had made her feel. Or maybe she was a victim of mind control who had programming to exhaust or burn out a therapist. Looking at her history of therapists, it could have been either. But I did not see a genuine desire to learn from another person, a recognition that I was trying to help her, or a desire for change.

We therapists have to be wary of being sucked into the invitation to be the great helper who can help when no one else can; in this example, I fell into that trap. We also have to notice our own feelings in response to the client in order to determine whether or not this can be an effective therapeutic relationship. In this case, my own feelings let me know that it would not work to see this client.

Transference and countertransference happen all the time, even within a good therapeutic relationship. During the year that Wendy lived in my city and we engaged in long therapy sessions three times a week, there were a few occasions when she became irrationally angry with me. On one occasion, I recognized that her irrational anger was related to some of her inside parts, but I assumed it was the group of parts we had just discovered. It was not. The big one came on a Friday. I commented on something in the news about Israel. Wendy became infuriated and accused me of being anti-Semitic. It was an absurd accusation, given our history together. I pointed that out, trying to show her the obvious, that if I had been anti-Semitic, we would not have been able to do the work we did together. But she persisted in attacking me about it. While I had no fear of her being physically violent with me, her fury aimed at me felt like a tear-gas assault. This could have alerted me to something very important, but I was too dense to catch on, because I was hurt by the unfair attack. My own past experiences with someone angry at me who became violent had made me very sensitive to blame, and I recoiled at the force of her anger and blame. I asked her to please not attack me in this way. Wendy cut the session short and went home angry. On the weekend, I called her to ask whether she was coming to our Monday session, and she snapped at me nastily, "Of course."

What survivors say to their therapists on the first level is often what they are programmed to say. Underneath that is the story of how they were programmed to say it. If we therapists can recognize when someone is speaking from a program, we can search for the training that made them say such things. In this case, I missed it because I was so offended by Wendy's accusations.

After I asked her to, Wendy held in her irrational anger at me, and stopped writing about it in the journal entries she sent me. What I did not know was that these attacks resulted from current abuse. Perpetrator group leaders (both Illuminati and Nazis) from the east had flown to town and abused her, including (of course) injecting her with what was probably an amphetamine to make her angry, assaulting her painfully, and telling her it was all my fault. Dissociated anger is already violent when it comes out, disconnected from the rational parts of the person; the drug added to that. They wanted her to pick a fight with me. Neither most of Wendy nor I was aware of the current abuse, and we often wondered together why she had not been pursued. The pursuers had accessed a very separate part of her personality system through well-hidden parts, who did not know me. The manufactured feelings against me from those parts, feelings that belonged to the perpetrators, were leaking through. But because, in my countertransference, I shut down her anger expression, we did not access the information about what was happening. Perhaps we would not have anyway, but we will never know. If we had found out about the current abuse, we would have known that the perpetrators were aware of when she had to leave Canada, and would have been suspicious of the American people who offered to help with that. It might have protected Wendy from a great deal more pain.

The therapist's own transference

All therapists are human beings, and our reactions to people are formed on the basis of other people we have known. Over the years, an experienced therapist learns to pay attention to any personal overreactions and deal with their sources, so that they do not contaminate the relationship with the client. In the story of the abusive client, I did notice a reaction of mine based on her similarity to someone who had judged and criticized me in the past. This in itself was not enough to make me conclude I would not be able to work with this person. The fact that I consciously recognized the similarity actually made me less vulnerable to a transference that would make me assume she was exactly like him when she was not.

But we therapists, like anyone else, are susceptible to projecting our own issues and past experiences on our clients. If you are a client and you find your therapist consistently reacting to you inappropriately, you need to pay attention to this. If you bring it to your therapist's attention, and he or she does not take responsibility for it, it is time to find a different therapist. You are not going to therapy in order to have to deal with the therapist's own issues. Some therapists are unhealed from their own pasts. And some are dangerous cult plants.

Part 2: Attunement

Falling in maternal love with a client

There is a phenomenon I have experienced personally, and which I have witnessed in several therapists over the years working with those severely abused as children. I think of it as "falling in maternal love" with our abused clients. Mothers fall in love with their newborn children. That love combines delight in the infant with an intense desire to protect that baby from all possible harm. An article by Chris Woolston, "The science behind love and mother–infant bonding" (https://consumer.healthday.com), explains how this kind of love is biologically hard-wired into us. The sight of our own infant, or the sense of its prenatal presence, stimulates a hormone, oxytocin, which gives us a feeling of intense love. We are fascinated by the baby, and at the same time fiercely protective of him or her. Even men experience this. And the baby falls in love with you, too. I remember how strongly this love hit me when I had each of my own children. It went far beyond anything I had experienced in romantic love.

Any multiple, especially a survivor of mind control and ritual abuse, is full of unloved infant parts, who long for the nurturance they never received when the body was an infant. Those parts do not really understand that they live in an adult body, and that no one can be with them twenty-four hours a day and protect them from all harm.

When I met my first survivors of ritual abuse and mind control, about whom I wrote in the first chapter of *Healing the Unimaginable*, I was both shocked and fascinated. And I fell in love, maternal love. They were little children within adult bodies, little kids who had gone through experiences far beyond my imagining and beyond anything I had read about or seen on television. They were, in their thinking and behavior, clearly still young children, stopped in their growth by those experiences while the body continued to mature. Two other members of my team at the Mental Health Center also had their first multiple clients, not ritual abuse survivors, but still survivors of extreme abuse, with tortured child parts inside, and they, too, fell in maternal love with their clients. I think it is a biological, hormonal response to the helpless infant in need of protection.

Those were the days of unorthodox family therapy interventions, where it was acceptable to see clients outside the office, and I visited my clients' apartments and took them on outings that their child insiders would enjoy. Somehow, I just wanted to make it up to them for everything they had gone through.

Of course, I was unable to keep up this intensity of relationship. I had to stop the outings when I discovered that my impersonator within the cult was taking advantage of it to take them out to bad places, pretending to be me. I learned of the safety provided by the structured office setting (with a good alarm system). One of my clients kept getting me mixed up with his mother, as a result of cult interventions involving the mother and my impersonator. The feeling of being "in maternal love" with my clients with little children inside gradually wore off, and was replaced by weariness and anxiety. I began to realize quite quickly that even though I felt this love for my clients, I could not keep them safe from harm and I could not give them the attention and caring that they had never received in childhood.

As I moved into private practice, the word went around town that I worked with multiples, and other therapists quickly offloaded such clients onto me. Several of the next survivors I saw came from therapists who had dumped them after becoming overinvolved. One pastor therapist was told by his wife that he could not keep spending all those extra hours with this other woman (who was frequently a little girl). There was no sexual involvement; it was maternal, or perhaps paternal, love. Another therapist mistook his feelings for his attractive client for romantic love, and assumed she felt the same way when her young child alters wanted to be close to him and feel the love they had never experienced. His abandonment of her was deeply traumatizing, and her eventual realization of what he believed was going on just as traumatic. One woman therapist was overwhelmed by dozens of daily emails from her client (resulting from programming to "burn out the therapist"), and eventually dumped the client after a serious suicide attempt ten years into therapy. Each of these therapists made promises to a client that he, and she, could not possibly keep. Then the client was brutally let down. Each of these clients made good progress when my love for them and contact with them were held within safe and consistent boundaries.

My friend who directs a counselling center for refugees tells me that her supervisees frequently become overinvolved with their clients out of this maternal love, the desire to help the wounded and protect them from further harm.

I have seen this maternal love in several therapists to whom I have provided online consultations. They become totally overinvolved with their first multiple client. They try to protect that client from all harm, something that no therapist can do. Their maternal protection takes the place of the adult self-protection that the client needs to develop. It cannot be sustained. We cannot be our clients' mothers. They have to find parts inside who can mother the younger ones. If they do not have a real mother, they have to accept that reality and grieve that loss rather than looking for a replacement. Therapists, watch that you do not respond to your clients' needy and abandoned infant parts by extending yourself further than you can manage or is good for the clients. If you do this, you will end up abandoning them.

When we work with adult or adolescent survivors of child abuse and neglect, we have to help them develop their own inner resources, rather than letting our maternal love lead us to become their leaning posts and to promise them the mothering they never received.

The attuned therapist

The attuned therapist feels his or her client's feelings, without being overwhelmed by them. It is much like what happens in a healthy relationship between mother and child, an attunement that allows the child to be understood and to grow up gradually. Siegel, in *The Developing Mind*, 2012, p. 69) says:

> For "full" emotional communication, one person needs to allow his state of mind to be influenced by that of the other . . . the therapist's sensitivity to the patient's array of signals allows his own state to become aligned with that of the patient . . . The alignment of the therapist's state allows him to have an experience as close as possible to what the patient's subjective world is like at that moment . . . Such an alignment permits a nonverbal form of communication to the patient that she is being "understood" in the deepest sense.

I can often tell what a client is going through by tuning in to what my own body is feeling. I imagine myself holding the client's feelings within my chest, close to my heart, with a thin but strong barrier between her feelings and my own, so I can tell which is which. This attunement is crucial for a good therapeutic connection. Wendy told me that I was particularly attuned to her very young infant parts; she described it as "the therapist's heart coating the heart of the newborn infant."

Siegel says that the need for nonverbal attunement persists throughout life, and is essential to intimate relationships. He states,

> Even at a physical distance, one mind can directly influence the activity—and development—of another through the transfer of energy and information. This joining process occurs via both verbal and nonverbal behavioral responses, which function as signals sent from one mind to another. (2012, p. 277)

I think that possibly "psychic" awareness of other people's emotional states may be a part of this. When a mother is aware of her connection to her unborn child, it is not through verbal, visible, or audible signals. In my childhood and teens, I experimented with telepathy with my siblings and friends. I discovered that my ability to sense what someone was thinking was most accurate when we communicated mentally about something with emotional content, like choosing one of the people we knew who had been at a particular event, rather than letters or numbers or symbols.

As we therapists work with clients who quite frequently have been trained in what are considered paranormal or spiritual abilities, or who have resorted to using such abilities for self-protection, we need to develop an understanding of such abilities. I updated myself on the research about parapsychology (Carter, 2012) and discovered that such natural (though poorly understood) abilities are widespread among humans and also animals, but are generally quite weak and not necessarily very accurate.

One of my dissociative clients had a five-year-old part who had developed her ability to do something she called "seeing the colors." She would stare at the area around my head for a long time. She eventually explained that she saw colors there that showed whether a person was good or bad, and until me she had never been close to anyone who was not bad. I presume she was looking at what some people call the aura. This little inside girl took it upon herself to train me in becoming aware of what the parts in her system were remembering or thinking, because they were unable to talk about it. She actually expected me to read their minds. She wanted me to sit quietly with whatever part came out, tune in to whatever was going on in her head, then put forward a tentative hypothesis based on my own sense of what parts were around and what they might be remembering. Having been trained not to do suggestive therapy, I was reluctant, but this seemed to be the only way to work with this client, at least in the early stages of therapy; otherwise we could spend over an hour in complete silence. If nothing came to me, she would encourage me to "reach in." Sometimes I would get a picture in my head, sometimes emotions. I discovered that these very young parts would correct me if my perception was not quite right, although they did not understand that I was not actually in their head, and did not get why I could not just walk in and rescue trapped internal children. Now they are able to tell me things without my having to guess, but their training paid off in my ability to sense what is going on in a client. I have had numerous experiences of sensing what is in a client's mind. I can sense whether other alters are listening, what emotions they have, whether they have questions or are making internal comments, and what they need from me. I not only feel my clients' feelings, but I sometimes see what they are seeing internally, or become aware of an answer (e.g., a name) which they are not telling me. I dreamed Wendy's internal structure in which her hidden parts used to live shortly after I began working with her, when she did not know the structure. It was such a vivid and bizarre dream that I knew it did not belong to my own life. If I have a significant dream relating to my life, I usually know what it is about. I told Wendy my dream in case it had significance for her, and she gasped and told me what it was about.

If we therapists can make use of such abilities, it can help in our work, but we have to be aware of how easy it is to be misled by a felt sense of something that might be inaccurate or a projection of our own. Attunement can actually help us get a sense of what is in a client's head.

Survivors and therapists, if you have ability or training in these abilities, do not dismiss them as "satanic," but also do not rely on them as if they are unfailingly accurate, because they are not. Instead, use them to form tentative hypotheses about what might be going on in others, then use regular methods to discern whether these are accurate.

SECTION IV

THE HORRORS OF THE ABUSE

Therapists and horror*

Alison Miller

In 1990, I plunged with fascination into work with my first clients who exhibited dissociative disorders, feeling that at last I was doing "real psychology." Perhaps because I worked with children and adolescents as well as adults, it was relatively easy for me to catch on to the personality switches, and adapt my conversational style and therapy technique to the age of the part of the person who was presenting at the time. What I was not prepared for was the horror of what these people had experienced, and which some of them were still experiencing, as the abuser group that considered them its property was still active. At the time, I wrote in my personal journal,

> I have a reservoir of pain—a head full of horrors—from my clients. I have gone through incredible suffering with people. I have not only listened to them tell about past traumatic events, I have watched them abreact them and used my intuitive awareness of their feelings as a guide to what they are going through. I have watched adults experiencing themselves as infants being choked, electroshocked, subjected to terrible pain, having sharp things poked in them, being smothered

---

* The first part of this work was published in *Therapy Today* in April 2016.

> with pillows, having baby bottles and penises rammed down their throats, drowning in semen, drowning in pools and swamps, being beaten up with limbs broken, being tortured with unbearable pain such as nerve gas, and being raped in every way imaginable. I have been their link to safe present reality as they relive these experiences. I have also had to tune into their terror as they watch other people being tortured and killed in slow, agonizing ways, and are told that if they talk about it or are "traitors" this will happen to them. I have also had to deal with clients' memories of such things that have just happened, within a day or two of when we abreact them. I have had to cope with knowing people are not safe in their apartments or on the street, because evildoers can and do abduct them against their will and do these things to them. I have had to cope with not only death threats to my clients, me, and our families, but also with detailed and explicit descriptions of how those murders will be carried out.

I listed many more abuses than the ones I have reported here. I remember the sense of isolation and the feeling of being overwhelmed. I also remember, however, the satisfaction of giving these survivors their first real connection with a safe, caring person who was not part of the world of torturers. Even when some of them were punished with rape and torture for disclosures to me, they kept coming back. And I began to see improvement in many of them.

The sense of overwhelm and being plunged into horror wears off somehow. You get used to it. I do not know whether I dissociate those emotions, or if I just have accepted that these unimaginable things happen, so I need to pull up my socks and get to work on dealing with them, as you would in rebuilding after an earthquake. I know that I can now hear such things without flinching, which is important as survivors test you out to see what you can stand. One survivor described his therapist to me as "too squishy"—meaning too easily affected by what he might want to disclose. With time, you become less squishy.

Someone needs to work with these clients, not just out of compassion but because it is through them that the truth becomes known and the abuse stopped. My books are full of survivors' own stories, as is my client Wendy Hoffman's memoirs, *The Enslaved Queen* (2014) and *White Witch in a Black Robe* (2016a). The power to tell one's own story is the power to regain one's life. You can help give this power back to the most abused of humanity. Your biggest asset in this work is not your knowledge; it is your ability to form a solid therapeutic relationship (empathy, warmth, and genuineness). You learn from experience. However, it saves a great deal of time if you have already learned about these abuses and structured personality systems, so that your client does not have to teach you everything.

I recently moved to a very friendly neighborhood of retired people, and when my neighbors held a welcome party for me I managed to tell them that I worked with survivors of the most severe child abuse, and consulted to other therapists doing this work. Someone said something like, "Isn't that upsetting to you?" I lamely said, "Someone has to do it," and another person changed the subject. The question seemed to be "Why would anyone do work that exposes them to horror and pain?" Well, one reason could be that it could have been you who had these experiences, but it was not, and that is not because you are any better than those who went through such things.

On a single day, I consulted to two therapists. The first, a Christian, had been listening to a fourteen-year-old part of her ritually abused client talking about a very traumatic experience. Overwhelmed by the horror and sadness of the client, the therapist suggested a guardian angel might be there for the fourteen-year-old. The client's response was "There were no angels, *ever*, not at birth, not in this situation." The therapist proceeded to suggest that maybe someday they could let angels be there. The result was that another part came out and did an incantation. The therapist compounded the problem by asking whether this was to send away anything good, and was surprised when the client's protector part became understandably angry. The client sent an email saying just "I HATE ME."

What was this therapist doing? I think she was defending herself against the terrifying challenge to her worldview. The reality that the client had felt completely abandoned by all forces of good was frightening to her. No wonder. I pointed out that she was invalidating the client's feelings and experience, and, furthermore, she was feeding in to the client's perpetrator-induced belief that she as a child was so evil that God would not help her, and her own incantation had the power to drive away God or angels. This well-meaning therapist had taken on this survivor with complete faith in her interventionist God's ability and desire to relieve the client's pain, and now her faith was shaken.

The second therapist, a Jungian, was older and much more experienced than the first. But she constantly went into despair about her ritually abused client, whose functioning had deteriorated, probably as a result of re-traumatization by the local cult group. She admitted to me that she dreaded seeing the client, though when with her she felt a very deep compassion. She was aware that the despair she was experiencing was also how her client felt, and she was also aware that her worldview had changed as a result of working with this client. She did not want to take on another such client, and given her age, it would have been unwise in any case. When I suggested to her that her recoil reaction might be a reaction to evil rather than to the client herself, this made sense to her. She would have liked me to produce some wonderful thing to help her have hope for her client, but the only thing I could say was that often a survivor's apparent getting worse was just a result of the cult-loyal parts of the client doing their jobs, and I did not believe that all her steadfast caring had gone to waste.

It is inevitable that clients who have experienced ritual abuse or mind control will challenge the worldview of any therapist or other helper. We all have to come to grips with "Where was God?" "How can human beings engage in such deliberate evil?" and "What kind of a world is this?" And there are no easy answers. Yet, we cannot turn our backs on those who have experienced these evils. That is what most of Europe did during the Nazi occupation, and the result was the Holocaust. We have to grapple with the unanswerable questions and make sense of them. We have to avoid giving easy answers to our clients, and constantly check ourselves to see whether our fear is being communicated to our clients, who are exquisitely sensitive to people's inability to hear their real experiences. It is our loving presence, not our glib explanations, that will let them know that there is love in the world, and that some people choose good, and do not turn their backs on those harmed by evil.

Therapists, you will be unable to hide your feelings from your clients, but it is important that you process them in private, even if it leads to significant changes in your view of the world. You can tell your survivor clients that it is not them you are reacting to, it is the evil of what was done to them. Some will not be appeased by your saying this.

Survivors, if you see shock and horror in your therapist when you first talk about some of your experiences, this does not necessarily mean that your therapist will not be able to handle what you must deal with. It does mean that he or she is having to come to grips with some realities you have known about for a long time. It does not mean your therapist hates you, just because he or she hates what you have gone through. Try to be generous and patient with your naïve therapist.

The purpose of infant torture

Wendy Hoffman

Infant torture has not received sufficient attention. Not enough victims remember it, or people think it is too gruesome to deal with. Some of the early *exposés* of mind control and the creation of programmed slaves, such as the film *The Manchurian Candidate*, avoid infancy completely. *Manchurian Candidate* is a quasi-fictionalized version of mind control, but this omission is still important.

Perpetrators have to get their hands on infants. For the more strenuous assigned roles, they start in the womb. The programmed newborn is essential for the continuation of these criminal groups. First of all, the child has to be born unbonded, and to remain so. (See "Why and how they prevent bonding" (pp. 75–88.) Then, once a child is born, very serious training starts full blast without interruption. Perpetrators, usually family members whose job in ordinary life would be to love, believe they have to give the unambiguous message to newborns that they are toys, objects, possessions, if these criminal cults are to continue to exist. They set out to overwhelm unattached newborns and do it through torture. They erase any remnant of a soul that may have lingered. As long as they can keep these poor beings away from any source of love, they have a good chance of succeeding. Apparently, you need someone giving and not just taking to let a sense of self flourish. The sense of self is even more delicate and fragile than orchids or creativity. But the human soul is resilient.

How do you torture a newborn? you may ask. Even newborns in ordinary life are tortured. They often die as a result. Torture for criminal cult newborns, however, is more regulated and not a passion crime. There might be some out-of-control torture in these hidden cults but that style of torture is an aberration and not endorsed. It can happen, though, because some programmers are driven insane. But how do these criminal organizations torture their future leaders as newborns? The same way they torture children, older children, teenagers, and adults. The only difference is that newborns cannot yet be seated in electroshock chairs.

As a newborn, you would be placed in a carrier, set perhaps on a dining room or kitchen table. There may be a support under your flimsy neck. You have not been fed or given a drink for many hours, a lifetime for an infant. The underlying landscape of cult victims is hunger and dehydration—both essential for creating a mind-controlled slave. You spend much of your infant time sucking on air. You are longing to be touched and held and someone might start massaging, say, your feet. Soon this same person inserts needles between your tiny toes. You are introduced to the combination of pleasure and pain and pleasure followed swiftly by pain, which will become a life theme. This programmer is not the only person present. Other adults surround the two of you. The programmer is often a relative in ordinary life or family friend, rarely a stranger. In rural districts, a stranger might stop by periodically to supervise. Needles go into other parts of your trembling body. If you begin to cry, a pillow goes over your face to almost suffocate you. You are not allowed to release feelings, which crying can accomplish. It is difficult to believe, but the programmer places a metal head vise around your malleable skull. It feels sharp, digs in, cuts. The programmer tightens and releases, tightens and releases the vise as he moves his giant lips and says words. You do not understand the words, of course, but some part of your brain memorizes them. Later, when you have achieved formal language, that part will translate from sound to words what was said to you. It is usually something like this: “You are our possession. We own you. You will do whatever we say. You are not free. You will never be free. You belong to us.” This message in words is one aspect of programming.

Programmers also use hand signals. The infant cannot understand them but some part inside will memorize the movements and translate them later in life. They are being sensitized to watching hands for messages. Colors, tarot and playing cards, pictures of containers that split off parts will be placed in later are also present.

My programmer also strangled and shook me as a newborn and must have done something like break or dislodge my neck. He molded it back together since his goal was not to murder me.

Programmers also shoot tasers along the sides of the infant's body. Some of the electricity may make infants who had been programmed in the womb remember its former use. They are stunned by the tasers. In addition, programmers spin the newborns on a plank with a neck support. The consequential dizziness also overwhelms the poor human being and makes him or her lose any grip on life or reality and certainly any belief in the self's ability.

The stretching begins now to render the newborn a satisfactory sexual slave. Fingers go into the mouth, rectum, and, for females, vagina. The stretching that renders infants rapeable creatures in programmers' opinion has begun. Even chronically raped people can have touch deprivation.

A good example of how programmers overwhelm these unformed, unloved beings is their trainings to pee on command. When I told Alison, my enlightened therapist, that cult children have to control their pee before the age of six months, she did not believe it was possible. But Alice Miller (1983, 1997, p. 88) writes about German mothers with a compulsion for cleanliness teaching their newborns not to wet or dirty their diapers by the age of six months.

If a cult baby wets, the programmer slaps and beats the infant, punching it in the stomach. This happens over and over again. The sharp infant figures it out after months of being hurt. The duller ones just get hit continuously. Either way the programmer wins. This is another example of the infant's being overwhelmed and taught that it has no power, no rights, no entitlement, no human dignity that would be a natural response to early life. It is helpful if survivors find these infant parts who were prematurely toilet trained, to reduce their despair.

Newborns might or might not have a concept of death. If they do, they would want to die. At least they want to go away. This underlying coating of not wanting to be alive or to be here stays with them on some level throughout life, perhaps until they are fully healed.

From pre-birth to birth to after birth, this is the message, this is the rule. The torture and lack of caring produce the kind of pain that eats away bones. These infant feelings form an unrelenting sack placed under the solar plexus that can follow the survivor throughout life, unless they locate these parts, rescue, and heal them.

In Illuminati programming, the thirteen splits formed are accomplished by the victims' sixth month of life. They are separated and placed in containers. For me, it was a coffin. The containers are sealed and placed below the structure that has yet to be built internally, starting at three years old. These containers below the structure will feed the subsequent structures with feelings of hopelessness and despair. If survivors are ever unfortunate enough to be under the influence of close-down specialists who want to reignite programming and keep them slaves, those close-down specialists will make their way to this structure and try to make sure the designated newborns and infants stay in their sealed containers.

During all this early torture, it is most likely that there will be some natural splits. Even without the torture, the heartbreak, sadness, fear, anger, and loneliness the infants experience are enough to cause a shredding of the personality system.

As the months go on, programmers will do all they can to cement these splits. They will color-code them and assign them visual cues and hand signals. They have the foundation of a highly programmable slave.

The hunger, dehydration, and torture destroy the will. But, apparently, it has not been completely destroyed, because so many victims are becoming free, telling their stories, and emerging as true survivors. They are overcoming their infancy.

More good news is that there are cracks. Sometimes programmers deliberately and secretly leave in cracks. Other times the cracks come from programmer incompetence. The times are ripe for those cracks to open wide. I hope all the people who died slaves can hear. We are making our way toward freedom.

Spinning

Wendy Hoffman

Years after a cult "therapist" was hired to close down my recovery process, years after I had been living like an empty shell, a mindless robot, the memories began to fight their way to the surface. As they tried to creep out, episodes of dizziness assaulted me. I would hold onto my bed and try to steady myself. I had to wait a long time until the feeling that I was being spun round and round subsided before I could start my day or even get out of bed. I clung to the mattress. The feeling became more intense as the weeks went by. I went to my doctor, who referred me to a neurologist, who ordered thousands of dollars' worth of MRIs and MRAs. They revealed nothing to account for the feeling of intense spinning. I did not even know that I could call it a feeling of intense spinning. I thought it was merely dizziness without a known cause.

After every programming session, the programmers spin most infant, child, adolescent, or adult victims in electroshock chairs, in rotatable floor chairs, or on spinning boards. They have spinning boards for infants. The spinning is meant to be a barricade to keep you from knowing what happened to you. Programmers feel that their victims will not be able to quiet the spinning and thereby reach the harrowing memory.

I did not need a neurological workup. I needed to quiet the spinning so that I could discern the programming to feel spinning and also what lay underneath it.

The most effective way to stop the feeling of spinning and the memory of having been spun is to find the part whose job is to release these sensations should the memory become close to consciousness. This is not the part that holds the sensations and memories but, rather, the part that floods the victim when the victim comes too close to knowledge. The part who allows the dizziness to overtake the victim is not dizzy but has the control to get other parts to release dizziness. That part is like a conductor of an orchestra. He calls out the musicians who play instruments but does not play an instrument him or herself. Reassure, reason with, and educate that part. This feeling comes from an event in the past (unless the event just happened). The extreme dizziness in the present results from this part doing his or her job to cover over the memory and block it with this distraction. Talk to this part about the benefits of healing and freedom.

The spinning also spreads the feeling or message of the memory to which it is attached throughout the system. One part may hold the feeling of the spinning while another distributes it throughout the system, or one part may hold both jobs. When you find the parts who spin in order to distribute, you can substitute pleasant, warm, or courageous feelings for the destructive ones which are being spun.

In the meantime, if you are experiencing the spinning sensation, stand up straight, do not slump, focus outward, do not look down. Fight to hold onto the center of your body from the brain to your groin. Dig your feet into the ground. Drink a glass of water for grounding. The spinning episode is over. Fight for control. Focus on a large object in the room. Try to make it stand still. Focus on a medium sized one. Make it stop moving in your mind. Then a small one, then many small ones.

Try to walk to the bathroom. Count your steps. Stay away from the staircase. Eventually, the dizziness should stop. It pays to master the spinning because it could stop your process cold if you do not.

Give yourself permission to go beneath the spinning to the covered-over traumatic memory of being programmed.

This breakthrough can lead to an unravelling of memories that can set you on a path of listening to all your parts and coming to a most worthwhile freedom. It is one of the early steps to be mastered as fast as possible.

Sexual horrors

Wendy Hoffman

Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse usually become either promiscuous or averse to sexual expression and touch. They have suffered horrendous sexual abuse, more harrowing than most people would imagine. Their responses are inevitable. Anyone would react as they do.

Those pioneer therapists who treat survivors often try to help them bring back their sexuality in the hope that they will have a full life. Books have been written about reclaiming sexuality. Some of the earlier books address incest survivors. Incest is sufficient for ruining a life. Mind control victims also endure incest. Mind control victims grow up largely in electroshock chairs. Some are taken around the world to be programmed and tortured. Their minds are considered disposable software, their bodies toys for others' use. Perpetrators view them as servants or slaves with no inherent worth.

If you are a victim, keep in mind that you probably do not know the depths of your abuse, because you have been programmed to know nothing. If you are a therapist treating survivors, be aware that you do not know what your clients have been through. You may have a vague outline, but you will not know the chronic devastation and inconceivable abuses. The worst part of the sexual torture and training is well hidden in victims' internal systems and may be among the last portions of their history to emerge into consciousness. So, while the victim and his or her therapist(s) may strive to transform the victim into a normal functioning person or a focused sexual being limited to one partner, it might be useless because neither the victim nor the therapist knows what they are dealing with.

Sexual trainings take place in electroshock chairs. There, small—smaller than you can believe—children are masturbated. When their stirrings are achieved, programmers electroshock them—on their sexual parts. This is done for both boys and girls. Experts introduce children to premature sexual feelings, which are immediately coupled with physical pain. Children are sexually stimulated while viewing violent films or watching others tortured, to pair their sexual responses with violence. They are sexually stimulated while being placed next to dead bodies. They are forced to engage in sex with animals. They are forced to sexually abuse animals and other children, and may be sexually pleasured while they do it, to turn them into perpetrators. And, of course, they are forced to pleasure their handlers in whatever way those handlers want.

The combination of humiliation, violence, and physical pain creates confusion, then horror. Most children become divorced from their bodies. It will be a long, slow, circuitous route back. Take your time. Therapists—you cannot know. And if you are a bystander, support person, or witness, do not gawk.

Other child victims whom the leaders of these cults consider property are also used to stimulate the child victim in the chair. This is only one way perpetrators turn children against one another. At the end of these continuous sessions, the victims have lost their identities and function as created prostitutes, spies, tempters and temptresses, thieves, murderers, pornography players, and breeders.

What I am describing is official programming. The leaders never let programming go to waste. Cues such as the three of clubs and the queen of clubs are shown to the victims as they are tortured sexually. Victims then associate that card with the sexual torture and the behaviors they have to perform. In addition, as a small child is being prepared for a life of sexual slavery, the programmer will snap his fingers and point to a person in the room. Eventually the child learns to direct his or her sexual stirrings to that target pointed at.

Programming is un-American in that nothing goes to waste. The association of visual cues such as cards with the significance and memory of the programming mean that programmers and handlers can access and put into effect the programming at any moment of the victim's life. These sexual programs are sometimes turned on accidentally. Victims then have to deal with embarrassment and another kind of humiliation as well.

Some groups also make children copulate with animals. All groups favor penetration at an age considered too young by modern-world standards. Groups bring in mentally deficient males to rape ten- and eleven-year olds brutally and continuously. They drug these males so that they can hold erections. No one listens to these men when they do not want to hurt others and when they resist.

Victims sometimes do not understand why they have an aversion or addiction to touch and sex. Understanding some of the standardized training may help victims explain themselves to themselves and be more self-forgiving. A first step is always to bring abuses to light.

Survivors, though many do not realize it, live in stunned skin.

They have survived many invisible deaths.

To try to heal from the impossible, touch any innocuous place on your body. Notice whether the rest of you hops away. Do that until you can stay within yourself on that spot that you touched. Go on to other discrete spots.

Touch again. Do you associate touch with physical pain? Does some part of you shake as if in the after-vibrations of electroshock? Do you visualize many perpetrators? Gang rapes are common during and after programming sessions.

Do you associate touch with death? Orgies begin after the sacrifice(s) during rituals. Eventually survivors' crying in the present will most likely stop on its own, though it may take many years. Many survivors cry after orgasms in the present. That, too, might eventually cease.

This is the deep recovery work of a lifetime. You can decide whether to master it or not. It is your decision and no one else's. If you are in your twenties, thirties, or forties, your hormones may decide for you.

People can live without a sexual life. Or people can live with one. Sometimes things are ruined for good, and sometimes they are not.

The most important issue is to come back to your body gradually. Living within yourself is what is most important—living attached to yourself, owning yourself, belonging to yourself and having an aware mind. An aware mind is a solid single piece, and no longer fractioned.

Should you have a sexual body memory, pursue it, follow it to its end. Knowing what happened to you, what you endured, has to fill you with the self-esteem that has been stolen. You may come to love and cherish, honor and obey your own self.

Anger displacement training

Wendy Hoffman

Children's intense feelings are the seeds programmers work with. They take these emotions and direct them where it will profit the criminal group.

Programmers manipulate anger in children, starting almost at birth. They deliberately frustrate and enrage infants by taking away love, bottles, soft objects to cuddle. By the time their victims are toddlers, they are training them to kill. Given that they are creating an army of killers, they have to be able to control their victims' anger and direct it to their own enemies. Since they are the child's real enemies, it would be dangerous for them to leave anger intact and aimed at them. Depending on how fast the child develops, programmers wait until the children are about four to six years old to start teaching them not to be angry at their perpetrators but to direct that anger instead to this group's enemies. Their enemies include anyone who tries to help the child victims escape.

Here are some of the methods my family perpetrators used on me. Starting in 1948, when I was five, the programmers placed two archery targets with bulls-eyes on stands near the far wall in the basement. I had already achieved a good aim. The controllers taunted me and encouraged me to direct the frustration and anger I felt at my parents and sister onto those targets. Max, my main master-mind-programmer, instructed me to pull my anger from one target to the other one, while his younger brother, Abe, held a gun to my left temple and said, “Get it off that target and onto the other target or I’ll pull this trigger.” I had already endured “gun programming,” which instructs complete obedience when a gun is held to you. When I was five to ten years old, I had to perform this transference of anger 100 times per session and when I was a teenager, 150 times per session. They strove for a spontaneous reflex I would perform without thinking. When I was a young teenager, the controllers laced three babies into seats and told me the babies would be killed if I did not transfer my anger correctly. I thought they were live babies, though possibly drugged. In addition, they gave me stimulant drugs that kept me in a riled-up mood but cooperative, the way the military drug soldiers in the known world.

Max and Abe knew I had transferred the anger when my eyes moved and I created another internal split. Particularly astute programmers can see when splits are created. As the training proceeded, I was forced to project my anger away from its original source and onto ten targets. Whatever I originally and rightly felt anger toward moved far away from my awareness. Anger became like boiling black smoke, beyond rage, not even human, demonic.

They wrapped my whole body in thick flesh-colored rubber like a space suit with a big opening around my back. My face and any bodily features did not show. I could feel the gun in my back and the taser blasts.

They had me walk to the first target and then suddenly pivot to the second or wherever they pointed. They shot at the spot I had just left, so that gun smoke always followed at my heels. They kept training me until my mind deflected automatically like a reflex. This became part of my training for killing politicians. All the internal kids had deflect-anger core training. The anger was held by a thousand child soldiers within me. Back at home, my grandmother shaved my scalp and told me that I had no identity.

With this training, they thought they could get me to do anything, and I could feel my brainwaves not holding a center and going every which way. The programmers told these parts whom to kill or blackmail or hurt. They had me not only walk, but crawl, walk backward, jump on both feet, walk on my toes, on my heels, hop, walk on my hands while they held my legs, roll on the floor, do leapfrog jumps, and do cartwheels, which I cannot do. They kept repeating the patterns with different movements to reinforce them.

Programmers put me in a coffin. Abe and Max pretended to put the coffin in my body, right where the spine ends, at my atlas. They pressed into my body at that location. They also banged my head to cause a concussion. Concussions make people passive and compliant and unable to think clearly. When I blacked out, the neighborhood cult-owned doctor would inject me and give me smelling salts to pull me out of it.

The men all pointed guns at me. I still wore that rubber suit when Uncle Abe said, “The old Wendy is dead; you are now a soldier, and all the soldiers stay in this coffin unless they’re called out.” He produced a sound pattern of knocks that the soldiers had to listen for. When the soldiers are out, everybody else has to go in the coffin. The coffins came in different sizes, always a tight fit. They also taught me visual symbols to provoke the transference of anger. Eventually, my mind could no longer hold the awareness of who had really caused the anger.

My family watched Apache dances, popular for decades starting in the 1930s, on the television in the living room. That was the trigger in ordinary life, but downstairs, starting when I was about five years old, in the lowest basement level with Max, and two uncles-in-law, I watched these dances while they kicked and masturbated me and gave these parts of me names.

Max told me that I was the woman in the dance and to put my anger in an empty can of Heinz vegetarian baked beans that he placed on the ground. (Mother served those beans a lot because we were not allowed to eat meat.)

I watched the show while they kicked me and tried to direct my anger to the can. Downstairs, they did not show the part of the dance where the woman abuses the man, but I saw that section upstairs in the living room. An uncle directed my anger to the can, then to large white dolls made of heavy white cloth and told me to be angry at this person and that person. The dolls were male and female with penises and pubic hair but no other features.

When they electroshocked me in the upstairs room with the black electroshock chair, I saw that they had placed the can in this room.

"You never saw this," my mind controller instructed. One of the uncles opened the window and my body became cold. "A layer of cold to seal in your memory."

At the end of this sequence, the uncle who kicked the hardest put me in a white laundry basket, covered me with a pink sheet and wheeled me home. He lifted me out and dumped me on the foyer floor of the apartment. Mother said, "You cannot leave her there." He dumped me on my bed. I would notice that laundry basket in the building's laundry room but would not have memories of the anger training. However, something in me resonated.

When I was an adult, my new programmers went back to this training, using similar methods. They pulled my hair and threw me around, as in Apache dances.

There has been significant discussion in recent decades about the innate differences and similarities between males and females. Displaced anger training gives glimpses of some differences. Starting at four or five years old, most male children took to anger more readily than the females. Girls took more readily to grief. Perpetrators use drugs to instill and enhance the feeling of anger. Some of the girls were overdosed because they did not get angry enough, and the controllers kept upping the drugs, always used in anger training (and probably military training).

How to make an assassin

Wendy Hoffman

One of the most dangerous and soul-wrenching mind control assignments is to be forced to become a murderer.

Little girls, and sometimes little boys, are trained to seduce, perform lap dances, drop pills in victims' drinks, and escape as their victims become drowsy, sick, or die, and to pull the trigger of guns. The same brain part does not perform the whole of this criminal act. A sequence of seven to ten parts, sometimes as many as fifteen, which are isolated from the rest of the brain, runs through these paces. During the childhood trainings, which start when the victim is a toddler, drugs and torture are used as well as a metronome to hypnotize and a stick pounding to accelerate the switches from one brain part to another. The switches have to be instantaneous and invisible. The programmers then seal or close the training. They use words, hand and foot signals, icons, or sounds to open the program on demand.

For assassination training with guns, the leaders train agile children to have excellent aim, first at archery ranges, then at shooting ranges. For their big job, they are trained to arrive at a destination, switch into another part, position themselves, switch, do a preparatory aim with their weapon, switch, watch for the signal from their handlers, switch, practice aim and reposition again, switch, obey their handlers' signal, switch, shoot, and finally switch into a part who knows nothing about what just happened. Assassins can also have their switches choreographed to songs in the assassin's head so that they do not need an external handler continually present when on a mission. The series of songs in the head (following a particular music album) may be externally triggered but then continue in a prescribed pattern internally. This programming can be disabled by an external person like a therapist speaking the lengths of songs on the album, followed by "If you've finished with the program, turn it off" (spoken in a particular tone of voice).

Assassins are equipped with suicide pills in case something goes wrong. Some assassins will be trained to stay put and be captured, others to run and be captured, others to escape. It depends on whether the leaders want to reuse this assassin. If the job is considered a particularly big one that involves, say, a charismatic political leader, sometimes a handler will accompany the assassin to the site, give him or her a signal such as a tap on the left shoulder, and even be present as the programmed assassin pulls the trigger. Handlers then disappear into the chaotic crowd. The trained assassin is often put in position to take the blame and is not really the one who murdered the target. Other killers shooting from other directions will have murdered the victim but they will disappear undetected and the known assassin will be discovered with a gun. He will shoot but his bullet will not be the one that killed. This duplicity is not usually discovered because these cult leaders have placed their own in the roles of agents investigating the crimes.

Most parts of the assassin's brain have no awareness that the body has just been to a public event and murdered a stranger. People designated as assassins are not usually given high positions in life. They are usually, but not always, kept as fringe citizens. Victims have other types of training for assassination roles, depending on the groups' preference. These are just a few examples.

The sections of victims' brains that are designated to be assassins are not allowed to be impulsive, but to just follow orders coolly and methodically. Nevertheless, some trained assassins snap out of that role and shoot the wrong person, often a handler who is at the scene, a relative, or someone they perceive to be particularly evil. The film *The Manchurian Candidate* depicts an assassin shooting his handler. And in my second memoir, *White Witch in a Black Robe*, I describe rotating my gun away from my assigned target, a good man, and onto the person at the table whom I considered particularly evil and conspiratorial.

Imprisoned assassins who say they do not remember killing anyone or shooting or owning a gun are probably telling the truth. The parts of their minds that hold the information have not come forward because their jailers do not know or do not use the codes to bring those parts forward. In the film *The Manchurian Candidate*, playing cards were the visual signal to bring forth the assassin-sequence of the protagonist. The cue could also be a song, melody, or body signal. In time, mind control often loses its power if not reinforced. To prevent this disintegration, jailed assassins may be reprogrammed while in prison.

Regular citizens in today's world are troubled by the assassinations and bombings taking place even in schools. Some of these might be to stir up chaos so that people will want a very controlling government. Trained slave-assassins and bombers are handed the weapons and ammunition needed for their jobs. Or there are stashes of weapons left for them in secret locations.

The leadership in perpetrator groups are accelerating the upheavals in the world, while the common man does not know what is going on and is afraid. The key to peace is to uncover the hidden rulers who are giving these instructions and the minor programmers who are training the future assassins. Right now, we are punishing the wrong people

Gang wars and the bandwagon

Wendy Hoffman

A much more benign form of victims' anger training than assassin training is when they are instructed to join an angry cult cause. One of the functions of some bits and pieces of the programmed mind is to disrupt non-cult activities that are designed to help survivors become free. For example, if a cult team leader is attacking a moderator on an on-line discussion board meant to support survivors, they will attack without thinking. For them, it is as if the whole world is a ritual site and they leap into the horrid festivities because that is what they have been tortured into doing. On communication boards for the professionals treating survivors, some of who are survivors themselves, we see the same sort of dynamics. People jumping on a cause, even a bad one, with compelling momentum.

When I assumed the position of moderator of an on-line communication board for survivors of mind control and ritual abuse, I had not thought I would run into great difficulties. My already published books had let people know that I am an advocate for victims of these horrendous abuses.

The previous moderator wanted to give up her role and start other endeavors. I had to abruptly take over, before the participants knew me. Just about immediately, attacks began. Fairly vicious attacks. Many of the participants on this well attended message board, I am sure, are lovely people. Some may not be, but the majority were most likely acting out of character. I was amazed at the animosity from otherwise fine people. Alison had a similar experience when she did two webinars for a survivor organization. She presented sound material that was going to be in her books. Almost as soon as she began speaking, people began to interrupt, saying, "That's triggering," or "That triggered me," or "That's so upsetting." She was unable to get through her prepared material.

The programs behind this are called "gang war" and "hop on the bandwagon." I went into my own past to find out how it works. I am sure there are many varieties and innovations.

1940s: First I found programming that happened when I was five or six. It took place in the programming center underneath the apartment building my family lived in. The perpetrators were my parents, aunts, and uncles. The main command said, "There will be an infringement of justice. Everyone has to get angry." Each infringement was ridiculous.

To initiate the training, my mother was told to object to red traffic lights when she wanted to cross the street. Why should she have to wait for a light? The other females in this basement said, "It's not fair, you are unjust, you are a tyrant." I had to join in. I said something like "The red light regulates traffic and is necessary so that everyone, cars and people, do not go together." That was before the program took effect.

The master programmer whipped me. He threatened me, saying he would take away all my toys, that I would never be allowed outside again, that I had to follow my leaders or I would not be allowed to live. The whipping on my back and legs was hard. The seeds of this programming were planted.

My mother was directed to say something like "Rah." The word meant nothing. Then the aunts said it. I had to say "Rah," then other vague sounds. Then we graduated to expressions such as "It's not fair." And so on. If I did not participate by joining this gang, the programmer strangled me, almost to death. Gasping, I was placed on the electroshock chair. He tightened the head vise and said: "You will always follow your leader. You will always join your team. You will always protest when they protest injustice." Injustice is the key falseword. Drugs made me more compliant.

I received other trainings with deeper threats as I aged. In my twenties, at a government facility, the program was called "Hop on the band wagon:" Programmers showed me a picture of a small bus. I could also see a real one that was in an area below. The programmer instructed, "When someone indicates anger because of an injustice, you hop on the bandwagon. It doesn't matter whether you agree. It is your job to back your team. You express the anger while your team leader is quiet. Sometimes you will not know who your team leader is. You are the voice. You are the voice for justice. Holler for your compatriots. This is a government command."

A little later, I was in a very sophisticated black chair with a head vise with a huge helmet attached. The male programmer spoke as female assistants in white uniforms surrounded him.

"You are an ant in a giant colony. You never act on your own. When your team leader shows distress, you listen carefully. When he lifts the pinky and index fingers of his left hand, you start yelling at the source of his distress. You do the noisy, dirty work. He is then silent and satisfied. It's as if he is getting a blow-job. You simply make noise and make your team leader look innocent."

In the same decade, the infamous Dr. Cameron at McGill Hospital programmed me after I did not follow instructions to assassinate one of their enemies. This programming took place when I was disobedient.

Dr. Cameron: "You always follow your leader. If he points, you do. You jumped on the wrong bus. You should be executed. You have been trained and you did everything wrong. The leader points, you shoot. You are the voice, not a wild fire."

He continued: "You had a team there and you did not hop on the bandwagon. You wanted your own way and you made trouble. Trouble. I'll put you in the ovens. You Jewish-bitch-queen." Saliva dripped from his distorted mouth.

Sometimes, in the 1980s, my front person was aware when I hopped on the bandwagon even though the fight had no personal benefit for me. But the compulsion was great and I could not stop myself. My then handler would indicate something he was upset about and leave the protest to me.

The leaders of these attacks are usually more sedate than those programmed to join the bandwagon. Sometimes the leaders are so behind the scenes that observers do not even know of their existences.

They control their noisy followers by pushing invisible program buttons. The leaders may be "conscious." They are usually cult-loyal and dangerous. It is easy to blame the pushy followers, but the real disruptions come from the sometimes invisible leaders. As a co-moderator of one of the discussion boards for survivors, I sometimes could not tell the difference between the leaders who initiated the attacks and all the followers who picked up the energy and ran with it.

If you are a survivor, ask yourself whether you ever jump into fights or arguments even though you have nothing to gain.

Do you feel compelled to back up someone you might think of as a friend but who may really be your handler or team leader, even when this leader is working against you?

The beginning step in breaking this training is to become aware of the compulsion to enter conflicts that do not serve your purposes. You, too, can step away from fighting and attacking in order to receive rather than sabotage the help you need.

If you are a therapist and are seeing gang wars and bandwagon hopping in your professional networks, look at who is involved. They may be the cult moles (plants) you need to identify.

In love with death

Wendy Hoffman

Satanic cults create a culture of death and dying. Death becomes attached to survivors' skin. Leaders like to join death and birth. Sacrifices of infants, children, and adults often take place during rituals that include births. Or a pregnant victim gives birth and is simultaneously murdered. I have seen that happen. She was told that if she did not scream, the murderers would not also kill her newborn. The child lived.

Survivors, possibly all survivors, have witnessed murders. War soldiers, genocide survivors, ghetto gang members have also seen multiple murders. Soldiers have witnessed massive deaths within a relatively short time, several months to a decade. War in ordinary life is usually not hidden. At least the people who endure it know it is happening. In criminal mind control cults, there is ordinary life and the hidden secret life of death rituals and assignments. Only parts of the person know about the underside life, and most of society does not know and would not believe it. Knowledge of its existence is probably more prevalent now than ever before. Mind control survivors live with death or the threat of death either their whole lives or until they are able to break away from the criminal groups and remain safe.

Witnessing death, even more than the other abuses, eliminates the possibility of a childhood. Satanic cult children are like William Blake's chimney sweeps, thrust into an adult world of violence and grime that erases the possibility of innocence. Their untimely exposure to sex seals the lid.

Leaders and programmers weave death into all their mind control programs. For example, when telling someone what not to do, they like to say "upon penalty of death".

After the murder of the one friend allowed, death becomes associated with inconsolable loss and guilt, all pre-planned. Some survivors are left with huge guilt feelings. No matter what happens, they feel guilty. Others become so numb that they cannot see when they do anything wrong. Feelings of tragic loss follow survivors everywhere.

Some of the "deaths" they witnessed did not actually happen. Children were tricked and the deaths were falsified. But child survivors in particular think they happened, so the effects are just as damaging and lasting as if the murders were real. Programmers also like to create the illusion of an after-life. They use magic tricks to make children believe they are seeing souls emerging from dead bodies to be trapped and caught. They tell the children that internal librarians, or managers, are placing the souls in boxes and that the boxes are being placed inside the child victims. Or they say file cabinets or caskets, vaults, caves, or some other kind of container. Children will feel that the dead live within them. They are afraid of some of the spirits but do not know how to get away from them. They have the mistaken impression that whole graveyards exist within them as well as ancient souls and spirits from other times and lands. Moreover, children are tricked into thinking they can catch souls with their fingers and hands. Trainers have drugged children, taught them to separate yolks from the white portion of eggs and tell them that they are catching souls. Lighting effects at rituals emulate spirits rising from the ritual site to "Lucifer's heavens."

Survivors are sometimes aware of the dead as they live their lives. The murdered dead whom the survivor loved can stay with that person in life. Some cherished dead friends protect and comfort them. The sense of their presence has a strong impact on survivors and keeps them going. Survivors may over-know death, but they also know the depth of love.

Their exterior world is filled with exposure to death; they believe their insides are filled with representations of death, and their programming is filled with death. Once your mind is taken away from you and you do not have free will, you become like the dead. Robots are not alive. Automatons live trance-like existences.

In addition, almost every survivor is loaded with suicidal ideation. Parents teach their small children how to kill themselves. These parents are told that if they do not, their children will be skinned and killed, so they teach their children to slit their wrists, jump out of windows, overdose on their parents' obviously placed medications, to name just a few ways. Simultaneously, programs exist for homicidal acts. Children are carefully taught how to murder and how to dissect corpses. The training starts with fish, birds, and small animals as targets and progresses to humans.

Even as some cult children are born to be murdered early in their lives, some are born who are not allowed to be killed until later in their adulthood or old age. It is typical of the arrogance of this kind of satanism to assign expiration dates to some of their victims. Those not allowed to be murdered until late in their lives will be born into positions these cults consider higher and more important than average. If these individuals are not obedient, they will be tortured but not killed. They may have long lives of torture until they either break free or are finally murdered. They may be considered even more unfortunate then the "expendables" murdered early in life. I am one of these unfortunates.

The only way to get away from all this death and make-believe death and killing and the compulsion to kill yourself is to undo the programming. Run away from your perpetrators, do not tell them where you are, and, in safety and calm, start unravelling their commands, one program at a time, one mandate after another, until you are free and clear of all the programs they imposed on your brain. It is the only way to step away from a religion of death and dying and into life. Wash the residue of death off your skin. Let your pores breathe in life. Leave death's stench behind.

Politicians' use of victims

Wendy Hoffman

Hordes of victims from multi-generational cult families are trained from birth onward to service politicians and people scheduled to be in power eventually, including world leaders. They serve as sexual slaves, memorizers, and messengers. The sexual slaves perform in private or in groups, on yachts and in homes, including official palaces and government-assigned homes. They often have permanent genital markings that indicate to perpetrators that they have been molded for this heinous role. They will service and not talk and not remember. Meanwhile the political figures go off satisfied, self-righteous, not endangered, revered, and scot-free.

Some of these children are subjugated young and taught to use their brains as a camera or tape recorder. Click, they can record words. Click, click—they can record documents. They then travel to the next politicians or businesspeople and deliver the information in words. Some function as mules who deliver elite drugs and/or messages and instructions in writing. Programmers construct them to dissociate this knowledge. But survivors are beginning to leak. Some have memories of being trained for, and performing, these roles, including those of political assassins. Some have written about this aspect of their lives. I have. Even within those survivors who do not yet have conscious memories, an earthquake rumbles and sways. When political primaries and campaigns are in full flood, memories threaten to erupt. Many victims do not understand why they feel so triggered day after day. The faces on television and the internet do not stop. Somewhere deep inside, the victims are aware that they know these people. Some cannot find words to express their impressions. Others' clarity is sharp. They overcome the "do not know, do not tell" commands. They recognize the hand signals given at significant times—hand signals reminding them not to tell. In a certain context, such a signal could be translated into a command not to say anything bad about a certain candidate.

So, survivors know or are beginning to know. But whom can they tell? People who have not been mind-controlled and programmed through torture do not want to know. The vitriol the 2016 candidates inspired was astounding. Friendships ended. Neighbors stopped talking to one another. Huge signs promoting one or another candidate appal people. In rural communities, stores exhibit such signs. Some customers will no longer enter them.

Only the politically visible perpetrators, diminished survivors, and some of their therapists and support people know what is going on. Perpetrators do not want to talk and survivors are not allowed to, even if they remember what happened. On professional discussion online sites, therapists are not allowed to say what they know about politicians. On survivor sites, survivors are not permitted to name names. The world from every angle conspires to keep the *status quo* in place and survivors muzzled. Ordinary people do not need hand signals instilled through torture and mind control not to be aware. Even survivors who have achieved freedom and remember the themes of their lives find they have to sit on their truths. All sides buffet them.

The perpetrator groups work hard to disguise perpetrators' identities to victims. Some confused survivors have spoken out identifying the wrong people as perpetrators, because of their programming. Others might be deliberately misidentifying good people. But credible survivors who have reached a good degree of health are giving consistent information.

Which is worse: continuing to be mind-controlled or being the little boy who cried "The emperor has no clothes" and being punished with ongoing torture for speaking out? This is not a fairy tale and so far has not had a happy ending. Survivors end up alienated either by mind control or knowledge. We still live in the aftermath of Stalin. As a mob, we cheer the wrong people.

Twenty-first century Nazis

Wendy Hoffman

It is easy to underestimate the influence and power of today's Nazism. Some of its less educated members do blatantly Nazi acts, but the more educated ones, with power and position in society, hold their meetings and rituals in secret and use mind control procedures. Only recently have photographs emerged of a seven-year-old Queen Elizabeth and members of the British royal family doing Nazi salutes. Joe Kennedy's affiliation with Nazi leaders cost him his office decades ago.

What does Nazism express that appeals to both the poor and the very rich? It represents power and annihilation—destruction.

My legal father, the one who raised me, who married my mother in ordinary life and pretended to be my biological father, came from a Nazi family. My mother's side of the family was Illuminati and wanted their group to rule the world as did my father's side.

My son's wedding was engineered by cult people, and it never occurred to me that my son's wife came from a Nazi family. They were nominal Christians who lived in Hillary Clinton's borough. I never saw them lynch blacks. But perhaps that's a portrait of many Nazis.

Why would the cults want to marry Nazis to Jewish people? Modern-day Nazism is different from Hitler's in some ways. Hitler attempted to exterminate all Jewish people and leave not a trace. Modern-day Nazis want to take those they hate and convert them to their way of thinking. Historic Nazis tried to rid their communities of foreigners and anyone they deemed socially unacceptable. They eliminated Jews, whereas the modern-day Nazis intermarry with Jewish people as a way of eliminating Judaism.

Right before the wedding, my son's wife's family did a ritual that I describe in *The Enslaved Queen* and in which my son and I were being abused. The chanters made negative comments about our being Jewish but I did not put it all together. Later, I remembered a programming session that same pre-wedding night that preceded the remembered ritual. Hoodlums abducted me from the hotel and took me by car to an apartment building where all the mailboxes had false Arab names. They all seemed Arab. A woman in a burkha was on the main floor, as my daughter-in-law, her sister, and her mother held guns pressed into my back and walked me up the steps. There were humiliations for me and my son. The perpetrators wanted to make us think we were dogs, then came the standard tortures.

When I told Alison about this, she asked whether I could see the torturers' hands and what color they were. I saw hands whose skin color was lighter than mine, one with red hairs. Horrible things were said about the Jewish people as spit flew from their mouths. After the torture, the programmers showed me photos such as mug-shots of the Boston bombers and other mind-controlled Arab terrorists. They commanded me to believe my abusers at this time were Muslim terrorists and not the white supremacist Nazis they really were. At the end, the apparently Arab woman on the first floor cleaned me up. She was the token to reinforce the idea that I had fallen into Arabs' hands.

The mechanics of this memory give one example of how hidden the Nazi groups are in today's world—not the thugs who roam the streets, but the people who hold respectable positions in the world and even world leaders. It also tells of the enhanced tricks they will use to disguise their identities and pin their misdeeds on other groups.

The frequency of programming

Wendy Hoffman

When survivors start their memory process, they pull out from their tightly closed minds a memory here, a memory there. These often turn out not to be the worst memories, but they are often representative of some of the major themes in their usurped lives. Years go by, and survivors working on associating or bringing to consciousness what their lives have been can fill large sacks with personal retrieved information. Eventually, they see themselves in black chairs and their understanding of programming for mind control begins. The black chair, indicating electroshock, is often one of the most telling keys to knowledge. Their perpetrator list grows. The relatives survivors thought they had loving relationships with may be the last ones recalled, as well as the well-known and idealized political, religious, social, athletic, and artist personalities. The private and world arenas collapse for them then.

These realizations are agonizing, but the big realization is yet to come. Until now, the awareness has been of an event here and there. Suddenly, those barriers fall away. As they crumble, a grid-like life comes into focus. It was not an occasion here and there that covered a programming session where the mind was erased and a new one installed. It was not only something that happened when the victim was three, six, eighteen, twenty-four, and so on. It was constant! The shock of this realization makes one's earth tremble.

Recovery can be divided into before this realization and after this realization.

Before, you thought nice things also occurred in your tarnished life. You thought you went on that road trip with your father because he loved you. It was your special time together. If you are a parent, you thought your adult child visited you because he cared about you and missed you. All these events stacked up in your life, but now you realize that they were covers or excuses to get you to a location where your perpetrators would administer additional programming and mind control.

The nice moments of your life flew out the window. It was all a lie. A horribly gigantic lie.

If you get away from your controllers, in time your mind control will lessen and perhaps become ineffective. But if your controllers know where you are and have access to you, they will resurrect the diminishing programming and refresh your mind control. That is one of the reasons it is essential not to report your intentions or preference for freedom or your location if you have run away.

With the illusion of having the nice moments of your life gone, then what do you have?

Reality, truth, and, for the first time, belonging to yourself at last. Is that enough? It will have to be.

There is more. They decided on the work you would do both in the secret organizations you were born into and in ordinary, normal life. They decided whom you would marry and where you would live. You could not even buy a house without their permission—or even a dog. You could not give your children lessons without their say-so. You could not send your children to a specialized school without their permission.

They fabricated every stitch of your life.

The commanders even decide which facial expressions victims will wear. My ex-ordinary-life husband assumed a sweet expression to cover his crude meanness. My ex-cult-husband learned after years of practice to make his face devoid of feeling. Mind-controlled assassins are taught to exhibit smug, self-satisfied facial expressions when they are caught. These looks infuriate the general public. The Boston bombers and the Orlando terrorist had the same kind of taught expressions on their self-satisfied faces. Assassins sometimes appear genuinely confused, since they do not know that they are stooges.

It seems that the first step in freedom is grief. They stole everything.

You are left now with your present and future. No matter how old you are when you become aware, seize every moment of what is left now. Hold tight to yourself, the self that belongs to you alone. Hold tight. You worked so very hard to get here. Despite the heart-breaking grief, you are yours alone now. No one owns you. Your mind can be in one piece.

As I neared the end of my processes of associating my lost past, I became tired and weary. *How much more will I have to go through?* I sighed. Then came the awareness that the programming and control were constant and that I had no free will during my life. I cannot process millions of programming sessions both in and out of their chambers. I will skim over and search for anything new or irregular in those myriad memories. I will investigate deeply the ones that contain a deviation or difference. The rest will have to wash away as a group. Often, there are not that many years left to live. I want to put my energy into life, since for me life is what is new and different.

I do not know whether survivors ever reach the end of associating the imposed dissociation. It is, however, important to believe that there will be an end to these horrendous memories and disillusionment about people and society.

Whether or not you ever get to the pivotal memories, you have the right to define yourself and not be made into a non-human being, a machine following orders.

Conscious and unconscious perpetrators

Alison Miller

The first person to tell me about “going conscious” was the late Stella Katz, the programmer whose unimaginable piece on Kaballah programming I published in *Healing the Unimaginable.* Stella was in the process of systematically working through her own training memories during the day when her husband was at work and her children were at school. Being a cult programmer, she knew how her memories were stored internally, and she knew that she must put together every part of a memory in order to destroy the program it had created. Stella described herself as having “a case of galloping integration.” She was thirty-nine years old, and that was the age at which she had been supposed to “go conscious”—that is, to have the parts who lived her everyday life join with the parts who were loyal to the cult who had trained her, while the hurt child parts were to be hidden under a barrier where they would not be found. She was using the “go conscious” program for her own ends, following the laid out path which those who trained her had intended, removing the barriers within her inner structure one section at a time, but defeating the cult’s purpose by including the hurt child parts in the joining. The program was supposed to work gradually, integrating one internal group at a time. She worked hard on it every day, because, she said, if even one child part remains within the system, the present-day programmers can access that part to split it once more.

I do not know the entire method by which a person becomes conscious, whether it is entirely an internal process led by a few hidden insiders who change the structure to make parts share their knowledge, or whether it requires an external person to set it off. That is because "conscious" members of these groups do not generally go for therapy. I only know what I have learned from Stella and Wendy, both of whom refused the demand to become "conscious."

If a person goes conscious, he or she becomes a conscious perpetrator, fully identified with the goals of the group, rewarded with status and power and freedom from being tortured. Only people of high status in the perpetrator groups are given the option of going conscious, and they are presented with this decision at designated ages in adulthood. Wendy was repeatedly asked to go conscious, and she repeatedly refused. She did not want to lose her soul. She was supposed to take part in a ceremony to become "conscious" at the 1982 Feast of the Beast ritual, when she would have been thirty-nine, like Stella. Prior to that ritual she would probably have undergone gradual changes in her internal structure and personality system. Her decision to refuse this offer meant a life of pursuit and torture rather than comfortable wealth and authority.

Many people who are not "conscious" are still working for the groups in one way or another. Wendy, for example, was working as a therapist and expected to use methods taught to her to close down those clients who had lived through these abuses. She wrote about this in *The Enslaved Queen*. Survivors of mind control and ritual abuse are sent to conferences or email discussion lists with parts of them instructed to use hand signals or code words to trigger programming in other vulnerable survivors. They are generally unaware that they are doing this. But other members of the conferences or lists are "conscious," and are aware of what they are triggering and why. They may be given jobs such as "matriarch," offering apparent comfort and support and gathering victims to follow their hidden instructions. Or they may be programmers, taking people into hotel rooms or out in vans during conferences and reinforcing those people's programming through torture.

I do not know whether it is possible to undo "going conscious." Perhaps if someone had accepted this without fully understanding its implications, then recognized that he or she had hidden hurt child parts, such a person could find where the parts were hidden and work through their pain. This is close to what Stella chose to do, when she allowed the program to work gradually but subverted its purpose to achieve full integration.

Persons who have become “conscious” are given positions where they are responsible for advancing the agenda of the perpetrator groups. Wendy notes that the conscious people who have their inner children repressed can still rage and have tantrums. They appear hollow, but also as if they are drowning. Many children grow up surrounded by “conscious” adults. The conscious are like the dead, and the ones who resist or are not considered stable enough or elevated enough in these criminal groups are sometimes driven insane. Those members who are given high political office or important positions in society are inevitably people who have gone conscious and over whom the rulers have complete control.

Things I wish I did not know

Alison Miller

Have you ever wondered why mind control and ritual abuse survivors all over the world report the same phenomena? As I wrote "Fifty lies they may have told you" in around 2014, I was reasonably sure that survivors in Germany, Australia, and South Africa would recognize some of the same lies that survivors in Canada and the USA have reported to me and to their therapists. The Extreme Abuse Survey (https://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/) asked about particular reported abuses, and found many to be common to survivors all over the world. Why are they common? Because perpetrator groups collaborate and teach one another techniques of torturing children, splitting the infant mind, and training mind-controlled victims.

It is *organized crime*. It is *psychologically sophisticated organized crime.* What else should we call it? Like the Mafia, it runs in families; people are born into it. And, as in the Mafia, those born into the families are expected to continue the family tradition of crime. I wish I did not know that. I wish I did not know so many people who, through no fault of their own, were born into it, and have endured lifelong torture, including child prostitution and pornography. I wish dogs, which I love, were not used as sacrifices. I wish children were not taught to rape and kill and then told they are evil and "possessed." When I worked with my first survivors, I thought there were a number of smaller groups in different locations who did roughly similar things. I did not realize the extent of the national and international organization of these groups. I have learned more about this from Wendy, because she was unlucky enough to be placed at the highest level within the international organization of some of the major groups. I wish I had not learned this. I wish I had not learned that politicians are involved, including world leaders. I wish I had not learned that some of my favorite musicians and film stars may have been involved, that the groups have a hand in deciding who rises to stardom.

I wish I had not learned recently that some people who purport to help survivors, including some well-known therapists, religious leaders, and leaders of non-profit groups, are actually members of perpetrator groups with jobs such as spreading disinformation or gathering and silencing survivors who had escaped. I wish that Christianity and Judaism and perhaps other religions had not been corrupted and misused by perpetrators. I wish that various schools of therapy had not been corrupted and misused by perpetrators. I wish that therapists were not teaching self-help techniques which are actually program triggers, sometimes in complete unawareness.

I wish I did not know these things. I wish I did not constantly walk a tightrope between naïvely trusting those who do not deserve my trust and fearfully suspecting everyone who may be trying to do good but do not understand the situation.

I wish I lived in the world my siblings live in, where they are appalled by some recent political events but are happy to spend their time gardening or travelling as tourists and playing golf, where law enforcement catches the perpetrators, where the biggest enemies are old age and cancer. I wish I lived in the world I lived in when I was young, where children played on the street and (as far as I knew) the neighbors looked after them safely. I wish I lived in the world I thought I lived in as a young adult, where God looked after those who tried to live good lives, and we could trust Him not to send us more than we could bear.

Survivors bear the unbearable through dissociation, segmentation of their brains into many parts. But this dissociation is exploited by abusers to control those brains, piece by piece. They struggle when they become aware of what they have gone through and might still be going through. Therapists, kind spouses, and support people struggle with the knowledge of such unbearable things. We have to revise our worldviews, and this is a painful but necessary process.

I wish I did not know all this. But people closed their eyes when Hitler was sending people to concentration camps to be killed. People in the "developed" countries close their eyes when genocides happen in the "less developed" countries. The UN would not send enough troops to save Rwanda, and would not intervene in Syria. The leaders of western "democracies" frame refugees as illegal immigrants and invaders of their people's safety and security, so that very few people recognize that these unfortunate people could be us.

We cannot close our eyes to these known abuses.

I have chosen not to close my eyes to mind control and ritual abuse. Even though I wish I did not know.

SECTION V

SAFETY

The "angel" of suicide

Wendy Hoffman

A mind-controlled slave cannot live making his or her own decisions. If you are a child learning to ride a bicycle, first you learn to operate the brakes. Then you will not crash into pedestrians and cars. If you are a child growing up within a criminal, high level mind-control cult, one of your first lessons is how to commit suicide. Then your controllers can eliminate you if you spring a leak, know too much, or are more rebellious than they can handle. Or if they need a dead person to take the blame for what they themselves do.

People will not want to kill themselves if they know that their death will be both painful and needless. Therefore, handlers fool the victim children into believing that death will lead them into a peaceful paradise. The children suffer so in every way that they yearn for some peace. Mostly, cult children experience inflicted pain, so the possibility of comfort attracts and excites them.

Controllers deliver an apparent angel to lead the way into this much desired fake paradise, which is, in reality, only a brutal death. In the crib, before the infant knows speech, handlers show images of the angel as they stroke, soothe, drug, and feed the famished baby. They use slide projectors, film, and computers to project the fake angel's movement around and across the room. Before babies have taken their first steps, they know this angel as a frequent companion. They associate its presence with comfort and freedom from pain, plus the angel looks beautiful, like a Renaissance painting. Babies never suspect duplicity. They do not have that concept.

Handlers use words as babies mature. "Follow the angel of mercy [or the angel of the sunset—by now, there must be many other words for this trick] and you will be well."

As babies become small children, programmers introduce triggers or cues that the children will eventually associate with the message and image of the angel. First, they torture the child, then drug the child, then show the child the angel. The angel becomes associated with the means of relief. They want the child to follow the angel wherever it leads. One survivor reported walking the Kaballah pathways in a cult training center, entering many rooms filled with torture and illusions such as puppets simulating demons. In the last room at the end of each pathway was a woman dressed up as the angel, who drugged the child and soothed her into sleep. At the end of my outdoor pathways, when I was a toddler and small child, when the terror and pain ended, there was often an image of the angel or a human dressed like this angel. The angel became associated with the end of torment.

A playing card such as the eight of spades, a letter in a foreign language, a musical or natural sound, or a tarot card picture is sufficient to invoke the image of this deceptive angel and its inherent message—"Follow me into death."

These trespasses are introduced in infancy. The victim grows to understand their meanings.

Starting right after toddlerhood, trainers, who are often parents and grandparents, teach children how to kill themselves. Each group will have a preferred method—jumping off a bridge or out of a window, drowning, slitting wrists, overdosing on an adult's pills. As victims grow older, handlers and other controllers will tell the person of all the bad things he or she has done and increase feelings of guilt and shame to an intolerable level. People might want to die just to get away from these intense feelings. Ironically, the victims might not have even performed many of the acts the controllers make them feel guilty about. All programming is based on deceptions.

Moreover, life as a mind-controlled slave is so painful, disturbing, and fruitless that death at times could seem like a blessing, but this kind of death is not. It is only the fulfillment of one's life as a slave and does not help you become the person you really are. Undoing this programming and attempting freedom are how survivors can redeem their, until now, unfortunate lives. Helping other survivors may add something to their lives as well.

Throughout life, slaves are drilled about when to kill themselves. The training is continuous. If a victim ever disobeys, if controllers ever give that person the signal, if he or she would ever reveal secret information, then controllers will want that person to kill themselves for the benefit of the group's security. Eventually, if the adult victim misbehaves or if the leaders just need a stooge, this program, already entrenched in the victim, will be activated.

This programming is enforced and re-enforced, which does not mean it cannot be broken. Once people understand the lies and manipulations, the programming dissolves, sometimes immediately and totally. The internal adults can help the inner children understand how they were fooled and lied to.

If you have survived these kinds of abuses and see an image of this sort of angel, know that it will only lead you to a bad kind of death. Try to unravel the programming that deceives you into thinking that this image or the symbol that evokes this association will in any way benefit you. Find the parts who hold this programming. Remember to go back to the earliest memories from the crib and include those.

You have a choice—to do what your handlers have trained you to do or to live the rest of your valuable life in your own way.

To die or not to die

Wendy Hoffman

I have always known from the depths of my being that I did not want to be alive. Who would want to be alive with a family like mine? Or some cult role like mine? I had eight children and I do not see a single one; neither do I know whether six of them are alive. I could pass five of them on the street and not know it. And the torture and denigration—unbearable. I am not writing this to complain. I am writing so that you will understand why I did not want to live. I only wanted to live for one year of my life, when my friend Daniel was alive and loved me.

So I wonder over and over why I remained alive. Was it fate or divine intervention? I did make some suicide attempts but they were not successful. I wondered about still being alive throughout all the years of my conscious recovery, but it was only this year, when I am seventy-two and pretty much integrated, that with Alison's help I remembered a do-not-die program.

On the one hand, my mother was teaching me to make "trees" along my arms and wrists with my father's razor blade. She seemed to take a special glee in teaching me to die. She also taught me to hold my head down in the bathtub.

At the same time, my biological father was teaching me to follow the Angel of Mercy to wherever it led—which would be to death.

So it was clear that my immediate family wanted me to know how to slit my wrists, drown, jump off bridges and roofs and crash.

Then why did they teach me simultaneously not to die?

The do not-die programming may have begun even before the suicidal programming.

On the roof of the apartment building where I grew up, my family strapped a harness around me. The harness had a very long leash attached. The programmer projected an image of this giant Angel of Mercy onto the sky. They told me at three years old, four years old, five and up to seven years old, to go to the edge of the roof. The Angel of Mercy lured me to the ridge, then blocked the other side of the ledge. It appeared that the angel blocked me, but the projectionist was really projecting the Angel's image between me and the sky. "Go back," the family all screamed together and tugged my harness backwards. I would have been happy to jump because I was already disillusioned with life, but they would not let me. "Daniel wants you alive." "You have to live." Over and over they led me to the ledge and then stopped the jump with the tug on the harness and their words.

Alison Miller describes similar trainings her clients received in her book, *Healing the Unimaginable* (2011, p. 188). Her clients were taught about hell in their cults and told that is where they would go if they killed themselves.

It is mind-boggling to be programmed in contradictory ways. I think most children growing up in the severely abusive and no-love atmosphere of generational mind-control cults would prefer death. But then they also have training to stay alive at all costs. This intentional mixing up of the mind and pulling it in opposite directions at once is typical of the insidious nature of organized, criminal mind control.

Once I discovered do-not-die programming, I felt disappointed. It was not divine intervention or fate. Once again, it was just mind control. I could not even choose whether to live or die.

Now that I am old and alive, I do not want to die. I want to expose these abuses, heal completely and help others heal. My programmers would not let me die. I will be so public, they will be sorry.

I understand the do-not-die programming. It takes effort, manpower, and money to mass produce automatons. They do not want all that work wasted. But if they are not going to let you die, why all the specific suicidal training? Is it to destroy self-esteem? Is it to give us the message that not only are we not loved and wanted, we also do not deserve to be alive?

One of the most painful lessons for Holocaust survivors was that many of the population wanted them exterminated, their whole race wiped off the earth. Perhaps the suicidal training for cult victims teaches them wrongly that they are considered similarly worthless and undesirable.

Those of us who have survived can show the world how resilient and worthy we are.

This dual and simultaneous programming of kill yourself/do-not-die affects the brain gravely. The parts inside who want to kill themselves and the parts who cannot are unable to coexist. This inability to coexist can create thicker and greater barriers. If a suicide program is acted on, its opposite will appear to wipe it out. That is not co-existence. It is dominance and eradication. It is dissociation that makes both "die" and "do not die" be present within the same person, without awareness of each other.

Programmed suicide and therapists

Alison Miller

Most therapists have received at least basic training in how to assess whether a client is suicidal, and how high the risk. They have also been instructed to take all suicide threats seriously, and to provide immediate service and possible hospitalization to clients with specific suicide plans or other risk factors.

All survivors of mind control and ritual abuse have suicide training. They also have "Do not die" training, as described in Wendy's previous essay. (The pairing of Die and Do not Die programming is typical of mind control. There is also Sleep–Do not Sleep and Run–Do not Run training.) Back to suicide: The perpetrator groups put a lot of time and money into training their mind-controlled victims, and they do not want them just escaping via death. I remember one client who detailed how she was taught exactly how many pills to take—one less than the amount that was potentially lethal.

At the same time, the suicide programming is very useful to the groups. If a survivor is working hard to get free, and the group cannot get hold of her, the perpetrators can trigger her suicide programming through a hand signal, and her mental health professionals will be obliged to hospitalize her, delivering her into the hands of the perpetrators on the hospital staff. If a survivor is remembering and telling about important known crimes, and is not very important to the group, the group might decide she is better off dead. It will help if she has made previous unsuccessful suicide attempts. That will make sure she has achieved the "Borderline" diagnosis, and has inconvenienced the care system sufficiently that they will just sigh when she eventually dies of apparent suicide. It will not even occur to her psychiatrist that it was actually murder. Two of my early clients who survived told me that the cult had broken into their apartments and forced all their pills down their throats in an attempt at murder disguised as suicide. Another one died (see Chapter One of *Healing the Unimaginable* (2011)), and her long history of suicide attempts came in useful to the perpetrators.

The Extreme Abuse Survey (see References section) discovered that mind control and ritual abuse survivors made many more suicide attempts than other extreme abuse survivors, but had no more successful suicides. So, therapists treating survivors need to be aware of the programming for unsuccessful suicide attempts and the "do not die" programming, as well as programming for successful suicide in cases in which the perpetrator group has decided the survivor is of no further use to them and might pose a risk. We need our own criteria for deciding whether a survivor client is a genuine suicide risk (on the basis of how much threat he or she poses to the perpetrator group), and if we believe a client is at genuine risk, we need to regard hospitalization as a last resort choice, unless we are 100% sure that our local hospital is not infiltrated by the perpetrator group. In my early years of working with survivors, I discovered that our local mental hospital was thoroughly infiltrated. The cult van made a regular stop at the front door during the dinner hour, to pick up survivors who came out "for a smoke," and reprogram them. I do not believe this is unusual.

Current contact

Wendy Hoffman

I have heard therapists refer to ongoing involvement with a perpetrator group as "current contact." That term implies agreement. It does not quite capture the situation. Cult members break into your home, terrorize and torture you, or they grab you off the street and take you somewhere to mind-control you, or they program you to appear at a designated place and time where they will do the same. This last option might be the worst because you have become even more the unwitting victim. None of these scenes imply consent.

Shall we call it, then, current abduction? Even in the third option, your mind has been abducted through formal mind control.

There are two reasons for current abduction: (1) your actions or words have indicated that you desire freedom and, therefore, have to be crushed and packaged in torture immediately. Or (2) the group that claims you does maintenance work and schedules mind-control sessions and rituals regularly throughout the year, in addition to formal holidays. You are programmed to attend, and might be punished severely if you do not.

Concerning break-ins for the purpose of stopping a quest for freedom, it is rarely one person who will break into your home. The group will have one programmer, and one or more people trained to administer torture to your body and possibly that of your pet(s). Since they will not have an electroshock chair in your home, the programmer will carry a Taser kit. The perpetrators will say something like: "You will never be free." "Terminate your therapy." (Even if your therapist is a cult-planted therapist, your controllers might feel he or she has not closed you down sufficiently.) "You are a slave, nothing but a slave." "We will kill your child if you continue. You will not continue." Etc.

In regular life, your torturers may appear completely normal and non-cult-like. Some might hold high positions in society, such as doctors, lawyers, teachers, politicians, religious leaders. They might be your friends in daily life, or family members, or go to your church.

When you remember a recent punishment event, listen to their words carefully, because these will show their intent. Perpetrators will say something like stop your friendship with X, stop reading books about mind control, get off the online message board, stop talking about programs. If they cannot stop you from continuing in honest and authentic therapy, then they will program you to kill your therapist and/or yourself. They can order homicide through mind control. You, of course, do not have to do what they command.

All this abuse will occur during the early morning hours, when your unknowing neighbors sleep and do not call the police. The police on duty at these times very well may be cult-police plants. These groups excel in coordinating atrocities. Their break-ins often occur early on Saturday mornings, so you do not go to work drugged and with prominent bruises.

When you wake up from your drugged state later in the morning or afternoon, your mind probably will not recall what happened to you hours ago. This abuse can take place month after month or even week after week or day after day and still you will probably not recall it. The parts of your mind that are tortured are buried within your internal mind-control system, not easily accessible. If you do not find them and do not move far away, this kind of most vicious abuse can go on indefinitely. It can continue even if you move away. These groups are no respecters of age and frailty. It pays to dig and scratch and get to the parts who endured it and hear what they have to tell.

Even when your mind holds no conscious account of what recently occurred, your body can tell you. There is no way to endure this level of torture and not have a sore and injured body. If they think you might run away, they could break your foot or toes, or dislocate your knee or hip. Your torturers intend for you to be sore. If your mind is closed, ask your body. Follow the physical pain and ask inside about it. Much rides on your knowing what is happening to you and why. Try not to rationalize it away with some cause from normal life, like new orthotics or taking too long a hike. Knowing about your ongoing mind control is your best protection.

Their second kind of torture is for maintenance. For these, you will have to attend rituals. You will be instructed to travel to ritual sites. Rituals are for mind control. They have theatrical demonstrations, orgies, drugs, sometimes human sacrifices, and punishment for others. Their main purpose is to control your mind and keep you in place.

It is better to know what is happening to you.

It is better not to give your mind over.

It is better not to fold under their threats of harming someone you love.

They might have already harmed your pet.

Do not collapse under feelings of betrayal. One of the torturers they send may be one of your own mind-controlled children. That adult may torture your pet. The rest of that person will not know what he or she was forced to do.

Do not fold. Your mind belongs to you, not to your perpetrators. Your best protection is learning how your mind-control system works.

There might come a time when you realize that the body pains you suffer from are not body memories of years ago but fresh wounds. And the insomnia is not old anxiety but a fear of another assault. And the panic attacks are not amorphous and about your whole life but about specific fears concerning the here and now.

If you have reporters inside who have not stopped reporting to the abuser group, stay where you are until you are certain they will not report your plans. What is the sense of hiding if you are going to tattle on yourself? Before you can leave, you must spend your time finding all your inside reporters and enlighten them that they do not have to tell anyone where they are and that they can lie as well. They can report to you any danger they perceive instead.

Once it filters into your conscious mind that you are being accessed and beaten up brutally, electroshocked and drugged, there is only one way to cope. You have to leave. You cannot stay in your home or even your locality.

Even if you have family—especially if you have family—a nice job, friends, a church, clubs, you have to leave. You have to leave if you are twenty-five or seventy-five. Make careful plans, then take action.

Handlers*

Wendy Hoffman

If you are a mind-controlled victim, you are likely to have a handler until you escape or die. A handler makes sure you follow all commands, that your programs remain intact, that you make no moves toward breaking free. A handler can be a male or female adult. Handlers used to be called "manufacturers" because they manufacture your life and consider you a mannequin. They do not love you. They differ from programmers, who split off the personalities within you, and teach these parts the programs and commands. Programmers used to be called "mind masters." Often, parts are told they were "created" by the Master and, therefore, would not exist otherwise and belong to him. Sometimes the same person works as a programmer and a handler. Handlers also differ from spies, who follow you around to get information about you and snitch to the cult. They used to be called "snitches." And torturers work directly with programmers to administer the physical brutality. They can also be sent out on their own to enforce a program or threaten by giving a physical warning.

How do you get a handler?

---

* This chapter appeared in the online journal *Survivorship*, Winter 2016.

All cult-born people have one until they are trained. If they have specific ongoing jobs to do in their particular cult, then they will be assigned handlers to track their course. Because the danger of sudden enlightenment or programs breaking down lurks throughout a lifetime, handlers keep a vigilant eye on their subjects. Their jobs are made easy because victims are programmed to report promptly if something is not working within. So, even if handlers have lazy spells, are distracted, or miss a beat, their subjects will bring any indiscretion or striving for freedom to their handlers' attention. It is quite a *pas-de-deux*. A handler wants the complete slavery of his or her victims. The victims cooperate fully because they have been mind-controlled from infancy on to do so. They are not aware of this entrapment or of their programming to live as rats in a maze.

Like a pimp, the same handler can monitor many people's lives. But cult victims who have highly visible or important jobs in the normal, non-cult world will have a one-on-one handler. Handlers can be parents, siblings, spouses, lovers, relatives, friends, or therapists. I have seen heads of countries, royalty, and elected officials with their spouses on television, and it appeared to me that the spouses had been given the job of monitoring every action and thought of the officials they were in charge of and married to. Many of the people in charge of the world we live in are manipulated marionettes on tight strings. People in important visible positions will have solid handlers who will not deviate from their loyalty to the satanic cult. If they break free, these handlers will be demoted and punished.

You know you are in particular trouble when someone that parts of you recognize from your division of the cult enters your ordinary life. That can only mean one thing, and it does not mean your long lost love has somehow found you. It means your programmers are worried about your realizing who you are and have sent a more powerful and vicious handler to you, someone who knows you from the prior cult days even though most of your parts might not remember this person's true and secret identity.

People in less visible positions might have handlers who are also blind victims. Your breaking free might even help them see their own entrapment.

Breaking free of these prisons entails becoming aware that you are imprisoned. One reason you might not know you are entrapped is because of the tight reins handlers keep on their victims. No move toward awareness or freedom is tolerated. You can break free anyway.

Begin by identifying the current handler in your life.

If you have a compulsion to call somebody, that somebody would be your handler. You might call to report a move, some change in your life, a memory breaking out, or any information that goes against your programming.

If the handler is a friend or boss, you can gradually ease away, but what if the handler is a husband or wife and the parent of your child or children? You can divorce, but what do you do about the children? This is an instance of how complicated life becomes when attempting to extricate yourself from the webs of evil.

Some people may feel that they have to remain a prisoner because breaking away is too dangerous or difficult. If this is the case, it still might be better for you to know what your programs and triggers are than to go through life numb and deceived. If you know who your handler is, you can lie to that person. You do not have to report what you are thinking and feeling. You can be inching your way to freedom and perhaps preparing your child or children to make a break, while hiding this information from the now-known enemy.

When you are advanced in your recovery, a helpful therapeutic method is to make a list of the handlers you have had throughout your life. They may be few or many, depending on your age and your position in your criminal organization. Knowing what your life is and who the enemy is helps you regain the humanity that was stolen from you as soon as you were born. It is a way to give birth to yourself by pulling yourself away from people who plan to keep you down, who plan to make you less than a human being.

No matter how difficult the struggle is to break free, it is worth it. Moving in the right direction has its own rewards. Even if you cannot take your children with you, you are leaving them the legacy that the fight for freedom is worth it.

Your handler holds your programs like so many pebbles in his or her closed fist. You can start to open your brain, which will force your handler to drop the pebbles.

Called back

Wendy Hoffman

Reporter parts of survivors let perpetrators know, usually via a family member, if the survivors are remembering or telling secrets. Then the call-backs happen. Return to find out what people remember. Return to get revenge. Return because granddad is dying. Etcetera. When a survivor returns to her cult family, she will most likely be tortured with electroshock, raped, and reprogrammed to know nothing about her secret life. Her amnesic barriers will be repaired and resurrected.

Survivors remember going home merrily to celebrate birthdays, parents' anniversaries, siblings' graduations, marriages, funerals, major holidays—the usual. They returned to visit someone hospitalized. Some family ties remained, so they had to participate. Then comes the bitter realization that they remember the before and after but not the event they were called home for, perhaps a ritual, with torture, drugs, and commands. Perhaps one of the survivor's programs had started to slip. Perhaps the person did not act according to schedule. Perhaps they did not respond promptly enough to telephone calls and emails. All that was repaired through torturous mind control during these imposed "visits" and "reunions".

When I started my memory process, I compulsively went back to my childhood neighborhood, planning to talk to people who lived there to see whether they had seen or heard anything which could have led them to suspect I had been an abused child. I was unaware that I followed a "return home" program. In my childhood neighborhood, I underwent torture and my mind was re-erased by those still living there. What I would have given to have been warned. Even if I did not listen, I would have known someone on the outside world cared. I believe I would have listened. It would have saved decades of my life.

If you are a survivor, do not be taken in by either your family's apparently warm invitations or your inner urgings to go home. If your family is cult, just do not go.

What do you do if you are a therapist who follows the rules and your client wants to cancel sessions for a while and go home to the family she grew up in? This client does not know yet about programming to return home when you start having memories. And her front person feels excited about seeing the family again.

As a therapist, you do not want to suggest. If the trip home is successful by cult standards, she will remember nothing and stop treatment. There may or may not be a second chance for her to have therapy to help dismantle the mind control. You can take the conservative approach and ask how the client feels about seeing her family again, whether she has any misgivings, whether anyone inside has reported that she is in therapy and working on remembering and associating.

You can target questions so that they bypass the front person who knows nothing and goes straight to the inside parts. "How do you feel about returning home?" Maybe one of the inside parts will pop through the amnesiac barriers to answer truthfully and say "Do not." But maybe not. Then it may be the moment to switch aim and address the front person directly. Who cares about suggesting? This human being might never get another chance at freedom.

Speaking as a survivor, I think this is the moment to tell the front person about "return home" programming. You can say it gently. It does not have to be hit-over-the-head direct, though sometimes that is the only way front people hear necessary information. But information should be conveyed even if it will not be listened to. At least you tried. Maybe the victim will hear it a decade later.

Therapeutic rules were not designed for war, or for life and death situations. There's a time to be cautious and a time to be bold. This might be the only chance. There are more important issues than correct therapeutic procedure. Safety comes first.

Why and how survivors are gathered

Alison Miller

In the years since I have been treating survivors of mind control and ritual abuse, there has been a great flowering of resources for these survivors. Websites with discussion boards on which survivors can talk about their experiences, coping strategies, and attempts at healing; first-person accounts of being victimized; books promising cures; Facebook discussion groups; conferences for survivors; support networks; safe houses.

What do all these things mean? Are we to rejoice that so many resources exist? Or are we to be wary? I would say the latter. We have to worry about more than disinformation. Any venue that brings together survivors of these abuses brings them into contact with persons who are able to access their programming through pre-arranged signals or cues, and set off various kinds of programs. One of my earliest experiences with this occurred when a well-known survivor who has written books visited Vancouver, along with her rescuer, who may have been her handler. At this event, which hundreds of people attended, we were all asked to fill out the Dissociative Experiences Scale, and use a pseudonym as our identity. At the end of their talk, they read out a supposed list of the pseudonyms of people who should be concerned about their dissociation. My colleague and I realized that these were just strings of letters and numbers, probably intended to trigger programming, plus those people were asked to remain behind to receive further "help."

I had another such experience in the mid-1990s when a well-known ritual abuse expert came to our area, and all the therapists attended his talk. Mine was one of the British Columbia locations where he spoke. Stella Katz (the former cult programmer who contributed to my books) attended, and told me he was wearing a ring which indicated very high cult rank, a ring which she had seen only once before. A client of mine became a quivering little childish ball of fear, saying only that she had seen him before and he was bad and had hurt her. And I heard him in the hotel elevator humming the tune of a nursery rhyme that I knew to be a trigger to cause an internal "earthquake" in survivors' personality systems, thrusting those systems into chaos.

This man announced that we could tell whether our phones were being tapped by calling a certain number in California; if we got a busy signal, it meant our phones were tapped. Afterwards, one enterprising therapist from another town, where he had said the same thing, contacted the California telephone company and they traced that phone number to a locked office from where it gave a perpetual busy signal. Our then network of therapists cancelled the rest of his tour.

Conferences can be wonderful places where survivors can learn from one another and from helpful speakers. But they can also be places where survivors are accessed by perpetrator group members and re-abused, including survivors who were physically safe prior to the conference. Perpetrator attendees or speakers can use hand signals or trigger words or visual images like tarot cards or playing cards to bring out compliant parts and trigger programs. They can knock on hotel room doors at night with patterned knocks designed to get a child part or an unsafe roommate to open the door, and then enter and abuse the survivor.

Perhaps online discussion groups might be safer. But not necessarily. If members are permitted to share personal information with other members, that information can be reported to perpetrator groups. Members can invite others to stay with them for conferences, and bad things can happen during such visits. Even online, words can be used to trigger programming. I do not have much experience with many of these websites or discussion groups, but I have enough to have seen this in action. “Matriarchs” gather members under their wing, providing what the members believe to be support, but actually keeping those survivors in line through the use of words and phrases with double meanings. An article on one website for survivors pooh-poohs the idea that hand signals and other triggers are real and can have actual effects on survivors, suggesting that those who talk about this are spreading paranoia and can lead survivors to go crazy. Some articles on such websites are very helpful; others include coded messages reinforcing programming and disinformation.

I know that survivors are lonely for others who understand their suffering and their attempts to find freedom. Recovery is a lonely journey. But loneliness is better than continued abuse. Survivors, be careful.

Danger, DANGER

Wendy Hoffman

Like hospitals and therapists, some safe houses for survivors are safe and some are not. It is up to survivors to use as much good judgment and discernment as possible before taking refuge in a safe house.

When I was banished from Canada, I was about to go out on my own. A woman telephoned Alison, saying she and a colleague were driving through Victoria, and requested an interview with her. The couple said they had a ritually abused friend, and wanted help in how to support her and other survivors of such abuses. They had started an organization to help people in this field. Alison thought they seemed sincere, so she asked if I could have safe temporary housing with them while I looked for a place to live. I was not overjoyed, but Alison was excited. She did not want to see me drive out into the blue yonder alone. I felt she was over-confident, though I did not tell her this. Eventually, I decided to go to them, though I had never met them and Alison had only met them this once. Despite Alison's enthusiasm and my trust in her, I think I might have resisted this ominous offer had other programmers not broken into my house and given me instructions to contact this disguised woman and take up residence there while I looked for permanent housing, or they would murder

Alison. I wondered why I changed my mind so abruptly. It was not that I reconsidered. It was programming. Watch for swift changes of mind in yourself.

The only thing that bothered me from the beginning was that this was all so coincidental. Once, when I lived in New York City, I was excited about meeting someone new and told my then Israeli handler, whom I did not know, of course, was a handler. He asked how I had met this person. I told him just by lucky chance. He shook his head. That is how I learned that in this world of bad mind control, serendipity and good coincidences do not occur, only awful set-ups.

When I arrived at the small, compact home in a western city, I met the woman, who had read, underlined, and studied my first memoir. She was an emaciated, perfumed woman with long red dyed hair and lots of make-up, married to a tall and rather obedient accountant. She talked constantly, was warm and outgoing. I would not have been able to tell she is an enforcer and torturer.

The husband and her colleague, the other male who made the initial visit to Alison, were present. We talked for a while. Then—I'll call her Liz—Liz insisted she and I go out for dinner, though I was exhausted. Later, I went to sleep. In the earliest hours of morning, they woke me, dragged me onto the floor and began the routine torture and enforcing that would go on for the seven weeks I was in residence there. Most of their commands were never to be in therapy again, not ever to write again, not to remember the new torture-based mind control. And I did not for a long time. Once a week, they drugged me and took me to an office building downtown where I had programming in electroshock chairs in the basement of psychiatrists' offices. Their overseer came by at least once a week. He had access to my computerized black books, where most of my programming information is stored. People are walking around with it now in their cell phones.

This effusive, anorexic woman did not seem cult-like, and neither did her tight male partner in their organization, or her friendly but blank husband, or their one personable adult son. Their other son, however, did show signs.

I could not tell, Alison could not, a sharp administrator for one of the conferences on dissociation (whose antennae are always outstretched) could not tell. Much later, I remembered having seen this couple attend mind control survivors' conferences and reprogram people there. I believe they go on assignment to targeted survivors who are high up in the cult hierarchy, or healing well and have something to give back to survivors and the world. We were all duped, even though this mind control team is not particularly bright. The ramifications are just awful.

A long time ago, in the 1950s, a Nazi group stole and sequestered three of my thirteen original split infants. These current Nazi programmers had the information about where these parts of me were hidden internally. They knew how to call them out. If you have even one infant who has not been incorporated into the main healed mind, then perpetrators can build on that part. That is what happened to me.

Besides my caution of danger, danger, this is all I can suggest: Survivors have been trained in psychic awareness, some more, some less. Engage your far-sighted psychic vision. With your inner eyes, observe the exterior of the person under scrutiny. Now use your internal energy to cut through the surface. Do you bump into an ice block, a core of frozenness that is frightening and off-putting? Do you see a narcissism (a sense of self-importance) that goes way beyond ordinary-life narcissism? Do you see a confusion of mind? These perpetrators often think they are helping their victims have better lives. If you see such characteristics, stay away. Perhaps you just see that the outside and inside do not match. If you go deeper, you may find a severely wounded child. Do not let that distract you. You are not there to rescue this person, you are there to assess. Where there is ice, self-involvement, and confusion, there may be a perpetrator, no matter what the surface projects and no matter how hurt the person may be. Do not take any chances. A suspicion is sufficient for stopping the relationship.

In addition, do not trust coincidences. Chances are, they were planted and you were targeted.

Do not give over your mind to someone else, no matter how much that person desires to help you and is also an expert. It would be lovely not to have to make all these important decisions alone, but it is only you who knows what is best for you, mind control or not. Often, it is safest to be alone.

Danger lurks out there, especially as you restore your self.

Discarding the interventionist God

Alison Miller

The length of time Wendy was allowed to stay in Canada was coming to an end, and I was quite worried about her return to the USA. To my knowledge, she had not experienced any abuse during the year she had been in Canada, and she and I often speculated about why that might be. Of course, we did not know that some of her previous perpetrators had made several visits to her, pulling out a small group of parts she had not yet discovered. And they knew when she was going to have to leave.

When the American woman, "Liz," from the fairly new support organization, contacted me, I was happy to meet her, and in the back of my mind was the possibility that these "supporters" could help Wendy through her next move. When I met Liz and her rather taciturn business partner, they seemed rather naïve but genuinely concerned. They said they were Christians who wanted to help survivors, including a woman they named as their friend. The timing, and the fact that they came all the way from the city they lived in to my place in Victoria, should have made me suspicious, but they did not. I took a leap of faith and asked them about the possibility of their helping Wendy (whose name I did not yet give them, of course) in exchange for my helping them support their survivor friend and speaking at a conference they were organizing.

I had grown up with honest, thoughtful, kind and gentle parents, and in benign and encouraging schools, so despite working with survivors of horrendous abuses, my natural tendency was to expect people to be good and to be what they said they were. Plus, somewhere deep in my own soul was a longing for the interventionist God I had believed in for at least twenty years beginning at the age of fifteen.

Could that God have sent people just at the right time? Oh, what a wonderful happy ending that would be. Somehow, it did not occur to me that those people might indeed have been sent, but not by Him. Although I do not remember our conversations on this topic, Wendy tells me that I encouraged her to trust the people who had said they were willing to take her in, assuming she was just responding from an automatic tendency to distrust even well-meaning people. I did not know she was going against an instinct that might have kept her safe.

Do not trust your therapist too fully; he or she is only human. The reality that your therapist is a decent human being and can be relied upon to care about you does not mean that he or she knows everything, especially about the dangers in this world. I am deeply saddened by Wendy's further abuse at the hands of people who appeared kind. Therapists, like their clients, are affected by their own past experiences. Those like me who are not child abuse survivors can all too easily see the world with rose-colored glasses. Those who are survivors, especially of mind control and ritual abuse, can all too easily grasp at straws to find a faith that will sustain them as they gradually become aware of what horrendous things they have endured.

How do we make sense of it all? Here are some things most people believe:

1. Good and evil exist, and we make choices about them.
2. There is a God who is good and loving.
3. God is also all-powerful.
4. Horrible things happen.

Mind control and ritual abuse are atrocities, and, to those of us who know about them, there is no doubt that they happen, and on a much larger scale than I ever imagined. How can such things happen, if a loving God has power over everything? Trying to make sense of these things, people come up with beliefs, such as:

- *Victims deserve what happens to them, because they are evil.* The abuser groups pound this idea into their victims' heads from day one. I cannot accept that an infant whose hand is used to stab a drugged victim is evil, or that someone who chooses the lesser of two evils is, therefore, evil, when no good choice exists.
- *Victims are being repaid by the law of karma for evil that they did in past lives.* It is easy for a ritual abuse survivor to believe this about him or herself, and I have known survivors who believed it, in order to make God and the universe just. But what about the African babies who are born with HIV, or the millions of people who died in the Holocaust and other genocides? More people have endured these horrors in the past century than the number of human beings who inhabited the earth before them, so the numbers do not work, if suffering in this life is a penalty for misbehavior in a past life.
- *God, in his love, sends ritual abuse as a special gift to purify the soul of victims.* I actually heard this one spoken by a "Christian" survivor therapist at a conference, and I walked out. What kind of God would do this? Perhaps this speaker did not realize how horrendous these abuses are. Her God was not a loving one.

Ritualistic abusers tell a little child to pray and see whether God comes to help. Of course, God does not show up. Then they suggest she call on Satan, and of course, the man in the red suit appears. Now she knows that either God is not loving, or God regards her as not worth saving, or God is helpless, or God just does not care, or God does not exist. And history shows us that God just does not stick his finger in and prevent atrocities from happening, even though the victors in all wars say God helped them. (Bob Dylan wrote a great song about that—*With God on our Side*.)

The only way I can make sense of atrocities and still believe in a loving God is by accepting that God does not intervene in human affairs in any direct manner. I have to discard the interventionist God, and I have to resist being lured into hoping that God is intervening, and remember that "When something seems too good to be true, it probably is." Believing in an interventionist God is dangerous. It can lead to passivity rather than active resistance against evil, and waiting around for help rather than helping ourselves. It can also lead us to trust people who are not trustworthy.

My alternatives are: Believe there is no God, or believe in a God who does not intervene, not because s/he is unwilling, but because the universe just doesn't work that way. Atheists and agnostics can still make moral choices, and choose kindness over evil, like the doctor in Albert Camus's famous novel *The Plague*.

I choose to hope that there is a God who loves, and who suffers with those who suffer, as we therapists suffer with our clients, even though He does not directly intervene. It is not a certainty, only a hope, based on survivors' near-death experiences and my own inner sense of connecting to a compassion within the core of me which might be beyond myself.

When they persist in trying to murder you . . .

Wendy Hoffman

I do not think that I am the only one whom perpetrators hound, attempt to trigger, and pursue.

Alison tells me that they let several of her clients go even before she met them, so that she could work with them freely as long as they did not report back to their group. She says that they made a deal with another, something like "freedom for silence." But that has not happened to me. I would not agree to silence at any rate. If I had the opportunity to make a deal, I would refuse it.

They pursue people like me who want to give back to other survivors and help repair the world.

Their preferred method is to make homicide look like suicide. They come into your home while the world sleeps and call out vulnerable inside parts. An intruder pries open the victim's mouth and another spills a bottle of lethal pills down his or her throat. That is probably the most common method. Alison tells me that two of her first group of survivor clients reported this kind of attempt to her, and, in *Healing the Unimaginable* (Chapter One), she describes the probable murder of a third, who supposedly climbed out her eighth floor window though she was too fat and weak to do so. I, too, had an ex-client who jumped out of a high window after men dressed as firemen entered her apartment. People in that community think it was a homicide.

Or they can break into your home, slit your wrists and make it look like suicide. If you have made prior suicide attempts, this is a bonus for the perpetrators, because investigators are likely to assume your death is suicide rather than murder. Murderers will call out a suicidal part before the homicide occurs, so that the victim will not struggle or make a noise.

Alison also tells me that they used to sneak up on her clients, drug them by putting a rag over their faces from behind, and drag them into a van. She cautions me to stay clear of cars so that I am not dragged into one. In the vans, they usually only torture but may also murder. I have had men sneak up on me and shove a gun into my back, then threaten me using code words.

Some of their methods of homicide are more indirect. They can tamper with your car, or enlist one of their suicide soldiers to drive into your car. Or they can push you off a bridge, order you to jump off a bridge, shoot you as you take a pleasant, normal kind of walk in a park (one of their sniper soldiers can do that).

You might have lunch with a good “friend” whom you do not suspect yet. That friend may easily slip poison into your food when you go to the bathroom or even look away for a moment. I was taught how to do this at political parties. They can also substitute your medications for poisoned meds that look the same. They even contaminate supplements. They place two cyanide tablets on the top of your bottle of supplements or vitamins. Cyanide and other poisons can be fashioned to look the same as your usual pills.

I am telling you these methods so that you can be aware. It is frightening but so much safer to know. If you remain oblivious, you are more of a sitting duck. Your best defense is to know every part of your brain that has been separated and named through mind control.

Another injustice is that the perpetrators have your “black book” with almost complete information on the parts, their names, how to call them out, their purpose, ages, and triggers. And you only have your recovery process and possibly a safe therapist who will not know so much about your mind control as the readers of your “black book.” The more parts you have knowledge of, the safer you will be. You can take them out of where programmers told them to live and move them to a new and healthy living environment—all done internally though you might have to change your external location as well.

If you always hated the group and did not want to join them, they might be after you. Since it is so very difficult to know who is safe and whom to trust, it is probably better not to confide in anyone until you are sure of the person, and you may never be sure. If you are absolutely sure that someone is safe, and you can tolerate living with someone, that protection might make you safer. But mind-controlled people can never really be absolutely sure. There could still be some part in your brain that has not told what happened. So it is wise always to be suspicious. How did you meet this "safe" person? Is this person connected to anyone in your cult? Some people have safe and courageous friends. Most do not. I do have three non-survivor friends who are safe and courageous. However, I was accessed on one of their properties. They did not know, of course.

Make a list of all your known perpetrators. You can have a section for suspected perpetrators whom you do not have memories about (yet?). People in survivors' worlds are usually cult. Better to be wary than murdered or even tortured and re-programmed. This process is long enough without further difficulties. All this reprogramming takes time to unravel, time taken away from when you might have a real life. Healing is not only finding your parts one group after the other, but also disengaging from your monitors and programmers, one contact person after the other.

Expect a lot of triggering communication. At least one of your "friends" will monitor your location and emotional mood. That person will scan you for traces of straining at the leash and wanting to be free. If you disappear even for a weekend, expect emails asking where you are. Also expect requests for favors. Another "friend" may want you to drive her or him somewhere. That will be a set-up to get you to a specific location, where others may be waiting.

A long distance "friend" may request to visit you. Say no. The emails will have trigger words that pull out vulnerable parts inside you. Actually, expect constant harassment. Expect guns, and look for the parts inside you that obey when they see a gun pointed at them or pressed into them even in a public place where there is no likelihood that the person will actually shoot it. Expect the worst and stay safe. Do not become over-confident if you have months or years of peace and non-harassment. Eventually, they might check up on you. Some survivors feel guilty about endangering other people who are helping them. There is no doubt that this is a horrendously dangerous field.

However, you are giving non-cult people the opportunity to be more decent as human beings. There is more to life than making yourself as comfortable as possible and making your children's lives as cushy as possible.

Keep fighting the criminals who harass you, keep fighting even if the criminals are your family.

The proximity of death raises questions of whether life is worth it. People with easy lives will be happy to preach to you. It is your decision alone. One of the benefits of not dying is that you are then still fighting them. Our purpose in being alive is not only to eat chocolate cake but also to help others and to make the world more free of evil.

Spy school: clues we missed

Alison Miller

I have said before that this is psychologically sophisticated organized crime. It is sophisticated in the way its trainers or programmers subdivide a child's brain through torture and threats, so that they can make that child do what they want, including things that are completely contradictory to that child's nature. It is particularly sophisticated in its security. Victims, for the most part, do not know they are victims, and do not know what has happened to them. Their family and closest friends can be perpetrators, and they will not know it. A victim can be tortured one night and go to therapy the next day and not remember what happened during the night!

External security is also sophisticated. Perpetrator group members deliberately infiltrate the systems that are designed to protect the vulnerable. That means they are among the police, among hospital staff (particularly mental hospitals), among therapists (psychologists, social workers, counselors), among physicians (particularly psychiatrists), among staff of non-profit agencies. The fox is guarding the henhouse.

Most of us who work in these settings are unaware that some of our colleagues might be members of such a group. Some of those colleagues who are group members might be conscious of it; others might be used unwittingly, as Wendy was when working as a therapist, a story she tells in *The Enslaved Queen* (2014). This is one of the things I do not want to know, but there it is. Wendy did not want to know it either—but she was willing to know it, and I was willing to hear it.

How do you know whether a person is a member of a perpetrator group? He or she will not come up to you and announce it, unless you are a dissociative survivor and the group member can give a cue to switch you to a compliant part, whose experiences you will not remember later. As we wrote in some previous essays, we had the awful experience of Wendy being in the hands of perpetrators, and being unaware of it.

Over the years of dealing with survivors and with colleagues, I saw many little clues that someone might possibly be a perpetrator group member or, at least, a victim, but I did not put them together until later. Here are some of the clues I remember as I look back. No one of these clues means much on its own, like the symptoms on a checklist, but put together they might alert us to be a bit suspicious.

Knowing too much about mind control, or ritual abuse, or dissociation, or about abuser networks

If a person demonstrates knowledge about mind control, ritual abuse, dissociation, or abuser networks that he or she would not normally be expected to have, you need to be alert and cautious. How would that person have obtained that information? If it is possible without arousing that person's suspicion, ask how he or she knows that. Perhaps it is innocent, but perhaps the knowledge comes from inside experience.

Example: A local junior trainee therapist spoke up in a Mental Health Center staff meeting when we were discussing a teenage boy I was treating. She suggested he might have a dissociative disorder. At that time, nobody knew about dissociative disorders—so why did she? I later discovered she was a cult member (when a relative of hers approached me for therapy, and disclosed to me the therapist's involvement).

Example: I was looking for local therapists whom I could train in working with mind control survivors. Someone I knew suggested another therapist in her own support group who had read my *Healing* *the Unimaginable* and recommended it to her to help with a client she was treating. I accepted supervision of the therapist, who seemed keen, though she said she had never had a survivor client before. I sent her a high-functioning ritual abuse survivor client. The client emailed me a few months later saying she had quit seeing the therapist, who was repeatedly missing sessions or cancelling at the last minute. It might be that the therapist was herself an unknowing survivor. Why would she have read my book if she had never seen such a client?

Example: A supposedly healed survivor who had spoken at a conference told me that the conference organizer had invited her (and me, the previous year) to speak as "the draw," in order to get survivors to attend and be accessed and reprogrammed. I had never heard of this technique with regard to conferences. I later heard evidence that the "healed" survivor was herself a plant, an active perpetrator. As the old saying goes, "it takes one to know one."

Seeming to know too little about areas in which they claim expertise

Sometimes people "pad" their resumés to appear to know things they do not really know. In other cases, like the examples below, people know far more than they want to let on that they know. Cult insiders may want to appear ignorant of such matters.

Example: A detective who said he was developing a model for how to investigate ritual abuse cases presented a muddled plan which involved only very basic police work, suitable for finding a little backwoods cult, not a sophisticated network. I wondered why he seemed to know so little. Wendy later discovered the hard way that he was a perpetrator.

Example: His business partner, who worked with sexual abuse survivors, initially refused to believe me when I told her that someone she had recommended to help a survivor had actually abused the survivor. When I told her that the survivor had reported that the woman had sexually assaulted her, the person who worked with sexual assault cases appeared shocked because I mentioned sex. Why would this be shocking to someone in such a profession, or to anyone who knew anything at all about mind control and ritual abuse?

Too much forgetfulness

Many factors, including illness and fatigue, can contribute to forgetting. But when people frequently forget conversations and agreements they should have remembered, it can be a sign of dissociation. This does not mean they are part of a perpetrator group, but it raises the possibility that they have been victimized and might be used by such a group. Or that they are trying to deceive you. Or that they are perpetrators trying to deceive you.

Lack of compassion, operating from just intellect

Higher-up perpetrator-identified parts in victims have been trained to have no emotions, the emotions being held by hidden child parts. They simply speak and act as they have been told to do. If a person you know goes into such a state, it might indicate that such a part is operating. "Conscious" perpetrators might be this way, with occasional episodes of raging frenzy when the emotions break through. Wendy tells me that she remembers at least four different master programmers having meltdowns and psychotic breaks during programming sessions, starting with her grandfather, Max and Mengele.

Example: The local therapist trainee who turned out to be a cult member co-facilitated a therapy group for teenagers with me. The group was always very quiet, as the trainee therapist, who was the primary leader, seemed to follow a rigid plan rather than being flexible in responding to the members' needs. She felt to me as if she had a block of ice at her core, cold and unreachable. When she left the center and turned the group over to me, the members immediately bonded and began to open up with one another—but not until she was gone.

All four of the cult-involved therapists that Wendy went to before she found me fitted into this category. One treated everyone like a specimen, one was very judgmental and looked down on people, one was very self-righteous, and one was extremely self-centered. Wendy's front person saw glimpses of pleasure when they lied to her, frustrated her, or made her feel stupid. The one who was a cult programmer took particular delight in torturing and demeaning her.

Becoming rigidly attached to a certain approach; speaking in a manner as if reciting without tolerating interruption

People with brain damage, and people who are highly emotionally triggered, may do this. Some people in an emotional state can only think in a linear manner, and need to control the conversation in this way. However, some people doing this might be speaking from programming, using words they have memorized and have to speak in the order they heard them. Sometimes, such people are just victims rather than perpetrators. I have learned to use this clue to recognize when a survivor I am speaking with is speaking from programming rather than thinking independently. Persons who are part of perpetrator groups believe the lies the groups told them, and are likely to speak memorized lies.

Example: Two cult-involved therapists that Wendy went to were hyper-religious, putting forth their supposedly Christian religious beliefs in a very self-centered manner rather than tuning in to the client.

Twisting the truth about other people, accusing people you know are innocent of being perpetrators or plants

The community of those who attempt to help survivors is constantly suffering from splits as some accuse others of having nefarious motives. When I hear such things, I have learned to look at the accuser first rather than the accused.

Example: The supposedly healed survivor whom I mentioned under the first subheading above accused a number of other speakers at the conference where she had given a talk of being part of the perpetrator group. Some of those speakers are respected clinicians whom I know well enough to be quite sure they are not perpetrators, even though the fact that someone is a respected clinician does not guarantee he or she is not a perpetrator.

Example: A clinician I knew well went on sabbatical, and handed a survivor client over to another clinician at her workplace. Within a short time the client, backed by her new therapist, was making outrageous allegations against her former therapist, a person I know personally to be someone of great integrity. The collaboration with the new therapist, who would have no way of substantiating the allegations against her colleague, makes me more suspicious of the new therapist than of the client, who would be simply believing deceptions of the perpetrator group.

Example: Wendy had personal experience of several politicians being involved in mind control. One of Wendy's cult-involved therapists told Wendy's front person, disdainfully, that one politician was "the satanic pick," while saying that another, whom other parts of Wendy had seen at the Feast of the Beast, was a good man. In retrospect, it showed Wendy that the one accused by the therapist must be a less evil man.

Making accusations against one another to confuse you

Perpetrators who are in cahoots often pretend to dislike one another. They may accuse one another of being cult plants, thereby demonstrating their own apparent innocence. Do not be deceived by this. Remember that the fact that if someone accuses someone else of being a perpetrator, it does not mean that the accuser is not a perpetrator, even if the person accused is one.

Example: Wendy's cult-assigned boyfriend pretended he did not like the cult-assigned therapist with whom he worked as a team. Wendy's programmer therapist frequently said bad things to Wendy about her assistant programmers and her cult-assigned boyfriend.

Example: The "healed survivor" who spoke at the conference made accusations against everyone associated with that conference, not all of whom were innocent. The innocent and the guilty were put in the same package in her accusations.

Entitled, demanding, or demeaning behavior

In general, it is wise to watch out for people who want to use you for their own ends. This is even more true of "conscious" members of organized perpetrator groups. Such people tend to be narcissistic, to look down on survivors, and to need power. Wendy reports that all four of her cult-involved therapists were like this. If someone shows these characteristics, be suspicious. Be especially suspicious if they give orders that a survivor instantly obeys. Wendy, on the basis of her own experience, says: "When a survivor gets up and starts mindlessly following directions she doesn't want to, it is probably mind control. It would be fine to scream at the survivor, snap fingers in her face, shake her. Anything to bring her back to consciousness."

Example: When Wendy left Canada and stayed for seven weeks with the "helpful" woman I sent her to, she told me that she was doing all the woman's shopping, cooking, and housework and paying for all the food. I thought this was odd, but did not put two and two together. I assumed that Wendy must have offered to help out, and the woman had accepted her offer instead of asking her to pay rent. I knew that Wendy's mother had always had a cleaning lady, and, consequently, Wendy had always had one, too. Wendy herself did not catch on to what was happening, because of dissociation. The woman turned out to be a perpetrator, and Wendy's housework behavior, inconsistent with her nature and habits, was programmed obedience. I should have noticed.

Example: Wendy flew to another city to hear me present a day-long workshop for therapists. She and I returned on the same flight. I was to have a long layover in the airport where she was disembarking, and she told me that she would stay with me for a few hours before driving to her destination. The same woman in the previous example had Wendy's car, and Wendy was to call to be picked up. When we had been in the airport a very short time, the woman phoned Wendy and told her to come and be picked up immediately. Wendy obeyed instantly, though she grumbled to me. I was quite surprised. I assumed that she did not want to inconvenience the woman, who had apparently looked at the flight schedule, seen when the plane would arrive, and gone to the airport rather than waiting for Wendy's call. I did not recognize what Wendy's instant obedience indicated: that the woman was a handler and Wendy was headed not to a pleasant drive home but to a torture session. I did not stop her.

Over-friendliness, appearing to have too much in common with you, or flattering you

Even when you are not dealing with people involved in organized perpetrator groups, over-friendliness should raise questions. One woman in my housing complex has used little bags of chocolates on festive occasions, leaving them at people's doors with a nice little note. Why? She is a realtor and she wants our business. Although the rest of my new neighbors are reasonably friendly, they do not invite me into the center of their friendship groups. They continue with their existing friends, and I with mine. If someone does not, they are after something. If you are a mind control victim, or a therapist for victims, and someone tries to be your best buddy, ask yourself what they might want.

Since I am not dissociative, I cannot be accessed through hand signals or other triggers. I cannot be tortured and mind-controlled to forget it. However, I can be deceived. When someone within my network of therapists and survivors tries to get close to me, flatters me, or praises me too much, and echoes what I say rather than stating their own views, I wonder why they are trying to manipulate me. Although I do not mind well-deserved appreciation, flattery is something different; it means the person has an ulterior motive. The flattery may speak about something realistic, but its intent is to manipulate.

Example: A woman contacted me via LinkedIn. Although she had a different identity on LinkedIn, she named herself as a well-known internet blogger who helped break open knowledge about ritual abuse and mind control. The original blogger, whose work has frequently helped my understanding, disappeared several years ago and there is speculation regarding whether she is dead or in hiding. The woman claiming to be her was inviting me to view her new website, which purported to be a continuation of the original person's blog. I asked her a number of questions about her background and how she'd managed to keep safe all those years, and how she had originally been used by the major perpetrator group. Her creative answers about her background did not fit with what the original person had written several years ago. She appears to be an impersonator, which means the original blogger is probably dead, or no one would claim to be her, and the new website is probably one to be avoided, especially by survivors.

Example: A supposedly healed survivor dropped my name and misquoted me in a blog post on her website, saying "I was just chatting with Alison Miller," as if we were the best of buddies. The fact was that I had spoken with her by telephone for perhaps ten minutes, and we had never met in person. The rest of the blog post promoted an approach to healing with which I thoroughly disagree. I felt used, and put in a response to the post indicating that I had been misquoted. My response was erased, and I am now on that website on the list of services to be avoided.

Example: When Wendy moved to a new location, several women immediately became friends with her, inviting her into their circle and engaging in activities with her. From a distance, I marvelled at the way she was able to make friends so quickly, unlike me in my new location. It turns out that my neighbors are normal. Wendy's friendship group members turned out to be on assignment from you-know-whom.

Perpetrator groups assign friends, boyfriends, and girlfriends to survivors in order to control them. Wendy remembers a programmer telling her to get rid of a boyfriend, saying "You are not allowed to have a boyfriend unless we send him to you." When a survivor is alone and becoming rebellious, what could be better than a potential partner, sent with the right moves to become intimate with the lonely and isolated survivor and become his or her new handler?

Example: Wendy produced and performed the play *INCEST: Remember & Tell*, and suddenly an old boyfriend, the one assigned by the cult to be the "king" to her queen, appeared in her life. He wormed his way into her play, changing things to its detriment, ousting her from her television spots and usurping her audiences. He came into her life to silence her and to pull her followers away from her.

Unexpected rudeness

When someone who has become friendly with you suddenly attacks you or cuts you off, you are taken aback and understandably confused. It can indicate that the person's friendliness was actually acting, something perpetrators are pretty good at, and they have become tired of doing it. Survivors are likely to take this rejection personally rather than scrutinizing the other person's motives.

Example: Not too long after Wendy moved away from a recent group of torturers, the woman who had hosted her suddenly blocked her emails, presumably because she was tired of trying to maintain the superficial side of the relationship. She denied having done it.

Example: A woman in a poetry workshop whom Wendy thought was a new friend read Wendy's memoir and then told Wendy she should never have written such a thing and that she was full of darkness. This statement reinforced all Wendy's programming about being evil and being unacceptable to normal people. Wendy discovered some time later that this was actually not a normal person, but the head of a local coven.

Coincidental timing

When something happens just at the right time, it might not be divine providence, and it might not be a happy coincidence. It might be the result of planning on the part of perpetrators. When people come out of nowhere and seem to have a great deal in common with you, or to have just the expertise you need, be cautious.

Example: I wanted somewhere safe for Wendy to stay when she left here, and "support people" showed up just at the right time. I thought it was divine providence. It was not. They had formed this support organization in order to access survivors for no good purpose.

Example: A local therapist approached me to become one of the associates in my practice. Unlike my known associates, she expressed an interest in working with survivors of mind control and ritual abuse. Of course, I received many more such referrals than I could take, so I would be happy to find someone who was willing to take on the challenge of this work. I presented this woman's credentials to my existing associates. Fortunately, one of them knew a great deal about her history, information which was not on her resumé, enough to make me suspect that she might be at least a survivor of such abuses and possibly an active member of a perpetrator group. I did not accept her.

Some of these examples are from my own life, some from Wendy's. Each of these "little things" I wondered at, but I did not wonder hard enough. I did not want to be paranoid. I was brought up to think the best of other people. People who appear to be helpers, who are dedicated to caring for those who have been hurt—how could I be suspicious of them? But I should have been.

I recently said to Wendy, "I never went to spy school." And she replied, "This *is* spy school." Reader, welcome to spy school.

SECTION VI

THE SURVIVOR'S DAILY LIFE

Ask inside

Alison Miller

Survivors of criminal abuse including mind control can be triggered into unpleasant emotional states and false beliefs even when their programming is no longer operating. If you have not processed all your traumatic memories, you are vulnerable without realizing it to being influenced by emotions and beliefs from your inside parts, emotions and beliefs which belong to the parts' past experiences rather than to the present.

A survivor was functioning well in a challenging workplace for which she had been required to provide a Criminal Record Check from the police. This would have been a simple statement that she had no criminal record—that is, according to the police she had never committed a crime. She had managed it satisfactorily the first time, going to the police station and getting a sealed envelope from the front desk and giving it to her supervisor. But several years later, the supervisor approached her and told her that the workplace had lost her Criminal Record Check, and they would like her to provide another. She became really upset, and the supervisor tried to joke with her about how she must be hiding some criminal activity, which only made things worse. She became convinced that her supervisor was out to get her. She would not listen to me when I said that there was no risk here. She did, however, permit me to ask the insiders in her personality system whether there was any memory regarding police. And, of course, she had the usual anti-police programming: As a child she had been taken by cult people dressed as police to an apparent police station where she was locked in a cell, told she was a criminal, and abused, and told that if she ever talked to the police this is what would happen to her again. I explained to her internal leaders that this was a cult trick, and that the Criminal Record Check was simply a brief statement that she (as an adult) had never been arrested for any crime. It would simply be picking up an envelope, just as it had been previously.

A survivor client of mine had been clean and sober for many years, but had previously had a drinking problem. She reported to me, with great embarrassment and shame, that she was coming home from work and drinking because the stress of her workplace was too great. I attempted without success to deal with this by finding her healthy relaxing activities she could engage in when she got home. It did not help. So I asked her inner children. It turned out that the source of the problem had nothing to do with the workplace. The adult had been searching online for children's cartoons and films which her child parts could watch on her computer. Pornographic images (advertising) would flash on the screen and she would immediately turn them off. But children inside her had seen them. Little children who had been used in pornographic films. They saw the images, and saw she was looking for films, and thought they were about to be abused again. So they made her drink alcohol, because her main abuser had fed her alcohol to make her compliant while she was posed for the pictures. The alcohol made the filming bearable. Fifty years later, they were preparing for abuse that was never going to happen again. I explained to them that they were safe now, and then I explained to the adult front person what was triggering her drinking. She was very relieved that she was not an addict or an alcoholic after all, and she agreed not to surf on any websites she did not already know were entirely safe. She could have figured this out for herself if she had simply asked inside; she did not need me to do that for her.

If you are a survivor of organized abuse, and you start to develop anxiety, or overreactions, or an addiction, there is one important thing you can do: Ask inside. Ask your insiders, especially the children, what is bothering them. What mistaken beliefs or feelings, based on memories from the past, are causing the symptoms? Unless the cause is current abuse, you will be able to solve the problem by working together with your inside children. If the cause is current abuse, however, you have a more serious problem, but it is better to face up to it than to remain ignorant of it and continue to be abused without awareness. If it is current abuse, you need to work on a way to make it stop or to escape.

If you are a therapist, when you see symptoms in a dissociative person, it is important to focus on the person's internal dynamics rather than on the known external events of present-day life. For example, you might ask:

"May I speak with your insiders to find out whether something is bothering them?"

Front people often resist this: "No, it's just me, I've got plenty of problems." They are afraid of finding yet another terrifying memory that they would prefer not to learn about. You could respond:

"Inside kids often have reactions to things in your life, and their feelings may leak through to you. Just let me check, or maybe you'd rather ask them yourself."

Then you, or the client, checks with the insiders and the explanation is often pretty straightforward.

Asking inside is very important for all survivors, not just for solving problems like these but for managing daily life and for resolving your traumas. If you are a survivor, in order to heal well, you need to meet your insiders' needs. You can do this best if you ask them what they need. If you have a flashback or a nightmare, it is probably coming from some inner part who is stuck in that memory and does not know how things have changed. Your internal leaders can find that part and rescue him or her, update that part on present life and safety (if you are safe), and put that memory on the waiting list for processing. If you have physical pain, you can ask your insiders whether someone inside is in pain from a memory, or whether someone has been recently hurt, or whether the body is actually ill. You cannot figure these things out without talking with your insiders. This is why the perpetrators forbid your front person to communicate internally. This is why you must do what they do not want you to do.

Mind-controlled and frozen in time

Wendy Hoffman

Many survivors feel that the after effects of traumatic abuse dominate their lives. The majority of each survivor's life is spent in ordinary life, usually handled by the front person with relatively ordinary thoughts and feelings. Still, there are always dark flashes and strange sensations leaking from survivors' depths, especially if something in ordinary life happens to touch on what really happened.

Satanic rituals occur at most once a month normally. That is three to four hours taken up per month. Programming sessions take place during childhood once a week while the programmers are splitting the brain and inserting commands that they consider to be lifelong and that they want followed. Maintenance programming occurs far less frequently. Punishment tortures usually occur no more than once a month. Some groups just hold rituals seasonally. Some master-madmen like Mengele and Cameron hold all-night mind-control sessions, but those are rare. So, the actual time spent being tortured and/or mind-controlled is a small fraction of the total time you spend in ordinary life doing everyday actions. Yet, the impact of the monthly ritual and weekly mind-control session is almost constant in your life.

The terror does not get a chance to subside. At times, during ordinary life, you may not feel the terror, but it is there all the time, sizzling like a volcano waiting to erupt. Parts inside you experience heightened terror constantly.

There is more than a residue of powerlessness and defeat. Those feelings make up the backbone of the survivors' lives and do not easily abate. The anxiety is strong enough to move a mountain.

When non-traumatic events occur, they wash away in time and eventually are not recalled. But traumatic occurrences stick and freeze out the cleansing flow of time. They become cemented and cannot be budged or prodded out. They took up such a relatively small amount of time, yet consistently control the personalities and mind-set. They form your cognitions about life and prevent entering life fully. They wash over many of life's other experiences and form the negative self-concept.

Cult groups must feel quite threatened lately. If they are worried about one of their victims, they might hold torture sessions nightly. That is one of their innovations. It may hurt but not be more effective. Nightly sessions are usually held if the victim is under a form of house arrest, such as living in a perpetrator's home as a guest or prisoner, or with a roommate, parent, sibling, or child who is a trained perpetrator and torturer.

The mind-control designers knew the principle of the younger you are, the more intensely you feel. The rigidity and endurance of these emotions and beliefs go back to infancy, as do new programs and commands. The new ones are rooted in earlier programming that took place in infancy and childhood.

If the traumas of rituals and mind control have such potent and lasting impact, is there any way to lessen their blow? Can, for example, a smiley face become just the common smiley face and not a trigger to report back to a handler? Or can a playing card, say the Jack of clubs or spades flashed at you, not be read as a trigger to kill yourself or someone else? Can objects of day-to-day life lose their associations and become simply what they are and not loaded with perverse meaning?

If the front person and other parts do not know what the rest of the system has experienced and endured, the feelings from the traumatic life will remain alive though buried. As the system unearths what is held inside and understands how all those feelings and wounds got there, they will have the opportunity to be released and healed. But they have to be remembered and re-experienced, though very briefly. If they remain unknown and hidden, they will stay alive and untouched, unfortunately.

If the front person has become co-conscious or integrated with the rest of the system, those feelings and cognitions will begin their healing journey on their own. Inside parts are not oblivious. They can perceive when life has changed, when they are no longer victims, when they can touch freedom. How you feel behind bars and how you feel in a grassy meadow are different. The insiders will realize there is no reason to bring a barred prison onto a field of wild flowers. Reality can catch up with tortured insiders.

Even after you are free from the tortured intensity of keeping the trauma alive, even after you have accomplished considerable repairing of yourself, you might not feel the way other people feel. Why should you? Your life has not been like theirs and even if they want to try, they can never conceive of what your experiences were like. They can imagine the heart of evil but they do not know it. Some people will be kind to you, but you may still feel lonely. The loneliness will not have the intensity you used to feel because you are no longer composed of many tortured infants and children, some of whom lost the only person they thought loved them. You will probably spend time nurturing yourself. You have been through a great deal. Now is the time to go slowly, to rock yourself, to care for the chronic physical injuries, to step away from intensity and frozenness, to soothe and love yourself for who you have been and who you are. If the infant pieces inside you still need healing, sing lullabies to them.

It would be lovely to say that relationships will be good from now on and that life is sweet. But that is not realistic. Sometimes it is depressing for survivors to be with normal people, even kind ones. Many of them are relaxed within themselves and their bodies, love life, and have many pleasant memories that make up their being. They are even relaxed about their mistakes. They do not think they have to be perfect. And they have family relationships that have buoyed them up, even if they occasionally tear them down. Survivors, even healed ones, have strips of ice and rage within. They grew up under such intense conditions that normal recreational activities do not usually do it for them. They rarely have nurturing memories to fall back on and often prefer to be alone. Whoever you are, you are. Praise yourself for being you. Believe in yourself.

The strong and brave ones (previously known as the garbage kids)

Alison Miller

I have known for a long time that that many survivors of mind control and ritual abuse have insider parts called the garbage kids or expendables (or, in the UK, rubbish kids). They are to be found, naked and dirty and smelling of urine, in internal garbage dumps, usually with nasty things like insects and rotting flesh. These places in the inner world are copies of real-world places where these parts were dumped when they violated the abusers' rules by refusing to obey important commands. Several times I have assisted survivor clients in rescuing the garbage kids, cleaning them up, and giving them clothes and comfortable, warm internal places to live. But until recently I have not thought about the strengths of these insiders or the ways in which they can help with recovery.

Recently, a client's young insiders were telling me about a group of internal girls trapped under the floorboards of the internal copy of the primary abuser's living room, put there as a punishment for disobedience. I searched for insiders who were brave enough to get them out of the room where the internal copy of the abuser was asleep in a chair. The ones I was talking with said, "I'm not brave," "I'm weak," "She might catch me." I realized I needed some insiders who were strong and brave, and I thought of the garbage kids, who had been rescued (by self-created parts who lived in the trees) from an outdoor garbage dump. Like the girls under the boards, they were courageous and outspoken. We planned to ask the garbage kids to go where the obedient ones had not dared to go.

Another survivor client has been struggling with a bullying supervisor at work (in the real world). This boss intimidates her by micromanaging her work, and saying things like “Are you all right?” This brings out (just behind the front person) the little girls who feel afraid of bullies like their father, and the adult feels anxious and close to tears, although previously she was feeling all right.

The first thing we tried was enlisting the top soldiers in her now cooperative system to strengthen the front person. We were both surprised that this did not work, and we had to figure out why. These “tough guys” were actually, like anyone in the military, trained to obey orders instantly rather than to defy authority. They (or rather, the discarded parts from whom they had been split off) had been severely punished for any assertiveness or sign of insubordination. These seemingly strong leaders were, therefore, very vulnerable to the bullying supervisor, trying much too hard to follow orders even when the orders made no sense. Although they had given orders in the inside world, they had always obeyed in the outside world, and even though they did not show their emotions, they were dominated by fear.

So, we thought hard about who should be present with the adult front person in the workplace. And we thought of the garbage kids. These were the ones who had stood up to authority despite the punishment. They were willing to be assertive—which was exactly what was needed. They accompanied the adult to work for the next week. She found herself able to stand up to her supervisor, make a good argument when the supervisor was wrong, and resist intimidation. The supervisor’s bullying decreased as she realized the survivor was not going to react the way she wanted her to.

Find your garbage kids, and make good use of their strengths when you need the courage to stand up for yourself or what you believe is right.

Survivors and illness

Wendy Hoffman

Like everyone else in the world, survivors get sick. They get sick because of germs or viruses or diseases like cancer, or as reactions to their having been abused and tortured, or some combination of both.

When survivors become ill, they have to deal with the symptoms of the illness and all that these symptoms evoke. Body memories can creep into the experience of sickness. The body memories can derive from what happened a long time ago. The brain experiences what was done in the far distance as if it were happening in the present time. Survivors are, and have been, fairly regularly tortured. In their everyday life, they probably do not know about the physical abuses; otherwise they would immediately leave their areas and go into hiding. They stay because their parts who live ordinary lives do not know that the night before they were tortured almost to death.

When survivors have serious illnesses with agonizing symptoms, unconscious memories of the torture scenes may emerge. The real pain waltzes with the remembered pain and the agony becomes magnified. Unless the other parts of the brain are integrated with their front parts, the ill survivors will not know they are dealing with a mixture of real and recalled symptoms. One survivor's intestinal infection awoke parts who had always felt that way when they had been starved and purged in preparation for a ritual. Her parts turned on the “keep awake” program (made by poking her whenever she fell asleep) because they thought a ritual was imminent. This went on for weeks, and as a result her recovery from the illness was delayed.

Here are some danger spots for the sick survivor: If the memories start to become more real in a survivor’s conscious knowing, she might temporarily lose her will to live. In the middle of fighting a real illness, this development can be fatal.

Another complication is survivors’ hypersensitivity to chemical drugs. At least when I was an infant, perpetrators used to place babies on sheets doused in chemicals, to increase their misery and make sure they felt abandoned. Over the years, other, stronger chemicals are used to sedate or control them. Eventually, the victims may develop an intolerance to any kind of chemicals. The medicines doctors prescribe often produce rashes and other dangerous side effects.

Most doctors will not believe survivors’ pasts so it may not pay to tell them.

Some survivors might do better with holistic doctors. They can take the holistic medicine and not react to chemicals. Holistic doctors probably will not believe the stories either.

When survivors become ill, there is a potential for complications. Be armed with good self-care, a comfortable bed, lots of juices in the fridge, chicken soup in the freezer just in case, and the knowledge that you may have to fight to have a will to live. Do not do memory work until you are well, even though body memories are present. Put the narrative on hold for a while.

If you have support people in your life, allow them to help and comfort you. This is a time when you need help no matter how independent you may want to be and are.

However, this is when family usually moves in, even if you have separated from them and attempted to cut off contact. They are always looking for a way to get back in your life. Local informants and spies may tell them you are ill and vulnerable at present. This is a moment they might regain control of you, all in the guise of wanting to help their own. They will be destroying you as they look good to the world.

If possible, do not let handlers, programmers, informants, or “friends” know that you are ill or injured. If they find out, they will most likely use this time to insert other program and torture sessions into your life. They take advantage of weaknesses. They prey on vulnerabilities. They will use vulnerabilities that occur by chance and those that they create. Imitate animal behavior and hide the pain and weakness from them.

For example, when I was stung by an underground hive of yellow jackets and had an allergic reaction, my torturer immediately wanted to visit. I had not had contact with her for months prior to this mishap. At that time, I did not know she was a programmer and torturer and had been assigned to me. She is not a generous or helpful person, but she wanted access to my house. I told her I was too sick for company. She offered to stay in a motel and just visit with her husband for a few minutes. Fortunately, I said no. However, because I was ill, I could have used someone who was genuinely helpful to look after me.

If you do not have honest support people in your life, and you need help with basic activities like bringing in groceries, cooking, or walking your dog, consider hiring a home health aide. Be careful about where you get the recommendations from. An agency's referrals may be safer. I got a referral from a "friend" who turned out to be the leader of a coven where I live. I did not know that at the time. This particular home health aide was safe and good. Still, it is better to be cautious.

Medical doctors have tortured victims of these mind-control abuses. People with intelligence and medical abilities who are born into these groups are spotted through aptitude tests, sent to medical school, and become the cult doctors who torture and program. In the church I had been forced to attend, the cult-involved leaders sent a young lawyer to medical school, because they needed the services of a lawyer–doctor. Because of past abuse by doctors, victims are usually afraid of physicians and avoid medical treatment even when they need it. Sometimes, they delay treatment for too long. Most medical professionals are not cult people. Use your inner sense and judgment when attempting to find an honest doctor. Do not get a referral from anyone who might be cult involved.

Hospitals might present an even greater threat to recovery. Most of us were abused in hospitals at some time in our lives. Some hospitals have been taken over by cult personnel, others only partly. Some hospitals are clean and honest. When I lay semi-unconscious in a rural Delaware hospital recovering from a long-delayed surgery, my ex-boyfriend/handler entered with a woman who looked like me. Perhaps they thought I would be jealous of her, but I pitied her. These two had planned to murder me by placing poisons in the IV. He tortured me before she heard the nurse's footsteps coming down the hall that warned him. They fled uncaught. That is routine practice. It is no wonder we survivors avoid hospitals. Nonetheless, there are some safe ones and times when a hospital can save your life.

If/when you get a serious illness, stop all extraneous activity, even recovery work, and focus solely on self-care and becoming well again. Be careful of who surrounds you.

Life in the midst of cultists is hard enough when you are well and healthy. Reserve the tiny bit of strength you may have for keeping your illness secret from the enemy. Because your whole life is a war zone, you are equipped to handle the danger. Your life has been a rehearsal for recovering from illness.

Things will not last forever

Wendy Hoffman

I used to think that all bad or unpleasant things would last forever. This false belief filled me with chronic dread. If I had to go to a film I did not want to watch, I felt the experience would never end. At a noisy restaurant, the bad meal would be everlasting. Visits with people I did not like might never stop. Family vacations. Lectures. Anxiety and guilt could be constants. Physical pain, never ending.

After I achieved considerable recovery, when the belief in frozen ever-afterness evaporated, I had to consider why I had felt like that before.

Programmers create personalities that they say live in isolated containers. They teach the victims' minds to believe that lie, and they show a physical representation of the prison-containers to the child victims. Children do not know these parts and pieces were splintered off from the main brain, the mainland, through drugs, torture, isolation, and lies. They do not consciously know with their whole minds that these segregated parts have been made to falsely believe that they live in boxes, wells, freezers, caves, tubes, tunnels, cages, or other such holding containers. Sadistic programmers split off these parts when the body was young. Having no further life experience, these parts remain at that age for the rest of the body's lifespan or until they break out or are rescued. In the beginning of recovery, few personalities can become aware of themselves without outside help.

Many parts of the brain are frozen indefinitely. These sections live in a stasis. Consequently, the whole system absorbs the feeling of any one state becoming permanent, without interruption, without relief. Hence, the dread of life.

After recovery, one of the previously persistent attitudes that disappears is this boxed-in feeling that things last forever. As the barricades imposed on the mind fall away, the boxes and other containers open, personalities are released from their prisons, and attitudes naturally alter enormously. The brain parts realize they had been separated and imprisoned against their will. Released, they do fast growing and catching up and experience a multitude of emotions. They gradually mature from where they started, which may be younger than five, to the biological body's age. Consequently, this feeling of entrapment and the unpleasant sensation of stasis fall away.

In reality, things do not last forever. Balance replaces this dread. Dinners end. So do films, conversations, and relationships. Everything is in flux, just as the ancient Lucretius claimed. Like rivers, with highs and lows, floods and droughts, and balance. One summer, you cannot water your lawn. That fall, the rivers overflow. To see things as stasis is not to see reality. Even electroshock ends. And ignorance. And mind control. And torture.

You can be with people you do not particularly like and know it will end in an hour or two. You can endure a bad meal in a noisy restaurant for an hour and a half. Feelings pass. Some are unpleasant or even torturing, but they do not last a lifetime. Everything is fluid, always changing. Some emotions and relationships endure because you want them to, not because they seem inescapable. One sign of healing is knowing that lids have been raised and time is not stuck.

Even before recovery, beauty can impose relief to this unfortunate, bursting intensity. To be close to nature, feel the earth with your feet, see snow-covered mountains, and oceans. All this natural beauty can help dissolve the steel barriers between personalities and release the lids of their containers. Becoming whole is a life-long process that the experience of beauty encourages. Even in ugly, dirty, noisy cities, there are spots of beauty. I used to live in Manhattan. I walked to a park on the upper Westside and sat near its colorful, fragrant garden. I am sure that reprieve from the hardness of my life aided my memory process.

Rushed

Wendy Hoffman

I was late for my friend's New Year's lunch. My dog was taking too long outside and I only half remembered my friend's address. I began rushing. There was something about that rushed feeling that was startling and familiar.

I remembered. My legal father had what they now call poor impulse control. He seemed incapable of waiting for anything. He would rush my mother brutally if he wanted the family to go somewhere. Instead of helping in the house, he stood at the front door screaming, which seemed to make her go more slowly. Or if a car ahead of him went more slowly than he wanted, this father cursed loudly and called other drivers "one-eyed monkeys."

But there was worse—so much worse. Mind control is time-limited. You can only keep children in electroshock chairs for a finite amount of time. If the electroshocks are unlimited, children can die. If they die, what is the sense of mind controlling them? There's a feeling of pressure and impatience during mind control sessions:

- Deliver up a new piece of your mind to hold this program.
- Learn the cue.
- Memorize the trigger.

- We do not have all day.
- Hidden electroshock chairs are in high demand. Multitudes of unfortunate children need programming. They all need turns in the chairs. Hurry up and get programmed.
- Time is money.

It often takes a team to program one individual.

The faster the better. Going too slowly ups the intensity of the torture.

Even if these attitudes are not verbalized, they are felt. Victims feel them.

Victims have to give over possession of their minds and souls, and they have to do it quickly or else.

Another danger inherent in programming sessions is that programmers, even master ones or perhaps especially the master ones, can turn psychotic in a flash. If they become psychotic while working on a child, they can up the torture unbearably, maim, or murder the victim child. It is best for the children to finish the programming session as quickly as possible. And at the end, they sometimes get a treat. A tootsie roll in exchange for a brain.

When I felt rushed this afternoon, I thought of my legal father and the even more pernicious programming sessions—the bullying, sinister rushing and being forced to give up my mind. *My* mind.

I do puzzles online. The computer times how long you take to solve the jigsaw puzzle. I will not hurry. I will not be rushed. I do not care how long I take. It is not a race for me. Never again.

Mind control cults with high international aspirations test their child victims all the time. They give them multiple-choice questions. Time is one factor in how they are judged. They have to answer columns of questions as quickly as possible. They have to beat the other contestants, who might have been their friends. They have to go faster and faster.

Never again.

Then I remembered how impatient I used to be. If we were supposed to leave at a certain time, I had trouble waiting for dawdlers. I was impatient with people slow to catch on. That kind of icy impatience is programmed into certain cult roles. I became like the queen playing croquet in *Alice in Wonderland*, cold and bitchy. As I left these roles, I at last shed this imposed impatience and became more human.

SECTION VII

THE HEALING PROCESS

How to begin to console the inconsolable

Wendy Hoffman

There are not enough therapists to treat all the survivors who want to come out of slavery and who are screaming for help. Most therapists do not have a clue about what mind control entails. Some are afraid. Some of their partners, spouses, and children are too fearful. Many do not have the curiosity or the intelligence to read everything and educate themselves. Some do not want to learn by trial and error. Consequently, there is a dearth of competent therapists for this field.

So, except for the lucky few, we will have to find another way.

Alison wrote an excellent step-by-step guide to treating yourselves in the absence of a professional in her book, *Becoming Yourself* (2014).

Here are the two drawbacks among many to guard against as you plow through the morass of mind control on your own or even with a therapist:

1. Be aware all the time that you have been deceived. Question everything. Do not assume that because you think it, it is true. Your mind from infancy on has been filled with distortions and fantasy. Refine your sense of logic to help you ascertain what is real and what is yet another lie they fed you.

2. The most serious problem is that intense feelings of isolation will emerge as you work through your mind control and torture. When you were a baby and all alone in a family that was not allowed to love and had to hate, you lost your sense of attachment. You might have clung desperately to the desire to have a consoling adult caregiver but the script for children born into solid cult families is that there cannot be attachments and bonding.

These intense feelings of isolation and aloneness will be present throughout your self-recovery. Some of you will have the incredibly good luck to have found a partner or spouse who cares and knows how to listen. I wish we all had that kind of luck. We deserve it. Even a part-time friend could help. A therapist is often a part-time friend. Do not count on anyone else in the family seeking freedom, though it can occasionally happen.

You have to find a way to relieve these intense feelings of devastation even if you end up again alone with them. You need an internal system to help alleviate the intensity.

Perhaps some empathetic, loving inner parts could come forward to mother, rock, nurture, and feed. These feelings will usually reside in infants with no understanding of why adults act cruelly. Hold these infants' hearts in your motherly hands, tell them that they are good babies, that they are not to blame. The infants and small children cannot understand the concept of lying and deceit. Their minds cannot yet take in abstractions.

If you are loved, you feel lovable. If you are despised and rejected and tortured, you feel like a rag.

Love these inner infants who hold your desolation. You are lovable. They are lovable.

Online support groups can help break some of the isolation, but these feelings of aloneness are often too intense even to put into words.

If you do not see the same benign people at work or school every week, try to join a weekly in-person group and sit with the familiar people. The group does not have to be a mind control and ritual abuse recovery group. In fact, it is probably safer if it is not. Its regularity can interrupt isolation.

If you have a pet, stay close to that animal. Feel its pulse of life in your hands. That should help.

Eat the comfort food you need, unless you have a medical condition that says you should not. In general, this is not the time to worry about your weight.

Once you integrate, the whole system can hold the devastation of loneliness and its intensity will lessen. Each part in you has to release the treacherous feelings. Then, as the intensity lessens, you will want to isolate less. The rest of your life does not have to be spent in this aloneness. Even if you live for only a few more years, it is worth doing the work and getting a taste of what life was designed to be. If you are pursued and still not safe, it is better to isolate yourself until you are 100% sure someone is safe.

These most devastating feelings are usually found underneath rage. First, infants are angry, then sad. Unless we work hard to find these infant experiences, we may remain trapped in them. Even people who were never abused have this pattern of falling back on young emotions. At any age, it is wise to find all of yourself.

The body remembers

Wendy Hoffman

If you are dissociative and know it because someone you trust told you, how do you get back to remembering what happened to make you that way?

Catch the flashes of reality that intrude into your consciousness while you do mindless activities; do spontaneous art work that does not care about technique; hold onto your dreams and work on understanding them, especially nightmares; listen to your body. It talks. It informs you. It knows. If you lived with family more violent than conniving killer dogs, your body will have that information. The body has a direct route to the brain. The brain can open and tell. It can overcome its capture.

Have you chronic pain? Suppose your left arm aches from time to time, not always. If you concentrate your energy on that arm and ask the many parts inside you who know about this pain, some might come out and tell. Try to gather everyone together who knows something about this ache, if it is possible. This one body ailment can open the door to a universe of memory. You may be, in your memory process, plunged into a ritual site, see an altar. You may be holding a sacrificial sword. Someone robed may be forcing you to murder. If you have a memory like this, it will be one among many. But you are there, in the middle of this scene. It would not have opened had you not wanted it to and been ready. It can never be pleasant. It is the road to freedom—freedom that you never had but craved.

Some survivors may have noticed that their head shakes periodically for no apparent reason. It just bobs up and down on your neck as if controlled by an outside force. In some instances, there is no medical explanation for this phenomenon. It is memories of electroshock. If survivors can follow their jerking heads to their root cause, being shocked with electricity probably throughout their lives to date, they will find themselves in the heart of mind control. Once they have memories of being stripped naked and a helmet placed on them, strapped into electroshock chairs, drugged, then they can recapture the commands and programs that until now have ruled their lives. The body can lead the closed-down mind to a chance at life.

I had black and blue marks of various sizes along my spine. The largest was the size of a tablespoon, the smallest a teaspoon. During a massage in the 1990s, a physical therapist asked what had caused them. I told this hardworking, innocent Swiss woman they were from needles going into my vertebrae during mind control procedures from infancy on. She had asked and I told. She became so panicky that she went for supervision. Unfortunately, her supervisor was a cult plant. There went my confidentiality, right out the window. Over two decades later, I finally found a safe, knowledgeable, tough therapist. I told Alison about my bad experience with the physical therapist and wanted to show her my bruised back. I lifted my shirt.

"They're not there," she said with a flat voice.

"Yes, they are," I said and pointed insistently to where they once were last time I looked, maybe last year.

"They're not there," she said. I rushed to the bathroom mirror and strained my neck to turn. I did not see them either. "They vanished. Why? I had them for seventy years."

"Because they're not needed anymore. You already remembered."

Do not ever underestimate the power of the brain and its marionette, the body. The body will shoot up physical pain, it will knock hard and repeatedly against your conscious awareness until you acknowledge it. When you get to the facts it conveys, when you work it through and out, it will leave you and take with it all the breadcrumbs it has left in its path to your knowledge. You will then have peace in this particular area. If weeks, months, or years later, the pain or marks or emotions return, it means there is more to the memory, another piece to work through and dissolve. Recovery requires endurance.

A question that haunts most survivors in recovery is how to tell the difference between a body memory and a real medical illness. In general, body memories come and go and medical illnesses are steady. However, some medical illnesses assert and withdraw and are not constant. Toothaches can be inconstant, earaches, stomachaches, even headaches. So constancy is not an infallible determination. Time sometimes tells. If you focus on what is underneath a pain, often the answer becomes clear. Or you can get a check-up from your doctor, if that is not too traumatic. Sensitivity to your body, which allows it to defrost, and willingness to follow the pain wherever it leads, will often take you to the doorstep of truth.

Bodily pain can also indicate recent abuse. If the doctors are not finding an illness, and your inside parts are not coming up with memories to match the pain, you might need to look for hidden parts who hold the awareness of current harassment and abuse.

Flashbacks also torment people. Those who suffer from PTSD symptoms can befriend their haunting flashbacks, which follow them like a hired detective, and make a pact with them. They can be reconsidered and thought of as a road to knowledge. Thank you, flashbacks, for making me deal with this. They are like panic attacks and body memories, not arbitrary, not from nowhere. They come as direct messengers to tell you what happened to you and what is not yet consciously known or resolved. They are the key to the lost selves. Go after them.

Ten keys to recovery*

Alison Miller

1. Acknowledge your multiplicity. Mind control is entirely based on splitting the mind in infancy. All survivors have inner parts who were trained, whether or not they are aware of these parts.
2. Communicate internally. Think to your insiders and listen to their responses. Insiders, talk to one another to discover how each of you was deceived.
3. The inner parts the abusers placed in charge of the personality system need to take the lead in working towards recovery, along with any self-created strong parts. Let the front person manage everyday life while the rest of the system works on recovery.
4. Improve your inner world. Get children out of the internal copies of places where they were abused. Give insiders new jobs to replace their old ones. Make sure your internal government cares for the needs of all parts.
5. Recovery begins with finding a way to become physically safe. Dismantle your access programming: the training to report to abusers, return to them, and come when they call you.

---

* This chapter was presented at the 2015 *Survivorship* Conference, and is in the online journal *Survivorship*, Fall 2015.

6. All programming is based on the BIG LIE, which is that the abusers know where you are and what you say and/or think at all times. Let your whole personality system know that the BIG LIE is a lie. The abusers only know what you do or say or think if your reporter parts tell them or if someone you know tells on you.
7. Choose a safe therapist. Willingness to learn may be more important in a therapist than knowledge.
8. Once you are safe enough, you can begin the memory work which thoroughly undoes the programming.
9. You can choose whether to work through all your traumatic memories, or just achieve stability. Which you choose may depend on your age and health and present-day real-world responsibilities. Closed down and stable are not the same as healed; closed down people have hidden hurt children inside. But full healing takes a long time and works best with a skilled therapist.
10. Integration and co-consciousness come naturally as a result of memory work; do not focus on them. Allow inside parts to join as they are ready.

The nobility of survivors

Wendy Hoffman

There are levels of being in survivors, all put in by their enemies. First, their perpetrators empty them out so that they become distant from who they are. Programmers build an amnesic wall around the original self in an attempt to make the self's disappearance permanent. Then they layer in the many functions they want their newly created commodity to perform. They may create, for example, an assassin, mule, prostitute, pornography star, breeder, thief, soldier, cult therapist, and so on.

Eventually, nowadays, some survivors gravitate to therapy to try to find out who they really are and what their lives have contained. Some are fortunate enough to end up with safe therapists not employed and trained by the groups they are attempting to escape. Those receive help.

Some of the professional experts in the field are also writers and write about their clients' experiences and personalities. They describe children used in pedophiles' parties, their clients' rage, broken lives, being institutionalized. They describe lives directed by others' commands where survivors become like ping-pong balls—battered here, sent here, sent there, told to do this—all without a will of their own.

What is sometimes, not always, missed is why some survivors agree to be mindless in the first place. Yes, there are amnesic barriers preventing them from knowing what they are being forced to do and what they never consciously would do. But there must be something else.

Not all, but many, therapist–writers miss the original threat and decision. What is it originally that makes it almost impossible to escape?

Ironically, it is integrity. Integrity leads one into the most dismal of lives.

For instance, perpetrators tell their victims that someone they love will be murdered or have a limb or limbs amputated unless they comply. The children with compassion are willing to sacrifice themselves to save others. Survivors are not just marionettes performing criminal secret functions. They are also self-sacrificing heroes trying to protect others. The people they attempt to save might have even been cruel and destructive to them. Perpetrators tell children that a universal bomb will go off unless they follow hideous orders. They said that even before the age of terrorism. And it is not all about nepotism. Survivors still thinking as children also attempt to protect strangers. They care about a world that has abandoned them.

Where does this charitable sweetness come from? Children are innocent, think they cause everything to happen, want power, importance, and recognition, and for everything to be nice and safe. Adult survivors have children inside, frozen in their ages and development.

It is unlikely that perpetrator threats would be carried out. If they were, these secret cults would be eliminating so many people, there would have to be investigations and common knowledge. That is the last thing they want. The legal and police forces could never accommodate such massive investigations. Moreover, the people they are threatening to murder are often the people they think they own, the people they control and have invested effort and money in creating. They are not necessarily the people they want eliminated. Perpetrators depend on their victims remaining in states of immature thinking so that they cannot think things through realistically.

When working with survivors, as a professional or a support person, or simply as someone who cares, it is important to dig deeper into the original decisions and choices. The excavations have to go into the areas of the original selves where the heart of the child lives. They say children are cruel, but not these children. They do not start out that way. These children know compassion and self-sacrifice. They care about others even more than they care about themselves. Although they have never been protected, they protect others.

One advantage of living into adulthood is that you get the opportunity to think in life as an adult and not stay trapped in child-think. Some are able to break free of that limited capacity. Usually with help, their minds can catch up with their biological age.

As adults, you can reverse the choices of childhood. Even as you rethink early and unconscious decisions, you become aware of the integrity of your early responses. You have to respect yourself for that.

The investigations into lost selves have to plow down deeper into the inherent nobility of survivors' choices. It is unfortunate that nobility leads survivors into destruction. As adults, however, all that can be reversed while integrity and nobility are maintained. Look at the integrity working through these layers of imposed deceit requires.

How many people sacrifice their own lives to protect someone else? Yes, it was all most likely a response to a lie, but children have no way of knowing that. Only in adulthood can you figure it out. How many people care so much about other human beings as children do?

After integration, the naïve sweetness of the child mind dissolves and you become more self-protective. The new nobility becomes understanding the awful ordering of your inside parts and acknowledges yourself. You realize that it does not pay to sacrifice yourself for people commissioned to destroy you, even if this commission is against their will.

Self-esteem loosens mind control*

Wendy Hoffman

People who have had fairly normal lives do not know the kinds of emotions survivors experience. The intensity of these feelings separates us with the most dense barricade from normal people, that is, those who have not been mind-controlled and who have not attended homicidal rituals. The human being was not built to sustain such feelings, and these feelings have associated strong false beliefs about ourselves.

Here are some examples of the kinds of beliefs and associated feelings I am addressing.

- Guilt: I am responsible for babies' and children's deaths.
- I am worthless, stupid, ugly, taking up room on earth for nothing but myself.
- I am a blight on the earth. My evil spreads everywhere and contaminates and infects everyone.
- I am nothing. It is my fault that . . .

---

* A version of this essay was presented at the Survivorship Ritual Abuse and Child Abuse 2016 Conference "Stop Mind Control and Programs", in Oakland, CA.

- I must be bad or my mother (or father) would love me.
- If I ever make a mistake, it proves that I am a bad person.
- I am ashamed of myself. I feel flooded with shame.

Along with these feelings are orders about the world and mind-controlled behaviors programmed into us by the cult, such as:

- You are not allowed to bond.
- You belong to us [meaning to your programmers and family].
- Do not run—you cannot run away from us and your programmers.
- We will find you wherever you go.
- You will never be free.
- We know what you think and say, etc.
- Everyone will always hate you; you will never have friends.
- You are so different that you will never fit in, you will always be an outcast.

Your controllers employ all the above lies and others, as well as these kinds of twisted statements to make you feel bad about yourself:

- We had to kill him or her because you loved him or her.
- Your mother is unhappy because you are ugly. (Then they will program the mother to be depressed and perhaps stay in bed all day.)
- You have to be a sex slave because you are not good for anything else.
- One parent at best will not love you.
- You are stupid, that is why you cannot learn in school. (Programmers put in the learning disabilities.)
- If you were good, your mother would love you. Your mother loves your brother or sister.

Survivors go into therapy expecting to find out horrible things about themselves. They are sure on some deep level that they are bad, evil people. That is what they have been taught from earliest childhood. An effective way of loosening this mind control is to more accurately access who you are in reality.

Re-evaluating yourself is crucial. You have to learn to love yourself. You have to be committed to such unlearning and learning. We were taught we were bad, to blame, that we wanted crime and evil, that we were ugly and loathsome. All those statements are lies. As you process your memories, possibly in therapy, you will see how you were controlled and forced to do what they make you do.

You are not an evil witch or wizard. You are an innocent victim. You will discover actions and feelings that you are not proud of, but you did not start out evil. You were forced and coerced into doing what they wanted you to do, for their own gain, not yours. Recovery allows you to break free of that mold. We all regret what was done to us and what we consequently became. But now is the time to change all that. Now is the time to become your self. It is time to ask "Who am I?" without the mind control.

Who are you?

The two bad things that dent even normal people's minds and souls are rejection and abandonment. The first thing perpetrators do for some is create abandonment while you are still in the womb. Once born, abandonment and rejection are practiced routinely. Abuse and group abuse occur throughout childhood. Parents deliver and abandon the child. This emotional terrain makes mind control and programming easy for the perpetrators. They want to make you feel like a nothing. They need that horrible or non-existent self-esteem for the mind control to work.

Also, the mind has to be young and vulnerable. As soon as it forms into a cohesive whole, programs are much harder to put in. Even torture cannot put them in. That is why these cults maintain members in every generation. You have to give over your children because they need them to learn to do their assigned criminal acts and be robots. Can you call mindless robots who have no memory or judgment criminals? Mind control festers within children who have been abandoned and rejected.

Nothing is more crucial than, or a substitute for, working through the programs and hierarchy of inside parts and the braiding and offshoots of parts. But if you work through all that mind control but not on the emotional terrain and the concept of self-esteem, you end up like a dry drunk. You have overcome the addiction but not developed as a full human being. You have not then caught up with the life that was taken from you. The self-esteem piece comes in before, during, and after the hard main work of working through the mind control. The self-esteem piece entails thinking boldly. It is not easy to break through amnesic barriers, but it is a pleasure to see them dissolve.

Moreover, whether you can work your way through a complicated maze of dissociation depends on your self-esteem. As different sequestered parts in you begin to speak and you begin finally to listen, you will hear strange things coming out of your mouth.

The question is whether to believe. Where is the information coming from? Is it coming directly from a part created through mind control? Ask whether the part is repeating what it is supposed to say. Tell that part it no longer has to do that. If it is not repeating, you might want to believe what that part says, no matter how unpleasant and contrary to the image of your front person.

Whether you can believe what is not programmed and comes out of your mouth depends on your belief in yourself—on your self-esteem. It depends on your commitment to healing yourself. So many survivors spend a great deal of therapy time—years and decades—deliberating whether or not to believe their insiders.

Sometimes, parts will have wrong ideas or lies that controllers placed in them. When you and the parts and pieces of you finally communicate, you can help them see that they have been living under the impact of untruths. Examples would be that the programmers and handlers can hear and know everything they think and say, that they have to tell if they change addresses, that someone they love will be killed if they disobey. When you bump into one of these programs, it is an opportunity to trace it to its origin. Follow the thread of parts to the training session where a new piece of you was created and given instructions on how to behave, act, think, believe, and forget. Every lie you discover that you have believed is an opportunity to delve into how they molded you.

If you want freedom to be who you are, it is crucial to listen to the insiders who alone know what your life has been. Each insider has a piece of reality. All the pieces have to be put together if you want full healing. You have to find the hidden pieces, the parts the programmers hid so that a full healing could never take place. But you can find them. Inside parts will lead you to their hiding places. Or they will be uncovered in time as other parts that hid them move away and their hiding places are exposed. From the outside or front person, you cannot figure out your life. You have to listen to those who experienced it. Whether to believe what they say depends on the strength of your belief in yourself.

At first, my insiders would not talk to me. I was already sixty-nine years old. I started writing to them and they wrote back. A short time later, they began to form words in my head and I could say or think words back to them. Then I asked questions and they answered. I could hardly believe the answers, but my recovery had begun. It all depended on the communication between the outside and inside me's. I remember the first time I spoke with Alison on the phone from opposite sides of two countries. She asked my insiders questions. They did not answer and the rest of me did not know. She asked again in another way. No answer or "I do not know." And again. She suggested I write down an answer. They wrote using my hand. Then I wrote questions. They wrote answers. As the days went on, we began to talk to one another and, awake and asleep, we began to think to one another. This dialogue is essential if you want to get to know your insiders. Your outside is important for reaching in and, of course, for keeping your ordinary life going. Can you imagine—most people in the world only have to deal with ordinary life. But not us. For us, the meat and juice are inside of us. I believe what my insiders say happened. The feelings and physical sensations my body experiences confirm these experiences no matter how awful they are to endure.

If you are suddenly in pain week after week, you might be being beaten up regularly. It pays to ask inside about that. If you are chronically ill, it pays to ask inside whether you have programming to be ill and incapacitated. That is how they slow many truth-seekers down.

The first step in becoming who you are is to believe in yourself. This will go against every bit of programming you ever had—programming to do things you would never choose to do and will feel ashamed of. Programmers make you think you deserve nothing from life and are only a marionette on a tight string, a means for others to get what they desire. They believe they have made you into a slave and servant exclusively. You are not who they made you think you are. You are good and worthwhile. You deserve to live and to be in the place on earth where you reside. If you are currently being accessed, you deserve to move far away from your perpetrators. You deserve the food you eat and the water you drink. You deserve.

You deserve to be you. You deserve to belong to yourself. You are yourself and yours alone—for better or worse and in recovery and freedom. You are worthwhile and essential.

Search your life for love. Did you have a friend who was kind? Was a sibling ever protective, appreciative? Did anyone ever acknowledge you—a teacher perhaps? If you cannot find anything but hatred, then look somewhere else. Were your parents ever reasonable or friendly, generous? If you still cannot find anything, then go into yourself. Were you ever good to yourself? If not, you can start now and this will be the foundation of learning about love. You are leaving the world of hatred and entering the realm of love: gentle, encouraging, respectful, caring. Memorize how it feels. People care about you. You care about you. Kindness to the self unhinges the mind control within the brain. You are not a bad person. Once the belief that you are a bad human being leaves, you are *en route* to dismantling mind control. Its foundation is self-hatred and the belief that you are unlovable. Those lies can be exposed. You are a worthwhile, moral human being who deserves to be alive and do good in the world. You are not a robot. You are not an automaton.

Here is an exercise: Take something about yourself that you do not appreciate and decide to love it—your nose, legs, hair, disposition, jealousy, anger, handwriting. Work on seeing its beauty, work on seeing it in a new light. This is just a preliminary exercise to help you re-evaluate yourself and give up what your programming wants you to believe about yourself. It is a step toward saying goodbye to self-hatred, false ideas, and lies.

List what you deserve in life, such as love, comfort, praise, encouragement. Now you are changing the self-esteem from the front person inward. It is the children within you who are convinced they are bad. But when the front people change their beliefs, it affects the whole internal system. It is like water coming through a hole in the roof and bathing the interior. Soon, even the self-hating small children can learn about self-love.

When you are in a tortured, unloved state, you will believe what you would not otherwise believe. Mind control begins on the innocent, the ones too small to think through the lies and preposterous statements, the visuals, and torture.

Here is another issue: Small internal children cannot understand tricks and lies. Their minds are not formed enough to understand manipulation. This is one reason why integration is necessary. When I reached these young parts, they could not understand all the visual and aural tricks my relatives and programmers played on me. They grappled and struggled with this dilemma but no matter how hard they tried, they just could not get it. They are bright children, but it was beyond them. The internal adults tried to explain the lies. No dice. When these darling, hard-working children eventually fused with older parts, their distress ended. Too much had been expected of them. Inside, they finally got to play games and do puzzles and read children's books, even after they fused. I still go to the library and take out children's books at least once a month. But the inside adults do the thinking. The child parts were subsumed into adulthood and in adulthood people can understand lies and tricks and evil and monstrosities. Adults might not have a strong stomach, but they can understand.

Once you understand the lies you live your life by, you can change. You can give up so much, including, and perhaps most importantly, how you feel about yourself. Forgiveness starts with the self. You can forgive yourself for what other people did to you. After integration, there might be a life review of things and actions you regret. This life review gives you the opportunity to forgive yourself for not being yourself, for not being a whole person capable of making wise decisions and treating others with utmost respect. You can forgive yourself for your past and how it shaped how you were in life. And now you can change.

When you finally get into recovery and after recovery, you look back on your life lived as a non-self. The sooner you start dismantling your programming, the fewer years you will have to regret having lived as a robot, slave, and non-self.

We manage, but it is hard to live with no true self. It is a testament to our endurance that we are alive. We now deserve the reward of finding out who we are. When I finally asked myself who I am for real, I discovered that I had been sent to, and temporarily submitted to, five planted therapists.

Much of what I thought I did on my own initiative was programmed in.

I had to look back on a life without choice.

But then someone, or ones in you, make the big decision and the earlier the better, but best at any time—just not never.

Start by distinguishing between programming and how you really feel about yourselves.

If you can, find a therapist who does not think the worst of you, who does not look down on you. Planted therapists will usually give some hint that they look down on you.

Ask your emotions "Who are you?"

Your emotions might answer that they are not allowed to have feelings, that no crying is allowed, that you cannot feel good about yourself. It is just about impossible to get over these traumatic feelings without doing something to release them, such as crying. Your programmers know that. When you start to cry, you have started to heal. For some, try crying instead of cutting yourself.

Programmers observe and figure out what is particularly repulsive to you and make you believe that about yourself. They want you to think the worst about yourself and it will not be true.

Once your self-esteem improves, your mind control will start to dismantle and dissolve and you will see changes in yourself. You will not be sent out to perform criminal deeds. You may start remembering what they wanted you to do. Those are the enormous changes. There are more subtle ones that affect your daily life. Before, every little mistake or flaw you perceived as large and interpreted as an indictment against yourself. With better self-esteem, you will see those mistakes as little mistakes and no big deal. They are highly correctable. Simply mistakes.

Once your self-esteem improves, you begin to parent yourself and take yourself through developmental stages. You become your own mother and father, the ones most of us never had.

If you have poor self-esteem, you care too much about what other people think of you. You were trained to do whatever your programmer and handler command. You are used to putting too much emphasis on another's opinion. With low self-esteem, you look hungrily at other people to determine who you are. As you get to know yourself, and all there is in you, you gain respect for yourself and begin to trust yourself. You are the ultimate authority on yourself. You do not have to ask other people's opinion about yourself. Once you believe in yourself, everything changes. You are no longer devastated if jerks do not like you or your work. If you are rejected, it does not crush you. You stand by yourself. No one can manage your life anymore. You become self-sufficient. You give up being family-hungry.

You will be able to tolerate change. No matter what you do, change will happen in your life. It happens in everyone's life. With low self-esteem, change can create a resistant paralysis in you. You will not be sure you can handle it. With improved self-esteem, you have the confidence to go with the flow and adapt to what you need to adapt to.

In addition to unraveling mind control and improving your self-esteem, here are more ways to encourage healing.

Take more moments enjoying hot water warming your back in the shower.

Savor fruit the way food was supposed to taste before chemicals and modern farming methods.

Find yourself seconds of pure, untampered-with pleasure. The skin's pleasures have been contaminated and corrupted all during your mind-controlled life. Now it is time to teach your skin what it means to be skin. The pleasure principle helps you find yourself. Enjoy a breeze, which can be better than a lover.

The breeze—where it coats your body with such gentleness, concern, and languor—brings you to the edge of life, makes you whole, offers you a fountain to drink from that belongs to everyone and no mind controller could ever take that away.

To shed the slave mentality, say:

I deserve . . .

I am . . . [and fill in the blanks].

Go deep within yourself to realize at last who you are.

It is better to find someone to share your memories with. That was important to me. If a safe person is not available, journal your insights and understandings and keep going alone.

The pool of emotions underneath

Wendy Hoffman

After you have delved and scratched and inched your way through mountains of programs held in parts, all of which are surrounded by episodes of torture, after you have finished most of this arduous work, you arrive at your base and may, amazingly enough, find pools of emotions held by yet other pieces, though off-shoots of parts you have already met. Even though you may have integrated your primary personalities, you could find that you have a half-healed heart. In this pool of emotions is a bottom layer of being that is you at a primitive emotional level.

The cult leaders' plan for you included controlling your emotional life. They began by breaking or preventing your bond with your mother. This created a loneliness that hurts even physically and can be life-threatening. This loneliness can make the heart spasm, limbs ache, stomach churn. It surrounds you as an infant with a cloud of hopelessness and takes away the desire to partake of life, thrive, and survive. It is a gruelling feeling. Young victims drag this emotional state throughout their childhoods, especially after the murder of their only designated friend. The stab of this loneliness can be unbearable. Each victim then goes through much of his or her unhealed life afraid to love and bond, wanting no one else to be murdered. No matter how severe the physical torture, the emotional torture that pierces innocence is the worst. The emotional foundation of not having bonded creates a strong, bleak fortress.

The loneliness that resides at the base of the newly born infant can last throughout life. Even after healing that includes the spontaneous melding together of parts of the brain, this loneliness can become a permanent fixture. Loneliness can follow even those survivors young enough to marry and create new families. Living with people can make one even lonelier. People are not usually aware of this loneliness. It is hidden deeply and flickers in and out of consciousness, sometimes seen, often missed.

Some can shed the loneliness drop by drop as they perfect their healing and enter into a life of their own choosing. Others become married to this primitive state and are dominated by the deprived infant parts their whole lives, trying unsuccessfully to care for them or find others who will. Some, in both the cult and non-cult worlds, cannot outgrow these early deprivations and carry around with them their internal small beings with unmet needs.

However you choose to deal with the physical and emotional pain of early infancy, it is better to know that it is there and to manage it. Some try to manage the pain by never being alone. The fear of being alone has led people into terrible arrangements, soul-crushing marriages, doing far too much for people who want to misuse you. Not knowing about your primitive loneliness can drive you into more usurping relationships.

Feelings can be a normal response to what is happening in your current life. Ask yourself which responses are appropriate responses to the present, and which are left over from the past (even if triggered by present events) and not yet fully connected to their original sources and discharged. It is particularly difficult and painful to go through infants' emotions, where everything is intense and immediate. Understanding yourself as an infant may help you grow into adulthood emotionally.

Another bottom-of-the-system feeling is shame. Shame is sometimes underneath the loneliness. Shame also has to be either released slowly or acknowledged and managed. Healed survivors can cognitively work through the lies that made them feel responsible and ashamed fairly easily. Most survivors have been forced to participate in the murder of the innocent. Perpetrators use the hands of child victims. Some survivors can see that they were not responsible for what others forced them to do when they were children. But others cannot overcome the shame of having been implicated in a crime that took away another's life. They wrestle with this shame and may experience it life-long, even though they would never have chosen to murder on their own.

In addition, as part of resolving shame, survivors have to deal with sexuality and their sexual responses. Survivors have been used as sexual objects, some as soon as they were born. These cults often combine death and sexuality. Even survivors who have come into their healings late in life will have to come to terms with their sexual being if they want to manage the shame instilled as early as that emotion can first be felt. People with relaxed, open bodies that they fully occupy have usually not been sexually abused. A body free of lifelong tension would be a goal for survivors of mind control who were used as sexual puppets. They can gradually learn to take pleasure in their bodies, to be in their own bodies. Start with touching any part of your own body, and practice not dissociating as you do this. Peel yourself off the ceiling and work on staying in your own body.

It is not surprising that buried in this submerged nest of emotion is rage. The rage is reasonable and understandable but it is gathered together here and is overly intense. Survivors are angry at the torture they endured from birth onward, that they could not be who they were meant to be, and that they had to run and hide from their previous lives. They are mostly angry at what they were made into and what they had to do. They are angry that they are different from the normal world and have trouble fitting in.

It does not help the raging person to scream at his or her pet or at an automated voice in customer service over the telephone. Then, what is there to do with the rage? Feel it, know it, acknowledge it. The rage is fitting for what happened then but too extreme for present circumstances. Let it leave the body drip by drip. This is the rage you could not express to your perpetrators as they tortured you. As you put a wall between the past and present and realize that the intense emotions belong back there, you will regain your equilibrium. Eventually, this invisible wall will not be needed and will crumble. The energy that comes with and from rage can be redirected to help society. For example, you can become an activist for human rights, or you can expose the reality of criminal mind control and ritual abuse and work towards stopping it.

Once you scrape off the intensity of rage, you might find depression. Why should you not be depressed? A life in these cults contradicts what life is meant to be. You observe people in ordinary life getting upset about things that are barely significant. You have important realities to be sad about. Appropriate sadness is not clinical depression and is not a mental illness. It is not to be medicated away.

Underneath the loneliness, shame, rage, and depression comes guilt. As my mother was dying in a Bronx hospital, she screamed out at me the rage that she had not had a life, and that I had ruined her image. I was her whipping girl. Whatever went wrong in her life she blamed on me. At the end, she said to me, "We had our moments." In these dark worlds, some only have moments of relating, of decency. Moments do not make a mother. I have always been motherless; someone else might have transcended the mind control somewhat, but she did not. She lived in an era when no help existed. The programmers knew that. Had she lived now, she may have broken free.

Once you realize the set-ups, guilt is not so hard to overcome. Cognitively, survivors can reason these false scenarios away and know that their blame is a giant lie. I do not accept responsibility for my mother's whole life, although she thought I should. Mind control procedures attempt to make victims feel that they are responsible for every bad thing that happened. The leaders want you to feel bad about yourself. You do not have to go through life with that false belief.

Even as rage and depression are connected, so are guilt and anxiety. The undercoating of survivors' lives is anxiety. Some of us grew up not knowing what would happen next, not knowing when our caregivers would switch into menacing, homicidal parents. Anxiety was a constant companion, present even when we were not aware of it. Anxiety is appropriate if you are still being hunted by perpetrators. But if you are one of those fortunate survivors who is actually safe in the present, the anxiety belongs to the past, and you can now learn to relax.

Slowly work your way through the remaining nest of feelings. Acknowledge the lies and threats that made you feel the way you do. Then create a life that does not twist your heart and keep you from your true self. You know who you are by your feelings. Clear out of your heart the intense emotions programmers put in you on purpose, which belong to the past, and replace them with emotions that do what they are intended to do, which is letting you know about whether or not your needs are met in the present.

When a program engulfs you

Wendy Hoffman

I believed I was the me I knew, the me who was pretty much finished with the excavations, the me who could think clearly, was compassionate, and was filled with sorrow about how the world is. But then a new me galloped out and, with narrowed eyes, reviewed the way in which significant people thought of me. I latched on to a fleeting look or glance to make a case that the person or people held me in low regard. I would think, "These people are glad to get rid of you, they are tired of you, they think you have no boundaries, you have exhausted them, you exhaust everyone."

I wondered why I was having these alienating thoughts. How come I was gripped at this late stage by the irrational and lies? Another program had emerged. I scraped and found something painful, shocking, and disappointing at the bottom of the barrel.

The public has read for years now how the Catholic church has been guilty of sexually abusing children and colluding with its perpetrators. This did not shock me. I wrote about being abused at a famous religious center in my memoir, *The Enslaved Queen* (2014). I knew that every religion has perpetrators and that they hide behind the prestige and respectability of religious office.

But I did not know that the revered rabbi with whom I had studied the Torah line by line was one of the leading torturers and programmers in the community I had lived in. And so were other esteemed rabbis in this same community. This rabbi, my teacher, founded a synagogue to bring people back to Judaism. The people I thought were my sincere friends were his assistant torturers. I felt as if I was hopping on melting ice. I could have been one of the sea animals whose whole habitat was dissolving.

My memory led me back to where this program about everyone despising me was put in. I am underground, below a landmark-like temple in this same community. There are spinning wheels to which people can be tied to disorientate them and make them too dizzy to function or think, particularly elaborate head vises, rows and rows of electroshock chairs. It must be a programming center. In my already healed mind, I had not known it existed. Many such places are all over the world. Pretend Judaism is the perfect cover for Nazi perpetrators.

This is what the rabbi said as he and others tortured me: "You bring trouble and despair everywhere you go. No one wants you around. You are danger, fire, a plague. You bring danger and destruction to everyone you know. You are a horrible person. We should rid the world of you. You are bad, you are awful . . ." My "friends" chanted these slogans. Drugs, electricity, all kinds of torture—the usual. This torture specialist enhanced some of Mengele's, the Nazi's, ideas. Mengele sometimes worked by torturing two victims simultaneously. The rabbi refined the method. Whip one victim, who was a frail, sick woman in this case, as someone else whips the other victim, me. Then Taser them simultaneously. I survived the torture. I was told my bad actions or thoughts—how could they know my thoughts?—had caused this disgrace.

The program barged out before the memory. The program caused paranoia. I sullied the innocent. I sullied myself. Discovering the memory brought me back to sanity. The periphery or wide margins of me engulfed the center and I returned to "normal." The healed mind overtook the programmed slice of mind.

How do you prevent programs from exploding? Get as many of the training memories out as possible. Expect particularly disheartening ones at the bottom of the barrel. Strengthen the periphery. The periphery is the part of you no longer programmed. You are a rational being. You can tell whom to trust. Listen to the knowledge you have acquired. When you are gripped against your will by urges or emotions you cannot stop, look for the memories that created them. After it is all done, be glad you will not be controlled by that stinking program again. This is the life of people who were formerly slaves.

I never suspected my "friends" were victims, too. They seemed so self-righteous. Do not underestimate how many people in your world could be cult. They are like flocks. Many people trying to get out are surrounded. The main danger comes from programs still within. When your feelings go crazy, look for programs that others put in you and that take you far away from yourself. When you find the programs and how they were installed, your sanity will return.

In the beginning years of therapy, either with a therapist or on your own doing self-therapy, programs immediately jump out. Typical ones are kill yourself, do not believe what you remember, there is no such thing as dissociation or multiplicity, you do not have parts or alters, come back to us, bring this message here, contact that person there, attend a ritual at this date at this time at this location—instructions will follow, seduce him or her, steal this or that—for some, murder this person or that person, and so on. Inherent in all these programs is an assault on self-esteem. How could people be mindless marionettes and feel good about themselves? Even programs discovered late include an attack on self-esteem.

Here is more of what the rabbi said to me underneath the prestigious synagogue.

"You may never escape, you may never be free. We are your rulers, we are your enforcers, we are your kings, you are our property. Never go near anyone who tells you differently. You are our slave. We will put you in your grave. You have disobeyed us. You are finished."

That is how programmers talk as they torture.

As you remember these kinds of programs, you might realize that in the past you have driven away good people by distrusting their affection, and that you have ruined good opportunities for yourself. But along with that sadness is the joy that you are finally doing something about it. Even a day of freedom makes it worthwhile.

After I wrote about the abuse by the rabbi, I expressed to Alison that, in writing about this, I would endanger Jews all over the world. She pointed out that it did not endanger Catholics when survivors spoke out about priests; it made them safer. I continued to express my belief, and she told me that she thought I was "speaking from programming." I searched inside and found programming to make me believe that if I disclosed this abuse, there would be another Holocaust and all the Jews would be murdered.

"Speaking from programming" is something that Alison and I have been learning about over the course of our relationship. She is getting better at identifying it, and so am I. When I say something that is irrational and out of character, it is generally an indication that a program is operating. The same is true for other survivors. Therapists, if a survivor client is adamant about something that is clearly irrational, there is a good chance that he or she is speaking from programming. Do not argue with a program; you will not win. Just get down to business: it is an opportunity to identify the program and discover how it was made. Survivors, when words come out of your mouth that just do not make sense, find out which part of you is saying them, then search inside for when they were put in. These are giant steps to becoming who you are.

When you have killed*

Alison Miller

This is an account of a therapy session with child parts of an adult client, a survivor of organized mind control by a right-wing political group. The survivor's words (mostly coming from child parts) are in regular script (with odd words in italic for emphasis); the therapist's words are in italics, with some roman for emphasis. The language is childish because a very young part was speaking. The subject matter is a child being forced to kill. Only read it if you are ready to deal with this subject matter. The client does find considerable relief by the end of the session.

* * *

> We all share so everybody knows that what the bad people do is not what we want to do. We're trying to get to the part where it upsets everybody if we hear a baby cry.
>
> We're supposed to be a killer, nobody's gonna change that. It's who we are, it's in our DNA.
>
> *How old are you?*

---

* A version of this chapter was published in the online journal, *Survivorship*, Winter 2016.

Five.

Do you know what DNA is?

No.

Is this a program?

It's a program. They have a baby over there, crying, and they bring another baby in. Every time, you see a baby crying and they bring in one that's still.

We are the sleepers. They're trying to reconstruct the nature of the person by repetition, over and over. It's important to get the senses. We have to keep our eyes open so we can see for real. You do not know who you are any more. You only have so much energy.

The program is unspinning . . .

Somebody inside would use the memory of the baby crying, while we stabbed. The live baby initially over on the left side, the still baby by us. Then later in rituals no live baby was needed. We never know if the baby we kill is alive or dead when we kill it. Sometimes in the early stages the body got electrocuted while the baby cried.

What were the instructions?

"Whenever the ritual starts you try to hear the baby crying." The body was three and a half when they said that. You're strapped to the table, hear crying, get electrocuted. Part of it was done in the hospital, then they continued in the church. You just see the baby and think he's crying and think there'll be electricity and the baby will get killed. The electricity was in the head. The arms and legs were strapped down. Jesus [the alter involved] is the immortal one and has power over life and death. The sleeper, who are also Jesus, have to go through it too. They are told to watch so when one Jesus fails there are still the sleepers. The sleepers stay on the outside of the body and watch. They take over. It's part of their job to come into the body.

All the sleepers, all the Jesuses need to join in as we go through the memory of these trainings.

They're just saying "Killer, killer, killer, killer . . ." They always say the Aryan race is superior, all hail the Aryan race, heil Hitler. They chant [gibberish]. They're making us killers to honour the Aryan race. That means the blond-haired blue-eyed ones like us. Jesus is the key, who gets raised from the dead. He has the power. Nobody can hurt Jesus because he's already dead. The Jesus that gets created is immortal.

None of you is immortal.

What is your left hand doing?

It's making a sign to make sure everybody in this memory is accounted for and present.

We have to drink the blood after, and eat the organs, because the power's in the blood that makes us have the power over life and death. And they keep making us do it till we do not flinch or get sick. "You're the killer, you do not think. *We* have the power, we can take your life." It's all for the purpose to make the ultimate killer.

When the body became ten they let go of the arm and it kept moving, it got caught up in the motion. "You're the killer. All hail the Aryan race." We wished the arm had kept moving and cut us up instead.

The boy's going to be killed anyways, and it'll be slower or worse if *they* do it than if we do it.

Who in you decided to let the arm keep moving and kill the boy without anyone's hand on yours?

Essence [the core spiritual essence] decided. Essence always knows the truth. It was a choice you should never have to make.

They always blamed us, and said we would go to hell. All these years we've been going crazy because of it.

Essence chose what would make the boy suffer least. You did not choose that *he would die, you only chose* how *he would die, the least painful way.*

So we're *not* evil! It was really a *kind* thing that we did. That's weird. We showed *mercy*. We thought we were going to eternal damnation.

We never thought we'd get this relief.

* * *

This was a very meaningful therapy session for the survivor. If you are a survivor reading about it, I hope it will help relieve your guilt and shame for your forced choices.

Giving up dissociation

Wendy Hoffman

Dissociation is one of the worst things that can happen to a life, even though it is the best thing that can occur during torture. Unfortunately, to find out about the torture, you have to give up dissociation. Those who are the most dissociated do not even know their dissociation exists. The way to find out is to have someone tell you.

When dissociation is gone, the thick black lines that hold the many parts of the brain distinct begin to smear, dissolve, and disappear. Blood suddenly runs through from one section to another. The brain may spasm, hiccup, get fuzzy and dizzy, but then the movement subsides and the mind becomes solid. Try shaking your head hard. It will not come apart. Your mind is now closer to how minds were designed to be before the interference and subterfuge.

What are the consequences of losing your dissociation?

You now have access to all feelings. Your emotions are no longer sectioned off into buried, distinct, hidden, long-suffering parts of the mind. The heart, once frozen, now bears the burden.

I never thought it would happen to me, but it has. Most of my brain is together now. If I twist my head hard, it still stays intact. If I bend it way to the right, it does not re-split. If I swing it to the left, most of me is still integrated. I find memories and emotional states still not known or raw inside me, but they are not dangling in their own world. They live in my melded and unified mind. I have given my mind the space and knowledge to unify.

Who am I now? I love myself. I am gentle and caring towards myself. I have trekked out of a lifetime of horrendous abuse, but I am whole now. I have inflated my crushed and flattened body, mind, and soul.

I used to avoid pain by splitting away when it arose. I could even split away from broken bones. One part of me would feel the pain but the rest would proceed with life as if nothing happened. Now, when I hurt, I hurt straight through.

The sting of emotional pain pierces. The emotions are shared throughout me, which means mature portions of me can consider and advise about this state of being. A whole movement of comforting myself sweeps over me now. I am my own best friend. I am my mother and father as well.

Integrating this late in life brings remorse and regret. Before, I believed the lies my controllers told me under torture—that my child would be tortured and slowly murdered, that this friend, that helper would have similar fates if I disobeyed. Instead of finding my own mind and running, I stayed trapped to protect other people. My "protecting" them did no good. Awareness of assumptions made by naïve child parts is part of the knowledge that takes place post-integration. I have to accept my stupidity and live with it. It does not pay to let it eat me up alive. A wave of self-forgiveness helps assuage the burning sting. All odds were against me. I had enemies. I did not have help. I did what I could.

Loneliness is another post-integration issue. When I meet a non-traumatized person from the normal world, I observe how that person lives and her character, and I face what I never had: a real life. Even some people who know about the abuses I suffered do not understand what it was like. I have experienced almost every kind of suffering and it has left me a have-not in a have-everything kind of world.

But I remember, and I have a soul and a conscience.

Is there an end to the healing process?

Wendy Hoffman

Some survivors may make huge progress during the beginning and middle periods of their recovery, have years of getting on with life in an ordinary way, and then new parts appear. That is how we know we have not finished recovery. This pattern may persist throughout a lifetime and raises certain questions. Should survivors be informed that locating and healing all parts of their mind-controlled brains may be a life-long endeavor and might never be fully accomplished? Should this information be part of informed consent? But would survivors then be discouraged from even beginning to dismantle their mind control? Would only the most earnest truth-seekers even try to be free? And would the already scarce therapists not want to go into the field? People like to finish what they start. And therapists do not want to be stuck with survivor-victims life-long. Success and an end point seem to be two necessary components of taking on work for some. Is it wrong, then, for a therapist to tell clients a process will end when it might not? It could also be wrong to tell clients the process might never end when it might end.

Since, to my knowledge, other survivors of mind control have not spoken about this, I will use my own experience as an example. After the year I spent in intensive therapy with Alison, I kept working on my own and found other traumas. Then I had a hiatus of relative peace during which I enjoyed nature. Eventually, I received an email with trigger words from one of the "friends" who lived in the city I escaped from and whom I thought of as a friend, at one time my best friend. I might never have gotten to this awareness and the related programming memories on my own. The reason the "friend" directed me to it is because it is a potent and complicated suicide program that the abusers wanted me to act on. When I was an older child, the infamous Mengele captured three of my original thirteen infant parts, bound them and locked them in an airtight internal chamber where they received no food or drink. He built on those death experiences through torture and programmed an older child to kill herself. I had missed this whole piece of my mind control, though I had remembered many other suicide programs, some installed by this same Nazi doctor. This awareness opened up the vital information about how many of my "friends" were cult plants.

Recently, I found internal structures within a structure. This is the internal structure that the Nazi group erected when they stole the parts that the Illuminati group created when I was born. There was a giant cave with a tower and smaller caves within the main cave. By its side was what Mengele called a red river. I worked through the contents of this structure and revived the stolen parts. Then I saw within my brain little *papier-mâché* and clay models and tarot cards. The red river became a piece of painted red cardboard. It is all just paper. There is the tower constructed of paper and clay. Toothpicks hold it up. Toothpicks, and I thought it was a prison. And there is the tarot card of a tower. A woman or girl falls out its window. She will land on a tiny table. The fall will not break her back. There were many cards of crows. Crows live for three years. Those crows cannot still be alive. What was erected was a paper world that comes down like a child's collapsible toy. This is a paper hell, a child's hell. The river is dry. Soggy playing cards remain at the bottom. The hearts, spades, clubs, diamonds are smeared with ink that has run. Soggy little playing cards that controlled me. This was an imaginary internal world within my child-brain. It is no longer real.

I do not know how many more devastating surprises I will find. Perhaps none, perhaps many. Only time will tell. Whether there is an end to discovering what criminal mind control you have been subjected to is something people have to hang loose about. I have the skills now to work through the new memories and programs to commit suicide, which will not affect me. I doubt fully that I am the only survivor who will find new chambers in my mind that I have not had the lucidity to get to earlier, despite an enormous effort. I do not know whether there is ever a true end to this process. I hope there is. If there is not, what freedom I have achieved will be enough.

Will there be an end to the world?

Will there be an end to restoring the split and chopped up mind?

Will there be an end to internal parts and parts held in reserve and parts stolen by one group from another?

Even experienced therapists can be shocked to learn how long it takes to treat survivors of generational criminal mind control. They may sign on for years and find they have to work with the same clients for decades. Naturally, they become impatient. Some become exhausted and want their lives back. Who would not? It is difficult to maintain a normal, carefree life while treating survivors. In addition, the helpers are forced to acknowledge what occurs in dark society and some do not want to see. Therefore, there may be an inherent, though unconscious, rushing in the treatment. They might silently encourage a belief that survivors have finished when, in fact, there is more work to be done. They might proclaim that there is an end to this kind of treatment, to the reunification of the once-split mind. For some, there might be. But for others, there might not be.

There can still be an end to therapy, however. Once you have worked with a skilled therapist for a while, you may have learned how to do the work yourself. People who have had an intensive course of "regular" therapy for traumas less intense and prolonged than mind control often go back for a check-up if symptoms start to reappear. You are allowed to do that, if your therapist is still available. You deserve it.

SECTION VIII

ODES ABOUT MIND CONTROL

by Wendy Hoffman

I wrote some of these Odes to reach out to the different parts of myself who have had horrendous jobs in their secret lives, and also for survivors who are looking within and finding tragedy. I hope the Odes offer compassion.

* * *

To the Mind-Controlled

You were born whole, lovely and good.
They tortured your brain into thousands of pieces.

You became many strangers,
each one living in an ice-concealed grave inside.

Hordes in ghostly isolation, not one knew of the others.
Noiseless, you tiptoed through life, alone in a mob.

I am happy that I did not stay in a shattered mind.
I followed the invisible thread back.

Let the pain flood into the Red Sea.
Nothing is worth sacrificing truth for. And freedom.

Nothing is worth not becoming yourself.

To the Front Person

You have lived your life in the one quarter inch of space
in my outer crust.
You did not know how the rest of us suffered within.

You walked down the sidewalk and up the hill as if you were like
everybody else.
You did not know you were empty and filled to bursting.

You smiled a normal smile which often came about suddenly.
People said you have a nice smile. That means you must be normal.

You went to school and day dreamed.
You did not know they put learning problems in you.
You passed anyway.

You married and divorced confused.
Why wasn't your husband a good man? Why didn't you get along
with your son?

You did not know about all the abducted children or your
murdered friend.
You did not know about your most important people.

You did not know you did not know.
You went through life not knowing a thing, much like society today.

How brave you were. Taking steps forward, not knowing you carried
frozen hordes within.
You felt their emotions but could not name them.

You did not understand that you were empty and over-full to bursting.
How valiant to get an education and paid work, to move forward not
knowing you were empty and over-full.

You shoveled snow off the deck, worked two jobs, sometimes
  were kind.
You slogged through life, had moments of buoyancy.

And when you broke down and could no longer do it, they
  created another front person.
And still you did not know. Then you were inside among the silent.

How valiant and brave and sad.
And now you know. You are the over-full. You name the feelings.

Unlike society, you understand.
How valiant and brave and sad.

*To the Unloved, Rejected and Abandoned**

It wasn't your fault.
Right from the start, we were emptied out
    and raw hatred inserted.
They trained our mothers to turn their backs on us,
    our fathers to be brutal.
Your grandfather may be your father.
How could your mother overcome that?
    Our heritage.
It is your mission now to love yourself.
You are as lovable as
    anyone else on earth.
You deserve to be cherished, not blamed.

To the Learning Disabled

Your mind drifted mid-sentence.
You could never finish a book.
You reversed letters and numbers.
Your mind inserted a 'not' in every sentence
and you stopped listening after a few minutes.

Teachers looked at you
with annoyance or pity.
You are stupid and dull—the only conclusion.

---

* A version of this poem appeared in the online journal *Survivorship,* Winter 2016.

Even your big sister said so, and she knew everything
and could read whole books.

But in college you heard whispers and dropped
comments that you have the smarts.
In graduate school the whispers
became more pronounced.

An optometrist detected your eyes muscles did not converge.
The vision trainer said it was caused by early loss.
Decades passed before you learned about mind control,
the government's secret.
Slaves always have to be rendered stupid.

More decades passed. In therapy
you remembered that before first grade,
programmers taught you not to read, not to do math, to give
   wrong answers. To give a wrong answer, you first have to
figure out the right answer.

They buried your brightness under layers of weighted ineptitude.
Only they could use your intelligence, not you or any safe person.

To Spies, Thieves, and Mules

You learned to follow with soft steps, watch shadows, identify
   people by their backs,
use your mind like a camera—snap, click, memorized.

You slipped documents and photos inside lapels and papers
   out of inner pockets all while smiling sweetly and looking
   sideways.

They shipped you around the world in an airplane seat or crate.
I got the information. I did the deed. I can go home.

The mules carried you to the criminal base you call home. They
   managed Customs, read flight numbers. Each group had skills
   they were not allowed to share with their companion-groups.
   Without the mules, you would have remained in airspace.

Now airplanes and airports harrow. You do not have
to fly anymore.
You can stay home and use your nimble fingers digging in the
garden's earth and forming papier mâché shapes. No one will
send you off. Sit in the easy chair. Turn on the TV.

Even if you broke the mold and reported to Customs what you stole
or carried in your vagina, they would not have believed you.
You would have ended up with the "insane", drugged for life.

To the Sexual Slaves Within

I see a child on the stage as the brothel customers throw their wet
handkerchiefs at you. The spot lights hurt your body.

I see another child in the apartment building's basement learning
to fondle.
Uncle Mike taught you.

As a teenager in spiked heels, you slipped pills into drinks. Mengele
taught you.

You seduced and stripped on command. They have schools to teach that.
They separated many of you from the others. They wore one skin and
you grew a second skin of shame. People have died over less.

You had one of the harder jobs and you did not die even though
you died,
and died again.

Now you live with all of us in a solid globbing whole.

No one scorns you.
You do not have to be touched and you do not have to touch ever again.

A jewel in a velvet box, you are protected from the sinister.
You do not have to like men.
The others will take care of you.

Rest.
Here eat some chocolate.

To Mothers

So young. You gave birth before you were allowed to wear lipstick
in ordinary life.
They induced menstruation when you were eleven. And shipped
you off immediately to the Bronx brothel where your child's
body delivered three infants, immediately snatched away by
the Mafia adoption agency—to be sold like cocaine. You will
never see them. You couldn't hold or smell them. You do feel
them. You think your son is in jail. In the 1950s, other girls
starting junior high weren't allowed to date.

After thirteen, it was the Illuminati's turn. In a Brooklyn monastery,
you birthed
four more infants. You saw two murdered and do not know what
became of the others.
You grew an extra layer of skin inside your outer skin, a skin of
grief. You hold out your air arms and call your babies in. They fit
even though they are past middle age now. Did the slaughtered
infants stay infants? You press them to your heart and
your grief braids with theirs. Your and their angers clasp. Will you
see them in the afterlife? Is there an afterlife? You swim in air-reality.

To Kidnappers

Their goal is to strip you of all remnants of your real self.
You have to be an automaton who follows verbal, hand, foot

and visual signals.
They pull a string and the marionette moves.

That is what they make you.
They measure what would be most abhorrent to you.

Out of meanness or pleasure in their craft, they give you those tasks.
They are proud they have striped all your empathy away

but they cannot. Your own children were abducted
and you will always feel for children and mothers.

And so you have a screaming breakdown, exactly what
  they do not want.

They try again years later.
They insist on perfecting evil.

You will keep living though so many children are dead.
You go on even though children are missing.

You did the best you could. “Under the worst circumstances”
  has new meaning.

To Trained Assassins

You started out a meek and gentle soul.
But you could be quick to anger, the commanders noticed.
Their army needs killers:
    because they have to kill
    because they have to make you feel worthless.

Males have to go in with guns and fists.
Females learn seduction, pills and poisons.
Hefty girls can train with guns.
Stocky females with strong forearms become torturers too.

O, assassins, it is not who you are. You are still
innocent children sitting in a field of daisies.

They made you explode with anger. Drugs can do that.
They made you cold, calculating.

Come back to the beginning.
You have left behind the rest.
They took the sweetest part of you and twisted.

To Witches

Of all the jobs, this is not one of the worst.
You could travel on the periphery of breeze and wave,
cover vast terrains while gazing out your window.

You could be assigned to destroy but they do not know when
you do the opposite. Maybe just the top experts would.

You didn't ask to be a witch or know how to make portents and charms.
You didn't ask to stroll into the future.

It doesn't matter.
Of course it matters.

To the Plant-Therapists

I cannot believe you would have done this of your own free will,
wittingly blocked people's paths,

cemented over their quest, made them about-face
in their belief in themselves. Some of you may be that evil.

But for the rest. You must have been badly tortured.
What was the threat? That your child would be murdered?

Worse?
That they would be skinned first?

Is your own child more important than other people's?
You took yearning minds and smashed them anew.

To Those Who Couldn't Protect

Bambi wasn't my dog though they bought him on my birthday.
He was Father's dog.
He trained him.

At the Tackenasee country club, Mother held him by his hind legs
and beat him against the hotel's bathtub as if he were a dusty rug.
Father threw him in the swimming pool. Then Bambi bit a woman.
My parents.

When I was thirteen, Pow Wow attached himself to me. He became the owner and
I the adored pet. He protected me until the commanders skinned and sacrificed him.
My penalty for love.

Today my pet and I live in harmony, as peers.
But my front person was nowhere present when the tormenters
ripped into my home and twisted her back legs two different times.
A warning.

My front person thought the injury was genetic and rehabilitated
her all these years
but Blossom knew the truth.

How do you live with yourself when you couldn't protect?
You take one step, another and . . .

To the Beaten

Every month, in childhood every week, you were broken.

Right before I escaped, ruffians snuck through the back door, used
their key in the
front door, climbed my stairs and dragged, hit, tasered, raped and
plunged
me in a tub of ice.

That last day when I ran successfully, did they not know or were they
afraid of exposure? Is that why they let me go?

Unless they planned to murder me on the road.
Unless the friend who volunteered to accompany me is one of them.

Two and a half years later, my body softens. My toenails breathe.
I begin to
feel my bones grow sturdy, the hair on my arms, the ocean in
my nostrils.

You took the beatings for us all. You are sore and chipped.

Lie down in this hammock. Let the sun languish on your crushed
limbs, rock
back and forth, mend quietly.

You are free, safe and no longer numb.

To Mourners

Some people get over things. Some do not.

You have liquid skin and pliant muscles that should breathe out
misery but you hold on.

You would be a different person today had he not loved you.

He was tall and thin with blue black curly hair that glistened in
the dull air against his apricot skin and dark ancestral eyes. He was
thirteen and he loved. You were three and a half.

Always, for sixty-nine years, you feel his breath on you, his
heart beating upon yours, the rhythm of his lungs.

Take a child who knew only hatred and the gift of a boy who
could only give love—take that and try to stop mourning.

To the Co-Conscious

In some ways, it was easier when everyone lived in their separate boxes.

The lids opened and thousands emerged, each with a story that
would overwhelm any life.

Your old brain spasmed. Clogged pathways spit out rusted debris.
Blood flowed to closed down cells. Your brain erupted into life.
Springtime grew in snow and ice.

Eventually your brain quiets. All these people inside talk to one
another. What conversations! You had no idea.

I believe it is better to know.
I believe truth is the goal.
But I had no idea.

To the Integrated

If I put my right ear to my shoulder, my mind still stays whole
and fastened. If I tilt to the other side, I do not lose any parts.

I can move my head up and down, see the sky, earth—
it still all stays bound and backstitched.
I have had recent tragedies but my brain remains glued.
I hadn't even aimed for this cohesiveness. It happened by itself.

Emotions ripple through me.
All of me feels everything.
There is no escape from me.

All these pieces have come together to make me as close
to normal as a previously tortured person can become.
My mind walks toward how it was originally designed.
My heart has quadrupled.
I live inside my body.
My bones support me.

I move to the left, back, forward.
I stay intact.
My brain is having a reunion.

To Confidence

I have taken tiny steps—toe to heel—
around a lopsided globe

and flown upside down through the
circumference of wild air

but only now have I landed
among bones, organs and blood.

I have never been this close in myself before.
My new skin holds tightly as

I deliver bouquets,
truffles and creams to my arteries and veins.

It has been a long, tiring trip.
I rest quietly on the greenest prairie.

To Gratitude

My fingers are nimble
even though the tip
of one was amputated.

My teeth still chew
despite many socks
to the jaw.

My nostrils still sniff
despite the odor of
mounds of death.

My brain thinks
even though I have had more
concussions than football players.

I have come out alive
and can love.
That’s enough.

REFERENCES

Carter, C. (2012). *Science and Psychic Phenomena: The Fall of the House of Skeptics*. Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions.

Extreme Abuse Survey (n.d.). Available at: https://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/.

Hoffman, W. (2014). *The Enslaved Queen: A Memoir about Electricity and Mind Control*. London: Karnac.

Hoffman, W. (2016a). *White Witch in a Black Robe: A True Story about Mind Control*. London: Karnac.

Hoffman, W. (2016b). *Forceps, Poems about the Birth of the Self*. London: Karnac.

Miller, A. (1983). *For Your Own Good*, H. Hannum & H. Hannum (Trans.). New York: Farrar, Straus, & Giroux.

Miller, A. (1997). *The Drama of the Gifted Child*, R. Ward (Trans.). New York: Basic Books.

Miller, A. (2011). *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control*. London: Karnac.

Miller, A. (2014). *Becoming Yourself: Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse*. London: Karnac.

Siegel, D. J. (2012). *The Developing Mind: How Relationships and the Brain Interact to Shape Who We Are* (2nd edn). New York: Guilford Press.

Woolston, C. (n.d.). Falling in love with your baby: the science behind love and mother–infant bonding. Available at: https://consumer.healthday.com/encyclopedia/parenting-31/parenting-health-news-525/falling-in-love-with-your-baby-643058.html.

INDEX

abandonment, 4, 80, 89, 92, 95, 116–117, 125, 220, 238, 242
Abe, 139–140
abuse/abusers *see also*: family, fetus, mental, satanic
  child/childhood, 10, 20, 69, 83
    survivors, 63, 111, 117, 125, 191
  client, 110, 114
  emotional, 111
  group, 66, 68, 70, 242
  mind control, 45–46, 221
  organized, 71, 76, 109
    survivor(s), 4, 212
  parts, 60
  physical, 103, 219
  ritual (RA), xiii, 3–5, 32–33, 35, 45–47, 64, 115, 126, 134, 145, 160, 164, 185, 191–192, 199–200, 205, 230, 251
    survivor(s), 6–7, 34, 115–116, 162, 173–174, 184, 191–192, 200, 207, 217
  scenarios, 78
  sexual, 12, 103, 134
    survivor, 200
  situations, 16
  spiritual, 75
  verbal, 72
  voices inside, 76
addictions, 42, 65, 212, 242 *see also*: sexual
afterlife, 79, 92, 272
Alice in Wonderland, 226
aliens, 32–33, 81 *see also*: parts
  abductions, 33, 81
  lizard-like, 33, 45
all-seeing eye, 66
alters, 5, 14–15, 102, 119, 255, 258 *see also*: demon/demonic, parts
  child, 116
  personalities, 12–14, 18
amnesia, 16, 183
angel, 125, 167–169
  guardian, 125
  of mercy, 168, 171
  of the sunset, 168

anger, 6–7, 9, 16–17, 21–22, 26, 56, 82, 89–90, 107, 112–114, 125, 131, 138, 141, 145–147, 231, 245, 251, 272–273
  displacement training, 138–141
  transference of, 139–140
answering the door, 67–68, 185
anxiety, 5, 97, 116, 177, 212, 215, 218, 223, 252
archery, 138, 142
Aryan race, 258–259
ask inside, 20, 177, 212, 244
assassin, 27, 29, 42, 72, 143–145, 152, 157–158, 237, 273
assassinations, 27, 142–144, 147
assessing children, 37–38
attachment, 77, 87, 90, 99, 128, 136, 202, 230
  disorder, 88
  infanticidal, 90
attention deficit disorder, 4
attunement, 115, 117–118, 120
auras, 119

bandwagon, 146–148
barricades in the mind, 9, 132, 224
bathroom, 133, 195
  mirror, 233
beast, 44, 79
  Feast of the, 160, 203
behavior, 14–15, 18, 21, 48, 59, 62, 75, 77–78, 96, 111–112, 116, 118, 135, 203 *see also*: cognitive behavioral therapy
  animal, 221
  inappropriate, 18–19
  mis-, 169, 192
  trained, 46, 53, 204, 241, 243
betrayal, 59, 91, 94, 177 *see also*: traitor
Bible, 45
BIG LIE, 236
bipolar disorder, 4
birthdays, 6, 65, 182, 274
Blake, W., 150
blood, 73, 259–260, 276–277
body memory, 234 *see also*: sexual
bomb in the body, 70–71
bonding, 30, 87–90, 94–99, 108, 128, 201, 230, 241, 249–250 *see also* trauma
boundaries, 117, 253
brain, xiii, 4, 11–12, 31, 39, 41, 46, 81, 89, 96, 107, 129, 133, 142–143, 151–152, 163, 172, 181, 196, 198, 202, 219, 224, 226, 232–233, 245, 260, 262–263, 276–278
  circuitry, 53
  disease, 3
  dissociated, 89
  fragmented, xiii, 7–9, 25, 36, 163, 195, 214, 250, 260, 267
  splits, 25
  surgery, 81
  -wash, 53, 69, 73
  waves, 139
break-ins, 175–176, 195
breeders, 135, 237
brothel, 271–272
bullying, 26, 218, 226

called home, 182
Cameron, D. E., 147, 214
Camus, A., 193
cannibalism, 73
cards
  playing, 107, 130, 135–136, 144, 168, 185, 215, 263
  tarot, 107, 130, 168, 185, 263
Carter, C., 118
chair(s), 15, 217, 271
  black, 107, 140, 147, 156
  electroshock, 101, 107, 129, 132, 134–135, 140, 145, 156, 176, 188, 225–226, 233, 254
  floor, 132
character flaws, 40, 42, 48
chimeras, 32, 34
Christian, 35, 45–47, 107, 125, 154, 163, 190, 192, 202 *see also*:

Christmas, Easter, God, holidays, Jesus
  evangelical, 45
Christmas, 79
codes/coding, 27, 107–108, 131, 144, 160, 186, 195
coffins, 131, 140
  internal, 140
cognitive behavioral therapy, 4
coincidences, 188–189, 207
comfort, 41, 88–90, 97, 150, 160, 167–168, 220, 231, 245, 261
compassion, 41, 62–63, 76, 82–83, 96, 124, 126, 193, 201, 238–239, 253, 267
concentration, 57, 232
  camps, 101, 164
conferences for survivors, 30, 184, 188
confidence, 248
  over, 187, 196
conscience, 39, 42, 61–62, 261
conscious(ness), 10, 13–14, 18, 30, 47, 62, 102, 107, 114, 133, 135, 148, 156, 160–161, 170, 176–177, 198, 203–204, 220, 223, 232, 234, 238, 250 *see also*: unconscious
  awareness, 22, 233
  co-, 23, 216, 236
  going, 159–161
  memories, 152
  perpetrators, 49, 160, 201
  sub-, 33–34
conspiracy theory, 27
containers, 25, 130–131, 223
  internal, 150, 223–224
contracts, 62
costumes, 5, 46, 48, 78–79, 81
countertransference, 109, 112–114 *see also*: transference
creature in the body, 71
Criminal Record Check, 211–212
critical thinking, 33–35
cross, 79
crying, 38, 82–83, 88–89, 129, 136, 247, 257–258
cues, 8, 29, 31, 107, 131, 135–136, 144, 168, 184, 199, 225
current contact, 175

danger to those you tell, 68, 71, 77, 196
Daniel, 170–171
death, 37, 47, 62, 72, 74, 79, 91–93, 130, 136, 146, 149–151, 167–169, 171, 173, 183, 195, 197, 219, 240, 251, 258–259, 263, 278 *see also*: near-death experiences, threats
deception, 3, 5, 48, 89, 168, 203
  self-, 112
deities, 76
  ancient, 44–45
  animal, 44
  pagan, 45
deliverance, 6, 35, 46
delusions, 4, 34, 69
demon/demonic, 4, 6, 17, 45–46, 48–49, 77, 139, 168 *see also*: alters, parts, possession
depression, 5, 216, 241, 252
despair, 9, 38–39, 125–126, 131, 254
devil, 17, 44–45 *see also*: demon, Lucifer, Satan
  child of the, 78–79
  costume, 46, 78–79
disguised identities, 5
disinformation, 32–35, 163, 184, 186
disobedience, 57, 61–64, 67, 76–77, 91, 147, 151, 169, 217, 243, 255, 261 *see also*: obedience
dissociated traumatic memories, 33–35
dissociative disorders, 4, 6, 17, 123, 199
dissociative identity disorder (DID), 3, 15–16, 20
divine
  intervention, 170–171
  providence, 207
  punishment, 44

doctors, 7, 60, 68–69, 73, 95, 132, 140, 193, 220–221, 234, 263
    see also: Cameron, D. E., Mengele, J.
  holistic, 220
dreams, 55, 119, 232, 268 *see also*: nightmares
drugs, 5–6, 9, 21, 26, 30, 42, 53, 55, 65, 68, 72, 78, 81, 88, 93, 95, 101, 103, 107, 114, 136, 139, 141–142, 146, 150, 152, 167–168, 176–177, 182, 188, 192, 195, 220, 223, 233, 254, 271, 273
Dylan, R., 192

Easter, 79
electroshock, 88, 103, 107, 123, 135–136, 140, 156, 177, 182, 224–225, 233 *see also*: chair
energy, 15, 57, 83, 118, 148, 158, 189, 232, 251, 258
  rebalancing, 33–34
  therapies, 35, 107
evil(s), xiii–xiv, 6, 17, 25, 27, 36, 42, 44–48, 56, 71, 74–77, 80, 87, 90, 92, 95, 99, 101, 124–126, 143–144, 163, 181, 191–193, 197, 203, 207, 216, 240–242, 246, 259, 273–274
  choice between two, 47, 76, 192
  lesser of two, 47, 76, 192
exorcism, 6, 17, 46
Extreme Abuse Survey, 162, 174

fail-safes, 9
fake operation, 71, 81
false memories, 5
family, xiii–xiv, 21, 36, 38, 59, 69, 71, 87, 93–95, 98–99, 101–108, 116, 124, 129, 138, 140, 146, 154–155, 162, 170–171, 178, 182–183, 197–198, 220, 223, 225, 230, 232, 241, 250
  abuse/abusive, 98, 102
  biological, 59
  cult, 47, 61, 78, 89, 95–96, 98, 101, 103–104, 152, 182–183, 230
  -hunger, 106, 108, 247
  member(s), 6, 21, 57, 59, 66, 69, 74, 95, 97–98, 107, 128, 176, 182
  relationships, 101–103, 216
fear, xiv, 6, 16–17, 21, 30, 38–39, 62, 67, 82, 84, 89, 91–92, 94–96, 113, 126, 131, 163, 177, 185, 218, 229, 250
feeling unreal, 5
fetus, 37, 88
  abuse, 88–89
flashbacks, 4–6, 55, 72, 110, 213, 234
flattery, 204–205
forced perpetration, 4, 6, 47
forgiveness, 76–77, 79–80
  self-, 136, 246, 261
friend, 11, 36–38, 42, 61, 63, 74–75, 77, 80, 91–93, 95, 97, 100–101, 108, 117–118, 125, 129, 148, 150, 170, 176, 178, 180–181, 187–188, 190, 195–196, 198, 204–206, 220–221, 225–226, 230, 234, 241, 245, 249, 254–255, 261, 263, 268, 275
  boy-, 108, 203, 206, 221
  girl-, 108, 206
  -ship, 57, 78, 97, 153, 176, 205–206
front person (or people), 4–5, 12, 14–15, 18, 21–22, 30, 102, 106–108, 147, 183, 201, 203, 212–216, 218, 235, 243, 245, 269, 275

gang, 146
  members, 149
  rape, 95, 136
  wars, 146, 148
garbage kids *see*: parts
gathering survivors, 163
genital markings, 152
God, 9, 44, 76–77, 79–80, 125–126, 163, 191–193
  acts of, 44
  interventionist, 125, 191–192

god/goddesses, 46, 79 *see also*: deities
  Egyptian, 45
  Greek, 45
  Roman, 45
  sex, 40
Golden Rule, 48, 61–62
good people, 69, 77, 93, 97, 153, 255
gratitude, 30
grief, 19, 38–39, 91–92, 97, 99, 117, 141, 158, 272
guilt, 19, 36, 38–39, 62, 91–92, 110–112, 150, 168, 196, 203, 223, 240, 252–253, 259

hallucinations, 4
hand signals, 29–31, 107, 130–131, 153, 160, 173, 185–186, 205
handlers, 30, 89, 93–94, 98, 106–108, 135–136, 142–143, 147–148, 167–169, 179–181, 184, 188, 204, 206, 215, 220–221, 243, 247
harassment of survivors, 6–7, 196–197, 234
hate, 12, 39, 76–77, 80, 97, 103–104, 108, 125, 127, 155, 196, 230, 241 *see also*: self
head vise, 129, 146–147, 254
hearing voices, 3, 13, 22
heaven, 45, 79, 150
hell, 78–79, 171, 259, 263
hiding, 6, 9, 11, 16, 29, 57, 66, 126, 177, 181, 205, 211, 219, 221, 243, 251, 253
hierarchy, 9, 189, 242
Hitler, A., 154, 164, 258
Hoffman, W., xiv, 7, 48, 113–114, 118–119, 140, 160–161, 163, 173, 190–191, 199–204, 206–207
  Enslaved Queen, The, 124, 155, 160, 199, 253
  INCEST: *Remember & Tell*, 206
  White Witch in a Black Robe, 26, 124, 143
holidays, 6, 91, 100, 175, 182 *see also*: Christmas, Easter
  Christian, 6
  pagan, 6
Holocaust, 105, 126, 172, 192
homicide *see*: murder
honor, 42, 73, 104, 137, 258
  dis-, 4
horror, xiv, 90, 123–126, 135, 192
hospital, 68, 71, 73, 174, 187, 221–222, 258 *see also*: mental
  Bronx, 252
  Delaware, 221
  McGill, 147
  staff, 173, 198
hospitalization, 69, 173–174, 182
host personality, 14
hypervigilance, 4
hypnosis, 5, 41, 55, 81, 142
hysteria, 42

Icke, D., 45
idealized childhood, 102
identifying perpetrators, 153, 181
illness, 61, 68–69, 92, 99, 201, 213, 219–222, 234 *see also*: mental
  medical, 234
  serious, 88, 219, 222, 244
Illuminati, 9, 25–27, 48, 114, 154, 263, 272
  programming, 131
imagination, 5, 11, 13, 24, 45, 55, 80, 111–112, 116, 118, 124, 134, 191, 216, 244, 263
incest, 103, 134 *see also*: Hoffman, W.
infant *see also*: parts, torture
  cult, 88
  inner, 230
  splits, 8, 189
injuries, 68–69, 92, 176, 216, 220, 275 *see also*: mental
inner world, xiv, 77, 83–84, 217, 235
insects, 37, 58, 74, 217
inside
  animals, 77–78
  monsters, 77–78
  other people, 77

  spirits, 77
  world, 14, 72, 218
insiders, 5, 13, 80, 102, 212–213, 216, 217, 235, 243–244
  child 116
  cult, 200
  hidden, 160
integration, 9, 23, 43, 94, 98, 144, 159, 161, 170, 216, 219, 231, 236, 239, 246, 249, 261
integrity, 42, 202, 238–239
intelligence agencies, 5
  Central (CIA), 4
internal librarians, 150
International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation, 35
isolation, 42, 124, 223, 230, 267

Jesus, 45, 77, 79–80, 258
Jew/Judaism, 46, 147, 154–155, 163, 254–256 *see also*: Holocaust

Kaballah, 24–26, 168
  programming, 159
karma, 192
Katz, S., 46, 91, 159–161, 185
Kelly, W., 49
Kennedy, J., 154
kidnapping, 29, 60

leader
  criminal, 37, 42
  cult, 88, 91, 97, 103, 135, 143, 145, 221, 249
  internal, 63–64, 212–213
  political, 108, 143
  religious, 163, 176
  -ship, 88, 144
  team, 145, 147–148
  world, 152, 155, 163
learning disabilities, 241
lies/lying, 4–6, 18–19, 25, 29, 37–38, 53–84, 91, 94, 102–103, 157, 162, 169, 177, 181, 202, 223, 229–230, 236, 239, 241–243, 245–246, 250, 252–253, 261 *see also*: BIG LIE
living in the past, 21
Liz, 188, 190
loneliness, 12–13, 42, 98, 131, 186, 206, 216, 231, 249–250, 252, 261
loss, 16, 83, 92, 117, 150, 270
love, 7, 22, 37–38, 41, 48, 63, 75, 77, 80, 89–97, 99–100, 102, 104–108, 115–117, 126, 128, 137–138, 150, 157, 162, 170–172, 177, 179–180, 192–193, 216, 230, 238, 241–243, 245, 249, 261, 269, 274, 276, 278 *see also*: maternal love, mother, murder, self
loyalty, 62, 73 *see also*: parts
  cult, 148, 159, 180
  dis-, 65
Lucifer/Luciferianism, 25–27, 45, 76, 78–79, 150 *see also*: devil, Satan
  child of, 79
Lucretius, 224

Mafia, 26, 103, 162, 272 *see also*: organized crime
magic, 4, 56–57, 77, 91, 150
  knowledge, 58
  real, 55–56
  stage, 53, 55–56
Manchurian Candidate, *The*, 128, 143–144
manufactured feelings, 114
marriage, 62, 96, 107–108, 154, 157, 180, 182, 188, 250, 268 *see also*: Satan
  arranged, 96, 107
  cult, 96
masons, 9, 25, 31
maternal love, 117
  falling in, 115–116
matriarchs, 41, 160, 186
Max, 139–140, 201
Mengele, J., 95, 201, 214, 254, 263, 271
mental, 89, 248
  abuse, 101
  deficiency, 136

  Health Center, 116, 199
  health professional, 173
  hospital, 68, 174, 198
  illness, 20, 68, 252
  injury, 20
  institution, 68
microphone, 56, 58, 66
Miller, Alice, 130
Miller, Alison, 37, 130, 146, 155, 170–171, 187–188, 194–195, 205, 229, 233, 244, 255–256, 262
  Becoming Yourself: *Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse*, 229
  Healing the Unimaginable: *Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control*, 46, 91, 115, 159, 171, 174, 194
Milton, J., 45
Miranda, 91
mirror, 16, 46, 78, 233
MKUltra, 26
mother, 6, 17, 19–20, 39, 41, 57–58, 63, 87–91, 93–95, 97, 99, 103, 105, 111–113, 115–118, 130, 140–141, 146, 154–155, 170, 204, 225, 230, 241, 247, 249, 252, 261, 269, 272, 274 *see also*: parents
  grand-, 139
  -less, 87, 252
  love, 87, 89–90, 241
multiple, 3, 5, 10–22, 75, 115–117
Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD), 3
murder, 6, 29, 90–91, 101, 103, 106–107, 124, 130, 143, 149–151, 174, 176, 187, 194–196, 222, 226, 232, 238, 249–251, 255–256, 275
  apparent, 62
  of loved ones, 38, 91–92, 150, 238, 249, 261, 268, 272, 274
  simulated, 5, 55
murderer, 70, 135, 142, 149
mythology, 44–45
narcissism, 189, 203
natural disasters, 44
Nazi/Nazism, 26–27, 95, 101, 114, 126, 154–155, 189, 254, 263
    see also: Ayran race, Hitler, A., Mengele, J.
  twenty-first century, 26, 155
near-death experiences, 47, 193
need
  for comfort, 41, 88, 231, 245
  for power, 26, 42, 49, 203, 238
  for recognition, 40–41, 238
needles, 129, 233
nightmares, 5–6, 213, 232 *see also*: dreams
Nobel Peace Prize, 36
nobility of survivors, 239

obedience, 21, 30, 33, 48, 53, 61–65, 71, 73, 76, 80, 82, 107, 137, 139, 142, 188, 196, 204, 217–218
    see also: disobedience
online, 35, 185, 212, 226
  consultation, 117
  discussion groups, 153, 185
  message board, 176
  support groups, 230
organized crime, 5, 26, 162, 198
    see also: Mafia
outrageous claims, 32, 34
oxytocin, 115

Paradise Lost see: Milton, J.
parents, 30, 54–55, 60–61, 69, 89–90, 92–93, 97–99, 102–105, 109, 139, 146, 151, 157, 168, 180–182, 191, 215, 241–242, 245, 247, 252, 274
    see also: mother
  biological, 105
  cult, 98, 104–105
  grand-, 63, 102, 105, 168
  -hood, 97
parts *see also*: abuse, alters, front person (or people), insiders
  alien, 77–78

  baby, 17
  child, 5–6, 12, 14, 16–17, 20, 30, 34, 47, 56, 78, 82, 95, 110, 116, 159–161, 185, 201, 212, 246, 257, 261
  creation of, 76, 179
  cult-loyal, 7, 126
  demons, 6, 17, 22, 46, 77
  discarded, 218
  garbage kids, 217–218
  hidden, 3, 5, 30, 114, 119, 201, 234
  immortal, 258
  infant, 8, 115, 117–118, 130, 250, 263
  inside, 5, 16, 34–35, 39, 54–57, 67, 69, 71, 81–84, 102, 107, 113, 183, 194, 211, 216, 234, 236, 239, 242–243
  jobs of, 7–8, 64, 72, 76, 78, 82, 84, 126, 133, 144, 235, 267
  locations, 84, 195
  memorizer, 13, 107, 129–130, 152, 202, 225, 270
  merging of, 23, 246
  messenger, 152
  observer, 147
  opposite sex, 17
  persecutor, 22
  protector, 22, 111, 125
  recorder, 152
  reporter, 57–58, 66, 69, 103, 177, 236
  robot, 8, 81, 107
  soldier, 139–140, 218, 237
  spinners, 133
  spirit, 77–78, 150
  stealing, 255
pathways, 25, 168, 276
Penn and Teller, 56
pets, 37–38, 63, 77, 96–97, 99–100, 103, 157, 176–177, 221, 225, 230, 251, 274–275
phone *see*: telephone
police, 70, 176, 198, 200, 211–212, 238
  officer, 70
  uniform, 70
political, 25–27, 107–108, 152–153, 156, 161, 163, 195
  assassination, 27, 152
  candidates, 27, 153
  group, 5, 257
  leader, 108, 143
politicians, 48, 152–153, 163, 176, 203
  killing, 139
pool of emotions, 249
pornography, 6, 26, 135, 162, 212, 237
  child, 5, 103
  films/flicks, 103, 212
    snuff, 103
positive memories, 33–34
possession, 49, 73, 103, 128–129, 226
  by demon/god, 46–48, 163
pregnancy, 88, 149
priestesses/priests, 79, 256
  high, 64
programmer, 24–26, 29, 41–42, 48, 64, 88–90, 94–95, 98–99, 103, 129–132, 135–136, 138–142, 144, 146–147, 150, 152, 155, 159–160, 168, 171, 175–176, 179–180, 185, 187, 189, 195–196, 198, 201, 203, 206, 214, 220–221, 223, 237, 241, 243–244, 246–247, 252, 254–255, 270
programming, 9, 13, 35, 53, 89, 95–96, 99, 102, 129, 131, 133, 135–136, 143, 146–147, 151, 153, 156–158, 160, 168–169, 180–181, 184, 186, 188, 196, 207, 211, 215, 235–236, 244–247, 254, 256 *see also*: Illuminati, Kaballah
  anti-police, 212
  to burn out the therapist, 113, 117
  children, 104, 226
  do-not-die, 171–174
  gun, 139
  maintenance, 214
  memories, 136, 263
  pre-natal, 92
  return home, 183
  rituals/sessions, 102, 132, 136, 155–156, 158, 214, 226

  speaking from, 113, 202, 255–256
  suicide, 171–174, 263–264
  trigger, 160, 163, 185
projective identification, 113
promotions, 48, 65, 82
prostitution, 42, 103, 135, 237
  child, 4, 6, 26, 162
psychic, 40
  abilities, 80
  awareness, 118, 189
  killing, 77
  vision, 189
psychosis/psychotic, 3–4, 201, 226
punish/punishment, 6, 21, 37, 40, 56, 58–59, 61–67, 70–71, 77, 79, 82–84, 107, 124, 144, 153, 176–177, 180, 214, 217–218 *see also*: divine
  deserve, 62
  severe, 19–20, 63, 83, 175
  someone else, 63, 65
puppets, 9, 42, 168
  sexual, 251

Queen Elizabeth II, 154

rage, 42, 89, 96, 98, 139, 161, 201, 216, 231, 237, 251–252
rank in cult, 61, 185
rape, 4, 6, 17, 46, 48, 62, 70, 79, 95, 124, 130, 136, 163, 182, 275
rejection, 76, 79–80, 89–90, 92–93, 206, 230, 242, 247
rescue, 42, 60, 93, 98, 119, 131, 184, 189, 213, 218, 224
responsibility, 15, 17–20, 36, 70, 75, 80, 115, 161, 236, 240, 250, 252
returning, 63, 65, 182–183, 235
right-wing political groups, 257
ritual dates, 6, 65
run away, 102, 151, 157, 177, 241

Sachs, A., 90
sacrifices, 37, 48, 90–91, 93–94, 103, 136, 162, 177, 232, 238, 268, 274
  self-, 238–239
safe/safety, 6, 13, 15, 19, 28, 31, 48, 57–58, 60, 63–64, 66, 68–70, 72, 76–78, 82, 89, 92, 105, 116–117, 124, 149, 151, 163–164, 183, 185, 187, 189, 191, 195–196, 205, 207, 212–213, 221–222, 230–231, 236, 238, 252, 255, 275 *see also*: therapists
  house, 184, 187
  person, 19, 57, 69, 124, 196, 248, 270
  physical, 8, 63, 185, 235
Satan/satanism, 4–5, 25, 27–28, 45–46, 48–49, 67, 75–76, 78, 151, 192 *see also*: devil, Lucifer
  bride of, 64, 79
  child of, 79
  eyes, 56
  marriage to, 46, 62
  trappings of, 48
satanic, 26–27, 120, 203
  baptism, 46
  cult, 6, 88, 103, 149–150, 180
    abuse, 105
    family, 47, 102
  groups, 27, 49
  ritual abuse (SRA), 45, 47
  rituals, 214
saving others, 238
schizophrenia, 3–4
sections of the mind, 8–9, 94, 143
self, 9–13, 129, 137, 158, 189, 237, 242, 245–246 *see also*: deception, forgiveness, sacrifice
  -admiration, 93
  -aggrandisement, 38
  -assurance, 87
  -care, 220–222
  -centered, 201–202
  -created, 218, 235
  -erase, 9
  -esteem, 42, 48, 88, 93, 103, 137, 172, 242–243, 245, 247–248, 255
  -forgiving, 136

  -fulfilling prophecy, 22
  -hate, 245
  -help, 163
  -importance, 38, 189
  love, 90, 245
  non-, 246
  -protection, 117–118, 239
  -recovery, 230
  -righteous, 152, 201, 255
  -satisfied, 157–158
  -sufficient, 247
  true, 246, 252
sexual, 116, 135, 251 *see also*: abuse, puppets, slave/slavery
  act, 79
  addiction, 136
  assault, 200
  body memory, 137
  expression, 134
  feelings, 135
  life, 136
  object, 251
  parts, 135
  perversion, 49, 101
  pleasure, 72
  program, 136
  response, 135, 251
  stirring, 135
  torture, 12, 134–135
  training, 135
sexuality, 134, 251
shame, 17, 95, 168, 212, 241, 244, 250–252, 259, 271
sibling(s), 89, 91, 95, 97, 103, 118, 163, 180, 182, 215, 245
Siegel, D. J., 117–118
sin, 47, 49
singleton(s), 11–14, 21
slave/slavery, 26, 42, 82, 128–129, 131, 134, 144, 167–169, 176, 180, 229, 244, 246, 248, 255, 270
  sexual, 53, 130, 135, 152, 241
special powers, 73, 80
spinning, 130, 132–133, 254
spy school, 207
Stalin, J., 153
stretching orifices, 130
structure, 24–26, 119, 131, 160, 263
  geometric, 24
  inner/internal, 8, 24–26, 83–84, 119, 159–160, 263
suffocation, 129
suicide, 30, 38, 90, 151, 167, 173–174, 194–195 *see also*: programming
  attempts, 90, 117, 170, 174, 195
  bombers, 72
  pills, 143
  risk, 174
  serious, 117
  successful, 174
  threats, 173
  training, 172–173
  unsuccessful, 170, 174
supernatural, 17, 44–45, 47
switching, 4, 14, 21, 30–31, 123, 142–143, 183, 199, 252

tasers, 130, 139, 176, 254, 275
telepathy, 33–34, 118
telephone, 19–20, 66–67, 106, 111, 182, 185, 187, 204–205, 244, 251
  answer, 66–67
  cell, 61, 188
  number, 107, 185
temptation/tempter, 35, 42, 45, 48–49, 76, 80, 135
therapists, xiv, 5, 7, 11, 16–17, 20, 31, 34–37, 54, 58, 68–69, 71, 90, 93, 99–100, 102, 106–107, 109–118, 120, 124–127, 130, 134–135, 143, 148, 153, 160, 162–164, 173–176, 180, 183, 185, 187, 191–193, 199–200, 202–205, 207, 213, 229–230, 233, 236, 238, 247, 255–256, 262, 264 *see also*: programming, transference
  attuned, 117
  cult/group involved, 35, 69, 106–107, 163, 176, 198–199, 201–203, 237

  fake/false, 68, 132
  good, 70, 77
  impersonation of, 116
  planted, 106–107, 115, 176
  safe, 60, 65, 195, 233, 236–237, 246–247
therapy, 4–5, 14, 19, 21, 58, 70, 99, 107, 110–112, 115–117, 119, 123, 125, 160, 163, 176, 181, 183, 188, 198–199, 201, 237, 241–243, 255, 262, 264, 270 *see also*: cognitive behavioral therapy, energy
  empirically validated, 4
  good, 99, 113, 118
  session, 14, 31, 47, 113, 257, 259
threats/threatening, 6, 37, 39, 44, 53, 55, 63, 75, 94, 102, 107, 124, 146–147, 149, 153, 174, 177, 179, 195, 198, 215, 221, 238, 252, 274 *see also*: suicide
  death, 75, 124, 149
  life, 11, 94, 249
Time Magazine, 36
toilet training, 130
Torah, 254
torture, 4–6, 8, 14, 21, 25, 37, 39, 41–42, 46, 48, 53, 55, 61–62, 69, 72, 79, 82, 84, 87, 93, 101–103, 107, 116, 124, 131, 134–135, 142, 145, 151, 153, 155, 160, 162, 168, 170, 175–177, 182–183, 188, 195–196, 198, 201, 204–205, 214–216, 219, 221–224, 226, 230, 242, 245, 249, 251, 254–255, 260–261, 263, 267, 274, 277 *see also*: sexual
  emotional, 250
  infant, 9, 25, 128–129, 131, 216
  mind, 43
  physical, 40, 250
  pre-birth, 88
torturer, 42, 48, 124, 155, 176–177, 179, 188, 206, 215, 221, 254, 273
traitor(s), 62, 83, 91, 124 *see also*: betrayal
transference, 93, 99, 112–114 *see also*: anger, countertransference
  client's, 109
  negative, 109
  therapist's, 114
trauma/traumatic, 4–5, 13, 15, 38, 46, 68, 89, 94, 110, 116–117, 123, 125–126, 213–216, 234, 247, 263–264
  bonds, 89, 94
  childhood, 10, 22, 25, 38, 110
  complex, 4
  early, 4, 11, 20
  memories, 33–35, 133, 211, 236
  ongoing, 13
tricks/trickery, 32, 53–56, 58–60, 68, 71, 73, 77–81, 150, 155, 168, 212, 245–246
trigger/triggering, 8, 15, 27, 30, 66, 70, 98, 107–108, 110, 112, 140, 143, 146, 153, 160, 168, 173, 181, 185–186, 194–196, 205, 211–212, 215, 225, 250, 263 *see also*: programming
  gun, 139, 142–143
trust, 20, 22, 54, 59–62, 68–69, 71, 74, 98, 107, 111, 163, 187, 189, 191–192, 196, 232, 247, 254
  dis-, 191, 255
  -worthy, 22, 59–60, 192

unconscious(ness), 71, 88, 97, 104, 239, 264 *see also*: conscious
  memories, 219
  semi-, 221
using a child's hands to kill, 38, 47, 62

violence/violent, 113–114, 135, 150, 232
voices in the head, 3, 13, 22, 34, 76 *see also*: abuse
vows, 62, 73

walls, 96
  ears on the, 56, 58, 66
  in the mind, 9, 23
war, 105, 149, 183, 192, 222
    see also: gang
  spiritual, xiii
  survivors, 94
  tug of, 27
Wilcox, E. W., xv
witches, 40, 242, 274
Woolston, C., 115
workplace, 98, 202, 211–212, 218

GENUFLECT

Tracy R Twyman

GENUFLECT

Tracy R Twyman

Genuflect

By

Tracy R Twyman

©2016-2017

Cover Art:

“Here Ends the Work of the Sun”

Jesse Peper, ©2017

Jesse-Peper.org

Other works by Tracy R. Twyman (nonfiction) include: *Baphomet: The Temple Mystery Unveiled* (with Alexander Rivera) *Clock Shavings*

Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge

Solomon's Treasure: The Magic and Mystery of America's Money The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves and the CIA

For more by the same author, visit TracyTwyman.com

Thanks to those who helped in various ways: Rich, Jesse Peper, Alexander Rivera, Philip Gonzalez, Leon Zhivelev, the press office of Bloomberg London, and the staff of the British Museum.

And to those whose sagacious revelations preceded me, for good or for evil: Hermes Trismegistus, Gaius Valerius Catullus, St. John the Divine, Hippolytus, Wolfram von Eschenbach, Abraham the Jew, Johann Daniel

Mylius, Athanasius Kircher, Michael Maier, Jacob Boehme, Johannes Valentinus Andreae, Goossen van Vreeswyk, John Dee, Sir Francis Bacon, William Blake, Marquis de Sade, Comte de Lautreamont, Franz Cumont, Jessie Weston, Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall, Thomas Wright, Eliphas Levi, Fulcanelli, Margaret Murray, H.P. Lovecraft, Carl Jung, Emma Jung, Iwan Bloch, J-K. Huysmans, Luis Buñuel, Salvador Dali, Man Ray, Marcel Duchamp, Aleister Crowley, Manly P. Hall, Robert Graves, Stanley Kubrick, Alejandro Jodorowsky, John Balance, Alan Moore, Matthew Barney, Joscelyn Godwin, and Nicholas de Vere.

Nota bene: While several of the characters in this story have certain aspects based on known, powerful figures in the modern world, I make no claim that these people are involved in any nefarious deeds such as those depicted here, nor is it my intention to malign them. These characteristics were borrowed for artistic purposes only.

Should the whole frame of Nature round him break, In ruin and confusion hurled,

He, unconcerned, would hear the mighty crack, And stand secure amidst a falling world.

— Horace, *Odes*

Chapter 1: Autodidact de Occultis

To know the secret or the formula of God is to be God.

To know the secret or the formula of the Devil is to be the Devil.

To wish to be at the same time God and Devil is to absorb in one’s self the most absolute antinomy, the two most strained contrary forces; it is the wish to shut up in one’s self an infinite antagonism.

It is to drink a poison which would extinguish the suns and consume the worlds.

— Eliphas Levi, *The Key to the Mysteries* Hello there. Thank you for reading this book. I hope it will be of interest to you.

This is intended to be a record of the incredible things I experienced at the end of March and beginning of April 2018, leading to the historic events of this year that you no doubt already know about. I need to write this down before my memory fades completely. This is already starting to happen, so I must work quickly.

I got myself into this mess because I am good at what I do. But there is also very little market for what I do, so I have to take what I can get whenever it comes around.

My job is the sort of thing that only exists in horror movies. I investigate the occult. I study the anthropology of religions and cults, both old and new, from around the world. Then I apply the patterns I see there to the study of other things. And I always get interesting results.

Most of my work just involves reading books and websites: lots of rare books and extremely obscure documents. Many rare, out-of-print texts can be found online for free if you know where to look. Google Books, JSTOR, Bartleby, and Scribd are good resources for this sort of thing. Also, the interlibrary loan program is amazing. I can’t believe that a library halfway around the world will loan me, a complete stranger, a book with only three copies known to exist, again, usually for free.

Only a fraction of my research material involves books about secret societies or magic spells. A lot of it includes chasing down details about historical events and personages, or comparing the motifs used in myths, folklore and fairy tales. But I don’t pretend to be an “academic,” per se. No university would fund my work, because none of it can be used to advance the political movements embraced by present-day college culture, or to prop up the pet theories of tenured professors.

In pursuit of the esoteric, I have at times accidentally revived doctrines and theses that have been long-abandoned by modern mainstream academia, often with no good reason for the rejection. My work tends to validate the worldviews of writers from previous eras whose entire approach to scholarship, and the assumptions it was based on, have been thrown out by today’s universities along with the bathwater. I find that quite often these modern exemplars of learning end up just quoting other modern authors, who of course share their own biases about historical events and people, without checking the primary documents related to the subject in question.

This becomes an endless loop of reflection, as if in a hall of mirrors, until the author of a research paper ends up essentially quoting himself by quoting seven other writers he knows who are working within the same small milieu and whose ideas can be traced directly back to him. They are so busy patting each other on the back that nobody takes the time to track the evolution of the belief system that is being constructed between them, which may one day be taught to public schoolchildren like a catechism. If they were to do this, they would quite often find themselves having to reevaluate the work of classical writers that has been dismissed heretofore because the underlying approach to research used to construct it is no longer considered politically correct.

Strangely, what seems to be the hallmark of this older approach to history, anthropology, and comparative mythology is simply the assumption that once can find significance in the similarities between divergent traditions from different cultures. Also, it is apparently now controversial to suggest that symbolism is always symbolic *of* some kind of prototype with inherent meaning. Today’s academics revel in depriving man’s ancestral traditions of meaning because they can project whatever they want onto it. While undergrads majoring in Diversity Studies protest “cultural appropriation” on the other side of the campus, myth and anthropology students are bullied into ignoring how the religious beliefs and ritual practices of one group have influenced another.

So I knew that my bills would never be paid by a government grant or university donors. I have to compete in the marketplace with all the other nonfiction writers for reader who, for whatever reason, are interested in this type of subject matter. Of course, those people are usually weirdos.

In seeking further information beyond book-learning I have, at times in the past, actually socialized with some of these weirdos. In other words, I’ve joined cults and secret societies that I’ve been invited into, mainly to see how they worked. I had also practiced several forms of divination, both in these groups and on my own. I found this to be a useful way to find clues pertaining to the rest of my research.

All of that became too dangerous for me at a certain point, however. So for the last few years, until about two months ago, I had socialized with almost nobody. I abstained from both ceremonial magic and reading oracles. I contented myself with utilizing the knowledge I had amassed, the published information already available, and my own intuition. By now I had developed a knack for understanding how mystical traditions worked, and could often anticipate what I would find in my investigations.

This operated as a sort of sixth sense. I may have put the Ouija board away, but it was as if my mind was a divination tool of its own. It was like there was a radio receiver in my brain that I could never switch off. But I could usually tune it to specific wavelengths to pick up on information about whatever it was I was interested in learning about at the time.

For the most part, this has been independent research, and I have published my findings in print-on-demand books that I produced myself. I have also done radio interviews to promote the books and, when lucky, paid speeches, usually to small crowds. I’ve made a little niche for myself as the world’s foremost expert on several very specific topics that I have pioneered on my own.

But the living has never been easy. When the March hare began to herald the approach of Spring, and everyone seemed to be rejoicing, I alone, it seemed, was downcast. I faced a slew of problems that could be solved only with money. I could barely even use my own phone because of the non-stop calls from bill collectors.

In particular, Barclays Bank called at least three times a day to discuss the licensing fees I owed to the British Museum. This was in regards to the photos of the “Mete coffer” (as I call it) that I had printed in my most recent book, *The Baphomet Papers*. It had been hailed as a masterpiece by fellow occult researchers, but ignored by the general public due to its size and the obscurity of its subject matter. Therefore, these fees from the Museum would cost me more than I had made on the project so far, and I could not afford to pay them.

Chapter 2: Opportunity Knocks

The fish thinks about its hunger, not about the fisherman. It is the master who seeks the disciple.

— Alejandro Jodorowsky *The Holy Mountain* Therefore, I was very glad when Leopold Black, Baron of Alphamstone in England and a peer in the House of Lords, contacted me through my website on Tuesday, March 20, the spring equinox, saying he wanted to hire me to do a private lecture. He wished for me to give a talk about the Mete coffer. This is an item that had been forgotten in the back catalogue of the British Museum until I identified it as one of the alleged “Templar artifacts” written about a century earlier by Orientalist Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall. When I wrote back to the Baron and asked whom the lecture would be for, he said he belonged to a group called the Worshipful Society of Butchers, and that they met at the Oriental Club in London once monthly, usually around the full moon.

He sent me a link to his personal page on the Houses of Parliament’s website. I then used Google and found the Butcher society’s Wikipedia entry.

Apparently, it was one of the few livery companies in the City of London that was still dedicated to its original trade: butchery. Most of the others had evolved into mere fraternal organizations with rituals and regalia, meeting for dinner and raising money for charity several times a year. The society’s motto pertained directly to this practical matter:

Omnia subiecisti sub pedibus, oves et boves.

This is a Latin quote from *Psalm* 8:6-7: “Thou hast put all things under man’s feet, all sheep and oxen.” Their company arms featured three winged bulls, and two severed bullheads, along with two axes. The group’s concerns seemed primarily about beef production.

It was unclear to me why a trade organization such as this would be interested in hearing from me about esoteric archeology. I also didn't understand why they needed to meet at the Oriental Club, when from what I could tell it seemed that they had their own property, Butcher's Hall, 20 minutes away in a different part of town.

Nonetheless I acquiesced to a video Skype conversation with the Baron. I found him taking tea in a poshly-decorated room, sitting in a brown wooden armchair lined with black leather, with his feet upon a matching Ottoman. He was wearing a Navy-blue dinner jacket and trousers with a white shirt and an azure-colored velvet robe and light brown leather cap toe Oxford shoes. He seemed rather at home there, so I asked if this was his house. He shook his head sideways and said he was at "the Club House."

Nice, I thought. *At least the Club has money*. An unseen hand was holding up the camera—a smartphone, I presumed. He said it was his nephew, also a member of the club.

He promised a payment of $10,000 if did the lecture, $3000 of it up front.

He also demanded secrecy, which I thought was a bit odd. But hey, $10,000 is more than I'd made in the last six months combined. I couldn't justify turning it down, so I agreed.

Over the next few days, as I tried to prepare my lecture, my sense of foreboding grew strong. But the Baron promptly purchased my plane tickets and hotel for the week in question, at a cost in excess of $7000. This was, in my mind, legal consideration for the verbal contract, and assured me that these people were serious, not just wasting my time. The reviews for the Regent Palace Hotel at Piccadilly Circus were a bit *meh*, but I felt I had no right to be a snob and demand better.

Still, walking into a room full of British aristocrats to deliver a message about a Satanic Templar artifact is very intimidating, especially to a group of people calling themselves "Worshipful Butchers." I wondered if they would accept my theory. The illustrations on the sides and lid of the coffer, I proposed, indicated that the Knights Templar, the Pope's own specially-chartered warriors of Christ throughout the medieval Crusades, were having ritual sex with boys, and sacrificing them, in an attempt to destroy the created universe.

The first part of this claim—the ritual murder and gay pedophilia—is just what the Templars had already been convicted of and burnt at the stake for by the King of France in the early fourteenth century. These rites were allegedly all part of their secret worship of a demonic entity named "Baphomet," which my book was named after. The last part, about destroying the universe, was my own unique contribution.

Two obvious objections to the very idea spring up immediately when you consider it. First, why would anyone want to destroy the universe? Maybe a miserable and depressed person would desire that, but why a whole organization of men from wealthy families involved in an incredibly successful material enterprise, as the Templars were?

Secondly, how could any "ritual" done by men destroy everything that exists? Many people today think it's possible that the behavior of mankind as a species could destroy life on Earth *as we know it*. But the destruction of the universe as a whole seems like a bit much, doesn't it?

Granted, the Templars lived in a world where the universe was thought to be much smaller, and of a different arrangement than what is generally accepted today. Still it seems quite an ambitious nihilistic anti-goal. Certainly, it is not immediately obvious how pederasty and human sacrifice would bring that about, even in the most twisted occult logic. But the most twisted occult logic is not immediately obvious, by definition, as I was soon reminded.

Chapter 3: Plane Problems

Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming….

— *Isaiah* 14:9

My first plane departed from PDX in Portland, Oregon on the afternoon of Tuesday, March 27. It immediately occurred to me, as soon as I squeezed my body into the seat, that I was going to die of deep-vein thrombosis long before reaching my destination the next day. I could not fathom how I was going to stay in that unpleasant position for the better part of twelve hours with just one layover in Houston. As if to punish me for my weak thoughts, the situation escalated from bad to worse.

When we got to Houston, we found that there was a storm over the area, and the plane couldn't land until it passed. We circled in the air for a couple of hours waiting for that to happen. Then the captain announced over the PA system that we would be diverted to a military base in Austin. There we would refuel and wait for things to clear up in Houston.

All this time I had waited without using the restroom on board, not wanting to force the people next to me to stand up so I could squeeze past. This proved to be an awful decision. By the time I realized how badly I needed the toilet, there were ten people standing in line, as I could see when I stood up from my window seat to look.

I decided to use the skills that had gotten me through grade school, where we were only allowed to use the bathroom during lunch. I sat down and tried my best at transcendental meditation, hoping to take my mind off my bursting bladder. But whenever I try to concentrate on anything in public, someone in the vicinity feels compelled to interrupt me. This time was no different.

“I'm dying for a cigarette,” said the man next to me in a thick Arab accent.

With that, Harut Al-Hazrat dragged me into a conversation. He was a peculiar young man with long, unkempt hair forming Polish plait, dressed in black trousers with a black shirt and trench coat. His English was good, but he mumbled. I had to lean in close to hear him, which was an annoying strain. But the talk took my mind off my discomfort somewhat, and that helped pass the time.

When he found out I was going to England ultimately, he told me that his first name was “the Arabic equivalent of Arthur.” Specifically, he claimed that the king of Camelot’s name was “derived from Harut,” and that this figure of Western mythology was based on a character from pre-Islamic Mesopotamia. I smirked at this.

I told him what kinds of books I wrote. This prompted him to talk about his years of study under a Sufi *murshid* in Washington, D.C. Then he bragged that he could use prayer to summon UFOs, to which I said, of course:

“You should summon a flying saucer to pick us up and take us to Houston!”

I laughed at myself. He didn’t.

“Actually, storms help bring the UFOs,” he said. “They open up holes in the sky, which are portals for the saucers. They also use the extra electricity in the air to fly and to make light.”

“Oh,” I said, shaking my head vigorously in the affirmative.

The old white lady next to him glared at us in disapproval. I don’t think it was just that our conversation came off as stupid. I felt that maybe she didn’t like Arabs, and thought that I was flirting with him, which perhaps she didn’t think young white women should be doing. Maybe I was reading too much into her icy stare, but I am usually right about these things.

The plane sat on the tarmac for another three hours. During that time, the toilet began to overflow and the contents actually started to roll down the aisle.

While the flight attendants attempted to deal with that, inadequately, an Asian woman two rows ahead of me stood up, crying hysterically, and shouted that her grandmother had passed out next to her. Paramedics soon boarded the plane and took her away. A party of four native Texans then demanded to be let off the aircraft also, stating that they could drive to Houston before the plane would ever get there.

Eventually, though, the plane did return to Houston airspace, and successfully landed. By that time, my conversation with Harut had died down, as we were both choking on the stench of the overflowed toilet and trying not to piss in our pants. I said goodbye to him as we exited the plane.

Then, after using the bathroom as quickly as possible, I hurried over to the first United Airlines booth I found that had an employee present. The airport was ominously empty except for my fellow displaced passengers, who were scattered around frantically trying to find someone to reschedule the connecting flights they had missed.

When I got to the United Airlines booth, attended by a middle-aged black woman, I found there was no need to hurry. There were no more flights to England departing that night. Instead, I would take a shuttle to the local Marriott, where they had arranged a room for me, and wait for a flight the following morning.

I then asked where I could find my luggage. The woman informed me that my suitcase was on its way to another destination somewhere else in the United States.

“You’ll have to catch up with it *some other time*,” she said flippantly, as though it didn’t matter when or where I eventually found my suitcase. I couldn’t believe it.

“You mean I have to do this lecture in England without even a change of clothes?” I whined, to utterly deaf, indifferent ears. “I don’t even have my make-up or shampoo because I’m not allowed to take it in my carry-on!”

She started at me blankly, waiting for my tantrum to end, waiting for me to realize I wasn’t special and that my problems didn’t matter to her at all. When I looked down, I noticed that she was handing me a small black nylon bag with a zipper and the United Airlines logo on it. Inside was a collection of travel-sized toiletries.

I took the bag and my laptop case, the only possessions I had with me anymore, and slinked away dejectedly, muttering “thank you” with total insincerity. As I walked over to the departure zone to meet my shuttle, I passed a statue of George W. Bush, for whom Houston’s airport is named. I took it as an omen that my mission would fail.

Chapter 4: Answers Lacking

If any part of your uncertainty is a struggle between your heart and your mind, follow your mind.

—Ayn Rand, *Atlas Shrugged*

At the hotel, I had tried calling Leopold with a long-distance calling card, using the phone number he had given me. It rang and rang with that odd, nervous ring they use in the British telephone system. But nobody picked up. There was no voicemail or anything. I had never called the number before, as I had no reason to. All of our correspondence had been through email except for that one Skype conversation.

I checked the number in my email archives twice using my laptop and the hotel’s Wi-Fi. I was certain I was dialing correctly. I even used Google to make sure I was punching the city and country codes right. I was. I slept for a few hours, and then tried again at dawn, which was 11 AM in England. But there was still no answer.

So I had no choice but to give up on that. I logged into my email again, and was surprised to find nothing from him there either. I wrote him a message telling him what had happened, and asked him to make sure my greeting party was aware of my new arrival time. I then hurried down to have breakfast in café at the hotel lobby, as I had not found anything to eat since the previous morning.

While I ate my raisin bran, I used my laptop to check the news. A toolbar at the top of my browser that points out significant anniversaries for each date reminded me that it was “Spy Wednesday,” a name for the Wednesday before Easter. Finding this interesting, I clicked on the link provided, which lead to a Wikipedia article.

As I suspected, the definition of the word “spy” being used in this instance is the verb form meaning “to ambush or ensnare,” because this is the day on which, they say, Judas Iscariot betrayed Jesus. The Catholics observe this day with the *Tenebrae* (“Darkness”) liturgy, in which they gradually extinguish all the candles on the altar. When the last one is out, and the church is completely dark, the *Strepitus* is performed. This is a loud crashing sound, often made by the priest abruptly shutting a large Bible, that is made to mimic the earthquake traditionally said to have occurred at the moment of Christ’s death. Tenebrae was originally written to be performed on Good Friday, the anniversary of that death, and is still in some places, while in others it is performed the day before, on Maundy Thursday.

This reminded me of an image I’d seen in Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall’s 1818 treatise *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, which I’d had translated from the Latin and published last year along with my own “Baphomet” book. It was from a ceremonial stone bowl, one of the many “Templar artifacts” he’d discovered in churches in Europe located on their former properties. It showed a naked woman kneeling on the ground between two images of a figure identified on several of the artifacts as “Mete,” a hermaphrodite entity. The woman was pouring water out of a vase onto the candles of a candelabrum called a “seven-branch” (what the Jews call a *menorah*).

According to Church Fathers Clement and Philo, both of Alexandria, the flames on the seven-branch represent the seven classical planets recognized in antiquity. The symbolism of this ceremony seems a bit like what Mohammed did by reducing the number of idols in the Islamic Kaaba from 360 to just one, a stone representing the monotheistic God. In the *Tenebrae*, all but one of the “heavenly lights” once worshiped by pagan man were put out except for one (representing the Sun, with the Sun re-baptized as Jesus Christ).

Hammer-Purgstall thought that the Templars were secret devotees of Ophite Gnosticism, a Greco-Roman mystery cult that viewed creation as a prison controlled by the power of illusion. The goal of their rituals was to dethrone the

“Archons” above so that they could break out of the jail. The Archons were the

Vater
Sohn
Leben
Gelber Kreis des Lichts
Blauer Kreis der Finsternis
Paradies
Saturn
Jupiter
Mars
Sonne
Merkur
Venus
Mond
Beemoth
Erde
Tartaros
1 2 3 4 5 6 7
8
Leben
Gnosis
Natur
der
Sophia
Synesis
Vorsehung
Sophia

rulers of fate, seen as being identical with the visible “planets” of the ancients, among which the Sun and the Moon were included at the time (the others being Mercury, Mars, Venus, Jupiter and Saturn).

Each Archon was viewed to rule one of the “heavens” defined by what we now call its “orbit.” These seven heavens were thought to be stacked above the earthly realm, as though in a layer cake, each another layer of confinement, keeping our souls locked away from the source of pure spirit, accessible somewhere beyond the sphere of Saturn.

Jehovah, the god of the Bible, was thought by Gnostics to merely be one of these Archons, identifiable with Jupiter, a.k.a. Jove, whom the Greeks called Zeus.

His mother, the Gnostic wisdom goddess Sophia-Achamoth, was added to the seven to form the *Ogdoad*—the Eight. Hammer-Purgstall thought that Sophia-Achamoth was worshiped by the Knights Templar in the form of "Baphomet" or

"Mete."

This latter name, he thought, could be traced back to the Greek figure of Metis, the first bride of Zeus. She played a very important role initiating and upholding his rule as king of the gods. Like "Sophia," her name translated directly to "wisdom," specifically "cunning," "prudence" and "wise counsel." To

understand what happened to her, we have to go all the way back to the

"Genesis" story of Greek mythology.

Zeus was the son of Chronos, who had to castrate his father Ouranos in order to escape the womb of his mother, Gaia. Ouranos had deliberately prevented his children from being born, cognizant that one of them was fated to overthrow him as the king of the gods. When Chronos later engendered his own children with his wife Rhea, he became aware of a similar fate that was to come from one of these progeny. So he devised his own way of dealing with it by swallowing them upon birth.

But just as Gaia had schemed against her husband to aid her son Chronos in fulfilling his destiny (by supplying his with the castration knife), Rhea came up with a plan to save her son Zeus from ending up in his father's stomach. In this case, she substituted the baby with a decoy in the form of a stone wrapped in swaddling clothes. Later, they say, Zeus found a way to poison his father, causing him to vomit up all the other children that had already been swallowed. Zeus and his siblings then fought their way to supremacy, overthrowing Chronos. The clever witch who conceived the poison plot was the goddess Metis, Hammer-Purgstall’s

“Mete,” whom Zeus subsequently married.

As the story goes, Zeus, just like his predecessors, gained knowledge of a prophecy that if he bred with Metis, one of the children would overthrow him.

Having already consummated the wedding and impregnated her, his solution was to swallow the mother before the birth even happened. He was able to do this, some say, by tricking her into turning herself into a fly, so that she was small enough to go inside his mouth. However, other depictions of the act show him eating her limb by limb at full size.

Whichever way it happened, as with the Olympian gods in the gullet of Chronos, Metis was immortal, so she remained alive inside Zeus. Eventually she gave birth to a daughter, the wise Athena. Metis worked from within Zeus’ body to hammer out a coat of armor for her daughter to wear. The hammering caused Zeus discomfort, and so he had his head cleaved open to alleviate the pressure.

This allowed Athena to escape.

She went on to become an important goddess to the Greeks, associated, like her mother, with wisdom. But for some reason Metis did not escape with her

daughter, and remained inside Zeus. He reportedly utilized her as a source of wise council during his reign, and she was often depicted supporting his throne from underneath, propping it up, like a royal slave.

What a raw deal, I thought as I ponder these stories again. *I wonder what kept her from leaving with Athena. Was it the chains?*

On the Mete coffer, the goddess was shown holding a pair of chains. The Sun was shown attached to the top of one chain, and the Moon to the other, with the solar and lunar faces shown upside-down. These chains also appear to have been shackled to Mete's legs. The image seemed to me to be showing her in the midst of breaking the chains from her ankles while simultaneously dragging the heavenly bodies down from the sky.

Was the destruction of the Archontic order Mete's revenge for being imprisoned and enslaved by Zeus? I wondered. *The Gnostics saw Sophia-Achamoth as a heroine trying to help them escape the jail of illusory existence.*

Maybe the idea is that she's trapped inside here with the rest of us, so her escape is also our chance for escape.

On the "Templar artifact" that featured the candelabra being extinguished, the figure of Mete on the right is holding the chains (without the heavenly bodies included), which the horned figure of Mete on the left is holding a banner displaying Arabic writing. Hammer-Purgstall's translation of this writing includes the phrases "Mete is exalted" and "one and seven were our race," referring, he thought, to the Gnostic belief that Sophia-Achamoth was the mother of the other seven Archons.

If Mete is exalted, I thought, *that means that she's somehow escaped from inside Zeus. But how? Maybe through the rectum?*

The reason I thought about this was not just because it's the only obvious way out if one's been swallowed. It also occurred to me because another phrase written in Arabic on Mete's banner next to the candelabra is: "He makes return easy through the rectum." Hammer-Purgstall hadn't really deciphered the meaning of this, except to identify it as being related to the rumored Templar rites of sodomic pederasty, now confirmed because of their confessions to the Pope, documented in the Chinon Parchment released by the Vatican in 2007. But now, as I pondered this, I wondered if that was why the Sun and Moon were shown upside-down.

Perhaps it is really Mete who is upside-down, I thought, *coming out through the rear exit. Maybe that's the meaning of the message he found on the back of the idol of Mete carrying a baby.*

I was thinking about yet another "Templar artifact" depicted in a line drawing in Hammer-Purgstall's work. It showed a figure of uncertain sex in a hooded robe holding an infant.

On the back of the idol, Hammer-Purgstall reported that there was a message written in code. It was in Greek, but with Arabic letters, and transposed out of order. When decoded, they spelled out this message: *Omnipotent Mete sprouting, a debauched woman springs up for our race through* prokton .

Prokton in the Greek word for anus.

Then another meaning of the inverted Sun and Moon (or, in the alternative interpretation, Mete shown hanging upside-down) also occurred to as I sat there thinking. I had written in *The Baphomet Papers* that what we call "Satanism" was largely influenced by Gnosticism and its spiritual war against the creator of this physical universe. This is where the Satanic principle of inverting Judeo-Christian symbols, prayers, and rituals came from. I argued that the Knights Templar may have themselves been the originators of this tradition, considering their secret initiation rite of urinating on the cross and denying Christ, again confirmed through recently-revealed non-coerced confessions of the knights. With this in mind, I thought of a new idea.

I combed through files on my computer until I found folder with the Hammer-Purgstall pictures, including the lid of the Mete coffer, the picture of the hooded idol holding the baby, and the image the naked lady pouring water on the candles in-between the two Metes. I looked at them both with contemplation.

While the *Tenebrae* is a Christian ritual, the one illustrated on Hammer-Purgstall's "Templar artifact" was, according to him, a more Gnostic interpretation of it. He related it to the fact that Church Fathers (Justin Martyr in particular, for instance) had accused Gnostics of practicing a blasphemous rite called "the Upsetting of the Lamps."

If this is truly a depiction of a Templar rite, I thought, *it was undoubtedly meant as a sacrilegious celebration of the destruction the Archons. They* *might have even done the whole* Tenebrae *as an overtly Satanic black mass, snuffing out the light of the Sun too, and thus killing Christ, according to the symbolism.*

As I finished my breakfast at the hotel restaurant, I decided to move on to the Drudge Report for the day's headlines. I found that the previous day there had been yet another precipitous fall in the value of the pound. You may recall that this had been happening ever since the government had decided to essentially nullify the meaning of Britain's plan to exit from the European Union.

They had put it off indefinitely in a state of declared emergency that everyone assumed would never be lifted.

This was good for my exchange rate while visiting, but bad for the natives, I knew. What was worse, the government refused to acknowledge the obvious cause of the instability, blaming it instead on the recent string of homegrown terrorist attacks in the name of ISIS, necessitating yet more police state expansion.

In the UK, from what I read, everyone was actually pining for a royal decree to overrule the elected government, which had so clearly been derelict in its duty to honor the will of the people. The newest Prime Minister was even more faithless than the last. But although the Queen hadn't been seen in over three months, she still occasionally signed documents, and appeared to be set to live forever. She was rumored to be bedridden on something akin to life support, albeit still conscious.

People such as me, persistent hounds of alternative news data, had kept up on the rumors. However, the topic was being censored in the mainstream news, and all major social media platforms had placed it on the ever-growing list of forbidden topics. If the rumors were true, I knew, then the Queen was unlikely to be leading any revolutions against the government on behalf of her beleaguered subjects.

As I read the news, I compulsively reloaded my email, hoping to get word from Leopold, who by now should have noticed that I hadn’t arrived on time. But it was in vain. He said nothing. Another phone call placed from my room again yielded no results. Eventually I boarded the shuttle, rode through a giant forest of floating roof tanks filled with petroleum products, and then boarded another plane.

Although I stayed on the aircraft for another fifteen hours, with two stops along the way, the rest was a much smoother ride than the first leg. I had the entire row to myself, so I got to stretch out and rest. I used the bathroom whenever I wanted. They fed us a couple of meals and showed us a movie, the new remake of *Zardoz*. I hate remakes, so I didn’t put the headphones on to listen. Instead, I laid on the seats and tried not to wonder if Leopold Black had gotten my message yet.

Chapter 5: Terribilis est Locus Iste

Boasting a prime location and unbeatable prices, the Regent Palace is easily one of the best value lodgings in London. Within minutes of entertainment, fine dining and shopping venues, the hotel is attractive to both business and leisure guests seeking the ultimate bargain.

Accommodations all consist of colour TV, direct dial telephone and wash basin and of the 888 rooms within the hotel, 385 have their own en-suite bathroom.

—regentpalacehotel.co.uk, 2005

My fake-it-‘til-you-make-it false bravado had kept me going through this inauspicious adventure so far. But that began to fade when I was finally able to take my phone out of Airplane Mode and into Sprint Global Roaming. I used the Gmail app to check my email. When I found that there was still no answer from Leopold Black, and my heart began to sink.

I was actually wondering if this had all been an elaborate and expensive joke, in which several thousand pounds had been spent just to waste my time.

The fear must have been apparent on my ashen face because as I went through customs, the young white English lady who interrogated me about my business in the UK gave me special attention.

“Are you alright?” she said, looking me over with suspicion. She stared straight into my eyes to intimidate me, forcing me to stare back. “Your face looks very … pale.”

Well, I am naturally quite pale, and I must have looked even more so as I stood there in front of her. But I got the feeling that she actually thought I might be wearing heavy make-up to hide a darker complexion. I could feel her trying to “unmask” me with her eyes. Then she just came right out and said it.

“Frankly you look a bit off.”

Now I could feel myself getting angry. *Off what?* I thought. *Off my rocker?* I couldn’t let it boil over, though, as this was a delicate situation. I knew she was just being vigilant because of the stabbings by ISIS agents that had happened at Gatwick, the other London airport, a week previous. I thought of a way to express my annoyance that would surely shut her up and allow me to be on my way.

“Ma’am,” I said, “are you telling me that you find me suspicious because of the *color of my skin*?”

Her face curled up into the trademark regretful half-smile of white guilt.

This look is usually only given to ethnic minorities who have just been subjected to special scrutiny because of their race, only to be found innocent. I returned it with the most genuine smile I could muster, and reached out to take back my passport from her after she finished stamping it.

As I made my way to the baggage claim area, I searched fruitlessly for the sight of a chauffer holding a sign that said “Pamela Auger.” But none was forthcoming. I watched all the luggage from my transcontinental flight circle around the conveyor belt 15 or 20 times. After determining that my suitcase was not on it, I filed a report with United Airlines staff and made my way out to the taxi stand, wondering what the Hell I was going to do next.

I got into a black taxi with a Pakistani driver. We drove for about forty minutes to get to my hotel. Thankfully he did not make any small talk.

Instead he listened to endlessly looped reports about the currency crisis and the latest ISIS attacks in Europe on Sky News radio while he muttered under his breath about the traffic. London was in many ways just how I remembered it from previous trips there, but the vibe was a bit more intense. As we passed 10 Downing Street, I saw soldiers with machine guns.

Twice we went through tollbooths on the way. When we got to the first one, the driver asked me if I had any cash to pay it. I told him I didn’t have any local currency yet, so he charged it to my card with the rest of my fare. I was glad I had insisted that Leopold pay three grand up front. If I had come there with only my own means to support me, I wouldn’t have even been able to finish the cab ride. Piety had come to me as of late, and so I thanked God that I was OK so far, even though I wondered, as I always have, which god I was praying to.

I was even more grateful to this unknown deity when I found that my room was still reserved for me. As I checked into the Regent Palace, where plaques on the wall proudly boasted of the building’s historical significance, I anticipated enjoying a shower, a nap and room service in what I thought would be opulence, judging from the elegant décor of the lobby. I was ready to flop down immediately, but found I had to walk up several flights of stairs. Someone was presently stuck in the elevator, and a half-dozen firemen were working to try to rescue them.

When I finally reached the seventh floor, room 729, I was breathless. I shoved the key in the hole (for they still used metal keys in this old building).

When I stumbled in, I just about tripped over the narrow bed. It actually looked like a prison cot. And the room was barely big enough to hold it. In fact, the bed was the only thing in the room. There was no furniture, and no space for any. If I had brought my suitcase, I don't know where I would have put it.

"Oh my God," I said out loud to myself. "Are you kidding me?" I couldn't believe that the Baron of Alphamstone and his friends at the WSB were so cheap that they booked me for such a terrible place.

Despite my shock, I really needed to pee. So I located the bathroom, which was accessible through a narrow door that stood right next to the foot of the bed.

There were two steps leading up to it because the floor of the bathroom was raised up about a foot higher than the main room.

It was about the size of an airplane restroom. There was a small toilet, and a little pedestal sink with a tiny basin that sort of hovered over the toilet seat.

Next, to it was a diminutive shower with a tile floor and a plain blue plastic curtain. It reminded me of a shower I used at a campground in Ohio once.

After I had washed and relieved myself, I went back into the main room, put on my dirty clothes again, and opened the window. It only opened about an inch, and the only view was of the hotel's roof, along with the windows of other upper-floor rooms. The top floors of the building, which I was on, only had rooms around the perimeter. This created a trapezoid-shaped space between them when the building was looked at from an aerial view, as I discovered later from looking at the site on Google Earth. The window had been fixed to only open an inch so as to prevent people from walking out on the roof.

I suppose it should not have surprised me, considering the state of the other accommodations, when I realized that the hotel did not have any Wi-Fi available. When I couldn't find a signal, I used the gray 1950s-era rotary phone attached to the wall to call down to the lobby. When they told me there was no internet, I tried calling Leopold again, and again got no answer. Since I could clearly accomplish nothing from my hotel room, I packed up my laptop and headed out into the streets of London.

Chapter 6: Eros and Anteros

Love is the law, love under will. Nor let the fools mistake love; for there are love and love. There is the dove, and there is the serpent. Choose ye well!

—Aleister Crowley, *The Book of the Law*

I walked out of my hotel and into the throngs. It was still mid-morning, and there were people out everywhere. The lady at the front desk had told me there was a bank across the street where I could use the ATM. I looked, and my chest instinctively constricted with fear as I saw the familiar logo of Barclays, the company that called me three times a day regarding my 3000-pound debt to the British Museum. But I needed cash and I figured there was no real danger in using their ATM.

I walked over and used the machine to extract 100 pounds from my bank account. I then stepped into the corner shop next door and bought a bottle of Orangina to break one of the 20-pound notes. I had the Indian kid at the counter pour the resulting 20+ coins weighing approximately one metric fuckton into the outside pocket of my laptop case. My shoulder smarted under the weight, and my body leaned right to compensate.

“When are they going to make a one-pound note, for God’s sake?,” I muttered to myself.

I walked out of the store and immediately noticed a statue of Cupid standing on top of a fountain at Piccadilly Circus, which was directly in front of me. I decided to sit underneath it while I looked at a London Underground map that I had gotten from the front desk at Regent Palace. I was trying to figure out how to get to the Houses of Parliament on the tube.

The place where I sat happened to be next to a plaque that explained the statue. As it turned out, it was actually a figure of Anteros, the brother of

Eros (the Greek version of Cupid). He was the god of “counter-love,” and he bore butterfly wings instead of the cherubic wings of his brother. This, as Wikipedia explained to me on my phone for 20 cents a minute, was taken by most to mean that he was the god who punished unrequited love. In other words, if you were in love with somebody and they didn’t love you back, you could call on him to get revenge.

My sixth sense for occult symbolism started to itch at the sight of this explanation. It just didn’t seem *complete*. It felt to me like a cover story to hide the dirty truth, as I so often found whenever I dug beneath the surface of folklore and mythology.

The interpretation offered by the designer of the fountain was even more tame, calling Anteros the “god of selfless love.” It was supposedly meant to be a monument to Lord Shaftesbury, a Peer of the Realm and philanthropist from the late nineteenth century. He had worked all his life to improve the lot of miners, children working in factories, and lunatics living in asylums. The statue was meant to represent his love for people who could not return his love.

This struck me as an odd, awkward and forced metaphor. Why conflate charitable and reformist work with something that is obviously an erotic symbol?

In fact, at the time it had been installed, there had been many objections to its “pagan sensuality.” Most people in modern times still assume that Shaftesbury Fountain is a statue of Eros when they see it.

As if to underscore this, there was even an adult theater called “Eros Cinema” that had once stood right in front of the statue. Indeed, the entire corner had been a haven for burlesque parlors, dirty movies, and prostitution. There was even a debunked rumor going around that “Piccadilly” was an old word for prostitution in some language.

The most significant aspect of the statue, as far as I was concerned, was the arrow he was aiming with him bow. Because Lord Shaftesbury made most of his reformist efforts through the House of Lords, the arrow in Anteros' bow had been designed to aim directly at Parliament, just where I was headed. I decided that was no coincidence, and that I had better be on about my business.

When I looked again at the tube map, however, I found that there was no train going directly there from the Piccadilly station. I would have to either walk to another station or take a series of trains. So I decided once again to rely on Google, and found that it was better for me to take bus number 159 by walking over to the corner of Haymarket and Orange Street.

I stood up and began to walk east down Coventry Street. Then I took a right to go south on Haymarket, and my eyes were instantly drawn to another interesting landmark. It was right in front of the doors of the Criterion Theater, underneath the balcony. Again it was a statue decorating a fountain, this one of four horses all reeling back on their hind legs. The inscription on the fountain identified them as the "Horses of Helios," the sun god.

I took a picture of it with my phone and walked on. But I kept looking behind me. It was as if I could feel their eyes on me—the horses, that is. After walking about two blocks, I saw the red double-decker I was looking for headed my way. One block ahead was my bus stop, marked with a sign, which I reached just in time. No one else was there, but the driver spotted me and pulled over. I asked her to announce my stop, and she said she would.

It wasn't very crowded, but I remained standing behind the driver so that I could watch for my stop. Seven minutes later I was at Westminster Station, on Parliament Street. I walked to the corner of Bridge Street and saw Big Ben up ahead on the left—or, more properly, Elizabeth Tower, as "Big Ben" is really the name of one of the bells inside.

I crossed the street to the corner that the clock tower was on, then followed the crowd to an opening in the fence where people were walking back and forth. Up ahead, I saw a man walking in through one of the doors in a corner of the building, right beneath the clock. So I followed him, walking past a hedged enclosure with an opening in the side. As I went past I saw a fountain featuring statues of an emaciated unicorn and several other macabre-looking heraldic creatures.

When I got to the door, I was rebuffed by a security guard, who told me that "strangers" had to enter through St. Stephen's Gate down the street. So I walked back past the hedges and turned left when I got to the sidewalk. I went on until I saw the statue of Oliver Cromwell on my left that the security guard had told me to look for.

There I turned left onto the walkway that led directly to the visitors'

entrance. I walked down a ramp towards a vaulted doorway, in front of which there were two security guards wearing plastic gloves. They frisked me and searched my laptop case. Then they let me in.

I entered a giant, empty hall with stone floors and a huge vaulted ceiling made of carved wood. I then turned left to go up some stone steps and through an arched wooden doorway with a clock above it that led to "St. Stephen's Hall."

This was a corridor where the walls were covered with beautiful full-color murals of scenes from British history, and stained-glass windows depicting more such scenes above that.

All along the walls were white stone statues of important Englishmen, including some inset into the walls in the corner, and stone benches covered with leather the color of Brunswick green. Brilliant chandeliers hung from the ceiling.

At the end of this hall was another vaulted doorway underneath yet another clock, which led to the "Central Lobby."

I went through the door and emerged into an octagonal room situated underneath an amazing gold-covered mosaicked dome. There were more stained-glass windows beneath the dome, and many more statues set into the wall. Then I looked down to see a giant black eight-pointed star in the middle of the mosaic floor, composed of two squares at opposite angles. The points of one of the squares were aligned with each of four corridors that led elsewhere, including the one I had just come out of. The points of the other square were aligned with statues set between these, presumably of important British politicians from the past.

I strolled up to the secretary's desk in the corner to my left. Behind it stood a white man in a black suit with a white blouse and a black bowtie. He was talking on a black desk phone. I waited for him to finish his conversation. After a few seconds, he looked up at me, put his hand over the receiver, and asked what he could do for me. I told him that I was a friend of one of the lords, the Baron of Alphamstone.

“Can you buzz his office to see if he's there?” I said hopefully.

“Excuse me,” the man replied, looking very confused. “The Baron of Alphamstone?”

“Yes, Leopold Black,” I said. “Please see if he's in. If not, I'll leave a message.”

When he heard the words “Leopold Black,” he raised his eyebrows.

“Can I have your name please?” he said.

“Sure,” I replied. “My name is Pamela Auger. He knows who I am.”

“Would you have a seat on one of the benches please?” he then asked. He started talking into his phone again.

He had pointed to my left at a blue leather bench, one of several lining the walls. It was right behind a statue of some guy named William Ewart Gladstone, and underneath a smaller statue that was set into the wall. I sat down there, and turned around to check out the statue above me.

But then I heard footsteps approaching, so I turned to look in front of me.

There were two men in their 30s approaching me. One had Persian features and dark hair in a Beatles cut. The other one was white and ginger, with curls and a mustache. They were both wearing gray suits of slightly different shades.

“Ms. Auger,” said the Indian. “Would you come with us, please? We’d like to speak to you about the person calling himself ‘the Baron of Alphamstone.’”

Chapter 7: Regnum Defende

Nobody was really sure if he was from the House of Lords.

—The Beatles, *A Day in the Life*

The food served to MPs and their guests at the Terrace Café in the House of Commons, where I was taken by my two new friends from the Security Services, seemed rather plebian, a bit like the lunches served to kids in public schools in the US. However, I was assured by Agent Paris and Agent Chesterfield that the ingredients were high quality, local, and completely free of GMOs. I picked out some lasagna, and both men ordered a sandwich, with coffees all around.

Chesterfield, the redhead with the thin mustache, insisted on paying.

We sat outside on the terrace overlooking the River Thames, right next to the café, a sort of black-and-white-striped tented structure with glass walls. The two agents took seats across the table from me, with their backs to the river, so that I could enjoy the view. The giant Ferris wheel, the London Eye, was spinning in the distance off to my left.

I didn’t know what to say, and I didn’t know what they were going to say.

But it seemed likely they were going to tell me there was something phony about Leopold after all. Therefore, I would likely never see the rest of the money he had promised me.

Whatever they were going to say, it was going to be a let-down. I was already embarrassed that I had let myself be fooled somehow. I braced myself for bad news and nervously picked at my lasagna. It was extremely bland, if it’s possible for blandness to be extreme. Paris noticed the look on my face when I took my first bite.

“Is this your first time in England?” He looked me straight in the eye, penetratingly, and I knew that he knew what I was thinking.

They just don’t use spices in this country for some reason.

I don’t know how I knew, but I just knew that he knew, and that he knew I knew. The words that I was thinking were being transmitted directly into his brain, and it was as though I could see them reflected in his eyes. This is a bad rapport to establish with a government agent who is about to interrogate you. I looked at the river to break the eye contact. A cruise ship drifted by, packed with tourists.

“No,” I said. “I’ve been here once before, as a teenager. Family holiday.”

“So what’s your business here now?” Chesterfield asked directly.

“Research,” I answered. “I mainly want to have a look at some of the museums. I’m a writer.”

“Oh yes, I’ve seen,” said Chesterfield, grinning. “Dan Brown kinda stuff.

Occult mysteries and such.” He showed me his phone, a Samsung Galaxy, which was open to an amazon.com page with all of my books listed.

“Dan Brown writes fiction,” I replied, cold. But I should have just let it go.

Don’t offer them any information, I reminded myself. *And don’t let that Persian guy read your mind.*

“So what’s your business with ‘the Baron of Alphamstone’?” Paris asked with a sneer, making finger quotes. Forced to look back in his direction, I concocted something on the spot, knowing he wouldn’t believe me.

“I was supposed to interview him about his family history. They’re supposedly related to the Merovingians. Dan Brown kinda stuff.”

I returned my gaze to the redhead, whose stare was less invasive and yet somehow more charming, more seductive, perhaps because he seemed safer. But I knew I shouldn't let down my guard with him either. I drank some of my coffee.

It was cold already, and watery, with a grimy sediment on the bottom.

Chesterfield cleared his throat and prepared to lecture to me.

"Alphamstone, my dear, is a village in Essex with less than 100 residents. It is not associated with a barony. The man you are calling 'the Baron of Alphamstone' is actually Thomas Weir, a man whose been living on benefits for over 20 years because of 'psychological disabilities.'"

He made finger quotes too. I noticed his left middle finger was shorter than the others. I stared at it. The tip was missing.

"Wood shop accident," Paris said behind me, showing off that he was reading my thoughts again. "Frankly he's so clumsy I don't know why they ever let him on the service." He chuckled.

"Oh, puff off," said Chesterfield, waving his butchered hand at his colleague as if to dismiss him.

"I don't understand," I said. "There's a page about Leopold Black, Baron of Alphamstone on the official Parliament website."

"He's not a peer," Paris insisted. "He's not noble at all. He just pretends to be so he can sell fake fancy titles to credulous foreigners. Especially Americans.

They're a gullible lot when it comes to this stuff. Even you, and you're an investigator."

He wagged his finger at me as if to chastise me. He was openly demonstrating the fact that he was fully aware of what kind of writer I was, unlike his partner, who played dumb.

“Well he never sold any titles to me,” I said, ignoring his slight. “I never gave him any money. In fact …”

I stopped. *Better not mention the lecture*, I thought, *or the Oriental Club, the Worshipful Society of Butchers, the money he’d sent me, nor the fact that he--*

or they--had paid for my trip. Better not even think it.

“Was he paying you for something?” Paris asked. Of course. He had picked up on my thoughts.

“No,” I replied, assuming that as a non-citizen I had no real obligation to tell them the truth about something that was surely none of their business. I opened my laptop, found the open Wi-Fi from the cafe, and tried to load the Baron’s page on the Parliament website. To my surprise, I got a 404 not found!

“I don’t understand!” I said. “It was there just a couple of days ago!”

“Let me see,” said Chesterfield. He leaned over my right shoulder, and put his left hand on the back of my chair to steady himself. Then he pressed in closer and pointed at the domain name at the top of the page.

“That’s not the official Parliament website. It’s two letters off.” He put his thumb on the touchpad and the backspace, then shortened the url to what should have been the index page. It was 404 too. The entire website was gone.

“He hired someone to make a fake version of the Parliament website with an entry about him in it. The real one is parliament.uk, not co.uk.”

I felt like a total dumbass. *Oh, how he fooled me!* I thought. *And I took money from him, in notable amounts! Where did he get it? From selling titles? Is that how he was able to rent out the Oriental Club so he could shoot that video conference with me? All this time he was just a jobless conman?*

My head was full of questions, but I certainly couldn’t ask these two guys.

In fact, I felt that I needed to lose them right away so that I could get to the bottom of things on my own.

“Well lads, thank you for revealing the truth to me,” I said. “I feel pretty stupid. But I guess it’s better I find out now rather than after I write a book or an article based on something he told me.” I closed my laptop and started to pack it away, signaling that I was ready for them to let me go.

“I guess I’ll just move on to my real reason for being here, which is the museums, as I said.” I stood up to leave.

“Oh we can take you!” said Chesterfield. He actually grabbed my wrist to keep me from leaving. “Which one are you going to first?” He smiled at me, and then self-consciously softened his grip on me for a second before dropping it completely. Paris shot him a disapproving glance.

You dirty bastard.

I read the thoughts, as he intended me to.

“The British Museum, of course,” I replied.

“Well let’s go then,” said Chesterfield, lightly brushing my lower spine with his left hand as he pushed my chair back in for me. “Can I carry your case?”

“No thank you,” I said.

The contact between his hand and my back created some kind of electrical charge that radiated through the rest of my body and left me feeling flushed. I knew that he was trying to charm me, probably using sophisticated conversational hypnosis techniques, and it was working. Worst of all was the feeling that Agent Paris knew exactly what was happening and was laughing at me for it. I looked, and sure enough, he had a sneering grin on his face as he regarded me.

I waited with Chesterfield outside in the Old Palace Yard while Paris walked down Millbank to the “Q-Park” on the other side of the Abingdon Street Gardens to pick up their car. As we stood there, Chesterfield asked about my books. I gave him vague answers, not willing to make the effort to describe my work to a newbie

He didn’t seem to mind. He just kept smiling at me. He tried to get me to give him my email, purportedly so that he could buy some of my books directly from me. But when I put him off by telling him just to get them from Amazon, he changed his tactic.

“Look, the truth is that the Security Services have an ongoing investigation on this Weir fellow,” he said, suddenly acting serious.

“Who?” I had forgotten the guy’s “real” name.

“The one you called the Baron of Alphamstone! You’re a witness. We may have more questions for you. You’ll have to give us your email, and your address, and your phone number too. There’s some paperwork you’ll have to fill out in the car before we let you go.”

For a moment I found the thought of him calling me in to his office to detaining and interrogate appealing for some reason. I chalked it up to the mind control tactics he and his partner were both using.

Must be something they teach you in training, I thought.

We heard a honk as a black Vauxhall Astra Elite, recent model, pulled up in front of us. The doors unlocked. Chesterfield opened the rear door and gestured gallantly for me to enter. Then he boorishly slid in right beside me instead of taking the passenger seat in the front as I would have expected him to.

He stared at me lasciviously, an evil gleam in his green eyes and his red eyebrows cocked at a devilish angle. I was sure he was going to grab my pussy right there, Trump-style. But instead he reached into a pocket on the back of the seat in front of me and pulled out a packet of carbon-copy forms for me to fill out.

“Put your contact info here, initial here, and sign here,” he said. “You’re just acknowledging that you voluntarily answered our questions, and that you weren’t *forcibly detained*.” He said that last part with far too much enjoyment.

It took 15 minutes to get to the museum. We had to cross the river twice, and pay a toll. We first crossed to the other side via the Lambeth Bridge, and as we turned on it, they both proudly pointed out to me their agency’s headquarters, a building called Thames House located further on down Millbank.

“So did Weir actually make an appointment to meet with you in the House of Lords today?” Paris asked as he drove. It was the first real question either of them had asked me.

“No,” I said. “He just told me to look him up there next time I was in town. I guess he never expected that I’d actually show up.”

“When’s the last time you spoke to him?” Paris queried.

“Probably a week ago,” I said truthfully. My lies were getting sloppy.

“So you told him you were coming to London to do research?” Paris inquired.

“Well, yes,” I said. I couldn’t think of a way around it.

“But you didn’t make a specific appointment to meet?” Paris pressed.

“No, just an informal agreement,” I replied. “I just said I’d drop by sometime, that’s all.” I was hoping he wouldn’t probe further.

“So did you talk to him on the phone?” Paris asked.

“No, just email,” I told him. I didn’t want to mention the Skype conversation, or the phone number he’d given me where nobody ever answered.

“Well, said Chesterfield, tenderly grabbing my hand and folding my fingers around a business card. “Here’s my number, if you remember anything that might be useful to us. Especially if he contacts you again. Don’t tell him that we spoke, or that you found out the truth about him. Try to make an appointment with him, and then let us know where you’re going to meet.”

I looked at the card. It had the *Regnum Defende* MI5 logo with a dragon-tailed lion surrounded by portcullises and pentagonal rose symbols. It was a good thing Her Majesty had these two fine men to defend her realm from the mischievous conmen trying to sell titles to fake baronies. I mentally laughed at the ridiculous situation I now found myself in.

“Sure thing!” I said. The car came to a stop in front of the south entrance of the museum, with its massive columned pediment in the style of ancient Greece. I managed to get out of the car somewhat smoothly without making further promises or giving away any more information. But not before Chesterfield kissed my hand ridiculously, causing his partner to shake his head in embarrassment.

The car sped off as soon as I shut the door. I walked quickly through the courtyard and up the large steps to the doorway, eager to get out of open view as quickly as possible.

Chapter 8: Non Sequitur

The great secret of magic, the unique and

incommunicable Arcana, has for its purpose the placing of supernatural power at the service of the human will in some way.

To attain such an achievement it is necessary to KNOW

what has to be done, to WILL what is required, to DARE

what must be attempted and to KEEP SILENT with discernment.

— Eliphas Levi, *The Great Secret* Having finally shaken loose of my interrogators, I wandered through grand halls filled with the greatest treasures in the world in a blind daze, hardly noticing any of it. After paying my donation to get in, I entered a large open court with an egg-shaped reading room carving out a large chunk of space in the middle. The first room I saw to my left was full of Egyptian stuff. I sat on a blond wooden bench underneath a gigantic broken bust of Ramesses II and tried to collect my thoughts.

So Leopold is a fraud. Where is he now? Have the police and MI5 already questioned him? Presumably he hasn't been arrested yet. But perhaps they shut him down, or he shut himself down, realizing the game was over. But what was the game?

The agents' claims made no sense. Leopold hadn't tried to sell me any titles, which surely would have been the point of faking his membership in a wealthy British gentleman's club. It would have been an expensive ruse.

He had been seeking information from me, rather than trying to convince me of anything. He had spent a considerable amount of money on me, rather than trying to get me to buy anything. He'd lied to me about being a baron and a Peer of the Realm, but without mentioning anything about providing titles for others. So what was the point then?

I was too worked up about all of these questions to take in the museum properly. But that wasn’t really why I was there. I wanted to see for myself the very items of interest which I had travelled all of this way to talk about, but had never actually laid eyes on.

I walked back out into the Great Court and up to the closest information desk. This was a large black circular object near the entrance. Several agents were working there, all wearing uniforms of black pants and blue shirts.

They all were busy with other customers except one on the end. She was an overweight Persian lady in her 20s, with her hair in a messy bun. Her name tag said “Parveen.” I walked up to her.

“Hi,” I said. “I was wondering if you could tell me how to find one of the items in your online catalogue.”

“Certainly,” she said. “What do you know about it?”

“It’s a limestone coffer, item number 1866,1229.143 in the Duc de Blacas Collections,” I said, reading off information from an email accessible on my phone. Parveen typed into her computer.

“Hmm,” she said. “That item number is coming up as not found. Was it donated by Louis de Blacas, or Pierre?”

“Louis, I believe,” I said. She looked disappointed.

“That’s a large collection, unfortunately,” she said. “What else can you tell me about it?”

“Well, it was labeled as having an image of Cybele on the top.”

She typed into her computer some more, presumably using keywords. Then she shook her head sideways again.

“Well, I’m not finding any limestone coffers at all, I’m afraid,” she said.

“Could it be in another collection?”

“That’s impossible,” I said. “I knew it wasn’t on display, but it should still be here.”

“Who told you it was here?” she asked.

“The museum staff!” I answered, feeling frustrated. “Through email! They let me search through the digital catalog until I found it. Then I paid them to take some better photos of it, which they sent me.”

I combed through my Gmail archives until I found an attachment containing the photos of the lid of the Mete coffer. Then I turned my phone around to show Parveen the image of a naked, crowned, and bearded Hermaphrodite gleefully pulling the Sun and the Moon, upside-down and out of the sky with a pair of chains attached to both the heavenly bodies and the ankles of the goddess.

“Cybele is a goddess, not a Hermaphrodite,” Parveen smugly informed me.

“That’s not what Catullus said,” I snapped back, not having time to explain the numerous counter-traditions indicating that the “Magna Mater” or “Great Mother” worshiped by both the Persians and the Romans was originally described as a hermaphrodite that had been castrated and cast out of Olympus by the other gods.

“Anyway it was your museum that labeled it Cybele,” I said.

“And you said you got that photo from us?” she asked, sounding incredulous.

"Yes," I replied. "And I paid this institution to take good photographs, which I published in a book last year for the first time, even though this artifact has been mentioned in books about the Knights Templar with only line drawings available to print for over one hundred and fifty years. I am the one who brought this historical item, which your museum has been sitting on and ignoring, into the light of day. And now I'd like to finally see it."

Parveen wasn't looking at me or my phone anymore. She was typing into her computer again. When I stopped talking, she looked up.

"What did you say your name was?" she asked.

"I didn't say," I told her. "But I'm Pamela Auger. I'm a writer." She hit the keys a few more times.

"Oh yes," she said. "I see that you still have an outstanding balance of 3000

pounds for photograph rights." She smiled a "gotcha" smile, and her eyes gleamed.

"Yes, and the item in the photo that I owe money for the rights to is the one I'm asking you to locate for me right now," I smiled.

Surely she's just an information desk clerk, not a collection agent, I thought.

Her primary job is to help visitors find things they're looking for, not to catch people who owe money to the museum.

"Well, I'll call in the Accounts Receivable department. Maybe they can help us figure out where this coffer is, and I'm sure they can work out some payment arrangements for you. Just a second." She picked up her phone again and smiled evilly.

Have I really pissed her off that much? I thought. *All this just because I mentioned that I had made history with an item they'd been ignoring?*

My honesty, and perhaps my arrogance as well, was about to screw me out of a chance to see the coffer, and instead drive me straight into the greedy hands of bill collectors. I suddenly wanted to flee.

I turned around with the intention of doing exactly that. But then I bumped into a body in light brown leather cap toe Oxford shoes and a light brown suit that was topped with a familiar old face. It was Leopold Black! At that moment, even though I knew he was a fraud, I was happy to see him.

But what’s he doing here? I wondered.

“I thought I might find you here,” he said. “Looking for the coffer?”

“Yes,” I said. “But they’re having trouble finding it. They seem more interested in talking to me about the money I owe them. And that’s not the strangest thing that’s happened to me today. Why haven’t you been answering the phone?”

I wasn’t sure if I should tell him what I knew or play dumb and pump him for information, as Agent Chesterfield had encouraged me to do. But I desperately wanted to get away from that information desk before Accounts Receivable showed up.

“Well you won’t find it here anymore,” he said. “It’s gone. It’s been stolen.”

“What?” I said, disbelieving him. Despite what Parveen had told me, I couldn’t accept that anything could be stolen from the British Museum without it being a news story. Also, Leopold/Thomas was a known liar.

“Yes, its gone, and we need to get gone too,” he said. “Come with me.”

“OK,” I said. “I’d like to get a decent coffee. I also need to find a clothing store. They lost my luggage, and I’ve been wearing this outfit for three days.”

We headed towards the entrance, but from behind I heard my name being called by a deep male voice.

“Ms. Auger!”

“Walk faster,” said Leopold. “We can’t let them catch us.”

“You mean Accounts Receivable?” I said. “I’m just going to leave. They can’t make me stay.” Still, I did walk faster. The voice called me again.

“Ms. Auger, please come back here for a moment!”

Now I was almost running, panicking, wanting to avoid confrontation.

Leopold kept pace. We sprinted down the steps and across the courtyard, with now two pursuers, whom I saw peripherally to be large men in dark suits, following behind at a steady pace but not running after us.

As we neared the curb of Great Russell Street, Leopold hailed a black car with tinted windows that looked like its arrival was perfectly timed. He opened the back door and basically shoved me in. Before the door closed, I heard that same familiar voice shouting at me from behind us:

“Ms. Auger, we need to talk. There’s something you need to know!”

Leopold shut the door, and the doors locked automatically. That’s when I realized that this was not a taxicab, as there were no meters and no official identification. It was a private car. The driver, a blond guy in his thirties with a dark suit and black bowler hat, took orders from Leopold.

“Take us to the Club, Miles” he said to the driver. Miles nodded and sped off, just as one of the men following us, who I saw to be black and husky, reached for the door handle, and missed. Now my survival instinct kicked in.

“Leopold, I agreed to go down the street for coffee with you, not to get in a private car. Where are you taking me?”

“To the Oriental Club, of course,” he said. “You’re going to make the presentation I hired you to do.” A chill went through me.

Who is this man that I’ve foolishly gotten into a car with, I thought, *and what is he going to do to me?*

“Actually, I’d like to get out now,” I said. I then addressed the driver. “Can you pull the car over please?”

He ignored me. My fear turned into a full freak-out.

“I demand that you let me out of this car right now!” I screamed. I picked up my phone, though I didn’t know how to call the equivalent of 911 in this country. I didn’t have time to think about who to call because Leopold snatched the phone out of my hand with a forcefulness that surprised me for a man his age.

“Pamela, do not panic, or I will give you a reason to panic,” he said.

What a scary thing to say! I thought.

I unlocked my door and reached for the handle, ready to take my chances and jump out straight onto the pavement below, hoping I could aim for the sidewalk at least instead of being crushed immediately by the car behind us. But Leopold grabbed my hand and pressed something cold and hard against my chest.

I looked down. It was a silver handgun. I sat back, terrified.

“What do you want from me?” I sobbed.

“Just your professional analysis,” he answered. “Now cooperate.”

Chapter 9: Oriental Club

Between South Molton Street & Stratford Place: Calvary’s foot: Where the Vidims were preparing for sacrifice their Cherubim… their inmost palaces Resounded with preparation of animals wild & tame.

—William Blake, *Milton*

At times like this, you find yourself wishing you’d attached a rider to your contract.

The client must provide his actual legal name. No involuntary transport of my person (kidnapping). No guns or threats of murder. Pick me up at the airport, for Christ’s sake. Return phone calls and emails related to business in a timely manner. And never, ever book me at a hotel room that cannot fit both my body and my suitcase simultaneously. Also, of course, a cancellation clause in case the above requirements are violated.

But no recourse seemed available to me at that time. So I tried to calm myself down, wiping the tears from my puffy, reddened face that had not had the benefit of make-up in days. I concentrated on Leopold’s hands, which I looked at close up for the first time. I noticed that they were both scarred all over and horribly contorted. It was almost as if each phalange had been separated from the others at some point, and then it had all been grafted back together again, badly.

I looked out the window to my left and saw a public park. A sign said

“Hanover Square.” I recalled that this was near where the Oriental Club actually did meet, at some place called Stratford House. But Leopold was holding my phone, so I couldn’t use it to confirm this. I wondered what they were going to do with me, how much it would hurt, and if anyone would find my body. Finally, I turned again to my captor and inquired as to whether the projector and screen had been set up for my PowerPoint presentation.

“You’ll have everything you need,” I was told gruffly.

The car stopped abruptly and pulled up next to the park.

“We walk from here,” Leopold announced. The doors unlocked and he leaned over to pull the handle on my door with his right hand while he grabbed my right wrist with his left hand, which was so gnarly that my skin tried to crawl away from my body as soon as he touched it. He then wrapped his entire arm around mine so that he had firm control of my whole upper body. He pushed me out along with himself, and we emerged stuck together. He then pulled me over to the corner, where we crossed the street after Miles drove off.

I guess we just looked like a typical May-December couple. People walking past us didn’t seem to notice that he was pressing a gun against my side, or that I was under extreme duress. I couldn’t believe that something like this could happen in a large city in broad daylight. But it was happening.

When we got to the other side of the street. Leopold stopped me for a moment and looked around. There was nobody else in our immediate vicinity. In front of us was a multi-purpose office building. I saw a sign for a Lloyd’s TSB bank in the lobby, and next to that, Barclays, again. In my fear and paranoia I tried desperately to understand what was going on. I turned to look at Leopold.

“You don’t work for Barclays do you?” He shook his head sideways and laughed. I realized that didn’t make any sense, especially since he had paid me thousands of dollars and spent thousands more to bring me here.

That’s a silly way to collect a debt, I thought. Just then I felt someone come from behind and grab my left arm. It was Miles. He must have already parked the car.

“This way please,” he said politely as he and Leopold both dragged me off.

They marched me past another building and across Hanover Street, then down a few doors to the left. We paused in front of the glass door of an art gallery with no name, simply labeled with the address, “10 Hanover.” In the middle of the day, it was closed and empty.

There was a touchpad for an alarm. Miles keyed in the code while Leopold held me firm, never loosening his grip on my arm or the pressure of the gun on my ribcage. The door opened and I was ushered inside.

The lights were off, but I could see the main room from the daylight coming through the glass door. I only saw two art pieces on display in the otherwise empty room. One was a giant Band-Aid, about a foot long, stuck to a canvas on the back wall, right next to a staircase leading down. The other was a large square canvas on the wall to my left, maybe 8 feet by 8 feet, painted black with three yellow discs arranged in a downward-pointing triangle formation. Leopold noticed me noticing it.

“What are you thinking?” he asked curiously.

“Oh I was just thinking that this reminds me of an image I saw in a movie once,” I told him.

This whole experience is like being in a movie, I thought to myself.

“Which one?” he prodded.

“I think it was *Invocation of My Demon Brother*, by Kenneth Anger,” I answered.

“Ah yes, the Aleister Crowley worshipper with the horrible amateur movies that everybody calls ‘art,’” he said.

They shoved me to the left side of the room, around a bend, so that we were now out of sight from the front door. Leopold let me go and gave the gun to Miles, who now pressed it into my back underneath my left shoulder blade.

Leopold lit a cigarette with a zippo. They were Chesterfields. I didn't even know they made Chesterfields anymore! That, of course, made me think fondly of my favorite MI5 agent, wishing he and his partner were there to save me.

"Actually," Leopold explained, "the yellow dots in the Kenneth Anger movie form a downward-pointing triangle. This," he said, jabbing his thumb at the painting behind him, "is based on the coat of arms for William Pitt. There's a statue of him in the park across the street."

He started to walk towards the stairs and then stopped again. He turned around and looked at me, wagging his gnarly index finger at me.

"But see, you were picking up on an Aleister Crowley vibe. That's why I hired you. There's more than just logic and knowledge at work in your brain, though there is that. You're using a sixth sense to do your research too. I've known it for some time. That's why you're the one we need."

He turned around and headed down the stairs. Miles and I followed.

"Why," I asked. "What's this got to do with Aleister Crowley?"

When we reached the bottom of the stairs we were in a dark unfinished basement. I couldn't even see the walls to tell how large it was. Leopold turned towards me and ignited his lighter to illuminate his face.

"Crowley's Astron Argon club had an office in that building down the street, at 10 Hanover Square," he said, pointing back up the stairs. "Or at least, in the building that used to be there."

"But aren't we in 10 Hanover now?" I said, confused. I remembered the address on the front door.

"We're in 10 Hanover *Street*. The Square is down there, he said, continuing to point. Miles winced.

“It’s OK Miles,” Leopold assured him. “She needs to know these things.

Now, Crowley and his friends had access to the underground tunnel network beneath these streets, which leads to what was once the sub-basement of where the Oriental Club *used* to meet, at 18 Hanover Square.”

“So not Stratford House?” I inquired.

“That’s right,” he answered. “They moved to Stratford House in the 60s. It’s just a quarter-mile away from here. But before that, Oriental Club was just a few feet away from Astron Argon’s office, right across Hanover Square. Now Crowley spent some time there, not as a dues-paying member, but as a guest. And the person who invited him in, whose name I shall withhold, also shared with him a secret which *should not* have been disclosed, about the tunnel network. Crowley and his friends then began making nefarious use of the tunnels. We know this because when we were exploring down here, we found one of his secret shrines.”

“What tunnels?” I asked. “And who’s ‘we’?”

“The Worshipful Society of Butchers,” Leopold replied. He walked over to a grimy tile-covered wall, which I could now see only because of the flame from his lighter, and unlatched a hook that had been keeping a thin wooden door closed. It swung open, revealing a toilet, a sink, and an overflowing trash can. Miles let go of me and gave the gun back to Leopold, who held it sticking out towards me. I now had nobody holding me, but I dare not try to run.

Miles pulled the trash can out of the bathroom and into the main room, to get it out of the way. Then he brushed aside the remaining pile of used paper towels, revealing a green wooden hatch door, which he raised. Underneath was a deep shaft, with at least two rungs of a metal ladder visible from the top.

This must be the entrance to the secret network of tunnels they were talking about, I thought.

Miles went down first. Then a few seconds later, Leopold insisted I follow. I put the strap of the laptop case around my neck and let it hang from my back as I climbed down. Leopold extinguished his flame, and waited for me to get to the bottom, still in pitch-darkness. There Miles grabbed me with both hands, and whistled to announce this. Then Leopold descended down the ladder himself.

When he got to the bottom, he flicked his lighter back on temporarily and pointed his gun at me again. Then Miles let go of me, and reached into his coat pocket to pull out a long silver cylinder. It was an LED flashlight, which he turned on, allowing Leopold to put out his lighter and return it to his pocket.

“I’m sorry that I have to point this gun at you,” said Leopold. “But I know that I can’t trust you to cooperate yet.” He pulled something out of his inner coat pocket and snapped it to unfurl it. It was a cloth, like a scarf.

“Turn around,” he said. I complied. He tied the cloth over my eyes. I was completely blind.

“Oh come on,” I said, “I can barely see as it is.”

“There are some details I just can’t trust you with,” he said. “Miles, take her bag please.”

Miles relieved me of my burden, which actually was *quite* a relief, physically. But now I had to worry about how I was going to get it back. Leopold then grabbed me from behind by the left shoulder.

“Put your arms out to your side, please,” he instructed. I complied, bewildered.

“Forward three paces, please, and through the archway,” Leopold continued.

I walked ahead. After two steps, I felt a wall on either side of me. With a third step I walked through a passageway between them. I stepped into an open room of some sort. I could tell this because there was a change in air pressure, as well as in the acoustics of our footsteps, and a gentle breeze from above.

“Where are we going now?” I said.

“You tell us, my dear Virgil,” he commanded.

“What do you mean?” I asked.

“Directly ahead of you are the entrances to three different corridors that you can go down,” Leopold explained. “Three different avenues all leading to the light. Three different *Ways* through *Strength* and *Beauty*.

“But remember,” he lectured, “these paths all intersect with each other at several points on the journey. So in the long run, there will be numerous opportunities to change the road you are on. Therefore, fear not the outcome.

Simply make a choice, and move ahead. But to make sure that you are perfectly lost, and therefore your choice all the more arbitrary, we shall give you a few spins around, just like a game of pin the tail on the donkey.”

Leopold took me by my left hand, and Miles took me by my right. Then they both began to spin me in a counter-clockwise direction.

Suddenly I understood, at least in part, their purpose for bringing me here.

Leopold had surmised my clairvoyant powers when he realized that I was using intuition and divination tools in my occult research. He had figured out why I had been able to penetrate esoteric mysteries so deeply.

Perhaps he’s also overestimated my powers, I thought, *and assumes I can control them. Maybe he doesn’t realize that they work sporadically at best, and aren’t always reliable. Either way, it’s certainly was starting to look like he brought me here to serve as a soothsayer.*

“Are you guys trying to use me as a human dowsing rod?” I asked, as I was being turned by them like a corkscrew.

“In a way, yes,” Leopold replied.

They spun me around seven times, at the end of which I was, as they intended, dizzy and completely disoriented. I stumbled forward a few feet. My hands caught the left side of another archway.

“Excellent choice,” said Leopold. “Steady on.”

I walked on through the archway, and into a narrow tunnel, with Leopold’s hand on my shoulder once again. I reckoned that Miles was somewhere behind us.

“Don’t you know where these tunnels lead? Or are you expecting *me* to tell you? Because *I* sure as Hell don’t know.”

“Yes, I know where they lead, dear. But I’m just not sure what station we need to be at next. So I am counting on you to intuit that for us. Don’t worry, I have complete faith in you.”

And so we walked on, for what felt like a quarter of a mile, until we hit a wall. I sensed that we had reached another crossroads. I scuttled to the left and found that there was indeed a passageway there, so I turned left. But then I hesitated after a few steps. It smelled wet and moldy, like dirty towels.

“Maybe we should go the other way,” I said. “This might be leading into a sewer.”

“It’s not,” said Leopold. “Go on.”

“But there’s a passageway going the opposite direction too, isn’t there?” I asked. I got the sense that there was, and that I might have made the wrong choice.

“Don’t second-guess yourself,” said Leopold. “Keep going.”

We trekked on for about another quarter of a mile. At one point I was sure that I heard a subway train passing over ahead, and Miles confirmed it. Then sometime after that I saw, in my mind's eye, an old wooden door, with a padlock on it. I stopped dead in my tracks.

“There's no point in going on,” I said. “There's a locked door. We would need the key.”

“She's good!” said Miles. I then heard a keyring jangling, and a key being inserted into the lock.

“Come on through,” he said, guiding me through the door with his hand on my shoulders. “There's only one direction to go in from here.”

I stepped forward. Leopold stepped through behind me. Then he told me to stop.

“Go ahead and take the hoodwink off, Miles,” he ordered.

The blindfold was removed. Now I could see the brick walls and floors of the corridor we were in, illuminated by the LED flashlight. It seemed centuries old.

Up ahead several hundred feet, there was an opening leading to a round room, also lined floor to ceiling with brick.

“You found it,” said Leopold. “Congratulations.”

“I thought you needed me to guide you,” I said resentfully.

“We do,” he replied. “That was just a test. A warm-up exercise.”

Miles pushed me forward again. I walked on, but just then I smelled something familiar. It was an odor I couldn't forget because of the years my parents spent tending a small ranch in Sherwood, Oregon. It was cow shit, unmistakably.

“Are there any animals down here?” I asked. “It smells like cow patties.” It seemed improbable, but my nose didn’t lie. I sensed the beast’s life force, and its fear. Then I heard it low mournfully.

“Yes, well…” Leopold’s voice trailed off for a moment. Miles pushed me forward again. Then Leopold finished his sentence.

“Animals often crap themselves the moment they realize they’re about to die.”

I stumbled through the doorway into the room, terrified now, as a single fluorescent tube light hanging from the ceiling came on. This revealed the scene in front of me. A man in a black leather veil and a matching leather apron over a brown suit was standing in front of four-foot-high wooden table covered also in black leather, with a large axe held aloft.

Upon this table was pressed the neck of a bull, being held with a rope round its neck by another man, similarly dressed. The man with the axe brought it down on the neck of the bull, who bellowed loudly at the moment of first impact.

The head came rolling off, and the blood began spurting outward in jets as I collapsed and fell down onto the brick floor, staring up at the beehive-shaped brick ceiling and the tube light beneath it, which got shot with a jet of blood just before I passed out.

Chapter 10: Scrying at Stratford Place

The Duke of Wellington is said to have given the founders of the Oriental Club two pieces of

characteristically succinct advice: ‘Have a club of your own’ and ‘Buy the freehold.’

—Anthony LeJeune, *The Gentlemen’s Clubs of London* I awoke with my face laying on my arms. I was seated in a straight-back wooden chair with no armrests. My arms and head were lying on a long rectangular dining table, where I was seated at the head. Sitting around the rest of the table were maybe a dozen men and women of various ages, mostly white but not exclusively. They were all dressed quite properly, as if for a night at the opera. All of them were staring directly at me. I saw in their faces, variously, curiosity, amusement, concern, and pity.

At the other end of the table was a projector screen arranged on a stand.

The décor around me was Victorian, everything in a red-stained wood.

Bookshelves filled with antique books lined the walls in front of me and to my left.

Against the wall to my right was a little wooden table with two chairs.

Leopold sat on the right side of the table, with a black rectangular object in his hand. Another gentleman, considerably older than him, sat on the left. Both looked very stern.

I turned to look behind me. There was a portrait of the Duke of Wellington hanging over a white marble fireplace. I knew from the research I had done before the trip that I was in one of the dining rooms of Stratford House, where the Oriental Club held their meetings.

Finally, I looked down at my own person and took note of my condition. I felt terrible. I was tired and dehydrated, with a pounding headache and sore muscles all over. But one condition had improved.

I was no longer wearing the same soiled clothes I'd had on since I left Portland. Instead, I was sporting an elegant blue gown and matching pumps, with a lacy white shawl, white pearls around my neck, and a matching bracelet around my left arm. I reached up and ran my hands through my hair. It had been curled. I tried to rub my eyes, but the young lady next to me put her hand on my arm to stop me.

“Oh, don't ruin your make-up,” she said. “I worked hard on it!”

So they had changed my clothes and made me up, I thought. *That means I was naked. What else did they do to me?*

“We had you fixed up a bit,” said Leopold. “There's a dress code in this club.”

I glared at him. *How did they do all that without waking me up?* I wondered.

I figured they must have given me a sedative after I passed out, which would explain why I still felt groggy.

They could have done anything to me, I thought.

“Don't worry, we had the women change your clothes and bathe you,”

Leopold said. “Your decency was kept intact the whole time.”

That only made me feel slightly better, and since I knew he was a liar, I didn't fully believe him. Still, I was nice to have fresh underwear. But then I thought of the bull decapitation, and the blood spurting out. And the gun at my back. And all of the lies.

Not so nice, I thought. *Who are these people?*

“So is this the Worshipful Company of Butchers?” I asked.

“Society,” Leopold corrected.

“You mean to tell me that *this* is how the livery companies of London conduct themselves?” I shouted.

“We are not a livery company,” the ancient man next to Leopold insisted.

“We are a different sort of entity.”

“We conduct butchery only when necessary, and to a specific end,” said a young man on the other end of the table on the left side. “We carry on the traditions of sacrifice, and spill the blood that is needed, but only to keep things in balance.”

“To satisfy the divine commandments” said a woman across from him. “To preserve the sacred order.”

“One for the Lord, and one for Azazel,” said Leopold, undoubtedly knowing that this reference would have meaning for me, having read my Baphomet book where it was mentioned.

“We watch over the pillars that hold up the sky,” said another man, immediately to my right, “and the portals that lead to the other realm. We make sure nobody *abuses* these things, no matter how powerful they might be on Earth. The mighty are always seeking means to even greater power. But some things must be kept inviolate, or else everything will be destroyed.”

“What does all this mean?” I said to them pleadingly. “And what do you want with me?”

Just then a door on the far end of the wall to my right opened, and in stepped Miles. He switched off the light, and Leopold clicked a button on the object he was holding. The projector came on. A line drawing of the lid of the Mete coffer appeared on the screen in front of us. There was Mete pulling the Sun and Moon down with chains. The ancient man next to Leopold spoke again.

“Do you stand by your interpretation that the image on this coffer represents Mete pulling the gods of heaven down from the sky?”

“Yes,” I answered. “I am convinced of my hypothesis and have no reason to think otherwise.”

“You’ve really let the cat out of the bag,” the man said contemptuously.

“Knowledge like this is dangerous. It can give the wrong people the wrong ideas, and that is what you have done.”

“What in the world do you mean?” I said. The man on the far end of the table on the left, who had spoken before, replied to me.

“There is now a very powerful and evil magician who is attempting to challenge the powers of the Archons, spurred on by the content of your book.

And it has come down to us to put a stop to it.”

“You mean he’s trying to make the sky fall down with a child sacrifice ritual?” I asked, referring to my theory regarding what I believe was the Templars’

most important secret ceremony. “So someone’s trying to escape the material world? To penetrate the gates of the gods above and overcome them?”

“Yes, said Leopold. “The Baptism of Wisdom. Just as you described in your book.”

Well, I didn’t describe it in much detail, I thought. *Nobody knows the details.*

I just figured out what I could from looking at a few pictures.

“I was really just theorizing,” I said. “Based on what I saw, and my research.

I’m not even sure if I was right, and I said so in the book. I certainly didn’t think anybody in modern times would take the idea seriously. How can you destroy existence by doing a ritual?”

“If anybody ever does figure it out, well enough to explain the mechanics of it rationally, by then it will be too late,” said the woman to my left—the one who had done my make-up.

“That’s not what we need to know right now, Pamela,” said Leopold. He clicked his clicker again, and the picture on the screen changed. “What we need to know from you now is what you see here.”

I looked at the picture. It looked like a map. In fact, it looked quite familiar to me. I had been studying similar pictures for days before coming to London, planning my trip there, listing all the lovely historical monuments I would visit while I was in town for what I *thought* was legitimate business. But the map in front of me now was upside-down.

So is this another stupid test of my psychic abilities? I wondered. *Like how they forced me to divine my way to the slaughter room they had already set up for me in the tunnels?*

I felt like I had no choice. I had to play along, to stay on their good side long enough to figure a way out of Stratford House before those weirdos killed me. So I spoke my mind.

“Well, it’s London of course,” I said. “The City of London, the old town. But you need to turn it around. Anything else? We can play with a deck of cards. I can probably guess at least one out of ten.”

“By Jove!” exclaimed Leopold, leaping to his feet. He walked over to the projector and turned the picture around. “She’s right! Look, there’s St.

Paul's." He pointed to a dark circle in the middle, the same feature I had identified as matching up to St. Paul's Cathedral.

"And there's the Gherkin," he continued, pointing at another spot to the right of it. "Remember Miles," he said to his valet. "The part that was sticking up like a thumb?"

So this is a modern map of the City of London, I thought, realizing that the Gherkin was that pickle-shaped skyscraper that dominated the skyline. I knew that the part of town officially known as "the City of London" (controlled by "the Corporation of London") is merely a borough of what is now "Greater London." I also knew that it still roughly comprised the same space as the original Roman square mile known as "Londinium."

Although it was often described incompletely as the "financial district" of Greater London, it was really a separate legal entity from the rest of the British empire. The Queen was traditionally supposed to ask permission from the Lord Mayor of the City of London to enter the square mile to conduct formal business.

This is where the centers of corporate power, in counterbalance to regal and ecclesiastic power, were currently based. The Bank of England, the Stock Exchange, and the London Bullion Market Association were there, along with most of the corporate headquarters of Britain-based financial institutions. Even the "Temple" area where the Knights Templar had once kept a preceptory, was located in the City, and had always been the cornerstone of the British court system.

Why are they showing me this map, I thought. *And how did they not realize that it was a map? What did Leopold mean about "that part that was sticking up"?*

I didn't wonder for long. The man on the left at the opposite end of the table gave me the answer.

"This is a diagram we made just an hour ago, of the liver of the bull that we just sacrificed in the basement, which you were a witness to."

So I'm here to read entrails? I thought. *But I wasn't trained as a haruspex! I know nothing about divining from livers. Yet somehow I knew that this liver looked like the City of London. How on Earth is it even possible for the liver of a bull to look like a borough of London?*

"So what are you looking for?" I asked.

"Where's the cancer?" asked Leopold. "Tell us where you see the stronghold of the evil magician we described."

"Did you take any photos of the actual liver?" I asked.

"Yes!" Leopold smiled. "That was Miles idea. He took a photo with your phone."

Miles was smiling too, proud of himself. He walked over to me, pulled my phone out of his coat pocket, and handed it over. As soon as I turned it on, I saw the photo of the bloody liver and almost retched. It was mostly the memory of the kill that caused the reaction. I looked up at Miles again.

“Thank you Miles,” I said. “Can I have my laptop case back also?”

“Oh yes,” he replied. “It’s sitting next to the projector.”

I looked down at the photo again and tried to clear my mind, looking for

“the cancer,” whatever it was. The longer I remained useful to them, I figured, the longer I would remain alive. As I stared, I saw a ring of sickly green appear on the liver for a moment, right on the end of a triangle of whitish discoloration Then the circle vanished, but the white triangle remained. There was a similar triangle of lines formed on the diagram on the projector.

“I think I see something,” I said. “Here, between St. Paul’s and the Gherkin.”

I got up and walked over to the projector, then pointed on the diagram to where I had seen the green circle appear on the photograph. “It’s right on this triangle here. I saw it with my mind’s eye.”

“God damn it’s that fucking Jew bugger!” said a man on the right side of the table. “The one who thinks he’s more powerful than the Queen.”

“Don’t be so vulgar!” said a woman sitting next to him, looking at me nervously. “We’re not against Jews or homosexuals. We aren’t barbarians.”

I looked away from her. *That's exactly what you are*, I thought.

“It doesn’t matter. He’ll do us all in if we let him,” said another man, addressing the entire room. “That’s why he bribed the City to let him buy the meth room. That’s why he built that bulky, impenetrable mass in the center of the City. He wants to do it there, right there. To cut a hole in the sky and bring down the pillars it sits on. Doesn’t that make sense now?”

No, it doesn’t make sense. I thought. *Did you actually say ‘meth room’?”*

I had no idea who they were talking about. I didn’t care. While everyone was talking to one another, I took a moment to kneel down and pick up my laptop case. As I was down beneath the table I punched a few buttons on my phone, grateful that I had input Agent Chesterfield’s phone number already while I was sitting in the Egyptian room at the British Museum.

I silenced the speakers but left the mic open. Then I rang his number and put the phone in the outside pocket of my case, which I left open. I returned to my seat at the end of the table.

“What specifically are you afraid is going to happen,” I asked Leopold, locking eyes with him.

“Pamela, whether you understand or not, rationally, I know you get it intuitively. There really are pillars that hold up the sky. They keep the layers of existence from crashing in on each other. And there are those who are looking for power beyond this world. The man we are telling you about wants to make Atlas shrug for real—no metaphor. We sacrifice bulls to the Archons, to maintain the cosmic order. But he wants to kill the Celestial Bull, and tear down the columns that uphold creation, so that he can climb up, out of here, and rule the destroyed worlds from above. He believes he can make the gods themselves bow down to him. And in the process we may all be crushed or annihilated.”

“You can’t really believe that’s possible,” I said.

“We can’t take the chance that it might be,” the old man next to him answered.

Just then, another door opened up, this time on my left side, and a man dressed like a butler came through.

“What’s the meaning of this!” the old man shouted. “I told you to give us absolute privacy.”

“I’m sorry sir. It’s the police. I had to let them in,” the butler replied.

Behind him, two metropolitan police in black uniforms came through, followed by Agent Paris and Agent Chesterfield. Paris pointed directly at Leopold.

Then he grabbed the butler by the collar angrily.

“You told us he wasn’t here.”

“I didn’t let him in,” the butler insisted. “He must have sneaked in somehow.” He looked around. “Well a *lot of you* didn’t come through the front door. How’s that?”

“All right, take him in,” said Chesterfield. The police handcuffed Leopold as Chesterfield walked over and took me by the arm.

“You should take his valet in too,” I told him loudly. “They both kidnapped me at gunpoint from the British Museum. Then they took me down to some dungeon and killed a bull in front of me.”

Everyone in the room stopped dead. The room was silent. Everyone stared at me. The WSB members all had looks of complete horror on their faces.

“Will you *testify* to that?” Agent Paris asked me. Miles stared me down cold, and shook his head sideways.

“No,” I answered. I grabbed on tightly to Chesterfield’s arm.

“Then just take Mr. Weir,” Paris told the policemen. “The rest of you, get out of here. Club’s closed for the night.”

They all began to file out. I tried not to look at anyone directly anymore, and stared at Chesterfield’s shoes.

“Let’s go,” he said to me. I grabbed my laptop case, still looking down, and walked out, letting Chesterfield lead so that he could usher us through the exit line. I could feel Leopold’s eyes on my back, and I wanted to get out of his line of sight as soon as possible.

Chapter 11: Temple Tavern

O, plump head waiter of ‘The Cock,’

To which I most resort

How goes the time? ‘Tis five o’clock?

Go fetch a pint of port!

—Alfred Lloyd Tennyson, *The Cock*

Chesterfield took me down the stairs and out the front of Stratford House to the sidewalk, at the end of the cul-de-sac called Stratford Place. I didn’t see much of the opulent building because I was looking at my shoes the whole time.

When we got outside into the early evening air, he suggested we duck into the bookshop in the building next door, covered by an immense glass rooftop garden, thus avoiding the rest of the Society of Butchers as they scurried away. It turned out that this building housed the local Kabballah Centre, and it was their book shop. We stopped in front of a display of commentaries on *The Zohar* so that we could speak for a moment. But when we noticed that everyone in the shop was looking at us, we quieted down to a whisper.

“So you overheard what was going on when I called you and you traced the call to find me?” I asked. “I was shocked at how quickly you arrived.”

“Not exactly,” he answered. “We had been tracking your movements with your mobile phone since we dropped you off at the museum. Then we lost you for a while. We thought you might be in trouble, so we hovered in the area where we had last tracked you. I actually combed through the Tape Nightclub looking for you, and through the Bond Street tube station. Then we picked your signal up again at Stratford Place. We were lurking outside this Kabballah Centre, thinking you were probably here, when I got your call and realized it was coming from the Oriental Club."

"They took me to an art gallery on Hanover Street," I said. "Then we went through an underground tunnel to a tiny room shaped like a beehive, where they beheaded a bull. Then I passed out and woke up in that room you found me in.

Why were you tracking me in the first place?"

"Because I didn't feel good leaving you at the Museum with that creep Weir still afoot," he answered. "And I was right to be cautious."

Just then his cell phone rang, and he answered it. I could hear the other side of the conversation bleeding through. It was Agent Paris. He was suggesting that they take me into "the office" (at Thames House, presumably) for questioning, and let Weir sit in a cell all night waiting for interrogation tomorrow.

"Oh no," he said. "Let me take her out for a drink, and I'll talk to her there.

She's had a rough day. I'm sure she could use a bite and a quaff." He winked at me.

"You old dog," I heard Paris say. "Just make sure you get some real intelligence from her this time before you let her go."

"Oh don't worry," said Chesterfield. "I won't let her get off easy this time."

He chuckled. I didn't. He looked away from me.

"I'll show up tomorrow morning with a full report," he promised his partner.

"So do I have any choice about going out for a drink?" I asked.

“Not unless you’d rather be questioned at an MI5 office building,” he replied. “So just let me know: where would you like to be interrogated, my dear?”

“Do you know any pubs in the Temple district?” I asked. “I’d like to see that old Knights Templar church again,” I said.

“I know just the place,” he replied.

Paris had the company car with him, so we walked out to Oxford Street, and across to Bond Street Station, where we took a ten-minute ride on the Central line to Chancery Lane Station. There, we exited on Holborn, went west to Chancery Lane itself, then followed that road south down to Fleet Street, where our destination was. On the way he pointed out the famous silver vaults, and the former address of Aleister Crowley’s London residence (although the actual building he’d lived in was demolished in 2006). This was his way of flirting, as it was when he told me he had thought I was “cute before, wearing the stinky old jeans and a sweater with no make-up.”

“But now you look positively radiant,” he added.

“Thanks,” I replied. “I guess I clean up well, at least when I have a personal stylist and I’m lying unconscious.”

“You mean they changed your clothes while you were passed out?” he said.

He looked horrified.

“I don’t think they violated me,” I said. “At least no more than what I’ve already told you about.”

We arrived at Ye Olde Cock Tavern, a pub which had been around since 1549. Samuel Pepys, Charles Dickens, and Alfred Lloyd Tennyson all drank there.

After we’d eaten and drunk our fill, Chesterfield said, we could take the back door out the pub and through the enclosed courtyard to see Temple

Church just before it closed for the evening.

We ordered beer and “beef burgers,” as they call them. Then we stuffed ourselves while I spilled my guts to him about everything that had happened since my adventure began. I told him all about the Mete coffer and Leopold, the alleged lecture I’d been hired to give, the flight delay, Leopold dropping out of contact, and being questioned by him and Paris at Parliament, where I found out the truth about Leopold’s identity from him and Agent Paris.

Then I recounted my experience at the museum, where I learned that the coffer was gone, ran into Leopold for reasons unknown, and was chased outside by people I thought worked for Accounts Receivable. Finally, I described the kidnapping, the blindfolded march through the subterranean passage, the bull sacrifice, and the forced divination from the bull liver at Oriental Club. I even mentioned, in passing, their claim that they needed help locating an “evil magician” who intended to destroy existence as we knew it with a ritual to topple the “pillars of Heaven.”

“Chicken Littles!” said Chesterfield, amused. “‘The sky’s falling!’ What a bunch of nutters.”

He couldn’t believe it was that the real Butchers’ livery company was involved, especially considering that Leopold had lied about his name, his so-called barony, and his phony seat in the House of Lords. So Agent Chesterfield got out his smartphone to investigate.

“What did you say it was called again?” he asked. “The Worship Society of Butchers? Or the Worshipful Company? Because ‘Worshipful Company of Butchers’ is the name of the actual livery company.”

I dug through the email archives on my own phone.

“Leopold called it ‘Society.’ He said it several times.” I pondered for a moment. “They did actually tell me specifically that they weren’t a livery company but a ‘different sort of entity.’ So I guess I was looking at the

Worshipful Company's website all along, thinking it was for Leopold's group. But it looks like the Butcher's Society is just as fake as his supposed peerage."

"Which would explain why they meet at Oriental Club instead of Butcher's Hall," he said. "Because anyone who can meet the dress code and afford the fees can book time there, even if they don't belong to the actual Oriental Club, which you say Weir never specifically told you he was a member of."

"But the butler acted like he hadn't let them through the front door," I said.

"So maybe they sneaked in through an underground tunnel. Maybe there's a member of the club who knows a secret way in, and let them through. Something that connects with the tunnels I was inside of. And there must be a much wider entrance to the tunnels somewhere, or else how did they get the bull down there in the first place?"

Chesterfield asked me to bring out my laptop so that he could look at a larger image than his phone screen. After just a few seconds, he let out an "a ha!"

and swiveled the screen around to show me something.

"Is this the room where they beheaded the bull?" he asked.

He showed me a report on a building survey from the City of Westminster from 2014. It was commissioned to make sure the new expansions of the Bond Street tube station at nearby Hanover Square didn't interfere with the Stratford House basement. This basement did, as the report showed, jut out significantly from the front of the building, so that it was essentially underneath the middle of Stratford Place, the street out front. Like the rest of the building, the basement

dated back to 1774. A photograph included in the report showed that beehive ceiling, which I'll never forget.

“So if there is another intersecting tunnel that leads to 10 Hanover and all the other places you went, it must have been built without city permission sometime after 2014,” said Chesterfield. “And somehow the people building the tube tunnels never ran into it either. Unless one of them is in on it. Which is possible.”

“Really” I said. “You think there are people building new secret tunnels underneath London even today?”

“Oh, we know there are,” he answered, hushing his tone again. “Look, the new boom in both residential and commercial real estate in London is underground. The wealthy are building basements three and four levels down, because square footage is so valuable here. Hundreds of applications are being approved every year. There have got to be some that get built without permission.”

Chesterfield rolled his eyes up sucked in his lips, like he was debating whether or not he should tell me something. Then he continued.

“We at MI5 have found several. We’ve busted some, we’re watching others. We think there are hundreds more that we haven’t found yet. That is something I should not have told you. But maybe now you can trust me with something you wouldn’t have otherwise told me.” He looked at me deeply, expectantly.

“I’ve actually told you everything I know,” I replied. “Everything I can think of that you might be interested in.”

“Well let’s go do something *you’re* interested in,” he said, standing up.

“Let’s go look at those dead Templars across the courtyard over there.”

We went down the stairs from where we had been sitting and out the pub’s backdoor. Then we walked through the enclosed courtyard, past the tomb of the Irish writer Oliver Goldsmith (which, we were warned by the bartender, was haunted), and through the backdoor of the medieval Temple Church, built by and for the Knights Templar.

I hadn't been there on my first visit to London. This was my first time seeing it. But I had seen many pictures of the old tombs of the Templars recessed in the floor there. Each tomb was decorated with a life-sized relief on top depicting the deceased in full armor, usually with a dog at his feet. I didn't have any revelations until Chesterfield spoke up.

"It's funny how their legs are all crossed isn't it?" he said.

I looked at the Templar effigies. Indeed, the crossed legs were very peculiar.

"And they all look like they're in pain. Almost like somebody just kicked them in the balls. Or chopped their dicks off with a sword. Ha ha!" He spoke too loudly. The two people who were sitting there in the pews quietly praying looked up.

"Sorry!" he said nervously. But it got me thinking.

"You know, the Roman cult of the goddess Cybele had a fully castrated priesthood. They called them the Galli. They would become possessed by the goddess during their festivals. Then they would go crazy and cut off their own genitals in a frenzy, in honor of Attis, Cybele’s consort, who had done the same thing. And Attis was often depicted with his legs cross, just like these Templars.”

“So the priests castrated themselves to be like him, because they thought that’s what their goddess wanted?” Chesterfield said.

“Yep,” I replied. “That was how they were initiated. A couple of days later, they would put the severed sex organs in a sacred coffer and parade them around in a celebratory procession. They actually had all these festivals in late March, around the Spring Equinox, right about now. The castration rite was called the Day of Blood. That was on March 24.”

“Really,” said Chesterfield. He was going pale.

“Yeah, I said. Nobody ever points out that this was the day that men in the Heaven’s Gate cult castrated themselves before they committed suicide. They believed that they were going to be taken up into a portal that they thought was riding past Earth with the Hale Bopp comet that night. They thought they needed to be castrated to get in. They wanted to be the “eunuchs of Heaven” that the Bible talks about. Some people think that comet was actually Nibiru, also called Planet X, which the Babylonians identified with the time of the Spring Equinox.”

“My little joke brought all that to mind, did it?” said Chesterfield, in a very un-joking manner.

“Well I was thinking about the Mete coffer. The British Museum labeled the picture on the lid as being “Cybele.” And Hammer-Purgstall said that it looked like her, except she’s got a beard, and she was labeled Mete. He was sure that she

SOLVE
COAGULA
ELIPHAS LEVI DEL

was the same figure as the ‘Baphomet’ demon that the Templars supposedly worshiped in their secret ceremonies.”

Chesterfield nodded. I continued.

“He also said that the Templars were covertly practicing Ophite Gnosticism.

And the Ophites were said to have incorporated the Cybele cult into their syncretistic system. Now here we have the Templar knights, depicted on their tombstones with their legs crossed as though they’ve been injured in the genital region. It’s just like the Fisher King in the Grail stories, which the Templars were associated with. It’s all starting to add up. Look!”

I typed a few words into my phone, and brought up Eliphas Levi’s depiction of the Templar demon Baphomet.

“Look,” I said again. “This is Baphomet. This is the way the occultist Eliphas Levi depicted him. I’m just now realizing why he showed the demon with a caduceus coming out of his crotch instead of a penis, even though he said it was a hermaphrodite. Because it was actually a castrated Hermaphrodite, just like Catullus said Cybele was originally.”

I guess I didn’t care if Chesterfield was able to follow my logic. I was mainly saying it out loud for my own benefit, to aid my thoughts. By this time, the two people trying to pray peacefully in this house of God had gotten up and left in disgust. Chesterfield looked at me directly with a pained expression and stood silently for a moment. At last he spoke.

“Pamela, I think there is something that you need to see. Let’s go back to the tavern so we can use your laptop there. You’ll need a drink after you see it.”

Chapter 12: Easter Sunday April Fool

April is the cruelest month.

— T.S. Eliot, *The Wasteland*

We walked back into the pub and up the stairs to the third floor. We picked a table next to a window that gave us a view of the former location of the Bank of England, now moved to Threadneedle Street near Walbrook. This same building, on the western side of the corner of Chancery Lane and Fleet Street, had been, before that, home to the very pub we were standing in at one point. However, the original pub burned down in a fire, as we learned from an informative plaque mounted on the wall near our table.

I plugged my computer in and started it up while Chesterfield went and got us a couple of double-shot whiskeys with beer chasers. Then we both sat with our backs to the window and the computer screen on the table in front of us. That way, we figured, we could make sure nobody walked in on us and saw what was on the computer screen. We both downed about half of our whiskeys. Then Chesterfield took a small black thumb drive out of his pocket and held it up in front of me.

“This file was sent to MI5 through our anonymous tip page. It was encrypted into a video of a cat playing with a ball of yarn, and wrapped with a malignant virus which we were able to neutralize. Then we decrypted the video, which I’m about to show you. Don’t tell anyone I showed you, or I will lose my job and go to prison.”

I nodded. He plugged the drive into my computer.

“Play it from the drive. Don’t copy it,” he insisted.

Obviously, I thought to myself.

I opened the drive, and then the file, which was named

“easter.sunday.april.fools.mov.” Chesterfield grabbed my hand and clasped tightly as he looked at the screen in absolute dread.

The video—or rather, the video of the “film” (for it was, it appeared to me, shot on 35 mm black and white celluloid)—started with a sequence of three old-fashioned title pages of the type once used for dialogue on silent films. They said: In an effort to birth a grand new cultus, ‘the synthesis of all persecuted beliefs’. . . .

. . . the Grand Chaplain of the Temple Militia remarried Our Father to the Great Mother. . . .

Together they engendered a child destined to upset the order of the Aeons.

The son became the Sun, the Sun became Our Father. Then he married the Great Mother again.

The next scenes are hard to describe, because they are so awful. I shall do so matter-of-factly, because that’s all I can do.

First, we saw a group of boys, ages spanning from ten to twelve. They were all wearing suits and ties and smoking cigarettes on some steps outside. The shot widened to show the now-familiar statue of Anteros at Piccadilly Circus, with the sign for the Eros Cinema visible in the background. Then there was another title page.

Enticed by the promised revelation of love’s mysteries, the Easter Fool stumbles down the rabbit hole into the lair of counter-love.

In the next shot, framed up on the boys again, an adult white male hand emerged from screen left holding a copy of *Playboy Magazine*. The cover featured the back of the head of a white rabbit who was watching a woman in a blue dress smiling in front of a film camera. When the kids saw the magazine, their faces lit up as they grabbed at it excitedly. The one on the left got his hands on it first.

Then the adult hand holding it started moving over to the right, with the child following along. At that point, the film abruptly cut to the next title page, which said:

The fish has been caught, and is dragged down to Hades.

This cut to a shot of a bust of the Roman god Serapis, a.k.a. Hades, Dispater or Pluto, with his traditional *modius* (a grain-measuring basket) on top of his head. This was set against a dark background. Next, there was a wider shot of the head, showing that it was sitting on top of a crumbling column. This was followed by a shot with an even broader frame, revealing that the column was part of the decayed foundation of an ancient rectangular building now in ruins.

There were never more than two or three stones stacked up in any one place, so no part of it was more than three feet high. But it looked like it was set up inside of larger, more modern windowless room, with a metal-plated light switch visible on the wall. Beneath the dilapidated stones one could see, in places, a tiled checkerboard floor.

Laying down on his back across a row of these ancient blocks was the same boy lured by the magazine in the previous scene. He was now naked, blindfolded, and screaming hysterically. Two figures in hooded black robes with black bird masks were holding him by the hands and feet as he flailed.

The camera then zoomed in to focus just on them. Next, a figure in a leather veil and apron, just like the two men I had seen in the basement of Stratford House, stepped into the scene. Meanwhile, a third figure, again wearing a black bird mask, held a stone bowl beneath the boy's crotch and used a white-gloved hand to hold the genitals up about a finger's width.

The butcher then brandished a pair of cleavers. The camera zoomed in to the child's sex organs, which were snipped off. Huge amounts of blood, as well as the parts themselves, were collected in the bowl before the camera finally cut away from the gaping wound and thrashing limbs to a black screen.

At this point, Chesterfield paused the video as I ran to the bathroom to vomit. I wretched and wretched until nothing but bile was coming up. Thankfully, nobody else was using the other stalls, and the facilities were quite tidy. There's nothing worse than puking in a dirty public toilet.

Once again, I thanked the Lord for small favors. Something about being on my knees in front of the "throne" made me want to pray. I noticed that I had a tendency to do this, and this only, as my expression of religion.

Why didn't I thank God when I survived the kidnapping and the bull sacrifice? I wondered. *And why didn't I pray for my own safety throughout the entire event, or before? Why don't I pray for God to get me out of this mess right now?*

And there it was. I stood there in front of the bathroom mirror wondering why I wasn't taking a particular course of action.

It hardly even amounts to action in the physical sense, I thought. *Unless you actually choose to kneel down while praying, or to speak your prayer out loud, which most people don't even do these days.*

Not only that, I thought. A *real religious person would have prayed for others too. Prayed for the boy in the film, and others who were victimized* *like him.*

Prayed that the perpetrators be brought to justice. Maybe they would even pray that the guilty ones come to realize their evil and ask for forgiveness before it was too late.

But I just stood there staring at myself, trying to use my thumb to wipe away the eye liner that had smeared due to the perspiration that came with vomiting.

If you think about it though, I could have been more cowardly. Not once did I think about running away from this entire sordid affair. I was under no obligation to continue my involvement. I could have gone straight to the airport and insisted they move up my departure date, since I still had the tickets for the flight home.

Instead, I returned to the table and sat back down next to Agent Chesterfield. I asked him if there was more on the video.

“Sadly, yes,” he answered.

I asked him if I really needed to see it. He said it “might be helpful.” So I agreed. I took a few more minutes to finish my whiskey and beer. Then we continued.

The next scene showed the bowl with the gore in it being placed by gloved hands with robed arms upon an altar that was shown sitting among the same ruins. There were two other bowls that were similar, but empty, sitting on top of the altar as well. The next shot showed the sides of the altar. One featured a tree from which hung two flutes and a *tympanum*—the ceremonial hand drum used in the rites of Cybele—was hung, along with two pipes.

The relief on the other side of the altar showed two of her *Galli* priests, wearing their traditional Phrygian hats. They were carrying a coffer on poles mounted on their shoulders, just like the Ark of the Covenant was depicted as being carried. On top of the box was the Hetoimasiac throne of the goddess, depicted in aniconic form with a *cista*—a ritual basket—placed as a stand-in for the invisible goddess.

I instantly recognized this as a genuine altar of Cybele that once belonged to a wealthy gentleman in London at the turn of the twentieth century, whereabouts now unknown. I had read about it recently in the JSTOR archives while doing research for an article I had published in an anthropology journal. I knew there was another side to it, not shown in the film, which depicted the goddess standing with a bowl in her hand while two *Galli* stood at either side of her. Both were shown crossing their legs uncomfortably, just like the Templar effigies on the graves at Temple Church.

Next, the film showed the gloved hands straining the organs out of the blood in the bowl with a slotted ladle. They were then placed in two other bowls: the penis in one, the testicles in the other. The hands then lifted each bowl, one at a time, while another pair of gloved hands appeared from off screen and placed a small, form-fitting basket beneath each one. Following this, the baskets, with the bowls still inside, were covered with a wicker lid so that each one now resembled the basketed *cista* that were depicted on top of the throne shown in relief on the side of the altar.

After that, the second set of hands gave the first pair an ancient-looking cylindrical metal casket, about four inches tall and two inches in circumference. It was decorated with dilapidated scenes of men fighting with various wild animals.

It was carried by a metal chain that it hung from.

The first pair of hands took off the top of the casket, which remained hanging from the chain. They then removed a small ball made of metal wire, dripping wet, which hung on a chain of its own and contained a dark substance. I figured it was a strainer containing herbs of some sort. The hands poured liquid that looked like murky water from the casket into the bowl with the blood while the second set of hands held the basket lid up.

Then a more modern-looking metal bucket with a handle was given to the first pair of hands by the second pair. It contained a clear, thick, slimy substance that appeared to be fat, which was poured into the bowl with the blood. Then a large metal spoon came into the shot from screen right, and was used to stir the contents of the bowl.

Following this, the film cut to another shot. The camera was pointing down at the bowl in the basket, with the lid off and the spoon still in it, which now appeared to be sitting on one of the ruined walls. Then, three erect and circumcised adult white penises appeared from off screen. Three large white male hands, ungloved, were seen masturbating them. After almost a minute, all three penises had ejaculated into the bowl, one right after the other, with only a few seconds in-between each climax. The penises then left the screen. Gloved hands appeared again to stir the mixture with the spoon and place the basket lid back on.

The subsequent shot showed what was unmistakably the Mete coffer, sitting there on the antique stone bricks stacked next to the altar. The lid with the picture of Mete was removed by one set of gloved hands, and the three baskets were placed inside by another pair. The lid of the coffer was carefully replaced.

Then came a title page which read:

We process in the paterns [sic] of the Sun-runner.

In the next shot, four figures in dark robes with hoods and black bird masks were seen circumambulating an old building with a gurney mounted on their backs and the coffer riding on top. In front of them was another hooded figure, shorter than the others, with a white veil draped over his or her face, and held on by an attached headband. This person was holding a small metal aspergillum and was using it to spray lustrations onto the building as they walked around it. Then we were given a wide shot, and we could see the building they were walking around, topped with a large dome. I thought it was most likely St. Paul’s Cathedral there in London. They walked around it seven times.

Then the scene changed, and we saw them walking along a street in London, next to a building with a tiny metal grate embedded in its corner. The camera focused on the grate as the people with the coffer walked past. The short veiled person stayed behind and shook the aspergillum at the grate, behind which we could see a small, roughly-hewn, somewhat square white stone, about half a foot wide and a few inches tall.

Then the shot changed to show the group marching along the Thames.

They were walking next to a building positioned right on the shore of the river with two wooden ramps leading out of a large opening on the side facing the water. This led down to a couple of small boats that were docked right next to it.

The shot was head-on as the entourage walked forward.

This cut quickly to a shot inside one of the boats. The coffer could be seen sitting in the foreground without the gurney or its holders. It was sitting on top of one end of a mid-tone-colored blanket folded in half. A gloved hand on a robed arm folded the other end of the blanket over the coffer.

Next, the camera raised up. All we could see above the sides of the boat was sky, but we could tell when the boat started moving from the change in the clouds. Then we saw it turn left and go underneath something. Suddenly everything went dark. Then there was another title page. It said: Sacrifice to the guardians of the tower.

In the next shot, a metal cage with several black crow-like birds was shown.

Another gloved hand reached for the lock and opened the cage. Then one of the basketed *cista* was shown sitting on grass in front of a park bench.

The shot widened, and we saw the birds standing in the surrounding grass, pecking at the inside of the basket. Then it was opened, and the contents—

bloody bits of flesh (presumably the sacrificed testicles)—were emptied out onto the grass. All of the birds immediately converged upon them and began eating them.

As the birds walked away with the meat in their beaks, a gloved hand came onscreen holding a shovel with a handle about three feet long. It was pushed into the dirt beneath the grass. Then the shot widened to show a man (judging by the shoes) in a black robe with a sun face mask pressing down the shovel with his foot to insert it deeper.

Next we were shown a stone effigy of a tomb with the stone rolled out, standing empty. We could tell it was an effigy when the camera panned up quickly to show a cross mounted above. There was a dove winging its way down to the bottom of the cross, and two angels kneeling in prayer on either side of it.

Then the camera panned down and showed a close-up of the tombstone.

On it were etched the words "Why seek ye the living among the dead?" Then the thumb of a wrinkled white male hand came forward from behind the camera and covered up the word "Why."

In the following shot, a young, barely-pubescent girl wearing an Easter dress and bonnet was shown holding hands with a finely-dressed man and woman whose faces were not shown. The first shot showed mostly just her. In the second, we saw the group from behind. They appeared to be at a church, as pews and a statue of the Virgin could be seen in the background of the second shot.

The girl looked very sad. Quite inappropriately, she seemed to be wearing make-up on her face. She had eyeliner, eye shadow, and lipstick on. Her face was made pale with cake foundation. After this shot, another title page was shown, which said:

The Sacred Marriage of the Stone and the Bosse.

The next image was filmed looking through the front windshield of a car driving through a gateway underneath a medieval-looking archway. It was very tall, with one large arch in the middle, through which the car drove. Then there were two more narrow openings on either side, only wide enough for foot traffic, or perhaps a bicycle.

There was a structure on top almost as tall as the arch itself. It featured two statues, each set inside of a niche, and between them a stained-glass window.

Extending outward on either side were tall hedges, and behind these, an even taller black metal fence. The two smaller archways were barred by metal gates of the same style, but the gate for the large one in the middle was set open.

It was raining, and the wipers were on as the car went under the arch.

Beyond was a driveway lined with trees. We saw the car go down the driveway to a very large red-bricked manor house.

This cut to the interior of a decayed medieval-looking stone room with a small round window showing only darkness beyond. Two hooded people, this time wearing lion masks, stood on either side of the window holding torches, which appeared to be providing the light. The camera pointed down. There, the same girl from the scene before was now shown standing in a white robe, shivering and crying. Eyeliner streamed down her face while two people with robes and bird masks held her by the arms.

Another man then stepped into the picture, also wearing a dark robe, but with a sun mask. He was holding a staff that ended in the shape of a small erect phallus. The staff was dark, but the phallus was light-colored. The girl was forced by the people in the bird masks to bend down on one knee before the man in the sun mask, and to hold her hands in front of her in an attitude of prayer. The people in the bird masks demonstrated to her how she was to hold her hands.

Then afterwards she sat there pleading and sobbing for a few seconds, another title page came up.

See the Virgin genuflect to Our Father.

We then were shown a close-up of the girl’s face as the sun-man put the phallus-wand directly up to her lips. She turned away in disgust. I noticed that it looked almost as though it were covered with actual human skin, and I wondered if it was.

Next, we saw the phallus-wand’s tip submerged into one of the basketed *cista*, shown sitting on the floor. The wand was used to stir the mixture of blood, fat and herbs, which now looked quite congealed. The natural lubricant caused the dildo to glisten in the torchlight. Following that, there was a shot from the side of the girl lying on her stomach on a blanket on the ground with the top of her head butted up against a roughly-hewn, vaguely square-shaped stone.

The poor girl screamed and balled her hands up into tight fists as the man in the sun mask knelt behind her. He inserted the wand into her rectum, much to her extreme agony, pushing and pulling it several times. Her pain then seemed to increase immensely when he mounted her and replaced the wand with his own swollen member. As she screamed, we saw the girl’s head repeatedly bang up against the stone which, I noticed, resembled the one seen earlier in the film sitting behind a grate in the corner of a building. Then came another title page:

“The sacred womb is seeded with the ancient rite. Afterwards, an Easter egg is laid upon the chamber floor.”

The last shot was horrifying and disgusting beyond measure. While I regret to have to disturb you further, dear reader, these things must be said. What we saw was a tight shot of a string of beads covered in dark slime being pulled by an off-screen gloved hand from a swollen, prolapsed and distended anus. The beads were white and carved from either stone, ivory, or some form of bone.

Between each set of ten round beads (yes, I counted), there was a bead carved into the shape of either a hand or a foot, for a total of four. At the end of the string there was one made to look like a Janus head, with the face of Jesus on one side, and the face of a skull on the other. After this came out, a large black mass which I presumed to be bloody stool began to emerge amid profuse bleeding. But before it took any discernible shape, the film mercifully ended.

When the final, awful shot at last faded to black, I was in shock. I was also flushed and sweating heavily as another wave of nausea overtook me. I went to the bathroom to empty my stomach again.

Chapter 13: Raven Conspiracy

The weeping child could not be heard,

The weeping parents wept in vain;

They stripp’d him to his little shirt,

And bound him in an iron chain;

And burn’d him in a holy place,

Where many had been burn’d before:

The weeping parents wept in vain.

Are such things done on Albion’s shore?

— William Blake, “A Little Boy Lost” from *Songs of Experience*

After a few minutes I returned to the table to join Chesterfield, who was sitting there looking sad and sick.

“So what have you figured out so far about it?” I asked

“Well, several things,” he answered. He appeared to perk up at the thought of doing something practical to solve the problem. He took a fancy red ceramic pen and a small notepad with a black leather cover out of his jacket pocket. Then he opened the notebook and used the pen to enumerate items on a list he had made.

“First, we think it was shot in 1950s. That’s what we presume from the

‘Teddy boy’ style of dress worn by the kids in the opening scene. The *Playboy Magazine* is from March 1956. That’s also the last year that Easter fell on April first, which will happen again this year, in three days.”

“So that’s the meaning of the reference to Easter and the ‘April fool?’”

“Yes,” he said. “Unless you can add some occult wisdom about the significance too.”

I thought about it. “The only thing I can think of to add right now is that the New Year used to be celebrated on March 25th in medieval Europe, around the Spring Equinox.”

“Ah yes, the Feast of the Annunciation, when Mary was impregnated by God. Or ‘Lady Day,’ as we call it in the Church of England,” said Chesterfield. I continued.

“Yes, and it was part of a week-long festival that would end on April first. So when the New Year began to be celebrated on the first of January, those who still clung to the old dates for the holiday were called ‘April fools.’”

“Hmm. So April Fool’s Day is part of a festival connected to the old New Year’s Day, which just so happens to come one day after that “Day of Blood” for the goddess Cybele that you told me about, where they would castrate the priests.”

“Yes,” I said. “In imitation of what Cybele did to her own son Attis. She forced him to be her lover. Then when he predictably fell in love with a younger woman, she got mad and castrated him while he was tied to a tree, so that he bled out and died. But then she felt guilty afterwards and decided to resurrect him. That’s why the resurrection of Attis was celebrated the next day, March 25, by the eunuch priests of the Cybele cult.”

“On Lady Day?” he asked, incredulous.

“Indeed,” I replied. “And this of course is all connected to the symbolism of Easter, obviously. Death and resurrection of the sun god. Attis often had a crown of sun rays, just like Christ has a sun halo.”

Chesterfield raised his eyebrows, and then opened hs notebook again.

“We’ve also figured out several of the locations shown in film. Now here’s where it gets really disturbing.”

“How could it be any more disturbing than it already is?” I asked.

“When you realize where these places are and who would have had access to them, you will see what I mean. First, there’s that building they were walking around. That’s St. Paul’s Cathedral.”

“I thought as much,” I said. “I saw the dome.”

“It’s always been open to the public, yes,” said Chesterfield. “But why did they feel so comfortable walking around dressed up in those bizarre costumes

with a box containing the severed genitals of a kidnapped boy? It seemed like they were out early in the morning."

"Yeah, and the box they were carrying was the Mete coffer I was telling you about," I added. "The one that Leopold said had been stolen from the museum."

At this, Chesterfield was very surprised.

"So you mean they borrowed it back in 1956, then put it back, and someone stole it again this year, right before the next April Fool's Easter?" he suggested.

"It appears that way," I said. "Also, I'm pretty sure the altar they used is a real ancient Roman Cybele altar. Someone wrote about it in this old antiquarian journal." I opened up the PDF that I had downloaded from JSTOR on my laptop, and showed him that the altar had once been owned by a Mr. G.A. Warren of Streatham Hill, London, in 1892, though nobody was sure where it came from or where it went to after that. The pictures of the item matched up perfectly with what we had seen in the film.

“So we’re dealing with a network of ancient artifact collectors, thieves and borrowers that has been operating in London in continuity for at least 62 years, possibly much longer,” he said. “And they’ve been using these artifacts in rituals where children are raped, tortured and mutilated. Good God.” He shook his head.

Then he continued.

“The archway that the car is seen driving through--that’s Temple Bar itself.”

I gasped. *The former entryway to the old City of London, right here in the Temple district!* I thought.

“Isn’t that right in this neighborhood, next to Temple Church?” I asked.

“It used to be near here,” said Chesterfield. “But in 1880 it was sold to Henry Meux, a brewer, who brought it out to his mansion in Hertfordshire, a place called Theobald Park.”

He showed me a website with recent pictures of the interior of the building.

“That’s where they raped the girl!” I exclaimed, shocked. It was clearly the same place, with the same little round window and peeling stone walls.

“Right,” said Chesterfield. “He bought it on the advice of his wife, Valerie Meux, who was a famous socialite and antiquities collector. There’s actually a little chamber within the upper part of the archway, and they say Lady Meux used to have dinner parties there with King Edward VII and Winston Churchill.” He showed me the Wikipedia page, which confirmed these statements.

“Wow,” I said. “She must have been really important.”

“Strangely, yes,” he answered. “When she died, widowed and childless, she left Theobald Park, and indeed her entire estate, to a young man in the Royal Navy whom she’d just met, named Hedworth Lambdon. He had to change his last name to Meux to satisfy the terms of the will. Later the property became a secondary school, which it would have still been at the time this film was shot.

Now it’s a De Vere hotel.”

“So someone who worked at the school must have been involved,” I said.

“It seems that way,” he agreed.

“What about the ruins where the boy was castrated?” I asked.

“Don’t know,” he said. “We’re still working on that.”

“Then what about facial recognition of the kids in the film?” I said. He shook his head.

“They don’t match up with any face of any child reported missing from that time period,” he replied. “Nor do they match with any face of any child that has yet been uploaded to the internet anywhere in the world. So we have a team of people scanning the yearbooks from all the surrounding schools for the era in question, hoping to find a match. And if we had photos of adults to compare them to, our computers could tell us whether or not they are the same people, within an infinitesimally small margin of error. But we would need at least a clue as to where to look.”

“So you think the kids might have survived after this?” I asked.

“I don’t know, I hope,” he replied. “But from what you told me, it sounds like at least the castration victim may be dead. Bled out like Attis, as you say. Plus that’s how these kid sex crimes usually end.”

“Yeah, but in her cult they survived to become her priests. And it was voluntary, or so they say.”

“What about the stone behind the metal grate in the side of the building?” I asked. “The one that they were sprinkling with holy water?”

“That’s the London Stone,” said Chesterfield. “It’s actually one of our most important historic relics, but it’s been largely forgotten. It used to be the center-point from which everything else in the city was measured. Until recently, it was actually stored in the corner of a building on Cannon Street, just as you saw. Now it’s in the Museum of London. Nobody ever talks about it. But some people think it’s the stone that Arthur pulled the Excalibur sword from.”

“Oh yes, I’ve heard of this,” I said. “It *is* amazing how little it’s talked about.

But John Dee, the court astrologer for Queen Elizabeth I, believed that it had magical powers. He even moved to Cannon Street to be near it.” Chesterfield laughed.

“I didn’t know that. But I *did* know about Dee. He was much more than a court astrologer. He was the first 007. He did all sorts of shady special ops on Her Majesty’s Secret Service. The folks at SIS consider him a godfather of sorts.”

This was amazing to hear from a person in Chesterfield’s position.

“I’ve heard that before,” I said. “But I wasn’t sure if I should take the claim seriously. Now I *have* to believe it.”

I looked up the London Stone on Wikipedia to refresh my memory. I found a picture of it sitting behind the grating in the recess that used to house it.

Then I did a Google search, and landed on a poem in Middle English from 1521 called “The Marriage of London Stone and the Boss of Billingsgate.” This was the same phrase used on one of the title pages in the horrible film!

“Uh, Chesterfield, look at this ,” I said.

“I know,” he replied. “I’ve seen it. We found it when we analyzed the film.

But I don’t fully understand the significance of the poem, or why its title was used in the film. However, the building next to the River Thames with the boats docked next to it was Billingsgate, the fish market. *Old* Billingsgate, before they moved it to Canary Wharf on the Isle of Dogs.”

I looked up “Bosse of Billingsgate” next, and landed on a sample on Google Play Books from a recent work called *The Secret Lore of London* by Iain Sinclair.

There, it was explained that the "Bosse" was actually a phallus which in pre-Christian days had been venerated as a form of the "Great Mother" goddess Britomart, after whom Britain was named.

Another Great Mother, just like Cybele, I thought to myself. *And only a hermaphrodite goddess like Cybele could be represented with a phallus.*

I read on. I learned that until the seventeenth century the Bosse had stood there at the gate of Belin (now Billingsgate), believed to provide protection. It was named after Belinus, who, as I recalled, was an ancient king of the Britons, as well as a Celtic sun god, thought by many to equate with the Babylonian Baal.

Orientalist L.A. Waddell had argued in his book *The British Edda* from 1930 that there was a single person behind the myths of all three figures.

Baal, in turn, was analogous to Attis. Like Attis, Baal was a victim who played essentially the same role with the goddess Inanna (a.k.a. Ishtar) that Attis did in the Cybele cult. The anniversary of her murder of her own son/husband, for the exact same reason that Cybele killed Attis (erotic jealousy), was observed as a holiday of morning by her worshippers, as it was with Cybele's. Likewise, Baal's resurrection was celebrated joyously a few days afterwards. This took place during the Spring Equinox, which was also their New Year's Day, morphing eventually into the European holiday of Easter, which was named after Ishtar/Inanna.

There in Mesopotamia, her priests were called the *Gallu,* almost the exact same word as the title of Cybele's priests, the *Galli*. It's derived from the Sumerian word "gal," meaning "cup" or "vagina." The *Gallu*, just like the *Galli*, were also castrated and dressed as women. In both cults, the priests were actually considered women from this point on, and addressed as such.

The Babylonian equinox rites also included the sacrifice of the Celestial Bull, Gugalanna, just like Cybele was honored with the *taurobolium,* a bull sacrifice in which her priests were completely drenched in the blood of the victim. This was performed in Cybele's specially-outfitted slaughterhouse temples, known as *metroons*, after her title “Magna Mater” (“Great Mother”).

Could this ‘metroon’ be what that one guy at the Butchers meeting meant when I thought I heard him say the words ‘Meth room’? I wondered.

Then I remembered that a couple of years ago, Oxford University had created a 2/3 scale copy of the arch from the Temple of Baal in Palmyra, Syria after ISIS had destroyed the original, and had the replica erected in Trafalgar Square in London during the Autumnal Equinox of 2016. I recalled that the original had been blown up right after the Spring Equinox of that same year, which I pointed out during an interview on a paranormal radio talk show, *Ground Zero with Clyde Lewis.*

At the time, Mr. Lewis and I had talked about the fact that the Islamic State’s original name, which the Western media still insisted on using, was identical to that of Isis, the Egyptian word for the goddess same goddess as Inanna and Ishtar. Amazingly, while I was sitting there at the pub in England reading more about Isis, I stumbled upon information that the portion of the River Thames that flows through Oxford is actually called “the Isis.” Thus one of the university’s rowing teams has the same name as the Egyptian goddess, and the Islamic State.

This got me thinking about the origin of the name “Thames,” so I looked that up too. There are theories circulating that it might have come from any of a number of words from various languages that all denote the concept of darkness.

But nobody’s certain.

As for the River Isis, some old maps have the entire river labeled with that name. A few historians have suggested that it was just a truncation of the Latin name for the river, “Tamesis.” But then there were people saying that there was a temple of Isis in roman London located on the banks of the river near the present-day on ramp to London Bridge.

So then it makes sense for the river to be named after her, I thought.

Then I remembered Tammuz, another Semitic name (derived from the Sumerian “Dumuzid”) for the figure of Baal, the sacrificed son of Inanna/Ishtar.

Is that the possible origin of ‘Thames’? I wondered. *If the river from its source to Dorchester was once called ‘Isis’ after the Great Mother, maybe the river from there to its mouth was named after her castrated zombie son and consort.* It seemed like a reasonable thesis, and when I Googled it in the form of a question, I found the writings of many who agreed with me.

My head was reeling with all these connections. Then I read more about the Bosse of Billingsgate in the “Secret London” book. It said: The local porters would insist on passers-by kissing the Bosse or else they picked them up and bumped them on the seat against the stone.

I figured this was a sanitized version.

In other words, anal rape with the sacred dildo would at least be simulated, I thought. *Or worse, not simulated*.

I showed my findings to Chesterfield. Now we understood, at least in part, the symbolism of the anal rape “marriage” ceremony we had witnessed.

“I think that the London Stone was used in the rape scene,” I said. “It was the square rock that they kept knocking her head against.”

“I know,” said Chesterfield.

“So that means they somehow had access to it,” I noted.

“Yes,” he replied curtly. I suppose I was stating the obvious.

“Also, the goddess Cybele was symbolized by a stone,” I added. “She was worshiped in the form of a black meteorite in Rome. I’ve even seen claims that the Kaaba stone in Mecca is actually the Cybele stone.”

Chesterfield was silent. His arms were folded in front of him. He was angry and depressed. I reviewed the scenes in my mind, trying not to dwell on the suffering I had witnessed. Instead I focused only on the objects, the places, and the symbols involved. Then I remembered what became of the boy’s testicles in the film.

“What about the birds in the cages?” I said. “The ones that were fed with the … meat?”

“Yes, that might be the most disturbing, really. Those are the famous ravens of the Tower of London.”

“What are those?” I asked.

“You don’t know?” he said. “Nine ravens are always kept at the Tower of London. It’s been going on for hundreds of years. There’s a legend that if there aren’t at least six ravens on site at any given moment, the kingdom will fall. You haven’t heard this before?”

“No,” I answered.

“Well the thing is, those birds are guarded at all times. It’s a matter of national defense. The only way anybody could get access to them would be if the Raven-Master allowed it.”

I Googled this term and, sure enough, found a video of the current Raven-Master, dressed like the guy on the Beefeater vodka bottle. He was feeding nine birds with clipped wings in the very same park where we had watched their predecessors eating what might have been the raw testicles of a young boy.

“So it’s looking like a rather large conspiracy then,” I said.

“Is that a joke?” said Chesterfield. “I’m really not in the mood for jokes right now.”

“It’s just a term for a criminal collusion,” I said. “By definition that’s a conspiracy, even if it doesn’t involve people in the government, which this clearly does.” I was so sick of the way in which intelligence agencies use the term

“conspiracy theory” (a phrase actually invented by the CIA for this very purpose).

They made it a term of derision that could be used to belittle anyone who tries to figure out what they and their deep state accomplices are up to.

“Oh,” said Chesterfield, still looking dour. “I thought you were referring to the fact that a group of ravens is called a ‘conspiracy.’ Like a ‘murder of crows.’”

“They are?” I thought that was hilarious, yet I dared not laugh. “But aren’t ravens the same as crows?”

“They're in the same family,” he replied gloomily.

“So where’s the estate where the Temple Bar was moved to?” I asked.

“It’s a bit far out,” he answered. “But anyway, it’s not there anymore. It was moved back to the City of London a few years ago.”

“Really?” I said. “Where is it now?”

“Oh, it’s over in Paternoster Square now, in front of St. Paul’s,” said an older brunette woman standing in front of our table. She was wearing a white apron over a pink dress with a name tag that said “Mary.” She worked for the pub.

Chesterfield and I both jumped in our seats. We hadn’t realized that anyone was standing there.

“Sorry to startle you,” she said. “I just wanted to let you know that we’re closing the kitchen for the night. But we still have two hours ‘til last call.”

“That’s alright,” said Chesterfield. “I think we’re done drinking here anyway, and I’m certain we won’t be hungry for awhile.” He started shutting down my computer.

“They just moved the Temple of Mithras too,” Mary said. “It’s going to be right down the street from St. Paul’s. It’s opening tomorrow.”

“Excuse me, did you just say ‘the Temple of Mithras’?’” I asked.

“Yep,” she said. “It used to be out there at Temple Court, on Queen Victoria Street. But then someone bought it, dug it up, and moved it to the new plaza they’re building on Walbrook, next to the Mansion House.”

“You mean the Mansion House where the Lord Mayor lives?” asked Chesterfield.

“The very same,” said the waitress.

Mary left and we began to pack up our things. I reminded Chesterfield that the word ‘Meth room,’ had been used in the divination meeting at Oriental Club.

“Maybe he was saying *mithraeum*, I suggested. “That’s the Latin word for a temple of Mithras. I didn’t even know London had a Mithras temple, or else I might have thought about that. But it’s also strange that *mithraeum* is so similar to *metroon*, the name for a Cybele temple. I wonder if there’s a connection.”

Then as I turned around to pick up my coat, I noticed a person watching me in the window of the building directly across the street— *not* the former Bank of England building, but another one to the east of it on the opposite side of the corner of Chancery Lane and Fleet. As soon as I caught sight of the figure, it disappeared.

The room across the street was too dark for me to see any details. I wondered how long he or she had been watching us, as well as how clearly the details of my computer screen might have been from that view, since our table was well-lit. This remained on my mind as we exited the tavern and walked out into the brisk night air.

Chapter 14: Rerouting…

Many roads Thou hast fashioned: all of them lead to the Light.

— Rudyard Kipling, “The Song of Mithras” from *Puck of Pook’s Hill*

I wasn’t sure what Chesterfield had in mind for me next. But I intended to tell him that I was too physically exhausted to continue for the night. He seemed annoyed about something. I couldn’t help worrying that it wasn’t just the disturbing investigation, but actually me that was pissing him off. I was just about to open my mouth about this when a familiar black Vauxhall Astra Elite pulled up right in front of us. The tinted driver’s side window rolled down.

“Car service!” Agent Paris called out to us.

“Where did he come from?” I asked Chesterfield.

“He called while you were in the toilets,” Chesterfield replied. “He offered to pick us up. But you’re welcome to walk back to the tube station by yourself if you want. As for me, I’m freezing my arse off!” He rushed over to back car door and opened it, then stepped aside.

“Are you coming?” he asked. I got in. This time, he closed the door and then got into the front passenger seat instead of sitting next to me.

“Thanks for the ride, Parvin,” he told his partner.

“Parvin? Is that your first name?” I asked Agent Paris. “I know a lady at the British Museum with almost the same name.”

“It’s a common Persian name for both men and women, with several variants,” he answered. “It’s Farsi for the Pleaides.”

“Oh,” I said. “That’s interesting. Say, would you mind dropping me off at the Regent Palace?” Chesterfield turned around and stared at me incredulously.

“You seriously want to go back to the Regent Palace?” he said. “That place is a dump! And the Worshipful Butchers know your room number. It’s not safe!”

“Well, I don’t have anywhere else to sleep,” I said. And I can’t stay awake much longer.” I would have gleefully laid down on just about any horizontal surface right then.

“Chesterfield and I were wondering if you’d like to have a slumber party at his place tonight,” said Paris. The car fell absolutely silent. I was sure there was a punchline coming. After an awkward minute, I felt I had to say something.

“Well, I’m not normally in the habit of having slumber parties with groups of men that I’ve just met.” I set it up and waited for the punchline. *Knock knock, who’s there?* Finally, Chesterfield responded.

“And we *are normally* in the habit of having people we want to interrogate arrested, then held without formal charges for as long as legally possible. But we thought we’d get more cooperation from you if we approached it in a more friendly manner. Besides, aren’t you curious? Don’t you want to help with the investigation, to see where it leads? It’s directly related to your Templar research, isn’t it? And haven’t we already figured out so many amazing things together?”

He turned around to face the front, but Paris continued with the argument.

“We need your help solving this case, Pamela. There are sensitive details that we can’t make public which are so bizarre and arcane that only an expert like you could us help analyze them. And really, there aren’t any other experts like you—not in your particular subjects.”

“Look, honestly, if you want my help, let me return home tomorrow, and we can correspond through email,” I said. “I’m not doing this off the books anymore, and I’m certainly not going with you guys to Chesterfield’s apartment.”

“You’re in this whether you like it or not,” Chesterfield rebutted. “You are connected to the *fake* Baron of Alphamstone, to whose apartments in Chancery Lane we traced the transmission of the child porn and torture video you and I just watched at the Old Cock Tavern. And that video showed children being raped and mutilated. So now we think this might have been done by the same people who you say kidnapped you and forced you to watch the killing of an animal.

Therefore, if you don’t want to help us find the people that did these things, and bring them to justice, to stop them from hurting anyone else, I’ve got to assume it’s because you haven’t told me the truth, in which case you’re not a victim, you’re an accomplice.”

“Wait a minute,” I said. “You traced the origin of the video? So the anonymous tip page wasn’t really anonymous?”

“Of course not, don’t be stupid,” said Chesterfield. Paris studied my reaction in the rearview mirror as he turned through a roundabout.

“And you traced it to Chancery Lane, that same street that we walked down to get to the pub at Temple?”

“Yes, and of course you know who lives there.”

“I don’t know anything about it,” I answered. “You said Aleister Crowley used to live there. That’s all I know.”

“Oh, so Leopold Black never gave you the address to his apartment next to the silver vaults?” Chesterfield asked, not believing me. As he spoke I noted that we were coincidentally going right by the silver vaults on Chancery Lane once again before turning west on High Holborn.

“I assumed that he lived in Alphamstone in some grand estate!” I said. “I obviously didn’t know anything about him that was actually true. I told you that!”

“And now we’re telling you that he’s involved in making these child torture films, in addition to everything else we’ve told you about him,” said Agent Paris.

“Doesn’t that make you want to help us stop him?”

“Yes,” I said. “But why do we have to do it at Chesterfield’s house? Surely that’s not MI5 procedure.”

“Well, MI5 may have been decapitated tonight, or else, it is thoroughly compromised,” Paris answered. “And nobody outside the agency knows it yet, except you.”

“What do you mean?” I said, thoroughly confused. “Explain.”

“For some reason, our Director, Mr. Pindar, made a special request to interview Thomas Weir personally in the basement of the Old Bailey, right after he was booked and about to be transferred to a holding cell. Then the two disappeared shortly thereafter.”

“So Leopold is on the loose right now?” I said. “And he’s kidnapped the Director?” For some reason I couldn’t stop calling that man by his fake name.

“Either that or they’re both in on it, which is what I suspect,” answered Paris. “So do you understand why it isn’t safe for you to go back to the hotel, or back home, or for us to have you interrogated through the normal channels? We have to figure out what’s going on by ourselves, or else none of us are safe. And who knows what the bad guys are going to do next, or who else may be in danger.”

“Isn’t that an extreme accusation?” I said.

“We’ve had Russian agents directing both MI5 & MI6 before,” said Chesterfield. “I don’t see why these occult weirdos, whatever they are, couldn’t worm their way into that den of vipers as well.”

I assumed he was talking about the allegations from the best-selling 1980s book *Spycatcher*, claiming that Roger Hollis had been a Russian spy when he served as MI5 Director General in the 50s and 60s. The author believed that Hollis and many others were in league with the infamous Cambridge Five spy ring that had already been caught and defected. Of course, these allegations had in no way ever been proven, as Chesterfield had implied. But I wasn’t going to argue with him. He was probably right anyway.

“So how did they disappear from the prison?” I asked. “How many others are in on it?”

“The number of accomplices is unknown, but it needn’t have been very many. All that was required was a few dumb cops following orders without question. Turns out there's a trap door in the floor of the Old Bailey's basement that leads to the sewers, out of which they disappeared."

"So is anybody looking for them?" I asked.

"Yeah, we've got cops and other agents up to their necks in shit looking underneath the City for them, but so far nothing," said Paris. "They really could be anywhere by now. Our guys let an hour pass for this *interrogation* before anybody checked on them." He was obviously disgusted.

Just then, the cell phones of both agents rang at the same time. They had different ringtones. It was a jarring cacophony. They both answered, received some sort of shocking news, and then looked at each other in horror before hanging up. Paris abruptly turned his vehicle around and changed the destination on his GPS.

"Where are we going now? What's going on?" I demanded. Chesterfield turned around and looked at me solemnly.

"Director Pindar's head was just found spiked to the main arch of Temple Bar at Paternoster Square," he said.

Chapter 15: Empyrean and Beyond

O Satan, my youngest born, art thou not Prince of the Starry Hosts, lo And of the Wheels of Heaven, to turn the Mills day & night?

—William Blake, *Milton*

Before I had time to absorb the news, we were already there, pulling up on Warwick Lane, right next to the monument. The area was already cordoned off with a flurry of police presence. We all got out of the car simultaneously and began to walk briskly towards the action. A woman in a mustard-colored trench coat, who seemed to know both agents, hurried towards us. She briefed them on what she knew while I stood aside. Then Paris continued to talk to her about details while Chesterfield relayed the highlights to me while.

“The head was tacked to the front,” he said, “and the body was stuffed inside the upper chamber.”

“The same location as the rape scene in the video,” I noted. Chesterfield nodded.

“They used to hang the heads of traitors on Temple Bar,” he remarked.

“So Leopold considers the Director of MI5 a traitor?” I said, thinking aloud.

“And he was able to kidnap and kill him after the man requested a private meeting with him? I thought you said he was a fake nobleman running a scam for money. How does he have the power to do this?”

“That’s what I’m trying to figure out,” he said. “In the meantime, Miss Beverly Equitone is the acting head of MI5 until a replacement is made.

Now I have no idea what side she’s on, or what the sides in this matter even are. But there’s something else I want you to see.”

He grabbed my hand and walked me over to the monument, then lifted the cordon to let me underneath. We walked to the little door in the back, sitting open and guarded by two Metropolitan police officers with bright reflective yellow jackets. Chesterfield flashed his badge and asked the cops to let us examine the crime scene, to which they both nodded in affirmation. Then we walked up the tiny stairway into the upper chamber which, Chesterfield informed me, had at one time served as a small prison.

There were three police officers in the room: a white man taking pictures, a white man dusting for fingerprints, and one white woman with green hair (the faded remnants of a punk-looking dye job), who appeared to be supervising them.

There was blood splattered on the floor. Chesterfield asked them if the body had already been removed.

“No, just the head,” said the lady cop. The body’s up there.”

She pointed up to the ceiling in the middle of the room. The body hung naked from the rafters, tied with black wire by the hands and feet so that it was curled into a circle with the stomach pointing down. In addition to the removal of the head, there was a puncture wound near the navel.

“So *that’s* how the blood got splattered like that,” said Chesterfield, apparently to himself.

“Yeah, all over the black magic symbols on the ground,” said the photographer.

“What do you mean?” I asked. I didn’t see any black magic symbols.

“You have to use blue light to see them,” he said. “450 nanometers. And I had to use a special camera to photograph it.” He flicked off the one light in the room at the switch. He handed me and Chesterfield each a pair of amber-colored goggles. Then he pointed his blue flashlight where the blood drops were. To my surprise, I did see symbols standing out, looking white in the light, written underneath the spatter.

An invisible ink had been used to create an arrangement of words, letters, and other symbols. At the top it said “To Empyrean and Beyond,” with an odd sigil

A
SATOR
AREPO
TENET
OPERA
ROTAS
Ω
Empyrean & Beyond

forming the exclamation point. It was a circle with a dot in the middle, topped with an arrow pointing upward, the astrological sign for Uranus.

Beneath this was one of the oldest magical devices used in the Western world, the Sator Square, a palindrome which goes: SATOR

AREPO

TENET

OPERA

ROTAS

The entire display took up an area of about a foot square.

“It’s all written in semen,” the photographer said.

“The invisible ink used by SIS!” said Chesterfield.

“What do you mean?” I said, waiting for an explanation.

“Yeah, what *do* you mean?” the photographer asked. The other male cop, the fingerprint collector, came closer to listen.

“Well, see,” Chesterfield continued, “it was really an inside joke. It was a reference to the fact during the First World War, when the spy service was new just then being formed, they used semen as an invisible ink for sending secret messages to each other. ‘Every man his own stylo,’ they used to say. Their director, Mansfield Cumming, came up with that himself.

“His last name was *actually* ‘Cumming’?” I said. I couldn’t help myself.

“This guy’s first name was actually ‘Côme,’” Chesterfield replied without humor, pointing to the body above us. He pronounced it like “comb.”

“It’s a French variant of the name ‘Cosmo,’” said the photographer.

“I wonder if that’s why this message was written in this medium,” the fingerprint collector interjected. “It could have been a reference to Mansfield Cumming’s invisible ink, something that would be understood only by people who work in national intelligence and security, or who are familiar with their history.”

Chesterfield shrugged his shoulder. “Who knows at this point. We assume it’s the killer’s semen, right? I mean, it doesn’t keep well, so he must have jerked off somewhere right here, don’t you think?”

“Yes, before he strung up the body,” said the fingerprint guy.

“So did you find a source pool of semen?” asked Chesterfield. “Or did he collect it in his hand, or a cup or something, before he started writing and drawing with it?”

“He collected it in the victim’s eye socket,” said the green-haired lady, who walked towards us now, looking deadpan. “The director was subjected to ‘ocular penetration.’ We found spermatic fluid around and within the left eye socket, but we haven’t yet determined if the victim was still alive when it was deposited. And the eye is missing.” Chesterfield’s eyes widened in horror.

Skullfucked, I thought. *I guess it really* does *happen. How awful.*

“Oh, I think he must have had a larger supply than just that one inkwell,”

said the fingerprint collector. “I think he brought a supply with him, kept fresh somehow. He would have needed more to do all this writing.”

While the three cops discussed this, Chesterfield pulled me back a few steps, closer to the stairwell, so that we could speak to each other directly. He lowered his voice—not to a whisper, but just enough so that we wouldn’t interrupt the others.

“What’s this about?” Chesterfield asked me, pointing to the symbols.

“It’s an ancient magic spell. The oldest one they ever found was in the ruins of Herculeaum near Vesuvius. It means ‘The ploughman Arepo works the wheels.”

But nobody knows who Arepo is, or what the whole thing means at all.

"What's it supposed to do?" he asked.

"I think it could be used for blessing or cursing, whichever you choose," I said.

I realized this was totally vague. But my mind was distracted by the other graffiti next to the magic square. On either side of it were the "Alpha" and

"Omega" symbols. Beneath the Alpha on the left was an image of a crudely-drawn penis and testicles descending into a vase. Underneath the Omega symbol there was a picture of a baby's head emerging from an identical vase.

"So I suppose the other pictures represent what happened to the boy in the movie," Chesterfield theorized. "Also, the castration, and maybe the references in the film to laying 'an Easter egg.' It could be connected to this picture of the baby hatching out of the vase, right?"

"Yes," I said. "And Empyrean is the highest chamber in Heaven, although I don't know what that weird arrow is about."

"Oh," said Chesterfield. "I thought for sure it was a quote from Buzz Lightyear."

I ignored his joke, although I had noted the similarity to the phrase "To Infinity and Beyond" as well. I also thought about the final segment of the film *2001: A Space Odyssey*, entitled "Jupiter and Beyond the Infinite," although in Arthur C. Clarke's original plans for the story, the planet named was Saturn.

"There's more," I said. "I recognize these images. They came from the Templar artifacts in the Hammer-Purgstall book—the one I had translated and published along with my own book last year."

I shook my head in an effort to snap myself back into reality. Then I dug into my phone and Google-image-searched until I found a website where some asshole had illegally uploaded a PDF of my book about Baphomet. I skimmed through the document until I found the image I was looking for.

“Here it is,” I announced. I showed him the picture of the human figure (let’s assume it’s male for the sake of grammar) sitting on an eagle. He had what looked like a dead goose or duck draped over his head, so that the bird’s neck dangled over his face, its beak lining up with his chin. Behind him, the bird’s wings were extended out, as if they were coming out of his own back.

Two identical stomach-shaped vases were depicted sitting next to the figure, one on either side. The one on the right had a baby emerging from its top, beneath an angry sun face (exactly where the Omega symbol had been substituted in the version in front of us). The vase on the left side had a crudely-drawn penis and balls descending into it beneath a crescent moon with a sad face, in the same spot where the killer had placed the Greek Alpha in his disgusting homage.

In the original line drawing in Hammer-Purgstall’s book, the genitals had been omitted. They were only restored when the picture was reprinted a few decades later in Thomas Wright’s scandalous book *Worship of the Generative Powers*, about the allegedly widespread penis-worshipping “cult of Priapus” in early Christian Europe. Wright had believed that all of the disembodied penis votives discovered throughout the continent and British Isles were part of a secret movement to worship a virile satyr with a giant schlong by venerating idols of the schlong itself. This supposed underground religion reportedly engaged in wild orgies, bacchanalias and witch sabbats where the Goat God of Lust was honored as the Devil.

All this purported veneration of male sexuality seemed to me so incongruent with the present use of this symbol by a cult that practiced emasculation, as seen on the film *Easter Sunday April Fool*. (I was assuming, of course, that there was some connection between whoever produced that film

and whoever murdered Pindar.) But, as I noted to Chesterfield, if someone believes that there's magic in men's genitals, then it isn't farfetched to imagine them removing someone else's genitals in a ritual to be used for magical purposes.

"So far we've got a secret society that does rites involving the symbols of the Templars, Cybele, Priapus… What else? It seems like a hodgepodge of nonsense," said Chesterfield. The photographer flicked the light back on as he exited down the stairs behind us.

"Well, Eliphas Levi wrote that the aim of the Templars had been to create

'the synthesis of all persecuted beliefs,' meaning a combination of all heresies and pre-Christian religions," I said. "Pope Pius IX accused them of trying to start a new religion, inspired by cabbalism, Gnosticism, and heretical beliefs about John the Baptist. Hammer-Purgstall believed that the Templars were Ophite Gnostics, or Naassenes. And Hippolytus described the Naassenes as a cult of synthesis derived from the mystery religions of Rome, but mixed with Christian heresy, including blasphemous inversions of Christian symbols and myths. He said they practiced horrible sex rites. Let me find the quote."

I Googled on my phone until I found what I needed. But it said more than I had remembered. I read it out loud:

On account of these and such like reasons, these constantly attend the mysteries called those of the Great Mother, supposing especially that they behold by means of the ceremonies performed there the entire mystery.

The succinctness of his claim stunned me. I actually took a step back in awe.

"Oh my God," I said. "The Great Mother. That's Cybele. He said that the Naassenes secretly worshiped Cybele. That means Hammer-Purgstall believed that the Templars did as well. Which would explain why they might have depicted Mete or Baphomet on the coffer looking much like Cybele. It would also explain this picture of severed genitals going into a vase. And why the Templars were buried with their legs crossed. And why Eliphas Levi’s Baphomet is missing his penis.”

Suddenly Chesterfield piped up with an amazing contribution that I didn’t expect.

“You know what else Hippolytus said? He said that St. Paul was a eunuch, because he thought that Jesus was too. That’s what he said Paul thought the term

‘eunuchs of heaven’ meant. Just like the guy in the Heaven’s Gate cult you told me about. And here we are now, right next to St. Paul’s Cathedral, standing underneath the dead body of a man quite possibly murdered by a castration cult.”

I was impressed with his commentary. I did not think that Chesterfield would know anything about Hippolytus!

“I studied for the seminary before I became a spook,” he said, responding to my obvious bewilderment. “And by the way, that set of beads we saw at the end of the movie?”

“Yeah?” I said, encouraging him to go on.

“They’re actually called ‘paternosters.’ It’s a monk’s rosary, for reciting the paternoster 150 times, the same as the number of chapters in *The Book of Psalms*. That’s why there were 50 beads. You’re supposed to go through the set three times a day.”

“And don’t forget the Mithras connection too,” said a voice coming from the staircase below. Agent Paris was walking up to join us.

“How did you know about the Mithras connection?” I asked. “We just found out about it right before we left the tavern. Surely Chesterfield hasn’t had a chance to tell you.”

“Well, I was just thinking about the magic square on the floor,” he answered. “The photographer came out and showed me a photo he took with a UV-sensitive camera. The Sator Square is associated with Mithras, right?”

“It is?” I said. I hadn’t thought so.

If I’d read that before, I’d forgotten it. But Paris came over and showed me a website open on his phone addressing the theory that the talisman had originated with the Mithraic cult.

P
A
T
A
E
O
R
PATERNOSTER
O
O
S
A
T
E
R

Apparently, the “Sator” (a Latin word meaning “ploughman,” “planter” and, by extension, “begetter,” “producer” or “father”) was thought to refer in this instance to Saturn, the planet to which the highest grade of Mithraism was dedicated. The letters of the square could be rearranged to make the word

“Paternoster” twice, Latin for “our Father.” This was thought to be a reference to the title of this grade, “Pater.” The two “Paternosters” could then be combined to form a cross, with four remaining letters—two letters A and two letters O—to stand for “Alpha” and “Omega” on each side of the cross. The resulting formation looked like this:

As I continued to read the website on Paris’ phone, I learned that in the Mithraic *taurtoctony* (the tradition containing their famous bull-slaying fable), Mithras apparently allowed the beast’s testicles to be severed by the pinchers of a scorpion. Then they were offered as a sacrifice to the moon goddess, who used the blood and sperm within the testicles to engender new forms of life on Earth.

Mithras then began to harvest and cultivate these lifeforms, thus forming his association with agriculture.

I recalled that Chronos (a.k.a. the Roman Saturn) had been said by the Greeks centuries earlier to be the inventor of agriculture. This matched up with what I was now reading about Mithras, who was seen as a form of Saturn. I learned that images of Mithras reaping corn stalks emerging from the rectum of the sacrificial bull have been discovered in more than one *mithraeum*.

The website quoted another author claiming that in Mithraic rites, a bull would be sodomized by the priest and then killed as soon as the priest climaxed.

Pointing out that the Mithraic temples forbade female members, the quote segment stated that the cult’s misogyny was represented in their creation myth.

Mithras had been born from a rock instead of a woman. Furthermore, it also said: To eliminate the female principle from their creation myth, Mithraists replaced the Mother of All Living in the primal garden of paradise (Pairdaeza) with the bull named Sole-Created. Instead of Eve, this bull was the partner of the first man. (It doesn't take much imagination to figure out what happened between Man and Bull.

Man engaged in bestiality by raping Bull and then killed Bull out of repugnance, fear and guilt. And then sought out other Bulls so he could do it all over again….) [sp.]

I had to admit, I didn't really know enough about Mithraism, and this was a surprise to me. As my head spun with a thousand new theories, I gave my companions the Cliff Notes version of what I had just read, then handed Paris'

phone back to him.

"Oh, why can't we be more like our ancient ancestors," said Chesterfield sarcastically to the ceiling. "They were so much more in touch with *nature*. Ugh!"

Paris had wrinkled his nosed in disgust. "Yeah, well that's not all. Turns out there's a magic square just like this in a church in England. And guess where."

He pressed the "back" button on his phone's internet browser, and brought up another page. It was an article from *The Telegraph* titled "Unique Sator-Rotas Square Discovered." It said the location was a sixteenth-century Anglican church dedicated to St. Barnabas in none other than Alphamstone, the location of Leopold Black's fake barony. There was a picture of a white female priest, older with short grey hair, wearing glasses, and standing next to an inscription of the magic square on a medieval-looking wall.

"Unbelievable," I said. "This is amazing."

I wondered to myself if the word "Alphamstone" contained a hidden reference to "Alpha" and "Omega," given the connection between the church and the Sator Square, as well as the fact that these two Greek letters were written next to the version now on the floor in front of us. I also recalled once seeing a terrible low-budget movie from the 1970s called *Curse of the Alpha Stone*. It was about a professor who discovered an alchemical substance that made men sexually violent, and even turned gay guys straight.

“So what was it about Mithras that you and my partner found out while you were at the Olde Cock Tavern?” Paris asked. I struggled to remember. We had been drinking, and so many shocking things had happened that night already.

“Her friends at the fake Butchers’ Society said that some guy somewhere in London was doing something nefarious at a Temple of Mithras,” answered Chesterfield. “Then our waitress told us that there was a Temple of Mithras in London that had just been moved back to its original location on Walbrook, a stone’s throw from St. Paul’s. She said that tomorrow they’re opening the new building that it’s in.”

“Yeah, that’s at Rosenberg Plaza right down there,” said the punk-haired lady cop. I had already noticed that she’d been eavesdropping on me, Paris and Chesterfield as much as possible.

“They’re having a ping-pong tournament there tomorrow as part of the festivities,” she continued. “I’m on one of the teams that’s playing.”

“A ping-pong tournament?” I asked. “To celebrate a temple to Mithras opening?” I couldn’t see the connection.

“Well it’s not just the temple,” she replied. “That’s just part of it. There’s the rest of the Plaza too. It’s huge. Two buildings, one of them the most massive in London really. Not the tallest, but the biggest in bulk. And there are going to be several restaurants in the lobby, including a pizza parlor with ping pong tables, where I’ll be playing on the same team as my son Dennis.”

I looked at her with my mouth slightly ajar. I must have looked stupid. Both MI5 agents eyed me curiously. I pulled them both close to me and whispered, very faintly this time, since I knew the lady cop was trying to catch every word.

“Do you remember a scandal called Pizzagate? From right before the US

Presidential election two years ago?”

“Um, no, that’s an English football scandal” said Chesterfield. He was referring to something else that went by the same name.

“Yes, I remember, but I thought it was bullshit,” whispered Paris. “Fake news? Russian propaganda?”

“Kids supposedly getting raped and dismembered by cultists,” I said through barely-parted lips. “Just like you saw on the Easter film, right?”

Chesterfield stroked his chin and thought. Agent Paris’ phone rang again and he went off to the corner to answer it. I asked the lady cop what time the opening ceremonies were at the *mithraeum*.

“I believe they begin at noon tomorrow,” she said. “That’s when they cut the ribbon with giant scissors. The rest happens shortly after that.”

“Well that sounds like something too good to be missed,” said Paris, who had ended his call quickly returned already. “Now I think we should leave this dreary scene in the capable hands the Met. As for us, we’ve got to be going. Come along friends.”

He nodded at me and Chesterfield while beckoning towards the stairway with his right hand. We took the hint and followed him immediately, telling the lady cop, who introduced herself as “Drexella,” that it had been pleasant meeting her. I told her my name was “Amanda Styles.” I made it up on the spot.

“The only ‘Drexella’ I’ve ever known is the wife of an American TV

preacher,” I said to the other two as we descended the stairs.

“Quiet.” whispered Paris. We remained mute until we got out of the Temple Bar and a few feet away from the police cordon. Paris walked us over to the pylon with the golden flame on top in the middle of the square. Then Chesterfield and I huddled next to him to hear what he couldn’t say in front of the cops.

“So Miss Equitone’s secretary just called. She wants me to meet with her and some people from Scotland Yard tomorrow. I tried to get her to push it ‘til noon, saying its been a long night. But the latest she would accept was 10 a.m. So we’d better get someplace where we can safely sleep and do our research as much as possible before then.”

“What about me?” said Chesterfield. “Shouldn’t she want to talk to me as well? I handled the Weir case with you.”

“Yes, I thought that sounded odd too, perhaps ominous of an internal investigation of you. So we’d better get our shit together tonight and tomorrow morning. Who knows what’s about to get dropped on us.”

“Sure,” said Chesterfield. “So do you know where this Temple of Mithras is going to open tomorrow? Drexella said it was close.”

“Just over there,” Paris said, pointing west. “Where Cannon Street and Queen Victoria meet.

“Isn’t that about where the London Stone used to be displayed at the Cannon Tapps?” Chesterfield said to his partner. “Remember reading that last night?”

“Ah yes,” Paris answered. “Well isn’t that interesting.”

As he spoke, I walked around the column looking for symbolism. I found a plaque stating that the pylon—called the “Flaming Orb Monument”—had been installed in 1996, which explained its modern, boring appearance. The plaque also said that the monument acted as a ventilation shaft for an underground service road.

Then I noticed a small metal door a few feet around to the right. It was slightly ajar. I reached for the handle and pulled it. Sure enough, it opened right up to a dark cavern inside, and a subterranean spiral metal stairway leading down into the unknown depths below.

“Do you suppose they could have gotten out of the sewers through here?” I said. Chesterfield and Paris were staring in stupefaction.

“Well, we’ll find out,” said Paris, grabbing my hand and removing it from the door handle. “I’m sure the CCTV footage is back by now. Let’s go tell the cops what we found. Then let’s get out of here.”

We all walked briskly back to the police cordon area around Temple Bar and stopped at the edge of the tape line. Paris stepped over the tape and talked to an older white man in a black trench coat with salt and pepper hair. He must have told him about the stairway beneath the pylon, as they both pointed and looked at it. Then the man told Paris something that made him shout out.

“Christ on a crutch! What the bloody Hell?!” He was enraged. The man shrugged and shook his head sideways. Paris spat on the ground and then marched back over to us.

“Well guess what. The power on the whole block was blacked out for about ten minutes, inexplicably. None of the cameras recorded the action. Imagine that.” This gave Chesterfield great fear. Clearly a deep-level plot was afoot.

“We need to go right now,” he said. “Before somebody kills us.”

Chapter 16: Tower House

…Participants are free to use the information received, but neither the identity nor the affiliation of the speaker(s), nor that of any other participant, may be revealed.

— Chatham House Rule, Royal Institute of International Affairs

We drove in somber silence to Chesterfield's cozy little one-bedroom flat in

"Tower House." This was a gigantic 120-year-old former "Rowton house" (a type of worker's hostel) in Whitechapel, The first thing I noticed was a white marble bust of Pallas Athena, yet another wisdom goddess, placed above the inside of his front door.

"You must be a huge fan of Edgar Allan Poe," I said.

"Nevermore!" said Chesterfield jokingly. "I was mostly into him in college, when I installed that thing, and I've actually lived in the same flat since then. Just a lonely bachelor. But I keep it there to remind me of my mother, whose name was Lenore. And that's also the name of my cat." He picked up the fat gray kitty, who had come to rub on his leg.

"Oh, has your mother passed?" I said. "I'm sorry." I sat in one of the two brown leather armchairs set in front of the fireplace and facing the large flat-screen television mounted on the wall. Paris took the other. The fireplace was gas-powered with ceramic logs. Chesterfield turned it on straight away. Up against another wall, perpendicular to the armchairs and television, was a blue and red plaid-patterned tweed-covered sofa, where he began piling our coats and bags on the right side.

"She and Dad both," he said. "Long ago."

He pointed to a lovely old framed black-and-white photograph of a young white couple standing with a baby before an Anglican priest.

“Here they are having me christened at St. Martin’s, right next to St. Paul’s.

They’re both Christopher Wren-designed churches. My parents named me Martin after the church. Care for a Laphroaig?”

He stepped into the adjoining kitchen and began pouring three scotches on ice without waiting for a reply. Then he carried them over to us without spilling a drop, just like a pro. After sitting down on the couch next to Agent Paris with his cat and a drink of his own, Chesterfield flipped on the telly.

It was already tuned to the Sky News channel, which was playing a commercial for Barclays Bank. Then it cut to a report about the murder of the MI5

Director at Paternoster Square. It looked like the news has just hit. Chesterfield turned up the sound.

The news report was slightly truthful and slightly misleading, as I suspected it would be. They said that the Director had been interviewing a “suspect in an espionage case” at the Central Criminal Court when both men had disappeared. A short while later, police issued a report to the media that Director Pindar’s body had been found at Temple Bar in Paternoster Square.

No details were given about the condition of the body or the use of underground tunnels to escape. They didn’t mention the name of the “suspect”

or any of the real charges against him. They did state that Equitone was the current acting head.

The Prime Minister, who had been informed of the news, released a statement expressing condolences for Pindar’s family. She also promised that there would be a press conference on the matter the following day. A panel of b-team reporters and intelligence experts began to speculate wildly based on what little information they had. Chesterfield turned the volume down again to a whisper.

“Now,” he announced, pointing to the ceiling with his contorted right index finder, “since we are under the protection of the rose, let us use these last few moments of consciousness to speak freely with one another.”

I looked up to where he was pointing. There was indeed a red and white Tudor rose painted on the ceiling, with green leaves poking out between the five petals and a golden bud emerging in the center. I knew that *sub rosa*, or “under the rose,” was a code that meant “under the protection of mutual vows of secrecy.” The paint was cracked, just like it was on the rest of the ceiling and walls. It looked like it could have been there for centuries, and most likely had been.

“Chatham House rules, right?” said Paris, winking at him. “Everybody says what they think and what they know. Afterwards we all forget who said what.”

“Exactly,” Chesterfield replied to his partner, smiling and nodding. I said nothing, and promised nothing, which is why I feel free to share this information with you now.

“So is this an all-out coup now or what?” Chesterfield asked Paris, getting things started. “Do you really think it’s the Cybele-worshipping Templar dick-cutters, or is it the Russians?” The last part he said with an air of humor, which Paris picked up on.

“Naw, it’s the Illuminati,” said Paris, only half-joking. “Pindar’s a Frenchy by birth. Never trust those frogs. Never forget how they chopped off all those Christian heads during the Revolution. Or how they helped the American colonies with their treason.”

“Your name is Paris, for God’s sake!” Chesterfield shouted, throwing a couch pillow at his partner playfully.

"But he was a Trojan Prince, Martin," said Paris. "Just like Brutus, who founded London as New Troy. I'm no frog-lover, my friend. They've always conspired against the governments of Europe. Them and the Jews, just like my mum said."

Paris drained his glass and then got up to refill it, taking Chesterfield's with him also. I was still nursing mine. In fact, I was starting to nod off. I caught myself leaning forward, and straightened up. Chesterfield responded to Parvin's playful pretense at racist paranoia.

"You Asians always think the Jews did everything. What about the Jesuits?

They burned down London in 1666. And they've been diddling all the altar boys for at least as long. They hanged that guy at Blackfriars Bridge in the 1980s. This job tonight was a lot like that, you know."

I too had thought the same about Roberto Calvi's murder in 1982, allegedly done at the behest of a bizarre Masonic group called "P2" or *Propaganda Due*.

Despite the papal ban on Catholics joining masonry, P2 had become a power within the Vatican itself, as well as in Italy and Latin America. Calvi, a member of P2, had worked for the Banco Ambrosiano, an Italian bank which had been doing business with the order, which included laundering illegal money for the Vatican.

After the money-laundering scheme was discovered by Italian authorities, and prosecutions began, Calvi was found hanging from a bridge over the Thames.

He had fled the country after his initial arrest, presumably running from prosecution but also, according to his family, because of threats from the P2

goons. The newspapers speculated that the manner of his death was a Masonic retribution ritual for traitors to the brotherhood. The bridge they had chosen, Blackfriars, was thought to have been used as a reference to the *frati neri*, or “black brothers,” a nickname that P2 members had chosen for themselves.

“You know what my dad told me?” said Paris. “When he worked for SIS he found out that those P2 guys killed Paulo Pasolini too. Right while he was editing *120 Days of Sodom*. All that crap about him raping the prostitute boy with a stick was a lie, and they set that kid up.”

Chesterfield arched his eyebrows in surprise. I too was intrigued that the conversation had turned down this avenue. I would not have imagined that MI5 agents, and even agents of MI6 (a.k.a. “SIS,” whom Paris’ father had apparently worked for) would be investigating the murder of an underground filmmaker because of his adaptation of an obscure unfinished porno-horror novel from the eighteenth century. The possibility of a P2 connection to this was completely foreign to me. Paris leaned forward and continued in a lower voice.

“The truth is the Jesuit Masons got him. There were several rolls of film that were supposed to be in the movie which got stolen. In those rolls, Pasolini had told the truth about what the Satanists in the Vatican are all up to. And it’s just like that Pizzagate stuff you were talking about, Pamela.” He pointed at me.

I was struggling to stay awake, but I was very interested in what he was saying. I recalled as best I could the facts I knew about Pier Paulo Pasolini, the film director. He was murdered in 1975 by a male teenage prostitute, who ran over him with his own car at a beach in Ostia, Italy. Supposedly, the director had hired the kid for sex, but then tried to sodomize him with a large stick, against his will, leading to his own violent end.

The only reason why I knew about it was because as a teenager I had been a fan of a band called Coil, who wrote a song about the murder. I had also seen Pasolini’s last film, *Salo, or the 120 Days of Sodom,* which he had been editing when he died. It did indeed depict the brutal rape and murder of young teenagers, both male and female. In the story, they were kidnapped on the orders of a group of aristocrats and powerful clerics. The men in this group then imprisoned them in an isolated mansion where they all eventually died in the most awful ways. It was based on a Marquis de Sade novel, with the location changed from revolutionary France to fascist-era Italy.

“Well now I’ve heard everything,” I said, conscious that I might be slurring a bit. “I’d heard that the Papists burned down London. I’ve heard Father Malachi Martin say that there were Satanists running the Vatican now. But I didn’t know that P2 killed Pasolini.

“Yeah, well they got Malachi Martin too,” said Chesterfield. “They cursed him with a demon that finally overcame him. Don’t think that was an accident.”

The dead Irish cleric he spoke of had been an accomplished exorcist, and everyone knew he was the guy that the priest in the *Exorcist* movie was based on.

Father Martin died of a cerebral hemorrhage after a fall in his Manhattan apartment, which he told friends had been caused by a demonic attack.

Purportedly, he was also a close confidant of Jean Paul II, and was privy to many Vatican secrets, which he wrote about in several books.

These included the fact that—he claimed—Satanists had infiltrated its highest ranks. He said that the widespread molestation of children in the Church was being organized by the Satanists for ritual purposes. Father Martin also alleged that the Pope had told him the third secret of Fatima, given by the Virgin Mary to three children in Portugal in 1917, which the Church has never openly revealed. According to him, it was a prophecy that the Final Pope would be

“under the control of Satan.”

“So why are people in the spy business more paranoid than everyone else?” I asked.

“Because we don’t just think we know, we know we know,” said Chesterfield. He aimed the remote control at the TV and tuned it in to one of the other channels. It showed a lady dressed up kind of like Napoleon, waving a British flag from the point of a scabbard while singing in a high-pitched operatic voice.

“Oh yes!” said Chesterfield excitedly. “This is from 2009!” He cranked up the sound.

Just then the singer got to the chorus. The whole audience, and the two men in the room with me, joined in the singing. Then I realized that I vaguely recognized the song from hearing it before somewhere.

Rule Britannia! Britannia rule the waves!

Britons never, never, never shall be slaves!

They both resounded gleefully and drunkenly through the rest of the performance. It ended with a strange encore that came after the initial round of applause from the audience, and even after a summation from an off-screen presenter stating that it was recorded at Royal Albert Hall. When it was over, my friends informed me that this was a sample from the “Last Night of the Proms,”

which was some kind of traditional annual patriotic opera show.

I had finished my whiskey, so Chesterfield got up to get us both another.

Paris declined a refill, and instead chose to stretch out on the couch when his partner stood up. As for me, this seems to be the last thing I remember from that night.

Chapter 17: Saturn’s Return

O Rose thou art sick.

The invisible worm,

That flies in the night

In the howling storm:

Has found out thy bed

Of crimson joy:

And his dark secret love

Does thy life destroy.

—William Blake, *The Sick Rose*

When you wake up from a dream, do you sometimes find that you can't remember what order things actually happened in? Do you ever wonder if your mind has really just organized things the way you remember in an effort to create the illusion of causality—that one thing led to another? Is it possible that the order of events has been imposed *ex post facto* by your own conscious mind upon waking? Do you ever wonder if perhaps your mind has even inserted certain story elements after the fact to give form to an otherwise incoherent chaotic cacophony of sounds and images from the abyss of the unconscious? Does this explain why humans allegedly see everything while dreaming in black and white, like colorblind dogs, but remember it otherwise?

I am pretty sure the part that I remember being "first" in that night's dream was actually inserted at the end, as I began to wake up. I walked into a room like a dark cave, with an orb of light shining from the top, and reflecting on a mirror that covered the wall in front of me. There was a man a dark suit standing there in front of me looking at the mirror. But I could not see his face. I *could not* look at it for some reason.

I tried to look at the mirror to see his reflection. But suddenly in front of his head, where I should have been able to see the left side of his face, a black-and-white photograph had been superimposed, showing a squinting old balding white man with a mustache who I didn't recognize. The sight of him frightened me.

Then he spoke. I found his voice harsh and menacing.

"I want to scare you so that you'll remember when you wake up."

At that moment, I recall being utterly terrified. I was dreaming. Not only that, but someone else in the dream knew that I was scared, and he had the power to cloak himself. That meant anything could happen. I thought in lucid dreams you were supposed to be able to realize your power in the situation and take control of the narrative. But here this person seemed to be exercising control over my dream life. And of course, like the worst of my nightmares, I was frozen, unable to scream or move.

"I'll put the important part here at the end so that you won't forget it." He laughed. His voice was masculine but he had the wicked laugh of a mean old lady.

Somehow, the scene shifted to that of two giant, slimy worms having disgusting sex. They were glued to each other on both ends, like they were doing the old "69" position. It seemed like they were both fighting and fucking, trying to simultaneously eat and rape one another.

Then I remembered how it happened. I was going backwards in time it seems, upon reflection. I had been sleeping, and then something woke me up.

Somebody was on top of me. I had thought I was alone, but someone was on top of me. I woke up and realized I was fucking someone. Or rather, perhaps, that someone was fucking me.

I couldn’t be sure. I couldn’t tell if it was a man or a woman, or even what kind of thing I was.

Am I a worm? I remember wondering. *A blind worm?*

I couldn’t see anything. All was dark. I tried to push him off.

Him?

I reached out and grabbed something: a knife.

I stabbed at the attacker blindly, but immediately my thigh was filled with shooting pain.

Then finally, I could scream. Finally he got off of me. Finally I could see, as the light came through the window. Chesterfield opened the blinds, hollering obscenities.

I was awake now. He was in his boxer shorts and wife-beater with an open white terry cloth bathrobe, looking at me like I was a maniac.

“What the fuck is going on!” he shouted.

“You were raping me!” I answered, shielding my eyes from the light. My vision was still blurry. My head was pounding. A hangover.

“No, I was merely *sleeping* next to you!” he responded. “*You* rolled over on top of *me*. Then you started stabbing yourself with my nose-trimmers.”

“Eww!” I recoiled. I found that I was on the floor between his bed and his radiator, kneeling down in front of him. I looked down at the wound in my leg, still bleeding and throbbing. I pressed down on it with my hand as I realized I was in my underwear and wearing a man’s white undershirt, just like the one Chesterfield was wearing.

“You took my clothes off while I was sleeping?!” I shouted in outrage.

“That’s the second time that’s happened to me in the last 24 hours! What the fuck!”

Chesterfield shrugged as he took his bathrobe off and draped it over my shoulders.

“No,” he said, “I went into the kitchen to get us some cheese and crackers.

When I got back to the living room you were gone. I found you lying in my bed dressed as you are now, wearing *my* undershirt. It was clean, you know.”

“Good,” I thought. I was already grossed out about having it on. He walked out of the room for a moment and came back with a wet washcloth for me to put on my injured thigh.

“I guess I really tied one on then,” I said. I was embarrassed that I had gotten drunk enough to black out like that. I was also very sick to my stomach.

“Yeah well file your sexual harassment complaint up your arse,” he sneered, not looking at me directly.

“I’m sorry!” I said.

He seemed to accept this, but I could tell his feelings were still hurt. To get away from the awkwardness, I asked to use the bathroom.

I was in there for a while. It was spacious compared to the one in the Regent Hotel, although it too lacked a bathtub. However, like the rest of the apartment, it was surprisingly clean for a bachelor pad, and I enjoyed a nice hot shower.

As the fresh steamy water pounded down on my face, I thought about by dream, especially the worms. I made me think about the story of Chronos again.

You’ll recall that he swallowed his babies as soon as they were born, afraid that one of his children would usurp his position as king of the gods.

I envisioned Chronos with his mouth constantly on the mother's vagina as soon as the mating had finished, to make sure nothing escaped. I imagined that he probably also had to be quite careful that none of his semen spilled out anywhere else, because the sperm of all immortals is described in the myths as being super-fertile, capable of generating progeny on anything it touches. As per example: Aphrodite, who was born from the semen that clung to the sides of the bloody penis of Ouranos as it fell into the seas below. This was, of course, after his son Chronos cut it off.

The Greeks said that Ouranos was the Sky and his wife Gaia was the Earth.

They were the first parents in the universe. They produced Chronos and the rest of the Titans, a nasty brood of dragons, giants and monsters.

At one point, it was said, Ouranos and Gaia were one being, presumably locked in endless sexual embrace, if you consider the fact that they were engendering children together, along with the rest of the known details. The myths didn't spell it out, but one can deduce that the castration took place inside the mother's vagina, the exit being deliberately blocked for the offspring by their father's penis. This brings the obvious question: where did the weapon (said to be a ceremonial scythe called a *harpe*) come from?

Some said he did this because of a "prophecy" that Ouranos would be killed and have his role taken over by one of his children. It is uncertain whether the prophecy arose within his own mind, or if his wife told him that, or perhaps some unnamed third party. Some versions say he feared his children's births because he somehow knew that they were simply too ugly to be looked at. I figured this meant that they represent the chaos the preceded creation, what the alchemists call the *prima materia* of the universe, which had not yet taken any definite form.

Chronos did in fact take over as the leader of the gods. He and Rhea, his wife, ruled over a time recalled as the "Golden Age." It was described as a time when everyone was free and nobody was called into the service of another. At this point, "everybody" presumably consisted of just Chronos, Rhea, and their Titan siblings.

But it wasn’t until after Chronos was usurped by Zeus, and the Titans vanquished, that one of their number, Atlas, was conscripted with the arduous task of holding up the sky on his shoulders. This was done to prevent the sky, Ouranos, from “resuming his embrace” with Gaia the Earth. If this were to happen, they said, everything that exists would be snuffed out. It is only because Atlas does his job that we have a “stage” upon which to act (as Shakespeare would describe the worldly plane).

So how and where, then, I wondered, *did events of the Golden Age occur, when nobody was there to keep the Earth and Sky apart, since no person was slave to another?*

I also recalled that the same story was told in the Kabbalistic *Zohar* about the serpent-demons Lilith (“night”) and Samael (“the blind one”), who had once been two halves of the only creature in existence. God had split them apart deliberately, castrating the male, but they still longed for one another. It was said that if they were ever able to mate again, it would destroy creation. These demons were associated by nineteenth-century occultist Stanislas de Guaita with the hermaphrodite Baphomet in the sigils he created, one of which was later adopted by the Church of Satan as its official logo.

Satan, it seems, wants to see what is separate become whole again, in order to undo God’s creation, I thought to myself, and not for the first time.

When I came out of the shower, I found that Chesterfield had gone to the Alder Gate Cash & Carry, which was apparently nearby. There he had bought me a pair of dark gray jeans, just my size, and a red sweater that fit perfectly, from. He had also brought us all coffee and a bag full of scones from Starbucks. Paris, who was just coming awake, took his coffee and scones into the bathroom without looking up.

Maybe he’s mad at me too, I thought. *Chesterfield probably told him what had happened between us in his bedroom.*

Chesterfield was also being gruff, not talking much other than to say “you’re welcome” blandly when I thanked him for the clothes and coffee. We both sat down at the little white Formica table in the kitchen’s breakfast nook and starred at our laptops for a while.

It was 8 a.m. now, and I thought I should probably check the news first. Yet I couldn’t shake the image of the mating worms in my dream. I knew that Leviathan, that dreaded sea serpent in the Bible, was often depicted just like the Ouroboros, swallowing its own tail, and encompassing the entire cosmos within its coil.

Like the monstrous Titans, Ouroboros was a representation of the chaos that was thought to preexist the creation of matter. But sometimes it was depicted as two serpents shown swallowing each other, much like the mutually fucking and devouring hermaphrodite worms in my dream.

I looked it up, and sure enough, earthworms are hermaphrodites, so this is how they mate. I remembered that the words for “worm” and “serpent” were the same in ancient Sumer: *orm*. I decided to look to see if there were any etymological links between *orm*, “Ouroboros,” and “Ouranos.” What I found was something better.

As it turned out, “Ouranos” and “Ouroboros” are definitely connected. I used “Google Translate” and found that the word which Wikipedia had rendered as “sky” actually means “rain-maker,” or, more specifically, “urinater.” Rain was thus likened to urine from the sky. And Ouroboros didn’t mean “tail-swallower,”

as the same source had claimed. That was clearly a euphemism. I discovered a more literal rendering: “urine-drinker.”

The Ouroboros is the uncreated one, I thought. *He needs nothing. He produces what he needs. And because he is eternal, because there is no future where he is, that is sufficient.*

But like Gaia and Ouranos, I mused, *this Eternal Serpent was cut up. Isn’t that in Egyptian myth somewhere? Worms can regenerate if you slice them in half, and that’s what this one did. It became two. Then they started fucking and* *sucking on each other. It meant the same thing because their mouths and their wombs were the same thing. And the "children" in their wombs were the source of their nourishment. Their wombs were also their stomachs.*

This seemed to me like a logical deduction to make from the known details of the story. I felt a flash of pride that I had figured it out. It was an ancient riddle that probably very few had even realized *was* a riddle, much less pondered about, in the intervening millennia.

But where did the knife come from to cut the worm? I continued to wonder.

Its necessary existence represented some kind of perverse blasphemy that I hadn't divined yet.

"Have you figured out anything relevant to our case yet?" Chesterfield said, at last breaking the silence that must have been bothering him. I jumped a bit, startled.

"I don't think so. Not so far," I said.

"What are you doing, looking at cats?" he chastised. "We're running out of time here!"

I looked down at my computer dutifully. After a minute of staring blankly, I asked a stupid question.

"What exactly am I supposed to be looking for?"

"Well, let's go over the case again, shall we?" He got up and began to pace around the kitchen. "It started last Saturday, March 24, five days before I met you. Now you say that's the Day of Blood, when the cult of Cybele used to do their castration rituals. That's the day on which MI5 received the anonymous upload of *Easter Sunday April Fool*."

"Which you admit was not really anonymous," I interjected.

“Right,” he acknowledged. “That film depicts—I would say, ‘documents’—a boy being kidnapped from Piccadilly Circus right before Easter 1956. And this event took place at the exact same intersection where you chose to stay in a hotel room yesterday, just before Easter, which falls on the same day this year that it did in 1956.”

“No, Leopold’s people booked the hotel,” I insisted. “I had nothing to do with it.”

“OK, fine,” he said, dismissing my objection with a wave of his hand. “So anyway, the film shows the boy being castrated among ancient ruins somewhere in a ritual you say is similar to the initiation rites of the cult of Cybele. The boy is then possibly killed and fed to the ravens at the Tower of London.”

I shrugged my shoulders. I knew that the story, true though it was, sounded insane.

“Then in the same film, a little girl is sodomized next to the London Stone in the upper chamber of Temple Bar, which was then sitting on property attached to a boarding school. The girl is first raped with a dildo on a stick, which, as it turns out, is connected to the symbolism of the ancient monument of Billingsgate in London. It’s also similar to the way in which medieval witchcraft cults used to introduce intoxicating substances into the orifices of the initiates at Sabbaths.”

I nodded.

“Then, at the same time that I am, illegally and against my employer’s protocol, allowing you to see this film, my ultimate boss, the Director of MI5, is kidnapped by your fake baron friend and then killed in that very same chamber of Temple Bar, which has now been moved to Paternoster Square. But…”

He pivoted on his foot and then turned to face me, pointing at me accusingly.

“Temple Bar originally sat right next to the Olde Cock Tavern in Temple, where you ask me to take you while all of this stuff is coincidentally happening.

The Director’s head is mounted to the front of the bar like he’s a traitor, and the murder scene includes a Mithraic magic square, which also shows up at this Alphamstone place that your fake baron friend pretended to be from. It also includes alleged Templar symbols of severed male genitals in a vase that just so happen to be showcased in your latest book. And this brings me to the subject of you, Pamela.”

He sat down next to me and put his face within an inch of my own, looking at me sternly. I could almost feel his red mustache tickling my cheek. He continued.

“You claim that this same person kidnapped you yesterday and forced you to witness a bull sacrifice in a secret underground tunnel. But you also refuse to testify to this fact, which is why we don’t have his co-conspirators in the fake butcher company arrested, and why he is then able to escape.”

There was a lot of anger in his voice, and his words indicated that he might not really believe what I told him about what happened to me the day before. Or, at least, he wanted me to think so. It was supposed to make me feel bad, and it worked, even though I knew I was in no way to blame for anything. I decided to ignore his manipulation tactics.

“Yes,” I acknowledged. “And bull sacrifices are associated with both the cult of Cybele and the mysteries of Mithras. Also, a bull sacrifice was depicted on the side of the allegedly Templar-originated Mete coffer that disappeared from the museum. So maybe I should research that angle to connect the Templars, Mithras and Cybele. Because I still don’t know how these things all go together.”

I looked back down at my computer and began to type into Google.

Chesterfield sat back down at his laptop and resumed his own research.

I started off by looking for connections between Mithras and Cybele. I found quickly that a debate had been raging among scholars on the subject for the last 250 years. They couldn’t agree on whether or not these two cults, both of Eastern origin and active concurrently in the late Roman Empire, were related at all. It was mostly modern scholars who were claiming that they were not.

Cybele had been adopted into Hellenistic Greece from their western Anatolian colonies as early as the sixth century BC. The Greeks compounded her with Rhea, the wife of Chronos and mother of Zeus. The aspect of her relationship with Attis, some historians said, was really only fully adopted by the Western version of the cult after the Romans absorbed it into their official religion in the second century BC.

But as I had mentioned to Chesterfield before, the *Gallu* of the temples of the Great Mother Goddess Inanna in Sumer also practiced the same rite, and had a myth about the son of the goddess which was identical in many ways to that of Attis.

Mithraism, however, had been imported from Persia much later, starting in the first century after Christ. There were many obvious differences. Mithraism was an all-male cult that, at first blush, seems to promote masculine attributes and shun everything feminine. It was popular in the military, particularly among the foreign legions, and indeed, that’s where it had originally begun its spread throughout the empire.

It took a couple of centuries for it to be anything more than a barely tolerated subterranean mystery school (operating literally underground, in caves on the frontiers, and in the basements of other buildings in cities). But eventually, some of the emperors were converted, and the cult, which had originally forbidden its members to join any other religious groups, began to allow amalgamation with the followers of “Sol Invictus” (“Invincible Sun”), a.k.a. Helios.

This new and improved Mithraism became the dominant religious force at the end of the empire, until its rival, Christianity, with which it shared mutual influence, eclipsed it altogether.

Early in the twentieth century, two authors—Franz Cumont and Jessie Weston—separately published important works arguing that Mithraists had also made formal pacts with Cybele worshippers. Cumont had stated it as though it were established fact in his 1903 book *The Mysteries of Mithra*. There he had argued that:

…in conciliating the priests of Magna Mater, the sectaries of Mithra obtained the support of a powerful and officially recognized clergy, and so shared in some measure in the protection afforded it by the State.

He also pointed out that the temples of both cults (*mithraeums* and *metroons*) were often very close to one another. In Ostia in Italy, where the oldest known *mithraeum* has been found (along with dozens of others scattered throughout the same town), the two temples were actually attached contiguously. Cumont suggested that they may have shared ritual materials, and perhaps even conducted joint rituals.

Now, wasn't Ostia the place where that Pasolini guy was murdered? I thought to myself.

If the two cults did work together, it would actually put to rest one of the points of argument between historians on the subject. Cumont had claimed that both the Cybelists and the Mithraists practiced the rite of *taurobolium*. This was the ceremony wherein the priest would rip open the guts of the victim on a platform with a metal grate over it so that the blood would pour down onto an initiate positioned below. It was a form of sanguinary baptism, after which the recipient was said to be *renatus in aeternum* "reborn for eternity").

Modern scholars, criticizing Cumont, argue that, although the central myth of the cult is about Mithras hunting and killing a bull, a true *taurobolium* would have been impossible to conduct inside of a tiny underground *mithraeum*. But they ignore the fact that Cumont had already addressed this issue. He said the evidence suggested that Mithraists performed few if any of their own sacrifices of.

Instead, he thought that they most likely contracted this work out to a professional *victimarius* (sacrificial butcher), which was a common practice at the time. Any *metroon* would have been equipped for this, and the Cybelists may have been the ones to fulfill this purpose. Cumont also noted that *mithraeums* were usually built directly upon a source of running water. He proposed that the relatively sophisticated plumbing systems they usually sported might have been useful to the Cybelists, and that access to these things might have been traded to them by the Mithraists in exchange for help with butchery.

It occurred to me that Cybele's anti-male transvestite priesthood and the Mithraists' aversion to femininity may have made them an odd yet complimentary pair: they both were against traditional sexuality. Furthermore the mythologies of both cult figures complemented each other in the same way. I told you before that according to some sources, Cybele wasn't always just a woman.

Prudentius, a Roman Christian poet, writing in the fourth century, said in *Peristephanon*: 10.1071-3:

Both sexes are displeasing to Cybele's holiness, so he keeps a middle gender between the two.

As I mentioned, initiates of Cybele's priesthood went through an orgiastic public ritual in which they were expected to go mad on drugs and wine. They would then become possessed by the goddess, just like Attis, so that they would be inspired to castrate themselves just like he did. These priests were thereafter referred to as women, just like the *Gallu* priests of Sumer before them, and just like a post-op transgender person would be in modern times. Like the *Gallu*, they dressed in women's clothes, spoke in affected effeminate voices, and sang in an effeminate manner that was supposed to be pleasing to the goddess.

Earlier, in the first century BC, another Roman poet, Gaius Valerius Catullus, had written in *Carmina*, Poem 63 about how Attis castrated himself and thus became a priestess of Cybele. From that point on, she was thereby immediately referred to as feminine:

> Over the vast main borne by swift-sailing ship, Attis, as with hasty hurried foot he reached the Phrygian wood and gained the tree-girt gloomy sanctuary of the Goddess, there roused by rabid rage and mind astray, with sharp-edged flint downwards dashed his burden of virility. Then as he felt his limbs were left without their manhood, and the fresh spilt blood staining the soil, with bloodless hand she hastily took a tambour light to hold, your tambourine, Cybele, your initiate rite, and with feeble fingers beating the hollowed bullock's back, she rose up quivering…

Later, when her reason returned to her, she lamented the loss of her penis and the fact that she was now a "slave" to the mother goddess: Then when from quiet rest torn, her delirium over, Attis at once recalled to mind her deed, and with lucid thought saw what she had lost, and where she stood, with heaving heart she backwards traced her steps to the landing-place. There, gazing over the vast main with tear-filled eyes, with saddened voice in tristful soliloquy thus did she lament…

This all appears to be an echo of the earliest versions of the Cybele myth, influenced more closely by the Phrygian version. In these, she was called "Agditis," and was said to have originated in the realm of the gods. She had been formed when some of Zeus' semen fell upon a rock called "Agdo." But the other gods found Agditis to be a freak, and so they had her castrated, and cast her down to Earth. This, then, would explain why Cybele was sometimes represented by a rock, particularly a meteorite—a "stone that fell from heaven."

As the story continues, according to a Greek travelogue from Pausanias in the second century AD, the goddess then became pregnant with a boy, whom she abandoned at birth and left for dead. The boy was born so beautiful that he was rescued by a she-goat that felt pity for him. Eventually, when she found him again, his own mother fell in love with him.

He was later engaged to a princess. But during the wedding, Agditis/Cybele possessed his mind and inspired him to castrate himself, resulting in his death.

Afterwards, in regret, she "persuaded Zeus to grant the body of Attis should neither rot at all nor decay" (according to a travelogue of Phrygia written in the second century AD by the Greek geographer Pausanias). This is the skeletal story, upon which a variety of flourishes about the boy's death, resurrection, and alleged "love" for his mother were added.

Some obvious parallels between this and the story of Mithras jump out right away. Just as they say Agditis was born from a *petra genetrix* ("fecund rock"), so too was Mithras. Votive depictions of the god's birth show him emerging as a fully-grown young man, with a torch in one hand and a knife in the other, which he used to find his way and tear himself out.

On either side of the rock they always depicted the two *Chiaramonti* ("Torchbearers"), two male youths who wore Phrygian hats just like Mithras, and just Attis Cybele's *Galli* priests. The *Chiaramonti* were also often shown in that same peculiar cross-legged attitude; just like how Attis and the *Galli* were often shown, whether standing or laying; just like the effigies of the cross-legged knights on the graves at Temple church. The names of the two *Chiaramonti* were Cautes and Cautophanes. Each held a torch, with one pointing it upwards, and the other pointing it downwards, respectively. Seeing this reminded me again of Eliphas Levi's depiction of the Templar demon Baphomet, with one hand pointing up, and the other pointing down, along with a torch burning between his goat horns.

The ultimate provenance of Mithras is a mystery. It was a true parthenogenesis, "fertilized by the heavenly father's phallic lightning," as Barbara

Walker wrote. He was truly the self-born," like the nameless figure identified by Jesus in the apocryphal *Gospel of Thomas*, where he said: When you see him who was *not born of woman*, fall down upon your faces and worship him; that *one* is your Father.

Thus during the initiations, according to the one-surviving Mithras Liturgy, inductees took an oath to the god which included the words: I… who was born from the mortal womb of (his mother's name) and from the fluid of semen, and who, since he has been born again from you today…resolves to worship you.

In the myth of Mithras, when the time came to have progeny of his own, he chose to mate with a rock because he detested females. A writer known as

"Pseudo-Plutarch" wrote in *De Fluviis* 23.4 about a certain mountain in Armenia called "Diorphos." This was named after "Diorphos the Earth-born (or the Titan),"

about whom it was said:

Mithras, who wanted to have a son but hated the race of women, ejaculated onto a stone. The stone became pregnant and—after the appropriate time—produced a boy called Diorphos.

The name of this figure brought to mind the myth of the "Orphic Egg" from the Orphic Mystery Schools, which went back to Greece in the fifth century. They taught that the primordial being was a figure named "Phanes," whom they also called "Eros." The creator of this egg was "Nyx," whose name meant "Night," just like what the name of the Kabbalistic demoness Lilith translates to. I felt that Phanes might also relate to Ophion, a serpent who, with his Titan bride Eurynome, was said to have ruled the Earth for a spell after being "cast down" by Chronos and Rhea. This again indicates an identification with Diorphos, the son of Mithras, identified with Chronos/Saturn.

Depictions of Phanes with his body surrounded by a serpent, strongly resemble the images of the *leontocephaline* (lion-headed) version of Mithras as Saturn (also shown wrapped in a snake) that were found in many *mithraeums*, as were Orphic depictions of the cosmic egg. Other related symbols include the one-snaked rod of Asclepius and the double-snaked rod of Hermes, the caduceus. This last object was shown by Eliphas Levi sitting between the legs of Baphomet instead of a penis.

Like Baphomet, the Persians had originally seen their *Mitra* as an intermediary power, helping connect creatures on our plane with both the celestial powers above and the infernal powers below. In the Roman mystery school version, he became identified with Saturn, the furthest from Earth of the planets then known about, seen in classical astrology as the highest of the heavens. But he was also identified, especially in the latter years of the Roman Empire, with Sol, the Sun. In the old geocentric systems, Sol occupied the middle sphere of the heavens, with other spheres, including those of Jupiter and Saturn, on top of that.

The worshippers of Sol Invictus, like the Egyptians, saw the Sun as the ultimate symbol of an omnipotent god. But in the Mithraic Mysteries, which attempted to incorporate this cult in its later years, the initiate made a symbolic journey through each of the heavens, in imitation of this enhanced story of the adventures of Mithras. This did not merely involve him passing through the various gates of Heaven with special passwords. This (taught by Gnostic and Hermetic schools as necessary for the soul to ascend to the highest realm after death). Rather, in this case, it seems that Mithras actually conquered the intelligences that ruled over these spheres, subduing them to his will.

After slaying the bull from which the material world was made, he ascended this stairway to heaven, the “ladder of lights” we know as the seven classical planets, until he got to Sol’s kingdom. There, after the sun was overthrown, the luminary was forced to bow down on one knee to his new master, Mithras. The two then shook hands as friends, and then feasted together on the bull, with the domination of the new sun god now having been established. Then Mithras took the reigns of the Sun’s chariot and ascended to the next realm, which was that of Saturn. Mithras then took on as his own identity as well, indicating that he overtook that god like he did the others, and henceforth ruled all of the kingdoms below.

So Mithras is both Saturn and the Sun, I thought to myself. *But I’ve read that Saturn is associated in alchemical symbolism with the process of putrefaction, called the* Nigrido . *This is when the ‘primal material’ of the universe is sacrificed and dismembered. And the sign of the* Nigrido *is a black sun. They say this sun is somehow ‘in the center of the Earth,’ just like how Chronos, who is Saturn, is imprisoned in Tartarus by Zeus, who is Jupiter. I wonder what that means.*

I Googled “Mithras” + “black sun.” I also opened other tabs to search the terms “midnight sun” and “second sun” in combination with “Mithras.” That’s when I discovered an amazing new angle.

Because he victoriously overthrew both the Sun and Saturn, then took on both of their roles, Mithras was seen as the source of a light more primordial, beyond the known universe, the “sun beyond the Sun.” The realm of light beyond the sphere of Saturn was called “Hyperuranium.” It was named after Saturn’s father Uranus, for the same reason the planet beyond Saturn was so named by modern astronomers. A document called “the Mithras Liturgy” described a Mithraic initiate, in imitation of Mithras, entering the palace of the “Seven Pole Lords” with the faces of black bulls. These are the guys who turn the wheels of the heavens, causing earthquakes, thunder and lightning. But Mithras basically makes slavish bitches out of them all.

The fact that Mithras was known for literally “storming heaven,” invading the highest realm of the universe with shock and awe, seemed to be part of why his cult was popular with the military of an imperial power. Cybele was already an *official* patroness of the Roman military, and it is no accident that her holy week took place during the month dedicated to the war god Mars.

But whereas the Magna Mater was seen as the protectress of the state, and the status quo (much like the Egyptian goddess Maat, whose name meant “world order”), Mithras was a god of rebellion.

The red Phrygian cap worn by Mithras—as well as by Cybele’s *Galli*, coincidentally—is also known as a “liberty cap,” because in Rome it was the symbol of a slave that had been freed. All slaves wore them during the festival of Saturnalia at the winter solstice, because they were considered free during this time period. Indeed, all rules were considered null during these days, giving way to orgies, drinking, and much mischief.

This was done in honor of Saturn and his Golden Age, when nobody had to work. It is the reason why we all take vacation around Christmas, and why Santa Claus wears that funny red hat. It’s also why we get wildly drunk on New Year’s Eve, just like the “Feast of Fools” celebrated in medieval Europe, when the social order would be upturned in honor of the “Lord of Misrule.” It’s why the liberty cap became the symbol of the French Revolution, inspired by Freemasons, who, like the Mithraists, gave no regard to social status within the boundaries of their lodges. The seals of the US Army and the US Senate bear this symbol as well.

Thinking about this at Chesterfield’s breakfast table, while he clicked away on his computer across the table from me, I now understood the cosmology of the Smurfs. Papa Smurf, with his red Phrygian hat, was the “Pater,” the Father, just like the leader of a Mithraic school was called. His subjects in the communist Smurf dictatorship were all male, like those in the temples of Mithras, except for Smurfette, who had been created through dark alchemy by Gargamel in order to mislead the Smurfs. Papa Smurf, however, had been able to magically turn her over to his will, and let her live with his subjects. But none of them had mothers and, from my recollection, all of them had been created alchemically.

“So,” said Chesterfield, clearing his throat. “Learned anything about Cybele and Mithras?”

“Yes,” I said. “Quite a lot.”

“Well I know that Cybele likes to castrate boys and Mithras likes to fuck bulls in the arse while he kills them. What other sick stuff did they get up to?”

I laughed. “The record on the Mithraists is a bit confusing. On the one hand, there are sources saying that the cult valued abstinence from sex, as an extension of their general hatred of women, and that many of their priests took vows of chastity.”

“Yes,” he said, nodding as he glanced at his computer briefly. I continued

“But at the same time they had a ceremony for the second degree of their order, which is called “Nymphus”—“the Bride.” It was dedicated to the love goddess Venus. The initiate would be married to another brother in the order, dressed in a bridal veil.”

“Go on,” he said, looking again at his computer as if he were checking off items on a list.

I gave him a breakdown of the material I had found indicating that both Cybele and Mithras were against normal sexual relations, and that both had been born from inseminated rocks. I mentioned the castration of Cybele, and her original hermaphroditic state. I compared her to Baphomet, also missing his penis according to Eliphas Levi.

“The Knights Templar officially rejected sex with women as well, vowing not to touch them, although we know that they did confess to sometimes using female prostitutes in their orgies, always for sodomy. But in order to stem their desires for procreative acts, they vowed *not* to reject the sexual advancements of their brothers. The masters told the initiates that it was better to indulge in this than to ‘burn with desire’ for females. That’s probably why they kissed each other’s penises and butts at the end of the induction ceremony.”

He looked at me incredulously. “I’ve never heard *that* before.”

“This was all revealed a few years ago by the Vatican,” I told him. “It happened when they discovered the Chinon Parchment. It came out that the knights had confessed all of this stuff to Pope Clement V without torture. And this is in addition to the Satanic rituals they confessed about to the King of France years earlier.”

“So they were a gay knighthood?” he said. He seemed crestfallen. I guess he really bought into the hype that the Templars were a wrongly maligned group of pure Christian martyrs.

“There’s more,” I said. “Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall found monuments he believed were of Templar origin, as I told you. Well, some of them had depictions of little boys being sodomized and made to have sex with animals.

They also showed kids being sacrificed in a ‘baptism of fire’ ritual.”

“And why would they have done this?” he asked.

“Well, I haven’t figured it out entirely.”

He rolled his eyes.

“I mean, I think it was an attempt to destroy creation through magic. But I don’t know how it was supposed to work.”

“Where did you get the idea then?” he asked.

“The Mete coffer.” I said. “Remember it shows Cybele with a beard pulling the Sun and Moon down from the sky? She’s uprooting the heavens, where the Archons rule from.”

“Who are the Archons?” he said, getting visibly annoyed at the labyrinthine symbolism I was attempting to explain.

“The heavenly bodies,” I answered. “The rulers of fate, whom the Ophite Gnostics saw as their enemies. They were the seven visible planets, which included the Moon and the Sun. Hammer-Purgstall thought the Templars were secret Ophite Gnostics. And the Ophite Gnostics, according to Hippolytus, incorporated the Cybele mysteries into their dogma.”

“OK…” said Chesterfield. I continued.

“Another thing Hammer-Purgstall claimed was a Templar artifact was an engraving in a Bavarian castle showing someone standing in-between and holding two columns that were falling over. Beneath this was written a code that he decoded into the phrase ‘the Distinguished Charity of Mete Uproots the Enemy.’”

“What does that mean?” Chesterfield asked with a sigh.

“Well, I’m about to tell you,” I said. “I think the ‘Distinguished Charity’ part means ‘strange love,’ peculiar love, like the sick sex rituals. Somehow they thought that by having sex in an unnatural way, they could shake the foundations of nature herself, to bring the gods down from their thrones. They saw creation as a prison to be escaped.”

There was silence for a moment.

“How would that work?” he finally said.

“That’s the part I don’t know,” I replied. “But that’s how I read it. Our ancestors saw things differently than we do. It’s difficult to comprehend their logic.”

“So could sodomizing the bull while killing it be considered “‘strange Love?’” he suggested.

“Yes!” I said. It was like a lightning bolt hit my mind. “And you know who else advocated strange love? Aleister Crowley. He did rituals where he raped animals and then killed them during his climax, just like the Mithraists. And he hated women, just like the Mithraists. He thought anal sex magick was the highest form of ritual. The created a secret society where admittance to the highest rank involved getting kidnapped and anally raped by all the other members. He named it after the Templars, and he called himself “Baphomet” as a special nickname.

But do you know what he said Baphomet’s name meant? ‘Father Mithras!’”

I had long considered Crowley’s attempt to etymologize the name of Baphomet to be the least useful of all the theories that had been proffered by scholars throughout the years. I agreed with Hammer-Purgstall’s conclusion that it meant “Baptism of Wisdom,” and most of the suggestions made by others had been similar in meaning. Now I had to rethink it.

Why did *he say that, anyway?* I wondered.

I Googled and found a quote from Crowley’s *Confessions*: Baphomet was Father Mithras, the cubical stone which was the corner of the Temple.

He also mentioned that the word “totaled 729” when interpreted kabbalistically, which I noted in my head was the number of days in a solar year (365) added to the number of days in a lunar year (364). I also recalled that Crowley had published a text called “Liber 729.” So I looked that up too.

This, it turned out, was the same thing called *The Amalantrah Working*, which I had heard of before. It seemed to be a bunch of incoherent, personal stream-of-consciousness nonsense channeled from some entity called “the Wizard,” presumably Saturn-Mithras (as he took the form of an old hermit). The Wizard kept referring to a quest for an “egg” that Crowley was supposed to embark upon. It urged him:

The egg is a work which must be done – the great work. By doing the work we get to the key.

I read this out loud to Chesterfield.

“So the stone is Cybele. The stone becomes impregnated, and then it’s an egg,” he noted. “And the new Sun of the new universe, who is Mithras, who is Saturn, is born from that—he cuts his way out.”

This struck me as a very good way of summing it up. I nodded in approval.

“This must be connected to the use of the London Stone in the ritual rape.

Didn’t you find that it was made of ‘egg stone’?”

“Yes. Yes I suppose it must be connected,” I agreed.

“The ritual took place on Easter,” he went on. “And the film mentioned

“Easter eggs” just before it cut out.”

“And it showed her laying an egg,” I said.

He gulped. “From her bum?”

“It’s something that Crowley specifically mentioned he wanted to do: make a homunculus born rectally, whose birth would herald the start of a new era. It’s also something that happened in the Egyptian pantheon. In the Ogdoad cosmology, Thoth gave birth to several of his children by laying an egg from his anus.”

“What’s a homunculus?” Chesterfield asked.

“An artificial person,” I said. “In Hebrew it’s called a ‘golem.’ There are lots of different thoughts on how you could do it. The simplest way is making an idol out of clay and bringing it to life magically with the use of sperm and incantations.

Making a robot and doing the same thing with it is an even more sophisticated approach. The first so-called ‘androids’ were built in the Middle Ages with exactly this purpose. They were meant to me animated through supernatural means.”

“Animated with what?” he asked.

“Well, you would invoke a spirit to rise up into it,” I said, “whether it be the spirit of a dead person, or of something else, like a demon, or a god.”

He raised his eyebrows.

“Theoretically, of course,” I said. “I mean, that’s what some people believe.

I’m not saying I believe it.”

“I see. Could you put a spirit into a dead body, for instance?” he asked.

“Yes, you could use a dead body,” I answered. “Or just parts of one. Or you could stitch together parts of a dead body and animate then, like Dr.

Frankenstein’s monster. You could even combine the parts of different creatures, like how the Egyptian gods were depicted. Chimeras, they’re called.”

“So the gods of the ancient world could have been these demonically-animated Frankenstein creatures made from dead human and animal bodies?” he asked.

“That’s actually what I think they were,” I said, surprised at his insight.

“Crowley tried to bring a skeleton to life at his Black Temple on Chancery Lane,” said Chesterfield, once again revealing that he knew quite a lot about Crowley’s biography. “He was feeding it human blood and dead birds. I suppose that was an attempt to make a golem from a dead body, right?”

“Certainly,” I said. “And the Templars’ chief mascot, their secret captain, their lucky talisman and their idol of worship was a product of exactly this kind of sorcery.”

“Baphomet, you mean?” Chesterfield guessed.

“Yes,” I answered. “They say it started out as a skull with two leg bones.

Specifically, these bones belonged to the body of a girl named Yse, who had been loved by one of the original Templar knights. But she had died before their love was consummated, and so the knight took it upon himself to break open her coffin and have his way with her corpse. After he was done, he heard a voice speaking to him that is described as coming from ‘beyond the Void.’ It told him to shut up the grave and return nine months later, when he would find a son waiting for him.”

I looked at Chesterfield. He was literally on the edge of his chair, tilted forward so that the back legs were rising off the floor as he stared at me with his eyes wide, waiting for me to finish, like it was the best ghost story ever. I continued.

“The knight obeyed this instruction, and when he came back he found the skull and leg bones waiting for him. It spoke to him, promising to bring him luck in

business and battle if he brought it with him everywhere and took its advice.

That’s how the original Baphomet skull came to the Temple’s possession, and that supposedly had much to do with the extent of their worldly success.”

“Interesting,” said Chesterfield. “You know, just a couple of years ago we had a murder case in that De Vere hotel in Theobald Park—the one they made out of Lady Meux’s old mansion, right in front of where she had the Temple Bar parked. Some guy—a lawyer and a friend of Boris Johnson—killed a young teacher in his room there on Christmas Eve. Then he had sex with her dead body.

He said a voice in his head told him to take her there and do exactly that.”

He finished his story and stared at me. I didn’t react. So many weird things were connecting together, and this was just one more.

“It’s just that Temple Bar is part of our mystery,” he said, as if he had to explain the connection. “And Temple Bar is associated with Templars….”

“And lawyers,” I added. “That’s where the legal profession is headquartered. That’s where we get the bar exam that lawyers have to take. The practice of law is like a secret society in itself.” I was drifting off topic.

“I know,” said Chesterfield. “So the head talked to them and told them what to do, how to fight, how to build a banking empire….”

“How to blackmail the Papacy into giving them an exemption from all laws and all taxes….” I interrupted.

“So that’s the big secret of the Templars? A talking skull that gave them business advice?”

“Talking idols made from decapitated heads were quite common in the ancient East,” I said. “They were called *teraphim*, and they were generally made from the heads of sacrificed young boys. But the head of a prophet was considered quite powerful, and could be used to enslave the soul of the prophet, to make use of his power. This is what the Templars were rumored to have done with the mummified head of John the Baptist to make into Baphomet, the Baptizer of Wisdom.”

“But I thought Baphomet was a goat-headed human hermaphrodite?” said Chesterfield.

“I think they augmented it over time,” I replied. “Like the chimeras we mentioned. Perhaps only the head was original. I also think they made other versions of the idol for all their other chapters, using the same magical principles, but that somehow they were all connected together and couldn’t work independently. They were just conduits to the group’s shared patron demon.”

“And then they worshiped it as a god, right?” he said.

“I guess so. I mean, they bowed down to it and kissed it. Sacrificed to it.

Testified that it could ‘save’ them, make them ‘wealthy,’ and make their crops prosperous. They said that it gave them ‘wisdom.’ They had to take an oath of allegiance to it, and renounce Jesus Christ in the process. It sounds like a religion to me.”

“So they made up their own religion, like you were saying, out of bowing down to this idol, combined with other bits and bobs they collected from pagan cults, Satanic cults, Gnostic heresies, Greek and Roman mystery schools…. Am I missing anything?” he said.

“No, that’s it. And the god they made for themselves was like a compound of all these different gods and goddesses, as well as demons, from all the various traditions. Just like a Dr. Frankenstein’s monster, it was a bunch of parts from different bodies all stuck together. But they felt that it made their god and their religion stronger to be forged from so many different, even contradictory sources of power. They created an egregore that for a time took over the world, and still influences it immensely today.”

“An egregore?” he said.

“A collective thought-form animated by magic,” I replied. “The Baphomet golem was just the physical touchpoint that allowed the Baphomet egregore to manifest.”

“So Mithras and Cybele, though they may have been contradictory in many ways, could have been combined by the Templar magicians into one thoughtform that was more powerful than both of them,” he said.

“My thoughts exactly,” I told him.

“And when did Mithras celebrate his birthday. Christmas, right?” said Chesterfield.

“Yes, supposedly,” I replied. “But Franz Cumont thought that only came to be observed after Mithras was conflated with Sol Invictus towards the end of the empire. He said that Mithraic initiations typically took place during March, and that they particularly celebrated the time around the Spring Equinox. Just like Cybele’s Day of Blood and the rest of her holy week festivals.”

Just then, Agent Paris walked in and took a place at the table. He had been listening for several minutes from the next room while he was sitting at Chesterfield’s desk, printing out documents from his own laptop with Chesterfield’s computer. He had his own remarks to share.

“You know, what’s interesting?” he said. “The end of March, or early April, was the time of year when they finished the orgies and murdered everyone in *120 Days of Sodom*. There’s a bit of ambiguity because the Marquis never finished the novel. He ran out of paper when he was imprisoned in the Bastille. But he made an outline of how it would end. The 120 days of sex orgies started on November 1st. The child victims were kidnapped and taken to the Duke’s hidden mansion in the woods on Halloween Night.”

Chesterfield and I both leaned in, fascinated by what Paris was telling us.

He continued.

“Now, those orgies ended on February 28th of the following year, in which 10 of the people died. That was the spell of 120 days that the title refers to. But then he planned it to go into a new phase of total torture and murder over the following three weeks. More and more people’s tongues were to be torn out, eyes gouged out, fingers cut off, testicles crushed, organs removed or rearranged, etc., resulting in death for most of them. Twice as many people were to have died in these final festivities, which were set to end on March 21.”

“There does seem to be something about the Spring Equinox, and the entire Lenten season, which brings out human savagery,” I remarked, amazed by the coincidence but not sure what else to say about it.

“What’s also interesting is that Lent started this year on Valentine’s Day, and that’s also the birthday of Blake Rosenberg,” Chesterfield proffered.

“The former mayor of New York?” I said.

“Yeah.” He replied.

“What’s this got to do with him?” I asked.

“He’s the guy that owns Rosenberg Plaza, where the *mithraeum* is,” Paris replied, looking at me like I was stupid.

“Yeah, that’s the guy I’ve been researching for the last hour,” said Chesterfield. “A real weirdo. But he’s the sixth richest person in the world. 32 times richer than the Queen.”

“I had no idea!” I said. “I mean, I knew he was rich. But I guess I didn’t know how rich. Is it all from that financial news company he owns?”

“No, he started that *after* he got rich,” said Paris. He made it big selling the ‘Niptron Terminal.’ It’s literally a computer full of proprietary software that every single major trader in financial securities uses as a trading platform. Most of the trades made all over the world are going through one of his devices, and the users are all paying monthly licensing fees to his company.”

“Wow, I can’t believe I didn’t know that,” I said. “Doesn’t that mean his company could potentially interfere with trading on a massive scale if they wanted to? And doesn’t that mean they know every trader’s strategy before it’s executed? Couldn’t they use that information to cheat on their own trades, or sell it to others?”

“Or front-run the entire market,” said Paris, “using the data they’re skimming and high-frequency trading to drive the traders exactly where they want them to go.”

“Like sheep to a slaughter,” said Chesterfield. “I found tons of articles alleging that they were doing exactly that. The company’s been investigated for it numerous times, but the charges never stick.”

“As it is, he’s also pushing investment in gold,” said Paris. “And hoarding it himself. He’s always telling everybody that the markets are going to crash, and the currencies are going to fail, so they need to stockpile precious metal investments for Armageddon. That’s why he’s been nicknamed ‘Doomberg.’”

“That word *Niptron* sounds really familiar,” I said “I guess I must have heard of the terminal before.”

“Maybe,” said Paris. “But you probably also saw the word ‘Niptron’ when you were researching Mithraism. It’s the term they use in the ‘Lion’ grade to refer to the ‘baptism of fire’ that happens in the ritual, which is symbolic of the universal conflagration that will burn up the unrighteous at the end of time.”

“That’s right,” said Chesterfield. “At St. Martin’s Ludgate there’s a palindrome on the holy water font that says ‘ *Nipson anomemata me monan opsin*, which means ‘Wash my sin and not my face only.’ So *nipson* and *niptron* are different conjugations of the same word.”

“So do we think he was obsessed with Mithras way back when he started his company?” I asked “Back when the *mithraeum* was still sitting in a courtyard in the middle of Great Queen Street?”

“Probably,” said Chesterfield. “He’s also been obsessed with England for a long time, and doing business in the City for decades. But when the Queen offered to knight him, he ‘respectfully’ declined the offer, because it would have involved genuflecting to the queen during the investiture. He said he couldn’t

‘bow down’ to anybody for ‘personal reasons’ he couldn’t discuss.”

“That’s odd,” said Paris. “I also noted that his newspaper has published several articles in recent years implying that the monarchy is strapped for cash.”

“Have you found any connections between him and Thomas Weir?”

Chesterfield asked. “Or the Oriental Club? Or Director Pindar?”

“Just the Alphamstone connection,” Paris replied.

“What’s that? Chesterfield and I both said simultaneously.

“The Rector from the Church of St. Barnabas there—the one that has the Sator Square in it. . . .”

“Yes…” Chesterfield and I both said in exasperation.

“She’s just been named the Bishop of the London Diocese of the Church of England. And her first mass at St. Paul’s Cathedral will be on Easter.”

Our jaws dropped.

“What’s her name?” we both said.

“Consivia Springhole,” Paris replied.

“Springhole?” Chesterfield laughed. “It must have been tough getting through school with *that* name.”

“She spent her teen years in a girl’s hostel in Forest Gate in London,” said Paris. “But it closed in the 1960s. I haven’t figured out where she came from before that.”

“What else do you know about her?” asked Chesterfield.

“You won’t believe it,” said Paris.

“What?” we both said impatiently.

“She’s been the civil partner of Blake Rosenberg for the past twelve years.”

“What?” We both gasped.

“You’re telling me that Rosenberg, one of the world’s richest men, is matched up with the rector of that tiny village.”

“Yeah,” he went on. “And rumor has it, it’s an ‘open relationship.’ They have an adopted daughter. She’s twelve. She sometimes gets in the tabloids for competing at royal equestrian steeplechases.”

“Is that acceptable in the Church of England now?” I asked. “Bishops in open relationships?”

“Oh yeah, anything goes in Her Majesty’s Church now,” Chesterfield said, rolling his eyes.

“He’s a Jew too. Secular,” said Paris. “Most of his comments about Christianity have been pretty hostile. So the richest and perhaps most irreverent Jewish American in London is swinging with the leader of the Church for all of London. Bizarre, isn’t it? But I’m sure nobody’s complained because nobody wants to offend anybody.”

“Then there’s the fact that he hates women,” remarked Chesterfield. “So what’s he doing with a woman of the cloth, who is undoubtedly, due to the challenges of her nontraditional job, a feminist?”

“What’s your evidence that he hates women?” I asked.

“Women *and* children,” he answered. “According to the papers he’s made a number of disparaging remarks about females. He openly insists that the women who work for him maintain a sexy appearance at all times, no matter how serious the job supposedly is. He’s only allowed a handful of females to rise to the top of his business, and none of them had children.”

I thought about how this might fit in with the man’s reported obsession with Mithraism.

“In fact,” Chesterfield continued, “his female employees usually get demoted once their bosses learn that they’re pregnant. He once told a pregnant underling directly: ‘Kill it, or kill your career.’ Yet strangely, as Mayor of New York, he enthusiastically supported gay marriage so strongly that he insisted on performing the city’s first same-sex ceremony himself, on two of his own employees.”

Chesterfield turned his computer around to show me a newspaper article with a photo of Rosenberg, a Poindexter with brown hair, slightly crossed eyes and a medium build in an expensive navy suit. He was standing gleefully behind two men in equally costly suits, crowned with celebratory laurel wreaths and holding hands lovingly. In front of them stood their two adopted sons, ages 6 and 8.

“Employees of the City of New York? Or employees of Rosenberg Industries?”

“Of his own company,” Chesterfield answered. He was about to add something else, but there was a knock at the door. Everybody suddenly got quiet.

Chesterfield sat frozen, his eyes wide.

“That’s odd,” he whispered. “Normally visitors use the buzzer at the front door downstairs.” He was clearly alarmed, with no reason to expect that anybody would be calling on him now.

“Well it could be a neighbor,” Paris said in a conversational tone. But Chesterfield frantically quieted him.

“Shhh!”

He crept out of the kitchen and around the corner to the front door. Paris and I tip-toed quietly behind him. He looked through the peephole. Then he turned around, bewildered.

“There’s nobody there,” he whispered. Then he turned back around, looked through the hole again, and began turning the handle.

“Wait, aren’t you going to get your guns out?” I said to the two spooks.

“We don’t have *guns*,” Paris sneered. “It’s not the Wild West.”

Chesterfield opened the door. Indeed there was no one standing there. On the ground, however, there was an empty glass Coke bottle sitting there, sealed on top with the bloody severed head of a black bird.

We all gasped. Chesterfield shut the door rapidly. Then he gestured for Paris to come over to him. Paris appeared to hesitate, and looked around the room frantically. Then he took an autographed cricket bat from the wall where it was mounted a few feet away from him, and walked up right behind his partner with the bat held high. Chesterfield rolled his eyes and opened the door wide.

Still, no one was there. Both men crept out into the hallway and searched it, then quickly returned to the doorway. By this time I had noticed that there was a rolled-up piece of paper inside of the Coke bottle, and mentioned it to them.

Chesterfield put his jacket sleeve over his hand and picked up the bottle with disgust.

“God, I hope I don’t get rabies from this,” he said. He took the bottle into the kitchen and placed it on the counter, where we all gathered around to inspect it.

The dead bird’s head had been sealed in place with red wax. Chesterfield took a steak knife from one of the drawers and unsealed it. He placed the head on a paper napkin, which he then rolled up and put inside of a sandwich bag, then in the refrigerator.

After that, he took the bottle and broke the neck off on the side of the sink so that the shards would fall inside the sink. Then he shook the bottle upside down, and the rolled-up paper fell out onto the counter. He put the broken bottle and its neck inside of the fridge as well, right next to the bird head.

I didn’t ask, but presumed he was preserving these things as evidence, and planned to report the crime later. Nobody said anything. We were all trying to be as quiet as possible.

When Chesterfield returned to the counter, Paris was already using the steak knife to open the paper roll, which was also sealed with red wax. It looked like parchment. He unfurled it, and we all read the message, which appeared to be written in blood.

Sweet are the livers of the birds, but care reigns.

“What the fuck does that mean?” Chesterfield whispered. “What kind of sick weirdos are we dealing with?”

Agent Paris silently extended his hand to display his smartphone, on which he had already looked up the phrase from the scroll. It showed a website where these words were quoted as being written on the wall of a *mithraeum* in the Santa Prisca church in Rome.

Chesterfield rolled his eyes again. “Whatever. I’m getting my cat out of here. Who knows what they might do to her. Get your things ready, guys. We need to get going. Paris can’t be late for his meeting and we need to check out Rosenberg Plaza.”

“Are you going to report this as a crime?” I asked.

“Later,” he said, already exiting the kitchen. “It doesn’t matter right now.”

He was clearly quite frightened, and understandably eager to leave the apartment.

Paris and I packed up our briefcases. Chesterfield returned momentarily with Lenore the cat inside a carrier. We silently walked out the front door and cautiously proceeded down the hall to the elevator. But when we got to the bottom floor, there was another surprise waiting for us.

Sitting on the two pink sofas facing each other in the lobby were two Metropolitan police, along with the building’s manager—an old white man—and several other tenants. On the coffee table between the sofas was the decapitated body of a black bird, feet sticking straight up. One of the officers was examining a tag on the bird’s right foot.

Despite Chesterfield’s attempt to stop him, Paris headed right over to talk to the cops. Reluctantly, Chesterfield went over there as well, stooping under the burden of his cat carrier, and I followed behind. But by the time we got there, the short conversation was already wrapping up.

“I don’t know,” said Paris. “I’ll get in touch with my contacts and see what I can find out.” He shook the man’s hand and we all walked out of the building towards the car.

“So what did you find out?” I asked him in a hushed voice.

“They found it in the elevator. It’s one of the ravens from the Tower of London. The tag on the food IDs it. And it even has its wings clipped just like the Tower ravens. Yet when the cops called Tower security, they said the Raven Master has reported nothing amiss so far. Which means it’s a state secret. The Home Office has decided to keep it hush-hush. So the cops don’t even know the truth.”

At that moment, the cell phones of both agents rang simultaneously.

“But MI5 does,” Paris sighed, clicking his car key to unlock the doors. They both pulled out their phones while I took the cat and got into the car to wait for them.

Chapter 18: Omnia Cum Deo

The industrial use of semen will revolutionize human society.

—Aleister Crowley, diary entry, August 8, 1923

“It does everything but give you a blowjob!” Rosenberg had said of the new building for his London headquarters at an opening dinner for the office staff stationed there. It was an inside joke, a repetition of something he had once gotten in trouble for saying about the Niptron Terminal when it first came out.

But reports from employees who were already working there indicated that Rosenberg Plaza might *very well* be capable of giving you a blowjob. At least, that’s what it said in the *Wired Magazine* article I was reading on my laptop, connected to my mobile phone for data. I was reading it as we inched along in London’s morning rush hour in the Vauxhall. The article cited certain anonymous posts by alleged Rosenberg employees on 4chan, which I also began reading.

Rosenberg Plaza was built to be the “smartest building in Europe”

(construction having started back when England was considered part of Europe).

It was now the building that covered the largest land mass of any in the City of London. It supposedly was able to generate all of its own energy, due to being covered entirely in “solar windows.” In fact, it was actually generating more energy than it used, creating a surplus that was sold to the employees’ profit.

There were other schemes for generating energy within the building also.

Energy was harnessed from the exercise equipment in the gym, with workers given fixed times that they were expected to spend there. This was enforced with alarms programmed for them onto their employer-issued smart phones.

Reportedly, there was a secret power generator located in a subbasement of the main building that converted organic compost from employee lunches into energy. But only certain high-level executives had ever seen it, and they weren’t allowed to talk about it.

Because of the covert way in which the program was being run, nobody could officially confirm this, and therefore nobody knew how well the energy conversion was working, but presumably it was worth doing. The recycling of organic material had continued unabated from the time the building had opened for workers, almost a year earlier, until then, the day on which the public parts of the Plaza were going to be opened, including the *mithraeum*. Since there were actually two buildings in Rosenberg’s new Plaza—including a smaller one built to lease to other tenants, connected by a sky bridge, I wondered if the other tenants were required to participate in Rosenberg’s organic recycling scheme, and if all of its bathrooms were hooked up to the same system.

I wonder if the other tenants of the Plaza are required to participate in Rosenberg’s organic recycling scheme, I thought to myself.

From my reading, I further learned that the Rosenberg office building was super energy-efficient because it was equipped with a “digital ceiling.” This means that the building itself responded to people’s needs by spying on them constantly to figure out exactly when and where they required light, heat, or air conditioning. For this, cameras and microphones were everywhere, along with other sensors of every imaginable type, feeding data into a network of AIs that ran the entire Plaza as one integrated system. All artificial light was provided by a field of hexagonal white “flowers” containing high-efficiency LEDS that covered the ceilings. But this was largely supplemented by the gigantic sunroof on top that supplied natural light. There were also several much smaller sunroof portals that channeled sunlight into specific areas of the building.

The building also contained quite a lot of amenities to provide comfort and ease for those who worked there. Robotic vending machines on wheels could be ordered at the push of a button, so people could work at a desk for long hours without having to leave to get food. In fact, the digital ceiling allowed them to program hand signals or other body movements that could be used as passwords to summon food, or the police, or an ambulance, or simply to tell one’s subordinate to come immediately.

This was possible, of course, because it was sensing and tracking everybody’s movements at all times. All of these features could also be utilized with a smart phone. Indeed, everybody had to use their phone every day just to find an available desk, work station or meeting room, which is why there were phone charging stations everywhere. It was better than the Clapper, better than a Life Alert button. A complete George Jetson office. A Starship Enterprise docked in the City of London.

But it got weirder. Of course it did.

Rosenberg had been an early investor in sex robot industry also. Thus, my presumption that the building itself could provide sexual favors was not unfounded. In fact, I next discovered a 4chan thread, barely a week old, in which several alleged Rosenberg employees discussed the hidden secrets of the building known only to the elites among the organization. They said that there was a special bathroom, available only to certain employees (all of them men) which was equipped with a robotic glory hole.

Quite literally, there was a hole in the wall, covered with a small round door, in which a man could insert his penis and receive, at the push of a button, an artificially-induced orgasm. Afterwards, he would press another button, which caused the door to close again, and the hole would rinse itself with a sterilizing solution, making itself ready for the next user. There was a barbarous code word for this special room: “Qaphqa.”

None of the people talking about the glory hole would admit to having used it. I suspected some were lying about that. However, there didn’t seem to be the same kind of shame about using the company’s sex robots at office parties, which several of them had apparently been treated to. I thought it was odd that this didn’t embarrass them, because it basically amounted to the same thing in my mind. I also found myself wondering if the semen was being recycled like the other organic material in the building.

Heck, maybe even the toilets are hooked up to the generator, I thought, recalling that both urine and feces were thought of by alchemists as substances of great power. I remembered that Hennig Brand had discovered phosphorus in 1669 while performing alchemical experiments with urine. More recently, I recalled, a team of Nigerian girls had built a urine-powered generator just a few years back. So it seemed possible, though improbable.

Then I read another detail, about the women’s bathrooms in Rosenberg Plaza—those for general female employee use—that seemed to fit in with such a scenario. The toilets were equipped with separate flush buttons for liquid and solid waste.

Nothing too weird about that, I thought at first. *They do that at the airports in Portland. Wastes less water that way. The liquid flush uses less than the solid flush.*

But then I read the next few lines of a 4chan post.

To be clear: we are *specifically* asked to ensure that there is no solid waste in our urine flushes. After each flush, the bowl uses sound waves to cleanse itself. I’ve never tested it, because people who make mistakes around here get fired the first time. But I’ll bet that if you mixed your poop and pee, the building would know, and you would get caught right away.

Then there was another comment from the same person, adding another amazing detail:

There aren't many women working here, and most of those are past menopause. But I've heard that this handful of younger women get the day off whenever it's the first day of their period. There's a special room in the first basement where these women lay all day on a modified dissection table —nicknamed 'the Periodic Table—

equipped with conduits and a reservoir for collecting the blood. She gets paid for doing this instead of working all day, and is forbidden from discussing it with other employees, although somebody obviously discussed it with me.

She would not be able to hide the fact that she's menstruating even if she wanted to. The building knows you're going to menstruate two days before you start, and sends an alert to your smartphone confirming your appointment in the subterranean menstrual hut.

Is Rosenberg secretly harnessing some age-old alchemical technology in his

"smart building"? I wondered.

"I think you should have a look at these aerials of the Plaza," Paris said, handing me a stack of documents. On top was a color print-out showing a bird's eye photo of the whole site.

"Tell me if you see any symbolism there," he said.

I looked. The main building was an odd shape, kind of like a keystone, but not really. The other, smaller building resembled a coffin shape. The sides of the building and the rims of the roofs were a shimmering gold color, while the rest of the rooftops were filled in with powder blue. In the middle of the roof of the main building was a large white circular bubble, which I thought to be the sunroof.

I squinted my eyes and tried turning it around several times. I noticed that the shape formed by the five streets surrounding the site—Cannon Street, Queen Street, Queen Victoria Street, Bucklersbury, and Walbrook—resembled the diamond shape used in the Superman logo.

But what could that possibly mean? I wondered.

Then I noticed how the triangular pieces of sidewalk on the ends of the diamond completed it, like the horns on a bull, to form a very particular triangle shape. It was the same triangle shape I had seen in my mind’s eye when I was at Stratford House looking at the map made from the bull intestines. Cannon Street and Victoria Street seemed to encompass the contents of the triangle like the blades on a pair of scissors.

N
W
E
S
Queen Victoria Street
Bucklersbury
Queen Street
Watling Street
Walbrook
Cannon Street
1
2
3
4
5
1. Rosenberg Plaza Main
2. Rosenberg "Coffin House"
2. Mansion House
3. New Court
4. Walbrook Building

I decided to thumb through the rest of the papers. Next in the stack was a blueprint for a trefoil spiral ramp that apparently wrapped all the way around the larger building in lieu of a staircase. It wasn’t exactly a “triskelion”—the Celtic symbol made from three spirals—although it resembled one. Instead, it was all made from one line, wound in a way that almost seemed like a Mobius strip staircase from an M.C. Escher drawing.

I saw that the building had been constructed in a certain way that most of the above-ground floors were entirely open in the middle, and almost every such floor was visible from every other floor when standing near the center. The ramp connected them all, so that if you rode a skateboard from the top to the bottom, you would visit all of the sides of the building, which was made from six huge walls surrounding seven pillars.

The main lobby on the ground floor, however, had a full ceiling. But it was dominated by an object in the center called “the Vortex.” I could not tell what it was from looking at the pictures, so I searched the 4chan board for employee posts about it. I found one, written by a janitor who worked there.

Apparently, it was some kind of glass-enclosed decorative feature containing what appeared to be water and other fluids of various “earth tone” colors, swirling around inside. It was made in the shape of a “curved triangle.” The management of the company was very secretive about the Vortex, what it contained, and what it emptied into. Nobody knew if it had a purpose beyond mere decoration. They only let certain people perform maintenance on it, and none of the lower-level employees had ever talked to those people.

The janitor theorized that the toilets and the glory holes were hooked up to pipes that somehow emptied into the Vortex. He thought it was actually a fountain of untreated sewer water purporting to be a decoration. He also said there were pipes leading to the Vortex from the “Coffin House” (their actual nickname for the coffin-shaped auxiliary building that was ostensibly empty at present). Then from there, he said, pipes led to the generator in the basement.

As I read on about Rosenberg Plaza, particularly the large building that housed the company’s own headquarters, I learned that instead of having individual offices or even cubicles for the employees, the space was constructed of hexagonal pods put together like Legos. There was usually one side left open as an entrance, which could be easily rearranged at will. Individual offices were discouraged, and there were only a few for certain executives.

So people shared hexagons, and shared (or perhaps competed for) the specially-designed L-shaped desks lining the sides of the hexagons. None of them had doors, so they were easy to move from room to room. The ratio of workers to desks was 2.5 to 1. It was something called “hot-desking.” This was apparently all the rage in the European business world. There, a philosophy called *het nieuwe werken* (“the new work”) was being foisted upon every poor sucker who needed to earn an income.

This approach, the literature quoted Rosenberg as saying, “encourages people to work together.” It forced them to move around constantly, rather than being stuck at a single desk. People kept their personal items in storage lockers.

Even these they were encouraged to change constantly. It was against the rules to use the same locker three days in a row.

A labyrinth of hexagons, I thought. *Just like a beehive.* Then I remembered the design of the library in Jorge Luis Borges’ surrealist novel *The Lottery in Babylon*, which was almost identical. There, the hexagonal cubicles contained books made from all possible combinations of a 25-letter character set (most of them gibberish). The similarity was so close it couldn’t be accidental.

To me, someone who suffers from acute social anxiety, values privacy, and would stay home from school as a child to avoid group projects, the thought of working in a place like this seemed like an absolute nightmare. But, after a minute of thought, it occurred to me that this whole design—the hexagonal pods and the spiral ramp--was probably meant to facilitate the movement of robots. It wasn’t just about the robots that were already serving food to employees there, or cleaning up their food crumbs, or sucking their dicks at office parties.

In the near future, surely robots will soon replace the vast majority of those employees, I thought. *And robots don’t need privacy.*

In fact, the machines that would soon be running the place would be better able to spy on the few humans that were left if there weren’t any walls or ceilings in the way. A little more reading confirmed that the place was patrolled by “robocops” at night. These tin cans on wheels were not armed, but alerted the security team to anything unusual.

Also, as per the concept of “smart cleaning,” the sensors around the building collected data on “all activity” within. This was so that the cleaning robots would know exactly when, where and how something needed to be cleaned without having to be told. If you put your gum underneath the desk you were borrowing, a robot would immediately come clean it up, and probably also tattle on you to your boss.

I thought again about my theory that Rosenberg Plaza housed an alchemical laboratory converting the urine, feces, semen, and menstrual blood of his workers into energy, and/or other products. It occurred to me that such a system could easily be masked within the labyrinth of long tubes that were shown on the plans running throughout all of the walls, ceilings and ramps for “radiant climate control.” These were all connected to a large cluster of objects in the first subbasement labeled “water storage tanks” in the blueprints. But they were of different shapes and sizes, all networked together with pipes, and clearly not all just for storing water.

Their function is being masked, I thought silently. *This is the secret generator.*

Then I noticed that the largest of the tanks was positioned directly beneath

“the Vortex.” Pipes were also shown connecting the Vortex directly to the other tanks in the basement. It was a confusing circle of connections. I couldn’t tell what was flowing into what.

I kept these observations to myself. Chesterfield asked to look at the papers, so I handed them over, pointing out the unique properties of the spiral ramp. This sparked something in him. His eyes lit up.

“The triskelion was a womb symbol to the Celts,” he said, looking at me proudly. “Often there was a sun symbol in the middle, which could be taken to represent the rebirth of the sun god. It could be related. On Rosenberg’s roof he’s got a white circular sunroof to represent that part of the symbol.”

“And the site as a whole looks like the Superman logo,” Paris said. “Which, if you think about it, resembles a female pelvis.”

I was shocked by both of their contributions. Most amazing was that Paris had also noted the resemblance to the Superman symbol. The resemblance to female anatomy had occurred to me too, but I had dismissed it, since I didn’t take the Superman connection seriously in the first place.

Now I thought about the fact that Superman wore what appeared to be a pair of red bikini briefs on the outside of his blue leggings, as if to draw attention to the pelvic shape. A tingle went down the back of my neck. I knew we were on to something.

“OK,” I said. “I’ve never heard that before, but if you thought of it, that means somebody else probably did too.”

I contemplated the origin of the word “Super Man” involving the

“overman” theories of Nietzsche, and how Hitler adopted them, thinking there was a new “Master Race” on the horizon. According to Herman Rauschning, Hitler once said of this:

I have seen the new man. He is intrepid and cruel. I was afraid of him.

Then there was the first use of the term “Superman” in English. This came from Aleister Crowley’s novel *Moonchild*, the one where he wrote about creating a child with divine parentage through sex magick. Regarding this process, he had said:

…the idea has been almost universal in one form or another; the wish has always been for a Messiah or Superman, and the method some attempt to produce man by artificial or at least abnormal means.

My meditation on these subjects was broken when I realized that we were going by St. Paul’s Cathedral again. Then before I knew it, the car stopped at a stoplight between two office buildings. Paris turned around to speak to me.

“OK, you guys can get out.”

“Where are we?” I asked.

“Rosenberg Plaza,” he said. “The ribbon-cutting will happen on the Walbrook side, east, right in front of the entrance to the *mithraeum*. Then go on to the conference room. That’s where Rosenberg will give a speech.”

“Should we bring the cat?” I said.

The question was directed at Chesterfield, who was already getting out of the car.

“No, don’t worry. I’ll take care of her. I have a special place where I can put her until it’s safe. Try to figure out what’s going on at this building. I’ll let you know how my meeting goes.”

I said ‘goodbye’ and got out. Before I closed the door, Chesterfield leaned over the back seat, where his cat had been sitting next to me, and stuck his fingers through the bars of the cage. He told her he would miss her, and then thanked Paris for taking care of his “little girl.” Then the other agent drove off, leaving us standing next to the “bulky, impenetrable mass” that housed the Temple of Mithras.

I looked down the street to get a scope of the entirety of the site. We were on the western corner of the “Superman logo” formed by the site, with the buildings on our right. I looked down the street, north-west, and saw the division between the two structures, with the footpath leading down between them to the “arcade” as it was called in the paperwork I’d seen. There we would surely find the promised “dining and retail establishments” that the plans said would be there. Having only had a scone since the regurgitated meal at the pub the previous night, I was hungry.

“Let’s find a restaurant,” I said. “We have 40 minutes to kill until the ribbon-cutting.”

“OK, sure,” Chesterfield agreed.

“What’s the coffin-shaped building for?” I wondered aloud as we walked past it. “I didn’t see much about it in the design plans.”

“I saw it in the permit applications,” said Chesterfield. “They were at the back of the stack. Supposedly they’re going to sublease it. But I’ll bet it’s still completely empty. It’s just for real estate speculation. That’s what most of the office buildings in the City are used for, honestly. Hardly any of them are more than half-full. It’s a shame.”

“Did you notice anything else in the permit apps?” I asked.

“Yes, actually, he replied. “There used to be a tunnel from the basement of Bucklersbury House, which is the building that used to be here. That tunnel connected to the basement of Mansion House, where the Lord Mayor lives.

Rosenberg petitioned to keep this structure and incorporate it into his new building. Rosenberg is quite friendly with the Lord Mayor. So I do wonder what they may be getting up to together.”

We turned down the walkway between the buildings—which, according to the street sign, was actually the “historic Watling Street,” now restored to its former trajectory, but with a stone tile floor and a glass ceiling. Within a few feet we immediately noticed a sign for “Oz Pizza and Ping-Pong Parlour,” with Lewis Carroll characters painted in the windows. A hand-written sign taped to the inside of the door advertised their ping-pong tournament for that afternoon, coinciding with the *mithraeum* opening.

I realized that this was the place Drexella the police lady had mentioned. I found something about it inherently revolting. But Chesterfield wanted to go in, and I was starving, so I went along.

The restaurant contained six dining tables and two ping-pong tables, beyond which was a set of doors that seemed to lead out into the lobby of the Rosenberg office building. So far nobody had arrived yet for the “tournament.”

The place was empty except for us and the greasy-skinned white teenage boy covered with tattoos and piercings who worked behind the counter. He looked like he was either on drugs or suffering from some neurologic problem. He stared at us with an open mouth.

In addition to the pictures of Alice and the Cheshire Cat painted on the windows, there were murals with similar themes on the walls inside. Lamps were mounted on the walls, all held in place with plastic human arms. Behind the counter, there was a framed painting of a trinacria, which is a gorgon head with three legs for a body, and not much else.

A trinacria is a heraldic emblem, part of the flag of Sicily. It’s associated with a legend that I was familiar with. The story is that the legs represent the three pillars which, according to myth, hold up the island. The head in the middle signified a little boy named Colapesce. It was said that he voluntarily swam under

Try our
Signeture
Pie:
£9. 9 9
The
BEAST!
10.8"
Oz Pizza
&
Ping-Pong
On Watling St.

the island and replaced one of the pillars, which was broken, with himself, thereafter serving to help bear that burden eternally.

The owners of Oz Pizza must be Sicilian, I thought.

Other wall art, however, was not as easily explained. In the center of the main wall was a poster advertising their "signeture pizza" (sp.), which was called

"the Beast." What struck me even more than the awful typo in a professionally-produced full-color poster was the odd way in which the pizza was sliced and the toppings arranged.

The pie, which, at "10.8 inches," was no bigger than their regular "large" size (11 inches), featured only four pieces of pepperoni, accompanied by just one other topping: a single black olive. The pepperoni pieces were all overlapping in the center. On the bottom were two pieces, intersecting so as to form a *vesica pisces* shape. Then on top of this, in the center and slightly below, were two more pieces, both intersecting with each other, and with the other two. Together, if you traced the outline of the shape formed by the stack of pepperoni, you would see a classic trefoil clover shape.

The pizza itself had been cut so as to form a seven-pointed unicursal star.

This meant that there was an outer ring with fourteen slices—seven thin ones and seven fat ones. These surrounded five tiny triangles and a heptagon in the center.

However, the pepperoni slices were stacked on top of these, so that you could only see two of the tiny triangles, and only three sides of the heptagon. This meant that the pizza had been cut and cooked before the pepperoni was put on.

Over the top of the upper portion of the pizza, the price—£9.99—was written in a black font with a red border, but each digit was slightly misaligned with the others.

It makes no practical sense to design it this way, I thought. *And why call it*

“the Beast” when it’s not especially large and doesn’t have an extraordinary amount of toppings—in fact, hardly any?

I stared at the poster. So did Chesterfield. Then we stared each other. I shrugged my shoulders and mouthed the words “I have no idea.”

Chesterfield, apparently more hungry than curious, turned back around to the counter and ordered.

“A simple slice of cheese pizza, please,” he said. The boy at the counter continued to stare at his face for 20 seconds before he registered a belated response.

“Oh, sure,” he said. “Anything for you?” he asked me.

“No thanks,” I replied.

“But you said you were hungry,” argued Chesterfield. “Come on, I’ll buy again.”

“No thanks,” I said. “I lost my appetite.” I was feeling uneasy there for some reason, but I didn’t know why. The boy put a slice of cheese pizza in the oven for Chesterfield.

“How long has this place been open?” I asked.

“Oh, about four months,” the boy responded. “My Mum got me a job here.

She knows the guy who owns the building.”

“You mean Rosenberg?” I said. “She knows him?”

“Yeah, I guess,” he replied. Clearly, he either didn’t know the details of who the man was and how his mother knew him, or else he just wasn’t going to tell us.

He picked at his fingernails for a minute and then pulled the pizza out of the oven.

“Do you want the Drizzle?” he asked Chesterfield, holding it out on a paper plate.

“The what?” the agent replied, bewildered.

“Oh, the Drizzle is our special hot sauce,” he said. “You want to try it?” He held up a clear squeeze bottle filled with a red liquid.

“OK, sure,” said Chesterfield. The boy put the plate with the hot pizza slice down on the counter, then proceeded to pour “the Drizzle” onto the pizza.

Something about the odor of the sauce, and the spooging sound it made as he squeezed it out, caused me to experience a sharp wave of nausea. This brought clarity. As he applied the Drizzle with more care than a real moron could muster, forming a perfect counter-clockwise triangular spiral, I flashed on where I had seen that symbol before.

It was from the FBI’s website, on their official list of symbols used by the pedophile community. The spiral triangle was the international sign of “boylovers.” It had been infamously found on the logo of a politically-connected pizza parlor in Washington D.C. that some believed was part of a child trafficking ring. This caused a scandal that led to the company changing their logo in December of 2016.

Then, while thinking about Aleister Crowley and his voracious defense of pederasty in his own writings, I instinctively clasped my hand to my mouth in horror as the next realization hit me. Looking again at the poster for the “Beast” pizza, it now occurred to me what it represented. I used my phone to do a Google Image Search, just to confirm what I already knew.

Sure enough, the pizza on the poster was decorated to look exactly like the “Signet of the Beast” designed by Aleister Crowley. It was a symbol printed, among other places, as an illustration to go with a text by Crowley called “Liber Oz,” which proclaimed the “right” of his followers to “love” whoever and however their “will” desired. It also stated their “right to kill” anybody who got in their way. The Signet consisted of a heptagram inside of a circle, with four circles in the middle, represented on the poster by the pepperoni.

The source I read couldn’t explain what the circles in the middle truly meant, except to say that their resemblance to a penis and testicles was "intentional." At the bottom of the Signet, Crowley had put the number "666," a number he identified with personally, as he fancied himself the Antichrist. On the poster, the Signet had been cleverly turned upside-down so that the three sixes became the three nines of the pizza's price.

I turned back to Chesterfield to explain this to him. But then I saw him chomping down happily on the disgusting slice of filth. I instinctively grabbed it out of his mouth.

"Don't eat it!" I shouted. He and the teenage boy looked at me with confusion. I grabbed Chesterfield by the necktie and led him out the door, tossing the pizza slice in the garbage can near the exit. He wisely said nothing until we got outside, but he put a five-pound note in the boy's tip jar, presumably to make up for my rudeness.

"What's wrong?" he said. "I was hungry! And I *paid* for that!"

"There are Crowley sigils and pedophile symbols all over that place," I said.

"God knows what they put in 'the Drizzle.' Who knows what they even put in the cheese."

"What exactly do you mean?" he asked.

I showed him how the pizza on the poster corresponded to the Signet of the Beast. Then I explained how much Crowley valued the ingestion of sperm, menstrual blood, urine and feces as spiritually beneficial. I told him how Crowley's cult members would put these substances in their Eucharist cakes, called "Cakes of Light," for their "Gnostic Mass" rituals, which were open to the public. Guests attending these rituals were not warned of the cakes' contents.

As I elucidated, Chesterfield began to turn green. He walked to a nearby water-fountain and rinsed his mouth out. Then he stuck his fingers in and appeared to contemplate gagging himself to purge his stomach. But he decided not to.

“Now think,” I said to Chesterfield. “You know we’re following the trail of some weird occultists who conjure demons, fuck kids, murder people and chop them up. Didn’t you even think for a minute that there might be cum in the pizza before you started putting it in your mouth?”

“No that didn’t occur to me,” he answered, embarrassed and annoyed. “So I guess wine and cheese at the lecture is off the menu too, right? Speaking of which, let’s get going. I want to get a nice spot up front so I can get a good look at this boyfucker who sells cum pizza and worships Mithras.” He began to walk southeast down the arcade towards Walbrook.

“He’s probably just subleasing to the cum pizza people,” I said. As I walked away, I noticed a small sign in the window that I hadn’t seen before. It said, so strangely:

PIZZA BY THE HOUR

INQUIRE WITHIN

I took a photo of it with my phone. Then I saw the kid that worked there walking towards the glass door, staring angrily at me. I hustled to catch up with Chesterfield.

We got to the end of the arcade and turned left. There we saw a crowd of maybe 60 people all huddled around one of the doors of the building. The street had been blocked off both ways by police tape, and there were a couple of cops on each end standing guard lazily.

We worked our way to the front. We saw that there were posters on the walls identifying this as the location of the temple. These included photos of some of the artifacts inside, and of the archeology that had taken place over the previous few years. The historian inside of me began to get excited.

Within a few moments, there was a bit of clamor and commotion.

Rosenberg and his entourage, including several bodyguards, were arriving from the north side of the street. The lead man himself wore a tailored black pinstripe suite with brown stripes, and a red rose on the lapel. An assistant held the unavoidable giant scissors, which, after some cheers and a forgettable introduction in Rosenberg's nasally voice, were used by him to cut the ribbon,

bringing even more applause. Then the doors opened. Rosenberg promised to give a speech to those interested in conference room in thirty minutes. Then he and his bodyguards disappeared around the corner.

"Well, if the Anti-Christ is a Poindexter, then that may well be the Anti-Christ," said Chesterfield, acknowledging the inherent dorkiness of the rich and powerful man that we'd just seen.

After waiting for the people in front of us to go inside the temple, we got our turn. I let Chesterfield pay the suggested donation of nine pounds for both of us.

The first room we entered was a gallery full of artifacts and framed photos.

Off to the right there was a staircase leading down into the temple itself. Not wanting to compete with the crowds to get down there, I suggested we look at the artifacts first. That is where our fears about the *mithraeum* were confirmed.

The first thing we saw that we recognized was the bust of Serapis with the *modius* on his head. It had been discovered along with the other artifacts when the *mithraeum* was first found beneath Bucklersbury House in 1954. It had also been featured in the film *Easter Sunday April Fool*, when the boy had been castrated among the ruins.

A few feet away from that, we found, in a glass case, the little metal casket on a chain, containing the round strainer, which had also been used in the film.

The plaque next to the case described it as a device for straining and administering psychoactive herbs during rituals. Depicted on the side of the casket was a person, who looked like a child to me, emerging from a rectangular box on the ground while an upright-standing grown man gripped his arm to help him up.

I thought it might be Mithras emerging from the stone. But the plaque said that it probably illustrated a death and rebirth ritual practiced by the cult. In this rite, the initiate would be drugged into a comatose state, buried, and then let out of the tomb upon awakening. I knew it very well could have been a little boy because I had read that Mithra’s temples accepted applicants as young as seven.

Then, as if we didn’t already know what we were dealing with, we saw the final confirmation. The posters of the original dig underneath Bucklersbury House

were unmistakable. These were the stones that the boy in the film had been lying on when he was castrated. The site had been opened in 1954, and then the stones of the *mithraeum* were moved elsewhere just a few weeks later so that they could finish building Bucklersbury House. The first (very poor) “restoration”

of the ruins didn’t go on display in Temple Court until 1956. So the castration rite had happened sometime between those two events.

Chapter 19: Rrose Mountain

I am the son of a man and a woman from what I have been told. This astonishes me… I believed I was something more.

—Comte de Lautreamont, *Maldoror*

Thus we were already feeling very heavy in our hearts, reeling from the implications of what we'd found, when we made our way down the stairs into the *mithraeum* itself, which was one floor underground. Inside, there was nothing visually surprising. It was my first time being inside such a temple, but it had been restored well, so that it looked exactly how I'd imagined a *mithraeum* should.

They all generally followed the same plan, and this did too: one long aisle, leading to an apse with an altar in front of it. The *taurtoctony*, depicting Mithras slaying the bull, was mounted on the wall behind the altar. All along the aisle were stone couches where members would have slouched back and watched the proceedings, or whatever else they did together. It seemed like they all did to me: empty and austere. They were made to look like large open caves, and this they achieved.

What struck me was not the décor or design, which was as expected.

Instead it was the thickness of the atmosphere. Even stuffed with a crowd, the temple felt like it was full of choking energy: fear, anger, and pain. The pungent smell of a putrid flavor of incense came to my nose, even though I knew it was only coming from my mind. I asked Chesterfield if he sensed it too, but he said that he wasn't sure. He suggested that maybe it was just because being underground again was bringing back memories of my kidnapping by Leopold.

We began to follow several of the others back through the gallery, then through the door in the back that led to a large circular hallway. The walls were lined with blond wood paneling, and they curved up in a concave manner. We made our way up the ramp towards the ground floor. It was really more like a tunnel, spiraling up to the next floor and no doubt part of the spiral ramp that ran through the rest of the building. It also led back down the other way to another sub-basement below, but that way was cordoned off.

As we emerged from the underground level and into the light, I looked up at the ceiling and saw that much of it was sunlight, coming through a large piece of glass in the ceiling on top of which was a fountain of dirty water. Hidden jets on the sides were constantly injecting a denser, brown substance that swirled around in the mix. I could see why people thought that the Vortex contained sewer water. I also noted that, instead of merely being a "rounded triangle," as the janitor on 4chan had described it, the shape more closely resembled the Superman logo with rounded corners. I took note of the coincidence.

I also noticed that, once we got to the second floor, so that we were above the Vortex, the carpet on the ramp was lined on both sides with a transparent tube running constantly with a yellow-orange fluid.

These are the tubes carrying urine to the Vortex, I thought.

Cordons and posted signs encouraged us to keep moving up the ramp, while discouraging us from visiting the lobby or any of the other intervening floors, promising that the conference room was "ahead." So we kept going, until we were almost at the top of the building, on what must have been the ninth floor, as there were only ten and just one up above us.

There we found the conference room, surrounded by blonde wooden columns interspersed with clear glass. The podium, projector screen, and red plastic chairs could be seen from the ramp. Along the side of the wall on the left were two tables serving wine and cheese, which Chesterfield and I knew to avoid.

As we all filed in, I saw that the initial crowd of 60 had thinned to about 25.

I spotted a familiar figure sitting in the front row. It was Drexella, the lady cop. As soon as I recognized her, she turned around, smiled, and waved, like she had felt my eyes on her. We had no choice but to sit down next to her.

“Hey Drexella,” I said. “Nice to see you again.”

“Yep,” she said, smacking gum as she spoke. “Wouldn’t miss it. Rosenberg’s a family friend. I’ve been waiting for this for *years*.”

“Really?” said Chesterfield. “We just met someone downstairs whose mother is also a family friend of his.”

“Oh you mean Dennis? At Oz Pizza? Yep, that’s my boy,” she said proudly. I cringed. “We’ll be on the same ping-pong team later on at the tournament.”

“So how exactly do you know Mr. Rosenberg?” Chesterfield asked.

But just then, the lights were dimmed over the audience, and the spotlight over the podium was put on. Within a few seconds, Rosenberg entered from the back, this time wearing a red Phrygian cap, and everybody clapped. He took the stage and began to speak.

“Just call me Papa Smurf” was his first line, and everybody howled with laughter. He then began a speech about the history of the City of London, and to symbolic connections between the beliefs of the Mithraic cult, which I will attempt to paraphrase below. He said:

It is fitting that the temple which we presented to you fully restored for the first time today was once the site of homage to gods of not one, but three different aspects of finance.

First, of course, it was a temple to Mithras, the god of contracts. The Mithraic cult was called the Syndicoi—the “People of the Handshake,” from which we get our word “syndicate.” This is based on the deal that was struck, according to Mithraic mythology, between Sol and Mithras. After Sol and all of his henchmen, the other planetary Archons, had been defeated by Mithras in his march to the highest sphere in heaven, they made an agreement with each other to share both the power and the glory of the Sun, which they sealed with a handshake, before sitting down to break bread together.

Some historians believe that the very origin of the custom of shaking hands, performed millions of times a day now, most often in a business setting, had its origins with the Mithras cult. This agreement between Sol and Mithras, which Mithraists believed kept the Sun rising and setting each day, was based upon mutual trust in the sacred nature of the oath. This is why they would invoke the name of Mithras as the enforcer of oaths whenever a new contract was signed. This same ethic, as we all know, is what lies behind everything that happens in business and finance today, ever since the Knights Templar invented the concept of the checking system.

I noticed right away several things about this speech. For one thing, Rosenberg’s analysis of Mithraism was very similar to my own, and not entirely consistent with what is right now commonly agreed upon by historians. What I mean is that for some reason they cannot see that the images of Sol and Mithras together clearly show him defeating the Sun god and forcing him to bow down in supplication.

This is shown happening before the handshake, and before the shared meal was permitted to occur (which so many have claimed is the origin of the Christian Eucharist). Rosenberg chose not to mention the specific imagery of the Sun bowing down to Mithras. But he did relate the meaning of it.

Another thing I noted was that he chose to use the term “planetary Archons.” I couldn’t think of any author on the subject of Mithras who has referred to the planetary powers he ruled over as “Archons.” This term brings up specifically Gnostic connotations, and implies a negative view of their role in the cosmos as tyrannical. According to Gnostic thought, we are living in an invisible jail cell, made of illusion, and the planetary Archons are our captors, the rulers of our sad fate in this lonely world of despair.

To interpret this view as being present in Mithraism, as no previous author on the subject had done, would mean that Mithras was a heroic figure precisely because he fought and subdued these powers. It also indicates that he himself became the chief archon then, and thereafter allowed the others to rule underneath him as subordinates. He would then have essentially become the new Demiurge, the new chief jail warden. This viewpoint, I believe, was further reflected in the rest of Rosenberg's speech. He said: Now this temple wasn't always exclusively a temple to Mithras. They found statues of other gods in there as well. One was Serapis, a.k.a.

Hades, Pluto, or Dispater: the god of the underworld, and the god of the mineral wealth beneath the earth. This is where we get the word

"plutocrat" for those who rule with the power of gold and silver.

They also found here a statue of Mercury, the wily patron of both commerce and thievery. From his first day of birth, he was making business deals with Apollo, yet another figure to hold the title of "sun god" … There's so many of them….

He trailed off for a minute and coughed, staring off into the corner. He appeared to succumb to a short personal mental trip before shaking it off. Then he continued:

"But we know that Mercury's quicksilver-tongued promises are not to be trusted. We also know that gold and silver lose their shine if we lose our trust in one another. If the Mithraic value of the sacred oath is not honored, all money systems fail. All societies fail when that happens. This is why the real basis of the wealth of a society today *is* this mutual trust.

The ranks of the Mithraic cult throughout the Roman Empire were initially filled with soldiers. Most of them were foreign legionnaires, rather than native Romans. And these, as any student of history knows, were not free men, but slaves.

In the Roman Empire, virtually every person with any sort of functional job was officially a slave to some landholder. The landholders did not work.

They owned people who would do everything for them. Even the office-holders in the municipal governments were not free men, with the occasional exception of someone who was able somehow to purchase or earn their freedom.

This is why these government office-holders were called, in Latin, *servi publici*—‘public servants.’

When I served as the Mayor of New York some years ago, I often thought about this fact. I can tell you that being a billionaire businessman makes you feel a thousand times more powerful than being a mere elected official. And most of the public servants I’ve met in my time would have to admit that they are slaves to the businessmen who are truly pulling the strings behind the scenes.

Because Roman soldiers were slaves, it was only fitting that their god, Mithras, wore the Phrygian cap, like I’m wearing now. It was the symbol of a freed slave. Mithras identified himself with Saturn, the highest of the planetary Archons, and Saturn also wore the Phrygian cap.

During Saturnalia, the Roman winter solstice festival, slaves were given temporary freedom, and the whole social order was upended.

Slaves would wear these hats, now called liberty caps, as a symbol of their freedom. This was because Saturn, the alleged founder of the Italian civilization, was remembered for having ruled over a “Golden Age” of abundance in the ancient past, during which no one was compelled to work for another.

Within the Temples of Mithras, the social order was always upended in the same manner. Even in the later years, when the Emperor himself had joined and the *latifundia* were flocking to *mithraeums*, we find in the records the names of slaves shown to be worshipping alongside their free superiors, often with the slaves occupying the positions of leadership. As Mithraic scholar Franz Cumont put it, ‘In these societies, the last frequently became the first, and the first the last….’

Today it seems we live in a society where wealth and power has been largely divorced from the privilege of birth. The distinction between slave and freeman has been broken down. Private enterprise, and even public service, are routes to wealth and power that potentially anyone can follow. I came from a family of Jewish immigrants to New York, and I now possess 32 times more wealth than Her Majesty the Queen of England.

At this point, Chesterfield becoming visibly annoyed, nudged me with his elbow, then whispered in my ear.

“He can’t stop pointing that out. He’s obsessed with it.”

I tried to ignore him and strained to hear Rosenberg as he continued:

I dare say that I believe a large part of this change has been spearheaded from right here: the Square Mile of the Sovereign City of London, which still occupies the *pomoerium* of the old Roman city of Londinium. The *pomoerium* of a Roman city, by the way, which was the area within the walls, was officially designated by a state auger using divination, and did not necessarily encompass all of the territory controlled politically by the city. It was a sacred boundary, serving obscure purposes that historians still don’t totally understand. Yet for some reason, perhaps mystical, even though most of London’s wall is gone, the sacred boundary remains.

As all of you locals know, the City of London, governed by City of London Corporation, has always been a political power on equal par with the Crown, keeping it in check. The rights of the City are actually protected eternally in a special clause provided in the Magna Carta, to which the Lord Mayor was a signatory. This Corporation is formed by the Freemen of the City, and the Livery Companies. It was a government made of merchants and artisans who owned the freeholds to the buildings out of which they operated, or belonged to guilds that did, and were therefore called “free.”

The City is separate from the kingdom in some ways, and yet it plays a leading part in many others, with the Lord Mayor even playing a role in the coronation of the monarch. As you know, monarchs used to traditionally ask permission to enter the City, with an elaborate ceremony at Temple Bar necessary to grant it. Although this ceremony has since been dispensed with, and the Crown is now quite cooperative with the City, I think this is only because the Corporation of London has so many times in the past not hesitated to remind the monarchs that they must either share power with the City, and respect its rights, or be replaced.

One of the aldermen from the early twentieth century, Lord Wakefield of Hythe, wrote in his book *London Forever* about how the City had always been the “real kingmaker” in the kingdom. He credits the Corporation with effecting every change of dynasty that has occurred in England, including allowing the formation of the Protectorate, and dispensing with it later when it had outlived its usefulness. He stated:

London stood for Liberty and Moderation, and was the champion of constitutional rights regardless of the nature of the oppressor.

When the King ceased to respect the laws of the land and the interests of his people, the Sovereign City drove him from the throne. When the Commonwealth ceased to represent popular government and tried to rule by force of arms, the secession of the City brought back the exiled Stuarts.

By its action the Sovereign City expressed the national dislike for republican government and England’s firm belief in constitutional monarchy as the best form of government for a free people.

So just as Mithras and Sol agreed to share ultimate power for the greater good, and to keep each other in check with mutual trust based on mutual understanding, the Crown and the City do also. It is fitting then, that today we have been able to open the Temple of Mithras once again, but now in a magical square mile that has led the world in a social revolution based on the merit of earned credit rather than the accident of birth.

How amazing is it that all this time until its discovery in 1954, the temple of Mithras was right here, right next to the official home of the Lord Mayor, whose office has always led this fight? It’s next to the Bank of England, which financed the Royal Navy and allowed Britain to build her magnificent empire. And you know that the national bank provided the prototype upon which the world’s central banks now function, stabilizing currencies and growing economies throughout the centuries since. And of course, the London Bullion Market Association, where the prices of precious metals are fixed for the *world* each day, is right here as well.

This location we stand upon right now is important for several other reasons. The London Stone once stood at 111 Cannon Street, just one block east of here. There is a tradition, lost in the fog of ancestral memory, that says the Lord Mayor used to be sworn into office upon this stone. Another tradition, confused with Arthurian legend, seems to imply that if a certain sword, once embedded in the stone to the hilt, could be removed from it, the holder would then become the king of England.

The truth veiled behind these myths was that the City of London, represented by the stone, restrained the “Sword of State’ from being abused by the monarch against the freemen. Whenever that gentle but firm restraint failed, and the monarch insisted upon brandishing a weapon that ought best to remain holstered, the City saw to it that new blood would take the throne instead.

That was the *millarium* of the Roman city, the foundation of all the geographical measurements within. It may also have been their *terminus* stone, sacred to Jupiter, marking the crossroads where their two main thoroughfares intersected.

Not coincidentally, I believe, this exact point has for the last several centuries been the navel of the finance world and the crossroads of the global marketplace. I believe this is more true now than ever before. And we are just getting started.

We all know that the modern money system, while an improvement upon the past, is still another form of slavery. But I believe that there is another phase coming in our evolution as a species, which will set us free from this once and for all. It involves artificial intelligence, intelligently planned buildings, and intelligently run communities. It involves utilizing the untapped power and potencies that lie hidden within our own human bodies. And it starts right here, at Rosenberg Plaza.

With that anticlimactic summation, with that ridiculous pretension to be the harbinger of the future emancipation of humanity, lacking completely in any explanation, which landed on the ears with an uncomfortable thud, he looked up from his notes awkwardly and stared blankly, waiting for applause. After an uncomfortable moment, people began to clap.

“This guy’s a fascist,” Chesterfield whispered to me, as everybody stood up and cheered.

“No, he’s an anarchist,” Drexella replied, glaring at him. She obviously admired Rosenberg’s philosophy.

After the applause died down, he came down and spoke to people from the audience individually, starting with the woman at the extreme right of our row in the front. I recognized her from the previous night’s news report as Dame Marcia Martina, the Lord Mayor of the City. Their warm handshake, which morphed into a hug, indeed indicated that they were “quite chummy.”

Rosenberg made his way down the row, and soon found his way to Drexella, whom he uncomfortably allowed to hug him. I stood staring at them, wondering how they knew each other, and wondering what I would say to him when I got the chance to touch his sweaty palm. But I didn’t have to worry about that. The problem solved itself.

In a stunning turn of events, Rosenberg, who had not looked in my direction this entire time, let alone made eye contact, all of the sudden turned towards me and stared me in the face directly and deliberately. He had a mischievous expression: a small amount of nervousness mixed with a large amount of excitement.

"Drexella, how do you know Pamela Auger?" he said. "You never cease to surprise me with your interesting personal connections. Aren't you going to introduce me?"

He held out a hand for shaking. I grabbed it for a single shake and then let go, staring at them both confusedly, panicking, but still trying to smile.

I lied to Drexella about my name. How did Rosenberg know it? I thought.

"I have your book about the Templar idol, and your translation of the Hammer-Purgstall text," he said. "It was amazing how you found those artifacts right here in London, in the museum."

I couldn't believe it. The sixth most wealthy man in the world was reading my self-published books. For a moment I was flattered. Then I thought more about the implications of what he had said.

Can there be any doubt that everything I've experienced since I arrived here has been connected since accepting Leopold's bizarre invitation? The disappearance of the Mete coffer from the museum. My kidnapping. The underground bull sacrifice. The forced liver divination at Stratford House. The video of castration and child rape sent to MI5. The murder of the agency's director. Drexella alerting us to the opening of the mithraeum . *And Rosenberg reading my book.*

I looked to Chesterfield for help, but he was just staring at Rosenberg in shock.

"How about meeting me and some friends for a dinner party we're having tonight? It's just next door. You can autograph my books! I actually have them sitting in my office here. I'll bring them tonight."

For a moment, I let myself consider that maybe I was being paranoid to suspect him of nefarious deeds. After all, it was Leopold/Thomas who was undeniably guilty. The evidence against Rosenberg was still technically circumstantial.

Maybe, I thought, *this trip will finally open things up for my career, just like I'd hoped it would.*

But I shook off my ego response and listened to my fear.

You're going to get raped and killed, and nobody will ever know what happened to you, I thought more sensibly.

"As long as I can bring my friend, sure!" I said, grabbing Chesterfield's hand.

"Of course!" he responded. "Who's this?"

The question was directed at me, obviously prompting me to introduce him. But Drexella butted in.

"That's Agent Chesterfield from MI5," she said. "He's a cutie, itn't 'e?" She winked at him. He recoiled but tried to hide it. Rosenberg smiled in amusement.

"I'm very sorry to hear about Côme Pindar. I hope you catch the guy," he said. Then he turned to me.

"It's a date then. I'll see you at 5 o'clock. Just go to the New Court building at St. Swithin's Lane, right behind the St. Stephen Church. It's just off Walbrook, right behind us. Give your name to the front desk when you get there."

"You're still coming to the Ping-Pong Tournament, aren't you?" Drexella asked him.

"Oh, you know it," he answered enthusiastically. "I'm bringing friends!" And with that, he moved on to shake more hands.

Chapter 20: Equinox of the Gods

Hail! ye twin warriors about the pillars of the world! for your time is nigh at hand.

…my left hand is empty, for I have crushed an Universe;

& nought remains .

— Aleister Crowley, *The Book of the Law* Knowing that we absolutely could not consume any of the food at Rosenberg's party, Chesterfield and I opted for a pub lunch at the Green Man, right across Queen Victoria Street. It was inside of another office building that had a remarkable triangular courtyard built in the center of it. We enjoyed fish and chips while we tried to come to grips with all that had just happened.

"Doesn't it seem strange that Rosenberg's having his party in another office building?" I asked. "Why not his own? Surely he has space to entertain guests."

"It's probably his friend the Lord Mayor who is throwing the party for him,"

Chesterfield said.

"Why do you say that?" I asked "Wouldn't the party be at Mansion House then?"

"She hardly spends much time there," said Chesterfield. "She's usually at New Court from what I've heard. And it's hard to beat the Sky Box at New Court for entertaining billionaires. It was built for that. It has the best view in the area."

I stared at him, waiting for a fuller explanation, since I obviously didn't know what he was talking about. Finally, he continued.

“New Court is the site of the Rothschild empire in London. They’ve lived and run their business from that very site since the 1800s. They used to fix the price of gold *there* everyday, before the Bullion Association started doing it next door. And Marcia Martina is a Rothschild heiress. She married into the family. Her son Crispin works for Rosenberg as his right-hand man.”

“I see,” I said, whipping my laptop out of my bag and setting it up at the table.

“What are you looking up?” asked Chesterfield.

“I’m going to look at the site on Google Maps again.” I dialed it up and stared at the Superman logo-shaped plot of land, with the New Court building, labeled simply “Rothschilds,” just east of it.

“I wonder why Paris isn’t answering his phone,” said Chesterfield, who had just tried to call him. “Surely he isn’t still getting grilled by Miss Equitone. Maybe I should check on him after all. Maybe it’s safe.”

All of the sudden there was a dramatic change in the atmosphere of the room. The music was switched off. The TV, which had been tuned to Rosenberg’s financial news network with the sound muted, was simultaneously turned up.

Several people moved to stand closer to the television. Apparently, it was a very bad day on the stock market so far. The news showed people on the floors of the New York Stock Exchange, the London Stock Exchange, and the Euronext exchange in Amsterdam running around in a panic.

“What’s going on?” I asked.

“France left the Eurozone,” said the man to my left. “And the President says they’re going to default on their debt. The Euro’s collapsing.”

As we stood their watching the European project fall apart, a scream was heard from the back of the pub. It was a woman seated near the window. A man had just jumped from a balcony onto the pavement below, deliberately, she said.

He laid face down on the ground of the building's central courtyard with a pool of blood around him.

Just then, Chesterfield received a text from Paris. He showed me what it said.

Don't come in to the office. And don't call.

"Well, I guess it's not safe after all," he said. "And he sank into an anxious quietude, tapping his feet compulsively with his hands tucked crossways under his armpits. I knew what he was thinking. He was worried about his country. And his partner. And his cat.

So with no particular place to go until 5 pm, we sat there watching the world's economy collapse on Rosenberg TV, drinking Shirley Temples while the businessmen around us freaked out and drank themselves silly. We watched the paramedics come and scrape up the dead guy on the pavement while a news crew filmed it. We saw the news report on this and several other suicides related to the market crash.

Many of the people in the bar were torn between fear of the unknown future and excitement, even glee, at watching a political entity they despised finally kick the bucket. Some were morose, having obviously lost their investments. Some knew they would be losing their jobs soon because of this. All were nervous, rightly, about price volatility. They knew that the chain reaction around the world would be causing all sorts of catastrophic issues as investors freaked out about the likelihood of a currency crisis in Europe and the uncertainty of trade agreements.

Some of the pundits on TV were smirking wryly at rumors trending on Twitter alleging that the events were caused by a curse that the markets had brought upon themselves. For the first time ever, Good Friday and "Easter

Monday" had been removed from the list of national bank holidays in the USA, the UK, and the EU—a decision made by international agreement the previous year based on the projected savings of opportunity costs involved in allowing a four-day weekend. They did it so that everybody could make more money—

because, hey, more money! Instead, many Catholics and Anglicans agreed, that decision may have cost the West a great deal, perhaps even, some suggested, the bursting of the entire decades-old debt bubble that supported its floundering economy.

"But this is all nonsense based on urban legends," Art Cashin said in a live interview on Rosenberg TV. "People say that the Black Friday gold crash in 1869

was on Good Friday, but it was actually September 24th. The last time the New York Stock Exchange was open on Good Friday was March 29, 1907, and the market was up when it closed at the end of the day."

"But that was the peak of the market that year," countered Seamus Molony, a journalist with an Irish accent also being interviewed in the same segment. "It went down after that. "And the Irish Catholic traders all lamented to the men running the exchange: 'We told you not to open on Good Friday.' That's recorded at the time."

Nobody knew what to make of this superstition. The only thing that was for sure was that nobody had any faith in anything: not the government, the Queen, or the banks. Certainly not "the People"—that is, the lazy mob. And not, most useless of all, the Church or God. When the Pope released a statement against

"global panic," blamed the Eurozone breakup on "xenophobia," and lectured the

"rich" of the world not to be "greedy" during the unfolding crisis, people started throwing food at the TV amid loud jeering.

Of course, a lot of these people were also on their cell phones, calling brokers and telling them to move money around. Gold and silver were natural fallbacks, but these were getting ridiculously more expensive by the minute. Or, as the pessimist would see it, currencies were becoming more worthless relative to metal by the minute. The news about France had come just minutes before the price of gold was "fixed" by the London Bullion Market at 3 PM, so it was set by the bankers with the benefit of that knowledge. The FTSE closed 20% down for the day, the biggest one-day loss ever, almost double the previous record, and got shut down 30 minutes early at 4 PM.

Chesterfield's only comment was to point out that Director Pindar's head mounted on Temple Bar was directly facing the London Stock Exchange building right across Paternoster Square. I told him it reminded me of a "*nithing* pole," the Norse form of cursing an enemy by pointing the severed head of a horse at his house, mounted on a stick. Then the connection with the imagery of bull sacrifice—specifically the blood baptisms of Cybele's *taurobolium* rite—was pointed out to us by the headlines used on Rosenberg TV to introduce the latest reports on the global stock market collapse:
BLOODBATH ON WALL STREET

and:

BAD FRIDAY: EUROPA SLAYS THE BULL

"How ironic," I said to Chesterfield. "Europa was raped by Zeus in the form of a bull, an event that was commemorated on Euro coins. Now the continent named after her has killed the bull market.

"I wondered how Rosenberg is reacting to the news," he said.

"There's only one way to find out," I said.

At 4:45, we finally left the bar and walked over to New Court, to keep our appointment. Little did we know at the time that if we'd stayed another five minutes, we would have heard Mr. Rosenberg's public comments on the market breakdown, as he was being interviewed live on his own network from his own office there in London while we were on our way to meet him at the Rothschild compound next door.

We crossed Queen Victoria Street, then passed Rosenberg Plaza on the north side. We went down Bucklersbury and across Walbrook, then through a narrow alley in-between Mansion House and St. Stephen’s, a beautiful Christopher Wren-designed church almost completely obscured on all sides by tall office buildings. I wanted to go in and check it out for a minute. But the front door was locked, and there was a sign posted saying it was closed for repairs. So we took one more left around one more building, and then we were there, standing in front of the place where the Rothschild family had been running their global finance empire for over two centuries.

We opened the front door and walked into the reception area, which was a gigantic, virtually empty space with a ceiling oddly identical to the floor, looking like blond wood paneling. We found the elevators, but they were locked. Behind us, someone cleared his throat. It was a Hawaiian-looking man with broad shoulders, dressed in a dark suit, with a white cord dangling from his left ear. He was standing at the security desk. We walked up to him.

“Hi, I’m Pamela Auger,” I said. “And this is—”

“Agent Chesterfield, I know,” he said, interrupting me. He showed us a touch-screen tablet he was carrying, with pictures of us both, as well as several others. I recognized mine as my Facebook profile picture. The one of Chesterfield matched the one on his Security Service badge. I wondered how they got it.

Chesterfield looked alarmed. The man motioned for us to autograph a sign-in sheet on his desk.

“Let me help you with the elevator,” the guard said. He used a card carried in a lanyard around his neck to unlock the elevator, then punched the floor number, which I don’t recall. When the doors opened, he stepped in with us, and rode all the way up.

When the doors opened again, we found ourselves in yet another vast empty room. There was almost nothing in it except one long wooden table, positioned a few feet away from the far wall, at which several people were already seated. One of them was Rosenberg. He was talking to Marcia Martina.

Most remarkable of all were the walls around us. They were incredibly tall, all glass, with a magnificent view of the city on all sides of us. It was like being on top of Mount Olympus. Indeed, I'm certain that's what it was designed to feel like. The side that the table was placed on looked out over the roof of Rosenberg Plaza, which, at only ten stories tall, was quite a ways beneath us. The setting sun reflected off the sunroof with a reddish pink glow.

This must be the 'Sky Box' Chesterfield mentioned, I thought to myself.

Chesterfield made his arm into a bow, into which I inserted my own, and then he led me over to where Rosenberg was seated. We all said "Hello" again, and then he introduced us to the Lord Mayor. To her right was Crispin Martina, her son and the chief operating officer for Rosenberg Inc. UK. Blue-eyed, blond-haired, comely and ectomorphic, wearing a finely-tailored suit the color of Egyptian blue, he resembled a twink from the cover of a men's fashion magazine.

He couldn't have possibly been more than 22 years old from the looks of him.

That's quite an impressive position for someone so young, I thought. I have since learned that he was the *youngest* person to every hold such a title in a major corporation.

On the other side of the table was Mark Wetzel, the new Editor of the *Financial Times*. He was white and chubby with thinning gray hair and a pinstriped suit. He looked to be about 60. Finally, to Rosenberg's left was a homely-looking twelve-year-old girl, wearing white culottes and a white polo shirt, with her permed hair in a pony tail, and she had braces on her teeth. Rosenberg introduced her as Philippine, his daughter.

“Oh yes,” I said as I took her hand. “I’ve heard about your steeplechases.”

She looked very shy and uncomfortable, which was how I felt in a room full of financial elites, so I thought that breaking the ice with her first would be easiest. She blushed and turned her gaze away from me, smiling limply at nothing.

The Lord Mayor grabbed me by the arm and whispered.

“Don’t get her started. The only thing that empty-headed girl ever talks about is horses.”

We sat down next to Wetzel. A young dark-haired white male in a black tuxedo came and poured us champagne from a bottle that probably cost more than I had made in the previous tax year. Everybody except for Philippine looked like they were already somewhat drunk.

“Blake already told us a little bit about you guys, particularly you, Miss Auger,” said Wetzel. “Sounds like you’ve done some interesting work.” I smiled.

“I saw you two walking up to the building,” said Ms. Martina, sniffing as she spoke. “I was just coming back from the lavatory on the other side of the room. I looked out the window and I saw you walking down St. Stephen’s Row.” She sniffed again and smiled.

Cocaine? I thought. It looked like it. Her nose was red.

“You could have taken the secret tunnels,” said Rosenberg. “I should have told you about them!” He and Marcia both laughed.

“What do you mean?” I said.

“There are tunnels connecting all of these buildings, and others,” Marcia said. “From New Court to St. Stephens. From St. Stephens to Mansion House.

From Mansion House to the Bank of England. All built by my dead husband's ancestors, of course. To make it easier to control everybody." Ms. Martina laughed again.

"You're joking?" I asked.

"Not at all," said Crispin. "And Rosenberg Plaza is now part of the grid too."

I looked at Chesterfield. He did not look amused. He grimaced at the Lord Mayor. The silence was palpable.

"Oh bloody Hell," said Ms. Martina. "I forgot we had MI5 in the house tonight."

"All this has been cleared with the City, I presume," said Chesterfield, making notes on his black leather notepad. Martina leaned in and squinted at him.

"Darling, this family IS the City," she bragged. She took another sip of her champagne.

"So what do you use really these tunnels for?" I asked.

"You'll find out tonight," said Rosenberg. "We're going on a special tour later on."

"Oh really," I said. "I'm not sure how long I can stay though."

"Oh you don't want to miss this," said Mr. Wetzel. "The first ritual in a properly restored ancient temple in London for thirteen-hundred years. When will you get another chance like that?"

Oh no, a ritual? I thought. The hair on my neck stood up as I thought about my last experience with a ritual inside London's secret tunnels.

"What's he talking about?" asked Chesterfield. He turned to Rosenberg. "I thought the *mithraeum* belonged to the people. It's a piece of British heritage that just so happens to be inside your building. It’s not your personal playground.”

“We’re just going to have a little fun,” said Crispin. “It’s a party. Lighten up.”

Chesterfield looked at his champagne glass, still full, and put his notebook in his pocket. Rosenberg deftly pivoted the conversation.

“You know, Dutch businessman Erik Ubels, whom I consulted on the design of the Plaza, has said that in the future all parts of a building will be connected to all the other parts. What’s more, he said that all of the buildings in a city will be connected to each other. Tunnels are one thing, and that’s been going on for centuries here in England. But they will also be doing things like sharing electricity, which they will be generating on-site for each other. And they will be sharing data about how the buildings are being used. The City of London in the future really will be a ‘house with many mansions,’ like the New Jerusalem. I think that’s exciting, and I like to think that Rosenberg Plaza is helping to lead this movement.”

“Well, we got Wodin Energy that consulting contract,” said Martina.

“Convinced the aldermen that it’s worth the investment. Now we can get them to agree to fund the things we’ve already been doing. So it’ll be done months ahead of schedule, which will impress them and keep them handing out funds.”

“Wodin Energy is doing for cities what Erik Ubels is doing for buildings,”

Wetzel explained, seeing my confusion. “Networking the streetlights, covering them with sensors, and using the data to make decisions that boost energy efficiency. They call them ‘Smart Cities.’”

“London is on the verge of a new renaissance,” said Crispin with pride, looking at his boss with admiration. “Rosenberg has been working with the mayor of Greater London on the river restoration project too, which is huge. We’re bringing back all the culverted underground rivers, like the Fleet and the Walbrook. We’ve been building the infrastructure and connecting it to the City’s new Smart Grid. When it’s all unveiled, the public will be completely blown away.”

“What will the rivers be used for?” I asked. “I thought they were all mostly sewers now.”

“They used to be,” said Rosenberg. “But they closed them over and built other sewers, then mostly abandoned the rivers. They still trickle underground and empty into the Thames. Now since Ms. Auger here is an expert on occult secrets, I’ll tell you a secret about the water system here and let you figure out what it means.”

Everyone got quiet and scooted in their chairs so that they could lean in closer. Except for Philippine. She continued to stare blankly out the window.

Rosenberg went on.

“In the 1200s they built a conduit between Tyburn Springs, on the current site of Buckingham Palace, and the Walbrook, right up Ludgate Hill where St.

Paul’s is, to bring fresh drinking water to the merchants in the City. Supposedly they stopped using it after the Great Fire in 1666. But the engineers from Woden

Energy explored the old conduit, and found a tiny tube running along the length of the whole thing, from directly beneath Buckingham Palace to where the Walbrook meets Bucklersbury on the northern side of my *mithraeum*, before turning west.”

From the corner of my eye, I saw Chesterfield wince when Rosenberg said

“my *mithraeum*.”

“What do you mean, a ‘tube’?” said Wetzel. “Like a plastic tube?”

“Oh no. 2.7 miles of Burmese glass, surrounded by plain white PVC pipes,”

he said.

“Burmese glass? You mean that stuff they used to make from uranium oxide and tincture of gold? That was Queen Victoria’s favorite! It’s beautiful, and so radiant in UV light. She collected tons of it. But usually dishes and figurines, not plumbing pipes.”

“Yes, well there may have been other reasons why she had the company in Massachusetts that manufactured it make so much of it for her. The glass is useful for maintaining the chemical composition of the fluid running through it. I wouldn’t be surprised if that company itself was secretly contracted to produce some of these pipes. And somebody is still making them now. Certain sections of the tube line have obviously been replaced quite recently.”

“You mean it’s in current use?” I asked.

“Yep,” he said. “Still running with fluid.”

“Fluid?” everybody said all at once.

“Don’t tell me you didn’t know” said Rosenberg to Martina with a mocking smile. Then he turned around and gave the same look to Crispin. “Or you.”

The young man and his mother looked at each other and shrugged. But Rosenberg was right. They were playing dumb.

“Blake, whatever are you talking about?” said Ms. Martina.

“Do you remember what Edmund Mortimer called the Walbrook River in *Henry the Sixth*, when he sat upon the London Stone and proclaimed himself Lord Mayor?”

She laughed. “He called it a ‘pissing conduit,’” she said. “Which it was.”

“Then he declared that the river should run with nothing but claret wine for the first year of his reign,” her son added, swilling down the last of his champagne. He called the servants for more.

“So what’s your point,” said Chesterfield. “Is there sewer water still running through this narrow tube in the conduit for some reason?”

“No, not sewer water *per se*,” Rosenberg answered. “Pure golden streams of urine. Obviously collected directly from the source, without contamination.”

Once again I thought about the toilets at Rosenberg Plaza, and my speculation that Rosenberg might have been generating energy from human waste products. Or he could have been using it for any number of other esoteric, alchemical workings. Or maybe he was just a sick pervert who liked to bath in or drink other people’s piss.

Now he was telling us that someone else was doing the same—somebody rich like him with access to the remains of the conduit. He implied that he thought the Rothschilds at least knew about it. Perhaps they did. Marcia and Crispin seemed to be getting uncomfortable.

“Has the site of Tyburn Springs always been the location of the royal residence?” I asked.

“No,” said Wetzel. “It belonged to Edward the Confessor, but then a lot of other people owned it before they built Buckingham Palace in the nineteenth century.”

An image flashed into my mind just as a tingle went down my spine, a sure sign that I was getting one of my intuitions. It was a picture I’d seen before of the River of Life flowing from beneath God’s throne. This is the water that the righteous drink from to gain eternal life. The message is clear: immortality can be gained from consuming the bodily substance of immortals.

IVSTI_IA
PRVD. INTA
SAPH RVS
IA SPIS
AME THIST
FOR T
TVDO

God, in the Old Testament, is shown consuming the flesh and blood of sacrifices, licking them up with tongues of fire. But while they might eat kosher meat, blood he forbade to the Hebrew people, as it contained “the life.” For the same reason, Adam and Eve were booted from Paradise to prevent them from gaining access to the Tree of Life, which would make them “live forever.”

The fluid exchange is this: God drinks the “Water of Life”—blood, generally—from the altars of his worshippers. He then feeds the “tree of life” in paradise with the “rivers” that issue from beneath where he sits. The tree grows the “fruit” that brings life, and that fruit is offered back to the worshipper in the form of the vivifying flesh and blood of Jesus.

What I was now hearing about from Rosenberg was an exchange in which urine was being piped from a location directly beneath Buckingham Palace and into the business district, right to the front door of the Rothschilds. That is, right to the family that historically funded the government which paid the royal salary during the nineteenth century, when this special royal pissing conduit may have first been built. For all I knew, they were still doing so.

Perhaps royal urine has a particular value for them somehow, I thought.

“So,” said Rosenberg, breaking the silence. “Since you don’t know anything about this, do you think your father-in-law does?” It was directed at the Lord Mayor.

“Look, everybody knows these freaks are dirty to the core. And richer than the Pope. So if you’re telling me that my in-laws have a private pipeline carrying prostitute pee for their golden shower orgies here at New Court, don’t expect me to be surprised. I’ve heard worse. MUCH worse.” She then turned to her son, glared at him, and walked off to the rest room again. Crispin turned to Rosenberg looking hurt. He spoke.

“Blake, I do believe you are violating the Law of Hospitality. And there is STILL a token between you and my family that has not been satisfied.”

“Don’t accuse me of that,” said Rosenberg, pointing in Crispin’s face and staring him directly in the eyes. “You know I take that VERY seriously.”

Wetzel, in an attempt to break the uncomfortable mood, leaned past me and asked Chesterfield how the investigation of Pindar’s murder was going.

“Oh, we’re working on it,” the agent responded, a total non-answer. He changed the subject again. “I heard your paper moved back in to Bracken House round the corner.”

“Yep,” said Wetzel. “Same classy old building. We just had it outfitted for the modern age.”

Chesterfield turned to me. “Bracken House is across the Square from St.

Paul’s. It’s the one with the zodiac clock on the front featuring the face of Winston Churchill as the Sun. It’s the historic home of the *Financial Times*, but they moved out for a few years while the place was refurbished.”

I remembered seeing that place when we were walking to the murder scene the night before.

“Today’s been a hell of a day for your paper, I imagine,” said Chesterfield.

“Where do you think it’s all going?”

“Directly down the toilet,” the Editor responded. “The Euro’s obviously trash. Which may help the pound in the immediate, but unless you’re these blokes you won’t feel the benefit,” he said, pointing to Marcia, Crispin and Blake with a broad swirl of his finger.

“So you guys aren’t suffering at all from Europe’s collapse?” I said.

“Are you kidding,” Ms. Martina said, laughing as she sat back down at the table again. “We caused it. That is to say, we refrained from propping them up any longer. ‘Going Galt,’ as they say. The people won’t accept austerity, they refuse to face facts, so we can’t keep doling out free credit to states any longer.

But we’ve all been hoarding gold for months. So we won’t go hungry. Quite the contrary. We’re on the precipice of what you might call ‘the Great Reaping.’” She winked at Rosenberg. He smiled emptily.

I could never imagine that the world's elite actually refer to themselves as

'we' the same way we non-elites refer to them as 'they,' I thought to myself. Their arrogance was truly amazing, a combination of cinematic and surreal.

"Pamela, you remember the story of Joseph and his brothers in *Genesis*, right?" said Rosenberg.

"More or less," I answered. "Why?"

"Have you ever thought about how it tells the story of the process by which a people become enslaved through usury? Joseph's brothers come from Canaan to Egypt, looking to buy food during a famine. They don't know he's the brother they sold into slavery some time ago. They find that, because of his great psychic insight, which predicted the famine, he's been storing up grain for seven years in Pharaoh's granaries."

I nodded. He continued.

"He plies them with freebies. He makes them think the food was free because the money they bought it with magically reappeared in their sacks afterwards. He takes one of them captive as collateral, Simeon. Then he tries to trick them into giving up their littlest brother, Benjamin, as a slave to him, by falsely accusing him of the theft of his silver divination cup."

"Where is all this going, Blake," said Miss Martina. "You know I despise the Bible." She yawned and sipped her champagne. Rosenberg rolled his eyes and kept talking.

"Then he convinced Pharaoh to give his brothers a good slice of the best land in Egypt, and lots more free stuff besides. They lived there fat and happy for two years, until the famine spread to Egypt as well. Then the true process of enslavement began." He cleared his throat, and smiled eerily.

"First Joseph, on behalf of Pharaoh, took all the money from both the Egyptian and the Canaanite people in exchange for bread from Pharaoh's granary.

Then the money "failed" in the land. All of the coins of real value being in the hands of the Pharaoh now, anything coined as money from that point on would not be accepted by the market as a store of value. We all know that."

Crispin, Marcia and Mr. Wetzel all smiled, now picking up on the similarities between the Bible story and the present situation.

"People like me and the Rothschilds have all the gold now," Rosenberg continued. "The coming breakaway European states can print their own money all they want. But nobody abroad will accept it. And the market already knows it."

"But let them try," said Marcia. "I really want to see them try."

"Returning to the story," said Rosenberg, annoyed at the interruption,

"Joseph next took cattle, from both the Egyptian natives and the Canaanite aliens, his own brethren, in exchange for more bread. That lasted only a year. After that, there was nothing left but for the people to offer up their lands, and their bodies for slaves, in exchange for mere bread."

"Now they were all slaves to Pharaoh, with Joseph in the real seat of power as vizier. But the Canaanites were the happy slaves, because they got special treatment from Joseph, on account of their relation to him. The aliens grew more prosperous and more numerous in their condition of slavery than the native Egyptians, and this bred contempt. So when a new Pharaoh came to the throne, he instituted a policy of treating the Canaanite aliens more harshly."

He stood up with his eyes closed and his arms raised up, bent at the elbow, his palms turned outward towards us.

“This is how the condition of harsh slavery in Egypt came upon the children of Israel. This is also how the Egyptians themselves became slaves to their Pharaoh. It was because of the financial machinations of their brother Joseph, wily like Hermes the thief.”

“I’ve actually thought for some time that the figure of Joseph is a masked form of Thoth or Djehuty, the Egyptian Hermes,” I said. “Jude also.”

“Well, yes, ‘Djehuty’ sounds a lot like ‘Yehudi,’ doesn’t it,” Rosenberg agreed. “Using confidence tricks to gain wealth and power, to enslave the masses through money. That’s what both Joseph and Hermes were known for. And that’s the popular stereotype of the money-grubbing Jew that has endured for almost two millennia.”

“Because they keep living up to it!” howled Miss Martina. Rosenberg shot her a look of disapproval. She looked away from him towards me.

“I was married to one so I can say it,” she chuckled. “I’ve counted his money. I know what I’m talking about.”

“Well there’s one more parallel with the anti-Semitic stereotype. Joseph was originally a slave, an alien, but came to rule the land *de facto* by ingratiating himself with the royal house: by making himself indispensable.”

“He took Dale Carnegie’s advice,” joked Wetzel.

“He used his mind’s eye to gain intelligence that gave him power. Because it was useful. Think on that, Miss Auger,” said Rosenberg, raising his eyebrow at me.

“Why?” I asked.

Before he could answer, there was a flurry of movement around us. It was dizzying and disorienting. It all happened so quickly, I didn’t realize what was going on. I didn’t actually see any of the servants carrying the platters. But when the movement passed, I looked down and saw a shiny silver plate in front of me with a tiny bird on it, baked with a caramelized sauté. We each had one. The plates were all different colors and, it looked like, made from different materials.

But now Rosenberg was missing from the table. His wine glass was also gone. And there was no setting for him at the table.

“Where’d Blake go?” asked Wetzel. He looked at Philippine, who looked up for the first time in twenty minutes. She shrugged her shoulders. I noticed that the Sun was now almost totally gone over the horizon and the Moon was visible behind Philippine. Although it was not quite full, it loomed large and seemed to hang down very low.

“He’s probably gone to the toilet, I imagine,” answered Crispin.

“So what are we having anyway?” Marcia asked her son.

“I don’t know,” he responded. “I let Blake tell the kitchen what to make.”

“Oh right, Blake ordering our family’s servants around, as always,” she sighed. She took a bite of her bird. She swallowed it, but slowly, reluctantly, looking both disgusted and surprised.

“Oh right, now this is gross,” she said. “What the Hell is this? It tastes like an arse.”

“No kidding,” said Wetzel, who had sampled his as well and pushed it away in disgust. “That’s foul.” He snorted a laugh at his own joke. “Get it? Fowl?”

I put a piece of it on my fork and sniffed it. It smelled like spoiled milk and sulphur.

I looked at Philippine. She was dutifully eating it, but shuddered as she did so. Then I looked at Crispin. He was eating his too, with dislike, in very small bites.

Marcia turned around to complain to the servants. But she found none. We were now alone in that vast empty room, with no sign of the guest of honor who had ordered this mystery meal.

“Maybe Rosenberg went to go tell the staff that they forgot my plate,” said Chesterfield. “Although it doesn’t look like I’m missing out on anything good.” I looked and, sure enough, he had no plate.

“No, he must be in the lavatory,” said Marcia, angry. She stumbled drunkenly over to the unisex toilet room and walked right in, calling his name. A few seconds later, she came out.

“He’s not there either,” she announced, coming back to her seat.

“You don’t like your food?”

Rosenberg’s voice came from the other side of the table. He was standing next to his daughter, who sat motionless staring at the bones on her plate, having eaten every scrap of the bird’s bitter flesh. Everyone was startled. Then Marcia and Wetzel laughed.

“Yeah, send it back and order a pizza, Blake,” answered Marcia. “This is the worst.”

“I’ve already had a pizza today,” he said.

“Not that kind of pizza,” said Marcia, snickering at what appeared to be an inside joke.

“Don’t reject my offering, friends,” said Rosenberg, addressing us all. “True, Crispin kindly provided the champagne, and let us sit at the table of his esteemed family’s house. But these birds I caught myself, and put myself in great peril to do so.”

“Seriously?” said Marcia. “Honestly, I didn’t know you liked to hunt. I thought you hated firearms.”

“No, he hates peasants having firearms,” whispered Wetzel, oblivious to how weird things were getting.

“I didn’t shoot them!” he responded. “I had the servants slaughter them.”

He inhaled sharply.

“Please nourish your bodies with this flesh,” Rosenberg continued to implore. “At least enjoy the *sweet livers*. That’s the best part.”

Upon hearing the words “sweet livers,” Chesterfield stiffened up next to me. I could feel his eyes upon me. But Rosenberg now stared at me as well.

“Come on, Miss Auger,” he said. “Eat the liver. It’s the best part.”

“Don’t do it, Pamela,” said Chesterfield. “You don’t have to. We can leave.”

“Not until you’ve eaten!” shouted Rosenberg. As he said this, he leaned forward, slammed his fist on the table, and stared angrily at me, his face becoming red.

I don’t know if it was a hallucination, like so many of the things I witnessed from this point onward. But to me it seemed as if his eyes began to glow red as well, as his stare pierced me through my skull. I felt myself swaying in my seat. As if I had no will of my own, I picked up my fork and knife, tore the bird open, located what looked like a liver, and stuck it in my mouth. In my peripheral vision, I saw Marcia and Mark doing the same.

At that moment, Chesterfield got up and ran across the room to the elevator we had arrived in. He punched the “down button.” Everybody was looking at him, so I took the opportunity to spit out my bite of the unknown bird into my champagne glass, which I then covered with a napkin.

“Come on, follow me Pamela!” he shouted, beckoning me with his hand.

But then he looked at the elevator button, and the digital display next to it, which was supposed to tell you what floor the elevator was currently on as it moved up and down. However, something was wrong. He pressed the button frantically several more times, shouting “Fuck! Fuck!” Then he stormed over to the table again.

“Tell me why the elevator’s locked,” he demanded of Rosenberg. The man just sneered at him. Then Chesterfield addressed the Martinas.

“How do we get out of here?”

“Oh, don’t overreact,” said Marcia. She walked over to the elevator.

“It should be working,” she said. When she saw that it wasn’t, she tried pressing an intercom button next to the elevator.

“Hello! James? Hello! Teddy? Anybody?” There was apparently no answer.

She walked back to her desk and took her phone out of her purse. Her bag looked like it cost more than my mother’s house. But she had the same model smartphone as I did. It didn’t do her any good though.

“Bloody Hell, I can’t even get a signal. What’s going on?” she shouted to Crispin. He shrugged, then gave Rosenberg a pleading look.

“Nobody’s going anywhere until we’ve all eaten!” Rosenberg shouted.

“I think we’re done,” said Wetzel. “We’ve all had a bite. We all tried it.

Thank you, Blake. Maybe we’re just not hungry. Let’s do something else now.” He was trying to calm his friend down.

“*I’M* not *DONE*!” Rosenberg countered.

“Where’s your plate?” asked Crispin. “Should I tell the servants….”

“I’m eating mine *raw*!” Rosenberg interrupted.

He reached down and picked up something on the floor next to his feet, which had been obscured from my view by the table. It was covered in a black cloth. He placed it in the center of the table. I heard coos and a flutter of wings.

Not again, I said to myself. *I don’t want to see another animal die.*

But of course I couldn’t stop him. He ripped the cover off the birdcage, revealing a raven, which he took out with his hand, gently, putting it on the tabletop. It walked around and flapped its wings helplessly. They were clipped.

I thought to look away, but I wasn’t fast enough. With sudden ferocity, Rosenberg grabbed the bird and tore its head off with his bare hands, then tipped the neck towards his mouth and sucked down the blood as it spurted out. At that moment, I heard a sonic boom and felt something like a shockwave. This was followed by the sound of metal crunching and scraping together. It didn’t seem to be coming from the sky, which became noticeably darker in that instant, as if someone had put a light filter over it. Also, the Moon drew down lower in the sky.

The crunching sound turned into a high-pitched whine, then a low, long moan like a foghorn. It sounded like a concert from an orchestra of 100 waterphones.

“Ahhh,” said Rosenberg, wiping his mouth and gasping like he had just taken a refreshing drink on a hot summer day. “That’s the sound of the sky beginning to fall in earnest. Now let us commence with the Supreme Rite, to bring about the Baptism of Wisdom!” He threw the desiccated raven’s headless body into the middle of the table, and dropped the head where he stood.

I wasn’t operating at full capacity, so I wasn’t reacting as I normally would to these abnormal occurrences. But I wasn’t as bad off as most of the other guests. Indeed, they all appeared to be going through an almost lycanthropic transformation before my eyes.

Across from me, Marcia had pushed her seat back from the table and now sat back in her chair, with her blue evening dress hiked up to her crotch, which she was now rubbing lasciviously through her panties, fully visible. She was biting her lip hard, and blood trickled out of the corner of her mouth. She cackled like a witch.

Presently Crispin stood up and kissed Rosenberg passionately on the mouth. Rosenberg reciprocated, then violently wrenched the young man’s arm behind his back. He bent him over the table and began dry-humping his ass.

Next, Mr. Wetzel stood up, an evil gleam now in his beady eyes. He walked over behind Philippine, grabbed her by the hair bun and jerked her head up. Her eyes were solid whites without pupils. I’d never seen anything like it before.

Her jaw dropped open. Her tongue began to flutter. She started to utter some strange glossolalia that I didn’t recognize as human language. But then Wetzel slammed his right foot up on the table in front of her, unzipped his pants, and silenced her with a thrust of his penis. Her speech turned into gagging and slurping. That lasted a few seconds before Rosenberg reached out and shoved him away from her.

“Don’t shoot your load just yet,” he admonished. “You’ll need all your potency for the ritual.”

Then he turned and addressed the group, bellowing:

“Let us now descend to the sacred caverns! Last week was the Spring Equinox, but this weekend we shall celebrate the true Equinox of the Gods!”

Over his shoulder I caught sight of the Moon again. Then from behind it—I swear—I saw five bright lights emerge, each a different hue, and just hover there.

They looked like stars, but they behaved like UFOs. I could tell that they were looking at me—at us.

I stood up and stumbled backward. Chesterfield grabbed me from behind and steadied me, immobilizing me with his arms.

“Do you see the stars moving outside?” I whispered in his ear.

“Just pretend you’re possessed and make out with me,” he whispered back.

Understanding his meaning, I kissed his neck and growled like a dog. He began fondling my breasts.

Rosenberg walked over to the elevator now, with his friends following behind him like a procession of screaming banshees. He hit the intercom button.

“Miles, you can come up now,” he said.

Miles? I thought. *How many servants in England are named Miles? That’s so cliché! Why not Jeeves? Why not Mr. Belvedere?* Even in this insane crisis, under the slight influence of whatever was in the raven meat I spit out, my mind was still able to calm itself by telling itself stupid jokes, like it had so many times before.

I watched the numbers on the display change as the elevator climbed up to our floor from the bottom. When it got there, the doors opened, and there was Miles, Leopold Black’s chauffer, with a gun in his hand again, pointed out towards us.

“Hello, Miles,” said Rosenberg. “Where are the others?”

“They’re waiting for you in the temple, sir,” he replied.

Rosenberg gestured towards us, and we all piled into the elevator. Miles punched a code on a keypad next to the elevator’s main set of buttons, and we started going down. The others were shrieking loudly, still busy molesting each other. There was enough noise that I could safely whisper something to Miles, who was standing right next to me.

“So you and Leopold and the rest of the butchers were in it together all along!” I said. “No surprise, I guess. Now what are you guys going to do us?”

But he just stared ahead like a Beefeater on duty, holding his gun with the barrel pointed out towards the elevator door. Meanwhile, the elevator continued to descend, down, down, down. We went past B1 and B2, the two basement levels listed on the main set of buttons. Then we kept going, into what seemed like a bottomless pit.

Chapter 21: Taurobolium

According to one account dating from the 1830s, the Rothschilds owed their fortune to the possession of a mysterious ‘Hebrew talisman’ that enabled Nathan Rothschild, the founder of the London house, to become

‘the Leviathan of the money markers of Europe.’

—Nigel Ferguson, *The Ascent of Money*

When the elevator opened, we walked out into a hallway with stone floors and walls. The walls were lined with torches lighting the way. At the end of the corridor was an opening leading off to the left, and a statue of Harpocrates, the Egyptian god of silence, as a naked young boy. He held his index finger to his lips in his signature pose, with his other hand covering his crotch. I knew he was equated with Eros in Hellenistic syncretism, and was bound by an oath to keep the secrets of his mother Aphrodite’s many sex crimes. I could only imagine what his presence in this hallway presaged. But my imagination was not extreme enough to predict what actually did happen.

All of us came out of the elevator except for one person: Chesterfield. He tried, but Rosenberg pushed him back in there, and then instructed Miles to shoot him in the head. Miles pointed the gun, and Chesterfield cringed, bracing himself.

But then Rosenberg changed his mind, saying that Chesterfield “might come in handy later.” The elevator door was shut, and then Rosenberg punched in a code that locked it in place. Poor Chesterfield was stuck in there.

I was blindfolded by Miles again, just like last time I was in a tunnel with him. But was led by him arm-in-arm down the hall, instead of being forced to lead. As we walked, Rosenberg and his friends were hooting, hollering and whooping like animals. Then we stopped abruptly. Someone, Rosenberg I presume, grabbed my arm and put my left hand upon a door handle. Then Rosenberg spoke to me.

“Pamela, my Cryphius: tell me: Can you see it in your mind’s eye yet? What will we find in here when we open this door?”

I recognized the word “Cryphius” from my online reading about Mithras. It literally meant “occultist,” and it was named by Franz Cumont as the title of the first degree of the Mithraic brotherhood. However, this was based on a single archeological find. All other evidence showed that the name of the first degree was *Corax*, meaning “raven.” Allegedly, a raven had played the role of divine messenger, Mercury’s job. It was sent by the sun god to Mithras, instructing him to have the bull slayed.

Pondering this, I then realized that Rosenberg wanted me to use my innate clairvoyant abilities to play the role of messenger for him. I was there to do divination on command, just like what Leopold and the Butcher’s Society had kidnapped me for. That was probably why he had invited me to his party, and why he was keeping me alive.

So I had better find a way to perform, I thought.

I couldn’t see anything in my “mind’s eye,” but I did hear a male but inhuman eldritch-sounding voice in my head, and it gave me a message.

The Lion, the Witch, and the Wardrobes.

I repeated this to Rosenberg, and he laughed.

“Good, good, you’ll do,” he said, taking off my blindfold.

He opened the door, revealing a dimly-lit room with old light fixtures, and three wardrobes sitting next to each other on the far wall. Two were closed, and the one on the right was open. Inside there were what appeared to be theater costumes. And in front of the wardrobes stood two people already in costume.

One of these people was wearing a black robe and a mask of a lion’s face.

The other was an old Caucasian woman wearing a white gown, a red cape, and a large white hat that resembled a champagne cork. She had white foundation caked on her face like a clown, with thick black eye make-up and bright red lipstick. She smiled.

“*Paternoster*!” she said to Rosenberg as she held out her arms for him.

“Hello *Matri Deum*, Consivia, planter of the garden!” he said back to her.

He kissed her on the hand, smiling back at her.

So this is Consivia, I said to myself. *And she’s here as a priestess tonight, but not for the Anglican church.*

Rosenberg then turned to the man in the lion’s mask.

“Is everything ready with the bull and the Butchers?” he asked.

“Absolutely, Father,” he said. I recognized the voice. It was Leopold.

So even the pretense that Leopold and the Butchers were working against Rosenberg was a ruse, just like everything else about him, I thought. *They’re all in league together, and this entire thing has been a set-up against me from the beginning.*

We all got suited up too. Each one of us had a face covering and a black robe tied that opened in the front, tied with a silver cord. Everybody dressed himself except for me. I got help from Consivia and Miles. They gave me a black bird’s mask like the ones we had seen on the *Easter Sunday* film. Crispin wore a golden headband that suspended a white linen veil over his face. Marcia Martina put on Roman soldier’s plumed helmet and a plain white mask. Wetzel wore a golden sun face. Most put their robes on over their clothes, but Philippine, her pupils now returned to the front of her eyeballs, somberly stripped off her clothes first, having obviously been given instructions ahead of time. Instead of a mask, she wore a black lace veil.

Rosenberg donned his Phrygian Smurf hat and a mask that resembled the bust of Mithras found at the London *mithraeum*. He also took a foot-long iron *harpe* (an ancient type of sickle) that was hanging on a hook on the back wall of one of the wardrobes. He holstered it with his belt. Then Miles opened the door to the hallway again, and everyone filed out, with Rosenberg leading the way.

Just to the right of the door of the wardrobe room, the hallway ended. The long dark corridor we had come from stretched out into darkness on our left and ended. Right there was a stone spiral staircase leading up. Rosenberg took a torch off the wall with his free hand and started going up. Everyone followed.

I couldn’t see where it was leading until Rosenberg got to the top and drew his *harpe*. He then used it to flip open a hatch door above him. Torchlight and some ominous piano music poured through the opening. He holstered the blade and climbed up.

Rosenberg put his torch through the opening first. Someone above played a triumphant series of notes on a trumpet. Then a white gloved hand came down from the other side. Rosenberg grabbed it with his free hand and allowed himself to be helped up. A few seconds later we heard him bellowing loudly.

“Hail to the Lions!”

Then came a reply from a chorus of voices above.

“Hail, Father!”

We all went up through the hatch as well, except for Miles and Philippine.

Miles grabbed the girl by the arm and nudged her with his gun back down the stairs. Then he motioned for me to squeeze past him. When I emerged, I saw that we were in the *mithraeum*. Miles shut the door behind me.

We had come out of a hole in the floor in the southeast corner of the room, near the altar, which was a recreation of an original feature, as I remembered from reading the plaques on display earlier that day. It was covered by a box on the floor, made of stone and about a foot high. The archeologists who found it thought that it must have contained ritual paraphernalia of some sort. But now the box acted as a portal to a lower chamber, with a door that could be pushed open from below. Miles came up from behind me and shut the door as well as the box lid as soon as he was through.

I saw before me a small crowd of about 40 people, some adults, some children, and all male as far as I could tell. They all wore black robes like us, and masks like those worn by several of Rosenberg's friends. There were men in lion masks, men in raven masks, men in Roman soldier helmets, and young boys aged seven to twelve wearing linen veils like Crispin. Each of these types were lined up in a row together.

The ones in the lion masks were using large censers on chains to waft us with incense as we each emerged from the box. The veiled boys were all against the wall on the left, making music. One sat at a piano in the corner, playing the somber tune, right next to the boy holding the trumpet. Against the opposite wall were boys singing dolorously in Latin.

But only Rosenberg wore the liberty cap, Wetzel had the only sun mask, and only Consivia wore the champagne cork hat with the clown make-up. Also, nobody else wore the lacey black veil that Philippine had been wearing.

However, there *were* several people in the congregation who were wearing black veils, just not of lace. These others were made of leather with eye slits cut out, just like the one I had seen on the people who slaughtered the bull beneath Stratford House. But there was one change: some of the leather veils were marked with a white waxing crescent moon symbol in front of the mouth. Others were marked with a black waning moon symbol outlined in white.

These must be Leopold's Butchers, I thought. *I wonder why there are two different kinds.*

Each of Rosenberg's friends took their place in front of their corresponding groups of congregants. Leopold stood before the Lions, and Marcia the Soldiers.

Wetzel stood in the middle, in-between the Soldiers and the Lions. One of the Soldiers grabbed my arm and positioned me in front of the Ravens.

Consivia Springhole went to stand behind the stone altar, and Rosenberg stood to the left of it. It was not the original short and narrow altar that had been displayed in the *mithraeum* earlier. It was a much larger one of roughly hewn stone, the width of a man's length when horizontal, and I recognized it from Wikipedia. It was the one from the church next door, St. Stephen Walbrook, famously made to resemble the one in the Dome of the Rock in Jerusalem. The latter was, by tradition, the place where Abraham almost sacrificed his son. It was also said by Jews to be the "Even Ha-Shitiyah," the "foundation stone" of the universe, from which creation radiated outward a the beginning of time.

Behind the altar and the priestess was a black curtain, attached to a curtain rod that ran in a circle throughout the room. I hadn't remembered seeing that last time I was in there, so they must have set it up just before the ritual. All of the informational plaques and other display items I'd seen earlier had been removed.

Consivia began waving her arms about and chanting in Latin, making an invocation of some sort. One of the Ravens pulled the curtain aside, revealing the ancient stone *taurtoctony*, now the only piece of art on display from the original *mithraeum*, mounted on the wall behind the altar, just as in the days of old.

Consivia turned and faced me directly.

“Cryphius, have you any dispatch from the Mount of the Gods?”

This was a test, I knew. Again, they wanted me to prove my psychic abilities. I tried to clear my mind so that I could hear that same strange voice that had told me about the wardrobe room.

Tell me what to say, I asked mentally.

To my relief, a reply came quickly. *Bring forth the Bull of the World. Give its blood and seed to the Virgin my Queen.*

I repeated these lines to the priestess, and then she repeated part of it as well. She shouted to the back of the room.

“Bring forth the Bull and the Queen of Heaven!”

At that moment, one of the two doors acting as the main entrance to the *mithraeum* swung open. A man with a waning moon veil led a black bull on a rope through the door and down the wheelchair-accessible ramp into the temple. The bull was draped with laurel crown and a red tasseled scarf on its back. On top of this Philippine rode side-saddle, her veiled head slumped in front of her.

When they got to the altar, two waning-moon Butchers grabbed the girl and slid her down from the bull. All three then went to stand with the rest of the Butchers. Another took the reigns from Miles, who walked back to the front doors, now closed, and stood before them, facing the altar while holding his gun out in front of him as before. A Raven came and stood near the altar, holding a *modius* full of grain. Then Consivia spoke to me again.

“Now, Cryphius, come stand before the altar.”

I hesitantly stepped forward, trembling. A Lion brought forth one of the censers, now burned down to nothing but smoldering charcoal. She stuck her finger in the ashes and drew a circle between my eyes. Then she put a dot in the middle.

“Now with your mind’s eye do you see what is in store for your own near future?” she asked.

Again, I couldn’t *see* anything, but I heard an answer from the robot voice, with a very disturbing message.

This is going to hurt a lot, it said.

“Oh shit,” I said as the floor beneath my feet gave way. I fell through the trap door and into a stone pit, landing hard on both legs, which both snapped on impact. I screamed as my body crumpled beneath me. Bones stuck out of both ankles. Blood poured out. I moaned and cried pathetically. I shook and convulsed uncontrollably, going into physical shock.

“Wh-wh-what are you going to do to me?” I was stuttering because I was hyperventilating.

But of course I knew what was coming. More or less. The pit was about six feet deep. It was round and small, barely big enough to sit in, except that in front of me there was a hallway the width of a man, which I could not see the end of. I could hear well what was going on above me. As my sobs grew quieter, Consivia began intoning an incantation above me

“Spirit of the World, come into the body of this horned creature. Accept the grain offering! Eat!”

I heard the bull’s hooves scraping against the stone floor. I heard it snort as it most likely began to eat the grain, probably offered upon the altar in the style of the Greek *Bouphonia* ritual. That meant the “hunters” would now be sneaking up behind it. And if Rosenberg was playing the role of Mithras in this syncretistic ritual which they had devised, then it was probably his lance that would do the slaying. I heard the bull lowing, while men were shouting and grunting. Then I heard the voice in my head again:

Close your eyes.

I obeyed the order as the bull’s blood came pouring down upon me. It was a kosher slaughter, so it took a few minutes for the animal to bleed out, during which time I continued to hear grunting. This was followed by a loud gasp of exaltation just as the flow of blood was slowing to a halt. This told me that the tradition of sodomizing the bull while it died was being carried out by someone in the group.

Now I don’t know what was the worst part: the sounds the poor creature made as it died, the feeling of the disgusting ooze dripping on my face, or the horrible stench. Thoughts of Mad Cow Disease and intestinal parasites came to mind. But none of it distracted from the pain in my legs for more than a few seconds. I wiped the blood from my eyes with the sleeve of my robe. Then I looked up and saw Consivia staring down at me from above.

“Now you have been baptized with a blood *niptron*. You should be able to see more clearly.”

Quite the opposite. Not only was there still some blood stuck in my eyelids, clouding my vision, but my eyes, already swollen from crying, were also starting to itch and sting in reaction to the bacteria in the raw blood.

But I wasn’t the only one crying. Philippine, whose only known personality trait was her love of animals, was becoming hysterical. She was under the influence of the poisoned bird from dinner, but she was still herself, and she was being severely traumatized by the sight of this (although, I suspected, not at all for the first time). However, she would not remain herself for much longer.

Consivia began another invocation, even as the knives of the Butchers could be heard ripping into the bull’s flesh.

“Virgin Mother, Queen of the Night, come hither into the vessel of this female body that stands before this altar. Come forth and accept the bollocks of this bullock, the World. Take into your mouth the sacred germ of secular living.

Feast!”

The room above me suddenly became illuminated with a new light. It was not torchlight, but a soft blue glow, like natural moonlight. It traveled from the southwest side of the temple to the altar, floating over the aperture above me along the way. I say “floating” because when I finally got a look at it, I saw that it took the form of a sphere. When it passed over me and onto the altar, I heard Philippine gasp.

I then heard yowling, like that of a cat, and the hissing of a lizard or a snake.

This was following by gurgling, ravenous chewing and swallowing. The gore of the bull’s severed testicles was undoubtedly being poured into her mouth.

I heard more ripping of flesh with knives, and the cracking open of bones.

Then there was a rattle of chains, and muffled screams from the girl, sounding human again. After that, there was a moment of silence, just long enough for me to hear the faint sound of an insect stridulating. I looked directly in front of me.

There was a scorpion, blond-colored and about and inch and a half long, standing about two feet from my disfigured legs with its pincher prone.

I tried to scoot back away from it using my hands. But I was already pretty much up against the wall. It started running towards me, and I closed my eyes.

Then I heard a footstep, and a crunch. I opened my eyes and saw one of the Lions standing in front of me, holding an iron ring full of skeleton keys in a disfigured old white hand. He had stomped the scorpion beneath his light brown leather cap toe Oxford shoe.

“Leopold?” I said, just as the onerous music started up again in the temple above me.

He looked upwards through the trap door, at nothing, then lifted up his mask briefly, revealing the expected familiar face of the devious old con man. He winked at me, then put the mask back down. He knelt down beside me and pulled out a syringe. I screamed.

“No!” I turned away from him as far as I could, and tried to wrench my arm away from him as he grabbed it. He held tight. He whispered in my ear.

“Be quiet and stop struggling. I’m trying to help you. Now be still. I don’t want to hurt you.”

“I’m already in agony!” I snapped.

“That’s why I’m giving you morphine,” he replied through clenched teeth.

My struggle subsided. Within seconds I could feel that the injection did indeed contain opiates, ameliorating my suffering. I accepted it.

Maybe they’ll chop me up and eat me bit by bit while I’m still alive, I thought to myself. *At least with the drugs it won’t hurt as much.*

I slumped back and allowed myself to be dragged without struggle several feet down the dark hallway. Then Leopold picked me up and heaved me into a chair. It was a wheelchair.

He blindfolded me again. I felt the chair dragged backwards some distance.

Then he turned the corner, and was able to turn the chair around so that he was pushing it forward. I felt us going up a ramp, turning and turning, for several minutes.

Then we straightened out again, went across a hallway, and stopped in front of a door. Leopold tapped on it nine times—six short ones and three long ones. The door opened and I smelled the incense. The Gothic organ music played and the boys chanted in Latin as we rode down the wheelchair ramp of the *mithraeum*'s proper entrance. At the bottom, he removed my blindfold. The music stopped. Consivia addressed me.

“Cryphius, you have been hobbled to prevent you from running away. For you are a slave to us. You will now be set forth before your master, to whom you shall genuflect in obeisance.”

“How am I supposed to get down on my knees when I can’t even stand?” I said, quivering.

But even as I spoke, Ravens were lifting me up and placing me on my knees.

I had to fall forward on my hands and hold my broken legs up behind me with great effort to keep them from bearing weight against the ground.

“That just makes it easier to fall on your face,” said Rosenberg, behind his mask of Mithras. He now stood in front of me, and in front of the altar, now displaying the eviscerated carcass of the sacrificed bull split down the middle and cracked open. Despite the incense, which itself was an unpleasant smell, the room was still full of the most god-awful stench from the dead animal. Rosenberg stated his demand.

“Do you promise to serve me without reservation henceforth, to do everything I ask, to submit to every humiliation, while also offering me your best efforts on the tasks I set for you, giving me true and complete information on every question I lay before you, and accepting a price worse than death if you fail in this?"

"Yes," I said in a cracked voice full of desperation.

How is this a bargain? I have no choices and nothing to negotiate with! I thought to myself.

Rosenberg then stepped aside from the altar, and two torch-bearing Lions stepped out to shine their fiery lights ahead of me so that I could see what was on the ground in front of it. There was a bloody pile of meat, specifically a string of intestines, now just a foot away from my face. Then Rosenberg spoke again.

"Here are the entrails of the sacrifice, sitting in the exact state in which they fell from the victim's body. Within the bowels of this beast you should be able to see the location of the keystone we are seeking. Can you see it?"

The Ravens raised me up a couple of inches. I looked at the guts. I couldn't help but notice that the manner in which they were arranged resembled the trefoil spiral staircase of the building we were in. And right in the center of the pile, at the end of the hose, there was something red and shiny like a ruby, its bright glow visible through the slime-covered flesh. I swear it looked like the Superman logo.

"Yes I can see it," I said. "Can you?"

He looked down at the pile of intestines. He was silent for a while, breathing heavily behind his mask. Then he at last he looked at me and spoke.

"That's what I have you for. Can you remember exactly what you see here?

We'll need to use this information later on in the rites."

"Well I don't have a photographic memory, if that's what you're asking," I said. "Why don't you take a picture?"

He said nothing for a moment.

“You said you wanted accuracy. I’m in pain and on morphine. You’d best take a picture. There’s a cell phone in the pocket of my jacket underneath my robe. It might still have some juice left.”

Rosenberg laughed at that.

“I’ll do it my self,” he said. “But thank you for reminding me about your phone.”

He reached into his pocked and took out his own phone, then tapped the side to open the camera function. He framed up the shot and activated the flash.

In the dark cave, the sudden burst of light was blinding.

“Ravens, remove the lady’s phone from her jacket, please, and open up the photo gallery” he said to the men holding me.

The Raven on my right hiked up my robe, and fumbled in my jacket pocket for the phone, unnecessarily squeezing my right breast in the process.

“Stop it, you pig!” I objected. Rosenberg chuckled. So then did several others.

“Miss Auger, genuflection is ultimately a sign of sexual submission made into a societal custom. It’s an evolutionary vestige of our wild bestial ancestors.

The animals do it whenever they lose a fight, or whenever they don’t even dare to fight. It was first practiced by human tribes conquered in war, to obtain mercy from the victors. Then it was made a general sign of “respect” from slaves to their owners. Why do you think Muslims put their asses in the air when they submit to Allah?”

The Raven with the phone held it out in front of me while his partner now took control of both of my legs.

“What’s the swipe code?” the Raven with the phone asked.

“It’s the sign of Jupiter,” I answered.

“Huh?” he said.

“It’s like a number 4,” I said.

He took off his white glove and tried to draw a 4 with his finger on the cover of the phone. It didn’t work. So he took off his mask and squinted at the phone in the torchlight. I saw that it was Drexella’s pimple-faced, greasy-haired son, Dennis.

I put all of my weight on my left hand and reached out to draw the swipe code on my phone with my right hand. I got in at once and then hastily put my right hand down again so that I wouldn’t fall forward. Even with the morphine, the muscle strain from hanging there and the pain from the injury was unbearable.

“Hey, the phone’s at 3%, boss,” Dennis said as he handed the phone to Rosenberg. “Want me to plug it in somewhere?”

“In a minute,” he said as he looked at the screen.

“Can I sit down now?” I pleaded.

Rosenberg nodded and waved in our direction, giving his ascent. Then he looked at the phone again and gasped.

“You already have a photo of raw meat on your phone. What is this for?”

“What do you mean?” I said. I hoped that I wouldn’t be struck by lightning for violating my oath to be truthful to him. I also hoped that my phone being almost dead would buy me some time before I had to give him an explanation. I didn’t know exactly what the relationship was between Rosenberg’s Mithras cult and Leopold’s Butchers, but if Rosenberg didn’t already know everything about the bull liver at Stratford Place, I wasn’t going to volunteer to tell him.

Any information gap between me and him, I thought, *is a strategic advantage.*

My hope was well-founded. With the phone at 3%, he couldn’t open up the image gallery to see the detail. The phone just shut down when he tried. He rebooted it, but it immediately shut down again as soon as he opened the gallery.

“Fuck!” he yelled, and almost threw the phone across the room. Then he stopped himself and handed it to Dennis.

“Plug it in,” he told the lad, no doubt regretting that this was the one room in the building where he’d decided, out of respect for history, not to put phone chargers everywhere (or, indeed, any electrical outlets whatsoever). He signaled to the boy at the piano, who began playing an unsettling line of notes in repetition.

The Ravens set me down on the ground with my feet out in front of me.

Then Dennis went out the front entrance to plug the phone in while the other Raven dragged me to the nearest of the fourteen pillars in the temple.

He sat me on the first stone bench on the right side and propped me up with my back against the pillar second from the altar, so that the altar was in front of me. Then someone else who I couldn’t see came up from behind me and wrapped a heavy iron chain around my body, fixing me in position. My arms were pressed tight against my sides, and my back was firmly against the pillar.

“So, Cryphius,” said Consivia, addressing me from behind the altar. “Part of your duty is to help us determine the correct order of operations for the rest of the rituals. We should not have to tell you what the purpose of the rituals is.

Which of the Archons should be we invoke next?”

Well, I didn’t get an answer from my telepathic informant, but it seemed only obvious to me. Events like this always start with an orgy of rape, followed by an orgy of murder involving even more heinous forms of rape. Erotic rites precede rites of sadistic violence, but the longer the preliminaries could be stretched out, the longer the murders could be postponed. That wouldn’t make the rapes any less difficult to watch, or make me feel any less responsible for what happened to the victims. But it seemed like the least harmful choice.

“Invoke first the Archon of Lust,” I answered.

“Yessss!” the crowd hissed, like serpents. Consivia nodded and raised her shepherd’s crook, then used it to gesture to the girl in the black laced veil, who, I now saw, was chained to the pillar opposite from me.

“Now, Luna, lay down upon the altar, within the carcass of this beast, and let your brothers make you pregnant with the seed of a new aeon!” declared Consivia.

A Raven came to unlock her chains. He unfastened her robe and let it fall to the ground, so that she stood there naked and shivering. Then he led her to the altar, where she obligingly laid down in her bed of raw meat, sobbing piteously.

The Raven then began wrapping the chains around the carcass to strap the girl to it. Her legs were positioned so that the chains held them open, with her vagina gaping open and easily accessible from the left side of the altar.

The black curtain was now covering the wall behind the altar once more.

Now one of the Ravens pulled it back again, revealing this time, instead of the *taurtoctony*, another curtain, made of red translucent linen, into which an inverted cross – the Cross of St. Peter—had been cut. Through the cross-shaped hole something else displayed behind the curtain could be seen mounted on the wall.

I recognized it as one of the broken pieces of the relief of Dionysus that had been found in the original *mithraeum*. This was the section with only his naked rear end. I didn't know it at the time, but I now realize that the image before me—of the backside of Dionysus seen through the inverted cross cut into the curtain—looked just like Man Ray's picture *Monument à D.A.F. de Sade*, which he used as a cover for his personal edition of Marquis De Sade's *120 Days of Sodom* in 1933.

“Master of the Nymphi, come forth before the altar!” Consivia called to the back of the room.

There, seated on the stone bench at the back with several of the young veiled boys was the only grown man wearing such a costume: Crispin Martina. He rose and did as he was told, standing with tall, proud sensuality in front of the altar. The priestess watered him with lustrations from her aspergillum, then laid her hand upon his head.

“Aphrodite, Queen of Harlots, come now, and be joined in marriage with Our Father! Come into the body of this young man and enjoy the double pleasure of the *Tanin'iver,* the pole betwixt the serpents. Fuck and be fucked!”

“To you we will give the first taste of the flesh of our beautiful young boys of high birth, and of our virgin royal queen. To you we will also give the pleasure of penetration from the rod of Our Father. Lady Venus, you who were born from the foam of the phallus upon the waters of feminine desire, yet who burns with the fire of male ferocity, come forth and take your fill of the Distinguished Charity of Mete!”

That last phrase, if you’ll recall, came right out of my commissioned translation of Hammer-Purgstall’s *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, where he wrote that he found it encoded on a former Templar site in Bavaria. No other published work besides mine had utilized that phrase in English.

My work is being used to write lines for elite rape rituals, I thought with horror. It was so unbelievable, yet it was happening before me.

Next, I saw a yellow-white ball of light emerge from within the well in the southwest corner of the room, which had, in the original *mithraeum*, been connected to the Walbrook River underground. (Little did I know at the time that the Walbrook had already been re-irrigated surreptitiously by Rosenberg and his friends, so it was presently floating back through the site we stood on down to the Thames once again.) The light ball then glided across the room, hovered over Crispin’s head for a moment, and then swiftly entered through the crown of his skull. I saw his face and neck become flush as sweat poured down his forehead.

Consivia took a step backwards, and Rosenberg stood before Crispin.

“Harlot, kneel before Our Father,” Consivia commanded.

The young man did so. Rosenberg split open his robe in front, then stepped forward and pulled the veil over Crispin’s head. He shoved his crotch in Crispin’s face, and was eagerly serviced by the man, now possessed by the goddess of love, or rather, “strange love.” After a minute, the “Father” pulled out and the priestess proclaimed:

“I now pronounce you the bride of the Father! Let us all enjoy the harlots of the temple in the spirit of the Archon of Lust. Come forth Nymphi!”

With that, all of the boys in veils stepped into the center of the temple.

There they were seized upon by the older participants. These men, and one woman, dragged them off to the stone benches between the columns on the sides of the chamber and had their way with them.

Only one of the ritual’s participants opted out of the child rape: Consivia.

She stood behind the altar with her eyes closed, praying in tongues and making the cross sign with her hands every few minutes. Marcia squatted with her robe hiked up over the face of a twelve-year-old. I had lost track of where Leopold was in the room, but I certainly didn’t see him standing on the sidelines. Miles seemed to have left the room. Almost everyone was fully engaged in either raping or being raped.

This included Rosenberg, who, after being formally “married” to his boyfriend in a bizarre rite of sexual subjugation, extended his hand as if in

then emptied into two large Greek-style kraters that stood on either side of the altar about two feet away in front of it.

Wetzel and Rosenberg, however, pulled out before they got to that point, and gave themselves a “cold *niptron*” (Rosenberg’s words) from the *amphora* of holy water that sat next to the altar, cooling off their excited genitals. Rosenberg asked his friend to help wipe off his penis, and he seemed more than happy to comply. He then stood next to Crispin, rubbing his backside and promising him divine progeny as the young man pumped his semen into Philippine.

“You shall sire us a new god of love, a new Eros who will come forth from the egg of a new aeon. I shall name him Cupidonus,” Rosenberg cooed.

“Why can’t *I* name him?” said Crispin, turning towards Rosenberg as he finished his orgasm. “I want to name him after my father.”

“Silence!” shouted Rosenberg. Before Crispin could react, Rosenberg grabbed him by the throat, and pushed him back into the center of the room with the others. Then he pointed directly at me.

“Cryphius! Whom shall we invoke next?”

This time I was too sick and weary to think up a good answer. My first choice had been made strategically to save or at least extend people’s lives, hopefully long enough for someone to come along and save us. But now the first wave of orgies had passed and it was time for me to make another decision.

Rosenberg wanted me to used my sixth sense to find the answer, so that was what I decided to so. In the moment of relative silence he allowed me, I cleared my mind as best I could, and put out the question to the voice that had spoken to me before. I received an answer, which I repeated verbatim without thinking.

“Let Ares come forth to play bloodsport and enjoy the caresses of Aphrodite, as he is wont to do.”

There was a logic at work here. Each of the gods invoked so far had been baited with something they found irresistible. Ares (a.k.a. Mars) was a god of warfare, rape and pillage. He was also famous for fornicating with Aphrodite (a.k.a. Venus) despite her marriage to Hephaestus (a.k.a. Vulcan).

“Yes, let him come forth,” said Rosenberg. “I’ve always preferred the purity of hatred to love, and death to sex. Marcia, if you please, march yourself up to the altar here.”

From the right side of the room, where she had sat being serviced by boy prostitutes, Marcia Martina arose, with her Roman helmet still on, but with the visor up, so that her face was visible. She grinned from ear to ear, and stared lustfully at her son, who looked back at her with dread. Consivia sprayed her with the aspergillum, and a Lion wafted her with incense again.

Then one of the Ravens pulled away the curtain with the Satanic cross of St.

Peter and brought forward a curtain displaying a Greek-style tapestry. From my position I could see that it showed a number of ancient battle scenes, including soldiers spilling out of a large wooden horse.

The Trojan War, I thought.

I then understood that the curtain had been made to represent Penelope’s tapestry from Homer’s *Odyssey*, the one she supposedly never finished.

Rosenberg stepped into the center of the room and began bellowing out a speech.

“Lord Mayor Marcia Martina: for centuries your family has been the keeper of the holy buckler of our temple. It was this sacred object that the site where we now stand, Bucklersbury, was secretly named for, as only the initiates of our esteemed syndicate know. This powerful talisman is represented on your family’s arms, and reference to it can be found in the current incarnation of your family’s name.”

She nodded her assent, as if to say “This much I know.”

“As the patrons of soldiers, your family has lent your wealth to assist in many great pageants of honor and valor, of bloodshed and rape. Your gold has been spent to pour the Water of Life upon the Earth, and she has thirstily drunk it up. With your help Britannia’s enemies have been conquered many times, creating an empire where the Sun never dies, shielding her with your strength.

Even now, as the aegis of the empire has been occulted from the eyes of the profane, you and your kin have continued in this service.”

She nodded again, now with a bit of curiosity in her eyes, like she wondering where this was going.

Then a Raven pulled back the tapestry to reveal a display of twelve heavy metallic shields mounted on the wall, painted red, all of different shapes and sizes. One of them, however, was in the shape of the Superman logo. It was placed in the center of the arrangement. Rosenberg continued his speech.

“Now, Lord Mayor, if you are fit to be the scion of your seed, the one who shall wear the mantle of great Mars, the captain of all armies, please walk up to the wall and take up the buckler of your esteemed heritage.”

Marcia seemed confused at first, then scared. She turned around and looked at me for help. I looked at the ground and tried to blank out my mind. I knew what was coming, and I wasn’t about to save her ass. So she walked up to the wall behind the altar and started guessing.

It was like watching someone playing Plinko on “The Price is Right,” trying to guess the correct digit. First she gravitated towards the one that looked like the shape of the shield of the Rothschild coat of arms. This was in fact the one that looked most like every heraldic shield you’ve ever seen. Then she reviewed the field of choices again, and settled on a much smaller one, which looked like the small round buckler that formed the central jewel on the Rothschild arms. This is the one that actually represented the “red shield” of popular lore.

It was this symbol that Mayer Amschel Rothschild supposedly used as a logo for his currency exchange business in Frankfurt. This is what the family was allegedly named after, according to mainstream historians. But now I knew better. They were named after another object, some kind of “talisman.”

Bucklersbury, the old name for the intersection of streets where the *mithraeum* and New Court both stood, had been named after this object, probably long before the Rothschilds “officially” took residence there. I was certain that it took the shape of the Superman logo, although I had no idea what that meant.

So Marcia had taken the wrong shield from the wall, albeit the logical choice. But she didn’t possess the secret gnosis that I had been given quite accidentally. She would pay the price for this mistake eventually, but not right away. Rosenberg preferred to play with her first. She stood with her left hand inserted into the handle of the buckler and stared at Rosenberg.

“Now what?”

Rosenberg turned to Consivia.

“Priestess, please, invoke the Archon of War,” he said.

Consivia motioned for Marcia to come stand with her before the altar. Then she laid her hand upon the woman’s brow and spoke commands into the aether.

“Lord Ares, come into this vessel of power. Enjoy with us the fruits of incarnation. Feel the glory of killing in the flesh for yourself once again as you help us initiate the greatest bloodbath the Earth has ever known. You can be the general, and you can call out the first shot!”

Suddenly we heard the ringing of a cell phone with a “99 Luftballons”

ringtone. Marcia, startled, fumbled inside her robe with her right hand and pulled out her phone. She then stared at it in excited astonishment.

“Oh my goodness,” she said, as if she had any goodness. “It’s the Lord High Admiral. He only calls when there’s a war on.”

As she spoke, an orange-red ball of light came up out of the well in the corner, just like the one before, and flew across the room, straight into Marcia’s skull. She then became possessed of a spirit even more demonically evil and sadistic than the one she already called her own. When she answered the phone, she spoke with a masculine, guttural voice.

“Hello Sir. Yes. I’m fine, sir. I have a sore throat. Yes, of course. Go ahead.

Fire the torpedo. We’ll help you pay for the aftermath, like always. Don’t worry.”

She hung up and distractedly tried to hand her buckler and phone over to Rosenberg.

“Father, hold these for me please,” she said, staring wantonly at Crispin.

Rosenberg jerked his hand away in disgust and motioned for one of the Ravens to take the items instead. Hands now free, she ripped open her robe and her blouse, squeezing her shriveled old breasts. Then she grabbed Crispin and kissed him passionately on the mouth, rubbing his chest and grasping his limp penis between her bony fingers.

The young man seemed revolted at first. But, overcome with his lingering possession by the Archon of Lust, he succumbed to her caresses and began to regain his erection. Marcia then decided to sit down on the stone bench on the wall opposite from the pillar where I was chained. She laid back on the large cushion behind her and had Crispin kneel with his head between her legs. I had a perfect view. I couldn’t help but stare in horror.

The son dutifully began stimulating his mother’s clitoris with his tongue, as I suspected he had done many times before in less ritualized and divinely inspired circumstances. She admonished him not to be “too hasty.” Then she closed her eyes and let out an intense moan that turned into a growl. After a few minutes, she told him to stop. She regained her composure temporarily and issued a command to the other people wearing Roman helmets like hers.

“Soldiers, take up your spears and shields and divide yourselves into two even rows.”

The Soldiers all looked at Rosenberg, who stood next to the altar. He nodded his agreement. Obediently, they all grabbed bucklers from the wall behind the altar, and spears, which were mounted right next to them. (None, I noticed, chose the Superman-logo-shaped shield, perhaps because it was so peculiar.) Then they stood at attention in two rows with four men each. There was a row of men on either side of her bench, staring across to each other, awaiting instructions.

“Fight the man across from you, until either he or you are dead.”

There was a moment of hesitancy. The men looked at each other from behind their masks. But it only lasted for a few seconds, as Rosenberg appeared to have no objection. To the contrary, he issued a complimentary command to the Nymphus whose job it was to play the drum.

“Give me a drumbeat please. Something appropriate for a soldier marching to war.”

The Nymph nodded and began tapping out a furious beat. One of the guys in the middle of the row on my right struck out at the man across from him. Then all hell broke loose between the two teams. Blood was flying everywhere. An ear got sliced off and landed in front of me.

Marcia looked on at the spectacle in satisfaction, and leaned back again.

Crispin resumed his work. Within a couple of minutes, four men were dead, and Marcia looked like she was about to climax. She was laying diagonally on the bench now, arching her pelvis up towards Crispin’s mouth as he slurped away.

“Now fight each other until there’s only one of you,” she gasped in a raspy demonic voice. Caught up in the frenzy of battle by this time, nobody questioned the order. It took a few more minutes for these more competent soldiers to be cut down.

During this time, Marcia had her son remove his mouth several times for a few seconds, and then resume his work. She seemed to be timing her orgasm until the last kill of the combat was made. When this occurred, she began jerking spasmodically, yelling “Hurrah! Hurrah!” while the victor stood before her with his spear held high over his head, panting and sweating nervously. He was obviously still terrified for his life, even though he’d won.

The drummer boy had just finished his set, but a new set of knocks was heard coming from the doors of the front entrance. One of the Ravens went to open it as Marcia stood up and closed her robe. It was Miles. He walked in and raised his hand to signal Rosenberg.

In so doing, he exposed his gun, which was holstered in his belt on the front of his body. Marcia, seeming to react on instinct, seized it on sight. Miles just stared at her, taken aback at her brazenness. She turned around and pointed the gun at the victorious sole surviving Soldier.

“Well done, you brave young man. You’ve earned some metal on your chest.”

And with that, she shot him in the left breast. He fell over, emitting vacuous gasps of air from the hole in his lungs as blood sputtered out of his mouth.

“Ah yes, that was great!” yelled Marcia. She began goose-stepping around the room happily. Behind her, Miles cleared his throat loudly and then spoke past her to Rosenberg.

“Father, sir, two of our brothers have arrived late unexpectedly, with a little one in tow.”

“Tell them to go home. We can’t be interrupted now,” replied Rosenberg.

“How rude and careless of them. Our elect ones should know better than that.”

“These brothers are very important,” Miles added.

“Oh, then who are these supposed VIPs?” he asked, laughing. “You know that Mithras is no respecter of persons.”

“The Duke of Rothesay, sir. And Baron Carrickfergus. And Little Saint George.”

A collective gasp went through the room. It seemed that everyone present was both familiar and impressed with the code names mentioned. It wiped the smile off Marcia’s face. She sat down on the bench next to her son, both of them now looking very serious. Only Rosenberg was unmoved. He walked over and took the gun away from Marcia, who handed it over without objection.

“Is that so? Well, that *is* impressive. Nonetheless, I’m not sure we can dispose of one form of decorum for another….”

Prompted by my telepathic informant, I interrupted, projecting my voice as far as I could.

"Let them come hither. For *three* kings are destined to bow down before the new Sun!"

Rosenberg turned and looked at me through his mask. He cocked his head to the side, confused. Then he walked up to me and whispered.

"But don't we have to finish the rite tonight first? I believe the hour is getting late."

"And these are the ones who have been called to finish the rite! Some of the actors you have chosen do not fit the role."

I spoke quietly, and I no longer sounded like myself. My voice took on a *seething* quality, raspy and inhuman, as if I too had a hole in my lung, just like the poor Soldier who gurgled out his last spit of blood on the floor in front of me.

Rosenberg took it all in, then nodded.

"Go ahead, Miles, let them join us. But see that the two brothers are properly suited according to their grades in the order. As for the little one…"

He looked at me, as if waiting for a judgment from me about what to do with "Little Saint George." Apparently, this was a child too young to be a "brother" in an order that admitted boys as young as seven. He had been brought to a place where young boys were subjected to repeated homosexual rapes and made to be complicit in ritual murder.

How can I prevent them from bringing him into this pit of hell and abusing him here? , I asked my telepathic informant.

There is no way to save this child, the voice told me. *But let Miles sit with him in the main lobby for now.* I repeated that last part to Rosenberg as a command from the realm beyond.

"Don't worry," said Miles. "They're already in their costumes. I'll take care of the child."

With that, he ducked out through the door, which he left slightly ajar. A moment later, two men in robes and masks, one a Sun, the other a Lion, came through the doorway, then walked down the hall, the Lion leading the Sun. The Lion had salt and pepper hair. The Sun had short golden hair with a bald patch on top. They both came and stood before Rosenberg in the center of the room.

“Well, brothers, it’s nice to see that you finally decided to show up. I thought you were too busy to come tonight, despite my insistence that it would be the most important rite we have ever conducted.”

“Yes,” said the Lion. “Well, it has been an eventful evening. My father received a call from this building a few minutes ago that has initiated a very dangerous sequence of events. This country is now in a perilous international crisis. The Russian sub that was just torpedoed in the Straight of Dover may very well set off a nuclear war if we don’t dial it back somehow.”

“So we came here to talk to the very persons we believe to be fomenting this crisis, to ask them to back off,” said the Sun-man, looking at Marcia and Crispin. “We ask not only as representatives of the crown, but as your brothers in Mithras too.” He nodded politely with reserved deference towards Rosenberg. It was sort of a half-bow, as if showing respect for the leader of the Order, but holding back full obeisance out of respect for his own position of authority. It reminded me of Barack Obama trying to bow to the King of Saudi Arabia without looking like he was bowing.

“And for the sake of the Goddess our Mother,” the Lion added, making the same half-assed bow towards Consivia.

“Duly noted, Rothesay. Thank you,” said Consivia, nodding back at him.

So that’s the Duke, I thought to myself. *The other one must be Baron Carrickfergus. I wonder if he got his barony from the same place Leopold* *did*. I was trying to think flippantly, to bring some levity to the situation for myself, but my gut told me that this Duke and Baron were not pretending. In fact, I got the feeling they were each just using some of their more *minor* titles for this occasion.

Marcia now stood up, looking possessed by evil intentions rather than fear once again. She took what she thought was her family's hereditary buckler back down from the wall, and one of the spears, which she held in her right hand with the tip downward. Then she strode arrogantly over to where the two apparent aristocrats of high stature, self-identified as *agents of the crown*, were standing.

She addressed herself first to the Lion.

“You know, not only should you *not* interrupt a meeting in progress that you couldn't be bothered to show up on time for. The fact is, in this part of town, you're supposed to ask for my permission to cross the *pomoerium*.”

“Not if Regina's still alive,” he replied.

“I hear she isn't,” said Marcia, bringing her spear up and pointing it in his face. “And if that's true you're putting the kingdom in a very precarious position by coming here. Which means you're desperate. So what do you have to bargain with? Is that why you brought Little Saint George? Bring him out here. I love a Vienna sausage every now and then.” She gnashed her teeth at him.

“Show some respect!” said Rosenberg, grabbing the spear from out of the Lord Mayor's hand. Even possessed by the war god, the old woman's boney hands were no match for the strength of a man. He didn't even have to point the gun at her, and instead holstered it in his waistband beneath his robe before he took the spear. As her weapon slipped out of her grasp, Ms. Martina stumbled backwards and landed on her butt. I heard brittle bones snap.

Osteoporosis is a bitch, I thought.

“Actually what you’re holding is a trinket,” Rosenberg said sneeringly as he towered over her cowering body. “It’s for little boys and girls who like to dress up and play toy soldier. The real Hebrew talisman that turned Nathan Rothschild into the Leviathan of finance worldwide is something else entirely. But of course, you don’t have the subtlety of mind to understand that. Wetzel!”

“Yes!” The other man with the Sun mask stumbled out from the shadows and stood dutifully before his master.

“Let the Lord Mayor and her son have a look at the explosive headlines that just hit the international news wires,” Rosenberg instructed.

“Which ones?” Wetzel asked. The nuclear threats from Russia? Or the financial news?”

“No, first the one about the video you just leaked to your contacts at the BBC,” the Pater specified.

Wetzel reached into his robe and pulled out a smartphone. He pressed a few buttons, and then turned the screen out towards where Marcia sat on the ground, looking aghast. Crispin got up and walked towards the screen, staring at it in horror with his right hand holding his veil up on top of his head. Wetzel pressed a button on the side of the phone, and the sound became loud enough for us all to hear.

It was a familiar sequence of words and sounds—ones we had just heard coming from Marcia moments earlier. We heard again the moans of ecstasy as her son pleasured her. Then a male TV presenter’s voice could be heard, apparently narrating a *series* of clips.

“Another recording provided to our reporter by this anonymous source shows what appears to be the Lord Mayor in the same position with a male child, possibly as young as twelve, from the looks of it.”

Marcia pushed her heavy metal helmet off of her head, and it landed with a loud clang on the floor. The presenter continued.

“Of course, we won’t be showing you even doctored versions of that, as it *does* constitute child pornography and *is* illegal to possess. We’ve passed both videos on to MI5 for authentication.”

“I hope those shots were tight enough to conceal our location,” said Wetzel.

“Shh,” said Rosenberg. “Listen.” The report went on.

“But the most heart-breaking thing is that this film, *and* the first one we showed you, with Crispin Martina, were date-stamped with tonight’s date, from *less than an hour ago*. That means that this sick party, where children are being abused, is potentially still taking place right now. Scotland Yard has confirmed that they are on their way to Mansion House with a warrant for the Lord Mayor’s arrest.”

“Good God, Blake, you’ll get us all taken down. What have you done?” said Crispin. He reached in his robe, got out his phone, and began dialing a number.

“That is an extreme move,” said the Duke of Rothesay to Rosenberg.

“We’re all vulnerable when it comes to that sort of thing. It’s supposed to be the bullet that never gets fired.”

“Tell that to Jimmy Saville,” said Marcia, opening up her own cell phone now. “I’ll be damned if I’m going to let you hang me out to dry like that. My family won’t let it happen.”

“Your family will be too busy scraping up whatever assets they have left and fleeing the countries they live in,” said Rosenberg. “While you were in this chamber having your smegma-covered cunt serviced by your sniveling son, the value of your family’s wealth has evaporated. What good will mountains of gold do you when the volume of gold on the market has just been quadrupled literally overnight?”

There was a collective gasp in the room, then a few seconds of silence.

“That’s impossible,” said Crispin. “Our family holds over half of the world’s gold. There’s no way anyone could dump that much gold on the market without our participation. And we’re not selling right now.”

“That’s OK, ‘cause nobody’s buying,” Rosenberg retorted. “Did you forget that you’re talking to an alchemist?”

The eyes of both Martinas widened at the sound of that. They stared in disbelief.

“You can’t be serious,” said Marcia.

“He is,” said Crispin addressing his mother. “He made it from the urine we’ve been getting from the throne in Westminster. He discovered the tubes in the tunnels, remember?”

“Oh fuck,” she said, tearing her wig off and revealing the gray hear underneath, with a significant bald patch on top.

“And I’ve got a process that produces in much more abundance than what you and your ancestors have been doing,” said Rosenberg. “I know the true secrets of *multiplicatio*, not just confidence tricks!”

“Because you’ve been harvesting semen from all your employees here for over a year,” said Crispin, pacing back and forth frantically. “Through the robots and the glory hole in the Qaphqa. And from all of the orgies we’ve been having over at the Coffin House over the last year. And the blood and guts of the victims too. God, even the spinal fluids. I can’t believe I didn’t see what you were up to. I really believed you were looking for a source of free energy, to help the Earth.”

“Oh, what I’m about to do will give the Goddess of Dirt exactly what she needs, and a source of power that will be inexhaustible. You see, Crispin, what she really wants is to be reunited with her lover, the sky, and that is the kind of love that we are making tonight. It’s a strange love, a mad love, like the laugh of the hell-worm that will not die. Isn’t that right, Reverend Springhole?” He turned around and looked at Consivia. She smiled at him and nodded.

“What the Devil are you talking about?” asked the Duke of Rothesay.

“The Devil you *don’t* know, apparently,” said Rosenberg. “Never mind, you’ll find out soon enough.”

The Pater then turned back to Marcia and Crispin.

“So you see, Lord Mayor, you bitch of the parasitic, warmongering House of Rothschild: as much as I hate the sickly sweet love between low, plebian souls, I actually hate hatred too, even more. Certainly, we can do without the kind of revolutionary instincts that your family fosters to keep the war machine turning.

Because it weakens loyalty, quickens the pride, and stirs rebellion among the unworthy.”

He inhaled and exhaled deeply, pacing in a circle around the two Martinas.

He continued.

“In the new aeon, there will be no resistance to the Lord of Unrule.

Remember what Zeus once said to Ares in the *Aeneid*? To his own despised son?

He said ‘were you born of some other god … long since you would have been dropped beneath the gods of the bright sky.’ We don’t need a war god under the new Sun.”

Marcia turned to her son.

“Crispin, help Mummy up please.”

The young man reached down, grabbed the injured old woman’s arm and began lifting her to her feet. She leaned on his shoulder, putting her weight on him. But he reached out to Rosenberg for the spear, which his boss willingly handed over to him.

Then Crispin placed the spear upside-down with the tip of the handle pressed down onto the floor, and pushed his mother’s body towards the blade.

She fell upon it, and it went all the way through, skewering her through the heart.

There was only time for her to utter a single wheeze before she closed her mouth forever. Crispin let the body fall to the floor as it expired. Then he turned to Rosenberg, with a pleading look.

“Please just help me escape from this. I will be your most loyal servant, as I always have been. I’m willing to do anything. I’ll even. . . .” He paused to consider what he was agreeing to, staring off blankly at a far wall. “I’ll even let the Barber-Surgeons change my beautiful face, if it means I can be released from the life of infamy that now stands before me.” He looked like he was going to cry.

“Your beauty is fading in any case, dear lover,” said Rosenberg. “You’re far too old and your rectum is far too worn out for my taste these days.”

At this, tears were definitely welling up in the corner of Crispin’s reddened baby-blue eyes. Rosenberg continued his emotional torture.

“But don’t forget: I’ve got *you* on camera now too, diddling a twelve-year-old girl. So why don’t you give up now to avoid the humiliation. In the next aeon, a new catamite will be born to me with the beauty of Ganymede.”

He sighed at the pleasure of this contemplation, then reached in his waistband and pulled out the gun. He offered it to Crispin, holding it by the barrel.

Without a moment's hesitation, he put it his mouth and pulled the trigger, spraying his brains all over Consivia behind him.

The splatter reached the ceiling too, as well as the wall, and the altar where Philippine now lay silent and still on top of the rotting bull carcass. Some of the gore apparently sprinkled on the Duke's lion mask, even managing to penetrate the slit of the mask's mouth. He stuck his finger underneath the mask and we heard him lick his lips.

"Mmm, tastes like a Jew," the Duke said. Everybody in the room started laughing uproariously.

"Hey!" said Rosenberg in mock objection, chuckling underneath his Mithras mask. "I resemble that remark!" More cachinnation followed.

The Duke pulled off his mask, revealing his rat-like old face, proving that he was indeed the person I feared he was.

Here's one of the most crucial figures in the kingdom, I thought, *standing there exposing himself to incrimination that could destroy the crown itself, not to mention the threat of assassination. Yet he seems so perfectly comfortable, as though he still trusts in the honor among thieves. This even after he just watched two other very important figures cut down in cold blood before him. Even after he himself has just been threatened with a spear by one of them. Despite the fact that Rosenberg has shown himself to be indisputably the most powerful person in the room, with a financial weapon in his arsenal of an unimaginable magnitude, and completely disloyal to his so-called "brothers", neither Duke nor Baron seem fazed at all.*

"So, my liege," said Rosenberg to the Duke, "can you call off your dogs at Scotland Yard before they start combing through every building on the block?”

“Ho ho, old boy, they’re not *my* dogs,” the Duke said, replacing his mask.

“Can you help me call off the dogs of war that the Lord Mayor unleashed?”

“Yes, but this first,” Rosenberg insisted. “If they don’t find the Lord Mayor at Mansion House, they will surely go looking at New Court, and eventually they’ll end up here.”

“That’s precisely why you shouldn’t have leaked that video to the press!

What were you thinking? Anyway, I can’t be seen to interfere on this case. Not with all the child sex charges still haunting Andrew. The order to quash must come from within Scotland Yard, or from within the Security Services. Don’t you have connections at Thames House?”

“I used to,” said Rosenberg. Then he remembered. “Wait, yes!” He got out his phone and pressed a button, then spoke into it.

“Yes, Miles? Please go fetch the man in the elevator at New Court and bring him to my office. I’ll meet you there. Thank you.”

While the Duke and the Baron stood casually mumbling to each other, Rosenberg walked up to me to whisper another demand for instructions through divination.

“So what’s next,” he asked. “How should we proceed?”

A voice from beyond seemed to take over my larynx in response to Rosenberg’s prompting.

I was ready for him. I had already received a message from my psychic informant.

“The seed of Venus was planted in the appropriate vessel corresponding to her sphere of influence. As for the others, let the three kings plant their royal seeds in her rose garden next door instead. Let the king with the highest rank have her first. Then let the Sun-Runner's horses plough her field too. This will open a gateway between the two gardens, causing the seeds to comingle and graft together in a manner more than natural. It will also free her mortal soul and complete the rites for this evening."

I really had no idea what these metaphors were about at the time. I think Rosenberg's understanding of them was vague and incomplete, or else he would never have gone along with the plan.

"Horses? Where from?" he asked, incredulous.

"Send a text with the Lord Mayor's phone to the Lord High Admiral," the voice said through me. "Tell him to come here with four horses and a chariot with standing room for two. He must inform none but his personal entourage where he is going, and may use only his most trusted assistants for this. He shall take the tunnels to be sure he isn't followed. Also, tell him to bring the device he uses for mating with horses."

"He has a 'device' for mating horses?" said Rosenberg, amused.

"Mating *with* horses," the voice I spoke with corrected him. "Most certainly. Just letting him know that you know about it will be enough to ensure that he gets himself here right away."

"And you want us to squeeze four horses and a carriage in here?"

Rosenberg said skeptically. "With all these other people?"

"No," I replied. "On the sky terrace at New Court. Make sure someone brings me another shot of morphine before we go." The informant's voice was confined to my mind now, allowing me to control my own throat again, but still feeding me the lines.

"So the Lion and the Sun-Runner whom I'd planned to use: what shall we do with them now?" asked Rosenberg.

“Continue to use the Lion as a servant,” I said, hoping as I spoke it was worth it to save Leopold’s life. “But not Wetzel. He’s finished his purpose. We shall add his blood to the Hellbroth in the Gradalis, and use his fat to make a flying ointment. Make sure it’s prepared before the next ceremony begins.”

I felt no remorse. Wetzel was a child rapist and an accessory to murder, just like everyone else in the room. Also, from what I could tell, he was slated for sacrifice at the end of the ritual anyway. I just assumed that most of us were. I was just moving up his execution date one day, I figured. These were the instructions I had been given by my psychic informant, and I saw no reason to deviate from the message in any way.

“Now, do the invocations before the Sun-Runner’s carriage arrives,” I was told to say.

“The Sun-Runner’s carriage?” Rosenberg said, second-guessing me. “You mean the Lord High Admiral’s carriage?”

“He will be bringing it, but it’s for the Sun-Runner’s use,” I said with telepathic prompting. “It is he who shall work those Starry Wheels. Have your servants outfit it with scythes for reaping.”

Rosenberg nodded. “Anything else?”

“Yes,” the voice continued through me. “Have them connect the Walbrook to the Rothschilds’ royal pissing conduit at Bucklersbury, so that the spirits of the Archons can travel to New Court with ease. There is a piping system sufficient in diameter for our needs that you can access behind a locked door in the tunnels there at that junction. It can only be opened with Crispin’s fingerprints—the right hand, and just the fingers of blessing. This pipe connects to the toilets in the Sky Box. Make an opening for them to get from the Sky Box toilets to the terrace below. It will serve as a divine portal for the rite, like the well that you have here.”

Again, I did not understand the meaning of the words I was speaking. I reached for a picture in my mind of how this was going to play out, but was given only a blank screen. After receiving that last detail from me, Rosenberg promptly pivoted on his heals and called out to the men in the black leather veils standing at the back of the room.

“Butchers! Please, take the bodies of these Soldiers down to the Gradalis room for processing. But leave the Lord Mayor and Crispin. Lay them down on the benches. We have special plans for them.”

“Wait!” said Baron Carrickfergus. “First, I’ve got to take a leak. Dad, what do you say?” He looked at the Duke and gestured towards the bodies of the two Martinas.

“Oh yes, splendid idea,” said the Duke. “My bladder is bursting. I’ve had a pint too many tonight.”

Both men walked up to the corpses, which had fallen within inches of each other, and opened up their own robes. Then I heard the unzipping of trousers and the splash of the urine as it hit its targets. The father and son walked in a circle around the two bodies so as to thoroughly drench each one. As they did so, they laughed.

“So you want my piss, do you?” said the Duke to the lifeless remains as he soiled them. “There you go, bean-counters. Drink your fill.”

“Oh, how I’d love to do this to the rest of the family,” said the Baron as the last of his urine stream sputtered out.

“You can,” said Rosenberg. “But it’s not necessary. They shan’t be bothering you much anymore, now that my economic plan is taking effect.”

“Still, I wish you’d have let me piss in their mouths while they were still alive, these two,” said the Duke, shaking off the final drops. “They were worst. I never understood what you saw in that boy, other than his pretty mouth and his tender arse.”

sign of life I'd seen from her in a while. Rosenberg continued his speech.

"And now, tonight, she is providing the material basis for the most ambitious magical working that any man has ever attempted. But I am inviting you, my lords, to aid me in this endeavor. Tonight, as part of this effort, Philippine will die in the midst of extreme pain and sexual degradation. The Lord High Admiral is already on his way here to lend some technical assistance. I would be much obliged if you two would play out the roles I have prepared for you."

"You know very well that we are already obliged to you, so of course we will accommodate," answered the Duke, closing his robe.

"Is she a virgin?" asked the Baron, now gently stroking his swollen member.

"Not as of an hour ago," said Rosenberg, with a slight hint of regret in his voice. "But the back door is what I'm going to hit. After you two, of course."

"Oh, but let my son have first shot," said the Duke. "He's very particular about these things."

"Of course, it's a deal," said Rosenberg, shaking the hands of both men in turn. "We'll be moving over to New Court for the next part of the operation."

He looked down at his phone, which had just received another message.

"But first, I must speak to one of my captives," he said in conclusion.

Then he addressed the Butchers, who had been standing there the whole time waiting for permission to take the bodies of the Martinas. He held up his right thumb, index finger, and middle finger.

"Take the first three fingers from Crispin's right hand and save them for me," he instructed. "Then take the bodies and put them in the Coffin House, in pods 1 and 2."

So the other building was *intentionally made to look like a coffin*, I discerned silently.

The Butchers complied with the orders. One of them snipped off the fingers with large meat shears. The others covered up the corpses with curtains (Crispin with the cross curtain, Marcia with the Troy tapestry). Then four more Butchers came through the main entrance and carried the bodies away on gurneys. Before they arrived, Rosenberg had already gone, presumably to speak with Chesterfield, whom I took to be his “captive,” the MI5 contact he bragged to the Duke of Rothesay about.

I swooned with exhaustion at the thought of what must still lay before us, before the night was even through, before I would be allowed to rest in the comfort of either sleep or, most likely, death, it seemed to me. Though it hadn’t really been that long, I felt like I needed another shot of morphine. Just when I thought I couldn’t take waiting any longer, Leopold showed up with the syringe in hand, giving me the only small comfort I would be permitted that night. Oh, and one other: he gave me a long draught of water from a stone *amphora*.

I wished I could have drowned in it at that moment.

Chapter 22: Archons Uprooted

And when We said unto the angels: Prostrate yourselves before Adam, they fell prostrate, all save Iblis. He demurred through pride, and so became a disbeliever.

—*Quran* 23:97, Pickthal translation

The rooftop terrace at New Court was positioned partially beneath the Sky Box where our evening began, with our rancid meal of raven meat and champagne. However, most of it was uncovered and sitting to the east of there.

The Sky Box was mounted unevenly on top of the two adjoined New Court buildings, as if a toddler had been lazily stacking up wooden blocks on the floor. It hovered, mounted on poles, mostly over one of the buildings: the one we'd initially entered. But part of it stuck out to the East over the other building, which had the terrace on top. And that is where we were now all assembled for the second part of tonight's ritual. The mysterious voice that had spoken through me told Rosenberg that's what we should do.

I had no idea how long these ceremonies would stretch on into the future. I was in so much pain, so tired, disoriented, scared, worried, sick, hungry, and in dread of the horrors to come that my only hope was to put to death soon, without more torture or degradation. But the hope felt empty. I also anticipated that there were even worse things to be concerned with besides just what my own fate was. The signs in the heavens were ominous.

The Moon was huge, now with a red mass that appeared to be swelling within it. Two of them had disappeared, but there were still four huge stars hovering around the Moon, even larger than before, with one significantly bigger than the others. Both the Moon and the stars were lower in the sky than before.

You might think that Rosenberg and the others would have been concerned about the possibility of others seeing us up there, especially when Scotland Yard was supposedly *en route* to arrest Marcia. We had actually seen, from the roof, police arriving at Mansion House next door to the northwest. Uniformed officers had gotten in position around the perimeter, preparing to perform some kind of action. We even saw a helicopter approaching in the distance.

For a minute, Rosenberg did appear worried, and alerted Chesterfield, who now sat next to me on the grass, handcuffed to my wheelchair. The spook had merely shrugged his shoulders, looking scared of retaliation for failure. But then the helicopter turned around 180 degrees and went back the way it came. The policemen all got in their cars and drove away. Rosenberg patted Chesterfield on the shoulder and went back to preparing the rest of the ritual.

The Lord High Admiral arrived with his escorts through the elevator. He was not wearing a costume initially, but came in a navy blue suit with a brown overcoat and a black derby. Wrinkled and decrepit, he stooped a bit, but not as much as you'd think a man his age would. His jaw quivered uncontrollably, though, and his bloodshot eyes burned with the fire of dementia on top of psychopathy.

In days of his prime, he would have been among the ones raping and murdering with zeal. Tonight, his job was merely to bring the horses and their gear, all of which arrived through the service elevator. This included the carriage, stood up on its back end to fit inside, and of course the "device for mating with horses." This latter item resembled the one used by Pasiphae, the wife of King Minos, to mate with the Cretan bull, made by Daedalus on the orders of Zeus.

This one, the Lord High Admiral bragged to us, had been made for the set of a Spanish film, 1978's *The Coming of Sin* (though you might know it under alternative titles like *The Violation of the Bitch* or *Sodomia*).

The terrace was designed along a grid of lines formed by stone and cement, arranged diagonally against the sides of the roof so as to form a pattern of rhombi. Within this grid were placed patches of grass, trees, and hedges enclosing larger rhombus-shaped paved areas, which were meant to be used as “outdoor meeting rooms.” Inside the largest of these, in the southeast corner of the terrace, the brazen horse was set up. It was put in the northeastern corner of the hedge, which was closed all around except for its northwest corner.

Three or four yards apart from this, in the center of the hedge, three velvet-covered throne-like wooden chairs—one yellow, one purple, and one black—

were assembled in the eastern corner in a semi-circle facing the back end of the horse. The Duke of Rothesay was seated on the left side, in the purple chair. The Baron was ensconced in a yellow throne in the middle, looking down at his crotch,

petting it gently with his thumb. Rosenberg sat on the right, in the black chair.

Like everyone else present, they still wore their robes and masks.

Behind the thrones, three standards, each about three foot by two foot, hung down from a horizontal pole held up by two others. Each flag had a field matching in hue to the color of the throne it flew behind. The purple one behind the Duke showed an old man in a toga vomiting up six planetary sigils and a red polygon: the Superman logo again. On the black flag behind Rosenberg there was a similar figure eating a human baby.

But on the golden flag behind the Baron, there was an image of the Sun inverted, with a pained expression on its face, surrounded by what appeared to be a pool of red blood. It reminded me of the Sun and the Moon on the Mete coffer.

“I think my flag’s upside-down” said Baron Carrickfergus to Rosenberg.

“It certainly is not,” Rosenberg replied.

The torches were lit, held now by the Lions standing at the three closed corners of the hedge, and the electric lights at the top of the New Court buildings were switched off. All of the Butchers and Ravens gathered in the southwestern corner, to the left of me, facing the three seats and the brazen horse. To my right in the southeast, aligned with St. Swithin’s Lane, beneath the low-hanging Moon with its juicy red center, another altar had been set up. It was the Cybele altar—

the one that had been used in the castration ritual in 1956. Behind it stood Consivia, muttering prayers with her eyes closed. On either side of her were two Nymphi, with the one stage left holding a violin.

Above and to the left of the hedge, hanging from beneath the Sky Box, was a green plastic construction chute, about twelve inches in diameter. Normally used for removing debris from rooves and upper floors during construction projects, it had been hastily assembled by Rosenberg’s servants and connected through the bottom of the Sky Box, as per my orders. On top of the Sky Box, in the center of its eastern edge, Rosenberg had them erect nothing less than the London Stone itself.

The Stone had apparently come recently into his possession, being held in safekeeping for the City of London for a short term. It was supposed to be installed for public display the following week close to its original location on Cannon Street, right in front of the Walbrook Building next door to both New Court and Rosenberg Plaza.

About an hour earlier that evening, while things were being set up there on the terrace, and Wetzel’s body was being rendered into various products, Rosenberg had showed me the London Stone, which he had hidden inside the column that was holding up the altar in the *mithraeum*. He was showing it mainly to brag to me that he had it, and also to ask me if I thought it should be used as a ritual implement in the next portion of the ceremonies. I instantly saw in my mind’s eye that it contained the same red light I had seen at the end of the bull entrails I had been forced to examine. I then heard that same mental voice tell me that the London Stone held the answer to that other riddle which Rosenberg was demanding a solution for.

This Rock is the Egg that contains the Keystone, it said.

It seemed to me that my survival depended on giving Rosenberg the information he wanted to make his ritual successful from his perspective, whatever that meant. So on my instruction (acting on the inspiration that came to me from my psychic informant), Rosenberg had the Ravens post the London Stone on top of the very pylon that it was due to later be displayed on. I had him place it sitting on its side, taller than it was wide, unlike the way it was normally seen.

Consivia ceased her private prayers and it became deathly quiet. The only sound was coming from the four live horses, outside the hedge and beyond our field of vision. They could be heard clopping around and snorting, as the Lord High Admiral and two of his personal servants prepared them for God knows what.

The Duke of Rothesay reached into his jacket underneath his robe and pulled out a cigarette wrapped in brown paper. He pushed up his mask part-way and was about to light it with a Zippo. Rosenberg looked over at him and coughed. He threw it on the ground, put his mask down again disapprovingly, and slumped back into his chair.

One of the Nymphi started chanting in Latin verse once again, for just a few lines. The last was perfectly timed. It ended just as the bells of St. Paul’s Cathedral struck out, ringing eleven times. Clouds began to cluster around the stars and the pregnant Moon. A cold breeze stirred the air for just a moment, which had the effect of intensifying rather than dispersing the tension.

Next, having been told by me that the proper Archon to invoke next was Zeus (a.k.a. Jupiter), Consivia told the Duke of Rothesay to stand before the altar.

“Will the royal Lion on the purple throne come forth please?” she said, holding out her right hand in a beckoning gesture.

Then a man in a Raven mask approached the Duke from his right with a metal bowl containing a piece of cooked meat. It smelled like the same stuff served to us at dinner that night. In another hand, he held a metal goblet filled with wine.

“Eat, dear prince, the sweet livers of the birds who guarded thy kingdom.

And drink the ambrosial wine made from the blood of thine enemies.”

He cocked his head to the side, as if confused. Then he sighed and pushed his mask up a few inches, exposing his mouth. He grabbed the meat with his hand, quickly shoving it into his gob whole. I think it was just the bird’s liver

“Mmmph,” he gagged.

A Nymphus began playing a raucous, violent tune on the violin. I watched the Duke’s mandibles masticating as he forced himself to eat it despite its awful taste. Then he took the wine and swallowed the whole mess in one gulp. His throat bulged as it went down. Sweat began to pour down his neck. Then he emitted a growl and broke into loud, heavy breathing as he handed back the dishes to the Ravens.

He stared at the Priestess with his arms at his sides, balled into fists. She pushed his mask back down and then laid her left hand upon his head. She used her right to douse him with her aspergillum as she intoned the following incantation.

Jupiter Feretrius,

On this rooftop come to us,

Use your thunderbolts to free

The trophy of your destiny

Let your flaming sword come fly

Down from your throne in the sky

Then the stony egg shall yield

To thy crown the true Red Shield.

So that from thine enemy

Whom we killed so valiantly

Spoils of war you now shall reap

Precious jewel that's yours to keep

I didn't tell her that the Rock was an Egg, I thought. *How did she know?*

Behind her, one of the four stars hovering next to the Moon in the southern sky unmistakably began—I swear—to droop down and come closer. It grew so large that it no longer looked like a star, but rather a giant purple ball of light.

This terrified me more than anything I had witnessed so far. All my life I had suffered from a recurring apocalyptic nightmare about seeing something just like this in the sky. I now realized that these were all premonitory dreams preparing me for this exact moment.

Everybody else gazed up at the purple ball in wonder, even Rosenberg and Consivia. The Duke seemed almost like he had been electrocuted in place as he stood like a statue staring at it, with Consivia’s hand still on his head. Baron Carrickfergus turned to Rosenberg and spoke, awkwardly.

“Oh yes, we saw something like this on the way over here this evening.

Looked like there was a star literally hovering over your Plaza, Blake. They were almost like guiding lights directing us to your doorstep.”

“Shh!” said Rosenberg, annoyed.

Clouds covered the rest of the sky all around us, like being smothered by a pile of freshly-sheared Gotland wool. They obscured everything but the purple sphere. Consivia handed the Duke a *sistrum*, as I had told her to. (This was a rattle used in ancient Rome to make a noise like thunder in rituals.)

“*Juppiter Tonans*! Shake your thunder-stick!” she commanded the Duke. He obeyed. The *sistrum* rattled, held high above his head. Then we heard a clap of thunder, and a bolt of lightning shot down—not from the clouds, but directly from the purple orb. It hit the London Stone on top of the Sky Box. The music stopped and everybody gasped.

The Stone immediately disintegrated, and chunks rained down on us. One of them hit the violinist in the shoulder, nicking him. Another one clobbered Philippine in the back, bruising her badly and causing her to crumple back down to the ground with more sobs.

But inside the oolite of the London Stone was a hidden surprise, revealed when it disintegrated: a gigantic shimmering clear crystal. It looked to be well over a foot wide and almost a foot tall, which meant that it had been taking up the majority of the space within its casing. about It landed with its tip pointing downward on the hedge right behind the altar, shining brightly even in the dim light as it fell. From the side, it looked exactly like the Superman logo.

From subsequent research, I have learned that this is actually the shape of the side-profile of a diamond that has been cut in the style called the “modern round brilliant.” This is currently the most popular diamond cut, designed to refract the maximum amount of light. What’s odd is that, as you might have guessed from the name, this cut is a twentieth century invention, created by Marcel Tolkowsky of Belgium in 1919. Yet this giant brilliant cut diamond had clearly been hiding inside the London Stone for hundreds of years at least.

Furthermore, the number of facets, and their distribution on this enormous gemstone in front of me turned out, as I soon discovered, to match the modern standard for a modern round brilliant cut. This consists of 33 on the crown, and 25 on the pavilion, for a total of 58. It was designed this way to refract the maximum amount of light.

Whatever the explanation for this, I knew it was obviously going to be something very unusual. Considering the strange things that had already happened, I was able to accept the presence of a modernly-designed gemstone

concealed inside of a supposedly ancient and natural rock as another example of the mutability of reality.

After the diamond landed on top of the hedge, Consivia looked at the Duke and gestured at it as if to say "Go ahead." In response, the Duke nodded to her and walked behind the altar. He reached up to take the shining gemstone from the top of the hedge. When he got his elderly, shaking hands upon it, he almost dropped it. He pulled his mask up above his eyebrows and gazed at it with awe.

Its lustrous sparkles reflected in his eyes.

"What *is* this?" he shouted to Rosenberg. "This has been inside the London Stone the whole time? What's it made of? What's it for? My God, how much is it worth?"

Rosenberg exhaled in exasperation. "It is worth more than your mother's entire kingdom—not just because of what its made of, but also because of what it can do. And yes, the Lords of the City have had it keistered on Cannon Street this tire time. It's part of the reason why the City has always been more powerful than the monarchy, though almost everyone has forgotten that by now. Even the Rothschilds, the younger ones, don't know about it. They don't even know what their family buckler symbolizes, or why this place is named Bucklersbury."

"It looks like an actual diamond!" the Duke gasped, still fawning over it.

"But it's got to be ten times bigger than any diamond I've ever seen!" Rosenberg nodded, smiling.

"If my projections are correct," he said, "it should be 15.5 inches across the girdle, and 10.625 inches from the tip of its culet to top of its crown. That's four times bigger than the largest *uncut* diamond ever seen," answered Rosenberg.

"That was the Cullinan, which Edward VII had chopped up into over a hundred pieces, now all owned by your mother. But I reckon she's never seen one cut quite like this, or with the same properties."

The Duke turned it around in his hands, allowing me a glimpse of the octagonal "table" at the top of the crown. I realized that the geometry on the top of the diamond matched what I had seen found in the design of the sunroof for Rosenberg's main building next door.

"Yes, who would have done the cutting, if this thing has been around for hundreds of years?" asked the Duke. "I mean, it's a brilliant cut, right? 58 facets? I thought this design was invented by that Tolkowsky fellow in 1919."

"In my experience," Rosenberg replied, "most modern scientific discoveries are either rediscoveries or reworkings of ancient alchemical techniques.

Sometimes the inventors are ignorant of this, but sometimes they hide the truth too, just so they can file a patent. Take silicon on sapphire, for instance…” The Duke interrupted, to Rosenberg’s annoyance.

“The workmanship is fantastic! I’ll bet the fire it puts out is amazing. Shall I call up my man in Ghent to have it evaluated?”

Rosenberg rolled his eyes. “You are speaking as a mortal!” he said to the Duke. “A monarch-in-waiting, yes, and intoxicated with divine substance, but you *still* speak as a *man*. Let the Lord of Olympus take control of your mind and body *completely*. Let him experience the pleasures of being a man in the flesh through your own mortal flesh. Then you will remember what it is you hold in your hands.”

As he said that last sentence, Rosenberg looked up at the purple orb, now even larger and lower in the sky than before. He stood up and gestured to the Duke’s empty chair.

“Return to your throne here,” he instructed. “Soon the Ravens will bring you something that Jove himself could not resist.”

The Duke sat down with the enormous jewel in his lap, pointing upward.

The violin struck up again, and the Priestess called Baron Carrickfergus to the altar.

“Will the majestic Sun-Runner on the golden throne come forth please?”

He got up and walked to her with an arrogant swagger. She gave him the same preliminaries as the Duke had been given. He choked down his raven liver with disgust equal to that of his predecessor, but no greater comprehension of what he was eating. However, he really seemed to savor the intoxicating effects of the food and drink, which took hold immediately, with the characteristic sweating and heavy breathing.

After draining his glass of blood-ambrosia, he asked for a second, which he was given. When he had swallowed the last of it, he uttered a loud laugh of voluptuous exultation. Then he pushed down his mask again, pointed to the

“My dear Lion Prince, you know quite well that incest and pederasty is in your nature, not only because of your genetic predisposition, but because of the planetary archon that rules over you. He’s the ruler of a dying aeon who doesn’t seem to have noticed that his throne is slipping out from underneath him. You *do* remember, *don’t* you?”

The Duke’s body began to quiver as the boy came closer. To the right of us, over the sound of the Baron’s ecstatic moaning and the ridiculous violin solo, the distant crash of thunder could be heard, and the clouds above grew even thicker.

Rosenberg turned his attention to the light ball in the sky.

“Wouldn’t you love to sit in the throne of power again, the one which your own son supplanted you from, and be serviced by his son as a slave, turning his royal heir into your own royal cupbearer?”

These last lines were directed more at the spirit of Zeus than the man who was becoming possessed by him. Rosenberg was reminding the lord of Olympus how he had obtained victory over his father Chronos by pretending to be his

“cupbearer.” This was a euphemism used in the ancient world for a catamite—a young male sex slave.

Zeus used his intimate position in his father’s royal court to obtain an opportunity to “poison” Chronos, a plot said to have been devised by the goddess Metis, whom Hammer-Purgstall identified with Mete/Baphomet. As you no doubt remember, this caused Chronos to vomit up the children he had swallowed, which included all of Zeus’ siblings, the gods of Olympus. They then defeated Chronos and the Titans, locked them up in Tartarus beneath the Earth, and then ruled happily ever after. Or, at least, that’s where the Greeks broke off their tale.

Come to think of it, I said to myself mentally, *the Romans did imply that Apollo was the first-born son and successor to Zeus, or Jupiter, as they* *called him.*

Apollo was the Olympian sun god, in contract to Helios/Sol, who played the role of the Sun during the "Golden Age" of Chronos/Saturn and the Titans. Most writers just chose to say that Helios/Sol became 'syncretized' with Apollo in later years.

But what if they were really separate characters? I wondered. *What if Apollo supplanted Helios as the new sun, and the former sun he overthrew was locked up in Tartarus with the rest of the Titans? Maybe that's the meaning of the symbol of the 'black sun' that's 'in the center of the Earth.'*

Then I thought about the fact that in the late Roman Empire, Mithraism finally gained support from the emperors by syncretizing Mithras with Sol Invictus, thus making a god already identified with Saturn/Chronos a solar figure as well.

And alchemists have consistently identified Saturn with the black sun, I thought. *In the present aeon, which is the one that supplanted the rule of Zeus from Olympus, the Sun is the undisputed ruler of the current order. But Zeus used to play that role somehow, and before him, Chronos did it. But during that time, Helios was a separate entity, playing a different role than he does now. The Sun was not, back then, the central power. Or rather, someone else was playing the role of 'the Sun.'*

Now the things that Rosenberg said to the Duke of Rothesay made sense to me. The Duke's body was being used to draw down Zeus/Jupiter into mortal incarnation. The body of Baron Carrickfergus was being used to draw down the spirit of the new sun, his successor.

Zeus was defeated by the new sun god, I thought to myself. I wonder when that happened exactly. The era of the worship of Jupiter gave way at the end of the empire to Apollo, Sol Invictus, Mithras, and of course … to Jesus.

And there it was. The answer to my question of when the aeon of Zeus/Jupiter had given way to that of the present sun was obvious: year 1

Anno Domini.

The transition marked by the collapse of Rome and the descent of the West into long-term intellectual darkness may not have been clear to everyone back then, I thought. *But later it became connected with the advent of Jesus Christ, and it came to pass that the reckoning of time was started over from that point. So fate devised an appropriate way of marking the passage from the Aeon of one Sun to that of the next.*

All of this came to me as I sat there in the wheelchair at the rooftop terrace of New Court, prompted by the comments that Rosenberg was making to the Duke of Rothesay.

Zeus is being enticed into the Duke's body, I realized *, with the promise of having Apollo, his supplanter, serve in the humiliating position of cupbearer, as Zeus had once done in the effort to take the throne from his father. Also, pederasty with very young boys was a known proclivity of Zeus', going back to his kidnapping of Ganymede to serve as his own cupbearer.*

My attention snapped back to the scene in front of me. Little Saint George was being guided by Miles to stand between the legs of the Duke, who handed the diamond over to Rosenberg . He looked at the man in the Lion mask with fear, clearly not recognizing that it was his own grandfather. Then Miles tapped the boy's shoulder, and he sank to his knees, obviously trained for the job ahead of time.

The Duke handed the red crystal in his lap to Rosenberg, who then handed it to a trusted Raven. I looked away, up at the sky, just in time to see something like a golden chain, appearing as thick as a tree trunk, emerged from the purple orb. It dangled down somewhere to the south, seemingly close to our location.

The bottom of the chain dropped down below my line of sight.

The Golden Chain of the Zeus, I thought to myself.

In Homer’s *Iliad*, Zeus says to the other gods: If you tied a chain of gold to the sky, and all of you, gods and goddesses, took hold, you could not drag Zeus the High Counsellor to earth with all your efforts. But if I determined to pull with a will, I could haul up land and sea, then loop the chain round a peak of Olympus, and leave them dangling in space. By that much am I greater than gods and men.

Here I was looking at such a golden chain, quite literally, with Spiga-style links (forged from ovals twisted to look like grains of wheat). It dropped down from the purple sphere like Rapunzel’s hair, hanging there for a moment between the sky and the Earth. Then it slithered down and disappeared from view, like it had been snipped from above.

For about a minute, I heard the zapping sounds of electricity arching, and everybody’s hair bristled. Then something that looked just like the purple orb in the sky, but about five inches in width, shot through the construction chute and hit the Duke on the top of his head. There it was absorbed, causing a ripple down the man’s spine. He convulsed, ripped his robe open, and then arched his pelvis upward, towards the boy’s head, which was already dutifully going down to its task.

Now, it seemed, what gods and men before had not been able to achieve with force for thousands of years, a wealthy businessman in London had done merely by offering the body of a powerful prince as the vessel through which to experience the carnal pleasures of pederasty. Watching it happen before my very eyes led me to a realization about a line from my favorite Welsh poet Robert Graves’ book *The White Goddess*.

This is what he meant when he said the priests of ancient Rome performed the ‘Rites of Elicio’ to seduce the gods of captured nations into serving the Empire instead.

As the Duke gave in to his proclivities and gasped with pleasure, possessed by debaucherous divinity, Rosenberg chuckled and encouraged him.

“That’s it, King Carlos, let Whore-Hey treat you right.”

“What about the boy’s father?” the Duke gasped in a whisper, almost too overwhelmed with delectation to speak.

“Ignore him,” said Rosenberg. “He’s ignoring *you*.”

As if to create a barrier to blind the Baron to his father’s abuse of his son, Consivia stepped out in-between the altar and the thrones. She then beckoned the Ravens and men with leather veils, who gathered around the thrones in the space beside her, fulling covering the Duke’s actions from the Baron’s view. She sang another stanza to the incarnation of Jupiter before her.

‘tis so divine to rape your meat

The taste of pain is good to eat

And bliss sublime is all the more

When child of thy loins doth play the whore

The Duke moaned loader, and Rosenberg stepped in quickly, pulling the boy’s head away.

“Easy there,” he said. “Hold your horses. You’ve got a job to do here, don’t forget. This is just a warm-up exercise.”

Then he addressed Consivia. “Invoke the Sun, and have the Barber-Surgeons bring the girl!”

The priestess gestured towards two of the men in leather veils, both with waxing moon symbols. They nodded, then left the hedge to go fetch her. Consivia returned to her place behind the altar and held her arms aloft.

Sol Invictus join your bride

Shining queen who pulls the tide

Fructify the holy womb

Rape the goddess in her tomb

At that moment, quite suddenly, the Moon peeked out through the clouds, along with one of the other stars, which now grew until it was the very same size as the Moon. It was yellow like the Sun, but it did not light up the sky as the Sun does during the day. They stood next to each other, with the purple orb, slightly smaller, sitting beneath them, and the other, smaller stars nearby. Nobody else seemed to notice but me, Chesterfield and Rosenberg. All the others were too entranced by the sex acts, which they no doubt wished to join in on.

“And what the Hell is that?” Chesterfield whispered to me. “The New Jerusalem? Is this the end of the world?”

It was the first thing he’d said to me since he returned from selling out his country and helping Rosenberg cover up the Rothschilds’ child sex slave ring, which they had no doubt used to compromise virtually everyone with any power in the entire kingdom. I knew that his life had been threatened, and I knew I was guilty of things just as bad, but that didn’t mean I’d forgiven him.

“The New Jerusalem is a cube,” I replied. “This is the Sun coming out at night.”

“But William Blake said that London was Jerusalem,” Chesterfield noted, seemingly irrelevantly (or so it seemed at the time).

“Shut up!” the Duke snapped. “I was about to cum!”

“Not yet,” said Rosenberg, and he stood up quickly to help block the Duke’s view of the entrance to the hedge. The Duke returned to his preoccupation.

Poor Philippine, who could barely walk now, was brought in on a gurney by the “Barber-Surgeons,” which, by now, I had gathered, was the term for the men with the waxing moon symbols on their veils (the “Butchers” being those with the waning moon on their veils). They dumped her, awake again now and crying, on the pavement between the horse and human blockade protecting the pederast prince on his purple throne. Naked on top of a tall building in the middle of the night, Philippine was shivering severely. She rolled over on her stomach and emitted a high-pitched squeal.

At the sound of her cry, Baron Carrickfergus turned around sharply, separating from the boy as he did so. When he laid eyes upon the girl—I swear—I saw them flash with a golden glow for a brief second, visible through the holes of his sun mask.

Then the yellow orb poured out a yellow-orange stream of fluid. It seemed to fall close by, to the south of us, just where the golden chain had dropped down. It honestly looked like the sun-like object taking a piss. A few moments later, a miniature version of it was immerging from the construction chute, about the size of a basketball.

The mini-sun came and hovered over the Baron’s head, forming an angelic halo behind him. He looked up at it lovingly and smiled. Then it entered him, lighting up his body like a yellow glow stick as it traveled down his spine. Fully possessed now, the Baron grabbed his falling trousers with his left hand, raised his right hand to the sky and laughed excitedly.

“Ah yes! Finally, a female in this castle of faggotry!” He let his pants fall to the ground and then stepped out of them, along with his shoes. Consivia placed a horsewhip in his hand.

then smeared it on himself, as well as the girl's behind. The sun-like object above then began pulsating, its brightness flickering up and down to different levels at the pace of an excited heartbeat.

"Ooooh nooooo," Philippine droned dreadfully. Then she let out another ear-piercing shriek as the Baron penetrated her anus. Above, the sky darkened as the Moon and the golden orb, still pulsating, merged together half-way, forming a *vesica pisces* shape with a sickly yellow oval in the center. Inside of this oval was that round red splotch that the Moon had acquired, now tinted to appear orange.

Just then, the Duke used his shoe to kick Rosenberg, still standing in front of him, lightly in the back of the leg. Rosenberg turned around and looked at him.

"What?"

"I can't hold out much longer," said the Duke. "I'm ready to blow."

The Baron had fallen backwards a step on the horse mount, probably drunk from ambrosial blood-wine and, of course, archontic possession. He caught himself on the second step, and didn't fall all the way down. But he had to reinsert himself into his victim. Then he climaxed suddenly with a shout.

However, half-way through shooting his load, he pulled out, then went back in quickly to deliver the rest of it.

"Whoops, wrong hole there," he said, and laughed, slapping her behind.

Then he glanced over to his left and scanned the crowd, looking for the Duke.

"Daddy, she's all yours!" he hollered.

Just in time, Rosenberg pulled Little Saint George away from his task and into the shadows in the corner of the hedge behind us. Then I saw him hand the boy off to Miles. Meanwhile, Consivia grabbed the Duke and shoved him over to the brazen horse, forcing the crowd to part.

There was no time for more lubrication. The Duke put his penis in the young lady’s now-widened anus just in time to deliver the seed. But as his thrusts subsided, his relief turned to shock. A hand grabbed him from behind on the left shoulder and pulled him part-way out of what he was stuck in. Another hand brought the blade of a ceremonial *harpe* down swiftly on the man’s genitals, severing them in one clean blow.

It was the Baron. Rosenberg had handed him the weapon, then pulled the Duke backwards so he could make the cut.

The Duke screamed and fell backwards, blood pouring out of his crotch, which he covered as he rolled over in pain, hollering horribly.

“Auughh! Auughh!”

Then Baron put the *harpe* on the altar and picked up his horsewhip again, which he had temporarily placed there. Consivia stepped forth and shoved the cut penis and balls, which were still sticking out of Philippine’s rectum, all the way in.

The girl shrieked again, then sobbed some more.

“That will give your baby some extra nutrition tonight,” said the priestess, as she smiled psychotically in her clown make-up.

The Baron stood over the Duke, horsewhip in hand, as his victim continued to wail. He landed a blow on the man’s face, causing him to try to roll further away. Then he started shouting at the Duke, and pointing at Saint George, who was still cowering in the corner of the hedge, hugging Miles’ leg and burying his face.

“So you use my son to get your dick hard, because you can’t get it up for a girl anymore? Because you’re a faggot!”

He whipped him again.

“Because you want to mess up his head the same way you and Grandpa messed me up? Then you come and fuck my wife too!”

Another blow. The Duke, barely able to speak, managed to choke out an objection to the Baron’s delusional remark, brought on, no doubt, by the possession.

“That is not your wife!” he said. “That is a whore and a Jewess. Your wife is back at the Palace waiting for you.” The Baron hit him again.

“Do not talk about my wife like that!” he shouted.

“She’s not a Jewess,” Rosenberg said, intervening. He took away the horsewhip, which the Baron reluctantly allowed, and stared down at the Duke.

“You both may think she looks like a horse, but you have only your own genes to blame, not the Rothschilds.”

“What do you mean?” both the Duke and the Baron asked in unison.

“Crispin was the youngest son of the Princess,” said Rosenberg. “Your wife, the one you let your mother kill, Duke of Rothesay. Just as Oenomaus, the son of Ares, disposed of his daughter’s suitors with a faulty chariot wheel that sent twelve of them to their deaths.”

“That’s just a conspiracy theory,” said the Baron. “And she wasn’t pregnant with that Arab’s baby.”

“No, but she was pregnant with your father’s baby,” Rosenberg replied.

“They had recently engaged in an intimate encounter, despite their divorce. Isn’t that right, Duke of Rothesay.”

“How do you know this?” the Duke gasped, losing blood rapidly.

“Because the Barber-Surgeons were hired to cut up the body on your mother’s orders. And to deliver the heart to you, on your orders. But they were already working for me as well, and when they told me about what they would be doing with the Princess, I took the liberty of having the womb excised for myself.

Then I brought it to fruition with the power of my alchemy.”

The Baron’s head hung low as he took it all in.

“He was a fine boy, really. Intelligent and beautiful to behold. I let the Martinas adopt him, thinking that he would be well cared-for. But they just wanted to use his existence as leverage against the crown. They neglected his moral instruction. The influence of being raised by bankers turned him into a greedy, weak pantywaist, fit only for fucking. I thank you for helping me take him out of the picture. I don’t think I could have done it otherwise. I loved him like a son, in my own way.”

“Is it true?” the Baron asked his father, tears streaming out from under his sun mask. He had picked up the *harpe* again and stood holding it above his head.

The Duke took his own mask off and managed to get on his knees, crawling to the Baron’s feet, where he put his face.

“Is it true that you killed my mother,” the Baron continued, “and that Crispin was my brother?”

The Duke looked up, pleading in his eyes, which now appeared human again.

“I didn’t *know* he was your brother. And killing your mother was Regina’s idea. There was nothing I could do to stop it. But I loved her. That’s why I kept the heart. I’m sorry, son.”

The Baron looked up at the sky, and so did I. The sun-like object was separated from the Moon again, and no longer pulsating. The purple orb was drooping down below them, while two other stars hovered nearby. What's more, now there were *two* dark red circles in the center of the Moon, side by side, one darker and larger than the other, both bigger than the one we had seen before.

As we watched, the purple orb dropped out of the southern sky, straight down, as though into the river, causing all, even me, to gasp, even though I was kind of expecting it.

A sharp clanging sound brought my eyes back down to the scene before me. The Baron had dropped his *harpe* and turned away from his father, exhaling a sigh of exhaustion and grief.

"I forgive you," he said, and walked out of the hedge.

The Duke's face hit the pavement. He was dead.

Rosenberg rolled the body over with his left shoe and then used his face to wipe off some horse dung that was stuck to the bottom of his right shoe. Having now pulled his face away from Miles' leg, poor Little Saint George screamed as he finally recognized the man who had been wearing the Lion mask.

"Grandpa!"

Miles held him tight to prevent him from running over to his grandfather's emasculated and disgraced body. A pair of Ravens walked up briskly and covered him with the purple standard. Then two Butchers carried the body away on a pram like the others. A Lion, whom I thought to be Leopold, came forward with an antique box that I recognized: the Mete coffer. He picked up the diamond from the black throne, wrapped it in white linen, and placed it inside of the box. Then he followed the Ravens out of the hedge.

Seized with ferocity upon hearing St. George’s pitiful wailing, Rosenberg marched over to grab the boy by the arm. Miles actually tried to hold on to him for a moment before ultimately letting go. It was the first sign of resistance to either of his bosses that I had seen from him so far.

Rosenberg jerked George over to the side of the Brazen Horse. Philippine, bleeding profusely from her now-gaping rectum, was conscious still, but seemed to be near death. I was sure that the repeated anal rapes had already damaged her internal organs, and I knew that she would not last long without medical attention. But her suffering thus far was nothing like what she was about to endure.

Rosenberg told the boy to bow down before him. The child looked up, confused, like he didn’t understand the words. Tears were still pouring down his puffy red face as his protruding lower lip quivered.

“Kneel!” Rosenberg shouted at him. Saint George looked at Miles helplessly. Rosenberg looked at him too.

“Make him obey!” he yelled.

Miles reluctantly took out his gun and motioned for the boy to get down on his knees. I had thought that Rosenberg just wanted oral sex, which he did. But first, he had another demand.

“Do you promise to serve me as your master for the rest of your days, no matter what fate shall befall you?” he asked.

“OK,” the boy said between sobs. Of course, he didn’t know what was happening or what had just been said. But he knew how to do what he was asked to do next.

As this august personage and child of perfect innocence began his second round of forced fellatio in a twenty-minute period, two Nymphi and two Lions circumambulated both Rosenberg and Consivia, who stood behind the altar and aligned with Rosenberg on his left. They now locked eyes with each other while the Nymphi sprayed them with holy water and the Lions used their censers to fumigate them. The violin began playing again, but just for a few bars. Rosenberg

took his Phrygian cap off and Consivia, about three inches taller than him, reached out to put her hand on his head. Thus began another invocation: *Chronos, Saturnus, Sotomo, Satanas,*

Cutter of the crooked phallus!

Stercutus, Sator, Satre, Dispater,

Killer of the Cosmocrator!

Piercer of the Deathly Womb!

Raider of the Sacred Tomb!

Plow the fields and work the Wheels,

Crash the Pillars, seal the steal!

Consivia reached out to Rosenberg with her right hand and he bent over to grasp it. The hand hung there between them for a minute as the invocation continued.

Come back to thy bride Jerusalem,

The bloodsucking Lam, the Ericapaiam

Come back and join your true lover again Come back and join with your mother again Join with your daughter and join with your wife Let us pierce *the sky with the tip of your knife!*

Suddenly a laser-like indigo ray of light came down from the sky with no obvious source, dropping down close-by to the south of us, just like the emissions

from the light orbs. Then a black sphere came out from the same place in the sky and travelled down the beam to the bottom, beyond my field of view. About two minutes later, that black sphere, now shrunken to the size of a soccer ball, flew out of the construction chute and onto the top of Rosenberg's head, which was exposed and ready to receive it.

At first, the only sign that the spirit had taken hold of Rosenberg was that he became more violent now with Little Saint George. He began choking him with his penis and grunting obscenities over the child's gagging, muffled screams. The jangle of chains caused me to look away from this abhorrent abomination.

Four Ravens walked in with three metal polls, some sandbags, and a pair of iron chains. They set them up swiftly in front of the altar, so that one beam was held up cross-ways by the other two, which had bases at the bottom and were about nine feet high. The bases were supported by the sand bags. The chains were hung from the cross-beam, each with a shackle at the end.

Consivia stepped forward from the altar, taking off her cork hat, and a shoulder-length braid of powdery gray hair emerged, falling down the back of her neck. A Raven then brought her a bowl of meat and a cup of the blood-wine, which she consumed quickly without visible reaction. She closed her eyes briefly and inhaled sharply.

When she opened her eyes again, a moment later, they were glowing with a piercing silvery light. Her new eyes scanned the crowd intimidatingly. She put her hands in the air, with her shepherd's crook held high in her left hand, and called out forcefully with a commanding voice, quieting all who were present in an instant.

Silence! Be still! I command you to listen!

For I am the Hen and the Egg in the Chicken!

It is me! Thy Lady of Perpetual Sprouting!

Sophia Subactrix, denying and doubting

Opiconsivia! Madonna Lactans!

Omnipotent Mete, with the world in my hands!

Spica Virginis and Magna Mater

Co-murderess of the Cosmocrator!

The line where she identified herself as "Opiconsivia" caused me to see the priestess in a new light, for it finally dawned on me where I had seen the Latin title *Consivia* before. It was from none other than my published translation of *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, where Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall wrote that he found a "genuflecting idol," on the back of which were engraved words in Arabic letters that, transliterated and translated, spelled out:

She is exalted, Mete, Consivia. I and our race were seven.

My translator, I now recalled, had put in brackets that *consivia* meant "she who plants." It occurred to me that it was an appropriate name for Reverend

Springhole, whose persona was clearly meant to invoke the role of the wife of Chronos/Saturn "the Sower." But it confused me.

If Mete was Metis, I mused *, as Hammer-Purgstall had suggested, that means she was the wife of Zeus, not Chronos. That was Rhea, the one the Romans called 'Ops.' But they say that the mother of Zeus plotted against her husband to save her son, just as Gaia had done to save Chronos from Ouranos. Metis schemed with Zeus to poison his father, before she married him and got eaten by him. And some say that Chronos actually married his mother—that Gaia and Rhea were the same.*

A chill went through me as all of these errant pieces snapped into place to form a picture in my mind.

I wonder if Metis and Rhea could be the same too. I wonder if it's the same goddess in every story, always playing the same roles with her husband and her children in each generation. The Greeks compounded Rhea with Cybele, making Cybele the mother of Zeus. But Cybele was also the mother of Attis, and look how she treated him…

I was abruptly snapped out of this contemplation as Reverend Consivia Springhole stopped humming and began stomping her right foot to an angry beat, which the drummer boy accompanied in perfect synch.

I am the stone of the Wisdom of Mete

I baptize my own with the blood from my teat I bring down the stars from the darkness of Heaven And cut off the heads of the One and the Seven

The Nine are within me as well as the Eight For I am the Mother of Love and of Hate

With Stercutus my Lord I shall consummate Destroy all but death and then regenerate A sweeping gust of wind came in from the southeast, blowing the robes around. Rosenberg pushed George away from him—thank God—and the boy ran off to a safer space near the hedge. Then came a dramatic drumroll from the drummer boy, off in the shadows behind me. I was unprepared for what came next.

The Ravens untied and pulled off her garments. This revealed the predictably boney body of an elderly Caucasian woman, with wrinkled, blanched skin covered in liver spots. But there were two unique features.

For one thing, the breasts looked like a couple of halved grapefruits sagging down at the bottom of previously-overstretched skin sacks. They were not real, and they had been implanted decades ago.

For another thing, the pubic region was completely covered with something like a free-standing athletic support cup, but with less bulge. This was removed, revealing that there was no vagina, but rather a white plastic stoma keeping a small hole open about a finger’s width and sticking out about a quarter of an inch.

This too was removed, so that now just the hole was showing.

That explains how Rosenberg could be partnered with a female even though he hates females, I realized. *Because this is not a naturally-born female.*

The Ravens picked up Consivia and put the shackles on her legs. They set her dangling upside-down from the crossbeam. I could see that the bowl was ancient, and it was covered in grotesque reliefs of semi-human figures contorting in mass congress.

As these things were being assembled, Consivia looked on with the most obscene harlequinesque grin on her face, and her eyes continued to shine praeternaturally as she seethed with enjoyment. This could be heard quite clearly when the music abruptly stopped. All was silent but her breathing, and the wind, now gentle but steady.

Rosenberg straightened up, put his hat back on, dipped his hand in a can of Lyle’s Golden Syrup that was offered to him by a Raven, and slavered it on his whetted, palpitating member. Then he used the first three fingers on his left hand to scoop up another dollop of lube, which he held in the *Mano Pantea* gesture of blessing towards the priestess, like a sacred offering.

Another Raven brought the three-step horse mount over and placed it behind her. Rosenberg ascended with a hop, putting his pelvis up within reach of Consivia’s backside. He wrapped each of his arms around one of her legs, and two Ravens raised her up so that her torso, neck and head were now horizontal.

As Rosenberg inserted his syrup-laden finger into her urethra hole, she inhaled sharply, then exhaled with a lilting, blissful sigh. Then he held the first three fingers on his right side out to his left, and a Raven took the cue, giving him more Lyle’s syrup. Rosenberg used it to lubricate Consivia’s ancient anus, stretched out and grotesquely protruding due to decades of abuse. This caused her to sigh again. These sighs were the only hint of Consivia’s sexuality that we had so far seen. Throughout the orgies until that point, she had been the only chaste participant.

But now, possessed by what appeared to be the true consort of Saturn, she gave herself to the host of that spirit with gusto. Rosenberg’s entrance into her rear caused the most peculiar ululation to come from Consivia’s throat. As they copulated, he continued to stretch out her urethra hole, until he was able to insert two fingers, thrusting them in and out vigorously, to her intense enjoyment. In-between moans, they both chanted lines from William Blake’s *Jerusalem*, clipped and assembled out of context:

The Stars in their courses fought, the Sun, Moon, Heaven, Earth Contending for Albion and for Jerusalem his Emanation A brooder of an evil day, and a sun rising in blood A sun of blood-red wrath surrounding Heaven on all sides around, Glorious, incomprehensible by Mortal Man, & each chariot was Sexual Twofold

The sound of them both droning these lines in absolute perfect unison while joined in flesh so bizarrely, looking and sounding like a single monstrous being, was quite chilling. Then suddenly Rosenberg rammed his rod further in, with more violence, growling like a ferocious bear.

“Ah! Oh! *Paternoster! Paternoster!* Oh! Ah!” Consivia screamed.

Just like the others before him, and as I suspected he would, Rosenberg pulled out from her before ejaculation, and shoved himself into the back of his adopted daughter, who barely reacted to the entrance this time. She was still breathing though, I noted. I also saw that, above us, the Moon had been half-eclipsed by darkness. As the semen poured in, and his pelvis quaked, he uttered a moaning, gasping mantra in Latin, with his eyes closed, and his hands clenching the back of the brazen horse.

Dixit ei Spiritus Sanctus superveniet in te Dixit ei Spiritus Sanctus superveniet in te Concipere in ano est

Concipere in ano est

Concipere in ano est

Consivia now joined in as well, now hanging straight upside-down from the chains again. As she chanted with her pupils rolled up into her eyelids, Lyle’s Golden Syrup dribbled from her buttocks down onto the ground.

Dixit ei Spiritus Sanctus superveniet in te Dixit ei Spiritus Sanctus superveniet in te Concipere in ano est

Concipere in ano est

The first two lines I now, with subsequent research, know to mean “The spirit of God shall come upon you,” a quote from the archangel Gabriel to the Virgin Mary found in *Luke* 1:35. This had been joined with a Latin phrase meaning

“conceive in the anus.”

I glanced up briefly at the Moon and noted that it was full again, unobstructed from view, and that the larger red spot in the center was actively growing bigger before my eyes. Just as the last drop of Consivia’s semen was squirted from the turkey baster, a Nymphus tooted six annunciatory notes on his trumpet, and the clopping of horse hooves could be heard. I looked and saw the Lord High Admiral leading in one of the horses through the entrance to the hedge.

Then I looked back at Philippine. A Raven was daubing her with yet another sticky substance onto her back end at both openings.

For a moment I thought it might be the “flying ointment” that I had ordered, prompted by my unseen informant, which was supposed to be made from Wetzel’s fat. But then I saw the stallion rear up and break away from his master. The Lord High Admiral let go of the reigns, then started clapping his hands with excitement as he watched what happened next.

Horse hormones, I thought to myself. *Oh God*.

I looked away. Philippine shrieked repeatedly, for a few seconds. Then she didn’t make any more sounds. I looked down at my side and my eyes met

Chesterfield’s. He looked ten years older than he had when I met him, and in those eyes I saw that a part of his soul had died that night. Then his eyes dropped down, his mouth parted, and a single tear rolled down his cheek. He put his deformed hand on top of mine and squeezed it.

That horse was led away, and three more were brought forth in succession, each with a trumpet blast. I kept my eyes in the other direction. I only saw the horses arriving and departing. When the last horse left the hedge, the Nymphus blew his trumpet once more, and then we heard the bells of St. Paul’s Cathedral chiming twelve times. As the chimes rang out, Consivia softly sang a song made from a set of lines I recognized from Fulcanelli’s alchemical treatise *The Mystery of the Cathedrals.*

At midnight a Virgin mother

Brings forth this shining star

At this miraculous moment

We call God our brother

I looked up at the sky. The clouds around us were dissipating rapidly. Now it could be seen that there was only one small light still hovering next to the Moon, which had gone mostly dark, and was no longer white at all. There were now three red spots in the center, one bigger than the others, and they actually seemed to be glowing. It was as if this light—not a reflection of light from the Sun—was spreading faintly from there to the outer edges of the lunar disc. The rest of the Moon was cast in a gradient fading from old mauve to brownish-red, and then to black.

I know they call a lunar eclipse a ‘blood moon’ because it turns the Moon red, I thought. *But there isn’t supposed to be an eclipse tonight, it’s just the night* *before the full moon. And there aren't supposed to be red lights glowing from inside of it.*

I also noticed another thing: the appearance of the craters on its face seemed to be upside-down from the way I remembered them being.

"Where's that thing that looks like a sun?" Chesterfield asked.

As he said that, we both saw it moving northeast across the sky. The whole congregation began running out of the hedge, trying to follow it. Chesterfield jumped to his feet and ran behind them, pushing my wheelchair along the way.

When got out of the hedges, we turned, like the others, towards the northeast and looked across the terrace to the yellow orb in the sky, which had come to a halt. There was the Lord High Admiral, hitching the last of the four horses up to his black chariot. The other three had already been hitched. They looked quite satisfied. Their undersides were covered with blood. I noticed that the chariot had been outfitted with a sharp scythe sticking out of each side.

Baron Carrickfergus was standing there solemnly before the horses with his sun mask in his hand beside him, and his head dropped down. Little Saint George was inside the chariot car on the right side, leaning against the side and staring at the air in front of him, traumatized into catatonia. Suddenly out of the hedge we had used for the ritual came a procession, led by the Lions with their torches and censers.

Next came the Ravens, the first of them carrying the silver casket from the *mithraeum*, swinging on a chain. This was the vessel that had been used in the *Easter Sunday* film to hold the hallucinogenic ointment that lubricated the Bosse of Billingsgate prior to the rape. Undoubtedly, it now held the flying ointment made from Wetzel's fat.

The Ravens were then followed by the Nymphi, the Butchers, the Barber-Surgeons, and finally Rosenberg. They all marched solemnly to the chariot and then gathered behind it. Chesterfield walked closer, slowly, pushing me along, so that we could get a clearer view.

The lead Raven with the casket anointed the chariot wheels, the back of the car, and each hoof of the horses with the foul salve. Meanwhile, Rosenberg walked up to Baron Carrickfergus and whispered something to him. The man raised his head and seemed to take whatever he heard into consideration.

From the hedge, Consivia had emerged, with her vestments on once again, and looking no worse for the wear. She spryly strode up and stood next to her partner the Pater.

The Baron took a long, mournful look at his son, who didn't look back. Then he put his sun mask back on, and bent down on one knee in front of Rosenberg, like one about to be knighted. However, this wasn't good enough. Rosenberg wanted a much greater sign of submission.

"Not quite!" he shouted to the man on the ground in front of him.

"Genuflect to me *in toto*, *Heliodromus*!"

The violinist played eight long, droning sonorous notes. Consivia raised her shepherd's crook and chanted:

Et procidens adoravit eum.

Et procidens adoravit eum.

(That is, "And they worshiped him.")

“Give me the FULL obeisance!” Rosenberg ordered.

Slowly, the Baron got down on both knees and then prostrated himself completely. His head was on the ground, and his rear end was in the air. Then Consivia turned to the congregation with her arms spread out wide before her, and sang.

Omne genu flectatur

caelestium, terrestrium et infernorum

(That is, “Every knee shall bend, in Heaven, on Earth, and in Hell.”)

Everyone else got down on their knees also, genuflecting in the same fashion. Seeing this, even Chesterfield did it too. I was hoping I would get out of this requirement for being in a wheelchair with broken legs. It didn’t matter.

Rosenberg didn’t even look our way. He was also droning in Latin, his hands stretched out to the sky in a grabbing gesture, savoring the moment.

Two Butchers brought out Philippine’s bruised and besmirched body. She was motionless. I did not see if she was breathing because she was now covered in the folds of a black robe. They lowered it to the ground and arranged it in the same genuflecting position as the others—not unlike the position she took inside of the Brazen Horse as she was raped repeatedly.

Somnium quasi solem et lunam et stellas adorare me Sed non est somnium somnium

(That is, “I dreamt that the Sun and the Moon and the stars bowed down to me. But it was not a dream.”)

In unison, all of the Nymphi began to hum ominously. The drummer boy gave a drum roll. A Lion—Leopold, I think—walked out holding a staff before him.

It was one I had seen before—the one with the mummified human penis on the end of it: the Bosse of Billingsgate.

Two Ravens came and lifted up the back of the Baron’s robe, then pulled down his trousers. Another greased both the Baron’s backside and the Bosse quite liberally with Lyle’s Syrup. Rosenberg took the Bosse from Leopold and aimed it at his target with relish.

As the shaft was inserted violently, repeatedly, Baron Carrickfergus pushed his mask up over his head and tore at his hair. He grunted in pain, but he didn’t scream or cry. He kept that dignity. Yet when Rosenberg finally stepped back, satisfied with the humiliation, the Baron raised his head up a bit, displaying a grimace with his open mouth formed into an O-shape, a tunnel of darkness leading to an empty void. It was a look of total shock at the outrage against his majesty.

I recognized the look on his face. For a moment I couldn’t place it. Then I remembered the golden flag behind the thrones in the hedge. The countenance of the inverted Sun depicted there had borne the exact same expression. Behind him, I noticed the sun-like object had dipped lower in the sky, as if it too were lowering itself in submission to the incarnation of Saturn. A bit to the south of that, the Moon had dipped lower as well.

Then I heard a retching sound, and a ghastly smell, a horrid mix of feces and vomit, pervaded the air. I looked down and saw that Baron Carrickfergus was emptying the contents of his stomach—and, judging from the odor, his intestines as well—onto the ground in front of him.

Fecal vomiting? I thought to myself. *Caused by rupture of the intestines, and/or plugging of the anus at the time of an attempted bowel movement? I wonder if sodomy was the 'poison' that Zeus administered to Chronos as his cupbearer.*

"You may rise," said Rosenberg.

"All rise!" said Consivia.

Everybody in the congregation stood up again. After a few seconds, Baron Carrickfergus regained his composure, replaced his mask, and stood up also. As he did so, the sun-like object behind him rose up in the sky again to its previous position before the Baron had prostrated himself. When two Ravens picked up Philippine and tied her with ropes onto the back of one of the horses, the Moon moved closer to the sun-like object, and somewhat behind it.

Baron Carrickfergus didn't bother to fasten up his pants. He just grabbed his belt and let his disheveled robe fall down over him haphazardly as he waddled to the car of the chariot. When he had climbed in, Rosenberg had the nerve to approach him for a handshake.

"Thank you for living up to your part of the bargain," he said.

The Baron shook his hand, letting go of his pants, which fell to his feet.

Consivia handed him the horsewhip again, this time for actually whipping horses.

Then he took the reigns. Little Saint George grabbed on to him, frightened, as the horses took off trotting.

I knew what the 'bargain' was. He had taken the rape from the Bosse of Billingsgate so that his son wouldn't have to endure it. That's what he had been threatened with, so it wasn't a bargain at all, just like all of Rosenberg's "deals."

The Baron drove the horses in a circuit around the perimeter of the terrace three times, each time whipping them once to get them to speed up. As they went around, Rosenberg and Consivia chanted the Sator Square repeatedly in unison:

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

ROTAS!

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

ROTAS!

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

As he approached the southeast side on the third circuit, he drove closer to the wall. Everyone got out of the way, except the Lord High Admiral, who just stood there, right where they are headed, senile and oblivious, rocking back and forth on a cane. The Baron deliberately drove the horses right at him.

When they got within a few feet of him, the Baron lifted the reigns up a bit.

But the horses did not slow down. Instead they began—I swear—to lift up off the ground. The “flying ointment” was doing its magic. It was the same substance—made from human fat—that witches once used to make their broomsticks fly to the mountaintops for secret nighttime sabbats with the Devil. Now, right before our very eyes, right there on that cursed high-rise rooftop terrace crowning the empire of a dynasty of financial sorcerers, the ointment caused four horses, a man, a boy, and a chariot to fly up into the sky with no other means of suspension or propulsion.

As they began their lift-off, the horses knocked down and trampled the Lord High Admiral under their feet. He tried to look up from the ground, just in time for his head to be chopped off by one of the scythes, sending it scuttling across the pavement. Then the horses and the chariot soared up over the rooftop railing, like Santa and his reindeer, over St. Swithin’s Lane. Most remarkably, the sun-like object along the sky as well, mimicking the trajectory of the chariot.

From there, the carriage took a swift right turn over King William Street. It was headed south, it seemed, in the direction of the Thames. The yellow orb followed in its own way up above. Meanwhile, Consivia and Rosenberg chanted more lines from William Blake's *Jerusalem*: *The Sun shall be a Scythed Chariot of Britain The Moon a ship in the British Ocean*

Then something even more dramatic happened, as we all scuttled around the terrace trying to follow their movements. Little Saint George tried to grab the reigns away from his father angrily, and pushed him. The Baron fell out the side of the chariot, but his pants, still around his ankles, got caught up in something on the outside of the chariot. He hung there upside-down for a few seconds, flailing, while his son tried unsuccessfully to control the horses. As this was occurring, the glowing orb above behaved sympathetically in tandem, jumping about in an erratic, herky-jerky manner.

The chariot took a sharp left, heading northwest, over the Walbrook Building, towards Rosenberg Plaza, the sun-like object and the Moon mirroring this above. Then, as the horses, the chariot, and its occupants suddenly lost their aerial volatility. Everybody ran to the south side of the roof to watch the horror unfold.

It was just like when Wile E. Coyote runs off a cliff, and doesn't fall until he looks down. The chariot plummeted, crashing through the sunroof at the main building of Rosenberg Plaza. The air was filled with the sound of the glass cracking and the final screams of the boy, man and horses.

I knew that, due to the way the building was designed, nothing would stop their fall until they hit the "Vortex" over the lobby. I assumed that was where they probably landed. So too did the architects of the ritual, Consivia and Rosenberg, for they must have planned it all ahead of time somehow. As the chariot crashed down, they sang out in unison another line from *Jerusalem*: *Albion the Vortex of the Dead!*

I looked up. The Moon was there, at the very top of the arch of the sky, still transformed in appearance. The sun-like object was no longer visible.

There was a moment of silence. Actually about three minutes, probably.

Everyone was shocked and amazed at what they had just seen. Nobody knew what to say, or if they were allowed to speak. Finally, Rosenberg spoke up. He turned around to face the congregation, and announced that we would all be heading back to Rosenberg Plaza through the tunnels immediately.

“I will select a core group of helpers to assist me in inspecting the damage and cleaning up the bodies at the main building. Most of you can take the tunnels over to the Coffin House. There are rooms with soft beds waiting for you there.

Tomorrow is Shabbat, a day of rest. My servants, both human and electronic, will make sure you receive all you need to relax and recuperate. The rites will resume at dawn on Sunday.”

There was an audible, collective sigh of relief that passed through the crowd in a wave.

I guess even the most evil people in the world get tired after a six-hour orgy of rape, murder and fantastic supernatural events. We were all beaten up (me more than anyone still living), and even though I knew my death could not be far away, I welcomed the thought that I might be able to sleep until then at least.

But it was not to be. Rosenberg walked straight up to me and Chesterfield as the others piled into the elevators.

“You two will have to come with us to the main building. I need you, Ms.

Auger, to assist me once more tonight. Then I’ll arrange for someone to work on fixing up your legs. Agent Chesterfield, please push the wheelchair and accompany us.”

Rosenberg turned around and began talking to one of the Ravens. I looked at Chesterfield, who was wincing at the thought that our torture was to continue onward tonight. He pushed my chair towards the elevator, and I closed my eyes, hoping I could make myself sleep on the ride over. But I couldn’t. The morphine was wearing off again.

Chapter 23: Prison Coffin

…The womb, breeds, whereas the Eye of Horus does not; or, if it does so, breeds, according to the Turkish tradition, a Messiah.

— Aleister Crowley, *The Book of Lies* The sight that awaited us as Castle Rosenberg was as amazing as it was disturbing. The boy, the girl, the chariot and the four horses had plunged down into the Vortex between the first and second floor. However, they had only broken through the glass on top, and hadn’t fallen through the bottom. The rest of the feature remained intact, full of its mysterious fluids which, whatever they were, stank to high heaven now that the top of the container had been broken.

The sight of the dead child and horses floating in the vat of sewage soup was heart-wrenching to me and Chesterfield. But it was the stench of the Vortex that brought tears to the eyes of all who were present.

We, the select group of twelve (including me, Chesterfield, Rosenberg, Miles and Leopold, among others) walked up the ramp, all the way to the top, so that we could get a good look at the rest of the damage. Right away, from the second floor, we could see Baron Carrickfergus hanging from the ceiling, suspended horizontally with his front pointed down. As we got closer, I could see that he’d gotten hung up by his own clothing on the rafters of the ceiling beneath the broken sunroof.

His top half was hanging by his robe, due to the way in which the fabric right between his shoulder blades had gotten torn and hooked to one of the rafters. His arms, stuck in the sleeves, jutted out sideways from his body. His bottom half was hanging by his trousers, which were still around his ankles. He was nude from his ankles to his armpits, since he hadn’t been wearing underpants.

As I stared at the body of the man hung from the ceiling, I noticed that, when looked at from directly down below, it formed a perfect lower-case “t”

shape. His sun mask had been wrenched around to the back of his head. His eyes were wide-open, unblinking, almost plastic-looking. Bruises and cuts could be

seen all over his exposed flesh. Behind him, through the round broken sunroof, that strange-looking Moon was framed perfectly.

One of the Ravens, who apparently worked for Rosenberg’s company, took off his mask and robe, revealing a light blue business suit. Prompted by his example, everyone else began doing the same. He then went into one of the few closed offices on the upper floor. A few moments later, he emerged with a drone mounted with a camera and some other equipment, which he flew up to the ceiling to inspect the Baron’s body. It featured a small medical robot on-board, which was able to scan him for vital signs. Shortly after the inspection, the guy flying the drone announced that the Baron was not entirely dead.

It’s hard to say which, of all the bizarre things I observed during this adventure, was the most odd and bewildering. But at that moment, the strangeness of how the body was arranged, and how it had gotten there, was overshadowed by what Rosenberg ordered his Barber-Surgeons to do next. The drone was brought down, and then the Barber-Surgeons—now without their robes and veils—began outfitting the robot medic with tools and medicines. They supplied it with a variety of tubes and vials of fluid mounted into on-board injector guns. Leopold was in charge of this, and instructed them on what to do.

The drone was flown once again to where Baron Carrickfergus was hanging.

The injector guns shot their contents into his barely-breathing body. Then a tube was inserted into one of the arms—gently, without causing the fabric that the body was hanging from to rip any further. Then the tube was slowly unraveled from the wheeled dispenser that it was mounted on, as blood began to flow through it. It was strung up over one of the rafters, and then brought down to the top floor, where it was inserted into a foot-tall, bulb-shaped glass bottle without spilling a drop.

This process was repeated again. This time, a tube was inserted into the urethra. A much smaller amount of fluid—yellow urine—was collected from this tap into another bottle. We watched it all unfold, mesmerized, from a set of couches that formed a "meeting area" on the top floor.

Chesterfield fell asleep on one of the couches next to me. I was starting to doze off in my wheelchair, despite the increased pain in my legs, when Rosenberg and Leopold approached me. Chesterfield didn't stir.

"Let this man take you to a room at the Coffin House where he can give you a bit of medical attention," said Rosenberg. "He will ask you some questions when this is done. Be as truthful with him as you have been with me. The stakes are just as high."

He called him 'this man,' I thought to myself. *So he still hasn't figured out that I already know Leopold. And Leopold knows this now, but has chosen not to point it out.*

I thought about what had happened since the Butcher meeting at Oriental Club was interrupted by the police. Leopold had disappeared from custody while in a highly unusual private interrogation by Director Pindar himself. Chesterfield, Paris and I had all assumed that Leopold had kidnapped the Director, then later murdered him at Temple Bar in Paternoster Square.

After all, we already knew he was a "Butcher," a kidnapper, and a known liar running an organized criminal enterprise, supposedly. We already knew he was involved with a secret society that committed bloody sacrifices in secret tunnels underneath London. Yet we didn't know anything about Rosenberg then, and therefore his potential connection to the events had not been taken into consideration.

For those few minutes after we heard that Leopold and Pindar were missing, we all thought that Pindar was corrupt, and had helped him escape somehow. But once we knew about Pindar's death, it seemed more likely that he had been kidnapped and murdered by Leopold as part of his escape from police custody. When we learned about Rosenberg, we all began to suspect that he might be involved as well.

When Leopold showed himself during the ritual at the *mithraeum*, I had proof that they were working together, and that Miles was working for Rosenberg too. Whatever he told them to do, they did. Everyone seemed to treat Rosenberg that way, even the most powerful men in the kingdom, whom I had seen murdered tonight. Baron Carrickfergus being apparently vegetative and legally dead (although there may be exceptions in British law for a man in his position).

So what does it mean, then, I thought, *that Leopold hasn't told him that I was the reason he got arrested in the first place, and the reason he was being interrogated by Director Pindar?*

It means there's hope, that's what, I thought. *It means it's possible that Leopold isn't entirely on Rosenberg's side after all*. *Maybe he's just* *cooperating under duress, like so many of Rosenberg's other 'partners' in crime seem to be doing.*

I recalled that the Butchers at Oriental Club seemed outraged somehow by Rosenberg, although I didn't know it was him they were speaking of at the time.

They said that he was trying to do something catastrophic and dangerous out of personal greed and ambition, to which they objected: "collapsing the Pillars of Heaven." Chicken Little? Yes. But after all I had seen tonight, , and the things I'd heard both Rosenberg and Consivia say, I couldn't afford not to take the accusation seriously.

Then I heard, for the first time in a while, the voice of my psychic informant counseling me in my head.

Go with it, the voice said. *Let him help you.*

As Leopold wheeled me down the spiral ramp and over to Coffin House through one of the sky bridges between the two buildings, I drifted off to sleep.

The next thing I knew, I was waking up from a deep sleep in a hospital bed, inside of an empty office that had been set up as a makeshift operating room.

There was bright sunlight coming through a large window across the room from me and to my right. I was stretched out on a hospital bed, and the pain in my legs had taken on a new form. I looked down and discovered why. Both of my feet and ankles had been amputated.

I screamed when I took the sheet away. The realization of what had been done to me filled me with such grief that I cried for twenty minutes. Then the pain in my legs prompted me to punch a red button positioned on a box sitting on a nightstand next to my bed. As I did so, I began to vaguely recall being told by Leopold what that button was for, before I went to sleep there. We had talked for a few minutes, I remembered. I couldn't educe what about yet.

But I did remember him giving me an anesthetic injection. He told me to push the red button as soon as I woke up. I asked him what he was doing this for.

As I fell rapidly into deep oblivion, I recalled, he told me that my legs "[needed] to go." He suggested that if I somehow survived this ordeal, I should try to stick around the UK for a while so I could get prosthetics and physical therapy through the National Health Service.

Promptly, Leopold showed up with another shot of morphine, a cup of coffee, and a jellyroll. Actually, two coffees and jellyrolls. One set was for him. He sat on a chair against the wall next to me and we both ate in silence. I didn't care anymore about what kind of gross things might be hidden in the food at this cursed place. I went into waves of sobbing every few minutes. He made no attempt to comfort or distract me, but merely looked away uncomfortably.

Finally, he spoke.

"I have some good news for you. Miles and I discovered a friend of yours sneaking around in the *mithraeum* as I was gathering up my equipment. We were able to smuggle him over here without alerting Rosenberg. Sure, everything he does is being caught on camera, but unless his security robots alert Rosenberg to suspicious activity, most likely nobody will review the footage. If the robots had issued any alerts, I think I would have found out by now."

“Who is this friend of mine?” I said. “The only people I know here in town are you and Chesterfield, and Miles, and now Rosenberg’s sick gang. And clearly only Chesterfield is my friend.”

Leopold looked hurt. “Hey, I know we’ve done things you don’t approve of.

And you think you’re in a position to judge us morally. But you don’t understand why we have done these things. And surely you know that I have risked my life repeatedly to try to help you…. To try to save us all from what may come of this experiment in psychopathy.”

As he spoke, some of the previous night’s conversation came back to me.

Yes, now I remember, I thought silently. *He* is *on my side. Or so he says.*

He had told me the secret truth that he and others in the Worshipful Society of Butchers had just discovered, with help from me: that Rosenberg’s Mithras cult had been operating behind the seats of power within the kingdom

for years. This was because of his wealth, along with his seemingly magical ability to manipulate stock, bond, currency, and precious metal markets. It had something to do with the Niptron Terminal, (which, Leopold admitted, he himself didn’t fully understand and therefore couldn’t explain.) Rosenberg controlled vast numbers of media companies that repeated his propaganda. Through his contacts in the police, intelligence, and security sectors, he had acquired blackmail material on just about everybody.

More than that, as we had seen demonstrated in the *mithraeum* with Marcia the night before, Rosenberg did not observe the “honor among thieves”

decorum as expected. The whole idea behind the surreptitious videotaping of child rape and murder parties/rituals was mutually-assured destruction. Everyone knew that the others present were guilty of the same atrocities. Therefore, nobody ever dared carry out any of the unspoken threats that kept each individual operator in the oligarchy from trying to dominate the others.

But Rosenberg didn’t hesitate, giving him leverage over the Rothschilds, the royal family, and many others. Because of his influence on them, he had *de facto* control of populations the world over.

“Then he began searching for a higher realm to rule over,” Leopold had said.

Upon remembering that part, my memory became blurry again.

“So where is the ‘friend’ of mine that you found?” I asked.

“He’s with his partner, Chesterfield,” he answered. “They’re in a room across the hall. I’ll bring them in soon, when I feel it’s least risky to do so.”

Agent Paris? I thought. *I wonder how he got inside.*

There was a knock on the door. It was Miles, and he was, for once, not brandishing a gun. He also had a softer look on his face than I’d seen before.

Were they really just acting the part of Rosenberg’s loyal henchmen last night? I thought to myself. *Is it possible that they not only stood by but actively participated in everything that happened—Leopold helping him with the butchery and the medical aspects, Miles standing guard this whole time, preventing us from leaving—with the ultimate intention of finding a way to stop him?* It was all very confusing and frightening.

Then there was the fact that they had taken my feet from me, a harsh truth that I confronted once again when Leopold and Miles picked me up from the bed to wheel me over to the window while they switched out my bedpan.

I guess the privilege of having my decency spared by the Butchers Society has now been forfeited, I thought, remembering how they had been kind enough to have me bathed by a female at the Oriental Club. *I wonder if they're going to give my urine to Rosenberg to do alchemy with.*

The window was tinted on the other side, which let the perfect amount of light in while filtering the glare. I noted that my room seemed to be very high up, probably on one of the upper floors of the ten-story building, and that we were on the southeastern corner, at the intersection of Cannon Street and Walbrook. I sat there, watching the giant orange sun rising behind the southeastern edge of the Walbrook Building across the street, and thought about my current status as a cripple.

They intentionally broke my legs, I reminded myself. *And Leopold himself made the cuts last night, supposedly for my own good. But why should I believe him?*

I didn't want to look at either Leopold or Miles. I could not forgive Leopold for suckering me into this situation with his lies, nor for consorting with this network of rape-and-murder clubs in the first place. This was secondary to the fact that everything about his public persona was a lie.

I don't care what side you're on now, I thought. *You got yourself into this mess, but you got me involved through fraud.*

I was glad when they both took their leave of the room. But that left me alone, with nothing but my traumatic memories and the realization that I would never walk on my own two feet again. So I was also glad again when Miles returned a few minutes later, this time with Paris and Chesterfield. Then Miles ducked out to give us some privacy, saying he'd be back in twenty minutes.

Paris and Chesterfield were both wearing very expensive-looking black suits, with the collars open and no ties. These were undoubtedly provided by the house. Neither of them could afford such clothes. They both looked like they had bathed, a condition I envied. But thinking about that made me aware of the fact that Leopold had at least washed the bull blood from my hair, face, and neck, for which I was grateful.

It seemed they both had been told about the loss of my feet. They didn't look surprised, really, but horrified when they actually laid eyes on me.

Chesterfield tried not to show it, but Paris stared for a while before he spoke.

"I'm sorry," he said. "I wish I could have gotten here sooner. I wish I could have stopped them from doing this to you."

"They killed a twelve-year-old girl last night. After raping her for hours. And a little boy, after abusing him. And they raped dozens of other children. And the little boy they killed, I'm pretty sure, was…"

"He knows," Chesterfield said, as if to shush me, as if it was something so horrible, so dangerous to the kingdom that it shouldn't be spoken aloud.

"They wiped out almost the entire line of succession," I said. "And they did it to each other. Both the Baron Carrickfergus and the Duke of Rothesay. They both hurt so many children, including their own little boy."

"He *knows*," Chesterfield repeated, sounding angry.

"Yes, I know, said Agent Paris, staring blankly out the window at the sun.

"I know what they are capable of, that family. They compromised the kingdom, which is now totally in the hands of a complete psychopath, thanks to them."

"And do the British people know what's happened yet—to the Duke and the Baron?" I asked.

"Not last time I checked. I don't know what's going on anymore. That Thomas Weir guy took our phones. Said it was for our own good, to keep us from getting caught. He claims he wants to help us, says he's running some kind of undercover op on Rosenberg. But he can’t tell me who he’s really working for. Yet it seems to me that he and this ‘Miles’ guy are the ones keeping us from leaving.”

“How did you get in here in the first place?” I asked.

He sat down on my bed, and continued to stare, now at the wall. He explained what had happened slowly, as if lost in his own thoughts.

“My meeting with Miss Equitone and Scotland Yard was *pro forma* and utterly meaningless,” he said. “Afterwards, I spent some time researching in-house files about the history of this site: Bucklersbury, the *mithraeum*, etc. I looked at more permit applications for Rosenberg Plaza and realized that he’s constructed a well that leads down to the old Walbrook River underground.”

“That well connects to the Walbrook?” I said in surprise. “I thought the Walbrook was dry?”

“I thought so too,” said Paris. “I’ve seen for myself that it certainly isn’t.”

Then he spaced out for a moment, lost in memories.

I thought about the well in the corner of the *mithraeum*, out from which the orbs containing the souls of Venus, Mars, and the Moon had appeared. Then I thought about how, while outside on the rooftop of New Court, we had seen Jupiter, Saturn and the sun-like object appear to eject certain “essences” down below, in an area to the south of us, quite possibly right where the River Thames was. These ejections took the form of a golden chain, a blue ray, and a yellow liquid. Moments after each ejection was made, a ball of light resembling the orb that made the secretion would come out of the construction chute hanging below the Sky Box. This was connected to the Rothschilds’ secret royal pissing conduit, and to the Walbrook, which was itself connected to the Thames.

Did the souls of the first three planetary Archons travel upstream from the Thames, through the Walbrook, and into the well in the mithraeum? I wondered.

Did the others travel up to the rooftop terrace at New Court via the conduit and the construction chute?

Also, I thought to myself, *why had he only invoked six? What about Mercury? And what entity did Consivia invoke into herself? Was it Mete? If so, what does that mean, exactly?*

My meditation was interrupted when Agent Paris halted his own reverie and continued his story.

“Then I spent the next few hours pouring over files about the old underground rivers here in London. Not computer files, but the physical files in the old vaults of Basement Level 1.”

“I’m surprised that didn’t arouse suspicion,” said Chesterfield. “Nobody ever goes there.”

“It did arouse suspicion,” said Paris. “But anyway, I figured out how the culverts that were built for them intersect with various other subterranean structures. There are so many abandoned subway lines, including all the ones that used to be run by the postal service. If you know what you’re doing, you can actually travel almost anywhere in Greater London without coming up for air and without using public transportation.”

There must be loads of nefarious deeds going on underground here all the time, I thought.

“It’s all illegal, of course, but I’m doing an investigation on Her Majesty’s Service, so I figured I had the right. I thought I would just see how far I could get.

So I started at the entrance to the River Tyburn, which runs right between Thames House and Millbank Tower. There's a tunnel there that can be accessed from a sewer hole in Basement Level 2 of Thames House."

"Wow," said Chesterfield. "You found documents on the secret tunnel entrance at Thames House in the file cabinets?"

"No," said Paris. "Miss Equitone told me about it. She walked in on me ransacking the files. She told me I needed to go to the *mithraeum* and rescue Chesterfield right away. But she said I would have to go alone, and that I should travel underground to avoid being seen. Then she urged me to hurry up, and practically shoved me in the elevator to go down to the second basement."

"Oh my," said Chesterfield. "There must be nobody in the whole service that she trusts. The whole bloody country, taken over in one night…" He trailed off. Paris continued.

"I found my way from there. Or at least, I found some tunnels underneath the *mithraeum*. Then Thomas Weir discovered me a couple of hours ago, as he was walking down the hallway with a wheelbarrow full of human body parts. And he brought me here to Chesterfield's room, where I've been hiding out, catching up on recent events at Rosenberg Plaza. Tell me Pamela, have you been to the lavatory yet?"

I became embarrassed.

"No," I said, "I have a bedpan. And I'm not really eager to see myself in the mirror right now."

"Well you should at least look through the little sunroof. There's one in Chesterfield's lavatory. You probably have one too."

Chesterfield was already in the bathroom, checking it out.

"Yup, she's got one," he said. "Come look, Pamela."

“At what?” I asked.

Paris wheeled me in there. Sure enough, there was sunlight coming through a nine-inch glass-covered aperture in the ceiling. After being positioned directly beneath it, I looked up (carefully avoiding the mirror), and saw what looked like the Sun at its zenith—the exact same place in the sky that the Moon had been in the last time I’d seen it the night before. This made no sense, of course, at least when I first saw it.

“How can the Sun be up there when it’s rising in the east behind the Walbrook building right now?” I asked. “I just saw it through the window!” I continued staring at it in awe, with no ill effects on my eyes.

“Yeah, my watch says 9:10 am,” said Chesterfield, showing me the face of the black Citizen Eco-Drive Perpetual Chronometer strapped to his wrist.

“That’s right,” said Leopold, as the door opened suddenly. We all turned around to look at him, quite startled. He wheeled in a tray with a tea kettle and three cups with saucers underneath them.

“Sol is stuck at his meridian for the time being,” he continued as he poured out three cups of tea. “He’s also lost most of his luminosity. But Sol Novis is on the horizon.”

“What do you mean?” the three of us asked him simultaneously.

“Because there are two suns presently competing for supremacy. And the final battle won’t play itself out ‘til Easter Sunday,” he answered.

That is the craziest thing I’ve heard yet, I thought, as Paris wheeled me back into the main room. As I was pushed past the window, I noticed that the sun’s disc was no longer in view from there. Paris and Chesterfield both sat down on my hospital bed and looked at Leopold with hostility.

“So you’re telling me it’s going to stay like this until tomorrow?” I said.

“Won’t people be panicking in the streets?”

“I don’t think most of them have noticed it, and most of them won’t,”

Leopold replied. “Something seems to be having a soporific effect on the populace.”

“So how many other people are here?” I asked.

“You mean in this building?” said Leopold.

“Yes,” I said. “In the Coffin House. I know that all the folks from last night’s ritual were told to sleep here last night. Are they still here? Is there anybody else here?”

“This building’s listed as unoccupied right now,” said Chesterfield. “There aren’t supposed to be any tenants yet. But obviously, there are.”

“There were 729 occupants in the beginning,” answered Leopold, “when they contracted Pindar as their lead *victimarius*, almost a year ago. He was a member of the Butchers, but we didn’t know he was doing this. The victims were all orphans or children taken from troubled homes. He’s killed off two per night, one male and one female, every day since, after having them raped, of course.

But these were all just preliminary sacrifices leading up to the main season of festivities, which started last Tuesday on the equinox. They are now culminating

with this weekend’s Supreme Rite, which began last night. And it will continue through Sunday.”

We sat slack-jawed staring at him, horrified anew. He continued, looking out the window with weariness.

“We got wind that someone nearby was doing a working to collapse the Pillars of Heaven. But we didn’t know who, or what exactly was involved. That’s why we brought you in, and you helped us figure out who it was. But Pindar had already betrayed Rosenberg to the Security Services. So Rosenberg had him kidnapped, and me. I pretended to be interested in working with him, and I got the Butchers and Barber-Surgeons to play along. That way we can subtly sabotage him, although we must be quite careful that he doesn’t figure out what’s really going on.

“So now you’ve got a company of ‘Barber-Surgeons’ too?” interjected Paris. “What a bunch of baloney. The Barber-Surgeons were phased out as a livery company in 1745. I don’t get my hair cut by a doctor. This is just as fake as your bullshit Company of Butchers, and your hoax barony.”

“You know so little,” said Leopold between clenched teeth, glaring icily at Paris, “about the way things actually work.”

“Rosenberg he wouldn’t have contracted Pindar to do this kind of stuff unless the Butchers and Barber-Surgeons were already doing it before,” I said. “I saw you kill the bull. I saw Butchers and Barber-Surgeons raping kids last night.

But you say you’re on our side? If you want to stop murdering and raping, just stop. Help us leave here, kill Rosenberg, and set the other captives free, if there are any. Just do the right thing finally!”

He stood there stiffly looking away from everyone for a moment longer.

Then he turned around to face us.

“The blood and tears of so-called ‘innocent children’ are the glue that holds this society together. Any society throughout history, in fact. The goddess wants blood. She wants brains. She wants skin, and fat, and testicles and eyeballs. She wants to fuck and fuck and fuck! She wants to fuck kids and cows and the King of Spain and the Chairman of the Federal Reserve! And if she doesn't get what she

wants, everybody pays the price. These are just *some* of the things you three don't understand about power, and never will."

Leopold's face had turned red and his voice trembled with emotion when he spoke, as though he was really making a profound philosophical statement.

By what criteria, then is he calling Rosenberg a psychopath, if this is his own mentality? I wondered. Leopold continued.

"It takes humility to approach the altars of the gods. You must know that your puny peasant morality is not theirs. You must understand that the food chain of the universe cannot be denied."

"So what's Rosenberg doing wrong, in your estimation?" asked Chesterfield. "He's killing and raping for the gods too."

"Not at all! He is killing and raping the gods themselves, can't you see? He's trying to defeat them! He's trying to bring down the host of heaven, and take the place of the immortals himself. With each planetary archon that was killed last night, he climbed another step up the heavenly staircase. When he gets to the top, two things will happen."

We all looked at him silently, spitefully, waiting to hear the two things.

"Either he will become the new chief of the Archons, ruling us here below with omnipotent power from the realm beyond, or he will snuff us out, and start another universe to rule over. Or he snuffs out everything all at once, accidentally, by causing the layers of existence to crash down on one another catastrophically."

"That's three things," said Chesterfield. "And they all sound ridiculous."

"The layers of heaven have already started to collapse," said Leopold. "It's happened quickly, yet so smoothly that you didn't recognize it for what it was.

You just thought there were large orbs of light in the sky. You didn’t realize that divine, august immortals were being enticed to lower themselves into physicality, then forced to bow down to an arrogant thug, who didn’t even have the decency to spare their lives after they submitted. Now they’re all dead except for the Sun and, at least in part, the Moon. He’s going to torture them both ‘til tomorrow, when the womb opens up, and then he’ll have a new victim to torment.

“What womb?” I said. “What’s going to open up?”

“The womb of the Mother of the Gods. That’s all that’s left of poor Philippine.”

“Oh no, not again,” said Agent Paris to Leopold. “You’re keeping the womb alive? Another posthumous royal birth?” The agent’s eyes looked crazed. Leopold looked at the door.

“I have to go do something for Rosenberg,” he said. “I don’t want to raise any alarm by being tardy. I’ll be back later.”

“You know what I’m talking about, don’t you, Butcher!” said Paris as Leopold put his mangled hand on the doorknob.

“Shh!” said Leopold, finger to his mouth. “Don’t get caught. I’ll see you when it’s time for her next morphine shot.”

The door closed behind him. We tried it. It was locked.

“So what were you talking about, Parvin?” said Chesterfield. “What did you mean by ‘not again’?”

He cleared his throat and then took a deep breath, preparing to tell us another story.

“When my dad was working for SIS, he found out that Mossad was blackmailing the royal family. They knew the truth about the princess who died so tragically, and the baby she was carrying.”

“Oh wow,” said Chesterfield. “So you *knew* about that.”

Paris cocked his eyebrow at his partner, curious about what he was referring to. But he didn’t stop his storytelling to ask. He continued.

“Now I don’t want to bring the princess into disrepute. She was a victim of rape. But in the traditions of our ancestors, the victim of a divine rape was always blamed for it. The idea is that they have somehow enticed a sacred spirit into denigrating his holiness for the lusts of the flesh. That’s how Perseus justified his murder of Medusa after she was raped by Poseidon in Athena’s temple. This is what conceived Pegasus. But *he* didn’t come out of her body until Perseus *gave him* an opening….”

His voice got softer. He lost his train of thought for a moment as he seemed to mutter to himself. Chesterfield and I both leaned in closer, straining to hear, wondering what he was getting at.

“The Princess was raped by her former husband, who was possessed by a god at the time, my dad said, during a ghastly ritual beneath the Palace.

Afterwards, they cloaked her memory. She had no recollection of it. She thought her boyfriend had gotten her pregnant. Three months later, they offed her. But they harvested her womb.”

The story was so far synching up entirely with what Rosenberg had said to the Duke of Rothesay about his ex-wife, the mother of Baron Carrickfergus. But Paris had added some much-needed detail. He continued.

“Someone else took the womb, he said. Not one of the family. But they had obviously orchestrated the conception rite as well. And this group performed another ceremony, six months later, which Mossad was able to spy on also, according to the reports.”

“Reports that your dad wrote from SIS?” Chesterfield asked.

“Yes,” Paris replied, “about reports he had seen in Mossad’s own internal documents. Anyway, during this ritual, the womb, which had been kept alive somehow in an incubator, was hung from a ceiling by a couple of meat-hooks through the fallopian tubes. It was meant to look like the head of a bull, with the tubes resembling the horns. They put a severed bull’s head on the altar behind it to emphasize this point.”

He took a drink of his now lukewarm cup of tea. Then he went on.

“They had a special aperture in the ceiling for admitting lunar rays. When the Moon reached the right position, and the light hit the uterus, the baby came out, miraculously without defect, and landed on a bed of straw positioned beneath the exit of the womb.”

“Some miracle,” said Chesterfield. “Like *Rosemary’s Baby* is a miracle.”

“I don’t know what happened to the child after that,” Paris concluded, “or even what sex it was. And I don’t know how the magic of the ritual worked. But I believe my father’s story. And I think the baby must have lived on, because Mossad blackmailed them for years after, at the very least.”

“Well, *we do* know what happened,” said Chesterfield. “The baby was adopted by Marcia Martina and her husband. He was Crispin Martina, Rosenberg’s catamite and errand boy. Now he’s dead.”

“Oh yes,” said Paris. “I know he’s dead. I saw his head sitting on top of a wheelbarrow.”

Suddenly we heard a click. A single click. Coming from the door.

Now what was that? I wondered.

Try the door, came the unexpected reply from my psychic informant, speaking inside of my head once again.

Of course, I thought to myself. *I should have asked you sooner.*

I repeated the suggestion about the door to my friends.

“OK, said Chesterfield. He walked up and turned the handle. The door opened.

It’s been unlocked! I thought. *Remotely!*

Chesterfield immediately closed it again, except for a tiny crack, in which he stuck his finger. He turned around and looked at us.

“What should we do?” he asked.

“Stick your head out and see if there’s anyone in the hall,” said Paris. This he did.

“Not at the moment,” Chesterfield replied. “But where do we go from here? All three of us?”

“No, you’re right,” said Paris. “Let me go alone. I’ll see if I can find us a way out.”

And so, after a brief reunion, we let Agent Paris slip away from us. We left the door open slightly, but we stayed inside, terrified of being caught trying to escape. We knew the only reason we had been kept alive was because we each were still perceived as somehow useful to Rosenberg. I knew he needed me for something in regards to the next ritual the following day. And Chesterfield was his means of keeping MI5 under wraps now.

But surely we will both soon outlive our usefulness, I thought.

We didn’t see Paris again that day, or Leopold. After an hour, when Leopold didn’t return, Chesterfield decided to sneak back across the hall to his room, so that nobody would know Leopold had let him in there. Before he left, he helped me back into bed.

A while later, when the drugs were wearing off and the pain in my legs was once again almost beyond what I could bear, a black female servant that I didn’t recognize came to change my bedpan again and to give me another shot, along with a turkey sandwich and a packet of tea biscuits. She put me in the wheelchair again so that I could eat sitting next to the window with the food tray beside me.

The color of the sunlight and the shadows that it cast indicated late afternoon to me.

I sat there staring at the street below for a couple of hours as the sunlight faded away. I didn’t see any people go past, not even in cars. When it was completely gone, and night had fallen, I noticed a reddish tinge to things that were illuminated by the light now coming from the buildings and the street lamps. I looked at the bathroom and noticed red light descending from the ceiling.

I wheeled myself in there, still not letting my gaze fall upon the mirror, and looked up at the little sunroof. Now, in the exact place where “Sol” had been earlier, there now stood the Moon. It was in the same condition it had been in before, but was fuller and larger. This last part seemed appropriate, since it actually *was* supposed to be the night of the full moon. But of course, the coloring was completely abnormal.

The Moon appeared sickly. It was still dark red, fading to brown and then black at the edges, with three bright red circles shining within it, one larger than the other two. The glowing circles in the middle were brighter and bigger than the night before. The craters on the face were again inverted from the way they normally appear in the northern hemisphere. Also, of course, the Moon does not usually just suddenly appear at the very top of the sky right after nightfall, as it had that night.

Just then, a burly white male servant came in and served me dinner: roast beef with mashed potatoes, gravy, and asparagus. He helped me get to the toilet, waiting outside the door for me to finish, which was much less humiliating than using the bedpan. I desperately wanted to ask him what was going on with everybody else in the building, but I didn’t dare. I just prayed, to which god I knew not, that Chesterfield had made it safely to his room, and that Paris had found a way out of the building.

Maybe he’s bringing help now, I thought, trying to cheer myself up.

Only God can help the three of you, said the voice of the psychic informant.

Who are you anyway? I said mentally to whoever it was.

Why don't you come and see for yourself? was the reply I received.

I heard the clicking sound on the door again.

Try the door, the voice said.

I wheeled over to it, grabbed the knob, and pulled it open. It was indeed unlocked again. I held my breath, listening for anybody. I heard nothing. So I turned my chair backwards and maneuvered myself through the doorway, not without making a little racket, which worried me immensely. But when I got out into the hallway, it was still dark, empty and silent, just a long corridor full of locked doors. Then the lights came on above me.

The digital ceiling, I thought. *You sensed me. Fuck you.*

Don't worry about that, said the voice. *It's the security robots you need to watch out for. And only if they think you're suspicious. Rosenberg's asleep. The rest of the group is so compartmentalized nobody knows if you're supposed to be out of your room or not. Keep your own eyes open for danger. But let me guide you. I have so much to show you.*

I had practiced divination many times before, mostly on the Ouija board. I had never had such a clearly-spoken entity dictate to me in my head like this until it started spontaneously the previous night. I had spoken to gods, demons, servitors, and disembodied human spirits on the Ouija board. The gods and demons all had very unique, poetic, and eloquent ways of speaking. But the people all talked like people.

This voice had tried to come off as god-like or demonic in the very beginning, when it was dictating how the rituals should go. But now its choice of words sounded more human. Yet I felt sure it was the same voice.

So where should I go now? I asked the spirit.

This is the Day of Rest. Come to the Room of Rest, it said. *Mind your Ps and Qs*.

Which way? I said in my head.

Get to the Sixth Floor the voice said.

I looked at the door of my room.

729. That was the same room number I'd had at the Regent Palace, I thought. *And Leopold had said 729 children had been held captive here at Coffin House, murdered over the course of the last year. It means something. I've read about it recently. I just … can't remember.*

I saw an elevator up ahead. I wheeled myself over to it and pushed the down arrow button. But then I heard something down the hallway, around the corner. I ducked back into my room, which I had sensibly not closed the door to completely. I still kept it open a crack so I could get out again, and I waited.

I heard something, a motorized vehicle, moving down the hallway.

A security robot, I thought.

It paused in front of my door, no doubt alerted by the fact that the lights in the hallway were on. But it didn't seem to notice that the door was ajar, because it eventually moved on. I watched its shadow travel down the hallway and around the corner through the slit between the jamb and the slightly-open door. Then I heard the elevator ding.

It may be a digital super-building, I thought to myself. *But the elevators are slow as snot.*

I quickly wheeled myself out and into the elevator just before the doors closed. It was already on its way down to the second floor. So I hit the 6 button, hoping I could just get off on that floor without running into anybody else.

When the elevator opened, I was at first relieved not to see anybody standing in front of it. I had turned my wheelchair around backwards, and was using the mirrored walls to check what was behind me. Then I pushed myself up and arched backwards to peak down the hallway both ways.

Nobody here, I thought. *Phew!*

Just then the elevator doors slammed against the sides of my chair. They opened again automatically, but it was a bit of a struggle to get the rest of myself through the opening before they closed again. They almost smashed into the swollen and still-bleeding stubs of my legs, but I managed to pull through before that happened.

Now, said the voice in my head , *follow the trail of blood.*

What? I thought. But I looked down, and sure enough, there was a trail of dark brown spots on the white carpet, leading from the elevator down the hall, then off to the right at the fork. I followed. As I rolled along, segments of the ceiling switched on to illuminate the path ahead, while the ones behind me shut themselves off.

This brought me to one of the sky bridges that linked the Coffin House with the main building, with walls of translucent glass. Looking out, I noticed that the City appeared to be cast in a strange purple light, and everything looked very queer. I couldn’t tell if this light was actually coming from outside, or was radiating from some source inside that I wasn’t able to perceive, coloring my view of what was outside. Inside the sky bridge, this light caused the white carpet to gleam brightly, while the blood trail now looked dark purple in some places, black in others.

I rolled across the bridge, which was about twenty feet wide, over to the other building. The corridor ended quite strangely. It looked like a single glass door until I got up within five feet of it. Then, for a moment, it took on the appearance of a mirror, causing me to stop quickly to avoid running into it. When I got two feet closer, where the blood trail ended, I could see that it was a

transparent glass wall with three different “slots” you could go through, each leading to a different part of the trefoil ramp that ran through the main building.

According to the signage you could go down through the left to get to the

“Rrecycling Center,” down through the right to get to the “Rrosenberg Privy Chamber,” or up through the middle to get to the “Executive Rrestroom.”

I looked behind me quickly to make sure nobody was coming. Then I closed my eyes and attempted to clear my mind for a second.

Which way should I go? I asked my unseen informant.

Now follow the light, it said.

I looked through each of the slots. Only one had a path that was illuminated at all: the one in the middle. I could see a path ahead there, lined with two bright yellow-green stripes. Whatever was behind the other two slots was completely dark. I went through the center slot and rolled my wheelchair up the incline.

At first I thought that these glowing yellow-green strips were just artificial lighting to illuminate the path, like the colored strips that light the aisles of movie theaters. Then I realized that these were the tubes that ran throughout the building, which I had seen the day before flowing with a pale yellow substance. It looked like urine yesterday, and I had assumed that these tubes were emptying into the Vortex. Now, for some reason, the fluid inside was fluorescent. The area was bathed in a purplish light that seemed to be coming from above, like what I had seen lighting the City when I was on the sky bridge. But here it was more intense. Other than this light, the place was completely dark.

Blacklight, I thought. *That's what's making things glow. But where's it coming from?*

Then it came to me. I realized that I was at the top floor of the main building, towards the middle.

That means I'm underneath the big sunroof, I thought to myself. *And underneath Baron Carrickfergus.*

I looked up. Sure enough, there he was, with the purple light coming in from behind him, through a clear plastic tarp (*perfectly* clear, like Saran wrap) that had been placed over the broken glass panels. The exact source of the strange

light was still unclear from my perspective. It made his pale, white, mostly-nude body gleam brightly, as well as a circle with a dot in the middle—the alchemical symbol for the Sun, or gold—that had been painted over his navel with something that glowed bright red.

The Baron’s middle had drooped down quite a bit. The legs and neck had now been secured to the rafters with black wire. The effect was that his body now formed a circle, curled backwards on itself, just like the headless body of Pindar hanging from the ceiling at Temple Bar. But Baron Carrickfergus still had his head, now almost touching his feet, up above his drooping belly. His head had been positioned so that it faced straight up at the ceiling. The bright red sun symbol on his stomach moved up and down slightly. He was still alive.

Further proof of life came from the erect penis which also hung down beneath him, attached to what seemed to be a sort of penis pump, which itself was attached to a tube, like the ones I had seen inserted directly into his body earlier. It was again connected to a small, thin glass vessel, this time held below by a drone that hovered directly below him. The pump was moving up and down, much like the pistons of a cow-milking machine.

The purpose was presently ascertained when the Baron’s body began to quake. Sperm shot out in globules that just glowed bright green, dripping down and filling about three quarters of the bottle. Then the drone pulled the tube out of the bottle, sealed it with a cap, and retracted the penis pump. It flew down to the top floor with its cargo, right past my head. I couldn’t figure out why the sperm was that color, or why it was glowing so brightly, but it allowed me to follow the drone with my eyes in the darkness.

The drone then traveled to a door on my right and seemed to insert the bottle into the wall, about five feet up from the floor. There was a sucking sound, and the bottle disappeared. Apparently, it was a pneumatic tube system.

I looked at the door next to it, which from what I could tell was painted a dark color. There was a strange plaque on it, about six inches square, appearing hot pink in the UV light, and adorned with characters that glowed neon green.

There was a three-be-three grid displayed on it—a tic-tac-toe board, with two solid circles in the middle square. This, I knew, was the alchemical symbol for zinc.

I noted to myself that zinc is used most often in making fluorescent pigments and plastics.

Inside of each of the other squares on the grid were other sigils. These included two Uranus symbols like the one at the top of the message left with Pindar’s body. There was one in the upper-left corner, and one on the bottom right, both with their arrows pointing towards the bottom right. In the middle square on the right was a sign for Pluto, and in the middle left, a symbol for Saturn. In the upper right and lower left squares, I recognized the alchemical symbol for arsenic, and in the top middle, the alchemical symbol for platinum, which consists of the symbols for the sun and moon squeezed together. In the bottom middle was a representation of the diamond, with eight facets delineated on its face.

I recalled the voice’s cryptic message: *Mind your Ps and Qs*. I realized that the way the arrows were pointing on the Uranus sigil made them look like the letter Q. The arsenic signs looked somewhat like the letter A. The Pluto symbols resembled the letter P. The Saturn insignia look like an H. Therefore, the characters in the right and left columns spelled a word.

This must be the Qaphqa, I thought. *This is the secret private bathroom for Rosenberg’s special employees. And I’ll bet I know what the invisible ink on the door is.*

Suddenly, the blacklight disappeared, and so did the characters. I could see almost nothing. But the drone was still shining its headlight as it flew away and descended into the shadowy depths below.

Maybe I’ve been still for too long, I thought. *Maybe if I move around the digital ceiling will strike up the blacklight again. Or* any *light. Though I must admit I prefer the blacklight. It’s easier to hide in.*

Then, just as suddenly, and again for no obvious reason, the blacklight returned. I looked up. I was certain now that it was streaming in through the sunroof, where the purple glow was concentrated.

But from what? I thought. *Something on top of the building?*

I rolled up to the door, pulled my sleeve over my right hand for sanitary reasons, and tried the handle. Unsurprisingly, it didn’t open.

How do I get in? , I asked my invisible friend.

You have to pay a token, said the voice.

Where do I get one of those? I said mentally.

Look inside your pocket, said the voice.

I reached down into the pockets of my hospital gown. Indeed, in the pocket on the right side there was a single coin, about the size of a quarter and made of glowing green glass. impressed with a picture on each side.

Vaseline glass, I thought. *Uranium*. *It glows green in the UV light.*

On one side was the Uranus symbol. On the other side was the image of a king with a beard on a throne. A young man was standing in front of him, bent forward, as the king prepared to swallow his head whole into his mouth.

Then I noticed that in-between the two circles in the center square of the plaque on the door was a slot, barely visible to me, which I thought might be big enough for the coin to go through. I inserted it, and heard a clunk, then a click.

The door opened.

It was dark inside, but here too it was illuminated in blacklight. I could tell because body fluids spritzed all over the room gleamed brightly, but of it a yellow-green color, like the tubes lining the ramp. There were also stains that glowed more faintly with a light blue appearance. I figured that the yellow-green stuff was urine, and the light blue substance was probably semen. Much of the latter was concentrated around one particular area of the wall opposite the door, and

also on the floor near there. There, about waist-high on the wall, were two Latin words painted with a fluorescent green pigment: *CUM DEO*.

I pushed my chair through the door and rolled into the blackness towards the glowing words. I heard the door shut behind me. I turned around and tried to open it back up. But I could not. I was trapped.

So you told me how to get into this room, I said mentally to my informant.

Now tell me why. And tell me how to get out.

All will be revealed momentarily, it answered.

I looked up and saw that the room had a roof that was clear glass, faceted in such a way that the blacklight coming through from above gave it the appearance of a purple rose. I felt around for a light switch but couldn’t find one.

All artificial light is automatically controlled by the digital ceiling, I remembered. *So the UV light that’s coming through the sunroof is tricking the system into thinking its daylight. I wonder if it’s damaging my eyes.*

Just then, I head footsteps approaching. I pushed myself as far back into the farthest corner as I could. I heard the person step up to the door, and then a series of clicks. The door opened. With only blacklight coming from above, I couldn’t make out anything. But luckily the person couldn’t see me either.

I heard the person grunt. It sounded male–a safe bet in a place like this. The door shut behind him. I head him unbuckle and unzip his pants. The buckle clanged as it dropped to the floor. Then I heard the flick of a plastic cigarette lighter, and saw the flame.

As my eyes adjusted in that brief second of additional light, I could make out the person in front of me lighting a cigarette. It was Dennis. His teeth and the whites of his eyes glowed white in the blacklight. Luckily he was staring straight ahead at the wall opposite the door, away from me. He was staring at the words *CUM DEO*. When the lighter was lit, I could see that they were painted in fluorescent green on a small circular metal door in the wall.

Dennis approached this wall, waddling with his pants around his ankles, slouching backward. He held his short and thin but erect member casually in front of him as he flicked it around. Then he touched something on the wall, and the

CUM DEO door slid open, revealing a round hole cushioned with a soft plastic material resembling the stuff that stress balls are made from. It looked pink in the ultraviolet light. Dennis grunted again, and the wall began to emit a soft hum. He threw his head back and closed his eyes.

As he spent the next 68 seconds or so being satisfied by the automatic glory hole, I got a chance to look around the room more. It wasn't at all what I imagined. I thought it would be like the dream executive washroom, with tuxedoed attendants handing you warm towels.

Instead, it was a small, dark hole with few features. A square plaque inside of the front door with the same color scheme as the uranium coin, featured that same illustration of the king swallowing a man's head, but with more detail in the background.

Beneath it there was a poem:

When the Son entered the Father's house,

The Father took him to his heart,

And swallowed him out of excessive joy,

And that with his own mouth.

The great exertion makes the Father sweat.

I did not recognize this stuff at the time, but I now know that both the poem and the image are from a seventeenth-century alchemical text called *The Book of Lambspring* by Nicolas Barnaud.

The other items in the room included a small sink, an automatic hand-dryer, a toilet, and a urinal, on the same wall as the *CUM DEO* flap, near the corner. The urinal was interesting. It was white, but old-fashioned looking, and of course it was covered with bright yellow-green urine stains, especially in the basin. But on one side of it, glowing blue-white in the UVs like dried semen, were written the words "R. Mutt." I recognized this as the name that was written on artist Marcel Duchamp's "readymade" statue called *Fountain*, which was really nothing but a urinal with this name written on it. It was actually the alias of the socialite aristocrat who had given Duchamp the idea of displaying the urinal as an art piece.

On the wall, above the urinal, painted in the same substance as "R. Mutt,"

were the words "Fountains of Youth," along with a double-headed arrow.

One pointed to the urinal below, while the other pointed leftward at the hole where Dennis was currently thrusting his hips at the wall, making poses at it, and calling it "bitch." As he ejaculated with flair, the device in the wall made a grinding sound. Then there was the sound of something dropping and clanging against a metal surface.

“A penny saved, a penny earned,” the young man said to himself with a chuckle. He put his hand around his junk and attempted to remove his penis from the wall. But something went wrong.

I’m doing this for you, said the voice in my head.

“What the FUCK is happening,” said Dennis. The alarm in his voice was quite real.

He seemed to be unable to pull out of the glory hole.

“Oh fuck. Oh fuck. What the fuck am I going to do?” he screamed, frantic now. I pushed my wheelchair forward.

“How do I get out of this room?” I asked, prompted by my informant. The young man nearly jumped out of his skin and screeched “whoop!” as I startled him. Lucky for him, he jumped forward, and smacked his head into the wall, instead of jumping backwards and ripping his penis off.

“How did you get in here?” he said. I didn’t reply.

“Can you help me get out of this?” he said, nicer now.

“I don’t know,” I said. “Show me how to get out of this room and I’ll get someone else to help you.”

“OK,” he said. “You’ll need the coin to get out, just like you do to get in.”

He reached down underneath the glory hole, and then underneath another, smaller flap that was there. From this, he extracted a Vaseline glass token identical to the first. He handed it out to me. I wheeled forward to grab it.

“There’s a slot right next to the door, he said. He rested his hands and forehead on the wall in front of him.

“Hurry up,” he said. “I can’t stand here like this much longer.”

“Where should I go to get help?” I asked.

“Go to Rosenberg’s Privy Chamber,” he answered. “There’s a crossroads on your left. The signs will show you which way to go.”

‘A crossroads on your left.’ What strange words to use, I thought.

Get the ‘key to the outer doorways,’ the voice in my head said.

I demanded this of the lad. He seemed shocked that I knew to ask for this.

“I only have the key to Rosenberg’s Chamber,” he said. “Knock first or he’ll kill you. The Outer Doorway key is with him. But there’s no way he’ll let you have it.”

“Where’s the key you DO have,” I demanded.

“In the back of my pants,” he replied.

Great, I thought. *And your pants are on the floor, where you can’t get them because your penis is stuck in the wall, and I can’t get them because they cut off my feet.*

I had no choice. I positioned the side of my chair parallel to his back, and leaned down as far as I could to grab the keys from the back pocket of his jeans.

The left pocket yielded nothing. At first I couldn’t reach the right pocket. I used the right wheel of my chair to nudge the jeans and push the pocket up a bit. Then I managed to get my fingers in. There I found a set of electronic keys.

“Which one’s Rosenberg’s Privy Chamber?” I asked.

"The one that says '81'," he replied, groaning with discomfort. "That's the room number too. It's not marked otherwise."

With that, I turned my wheel chair around, pumped the coin into the slot next to the door, and barreled down the hallway, letting the door slam shut behind me.

Wheeling down the ramp was much easier than wheeling up, as you can imagine. Within seconds, I was back at the "crossroads" at the end of the sky bridge, which I still don't understand the nature of. As I approached it from the other side this time, it seemed to suck me in and subsume me.

Then suddenly I was presented with the three slots again, leading in three directions, but in a different order compared to what they were before. Now the Privy Chamber option was in the center, and the "Rrecycling Center" was on my right. Once again I headed down the middle.

It felt like I was on an amusement park ride. My wheelchair seemed to move itself through almost empty space. The most visible sights were the ramps spiraling ahead of me and around me, each lined with the glowing tubes. Directly down below, the Vortex glowed brightly with the yellow-green fluid, the identity of which was now undeniable. It occurred to me that it was probably covered with a clear tarp just like the broken sunroof, or else I would have been able to smell the stench of it, like the night before when the top was broken. Philippine, the horses and the broken chariot parts had been removed. The contrast between this and the darker substance floating within it, along with the body of the dead little boy, was amazing.

As my wheelchair winded self-propelled through the twists and turns of the ramp, shooting stars seemed to come out of the darkened dome above me, spreading out over the ceiling, and all over the body of Baron Carrickfergus, glowing like the flecks of urine and jism on the walls of the Qaphqa. I felt my head spinning as I whirled around. I was getting dizzy. And I wasn't pushing the wheels at all.

Where is it taking me? I asked my invisible friend.

To Paradise, it said. *But remember: I never promised you a rose garden.*

A catchy tune from Joe South. Why do you mention it? Rosenberg…? Rose Mountain…? Rose Cross…?

Just look for the keystone, was the reply, with a hint of exasperation. *Then I'll tell you what to do next.*

Presently I found myself in front of a door that looked just like the other private office doors I'd seen in that building, what few there were. But it was marked "81." I pulled the key out of my pocket.

Dennis told me to knock first, I thought. *Otherwise he'll kill me.*

Don't knock, surprise him, came the answer from my psychic informant. *Use the ruse that Jupiter used on Saturn according to Orpheus.*

What? I thought. *I'm running out of time here. I'm not in the mood to solve riddles.*

Unmoved by my plea for clarity, the mental voice replied with a poem.

When stretch'd beneath the lofty oaks you view Saturn, with honey by the bees produc'd

Sunk in ebriety, fast bind the God.

I pushed the button on the key marked "81." The door opened. Just then I heard a security bot approaching around the bend from the left. It quickly pushed myself and my chair through the doorway backwards, letting the door shut behind me just as the machine turned the corner.

"Dennis! Is that you?" Rosenberg slurred from behind me.

I was silent.

What do I do? I asked my informant.

“What’s the word, bird?” said Rosenberg. He sounded really drunk.

The Rose Gives Honey to the Bees, said the voice in my head. *That’s the password.* I repeated this phrase, a well-known Rosicrucian motto, though its meaning remains obscure.

“Oh Pamela!” he said. “Oh how lovely. Won’t you join me for a drink?”

I turned my chair around to face him. But I found that there was a divider made of glass brick behind me, obscuring the rest of the room. I wheeled around it. This brought me in to the main chamber.

The room was quite large, with immense ceilings, and a huge theater projector screen against the wall on my left. In front of this there was a long and exquisite black leather sofa curled into a C-shape around the fat end of an egg-shaped black marble coffee.

Here sat Rosenberg, alone, in a once-white, now red-stained terry cloth bathrobe and nothing else, surrounded by empty and half-empty ceramic *amphorae* once full of blood-wine. He looked up at me, then seemed startled as he looked at my feet. But he didn’t ask me what had happened, so I presume he remembered hearing (or perhaps ordering) that my feet were to be cut off. He poured himself another drink. He didn’t actually offer me one, which was fine with me. All I wanted in that regard was morphine.

The room—which also contained three more leather couches, several leather seats, many more black marble tables of various shapes, several rows of bookshelves built into two of the walls, a 4.5 foot-tall porcelain wheel painted iridescent purple, and a metal dissection table on wheels—was completely trashed. In addition to more empty *amphorae*, other debris included used cans of Lyle’s, empty canisters of “poppers,” discarded clothing, including black leather fetish garments, and small empty animal cages.

On the dissection table, which was utterly covered in blood and gore, were the dismembered arms and legs of a small white male child with dark hair, aged about nine years, strapped to the sides. The table had been used to do a vivisection. The hands were still clenched into fists, and the toes splayed outward in pain. The rest of the body—the head and torso—was draped around the top of the porcelain wheel, face down. It seemed to me that he had died quite recently.

He had been dissected while alive, then positioned on the wheel and anally violated, from the looks of it. I could not tell if had been alive for that last part or not, but the tongue was bitten through. Next to this on the floor was a large krater, still full of blood-wine, and from the smell, still fresh. I shuddered and looked away.

Yo *u know what I don't see*, I said mentally to my informant, *are any keystones lying around haphazardly.* I waited for a clue, but got only silence.

Rosenberg was paying me no attention. He was staring at the screen in front of him and laughing as he ate something out of a white ceramic bowl. It was popcorn. I looked at the screen.

He was watching an old black & white film, familiar-looking, with a Wagnerian score. At the moment I looked at it, a continental soldier sitting on a chair on the patio of a large house had just put a ten-year-old boy on his lap and begun kissing him on the mouth.

I've seen this before, I thought. *In film school.*

"It's *L'Age d'Or*," said Rosenberg, still without looking away from the screen. "Luis Bunuel and Salvador Dali. Have you seen it before?"

"I've tried watching it a few times," I said. "I always fall asleep."

With that he finally turned around to face me. "Neanderthal! Troglodyte!"

he shouted, pointing at me and shaking his head as if to shame me for my lack of art appreciation. I was too high on morphine, and too much in shock from everything else, to care what he thought of me. I smiled and stared straight into his eyes.

"Why don't you tell me what's so great about it?" I said.

"Look," he said. He faced forward again and pointed the remote control at a machine against the wall. The film skipped to a scene of a man with silver hair and a pointy beard stuck to a ceiling next to a chandelier.

"You see that?" said Rosenberg. "That's what happens to the Minister of the Interior in this film. That's a prophecy of what happened to Baron Carrickfergus."

He rewound it a bit to show what led up to that scene. The Minister of the Interior was sitting at a desk making a telephone call to a younger man with a black mustache. They spoke in French, with the English given in subtitles.

"You scoundrel," said the Minister of the Interior. "You are entirely to blame. You compromised me too. Do you realize that not one child survived?

Many women and old men perished too."

"You're bothering me about a few brats?" replied the man on the other end of the line.

A crowd was shown running down the street as they were chased by the flow of hot lava.

"Filthy ruffian, you've dragged me down with you!" said the Minister. His phone was shown destroyed on the floor next to his desk. Then we saw him on the ceiling again. We were back where we started. There was no explanation of how he got up there.

Rosenberg pressed another button on the remote control. It skipped to a title that read "the first prismatic articulation," followed by a scene of scorpions fighting.

"Those are the scorpions that the *mithraeum* here, and the chambers beneath, are infested with. They are the scorpions that Luna sends to devour the testicles of the bull. The entire film is arranged to resemble the 'prismatic articulations' of the scorpion's body. This refers to the prism that imprisons us."

'The prism that imprisons us.' Did I hear that right? I wondered.

"Then, there's this," he said.

He skipped ahead a bit. Now a crowd of people were gathered around a cornerstone-laying ceremony officiated by a man in a black top hat. Corn, wine and oil were poured on top of a brick, then smoothed out with a trowel.

"You see this?" he asked me.

I nodded, bewildered.

"The foundation of the Holy City. *Ab Urbe Condita*," said Rosenberg.

Remember what Crowley wrote? 'Baphomet was Father Mithras, the cubical stone which was the corner of the Temple'"

The film displayed archival aerial footage of Rome, accompanied with subtitles that almost seemed like they explained what was going on. But they didn't really. The text said:

In the year 1930, on the premises occupied by the remains of the Majorcans, was placed on the sheer rock the foundation of the city of… Imperial Rome. The world's ancient, pagan mistress became the seat of the secular church for centuries. Some aspects of the Vatican form the firmest pillar of the church.

Rome was founded on April 21st in 753 AD, I thought. *This film was made in 1930. What the fuck?*

"Now look at this," said Rosenberg.

In the next scene, a man was seen walking out of a café, brushing bits of crumbled masonry off of his coat. Then, a few shots later, another strange title page read:

“Sometimes on Sunday….”

Next, a row of buildings was shown collapsing.

“The diverse and picturesque aspects of the great City!” said the title page that came right after this.

The whole scene reminded me of something.

“Wasn’t there a part in *120 Days of Sodom*, I said, “about an aristocrat whose fetish was to make buildings that were set to collapse eventually, trapping women and children in the rubble?”

“That’s the Holy City collapsing,” said Rosenberg, ignoring my inference.

Then a man was shown kicking a violin down the street and stomping it into pieces.

Violence, I thought. *Violence against violins. Stupid surrealists.*

“Here,” said Rosenberg. “This part’s about me.”

The man who brushed the collapsed building debris off his coat was now shown walking through a park with a flattish stone balanced on top of his head.

He walked past a statue of a man with long hair, also shown with a similar stone on his head.

“Psalm 118,” said Rosenberg. The cornerstone becomes the headstone.”

The line in question, number 22, actually states: The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner.

This statement was also paraphrased by Jesus in *Matthew* 21: 42-44, where he said that the rejected stone became “the head of the corner,” leaving out the repetition of the word “stone.” Then he followed it up with this: And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

“That was me, you see,” said Rosenberg. “I was born from a rock at rock-bottom, from the dirt on the ground. And yet it is I who shall climb to the highest heaven tomorrow and sit on the throne of God himself. My head will be the keystone to the Arch of Heaven.”

“You’re drunk,” I said. “Drunk on that blood-wine.”

“Am I? Listen, my dear,” he said, turning around and smiling at me, with a bloodstained Batman Joker grin extending from the corners of his obscene mouth. “Human flesh and body fluids are definitely rich with chemicals that are intoxicating when ingested by other humans, or those who take their form. But that does not mean I am mentally incapacitated. Far from it. I am in a heightened state of awareness right now.”

Keep him talking, I thought.

“What do you mean you were born from a rock?” I asked. “Like Mithras?”

“Pretty much,” he said, burping. He got up to refill his glass. Then he walked over and made a bizarre swishing motion in the air with his hands as his robe flopped open. It looked effeminate and awkward. I thought he was just twitching compulsively, but then the sliding glass doors to the patio opened on the farthest wall. I realized he was communicating with his digital ceiling. Cold night air came pouring through the open doors. Behind him, the sky was empty and black, but the blacklight was bathing his clothes and face, as well as the buildings behind him.

What on Earth *is causing this?* I wondered again. *It’s definitely something on top and outside of the building.*

I wheeled my chair closer so that I could continue to hear his confessional James-Bond-villain-style rambling. He was telling me things I thought I might need to know. I decided to goad him more.

“So you didn’t have a human mother?” I said. “Some god just ejaculated onto a rock and you came out of it like a chicken from an egg?”

“Not quite,” he said. “It was more like a Kinder Surprise Egg. They’re illegal in the USA, but in Europe you can buy these toys for your kids that come in tiny plastic eggs covered with chocolate.”

“I’m familiar,” I said. “There are videos about them on YouTube. You can’t avoid them for some reason.”

“Yes, well, they’re illegal because really dumb kids have deservedly been weeded out of the gene pool by swallowing them whole, which often causes them to choke and die.”

“OK,” I said. “What does that have to do with who your parents are?”

“‘Parents,’ you say?” He snorted a laugh. “That’s for mortals. No. You’ve read *The Gospel of Thomas*, I’m sure. *When you see him who was not born of woman, fall down upon your faces and worship him*. And that’s what everybody does. They fall down and worship me.”

He smiled.

“Even Little Saint George bowed down, like his father, and his father’s father.”

I couldn’t take it anymore.

“You motherfucker!” I said. “What’s wrong with you!”

He stood up straight, looked directly at me with rage and stomped right towards me.

“So what if I fuck my mother? At least she produces seed from it—glorious seed full of astral light and transcendental power! At least she has something more than just a vacuous slimy hole that takes without giving! At least I’m not like your friends, the Butchers, those stodgy old aristocrats who cut off their own dicks and feed them to their queen, their *Great Mother*. The only way they can cling to their decaying carcasses is by sucking period blood out of their mothers’

pussies! Did you know that? So do the sons of the crown that the Butchers have been propping up for one hundred and twenty years! They call themselves princes, but they bow down to something as low and disgusting as a *vagina*!”

As he spoke, he gritted his teeth and bared them like an angry dog. With his teeth and the whites of his wild eyes gleaming brightly in the blacklight, it looked like he was transforming into a monster. I started to back away from him.

“It is I who shall *destroy* the works of the female! Your friends at the Society of Butchers sacrifice bulls to the Great Mother because its horns remind them of her womb. But you and I both know that the Great Mother’s womb is a tomb, because it is also a stomach. It is also the cauldron that cooks the meat that the stomach digests. It is a prison where we *all* suffer as slaves to provide sustenance to overlords whom we cannot see, because we are inside of them.”

He knows that I know about the Society of Butchers, I realized. *What else does he know now in regards to that?*

His hands were balled into fists at his sides and he stumbled as he continued to close in on me. He was truly enraged, though not at me specifically, I was relieved to confirm. He continued his tirade.

“You see, I *will* bust out of here. I will bring each floor of this mansion crashing down until I find the Father who has no Mother. Then and *only* then will I find something worthy to bow down to."

"So who were *your* mother and father," I asked, wanting to bring it back to the original question. "You said something about a Kinder Surprise Egg?"

"Yes, well the egg contained the makings of a golem," he explained, calming down. "It was prepared by an expert rabbi kabbalist working for the Rothschilds. It was swallowed, forcibly, by the host. Then, after being passed through the intestines, it was fertilized *in ano* during a paschal rite by 108

Freemen of the City of London, one from each of the livery companies at the time.

Not the 'official' ones, of course. They all have 'clandestine' versions that operate

'night works,' as they call them, where these things happen."

I recalled that fourth to fifth-century Italian grammarian Maurus Servius Honoratus, commenting on Virgil, had said that the Great God Pan, a satyr, was conceived by Penelope when she gave herself to all 108 of her suitors during one night of debauchery in the absence of Ulysses. I had written about it in my Baphomet book. Multiple fertilizations of the same ovum were not uncommon in the mythologies of ancient gods.

"So you have 108 fathers?" I said. "I guess your mom was a real slut."

He already hated women, so I wasn't sure this would rile him at all, but it was worth a try. I wished I could find a way of hurting him. I despised him so much at that moment that it was almost overwhelming. Then it got worse. He smiled that ugly smile again.

"I guess you could say she's a *debauched woman*. Even back when she was a little teddy boy taking a free titty mag from a stranger at Piccadilly Circus. None of the lads who strutted their asses around the fountain of Counter-Love were innocent in those days."

So that's it, I thought. A sick feeling slid down my throat, like a cold cockroach swallowed accidentally from a can of Coke that's been sitting out since yesterday.

I can't believe I didn't realize it before, I thought. *But that makes Rosenberg…. No. It's impossible.*

“You're telling me that Consivia is your mother as well as your wife?” I asked.

“Civil partner,” he corrected.

“And Consivia was the Easter Sunday April Fool,” I said. I put my hand over my mouth.

Did I say that out loud?

For a moment, I panicked.

He already knew that I knew about the Society of Butchers, I thought. *Now I just gave away that I knew about the child rape movie from the 50s. He probably already knew I knew about that, which is probably why he mentioned it. But did he?*

Apparently, so, for it seemed that nothing I had said to him upset him any further. He was smiling like the Batman Joker again.

“Yes, my mother is *quite a lady*. ‘That which does not kill us makes us stronger.'”

“So where is she now then?” I asked.

“She's in the kitchen,” he said. “Where every Great Mother belongs.

Preparing for Easter.”

“So early?” I said. I wondered how people like Rosenberg and Consivia would celebrate the Lord’s resurrection day.

“Well, she’s got to be at St. Paul’s at the crack of dawn,” he said. “She’s leading Easter Mass.”

Outside of his window, I could see the gleaming dome of St. Paul’s, which started to chime. From the number of rings, I surmised that it was 4 a.m.

“I’m really overdue for a morphine shot,” I said.

“Well then let me take you to your friend Thomas Weir,” said Rosenberg, grabbing my wheelchair and pushing me towards the door. “Or, as you like to call him, Leopold Black. Did you know he was related to the house of De Blacas?”

“What?” I said. “You mean Louis and Pierre?”

He wheeled me through the door and down the ramp through the darkness.

“Yes, Blacas,” he replied. “The family that collected the Templar artifacts that Hammer-Purgstall wrote about. They are among the many of Thomas Weir’s illustrious ancestors. When some of their descendants moved to the Britain, first to Scotland, they renamed themselves ‘Black.’ It was his mother’s maiden name.

That’s why he took it as an alias. Has it ever occurred to you that Louis, Duc de Blacas may have been the inspiration for the Duc de Blangis in *120 Days of Sodom*?”

It certainly had not occurred to me. But now I had to think about it.

The Duc was a Jesuit-trained aristocrat, entwined with the crown, essentially running the government in France as a sort of prime minister, and against the Revolution. The Duc was accused by modern historians of faking the Templar artifacts he showed to Hammer-Purgstall, covered with scenes of the sacrifice and rape of animals and boys. They claim he might *have done this to make Templars, and thus the Freemasons associated with them, look evil, to discredit the Masonically-inspired Revolution.*

Since commencing my research into this topic, I had dismissed this argument. *What a lot of work to go to for a roundabout, indirect jab at the enemy with no impact*, I had previously thought. But I considered the fact that the Marquis de Sade had been a Revolutionist, and had presented his obscene works as political commentaries.

His debauched villains were always aristocrats like himself, or in the clergy.

Sure, the Marquis was guilty of many of the crimes depicted in his novels. But his point was not merely to glorify rape and murder for the joy of hurting people.

While he did accomplish this indirectly, his point, he claimed, was really to show the audience that *this is what the ruling class get up to*. Pasolini, in his modernized film version, had the same point.

This is what Pasolini was truly persecuted for, I thought. *The same was probably true of the Marquis. That's why he was in the Bastille, instead of being invited to elite parties. Because he exposed them for what they were.*

Rosenberg, almost as if he could read my mind (and I'm pretty sure he couldn't) now mentioned the first film adaptation of the Marquis de Sade's novel, which we had just been watching in Rosenberg's Privy Chamber, although I didn't know it at the time. It was *L'Age d'Or*. I had no idea that *120 Days of Sodom* was the basis of the film, because I hadn't read anything about it since college, and because I'd never been able to stay awake through the whole thing. I was astonished. Rosenberg continued to enlighten me.

"Did you know that the Marquis de Sade's manuscript wasn't published until the twentieth century? And do you know who rescued it from the cowans who were holding it hostage? Who preserved it? Who brought it out of hiding to take its place in the history of literature? His family. His descendants. They became the House of Noailles. They were patrons of the arts. They funded Dali, Cocteau, Man Ray, Jean Hugo, and Bunuel. Most importantly, they funded this movie, *The Golden Age*, the first film version of the Marquis de Sade' story. It came out before the book even did."

"Didn't the Vicomtesse de Noailles let Cocteau get her pregnant?" I said, making conversation with one of the few related odd bits that I knew of the subject.

"Yes, but that was no ordinary pregnancy either," he replied. "And the child was removed from the womb prematurely for his own protection. He grew up with a camouflaged identity, sucking out sperm from the very cock that had spawned him, and he never even realized it. But that's none of your business."

Just then, as we swirled around the ramp to the second floor, the blacklight came back and the ceiling lights faded out. I looked up at the giant sunroof behind Baron Carrickfergus. Now with a better angle, I could see that full red Moon behind him, the three circles now glowing purple and almost consuming its entire visible surface.

Is the Moon actually glowing from inside? I asked my friend in my head.

She's pregnant with new light, came the answer. *And she's about to give birth to a new aeon.*

Astronomy aside, it did seem as if the Moon had something luminescing inside of it, and not just on its surface.

The ancients called the Sun and Moon the 'lamps of Heaven,' I thought to myself. *Can the Moon really have a star in its womb? Can its skin act as a lampshade? If so, that would explain where the UV rays are coming from, but also why they aren't blinding us. Because it's being filtered, just like a blacklight at a nightclub.*

You're not far off, my invisible informant told me.

As we walked, the ramp curved down towards the basements. The Vortex was above me now, and I could see was the stiff, well-preserved body of Little Saint George, still floating face down, with his eyes shut and his mouth open into a scream, swishing around the revolting cocktail of shining sludge like a lonely ice cube. The effect of the blacklight shining through it now was at once amazing and horrifying.

As we went further down into what must have been the second underground level, I could see a glowing circle that was now in the center of the semi-triangular Vortex. It had three concentric rings of glowing green fluid—a deeper green than how urine looks in blacklight. It resembled the stuff collected from Baron Carrickfergus by the drone. Two of the rings were spinning clockwise, and the one in the middle was spinning counterclockwise, reminding me of the wheels within wheels featured in Marcel Duchamp's avant-garde film *Anemic Cinema*.

"What are those bright green rings in the center of the Vortex?" I asked Rosenberg.

"The seed of the Sun," he replied. "He gave him an injection so that his sperm would be stained with a fluorescent tincture. We just placed an annular container of ejaculate from Baron Carrickfergus into the middle of the Vortex.

Now I understood why his fresh semen was glowing in the bottle, even though it doesn't normally fluoresce when wet, and never bright green.

"So what's making them spin?" I inquired.

"Nothing,"' he said proudly. "Semen that is sufficiently rich with healthy sperm in large concentration, such as that produced by my own well-fed and well-sexed employees, naturally forms rings that rotate unpredictably in either clockwise or counterclockwise fashion when placed in suspension in an annular container. These findings were published by the Royal Society in October of 2016 in a report about research on the introduction of fresh ejaculate into a microfluidic chip for the purpose of nanotechnology development."

"Oh," I said. I stared ahead, trying to make sense of what he had just said. A few seconds later, I asked for clarification.

"An 'annular container'? I asked. "Like an anus?"

"Anus just means 'ring,' Pamela," Rosenberg replied.

Yeah, I know, I thought to myself. *Like Uranus.*

"Like Uranus," he said, "the Ouroboros, whose hogtied body, bent backwards, forms the circuit of the heavens."

Hogtied, I thought. *Like Baron Carrickfergus on the ceiling. Like Director Pindar's headless corpse. Uranus is Ouroboros, the discarded, mutilated corpse of Saturn's father, wrapped around the concentrically-stacked aeons of the planetary Archons, in the midst of which Earth is secreted, and within that, her womb, filled with monsters, hiding inside like the baby hides in the pastry filling of a king cake on Mardi Gras.*

But if he's bent backwards wrapped around us, that means when we look up at the sky, we're looking at his ass. The same side God chose to show to Moses when the prophet asked to see his Lord. The only side it's safe to look at, according to God himself.

The Gnostics said that Saturn is the highest sphere of the Archons. But Uranus occupies the realm beyond that. Does that make him the highest god, even though he's emasculated, and in most respects, actually dead?

Rosenberg began running as he pushed me around the curving ramp, below the lobby, into the subterranean corridor leading to the basements. The blacklight and glow-in-the-dark circles of the Vortex blurred into the light of the digital ceiling. Then at that moment, everything, even my perception of time and space, seemed to blur together in my mind.

It was as though we had entered a tunnel of lights. Among the shining streaks that surrounded me, some seemed to be caused by luminous colored balls jetting down from the ceiling, all of various hues and sizes, each bringing a certain

warmth, and a certain humming sound. Then it seemed like the lights were behind us, both the streaks and the spheres. Yet we were still running, outpacing them.

“The fixed stars are descending to bathe in the blood of the Archons and the blood of the innocents,” said Rosenberg, jerking his thumb back over his shoulder. “It won’t be long before the child frees himself from his gestational prison.”

“Is this the Baptism of Wisdom?” I asked involuntarily, forced by the voice intruding into my mind. Rosenberg threw his head back and cackled.

“Yes, Miss Auger, this is *their* baptism into ‘genital wisdom,’ as your translator of Hammer-Purgstall’s work rendered it. *Zoogogon sophian* in Greek or, in Arabic, *ma-ta na-sha*. The carnal knowledge of good and evil, of generation into flesh. We are bringing down the lights of heaven with the Rites of *Elicio*. I’ve given them an offer they can’t refuse. Like flies eagerly drowning themselves in honey, they know better, but they can’t stop themselves.”

Rosenberg slowed his pushing and brought the wheelchair to a quick but gradual halt as he continued lecturing me on his evil plot to exploit the salacious and bloodthirsty proclivities of the gods so as to gain power over them.

He already seduced them into human bodies and murdered them, I thought to myself. *What else can he possibly do to them? And what does all this really mean?* Rosenberg continued.

“These are the unalterable laws of existence in the present order of aeons.

Like a horny dog who smells a bitch in heat tied up to railroad tracks, or a cat who’s sniffed out a delectable puddle of antifreeze pooled up on a neighbor’s driveway, there’s no turning back. The fall has begun. Now tell me, my Virgil, where shall we go next?”

As my dizzied outlook came into focus, I realized then that we were actually floating in black empty space, or so it seemed. I couldn’t tell what we were standing on, if anything.

“Where are we?” I said. “I thought you were taking me to see Leopold.”

“I’ve taken you as far as I care to,” he said. “I brought you here so you could guide me the rest of the way. Now show me how to get there from here.”

Oh boy, I thought. *Yet another test. Surely he knows which way to go. He’s just trying to keep me on my toes. But I don’t have toes anymore.* I decided to consult with my psychic informant.

What do I do now? I asked mentally.

Find the right door and go through it, came the reply, and then nothing else.

Well, I didn’t see any doors at all. But I had gotten through two sets of crossroads so far by choosing the door in the middle. So I decided to look a bit harder for a door directly in front of me.

I tried to clear my mind. I tried to look with spiritual eyes the same way I had heard the voice of the informant with nonphysical ears. I tried to see with the same eye that had seen the shine on the picture of the bull liver at Oriental Club.

This was the same eye that had seen the red glimmer at the end of the bull’s intestines on the floor of the *mithraeum*.

As I pictured this last image, the eye that had spied it opened up again, and I now saw before me, off in the distance, a ruby-red diamond, brilliant-cut just like the one from the London Stone. It was giving off a pulsating red light as it rotated in mid-air. I knew that the red light was broadcasting a message to me, although I could not pick it up.

Either I’m not equipped to, I thought*, or I’m not close enough.*

I desired to be closer to that light, to pick up its signal. In that instant, Rosenberg and I began to float towards it. As it grew closer, it stopped rotating.

Now it was situated at the top of an archway of gray stones. The portal within the arch was black, and I could see nothing beyond it. But we were headed straight towards it. Then suddenly we stopped right in front of it.

“Show me your hands please,” said a voice overhead. “Please identify yourself.”

It was a feminized but artificial voice. The message was either coming from a robot, or it was being translated by one. And it was coming through that diamond keystone in front of me above my head. I was picking up its signal. I put my palms out in front of me and looked over my shoulder. Rosenberg had vanished. I was on my own in front of the archway in empty darkness.

What should I say? I asked my informant mentally. *Should I give my real name?*

Identify yourself by your title, the informant replied.

Cryphius? I asked silently.

‘ *And Caducifer,’* the informant answered.

OK then, I thought. I announced myself, speaking directly to the keystone.

“Cryphius and Caducifer am I.”

“Then where is your heralding stick?” the keystone asked.

I looked down at myself. I had nothing with me but a wheelchair, a hospital gown, and the set of keys I had stolen from Dennis. I examined each key carefully.

I didn’t see anything that qualified either one of them, even symbolically, as a

“heralding stick.” This term was, of course, a reference, to the “caduceus,”

derived from the Greek word *kerukeion*, meaning “herald’s staff.”

I’ve never really understood how snakes wrapped around a stick represents a messenger, I thought to myself.

I knew that many analysts thought it represented the human spine entwined with nerves, which was reasonable. I thought about putting forth my backbone as a reply. Then once again an answer came forth through my lips without my conscious awareness.

“I did not come here as a herald, but of mine own accord, seeking the light of the keystone,” I said.

Then why did you have me say before that I came bearing a caduceus? I asked my informant.

The caduceus is within, the informant replied.

Within my skin suit. Yeah, I know, I said. I rolled my eyes.

Now I will tell you this: the rape and murder I had witnessed, the maiming and dismemberment of my body, along with the deprivation of sleep, food, and water that I had endured much of the time on a diet of mostly morphine—all these things had taken quite a toll on my mind and physical well-being. But the constant dangling of cryptic clues by virtually all of the villains involved in this adventure, including my mysterious psychic intruder acting as mystagogue—this was what threatened to drive me over the edge into insanity. I’d rather the layers of the universe crash down into the Abyss than to have to solve, learn about, or even think about another esoteric riddle, which at that moment I could have done without for the rest of my life. Or if given the option of ending that life there rather than doing so ever again, I would have gladly chosen the former. So I said:

“You know, I think I left my heralding stick inside last time I was in there heralding”

…hoping that a deadly laser beam would shoot out of the talking crystal and sever me in twain right there where I sat half-naked with my bloody stumps sticking out of my wheelchair. Whether this deadly guardian of the portal should cut me with her fiery sword of vengeance sideways or down the middle, it mattered not to me.

But instead, by the sweet grace of Providence, that didn’t happen. Rather, an eye, fierce with wisdom, opened up on the keystone, and a white light shot out of its pupil. It then split off into seven rainbow-colored rays, two of which (on either end) I caught with the pupils of the eyes that had just opened up in the palms of each of my hands, still displayed next to my head with the thumbs pointed at my ears in the pose of surrender, as required.

The key turned. I don’t know what it was, or where the lock was. But the door must have opened. Because the next thing I knew, I was inside. But so too was Rosenberg. Posing as the caregiver of me, the sad cripple, he had wormed his way in right behind me.

Or shall I say beneath me? For I looked down and there was his face, directly below in the chamber that I was being lowered into on a plank attached to two ropes. Who was holding the ropes? I couldn’t tell. I craned my neck up to look at them just in time to see an iron plate placed over the opening I had come through. The ropes had just been secured to something above.

But I was not yet on the floor of the chamber. Instead I was floating above yet another hole, leading down into endless darkness. Noxious, suphurous fumes arose from the hole directly into my nostrils, heightening my opiate-induced nausea.

However, that hole was in the floor of a room. I now regarded this room with curiosity. I looked for Rosenberg, but he scurried off into a corner behind me. Scurried? Yes, that’s what it looked like, peripherally: like a scary tarantula scurrying off. But I thought that it was probably just the shadow of a spider cast on the wall by the light of one of the several torches that were set into holders along the periphery near the ceiling. I saw no other people, but all four of the corners of the chamber were dark, so I couldn't be sure. I decided to call for Rosenberg.

"Mr. Rosenberg? Are you here?"

"No Pamela," said a voice from behind me. It was a familiar one, yet unlike any other I had heard with my ears before. It was coming from the corner behind me where Rosenberg had scurried.

"No, Rosenberg isssss not in h-h-h-here. H-h-h-he's afraid to come in here. I am not your jailer. I am your friend. And I am also in prison. I h-h-h-have been h-h-h-here for countless aeonssssss. Or at least, they are countlessssss to you."

"I saw your face," I said, though I knew I was wrong. "When I first came down. I saw Rosenberg."

"You feel h-h-h-his presencccccce because h-h-h-he's watching. And when you saw my face, it was s s-s-s-so s s-s-s-hocking that your mind immediately pasted over it with the last one you h-h-h-had s-s-s-seen."

The voice was so odd. It was like speaking to someone with a tracheostomy. It was atonal, gritty, and gasping, with the sound of air being sucked through a hole that was being plugged up every few seconds.

"So let me see your real face," I said.

"Are you s-s-s-sure?" the voice gasped ominously.

A wave of renewed fear washed over me. Suddenly I was filled with apprehension.

"Yeah, sure," I said, clearly unsure.

Still, I had agreed. The proverbial foot was in the door.

I heard a rustling sound, like the sound I remember from my childhood of the animals getting up to greet me when I first walked into the barn at the crack of dawn.

My eyes now widened with terror as I saw two feet step out of the shadows towards me, trailing bits of straw in their wake. They moved in a disjointed manner, scraping the stone floor underneath as they went. They were white with circular cuts made around each of the ankles. But I saw that they were both curved on the right, like human left feet normally are, which I found quite unnerving. Furthermore, the one on my right looked like that of an adult male, with black hair on the big toe. The one on my left had the appearance a woman’s foot, but was unusually large—a description that could have applied to the feet I had once possessed, just a day and a half previous.

But then the creature rotated its body a quarter-turn towards me, and another foot emerged on the other side, behind which I detected yet another. All four, jutting out from the sides of this creature’s body, bore the ankle cuts, and I saw that they were all attached to legs that were clearly not their original partners. Yet it was what these legs were attached to that was most unthinkable.

It was no wonder that my mind had pasted over it with a picture of Rosenberg when my abused and bewildered eyes first beheld this visage.

What I was looking at wasn’t exactly a trinacria, like the painting we had seen at Oz Pizza. But of course there were similarities. The head in the center had the pallor, leathery lips and sunken eye socket of one having been preserved after lying dead for a day—not that of a young boy happy to be of service as a table leg.

I say “eye socket” in the singular to refer to the casing around the left eye, which was preserved. The left eye socket was covered with a black eye patch.

Like a pirate, I thought, as I stared down in horror at the monstrosity. *Or the pirate mascot, the Jolly Roger.*

But it was also reminiscent of the Egyptian symbol of the Eye of Horus, pierced in mythic battle by his brother Seth. A long red line ending in a spiral, with the curvature and proportions of a Fibonacci spiral, but looking something like a shepherd's crook, was trailing out of the corner of the eye, having been carved into the flesh.

As the creature, clearly artificial though organic, shambled the rest of its body out towards me, I saw the fullness of what the head and legs (actually five in total) were attached to.

The main body was topped by a bulbous balloon of flesh stretched out to the point of partial translucency, like a frog that's been inflated by a sadistic little boy with a straw inserted into its rectum. Another living creature could be seen inside, red in appearance when viewed through the veil of pink skin. On top, I saw what at I at first took to be a blowhole. But then when the creature took a step closer, I determined that it wasn't really an opening—not anymore. It was the former entry-point for a feeding tube: a navel.

What I was looking at was a white human torso, small, adolescent, yet female and pregnant, with the belly pointed upward, so that it looked a bit like the abdomen of a blood-swollen tick. But there were two lumps in the belly, one slightly smaller, so that it also resembled a two-humped camel. Attached to this, with barely any neck, was the head of a middle-aged white man with brown hair, pointed forward. On the bottom were the five legs—yes, five actually—each connected to five feet taken from other bodies.

You see, there were two legs on the left, and two on the right. But now I could see that there was another one in the back that acted as a sort of kickstand, allowing the monster to kneel down backwards with its butt pointing downward.

When the creature turned itself around again in the process of walking up to face me, I saw its pudenda and anus from the back, both enlarged and making a schlopping sound as it walked. The anus, of course, was also enlarged, through abuse.

This is Philippine's womb, I thought. *And the head must be that of Pindar, skullfucked through the left eye.*

Then there was the matter of the feet. I wasn't sure who the others belonged to, but I certainly recognized the ones on the right as mine.

Oh Yes! I thought as my mind finally made the connection. *My feet! Maybe if I get out of here alive somehow, I can have them reattached somehow!*

"Do you h-h-h-h-have the keyssssstone?" the creature's voice hissed.

"Have it?" I said. "No. I think I saw it in the doorway though."

"Which doorway?" it asked.

"The arch made with twelve stone bricks and a red diamond keystone on top," I answered.

"The Arch Keeeria," the hellish voice responded. "The Outer Doorway.

That'sssss it."

I recognized this term. It was something I hadn't thought of in many years.

But almost fifteen years earlier, I had published a book about a French secret society called the Priory of Sion. "Arch Kyria" was the name of their inner order, which they also called the "Arch of the 13 Rose-Croix." Nobody has ever determined the significance of the term. "Kyria" might be connected to "Kyrie," a Greek word meaning "Lord." But this doesn't seem to elucidate the meaning much.

"Did it s-s-s-s-s-speak to you?" the thing asked.

"Yes," I said. "It asked me some questions. It told me to put my hands up and identify myself."

"Good," it responded. "That means that it's clossssse."

“What do you want with it?” I asked.

“I want to be relieved of my burden,” it said. “I want to get out from under thisssss weight without everything collapssssing on top of me. The keyssssstone’s job is to take my placccce, so that I may assssscend oncccce again to my rightful abode.”

“And where are you now?” I asked. I said “you” because I had decided I didn’t really believe that this creature and I were actually occupying the same physical room at the same time.

“In Tartarusssss,” it replied. “In the c-c-c-c-center of everything, bearing the weight of it all.”

“So is that what you want Rosenberg for?” I said. “Are you trying to get him to take your place? Have you been grooming him for that with your psychic manipulations? And me?”

I was pretty sure I was looking at the thing that had been talking to me psychically for the previous two days. Or at least, I felt that the possessing intelligence was the same, and that the head in particular had been used as its vessel or touchpoint this whole time. The addition of the other body parts was clearly more recent.

“We are all playing our role,” the creature said. “Now you do yoursssss, Caducccccifer.”

It turned its hideous backside towards me and schluffed off back into its straw bed in the corner.

“When do you give birth?” I asked.

“Eassssster morning,” came the reply.

“You mean today?” I said. “Now?”

“Almosssst,” it answered. Then I heard the lid of the chamber behind me open. I felt the ropes being tugged on from above, and just as suddenly as I had entered, I found myself on the outside of that room. Or rather, on the outside of *some* room. I’m still not sure if it was really the same one.

Chapter 24: Opera of the Phantom

There's a void outside of

Existence, which if entered into,

Englobes itself and becomes a womb;

such was Albion's couch.

— William Blake, *Jerusalem*

So in the blink of an eye, I was back in my wheelchair, at the very bottom of the spiral ramp running through the main building of Rosenberg Plaza, at least one floor underground. Rosenberg was behind me again. The digital ceiling light was on here. We were in front of a room marked with the number "27" and a placard that said "Rrecycling." Beneath this was the typical triquetra recycling symbol, but with a pink happy face emoji in the center. The deliberate resemblance to the trinacria was obvious.

"What's this?" I asked.

"What I call 'the Kitchen.' It's the room where we operate 'the Hellbroth Gradalis.' It's the heart of the Plaza's alembic system, and the place where we make things into other things. Of course, it's connected to the universal system."

He took Dennis' keyset out of my hands and selected a key marked "27,"

which he then inserted into the door. He opened it, and we descended down a simple, straight cement ramp painted baby blue, into a hallway. It was lit brightly, not by the digital ceiling, but by regular white fluorescent tube lights, like you would find in any normal commercial property. The air was humid and hot. The smell of sulphuric acid reminded me of visiting the hot geysers at Yellowstone Park.

We reached a bend in the ramp and took a right, then another immediately, to go down a second cement ramp. It was open on the left side, except for an iron railing, and you could see a room below. The walls of the room were made of brick and painted white. A series of large metal containers wrapped around three of the room’s four walls (the space against the fourth wall being taken up mostly by the ramp).

Coming from no scientific background, several of these containers looked to me like large water heaters, or the big tanks I’d seen at breweries. They were all connected to each other, and to the walls and ceilings, with pipes. There was either smoke or steam coming out some of them through other pipes, some of which were open, and some of which were connected to the other vessels. I realized that this was the source of the sulphuric acid smell.

As we continued down the ramp, I thought I also recognized the odor of pork being boiled. But then I figured out that everything I was smelling was coming from assorted human body parts and fluids being put through various processes of putrefaction, rendering, and distillation. I became certain of this when I saw, just to the left of where the ramp ended, the door to a large meat freezer. Through the window on the door, one could see the bodies and severed parts of people, mostly children, hanging from the ceiling on meat hooks.

At the bottom of the ramp, on the wall to my right, there was a series of framed pages from medieval illuminated manuscripts. One showed a woman standing over an anvil with a baby laying on it, her anvil raised high, ready to strike. Around the anvil were scattered human body parts. Next to her was a flaming forge made out of brown bricks with some of these body parts sticking halfway out of the fire, and a broom on the mantle for sweeping up ashes. It was obviously a symbolic portrayal of renewal of life through death, being used here as a shorthand depiction of what was literally going on in that very room.

The other framed pages showed: a man hammering out a statue—

seemingly—of a naked woman; a real naked woman lying on the ground being eviscerated with a knife by a man while another holds her down, in front of several men that look like priests or potentates of some sort; a small enclosed rose garden, from which a river issued forth, and forked off into two streams; an old bearded man lying on a bed, being castrated with a sickle by a younger bearded man; and, a crowned woman falling onto a sword that pierced her chest, in a manner identical to the way in which Marcia Martina had died.

¶ Cy commance la fiction
De lymage pymalion

Cõe iupit' oste les gẽitoires a son pere.

I recognized the statue-chiseling image as belonging to a bizarre medieval allegory called *The Romance of the Rose*, which I had never read or looked at much. I had learned about that one image only by reading about the influences for Jean Cocteau’s 1930 film *Blood of a Poet*, in which an artist makes a statue of a woman that comes to life, just like in the Greek myth of Pygmalion and Galatea. I

have since determined that all of the pictures on that wall were from the same book. These were the only things mounted on the walls, except for a few signs listing safety rules and procedures.

It was only when I got past the wall hangings and turned around that I got a good view of all of the stuff in the room. The sizes and shapes of the metal tanks varied, as did the metals that they were constructed from. I am pretty sure that I can identify these metals. The largest one, placed against the wall to the left of the freezer door, was encased in a dull-gray lead. The next-largest, to the left of the previous one, against the wall opposite the ramp, was a tin cylinder almost as tall as the ceiling.

To the left of this was an large, square iron forge encased in red bricks that had been put together to look like a little castle. This then piped smoke into a large copper retort to the left of it, against the next wall, opposite the lead-covered tank. The retort was also connected on the other side, via another pipe that ran diagonally from the corner, to two ball-shaped chambers—one silver and one gold. These were connected by clear glass tubes to the large green glass vessel that dominated the room, soon to be described in detail.

In addition to these items, an emergency eyewash and shower station was situated in the corner between the lead and tin tanks, beneath the pipe that ran along the wall connecting the two. It was a yellow box with a window, slightly larger than a phone booth. Then between the tin and copper vessels, again beneath the connecting pipe on the wall, were three aluminum shelves, which were right in front of my face as I turned off the ramp into the room. These were mounted to the wall from waist-height to shoulder-height. There were dozens of small glass vases and bottles on these shelves, filled with various fluids. Some had pastes or powders within them. Beneath this was the door of a small refrigerator with one shelf. On the bottom, a human hand and forearm was visible. On the shelf were Tupperware-type boxes. One was labeled “Peepee-roni,” and the other, “Sliced Peepee-roni.”

Milling about these appliances were a couple dozen people, performing a number of tasks with scientific equipment mounted on metal rolling trays (among which I identified a centrifuge for spinning test tubes, and two electrolysis machines). I recognized many of the people from either the post-ritual gathering at the Plaza the previous night, or from Rosenberg's speech at the *mithraeum* opening the day before. At the center of the room was another dissection table, with dismembered human body parts on it and, of all things, a sewing machine.

Seated at this table, on a metal stool with a red leather seat, was none other than Consivia, wearing clean white clerical vestments, similar to what she had worn the night before, but without the cork hat. She was using the sewing machine to do something to the lumps of flesh in front of her. At first I could only see her back and the sewing machine. I couldn't see the body parts clearly.

"What's going on here?" I said.

"Nature at her Forge," said Rosenberg.

"Seems artificial to me," I said.

"Nature is an artificer," he replied. "And now we know her recipe."

Whatever Consivia was doing, she was wrapping it up—literally, in a black cloth—and handing it to a man in a white jacket by the time I got close enough to see the table in front of her. But by then, my focus had turned to object near the wall that was now furthest away from me, which appeared to be the main vessel within the whole system. It was made of clear glass, vase-shaped, with a long neck on top that reached to the ceiling, which sealed it on top, and a big bulbous bowl at the bottom. It was full of clear liquid up to the base of the neck.

On the right and left sides, hookah-like tubes with nozzles on them were hanging down a couple of feet lower than the bottom of the vessel, which was itself about four feet off the ground. I knew that this was the "Gradalis" that Rosenberg had mentioned, a Latin word for a dish that was used to serve multi-coursed meals in medieval times (also called a *satura*, interestingly). Many etymologists thought that this word might be related to the genesis of the term

"Grail" (as in "Holy Grail"). The tubes reminded me of ancient Mesopotamian depictions of the Tree of Life, which depict gods collecting nectar from the “tree”

through similar hoses.

Another interesting aspect of the Gradalis was how it was being held upright. Instead of having a stand to rest on, it was balanced on the shoulders of what appeared to be two hoodwinked men, who were chained to the floor. They each knelt on one bent knee in a half-genuflecting position, with the heavy apparatus perched on their shoulders, kept aloft with their hands.

Though their heads were entirely covered with black cloth sacks equipped with no eyeholes, I recognized the expensive black business suits they were both wearing, without ties, which were visible from the shoulders down. It was Paris and Chesterfield, the latter identifiable as the one with pale skin and a truncated middle finger. They were swaying a bit under the burden, but for the most part it was held remarkably still. The lack of tilt to the apparatus was indicated by a most unusual plumb bob dangling down to the middle of the vessel, inside the fluid, from a golden chain attached to the ceiling at the top of the vessel.

Attached to this chain from its top with a black suction cup, and situated in the center of the vessel, in a strata of yellow liquid, was the diamond-like gem uncovered from the London Stone by a bolt of lightning the night before. But now it had undergone a remarkable transformation. In addition to being greatly magnified in appearance (which I assumed was an optical illusion caused by the shape of the glass and the liquids inside), there were now eyes inside of each of the Within each of the kite-shaped facets on the crown were there were eyes, blazing red with a green glint of intelligence. I could only fully see two from my perspective at first, but I saw the periphery of two others, and I knew there were eight of those beveled facets on the crown, so I (correctly) surmised that this would be the total number of eyes now open on top of the diamond.

One for each of the seven planetary archons, I thought. *Plus one extra.*

Uranus? Mete?

Whatever spirit or spirits these eyes belonged to, the two in front of me were staring directly into my own eyes. This filled me with panic. I attempted to contact my informant for guidance.

What is this? I asked mentally.

My replacement, came the reply.

“This is where the rivers of Paradise meet,” said Rosenberg, as if I had asked him. “All of the waters of life flow here. It’s where we transform them into a higher state and then make our deposits into the universal bank.”

Just then, Rosenberg reached into his coat pocket and put on a pair of tinted glasses. Then a small octagonal window opened up on the ceiling above us.

It encompassed the Gradalis, and an area of several feet around it. You could now see all the way up to the lobby, and the Vortex above it. But after looking up once, I looked away, because the opening was bringing in what looked like blacklight from the Moon, seemingly stronger—hotter—than before—and I could feel that it was damaging to look at it directly. However, it was impossible to avoid the glare of it, reflecting off the glass vase and refracting through the diamond. I squinted. I could feel a headache coming on. Rosenberg tapped me on the shoulder. When I looked over, I saw that he was offering me a pair of the same type of tinted glasses. I took them and put them on. They stopped the pain right away.

So how is the moonlight coming through so intensely?” I asked Rosenberg.

“Surely it can’t penetrate the colored fluids in the Vortex that easily.”

“Total Internal Reflection,” he responded. “We actually use some of the streams of fluid that we’ve piped in to bend the light directly into here. We’ve not only got light from the sunroof coming in, but also from several other light portals arranged around the building. And in a few minutes, the UV light of the Moon will be replaced by the green rays of Hyperuranion.

Total Internal Reflection, I thought to myself. *The basis of modern fiber optics, a way of making light bend to follow a stream of liquid. And the long-treasured secret to the alchemical technique of star-bathing.*

“Star-bathing,” which I had written about in the past, was a means of channeling the light of the heavenly bodies into liquids, which alchemists claimed to be a key element necessary to effect certain chemical transformations.

Mysterious illustrations for cryptic alchemy manuals often show the essences of the seven classical planets, including a sun and a moon, being drained into a vessel, which *another* sun and moon then bathe in. This is what Rosenberg had been referring to when he spoke of the “Bath of the

Stars," an alchemical term which, I have theorized in the past, might be related to Baphomet's name, if interpreted to mean "Baptism of Wisdom."

"So this is where you offer the fruits of your sacrifices?" I said. "To your partners on the other side?"

"Yes," he said. "And everything that's happened on the grounds of this plaza for the last 729 days has been part of a pact negotiated long ago. Much of the detail was worked out ahead of time regarding the victims and how their various essences would be processed. But there were elements left for me to figure out with the help of others, and parts left to chance, as per the demands of the party of the second part."

"And what exactly is being negotiated?" I asked.

"Dining club privileges," he said. "Our ethereal partners are always welcome and encouraged to dine upon anything offered here whenever they like.

Fresh essences can be absorbed directly from the body at the time of expulsion.

But we also keep the system here ever-flowing with the sacred fluids which our partners like so much to suck. Specified amounts are piped directly to the upper and lower worlds at regular intervals according to pre-existing agreements."

"You mean piped to the planetary Archons?" I asked.

"They among others," he replied. "And this is really just a demonstration of my ability to pay. I am proving that what I have claimed is true. I have the bodies and souls of every man, woman and child of the human race at my disposal to negotiate with forever according to my will. That's the most powerful capital you can have in the higher worlds."

“You mean you think you own all the people on Earth and you can offer them as either slaves or food to another species living in another dimension?” I asked, wondering if I really understood him.

I wheeled myself closer to the Gradalis, and followed Rosenberg in circling it counterclockwise. I then found that there was a third man helping to hold up the vessel. From the looks of his light brown leather cap toe Oxford shoes, I knew it was Leopold.

“Oh yes,” Rosenberg replied. “I have all the gold I need now, and I hold a controlling interest in the debt of all the world’s governments now, though their populations don’t know it yet. People have already signed themselves away *in toto* to their governments in every country on Earth. So that makes me their *de facto* owner, and puts me in a position to use them as collateral, or to use them for whatever I want, really. I have all the power in this world now, and so I am going to use it to gain power in the higher worlds.”

“But what about now?” I said. “Now that the planetary Archons themselves have been sacrificed….”

“I have offered both them and the Earth people to the one most anxious to see them humiliated.” He put his hands behind his back and resumed his strut around the Gradalis.

“There is one further offering to be made, and that’s the baby. He has been nurtured on the blood of the Archons. Now he is to be born under the first light of Hyperuranion on this Easter morning.”

“Which baby?” I asked.

“The child of Philippine, of course,” he said.

I knew that was the answer, but I still didn’t understand how the conception and development of this baby was supposed to work. So I was questioning him to try to get him to reveal that information.

“You mean she was pregnant when you guys raped her?” I said.

“No of course not,” he said. “We raped her to get her pregnant! And to humiliate her as Luna, the goddess bitch of birth and menstruation. But that goes without saying.”

“Then why did you all rape her in the behind?” I said. “And why would there be a baby born today when she died Friday night?”

He laughed victoriously. “Pamela, you know better. You know the Eye of Horus does not obey the same rules of conception and gestation as the typical female womb. Extraordinary results require extraordinary efforts.”

“So this baby is going to be magically born from the rectum of a dead girl today,” I said, “and then you’re going to sacrifice it?”

“Yes,” he replied. “As I am deflowering his rose garden and absorbing his celestial power through the opening of his fundament, I shall cause the expiration of he who has waited since the birth of time to be avenged. I will suck up his god-power through my cock like a straw as it leaves his body.” Rosenberg’s penis became hard as he said this. He massaged it through his pants as he continued.

“This will not only ruin his plans for a return to glory, but will pin him down into a new place of subjugation, while opening a secret door for me into the Supernal Eden of the highest heaven. Then as he’s dying I will use his back as a stepping-stone and climb up through the aperture to take my rightful place above.”

“So what do you want me for?” I asked.

“You’ll see,” he said, coming back around the Gradalis to stand next to me on my left. “You’ll see entirely too much. The sight of so much reality, cast into a new light, will shock you greatly. But I’ll need you to maintain your constitution as you have so far, and tell me what you see when a new hole opens up in the sky and the rays of the sun from beyond are felt. You know what I mean: the light of the Blazing Star, from the portal between the pillars of the Earth and the sky, beyond the Moon and beyond the solar disc. This is the light that the Masons symbolized with their sacred G, just as scientists have named the Gamma ray after it, and used the Greek letter to represent the photon—the ultimate unit of light."

"Don't you want to see it yourself?" I said. I was getting nervous, not wishing to be alone in whatever was about to happen to me.

"No," said Rosenberg. He reached into his pocket again and switched to another pair of tinted glasses with pink lenses. "I have my reasons." He stopped pacing suddenly and stood still facing the Gradalis. Next, he stomped his left foot on the floor, and slid his right foot up against his left heel at a right angle. Then he pulled his red Phrygian cap out of his other pocket and put it on his head.

Most of the men in white coats seemed to leave the room all at once.

Consivia came over, wearing a pair of pink glasses as well. She whispered something to him, then turned around to walk up the ramp to the exit. But then she turned around again, leaned over me from behind, and whispered in my ear also. I could feel her hot breath on my neck, and the odor was atrocious, like a restroom at a gas station.

"You're on your own with him for this one," she said, patting my shoulder and causing involuntary spasms of revulsion. "He'll need you to tell him certain things about what to do and say next, based on what you see and hear."

"Wait," I said, not wanting any such responsibility. "Where are you going?

You're in charge of the rituals here."

"I'll be directing another rite while you are working here," she said. I have to do Easter Mass at St. Paul's."

The lights went out. Two assistants each switched on hand-held white LED lanterns. These now provided the only illumination apart from the lights on some of the room's machines, and the blacklight coming through the Moon, channeled down to the Gradalis.

"What if I don't see anything?" I asked.

"Oh you'll see," Consivia said. "And you WILL look. You won't have a choice."

Just as she walked away I felt someone approach my wheelchair from behind. Then I felt the barrel of a handgun up against my right shoulder, just like I had experienced before. A large male hand grabbed my head from the top and jerked it backwards so that I was looking up at the top of the Gradalis near the ceiling. Another hand from outside my field of vision removed my glasses, causing great pain in my head. Then an eye dropper was used to put a drop of something caustic in the corner of each eye. I squinted and squirmed in my chair as it burned.

"Keep your eyes open," the man said. It was Miles. He was wearing pink glasses just like Rosenberg.

This is like A Clockwork Orange *, I thought. But I have already seen so much ultraviolence, and so much ultraviolet light. What's a few Hyperuranian rays?*

But I was just trying to give myself courage. Truly, I was afraid. That the sky would literally open up—including all of the layers of the atmosphere that protect us from the deadly radiation of space. Already ultraviolet light was coming through, and now Rosenberg was speaking ominously of deadly Gamma rays.

Do these atmospheric layers somehow correspond to the realms of the planetary archons? I wondered. *Is that why the light from beyond was thought by the ancients to be light from beyond Uranus, the lord of the sky?*

Then I saw something I hadn't noticed before: a recess in the floor directly beneath the Gradalis. I had to back up my chair a little bit and bend sideways in my seat some to get a glimpse of what it was, and it was still hard to make out the detail. But because of the vision—or whatever it was—that I had been given just before coming to “the Kitchen” in room 27, I now understood what horrors crouched beneath.

It was a hole about three feet deep, plated with a metal that looked like copper, and a bed of straw in the middle. In it sat the creature I had seen before, with Pindar’s head, Philippine’s womb, and my stolen feet, among others. But it seemed like it was in an even in a worse state than it was when it had appeared to me in the vision. Now it was convulsing and sweating profusely, while its one eye was rapidly fluttering uncontrollably. The womb that formed its back was even more swollen than before, and one lump was now greatly larger than the other. When it moved one of its legs, two scorpions, glowing bright green in the blacklight, scuttled out of the straw to the edge of the pit.

The blacklight illuminated the occult sigils that had been drawn all over its head and body, which hadn’t been visible in my previous encounter with/vision of it. A glass rod coming down from the bottom of the Gradalis, terminating just a few inches above the navel on the back of the creature, and was entwined with two clear plastic tubes that were inserted directly into the womb. I figured it was for the baby, presumably an IV drip feeding it the contents of the Gradalis. And of course, it resembled a caduceus.

A crush of people were now filing into the room, all in their ceremonial black robes. But instead of the masks as before, they now only wore sunglasses on their faces, like Rosenberg. When they were all standing still, one of the young boys, no doubt a Nymphus in the previous ceremonies, tooted some annunciatory notes on a trumpet. Then I heard everybody gasp.

At that moment, I saw that the diamond was now levitating above the level of the fluids, and rotating. Its color turned from clear to red, and the faint purple glow of the blacklight changed to a bright pink hue. I noticed planetary symbols being projected in green on the sides of the vessel, and then refracting all over the room. They included the familiar signs of the seven classical planets, plus another—the Monad—a symbol discovered by John Dee, which combined the other seven. He representing this combination as an alchemical operation taking place inside of an egg.

Now the very thing that Dee had written about was taking place right before my over-exposed eyes, as revealed by the pink light from beyond (or whatever color it really was, as scientists insist pink light doesn't really exist, but is rather a stand-in color our brains put in to represent certain invisible rays of the spectrum).

With this brighter light I could now see the scene in the hole below much better. But when I looked again, I wished that I hadn't. For what I saw was the creature's anus—Philippine's anus—opening up from within. As it did so, the rectum began to protrude externally, forming the pink fleurette that is referred to as a "rosebud" in extreme anal pornography, now even pinker.

"Here we see the blossom of the Holy Rose Garden of Great Mother Nature," said Rosenberg. "And the Rose Gives Honey to the Bees." He sighed with carnivorous lust.

I had been horrified a year earlier when I had learned that some people were turned on by seeing internal organs collapsing and falling out due to sexual abuse. Now my horror reached another level as I watched a tiny hand protruding from the opening, humanoid but with sharp white claws for fingernails, covered in blood and other slime. It was my first witness of an anal birth. I hope it will ever be my last.

It took less than a minute for the baby to rip itself out with ferocity, shredding the sphincter and utterly disemboweling the body of its mother as it did so. Even more astoundingly was the fact that the baby seemed to be getting larger as it emerged. First one entire arm came through. Then the other arm and head came out together, ripping flesh along the way. Finally, the rest of the body fell down onto the straw below like a piece of dung. All the while, Rosenberg chanted as the Nymphi sang hymns in Latin and the head of Pindar, attached to the monstrosity below, howled in pain.

Already resembling a fifteen-month old in stature and appearance, the precocious newborn immediately stood up and used its teeth, quite sharp, to sever its umbilicus, which appeared to me to be a short flesh tube connected to a much longer plastic one. This was strung through Philippine's womb and connected to the Gradalis above. The child pulled it out through the entry hole in Philippine's pelvis. Then it put the tube to its lips and began sucking fluid out. As it drank, it grew to the size of a three-year-old in just a couple of minutes.

Apparently sated, the child climbed onto the back of the thing it had come from, the back being Philippine’s stomach. That creature, despite being eviscerated rectally, willfully crawled over to the side of the enclosure where the child used its body as a step-stool to try to climb out. But it could only reach up high enough to get its forearms out, and couldn’t pull itself up. So the creature, whether motivated by maternal instinct or something else, raised itself up on its hind legs and leaned with its forelegs against the wall, which allowed the child to escape.

I refer to the child as “it” only to be gender-neutral, as it quickly became clear that both sex organs were present. But there were other unique features as well, such as certain markings on the child’s skin. These became more apparent after what happened next.

The hermaphrodite toddler ran into the emergency shower, where it managed to jump up and pull the triangular yellow handle that was hanging down from the ceiling inside. A siren went off, the white light came on inside, and water began pouring down on the child. It used its hands to rub the muck off of itself.

This revealed its skin, which was dark and covered with what looked like stars. In the UV light, these popped out brilliantly, so that its hide looked like the sky itself.

As all this was happening, one of the robed celebrants, acting on a nod from Rosenberg, slammed the door shut. The child turned around with a look of horror on its face. It banged on the door with its fists and cried. At this, everybody laughed.

The person who shut the door leaned over and turned a red knob that was on the outside of the shower station, next to a blue knob, right where the water was piped in. It seemed he had turned the hot water on, as the window began to fog up. The water was pooling up rapidly, and due to the steam, dripping down from the entire ceiling in addition to the shower head. The child became increasingly frantic. The hot water was undoubtedly scalding it.

“Enjoy the purifying pain of the *Niptron* of the Stars, my son,” said Rosenberg, not acknowledging the child’s feminine aspect. “This is nothing like the *Niptron* of Empyrean fire that will soon baptize the entire peasant population of this pathetic prison with its flaming wisdom.”

He walked up to the shower door and looked directly into the child’s eyes through a hole in the fog that its panicked fist-pounding had made. He laughed at the poor thing for another couple of minutes. Then when the water was up to the child’s chest, he announced:

“That’s enough!”

Two others pulled the child out, who was shivering in shock. Another pushed the dissection table out between the congregants and the Gradalis, with the sewing machine still sitting on one end of it. The body parts that Consivia had been sewing together were gone already.

The other two assistants dragged the child over and placed it on the dissection table face down. Then they held it in place as Rosenberg stepped up behind it. The person who had brought the table over now held out for him a can of Lyle’s Golden Syrup and a black umbrella.

Rosenberg dropped his pants and slathered up his penis while the other two forced the child onto his knees with his rump positioned at the end. I turned my head away and shut my eyes, not wanting to see yet another child raped —and this was to be the youngest one yet. But Miles pushed my head back to face the scene.

“Open your eyes,” he said. “Or I’ll kill you.”

I opened them, but purposely kept them out of focus so that I would not see the horrors in front of me very well. Yet I could still hear the horrible sound of the child screaming, and it seemed to me that the rape had already begun.

As much as I tried not to see, I peripherally observed that Rosenberg was attempting to open the rectum with his finger and a glob of syrup.

At that moment, there was a rumble in the building, like an earthquake.

The diamond now flipped itself over and ascended to the very top of the Gradalis, to the octagonal window in the ceiling, where it fit perfectly like a puzzle piece.

Then the Hyperuranian rays came through. I don't think the others saw it, because they didn't react. But I saw the diamond, after having been temporarily red, now light up brighter than before, putting out a rainbow of colors all over the place. The fluid in the Gradalis took on the appearance of a pousse-café, stratified into different colors.

Now when I say "different colors," I mean it was a rainbow of colors that I had never seen before. They were sparkling all around me as the diamond rotated, putting out dizzying flashes that threatened to induce a seizure in me.

But then the diamond turned green in color, and switched its rotation. The light I saw also became green in appearance. The diamond was acting as a deck prism on board a ship, amplifying the light from above the chamber. I could tell that it was filtering this light—light from normally invisible spectrums—into a form that I could see, although presumably, these rays were still quite dangerous, as the glasses worn by the others would indicate. Furthermore, what the new light allowed me to see in the rest of the room was absolutely horrible.

The ghastly creatures I now spied filled every single inch of space around me. There were things everywhere, things that resembled in several aspects living beings. It's hard to say what they looked like because each one was different.

Also, you couldn't tell where one ended and the others began.

The only individual items I could distinguish in the room were the things I had already seen before the green light entered. Everything else was a mass of greyish-green-colored slimy flesh, consisting of hundreds of beings with black beady eyes and long proboscis-mouths. These mouths were all busy sucking on things, mostly on the bodies of the people in the room. A large number of mouths were also sucking from the hoses hanging from the Gradalis.

There were insect-like legs on some of these creatures, and tentacles on others. These became enmeshed with those of the other beings as they moved around the room, hungrily chasing emissions from living bodies wherever they might be found. These emissions could be seen by me now as diversely-hued jets of light streaming out of particular points on people’s bodies.

I noticed a large cluster of mouths around the stumps of my legs, with little black reptilian tongues slithering in and out, licking at the blood that had seeped through the bandages. But more—many more—were surrounding the victim on the table, screaming and struggling as the preliminaries of its rape continued.

Those closest slurped eagerly. Many others crushed to get close. What was happening on that table clearly put out an energy that they were desperate to drink. I shuddered in revulsion.

They’re not just in this room, said my telepathic informant, now crouching before me in the dying body of the Frankenstein creature in the pit beneath the Gradalis. *These are the Amaleks. They’re everywhere, all the time. You can only see them now because of the Hyperuranian light.*

Then I noticed a mess of these monsters crowded around the rear end of the creature in the pit. Some were eating the blood from the its wounds, and the afterbirth on the ground. But most were eagerly licking and sucking at something else: its vagina. Something was coming out. It took a moment for me to realize that there was yet another small humanoid hand emerging from it, this one coal-black skin, but with white claws like the first child.

The green light had been there for at least a full minute before Rosenberg noticed that I was looking at things that he and the others, because of their glasses, couldn’t see.

“What do you see?” He asked.

Don’t tell him the truth! the informant said in my head.

What should I say? I asked.

Nonsense, the mental voice replied. *Distract him. Sing a song. Keep him from hearing the other baby’s cries. This child is our last chance to prevent the collapse of the Pillars of Heaven.*

“What do you see?!” Rosenberg insisted angrily.

I tried to close my eyes to clear my mind and think of something. But Miles slapped me and told me to open them again. So I couldn’t shut out the image of all these parasites sucking off of everybody, and I just *could not* think of anything to say. No mental voices came along to rescue me, and I began to wonder if my informant was dead, since I had felt him to be inhabiting the head of Pindar that was sewn onto the creature at the bottom of the pit, and that creature seemed to be dying as the second twin ripped its way out.

Pindar’s head was grimacing in pain, but remained silent, presumably choking back the moans so as to keep Rosenberg ignorant of what was happening. The baby’s head, however, had begun to emerge, and I knew it was possible that it would begin to scream immediately. I sensed that if Rosenberg knew about the other baby, he would kill it, and that would be the end, somehow, of an opportunity for Earth to escape its apparent impending doom.

I wasn’t sure how it was going to happen, as my informant had been vague.

But I realized that somehow Rosenberg’s imminent sodomization of the child of the planetary Archons that had been born from Philippine’s anus would cause the layers of the universe, already unstable from the sacrifice of most of those Archons, to collapse.

“Well that light’s about to get a lot brighter. Just tell me what you see.”

With that, he grabbed his penis again with one hand, the child’s thigh with the other, and lurched his pelvis forward towards the rear end. Then one of his assistants deployed the umbrella and held it up over his head, presumably to protect himself from the Hyperuranian rays.

If he doesn’t want to see that light, why does he want to go to the place where it’s coming from? I wondered.

Sing you idiot! shouted the voice in my head, suddenly returning. *Don’t let him go through with it! Distract him!*

“Return through the rectum is easy!” shouted Rosenberg, pointing his finger at the screaming child on the table, just an inch away from achieving his goal of penile penetration. “The Distinguished Charity of Mete uproots the enemy! I am *Saturnus Stercutus* and you are my *Stercus*. I shall plow you and then burn the fallow fields with the *Niptron* of fire!”

The words “*Niptron* of fire” reminded me of something. Something stupid.

This happens to me all the time. Even in the worst situations, something I hear another person say will remind me of a song with lyrics that sound similar. It can be any type of song—even a TV theme song or an advertisement jingle.

Regardless of how catchy the tune is, or whether or not I like the song in question, it will immediately get stuck in my head, often in altered form. My mind will automatically create a new version with parodied lyrics to fit similar-sounding words I’ve just heard.

Well, this is what happened to me at that moment, and it filled my head with the lyrics to a once-popular song. It was not my favorite by any means, and not all that singable for me, really. But “*Niptron* of fire” made me think of that song by the Pointer Sisters from the *Beverly Hills Cop* soundtrack. And so, without a second to lose, I sang out loudly, swaying back and forth in my wheelchair like a brain-damaged moron.

"I'm just burning doing the *Niptron* Dance!"

The distraction worked. Rosenberg stopped what he was doing and turned around to face me.

"What did you say?" he asked, confused and annoyed. Just then, I heard the newborn twin cry out from the pit. I sang more to cover it.

"I'm just burning doing the *Niptron* Dance! I'm just burning doing the *Niptron* Dance! Hooty-Hoot! Hooty-Hoot!"

"What's wrong with you?" Rosenberg said angrily. Then, his look changing to serious and curious, he asked "Are you hearing a radio station in your head?"

But I didn't answer, I just continued singing. As I did so, I saw that Miles had followed my gaze, and now saw the baby coming out, still crying. But instead of alerting Rosenberg, he looked me in the eye for a good second, then began to sing along.

"I'm just burning doing the *Niptron* Dance! Hoo hoo!" As we both sang this together, another light entered the room from above. Everything became brighter. I could still see the Amaleks all around, but they were not as distinct anymore. I looked at the Gradalis. The diamond was clear again, and refracting a normal rainbow spectrum of colors, quite beautifully, all over the room.

Real sunlight! I thought. *Sunrise on Easter. Halleluiah!*

But Rosenberg didn't notice this either, so distracted was he by our terrible singing.

"Miles, why are you doing this? Rosenberg screamed. He pounded his fists on the table like a pouting child. "Stop it! I'm losing my erection!"

While he had been throwing his fit, the twin child had fully emerged, cut its own cord and was already drinking its fill from the Gradalis. It too had grown to the size of a three-year old. And while it resembled its brother/sister with its dual sex organs, the coloring of its body was much different.

It was piebald, with one leg and foot black, the other set white. The same was true of the hands and arms, but the white and black colors were on opposite sides compared to the legs. The torso, divided into quadrants, was similarly chequered, as was the head. The white segments were marked with black sun-shapes, and the black segments covered in white crescents. All this was quite visible because there was clearly a bright morning sun shining above us now, and also because, while covered in afterbirth, this twin wasn't nearly as mucky as its sibling had been.

Now, as Rosenberg approached me and Miles in fury, with the umbrella-holder following him uncertainly, the twin came crawling out of the pit behind him. But Rosenberg didn't notice because he was focused on getting us to shut up. He took the gun from Miles, which it seemed to me that Miles allowed rather easily, and then pointed it at us, repeating his demand for us to be quiet.

"The light is frying your brains! Stay cool! I need to keep focused on my task," he yelled.

As he said this, the twin ran behind the Gradalis and disappeared in the shadows of the room's machinery. Rosenberg turned back around to return to his rectal raping ritual, placing the gun next to the sewing machine. But then we were joined in our singing by the three men that were holding up the Gradalis: Paris, Chesterfield and Leopold.

"I'm just burnin' doin' the *Niptron* Dance!" they all sang, completely out of sync.

"What the fuck!" screamed Rosenberg. "Nymphi, sing the *Nosiéle eiryk*!

These folks want to hear some music, it seems!"

The young boys in the room immediately began singing, in Greek this time, but backwards. I’m pretty sure it was the Greek Orthodox version of *Kyrie eléison* in reverse, the undoing of the traditional Christian prayer for mercy. The tune was backwards too, probably an inversion of Franz Schubert’s Mass No. 2, composed for this prayer. Meanwhile, Rosenberg chanted the Sator Square once again.

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

ROTAS!

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

ROTAS!

SATOR!

AREPO!

TENET!

OPERA!

ROTAS!

Rosenberg’s member dangled perilously close to its desired entry-point once again, and with it, seemingly, the fate of our world was hanging in the balance. At that second, which might well have been our last as far as I knew, the dumbest thought ever came to me, spawned by Rosenberg’s chanting.

The only thing that can save us now is a deus ex machina, I thought.

A *deus ex machina*—a “ghost from the machine”—is, of course, a term for when dramatic stories have the crisis solved at the end by the sudden appearance of some new element, such as a supernatural being who saves the day. As per example, the flying chariot sent by her grandfather Helios to rescue the witch Medea at the end of the play by Euripides that’s named after her. The “machine”

in the phrase is said to have originally been a reference to a crane that was used in ancient Greek drama to lower the gods in these scenes—or rather, the actors playing them—onto the stage.

However, this is a little-known detail. Most people who use the phrase assume that the “machine” is the story itself, and I think the meaning has evolved to include that. It occurred to me that the phrase “phantom of the opera” could be reinterpreted to mean the same thing essentially, as *opera* is Latin for “work,”

and is considered synonymous with *machina*. *Phantasma*, meanwhile, is a synonym of *idolon*, another Latin word for “ghost.” In terms of Rosenberg’s present working, both terms could refer to his ongoing series of rituals, and the rousing of a spirit that would then determine the final outcome of the ceremonies.

As I pondered this, the phantom of the operation made itself known. The piebald twin hermaphrodite now sneaked up behind Rosenberg, who was applying more Lyle's to its sibling's rectum, and stealthily removed a large pair of surgical scissors lying next to the sewing machine on the table. Then it opened them up, and spoke.

"Oh Paternoster!" it said, vibrating the air in the room with a voice of many waters. Everyone else in the room, most of whom had noticed the child moments earlier but reacted very slowly, began to back away from the dissection table in fear.

"Ah?" said Rosenberg, spinning around.

He still hadn't achieved penile penetration of his target, and in fact the child still seemed relatively intact in that regard, judging by what I saw peripherally from my vantage point. Nor would Rosenberg get another chance to deflower it. The instant he turned around, the child's brother/sister removed Rosenberg's manhood expertly, as if it had done so a thousand times before, at the birth of a thousand different aeons.

It took a second for him to realize what had happened. He was still holding his penis when he noticed that it was no longer attached to him. At first he just dropped his jaw silently, with his eyes wide with horror. Then he dropped the umbrella on the dissection table, where it got caught up against the sewing machine. Finally, he dropped to his knees as he screamed in pain, and his attacker buried the scissors in-between his shoulder blades—a fatal blow. The instant he let go of the child on the table, the green light from above, and the horrible bloodsucking creatures it revealed, vanished from my vision.

Then, as if to be thorough, as if to ensure that this penis of terror could never again be used as a weapon against another child, the piebald hermaphrodite caught the genitals in its hand before they hit the ground. It bit off both testicles, swallowed them, and threw the penis into the pit where both twins had been born. Next, it grabbed its sibling around the waist and began helping it down from the dissection table. I saw Rosenberg's body stop moving. He was gone.

At this moment, the three men holding the Gradalis all acted at once on a pre-arranged signal.

“Go!” I heard Leopold shout.

All three of them began attempting to stand up, which was quite a struggle.

The weight of the fluid-filled vessel must have been enormous, plus there was counter-pressure coming from its attachment to the ceiling. Then there was another complication, which I hadn’t seen before because of the hoods draped over their heads. But when those hoods got lifted up a bit as they were struggling, I saw that all three of them actually had their necks attached to the Gradalis itself.

Their brainstems were being leeched? I thought.

Then Leopold gave another signal. “Three, two, one!” he said.

They rose up sharply in unison, heaving and sighing, with the Gradalis still on their necks, until the glass cylinder at the top connecting it to the Vortex above the ceiling cracked and shattered. A flood of fluids immediately began raining down like from the sluicegates of Heaven in the days of Noe.

“Go now!” Leopold shouted. All three men each reached up with one hand to detach themselves from the neck valves as they simultaneously pushed the Gradalis backwards with the other. By “backwards” I mean that two of them pushed it off of themselves, and, necessarily, in Leopold’s direction, as he also pushed it forward.

The Gradalis tipped over and landed on top of Leopold, shattering and spilling its load around. Most of the contents fell down into the pit where the creature with Pindar’s head, Philippine’s torso, and my feet (among those of others) stood eviscerated and presumably dead. Leopold too now lay face-down and motionless on the concrete floor, so I assumed he was deceased as well. The twins had run off somewhere and were no longer visible.

Chesterfield and Paris lurched forward, free now, but with clear fluid now dribbling out of their necks. They both took their hoods off quickly and pressed them against the backs of their necks to stop the leaking. Then they each fell forward onto their hands and knees in the full-genuflect position. Whether by pre-agreed design or instinct I know not, but the two of them both began praying.

“Kyrie, eléison, Kyrie, eléison, Kyrie, eléison…” Chesterfield chanted.

That was the *real* Christian prayer for mercy, and in Greek, too, which was uncommon but not unheard of in his native Anglican church, and, I’ve always thought, much more authentic than the English-translated versions. Paris, next to him, muttered a Mohammedan equivalent in Arabic.

“*Bismillah, ar-Rahman, ar-Rahim*….”

Rosenberg was kneeling next to them too. But he wasn’t praying. He was crying, screaming, and bleeding to death.

While this was happening, the other congregants were quickly filing out of the room via the exit ramp. But when the one at the front of the line opened the door, an ocean of blood and other human sewage greeted them, flooding into the room. It washed the people on the ramp back down into the room and began filling the floor, making its way towards the pit with the Frankenstein creature in it that had my feet.

My feet! I thought again with a pang of longing.

I wheeled myself closer to the pit and leaned over in my chair to get a better view. The pit was half-full of fluids and broken glass now, but the chimera creature was still standing on its legs of various origins. I couldn't see any breathing, though, and the head was flopped forward in defeat.

I saw that the diamond had landed point-down directly in Philippine's excoriated pelvis, where it was slowly sinking into the flesh, which seemed to collapse and partially liquefy under its weight, capturing it like quicksand. Next to this, Rosenberg's severed penis had landed, halfway on top of the creature's backside, where the vagina and anus had both been ripped open so badly as to form one large hole. That hole now began to collapse inside, swallowing the penis, tip first.

The entire torso dissolved into a fleshy, bloody pink mass resembling Playdough. Then it coagulated around the diamond, forming a thin membrane over it. This made me think of the similarity of shape between the side profile of the diamond, this sacred "keystone," and the human sacrum bone at the center of the pelvis. It occurred to me that this bone actually *does* act as a keystone for the pelvis and, in a way, for the entire human body, positioned in the center, dispersing the weight of the upper half evenly through the lower half.

In fact, if you bent over onto your hands to form an arch with your body, I thought, *either forwards, like Nuit, the Egyptian goddess of the night sky, or* *backwards, like Uranus, the Ouroboros (and Pindar's body, and Baron Carrickfergus)—the placement of the sacrum bone would be precisely in the keystone position.*

As I was watching the creature's bodily transformation in front of me, I noted that the sacrum bone, when detached from the other bones, including the coccyx below, also closely resembles the keystone referred to in the Masonic Royal Arch degree—the one that was used as the official seal for Pennsylvania,

"the Keystone State." Then I remembered some of the things written in a 1922

book by Masonic writer Manly P. Hall entitled *The Initiates of the Flame*, in which he states outright that the sacrum bone and the Royal Arch keystone are one and the same. He further asserted that “the head of the Sphinx” could be seen in “the inverted sacrum bone when it is turned upward,” and also in “the inverted Masonic keystone.” Then he elaborated even more: It is said that in ancient times the Sphinx was the gateway of the pyramid, and that there was an underground passage which led from the Sphinx to Cheops. This would make the symbolism even more perfect, for the gateway to the spirit is through the bodies according to the ancients.

These passages were accompanied by an illustration of the sacrum bone inside the Masonic keystone.

According to Egyptologist E. Wallis Budge, as I recalled, the sacrum bone was the root of the sacred *djed* pillar, the “spine of Osiris” which was thought to hold the different levels of existence apart. He also said:

> …There can be little doubt that the *djed* is a conventional representation of a part of the backbone of Osiris, namely the sacrum bone, which on account of its proximity to the sperm bag, was regarded as the most important member of his body….

Then I remembered that the ancient Mayans referred to the sacrum bone as a “portal to the underworld” (that being “the Place of the Seven Gods”). They compared going through it to going into the mouth of a serpent. Presumably this is because of the serpentine shape of tunnels of the intestines, considered analogous to the infernal caverns by many cultures, including the Greeks and the Hindus. In fact, going back to ancient Babylon, the spiral emblem found throughout the world has been used to represent these tunnels. This association is one of the reasons that intestines were so commonly used for divination—as maps, indicating the path that lies ahead.

I mused about the fact that alchemists have cryptically described their “red stone” (a product of the alchemical process) as being a “bezoar,” a word for a clump of undigested food that has been caught inside a living creature’s intestines. They called this stone the “red sun,” and the “lesser stone,” as compared to the ultimate alchemical product, the Philosopher's Stone, which was believed to be manufactured within, or otherwise utilizing, the brain human rather. According to the oldest Egyptian alchemists, I remembered, the red stone was formed in the human bowels the same way they thought of gold as being created within the bowels of the Earth.

This is the same thing as the stone that Rhea gave to Chronos to trick him, I thought as the understanding rushed down upon me. *And it's also how he was poisoned, through the anus, blocking his intestines and causing fecal vomiting.*

Recalling this brought me back in my mind to the Mayan beliefs regarding the sacrum bone, which they sometimes call a "second skull," or even "the inverted skull," because it sort of looks like one when you separate it from the rest of the skeleton. Then I thought about the Templar symbol of the skull and crossbones, and the fact that it basically shows a head in-between two thighs. I wondered if it might be connected to their alleged rite of induction involving the *Osculum Inflame* ("Obscene Kiss"). The same ritual was allegedly practiced by witches at sabbats, involving a kiss on the Devil's "second mouth" underneath his tail.

This brought to mind an articulated read somewhere stating that some Jews believed that this is where a deceased person's soul is stored, hibernating until the Resurrection at the End of Days. At that point, supposedly, all human bodies will regenerate from their sacrum bones, if they're lucky enough for that part of their bodies to still be intact, and then everyone will be presented for Final Judgment.

As I contemplated these things, I saw the pelvis of the creature, pregnant now with the diamond, fall downward as the recently and artificially-formed sinews connecting the tissue to the various legs began to melt. It slid slowly to the floor while the legs remained standing. The head fell off and into the surrounding goop.

The waterline in the pit started to rapidly rise as the flood of fluids from above flowed down the ramp and across the floor to join the pool below. But when it rose up high enough that the fluids reached the top of my feet, I saw them come alive. They began to twitch, and then to stomp.

“Come to me!” I shouted to them.

And they obeyed. They jumped up high, freeing themselves completely.

Then, one at a time, they leap-frogged off the top of what was left of the monster’s main body, which was now re-congealing around its remaining legs.

They sailed through the air directly into my lap, slimy and bloody.

Like the flying feet of Mercury, I thought to myself.

As disgusting as they were, they were a part of me, and I was happy to see them. They seemed to feel the same way. I had to hold the feet down as they continued to hop around my lap in excitement for our reunion.

Then I heard something slopping around in the pile of coagulating flesh and blood at the bottom of the pit. I leaned over again for a look. I immediately regretted it.

Fresh sinews had just formed between the remaining three legs and the torso, which was now a triangle. Tentacles of bloody, rubbery meat reached out from the stumps to merge with it. Pindar’s head fell backwards and dissolved into the mess. But his facial features, with his mouth curled in agony, now appeared within the triangle.

Within less than a minute, I was looking at a real, living trinacria, with a reddish-pink triangle in the center. The freakish creature was surrounded with the

presently knee-deep and ever-growing puddle of sludge that was still pouring into it down the ramp from the floors above us. The eye caught my gaze as the grimace turned into a delighted smile that sent a shuddering chill through me.

Thank you, the voice of my informant said to me in my head. *Now Albion can rise again. Now I can come home to Jerusalem on the Thames.*

But then the face twisted in pain again, and its body convulsed once more, just as it had during the birth of each twin. Well as it turned out, it was not just a set of twins. They were triplets. A third sibling now began to emerge from the place where Pindar's head had been attached to the body.

It was covered in a pink membrane sac, but through it I could see two dark hooves. By the time half of it was out, I could tell that the "membrane sac"

around it was actually a human stomach and attached esophagus, the latter with the front hooves stuck through it. The outline of a tiny horse head could be seen at the top of the stomach, twitching side to side.

But at this point, the birth seemed to stall. The baby horse was stuck. The face in the triangle howled. Its voice sounded so … ancient, and loud. It reverberated through the whole room, perhaps the whole building, perhaps the whole world. I heard a rumbling sound all around us, along with a trembling sensation coming through the floors and walls.

Then in the corner of my eye I saw something stirring from behind the pit, amid the broken glass of the Gradalis. It was Leopold. He was getting up.

I couldn't tell how badly he was hurt because he was covered in filth. But he was able to get up onto his feet, take off his hood, press it against his leaking neck, then walk over to the pit and slide down into it, all without looking up at me. Next, he went over to where the little foal, about the size of a small cat, was still struggling to be born.

He grabbed its front legs and yanked it straight out, then caught the whole thing with both hands before it fell down. He walked up to the edge of the pit, sloshing through the sludge, and lifted the foal up over the side. He placed it down on the floor in front of me, still inside the stomach, where it continued to twitch. After letting go, he fell backwards onto his butt and sat silently in the pool of sewage.

Then the twins came out from hiding. They had been inside the emergency shower, and had apparently used it just now without me noticing, the noise drowned out by all the rest. The piebald one was now clean, and the blue one had washed the syrup off itself.

They were both quite beautiful. I was happy to see them looking relatively well. Silently, in my own mind, I uttered a prayer, to what god I could not say, asking that they should be allowed to somehow survive this ordeal. I knew the future of existence itself somehow depended on it.

Both children, who from birth had always known innately what they needed to do, now gathered around the membrane-covered foal and, using their claws, ripped open the stomach, freeing it. The horse, which looked like it was probably white, but was covered in goo, continued to twitch on the floor for a minute or so, while the piebald twin grabbed the tub of “Peepee-roni” from the refrigerator.

Then the toddler toddled back over to the foal and knelt down next to its head. The child took the cover off of the tub, revealing, as I had suspected, small preserved human penises. The foal smelled the meat and then sat up eagerly. The child fed it one, then another, with the child and its sibling helping themselves to a few as well.

The horse began to grow before my eyes, just like the two children had done, and did even more as they too ate the penises. Then the horse began stretching out its wings. Yes, it had wings.

Maybe it needs some water, I thought.

I wheeled myself over to the shelves over the fridge, which was no easy task now that the floor was flooded, and looked for an uncontaminated vessel to put water in. At first there was no luck. Every beaker, jar, and bottle was full of either biohazard material or harsh chemicals. Then I found a large beaker labeled

“H20” on the bottom shelf. It was half-full. It was. I could reach it, just barely.

I grabbed it and brought it to the eyewash station, where I filled it up so that I had about a liter of water. I wheeled the beaker over to where the children were feeding the horse, and handed it to the blue one. The child looked up at me and smiled in gratitude. Each of the kids took a long draught. Then they gave the rest to the horse, who drank it greedily.

They were all a bit larger by the end of this. The foal stood up finally, and exercised its wings a bit more. I saw that it was male. Both children led the horse over to the shower, where they washed off the afterbirth. When the foal came out of the booth a minute later, he looked much better. I could see that his fur was definitely white.

The two children now walked the foal over to the dissection table, which they were both able to climb on top of. This enabled them to mount the back of the horse. The piebald one sat in front. The blue one turned around to wave at me and smile, as the piebald one leaned forward and patted the horse’s neck. It neighed, whinnied, reared up, and then took off, up the ramp and through the exit door. I knew where it was headed next.

The ramp winds all around the building, I thought. *That will give it plenty of runway to build up speed so it can take off.*

About a minute later, a shockwave shook the room, like the one I had experienced during dinner at New Court, but louder, with a similar waterphone-like sound reverberating through the air. A clear glass container, shaped somewhat like a Kool-Aid pitcher, fell off the shelf towards my lap. I caught it with my hands before it landed. It was filled with a translucent pinkish liquid and labeled *Liquor Amnii + PROTEANS*. At the bottom of the vessel was a dead human fetus, about an inch in length, like a worm in a bottle of tequila. I shuddered at the sight of its beady eyes. Then I heard a thunderous crash from the floor above us.

I looked up. There was the body of Baron Carrickfergus, smashed against the bottom of the Vortex. I couldn’t tell if this last blow had been the one to finally extinguish his life. As before, the eyes were still frozen open.

I turned around again, towards the pit, and surveyed the scene around me.

Paris and Chesterfield were still praying. Rosenberg was slumped over on his knees, perhaps dead. As for Leopold and the trinacria in the pit, their present status was unknown to me. But then I heard Leopold's voice coming from the pit.

"You should look for the bottle marked *Liquor Amnii + PROTEANS* on the shelf, Pamela."

Yes, he said 'PROTEANS,' I thought to myself. *So it wasn't just a misspelling of 'proteins.'*

You can use it to put your feet back on your legs."

I immediately looked in his direction.

"How?" I asked. "I have it right here."

"Come on over here. I'll help you," he said.

I wheeled over to the pit through the sludge on the floor, past the unconscious body of Rosenberg and the kneeling figures of the two MI5 agents, who remained oblivious to all else but their mantras. As I approached, Leopold stood up from within the pit, so that he was now visible from about the waist up.

He had tied his hood around his leaking neck. His fancy suit was covered in revolting filth, the stench of which I barely noticed anymore. He held out both of his mangled hands in a cupped position.

"Give me the feet and unwrap your stumps," he instructed. But I didn't trust him. He was the one who had cut them off in the first place. I just sat there and stared at him severely.

"Look, you're going to need my help. You need to regenerate the broken bone that was removed. No doctor can do that for you."

I looked at the feet in my lap. Then I unwrapped my stumps, which were hurting again, as the morphine had worn off. Also, I had felt the "phantom limb"

sensation several times already, but now my ankles were crying out for the feet like a lover separated from her beloved. The wounds were looking gangrenous and infected.

"Hand over the feet, then pour the elixir on when I give you the signal,"

Leopold said.

Reluctantly, I gave them up. He placed both feet onto the stumps. I could feel the flesh on the end of my ankles eagerly embracing the contact with the estranged limbs. But he was right. A portion around the break point had been

removed. The two ends didn't exactly match up anymore, and even if my body accepted them as-is, I'd now be shorter than I was before. Still, it was better than no feet at all. I waited to see what would happen. Leopold seemed to lift up on one side of his body, like he had just put his foot on top of something. Then he closed his eyes as if straining for something. He gave the signal.

"Pour!" he shouted.

I poured the "elixir" liberally on the ends of each piece. As soon as I had done so, I felt an electric current run from Leopold's body through the feet and into my legs. It riveted him in place, but did not seem to be harming him. He just looked directly into my eyes intensely for the next few seconds without moving.

Immediately I felt the feet beginning to adhere to my ankles. I witnessed the miracle of new flesh forming, just as it had when the creature that had borrowed my feet reformed itself into a trinacria. As it coagulated, the meat gelled into a spongey substance before solidifying. During these few seconds of plasticity, Leopold slowly and expertly pulled my feet down an inch, so that the missing segment was reformed, good as new, including, somehow, the bone and marrow within.

“Astounding,” I said, involuntarily, with my mouth wide open in amazement.

Within a few moments, the electricity stopped. Leopold let go, and the feet stayed in place, continuing to meld with the leg. A few seconds after that, I found that I could feel them again. The sensation spread from my ankles down to my toes as my nerves came alive once more. I flexed my toes gleefully.

All these little piggies went to market, I thought. *And now they’re all home.*

Wee wee wee!

And not a moment too soon. Leopold had now climbed out of the pit, which I found threatening. I instinctively jumped on my newly-recovered feet to run away. But when I tried to take a step, they buckled under me. I found myself on my knees between Paris and Chesterfield, positioned the same way they were.

I wretched at the smell of the gook that was pooling up around my legs.

Leopold walked over to a panel of switches on the wall and flipped one.

Something happened inside the pit. The creature screamed, but his scream trailed off. He was falling down, along with everything else that had been pooling up in the recess. The bottom must have been a trap door. And Leopold had opened it! I heard a splash as everything hit water in the depths below.

The Walbrook, I thought. *He just threw the trinacria into the Walbrook.*

Then the ground beneath us began to quake, and a large crack formed in the floor of the room. I decided that begging God for mercy, whomever he or she might be, was a prudent thing to do at that point. I knelt and bowed my head, but not so far over that I couldn't keep an eye on what was happening.

Kyrie, eléison, Kyrie, eléison, Kyrie, eléison… I droned. As soon as I started, Paris, without looking up, switched from Arabic to Greek, and joined us. The sound of our chanting vibrated strangely through the air, as though we were speaking directly into the whirring blades of a fan. A breeze seemed to be blowing down the ramp from the floors above.

Then there was another rumble, louder than the others. The ceiling and walls were all cracking now. The Vortex and its contents came crashing down through the ceiling to the floor behind us. We were dusted by this, but because we had our heads pointed down, we managed to avoid being hit in the face by shards of glass, and everything seemed to magically bounce off our backs.

The body of Baron Carrickfergus fell down into the pit and hit the underground river below. The fragrant fluids and broken glass spread more broadly, contributing several more inches to the overall flooding of the room. But luckily for us, the fluids were falling into pit and other cracks in the floor now. This meant that it was draining away from our particular position.

Leopold then chose to come over and kneel in the middle of our triangle with us. There he uttered his own prayer.

"Mother Rock, have mercy. Stand firm beneath us, we implore you," he said. "Deliver us from the mire." Strangely, while addressing a pagan goddess, he quoted *Psalm 69*:14. Then he went on, mumbling in what sounded like … Gaelic?

Elvish? I'm not sure.

Now "mother rock" is another way of saying "mother lode," and simply refers to the main vein among any collection of underground ore deposits.

But I am pretty sure he was praying to the Magna Mater, the Rock Cybele. Yet I suppose it could be taken either way, considering what was subsequently revealed beneath the ground on which we were kneeling.

Then all at once, there was a sharp jolt from below, and the ground all around us collapsed. Everything was gone except for a small circle, about eight feet in circumference, around where we happened to be kneeling. But I didn’t have time to appreciate the miracle of being so chosen for preservation, because the ceiling came down on top of us.

Yet here again, most of it seemed to somehow just fall away from us, into the immeasurable abyss surrounding us. Not all of it, however. The last thing I remember before I lost consciousness, just before a piece of masonry hit me in the head, was seeing three large yellow circles directly above me in the light blue morning sky, arranged in triangular formation. In an instant they coalesced into one yellow orb, which immediately started bleeding and fell out of the sky. This left a circle in the sky where it had been, appearing as an indigo field studded with white stars, which then immediately opened like a window, revealing a huge eye that stared back at me. It blinked, and I blacked out.

Chapter 25: Albion’s Aeon

The light of this star surpassed that of all the others; its brilliance was ineffable and its novelty was such that all those who looked at it were struck with

astonishment.

The sun, moon and the stars formed a choir round this star.

– St. Ignatius, *Epistle to the Ephesians* Okayness is not only a concept that is relative to the situation, but one which, quite often, when invoked, teeters dangerously on the verge of being meaningless, threatening to render impotent the dramatic import of anything which preceded it. Therefore, when Leopold Black/Thomas Weir, having pulled a stone away from the rubble that buried me, asked, with a disfigured hand extended, if I was “OK,” I did not have an immediate response.

I opened my eyes, but as they began to adjust to the light and to focus on Leopold’s face, I remembered once again how he had tricked me getting involved in this nightmare. I tried to move my feet to push off whatever was weighing on them, cutting off the circulation. Then I recalled that the man standing over me had actually sawed them off the previous night. So I decided just to close my eyes again, thinking that my feet were still gone.

It wasn’t until I heard Paris and Chesterfield’s voices amidst a cacophony of sirens and car alarms also that I opened my eyes again. Then it came back to me: how my feet had been restored, and how the small piece of land we stood on had somehow been spared from what seemed at the time like both the collapse of the earth and the collapse of the sky. Paris lifted a piece of the digital ceiling, with its hexagonal light grid, up off of my ankles. My feet were really there! What’s more, I could move them! It was painful and the muscles were stiff, but they did respond to my mental commands. I sat up.

Then I heard the piece of ceiling that Paris had just thrown over his shoulder hit bottom, after an extended delay and with a splash.

A splash? I thought. *Why? And how far down did it fall?*

At first my eyes focused on the three men directly before me, who were all staring back at me with concern. They all looked worse for the wear, dirty and badly beaten, but surprisingly unfazed considering the circumstances, especially the wounds I recalled them having on their necks, underneath the hoods that were still tied around their necks as tourniquets.

But then my eyes adjusted to take in the surrounding landscape. A few feet behind the men that stood in front of me, the earth dropped off into an abyss, all the way around. With help from Chesterfield, I stood up to get the full panoramic view. I tried to get closer to the edge of our island of safety, but the others insisted I "shouldn't look straight down right now," because it was scary. They also said it would be dangerous, since it was still quite difficult for me to stand without using Chesterfield as a crutch. So I looked around us, which was shocking enough.

We were surrounded by a vast chasm in the ground, which, from the sound of it, was at least partially filled with water now and quickly becoming fuller. The entire site had vanished—the whole of Bucklersbury, and everything around it, from Queen Street to Lothbury to Gracechurch, all the way down to the banks of the Thames, in a perfect circle. Rosenberg Plaza, the Walbrook Building, St.

Stephen's, New Court, the Bank of England, the Bullion Association, Mansion House… they were all gone.

I turned to the south and saw the river unobstructed in front of me, with a waterfall pouring down from it into the depths beneath. There it joined up with the Walbrook, which was now open to the light of the Sun once again and rapidly forging a brand new mouth for itself. The collapse of the earth below had caused three bridges to fall there also: Southwark Bridge, the Cannon Street Rail Bridge, and London Bridge.

But of course you know about the sinkhole in London that formed suddenly on Easter morning 2018, creating a precisely round hole in the earth a half-mile in circumference right next to the Thames—except for the estimated nine-by-nine plot of land that we four stood upon. You surely know, then, that this anomalous spindle of soil disintegrated, while we watched from above in awe, as soon as the rescue helicopter lifted the last of us up off of its surface. I wondered, of course, if

it was our prayers that prevented us from being subsumed by "the mire," *a la Psalm 69*:14, as referenced earlier by Leopold: *Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink….*

Therefore, I gave thanks accordingly, silently, with *Psalm* 40: *He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay….*

If you already knew about the sinkhole, then you undoubtedly know about the Herculean efforts that were made to rescue all the other casualties of this catastrophe. As I write this, they are still working to dam up the river, pump the water out of the hole, and fill it in with concrete. It's the largest construction project in London since the building of Rosenberg Plaza, which now, ironically, must take a step down in history to become the second-largest.

The Prime Minister, enthusiastically embracing the Broken Window Fallacy, has praised and taken credit for the economic stimulation this has caused. But the real stimulus has come, of course, from the unique new element that was discovered within the depths of the chasm, and from the worldwide sovereign debt jubilee that was negotiated, beginning the following Wednesday, during talks between G20 heads of state, the International Monetary Fund, and the Bank of International Settlements.

Experts in Karst Topography and water table science told the news reporters that this was a disaster waiting to happen. The land was already inherently unstable because of the network of underground rivers, which, they said, after lying dormant for over a century, had been partially-re-activated in recent years by state-sponsored environmental scientists as part of the London Rivers Action Plan, which Rosenberg had bragged to us about at dinner on Friday night. Thus the underground development that had taken place in the intervening centuries since these rivers were last active—everything from miles of subway and service tunnels to multi-level basements in massive buildings—contributed to the weakening of the foundation beneath many of the structures.

So it didn't help that Rosenberg, in collusion with some friends in the Corporation of London governing the City, decided to re-channel the underground waters on the sly, without permission, restoring the Walbrook to full capacity years ahead of schedule. Water had since been pooling up in caves that had been formed by the underground river over thousands of years. All it took was a seismic jolt to get the process going, though nobody’s sure what caused that.

England is far away from the world’s major fault lines. But the motion of the tectonic plates elsewhere can still cause regional compression that affects the island. There hadn’t been another earthquake with its epicenter in London since 1750, and the one in 2018 was unrelated to tectonic movement.

However, many earthquakes have affected London throughout its history.

Supposedly one in the fifth century leveled the Temple of Apollo that is rumored to have once sat beneath the present location of Westminster Abbey. Other earthquakes with their epicenters elsewhere have been felt especially in that place many times, often accompanied by strange lights seen near the cathedral.

One such earthquake, which took place on April 6, 1580 during “Easter week,”

originated in the Dover Straights and inspired the following poem by James Yates: Oh sudden motion, and shaking of the earth,

No blustering blastes, the weather calme and milde: Good Lord the sudden rarenesse of the thing

A sudden feare did bring, to man and childe, They verely thought, as well in field as Towne, The earth should sinke, and the houses all fall downe.

Well let vs print this present in our heartes, And call to God, for neuer neede we more:

Crauing of him mercy for our misdeedes,

Our sinfull liues from heart for to deplore, For let vs thinke this token doth portend,

If scourge nere hand, if we do still offend.

Another earthquake, which originated in Canterbury on May 21, 1382, was associated in the popular mind with a synod called by the Archbishop of Canterbury that took in the Blackfriars area of the City of London. The purpose was to condemn the heretic John Wyclyffe for his doctrine on transubstantiation.

Wyclyffe eventually died of a stroke, still amid controversy, but he was later excommunicated in 1415. His bones were eventually exhumed by Pope Martin V

in 1428 to remove them from consecrated ground, then burnt to ashes and dumped into the River Swift.

With the London earthquake and "aftershocks" of 2018, it is thought by some that a chemical reaction took place right underneath the *mithraeum,* where the Rosenberg Plaza alembic system connected with the Walbrook. I believe this is accurate. This was the real reason why the London stretch of the Thames, all of London's underground rivers, and much of the local tap water "turned to blood"

for a time. It wasn't because the red Moon had fallen into the river, although this is obviously connected on the mythopoeic level, one of the many meaningful coincidences that occur along with a supernatural event of this magnitude. Tests confirmed that the red stuff in the water really was largely blood, along with other human biofluids one would expect to find when sewage leaks into the water supply. But they also found many rare chemicals not normally found in traceable amounts.

Officials admitted to the public that Rosenberg restored the Walbrook to obtain the volume of water he needed for the "bizarre" and "illegal" scientific experiments taking place in the basement of Rosenberg Plaza. They claim that he was attempting to create "red mercury," a solid form of the element rumored to exist, and to be used in the creation of nuclear bombs, but which is quite possibly just fictional. However, several "real" (set up by intelligence agents) terrorist plots have been "foiled" that involved attempts by the criminals to purchase what they believed would be red mercury.

There are stories circulating which allege that red mercury can be used to create gold, to locate buried treasure (like a magic peepstone), or to invoke “jinn”

(an Arabic word for demons). One popular urban legend states that Singer sewing machines contain red mercury, which the news media claims is the reason that Rosenberg’s company purchased thousands of those machines over the previous year. But I think that the real “red Mercury,” the real “red stone” of the alchemists, was made in that ritual when the “Superman diamond” became transmuted with the invisible pink light from the heavens. The “emerald stone” of the alchemists was then formed when it was hit with the Hyperuranian light. This green diamond was the real “kryptonite” that created the explosion.

Officials have never identified or even acknowledged the 736 victims of the two-year-long orgy of death that had taken place there. To this day I still don’t know if they were mostly kidnap victims, adopted for the purpose, or given over as sacrifices by their parents (and raised in secret). But it seems to me that the answer could be any of these, or a combination of all three.

Of course, these are just some of the many details that I don’t know. These are only known to the people who were involved in orchestrating the rituals. Of those people, the ones that I can identify have all either disappeared or died. I haven’t seen any of them since that day. Leopold got on board the helicopter with us when it came to our rescue an hour later. But there were paramedics on board, not police. Nobody handcuffed or tied him down. When we got to the St.

Bartholomew’s Hospital, which was overwhelmed with victims of the sinkholes, he disappeared.

But, you’ll be relieved to know, Chesterfield’s cat Lenore was there at the hospital waiting for him. She had been left at the office of Nahid Paris, Parvin’s sister, who ran the IT department from the basement of the hospital. I actually got to meet this woman, because I was sent down to her office to fetch the cat while the two agents engaged in a top-secret debriefing with their boss Miss Equitone.

I had assumed she would be a Muslim, like her brother seemed to be. So I was surprised to find a sign on Nahid’s bulletin board showing a diamond shape, like the Superman logo, with crossed lines on it forming seven facets on the crown (just like the one on the QAPHQA sign). Inside of these facets were six eyes, with the one in the center filled with text from the Bible. It was *Zechariah* 3:9, describing a stone with not six, but *seven* eyes: For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.

FOR BEHOLD, ON THE STONE THAT I HAVE SET BEFORE JOSHUA,
ON A SINGLE STONE WITH SEVEN EYES, I WILL ENGRAVE ITS
INSCRIPTION, DECLARES THE LORD OF HOSTS, AND
I WILL
REMOVE

INIQUITY
THIS LAND
in a single day.
ZECHARIAH
3:9

I assume the cosmic purpose for the poster being there was for me to see it, at the moment which I did, so that I would be reminded yet again how perfectly every little bit of reality has been arranged for us.

Lenore scratched Chesterfield as soon as she saw him, which was probably the worst injury he endured through this entire ordeal, strangely enough. There was no trace of the neck incisions, and no sign of spinal fluid loss, on either Chesterfield or Paris by the time doctors examined them. My ankles seemed as good as new. You could not tell, even on an x-ray, that they had ever been cut, or that the bones had been broken. These are among the many mysteries from this episode which remains unsolved.

There is still one mystery in particular that I often ponder, though: If Rosenberg had managed to escape to the hyperuranian realm, as he had planned, what would have happened to the rest of us? On the one hand, it seemed like we were in danger of existential collapse. At the same time, he seemed to speak of enslaving us, using us all as a source of sustenance for those on the other side, and as collateral for making deals with them.

Would that have been possible if the realm above had crashed down on us, after the mysterious “Pillars of Heaven” fell? You might think we’d all be dead, and our universe snuffed out. In once sense, yes, certainly. But now I realize that everything beneath our feet is a foundation provided by the past, keeping us from sinking into the depths of chaos.

Our ancestors from forgotten aeons provide a valuable service, holding us up on their shoulders, bearing the burden of the present. If the pillars fell, then we would become the new foundation for the future, holding up the new aeon on our backs, like slaves. Then just like the Titans before us, some of us would be fated to serve in the role of Atlas as the pillars of the new heaven. It might even be that most of those who populated the new realm wouldn't even realize that we were doing this for them, because they would think of us as dead, or even worse, as simply mythical. Maybe that has already happened to us, and neither we, nor those exploiting us from above, are aware of it.

A good parallel is the story of Atlantis, which is at once described by myth-tellers as a fallen "city," and also as a representation of an entire fallen aeon. Its name derives from that of its fabled foundational king, a guy named Atlas, said to be a son of Poseidon. Now, he just happens to have the same name as the Titan from the Golden Age who was enslaved by Zeus after the Olympian revolution, thereafter burdened with the obligation to eternally uphold the sky. This is a clue that the fallen aeon symbolized by Atlantis had its own Pillars of Heaven, represented in Plato's tale by the two pillars of the Temple of Poseidon said to be in the city's center.

When Atlantis fell, these pillars collapsed (and who knows if one caused the other, or if there was another cause common to both events). Everything was submerged into the waters of Chaos, becoming mire, which eventually solidified and was used as the foundation for the aeon that came afterwards. In my mind, the story really represents the fall of the Golden Age, when the Titans were imprisoned beneath the Earth, and made to serve as the foundation of the realm above them.

It's quite possible that Rosenberg himself is the only person who knew fully what he was up to. His minions didn't, and the self-appointed geniuses of esoteric statecraft—the Worshipful Society of Butchers—certainly didn't. Perhaps Consivia knew. Maybe she killed herself in front of her congregation during Easter Mass because the truth was too horrible, knowing that all of those murders and rapes were for nothing. I imagine that, after being kidnapped, castrated, and then raped repeatedly throughout her youth, she had to cling desperately to Rosenberg's vision of escape from the Earthly prison, and conquering the realm of the godhead above, in order to live with what she'd been through. It certainly wasn't depression from Gender Identity Disorder, as the press office of her parish claimed, that made her disembowel herself with an ancient ceremonial *harpe* just after raising the Eucharist host up to the light of the three suns shining through the crucifix on the stained glass window behind the altar.

While we were in the helicopter, just before he disappeared again, I asked Leopold if he had known Consivia before, since he had called himself the "Baron of Alphamstone," while she had been living and working there for years. He didn't really answer.

"She had an axe to grind against the Butchers and Barber-Surgeons," he replied. "The Stockholm Syndrome didn't prevent her from feeling resentment towards those who had helped the Comprachicos destroy her body." Then he closed his eyes, shook his head, and fell silent for the rest of the ride.

Comprachicos is a Spanish word, coined by Victor Hugo, for gangs that steal and mutilate children, then use them as freak performers or panhandlers, emphasizing their (deliberately-created) disabilities to elicit donations. I presume Leopold used this term to refer to those who had arranged for the boy to be kidnapped from Piccadilly Circus and castrated in 1956, turning him into the sad, frightened girl we saw in the Easter dress in the second half of *Easter Sunday April Fool*—the poor waif who grew up to be the Bishop of London.

I had a revelation regarding Consivia when I entered Nahid's office at the hospital. She was wearing large red headphones when I came in, which she took off immediately. I heard the song "Dear Prudence" bleeding faintly out of the headphones as they sat on her desk. I remembered that one of the interpretations of the name of the goddess Metis was "prudence" (along with "cunning" and "wisdom.")

This made me think again about my idea that Metis, Rhea and Gaia were all the same figure: a goddess who kept helping her son plot against their father, only to marry the son afterwards and start the process over again in the next generation. Then I thought about how Metis was prophesied to produce an heir that would overthrow Zeus. But the only child they are known to have made together was Athena, while the figure who seems to have actually taken over the role as king of the gods was Jesus, as I mentioned before. The ancient writings claiming that “Apollo” was his first-born son and therefore successor are hinting that the Greeks knew this was coming. The Romans, with their numerous solar cults popular at the decline of the empire, were the ones to usher it in, as I stated previously.

When I got the chance, I researched the word “Opiconsivia.” A specific entry had been made for this term in Wikipedia sometime the previous year. It had not been there a few months earlier, when I was trying to help the man I hired to translate *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum* figure out the meaning of the word *consivia*, which he did not at first know what to make of.

But now there was an entry for this word, where it was said to be the name of a pair of festivals for the goddess Ops (the Roman name for Rhea, the wife of Saturn), held on August 25 and also on December 19, two days after the commencement of Saturnalia. The first Opiconsivia took place right after the August 21 planting festival for Saturn, called “Consualia,” which was named after the god’s alternate title of “Consus.” I noted mentally that August 21 had been the date of the solar eclipse the previous year, and wondered what role that had played in the symbolism of Rosenberg’s Mithras cult.

They probably had a very special orgy in the mithraeum that day, I thought.

The name “Ops” means “plenty” and *consivia*, as I stated before, means “to sow.” Mythology experts claim that she was first associated with planting and harvesting. This connected her to the earth in the minds of the ancients, and everything that was thought to be under it. This is how she became a symbol of the underworld and mineral wealth also, they say, just like Saturn, whose name is connected to *satur* ("full, rich") and *saturitas* ("abundance, satiety"). Thus, Saturn and Ops have a lot in common with the king and queen of Hell, Pluto (the Roman Hades) and Proserpina (the Roman Persephone). Interestingly, a minor character in the Roman Catholic canon is St. Satur, who I think is quite possibly an iconotropic cover for Saturn, and whose feast day is on March 26.

After learning about Opiconsivia, I understood that I was right about the goddess who had given birth to each new king of the gods in each aeon, and protected him from the wrath of his father.

Is he always the 'sun god,' I wondered, *or is that just the language we use for the concept now, because the Sun is the king of the gods now?*

I still don't know the answer. But meditating upon the meaning of the lyrics to "Dear Prudence" once again, I realized that it's a song about Metis emerging from the body of Zeus for the first time in at least an aeon, possibly two, at the dawning of a new one. It's about the old world order being subsumed by the birth of the next. I believe that's what I witnessed taking place, both in the rituals at Bucklersbury, and in the sky's firmament.

I also thought again about the words in the Sator Square. "Sator," as I stated before, is Saturn, "the sewer," "the begetter," "the father." "Arepo," it occurs to me now, might well stand for "Harpo," another name for Eros, a.k.a.

Cupid, the child of Aphrodite. "Tenet, we know, means "to hold." "Rotas," like I said, means "wheels," and has always been combined with "Opera" ("work") when interpreting the formula. So it is commonly rendered "Saturn and Arepo hold and work the wheels," although my "Eros" interpretation for "Arepo" could render it "the Sewer of Love works the wheels," or some combination of the various conjugations of those words.

But "opera" could also refer specifically to Saturn's partner, Ops, "the planter," and some kind of "work" that she did with him involving these wheels." I think there may be some connection with what William Blake referred to as the

"Starry Wheels, Which revolve heavily in the mighty Void above the Furnaces" in his poem *Jerusalem*. This poem was obviously very important to Rosenberg when composing the rituals, for reasons that I will explain shortly. It was quoted repeatedly at the end of the New Court ritual, and I recall being inspired by the voice of Chronos in my head to mention "Starry Wheels" in regards to the carriage ride in the New Court ceremonies. I figure the "wheels" are the invisible controls that move the celestial bodies above us.

I know that not everyone in the world had the same experience of the signs in the heavens that Easter weekend. In fact, the only witnesses to these events appear to be the people who were in the square mile of the City of London at the time. There really weren't very many people in the business district on a holiday weekend. Even among those who *were* there, most of those who have survived claim not to have seen the events in the sky. This was because, for some reason, almost all of them spent an inordinate amount of time sleeping that weekend.

They only woke up when the earthquakes and the sinkhole formation jolted them.

The few who were awake and watching the skies in the City of London during this time saw the Moon grow large on Friday night at sunset. If they kept watching, they then saw the six colored balls of light gather around the Moon from various directions, just as I saw out the window of the Sky Box at New Court.

Shortly after this, witnesses experienced what seemed like a "shockwave" that went through the air, and "sonic boom" heard at the same time. But no recordings or measurements taken corroborate this.

These people generally report that at first the light balls looked like planets usually do when you catch a rare glimpse of one making itself visible to light-polluted London. But because of the way in which they appeared from out of nowhere, and because of their subsequent inexplicable behavior, they can only be categorized as UFOs. Besides, there was no conjunction of planets scheduled on any ephemeris that night.

Many things were witnessed next that I didn’t get to see myself because I was inside the *mithraeum* at the time. Around 8 pm, about a half-hour after sunset, people saw the Moon emit a beam of blueish-white light directly into the Thames for a few seconds. Those who were on the waterfront on the north side of the river from Temple to the Tower of London, as well as those driving along the Blackfriars and London bridges, saw the beam drop down into the water between the Millennium and Southwark bridges.

The beam was wider at its source and got narrower towards the bottom.

Some people say it almost looked like the Moon was being projected in the sky from a beam of light on Earth. This of course gave fodder to people who believe that everything in the sky is a holographic projection. They have videos on YouTube claiming that everything that was seen in the sky from London over the weekend was a “glitch in the Matrix.”

This is fitting, for after his death, it was revealed that Rosenberg was the leader of secret syndicate of “tech billionaires” who had been the subject of news stories two years earlier, without being named at the time. The articles, published simultaneously by several news outlets, claimed the syndicate’s members were convinced that our reality was just a computer simulation run from somewhere else. They were supposedly funding research projects to “find a way out of the Matrix.” *The Atlantic’s* headline at least properly stated that the businessmen’s goal was to “Destroy the Universe.” But they didn’t mention that the methods would involve alchemy, rape, murder, and black magic, or that only a few members of Earth’s population were slated to make it out safely to the other side.

At about 8:30, witnesses report that one of the spheres next to the Moon grew larger. It was the pinkish-white one, which, they say, initially looked like the Evening Star, but wasn't in Venus' proper location. People then describe a glowing stream of something pouring out of it like water into that same spot in the Thames, appearing pink like moonlight. They also saw a small red dot form in the center of the Moon at about 9 o'clock.

The next sphere to enlarge and pour forth its essence into the river, at about 9:15, was the orange-red star, which took on a fiery appearance as it grew.

It shot forth what looked like a flame into the Thames. Approximately forty-five minutes after that, the pink orb plunged from the sky all of the sudden, landing at the same spot in the river, leaving ripples in its wake. Following that, the orange-red fireball also fell from the sky, smoking as it came down. Because this took place shortly after the war drama created by the torpedoing of the Russian submarine in the Straight of Dover—for which we still have no explanation—some observers thought it was a missile attack. Others thought it was a meteor. Luckily, tensions did not escalate further, and the incident was smoothed over in the coming days, as you know.

Next, around 11:00, about the time that our hastily-arranged ceremony on the rooftop terrace of New Court began, people saw the whole arrangement of Moon and stars eclipsed by dark clouds, just as we experienced. Then they saw the purple orb peaking through, now enormous in the sky and hovering directly above the City. It emitted a lightning bolt, which, people said, must have hit one of the office buildings.

A few minutes later, those present report, the purple orb let down a yellow rope of some sort, which hung for a moment between the orb and the River Thames, before detaching and dropping down into the same spot in the water that the other orbs and their emissions had dropped into.

At about 11:15, the Moon and one of the strange lights next to it reappeared from the clouds. The greatest detail about this part comes from a homeless man named "Slow Henry," interviewed in a popular YouTube video, who stood on Blackfriars Bridge for two days watching the show. Next, he says, one of lights seemed to grow to the exact same size as the Moon in seconds. It looked just like the Sun, except that it did not light up the Earth or the sky at all.

Slow Henry reports that the sun-like object pulsated for a while, and then merged halfway with the Moon for a few minutes. He specified that the Moon still had one large red dot in the middle of its face before this merger. According to Henry, the yellow orb actually changed the color of the portion of the Moon that it merged with during the union, including that of the red dot. Afterwards, when they separated, the Moon’s original red dot had grown even larger, and a new, smaller one just like it had begun to form right beside it.

Shortly after that, the purple orb also merged with the Moon, just briefly.

Afterwards, the larger red splotch in the middle had gotten bigger still. Then the purple orb drooped beneath the others, finally plummeting down moments later into the same area of the Thames as the others. This is estimated to have occurred at 11:30. According to other witnesses who were closer to the area of impact, the purple orb appeared much larger in size then the previous light balls, and made a more noticeable splash when it touched down.

About five minutes later, say observers, an indigo-colored laser beam came down from out of nowhere in the sky (or at least from no visible source). It shot down into the Thames, and a black sphere was seen descending upon it, becoming smaller along the way. Then at approximately 11:45, the Moon was half-eclipsed, very briefly. Afterwards, the largest red circle inside was noted to be even larger, and it grew bigger as people watched.

The Moon changed even more over the next quarter of an hour, witnesses say. It became dark red all over, fading to black at the edges, and the red spots that were there before now became distinguished by their bright glow. A third red glowing spot, smaller than the others, formed within it also. At about midnight, all of the dark clouds that had enveloped the City of London alone suddenly dissipated.

Next, a flying carriage with four horses was seen by some crossing the sky, which one might associate with Santa Claus had it been Christmas. But on this occasion, people who saw it thought only of the Four Horsemen of St. John’s *Revelation*. Of course, each horse in that story is supposed to be ridden by an angel, and not tied with a team to a small scythed chariot. However, classical education has been absent from British schools for decades. Nobody knows Greek or Roman myths anymore. In fact, I’m surprised Britons even recognize anything from the Bible.

Only Slow Henry saw both the flying chariot and the movements of the Moon and sun-like object that mirrored it. Only he saw the yellow orb actually slip behind the Moon and become covered by it, invisible. Only he sat up and watched all night as it remained motionless in the sky, until dawn the next morning. Then, he says, the sun-like object came back and replaced it, covering the Moon with itself, while the thing Henry took to be the “real Sun” rose in the East as expected.

I told you that a sleepy comatose state came over the City’s population from late Friday night until dawn Easter morning. This episode is now referred to by your prostitute news media with the cutesy nickname “the London Fog” to keep you from taking it seriously. Because of the Fog, there are only a handful of witnesses who observed the various states of the Moon over the weekend.

There are quite a few people who say they saw the strange lights next to the Moon at sunset on Friday night. But then, inexplicably, many of the people who had been watching this spectacular display in the sky decided to *go to bed* quite early. Those who had fallen into the trance of “the Fog” then dragged themselves groggily through the next day and night, not recalling the events of Friday until those of Sunday morning shook them out of their stupor.

Later, these people were kicking themselves for not looking up even once on Saturday. Those who were affected by the Fog can’t even remember what they spent their time doing that day. It was only from the vigilant few who not only remained watchful at the time, but had the courage to testify in public afterwards, that some of the sleepers have learned about what they missed.

According to Slow Henry, the sun-like object remained at the sky’s meridian, motionless, all day, while the “real Sun” rose and set. Then at nightfall, the bloody red Moon with the three bright red spots came back, covering the sun-like object again. It just came over it, “like a coin being turned over,” he said. The Moon was suddenly there at the top of the sky, and remained motionless in place throughout the night. Then early on Sunday morning, while it was still dark, the Moon started turning bright violet throughout.

He didn’t have proof, like I had seen, that it was acting as a filter for something inside that was putting out strong UV light. But he did instinctively compare the way it looked, the light that came from it, and the way it made things appear—so that “the whole City looked like a discotheque”—to the characteristics of a blacklight. Assholes on YouTube, trolling the video where Henry is interviewed, keep saying that the Moon doesn’t put out its own light.

They don’t know what the Moon even is. Nobody does.

Attempts to come up with “scientific” explanations for the things that people saw that night are extremely insulting. Several commentators have mentioned that none less than Sir William Herschel himself, discoverer of the planet Uranus, witnessed three glowing red spots on the Moon on April 19, 1787.

Around the same time, something described as an “aurora borealis” (in other words, a green light in the sky) was observed simultaneously by the people of Padua, Italy, quite far from where such phenomena are usually observed, in the Arctic Circle. Shortly afterwards, there was a huge spike in the number of sunspots recorded.

It seems to me that Herschel witnessed something similar to what we in the City of London saw on Easter weekend 2018. Nonetheless, the same lame explanation of lunar “outgassing” has been given for both events by the incredulous scientific community. As usual, they have no respect for the intelligence of the observer when it comes to things they cannot explain.

Most unexplainable of all from the morning of Easter 2018 was the hole that opened up in the sky later that morning, just before dawn. As Slow Henry describes it, sun-like object at the zenith of the firmament disappeared through a circular window that opened up behind it, revealing an indigo field studded with stars—a bizarre sight in full daylight. Then the entire window became a solid bright green color, which shined down on everything below. At that exact moment, the first earthquake took place.

The hole stayed open, and the green light continued to shine down, for another twenty minutes, illuminating things that witnesses wish they had never seen. It stayed open even as the Sun began to rise in the East, blurring out the ghastly visions somewhat. Then the window turned indigo and star-studded once again, and a few minutes later, a black sphere fell out of it, into the Thames.

This is according to both Slow Henry, and also "Phicus," a YouTube user who filmed much of Sunday morning's events from the viewing platform at an office building known as "the Shard." The video confirms a lot of what both men described, although much of it is also open to interpretation. Slow Henry didn't see the rest because he was on his knees praying. And when he got up again, after he was all over, he couldn't see anything anymore. The Hyperuranian light had blinded him.

Unlike me in Rosenberg's basement, Slow Henry didn't have a magical diamond keystone plugging up the hole in the sky, protecting him from the Hyperuranian rays whilst refracting the light and allowing him to see by them. So the horrible sights they showed him were the last things he ever got to see. But this is, in fact, what the Masonic keystone represents. It is a stone that does just this: acting simultaneously as a deck prism and as a protective light filter. It is because it provides protection that it was represented as a "buckler" or a shield in Rothschild heraldry.

This is why it’s so often represented on Masonic tracing boards in the arch of the sky, between the Sun and the Moon, forming a third, and higher, source of light. It’s a window that plugs up the hole, allowing the transcosmic God to see you, and perhaps for you to see him as well. This is why the Masons also represent the same concept with an eye in a triangle, sun-like rays often streaming out of it, like a prism refracting light. Also used interchangeably with these symbols, or in combination with them, is the letter G, the seventh letter of the alphabet—which I believe stands for the Gamma ray, as I mentioned before.

These Masonic images amply demonstrate that my interpretation is correct.

UNION·ROYAL·ARCH·LODGE·No·13·
G
LIMERICK

HOLINESS TO THE LORD
G
J
Z
H

These are to Certify

E
S
W
S
B
W
J. Bowring.
1819.

SUMMER SOLSTICE
LEO
STRENGTH
GEMINI
THE ROYAL ARCH OF HEAVEN
ZODIAC
ZODIAC
VIRGO
TAURUS
LIBRA
WISDOM
BEAUTY
ARIES
10°
AUTUMNAL EQUINOX
VERNAL EQUINOX

Lux lucet in tenebris
Tene
bræ eam
non com:
prehende:
runt

The two aftershocks that followed the first earthquake, as Phicus documented, each coincided with the events in the sky that took place next. The first, was accompanied by another “shockwave” and “sonic boom,” similar to that of Friday night at sundown, but louder. This happened right after two naked children riding a flying white horse through the air.

The second aftershock occurred at the same time as the solar polarity flip and the formation of the sinkhole. As the Phicus video shows, this coincided with the re-emergence of the sun-like object from the portal, followed by an egg-white globe of equal size that came out right behind it. This is what formed the triangle of circles—yellow, white and star-flecked indigo—that I saw in the sky when the ceiling collapsed, just before I blacked out.

As I witnessed myself, the all three circles then turned yellow for a few moments. Then they sort of “rolled together” into one yellow orb, which immediately started “bleeding” into the Thames. A few seconds later, the yellow orb itself fell straight down into the river, revealing the indigo star-flecked circle just behind it. Scariest of all was what happened right afterwards, when that indigo circle, which had previously seemed to be an open window—a portal—

then rolled up to the top like an eyelid, revealing a gigantic eye behind it. This eye then eerily blinked twice before it closed for good an instant later.

I think that the yellow orb bled and descended when the body of Baron Carrickfergus finally died. As I shall explain shortly, I have surmised that his body was devoured by the trinacria as they both floated away down the Thames a few minutes after the sinkhole formed. But by then, the trinacria had already consumed another creature and taken on another transformation, which I will soon describe.

It is my belief that the trinacria was possessed by the spirit of Chronos/Saturn. Plutarch wrote that the former king of the Golden Age was buried somewhere beneath the British Isles, in a death-like sleep in a tomb that is also his prison. He was kept alive by birds, who brought his ambrosia to eat as he slept, and with his dreams he communicated to his followers on the surface of the Earth. I think Rosenberg was one such follower, and that those ravens in the Tower of London were the ones feeding Chronos, somehow. When Rosenberg

had them killed, it released his spirit into the body of a waiting golem that Rosenberg had prepared.

Plutarch wrote that the tomb of Chronos is guarded by someone named

“Briareus.” This, we know from other sources, is the name of one of the Titans selected to serve as a guard all the others imprisoned in Tartarus. So Plutarch was saying that somewhere beneath the British Isles is the location of Hell, which is also the womb of the Earth goddess that Chronos had to chop his way out of so that he and his siblings could be born.

I recently discovered, while writing down these memories, that Man Ray--

the surrealist artist whose cover illustration for Marquis de Sade’s *120 Days of Sodom* was reproduced for Rosenberg’s invocation of Venus in the mithraeum—

was once commissioned to make a poster for the London Underground (the subway system) in which he made the system’s logo appear to resemble the planet Saturn.

I wonder if he was aware of the myth of Chronos being buried underneath Britain, or if one of the people in charge of hiring him suggested it. In my mind, the symbolism of both Man Ray pieces can be connected. The *120 Days* illustration was an inverted Christian cross superimposed over the buttocks of a young man. Saturn is specifically associated with sodomy, as the root words connected to his name attest.

Satu means “sewing,” referring to planting seeds in the earth, just as Saturn’s title *sator* means *sower*. His epithet S *terculius* comes from *stercus*, meaning "dung." The English word "sod," referring to earth covered with grass, may come from this connection in Latin between feces and agricultural fertilizer.

It's also probably no coincidence that in Britain the word "sod" is a slang term for

"sodomite," or that the inhabitants of Sodom were known to be haughty because of their vast mineral wealth, which the subterranean Saturn (imprisoned in Tartarus) was thought to be the ruler of. Vulgar words for feces are often used colloquially to refer to gold, money or treasure in cultures around the world, probably because of the traditional connection between these things and the underworld. The Etruscans called Saturn *Satre*, and said that he "hurls his lightning from his abode deep in the earth."

It seems pretty clear to me that the entrance to the infernal prison of Chronos was right there at Bucklersbury. But I don't think Chronos is there anymore. I think he safely floated away down the Thames, contained in the diamond inside of the trinacria.

The creature was actually spotted by witnesses who were standing on the waterfront next to the Traitor's Gate of the Tower of London. They were there to participate in a recreation of a historic April Fool's joke: "the Washing of the Lions." In centuries past, the joke was simply to invite people to attend this oddly-titled "annual event" at the Tower of London. The victim would then arrive at the Tower and find nothing going on.

So when something called "the Washing of the Lions" was announced in the "Festivals & Events" section of the *Sunday Telegraph* on Palm Sunday, slated to take place at dawn on Easter morning at the Tower of London, everyone knew it was going to be a joke. Most of those who were standing there that day were aware of the history of the prank and were waiting to see how it would be improved upon from previous performances.

Each one of them, when interviewed individually, reported being confused about the location of the Sun that morning while traveling to the event, but nobody spent much time analyzing it. Therefore, when these people felt the earthquake, and finally looked up to see the amazing sights in the sky, they at first tried to convince each other that it was somehow part of the show.

“I thought they were using holographic technology and sound effects,” said one person to reporters. “You never think there’s going to be an earthquake in London.”

Therefore, when guards from the Tower, dressed in full regalia, came out with a lion on a leash, everyone present felt even more certain that they were merely watching an elaborate April Fool’s hoax. I am surprised that the event was still scheduled to proceed, considering what had already happened to the ravens of the Tower. But that had already been completely covered up, as it continues to be, by the government.

Then the animal did something that could only, under these precise circumstances, be taken by the audience as part of the show. It hissed, growled,

and lurched out of its handler’s grasp. Then it dove head-first into the water like it was completely mad.

But it wasn’t. It was defending itself against something that it felt threatened by. Those watching said they saw the lion attack a creature with

“three human legs and a demonic glowing red face” that was floating in the water. As soon as the lion and the monster made contact with each other, the front end of the lion began to “dissolve into” the body of the hellish beast, until it was completely gone. Then, observers say, they noticed that the creature had taken on some of the features of the lion’s face, including its large teeth, as well as its mane.

Next, floating down the river from behind the creature came another horrific site: a naked white male, seemingly deceased. As soon as the monster saw it, he lurched forward and devoured it. It was then that the bleeding sun fell into the river, right before the eyes of the people watching the monster’s attack.

After it had finished devouring the guts, the monster snarled at the people watching him from the shore, and swam away.

Officials admit that this was the body of Baron Carrickfergus, though they deny he was attacked by anything other than a lion. However, they don’t even attempt to explain why a lion would jump into a river to attack a person who was reportedly either already dead, or almost dead.

I know that the trinacria made it all the way out to the Thames Estuary, where the river empties out into the North Sea. There, witnesses spotted a “ruby-colored crystal” rise out of water and into the sky, where it took the form of a red star with seven rays. From the tips of these rays then appeared seven stars of different colors. All of these objects seemed to come from the center of the ruby mother star except for one, which shined with a light that appeared to be constantly changing color. This one seemed to have come from the south, as if attracted to the end of one of the rays of light by an unseen force.

Once assembled, the entire arrangement of lights began spinning counterclockwise to the cheers of the crowds assembled on the shore. Then, all of the other stars lowered themselves beneath the one in the center. After that, the red star and its entourage shot off further out to sea, then took a turn southwest.

They floated past the White Cliffs of Dover, the last place they were seen.

It wasn’t until after this adventure was over that I learned about William Blake’s mystical “prophetic” poetry on the topic of London. To him, writing during the Industrial Revolution, London was a sort of microcosm of the universe, and analogous, or even truly identical to “Jerusalem,” which he likewise interpreted as a transcendental, non-local place. At the same time, it still *was* his own contemporary London, possessing all the same monuments and street names. His own pet name for this primordial London-Jerusalem city was "Golgonooza," a word unique to his vocabulary.

William Blake saw this city as the first created space, out from which creation radiated as it came into being at the beginning of time. This would make it analogous to the "Even Ha-Shitiyah," the "foundation stone" of creation in in the real, terrestrial Jerusalem that I mentioned earlier. This object is located in the Dome of the Rock, which the Knights Templar maintained as their official headquarters during their day. As I said, this stone was replicated for the altar of the St. Stephen Walbrook church, which Rosenberg "borrowed" for use in his *mithraeum* during his sick rituals.

Even Ha-Shitiyah

If a "foundation stone" was the point of origin for everything, then it follows that all the dimensions of space should be measured from there. Thus it should be used in the same manner as the Roman *millarium* stones, which is what many think was the purpose of the London Stone. This would explain why Queen John Dee thought the artifact was magical, and moved his residence to Cannon Street to be near it.

In William Blake's poems, London/Jerusalem/Golgonooza was not just a city, but also a living being. It was at once the female sex partner and the "emanation" of a more all-encompassing being called "Albion," an ancient name applied to the British Isles. Blake's Albion has everything in common with Chronos, as even Wikipedia acknowledges.

Perhaps the diamond we found within it is the actual "foundation stone."

Maybe it contained the damned and imprisoned soul of Albion/Chronos/Saturn. If so, I think he has been set free now, the consequences of which I cannot predict.

It may be that the burden of holding up the worlds has now fallen on the shoulders of the ambitious Mr. Rosenberg. In that sense we can say that he achieved a bit of the universal importance he strove for.

Since the spectacular events of Easter morning, the people in the City of London have only seen one sun in the sky, and one moon at night, just like everyone else in the world. The stars have returned to normal as well—or at least, that's how people perceive it.

I tend to think that a new normal has been established, and we simply don't remember that things used to be different. We are under the order of a new Sun, but we don't realize it. We think it has always been this way.

It's no shock to me that almost no one has suggested the signs in the heavens seen in the City foretold the birth of a messiah. The rumor mill only manufactures paranoia and hate. Nobody ever tells you that anything good will happen, unless they're trying to sell you something.

According to the Royal Observatory in Greenwich, the only thing unusual that happened in space that day was an inordinate amount of sunspot activity which hadn't been predicted. They admit that the Sun's polarity flipped just before the earthquake and the sinkhole occurred. A few experts have been allowed to hint that there could be a connection between the two events, but always with the caveat that it was far too complex for anyone to ever understand and therefore not worth the effort. They also admit that the tides on the Thames Friday and Saturday night were "a bit wobbly," but can't say why.

The connection between the solar anomalies and the widespread sporadic interruption of electronic communications throughout the weekend has not been denied. Nor is it denied that this contributed to slowing the spread of information regarding the sudden shift that was occurring on the precious metal markets.

As you all know, when France pulled out of the Eurozone it caused a run on gold, starting late Friday night. That night at the party, Marcia Martina and her son Philip were quite satisfied with themselves. Of course, the Rothschilds had been among the world’s largest gold-holders for centuries, despite a misleading headline published in *The Telegraph* in 2004: “Rothschild to pull out of gold market after 200 years.” More recently, they had been calling in huge quantities, and tightening their purses.

In the previous two months, the price of gold had gone up considerably because of this hoarding. It was all part of tightening the screws on the central banks, particularly in the West, as Ms. Martina had explained to us. This was payback, punishment, and reigning-in after decades of poor fiscal governance.

Because of this, it had become increasingly difficult for governments to sell bonds. It was also difficult to obtain gold as a back-up reserve. The states of the Western world were inarguably at the mercy of the moneylenders, and this one family in particular. This was because they controlled such a large share of the market, and they had decided to collude to bring about this crisis.

The night of the crash, we all assumed that a major shift in wealth had happened to dramatically concentrate it even more amongst the so-called “one percent.” Rosenberg’s own newspaper ran with the headline “Gold sky high, silver to the Moon.” But nobody knew that Rosenberg’s people had just suddenly dumped trillions of dollars worth of gold and silver on the market. As you know, gold went from being the 72nd most common element to the 65th, taking the place formerly held by silver. The simultaneous silver dump bumped that metal down to 50 on the list.

It wasn’t until Monday morning EST, however, that people took full account of this in the financial news media. The market was already presented with the difficulty that both the place where the gold prices were fixed each day—the London Bullion Market—and the place where the pound was issued—the Bank of England—had both fallen into the sinkhole. Aggravating the delay of the reaction was the fact that this specialty of journalism had already been crippled by the destruction of the main offices of both Rosenberg network and the Financial Times. Then there was the issue of the Niptron Terminal hacks, involving the so called “CAPUT 58 virus,” which caused every single one of the machines to freeze up on the traders at 10:30 AM GMT.

Simply put, a pop-up window opened on their screens demanding the solution to a riddle involving computer-generated three-dimensional image of a diamond shape with 58 facets (by inference, a “head” with 58 “faces”) encoded with an 8-character set of symbols referred to by the virus program as “the OPERANTS” (the seven planetary sigils, plus John Dee’s Monad symbol). Infected terminals were also presented with what purported to be a key: a five-by-five Latin square image cipher. By the time security experts figured out a way around the challenge, it was too late to save anybody’s bets.

It was only after reading about the details of the virus that I figured out the meaning of the term “PROTEANS” that had been used on the bottle with the *Liquor Amnii* that saved my feet (an anagrams of OPERANTS). It is a reference to the Ogdoad of eight archons. These are the seven planets, plus a transcended twin of Mercury, who is also the goddess Sophia-Achamoth—Metis or Mete, the Great Mother, “Dear Prudence.”

They are represented by the eight characters used in the Sator Square, with three different magnitudes of use, representing three different levels of divine power. T, R, E, O, and A are used four times each, representing the five wandering planets. P and S are only used two times each. They represent the higher powers of the Sun and Moon. N is the letter in the center of the square, and it is only used once. It represents a god-power transcending the others, but one which is mutable and open to interpretation, like Proteus of Greek mythology, and like quicksilver, corresponding to the Philosopher’s Mercury, the Universal Solvent. By dissolving, separating, and re-coagulating the essences of the gods themselves, any imaginable change is possible, including chemical changes otherwise not allowed.

When it was discovered that the total global quantity of gold had suddenly increased drastically over the weekend, there were many theories introduced by the experts on the news. First, of course, was to suspect counterfeiting, and so all the vaults forced to assay their gold holdings, to the embarrassment of all the companies involved. As we all saw, none of them had the physical reserves they had claimed prior to the dump. All of them had been committing fraud, as had all of the world's governments, with the full knowledge and collusion of all of the world's banks. This, analysts say, is what really destroyed Barclays Bank when its stock price evaporated on April 2.

We all remember Rosenberg's crazy rant that Black Friday evening, during an interview on his own TV network, Skyped live from his office right there at Rosenberg Plaza. I didn't get to see it at the time, as I was walking with Chesterfield to New Court to meet Rosenberg and his friends for dinner. But of course I saw the highlights, endlessly replayed on the news for weeks.

There, to an interviewer who was utterly confused, he declared that the

"the 'so-called' noble metals of the old plutocracy" would soon be "dethroned like the noble families of old Europe had been dethroned by money." He then announced his vision for a new system of wealth and power distribution based on the value of the human body: its parts, the fluids it produces, and its "perceived value" (to which he added finger quotes) as an "object of affection."

It was so bizarre, commentators on his own network said that they actually thought he was drunk. In a way, they were right. He was drunk on the blood and suffering of innocents.

The conspiracy crowd claimed the sinkholes were the result of a "false flag attack," a Jewish plot to consolidate their wealth. Furthermore, they said, the earthquakes, sinkhole, solar activity, and orbs in the sky were all caused by weather modification technology, they purported distracting investors from the coming changes in the gold and silver markets. Why? Because when the price of gold, the value of paper, and credibility of credit collapsed simultaneously overnight, the jig was up. Time to cover your tracks and run away to your private islands, right?

But the source of this crowd’s real complaint had also been eliminated. The “anti-Zionist” movement against “Jewish banksters” lost its *raison d'être*. Because as it turns out, nobody really cares about Israel one way or the other, except for a few freaks, and most cannot tell a Jew apart from a gentile unless they are told what’s what. The thing that really bothered these people the most was the vast amount of money, gold, and property—a large portion of the Earth’s entire treasure—locked up in the hands of one family, who had then successfully managed to deflect attention away from themselves.

Many historians had falsely claimed that the Rothschilds had waned in wealth and influence, but the exact opposite is true. Those who knew this, or felt that they knew it, had been frothing at the mouth for decades, trying to “wake up the sheeple” to the truth. Now, although this truth had been covered up even more completely with the collapse of New Court into the Bucklersbury sinkhole, the problem was gone as well.

The Rothschild fortune has essentially been obliterated. The membership of their incestuous clan has been decimated, in the classical sense of the word (one out of ten gone, not nine, as the common modern misnomer implies). Moreover, it was the older, more corrupt ten percent that was killed, as many of the tribe elders were asleep in the New Court building at the time of the collapse, having gathered there Friday night for a week-long Passover celebration.

But that very night, they lost the value of all their money, though at the time they thought they had just made a killing. The properties they owned lost value as well, and, of course, their most important piece of real estate: their London headquarters, which fell down into its proper final resting place in the depths of Hell.

They even lost their pet project, the Bank of England. For it’s not just the building that has disappeared, but the whole institution as well. At the present writing, it looks like it will soon be shut down in favor of the new solutions currently being proposed in the House of Commons. It’s a humiliating defeat for a once all-powerful dynasty. Those Rothschilds who are left will probably change their names again within a generation, and be entirely forgotten by their descendants.

On a related note, it is interesting to consider that that the Superman character is broadly considered by media experts to be a representation of Jewish identity. As I learned in college from a Jewish film history professor who lived in New York City, the Superman character was literally created to represent Jewish immigrants from Europe who were hiding in plain sight in the entertainment industry by using Westernized names, just like Superman hides behind the persona of Clark Kent. Now here’s another amazing coincidence to keep in mind: It is known that the character of Lois Lane, Clark Kent’s girlfriend, is based on a girl that Superman’s creator, Jerry Siegel, had a crush on in high school in Cleveland.

Her name was Lois Rothschild.

None of the articles written on this subject say she’s related to the banking family. But even if this is just a coincidence, I sense that it points to something significant, as coincidences often do.

As for the future of the “Hyperuranium,” the new element that was discovered at the bottom of the sinkhole (along with considerable amounts of platinum), it could be the foundation stone of a new Golden Age. I think it was probably created naturally somehow when the sinkhole formed, transmuted from the gold, silver, and other precious metals and gems that were present in the underground vaults of the Bank of England. But I fear that it will be monopolized and controlled like gold has been. I also think it’s very likely that new war technologies will result from the research and development with it that is to come. In other words, I think it will only serve to further enslave us.

The presence of a lump of it in my pocket, along with a note from Leopold, discovered when I got to the hospital, just after he disappeared, is another miracle that I cannot explain. The note came with a phone number, and instructed me to contact Harut Al-Hazrat, a broker, who, it said, could help me sell the piece of metal. I don’t know if it was a blessing or a curse.

On the one hand, the sale did bring a tidy sum, which has eliminated my financial problems for the time being. On the other hand, just before I gave it over to the broker, I did an experiment with it in which I rubbed it across the skin between my eyes. Ever since, my clairvoyant powers have been dramatically increased, which is sometimes a problem now. Some things you just don’t want to see.

It is mind-bending to try to grasp the reflexive, sympathetic relationships that must exist between the orders of the universe which make it possible for an action performed on the body of a “divine” child—anal penetration—to rip holes in both the Earth and the sky. But then again, what made it possible for such a divine child to be bred using the perverse means that I have described? Is the human conscience ready to accept the realities that this is based on?

You now know the truth about what happened to change the head of state in the UK, who is said to have died in Westminster at the exact moment that the sinkhole formed in the City. You also now know what happened to the other two waiting in line. They didn’t just die in a sinkhole while visiting a friend during an experiment gone awry, as your media told you. I have given you the real reason why the British people now have a screwball for a Regent and a toddler waiting for the throne.

But you should take it as a positive sign that the screwball in question was not present at the ceremony that took the lives of the other three. There must be a reason why he wasn’t invited. I am not saying you should trust him. I am only saying it’s a possible sign of hope for the future. I took quite seriously the rumor I read on 4Chan about him, stating that he personally discovered a white horse grazing on the lawn of Kensington Palace, along with two naked children playing nearby in the grass. Word on the street is that they have been secretly adopted into the royal household.

It is a relief that certain people lost power, and were denied their ambitions to greater power, that weekend. But the ruling class still has the same perverse proclivities as always. They are still using the same tactics of violence and blackmail to maintain that power. You see that the exposure of the Lord Mayor’s child abuse, caught on video, led to no further investigation of organized pedophilia among the elite. You see that the 729 murdered children of the year-long rite (not counting Philippine, I presume) were never identified, and nobody was ever arrested for that.

However, I think it’s possible that forces were unleashed during this ritual, both for good and for evil, which will play an important role in events to come, possibly deciding whether or not this state of affairs shall continue. We shall see what comes of it. For a sign of prognosis, I will continue to watch the skies and the headlines, and wait.

HERE ENDS THE WORK OF THE SUN. LONG LIVE *SOL NOVUS*.

FIAT JUSTITIA RUAT COELUM

Before the consummation of the age, the whole place will shake with great thundering. … Then the sun will become dark, and the moon will cause its light to cease.

The stars of the sky will cancel their circuits. And a great clap of thunder will come out of a great force that is above all the forces of chaos, where the firmament of the woman is situated. … Then she will pursue the gods of chaos, whom she created along with the prime parent. She will cast them down into the abyss. They will be obliterated because of their wickedness. For they will come to be like volcanoes and consume one another until they perish at the hand of the prime parent. When he has destroyed them, he will turn against himself and destroy himself until he ceases to exist. And their heavens will fall one upon the next and their forces will be consumed by fire. Their eternal realms, too, will be overturned. And his heaven will fall and break in two…

fall into the abyss, and the abyss will be overturned.

— *On the Origin of the World*

Translated by Hans-Gebhard Bethge and Bentley Layton

Document Outline

- Autodidact de Occultis
- Chapter 2: Opportunity Knocks
- Chapter 3: Plane Problems
- Chapter 4: Answers Lacking
- Chapter 5: Terribilis est Locus Iste
- Chapter 6: Eros and Anteros
- Chapter 7: Regnum Defende
- Chapter 8: Non Sequitur
- Chapter 9: Oriental Club
- Chapter 10: Scrying at Stratford Place
- Chapter 11: Temple Tavern
- Chapter 12: Easter Sunday April Fool
- Chapter 13: Raven Conspiracy
- Chapter 14: Rerouting…
- Chapter 15: Empyrean and Beyond
- Chapter 16: Tower House
- Chapter 17: Saturn's Return
- Chapter 18: Omnia Cum Deo
- Chapte 19: Rrose Mountain
- Chapter 20: Equinox of the Gods
- Chapter 21: Taurobolium
- Chapter 22: Archons Uprooted
- Chapter 23: Prison Coffin
- Chapter 24: Opera of the Phantom
- Chapter 25: Albion's Aeon

Machine Translated by Google

I

DEUTSCHE
Flugscheiben und U-Boote
ÜBERWACHEN DIE WELTMEERE

O. Bergmann

Machine Translated by Google

HUGIN GESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITISCH-PHILOSOPHISCHE STUDIEN E. V.

Table of contents

Preface 3

The dismantling of German submarines before 1945 5

Flying disks with a swastika 17

'Unknown' submarines in all the world's oceans 18

The strategic importance of the Bermuda Triangle 23

Disappeared in the Bermuda Triangle 29

Weather as a weapon 41

Looking for the UFO bases 55

American/Soviet Bermuda Research 58

List of sources 60

ATTACHMENT

German flying discs/ sketches/ testing 62-69

UFO attacks Soviet ship in the Arctic 80-81

I saw a phantom submarine 82-85

The circle of death 86-88

The UFO mystery is solved 90-91

American/Soviet secret pact against the 'UFOs' 92-98

Machine Translated by Google

---...scan by Lunatic Sept. 00...---

Machine Translated by Google

Preface

Our first paper on the German flying discs appeared in 1983. At that time, we simply set ourselves the task of proving as best we could that the 'UFOs' that have been observed in all parts of the world for four decades are not of extraterrestrial origin that the internationalists let spread through their world media, but are purely German in origin.
However, we had to realize more and more that not only was there a lack of approximate knowledge about these German developments before 1945 - largely even in circles that remained German or national - but also the so-called 'UFO' topic itself, i.e. the events of the last decades, was largely missing remained unknown. Yes, the connections were and mostly still are - in the spirit of the ruling Allies - smugly laughed at and dismissed as nonsense. In order to achieve this intended effect, even the occupying national press in the Federal Republic of Germany was involved.
Due to this situation, we gradually felt obliged to not only provide proof of German origin step by step, but also to report in much more detail about the worldwide flying disc sightings (UFO observations) as well as military and other events of the last decades initially planned.
Because the Imperial German strategy is so grandiose and therefore appears so unbelievable, we also felt compelled to provide good evidence of the facts using source material and documents. That's the reason why we chose this large A4 format.

The political situation in occupied Germany would never have been so disastrous and so disadvantageous for the German people if the enemies had not succeeded so masterfully in lying and deceiving the people in this sector as well. Even the official apparatus, which was still largely staffed by Germans, would never have allowed itself to be harnessed to the ruling occupiers - and thus against its own people - if it had been aware that it was supporting today's 'collaboration with the enemy'. may soon have to answer for it. At this point we would like to thank our readers again for the many submissions and newspaper reports, some from all parts of the world - often with translations attached.
Also for the many letters and suggestions. At the same time, we would like to ask for your understanding if we were not always able to respond due to work overload.
We hope that with this publication we have succeeded in further deepening and consolidating knowledge of this difficult topic.

Adolf Hitler on **April 19, 1945 to** Colonel HU Rudel:

**It's easy for you to talk, I've been trying to make peace continuously since 1943, but the Allies don't want it, they've been demanding unconditional surrender from the start.
Of course my personal fate doesn't matter, but the fact that I couldn't accept unconditional surrender for the German people will be obvious to every sensible person.
Negotiations are still ongoing, but I no longer believe they will be successful. That's why we must definitely get through this crisis so that decisive weapons can still bring us victory.**

In response to Rudel's opinion that the war could no longer be successfully ended by both sides at this point. From the forbidden book 'Despite this' (1*) by Colonel Rudel.

Already at the beginning of the Polish campaign the Führer declared:

And if the enemy floods all of Germany, then the war will be continued from abroad and there will be no surrender. (2*, p. 16)

Which means that preparations for this emergency of enemy occupation were already underway before the war began; and this can also be proven in some areas today!

Machine Translated by Google

The dismantling of German submarines before 1945

In the vast majority of the submarine literature of the Second World War, the impression is given that there were no escaped German submarines whose whereabouts on the Allied side, i.e. officially, nothing was known about. This has also been loudly claimed by the occupation media at every appropriate opportunity since 1945. Accordingly, there would have been no submarines for deployment overseas, to the South Seas, to the Antarctic, to South America or to the north polar waters, and just as there were no 'escape submarines for Nazi notables'.

But disinformation is a political tool that has been perfected and has been used, especially since 1945, in occupied, divided and disenfranchised Germany to mislead the German people in order to prevent any awakening. Within these overall processes, this is to be understood not only in relation to Germany, nationally, but also globally. This means that these activities affecting Reich Germany after 1945 are more or less effectively concealed from the entire world population.

There are very valid reasons why the USA and especially England have confiscated the majority of the German submarine documents for 43 years now and marked them with the secret note SECRET, withholding them from the rightful owner. The purpose of this secrecy is to prevent conclusions being drawn, both on the German side and worldwide, which would be of utmost importance for recognizing the true world situation after 1945.
Please note that the above-mentioned retention of files does not affect naval files in general, but only submarine documents.

The Federal Archives in Koblenz, which has over 76 km of files and books, owns several hundred linear meters of general naval files from the Second World War. Even well over 100 linear meters of the Imperial U-boats, which were still in their infancy at the time, but only a very modest two linear meters of those hugely grown submarine weapon of the second war. In the IWK Comprehensive reference work: 'The Federal Archives and its holdings' , Boldt-Verlag, Boppard aR, this retention measure by the Allies is formulated in a knee-jerk style towards today's occupying rulers, as is usual today: files and KTB (war diaries) of all command authorities of the British Admiralty in London, very few war diaries Rods Flotillas and submarines are still at the and logbooks of individual boats the Library of Congress. So far, only a few copies from KTB and from files with technical content are available in the Federal Archives.

Because general naval documents are almost completely available in the Federal Archives, it can be concluded with good reason that there were very special reasons for this long-term confiscation, especially of the submarine files, and probably still must be today. Exactly these reasons have already been explained in more detail in the HUGIN series of publications 'Secret Wonder Weapons' I-III and are therefore assumed to be known to the reader here, such as:

The Imperial German deposition maneuver to overseas bases around 1945; largely with submarines of the latest design from 1943-45.

The production of revolutionary submarine types at peak performance, starting in 1943 and increasing until 1945, despite the increasing chaos of war.
Development of new types of propulsion, such as the Walter drive and the electrogravity drive, as well as the successful prevention of submarine detection by the enemy from 1943 onwards.

The Walter drive, named after Prof. Walter, was developed in 1933. The first test boat, V80, achieved an underwater speed of 26 kn, i.e. almost 50 km, on the first test trip, significantly exceeding the normal submarine speed of up to 9 kn. The lower part of these boats was shaped like a standing figure eight and was powered by hydrogen peroxide. Later boats also had electric engines and diesel engines for overwater travel.
U 792 - U 795 and U 1405 - 1407, later up to 1416, had Walter drives, as did boats with 2000 and 4000 numbers.
In order to cover up the enemy espionage and the organized betrayal, it can be assumed that the official German information given at the time about diving depths, horsepower, knots, etc. were often understated. Therefore, differences can always be found between information from the non-confiscated documents, as found in the specialist literature, on the one hand, and logged reports of individual submariners' experiences, on the other. Here's an example:

Machine Translated by Google

In general submarine literature, the U 558, belonging to the VII C class, is mentioned, led by Kptlt. Krech, which was sunk after an air raid off northern Spain on July 20, 1943, northwest of Cape Ortegal.

In the recorded report of the marine Franz We..., however, see report in Secret Wonder Weapons Vol.I, 5.47, his U 558 does not belong to the VII C class and was not led by Captain Krecht, but by Captain Zur See Schermann.

Didn't sink at Ortegal, but surfaced off Iceland after an engine failure and was in a submarine formation under Korv. Captain Moehle, who left for Mar del Plata, Argentina, most likely for the purpose of deportation. Based on other reports, we now know that, for example, the numbers of sunk boats were re-transferred to the revolutionary new boats - this must also have been the case with U 558 - but very probably only if these new boats did not have the numbers used again were no longer used in general military operations, but were given a completely new purpose.

The boat described by Franz We... had 2 sets of turbines with 12,000 hp each and achieved a performance of 75 (!) knots, which was unheard of at the time, and had a drive similar to Walter's but even better. The U 558, led by Krecht, was lost in the summer of 1943, while Franz We. . . explained: '. . 'In 1943' (which indicates the end of the year) we took over the **new** boat with the number U 558.

From 1943 onwards, the **electric boats,** coastal boat types No. XXII and XXIII, the offshore type XXI, but also those with even higher Roman numerals, were built with emphasis. December 1944, especially January and March 1945, Germany achieved the highest submarine production figures of the entire war years, with 27 / 37 / 27 units per month, despite the catastrophic war chaos at the time. Grand Admiral Dönitz explained about the new electric boats: These types eliminated the superiority that the (enemy's) defense had gained over submarines since 1943 and which was essentially based on surface detection using the shortest waves. The submarine remained undetectable for location - under water, operating at a protective depth and only attacking from there. From: 'Ten Years and Twenty Days' ; Karl Donitz.

The new types from 1943 onwards were largely to be viewed as submarines in the true sense, because they could now travel long distances constantly under water without surfacing, achieved considerable diving depths and, as already mentioned, could no longer be located; only in very shallow coastal waters, where they could also be seen visually. Where, for example, the electric boat U2538 - most likely also on the route to South America - had to be sunk after enemy fire:

Many of Bormann's inner circle had been ordered to come to Flensburg, from where they were supposed to escape in one or more of the three newly built Walter submarines. This part of the plan was dubbed 'Operation Rainbow'. The alternative to the submarines was to sneak across the 'green border' into Denmark and hide there or go further to seek asylum in Sweden.

Himmler also gathered his circle in Flensburg. But only to wait for Walter Schellenberg's news about asylum in Sweden. ...but something wasn't working for both groups of leaders. What happened to the Bormann group was that the U-boats either didn't come or it proved impossible to get out through the narrow Danish waters. At least one of the Walter submarines attempted to penetrate the Øresund immediately after the surrender. But U 2538 (this electric boat is erroneously referred to here as the Walter U-boat; author's note) was shot at and damaged and captain Heinrich Klapdor had to go to Ätö (an island off the Flensburg Bay), where all passengers arrived on the evening of the 6th At this point, the submarines were were put ashore in May. (3*, p.30)
still vulnerable to shelling, depth charges, etc., but - as we will come to later - this was no longer possible years later. Well, many, such as Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, still came to South America; In case of difficulties, a little later, sometimes via detours, or when trying again. The northern escape route existed until 1948, and for a few even longer. Just as the Roman route through Italy and similar other routes of deposition existed for many years. The story that emerged after 1945 about Bormann's death at the Weidenhammer Bridge in Berlin, after his escape from the Führerbunker, probably only served to initially mislead in order to better depose him.

When it came to launching submarines, the Flensburg Bay was a geographically important point. The German submarine port of Mürwik was located here and not far from the bay, just behind the German/Danish border, was the royal summer residence 'Graasten Castle': during the war, the SS set up a hospital there. Since the German army units in northern Schleswig-Holstein remained intact until the end, Graasten Castle was the last hospital in German hands. **It remained that way beyond Armistice Day.** In doing so, it offered those fleeing the Greater German Empire one last opportunity to find

Machine Translated by Google

to transform the wounded or into stretcher bearers. At the end of June (1945), shortly after Bormann arrived there, the Danes came on the scene and demanded that the Germans immediately vacate the castle. (4*, p. 295)

According to the Danish book 'Flugtrute Nord', p.27, Bormann was the planner of the northern settlement route. Gehlen and Skorzeny organized them. In 'Go. Wunder Waffen' Vol.III it was already mentioned that the German North and Baltic Sea coasts, Schleswig-Holstein, Denmark and southern Scandinavia were the areas defended by the German side for the longest time, presumably to secure the deposition. Many of those in leadership circles in particular were only able to leave Germany or Berlin in April/May 1945, often under dangerous circumstances. A few failed, were taken prisoner or even died. Others were brought in years after the occupation. However, it should not be ignored that other groups were tasked with setting up secret bases many years before 1945, even before the start of the war.

In April/May 1945, in the entire northern German and Danish region, in addition to the general refugees, there was a large accumulation of managers ready to be dismissed who had to be accommodated here and there at short notice.
The newsletter No. 6, December 1979, to former students of the 'Colonial Women's School Rendsburg', known as the Kolo School for short, also reports on
this: Immediately after Easter, the mothers' home in Haus Afrika (which is one of the school buildings) had to be evacuated by the SS the school confiscated! ...Men and their ladies came from Berlin as refugees in large Mercedes cars, but in no way gave the impression of poor people. .... We also had to clear out one room after the other in the main house.

After May 1st and after an air raid on Rendsburg, it continues: We are sitting in the main building on the lowest floor with all our belongings, the SS people among us... The next day it was strangely quiet and empty around us. The forbidden area around Haus Afrika suddenly appeared as a hospital area. Most of the people had disappeared that night. SS Maiden who stayed behind wore nurses' assistant uniforms, the Red Cross flag flew, and male uniformed men wore medical bandages on their arms. The dining room was hastily prepared as an operating room, everything looked very merciful. There were also wounded people that no one had known about before!

The office in the main building became the command post of a corvette captain and oak leaf bearer, who was supposed to lead the defense of Rendsburg. We listened to telephone conversations that were certainly not intended for our ears; it seemed as if all the threads came together in the small office. Irene Pritzen-Steinhorst.

Accordingly, the SS temporarily confiscated the Kolo School, declared part of it a restricted area and the vast majority of it disappeared again between May 1st and 3rd, 1945. What remained turned the school into a 'hospital' but also disappeared as the English approached. Always adapted to the respective situation, the 'Great Deposition' went like this or something similar.

Even before the enemy occupation, the well-known German writer Ernst Jünger wrote: The real core of our people - even if we are defeated - will not abandon their conviction that the world can only prosper if we are at the top... Ours Time comes again. That is why we must now **begin work in which military preparations are only the smaller part .** (3*, p. 37)
Carlos R. Pineyro, who was sent to Scandinavia by Argentine President Peron to help escape, had free rein to send thousands of these so-called 'technicians' from Scandinavia to Argentina. But apart from the actual scientists who came to Argentina through this network, all were Nazi officers, most of the SS men and Luftwaffe officers who had been promised a position in the Argentine army. (3*, p.39)
There was also a Nazi organization in Ireland, the 'Group 43', which looked after incoming National Socialists from Scandinavia and helped them escape. (3*, p.44)

A Danish SS man, Poul A., said that Bormann stayed in Copenhagen for about four months after his deposition. Then he went to Sweden. (3*, p.47)
At the end of November 1945, the Swedish police in Hälsingborg got wind that Bormann was staying in the Hamilton House in Hälsingborg. He had already been there three weeks. An attempt was made to place him somewhere else. Bormann was seen in Gothenburg on January 19, 1946. In December 1946 one could read in the Swedish newspaper 'Arbetet' (The Work) that Bormann, together with one of the leaders of the werewolf movement, Artur Axmann, and the Gauleiter Ernst Wilhelm Bohle, were on one on April 13th and 14th, 1946 The meeting was in Malmö (southern Sweden). (3*, p.62)

Bohle was later caught and brought before the tribunal of the 'victors' in Nuremberg. Reichsleiter Bormann is said to have declared at this meeting in Malmö: **'We will be back, but in a form that the world will never forget!' ,** according to the

Machine Translated by Google

South American newspaper 'Zig-Zag', Santiago de Chile from June 19, 1947.
The resistance in Denmark, as well as in the Scandinavian countries, was divided into two mutually hostile groups, the international and national resistance. The latter helped the Germans escape and depose in many ways.

We leave the topic of the removal of groups and individuals, which has already been touched on in previous HUGIN writings, and return to the removal of the boats. Of course, one is closely intertwined with the other.

Reports like the one above about U 2538 understandably only exist about those boats that failed somewhere during the deployment, because nothing can have been known about the large number of boats that got through smoothly.

We get an approximate idea of the boats that escaped during the deposition from the following source material by Bodo Herzog, published by the reputable military book publisher JFLehmanns, Munich, 1968. At this point in time, 23 years after the so-called 'end of the war', the whereabouts of several hundred Germans are unknown Not yet known to submarines. B. Herzog puts the note: 'Whereabouts have not yet been clarified'!
For the well-known boats, the 31-page table tells us the date of commissioning, as well as the time, type and location of the boat loss. A cross stands for sunk, a cross in brackets means self-sunk. If there is no commissioning date for the boats we are interested in here, but only an acceptance date (A) because they were no longer used in the usual war, then their later whereabouts should at least be known, such as the various ones from the English captured and sunk west of the Hebrides in Operation 'Deadlight' between November 25th, 1945 and January 7th, 1946.

Therefore, several hundred missing submarines can only be understood and logically explained within the context we have presented.

Excerpts from the submarine table:

BODO HERZOG
60 JAHRE
DEUTSCHE UBOOTE
1906–1966
MIT 118 UBOOTSKIZZEN
UND 1 KARTE
VON
HELMUT FECHTER
SOWIE 137 FOTOS
J. F. LEHMANNS VERLAG
MÜNCHEN

Verbleib der deutschen Uboote

Boot	Indienst-stellung	Rang	Indienststellungs-Kommandant	Verbleib	Rang	Letzter Kommandant	Art	Ort und Art des Abganges
U 1405	21.12.44	O	Rex	4./5. 5.45	O	Rex	(+)	Eckernförder Bucht
U 1406	8. 2.45	O	W. Klug	5. 5.45	O	W. Klug	(+)	Cuxhaven nach AD: 2.5.45 – Bergung 15.9.45 → USA
U 1407	13. 3.45	O	Heitz	5. 5.45	O	Heitz	(+)	Cuxhaven nach AD: 2.5.45 – Bergung England: U-METEORITE
U 1408	Sta: 44							nicht mehr fertig
U 1409	Sta: 44							nicht mehr fertig
U 2111	A: 15.5.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2112	A: 5.6.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2113	A: 7.6.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2251	A: 15.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2252	A: 17.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2253	A: 19.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2254	A: 20.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2255	A: 21.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2256	A: 22.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2257	A: 28.7.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2258	A: 2.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2259	A: 3.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2260	A: 3.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2261	A: 4.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2262	A: 4.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2263	A: 5.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2264	A: 7.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2265	A: ?							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2266	A: 5.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2267	A: 7.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2268	A: 8.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2269	A: 9.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2270	A: 10.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2271	A: 9.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2272	A: 10.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

Machine Translated by Google

U 2270	A: 10.8.44	Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2271	A: 9.8.44	Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2272	A: 10.8.44	Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

Boot	Indienststellung	Rang	Indienststellungs-Kommandant	Verbleib	Rang	Letzter Kommandant	Art	Ort und Art des Abganges
U 2273	A: 11.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2274	A: 12.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2275	A: 14.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2276	A: 11.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2277	A: 14.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2278	A: 14.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2279	A: 15.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2280	A: 16.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2281	A: 14.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2282	A: 15.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2283	A: 15.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2284	A: 16.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2285	A: 16.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2286	A: 18.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2287	A: 19.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2288	A: 21.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2289	A: 25.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2290	A: 23.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2291	A: 17.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2292	A: 18.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2293	A: 19.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2294	A: 21.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 2295	A: 23.8.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

A = Abnahmedatum

U 2368	?10. 4.45[4])	O	Ufermann	5. 5.45	O	Ufermann	(+)	Geltinger Bucht
U 2369	18. 4.45	O	H. Schulz	5. 5.45	O	H. W. Pahl	(+)	Geltinger Bucht
U 2370	15. 4.45	O	Bornkessel	3. 5.45	O	Bornkessel	(+)	Hamburg–Finkenwerder
U 2371	?24. 4.45[5])	O	J. Kühne	3. 5.45	O	J. Kühne	(+)	Hamburg–Finkenwerder
U 2372								fast fertig – Verbleib?
U 2373								fast fertig – Verbleib?
U 2374		O	Waldschmidt					fast fertig – Verbleib?

U 2375 bis U 2377 — fast fertig – Verbleib?
U 2378 bis U 2400 — im Bau – zum Teil vor der Fertigstellung

U 2550	Sta: 3.45	O	G. Wolff	11. 3.45 8. 4.45			+	Hamburg: Fli
U 2551	4.45	K	Schaar	5. 5.45	K	Schaar	(+)	Flensburg – Solitude
U 2552	20. 4.45	K	J. Rudolph	3. 5.45	K	J. Rudolph		

U 2553 bis U 2564 — fast fertig

U 2553	Kiellegung: 12.12.44
U 2554	Kiellegung: 14.12.44
U 2555	Kiellegung: 20.12.44
U 2556	Kiellegung: 23.12.44
U 2557	Kiellegung: 30.12.44
U 2558	Kiellegung: 1. 2.45
U 2559	Kiellegung: 4. 2.45
U 2560	Kiellegung: 12. 2.45
U 2561	Kiellegung: 15. 2.45
U 2562	Kiellegung: 24. 2.45
U 2563	Kiellegung: 28. 2.45
U 2564	Kiellegung: 29. 3.45

U 2565 bis U 2608: Keine Kiellegung
U 2609 bis U 2631: Aufträge am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt
U 2632 bis U 2645: Aufträge (6.5.44) am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt
U 2646 bis U 2762: Aufträge (6.5.44) am 1.12.44 annulliert

U 3050	18. 4.45	O	Reimann	5. 5.45			(+)	Wesermünde
U 3051	Sta: 20. 4.45	O	Müller-Koebl	5. 5.45			(+)	Wesermünde
U 3052	Kiellegung: 22. 1.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
U 3053	Kiellegung: 21. 1.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
U 3054	Kiellegung: 27. 1.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
U 3055	Kiellegung: 25. 1.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen

Machine Translated by Google

	Kiellegung:	
U 3054	27. 1.45	Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:	
U 3055	25. 1.45	Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:	
U 3056	7. 2.45	Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert

Boot	Indienststellung	Rang	Indienststellungs-Kommandant	Verbleib	Rang	Letzter Kommandant	Art	Ort und Art des Abganges
	Kiellegung:							
U 3057	4. 2.45	O	Neumann					Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3058	17. 2.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3059	15. 2.45	K	Knecht					Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3060	25. 2.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3061	24. 2.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3062	9. 3.45	O	K. H. Schröter					Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
	Kiellegung:							
U 3063	7. 3.45							Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
U 3064 bis U 3088: Keine Kiellegung mehr								Sektionen sämtlich bzw. zum Teil in Bremen angeliefert
U 3089 bis U 3100: Aufträge (6.5.44) am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt								
U 3101 bis U 3176: Aufträge (6.5.44) – Kein Baubeginn								
U 3177 bis U 3295: Aufträge (27.9.44) am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt								
U 3296 bis U 3500: ø								
U 3501	29. 7.44	O	Münster	5. 5.45		(unbesetzt)	(+)	Wesermünde
U 3502	19. 8.44	O	H. Schultz	3. 5.45	O	H. Schultz	(+)	Hamburg
U 3530	23. 3.45	K	Brauel	3. 5.45		(unbesetzt)	(+)	Kiel
	Sta:							
U 3531	10. 2.45			3. 5.45		In Travemünde →	(+)	Kurz vor Fertigstellung nach Wesermünde abgeschleppt
	Sta:							
U 3532	20. 2.45	O	Niemeyer?	5. 5.45		Bei Brunsbüttelkoog →	(+)	Kurz vor Fertigstellung nach Wesermünde abgeschleppt
U 3533	Sta: 2.45	O	Jaenicke	3. 5.45		Kiel	(+)	Kurz vor Fertigstellung nach Wesermünde-Kiel abgeschleppt
U 3534	Sta: 2.45	O	Wolff					Kurz vor Fertigstellung nach Westen abgeschleppt
U 3535	Sta: 2.45	O	Zenker					Kurz vor Fertigstellung nach Westen abgeschleppt
U 3536	Sta: 2.45	O	Gode				(+)	Kurz nach Fertigstellung nach Westen abgeschleppt
U 3537	Sta: 2.45	O	Korndörfer					Kurz nach Fertigstellung nach Westen abgeschleppt
	Kiellegung:							
U 3538	21.12.44							UdSSR-Beute – Fertigbau?
	Kiellegung:							
U 3539	21.12.44							UdSSR-Beute – Fertigbau?
	Kiellegung:							
U 3540	21.12.44							UdSSR-Beute – Fertigbau?
	Kiellegung:							
U 3541	21.12.44							UdSSR-Beute – Fertigbau?
	Kiellegung:							
U 3542	21.12.44							UdSSR-Beute – Fertigbau?
U 3543 bis U 3571: Keine Kiellegung								
U 3572 bis U 3574: Auftrag 6.5.44								
U 3575 bis U 3642: Aufträge (6.5.44) am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt								
U 3643 bis U 3684: Aufträge (27.9.44) am 1.12.44 zurückgestellt								
U 3685 bis U 3695: Aufträge (27.9.44) am 1.12.44 annulliert								
U 4001 bis U 4120 — Unfertig								
U 4501 bis U 4700 — Unfertig bzw. sistiert, falls kein Baubeginn								
U 4711	21. 3.45	O	Endler	4. 5.45	O	Endler	(+)	Kiel (nach Fli)
U 4712	3. 4.45	O	Rohlfing	4. 5.45	K	Fleige	(+)	Kiel (nach Fli)
	Sta:							

Machine Translated by Google

[illegible] sistiert, falls kein Baubeginn

U 4711	21. 3.45	O	Endler	4. 5.45	O	Endler	(+)	**Kiel** (nach Fli)
U 4712	3. 4.45	O	Rohlfing	4. 5.45	K	Fleige	(+)	Kiel (nach Fli)
U 4713	Sta: 19. 4.45			3. 5.45			(+)	Kiel – bis zu 95% fertig
U 4714	Sta: 26. 4.45	O	von Ahlefeld	3. 5.45			(+)	Kiel – bis zu 95% fertig

U 4715 bis U 4718 — Bis zu 95% fertig

U 4719		O	Waldschmidt					unfertig bzw. sistiert

U 4720 bis U 4891 — unfertig bzw. sistiert

Boot	Indienst-stellung	Rang	Indienststellungs-Kommandant	Ver-bleib	Rang	Letzter Kommandant	Art	Ort und Art des Abganges

U 5001 bis U 5033 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

U 5034	A: 15.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5035	A: 17.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5036	A: 18.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5037	A: 20.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

U 5038 bis U 5100 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt – Teilweise fertig bzw. im Bau

A = Abnahmedatum

U 5251	A: 10.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5252	A: 3.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5253	A: 11.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5254	A: 18.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5255	A: 13.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5256	A: 21.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5257	A: 15.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5258	A: 15.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5259	A: 17.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5260	A: 19.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5261	A: 20.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5262	A: 22.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5263	A: 24.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5264	A: 25.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5265	A: 31.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5266	A: 31.10.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5267	A: 1.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5268	A: 3.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt
U 5269	A: 3.11.44							Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt

A = Abnahmedatum

U 5270 bis U 5350 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt – Teilweise fertig bzw. im Bau

U 5751 bis U 5800 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt – Teilweise fertig bzw. im Bau

U 6201 bis U 6245 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt – Teilweise fertig bzw. im Bau

U 6251	A:							
U 6252	A:							

A = Abnahmedatum

U 6253 bis U 6300 — Verbleib zur Zeit noch nicht geklärt – Teilweise fertig bzw. im Bau?

In order to counteract the increasing losses due to the effects of war and for other important reasons, the 'New Submarine Construction Program' began in 1943 at the same time as sectional construction. The submarine sections, which had been prefabricated in separate factories, came together in the shipyards and could now be assembled into the final product in fractions of the usual construction time. This meant that series production was also born in the submarine sector and espionage was largely removed from view. The following has now also become possible: Years ago one of our readers called us and explained: 'What you explained in Secret Miracle Weapor

known for years. You will also be interested to know that I was a submariner during the war years and from 1944 to May 1945 we had to load submarine parts into submarines non-stop!'
We are therefore not only dealing with a few hundred - perhaps 1,000 submarines that were taken from the ever-approaching enemies before May 1945, but also with a large number of individual parts and sections, which are very likely only in bases were assembled into ready-to-operate boats outside the Greater German Reich and were only provided there with a new, revolutionary, electromagnetic (?) drive, which we will come to later.

For the aforementioned reason, we have also taken the areas from the boat table in which it says: 'Sections all or partly delivered in Bremen'; or: 'partially finished or under construction'; or: 'up to 95% complete', but the information about self-scuttling as with U 4713 and U 4714 could not be provided. Or where - it says: 'almost finished - whereabouts?' or similar mysterious cases. Because the whereabouts of 'almost finished' boats would have to be known, unless they were also able to escape enemy access. The 'New Submarine Construction Program' was carried out with particular emphasis and the highest level of urgency, so that 'it can be assumed that many individual parts and sections had already been manufactured or assembled when it says: orders were placed in May 1944 and deferred or canceled in December 1944. Put back and loaded so that it was no longer completed in Germany, but somewhere outside of it? According to our reader's testimony above, we can take this into account. The submarine documents retained by the Allies would not give us any information about this. On the other hand, the strange processes in all the world's oceans after 1945.

The boats 2111-13, 2251-95 are micro-submarines, also - as far as we are interested here, with unknown whereabouts - the numbers five and six thousand. These were completely unsuitable for the actual deployment to overseas bases and at first glance would hardly be considered in our context, and yet they are always small and micro submarines of 'unknown nationality' which have not only been spotted in Danish and Scandinavian coastal waters for decades, but have also been fought with depth charges, albeit without the slightest success. These small boats will have a secret, regional base in the North and Baltic Sea areas, which we do not know about. It cannot be ruled out that some of these small boats were towed by the larger ones so that they could then be used regionally in other sea areas.

Suddenly, starting in 1943, Germany suffered extremely high submarine losses, some of which appear very questionable, especially among those reported missing. While the official loss figures in 1941 and 1942 were 38 and 88 boats respectively, losses in 1943 and 1944 rose considerably to 245 and 264 boats. Here, too, some boats - with crews, of course - may have found other uses in the area of responsibility of the 'Last Battalion', and the reports of losses to the naval office at home only served to deceive the agents and traitors in their own ranks.

November 29,

1944 Trip to Bremen and Oldenburg. Bremen is destroyed. But the shipyards are incredibly busy. U-boat next to U-boat lies on the Helligen. Hundreds of workers gymnastics around on the scaffolding and complete a submarine every day in the one shipyard we visit alone.
We are shown one of the new radar-proof submarines, one of which is already at the enemy, and with which Dönitz plans to fight the first convoy battle again shortly.
I know nothing about seafaring and nothing at all about submarines. But this boat, with its size and powerful armament, makes a fearsome impression on me. The experts explain to us that it can stay under water for any length of time and can move at the speed of a destroyer. It does not rely on underwater electric propulsion. (6*, p.181)

From the summer of 1943, three officially known German submarine bases in East Asia were gradually completed and occupied. In Penang, in the Strait of Malacca, in Djakarta and in Surabaja, both located in Java (Sunda Islands). The first 11 boats were sent there in July 1943. Surprisingly, only five (!) boats arrived and the six missing ones were not later reported as having been sunk by the enemy. Another 16 boats set off on the Far Eastern voyage at the end of 1943. Again, less than half arrived in Penang. (20*) reil A completely unusual 'loss' for boats that were not in combat with the enemy! No radio signals were picked up and no survivors ever officially reported back to HUC. Therefore, the assumption that they had to leave the so-called monsoon association during the trip around the Cape of Good Hope was given a new order, according to which they had to head for the nearby German territory of Neuschwabenland in Antarctica, for anyone with this topic familiar, not so far-fetched. An act of transformation through which they were removed from the German Navy and assigned to the 'Last Battalion'. This often happened with people and material.

At this point we don't want to miss the following important note: After one of our lectures in southern Germany, in October 1987, a captain in the merchant navy, who served on speedboats and sometimes on submarines before 1945, stood up and complemented ours Statements about the German base in Neuschwabenland as follows: Around the end of 1941, during my service, I met the two soldiers Siewert and Wehrend, who from then on were ordered to the Russian campaign. They were both participants in the German Antarctic Expedition 1938/39 (both also appear in the official list of participants in the expedition; see excerpt from the list in the appendix). They reported to me that even after the end of the expedition, i.e. in the spring of 1939, they continued to serve on the expedition ship 'Schwabenland' and that their ship commuted non-stop between Neuschwabenland and the home port every quarter in order to transport equipment and entire mining facilities to the Antarctic. This also included tracks and carts, but also a huge milling machine to be able to drill tunnel systems into the ice. So much for the statement of the retired captain

Hardly ready to surrender, but still determined to fight, the German submariners stationed in Norway were still in April/ May 1945. The liberal 'National-Zeitung', Basel The Third Reich in dissolution. Switzerland reported on May 4, 194: In the case of Hitler, not even death itself has yet been conclusively proven and for the time being we will have to make do with the information that President Truman relies on. Rarely will a body discovery have as far-reaching and important future significance as the actual discovery of the 'Fuhrer's' human remains would have. (Well, this discovery of such far-reaching and important significance has never existed to this day; inserted by the author).

However, Dönitz himself is unlikely to carry out a formal surrender, for which the Allies would hardly give him more than 48 hours, but would rather leave it to the Allies - to announce victory through a unilateral act. Incidentally, the decisive signal for this is expected from Norway, because Victory Day cannot be celebrated without the German high command in Norway clearly indicating its willingness to cease fighting. As for Norway, it is less certain whether the Germans will also lay down their arms there in the near future. It is more likely that the officers and crew of the submarines and speedboats in Norway, consisting mainly of FANATICS, are determined. Today we know: The areas in the north were defended with particular effort and for as long as possible in order to to continue the war to the extreme. ensure the smoothest possible deployment; This also applies to Norway.

Just a few months ago, a former German soldier (Austrian) who was only deployed in Scandinavian countries from 1939-45 came to see us and explained something like this: In April 1945 I was approached alone and specifically in Norway. I was told I could go to Kristiansand, where there were submarines ready for deployment. I refused on the grounds that I had done nothing wrong as a soldier, why should I escape, I was going into captivity. It wasn't until I read your HUGIN writings that I realized about boat cancellation. (But this could not be told what the U was really about to anyone at the time, in order to rule out treason. What is also interesting here is that only people who appeared to be reliable were approached and who had perhaps previously been under observation for a longer period of time; note HUGIN.)

A few boats surrendered and surrendered months later for various reasons, such as U 530 on July 10, 1945 and U 977 on August 17, both in Argentina, presumably in the course of the deportation. Occasionally, a few or many years later, German submarines, some with and some without national emblems, were either clearly recognized or assumed to be such based on their appearance. We reported various cases in our other related writings.

In general, reporting on such sightings or incidents after 1945 now used a different style of presentation. Now there were reports of 'submarines of unknown nationality', of 'ghost ships', of 'ghost submarines' and later of 'USOs' (unidentified submarine objects). Similar to how after 1945 the German flying discs or fireballs were now called UFOs and the impression was given that they came from other stars.

According to the 'Home and World' report (excerpt) inserted here from around 1956/57, the Reich German submarines suspected or actually spotted after 1945 were portrayed several times in other press reports as modern pirate submarines. Due to the legal situation described below, this must be strongly contradicted: Immediately after the German Antarctic Expedition in 1938/39, the explored and surveyed 600,000 square km area was called 'Neuschwabenland' and declared German sovereign territory. This happened before the outbreak of World War II. The same was true of the establishment of a German base, which began immediately after the expedition.
In 1945, the German motherland was occupied by the enemy - much to the chagrin of all Germans - and has been under occupation for decades ever since, but not the German territory in Antarctica, which is almost the same size. Here,

As in its many other restricted areas and bases, the Reich has not yet been forced to surrender. All Allied attempts made after 1945, such as the Byrd 'Expedition' in 1946/47, as well as later American, English and Soviet war operations against Neuschwabenland, also disguised as expeditions, were unsuccessful. This means that you could neither destroy the German base nor force the Germans there to give up and surrender.

Even the opposing Federal Constitutional Court in Karlsruhe (FRG) had to admit in several landmark judgments, for example on July 31, 1973 - most likely taking this fact of international law into account - that the German Reich did not collapse in 1945, but continued to exist legally.

Thus, the worldwide Reich German operations after 1945 - because only the German Wehrmacht capitulated - be it with flying discs (UFOs) or with submarines (or USUs), are legal acts of war by a legally continuing state and therefore cannot be considered illegal or piracy be placed. The German Reich continues the Second World War from Neuschwabenland, just like any other of the 50 states on the other side of the Allies, in accordance with international law. By owning the territory of Neuschwabenland, the forces of the empire are not in the inferior situation of a simple government in exile.

As the Baseler Zeitung already made clear, Grand Admiral Dönitz did not sign a formal surrender of the Reich in 1945, but rather the 'victory march' - which was not yet one - was a one-sided act by the Allies.

Let us remember Eisenhower's statement during his presidential term when asked by a journalist: 'Your Excellency, what do you actually think of the III. World War', replied somewhat harshly: 'The II. It's not over yet.'

Nr. 12 HEIM und WELT

Panik in der Südsee! Fall JOYITA überraschend geklärt

Piraten-U-Boot am Werk

Menschen verschwinden — Fragezeichen im Leben des Kapitäns Miller — Eine Spur: der letzte Funkspruch der ARAKARIMOA — Die Rätsel häuten sich — Phantasiegebilde oder erregende Wirklichkeit? — Unheimliche Beobachtung eines altes Marineoffiziers

Alarmierende Nachrichten dringen aus der fernen Südsee zu uns. Das vielbesungene Tropenparadies steht zur Zeit unter dem Alpdruck panischen Schreckens. Unheimliche Vorfälle im Umkreis der Fidschi-Inseln erregen die Öffentlichkeit, Eingeborene und Weiße zittern, fieberhaft ist die Polizei am Werke und alle Küstenstationen und Flugstützpunkte sind in Alarmzustand versetzt. Was ist geschehen? Eine Serie unheimlicher Vorfälle macht von sich reden, bei denen ebenso rätselhafte wie gespenstisch anmutende Dinge geschehen. Unser Bericht führt den Leser in jene Gegend und läßt ihn die erregenden Ereignisse miterleben.

Auszug:

Piratenbande hatte sich die Seegefilde zwischen Inseln und Atolls der Fidschi-Gruppe zum Tummel- und Beuteplatz ausgesucht. Kapitän Williams hatte richtig gesehen, der letzte Funkspruch der verschollenen ARAKARIMOA erhärtete seine Beobachtung: ein U-Boot unbekannter Nationalität war der Freibeuter. Aber nicht nur das, von den weiter südlich gelegenen Tonga-Inseln wurde der Funkspruch eines Küstenschiffes aufgefangen, der eine in diesem neuen Lichte hochinteressante und alarmierende Nachricht enthielt. *„In der Lagune eines den Tonga-Inseln vorgelagerten Atolls sichteten wir ein vielleicht 1000 Tonnen großes Kriegsschiff, daß an eine Korvette aus dem letzten Kriege erinnert. Das Schiff führte weder Namen, noch Positionslichter oder sonstige Kennzeichen und beantwortete, weder unsere Flaggensignale noch unsere drahtlosen Anrufe.“*

Elf Jahre nach Kriegsende

Ein „deutsches oder japanisches Unterseeboot“ glaubte Kapitän Wil-

"THE STAR" JOHANNESBURG, FRIDAY NOVEMBER 24, 1972

AIR SEARCH FOR MYSTERY 'U BOAT'

Own Correspondent

DURBAN—The mystery submarine sighting off

Machine Translated by Google

Flaggensignale noch unsere drahtlosen

Elf Jahre nach Kriegsende

Ein „deutsches oder japanisches Unterseeboot" glaubte Kapitän Williams ausgemacht zu haben. Das würde bedeuten: elf Jahre nach Kriegsende müßten noch Schiffseinheiten mitsamt ihrer Besatzung unterwegs sein, die sich auf eigene Faust der Kapitulation entzogen hätten. Das klingt überraschend, ja, fast unwahrscheinlich, wird aber dennoch von den neuseeländischen und britischen Behörden nun, nach dem Verschwinden dreier Schiffe und nach wiederholter Sichtung geheimnisvoller Kriegsfahrzeuge für durchaus möglich gehalten. Es ist bekannt, daß eine ganze Anzahl von U-Booten bei Kriegsende überfällig war, die später auf die Liste der Vermißten gesetzt werden mußten. Andererseits jedoch scheidet bei solchen Erwägungen mit einiger Gewißheit die Annahme aus, daß es sich bei diesen Piraten um ehemalige deutsche Marineangehörige handelt, denn es ist schwerlich denkbar, daß es einem deutschen U-Boot-Kommandanten gelungen sein soll, seine ganze Besatzung oder einen erheblichen Teil von ihr unter seinem Kommando zu behalten und mit ihnen in einer solchen Ferne von der Heimat ein recht- und gesetzloses Leben zu führen.

U BOAT

Own Correspondent

DURBAN—The mystery submarine sighting off the Natal north coast deepened today with the disclosure by Mr Barry Hawke, of Ballitoville, that the conning tower he saw closely resembled that of the German U boats of World War 2.

Mr Hawke and two other Ballitoville residents saw the

maritime headquarters in Cape Town and the search was

Ehemaliges SS-Lazarett im königlichen Sommerschloß in Graasten, Dänemark. (3*, S.80)

Machine Translated by Google

Flying disks with a swastika

Montevideo, 8 (UPI). **-- The so-called flying disks are not alien spaceships but the works of Nazi scientists who have not come to terms with losing World War II and are preparing for a coming conquest, said engineer Fred Andracht, an Austrian living in Uruguay .**

He has been living in Uruguay for two years and is the owner of a chemical laboratory. He was a university lecturer in Switzerland and worked in Argentina.

In statements to the morning newspaper 'EL DIARIO', he expressed his views on this issue: 'It is not just a theory, but a truth. At the moment I do not have the convincing evidence that science requires so that no one questions my position. But I have raised the issue at a higher level because it is obvious that the situation requires preventive measures and not negligence.

There is not only a lot of money behind it, but also interest groups that have a lot of power and are interested in keeping it hidden. I also have to be careful about my safety because those responsible will try to prevent them from becoming known at all costs.'

He recalled that before World War II, Germany tested the latest weapons in Spain and Hitler turned that country into a testing ground.

'There are still many of those Germans, along with others, who have decided to follow them and who believe that the last war is not over and that they can still gain power.'

He said he cannot reveal the location of the base from which they operate and hinted that the Argentine and North American militaries may also know this truth, or at least part of it, or at least intuit it.

Finally, Andracht said that he will soon take part in a conference with Uruguayans interested in the UFO issue and assures that his goal is to ensure that 'Uruguay is the first country to raise its voice - in the appropriate context - against this aggression once he has the evidence. --' German translation from: Daily newspaper 'LA RAZON' - Buenos Aires, Argentina, ca.1977/78.

The extraordinary thing about this report is that it appeared in a daily newspaper. This has been impossible in occupied Germany since 1945 because the occupying media strictly prohibits it, even if it comes from the opposing side, as in this case.

PLATOS VOLADORES CON CRUZ GAMADA

MONTEVIDEO, 8 (UPI). — Los llamados platos voladores no son naves extraterrestres, sino la obra de científicos nazis, que no aceptan haber perdido la Segunda Guerra Mundial y se preparan para una futura conquista, dijo el ingeniero Fred Andracht, austríaco residente en el Uruguay.

Hace 2 años que vive en el Uruguay y es propietario de un laboratorio químico. Fue catedrático en Suiza y trabajó en la Argentina.

En declaraciones al vespertino "El Diario" ,expresó que su concepción del problema "no es meramente una teoría, sino una verdad. Por el momento no dispongo de las pruebas absolutas que la ciencia exige para que nadie discuta mi punto de vista, pero he planteado el tema a altas esferas porque evidentemente la situación exige adoptar medidas de previsión y no descuidarse.

"Detrás de esto no solo hay mucho dinero, sino sectores de enorme poder interesados en que no se sepa nada al respecto. Incluso yo debo velar por mi seguridad. Porque los responsables tratarán de evitar ser descubiertos utilizando cualquier medio".

Recordó que antes de la Segunda Guerra Mundial, Alemania probó en España las armas más adelantadas y Hitler convirtió ese país en un campo de experimentación.

"Aun subsisten muchos de aquellos alemanes, acompañados de otros que han decidido seguirlos y que creen que no terminó la última guerra y el poder todavía puede conquistarse".

Dijo que no puede revelar dónde se encuentra la base desde la que operan, y sugirió que militares argentinos y norteamericanos podrían también conocer esta verdad, quizás parte de ella, o al menos intuirla.

Finalmente Andracht dijo que participará próximamente en una mesa redonda con estudiosos uruguayos del problema de los OVNI y afirmó que su meta es lograr que "Uruguay sea el primero que eleve su voz, en el ámbito que corresponde, contra esta agresión, una vez que disponga de las pruebas

'Unknown' submarines in all the world's oceans

Now also 'Unknown Floating Objects'
The movements of 'Unknown Objects' have now spread to the depths of the sea and are showing the same confident operational capabilities as the objects in the air.
In recent weeks, such USOs have been located underwater several times on both sides of the American continent and have been fiercely pursued by US Navy units.
The speed and maneuverability of these objects once again surpass anything our academic technology could achieve. So these objects have to be attributed to the same unknowns that also dominate the airspace.
(11*, 15.2.1955, S.16)

At some point and somewhere on secret submarine bases outside the German motherland, the submarines that were diverted from the German Navy and also disappeared during the last major withdrawal in April/May 1945 must have been equipped with new revolutionary technologies and also converted to electromagnetic propulsion. These are likely to have the same capabilities and techniques as the German flying discs (called UFOs).

Unidentified submarines.

In recent years, an epidemic of disappearing submarines has occurred around the world. They do not appear to belong to either the Soviet Union or the United States. Reliable, trained observers, such as pilots and ship captains, described these objects in shallow waters where no sensible submarine would dare to operate, and the fleets of New Zealand, Australia, Argentina and Venezuela left armed, assuming the mysterious submarines to catch boats within their territorial waters. However, the objects always managed to escape their pursuers.

From John A. Keel's long report: 'Underwater UFO bases alarm US'. (9*)

In contrast to the conventional Allied submarines, they very quickly reach fantastic speeds. A longer report from the 'UN' states 'sixty to seventy miles per hour', in No. 246 August 1977 another case 'over 150 knots' is stated. The Canadian Jean Prachan describes in his book 'UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle' a submarine pursued by the Americans with a speed of 280 km/h: 'Its speed was more than 28f km/h and this at a time (1963) when the record speed of a submarine was 80 km/h.' (8'~°, 5.104)

Adolf Schneider recounts an incident from 1964, at a speed of more than 200 knots: In the magazine 'Man's
Illustrated', March 1968, there is a report of a maneuver in which the aircraft carrier WASP, submarines and other ship units were used. The submarines (of the United States) were equipped for silent navigation, while above them on the surface of the Atlantic, 500 miles from the southeastern coast of the United States, one day in 1964, torpedo boat destroyers with their listening devices monitored the signals that the Underwater units were delivered and the aircraft carrier sent them up to the aircraft used for anti-submarine warfare.

Ninety meters below the surface of the water, one of the submarines suddenly separated from the (own,

Machine Translated by Google

played) attackers. Above, a bug on board one of the torpedo hunters was making a phone call to the command bridge. After receiving the call, the officer on duty rushed to the commander with an incredible look on his face. When the lieutenant captain saw him, he asked: 'What have you got?'; "Commander, there's something strange down there," the officer said, "one of the submarines has turned to another unidentified target." He added that two tracks appeared on the screen: our submarine and another object. There was only one thing that gave the watch officer pause and that was the great speed at which the 'unknown submarine' was moving. 'What is the speed?' asked the commander. 'More than 200 knots' was the answer.

With a sound of disbelief, the commander quickly left the cabin and rushed to the telephone. When he had confirmation of the incident from the senior officer in the electronics department, he sent a radio telegram to the Admiralty ship, which had already received similar messages from another torpedo hunter and from an aircraft. The trail of an underwater probe, similar to a torpedo, was then followed. What the ships and plane had picked up was the sound of an unknown submarine moving at a fantastic speed that no ship or submarine could match. The electronic instruments of 13 different ships had detected the presence of an unknown submarine, of which identical reports were made to the Commander-in-Chief in Norfolk.

(10*, S.180/181)

Jean Prachan also mentions this incident with the 'unknown submarine' during the US

Maneuvers: The 'pursuit' lasted **four days.** Depending on your mood, the mysterious vehicle appeared and disappeared again. Occasionally **it even dived to a depth of 8,000 meters,** where no 'human' submarine could ever follow it.
This incident caused panic among the American authorities; at first they thought it might be a Soviet boat. There was, of course, reason for excitement, as the object's performance exceeded anything previously known or imagined. No explanation could be found for the appearance of this incredible submarine. After a few days it disappeared as suddenly as it appeared. (8*, p.104)

On October 4, 1977, the 'Bremer Nachrichten' wrote: 'The secret services of both hemispheres are said to be in possession of extensive records of the appearance of unknown and mysterious submarines' and mention an incident in which an unknown submarine moved at a speed of 370 km/h have.

But it was not only the high speeds of these 'unknown' submarines that caused great and initially disbelieving astonishment, but also another equally astonishing factor. At some point in the last 80 decades that cannot be precisely determined, flying discs (UFOs) that plunged into the water or shot out again at another time were no longer distinguishable from USOs or unknown submarines. It seems as if the UFOs can swim and, above all, dive, but these "alien" submarines can also fly.

John A. Keel writes in the aforementioned report:
Unidentified flying objects have been consistently seen by the crews of hundreds of ships across the Atlantic. In many well-documented cases, witnesses claimed that strange metallic disc- and cigar-shaped objects suddenly emerged from the water

appeared, rose into the air, circled their ships and disappeared into the sky. In other cases, they came down to the surface of the sea and disappeared underwater. There are other confusing incidents about gigantic mysterious submarines that apparently come from no known nation. They successfully evaded all sea and air searches carried out by fleets of half a dozen countries.
All of these reports have created one of the most widespread and persistent legends of the flying disk mystery, that the UFOs are actually stationed underwater in the Atlantic, Pacific or Arctic.

On January 12, 1965, Captain K. saw from a DC-3 a metallic ship in a perfectly streamlined shape with an equally streamlined flap at the top. It didn't look like our submarines because it had no superstructure. It was about 9m long. The area where Captain K. saw this vessel is impassable for our submarines because of its mangrove swamps and sandbanks. If these unidentified underwater UFOs develop the same characteristics as the aerial UFOs, then they could also develop the same electromagnetic field. (9*)

UFOs or USOs are not only observed within the seas and oceans or in rivers, but also occasionally when diving into and emerging into inland lakes, even ponds. So let's not bother ourselves anymore with the confusion in the various reports, whether it's called a UFO, USO or even a submarine. Because Keel is absolutely right, with the same electromagnetic drive it can be whatever it wants, the original watercraft can operate in the air just like the aircraft can operate in the water. The two media air and water are interchangeable if you have this phenomenal drive, which we have already discussed in more detail in the HUGIN publication: 'Secret Miracle Weapons' Vol. III. They can maneuver equally well in the air and in the water and can therefore maneuver reciprocally.

Jean Prachan describes how in the summer of 1954, the captain and part of the crew of the Dutch ship 'Groote Beer', about 130 km off New York in the Atlantic, observed 'a strange flat object emerging from the sea'. Prachan then goes on to write:
Numerous similar cases were observed in 1954 and 1955. I can't list them all here; The list would be quite long and is not absolutely necessary for our purposes.
However, I would like to describe one in more detail because it was reported to me by the two eyewitnesses themselves. They were young soldiers then. Today they live in the Miami area. One runs a repair shop, the other is an insurance salesman. In March 1955 they were on board a US Air Force bomber that was flying over the Bahamas archipelago on a sightseeing flight. Joe C. and William H. and the other crew members first noticed something glowing moving beneath the surface of the water. Suddenly this light seemed to rise from the water. The plane did not fly very high, and the men were able to observe a yellowish-orange ball of light for two or three minutes - the light, as it **emerged from the water ,** looked like a ball that remained motionless over the sea. Then she set off and headed towards the open sea, where she disappeared within a few moments. When they returned to base, the men were **ordered to keep quiet about the apparition under threat of punishment.** So this affair remained 'secret' until I accidentally came across Joe C. while doing some research. Through him I was also able to contact William H., the only comrade with whom he was still in touch. The latter confirmed the report point by point.

The following case occurred off the coast of Venezuela, almost at the level of the Antilles

As far as we know, only Ivan T. Sanderson has mentioned it. On December 13, 1956, a Swedish ship radioed the port authority of La Guaira in Venezuela that a conical object was falling vertically into the ocean. When it hit the water, a huge explosion was heard and the sea began to boil . (8*, p. 102)

Initially, accidents were suspected, but these explosions must have had other reasons that cannot yet be classified, because the objects continued to maneuver unscathed after these incidents, as has been observed several times.

In the magazine 'Mensch und Destiny', Ing. E. Halik wrote as early as 1955: A West German news agency reported on Greenlandic experiments with 'flying submarines' several years ago. These flying objects have now been spotted several times over France and their structural details actually correspond completely to the usual submarine shape with pressure hull and turret. It would be difficult to believe that extraterrestrial entities would be so unimaginative as to copy our submarines for aviation purposes. (11*)

The last sentence is a stab at the Allied diversionary hoax with the 'aliens'; because At that time, Ing. Halik was already very familiar with German developments and the imperial German deposition. He also assumed - as we could see from his other publications - that Imperial German flying discs also operated from Greenland, among other places.
Also in his multi-page report 'No Invasion from Space' July 15, 1954, also in the humanities magazine 'Mensch und Destiny', he spoke out against the diversionary hoax about 'extraterrestrials' created by the Allies.

The evidence swells and becomes more confusing with each case. Our world is plagued not only by bizarre aerial objects of all kinds, many of which have demonstrated their ability to dive into the water and transform into submarines, but also by various secret things stationed underwater.

Someone or something seems to be rounding up people in the Bermuda Triangle. Now it looks like they - or it - are doing the same with conventional submarines. All these incredible events are in contrast to the popular opinion that the flying disks are just friendly visitors from space (this is rather a controlled and forced opinion; inserted by the author). The phenomenon appears to be all-encompassing and takes place largely beneath our oceans and lakes. Are we dealing with a phantom fleet from some secret underwater world?

Is this why the US Navy spends more money on UFO research than the US Air Force? In 1967, the Navy spent $5 million on a search project in the Bermuda Triangle using aircraft and special search submarines. In 1969, the nuclear submarine
'No.1' was quietly launched, which had 7 men on board and 100 million.
cost dollars. This submarine is kept top secret, but the Navy says it is designed to "explore the economic and military possibilities of the seabed."
From: 'Male', Nov. 1970; taken from the UN, No. 192 8/1972

'Nuclear submarine 'No.1' in 1969' is an obvious mistake, nuclear submarines existed before 1969.
Maybe a special deep submersible is meant to track down the enemy underwater.
The way the US Navy pretends to explore the seabed here is the usual and widely used form of distraction.
When the Allies send their elaborate, usually militarily equipped 'expeditions' to the North or South Pole, for example, they give

to simply look for coal or ore deposits, or to explore the spawning grounds of krill. When they venture into space, they give other harmless research reasons.

In like the other cases, they are commercial excuses and when they launch military operations into the Bermuda Triangle disguised as expeditions, which we will talk about later, they make us believe that they are looking for very specific anomalies in this area, such as strong electromagnetic aberrations, or similar meaningless excuses. In fact, the research in these military actions is of a secondary, sometimes merely distracting nature, if it is carried out at all in any case. But if you're already in Antarctica or the Triangle looking for German bases or underwater bases, why not let a few battered scientists research krill? In any case, it seems pretty harmless.

These Allied actions are about tracking down Reich German units, on land, at sea and in space. But since the Allies have allowed themselves to be presented and celebrated as victors in front of the whole world since 1945, and at the same time have also decided to systematically conceal, or at least disguise, the Reich's continued efforts after 1945, they are forced to suppress the truth again and again. The one big lie about total victory over Germany inevitably leads to many small subsequent lies.

'General-Anzeiger', Bonn, 12.1.1964

Gehen die Untertassen jetzt baden?

Italienischer Kellner entdeckte rätselhafte Unterwasserobjekte

Nicastro/Italien (upi) Es war diesmal keine fliegende Untertasse, wirkte aber genau so unirdisch: bläulich-leuchtende delphinähnliche, elektrisch geladene metallische Körper mit je drei Antennen, die im Wasser umherschwärmen. So jedenfalls beschrieb sie der Kellner Pasquale Criolese Esposito, der in einem Restaurant am Meer nahe Nicastro in Kalabrien arbeitet. Er schwört, sie gesehen zu haben.

Er, zwei andere Kellner und vier Gäste des Restaurants erblickten das bläuliche Licht im Meer, berichtet Esposito. Sie hätten daraufhin ein Boot bestiegen und seien den geheimnisvollen Körpern nachgefahren. Als sie sich ihnen näherten, seien alle bis auf einen getaucht. Das Boot habe sich dem Metallkörper genähert und ein anderer Kellner habe mit einem Ruder eine der drei meterlangen Antennen berührt. Er habe einen elektrischen Schlag erhalten und das „Ding" sei verschwunden. Als sich das Boot auf den Rückweg ans Ufer machte, seien alle „Delphine" aufgetaucht und hätten sich unter Zurücklassung eines leuchtenden Schweifes mit großer Geschwindigkeit entfernt. Ein Techniker meint, es habe sich vielleicht um Fernlenkwaffen einer ausländischen Macht gehandelt. Ähnliche Erscheinungen seien vor einiger Zeit auch in der Straße von Messina beobachtet worden.

In vielen Teilen der Welt wurden zylinderförmige Objekte beobachtet

Rätsel um geheimnisvolle Flugkörper

Forscher in der Arktis und auf den Azoren gaben ähnliche Beschreibungen

Washington. Unbekannte Flugkörper, die in letzter Zeit häufig registriert worden sind, bereiten Wissenschaftlern, großes Kopfzerbrechen.

Die amerikanische Forschungsbehörde für Luftphänomene in Washington (NICAP) teilte mit, daß mindestens 20 solcher Opjekte in allen Teilen der Welt beobachtet wurden.

Am Sonntag war – wie berichtet – ein solcher Flugkörper über den Azoren gesehen worden. Er sei, wie die portugiesische Nachrichtenagentur

waren alle gleichlautend: es soll sich um einen zylindrischen, weißer Flugkörper handeln. Argentinische und britische Wissenschaftler, die sich in der Antarktis aufhalten, teilten weiterhin dazu mit, daß ihre Instrumente von dem unbekannten Flugkörper beeinflußt worden sind.

Der Leiter der amerikanischen Forschungsbehörde, Richard Hall, wandte sich inzwischen gegen die Feststellung der US-Luftwaffe, daß bisher keine definitiven Spuren gefunden worden

Machine Translated by Google

daß mindestens 20 solcher Opjekte in allen Teilen der Welt beobachtet wurden.

Am Sonntag war – wie berichtet – ein solcher Flugkörper über den Azoren gesehen worden. Er sei, wie die portugiesische Nachrichtenagentur ANI mitteilte, 45 Minuten lang sichtbar gewesen. Während dieser Zeit waren auf dem Flugplatz Santa Maria, wie berichtet, alle elektromagnetischen Uhren stehengeblieben.

In den vergangenen Wochen wurden ähnliche mysteriöse Objekte über Argentinien, Uruguay und der Antarktis gesichtet. Die Beschreibungen

konnten Flugkörper beeinflußt worden sind.

Der Leiter der amerikanischen Forschungsbehörde, Richard Hall, wandte sich inzwischen gegen die Feststellung der US-Luftwaffe, daß bisher keine definitiven Spuren gefunden worden seien und daß Berichte darüber unwahrscheinlich wären: „Die weltweiten Berichte zeigen klar, daß es an der Zeit ist, daß uns die amerikanische Regierung die wirkliche Geschichte über diese Erscheinungen mitteilt“, sagte

„Nürnberger Nachrichten“ vom 13. 7. 1965

Ich halte nichts von der außerirdischen These, sondern meine, daß die Ufos aus dem Inneren der Erde und von Hochgebirgen wie dem Hochland von Tibet und den Anden kommen, ferner aus unterseeischen Basen vor der Westküste und der Ostküste der USA. Insbesondere steht bei mir der militärische Charakter der Ufos weit im Vordergrund.

A. Wörner, Ufo-Studio Mayen, Mayen

Leserbrief aus: 'Bunte Illustrierte', Nr. 14, April 1982

„Riesenzigarre“ auf dem Meeresgrund

In einer Tiefe von etwa 150 Metern erschien auf den Radarschirmen zweier australischer Kriegsschiffe, die eine spezielle Ausrüstung zum Auffinden von Unterseebooten hatten, ein etwa 90 Meter langes zigarrenförmiges Objekt. Zunächst glaubte man, daß es sich um ein U-Boot handelte, aber diese Vermutung konnte nicht aufrechterhalten werden. Infolge der großen Wassertiefe konnten aber keine genaueren Untersuchungen vorgenommen werden. Ein deutscher Auswanderer, der in Sydney eine Taucherfirma gegründet hat, hat sich nun freiwillig gemeldet, um das seltsame Objekt näher zu untersuchen. Sein Angebot blieb jedoch bisher vom Verteidigungsministerium Australiens noch ohne Antwort. „Schwalmbote“

'UFO-Nachrichten', Nr.55, 1961

Machine Translated by Google

The strategic importance of the Bermuda Triangle

December 1944, the destruction of Germany by the Allies was in full swing. To make up for losses, seven American bombers were ordered to Italy to be used against German targets. After briefly refueling in Bermuda, the seven aircraft were now back over the Atlantic, about 480 km to the east, when electromagnetic interference suddenly occurred in the ignition, radio and other electrical on-board systems. An incident that, as we now know, appears very often in connection with 'UFOs'. With great difficulty, only two of the seven bombers were able to escape back to Bermuda. Since then, there has been no trace of the other machines.

On December 5, 1945, almost exactly a year later, five TBM Avenger bombers took off from the US naval base in Fort Lauderdale, Florida, on what was said to be a training flight. The suddenly interrupted radio communication between the airport and the planes made it clear that a catastrophe had been brewing for the five bombers. Of the two flying boats sent out twenty minutes later to search for and possibly rescue the crew, only one returned without results. What was probably the largest rescue operation in the history of aviation was initiated, but it also remained unsuccessful. Not a single thing was found of the five bombers and the flying boat: But despite one of the most intensive search operations in history, with 240 aircraft, 67 additional aircraft from the aircraft carrier 'Solomon' four destroyers, several submarines, eighteen coast guard ships, search and Rescue cutters, hundreds of private aircraft, yachts and boats, additional aircraft from Banana River Naval Air Station and assistance from British Navy and Air Force units in the Bahamas, nothing was found.
A daily average of 167 flights, from morning to evening, carried out approximately 90 meters above sea level, a detailed survey of 100,000 square kilometers of land and sea, over the Atlantic, the Caribbean, the Gulf of Mexico, the mainland of Florida and the neighboring ones Islands, a search time of 4,100 hours, all these efforts yielded no results - neither survivors, life rafts, wreckage or oil stains. The beaches of Florida and the Bahamas were searched daily for several weeks for identifiable flotsam that could have come from the missing planes, but without results. (22*, p.27)

Almost all lengthy reports and books about the infamous Bermuda Triangle begin with these two classic cases.
We also reported on this in 'Secret Wonder Weapons', Volume II, 5.13 + 17 ff.

Some say the term 'Bermuda Triangle' was born after the disappearance of the five TBM bombers. Jean Prachan, David Group and others claim that the freelance writer and famous inventor Vincent H. Gaddis first coined it in his article 'The Deadly Bermuda Triangle', in the magazine 'Argosy', February 1964. Be that as it may, everyone agrees that these extraordinary, initially inexplicable events began in 1944/45. It was only later that authors - those who belonged to the secrecy group - and later also those who simply retell the story, began to include older and much older ship accidents in order to give the impression that these events were ancient and therefore nothing new or special for this area. There have been unexplained ship accidents at all times and suitable cases were quickly found in old ship documents. But in times of ship piracy and poor technology, where radio systems were just like that. Although we didn't yet know search operations with aircraft, unsolved cases were still understandable. There was also a lack of modern SOS emergency call systems in the past, which today, on modern ships, should the radio center be unmanned, automatically send out their emergency call when the ship sinks, and if we are correctly informed, up to a water depth of 50-100 m

Because far more ships and aircraft disappear in the Bahamas than in Bermuda, the term is wrong, argues Prachan. Furthermore, it is just a journalistic slogan, as the events cannot be limited to this area. Which is also true, because the increasing number of reports about extraordinary ship and aircraft accidents, including their disappearance without a trace, are, if you look closely, of a global nature.
However, it must be taken into account that there are certain focal points worldwide and this undoubtedly includes the so-called Bermuda Triangle, perhaps the most priority area of all.

Machine Translated by Google

AMERIKA
VEREINIGTE STAATEN
Salt Lake City
Denver
Mt. Elbert
Kansas City
Minneapolis
St Paul
Milwaukee
Chicago
Detroit
Hamilton
Toronto
Ottawa
Québec
Montréal
Saint John
Halifax
C. Race
Boston
Buffalo
New York
Philadelphia
Pittsburgh
Baltimore
Washington
Cincinnati
St. Louis
Memphis
Norfolk
Atlanta
Dallas
El Paso
Houston
New Orleans
Jacksonville
Tampa
Cape Canaveral
Miami
Bermuda (GB)
BAHAMAS
Nassau
Monterrey
MEXIKO
GOLF VON MEXIKO
Tampico
León
Mexico City
Veracruz
Puebla
Acapulco
Mérida
La Habana
KUBA
GROSSE ANTILLEN
WEST-INDIEN
Santiago de Cuba
HAITI
DOM. REP.
Port au Prince
Santo Domingo
PUERTO RICO (USA)
San Juan
Kingston
JAMAIKA
Belize
BELIZE
GUAT.
Guatemala
HOND.
NICAR.
Managua
MITTEL AMERIKA
San José
COSTA RICA
PANAMA
KARIBISCHES MEER
KLEINE ANTILLEN
ANTIGUA UND BARBUDA
Guadeloupe
DOMINICA
Martinique
ST. LUCIA
BARBADOS
ST. VINCENT
GRENADA
TRINIDAD U. TOBAGO
Aruba
Curaçao (Niederl.)
Caracas
Barranquilla
Maracaibo
Medellin
VENEZUELA
Orinoco
Georgetown
Paramaribo
Cayenne
ATLANTISCHER OZEAN
Nördlicher Wendekreis
Açores (Port.)

Bild der Wissenschaft, Nr.7, Juli 1983

Das größte Radio-Raster-Teleskop der Welt ist die Arecibo-Anlage im Hinterland der Insel Puerto Rico. Es hat einen Durchmesser von 305 m. Der

natürliches Tal eingelassen. Die aufgefangenen Radiowellen werden in einer hoch im Brennpunkt angebrachten Antenne gebündelt. Von dort werden

tet, wo sie analysiert werden. Es geht auch umgekehrt: Benutzt man die Anlage als Sender, kann die Antenne ein Signal in den Reflektor strahlen,

Machine Translated by Google

Bild der Wissenschaft, Nr.7, Juli 1983

Das größte Radio-Raster-Teleskop der Welt ist die Arecibo-Anlage im Hinterland der Insel Puerto Rico. Es hat einen Durchmesser von 305 m. Der Reflektor aus Maschendraht ist in ein natürliches Tal eingelassen. Die aufgefangenen Radiowellen werden in einer hoch im Brennpunkt angebrachten Antenne gebündelt. Von dort werden die Signale in den Kontrollraum geleitet, wo sie analysiert werden. Es geht auch umgekehrt: Benutzt man die Anlage als Sender, kann die Antenne ein Signal in den Reflektor strahlen, von dem es dann ins All gelenkt wird.

The Bermuda Triangle, more commonly known as the Devil's Triangle, is part of the Sargasso Sea and lies just off the east coast of the USA. To this day, the USA in particular, alongside the Soviet Union, is one of the largest war opponents of the continuing German Reich and the German people, which is very important. The vertices of the triangle are given by some as Florida/Bermuda/Puerto Rico, by others as Florida/Bermuda/Cuba or from the Gulf of Mexico across Florida to Bermuda/ Puerto Rico (see sketch). In my opinion, the better geographical identification would be a huge semicircle, starting around Boston/New York on the US east coast, from there via Bermuda and Puerto Rico to the Panama Canal. The entire Caribbean, including the Gulf of Mexico and the US south coast. With the focus in the center: Bahamas and Cape Canaveral.

But let's stick with the given triangle. Why are more 'submarines of unknown nationality', more 'USOs' and more 'UFOs' sighted in this sea area than in other sea areas? Why do more planes and ships disappear here than anywhere else? Because we are dealing with a highly explosive military, strategic and communications-relevant area. What, however, is consciously suppressed by the secrecy group and simply ignored by uninitiated or ignorant authors:

Let's start with the **Bermuda Islands,** which give their name to this triangle. As early as the 18th century they were expanded into a British naval base and later expanded to include an air base. In 1941, England also leased two areas to the USA for 99 years to establish a naval and air force base.

With a contract dated September 2, 1940, parts of the **Bahamas** were also leased from England to the United States for 99 years and the latter expanded them into another fleet and air base. (Preparatory measures by the USA for its entry into war against Germany.) The Bahamas have been described as so-called independent since 1973, but the head of state is still the English Queen.

Puerto Rico is subordinate to the USA. This island occupies a strategically important position as the eastern flank protection of the USA; on the one hand with the naval port of San Juan on the island, on the other hand with the naval base in Saint Thomas on the Virgin Islands to the east, English: Virgin Islands (Meyers Lexikon, 1940).
Puerto Rico is also the hub for all submarine cable connections (telephone) on the entire US east coast, especially for New York (center of the Jewish bankers) and Washington DC (seat of government for the gangsters, also contemptuously called 'Chicago Boys' by many Americans), via Bermuda, as well as for the state of Florida with the US space center Cape Canaveral. Also as a connection to the South American continent via Caracas (Venezuela).

The most important thing on this island is probably the largest radio grid telescope system in the world, built in 1964 in a valley near Arecibo, with a diameter of 305m. In order to make the facility appear harmlessly scientific, it was built by Cornell University, but was taken over by the US War Department (Pentagon) immediately after completion. On April 8, 1960, the Americans began Project **OZMA** to establish 'contact with extraterrestrial intelligences', as they trivialize it to the public. Project OZMA was started at the 28 m telescope in Green Bank, but was moved there after the much larger and more powerful facility on Puerto Rico was completed. The results obtained via OZMA were immediately declared secret by the Pentagon. (21*, pp.139-142)

I wonder why? Because it's really about cracking the internal message CODE of the so-called UFOs! It is known that the German Wehrmacht's radio CODE was cracked by the Allies due to treason, but it is also known that the German naval CODE has not been deciphered to this day. Given the technical soaring on the German side before and after 1945 (UFOs, USOs), it remains questionable whether the known wave ranges were still used at all, or whether the usual radio was able to be completely overcome and instead opened up possibilities that lie beyond school scientific ideas. In many Allied and other states, efforts have long been made to identify the 'extraterrestrials' using radio telescopes and other techniques, the ' **higher intelligences** in space', and the Soviet Union, for example at the Radiophysical Institute or whatever you like occasionally in Gorky, under the direction of Dr. V. Troitzky, a but also in the world's oceans, to tap into information technology. Under 'listening' program against the flying discs, but as was cautiously revealed between the lines, so far without any success.

The Arecibo facility also serves as an essential communications link for the White House, the Pentagon, NASA Control Center in Houston (on the Gulf of Mexico), and Cape Canaveral; partly coupled with the military satellites in space. This is probably the main reason why Puerto Rico has been literally swarmed and besieged by 'UFOs' in various years, often for months. Over the mountains of Adjuntas in the interior of Puerto Rico, whole swarms of UFOs appeared again and again over a period of three months, almost as if on a fixed schedule. They sent out sideways beams of light, flew in closed formation (a German form of flight; inserted by the author) at a low altitude - about 300 m - made precise right-angle turns (impossible for an airplane), hovered motionless in the air and then suddenly disappeared without a trace. (13*, p.219)

In his book 'Spurlos', Berlitz describes various UFO events and sightings on the island and then names the months August, September, October 1972 for the mass sightings mentioned above.

Jean Prachan, 'UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle', has a similar report from 1973: It is important to note here that in 1973 the Caribbean, Puerto Rico and the southern part of the triangle were hit by a real wave of UFOs. The peak of this 'wave' was in October/November. Dozens of objects have been observed in the Caribbean, all appearing and submerging.' (8*, p.112)

To go into more detail, we take a passage from ßerlitz 'Spurlos' about events in Puerto Rico: Although UFO sightings have been reported by millions of observers from all parts of the world, they seem to be concentrated in the Bermuda Triangle. In Puerto Rico, for example, in 1972 they appeared with such frequency that there were severe traffic jams as people informed by television, radio and the press flocked to the highways to observe swarms of UFOs and their precise maneuvers in the night sky.

Some drivers experienced another surprise on their drive home from watching the demonstration in the sky. At a certain point between San Sebastian and Lares (located in the interior of the island) a huge, low-flying UFO appeared, while at the same time all the car engines stopped and only restarted when the UFO sent out orange and red flashes of light or flames , suddenly rose vertically and disappeared.

During the same period, in Rio Piedras, a suburb of San Juan (here is the US naval port; inserted by the author), a huge UFO also appeared during an outdoor birthday party, blinding those present with a greenish-blue light emitted as it glided very close - about 100 meters above the party guests.

Numerous other people also observed the phenomenon from nearby homes as the UFO slowly floated between two twenty-story apartment buildings; several cars stopped because their engines stopped. Suddenly the strange flying object rose vertically in a cloud of red mist, changed direction, headed towards a nearby power plant and suddenly disappeared (it probably made itself invisible at that moment, which we will talk about later; inserted by the author). (13*, p.219/220)

Many individual examples could be cited from the island, but let's get back to the topic: The phenomena about Puerto Rico are in no way limited to the two years 1972/73 and there should be no doubt at all that this important information center of the USA is constantly tapped by the 'UFOs' in order to be precisely informed about the military and criminal nuclear intentions of the opponents. So much for Puerto Rico.

To the west, the Bermuda Triangle is bordered by the American east coast, mainly **Florida,** where various military bases such as Fort Lauderdale, scattered missile launch pads and, above all, the American 'spaceport' are located. In the maritime area off Florida, it was not only the Soviet military that was spying, observing all operations and launches from Cape Canaveral, camouflaged by seemingly harmless merchant ships and fishing boats - despite the Allied alliance with the USA. Here the flying disks are also in constant observational readiness; they accompanied the USA's Apollo spacecraft to the moon, as was well known, and they monitor all takeoffs and landings. Controlled, it would be better to say, because since the Challenger was shot down the Americans have apparently had a launch ban imposed by the 'higher intelligentsia', which they have themselves to blame for. With the 'Green Box' on board, which contained capsules with highly toxic substances that kill in two seconds - as the daily press reported - the Chicago boys were apparently once again planning one of their usual large-scale crimes, perhaps against one another of German bases and bases at the North or South Pole. We will discuss the Challenger explosion and the Green Box in detail in the next brochure about space, which has already been announced. Let us also remember that one of the main tasks set by the German flying disc force is to prevent a nuclear war; which they have successfully done for decades.

Furthermore, the triangle is also affected by the trouble spot **Cuba,** which has become communist . Here there are pro-communist agent activities as well as pro-American ones, who use seemingly harmless fishing boats, merchant ships and private sailing yachts as camouflage.

Machine Translated by Google

It is also worth mentioning that the entire maritime area off the east and south coasts of the USA - including the Bermuda Triangle - is the busiest area on earth in terms of shipping and air traffic.

We have shown sufficiently that this sea and island area is of outstanding strategic and military importance, which also makes the constant presence, or rather surveillance, of so-called UFOs and USOs understandable: The series of UFO sightings in 1972 is Only exceptional because of the large number of eyewitnesses. UFO sightings as such are so common on the coast of Florida, the Bahamas, Haiti, the Dominican Republic, Cuba and other Caribbean islands, as well as near and over Bermuda and the sea between these islands, that they are covered on the radio and in the press hardly ever be mentioned if they were only seen by a few people. Only when thousands of people notice the same phenomenon does it become newsworthy for the mass media. But even then, due to the frequency of such observations, they are soon forgotten and filed away. (13*, p.222)

The Bermuda archipelago alone consists of 350 islands and islets, of which only 20 are inhabited. The conditions are similar in the Greater Antilles and the Bahamas. The latter consist of 29 larger, mostly inhabited islands, 660 mostly uninhabited islets and 2,400 rocky cliffs and coral reefs, which extend from Florida to 900 km in a southeasterly direction. It is no exaggeration to assume that there are several thousand islands and islets for the entire sea area discussed here. Truly an ideal area for underwater bases and hideouts for the USOs and secret landing opportunities for flying discs. Therefore, assumptions and even claims about UFO and USO bases in the Bermuda Triangle have been made in the relevant literature for decades.

As Grand Admiral Dönitz said to naval cadets in Laboe near Kiel in October 1944?: The German Navy still has a special task to fulfill in the future... The German Navy knows all the hiding places of the seas and it will be easy for it... . (see 'Secret Wonder Weapons' , Bd.I, S.43)

Das Todesdreieck auf der Landkarte

Tausend Menschen in 20 Jahren verschollen — Flugzeuge erforschen atmosphärische Störungen — Ein unheimlicher Fleck

Von dem SÜDKURIER-Mitarbeiter A. Kenley, Washington

„Projekt Magnet" der US-Marine soll ein Rätsel lösen, welches seit hundert Jahren die Schiffahrt und seit 20 Jahren die Luftfahrt bewegt: Die atmosphärischen und magnetischen Verhältnisse im sogenannten Bermuda- oder Todesdreieck. Seine Basis bildet die 1700 Kilometer lange Luftlinie zwischen Puerto Rico und einem Punkt zwischen West Palm Beach und Orlando an der Ostküste Floridas. Zieht man von ihm und von Puerto Rico auf der Karte Linien zu den Bermuda-Inseln, so erhält man eine 1500 Kilometer lange westliche und 1550 Kilometer lange östliche Seitenlinie. In diesem Dreieck verschwinden seit 100 Jahren Schiffe und neuerdings auch Flugzeuge, ohne Spuren zu hinterlassen.

Ein Unglück vom 5. Dezember 1945, bei welchem fünf Avenger-Torpedobomber mit 20 Mann Besatzung in diesem Raum verloren gingen, ohne daß man Wrackteile fand, lenkte die Aufmerksamkeit des US-Verteidigungsministerium auf das Dreieck. In den Vorfall war noch ein Marineflugboot verwickelt, das zur Suche startete und 20 Minuten später ebenfalls keine Nachricht mehr gab. Im Januar 1948 ging eine Passagiermaschine mit 31 Menschen verloren, welche von den Azoren nach Kuba gestartet war. Eine viermotorige Maschine verschwand im Bermuda-Dreieck am 17. Januar 1949. Im Oktober 1954 war es eine amerikanische Super-Constellation mit 42 Personen an Bord; obwohl sie zwei voneinander unabhängige Funkanlagen hatte, gab sie wie die anderen verschollenen Maschinen keinen Notruf. Am 9. November 1956 ging dort ein Patrouillen-Flugzeug der US-Marine verloren.

Die jüngsten Fälle betreffen drei Flugzeuge und zwei Schiffe. Am 8. Januar 1962

reidampfer „Sno' Boy" mit 40 Personen vermißt, von dem sich nach zehntägiger Suche nicht einmal ein Holzstück fand. Im August schließlich flogen aus Florida zwei Strato-Tanker vom Typ KC-135 zu einer Luft-Tankübung aus und gaben vor dem Dreieck noch Positionsmeldung, um dann nichts wieder von sich hören zu lassen.

Keine Leiche gefunden

Das Schiffsregister meldet aus jenem Raum noch mehr Schiffverluste, als dort Flugzeuge verschollen sind. Als man die älteren Bände aufschlug, zeigte es sich, daß seit hundert Jahren dort dauernd Fahrzeuge verschwunden sind, deren Untergang keine Erklärung fand. Ab 1945 forderte das Bermuda-Dreieck rund tausend Menschenleben. Nicht eine Leiche wurde aufgefischt. Das rief eine gemeinsame Aktion der amerikanischen und kanadischen Kriegsmarine ins Leben, das „Projekt Magnet".

Eine Anzahl Super-Constellations mit empfindlichen Meßgeräten beobachten die atmosphärischen und magnetischen Verhältnisse dieser Region. Bereits 1950 hatte ein kanadischer Regierungsexperte bei Versuchsflügen im Dreieck „Schichten von verminderter atmosphärischer Bindung" festgestellt, welche als Abweichungen Kompaß, Funk und elektronische Geräte beeinflussen. Die letzten kanadisch-amerikanischen Messungen ergaben etwas Einmaliges, nämlich „besondere magnetische Kräfte, die nicht von der Erde, sondern von oben kommen", wie es hieß. Anscheinend lösen sie plötzliche Katastrophen bei Flugzeugen und Schiffen aus, die sich hinterher nicht mehr nachweisen lassen.

?

Eine einzige Andeutung über ihre Art besitzen wir im letzten Funkspruch eines

Machine Translated by Google

sie wie die anderen verschollenen Maschinen keinen Notruf. Am 9. November 1956 ging dort ein Patrouillen-Flugzeug der US-Marine verloren.

Die jüngsten Fälle betreffen drei Flugzeuge und zwei Schiffe. Am 8. Januar 1962 schnitt ein Düsen-Tankflugzeug auf der Route Virginie—Azoren das Todesdreieck und kam nicht über dessen Grenzen hinaus. Am 2. Februar 1963 ging ein Schwefeltanker mit 39 Besatzungsmitgliedern auf der Reise von Beaumont (Texas) nach Norfolk (Virginia) in jenem Raum unter; von ihm wurden noch schwache, aber verstümmelte Signale aufgefangen. Seit dem 1. Juli 1963 wird im Bermuda-Dreieck der Fische-

kommen", wie es hieß. Anscheinend lösen sie plötzliche Katastrophen bei Flugzeugen und Schiffen aus, die sich hinterher nicht mehr nachweisen lassen.

Eine einzige Andeutung über ihre Art besitzen wir im letzten Funkspruch eines der fünf Torpedobomber, die zusammen am 5. Dezember 1945 abstürzten. Der Flugschwadronsführer sagte mit halb erstickter Stimme: „Wir scheinen verloren zu sein — — alles geht falsch — — seltsam! Auch der Ozean sieht nicht so aus, wie er aussehen sollte . . ." Damit war die Verbindung für immer unterbrochen.

'Süd-Kurier', Konstanz,
13.3.1964

Machine Translated by Google

'Bild' H.H. 14.8.1985

Lloyds meldet: 20 Schiffe spurlos verschwunden

Spukt es im Bermuda-Dreieck wirklich? Wieder sind zwei indische Frachter mit 44 Seeleuten an Bord spurlos verschwunden.

In den letzten fünf Jahren verschwanden 20 Frachter auf den Weltmeeren. Auch zwei deutsche: Von der „Rugwardersand" (1569 Tonnen) kam am 18. Februar 1981 das letzte Rufzeichen aus dem Mittelmeer, und die „Wheststar" (1205 Tonnen) meldete sich am 6. Mai 1981 zuletzt aus dem Atlantik vor Portugal – kein Brett, kein Tuch kam je zum Vorschein.

Lloyds-Versicherung in London: „Bis heute gibt es keine Erklärung für das Verschwinden." Die Engländer veröffentlichten eine Karte, in der alle seit 1980 verschollenen Schiffe eingezeichnet sind – die meisten im Bermuda-Dreieck. **bri**

'Oberhessische Presse', Marburg, 4.1.1986

Jedes Jahr verschwinden fünf Schiffe spurlos

Bremen (dpa/vwd). Fünf Handelsschiffe verschwinden durchschnittlich in jedem Jahr ohne eine Spur zu hinterlassen. Obwohl die Rettungseinrichtungen verbessert wurden, gingen von 1975 bis 1984 nach Angaben des Bremer Instituts für Seeverkehrswirtschaft 52 Handelsschiffe verloren, ohne daß ein Zeuge aufzutreiben war. Insgesamt mußten in diesem Zeitraum weltweit 3 770 Handelsschiffe mit einer Tonnage von rund 15,6 Millionen BRT als Totalverluste abgeschrieben werden. Besonders verlustträchtig waren die Jahre 1979 mit 456 und 1984 mit 327 Schiffen.

...und das sind nur die Handelsschiffe, ohne Kriegsschiffe, ohne Flugzeuge !
...und ferner werden die Angaben zur Verharmlosung nach unten frisiert !

Ship and aircraft accidents are as old as shipping and aviation themselves. Every year, an average of 250-300 ships sink in all of the world's oceans, with a clearance rate of 90-95%. We are interested in the majority of unsolved cases here. Ships or airplanes that mysteriously disappear without a trace or are found floating completely intact but deserted.
More than 600 vessels disappeared off the coast of the United States between 1974 and 1976, many of them in the Triangle. (13*, p. 68)

Similar to December 1944 and December 1945, on December 19, 1946 there were five US P-47 fighter aircraft in the airspace of the Bermuda Triangle. A sixth aircraft accompanied the convoy and witnessed it flying into a cloud, but only four of the original five aircraft emerged. During the search operation that was then initiated, two of the B-17 'Flying Fortresses' involved were also missing and were not found again. (14*, p.126)

Superfortress C-54:
On July 3, 1947, an American Army C-54 with a crew of six disappeared on a routine flight from the Bermuda Islands to Morrison Military Airport near Palm Beach. The plane's last known position was about 100 miles from Bermuda. An immediate search effort by the Army, Navy and Coast Guard at sea and in the air spanned 100,000 square miles of sea surface. No oil stains or wreckage were spotted. (12*, p. 32/33)

After a fruitless search, American Air Force officials **hypothesized** that a powerful current of rising air near a storm cloud might have destroyed the **bomber .** (15*, p.118; also 8*; 15*; 16*)

Then the US Air Force should be seriously advised to only carry out their flights when the sky is clear!

Another complicated mystery was the loss of three aircraft from the British 'South American Airline': Star Dust, Star Tieger and Star Ariel - all of the Tudor IV type. (16*, p.16)
The **Star Tiger,** a four-engine passenger aircraft..., a converted Lancaster bomber, disappeared on January 29, 1948 on a flight from the Azores to the Bermuda Islands. On board the plane were a crew of six and twenty-five passengers, including Sir Arthur Cunningham, Lieutenant General of the British Air Force in World War II and former commander of the Second Tactical Air Fleet. The Star Tiger was scheduled to land at Kinley Airport in Bermuda. Shortly before ETA (estimated time of arrival) at 10:30 p.m., the pilot transmitted a message to the control tower that included the phrases: 'Weather and flight conditions excellent' and 'Expecting scheduled landing'. The aircraft's position was given as 380 miles northeast of Bermuda.
No further reports were made, but the Star Tiger did not reach its destination. There was no SOS, no emergency call, no indication that the flight was not going under the best conditions. At midnight the Star Tiger was called

reported overdue, and a full-scale relief operation began the next day, January 30th. Thirty aircraft and ten ships searched the area for several days without success. (12*, p.33; also 8*; 16*; 12*)

Almost exactly a year later, on January 17, 1949, the sister aircraft, the **Star Ariel,** disappeared under almost similar conditions and in an equally mysterious
manner: 'position about 180 miles (290 km) south of Bermuda,' reported Captain McPhee, an experienced pilot with 4200 flying hours; 'Weather good. I'm switching over to the Nassau frequency' .
That was his last radio message.
The 'Star Ariel', seven crew members and thirteen passengers were never seen again.
At this time, maneuvers were taking place in an area several hundred kilometers south of Bermuda, in which a battleship, aircraft carriers, cruisers, destroyers and others took part. This entire fleet immediately set out to search. Two destroyers even went to a spot 480 km south of Bermuda where a US Air Force airliner and a bomber had seen a green glow over the sea. Thousands of square kilometers were combed: not one oil patch, not one aircraft part, not one body.

However, the search soon had a new target, the fishing boat 'Driftwood', which had also disappeared while crossing from Fort Lauderdale to Bimini with five men on board. But both the 'Star Ariel' and the 'Driftwood' remained untraceable. (8*, p.35)

Elsewhere, Prachan again emphasizes this peculiar green glow and writes: On that day, January 17, 1949, to my knowledge, no UFO was seen. But one should not forget in this context that two aircraft, a bomber from the US Air Force and a passenger aircraft from the English company BOAC, which were independently involved in the search operation, reported that they were on the water where the plane disappeared , saw a strange greenish glow. The cases of the 'Star Tiger' and the 'Star Ariel' are much more similar than the official reports suggest. Perhaps today both aircraft are side by side somewhere 8,000 or 9,000 meters under the sea, surrounded by completely waterproof retaining walls that belong to an undersea base. That is now the question.

'Many researchers have long been aware of the connection between UFOs and the Bermuda Triangle, a connection that has nothing to do with coincidence,' writes the correspondent for 'UFO Report', whom I have quoted before.
'Long ago' is probably a bit of an exaggeration, as this connection has only been talked about since 1973. It is surprising that it has taken so long to establish your connection, but it is important to remember that the public has only recently become aware of the events in the Bermuda Triangle. Although there were rumors in certain circles (in the army, air force and among sailors, for example) about the intervention of UFOs, until 1973 no one dared to say it publicly. (8*, p.148; also 12*; 16*; 17*)
The other sister aircraft, the **Star Dust,** was lost off the Chilean coast in 1947.

Januar 1949
Star Ariel

Am 17. Januar verschwand die «Star Ariel», eine Passagiermaschine der British South American Airways Corporation, unter ähnlichen Umständen wie genau ein Jahr zuvor ihre Schwestermaschine, die «Star Tiger». Mit 7 Mann Besatzung und 13 Passagieren startete das viermotorige Flugzeug von Kindley Field, Bermuda, hinein in einen schönen Morgenhimmel zu einem Flug nach Jamaika. Eine Stunde später setzte Flugkapitän McPhee eine Routineflugmeldung nach Bermuda ab: «Wir sind auf Reisehöhe, das Wetter ist gut. Voraussichtliche Ankunftszeit in Kingston wie geplant.» Von der «Star Ariel» wurde nie wieder etwas gesehen oder gehört. Man wußte, daß das Flugzeug zum Zeitpunkt seines letzten Funkspruchs auf Kurs gewesen war, und die Navigationsausrüstung garantierte, daß es auf dem richtigen Weg bzw. nahe daran bleiben würde. Wäre die Maschine auf Grund eines technischen Defektes abgestürzt, wären Wrackteile über ein weites Gebiet verstreut gewesen. Wäre es zu einer Notwasserung gekommen, auf einer wie man weiß sehr ruhigen See, hätte es einige Überlebende geben müssen. Zumindest wären die beiden Rettungsflöße automatisch aus ihren Halterungen in den Tragflächen ausgelöst und gefunden worden. Doch die intensive Suche, die bei ausgezeichnetem Wetter stattfand, war vergebens. Nicht eine Spur der Maschine oder ihrer Passagiere wurde je gefunden.

Eine vom Ministerium für Zivile Luftfahrt durchgeführt Untersuchung war außerstande, die Ursache des Verschwindens zu erklären.

Nach dem Bericht des Ministeriums für Zivile Luftfahrt hatte die Maschine für den 5 1/2-Stunden-Flug Treibstoff für 10 Stunden an Bord. Sie flog mit Rückenwind und hatte eine relativ leichte Ladung. Das Wetter war ausgezeichnet, die Maschine befand sich über der Frostgrenze, ein Vereisen war also ausgeschlossen.*

Die Besatzung bestand aus sehr fähigen Leuten. Kapitän McPhee hatte 2400 Flugstunden, 2000 davon als Kapitän von BSAA-Maschinen, und er besaß langjährige Erfahrung auf der Route, auf der er verschwand. Die übrigen Offiziere waren erfahren, besonders der Funker war bekannt für seine überragenden Fähigkeiten. Die vier Rolls-Royce-Motoren hatten sich alle in der Vergangenheit bewährt, und es gab keinen Grund für den Verdacht, sie hätten irgendeinen Defekt aufgewiesen. Die De Havilland-Propeller hatten in der Geschichte der Tudor niemals versagt. Die Maschine verfügte über eine komplette Navigationsausrüstung mit mehreren Empfängern und Sendern, Richtungsfindern, einem Radiokompaß und Radar.

Die Rettungsausrüstung bestand aus drei aufblasbaren Schlauchbooten, von denen jedes Platz für 15 – 18 Personen hatte und mit Rettungshilfen bei Seenot, erster Hilfe und einem Funkgerät versehen war. Das Radio im Schlauchboot, das sich im Innern des Flugzeuges befand, hatte einen automatischen SOS-Sender mit einer geschätzten Reichweite bis zu ca. 75 Meilen.

Bei einer evtl. Berührung des Flugzeuges mit Wasser würden durch einen automatischen Schaltvorgang die Schlauchboote aus ihren Halterungen gelöst und aufgeblasen. Schwimmwesten für alle Passagiere und die Besatzung befanden sich an Bord, und zusätzlich zu den regulären Türen gab es 5 Notausgänge für den Ernstfall.

Ein technischer Defekt als Ursache des Unglücks wurde von vornherein ausgeschlossen, da er durch die Art und Weise, wie sich die Tudor in der Vergangenheit bewährt hatte, äußerst unwahrscheinlich schien. Die Maschine war mehr als 350 Stunden ohne Probleme geflogen, die Meteorologen waren sicher, daß es entlang der Route keine Turbulenzen gegeben haben konnte. Hätte ein Konstruktionsdefekt vorgelegen, hätte der bei einer Flughöhe von 6000 m recht niedrige Innendruck wohl kaum zu einem Zerbersten der Maschine geführt.

Die Möglichkeit von Sabotage wurde nicht völlig ausgeschlossen. Man fand jedoch keinen Beweis dafür, daß sie bei einer Katastrophe eine Rolle gespielt haben könnte.

Nach dem Wetterbericht des Königlichen Meteorologischen Instituts gab es keine wetterbedingten Komplikationen irgendwelcher Art. Es gab entlang der Route zwar einige Wolken, doch lagen sie alle beträchtlich unter der Flughöhe. Über den Wolken war die Sicht unbegrenzt, darunter nur leicht beeinträchtigt.

(15*)

* Eis kann sich auf einem Flugzeug nur nahe der Frostgrenze bilden. Über der entsprechenden Höhe sind die Wasserpartikelchen gefroren und haften nicht an der Maschine.

Even before the Star Ariel, a chartered DC-3 took off from San Juan, Puerto Rico at 10:30 p.m. on December 27, 1948, heading for Miami, Florida. This small type of aircraft was long considered by Americans to be the most reliable machine ever built. The weather was excellent, the pilots were experienced and captain Robert Linquist, co-pilot Ernest Hill Jr., stewardess Mary Burks, three other crew members and 29 passengers from New York City could already see the fairy lights of Miami in front of their eyes after a pleasant flight. It was now dawn, and at 4:30 a.m. Captain Linquist sent the following radio message received from the radio tower: 'We are approaching the airport... Only 50 miles south... We can already see the lights of Miami. Everything is fine on board, we will report later for shore instructions.' The control tower confirmed reception, but never heard anything from the machine again, no SOS call, no MAYDAY message, no explosion was heard, no flash of light was seen. The plane literally disappeared before the eyes of the flight control team, especially over the Florida Kays, where the water depth is only 5-7 m, the water is so clear that the seabed can at least be seen from the aircraft, and wreckage can be seen immediately would be. But the search operation that was initiated immediately was without any success. 50 aircraft, ten ships and a dozen smaller watercraft were involved in the search operation. The Army, Navy and Coast Guard combed an area of 100,000 - according to another source 300,000 - square miles by sea and air and again not a lifebuoy, a piece of wreckage, an oil stain or any other trace was found. The DC-3 has remained missing to this day. (8*; 12*; 15*; 16*; 17*; DNZ No. 8/1975)

D. Group gives the following summary of these aircraft losses: These and other losses since 1947 have all the basic elements of the typical disappearance of aircraft over the Bermuda Triangle: It is a quiet night. The plane, which usually stays less than a hundred kilometers from the coast, broadcasts the last message before entering Triangle airspace. Everything is fine and the pilot believes that they will arrive on time. Only when no more messages arrive within the calculated time until landing does the ground crew become restless and send out a search plane. But you can't find anything. The investigative commissions are at a loss. Losses continued to mount in the 1960s and 1970s. (16*, p. 16/ 17)

1950 was a quiet year. On April 5, the Puerto Rican freighter **Sandra** set sail from Savannah, Georgia, bound for Venezuela with 340 tons of DDT and was never seen again. (15*, pp.148-149 and other sources)

In March an American 'Globemaster' disappeared in the northern part of the triangle on the way to Ireland and on June 9, 1950 another DC-3, about which we lack further information in the cases. (8*; 16*)

Among those cases that occurred in the Bermuda Triangle after the end of World War II, the loss of the Brazilian warship **Sao Paulo** is particularly curious. The Sao Paulo, which was intended for scrapping and only had a supervisory crew of eight men on board, was moored to two ocean-going tugs. The association was located southwest of the Azores. On the night of October 3rd to 4th (misprint, must say November) 1951, the towed ship suddenly disappeared. Due to rough seas, one of the tugs had loosened the ropes on the night of November 3rd.
On the morning of November 4th the sea was calm again. Then it was noticed that the cables to the second tug were torn and the Sao Paulo was missing. As planes and ships searched for her, strange phenomena occurred: unexplained lights were seen at night and early in the morning, and the next day the ships and planes reported the appearance of dark shapes or shapes on the surface of the sea, which soon disappeared. No trace was found of Sao Paulo and its team.
Most commentaries on the events in the Bermuda Triangle are content to portray them as unsolvable mysteries. But others, namely those who have studied this phenomenon most in depth, suggest that the inexplicable disappearances of ships, planes and people are connected to intelligent terrestrial or extraterrestrial beings. This view is shared by a growing number of people, perhaps because there is no other logical explanation for the phenomenon. (12*, p.61)
The investigation into the case of the Brazilian warship Sao Paulo, which was supposed to be brought into a dry dock by two tugs and suddenly disappeared from the towing ropes with the supervisory crew in the early hours of November 4, 1951, did not rule out the inexplicable light phenomena that occurred during the night had been noticed before disappearing through a **cloud of fog** in the sky. The aircraft crews, who then carried out an intensive search operation, found no trace of the missing cruiser, but gave a strange report that spoke of **unusually dark patches of fog** or **very low clouds** in the area where the ship was believed to be have to find. (13*, p.230 and p.49, as well as 8*, p.191 and 16*, p.196)

Other ships and aircraft that did not disappear sometimes reported strange malfunctions and failures of instruments and previously unknown **weather anomalies ,** such as: In such cases, the crews had to experience that the instruments malfunctioned, the compasses spun, the propulsion systems failed and they lost control lost about their plane or ship; They also saw a strange **firelight nebula** or **'milk zone'.** in which all contours, including the horizon, blurred into a **whitish haze .** Despite all this, they managed to leave the scary area and get their vehicle back under control.
(13*, p.60)

July 7,

1955: WJMorris, a former sailor of the 'Atlantic City', saw the automatic steering mechanism become 'independent' and steer the ship completely in a circle, at the same time a ball lightning could be **seen .** Some of the navigation equipment and electrical equipment were then no longer usable. (18*)
Was this so-called ball lightning the unmanned fireballs developed in Germany before 1945?
(See 'Secret Miracle Weapons' Vol.III, p.15-22) The events in the B. Triangle seem to be so dramatic and, above all, so frequent that a special magazine is published in the USA: 'The Bermuda Triangle Special Report' concerned with these events. In 1977, the American journalist Rufus Drake reported on a lieutenant in the American army named LeRoy R.Jackson. We quote from Jean Prachan: 'UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle': But
Lieutenant LeRoy R.Jackson did not hesitate to tell Rufus Drake everything he knew. Among other things, he told him about an OV 1 (a photo reconnaissance aircraft) that encountered a **strange, very dense cloud formation** over the Bermud had encountered. The plane's pilot was in this formation for over forty minutes and was thrown around 'like a football'. Eventually the weather calmed down and the plane reached its destination, but **an hour earlier than planned.** Judging by the flight plan, the wind speed and the instruments, an hour has simply ceased to exist.

Berlitz and other authors have cited other cases of time lapse over the Bermuda Triangle. For us this is a completely fantastic claim and, given the state of our science, unbelievable. ....
If the military didn't take their duty of confidentiality so seriously, we could certainly cite many similar anecdotes. So many other strange things happen in the Bermuda Triangle zone: **radio silence,**
white waters, failure of instruments and compasses, inexplicable air holes, machines shaking 'as if by the hand of a giant', optical anomalies, bluish and greenish lights, the sudden cockpit or the cargo area of the machine, destruction of the electrical circuits, violent storms, clouds of smoke rising from the water, etc.

Machine Translated by Google

And these are just some of the phenomena that occur again and again; ... (8*, p.122/123)

December 11, 1970:

Pilot Bruce Gernon Jr. recorded **massive cloud formation in the form of squiggles directly on the sea surface.** As he flew over it, **the magnetic and electronic instruments failed** and he lost contact with the radar control. When he reached his destination, he felt that he was 30 minutes short of the normal flight time.

December 16, 1974:

Mike Roxby, pilot of a Cessna 172, suffered instrument and radio failure twice in one day, the second time having fatal consequences. A surviving passenger said the crash was related to a **"cloud that appeared out of nowhere .** " (18*)

In the course of a conversation about the disappearances of ships and aircraft in the Bermuda Triangle, an officer in the U.S. Third Marine Division expressed a widespread but certainly unofficial opinion: 'It's a real mystery. Nobody in the Navy is laughing at this thing. We always knew there was something going on with the Bermuda Triangle. But no one could figure out what. Apparently there is no physical or logical cause. It's almost as if the ships were suddenly covered with some sort of **electronic camouflage net .**

(12* , S.73)

According to our current school science, which only ever recognizes what it has mastered or understood, these phenomena described above should not exist at all. Not only that, school science, like politics and the press, is a whore. Just as the latter two serve the rulers, school science serves to secure the world view of the rulers. Fundamental scientific findings therefore only ever came from individuals, often from outsiders in science. As Adolf Hitler said: Jewish-liberal science in conjunction with the Judeo-Christian religion is a conspiracy that must be exploded.

Just think of the fate of Kepler, Copernicus and Galileo. Anyone who doubts or even refutes the foundations of the Old Testament, Jewish-Oriental worldview will be destroyed; at that time like today. Justus von Liebig also recognized the controlled limitations within science in his time when he said: 'Science actually only begins to become interesting where it ends.'

However, intellectual impoverishment and controlled dumbing down are the basic prerequisites for the gradual enslavement of humanity that has been going on for centuries; whereby Judao-Christianity as well as the Jewish-controlled republics and democracies were and still are only steps on the way to a total 'one-world' dictatorship based on the Jewish communist model.

But in the 1920s and 1930s a group began to finally and permanently break down the intellectual narrowness of false religion and false school science. What else did Adolf Hitler say in this context?: 'There is a Nordic and National Socialist science that is opposed to Jewish-liberal science.' That is why it is so difficult for us today, unless we have freed ourselves from the intellectual shackles, to understand and unconditionally classify these extraordinary processes in all parts of the world, including the many small side effects.

'According to the laws of aerodynamics and as can be easily proven through wind tunnel experiments, the bumblebee is incapable of flying. The size, weight and shape of its body in relation to its wingspan make it impossible for it to fly. But the bumblebee, which is ignorant of these scientific facts, is not deterred by this and flies anyway.'

Let us return to the events in the Bermuda Triangle, although for reasons of space we must limit ourselves to individual interesting events. The loss of the three **'sulphur ships' is also worth mentioning:** On December 2, 1954, the 3,337 ton **Southern Districts** left Port Sulfur on the Mississippi in Texas, loaded with sulfur, bound for Bucksport in the US state of Maine. The ship was only built in 1944 as a landing ship for invasion purposes against Germany. Later after the conversion it served the US Navy for sulfur transport. Most likely on December 5th - exactly 9 years after the disappearance of the 5 TBM bombers - the Southern Districts off the coast of Florida also disappeared. The Navy and Coast Guard searched 262,000 square miles without any success. (New York Times, five reports from December and January 1954/55; 15*, pp. 154-156 and other sources).

At the beginning of February 1963 (4.2.63, 1.25 a.m., last radio message) the 129 m long sulfur ship **Marine Sulfur Queen,** belonging to the US Navy, disappeared . It was also a converted warship from WWII and was now traveling from Beaumont in Texas to Norfolk in Virginia with 15,000 tons of liquid sulfur in steel tanks. The ship's last position report came from near the Dry Tortugas. The Navy's Commission of Inquiry noted 'that

The Marine Sulfur Queen disappeared on the open sea without sending an SOS, but offered no valid hypothesis or solution to the mystery (Berlitz). Other sources: (15*, pp.168-177; 17*, pp.107-112; and others).

Exactly 9 years to the day after the Marine Sulfur Queen set sail, on February 2, 1972, the sulfur ship **VA Fogg** crashed near the coast in the Gulf of Mexico. The trip was supposed to go from Freeport, Texas, less than 80 km through the open sea, along the coast, to Galveston and from there through the shipping lane to Houston. Presumably after an explosion, the ship was found days later at a depth of just 30 meters. (17*, p.111-113; 16*, p.17; 18*; 8*, p.196)

Gunpowder, or black powder, which is rarely used today, contained 10% sulfur. The question arises, does sulfur have any significant significance to the US Navy? Or the other question: could the other side, the 'third power', be interested in larger quantities of sulfur?

Recent eyewitnesses say that in the 'Devil's Triangle' the sky turns sulfur yellow on clear days. The sea then no longer resembles water. .... A similar inexplicable destruction mechanism in space has now seriously damaged American and Russian space probes eight times on the journey to the planet Mars, etc. (19*)

The US Coast Guard's cable-laying and 'research ship', the Yamacraw, had a rather strange and disturbing experience on August 8, 1956. She was confronted with a 'ghost island', like the 'Hollyhock', a US Coast Guard buoy tender, in 1974: although the ship (the Yamacraw) was hundreds of kilometers from land, both mainland and islands, the apparition of Considering its size, it makes for a small island. Both men (from security) checked the instruments. They all worked very well. When they noticed that the ghost island was getting closer, they informed the captain. He wanted to examine the apparition up close. When they were 300 meters away, they turned around and sailed past Ghost Island, which looked like a huge mud wall. Although the phenomenon had not appeared on the radar screen to touch the surface of the water, it now appeared to be moving toward the ship. The height of the apparition could not be determined. The ship carefully steered into the nebula-like wall, which seemed to be made of **sulfur fumes .** It was found that not even the bright light of the carbon lamps could penetrate this fog. Soon the men on deck had difficulty breathing. They felt a scratchy sensation in their throat. The steam pressure began to fall in the engine room. Just as the captain gave the order to turn, the ship broke through the **'smoke screen',** 300 meters from where it had entered the 'smoke'. When it became light, the strange fog had disappeared. (16*, 122-124)

Charles Berlitz, who also covers the Yamacraw experience in his book 'Spurless', speculates: 'It is also possible that the Yamacraw sailed into the dense sulfur fumes of an undersea volcanic eruption,' although he previously wrote: 'This compact mass , the could not be penetrated by radar or powerful searchlights, but was not land, as it stood **above** the surface of the water and appeared to rise indefinitely against the sky, extending to the southwest at an apparently great but undetectable distance. 'This 'compact mass', or 'rising wall' was first detected by radar, but could not be penetrated by radar; which would not apply to sulfur vapors from a volcanic eruption. Nor was it that when driving into this 'fog-like wall', electromagnetic interference occurred and all the lighting went out.

Group, but especially Berlitz, report on five American. Fighter aircraft of the type **'Super Sabre',** which flew into a **cloud** immediately after take-off from Bermuda - they were barely 900 meters away - from which only four aircraft emerged. The incident was witnessed by ground personnel at the military airfield as well as other aircraft and nearby ships. Victor Haywood was working on the satellite target tracking program at the time, January 1960, and describes the process here as an eyewitness: At around 1 p.m. on a sunny, almost cloudless day, five American Air Force Super Sabers took off from the military base in Kindley (St. Davids) in Bermuda. The author of these lines, along with four or five others who worked on the island, watched the take-off with great interest, as the Super Saber was a relatively rare aircraft at the time - at least in the Bermuda area.

The planes took off particularly quickly due to their afterburning, formed up and disappeared into a large cloud about half a mile from the coast. This cloud was - at least in its two-dimensional extent - fully visible to us observers. The five aircraft were tracked simultaneously on the air traffic control radar screens, as required by the military authorities for every takeoff and landing.
Five fighter jets flew into the cloud and only four emerged from it. No crash was observed on radar screens, even though the altitude was already several hundred feet. We didn't see anything fall down either. After a few minutes, one Super Saber was reported missing and an immediate search operation was initiated. The search area

was only half a mile from the coast, where the water was completely flat. Nothing was ever found to indicate that an aircraft had crashed, except for a standard American Air Force life jacket. However, this discovery was never considered to belong to the missing aircraft because countless Bermuda sailors and boat owners were illegally in possession of Air Force life jackets due to the thousands of American soldiers stationed there. This life jacket found during the search could also have other origins.

No satisfactory explanation was ever found for what happened to the plane and the pilot. Needless to say, the thorough investigation conducted by the American Air Force yielded no information and did not shed light on the mysterious incident. (13*, pp.158-161)
Berlitz adds to this eyewitness account: As already
mentioned, sometimes several planes disappear on the same day in the same area of the triangle.
At the same time, anomalies are detected by the crews of other aircraft that do not disappear, sometimes even at the same altitude. ... Some experiences suggest that a kind of electrical energy occasionally takes the form of **fireballs** that seem to rush straight towards ships made of sheet steel and perhaps, in a broader sense, aircraft made of light metal. The report by WJ Morris, a former sailor now living in Llantrisant, South Wales, Great Britain, is indicative of this phenomenon: (13*, pp. 160-162)
Berlitz now describes how in the summer of 1955, at dawn, the motor ship **Atlantic City,** on which Morris was, suddenly began to turn in circles. Moments later, he and the officer on duty saw a **'ball of fire'** coming straight towards them, apparently on a collision course but without any noise. He flew so low over the command bridge that they fell to the ground. Moments later they saw him disappear into the sea, leaving behind turbulent waters. The gyrocompass and the liquid compass, which no longer worked after this event, had to be repaired in the harbor.

We have written about these unmanned fireballs - used for information purposes - which were observed to have a maximum diameter of three meters and were developed in Germany before 1945 in the HUGIN publication: 'Secret Miracle Weapons' Vol.III, pp.15-23 summarized. Of course, they cannot make ships 'disappear', but they can cause electromagnetic interference because they apparently have the same propulsion system as the manned flying discs.

In these non-naturally behaving 'clouds', from which even one of the Super Saber machines did not emerge, there would also have to be a flying disk for camouflage that causes this process - no matter how it happens.

On November 9, 1956, a U.S. Navy PBM patrol aircraft with a crew of ten disappeared near Bermuda. (12*)

A U.S. Air Force KB-15 tanker aircraft en route to the Azores from Langley Field, Virginia, arrived on April 8
Lost in January 1962, without any radio communication and in the usual unexplained manner. (12*)

On August 28, 1963, two new U.S. Air Force KC-13 four-engine Stratotankers disappeared while en route from Homestead Air Force Base, Florida, to a secret air refueling position in the Atlantic Ocean, approximately 340 miles (550 km) southwest of Bermuda. (18*; and 12*)

On July 6, 1965, the crew and captain of the Norwegian supertanker **Jawista** witnessed a thrilling spectacle: The officer's report read:
'I ran to the telephone and called the captain. Without waiting for his answer, I grabbed my binoculars and ran to starboard. Then I saw a large object flying very close to the aft deck, between 200 and 400 meters high and just a little below the clouds. I could clearly see the body of the object; in shape it resembled a cigar. I could clearly make out a row of hatches emitting bright yellow to orange light. The vehicle had no position lights. It left a initially narrow, then widening path of bluish flames. What appeared to be glowing spheres could be seen inside, and each of them left behind blue rays that ran parallel to the object's trajectory. The light path was about a hundred meters long. Despite the speed and the fact that it passed so close to us, there was no sound.'

Not only the officer, but the entire crew observed this apparition, which was said to have emerged from the sea. (8*, p. 106)

On June 5, 1965, the Americans had to write off a C-119 Flying Boxcar with ten people on board, which had gone missing in the southeastern area of the Bahamas without leaving any trace, and had already been missing on April 5, 1965

Machine Translated by Google

A B-25 bomber that had been converted into a cargo plane met the same fate southeast of the Tongue of Ocean with a crew of three. (12*)

The tug **Southern Cities** left the port of Freeport in Texas with a 64 meter long barge. In this case the process was reversed. It was not the towed barge with a load of chemicals - it was found in perfect condition, undamaged - that was missing, but the tug itself was simply no longer there as of October 29, 1966. Even the tow rope was undamaged down to the fastening chain, only the tug and crew were simply no longer there. The investigation report states: '... since the ship did not send out a call for help, it is reasonable to assume that the shipwreck occurred so quickly that such a report could no longer be made,' (12*, p.72). Either the usual distraction, or helplessness on the part of the authorities.

In 1967, a **Chase YC, 122** cargo plane disappeared , as did a **Beechkraft Bonanza light aircraft,** another **Piper Apache** light aircraft and, on December 24, 1967, the **Witchcraft** (18*). The Witchcraft was a small ocean-going ship, although she was anchored at a harbor buoy. (8*; 12*; 13*; which was considered unsinkable, sank in a flash within sight of the harbor and, what was particularly astonishing 18*). In January 1967, four private planes were lost in one week alone. D. Group spoke of a 'black week' (16*).

Of the many yachts and sailboats reported missing in the area, about one ship per month, the case of the Revonoc... attracted particular attention. ... (12*, p. 69)

It also happens several times that warships such as the most modern luxury liners are completely paralyzed for hours or days because Propulsion systems, power supplies and other electrical or electronic equipment fail, or what is even more astonishing, they go miles off course and - although this is noticed and counteracted - nothing happens
What you can do effectively about it:

The **USS Richard E.Byrd,** a DDG ship type for remote-controlled missiles, lost radio contact while sailing in the Bermuda Triangle in March 1971. At Berlitz we find the eyewitness account of Walt Darlings, a US Navy tactical missile specialist who was on the above ship: '...We were traveling from Norfolk, Virginia, to Bermuda. It was a four or five day practice trip...preparation for an Atlantic crossing. As we headed east, one by one we lost all means of communication. First the radar device failed, then the air traffic control device, then the mine detector for scanning the water surface, then the land detection instrument. We no longer had any radar contact at all.

Nobody was worried about it at first. Then the rumor spread that we were coming to the Bermuda Triangle. The crew began talking about the triangle and showed signs of concern. Then we lost the radio connection, although you can usually get it on the long waves - on the low frequencies of 1500 kilometers, for which there are special stations around the world so that a ship can pick up one from France and another from the African coast, for example and its intersection point and thereby get an indication of its position. But we didn't get anything at all. The sky was **hazy and overcast,** so we couldn't determine our position based on the stars. The electric depth gauge also failed. We had 300 men on board. Many of them feared we would drive in circles and never get to our destination. Some said that now we would find out for ourselves where all those ships and planes had gone since World War II. The men became very nervous, but no official statement was made about what was happening. After 9 to 10 days we suddenly had radio contact with Bermuda and arrived. The journey usually took four to five days. We never found out what was actually there.' (13*, p.99/100; also 16*; 18*)

In February 1955, the **USS Tigrone** (a submarine and icebreaker) was on an exercise between Puerto Rico and St. Thomas. Although the submarine was equipped with five types of radars, sonographs and an additional gyrocompass, it veered seven kilometers off course, which simply should not and could not have happened.

One is involuntarily reminded of the ship disaster in the Black Sea at the beginning of September 1986. The passenger steamer **'Admiral Nakhimov' (the** former 'Berlin' of the North German Lloyd, which had to be handed over to the Soviets in 1947) collided with the Soviet cargo ship **'Pyotr Wassyev'** outside the port of Novorossiysk. It was expressly mentioned that there was neither fog nor storm and that the 'Admiral Nakhimov' had radar. Since the routes of both ships crossed each other, they had made radio contact in time to coordinate the avoidance with each other. But they could steer as they wanted, both ships collided and as a result the 'Admiral Nakhimov' sank. She had 888 passengers and 346 crew members on board. The Tass report simply said: 'There were human sacrifices'. The reason given was that the steering system had failed. ('Ruhr-Nachrichten', Dortmund, September 2 and 3, 1986)

Machine Translated by Google

On April 3, 1974, all propulsion, power and electronic systems on the luxury liner **Queen Elisabeth II** were on a cruise in the Bermuda Triangle. This ship in particular had the best safety systems ever installed in a passenger ship. Now it floated helplessly in the big pond, like primitive sailing ships did in the absence of wind. The passengers were put off for a few days - with warm - but free drinks, but then another passenger ship had to come to take over the now angry guests and to be able to continue the cruise. The captain explained to a professional footballer: We are sitting here in the middle of the Bermuda Triangle. The official explanation was that oil was leaking from the steam boilers, but anyone can believe that. Another argument against this deception is that a US Coast Guard cutter traveling at a certain distance behind the Queen Elisabeth II noticed several times before the total failure that the luxury ship was no longer visible on his radar screen, even though it was clearly visible to the naked eye could see. (12*; 13*; 15*; 18*)

In March 1972, the US destroyer **Vogelsang** experienced similar problems: According to crew members, the Vogelsang experienced an **unexpected change of course** on a return voyage from Puerto Rico to the United States in March 1972 and came to a complete standstill for an entire night and part of the following day , as all **electronic systems** failed and no power came from the boilers. The crew never found out what was going on. ... Although the sea was calm and there was no wind, the Vogelsang, according to the crew, groaned and trembled during the night under such shocks as if it was almost being torn apart. No report of this incident has been made public and not even the crew members have received an explanation.
Such occurrences are confirmation of the recurring phenomenon of power outages, electrical disturbances and mysterious forces that occur in this area, often affecting aircraft and ships large and small, and which are normally not made public, especially when... are marine vessels.
(13*, S.100; 16*)

The report: 'New secrets about the Bermuda Triangle', DNZ, No. 49/1977, says: Aircrews who have been in the last two years 'for fear of disappearing', something visible in the distance despite the blue sunny sky In time to avoid **the 'mysterious fog that was quickly approaching',** they say they heard an indefinable buzzing and whispering on the radio that became more and more agitated. There are numerous recordings of these 'voices'. According to specialists, it is clear from the rhythm of the sounds that these are not atmospheric disturbances. Whenever these sounds become audible, all earth radio communications fail. No communication with other ships or aircraft or a home or seaport or airport tower is possible.

Due to the ongoing state of war between the Allies on the one hand and the German Reich on the other, one will understand the events surrounding disappearing warships and military aircraft, but at the same time ask the question why do private aircraft, seemingly harmless sailing yachts, fishing boats and merchant ships disappear. Simply because they only appear to be of a 'private' nature. They are hired and misused for military, political and, above all, agent and espionage activities in order to carry out very specific tasks or search operations; for example, detecting UFO bases and landing sites in the Bermuda Triangle.
We have included the report in the appendix (R.-N., January 24, 1987) about secret zirconium cargo on board the **'Flying Enterprise'** only as an example to show which extremely important and dangerous cargoes seem harmless to cutters or others may contain small ships.

Recently it became known from Sweden that the navy has contracted private fishing vessels to help track down submarines of 'unknown nationality'. Is it any wonder if they get involved in acts of war?

The highly dangerous cargo that large cargo ships can contain only recently became known again. The Swedish authorities have launched an investigation because highly enriched uranium from the Federal Republic of Germany was transported to other countries via Sweden. In another case, there was 'concrete evidence' that fissile nuclear material was being delivered from Lübeck on Finnish ships, albeit **hidden under coke .** (R.-N., January 16, 1988) Attentive observers quickly come to the conclusion that the Reich German flying disk power particularly monitors the nuclear intentions and criminal projects of the nuclear mafia.

Secret cargo or secret targets with secret missions are often unknown even to the teams; at best the captain and a few 'scientists' or secret agents traveling with him.
Anyone who sneaks into military installations must also face consequences.
In 'Secret Wonder Weapons', Vol.III, pp.79-81, we reported on three alleged journalists who used diving equipment to penetrate a secret German submarine base in the Atlantic in 1975. They also used a private, rented yacht, which then exploded. Only one of the three 'journalists' survived.

Machine Translated by Google

The 'UFOs' and 'USOs' were often accused of bringing people into the Bermuda Triangle, presumably as slave labor. Would that be surprising, at a time when German soldiers were still incarcerated in Belgian, Dutch, French and Italian prisons? At a time when German prisoners of war were still forced to do hard labor in Siberian labor camps? Or Rudolf Hess had to eke out an existence in solitary confinement and under degrading conditions in Berlin-Spandau? Perhaps only Allied soldiers and agents observed things that were under no circumstances allowed to be made known to the enemy.

Another speculation, which cannot be proven either, is that secret material procurement by the UFO force is the cause of missing planes and ships.

And? If that were the case? Collectively, the entire German people have been abused as labor slaves for foreign powers and states for four decades during the ongoing state of occupation and have been heavily exploited through taxes, even if 90% of the media-driven and re-educated people can hardly or want to notice this. But those are the facts! What are a few missing ships from our opponents? War is war and they demonstrably wanted and started it and not Germany!

For example, if the US warship 'Vogelsang' or the luxury liner 'Queen Elisabeth II' were paralyzed for several days, warnings could be more indirect; have been expressed (by the Third Power?)?

Either against the respective government or against specific potentates on the ships themselves? In any case, that couldn't be ruled out. The report in the appendix: 'UFO shock and rescue in the Bermuda Triangle' proves once again that planes, ships or people are not targeted indiscriminately, otherwise this rescue operation would not be possible; come about.

Mysteriöses Verschwinden einer Kutterbesatzung

Kopenhagen. (dpa) Das Rätsel um das Verschwinden der Besatzung des dänischen Marinekutters „Ternen“ konnte bisher nicht gelöst werden. Der Kutter, der am 25. Januar vermißt worden war, wurde fünf Tage später bei der grönländischen Insel Ravns Storoe fünf Meter unter Wasser und 250 Meter vom Land entfernt gefunden. Inzwischen sind alle Räume des gesunkenen Schiffes bis auf die Offiziersmesse von Tauchern untersucht worden. Von der achtköpfigen Besatzung fehlt jedoch jede Spur. Rettungsboote und -floße sind nicht benutzt worden. Der Marinekutter hatte nicht Anker geworfen. Die Untersuchungen ergaben, daß der Motor lief, als das Schiff sank. Die Taucher haben an Bord weder ein Leck noch Spuren einer Explosion entdeckt. Auch eine umfassende Suchaktion auf der nahegelegenen Insel hatte kein Ergebnis. Man entdeckte nicht einmal Spuren, die darauf hätten hindeuten können, daß die Besatzung des Schiffes verlassen hätte.

UFO-Nachrichten, Nr.10, Juli 1957

Fischkutter sollen U-Boote fangen

Stockholm (dpa) - Die schwedische Marine will bei der Jagd nach fremden U-Booten an der Westküste des Landes künftig auch Fischkutter einsetzen und Eindringlinge unter Wasser möglicherweise von Fischern mit deren Netzen fangen lassen. Dies kündigte der stellvertretende Kommandeur des Marinekommandes West, Lars Norrsell, gesten an.

Ruhr-Nachrichten, Dortmund, 16.12.1987

Machine Translated by Google

Weather as a weapon!

The artificial change in the weather is an ancient fact that can be traced back to ancient writings. Druids, medicine men and shamans are known until recently for their ability to manipulate the weather and make rain to a limited extent.

'Weather Spell' is a magical act to influence the weather; Wizards and special weathermakers possessed these abilities.

'Großer Brockhaus', Wiesbaden, edition 1957.: Former gods will have influenced the weather in a very perfect way thousands of years ago, just as they also mastered flight with rocket propulsion, according to old Indo-Aryan traditions. However, the knowledge of these techniques was lost in both cases and was only recently rediscovered on this planet.

From the three volumes of 'German Mythology', by Jacob Grimm (one of the 'Brothers Grimm'), from 1835, we find the following information: What was originally attributed to gods, demigods and giants, the production of wind, **storm** and **hail ...** was later attributed to human magicians. (22*, Vol.I, p. 530)
There is hardly any trace of this in our mythology, which happens so often in Greek that the gods, in order to remain unnoticed, pour a mist **over** themselves and their protégés, who are supposed to be hidden from the enemy's eye .
... One would then have to suggest again that those Valkyries, who, like the Serbian Vilen, nurtured and protected beloved heroes in battle, were able to produce **clouds** and **hail** in the air, or to hold off the **invisibility cloaks** and helicopter helmets, whose effect is equivalent to fog. (22*, Vol.I, p. 274)
The Norse legends call magically created weather görningavedr. ... (22*, Vol.I, p.533)
The gods appear in **mist** and **clouds . ...** (22*, Vol.III, p.100)

We reject the Judeo-Christian teaching, which in recent centuries has forced upon us the erroneous idea that the white race, i.e. the Nordic Germanic peoples, have also 'higher developed' over the millennia from an animal-like state to that of today. In any case, the old traditions prove us the opposite.
Rather, through deliberate mixing with Negroid and Asian types of other races, a regression has taken place. However, if other types of people, even scientific representatives of the Adamic peoples, claim that they descended from this line of descent, i.e. from animal-like to human-like, we do not want to contradict, because they will have just as much evidence for their origin as the Nordic ones peoples for their own. The latter species can derive their origins from the former lineages of gods; However, that means: gradual regression. So it always depends on the reference point. What matters is whether history is viewed from the perspective of those who were once superior or from that of the underdeveloped.
For Christianity, liberalism and communism, all people should be equal, but our five senses alone show us the direct opposite every day. Precisely because the dominant principle in all natural processes is inequality and not the pretended equality! The few examples from Nordic mythology listed above provide a fragmentary glimpse of the possibilities that superior gods and people may have had thousands of years ago, even with regard to influencing the weather. The southern doctrine of the 'higher development **of all** people' completely contradicts this and can therefore in no way serve as a standard for us.

According to this obvious false teaching, advanced civilizations should not have existed 5, 10, 20 or 50 thousand years ago. But they did exist!

Modern technology now makes many weather-influencing practices that until the last century were only found in mythology possible again. Peoples who were far less deprived of their racial characteristics and traditions, such as Germany before 1945, find it much easier to produce something creative and to rediscover basic physical or technical knowledge than uprooted and heavily bastardized conglomerates of peoples, such as the UNITED STATES. Even the ability of 'hereditary memory', which, as the name suggests, remains tied to good genetic substances that are still present, is then completely missing. Great creative achievements are reserved for the great geniuses and they in turn do not arise from Eurasian-Negroid hybrids, as the powers of decline that dominate the world today strive for, propagate and promote! Only those who are ignorant of these questions are surprised that the German people from 1933 to 1945 were capable of such military and technological achievements - provided they had appropriate leadership; and a small elite even afterwards.

Machine Translated by Google

In his book: 'The German Secret Weapons', the American Brian Ford wrote about German developments before 1945: Among other things, great interest was shown in endothermic weapons. These were weapons that could produce enormous cold instead of heat when they exploded. There was talk of using this weapon to freeze areas with a radius of about two kilometers; You then just had to quickly collect all the living creatures before they 'thawed' again. (23*, p.37)

The former German war correspondent and author Gerhard R. Steinhäuser reported on April 5, 1979 in the article in the 'Neue Weltschau': 'Science wants to get to the bottom of the weather', as follows: And that also includes the weather weapon. It no longer consists of sprinkling salt on clouds and thus producing rain. Today, completely different things are at play. In 1944, the author himself witnessed experiments with a German 'cold bomb' that could turn a large area into a snow desert in just a few seconds.

In the DNZ report from February 1955: 'No nuclear war, but the end of the world due to a cold bomb - 276° minus?', it says: South Africa, India and Libya, on the other hand, are reporting snowfalls for the first time in history. ... should the Russians experiment with their new cold bomb again? Professor Kapusta only developed his Rac 11 last year, with which it is said to be possible to cause a temperature drop of minus 276 degrees below zero within a few minutes.'

But according to other information, the Soviets only captured two of the German Frost bombs, detonated them in a later attempt and observed the enormous effect. The Soviets' own development therefore seems very questionable to us; even more so in retrospect from today's perspective.

In our opinion, a very well-documented case of influencing the weather to protect German troops during the withdrawal from the island of Corsica is described in the book 'Adler calls FührerHQ', by Dammert/Kurowski. It happened on September 28, 1943. During the retreat from the island of Corsica to the Italian mainland, there were large concentrations of troops in the northeast of the island, near Bastia, because the crossing by ships was not fast enough. The enemy must have found out about this and enemy bombers were approaching to bomb the German troops waiting here. There would have been a terrible massacre on September 28th if the following had not happened: Here is his report (meaning Herbert Dammert) about a memorable episode, which in retrospect took on the odium of being constructed and unbelievable because it was simply too coincidental to appear coincidental: it was very hot again that day and the sky was cloudless. At around 1:00 p.m. we heard loud engine noises in the distance. Shortly afterwards we saw a formation of about 25 four-engine bombers heading towards the airfield from the north. It was flying at a maximum altitude of 500 m and I had the impression that it had come specifically to bomb our well-camouflaged position. She was still no more than 500 m away from us when it suddenly began to rain, so that thick clouds passed over us and made us hidden from any enemy visibility.

I expected the bombs to go off at any moment. This group of bombers circled overhead for more than five minutes before turning away and disappearing from our sight. The planes had barely disappeared when it became light again and the sun was shining. The clouds disappeared as quickly as they came. We were all happy that things had gone well again.

Twenty minutes later we were startled again by the sound of engines approaching from the south.
Peering over there, we saw the same bomber formation turning towards us. At this time we were spread out within a five kilometer radius of Bastia and Borgo airfield. There was no way out.
And this time the sun shone and the approaching bombers were able to carry out their attack with the best possible visibility. They were again about the same distance and at the same height; The four-engine planes had barely gotten close when the sun was darkened for the second time and black clouds were pushed in, from which a heavy downpour began to fall.
This time the Hombers circled above us and the city for a longer period of time. The roar of their engines could be heard for a long time. We couldn't see the machines any more than their observers could see us.
After about ten minutes they turned away without having achieved anything. Once again we were relieved and grateful for this second lucky coincidence, which had already seemed like a miracle to us. But that's not enough. As the sun shone again and our clothes steamed dry, a third time this mysterious formation came close over the mountains from where we had been fired upon by the artillery hours before, and it could only be a minute or two before they This time it was definitely the case that bombs were dropped in a targeted manner.

Machine Translated by Google

It got dark for the third time. Thick rain clouds rolled in again and covered us with their thick cloak of invisibility.
After a few minutes of fruitless searching and circling, the bomber group turned away, never to return.
In the distance we heard the bombs being thrown.

My men and I will never forget that triple miracle on September 28, 1943. On this day we all celebrate our new birthday.' (24*, pp. 179-181)

With this three-fold bad weather zone, which only appeared for a very short time, and which was also narrowly defined and always tailored to a very specific, identical area, so-called 'coincidence' can really be ruled out, especially since this spontaneous deterioration in the weather was also extremely useful German soldiers are about to be destroyed. The question that inevitably comes to mind - which unfortunately cannot be answered - was this: did German flying discs test their first attempts at weather warfare and thereby bring about this apparent miracle? If one could not add any further - albeit different - examples to this process, one would have to answer the question with no. But we will be able to show in a few cases selected from the wealth of material below that in the decades that followed, the so-called 'UFOs' most likely caused similar weather phenomena.

Cold that is suddenly brought into an area of warm air, whether of natural or artificial origin, draws in all the air moisture from a larger environment. Clouds form and, if there is sufficient saturation, rain falls. (As is well known, air humidity is always found in the coldest place in the room. In winter, especially inside the window. In the refrigerator, on the evaporator.) In addition, warm summer air has the ability to store much more air moisture than frosty winter air.

If, in whatever way, cold is intentionally brought into this warm Mediterranean climate on the island of Corsica, which is heavily laden with moisture, this artificial cold zone will remove the moisture from the surrounding warm air - probably at lightning speed - and, because this is beneficial, the cold air will flow far away can hold less moisture, it lets it fall as rain. It cannot be said with certainty whether a 'frost bomb' is required to create this cold zone, which produces this cold chemically, or whether even simpler options are available; Regarding the German flying disks, however, it is logical to assume: The UFO literature contains enough reports of close-up experiences with flying disks that have landed or hovered close to the ground. Some of the eyewitness reports show that the flying tops had a repelling effect - some people literally felt an invisible wall between themselves and the unknown flying object - others reported the direct opposite, namely a slight, invisible but attractive force. In addition, there are descriptions of events in which people were 'sucked' into the flying object within a visible cone of radiation and others in which cars, even airplanes, were lowered up and down like a yo-yo.

With this repulsive and attractive effect, which can apparently be created at will, the flying disks will also be able to bind cold air masses to themselves from great heights, for example from the stratosphere, and even pull them down in a whirlpool to any desired area near the Earth in order to specifically bring about a desired cold event; for example, as a necessary prerequisite for the three Corsica cloudbursts described above.
The German frost bomb may have been a parallel development, on which the German flying discs are not dependent at all.

The 'cloud images' inserted here in the chapter appear far too precise, too uniform, too artificial to be of natural origin. In addition, an unnatural rotation effect can be observed in these clouds. In all likelihood, these are flying discs that camouflage themselves with either natural clouds or artificially created fog.
Even during these camouflage processes, the flying discs have the opportunity to bind to easily volatile substances, such as fog or clouds. (The turning effect is probably created by the surrounding ring around the stationary missile, as we know from the design descriptions of the German flying discs from the 1940s; see 'Secret Wonder Weapons' Vol.I.)

Machine Translated by Google

Fünf Bilder
aus dem schweizer Journal **Franz Weber**
Nr. 3 · Jan./Feb./März 1988

Unten: Die Originalaufnahme einer Altocumulus lenticularis-Wolke, am 12. 9. 1965 gegen 13 Uhr von einem Schulmädchen bei einem Ausflug in der CSR mit einer Schnappschuß-Kamera fotografiert.
Aus: UFO UFO. Westphal, P.G., dva/Stuttgart 1968

Machine Translated by Google

Wolken oder fliegende Untertassen über Marseille Frankfurter Allgem.Ztg.,20.10.1979 Foto upi

Nr. 3 · Jan./Feb./März 1988

Genausowenig, wie aber alle unidentifizierten Himmelsobjekte Wetterballone oder Meteoriten sind, ist jede seltsame Wolke einfach eine Wettererscheinung. Bei unserem Bild sieht man deutlich ein Raumschiff die Wolke verlassen (dunkle ovale Fläche unterhalb der Wolke).

Journal **Franz Weber**

Nr.2, Sept./Okt./Nov. 1987

Nr.3, Jan./Febr./März 1988

Machine Translated by Google

The engineer E. Halik, who was very well informed about the German flying disc developments, wrote in the 'Realesoteric short reports' in the magazine 'Mensch und Destiny': There are definite signs that the UFOs are primarily (?) used to to change the atmosphere and climate of certain areas of land. For this purpose, metal particles of various types are sprayed, such as iron oxide over Central Europe and Scandinavia, tin oxide over South America, copper oxide over North America, rhenium oxide over Indonesia, etc. (11*, No. I5, 1955)

Alluding to the flying discs covered in fog for camouflage, Ing. E. Halik continues: The situation is similar with the change and influence of weather processes. The synthetic bad weather of the last few months is increasingly developing into 'firedamp weather' and the long list of UFO types has recently been supplemented by real **UFO clouds** and other weather bodies, such as those that could be photographed over Marsaille. (See the 'clouds' image of Marsaille inserted here)

From the fogging of the Obersalzberg in 1943-45 to prevent bombing raids, to the fogging of flying discs for camouflage purposes, it will have been only a small step. How could fog formation have been further developed in the meantime, whether as a defensive or offensive weapon?

In the magazine 'Research and Experience', June/July 1958, FBMarby wrote: Attempts by the nat.-soc. Governments during the last war had already aimed to achieve space cold in smaller or larger enemy areas, at least a temperature that would eliminate all life. It remains to be seen whether this should be achieved through long-distance action, or through rockets, or through aircraft flying over these enemy areas. At that time there was also a plan to turn the surface of the sea into a sea of flames using powder blown off over the sea by airplanes.

WELT am SONNTAG MEINUNG 8.August 1976

WETTER KONTROLLE
TROCKENHEIT IN ENGLAND
ERDBEBEN KONTROLLE
TROCKENHEIT IN WEST EUROPA
HITZEWELLE IN DER ARKTIS
SCHNEE IN DER SAHARA
EXPERIMENT No 4563/C.
Cummings

„Wollen wir England mal wieder ein bißchen Nebel spendieren?" ZEICHNUNG: COMMINGS

In today's related publications and occasionally in press reports, the impression is always given that the weather war is being waged exclusively by the Soviets and the Americans. We want both of them

Not to deny that 'great powers' have the ability to do this, but these reports smell all too much like press manipulation. They will certainly master various methods, such as 'cloud seeding' using aircraft, for early and targeted raining off of clouds:

Up to four flares, each containing 70 grams of silver iodide, placed under the wings of the Cessna are enough to 'bring down' a cloud as rain. (Ruhr-Nachrichten, Dortmund, February 8, 1985, in the article: "Hailstorms are prevented by 'cloud seeding'")

The well-known American Analyst CB Baker wrote a multi-page paper in 'CODE, Politisches Lexikon', Zurich in 1978: 'The Soviet Weather War Attack'; also in 1981, a study that only became known in American publications: 'The weather war devastation of America'. In it he blames the Soviets and the pro-Soviet ruling clique in America (such as the Trilaterals, etc.) for the weather war against the USA, but bases his analyzes primarily on American press reports. He likes this one from America. The press still believed the disinformation coming out.

On the other hand, the American nuclear scientist and ex-lieutenant colonel, Colonel Thomas E. Bearden, who argues similarly, is in my opinion a paid disinformer who should have precise orders on how to conceal the weather war facts.

These Allied concealment practices about who caused the weather war - falsely the Soviets - are now also being adopted by the 'national' press in the Federal Republic of Germany. 'Deutsche Wochenzeitung', 26.0kt.1984: 'The weather war in space; Is the **Soviet Union** changing the climate?'. In this report, how could it be otherwise, the Soviets were suspected of being behind the weather war, although at the same time it was also acknowledged that the severe hurricanes in June 1984 had caused severe devastation in the Volga region as far as the eastern suburbs of Moscow. The explanation for this illogicality is quickly assumed to be a possible Soviet failure. So a kind of Soviet own goal, a self-mutilation! Shouldn't the flying discs have been more involved?

In order to obscure the global strategic and military context, everything is always dealt with according to almost the same templates: If
several observers have observed a red-hot flying disc (UFO) flying horizontally, the press turns it into a Soviet rocket part that entered the earth's atmosphere burns up. Let's just think of the spectacular events on September 23, 1986, when between 7:25 and 7:35 a.m. over half of Europe and according to reports, objects, varying in numbers from 1 to 15, were observed flying in all directions - which even circled Brussels . We have over 50 press reports about this process with reports from the GDR, FRG, Holland, Belgium, Luxembourg and France. What did the press make of it?: Soviet rocket parts burning up as they entered the Earth's atmosphere; although horizontal flight path has been reported several times.
For example, if the Americans lose a nuclear submarine in the Atlantic, and unless it can be declared a 'mishap' or 'accident', only the Soviets can be held responsible for it, even though they are still - albeit secretly - their allies are. If an American satellite goes out of orbit, the Soviets have worked with so-called 'scalar' or 'ELF' waves based on Tesla. In the Eastern Bloc countries the opposite argument is likely to be made, in which case it is the Americans. Just don't admit that there could be another power at play, a real countervailing power!

To avoid any misunderstandings:

Extreme weather conditions and significant storms have occurred at all times. With this chapter we do not want to give the impression that we can now immediately blame one of the great powers for every disaster in nature, every unusual weather situation.
Nevertheless, if we want to remain objective, we have to admit - even if we still lack the ability to differentiate - not all weather conditions are still caused by nature.

Let's turn again to individual examples, mainly from the Bermuda Triangle, Jean Prachan describes the following incident from 1975: On

September 3, 1975, a B 52 bomber of the American Air Force exploded in the air and crashed in Aiken, South Carolina . The plane had recently flown over the Bermuda Triangle and the three survivors of the seven-person crew reported that the plane was literally 'harassed' by UFOs over the Atlantic; the pilot reported a strong **formation of storm clouds** where the sky should actually have been clear... (8*, p.39)

Machine Translated by Google

In his book 'The Bermuda Triangle', Charles Berlitz describes the disappearance of tugboats or just their crew, which was often observed in connection with the formation of fog: Other boats also lost their tugboats, and sometimes the crew of the towed ship also disappeared.
In some cases, **a kind of fog** covered the second ship while failure of compasses and electronic equipment was observed on the first ship. One wonders why reports of such incidents come almost exclusively from smugglers and not from ships sailing alone. The reason may be that individual ships simply disappear - without witnesses - while the tugs at the end of the rope are close enough to observe the incident. (12*, p.79)

The weather weapons are often used in combination with other means. So while the towed ships disappeared in the fog - most likely in connection with a stealth effect, which we will talk about later - the respective tug itself only had electromagnetic interference. This means that only the electrical and electronic systems failed, and it seems that this can still be controlled, sometimes to a greater extent, sometimes to a lesser extent, or only applicable to certain areas. You can cause enemy aircraft to suddenly fall out of the sky due to a total failure of the electronics, but you can apparently also send an indirect warning to the respective aircraft command with a partial failure.

An experience that Captain Don Henry had in 1966 provides a vivid picture of the 'tug of war' between a tugboat and an unidentifiable force that was consciously or unconsciously trying to hold the tugboat back.
Captain Henry is the owner of a salvage company in Miami, the 'Sea Phantom Exploration Company', and has extensive experience as a sailor, navigator and diver. ...
Here is his

report: ...We were on the way back from Puerto Rico to Fort Lauderdale. We had been traveling for three days, towing an empty barge that had contained petroleum nitrate. I was on board the Good News, a 50 meter long tug with 2000 HP. The barge weighed 2,500 tons and was attached to a 300 meter long tow rope. We had left the Exumas behind us and reached the Tongue of Ocean (Bahamas). The depth of the water was about 600 fathoms. The weather was good, the sky was clear. In the afternoon I went into the cabin under the bridge for a few minutes when I heard a big shout. I came onto the bridge and shouted: 'What's going on?' The first thing I looked at was the compass. The needle spun clockwise like a top. There was no reason for it - the only place I had heard of something like this happening before was in the St. Lawrence River in Kingston, where a large iron deposit or perhaps a meteorite at the bottom messes up the compasses. (Note HUGIN: Iron deposits or meteorites on the seabed do not confuse compasses, this is just one of the many attempts at distraction by 'science' and the media, of which Captain Henry apparently also fell victim here. The St. Lawrence River in Canada is the one natural outflow for Lake Ontario and others. Kingston is at the beginning of the St. Lawrence River, but still in Lake Ontario. Completely different things are going on here. See National Examiner report appended on UFO occurrences in Lake Ontario.) I I didn't know what was going on, but something was wrong, I was sure of it. The **water seemed to come from every direction.** The horizon disappeared - we couldn't see where it was - **water, sky, everything blurred. We couldn't see where we were.** Whatever was going on, it was stealing or consuming all the energy from our generators. The electrical equipment no longer produced energy. The generators were still running, but we had no electricity. The engineer tried to get an auxiliary generator going, but it couldn't get a spark.

I worried about the barge. He was nearby, but I couldn't recognize him. It looked like it was **covered by a cloud, and the waves around it were higher than in other directions.**
I pushed the throttle full. I couldn't see where we were going, but I just wanted to get out of there quickly for all the world. It seemed like someone was trying to pull us back without quite succeeding.
It was like coming out of a **fog bank.** The tow rope was taut - like the Indian rope trick, you couldn't see anything -, but at the other end, everything was covered in **thick fog .** I ran onto the main deck and pulled on the rope. The damn barge came out of the fog, but **there was no fog anywhere else.** I could even see eleven miles away. In the **foggy area** where the barge was supposed to be stuck, the **water was choppy, although the waves were not high.** Call me whatever you want - I certainly didn't go back to see what was going on
war.

Have you ever felt what it's like when two people pull each other's arms in opposite directions? It felt like we were in a place that someone or something was claiming and someone or something was trying to stop us from going where we wanted to go.
Question: Was the horizon colored green?
No, it was milky. That's all I can say. I don't care about colors. When we came out the batteries needed to be recharged. I used fifty flashlight batteries.

Question: Were you thinking about the Bermuda Triangle?
Yes, that was the only thing I could think of at the time. I thought - my God, I'm the next number in the statistics!

Question: Have you ever had a similar experience?
No. I've heard that something like this happened to other people, where a barge and its crew disappeared and the towing cable was torn off. In any case, I only had one experience. And it was completely enough! (12*, pp.80-82)

In the DNZ report: 'New disaster in the Bermuda Triangle; Submarine bomber disappeared without a trace!' in No. 33/1978, it says:

Since February 26, 1978, the statistics of aircraft lost in the Bermuda Triangle have increased by one position. The new victim is a Grumman KA-6 bomber. This type was developed in the 1960s and can fly at low speeds of up to 1052 kilometers per hour. Its task is to combat submarines, which gave it the collective term submarine bomber.

In short, this is what happened: The bomber had taken off from a military airfield in the US state of Virginia and was supposed to land on the US aircraft carrier 'John F. Kennedy',
which was cruising about 160 km off the east coast of Florida (i.e. in the Bermuda Triangle). The bomber, with experienced pilots on board, was only about 50 km away from the aircraft carrier - where everything was already prepared for landing - when it was just able to radio into the ether: 'We have a problem here'... . The bomber and crew were never heard from or seen again. Navy spokesmen described the incident as a 'sinister phenomenon'. The above-mentioned 'DNZ' gives an explanation and asks the question: Often a cloud or a strange fog enveloped
ships and planes, which then never emerged from these cloud and fog **formations .** These structures gradually dissolved, and the plane or ship that disappeared within them no longer existed.

The fog is often described as greenish and the clouds as tube-like. The fog always appears suddenly out of nowhere and causes instruments to fail.
Did the KA-6 bomber also suffer a similar fate? Did all of his navigation instruments fail too?

These strange processes are not only limited to ships and airplanes, but also extend into space, which will be discussed in a later paper on space. In the 1978 paperback, 'The Truth About the Bermuda Triangle' (Original: 'The Dared The Devil' Triangle'), unfortunately we do not own it, the author Adi-Kent Thomas Jeffrey writes, among other things, about the mystery of the US Weather satellites that stop working exactly above the triangle and only resume their activity after the satellite has left the triangle. (DNZ, No. 33/1978) A similar shielding process has also been claimed several times regarding Antarctica. If this is true, and based on the many connections we have become aware of, we tend to assume this possibility as very likely, then this extremely superior power obviously does not want the Allies to look into its hands; not even with satellites. In the longer report: 'Heavy battles by the USA against unidentified flying objects', DNZ, NR. 20/1978 states, somewhat carefully worded, regarding these military satellites: For two years, around 20 American and Russian satellites have inexplicably disappeared without a trace. This happened through a force completely inexplicable in its origins, which achieved its goal in an intelligent way.

In the summer of 1975, physicist Dr. Wayne Meshejian claims that weather satellites stopped working properly when they flew over the Bermuda Triangle. The images transmitted to Earth from the satellites were completely black. Telemetric and electronic impulses could also only be received with difficulty. Reception was only good with infrared rays. (16*, p.113)

But let's get back to our topic of 'weather as a weapon'. In his book 'Spurless', Berlitz reproduces the American Jerry Osborn's experience report and writes in the introduction: Individual **cloud formations** that
appeared **alone** in an otherwise cloudless sky were, according to witness statements, observed and photographed by patrol aircraft of the American Navy, although such recordings were withheld from both the original photographer and the public (HUGIN note: All of these connections with the 'UFOs' or 'USOs' are subject to absolute secrecy by all allied military powers.

In the American military, for example, violations are punished with a fine of $10,000 and up to 10 years in prison.). Jerry Osborn, who now lives in Dallas, Texas, but was serving in the Navy Air Force in 1966, along with 11 other crew members of a Marine P3-A aircraft, witnessed **a two-cloud ,** one-plus-one incident unreal dream - or nightmare - resembled ordinary cumulus cloud formations. Jerry Osborne, who is retired from military service and can therefore speak freely,

vividly remembers that strange experience: I
was stationed at Kindley Field, Bermuda, in January 1966. My rank was AX-3, anti-submarine warfare specialist.
On January 16th or 18th we made a routine patrol flight between Bermuda and Puerto Rico. It was between 1 and 3 a.m. The night was clear and the flight conditions were excellent. We were 400 miles south of Bermuda and flying at an altitude of approximately 4,000 feet.
Suddenly we spotted **two very unusual clouds** about 5 minutes away from us at almost the same altitude; one was an elongated, apex-down triangle 250 to 300 feet long, while the second, hanging above, was in the shape of a round powder puff about 150 feet in diameter. Both glowed brightly.
My first surprised thought or comparison was, "Someone made a cloud in the shape of a giant vanilla sundae and separated the ice cream from the waffle sundae."
I had a clear view as I was acting as reconnaissance officer and occupied the upper starboard observation seat.
Still, I wouldn't have believed my eyes if all the other crew members hadn't seen it too.
The clouds just hung there in the otherwise completely cloudless sky.
As we got closer, I noticed that the distance between the 'powder puff' and the 'sundae' was about 200 feet and was clear. As we got closer, our pilot started to loop around to fly through them, but just as we began our approach to the two clouds and our photographers were taking pictures of this crazy formation, a bright beam of light flashed out from the gap, groping scanned the area we were following for a few seconds and then stuck to our aircraft. The beam didn't let go of us again - for about 6 seconds in total - until our pilot turned away because we wanted to put some distance between us and whatever was going on. When we got back to base we made a report and submitted all the photos we had taken. We never saw her again or heard anything about the report. Later we asked our officer about it. He said he didn't know anything about it. He didn't seem to want to talk about it, but said it might have had something to do with reaction phenomena from rocket fires. That could possibly explain the cloud formation, but certainly not the bright beam of light from the space between the two clouds that clung to us and wouldn't let go. (13*, p.104/105)

The Allies, both in the West and the East, who are completely powerless and powerless in the face of this superior power, have made the ostrich policy and tactics of secrecy their highest principle in this regard for decades.
Due to the requirement of silence in the military, everyone there is unsettled and everyone uses excuses to avoid being prosecuted, like Jerry Osborn's superior officer above. But the truth and the findings are breaking out more and more and can no longer be stopped.

In the chapter 'White or fiery nebula' Berlitz writes, among
other things: Other aircraft have had strange experiences in these **haze clouds .** Among these is the case of pilot Chuck Wakeley (November 1964), who, on a clear night flight from Andros to Miami, noticed a fiery, glowing **mist** suddenly forming on the right wing of his aircraft, extending up to the fuselage and over the left Wings spread out and then lay down in the cockpit over the instrument panel, where the pointers of his instruments and the electromagnetic devices went completely 'crazy' until finally the pilot himself began to glow. We are also aware of several cases that occurred in the Tongue of Ocean, a 2 kilometer deep ocean trench between Andros and the Exuma chain, where boats being towed were hit by a single cloud or local cloud that suddenly **formed limited fog ,** in which some of the ships and their crews disappeared forever. (13*, p.81/82)

In March 1982, strange reports spread throughout the world press. With headlines like 'Mysterious cloud circles the earth', Westdeutsche Allgemeine Zeitung, (WAZ), Essen, 4.3.82, or 'Spy plane should solve mystery; U-2 brings samples of the mysterious cloud to Earth for NASA.' (WAZ), 6.3.82 etc.
This cloud, which was first discovered on January 25th by Japanese researchers and then also by a research station over Hawaii, was initially only said to be a few kilometers in size with varying thicknesses. At a height of 16 km or a little more, this cloud has probably circled the earth four or five times. A NASA spokesman said that "all we know so far is that there is something weighing about a million tons floating around in the stratosphere." NASA plans to send a U-2 spy plane into the cloud. A day later, NASA announced that the cloud had now reached huge proportions and extended over large parts of North America, the Atlantic Ocean and Europe. (Welt am Sonntag, March 7, 1982) It also said that this 'cloud' was invisible to the human eye. 'It was supposedly detected by laser beams that were sent through the atmosphere and reflected back from the cloud.'

First of all, two weak volcanic eruptions in New Guinea and Angola at the beginning of January 1982 were blamed, after which people did not shy away from even the major ones that had occurred almost two years ago

Partly responsible for the volcanic eruption of Mount St. Helena, which erupted in May 1980. We also learned that the mysterious 'cloud' could not be examined by a NASA satellite because the power supply had already failed in November. (Maybe a foreign power did this?) Be that as it may, the U-2 plane had to go up, circled for about 6 hours at an altitude of 15-18 km and the samples taken down showed: the 'cloud ' consisted of fine **droplets of sulfuric acid.** (WAZ, March 13, 1982) On the same day we learned: a 'new mysterious cloud at high altitude' (WAZ) was discovered, this time at an altitude of 30 km. It was now admitted that this could not be explained by volcanic eruptions, not least because of the high altitude. It stretches around almost the entire northern hemisphere, so it has taken on 'global dimensions' and could possibly contain up to 20 or 30 million tonnes of sulfuric acid. (Welt am Sonntag, March 14, 1982)

Is what happened here just an unfoundedly exaggerated but still natural phenomenon? Or should this 'cloud' be of artificial origin? Would NASA send a reconnaissance fighter into a natural cloud and if so, would it even be worth mentioning? But definitely not. Should these two anti-satellite clouds serve similar functions in space as the much smaller clouds that enveloped planes and ships before some of them disappeared entirely? This can also be ruled out, because the satellites orbit the earth at an altitude of 100, 200 or more kilometers, whereas the two clouds were only detected at an altitude of around 30 km.

We previously heard that satellites over Antarctica and the Bermuda Triangle were temporarily ceasing their spying activities for unknown reasons and would not function normally until they had cleared these areas. We also learned that these two huge clouds - although not noticeable to our eyes - reflected the laser beams sent up precisely because they could not penetrate the clouds. Could it not then also be possible, in reversal of this process, that the special cameras on the satellites are no more able to penetrate these clouds from above than the laser is from below? Are we dealing here with huge, artificially drawn 'clouds' that have the task of concealing certain near-Earth actions of 'UFOs' and 'USOs' from the spying eyes of the Allied military satellites?

We currently lack relevant, conclusive material, particularly for this chapter 'Weather as a Weapon'. Over time, more facts will be added, either invalidating or further confirming some of our arguments. Therefore, parts of these statements should initially only be seen as food for thought.

Warum es in Moskau grün regnete

Sowjetische Wissenschaftler kön- n jetzt ein Phänomen erklären, s am 5. Mai ganz Moskau erstaunte: Grüner Regen fiel damals auf die Sowjethauptstadt. Der Frühling war schuld! Nach dem langen harten Winter waren Bäume und Pflanzen explosionsartig erblüht. Winde wirbelten massenhaft die Blütenpollen in die Luft; färbten die Regentropfen grün.

'Bild'-Zeitung, 19. Mai,1987

The Norwegian newspaper 'Agderposten' also reported on this phenomenon:
'The residents of Moscow in the Soviet Union could not believe their eyes on May 5th this year. The sky above them turned green and when it started to rain, even the drops were green. Now Soviet scientists have solved the mystery. 80% of the 'rain' was pollen and not water. The reason for this is the unusually late spring this year. A large number of trees and bushes have bloomed in an incredibly short period of time. Strong winds brought a lot of this pollen into the air and the usual rain fell again on May 5th. This will be reported in a broadcast by Radio Moscow.'
A hair-raising explanation! Or maybe a weather war warning to the Soviets??

Machine Translated by Google

Das Neue Zeitalter Nr. 32/1979

Eine Wolke „schluckte" unseren Aufklärer! Eine unheimliche Begegnung

Lawrence Wagner, ehemals Radartechniker der US-Marine, berichtete vor einer Versammlung von Piloten im Marineflughafen Lemoore in Kalifornien über das aufregendste Erlebnis seiner Pilotenzeit. Wagner erklärte unter anderem:

„Anfang der 60er Jahre war ich in einer Marinestation bei San Diego in Kalifornien stationiert und flog eines Abends mit neun Kameraden einen Aufklärungsflug. Wir hatten die empfindlichen Apparate an Bord, um eventuelle Objekte auf See oder in der Luft zu entdecken. Plötzlich sahen wir eine blaue Wolke. Der Radarschirm hatte allerdings festgestellt, daß das Objekt metallen war, daß es Radiosignale aussandte und Gewicht besaß.

Wir flogen direkt auf das Ding zu, um es von oben betrachten zu können. Aber als wir näherkamen, begann es mit hoher Geschwindigkeit zu steigen, so daß ein Zusammenstoß unvermeidlich schien. Eine oder zwei Sekunden später war das Innere unserer Maschine von einem grellen Licht erfüllt. Ich erinnere mich noch genau an die erschreckten, gespannten Gesichter meiner Kameraden. Zugegeben, ich hatte auch Angst, denn wir wußten ja nicht, was passieren würde. Eine Kollision drohte. Immer noch von außen angeleuchtet, jagten wir durch einen Nebel in die Dunkelheit, während das Objekt seinen steilen Aufwärtsflug fortsetzte und in großer Höhe verschwand.

Kurz danach wurde jeder von uns von UFO-Untersuchungsbeamten der Regierung ausgefragt, die von allen fast gleichlautende Erklärungen aufnahmen. Aber bis heute habe ich nichts mehr von dieser Sache gehört und habe auch niemals irgendwo einen Bericht in den zahlreichen Artikeln über solche Zwischenfälle gelesen."

I. v. Jacobi

Sollte auch hier Wetterkrieg im Spiel gewesen sein??:

Ruhr-Nachrichten, 2.2.1988

Suezkanal wurde wegen Sandsturms geschlossen

Ismailia (dpa) - Der Suezkanal ist wegen eines Sandsturmes gestern geschlossen worden. Wie die Kanalbehörde in Ismailia mitteilte, mußten 51 Schiffe im Kanal aus Sicherheitsgründen vor Anker gehen. Darunter seien auch fünf britische Kriegsschiffe, vier Fregatten und ein Versorgungsschiff. Es ist das erste Mal seit der Wiedereröffnung des Kanals im Jahre 1975, daß er wegen eines Sandsturms geschlossen wurde. Zuvor waren bereits Kairos internationaler Flughafen und der Hafen von Alexandria geschlossen worden, da die Sichtweite unter 100 m betrug.Die Stürme, sie erreichen bis zum 100 km/h, sollen, so die Meteorologen, noch zwei Tage andauern.

Ruhr-Nachrichten, 31.12.1986

Klirrende Kälte in Sibirien: Minus 57°

Moskau (dpa) - Seit einer Woche herrscht im sibirischen Jakutsk klirrende Kälte. Die Temperatur ist auf minus 57 Grad Celsius gefallen. Durch den Kältenebel beträgt die Sicht nur fünf Meter. Die Schulen sind vorübergehend geschlossen.

Bei extremer Kälte ist die Luftfeuchtigkeit äußerst gering. Der sogenannte 'Kältenebel' kann also nur künstlichen Ursprungs sein.

Machine Translated by Google

fünf britische Kriegsschiffe, vier Fregatten und ein Versorgungsschiff. Es ist das erste Mal seit der Wiederöff-

100 m betrug.Die Stürme, sie erreichen bis zum 100 km/h, sollen, so die Meteorologen, noch zwei Tage andauern.

Moskau bleibt unter Nebelglocke gefangen

„So schlimm wie seit 107 Jahren nicht mehr“ / Chaos am Flughafen

R.-M. BORNGÄSSER, **Moskau**

Bleischwer und grau hängt der Nebel über Moskau. Kein Sonnenstrahl vermag durch die dicke Wolkendecke zu dringen. Die weißen Scheinwerferlampen der Autos geben nur meterweise die Sicht auf die Straßen frei. Nur schemenhaft vermag man die einzelnen Gestalten an den Haltestellen zu erkennen. Nie zuvor war die Stadt stiller. Der Nebel schluckt alle Geräusche wie Watte, lastet wie eine Glocke über Moskau.

Seit fünf Tagen leidet die Stadt an der Moskwa unter dieser extremen Herbstwitterung. Ein „Jahrhundertereignis“, sagen die alten Frauen und hüllen sich fröstelnd noch fester in ihre Mäntel, ziehen das Kopftuch über die Stirn. Der Nebel hat die sowjetische Luftfahrtgesellschaft Aeroflot bereits eine halbe Million Rubel (1,4 Millionen Mark) gekostet. Die Flughäfen in der Sowjethauptstadt blieben auch gestern geschlossen. 35 000 Passagiere, die Hälfte von ihnen Transitreisende, warteten an den drei zivilen Flugplätzen auf ihren Weiterflug. Nach Angaben der amtlichen Nachrichtenagentur Tass bilden die jetzigen Witterungsverhältnisse einen meteorologischen Rekord: Seit 107 Jahren hat es in Moskau nicht mehr so viele Nebeltage gegeben.

Für die meisten Wartenden gibt es keine Hotelplätze mehr. Viele werden in vor Hotels abgestellten Eisenbahnwaggons untergebracht. Sogar ein Pionierlager vor den Toren der sowjetischen Hauptstadt hat man als Nachtlager für die Passagiere eingesetzt. Auf den Moskauer Flughäfen stehen nach einem Bericht der Zeitung „Sowjetskaja Rossija“ so gut wie keine Flugzeuge mehr. Diese seien auf Ausweichflugplätzen in Leningrad, Wilna, Riga und Woronesch gelandet.

Schlimm sind die hygienischen Verhältnisse. Lange Schlangen stehen vor den Toiletten draußen vor dem Flughafengebäude. Wenn es auch bei der Unterkunft hapert, so ist die Versorgung aber gewährleistet. Die Buffets im Halleninneren sind gefüllt, es gibt „Freßbeutel“ mit Brot, Wurst und harten Eiern für einen Rubel. Außerdem steht eine dampfende Feldküche bereit, aus der Suppe ausgeteilt wird. Clevere Händler bieten auf offenen Wegen Äpfel und Pflaumen an. Die größere Schlange der Wartenden aber – man staunt – drängt zu einem Eisstand. Ungeachtet der tristen Umgebung und der kalten Temperaturen lecken die Fluggäste ihr Eis.

Anzeichen für eine baldige Wetterveränderung scheint es noch nicht zu geben. Nach Angaben von Tass sagen die sowjetischen Wetterexperten eine Abschwächung der Nebelfront erst für heute voraus. Das bedeute aber noch nicht, daß sich dann die Sichtweite wesentlich verbessere. Nach Moskauer Angaben hat das sowjetische Ministerium für zivile Luftfahrt sogar eine Krisensitzung einberufen, um die außerordentliche Lage zu beraten.

Die Welt,Hamburg, 23.10.1987

Machine Translated by Google

How the world military situation has changed! While the USA - or more correctly, the anonymously ruling background power of Zion - managed to center the main theater of war in Europe in two world wars in order to eliminate or at least greatly weaken the economic competition of the European states, but above all to ensure that the country that had become independent and the German Reich, which had separated itself from the dictates of high finance, was to be razed to the ground by mass bombing. After 1945, a new, changed situation was gradually created, still unnoticed by the world public. The predatory state of the USA was able - together with its foster child, the USSR - to occupy the German motherland and to maintain a brutal reign of occupation and terror with nuclear, bacteriological and chemical pressure and threats for decades, but despite all this violence, this state, of all people, is from that one Starting from the subjugated people in the heart of Europe, in a way that is hardly imaginable, the greatest danger that they have ever faced in their history arises. Not only that the German flying discs on and over the American mainland have given the mafia ruling there constant insecurity for four decades now, breathing down their necks in a nerve-wracking way, they don't even know when, in what strength, from where exactly and with what new intentions they come back, but also in the huge lake area on her own doorstep, she feels like she is on a powder keg. One of the few options left to her was to conceal the continued existence of Imperial German power, to divert attention to 'aliens' and to trivialize the defeats.

Isn't it understandable that not only the USA, but also the other Allied states have tried everything in the past to locate the bases, hideouts and nests of the flying discs at all ends of the world? Of course with the intention of excavating and destroying them! Always assuming that you also have the technical superiority in weaponry.
If the enemy were at least localized, then a large part of the uncertainty for the Allies would be eliminated.

Because over the course of many years there have been countless reports about the entry and appearance of 'UFOs/USOs' in seas, lakes and rivers, with clusters in certain areas, it was reasonable to assume that these occurred not only over land, but also have underwater bases (which we will report on in Part II of this document). However, since more than 70% of the earth's surface is covered by water masses and the world's oceans are several thousand meters deep in some areas, there is a three-dimensional space beneath the sea surface of a size that is almost unimaginable. This means Allied searches are more like a game of chance, especially since tracking options such as radio, radar, echo sounder, etc. often fail when it comes to UFOs/USOs.

Seabed puzzles!
The American ship 'Eltanin' managed to capture something strange on the seabed. A camera in a metal cylinder, which was lowered from the ship with a cable, made it possible to take pictures of the seabed. On August 29, 1964, 1000 miles west of Cape Horn, at a depth of 4500 meters, an inexplicable

A piece of machinery photographed that, with a series of masts, looked like the intersection of a television and a telemetric antenna. Dr. Hopkins, the marine biologist, said this thing couldn't be a plant or any form of coral because of the great depth. When pressed that it must be a technical structure, he evaded and said, 'I don't want to claim that people built it, because that would raise the question of how they got there - at a depth of 4,500 meters ! - brought. Above all, we don't yet have any underwater vehicles to reach such depths. 'Dr. Hopkins spotted this object on the 45,000-mile-long fault line that circles our planet. So it could be a placed seismograph. Accordingly, an extraterrestrial organization would have to collect vital geodetic and seismographic information about our Earth. One becomes a little uneasy when one considers that either visitors from outer space **or an as-yet-unknown terrestrial organization** have more knowledge about the dangerous subterranean movements of our Earth than the leading edge of our science. .....

In December 1967, 'Saucer Scoop' (presumably a US UFO newspaper) received numerous reports from commercial fishermen complaining of 'holes' in the Gulf of Mexico and places where the water was 'boiling' in circles, in addition, to UFOs diving into the water and rising out of it. We believe that sea water can only boil if something generates the appropriate heat. We can therefore only assume that someone in these stormy waters is cooking something up for us ('brewing' would be a more accurate translation; HUGIN note). And we cannot resist the photograph of the 'Eltanin' of an alien machine on the 45,000 mile long fracture zone of our planet, reports of 18m long UFOs hovering over the ocean and all these underwater machines appearing next to frightened fishermen - to connect with each other. (UN, No.192, August 1972)

The 'Eltanin' is just one of the many 'research ships' that were used to search for the enemy and their various actions. Not only search operations by the Air Force and the Navy serve this task, but also, according to our assumption, deep diving attempts of an apparently private nature, such as those of the French. Naval officer and deep-sea explorer Jacques Cousteau.
With the headline 'Billions are pouring into exploring the unknown depths; Industrial nations play poker for treasures of the sea' ('Ruhr-Nachr.', August 7, 1984) although one diverts attention to the commercial side of deep-sea research, one also admits: The most fruitful advance is probably in the 'exploration of the unknown Territory as US President Lyndon B. Johnson once said, the US's efforts marked the **'Oceanological Decade':** research and work submarines ventured into previously unknown depths, diving devices were developed that allowed free swimming at over 200 m Depth made possible, television cameras explored the seabeds, survey ships began to survey the submarine subsurface of our plan as planned.

Although outwardly the intentionally meaningless term 'UFO' is used for better secrecy, US military research also uses additional **code names:** Nobody knows how to explain to an astonished public that it corresponds to the complicated space surveillance system of NORAD (North Atlantic Defense Command). , which carries out 15,000 observations a day at altitudes of up to 3,000 kilometers, still gives unidentifiable signals - even though all observations are evaluated. ... But even after the computer evaluation, there are still around a dozen **'boogies' (ghostly** apparitions) that remain every day that the NORAD technicians cannot explain. (Correct would mean, 'don't explain may' ; Note: Hugin). They call the unidentified signals **"zoo animals."** Why? Probably to avoid the term UFO. The unknown flying objects that NORAD registers within the atmosphere are also given a seemingly innocuous name in this organization's reports: **UCTs** (uncorrelated targets) . Since all of these observations are subject to confidentiality, it is not known whether NORAD technicians have ever compared the mysterious signals they receive with the satellite tracking systems with the ground-based UFO observations (why wouldn't they use every opportunity to register the flying disks? ; Note by HUGIN).

From the series: 'The Mystery of the Century; UFO - spooky or reality?' . 'Colorful Illustrated'; Episode II: 'NASA's Secret Protocols'. 1982. . No. 10, 4. 3

Just as NORAD - the secret North American early warning system - uses very special cover names, the Navy also uses meaningless expressions, for example in underwater searches: I assume that America's scientists are on the trail of one of the greatest secrets of our time. You've probably already figured out most of where the planes and ships have gone. Triangle has disappeared. Under the name **'Sky Traps',** the investigation is in full swing. The associated . in recent years off the American coast in what is known as Bermuda processes are concentrated in an area between Florida, Bermuda and the Greater Antilles. ...

Before I address this question, I would like to talk about another study by US scientists called **'Vile Vortices' .** This term means something like 'sneaky' or cunning whirlpools'. This investigation is also carried out in the murderous Bermuda Triangle.

From the report: 'Mysterious Bermuda Triangle'; 'U.N' , No. 191, July 1972.

As early as 1945, this zone became a scientific mystery (8*), and the **'Project Magnet',** led years later by the Canadian Wilbert Smith , which was intended to bring greater clarity about UFOs, their propulsion and the electromagnetic disturbances they emanate, was also included commissioned to research the processes in the marine areas (16*; also, report from the 'Nürnberger Nachrichten' on page 28). For a time, a group of 160 researchers also worked on the marine phenomena, which was led by Franck von Loeffeli, a former major in the German Wehrmacht who came to the USA with Wernher von Braun and has been working at NASA ever since (8*).

Strange whispering sounds are also reported to come from the Bermuda Triangle. As John Keel writes, the National Bureau of Standards recorded these sounds using microphones and special equipment when it conducted a study of high-frequency sounds in 1965-66. The origin of these whispers could not be determined (16*, p.142)

The American journalist John Keel, who has connections to the Pentagon, reported that the NSA (National Security Intelligence Service), an organization more secret than the CIA, installed a total of 66 listening devices along the American east coast in the direction of the Bermuda Triangle in 1965 ; according to the Norwegian magazine 'Vi Menn', No.6/1988. The report went on to say that in 1967, the NSA conducted additional **secret** investigations in collaboration with the U.S. Navy

Machine Translated by Google

carried out in this maritime area. According to John Keel, the seabed was searched using specially equipped research vessels. A large and strange antenna-like installation was found at a depth of 300 m. Nobody knows how it got there, who put it there and for what purpose. The antenna was probably recovered, but the American authorities refused to comment. As far as the 'Vi Menn' , Norway. The report inevitably reminds us of the secret German weather station in northern Canada. About 30 km south of Cape Chidley on the northern tip of Labrador, the German U-537 secretly set up a small weather station in 1943, which was only discovered 38 years later (RN, August 3, 1981; WAZ, August 4, 1981;) and Even that, only due to research by a German, no one in Canada had noticed them (RN, May 31, 1984).

An American setback in the investigation?: On December 18, 1967, in the early morning of December 18, 1967, a fire destroyed the product of 17 years of research at a cost of 5-10 million dollars at the University of Miami's Marine Science Institute. While we don't believe that a 'Black Man' set the institute on fire, we can't help but assume that in this 17 year work there were many clues about these underwater bases and/or what else is actually going on at the bottom of the ocean. It's all turned to ashes now. As the situation is now, officials will deny the inexplicable underwater vessels, just as they have already denied atmospheric UFO activity. (From 'Saga', USA, No. 6/1970; taken from 'UFO-Nachrichten', Wiesbaden, No. 192, August 1972).

Machine Translated by Google

American/Soviet Bermuda Research

In the 1970s, new and probably even larger research projects began. There is the American project **MODE-I ,** but also the Soviet **POLYGON-70.** After an Italian 'expedition' carried out in 1977, a joint **American-Soviet project,** also in the Bermuda Triangle, began its research activities in the same year under the name **POLYMODE ,** a combination of POLYGON and MODE (8*; 16*)

The announcement of this, as well as the previous, projects was made in the world press with more or less trivializing or meaningless reasons. It's about huge whirlpools of water, about waves that run in the opposite direction to the wind, or about the fact that the Navy just needs to renew its maps of the earth's magnetic fields, or about the fact that at the bottom of the ocean and only in the Bermuda Triangle, something extraordinary strong magnetic fields exist that cause these recurring accidents; or similar distracting excuses. the report 'Region of Terror; News from the Devil's Triangle in the Atlantic' is the headline: Some time ago, reports about the so-called Devil's Triangle, the 'Bermuda Triangle', appeared in the world press again, according to which an American-Soviet research team discovered the phenomenon of gigantic water whirlpools that develop between the Bahamas **and** the The Bermuda Islands in the Atlantic are able to be formed, examined and explored. (DNZ, No.l1/1978)

On the POLYMODE project see the following reports from 'DNZ', Munich:

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

List of sources

1) 'Who was Hitler? - Contributions to Hitler research', Dr. Hans Severus Ziegl Grabert-Verlag, Tübingen, 1970, 375 pages.

2) 'UFOs unidentified flying objects? Last secret weapon of the Third Reich Willibald Mattern, Samizdat Verlag, Toronto, Canada, 160 pages.

3) 'Flugtrute Nord', Harly Foged + Henrik Krüger, Bogan's Forlag, Dänemark, 3540 Lynge, 1985, 150 p.

4) 'Appearing dead; Martin Bormann and other Nazi greats in South America' and Ladis Farago, Hoffmann Campe, Hamburg, 1975, 380 p. 5) '
60 years of German submarines; 1906-1966' Bodo Herzog, JF Lehmanns Verlag, Munich,
1968.

6) 'With Goebbels to the end' 1949/50. Wilfried von Oven, Dürer Verlag, Buenos Aires Argentina,

7) 'German researchers in the Southern Ocean', Ernst Herrmann, Safari-Verlag, Berlin 1941, 185 p.

8) 'UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle; Die Atlantis-Geheimbasis', Jean Prachan, Verlag Fritz Molden, Vienna, Munich, 1979, 207 P.

9) Report: 'Underwater UFO bases alert US' John A. Keel, UFO News, D
6200 Wiesbaden 13, PO Box 130185, No. 192, August 1972.

10) 'Visitors from Space' Adolf Schneider, Hermann Bauer Verlag KG, Freiburg i.Br., 1973,
364 S.

11) 'Man and Destiny' Semi-monthly magazine for the entire field of humanities, by Ing. Erich
Villach, Austria, from the regular section 'Realesoteric short reports'
kiss

12) 'The Bermuda Triangle; "Window to the Cosmos" Charles Berlitz, Paul Zsolnay Verlag, Wien,
Hamburg, 1975, 255 S.

13) 'Without a trace', Ch. Berlitz, Zsolnay Verlag, 1977 14) 290 S .
'They were never gone; UFO phenomena - then and now' Liber Verlag, Main 1982, 188 p.

15) 'The mysteries of the Bermuda Triangle are solved!', Lawrence David Kusche Rovolt Verlag, Hamburg,
paperback 16) 'Evidence: 1980 265 S .
The Bermuda Triangle' David Group, Knaur Verlag, Munich, paperback, 1987,
220 S.

17) ' The devil's triangle Richard Winer, Fischer paperback publishing house, 1977, 186 p.

18) Report: 'Lost in the Bermuda Triangle', weekly magazine 'The New Age'
Munich, No. 37/1986.

19) Report: 'New puzzles about the Bermuda Triangle; Another ship disappeared without a trace'
The new age' , Munich, No. 4/1977.

20) 'War Underwater; Submarines on the seven seas, 1939-1945', Franz Kurowski Pawlak Verlag, M
Herrsching, 1984 21) 'Flying saucers - a 480 S .
reality', Frank Edwards, Ventla-Verlag Wiesbaden, 1967, 300 pages.

22) 'German Mythology', Jacob Grimm, first edition 1835, present reprint Akademische Druck- u. Verlagsanstalt, Graz, Austria, 1968, 3 volumes.

23) 'The German Secret Weapons' Brian Ford, Moewig paperback publisher Münch 1981, 160 p.

Machine Translated by Google

24) 'Eagle calls leader headquarters; Command radio on all fronts in the Second World War', Herbert Dammert/Franz Kurowski, Druffel Verlag, Leoni, 1985, 300 p.
25) 'Flying saucers have landed', Desmond Leslie, Georg Adamski, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden, 1962, 316 p.
26) 'German researchers in the Southern Ocean', Ernst Herrmann, Safari-Verlag, Berl' 1941, 190 p.

Machine Translated by Google

Flugkreisel-Erprobung, Stand / Anzahl Erprobungsflüge:

HAUNEBU I	(vorhanden 2 Stück)	52	E-IV
HAUNEBU II	(vorhanden 7 Stück)	106	E-IV
HAUNEBU III	(vorhanden 1 Stück)	19	E-IV
(VRIL I)	(vorhanden 17 Stück)	84	(Schumann)

Empfehlung:

Beschleunigen von Abschlußerprobung
und Produktion „Haunebu II"
+ „VRIL I"

Anmerkung der HUGIN e.V. Studiengesellschaft
5802 Wetter 1, POstfach 13:

1987 erhielten wir diese und die nachfolgenden 4 Kopien (von uns verkleinert) von einer süddeutschen Industrie-Filmgesellschaft zugesandt, mit dem einschränkenden Hinweis, die Herkunft dieser vielleicht mehrfach von Kopien gemachten Kopien sei nicht mehr zurück zu verfolgen. Daher können wir unserem Leserkreis diese nur zur Kenntnis bringen. Ob sie tatsächlich aus einer der geheimen reichsdeutschen Flugscheiben-Produktionsstätten stammen, bleibt vorerst offen.
Die zur Zeit noch geltenden Besatzungs-Paragraphen verbieten zwar die Benutzung der offiziellen Hoheitszeichen des - rechtlich noch fortbestehenden - Deutschen Reiches, aber nur zu Propagandazwecken. Weil diese eventuellen Dokumente nicht verstümmelt und damit entwertet werden sollen, geben wir sie hier unzensiert wieder.

Blatt 2

HAUNEBU I

Machine Translated by Google

MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU I"

Durchmesser: 25 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7b
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4
Geschwingigkeit: 4800 Kilom.p.Std. (rechn. bis 17000)
Reichweite in Flugzeit: 18 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 2 x 8cm KSK in Drehtürmen und 4 x Mk 108, starr nach vorn
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Victalen
Besatzung: 8 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 60 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 8 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Tag wie Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: 60 %
Frontverfügbarkeit: Nicht vor Jahresende 44

Bemerkung: Die SS-E-IV hält Konzentration auf bereits im Versuch stehende „Haunebu II" für sinnvoller als an beiden Typen parallel weiterzuarbeiten. „Haunebu II" verspricht entscheidende Verbesserungen in nahezu allen Punkten. Höhere Herstellungskosten scheinen gerechtfertigt - besonders mit Blick auf Führer-Sonderbefehl, Flugkreisel betreffend.

Blatt 1

HAUNEBU II
Ø 26,30

7.November 1943
SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV

MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU II"

Durchmesser: 26,3 Meter
Antrieb: „Thule"-Tachyonator 7c (gepanzert; Ø TY.-Scheibe: 23,1 Meter)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a
Geschwindigkeit: 6000 Kilometer p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis ca. 21000 möglich)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 55 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 6 8 cm KSK in drei Drehtürmen, unten, eine 11 cm KSK in einem Drehturm, oben
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-„Victalen"
Besatzung:9 Mann (erg. Transportverm. bis zu 20 Mann)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 15 Minuten
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Tag und Nacht, Wetterunabhängig
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit (V7): 85 %

Verfügbarkeit „Haunebu II" (bei weiter gutem Erprobungsverlauf wie V7) ab Oktober. Dann Serienherstellung ab Jahreswende 1943/44, jedoch noch ohne verbesserte Kraftstrahlkanone „Donar-Ksk IIIV", deren Frontreife nicht vor Frühsommer 1944 angenommen werden kann.

Vom Führer verlangte hundertzehnprozentige Einsatzreife rundum kann allerdings nicht vor Ende nächsten Jahres erwartet werden.Erst ab etwa Serie 9.

Begerkung zuständige SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV: Die neue deutsche Technik-und damit vor allem Flugkreisel und KSKs-wird wegen der noch zeitraubenden Herstel-

Blatt 3

HAUNEBU III

Machine Translated by Google

HAUNEBU III
71,00

SCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL „HAUNEBU III"

Durchmesser: 71 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachionator 7o plus Schumann-Levitatoren (gepanzert)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a
Geschwindigkeit: ca. 7000 Kilom.p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis zu 40000)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 8 Wochen (bei S-L-Flug 40% mehr)
Bewaffnung: 4 x 11cm KSK in Drehtürmen (3 unten, 1 oben), 10 x 8cm KSK in Drehringen plus 6 x Mk 108, 8 x 3cm KSK ferngesteuert
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-Victalen
Besatzung: 32 Mann (erg. Transportverm. max. 70 Personen)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 25 Minuten
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Wetterunabhängig Tag und Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: Etwa 1945

Bemerkung: SS-E-IV hält den Hinweis für notwendig, daß in „Haunebu III" ein großartiges Werk deutscher Technik im entstehen ist, wegen der allgemeinen Materiallage aber alle Kräfte auf das schneller verfügbare Haunebu II gesetzt werden sollten.
Gemeinsam mit dem leichten Flugkreisel „Vril" der Schumann-Gruppe könnte „Haunebu II" die von Führer aufgestellten Forderungen sicherlich erfüllen.

LEICHTE BEWAFFNETE FLUGSCHEIBE (JÄGER), TYPE „VRIL"
(Schumann-Gruppe)

Durchmesser: 11,5o Meter
Antrieb: Schumann-Levitator (gepanzert)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 3o
Geschwindigkeit: 2900 Kilometer p.Stunde {(bisher), bis zu ca. 12000 mögl.
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): 5 1/2 Stunden {(Flug-Aufladung mittels KS von
Haunebu aus wied erprobt))
Bewaffnung: 1 8cm KSK, fernsteuerbar, unten, + 2 x Mk 108 u. 2 x Mk 17
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Viktalen
Besatzung: (je nach Einsatzart) 1 bis 3 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 12 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Wetterunabhängig Tag und Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatzreife: ca. Sept. 1944, ev. früher.

Zerstörer
Vril 2
PROJEKT
F. 1945/46
10,50

Machine Translated by Google

'Vril' is a well-known expression in esotericism, which therefore does not need to be discussed in detail here. There was even a Vril society in Berlin before 1945.

The expression 'Haunebu' appears in Jürgen Spanuth's books 'The Atlanteans' and 'The Philistines', on a sketch in the area of the North Pole. Haun or Haune means in North German and Frisian: Hune = Giant.

Skizze aus Jürgen Spanuth,'Die Philister':

Die ferne Finsternis
10. Bogen: Sonne um Mitternacht
Säule des Himmels
9. Bogen. Der längste Tag dauert 17 Stunden
Enden der Erde
= Haunebu XX
8. Bogen
Der nördliche Halbkreis
7. Bogen
6. Bogen
Ahhijawa
Hatti
Achäer
Sardana
Sekelesa
Keret
Jeres
Kftjw-Phönikien
Amurru
5. Bogen
4. Bogen
Pithom
Lebu
Theben
3. Bogen
Der südliche Halbkreis
2. Bogen
1. Bogen
Kein Schatten zur Mittagszeit (Äquator)
= sin-wur
Der Große Wasserkreis
Großer Wasserkreis
Okeanos

Abb. 1
Ungefähres Weltbild der Ägypter um 1200 v. Chr. Um den „Erdkreis" fließt der „Große Wasserkreis" (= sin wur, griech. okeanos). Der Erdkreis ist im „Neun Bogen" geteilt, daher kann der ganze bewohnte Erdkreis auch „alle neun Bogen" heißen. Der neunte Bogen liegt an den „Enden der Erde im fernsten Norden". Die Griechen nannten die „Himmelssäule" „stele boreios" = Nordsäule, den Himmelsträger „Atlas". Die antiken Völker glaubten, daß die Himmelsstütze unter dem Polarstern als dem einzig festen Punkt unter dem sich drehenden Himmelsgewölbe steht.
Obige Darstellung der „Himmelssäule" stammt von einem Schmuckkasten aus Elfenbein aus dem Grabe Tut-Ench-Amons (um 1350 v. Chr.).
Haunebu = eine Bezeichnung für die Nordmeervölker.

One of our readers suggested that the abbreviation used under 'armament': 'KSK' could possibly mean power beam cannon.

In the flying disk sketches 'Haunebu' and 'Vril' the name 'Schumann' appears several times, as well as the Schumann group and Schumann levitators. The name could possibly refer to: 1) Prof. Dr.-Ing. WO Schumann; Worked at the Technical University of Munich in 1926; tested together with his colleague Prof. Dr.-Ing. M. Klose (TH. Berlin) the magnetic current apparatus of the German inventor Captain at sea, Hans Coler (see: 'Secret Wonder Weapons', vol. III, p. 54/55)

2) Prof. Dr. Erich Schumann, head of the German Army's research tasks and scientific advisor to Field Marshal Keitel during the war (see: Secret Miracle Weapons Bd. III, S. 27).

While we Germans who remained in the occupied motherland were unable to recognize the new post-war situation, or rather did not **want to,** our enemies were very busy in two groups. One group then worked to completely explain away the German flying disc sightings around the world as natural celestial phenomena from the general world public. The other group, like the American Major Keyhoe (in German: Key Hook), or during the war at the English. The Jewish woman Elisabeth Klarer (now South Africa) who worked in the Secret Service, or the Polish-born Georg Adamski (Jew?) together with Desmond Leslie (English fighter pilot in the WWII and grand-nephew of the mass murderer Churchill) and many other people in Allied service, interpreted for individuals and groups who became aware of the German flying discs as space travel operated by 'aliens' and thus launched the topic into an implausible sideline, which then aroused hardly any interest.

Adamski claims to have had contact with a 'Venus man' who landed in the Californian desert on November 20, 1952, who allegedly left footprints and a message (see sketches) and later gave him pictures of his 'Venus spaceship' (see one of the pictures) by drop. What is interesting is that the footprint and message clearly contain swastikas and that his 'pictures' of the 'Venus spaceship' are almost identical to the type shown previously

Machine Translated by Google

'Haunebu II'.

While we assume that Adamski knew the origin of these flying disks and only used his - perhaps feigned - 'contact' to pass off the German thing as coming from Venus, Ing.
Erich Halik, who knew very well about German developments, in his 1954 report 'No Invasion from Space', still assumed that Adamski himself was the one who was deceived. Halik wrote: There are now two recent book publications that focus on; I chose 'Cosmic People' as a concept and thus seem to contradict my own interpretation. . . There's the book 'Flying Saucers Have Landed' (Flying Saucers Have Landed) by Desmond Leslie and George Adamski. . . . In the second part of the book, Leslie hands over the pen to his colleague Adamski, who now strictly claims to have had an hour-long encounter with the crew member of a landed 'Flying Disk' on November 20, 1952 in a desert in the state of Arizona, USA. Adamski's description of this event contains a number of details that make the matter seem credible, but which must escape the superficial observer because their recognition requires a certain esoteric knowledge - which, incidentally, Adamski himself seems to be completely lacking. First of all, he lets it be known that from the beginning there must have been at least a mental connection between him and the crew, because he leaves it to the circumstances to lead him to the right place, or at least acts that way to his companions. Once he has found his way there and is confronted with the improbable, he supposedly continues this connection as a supplement to the otherwise limited possibility of communication (poor English, facial expressions and gestures). And here the dramatic break in events occurs that Adamski has not been able to undo to this day: he falls under the spell of his bias, which devalues the entire encounter. Adamski **believes that** despite his counterpart's completely feminine appearance, he is looking at a 'man from Venus'. His conclusions arise entirely from the notorious 'space consciousness' of North Americans, the scientific and technical fiction. And with that he loses the opportunity to pay attention to the details that could have opened up the whole incident to him. He knows nothing about those dark ones or black badges (HUGIN note: the signs of the 'Black Sun', the esoteric SS) that his companion Dr. Georg Williamson (the very etymologist quoted by Leslie), as a wartime aircraft recognizer, could see on the flanks of the cigar-shaped mother ship from which the small flying disc that his counterpart emerged from came. He no longer recognizes the deep meaning in the color combination of the clothing of his interlocutor, who wears a dark brown, metallic shimmering overalls and blood-colored shoes (HUGIN note: i.e. the colors of the NS blood and soil theory, red and brown). He also stands quite helplessly in front of the footprints left behind, to which his fictional 'Venus man' emphatically pointed out and which show some **symbols that can be assigned to a very earthly esotericism: a type of swastika,** here definitely used as a circulating symbol of the 'Great Bear' to be understood as representing the North Star, and a representation of Saturn, which Mr. Ing. Lambert Binder believes he recognizes as such. When Adamski finally parted on friendly terms, he was left with a feeling of wistful longing for the supposed home planet of his extremely beautiful 'friend' from 'outer space'. On December 13, 1952, Adamski had one last chance to see things correctly: Near his residence in Palomar Gardens in California (the 'Venusians' must have a well-functioning information service here on earth!), a low-flying disk of the same thing struck him Type dropped a photographic plate, which Adamski gave to the stranger upon his request when he met him on November 20th. In place of the deleted recording, it bears a series of cursive handwritten characters that pose new, almost unsolvable puzzles to Adamski.

Again on top there is a depiction of a cigar-shaped object with the swastika and the black discs (note. HUGIN: symbolic for 'Black Sun'), which Dr. Williamson noticed. And underneath, curly characters in the writing from another world are what Adamiski dreams of to this day. Well, by a lucky 'coincidence', I was able to read this text a few days after receiving the book: It is a text in Old Church Slavonic script and Latin! It mainly points out, in emphatic, concise words, the **uselessness of pursuing the objects .** This brings us to a point that seems to move the whole affair dangerously close to the possibility of clever mystification. But even if the Adamski team did mystify - and there are several people here who gave notarized statements about their observations - there are enough details in the descriptions that allow the esotericist to classify the entire Adamski story in a group esoteric way. (11*, No. 9, July 15, 1954)

Machine Translated by Google

7. Die zweite Aufnahme der Venus-Untertasse von George Adamski am 13. Dezember 1952 zeigt deutlich die Ansicht von unten. (25*)

10. Botschaft von einem anderen Planeten. Diese rätselhaften Zeichen kamen bei der Entwicklung des Filmes heraus, den der Venus-Mensch am 20. November 1952 mitgenommen und am 13. Dezember 1952 zurückgebracht hatte. (25*)

Machine Translated by Google

Fliegende Untertassen sind gelandet
DESMOND LESLIE
GEORGE ADAMSKI

An dem Platz angelangt, wo sich der fremde Besucher mit mir unterhalten und wo er absichtlich seine Spuren eingedrückt hatte, stellten wir uns um die Abdrücke herum; mit Ausrufen höchster Verwunderung betrachteten alle die seltsamen Spuren. Hier war wahrlich eine Botschaft hinterlassen, deren Deutung und Auslegung viel Arbeit und Mühe erfordern würde. (25*)

Auszug aus: (26*)

Deutsche Antarktische Expedition 1938/39

	Fahrtteilnehmer:
Expeditionsleiter	Kapitän Alfred Ritscher
Kapitän des Schiffes	Alfred Kottas, DLH
Eislotse	Kapitän Otto Kraul
Schiffsarzt	Dr. Josef Bludau, NDL
Flugkapitän	Rudolf Mayr, Führer der Dornier-Wales „Passat", DLH
Flugzeugmechaniker	Franz Preuschoff, DLH
Flugfunker	Herbert Ruhnke, DLH
Luftbildner	Max Bundermann, Hansa Luftbild G. m. b. H.
Flugkapitän	Richardheinrich Schirmacher, Führer der Dornier-Wales „Boreas", DLH
Flugzeugmechaniker	Kurt Loesener, DLH
Flugfunker	Erich Gruber, DLH
Luftbildner	Siegfried Sauter, Hansa Luftbild G.m.b.H.
I. Meteorologe	Dr. Herbert Regula, Deutsche Seewarte, Hamburg
II. Meteorologe	Studienassessor Heinz Lange, R. f. W., Berlin
Techn. Assistent	Walter Krüger, R.f.W., Berlin
Techn. Assistent	Wilhelm Gockel, Marineobservatorium Wilhelmshaven
Biologe	Studienref. Erich Barkley, Reichsstelle für Fischerei (Institut für Walforschung)
Geophysiker	cand. geophys. Leo Gburek, Erdmagnetisches Institut, Leipzig
Geograph	Dr. Ernst Herrmann
Ozeanograph	cand. phil. Karl-Heinz Paulsen
I. Offizier	Herbert Amelang
II. Offizier	Karl-Heinz Röbke
III. Offizier	Hans Werner Viereck
IV. Offizier	Vincenz Grisar
Schiffsfunkleiter	Erich Harmsen
Schiffsfunkoffizier	Kurt Bojahr
Schiffsfunkoffizier	Ludwig Müllmerstadt
Leitender Ingenieur	Karl Uhlig
II. Ingenieur	Robert Schulz
III. Ingenieur	Henry Maas
IV. Ingenieur	Edgar Gäng
IV. Ingenieur	Hans Nielsen
Ing. Assistent	Johann Frey
Ing. Assistent	Georg Jelschen
Ing. Assistent	Heinz Siewert
Elektriker	Elektro-Ing. Herbert Bruns
Elektriker	Karl-Heinz Bode
Werkmeister	Herbert Bolle, DLH
Katapultführer	Wilhelm Hartmann, DLH
Lagerhalter	Alfred Rücker, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Franz Weiland, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Axel Mylius, DLH
Flugmechaniker	Wilhelm Lender, DLH
Bootsmann	Willy Stein
I. Zimmermann	Richard Wehrend
II. Zimmermann	Alfons Schäfer
Matrose	Heinz Hoek
Matrose	Jürgen Ulpts
Matrose	Albert Weber
Matrose	Adolf Kunze
Matrose	Karl Hedden
Matrose	Eugen Klenk
Matrose	Fritz Jedamezyk
Matrose	Emil Brandt
Matrose	Kurt Ohnemüller
Leichtmatrose	Alfred Peters
Decksjunge	Alex Burtscheid

Machine Translated by Google

	tisches Institut, Leipzig	Matrose	Kurt Ohnemüller
	Herrmann	Leichtmatrose	Alfred Peters
Ozeanograph	cand. phil. Karl-Heinz Paulsen	Decksjunge	Alex Burtscheid

DAS WUNDER VON SCHWEINFURT 1944

DEUTSCHE UNTERTASSEN VERNICHTEN 145 SUPERFESTUNGEN

WOCHEN-Echo

21. Mai 1950 (V. b. b.) 4. Jahrgang, Folge 21, 80 Groschen

das oberkommando der wehrmacht gibt bekannt:

ein starker nordamerikanischer bomberverband flog gestern vormittag nach mitteldeutschland ein, und warf bomben auf mehrere orte. ueber dem gebiet von schweinfurt wurden allein 145 viermotorige bomber vernichtet..........

The one-sided report associated with the above sensational report is largely misleading, like all the relevant reports at the time about German flying disc developments before 1945. In the years 1950 to around 1957, the occupation press tried to dispel existing and justified German hopes by also using them German 'miracle weapons' made the claim or at least expressed the assumption that these fell into the hands of the Allies when they invaded, just like all other military developments. That was or had to be largely believed at the time.

Decades have now passed and evidence has accumulated showing that the Americans and the Soviets in particular are in a constant battle against the so-called 'UFOs'. Therefore, from today's perspective, it is completely illogical that the enemy powers came into possession of the German flying disc technology in 1945!
As in so many areas of anti-German lies, agitation and enemy propaganda, we have to realize that this topic is no different.

Machine Translated by Google

24.1.1987, 'Ruhr-Nachrichten', Dortmund

Der Frachter „Flying Enterprise" kurz vor seinem Untergang am 10. Januar 1952. Bis zum letzten Moment hatte Kapitän Carlsen sein vom Sturm schwer angeschlagenes Schiff nicht aufgeben wollen. Der Versuch, den havarierten Frachter in den rettenden Hafen von Falmouth zu schleppen, schlug fehl.
Foto: dpa

Deutsches Zirkonium war für erstes Atom-U-Boot der Welt bestimmt

Taucher bargen geheime Fracht des See-Helden Kapitän Carlsen

Von JOSEF LUCKE

Hamburg (dpa) - Tagelang hielt der Todeskampf des amerikanischen Frachters „Flying Enterprise" und das Schicksal des einsamen Kapitäns an Bord des Havaristen die Welt in Atem.

Gebannt blickten die Menschen auf den Mann, der um die Jahreswende 1951/52 bis zuletzt auf seinem Schiff ausharrte, allein, durchnäßt, ohne Essen, ohne Schlaf, und schließlich doch aufgeben mußte: Kapitän Kurt Carlsen, der sein angeschlagenes Schiff retten wollte.

Am 10. Januar vor 35 Jahren versank die „Flying Enterprise" im Atlantik vor der britischen Küste. Carlsen wurde auf dem Broadway in New York eine solche Konfettiparade bereitet, wie sie bis dahin nur Charles Lindbergh nach seiner Atlantik-Überquerung zuteil geworden war. Was die Öffentlichkeit nicht wußte und erst später Taucher ans Licht brachten: Sein Schiff hatte geheime, nicht deklarierte Fracht an Bord.

Das Barometer fällt. Das keiten von 175 Stundenkilometern peitschen die See zu meterhohen Wellen. Am ersten Weihnachtstag erschüttert ein schwerer Schlag den Frachter. Das Schiff zeigt Risse und droht auseinanderzubrechen. Mit 30 Grad Schlagseite treibt die „Flying Enterprise" in der tobenden See. Carlsen lehnt dennoch die Hilfe des französischen Hochseeschleppers „Abeille 25" ab.

Vier Schiffe - „Noordam", „Greeley", „Golden Eagle" und „Southland" - halten sich am 29. Dezember in unmittelbarer Nähe der „Flying Enterprise" auf. Seine Schlagseite beträgt bereits 50 Grad, als die Passagiere in das eiskalte Wasser springen und von den Rettungsbooten der Hilfsschiffe aufgefischt werden. Die Besatzung der „Enterprise" verläßt noch am gleichen Tag das sinkende Schiff.

Nur Kapitän Kurt Carlsen bleibt an Bord und hofft noch immer, daß sein Frachter gerettet werden kann. Allein treibt er auf dem manövrierunfähigen Wrack in den Wellenbergen, bis am 3. Januar 1952 der britische Bergungsschlepper „Turmoil" am Unglücksort eintrifft. Dem ersten Steuermannn Kenneth Dancy gelingt es, an Bord der „Enterprise" zu kommen. stellen. Mit dem Wrack auf dem Haken macht die „Turmoil" drei Meilen Fahrt in der Stunde zum nächsten Hafen Falmouth am südlichsten Zipfel der britischen Insel. Die „Abeille 25" und der US-Zerstörer „Williard Keith" begleiten den Schleppzug.

Keine 80 Seemeilen - etwa 150 Kilometer - vom rettenden Hafen entfernt, bricht die Schlepptrosse. Der Frachter hat sich inzwischen fast völlig auf die Backbordseite gelegt. Es gibt keine Rettung mehr für das Schiff. Am Nachmittag des 10. Januar verlassen Kapitän Carlsen und „Turmoil"-Steuermann Dancy das todwunde Schiff. 13 Tage hatte Carlsen um sein Schiff gekämpft.

Vieles an dieser Schiffahrtskatastrophe blieb lange Zeit rätselhaft.

Gerüchte

Die sowjetische Marine-Zeitschrift „Rote Flotte" behauptet später, das Schiff wäre zu retten gewesen, wenn der Kapitän als Nothafen Brest angelaufen hätte. Das habe ihm die Reederei aber streng verboten. Damit erhielten Gerüchte neue Nahrung, die „Flying Enterprise" habe geheime Fracht an Bord gehabt. Sie werden lauter, als bei die Bergung von sechs kleinen Stahlkisten, die unter strengster Geheimhaltung nach New York gebracht werden. Sie enthielten reines Zirkonium, ein Metall, das in der Atomindustrie verwendet wird. Die Lieferung war für die amerikanische Atomenergiebehörde bestimmt. Das Geheimnis der sechs Kisten war so sorgfältig gewahrt worden, daß selbst Kapitän Carlsen ihren Inhalt nicht kannte.

Überall, wo Material durch besonders hohe Temperaturen beansprucht wird, etwa in den Brennkammern von Düsenjägern oder Raketen wird das stahlartig glänzende Metall benötigt.

Für dic „Nautilus"

Besser als das bis dahin benutzte Schwere Wasser oder Graphit hemmt es die Kettenreaktion in Atommeilern. Die Bundesrepublik war damals das einzige Land, das die technische Ausrüstung besaß, reines Zirkonium herzustellen.

Ein amerikanischer Atomwissenschaftler gab das Geheimnis der Ladung erst vier Jahre nach dem Untergang der „Flying Enterprise" preis. Wie es hieß, war das Metall für den Kernreaktor des ersten atomge-

Machine Translated by Google

ter Taucher ans Licht brachten: Sein Schiff hatte geheime, nicht deklarierte Fracht an Bord.

Das Barometer fällt. Das Wetter verschlechtert sich. Im Kanalausgang toben orkanartige Stürme. Windgeschwindig-

sche Bergungsschlepper „Turmoil" am Unglücksort eintrifft. Dem ersten Steuermannn Kenneth Dancy gelingt es, an Bord der „Enterprise" zu kommen. Carlsen ist nicht mehr allein.

Am 5. Januar können beide eine Schleppverbindung her-

rei aber streng verboten. Damit erhielten Gerüchte neue Nahrung, die „Flying Enterprise" habe geheime Fracht an Bord gehabt. Sie werden lauter, als in aller Heimlichkeit mit Bergungsarbeiten begonnen wird.

Sehr interessant scheint hier-

heimnis der Ladung erst vier Jahre nach dem Untergang der „Flying Enterprise" preis. Wie es hieß, war das Metall für den Kernreaktor des ersten atomgetriebenen Unterseebootes, der „Nautilus", bestimmt. Es lief 1954 vom Stapel.

Hamburger Morgenpost 19.10.76

15000-Tonner mit 37 Mann im Bermuda-Dreieck verschwunden

b.l. New York — Das mysteriöse Bermuda-Dreieck — ein Gebiet im Atlantik, dessen Dreieckspunkte Puerto Rico, Bermuda und Norfolk sind — hat ein neues Opfer in die tödliche Meerestiefe gezogen:

Der fast 200 Meter lange Erzfrachter (15 000 t) „Sylvia L. Ossa", der unter der Flagge Panamas fuhr, ist verschwunden. Mit ihm 37 Besatzungsmitglieder.

Die amerikanische Küstenwache und andere Schiffe haben keinerlei SOS-Rufe des Erzfrachters, der auf dem Weg von Brasilien nach Philadelphia war, aufgefangen.

Als einzige Spur entdeckte die Küstenwache einen riesigen Ölfleck auf dem tiefblauen Wasser, ein gekentertes Rettungsboot und einen Rettungsring mit Brandspuren.

In dem „Bermuda-Dreieck", von Seeleuten als „Friedhof des Meeres" gefürchtet, sind in letzten Jahrzehnten Dutzende von Schiffen und Flugzeugen und viele hundert Menschen verschwunden, ohne daß logische und natürliche Erklärungen dafür gefunden wurden.

Die „Sylvia L. Ossa" hatte am vergangenen Mittwoch letzten Funkkontakt mit dem New Yorker Eigentümer. Ihre Position: 145 Meilen westlich von Bermuda. Zwei Tage später sollte das Schiff im Zielhafen sein.

Hamburger Morgenpost 25.10.76

Niemand weiß, wo der Erzfrachter „Silvya Osso" geblieben ist: Zuletzt meldete sich Kapitän El Bakh am 13 Oktober um fürf Uhr morgens

Bermuda-Dreieck: Riesiges Schiff spurlos verschwunden

at **Miami, 2. November**

Drei Schwimmwesten — nicht benutzt. Ein Rettungsfloß — nicht aufgeblasen — das war alles, was nach tagelangem Suchen von dem Frachter „Sylvia Ossa" entdeckt wurde. Der 180 Meter lange Erzfrachter ist vor zwei Wochen mit 37 Mann im berüchtigten Bermuda-Dreieck verschwunden.

Und wieder stehen die Experten vor einem Rätsel: 21 Schiffe, 16 Flugzeuge und mehr als 1000 Menschen sind in dem Teufelsdreieck zwischen Puerto Rico, Florida und den Bermudas verschollen. Eine logische Erklärung für diese Fälle gibt es nicht — auch nicht für das letzte Unglück.

● „Das Schiff ist nicht explodiert — sonst hätten wir Wrackteile finden müssen", schrieben die Experten in ihrem Bericht.

● Die „Sylvia Ossa" (15 000 Tonnen) kann auch nicht bei Sturm untergegangen sein. Sogar ein 8,50 Meter langes Segelboot erreichte im gleichen Gebiet sicher den Yachthafen.

● Das Schiff kann auch nicht auseinandergebrochen sein. In diesem Fall hätte der Kapitiän Zeit für SOS-Signale gehabt. Von der „Sylvia Ossa" kam überhaupt kein Signal.

Kapitän El Bakh, der seit Jahren Eisenerz von Rio nach Philadelphia bringt, meldete sich zuletzt am 13. Oktober um 5 Uhr morgens, 210 Kilometer westlich von Bermuda. „Einen Tag zuvor ließ er sich an unseren Computer-Rettungsdienst anschließen", sagt Francis Eyre von der US-Küstenwache . . .

WAZ, 23.Juni 1971

Geisterflotte in den Versicherungslisten umfaßt 70 Schiffe

Lloyds fällt Todesurteil für „Kiki"

Mitte Januar auf der Fahrt nach Jugoslawien spurlos verschwunden

LONDON (ap)

Mitte Januar dieses Jahres lief der in Famagusta (Zypern) beheimatete 3750-BRT-Frachter „Kiki" von Emden nach Jugoslawien aus. Am 21. Januar meldete sich das Schiff zum letzten Male. Was danach geschah, wird vermutlich immer ein Geheimnis bleiben. Am heutigen Mittwoch wird bei der Lloyds-Versicherung in London das Todesurteil über Schiff und Besatzung gesprochen: Die „Kiki" wird, nachdem alle Suchaktionen vergeblich blieben, auf Beschluß des Lloyds-Vorstandes offiziell als „vermißt" geführt.

Der Eigner kann jetzt seine Versicherungsansprüche anmelden, die Ehefrauen der Besatzungsangehörigen werden nun auch amtlich Witwen. Die Eintragung in den Lloyds-Listen bedeutet, daß weder Überlebende, noch Tote, noch Wrackteile gefunden wurden, das Schiff ist einfach spurlos verschwunden.

Die „Kiki" gehört nun zu

Es waren keineswegs nur klapprige „Seelenverkäufer", sondern auch Schiffe mit modernen Funk- und Navigationsgeräten, so beispielsweise der 10 000-Tonner „Milton Itriadis", der mit einer Ladung Speiseöl von New Orleans nach Kapstadt auslief und alle fünf Tage über Funk seinen Standort melden sollte. Man hat nach dem Auslaufen nie

Norfolk (Virginia) nach England unterwegs, löste sich ebenso in Nichts auf wie in diesem Jahr schon das Motorschiff „Iligan Bay" (5203 BRT), das zuletzt aus der Biskaya schweren Seegang gemeldet hatte.

Von 2766 Schiffen, die in den letzten zehn Jahren verlorengingen, weiß man bei Lloyds, wo und wie es ge-

Machine Translated by Google

bedeutet, daß weder Überlebende, noch Tote, noch Wrackteile gefunden wurden, das Schiff ist einfach spurlos verschwunden.

Die „Kiki“ gehört nun zu der Geisterflotte von immerhin 70 Schiffen, die in den letzten zehn Jahren das gleiche unerklärliche Schicksal erlitten.

Iriadis“, der mit einer Ladung Speiseöl von New Orleans nach Kapstadt auslief und alle fünf Tage über Funk seinen Standort melden sollte. Man hat nach dem Auslaufen nie wieder etwas von dem Frachter gehört.

Auch die „Ithaca Island“ (7426 BRT), mit Getreide von

schweren Seegang gemeldet hatte.

Von 2766 Schiffen, die in den letzten zehn Jahren verlorengingen, weiß man bei Lloyds, wo und wie es geschah. Bei der „Kiki“ und 69 anderen heißt es nur „vermißt“.

UFO-Schock und Rettung im Bermuda-Dreieck

von Riki Moss

Forscher auf den Bahamas untersuchen Berichte, wonach ein UFO eine Familie vor dem sicheren Ertrinken bewahrte, nachdem ihr (Urlaubs)-Boot im Bermuda-Dreieck sank. Dr. Leopold Stinson berichtete einem Symposium in Caracas/Venezuela, daß der Vorfall, welcher sich am 5. Mai 1986 ereignete, alle Anzeichen einer nachweisbaren Begegnung mit Außerirdischen trägt.

NEWS
Alien starship lowers
UFO SHOC
Alien spacocraft rises from sea to save a drowning family
E!

Stinson zitierte die Familie, wie sie ausgesagt hat, daß das UFO aus der See in die Höhe stieg, gerade Sekunden, nachdem ihr 11 m langes Boot unterging. „Unglaublich, sie nahmen die Hilfe des Raumschiffes an und retteten sich in das herabgelassene Rettungsboot, das die Insignien der US-Air-Force trug.“

„Es ist dieses Schlauchboot“, sagte Stinson, „das ein für alle mal beweisen könnte, daß außerirdische Intelligenzen im Bermuda-Dreieck operieren. Das Boot ist ein Typ, der gewöhnlich in den fünziger Jahren gebraucht wurde. Wenn seine amtliche Nummer zu irgendeinem Flugzeug paßt, von dem wir wissen, daß es zu jener Zeit im Bermuda-Dreieck verschwand, würde das nahelegen, daß selbiges ‚geraubt‘ und unter den Ozean gebracht wurde, vielleicht von Menschen, die nicht von dieser Welt sind.“

Stinson meinte, daß die Suche nach einer entsprechenden Nummer, infolge der großen Anzahl von Flugzeugen, die im Bermuda-Dreieck verschwanden, Wochen, Monate oder Jahre in Anspruch nehmen könnte.

Unterdessen konzentrieren sich die Untersuchungen auf Berichte der geretteten Familie.

„Es sind Leute, die sich klar ausdrücken und dabei ganz kooperativ seien“, setzte er fort. „Der Ehemann und die Frau, sind beide Mediziner aus Brasilien. Sie haben zwei Kinder, beide besuchen das College.“

Gemäß Dr. Stinson war die Familie auf einer mehrmonatlichen Segeltour durch die Karibik. Sie meldeten sich gerade auf ihrem Weg zu den Bahamas, als ihr Boot Wasser aufnahm. Ihr eigenes Rettungsboot war in einem inneren Teil der Yacht verstaut, aber das Boot sank so schnell, daß sie es nicht herausbekommen konnten. Sie berichteten mir, daß sie SOS funkten, aber insgeheim rechneten sie sicher mit dem Tode.“

Die Familie weiter: „Das UFO – goldfarben und sternförmig aussehend – schoß ca. 70 m aus dem Wasser heraus. Zu dieser Zeit waren sie alle wie von Sinnen vor Angst“, äußerte sich Stinson.

„Aber sie erinnerten sich, daß das UFO knisterte und summte, als es durch die Oberfläche der See drang und sich zu ihnen hin bewegte. Sie sagten, das Raumschiff kam 6 – 9 Meter zu der Stelle, wo ihr Boot sank und ließ das Schlauchboot der Airforce aus seinem Schiffsinnern herunter.“

Sie berichteten mir: „Das Raumschiff schwebte einige Sekunden über ihren Köpfen, dann verschwand es am Himmel. Die sprachlose, aber dankbare Familie schwamm zum Schlauchboot und kletterte an Bord. Erschüttert von ihren fürchterlichen Erlebnissen, drängten sie sich in der Finsternis der nächtlichen See eng zusammen,“ fügte Stinson hinzu.

„Ihr gekentertes Boot glitt geräuschlos unter der Ozean-Dünung und eine bizarre Ruhe überkam die frierende Familie. Sie falteten betend die Hände und warteten.

Etwa 20 Minuten später fand die Besatzung eines Sportfischer-Bootes der Bahamas die schwimmende Familie in ihrem Boot und brachte sie ans Ufer“, sagte Stinson.

Sie berichteten den Fall gegenüber offiziellen Stellen, die Dr. Stinsons UFO-Forschungsgruppe für das Bermuda-Dreieck benachrichtigten. Carlos Garcia, ein Wissenschaftsreporter in Caracas, meinte, die Reaktionen unter Stinsons Symposiums-Kollegen waren geteilt.

„Jetzt sind sie gespannt auf seinen Bericht in den Zeitungen, dann können sie die Beweise selbst bewerten.“ sagte er.

„Weekly World News“, 24. 6. 1986

UN-Übersetzung: Erich Immel/USA

UN Nr. 302 Jan./Febr. 1987

Machine Translated by Google

bik. Sie meldeten sich gerade auf ihrem Weg zu den Bahamas, als ihr Boot Wasser aufnahm.

US-Marine hebt ein UFO aus dem Puget-Sound

Ein abgestürztes UFO, das aussieht „wie solides Gold", und von zwei Tauchern nahe der US-Küste unter Wasser gefunden wurde, ist mysteriös verschwunden. Jedoch wächst der Verdacht, daß das abgestürzte Flugobjekt außerirdischer Herkunft, von der US-Navy in einer geheimen Mission geborgen wurde. Die Regierung verheimlicht den mysteriösen UFO-Absturz nahe Seattle.

Vergl. auch „Taucher suchen nach UFO" in UN Nr. 292, März/April 1985, wo schon einleitend über den Absturz in USA berichtet wurde, mit dem Hinweis auf Ergänzungen, die nun hier folgen.

UN-Red.

UN Nr. 296, Jan./Febr. 1986

Das metallische, mit einer Kuppel ausgerüstete Flugobjekt wurde genau an dem gleichen Platz gefunden, wo vorher Augenzeugen berichtet haben, daß ein „glühendes UFO" in das kalte Wasser des Puget Sound von Bellingham, Washington, gestürzt sei. Die Augenzeugen berichteten, das Weltraumschiff schleuderte einen Schauer von Funken und Flammen mindestens 70 Fuß (22 m) hoch in die Luft und verwandelte das Wasser in einen kochenden Schaum.

UFO crash mystery

A submerged UFO, found off the U.S. coast by two divers, has mysteriously vanished. But there is growing suspicion that the downed alien craft was recovered — in a secret cover-up mission carried out by the Navy!

Witnesses say impact hurled sparks & flame 70 feet in air

Did a Navy team secretly recover wreckage found by two divers?

Einige Wochen später haben die Taucher namens John Walker und Richard Burke aus Seattle drei Tauchversuche gemacht, am gleichen Platz, wo das UFO ins Wasser stürzte. Beide berichteten, daß sie ein großes, kuppelförmiges Objekt fanden, goldfarben und 60 m tief unter Wasser halb im Schlamm steckend. Trotz seines gespenstischen Aussehens in den turbulenten und schlammigen Tiefen, verleitete das versunkene Objekt Burke zu aufgeregten Schreien. „Mann! Ich stehe auf dem UFO", schrie er durch seinen Helm-Sprechfunk. „Es ist verdammt groß". Burke beschrieb das Objekt als etwa 6 m im Durchmesser und aussehend wie eine umgedrehte Untertasse. Halb vom Schlamm bedeckt mit etwa 45° Schräglage. „Als ich mich draufstellte, konnte ich ein nieder-frequentes Brummen hören", sagte er. „Das hat uns sehr nervös gemacht. Es schien etwa 3,5 m hoch, aber wir konnten es nicht genau sagen, weil es im Schlamm steckte."

Burke und Walker machten noch zwei Tauchversuche, an zwei darauffolgenden Tagen. Drei Tage später kamen sie zurück, um das UFO zu bergen. Aber diesmal konnten sie es nicht mehr finden.

„Heute haben wir Geräte, die alles auf dem Meeresboden feststellen können," sagte der Forschungs-Wissenschaftler Dale Goudie, der bei der Bergung des UFOs dabei sein wollte. „Wir wissen genau, wo das Objekt war. Es lag da seit 5 Monaten ohne sich zu bewegen. Warum sollte es plötzlich verschwinden? Wir hörten Berichte, daß die NAVY hinausfuhr, um es zu bergen."
Unter wachsendem Verdacht, daß das Pentagon die Bergung veranlaßte, haben die Regierungs-Offiziellen jegliches Wissen über das UFO abgeleugnet und sich geweigert, dazu Stellung zu nehmen. „Ich weiß nicht, ob wir das Objekt haben oder nicht", erklärte ein hochrangiger NAVY-Offizier in Washington/D.C. „Wenn das so ist, wäre es sowieso eine Geheimsache. Es könnte ja auch ein militärisches Gerät sein."
Bruce Maccavee, Physiker vom Verteidigungs-Minsterium sagte: „Das untertassenförmige Objekt könnte ein hochgradiger UFO-Beweis sein, der jedoch niemals an die Öffentlichkeit kommen würde! „Puget Sound ist vollgeladen mit Navy-Ausrüstungen", sagte Dr. Maccavee der „Weekly World News". „Ich denke, wenn die Navy das Objekt bergen wollte, könnte sie es gemacht haben, ohne daß es jemand merkt. Meine Meinung ist, daß da was dort war, und jetzt eben ‚verschwunden' ist. Aber wenn es die NAVY hat, dann weiß ich nicht, wie man sie dazu zwingen kann, das UFO herauszugeben."

„Weekly World News", 30. 4. 1985
UN-Übersetzung: Erich Immel/USA

Was it actually a flying disc accident? If so, the team was able to repair their flying disc themselves and is back

Machine Translated by Google

flew away? Or did another flying disc perform a rescue or recovery? We cannot believe in a rescue by the US NAVY! The Third Power simply couldn't have allowed that, simply because of flight secrecy!

Biskaya-

Von HANS ILG-MOSER

In der Biskaya, dem berühmt-berüchtigten Meer zwischen dem französischen Brest und dem spanischen La Coruna, tobt seit dem frühen Nachmittag ein gewaltiger Orkan. Haushohe Wellen, Hagel, gefährliche Strömungen – die Biskaya ist in dieser Stunde ein brodelnd-kochendes Wasserinferno.

Mittendrin: der italienische Frachter „Tito Campanella" mit 25 Männern an Bord.

In Brest versuchen die Funker der französischen Marine-Präfektur seit Stunden verzweifelt mit dem 13 000-Tonnen-Frachter in Kontakt zu kommen.

Doch die „Tito Campanella" meldet sich nicht mehr . . .

Am nächsten Morgen, als der Orkan abgeflaut, die Sicht besser geworden ist, steigen Suchflugzeuge der französischen Marine auf. Sie sollen das Schiff orten und feststellen, was mit ihm geschehen ist.

„Nackte Angst"

Die Piloten fliegen die Route des Frachters nach, halten nach Trümmern, Rettungsbooten und Ölflecken Ausschau – ohne Erfolg: Die „Tito Campanella" bleibt verschwunden, hat sich spurlos aufgelöst . . .

Das war am 19. Januar 1984. Wieder einmal hat das Schicksal im Atlantik zugeschlagen – im tödlichen Biskaya-Dreieck!

Die Schreckensnachrichten reißen nicht ab:

- ● Der Panama-Frachter „Radiant Med" wird in der Biskaya wie ein Streichholz geknickt, säuft ab. 17 Seeleute sterben. Das Wrack wird Tage später an die gefährlichen Klippen südlich von Brest geworfen.
- ● 13 Tage später sinkt aus bisher ungeklärter Ursache der ebenfalls in Panama registrierte Frachter „Midnight Sun" – acht Menschen ertrinken.
- ● 30 Seeleute sterben, als der 32 000-Tonnen-Frachter „Marina de Equa" bei einem Orkan auseinanderbricht und in wenigen Minuten sinkt. Die Besatzung hatte noch nicht einmal Zeit, einen Notruf zu funken . . .

Die Liste des Schreckens, des Todes, läßt sich beliebig verlängern.

Die Biskaya – ein neues, unheimliches „Bermuda-Dreieck?"

„Wir haben nackte Angst vor diesem verfluchten Stück Atlantik", sagt ein Besatzungsmitglied des englischen Luxusliners „World Renaissance". Die Männer des 22 000-Tonners haben sich jetzt geweigert, das „englische Traumschiff" von Plymouth nach Lissabon zu fahren. „Die Biskaya ist uns zu unheimlich geworden, da machen wir nicht mehr mit!"

Die englische Reederei mußte die 150 Kreuzfahrt-Passagiere mit dem Flugzeug nach Lissabon bringen, die „World Renaissance" wurde von einer eilends angeheuerten Not-Crew nach Lissabon überführt – unter weiträumiger Umgehung der Biskaya.

Liegt auf der Biskaya ein tödlicher Fluch?

„Ich habe Angst vor diesem Trip", schrieb der 2. Offizier der „Tito Campanella", Marco Incorvaia, an seine Mutter in Neapel, kurz bevor er mit seinem Frachter in Malmö auslief.

Marco Incorvaia und 24 seiner Kameraden sind mit ihrem Schiff verschwunden . . .

Immer mehr Seeleute fragen sich: Wer wird der nächste sein? Wen von uns trifft's?

Über 50 Schiffe sind in den letzten zehn Jahren in der Biskaya gesunken, mehr als 150 Menschen fanden zwischen Brest, La Rochelle, Santander und La Coruna ihr Seemannsgrab.

Modernste Radar- und Funkanlagen, Wetterberichte vom Satelliten, Superschiffe mit neuester Technologie – die Biskaya kümmert sich nicht darum, sie holt ihre Opfer, wann immer sie will.

Schlechtes Gefühl vor dem letzten Trip: 2. Offizier Marco Incorvaia (oben) und Maschinist Tomis Baus (unten)

Aberglaube . . .?

Capitano Juan Rudilos von der Küstenwache Santander (Spanien): „Die Biskaya ist das tückischste Wetterloch der Welt, wie ein Waschkessel, der von allen Seiten beheizt wird."

Dennoch kann sich der erfahrene Seemann vom Verstand her nicht so recht erklären, warum so viele Schiffe versinken, spurlos verschwinden.

Aberglaube, Angst vor den Naturgewalten, vor Überirdischem?

Machine Translated by Google

Ebenfalls in der Biskaya verschwunden: der Frachter „Marina de Equa" mit 30 Mann Besatzung

spurlos verschwinden.

Aberglaube, **Angst** vor den Naturgewalten, vor **Überirdischem?**

Die Seeleute sind sich einig: Auf der Biskaya liegt ein Fluch . . .

Todesdreieck im Atlantik

Auf geheimnisvolle Weise verschwinden immer mehr Schiffe vor der französischen Westküste

Seite 78 BILD am SONNTAG, 19. Februar 1984

Machine Translated by Google

Ein brodelndes, kochendes Wasserinferno: Viele Superschiffe sind in den letzten Jahren scheinbar grundlos in der Biskaya versunken

Not every one of these ship accidents can be linked to our topic!
The vast majority can be attributed to traditional causes.

Wherever inexplicable ship accidents occur frequently, people speak of new triangles.

Why, to distract? To localize what is essentially global events?

NASA-Physiker entdeckt

UFO-Basis vor der Küste Floridas

Von Frank Nelson

BEWEISE DEUTEN DARAUF HIN, DASS DAS VERSCHWINDEN VON MEHR ALS 120 SCHIFFEN UND FLUGZEUGEN IM GEHEIMNISSVOLLEN „BERMUDA-DREIECK" AUF FLIEGENDE UNTERTASSEN ZURÜCKZUFÜHREN IST.

Unidentifizierte Fliegende Objekte benutzen eine abgelegene Bahama-Insel als Basis für die Überwachung der US-Raumflüge und als Ausgangspunkt, um menschliche „Musterexemplare" von der Erde wegzuholen.

Dr. Jonathan Wright, NASA-Physiker, enthüllte diese aufsehenerregende Nachricht letzte Woche in seinem Hotel in Nassau (Hauptstadt der Bahamas. D. Ü.), nachdem er von einer dreiwöchigen Forschungs-Kreuzfahrt durch die abgelegene Inselwelt zurückgekehrt war.

Dr. Jonathan Wright ist überzeugt, eine UFO-Basis auf den Bahamas gefunden zu haben.

„Es besteht kein Zweifel darüber", sagte Dr. Wright, „wir haben eindeutige Beweise dafür, daß UFOs regelmäßig auf einer winzigen Insel landen, ungefähr 50 Meilen von Grand Cayman entfernt."

Die „Dreieck" genannte ‚unheimliche Zone' umreißt das Gebiet vieler merkwürdiger „Verluste". DC-3-Flugzeuge (wie das oben abgebildete) verschwanden spurlos 1948 und 1949. Insgesamt 56 Passagiere waren an Bord der beiden Flugzeuge.

Zahlreiche Boote, die in dieses Gebiet segelten, verschwanden auf unerklärliche Weise.

Dr. Wright ist der Leiter einer besonders vorrangigen UFO-Forschungsabteilung der NASA. Er war auch Mitarbeiter der UFO-Studie, welche vor 2 Jahren von der Universität von Colorado für die Air-Force durchgeführt wurde.

und das Flugzeug verschwanden, entschlossen wir uns, der Sache nachzugehen" fuhr er fort. „Mit einem kleinen Boot, bestückt mit elektronischem Gerät, fuhren wir zu einer der kleinen Inseln hinaus und warteten ab."

Nach zwei Wochen berichtete Dr. Wright, daß sein Forscherteam drei glänzende kreisförmige Objekte sichtete, die in nicht allzu großer Entfernung am Horizont niedergingen.

Eine Woche später stiegen sie dann wieder auf und verschwanden im Nachthimmel. Dr. Wright fuhr mit seinem kleinen Boot näher heran, um besser beobachten zu können; und zwei Wochen später landeten die drei Objekte von neuem.

„Diesmal waren wir sehr nahe", führte er aus, „wir konnten zwei kleine Fenster an dem sehr kleinen Fahrzeug sehen. Die UFOs selbst hatten die Form von Thunfisch-Konservenbüchsen und konnten schweben und seitwärts fliegen."

Dr. Wright berichtet, daß seine Mannschaft auf der kleinen Insel an Land ging und auf die fremdartigen Maschinen zuging, aber er möchte nicht sagen, was er sah, als er davorstand.

„Ich nehme an, daß eines Tages der vollständige Bericht veröffentlicht wird", sagte er, „aber jetzt noch nicht. Alles was ich sagen kann: Als wir den Objekten sehr nahe waren, stiegen diese mit unglaublicher Geschwindigkeit auf und schossen himmelwärts in Richtung Bermuda."

Dr. Wright sagt, daß ein bestimmter Zusammenhang besteht zwischen den in Kap Kennedy empfangenen mysteriösen Radiosignalen und dem Verschwinden von kleinen Flugzeugen und Luxusyachten im Bermuda-Dreieck.

Die NASA läßt nicht sehr viel über die Radiosignale verlauten, aber jedermann kann von den spurlos verschwundenen Flugzeugen und Booten lesen, die alle im Monat Dezember in verschiedenen Jahren verlorengingen.

Am 5. Dezember 1945 starteten sechs Marine-Flugzeuge von Fort Lauderdale und verschwanden spurlos. Ein Mitchell-Bomber mit 13 Mann Besatzung, der sie suchen sollte, verschwand

Machine Translated by Google

Dr. Wright ist der Leiter einer besonders vorrangigen UFO-Forschungsabteilung der NASA. Er war auch Mitarbeiter der UFO-Studie, welche vor 2 Jahren von der Universität von Colorado für die Air-Force durchgeführt wurde.

Das NASA-Team wurde kurz vor Weihnachten auf die Bahamas beordert, als wieder einmal zwei Schiffe und ein Flugzeug auf rätselhafte Weise verschwanden; in einem Gebiet, welches „das Bermuda-Dreieck" genannt wird.

Mehr als 120 Schiffe und Flugzeuge sind bis jetzt in dem Dreieck zwischen Bermuda, Miami und den Bahamas spurlos verschwunden.

„Jahrelang verwunderten wir uns darüber, was sich in dieser Gegend abspielte", sagte Dr. Wright. „Im Kontrollzentrum von Kap Kennedy empfingen wir zu den Startzeiten immer wieder seltsame elektronische Signale. Unsere Instrumente zeigten an, daß sie aus diesem Gebiet stammten."

Es gab dann auch dieses „berühmte" Verschwinden von Flugzeugen und Schiffen in diesem Dreieck. Und insbesondere lagen uns von einigen dieser Inseln verschiedene Berichte über UFO-Sichtungen vor.

„Als schließlich im Dezember die zwei Schiffe

verschiedenen Jahren verlorengingen.

Am 5. Dezember 1945 starteten sechs Marine-Flugzeuge von Fort Lauderdale und verschwanden spurlos. Ein Mitchell-Bomber mit 13 Mann Besatzung, der sie suchen sollte, verschwand ebenfalls nach dem Funkspruch, daß er die Orientierung verloren habe.

Die Marine entsandte einen Flugzeugträger in dieses Gebiet und 50 Flugzeuge suchten nach Überresten der verlorengegangenen Maschinen, aber sie fanden nichts — nicht einmal einen Ölfleck.

Im Dezember 1948 verschwand im Gebiet des „Dreiecks" eine DC-3 mit 32 Passagieren an Bord, und im Dezember 1949 verschwand spurlos eine weitere DC-3 mit 24 Menschen an Bord. Von keinem der beiden Flugzeuge wurde auch nur ein einziges Wrackteil gefunden.

Im Dezember 1957 verschwand eine Regatta-Yacht südlich von Bermuda.

Im Dezember 1963 verschwand eine weitere DC-3 zwischen San Juan und Miami.

1967 verschwand spurlos ein Kajütboot genau nördlich von Grand Cayman. Die neuesten Fälle vom Dezember 1970 betreffen zwei weitere

Segelboote und ein Sportflugzeug.

Dutzende von Suchflugzeugen fanden auch nicht eine Spur in dem genau bestimmten Gebiet, aus dem die Bootskapitäne und der Pilot ihre letzten Funksprüche durchgaben.

Sehr merkwürdig ist, daß alle UFO-Sichtungen auf den Bahamas immer im Monat Dezember gemacht wurden!

Der Strand einer unbewohnten Bahama-Insel. In diesem Gebiet soll sich eine UFO-Basis befinden.

Eine unbewohnte Insel wie diese wird nach einer bis jetzt noch nicht freigegebenen NASA-Untersuchung von UFOs benutzt.

Kap Kennedy liegt nahe genug der UFO-Basis, um genau beobachtet werden zu können.

GOVERNMENT PHYSICIST DISCOVERS:
UFO Base off Florida Coast
N8773Z

Von Privatflugzeugen, die in dieses Gebiet flogen, hat man nie mehr etwas gehört.

Fliegende Untertasse. Dieses Foto wurde letztes Jahr von einem Touristen in der Nähe von Nassau aufgenommen. Dr. Wright und sein Team sichteten drei UFOs.

Die Zeitschrift MIDNIGHT konnte einen Eingeborenen der Insel Grand Cayman ausfindig machen, der in der Nacht, als das Sportflugzeug verschwand, ein helles Licht sah, das am Horizont niederging.

„Erst sah das Licht wie ein sehr heller Stern aus" sagte er, „aber dann fing es an, sich hin und her zu bewegen und stieg immer weiter

ganz in der Nähe eines der wichtigsten Wissenschaftszentren Amerikas liegt.

„Die Bahamas sind geradezu ideal hierfür", sagt Dr. Wright, „weil diese Wesen Kap Kennedy beobachten und auf elektronischem Wege alles mitverfolgen können, was dort geschieht. Gleichzeitig können sie sich auch „Musterexemplare" von der Erde holen, indem sie Flugzeuge und kleine Boote kapern, die sich in das Gebiet des „Dreiecks" wagen.

Nun haben sie das eigenartige Geheimnis um das Bermuda-Dreieck einmal geschaffen — und das ist für sie von großem Wert.

Sie können weiterhin im Dezember vereinzelte Schiffe und Flugzeuge rauben, und sie sorgen dafür, daß es dann so aussieht, als ob ein unbekanntes Naturphänomen die Ursache sei, damit sich die Menschen nicht ängstigen.

Die Leute werden eben sagen: „Ach ja, im Bermuda-Dreieck ist wieder ein Flugzeug 'runter. Das paßt ihnen so!"

„Meine persönliche Meinung ist, daß ein großes Mutterschiff — oder UFO — in einigen hundert Meilen Höhe über dem „Dreieck" schwebt und alles beobachtet, was hier vorgeht. Wenn dann ein Mondflug oder sonst etwas von Interesse bevorsteht, schickt es die kleinen Erkundungs-UFOs herunter.

Das sind solche, wie wir sie auf der Insel sahen, und aufgrund dessen, was sie da machten, können wir sagen, daß sie unseren Mondstart vom 25. Januar überwachten.

Sie sind bei dem ganzen Unternehmen sehr vorsichtig, so, als wollten sie die Menschen auf der Erde nicht in Panik versetzen. Sie beobachten lediglich ein wissenschaftliches Projekt, unser Mond-Programm, und nehmen nur ein oder zwei „Musterexemplare" alle 2 bis 3 Jahre mit."

Dr. Wright möchte keine detaillierte Aussage darüber machen, wie er sich das Verschwinden von Schiffen und Flugzeugen denkt, aber er deutet die Möglichkeit an, daß das riesige UFO-Mutterschiff zur Erdoberfläche herabkommt und in der Tat ganze Yachten aus dem Wasser hebt, oder neben einem kleinen Flugzeug herfliegt und es in der Luft kapert.

„Sie sehen", fährt er fort, „so etwas dürfte keinen Argwohn erwecken, da kleine Flugzeuge und Boote immer wieder verschwinden. Die Menschen beunruhigen sich nicht so sehr, nur weil sich ein paar Leute scheinbar Gedanken darüber machen, wenn ein reicher Mann mit seinem Privatboot oder -flugzeug verschwindet. Das gehört schließlich zu den Risiken des Segelns oder Fliegens.

Aber diese Leute sind für die Weltraumwesen ideale „Studienobjekte". Es sind in der Regel ganz intelligente Menschen, Geschäftsleute, be-

Machine Translated by Google

machen, der in der Nacht, als das Sportflugzeug [illegible] ein helles Licht sah, das am Horizont niederging.

„Erst sah das Licht wie ein sehr heller Stern aus“ sagte er, „aber dann fing es an, sich hin und her zu bewegen und stieg immer weiter herab. Es blieb ungefähr 15 Minuten lang genau über dem Horizont stehen — dann verschwand es.

Ich hielt weiterhin Ausschau, und eine halbe Stunde später erschien es wieder, viel näher und heller. Dann stieg es plötzlich senkrecht hoch und entschwand.“

Dr. Wright kommt zu der Folgerung, daß „extraterrestrische Wesen“ aus dem Weltraum beschlossen haben, die Erdbewohner von einem sicheren Ort aus zu beobachten, der zudem

[illegible]

Das gehört schließlich zu den Risiken des Segelns oder Fliegens.

Aber diese Leute sind für die Weltraumwesen ideale „Studienobjekte“. Es sind in der Regel ganz intelligente Menschen, Geschäftsleute, bedeutende Persönlichkeiten des öffentlichen Lebens usw.

„Eines kann ich Ihnen sagen“, schloß Dr. Wright „ich fahre nie wieder mit einem kleinen Boot zu dieser Insel zurück, und ich werde nie mehr das Bermuda-Dreieck überfliegen.“

„MIDNIGHT“ v. 22. 3. 1971 — Übers.: Dipl.-Hdl. W. Bühler

'UFO-Nachr.', Nr.177, Mai 1971

UFOs über dem Michigan-See/USA

Von William Gryzik

Die große „Untertassen-Jagd“ des Jahres 1960 über dem Michigan-See ging planmäßig im Oktober zu Ende. Sie wurde von vielen Augenzeugenberichten umrahmt, wonach viele Unbekannte Fliegende Objekte sowohl im Michigan-See, nordöstlich von Chicago, als auch in der Bucht von Guantanamo (Stützpunkt der US-Marine) auf Kuba gelandet sind.

„Raumschiffe, allgemein „Fliegende Untertassen“ genannt, benutzen die Tiefen der Gewässer als Treffpunkte,“ erklärte der Chicagoer Patentingenieur und Weltraum-Enthusiast Radiokommentator John Otto.

Eine Gruppe von 75 Mitgliedern der „Great Lakes Identified Flying Objects Association“ (Vereinigung der Ifo-Studiengruppen der Großen Seen) fuhr mit elektronischer Spezialausrüstung an Bord von Fischerbooten von Waukegan aus hinaus auf den See, um ernsthaft zu versuchen, mit diesen Raumschiffen Kontakt aufzunehmen. Diese von Normann Jack Maynard aus Waukegan geführte Gruppe wurde durch den Obermaat Charles V. Dillon von der Marineschule der Großen Seen zu diesem Unternehmen veranlaßt.

Dillon, ein „Achtzehnender“ der Marine, hatte dieses Phänomen während seiner Dienstzeit in Kuba beobachtet und zum ersten Mal öffentlich bei einer Zusammenkunft der Forschungsgruppe Maynard in Waukegan darüber gesprochen.

Er war damals am 21. Juli 1959, Führer einer Wachmannschaft in der Bucht von Guantanamo, als er und seine Männer ein „orangefarbenes Glühen“ an einem Berghang bemerkten. Sie näherten sich der Stelle weit genug, um „zwei große, orangefarbene Dinger, so wie Augen“ erkennen zu können. Er wies seine Leute aber an, nicht näher heran zu gehen. Am nächsten Morgen untersuchte er die Stelle selbst. „Es gab dort keinerlei Hufspuren oder andere Anzeichen dafür, daß dort irgendwelche Tiere gewesen sind,“ sagte er, „aber das Gras war umgelegt, so, als ob irgend etwas darüber hinweg und den Abhang hinunter, direkt in den Ozean geglitten sei. So, als ob jemand eine große Bratpfanne von 2 m Durchmesser genommen hätte und sie in das Meer gleiten ließ.“

Dillon sagte, er hätte — subjektiv gesprochen den Eindruck, daß der Bodeneindruck durch ein Ufo entstanden war. „Was mich anbetrifft, so glaube ich, daß es von sonstwo her kam. Woher? Ich weiß es nicht. Das Universum ist ja sehr groß. Ich meine; es kam aus einer anderen Welt.“

Maynard, der von sich behauptet, mehr als 50 „sichere“ Sichtungen gehabt zu haben, sagte auch, daß er seit sechs Jahren UFO's über dem Michigan-See beobachtet habe.

„Am Heiligen Abend 1954 sah ich ein Objekt aus dem See heraus aufsteigen und im Raum verschwinden. Ich sah es so klar, daß ich sogar den Sprühregen erkennen konnte,“ berichtete er der UFO-Studiengruppe. „Meine letzte Sichtung hatte ich vor einigen Wochen, als ich die Zollstraße entlang fuhr und ein sehr gro-

Am 13. Februar 1963 suchten ein Hubschrauber der Marineflieger-Station Glenview und ein Küstenschutz-Kutter, die „Raritan“, in der Dämmerung den Michigan-See vor der Küste von Evanston ab, weil ein Student der Nordwest-Universität gemeldet hatte, er habe etwas beobachtet, was wie Leuchtsignale aussah. Auch habe er eine Explosion auf dem See gehört. Hubschrauber und Kutter fanden im bezeichneten Gebiet aber nur ein kleines Fischerboot und einen Tanker der „Sinclair Oil Co.“, bei denen aber alles in Ordnung war.

In einem anderen Fall, am 21. April 1963, abends, wurde von vielen Einwohnern Chicagos eine glühende, flammende Kugel beobachtet, die anscheinend im Michigan-See verschwand. Man glaubt, es sei ein großer Meteor gewesen. Doch zu gleicher Zeit wurde in einem Gebiet von drei Staaten eine starke Stoßwelle wahrgenommen. War es ein Flugzeugabsturz? Ein Meteor? Fachleute gerieten durch eine rätselhafte Stoßwelle aus der Fassung, die in verschiedenen Teilen des Mittelwestens, darunter Illinois, Kentucky und Ohio verspürt wurde.

Die unerklärliche Explosion gegen 19.30 Uhr war besonders stark in der äußersten Südostseite Chicagos und den Indiana-Vororten spürbar. Wegen der Vielzahl der einlaufenden Meldungen waren sich die Behörden nicht darüber klar, ob mehr als ein ungewöhnliches Ereignis eingetreten war oder ob alle Anfragen die gleiche Ursache hatten.

Sergeant W. M. Kacak von der Polizei in Whiting erklärte: „Es hat mich fast von meinem Stuhl gehauen“. Zahlreiche Einwohner meldeten ratternde Fenster und andere, wahrscheinliche Effekte der Stoßwelle.

Einem unbestätigten Gerücht zufolge soll der Stoß durch das Auskippen von Schlacke in den Michigan-See in der Nähe der Industriegebiete von Indiana verursacht worden sein. Leitende Männer der Ölraffinerie erklärten, sie wüßten nichts über eine Explosion. Die Luftwaffe war der Ansicht, der Stoß könnte von einem Meteor verursacht worden sein, der ungefähr zu der Zeit die Stelle überquerte, als die Effekte der Stoßwelle wahrgenommen wurden.

Eine Meldung aus Canton, Kreis Fulton, Illinois, daß ein Flugzeug „wie eine Feuerkugel“ abgestürzt sei, erwies sich als falsch.

Eine andere Meldung, datiert vom 25. Juni 1963, daß ein Flugzeug auf dem Michigan-See notgelandet sei, erwies sich glücklicherweise ebenfalls als Irrtum.

Der Alarm brachte die Polizei, die Feuerwehr sowie die Marine und den Küstenschutz zum Einsatz. Es wurde jedoch kein Flugzeug gefun-

Machine Translated by Google

aus dem See heraus aufsteigen und im Raum [illegible] sah es so klar, daß ich sogar den Sprühregen erkennen konnte," berichtete er der UFO-Studiengruppe. „Meine letzte Sichtung hatte ich vor einigen Wochen, als ich die Zollstraße entlang fuhr und ein sehr großes, zigarrenförmiges Fahrzeug — man konnte sogar die Bullaugen erkennen — beobachtete, das vom Himmel herunter kam und in den See tauchte."

Über die Ergebnisse der „Untertassen-Jagd" wurde nichts bekanntgegeben. Zwei Versuche, brieflich mit dieser Studiengruppe Kontakt aufzunehmen, blieben erfolglos. Als Letztes erfuhr ich, daß sich diese Gruppe aufgelöst hat.

In den letzten Jahren gab es viele Meldungen über „Flugzeuge", die man in den See stürzen sah. Niemals wurden jedoch Ölflecke oder Wrackteile gefunden und was noch merkwürdiger ist... es wurden nirgends Flugzeuge als verschollen gemeldet!

daß ein Flugzeug auf dem Michigan-See notgelandet sei, erwies sich glücklicherweise ebenfalls als Irrtum.

Der Alarm brachte die Polizei, die Feuerwehr sowie die Marine und den Küstenschutz zum Einsatz. Es wurde jedoch kein Flugzeug gefunden.

Die Aufregung begann, als ein Mr. Viktor Walter (61) aus West Jarvis bei der Polizeizentrale anrief und meldete, er habe aus seiner im 3. Stock gelegenen Wohnung mit dem Fernglas ein Flugzeug beobachtet, das in den über dem See gelegenen Dunst herunter gegangen und nicht wieder heraus gekommen ist. Er meinte, es habe sich in einer Entfernung von mehreren Kilometern vor der Küste befunden und er hielt es für ein viermotoriges Düsenflugzeug.

Vier Polizeiboote, drei Küstenschutz-Kutter und mehrere Privatboote rasten los und suchten, zusammen mit einem Hubschrauber, über eine Stunde lang das ganze Gebiet ab. Sie

fanden aber nicht einmal einen Ölfleck. Daraufhin wurde die Suche eingestellt.

Weder von der Flugsicherung der Flughäfen O'Hara und Meigs Field noch von den militärischen Stellen in Glenview und Bunker Hill A. F. B. in Peru, Indiana, wurden Flugzeuge als vermißt gemeldet.

Viele Chicagoer Einwohner wurden in den letzten Jahren durch zahlreiche sogenannte „Schallmauer-Knalle" erschreckt. Einige davon waren durch Flugzeuge verursacht worden, andere blieben ungelöste Rätsel. Der „rote Schein", der manchmal im südlichen Teil Chicagos beobachtet wird, wird mit „Reflektionen des Stahlwerkes in Gary, Indiana", wegerklärt. Rätselhaft bleiben auch die „blauen Blitze", die hauptsächlich in den Wintermonaten gesehen werden. Sie scheinen aus der Gegend südlich von Chicago zu kommen. **Erwecken Chicago und seine Umgebung, einschließlich des Michigan-Sees, etwa eine besondere Neugier der UFOs?**

„Saucers, Space and Science", Nr. 34/1964.
Übers. Manfred Landeck.

UFO breaks through polar ice

German translation from the magazine 'People', Australia, May 27, 1985:

Many marine experts are convinced that **UFOs operate from bases that lie deep beneath the surface of the sea.** This theory gained enormous momentum during the US Navy Operation Deep Freeze in Antarctica.

Crew members aboard an icebreaker in Admiralty Bay watched in amazement as a massive, silvery vessel broke through the thick ice and then hurtled into the night sky. According to the logbook, the ice that tore through the bullet-shaped object was at least 12 m thick. Huge blocks of frozen seawater were thrown high into the air and cascaded down around the outlet where the sea was boiling and spewing steam.

This **incident** was **just one of hundreds** that have occurred between ships and UFOs over the past 40 years. So many saucers appeared over the seas around Australia that in 1966 the US Navy sent Professor McDonald here to study them. His discoveries of 'drifting reefs' and glowing balls of light observed submerging in Bass Strait (between Australia and the island of Tasmania) were never released to the public. But this overwhelming evidence shows that something strange is going on beneath Australia's seas. Many sea captains and their officers have reported seeing gigantic, "seemingly alien" craft near their ships have seen.

A typical witness was Captain Julian Ardanza of the Argentine ship **Naviero.** While cruising off the Brazilian coast, he and his crew saw a 'giant glowing cigar' on the starboard side. 'She made no noise and there was no sign of a sea pipe to be seen'.....

UFO SMASHES THROUGH POLAR ICE

MANY NAVAL experts are convinced that UFOs operate from bases deep beneath the ocean.

The theory received a dramatic boost during the US Navy's Operation Deep Freeze in the Antarctic.

While crew-members aboard an icebreaker in Admiralty Bay watched amazed, an immense silvery craft smashed upward through thick ice and hurtled into the night sky.

According to the ship's log, the ice through which the bullet-shaped object sliced was at least 12m thick.

Huge blocks of frozen seawater, hurled high into the air, came cascading down around the exit hole, in which the ocean boiled and spouted steam.

This encounter was only one of hundreds reported between ships and UFOs in the past 40 years.

So many saucers have appeared above seas around Australia that in 1966 the US Navy sent a Professor McDonald here to study them. His findings, about "floating reefs" and glowing globes of light seen plunging into Bass Strait, have never been publicly released.

But the sheer weight of evidence suggests that something very strange is going on beneath Australia's oceans. Many sea captains and their officers have reported seeing gigantic, seemingly alien craft near their ships.

- A typical witness was Captain Julian Ardanza of the Argentine ship Naviero. While sailing off the Brazilian coast, he and his crew saw a "huge, glowing cigar" on the starboard side.

"It made no noise and there was no sign of periscope,

Machine Translated by Google

UFO ATTACKS SOVIET SHIP IN THE ARCTIC

Soviet icebreaker fooled by UFO

A Soviet. Icebreaker cruising in the Kara Sea located a bizarre object using sonar.

By William Schandler:

The crew of a Soviet icebreaker played cat and mouse for over 72 hours with a mysterious underwater object later described by a reliable East German source as the **size of a football field .**

The exciting encounter began when the Soviets spotted the object - said to be a black disk surrounded by red, flashing lights - on radar in the Kara Sea. According to the report, the object did not respond to the Soviet radio message that was intended to force it to the surface.

It has been officially confirmed that depth charges, which are occasionally used to break up thick ice floes, **were thrown onto the pane without success.** It is said that at least one Soviet sailor was washed overboard when the object crashed through the polar ice and disappeared into space. The East German informants also said that the icebreaker sustained surface damage from huge chunks of ice falling from the disk as it shot into the sky.

"My understanding is that after the object rose from the sea it hovered over the ship for 20 minutes," said a source who asked to remain anonymous. 'It was described as bright black, like onyx, with flashing red lights around the edge. Strangely, nothing was said about whether it made any noise, although it appears to be an object whose size suggests this.'

The informant said that Soviet fighter pilots ascending from a Siberian base failed to intercept the object, which soared north, then south and suddenly disappeared into space.

Soviet military spokesmen angrily denied that any such encounter took place. The Kremlin bosses added that the icebreaker "may have had an encounter with a pod of sperm whales."

But a Swedish amateur radio operator, Lars Gundersonn, told the press that he heard the Soviet pilots talking about the object during the pursuit. 'They said they were after a flying disc,' said Gundersonn. 'One of them said it was the size of a football field. Another said: "Don't shoot. We don't want to hurt you."'

The sighting of the object followed a year of unprecedented UFO activity in and around the Kara Sea.

Asked to explain the alleged Soviet encounter, French UFO researcher André Poinot said: 'There are reasons to believe that something is going on there'.

Now UFO researchers are speculating about what the UFO was doing there. Some believe that strangers from outer space have collected samples of terrestrial underwater life in the cold waters of the Arctic Circle (nice nonsense; note HUGIN). Others believe the UFO may have hidden under the ocean to make some makeshift repairs. # End of report.

In our opinion, the same maneuvers and battles with the Soviets are taking place here in the northern Arctic Ocean (Kola Peninsula, Barents Sea, Novaya Semelya, Kara Sea) as with the Americans in the Bermuda Triangle. One also thinks of the explosive destruction of the military installations on Kola in 1984 (see the red HUGIN font: 'World Bolshevism'). Furthermore, it cannot be ruled out that the UFOs/USOs also have an underwater base here that the Soviets tried to locate and destroy. If so, then it is an endeavor that will remain fruitless.

Machine Translated by Google

UFO ATTACKS SOVIET SHIP IN ARCTIC

WEEKLY WORLD NEWS 55¢

September 30, 1986 30587 VOL. 7, Issue 51

YOUR LUCKY NUMBERS!
Top psychic's horoscope guide to riches & romance

MIND-BOGGLING MYSTERY IN THE ARCTIC CIRCLE

RUSSIAN FIGHTER JETS attempted to intercept the object described as a "shiny black disc with flashing lights on its edges." A stunned pilot said the object was as "big as a soccer field."

Soviet icebreaker matches wits with UFO

SONAR EQUIPMENT first recorded starship's presence.
DEPTH CHARGES were dropped off the massive ship's stern.
SUPERFICIAL DAMAGE was sustained when the "black disc" broke free of polar ice.

SOVIET ICEBREAKER cruising the Kara Sea used sonar to locate the bizarre object.

„The crew of a Soviet icebreaker played cat and mouse for more than 72 hours with a mysterious underwater object that was later described as being big as a soccer field, East German sources report.

The nail-biting confrontation began when the Soviets spotted the object — allegedly a black disc surrounded by flashing red lights — on sonar in the Kara Sea.

The object reportedly did not respond to Soviet radio transmissions ordering it to surface.

And it is believed by officials that depth charges, occasionally used to break up heavy ice floes, were dropped on the disc without effect. At least one Soviet sailor is said to have been washed overboard when the object crashed through the polar ice and vanished into space.

The East German sources also said the icebreaker suffered superficial damage from huge chunks of ice that fell off the disc when it made its ascent to the heavens.

"It is my understanding that the object hovered over the ship for 20 minutes after it emerged from the sea," said one source, who requested anonymity.

"It was described as being shiny black, like onyx, and having red, flashing lights on its edges. Curiously, nothing was said about it making any noise, even though it seems like an object that big would have to."

The source said Soviet fighter jets scrambled from a base in Siberia failed to intercept the object as it traveled south, then north, and then suddenly vanished into space.

72-hour standoff ends when starship crashes through polar ice cap!

ARCTIC VIEW: Sailors saw the alien craft smash through the ice.

Soviet military spokesmen have angrily denied that any such encounter took place. The Kremlin bosses added that the icebreaker could have had "an encounter with a pod of sperm whales."

But a Swedish ham radio operator, Lars Gundersonn, told newspapers that he heard the Soviet pilots discussing the object during the chase.

"They said they were in pursuit of a flying disc," said Gundersonn. "One of them said it was as big as a soccer field.

"Another one said: 'Don't shoot. We mean to do you no harm.'"

The sighting of the object follows a year of unprecedented UFO activity in and around the Kara Sea. Asked to comment on the alleged Soviet encounter, French UFO researcher Andre Poinot said: "There is reason to believe something is going on up there."

Now UFO researchers are speculating on what the UFO was doing. Some believe aliens from space were collecting samples of earth underwater life in the cold seas of the Arctic Circle. Others think the UFO may have hidden under the ocean in order to make emergency repairs.

— WILLIAM SCHANDLER

Talk show callers stop suicide bid

A woman who phoned a radio show threatening to commit suicide decided not to after 50 callers convinced her life really was worth living!

Liz Lansing was host of the all-night talk show on WIBX Radio, in Utica, N.Y.

Deutsche Übersetzung

auf der nächsten Seite:

Machine Translated by Google

I SAW A PHANTOM SUBMARINE

From the Norwegian illustrated weekly magazine 'Vi Menn' , No.3, 1986. Translated into German by Olaf Braun, Norway:

Unknown submarines are reported again and again in our waters. But they disappear without a trace. Spy submarines from a foreign power? Not always. The American Navy has admitted that phantom submarines exist. These USOs are the sea's answer to the UFOs.

Submarine hunts in Norwegian and Swedish waters end as usual. The intruders disappear without being identified.
Officially, it is said that the unknown underwater vehicles that plague Scandinavian waters year after year belong to a foreign power. What they actually are, who owns them, who mans them and why they operate secretly is a world-spanning mystery.
The fact that the open seas and coastal waters were visited by USOs was a well-kept secret until 1962. But then the American naval intelligence service, ONR, was forced to admit their existence.
The world's naval forces are powerless against these mysterious invaders and have so far only managed to confirm their fantastic properties. They appear unexpectedly in shallow waters. They resist mines and anti-submarine missiles. They can rise from the water and fly away at rocket speeds, disappearing into space within a few minutes.

The Swedish journalist Jan-Ove Sundberg, who is writing a book about these mysteries, has collected unique material about these mysterious submarines, which VI MENN is publishing here for the first time in Norway:

On January 27, 1962, a US Navy icebreaker was in the waters of Admiralty Bay in Antarctica. He was part of a fleet that carried out **clandestine military operations .** Suddenly you heard a rumble coming from the ice. The next moment 'something' shot out of the sea. Through seven meters thick ice. An approximately ten meter long, shiny silver vehicle resembling a submarine rose into the clouds and disappeared with dizzying speed. Enormous blocks of ice were thrown around and water cascades 30 meters high rose up from the hole. A scientist on the icebreaker, Rubens Villela from Rio de Janeiro, leaked the news to the mainstream media in Brazil. And when American journalists took up the matter and presented it to the Navy, the Navy had to admit that there was a type of unknown underwater vehicle called USOs or Phantom Submarines. This unveiling was not a sensation in South America, as phantom submarines have been visiting there since the 1950s. Just after midnight in July 1952, the crew of the Brazilian cargo ship **'Naviero'** outside El Salvador got the shock of their lives. A self-luminous, submarine-like craft emerged from the storm-tossed sea and set itself on a collision course. It was at least 30m long, glowed blue-white in the darkness and looked menacing. 'Naviero' turned the engines aft. But the phantom submarine suddenly increased speed, swerved, and disappeared like a missile over the foaming waves. In February 1957, the crew of an Argentine patrol boat saw a giant glass-domed vehicle slide into the Rio de la Plata. Two hunters (certainly meaning hunting boats) blocked the exit. Helicopters equipped with hydrophones searched. And five corvettes simultaneously began to drop mines into the bay. The hunt lasted five days. Several contacts were registered. Since then the submarine had disappeared without anyone knowing how. When the Antarctic event became known, another sensation filtered through: 'Captain Nemo has risen,' joked a retired American naval officer in an interview with the New York Times. 'I saw a phantom submarine in the North Atlantic myself. We were near Greenland on a submarine hunting exercise when it appeared.

The episode happened during World War II. And believing he was dealing with a Nazi German submarine, the captain of the hunter gave the order to open fire. The Phantom submarine, which had a glass-like structure with a very fast rotating periscope, was hit by several volleys. But it was still undamaged. As the bombardment continued, it dived vertically and disappeared into the depths.
In the 1960s, submarines began to operate in the Baltic Sea. Fruitless hunts for them followed each other. At the same time, the Swedish Navy registered an increase in collisions between trawlers and 'something' in underwater position.

On June 23, 1968, the Norwegian tanker **'Texaco Bogota'** left Norrköping; a 19,000 ton truck that had extinguished gasoline. The port of destination was in England. The following morning the tanker passed Kapelludden on Öland. Suddenly he was shaken by a dull explosion. Two port tanks were blown and a large portion of the side was torn open. The ship started to burn. The captain and crew were rescued under dramatic circumstances. But one man died in the sea of flames. The ship was moved to the naval shipyard in Karlskrona, where divers examined the hull. There was never an explanation for what was found there. Beneath the blast damage were two mysterious holes, 15 cm in diameter and triangular in shape, with the point facing upwards. But the most sensational thing was that the edges of the two holes were bent inwards. There were many theories. Spontaneous combustion, torpedoing, mine blasting and grounding. But after detailed examination of the explosion damage, experts were able to do all of these

Machine Translated by Google

Drop theories. Afterwards it was only said that an underwater object could have caused this damage. And this must have hit the 'Texaco Bogota' with tremendous force. A month later, the Japanese tanker 'Yoho Maru' left the Persian Gulf with oil for Japan. Suddenly the crew noticed a tremor in the hull. The 88,000 ton truck then began to vibrate. Investigations showed that 11,000 tons of oil spilled out through a giant hole in the center tanks just below the waterline. (Someone is wrong here. The center tanks are located in the middle of the ship, viewed lengthwise. They can only be reached from below. According to the photo, this means the side tanks, starboard, approximately amidships; note Olaf Braun.) Four months later there were The Japanese Classification Society made a sensational statement: an unidentified underwater object collided with the hull of the ship. He tore a hole that was 16 m long, 3 m high at the forward edge and 7 m high at the aft edge.

In Swedish waters, one submarine hunt replaces the other. Of course, the geographical proximity of the Eastern Bloc and the fact that there are spy submarines in the Baltic Sea does not rule out the possibility that one or two foreign submarines belong to a foreign power. But according to the 'unwritten law' of these submarines, they always leave Swedish waters when they are discovered. The Phantom Submarines, on the other hand, have proven to have nothing to fear and can fool the Navy for as long as they want.

There is no doubt that there are phantom submarines operating in Swedish waters. Only a few residents of the coast were allowed to say publicly that they had seen something like this. They contacted the Navy about their sighting and were muzzled. Civil engineer Gunnar Lindberg from Öckerö outside Gothenburg is an exception. It happened on the night of May 26, 1976, when Lindberg was ten nautical miles east of the Skagen light with his yacht **'Cybel 11' .** 'A mysterious light suddenly appeared 50-100 m in front of my boat. "It was above the water at first, but sank below the surface as I approached," Lindberg said. The vehicle was large, but the luminous surface did not exceed 2 m in diameter. He is certain that it was not a foreign submarine. The large, dark mass that hid under the mysterious light was shaped like a torpedo with a curved, closed deck and was at least 25 m long. (HUGIN's note: by 'foreign submarines' we still mean conventional ones, such as possibly Soviet boats; the others are therefore the 'phantom submarines'.)

Other recreational sailors in the Skagerrak have reported similar vessels. In the Kattegat as well as in the Baltic Sea, trawler crews have seen 'luminous, submarine-like objects' rise from the water like gliders and disappear silently.

In the waters near Gotland at the end of the 1970s, a cargo ship most likely fell victim to a fast Phantom submarine. It was April 2, 1977. North of Gotska Sandön, the 4,600 ton freighter **'Immen'** was slogging through darkness and storm when it was suddenly hit by something from below. The ship developed a leak and water ingress. The 13-man crew went into the rubber rafts and, after a dramatic operation, was brought to safety by the maritime rescue service's helicopters to Visby. There are divided opinions about what sank the 'Immen'. The wreck at a depth of 140 m was filmed by a TV camera from Saab Scania's underwater robot 'Saab Sub' and a new type of diving bell, and was also videotaped by a diver sent down. According to the accident commission in Gothenburg, 'a large and heavy object must have collided with the 'Immen' from behind, where it must have torn a 1 x 0.5 m triangular hole in the aft end'. But that's not official. Nobody in the Karlstad shipping company Ahlmark, which owned the 'Immen', wants to speak out. You point to the navy.

The Navy? Yes, the navy plays a confusing role in the most puzzling accident in Swedish maritime history.

Three days after the Immen sank, a helicopter flew to the site and lowered a hydrophone. It registered something sensational: 'Regular, metallic crunching', which, according to the press release from the naval staff, 'came neither from the 'Immen' nor from a foreign submarine'. The Navy quickly retracted the news of the mysterious sounds, but added that the "helicopter thing" is classified as classified.

What does the Navy know about phantom submarines? As far as the phrase 'security of the empire' is concerned, we will probably never hear anything about it. In 1978, the American fleet quietly inaugurated the advanced long-range sonar system ASW. It cost $10 billion and can track any underwater vehicle up to 10 miles away, wherever it is in the world. Despite the use of ASW, vehicles, aircraft and helicopters, specially equipped hunting submarines and other super technology: the phantom submarines continue to hunt. We in Scandinavia will often receive visitors. But next time you shouldn't say that the navy is too poorly equipped. Because so far no country has managed to catch one of these mysterious phantom submarines.

Machine Translated by Google

Havets uløste gåte

-JEG SÅ EN FANTOM-UBÅT

Gang på gang rapporteres det om ukjente ubåter i våre farvann. Men de forsvinner sporløst. Spion-ubåter fra en fremmed makt? Ikke alltid. Den amerikanske marinen har innrømmet at det eksisterer fantom-ubåter. Disse *USO*ene er havets svar på UFO.

Slik ser et ekko fra en gjenstand under vann ut (den lille tingesten ovenfor frekvenslinjen). Det er meget vanskelig å avgjøre eksakt hva det er. (Foto: Sveriges marine.)

Om natten den 26. mai 1976 dukket en fantom-ubåt opp nær Gunnar Lindbergs havseiler «Cybel II» i Skagerrak. (Foto: UFO-information.)

Ubåtjakter i norske og svenske farvann ender som de pleier. Inntrengerne kommer seg unna, uten å være identifisert.

Offisielt heter det at de ukjente undervannsfartøyene som år etter år hjemsøker skandinaviske farvann, tilhører en fremmed makt. Hva de egentlig er, hvem de tilhører, hvem som bemanner dem, og hvorfor de opererer i hemmelighet er en verdensomfattende gåte!

At verdenshavene og kystfarvannene besøkes av *USOs* — Unidentified Submarine Objects (uidentifiserte undervannsfartøyer) — var en vel bevart hemmelighet inntil 1962. Da ble den amerikanske flåtens etterretningstjeneste, *ONR*, tvunget til å innrømme at de eksisterer.

Verdens sjøstridskrefter står maktesløse overfor de mystiske inntrengerne og har til nå bare klart å kartlegge deres fantastiske egenskaper. De dukker opp uventet og i grunne farvann. De motstår synkeminer og antiubåtraketter. De kan heve seg fra vannet og fly av sted med rakettfart, for så å forsvinne i rommet på noen minutter.

Den svenske journalisten *Jan-Ove Sundberg*, som skriver en bok om gåten, har samlet et unikt materiale om de mystiske ubåtene, som VI MENN her publiserer for første gang i Norge:

Den 27. januar 1962 befant en isbryter fra US Navy seg i farvannet ved Admiralty Bay i Antarktis. Den deltok i en flåteeskadre som utførte en hemmelig militær operasjon.

— Et uidentifisert undervannsobjekt kolliderte med skipets skrog og rev opp et hull i skipssiden som var 16 meter langt på «Yohu Maru» i Den persiske bukt. (Foto: UFO-information.)

Plutselig hørtes et bulder fra isviddene. I neste øyeblikk skjøt «noe» opp av havet. Gjennom syv meter tykk is!

En cirka ti meter lang, sølvglinsende og ubåtlignende farkost steg mot skyene og forsvant med svimlende hastighet. Enorme isblokker ble kastet vidt omkring, opp av hullet sprutet 30 meter høye vannkaskader.

En vitenskapsmann på isbryteren, Rubens Villela fra Rio de Janeiro, lekket nyheten til massemedia i Brasil. Og da amerikanske journalister tok saken opp med marinen, ble ONR tvunget til å medgi at det eksisterte en type ukjente undervannsfartøyer som de kalte USO eller fantom-ubåter.

I Sør-Amerika ble ikke avsløringen mottatt som noen sensasjon, for der har man hatt besøk av fantom-ubåter siden 1950-tallet!

Straks etter midnatt i juli 1952 fikk besetningen på det brasilianske lasteskipet «Naviero» utenfor El Salvador sitt livs sjokk. Et selvlysende, ubåtlignende fartøy dukket opp av det stormpiskede havet og la seg på kollisjonskurs!

Det var minst 30 meter langt, glødet blåhvitt i mørket og virket truende. «Naviero» slo bakk. Men fantom-ubåten økte plutselig farten, vek unna og forsvant som en rakett over de skummende bølgene.

I februar 1957 så besetningen på en argentinsk patruljebåt et kjempefartøy med glasskuppel som gled inn i Rio de la Plata. To jagere sperret utløpet. Helikoptere utstyrt med hydrofoner søkte. Og fem korvetter begynte systematisk å slippe synkeminer i bukten. Jakten pågikk i fem døgn. Flere kontakter ble registrert. Siden forsvant ubåten, uten at man visste hvordan.

Da hendelsen i Antarktis ble kjent i USA lekket ytterligere en sensasjon ut:

— *Kaptein Nemo* har gjenoppstått, spøkte en pensjonert marineoffiser i et intervju med New York Times. — Jeg har selv sett en fantom-ubåt i Nord-Atlanteren. Vi befant oss nær Grønland på en øvelse i ubåtjakt da den dukket opp. Episoden inntraff under Den annen verdenskrig. Og i den tro at ubåten tilhørte nazi-Tyskland, ga jagerens kaptein ordre om å åpne ild.

Fantom-ubåten, som hadde en glasslignende overbygning med et snurrende periskop, ble truffet av flere salver. Men den var likevel uskadd! Mens beskytningen fortsatte, dukket fartøyet rett ned og forsvant i dypet.

På 60-tallet begynte ubåtene å operere i Østersjøen. Resultatløse jakter på dem avløste hverandre. Samtidig noterte den svenske marinen en økning av tallet på kollisjoner mellom trålere og «noe» i undervannsstilling.

Den 23. juni 1968 gikk det norske tankskipet «Texaco Bogota» på 000 tonn ut fra Norrköping etter å ha losset bensin. Bestemmelsesstedet var England.

Om morgenen dagen etter passerte tankskipet Kapelludden på Öland. Plutselig ble det rystet av en dump eksplosjon. To babords tanker ble sprengt, og en stor del av skipssiden revet opp. Skipet begynte å brenne.

Kapteinen og besetningen ble reddet under dramatiske omstendigheter. Men en mann omkom i ildhavet. «Texaco Bogota» ble buksert til Karlskronas orlogsverft, der dykkere undersøkte skroget. Det man fant der har aldri fått noen forklaring. Under selve eksplosjonsskaden fantes to mystiske hull, 15 cm i diameter og triangelformede med spissen vendende opp. Men det mest sensasjonelle var at platekantene i de to hullene var bøyd innover!

Mange teorier ble lansert. Selvantennelse, torpedering, minesprengning og grunnstøting. Men etter inngående undersøkelser av eksplosjonsskaden kunne ekspertene avskrive alle disse teoriene. Siden fastslo man at bare en undervannsgjenstand kunne ha forårsaket skaden. Og den må ha truffet «Texaco Bogota» med uhyggelig kraft.

En måned senere forlot det japanske tankskipet «Yoho Maru» Den persiske bukt med olje til Japan. Plutselig merket besetningen en rystelse i skroget. Deretter begynte det 88 000 tonn store fartøyet å vibrere. Undersøkelser viste at 11 000 tonn olje fosset ut gjennom et kjempehull i sentertankene like under vannlinjen.

Fire måneder senere avga det japanske klassifiseringsselskapet en sensasjonell uttalelse om årsaken:

— En uidentifisert undervannsgjenstand kolliderte med fartøyets skrog. Den rev opp et hull, som var 16 meter langt og med en høyde av tre meter i forkant og syv i akterkant.

I svenske farvann avløser den ene ubåtjakten den andre. Den geografiske nærheten til østatene og det faktum at det finnes spion-ubåter i Østersjøen utelukker naturligvis ikke at en og annen ukjent ubåt har tilhørt en fremmed makt.

Men ifølge den «uskrevne lov», som gjelder for disse ubåtene, begir de seg alltid ut av svensk farvann etter å være oppdaget. Fantom-ubåtene har bevislig ingenting å frykte. Og kan holde marinen for narr så lenge de vil.

At fantom-ubåter opererer i svenske farvann hersker det ingen tvil om. Få beboere ved kysten har fått anledning til å uttale seg offentlig om at de har sett en slik. De har henvendt seg til marinen med sin observasjon og er blitt pålagt taushetsplikt.

Sivilingeniør *Gunnar Lindberg* fra Öckerö utenfor Göteborg er et unntak. Det hendte natten til den 26. mai 1976, da Lindberg med sin havseiler «Cybel II» befant seg 10 distanseminutter øst om Skagens fyr.

— Et mystisk lys dukket plutselig opp 50 til 100 meter foran båten. Det lå først på vannet, men sank under overflaten da jeg nærmet meg, forteller Lindberg. Fartøyet var stort, men dets lysende ytterflate ikke mer enn to meter i diameter.

At det ikke dreide seg om en fremmed ubåt er han sikker på. Den store, mørke massen som skjulte seg under det mystiske lyset hadde nemlig konturene av en torpedo med hvelvet, lukket dekk. Og den var minst 25 meter lang.

Andre fritidsseilere i Skagerrak har rapportert om lignende fartøyer. I så vel Kattegatt som Østersjøen har trålerbesetninger sett «selvlysende, ubåtlignende gjenstander» heve seg fra vannet som glidefly og forsvinne lydløst.

I farvannet omkring Gotland falt på slutten av 70-tallet et lastefartøy med største sannsynlighet som offer for en hurtiggående fantomubåt. Det var den 2. april 1977. Nord for Gotska Sandön stevnet det 4600 tonns lastefartøyet «Immen» i mørke og storm, da det plutselig ble truffet av noe nedenfra. Skipet sprang lekk og begynte å ta inn vann. Den 15 mann store besetningen gikk i gummibåtene og ble etter en dramatisk innsats av sjøredningstjenestens helikopter i Visby brakt i sikkerhet.

Hva som senket «Immen» er det delte meninger om. Vraket på 140 meters dyp er blitt filmet med TV-kamera av Saab Scanias undervannsrobot «Saab Sub» og en avansert dykkerklokke, og er blitt videofilmet av en nedsendt dykker.

Ifølge havarikommisjonen i Göteborg må «en stor og tung gjenstand ha kollidert med «Immen» bakfra, der den i akterenden rev opp et 1 × 0,5 meter stort, triangulært hull». Men det er ikke offisielt!

I Karlstad-rederiet Ahlmark, som eide «Immen», vil ingen uttale seg. Man henviser til marinen! Marinen? Ja, i dette det mest gåtefulle havari i svensk sjøfartshistorie, spiller marinen en forvirrende rolle.

Tre dager etter «Immen»s forlis fløy et marinehelikopter til stedet og senket ned en hydrofon. Den registrerte noe sensasjonelt: — «Regelmessige, metalliske knakinger», som ifølge en pressemelding fra marinestaben «hverken skrev seg fra Immen eller en fremmed ubåt».

Marinen trakk raskt tilbake opplysningen om de mystiske lydene, men la samtidig til at «helikoptertilfellet» var hemmeligstemplet!

Hva vet marinen om fantom-ubåtene? Med henvisning til frasen om «rikets sikkerhet» får man formodentlig aldri vite det.

I 1978 innviet den amerikanske flåten i stillhet et avansert langdistanse sonarsystem kalt *ASW*. Det kostet ti milliarder dollar og kan lokalisere hvert undervannsfartøy på 16 kilometers avstand. Hvor den enn befinner seg i verden.

Trass i ASW, innsats av fartøyer, fly og helikoptre, spesialutstyrte jaktubåter og annen superteknikk, jager fantom-ubåtene videre. Vi i Skandinavia får nok nye besøk. Men si ikke at marinen er for dårlig utstyrt neste gang. For ennå har ikke noe land klart å fange en av de gåtefulle fantom-ubåtene! ●

Tekst: Jan Ove Sundberg

Image texts: 'This is what an echo from an underwater object looks like (the little thing above the frequency lens). It is very difficult to determine exactly what it is. (Photo: Sweden's Navy).'

'An unidentified underwater object collided with the hull of the (Japanese) ship "Johu Maru" in the Persian Gulf, tearing a 16 m long hole in the ship's side.'

Machine Translated by Google

'On the night of May 26, 1976, a phantom submarine appeared near the sailing yacht "Cygel II" in the Skagerrak. 'End of translation from 'Vi Menn' , No. 3, 1986.

Machine Translated by Google

THE CIRCLE OF DEATH

German translation by Olaf Braun, from the Norwegian magazine **'Det Ukjente',** P.Ir.4/ 1987. The five-page report was adapted to the presentation of the 'Texaco Bogota' and 'Immen', which we already know from the previous translation. shortened:
'Strange things happen not only in the American Bermuda Triangle. Something similar is also happening in the Swedish waters near Öland and Gotland. Swedish sailors call this area the 'Circle of Death' (Dodens Sirkel: Circle of Death).

Norwegische Zeitschrift:'Det Ukjente', Nr.4/1987

«DØDENS SIRKEL»

Det er ikke bare i det amerikanske Bermudatrianglet det skjer merkelige ting. Også i de svenske farvannene rundt Öland og Gotland skjer noe tilsvarende. Svenske sjøfolk kaller disse områdene for «Dødens sirkel».

Tekst: Jan-Ove Sundberg

Tidlig om morgenen den 24. juni 1968, ble tankbåten «Texaco Bogota», truffet av mystiske gjenstander, som luget et triungelformet hull på babord side. Gjenstandene forårsaket brann og eksplosjoner, og en av mannskapet døde. Foto: Pressens Bild.

Siden våre forfedre sjøsatte det første skipet, har utallige fartøyer forlist her. Men ikke før i nyere tid, har man etterhvert fått mistanke om at det er noe mystisk med disse forlisene.

«Dødens sirkel» ble også hjemsøkt av fremmede undervannsfartøyer lenge før de begynte å dukke opp andre steder i svenske farvann. Og bare i et fåttall av disse hendelser, mener marinen det kan ha vært involvert fremmede makters ubåter.

I luften har man dessuten observert uidentifiserte flyvende gjenstander siden 1950. Enkelte har lignet de klassiske UFO'ene, andre har hatt en helt ukjent form.

Om morgenen 8. november i 1984, var kaptein Björn Somnell på vei hjem i sin Viggen til base F-13 i Norrköping. Klokken var 11.29, pluss 50 sekunder, når han ga følgende melding til basen på fastlandet: «Jeg stiger fra 300 til 1000 meter».

Deretter ble radiokontakten plutselig brutt, og Viggen-flyet forsvant fra radarskjermene.

Mystisk og uforklarlig styrtet det i dypet mellom Oland og Gotland — like i «Dødens sirkel»!

I hele syv minutter etter krasjet, registrerte landbasens radar via en radar i lav høyde ved Smålandskysten — en eller annen gjenstand med direkte tilknytning til ulykkesstedet. Men av radarbildene fremgår det ikke om gjenstanden befant seg på vannoverflaten eller i luften.

— Etter det jeg vet, har vi aldri tidligere sett noe lignende, sier oberstløytnant i luftforsvaret, Gösta Edwards.

Vraket ligger på 80 meters dyp. Statens havarikommisjon har klart å berge noen vrakdeler, men mysteriet er bare blitt mere uforklarlig.

Da det ikke fins noe som helst tegn på at flyet eksploderte i luften, spør man seg f.eks. om hvorfor kaptein Somnell ikke hoppet ut fra flyet? Flyhøyden var tilstrekkelig, sikten svært god og været bra.

Oberstløytnant Edwards sier at hverken vrakdeler, brannrøyk eller fugler, kan ha forårsaket det mystiske radarekko, som de mottok fra nedslagsfeltet.

Ennå, drøye to år etter kaptein Björn Somnells uforklarlige dødsstyrtning i

Der «Immen» forliste, spilte et helikopter fra marinen inn metalliske lyder, som aldri har fått noen forklaring.

Since our forefathers launched the first ship, countless ships have sunk here. But only recently

There was a suspicion that there was something mysterious about these ship accidents.
The 'Circle of Death' has been plagued by strange underwater vehicles long before they appeared elsewhere in Swedish waters. The Navy believes that foreign submarines were involved in only a small number of these events.

However, unidentified flying objects have been observed in the air since 1950. Some resembled classic UFOs, while others had completely unknown shapes.
On the morning of November 8, 1984, captain Björn Somnell was in his Viggen (Swedish fighter: O.Br.) on the way home to the F-13 base in Norrköping (southwest of Stockholm: O.Br.). The clock read 11 hours, 29 minutes and 50 seconds when he sent the following message to the base on the mainland: 'I am climbing from 300 to 1000 meters'. The radio connection suddenly broke off and the Viggen aircraft disappeared from the radar screens.
Mysteriously and inexplicably it fell into the depths between Öland and Gotland.. into the 'circle of death'.
For a full seven minutes after the crash, the radar on the F-13 land base registered some object on the radar at low altitude on the Saamland box, directly related to the crash site. But it wasn't clear from the radar image whether this object was on the surface of the water or in the air. 'As far as I know, we've never seen anything like this before,' says Air Force Lieutenant Colonel Gösta Edwards. The wreck lies at a depth of 80 meters. The state accident commission has recovered a few pieces of wreckage, but that has only made the mystery even more inexplicable.

Since there is no sign at all that the plane exploded in mid-air, one wonders, for example, why Captain Somnell didn't jump out of the plane. He had enough altitude, visibility was very good and the weather was good too. Lt. Col. Edwards says that neither debris, smoke from the fire, nor birds could have caused the mysterious radar echoes received from the crash area.
So far, a good 3 years after the inexplicable crash in the 'Circle of Death', the state accident commission has not yet solved the mystery.

A police officer is always seen as a 'trained observer' or 'trusted witness' and no one doubted what detective assistant Ernst Aakerberg saw on Gotland one evening in 1957.
On August 5th this year, at around 10 p.m., Aakerberg and his wife Karin drove a few acquaintances to a fishing hut on Lergravsvik in northeastern Gotland. Suddenly the group saw two strange flying vehicles gliding across the bay from the sea. The discus-shaped vehicles passed dangerously close to some high cliffs and the only sound that could be heard from them was a strong draft of air that rippled the surface of the water and moved the trees.

The vehicles were approximately 25 meters in diameter and streamlined. The color on the bottom half was silver gray and shone like stainless steel. In a rotating capsule on the top half, two 'protruding parts' could be seen, with edges curved upwards. They saw no badges, windows or portholes - just the outline of an elongated engraving. 'When I later inquired with the military authorities, I was told that the Luftwaffe had no aircraft in the area at the time,' said Ernst Aakerberg.

During an exercise on the morning of January 27, 1965, the submarine 'Springaren' suddenly collided with an unknown underwater object! The collision was not severe and, according to the Navy, the 'Springaren' sustained only minor damage. But the submarine had to abandon the exercise and go to port for repairs. The matter about who collided with the 800-ton Swedish submarine has been kept secret. According to newspaper reports at the time, a source within the armed forces said that it was 'a type of underwater vehicle that was completely unknown to us'.

This mysterious vehicle operates all over the world and is called USO, Unidentified Submarine Object.

'OBSERVED THROUGH BINOCULARS. During a LV 2 firing exercise at the Tofta firing range, the military saw 'an enormous unidentified flying object' over the sea, just north of Öland.
It was Wednesday, August 23, 1978. It was 8:10 p.m. The two conscript radar observers Kenneth Kurkiaho and Kenneth Berg stood in the radar tower at the Tofta shooting range, about 20 km south of Visby on Gotland.

During the exercise, their task was to look over the sea with the help of battery-operated binoculars and radar and to inform any ships that might appear about the bombardment zone.

The sun had already set. The weather was clear and visibility was good. Both radar observers spotted the object at the same time and Kenneth Kurkiaho said: 'First we saw
it with the naked eye, then through binoculars. It was enormously large and was relatively far away, at an altitude of 1500 meters. It lay still in the air and gave off white light. The incredible one

Machine Translated by Google

Object slowly descended to the water, to the 'circle of death'. 'The object was a good 60 km away from us, just north of the northern tip of Öland, but the radar echo was as large as that of a merchant ship about two miles away,' continues Kenneth Kurkiaho. (HUGIN's note: From the description it must have been a huge object.)

Their boss, Ensign Lars Olowsson, immediately notified coastal surveillance. But before vehicles and planes could examine the matter more closely, the object disappeared into the depths!
Afterwards, the commander-in-chief of the Eastern Military Area tried to explain the object as 'part of an exploded satellite'. But the Air Force's leading experts had another explanation: 'It was the northern tip of Öland that had been seen! 'The many witnesses call this an attempt at a cover-up. -

The final mystery in the 'Circle of Death' took place on July 22, 1986, when the minesweeper 'Skaftö' was almost hit by a USO in Kalmar Sound. The strange underwater vehicle was discovered at a so-called 'family day', which means that close relatives are allowed to be on board the vehicle. For this reason, the commander did not dare to open fire on the vehicle. (The Swedish press reported on this incident; the 'VG' on October 6, 1986 and the 'Dagbladet' on October 7, 1986; the men of the Swedish Navy had women and children on board. Apparently in full knowledge of this situation, has let us look at the 'USO' up close; note HUGIN.) But parts protruding from the water could be photographed and recorded on video. All USO images were secretly stamped by the Defense Staff.

So many mysterious things have happened between Öland and Gotland so far that professional fishermen, recreational sailors and others are confronting the authorities with
questions: What is actually in the depths that threatens our lives? What caused the holes in the Norwegian tanker (Texaco Bogota)? What sank the 'Immen' and why were the investigations declared secret? What did the Navy actually discover on the seabed and now later on the surface? What do we know about the tragic fatal crash of the Viggen plane?

While the authorities remain silent, mysterious lights flicker in the sky over Öland and Gotland and unknown vehicles race across the sky and into the depths of the 'Circle of Death.'
End of translation The Unknown', No. 4, 1987.

Machine Translated by Google

Der Skjervøy-Fall

Der nachfolgende Bericht aus den UFO-INFORMATIONEN, Oslo, behandelt eine sehr interessante norwegische Sichtung aus dem Jahre 1963.

Die Beobachtung wurde auf der kleinen Insel Skjervøy im nördlichsten Teil Norwegens gemacht. Nachfolgend eine Zusammenfassung des Geschehens, wie es von dem Beobachter, Helge Mikalsen, Skjervøy, beschrieben wurde:

Am 21. oder 22. August 1963, nachmittags 5 Uhr, machte ich mich mit meinem Boot zu einem Fischfang im Kagsund, in der Nähe von Skjervøy auf. Das Wetter war klar, kein Wind. Gegen 6.30 Uhr änderte ich meine Position, mehr zu dem versunkenen Felsen „Skjervøyskjeret“; westwärts sah ich zur Insel Arnøy. Plötzlich sah ich eine Flamme, wie aus einer Rakete, dem Abschuß nach kam sie aus den Bergen. Erst dachte ich, die Marine hätte einen Übungsauftrag. Wenn dem so war, mußte es sich um etwas Neues handeln, denn ich sah eine etwa 2 m hohe orangefarbene Flamme. Dann sah ich ein Objekt, das kerzengerade hochstieg, jedoch war die Geschwindigkeit nicht so groß wie die einer abgeschossenen Rakete! In einer Höhe von etwa 1830 m verlosch die Flamme und ich erkannte die scharfen Umrisse eines grauen Objektes. Ich hielt es für eine Art Ballon oder Fallschirm. Dann bewegte sich das Objekt ostwärts gegen den Wind, behielt die gleiche Höhe und überflog eine Bergspitze (ca. 720 m) sowie ein kleines Dorf. Als es aus dem Sund sich mehr mir zuwandte, kam es tiefer und ich stellte fest, daß es weder Ballon noch Fallschirm war. Dann kam mir plötzlich der Gedanke, es könnte ein UFO sein. Nun konnte ich zwei Objekte ausmachen, ein größeres und ein kleineres. Das Größere hatte 5 große Fenster in der mir zugekehrten Seite, die etwa 1,85 m hoch und an der Spitze oval waren. Die Entfernung zu dem Objekt betrug ca. 150 m. Es schwebte etwa 15 Meter über dem Wasser. Auf einmal gingen zwei Schienen aus dem größeren Objekt runter und das schmalere hängte sich hieran und wurde in das große hineingezogen. Das schmalere war oval und etwa 3 m groß. Weder Flamme noch Rauch konnten beobachtet, auch kein Laut gehört werden.

Es war jetzt etwa 6.40 Uhr nachmittags. Ich muß gestehen, ich war nervös und hatte Angst. Ich sah mich wegen anderer Zeugen um, konnte aber kein anderes Boot sehen. Der Wind verstärkte sich, die See war dunkel, jedoch blieb unterhalb des Objektes alles ruhig und blank. In einem der Fenster des Objektes sah ich ein grünes Licht (etwa 30 cm ∅), dessen Strahl auf mich gerichtet war. Dieses runde Licht änderte die Farbe von hell zu dunkelgrün. Irgendetwas schien sich hinter dem Licht zu bewegen. Ich versuchte, einen Fisch ins Boot zu heben, aber es gelang mir nicht. Ich war wie gelähmt. Ob dies auf der Erregung oder auf anderer Ursache beruhte, kann ich nicht sagen.

Ich schätzte die Größe des UFOs etwa 9 m hoch und etwa 36 m lang (resp. Durchmesser?). Ich kann nicht mit Bestimmtheit sagen, ob das Objekt rund oder oval war, als es sich während der Beobachtungsdauer mir näherte. Die Unterseite war flach, oben hatte das Objekt eine Kuppel. Das Objekt stand genau über einem großen, im Jahre 1944 hier versunkenen deutschen Frachter, der eine Metall- und Quecksilber-Ladung hatte. Ich konnte etwas beobachten, weiß aber nicht, ob es aus dem Wasser gezogen oder in das Wasser hinabgeworfen wurde. Man konnte zwischen dem Objekt und der See nur ein paar kleine dunkle Dinge sehen. Mir schien mehr, daß etwas aus dem Wasser kam und durch die Unterseite des Objektes heraufgeholt wurde. Während dieser Zeit von etwa 10 Minuten stand das Objekt bewegungslos. Dann schwenkte das UFO ein wenig nach der einen Seite und begann zu beschleunigen. Plötzlich war die Geschwindigkeit stark erhöht und innerhalb einer Minute war es in nördlicher Richtung aus dem Sund von Kvenangen entschwunden.

Die Farbe des Objektes war metallisch oder silbergrau.

Die erste Skizze (Figur 1) zeigt das Objekt, wie ich es vor mir stehen sah. Durch das mit XX bezeichnete Fenster auf der linken Seite war der kleine Gegenstand in das Innere gezogen worden. Aus dem auf der rechten Seite befindlichen, mit X bezeichneten Fenster kam das grüne Licht.

Die zweite Skizze stellt das Objekt von unten in einem Winkel gesehen dar. Hier ist ein Detail zu sehen, das ich im Bericht nicht erwähnt habe: eine Reihe runder röhrenförmiger Öffnungen, die meiner Ansicht nach flexibel waren, denn ein Teil zeigte nach unten, andere in andere Richtungen. Ich kann diese nicht besser beschreiben, da ich sie nur wenige Sekunden erblickte.

Der Skjervøy-Fall/Norwegen, 22.8.1963
XX
X
Fig.1
Fig.2

Ich gebe mein Ehrenwort, daß dies ein wahres, persönliches Erlebnis ist.

Skjervøy, 22. März 1968
gez. Helge Mikalsen

Nach den von uns eingeholten Erkundigungen wird die Person als durchaus zuverlässig und die Begebenheit als wahr angesehen.

Übersetzung: K. Aasheim
Übermittelt durch: Nils Jacob Jacobsen
Cos-Mos/London; übersetzt: E. M. Ciossek

UN Nr.186, Febr. 1972

Machine Translated by Google

Der Siegeszug der Wahrheit ist nicht mehr aufzuhalten !

NATIONAL Examiner 69¢
JANUARY 26, 1988 AMERICA'S FASTEST GROWING WEEKLY

UFO mystery solved!

They're leftover Nazis bent on establishing a bloody Fourth Reich

THE SOLUTION to the UFO mystery has been found at long last — the aliens are actually Nazis bent on establishing a bloody Fourth Reich!

And world governments have known about it all along, but they're scared to death, says a leading researcher.

Nazi Germany had built a small fleet of UFOs as early as 1940, according to Christof Friedrich, author of UFOs: Nazi Secret Weapon? (Samisdat, Toronto, Canada).

Friedrich claims that German UFO scientists escaped from their war-torn homeland as the Allied armies were closing in.

Atlantic Ocean
ANTARCTICA
Pacific Ocean
New Zealand
Tasmania

ANTARCTICA was the site of secret UFO bases con-

Writes Friedrich: "That some key scientists were obviously missing became clear, and though some plants and their installations were located, the staff with their machinery and prototypes had disappeared. Even the test pilots had vanished."

And Friedrich contends Hitler and his wife, Eva Braun, tricked the world into believing they committed suicide in a Berlin bunker during the last days of World War II.

Among the evidence Friedrich presents that Hitler is alive:

- The bodies of Hitler and Braun were never produced.
- The items introduced as evidence are only circumstantial — two of Hitler's hats, one pair of panties with the initials EB, and a few bones.
- The bloodstains found on the furniture in Hitler's quarters in the bunker were not of his blood type.
- The most important witnesses and the men closest to Hitler have never been found.
- There are too many reports and sightings, eyewitness reports, and even evidence that the suicide attempt was a brilliantly successful, carefully staged scenario.

The researcher says Hitler and Braun were flown

world's first jets. The pair then boarded a submarine and were delivered to a secret base in South America.

Friedrich claims Hitler's U-boat convoy engaged in a fierce battle with the British Navy and the Germans destroyed a British blockade with secret high-tech weaponry.

Wrote Friedrich: "It would seem that the secret weapons, which Goebbels had spoken of in such glowing terms only a few days previous, were now put to use for the first time in an actual battle situation.

"The result was one sole survivor from a British destroyer and it was from this, the captain, that the words were uttered, 'May God help me, may I never again encounter such a force.' The report of the captain was carried in El Mercurio, a Santiago, Chile, newspaper."

HITLER TRICKED the world into believing he committed suicide.

Friedrich contends that Hitler's secret agents used

British pounds to finance the construction of secret military bases in South America and UFO bases in Antarctica.

"Hitler had planned far ahead and at long range," according to Friedrich. "Obviously guided by the possible occupation and subsequent loss of Germany itself, he had cast around for land still available for colonization and found that Antarctica was, at that time, the only continent still unclaimed."

Added Friedrich: "The secret Nazi expeditionary force was headed by Kapitan Ritscher and took place in 1937-38. The force landed in the area of Queen Maud Land and established bases there. Over 11,000 photographs were taken for mapping purposes."

Incredibly, the researcher says the US and Soviet governments have known about the secret Nazi UFO bases for more than 40 years, but have covered up the truth because they do not know how to deal with it.

Friedrich claims Nazi spacecraft could have become sophisticated thanks to extraterrestrials who befriended the Nazis while they were hiding in Antarctica.

Writes the researcher: "Did Hitler's scientists perform their miracle alone, unaided, or did flying saucer people, perhaps visitors from other galaxies give them a helping hand because they had mastered the new technology and consequently spoke the same or at least similar technological language?"

Friedrich believes Hitler's so-called "Last Battalion" will spring into action with a worldwide economic collapse. Then the saucer Nazis will invade strategic military areas and rule the world.

Machine Translated by Google

New Zealand
Tasmania

ANTARCTICA was the site of secret UFO bases constructed by Hitler's agents.

evidence that the suicide attempt was a brilliantly successful, carefully staged scenario.

The researcher says Hitler and Braun were flown to Norway in one of the

HITLER TRICKED the world into believing he committed suicide.

Chile, newspaper."

Friedrich contends that Hitler's secret agents used counterfeit US dollars and

ion" will spring into action with a worldwide economic collapse. Then the saucer Nazis will invade strategic military areas and rule the world.

— GEORGE GLIDDEN

US AMERICAN MILLION SHEET

BREAK THE SILENCE!

Corresponding reproduction:

The UFO mystery is solved!

- The solution to the mystery was found a long time ago: the 'aliens' are real National Socialists who want to found a new, 4th Reich.
- The world's governments are well informed about this, but also completely frightened, says a leader Researcher.
- According to Christoph Friedrich, author of 'UFOs; Nazi Secret Weapons?', Samizdat Publishing House, Toronto, Canada Reich Germany built a small UFO fleet as early as 1940.
- Friedrich further claims that German UFO scientists with their machines, prototypes, etc Test pilots from Germany disappeared as the Allied armies closed in.
- He claims and proves that the 'suicide' of Adolf Hitler and Eva Braun was only made up and intended to deceive opponents. Therefore, bodies could not be found and the Allied 'evidence' was merely circumstantial and of no value.
- Instead, Adolf Hitler fled to Norway in one of the world's first jet planes and from there in a submarine to South America, to a secret base there.
- On the journey there, but still in the North Atlantic, Hitler's submarine fleet (around 120 boats; beginning of May 1945) was tracked down by a British fleet, but the British were completely destroyed with new, secret, high-tech weapons. The only survivor, captain of a British destroyer, declared afterwards: 'God forbid I come into conflict with this power again'.
- It seems that the secret weapons that Goebbels mentioned in his propaganda speeches just a few days earlier were used here for the first time in combat.
- Friedrich claims that Hitler's agents were responsible for the establishment of secret military bases in South America and UFO Bases in Antarctica, used counterfeit US dollars and English pound notes.
- Hitler planned ahead with great foresight and, among other things, took possession of abandoned land in Antarctica. The German expedition took place in 1938/39 under Captain Ritscher. She landed in the area of Queen Maud Land, where she established bases.
- The American and Soviet governments have known about the secret German UFO bases for 40 years, but have concealed the facts.
- Friedrich believes Hitler's so-called 'Last Battalion' will spring into action in the event of a global economic collapse. Then the Nazis' flying saucers will take over strategically important areas and rule the world.

Machine Translated by Google

Exclusive

RAZIL Oct. 6, 1986

ITALY Oct. 19, 1986

CHILE Nov. 5, 1986

NORWAY Nov. 27, 1986

MALI Dec. 19, 1986

U.S.A. Dec. 30, 1986

CANADA Jan. 10, 1987

LAOS Jan. 22, 1987

Exclusive

KENYA Feb. 14, 1987

BULGARIA Feb. 16, 1987

Wave of sightings sparks secret superpower treaty

U.S. and Russia vow to join forces against UFO onslaught

RECENT sighting of a gigantic starship prompted Ronald Reagan to sign an agreement with Kremlin kingpins.

SOVIET leader Mikhail Gorbachev vows to join forces with the U.S.A.

By MICKEY McGUIRE and VLADIMIR CHIENKO

In a superpower pact more secret than the A-bomb or the Normandy invasion, President Reagan and Soviet Premier Gorbachev have agreed to combine their military might — to defend planet Earth if it's attacked by space aliens!

The authenticity of the mutual defense alliance was confirmed in a highly classified Soviet military briefing paper leaked to a Western journalist by a top echelon official in the Kremlin.

The mutual defense agreement calls for both the U.S. and Russia to muster all of their nuclear missiles, supersonic jet aircraft, manned and unmanned spacecraft — including the Shuttle — in an all-out operation to repel alien invaders from our skies.

The astonishing pact was signed, sealed and delivered to Reagan and Gorbachev only three days after Alaskan radar trackers confirmed that an immense UFO was plotted as it hovered near a Japan Air Lines 747 jetliner last November. That UFO — described as "bigger than two aircraft carriers" — was just one of literally hundreds of UFO sightings that have been reported from every country since October 1986.

"We have strong reason to believe that there is a definite routine being carried out by what can only be spaceships from outer space," the briefing paper stated.

"There are also intelligence data from our field agents that indicate some of the alien craft have landed on Soviet territory.

"In light of these confirmed reports, the Soviet Union and the United States of America agreed to take prudent steps to insure a united capability to defend Earth in the event of an invasion by alien forces from other worlds."

The paper outlines the "mobilization" of conventional air, sea and ground forces and the immediate dispersal of Soviet and U.S. nuclear-armed submarines.

Of greater importance, however, will be the activation of strategic satellites already in Earth orbit which will fire their laser rays at attacking alien starships while they are still in deep space.

"Everyone has been terrified that President Reagan's so-called Star Wars Initiative posed a threat of world annihilation. But an invasion of Earth by space aliens would bring a global holocaust no one can even begin to imagine," a Pentagon official said. "I cannot help remembering something President Reagan said in 1980," the official continued. "He told the audience, 'We may be the generation that sees Armageddon.' But this pact with the Soviets could be the salvation of Earth."

47 WEEKLY WORLD NEWS April 14, 1987 USA-Bericht, verklein

Reagan sieht „Jüngstes Gericht"

Washington (ap) – Der amerikanische Präsident Ronald Reagan hält es für durchaus möglich, daß sich die Welt gemäß der Offenbarung Johannis dem Jüngsten Gericht und der Entscheidungsschlacht von Armaggedon zwischen Gut und Böse nähert. Thomas Dine, Geschäftsführer eines für gute Beziehungen zwischen den USA und Israel werbenden Komitees, sagte, Reagan habe ihn am 18. Oktober empfangen und ihm erzählt, daß er am Abend zuvor mit den Eltern eines in Beirut ums Leben gekommenen US-Marineinfanteristen gesprochen hat. Der Präsident habe das Gespräch mit den Worten fortgesetzt: „Wie Sie wissen, gehe ich immer wieder auf Euere alten Propheten im Alten Testament und auf die Anzeichen zurück, die Armaggedon ankündigen. Ich ertappe mich dabei, daß ich mich frage, ob wir die Generation sind, die erlebt, wie das auf uns zukommt. Ich weiß nicht, ob Sie in letzter Zeit eine dieser Prophezeiungen wahrgenommen haben. Aber glauben Sie mir, sie beschreiben ganz gewiß die Zeit, die wir jetzt erleben."

Münchener Merkur, 31.10.1983

Aus aller Welt Nummer 1 Freitag, 2. Januar 1987 **WAZ**

Flugkapitän: UFO verfolgte uns über Alaska

ANCHORAGE (dpa)

Ein riesiges unbekanntes Flugobjekt (UFO), das angeblich eine japanische Frachtmaschine über Alaska verfolgte, gibt zur Zeit in len USA Rätsel auf. Der Zwischenfall ist von der US-Luftfahrtbehörde FAA und der Luftwaffe teilweise bestätigt worden. Das unbe-annte Objekt war auf den Radarschirmen der FAA und der Air Force gesichtet worden.

Der in Anchorage (Alaska) tationierte Flugkapitän Kenju erauchi (47), der seit 29 Jahren ls Pilot tätig ist, schilderte das JFO als riesiges walnußförmi-es Gebilde, das „zweimal grö-

Das beleuchtete fliegende Objekt sei parallel zu dem Jumbo-Jet der Japan Airlines geflogen und habe sich ihm so weit genähert, daß er die FAA über Funk um Erlaubnis gebeten

hin um mehr als tausend Meter verringert und sei Kurven geflogen, berichtete Terauchi, aber „sie folgten uns immer noch". Die Flugkontrolle der FAA berichtete, das auf dem

begleitet und sich dem Jumbo dabei bis auf fünf Meilen genähert.

Auf die Frage, warum das UFO wohl ausgerechnet seine Frachtmaschine verfolgt habe,

Machine Translated by Google

er als ein Flugzeugträger“ gewesen und von zwei kleineren Objekten begleitet worden sei.

Funk um Erlaubnis gebeten haben, ein Ausweichmanöver zu fliegen.

Er habe die Flughöhe darauf-

FAA berichtete, das auf dem Radarschirm beobachtete Objekt habe den JAL-Flug 1628 mindestens 32 Minuten lang

Frachtmaschine verfolgt habe, hatte Terauchi eine einleuchtende Erklärung parat: „Wir hatten Beaujolais an Bord.“

Last attempt by the occupiers?

Has the Allied alliance against Germany, which has existed for decades, now been expanded into an even closer military alliance in a secret pact? Will the USA and the USSR now cooperate closely on land, at sea and in the air against the German flying disc power?

German translation:

The USA and Russia vow to join forces

against UFO attack

The last sighting of a gigantic spaceship caused Ronald Reagan to sign an agreement with the Kremlin rulers.

In a **super-secret pact,** more secret than the A-bomb or the Normandy invasion, President Ronald Reagan and Soviet leader Gorbachev have decided to combine their military forces to defend planet Earth against attack by enemy spaceships .

The credibility of the mutual defense alliance was confirmed by a high-quality short military paper that reached a Western journalist via a leak in the Kremlin.

The mutual defense alliance obliges both the United States and Soviet Russia to unite all of their nuclear missiles, spy planes, manned and unmanned spacecraft - including the shuttle - in a universal operation to repel enemy aggressors from space.

The astonishing pact was signed, sealed and delivered to Reagan and Gorbachev just three days after radar control centers in Alaska confirmed that a monstrous UFO was approaching a Japanese airliner, No. 747, last November. This UFO, larger than two aircraft carriers, was just one of hundreds of UFO sightings reported from that country since October 1986.
We firmly believe that a specific exercise is taking place here that will demonstrate what spaceships are capable of from space, the brief written statement states.
There are also certain reports from our secret agents that some of the enemy spacecraft landed on Soviet territory.

In view of these confirmed reports, the Soviet Union and the United States of America are obliged to take immediate steps to combine their military forces so that they can defend the Earth in the event of an attack by hostile forces from space.

The paper covers the **mobilization of conventional air, sea and land forces** and the immediate **deployment of Russian and American nuclear submarines.**
Of greater importance, however, is the availability of military satellites already in Earth orbit, which can direct their laser beams at attacking space ships while they are still in distant space.

Everyone was alarmed that President Reagan's Star Wars initiative was a threat to world peace.
But an attack on Earth by enemy spacecraft would trigger a global holocaust that no one could imagine, a Pentagon official said.
'I remember President Reagan saying in 1980,' the Pentagon spokesman mentions, 'that we were the generation that would see Armageddon.'
But this pact with the Soviets could mean saving the Earth. (HUGIN's note: A big mistake on the part of these 'gentlemen', because the impending 'end-time judgment' is - to use the words of the Bible - directed against these 'Satan powers' that dominate the world today).

German translation from:
'Weekly World News', USA - April 14, 1987 - Mickey McGuire and Vladimir Chienko.

This 'super secret pact' between the two great powers was preceded by the report in the American press, which we read here again from the Berlin 'taz' from February 17th. To quote 1987: 'At the meeting in Geneva, the President of the United States expressed the idea that if Earth were threatened by an alien invasion, the United States and the Soviet Union would unite to repel that invasion. '(See also the report in the 'New York Post', dated December 4th, 1985, reproduced in the HUGIN publication: 'Germany; Occupied why; Liberated whereby', p.70)

According to the 'Weekly World News', this secret pact was made shortly after the 'UFO' event over Alaska on November 17, 1986. The local press covered this remarkable event - a flying object twice as large as an aircraft carrier - only very miserably (see report in the 'Westdeutsche Allgemeine Ztg.', Essen, from January 2, 1987 on page 92). With the note 'Beaujolais on board', the previously described event becomes immediate ridiculed again! We now have 76 pages of photocopied material about this Alaska event from the American Federal Aviation Department (FAA), which is circulating in the USA on a gray market relating to this, and which was kindly sent to us by one of our readers - a German living in the USA was sent. While the FAA officials created pages of interrogation protocols about this one incident on November 17, 1986, the world public is still left in the dark about these sensational giant spaceships.

On January 2, 1987, in the presence of two other officials and a Japanese interpreter, FAA inspector Richard O. Gordon interrogated Japanese flight captain Kenju Terauchi of the 'Japan Air Line' (JAL). The interrogation protocol consists of 19 pages. Flight Officer Takanori Tamefuji was interrogated by FAA Inspector Peter E. Beckner on January 5, 1987; Protocol: 23 pages. On January 15, 1987, Beckner also interrogated the flight engineer Yoshio Tsukuba about the event, which was also reported by the Americans. Radar stations in Alaska were observed. The protocol consists of 5 pages. The protocols prepared each have the corresponding signatures such as 'Gordon', 'Beckner', even the interpreter Sayoko Mimoto signed.

The following would be of some interest: During the thirty-two minutes of accompaniment by the huge flying object, the Japanese heard some radio interference and some strange noises over the radio. FAA Inspector Gordon now asks Terauchi: 'Did you say these were similar to the German language?' What a question, considering that the 'UFOs', if anything, only have to come from space and should be manned by 'aliens'. Here Gordon asks about German-sounding noises; well?!

Let's go back to the **super secret pact above.** If this was concluded shortly after the Alaska incident, i.e. in November 1986, then with his statement at the beginning of December 1985, Reagan knew exactly what he was talking about, namely this pact that was certainly already in preparation.

So we see that the one and the other reports complement each other excellently. If we also take into account the most recent meeting between Reagan and Gorbachev in the White House in Washington at the beginning of December 1987, when the former offered the latter a first-name friendship with the words "Say Ron to me," then there can hardly be any doubt about the super secret pact that actually came about remain. It should now be clear to any attentive political observer that this meeting was not about medium-range missiles, as was officially announced, because they are not functional anyway. Rather, this first-name gesture could symbolize a secret but clear signal for this even closer collaboration.

In any case, Reagan's statement about joint action against the 'enemies from space', the 'super secret pact' and the close friendship in the White House show that the East-West antagonism that has been hyped up in propaganda for decades was a huge hoax that had been carried out for decades The armament of the East and the West can somehow be plausibly justified: the West out of fear of the Bolshevik East and the latter out of fear of the capitalist West. In truth, the two Siamese twins have armed themselves and equipped themselves so that they can be prepared against the German flying disc force in an emergency!!!

While in the 1970s and early 1980s the impending danger of a nuclear war, a total war of annihilation that was to be waged in Europe, if possible limited to Germany, was dramatically exaggerated, a new and changed situation has arisen in the last two years .

The cross-powers are increasingly talking about withdrawing their troops from Europe and Germany - and are already partly implementing this - as well as about nuclear and conventional disarmament.

One speaks of zero, zero/zero (i.e. latrine solution) and triple zero solution. Barracks are being evacuated in all occupied parts of Germany; the American headquarters was moved out of Germany to England years ago. The Soviets want to clear the Mediterranean with their warships and withdraw from Afghanistan. The Americans have to vacate Spain and thus give up their longest runway in Europe, in Torreon.

If it's not all a big bluff in order to strike at the last moment, then the previously unknown 'peaceful behavior' of the great powers is of a forced nature. The big brothers, who were once obsessed with the madness of nuclear mass destruction, have not invested billions in armaments in order to disarm nothing or nothing. They will be under pressure from ABOVE!

Could their new strategy look something like this: release Europe, withdraw to their own territories and from there joint defense with air, sea and land forces?

Let's continue to monitor developments.

As early as the 1960s, political experts had already come to the realization that **UFOs are the revolution with the longest staying power!**

Whatever detours or moves our occupiers try, there can be no doubt about one fact:

IN THE END THE REICH GERMAN FLYING DISC POWER WILL WIN!

Machine Translated by Google

Auszüge aus den Verhörprotokollen des Bundesluftfahrtministeriums der USA, bezüglich der 'UFO'-Beobachtung über Alaska durch die japanische Frachtmaschine:

RECORD OF INTERVIEW WITH JAL CAPTAIN

Richard Gordon, Manager, FSDO-63
Kenju Terauchi, Captain, JAL
Frank Fujii, Interpretor, JAL
Sayoko Mimoto, FAA Airways Facilities
Mr. Shinbashi, Station Manager

Seite 1

On January 2, 1987, Inspector Richard O. Gordon, FSDO-63, and Japanese Interpertor Sayoko Mimoto, FAA Airways Facilities, interviewed JAL Captain Kenju Terauchi at JAL Operations, Anchorage, Alaska. The interview was conducted for the purpose of gathering first-hand witness testimony with regard to a sighting on November 17, 1986, by Captain Terauchi and his crew of an unidentified flying object. The following text is a record of the interview:

R. Gordon — Think what I'm going to . . .

— — — — — — — — — — — — — —

F. Fujii — Now how about communications, naviagion, or interferring of any sort . . .?

K. Terauchi — This ah small aircraft near the here, so ah all the way VHF transmit on (unintelligible) with ah some we got a like some kind of . . . like ah, jamming.

Kapitän Kenji Terauchi bezeugt vor seinem Flugzeug durch diese Zeichnung sein gigantisches UFO-Erlebnis

R. Gordon — Some kind of interference?

K. Terauchi — Interference.

Seite 8, unten

R. Gordon — On the VHF?

K. Terauchi — Yes then this one leave for mothership . . .

R. Gordon — Ah ha

K. Terauchi — Back to normal(?)

R. Gordon — Okay, did you say it's like German talking uh?

— — — — — — — — — — —

K. Terauchi — Yeah, yeah, yeah.

Seite 9, oben

R. Gordon — Okay

S. Mimoto — Was it's sound like speaking in German, or just jamming noise?

K. Terauchi — It was just noise, sounded zaa, zaa

R. Gordon — Oh just noise . . . Okay, okay I misunderstood you, I'm glad you brought that out.

— — — — — — — — — — — — — —

S. Mimoto — (unintelligible)

R. Gordon — Okay, fine just so we know if someone asks us that question we can answer. Very good. Well I have a lot better understanding of what transpired then what we got out of a bunch of people when we talked, and I want to thank you folks for your time. I really appreciate it.

Seite 19

Richard O. Gordon
MGR AL-FSDO-63

Sayoko Mimoto

Machine Translated by Google

MER AL-FSDO-63

INSPECTION AND SURVEILLANCE RECORD

1. WORK ACTIVITY INCIDENT	2. UNITS	3. HOURS

4. NAME AND ADDRESS OF CARRIER, OPERATOR, AIRPORT, AGENCY, OR AIRMAN	5. CERTIFICATE NO. OR AIRCRAFT REGISTRATION MARK (No.)	6. RESULTS	7. FURTHER ACTION REQ.
		☐ SATISFACTORY	☐ NO
		☐ UNSATISFACTORY (Explain in item 8)	☐ YES (Explain action in item 8)

8. FINDINGS/RECOMMENDATIONS

J.A.L. B-747 CARGO FLT 1628 FROM ICELAND TO ANCHORAGE. CAPT. KENJU TERAUCHI. SPEED .84 MACH.

I RECEIVED A CALL FROM DICK POWERS CONCERNING A JAL FLT which the CAPT. HAD STATED HE WAS being followed or shadowed.

I observed The A/C LAND ON R/W 6R AT 1820 HOURS NO OTHER A/C WAS NOTED. THE B-747 TAXIED TO INTL RAMP Area. I INTERVIEWED CAPT. TERAUCHI & Crew of TWO (F/O & F/E) The CAPT. STATED THAT THIS WAS The 1ST TIME Anything like this had happened to him. he STATED that approx. 5NM After PASSING the Canadian/Alaskan Border at 35,000' Something Appeared 5 to 7 NM in front of the A/C it had lights 4or5 in a line (see drawings) and he said it was bigger than they were (B-747). AT TIMES this object WOULD To the CAPT SIDE of the A/C (LEFT) Never the other side (Right). He referred to the dark side. – After PASSING the FAI Area he requested to fly parallel to COURSE and this was granted. ~~[illegible]~~ page 2 →

(If more space is required, use reverse side)

☐ OPERATIONS ☐ MAINTENANCE ☒ AVIONICS	DATE 11/17/86	REGION AND DISTRICT OFFICE AAL-FSDO-63	INSPECTOR'S SIGNATURE

FAA Form 3112 (8-70) 17. Nov. 1986

★ U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE: 1982—571-368/313

A JAL flight engineer, Yoshio Tsukuba, was interviewed by Peter Beckner of FAA on January 15, 1987, through an interpreter, Sayoko Mimoto, regarding to the UFO which had been sighted on the 17th of November, 1986, by Captain Terauchi.

Beckner: Describe what you saw.

Tsukuba: May I speak in Japanese?

Beckner: Oh! Yes, please.
Mimoto: Oh! yes, please.

Tsukuba: The first time I saw it was through the L1 window, at the 11 o'clock position. It looked larger than navigation lights. I do not remember exactly how many

Machine Translated by Google

Peter E. Beckner
A.S.I.

Sayoko D. Mimoto
Interpreter

SECRET WONDER WEAPONS

Flying saucers, UFOs, aliens, green men are neologisms and deliberate diversionary hoaxes by the Allied Powers and their media in East and West.

The fact is: flying discs, flying tops and fireballs were developed and built in super-secret German workshops before 1945. Proven by BRD press reports from 1950-1957 and Bundeswehr reference works and other sources.

These so-called miracle weapons did **not** fall into enemy hands, as was misleadingly claimed or assumed at the time.
During the last two years of the war, and partly earlier, people and material were transported, partly by the 'secret squadron KG 200', partly with giant cargo submarines and flying discs, to remote German restricted areas overseas that were no longer attackable thanks to super technology. promoted. Restricted areas of up to 26,000 square kilometers in size have become known. Germans of both sexes were brought along on organized escape, or rather deportation, routes well into the 1950s. The 'UFOs' that have been sighted again and again around the world are clearly and almost completely detectable, the result of these connections!
At a higher physical level, revolutionary propulsion and weapon technologies were developed.

These seemingly fantastic facts can be revealed today, even if the media - at least in the overall context - is still keeping it quiet!

'SECRET WONDER WEAPONS', Volume I , II , III , DIN A5, 102, 106 and 138 pages; together: 28 DM
Volume IV in preparation for around 1989.

'UFO DOCUMENT COLLECTION' , 175 press reports about sightings around the world; A4; 80 pages

SPECIAL STUDY 'WORLD BOLCHEVISM'; Flying disks used against Soviet military targets; A4; 35
Pages together: 10.50 DM

'GERMANY; BUSY: WHY?; FREED: BY WHAT?'; The legal situation, then and now. What will the future be like? DIN A5 ; 70 pages 5 , -- DM

'GERMAN PLANES AND SUBSCRIBERS MONITOR THE OCEAN'; Volume I; A4; 100 pages Volume II in preparation for summer 1988. 15 , -- DM

Plus shipping costs

HUGIN GESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITISCH-PHILOSOPHISCHE STUDIEN E. V.

D-5802 WEATHER / Ruhr 4; PO Box 13

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN

Greg Hallett lived in Eastern Europe during the final years of the Cold War and spent his time hitchhiking on planes between cities. “We either lay on the mail bags, except those marked FRAGILE, or sat in the glass nose of the Tupolev 134.” He is widely interviewed overseas and is best known for his critique of American law and the double agent training of political figures. His once radical views are now being treated as status quo.

“We have never lived in history. We have only ever lived in the con.
History is run on sex and shame, and when history is written,
these two vital elements are removed . . . but not in my books.”

Books by Greg Hallett

ARE YOU MY FATHER?
The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD
A Right Royal Con 2007, 2008, 2009

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING
Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007, 2008, 2010

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007, 2008, 2009

NEW ZEALAND
A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

The Sex Collectors – How the World is Run on Shame – series

THE SEX COLLECTORS– STITCH-UPS 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – MURDERS 2010

THE SEX COLLECTORS – HEROIN TICKET 2010

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Further details

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Contact the author
greg@greghallett.com

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN

GREG HALLETT
&
SPYMASTER

FNZ Inc.
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

DEDICATION

To those who have suffered the wars
of the International Bankers.

To all the victims of the Rothschilds . . .
which is all of you.

Published by **FNZ Inc.**
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand
First Edition May 2007
Second Edition October 2007
Third Edition July 2009
www.greghallett.com
ISBN 978-0-473-12247-8
© Greg Hallett 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

PREFACE

Why would you even bother? History has no preface. It is just one lie built upon another, and one con built on another until no commoner can understand what is going on because no commoner really knows what happened before.

To understand history you have to understand corruption. Government corruption rules our lives and its history is one con built upon the next until it reaches the pinnacle of war – Government's ultimate con. Each time we are conned there is less and less for the common man.

In order to understand history, you have to understand the modus operandi of the con. Once you understand the con, you can remove its influence. This should be the duty of every citizen.

The first arm of war is the media. Without its lies, war could not be sold to us. Politicians lie. That's what they do. It's pretty much all they do. Rarely does a politician wreak any benefit for their country. Rather they do their utmost to serve anyone and anything except their country.

Most political figures are elevated because of some great shame and this is used to control them. The world is run on shame. When you break the code of shame in politics, you are more educated than the best academic and have more freedom than the worst hippy.

Royalty are controlled through shame, especially their illegitimacy. Royals can call armies into war. When you know which royals are illegitimate and who fathered them, you can counter their actions.

The choice is yours, but being a century or so late on the publishing, most of the major players are now dead.

How the French say, "such is life", and such is the power of shame. C'est la vie and speak up loudly, because no one in the NEW WORLD ORDER media wants to hear you.

Greg Hallett
1 October 2007

History – whatever commoners believe.

History – whatever commoners are not allowed to know.

Whoever gains from history,
played a part in that history.

Those who profited the most from history
organised the event.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

CONTENTS

1. **The British Police** **1**
Crime Creation and Paedophile Movement (1723–2007)

2. **Pearl Harbor** **55**
Gifting America to Churchill for WWII (1921–1941)

3. **Gifting the United Nations to Stalin** **127**
The Russian–Japanese Pearl Harbor (9–15 August 1945)

4. **The Freemasons' Winston Churchill** **149**
Tavistock's Bulldog

5. **San Francisco's Nuclear Explosion** **209**

6. **Stalin-Dzhugashvili-Rothschild** **231**

7. **The Illegitimate Rothschild Family Tree** **247**

Bibliography **253**

Index **259**

2 May 2007, the 62ND anniversary of Adolf Hitler's escape out of Berlin.

Her Majesty
Queen Elizabeth II
Buckingham Palace
London SW1A 1AA
England

Dear Your Majesty The Queen,

Not only are you related to Churchill, but you are also related to Hitler, Stalin and the Rothschilds.

Your grandfather's brother was Winston Churchill, making Churchill your great-uncle.

Churchill was first cousin with Adolf Hitler's father.

Stalin was second cousin with Adolf Hitler's father.

Churchill and Stalin were second cousins.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler's great-grandfather was your great-great-grandfather.

Stalin's great-grandfather was your g-g-great-grandfather.

Churchill, Stalin, Hitler and yourself are all descended from Rothschilds, and all of you are illegitimate stock.

With these connections, your great-uncle Winston Churchill was a major instigator in police corruption, the attack on Pearl Harbor and gifting the United Nations to his second cousin Stalin.

Stalin was also second cousin with your grandfather King George V .

Within these pages lies the fourth volume of your family history.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett

The British Police

Crime Creation and Paedophile Movement

1723–2007

Something must be said of Britain's police force. They started up in Saxon times and have a history of trial and error that supported crime for anyone who new how they operated. In this way, the police became an internal army for any corrupt elite – a gang of plodders. Occasionally they had sincere intentions, but these were dominated by failed results for the benefit of those who owned them.

The police can be analysed like any company that wants to grow, become a multinational and increase their market share. They took over crime in their immediate neighbourhood, but also did this on a larger scale. As a result, England's history is littered with 'convicted innocents' and 'free guilt'.

In broader social terms this is called 'black magic'. In real terms it is 'blue magic'. With the introduction of a corrupt police force, life became complicated in England and could only be understood when viewed through a silly mirror.

In the old Tudor system, prior to the introduction of London's Metropolitan Police in 1829, authorities had few resources to cope with crime, disorder or riot. Troops were used to keep order. Local militias were used for local problems and spies were used to track down those who were suspected of crime, which was then called 'disaffection', with the criminals called 'rascals'. Small market towns and country parishes had constables, the local watch and ward, the Night Watch, and the Peace Guild.[1]

From Saxon times, policing used 'Tithings'. These were a group of ten males over the age of 12 who would report on each other's crimes. This created gangs of ten covering for each other's crimes and is still the model for gangs at every level today.

Every inhabitant in the City of London was liable for a turn on the watch. Members on the 'Night Watch' were called the 'Peace Guild' and later the 'Frankpledge' because they were responsible for the damages to property on their watch for which no arrests were made. This led to a pattern of false arrests and 'verballing' – lying by the police. This 'proud' police history of fitting up innocents for crimes is still in practice to this day and covers 33–40% of those in prison, many convicted for crimes the police committed. Bad dentalwork has a lot to do with it.

---

[1] Principle sources for this chapter are the web: *City of London Police, 150 years of Service 1839 to 1989*; *Metropolitan Police Service History Timeline*; Marjie Bloy, PhD, *The Metropolitan Police*, The Victorian Web; Martin Short, *A Firm in a Firm: Freemasonry and Police Corruption*.

From Saxon times the rate of false arrest and conviction was much higher, around 90%, with people deported for stealing a loaf of bread or having bad dentalwork and giving lip to the Peace Guild, who would then steal-and-blame on their behalf. In this way the slums became the blaming grounds for others' crimes and a cycle of police mistrust was imbued from a very young age. By the age of 12 every male was in on it.

The Penal Code was so severe that almost two hundred offences were rewarded with the death penalty, while many lesser crimes resulted in deportation and the destruction of families. The cry of the hungry in search of food was, "I might as well be hanged for a sheep as a lamb". This provided an incentive for ruthless crimes and bigger crimes with more organised planning, hence organised crime.

These nightly false arrests led to natural resentment of the police and a refusal to assist them in any way. It served to alienate citizens from the law and to plot against the police. This created a plethora of false leads and evidential sabotage amongst citizens, the police, the elite, and the owners of the police. This meant that correct crime-solving was very limited and the Night Watch were more effectively a spy network for the City Corporation (the Mercers who owned the police), who would use the new information to their advantage the next morning, or soon thereafter.

Those convicted, apart from being hungry, giving lip and having bad dentalwork, tended to be those who didn't have associates who

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

were credible witnesses, tended towards visual madness (tics and stinks), were immigrants living in immigrant slums, had poor English and didn't belong to any protective group or society like the Freemasons who controlled the police, or the Mercers who owned the police. They also didn't belong to any form of local and national government, the aristocracy, the monarchy; the purveyors, creators, participants, or heroes of war; or any of the elements in between.

In this way 'criminals' became a 'predetermined focus group' for those in authority, who farmed them in crime. As a result, the policing 'Night Watch' became bottom feeders with a vengeance. This has carried on through the *proud* tradition of the police who are bottom feeders to this day. As a result, pride-before-fall became the ongoing cycle of police history. The result was strikes and riots, mistrust and misdeeds, crime solved with the guilty elite let off scot-free . . . and innocent bystanders convicted.

The Mercers were fully funding the police prior to 1829 and up to 1919 through their Justices of the Peace (the Peace Guild) and their High Constables. The Justices of the Peace would pay the High Constables to police the streets. They soon got sick of the beat and paid their deputies bribes to do the work for them. These deputies became known as Petty Constables (PC) and 'Guinea-a-Day Men', as this 1861 report shows:

> "'Men, dwarfs in height, and old in years, of diverse bodily deformity, mentally weak, and with little or no character, had no hesitation to apply' to the Commissioner's renewed cry for more recruits in 1861. Applicants had to be under 40 years of age, 5' 7" [1.7 metres] without shoes, able to read and write and keep accounts, and to possess a decent suit of clothes and a hat. Poor wages and conditions meant an average length of service of four years and the continuing need for new recruits.
>
> "Three shillings a day was the wage for a top rate constable [£52 annually] but many existed on far lower sums down to as little as 12s 6d a week [£31 annually] for some probationers [apprentice Petty Constables]. Because of the Commissioner's insistence that policemen had to live in the [square mile of the] City itself this meant that not only was a large part of the wage spent on rent but that frequently the men were competing for and sharing slum accommodation with the very thieves that they were working against."[2]

---

[2] *City of London Police, 150 years of Service 1839 to 1989.*

In 1824 each police officer in the City of London Police (CoLP) had to live in the square mile[3] of the City of London and they had to have their name and title painted on their front door or surround, so that it was visible from the street. This made the distraction of the police as simple as preoccupying them with a chat, alerting them to a crime elsewhere, or inviting them for a 'drink and pudding'.

Constables on the beat were often old, crippled, ignorant, uncouth types, too disfigured to do the job and resorted to bribes and scandals to make ends meet. It was hard to distinguish them from the criminals, apart from the uniform. When these factors were added up the police became a natural focus of crime and resentment. As a result, the police have been repeatedly convicted of fraud, criminal complicity, planting evidence, mental illness, murder, alcoholism, substance abuse (meths), absenteeism, and later, drug dealing. They are yet to be charged for running international car theft rings and trafficking Afghan heroin within their country.

The Commissioner and both Assistant Commissioners were paid enough to keep silent on any measure. In 1857 the Commissioner was paid £1883 and the two Assistant Commissioners £800 each. The Commissioners' wage was 36 times a well-paid constable and 60 times a poorly paid one. The two Assistant Commissioners were paid 15 times a well-paid constable and 26 times a Guinea-a-Day constable.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Apart from paying the High Constables, the Justices of the Peace also subcontracted out the administration of relief to someone who would feed, clothe and house the poor for a weekly rate from the parish. Between 1723 and 1750, 600 parish workhouses were established in England and Wales. This was a work-for-the-dole scheme with accommodation provided. By 1776 there were 2000 workhouses each with 20–50 inmates – 75,000 people who worked to stay alive in euphemistically named Poor Houses under Poor Tax. These were slave camps.

The New Poor Tax provided a place to stay for poor and displaced people at the beginning of the Industrial Revolution. In reality these were workhouses where people were forced to work several hours a day, seven days a week, just for terrible food and shared mass lodgings. This meant that a man with a wife and three children had to work six 12-hour days just to accommodate his family and feed them.

---

[3] "Square mile" refers to the Freemasons' control of the centre of London. It was the area under CoLP, hence? the C17th words 'culpable' and 'culprit' (CoLP-writ).

St Marylebone workhouse in 1886.

From 1782, parishes were allowed to form unions. From this union the parishes jointly built enormous houses for the 'relief of the sick, elderly and infirm' called the 'Big House'. These were the most destitute buildings with the able-bodied paupers not allowed in. When you got sick from work in the Poor House you were transferred to the Big House where you worked until you died. Relatives from the Poor House were not allowed to visit their sick relatives in the Big House.

The 'Overseers of the Poor' profited from this seven-day-a-week slavery and paid a special 'Parish Rate' to the Parishes who had built

D IS JUST
GOD IS GOOD

Workhouse Dining Hall.

Woolwich workhouse in the late 1920s.

these work prisons. Part of the Parish Rate was then used to fund the police, who sent many of the criminals to the Poor Houses, which then increased the Parish Rate and the money the police got.

This 'slavery of the poor' was the initial method of crime control used by the police and it started to make deportation look handsome. Criminals started to target their crimes to the punishment they would get, giving further weight to the saying, "I might as well be hanged for a sheep as a lamb".

> The Poor House and the Big House made the police crime statistics look magnificent and took the weight off the Justice of the Peace and the Chief Constables who took their money and paid out fewer bribes to lazier and lazier Petty Constables, many of whom did not exist, but were merely names on paper whose wages were paid back to JPs and Chief Constables who then encouraged fewer and fewer police to be more and more demonstrable (violent and corrupt).
>
> The courts became a liar's court with a vengeance. Crime-solving has always had a rort aspect to it and this makes criminals of us all.

The Poor Tax was high-decibel social engineering across several fronts. At the beginning of the Industrial Revolution it made slaves of families, who correctly called these 'Prisons of the Poor'. Eventually they rioted, which resulted in more police controls. This has been a pattern of the police ever since. The police enforce conditions so bad, riots occur.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Leeds Poor House.

Above: Able-bodied female inmates in the blue-and-white-striped uniform at Leeds Poor House set amongst the St Marylebone Dining Hall circa 1900. Below: The St Marylebone work house casual ward with the rafters inscripted "GOD IS TRUTH, GOD IS GOOD, GOD IS HOLY". Note the coffin-like wooden beds. Mattresses were rare.

GOD IS TRUTH
GOD IS GOOD
GOD IS HOLY

St Marylebone workhouse casual ward in 1867.

The police periodically fail at riot control and then demand more protective and lethal equipment. The socio-economic system that created the unrest is then changed while the police remain armed at the higher level. In this way, the police become heavily armed over an ever more peaceful society until the cycle is repeated again . . . hence London's history of rioting.

After the riots against the Poor House and the Big House the formula for *1984* was gradually developed. High society think tanks gave much weight to what to do with the leftover human population. War was a good way of killing them and when a war ran out of steam another was created elsewhere, or war-in-peacetime was practised at home.

The Wilkes riots of 1768 was an attempt by the police at anti-democracy. They tried to prevent common voters from electing their own MP. Nothing much changed and by 1818 a man was still given a vote for every £50 of land he owned, and another vote for every £25, to a maximum of six votes for land worth £175 or more. Unlanded gentry and women had no vote. The Poor Tax was introduced in 1834. This continued the 'No Poor Vote', placing the poor in prisons to work for food and lodging, for which the landed gentry voted.

The Poor Relief Act, introduced in 1598, was left in the hands of individual parishes who handled it very badly and people marked as poor were taken from their homes and placed in Poor Houses where they were worked as white slaves. In 1834 the Met Police began to very slowly spread through the boroughs of London. The Poor Law Amendment Act (1834) was introduced and populations were exaggerated and conditions deliberately made to look poor in order to become a recipient of Poor Tax, rather than a donor to it. This meant that as soon as the police came into the area and did an audit, they had already achieved miraculous results, with less population and improved conditions, thus proving their worth.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The Act also allowed for Justices of the Peace (overseers of the Peace Guild) to appoint Chief Constables who would then pay smaller bribes to Petty Constables to carry out their work, ensuring that there was one police officer per 1000 people. This was hardy policing and more a mark of conformity to the expansionist goals of the Guild/Mercers/Livery Company/City Corporation and Freemasons.

The patrolling watchmen had to follow rules set up in *The Complete Parish Officer* (1729), with steps to improve these resulting in the Bow Street Runners (1742), who lit the lamps, called out the time, watched for fires, were bailiffs, traffic cops and patrolled the highways on horseback.

The Bow Street Police Station and Court with the prison van 'Black Maria' in the foreground. Below: Police Commissioner Colonel Young plodded in the middle of 1960s police dressed as the Bow Street Runners. Looks like Monty Python got it right.

Bow Street Runners.

From 1754 this was expanded by John Fielding into the earliest form of detective work. In 1763 the blind John Fielding introduced the Bow Street Horse Patrol to light the street lamps as a method of crime prevention and to maintain law and order on the highways. But funding only lasted 18 months.

The Horse Patrol was in the powerful position of despatching orders. In 1840 they came under criticism for their lack of circulation of the details of the wanted murderer Daniel Good. In 1910 the telegraph (Radio Telegraphy/ Marconi telegraph)was used for the first time to solve a crime. This resulted in the capture of Doctor Crippen for the murder of his wife. It wasn't until 1920 when the police started to experiment with radio communications that there was a lull in the selective sabotage of despatch orders. This has now been corrected and the sabotage of despatch orders is rife once again.

Doctor Crippen.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2015

In 1796 the Marine Police started at Wapping and crime fell rapidly in that area, but moved to other areas, took on other forms and grew so rapidly that the names of towns changed (Wandsworth to Black Wandsworth). These areas weren't policed until their Guild membership came up to scratch and they'd paid their controversial Poor Tax.

The Police Marine Support Unit patrolled the Thames by rowing from 1796 to 1905.
Top: Dr Crippen murdered his wife then took his mistress on a cruise ship holiday.

Essentially Guilds are philanthropic Companies that began in medieval times as Guild fraternities to protect the interests and practitioners of particular trades. In 1878 a group of 16 Companies, together with the Corporation of the City of London, founded the City and Guilds of London Institute to promote and foster the teaching of technical trades.

Boy Scouts' Baden-Powell (22) was elected a member the following year in 1879 and was placed in the powerful position of Master of the Mercers' Company from 1913. Up to 1919 the Mercer's City Corporation funded the entire Police Force after which the government took over a third of the expenditure. This left the Mercers with two-thirds majority financial control over the London and Metropolitan Police Forces – hence no sodomy or murder charges against Baden-Powell.

Robert Peel became Home Secretary from 1822. On the back of the Poor House and the Big House he eventually managed to persuade the House of Commons to pass the Metropolitan Police Act (June 1829). The Met started three months later on 29 September 1829 and was based in Scotland Yard, a Freemasons' stronghold. Both the CoLP and the Met were controlled by the Home Secretary whose offices were also in Scotland Yard.

Robert Peel.

Home Secretary Robert Peel sought to combine the two forces but the City Corporation (the Mercers) strenuously resisted. The Chief Office of the Police was in Guildhall. The Mercers owned Guildhall, the Guilds, and financed two-thirds of the police. This was majority control and prevented any Guild hierachy from ever being charged and allowed them to commit crimes with impunity.

The Met had jurisdiction in the Metropolitan London area. This excluded the City of London and the provinces around London. The Met's jurisdiction was limited to the areas the Mercers' Guilds had socio-economic control over. The Met then followed the Mercers' Guilds into the provinces who set up Guild influence beforehand, thus ensuring the Guilded elite were never charged with crime.

Those who belonged to the Mercers' Guilds were promoted and those who did not were robbed, beaten and downgraded. In this way the Guilds financed the police and all those who came into power. This provided inroads to all local body politics and was the basis for judicial, police, economic, social and class control.

Sir Charles Rowan.

Richard Mayne.

Sir Charles Rowan and Richard Mayne were appointed the first Justices of the Peace in charge of the Metropolitan Police Force on 29 September 1829. Soon after, Sir Richard Mayne wrote: "The primary object of an efficient police is the prevention of crime . . . detection and punishment of offenders . . . The protection of life and property, the preservation of public tranquillity, and the absence of crime, will alone prove whether those efforts have been successful and whether the objects for which the police were appointed have been attained.

"In attaining these objects, much depends on the approval and co-operation of the public, and these have always been determined by the degree of esteem and respect in which the police are held. One of the key principles of modern policing in Britain is that the police seek to work with the community and as part of the community."[4]

> From 1829 the definition of 'Police' has been "the arrangements made in all civilised countries to ensure that the inhabitants keep the peace and obey the law. The word also denotes the force of peace officers employed for this purpose."[5]

The Metropolitan Police were licensed to control taxi cab drivers, messengers, shoe shiners, all pedlars and the supervision of common lodging houses. Virtually every working-class person had to prove to the police, and hence the Mercers, that they were of good character.

---

[4] *Metropolitan Police Service History Timeline* Website.

[5] *Ibid*.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The easiest way to do this was to join the Mercers' Guild that controlled their profession. In this way virtually every working Londoner paid a bribe to the Guilds, who then used this to fund the Justices of the Peace (JPs), who patronised the Chief Constables, who bribed the Petty Constables, who harassed those who hadn't paid the bribe.

Policeman beaten by the public. Such PR increased police rights.

The background of police violence and cover-ups from day one led to further mistrust by the public who thought that their social rights had been infringed. "'Bobbies' or 'Peelers' were not immediately popular. Most citizens viewed constables as an infringement on English social and political life, and people often jeered the police."[6]

The police have a funny way of dealing with PR and this has been embedded since their inception in 1829. "The Metropolitan Police were involved in crowd control from their earliest days. After an experiment with passive control, baton charges were used in 1830." Passive police control was given up within the first twelve months and levels of police violence have been continually tested ever since.

Cold Bath.

How much would the public allow before they rebelled? At what level of violence would the police distance themselves from their co-workers? It seemed that the public would tolerate a lot of violence before they rebelled, but there were no limits to police violence. Support of one's own was always acknowledged even if the police were killed using excessive violence.

In 1833 the Cold Bath Fields Riot went down at Grays Inn Road. The Metropolitan Police used excessive violence to disperse the crowd and in the process PC Robert Culley was killed. An inquest was held and in 1834 the jury returned a verdict of 'Justifiable Homicide'.

---

[6] Marjie Bloy, PhD, *The Metropolitan Police*, The Victorian Web.

PC Culley was found posthumously guilty of using excessive force. This indicates the level of violence the Met were using after just five years of street control. Regardless of the excessive police violence, the police were treated as heroes and PC Culley was acknowledged posthumously as a hero.

In order to quell public opinion on this, to cover up the police celebrating their right to be excessively violent, the police created the 'The Culley Cup'. This has been presented ever since 1834, although with great reservation, 'to those who justifiably return the verdict of guilty against police officers who use unnecessary force'.[7]

The police give out multiplicitous messages and each message is different. The dominant message they try to maintain is that the police are 'God's gift to the public and peace', that they never provoke violence, and will only use violence to maintain 'peace and order'.

However, the victims of police violence experience two very different messages, prior to police violence (active aggressive) and after police violence (passive apology). The police also send different messages to the police prior to a demonstration and after any riot control. The first is 'active aggressive' and the second is 'dismissive passive' or 'denial in practice'.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The interesting spectacle of class-dominated London is that it has a history of rioting and this rioting has become more frequent the more the police are present. As a result, the police have became one of the major groups to riot against. They are viewed by the public, and not incorrectly, as covering for crime rather than solving it. As a result, the Police are considered the force behind all social engineering and a happier society would exist without them.

A year after The Culley Cup was created, The Municipal Corporations Act (the Mercers' City Corporation) of 1835 ordered all incorporated boroughs to set up police forces under the control of a watch committee.

This structure is basically carried on to this day. JPs still hold sway over constables and are the paedophile minders of their areas, reporting to the Governor-General in colonial countries who are still in charge of suppressing all information about paedophiles, paedophile enablers, paedophile minders, computer paedophiles, paedophile locations, the murders of paedophile victims and the crimes committed by the victims of paedophilia. The Governor-General is also *always* the head Boy Scout of their country, of which Baden-Powell was the world Chief Scout.

> Boy Scouts' creator Baron Lord Baden-Powell put this paedophile crime cover system in place and this is commonly referred to today as "**The Police**".
>
> The victims of paedophilia fill up the jails (and gangs) and make for over half of all inmates, thus employing the police.
>
> From Governor-General, to Justice of the Peace, to Chief Constable, to paedophiles, to paedophile victims, to jail – the **ORDER OUT OF CHAOS** scenario reigns supreme.

With a thousand new police (1829) on a weekly wage of 16 shillings costing £40,000 annually, the new recruits were carefully selected and trained from the sons of Freemasons and Mercers. The other recruits were substantially made up of alcoholics, no-shows, schizophrenics, planters of evidence, fraudsters, criminals, gang members, Russian Jews with anarchist connections, foreigners with revolutionary connections abroad, and pseudonyms for police constables who did not exist, but claimed a wage.

> On top of this, no bonus for solving a crime meant no incentive for solving crime. Since the Mercers and Freemasons were the only ones ever promoted within the police force (98% true until 1980, 95% true until 1995 and 90% true thereafter) there was little point in solving crimes, other than to save face when one fell in one's lap and couldn't be removed quick enough.
>
> The Freemasons and Mercers advanced within the police force against no competition, while providing plenty of fuel for the ORDER OUT OF CHAOS fire.

The Freemasons and Mercers appeared to be the good cops, and the criminals within the police force appeared to be the bad cops. This led to a plethora of high and low crimes within the police force, in the community, and abroad. It also led to misleads within the force, especially at the rank of Detective, Inspectors and Detective Inspectors, who proffered warnings to criminals as to when to do a job, when to leave and which officers were on their payroll, who would roll over and who could be shot.

---

[7] Perhaps I deserve The Culley Cup, or more aptly The Gulley Cup for being gullible enough to criticise 'the police actions, inactions, violence and sabotage for the purposes of creating war and war-in-peacetime' – from their own records no less.

In this way foreign anarchy was practised in London, especially the East End. Revolutions then happened abroad, with British street training, and no surprise, carried out British policy and British social experiments once they had succeeded.

> The British social experiment is most commonly known as Communism. Such was the case with Stalin in the Houndsditch robbery/murders and in the Sidney Street Siege.

The response to having police around was so poor in England that the Rural Constabulary Act had to be passed in 1839. This meant that every London borough had to reorganise their own police along the Mercers' Guild lines or pay the higher expense of being involved in the county forces. The county forces were ordered to be uncooperative so the borough forces could move in. This still took decades as many saw the police as a challenge to the liberties of England, and correctly so . . . ditto the world over to this day.

By 1841, 35% of the boroughs had no police force and those that were policed had a ratio of 1 police officer per 900 people – half the desired rate. The police were running at a profit.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Crime was not the issue – chaos was.

Due to the expense and unpopularity of the police, by 1848, 22 of the 171 boroughs still had no police force. This was significant for foreigners committing crimes and training for revolutions in England. By 1853, only 22 of the 52 counties had police forces, with Yorkshire being the poorest served. It was not until 1856 that Parliament mandated that provinces establish police forces. Policing remained grossly inadequate until after 1856, by which time the police had been failing to solve crime and keep law and order for some three decades.

The early officers (1829) spent their time strolling in the best areas and avoiding locations where crime was most likely, even though they carried cutlasses (swords). For this they were paid 16 shillings a week or £40 annually.

> Britain has a history of strikes and riots against the police, strikes within the ranks, pronounced mental illness, drunkenness on duty, and absenteeism; and every two decades there was a clearing of corrupt cops, with larger clearings occurring every 100 years.

Throughout the history of the police, officers have been arriving to work in order to drink or sober up. In 1847, 238 police officers were dismissed, many were not turning up to duty and others were arriving drunk. The same year the police officer allocated Warrant No. 1 was dismissed for drunkenness after only four hours' duty. In 1863, 215 officers were dismissed for drunkenness, and in 1922, 80 police officers were convicted and dismissed for being drunk on methylated spirits no less. Discipline was a real problem in the Met Police Force and the problem has persisted.

Two years after the formation of the Met Police there were riots at the home of the Duke of Wellington (1831) and all of his windows were smashed. There were the Cold Bath Fields riots in 1833. In 1848 during the Chartists' Riots over 22,000 untrained and undisciplined people were sworn in under the 1831 Special Constables Act. They lacked training and leadership, and were prone to create and provoke the riots themselves. There was a riot in Hyde Park in 1866 and another in Trafalgar Square the same year.

Chartists' Riots in 1848.

On 13 November 1887 the second Trafalgar Square riot resulted in extraordinary violence against the police. The troops had to be called in, resulting in the first 'Bloody Sunday'. The Riot Act of 1715 was read – this draconian Act meant the death penalty for any rioter who did not disperse within the hour. As a result, one man died and 300 were injured.

In 1837 a Select Committee was appointed to look into the affairs of the police and they also proposed that CoLP and the Met be combined. Again, this did not happen.

Instead, the Bow Street Runners (est. 1742) and the Marine Police (est. 1796) were incorporated into the Met in 1838. The Bow Street Runners had carried pistols and these were removed when they joined the Met. The Marine Police continued to patrol the Thames in 14-foot rowboats that required two men to row and one to steer.

In 1840, in the Gould interrogation case, Police Sergeant Otway attempted to induce incrimination in the accused. This was "immediately discountenanced by the Courts" but became standard practice for the police ever since: "I put it to you that you are guilty of . . ."

By 1843 the Met began patrolling army arsenals (Woolwich), which made them incredibly easy to rob for any foreign terrorist capable of creating a distraction: "There is a damsel in distress over there. Could be your type."

By 1844 the police had rewards for stolen dogs; 540 dogs were stolen for reward each year and another 60 were used for dogfights and as food.

Scotland Yard's first 'Detective Force' was set up in 1842. It consisted of only two inspectors and six sergeants. By 1846 there were only two plain-clothed detectives per division in charge of crime-solving. In 1847, 50% of the people charged were dismissed by the courts and by 1856 there were only ten detectives in the whole Metropolitan Police.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Ten police were solving crimes while the rest were on the beat being seen to be solving crime. Even then, they weren't seen in some areas. The Met didn't start patrolling northeast London until 1865. The police tax, under the guise of the Guild levy, still hadn't come up to scratch in that area.

By 1869, 180 detectives were dealing with minor crime in outlying divisions, but serious investigations in London were left to only 27 officers out of 9000. By 1884 there was a new structure of 24 detectives at Scotland Yard and 254 in the divisions, all under the central command of a new Assistant Commissioner, who was always a Freemason. This was ORDER OUT OF CHAOS from the top and ensured that **crimes were always solved selectively**.

According to the 'Metropolitan Police Service History Timeline', in 1848, 150,000 police were sworn in on the day to control the Chartists' Demonstrations. More reliable historians like Marjie Bloy (PhD) cite in *The Metropolitan Police*, "over 22,000". This allows for misappropriated funds for the wages of 128,000 newly sworn police officers and amounts to a swindle of £100,000 per week. Such occurrences were regularly utilised by the top brass. As a result, rioting could turn a profit and was not beyond being encouraged. Most of the riots in the 1700s and 1800s were exacerbated by the police. The police, or those who controlled them, were using riots to turn a profit, and for leverage to purchase props like guns, and later helicopters.

The Chartists were in favour of universal suffrage for democracy still not available under monarchist/class-controlled England. They were described as "a knife and fork, a bread and cheese question".[8] Chartism was born of hunger, despair and desperation and their plight brought to light the class system in Great Britain. Workingmen saw it as a hope for prosperity, political rights and libertarian reforms. The sympathetic saw it as a cry of distress. The suspicious conservatives saw it as a disguise for pillage. The sophisticated conservatives saw it as a socialist restructuring of society, and old money classical conservatives saw it as an attack on property and civilised society.

As a result, Chartism had to be squashed in *their* best interests. Since the old money classical conservatives had control over the police through the Mercers and the Freemasons, the police blocked the bridges over the Thames. The Chartists were prevented from rallying on Kennington Common and thus from reaching Parliament. To get around this peacefully, the well-meaning, intelligent, underprivileged Chartists delivered the petition to Parliament by hailing a horse-drawn cab.

From day one the police have been involved in bluffing about their capability and lying about their efforts. The 1848 Chartist Demonstrations is a case in point. With 22,000 volunteers sworn in on the day, they drew wages for 150,000, a con of £17,000. By 1869 the Met said they had 5493 available officers when only 5288 were available for duty over the several shifts; 205 extra incomes amounted to £8,500 a year for whomever organised the racket.

---

[8] Joseph Rayner Stephens speaking at Kersal Moor, Manchester on 24 September 1838.

It was far worse in 1885 when the Met touted that they had 13,319 available for duty, but could only produce 1,383 for duty on any given day.[9] This 90% excess claim would explain the police as a very well-funded scam, either for individual gain or a larger scam higher up the ranks in which the Mercers were running the police at a profit from the one-third government funding. With a 10% force present, the Mercers were taking a profit of 23% of the police funding. The same year, there were explosions in the Tower of London and the Houses of Parliament. The 90% pseudo-police contributed to this.

There is another reason though. In boom times the police often turned to building and have a mate log on for them. In 1882, 8 miles of new streets and 4000 houses were built each year. At the same time, the Devonport Dockyard became busy with six major fires as developers cleared to build anew.

By 1854, from 5700 Met officers, 370 were Irish (6.5%) and 140 (2.5%) were Scottish. The British Commissioner Captain Hay (1852–55) did not trust anything that was not English and tried to remove the Irish and Scottish police officers from their racial areas. This is commonly known as 'divide and rule' and goes against the grain of 'peaceful understanding'. For his efforts, Commissioner Captain William Hay died the following year.

The Met and the CoLP were such a complete mess that in 1856 and 1863 there were protests to fuse the CoLP and Metropolitan Police Forces again. After this, Home Secretary Baron Sir George Grey (1799–1882) attempted a fusion by introducing a Bill to Parliament but it was protested by 3000 merchant bankers in Guildhall (Mercers) so that the Bill was withdrawn. These were a powerful group of lobbyists that essentially owned and funded the police. The current set-up provided an avenue of innocence for their crimes.

There had been many attempts to merge the two police forces but these were met with resistance from the highest levels and even protests from the business groups who profited from the crimes the CoLP and Met's inter-bungling made possible. This was played upon by their controllers, the Home Office, and all those assisting revolutions elsewhere – the Home Office were controlled by the Freemasons who took their orders from the British monarchy.

---

[9] *Metropolitan Police Service History Timeline*. I thought this was a mistake so returned to the site two and three years later and the same information was present.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

All the male heads of the British monarchy were Freemasons from King George I (1714) to King George VI (1952); 238 years of Freemasonry control over the Monarchy and the Guilds is a lot of power and was an all-encompassing infrastructure.

The formation of the British Police from 1829 to 1860 was well studied and became the model for the Mafia. 'Thieves Law' then became 'The Thieves of Law' and progressively gained a more respectable face. The Mafia influence then became the primary influence on politics worldwide . . . to this day . . . and beyond.

When everyone plays the game, it is added to the rules of the game. Many cons have now become common business practice. The sending of £20 bills every month to any and all companies has become common business practice and is standard amongst monopolies, which now sell them off as telephone, gas and electricity line charges.

The Mafia was a group of Spanish in Sicily, but shifted and reorganised with high finance and goals of world domination, with the first political/financial Mafia boss appointed in 1860 (Giuseppe Mazzini, 1805–72). Successive leaders of the Mafia then trained in London under police protection (Mazzini, 1840s, 1870) and took over Russia during the Bolshevik Revolution. They had a tendency to live in the slums on the Met/CoLP border. From here they were able to take over the world's social policy and re-infiltrate the British Police Force, with the Metropolitan Police Committee forming on 1 April 1995 – April Fools' no less.

In 1870 the standard height for Met Police officers was raised to 5ft 8ins, except for the short Thames Division which remained at 5ft 7ins. In 1872 the Met Police went on strike for the first time. This is partly due to the beat police carrying the load for the police who never turned up for work as they took advantage of the building boom. Various strikers were disciplined and dismissed, but then allowed back in the force to make up the numbers. Lucky for the police the boom meant crime was lower than in a bust.

> There are always long-term employees guiding shenanigans in the background of secret political societies, like the police force. These people have a tendency to stay out of the media spotlight but ensure ORDER OUT OF CHAOS is drawn out over every cigar, and crime-solving is derailed wherever and whenever it is politically correct to do so.

> The 52-year influence of Assistant Metropolitan Police Commissioner Sir James Olive (1873–1925) is a case in point. “In the 1870s most of this squad was itself a criminal conspiracy in which not only were the prime culprits Freemasons; Freemasonry was what brought them together.”[10] America had the same problem with the 33 degree Mason, J. Edgar Hoover (1924–72).

In 1877 the Metropolitan Police Force was exposed in the Turf Fraud Scandal for assisting and taking profits from a crime ring. There had been endemic corruption from the beginning, but it took 48 years to get around to laying the first serious charges.

In 1872 a confidence trickster named William Kurr was running a bogus betting operation. He realised the way to make real money was to cut detectives in on the profits early, rather than bribe his way out of arrest. The one safe place William Kurr could proposition policemen was at his Masonic lodge in Islington where he made friends with Inspector John Meikeljohn. In return for £100, nearly half his annual pay, Meikeljohn agreed to give Kurr advance warning of any police action.

At first Inspector John Meikeljohn kept the payoff to himself, but as the racket expanded, he involved three chief inspectors in the Detective Force whom he also knew to be brother Masons. Chief Inspector Nathaniel Druscovitch enquired into the scam and it was found he had £60 in gambling debts. Inspector Meikeljohn then suggested he go to Kurr for assistance. Kurr neutralised the debt and Druscovitch in one hit, at a cost of £60. Druscovitch’s boss, Senior Chief Inspector George Clarke, also agreed to lose the scent in return for a payoff, as did Chief Inspector William Palmer.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

William Kurr expanded his operation with his new friend Harry Benson, a virtuoso con man. In 1872 Benson posed as a French Count and deluded the Lord Mayor of London of £1000 (for relief work in the wake of the Franco-Prussian War). He was soon discovered and sent to Newgate Prison where he tried incarceration incineration. He was released in 1873 a burnt and scared man. Kurr and Benson then planned new scams to separate suckers from their money.

With William Kurr’s contacts in the Met Police, Harry Benson was assured of total immunity and set up the newssheet *Sport*, which offered punters foolproof betting systems. In 1876, under the alias Hugh Montgomery, Benson seconded a £10,000 bet from the Comtesse de Goncourt of Paris. Several bets were placed on successful non-existent starters and the Comtesse was rewarded with full odds. She then invested a further £30,000 with a bookmaker of Benson’s choice (Benson).

When the French Comtesse became suspicious, she hired a London lawyer who reported William Kurr and Harry Benson to Scotland Yard. Superintendent Frederick Williamson then employed multi-lingual Chief Inspector Nathaniel Druscovitch to bring one of them back from Amsterdam where he had been arrested.

Chief Inspector Druscovich was ‘on the take’, ‘receiving the drop’, ‘taking backhanders’ and ‘on the square’. Being amenable to bribes, corruption and perjury, he arrived in Amsterdam but refused to return the fraudster. Three Met Sergeants were then sent to Amsterdam but Benson kept evading them at the last moment. Chief Inspector Druscovitch was tipping him off, just as he had done over the last three years, since 1873, for the princely sum of £60 (about four months’ wage).

During the trial at the Old Bailey in 1877 Kurr and Benson revealed the role of the bent Metropolitan cops, Inspector Meikeljohn, Chief Inspector Nathaniel Druscovitch, Senior Chief Inspector George Clarke and Chief Inspector William Palmer.

Scotland Yard’s chief of detectives, Superintendent Frederick

Turf Fraud Trial.

---

[10] George Dilnot, *The Trial of the Detectives,* pub. Geoffrey Bles 1928; also Stephen Knight, *The Brotherhood*.

Williamson, discovered that a crime ring had been operating right under his nose and by the people he most trusted.

> He discovered that three of his four Chief Inspectors were ‘on the take’, ‘receiving the drop’, ‘taking backhanders’ and ‘on the square’, as was their ringleader Inspector John Meikeljohn, whom he had sent to Amsterdam to catch the fraudsters.

All four were tried at the Old Bailey. Senior Chief Inspector George Clarke was acquitted (they had no one to replace him), but Inspector John Meikeljohn, Chief Inspector Nathaniel Druscovitch and Chief Inspector William Palmer were convicted and sentenced to two years’ hard labour. They were all Freemasons.

> It was a bad day for the Metropolitan Police Force and the Freemasons, and brought into question the bending of their principles – ‘brotherly love, relief and truth’. It did, however, throw some light onto their real programme of chaos on society and chaos in positions of authority.
>
> Since the Metropolitan Police was founded there have been two complete reorganisations of its detective department. Both were provoked by massive corruption scandals that led to criminal trials in 1877 and 1977. In each scandal the Freemasons dominated in the organised corruption.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

As a result of the 1877 Turf Fraud Scandal, there was a Committee of Inquiry. Howard Vincent was put in charge of reorganising the Detective Branch into the Criminal Investigation Department. The C.I.D. (1878) was created on the back of high-ranking police taking bribes and tipping off criminals; 250 officers accepted the invitation to join the CID and 30 were based in Scotland Yard.

Crime-solving was then relegated to a newly created division and the job of the police largely became one of prevention – by being seen, hence the beat system (1829–1932). “PC William Hallett of Y Division (1879–1905) retired after 26 years as a mounted officer. In the course of his duty he rode 144,000 miles, equivalent to five times around the planet.”[11]

In 1957 the New Information Room opened at New Scotland Yard. In 1967 New Scotland Yard was moved again and more evidence, including that of Jack the Ripper, was lost. The Serious Crime Squad then became permanent in 1969 and ensured that Serious Crime became permanent. To this day, the CID carry out crime creation. The CID specialise in the introduction of drugs-which-induce-violence (heroin and meth) in order to elevate the levels of crime, further arm the police with weapons and give themselves dominance over citizen rights.

---

[11] *Police Review*, 1905. Those Halletts are in for the long haul.

In murder cases, taxis are now sent to the wrong address instead of police cars to the right address. The police have now been exposed as turning off their emergency reception, placing preference on writing traffic tickets and collecting money for the government-funded social services (fatherless children), instead of solving crimes as serious as murder. This is called ‘applied social breakdown’ and is a *mark* of the anti-patriotic movement and double-agent governments that now exist around the world (NWO).

NEW
SCOTLAND
YARD

Left: The red and white brick Victorian Gothic Scotland Yard (1890–1957) was specifically designed by the Freemason Norman Shaw as Police HQ but proved too cramped and hindered crime-solving. During construction a woman’s torso was found in the new vault on 3 October 1888. The police refused to make a connection between this “Whitehall Mystery” and Jack the Ripper … further indicating both were inside jobs. Right: New Scotland Yard (Met HQ) at 10 Broadway from 1967. In 2006 a locked room was discovered being used by high-ranking police officers for sadomasochistic group sex. Once again, Police bosses vowed to “get to the bottom of it” but forensics drew a blank after the room was cleaned and left sterile. The sign revolves 1400 times a day – an indication of Police creating 80% of all crime intergenerationally, recidivism, Police PR spin and Police Commissioners’ rapid revolutions whenever the public demand honesty. *Who’s next?*

In colonial New Zealand this has become so bad that court fines and traffic tickets now perfectly match the cost of fatherless families, with the rate of real crimes solved at an all-time low, such that the police move bodies again and again to ensure the other ‘investigating’ police do not find them.

In 1839 the first production camera weighed 55 kg (120 lbs) and by 1850 the photographer’s kit required a horse-drawn wagon. The first pocket camera was used in 1899. From 1862, copies of photographs of criminals taken by prison governors were sent to Scotland Yard and formed the ‘Rogues Gallery’. In the late 1870s, CoLP photography began and the criminal photographs were stored in the Old Jewery (an area of central London). There was no photographic studio and prisoners were taken to a professional photographer’s studio.

The first Met Police photographer was employed in 1901. CoLP employed their first official photographer, Arthur Cross, in July 1939. He was allowed 10 shillings a month for the use of a small plate camera and four hours to complete each photo before returning to normal duty. This meant he had to be selective about who he photographed, as did the police.

On 7 June 1879, the CID rules for murder cases were released: “The body must not be moved, nor anything about it or in the room or place interfered with . . .” This was, however, strictly *not* adhered to in the all-important Jack the Ripper murders (1888) nine years later. Only one of the bodies was photographed where it was found and much of the evidence went missing, initially, with Scotland Yard moving (1890), and with the frequent retirement of Police Commissioners.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In 1886 Commissioner Sir Edmund Henderson resigned. In 1888 Commissioner Sir Charles Warren resigned. In 1890 Commissioner James Monro resigned. Frequent high-ranking resignations occur when evidence of police involvement in large-scale crime is being covered up. It takes two years to uncover what is going on, meddle with the appropriate evidence, promote and fire, steal the appropriate files, cover it up again, and develop a collusive reason to resign.

Each time this happens the retiring commissioner takes the important files with him, usually to his office at home. File theft by the retiring Commissioners of Police to cover up their complicity in crime and that of their secret society (Freemasons, Guild, Mercers, City Corporation, Golden Dawn coven) is standard practice. When they retire every two years, three in a row, the file theft is endemic. In this way, the Jack the Ripper murders and other failed case-solving (Whitehall Mystery) has become an ongoing national scandal for Britain. All of the above Commissioners were Freemasons.

A. Bertillon.

In 1879 the French Identification Bureau chief Alphonse Bertillon (1853–1914) invented a cumbersome system for identifying criminals. Humbly, he called it the Alphonse Bertillon System and rushed it to print in 1885. It was officially adopted by the police in America (1887), France (1888) and England (1894), although it had been in use in England long before it was officially adopted.

RELEVÉ
DU
SIGNALEMENT ANTHROPOMÉTRIQUE
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9

French criminologist Alphonse Bertillon attempted to classify criminals by measuring their skull shape and size, bones, describing the appearance and shape of the body, and describing peculiar marks from tattoos, diseased skin, to moles, warts and scars. He also used ear prints as identification although he did not have the equipment to cross-check.

He called this anthropometry (and later bertillonage in honour of himself) and it wasn’t too far from the falsification that anthropology specialises in. When anthropologists get tired in the heat and a skeleton is found, the body has to be old, otherwise the reward doesn't substantiate the effort. Funding of digs is also based on the premise that certain predicted things will be found and these have to be found in order to gain continued funding.

Similarly, the 'guilty' were sometimes 'found' when the police became tired of searching through the manual database of inked ear prints.

Alphonse Bertillon never dealt with the crime scene, photography or preservation of evidence. As such, he was a major distraction in crime-solving. But it was not to get any better for Alphonse Bertillon or his followers. Just as the British had accepted his method for identifying criminals he testified (having no qualifications) as a police handwriting expert. He erroneously attributed an incriminating document as being authored by French Army Captain Alfred Dreyfus (1859–1935) and his evidence convicted the Captain of high treason (1894). Dreyfus was not allowed to look at the evidence in order to question it. He was exiled for life on the penal colony Devil's Island, off the coast of South America.

This protected the guilty (Freemason) and brought about the required social engineering.

The French novelist Emile Zola then wrote an impassioned letter 'J'accuse!' (I accuse!), in which he charged the government witnesses with railroading an innocent man and deliberately framing him.

Captain Alfred Dreyfus was pardoned in 1899, exonerated in 1906 and awarded the Legion of Honour the same year.[12] Meanwhile the police were without a guilty person so they charged and convicted the writer of the letter, Emile Zola, with libel. The true culprit was eventually named as Major Walsin Esterhazy and found 'not guilty' to save face.

After two innocents had been found guilty and the guilty party had been found innocent, the public were too tired of the issue to protest. Exhausting the public is part of police desensitising the public to crimes the police either create or cover up. This is public programming and the overriding message from the police to the public is:

"Don't interfere with our ORDER THROUGH CHAOS."

This method is still a favourite of the police to this day.

Army Captain Dreyfus was the Jew in the Freemasons' sandwich. As a result, the Catholic Church was separated from the State in 1906.

---

[12] J. Crépieux-Jamin, *L'Expertise en Ecriture et les Leçons de l'Affaire Dreyfus*, Paris, 1907. The Légion d'Honneur was established by Napoléon Bonaparte on 19 May 1802.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This was Freemasons' goal all along. Freemasonry patterns of social engineering are well established, role-played and expertly executed within the army, police and courts. They continue to this day with the following notable patterns:

1. Police lie in court right up to the level of Bureau Chief.
2. Police pretend to be experts when they have no knowledge.
3. Police assume knowledge due to the position they are placed in or choose to place themselves in.
4. Some police are Walter Mitty type characters. They take on the speciality of whatever is required. We admire them for this when assisting victims, but in giving evidence it removes the truth from the courtroom and makes a '*Magic Roundabout*' of justice.
5. Police charge and convict people who know more about a crime than they do. This prevents the authority of the police being challenged and any new evidence from coming forth.
6. Police assume guilt in whomever they charge and then try to substantiate this guilt by piling evidence around the accused.
7. The police regularly remove evidence that does not suit their case. Evidence is tailored to convict and tailored to read like a story.
8. Old files that resulted in convictions are reused with the names changed. Occasionally they remember to change the locations, but not always.
9. In the process (largely due to a lack of mental capacity), the police ignore all evidence contrary to their desired conviction, remove this from the file and do not present this in court. Thus the judge cannot decide what is evidence and what is not. The police decide it for him, making them 'judge and jury'. This creates a false trial and accounts for the majority of trials.
10. Police today are trained in 'verballing', which is the art of making 'flaky evidence' or 'no evidence' look authoritative enough to convict. In conjunction with omitted evidence this creates a '**Court of Injustice**'.
11. The public's ill-founded assumption of police integrity in court is the cause of untold misery. Misery is what the police specialise in. It is their work and, in many cases, their life's work.
12. The police have dominant rights to remove jury members during the selection process while the defending lawyer has a limited capacity.

Police should be stripped bare before being allowed to give evidence. The first questions to ask are:

1. "Do you belong to a secret society, the Freemasons, the Mercers, the City Corporation, a Guild, or any occult organisation?"
2. "Are you bound to tell the truth in court?" Many police have 'leave' not to tell the truth in court and are promoted for telling lies.[13]
3. Lying in court is standard practice amongst the Freemasons, who swear on the Bible regardless. Freemasonry police have an agreement with Freemasonry judges and most cases operate on a pre-negotiated and pre-determined outcome – "Do you have an agreement with the judge?"
4. Lying in court also fits with the Catholics' Ascension Day and a similar Jewish day in which they dedicate the next 12 months to lying. This is why Catholics and Jews have been booted out of so many countries – for lying. The Catholics were even refused entry into New Zealand as it was forming: "Are you a Catholic or a Jew? Are you practising?"
5. Under questioning, many police officers have criminal records that should have prevented them from ever entering the force. Many police, stripped of uniform, would be considered unreliable witnesses and their evidence disregarded if their criminal and psychological histories were known – "Do you have a criminal record?"
6. "Do you have a history of mental illness?"

   After a failed assassination attempt on 23 August 2002, on my good self, 12 hours later Constable James Matawhinau Cassin assaulted me and charged me with dangerous driving, although I was just driving away from him, on his partner's agreement. In the Auckland District Court I asked Constable James Matawhinau Cassin if he had any convictions for assault and he admitted to two prior to joining the police. As a result, all the files, recordings and transcripts of the hearing went missing and I lost my licence, was charged the maximum fines ($2,000) and prevented from a High Court appeal for three months. The High Court overturned all decisions because the District Court and police could not produce any transcripts, recordings or evidence. Cassin's partner then left the Police Force and a Mr Cassin was found to be the Head of Detectives. Crimes are inbred within the Police Force.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

History though, has never challenged the authority of French Bureau Chief Quack Alphonse Bertillon (a Dr Morell type character). He assumed a role and then believed he was capable of fulfilling that role. He also believed he *was* the authority in whatever he was investigating.

The public need to realise that *confidence* and *expertise* are two different things, especially amongst the police. Verballing makes it so, as does the limited intelligence and experience of police officers, and the frequent collusion between the police and their consultants, who all too often offer mutual cover for each other. Fingerprints and DNA are cases in point.

The Police are constantly trying to *fit* crimes on their most hated subjects and those who know more than them. They refer to these people as "smart arses", saying, "We know you're guilty". They then rely on the judicial system to find that person guilty.

To achieve this, the Police pile evidence around the chosen accused and omit any evidence that questions their guilt or proves their innocence. Such evidence is often built up around "smart arses" for decades beforehand, and historical accusations are read out over Coms as convictions, followed up by "He's a real bad bastard".

Lawyers, police and judges swear *to* the Court, before their client accused. In this way, their allegiance is to the room and all its players, with the victim 'as witness to their own demise'. Most accused cannot believe it . . . how outrageous the Courts are. To take advantage of this, lesser charges are placed for guilty pleas and many change their plea to guilty when they recognise the problems they face attaining a fair hearing – ESL foreigners (English as Second Language) doubly so.[14]

---

[13] The affidavit of former Inspector Ross Meurant is a case in point. He lodged an affidavit in the High Court in February 2004 stating that his superior officers had asked him to lie in the decade-long trial of the famous Crew murders, 1970–80.

[14] Homosexual ESL foreigners rarely make it to Court, having the full PC advantage. In New Zealand they have heightened immigration status from the homosexual MP Chris Carter, who has had a long-term homosexual affair with the immigrant Paul Abdulatif, who was then given a job as a National Bank teller at the bottom of Queen Street, Auckland. Despite this, MP Chris Carter and his official partner Peter Kaiser became the role model for homosexual marriage, having cuckolded each other for 30 years. Homosexual marriage was granted under the lesbian PM Helen Clark. She is married to the homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis and they cuckold each other as though there were no marriage. This is the problem with homosexual marriage. They can have a relationship in five minutes, from beginning to end. For Chris Carter it is gerbils . . . for Helen Clark it is fisting.

Judges who belong to the same secret society as the police are often held to 'convict and collect fines' for the Government because of the 'wood' on them. The 'wood' is most often sexual indiscretions and alcoholism and these have controlled the judiciary ever since the Magna Carta (1215) and the mini-camera (1899). King John was forced to sign the Magna Carta three times and was a prolific rooter with a plethora of unacknowledged illegitimate children.

In return for court fines collected today, the government funds its social policy (solo-mothers). This is heavily backed by Political Correctness which has found its way into the Police Force under such organisations as Metropolitan Police Committee (1 April 1995). It's a tragic cycle of effeminate backslapping and "we got 'em's" amongst the secret handshakes of paedophiles (who depend on fatherless children), crime creators (who depend on fatherless children), the Politically Correct (who depend on husbandless mothers and fatherless children), and the Freemasons, who control the Police Force and hence the methods of crime creation for the groups they serve . . . which is all of the above, including the paedophiles, who, historically, have the nasty habit of being promoted to the highest positions – especially in the Police, where they also have Freemasonry cover and backing.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In the colonial countries, the scenario is still in full flight. New Zealand's Speaker of the House Jonathan Hunt is a case in point. As a known paedophile he was elevated with honours and then promoted to the highest position the country had to offer – High Commissioner to Britain (1 April 2005). The highest political position in New Zealand is occupied by a paedophile. The four next highest positions are occupied by paedophile minders.

Such are the knowledge and financial pathways of the erroneously named Police Force and Judiciary. As a result, PC also stands for Paedophile Country.

A W
AD 192
PAEDOPHILE
PC
COUNTRY
AD 1921
GHOST

In the empirical world of the Victorians, what excited the imagination was often thought to be true, and the Alphonse Bertillon system was a cumbersome mixture of phrenology, superstition, prejudice and class distinction based on childhood diet. Administering it was only possible with cooperative suspects (innocents) and was not dissimilar to a four-hour doctor's exam prior to plastic surgery.

The police were a superstitious lot who settled the lines of class distinction. The Alphonse Bertillon system suited the police to a 'T' as it provided a scientific basis for their prejudice: "Look, 'ere's a scientific basis for our prejudice."

The nose, as it cannot be disguised, is extremely important in identification. The types above, taking them from the left, show a low, narrow nose, a hooked nose, a straight nose, a snub nore, and a high, wide nose.

From July 1901 the Fingerprint Bureau at New Scotland Yard was added as a supplementary measure to the Alphonse Bertillon system (1887–1901), which was soon phased out. The first conviction by fingerprint evidence was obtained in June 1902. There are no advertised convictions based on the Alphonse Bertillon system.

The Alphonse Bertillon system of anthropometric measurements was abandoned worldwide because it was an ineffective, cumbersome and superstitious system that failed to provide any reliable, unique, or singular measurements . . . and it took half a day to administer. The French Identification Bureau Chief Quack Alphonse Bertillon managed to sell a large amount of equipment and made suckers of the world's police departments, for which they are eternally ashamed . . . but they still protect the name of Alphonse Bertillon.

The Metropolitan Police History website refers to a page on the Alphonse Bertillon system but the entire page talks about fingerprinting. The Metropolitan Police are uniquely ashamed of their part in this history (1888/94–1901/02), but fingerprinting isn't that much better. It is 99% accurate at best and convicted innocents have only been accepted as such a century on.

DNA isn't that great either, with the data easily corrupted. DNA results are intermittently altered for Politically Correct purposes, and results announced in timeframes and locations where the tests were impossible to administer. The Husseins' 2003 DNA testing in a one-roomed tent, in just ten hours, is a case in point. DNA testing requires two separate isolated rooms, 48 hours and an isolated pre-tested identity-positive sample. Saddam Hussein received none of these, nor did his two sons.

With the advent of cameras filming virtually every public place, a database of the phrenology of ears is being built up for use as a method to identification. To date, they have established that in a sample of 10,000 ears, no two are the same. It's phrenology all over again, but without the superstition, class distinction and poor childhood diet. It's not a method of classifying criminals, but of identifying suspects, and in many cases, fingering Islamics for the crimes of presidents.

The problem with such digital databases is that they can be tampered with and this is very difficult to trace. Dissidents are easily framed and this makes for a more 'ordered' society. It also prevents the chaos of truth from reaching the light of day.

> Every day individual lives are still being sacrificed to the chaos of ORDER OUT OF CHAOS and all the chaos the police can muster. The world over, the police remain the strong arm of social engineering. Their role is misery. Their beneficial effect is limited to the strength of their character, which has revealed itself to be continually taking advantage of a misplaced trust from an all-too-gullible public.
>
> The police spend forever stealing files and interfering with history in order to cover their mistakes, crimes and blunders.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Under Political Correctness the Met changed their attitudes to the public and released a 'Statement of Common Purpose and Values' (1989). Called the *Plus Programme*, it was launched to improve their corporate image. This was, however, interfered with by the 1990 riot in Trafalgar Square.

In 1992 a 5-year corporate strategy was published – "This is what we want to accomplish". In 1994 the Government established key objectives for the Metropolitan Police Service for the first time. To take control of this, the Metropolitan Police Committee was established on 1 April 1995 (April Fools' and the MASTERS OF NOTHING).

Along with this group, Political Correctness was introduced into the police force and PC's key performance indicators were incorporated. These reduced crime by changing the questions on the police forms and giving criminals the upper hand. Assailants were treated as "victims of circumstance" and given "life counselling", while the victims of assault were charged by the police with the assault.

> This is *anti-patriotic* social engineering designed to *fail* a society and has the added benefit of recidivism, creating criminal informants, and the emigration of 'good people'. 'Good people' are recognised by double agent governments as unprofitable and are therefore unwanted and encouraged to emigrate.

The Metropolitan Police Committee (MPC) then launched the Crime Report Information System (CRIS). This had been in the pipeline for quite some time. It revolutionised the means of recording crime and became the vehicle for giving PC's MPC immediate kudos.

> CRIS, however, allowed for criminal records to be created and charges to be laid with digitised false evidence. It also allowed for those accused, tried and found innocent to have their records transferred to other departments, where they were phrased and read more or less as charges, with guilt assumed in the eyes of that department.

This has been prolific amongst social services (controlled by the Politically Correct), who will do anything to recreate the post-war fatherless family. PC's CRIS has been profound and prolific in interfering in civilian life, especially when fathers are trying to see their children. CRIS has assisted the paedophile movement enormously.

> **Fatherless children are crime's principle seed** and without them the police have a great deal of difficulty finding a 'crop' to justify their 'combine harvester'. The police needed enough crime to dominate the 'farm' to achieve their other goals. This is ORDER OUT OF CHAOS with the Freemasons in control of everything – the monarchy, government, law and order (crime), war, social services, traffic, the courts, the family structure, education, and the process of elevation into titles and positions of power and mutual cover. This has pretty much happened the world over.

Crime is farmed and those who work in the justice system are bottom feeders. The police and justice system simply refuse to believe that they have been taken over and are an occult organisation controlled by various secret societies with agendas totally different from those advertised during recruitment and training.

> The judiciary is a *blue magic* organisation. Black magic is straight-out occult. Blue magic is the public interface for black magic and requires close scrutiny of their secret societies and statistical outcomes to unmask their workings. This is the Con of the Judiciary.

Social services and the police work hand-in-hand, more or less when the big hand meets the little hand. Social services and the police are the country's principal paedophile enablers – hence the link again to Baden-Powell, the Boy Scouts, the Mercers and the police, with Baden-Powell virtually owning the police after his double-sodomy-murder.

Baden-Powell ran the companies that owned the police, got away with double murder, created the Boy Scouts, the nation's biggest non-religious paedophile movement, and owned all the professions through the Guilds. This stopped *anyone* speaking out.

The Metropolitan Police Service launched their website in 1996 and it is loaded with contradictory information (PR) that does not compare well with other historians (2005).

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The National Automated Fingerprint Identification System (1997) was introduced 96 years after the Henry Fingerprint System was started. For good analysis, fingerprints still have to be done manually. It was another two years (1999) before the police started to acknowledge that fingerprinting isn't all it's cracked up to be. Many convicted on this evidence should be pardoned, some of them posthumously.

By 1998 it became evident that the police were still killing ethnics. In 2000 there was more Political Correctness and the '*Policing Pledge for Londoners'* was issued: "We vow we will . . ." and reality was once again swept under the carpet as being contrary to their new vows and therefore too embarrassing to screen on TV.

This became pay TV in reverse, with the police paying television companies not to screen certain items. This worked for a while, but conscience slowly caught up with the media. The police then employed a PR department contracted to the news media for all items regarding the police. This soon turned into reality TV, with the police never shown in the wrong.

Political Correctness was now making a profit for others and there was more silence, this time from the Police PR department that interfaced between the media and the public. (Hate to have them on my jury.)

London's Metropolitan Police started by being owned by the Mercers and the Freemasons; 175 years later they were owned by the Freemasons and their creation, the Political Correct socialists (Metropolitan Police Committee).

Crime is still not on the top of the police agenda – police posturing is.

Crime is created for better police equipment and more police rights resulting in reduced civil rights. This is all in accordance with the Freemasonry motto "ORDER OUT OF CHAOS". The order is extreme and the chaos that was not organised, watched over, encouraged by the police, or created by social policy with the police as ambulance at the bottom of the cliff – was very small indeed – too rare to maintain the employment bulk they required and too small to maintain the social dominance they desired.

Through their applied ignorance, the City of London Police and the Metropolitan Police assisted in creating the Bolshevik Revolution with the training of Trotsky, Lenin and Stalin; and then Hitler, WWI and WWII – and of course the occult practices that started it all – the Jack the Ripper murders. But hindsight has 20/20 vision and the police only had half-a-crown for each day's work.

Spymaster: "The corporal in the Royal Green Jacket Regiment who saved Hitler's life at Cambrai ended up in the Liverpool police. He spent the first six months of the Blitz wandering around Liverpool saying, 'To think I could have stopped this', until Special Branch paid him a visit and told him to 'Shut the fuck up'."

In 1858 the Met got their first paddy wagon, a horse-drawn van nicknamed 'Black Maria'. From 1860, hand-drawn ambulances were used for injured, sick and drunk people, until 1928. The CoLP was trained in first aid from 1900, and in 1907 the first electric-powered ambulances arrived. Roadside phone booths were introduced as part of this. In 1915 the London Ambulance Service began as a response to the aerial bombing from the German Zeppelins (max. speed 60 mph). To aid the new Ambulance Service, the Met took 11,000 people to hospital that year (starting 31 May 1915), most on hand-drawn ambulances.

The Metropolitan Police set up the ‘Flying Squad’ for their first motor car, a 1927 Lea Francis, registration number A209. In Golden Dawn coven language this translates as ‘A MASTER OF NOTHING’. This registration plate is still in use today. If the police weren’t an occult organisation the number plate could have been A1. It is unlikely that the 1927 Lea Francis was accidentally the 209th car registered on British roads.

In 1930 the traffic police began with 324 constables. London erected the world’s first traffic light, a gas-powered light and arm-raising signal mechanism. It looked like a Grand Pooh-Bar in full regalia and was automated in 1932. In 1933 the Fordson van was introduced and in 1948 the British police started to drive Wolseleys.

BLC 482
BLC 479

The First Course 1935

In 1937 the ‘999’ emergency call system began and was absolutely thrashed two years later (1939–45), although by 2002 the police response rate was starting to dwindle. Rape victims have been told to walk down to the police station, and pre-murder victims in panic calls are responded to with taxis sent in the wrong direction, as a third of the police study the porn sent to their computers (to cover for Jonathan Hunt’s paedophilia). This was embedded with child and paedophile porn and was later found to be sent from a government department. Some say it was sent from Child Youth and Family Services, others say this cannot be confirmed.

Many thought the images came off Jonathan Hunt’s computer for the sole purpose of neutralising the Police from placing charges against US Customs-named government paedophiles, which included the Speaker of the House Jonathan Hunt ruling over the direction of New Zealand’s Parliament. Jonathan Hunt was then promoted to High Commissioner to Britain. **Paedophiles are promoted for mutual cover.**

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Jonathan Hunt had mentored Chris Carter into the ways of homosexual paedophilia while being an MP, and Chris Carter even has a photo with Hunt that he proudly uses as a backdrop for television interviews. The Labour Government then paid for Hunt to attend Carter’s homosexual wedding on 10 February 2007.

Two Speakers of the House of Parliament have been homosexual – Sir Roy Jack and Jonathan Hunt. Jonathan Hunt, along with Sir Ron Brierly were both named on the September 2004 US Customs list of 75 practising New Zealand paedophiles. Brierly used to play mulligans (marked cards) at Victoria University in Wellington, where he took money off the naïve Blair Peach, who was training to be a Special Needs teacher. (Brierly’s mulligan partner was Bob Jones who hires dark-skinned children for sex overseas.)

Blair Peach was later killed by the Special Patrol Group of the Met Police while in custody in 1979. The Met officer was let off “scot-free” and then a Southall primary school was named after Blair Peach.

A week after the husband of the Prime Minister of New Zealand was arrested in San Francisco for propositioning what appeared to be an underaged boy on 7 June 2006, the High Commissioner to Britain Jonathan Hunt sent five large expense accounts to the New Zealand Government for payment approval by Helen Clark.

Each account was for homosexual activities with 11- and 12-year-old boys, all of Indian descent. Jonathan Hunt used to have shares in a cricket orphanage in Goa in India, as did Sir Ron Brierly.

Jonathan Hunt mentored Chris Carter, seen here as Minister of Conservation with gerbil replacement, a short-tailed bat. He seems genuinely excited.
Bottom: Peter Davis with husband Helen Clark.

Davis.
Clark.

Jonathan Hunt became the High Commissioner to Britain on the basis that he could bribe Helen Clark via his intimate knowledge of her husband's homosexuality and child sex abuse. Other countries, organisations and individuals can equally bribe her. This has made Helen Clark a political, sexual and intelligence slut. As such, she was being touted as the next Secretary-General of the United Nations, until my previous book came out (*Hitler Was A British Agent*, second edition, 1 Oct. 2006), and another candidate was selected on 8 October 2006.

The police in former colonial countries are still practising the Freemasonry code of conduct. Police are now *swarming* in their police cars at night (February 2005). They drive around swiftly, looking like they're busy, but avoid *all* emergency calls and any known criminal hideouts. They are merely burning up petrol and putting in miles for next year's claims (due at the end of March).

To further this, the police employ non-police officers to drive police cars to increase their apparent miles. These drivers have a tendency to have accidents and these accidents are then written off as "in the line of duty". Police are now employing non-police officers to drive their vehicles with their emergency radios turned off, while the officers sit at home with the wife and kids or hang out in sex clubs on Tuesday nights on Hobson Street in central Auckland. Monday night is for the judges.

Beyer.
Clark.
Carter.
Barnett.

Helen Clark, seen here with fellow homosexual MPs Georgina Beyer, Chris Carter and Tim Barnett. Georgina Beyer is a former prostitute and the world's first fake transsexual MP. Chris Carter is in a homosexual marriage and regularly cheats on his partner with whatever homosexual he assists immigrating. Tim Barnett used to travel around Britain's schools with 'Gandalf the Pink' touting the homosexual lifestyle to schoolchildren. This most gleeful photo ever of Helen Clark shows her cutting the ribbon to the 2001 Hero Parade.

When these police are charged, they are put on leave with full pay and either continue the police tradition of building illegal structures, or deal in hard drugs on the lam (meth) while waiting out their rape charges (corner Ireland & Scotland Sts., Freemans Bay, Auckland, basement level).

Having substantially failed at solving crime or creating "peace and order", the traffic police began handing out tickets. This was the beginning of the police as a revenue-gathering exercise and meant that the Mercers could gradually withdraw their funding.

In 1960 the Stolen Motor Vehicle Squad was introduced, and by the 1980s police around the world had organised major international car-theft rings involving colonial royalty including Tungī, the recently deceased King of Tonga, GCMG, GCVO, KBE.[15]

"Queensland police in Australia would steal cars, especially police cars and then ship them to Tonga. Auckland police in New Zealand would do the same. The police from Australia and New Zealand stole their own cars and drove them onto ships bound for Tonga. The New Zealand police also gave conjugal visits to car thieves in jail, in exchange for the jailed thieves stealing cars and abandoning them near the docks, where they would be driven the short distance onto the transport ships.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org

"This was all done under cover of the Wharf Police, who were busy rooting boaties' moles, ship girls and hookers whenever the cars were being transported. During one nightshift, a police officer brought a ship girl into the Wharf Police tearoom when other police were having a cup of tea. He looked at her, commented that her face was ugly and asked her to turn around. She turned around and bent over the table. He took her from behind as the other Wharf Police drank their tea. Not all of them left.

"The Wharf Police were duped into complicity by the simple method of having ship girls lurk around whenever anything was going down. The same tactic was used at the other end. Prostitutes were found for all the police in Tonga when the cars were being transferred from ship to ship, Queensland-bound and Auckland-bound.

---

[15] Siaosi Tāufa'āhau Tupoulahi (4 July 1918–10 Sept. 2006), was King from 1965 to 2006 and known as Tungī. Due to the merging of three royal bloodlines his daughter Pilolevu is the highest-ranking person in Tonga ever. Regardless, she had to flee the tiny island nation after riots on 16 November 2006.

"This was all done before video surveillance. Australian and New Zealand cars would then pass through Tonga to be altered in chop shops. The serial numbers were changed and the holes in the roof were bogged up where the flashing light had been. The King of Tonga would then personally fly to New Zealand and Australia to collect his cut.

Tungī, King of Tonga.

"On one occasion, late one night in the 1980s, Tungī was collecting from a caravan in West Auckland. He knocked, announced who he was, and walked inside. The King of Tonga is a huge man who required two seats on a plane. The occupant wasn't small either but the caravan almost tipped over. He got his money as the suitcase slid to his feet."[16]

Esayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

An officer in training: "Apart from the cars, all the contraband got smuggled off the wharf in ambulances. The king of the waterfront in Wellington was Charlie Howsman, aka 'Champagne Charlie'. Cameras, jewellery, anything like that, he got it for you. The ambulance chief Major Stanley would say to Charlie, 'We need more money' and Charlie would go down to the wharf and pass the hat around. They thought he was collecting for the Wellington Free Ambulance. He'd go to the Waterloo Hotel and say, 'Give us your fucking money or you'll never get anything off the wharf again'.

"The Greeks approached him one night wanting his avenues of importation. He stood them down so they poisoned him. He got tired one night (poison), went home and was found dead the next morning (mid-70s). The ambulance would take any contraband off the wharf. I went to sleep one night in the back of the ambulance only to be woken up with a side of mutton being hiffed on me."

---

[16] The Australian 'pursuit' cars came into New Zealand under the royalty ticket with no duty paid, selling for NZ$70,000 with a $5,500 commission . . . as purchased by an apprentice butcher in Mission Bay with $800 per week repayments. These are combined statements of a car salesman and a Wharf Policeman . . . No vengeance please. You're all old players now and some of you are very rich.

The police show the public that they will make good use of any investment – quickly. From 1886, horses were trained in crowd control and were put to the test in the Hyde Park riots the same year. On 10 April 1935 the Met Forensic Science Laboratory opened at the Police College in Hendon. In 1938 the CoLP Criminal Records Office started. This held a Crime Index with records going back only one year. In 1939 there were 59 IRA explosions. These were solved by the Forensic Laboratory and blamed on 55 IRA.

In 1980 the Metropolitan Air Support Unit got its own helicopter, a Bell 222. In 1981, the Brixton racial riots made for the largest civil disturbance this century. Black youths rioted against the police, with the report stating police should share the blame for the breakdown in communications. The helicopter was in full use. In 1983 there is a bomb attack on Harrods and the helicopter was once again in full use, with more now on order. There were more riots in Brixton in 1985, further substantiating the use of the new helicopters.

> The search for cause and effect within the police resulted in some strange goings-on. They were constantly on the lookout for causes, which would bring the desired effect. This involved equipment, social policy, changes to the law, and increased police rights over civil rights. The search for the cause and desired effect outlines *all* police history . . . once bribes have been taken into account.

Brixton racial riots in 1981.

In 1867 the Metropolitan Police were severely criticised after the long-serving Commissioner Richard Mayne ignored a warning about the Clerkenwell Bombing attributed to the Fenians (the forerunner to the IRA). Commissioner Mayne (1829–68) had been one of two JPs in charge of the Met from its inception in 1829 and offered his resignation. This was refused but he died the following year (1868).

Clerkenwell Bombing.

In search of arms, the police were not immune to killing their own if the correct response to self-sabotage was not forthcoming. Assassination attempts on their Commissioners were not always genuine, although refusal to act as though they were resulted in retirement or a quiet and timely 'natural' death.

In 1898 there were a series of assaults and PC Baldwin was murdered. This resulted in the first calls to arm the Met Police with revolvers, but this did not occur for another 13 years. In 1909 PC William Tyler and a 10-year-old boy were shot dead by anarchists. Two anarchists commandeered a tram and exchanged shots with the police. This became known as the Tottenham Outrage and was a precursor for things to come. The Houndsditch police murders occurred in December 1910 and were soon followed up by the Sidney Street Siege in January 1911. These were also carried out by failed Russian revolutionaries who were training on British soil for their next revolution in October 1917.

In 1912 there was an assassination attempt on Commissioner Sir Edward R. Henry, author of *The Classification and Use of Fingerprints* (1900). Commissioner Henry then called for legislation to restrict the trade of pistols (1913), essentially requesting that the public be disarmed.

In 1892, dismissals, rank and pay reductions were common. This reduced morale and took the focus off careful police work. In 1895, in order to "pull the wool" over younger unsuspecting constables, the maximum age to join the force was reduced from 40 to 27, with the minimum age at 21. The minium height requirement was lifted to 5' 9" (3" above average) and applicants had to be able to read well, write legibly, be generally intelligent and free from bodily complaint. They were rejected for flat feet, stiff joints, narrow chests and facial deformities.

As a result, experienced police were being replaced with younger police at a lower wage who needed to be trained into a new detection system – the Alphonse Bertillon system of 1894 – in a new location, a New Scotland Yard from 1890, and coping with crime within the Police Force.

With the new age gap and many younger cops, the police were found to be stealing off each other, removing the identity from stolen goods, and lying to their superior officers. Crime amongst the police got so serious that in 1893 PC George Cooke was convicted and hanged for murder.

All through this time the police-issue boots were loathed. They had the effect of withdrawing attention from the environment and focusing it on sore feet encumbered by clumsy running. This made for slow, dim-witted police officers exhausted by their own uniforms. It helped to reduce the apprehended/convicted ratio and served to elevate the rate of nearby apprehended innocents. This further elevated public distrust and the 'public poor' viewed themselves as too easily accused to give assistance.

Only the Freemasons' Commissioner Sir Edward Bradford believed the police-issue boots were suitable and his belief served crime well. By 1899, in a population of 7 million, some 16,000 police had 32,000 aching feet. The police had another agenda altogether and ORDER OUT OF CHAOS was on the breakfast menu every day.

Commissioner Sir Edward Bradford's harsh discipline, insensitive handling of the men, and police-issue boots resulted in a disproportionately high rate of suicide amongst the police. In 1903 the hugely unpopular Commissioner Sir Edward Bradford retired. The police took off their boots and the focus moved off feet and returned to crime.

> In 1906 the Met Police were still working 13 days a fortnight with only 10 days' annual leave. This ensured that only the unintelligent joined, that the intelligent stayed away in droves, that crime was rarely solved, and there were plenty of police to be seen . . . seen but to little effect.

All officers who protected King Edward VII in his 1902 coronation

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March

were offered a medal, extra pay and extra leave. As a result, 512 retired officers rushed back to work for the offer and all got medals. The monarchy virtually buys sycophancy with metal and silk and names attached to a royal list.

In 1910, CoLP had 1181 men, with an additional 150 in Private Service who represented the best. From 1912, for the purposes of WWI, a third of the police volunteered for the war and the CoLP were reduced from six divisions to four. The police required the First Police Reserve (police pensioners), a Second Police Reserve (of untrained undisciplined civilian volunteers) and a Special Constabulary. First Police Reserve (retired cops) became the permanent police. The Second Police Reserve of 2000 ultimately became the Reserve and guarded searchlights, bridges and power stations, with 300 turning up after every air raid. They became a permanent organisation in 1912, two years before the outbreak of WWI. The Special Constabulary was used when there was a crime to be solved.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

In 1914, WWI broke out and the ten-day annual leave was suspended; 24,000 Special Constables were sworn in and by the end of the year there were 31,000 untrained Special Constables roaming the streets of Metropolitan London.

In November 1916 the Commissioner Sir Edward Henry threatened any police who joined a union would be dismissed. By 1917, 2300 members of the Metropolitan Police were serving in the armed services. On 30 August 1918, Britain's entire police force went on strike for better pay, conditions and union recognition . . . and Commissioner Henry resigned.

In 1919 the police pay was standardised when the British Government agreed to pay 33% of the police expenditure, but this still left the combined Mercers, Livery Company and City Corporation in control. It also meant the Guilds would never be charged for any crimes and gave them right of refusal to allow any dissenter a professional living.

This was a form of belated feudalism dating back to 1394 and gave the Mercers TOTAL SOCIAL CONTROL. The Mercers were hidden in a fabric of companies that controlled society and they were beyond contention. Their record of charity helped this. Currently there are

24,000 Liverymen in London operating 102 Livery Companies and donating over £38 million annually.

Women constables were accepted into the police for the first time in 1919 and began patrolling the streets in post-war peacetime. They specialised in assisting prostitutes, but by 1926 even they were needed for breeding, and repopulation reduced them to twenty.

Women Police Volunteer Service in 1914.

In 1922 Commissioner Brigadier-General Sir William Horwood admitted that many of the men taken into the force after the failed 1919 strike, and those from the armed forces, had neglected their beats and were prone to drunkenness with methylated spirits, resulting in 80 convictions that year. There was an attempt to assassinate Commissioner Horwood in 1926 and he retired two years later (1928).

**The right to drink in the Police Force
has been vehemently protected to this day.**

In 1928 the first police box was installed. These were fully installed by 1937 and still in use in the mid-1960s. These were large blue kiosks with a telephone and a light on top. This would flash (rather than ring) when the Petty Constable's superior wanted to speak with them. They were a major influence on the hit time-travel series *Dr Who*, and along with *Noddy*, captured the conformity, rigidity and supercilious nature of British culture. These comical foibles helped in naming the police 'wooden tops'.

Police Box. Dr Who.

British life: The real Police Box and Dr Who's time-travelling Police Box. In psychological terms life had become so downtrodden in the "uk", the population were 'splitting' and it was Dr Who that provided many with an alternative.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Culture let off steam with such serious puppet shows as *The Magic Roundabout*. With such strange surroundings taken in all seriousness, and with allegiance to the bisexual near-retarded King (1936–52) and the new Queen (1952–) the culture was rife for drugs. These exploded on the scene in the 1960s, creating a plethora of crime that could only be planned from an outside source with internal complicity.

Out of this strange predilection of conformity, monarchy, anti-crime solving and social engineering, came the biggest social engineers of all – drugs, social welfare, Political Correctness and the focused removal of fathers out of families, thus repeating the family structure that war and post-war had created.

Noddy and Big-Ears.

The Magic Roundabout.

By 1943, looting after air raids was endemic, peaking in 1944. It was survival of the fed, and all things could be traded. In 1947 the Met Police were short 4730 men and crime was at an all-time high. In 1954 the Met were still short 4000 men. Police were in short supply as all the men over 5' 7" were busy breeding and raising families, hence the short supply of breeding women in the Met as well. In 1951, 16–18-year-olds were trained as police cadets. As a result, crime escalated from 126,000 indictable offences in 1948 to 250,000 in 1964.

Freemason Detective Sergeant Harry Challenor was a West End Central officer who worked very closely with his Freemason CID colleagues. During his service he framed 26 young men, planting knives, hatchets, iron bars and explosive detonators on his innocent victims. In 1963 he framed a cluster of young men demonstrating against a visit from Queen Frederika of Greece. The accused were all cleared and Challenor was put on trial with three of his Freemason colleagues for "conspiring to pervert the course of justice".

The officers were all convicted and jailed for three years, but Challenor was detained in a mental hospital instead. During his service, none of his colleagues noted his lunacy but his excessive violence was noted. Other police held down his victims while he beat them with unimpeded brutality. In the 1960s, policemen exploited the Craft (Brotherhood of Freemasons) with excessive violence and were rewarded for the misery they imposed on others.[17]

Scottish Constable: "In the 1960s these old bastards turned up at Southampton claiming to be deserters from WWI. The trouble was they were. We tried to keep it a secret but the authorities found out. So we had to take them to France and Belgium, and give them a Cook's tour of where they'd been. We tried to get them to identify those who had hidden them while they deserted.

"They said 'No, I don't recognise anyone who helped me desert. They were all young with dark hair and everybody here is as old as I am.' After that we had to let them go. The Queen pardoned one of them because he had rejoined some colonial army at the beginning of WWII. There was no stopping them. They were as funny as a fight."

The police attempted to reduce crime by showing crime on TV and then sensationalising the effort they put into crime-solving with such programmes as *Z Cars* (Czars, SARS and 'stars upon thars'), *Softly Softly* and *The Professionals*, which was more about MI-5. Some of their stories were written by ex-MI-5 and were very close to actual scenarios.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

A common theme for *The Professionals* involved a foreign revolutionary leader, looking like a cross between Stalin, Hitler and Saddam Hussein, complete with dark moustache, arriving in London. He would be saved from attempts on his life by exiled refugees from his homeland. Bodie and Doyle would then go to great lengths to rescue the leader from his outraged fellow countrymen, save his mistress and son and swish them back to MI-6 at Heathrow Airport for their return home. Such was life in the great metropolis of London.

The Professionals.

---

[17] Paraphrased from Martin Short, *A Firm in a Firm: Freemasonry and Police Corruption*; James Report, *Home Office appointed Inquiry into the Challenor Affair*, HMSO 1965; Mary Grigg, *Challenor Case*, Penguin 1965; Gilbert Kelland, *Challenor*, *op. cit.*

> Social engineering was rife and its style was the sign of the times. The police were exacerbating crime by planting evidence and employing paranoid schizophrenics during the time fatherless WWII orphans were coming of age and non-integrating races were immigrating.
>
> It really was a shameful decade for the police, but no different from any other decade.

Commissioner John Waldron (1968–72) ousted 16 corrupt officers per year and in his final annual report (1971) he stated: "With deep and lasting traditions the Metropolitan Police is an impressive institution by every standard and in any company in the world."

He was replaced the following year by Commissioner Robert Mark (1972–77) who set up the A10 Squad and worked to restore the integrity of the Metropolitan Police. Within five years, 500 officers were dismissed as a result of 'restoring integrity'. Many of the dismissed officers were non-uniformed Freemasons (detectives, inspectors and above).

The problem of Freemasons forming a 'firm within a firm' was so bad that uniformed and non-uniformed officers had to be interchanged and officers were shuffled from area to area to stop them becoming intimate with the criminals and extorting them.

The criminals retaliated by stating that they were unavailable for interrogation as it was their Masonic Lodge night. The police were so dominated by Freemasons that the criminals bribed the police, joined their Masonic Lodges and then claimed brotherhood for cover. They were 'taught to be cautious', 'regular attenders', 'on the level', 'on the square' and 'part of the Craft'.

> This worked extremely well for the criminals for a century or more as the Masonic police used the same Craft phrases to talk to each other. The police and the criminals had formed a brotherhood based around Freemasonry.

Whenever Anglicans and Freemasons, or Catholics and Freemasons get together, they form an occult organisation. The Police Force is one of their best and most public examples, operating under a brotherhood of 'Blue Magic'.

Former Detective in Scotland Yard: "Freemasonry was the security blanket, the ultimate in comforters, for a network of crooked cops throughout the metropolis. Their fraternal bonds reassured them that they could rely on each other's absolute discretion. On that basis the 'firm in a firm' [Freemasons within the Police Force] provided whatever service was required. It could get criminal charges dropped against the guilty or ensure their acquittal. It could secure the conviction of men who did not pay bribes, or who got in the way of bigger fish who were paying. It could protect bribe-paying gangs by preventing their detection. It could even supply the direct participation of some policemen in serious crimes such as robbery. This standing conspiracy had several protective layers or shells.

1. Everyone in it was a policeman.
2. They were all detectives.
3. They were all corrupt.
4. Most were Freemasons."[18]

Metropolitan Chief Inspector Reginald Morrish (1911–37) worked in the CID for 16 years, winning 44 commendations and 18 awards. He also served in Scotland Yard's fraud and homicide squads, was a senior instructor at Hendon Police College (1943–70) and wrote several textbooks.

In 1933/34, as Detective Inspector, Reginald Morrish was the temp running the Croydon Division while the divisional inspector was off sick. "Looking through various registers and record books he became very suspicious of the way crimes were being recorded, so he carried out his own investigation. He concluded that the division's relatively high success rate for crime clearance was thoroughly bogus, because many crimes were being entered up as something else. A woman would have her handbag snatched, but this would be entered in the register as a case of 'Lost Property'. Many other entries were far more ingenious."[19]

This resembles the experience of Detective Constable Ron Walker of the Kent Constabulary who alleged that some colleagues had been rigging the force's crime 'clear-up' rate by persuading convicted prisoners to confess to crimes which they had not committed (1986).

Many police never solved a crime in their entire careers and one has to ask what many of them were doing. Certainly some were just walking the beat taking bribes, as in the case of Scotland Yard's Detective Inspector Leslie Alton (Freemason) who would walk into bookshops that sold porn and in a big voice say, "How much have you taken today?"

---

[18] Martin Short, *A Firm in a Firm: Freemasonry and Police Corruption*.

[19] *Ibid*.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

He'd then open the cash register, check the proceeds and take a percentage. When he came out, he said to his junior officer, "Discipline. That's what these people need, discipline."[20]

The police developed sayings like "A good rort is hard to beat . . . Nothing succeeds like an old rort replayed . . . A good rort is a thing of beauty". From their takings, the police would share the 'pinch' or the 'shout'. The 'pinch' was the goods and money found on a person and the 'shout' was goods and money from a search.

> The police were a rort on society and developed crime rather than solved it. The police were corrupt then and maintained their environments as revolutionary training grounds. Little has changed since 1900 and without their influence, crime would drop by 80%.

Spymaster: "A New Zealander that went to London to serve in their police used to return every year to take his annual leave. It amused me that on every return he was more seriously depressed, until finally he returned having been bitten by a police dog. He was depressed, almost to the point of being suicidal.

"I expressed concern about his mental state and he replied, 'It doesn't matter. I'm going into the anti-terrorism squad where I'll be rested'.

"He returned to London at the height of the terrrorist bombing [London Tube Bombings 07.07.2005] and I haven't seen him since. The notion of resting unsuitable or stressed police in anti-terrorism classifications is not new, but it comes with a huge risk.

"Soon after the bombing the Commissioner of the London Police was severely criticised by the Police Union for being so out of touch with his own uniformed squads. In the wake of the London Tube Bombings the Commissisoner made several grievous mistakes. Nearly all of these were made on the basis of believing the filed paperwork of his own anti-terrrorist squads.

"The only casualty by police was the shooting of the Brazilian electrician, Jean Charles de Menezes, who was shot seven times in the head at point-blank range on 22 July 2005."

In Golden Dawn coven language, the language that uses dates and numbers to give insight into history, 'point blank' equals "zero". De Menezes was shot 7 times at point-blank range until dead (007).

---

[20] Martin Short, *A Firm in a Firm: Freemasonry and Police Corruption*.

He was also shot on the ‘22nd’, meaning master, and he was Brazilian, meaning “the British remain the intelligence masters of Brazil”.

Spymaster: “I predicted the family would be readily paid off and they were.

“A Brazilian was chosen because England has a large version of Salon Kitty on the outskirts of São Paulo, Brazil, and another in Portugal. Both governments are very cooperative with Britain and have been for about 700 years. Brazil was freed from the Portuguese in 1822 by friendly British naval officers and Britain refers to these governments as ‘our oldest and dearest allies’, routinely murdering their citizens at the drop of a hat.

“The Police Commissioner began things badly by claiming that it was ‘a justifiable shooting’. A few short weeks later, he changed his tune to ‘it was an unjustified shooting’ and all police involved began blaming other police engaged in the operation.

“The Home Office hinted darkly that multiple charges of murder and conspiracy-murder could follow. In other words, nothing happened and nothing has changed.

“The London police are still the same disorganised rabble they’ve always been. The only difference is the lengths to which perjury is now provable, but this is NAP (not a problem) for the ghouls of MI-5, who are well capable of fitting up a patron saint on Easter Sunday.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

“It’s intriguing that the blame game is still being played so amateurishly after centuries of its inception. Unfortunately there is no modern version of the Luftwaffe to springclean clues and incinerate evidence, so diversionary tactics are used. This may involve a resurgence of the IRA, complete with its bomb-making prowess, courtesy of the RAF Engineering and Ordnance branch.”

The police are a secret society that wear a uniform
and call themselves a police force.
Few others do.

Pearl Harbor

Gifting America to Churchill for WWII

1921–7 December 1941

Pearl Harbor took 16 years to plan and it was either a masterstroke or a complete cock-up. Either way, all sides knew about it at the time. One method of drawing an ally into war is to give the mutual enemy (Japan) enough information to attack the ally (America) without retribution, thus giving the country attacked (America) a clear mandate to join the war. Pearl Harbor was just such a mission and it occurred with full British and American Chief of Staff knowledge.[1]

Britain started planning its next war in 1919 in order to utilise its existing military and to prevent them from getting restless and turning in on themselves and the nation. Britain planned a war with America and it was due to start in 1927. The conflict was based around 'naval tonnage', but was eventually settled with diplomacy and the *Washington Treaty.*

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

However, a plan to attack Pearl Harbor was commissioned by the British Admiralty and awarded to the consultant Hector C. Bywater, who came up with the *Bywater Plan* which involved dropping torpedoes from planes into Pearl Harbor. It was believed at the time that the harbour was too shallow at 12 metres, but Bywater correctly forecast that adapted torpedoes could be dropped safely and efficiently into the shallow harbour.

Hector C. Bywater (21 October 1884–17 August 1940) was an English and American journalist, author, and spy who could hold a packed pub-room in rapt attention when he told anecdotes. He wrote *Sea Power in the Pacific* and *The Great Pacific War* and knew more about the navies of the world than a roomful of admirals. He published numerous articles on Pacific strategy as the European naval correspondent for the *New York Herald*, the *Baltimore Sun* and *The New York Times.*

William H. Honan: "In 1925, sixteen years before Japanese forces

---

[1] A ten-page version of this history appeared in *Hitler Was a British Agent*, September 2005 (2nd edition, October 2006). Harry Elmer Barnes is acknowledged as writing the seminal history from which all other Pearl Harbor histories begin.

Yamamoto.

struck at Pearl Harbor, he published the plan for the attack on Pearl Harbor – *The Great Pacific War* . . . What Bywater wrote powerfully influenced Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto, the architect of the Pearl Harbor attack . . . who served as a naval attaché in Washington in the late 1920s. At least once Bywater and Yamamoto met face to face and whiled away an evening discussing the prospects for peace and war over a bottle of Scotch.”[2]

Yamamoto adapted the *Bywater Plan*, increased the attack on the Philippines and British possessions and grafted them onto the original attack plan against Hawaii. The adapted British *Bywater Plan* became the plan for Japan’s December 1941 attack on Pearl Harbor that brought America into the war.

Japan had problems with the date line and attacked the British in Malaya a day earlier than planned. They were firing guns and dropping bombs, yet the British kept it hush-hush. The British did not warn America that they, the British, were under attack. But even this was no surprise.

On 27 March 1941, the Japanese spy Takeo Yoshikawa arrived in Honolulu and began studying the American fleet at Pearl Harbor.

From 22 April 1941, “Six US Navy monitor stations from Dutch Harbor, Alaska, Samoa, Hawaii, Corregidor [deep underground Army/Navy base west of Manila] and two from San Francisco followed every move of [Vice-Admiral] Nagumo and the Akagi.”[3]

In Corregidor, 63 operators worked around the clock in 8-hour shifts to intercept, decode and translate the Japanese kata kana coded messages. They had the Purple machine for decoding and were close to Japan and its naval operations areas, so their radio signals were excellent.[4]

---

[2] William H. Honan, *Visions of Infamy*, xiii–8.

[3] Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit, The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, 2001, p. 262.

[4] *Ibid*., p. 186.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The translated Japanese messages were not sent to Pearl Harbor because that was not the name of the game. Lt.Cdr. Joseph Rochefort: “It was a pretty cheap price to pay for unifying the country.”[5]

On 17 November 1941, Joseph Grew, the US Ambassador to Japan, cabled the State Department stating that Japan had plans to attack Pearl Harbor, but his cable was ignored. This gave the US twenty days’ warning.

On 26 November 1941, a fleet of six aircraft carriers commanded by the Japanese Vice-Admiral Chuichi Nagumo left Hitokapu Bay for Pearl Harbor under strict radio silence, with the Japanese Navy launching their surprise attack on Pearl Harbor 11 days later on 7 December 1941 – 6 December Japanese time. The only surprise was to those patriots who had not been warned.

Although both British and American Chiefs of Staff knew about the planned attack on Pearl Harbor, the US twenty days beforehand, and the Brits eleven days beforehand, both wanted America to join the war and were waiting for an excuse. All they needed was a swing in public opinion. Before Pearl Harbor, 81% of Americans did not want to get into the war. After Pearl Harbor, 99% of Americans wanted to get into the war.

What is even more shameful is that those close to President Franklin D. Roosevelt could decipher the Japanese diplomatic code faster than the Japanese Embassy in Washington. Pearl Harbor was deliberate self-sabotage to draw America into WWII. This was to be repeated with the 9-11 Twin Towers and Pentagon bombing in 2001.

Roosevelt.

---

[5] *Ibid*., p. 203.

To achieve this end, M was used. The British contribution to the cover-up of events leading to the Pearl Harbor attack was called Operation SUBEND. Ian Fleming (33) was the naval control officer and Chris Creighton (17), with the nom de guerre ‘Leading Seaman John Davis’, was the sole boarding operative.

Ian Fleming later became the first commander of Operation JAMES BOND and Chris Creighton became the second. OP JB was the removal of Martin Bormann out of Berlin. When Ian Fleming left this operation halfway through, he moved onto Operation WINNIE THE POOH – the removal of Adolf Hitler out of Berlin on 2 May 1945 to Spain.

Since Germany’s invasion of Holland, Dutch submarines in the Pacific were a proxy for the British Royal Navy. They were doing tasks for the British and were under British control. The Dutch submarines were essentially a picket line watching for the Japanese battle fleet.

One of these Dutch submarines saw the Japanese battle fleet head towards Pearl Harbor and wired a storm warning to the British. The 17-year-old Chris Creighton was immediately flown to the Far East, plonked into a naval uniform and made a Brevet junior officer.[6] He boarded the Dutch submarine, delivered explosives disguised as gifts, and delaying devices for torpedo warheads. These blew up the Dutch submarine with all its crew. This prevented the Dutch from warning the Americans that the Japanese fleet was about to attack Pearl Harbor. Transcripts from Chris Creighton’s 1996 book read:

Ian Fleming in Room 10 of the Royal Navy Headquarters in London.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Ian Fleming: “Five minutes after midday on 28 November 1941, Dutch submarine K-XVII, commanded by Lieutenant-Commander Besançon, approaches a position in the Pacific, latitude 43° 30’ north, longitude 155° 20’ east, approximately 280 miles off north-east of Japan’s Tankan Bay. There she sights a fleet of Japanese warships. They’ve been making a three-leg zig-zag course. Commander Besançon correctly calculates this to be a course-made-good – a direct track – of 88° (true). This will bring them to Hawaii and Pearl Harbor eight hundred miles ahead.”[7]

Chris Creighton: “In November 1941 I alone had wiped out the entire ship’s company with two tiny cylinders of cyanide inserted into their oxygen supply, and a box of high explosives, disguised as whiskey, both timed to release their venomous contents when I was safely away. Those Dutch submariners’ only sin was that they had seen, and reported, the Japanese fleet sailing toward Pearl Harbor: news of it had to be suppressed, to ensure the attack went home and America came into the war, and it was deemed essential that the Dutchmen and their secret must die.”[8]

“I related how I had witnessed the destruction of K-XVII and all her crew, whom I had come to know well over the previous few days. I related how fused canisters of cyanide gas and high explosive had been taken aboard at my direction, disguised as Christmas gifts of food and drink from Queen Wilhelmina and our Admiral, Submarines, Sir Max Horton. From the safety of a Berwick flying boat I had watched as the aircraft suddenly shuddered, and an enormous explosion vomited out great spouts of water, together with broken-up crates of stores, bits of men, oil and oddments of equipment. It was as if a colossal underwater creature had swallowed a submarine, chewed up its human and mechanical contents, and then been violently sick.

---

[6] ‘Brevet’ signifies that it is an elevated title in use only for the duration of the Special Op. Chris Creighton’s first job was to destroy French and Belgian supply dumps (specifically fuel) in the path of the German army, but he failed to act as he was overwhelmed by the speed of the German attack. The Germans were dependent on stolen fuel for their advance.

[7] *OPJB*, p. 112.

[8] *OPJB*, p. 81.

"Above all, I wondered what they would say or do if they knew that their valiant submariners had been sacrificed simply because the highest authorities in Britain and America did not trust them to keep their mouths shut."[9]

James Bond then flew back to Britain in a clean-up operation to supervise and assist in the murders of the Royal Navy signals staff who had sighted the Dutch submarine *K-XVII's* signals. One of the women was attacked by a sex-criminal specifically paroled from His Majesty's prison for this purpose. Under police control and supervision the criminal was allowed to have his way with the woman before she was murdered.

Spymaster: "Hilda Murrell met with a similar fate in the 1980s during the hunt for the missing pages of the log of the HMS *Conqueror* which sunk the Argentine heavy cruiser the *Belgrano* as it attempted to surrender during the Falklands War."

Espavo Gozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This is called an 'intelligence-involved coup' – not dissimilar to 9-11 on 11 September 2001. Complicit enemy-attacks are the 'usual' method of bringing a third party ally into war. Operation SUBEND was a British 'war-escalating exercise', as was the sabotage of Hitler's peace initiatives of May, June, and July 1941. Conflict was to be prolonged and upscaled and America was to be drawn into the war. This was a British secret intelligence operation run by M.

In order to further cover up these 'Cover-Up Operations', the true identity of James Bond is being misconstrued and applied to lesser entities who could not have been involved in the Cover-Up Ops. As such, Buckingham Palace is dishing out press releases that apply the James Bond identity to others with such squeaky-clean records that they appear to be under-achievers, such as "Commander X" and the "Bond Inspiration Dies".

> A British war hero *said to have been* the inspiration behind secret agent James Bond has died age 90. Former Royal Navy Lieutenant Commander Patrick Dalzel-Job [1913–2003] carried out a series of daring exploits behind enemy lines during WWII including some while serving under Bond author Ian Fleming. Fleming *had told him* he was the model for the spy. In 1940, Dalzel-Job *disobeyed orders* in order to rescue all the women, children and elderly residents from a Norwegian town just before it was destroyed in a German bombing raid."[10]
>
> Commander X , a real-life Bond . . . Ernest Bond was . . . a tough founder member of the Special Air Service, he was known to the press in the 1970s as 'Commander X' (for security reasons Scotland Yard did not release his name) . . . and on the outbreak of WWII . . . he joined 'L Detachment' of the embroyonic SAS.[11]

There are a series of events which secure Pearl Harbor as a stitch-up with agreement from all sides – Britain, America, Japan and Germany. Hardly had WWII started when President Roosevelt (Freemason) wrote to Britain's First Lord of the Admiralty Winston Churchill (Freemason) suggesting they work together via a secret system of communication.

President Roosevelt, 11 September 1939: "What I want you and the Prime Minister to know is that I shall at all times welcome it, if you will keep me in touch personally with anything you want me to know about. You can always send sealed letters through your pouch or my pouch."

Churchill responded enthusiastically: "I am half American and the natural person to work with you. It is evident that we see eye to eye. Were I to become Prime Minister of Britain we could control the world." This happened eight months later on 10 May 1940 and the previous Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain died from 'cancer' six months after that on 9 November 1940.

A method of secret communication was agreed upon in which Roosevelt would sign himself "Potus" (President of the United States), and Churchill would sign himself "Former Naval Person". All the really important negotiations and agreements between Britain and the United States from September 1939 to 7 December 1941 (Pearl Harbor) were handled via diplomatic pouch or telegram, with over 2000 messages exchanged over 15 months.

Two recovered telegrams from this secret correspondence illustrate Roosevelt's desire to go to war. He states that the US could not be induced to enter the war on behalf of Poland.[12]

---

[9] *OPJB*, pp. 112–13.

[10] *New Zealand Herald*, 16 October 2003, B1. Author's emphasis.

[11] *Ibid*., 29–30 November 2003, A27.

[12] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 15.

Churchill responded: “Every chain has its weakest spot and the weak link in the Axis chain is Japan. Goad Japan into attacking the US and you will have the US in the war.” Roosevelt followed this strategy.[13]

Tyler Kent was everybody’s agent and his ideology followed the dick in his pants. His father had been the US Consul in Manchuria and Tyler had worked under the first American ambassador to the USSR as a cipher clerk. After shagging his NKVD interpreter he was transferred to London, spent time with the German agent Ludwig Matthias and the former Russian naval attaché Nikolai Wolkoff, took on Anna Wolkoff’s friend as a mistress, then worked directly under Churchill from 5 October 1939 encoding and decoding sensitive telegrams.

T. KENT.
2208 27.5.40

If Churchill wanted a triple agent to spread his message of war around the world, Tyler Kent was his man.

Tyler Kent was considered the weakest link in the chain and was used to inform the Russians and Germans of Britain and America’s intention to have Pearl Harbor attacked. His job done, Tyler Kent was arrested on 20 May 1940, as was his friend Nazi spy Anna Wolkoff, dressmaker to Wallis Simpson.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

At Tyler’s London flat, MI-5 found 1929 official documents, Churchill’s cables to Roosevelt and MI-5 and Special Branch books listing the names of people under surveillance. Tyler’s trial at the Old Bailey was in camera (secret with no spectators) and this prevented any information surfacing about Churchill and Roosevelt’s plan to have Pearl Harbor attacked.

During the spring and summer of 1941, in Europe and the Atlantic, Roosevelt did everything he could to provoke Germany and Italy into producing some “act of war” against an American ship. He even convoyed supplies and munitions to Britain and Russia illegally and with full advertisement, but neither Germany nor Italy would take the bait.

---

[13] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 15.

Prior to Pearl Harbor, American ships were immune to attack, despite their cargo, or who they were delivering it to. Germany and Japan knew of the *Lusitania* and weren’t about to repeat that mistake.

In January 1941 the Japanese sent an amazingly generous offer to the Americans with full Japanese authorisation offering to retire from the Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis (Italian, German, Japanese alliance) in return for peace with the United States. President Roosevelt and Secretary of State Cordell Hull rejected it.[14]

British and American joint-staff conferences were then held in Washington DC (January–March 1941) to arrange a plan for military collaboration called the ABC-1.

On 27 March 1941, America, Holland and Britain met in Singapore for a combined operating plan in the event of war. This resulted in the ADB (later known as the ABCD agreement) – If the Japanese moved southward beyond the arbitrary line of 100° East or 10° North, attacked, or threatened to attack British or Dutch possessions in the southwest Pacific, then the US would join them in war against Japan even though the Japanese had not attacked anything American . . . The US Atlantic Fleet was to assist Royal Navy convoy ships crossing the Atlantic. The ABC inextricably linked the US and British navies against Germany.

This ABCD agreement and resulting war plans (Rainbow 5 or WPL 46, and WPPac46) extended the range of possible provocations for US involvement in the war to anything Dutch or British, or across a demarcated line. By July 1941 this led *some* American military leaders to consider war in the southwest Pacific as a likelihood.[15]

The ABCD became an embarassment to Roosevelt who had won the election promising peace and had further stated that he would not go to war unless directly attacked by the Japanese. When Hitler did not attack Roosevelt’s illegal American war cargo ships, FDR was facing embarrassment. To bring about war, FDR did everything possible to prevent his Hawaiian commanders from taking any defensive action which would deter the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. President Roosevelt did everything he could to ensure Pearl Harbor was attacked and surprised as many people as possible, including the media, who had been pre-informed.

---

[14] Cordell Hull (1871–1955) received a one-year law degree in 1891 and was made a judge in 1903 (aged 31). After this, he was nicknamed ‘Judge’ by all and sundry. He served as Secretary of State from 1933–44 at which time he was 73 and retired due to ill health.

[15] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 17.

From March to November 1941, President Roosevelt encouraged Secretary of State Cordell Hull to stall any Japanese initiatives at peaceful settlement and to provoke Japan into war by strangulating their supplies. Japan lacked oil, iron and cotton and was dependent on overseas routes for supply, and US and European markets to supply them.

On 25–26 July 1941, Roosevelt froze all Japanese assets in the US and then placed an embargo on trade with Japan. He then encouraged the British and Dutch to follow suit. Japan faced economic strangulation unless it could get supplies from the southwest Pacific area, which it could only do now by force.[16]

On 9–12 August 1941, Churchill went to Argentia off the coast of Newfoundland and arranged the details for America to enter WWII via the back door (war with Japan), but with America's primary focus on Germany.

Churchill wanted immediate war but Roosevelt insisted on three months' grace to "baby" the Japanese along. He also wanted time for the Russians to take more heat off Britain, since Barbarossa had just begun (22 June 1941) and to extend the possibility that Germany and/or Italy might still provoke America into war in the Atlantic. This meeting and these issues were disguised as "The Atlantic Charter", the result of which was little more than a press release.

The next day, 13 August 1941, Roosevelt called in the Japanese ambassador to the US (Admiral Kichisaburo Nomura) and gave him an unprovoked and gratuitous tongue-lashing that sent the clear message that the US would not tolerate peace.

The Japanese peace party under Prime Minister Fumimaro Konoye was in power but was quickly replaced (two months later) with a war

---

[16] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 18.

party government under General Hideki Tojo on 16 October 1941.[17] The new Tojo government also offered excellent peace settlement terms the following month (November 1941), which protected all legitimate American interests in the Far East. Roosevelt also rejected these Japanese-instigated peace settlement terms.

From this point on, the US was counting down to the Great Pacific War as designed 25 years earlier by Hector C. Bywater, and nothing except a wide dissemination of truth could stop it. On 26 November 1941, President Roosevelt and Secretary of State Hull sent an ultimatum to Japan. In effect this was a frank and firm declaration of war ending all peace negotiations.

> "Roosevelt was one of the most determined war-mongers of all history . . . It is nearer to the truth to state that in his foreign policy Roosevelt was one of the more notable opportunists in the historical record."[18]
>
> "Steps were taken to ensure that the strategic Hawaiian commanders, General Walter C. Short and Admiral Husband E. Kimmel, would not be forewarned of any impending Japanese attack at Pearl Harbor."[19]

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"The overall protection of the Hawaiian District, including Pearl Harbor, was entrusted to General Short as commander-in-chief of the Hawaiian District . . . Admiral Kimmel was commander-in-chief of the Pacific fleet and the supreme naval authority at Pearl Harbor. His duties were primarily strategic and related to preparing naval hardware and personnel for controlling the mid-Pacific and, if necessary, moving the fleet both to protect Pearl Harbor and to wage war in accordance with orders from Washington based on WPL 46."[20] Admiral Kimmel had his own Fleet Intelligence service.

Admiral Claude C. Bloch, commander of the Fourteenth Naval District, was to protect the Pearl Harbor naval base and received all communications from Washington DC. He commanded the local Naval District at Pearl Harbor, as distinct from the fleet at the time of the Pearl Harbor attack, which was commanded by the ill-informed Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet, Admiral Husband E. Kimmel.

---

[17] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 19.

[18] *Ibid*., p. 21.

[19] *Ibid*., p. 20.

[20] *Ibid*.

Admiral Bloch acted in self-sabotage.
Admiral Kimmel acted in ignorance.

Commander Joseph J. Rochefort headed the Naval Communications Intelligence staff and was under Admiral Bloch's control.

Warnings of any attack were to be sent by General Marshall directly to General Short and warnings from Admiral Stark were to be sent directly to Admiral Kimmel. All parties were supposed to illuminate General Short and Admiral Kimmel. Instead, both were kept in the dark.[21]

> From 13 August to 11 December 1941, Roosevelt followed a combined policy of announcing peaceful intentions to the public while planning for war through diplomatic circles (anti-diplomacy). He informed the American public that he was determined to keep the peace and that everything he did was "short of war" and designed to keep America out of the war. At the same time, his diplomacy with Japan was provocative of war and he told Churchill he would bring the United States into the war as soon as possible.

"No top military or civilian authority in Washington on December 7, 1941, should have been surprised at either the place or time of the Japanese attack on the Pacific fleet at Pearl Harbor. The only element of surprise, if any, should have been over the damage that the Japanese planes delivered to the fleet."[22]

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

According to Colonel Carlton Ketchum, warnings began in early fall of 1941 and the sources included the Dutch Embassy, Dutch Secret Service and British Secret Service. President Roosevelt even received a warning from a government agency in Japan. Roosevelt passed these warnings on to FBI Chief J. Edgar Hoover, Secretary Knox and Secretary of War Stimson. Further briefing from President Roosevelt prevented all three from passing these warnings on to the commanders in the Pacific or to the FBI men stationed in the Pacific.[23] Many naval officers then confirmed that Roosevelt knew of the attack beforehand.

Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew: "We knew well in advance that the Japanese were going to attack. At least nine months before the Japanese attack upon Pearl Harbor, I was assigned to prepare for it . . . [I] was

---

[21] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 20.

[22] *Ibid*., pp. 21–22.

[23] John Toland, *Infamy: Pearl Harbor and its Aftermath*, Berkeley, 1986, p. 343.

under direct orders of President Roosevelt. [I] was ordered to withhold from commanders in Hawaii vital intelligence relating to the location of the Japanese fleet . . . Pearl Harbor is an example of how a small group of men in control of government has the power to destroy the life, property and freedom of its citizens."[24]

The Yanks dug horizontal trenches across the fields at the back of Maui 18 months before the attack. Permission for the trenches was obtained by a US Government official who frankly explained that they were being built for the war against Japan. When the Japanese planes tried to land, they crashed as this officer predicted they would.

The FBI then watched the Japanese burning cable traffic in their embassy on 17 November 1941, 20 days before Pearl Harbor.

> One of the [British] XX-Committee's first and most important double agents was a thirty-year-old Yugoslav businessman named Dusko Popov. A member of a well-to-do royalist family, Popov had been approached by the Abwehr at the outbreak of the war [he regularly had lunch with the chief of Paris Gestapo] with the suggestion that his family's political ambitions might be enhanced if he worked for Germany as a spy against the British. Popov agreed – and promptly informed the MI-6 representative in Belgrade of his Abwehr connections. He arrived in England on December 20, 1940, and made a 'most favourable impression' when closely questioned by the British secret intelligence services. He was then passed on to the XX-Committee and rechristened 'Tricycle' [his German codename was 'Disco'] and he opened up secret communications with the Abwehr in Lisbon.
>
> He established himself as a highly placed agent in England; and in the next several months he supplied the Abwehr with a great deal of information fabricated by the XX-Committee that beclouded all German estimates about British strength for the remainder of the war.
>
> Then in June 1941, the Abwehr, pleased with Disco's [Tricycle's] performance in Britain, instructed him to go to America on an espionage mission to investigate in detail, among other targets, the air, military and naval installations at Pearl Harbor, which the Japanese had asked the Abwehr to

---

[24] Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew as paraphrased by Roger A. Stolley in the *Journal for Historical Review*, 1992, "Pearl Harbor Attack No Surprise".

> reconnoitre because of the difficulties that ethnic Japanese agents in Hawaii were encountering.
>
> Popov informed the XX-Committee of his assignment and, through the American Embassy, the XX-Committee informed the FBI. The Abwehr questionnaire, which was designed to guide Popov in his reconnaissance, was also passed on to the FBI. But shortly after Popov arrived in the United States by Pan American Clipper from Lisbon on August 24, 1941, he encountered the full wrath of the director of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover.[25]

Spymaster: "J. Edgar Hoover, a 33 degree Mason, was just as blackmailed by the Nazis as he was by the Mafia, who in his eyes, didn't exist, even though they managed to sodomise him and film it every week."

"Hoover did not want agents of any foreign power working in America. At their only meeting, he treated Popov with disgust, and declared that – according to Popov – 'I can catch spies without your or anybody else's help'. He accused Popov of being 'Like all double agents. You're begging for information to sell to your German friends so that you can make a lot of money and be a playboy.'

"Popov, who had taken a woman friend to Florida for a holiday, would find himself threatened with prosecution under the Mann Act [the illegal transportation of women across a state line for the purposes of sexual intercourse], and agents of the Internal Revenue Service were also set on him.

J. Edgar Hoover, Director of the FBI: another homosexual bureaucrat bribed into treason by the extramural activities of his arse.

"… The British extricated him … with the IRS hot on his heels … and the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor. Although the American government had some foreknowledge from other intelligence sources of the impending attack, notably from its naval cryptanalytical bureau in Room 1649 of the Navy Department on Constitution Avenue in Washington . . . The United States declared war upon the Axis powers, and for Churchill, America's entry into the conflict was the answer to a constant prayer."[26]

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

---

[25] *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 60–61.

[26] *Ibid*.

The 1940 Build-Up to Pearl Harbor

30 March: US seized Axis ships (Germany, Japan, Italy) in US ports.

8 April: British invaded Norwegian territorial waters and pushed ships carrying iron ore into international waters.

9 April: Germany attacked Scandinavia.

24 April: US Neutrality Patrol was extended east to 26° W (Iceland) and 20° S (almost to Rio).

5 July: The US placed a ban on strategic materials to Japan.

27 August: The draft (compulsory military service) was established in the US.

25 Sept: Oil exports to Japan were reduced.

27 Sept: Japan joined German and Italian Axis in Tripartite Pact.

In the Pacific, the US was considered to have a very strong Navy and Naval Air Force defense and was capable of long-range offensive operations. Even the small portion of the US Naval Force was capable of threatening Japan's southern supply routes. A. H. McCollum's 7 October 1940 'Memorandum to the Directors' read:

"A. Make an arrangement with Britain for the use of British bases in the Pacific, particularly Singapore.

B. Make an arrangement with Holland for the use of base facilities and acquisitions of supplies in the Dutch East Indies.

C. Give all possible aid to the Chinese Government of Chiang-Kai-Shek.

D. Send a division of long range heavy cruisers to the Orient, Philippines, or Singapore.

E. Send two divisions of submarines to the Orient.

F. Keep the main strength of the US Fleet now in the Pacific in the vicinity of the Hawaiian Islands.

G. Insist that the Dutch refuse to grant Japanese demands for undue economic concessions, particularly oil.

H. Completely embargo all US trade with Japan, in collaboration with a similar embargo imposed by the British Empire.

I. If by these means Japan could be led to commit an overt act of war, so much the better. At all events we must be fully prepared to accept the threat of war."

The 1941 Build-Up to Pearl Harbor

January: US go to China to assist in a Chinese invasion of Japan.

29 May: US Neutrality Patrol was extended to the north, central and southern Atlantic.

12 June: US Naval Reserve was called to active duty.

14 June: US froze German and Italian assets.

16 June: US closed German & Italian consulates in US & Hawaii, but left the Japanese Consulate open, allowing Japanese to continue gathering military intelligence & monitor US fleet movements.

2 July: Japan called up one million army conscripts.

24 July: Japan occupied French Indochina (including Vietnam). This was approved by the Vichy French (the French who backed Hitler).

26 July: US froze Japanese assets & stopped oil exports to Japan.

4 Oct: US suspended all oil shipments to Japan.

5 Oct: US & British commanders had another Naval Conference in Singapore.

8 Oct: US advised its citizens to leave the Far East.

14 Oct: US sent 3 passenger ships to Japan & China to collect its citizens.

4 Nov: Cash & Carry amendment to the Neutrality Act allowed US to supply munitions to Allies.

10 Nov: US begin escorting British troops. The first is 20,000 British troops sailing from Halifax, Canada to the Far East.

10–20 Nov: US DDs (destroyers) made certain sound contact and attacked.

11 Nov: US Navy ordered to attack any vessel threatening US shipping.

13 Nov: Neutrality Act amended & armed US ships enter war zones.

17 Nov: 38 escort carriers transferred to Britain as part of Lend-Lease. The first is the *Archer* (BAVG 1).

20 Nov: Japan had been occupying Northern China from 1931 and issued an ultimatium to the US demanding supply of oil and withdrawal of support for the invasion of Japan from China. Japan later confirmed oil and US steel blockade were primary reason for bombing Pearl Harbor.

25 Nov: US troops left for Dutch Guiana with the excuse they're protecting Guiana's bauxite mines.

5 Dec: Churchill declared war on Finland in order to gratify Stalin who invaded on 30 November 1939.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

China and America threaten to invade Japan and force Pearl Harbor

In January 1941 the US went to China to help with their defence against the Japanese invasion. The Chinese had begun to extend their runways in North China that faced towards Japan and Japan didn't pick this up straight away. On 15 April 1941, President Roosevelt authorised the American Volunteer Group (later known as the 'Flying Tigers') and supplied these pilots to the Chinese government. Most of these came from the Navy and Marine Corps and towards the end of 1941 the US were making noises about extending the AVG.

Spymaster: "When the US started advertising for pilots with multi-engine experience to fly Lockheed Hudsons, the Japanese became alarmed and started to cast around America to see what was on order in the American defence works. They uncovered a large contract to manufacture incendiary bombs. These were paid for by the British.

"The Japanese then checked the runways in North China and concluded that the Chinese were going to launch an attack against Japan from these new runways, with British and American backing. The Japanese concluded that the date of the attack was to be January 1942. From this they knew they had to attack Pearl Harbor beforehand, so they attacked in early December 1941."

America had advertised for pilots and built the runways knowing that it would force the Japanese to attack Pearl Harbor before January 1942.

Japan Attacks

On 26 November 1941, America replied, citing self-determination but the Japanese fleet had already sailed for the Pearl Harbor attack that morning. They carried the world's best dive bombers, fighter planes and torpedo bombers, whose torpedoes had been adapted with wooden fins.

It was thought that Pearl Harbor was too shallow to launch torpedoes. The anchorage was only 12 metres deep and torpedoes dropped from planes sunk to 20 metres before beginning their run. But the Japanese tested torpedoes with wooden fins at Kagoshima Bay. This gave them extra bouyancy and the strike rate reached 70%. The British knew of these successful torpedo tests but suppressed the news from their own navy. The news that the Japanese had a new deadly long-range torpedo that ran close to the surface arrived with the first torpedo.

"Not the best way to find out, old chaps."

The wisdom from all sides was that making a surprise attack against Pearl Harbor some 4000 miles away (6500 km) was virtually impossible. The only way this could be done was with complicity from all sides – so Japan was given complicity from all sides.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

The Japanese instigated increasingly hostile diplomatic messages with America. This alerted American and British spies to focus on Japanese activities. At the same time, Japan brought its six largest aircraft carriers carrying 423 warplanes to the Kurile Islands in northeast Japan. This could not pass unnoticed. It did not pass unnoticed, and those who noticed were silenced or killed by either the British or Americans.

US cruisers had been patrolling the movements of war-active men on the eastern seaboard for foreign men-of-war since 4 September 1939. They did not miss six aircraft carriers and 30 submarines leaving Hitokapu Bay in Japan on 26 November 1941, but they were under American orders not to report it.

Japanese soldiers were dressed in naval uniform and told to wander around large Japanese cities. They were well supplied with spending money and told not to get drunk or sing army songs.

Fake Japanese radio traffic was set up so that these ships appeared

to be in port. Meanwhile, the Japanese strike force stayed north of the shipping lanes as it sailed eastwards, going at 13 knots so that its refuelling ships could keep up. After ten days' sailing they arrived in position northeast of Hawaii on 6 December 1941. They were spotted by the Dutch submarine *K-XVII* during this time. When the British were alerted, they sank the Dutch submarine and did not alert the Americans at Pearl Harbor.

At 3.42 am on 7 December 1941 the minesweeper USS *Condor* spotted a two-man midget submarine. The USS *Ward* was summoned and the contact reported. Kimmel was not immediately notified and the base was not alerted. Here was smoking gun evidence of a grande coup. By this time it was known that the Japanese fleet had sailed, but not by their target – the US Navy.

Roosevelt Knew

Many historians now say President Roosevelt knew when and where the attack was coming from and was ensuring it would happen so that America had sufficient excuse to join WWII.

> "The Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor was instigated by the US, Britain and Holland when they cut off all shipping into and out of Japan, threatening its people with starvation."[27]

Dutch naval attaché Captain Ranneft was frequently allowed into the Naval Intelligence Office in San Francisco. Here, Robert Ogg had been plotting the location of the Japanese fleet on a chart of the north Pacific from 30 November 1941. On 3 December 1941, Captain Ranneft was told by Robert Ogg that they had tracked two Japanese carriers from their radio emissions. Captain Ranneft returned on 6 December 1941 and Robert Ogg showed him the new location of the carriers, "two hundred miles from Pearl Harbor".[28]

---

[27] Hartford van Dyke, *The Skeleton in Uncle Sam's Closet*, August 1973, Newspaper reprint edition, 1975. Hartford van Dyke is now a political prisoner held in a federal prison in Waseca, Minnesota. His great-uncle was Army Intelligence Officer Gerald Mason van Dyke, based in Hawaii on 7 December 1941. Sourced from Joan d'Arc's article "The Skeleton in Uncle Sam's Closet, Hartford Van Dyke and the Truth About Pearl Harbor", *Paranoia* magazine, 2003.

[28] Sourced by John Toland. Also based on Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit*, *The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, Simon & Schuster, 2001. *Day of Decei*t is based on National Archives documents and Naval Intelligence files acquired through persistent FOIA requests from 1983, which were finally declassified under Janet Reno's administration in 1994. As of 2001, another 43,000 Japanese messages remain classified.

Based in Pearl Harbor, Army Intelligence Officer Mason Van Dyke had foreknowledge of the Pearl Harbor attack and sent his warning to Washington DC at 2.00 pm on 4 December 1941. Due to the time difference, his message was received in Washington around 7.00 pm by Rear Admiral Paulus Prince Powell, who then notified Secretary of Navy Frank Knox, who then contacted Secretary of War Henry Stimson, who contacted President Roosevelt, who then reported it to Naval Intelligence in Washington.

Secretary of Navy Frank Knox wanted to move the Navy out and set up a defense perimeter around the islands. Undersecretary of Navy James Vincent Forrestal also wanted to act defensively.

President Roosevelt then placed Secretary of Navy Knox, Undersecretary of Navy Forrestal, and Rear Admiral Powell under armed Marine guard until after the Pearl Harbor attack.

President Roosevelt then sent a message to Intelligence officer Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew at Army Intelligence in Hawaii: "The Japanese will attack, do not prepare defenses, we need the full support of the American Nation in a wartime effort by an unprovoked attack upon the Nation."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew: "We knew well in advance that the Japanese were going to attack. It was a lie that we didn't have direct radio communication with Washington DC. Not only did my office have direct radio communications, but so did the territorial government and the FBI . . . The responsibility for Pearl Harbor rests upon five men: Franklin D. **Roosevelt**; Gen. George C. **Marshall**; Harold R. **Stark** (Chief of Naval Operations); Col. Kindall J. **Fielder**, G-2, under General Short; and Clifford M. **Andrew**."[29]

At 5.00 pm on Friday 5 December 1941 Army Intelligence Officer Mason Van Dyke warned his nephew (Hartford van Dyke's father) that the Japanese would attack, most probably on Sunday 7 December 1941. He also told his nephew the Intelligence Department in Washington had been warned . . . but America would stand down.

Al Bielik: "We went to San Francisco on December 5th. We were to return to Pearl Harbor. We were about to board a plane at a Naval Air Station at Alameda and we were stopped. Naval Captain said, 'Your orders are cancelled'. We were taken to a room and we were interviewed by then Director of the Office of Naval Engineering, Al Bowen Snr., who told us that, 'We expect the Japanese to attack Pearl Harbor within 48 to 72 hours. We consider you people too valuable to send back there, so stay in San Francisco'; which we did and we returned to the Institute in 1942 and of course Pearl Harbor and December 7th is history . . . Pearl Harbor was a complete set-up order by Roosevelt to have an attack on the United States in order to get us into the war. That's the bottom line. There's plenty of evidence after the war was over, when they started investigating the records, and it was published ultimately in the papers."[30]

Rear Admiral Powell speaking to Army Intelligence Officer Mason Van Dyke in 1960: "It was one of the most dastardly things any president or king has ever done in the history of the world. And there's no way to keep it from happening again."[31]

To support America joining the war, but not being taken out of contention on the first day, America took passive precautions and five of its six aircraft carriers were removed from Ford Island Pearl Harbor between 26 and 28 November 1941.

Ford Island Pearl Harbor on 10 November 1941.

---

[29] Paraphrased by Roger A. Stolley in "Pearl Harbor Attack No Surprise", *Journal of Historical Review*, 1992.

[30] Alfred 'Al' Bielik interviewed in 1993 with Art Bell on Coast to Coast Radio, KDWN, Las Vegas, Tape No. 960809C. Bielik (b. 4 Aug. 1916) was an electronic engineer, earnt a PhD in Physics and was given a commission in the US Navy as Edward Cameron in September 1939. He enlisted as JG and was inducted into the Institute of Advanced Study. His father, Mr Cameron, headed the Coast Guard Academy.

[31] Hartford van Dyke, *The Skeleton in Uncle Sam's Closet*.

For years before the attack on Pearl Harbor, naval manoeuvres had been held off the island of Oahu (Hawaii) to test the feasibility of a Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. The practicality of a surprise attack from Japan was continually confirmed. From 1932, dummy surprise air attacks were able to be executed while operating only 60 miles off Pearl Harbor, and in 1938 a successful dummy surprise air attack was launched 100 miles off Pearl Harbor from the aircraft carrier *Saratoga*.

In April 1941, Pearl Harbor's Commanders of the Army, General Frederick L. Martin, and Commander of the Navy air forces, Admiral Patrick N. L. Bellinger, described in detail any future Japanese air attack. This was forwarded to the Army and Navy HQs in Washington who did nothing responsive with it.

Fleet Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto.

Yamamoto's Japanese attack eight months later from 200 miles (320 km) off Pearl Harbor turned out to be "identical" to General Martin and Admiral Bellinger's plan. This suggests a purposeful leak from the American High Command direct to Japan.

Rear Admiral James O. Richardson in 1938.

Long before Admiral Kimmel assumed command at Pearl Harbor (January 1941), it was basic Pacific naval strategy to accept that any Japanese-initiated war would strike first at the Pearl Harbor fleet. This was emphasised and affirmed to Washington by General Hugh Drum (1935), General George V. Strong (1940) and by Commander Arthur N. McCollum, head of the Far Eastern Section of Naval Intelligence (1941).[32]

The American Pacific fleet was actually based in the relative safety of San Diego prior to the spring (March) of 1940 and was moved to Pearl Harbor as Roosevelt's best incitement into war.

---

[32] Sourced from *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, pp. 22–23.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Admiral Kimmel.

Admiral James O. Richardson, an able commander of the Pacific Fleet (until January 1941) bitterly protested the fleet's permanent retention at Pearl Harbor, after the manoeuvres in the spring of 1940 exposed Pearl Harbor as "a damned mouse trap" for the American Navy. Within ten months Admiral Richardson (quoted) was strategically removed for his remarks and replaced by Admiral Kimmel.

In January 1941, Joseph C. Grew, the American Ambassador in Tokyo, made a precise statement that he had received a friendly warning from the Peruvian Minister in Tokyo saying he had obtained information from several sources that if Japan could not reach peaceful negotiations with the US, they would start war with a surprise attack on Pearl Harbor. In Washington, only the Secretary of the Navy, Frank Knox, took this warning seriously. After the Pearl Harbor attack, Washington authorities tried to cover up by presenting their Tokyo ambassadors' statements as "worthless hearsay".[33]

"From September 1941 to 7 December, Washington authorities intercepted considerable Japanese intelligence traffic between Tokyo and Honolulu that obviously and specifically indicated that in the event of war between Japan and the US, the first Japanese move would be a surprise attack on the Pacific fleet at Pearl Harbor. These messages were so prolific they became known as the "Bomb Plot" messages and consisted of requests from the Japanese Government in Tokyo to the Japanese Consul-General in Honolulu, Nagoa Kita, for detailed and specific information as to the nature, number and types of vessels in the Pacific fleet at Pearl Harbor, their location and movements, and other relevant information connected with the American military establishment located there, together with Kita's replies to these requests. This intelligence traffic between Tokyo to Kita in Honolulu became more frequent and detailed as 7 December approached."[34]

---

[33] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 23.

[34] *Ibid*, p. 24, slightly paraphrased for readability.

The first of these messages was sent in the easy-to-read J-19 Japanese code on 24 September 1941 and was read on 9 October at Washington DC. From this point on, Washington was in no doubt that Japan was planning to bomb Pearl Harbor if negotiations failed. Roosevelt responded by purposefully sabotaging negotiations. When the peaceful Konoye government was replaced with the warring Tojo government (16 October 1941), the Japanese espionage reports from Honolulu were sent at more frequent intervals.

On 15 November 1941 these reports were sent twice a week. On 18 November and again on 20 November, Tokyo requested the positions (grids and coordinates) of all warships anchored in and around Pearl Harbor. On 29 November, Tokyo ordered an update, although no ships had moved.

Japanese spies were frequently detected making routine and trivial inquiries at other leading American naval bases, but the Japanese did not demand detailed information anywhere except at Pearl Harbor.

Washington officials in the army and navy, President Roosevelt and Secretary of State Hull were privy to all of this intelligence traffic and all of them knew of the Japanese Bomb Plot and that the focus was on Pearl Harbor.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

On 3 December 1941, Japan sent a message to Nagoa Kita, the Japanese Consul-General in Honolulu:

> "The Japanese task force was nearing Pearl Harbor and was expected to arrive off Hawaii by the night of 6 December."

The same day, Nagoa Kita replied to Tokyo saying that he had set up an elaborate system of window code signals at Lanikai Beach, easily visible to boats off the coast. He signalled passing Japanese fishing craft and submarines, who passed the information back to the Japanese task force. He also sent the final and decisive Bomb Plot message to Tokyo. By 6 December it was decoded, translated and available for distribution. At 2.30 pm it was in the communications section of the Navy Department in Washington.

> On the heels of processing the Kita message came instructions that the Japanese embassy in Washington was to reply to Hull's ultimatum. The 14-point message was decoded by 6 December (Purple code) and showed that the negotiations with Hull were over. There was no doubt that Japan would attack the United States in a matter of hours.
>
> A copy was delivered to Roosevelt and Harry Hopkins at the White House about nine o'clock that night. After reading it, Roosevelt acknowledged that it meant war, but he took no steps to warn Pearl Harbor. Admiral Kimmel and General Short should have been warned at once, but they were not.

The 14-point message was intercepted as it arrived by the army monitoring station at Fort Hunt, Virginia on 3 December. They were then decoded by Mrs Dorothy Edgers of Naval Communications in Washington (8.00 am–2.00 pm, 6 December). She then handed the decode to her immediate superior Yeoman Bryant, adding that she believed the points were *very* important. Yeoman Bryant read the ready-to-read messages and handed them to his chief of section, Commander Alwyn D. Kramer (2.30 pm, 6 December 1941) who was in charge of the translation work for the Far East section of Naval Communications.

> The decoded, translated and ready-to-read messages confirmed Pearl Harbor as the place of the attack and that there would be no more signals after midnight 6 December 1941. It also clearly stated that Admiral Chiuchi Nagumo (who commanded the Japanese task force) was moving toward Pearl Harbor, intended to organise off Oahu that night, and was ready to attack the next morning.

Commander Kramer showed the message to some leading officers in the navy and army. Its importance was recognised and he was ordered to suppress it for the time being, thus rendering it useless. Commander Kramer then thought the message was messy and tried to rework it with the intention of sending it on Monday 8 December 1941. Commander Kramer dithered and did not distribute the message commensurate with its importance (America going to war within 24 hours). At best, he distributed the message to a few top-level civil and military officials. Commander Kramer's actions were treason-with-complicit-pedantic-excuses.

By early evening on 6 December 1941 the top officials in Washington and in the army and navy knew that Japan was going to bomb Pearl Harbor the next morning, yet they did not inform Admiral Husband E. Kimmel and General Walter C. Short of the time or place of the attack

(Pearl Harbor before 7.30 am). This was self-sabotage and confirms that American High Command had no intention to commit to peace. Peace was merely sold as the most expedient way of winning an election. After all, Roosevelt had been the president for some time – since 1933, until his death in the spring (12 April) of 1945 at Warm Springs.

When Commander Kramer was questioned in the post-Pearl Harbor investigations, he was the most severely intimidated of all witnesses, to the extent that he had a nervous breakdown. He has also declined to answer any questions during his retirement, all of which was planned. Yeoman Bryant was present at the Pearl Harbor enquiry, but was not called to testify. His testimony would have clarified the truth of the matter.

When Commander Alwyn D. Kramer read the first decoded message on 9 October 1941 he noted it was very significant and required further study. The able, forthright and experienced Director of the Office of Naval Information, Captain Alan G. Kirk, then insisted the message be sent to Admiral Kimmel at Pearl Harbor. This action was blocked by Admiral Richmond Kelly Turner who was supported by Admiral Stark.

Admiral Turner was unpardonably ignorant about Pearl Harbor's intercepting facilities, believing they had a Purple machine that read Japanese diplomatic messages on the spot. His ignorance of the details of the cryptanalytic set-up and operations at Pearl Harbor was only exceeded by his arrogant self-confidence. Admiral Turner was very able, but way too sure of himself. As a conceited Admiral he was part of the Illuminati's venture capital in the creation of war.

Admiral Turner.

Admiral Turner often dominated Admiral Stark in naval decisions. As a consequence, Stark backed Turner up in not sending the message. This was contrary to his promise to Admiral Kimmel in Honolulu "to provide complete and speedy information".

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Admiral Stark receives a medal from President Roosevelt in April 1942; and sitting comfortably next to Secretary of Navy Frank Knox in 1943. In American war politics, treason gets the medal and protest gets treason.

Frustrated and disgusted, Captain Kirk left his post and sought the sea duty he needed to become an admiral, later rendering distinguished service in Europe.

The situation in the Office of Naval Intelligence was purposefully confused in 1941. By the end of October 1941 there had been four successive chiefs of the organisation (Captains Anderson, James, Kirk and Wilkinson). Amongst the Office of Naval Intelligence this came to be known as "the October Revolution".[35]

There was an attempt to record that Captain Kirk had left his post as Director of Office of Naval Intelligence before 9 October 1941 by falsifying the 1941 Naval Intelligence records. This was similar to the cover-up of the Jack the Ripper murders, but eight times faster. Such events can only be directed from the highest levels of self-espionage.

On top of this there was a rapid turnover of Commander-in-Chief, United States Fleet with eight commanders in 10 years, six of them lasting an average of 10 months.

It has never been adequately explained why these Bomb Plot messages were not sent to Hawaii by the Washington authorities to be used by Kimmel and Short to prepare for the Japanese attack – except in the light of American political and naval self-sabotage.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

In 1962, Captain Kirk (retired) was living in New York. Author and historian Harry Elmer Barnes (American) made an appointment to interview Kirk, but Kirk delayed (he said "for full preparation" – yeah right!) and was quickly appointed as the American ambassador to Formosa (Taiwan). Captain Kirk swiftly retired (due to ill health) and then died.

Those who hold secrets are promoted and those who waver on their secrets are killed. Captain Kirk's death was certainly timely.

The same self-sabotage occurred in other levels of military intelligence. The army also obtained these messages and were impressed and alarmed. Chief of the Far Eastern section of Military Intelligence, Colonel Rufus S. Bratton delivered the original (9 October 1941) Bomb Plot message to Secretary of War Stimson, General Marshall and Chief of the War Plans division of the Army, General Leonard T. Gerow.

---

[35] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 29.

These messages were discussed by officers in Military Intelligence and the Signal Corps. They recognised the need to send them to General Short at Fort Shafter in Hawaii but they had the same problem as the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI). They could not get the message past General Marshall to General Short.

General George Catlett Marshall was also responsible for the slow transmission of the Bomb Plot messages from MS5 at Fort Shafter to Washington, having them sent by China Clipper (every two weeks by sea) or by ordinary boat mail, when they should have been sent immediately by cablegram or RCA radiogram.

PSNY 3-7-41 26M

Original

U. NAVAL AIR STATION, KODIAK LASKA
NAVAL COMMUNICATIONS

Heading: NFC NR 63 F L Z F5L 071830 C8Q TART 0 BT

From: CINCPAC

Date: 7 DEC 41

To: ALL SHIPS PRESENT AT HAWAIIN AREA.

Info: - U R G E N T -

DEFERRED unless otherwise checked | ROUTINE.......... | PRIORITY.......... | AIRMAIL..........

AIRRAID ON REARLHARBOR X THIS IS NO DRILL

The American High Command refused to give General Short and Admiral Kimmel the vitally important Bomb Plot messages. General Short and Admiral Kimmel were both victims of a 'self-sabotage delayed information programme' that ensured the American Fleet would be attacked at Pearl Harbor.

The Americans had decrypted the J-19 and PA-K2 diplomatic codes very early on in the piece. They had also broken the secret Japanese diplomatic code by May 1940 and the Japanese Purple diplomatic code by mid-August 1940.

The day after Pearl Harbor, President Roosevelt delivered his "Day of Infamy" oration (8 December 1941). The legends and rhetoric of that day still ring in American minds, but half of those minds remain ignorant of their President's self-sabotage to include America in WWII, and even fewer realise it was the model used for the 9-11 attack on the Twin Towers.

US President F. D. Roosevelt.

US President G. W. Bush.

Thomas E. Dewey, the Republican candidate for the American presidency in the 1944 election, obtained information from research and security leaks that President Roosevelt (1933–45) had been reading the intercepted Japanese diplomatic messages in all codes, including the most secret Purple code, and was aware of the threat of a Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor from 26 November 1941 (11 days' notice). President Roosevelt failed to warn the Pearl Harbor commanders General Walter C. Short and Admiral Husband E. Kimmel, and any warnings he did give were cryptic, through known saboteur channels, and with insufficient notice to act.

Dewey considered presenting these vital facts in a major campaign speech (1944). Roosevelt learned of this through his Democratic spies in Republican HQ. He had General George C. Marshall (Freemason) send Colonel Carter W. Clarke to warn (and quietly threaten) Dewey (Freemason) on two occasions.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

On behalf of Roosevelt (Freemason), Clarke demanded that Dewey (Freemason) not refer to Pearl Harbor during his election campaign. He was to abandon any public revelation of Pearl Harbor as it would endanger the war effort by revealing that America could have deciphered the Japanese codes quicker than the Japanese Embassy in Washington.

The Japanese already knew the Americans could decipher all of their codes eight months before (April 1941, courtesy of the Germans) but chose to stick with them anyway. This is called complicity in war. Dewey did not know this at the time, and with patriotic silence, withdrew the speech that would have won him the election and made Thomas E. Dewey the American President during the latter part of WWII.[36] Dewey later found out that the Japanese had changed their codes long before the timing of his 1944 speech. Thomas E. Dewey was not called to testify in the Congressional Pearl Harbor investigation.

---

[36] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 12.

Churchill could break the enigma codes from 1939 courtesy of the Czechs, who got the codes off the Germans and gave them to the Poles prior to WWII. (The Czechs often blame the Poles, even for their successes.)

The British had broken the German "Enigma" codes and could read the Japanese "Purple" code. Churchill read the Japanese messages but considered Roosevelt's team a possible security risk. By 'security risk' Churchill considered that if too many 'others' knew of Roosevelt's knowledge of the impending Japanese attack, then the US would be forced to intervene in Britain's 16-year plan to attack America and America would be forced to protect itself, if only to save face.

To ensure Hawaii's ignorance, their assigned code-breaking machines were given to Britain as spares. America deciphered its own messages separately. Hawaii had no ability to get its own intelligence and relied on strategically filtered knowledge from the mainland – essentially no intelligence from The Atlantic Charter (9 August 1941) to the Pearl Harbor attack (7 December 1941) from either Britain or the American mainland. Hawaii was in an intelligence blackout for four months preceding the attack.

Without the attack on Hawaii, Britain would have lost the war, or at best reached a stalemate. The Western world would be speaking German and the Pacific would be speaking Japanese. At the turn of the century, places like New York were already speaking 50:50 German/English.

> To the bankers, WWII was a competition of industry and resources. For the front-line military it was a battle for cultural dominance, language rights and communism over fascism. The commoners won and got communism. The oligarchy won and got fascism. Thus we have a fascist oligarchy ruling over communist masses.

Churchill pacified Roosevelt by misleading him with outright lies. He said that Japan would attack Singapore first. Churchill knew the Japanese had the Bywater plan which showed Pearl Harbor was to be attacked first. The Bywater plan was produced when Churchill was Chancellor of the Exchequer and planning war against America. With Pearl Harbor, Churchill had all his Christmases at once. Roosevelt further sugar-coated Churchill's Christmas gift by doing everything possible to assist Japan's attack on Pearl Harbor. What do you expect. They were both Freemasons enacting their motto "ORDER OUT OF CHAOS".

When Bywater wrote *Sea Power in the Pacific: A Study of the American-Japanese Naval Problem* (1921) it was an immediate sellout among Japanese and American Navy General Staff who studied it line by line. The US Naval Institute's *Proceedings* magazine called it "the most important recent estimate of the situation . . . in the Pacific". It was so 'considered' that it set a special 5:5:3 tonnage ratio between America, Britain and Japan on 15 December 1921 at the Washington Disarmament Treaty.

Japan agreed to the Washington Disarmament Treaty on the condition that America did not fortify west of Hawaii and Guam could not be a refuelling point. This proved crucial to Pearl Harbor's demise. Bywater pointed out that this was a calamitous error giving Japan overwhelming advantage. America ignored Bywater's advice and the American Navy resorted to island-hopping in order to refuel.

After Bywater wrote *The Great Pacific War* (1925), he was recognised as the Pacific War prophet. Although it was written as a novel, American and Japanese senior naval planners studied this book line by line as well. It caused a total rewrite of the Pacific naval War Plan Orange in 1926 to fit Bywater's island-hopping-to-refuel requirement and it inspired Japanese naval planners to believe that they could easily take over the Pacific with near impunity.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2015

> What Japan didn't count on was that its coastal cities were vulnerable to air attack. America knew this, didn't attack Japanese cities at all (Hiroshima) but waited until the war was 'over' and Japan had offered surrender before America tested their nuclear bombs on live populations in real scenario cities.

But what really struck a chord was that the Assistant Secretary of the US Navy picked a fight with Bywater in print (late 1921) after the book was published and after the Washington Disarmament Treaty. He denied that there would ever be a war between the US and Japan, and he was the only one to do so. Bywater considered him a pacifist, a pacifist who later became President Franklin Delano Roosevelt.

President Roosevelt was a warring president who fronted as a peace activist, as so many warring leaders do (another fake in a wheelchair). President Roosevelt was the major reason why Pearl Harbor happened and the main reason why 2638 lives were lost. Mind you, he had a lot of help from the equally warring Winston Spencer Windsor Churchill.

> Pearl Harbor was Britain's 1929 war against America. It arrived 12 years late and was blamed on the Japanese, who had every British assistance, including Operation SUBEND.

If that wasn't dirty enough, Hector C. Bywater was killed 16 months before Pearl Harbor at the age of 55. He was supposedly found in bed alone at his home in London, sometime between 16 and 17 August 1940 and was declared the victim of acute alcoholism. The physicians didn't check for any other cause and he was immediately cremated. Modern investigation techniques and circumstantial evidence suggest he was murdered by poison. The order came from the Japanese High Command[37] and was administered with British complicity.

Churchill had already been involved in many assassinations and Hector C. Bywater had a very good chance of sabotaging Churchill's efforts to bring America into the war, all the more so if he were alive. Some of Churchill's assassinations were Lord Rothermere (1940), Hector C. Bywater (1940), Neville Chamberlain (1941); the 22nd Earl of Erroll (1943) and Sir Harry Oakes (1943); and he jailed hundreds of others.

> The one man who knew all of Japan's plans for Pearl Harbor and America's dedication to ignoring it was killed in the build-up to Pearl Harbor. The *Lusitania*, Pearl Harbor and 9-11 all get protection under the umbrella of American self-sabotage – 'deny, obscure, cover up' – 1915, 1941 and 2001 are all very questionable years for American patriotism.

Timeline: The Immediate Build-up (Nov./Dec. 1941)

On 5 November 1941, Tokyo informed the Japanese embassy at Washington that negotiations must be satisfactorily concluded by 25 November. This was a fair indication that the Japanese task force was to leave the Kurile Islands for Pearl Harbor the next day if negotiations were broken off, which they were, by President Roosevelt. The Japanese had orders to return if negotiations were resumed.

On 15 November 1941 at 10.15 am, General George Catlett Marshall addressed a "secret press briefing" in his office in the Munitions Building in Washington. His invited press included Robert Sherrod (*Time*), Ernest Lindley (*Newsweek*), Charles Hurd (*New York Times*), Bert Andrews (*New York Herald Tribune*), Lyle Wilson (United Press),

---

[37] William H. Honan, chief cultural correspondent for the *New York Times*, sourced from Raymond L. Puffer, Air Force History Program, Los Angeles, Reed Business Information Inc.

Edward Bomar (Associated Press), and Harold Slater (International News Service).[38] General George C. Marshall then offered them all an opportunity to leave for anyone who could not keep their lips buttoned. No one left.

The meeting did not include radio news reporters, nor did it include General Short or Admiral Kimmel, who were in charge of naval operations in Hawaii, nor were they briefed before or after.

General Marshall told the press: "The US can read Japan's coded radio messages." The seven press agents then kept this information secret from any who could benefit, including the 3816 who were killed or injured. This made the press, both print media and wireless, colluders in the Pearl Harbor attack and helped to maintain their silence through time.

What General Marshall didn't tell them was that Naval Intelligence had cracked the Japanese codes in the fall of 1940 and Nagumo's first radio broadcast was intercepted on 22 April 1941, eight months before the Pearl Harbor attack. This backs up Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew's claim that he had been assigned to "prepare for the attack" at least nine months prior.

On 14 November: Tokyo informed the Japanese Consul in Hong Kong that Japan would declare war on the US and Great Britain if the US negotiations failed.

On 11, 15 and 16 November 1941: Tokyo repeated to the Japanese ambassador in Washington that the deadline for completing negotiations with the United States was 25 November.

On 22 November 1941: This deadline was extended to 29 November, the point of no return for the Japanese fleet. After 29 November "things are automatically going to happen".[39]

On 25 November 1941: President Roosevelt announced to his War Cabinet that "an attack was expected perhaps as soon as next Monday [1 December 1941]". Even this was kept from Admiral Kimmel, who had this crucial data removed from any TESTM dispatches sent to him.

The same day (10 days after the secret press briefing): Admiral Kimmel received a briefing that a massive Japanese force of fleet subs and long-range patrol aircraft would reach Hawaii in the beginning of December.

On 27 November 1941: Six Japanese aircraft carriers and 30 Japanese submarines set sail for Pearl Harbor (26 November Japanese time).

---

[38] Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit, The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, 2001, p. 361.

[39] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 31.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

On 27/28 November: Tokyo informed the Japanese embassy in Washington that Secretary of State Hull's ultimatum of 26 November was entirely unsatisfactory and Japan wouldn't negotiate any further.

On 27 November: Hull said that he knew his ultimatum meant war and that henceforth affairs between the United States and Japan were in the hands of the Secretary of War (Stimson) and the Secretary of the Navy (Knox), both of whom were under the control of the publicly peaceful/privately warring President Roosevelt.

On 28 November 1941: Admiral Stark gave Admiral Kimmel explicit orders to "Undertake no offensive action until Japan has committed an overt act". Kimmel followed these orders.

On 30 November 1941: Tokyo informed Germany that negotiations with the US had ended.

On 27, 28, 30 November, 1 December 1941: Tokyo wired the Japanese embassy in Washington warning them not to reveal that negotiations were over, but to stretch them out. The Japanese then sent extensive convoys and task forces southward as a distraction from Pearl Harbor.

5 December 1941: Because of the British/Dutch/US ABCD agreement and Rainbow 5, this south-moving Japanese traffic meant war between Japan and America two days before Pearl Harbor, but America did not react. They were waiting to retaliate.

White man tends to go to war when his integrity is impugned, not when there is a transgression over his boundary. To the white man, a transgression over a boundary is cause for negotiation, and negotiations would *not* have swung the American polls into a four-year-long dedicated war effort.

On 6 December 1941 the Japanese got the dateline wrong and attacked Malaya a day before Pearl Harbor. The British kept quiet about this as well and did not tell the Americans until the following day.

General Short was kept in the dark from July 1941. Admirals Kimmel and Short did not know about the details of the Japanese–American diplomatic negotiations from August 1941. They were not informed that the Secretary of State had sent an ultimatum to Japan on 26 November, nor that Japan had warned negotiations were to cease by 29 November if no peace settlement was agreed. Admirals Kimmel and Short knew nothing of the south-moving fleet. They were kept totally in the dark.

Japan usually made its surprise attacks on weekends, when the opposition was relaxing and off guard. When Japan did not attack on 30 November there was special apprehension in Washington that it might come on 7 December, but no contingency plans were made, nor were Admiral Kimmel and General Short warned of the probability.

19 November 1941: On the J-19 diplomatic code (which America had been reading all year) the Japanese announced they were setting up their Winds System – "East Wind Rain" (war on the US), "West Wind Clear" (war on Great Britain), "North Wind Cloudy" (war on Russia). This was executed on 4 December 1941.

1, 2 December 1941: Tokyo ordered its main embassies (except Washington) to destroy their main code machines, including the Purple code machine, and to burn all their documents. Document destruction of this scale *only* happens before war.

Japan's Purple code machine in Washington was retained until 7 December so Tokyo could keep in touch with the Japanese embassy in order to transmit the last 'peaceful' communication in full to Hull.

On 4 December 1941, Japan transmitted the "Winds Execute" message in plain Japanese Morse code with no codes involved. This was picked up by the naval monitoring station in Cheltenham, Maryland at 8.00 am. It said "East Wind Rain, West Wind Clear", meaning war on America and Great Britain, but not Russia.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

In America's effort to cover up their complicity in the Pearl Harbor attack, this "Winds Execute" message was denied and all copies were destroyed. The last copy was seen by Commander Laurence F. Safford when Commander Kramer was assembling documents for the Roberts Commission a week after the Pearl Harbor attack.

Chief of the Security Division of Naval Communications, Safford identified 14 people who had seen the message including Admiral Thomas C. **Hart**, Commander of the Asiatic fleet and Acting Chief of the Army Signal Corps, and Colonel Otis K. **Sadtler**. Both the army and the navy were aware of this message at the time.

July to October 1944: The Naval Court of Inquiry established beyond any doubt that the "Winds Execute" message was received on 4 December. The Army Pearl Harbor Board investigation and the Clarke Inquiries also confirmed that army authorities knew the navy had intercepted the Winds Execute message on 4 December. They were all in on it, all in denial, and all covering up. This was a disgusting piece of peace sabotage.

4 December: The Chicago *Tribune* published the implications of Rainbow 5 and revealed Roosevelt's deception that he promised not to go to war unless attacked. The Japanese travelling along a certain line was enough. At virtually the same time, the Japanese Navy crossed that line and President Roosevelt did not retaliate. The Chicago *Tribune* was a challenging but embedded newspaper and bought Roosevelt the required three days' grace before Pearl Harbor occurred. **This was a Magic Op.**

The thirteen-part message was delivered on the evening of 6 December to army officers, army military intelligence, navy officers (except for Stark who was at a theatre), the Far East section of Naval Communications (which covers Pearl Harbor) and to Colonel Walter Bedell Smith (Marshall's secretary), but he could not find General Marshall, who was the man who would officially present the message to President Roosevelt. Crucial links in the chain were conveniently missing. Even the Japanese played a part by delaying the 14th part of the message.

The final 14th part of the message (also in English) arrived during the night of 6 December and was decoded and ready for distribution 5.00–7.30 am 7 December 1941. It confirmed that negotiations between Japan and the United States were over. It ordered that the Japanese ambassador Admiral Nomura and his associate Kurusu deliver the full 14-part reply to Secretary Hull in person at 1.00 pm Washington time, about 7.30 am Pearl Harbor time. The attack occured just after at 7.50 am. Twenty minutes was never going to be enough time to prepare. This was just enough time for orders to be made and pilots to man their planes.

When General Marshall learnt that Washington was receiving the Japanese 13-part reply ending all peace negotiations, he should have warned General Short and spent the night discussing battle strategies with him.

Instead General Marshall abruptly left his office in the old Munitions

General Marshall.

Building (Saturday afternoon in Washington) and went into hiding. Legend has it he rose at a leisurely hour on the morning of 7 December and went horse-riding when he knew the Japanese were about to attack. He had achieved his goal. General Marshall's job was over. He had successfully brought America into WWII in exchange for ignoring all his military protocols. Horse-riding for the warring General Marshall was the equivalent to smoking a cigar.

Legend would also have it that when General Marshall returned from his horse ride he was summoned by Colonel Bratton to his office, arriving around 11.25 am to read the 14-part Japanese reply and the Time of Delivery message to Hull – allegedly for the first time. According to associates in his office he immediately exclaimed "This means immediate war!"

General Marshall sent a warning, not marked urgent, to General Short at 11.50 am but chose a slow path via Western Union to San Francisco, and from there by RCA to Hawaii. It was not put on the RCA wires until 12.17 am. General Short received General Marshall's non-urgent message of impending war after the attacking Japanese planes had returned to their aircraft carriers.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

What really happened was even worse. General Marshall's lack of precise knowledge as to where he was from mid-afternoon 6 December to the morning of 7 December is more accurately explained as follows:

1. According to Commander McCollum (under oath), General Marshall (with a military aide) went to Admiral Stark's office about 9 am 7 December 1941. Here General Marshall, Admirals Stark, Noyes, McCollum, Wilkinson, and Stark's aides discussed the 14-part Time of Delivery messages. They formulated the message General Marshall would send to General Short and decided that it should also be handed to General Kimmel.
2. After General Marshall left Admiral Stark's office, he was seen in his office around 10 am by Colonel John R. Deane. Colonel Deane was the aide to Colonel Walter Bedell Smith who was General Marshall's secretary at the time. General Marshall delayed sending this message for nearly two hours (11.50 am).
3. General Marshall should have used the scrambler telephone connection with General Short or the more powerful navy and FBI transmitters, both of which were offered to him. Instead, he delayed sending the message, sent the wrong message, and sent it too slow to be of any use. As a result, this was dubbed the "too-little-and-too-late" message.
4. General Marshall's message: "Japanese are presenting at one p.m. Eastern Standard Time what amounts to an ultimatum also they are under orders to destroy their Code machine immediately. Just what significance the hour set may have we do not know but be on the alert accordingly. Inform naval authorities of this communication."

This is the most understated and confused message in the history of war. It is an alarm for self-sabotage. Commander Hiles has since stated the reality clearly: "A genuine, forthright, and honestly inspired war warning can be expressed most lucidly, concisely, intelligently and forcibly in one sentence – the shorter the better. The warnings to Short and Kimmel were lacking in all these virtues. They were probably the most profuse collection of misleading verbiage ever to grace two military messages that purported to warn two important field commanders of a war already known in Washington to be a *fait accompli*."[40] It should have been formulated more like the message below.

U. S. S. RANGER

NAVAL DISPATCH

Heading: NSS NR 977 Z 0F8 1830 0F3 0F4 0 BT

AIR RAID ON PEARL HARBOR X THIS IS NOT DRILL

EXECUTIVE

From: CINCPAC

Date 7 DEC 41 ED

To: CINCLA NT CONAF OPNAV

Info:

SUPR

CWO P

No. 33

ACTION

INFO

---

[40] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 48.

General Marshall's message should have been sent on 27 November or at least by 3.30 am Pearl Harbor time. It shoud have read: "Japan attacking Pearl Harbor today, prior to 7.30 am Pearl Harbor time. We have received their ultimatum for war. They have destroyed all their codebreakers and diplomatic papers. High alert immediately. Scatter all ships and planes. Prepare for immediate battle. This is not a drill. Best of luck."

On 17 June 1940, General Marshall had ordered Commander Herron of the Hawaiian District to create a practice alert to impress the Japanese: "Immediately alert complete defensive organization to deal with possible trans-Pacific raid."

General Marshall needed to be well informed about the Time of Delivery message, whether he was to do his duty or practise clever deception. The only reason General Marshall had an early Sunday morning meeting with General Short was to discuss the Time of Delivery messages.

> Harry Elmer Barnes: "The only reasonable motive for Marshall's disappearance would have been to make himself inaccessible to those who might plead with him to send a warning to Short and Kimmel."[41]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

To back this up, any who wanted to speak out were placed under military house arrest from Saturday morning "until after the blitz". "Three Army generals determined a standdown from 8 pm Saturday 6 December to 11 am Sunday 7 December 1941."[42] This was confirmed by their testimonies when none of them could remember where they were during this time.

General Marshall summoned all privy officers into a locked room. He shook everyone's hand and told them that the facts relating to the events of 6–7 December and associated developments [surprise attack on Pearl Harbor] must remain secret.

General Marshall: "Gentlemen, this goes to the grave with us."

Two weeks after Pearl Harbor, the Navy classified all documents TOP SECRET. All radio operators and cryptographers were gagged on threat of imprisonment and loss of all benefits. Navy Director of Communications Rear Admiral Leigh Noyes then sent a memo ordering all commanders, "Destroy all notes or anything in writing".[43] Army Intelligence in Honolulu then burnt 40 file cabinets full of documents.

Throughout the nine official Pearl Harbor investigations over 60 years, no radio broadcasts were presented, not even at the Congressional hearings. However, one of those present spoke to the eminent historian Harry Elmer Barnes. As a consequence, "Most of the documentation supporting the traditional story has been destroyed or kept a close secret."[44]

General Marshall's actions demonstrated careless and callous indifference to his official duties and were sufficient to justify his immediate dismissal from the office as Army Chief-of-Staff. This did not happen. Instead Marshall was promoted, and others like Admiral Kimmel and General Walter Short in Honolulu were purposely kept in the dark, blamed for "failing to anticipate" the attack, and were not exonerated of the charge of "dereliction of duty" until 1999, when the Senate developed a conscience.

On 17 December, Chief of Military Intelligence General Sherman Miles prepared an honest account of what went on in General Marshall's office on the morning of 7 December and presented it to General Marshall. General Marshall reacted furiously and banished the Chief of Military Intelligence to the post of Military Observer in Brazil. He allowed him to stay in military service on condition that he made no further revelations.

The Kita message, essentially ready for distribution by 2.30 pm 6 December 1941 left nothing to guesswork. Kita's complex system of signals to the approaching Japanese task force was to end on the night of 6 December. This clearly implied that the task force was expected to organise off Oahu that night in order to ready itself for their attack the next morning.

Overwhelming evidence from the National Archives shows that Yamamoto and commanders of his task force warships broke radio silence and their warships were located by American communication intelligence units. The Japanese did not maintain radio silence. It was the American and Allies' use of embedded historians who wrote this into history to 'give the Pearl Harbor surprise further weight'.[45]

---

[41] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 40.

[42] Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit*, *The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, 2001, p. 235.

[43] Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit*, *The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, p. 256.

[44] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 41.

[45] Robert Stinnett, *Day of Deceit*, *The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor*, 2001, p. 162.

By Monday 1 December 1941 it was probable that war with Japan was about to start somewhere. The American fleet continued with its programme of manoeuvres 500 nautical miles southeast of Honolulu (out of gunshot-hearing range), with the Japanese planning to attack Hawaii from the north. It was known to the Japanese that the American fleet left Pearl Harbor on exercises from Tuesday to Friday (4 days) and Friday to Saturday week (8 days). The American fleet was fartherest away on Sundays and was not able to retaliate from such a distance.[46]

US Fleet on programmed maneouvres 500 miles southeast of Pearl Harbor.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

On Monday 1 December 1941, Japanese ministers signed the documents declaring war, and Emperor Hirohito signed them a few hours later. With this knowledge from their spies in the Japanese government, the British put Malaya on full alert and the Admiralty in London suggested that Admiral Phillips take his fleet out of Singapore and on a short cruise in the east waters – to avoid attack from unexpected air raids.

On Tuesday 2 December 1941, Japanese Foreign Minister Togo sent a message to all Japanese consulates and embassies in the United States demanding that they destroy all codes and secret documents.

The same day, British battleships arrived in Singapore and American planes spotted 12 Japanese submarines off the French Indochina coast heading south towards Singapore. Intelligence reports note there was not a single Japanese merchant vessel on the whole Pacific, Atlantic or Indian Oceans, but there were 21 large transport ships at anchorage north of Saigon, with 180 planes on the airfields in the south of French Indochina. Nearly half were heavy bombers.

---

[46] The source for these dates 1–7 December is taken from *Chronology of the Dutch East Indies, December 1941* website.

Regardless of this knowledge, the American fleet in Hawaii set sail (Tuesday 2 December) heading southeast for practice manoeuvres, with the Japanese fleet approaching Hawaii from the northwest.

On Wednesday 3 December 1941 only the battleships USS *Oklahoma*, USS *Nevada* and USS *Enterprise* were in port at Honolulu. The USS *Enterprise* soon left for Wake Island. The Japanese fleet was now 1300 nautical miles northwest of Hawaii.

By Thurday 4 December 1941 three divisions of Japanese troops were in the South China Sea sailing to invade Malaya and Siam. The Americans picked up the "East Wind Rain" message at 8.00 am –"Higashi no kaze ame". It was now certain Japan would attack the United States.

On Friday 5 December 1941 the British started moving their ships out of Singapore. The HMS *Repulse*, the HMAS *Vampire* and the HMS *Tenedos* set sail from Singapore and headed for Darwin, Australia.

By the morning of Friday 5 December the American aircraft carrier USS *Lexington* (CV-2) and escort ships left Pearl Harbor for Midway Island carrying 18 light bombers. The USS *Enterprise* (CV-6) and escort ships approached Wake Island carrying a Marine Fighter Squadron of Wildcats. The heavy cruiser USS *Indianapolis* and five destroyers left for Johnston Island "to test the performance of the Higgins landing boat on coral reefs". The USS *Saratago* lay on repairs in San Diego.

On Friday 5 December, Tokyo sent its last vital radio message. This was intercepted by both the US and British. In Purple code it directed the commander of the Japanese task force, Admiral Chiuchi Nagumo, to "Climb Mount Niitaka"– meaning 'proceed to Pearl Harbor without delay or interruption, unless negotiations resumed'.[47]

On Saturday 6 December 1941 an Australian reconnaissance pilot ex-Malaya sighted a Japanese convoy of 28 transport ships, plus a battleship, 5 cruisers and 7 destroyers leaving their anchorage at Saigon in French Indochina intended for Malaya and/or Thailand (still neutral at the time). This was reported to Admirals Hart and Phillips in Manila.

British planes received orders to go on patrol missions and recon flights but the weather changed for the worse and no British reconnaissance flights were made. The HMS *Repulse* was ordered to return back to Singapore and four American destroyers in Balikpapan were ordered to sail out.

---

[47] Mount Niitika Yama Nabore was the highest mountain in Japan at the time. It is now in the area of Taiwan, then called Formosa, which meant 'beautiful'.

There was a fair bit of juggling going on. The ships in port were to be hit (British), and the ships at sea (American) should have been intercepting the Japanese convoy, but failed to do so. Instead, the American destroyers maintained a radio silence ensuring the attack on Pearl Harbor went ahead unobstructed.

The American Army Air Force had no intention of helping British ships during the Japanese attack and were planning to use them as cannon fodder. An RAF officer told the Admiral in charge of the British Task Force Z, "You've never been air-minded, Tom. Don't wake up in the Pacific and start screaming for help."

Spymaster: "This was a form of final warning given to a condemned man. Unfortunately the condemned man was a high-ranking naval officer with his head firmly stuck up his own arse, so he dismissed it. When he saw the Japanese naval aircraft and the first bombs started dropping and he could see with his own eyes that the bombs were chained together, he must have shit himself. If one bomb hits the target, it drags the other one in. This was not a five-minute extemporised measure from the Japanese. It was the result of much naval planning."

The attacking Japanese fleet increased its speed to 25 knots. At 9.00 pm on Saturday 6 December 1941 they reach their destination, the 158th meridian, 490 nautical miles north of Hawaii. During their entire 10-day journey the Japanese encountered no ships and no resistance. The only vessel that spotted them, the Dutch submarine *K-XVII*, was blown up by the British using the 17-year-old Brevet officer Chris Creighton, who, before the end of the war, would become James Bond II. His naval control officer was James Bond I – Ian Fleming.[48]

The last report transmitted by Nagoa Kita (the Japanese Consul-General in Honolulu) listed 9 battleships, 3 light cruisers, 3 submarine tenders and 17 destroyers at anchor, with 4 light cruisers and 2 destroyers lying in the docks. The American heavy cruisers and airplane carriers had left Honolulu and no air reconnaissance was being conducted by the American fleet air arm.

On 7 December 1941, Khota Baru in Malaya was invaded two hours before Pearl Harbor and the British were told to keep quiet.

---

[48] One of the intelligence officers who assisted me in putting these books together was James Bond III.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

According to what the Spymaster was told, the attack actually began the day before, with the dateline providing the required confusion. On the beach, the British sent out signals for help but these signals were jammed by other British units in the know.

By the morning of 7 December 1941 there was an impressive accumulation of evidence of certain war with Japan only a few hours away and every probability the attack would be at Pearl Harbor.

Despite the mandatory protocol for a clear and definite warning to General Short and Admiral Kimmel, this was not done. They should have been told of the negotiations with Japan in November 1941, and warned of Tojo's deadlines (26 & 29 November). Admiral Kimmel and General Short remained entirely without warning from their collective intelligence superiors. This is called an **Intelligence Involved Coup** (I2C, eyes too see).

General Short, like General Marshall, was one of the few important generals who was not a West Point graduate. Short had been promoted and placed in charge of the Army establishment in Hawaii by General Marshall, and they were personal friends. General Short had every reason to believe General Marshall would keep him informed.

Pearl Harbor was always "a damned mouse trap" for the American navy, and General Short had made demands for material and equipment to complete the defensive installations. These were refused by Washington. General Short also demanded planes for reconnaissance and defence against a Japanese bombing attack. He only received a fraction of these. General Short also received no information about Japanese Purple diplomatic code intercepts after the end of July 1941 when further economic measures were taken against Japan.

Admiral Kimmel had even more personal and career reasons to believe he would not be double-crossed or blacked out by Washington. He had been an aide to Roosevelt when Roosevelt was the Assistant Secretary of the Navy under President Woodrow Wilson, and Kimmel remained on good terms with Roosevelt.

Admiral Kimmel was also a very close friend of Admiral Stark, who was then Chief of Naval Operations, the supreme authority over naval affairs.

Soon after Kimmel succeeded Admiral Richardson as commander of the Pacific fleet, Kimmel wrote to Admiral Stark in February 1941 expecting to be sent all relevant information collected by Naval

Communications and the Office of Naval Intelligence. In March 1941, Admiral Stark promised this and Captain Kirk (Director of ONI) understood this to be one of his most important duties.

In June 1941, Admiral Kimmel went to Washington and had a long talk with Admiral Stark, who confirmed that he would be furnished with full information about any and all developments for Pearl Harbor by the most rapid and secure methods available. But Admirals Turner and Stark blocked this information as soon as the first Bomb Plot intercept was decoded in early October 1941. As a result, Captain Kirk resigned as head of the Office of Naval Intelligence and Admirals Kimmel and Stark were kept in the dark.

Admiral Turner, chief of Naval War Plans, was an arrogant, conceited, overbearing and opinionated bully who regarded his own opinions as more reliable than fact. He dominated the genial and modest Admiral Stark. Admiral Turner overrode Admiral Stark to the extent that he was virtually in charge of the American Navy in the Pacific.

> Admiral Beatty, aide to Secretary Knox: “At many top naval conferences, when Stark was asked a question, Turner would often answer on his behalf” – shades of the Cheney/Bush relationship and then the Rice/Bush relationship.[49]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

“There is no doubt that [Admiral Richmond Kelley] Turner did more than anybody else in the Navy to prevent the Bomb Plot messages from getting to Kimmel and to frustrate the efforts of Commander McCollum to warn Kimmel decisively in the days immediately before the Pearl Harbor attack. How far he was directly influenced by Roosevelt in this is not revealed in the documents.”[50]

Admiral Turner continually belaboured the point that Japan was going to attack Siberia first. This is like saying the Muslims are going to attack a field in the Midwest before New York.

Admiral Stark backed Kimmel up in this and stressed the same to him right down to the wire (December 1941). On occasions, Admiral Stark mentioned the negotiations with Japan but would never go into detail, offering the excuse that the source was Magic Operations and he always maintained he was not allowed to divulge any of it.

---

[49] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 44, slightly paraphrased.

[50] *Ibid*., p. 44.

In June 1961, Admiral Stark confessed to two college professors (Paul Burtness and Warren Ober) that he had to swear an “horrendous oath” superseding all other oaths “never to divulge the existence or contents of these Magic operations”.[51]

> Magic Ops were acts of self-sabotage to get America into WWII including other anti-patriotic activities which still continue to this day. Since America has such a huge military-industrial complex it often kidnaps, wounds and kills its own citizens and soldiers to either start a war or keep it going. The 2003–08 Iraq war is a case in point.
>
> Self-sabotage is the nature of Magic Ops and Magic Ops always involves self-sabotage.

In the summer of 1941, Pearl Harbor was denied a Purple machine to translate the Japanese intercepts. The Purple decoder designated for Pearl Harbor was instead sent to London as a spare.

London now had three Purple machines and Pearl Harbor had none.

Admiral Kimmel believed he was getting all the intercepts but he never received any details of Japanese–American negotiations nor any diplomatic messages in the Purple code after Churchill met Roosevelt at Argentia off the coast of Newfoundland on 9–12 August 1941.

By 4 December 1941, Admiral Stark was hogtied by President Roosevelt’s order that all warnings to Pearl Harbor must be cleared through General Marshall. It was likely that President Roosevelt reminded Admiral Stark of this by phone on the night of 6 December and the morning of 7 December.

Admiral Kimmel and General Short were not privy to such Japanese statements as the “ending of diplomatic negotiations”. As such, they were never alarmed.

Kimmel and Short were not even sent the Bomb Plot messages obtained between 24 September and 7 December 1941 even though they were received in the easily read J-l9 and PA-K2 codes.

If he were assigned this duty, these could easily have been deciphered by Commander Joseph J. Rochefort, a talented and experienced cryptanalyst and Communications Intelligence officer working under Admiral Bloch. Rochefort was a master of the Japanese language and one of the very best cryptanalysts in the Navy.

---

[51] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 44.

It was customary for cryptanalyst specialists to stick to their own assignments, but Commander Rochefort was kept very busy doing research work on Japanese naval codes, direction-finding and traffic analysis, which were all beneath his station. As a result, Rochefort did not even know MS5 existed.

Most of the Bomb Plot messages were picked up by the Army Signal Corps station, MS5, at Fort Shafter, near Honolulu. These were General Short's army headquarters but the station was actually controlled and operated by Colonel Carroll A. Powell, who had no personnel capable of decoding or translating these Bomb Plot messages. Colonel Powell operated under the Army Signal Corps in Washington.

General Short did not know what MS5 was doing and automatically assumed that if it received anything significant to Pearl Harbor it would be relayed to him via Washington. Admiral Kimmel was even more in the dark than General Short and also did not know MS5 existed.

If the experienced cryptanalyst and Communications Intelligence officer Commander Joseph J. Rochefort had received the J-19 and PA-K2 messages that carried the Bomb Plot material and the diplomatic Purple code messages (which added weight to the Bomb Plot messages), he would have turned them over to Admiral Kimmel and General Short, who would have taken defensive actions long before 25 November 1941. The Japanese would have turned back and America would have had to find other means to enter WWII – like bomb the Japanese ships at sea when they were over the demarcated ABCD line, southward of 100° East or 10° North, and then bomb the vulnerable Japanese coastal cities, much of which was still made of paper.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Some of the Purple material was intercepted at MS5 and transmitted to Washington but it was never relayed back to Pearl Harbor. Conveniently, Pearl Harbor was denied the Purple decoder in favour of the British, who had them coming out of their ears. This was '**designed stupidity**' from Washington Army officials with the finger specifically pointed at General Marshall.

Harry Elmer Barnes: "As a result, all the responsible personnel at Pearl Harbor completely discounted the probability of war with Japan. They arrived at this conclusion because they did not believe that Japan would be unwise enough to start a war that it could not ultimately win. The resources of the United States were so great that we would ultimately wear down Japan, even if we did not win a quick and brilliant victory. They were proved to be right about this, but not about Japan's willingness to risk defeat if they started a war."[52]

Without the crucial element of surprise, Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto's plan to attack Pearl Harbor would have been defeated. This was originally Hector C. Bywater's Plan before he and Yamamoto settled down for a night on the Scotch in the late 1920s.[53]

**One should always find ignorant drinking partners
in order to prevent knowledge becoming war.**

Although known for his excellent memory, when General George Catlett Marshall was examined by the Joint Congressional Committee Investigation (1945–46) he could not remember where he spent the night of 6 December. Marshall could not remember the most significant, critical and exciting night of his professional life. Later, in private, Marshall admitted to Senator Alben W. Barkley, the chairman of the Joint Congressional Committee Investigation:

> "I could not tell you where I was Saturday night [6 December].
> It would have got the chief [Roosevelt] into trouble."[54]

In support of his efforts ensuring Pearl Harbor went ahead, General George Catlett Marshall was voted by *TIME* magazine as the 1944 'Man of the Year'. This was capped off by the Nobel Peace Prize in 1953 and the Charlemagne Award on 7 May 1959. When these mistakes were pointed out by Senator Joseph McCarthy (communist hunter), General Marshall was dead within six months (16 October 1959).

Admiral Stark, Chief of Naval Operations (who had conveniently been in the theatre) got to his office after 9.00 am on 7 December 1941. The Chiefs of Naval Communications, Naval Intelligence and the Far East section of Naval Intelligence pointed out to Stark that 1.00 pm Washington was 7.30 am Pearl Harbor time and Japan would likely attack on or before this time. They attacked just before 7.50 am.

> Stark had four hours to warn Admiral Kimmel in Pearl Harbor. He could reach him within 10 minutes by fast naval transmitter, but ignored the combined Chiefs appeal. He phoned President Roosevelt instead. Roosevelt then also failed to warn Admiral Kimmel.

---

[52] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 44.

[53] *Visions of Infamy*, xiii–8.

[54] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, p. 37.

敵碇泊隊形報告用紙 A
(真珠港)

Japanese map of Pearl Harbor.

By 6.20 am on 7 December, 181 Japanese bombers, dive bombers, torpedo planes and zero fighters were heading towards Oahu, Hawaii.

At 6.30 am the USS *Antares* spotted another Japanese submarine and the *Ward* closed in and sank it.

At 7.05 am two American radar operators in Oahu picked up a blip of more than 50 planes bearing down on them. They reported this but were told a flight of American B-17s was expected from America. In this way, their warning message was silenced. The B-17s were on their way to the Philippines to join the 30 that had arrived in the previous week.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

This further influenced the Japanese timing and had American complicity from on high.

Only three of the 300 American planes were airborne. The other 297 were parked in close formation to make them easier to guard against sabotage from the Japanese population on Hawaii. They were parked in a circle, nose inward, so that they could not take off and retaliate. This made them sitting-duck targets for the *surprise* Japanese attack. (This defeatist circle pattern was passed over by Hollywood.)

US Navy Pilot Lieutenant-Commander Howard Leyland "Brigham" Young, Commanding Officer of the *Enterprise* Air Group [CEAG/A16/Pb/(579) At Sea] relates his Pearl Harbor experience in an affidavit (15 December 1941) which ends in a commendation for another pilot.

At 6.15 am on 7 December 1941 Lt.Cdr. Young flew off from the *Enterprise* which was located 215 miles west of Oahu. His mission was to search sector 085°–095° true for a distance of 150 miles (east) which would have made him completely off course for a sighting of the Japanese fleet in the northwest, and if he got the direction wrong, just short of a visible sighting. Lt.Cdr. Young then proceed to Ford Island, where, if he had seen the Japanese fleet, he had every chance of being shot down in the midst of the Japanese attack. If he wasn't shot down by the Japanese fighter planes, he would have been shot down by friendly American fire to the last 50 yards.

Pearl Harbor October 1941

At 7.20 am Lt.Cdr. Young sighted the Richfield Oil Co tanker *Pat Doheny* of Los Angeles which was heading east. At 7.40 am he sighted the USS *Thresher* and the USS *Litchfield*. At 8.20 am he noticed a squadron of planes circling Ewa Field and believed them to be US Army pursuit planes so he gave them a wide berth and decreased altitude to 800 feet and continued toward Ford Island Field. They were actually Jap fighters. Halfway to Pearl Harbor he encountered considerable "AA" fire ahead and was attacked from behind by Jap Zero fighters.

Torpedo exploding against the Oklahoma.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Attack view from plane window.

These were low-winged monoplanes with retractable landing gear (which makes planes 30% faster). Lt.Cdr. Young dove towards the ground zig-zagging. Neither he nor his passenger, Lt.Cdr. Nichol, had time to use the loaded guns, nor did his Enterprise Air Group wing-man, Ensign P. L. Teaff flying the USN airplane 6-S-2.

Tactical Officer Lieutenant-Commander Bromfield Nichol of the US Navy was attached to the staff of Commander Aircraft, Battle Force and was due to report to the Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet immediately after arrival at Ford Island. All three were supposed to be killed and this particularly inside story was never supposed to be told.

They circled low over the cane field north of Pearl City. Not having enough fuel to return to the *Enterprise*, they made a low approach to Ford Island Field to land, made recognition manoeuvres and Lt.Cdr. Young placed his wheels and flaps in the landing position.

Despite this, they were subject to heavy AA fire from ships and shore until Young's wheels hit the ground. Some of this friendly fire was from guns on the ground less than 50 yards away. Young's plane suffered only a few bullet holes through the wings, which suggests either dummy bullets, untrained staff, drunken trained staff, knowledge of

Lt.Cdr. Young.

Battleship Row hit.

self-sabotage, or deliberate incompetence. Either way, there was a lack of American recognition of their own plane markings and signals.

During the approach, Lt.Cdr. Young tried to communicate with the Ford Island Field control tower but their communication power was too weak (self-sabotage). He managed to land at 8.35 am and his wing-man followed him to the last, pulling up just before landing.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

From pride to fall in 30 seconds.

Pearl Harbor under attack.

Lt.Cdr. Young and Lt.Cdr. Nichol then reported to Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet and informed him of the position of the *Enterprise* and their mission. It is not clear whether they were supposed to be reporting to Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet Admiral Husband E. Kimmel (1 Feb.–17 Dec. 1941) or to Admiral Claude C. Bloch, who commanded the local Naval District at Pearl, as distinct from the Pacific Fleet at the time of the Pearl Harbor attack.

At that time, and under those circumstances, there was confusion as to who the Commander-in-Chief was. Officially, the Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet was Admiral Husband E. Kimmel (59) but Rear Admiral Claude C. Bloch (63) was Commandant, Commander of the Hawaiian Naval Coastal Sea Frontier, Commandant of the Pearl Harbor Navy Yard, Commander of local defense forces, Naval Base Defense Officer, as well as the Commander of Task Force 4, United States Pacific Fleet. Having graduated from the United States Naval Academy in 1899, Bloch commanded the *Plattsburg* during WWI and served as Commander-in-Chief, United States Fleet (1938–6 Jan. 1940). Bloch was Commander of the local Naval District at Pearl Harbor at the time of the attack. Commander Admiral Bloch was the insider.

Rear Admiral Claude C. Bloch (1938–6 Jan. 1940) was the precursor to Admiral James Richardson (Jan. 1940–1 Feb. 1941) and Admiral Husband E. Kimmel (1 Feb.–17 Dec. 1941) but for a name change in the title from "Commander-in-Chief, United States Fleet" to "Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet" which the Japanese used to full advantage.[55]

That night the Commander-in-Chief briefed Lt.Cdr. Young on his next mission (to be that night and at dawn) and there were another two concerted attempts to kill him and his entire Enterprise Air Group.

Japanese Zero fighter leaves Akagi to attack Pearl Harbor.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Japanese warplanes revving engines before attack.

---

[55] The first Commander-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet had been Admiral James O. Richardson (Jan. 1940–1 Feb. 1941); followed by Admiral Husband E. Kimmel (1 Feb.–17 Dec. 1941); Fleet Admiral Chester W. Nimitz (31 Dec. 1941–24 Nov. 1945); Admiral Raymond A. Spruance (24 Nov. 1945–1 Feb. 1946); Admiral John H. Towers (1 Feb. 1946–28 Feb. 1947); Admiral Louis E. Denfeld (28 Feb.–3 Dec. 1947); Admiral DeWitt C. Ramsay (12 Jan. 1948–30 April 1949); and Admiral Arthur W. Radford (30 April 1949–10 July 1953).
In the ten years 1940–50 there were eight Commanders-in-Chief, Pacific Fleet. Apart from Admiral Nimitz and Radford they lasted an average of 10 months. None were KIA.

Lt.Cdr. Young then witnessed the Japs attack the 1010 dock and dry-dock, coming in with the easterly sun behind them. They dived at 45° to 1000 feet before releasing their 500-pound bombs. Some dived to as low as 300 feet. There were about 18 Jap planes with a far longer interval between drops than American practice. They were subject to AA attack but utilised evasive manoeuvres and despite the longer intervals no Jap planes were shot down either during their dives or escaping. It was as if the Americans were using dummy ammunition. The 1010 attack planes were low-wing monoplanes with fixed landing gear similar to the Mitsubishi Karigane Mk.II. They were yellow-silver in colour which helped them blend in with the sun behind them.

Lt.Cdr. Young: "The attack was practically perfect."

1010 dock and dry-dock after the Japanese attack.

Lt.Cdr. Young's view of the Japanese attack on 1010 dock.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Lt.Cdr. Young was then ordered to report to Ford Island (Commander Patrol Two); 13 planes of VS-6 and VB-6 planes from the Enterprise Air Group had landed safely. Lt.Cdr. Young was ordered to send nine planes out to search a section "330°–030° distance 175 miles". This was north–northwest to north–northeast and placed a minimum of 55 miles between them and the Japanese fleet 200 miles northwest.

Having motored off at full speed as soon as the last of their planes had returned to the aircraft carrier Sōryū (Kyūjitai), by 2 pm the Japanese convoy was at least 220 miles away and beyond the horizon of the Enterprise Air Group search planes.

From 1938 the Japanese had the fastest aircraft carriers, capable of 35 knots. These were based on a cruiser hull with an aircraft carrier deck plonked on top. The Sōryū was one of these and attacked the *Nevada*, *Tennessee* and *West Virginia* with armour-piercing bombs; then attacked the *Utah*, *California* and *Raleigh* with torpedoes; and then attacked grounded aircraft at Barbers Point. In the second wave, the Japanese planes off the Sōryū attacked the *California*, *Raleigh* and *Kaneohe*, and Naval Yard installations.

Burning ships in dry-dock & US ships immediately after first attack.

Pearl Harbor, Oahu
U.S. Territory of Hawaii
December 7, 1941
0756
OKLAHOMA BB-37
WEST VIRGINIA BB-48
MARYLAND BB-46
Vestal AR-4
TENNESSEE BB-43
ARIZONA BB 39
Ford Island

Photo by unknown IJN pilot

Lt.Cdr. Young's remaining four planes were to investigate reports of hostile surface ships and [ruse] sampans south of Barbers Point, and attack them with bombs and gunfire.

The only person stationed in the Ford Island Field Control Tower was a Coast Guard officer, so Lt.Cdr. Young stationed himself there in order to direct communications with the *Enterprise* and his planes. The Control Tower suffered from low power to the point that no communication was successful. No one could hear anything Lt.Cdr. Young was saying. He tried the telephone and the radio, but they didn't work either.

Six VF-6 airplanes left the *Enterprise* that night for the Ford Island Field. The lack of *any* communication contributed to four of them being shot down by friendly AA fire and only two landing safely. The Americans were now using real ammunition on themselves after having used 90% dummy ammunition on the Japanese.

Lt.Cdr. Young then tried to communicate with the *Enterprise* via the tower voice set, recommending that no more planes be sent, but even this communication failed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

This makes for eight sets of communication failure:

1. Friendly plane markings.
2. Friendly recognition signals.
3. Ford Island Field Control Tower direct communications.
4. Ford Island Field Control Tower Telephone.
5. Ford Island Field Control Tower Radio.
6. Ford Island Field Control Tower voice set.
7. Preorganised flight paths and destination.
8. Communication between staff receiving messages and staff who needed to know.

Japanese torpedo.

The remainder of the *Enterprise* planes did leave the *Enterprise* that night, but returned to the *Enterprise*, no one knowing why. Perhaps enough self-sabotage had been assessed.

Young blamed much of the damage to airplanes and personnel from the Enterprise Air Group on:

1. Lack of information that hostilities had started with Japan.
2. Failed communications.
3. Inability of ground & shipboard forces to recognise friendly planes.
4. Inability of ground & shipboard forces to acknowledge friendly recognition signals.
5. No planes were equipped with armor or self-sealing tanks. When their planes were hit, either the pilot was killed, the plane caught fire, or it was ditched due to lack of fuel.
6. All guns were fully armed, but due to the surprise of the attack, they weren't able to to use them in time.
7. The suddenness and magnitude of the attack shocked both ground and ship personnel. As a result, friend-or-foe recognition was ignored and all aircraft were fired upon.

Pearl Harbor under further attack.

After four of Lt.Cdr. Young's VF-6 planes were shot down by friendly fire that night, Young received further orders to rejoin the *Enterprise* at sunrise the following morning (8 December 1941). Having already suffered from a total lack of communication, Young arranged every means available to notify all hands of the scheduled departure, and route to be taken to the *Enterprise.*

At 5.30 am their JRS utility plane took off and was immediately fired upon by American ships and shore batteries. This was friendly AA fire. The firing continued for 50 minutes then stopped. The remaining planes then took off at 6.25 am, returning to the *Enterprise* without further incident.

These planes were armed with 1000-pound bombs and this was *the* factor in the remaining VF-6 planes not being shot down overhead as they had the potential to do more damage than the Japanese. This would have embarrassed the Americans out of WWII.

Lt.Cdr. Young then commended Lieutenant C. E. Dickensen, USN, Scouting Squadron Six, having bailed out of his plane after continuous friendly fire from the ground such that his plane caught fire. Dickensen then manned another plane in the 17-mile search flight. Dickensen survived because he did not mention he had been shot down by friendly fire. Lt.Cdr. Young requested that Dickensen be given an official commendation.

Lt.Cdr. Young went on to become Commanding Officer Howard Leyland Young and led Air Group raids on the Marshall Islands, Wake Island and Marcus Islands and became the Navy Commanding Officer on the USS *Ommaney Bay.* He was awarded the Navy Cross for extraordinary service on 25 October 1944 at the Battle for Leyte Gulf off Samar against a powerful force of Japanese battleships, cruisers and destroyers. He inspired his air personnel in the face of overwhelming odds and turned a potential defeat into decisive victory. His Navy Cross was signed by Secretary of Navy James Forrestal.

The Japanese had a third and fourth wave of planes refuelled, loaded with bombs, and ready and waiting on deck. Admiral Nagumo refused to send these. They could have finished off the American battleships, destroyed all lighter shipping, put the airfields out of action, destroyed all communications and repair machinery, and destroyed the US Navy fuel depot in the dockyard . . . but none of this happened.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

OFFICIAL USN PHOTO
NAVY YARD, PEARL HARBOR
CONFIDENTIAL
CONFIDENTIAL

Top: OFFICIAL USN PHOTO showing oil tanks free from attack (right).
Below: Pearl Harbor submarine base oil tanks also completely free from attack.

If Japan had sent their third and fourth wave of planes they would have completely destroyed America's naval strategy in the Pacific. America would have been in the war but without a means to fight in the Pacific air and Japan would have won the Pacific War on day one.

According to a Navy Pilot who was there, the marine casualties were:

Battleships

USS *Arizona* (BB-39): Total loss when a bomb hit her magazine.
USS *Oklahoma* (BB-37): Total loss, capsized and sunk in the harbor.
USS *California* (BB-44): Sunk at berth, later raised and repaired.
USS *West Virginia* (BB-48): Sunk at berth, later raised and repaired.
USS *Nevada* (BB-36): Beached to prevent sinking, later repaired.
USS *Pennsylvania* (BB-38): Light damage.
USS *Maryland* (BB-46): Light damage.
USS *Tennessee* (BB-43): Light damage.
USS *Utah* (AG-16): Sunk, but it was already a target practice vessel.

Cruisers

USS *Raleigh* (CL-7): Heavily damaged but repaired.
USS *Detroit* (CL-8): Light damage.
USS *Helena* (CL-50): Light damage.
USS *Honolulu* (CL-48): Light damage.
USS *New Orleans* (CA-32): Light damage.
USS *San Francisco* (CA-38): Light damage.

Destroyers

USS *Downes* (DD-375): Destroyed. Parts salvaged.
USS *Cassin* (DD-372): Destroyed. Parts salvaged.
USS *Shaw* (DD-373): Very heavy damage.
USS *Helm* (DD-388): Light damage.

Minelayer

USS *Ogala* (CM-4): Sunk but later raised and repaired.

Seaplane Tender

USS *Curtiss* (AV-4): Severely damaged but later repaired.

Repair Ship

USS *Vestal* (AR-4): Severely damaged but later repaired.

Harbor Tug

USS *Sotoyomo* (YT-9): Sunk but later raised and repaired.

Aircraft

188 Aircraft were destroyed (92 USN & 92 US Army Air Corps).
Every Japanese fighter averaged one US plane destroyed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

According to the same US Navy Pilot who was there, the casualties were:

US Navy	2008 KIA	710 WIA	
US Army	218 KIA	364 WIA	
US Marine Corp	109 KIA	69 WIA	
Civilians	68 KIA	35 WIA	
TOTAL	**2403 KIA**	**1178 WIA**	**K/WIA 3581**

As it was, 2403 Americans were killed and 1178 were injured – a total of 3581 Americans. The tally was actually higher as 235 Japanese-Americans were injured, bringing the total of those killed or wounded to 3816.[56]

Like Britain's Dunkirk, the American press was ordered not to photograph the dead or wounded at Pearl Harbor.

The number of people who knew of the Pearl Harbor cover-up as it progressed was limited to about 30. The files were all marked TOP SECRET and filled up 40 file cabinets at Army Intelligence at Honolulu. All personnel involved were subject to military court martial if they revealed their contents and two weeks after the attack all of these files were burnt.[57]

Six weeks after the Pearl Harbor attack, President Roosevelt accused the Army and Navy of dereliction of duty.

In 1949, in order to maintain silence, Undersecretary of Navy James Vincent Forrestal was thrown out of a seventh-floor window of a Bethesda hospital . . . and on 15 May 1966, Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew, who had received FDR's stand-down order at Military Intelligence in Hawaii, was murdered in his home in Tigard, Oregon. The bullet in the back of his head was a military-style execution.

Just hours after the Pearl Harbor attack, Hitler declared war on the United States. Hitler knew in advance that Pearl Harbor was going to happen, as did the Americans, Germans, British, and some dead Dutch. Under the Tripartite Pact, Hitler was under no obligation to declare war on America, but in doing so, he gave America the right to declare war on Germany and fully support Britain in Europe. If Hitler had not done this, America would only have been at war against Japan. Hitler was acting under direct orders from the war-makers. After all, Hitler was a

---

[56] 235 comes from 2638–2403. Stinnett lists 2476 KIA, 1119 WIA.

[57] Testimony on 25 May 1975 by Roger A. Stolley, who worked for Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew in a civilian capacity.

British agent, a quarter Rothschild, an agent for the Rothschild bankers, and the son of Winston Churchill's first cousin.[58]

Japan was also 'allowed' to attack 14 other destinations, all of them by surprise! These included: Malaya, Hong Kong, Guam, the Philippine Islands, Wake Island and Midway Island. If this is to be believed, it was the biggest 'surprise' in history, making Britain and America the most naïve countries in the world, which they weren't – they were the most devious.

The following day, 8 December 1941, America and Britain declared war on Japan. Japan replied by landing on the Gilbert Islands and occupying Bangkok the same day.

> The US Pacific fleet was ordered to stay put indefinitely in Pearl Harbor on 7 May 1940. This was against all intelligence. The Japanese had been hostile to America four years prior. They had attacked and sunk the US Gunboat *Panay* (PR-5) on the Yangtze River (China) on 12 December 1937, having already occupied northern China from 1931.
>
> Japan had joined the German and Italian Axis in the Tripartite Pact (27 September 1940) and had refocused its spy network to gather information in preparation for war against America from 20 January 1941. Things were hotting up for America four years before Pearl Harbor, yet the US Pacific fleet was ordered to remain holed up in a mouse trap (Pearl Harbor), which they regularly and repeatedly left unguarded for four and eight days at a time, maintaining a separation of 500–1000 nautical miles.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Both England and America could afford to lose a battle to win a war. England and America had the most sophisticated intelligence operations and were playing the game of war as dominant players. Pearl Harbor was an all sides complicit attack dictated by the war-makers. England and America were dedicated to losing the Pearl Harbor battle in order to bring America into the war against Germany.

The American aircraft carrier fleet remained intact, as did its planes. Apart from two ships, all the naval ships in Pearl Harbor were repaired and returned to service. Pearl Harbor could have been annihilated but it was merely a smokescreen for what could have been. Pearl Harbor was a strategic attack set up for the cameras and media to begin WWII. It was not a strategic attack to begin and end WWII, which it could have been.

---

[58] See *How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*, 2007, rear cover.

Pearl Harbor was agreed to by all sides. It was designed to increase the breadth of the war, to include America and the Pacific. It was designed to make the war last longer, ensuring that at the beginning of the war, everyone was on a more or less equal footing, with America having enough air carriers survive to match Japan in the Pacific.

Churchill had secured an agreement with Roosevelt that, apart from defensive action in the Pacific, America would assist Britain in the war in Europe first. Hence Churchill's requirement of his cousin's son was that Hitler declare war on America as soon as Japan had attacked.

The Commander of America's Pacific Fleet, Admiral Husband E. Kimmel and General Walter C. Short were to be the scapegoats. They lost their postings, were found innocent on the charge of "dereliction of duty" but found guilty of "errors of judgement".

> What should have been a court martial for those above them, ended up being a white-gloved swish of blame. Instead of President Roosevelt being impeached, he was killed, although counter-intelligence suggests he committed suicide.

Instead of Roosevelt's immediate command being court-martialled and executed for mass-murder-and-treason, the blame was shifted to a lower level, to those whose ignorance had been carefully nurtured (Kimmel and Short). Filtered down, the misappropriated blame was light for Admiral Kimmel and General Short. They demanded a court martial so they could explain their predicament and clear their names, but even this was refused. Pearl Harbor was an exercise in obfuscation before and after the attack.

Spymaster: "During the height of the Japanese attack with the Japanese bombing and strafing, with HQ personnel around him, Admiral Kimmel took a moment of time from his duty commanding the defence. Kimmel went to his quarters and stood in front of his mirror. He then spent several minutes removing the fourth star from his collar and sadly studied his reflection. Outside, the uninitiated were burning, drowning and dying. Large numbers of the civilian casualties were Japanese-Americans (unrecorded) as were many of the surviving blood donors."

The eight surviving aircraft carriers were to become the backbone of the American fleet in the Pacific. Their transfer to sea amounted to being deliberately kept out of harm's way, and these aircraft carriers ensured that America won the Pacific War.

What happened to British Prime Minister Chamberlain at the beginning of the war happened to American President Roosevelt at the end of the war. Both were killed with the complicity of their own sides. Chamberlain was killed ("cancer") after he was successfully used to start WWII and Roosevelt was killed three weeks before the end of WWII to ensure he did not write his memoirs about his part in bringing America into the war . . . or face questioning about how American Intelligence failed so badly at Pearl Harbor.

Commander William Guy Carr: "The government of Britain was forced to aid the international bankers' plan for the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia in 1917 in order to obtain their promise that they would bring America into the war on the side of the Allies. It can be assumed that SS *Lusitania* was sunk to provide the necessary incident to justify the change of American policy, just as Pearl Harbor was used as an excuse for America to enter World War II."[59]

Similarly, 9-11 was used to start WWIII. This too, was according to the writings of Adam Weishaupt, the agenda of the Illuminati and the military industrialists who make their money selling 'FEAR & SECURITY'. The entire Pearl Harbor scenario was repeated again in 9-11. With the advent of the internet (soon to be controlled by Stalin's United Nations – false accusations have begun by eBay) America became educated that 9-11 was another Pearl Harbor within five years of the self-sabotage.

Spymaster: "The Mossad were running the whole 9-11 attack. It was a virtual canned meat operation run by the Mossad, the Druze, the Bnai-Brith and the Adan (Israeli Military Intelligence), with the canned meat walking in live. This canned meat included the workers, FBI financial investigators, firemen and any other rescue staff.

"Within hours of the attack, all Israeli personnel involved were sent back to Israel. Even those Israelis under arrest had their paperwork lost . . . not unlike the evidence of 9-11, which was immediately shipped all over the world and melted down.

"The American media would have us believe that every crime scene in America is sampled and tested by some version of CSI. On 9-11 everything got swished before analysis. This is one of the hallmarks of a grande coup. The speed with which investigations were closed down (including gossip) and the removal of debris and detritus out of America was breathtaking.

---

[59] Commander William Guy Carr, R. D., *Pawns in the Game*, p. 108.

"9-11 was a grande coup. The brutality of it, the wanton slaughter of emergency personnel, the financial heists and the gold heists marked it as an Israeli operation.

"The Israelis stole so much gold and wired so many large funds to other places that some of the first fatalities of 9-11 were the financial investigators brought in to confirm claims of enormous financial frauds perpetrated the night before. Apart from wired transactions, billions of dollars of gold were extracted from under the Twin Towers. The last of these vehicles were trapped in the explosion. None of this has ever been officially acknowledged.

"The police and rescue personnel know what they saw, but were moved into an enforced silence and censorship by America's own counter-intelligence, which included personal and public propaganda. This was all under the guise of the official investigation, which included unspoken threats to lesser officials.

"America's agents include Saddam Hussein and Osama bin Laden.

"America's 'official version' was challenged by dedicated researchers who backed up much of what the silenced witnesses originally said. The 'official version' flies completely in the face of reality for anyone who ever had a Western education."

One of these with a Western education was America's own agent, Osama bin Laden, known in the British public schools as 'Harry bin Laden' and by his CIA codename 'Tim Osman'. Osama bin Laden/Tim Osman, long presumed dead, is supposed to have turned on his own America to the huge financial advantage of his family and other oil/defense/security interests. In reality, bin Laden/Osman has survived his many media deaths and lives protected in an MI-5 safehouse in London.

The so-called Free Western Media has exhibited as much independence and brain power in the whole anti-al Qaeda crusade as the press did in Hitler's Germany. Still, they don't have much to go on. Al Qaeda is a Western Media Construct (WMC) and doesn't even exist (Weapons of Mass Construction). It is just a broadband blaming ground using an Islamic word that Westerners can actually pronounce, not unlike Anita McNaught's Holy Jihad Brigade – another Israeli construct.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Dicking a Nation.

Dick.

As soon as the American Vice-President Dick Cheney admits to meeting Saddam Hussein outside of Iraq on 20 April 2003, peace, freedom and culture may once again settle into their own shoes . . . America, your presidency ain't worth shit.

Mother of a Nation.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Some believe Roosevelt committed suicide at Warm Springs, others that he was murdered. The official story is he died of "natural causes". Roosevelt suffered from hypertension and smoked at least 30 cigarettes a day. He was bound to a wheelchair, never photographed in it for the public during WWII, but always propped up standing or in the driver's seat of a car – all of which alluded to Roosevelt being mobile. Roosevelt was propped up by his hefty aides, the media and the unseen hand. He was a warmonger and another double agent president of America.

Naval Intelligence files were declassified in 1994 and the pattern has simply repeated. When all the (available) facts are studied, the conclusion is palpable – Pearl Harbor was a planned event that opened up the path that lead to the deaths of millions. The United States goaded Japan into a World War and this led to the second nuclear bombing of a sovereign country and its people – the first was in San Francisco.

> Every year like a ghost, Pearl Harbor intrudes upon us again and haunts us . . . The story is repeated because everybody knows the whole story was never told. The truth about Pearl Harbor is a public possession. Yet, over sixty years later the public still does not have adequate possession of the truth. Thus, the association of 9-11 with the annual phantom of Pearl Harbor puts the 'wink' in hoodwink. Not only are we being controlled, but we're being taunted with that control.
>
> The Roosevelt administration used the back door of Japan to enter a world war. The attack, and Roosevelt's Day of Infamy address, jolted the American people into the frame of mind for war. This scenario should be familiar to us today as George Bush and his government-controlled media referrals to 'the terror attacks of September 11', when we all know it was another Magic Ops Pearl Harbor.
>
> Every phase of deception and manoeuvring used by the US government in order to engineer and guarantee the Japanese 'surprise' attack on Pearl Harbor is still being used in full force by the government today.
>
> Pearl Harbor was an experiment in government/military censorship and has been repeated in the events of 9-11 with military precision. The Bush administration had clear foreknowledge of the 9-11 attacks and worked closely with all Israeli intelligence forces to ensure it was carried out unimpeded. This was Bush's back door to US occupation of the Middle East and the concurrent oil price hikes. It was left open as to whether 9-11 would lead us into WWIII.[60]

---

[60] Heavily paraphrased from *The Skeleton in Uncle Sam's Closet*, 1975.

Past: Bombed at Pearl Harbor, USS *Nevada* beaches before sinking.
Present: Controlled demolition of New York's Twin Towers, presented as two passenger jets flown by the new enemy – only sixty years between them.

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin

The Russian–Japanese Pearl Harbor

9–15 August 1945

Stalin in April 1937 with Prince Charles-like hand & Nikolai Yezhov removed.

Stalin was every bit a Jew, and anything Stalin wanted, Stalin got. Anything that was required for Stalin was provided for Stalin. In exchange, Stalin would do anything and everything the International Bankers wanted. This included mass murder and the proliferation of an ideology that was straight out of the Jewish control of the British Monarchy.

Churchill.
Stalin.

The 1939 seventh Congress of the Comintern promoting Stalin as the inheritor of the leadership and drive of Communism. The enormous banners do not state that Stalin was a British agent working for the Jewish-controlled British Monarchy. Stalin was a Rothschild by blood, by training, by financial backing and by socialistic direction. He was an insider, and despite his mass murder of some 68 million people, all Western governments just kept on promoting him. All they demanded was plausible deniability . . . and this was provided by embedded historians and the press.

Manchukuo was a Japanese puppet state in China (1931–45). When Japan first occupied Manchukuo in northern China (1931), they used first-class troops – the Kwantung Army. During WWII they transferred the better troops to more demanding theatres of war and by 1945, the once feared one million strong Kwantung Army was a totally inferior force, inferior to virtually every other army in the world.

Initially the Kwantung Army was a most feared force, but during their reign of terror in American-backed China, their best were continuously removed and replaced with non-combat bureaucrats until the Kwantung Army became a paper tiger – a colossal bluff.[1]

By 1945, most of the once feared Kwantung Army had no weapons, no uniforms and no discipline . . . and just before they were attacked by Russia, their entire leadership went on leave.

---

[1] Martin Blumenson, 'Great Strategic Decisions', *Purnell's History of the Second World War*, No. 114, 1976, p. 3190.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This made the Russian strike look incredibly heroic, but the Japanese Kwantung Army was taken over in Manchuria with as much resistance as a six-year-old's tea party. Russia's destruction of the Japanese in China was easier than Germany's walk-in-the-park over France in 1940.

The Japanese called their army Kantogun, an antonym. They were known internationally as the Kwantung Army and their role was a colossal military bluff. To the Soviet Union they were benevolent and neutral (in their neutral zone), but to the Americans who backed China, they chose to think of the Kwantung Army as a foe demanding constant fear. This was carried out to the extent that the US spread intelligence-induced propaganda bedtime stories throughout America:

"If you're not good, the Kwantung Army will get you."

The Kwantung Army never expected to fight America and America never wanted to fight the Kwantung Army. It was if an agreement had been reached, something approximating 'the fear of peace'. As such, the Kwantung Army was treated as a "force-in-being" that was there to "exert a decisive influence upon the military thinking and the foreign policy of the US toward the USSR"[2] . . . and this is exactly what occurred.

Chinese tactics for robbing Japanese patrols started off using classic hungutz bandit techniques. Communist Chinese troops and bandits would lie in wait along a track. At a given signal they would emerge with broom-handle Mauser pistols and attack the Japanese at point-blank range.

The later Kwantung Army were desperate to save any kind of equipment and were so under-resourced they wore straw sandals and rope belts and confronted the Chinese attacks by throwing sharpened

Broom-handle Mauser.

---

[2] Alvin Coox, 'Kwantung Army Strategy', *Purnell's History of the Second World War*, No. 113, p. 3144, 1976.

bamboo spears, followed by stones. Occasionally officers would have a sword made from a straightened truck spring. This went on for some time until the Japanese stopped patrolling the areas they occupied in China and began a continual process of withdrawal and contraction.

From the day of Pearl Harbor (7 December 1941) the US pleaded with the Russians to pin down the Kwantung Army and help save the Pacific from the Japanese. The Russians had a number of intelligence assets in the Chinese theatre and these spies religiously supplied them with information. The Russian spies in the Chinese theatre was a result of the heavy fighting between the Japanese and Soviet Armies at Kalaiken Gul in 1939, which the Russians had won.

Spymaster: "Victory at Kalaiken Gul was the single event that propelled Marshal Giorgiy Zhukov (1896–1974) into prominence in Soviet affairs. As a reward, he became the Army chief-of-staff in 1941. Zuhkov had once been a saddle-maker's apprentice and a private soldier in WWI. He made do with what he had, didn't complain, and was gifted at using intelligence officers, which some Generals ignored to their peril. When Zuhkov was recalled to the West he carried the title Victor of Kalaiken Gul, and in typical Russian fashion, with origins in poverty, he remembered his skilled and less fortunate subordinates."

Marshal Giorgiy Zuhkov.

In 1943, Marshal Zuhkov lifted the siege of Moscow, then captured Warsaw (1944–45), conquered Berlin (1945) and accepted the German surrender on 7 May 1945. Zuhkov was Russia's version of Lord Slim.[3]

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

After WWII, Zhukov became the Commander of the Russian Zone of Germany and Minister of Defence (1955) until he was dismissed by Khruchev in 1957.

> Capitalism and Communism are class exclusive and only meet in war.
>
> Capitalism's role is to *rape* other countries of their resources in order to *preserve* one's own social structure.
>
> Communism's goal is to *destroy* one's own social structure and then destroy other countries by attacking their social structure. Karl Marx: "As goes the family, so goes the country."
>
> Communism is an ideology that can be used as an act of war to destroy other countries. Capitalism can do the same, but it usually comes with fringe benefits. Communism does not.
>
> War fulfils both the Communist and Capitalistic goals – to *rape* and *destroy* under the guise of *preserving one's own social structure.*
>
> Peace fulfils neither and seduces through Freedom and Culture.
>
> 'War' is the *destruction* of another country's social structure and the theft of their resources.
>
> 'Peace' is the *preservation* of another country's social structure and assists in the *develop*ment of their resources. This is called 'trade and development' – the hallmark of peace or the trade-off for war.
>
> 'Culture' is the *preservation* of one's social structure and resources. 'Freedom' is the *development* of one's social structure and resources . . . and war completes the cycle with the destruction of another country's social structures and the theft of their resources. Such is the cycle of War and Peace, Freedom and Culture. Peace ain't a bad thing. Freedom is pretty good . . . and when you combine the two, you have Utopia . . . Peace, Freedom and Culture.
>
> Continual wars have buggerised this all around and now 'Peace' means "No resistance to Communism", and 'Freedom' means "No resistance to American imperialism".

During successive summit conferences between the Big Three (Churchill, Stalin, Roosevelt/Truman), the American military planners constantly warned of the self-contained autonomous Kwantung Army as a big threat, the cream of the entire Japanese armed forces.

---

[3] Lord Slim (1891–1970) led the famous 14th 'Forgotten Army' to victory over the Japanese at Burma in WWII. He was knighted in 1944, became the Chief of the Imperial General Staff (1948–52), Governor-General of Australia (1953–60) and then Viscount Slim in 1960. **He was outed as a paedophile by his Australian victims in April 2007.** At the same time, the Americans introduced their version, Slim Pickens. There was also slim pickens in New Zealand, where Slim Pickens would be considered a good-looking woman.

This was driven home repeatedly at Tehran (28 Nov.–1 Dec. 1943), Malta (30 Jan.–3 Feb. 1945), Yalta (4–11 Feb. 1945) and Potsdam (17 July–2 Aug. 1945). It was scaremongering by the American military planners and revealed, as much as anything, the true purpose of WWII – **the social engineering of the entire world**.

After the Tehran conference in December 1943, the American military planners suggested to Stalin that they attack the Kwantung Army and offered to supply a logistics base east of Lake Baikal in Siberia. But the Russian Red Army turned white at the proposal of attacking anything Japanese and refused to budge.

As late as October 1944, Stalin was still claiming that the feared Kwantung Army might attack if any news got out of a Russo-American coalition for war in the Far East. "'The Japanese were usually inclined to take the initiative', the Soviet dictator warned."[4]

The US opened up a second front in the Pacific and this drained the armour, artillery and best infantry out of the Kwantung Army. Those from the Kwantung Army either fought to the death, or were bypassed on far-flung islands in the Pacific.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

As a result, by early 1945, the Japanese Kwantung Army in Manchuria was nothing more than a hollow shell and would be hopelessly outclassed by Soviet invaders, who were backed by the American Lend-Lease equipment, which in turn was backed by the International Bankers, who in turn directed WWII in any direction their socio-economic outcome desired.

> By July 1944, America had landed at Marianas and completed B-29 raids on Kyushu. The Deputy Chief of the Kwantung Army went to Tokyo where he was instructed: "The Kwantung Army was not to resort to arms even if the Soviets were to occupy high ground to the rear of the Japanese border posts! If force proved absolutely unavoidable, the Hsinking authorities must obtain prior authorisation from Tokyo."[5]

There was to be no fighting with the Russians until the Russians had negotiated their reward for the surrender of the Kwantung Army. The Russians negotiated with the America military planners, who deferred to the bankers/social engineers, who were organising a New World Order based on tax for peace, social control, and profit.

---

[4] 'Kwantung Army Strategy', p. 3145.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 3147.

As such, the Kwantung Army was not to be destroyed until it consisted entirely of those they wanted destroyed. This was to be a depopulation exercise of Japanese dissidents, thinkers, peasants, and old people. Before the mass killing could take place, the Kwantung Army was to transform into an army of the sick, ugly, weak and unwanted.

In 1944, the Japanese launched a major offensive called Ichi Go which reclaimed large parts of the previously 'liberated land' including large dumps of US Lend-Lease equipment. Spymaster: "It was like the tide came in and took everything out. It was that big."

The Chinese Nationalists ran like hell, only putting on mock attacks in places they knew the Japanese weren't (much like modern-day police). With all their spies in the Japanese rear, the Communist Chinese knew exactly where the attacks were going and got out quick-smart. This was effectively the last death rattle of the Kwantung Army, but only the Communists and Russians read it right.

Japanese Kwantung Army marching thru streets of northern China in 1939.

One of the very few Westerners who came to realise the weakness of the Kwantung Army was Lt. Ladislas Farago (1906–80) an Intell. Officer in Okinawa. While going through pay books taken from killed Japanese soldiers he realised many of them had been relocated from the Kwantung Army. From this he theorised the Kwantung Army had become a paper tiger.

Lt. Ladislas Farago.

I.O. Lt. Ladislas Farago went to Washington with this information and was told to "Shut up". The best of the patriotic spies are treated in this way. This was a report Washington knew, had organised, and never wanted known. It was to be America's retaliation for Pearl Harbor and was to be perpetrated by the Russians on Chinese soil. For 3000 American deaths, there were to be 300,000 Japanese deaths.

In September 1944, America took over Morotai in the Moluccas and Palau in the Carolines. On 18 September 1944 the Japanese High Command relaxed their border defences even further, so that the remaining Japanese soldiers, many armed with bamboo strapped together to look like guns, were slaughtered without retaliation, and well into Japanese protected territory.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> The Japanese High Command stipulated (in a clause) that **areas were not to be defended where a dispute was *likely* to occur** and the Kwantung Army commanding general (Otozo Yamada from July 1944) was empowered to ***refrain* from using force at the very outbreak of any border dispute**.

This meant that by 18 September 1944, if the Russian Army fired a shot, the once feared Japanese Kwantung Army was to run further back into Japanese territory, eventually reaching Chinese-occupied China. The Japanese soldiers weren't told this, but their commanding generals knew. They knew that their soldiers were cannon fodder and would become either captured soldiers or dead soldiers.

As is the slippery nature of deniability in war prior to complicit mass slaughter, the commanding general of the Kwantung Army, Yoshijiro Umezu, was promoted to Chief-of-Staff of the Japanese Army in July 1944. At the same time, he was replaced by Otozo Yamada. The slaughter was to happen 13 months later in August 1945 and Chief-of-Staff Yoshijiro Umezu went on to sign the Japanese surrender to the Americans on 2 September 1945.

> When the new commanding general Otozo Yamada got the news he summoned all his generals to Hsinking and briefed all the officers. The Kwantung Army immediately changed from being a military operation to a bureaucratic operation whose main job was to prevent difficulties, report on border disputes, report on any construction work, defend buffer zones for friendly aircraft (taking any good equipment and any good men out), and the procedures for the expeditious transmission of local reports dealing with boundary incidents.

This was all laid out in the *Kwantung Army Guide for the Defence of the Manchurian-Soviet-Mongolian Borders*. It was essentially a guide to surrender and how to keep one's self busy without presenting arms. It remained in effect from September 1944 to their slaughter and capture in August 1945.

The *Kwantung Army Guide* came from the top and held such sway that when the Russians attacked at Amur, near Khabarovsk, in October 1944, the Kwantung Army obeyed their guidebook disciplines and did not retaliate. Two months later the Russians attacked at the Eastern Manchuria border (December 1944). Again the Kwantung Army did not retaliate.

> The Russians killed members of the Kwantung Army without retaliation. **The Japanese were not returning fire and the Russians were restraining themselves from slaughtering the Japanese until their reward had been negotiated**, hence the rapid conferences at Malta (30 January–3 February 1945), Yalta (4–11 February 1945) and Potsdam (17 July–2 August 1945).
>
> As soon as Stalin had the contract signed for his desired reward (**a third of the world to Jewish-controlled British Monarchy communism, plus the United Nations**) he gave the order to fire. Stalin's minder Winston Churchill was drunk right through the Potsdam Conference – nice cover.

The Japanese had received their instructions (September 1944) and the Russians were waiting to receive theirs. They would have to wait a year (August 1945), and it was a strange wait for both sides, with the Russians becoming more hostile as soon as the clock struck 1945.

There were 30 Russian divisions in the Far East and from October 1944 the Russians began earmarking another 30 divisions in Siberia to move eastwards from Europe. With them came two of Stalin's highest-ranking Marshals, Vsailevsky and Malinovsky.

Trainloads of troops and supplies came across the Trans-Siberian Railroad towards Manchuria carrying tanks, aircraft, artillery and pontoons for river-crossings. There was no concerted effort to disguise the cargo, with 30 carloads travelling every day. By May and June 1945 there were 15 such trains every day carrying 10,000 soldiers, amounting to 10 manned and armoured divisions each month. This was a military migration.

"At the end of May 1945, Japanese Intelligence estimated that the Russians had already transferred a total of 160,000 troops, 1,300 planes, 1,200 tanks, and 870 guns and mortars. By late July it was judged that the Soviets would have built up their Far Eastern offensive strength to a total of 1,600,000 men, 6,500 planes, and 4,500 armoured vehicles. Japanese observers reported the ominous fact that the Soviet reinforcements were not equipped for winter operations and would therefore have to go into action before the bitter Manchurian winter set in."[6]

36 A
2 RBA
HAILAR
YAKOSHIH
LESSER KHINGAN MTS
15 A
KHABAROVSK
POKOTU
39 A
53 A
MOUNTAINS
SWAMPS
5 RC
TSITSIHAR
6 GTA
WUCHAKOU
SOLUN
CHIAMUSSU
17 A
CAV-MECH GP
WANGYEMIAO
HARBIN
POLI
MISHAN
MTS
35 A
IMAN
LINKOU
TUCHUAN
TAONAN
SWAMPS
1 RBA
GRAND KHINGAN
LUPEI
MTS
5 A
MUTANCHIANG
CHANGCHUN
KIRIN
25 A
LINHSI
KAILU
VLADIVOSTOK
TUMEN
UNGGI
NAJIN
LEGEND
15 AUGUST
20 AUGUST
DOLONNOR
CHIHFENG
MUKDEN
CHONGJIN
MOUNTAINS
KALGAN
JEHOL
100
200
PEKING
PORT ARTHUR
LU-TA

Map of Soviet Far East Operations.

At the same time, the Kwantung Army in Manchuria was being bled white. From February 1944, divisions had been pulled out of the Kwantung Army to assist in the US counter-offensive in the Pacific.

---

[6] 'Kwantung Army Strategy', p. 3148.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Kwantung Army Mitsubishi A5 fighter over Manchuria. Inferior to America's P40 Warhawk, it was replaced by the Zero.

The core of the Kwantung Army Air Force (two air divisions) also left for the Philippines in June 1944. By February 1945, 11 Japanese divisions had left for the Philippines, including the crack II Armoured division. A 12th division went to central China and the 13th to Formosa (Taiwan). In addition, numerous supporting units and great quantities of war material left with them.

In January 1945 the Japanese IGHQ decided to transfer an additional two divisions to South Korea to protect against a looming American invasion. Three more infantry divisions and the last two armoured divisions were ordered from Manchuria back to Japan.

Chief of the Japanese Army General Staff's Russian Intelligence Section: "If the Russian's only knew the weaknesses of our preparations in Manchuria, they were bound to attack us . . . We want to provide a large number of divisions – a show of force."[7]

> This drain continued on through 1945. All that was left of the once impressive Kwantung Army was a 700,000 strong bluff, who were marched around in order to look impressive to any intelligence that might spy on them. These were students, civil servants, youths, over-age conscripts, colonists and sub-standard physical specimens. They were ill-trained and poorly equipped, most without uniforms, helmets, or shoes.

The uniforms were a motley mixture of military and civilian garb. Most of their shoes had been replaced with straw sandals. Most of the men were unarmed, and those units that were armed carried obsolete weapons from previous wars from previous decades. Knives replaced rifles while others fashioned swords and bayonets from the springs of scrapped motor vehicles. Small arms and machine-guns were requisitioned from high school and college training equipment.

Ironically, the best of this equipment was later stolen by the Chinese, who used it to turn on each other in the Civil War that raged in China until the Young Marshal kidnapped Chiang Kai-shek (Jiang Jieshi) in order to encourage dialogue between the Communists and the Kuomintung.

---

[7] *Ibid*.

The border forts had been stripped bare of heavy artillery from 11 months of military exodus and the defensive works were in various stages of non-completion, hampered by a shortage of materials, equipment and skill. Locally manufactured mortars became the Kwantung Army's only form of heavy artillery.

> The Kwantung Army was now comprised of people the Japanese Government wanted dead so that the new modern Japan could emerge like a phoenix from the ashes. The Kwantung Army had become an undernourished, leaderless, bureaucratic, peasant army carrying rakes, bamboo spears, fake bamboo guns and truck-spring swords. They were essentially an army throwing rocks at aircraft and their demise was to be a mass slaughter.

"New, inexperienced officers were frequently thrust into the awesome responsibilities of key command, with staffs and personnel which many had never seen before. Indoctrination stressed that one man was to destroy ten enemies or one tank, using tactics built around suicide (euphemistically labelled 'special attack') . . . In attacking vehicles, soldiers were to use poles, satchel charges, and 'Molotov cocktails' (improvised from beer or soft-drink bottles). Alternatively, each man was to convert himself into a human bomb, strapping to his body six grenades for detonation on top of a tank. Some air force pilots even loaded their rickety trainers with anti-tank mines and prepared to dive their aircraft into tanks.

"But, by and large, fiery exhortations and individual devotion could not conceal a fundamental tendency: the new men, who now made up most of the Kwantung Army, were largely cynical and sceptical, if not defeatist. They lacked faith in their weapons, their officers, and themselves. They bore no resemblance to the hell-for-leather Kwantung Army which overran Manchuria in a matter of weeks in 1931, or which slugged it out with the Russians at Nomonhan in 1939. Out of earshot of their superiors, the listless new men called themselves 'human bullets' (nikudan), 'Manchurian orphans', 'victim units' (gisei-butai) or 'the pulverised ones'."[8]

---

[8] 'Kwantung Army Strategy', p. 3149.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In July 1945 several hundred Russian soldiers brazenly penetrated a sector of East Manchuria and erected positions. They were not in fear of retaliation and knew fully the Japanese had to avoid firing and retreat. This was repeated again in the first week of August 1945, with the Russians trespassing borders with small specialist advanced parties attacking Japanese patrols, who responded by running away from the bullets that chased them. Their bitter watchwords were "patience, prudence, restraint".

By August 1945 the Japanese had only 55 serviceable first-line fighter, bomber or reconnaissance aircraft. The Russians had 5000 aircraft, 45 divisions, 10 tank brigades and 3 armoured divisions. It's no wonder 300,000 Japanese died in the post-war Pearl Harbor (v. 3000 Americans in pre-war Pearl Harbor).

> There was a *Neutrality Pact* between Russia and Japan that was supposed to run until April 1946, but sneaky Stalin avoided this by not formally joining Russia in the Potsdam Declaration of 16 July 1945. He simply didn't sign. This was part of his British training and he was following the advice the British had given him. By British, I mean Stalin's trainer, minder and second cousin Winston Churchill.
>
> The myth of British–Soviet enmity was created then and has existed unchallenged until now. It is a carefully constructed myth polished by many distinguished historians, and the more historians that polish this myth, the more they become distinguished. This achieved its purpose for many years – to create and explain military enmity between Britain, Russia and China.

Spymaster: "Now the time has come to lay things bare. Britain created the monsters that ran Russia, China and Germany and lied to all-comers."

> The only thing that counts is the agenda. Ideology is a distraction so different people can feel they belong to the conflict while watching from their armchairs. It's a little like betting on a game and watching it with more interest once you've backed a side. Most people choose their favourite colour.
>
> Ideology is used to take over countries as it creates as much conflict as religion without the need to create a wise person.
>
> The 'Agenda' considers wise people dangerous, so ideology replaced religion in order to create a worldwide perpetual

> war with everyone at least a spectator . . . and now religions are being infused with ideology, so it's war on Sundays as well, with Christian churches run by high-ranking CIA officers and Islamic mosques run by KGB/Mossad dummies.

Ideology is for wankers.
The only thing that counts is the agenda.

At Potsdam, no longer the British Prime Minister, Churchill would stumble through the checkpoint completely drunk while the conference was already under way. This continued his line of plausible deniability, but he was still sober enough to advise his protégé Stalin.

Stalin always listened to Churchill, admiring him for his ruthlessness and how much it differed from his public persona.

The Kwantung Army expected the Russian attack in the autumn [September–November] of 1945 and should have been at maximum preparedness in August. Instead, Kwantung Army Commander-in-Chief General Yamada flew to Darien on 8 August 1945 to dedicate a shrine at Port Arthur.

"Elsewhere, V Army Headquarters was conducting war games attended by all of its division commanders and chiefs-of-staff – manoeuvres which were to last some five days from 7 August 1945.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"The Commander-in-Chief . . . Army and his staff meanwhile had left for III Area Army Headquarters to attend ceremonies. These were but a few examples of how all major headquarters within the Kwantung Army, from its Commander-in-Chief down, were caught off guard when the Soviet armies finally struck in the early hours of 9 August 1945."[9]

This battle had long been engineered. The Kwantung Army elite were not caught off guard. They were purposefully removed before midnight 8 August 1945 to ensure only the unwanted were killed or captured. The same practice had occurred from 8.00 pm on 6 December 1941 at Pearl Harbor and in Washington. Those who wanted to sound the alarm were imprisoned for 36 hours.

When the first reports of the Russian attack came in, the Kwantung Army elite chose to ignore them. From the top down, they tried to convince themselves and each other that this was just more border skirmishes. By nightfall on 9 August it was evident the Russians were using American Lend-Lease aircraft and attacking all-out on every front.

It took until the evening of 9 August 1945 for Kwantung Army Headquarters to rescind their bureaucratic guidebook and allow their bureaucratically-experienced barely-armed peasant army to fight. Rescinding the guidebook was another "too-little-and-too-late" message. It imitated General Marshall's delayed message to Pearl Harbor at 11.50 am on 7 December 1941.

In a similar pattern to America entering the war, but in an unwinding version, Prime Minister Suzuki called in his Chief of the Cabinet Planning Bureau and said: "Is the Kwantung Army capable of repulsing the Soviet Army?"

Chief of Cabinet Planning Bureau, S. Ikeda replied: "The Kwantung Army is hopeless. Within two weeks Hsinking will be occupied."

The Kwantung Army was inferior in every way. The Americans knew this as they had purposefully drained the Kwantung Army by opening up a second front in the Pacific a year prior. As a result, Japan's last field army was nothing more than a formidable myth.

The Soviets invaded and then claimed themselves "the strongest contemporary army" in the world. Stalin was then described as "the most powerful single man in post-war Europe",[10] but such is Russian propaganda.

---

[9] 'Kwantung Army Strategy', p. 3150.

[10] *Ibid.*, pp. 3144–51.

The Russians defeated an inferior force with American hardware and far superior numbers.

The Russians, Americans, Chinese and Japanese all knew "the Kwantung Army is hopeless". So why was Russia given all the glory when America virtually funded the entire attack? The answer lies in the future, my son.

> Russia was to get all the credit as a bargaining chip for control of the United Nations, and America was to officially bow out as being exhausted. The Jews had taken over Russia in the 1917 Bolshevik Revolution, which was actually a Jewish coup deposing the Tsar and taking over Russia. The next step for the communist Jews was control of the United Nations; so they had their favourite Jewish sons, Churchill and Roosevelt, gift the United Nations to their other favourite son, Stalin, while hiding their other favourite Jewish son, Hitler, in the newly declared war criminal safe-haven – Spain.
>
> As soon as the United Nations formed they produced cover for the Jewish Hitler by calling their recovery of Nazi stolen items Operation SAFEHAVEN. The United Nations also directed the media away from Spain in any Hitler searches and all intelligence authorities used the search for Hitler to occupy any country of their choosing – except Spain.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

From the last days of WWI to the end of WWII, the League of Nations hampered the world's peace process and sabotaged 'trade and development' (launching Hitler in Germany and Mussolini in Italy). League of Nations representatives from leading nations have now been exposed for taking bribes, rendering both their actions and reputations useless. They were not advocates of PEACE, FREEDOM & CULTURE, but the RAPE & DESTRUCTION OF COUNTRIES' SOCIAL STRUCTURES & RESOURCES

. . . WAR . . .

The League of Nations' daughter, the United Nations, inherited the same poverty of virtue and result. Like a toothless dragon mauling on its enemy, there is no evidence of result, but its starvation-in-action makes for gripping news. Dragons are goliaths by nature and short in flight, only provoking fear in fairytales and the faithful. They blow fire a short distance, then run out of breath. The United Nations dragon has no remedial effect on FREEDOM OR CULTURE, TRADE OR DEVELOPMENT.

The United Nations promises again and again that it won't happen
again and again, but it is the **AFFECTIVE BODY OF WAR,**
and **NOT THE EFFECTIVE BODY OF WAR,**
or **THE EFFECTIVE BODY OF PEACE.**
As such, the United Nations is ignored.

The United Nations is an antipatriotic war dragon that frustrates war intelligence with false notions of peace while destroying the social structures that it post-war occupies and never leaves. The United Nations dragon has all the hallmarks of Colonising Communism – the destruction of social structures, the destruction of cultures and the destruction of freedom, including the physical rape and murder of people within its borders (the warmongers' reward to the sexually-deviant UN workers) and the extraction of all resources during and after the war (the warmongers' reward to the Capitalists).

For its part in the bargain, the UN's own frustration of war intelligence is utilised to frustrate the truth of its actions and inactions, leaving the UN as a pillow-biters version of totalitarian communism.

As such, the United Nations is nothing more than communism's representative in the West. Sure enough, 105 KGB agents were removed from the UN in one day in October 1970 and replaced almost as quick. The UN has proven time and time again that its main purpose is to destroy social structures where peace, freedom and culture previously existed. Like an out-of-focus hammer and sickle, the UN is an anachronism for UNcultured, UNpeaceful, UNfamily, UNutopian and UNfree.

The bigger the front, the bigger the back
and the United Nations is all arse –
and a multi-trillion-dollar arse at that.

All of this while the United States promotes itself as the only 'US' worth joining. There is no UN. It's just a big arse. The United States destroyed the UN by refusing to fund it, bankrupting it (except for bankers' loans that kept it afloat) and then funding it to 50% as long as no US personnel were ever charged with international war crimes. This has made the United Nations' fresh-mint dragon part of a totalitarian dictatorship that destroys peace, freedom and culture as quickly as the Vice-President of America Dick Cheney can meet Saddam Hussein outside Iraq (20 April 2003) then shoot his hunting buddy – without charge of course, otherwise the US would reduce its funding to the UN.

Talk about blind-eye politics from corrupt funding. It's about time we fired the UN, preferably before WWIII – Little Boy, Fat Boy, Fat Chance.

So what was it all for? Why a reverse Pearl Harbor at the end of WWII?

The Russian–Japanese Pearl Harbor (9–15 August 1945) was designed to get America out of the war while still allowing them to trade with the phoenix of Japan. Similar reasoning occurred with America's delay allowing the Russians to take Berlin. America had huge financial interests in both Japan and Germany.

America has always fronted as a peace activist while maintaining the largest military industrial complex. America is a bitch full of excuses hiding behind fresh-mint dragons destroying tea-party cultures in a field of freedom . . . which is where the Russians took over. The Russo-Japanese Pearl Harbor encouraged Communism's corruption of peacetime so that massive social engineering could occur without the mortality and expense of war.

Peace is an uneasy subject. It's profitable for the citizen but less so for the banks, who make their big money out of war. Hence the uneasy link between peace and taxes – too high and there is civil war, too low and there is international war. We pay high taxes in order to buy peace from the International Bankers.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Roosevelt was surreptitiously killed on 12 April 1945, three weeks before the end of Europe's WWII, to be replaced by Vice-President Truman.

President Truman was an ingénue and refused to believe the very experienced Intelligence Officer Lt. Ladislas Farago that the million strong Japanese Kwantung Army was a paper tiger.

So President Truman gave Stalin the job of destroying the Japanese Kwantung Army in China after WWII had all but ended.[11] America further helped by dropping two atomic bombs on Japan on the 6th and 9th of August 1945 and a third that did not explode. This third nuclear bomb became a gift from America to Japan, who regifted it to the Russians to stop them advancing beyond the Kurile Islands.

In this way Russia became nuclear, was touted as the strongest military force in the world, and the United Nations was gifted to its leader, Joseph Stalin, the Prince of Steel – yet another illegitimate Rothschild.

---

[11] A lot of shit goes down south of the Mongolian border in Guangdong, China. It is an area of human experimentation.

Completely demoralising the Japanese in China, Stalin destroyed the once formidable Kwantung Army in seven of the easiest days of battle in WWII. In exchange, Stalin was given Eastern Europe, and his NKVD/KGB became the perpetual 2IC of the United Nations, with social control of the world during peacetime, which is everywhere America isn't.

All of this came to pass and marks it as a hit. Stalin was given victory in the final battle of WWII and rewarded with the United Nations and a third of the world. That Stalin was a communist, and a supported British agent, marks communism as originating in the bowels of the British Monarchy.

One should always keep in mind that Churchill, Stalin's minder, was King Edward VII's biological son.

If we weren't so easily bought by the doctored photograph
and the biscuit out of the royal biscuit tin
maybe none of this would have come to pass.

www.CelebrityMorgue.com

Stalin's body in Lenin's Mausoleum.
The British Monarchy and the International Bankers
have produced no bigger shit.

Stalin's home in Gori.

Stalin's boyhood home.

The Secret Police files in St Petersburg held these photos of Stalin.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Stalin's Police files.

Stalin in exile in Siberia in 1915.

Stalin giving dictation.

Kalinin.
Lenin.
Stalin.

TIME magazine, 4 January 1943.

TIME
THE WEEKLY NEWSMAGAZINE
MAN OF THE YEAR
All that Hitler could give, he took—for a second time.
(Foreign News)

Time also named Stalin 'Man of the Year' in 1939.

Churchill.
Roosevelt.
Stalin.

The Freemasons' Winston Churchill
Tavistock's Bulldog

Sir Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill KG, OM, CH was born at Blenheim Palace near Woodstock in Oxfordshire, England on 30 November 1874. He was a descendant of the 1st Duke of Marlborough and the son of Sir Randolph Churchill, the third son of the 7th Duke of Marlborough . . . or was he?

Winston Churchill's absent father, Lord Randolph Churchill (1849–95), was initiated into Freemasonry under the name Rudolph H. Spencer in Dublin in 1878. He became the supreme Freemason in England, the Magister Magistrorum (the Master Mason).

Rudolph H. Spencer aka Lord Randolph Churchill.

Freemasonry is passed down from father to son in that the son of a Freemason gains all his father's protections and passes through the ranks at great speed. Winston Churchill was a high-ranking Freemason with full access to its programmes and protocols. It was second nature to him.[1] His father died from syphilis when Winston was 20. Due to his position as Magister Magistrorum he maintained a posthumous influence.

Winston Churchill's mother was Lady Randolph Churchill (née Jeanette "Jennie" Jerome) of Brooklyn, New York. Her father was the New York millionaire financier Leonard Walter Jerome (1817–91) who controlled the *New York Times* newspaper and had interests in a number of railway companies. He sponsored the arts, sailed with his friend William Kissam Vanderbilt, established the American Jockey Club, built the Jerome Park Racetrack in the Bronx (with America's Rothschild representative August Belmont, Snr.) and built the Sheepshead Bay Racetrack. He is still known in New York today by Jerome Avenue in Brooklyn, Jerome Park in the Bronx, and the Lexington Avenue–Jerome Avenue Express.

---

[1] Fred L. Pick and G. Norman Knight, *The Pocket History of Freemasonry*, Seventh Edition, London; Frederick Muller, 1983.

In 1849, Leonard Walter Jerome married Clara Hall (1825–95). They had three daughters including Jennie Jerome. His wife and three daughters spent much time in Europe socialising with the aristocratic elite of the day and Jennie married Lord Randolph Churchill. Leonard Walter Jerome's non-biological grandson was Winston Churchill.

Leonard Walter Jerome.

Lady Jeanette 'Jennie' Jerome Jacobson Churchill Cornwallis-West Porch.

Lord and Lady Churchill.

On 12 September 1908, Winston Churchill married Clementine Ogilvy Hozier (1885–1977), a dazzling but penniless beauty whom he had known for six months. (Actress Ethel Barrymore had turned him down.) They had five children. Marigold died early in childhood and Sarah Churchill co-starred with Fred Astaire in *Royal Wedding.*

Clementine Ogilvy Hozier's mother was Lady Blanche Henrietta Ogilvy, daughter of the 7th Earl of Airlie. Lady Blanche Henrietta Ogilvy was well known for her sexual indiscretions (Christian sex-worker) which eventually caused her divorce as the second wife of Sir Henry Montague Hozier. It takes two to tango.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

John Strange Spencer Churchill. Jennie Churchill . Winston Churchill.

Winston Churchill.

Lady Blanche Henrietta Ogilvy was so loose she maintained that Clementine's father was not Sir Henry Montague Hozier, but Captain William George "Bay" Middleton, a noted horseman who bayed at the women. But no, she was even looser than that.

According to Joan Hardwick, biographer to Clementine Churchill, Sir Henry Montague Hozier had one too many self-sabotaging sperm and all of Lady Blanche Henrietta Ogilvy's children were sired by her sister's husband, Algernon Bertram Freeman-Mitford, the grandfather of the infamous Mitford sisters of the 'dating Hitler' and 'married to a fascist' fame.

Clementine Ogilvy Hozier.

This meant that Winston Churchill's wife's mother was rooting her brother-in-law. This cuckolding within the family meant that **Churchill's wife was illegitimate** and **from a semi-incestuous union**. Clementine Ogilvy Hozier's uncle was also her father. Similar incest of the mind occurred with Churchill's mother and with **Churchill and Hitler's father sharing the same grandfather**.

Continuing the fascist connection, through marriage, **Winston Churchill was related to the Mitford sisters**. Churchill's wife's uncle-father was the Mitford sister's grandfather, making Clementine Ogilvy Hozier (**Churchill's wife) aunt to all the Mitford sisters**. This poses the problem of nepotism in war. The Mitford sisters were supporters of fascism, and secretly, so was Churchill. Churchill's primary motive was war and he never lifted a finger for peace.

> Winston Churchill was illegitimate. He was the first cousin of Adolf Hitler's father. His mother was a slapper.
> Churchill's wife was illegitimate. She was an aunt to the Mitford sisters. Her mother was a slapper.
> Churchill, his wife, the Mitford sisters and Hitler were all supporters of Oligarchy Fascism.

Winston Churchill with his wife Clementine Ogilvy Hozier in 1940.
Lady Diana 'Cimmie' née Mitford Mosley with Adolf Hitler; Tom and Diana née Mitford Mosley in front of Nazi flags at a Nuremberg 'Parteitag' Nazi Party rally.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Baronet Sir Oswald Mosley.

Rudolph H. Spencer Churchill. Winston Churchill's father joined the Freemasons in 1878, aged 28.

At one time Winston Churchill was the uncle of Adolf Hitler's girlfriend, Unity Walkrie Mitford. He was also the uncle of Diana 'Cimmie' Mitford who married Oswald Mosley in 1936. Oswald Mosley founded and led the British Union of Fascists from 1931 and the racist Union Movement from 1948. He had serial affairs with both men and women and had more women than a toilet seat.

Churchill's legal surname was 'Spencer Churchill', but starting with his father, Lord Randolph Spencer Churchill, his branch of the family always used the name 'Churchill' in public life and 'Spencer' in Masonic life. As a Mason and agent, Churchill was always referred to as 'Spencer', just as the Freemason homosexual occultist, the Duke of Hamilton, was referred to as 'Brandon'. Everyone had a nickname in high circles, even Hitler and Goering. Captain Mark Phillips was 'Dusty Fog'.

Because of the existence of another author called Winston Churchill, his books were published under the name "Winston Spencer Churchill" or "Winston S. Churchill", though some later printings sign him as Winston Churchill after the other author died in 1947. Like Winston, he was an historical novelist.

Running with family military tradition just as his father had done, Churchill spent much of his childhood in boarding schools, including Harrow, where he did so badly he was punished for poor work and lack of effort. Due somewhat to emotional turmoil, he failed to achieve much academically but succeeded in developing an independent and rebellious nature. He also developed manipulative writing skills as he tried to emotionally bribe his way back home.

Winston had a distant relationship with his father, which is how the British raise a military. He pined for his socialite mother, who largely ignored him, yet he worshipped her, which is how British women ensure they get married. Winston wanted to follow in his father's footsteps as Chancellor of the Exchequer from the age of 12.

Despite Winston's poor academic achievements, this was achieved through his father's posthumous Masonic influence and his mother's influence with Edward, Prince of Wales . . . who later became King Edward VII, known in social circles as 'Bertie'. Jennie Jerome was one of Bertie's lovers in 1874–75 and again in 1877 as soon as she had recovered from giving birth to the Prince of Wales' illegitimate son, Winston Churchill.

From the time Jennie recovered from the birth of the "premature" Winston to the time her position was taken over by Lillie Langtry (the first 'porn star'), Jennie was part of King Edward's "loose box" – the mistresses he put on display at official functions.

As a desolate, lonely child, Winston was subject to depression and found solace in his hired nanny, Mrs Elizabeth Everest, whom he nicknamed "Woom", a low-academic-achieving spelling of 'womb', a place to which he never wholly returned, despite best efforts and substitute cigar. He was more saddened when his nanny died than either of his parents.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In 1893 at the age of 19, on his third attempt, Winston passed the entrance exam. Even more surprising, as a confirmed academic retard and late emotional developer, he became a politician and a Member of the House of Commons seven years later. ("I'm a retard and I'm okay, I'll enter politics and run the country one day.")

Due to his parental influence – acknowledged, unacknowledged and posthumous – he achieved all his goals, with the media projecting a successful image and his little ditty became, "I'm a politician and I'm okay, I'll enter war and run the world one day."

With his low exam results, Winston enrolled in the Royal Military College at Sandhurst, entering near the bottom of the intake of 102 cadets. (This is really quite dumb.) When he graduated two years later, he was eighth in his class. (The bright ones had left.) As Magister Magistrorum, his father could pulls strings and the military was the military arm of the Freemasons. All of the top four tiers of the military were Freemasons and any war the Freemasons wanted, they got.

On graduation from Sandhurst, Winston was appointed Second Lieutenant in the 4th Hussars Cavalry (1894) and went to Cuba (1895) as a military observer (a Spy who writes publicly) and reported for London's *Daily Graphic*.

In 1898, Winston was the intelligence officer for the 21st Lancers as a war correspondent (a Spy who talks publicly), and took part in the last full (acknowledged) cavalry charge of the British Empire at the Battle of Omdurman in India, after which the British used machine-guns. It was here that he wrote up Kitchener as "the Conqueror of Sudan" for his five-hour genocide of 27,000 dead and wounded Dervishes (2 September 1898) using new water-cooled machine-guns. Only 500 on the British side were killed or wounded and this was mainly from friendly fire after the barrels melted and spat bullets out in all directions.

Intelligence Corps: "There were two other charges by Mounted Infantry during WWI, but they were by colonials attempting to use bayonets as swords. The ANZACs were successful at Beersheeba because the Turks were all stoned on hashish supplied by the 'King's Yids'.[2]

"The other attempt was by the Canadians in France in 1918, but this was stopped by a Private in the Lancashire Rifles who yelled out, 'Who in the fuck are you?'. When the reply came that the Unit was Canadian Mounted Rifles, the Private shouted back, 'You'll be bully beef if you don't fuck off' – and the Canadians left."

Churchill was awarded ribbons for every battle theatre he reported on and many soldiers wondered why? Churchill was the intelligence officer present.

On his return in 1899, Churchill ran as the Liberal candidate for the seat of Oldham. Arthur Balfour, the Conservative leader in the Commons, summed Churchill up by saying, "I thought he was a young man of promise, but it appears he is a young man of promises." Churchill was thwarted, but became a politician and joined the House of Commons in 1900, via the general election, his father's posthumous Freemasonry influence, and his mother's mistress influence with the heir to the throne, Edward, Prince of Wales – Bertie.

Churchill was promoted to Home Secretary in 1910, just in time for the Sidney Street Siege, which he botched up with bowler hat aplomb.

---

[2] The 'King's Yids' were Jewish citizens of the Ottoman Empire, later to become the Stern Gang.

Churchill was rewarded for this by becoming the First Lord of the Admiralty when he was just 36 (1911–15). He gave impetus to military reform, including the development of tanks and aircraft carriers. Churchill was also one of the political and military engineers of the disastrous WWI Gallipoli landings on the Dardanelles, which led to him being correctly described as "The Butcher of Gallipoli".

After WWI an enquiry into the disastrous Gallipoli Operation showed Britain's own Vickers Ltd had supplied over 90% of the Turkish artillery and ammunition used to such deadly effect against their own. This was put down to the vagaries of commerce prior to the outbreak of WWI, but the truth was much worse.

By 1911, Vickers' major customer was Whitehall and the company moved its offices from Sheffield to Broadway (the home of the SIS) in Westminster, London, just to be closer to the British Government. In 1927 they merged and formed Vickers-Armstrong and in 1935 the British Government's "Royal Commission, Private Manufacture and Trading in Arms" was set up with Vickers-Armstrong, who immediately began rearming Britain for WWII. To seal the deal, Vickers-Armstrong set up offices at Bathwick Hill in Bath, right next to the British Admiralty. It was all very in-house. The British Goverment were hardly going to tell.

Espavo 5020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Spymaster: "From the first to the last shots, the Turkish Artillery on the Peninsula at Gallipoli was dependent on Vickers' guns and ammunition. Without this supply, Turkey would have been totally unable to defend its territory against the British. This is the most monstrous truth of the entire WWI period. Vickers supplied the very ammunition used to defeat its own Army.

". . . Britain, hang your head in shame . . .

"Vickers was challenged about this after WWI and largely defeated the enquiry by taking the attitude that they could never defeat a customer with an order, no matter how much they may have disliked their custsomer's intentions. The enquiry did not prevent those high up in Vickers from getting awards and honours.

"I used to watch my grandfather polish up his WWI cap badges. He would tell me how, as a young boy of 15, he was repeatedly told he was too young for Gallipoli and had to stay on the Western Front."

When Asquith formed an all-party coalition government (26 May 1915–December 1916) the Conservatives agreed on the condition that Churchill was demoted. (The same condition had been applied to his father two decades earlier and they knew Winston was King George V's brother.) Churchill then served as Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, a non-portfolio job whose primary function was appointing Justices of the Peace – essentially area paedophile minders. After six months, Churchill resigned from government.

Churchill stood for five political parties. He didn't care who he stood for, as long as he got his way.

In November 1915, in order to rebuild his political kudos with politicians and soldiers, Winston Churchill decided to serve at the Western Front while remaining a Member of Parliament. He also got to be near, if not meet, the Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising protégé Adolf Hitler, whom the British military Freemasons (Tavistock) had put so much effort into training.

As a former cavalryman, W.C. was not qualified to take command in the field, but in December 1915 he was posted for two months' training in modern trench warfare as a Major to the 2nd Grenadier Guards – literally an infantry battalion who throw grenades. From the moment of his arrival in France he was treated as a celebrity by both the British and French. As such, he was kept from the ravages of trench warfare, and for the most, he was in the Reserves out of fire.

Churchill saw only 48 hours of action in December 1915, after which he was promoted on 5 January 1916 to Lieutenant Colonel (Temporary) in command of the 6th Battalion (Service) Royal Scots Fusiliers (RSF), that were to be located near the Belgian border village of Ploegsteert, in the then quiet Ploegsteert Sector of the Ypres Salient, known as the 'Tommies of Plug Street' – British soldiers plugging Germans with lead.

Officially, Winston followed the normal alternating periods of five weeks on the Front Line and five weeks on Reserve, but only from February to 3 March 1916, for which there was no 10-week period. Others, including his wife, thought that a battalion command was more appropriate than Lieutenant Colonel.

Ploegsteert Wood at the bottom end of the Salient (2 km by 1 km) was never lost to the enemy. A short distance from this towards Messines is the church where Corporal Adolf Hitler sheltered in the crypt and painted a number of watercolours during his service on the Salient.

Churchill was first cousin with Hitler's father and the two had many shared characteristics, including speaking, painting and an interest in architecture. Both were Tavistock trained and they may have met during Hitler's Tavistock training in England (February–November 1912). Both were protected Intelligence personnel and could roam around and even exchange information and greetings across lines. Since they were stationed a mile apart and both were painters and the church was the only architectural feature in the area worth painting, it was military intelligence destiny that they met.

This was a planned military bonding exercise, something that would be their secret. One is unlikely to ever find an official record or a witness who lived to tell the tale, and it would only have been recorded in occult channels, and even then, only orally.

In the late 1930s, Hitler sent a telegram to Churchill promising the Wehrmacht would always support Britain in time of trouble – which it did by sabotaging, then abandoning the Battle of Britain, and focusing on OP BARBAROSSA in Russia.

During Winston Churchill's command of the 6th RSF he did not participate in any set battle; however, news reports said "there are reports of close escapes and some daring escapades".[3] Although Winston was a cavalryman and had a rather sticky start, his reputation with the troops was excellent. There wasn't going to be an enemy to fight as long as Winston Churchill was there, so of course they encouraged him to stay. Churchill was used to manufacturing heroism. It was something he had learnt from previous wars.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Kitchener knew what Winston was about and refused to allow him into his army. Kitchener died soon after this decision on 5 June 1916. Behind W.C.'s back the slang of the Ploegsteert trenches went . . .

"Alf a mo, no Abdul stew or Alleyman Anzac soup for this bon Tommy. It's all axil grease not arsapeek for this Bags of Banger, Dog and Maggot . . . gunfire, no hard tack and grungey. It's all Lance Corporal Bacon."

"He's a Base Rat who won't touch no banjo or corkscrew. He's a French battle bowler. Hom forty on the goggle-eyed bugger with the tits."

"He's a numbers dry Donkey Wallopper with duckboard. No bellyache for this rattlesnake. He won't draw crabs. Jack's friend. No Jerry up. His days as a duckboard harrier dodging duds are over."

"Obnoxious dug-out by K of K. No iggry jump off or jildi jumping bags for the old sweat."

"He's no pull-through."

"One blind pig and he's in dock blanco blighty with Birdie. Bonzer brass in a brass hat, British warm with buckshee, dodging the column."

"He needs two months eating bully, harnessed to the bull ring, not a Bum Rusher for bumf. He'll skip cricket ball, jam-tin and cage, and buzz off for char and canteen medals and change of chat-bags and civvy cobblers at the smallest clout . . . orrr the most distant coal-box."

"He'll be constant on the coffin nails and get our cold meat tickets sent back to Blighty, on mass like a true cow. He'll get cold feet at the first cushy crump or daisy cutter anywhere near the cubby hole."

"He's a dinkum Dekko Deep Thinker. Little dingo to be a Tommy Plugger tho, that's dinkum oil. Rekon he'll get his Dick Shot Off."

"First dum-dum, egg, emma-gee or 5-9, he'll napoo on dug-out disease, fat fag and fini kaput to the Estaminet and get a foot-slogger to fly a football pig before halftime."

"Might get a Fritz 4-2 on his fleabag. Could cause some funk in his funk-hole and jakes Gallipoli in his gas bag or furphy gaspirator."

"Gawk."

"Pump-ship."

"No crimed glasshouse for his glory hole."

"No go up or go west. No green cross. No knocked out knife rest."

"Could get a grass-cutter and outed."

"No land creepers, no land ships, and no Kitch landowners while Church is here. Just lucifers from Lady Liz. Keep your lid on though."

"Winnie won't even get mickey, maconachie or a mad minute. He won't see a Minnie-werfer or a moaning Minnie and nor will his mob. They're mufti. War's napoo while Church is here. Pass that by O. C. Donks for oil."

"He'll be on the mat plonked with the perisher."

"He won't get a picket near a pill box. Never see a pill. Never get pipped."

"Won't even plug. Lucky if the W.C. hears one pip emma."

"Pork and beans."

"Pork and cheese."

"Posh."

---

[3] This story is sourced from Dr David Payne, 'And What Did You Do In The Great War, Mr. Churchill?', Contributed Articles, The Western Front Association website.

"Won't even see a potato masher from his pozzie. No chance of pushing up daisies."

"Furphy Quarter Bloke and see what quick firer comes back."

"Stores is for storing things. If they were for issuing things then they would be called issues. Churchill is for warring things. If he was dead there would be peace. While Church is alive, there's war, just not around him."

"Spoken like a red tab Rat After Moldy Cheese, but don't tell that to the Red-Caps or you'll be transferred to Rest Camp by Rob All My Comrades."

"Could cause some rookie rough house around the rum jar."

"Very Russian Sap."

"Very sap."

"Hear K's a short-arm inspector."

"Sausage incoming, silent susan, silent percy, silent death sniping, suicide club stunt, no smoko, a soup ticket and your own leg as souvenir. Scared yet?"

"Sweet fanny adams. Ain't no stay at home. Done my time as a squaddie in the spudhole and stouching square heads from the tape. Want my souvy, spotted dog and stripes."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

"Keep your tin hat, watch the tic-tack, don't be the third man alone and ah, watch out for toc emma, toasting forks and toffee apples and you'll get your ticket, toot sweet."

"Kamerad."

On 7 March 1916 Churchill spoke in Parliament as a serving soldier Member of Parliament and was poorly received. The 6th and 7th RSF then amalgamated (7 May 1916) and Churchill declined the offer to command a Brigade (actually a demotion). This provided him with an opportunity to exit the army, which he did the following day (8 May 1916).

His record showed he served 6 months (Nov. 1915–8 May 1916); however, he was only in France from December 1915 to 3 March 1916 (3 months max), spent 2 months of his training in the Reserves out of fire, then five weeks max in the Reserves, with one or two shows on the front. He only saw 48 hours of action in December 1915 under someone else's command, during which time he was treated as a celebrity and kept in the Reserves away from any front-line action.

Like all previous wars, Churchill was primarily a spy for the expansion of that war and saw a maximum of four days on the Front. Reports from WWI soldiers say they never saw him, nor met anyone who saw him there. It was all for show. It was kudos-building within the media.

While in the army, Churchill wrote to his wife complaining of the small and weak colonial army against the huge professional German army. When he returned to Parliament in June 1916 he promoted compulsory conscription by an Act of Parliament as the key to swelling the British Colonial Forces.

> This was the true purpose of Churchill's visit to the front lines. He joined the army to build up kudos within its ranks so that he could promote compulsory conscription so that more commoners would die and the war would expand. Despite Germany having superior forces, the war was abruptly ended at 11 am on 11 November 1918 with Germany announced as the loser.

In July 1917, Churchill was appointed Minister of Munitions, many of which were sabotaged or sold to the Germans to bomb the British. The incendiary bombs in particular were prolific in German WWII blitzkriegs over London. After the end of the war Churchill served as both Secretary of State for War and Secretary of State for Air (1919–21).

Toxic gas (chlorine) was first used by the British on 25 September 1915 at Loos, the centre of Northern France's coalfields. After WWI, on the possible use of gas weapons, Churchill wrote:

> "I do not understand this squeamishness about the use of gas. We have definitely adopted the position at the Peace Conference of ... gas as a permanent method of warfare. It is sheer affectation . . . to boggle at making his eyes water . . . I am strongly in favour of using poisoned gas . . . The moral effect should be so good . . . necessary to use only the most deadly gases: gases can be used which cause great inconvenience and would spread a lively terror and yet would leave no serious permanent effects on most of those affected."

Churchill may or may not have appreciated that accidents with gas in the trenches were all too common, all too lethal, and the prevailing winds were coming from the German side.

During this time (1919–21), Churchill undertook with surprising zeal the cutting of military expenditure. This gave Germany the advantage as they ignored the Treaty of Versailles, just as the British knew they would. However, the major preoccupation of Churchill's tenure in the War Office was the Allied intervention in the Russian Civil War, which Churchill had helped create by training Stalin in the Sidney Street Siege exercise in January 1911.

Churchill was a staunch advocate of foreign intervention, declaring that Bolshevism must be "strangled in its cradle". He secured from a divided and loosely organised Cabinet an intensified and prolonged British involvement beyond the wishes of Parliament or the nation. It wasn't until 1920 that the last British forces were withdrawn from Russia. Churchill was also instrumental in sending arms to the Poles when they invaded Russia's Ukraine.

Churchill then became Secretary of State for the Colonies (1921) and was a signatory of the Anglo-Irish treaty of 1921. This established the Irish Free State, but only after Irish genealogy had been degraded with the theft of the Irish Crown Jewels by British Freemasons.

The government fell in the 1922 General Election and Churchill lost his ministerial office, his seat and his appendix all in the same month. Two years later, in the General Election of 1924, Churchill was unexpectedly appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer. This was due to his house father's posthumous Magister Magistrorum influence and his biological father, Prince 'Bertie' Edward, who had a propensity to give away jewellery to his mistresses, one of whom was Winston's mother from eight to nine months before Winston was born, and with little break.

> Winston was passed immediately to a wet nurse and Jennie Jerome then carried on her affair with Bertie.

Winston Churchill went on to oversee the UK's disastrous return to the Gold Standard which resulted in deflation, unemployment and the miners' strike that led to the 1926 General Strike.

By the mid-1920s many regarded Churchill as being obsessed with continuing his father's political battles from fifteen years earlier. But there are questions over why. His father had died in 1895, there are questions over Winston's parentage, and it was his biological father Prince Edward who was posthumously influencing Churchill's path.

Lord Randolph Churchill and Winston Churchill looked nothing alike and Winston's mother, like her mother before her, was a high-society muse. She would root anything with money or status and gave rise to a plethora of confused parentage that that high society suffered from, as did the generation before it. This meant that many illegitimate royals were promoted into politics to act as proxy for the monarchy.

Both Winston's mother and grandmother were born cuckolders (as was his wife's mother). This brought constant entertainment and confusion to the family tree. It is widely rumoured that Churchill's mother was part Iroquois Indian, but the family tree covered this up with sustained and "proud" marriages, many just after conception.

To create a Warmonger for an International Bankers' war:

1. Hook a woman up with an influential man with the right socio-economic connections.
2. Put the woman in a loose situation and get her pregnant before the future husband does. This may involve providing other entertainment for the husband.
3. Ensure the stepfather is a distant father and absent by the time the son is old enough to question, let alone the public. Absent includes 'dead'.
4. Ensure the biological father remains distant but influential.
5. Never photograph the stepfather and son together, especially once the child's features have formed.
6. Never photograph the biological father and son together and obscure the biofather's name during all of their lifetimes and those of their children.
7. The biological father guides his son's career from behind the scenes. This includes privileged schooling, unexpected promotions and gifts via others to the mother. This guidance is continued through surviving family members.
8. Ensure the mother has little biological contact with the child. Get a wet nurse. Dehumanising the child helps to create a warlord. This is done with an absent stepfather of great influence, a denied biological father of great importance, a society mother who uses a wet nurse, boarding schools and military training.
9. This helps confuse the child between right and wrong and allows them to feel morally right when doing horrendous wrongs – at least they get the attention they lacked.
10. Instil the stepfather's political battles in the child but finance the biological father's real battles.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

As soon as the 19-year-old high-society muse Jennie Jerome (daughter of newspaper magnate Leonard Walter Jerome) met Lord Randolph Churchill, she joined him in Prince 'Bertie' Edward's fashionable high-society set. Among that set were the Baron Rothschilds. They were not named individually, just as the Baron Rothschilds. They were also Prince Edward's bankers as they had owned the Bank of England since 1815 and would regularly supply the unemployed Prince 'Bertie' Edward with jewellery to give to the women they approved of being there. These were any breeding women with enough status, money or beauty to be of influence.

Jennie Jerome was known to wear this jewellery and historians have just assumed that it was from Bertie, because that was his pattern. None assumed that it was from the Rothschilds. The Rothschilds later assisted Prince Edward in the 1907 heist of the Irish Crown Jewels, which went to the Rothschilds in return for funding Scott's Antarctic expedition, after which a vast area of Antarctica was named "Edward VII Peninsula".

This was no beef to the Rothschilds as Edward, Prince of Wales was one of their biological sons — fathered and grandfathered by Nathan Mayer Rothschild.

Winston Churchill was born 7½ months after the day of marriage. There was little ceremony, it was a hushed and rushed affair, and there was much fuss about him being born premature which made it to the media. However, it is more likely that the wedding went ahead when his mother was six weeks pregnant, and pregnant to another man, a man with influence over Lord Randolph (Spencer) Churchill . . . now that's a very rich and powerful man indeed.

Certainly, as soon as Lord Randolph Churchill married Jennie Jerome, his finances bubbled up and he had a rapid, though short-lived, rise to political fame – faster in beginning and end than any other in history.

Randolph Churchill's political career ended abruptly when, as Chancellor of the Exchequer, he bluffed his resignation. He expected the unconditional surrender of Cabinet and his restoration to office on his own terms, but the bluff was called, accepted, and he resigned all on the same day (20 December 1886) and never returned to front-line politics. Winston had just turned 12.

Randolph Churchill continued to sit in Parliament as a backbencher, spending most of his time at sport, travel, high society and at the racetrack, but his health declined rapidly from syphilis in 1890. When the public found out, no one blamed him. The general response was, 'No wonder, with a wandering wife like that'.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In 1891 when Winston was just 16, Randolph Churchill left England for South Africa (Cape Colony, the Transvaal and Rhodesia), shot lions and recorded his impressions for a London newspaper, later published as *Men, Mines and Animals in South Africa*. He also criticised British politicians. Randolph gave a speech to Parliament in 1893, but the syphilis had taken hold and he was widely disregarded. By 1894 he was viewed as an object of pity. Randolph took off again, in September of 1894, this time with his wife Jennie Jerome, and returned at Christmas very ill and virtually paralysed. He spent six weeks bedridden and then died on 24 January 1895. Winston had just turned 20 and was still training at the Royal Military Academy. During his life, Lord Randolph Spencer Churchill regularly denied Winston Churchill was his son.

Winston spent the first twenty years of his life on a wet nurse with his nanny 'Woom' Everest (1874–75), in boarding school (1881–92), at the Royal Military Academy (1892–94) and then in Cuba (1895), where he reported for London's *Daily Graphic*.

Winston saw little of his father and even less from 1891 to 1895 (16–20). They were rarely, if ever, photographed together for public use. It was important to the British Monarchy to kill off either the biological father or the faux father to prevent comparison. In Winston's case it was to prevent showing a miraculous lack of resemblance between Randolph Churchill and Winston Churchill – hence Randolph Churchill's banishment to South Africa for four years.

The Rothschilds weren't photographed either. This was something they insisted on from the first production camera in 1839. They didn't exactly have to be quick. By 1850, the Photographer's Kit required a horse-drawn wagon. The first folding camera appeared in 1890 and the first pocket camera in 1899. Trouble really started with the first petite camera with matching lipstick holder in 1930. It was the universal agent Wallis Simpson who took advantage of this for the benefit of Germany.

As soon as Randolph Churchill waned and stopped writing for the papers, Winston Churchill took his place, reporting from Cuba for the *Daily Graphic*. This gave continuity to the 'Churchill' name and did not go unsupported by the *New York Times*. Although Leonard Jerome had died in 1891, his daughter Lady Jennie Jerome Churchill still had enough influence to keep W.C. in the media spotlight. The era of Winston Churchill's heroism had begun.

Winston Churchill's return to the Gold Standard had a similar effect on Germany and led to the rise of the Fascists. Churchill's return to the Gold Standard was Hitler's path to power. Churchill monitored what the Gold Standard did to Germany and began issuing warnings of the German Nazi threat, something he had helped to engineer in more ways than one. At the same time, Churchill claimed the Italian fascism of Mussolini had "rendered a service to the whole world" and was "a way to combat subversive forces" – like the commoners' rights to a square meal. 'Square' was a reference to the Freemasons and 'on the square' and 'the square mile of the centre of London', which was full of International Banks' – the players of war.

During the 1926 General Strike, Churchill harked back to the British Empire's glory days when Kitchener murdered 27,000 Dervishes by machine-gun in five hours . . . Churchill suggested machine-guns be used on the striking British miners.

The decision to return to the Gold Standard prompted the economist John Maynard Keynes to write *The Economic Consequences of Mr. Churchill*, arguing that the return to the Gold Standard would lead to a worldwide depression, which it did. Churchill later regarded this as one of the worst decisions of his life, but one he had to make in order to create WWII and support his nephew Hitler.

> Churchill had acted on the advice of Montague Norman, the Governor of the Bank of England, of whom John Maynard Keynes said: "Always so charming, always so wrong." Montague Norman was the mystery financial champion of the Nazi Party while he was Governor of the Bank of England.
>
> No one but a very privileged few realised that the Bank of England substantially stood behind the Nazis. This was the greatest secret of WWII. That, and the fact that the incendiary bombs dropped on London were manufactured in Illingford in 1938 and exported to Germany before WWII began. The London Fire Brigade who found this out after a London Blitz were sworn to secrecy and intimidated by the entire British Intelligence structure. They were told to "shut up or face death by firing squad".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

During this time of Masonic warring influence, the Masonic warring Churchill edited the Government's newspaper, the *British Gazette*. During the 1926 General Strike he argued that "either the country will break the General Strike, or the General Strike will break the country". Churchill had developed this manipulative unarguable language at boarding school while trying to render his way back home to his socialite mother who ignored him – as she was instructed to do.

The Conservative Government was defeated in the 1929 General Election and **Churchill was not invited to join the 1931 Cabinet**. For Churchill, 1929–39 were his 'wilderness years', and he supposedly wrote a four-volume biography of his ancestor, John Churchill, the 1st Duke of Marlborough (*Marlborough: His Life and Times*, pub. 1933–38) and *A History of the English Speaking Peoples* (not published until 1958). It is questionable that it was written between 1929–39, or whether he wrote it, and Marlborough was not his relative from the lines he claimed.

'Marlborough' sounds nice and rolls around in the mouth quite well and he too had oil paintings made of himself, but little else about him warrants bragging rights.

John Churchill (1650–1722) was a brilliant general and a lousy politician whose ties to the Crown were through the sack. He married (1678) Sarah Jennings, an attendant to Princess Anne, and was elevated to Baron in 1685 when James II became king.

His elder sister, Arabella Churchill (1648–1730), began service in the royal household under the Duchess of York, King James II's wife, but soon progressed to services *under* the King. She became one of his mistresses and they had two children together, James Fitzjames (Duke of Berwick) and Henry Fitzjames (Duke of Albemarle). 'Fitz' means the illegitimate child of royalty.

John Churchill commanded the Royal Army during the Battle of Sedgemoor that defeated the Monmouth Revolt, earning the ire of the Protestants. As judicial punishment, Hanging Judge Jeffries invented mass death sentences. This eventually became the British judicial tactic used against large numbers of Boers and Mau.

John Churchill deserted King James II after the Hale Case three years later (1688), and captured Lille twenty years later (1708), for which he was given the title Duke of Marlborough and enough coin to build

Blenheim Palace. Four years later, when his aging wife fell from royal favour, he was charged with embezzling (1712) and lived in exile in Europe for two years, returning in 1714 when the German King George I was crowned King of Great Britain. He later became a political general, earning all sorts of fees and bribes and despatching bods left right and centre.

It was said of John Churchill that, sodomy apart, he introduced most other corruption into the British Army. The only reason he was unsuccessful with sodomy was the large numbers of English and Irish women who followed the drum. Some acquired the title "Mother", indicating they had made the transition to 'Soldier's Sainthood', some through sexual services.

Florence Nightingale.

The most famous was the legendary Mother Trimble who called everyone "Duck", "Ducks" or "Ducky", regardless of rank. She assisted the Parlimentary Army during the English Civil War and was genuinely kind, unlike that famous monster of the upper classes Florence Nightingale.

His nephew James Fitzjames (1670–1734) became the Duke of Berwick in 1687 (aged 16) and was nominated as Knight of the Garter in 1688 (aged 17) but failed to turn up for three months so the elevation was withdrawn. James Fitzjames also fled England in the 1688 'Glorious Revolution' and was stripped of all his titles in 1690. He then secured the throne for Philip V of Spain by fighting against the British in 1707.

You can't trust the illegitimate children of royalty,
which sadly, includes Winston Churchill.

During this period, Churchill was notable as an outspoken critic of India's independence and he opposed Gandhi who was assassinated on 30 January 1948. The monarchs helped Churchill thwart India's independence by handing out medals like the Order of the Star of India, the Order of the Indian Empire and the Order of the Crown of India.

The Order of the Star of India (GCSI, 1861–1947) was given to Princes or Chiefs of India and British subjects for loyal service (toadies) and groundbreaking service (quelling rebellions through mass murder). Recipients included mass murderers like Lord Horatio Herbert Kitchener GCSI. The Order of the Indian Empire (GCIE, 1877–1947) was added by Queen Victoria on 31 December 1877 and the Order of the Crown of India (for women only) was added the following day (1 January 1878). It was given to British Princesses (her relatives), the wives of Indian Princes as well as their female relatives, and other Indian ladies. The gifting of the Crown of India to high Indian women brought compliance and support for British rule. It was basking in the glory of colonialism, and the Indians' hatred of the British is carried in silence to this day.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Soon Churchill's attention was drawn to the rise of his Tavistock protégé Adolf Hitler and the dangers of Germany's rearmament. For a time he was a lone voice calling on Britain to strengthen itself and counter the belligerence of Germany. Churchill was a fierce critic of Neville Chamberlain's appeasement of Hitler, but he was also an outspoken supporter of the Hitler lackey King Edward VIII, during his abdication crisis.

There was speculation that if King Edward VIII refused to abdicate, Churchill would become Prime Minister. However, King Edward VIII did abdicate and Winston Churchill was cast off into a political wilderness once again, this time for three years. King Edward VIII was Winston Churchill's nephew, but then so was King George VI.

At the outbreak of WWII (9 Sept. 1939), Churchill was once again appointed First Lord of the Admiralty and became one of the highest-profile ministers during the so-called "Bore War" because the only noticeable action was at sea (1939–40). Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain, who appointed Churchill, was then forced to resign (10 May 1940) and Churchill succeeded him, creating an all-party government and appointing his Masonic-warring-self as Minister of Defence. During this early part of WWII (the 'Bore War at Sea'), Churchill presided over his first war crime with the murder of a U-boat crew in cold blood.

After Churchill's appointment in 1939, Speer turned up in Hitler's office in the Reichschancellory and found a disconsolate Goering mourning Churchill's appointment: "Now we are for it. Churchill has been appointed First Sea Lord."

Churchill immediately put his friend and confidant, industrialist and newspaper baron Lord Beaverbrook, in charge of aircraft production. It was Beaverbrook's astounding business acumen that allowed Britain to quickly gear up aircraft production and engineering that eventually made the difference in the war. He was also in the business of stealing the Luftwaffe manufacturing schedules, something which Goering was complicit in providing as the British had funded the completion of Goering's Carinhall mansion in Germany.

1925 Morris Cowley.

1936 Spitfire.

Billy Morris built cars badly. His Merlin engines were fitted into Spitfire planes, but they were built so badly each one had to be re-machined, re-assembled and fitted individually. Even then they were failing at relatively low running times. The largest collection of Merlin engines was then destroyed by the Abwehr, MI-5, or both working together. This was deemed a huge loss at the time, but was actually a saving grace as the Merlins were as crappy as his Morris cars. Lord Beaverbrook was Lord Privy Seal, minister of supply and Lend-Lease administrator with the USA, so there was no limit to what he could arrange or finance.

> During WWII some fine speeches were attributed to Churchill. Dunkirk, 4 June 1940: "We shall defend our island, whatever the cost may be, we shall fight on the beaches, we shall fight on the landing grounds, we shall fight in the fields and in the streets, we shall fight in the hills; we shall never surrender."
>
> Battle of Britain, 18 June 1940: "Let us therefore brace ourselves to our duties, and so bear ourselves that, if the British Empire and its Commonwealth last for a thousand years, men will still say, 'This was their finest hour'."
>
> Battle of Britain, 20 August 1940: "Never in the face/field of human conflict was so much owed by so many to so few."

The Allied fighter pilots who won the Battle of Britain then became known as "The Few". They're quite dry the British, and lazy. They only accept reality once someone else has accomplished it for them. All the Germans had to do to win the Battle of Britain was to use drop tanks on all of their planes, instead of just the Me110.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

It was not realised at the time but the RAF failed to follow up on the crashes of "The Few". Comparatively recently, human remains have been found in British aircraft crashed in soft ground. The RAF always act with suitable arrangement and the Army were always called out to guard every German aircraft, but not British ones. The number of RAF aircraft downed by friendly barrage balloons and friendly anti-aircraft guns has never been published, but they substantially outnumber Luftwaffe downed by the same equipment.

> Many of the recordings of these speeches were not by Winston Churchill but Norman Shelley. Churchill also had speech-writers which meant he had nothing to do with some of these speeches other than to turn up drunk and have the re-recording passed to someone else.[4]

Churchill initiated the Special Operations Executive (SOE) under Hugh Dalton's Ministry of Economic Warfare, which established covert, subversive and partisan operations in occupied territories with notable success. Their Commandos established the pattern for most of the Special Forces to follow. Being a Mafia (Stalin) run country, the Russians gave Churchill a new name, the "British Bulldog", which had a friendly but menacing tone. His British codename was "Winnie", hence Operation WINNIE THE POOH to remove his cousin's son (Hitler) out of Berlin.

Churchill met Roosevelt at Ship Harbour, Argentia, Newfoundland (9–12 August 1941). Here they organised the British and American hierarchy to aid the Japanese attack of Pearl Harbor – America's ticket into WWII. Codenamed Riviera, a completely different press release made it to the public. This was called the 'Atlantic Charter'.

Churchill then addressed the US Congress (Dec. 1941 & May 1942) and travelled to Moscow (August 1942 & May 1944).

> Some of Churchill's military actions during WWII could only be described as depopulation exercises. After the Japanese had successfully taken Burma, they threatened to take British-controlled India. Churchill then denied famine relief and 2.5 million Bengalis starved to death in the Great Bengal Famine of 1943.

---

[4] For clarification see *Hitler Was A British Agent*, 2005, 2006, p. 61.

Churchill also instigated the terror bombing of 'everywhere', starting with the appointment of the known maniac 'Bomber' Harris, who didn't care who he bombed as long as they were alive before he started. Another colleague's equally disparaging remarks went, "Not a great lover of wogs, old Bomber".

> Churchill began bombing Dresden on 13/14 February 1945, three months before the end of WWII. Dresden was of little or no military value. It was primarily a civilian target, doubling in size in the previous 18 hours with 600,000 refugees on the day of the bombing. According to the official British statistics of the time, 13,000 people died out of a possible 1.2 million, but this was Post-WWII white propaganda.

Dresden before the bombing: 'Florence of the North'.

Bombing Dresden rid England of the problem of housing East European refugees once the war was over, and many British considered these people untermenschem (people not considered worthy of living), which was exactly the same attitude as Hitler and his fascists. The East European refugees were human footballs, with the British and German governments passing them to each other. In the back door the messages were "You kill them" . . . "No, you kill them" . . . "Nooo, you kill them".

These East European untermenschem were not Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonists, but farmers from the Middle Ages. They were people who could put their house on their back, walk across continents and survive winters as well as their livestock. Churchill actually asked for "suggestions on how to blaze 600,000 refugees". Many of them were Jews.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The old Saxon city of Dresden was one of the great cultural centres of northern Europe. It was an ancient city of artists and craftsmen and referred to as 'the Florence of the North'. During WWII it made cigarettes and china and had been a hospital city for wounded soldiers for the last year of the war. No military units and no anti-aircraft batteries were deployed from the city. Dresden had been spared aerial bombing because it was a benevolent city of no military value.

There was only one squadron of planes stationed in Dresden but they were flown out just before the Dresden bombings, as if on cue. The British High Command contacted the German High Command, namely their British agent Hermann Goering, and any possible German resistance was removed. The city of Dresden was then open for attack.

Dresden after the bombing: 'The City of Death'.

Dresden was a defenceless, non-military, unprotected, open city, heavily populated with civilians, the war sick, and refugees, who made up 50% of the recently doubled population. From 10.09 pm on 13 February to 11.11 am on 14 February 1945, Dresden was bombed in a depopulation exercise that killed more than the Hiroshima and Nagasaki nuclear strikes four months later.[5] Winston Churchill ordered the destruction of Dresden and it was the world's fastest *ever* depopulation exercise. Planned and executed to cause the greatest number of civilian deaths, it left all other war leaders on the bleachers looking like benevolent saints. Churchill ordered the biggest depopulation exercise of WWII.

---

[5] 290,000 died at Hiroshima and Nagasaki: 140,000 at Hiroshima and 75,000 at Nagasaki, where another 75,000 initially survived due to the topography, but died of radiation-related sickness soon after.

On Shrove Tuesday (13 February 1945), 600,000 refugees fled the Russian Army in Breslau and flooded Dresden, carrying only fearful accounts of Soviet savagery. The city doubled its numbers to 1.2 million and the refugees camped on the bitterly cold winter streets. The mood of the city was grim, but Dresden always had a carnival on Shrove Tuesday. Bands of little girls paraded about in carnival dress and the circus played to a full house.

When the first air-raid alarms sounded, the war-weary wandered into the shelters believing the alarms to be false as the city had never experienced an air raid. They were already in a state of shock that this was their life. They did not quite believe that there could be any more hell than the Russians had just inflicted on them. Such Soviet savagery had caused 600,000 refugees to walk 60 miles in one day.

It was a case of the Russians herding sheoples to the slaughter on behalf of the British. Those refugees that did not walk towards Dresden were shot and the Germans complied by not interfering with the migration. All sides wanted the refugees dead: Britain, Germany, Russia and America. For the unarmed refugees, their only refuge was their feet. They had to walk in a certain direction and that direction was Dresden.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The bomb shelters quickly filled up. Many were left on the bitterly cold streets. Once the city was full (1.2 million) there was no escape; 13 hours and 4 minutes of British and American (but largely British) saturation bombing began at 10.09 pm on 13 February 1945. It was to be the worst man-made killing of all time and Shrove Tuesday was to become the New World Order's 'International Day of Shame'.

Historians unanimously agree that Dresden had no military value, and its only military target, 60 miles away, was not bombed, nor were the railway tracks. The Yalta Conference (4–11 February 1945) had finished two days earlier, and a post-WWII nation's status was based on the number of enemy deaths. Churchill wanted a "thunderclap of Anglo-American annihilation" to present as a trump card to Stalin, but bad weather had prevented the bombing of Dresden until after the Yalta Conference. Churchill went without his trump card and Stalin was gifted much of Eastern Europe. Roosevelt opposed the gifting of so much of Eastern Europe to Stalin and was killed before the Potsdam Conference (17 July–2 August 1945) could confirm the post-war carve-up.

Avro Lancasters flying in loose formation.

An aerial view of the Dresden bombing with a Lancaster dropping a load.

Regardless of this, Churchill was still keen on the Dresden genocide to "disrupt and confuse" the German civilian population behind the lines. It was psychological warfare and it sent a message to the Germans that there was 'nowhere safe to hide'.

The first attack lasted 24 minutes (10.09–10.33 pm). It was "Precision Saturation Bombing" where all the small fires joined to create one big firestorm. This created an artificial tornado of fire so huge that all the available air was sucked out of the streets and into the blazing inferno. The fire winds carried large debris and people were drawn airborne into it. Others were running down the streets with their hair and clothes on fire, screaming until they fell down, or buildings collapsed on top of them. The flaming tornado was so high, the bomber pilots could still see it as they descended onto English soil.

After the first bombing, tens of thousands of surviving civilians left their shelters and escaped to the only places that weren't burning – the 1.5-square mile Grosser Garten, the banks of the River Elbe and the outskirts of the city.

The second British/American raid took this into account and came three hours later at 1.22 am 14 February 1945 with no air-raid warning. Twice as many bombers returned with a massive load of 500,000 phosphorus incendiary bombs (more than 700,000 dropped in total).

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The raging firestorm was spread to Grosser Garten and engulfed the entire 1.5-square mile area. A sheet of flame ripped across the grass, uprooted trees and carried corpses and debris into the remaining high branches. The temperature in the centre of the city reached 1600°C. Virtually all those on the surface in the city of Dresden died from these two strikes, in 3½ hours.

Oxygen was sucked out from most of the bomb shelters and those who weren't directly bombed or burnt to death, died of suffocation. Others perished in the blast of white heat, hot enough to melt human flesh. Many hiding underground simply disintegrated into cinders or melted and all that was left was a greasy human waste up to 4 feet (1.2 m) deep. Most of those who survived remained huddled in tunnels far enough away from the city centre to maintain oxygen and waited for the second firestorm to die down.

There were few people left to tidy up the genocide and corpses were photographed in the treetops for days afterwards. The resulting photographs were then blamed on the Nazi Jewish atrocities in the Post-WWII BLACK PROPAGANDA that still rages today. This is loosely run by the Jews with paedophile non-Jews bribed to assist them.

On 14 February 1945 from 10.33 am to 11.11 am American bombers and Mustangs pounded the remaining city for 38 minutes. It was a lighter attack but focused on eliminating any survivors. US Mustangs flew low over the city and strafed anything that moved including refugees; hospital patients and their nursing staff on the banks of the River Elbe; thousands of old men, women and children who had escaped the city; as well as a column of rescue vehicles rushing towards the city. A flock of vultures then escaped from the zoo and picked over their remains. This was an occult hit of gargantuan proportions that destroyed any and all culture in what was a city of peace. Dresden would now be remembered for something different. The occult shifted Dresden from 'The Florence of the North' to 'The City of Death' and it was Churchill's doing – Churchill the occult son of King Edward VII.

After 13 hours, Dresden looked like the horror movies that were to come. It resembled craters on the moon and inspired such post-civilisation movies as *Planet of the Apes*. Much of the Royal Air Force and Dresden airmen were ashamed of what Bomber Harris had commanded them to do. Some accepted their medals, some refused to wear them and some threw them away. There was rebellion within the army of the occult.

Dresden.

Between 260,000 and 600,000 people were slaughtered in one night, upwards of a third to half of the Dresden population. The dead comprised mostly unarmed refugees, wounded soldiers, their doctors and nurses, the elderly, women and children, and those coming to the rescue.[6]

Dresden.

More than 260,000 bodies and residues of bodies were counted, but those who melted or disintegrated could not be traced. Most of the 600,000 refugees died. The best way to estimate the death toll is to subtract the number of survivors from the 1.2 million known to have been in the city at the time. When this is done, the number of survivors is very small indeed.

The number of dead is closer to 1 million in 13 hours.
Dresden was a depopulation exercise, the magnitude
of which the world had never seen before.

Sixteen hundred acres of land were destroyed in the world's most deadly thirteen-hour period. By comparison, only 600 acres of London were damaged during all of WWII. Embedded historians have suggested that Dresden was a payback for the bombing of Coventry, but only 380 were killed in Coventry (1939–45) and it was a legitimate military target storing munitions. The mountains of corpses left in Dresden were then presented by the prosecution team at the Nuremberg Trials as "evidence" of Nazi atrocities against Jewish concentration-camp inmates. This is called 'Post-War BLACK PROPAGANDA' and was used to humiliate the Germans and create sympathy for the Jews. As a result, Germany financed much of the State of Israel after the war and this act is only now being questioned.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

SCHADENSPLAN
DER STADT DRESDEN
■ TOTAL ZERSTÖRT
▦ BESCHÄDIGT
UNBESCHÄDIGT
DER RAT DER STADT
DRESDEN
STADTPLANUNGSAMT
M.1:25000

Dresden after Churchill's bombing
Black = 100% destruction; Grey = partial destruction

---

[6] Sources: The eyewitness account of Kurt Vonnegut, a POW in Dresden during the Allied bombing. He wrote about this in *Slaughterhouse Five* (1969), which was banned in several US states. It carried the alternative title *The Children's Crusade: A Duly Dance with Death*. Also *The Independent*, London, 20 December 2001, p. 19.

Historian David Irving denied the Holocaust in 1989 but was not arrested until 2005. On 20 February 2006 he (67) was sentenced in Vienna to three years' imprisonment. So much for an 'open media' and 'just judiciary', but it does explain the German Shadow Government's control over everything German, including its perception of itself. The German Shadow Government has been so successful at convincing Germans of their 'guilt', second-generation Germans were suffering from this 'guilt' as late as 2000.

TOP SECRET.

PRIME MINISTER'S PERSONAL TELEGRAM

10, Downing Street,
Whitehall.

SERIAL No. D.83/5

WITHDRAWN

GENERAL ISMAY FOR C.O.S. COMMITTEE.
C. A. S.

It seems to me that the moment has come when the question of bombing of German cities simply for the sake of increasing the terror, though under other pretexts, should be reviewed. Otherwise we shall come into control of an utterly ruined land. We shall not, for instance, be able to get housing materials out of Germany for our own needs because some temporary provision would have to be made for the Germans themselves. The destruction of Dresden remains a serious query against the conduct of Allied bombing. I am of the opinion that military objectives must henceforward be more strictly studied in our own interests rather than that of the enemy.

The Foreign Secretary has spoken to me on this subject, and I feel the need for more precise concentration upon military objectives, such as oil and communications behind the immediate battle-zone, rather than on mere acts of terror and wanton destruction, however impressive.

28.3.45

Winston Churchill's apology in the form of a memo dated 28 March 1945. This is not unlike current Israeli apologies for recent atrocities in the Middle East.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

If ever there was a European war crime, Winston Churchill's British and American depopulation of Dresden on the 13/14 February 1945 was it. Although President Roosevelt was killed soon after (12 April 1945), it was a war crime for which Winston Churchill was not tried at Nuremberg. Such is the fate of the winners of war and history is left to try them posthumously.

Winston Churchill, WWII's greatest killer, 'the Butcher of Gallipoli', 'the Demon of Dresden', was knighted with Britain's highest honour, the Knight of the Garter, on 24 April 1953 and was then awarded Europe's highest honour, the Charlemagne Award (Karlspreis), from the German city of Aachen near the Belgian/Dutch border on 10 May 1956.

The Charlemagne has been gifted from the city of Aachen since its inception in 1950. It was first awarded on Ascension Day 1950 to Richard Count Coudenhove-Kalergi, the founder of the Pan-European Movement, after which even bolder financial steps were made towards building the common house of Europe.

Churchill.

'Ascension Day' is the day the Catholics dedicate the next 12 months to lying.

'Charlemagne' is an interesting choice of name for the common house of Europe as it was used by the Germans to name the SS Division of the Waffen that served in Russia. The Charlemagne Waffen SS won their final accolade by guarding Hitler in Berlin in the last days of WWII. For this they adhered to Ascension Day. Most of these Berlin survivors were Alsatian and ended up in Vietnam with the French Foreign Legion.

Churchill was presented with the Charlemagne Award in 1956 for contributing to:

> "European unification and defending the highest earthly goods – European freedom, humanity and peace. Charlemagne is awarded to the founding fathers of a United Europe who have embodied hope for the integration of a voluntary union

> of European peoples without constraint and to safeguard the future of European children and their children's children."[7]
>
> Winston Churchill was an occult sadist who through murder compliance felt quite assured that he was the leading Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonist of his times. He makes a mockery of the Charlemagne Award, but then so does the Charlemagne Award.
>
> Three years after Churchill, Charlemagne was awarded to American General George Catlett Marshall, who ensured Pearl Harbor was bombed without any American personnel in Hawaii being notified. With this in mind, Churchill characterised Marshall as 'the organiser of Allied victory'.

TIME magazine then voted Marshall 'Man of the Year' in March 1946. He became Secretary of State in 1947, started the Marshall Plan for the recovery of Europe (5 June 1947), received America's Distinguished Achievement Award for his WWII contribution (1948), became President of the American National Red Cross in 1949 (intelligence sluts) and Secretary of Defense in 1950 (very worrisome).

General George Catlett Marshall.

When communist hunter Senator Joseph McCarthy bypassed Churchill's accolades and pointed out the e-n-o-r-m-o-u-s errors of General Marshall's ways, which teetered on the wrong side of treason, General Marshall resigned in 1951.

However, this did not deter the communist collaborators, Nobel and Charlemagne. General George Catlett Marshall received the Nobel Peace Prize in 1953 (what a joke!), so it was safe enough to award him the Charlemagne on Ascension Day (7 May 1959) – for his Pan-European ideals of World War. At least Churchill was not alone. The Demon of Dresden had playmates in the Pan-Pacific. But the Charlemagne is a moralistic award and the kiss of death to those who are exposed, and General Marshall was dead within six months (16 October 1959).[8]

TIME
THE WEEKLY NEWSMAGAZINE
GENERAL MARSHALL
"We must not waste the victory."

Senator Joseph McCarthy.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In 1947, as Secretary of State, General Marshall bought his Charlemagne by announcing the US was prepared to contribute to European recovery. This became known as the 'Marshall Plan' and helped Europe to quickly rebuild.

In 2002 the Charlemagne was awarded to the Euro (yes that's right, the currency) represented by the European Central Bank (President Wim Duisenberg). In 2003 it was given to the President of the European Convention (Valéry Giscard d'Estaing). In 2004 it was given to the European Parliament (President Pat Cox). The accession of ten new member states to the European Union on 1 May 2004 marked the beginning of a new age in the European integration process, the Pan-European movement. It's not a good look, but it is representative of our future.

---

[7] Professor Walter Eversheim, Spokesman of the Board of Directors of the Association for Award of the International Charlemagne Prize of the City of Aachen. Slightly paraphrased to make the English translation more readable.

[8] It was similar for Pope John Paul II, the 26-year Pontiff of the Roman Catholic Church who received an additional special Charlemagne on 24 March 2004 and was dead within 377 days. He too was shamed, this time for running a paedophile movement fronting as a religion, as opposed to running a paedophile movement fronting as a war. Both rely on absent fathers, both are occultists, and neither are 'spiritual'.

This is called believing in your own advertising and patting yourself on the back. “We are for a Pan-Europe, so we will award Pan-Europe and thereby acknowledge ourselves . . . after all, stones lifted on the Charlemagnes to date have revealed Gentlemen of Genocide.” Still, no awards have been revoked. The Charlemagne is a chameleon’s award, not for what they do, but for how the press presents them.

Official biographers still brush aside the atrocities of Churchill, or any description of him as WWII’s leading killer. First it was Hitler who was bad, then Stalin. Official biographers neglect to mention that Hitler and Stalin were both British agents, that Churchill played his part in training them, that Stalin was on the British side, that Churchill and Stalin shared the same great-grandfather, who was also Hitler’s great-great-grandfather – Mayer Amschel Rothschild (1743–1812).

Churchill, Hitler and Stalin were all relatives and all Rothschilds.

History focuses on Stalin as a leading killer because he became ‘the enemy’ of Western Europe soon after WWII in what became known as the Cold War, because it was not ‘hot’. This was something Churchill and Truman planned to a ‘T’ from Potsdam, to the lost nuclear bomb over Japan and their “Iron Curtain” speech in America in 1946.

For this, British Prime Minister Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill and American President Franklin Delano Roosevelt were described as “great democratic statesmen”. **Our history books either need to be reviewed or declared ‘occult sanctuaries’ and the Biographical Encyclopedia ‘A History of Occultists’.**

The Great Bengal Famine (1943) and the bombing of Dresden (1945) were both depopulation exercises with over three million people dead as a result. Not something you’d want on your résumé, so it was taken off Churchill’s.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Winston ‘Windsor-Rothschild’ Churchill’s résumé:

> “Killed three million people in two years with the stroke of a pen . . . oh and um another 10 million on the side over five years . . . couldn’t help myself . . . I’d been running the build-up for a long time, and helped train much of the opposition . . . least of my worries . . . where’s my cigar . . . let history judge me . . . my father was the King of England . . . where’s my cheque . . . where’s Woom . . . I never had any real parents.”

During WWII, Germany placed Germans in Polish houses and removed the Poles out of Poland, some to extermination camps and some to Germany (for labour and protection) including Dresden. When this was going on, Churchill stated in the House of Commons (1944):

> “Expulsion is the method which, insofar as we have been able to see, will be the most satisfactory and lasting. There will be no mixture of populations to cause endless trouble . . . A clean sweep will be made. I am not alarmed by these transferences, which are more possible in modern conditions.”

Churchill tried to convince Britons and the rest of the world that the only way to alleviate tensions between the Poles and the Germans was for the Poles to leave Poland during WWII, and to transfer nationalities in accordance with the new national borders . . . that Churchill and Stalin had established without consulting the exiled Polish government. This would not stand up in any court of enquiry. In these matters, Churchill was completely complicit with Hitler and Stalin, his two Kreigschule (War School) protégés.

> “The exact numbers and movement of ethnic populations over the Polish-German and Polish-USSR borders in the period at the end of World War II is extremely difficult to determine.”[9]

This was to allow Churchill’s killing of Jews (up to 860,000) in Dresden without the genocide being accountable to Britain. Even the photographic blame went to his first cousin’s son, Adolf Hitler.

Churchill was party to the post-WWII treaties that would re-draw European and Asian boundaries. Proposals for post-WWII European boundaries were discussed as early as the Tehran Conference (Nov. 1943) by Roosevelt and Churchill, with the settlement finally agreed by Truman, Churchill and Stalin at the Potsdam Conference (17 July–2 August 1945, Article XIII, Potsdam protocol).

---

[9] The Churchill Centre website.

Churchill claimed he tried to resist Stalin in carving up Europe, but Churchill instigated the idea with the resistive Roosevelt (1943). Roosevelt declined on too many countries and was killed by the captured German General Gehlen three weeks before WWII ended in Europe. Truman then replaced Roosevelt and agreed to Russia gaining all of these spheres of influence. His life depended on it.

Churchill knew of Roosevelt's impending assassination and confirmed the transfer of Eastern Europe to the communists with Truman by 2 August 1945. He also helped train his distant cousin Stalin (already a proven bank robber and murderer), installing him as the head of Russia. The British also took Stalin out.

Two of these East European boundaries concerned the borders between Poland and Russia (the Curzon line) and between Poland and Germany (the Oder-Neisse line). Despite the fact that Poland was the country that first resisted Hitler – Churchill, Truman and Stalin determined the boundary lines without consulting the Polish Government in exile.

Quite rightly, the Poles felt betrayed by Britain, a country they had fought alongside for all of WWII. The Poles also acted quite brilliantly as proxy British Intelligence Agents in Eastern Europe, something the Brits found as difficult as tipping their bowler hat to a commoner.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Churchill and Roosevelt also proposed the boundary between North Korea and South Korea and the removal of Japanese forces from these countries (Yalta Conference, 4–11 February 1945). Churchill and Truman ensured Stalin would have the greatest say in the post-WWII carve-up by refusing to get rid of the Japanese Kwantung Army in China, suggesting it was a huge job. They even had counter-intelligence spread scary bedtime stories at home. Stalin did the job in seven days (9–15 August 1945) and was then publicised as the most powerful man in Europe. Such are the paper tigers of war and the fortunes of bank robbers.

> The 4–11 February 1945 Yalta Conference is now described by many historians as the beginning of the Cold War.
>
> Churchill tried to cover this up by writing about it later, saying that he could not influence Stalin. He had trained him, for Christ's sake. Churchill was not the man history makes him out to be. He was the biological son of King Edward VII, the stepson of the Freemasons' Magister Magistrorum (the

> Master Mason), and the grandson and great-grandson of the International Banker Nathan Mayer Rothschild.
>
> Both of Winston Churchill's fathers were the secret society planners of wars, as were his grandfathers on both sides, and they both instilled in Winston the means to carry out the largest war of all time and the largest crimes of all time.

Winston Churchill's mother then married (28 July 1900) and divorced (1914) Winston's half-brother George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West and went on to remarry (1 June 1918) someone who looked incredibly like Winston's other half-brother, while Winston's biological father King Edward VII had been having sexual relations with his own daughter since she was 16, if not 15.

George Cornwallis-West.

Jennie Jerome with her son Winston Churchill in 1911.

Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West was the daughter of 'Patsy', a renowned matchmaker and former teenage lover of Prince Edward. Patsy arranged for her daughter Daisy (28 June 1873–29 June 1943) to marry (8 December 1891) the richest German Prince, the Prince of Pless (23 April 1861–31 January 1938), with Daisy's biological father and former lover Prince 'Bertie' Edward attending the ceremony.

King Edward VII.

Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West.

'Daisy then became Daisy, Princess of Pless. They lived in the castle in Pszczyna (Pless), just outside of Warsaw, Poland, where they were formerly known as Prince Jan Henryk XV Von Hochberg of Pszczyna, (HSH Hans Heinrich XV) and Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless was King Edward VII's daughter.
Winston Churchill was King Edward VII's son.
George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West was King Edward VII's son.
Winston Churchill and George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West were half-brothers.
George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West married Lady Randolph Churchill and became Winston's stepfather – "Gidday Bro-Dad".

Pszczyna Castle.

Of Winston Churchill it can be said:
"His mother married his brother".

Prince 'Bertie' Edward's only excuse was that Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless was from a previous liaison and didn't know she was his. I say "bullshit" as he had his hand in arranging the hushed and rushed marriage of her mother Patsy whose marriage date of 3 October 1872 was most likely 3 November 1872, with Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West 7½ weeks pregnant and the date officially backdated by royal decree.

> There were no constraints that required morality. These were scum that would be evicted from any and every neighbourhood. As a result, Churchill was a natural-born killer who hid behind the secret societies and finance that backed him – the Masons, the British Royal Family, the Rothschilds and their banks.

President Truman had delayed the Potsdam Conference so he could test the nuclear bomb. This was done successfully on 16 July 1945 in New Mexico and took the focus off royal incest and child sex abuse. It later killed many actors by cancer.[10]

Taking the focus off Royal incest.

[10] Upon further investigation, this was the result of rocks and plants from New Mexico placed in a Hollywood back lot. The cacti positively glowed in the dark and the US Army killed one of its most ardent allies. Actor John Wayne (Marion Robert Morrison) died of radioactive cacti cancer and plain old-fashioned incompetence.

Truman being sworn in.

During the spring and summer (March–August) of 1945, President Truman repeatedly agreed to use the bomb and took the official position that his decision (backed up by General Groves) was one of non-interference on proposals by the Secretary of War Henry Stimson and Secretary of State James Byrnes.

Stalin wanted to enter the Pacific War and had been preparing for it since October 1944. In July 1945, Emperor Hirohito was searching for a compromised peace plan that might allow Japan to retain some of its overseas territories. Stalin discussed these with Truman at the Potsdam Conference.

Presidents, babies and war.

President Truman and Secretary of State Byrnes already knew about this Japanese Peace Plan via American Intelligence reports, so they arrogantly considered nothing new had been proposed and dismissed it, indicating to Stalin that he should do the same.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

> As a result, Stalin promised to declare war on Japan by 15 August 1945. As a cunning 19th-and 20th-century criminal, this was the date at which Stalin concluded war with Japan.

On 26 July 1945, America, Britain and China issued the Potsdam Declaration demanding the Japanese Empire immediately surrender unconditionally or face “prompt and utter destruction”. A day earlier, President Truman had effectively ordered three atomic bombs dropped on Japan.

Lieutenant General Carl Spaatz, the commander of the newly created US Army Strategic Air Forces in the Pacific, requested written authorisation for the use of the atomic bomb. The Acting Army Chief of Staff in Washington, General Thomas Handy, contacted President Truman and Secretary of War Henry Stimson at the Potsdam Conference (17 July–2 August 1945).

Neither President Truman nor Secretary of War Henry Stimson issued a ‘stop order’ and General Thomas Handy gave the order to Lieutenant General Carl Spaatz on 25 July 1945 to drop the three atom bombs on Japan.[11] President Truman could have reversed the order at any time in the 15 days from 25 July to 9 August 1945.

Any size rocket as long as it’s white.

Truman overjoyed with nuclear war.

With a lot of unrecorded insider trading and secret society (Freemasons and Illuminati) complicity, on 28 July 1945, Prime Minister Suzuki announced that his government would ignore the Declaration. America dropped the bombs and Emperor Hirohito retained his position as emperor, although in a more subdued form, but with complete American support.

---

[11] The Curators of the National Air and Space Museum, *The Last Act: The Atomic Bomb and the End of World War II.*

There were four targets, Hiroshima, Kokura, Nagasaki and Niigata. Kokura was not hit due to bad weather and the third unexploded bomb was dropped on Niigata. The first bomb exploded at 8.15:15 am on 6 August 1945 over Hiroshima (500 miles from Tokyo). Like Dresden, this was the first time Hiroshima had been bombed in WWII. Unlike Dresden, Kyoto was ruled out because of its unrivalled beauty . . . at least that's the official story.

Major General Leslie R. Groves (1896–1970) graduated from West Point in 1918 with a degree in civil engineering. During the US military build-up, Major Groves served as the deputy commander of all Army construction projects and was a key figure in the building of the Pentagon. On 17 September 1942 he was assigned to lead the Manhattan Project – the atomic bomb.

The real story behind the location of the bombs was more personal. Major General Groves was the senior American officer that served on the President's special committee that briefed on the targets. They originally examined dropping the bombs on a forest, but Groves changed his mind. Bombing a forest was an empty question, and unless there were dead bodies lying around, the Japs wouldn't take it seriously. General Groves didn't want to go down in history as a killer of trees.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

By the end of May 1945 the committee selected, in order of priority, Kyoto, Hiroshima, Kokura and Niigata. In the meantime, the Army Air Forces were ordered not to firebomb these cities. General Groves had the ultimate say on what the committee recommended and was intrigued by the revelation that one of his senior American officers on the committee had a Japanese mistress and child living in Kyoto. As a result, Kyoto was discounted, not because of its beauty, but because of a mistress and an illegitimate child. By July 1945, Kyoto had been replaced by Nagasaki.

Truman was supposedly briefed on the atomic bomb for the first time by Secretary of War Stimson during his swearing in, but Truman is 'true by name and not by nature'. No historian realistically believes anything an American President says during wartime, and President Truman quickly became an insider and a career liar.

The true title of an American President is "Pirate Captain", as in 'Pirate Captain Truman' or 'Pirate Captain Temporary' – the title and codename of George W. Bush.

The atomic bombs cost US$2 billion to develop (around US$40 billion in 2007 figures). America, Britain and Canada worked together, with America taking the lead and Russia kept out of the picture. General Groves to his Los Alamos staff (24 December 1944):

"If this weapon fizzles, each of you can look forward to a lifetime of testifying before a congressional investigating committee." One of them did and everyone ignored it.

Fat Man.

In circles more realistic than embedded historians, Truman was briefed before he became president. The murder of President Roosevelt occurred on the basis that Truman, when president, would launch the atomic bomb regardless of any Japanese peace initiatives, whereas Roosevelt wouldn't, nor would he give Stalin Eastern Europe.

Roosevelt did not want the Cold War, whereas Truman, as president, was prepared to kill 290,000 people and gift Russia an unexploded atom bomb to ensure the Cold War went ahead as planned.

Brigadier General Tibbets.

Brigadier General Paul Warfield Tibbets Jr. (23 Feb. 1915–) had been up on morality charges and there were questions asked in official circles at the time as to whether he was too much of a moral reprobate to drop the atom bomb. All sorts of bods were queried with much soul-searching occurring at high levels. Even the old sodomite running the FBI was consulted and even Hoover was reportedly against it.

. . . named after Tibbets' mother.

Disregarding this, Tibbets became the pilot of the lead bomber and was briefed on The Manhattan Project from 17 September 1944 under President Roosevelt. Truman became Vice-President from January 1945 and Roosevelt "died unexpectedly" three months later.

When General Paul Tibbets dropped the first bomb on Hiroshima he had all the credit for the nuclear raid shone on him. As soon as he landed he was awarded the Distinguished Service Cross and then enshrined in the National Aviation Hall of Fame with 10 additions to his fruit salad. The rest of the crew only received Air Medals.[12]

The US B29 bomber 'Enola Gay' dropped the uranium 235 atom bomb on Hiroshima (500 miles from Tokyo) at 8.15 am on 6 August 1945. The 3-metre-long bomb weighing 3.6 tonnes (8000 lb) was dropped by parachute and exploded 580 metres (1885 ft) above the ground for maximum casualties. It had the equivalent power of 12,500 tonnes of TNT and was nicknamed 'Little Boy' after the recently deceased President Roosevelt. At the point of detonation the temperature reached several million degrees Celsius, creating a fireball which accelerated the radiation into a severe expanding shock wave.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Hiroshima.

---

[12] The British observer and undercover agent Leonard Cheshire was also on board. He tried to do some good after WWII and created Cheshire Homes but was genuinely tortured by his wartime experiences and suffered from TB.

At the time, 350,000 Japanese citizens and military personnel were in Hiroshima and it was timed for maximum casualties, with many of the civilians walking to work. The area was mainly high-density administrative and commercial buildings jam-packed with people as only the Asians can do. At a 500-metre radius there was 100% destruction of all concrete structures and at a 2-kilometre radius there was at least a 50% kill rate with complete destruction of all wooden structures.

Over 13 square kilometres (5 square miles) 76,000 buildings were destroyed. Only 8% escaped damage. Within four days, the Hiroshima City Survey Section estimated 140,000 people had died from the first nuclear strike. Considering the long-term effects of radiation sickness, genetic and chromosome injury, mental trauma and unborn children being mentally and physically retarded, the death toll has continued to grow.

Hiroshima aftermath.

America's next target was the city of Kokura, now part of Kitakyushu, but it was covered in heavy cloud so the aircraft was diverted to the unlucky bright skies above Nagasaki. An American B29 bomber dropped a second atomic bomb by parachute at 11.02 am on 9 August 1945. The 3.5-metre-long plutonium 239 bomb weighed 4 tonnes (9000 lb) and was nicknamed 'Fat Man' after Winston Churchill. It had the equivalent power of 22,000 tonnes of TNT.

Hiroshima was flat and flattened, but Nagasaki lies in a series of narrow valleys. The bomb exploded 500 metres (1625 ft) above a suburb of schools, factories, private houses and 270,000 people. Over 750 metres, all reinforced concrete buildings were destroyed, but due to the hilly topography only 6.7 square kilometres (2.6 square miles) were reduced to ashes. Of the 51,000 buildings in the city, 22.7% were completely destroyed and 36.1% escaped damage; 75,000 were killed on the day, with another 75,000 dying of radiation sickness soon after, leaving 150,000 dead at Nagasaki.

Nagasaki before.

15
11
2000
12
1000
GROUND ZERO
16
17
20
18

Nagasaki after.

Nagasaki after.

Regarding the vexed question of whether a third bomb was dropped, the Americans all say “No”, but we know that a third bomb was in existence before testing was done in America on 16 July 1945 (with an earlier test on 17 July 1944 at San Francisco).

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

Under American instructions, the Russians were approaching Japan from the north and threatened the remaining exhausted and depleted Japanese population. The Japanese were so demoralised and infuriated by the huge loss of life at Hiroshima (6 Aug. 1945), Nagasaki (9 Aug. 1945), the conquering of their Kwantung Army in Manchuria (9–15 Aug. 1945) and the Russians taking the Kurile Islands (August 1945), which they occupy to this day, and the resulting 1 million dead and 200,000 captured, that the Japanese gave the Russians the salvaged atomic bomb and the Kurile Islands, just as the Americans wanted them to do.

> As a reward for gifting the Russians the third atomic bomb, Japan was one of the few countries not to be involved in the irritating Cold War.

The Russian accounts are quite detailed and specify the types of Russian aircraft flown in to collect the third atomic bomb and the special markings applied to the aircraft. Only an intelligence officer would realise that safe conduct for these aircraft would have required special markings for agreed protection. The existence of this story explains how the Russians came by the atomic bomb when the Americans assumed it would take the Russians 50 years to catch up.

> In high office, the real story – the Americans were prepared to gift the nuclear bomb to either Japan or Russia, just as long as a Cold War started. Without the Cold War, their military would fall into disrepair and disrepute. As it was, the Cold War was a military holiday, an occupying rest period between WWII and WWIII – an excuse to maintain their equipment, with scenarios played out as excuses to develop their equipment. The Cold War was also the main excuse for worldwide surveillance.

Russia used 'FAT CHANCE' to put themselves on equal footing with America. They failed to achieve this so resorted to smoke and mirrors, driving their nukes all around Russia pretending they were everywhere. This helped fuel the Cold-War-without-result over four decades. The third unexploded atomic bomb is called 'gifting arms for future war' and is the equivalent of using NTO's (Non-Traceable Ops) to begin a war.

> Truman dropped a third nuclear bomb (FAT CHANCE) on Niigata but it failed to explode, as was planned. It was a gift to Russia via Japan, with the pre-organised Russian attacks on the Japanese Kwantung Army in Manchuria and the Kurile Islands ensuring that the atomic bomb went to Russia to begin the Cold War. This FAT CHANCE atomic bomb might as well have been labelled 'Koba' as it was another operation serving Stalin.

The Russians had begun an atomic bomb project in 1942. Discoveries are a product of preparation and integrity, and Russia was failing on both counts. Rather, they relied on their nuclear programme being stolen from Los Alamos by the Jew, Victor Rothschild, the Third Baron Rothschild no less, and virtual owner of the Central Banking system. Still, little progress was made until the Americans gave Russia the atomic bomb via the Japanese in late 1945. No doubt Victor Rothschild had something to do with FAT CHANCE not exploding.

The third nuclear bomb is not to be confused with the Manhattan Project's 'first' nuclear explosion at 5.29:45 am 16 July 1945, over the New Mexico desert. This plutonium *implosion* bomb caused a blinding flash and unbelievable heat equivalent to 20,000 tons of TNT, many times that of what was expected. It was 60% bigger than the atomic bomb dropped on Hiroshima, but the Nagasaki bomb was 10% bigger again. Los Alamos scientific director Dr Robert Oppenheimer described it with a quote from the Bhagavad Gita, "I am become Death, Destroyer of Worlds".

The third nuclear bomb is also not to be confused with the atomic explosion on 17 July 1944, 35 miles northeast of San Francisco. This was "the largest stateside disaster of WWII", and "remains unresolved to this day", yet it was a planned atomic test by Los Alamos Laboratory scientists.

The third nuclear bomb should also not be confused with the purposeful sinking of the USS *Indianapolis* on 30 July 1944. The nuke it was carrying had been delivered to Guam four days earlier.

Because atomic bombs have the same physical signature as the formation of a planet – Gamma rays, X-Rays and very fast ions and electrons – the atomic bombs acted like a smoke signal right across the universe. If there was any thinking life in the rest of the universe, this was the flashing neon calling-card – 17 July 1944 explosion; 16 July 1945 implosion; 6 August 1945 explosion; 9 August 1945 explosion – 364 days from explosion to implosion, 21 days to the next explosion, then 3 days to the fourth explosion.

Britain and America managed a combined kill at Dresden of 13,000/260,000/600,000/860,000/1,000,000 over 13 hours, whereas America alone managed a kill of 215,000 in two drops over three days. When radiation sickness is taken into account, the atomic bomb kill of 290,000 rivals that of Churchill's Dresden 260,000 mark.[13] In all reality, Churchill's Dresden kill was 260,000 + 600,000 = 860,000.

However, when the American part in Dresden is taken into account, its kill count from 13/14 February and 6 and 9 August 1945 counts around 600,000; unofficial statistics of course, but the last six months of WWII truly were a killing field, an Occult Mafia hit like we've never seen before.

President Truman wanted to catch up to the warlords Churchill and Stalin. They had been at the game for all of WWII, so Truman posted the highest post-European war kill, thus giving America the most kudos after WWII.

President Truman takes the blame for this one, 215,000–290,000 deaths in three days. Depopulation exercise complete? – occult locations marked, another occult hit for all eternity, plus the pulsing neon sign sent out to the universe for any other life-forms to investigate this way.

Sacha Baron Cohen: "Hey Borat, Earth either just went nuclear or another planet is forming a little-too-late in the mid-aged universe."

---

[13] Committee on Damage by Atomic Bombs in Hiroshima and Nagasaki, *Hiroshima and Nagasaki: The Physical, Medical, and Social Effects of the Atomic Bombings*, London, 1981.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Borat: “Perhaps we go look. Let us catch the sinopause and arrive before it happens.”

Sacha Baron Cohen: “Good, ’cause I like to watch.”

Borat: “Bring lime-green swim trunks. Maybe we make movie for military and fantasists.”

> Such is war, without beginning or end . . . and such was Churchill, Roosevelt and Truman, men of war without beginning or end. At least Hitler was stopped. Alive but stopped.

Stalin, on the other hand, was an old war-hand by this time. Little did the world know, Stalin was a British agent, a protégé of Winston Churchill – the ultimate black dog of war. The sly old Tavistock bulldog Churchill managed to keep his reputation relatively clean during his lifetime and outlived Stalin by 12 years.

Churchill was a colonising elitist who had long been desensitized to death. After the war, he expressed contempt for public health care and contempt for improved education for the majority of the population, many of whom had served in WWII. Churchill was a supporter of Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonisation and pan-Europeanism. He supported the European Common Market and later the European Union, installing France to help him in his new Cold War battles against Russia, the monster-without-monarchy he had helped create. Churchill also made comments supportive of a One World Government and an all-powerful United Nations, itself dedicated to MASSIVE WAR-IN-PEACETIME DEPOPULATION.

> Churchill: “Unless some effective world super-government for the purpose of preventing war can be set up . . . the prospects for peace and human progress are dark . . . If . . . it is found possible to build a world organization of irresistible force and inviolable authority for the purpose of securing peace, there are no limits to the blessings which all men enjoy and share.”

The most interesting aspect of this Illuminati Big Brother security-minded speech is that Winston Churchill was a main instigator of the depopulation exercises of WWI (Gallipoli), the Bolshevik Revolution (the installation of the first Mafia government – Jewish to boot), and WWII, with special reference to Dresden in the last days of that war.

At the beginning of the Cold War, Churchill borrowed a phrase from the recently deceased Joseph Goebbels and mentioned the ‘Iron Curtain’ in a 1946 speech at Westminster College in Fulton, Missouri, while the guest of President Truman:

> “From Stettin on the Baltic to Trieste on the Adriatic, an Iron Curtain has descended across the continent. Behind that line lie all the capitals of the ancient states of Central and Eastern Europe. Warsaw, Berlin, Prague, Vienna, Budapest, Belgrade, Bucharest and Sofia, all these famous cities and the populations around them lie in what I must call the Soviet sphere.”

Vienna wasn’t included and nor was Belgrade under Tito’s compromise – socialism. This was wishful thinking for Churchill, but he got the rest correct. Tito was Churchill’s cousin and Vienna was already sufficiently neurotic . . . and fascist.

Prior to the war, in the Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact, this was called a ‘sphere of influence’. At the Yalta Conference (4–11 February 1945), Churchill negotiated with Roosevelt, on behalf of Russia, to gain as big a communist sphere of influence as possible. The end of a war always sets up the next war. In this case, it was the Cold War.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> In the final days of WWII, King George VI awarded his uncle Winston Churchill campaign medals for all the places he had visited at war. Churchill ended up with a ‘fruit salad’ of medals, even commemorating wars he had served in as a journalist. As a journalist of high breeding, he was also considered a spy wherever he went. Like Hitler, as an agent of war, Churchill was awarded medals whenever he lifted a foot. He didn’t even have to make it to the front line and rarely did.
>
> Churchill was not the great peacemaker he was made out to be. He inherited wars from his fathers, carried out war and gifted new wars to the next generation. Churchill was a great genocidal gentleman, another mass murderer, equal to Stalin and Hitler, working with Stalin and Hitler, having trained Stalin and Hitler.
>
> Churchill gave Eastern Europe to the mass-murdering Mafia communist, Joseph V. Stalin, and carried out his own assassinations for political purposes at home. His greatest buffer was an embedded press gang that presented him as a nice genial cigar-smoking gent whose only fault was the drink and the black dog (depression), which was blamed on the drink. Churchill was an angel really, rarely, rearly.

Immediately after WWII and his government's electoral defeat, Churchill was offered peerage as the first-ever Duke of London (House of Lords). But looking at what happened with his fake ancestor the 1st Duke of Marlborough, charged with embezzling and exiled within four years of dukedom, Churchill refused. He couldn't face exile, insider trading charges, or repeating history that far back. One generation was enough. There was also the 'shades of Chamberlain threat with his elevation to Lord President of the Council, followed by a quick and uncelebrated death by MAD'.[14] The sounds of "The Duke of London is dead" would have reverberated loudly in Churchill's ears.

In order to use the ammunition mountain left over from WWII, the Korean War blew up out of nowhere (1950–53). America and Britain hastily put together a combined UN operation to fight for it and pay for it. It was the ideal prelude to WWIII, and everyone involved, including General MacArthur, was planning for it to go atomic. At the last minute, Truman blinked and stopped a further atomic explosion in an act of conscience, thus saving the world in the blink of a crook's eye.

When the Korean War was ending and WWIII was due to start, the Russian Generals repaid the favour and followed British instructions by killing Britain's Tavistock rebel protégé Joseph V. Stalin (Koba).

Churchill contracted out 17 history writers for six volumes of *The Second World War* (published 1948–53). He became Prime Minister for the third time in 1951 and the embedded press gangs managed to cover up Churchill's genocides by calling him "the greatest living Englishman" from 1953. He would remain an MP until his resignation (due to ill health) in 1955. That his biological father was King Edward VII was never revealed by the British press, but all of my intelligence contacts knew, including King George VI's doctor, and my father, who used to shear his sheep.

During his period as Prime Minister (1951–55), Churchill renewed his "special relationship" with the United States as they formed post-war order and prepared for the next war, the Cold War, a concept introduced at Yalta in February 1945 and reintroduced by Churchill into mainstream America in 1946 under Truman's guidance using the Nazi Goebbels' dialogue.

Churchill spent much of his last years as a guest of the Chief of the Mafia, Aristotle Onassis on his yatch *Christina*. Onassis (1906–75) had replaced the Jew Meyer as Chief of the Seven Families. Onassis liked having Churchill around because he was a fellow boozer and always on top of his game when it came to advice and contacts. Prince 'Tax' Rainier was known to both men, and most of the Mafia's heroin was run through Monaco on its way to America. Churchill's wife refrained from sitting at the bar because Onassis had covered his bar stools in hide from the penis of a sperm whale, lending the Greek to some obvious jokes.

> After WWII, America was the big military power and Britain watched as its imperial prestige declined. Britain needed a soft war for its military like a toothless geriatric needs thick soup. As such, Britain and America decided to oppose the Russian conquests of Eastern Europe, reneging on what they had agreed to at the end of WWII. The Cold War had begun.

Not a shot was fired. The toothless military were occupied eating thick soup in a cold climate. All the countries were occupied (except Japan) and it became a surveillance war, a war-in-peacetime with the citizens going to extraordinary lengths to survive and attain the most valued commodity stolen from them – Freedom.

> In the world of freedom and culture, Churchill was what we call "an arse". He was a magnificent speaker, a drunk, a manic-depressive and a Tavistock Psych-Ops double agent. He really, rarely, rearly touted for peace.

In 1953, Churchill became a Knight of the Garter – Sir Winston Churchill – and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, "for his mastery of historical and biographical description as well as for brilliant oratory in defending exalted human values". He employed 17 writers on contract who all agreed to publish under his name. Some of his speeches were made and improved upon by others. They may have defended exalted human values, but his actions didn't.

> Winston Churchill was Britain's greatest-ever mass murderer, the Butcher of Gallipoli, the Demon of Dresden, the Gentleman of Genocide, a status that only occultists enjoy. Six decades later he was put forward as Britain's greatest ever Briton. Out of 60 million, 59 million people didn't vote, and on a grey day in November 2002, Winston Churchill was crowned 'The Greatest Briton of All Time'. Britain values its occult leaders above all others. So does Israel.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

---

[14] MAD – Medically Assisted Death.

Churchill's Nobel Prize for Literature is most commonly given to occultists including Rudyard Kipling (1907), W. B. Yeats (1923) and George Bernard Shaw (1935). Now we can add Sir Winston Churchill (1953) to the pile of shit.

FIFTEEN CENTS
TIME
The Weekly News-Magazine
VOL. II NO. 17
G. B. SHAW
DEC. 24, 1923
The Younger Generation
TIME
THE WEEKLY NEWSMAGAZINE
PRIME MINISTER CHURCHILL
Another opportunity for greatness.
FIFTEEN CENTS
TIME
The Weekly News-Magazine
Vol. VIII, No. 13
POET KIPLING
SEPTEMBER 27, 1926

Anticlockwise from bottom rights: Rudyard Kipling, W. B. Yeats, George Bernard Shaw who sired Lawrence of Arabia, and Winston Churchill.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

The elevation and Nobel Prize was followed by a stroke in June 1953 which paralysed Winston's left side. Stubborn as he was, it took two years for him to retire (5 April 1955). He had become a drooling fatherless child in search of attention, much like the world he created.

While recovering from his June 1953 stroke, he wrote and finally published *A History of the English Speaking Peoples* (*Vols.1–4*, 1958) that he claims to have started between 1929 and 1939. Six years after his stroke (1959), the longest-serving other Member of Parliament died and Churchill inherited the title of 'Father of the House' for longest continuous service (1924–59) – 35 years of Churchill, involving the worst war in history. Despite retiring, he retained a seat in Parliament until 1964.

The British are so easily fooled, largely because they eat tasteless food too quickly and swallow information just as fast – without tasting it. It was to be two decades of pea soup before they even opened a window.

> In 1956, not yet sick of being fooled by the press, the German city of Aachen gave Churchill the Charlemagne Award for contributing to the European idea and European peace. The 'European idea' is '**Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonisation through murder compliance**' and 'European peace' is '**security through war**' . . . which is no security at all.[15]

Sir Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill, KG, OM, CH – Knight of the Garter, Order of Merit, Companion of Honour and Charlemagne Award.

The **Knight of the Garter** (KG) is given to the Sovereign (themself), their eldest son and 24 nobles. Its motto 'Honi soit qui mal y pense' – 'Shamed be the person who thinks evil of it' – brought about the new Age of Chivalry. Of all the orders, it is the highest British order, but includes the most degraded knights. These include King Charles I (executed in the Glorious Revolution of 1649),[16] the Duke of Ormond for treason (1715), among at least fifty others, beheaded, degraded or removed. Churchill's ancestor, the 1st Duke of Marlborough, escaped with just a charge of embezzlement in 1712. The Knight of the Garter (KG) has come to symbolise '**trading in countries' fortunes**'.

---

[15] No one licks arse like a German, especially when it's Pommy arse.

[16] *House of Commons Journal* Vol. 8, 9 June 1660: In the New Style Gregorian Calendar, King Charles I was executed on 30 January 1649, but all contemporary parliamentary documents on King Charles I's regicide state he was executed a year and 10 days earlier on the Old Style Julian Calendar date of 20 January 1648. The real New Style date is 30 January 1648, but the British fudged a whole year.

The Order of Merit (OM) is limited to the ruling Monarch and 24 members. It is awarded for distinguished service in the armed forces, science, art, literature or culture. It does not entitle one to be called a knight.

The Companion of Honour (CH) is considered a junior class of the Order of Merit, consisting of the Sovereign and 65 ordinary members. It is conferred upon men and women for services of national importance. The motto of the order is 'In action faithful and in honour clear'.

Secretary of War Churchill was doing the work of the KG, OM, CH – the work of 'shameful, evil, British military matters, contracting history writers to make war appear honourable and the monarchy clearly faithful through it'.

> Churchill was a Nordic-Anglo-Saxon coloniser through murder compliance who acted as though war is security . . . but we all know, war is no security at all. War is profit at the cost of human lives. This sums up Churchill better than anything else – '**Profit at the cost of human lives**'.
>
> The Monarchy's titled message to Winston Churchill was: '**Thanks for using your family influence to side with fascism, colonise towards communism and keep our reputation clean.**'

By an Act of Congress in 1963, Churchill became an honorary US citizen. The US and British Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonists celebrate their mass-murderers. After all, war makes colonisation easy.

Fascism is a fast war on freedom and culture.
Communism is a slow war on freedom and culture
– a war of attrition.
The post-war result was mass communism
in the realms of freedom, culture and family.

Churchill never won any war. He created three wars (the Bolshevik Revolution, WWII, and the Cold War) and destroyed peace in between. He was Tavistock's Bulldog, running fast and slow wars and working with all players, with much of the bankers and opposition his relatives.

Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill was a double agent Prime Minister trained by his own country's war schools and supported by his own country's secret warring society. He was the Freemasons' Winston Churchill espousing ORDER OUT OF CHAOS . . . but he had to create the *chaos* to attain the *order*. That chaos was 'War' and that order was '**Nordic-Anglo-Saxon Freemasonry Communist Colonisation**'.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

To everyone but the warmongers it looked like shit.
This makes diplomacy look like the Sodomy Olympics.

"...AND AFTER WE DROP THIS LITTLE BABY ON 'EM THEY'LL BE CALLED ASHCANISTANS"
W88
GEORGE in the ARMY

The Diplomatic Corp/Sodomy Olympics has a heterosexual face. Comics make fun of this and become war prophets. No one listens to politicians any more.

We Don't Need
No Stinking
Diplomacy

San Francisco's Nuclear Explosion

There was a sudden mushroom of bright white light to 1800 feet, then another mushroom of white light to 10,000 feet, an intense roar and then a concussion blast travelling around 720 mph (1 mile every 5 seconds). This was reported by several eyewitnesses before there was any knowledge of what a nuclear explosion looked like.

Everyone within a 50-mile radius felt the blast. The explosion destroyed 5 ships, a diesel engine, 16 boxcars, Port Chicago and an entire town. The damage extended for 200 miles and included 12 other cities. It blew out windows and blew heavy doors off their hinges. "The force of the blast was greater than a 5-kiloton atomic bomb."[1]

The blast registered as 3.4 on the Richter scale in parts of distant Nevada and formed a blast crater 700 feet long, 300 feet wide and 66 feet deep (210 m x 90 m x 20 m). Two years later it was twice as big, as the US Government dug out all surfaces of the blast crater. This was presumably to remove radioactive material. There seems to be no other valid reason.

The magnitude of the blast was between (10)18 ergs and (10)72 ergs. The lower (10)18 ergs is commensurate with a chemical explosion if everything blew up at the same time. The higher (10)72 ergs is commensurate with an atomic explosion. All of the chemicals did not blow up at the same time. It was an atomic explosion.

At 10.18 pm on 17 July 1944 a 9000-lb nuclear bomb was set off in Suisan Bay in Port Chicago,[2] 35 miles northeast of San Francisco and 70 miles southwest of Sacramento; 322 workers, trainmen, ship's crew, stevedores (ship loaders), sailors and marines were killed. Most of them died instantly and most of those that died were Black (202). It was the largest stateside disaster of WWII, yet no conclusions have been reached as to its cause.

---

[1] *No Share of Glory*, Robert E. Pearson, 1964, p. 19.

[2] Port Chicago was renamed 'US Naval Ammunition Depot, Concord' aka 'Concord Naval Weapons Station' on 18 January 1946.

The bomb was on a Liberty ship, either the *E.A. Bryan* or the SS *Quinalt Victory* on the other side of the same pier. The *Victory* had no people on board, and those scientists that were on board at 9.30 pm left before the bomb went off at 10.18 pm. The *Bryan* had few people on board except for Black stevedores loading the nearly full ship. Its cargo was ammunition and explosives.

The atomic bomb that exploded was a low-yield weapon set off in the hold below the waterline. The holds went down four storeys. A nuclear explosion below the waterline mimimises the spread of radioactivity. Regardless, Port Chicago's Contra Costa County still has one of the highest rates of cancer in the United States and Port Chicago has been abandoned as a town ever since. It is now considered a buffer zone in case of another explosion.

Port Chicago
Berkeley
Oakland
San Francisco
Pacific Ocean
Silicon Valley

S.S. "QUINAULT VICTORY" (VICTORY TYPE)
NO CARGO ON "QUINAULT"
CARS SPOTTED PREPARATORY TO LOADING OPERATION
MK-33 1000#
MK-65 1000#
MK-65 1000#
MK-33 1000#
5"/38 AAC
TRACK
MK-33 1000#
MK-7 CLSTR
350# DEPTH TORPEX
TAIL VANES
MK-4 100# FRAG
20 MM
TRACK
MK-7 CLSTR
350# DEPTH TORPEX
TAIL VANES
MK-4 100# FRAG.
40 MM
TRACK
LOADING
LOADING
LOADING
LOADING
LOADING
694 TONS
1167 TONS
1049 TONS
840 TONS
856 TONS
#1 HOLD
#2
#3
#4
#5
S.S. "E. A. BRYAN"

treasurer@platinumparty.org

At the time, the Liberty ship *E.A. Bryan* was fully laden with tons of ammuniton and chemical-based explosives: 5292 barrels of bunker C-type diesel fuel; 4600 tons of ammunition (fuses, detonators, guncotton, smokeless powder in bulk); and 1780 tons of high explosives, much of which were unstable. As a result, the *Bryan* was lying low on the water. With the 9000-lb bomb, the *Victory* was also lying low in the water.

The manifest records of all the munitions loaded aboard the *E.A. Bryan* were available then, as they are now, except for two boxcars. The records of the contents of these are still not available. They could be dud chemical explosives, working chemical explosives, a nuclear bomb, or nothing. Apart from the two boxcars, the *Bryan* was fully loaded with chemical explosives. This covered for the nuclear bomb which had to be tested in a harbour, had to be tested from a ship, and had to be tested under cover of being a chemical explosion.

The atomic bomb was not on the *E.A. Bryan*. It was on the SS *Quinalt Victory* and it is most probable that the two unnamed boxcars on the *Bryan* contained dud chemical explosives.

During the four-day loading process of the *E.A. Bryan*, shells and bombs were accidentally dropped, yet none exploded. At the time, most of the crew (White) took leave from the ship as it was being loaded by Black stevedores (ship loaders). Blacks were only allowed on the ships as stevedores, cooks and bottlewashers.

The *E.A. Bryan* was destined for Tinian Island in the Mariana Islands, from where the B-29 *Enola Gay*[3] flew out to drop its atomic bombs on Japan 13 months later. This was also a ruse to make the researcher believe the atomic bomb was on the *Bryan* and not the *Victory.*

The SS *Quinalt Victory*, a six-day-old 7606-ton vessel, arrived at Port Chicago at 7 pm on 17 July 1944, three hours before the explosion, and was tied up to the same pier on the opposite side to the *Bryan*. The SS *Quinalt Victory* was then visited just prior to the explosion by Los Alamos scientists in a "shiny black car". The *Quinalt Victory* contained one atomic bomb. The *Bryan* carried two boxcars of undeclared dud chemical weapons and no atomic bomb.

---

[3] The night before the bombing, Brigadier General Paul Warfield Tibbets Jr. named the plane-to-bomb-Hiroshima after his mother 'Enola Gay'. Most just buy a box of chocolates and tell them how well they are doing, but Tibbets was considered by the FBI to be a sex offender and had a lot to overcompensate for.

At the time of the Port Chicago atomic explosion, the B-29 was not operational and it was believed that no plane could carry the load. The plan was to deliver the nuke by ship and detonate it in the enemy harbour. This was called the 'Hydrodynamic Theory of Surface Explosions'. A nuclear device had to be delivered by ship and by sea.

The holds of both the *E.A. Bryan* and the SS *Quinalt Victory* were as deep as a four-storey building. Detonations below the waterline vastly reduced any lingering radiation after the explosion. The Los Alamos Laboratory scientists were interested in the explosive potential and ability to kill instantly, not the ability to kill over time. Lingering radiation sickness would have resulted in massive lawsuits, so radioactivity had to be minimised. The best way to do this was to store the atomic weapon in the bottom of the hold, below the waterline, and call the explosion 'chemical'.

On 2 August 1939, Albert Einstein wrote to President Roosevelt stating that a nuclear bomb was possible: "A single bomb of this type, carried by boat and exploded in a port, might very well destroy the whole port together with some of the surrounding territory . . . However, such bombs might very well prove to be too heavy for transportation by air."

The minimum critical mass for U-235 is 15.5 kg. By 1944, the US had 93 kg. This was six times the minimum requirement. Ipso facto, the US was capable of producing, testing, delivering, storing and using six atomic bombs in 1944. By 1945 this had increased to 289 kg[4] and they were capable of producing 18 minimum-requirement atomic bombs.

The final specifications for the Hiroshima bomb were completed in mid-February 1944,[5] and by March 1944 the hardware for at least three Hiroshima-type weapons had been ordered.

---

[4] Don Cox, Enrichment Office Division, US Department of Energy, Oakridge, Tennessee, Production of U-235 during the years 1913–1919 (9 December 1980).

[5] This was verified in the *Manhattan District History* [the building of the first atomic bomb], Project Y, The Los Alamos Project, Vol. 1, LAMS-2532, directed by Joseph O. Hirschfelder, Los Alamos, 1961, 600 pages. This included *History of a 10,000 Ton Gadget*, Los Alamos Laboratories, Autumn 1944. This refers to projects accomplished after 1 August 1944 (two weeks after the Port Chicago explosion). Joseph O. Hirschfelder specialised in the general phenomenology of nuclear explosions, including the formation of the shock wave in the air, the early radiation history, the ball of fire, the blast wave carried through the air at great distances, and the effects of blast and radiation on human beings and structures. For this, Port Chicago was a necessity, and with his Above Top Secret clearance, Hirschfelder could install colleagues into positions and command any actions, including those of the Commander of Port Chicago, US Naval Captain William J. Parsons, who was subsequently promoted four times.

The US government *did* have the capability to produce several nuclear weapons at the time of the Port Chicago explosion. It needed to test them, was in a position to test them, and tested one in Port Chicago, 35 miles northeast of San Francisco.

Building Port Chicago began in June 1943 and at the time of the explosion it was 80% complete. The first loading pier was ready for use in May 1944, two months prior to the explosion. The reason given for not finishing the pier was a shortage of manpower, yet after the explosion the entire pier was rebuilt within a week. This suggests pre-preparation and a planned nuclear test with self-sabotage and cover involved, quickly followed by a fully functioning unit.

Offically, the entire port of three piers was rebuilt and fully functional "by 1 April 1945". This does not negate the previous statement of one pier rebuilt within a week, but it is sleight of hand in the use of words.

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF.

Port Chicago, 18 July 1944.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

At the time, the only way to deliver a nuclear strike was by ship detonated in the enemy harbour; therefore a nuclear test would have to be in a harbour and not in a desert (where it was tested 364 days later) . . . and the best harbour to use would be the one exporting the greatest volume of chemical explosives. That was Port Chicago.

As the long-range B-29 bomber was coming on board, with the possibility that it could carry the atomic bomb by air, the US captured Tinian Island in the Northern Mariana Islands, 1000 miles from Hiroshima, and within long-distance bomber range.[6] Thereafter, all vessels carrying nuclear weapons headed there (via Guam, 60 miles south). The B-29 did become operational, it could fly the 2000-mile return flight, and it could carry the atomic bomb, but only just. The B-29 barely got off the ground and it was so touch-and-go the atomic bomb had to be armed mid-air. This was done by Captain William J. Parsons.[7]

Opposite Port Chicago was the heavily guarded Mare Island. It contained components for the nuclear weapons and these were shipped out to Tinian Island in the Pacific on the USS *Indianapolis*. This may have been *all* of the components for an atomic bomb as the *Victory* and *Bryan* had been destroyed.

A Los Alamos document, 'History of 10,000 Ton Gadget', describes the testing of an atomic device and all its parameters. Step 11 states: "Ball of fire mushroom out at 18,000 ft. in typical Port Chicago fashion." This would indicate that their officials were observing, filming, taking notes and generally using the 17 July 1944 Port Chicago explosion as a nuclear test and thereafter referring to it as a nuclear test.

The US Navy filmed[8] the entire explosion on nitrate-based film from across the bay and the filming continued on to include delivery of an atomic device by the USS *Indianapolis* to Tinian Island in the Pacific. The film was later stored at Port Chicago/Concord. When the Navy became aware of the public's knowledge of a theory of an atomic test at Port Chicago they destroyed the film, which is another way of saying it was classified and don't bother asking.

---

[6] Tinian Island is at 34° 23′ 07″ N, 132° 27′ 19″ E; Hiroshima is a 14° 57′ 112″ N, 145° 38′ 54″ E.

[7] Due to the Port Chicago SS *Quinalt Victory* atomic test in San Francisco, when the 'Little Boy' atomic bomb was dropped on Hiroshima by plane, it was not untested. The atomic bomb had already been tested at sea on 17 July 1944 and on land on 16 July 1945. 'Little Boy' over Hiroshima was the first atomic bomb successfully dropped from a plane and exploded mid-air.

[8] Nitrate-based film stopped being made in the 1950s, but there are reports this nitrate-based film was used by Hollywood in the 1960s. This would make the 1960s 'Hollywood nuclear explosion' the genuine article.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

At Port Chicago, post-test caution was the same as for a nuclear test elsewhere. The only pre-test caution not taken was to remove people out of the area, but the test had to be done in an area where there were other explosives so it could be blamed on chemical explosives. For the test scenario to be as valid as possible, the atomic explosion had to occur on a ship, in a harbour, with people around. Those people were mainly Black people in a heavily racist America. Since all the chemical explosives came together at a port and Port Chicago was the largest US loading point for munitions, the world's first nuclear explosion had to occur at Port Chicago for maximum cover.

Four days after the explosion, on 21 July 1944, the District Intelligence Officer wrote a confidential memorandum to the Commandant Twelfth Naval District. He confirmed 'a "shiny black car" at 9.30 pm at the foot of the pier of the [Port Chicago] Naval Magazine. The vehicle was not a navy vehicle and not a business vehicle, but it did have authorisation to be near the pier, and the shiny black vehicle had to have authorisation to be near the pier.'[9]

As soon as the Port Chicago atomic bomb exploded, a team of Los Alamos Laboratory scientists were at Port Chicago assessing it in record time. This resulted in 400–600 pages of memoranda and reports citing parameters and artefacts.

Black people.

---

[9] Slightly paraphrased from the District Intelligence Officer's confidential memorandum #11-3-16137.

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF
E-66

Damage at Port Chicago & Mare Island.
"OFFICIAL PHOTO
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND. CALIF."

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF

Photo # NH 96823 Damage at Port Chicago, Ca. View looking north toward pier.

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH
NOT TO BE RELEASED
FOR PUBLICATION
NAVY YARD MARE ISLAND, CALIF
SP

Photo # NH 96822 Damage at Port Chicago, Ca. View looking north from BM138.

Most witnesses stated there were two explosions about 45 seconds apart. A nuclear explosion has two phases – a ‘pressure phase’ and a ‘suction phase’.

The Port Chicago explosion was both chemical and nuclear. The chemical explosion was the ‘cover’ and the nuclear explosion was the ‘test’. There were several optional causes of this time delay.

1. Those who were close enough to see the three explosions separately all died.
2. Those who survived saw the chemical explosion and the pressure stage of the nuclear explosion as one. The chemical explosion set off the pressure phase of the atomic explosion and this was followed by the suction phase 45 seconds later.
3. The atomic bomb was purposefully set off under test conditions and the chemical bombs exploded as a result. By the time the non-synchronous chemical explosion reached its zenith, it was engulfed by the atomic explosion and too small to register. The Los Alamos Laboratory scientists were on the *Quinalt Victory* setting up the bomb at 9.30 pm then scarpered, returning ASAP to assess the damage.

The most viable option is point 3. The atomic bomb was set off under test conditions by Los Alamos Laboratory scientists on the *Victory*. The chemical bombs on the *Bryan* then exploded as a result and their input was removed from the equation.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The Liberty ship *E.A. Bryan* docked at Port Chicago on 13 July 1944. Loading of munitions began at 8.30 am that morning and continued until the explosion at 10.18 pm four days later. To build up sufficient cover that it was a chemical explosion, the *E.A. Bryan* was loaded with 50.04 tons of 20-mm HEI Tetryl Cartridges; 50.09 tons of 5-inch 38-calibre Common Projectiles; 36 tons of 16-inch Tar. Mk2-4A Projectiles; 87.55 tons of 1000-lb GP AN-M65 TNT Bombs; 106 tons of 1000-lb AP AN-M33 Bombs; 26 tons of Fin assemblies for AN M-65 Bombs; 60.35 tons of incendiary Cluster M7; 97 tons of 350-lb DB AN-Mk 47 Torpex Bombs; 93.52 tons of 100-lb Fragmentation Cluster An-M4; and 42 tons of 40-mm AP Tracer Cartridges. This was just enough ammunition and explosives to be at the lower end of an atomic bomb . . . if it all exploded simultaneously.

Establishing a cover story is all-important in war. One of the excuses for the ‘chemical explosion theory’ was that the SS *Quinalt Victory*’s mooring lines were carried away, or the bollards were damaged and this damage spread through into the areas carrying explosives. However, eyewitnesses reported seeing the ship’s gear secure and all gear in place moments before the explosion. This explanation was yet another ruse.

Another excuse was that the chemical explosives on board could have made the lower magnitude end of the explosion [(10)18 ergs], but this would only be achieveable if these chemicals were ignited simultaneously. Since this was improbable, unless it was the largest organised unannounced fireworks display in history, it was not a chemical explosion, but an atomic explosion at Port Chicago.

The whole scenario was a live test of one atomic bomb, whether it was on the *Bryan* or the *Victory*. It was on the *Victory*, as Blacks were loading the *Bryan*, and Whites did not trust Blacks with anything at that time, especially not an atomic bomb. The atomic bomb was loaded onto the SS *Quinalt Victory* before it came into Port Chicago and then exploded three hours later. This was all within an hour of the Los Alamos scientists leaving.

The incendiary bombs being loaded onto the *Bryan* were wedged so tightly in the boxcars, they were difficult to get out and their activating mechanisms (fuses) had already been installed so they were considered “hot cargo”. As a result, the incendiary bombs were gingerly loaded one bomb at a time. The chemical bombs were set up to either set off the nuclear bomb, or be reported later as capable of exploding if mishandled.

Records of the boxcars loading the cargo were stringently kept, except for two boxcars whose contents have never been disclosed. These were marked “classified”. The Whites *did* trust the Blacks with the two classified boxcars of undisclosed material because they were known at the time to be ‘not nuclear’.

SACRAMENTO
NORTHERN
143

Shortly after the atomic explosion, 300 Black uninjured enlisted Navy men refused to return to their work loading ammunitions. They were then confined belowdecks on a barge and told they would be executed if they didn't return to work; 275 did return to work but were still convicted of insubordination; 50 of the Black enlisted were then formally court-martialled, making Port Chicago the largest mutiny in US history.[10]

The resulting enquiry also blamed the explosion on 'incompetent Blacks' and 'competition between loading crews'. "The colored enlisted personnel are neither temperamentally or intellectually capable of handling high explosives." (Welcome back to the 1940s, where Blacks are blacklisted and used for White man's blame.)

Further possible causes were listed as "Inherent defects in the bombs [and the] presence of a supersensitive element which was detonated in the course of rough handling."

The Coast Guard and the Port Director's Office had personnel without enough experience to supervise the loading of the ships. The Coast Guard warned the Port Director's Office of this in October 1943.[11] Contract stevedores were used at the other Bay Area Navy facilities, but the captain of Port Chicago found 'conditions so bad that he was unwilling to take responsibility for it', and was unable to locate experienced staff, so he took the extraordinary precaution of withdrawing the Coast Guard detail altogether.

This allowed for the next option, with reports that Germany had a long-range sabotage programme, not a plane, but agents on the ground. It was far easier to access Port Chicago without a Coast Guard, and far easier to blame a chemical-atomic chain reaction on German saboteurs. This took the focus off the Los Alamos Laboratory scientists. When this didn't work, there were always the Blacks – dead Blacks and those Blacks who'd been court-martialled, whose word would thereafter be disregarded.

The Coast Guard loading detail was absent at Port Chicago and Mare Island, and the Coast Guard loading detail was absent on the night of the explosion.

---

[10] On 23 December 1999 the Black formerly enlisted Freddie Meeks was pardoned by President Bill Clinton. He was one of only two survivors.

[11] This pattern was copied in the Intelligence-controlled sinking of the (*Mikhail*) *Lermontov* in Picton, New Zealand. It was sunk on 16 February 1986. Many of those involved were intelligence officers who would have studied the Port Chicago explosion and sinking. Sinking a ship has cons all of its own. The main ingredient is authority.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

A short time after the Port Chicago explosion, it was reported that nine German officers and two guard dogs were secretly buried at Benicia, California. This could have been a German suicide mission, and indeed a lot of the Los Alamos scientists were Germans (and German Jews) and were as prone to corruption as easily as their latest lap dance or other shame.[12]

Equally, and more likely, the burial of the nine German officers and two guard dogs was a leaked bluff designed to keep one off the scent that the Port Chicago atomic explosion was an inside job, another Pearl Harbor, another 9-11, with the Blacks taking the blame the Muslims now have, and the Los Alamos scientists performing their nuclear test on a friendly population while avoiding all blame.

And when you dig a little deeper there is another time delay of blame two months after the atomic explosion in the form of a leaked classified document. Confidential memorandum ND12-16-Bd (SC) S78 Serial 40312 from the Commandant Twelfth Naval District to the Officer-in-Charge, Naval Ammunition Depot, Port Chicago (23 September 1944). This memorandum called attention to the Torpex bombs, all 97 tons of them: "Torpex generates a hydrogen gas which causes expansion within the projectile, rendering it necessary on occasion to release this gas in order to reduce the projectile's sensitivity to accidental detonation."

At the time of the atomic explosion, Victor Rothshild, the Second Baron Rothschild, was stealing as much of the Los Alamos nuclear data as he could get his hands on. These were then taken straight to Russia or given to the Cambridge Five and leaked to Russia. Victor Rothschild was the fifth man in the Cambridge Five.

Among these documents would have been 'History of a 10,000 Ton Gadget' and the Army-Navy Explosives Safety Board's Technical Paper # 6 'Port Chicago Explosion', as was 'Project Y'.

Victor Rothschild.

---

[12] Jewish scientists have long been considered by intelligence to have at least three masters – the Zionist Intelligence Betar, the Soviet Union, and the country employing them.

Although the atomic test results were muddied by the chemical explosion, the atomic test results were bigger than a chemical explosion, and bigger than a chemical explosion could possibly be. The atomic test did occur, it did occur amongst buildings and people, and it could be used to predict the workability, kill rate and damage area for future atomic bombs (which would be able to be improved upon). The chemical component of the explosions could easily be taken into account and discounted, or added as a component to future nuclear bombs. The residual radiation (5–10%) was minimised by a subsurface explosion from a ship. The remaining immediate radioactivity was then cleaned up by digging out the harbour floor surrounding the atomic bomb crater.

The 'History of a 10,000 Ton Gadget' was leaked through a Christ Evangelical Lutheran Church rummage sale,[13] and when this was discovered, nearly four decades after the event, the US Government and Los Alamos Laboratory suddenly and retroactively reclassified the Army-Navy Explosives Safety Board's Technical Paper # 6 'Port Chicago Explosion'.

There was only one atomic bomb in the Bay. *Bryan* had two boxcars of undisclosed merchandise and these were dud chemical explosives which needed to be disposed of. The two boxcars were a ruse, as though they were components to make an atomic bomb, which the Blacks had let off through mishandling. The atomic bomb was not on the chemical-laden *E.A. Bryan*, it was on the SS *Quinalt Victory,* which had been tied up within 100 feet of the *Bryan* for three hours.

A new and nearly complete port and two new ships were used. This was further cover with the question posed: "Why would the US blow up a new port and two new ships when they were so needed?" It's just not logical. The fact is, it was near the end of the war and this was (in the US eyes) going to make the war end sooner.

There is also the matter of America testing its products. America always tests its products on people when those products are new and when the surrounding products are new. America does not test its new products on a population surrounded by old products. That is for psychological testing. Risking thousands of lives and critical infrastructure was part of the test and part of the cover.

---

[13] This was found in the bottom of a box by Peter Vogel, a journalist who studied under Dr Edward Teller – the father of the American H-Bomb. He then wrote *The Black Scholar, The Last Wave From Port Chicago* (published in July 1982), and was then interviewed on KVON Doubletalk radio on 26 December 1989.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

When one asks, "Why would the US government test its atomic weapons on its own population?" one can ask the question, "When has it not?" The human question is answered by racism. During segregation, Blacks were barely considered human and were not allowed to be crew on US Naval ships. When the better part of 322 Black servicemen died, their component was considered NHI – No Humans Involved.

America could not test the atomic weapon in the Pacific. The Pacific had too many foreign observers, the explosion would have been seen at 200 miles, the cover story would not stand (a chemical explosion), and an alerted Axis powers may have resulted in a pre-emptive strike from a breakaway German High Command who had been threatening and attempting to kill Hitler throughout WWII. As it was, parts of the German High Command tried to kill Hitler three days later in the 20 July 1944 Bomb Plot.

Another improbability comes from the Navy Commander at Port Chicago, Carl Wehr. Wehr cites that 180,000 tons of ammuniton was leaving the West Coast for the Pacific each month. The largest amount came out of Port Chicago. Of the 250 boxcars of ammunition waiting to be loaded and in the revetments, "none of the ammunition was damaged".[14] Wehr had not seen the official reports, but then cites the Torpex as being a relatively new explosive, more powerful than TNT and far more sensitive. Topex was prone to exploding when dropped.

Wehr's statements seem to be mutually exclusive – '250 boxcars of sensitive ammunition and none of them exploded'. This points to the boxcars not containing any ammunition in preparation for the planned nuclear strike. The heat was enormous and the sensitive Torpex should have exploded.[15]

Explosives are eminently traceable, especially as to their factory of origin. This is something the US ignores in its dealings with Iraq. The explosives used by the insurgents in Iraq have US and Israeli markings and are given to the Iraq insurgents in forms that do not look like bombs. Some are good, some are faulty, some need to be put together, some explode in the process . . . and most are given by the Israeli-controlled Druze to the Iraqi 'insurgents'.

---

[14] Carl Wehr, *Up Through The Hawse Pipe*, pp. 33–36.

[15] A chemical explosion reaches 5000°C and an atomic explosion reaches several tens of million °C in milliseconds.

There are improbabilites in war and it is these improbabilites that flourish. Entire wars are dedicated to killing, experiments in killing, and denying being the author of those killings. That America should kill its own in an atomic test (but mainly Blacks in a racist America) was all encompassed in the war plan.

What was the difference to killing their own at home, or taking them overseas and watching them die there? To the American command it was 322 American deaths versus 290,000 Japanese deaths. To the American command, they were actually saving lives. Commoners think otherwise.

Town
Barracks
Revetments
Pier w/ship

Port Chicago in 1943/44.

Spymaster: “This is a recon photo taken from a USAAF P38 Lightning at 15° shortly before the explosion. Any I.O. witnessing this aircraft taking this photo would instantly know the whole area was slated for destruction and bug out – which the I.O.s did and took the White people with them. This photo has then been put forward for photo recon interpretation and that’s why it is labelled. If the photo was labelled in the States, it was probably done as a training exercise, for cover, complete with delays, then sent overseas for interpretation. Photo recon usually labels roads and paths depending on their usage. It is suspicious that the labelling is so cursory [brief]: e.g. ‘Pier w/ship’ should read ‘Pier w/Liberty ship and cargo of so many thousand tons’.”

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Very soon after the Port Chicago nuclear test, the atomic bomb that dropped on Hiroshima was placed on board the heavy cruiser USS *Indianapolis* and then shipped to Guam, 60 miles south of Tinian Island. This load of classified material codenamed ‘Bowery’ was delivered on 26 July 1945. Four days later the *Indianapolis* headed towards the Philippines, parallel with Japan, and was sunk at 12.14 am on 30 July 1945, torpedoed by the I-58 Japanese submarine commanded by Captain Mochitsura Hashimoto. The I-58 had been modified in September 1944 to carry the Kaiten manned torpedo, but a conventional torpedo was used.

USS *Indianapolis* in Pearl Harbor.

The *Indianapolis* sank in the Philippine Sea in the incredibly short time of 12 minutes. Of the 1196 men on board, about 300 went down with the ship and about 900 remained. The survivors floated in shark-infested waters with no lifeboats, no food or water, and the ship was not noted as downed. It took an unusually long four days before they were even spotted. The rescue should have been under way inside four hours, merely through lack of communication. After four days, another 584 had died and only 316 were still alive.

Something caused the US military to decide not to use light cruisers to transport nukes. The *Indianapolis* was a heavy cruiser. Japanese submarines were notorious for being unable to sink heavy cruisers and Captain Mochitsura Hashimoto did not have the greatest record, although he had the best torpedoes in the world. The reasoning behind using a heavy cruiser was the knowledge that it would be able to deliver its payload. American ships, including heavy cruisers, were generally sunk from destroyers and not from Japanese subs.

Subs were often placed in positions to ambush ships, and at the time of the attack the USS *Indianapolis* was not zigzagging, as it would normally do for self-defence.

Torpedo damage to *Indianapolis*.

Captain Charles Butler McVay III survived the sinking but the United States made the unusual decision to court-martial him. On 10 December 1945 they flew Captain Hashimoto to Washington to assist in prosecuting Captain McVay. This was the only case in the entire war where a rival captain was called to court-martial a US Captain. Even John F. Kennedy wasn't court-martialled for allowing the sinking of his PT-109.

McVay upon rescue.

The court martial was so outrageous Congress and the press protested. McVay was court-martialled for "failing to zigzag" despite evidence he had been instructed not to zigzag in self-defence (thus identifying his ship for the Japanese submarine).[16] There was also overwhelming evidence that the US Navy had deliberately placed the *Indianapolis* in harm's way, on a course parallel with Japan, knowing Japanese subs were in ambush positions. McVay then became the only captain to be court-martialled, with more recently declassified evidence showing he was a scapegoat (for the purposeful mistakes of others).

Captain McVay.

The Freemasons absolutely dominated all command positions in the US and British navies – and a scapegoat is a scapegoat among the goat-mounters (Freemasons) and they all want to hop on for the ride.

Captain Hashimoto.

---

[16] Captain McVay would have been forbidden to talk about this in his own defence.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Former Captain Mochitsura Hashimoto: "I do not understand why Captain McVay was court-martialled. I do not understand why he was convicted on the charge of hazarding his ship by failing to zigzag, because I would have been able to launch a successful torpedo attack against his ship whether it had been zigzagging or not . . . the translator did not tell fully what I said . . . the Navy side did not accept some testimony that were inconvenient to them . . . at the time of the court martial I had a feeling that it was contrived from the beginning . . . I wonder if the outcome of that court martial was set from the beginning."[17]

From Pensacola, Florida, Hunter Scott wrote to Captain Hashimoto and suggested he write a letter to Senator John Warner, chairman of the Senate Armed Services Committee. This was then brought to the attention of the New Hampshire Senator Bob Smith, who convinced Secretary of the Navy Gordon R. England, who convinced President Bill Clinton, who passed legislation that exonerated Captain McVay. In July 2001 the Navy Department followed suit, but they never overturned the court martial. The US military never has.

At the time of the sinking, Japan was in the process of pulling out of WWII, but America would not accept their surrender until they had dropped nuclear bombs on them. With this in mind, torpedoing the USS *Indianapolis* was most likely an inside job, sinking the ship in a timely fashion – 13 days after the Port Chicago atomic explosion and 4 days after dropping its nuclear payload to Guam. None of the 1196 crew were supposed to survive and none were supposed to write their memoirs, but they did. On the other hand, those in the atomic loop were elevated both during and after the war.

US Naval Captain William J. Parsons worked directly under J. Robert Oppenheimer at the Los Alamos Laboratory and was instrumental in designing and constructing (and testing) the world's first atomic bomb. Captain Parsons was then made the head of Port Chicago. Immediately after the explosion, Parsons was promoted to Commodore. Parsons then authored *Effects of the Tidal Wave in the Port Chicago Explosion* and prepared the Port Chicago 'nuclear data', which he had transmitted to his superior officer Rear Admiral W. R. Purnell, a member of the Atomic Bomb Military Policy Committee.

---

[17] In a letter to Senator John Warner before Captain Hashimoto died in 2000.

Captain Parsons then headed up nuclear tests in the Pacific. Three months after the Port Chicago nuclear explosion, Captain Parsons was the bombing officer aboard the *Enola Gay* when it dropped its U-235 atomic bomb on Hiroshima. Immediately after this, Captain Parsons was promoted to Rear Admiral, and as Rear Admiral Parsons he became the Chairman of the Joint Crossroads Committee and Deputy Task Force Commander for Technical Direction of the Bikini Atoll nuclear tests between 1946 and 1954, of which there were at least 20, including the first hydrogen bomb test in 1954.

There is plenty of chronological evidence in US Naval Captain/Rear Admiral William J. Parsons' career record to suggest that he was behind the atomic explosion in San Francisco's Port Chicago Harbor, that he organised it, that he profited from it, and once it was successfully tested, that he dropped a nuclear bomb on Hiroshima and then repeatedly blew up Bikini Atoll for eight years.

Parsons. Purnell.

All Hiroshima.

25 April 1954, 6.9 megaton nuke, Bikini Atoll.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The first atomic bomb was delivered on the SS *Quinault Victory*, which was laid up next to the chemical-laden *E.A. Bryan*. The atomic bomb on the *Victory* was destined for Guam/Tinian Island, as were all ships carrying atomic bombs.

Black American Navy personnel were the first victims of an atomic blast, not the Japanese. The atomic explosion at San Francisco's Port Chicago was a test made to look like an accident.

In 1957, 13 years after Port Chicago, an Air Force plane accidentally dropped a 42,000-pound MK-17 hydrogen bomb when it hit turbulence over New Mexico. It was America's first 'droppable' hydrogen bomb and its largest bomb, 625 times the size of the Hiroshima bomb. When it landed it left a 25-foot crater. The nuclear device was not detonated and it did not explode. Lucky for all America.

This incident was denied for 28 years, until 1985, when the Air Force Inspection and Safety Center confirmed the incident after an Albuquerque journalist asked the simple question: "Have they ever had any nuclear accidents?" followed by a Freedom of Information Act request with the Pentagon and a 10-month wait.

28 April 1958.

24 July 1946, 21 kiloton nuke, Bikini Atoll.

6 July 1945.

8 Nov. 1957.

27 March 1954.

I ask a similar simple question, “Why”, and a reader somewhere can lodge this “Y” with the Air Force Inspection and Safety Center followed by a Freedom of Information Act request with the Pentagon. Like a Japanese prostitute, I’m sure the Pentagon will say “Love you long time”.

Stalin-Dzhugashvili-Rothschild

Stalin was born Iosef Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili on 21 December 1879 in Gori, the Republic of Georgia, 40 miles west of Tbilisi. He was nicknamed 'Soso' as a child. Like Hitler, Stalin's family history is full of cover stories – layer upon layer.[1]

Stalin's mother, Katerine Meladze, was a peasant girl who had been taught to read and write. She came with strong aspirations. Her father died before she was born and she was raised by her uncle Petre Khomuridze. Her extended family were craftsmen and innkeepers with connections to merchants and a few aristocrats, so Stalin had a prominent godfather.

At 16, Katerine Meladze[2] married Besarion Dzhugashvili (22) a self-employed cobbler, which then came under the banner 'artisan' – one step above 'peasant'. Unlike most Georgian artisans at that time, Besarion was able to read and write.

Their first two sons died in infancy. Their third son Iosef/Stalin was born when Katerine was 22 and Besarion (nicknamed Beso) was 28. As a third son, by Georgian and Russian tradition, Stalin was considered a gift from God, but he was accident-prone, so was rarely free of physical pain. He had measles, scarlet fever and smallpox, which left him badly scarred and earnt him the name Chopura (Poxy). He was then run over by a carriage and got blood poisoning which withered his left arm and shoulder. In 1890, his legs were run over by another carriage and he got another nickname, Geza (Crooked).

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

---

[1] Katerine Meladze was also known as 'Ekaterina Georgievna Geladze-Djugashvili' (also 'Gheladze Dzhugashvili') and was nicknamed 'Keke'.

[2] Stalin's names were 'Ioseb Jughashvili' or 'Iosef Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili' ('Son of a Jew'). His affectionate childhood names were 'Soso' and 'Soselo'. He was called 'Chopura' (Poxy, aged 6) and 'Geza' (Crooked, aged 11), 'Ryaboi' (police nickname for pockmarked face, so Stalin wore makeup, especially for photos); 'Kochba' (the leader of the Jews who lead an uprising against the Romans); 'Koba' (a hero in the romance novel *Nunu* by Kazbek, 1899–1913); 'J. Besoshvili' (son of Besarion, which he used for his journalism in 1906); 'Oganess Vartanovich Totomyants'; 'Chizhikov'; 'David'; 'Ivanov'; 'Ivanovich'; 'Nizheradze'; 'Vassily'; 'Vassilyev'; 'K. Kato' (his first wife's knickname); 'K. St.'; 'Ko.'; 'Stalin' (Man of Steel, which Lenin gave him in 1912/3); and 'Joseph Stalin' (Jewish for "Prince of Steel"). Stalin was variously born on 6 December 1878 and 21 December 1879. When Russia changed from the Julian to the Gregorian Calendar on 14 February 1918, 13 days were added. These calendar changes occurred across the globe between 1582 and 1923 and also involved adding another year by some countries, principally the British Empire. No one seems to know what happened to this extra year, but it was used for historical obfuscation, especially of foreign British agents.

Conditions were harsh and a third of the children saw their fathers go bankrupt, get disabled in some way, or die before they turned 13.

Stalin's father Beso was of average height, with long eyebrows and a big black moustache. He was very gloomy, considered odd, and when he came home the children stopped playing in the rooms. When Stalin was six, Beso started to go downhill and the family moved house nine times in ten years – something you do when you fail on the rent. He took to the drink, lost customers, and their marriage broke up in 1890.

The second time Stalin was run over by a carriage, and was recovering in hospital, his father gave him an ultimatum – move with him to Tbilisi and become a cobbler, or return to Gori, live with his mother, and train as a priest. Stalin took to his mother's pantry and Beso soon followed his son, begging to be taken back. Katerine refused and Stalin never saw his father again.[3] Besarion sought solace in alcohol and lived in a Tibilisi dosshouse. Two decades later he was taken to hospital and died from cirrhosis of the liver. That was 1909.

Single-minded Katerine instilled an obstinate pursuance of goals in the young Stalin, and by many accounts, beat him as much as Beso. She had been 'deserted', demoted from an artisan's wife to a drudge (a person who does tedious, menial, or unpleasant work), but managed to cajole enough money out of some authority figures to get Stalin off the streets and into school. She had become religious, which is what you do when your level of entertainment is at an all-time low, and she directed Stalin into the priesthood – something he failed at miserably.

Georgians speculated Stalin was illegitimate and this was the reason Besarion deserted his unfaithful wife and her offspring. Out of this legend, two names emerged: Nikolai Przhevalsky and Prince Yakov Egnatashvili.

Nikolai Przhevalsky was a heroic Georgian explorer and misogynistic homosexual. He hated women and would hardly have had sex with one. Knowing himself to be misogynistic, he spent his time exploring Central Asia, and was on the Chinese border when Stalin was conceived.

With a bit more research, limited by how much a Semitic-backed historian can tell you,[4] Stalin's father became Prince Yakov Egnatashvili, a boxing enthusiast and wealthy Jewish wine merchant in Gori who employed Stalin's Jewish mother as a laundress (drudge work).

---

[3] In official depositions Stalin stated that his father had abandoned the family.

[4] Edvard Radzinsky, *Stalin*, translated from the Russian by H. T. Willetts, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1996. Radzinsky, also a Moscow playwright, wasn't all bad.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In Gori, Armenians ran commerce, foreign capitalists controlled industry, and Georgian aristocrats, upstaged in their own capital city, led a more or less tolerable life in the fertile countryside; hence a prince could be a wine merchant and wouldn't have much say in what foreign industrialists did, including having sex with their home help.

The problem with this parentage is that Yakov was well-built and Stalin was puny. As an adult, Stalin stood 5 foot 4 inches (1.62 m) with a potbelly, narrow shoulders and false teeth. He was not robust and had to use his mouth and lack of judgement to bully. His fists were useless and he would have lost almost any fight – typical amongst the Jews.

To make it to the world stage you need connections. Those connections have to be to a financial empire, to Jews, to warmakers, preferably to the Rothschilds, and preferably with some huge family shame attached. Shame helps with the required silence for the unseen hand to remain unseen and keep working.

That Stalin's father was a drunk and beat him does not provide enough shame. That Stalin's father was a homosexual is shameful, but that he was a hero cancels this out. That Stalin's mother Katerine was a laundress for a wine merchant and took one on the copper does not provide enough shame.

The winners of the war write the history, and the Rothschilds funded both sides of the wars, so they were always writing history.[5] The Rothschilds were manipulating wars decades ahead, and this included the protagonists of war. The protagonists of war were always written into the history books as retaliating against some great evil after a long struggle . . . and the agenda of those wars was always to secure some financial benefit to the Rothschilds. This meant that the Rothschilds were always reliant on some great speaker. During war, leaders that could not whip up a crowd were killed off – Neville Chamberlain included. This is called 'engineering patriotism' and it requires a great speaker.

In the build-up to Stalin's conception, the Rothschilds needed to secure the ports that were to deliver their oil to the West. To achieve this, they ensured the port was under Russian protection and under armed guard. Russia has long been taken over by the Jews, and the

---

[5] The Rothschilds own four of the six publishing houses, and most publishers are a subset of these six main publishing houses. This is why there is so much information praising Jews or establishing them as victims and justifying their right to self-determination in someone else's land, which is now most, if not all countries.

Rothschilds have manipulated Russian politics and history as much as they have manipulated British politics and history, and Israeli politics and history. This included the removal of the Czar and the Russian monarchy, the purchase of vast tracts of Palestinian land before it became Israel, and interbreeding with the British Royal Family (to such an extent that they have been a subset of the Rothschild family since the ugly Queen Victoria and before). This came complete with all the shame that Hitler and Stalin had about their parentage.

Funding, and then interbeeding, with the European royal families enabled the Rothschilds to create war wherever and whenever they needed to secure their interests. This was generally where there was oil, just prior to exporting, and amongst factions that were giving the Rothschild-supported Jews a hard time somewhere else.

The Rothschild conception of Stalin builds upon these stories cover upon cover upon cover.

Prince Yakov (James) Egnatashvili was a wealthy Georgian-Jewish wine merchant. Baron Edmond de Rothschild (1845–1934) was a slightly built heterosexual wine producer and connoisseur who sold his wines under the name 'Carmel'. Edmond was part of the Paris branch of the Rothschild banking empire and was "not directly involved in the finances" – but how could you not be? He had dinner with his father and brothers, who were the leading bankers in France, and had free access to the safes with their unlimited funds – so much so that the Rothschilds burnt their bank records to hide the real history.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Baron Edmond de Rothschild (1845–1934).

Stalin's hometown of Gori had been a worldwide trading centre. It was a famous grape-growing area, a place to buy horses from the great Central Asian horse markets (to improve the Rothschild thoroughbred lines), and to secure the new oil fields in Baku.

The Rothschilds were in competition with the Rockefellers' Standard Oil, and along with oil, they needed access to a port, and that port would have to be secure.

To achieve their warring aims (securing a port for oil exports), they sent their benevolent son. Benevolence is the best form of cover when securing information for war, and Edmond always fronted as being involved in charities.

The benevolent son, Baron Edmond de Rothschild, was weedy, not involved in the bank, loved the arts, was sensual and passionate, and, like many of the Rothschilds, he was prone to conceiving illegitimate children.

One Rothschild was known to acknowledge twenty illegitimate children, but trouble and strife at home were a primary reason for writing the Rothschild history otherwise. Once Stalin had become a 'success', what wealthy parent would put their hand up and say "That's my boy".

The great Baku oil region in the Caucasus began to be developed in 1873, with Stalin conceived six years later. The Caucasus included Georgia, of which Gori was an important wine and trading town. A Rothschild conception with a Jewish laundress/drudge/divorcée was not a difficult task when you were in control of the area's most profitable exports – oil, wine and horses (as compared to its biggest exports, timber, wool and cotton).

Two years before Stalin was conceived,[6] the Rothschilds arranged a war between their two clients, Turkey and Russia, no doubt funding both sides. As a result, the southwest Georgian port of Batumi, 20 kilometres into Turkey, was annexed in 1878 and became the property of Russia. Batumi remained armed and guarded. The Rothschilds then funded the Baku-to-Batumi railroad and shipped the Rothschild oil from Baku in the Caucasus, to Batumi on the Black Sea, and then on to the West, thus competing with Rockefeller oil.[7]

In another of history's scams, no doubt blamed on religion, Russia got 20 kilometres of new land, a subtropical deepwater port (14–22°C), a new railroad, and a share in the oil . . . and the Rothschilds secured their market share alongside the Rockefellers.

History doesn't mention that the British were bribed to support the annexing, and in exchange, were 'allowed to occupy Cyprus', or that the Russian military was virtually taken over by the Rothschilds in the process and has been at their beck and call ever since.

---

[6] Stalin was conceived on 6 March 1879 ±18 days. This was between 16 February and 24 March 1879. The Old Style Gregorian Calendar would make this 21 February 1878 ±18 days.

[7] Batumi was formerly 'Batum', 'Batoum', 'Bathus', or 'Bathys', meaning "deep harbour". It is the last stop on the Transcaucasian railroad and the Baku oil pipeline. In 1901, Stalin returned to Batumi and organised strikes. It was a tough ask for a cripple named 'Geza Chopura' (Crooked Poxy).

The Rothschilds can now call the Russian military up, or tell them to stand down. Variations on this include having the Russian military make statues and movies of historic battles that never existed. This is called ruse history and it covers much of history. Much of history is distraction history, just as much of the news is distraction news.

This has carried through into Russian politics. Over the last 100 years, Russian politics can best be described as "a liar's paradise". The best liars move up the political ladder. Those who murder and lie become president. With the president of Russia or the USSR, the most important criteria is to secure oil for the Jews. Behind the scenes, and behind history, most Russian presidents are Zionists – the former KGB/FSB head and President Vladimir Putin among them.

Baron Edmond de Rothschild was the youngest son of James de Rothschild, the head of the Paris branch of Rothschild banking. It was Rothschild tradition that the youngest son do charity work and put a nice face to the Rothschilds' warring empire. Using these qualities, attributes and station as cover, Baron Edmond de Rothschild did much of the legwork for the Rothschild oil experts and the creation of wars.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Edmond was sensual and oversensitive, methodical and meticulous, but given to Marie Antoinette manners, which made him not politically correct, especially when alcohol, a distant location and a full set of breasts combined to present themselves into something called urge-and-opportunity.[8]

Whenever Baron Edmond wanted to reach a specific destination he would whip up his troops and jump in his palanquin – a horseless, wheel-less carriage which four men lifted and did the walking for him.

---

[8] Later in life, Baron Edmond de Rothschild developed a strange aura of religion and emanated an ethical obsession – hence Jewish historians all record his personal traits in later life and don't mention the stray rooting in his early life. According to an astrological chart, Baron Edmond de Rothschild had "a mobile, changing and unpredictable sensitivity, over-oriented to contemplation, a trend to love the marvellous, to be open to the indefinable, and to perceive people and situations as a whole . . . with a tendency to go right to the goal, with no detour and no nuance of any sort. He moved very slowly and removed all resistance."

Baron Edmond de Rothschild loved to travel overseas on the family yacht. From France to the Caucasus, the yacht stopped on the shores of the Black Sea, then he travelled by land in his palanquin across the Republic of Georgia, resting up with the wealthy Georgian-Jewish wine merchant Prince Yakov Egnatashvili. Edmond was a well-known wine connoisseur and his family owned the world's finest vineyards and only wanted to expand.

Bored, but happy with his sailing; exhausted by his land travels, but elated by his stylish arrival; Baron Edmond de Rothschild got drunk with his business associate, spilt wine all over his shirt and went down to the laundry. The disillusioned wife of a cobbler, with two dead sons, Katerine Dzhugashvili (22) helped Edmond (32) off with his shirt and the two conceived a child on top of the warm copper one winter's evening. This "sensual and sensitive opportunism" may then have became a pattern for the entire time Baron Edmond was at Prince Yakov Egnatashvili's estate.

A child was conceived – the God-sent third son – and named Iosef Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili, with the nickname 'Soso'. By the time Stalin turned six, his father began to notice a lack of resemblance and took to the drink. They moved nine times in ten years, his business went downhill, and he moved away from the family when Stalin was 12.

In his late teens, Soso/Iosef's seminary training was funded by the wine merchant Prince Yakov Egnatashvili, who in turn was rewarded with a secure wine contract with the Rothschilds. Typically, this would involve supplying the Rothschilds with wine, grapes, cuttings, viticultural advice and trained workmen.

Soso/Iosef was kicked out of the seminary for espousing Marxism, then became the disgruntled, but organised thief Koba, who specialised in robbing Jewish jewellery stores and banks – those that were in opposition to the Rothschilds. After a particularly violent robbery in which Iosef/Koba clubbed people to death with a pistol butt, Lenin named him 'Stalin' – "Man of Steel".

J.W. STALIN
Foto 1894

Stalin in 1894, aged 15.

As 'Joseph Stalin', the illegitimate Rothschild was now the Jews' 'Prince of Steel' and spent most of his life as their agent – protected, trained, and in power. By the age of 73, Stalin was planning WWIII under his own steam. The Rothschilds weren't ready, so they conspired to take him out in the 'Doctor's Plot'. In typical Jewish historymaking, this has not been solved to this day.

The illegitimate children of the Rothschilds (Stalin and Hitler) had a love-hate relationship with the Rothschilds, their banks, and their oil interests – typical of illegitimate children – as is failure to be appreciative.

The two favourite illegitimate Rothschild sons failed to appreciate that the only reason they were elevated by the unseen hand was due to their Rothschild parentage. What the Rothschilds knew was that their hatred could be utilised – so they were trained in public speaking.

Baron Edmond de Rothschild had been planning to buy up vast tracts of land in Palestine (506 km^2) to create a homeland for the Jews, and in the 17 years from 1882–99, he spent US$100 million on the Jewish colonisation of Palestine.[9]

The method of acquiring Israel was so expensive, a war was required to finish the purchase . . . but the Rothschilds' biggest fear was having hundreds of thousands of poor Jews arriving and requesting handouts. Socialism was for the rest of the world and not for their State of Israel, so the poor Jews would have to be killed. This task was given to the illegitimate Rothschilds, in particular Stalin and Hitler . . . and they took to it like a handshake in a business deal.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

As soon as the Jews (Hitler, Stalin, Churchill and Roosevelt) had killed enough Jews, WWII was cancelled and the State of Israel was created. This new Jewish state included all the lands Baron Edmond de Rothschild had purchased . . . and Israel has been the centre of armed conflict ever since, with the last 60 years of Israel's wars advertised in the media every week as "another breakdown in Middle East peace talks".

---

[9] Estimation by David Landes, Harvard economist and historian. US$100 million is the budget of a small country, although the Rothschilds are suspected of printing the money for these purchases. These purchases were all done through local agents to avoid the watchful eye of the Sultan of the Ottoman Empire, who was also the Caliph of the Muslim World. In Palestine-soon-to-be-Israel, Baron Edmond de Rothschild was never known by his name, only by the titles given to him – The Baron, The Prince, The Well-known Benefactor, or Father of the Settlement. This is reminiscent of Churchill ordering counterfeit money to pay the US for arms in 1940 before Lend-Lease came in – the US answer to Britain's counterfeiting.

Like Russian politics, the media is a liar's paradise. "Another breakdown in Middle East peace talks is code for "war in and around Israel continues as planned, and continues to be fronted by naïve media support".

With the Rothschilds owning the banks that fund both sides of the wars, supplying oil to both sides of the wars, having spent over US$100 million puchasing land in Palestine/Israel, bringing Westerners to live on Israel's Rothschild kibbutz[10] for mind control as sleeper agents, and training Israeli intelligence to subvert Western politics . . . the Rothschilds have no intention for peace in Israel, nor for that matter, the rest of the world.

Many of the Western sleeper agents were then promoted into the media and always give a sympathetic Semitic tinge to reports on Israel. On top of this, the Jews purchased vast tracts of the Western media, control others through lobby groups, and old intelligence agents are financed through the media at such a rapid pace, they now virtually own the thing (Rupert Murdoch with Fox and BskyB).

When you don't play the game, you go the way of Robert Maxwell, dead from a heart attack off the back of his yacht near the Canary Islands.[11] As an Israeli agent, Maxwell was given, what was virtually a state funeral, on the Mount of Olives, where the most revered heroes are buried.

Instead of "wandering Jews", we now have "wandering Arabs". The Jews were supposed to wander in a desert for 40 years. Whether the desert was real or metaphorical, the Arabs have been wandering in a metaphorical desert for the last 60 years.

To remove the Arabs out of Palestine and all surrounding oil-rich countries, the Jewish-controlled media has been establishing sympathy for Arabs in the West. This has extended into Western politics, itself controlled through sexually-deviant shame.

---

[10] A kibbutz is a planned collective community that can be traced back to the creation of Israel (1948) and continues to the present day. Combining socialism and Zionism with practical labour (Labor Zionism), the kibbutz are a unique Israeli experiment, one of the largest in history. With media support and subtle Israeli Intelligence influence, they attracted interest from the entire world. The kibbutz held up to 7% of Israel's population and have raised a disproportionate number of Israeli military leaders, intellectuals, and politicians, as well as shaping the image foreigners have of Israel more than any other Israeli institution. (Wikipedia).

[11] Robert Maxwell (d. 5 November 1991) was born Ján Ludvik Hoch (b. 10 June 1910) in what is now the Ukraine. It was then the easternmost province of Czechoslovakia.

Baron James de Rothschild.

Baron Edmond de Rothschild.

It would appear that Stalin named his first son 'Yakov' (James), after his supposed father and wealthy Jewish wine merchant Prince Yakov Egnatashvili, after his real father Baron Edmond James (Yakov) de Rothschild, and after his real grandfather Baron James (Yakov) Mayer Rothschild.

Stalin's grandfather was Baron James de Rothschild of Paris, whose father was Mayer Amschel Rothschild. Hitler's grandfather was Lionel Nathan Rothschild of London, whose grandfather was Mayer Amschel Rothschild. This meant that Stalin was second cousin to Adolf Hitler's father.

This is not dissimilar to the genital loop where Churchill was first cousin to Adolf Hitler's father Alois.[12] It also means that Churchill and Stalin were related. Churchill's great-grandfather was Mayer Amschel Rothschild. So was Stalin's. This made Churchill and Stalin second cousins. In plain language, the relationship is:

Yakov.

Stalin with daughter Svetlana and son Vasily.

Churchill was first cousin to Adolf Hitler's father.

Stalin was second cousin to Adolf Hitler's father.

Churchill and Stalin were second cousins.

Stalin was a full Jew.

Churchill was $^7/_8$ Jew.

Hitler was at least ½ Jew and probably ¾ Jew.

---

[12] See *How To Take Over The World*, March 2007, rear cover.

Baron James de Rothschild.

In the racket of war, oil-for-transport, and tax-for-peace, the achievements of Stalin's grandfather Baron James de Rothschild offered protection to his son Baron Edmond James de Rothschild, which was passed down to his illegitimate son Iosef/Soso/Chopura/Geza/Koba/Stalin.

Baron James de Rothschild was the most powerful banker in France, but he didn't get there by patronising the arts. Edmond's father was known for his deception,[13] back-door dealings, the rape of most European countries' banking systems, and as the instigator of wars for over 50 years. This made Baron James de Rothschild something of an equivalent killer to his grandson Joseph Stalin, but has never been acknowledged as such.

Betty de Rothschild.

In 1822, Baron James de Rothschild was elevated to Baron by the 'Holy Roman Emperor' (essentially Austria) and was then awarded the French Legion of Honour in 1823. This made him and his children virtually untouchable in Europe. Along with his sophisticated Viennese niece/wife Betty, he was the centre of Parisian culture and also had the patronage of King Louis Philippe of France. When the French monarchy was toppled, he managed to gain the patronage of Napoleon III.[14]

---

[13] Baron Edmond de Rothschild inherited this trait. During the Peace Conference of 1919, he spoke one thing to the Zionist Sokolov, and another to the anti-Zionist Sylvain Lévi, with both believing him to be genuiine and the Baron also believing himself to be genuine.

[14] Some say the French monarchy was toppled because King Louis Philippe dissed his sophisticated niece/wife Betty, not allowing her into the court because she was not Christian. This may not have been the primary reason as there was a drive to topple the monarchies all across Europe, replacing them with the hidden Rothschild dictatorships and puppet governments – but one of his sons may have taken up the challenge to avenge his mother.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Baron James de Rothschild also played a major role in the development of railroads, in which his son Baron Edmond de Rothschild was to follow. By the time Baron James de Rothschild died in 1868, the Paris House of Rothschild was the wealthiest of them all with a capital around £12 million. This made his son Baron Edmond de Rothschild virtually untouchable. Conceiving Stalin was easy. Covering for it was just as easy. Rothschilds could suppress history with the raise of an eyebrow and buy the justice system with a wink and a nod.

From the 1880s, Baron Edmond de Rothschild became involved in Jewish affairs. This included the pogroms in Russia, which involved killing poor Jews and exiling Jews so there would be a need for a homeland. It also made the Russian monarchy easier to topple. Wars, whether civil or international, always rely on public support.

To purchase Palestinian land, Baron Edmond de Rothschild used the Sefarades (Arabic-speaking Jewish natives). The Sefarades got all the background information about the Palestinians and acted as intermediaries and go-betweens with the local authorities to buy large amounts of Palestinian land. If a Jew like Baron Edmond de Rothschild was known to be involved, the Ottoman pashas would have interceded in what later became known as "The Rothschild Colonization". Baron Edmond used to say, "Capital was the first settler in Palestine", and it was, but many of these settlements are now ghost towns.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

In 1911, Baron Edmond de Rothschild became the President Consistoire de Paris. After WWI he joined the political activity of the Zionist organisation and aided the chemist Chaim Weizmann (later Israel's first president), his cousin's grandson Lionel Walter Rothschild, and the Jewish Lord Balfour to assign British support for a state of Israel. This became the Balfour Agreement and was essentially a letter that received a lot of post-written hype.

500
בנק ישראל
חמש מאות שקלים
500
SPECIMEN No. D0D2

Baron Edmond's shekel.

Edmond helped form the Palestine Jewish Colonization Agency (PICA) and was then named the honorary president of the Jewish Agency in 1929. He tried to buy the Wailing Wall several times and failed, but his attempts killed even more Jews, this time their mass slaughter at the Wailing Wall in 1929.

It wasn't until the 1850s that the "science of Judaism" was born in Germany and France, and institutions were founded like the Palestine Exploration Fund in London, and the Biblical School in Jerusalem.

This was 'backed up' by Baron Edmond's archaeological obsession and the suppression of archaeological material that was not of Jewish ancestry – the selective manufacture of archaeological digs.

Archaeological digs always have predetermined goals, and their funding is based on achieving these goals, and not other goals, or the goals of others. By extension, the Jews discovered they could be the actors in history and that with their selective finds they could modify the script of history.[15]

The Rothschilds' original family home in the ghetto of Frankfurt on Main. Hardly what you would call a ghetto – it's a five-storey mansion.

---

[15] Zadoc Kahn, M-M Chapuis and Max Polonovski, head of the Jewish heritage in France.

The archaeological digs were intensified to show “witness items”, and these were used to justify the occupation of Palestine. These were widely advertised through the media such as the Jewish-owned *TIME* magazine, and every flake in the West wanted to take part in these discoveries.

This continued through Baron Edmond de Rothschild’s manipulation of the logistics of the Alliance Israélite Universelle for the benefit of his own designs between 1899–1920. (The AIU was founded in 1860, ten years after the birth of the “science of Judaism”.)

From WWI, the German-Russian influence in Jewish Palestine was dominant. This had come about under a British mandate and it became necessary to break this apart, so . . . Britain and Germany were at war in WWII, then Germany attacked Russia in 1941, then Britain and Russia were in a Cold War, 1961–90. This removed any cohesiveness amongst the dominant German-Russian influence in the Jewish-occupied Palestine, and the Jews became autonomous in Palestine with the formation of Israel in 1948.

The Wilson Declaration of 1919 led to the saying “the right of the peoples to self-determination” – which was designed to bounce back as a justified war for an Israel in Palestine. After WWII this was further refined with the redefinition of Human Rights, which was then signed by the new president of the Alliance Israélite Universelle, René Cassin – a Rothschild agent in a Rothschild agenda-driven university.

This was all part of the ‘science of Judaism’.
The illegitimate Rothschild son Joseph Stalin also signed.

This goes a long way to showing that pieces of paper (contracts and declarations) aren’t worth the paper they’re printed on, and if you break the rules on the world stage, rather than act, the Moral Right sends you another piece of paper, equally as valueless and less powerful than a slap on the wrist with a wet bus ticket – which is what the United Nations is known for.

The history of the pioneers after the Holocaust (which the Jews call Shoah) and the foundation of Israel in 1948 was also rewritten. The way history is transmitted to official historians and recorded is called historiography. The result affects our collective memory. If false, it is brainwashing.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The media now specialises in this form of brainwashing and the Shoah/Holocaust is now incorporated into many films, although the completeness of its reality is questionable. The Holocaust is still being used to cover for Jewish crimes to this day. If any other race or religion committed the crimes the Jews do (mass murder, war creation, mind control, the takeover of entire mediums like film, televisions, print, and entire industries like porn, ecstasy, banking, and arms manufacture), then there would be a public outcry. As it is, we just sit on our backsides and watch them deliver it to us on TV. That it makes no sense doesn’t seem to bother us. That it is delivered, and we don’t have to do anything to receive it, is a pleasure.

> Stalin’s grandfather Baron James de Rothschild created wars over five decades and killed tens of thousands of people. He was a mass killer like Stalin, but had a nicer ‘face’.
>
> When you consider that Stalin was a Rothschild creation, and Hitler was a Rothschild creation, and Churchill was a Rothschild creation – the Rothschilds are the biggest killers of them all, upwards of 100 million people.
>
> Of course the Rothschilds were going to gift the United Nations to Joseph Stalin. It was their plan all along – that the world would be in their hands, or the hands of their illegitimate sons – either Stalin or Hitler.

World leaders and their Rothschild grandfathers.

Stalin's father:
Baron Edmond
de Rothschild.

Stalin's mother:
Ekaterina Georgievna
Geladze-Djugashvili.

Russia's agreement to the formation of the United Nations at the end of WWII was that a NKVD/KGB agent would always be 2IC. They had the bargaining power as they were considered the mightiest army in the world. If Germany won, an SS agent would always be 2IC of the United Nations.

It was much the same thing. Stalin and Hitler were both National Socialists who filled the void of toppled monarchies. Still, I wouldn't have minded being in the meeting rooms when these plans were being discussed.

BROTHERS AT ARMS.

The Illegitimate Rothschild Family Tree

An illegitimate family can promote its children without others crying nepotism. When this family is rich, it is a scenario for massive influence and when this family owns the central banking system, it's is a force for history. The 20th century was just such a family operation.

Like the later half of the 19th century, all of the 20th century belonged to the Rothschilds and there were virtually no major events that weren't organised and executed by them.

It is incredulous that a son of a cobbler, a son of a customs agent and a son of a peasant would rise through the ranks of supported crime to become dictators of countries and occult mass murderers. It is not what you know, it is who you know – and when it comes to war and leading countries into war, it is who you are related to.

Wars are not fought between countries, they are fought for an extended period of time for resources and bankers' profits. The war draft is not a government draft, it is a bank draft, and currently each person sent into war has a collateral value of $100,000.

Hitler murdered 22.5 million people – currently US$22.5 trillion.
Stalin murdered 68 million people – currently US$68 trillion.
Mao murdered 66.66 million people – currently US$66.66 trillion.[1]
Churchill murdered several million including 860,000 in 13 hours.

The Rothschilds' Hitler, Stalin, and Mao killed 157.16 million between them. Including the Rothschild-Churchill kills, this is over 160 million.

So what does it take to kill 160 million people?
Four illegitimate Rothschilds.

The Rothschilds owned the central banking system and created wars for resources and loaned money to both sides. The governments surrendered their citizens to death in exchange for bank credit. To achieve this con of history – commonly known as war – the Rothschilds used their illegitimate sons as a patriotic front – no nepotism suspected.

There are no heroes in war, only those who haven't resisted. The culture of war heroes is supported by the banks. It costs nothing to award a hero, just a bit of brass, silk and ceremony, and everyone loves a ceremony. Everyone likes to believe they lived and died for something, but in the case of war, they are wrong.

---

[1] More recent figures suggest Mao killed 300 million – making me a casual conservative.

The
Illegitimate Rothschild Family Tree

Mayer.
Nathan.
Nathan.
Q. Victoria.
Nathan.
James.
Lionel.
K. Edward VII.
Alois.
Edmond.
Winston.
Joseph.
Adolf.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

IF YOU WANT IT DONE RIGHT, YOU'D BETTER DO IT YOURSELF.

The Rothschilds are the most violent family in history.

James.
Edmond.

Stalin-Dzhugashvili-Rothschild.

Chairman Mao Zedong with cultured baldness.

Baron Edmond de Rothschild.

Mao Zetan.
Mao Zemin.
Wen Qimei.
Mao Zedong.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Stalin-Dzhugashvili-Rothschild.

Chairman Mao Zedong-Rothschild.

BROTHERS AT ARMS.

If anyone ever
wanted to argue that
Winston Churchill
was into the occult
to the end,
it is written in
the number of
military personnel in
his funeral cortège.

There are 8 columns and 13 rows of naval white hats in front (‘the future has misfortune everywhere’).

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Another 8 are missing (‘infinite void’); making a subtotal of 96 (‘death and death after a process’, or ‘war and war in peacetime’).

There are 8 columns and 5 rows of naval white hats at the rear (‘occult through and through’); making a subtotal of 40 (‘from beginning to stagnation, or end’).

This makes 136 white hats (‘death and misfortune’).

There are another 8 white naval hats to the outside (‘forever guarding’).

There are 2 naval white hats leading (‘to lead’).

There are 8 soldiers facing backwards (‘all of history past’).

There are 5 bearskin hats (‘occult tradition and sacrifice’, dating back to Waterloo).

There is 1 Winston Churchill.

Separating the two naval white hat leaders out, the 158 people + 2 leaders reads as (‘to lead one occult everywhere’).

In its simplest summation, the 160 people in the procession, including Winston Churchill reads as ‘one birth to death’.

Winston Churchill was a Freemason and a Druid. According to the Golden Dawn coven numbers, of which Winston Churchill was an occult practitioner, his funeral cortège signifies: “The future has misfortune everywhere. Death and death after a process, and war, and war in peacetime will create an infinite void. Life is occult through and through, from beginning to end there is death and misfortune. Occult tradition and sacrifice forever guards all of history past. Lead one occult everywhere. This is one birth to death.”

Nothing has ever summed up Churchill better than this funeral cortège . . . yet this is more or less a standard military funeral procession.

Bibliography

(Most recent publications listed first)

Books . . .

Donald Rayfield, ***STALIN AND HIS HANGMEN, THE TYRANT AND THOSE WHO KILLED FOR HIM***, Random House, December 2005.

Robert Service, ***STALIN: A Biography***, March 2005.

Elizabeth Antebi, ***EDMOND DE ROTHSCHILD: The Man Who Redeemed The Holy Land***, Rocher, 2000. English translation, Crawford Publishing Cy, Adelaide, Australia, 2003.

Robert Stinnett, ***DAY OF DECEIT, The Truth About FDR and Pearl Harbor***, Simon & Schuster, 2001.

Edvard Radzinsky, ***STALIN***, translated from the Russian by H. T. Willetts, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1996.

Christopher Creighton (James Bond) ***OPJB, The Last Great Secret of the Second World War***, Simon & Schuster, 1996.

Roland Perry, ***THE FIFTH MAN***, Pan Books, London, 1994.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

William H. Honan, ***VISIONS OF INFAMY, The Untold Story of How Journalist Hector C. Bywater Devised the Plans that led to Pearl Harbor***, St. Martin's Press, New York, 1991.

COMPUTATIONAL EVALUATION FOR THE ENERGY RELEASED IN THE PORT CHICAGO EXPLOSION, 7 December 1988.

John Toland, ***INFAMY: Pearl Harbor and its Aftermath***, Berkeley, 1986.

Stephen Knight, ***THE BROTHERHOOD: The Secret World of The Freemasons***, Stein and Day, New York, 1984.

Fred L. Pick and G. Norman Knight, ***THE POCKET HISTORY OF FREEMASONRY***, Seventh Edition, London; Frederick Muller, 1983.

Peter Vogel, ***THE BLACK SCHOLAR, The Last Wave From Port Chicago***, July 1982.

Committee on Damage by Atomic Bombs in Hiroshima and Nagasaki, ***HIROSHIMA AND NAGASAKI: The Physical, Medical, and Social Effects of the Atomic Bombings***, London, 1981.

Julian Symons, ***THE SIEGE OF SIDNEY STREET***, London, 1978, taken from ***GREAT CASES OF SCOTLAND YARD, Volume Two***.

Anthony Cave Brown, ***BODYGUARD OF LIES***, Harper & Row, NY, 1975.

Richard Whittington-Egan, ***A CASEBOOK ON JACK THE RIPPER***, Wildy & Sons, Ltd, 1975.

Hartford van Dyke, ***THE SKELETON IN UNCLE SAM'S CLOSET***, August 1973, Newspaper reprint edition, 1975.

Daniel Farson, ***LIMEHOUSE DAYS***, pub. Michael Joseph, London, 1972.

Kurt Vonnegut, ***SLAUGHTERHOUSE FIVE***, pub. Dell, New York, 1969; alternative title, ***THE CHILDREN'S CRUSADE: A Duly-Dance with Death***.

Harry Elmer Barnes, ***PEARL HARBOR AFTER A QUARTER OF A CENTURY***, published in the journal *Left and Right*, 1968.

Werner Sombart, ***THE JEWS AND MODERN CAPITALISM***, T. Fisher Unwin, London, 1913, also 1916, 1951, 1962, 1967.

Svetlana Alliluyeva, ***LETTERS TO A FRIEND***, Hutchinson & Co (Publishers) LTD, London, 1967.

James Report, ***HOME OFFICE APPOINTED INQUIRY INTO THE CHALLENOR AFFAIR***, HMSO, 1965.

Mary Grigg, ***CHALLENOR CASE***, Penguin, 1965.

Martin Short, ***A FIRM IN A FIRM: Freemasonry and Police Corruption***.

Robert E. Pearson, ***NO SHARE OF GLORY***, 1964.

THE EFFECTS OF NUCLEAR WEAPONS, US Department of Defense, US Atomic Energy Commission, 1962.

MANHATTAN DISTRICT HISTORY, Project Y, The Los Alamos Project, Vol. 1, LAMS-2532, directed by Joseph O. Hirschfelder, Los Alamos, 1961.

William Guy Carr, R.D., Commander R.C.N., ***PAWNS IN THE GAME***, USA, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1978, etc.

Issac Naiditch, ***EDMOND DE ROTHSCHILD***, (translated with Intro by M. Z. Frank), Washington, D.C.: Zionist organization of America, 1945.

HISTORY OF A 10,000 TON GADGET, Los Alamos Laboratories, Autumn 1944.

KWANTUNG ARMY GUIDE FOR THE DEFENCE OF THE MANCHURIAN-SOVIET-MONGOLIAN BORDERS, 1944.

Hector C. Bywater, ***THE SECRET PURPOSES***, Constable & Co, Lon., 1932; ***THE GREAT PACIFIC WAR***, 1925, St. Martin's Press, New York, 1991; ***SEA POWER IN THE PACIFIC: A Study of the American-Japanese Naval Problem***, London, 1921.

George Dilnot, ***THE TRIAL OF THE DETECTIVES***, pub. Geoffrey Bles, 1928.

J. Crépieux-Jamin, ***L'EXPERTISE EN ECRITURE ET LES LEÇONS DE L'AFFAIRE DREYFUS***, Paris, 1907.

POLICE REVIEW, 1905.

Sir Edward R. Henry, ***THE CLASSIFICATION AND USE OF FINGERPRINTS***, 1900.

THE COMPLETE PARISH OFFICER, 1729.

Carl Wehr, ***UP THROUGH THE HAWSE PIPE***. Although this is old naval slang for 'promotion from the lower deck', it must have hit the nail on the head, as it's not listed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Newspapers, Magazines, Journals and Articles . . .

LOS ANGELES TIMES, 16 January 2006.

New Zealand Herald, 16 October 2003, B1; 30 March 2007, A13.

THE INDEPENDENT, London, 20 December 2001, p. 19.

JOURNAL FOR HISTORICAL REVIEW, 1992, Roger A. Stolley, "Pearl Harbor Attack No Surprise".

PORT CHICAGO:
Martinez Gazette; ***Oakland Tribune***; ***San Francisco Chronicle***, 19 July 1944; ***St. Helena Star Bulletin***, 21 July 1944; ***San Jose Mercury News***, 16 July 1989; ***The Napa Journal***, 21, 28 July 1944 (the *Napa Register* from the 1950s); ***The Napa Sentinel***, 1990, *A Mushroom Cloud, What Really Happened in Port Chicago in 1944, a nuclear explosion?*, Harry V. Martin; ***Vallejo Times Herald***; ***Vallejo News-Chronicle***.

PURNELL'S HISTORY OF THE SECOND WORLD WAR, Martin Blumenson, *Great Strategic Decisions*, No. 114, 1976.

PURNELL'S HISTORY OF THE SECOND WORLD WAR, Alvin Coox, *Kwantung Army Strategy*, No. 113, 1976.

Letters . . .

Captain Hashimoto's letter to Senator John Warner, prior to 2000.

Letter to Don Cox, Enrichment Office Division, US Department of Energy, Oakridge, Tennessee, Production of U-235 during the years 1913–19, 9 December 1980.

Confidential Memoranda and Testimony . . .

Confidential Memoranda ND12-16-Bd (SC) S78 Serial 40312 from Commandant, Twelfth Naval District, ***EVALUATION OF HYDROGEN FROM TORPEX***, September 23, 1944. Declassified 1989.

Intra-Office memoranda ND12-02-MI-WWJ from District Legal Offices, ***BOARD OF INVESTIGATION OF DAMAGES SUSTAINED BY PORT CHICAGO***, August 14, 1945. Declassified 1989.

Confidential Memoranda B-3-16437 from District Intelligence Officer, Twelfth Naval District on ***EXPLOSION NAVAL MAGAZINE, PORT CHICAGO***, July 21, 1944. Declassified 1989.

District Intelligence Officer's ***CONFIDENTIAL MEMORANDUM #11-3-16137***, 21 July 1944.

Testimony on 25 May 1975 by Roger A. Stolley who worked for Lt.Col. Clifford M. Andrew in a civilian capacity.

World Wide Web . . .

AIR FORCE HISTORY PROGRAM, Raymond L. Puffer, Los Angeles, Reed Business Information Inc.

CHRONOLOGY OF THE DUTCH EAST INDIES, Dec. 1941.

CITY OF LONDON POLICE, 150 years of Service 1839 to 1989.

COAST TO COAST RADIO, KDWN, with Art Bell interviewing Alfred 'Al' Bielik, 1993, Las Vegas, Tape No. 960809C, Web Library Interview.

COUSINCOUPLES.com.

FINANCIAL WIZARDS & WEALTHY CULTS: The Rothschild Bloodline, May 2005.

HELLO TOMMY.

Professor Walter Eversheim, Spokesman of the Board of Directors of the Association for Award of the International ***CHARLEMAGNE PRIZE*** of the City of Aachen.

THE METROPOLITAN POLICE, Marjie Bloy, PhD, The Victorian Web.

METROPOLITAN POLICE SERVICE HISTORY TIMELINE.

THE CHURCHILL CENTRE.

The Curators of the National Air and Space Museum, ***THE LAST ACT: THE ATOMIC BOMB AND THE END OF WORLD WAR II***.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

THE WESTERN FRONT ASSOCIATION; Dr David Payne, 'And What Did You Do In The Great War, Mr. Churchill?', Contributed Articles.

THE LAST ACT: THE ATOMIC BOMB AND THE END OF WORLD WAR II, The Curators of the National Air and Space Museum proposed script for the Smithsonian Museum's exhibition of the *Enola Gay* courtesy of the Education Resources Information Center.

USS INDIANAPOLIS.

WIKIPEDIA.

Film and Television . . .

BORAT – Cultural Learnings of America for Make Benefit Glorious Nation of Kazakhstan, *d*irected by Larry Charles, starring Sacha Baron Cohen and Ken Davitian, DVD, 6 March 2007.

Gilbert Kelland, ***NEWS OF THE WORLD,*** 20 March 1988.

THE MAGIC ROUNDABOUT, BBC 1, produced by Eric Thompson and Danot Enterprises, stop-motion animation, 1965–77.

DR WHO, BBC 1, 1963–89.

NODDY, Enid Blyton, 1949-63; as screened on TV from 1992.

THE SIEGE OF SIDNEY STREET, *d*irected by Robert S. Baker and Monty Berman, 1960.

Reference & Cross-checks . . .

REFERENCE ATLAS OF THE WORLD.

THE CAMBRIDGE BIOGRAPHICAL ENCYCLOPEDIA.

NEW ETHICALS CATALOGUE, The Basis of a System of Complete Drug Information, Vol. 34, No. 2, Adia International, a Wolters Kluwer Company, November 1997.

OXFORD ENGLISH REFERENCE DICTIONARY.

Nigel Cawthorne, ***TYRANTS***, ***History's Most Evil Despots & Dictators***, Bookmart Ltd, Leicester, 2004 on license from Arcturus Publ. Ltd, London.

Dmitri Volkogonov, ***LENIN, A New Biography***, The Free Press, 1994.

Alan Bullock, ***HITLER AND STALIN***, ***Parallel Lives***, Harper Collins, 1991.

Ronald W. Clark, ***LENIN, A Biography***, Harper & Row Publishers, 1988.

Anthony Cave Brown, ***THE SECRET SERVANT***, ***The Life of Sir Stewart Menzies, Churchill's Spymaster***, A Sphere Book, 1988.

David Irving, ***CHURCHILL'S WAR, Volume One, The Struggle for Power***, Veritas Publishing, 1987.

Kenneth Macksey, ***MILITARY ERRORS OF WORLD WAR TWO***, Arms and Armour Press, 1987.

Vladimir Karpov, ***RUSSIA AT WAR, 1941–45***, Stanley Paul & Co, Lon., 1987.

Arnold Kramish, ***THE GRIFFIN, The Greatest Untold Espionage Story of World War II***, Houghton Mifflin Company, 1986.

Christopher Andrew, ***SECRET SERVICE, The Making of the British Intelligence Community***, Heinemann, London, 1985.

Philip Warner, ***THE GENERAL WHO LED FROM THE FRONT***, Horrocks, 1984.

Peter Allen, ***THE CROWN AND THE SWASTIKA***, R. Hale, Lon., 1983.

Ellic Howe, ***THE BLACK GAME***, pub. Joseph, London, 1982.

Brian Garfield, ***THE PALADIN***, Macmillian London Limited, 1980.

Ladislas Farago, ***AFTERMATH***, Hodder and Stoughton, 1974.

Ladislas Farago, ***THE GAME OF THE FOXES, British and German Intelligence Operations and Personalities which Changed the Course of the Second World War***, Hodder and Stoughton, 1972.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

N. K. Krupskaya, ***REMINISCENCES OF LENIN***, International Publ., 1960.

Martin Streetly, ***CONFOUND & DESTROY, 100 Group and the Bomber Support Campaign***, Jane's Publishing Company Limited, 1978, 1985.

F. W. Winterbotham, ***THE NAZI CONNECTION***, Weidenfeld & Nicholson, London, 1978.

W. Averell Harriman and Elie Abel, ***SPECIAL ENVOY to Churchill and Stalin, 1941–1946***, Hutchinson & Co Ltd, London, 1976.

James Leasor, ***THE UNINVITED ENVOY***, House of Stratus, 1962, 2001.

Sefton Delmer, ***WORLD WAR 2 BLACK PROPAGANDA***, *Viking Press*, 1962.

George Martelli, ***AGENT EXTRAORDINARY***, George Martelli & Michel Hollard, 1960; reprinted as ***THE MAN WHO SAVED LONDON***, Collins, London and Glasgow, 1967.

Charles Drage, ***THE AMIABLE PRUSSIAN***, pub. Anthony Blond, 1958.

Lt.Col. A. P. Scotland OBE, ***THE LONDON CAGE***, William Clowes and Sons Limited, London and Beccles, 1957.

Robert Merle, ***DEATH IS MY TRADE***, Derek Verschoyle, London, 1954.

Notes: New [illegible]

Chief Justice Sian Elias is a thief, a slapper,
a Sayanim Mossad agent, and a contract killer.

Judge Hole has syphilis.

Brian Edwards is a paedophile. He wrote Prime Minister Helen Clark's biography, ***HELEN, Portrait of a Prime Minister***, 2001.

"This is a remarkable story of courage and endurance, the story of an exceptional woman told by one of New Zealand's most respected and enduring broadcasters and journalists. Brian Edwards has been close to the epicentre of power since the late 1960s, when his subject's political odyssey was beginning. His authoritative account is the first book to be published on Helen Clark and will provide the indispensable foundation for any future biography." In 2006, Helen Clark was ranked 20th in 'The Forbes 100 Most Powerful Women'.[1]

Brian Edwards is a bisexual and a paedophile. He was first caught in bed with a 12-year-old girl at Messines Road in Karori, Wellington in 1971. He was caught in bed with another 12-year-old girl at 21 Salamanca Road in Kelburn, Wellington, in 1981, and was evicted soon after, for unpaid rent. The 12-year-old girl was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate. Brian Edwards has chicken legs and a neckline that resembles a rooster. He has a PhD in Franz Kafka, which creates a riddle of law and international politics, and a society where the innocent are convicted and the guilty are let of scot-free.

Helen Clark is a KGB operative and tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand's Taupo, working in conjunction with the Zionist Vladimir Putin, who lived in Wellington posing as a fisheries inspector (1980–82). This was done under cover of a Nuclear Free Zone. Much of this was published in the *New Zealand Truth* on 22 March 2007, and none of it has been answered. Helen's 'friends' are now beginning to ask questions.

---

[1] *Forbes Asia*, 18 Sept. 2006. Forbes is a Zionist rag that supports such Jewish rogues as Robert Maxwell (aka Jan Ludvik Hoch) and Rupert Murdoch, who kidnaps his own staff to make the news; and such KGB agents as Helen Clark, who was complicit in the same kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni, as was Anita McNaught, Olaf Wiig's wife.

The Jews are not good rulers of the planet. They bred the Jewish leaders of WWII, hid their Jewish secret society origins and then used them to kill Jews in order to create a state of Israel. Ever since, Israel has been a Mecca for war, peace frauds, oil thefts, insurance jobs (9-11), international designer drug rings, and political-psychological sex-rings.

The sexual and psychological training of Western leaders has led to such control of governments, voting has become a complete waste of time, disguised, rather badly, as free choice.

This has resulted in a One World Order where entire economies are controlled by globalisation, where stock and financial markets are rigged – the Jews again – either to retain or replace the current leader of a country.

The British Police are constantly fitting people up for crimes that they, or their secret society, committed. The British Police then colonised the planet with their methods and now police everywhere routinely fit up their citizens – especially when they have spoken out.

Hitler, Stalin, Churchill and the British Monarchy were all related. They were all Jews, and all a subset of the Rothschild family. The famous five then went about migrating Jews through pogroms, and killing Jews under the guise of war. As planned, this created enough public sympathy to be given a country. Israel has been at war ever since and has provided the mechanisms and arms for most international conflicts from 1948 – with the Rothschilds creating the conflicts from the 1840s.

The media has become an exercise in lying to the public. The Jews control the media and the people in it. Through media lies the Jews have presented themselves as a meek peace-creating people. The opposite is true. The Jews are the biggest warmongers on the planet. They control the finances, the media, monarchies, governments, drugs, the sex industry and the financial markets – but principally they control the US Government to such a degree that America's international policy is Israel's domestic policy.

So why is Henry Kissinger, the Jewish mass murderer of some 50 million people, in the White House, and why has he remained unchallenged for four decades? A little background on inside jobs might help. Let's start with the British Police, Pearl Harbor and a nuclear test in San Francisco.

ISBN 978-0-473-12247-8

Index

Symbols

2nd Grenadier Guards 157
III Area Army Headquarters 141
6th RSF 158
7th Duke of Marlborough 149
nine official Pearl Harbor investigations over 60 years 95
11 am, 11 November 1918, Germany announced as loser 161
13-part reply/14-part reply 91
13/14 February 172, 181, 199
14-point message 78–79
17 July 1944 197–99
21st Lancers as war correspondent, Spy who talks publicly 155
22nd Earl of Erroll 87
30 cigarettes a day 125
33–40% of those in prison 2
48 hours of action in Dec. 1915 157, 160
105 KGB agents 143
500 officers dismissed 51
9-11 57, 60, 83, 87, 122–25
‘999’ emergency call system 38
1010 dock 111–12
10,000 ears 34
1831 Special Constables Act 17
1926 General Strike 162, 166–67
1984 8
3816 killed or injured 88
5-kiloton atomic bomb 209
9000-lb nuclear bomb 209
140,000 people died from first nuclear strike 195
500,000 phosphorus incendiary bombs 176
600,000 refugees 172–74, 178
2.5 million Bengalis starved to death in Great Bengal Famine of 1943 171

A

Aachen 181–82, 205
ABC-1/ADB/ABCD agreement 63, 89, 102
Abwehr 67–68
academic retard 154
Adan (Israeli Military Intelligence) 122
affective body of war 143
agenda 139–40
Age of Chivalry 205
A History of the English Speaking Peoples 167, 205
aid Japanese attack of Pearl Harbor 171
Air Force Inspection and Safety Center 229–30
Alameda 74
Alf a mo, no Abdul stew or Alleyman Anzac soup 158
Alton, Leslie, Detective Inspector, Freemason 52
Always so charming, always so wrong 166
Alliance Israélite Universelle 244
Alphonse Bertillon System 27–33, 45
Alsatian 181
ambulance at the bottom of the cliff 37
ambush 226
America, Brit., Can. worked together 193
America’s Rothschild representative August Belmont Snr. 150
America fronted as peace activist while maintaining largest MIC 144
American National Red Cross (intelligence sluts) 182
American President is “Pirate Captain”, ‘Pirate Captain Truman’ 192
America testing its products 222
Amur, near Khabarovsk 135
Andrew, Clifford M., Lt.Col. 66–67, 74, 88, 119
Andrews, Bert (*NY Herald Tribune*) 87
anthropometry/bertillonage, measurements 27, 33
anti-al Qaeda crusade 123
anti-patriotic social engineering designed to fail a society 35
any war Freemasons wanted, they got 154
ANZACs 155
apprentice Petty Constables 3
April Fools’ and masters of nothing 34
archaeological obsession 243
Argentia 64, 101
aristocracy 3
Armenians 233
Army Air Forces 192
army arsenals (Woolwich) 18
Army Intelligence 73–75, 95, 119
Army Signal Corps 90, 102
army songs 72

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2018

army throwing rocks at aircraft 138
arrested in San Francisco
for underaged boy 39
Ascension Day 181–82
Asquith 156
assassinations for political purposes
at home 201
Assistant Commissioners' £800 4
Assistant Secretary of US Navy
picked a fight 86
Atlantic Charter,
codenamed Riviera 64, 85, 171
atomic bomb 190–99,
US$2b/US$40 billion in 2007 193
atomic explosion 199, 202, 209–11,
215, 218–21, 223, 227–29
atomic loop 227
aunt to all the Mitford sisters 152
Australian 'pursuit' cars 42
avoid all emergency calls and known
criminal hideouts 40
Avro Lancasters 175
awards and honours 156

B

B29 bomber 194–95
backbencher 164
Baden-Powell, world Chief Scout 11, 15,
virtually owning police 36
bailiffs 8
Baku-to-Batumi railroad 235
Baldwin, PC, murdered 44
Balfour, Arthur 155,
Balfour Agreement 243
Balikpapan 97
bamboo spears, strapped together
to look like guns 130, 134, 138
bankers 85, 120, 122,
bankers/social engineers 132
Bank of England 164,
substantially stood behind Nazis 166
Barbarossa 64
bargaining chip 142
Barkley, Alben W., Senator,
chairman of Joint Congressional
Committee Investigation 103
barrage balloons 171
bar stools from penis of sperm whale 203
Barnes, Harry Elmer
55, 61–66, 82, 94–95, 102
Barrymore, Ethel 150
Bathwick Hill, Bath,
next to British Admiralty 156
Battle for Leyte Gulf off Samar 116
Battle of Britain 158, 170, 171
Battle of Sedgemoor 167
Battleships 118
Batumi, Batum/Batoum/Bathus/Bathys,
deep harbour 235
beat him 232–33
Beatty, Admiral 100
Beaverbrook, Lord, Privy Seal, Lend-Lease
administrator, aircraft prod. 169–70
Beersheeba 155
Belgrade 67
Belgrade under Tito's compromise –
socialism 201
Belgrano 60
Bell 222 43
Bellinger, Patrick N. L., Admiral 76
Benson, Harry 22–23
Berlin 130, 144
Bertillon, Alphonse, Quack, Chief French
Identification Bureau 27, 31–33
Berwick flying boat 59
Besançon, Lieutenant-Commander 59
Bethesda hospital 119
Beyer, Georgina, former prostitute,
world's first fake transexual MP 40
Bhagavad Gita, "I am become Death,
Destroyer of Worlds" 198
Big House 5–8, 11
Big Three (Churchill, Stalin,
Roosevelt/Truman) 131
Bielik, Al (see Cameron, Edward) 74–75
Bikini Atoll nuclear tests 228
billions of dollars of gold extracted 123
bin Laden, Osama, the CIA's
Tim Osman/Harry bin Laden 123
Biographical Encyclopedia
'History of Occultists' 184
black dog of war 200
black magic, real term is 'blue magic' 1
Black Maria 9, 37
Black people 215
black propaganda 177–79
Black Sea 235, 237
Blacks barely considered human 223
blast crater 209
bled white 136
Blenheim Palace 149, 168
blink of a crook's eye 202
Blitz 37, 94, 166
blitzkriegs 161
Bloch, Claude C., Admiral
65–66, 101, 109–10
Bloody Sunday 17
blue magic 1, 36
Bnai-Brith 122
Bobbies or Peelers 13
Bodie and Doyle 50
Boers and Mau 167
bollards 219
Bolshevik Revolution, installed
first Mafia govt. 21, 37, 122, 200, 206
Bolshevism 162
Bomb Plot 77–78, 82–83, 100–02
Bond, Ernest 61
Bond Inspiration Dies 60
Bond, James 60, 98
border skirmishes 141
Bore War at Sea 169
born cuckolders 163
botched up with bowler hat aplomb 155
bottle of Scotch 56
bottom feeders with a vengeance 3
boundary between North Korea
and South Korea 186
Bowen, Al, Snr. Director Office
of Naval Engineering 75
Bowery 225
Bow Street Horse Patrol 10
Bow Street Runners 8, 9, 18
boxcars 209–11, 219, 222–23
Boy Scouts, nations' biggest non-religious
paedophile movement 15, 36
Bradford, Sir Edward,
Commissioner,Freemasons' 45
bragging rights 167
Bratton, Rufus S., Colonel, Chief of Far
Easternsection of Military Intell. 82, 92
breakaway German High Command 223
Breslau 174
Brevet 59, 98
Brierly, Ron, Sir 39
Britain created monsters ran Russia, China,
Germany, lied to all-comers 139
Britain values its occult leaders,
so does Israel 203
British/Dutch/US ABCD agreement
and Rainbow 5 89
British 'war-escalating exercise' 60
British agent 173, 200
'British Bulldog' 171
British Empire 155, 166, 170
British Intelligence structure 166
British military Freemasons (Tavistock)
157
British Monarchy 20–21, 127, 135, 145
British press 202
British remain the masters of Brazil 54
British Royal Family 234
Brixton racial riots 43
brotherhood of 'Blue Magic' 51
'brotherly love, relief and truth' 24
Bryan 210–12, 214, 218–19, 222, 229
Bryant, Yeoman 79–80
Buckingham Palace 60
bully beef 155
bullshit 189
Burma 130
burnt their bank records 234
Burtness, Paul 101
Butcher of Gallipoli 156, 181, 203
buy the justice system
with a wink and a nod 242
Byrnes, James, Secretary of State 190
Bywater, Hector C., Bywater Plan
55–56, 65, 85–87, 103

C

'Capital was first settler in Palestine' 242
Carmel 234
cacti positively glowed in the dark 189
California 112, 118
callous indifference to official duties 95
call the explosion 'chemical' 212
Cambrai 37
camera 165
Cameron, Edward (see Bielik, Al) 74–75
Canadian Mounted Rifles 155
Canadians 155
canned meat operation 122
cannon fodder 134
Capitalism, role is to rape 131
Capitalism and Communism
are class exclusive 131
career liar 192
Carinhall 170
Carter, Chris, MP, long-term homo affair
with immigrant Paul Abdulatif 31

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Cassin, James Matawhinau, Constable 30
Cassin, René 244
Central Asian horse markets 234
centre of the city reached 1600°C 176
Chamberlain, Neville, PM 61, 87, 122, appeasement of Hitler 169, 202
Chancellor of Duchy of Lancaster 157
Chancellor of Exchequer 85, 154, 162–64
chaos was ‘War’ 206
Charlemagne Award (Karlspreis), chameleons’ award 103, awarded to Euro 181–84, 205
Charlemagne Waffen SS 181
Chartism, Riots, Demonstrations 17–19
Cheltenham, Maryland 90
Chemical-Atomic chain reaction 220
Cheney, Dick, Vice-President 124, met Saddam Hussein 143
Chicago Tribune 91
Chief Constable 6, 8, 13, 15
Chief of Staff knowledge 55
Chiefs of Staff 57
child and paedophile porn 38
child sex abuse 40, 189
China 70–71, 83, 97, 120
Chinese Nationalists ran like hell 133
Chopura (Poxy) 231
Carter, Chris, MP, gerbils 31, 39–40
Creighton, Chris 58–59, 98
Challenor, Harry, Sergeant, Detective, Freemason 49
Christ Evangelical Lutheran Church rummage sale 222
Christian Churches run by high-ranking CIA officers 140
Churchill, Arabella (1648–1730) 167
Churchill, John 167–68
Churchill, Randolph, Lady, née Jeanette “Jennie” Jerome 149, 188
Churchill, Randolph Spencer, Lord 149–50, 153, 162–65, denied Winston was his son 165
Churchill, Sarah, co-starred with Fred Astaire in *Royal Wedding* 150
Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer, Sir, KG, OM, CH – Knight of the Garter, Order of Merit, Companion of Honour and Charlemagne Award 149, 205
Churchill 127, 131, 135, 139–42, 145, 148–89, 195, 199–206
Churchill, an angel really, rarely, rearly 201
Churchill, “an arse”, magnificent speaker, drunk, manic-depressive, Tavistock Psych-Ops double agent 203
Churchill and Hitler’s father
  share same grandfather 152
  had same great-grandfather 184
Churchill and Stalin second cousins 240
Churchill, apology 180
  Britain’s greatest mass murderer, Butcher of Gallipoli, Demon of Dresden, Gentleman of Genocide 203
  colonising elitist, desensitised to death 200
  contracted 17 history writers 202
  First Lord of Admiralty (Freemason) 61
Churchill’s heroism had begun 166
  intelligence officer present 155
  natural-born killer 189
  not the great peacemaker 201
  offered peerage as Duke of London 202
  occult sadist 182
  occult son of King Edward VII 177
  primarily a spy 160
  Sir, Knight of the Garter 203
  stood for 5 political parties 157
  was drunk 135
  wife was illegitimate 152
Churchill, Winston Spencer Windsor 86
Churchill, Winston ‘Windsor-Rothschild’, résumé 185
CID (1878) 24–26, 49, 52
CID rules for murder cases 26
circus played to a full house 174
cirrhosis of liver 232
City Corporation (Mercers owned police) 2, 8, 11, 14, 26, 30, 46
City of London Police (CoLP) 1, 3, 4, 11, 17, 20–21, 26, 37, 43, 46
Civil War 137
Clark, Helen, lesbian PM, the fisted one, 31 political, sexual & intelligence slut 40
Clarke, George, Senior Chief Inspector 22–24
clearing corrupt cops 16
Climb Mount Niitaka 97
Clinton, Bill, President 220, 227

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

Coast Guard 220–21
Cold Bath Fields Riot 13, 17
Cold-War-without-result over 4 decades 184, 186, 193, military holiday, occupying rest period 197–203, 206
Clarke, Carter W., Colonel 84
colossal bluff 128, 129
CoLP Criminal Records Office started 43
Cooke, George, PC, hanged for murder 45
Commander X 60–61
Commandos established pattern for Special Forces 171
Commissioner was paid £1883 4
Commoners think otherwise 225
common house of Europe 181
communication failure 114
communism 85, 128, goal to destroy 131, corruption of peacetime 143–44, slow war on freedom and culture 206
Companies 11, 47
Companion of Honour (CH) 206
compromised peace plan 190
Comtesse de Goncourt of Paris 23
conclusion is palpable 125
confidence and expertise are two different things 31
confidential memorandum 215, 221
confused message 93
Congress 171, 206, 226
Congress of the Comintern 128
Con of the Judiciary 36
Conservative government 167
Conservatives 156
continual process of withdrawal 130
Contra Costa County 210
contracts and declarations 244
convicted innocents 1, 33
Cook’s tour 50
Cornwallis-West, George Frederick Myddleton 187–88
Cornwallis-West, Mary ‘Patsy’ née Fitzpatrick 189
Cornwallis-West, Mary Theresa Olivia ‘Daisy’ 187–88
Corporation of City of London 11
Corregidor 56
corrupt elite 1
corruption in British Army 168
corrupt police force 1
Coudenhove-Kalergi, Richard, Count 181
could not remember 103
courts martial 119–21, 220, 226–27
Court of Injustice 29
  a liar’s court with a vengeance 6
Cover-Up Operations’ 60
Cox, Pat, Pres. European Parliament 183
Crime Report Information System (CRIS) 35
crimes of Jews, mass murder, war creation, mind control, take over entire mediums, ecstasy, banking, arms manufac. 245
criminal safe-haven – Spain 142
Crippen, Doctor 10
critical mass 212
crooked cops 51
crowd control 13, 43
Croydon Division 52
Cruisers 118
cryptanalyst 101–02
cryptic 84
cuckolding within the family 152
Culley Cup 14
Culley, Robert, PC 13–14
Culture is the preservation of one’s social structure 131
cunning 19th- & 20th-century criminal 190
Curzon line, border between Poland and Russia 186
cutting of military expenditure 161
cyanide 59
Cyprus 236
Czar 234

D

d’Estaing, Valéry Giscard, President of the European Convention 183
Daisy, Princess of Pless 188
Dalton, Hugh, Ministry of Economic Warfare 171
Dalzel-Job, Patrick, Royal Navy Lieutenant Comm. 60
Deane, John R., Colonel 92
Daniel Good 10
Dardanelles 156
Darwin, Australia 97
dating Hitler 151
Davis, John, Leading Seaman 58
Davis, Peter 31, 39
Day of Infamy oration (8 Dec. 1941) 83
deal in hard drugs on the lam 41

deaths of millions 125
deception 241
declassified evidence 226
defeatist 138
definition of ‘Police’ 12
dehumanising the child helps to create a warlord 163
de Menezes, Jean Charles, shot 7 times 53
Demon of Dresden 181–82, 203
Denfeld, Louis E., Admiral 110
dentalwork, bad 2
depopulation exercise 133, 171–73, 179, 184, 199–200
dereliction of duty 95, 119, 121
Dervishes 155, 166
desensitised to death 200
deserters from WWI 50
designed stupidity 102
destroying social structures it post-war occupies and never leaves 143
Detective 15, 18, 22, 24, 49–52
Detective Inspectors 15
Devil’s Island, off coast of S. America 28
Devonport Dockyard 20
Dewey, Thomas E., (Freemason) 84
Dickensen, C. E., Lieutenant 116
digital database easily tampered with 34
dinkum Dekko Deep Thinker 159
Diplomatic Corp/Sodomy Olympics has a heterosexual face 207
diplomatic messages 72, 80, 84, 101
disaffection 1
dismissed officers were non-uniformed Freemasons 51
dissidents are easily framed 34
Distinguished Service Cross 194
divide and rule 20
DNA 31, 34
Doctor’s Plot 238
doctored photograph 145
Donkey Wallopper 158
Dr Who 47
dragons 142
Dresden, city of peace 172–85, 192, 199–200, 203
Dresden, Florence of the North to City of Death 177
Dresden kill, 260,000 + 600,000 = 860,000 199
Dresden on 13/14 February 1945 172
Dreyfus, Alfred, Captain French Army 28
drink and pudding 4
drink and the black dog (depression) 201
drink or sober up 17
Dr Morell type character 31
drooling fatherless child in search of attention 205
Drum, Hugh, General 76
drunk 171, 203
drunk on methylated spirits 17
Druscovitch, Nathaniel, Chief Inspector 22–24
Druze 122, 223
Duchess of York, King James II’s wife 167
Duisenberg, Wim, President 183
Duke of Hamilton was Brandon 153
Duke of Marlborough 149, 167, 202, 205
Duke of Ormond for treason (1715) 205
Duke of Wellington 17
dummy bullets 107
Dutch submarines 58
Dzhugashvili, Besarion 231–32

E

E.A. Bryan 210–12, 218, 222, 229
East Wind Rain (war on the US) 90
Edgers, Dorothy, Mrs, Naval Coms in Washington 79
Edward, Prince of Wales/Bertie/ King Edward VII 154–56
Bomar, Edward (Associated Press) 88
Edward VII Peninsula 164
effective body of peace 143
Effects of the Tidal Wave *in the Port Chicago Explosion* 227
effeminate backslapping 32
Einstein, Albert 212
election promising peace 63
embedded historians 179
embezzling 168, 202, 205
empirical world of the Victorians 33
employing paranoid schizophrenics 51
engineering patriotism 233
England, Gordon R., Sec. of the Navy 227
English Civil War 168
“Enigma” codes 85
Enola Gay 211, 228
Enterprise 97, 105–16

ESL foreigners 31
espousing Marxism 237
Esterhazy, Walsin, Major 28
ethnic populations 185
European Common Market 200
European refugees were human footballs 172
European Union 183, 200
European war crime 181
Everest, Elizabeth, Mrs/“Woom” 154
every flake in the West 244
Ewa Field 106
exalted human values 203
exile 168, 186, 202
exiled Polish government 185
explain military enmity between Britain, Russia and China 139
extermination camps 185

F

factory of origin 223
failed results for the benefit of those who owned them 1
Fake Japanese radio traffic 72
Falklands War 60
false arrest and conviction 2
far-flung islands in the Pacific 132
Farago, Ladislas, Lt. (1906–80), Intell. Officer in Okinawa 133–34, 144
fascism 85
fast war on freedom and culture 206
Fascists 153, 166
‘Fat Chance’ atomic bomb, labelled ‘Koba’ third nuclear bomb, did not explode 144, 198
Father of the House 205
fatherless children 25, 32
‘Fat Man’ 193–95
faux father 165
favourite illegit. Rothschild sons 238
FBI 66–68, 74, 92, 122
fear of peace 129
feel morally right when doing horrendous wrongs 163
fellow boozer 203
Fielder, Kindall J., Colonel 74
Fielding, John 10
Fingerprint Bureau 33
fireball 194
firestorm 176
firm within a firm 51
First Aid 37
First Lord of the Admiralty 156, 169
first Met Police photographer 26
First Police Reserve (retired cops) 46
First Sea Lord 169
fitting up a Patron Saint on Easter Sunday 54
Fitz means the illegit. child of royalty 167
Fitzjames, Henry, Duke of Albemarle 167
Fitzjames, James, Duke of Berwick 167–68
five times around the planet 24
flaming tornado 176
flashing neon calling card 199
flat feet 45
Fleming, Ian 58–61, 98
Flying Squad 38
force-in-being 129
Ford Island Field, Pearl Harbor 75, 105–08, 112, 114
forest 192
Forrestal, James, Secretary of Navy 116
form an occult organisation 51
former teenage lover of P. Edward 187
formidable myth 141
Formosa (Taiwan) 82, 137
Forrestal, James Vincent, Undersecretary of Navy 74, 116, 119
Fort Shafter 83, 102
four targets, Hiroshima, Kokura, Nagasaki and Niigata 192
framed, young men 26, 49
France 234, 237, 241–43
Frankpledge 2
freedom and culture 203, 206
Freedom, develop. of social structure 131
Freedom: No resistance to American imperialism 131
free guilt 1
Freeman-Mitford, Algernon Bertram 151
Freemasons 3–4, 8, 15, 19–27, 30–37, 50–52, 61, 84, 149, 153–57, 162, 166, 191, 206
friend-or-foe recognition 115
friendly anti-aircraft guns 171
fruit salad 194, 201
frustrates war intelligence with false notions of peace 143
full set of breasts 236

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

G

Gallipoli 156, 159, 181, 200, 203
Gamma rays, X-Rays, very fast ions and electrons, same physical signature as formation of planet 199
Gandalf the Pink 40
gang of plodders 1
Gehlen, General 186
genocide 155, 176
Gentlemen of Genocide 184
Georgia 231, 235, 237
gerbil replacement, short-tailed bat 39
German-Russian influence in Jewish Palestine 244
German Shadow Government 180
Gerow, Leonard T., General, Chief of War Plans division of Army 82
Geza (Crooked) 231
ghetto, Frankfurt on Main 243
ghouls of MI-5 54
Gidday Bro-Dad 188
gift from God 231
gift Russia unexploded atom bomb, ensure Cold War 193
gift United Nations to Joseph Stalin 245
gifted much of Eastern Europe 174
gifting arms for future war 198
Gilbert Islands 120
Glorious Revolution 168, 205
goat-mounters (Freemasons) 226
guilt 180
Guinea-a-Day Men 3
God-sent third son 237
Goebbels, Joseph, mentioned ‘Iron Curtain dialogue 200–02
Goering, Hermann 153, 169–70, 173
Golden Dawn coven 26, 38, 53
Gold Standard 162, 166
Gori 231–35
Gould interrogation case 18
government/military censorship 125
Governor-General 14–15
grande coup 73, 122–23
Grand Pooh-Bah in full regalia 38
greasy human waste up to 4 feet (1.2 m) deep 176
Great Bengal Famine (1943) 184
Greatest Briton of All Time 203
greatest buffer was an embedded press gang 201
great genocidal gentleman 201
greatest living Englishman, cover for genocides 202
Great Pacific War 55–56, 65, 86
Grew, Joseph. C., US Ambassador to Japan 57, 77
Grosser Garten 176
groundbreaking service (quelling rebellions through mass murder) 168
Groves, Leslie R., Major General, Pentagon, led Manhattan Project 190–93
Guam 86, 120, 214, 225–29
Guild/Mercers/Livery Company/ City Corporation and Freemasons 1–13, 16–18, 21, 26, 30, 36, 46
Guilded elite, Guilds of London Institute, Guildhall 11, 20

H

Hale Case 167
Hall, Clara (1825–95) 150
Hallett, William, PC, Y Division 24
hallmarks of Colonising Communism 143
Handy, Thomas, General, Acting Army Chief of Staff in Washington, 190–91
hanged for a sheep as a lamb 2, 6
Harbor Tug 118
Harris, Bomber 172, 177
Harrods 43
Harrow 153
Hart, Thomas C., Admiral, commander of Asiatic fleet, acting chief of Army Signal Corps 90
Hashimoto, Mochitsura, Captain 225–27
hatred could be utilised 238
Have they had any nuclear accidents? 229
Hawaii 56, 59, 67, 70, 73–78, 82–88, 92, 96–99, 104–05, 119, 182
Hay, William, Commissioner Captain 20
heavily racist America 215
hell-for-leather Kwantung Army 138
Henderson, Sir Edmund, Com. 26
Hendon Police College 52
Henry, Sir Edward R., Com. 44–46
Higgins landing boat 97
High Constables 3–4
high rate of suicide amongst police 45
high-society muse 162–64
hindered crime-solving 25

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hirohito, Emperor 96, 190–1
Hiroshima 86, 173, 192–99, 211–14, 225, 228–29
historical accusations read out over Coms as convictions 31
historical novelist 153
historiography 244
History of 10,000 Ton Gadget 214, 221–22
Hitler 37, 40, 50, 55, 58, 60, 63, 70, 119–23, 151–53, 157–58, 166, 169–72, 181–86, 200–01
Hitler lackey King Edward VIII 169
Hitler was stopped. Alive but stopped 200
Hitokapu Bay 57, 72
HMAS *Vampire* 97
HMS *Conqueror* 60
HMS *Repulse* 97
HMS *Tenedos* 97
Hollywood, back lot 105, 189
Holocaust/Shoah 244
Holy Roman Emperor 241
Home Secretary 11, 20, 155
homosexual wedding 39
Hong Kong 88, 120
Hoover, J. Edgar, FBI Chief, 33 degree Mason 22, 66, 68, 193
horse-riding 92
Horton, Sir Max, Admiral, Submarines 59
Horwood, Sir William, Commissioner Brigadier-General 47
hot cargo 219
House of Commons 11, 154–55, 185, 205
Houses of Parliament 20
Howsman, Charlie/Champagne Charlie 42
Hozier, Clementine Ogilvy 150–52
Hozier, Henry Montague, Sir 151
Hsinking authorities 132, 135, 141
Hull, Cordell, Secretary of State 63–65, 78–79, 89–92
human bomb 138
human bullets (nikudan) 138
hundreds of thousands of poor Jews 238
hungutz bandit techniques 129
Hunt, Jonathan, High Comm. to Britain, homosex. w. 11- and 12-year-old Indian boys, paedophile, retired due to “ill health”, noted 2 Oct. 2007 32, 38–40
hunting buddy 143
Hurd, Charles (*New York Times*) 87
hushed and rushed marriage 189
Hussein, Saddam 34, 50, 123–24
Hyde Park 17, 43
Hydrodynamic Theory of Surface Explosions 212
hydrogen bomb test in 1954 228
hypertension 125

I

I-58 225
I am strongly in favour of using poisoned gas 161
Ichi Go 133
ideology 139–40
ideology is for wankers 140
ideology replaced religion 139
ignorant drinking partners 103
Ikeda, S., Chief of Cabinet Planning Bureau 141
illegitimate 167, 192, 232–45
Illingford in 1938 166
Illuminati Big Brother security-minded speech 200
I’m a politician and I’m okay, I’ll enter war and run the world one day 154
improbabilites in war 224
incarceration incineration 22
incendiary bombs 161, 166, 176, 219
incinerate evidence 54
including gossip 122
Indians’ hatred of the British is carried in silence to this day 169
Indochina 70, 96–97
Industrial Revolution 4–6
inferior force 128, 142
innocent bystanders convicted 3
inside job, another Pearl Harbor, another 9-11 221
Inspectors 15, 24
insubordination 220
insurgents in Iraq 223
intelligence-induced propaganda bedtime stories 129
intelligence assets in Chinese theatre 130
intelligence blackout 85
Intelligence Involved Coup (I2C, eyes too see) 60, 99
International Bankers 127, 132, 144, 145
international car theft rings 4, 41

IRA, bomb-making prowess, courtesy of RAF Engineering & Ordnance 54
Irish Free State 162
Irish genealogy had been degraded 162
Iron Curtain 184, 200–01
Iroquois Indian 163
IRS hot on his heels 68
Islamic mosques run by KGB/Mossad dummies 140
Israel 122
Irving, David, denied Holocaust in 1989 180
Italian Axis 69, 120
Italian fascism 166

J

J-19 diplomatic codes 78, 83, 90, 101–02
J'accuse! 28
Jack, Roy, Sir 39
Jack the Ripper 25–27, 37
James II 167
Japanese 56–59, 63–106, 110–21, 125
Japanese Foreign Minister Togo 96
Japanese IGHQ 137
Japanese Intelligence estimated 136
Japanese mistress and child living in Kyoto 192
Japanese Peace Plan 190
Japan lacked oil, iron and cotton 64
Jap Zero fighters 106
Jeffries, Hanging Judge, invented mass death sentences 167
Jennings, Sarah, attendant to Princess Anne 167
Jerome, Jennie 150, 154, 164–66, 187
Jerome, Leonard Walter (1817–91) 149–50, 164–65
Jerome Park Racetrack 150
jewellery to his mistresses 162
Jewish Hitler 142
Jewish laundress/drudge/divorcée 235
Jew Meyer, Chief of the 7 Families 203
Jews 233–39, 242–45
jildi jumping bags 159
Johnston Island 97
journalist 201
JRS utility plane 116
Justice of the Peace, Peace Guild, area paedophile minders 3–8, 12–15, 157
'Justifiable Homicide' 13

K

K-XVII 59–60, 73, 98
'K's a short-arm inspector' 160
Kagoshima Bay 71
Kai-shek, Chiang (Jiang Jieshi) 138
Kaiten manned torpedo 225
Kalaiken Gul 130
Kalinin 148
Kaneohe 112
Kantogun 129
kata kana coded messages 56
Kennedy, John F. 226
Kennington Common 19
Kent, Tyler 62
kept from ravages of trench warfare 157
Ketchum, Carlton, Colonel 66
Keynes, John Maynard, *The Economic Consequences of Mr. Churchill* 166
Khomuridze, Petre 231
Khota Baru 98
Khruchev 131
KIA 110, 119
kibbutz 239
killed many actors by cancer 189
killer of trees 192
killing Britain's Tavistock rebel protégé Joseph V. Stalin 202
Kimmel, Husband E., Admiral 65–66, 73, 76–84, 88–95, 99–103, 109–10, 121
'King's Yids', Jews of Ottoman Empire, became Stern Gang 155
King Charles I 205
King Edward's "loose box" 154
King Edward VII's biological son 145
King Edward VII, sexual relations with his own daughter 187
King Edward VII, 1902 coronation 45
King George I 21, 168
King George VI 21, 169, 201–02
King George VI's doctor 202
King John 32
King Louis Philippe of France 241
Kipling, Rudyard 204
Kirk, Alan G., Captain, Director of Office of Naval Information 80
Kirk, Captain 82, 100
Kita message 78, 95
Kitchener, Horatio Herbert, Lord, GCSI, Conqueror of Sudan 155, 158, 166–68
knife and fork 19

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Knight of the Garter (KG), 'trading in countries' fortunes' 205
Knox, Frank, Secretary of Navy 66, 74, 81, 89, 100
Koba 231, 237, 241
Kokura, now part of Kitakyushu 192, 195
Konoye, Fumimaro, Prime Minister 64
    Konoye government 78
Korean War blew up out of nowhere (1950–53) 202
Kramer, Alwyn D., Commander 79–80, 90
Kreigschule (War School) protégés 185
Kuomintung 138
Kurile Islands 72, 87, 197–98
Kurr, William 22–23
Kurusu 91
Kwantung Army 128–45, 186, 197–98
Kwantung Army Air Force 137
Kwantung Army Guide for the Defence of the Manchurian-Soviet-Mongolian Borders 135
Kyoto 192

L

'L Detachment' of embroyonic SAS 61
'Little Boy' atomic bomb 194, 214
'Little Boy', 'Fat Boy', 'Fat Chance' 144
'Love you long time' 230
Lake Baikal in Siberia 132
Lancashire Rifles 155
Lancaster 157, 175
lap dance or other shame 221
largest mutiny in US history 220
largest stateside disaster of WWII 209
leading Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonist of his times 182
Lea Francis 38
League of Nations, reps. took bribes daughter is the United Nations 142
leaked classified document 221
Legion of Honour 28
Lend-Lease 141
Lend-Lease equipment 132–33
Lenin 37, 145, 148
Lévi, Sylvain, anti-Zionist 241
liar's paradise 236, 239
Lieutenant Colonel (Temporary) in command of 6th Battalion (Service) Royal Scots Fusiliers (RSF) 157
Langtry, Lillie, the first 'porn star' 154
Lindley, Ernest (*Newsweek*) 87
Livery Company 8, 46–47
Liverymen 47
London 58, 62, 87, 96, 101, 123
London Fire Brigade 166
long-range sabotage programme 220
looting after air raids was endemic 49
Lord Mayor of London 22
Lord President of the Council 202
Los Alamos, scientists 211–15, 218–22, 227
lost nuclear bomb over Japan 184
loyal service (toadies) 168
Luftwaffe downed 171
Lusitania 63, 87, 122
Lying in court is standard practice amongst Freemasons 30

M

M 60
MacArthur, General 202
machine-guns 155, 166
MAD 202
made slaves of families 6
Mafia 21
Mafia (Stalin) 171
Mafia's heroin run through Monaco to America 203
Magic Operations 91, 100, 101, 125
Magic Roundabout 29, 48–49, 251
Magister Magistrorum, Master Mason 149, 154, 162, 186
Magna Carta 32
Malaya 56, 89, 96–98, 120
Malinovsky 135
Malta 132, 135
Man of Steel 237
Manchukuo 128
Manchuria 62, 129, 132–39, 197–98
Manchurian orphan 138
Manhattan District History 212
Manhattan Project 192, 194, 198
manipulative writing skills 153
    unarguable language 167
Mann Act 68
manufacturing heroism 158
Mare Island 214, 220
Mariana Islands 132, 211, 214
Marie Antoinette manners 236
Marine Fighter Squadron of Wildcats 97

Marine Police 10, 18
Mark, Robert, Commissioner 51
Marlborough: His Life and Times 167
married to a fascist 151
Marshall, George Catlett, General 66, 74, 82–95, 99–103, 141
  ensured Pearl Harbor bombed 182–83
Marshall Islands 116
Marshall Plan for recovery of Europe 182
Martin, Frederick L., General 76
Marx, Karl 131
Masonic life 153
mass-murder-and-treason 121
mass communism in realms of freedom, culture and family 206
mass murderer 201–03
mass slaughter 134, 138
massive social engineering 144
Master Mason 149, 187
Master of Mercers Company 11
Matthias, Ludwig 62
Maui 67
Mauser pistols 129
Maxwell, Robert 239
Mayne, Richard, Sir, Commissioner 12, 44
Mazzini, Giuseppe 21
McCarthy, Joseph, Senator 103, 182–83
McCollum, Arthur N., Commander 76, 92, 100
McNaught, Anita's Holy Jihad Brigade – another Israeli construct 123
McVay, Charles Butler III, Captain 226
Meikeljohn, John, Inspector 22–24
Meladze, Katerine 'Keke' 231–33, 237
melt human flesh 176
Men, dwarfs in height, and old in years 3
'Men, Mines & Animals in South Africa' 165
Mercer's City Corporation, two-thirds financial control of police 11
Mercers' Guild 16
Mercers 2–3, 8, 11–15, 19–20, 26, 30, 36–37, 41, 46
Merlin engines fitted into Spitfires 170
Messines, church sheltered Corporal Adolf Hitler 157
Met Forensic Science Laboratory 43
Metropolitan Air Support Unit 43
Metropolitan Police 1, 8, 11–26, 32–39, 43–46, 49–51
Metropolitan Police Act (June 1829) 11
Metropolitan Police Comm. (MPC) 35
MI-5 50, 54
MI-5 safehouse in London 123
MI-6 50, 67
mid-aged universe 199
Middle East peace talks 238–39
Middleton, William George 'Bay', Capt. 151
Midway Island 97, 120
Miles, General Sherman, Chief of Military Intelligence 95
Military Intelligence in Hawaii 119
military observer, Spy who writes publicly 155
Military Observer in Brazil 95
military arm of the Freemasons 154
Minelayer 118
miraculous lack of resemblance 165
misleading verbiage 93
misogynistic homosexual 232
Mission Bay 42
Mitford, Diana 'Cimmie' 153
Mitford sisters 151–52
Mitford, Unity Walkrie 153
Mitsubishi Karigane Mk.II 111
mockery of Charlemagne Award 182
model used for 9-11 attack on Twin Towers 83
Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact 201
Molotov cocktails 138
monarchy buys sycophancy with metal and silk 46
Mongolian border, Guangdong, China, human experimentation 144
monitoring station, Fort Hunt, Virginia 79
Monro, James, Commissioner 26
Montgomery, Hugh 22
Monty Python 9
morality charges, moral reprobate 193
more women than a toilet seat 153
Morotai in the Moluccas 134
Morris, Billy 170
Morrish, Reginald, Chief Inspector 52
Moscow 130
Mossad 122
Mosley, Diana 'Cimmie' née Mitford, Lady 152
Mosley, Oswald, founded and led British Union of Fascists 153
Mosley, Tom and Diana née Mitford 152
most powerful single man in post-war Europe 141, 186
most valued commodity stolen from them – Freedom 203
Mother Trimble, called everyone "Duck" 168
mother was a slapper 152
mountains of corpses 179
Mount Niitika Yama Nabore 97
'mouse trap' 77, 99, 120
movie for military and fantasists 200
MS5 83, 102
Municipal Corporations Act 14
murder/compliance 182, 205–06
Murdoch, Rupert 239
Murrell, Hilda 60
mushroom 209, 214
Muslims 100
Mustangs 177
my father was the King of England 185

N

Nagasaki 173, 192, 195–99
Nagoa Kita 77–78, 98
Nagumo, Chuichi, Japanese Vice-Admiral 56–57, 79, 88, 97, 116
naïve media support 239
NAP (not a problem) 54
Napoleon III 241
National Archives 73, 95
National Automated Fingerprint Identification System 36
National Aviation Hall of Fame 194
national scandal for Britain 27
National Socialists filled the void of toppled monarchies 246
Nazi threat 166
nervous breakdown 80
Neutrality Pact 139
Nevada 97, 112, 118, 126, 209
never lifted a finger for peace 152
New Scotland Yard 24–25,33,45
New World Order's 'International Day of Shame' 174
New World Order, tax for peace, social control, profit 132
New York Times 149, 165
NHI (No Humans Involved) 223
Nichol, Bromfield, Tactical Officer Lieutenant-Commander 107, 109
Night Watch 1–3
Nightingale, Florence 168
Niigata 192, 198
Nimitz, Chester W., Fleet Admiral 110
nitrate-based film 214–15
NKVD 62
NKVD/KGB, perpetual 2IC of UN 145, 246
'No, you kill them' 172
Nobel Peace Prize 182
Nobel Prize for Literature 203–05
no constraints that required morality 189
Noddy 47–48
no intention for peace in Israel 239
Nomonhan 138
Nomura, Kichisaburo, Admiral 64, 91
Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonists 172, 200, 205–06
Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising protégé Adolf Hitler 157
Norman, Montague, mystery financial champion of Nazi Party 166
'North Wind Cloudy' (war on Russia) 90
Norwegian territorial waters 69
not nuclear 219
not politically correct 236
Noyes, Leigh, Rear Admiral, Navy Director of Coms 92–94
NTOs (Non-Traceable Ops) 198
nuclear bomb 184, 189, 198–99
nuclear explosion 209–10, 215, 218, 228
Nuremberg 152
Nuremberg Trials 179–81
NWO 25

O

Oahu 76, 79, 95, 104–05
Oakes, Harry, Sir 87
Ober, Warren 101
occult hit of gargantuan proportions 177
Occult Mafia hit 199
occult practices 37
occult sanctuaries 184
October Revolution 82
Oder-Neisse line, border between Poland & Germany 186
Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) 83
Ogg, Robert 73
Ogilvy, Blanche Henrietta, Lady, daughter of 7th Earl of Airlie 150

Espavo Soze - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Old Bailey 23–24
in camera (no spectators) 62
Oldham 155
Old Jewery (area of central London) 26
old sodomite running the FBI 193
oligarchy 85
Olive, Sir James, Commissioner 22
on the take, 'receiving the drop',
'taking backhanders', 'on the square',
'on the level' 23–24, 51
One World Government 200
only accept reality
once accomplished for them 170
only nuclear bombing of
sovereign country and its people 125
Onassis, Aristotle, Chief of Mafia 202
Op BARBAROSSA 158
Operation JAMES BOND 58
Operation SUBEND 58, 60, 87
Operation WINNIE THE POOH 58
Oppenheimer, Robert, J., Dr 198, 227
Order of Merit (OM) 206
Order of the Crown of India
(women only) 168–69
Order of the Indian Empire 168–69
Order of the Star of India 168
order out of chaos
15, 18, 21, 34–37, 45, 85, 206
order through chaos 28
order, 'Nordic-Anglo-Saxon Freemasonry
Communist Colonisation' 206
Ottoman pashas 242
Otway, Sergeant 18
out-of-focus hammer and sickle 143
Overseers of the Poor 5
oxygen was sucked 176

P

PA-K2 diplomatic codes 83, 101–02
Pacific War prophet 86
paedophile 14–15, 32, 35–39
paedophile non-Jews bribed to assist 177
paedophiles promoted for mutual cover 38
palanquin 236–37
Palau in the Carolines 134
Palestine, land 234, 238–39, 242–44
Palestine Exploration Fund, London 243
Palestine Jewish Colonization Agency
(PICA) 243
Palmer, William, Chief Inspector 22–24
pan-Europeanism 200
Pan-European Movement 181–83
paper tiger (colossal bluff) 128, 133, 144
parachute 194–95
Paris Gestapo 67
parishes 1, 5, 8
Paris House of Rothschild 242
Parish Rate 5–6
parish workhouses 4
Parlimentary Army 168
Parsons, William J., Captain 212–14, 227
Rear Admiral 228
part of the Craft 51
'Patsy' 187–89
pay high taxes to buy peace from
International Bankers 144
PC stands for Paedophile Country 32
peace, freedom and culture 143
Peace Guild 1–3, 8
Peace is an uneasy subject 144
peacetime, everywhere America isn't 145
Peach, Blair,
training as Special Needs teacher 39
Pearl Harbor 55–106, 109–10, 117–22,
125–27, 130, 134, 139–41, 144
peasant 231
pea soup 205
Peace is preservation of another country's
social structure 131
Peace: "No resistance to Communism" 131
Peel, Robert, Home Secretary 11
peerage 202
Penal Code 2
Pentagon 192, 229–30
persuading prisoners to
confess to crimes not committed 52
Petty Constables (PC) 3, 6, 8, 13
Philip V of Spain 168
Philippines 56, 69, 104, 120, 137, 225
Phillips, Admiral 96
Phillips, Mark, Captain, 'Dusty Fog' 153
phoenix from the ashes 138
phoenix of Japan 144
photographic blame 185
phrenology, superstition,
prejudice and class distinction 33
pile of shit 204
pinch or shout 53
Pirate Captain Temporary,
President George W. Bush 192
Planet of the Apes 177
Plattsburg 109
plausible deniability 128, 140
plethora of confused parentage 163
plethora of high and low crimes 15
Ploegsteert Wood, sector of Ypres Salient,
aka 'Tommies of Plug Street' 157–58
Plus Programme 34
Poland 61
Poles 162, 185–86
police 'wooden tops' 47
police constantly trying to fit crimes 31
police assume guilt 29
police creating 80% of all crime
intergenerationally 25
police employ people to drive police cars
to increase their apparent miles 40
police from Australia/NZ
stole their own cars 41
police have been repeatedly
convicted of fraud 4
police lie in Court 29
policeman beaten by the public 13
Police Marine Support Unit 10
police posturing 37
police PR department
between media and public 37
police spend forever stealing files 34
police tradition of building
illegal structures 41
Policing Pledge for Londoners 36
Polish government in exile 186
Political Correctness 21, 32–37, 48
Political Correct socialists
(Metropolitan Police Committee) 37
political fame 164
Poor House 4–8, 11
Poor Relief Act 8
Poor Tax 4–10
Popov, Dusko 67–68
Port Chicago, 35 miles northeast
of San Francisco 209–29
Port Chicago/Concord 209, 214
Post-War black propaganda 179
post-war carve-up 174
post WWII carve-up 186
posthumous Masonic influence 149, 154
potbelly, narrow shoulders & false teeth 233
Potsdam Conference (17 July–2 Aug. 1945)
132, 135, 139–40, 174, 185, 189–91
'Potus': President of the United States 61
pouch 61
Powell, Carroll A., Colonel 102
Powell, Paulus Prince, Rear Admiral 74–75
PR 13, 25, 36–37
Precision Saturation Bombing 176
pregnant 163–64, 189
President Consistoire de Paris 243
pressure phase and suction phase 218
Prince 'Bertie' Edward 162, 164, 187, 189
Prince of Pless, HSH Hans Heinrich XV,
Jan Henryk XV Von Hochberg
of Pszczyna 187–88
Prince of Steel 238
Prince 'Tax' Rainier 203
Prince Yakov (James) Egnatashvili
232–34, 237, 240
Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless 188–89
Prisons of the Poor 6
Profit at the cost of human lives 206
Project Y 212, 221
prolific rooter,
plethora of illegitimate children 32
prone to conceiving illegit. children 235
prone to drunkenness
with methylated spirits 47
proud tradition of the police 3
proxy British Intelligence Agents 186
Przhevalsky, Nikolai 232
psychological testing 222
psychological warfare 176
Pszczyna (Pless),
just outside of Warsaw, Poland 188
public demand honesty 25
public opinion 57
publicly peaceful/privately warring
President Roosevelt 89
pulsing neon sign 199
Purnell, W. R., Rear Admiral 227
Purple code machine 56, 78, 83–84, 90,
97–102
Putin, Vladimir 236

Q

Queen Frederika of Greece 49
Queen Victoria, ugly 234
Queen Wilhelmina 59
questions over Winston's parentage 162
Quinalt Victory 210–14, 218–19, 222

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

R

radar 104
Radford, Arthur W., Admiral 110
Radio Telegraphy/Marconi telegraph 10
RAF failed to follow up on crashes of "The Few" 171
Rainbow 5/WPL 46/WPPac46 63
Raleigh 112, 118
Ramsay, DeWitt C., Admiral 110
Ranneft, Captain, Dutch naval attaché 73
Rape & Destruction of countries' social structures & resources 142
rarely photographed together 165
rascals 1
rebelled 13
rebellion within army of occult 177
regular attenders 51
Reichschancellory 169
reign of terror 128
Repair Ship 118
repeating history 202
residual radiation 222
resignation (due to health) 202
résumé 184–85
retarded 195
retroactively reclassified 222
reversed the order at any time 191
revetments 223
Richardson, James O., Admiral, commander of Pacific fleet 76–77, 99, 110
Richfield Oil Co tanker *Pat Doheny* 106
Richter scale 209
riot 1, 3, 7–8, 14–19, 34, 41–43
River Elbe 176–77
Roberts Commission 90
Rochefort, Joseph J., Commander 57, 66, 101–02
Rockefeller's Standard Oil 234
'Rogues Gallery' 26
role is misery 34
role model for homo marriage, cuckolded each other for 30 years 31
Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis 63
Roosevelt, Franklin D., Pres. (Freemason) 57, 61–67, 71–91, 99–103, 114, 119–25, 131, surreptitiously killed 142–44, 148, 171–74, 181–86, 193–94, 200–01
root anything with money or status 163
Rothermere, Lord 87
Rothschilds 128, 233, 237
Rothschilds, Baron 164
Rothschild conception of Stalin 234
Rothschild, Edmond de, Baron 234–44
Rothschild, James de 236, 240–42, 245
Rothschild, Lionel Walter 243
Rothschild, Mayer Amschel 240
Rothschild, Nathan Mayer 164, 187
Rothschild, Victor, 2BR, stole nuclear programme from Los Alamos 198, fifth man in Cambridge Five 221
Rowan, Charles, Sir 12
Royal Air Force and Dresden airmen were ashamed 177
Royal biscuit tin 145
Royal Commission, Private Manufacture and Trading in Arms 156
Royal Green Jacket Regiment 37
Royal Military Academy 165
Royal Military College at Sandhurst 154
royalty ticket 42
Rural Constabulary Act 16
Russia, monster-without-monarchy 200
Russian-Japanese Pearl Harbor 144
Russian accounts are quite detailed 197
Russian Civil War 162
Russian military 236
Russian politics 234–36, 239
Russian propaganda 141
Russian Red Army 132
Russian revolutionaries 44
Russo-American coalition 132

S

saboteur channels 84
sadomasochist group sex 25
Sadtler, Otis K., Colonel 90
Safford, Laurance F., Commander 90
Saigon 96–97
Salon Kitty, version on outskirts São Paulo, Brazil, another in Portugal 54
Sandhurst 154–55
San Diego 76, 97
San Francisco 56, 73–75, 92, 118, 199, 209, 213–14, 228–29
saturation bombing 174
Scandinavia 69
scapegoat 121, 226–27
schizophrenics 15, 51

Esayo Soza - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

science of Judaism 243–44
scot-free 3
Scott, Hunter 227
Scotland Yard Freemasons' stronghold 11, 18, 23–26, 33, 45, 51–52
Seaplane Tender 118
Sea Power in the Pacific 55, 86
Second Lieutenant in 4th Hussars cavalry 155
Second Police Reserve (untrained undisciplined civilian volunteers) 46
Secretary-General of United Nations 40
Secretary of State for the Colonies 162
Secret Police files in St Petersburg 146
secret press briefing 87–88
security thru war is no security at all 205
Sefarades, Arabic-speaking Jewish natives 242
self-sabotage 57, 66, 80–83, 87, 93, 101, 107–09, 115, 122
self-sabotaging sperm 151
separation of 500–1000 nautical miles 120
Serious Crime Squad 25
set off under test conditions 218
seven easiest days of WWII battle 145
sex-criminal specifically paroled 60
sex clubs on Tuesday nights, Hobson St 41
sexual indiscretions and alcoholism 32
sexually-deviant shame 239
sexually deviant UN workers 143
sexual relations with his own daughter 187
shagging his NKVD interpreter 62
shame 233–34, 239
shark-infested waters 225
sharpened bamboo spears 129
Shaw, George Bernard 204
Shaw, Norman 25
Sheffield 156
Shelley, Norman 171
sheoples to the slaughter 174
Sherrod, Robert (*Time*) 87
ship girls lurk around whenever anything was going down 41
Ship Harbour, Argentia, Newfoundland 171
Shoah/Holocaust 245
Short, Walter C., General 65–66, 74, 79, 82–84, 88–95, 99–102, 121
Shrove Tuesday (13 February 1945) 174
'Shut the fuck up' 37
'shut up or face death by firing squad' 166
Siam 97
Siberia 132, 135, 147
'side of mutton being hiffed on me' 42
side with fascism, colonise to communism and keep our reputation clean 206
Sidney Street Siege 16, 44, 155, 162
Simpson, Wallis 62, 165
Singapore 63, 69–70, 85, 96–97
sinopause 200
six-year-old's tea party 129
slang of Ploegsteert trenches 158
Slater, Harold (International News Service) 88
slavery of the poor 6
Slim, Lord 130
slippery nature of deniability in war 134
smallpox 231
Smith, Bob, Senator, New Hampshire 227
Smith, Walter Bedell, Colonel (Marshall's secretary) 91–92
smoke and mirrors 198
smoke signal right across universe 199
Spaatz, Carl, Lieutenant General 190–91
'Square' 166
social engineering was rife, 51
of the entire world 132
socio-economic system 8
sodomise him and film it every week 68
sodomy apart 168
Softly Softly 50
solo-mothers 32
sophisticated niece/wife Betty 241
Sōryū (Kyūjitai) 112
South Africa
Cape Colony, Transvaal & Rhodesia 165
South Korea 137
Spain 142
Special Constables 17, 46
Special Constabulary used when crime to be solved 46
Special Operations Executive (SOE) 171
Special Patrol Group of the Met Police 39
special relationship with US 202
speeches 170–71, 203
Spencer Churchill 153
Spencer, Rudolph H. 149, 153
sphere of influence 186, 201
Sport 22

Spruance, Raymond A., Admiral 110
St Petersburg 146
Stalin/Iosef/Soso/Chopura/Geza/Besoshvili/Koba/Man of Steel/Prince of Steel 16, 37, 50, 127–28, 131–32, 135, 139–48, 162, 171, 174, 184–86, 190, 193, 198–202, 231–47, 251–52
Stalin, sneaky 139
Stalin's trainer, minder and 2nd cousin Winston Churchill 139
Stalin's United Nations 122
Stalin in exile in Siberia in 1915 147
Stanley, Major 42
Stark, Admiral 66, 74, 80–81, 89–92, 99–103
Stark, Harold R., Chief of Naval Operations 74
starvation-in-action 142
State of Israel 179
steal-and-blame 2
steal the appropriate files 26
steal Luftwaffe manufact. schedules 170
Stettin on the Baltic 201
Stimson, Henry, Secretary of War 66, 74, 82, 89, 190–92
Stolen Motor Vehicle Squad 41
Stolley, Roger A. 67, 74, 119
stop order 191
strafed 177
straw sandals 129, 137
stray rooting 236
Strong, George V., General 76
strongest contemp. army in world 141
sub-standard physical specimens 137
suggestions to blaze 600,000 refugees 172
suicide, labelled 'special attack' 138
Suisan Bay 209
suitcase slid to his feet 42
suppress history with raise of eyebrow 242
surveillance war 203
survived many media deaths, lives in MI-5 safehouse, London 123
sustained and "proud" marriages 163
Suzuki, Prime Minister 141, 191
swallow information just as fast 205
swarming in their police cars 40
sword from straightened truck spring 130
syphilis 149, 165

T

Task Force Z 98
tasteless food 205
taught to be cautious 51
Tavistock 149, 157–58, 169, 200–06
Tavistock bulldog 200
tax-for-peace 241
Tbilisi 231–32
tea-party cultures in field of freedom 144
Teaff, P. L., Ensign 107
Technical Paper # 6 *'Port Chicago Explosion'* 221–22
Tehran Conference (November 1943) 185
Tennessee 112
terrrorist bombing, London Tube, 07.07.2005 5 3
TESTM dispatches 88
Thailand 97
The Classification and Use of Fingerprints 44, 249
the Duke of London is dead 202
The Few 170–71
The Great Pacific War 55–56, 86
The Magic Roundabout 48–49, 251
The Professionals 50
"The Rothschild Colonization" 242
'Thieves Law' 21
third and fourth wave of planes 116–18
thunderclap of Anglo-American annihilation 174
Tibbets, Paul Warfield Jr., (23 Feb. 1915–) Brigadier General 193–94
Tigard, Oregon 119
Time magazine 103, 182
Time of Delivery message 92–94
Tinian Island 211, 214, 225, 229
tipping bowler hat to commoner 186
Tithings 1
TNT 218, 223
Tojo, Hideki, General 65
Tokyo 132
took one on the copper 233
toothless dragon 142
toothless geriatric needs thick soup 203
toothless military were occupied eating thick soup in a cold climate 203
TOP SECRET 94, 119
torpedoes 55, 71, 112
Torpex 218, 221, 223
total social control 46
Tottenham Outrage 44
touting the homosexual lifestyle to schoolchildren 40
Tower of London 20
Towers, John H., Admiral 110
toxic gas 161
Trafalgar Square 17, 34
traffic cops 8
Trans-Siberian Railroad 136
translator did not tell fully what I said 227
treason-with-complicit-pedantic-excuses 79
treason gets the medal and protest gets treason 81
Treaty of Versailles 162
'Tricycle'/'Disco' 67
Trieste on the Adriatic 201
Tripartite Pact 69, 119–20
Trotsky 37
truck-spring swords 138
Truman, President 131, 144, 184–94
  posted highest post-European war kill 198–202
Truman, 'true by name, not by nature' 192
trump card 174
Tudor system 1
Tungî, Siaosi Tãufa'āhau Tupoulahi, King of Tonga 41–42
Turf Fraud Scandal 22–24
Turkish Artillery 156
Turks were all stoned on hashish 155
Turner, Richmond Kelly, Admiral, chief of Naval War Plans, arrogant, conceited 80, 100
Twin Towers 57, 83, 123, 126
Tyler, William, PC 44
typical Jewish behaviour 233

U

U-boat 169
US Army Strategic Air Forces in Pacific 190
US Customs list of practising New Zealand paedophiles (75) 39
US Government 209, 222
US Gunboat *Panay* 120
USS *Antares* 104
USS *Condor* 73
USS *Enterprise* 97
USS *Indianapolis* 97, 214, 225–26
USS *Lexington* 97
USS *Litchfield* 106
USS *Nevada* 97, 118, 126
USS *Oklahoma* 97, 118
USS *Ommaney Bay* 116
USS *Saratago* 76, 97
USS *Thresher* 106
USS *Utah* 112, 118
USS *Ward* 73
UN, pillow-biters version of totalitarian communism 143
UN: UNcultured, UNpeaceful, UNfamily, UNutopian and UNfree 143
United Nations' fresh-mint dragon 143
United Nations 244–46
United Nations is all arse 143
Ukraine 162
Umezu, Yoshijiro, commanding general of Kwantung Army 134
uneasy link between peace & taxes 144
untermenschem (people not considered worthy of living) 172
uranium/U-235 194, 212, 228
urge-and-opportunity 236
Utopia . . . Peace, Freedom & Culture 131

V

van Dyke, Hartford 73–75
van Dyke, Mason, Army Intelligence Officer 74–75
Vanderbilt, William Kissam 149
verballing – lying by the police 2, 29
Vickers-Armstrong 156
victim, witness to their own demise 31
victim units (gisei-butai) 138
Victory 210–14, 218–19, 222, 229
Vienna already sufficiently neurotic and fascist 201
Vietnam with French Foreign Legion 181
Vincent, Howard 24
visual madness (tics and stinks) 3
vote for every £50 of land he owned 8
Vsailevsky 135
vultures then escaped from the zoo 177

W

Wailing Wall 243
Wake Island 97, 116, 120
Waldron, John, Commissioner 51
walk-in-the-park 129

Espavo So - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Walker, Ron, Detective Constable 52
wandering Arabs 239
wandering Jews 239
wandering wife 165
Wandsworth 10
Wapping 10
war-in-peacetime depopulation 200
War is the theft of their resources 131
war-makers 119–120
War's napoo while Church is here 159
War and Peace, Freedom and Culture 131
war makes colonisation easy 206
Warm Springs 80, 125
warmonger 125, 207
Warner, John, Senator, chairman of Senate Armed Services Committee 227
Warsaw 130
Warsaw, Berlin, Prague, Vienna, Budapest, Belgrade, Bucharest and Sofia 201
Warren, Sir Charles, Commissioner 26
Washington DC 55–57, 63–68, 74–93, 99–03
Washington Disarmament Treaty 55, 86
Wehr, Carl 223
Wehrmacht 158
Weishaupt, Adam 122
Weizmann, Chaim, Israel's first president 243
Wellington Free Ambulance 42
West Point graduate 99
West Virginia 112, 118
West Wind Clear (war on Gt. Britain) 90
Western Front 156–58
Western Media Construct (WMC) 123
Western Union 92
Westminster College, Fulton, Missouri 201
Westminster, London 156, 201
Wharf Police 41
where's my cigar 185
whip up a crowd 233
Whitehall 156
Whitehall Mystery 25–27
White House 79
White man 89
white propaganda 172
WIA 119
Wilkes riots of 1768 8
Williamson, Frederick, Superintendent 23
Wilson Declaration of 1919, "the right of people to self-determination" 244
Wilson, Lyle (United Press) 87
Wilson, Woodrow, President 99
'Winds Execute' message 90
wine merchant 232–40
wink, as in hoodwink 125
Winnie, Operation WINNIE THE POOH to remove Hitler out of Berlin 171
witness items 244
Wolkoff, Anna 62
Wolkoff, Nikolai, Russian naval attaché 62
'wood' 32
Woom Everest 165
workhouses 4
worldwide depression 166
worldwide surveillance 198
worst decisions of his life 166
worst man-made killing of all time 174
wrong side of treason 182
WWII 37, 50–51, 156, 161, 166, 169–74, 177–86, 192, 194, 198–03, 206
WWII's leading killer 184
WWII was cancelled 238
WWIII 122–25, 144, 238

X

XX-Committee 67–68

Y

"Y" 230
Yalta Conference (4–11 February 1945) 132, 135, 174, 186, 201–02
Yamada, Otozo, General, Kwantung Army Commander-in-Chief 134, 140
Yamamoto, Isoroku, Admiral 56, 76, 103
yacht *Christina* 202
Yeats, W. B. 204
Yoshikawa, Takeo 56
Young, Howard Leyland "Brigham", US Navy Pilot, Lt.Cdr., Commanding Officer 105–16
Young Marshal 138

Z

Z Cars 50
Zeppelins 37
Zhukov 131
zig-zag, failing to 59, 107, 226–27
Zionist Sokolov 241
Zola, Emile 28
Zhukov, Giorgiy, Marshal 130

Espavo Soze - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Notes: New Zealand

Chief Justice Sian Elias is a thief, a slapper,
a Sayanim Mossad agent, and a contract killer.

Judge Hole has syphilis.

Brian Edwards is a paedophile. He wrote Prime Minister Helen Clark's biography, ***HELEN, Portrait of a Prime Minister***, 2001.

"This is a remarkable story of courage and endurance, the story of an exceptional woman told by one of New Zealand's most respected and enduring broadcasters and journalists. Brian Edwards has been close to the epicentre of power since the late 1960s, when his subject's political odyssey was beginning. His authoritative account is the first book to be published on Helen Clark and will provide the indispensable foundation for any future biography." In 2006, Helen Clark was ranked 20th in 'The Forbes 100 Most Powerful Women'.[1]

Brian Edwards is a bisexual and a paedophile. He was first caught in bed with a 12-year-old girl at Messines Road in Karori, Wellington in 1971. He was caught in bed with another 12-year-old girl at 21 Salamanca Road in Kelburn, Wellington, in 1981, and was evicted soon after, for unpaid rent. The 12-year-old girl was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate. Brian Edwards has chicken legs and a neckline that resembles a rooster. He has a PhD in Franz Kafka, which creates a riddle of law and international politics, and a society where the innocent are convicted and the guilty are let of scot-free.

Helen Clark is a KGB operative and tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand's Taupo, working in conjunction with the Zionist Vladimir Putin, who lived in Wellington posing as a fisheries inspector (1980–82). This was done under cover of a Nuclear Free Zone. Much of this was published in the *New Zealand Truth* on 22 March 2007, and none of it has been answered. Helen's 'friends' are now beginning to ask questions.

---

[1] *Forbes Asia*, 18 Sept. 2006. Forbes is a Zionist rag that supports such Jewish rogues as Robert Maxwell (aka Jan Ludvik Hoch) and Rupert Murdoch, who kidnaps his own staff to make the news; and such KGB agents as Helen Clark, who was complicit in the same kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni, as was Anita McNaught, Olaf Wiig's wife.

The Jews are not good rulers of the planet. They bred the Jewish leaders of WWII, hid their Jewish secret society origins and then used them to kill Jews in order to create a state of Israel. Ever since, Israel has been a Mecca for war, peace frauds, oil thefts, insurance jobs (9-11), international designer drug rings, and political-psychological sex-rings.

The sexual and psychological training of Western leaders has led to such control of governments, voting has become a complete waste of time, disguised, rather badly, as free choice.

This has resulted in a One World Order where entire economies are controlled by globalisation, where stock and financial markets are rigged – the Jews again – either to retain or replace the current leader of a country.

The British Police are constantly fitting people up for crimes that they, or their secret society, committed. The British Police then colonised the planet with their methods and now police everywhere routinely fit up their citizens – especially when they have spoken out.

Hitler, Stalin, Churchill and the British Monarchy were all related. They were all Jews, and all a subset of the Rothschild family. The famous five then went about migrating Jews through pogroms, and killing Jews under the guise of war. As planned, this created enough public sympathy to be given a country. Israel has been at war ever since and has provided the mechanisms and arms for most international conflicts from 1948 – with the Rothschilds creating the conflicts from the 1840s.

The media has become an exercise in lying to the public. The Jews control the media and the people in it. Through media lies the Jews have presented themselves as a meek peace-creating people. The opposite is true. The Jews are the biggest warmongers on the planet. They control the finances, the media, monarchies, governments, drugs, the sex industry and the financial markets – but principally they control the US Government to such a degree that America's international policy is Israel's domestic policy.

So why is Henry Kissinger, the Jewish mass murderer of some 50 million people, in the White House, and why has he remained unchallenged for four decades? A little background on inside jobs might help. Let's start with the British Police, Pearl Harbor and a nuclear test in San Francisco.

ISBN 978-0-473-12247-8

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN

HALLETT
&
SPYMASTER

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 12:10 am on June 11, 2019

Growing Up International Part Five: Ages ten to twelve

I am writing these autobiographical articles to help others understand how some international occultic societies program their members. The information in the articles is specific to the group I was raised in, but many of the methods described are used by other groups.

Trigger Warning: this article contains graphic descriptions of trauma and programming setups

By age ten, most children raised at the facility are quite accomplished in various areas, including training (they are at an age where they now develop their own training plans for others, and can work independently in most areas); and are able to do fairly advanced military exercises.

These years are basically used to build upon the previous skills learned, and to provide increasing opportunities to work independently in preparation for entering adult roles, which occurs at age 12 or 13, when they become full fathers in the order.

The scenarios and challenges given are increasingly complex, and the child will begin multi-tasking. Computer and hacking skills are now at an advanced level as well. While formal schoolwork is done, it is increasingly supplemented by more advanced practical skills in areas, such as:

- Performing surgery, including fetal transplants (assisting at first, then developing the ability to do so over time)
- Prenatal programming interventions
- Monitoring and evaluating baselines and outcomes for infants and children being programmed in the labs, and developing individualized training plans for review by the adult trainers, as well as problem-solving
- Increasing complex field missions, ranging from infiltration, to gathering intelligence
- Overseeing other children, and modeling skills and tasks
- Acting in increasingly complex roles in the programming labs (e.g., dressing in a specific role such as Lillith or Bel, and then combining this acting role with ongoing evaluation of how the child being programmed is responding to their script

Follow •••

- Helping to develop new technology or designer drugs with adult mentors drawing from fields that include chemistry, organic chemistry, neurobiology and others
- Dimensional travel (to the 12th and 13th dimensions) and advanced mage skills

The above are just a few examples of the skills that the children develop during the preteen years. They also increase on baseline athletic skills, with daily martial arts, sparring, and use of weapons, as well as the ongoing military exercises.

By the age of twelve, the child is considered ready (or almost ready, there is some variance between children) to step into their adult role. The long-anticipated “coming of age” ceremony, and the receiving of a full father’s black robes to replace the brown acolyte’s robe will occur.

All of the children at the facility, as well as selected leadership from the other 12 international occultic groups, come to the initiation into full fatherhood ceremony (note: females as well as males are are given male names in the order, and are addressed as “father” after completing this rite). This is the ceremony in which the child Anthony becomes “Father Anthony”.

The initiation ceremony begins early in the morning (at dawn), at a private location where an arena is located. The circular arena is surrounded by seats, where the various leadership in the groups sit. Each section will have the group banner displayed overhead, and there are canopies to help protect from the hot sun. The young father-to-be has been carefully instructed over the last year on what is expected, and how to perform their role. In the center of the arena are 1000 golden poles, with individuals of varying ages, from infancy to young adulthood tied. The group of fathers-to-be will spend the day killing them all with special golden knives, in a mass sacrifice that initiates them into the order.

Because it is hot, and the work becomes difficult, they are allowed to drink from golden bowls that contain wine during the day. At first, the infants and young children set up a wail and a cry that is chilling, but gradually ,as the day goes on, silence slowly overtakes both children and young adults. As a sacrifice is completed, a portion of blood is collected in a special bowl, and taken to an altar at the center of the field (dedicated to Satan, called “Theo” or ‘god’ by the members of the order).

By the end of the day, the young initiates are exhausted, and weary in both body and soul; the wine does not numb the pain and awful, soul-deadening effect quite enough. Some of the initiates stagger, or even fall, from this weight; but they are expected to rise and continue without assistance, or they will be unable to receive their ordination. Most do, but occasionally one will fail to be able to. The other initiates are under orders to kill the one who fails and does not rise within 15 minutes to continue.

Finally, as the sun begins to fall in the west, the ordeal is over. The killings and sacrificial offerings are completed, and the young initiates present themselves to the council. They are then blessed, take the oath of obedience and loyalty, and are given their father’s robes. They have spent the day conducting sacrifices to show their complete obedience and loyalty to satan, and to bringing in his plan for the world. The members of the council greet the new fathers with a kiss and embrace, and then they are honored at a special banquet attended by the top leaders of the other societies, as well as the leadership in the Order.

After the feast, the new fathers are allowed to rest. Due to the oppressive effect of conducting mass ritual slayings, the fathers are allowed several needed days to rest and recover; days spent with those they love best. Each one is praised and given special time with their main mentors and parental figures in the order as a reward for completing this difficult ceremony.

Soon, they will begin their new life as a fully adult member of the order, working in their adult role. Childhood is now considered over, and their real work will begin: to pave the way for the coming occultic messiah, and to help implement a world that will be ruled by him.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Growing Up International Part Four: Ages Six to Twelve	Growing Up International Part Three: Ages Three to Six	Dealing with Rewards Programming
December 29, 2018	July 29, 2018	November 5, 2018
In "healing"	In "healing"	In "healing"

stephaniekouts 8:50 am on June 14, 2019

Thank you for writing about this svali. What was it like for you to process this/these memories?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 12:02 am on June 16, 2019

Stephanie,
It was very difficult when I first remembered; I grieved for days, and am glad I had supportive friends during that time. I know that I am forgiven; that there is nothing that God cannot forgive from our past, and so I am now at peace with the fact that this is the past; and that I have chosen to leave this type of life for one where abuse does not occur.

★ Liked by 1 person

stephaniekouts 4:49 am on June 16, 2019

Wow…thanks a million times over for sharing, feeling your feelings, choosing to leave everything you ever knew and allowing God to be big enough for both of you. Much love and support from our household

★ Like

lmailletlynn 12:56 am on August 25, 2019

i don't know how you survived this.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 7:12 pm on September 2, 2019

I survived by dissociating, just as the other children did. I wasn't unusual, there were many others surviving this, which is sad.

★ Liked by 1 person

Anthony Evers 4:26 pm on March 13, 2021

To be clear, This is part of the Vatican. Endorsed by the Pope and Bishops. For me, being raised as a Catholic. this information is mind boggling.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Chart for Working on Internal Programs

Why the core or original child may fear healing →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

svalispeaksagain 1:58 am on December 29, 2018

Tags: Jesuit (10), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Growing Up International Part Four: Ages Six to Twelve

I am writing these autobiographical articles to help others understand how some international occultic societies program their members. The information in the articles is specific to the group I was raised in, but many of the methods described are used by other groups.

Trigger Warning: this article contains graphic descriptions of trauma and programming setups

At age six, the members of the top class ('top' is decided by the trainers according to the child's performance in the previous 5 years) within the Jesuits enter the Vatican school. Classes have both boys and girls – trainers assign children to classes not according to gender but by performance. Other schools for training Jesuit children exist besides the Vatican one, and in all schools, the training will continue until graduation at age 12 -13 (when the individual becomes a full Father in a special ceremony). Military training continues until late teens, with yearly "boot camps" the members of the Jesuit army attend. Over time, the number of students diminishes (due to deaths during military exercises, or during programming) and by the time the children are 12, fewer children remain than began classes at age 6.

The Vatican School

The Jesuits like to tell their children they are receiving the "best education in the world". In some respects, it could be called "well rounded", but it has terrible aspects as well. A typical day would be as follows:

- Wake up at 5 am. The school is divided by age into classes of 12 each, separated by age: the six-year-olds are in one class, the seven-year-olds in another, etc. Each class sleeps in rows of beds in the same room, with the class leader taking the position by the door (to answer if anyone comes, and protect the class from any possible threats). Normally, the leader's "second" and "third" in command will sleep near him or her. I was the class leader for my class, so I slept closest to the door. The signal for waking up is a voice over speakers within the room saying

“Today is an opportunity to do great things for the Order; you are blessed to hav

- Quick cleanup at the communal bathroom (5-minute showers done together in a dress quickly (easy, since the brown acolyte robes are hung up the day before; this is what the children wear until they receive a Father’s black robes at age 12 or 13, except when they are being hosted in outside families, when they wear “normal” clothes for that country). The children rush downstairs to the communal dining room, where a nutritious breakfast is served. They are allowed 8 minutes to eat (to this day, I eat extremely quickly and never understood why, until I remembered the short times allowed to eat). There may be assigned tasks before chapel that are relevant to the children’s training, such as checking supplies for the military exercises, or cleaning up the lab areas, including the areas where animals are kept, such as primates, for experiments and teaching.
- After chores, the children go to chapel. This is a time of singing and devotion (to Satan). The children sing beautifully, sounding like a professional choir, but the lyrics are quite different from Christian hymns. The older children and teens at times create and write new songs, if they have musical talent.
- After chapel, classes begin. The first classes are “gym” with physical training exercises, including martial arts, hand-to-hand combat, and learning to climb ropes, etc. After this, the morning classes are devoted to typical school subjects, only much more advanced since the children are genetically modified for strength and intelligence). Children have already learned to read, write, do math, think and ask questions in a logical manner and so on, before the age of 6, preparing them to begin the more advanced studies in the Vatican school. Classes consist of learning various languages, world and civilization history, politics, economics, the history of various religions, advanced math, reading classics from every culture (in the original languages as the children get older).
- At noon, there is a quick break and meal (15 minutes).
- In the afternoon, there are “anatomy and physiology” classes where subjects (usually, homeless people or those purchased from refugee camps) are used to teach topics such as how to torture (including skinning alive; paralysis points, pain points, how to use knives and other instruments to inflict pain, including heated needles and rods). These classes also include demonstrations of various techniques for killing a human being, from suffocation, to poisons (the children are taught how to administer, and see the effects), to knives, and other methods. The children are given a living human being to “dissect” and learn anatomy from, since this knowledge is essential when torturing or programming others. In some of these classes, a live demonstration of the various areas of the brain is conducted, with one of the trainers using a probe to show the response to various areas being touched; and the children are taught to read brain monitors with real-time brain scans (much more advanced than the most advanced PET scans today), to read emotional and cognitive responses to stimuli. Practical “on-hands” classes in how to do programming are done in the afternoon as well.
- There is a half hour break in mid-afternoon, when the children are free to play soccer in an outdoor courtyard, or other active games.
- Around 5 pm is a short dinner break.
- In the evening (and, at times, in the afternoons) are the mage and witchcraft classes. This is when the children are taught spells, rituals, how to sacrifice animals and humans (using techniques taught in the afternoon classes), and how to read and write the ancient magical manuscripts.
- There is a short evening chapel afterwards, with a short talk about current world events and announcements of special events.
- Bedtime comes at around 9 pm; although the children may be woken during the night during

special holidays or seasons to participate in the associated rituals and/or festivities.

The above is a generic schedule. School runs year round, in 4-6 week intervals, with a short" summer break" although training still continues. There is a short military camp at the end of each interval, and a special longer military camp. The children are also rotated through their host families, making coordinating scheduling quite complex (there are individuals who do this scheduling of children and host families to ensure that they are together at the same time). A typical child may spend a week in the UK with a host family, then complete 5 weeks of school; then, a brief military camp. After this, the child might be hosted in Germany for a week or two with their German family (mother, father, brothers, sisters), then return to the school for 4 weeks and military camp. After this, the child may spend 1 week in Russia, and 1 week in the US, then 1 week in Israel, then returns to Rome for more schooling.

While the child loves the host families in each presentation, they never fully bond to them; they know their real home is in Rome – with their brothers and sisters in their class, and with the Fathers they love.

The school years are very busy and full. There is very little time for "recreation" or free time, other than the daily break in the middle of the afternoon. In addition to the above schedule, the child will undergo regular programming, and will also be learning to program others (a training class which teaches the children how to install and reinforce programming is part of the core curriculum). Under the supervision of the older trainers, the children are mentored until by age 12 they are full trainers, able to do all that the adults do in this area. Some children with specialized skills are given special mentorship, and become head trainers when they are older.

Leadership skills are honed. A class leader is chosen for their ability to inspire the love and loyalty of the other class members, their own strength and skills, and the ability to make decisions for the good of the entire class and think quickly. Each child in the class is ranked according to ability, and the leader will have a "second" (who takes over if the leader is ill) and a "third" who helps back them up. Learning to work together, help one another, and overcome obstacles together is an important part of the training. The children compete against one another in a friendly fashion, and the daily scores (individual and class) are posted on a digital bulletin board for comparison (test scores, athletic scores, awards, special achievements, etc.). The goal is to instill excellence, and the competition is fierce at times, but typically within bounds (cheating and sabotage is frowned upon).

As the child matures, they are mentored in going on missions (including assassinations, and intelligence gathering), and assessed for the ability to think quickly and strategically under pressure. They are also mentored spiritually, and learn increasingly complex mage and witchcraft/sorcery skills. The child is continually assessed for their areas of greatest ability and performance, and are often given advanced training in subjects or skills they excel in (such as martial arts, ancient languages, military strategy, politics, etc.)

The child learns to perform surgery, both normal surgery (for healing), and specialized surgery such as performing placental transplants (this technology has been available for years, and is now part of the prenatal programming done; the fetus is transplanted into another birth mother, and is told that the first one "did not want" the fetus; this creates a huge rejection wound and bonds the fetus even more strongly to its trainers and the demonic. The child also learns various neurosurgery skills, and may receive advanced training if they show ability.

During these years, the children go to other schools (often within a monastery) for a semester, and the children at the other schools will come and spend a semester at the Vatican school. This allows for greater cross-training, and helps the children learn how things are done at various places.

As the child becomes older, they become skilled agents in every area: gathering intelligence; following and getting rid of “targets” while staying invisible and untrackable; training others; advanced mages. By age 12 or 13, if they have survived the previous 6 years of training and missions, will have the equivalent of a medical degree, a law degree, an advanced degree in political science and languages, and are equipped to “fit in” within almost any culture and strata of society. They are advanced mages and sorcerers. The child is now ready to undergo the ceremony to become a full Father, and receive their black robes.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult	Vatican Book Part 9	Vatican book part 10
May 3, 2018	March 21, 2022	June 11, 2022
In "mind control"	In "healing"	In "healing"

stephaniekouts 6:32 am on December 30, 2018

Thank you for this breakdown. There are thousands of emotions that must come with living in this education facility/home. You have siblings there, comradery and yet many painful experiences too. Sending love to survivors as they journey life.

★ Like

lmailletlynn 12:52 am on August 25, 2019

this is insanity. sounds like a horrifying movie that can’t be true. i have thought for a few years now that jesuits are the ones behind the new world order. i am canadian, P.E.Trudeau was our PM and now his son is. Do you know if they went through this training? Any knowledge of them? God bless you and keep you, Svali. if i can ever do anything to help you, it would be an honour. i’m a bible believing Christian, with all my hope in Jesus Christ. Lois

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 7:11 pm on September 2, 2019

Hi, I prefer not to make comments about specific individuals. But I do believe that many of the leaders in countries around the world today are either mind controlled, or blackmailed into compliance. Thank you for your kindness.

★ Liked by 1 person

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← God in the Labs

The different types of SRA and Mind Control →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 1:07 pm on July 29, 2018

Tags: mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Growing Up International Part Three: Ages Three to Six

I am writing these autobiographical articles to help others understand how international occultic societies program their members. The information in the articles is specific to the group I was raised in, but many of the methods described are used by other groups.

Trigger Warning: this article contains graphic descriptions of trauma and programming setups

At age three, the others in my group and I graduated from the white tunics we wore, to longer brown tunics (what acolytes in the order wear). This showed we were no longer infants and toddlers, and our training would progress with greater expectations.

The Monastery

At this time, I began to spend regular time at a monastery north of Rome that is very old and ancient, and not part of the "public" tours. The monastery is completely walled in with high walls. Inside, it was beautiful, with a walled in garden and bench on one side; a circular fountain in front of the main doorway inside, and flowers. The grounds were kept immaculately.

I was there to learn numerous things, including discipline (I learned to scrub the stone floors on my hands and knees without complaining; every once in a while, I would finish scrubbing, and to teach me humility, a father would come and urinate on the floor, and tell me to do it again. Normally, though, the tasks were completed and I could go to class.

At this time, I went into classes for part of each day (the preschoolers are genetically enhanced and highly intelligent, and go for four hours a day), where I learned languages, oral history, and how to read and write (I could do so by age three and a half, in several languages). I was also learning martial arts (one of my favorite classes at the time), and military skills, including how to take apart and put together a gun, how to shoot a target; how to defend myself against an attack dog; the use of various poisons, basic field first aid, how to climb over barriers, running, how to follow someone without being noticed, and other skills.

Follow •••

Amnesia and "Don't Talk" programming

I was also undergoing extensive amnesia programming at this time. In one setup, a father would come into the room, talk to someone else, and I was given a forget code by the father as he left. Later, I would be asked what I remembered. If I remembered anything at all, the father (who was someone I loved) was brought in and tortured in front of me (to show the "effect" of "remembering" on others). In one setup, I was switched through several parts in succession while doing a small "mission"; later each part was quizzed regarding whether they remembered any part of the sequence that they shouldn't. One time, they did; then the Father I loved held a gun to my head, and told me, "If you keep remembering, I will have to shoot you; we can't afford a security risk like this, much as it would hurt me to do this." I had seen a child shot for remembering too much (too much bleedthrough), so I knew the threat was real. The next time, I had complete amnesia when taken through sequences. My parts had gotten the message.

There were other amnesia setups, such as the "Remember the Flowers" setup (where the pool in the garden was filled with the partially submerged bodies of children and adults who I "remembered", some were doubles of myself and my classmates, as well as fathers I loved; the pool was also filled with water lilies). Each child represented a "flower" and the warning was to not remember, or they would be killed.

Because age 3 is a time when the child is very creative, many internal structures put in previously were heavily reinforced. These included internal trees (Tree of Life, Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, and Cruz, or the Cross of false martyrdom); the Garden of Eden, including the snake, Adam, Eve and Lillith (the first mother of all witchcraft, also called "Adam's second wife" by the programmers).

Spiritual Programming

At this time, the spiritual programming was also heavily reinforced for various systems. These included:

- **Babylonian programming**: deities, rituals and learning how to do sacrifices to the deities was done. These included Ashtoth, Bel, Ashtaroth, Molech and others. In one programming ritual, the child has hundreds of golden needles with wires inserted, and is hung from this series of wires in a very painful sun ritual (to Bel).
- **Egyptian programming**: deities and parts were reinforced, and sacrifices to Ra, Horus, Set and others was taught. For each of these "classes" the oral history of the cultures was also given. Internal pyramids with altars were installed, and chambers where the various parts lived internally were created. I was left in a re-creation of an ancient Egyptian chamber, chained to an altar; it was a rough night indeed, as I was terrorized by actors portraying "demons" and "Egyptian gods". This trauma reinforced the programming, and was meant to make it very difficult to remember.
- **Ancient Ones programming**: these were very old earth deities, with many appearing as giants in groves overseen by "ancient ones" with white hair and mage or high witchcraft/warlock skills.
- **Q'bala programming**: this was also installed to a greater degree during this time, with the three trees tied to the delta computer logic system.
- **Druid programming**: This programming was conducted in ancient groves, and included

learning the appropriate sacrifices, how to set the stones in a magic circle, and being tied to a very large and old oak tree for the night.

Throughout these years, I was also taught how to perform rituals and sacrifices, learning how to dissect first a corpse, and later a living human being (homeless people were used in the school for these purposes). By the time I was six, I had dissected and learned how to carve a cadaver and living person expertly, how to peel skin (a torture technique), and other "skills". I knew all of the major organs, circulatory and nervous system structures, and nerve points. I was becoming very skilled at torture. At first, as a young child, I would turn white, or even vomit, but soon learned that this was not tolerated, and learned to dissociate my feelings.

Programming Training

All children in the group I was raised in have at least basic competency as a trainer or programmer. This training also continued in the "lab" time, and included instructional classes where my classmates and I were allowed to watch the older trainers and ask questions. We were also taught skills on homeless people and others considered less valuable, learning how to install programming; read brain scans and monitor responses. By age six, I had significant basic competency as a trainer, and could install many basic programs successfully.

Learning to Hate Traitors and Anti-Interrogation (setups)

Because loyalty was so basic to the order, my classmates and I were taught to heavily fear and hate traitors through setups that included:

- "traitors" breaking into the monastery and attempting to rape my classmates and I and set fire to the room. We fought them off, but they began overpowering us, until the Fathers came and drove them away
- Running away setup: all children become angry with the fathers during their training, and are allowed to "run away" with a setup . I "ran away" in anger, trying to escape my abuse at the monastery, and was picked up by friendly people who offered to take me to "safety". I agreed, and they drove me to another town. That night, and for the next three days, I was abused non-stop in terrible ways, until I managed to "escape" while they were sleeping, and was found and taken home to the monastery by the Fathers, who said they had been "sick with worry" about me. They would then ask me what my punishment should be for worrying them this way; once decided, the father would then go through half of the punishment for me (to show their "love). This setup was designed to teach me that the outside world was much worse than what I was undergoing, and to teach me to mistrust and hate "outsiders."
- During military setups, during which we camped out after marching all day, at times I would be "abducted" by an "enemy" (non-member of the order) who would spend time interrogating me. As a preschooler, this involved simple levels of torture, and refusal to answer questions. Later, I would manage to "escape" and the Fathers would rescue me, take me back to the monastery, and praise me for my "bravery" under torture, etc.

Learning to "rescue" others

Learning to rescue loved ones is a critical skill and belief system taught, since so much programming involves rescue of not only the self, but loved ones, from trauma, torture or death. These setups often involved doing something considered very "disobedient" (al l children do from time to time; the anger and rage from the constant abuse leaks out, and they defy orders or do things to act out their pain; this is expected and planned for). Upon defying an order, I was ordered to be flogged with a whip that had small bits of bone attached (a flagellum, a favorite punishment of the Jesuits). I realized that the amount of whipping ordered would likely cost my life (I had defied very badly). But then, the Father I loved most stepped in, and said "I will take the punishment for you." I was stunned. He was flogged until his skin was stripped and bleeding, looking at me the whole time with a loving face. I cried and screamed, and this reinforced for me the belief that if you love someone, you will take their pain for them.

Over the years, I learned to do this myself, in setup after setup, until the ultimate ones in which the Father I loved most asked "I know it will hurt badly, but are you willing to die for me?" I was four, and I said "Yes". I allowed him to put me to death, then resurrect me with resuscitation equipment and spiritual means. He then said "Now we are tied by death and life." I literally trusted him with my life. The main thing is that out of my great love (for this individual who manipulated me) I willingly agreed to the death and resuscitation. This is foundational for programming, because the individual must agree before it can be truly successful.

Green House (MI6)

At age 3 ½, I was taken to Green House (named after Col. Green of MI6) for the first time, with my classmates, for training. Green House is rented out to various groups for training at times, with the purpose of my undergoing the Green House training to be an agent. At this time, my delta computer system programming was also layered upon the base programs set up in the womb and during infancy, using the sophisticated computerized technology there. I was literally hooked up to a computer, and for days, taught to simulate everything it did internally. My delta parts learned to talk with a computerized flat affect, and to perform internal system checks, to store information in various security layers, etc. I also improved my skills with a gun, a knife and other abilities.

Introduction to the Vatican School

At age six, I was already a competent trainer (programmer), with the ability to program others with basic programs. I knew human anatomy inside out, was skilled at torturing others in numerous ways, was learning various rituals, and had already performed several assassination missions (the first one completed at age 4; I was deadly as a child, which the order counted on, since no one would suspect a child that young). I had been hosted in several countries around the world for three years now and was building up my covers in those countries. I was now ready to enter the Vatican school.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Interview Book available on Amazon The different types of SRA

February 14, 2022
In "healing"

April 25, 2018
In "mind control"

and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

lmailletlynn 12:42 am on August 25, 2019

Hi Svali
when you wrote, “where the pool in the garden was filled with the partially submerged bodies of children and adults who I “remembered”, some were doubles of myself and my classmates, as well as fathers I loved”, did you mean that the bodies of the children were literal clones of you and your classmates?

Lois

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 7:09 pm on September 2, 2019

That is a great question. I meant that some were genetic doubles; others were individuals surgically altered to look like them.

★ Liked by 2 people

christine alessandrini 12:49 am on February 2, 2021

Hi Svali, How would they do those “doubles” of yourself ? is it similar to clones ? Do they make a lot ? Can they make as much as they want ? Thank you for this blog and everything you put in it because I can assure you that yes ! you are helping a LOT of people. Those are precious informations that definitely help for healing process and for other things as well. Bless you !

★ Liked by 1 person

svalispeaksagain 6:28 pm on February 5, 2021

Christine, doubles can range from genetic twins or triplets, to surgically created doubles, to individuals with a similar body type and build wearing a high-quality mask. Thank you for your comments

★ Liked by 1 person

Jude 11:36 pm on February 10, 2022

You are a brave and wonderful soul and the people who has hurt you no longer breath. I hope your healing continues to ho well. Im so sorry what has happened to so many and I wish you love tp heal your soul. Jrkz

★ Like

Jude 11:38 pm on February 10, 2022

You are a brave and wonderful soul and the people who has hurt you no longer breathe. I hope your healing continues to ho well. Im so sorry what has happened to so many and I wish you love to heal your soul. Jrkz Keep Your Family Tree Safe

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Programming to Block Healing

Exposing the International Sex Trade →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 2:45 am on June 1, 2018

Tags: dissociation (30), Mengele (3), mind control (69), programming (60), SRA (45)

Growing Up International Part Two: The First Three Years

Note: this article contains graphic descriptions of trauma and programming setups under Mengele

At the moment I was born, and took my first breath, my birth mother was killed by being pulled apart as I came out of the birth canal. This trauma was designed to create a guilt that the programmers would build upon the rest of my life: the belief that by living, I "killed" my birth mother. The guilt would be used to drive me to perform ceaselessly over the years in an unconscious attempt to justify being alive.

A ritual was done immediately, in which one of the people I had bonded with in the womb (my primary trainer – a father I loved) began to suffocate me, asking me if I would accept a demon present behind him; if I did, he would let me live. I agreed, and was allowed to breathe.

I was given to a woman to nurse, one of several nannies at the cult facility I was raised in who would nurse me, rock me, and sing me songs about the group I was in, the heroes in the group who performed great deeds, and songs of praise to Satan.

My genetic mother and father were also present, and participated in a ritual that dedicated me to Satan.

Afterwards, I was taken to the newborn nursery where other infants in my group (we were raised in groups of 12) were in their cribs. Each infant in a group was born within a day or two of each other. My birth date was January 5, an important date to the group I was born to: Epiphany. I was considered one of the "gifts of the magi" to the group, and many other infants were born on this date as well.

Spiritual Programming

From my first breath, the programming was non-stop for the first three years. The programming

Follow •••

involved numerous setups in which trainers dressed as various "deities" ("celestial beings") appeared by my crib, clothed in white or silver robes, and glowing with a soft light, voices taught me to love them – and to identify with them.

Others trainers dressed as "demons" and showed the splits created just before their appearance how to act and sound like a demon, with guttural growls, snarls, etc. These splits learned as toddlers to enjoy eating raw flesh, the only food they were allowed.

The highest (core) systems were bonded to trainers who dressed as ascended beings. Their eyes were covered with crystals to prevent me as an infant from seeing human eyes, since these parts were taught to hate and fear mortals through setups that involved "humans" or "mortals" raping and torturing them, until the "ascended beings" rescued and comforted them. I bonded completely to these creatures that appeared in various forms: a young form (appearing like a small dinosaur), a huge form (resembling Jabba the Hut or a similar grotesque appearance) and a beautiful form, looking much like a beautiful human but with unhuman eyes.

My love for these creatures would be tested time and again over the years. These parts felt that only these "celestial" creatures could love them, and they all held one feeling in common: they utterly despised mortals and the human race, who had tortured them in the womb, and were committed to the destruction of the human race (my fetal rage was held by them).

Celestial Paradise and "Hell" programming

As a baby, I was placed in a special baby carrier designed as a chariot in the programming labs. This chariot slowly rose upwards on a clear cable to an upper level of the lab staged to look like celestial paradise. In this "paradise" beings dressed in silvery white robes greeted me, held me, comforted me and gave me sweet drinks and cake. Harp music played, and a celestial "choir" sang songs of the joy of ascending. I realize that this sounds more like a Hollywood studio than a programming lab, but a young infant is very susceptible to believing these setups, since they have limited life experience to balance it against. As an infant, I truly believed I was "ascending to the heavenly realms" and loved the experience – and the beings who lovingly greeted me there.

As an infant, I was also taken at other times to "hell", which was a programming studio at a lower level. Trainers dressed as Abbadon and Apollyon came to my crib, grabbed me, and told the young infant me that I was going to be "punished for my sins" of "disobedience." It was a terrifying experience as they took me down a long, dark tunnel to a place lit with flames, with demonic creatures (young trainees in costume) dancing around poles where victims were tied and being tortured. As I descended into this place of horror and fear, I heard the "demons" discussing how young and tender I looked, as they drew nearer and tried to cut some flesh off with a knife, or spear me with a fork. I screamed in terror, and then "Satan" appeared and "rescued" me in this setup (in others, various people, such as the trainers I was bonded to, or a messiah figure were the ones who rescued). "Satan" scooped me up and took me away, telling me that as long as I obeyed him, I would be safe and he would protect me.

By the time I was three years old, I was utterly and completely committed to the belief that those who obey "ascend" and those who disobey cult directives and orders "descend." The proselytizing that began in the womb, and reinforced heavily, had taken hold. I had internalized the creatures ranging from angels, to demons, to celestial beings, to dragons, and others inside, and had created an internal "heaven" and "hell" to hold them in. Punishment for questioning the group's orders included the inside parts being dragged into the internal hell by internal representations of

Abbadon and Apollyon, and rewards for instant obedience and good performance (such as killing on command, doing sacrifices well, etc.) included being allowed to visit "paradise" and communicate with the beings there.

I was considered successfully spiritually programmed by the trainers who installed these setups and beliefs. It would not be until years later, when I became a Christian, that I learned to my great surprise that the Bible **never** mentions a hell populated by "demons" who are overseen by "Satan" with the power to "torture" individuals; instead, the concept of Sheol is quite different, and the gehenna of final judgment is very different from the cult setups I experienced.

Early Loyalty and Anti-Christian Programming

Loyalty was considered one of the greatest imperatives of the Order, and extensive time and thought was put into the programming for loyalty. Men and women dressed in shabby clothes would come into the nurseries where the babies were, shouting "we are traitors and are here to get you." They would hit, rape and abuse us; all the babies would be screaming, until one of the Fathers would come in and "rescue" us from these terrible "traitors". Numerous setups of this type were done, until the mere mention of the word 'traitor' would make our infant hackles rise.

A man dressed as "Jesus" would also walk into the infant nursery at times, abusing the infants and causing intense dislike and pain. Again, the infants were "rescued" by one of the Fathers, who "chased" him away.

Presentation and Amnesia Programming

Because the Jesuits are international, they create presentations to be hosted in various presentations in the infants. Nine presentations were created for the infants in the group I was in: a presentation for America, another for the UK, another for France, another for Germany, one for Italy, one for Japan (where the Jesuits have a large interest and alliances with the clans that operate there), one for Russia, one for Amsterdam and one for Israel. The latter was considered one of the most important, since the Jesuits do extensive intelligence operations against the Mossad and Israel, and have numerous agents placed there.

The programming labs had rooms set up, where members of the future host families would meet with and interact with me. I met my parents and siblings from each of the families I would have in these various nations, and they took family photos with me, talked with me in the host country language, and worked on my amnesia cues (to prevent bleedthrough, or having memories or speaking in the "wrong" language). I grew close to the other siblings and my new parents, and was warned in the various presentations to never remember the cult facility, and for presentations to never remember living in another country, on pain of the death of the host family. Sacrifices were done several times during the first three years, and agreements made to keep the amnesia intact between presentations intact.

In one country (France), to my joy I was to be hosted with my identical twin, E. We both loved our times together during the presentation programming, where we were taught how to be part of a "normal" family and interact normally, to create our covers within these countries and cover the fact that we were actually raised in a cult facility.

The closest friends and family members in each of the host countries were, of course, cult members, since for the first three years, I spent almost all of my time in a cult facility and would not be actually spending time in the host countries until I was three years old.

Just before I went to host in the countries, each time, an important event occurred. I would be asked to “remember” living in the cult facility, would say something about it to the host parents. That night, a baby sibling (considered expendable, but allowed to bond with me over the past several months) would be killed in front of me because I “remembered”. This trauma was used to seal the amnesia between presentations. The cult host (the real “host” in an international system) also made agreements to never allow memories of the “real” (cult) life rise to awareness in the presentations. The Fathers would have me go into a room where a Jesuit Father was present, along with the host family, and later ask me if I remembered anything unusual. If I remembered the Father, who I loved greatly, the Father was brought into the room and tortured in front of me, to my screams and distress, because I had “remembered” the cult life. I was supposed to completely forget seeing a father when in my presentation, to completely “blank out” any memory of this other life.

In one setup, I would go into a room where cult objects were placed. My presentation was switched out. Later, I was asked what I had seen in the room. One time, at age two, I remembered and reported seeing a dead body and a chalice, and a Father in the room. The Father then came into the room, held a gun to my head, and said I would have to be killed, since my remembering would endanger the Order. I vowed to always forget. He said I must, or he would be forced to kill me, as sad as that would be. The next time the setup was done, I forgot, and lived. I did know children who actually were shot, because they kept remembering in spite of their trying hard to obey. The gun was not an idle threat; I had one brother shot this way, and never forgot this.

Pirate Programming

Babies love parties, and there was a special setup done in the programming labs with a pirate ship, jolly pirates, plenty of good soup and cake, songs and holding for the babies. This setup was done to create an internalization that would keep the internal baby parts inside and entertained, unless they were called out to be programmed.

Mengele and Senseless Deaths

Mengele (“Herr Josef” as I knew him) was head of the programming labs during this time. There was one lab in Italy, another in East Germany, and another in Switzerland at this time. He had students who walked around and mimicked him, assisting him. His main assistant was a young woman named “Hilde” with blond hair, blue eyes and an ice cold manner much of the time. Hilde was extremely efficient, and knew exactly what he wanted. Herr Josef was not one of the three Fathers I loved (bonded to primarily) but he was a primary trainer, and I bonded to him out of necessity and survival.

Mengele loved “survival of the fittest” setups, and would place two bottles in the middle of a roomful of infants. A bell would sound, and the infants would all crawl quickly to the bottles; those who got there first and could fight off the other babies “won” and got a bottle that day. The others were killed in front of the survivors, to teach what happened to “slow” or “expendable” babies.

Mengele did not value human life at all. He would kill 99 babies in order to find one baby he felt was “worth keeping” out of a batch. He was terribly manipulative as well. Babies in the nurseries were punished terribly for disobedience. If a baby held onto the bars of the crib, because the baby didn’t want to be taken out to be tortured (programmed), Mengele would chop the hand off in front of the other babies, as an “object lesson”. All babies would watch this scene with round wide eyes and horror, as the consequences of disobedience or hesitation were shown dramatically. Herr Josef would say “That was a BAD baby; you don’t want to be a BAD baby” and all the babies, including me, made the instant decision to never be the “bad baby”.

Only ten babies out of a thousand would survive the first six months in this kind of environment. Mengele and his programmers insisted on absolute, complete obedience even in infancy, including allowing sexual abuse (babies were taught to open their legs on cue and allow this sadistic cruelty without crying), as well as other forms of abuse. If a baby cried too long after a programming session, or failed to greet Mengele with a smile and outstretched arms even after a previous day of unthinkable pain, the baby would be placed in a sliding box that would be locked for a day, abandoned in the dark as punishment for disobedience or “bad behavior”. The baby would be taken out, frantic to be held, and told to never disobey again, or they would be kept in the box “forever”.

I was rewarded for performing well: I would be held by a nanny who rocked me and gave me a bottle, and who would then take me to a window to get a peek at the outside world and sunshine. Or the Fathers I loved would come and spend the precious 15 minutes a day that I cherished, telling me they loved me, holding me, and teaching me what they expected (including allowing sexual abuse).

By the time I was a toddler (15 months), I was put in a cage in a room with dozens of other children my age in another “survival game” that Mengele made up. A buzzer would sound, the cage doors would open, and we would all rush to get food and drink. We had to fight one another to get food. There was only enough for two or three. I remember that after a few days, the little girl in the cage next to me seemed sick; she wouldn’t get up or run any more when the buzzer rang. I felt sad for her, and when I ran and fought and got my food and water, I took some to her, and tried to get her to eat, but she wouldn’t eat or drink. I didn’t understand what was wrong with her, but to my dismay she got weaker each day until one day she fell asleep and didn’t wake up any more. I tried and tried to get her to wake up, but she wouldn’t. Other children were getting sicker and sicker, and only three of us were alive and healthy out of the sixty children. We watched the others slowly die, one by one, and wondered why Herr Josef thought this was a good thing, and praised the three of us so highly. I felt guilty and sad that I was alive and the others had died, and that I couldn’t wake the little girl in the cage next to me up.

In another setup, as a baby I learned to crawl through a maze. At intervals, there would be a bridge; another baby would be crawling from the opposite direction. I had to crawl across the bridge, and get to the other side, or get shocked; so did the other baby. The only way to get across was to push the other baby off the bridge. If I did so (and I always did), I was rewarded with a bottle and no more shocks; but I also had to watch the other baby be killed. I was said, but also knew that the price of my survival was the death of another; Mengele made that very clear in his infant programming.

Mengele had several top assistants who were younger (teens) that I began bonding to. By age 12, children in the Order are considered adults, and they by age 13 were full trainers. One would become my primary trainer during most of my childhood, and was a Father I loved; her name was

Father Matthew and I wanted to be just like her when I grew up.

As soon as I could toddle around, I tried to follow her around any time I was allowed to. By age two, I was allowed to wear a little white coat like Fr. Matthew's, and tried to act and sound like her. I wanted to be a head trainer just like her, and she and the other Fathers said that one day I would, because I did very, very well and learned quickly. Most importantly, I had survived many of the brutal tests of strength and intelligence that Mengele put infants through during the first year of life; I was considered a "keeper" and to have potential by him and the other fathers.

Any infant that survived the facility during this time period was at the top of the charts for strength, intelligence and survival instinct. Those who would be chosen for leadership also had another quality that I had shown by trying to save the little girl next to me: the ability to look out for the interests of others, and the common good. All I knew is that life the first three years was a constant round of pain, testing and sadness with all too few moments of nurture and bonding.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

book part 4 September 13, 2021 In "healing"	Growing Up International: Part 1 (prenatal programming) April 25, 2018 In "healing"	Infant Programming June 4, 2017 In "healing"

Pingback: Growing Up International Part Two: The First Three Years - Svali Blog Post 2018 (Trigger Warning: contains graphic descriptions of trauma and programming setups under Mengele) - DeprogramWiki

FW (@Stimmlage) 12:58 pm on March 11, 2022

Oh my goodness, how could they do this to the birth mother? And your Father comes as a survivor. This is exact how the patriarchy is built.

★ Like

Jennifer 5:04 am on April 10, 2023

“By the time I was a toddler (15 months)” how you manage to remember that because an average adult’s memory doesn’t go that far in the past or her infancy.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Dealing with Torture

Alice in Wonderland Programming: Part 1: White Alice Programming →

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/welcome/child-page/growing-up-international-part-1-prenatal-programming/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

Growing Up International: Part 1 (prenatal programming)

```
This article describes what it is like to grow up in a cult facility overseas. There are several internati
```

During the first three years of my life, I lived fulltime in a cult facility in a European country, before I ever met my host families in various countries. This facility was under the direction of a well-known programmer. This is how my life started:

I was conceived in a petri dish in the late 1950’s at a genetics laboratory in Switzerland. By the time of my birth, I was considered “generation 3”, or the third generation of genetic enhancements. The first two generations were prototypes for physical beauty. By G3, the gene for intelligence had been discovered, as well as for improved muscle strength and healing capability. Later generations improved upon these foundations as genes for even greater intelligence, theta skills and other abilities were developed.

On the third day of life, I was implanted in the woman who was my birth mother, but she was not my genetic mother (who was a ranking member of the group I was raised in; the well-known programmer was my genetic father). She, along with other birth mothers, were taken to a special facility in Europe where the prenatal programming would begin, since the experiments on pregnant women conducted by Mengele had proven that programming begun in the womb lasts longer and is more difficult to break than programming that occurs after birth, when the infant has the opportunity to interact with the outside world.

For the first two weeks, my birth mother was treated extremely well, praised, petted and told what a “special” baby she was carrying. Beaming programmers and their trainees brought her choice foods, and told her what a special person she was, to be part of carrying a baby that would be part of a “new breed” of individuals. This kindness was unfortunately the priming for the later setups and betrayals that would occur, with the purpose of creating rage against the human race in her unborn child.

After two weeks, the torture began. The birth mother was told to do something repugnant to her (e.g., lick up urine and feces off the floor, or a similar act), and as she hesitated, the punishment was quick and brutal: agonizing, squeezing pain to her limbs and partial suffocation, as she was told "You must always obey, immediately." A tone was also played with this injunction. The rationale for this treatment? A developing embryo and fetus automatically synchro waves with the mother, and their young spirit feels what the mother's spirit does. The extreme distress is imprinted on the unborn child as well as the mother.

At this point, a reader will wonder: but the baby doesn't have a conscious mind yet. Why do this before brainwaves and consciousness develop? The rationale the programmers use is that the unborn embryo's spirit is present, and the spirit will never forget these events, which lay the foundation for later programming.

How does the birth mother not abort her unborn child with these traumas? The programmers will administer specific drugs to prevent this occurrence, although contractions may begin in some cases.

I know these things happened, not only because of memories my parts have shared, but also because when I was older, and ran the facility, I and other trainers did these same things to birth mothers. The things we did to these women and their unborn children are among the things I most regret doing in my past.

As the weeks go on, the torture and programming sessions become more severe, along with the rewards (operant conditioning techniques). Both mother and child are subjected to electric shocks, the instillation of drugs that induce severe, agonizing pain (as part of the "seal of mortality" programming, during which the fetus is told that this pain is their "ascended" self feeling the pain that "mortals" feel; this is part of the installation of a fear of mortality in the "higher" or "ascended" parts within the system). The fetus is then told that the birth mother can be "saved" from the pain if the fetus is willing to "rescue" her by taking in a demon. If the fetus complies, the stimulus for pain is stopped, or an antagonist drug given to stop the effects of the pain-inducing drug, and an injection of a bliss-producing drug is given, while both mother and fetus are told that this is the "joy of ascension", etc.

The real goal is to teach the fetus to rescue the birth mother; this will be the foundation of later rescue programming that will chain them to the group (e.g. the need to rescue those they love from torture or death if their programming breaks).

The punishments for disobedience become more severe: the end of a finger is cut off from the fetus, who experiences agonizing pain (this small digit will grow back if done early enough in development, but the trauma remains in the subconscious throughout the lifetime), as a punishment for "disobedience". Digits are cut off of the birth mother as well, and she is raped and traumatized by a pretend "Jesus" to teach the fetus to hate Christianity and all it represents.

All the foundation templates for later programming, and the first splits, were created during the months before birth. This includes the installation of an inside "Satan" who believes they are completely "evil", the inside "god" (whose voice sounds like the outside main programmer), an inside "He who is to come" (antichrist; this has changed to "he who has come" in recent years), and top controllers and core guardians. These are created to protect the developing core from the reality of the complete helplessness and reality of a world where horrendous abuse – including rape with special instruments – occurs in the place that should be safe and protected for the developing child.

Fetuses like warmth, dark and security; but bright lights are shone into the womb as punishments. A voice accompanied by a bright light is placed outside the womb, and the voice proclaims that they are "god" and that in order for the birth mother and fetus to survive, this voice must always be obeyed.

By the end of the seventh month, the birth mother's limbs have all been traumatically amputated, and she is forced to eat out of a dish like a dog. Soon after this, the ultimate abandonment occurs: the birth mother loses her mind completely, and the link to the one the fetus loves most is gone. The fetus is in complete despair, and the she hears a voice, kind, loving and reassuring her that while her "mother" abandoned her, this person loves her and will always be "there" for her.

I was that fetus, and I reached out to that voice as if it was a life raft. This was my primary trainer, aware of Mengele's teachings, and the one I loved most as a child; I bonded completely to him at that moment, because my life depended on it (fetuses that do not accept or receive this bonding will die in the womb in a short period of time; this is another of the terrible experiments that Mengele did on pregnant women and fetuses that the public has no knowledge of).

This voice told me they loved me, and were waiting eagerly to see me when I was born. This gave me a reason to continue living, in the midst of a world filled with pain, despair and darkness.

This was life before birth in a programming facility in Europe. Soon, I would be born, and the abuse ("training" was the name given to it) would continue.

These methods are still employed today, in training facilities around the world. The goal is to create a programmed individual during their most vulnerable time: before birth. The deepest delusions of "god", "powerful demons", supernatural creatures, ascended beings, celestial paradise, torturous hell are best installed during a time when an individual has had no interaction with the outside world to dilute the delusions with real-life experiences. These delusions have no resemblance to the truth found in the Christian Bible, and are installed as part of the core belief system for individuals born to international occultic groups that follow these precepts.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/welcome/child-page/growing-up-international-part-1-prenatal-programming/

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2019/08/05/healing-is-a-process/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 1:09 am on August 5, 2019

Tags: dissociation (30), healing (43), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Healing is a process

Was I Illuminati or Jesuit? Healing is a Process

Since I started my blog, I have received several emails asking why there appear to be several differences between the personal history related in my newer articles, and the ones I wrote several years ago (available at this site). This post will explain why.

Healing dissociation is a process. Often, memories come in 'layers' or 'stages', filling in previously missing gaps in the story, or shedding new light on an old story. In a way, it is like the process of completing a jigsaw puzzle: small portions of the puzzle are filled in initially, but the ability to view the "whole picture" only occurs as more pieces come together. It is a natural part of the process of healing from dissociation and mind control, to progressively learn more about one's history and self, as one's faith grows and different parts (including the host) increasingly experiences the blessings of internal cooperation and healing. In this post, I will describe two major 'stages' of discovering my life history: knowing that I was working for the Illuminati, and knowing that I was in the Jesuit order.

One of the most outstanding differences between my first set of svali posts (written roughly twenty years ago) and my posts from the last two years is this: I had written back then that I was a member of the Illuminati; in many of my more recent posts (2017-2019), I write that I was a member of the Jesuit order, and have described in no less detail various aspects of a childhood and adulthood in the order.

Both sets of posts describe my life history. They are not mutually exclusive experiences. I worked in the Illuminati in the US, and was also a part of the Jesuit order. When I first began my healing, my first layer of cult-related memories was of being an Illuminati programmer in the United States. I was in my American system of parts, and was mainly learning about the traumas and cult activities that I had been involved in within the US. The process of addressing the dissociation and healing from the memories that were coming was very difficult. Having to decide what to do and how to move forward with God as I realized that I was *not* just 'making it all up' was very

difficult. As difficult as it already was, I assumed (wrongly) without exploring further that the Illuminati memories already represented all of my cult-related life history. My posts
years ago reflect this perspective.

While I did not realize at that point that significant portions of my personal history were still dissociated, I was aware that I had not fully healed yet. I had several responsibilities during that time (including raising my children after I received custody and working 2-3 jobs to make ends meet). During this time, I stopped writing my svali posts online for a period of time. Finally, in 2006, I had the opportunity to spend two years fulltime on healing (I went completely offline at this time).

During this two years, I journaled intensely, often up to 8 hours a day. This was when more of my life history came forward, as parts deeper within began to share. I discovered that the work for the Illuminati in America was only part of my life, and I actually was part of the Jesuit order. I learned that I had not only been a programmer for the Illuminati, but had been one for the Jesuit order. I also discovered the cult had constructed identities and life histories, 'presentations', for other parts of me in other nations, with other names and families. I learned that my very name, family and life in America was also a 'constructed identity' by the cult and that I had been assigned to work with the Illuminati in the US for the Jesuits since I was a child. My American mother was one of my main trainers in America, I first met her as a very young child at the Jesuit training facility in Rome (**She was not my only trainer, I had several others**). She, along with Dr. Timothy Brogan and others, had helped program my American system of parts to only remember life in America and to completely believe that she, my stepfather and my sister were my only family.

This new set of memories overseas was no less heartbreaking and shocking for me to uncover. Again, my sense of who I was and my history as I had understood it, was shaken. On many days, it felt like I had to process my life story all over. A couple of supportive friends who were crucial to my healing during that time, and what I had learned during the earlier phase of healing about God's faithfulness, comfort, ability to bring truth, dealing with denial and so on truly helped me through this extremely painful phases of my journey. **The fact that before 2006 – 2008 I did not remember this portion of my history does not invalidate what I wrote in my earlier articles; I just didn't have this part of the story yet when I wrote them.** Healing is a process, and memories may be held by several layers of parts. It does not invalidate the memories of one part, if they are unaware of the history of the others. The fuller picture unfolds as the person progresses in healing.

It has not been easy learning *why* I had not remembered my Jesuit memories earlier in my healing journey: I had deep attachments with the fathers who had raised (and programmed) me. While much of what I had with the fathers were in fact 'trauma-bonds' (they had traumatized then rescued me to create dependence), there was also love and affection – they had been my world, and I lived to please them since early childhood. As a very young child, I had promised them that I would never betray them. 'Not betraying' and remaining loyal to them meant that I could never remember the Order if I tried to heal, and that I would never address my deeper programming and break the mind control that they had installed. It had been 'easier' for me to address my Illuminati memories as I did not have the same depth of investment in protecting them or being loyal to them as I did the Jesuits. As a child and adult serving the Jesuits, my life in the Illuminati in the US was one of my 'jobs'/'assignments', but the Jesuits were who I then felt were my 'real' family and home.

I started to know and process these memories as God helped me to realize to a deeper level that healing and rejecting the group's programming to not remember was *not* a betrayal (that was a deception introduced when I was very young in order to control me), and that it did not mean that I did not care. Wanting my mind to be free did not mean that I was hurting the fathers. I started to learn more about my Jesuit history after growth in several areas of my life: knowing that God cared about people in the Order and wanted them to know the truth too; knowing that God loved me enough to hold me through the grief and anguish that would come as discovered my Jesuit memories; knowing that God could protect my heart, mind and body as I addressed the deeper programming and parts related to this aspect of my life history; knowing that God could help me to know truth and cut through all the confusion and pain. Basically, increased faith and understanding of God's love and power enabled me to start remembering and processing my Jesuit memories; earlier in the journey, I did not have the capacity to do so. This stage of my healing came too as my system of parts grew utterly tired of being mind controlled to keep secrets, being only partially healed and vulnerable to the cult, and decided to 'risk' trusting God to heal.

My memories of having been programmed in a facility overseas, and being part of the Jesuit order with large parts of my life being in Vatican, have been consistent since 2007. I have been blessed with direct validation for some of my memories as well. I have also noted that my statistics for site visitors have often shown more visitors from Italy to my site, than any other country. There are several possible reasons for this: what I write may resonate with Italian survivors; there could be a deep desire to learn about dissociation and deprogramming within this country; or other reasons. I pray that my posts bless those who read them, including those in Italy.

I do hope that explaining the healing journey will be helpful in promoting understanding of the process a bit more.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Book available on Amazon
April 25, 2018
In "mind control"

What the Church and Survivors Need from Each Other
November 10, 2020
In "healing"

Essentials for Healing
June 4, 2017
In "Christian"

Leni 9:23 pm on August 5, 2019

Thank you for sharing. I believe you.

★ Liked by 2 people

lmailletlynn 12:57 am on August 25, 2019

what a gift you are giving the world by revealing these things!! thank you

★ Like

lmailletlynn 1:07 am on August 25, 2019

do you see any of the people that you trained- made to be genetically superior – in positions of importance in the world? on tv, newspapers, online? Are they running the world now? Lois

★ Like

Phoenix system 10:23 am on September 3, 2019

Hi. So I'm not so crazy when i say i was trafficked thru the vatican. That i was programmed and oh my goodness who has our files? I wanna know the truth.

I watched a kay tolman video and she prayed to break the Jesuit oath. 6 little nazi soldier alters popped up in me in the system and i was like woah. Anyway i knew Jesus then and he came in and they got in a tank with him and started breaking down the military structure of my delta asassin programmed alters. The next night God integrated those 6 little soldiers that i was in my sleep.
So some of your testimony here helps me understand why i said things about the Vatican and different system in different country programs.
Thank you for sharing

★ Liked by 1 person

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here...

← Prayer Resource book

Healing in the Context of the Faith Journey →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 6:18 pm on August 17, 2021

Tags: mind control (69), new world order, occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 1

Six years ago, I wrote a book about the Vatican for therapists, and have only shared it privately until now, except for 1 excerpt in a blog post awhile back. Over the next few weeks and months, I will be posting the book here online. I believe that in this time, this information needs to be known in order to help others. This is the preface and first two parts. Please be aware that the information in this could be extremely triggering for survivors. It also contains Christian content.

The Vatican and the New World Order: Methods, Purpose and Overcoming Their Agenda

(c) 2015 svali

Table of Contents

I. Who Are the Jesuits? p.2

II. What Does the Jesuit Order Believe? p.4

III. How Are the Jesuits Financed? p.8

IV. Programming Methods p.12

```
A. Infant Programming  (fetal - 1)                         p.14

B. Early System Organization                                p.27

C. Toddler Training (Ages 1 - 3 )                           p.31

D. Punisher Training                                            p.39

E. Jesuit Master Controllers                                   p.43

F. Anti-Christian and Anti-Semitic Training               p.48

G. Early Childhood Training (Ages 3 - 6)                 p.53

H. Middle Childhood Programming (Ages 5 - 11)     p.63
```

V. The Goals of the Vatican: Alexis Paves the Way p.72

VI. The Current State of the World p.75

The Vatican and the New World Order: Methods, Purpose and Overcoming Their Agenda

This book is an overview of the Vatican and its military/black ops arm, the Jesuits, and how they work, by a survivor of Jesuit training. It is meant to be helpful to therapists who work with dissociative individuals, since many of the methods used by the Jesuits are used by all of the international occultic societies in the world to some degree. Please take note that this is not a complete description of the programming or belief systems of the Jesuit order. It is an overview of several aspects of Jesuit programming and teachings.

My prayer is that as difficult as this material may be to read, that it will help educate those who help survivors break free of occultic abuse as to the nature of the programming that their clients may have undergone, and the spiritual underpinnings of this programming.

I. Who are the Jesuits?

The Jesuits, or the Society of Jesus, is the “black ops” and military arm of the Vatican. The Vatican is the wealthiest business entity on earth, and is wholly dedicated to bringing in the New World Order, and its coming leader, known in former years as “he who is to come,” and since 2000 as “he who has come” (the individual called the “antichrist” in the Bible).

This book is in no way a reflection upon most Catholics, who have no idea of what the top leadership of their church believes or practices in private. The public face the Vatican shows, and the private, hidden face that very few know about, are quite different.

Jesuit History

While today, the Jesuits attempt to publicly portray themselves as benevolent, their roots go back to the beginning of the Christian church. The first gnostics attempted to corrupt the teachings of the church in the first century, and taught the first theories of “ascenscionism” and “descensionism” (which the Jesuits still teach today).

By the third century, the Christian church had grown at what to the early Roman pagans seemed an alarming rate. The pagan leaders, advised by their oracles, came up with a plan to corrupt and destroy the church from the inside. Christianity was declared the “state religion,” the persecutions stopped, and the move began to mainstream it into the paganistic beliefs of the Roman Empire.

At the same time, a secret cabal of leaders within the early leadership arose. Their goals were to gain political and financial control of the church and to promote their doctrines, which included many of the early gnostic beliefs.

The ideas of penance, self-flagellation, and “salvation by works,” took root. As the centuries passed, the divide between early biblical Christianity, and the actual occultic practices of the leadership hierarchy grew greater. Indulgences (buying “forgiveness”), confession to a priest, and the angling for political power at the highest level of the Roman hierarchy became more pronounced.

By the early middle ages, powerful Italian families such as the Medicis and the Borgias began using methods such as poisoning and assassinations, and spying upon enemies, to consolidate their power and gain election to the papacy.

The term "Vatican spy" was born during this period. The monarchs of Europe were well aware that the Pope in Rome had agents in their courts who spied upon them and reported their activities to the Vatican – including whether the required tithe monies were being sent to Rome. These Vatican spies and agents became consolidated under the military power of the Roman Catholic Church: the Jesuit Society. This Society was responsible for the establishment of the opium trade between China and Europe, among other less than savory acts.

During the late middle ages, the Jesuits began sending "tutors" to instruct the monarchs of Europe in Latin, mathematics and higher learning. They were considered the finest instructors in the world, and this gave them access to the children of the monarchy and wealthy during the 1500s and 1600s, where they could accomplish their real agenda: putting these royal children under their sway through secret occultic training. This is one reason why all the royal families of Europe became heavily involved in the occult and in serving the Vatican through membership in at least one of the twelve secret societies, such as the Illuminati and the Knights Templar.

The Jesuit Society is extremely hierarchical, and military. They are headed by a man known as the "Black Pope," or Superior General, and this man is the REAL leader of the Vatican. He is feared by all within its corriders, and is at the center of a web of intrigue, vice and power that is difficult for many to comprehend.

Directly beneath him are three generals, known as the "First General," "Second General" and "Third General." These are part of a council of twelve top generals in the order. They are quite proud of the fact that they are the actual physical generals of satan's army on earth, and each commands thousands of troops throughout the world ready to do battle for the one they honor: satan himself, and his seed. These generals believe they have been directly commissioned by satan himself.

II. What does the Jesuit Order Believe?

The Jesuits are occultists of the highest level (mages). Each member has been dedicated to satan from birth, and trained in occultism from infancy on. The Jesuit monasteries are used as training grounds for the young Jesuits, who are brought in at birth. Those who survive the rigors of the first months of infancy (when "weeding out" is done, and only one in ten infants survives) undergo extensive training in all the occultic arts, and in all of the intrigues and deceptive practices that the Jesuit Order is infamous for.

The Jesuits believe the oldest lie man has believed since the Garden of Eden: they believe in the ability of man to ascend and to achieve "god" status through acts of devotion and service to "gods", specifically, what they call the gods of the Pantheon that rules over Gaia (earth dimension). Failure to obey the Directives of the Order, or disobedience to this pantheon, results in descending into hell in their belief system. They believe that ascending is the act of overcoming the flesh and any human feelings and emotions; it is the act of moving to a higher spiritual plane where feelings and needs are left behind.

This is often accomplished through the act of physical dying and resuscitation (this will be discussed more later). The process of undergoing repeated deaths during their training as mages is supposed to help a Jesuit overcome the fear of death, and promote the ability to travel through the dimensions.

The Jesuits believe in numerous dimensions (13), just as most deep occultists do. These dimensions reflect the spiritual travels outlined in Greek mythology, which are actually records of spiritual travels, such as the Iliad. The beings who inhabit these dimensions are considered "enlightened" and the goal of dimensional travel is to achieve enlightenment, to shed mortality, and to ascend. These travels are quite painful and dangerous, and the Jesuits celebrate those who are able to travel to the highest levels and become an "ascended master."

AntiChristian, Anti-Semitic

An important aspect of the Jesuit belief system is their utter hatred of Christianity and the Jewish race. Their beliefs are in direct opposition to the commands of God as outlined in the Bible, and they directly teach their followers from infancy on to hate and fear the Christian God, Jesus, and Scripture, and to hate the Jewish race. Their hatred is so great, that the Vatican helped fund the nazi cause behind the scenes, and actively supported Hitler during the Second World War, until public opinion caused them to do so secretly. They funded Mengele's experiments in the concentration camps (this will be discussed in more detail later in this book) and created the "Vatican ratline" that helped Mengele and other infamous nazi war criminals to escape to Argentiina and other countries.

Satan's Throne

The Vatican was built over the original spiritual center for early Rome, a cave that was inhabited by the beings "Roma" and "Vatus" who gave it its name (these were later changed to Romulus and Remus). While there are several public levels to the Vatican, there are also several levels beneath the ground that the public is completely unaware of, where spiritual ceremonies are conducted. These ceremonies revolve around the worship of the four entities that the Fathers venerate:

Althea (the "tree of life" which also gave the name "Aborae de Vitae" to the primary Jesuit training monastery north of Rome), and who also represents "The Spirit";
The Beast, whose room and alter are five levels below ground, hewn out of stone and where sacrifices occur both on the alter and in the cave-like room beneath the alter;
Satan: Satan's Throne is a magnificent room that sits at the lowest level.
"He who has come" (Satan's physical Son)

Satan's Throne

The stories at the Vatican say that it took over forty years of work by several crews of workmen to hew out Satan's throne, which is a large room, and to polish the bare rock into a room of great beauty. Trompe d'leoil paintings of windows adorn the walls, lit by recessed lights; and the smooth, marble-like floor is covered with designs painted in gold and black ebony. The long hall has a long red carpet that leads up to a raised dais, and on this dais is a huge throne, one that would require a giant to fill: Satan's throne. After it was built, the work crews were all killed, to prevent their leaking the secret of what lies beneath the upper levels of the Vatican.

Satan's Throne is the spiritual center of the Vatican, the "heart" of its activities.

On specified days, a long red carpet is strewn with ground shards of glass, or nails, and when the doors are opened, the hall is lined with Jesuit Fathers on both sides, who consider it an honor to be present. Petitioners then arrive, and must crawl on their hands and knees over the glass in order to kneel at the throne. Inhabiting it is a huge shadowy being whose ring the petitioner kisses, then arises when told and asked their request.

If their request is considered favorable, it is granted, but always at a huge price. The death of an enemy may be given, but the petitioner must first offer a huge sacrifice, and undergo enormous pain. Information regarding future events; or the secret machinations or plots of others may be provided, but there is always a price.

At times, those coming to the throne come there for judgment. They have been found to be traitors to the Fathers or the coming order, or to have wandered from “the path of obedience” because Satan is the worst legalist on earth, and punishes heavily any who even think disloyal or disobedient thoughts towards him and his cause. The judgments may vary from an extremely painful and expensive penance, to actual death, which is executed within the throne room.

Sacrifices within the throne room are frequent, bloody and dramatic. This is an integral part of the Jesuit worship system, because at its heart, the Roman establishment is occultic.

Satan’s Son

For years the Jesuits called the expected leader “he who is to come,” “the anointed one,” and considered him the bringer of the New Order they have longed for over the centuries. The Jesuits specifically had an antichrist breeding program, in which they took young women who were mated to satan himself in order to carry his child. The fetuses were spontaneously aborted in most cases; or else killed the mother prior to birth.

In 2000, an infant was born, and the word was out: “he who is to come” had arrived, and is being carefully raised and tutored by the Jesuit Fathers at the Vatican.

While he is still a child, he is extremely physically beautiful, and filled with evil. At this time, he sits on satan’s throne, and makes judgments, since he is his direct seed, or so the Jesuit Fathers believe. Because of their deception, the Jesuits completely discount the Christian God, or the fact that in His Word He states His complete knowledge of these activities and plots. Psalm 2 shows that the LORD knows all about the plots and machinations going on in Rome, and the worldwide influence they hold over world leaders. It is interesting to see that the LORD finds these plots laughable, because His power is so much greater. Unfortunately, this fact does not deter the ongoing planning and deception that occurs in the Vatican.

Helping the Survivor

A Jesuit is an individual who has been deeply steeped in the darkest levels of occultism since infancy; and they will have made direct vows to Satan and/or the antichrist to serve in their armies. In order to heal, these vows and covenants (made to the death) must be broken and the demonic entities within that represent them expelled.

Every Jesuit will have representation of the Tree of Life, The Beast, and Satan within their systems, and a large system dedicated to the New World Order. They will have been assigned a leadership role within the NWO, and may find it difficult to give this up, since this role gave meaning to their (extremely) painful childhood.

The core beliefs will be based upon Order Directives; the Jesuit survivor will believe that any transgression must be painfully punished, in order to prevent the systems from "descending into hell." These beliefs will need to be addressed again and again, since they run throughout every system, all the way to the unconscious and core level. Controllers in one system may decide to give up this belief, but at the next level in, it must be addressed again.

Until these beliefs are addressed at core level, the systems will attempt to continue contact (to prevent going to "hell"); or the survivor will be heavily punished within, and will suffer greatly. This and other topics will be addressed in more detail later in this book.

It can help to see that the Vatican, and its antichrist system, are already known to the LORD, who will overthrow it. In Revelations 17,:1-6, there is a perfect description of Rome:
Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and talked with me, saying to me,["Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot who sits on many waters, 2 with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication."
3 So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. And I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. 4 The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the filthiness of her fornication.[b] 5 And on her forehead a name was written:
MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS
OF THE EARTH.
6 I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement.
The Meaning of the Woman and the Beast
7 But the angel said to me, "Why did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and the ten horns. 8 The beast that you saw was, and is not, and will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.[c]
9 "Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits..

Share this:

Twitter

Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018

III. How are the Jesuits financed?

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022

In "mind control"

August 30, 2021
In "mind control"

In "healing"

AB 11:57 am on August 18, 2021

Thank you xx

★ Liked by 1 person

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits – Lifting the Wool

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits - Veronica Swift

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Are Vaccinations the Mark of the Beast?

III. How are the Jesuits financed? →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 3:29 pm on August 30, 2021

Tags: healing (43), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

III. How are the Jesuits financed?

The Jesuit Order is financed through the offices of the Vatican, the wealthiest organization on earth. Most people have no idea of the vast wealth that this epicenter of the Roman Catholic Church holds. The Vatican Library alone holds books that are priceless, many of which have never been publicly catalogued for security reasons (the Vatican has private, highly secure records of their assets such as these. The assets reported publicly are only a tiny fraction of this organization's true wealth which is greater than the finances of all the world's billionaires combined).

Beneath the Vatican Library are secret vaults with treasures such as priceless art confiscated during the crusades and the World Wars (the Vatican shared the treasures confiscated from wealthy Jewish families with the Nazis, for instance). There are vaults dedicated to holding jewel-encrusted icons, gems, and priceless artifacts from the beginning of time, because the Vatican has a huge collector of ancient statuary and jewelry. Cups, jewels and golden idols from Mesopotamia and Babylon share space with treasures from the reigns of the Pharoahs (many of the earliest raids on the tombs of the pharaohs by Egyptians years before archeologists began exploration caused the empty tombs that were often found; these artifacts were often sold to wealthy Vatican representatives over the years who were highly interested in collecting them for spiritual as well as investment purposes).

Wealth and treasures from every great civilization are stored in these secret, highly secure vaults that only the privileged few are allowed to know even exist, much less to enter. The physical wealth these represent could buy the world's greatest corporations several times over, but this is not where the day-to-day income comes into the Vatican. Instead, there are other, darker sources.

Sex Trafficking

The Jesuits oversee the worldwide center for infant and child sex trafficking, which is located in South Amsterdam in the Netherlands. South Amsterdam, known as "sin city" to pedophiles and decadents in Europe, is where the largest brokers in the sex industry live. These brokers regularly send out agents throughout the world, targeting China (where female infants are often given to them free), Asia, Malaysia, the Ukraine, and Euro-Russia.

Follow •••

A common misconception is that sex slaves are mostly female. In Amsterdam, both male and female infants and children are equally bought and sold, since pedophiles unfortunately seek both. The agents bring in literal truckloads of infants they have gathered by going to poor families or orphanages. These nicely dressed, wealthy, friendly westerners promise placement in good homes and a better life through adoption for the infants, and will often give good donations to the orphanages that provide “pretty children” and infants on a regular basis.

The trucks of infants and young children cross national lines through routes that have been bought, with guards sympathetic (and well-paid). The infants are cared for by women who give them drugged bottles to keep them quiet during the journey. These women are told to never disclose what they are doing, under pain of their entire families being killed.

Once in Amsterdam, the brokers come and inspect the infants and children. They then place bids on them (based upon the infamous “broker’s list” which lists the current black market value of these children as if they were commodities). The brokers are purchasing infants and children for the large, wealthy exclusive brothels, which are often franchises that they work for, and for the private auction houses, the largest of which is located in a suburb of Paris, France.

It is a common sight for those ‘in the know’ in South Amsterdam to see the sex trade brokers gathered at their favorite (and very private) coffeehouse in the morning, discussing the ups and downs of “the trade” and their evaluation of the latest ‘shipment.’

During these coffee discussions, they will also whisper about another pet peeve: the fees that must be paid “upstream” to the representatives of the person who oversees the entire sex industry in South Amsterdam: the Jesuit Father over Amsterdam. His offices are located in a palatial private mansion with walled gardens, where he also lives. This man is kept well-informed through his various agents of exactly how much money each broker has brought in during the week, and of how much they owe him (and the Vatican) for the privilege of operating in a city that looks the other way at its most infamous income source.

Failure to pay this “tithe” once can result in a warning; twice, in the death of the broker. Few are foolish enough to even think of trying to cheat the Father over Amsterdam of his dues. This man has agents throughout Amsterdam, in sources that the brokers would never suspect, who regularly check their books and report income, and any discrepancies.

The sex trade in Amsterdam brings in billions of dollars each year. This is because of the high price placed on infants and on children with “specialized training” in sexual skills. These children are often auctioned at the highly exclusive auction houses of Europe, where they are purchased by procurateurs who work for the wealthy families of Europe.

There are auction houses in Brussels, Belgium; Berlin, Germany; Amsterdam, Geneva, Moscow, and other locations. But the largest is located in Paris. Located in a large mansion, the evening begins with members of the wealthiest families in Europe and their consorts gathering for a gourmet dinner at 10 pm. At midnight, the auctions begin, starting with preteen children who often have specialized sexual skills. Twins are especially prized. As the night goes on, the children get younger and younger, until by 4 am the infants are auctioned. The procurateurs purchase these children for use by their wealthy clients during private parties (which the children rarely survive). The clients come to oversee these purchases, and also for amusement, since many enjoy watching the auction process.

Some infants are kept in Amsterdam, which is known for the availability of children of every age. Many people are aware that in Amsterdam, the prostitutes dress up and sit in the windows to advertise their availability. What is less publicly known is that in the early morning hours, some of these window displays used to include a woman holding an infant. To the unknowing, this is a touching display of maternal care. But the residents of South Amsterdam knew that this is actually a signal that this house offers infants and small children to its customers.

Assassinations

There is a huge, ongoing worldwide market for the use of agents with specialized training in quietly and anonymously killing targets, without leaving any trace evidence (or, with skill in leaving a false trail). Premiums are paid for those who can take out political figures, and especially targets with bodyguards and those who utilize high security measures.

By far the most sought-after assassins have MI6 (military intelligence level six) training. The Jesuits have each of their agents go through MI6 training and hire them out to other organizations or individuals for fees. The contracts are actually brokered through third parties, and the contractor has no idea that the agent they have hired works for the Vatican. This often serves Vatican purposes; the agent earns them top dollar, but they also gather important intelligence at the same time about the operations and goals of other organizations, governments or individuals when their agent returns home and discloses to them.

Since the 1300s, when the Borgia family regularly poisoned their enemies in order to gain political and spiritual power in Rome, the Vatican has also conducted its own assassinations. These are never traced back to Rome, unless they want a message sent to the survivors. Many times, the assassinations are not simply conducted physically; their agents are also skilled in theta, or spiritual, assassination techniques (this will be discussed further in the spiritual programming section of this book).

Intelligence

One of the most valuable commodities in the world is information, especially about an organization's competitors and enemies. Good intel about certain organizations or individuals can be extremely difficult to obtain, and those that can provide it can ask and be paid top dollar.

The Jesuits use their vast network of worldwide operatives with specialized training to obtain this information. The term "Vatican Spy" became infamous during the middle ages, when the monarchs of Europe became aware that there were secret agents unknown to them reporting their most hidden activities to Rome. This spy network has only grown since then, and the Vatican relies on the intelligence they provide for its own protection and planning, as well as to help further their goals. If they believe that intel will help their cause, they will arrange for it to come to the attention of the individual or organization they want it to – for a hefty fee, of course.

This intel will never appear to come from Rome. Roman agents never appear to work for Rome, but instead for other organizations or causes. The purchaser may believe that they are gathering intel from a valued Arabic contact, from an Israeli sympathizer, from a Russian mercenary, or a Templar Knight in Canada. They will not suspect the Jesuits, because their agents are always programmed to have several layers of unbreakable covers

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Vatican Book Part 1	The Hierarchy of the Occult	Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)
August 17, 2021	May 3, 2018	September 8, 2022
In "healing"	In "mind control"	In "healing"

Pingback: Child Sex Trafficking by the Jesuits | cathy fox blog on child abuse

Pingback: AMSTERDAM: Hoofdstad van de mensenhandel. Mogelijk gemaakt door het Vaticaan. | De Binnenlandsche Bataafsche Courant

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican Book Part 1

book part 4 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 5:27 pm on September 30, 2021

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4

Early Splitting

The first weeks of life for an infant born to the Jesuits are very busy and extremely painful. This is when the first splits are split again, and templates for systems are created and organized. Spiritual programming is also conducted in a more methodical method.

The first organization and traumas occur with “white room” and “black room” training. The infant undergoes traumas which include: being quickly lowered while the head is supported (to make the infant feel as if they are falling and initiate the startle reflex); peeling of skin with sharp knives from the sole of the feet, the backs of the legs, the backs of the arms, and the back (infants heal very quickly, with minimal scarring, since only the very top layer of skin is peeled off); digital rape; electroshock; near-drowning in a tub of water; partial suffocation; burning with fire on digits and the soles of the feet. These are called “prime traumas” and become the foundational physical traumas for the systems being created.

Along with the physical trauma is severe spiritual trauma. Rituals are conducted, and demons are attached to the splits being created, to cause the splits to remain apart (the brain will normally try to rapidly re-attach splits during infancy unless demonic barriers are put in place). The impartation is often done through the laying on of hands of the Father or programmer on the infant’s head and/or belly.

The initial, primary programming, occurs either in a white room, where the programmers, walls, clothing and lights are all white (this would occur for the presentation or cover programming), or in an all-black room where the only light comes from a black, or ultraviolet, light, if any. This is where theta (spiritual) programming and the programming of the true deeper (back) layers occurs.

One reason that the initial theta, or spiritual, programming occurs in an all-black room is not only for mental organization, but to also decrease the amount of interaction with the physical world via sight and the senses that will occur within these parts being created. Many of these parts are created literally in darkness, and have never seen daylight throughout their lives un occurs.

Follow •••

The primary core splits, and the master controllers are always created first. These will take on the roles and names of spiritual entities, since a Jesuit system is first and primarily spiritual, designed to serve satan, the antichrist, and the beast (father, son and spirit). All three will be represented in these first splits along with other deities.

The presentations are also created, and dedicated to deities with roles of amnesia; in fact, the presentation undergoes as much or more programming than any other parts in Jesuit systems, which tends to surprise survivors. who may have believed that these systems "didn't go through bad things." They have, and their traumas are among the worst, which is why presenter programming is often the last to heal in many systems.

These traumas fuel the deep amnesia that is always present in Jesuit systems: there are always huge barriers placed between the presentations ("hosts"), the cover programming, the Vatican programming, and the New World Order programming.

Buffers

In these sophisticated systems, buffers will be created between the front and back with one sole purpose: to hide the extent of the programming, by "buffering" the feelings between front and back, and maintaining emotional and memory distance between the two. The buffers will always be very void of feeling, and extremely traumatized, since they "hide the back" and help make the programming "undetectable" to the world, and the survivor.

Brain Wave Programming, Early Theta and Spiritual Training

The Jesuits utilize the fact that when a person's brain waves are in theta state, they are the most open to the spiritual realm. This is why much of their spiritual training is conducted when the individual is in theta state.

Early Brain Wave Programming

The infant is taught to stay in theta state by attaching electrodes to their head that pick up brain waves and show them on a monitor. When the infant personality that is being trained is in theta state, the infant is heavily praised. If the personality "bounces" out of theta state, as is normal, the infant is heavily shocked. Eventually, the personalities created learn to stay permanently in theta state (this same training method is also used for the personalities in other brain wave states, to teach them to stay in the desired brain wave state).
To the left above is a graph of brain wave states (the major ones except epsilon are shown). Gamma is the highest brain wave state, and will occur when a person is in a highly excited or nervous state. This is where loyalty programming and sabotage scripts will later be programmed in, since the high anxiety in this state will trigger calling the police, accuse the helper of kidnapping, or other self-sabotage, if someone tries to help the survivor.

Beta state is a normal alert state, and this is where military systems and those that need a normal alert state will be created. Alpha is more relaxed, and accessing systems and presentations will be created in this state. Delta is the deepest brain state, and will hold semi-unconscious and even unconscious beliefs; delta programming will be discussed in more detail later in this book.

Theta Training

Once they can stay in theta state, the early spiritual training begins. The thetas are kept in a blackened room, and the people who interact with them appear shadowy. Actors dressed as demons will come into the room, and “chain” the infant to them. The actors demonstrate to the infant how demons act, growling, snarling and torturing them in various ways. At the same time, the infant is told that THEY are the demon. This is how demonic punishers and controllers are created in the first weeks of life.

The Jesuits understand that an infant must be shown an external reality in order to internalize it. The infant must internalize in order to establish the programming that the Jesuits desire for later control.

The theta state parts in the infants are left in darkened cribs and are given objects such as decapitated heads to play with; or demonic toys such as fetishes. The infant’s fingers are placed around the neck of a kitten, and when they squeeze, as babies will, they are highly praised. The infant has no idea of what they are doing at this stage, but the foundation for later assassination training is being put in place.

Demons come into the room, and talk and play with the infant’s theta parts. This is their first bonding, with these creatures that appear horrific.

Gradually, the infant is taught to call on the demonic for theta capabilities. The Jesuit Father will throw a ball at the infant to hit it, and encourage the baby to spiritually throw the ball back at them (they are too young to have the physical coordination to do so, but can easily do this demonically). Throwing a ball demonically is demonstrated, and the baby is hit again and again, until in anger and frustration, they are able to loft the ball back at the person hitting them. This is heavily praised, since the infant is using spiritual power to accomplish what it cannot physically, and using its hurt and rage at being abused and turning it to hurt another back. This is the early foundation for later theta capabilities.

The infants are taken to rituals, where they watch sacrifices performed, their infant seats propped amidst the fires. They are also taken to re-enactments of “hell” where demons dance and torture victims, and the first subconscious images of hell and the need to punish even the slightest disobedience are ingrained. The infants undergo extensive torture from demons, to teach them in these first weeks of life to fear “descending” and “going to hell” above any other punishment.

White Room Programming

In the white room, the other controllers are being created as well. Men and women dressed as members of the Greek Pantheon (for the white/Illuminati or Beast-Loyal systems), the Roman Pantheon (for the Black, or Vatican/Satan-Loyal systems), and the Ancient Pantheon (for the grey, or New World Order/Antichrist-Loyal systems) visit the infant, introduce themselves, explain who they are, and create a spiritual tie to these parts. They literally take cords (white, black, and grey) and tie themselves physically to the infant for hours; they also force the infant to undergo rituals dedicating these parts to the demons. The infant also watches videos, virtual reality programs, and holograms in which these ‘gods and goddesses’ of the Pantheons talk to them, and explain that they also are a god or goddess.

This basic programming all takes place in the first three months of life, and is continued for years afterwards.

Mentors are also bonded to the young theta splits. These are individuals with strong theta skills in place as well (otherwise, they would be maimed by the infant who has not learned to “focus” or control their developing skills). These mentors will “rescue” the young theta splits from death during setups time and again, to teach them to trust the mentor with their life. This is important for later theta spiritual programming, where the young child will travel demonically through the dimensions and must follow their mentor, or risk death.

The mentoring relationship creates a deep “mother-daughter” or “father-daughter” bond at the deepest spiritual levels, and is the only semblance of a “mother” relationship that a young child is allowed to have in the Jesuit order. All other mother figures in their life are purposely extremely abandoning and emotionally unavailable, to force the child to trust their spiritual mentor (often viewed as a “cult mother”) as their true “mother bond.” Healing for the survivor will include grieving the extremely distorted attachment bonds that were allowed, as well as remembering the terrible abandonment by maternal figures during infancy.

The survivor may also have to work through the grieving that occurs when they remember that as an older teen or adult, they mentored spiritual (and/or) biological children of their own. These love bonds are real, and very deep, and are held unconsciously. These bonds are often manipulated in attempts to “draw” the person back to the group, since the survivor may be completely unaware of their emotional and spiritual attachment to a person they mentored, until the parts that bonded choose to bring this knowledge to conscious awareness.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

book part 4	Exposing the Vatican: Part 5	Book Part 8
September 13, 2021	October 7, 2021	December 23, 2021
In "healing"	In "healing"	In "healing"

heavenlyrevelationsfromdaddy 2:52 am on October 5, 2021

Fantastic info, little lost on buffers

★ Like

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits - Veronica Swift

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← book part 4

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 4:30 pm on September 13, 2021

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occultic, programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

book part 4

Trigger Warning: Please be aware that this information was meant to help therapists understand programming by a large occultic organization, and could be very triggering for survivors.

IV. Programming Methods

In this section, I will discuss some of the methodologies that the Jesuits use to train and program the members of their order. This information not only discloses how their work is done; it is also the "master template" that the 12 secret societies that serve the Vatican also use within their organizations (with modifications). These organizations include Illuminati, Knights Templar, Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Magnificat, Trinity, Order of the Golden Dawn, Rosicrucians and others.

This is by no means comprehensive, and instead, is simply a short overview. Also, programming methods are always being updated, and new experimental programs developed, so that any book on programming will be outdated within weeks of its writing. But the principles remain the same over time, even if some of the methods change.

Mengele

Josef Mengele is considered "the father of modern programming" due to the information and methods that he developed during his infamous end-point experiments on infants, young children and adults inside the Nazi death camps. These experiments were funded in part by the Vatican, as well as other organizations, because they were highly interested in improving their methodologies.

Before Mengele, most serious programming was begun between birth to two years old (the age at which programming was initiated varied between groups), since behaviorists believed that the infant brain was too immature to hold much programming. Mengele proved with his well-kept records based upon unutterably cruel research done on infants that the most effective programming was done prenatally; that prenatal programming automatically enters into the subconscious and deeper brain, and that the most effective time to create the core personality splits is during the first five months of life after conception. He also proved that fetuses can see, understand and respond to programming cues and images at this time in life, and can be taught to organize the splits based upon these cues.

A fetus and an infant can much more easily internalize an external object than an older child, since the fetal brain has no external world to contradict what it is told; and the infant brain is at its peak ability to absorb and process information during the first days of life.

The information that Mengele obtained was combined with data from other behaviorists, including attachment theory, to create programming that is considered “unbreakable.” After the second world war, Mengele was often flown to Europe to program Jesuit infants. He worked for the Vatican, and left his personal stamp on many infants and young children programmed by them. He was also hired out at times (for an exorbitant fee) to other organizations, but his primary post-war work was continuing his research and programming Jesuit infants.

Mengele ran an infamous (within the occultic world) research center (“the institute”) where he employed the top trainers within the 12 societies, who continued his research under his (brutal) supervision on end point trauma (trauma that takes the subject to physical or psychological death) and other traumas, and the effect on the human psyche. The volumes and volumes of carefully documented research data from that time are still held within the Vatican vaults, and have been replicated and shared throughout the world. The research that he began is still ongoing, as the search for better, “unbreakable” methods of programming continues. One of the larger research centers for experimental programming is on the West Coast of the United States; the large research facility is underground, and is combined with sophisticated milab (military laboratory) research. Another is in East Berlin; and another is in Prague in Europe, and yet another one exists in Rome.

In the following sections, I have divided up the programming methodologies used by the Jesuits into age categories, since different ages are considered “prime times” for the installation of different programs. But all foundational spiritual and other programs are created during the first few months of life in fetuses unfortunate enough to be selected by the Jesuits.

A. Infant Programming

When a Jesuit infant is born, it has already undergone significant programming within the womb. Immediately after conception and implantation of the genetically altered embryo (more on genetic research will be discussed later). Soon after conception, the occultic oracles place their hands on the womb of the expectant mother, to determine whether or not the embryo should be allowed to live. If yes, the embryo is dedicated to a demonic entity, and continues to grow.

By four months of gestation, early brain waves (delta waves) begin to appear in the fetal brain, and with it, some degree of consciousness. At this time, a primary trauma will often be intentionally engineered, to create one of the first splits (others will have been created even earlier). Often, the mother and fetus will be injected in utero with an agent that causes extreme pain, but does not cause labor. The fetus experiences extreme terror, excruciating pain, and will hear the mother screaming “Get it out!” regarding the fetus that appears to be causing her the intense pain in her womb.

This is a primary rejection trauma, and the pain and rejection combined will cause a core personality split. This split is in a deep delta (unconscious) brain state, and the programming begins in earnest immediately afterwards. Headphones are placed on the womb, and for hours, the young fetal splits are exposed to recordings regarding their identity, their wants, their beliefs, and their role in the new world order. This programming occurs during the 16th week of gestation onwards, and the information in the recordings is recorded at the deepest unconscious levels before the infant is ever born.

Secondary, tertiary and other traumas will also occur within the womb, with spiritual ceremonies that dedicate these intra-utero splits to different demonic entities. Before the infant draws his or her first breath, they will have the foundational core splits, their beliefs and identities firmly in place.

These traumas can include the use of electromagnetic waves to cause extreme pain in the fetus; fetal surgery; breaking the arm of the fetus; electroshock, flatlining the mother (to punish the fetus, who is blamed for the mother's "death" and resultant spiritual pain/anxiety) and other traumas. The mother is carefully monitored with sophisticated, high-tech medical intervention to prevent abortion or premature labor, which is the body's natural response to these types of traumas.

The demonic is used to keep the splits in the fetus separate, since in nature, the splits would try to rejoin automatically. The demonic creates a deep feeling of terror and re-experiencing of the primary traumas should the prenatal psyche attempt to join together.

To enable the fetus to survive such traumas and become dissocative (rather than give up and die), immediately after primary rejection traumas and other traumas, the programmers will offer love and care to the fetus in order to create a deep bond with the programmer (s). This is done by speaking kindly to the fetus and birthmother, soothing them and meeting their needs, with phrases such as "I love you" etc. being used to create attachments. These deep bonds must be addressed for healing.

Birth Trauma

Upon birth, an infant that is to be used by the Jesuits undergoes a very specific trauma. As soon as the infant is born, a Jesuit Father takes the infant and begins to smother it to death. The infant is asked spiritually, "Do you want to live?" Behind the Father is satan, and the infant is aware within their spirit that if they answer, "Yes" that satan will enter them. This being is hideous and terrifying, and it takes a very strong will to live to respond affirmatively. If the infant responds "No" they are smothered to death. If yes, they are allowed to breathe, and with their first cries in the physical world, satan attaches to the core.

The birth mother will be killed at the point of birth, and the newborn will be shown the body (which has been split open from the birth canal upwards) and is told "this is your fault" to create extreme guilt in the infant, and this is an underlying foundation for later guilt-based programming.

Nannies

When infants are very young, there are caretakers that perform physical care for the infant. These "nannies" or surrogate mothers take care of several infants at a time. While caretaking, they give bottles, rock the infant, and sing songs to them. These songs always contain programming embedded within them; they are songs about various spiritual (demonic) entities and praise to them, or of the joy of the coming order, or other messages. The goal is for the infant to associate caretaking and the relief of physical distress or abandoment feelings with love and loyalty to the order and the beings described. This is a terrible manipulation of an infant's need to attach to a caregiver, since these early songs are also embedded within the subconscious of the infant.

Helping the survivor

Because the prenatal and birth traumas are so emotionally and spiritually devastating, they will often only come up fairly late in therapy if ever, after the survivor has received help for other later splits. These primary traumas cause intense feelings of grief, rejection and despair, and are often the prime traumas underlying suicide programming. The demonic terror that causes fear of coming together may affect all parts of the systems, causing a prime fear of remembering or coming together for all parts, at an unconscious level.

It takes an experienced therapist to help an individual through these types of trauma. The survivor will be understanding that their entire life, even in the womb, was planned and programmed out, and feel intense anger at the betrayal and manipulation it involves. They may direct this anger at God, wondering where He was when this happened; and they may wonder if any part of them was ever not "owned" by the group.

This is where scriptures regarding God's love for individuals both before and during their creation in the womb can help; as well as praying and asking the Lord to show the survivor what He thought of them at conception. This is needed truth, to counteract a lifetime of being told and believing lies such as that the survivor was always the "Jesuit's", since they will have no memories before the prime traumas.

Because the programming and messages are implanted at such a very deep, unconscious level, it can also help to use a digital recorder, and record very specific scriptures and truths to counteract the lies (i.e. "reprogramming" with truth). It may take a significant amount of time to bring truth to these core beliefs, and is one reason that controllers at higher levels in the system may seem so "resistant" to truth: they may have buried at the unconscious, fetal level, prime traumas and programming that counteract other truths brought in.

Some helpful scriptures can include:

Ps.139:13: "For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb."

This verse directly counteracts the lie that the cult "owned" the person from the beginning, and shows who truly gave them life and their individual characteristics, in spite of prenatal programming.

Psalm 51:6. "Yet you desired faithfulness even in the womb; you taught me wisdom in that secret place."

How does the Lord teach wisdom in the womb? Only He truly knows the answer. But He does minister even to the fetus in the womb, as is made clear in this verse. The programming messages are NOT the only things the fetus was aware of before birth.

Isaiah 44:2. “This is what the Lord says— he who made you, who formed you in the womb, and who will help you: Do not be afraid, Jacob, my servant, Jeshurun, whom I have chosen.”

How wonderful for the survivor to know that they were loving formed in the womb by the LORD, and that He chose them before birth, regardless of what the oracles said.

Isaiah 49:1. “Listen to me, you islands; hear this, you distant nations:Before I was born the Lord called me; from my mother’s womb he has spoken my name.”

Not only did the Lord call the survivor to know and serve Him from the womb, He even spoke their (real, not cult) name. He spoke the name of their future destiny, and no amount of programming can undo this.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018
In "mind control"

Vatican book part 10
June 11, 2022
In "healing"

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

Ellen Atkin 5:51 pm on September 13, 2021

Huge thanks. Your courage and warrior status is very much appreciated.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← III. How are the Jesuits financed?

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 9:38 pm on October 7, 2021

Tags: exposure, Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5

Survival of the Fittest

Mengele was a firm believer in the "survival of the fittest" and during the 1940s,1950s and 1960s infants trained by him and the Jesuits underwent terrible trials to determine which infants would live, and which would die. This helped them determine not only which were the strongest infants, but also which ones had the strongest will to live, a requirement for the terrible programming that Jesuit children undergo.

As soon as the infants can crawl (around 3 months of age in these highly intelligent infants), the first survival trial is conducted. Dozens of infants are placed in a room, with a barrier in front of them. In the center of a large room are three bottles of milk. The babies are hungry and thirsty, since they have not been fed for a day.

The barrier is raised, and the infants literally race by crawling to the center of the room. The strongest crawl over others and push the smaller or weaker ones aside. The first ones there get the bottles, and must keep it and drink it while other infants are trying to grab it away.

The three that "win" get to drink the bottle, and then watch the systematic slaughter of the infants that did not get a bottle, because the losers were deemed "inferior." This installs a terrible survival guilt at a very early age; the infant wants to eat, and to live, but is shown that their living means that others must die in this setup.

The message that only the strong are allowed to live is ingrained very deeply through this and similar experiments. After several trials, the Jesuits have created their first classes, or groups. Jesuit children are raised in classes of twelve at a time, and these infants will become closer than any physical brothers during their childhood, in part because of their ability to survive and trauma bond with one another.

This is one reason that the survivor will fear and despise weakness in themself and others. To them, weakness has always meant death.

Early Attachment Bonding and Utter Darkness

The basis of obedience within the Jesuits is formed upon two primary forms of programming: the avoidance of pain (the pain of "descending" and thus going to "hell"), or operant conditioning; and the formation of extremely deep attachments to primary figures. Their belief is that the combination of these two create "unbreakable" programming, and the truth is that very few Jesuits every truly do leave the order. The attachment bonding described here, in earliest infancy, makes it extremely difficult to do so.

When the infant is only a few weeks old, it is placed in a completely darkened room, with no noise or stimulus of any kind, and abandoned. This abandonment, which lasts for several days, is extremely traumatizing to the infant. At first, the infant cries in a normal manner (distress), which then turns to anger as the abandonment continues. Eventually, the infant becomes exhausted, sleeps for longer and longer intervals, and stops crying; instead, it whimpers as utter despair begins to hit.

The infant is psychologically unable to cope with impending death, as its body and psyche begins shutting down in the early stages of dying. The infant comes to the realization that no one will ever come and rescue them, and they will die in complete and terrible darkness.

In complete despair, the infant is dying, when a soft light enters the room. A Jesuit Father comes in, carrying a warm bottle; behind him is Theo (their name for the "benevolent" manifestation of satan). With kind words, the Father picks the infant up, soothes him/her and gives a life-sustaining bottle. The infant is insanely grateful for this deliverance from "utter darkness" (the deepest level of "Jesuit hell" for the worst deeds, such as treachery and betrayal of the order). As the baby takes the bottle and is comforted, they bond completely to the Father, and to the being (Theo) who is superimposed upon the Father. The Father begins programming that they "owe their life" to him, that he "rescued them from utter darkness" for a "special purpose", that the infant is to "live and not die." Trauma bonding at a deep level occurs, and the Father appears like a god to the infant, and in fact, will hold the "theo" (God) position inside.

This bond will be built upon and layered upon over and over as the years go on. The infant will NOT be allowed to truly attach to ANYONE ELSE for the rest of their life. All other caretakers and friends in the early years will either be killed or appear to be killed, or terribly betray the infant/toddler/child to teach them that there is only one who can be trusted: the Father the infant formed a primary bond to, and the spirit "Theo." This is the core level of Jesuit bonding, and is by far the most difficult programming to break.

The infant will later "see' the nannies that cared for him/her killed, or will even be asked to "kill" them or agree to their being killed, by the Father they bonded to, to prevent the Father being killed (in terrible setups where the infant must choose which lives and which "dies"). These setups also test the strength of the infant's loyalty bond, which must be deep and unbreakable for successful later programming to occur. From the first days of life, the Jesuits begin installing utter and complete loyalty to them, represented by the primary Father the infant bonded with; and later, by three others they will also be allowed to attach to.

The primary mentor will always be a Jesuit Father that the infant (who is kept very young in the system) loves above any other, as described in the cruel abandonment scenario. The Father-mentee relationship is the deepest of all, as the Jesuit Father mentors others and molds them into his image. He will hold a "theo" or god place within the system, and this bond will be the hardest to break, since it represents the deepest attachment of the core to a human being.

The purpose of this mentoring is to draw the infant into a relationship with "Theo" (satan's benevolent personification) from its first days on earth. The Father will bond the infant to himself, and in doing so, bond the infant to the spiritual theo as well.

Helping the Survivor

The survivor of Jesuit programming has extremely disorganized attachment due to the fact that they have attached to satan himself (Theo) as well as their primary Father (referred to as "Father Theo"). There is a no less reliable being in creation to attach to, yet this was the infant's only choice during early childhood if they were to survive. If given another option, the infant would have rejectedbonding to satan.

The early trauma is so severe, that it can take months or even years to grieve for the manipulation and "detach" from these primary figures. It takes intense prayer, and a deep desire by the survivor, to break free of this programming that pivots upon the Jesuit's demonic use of infant attachment. The only real answer is for the survivor to choose to renounce the bonds to satan and the primary Jesuit Father, and to bond with Yeshua. During the interval, they will also need to bond at least temporarily with a caring figure who can represent the love of God to their systems, since these infants have never experienced this.

The older parts, once they become Christians, can help "reparent" the infants, helping them to understand that the Christian God truly does love them, and can keep them safe. Realizing at a deep level that Yeshua paid the full price for sins on the cross, and that their systems will not "descend" into hell and utter darkness, and realizing that the internal representations are based upon setups and manipulation, can help break the hold of this early attachment.

The survivor will experience attachment pain at the core level when these early setups and betrayals are remembered. They may feel infant terror at the thought of utter darkness. It is important to bind the demonic, and to prevent it from enhancing these memories, or the fear. They will often feel suicidal as the core despair, and the memory of the pain and betrayals comes up.

The survivor will test the love and caring of those they bond with outside of the Jesuit Order again and again. This is because they feel a huge "push pull" inside, and swing between craving love and nurturing, and wanting to distance themselves from any loving attention, which feels terrifying. Healing of this type of early wound is a process, and cannot be rushed, or the survivor will attempt to cope alone – and fall prey to reaccessing – since these infantile needs are used to push recontact programming.

Helpful Scriptures

Ps. 27:10. "When my father and my mother forsake me,Then the LORD will take care of me." This can help with the deep core attachment pain, to understand that the Lord loves the survivor, even when it seems that no one else ever has. It can be extremely difficult for the survivor to come to the terrible realization that they had NO real father or mother; only manipulative, abusive Jesuit Fathers and programmers during infancy.
The comfort that can only come from knowing that the Lord truly loves the survivor, and cares for

them, can help.
Ps.71:6. "By You I have been upheld from birth; You are He who took me out of my mother's womb. My praise shall be continually of You.: This verse counteracts again the lie that the Jesuit Father and satan "let them live" and instead shows the truth that the Lord is the one who gives life at birth.
The following scripture shows the spiritual condition that the motherless and fatherless Jesuit survivor find themselves in, and how the Lord responded to them. It answers how the Lord responds to this deep abandonment pain: It also shows why the survivor was able to survive the horrors of childhood and how it is possible for the survivor of this type of abuse to come to know the Lord:
Ezekial 14:4-16
4 As for your nativity, on the day you were born your navel cord was not cut, nor were you washed in water to cleanse you; you were not rubbed with salt nor wrapped in swaddling cloths. 5 No eye pitied you, to do any of these things for you, to have compassion on you; but you were thrown out into the open field, when you yourself were loathed on the day you were born.
6 "And when I passed by you and saw you struggling in your own blood, I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' Yes, I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' 7 I made you thrive like a plant in the field; and you grew, matured, and became very beautiful. Your breasts were formed, your hair grew, but you were naked and bare.
8 "When I passed by you again and looked upon you, indeed your time was the time of love; so I spread My wing over you and covered your nakedness. Yes, I swore an oath to you and entered into a covenant with you, and you became Mine," says the Lord GOD.
9 "Then I washed you in water; yes, I thoroughly washed off your blood, and I anointed you with oil. 10 I clothed you in embroidered cloth and gave you sandals of badger skin; I clothed you with fine linen and covered you with silk. 11 I adorned you with ornaments, put bracelets on your wrists, and a chain on your neck. 12 And I put a jewel in your nose, earrings in your ears, and a beautiful crown on your head. 13 Thus you were adorned with gold and silver, and your clothing was of fine linen, silk, and embroidered cloth. You ate pastry of fine flour, honey, and oil. You were exceedingly beautiful, and succeeded to royalty. 14 Your fame went out among the nations because of your beauty, for it was perfect through My splendor which I had bestowed on you," says the Lord GOD.
This wonderful verse also shows the destiny of the survivor called out from this fatherless and motherless upbringing and training: to be wholly the Lord's and to be clothed with His splendor, and become a testimony to His goodness.

B. Early System Organization

During infancy, the master and system controllers are created, along with the parts and roles within these systems. The Jesuits program three main levels into their systems: a white, or cover layer. This will appear to be Illuminati, Templar Knight, Opus Dei, or another occultic group, and is complete, even to the "core" for this level, which is a false core meant to mislead anyone who attempts to break into the system without authorization.

This cover layer is there for a reason. The Jesuits often have their agents highly placed within the occultic organizations they oversee, and they don't want the organizations to realize that the individual is not an actual member. The system is created to look completely like the system of someone raised and programmed by the organization. The agent is actually there to review and report on the activities of the group's leadership to the Vatican.

There is another reason for this cover programming. Jesuit agents often spend time in Israel and other countries doing intelligence work; if picked up by the Mossad (Israeli intelligence) or Spetz (Russian intelligence), and interrogated (tortured), the other organization will believe that the agent works for one of these groups, and have no idea that they actually work for the Vatican.

Jesuits who leave will always remember their white, or “cover” programming first and believe this is all there is inside. The other layers are much more loyal and difficult to uncover.

Beneath the white level is the black, or Vatican level of programming. This is where controllers and parts loyal to the Vatican, the Jesuits, and to Satan reside. High priests and priestesses that were involved in Vatican ceremonies will be part of the black theta system, just as high priests and priestesses loyal to the Illuminati (or other group)) and its deities will reside in the white theta system.

Beneath the white and black levels is the silver-grey, or new world order (antichrist) level. These systems have been created to serve the antichrist, and the NWO, are given specific roles, and are controllers for the two other levels. The grey level controllers and parts have always undergone extensive death and resuscitations, since this level is composed of “ascended masters” who have overcome their fear of death, and in fact, many of these parts live in a near-death, ecstatic and numb state of being. The Phoenix is the sign of an ascended master who has overcome death and risen again.

The infant is taught to organize their system along brain wave states, and to respond to cues. The earliest cues include golden whistles that play different notes worn by the Fathers, to summon specific parts; colors (the infant is taught to crawl to a green light when a gamma controller is out; to a blue light when a beta controller is out, a white light when an alpha controller is out, etc.).

Tones are also used extensively in early master programming. The top master controllers are each assigned a tone, to correspond with a brain wave state: the highest tone represents gamma, next highest, beta; next highest, alpha, then epsilon, then theta, and finally, the lowest, delta. Hearing the tone pulls the controllers for that system forward (the infant is taught with shocks and trauma combined with rewards to respond immediately).

Master controllers for a system are programmed to respond to the entire continuum, and internally, can “sing” the tones and hear back the response tones for their systems, for vary rapid and unconscious feedback loops and triggers. Jesuits always have perfect pitch because of this extensive use of tones and harmonics combined with the early songs used in programming, and have perfect auditory recall.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4
September 30, 2021

III. How are the Jesuits financed?
August 30, 2021

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

In "healing" In "mind control"

Pingback: Child Sex Trafficking by the Jesuits | cathy fox blog on child abuse

Naomi 12:44 am on October 11, 2021

For info (No need to publish my comment) :

The reference is Ezekial 16:4-14 and not Ezekial 14:4-16…

God bless you

Nao

★ Like

Pingback: Halloween 2021 | cathy fox blog on child abuse

T. 12:58 pm on December 12, 2021

“God” doesn’t love me or you. I’m not supposed to say that, but the one you call “God” has imprisoned us (bloodline families) here and we are at war with him. You don’t see the whole picture.

★ Like

T. 1:01 pm on December 12, 2021

Have you read Hidden_Hand interview? he mentioned you.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4 Exposing the Vatican: Part 6 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 5:38 pm on October 25, 2021

Tags: healing (43), Jesuit (10), Mengele (3), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Exposing the Vatican: Part 6

trigger warning: explicit discussion of programming, traumas and negative spirituality

Q'Ballah Programming

Mengele always installed the Q'Ballah in those he worked with, and he installed it into Jesuit systems as well. Althea, or the "Tree of Life" is the basis, with the three cords (white, black, grey) roots demonically entwined and going back to the systems described above. There is a primary death trauma for each of the core controllers for each of these roots.

An important part of q'ballah (black Kabbalah) programming is the creation of demonic portals. These are installed at points known as the sephiroth in the body and above it (see illustration below).
There will be death rituals, and demonic entities attached to each of these points, which become a portal or opening for demonic travel and communication. Tiferet represents the core, sits above the umblicus, and is the portal for satan himself. This is the first, or prime trauma, and this ritual involves the newborn or fetal umblicus being burned with a hot needle as the infant is put to death, then resuscitated.

Each portal (sephiroth) is installed via death trauma, and will have a portal guardian who is an ascended master from the grey (celestial)system sitting above it, who is both human and demonic. The guardians will have been heavily programmed to misrepresent their true names, due to the need for cover programming described above. These guardians supposedly "protect" the body and systems from "intrusion" by beings in the dimensions; but in reality, they are open doors to the demonic and must be closed through spiritual warfare (giving up of the demons) and by these ascended guardians accepting Yeshua and giving up their former beliefs in demonic "protection."

Helping the Survivor

Follow •••

The survivor will often initially be terrified at the thought of closing these portals when this comes up in therapy. This is because of extensive programming to believe that closing the portals will result in “death”, “insanity” or cruel punishment by internal or external masters. They will literally believe that their safety and survival depends upon keeping these portals open, and will question how to survive closing them.

There may be parts instructed to take the other parts into the dimensions and punish parts that try to close their portals, or break this programming. The survivor may even re-experience the death traumas and agony involved in the original creation of the portals. Once the portals are closed, the survivor will be amazed at the relief, and the fact that they are indeed alive and sane. The therapist will need to help counteract the programming with truth, and develop enough trust with the survivor that they are willing to give up this method of demonic interaction.

Once the portals are closed, the survivor may experience significant warfare in retaliation for doing so. This is a time for prayer and spending time with the Lord, and calling on Yeshua for protection.

The Q’Ballah will have an extensive internal reality attached to it, including magic numbers in rooms, and the white, black or silver cords from it running throughout the systems, from top to bottom, including within the rooms that the various controllers stay in. These cords represent the core traumas associated with the creation of each part of the “three rope” cord: infant death traumas and the beliefs associated with these traumas.

There will be an extensive internal reality for the systems and their controllers, with rooms, temples and other representations of the programming that they underwent when a very young child.

More About Mengele

Mengele himself, as discussed before, worked with Jesuit infants during the 1950s and early 1960s. He also bonded these infants to himself in a manner similar to that described above for attachment bonding. His bonding was nearly always installed in the white, or cover level, for Jesuit systems. This was primarily because the Fathers wanted his programming (assassin training in infancy and early childhood) installed, but wanted to reserve the core bonding for themselves, in order to maintain their secrets even from Mengele, whom they did not fully trust. Mengele also installed his own proprietary codes into areas of the systems that he wanted to reserve loyalty to himself within.

The Jesuits also wanted their top trainers trained by Mengele. This is one reason why those with top potential worked with him in his research laboratory, and continued the research after his death.

C. Toddler Training

By the time an infant is a year old, they will have several hundred personalities in place, which have already undergone extensive foundational mind control. Spiritual controllers will have already undergone extremely painful ceremonies, such as hot needles inserted into the umbilicus; or having a long sharp needle pierced through their chest, and being gripped and raised up (“satan’s claw”).

The controllers for the white spiritual systems will be in place, since the infant will have internalized these through virtual reality, holograms, and dramatic enactments of the “deities” by actors. The white spiritual systems include:

- Egyptian deities
- Babylonian deities
- Ancient (pre-Babylonian) deities
- Druidic deities

These are headed up by the white, or Greek, Pantheon of twelve deities.
Each system will have specific traumas attached to it. For instance, Bel, the head of the Babylonian system, will undergo a ritual where he is pierced through with tiny golden needles throughout his body (Babylonian sun ritual). Astarte will have sexual rituals, and Ashtoth will have death rituals associated with him.

The black (Vatican) spiritual systems are also being organized and trained from 12 to 14 months after birth. These include the theta assassin systems headed by:

- Nemesis, who controls
- Phobos (theta fear and dream attacks);
- Thantos (theta death) and
- Chaos (theta insanity programming).

Extensive training is undergone, where the young child learns to control and read thoughts (Galileo training), and to attack others using the theta skills they are developing. The foundations of early Mage training are also begun (mages are the highest level in the occultic world).

The “goddess of Death” and other demonic spirits will have temples and altars dedicated to them, where regular internal sacrifices are conducted. These re-enactments represent the external realities the toddler experienced.

The toddler will be taught to enjoy the experience of killing within certain parts, either through sexual stimulation, or direct brain stimulation (of the euphoria center) following obedience.

Controller Programming

The Jesuits use extensive setups to teach the internal controllers to do their jobs during this second year of life. Typical ones involve tying several young children with ropes (normally, six) to the waist of the toddler. She is told to “mind the children” and make them obey her. The setup will consist of having candy, or beautiful objects such as glass balls, in the middle of a room. The toddler is told that the children tied to her must NOT touch the objects in the middle of the room, or they and she will be punished.

The problem is that it is very difficult for a very young child to control others. The six children tied to her waist will try to yank her around, and grab at the objects or treats. Finally, in spite of her best efforts, she will tire, and one of the children will reach the table and grab a treat.

The child is instantly killed by a Jesuit Father waiting in the wings. The two-year old must now make the other, now quite obedient, children obey her, while dragging around the body of the dead child, a reminder to this young controller of what happens when she fails in her job.

By the end of the setup, which can last for several days, all of the children tied to the now very traumatized controller will have died (the result of disobedience and her failure to “mind the children” who in hunger will reach out and try to grab food and water, which are forbidden). The extremely traumatized controller will be very committed to exacting complete obedience to those under her, to prevent their experiencing a similar fate.

All of the controllers inside (dozens) will undergo this and other training. This creates an extremely controlled system, with the internal controllers believing that even slight disobedience will result in death or shattering. This belief is based upon numerous experiential setups when the child was less then 3 years old, and it will take time to work through the terrible grief of being unable to “save” the children in the controller’s care, and the rage that this type of manipulation creates in the survivor once they realize the truth.

Master-Slave Programming (ages 2 to 5)

There is a program to training obedience when a Jesuit child is very young. In this program, they are conditioned to be slaves, and obey their Masters, the Jesuit Fathers (who are all ascended masters). They address them as “Master” and “My Lord” and their day consists of menial labor as the Fathers order.

Typical tasks might include scrubbing the stone floors of the monastery on hands and knees while the Fathers taunt the “slave”; they may even urinate on the floor the child has just spent hours cleaning, and tell the child to clean it up again.

The acolyte will learn to cook; clean; do yard work, and will obey orders without question or thought, when asked to do tasks. This is considered an important part of the early training in obedience.

The spiritual parts (thetas) are taught to respond spiritually to summons from the Fathers – instantly. Any hesitation is immediately and terribly punished (such as being hung inside a dark well). The Fathers also have golden whistles that they wear around their necks; each child is assigned a set of notes, and must respond physically and/or spiritually immediately when their notes are played.

The child is inside the walls of the monastery these first few years of life. By age 24 months, the child goes to classes, where they learn not only languages (the Fathers speak Latin and Italian in daily life, and are all fluent in numerous other languages), but also oral history and the black arts as part of their mage training.

Internally, the survivor will have “masters” (controllers) and “slaves”; slave parts are taught to instantly obey masters.

Wolf and Sheep Training

During the second year of life (12 months to 24 months) it is important to the Jesuits that high barriers are placed between the “front” or presentations, and the “back” or loyal parts. One way this is accomplished is with “wolf” and “sheep” programming.

The back, or hidden, parts are taught that they are wolves. The Jesuit Fathers raise wolves for this purpose, and will take the young child and place them in a pen with a mother wolf and her cubs.

The child will have been sprayed with wolf scent, and the mother will normally let the child join her cubs. The child is told that he or she is a wolf, and is treated exactly like one: the child nurses on the mother wolf; is fed with the cubs, and is taught to crawl on all fours, and even to growl like a wolf. They are taught that wolves are strong, cruel, fierce and protective, and that they must guard the "weaker" systems by doing the tasks that "sheep" cannot do.

Once this program is in place, the front systems undergo "sheep" training. They are placed with sheep, and eventually believe that they are lambs or sheep; eating with the sheep, sleeping curled up with the other lambs, and in every way being treated as if they are a sheep.

To place a barrier between the systems, the Fathers then cause the two systems to traumatize one another. The "wolves" are told to "attack" the sheep and to try to kill them. This causes the front to become angry and to distrust them. The wolves are also taught to hate "sheep" and believe they "stink" by having a slain lamb tied to their back for several days. The carcass becomes ridden with flies and stinks terribly; the body itches and the child becomes violently ill, and they are taught that this is the result of being close to a sheep. These parts cannot come close to front parts, that they believe are sheep, without smelling the rotten carcass that made them so ill as a very young child. This makes the back very unwilling to come near the front.

Other barriers between front and back are also installed during this second year. This includes a wall with gargoyles and demonic guardians that is erected between the front and back, which is overseen by Janus (the Roman deity with two faces). One face observes the "front" or presenting systems; the other, the back, or hidden systems. Certain parts can pass through the doors, but those without authorization are immediately torn by the demonic guardians placed between front and back. The demonic is allowed to pass freely between front and back.

In addition to these barriers, others are placed. One is an extensive "buffer" system. These have entrained neurolinguistic programming in place, and their role is to be emotionless and to stand between the front and the back, " buffering" the front from any knowledge of what the back is doing, and vice-versa. Their role is to prevent the two sides from actually meeting or communicating, and to keep the amnesia in place through constant ingrained "wipeout" programming.

This wipeout programming can consist of a combination of traumas that are re-experienced, such as internal shocks to the head, EHF and/or microwave bursts to the frontal lobes, or other similar traumas that were used to originally wipe out memories of assignments. If the survivor attempts to cross the barrier, they may experience flashing lights, blizzard, extreme headaches, eye pain, nausea, dark bursts within the deep brain, or other trauma that occurred when the barrier was originally put in.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

book part 4 September 13, 2021 In "healing"	Exposing the Vatican book: Part 4 September 30, 2021 In "healing"	Book Part 8 December 23, 2021 In "healing"

Pingback: Halloween 2021 | cathy fox blog on child abuse

MKUltra Girl 7:01 pm on October 25, 2021

Good Gaud. What you say resonates so strongly with me. I am reading *It is Not Impossible* right now.

And of course, I am not sure you know this, but my sister acted out the kill program in one of the earliest times for such things in our era, the early 80's. Piecing my personal story together is different because we were with our natal family the whole time. We didn't have host families and we are our parents' children. But I have evidence that my father was programmed by mengele in '49. In Quebec city in a catholic hospital run by nuns (Saint-Michel-Archange) after his "nervous breakdown" after attending 2 weeks in seminary school at St. Peter's seminary in London, ON.

I speculate that mengele tried to transfer or install his own consciousness into my father at that time. Reading one of Mengele's bogus biographies was like reading about my father. The same obsessions, likes and belief that university professors are the top of the professional heap. I believe Marshall McCluhan had something to do with my father's and maybe our training. We met him in our presentations a few times. One was in the back seat of our family sedan with Marshall McCluhan in 74 or 75 ish. I was doing a project on famous people and I picked him because my father was always talking about him. My father arranged the interview. MM was sitting beside me in the backseat btwn me and my brother and sister. My first question was, "Why are you famous?". He turned stone cold, a dark evil came over me. He said nothing. He stared straight ahead. I asked my dad for help and he just kinda laughed. That was the end of the interview. MM taught at St. Michael's college at U of Toronto, a Jesuit college. He was an awful person from what I remember.

Another odd thing about my dad was one of his pet projects- Laughter Centres. He used the Alfred E. Newman face from Mad Magazine to promote them. I now believe that Alfred E. Newman was modeled after my father. This is just another way they could exploit frequencies to enrich themselves through media and popular culture. (for me it is many of the celebs in our time and of course, EL from Stranger THings). This function of the cult is huge and all that popular culture ever was/is, IMO. Let no good psych patient go to waste. Mad Magazine (started in the auspicious year of '53).

My mother actually said she knew that Canada harboured nazis. And she NEVER said anything political or beyond the duties of wife and mother (programmed at the Allan in ’58) to completely rid her of her highly skilled ability as a clothes designer and seamstress.

I do take some opposition with the manner of salvation you speak of through the protestant evangelical church but that is not important. We are both good with the one true God in our hearts.

Additionally, I have had a hell of a time with people I have trusted and shared with who started out as friends turning on me in the worst way. I am sure you understand, but even me sharing this little bit with you makes me wary. Some of the things I have stated here I have not stated publicly yet.

My father stayed in contact with priests his entire life and was obsessed with the Catholic church. He often spoke of the Jesuits. I believe that this happened to me and my sister and probably my brother. He drowned in a canoeing *accident* (and it was – I checked it out thoroughly) when he was 19. I believe one does not need more than the ill wind of these curses in our systems to blame for these tragedies. Which was to silence all of us. Especially me, since I am the only one left who has the ability to get to the bottom of this.

My mother’s family in London ON are silent on all matters, so are the remnants of my dad’s family in Windsor ON, but some distant older relatives on my dad’s side have given me more information than both immediate sides combined. Suggestion is strong that both families are deeply occulted.

Thanks for your work. Without revealing the methods, I don’t think the bottom or the top way out can truly be reached. Thanks for doing that. You were born to do that and that is a great great thing for all us vics of the jesuits.

Ellen Atkin Photography Resume Blog 604 259 9508 ellen@ellenatkin.com

On Mon, Oct 25, 2021 at 10:39 AM Svali Speaks Again wrote:

> svalispeaksagain posted: ” trigger warning: explicit discussion of > programming, traumas and negative spirituality Q’Ballah Programming Mengele > always installed the Q’Ballah in those he worked with, and he installed it > into Jesuit systems as well. Althea, or the “Tree of ” >

★ Like

fredurez29 2:29 pm on December 22, 2022

Hello, do you know how Jesuits were programmed before Mengele ? And do you think the 13 orders have always programmed their members since the ages ?
Also, do you think Illuminati children are systematically made by IVF ?
Have you seen other testimonies from Jesuit survivors ?

I also wonder if some of top members of the orders are not programmed like some survivors told us about the Queen Elizabeth, they tell she can live hundred years by replacing her body getting spiritually inside a children body, and putting away children's soul.
Also have you heard about a grey pope ?

★ Liked by 1 person

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican: Part 5

Book Part 7 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 10:20 pm on November 18, 2021

Tags: dissociation (30), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Book Part 7

Trigger warning: this post contains graphic descriptions of programming and methods

Assassin Training (ages 2-4)

The early assassin training is continued during the second year of life. The parts that will do physical assassinations are taught to wring the necks of kittens and other small animals.

During the second half of this year the toddler will undergo the extremely cruel training to kill that Mengele developed. The child will be placed in a cage with other children the same age (there are thirteen cages in all, with six on the bottom, four in the middle, two above and one at the very top.

The children in the bottom six cages undergo terrible abuse. The children above urinate and defecate on them, since they are at the bottom. They are also painfully raped frequently, and are not given any food or water. It is a type of "hell" for a small child. Once a day the toddler is taken out, and a kitten is placed in front of them. Mengele then would give the order, "Papa says 'Kill'". They are expected to instantly snap the neck. If there is the slightest hesitation, or the child refuses, they are placed back in the bottom row of cages, where the terrible deprivation and abuse occur.

The next day, the child is given another chance. The children that survive learn to instantly and without thinking obey the order. If they do, then Mengele would hold the child in his lap; tell them what a good job they did, and give them a treat.

After two weeks, the child will be either on the top two rows, or dead. By then, Mengele would spend significant time praising the child, bonding with them, for doing such a "good job." The animals to be killed were placed in the center of a red circle, and they become bigger. Finally, a small infant is placed in the center of the red circle, the child is given a knife, and the command is given. If the child refuses, they are placed back in the bottom row of cages, and the t[illegible] begins all over again until they obey or die.

This is a primary assassin code: “Papa says kill” and is used by all Jesuit Fathers and top trainers as well.

Traveling the Dimensions

As part of their mage training, the toddler is taught to begin to travel in the spiritual realm. Before age 24 months, they will have learned to travel to the First Dimension. Dimensional travel usually involves theta parts which have never had contact with the outside world other than during their first creation in a black room. These parts are taught to leave the body through the application of intense torture (electroshock, burning, skin peeling, cutting with razors, beating, flagellation, smothering, heart stoppage, freezing, burning or other types of trauma).

The First Dimension

Once the part can leave the body, they are accompanied by an older spiritual mentor, who travels with them to the first dimension. This dimension is described in the Alice in Wonderland books (Lewis Carroll was an infamous occultist, and his books actually describe the demonic realms). In the first dimension, plants and flowers talk, and the young child is fascinated by the seeming beauty of the landscape at first glance. They are initially unaware of the dangers, but quickly learn: the flowers will try and grab the child and hold the child against their will; or will beat upon or even try to bite the child. Oversized bees and insects also come, and can cause great pain.

The child traveling will cry out for help, and will be “rescued” by their spiritual mentor, who will take them back to Gaia (the physical world we inhabit here; that is the name for this dimension).

The controllers for the First dimension are a large cat (the “Cheshire cat” in the Alice books);a large, demonic caterpillar that can sting with ferocity, and the white rabbit. These beings are actually demons that have been trapped in the dimension; they cannot leave it, but try to entice humans to visit them in order to ensnare their souls.

The Second Dimension

The second dimension is fire, and is inhabited by Vulcan. It is very hot, and the dimension is much like entering into an underworld with hot lava streams and fires. The child and their mentor travels, enduring being chased by fire lizards and other creatures, until they meet up with Vulcan.

Other Dimensions

The other dimensions include:

- a dimension of extreme cold and ice, overseen by a demonic “ice queen”
- a “reverse world” where everything is reversed, causing extreme disorientation
- an underwater dimension overseen by neptune
- a dimension of extreme dark and nightmares, overseen by Charymedes (god of insanity and chaos) with harpies that chase the child and attempt to kill them:
- a dimension (the 12th) of electricity charges, overseen by Electra

Each being that rules a dimension will always ask for a sacrifice of some kind from the child, in order for the child to be allowed to return to Gaia. At first, the sacrifices might be “the screams of someone being tortured” or for the child to undergo torture themselves. As the child goes to the higher dimensions, with worlds inhabited by beings such as Charymedes, the sacrifices become much more difficult, and can include betraying the person the child loves most, or killing someone the child cares for, including their spiritual mentor(s).

Traveling the dimensions is considered a primary part of mage training; a mage does not become an ascended master until they have traveled to the 12th dimension, or the 13th (travel to these dimensions involves being put to death for several minutes).

Helping the survivor

The early childhood traumas will be very difficult for the presentation to accept, especially because of the deep denial and guilt that will be programmed in. If the survivor does begin to recover these memories, their punishment programming will immediately begin kicking in (see following section for further details).

Jesuits are always international, highly trained assassins and information gatherers, and the grieving will be tremendous. This is when they will need outside support, to vent the anger and grieving over the abuse and manipulations, and to hear that the Lord can forgive what they were forced to do from a very young age.

The survivor may cry out as Jeremiah did, “Why did I come forth from the womb to see labor and sorrow, That my days should be consumed with shame?:(Jer.20:18). It can help them to understand that the Lord really does understand their grieving and pain, that He took that on the cross for them, and paid the price for every death they were forced to participate in.

It can help the presentation to remind them that when they came to Jesus, while THEY were unaware of the back parts and their deeds, Jesus knew all along – and forgave them, too; that this information doesn’t surprise Him. His love doesn’t change just because the survivor remembers what they formerly didn’t.

As they attempt to break bonds with their early abusers, they will run headlong into feelings of abandonment and being alone, which are meant to prevent their fully leaving. Leaving will mean giving up all of their deepest unconscious relationships, the ones formed during these earliest (amnesic) years that have been wiped out from conscious memory.

It can help the survivor to understand that the Lord can fill their attachment pain, and stand in the place of father and mother to these young parts:

Ps.68:5. “A father of the fatherless, a defender of widows, is God in His holy habitation.”

Isaiah 66:13. “As one whom his mother comforts, So I will comfort you; And you shall be comforted in Jerusalem.”

It can be difficult for the presentation that came into therapy to realize that THEY are not the true “host” (which is placed behind an amnesic barrier). The real “host” the first three years of life will be Jesuit, will have a Jesuit name, and will carry the memories of the first three years that are wiped out when the child undergoes amnesia programming at age three prior to being placed within their host families.

The child at that age will have agreed willingly to forget the Fathers that they love in order to protect them; the presentation must be able to grieve this loss of their early childhood memories, and supported in dealing with the very painful betrayals and loyalty programming that will come up if the true host does ever present in therapy.

D. Punisher Training

An important part of a Jesuit system is the punishers. These punishers are modeled after people and spiritual beings the infant and child have seen portrayed by actors and in VR from earliest infancy. The beings (actirs) come to the infant's crib, talk to him or her, and tie themselves to the infant with a slender cord, as they teach the infant how the being talks and acts. This becomes internalized, along with the demonic spirit they impart.

The head of the punishment systems for Jesuits are in several layers. In the false Christian layer, these will include a false Jesus (head punisher), a false God, and a false Holy spirit. These parts, who are actually sabotagers and punishers, explain why the presentation can be very "Christian" and yet not be actually listening to the Christian God; instead, their conscience, which is Jesuit-trained, will believe that they must obey "God" and they may be completely misled into actually obeying the group and its directives and feel extremely guilty and even think they will "go to hell" if they disobey.

They will not know that these are Jesuit directives, however; they will believe that "God" is "telling them to stay with their husband (handler)" or that they must "honor their Father and Mother (cult parents)", etc. They will feel very "Christian" and "peaceful" when they obey these directives, and feel guilt, confusion and anxiety when they disobey, until the programming is broken and they can differentiate between the Lord and the false god placed within.

Core Level punishers will include Vulcan and Prometheus, and the main reprogramming system will be named Saturn (due to the numerous rings and levels of the punishments).

Internal Hell Punishment

The foundation of a Jesuit punishment system will be the deeply ingrained belief, from the core outwards, that the systems must not be allowed to descend and thus enter into the punishments of "hell." Since earliest infancy, and deep into the subconscious and unconscious, this fear of descending (through disobedience to the order's directives, or to the pantheon) is inculcated. All core controllers for all systems will unconsciously believe that the punishments are "good" since they are keeping the systems and core from "going to hell" or descending into a mortal state. The pain of the programming (re-experiencing) is seen as "proof" that the systems are descending, since ascended systems "do not feel pain" in the programming scripts.

This will be translated in the presentation into a deep fear of angering God, and an unusual ability to "hear from the Lord" and "hear His direction" which is actually listening to the false god planted inside in order to prevent experiencing the excruciating pain that will result if they disobey. The presentation may experience severe guilt at the thought of the smallest infraction, or fear going to hell for even slight errors, due to the unconscious pain of this programming.

Vulcan

Vulcan is the primary core level punisher, and has an anvil that is used to literally pound the primary system core splits with (ensuring that the resulting pain and trauma go throughout the system being punished). If he fails in his duty, a large black bird swoops down on him, tearing out his liver and entrails and eats them. This is based upon primary infant traumas that involve the Jesuit Fathers bringing a bird into the infant's crib, and allowing its talons to tear at the infant. The traumatized infant retains this memory, which is built upon over the years.

Often this is reinforced with virtual reality, with a highly realistic predatory bird swooping down and piercing the bowels. Physical needles and knives are used for the initial traumatic pain, which is accessed and re-experienced over the years.

Vulcan is taught to punish the systems, and even the core, for severe disobedience and/or betrayal. The worst type of disobedience includes failure to maintain contact with the Fathers or their representatives, and trying to leave the Order. To the Jesuits, an individual attempting to leave is considered a traitor of the highest degree. They are actually considered "insane" since only insanity, to their thinking, could cause a person to take the path to descension, feeling the body and mortality, and giving up what they consider "godhood" and choosing to "go to hell." The members of the Order literally believe that the person choosing to leave is straight on the path to hell, and they will do anything to try and "save" them from this path.

This "salvation" can and will include extreme torture and reprogramming, in order to put the person "back on the right path." They believe that these measures are needed to bring the person to their "senses."

Helping the Survivor

The internal punishers and master controllers will also hold these beliefs, unless they can be reached and worked with. They will torture the person into literal insanity and/or death, believing that they are "helping" to "redeem" the "errant" person.

The hell punishers and system punishers themselves will be in agreement with the tortures, since as a child, they were taught to punish severely "traitors" and those who "disobeyed" with these same tortures. They internalized the beliefs of the Jesuit Fathers, and so were in agreement with inflicting this type of pain upon others, first externally, and then internally. They believe they are doing a "good" thing.

As the survivor remembers doing these things, they will feel immense guilt, and believe that they "deserve" these punishments because of what an "evil" person they are. They must be shown that Yeshua paid the full price for their sins, and that they and their systems can never do restitution for their deeds. This can help to break the cycle of guilt, penance and pain that has been set up since infancy.

Meditation on scriptures regarding forgiveness, the love of God, and listening to worship music that underscores the forgiving heart of God can be helpful in understanding this, since music can reach the "right brain" and bypass the faulty logic the Jesuits installed.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The different types of SRA and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

Early Splits and Theta programming
June 5, 2017
In "mind control"

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Amie Martineau 8:47 pm on November 20, 2021

This is so hard for me to wrap my head around. I can't imagine any therapist that has had training in order to help people with programming like this? And also, how many people if you could guess I've had this sort of programming? I would think this sort of programming would be reserved for people that are going to be placed in political power or high corporate power?

★ Liked by 1 person

svalispeaksagain 7:57 pm on November 22, 2021

There are very few therapists that I know of who try to help with this type of thing; and most of the journey is often the survivor's. I can only speak about those in the order I was born in; most in this order go through this. In the 12 occultic societies, the programming is a bit different.

★ Like

Amie Martineau 8:49 pm on November 20, 2021

have had this sort of programming not I've had...lol sorry

★ Like

Amber 6:41 am on December 9, 2021

Still praying for you.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Exposing the Vatican: Part 6

Book Part 8 →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 7:14 pm on December 23, 2021

Tags: mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), Vatican (10)

Book Part 8

Prometheus

Under Vulcan is Prometheus, the main white system (presentations) controller punisher. His punishments include fire, burning, and intense pain, depending upon the traumas the person has undergone. During the early years, the Jesuits will incorporate primary punishment traumas that include:

- Flagellation with a whip that has attached sharp rocks and razors
- Burning at a stake
- Having feet and legs chewed on by rats
- Being stung by a swarm of angry bees (the child is given anti-venom before and after to prevent death)
- Infants being dropped, and startled into a mechanical panic reaction
- Being attacked by birds and wolves
- Demonic attacks
- Rapes with steel instruments
- Shocks throughout the body
- Death and near-death experiences
- Paralysis and being tortured while unable to move
- Drowning and smothering

There are others; these are just a few representative traumas. The death experience accessed and used to make the individual believe that they are dying as a result of disobedience, the heart may even stop beating for intervals that range from skipped beats to no beat for up to a minute. Breathing may also stop when the individual attempts to break core level punishment programming, since the ultimate punishment is physical death, and this is deliberately installed by the Jesuit Fathers as a "fail safe" if all other protocols fail.

Saturn

Saturn will be the primary reprogramming system, and is responsible for reprogramming the systems nightly with the traumas described above. Horrific reprogramming traumas will be instilled, first physically and later using virtual reality. Small core-level infants will be dropped, pounded, shocked, raped, burned, cut, eaten on by rats, blinded by needles, suffocated and otherwise traumatized during the reprogramming.

Jesuit systems reprogram constantly, with the reprogramming sequences changing every two hours throughout the day. This ensures that all systems are reprogrammed daily.

E. Jesuit Master Controllers

The primary master controllers for a Jesuit system will reflect the primary spiritual relationships in the child's life.

Althea (the Tree of Life)

These will include the "unholy trinity" of the Father (Satan), the Son (the antichrist and the beast) and the Spirit (Althea, the tree of life). The Fathers worship all three. In fact, the Arbor de Vitae monastery just north of Rome (the primary Jesuit monastery) is believed to be the dwelling place of Althea, the tree of life. This wicked creature lives in the basement of the monastery, and the young children (and adults) will often hear her moaning at night to be fed. And they do feed her, at regular intervals, with sacrifices of every human variety.

The Jesuit children are taught from infancy to participate in these rituals; as infants, the Fathers place their hands over a baby's, and teach them to make the sacrifice. As the child gets older, they must take a more active role, or suffer severe punishment by Althea (which appears at times like a huge willow whose branches "whip" the child terribly).

No Jesuit child ever wants to be called down for a spiritual whipping of this manner, and so they quickly learn how to feed the tree very efficiently. After a ritual, the tree will be quiet for days or weeks, but will always begin moaning again to be fed. The child grows up knowing that in order for there to be peace, they must give this entity what it asks for. The child will have been dedicated to Althea, will have a representation of her in their system, and must dismantle it, kick out the spiritual entity, and heal the human part.

Helping the Survivor

When the tree of life is pulled out, the three roots (white, black and silver gray) must also be rooted out, since these represent early infant demonic traumas used in installing the roots of the tree of life and the q'ballah internally. This takes extensive prayer, seeking the Lord, and asking the Holy Spirit to help the survivor overcome the fear of uprooting these demonic strongholds.

The tree of life will often have grown to a large tree with 1,000 points of life, each representing a life taken (including those of infants), and the demonic that entered as a result, during the installation of the tree. These lives must be grieved for; the murders repented of, and forgiveness received, to break the hold of the tree of life on the survivvor's mind.

Some survivors will also have a mirror images of the tree of life, or a "tree of death" internally, that again is based upon the ritual murder of young infants, with the roots attached to the heart of the survivor (they are wrapped around the heart, and the survivor may believe that they will die if the tree is taken out).

The survivor will need to realize that the Lord is able to undo even this type of programming; can overcome the fear of uprooting the demonic. It can help the survivor if they are reminded that the fear they feel is the fear that the demonic feels at losing its "home" inside, and that they will actually feel more peace once the tree is rooted out. They can pray and ask the Lord to uproot it for them; this may be seen visually inside as Jesus reaching in and pulling it out, or as an increased peace as the rituals are repented of, and the person exercises authority.

The relief may be dramatic, or occur over several weeks. But the survivor will have more internal peace and healing once they choose to get rid of this voracious entity, and allow the Holy Spirit to fill them instead.

The Beast

The Beast has a room and a lair in the Vatican dedicated to him. This room supposedly dates from early Roman times, when sacrifices were conducted in the original cave located there that the Vatican was built over. This angry and vindictive spirit makes its presence known, and is eagerly sought out by the Fathers, since they believe he gives great power over enemies. The young child will be placed during the second year of life in a dark, cave-like lair underneath the altar in the Beast's room. They will spend 24 hours in this lair, where the Beast visits with the child, makes suggestions, and eventually has the child give in to its requests (to kill another child put in with them).

This is extremely traumatizing to the young child, who feels intense guilt. The child will have internalized the Beast (see the above discussion on programming methods used). This internal Beast only knows and understands killing and destroying, and spiritual warfare and deliverance must be done to free the human part trapped by the spiritual part. The Beast also gives energy to the punishment systems described previously, and will demand absolute obedience to it and the Pantheon, until the individual learns their authority in Yeshua, and is able to break free.

Satan

Many times, it can take years of dedicated work to go beneath the tree and beast layers, and reach the true system master controller: Satan. From pre-birth and birth dedication, this is the being the Jesuits truly serve, in both his incarnations: as satan (cruel, vicious, demanding, destructive and lying) and Theo (kind, benevolent, manipulative, charming). The child will have been bonded to both, as described previously.

Satan's Throne

During the toddler years, at times the child will be physically placed on satan's throne. When supplicants crawl up the hall on ground glass, or nails, or hot rocks, satan will be sitting on the throne next to the child. He will ask the child what kind of judgment should be made; or what price should be paid for a request, and the child will answer. If satan is pleased with the answer, he and the child will simultaneously make the pronouncement. If the child is too kind-hearted, they will be punished severely until they learn the types of judgment that are acceptable.

This internalizes the satan identity for the core master controller, since the adults treat the child on satan's throne as if he/she were satan himself, in every way. The child is actually temporarily possessed, in that part, by satan during the ceremonies and judgments. The evil behavior convinces the survivor that he/she is evil and anchors the belief in the part that they are actually satan.

Helping the survivor

In later years, the adult will have to overcome very difficult memories of the lives taken or asked for when in that role, and the cruel decisions made. They will need to repent of these deeds, and ask the Lord for forgiveness (which He offers freely). It can help to remind the survivor that the Lord knew all about their past, even when they didn't; that He is not surprised or repulsed by them or their past. When they came to Jesus, He knew all about each act they committed, and forgave them.

They will also need emotional support to process the pain of these memories, and to be treated as loveable, in spite of the horrific acts that they committed. This is a challenge, since many Christians want to "turn away" from those with a past such as this. But the survivor is looking to their therapist or support person to demonstrate the love of Christ to systems that may have no idea of what true Christianity is.

Once they "get it" and realize they are forgiven, these parts will quickly give up their old jobs and choose freedom, if they believe they have the physical safety to support healing.

Demonic Chess

The Jesuit Fathers are accomplished "chess masters." The term comes from the original, demonic origin of chess, which was first used by the ancient Babylonians, then the Egyptians, then passed down through the centuries. The original form of chess is considered an important part of mage training.

During the game, the young child is taught to first control the easier, white pieces, which are made of stone. During the game, the pieces come demonically alive, and they will try to turn on and attack the child. At first, the toddler needs the help of their spiritual mentor (the Father) to control the pieces and to prevent being bitten and wounded terribly. As the child gets older, and stronger in the occult, they are eventually able to demonically control and move the pieces on the board. They also learn to move and control the much more difficult black pieces in the same manner.

The winner of the game is allowed to ask the board for the answer to a question. If white wins, the answer will be written in black on the king's square; if black wins, the answer is written in shining silver on the black king's square. The monarchs of Europe often played this form of chess in order to get answers as to which battle strategy would be best to use, or to get "inside" information on their enemies. A true "chess master" is actually an ascended master who is able to win frequently at this form of chess.

The occultic form of chess is one reason why there is a chessboard in the Alice in Wonderland books; the game is actually based on a demonic game being played.

Torture Training

The Jesuits are considered the “best” (or, worst would be a better adjective) torturers in the world. They were the ones who conducted the Inquisition (Torquemada was an infamous “interrogator”) and they refined the art of torture throughout the centuries. All Jesuits undergo training from infancy on in how to torture and interrogate others.

The lower levels of all Jesuit monasteries, and the Vatican, contain rooms that are literal dungeons, with torture instruments that range from medieval (such as racks, water wheels – a favorite of the Fathers), pincers, and iron maidens, as well as every variety of whip (including those with small stones and razors attached), to more modern equipment.

The Jesuits are infamous for their ability to keep individuals they wish to make examples of alive for weeks while undergoing torture such as having the skin peeled off and reattached; having digits removed, blinding the victim with hot pokers, needles or other instruments; doing “dental work” without anesthesia; electroshock, paralysis and suffocation, burning digits and working inwards, and other methods. They have very sophisticated medical equipment on hand, and will insert I.V.s and use other methods to prevent dehydration; and will give a variety of medications to either enhance and prolong pain, or to resuscitate the victim.

The toddler is forced to learn to do all of these things, and others. If they hesitate or refuse, the toddler is tortured in the same way they were asked to torture another, until under great pain, they finally agree. The victims they learn on are often homeless adults at first, or traitors; the child is taught that these tortures are what happen to those who betray the Order, or try to leave it.

A favorite form of torture at the monasteries is actual crucifixions; the “traitors” are nailed to crosses, and slowly suffocate and dehydrate over a period of three to four days. The Jesuit classes are marched by at intervals to watch the result; the individuals always lose their bodily control during the first day, and their minds by the second. It is a terrible sight to see the incoherent screams and begging for mercy by the last day or two, and it makes an unforgettable impression on the young Jesuits in training. They rapidly decide that being a “traitor” is something that they never want to experience.

The toddler is at first awkward with knives, but during early childhood, with instruction by the Jesuit Fathers, they become quite skilled at using a knife for torture and/or slaughter. Important rituals are “practiced” ahead of time to ensure that the children are all able to fulfill their roles without hesitation and perform perfectly. The slightest error is not tolerated in these settings.

F. Anti-Christian Programming

The Jesuit Fathers create innumerable setups to ensure that the young child will learn to hate and fear the real Jesus of Christianity. These setups can include the following:

- The child runs away when very young, because the gates to the monastery are “miraculously” left open. Eager to escape their torture and abuse, they run down the road. There is a house to the right, and in front is a kindly, smiling figure in a white robe who introduces himself as “Jesus.” He invites the child in for a meal and "safety" from the "bad Fathers." The child accepts the invitation and once inside the house, is locked in and terribly sexually abused and tortured for several days. The child finally "finds" an opportunity to escape and is found by a Father as they run back to the monastery, which is better than what they experienced in the "Mansion with many rooms" that the false "Jesus" lives in.

- When a bit older, the child may be taken to a monastery near the coast of Ireland, where there are numerous caves. While there, they meet a shepherd in a white robe with a flock of sheep; the shepherd has a staff, and introduces himself to the child as Jesus. Others with him are the disciples. "Jesus" ties the child to himself with a rope, and takes the child into different caves, where sexual abuse occurs. The false Jesus and disciples also practice bestiality, torture the child, hit the child with the shepherd's staff, all the while reciting scriptures about the "Good shepherd and His sheep," "Let the little children come unto me" (when sexual abuse occurs), "My sheep hear my voice," (the child is beaten), and other shepherd scriptures, from the "rod and staff comfort me," to "entering the gate."

- Theta, or dark spiritual parts, are taught that "Jesus smells." At some point, the child is taken to the shore of the ocean, where there is a boat filled with very rotten fish. A false "Jesus" who smells like the fish, and his "disciples" grab the child and take them retching out onto the water in the boat, declaring that they are "fishers of men" and will make the child one as well. In the ocean is a rotting corpse which they "fish out." The memory of the smell will make these parts of the child feel ill for days, and they come to equate Jesus and Christians with this smell. When they come out, they cannot come near the Christian presenters without smelling this foul smell, until the memory is worked through.

- Numerous "Witch Trials" are set up starting during the toddler years, when spiritual parts are brought before a jury of "Christians" who condemn them for witchcraft, and consign them to death by burning at the stake. A Jesuit Father "rescues" the young witch or mage from "death" and the part is left with a deep hatred for Christians.

- Spiritual parts go before a false representation of "God" on his "throne" where they are judged and sent to "hell". Again, this reinforces hatred for the Christian God in the darker spiritual parts. In these scenarios, "satan" will come and rescue the child from "hell."

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Working with internal pantheons August 28, 2018 In "healing"	Why Getting Memories Back Can Be Difficult August 19, 2018 In "healing"	Book Part 7 November 18, 2021 In "healing"

Amie Martineau 4:09 am on December 27, 2021

Since you yourself were a Jesuit for a time then you probably have seen Althea the tree? And when talking about the beast on the throne, isn't satan a spirit only? you talk as if anyone could just walk into this room and see Satan sitting on the throne… Are these illusions that the children are seeing? this is pretty insane for me to believe… Can we not have a first hand account from you yourself who was in fact a Jesuit? And every jesuit who is an actual Jesuit has undergone this kind of programming/training? I'm trying to understand and I'm trying to not disbelieve you but a tree in some old churches basement that gets daily sacrifices to eat… Who people have heard moaning… Yet has never been talked about or discovered is very hard to believe… And I guess I don't understand the need for all this graphic detail in programming when 99% of the population has never even and will never even undergo something such as this… What is the point in all this over the top detail when you've never even detailed your own childhood abuse and when I say detail I mean extreme detail you have not gone into any of that in anything that you have ever written… Brice Taylor a.k.a. Susan Ford has Cathy Phillips went into great detail about her abuse when she was a child… I just feel like you've written about this for so long and you say you are a born-again Christian so why wouldn't you start writing about Jesus and the love he has and the promise he has because I feel like writing these things about the illuminati just distracts, confuses and takes away from the real reason mankind is on this earth.. I just feel like you have a written and rewritten the same things over and over again and I also feel like you don't have a lot of time left on this earth so what difference does it make? why not spread the gospel instead of spreading things that a lot of people will never believe anyway? I feel like you don't want to back(or have been silent by your choice) other survivors who have written books.. you may have mentioned survivors in articles that you've written but I feel you never back any of them or give a so-called "shout out' in believing anything these other survivors have said… Now maybe your training and your programming was different but when I wrote you an email a year or so ago telling you that I discovered this "svali is a fraud" website(with quite an abundance of information) you didn't want to defend anything or prove anything and you may not think you need to but some people might and you have put yourself out there for so long some of us may think you owe a little bit of that defending to us… And every time you write something new on your blog it's never never never about the goodness and the truth and the love of Jesus Christ I mean I would think you would WANT to give him a little bit more credit because of where you are today because if it wasn't for him you wouldn't be where you are today according to you? Yet you never speak of him and we are not to be ashamed not that I'm saying you are ashamed but we're to talk of him encourage one another through the gospel and be the salt of the earth which I feel like you have not been doing at all… You have expressed your faith but that's it and I'm becoming profoundly disillusioned and heartbroken from you because every now and then when I go to your blog I would just like to see something positive and uplifting about the Lord who saved your life but it’s nothing but torture and programming and bullshit and some stupid tree that’s alive in some old town Rome church basement I’m sorry and please forgive me for my harsh criticism but I just think in this day and age we are to be witnessing to the lost souls of this world not rehashing accounts of torture and mind control constantly because that I feel takes away from the importance of who God is and the importance of what our job is as born-again Christian to witness to the lost souls because in the end it’s not gonna matter about some tree in the basement that’s evil

★ Like

restitsa 8:14 am on January 22, 2022

Trigger Warning! Many Mk Ultra victims come to Russia to their deaths because Russia openly ruled by satanists. Please share this warning — many people believe their corrupted media and come there and be killed.

https://livemanaworldwide.org/the-imagination-podcast-victoria-mortis-the-truth-about-russia/

★ Like

Rita 1:29 pm on January 24, 2022

Svali dearest. Please know that you are much loved. With all my heart I know you are much loved. I know this because I know I am much loved too. I know I did nothing to earn or deserve that love. It is the mercy and grace of almighty God that brings us out of darkness and into the light. THANK YOU for sharing what you share. It will help people like me, help others. The battle is for the soul. Truth and light are our shield and buckler. THANK YOU for sharing your truth. God loves when we share the truth– He blesses this. Stay safe my beloved sister. ~Rita

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Book Part 7 Interview →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 5:28 pm on March 21, 2022

Tags: Israel, mind control (69), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 9

Anti-Semitic Training

The Vatican hates the Jewish race, and trains its agents to hate it as well. The earliest anti-semitic training includes the young toddler being beaten or raped by “Jews” (these are setups to create a deep unconscious hatred). Later, prisoner and guard scenarios, and re-enactment of nazi death camps are done. Throughout these portrayals, being a guard is “good” and comes with privileges and lack of abuse (but the guards must be abusers), while being a prisoner, or “Jew” is considered “bad” and the signal to abuse the prisoner ferociously. Those who show mercy in any form are tortured themselves, and forced to play the role of Jew.

Anti-Israeli Intelligence

The Vatican also plays a very active role in anti-Israeli intelligence, which will be discussed later. During infancy, a cover identity for these agents must be created, and they are placed for a period of time in a kibbutz, as an “orphan.” The orphan will always have a distant family member who at some point takes responsibility for the child (such as an aunt). But there will be a record of the child being placed in the kibbutz for official purposes.

The child’s “aunt” or “relative” will be a programmer who helps the child learn Israeli culture and to assimilate. They will travel frequently out of the country during the child’s early years, due to the relative’s role as a “consultant” on business travels. In reality, the child will be taken back to the monastery between these visits to Israel which are for the sole purpose of creating their later cover identity as a Sabra.

Sexual Training

The infant raised by the Jesuits never knows life without sexual abuse. The Fathers are pedophiles of the worst kind, and they continuously abuse the infants in their care, in part to create spiritual ties, but other times simply to fulfill their lusts.

Follow

During toddlerhood, the child will undergo specific sexual training, by specialists in this area, to help them "work" the parties of the wealthy and depraved. These very wealthy individuals have specialized sexual preferences, and prefer toddlers and young child who can perform them, including ménage a trois or quatre, and other acts. Because infants and young children are often "snuffed out" at these parties, the child is given a large, easily recognizable tattoo to save their life (the sign basically is a "do not kill" one, that lets the wealthy partiers know that the child belongs to a powerful patron who is simply lending him or her out for the night).

During these drunken orgies, the child is also quietly gathering information that the wealthy and powerful in Europe or other countries carelessly let drop during the party. Few members of the wealthiest families in the world realize that the children serving their sexual needs at these parties are actually trained agents whose real goal is to discover weaknesses that can be used by the Vatican to gain control of them; or to discover the real thoughts and motives of those who already serve them.

Helping the Survivor

Early in therapy, the survivor will appear to have no problem with prayer, talking to the Lord, and quickly hearing His voice; they may even appear to have strong prophetic gifts since these were heavily utilized by the cult (in divination and oracle roles). But as they begin to realize and undo the punisher and anti-Christian programming, they will begin to understand the amount of deception and listening to false spirits that they did, all the while believing they were praying to the Lord.

This can cause deep spiritual anguish, and the survivor may even fear praying for a period, seeking to address their prayers only to the "correct" deity and fearing they are instead talking to the "wrong one." They may address this problem by using a pre-defined prayer, or a different name than they have for "God" and "Jesus" internally (the prayer in the Prayer Warrior book by CARE is a good one to help with this).

Eventually, as they recover the memories and undo the programming, they will understand that the LORD hears their heart's cry to address only Him. They may for a period be less able to "hear" from Him than formerly, since they are choosing to give up all demonic and false feeds into their mind, and to only hear from the LORD. This is where discipleship by a mature Christian can help enormously. The more experienced Christian can help the survivor learn to discern what is truly the Lord's voice, and what is programming or demonic.

This is why it is so important for the survivor to be well-grounded in scripture, and to be willing to search the scriptures for the truth, as well as discuss what falsehoods they were taught. Internal parts may come out initially very hostile towards God or Jesus, but this is simply because their last experience with who they believe they are was very traumatic, or they felt abandoned by God. Part of healing is working through the setups, and understanding that the God of the Bible is not at all like the actors and false representations the survivor was shown.

The survivor's back parts will all have undergone extensive setups and "proofs" that God is "weaker" than Satan, so asking them initially to put their full trust in the LORD may seem foolish (or suicidal) to them. Gradually, with trust and the survivor watching the authority of true Christianity (and often testing it spiritually themselves through warfare), these parts will come to acknowledge that the LORD truly is the one true God, and will be willing to give up their demonic attachments and "helpers" (which are actually demonic parasites).

Once the survivor’s parts stop calling on the demonic, the LORD can actually allow them to experience the blessings of obedience as outlined in **Deuteronomy 28:1-11.**

“Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the Lord your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the Lord your God will set you high above all nations of the earth. [2] And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the Lord your God:

[3] “Blessed *shall* you *be* in the city, and blessed *shall* you *be* in the country.

[4] “Blessed *shall be* the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks.

[5] “Blessed *shall be* your basket and your kneading bowl.

[6] “Blessed *shall* you *be* when you come in, and blessed *shall* you *be* when you go out.

[7] “The Lord will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; they shall come out against you one way and flee before you seven ways.

[8] “The Lord will command the blessing on you in your storehouses and in all to which you set your hand, and He will bless you in the land which the Lord your God is giving you.

[9] “The Lord will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the commandments of the Lord your God and walk in His ways. [10] Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you are called by the name of the Lord, and they shall be afraid of you. [11] And the Lord will grant you plenty of goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land of which the Lord swore to your fathers to give you.”

These are wonderful blessings indeed, and as the survivor chooses to stop calling on the demonic, and breaks the rights given away to such beings in early childhood, they will begin to experience them to an increasing degree. Often, at first, the survivor will feel upset: they have given up everything to break free, they have left family, friends, loved ones, and are undergoing great suffering. They will wonder why; what they may not be aware of is that there may be spiritual parts that they are not yet co-conscious with who may be actually cursing or sabotaging the survivor and their helpers.

As time passes, if the survivor does not recontact and stays safe, these parts will stop doing their old jobs once they realize that they have a better option: to put their faith in Yeshua, and come under His protection and blessing.

G. Early Childhood Training (Ages 3 to 6)

Theta Training

By age three, a child raised by the Jesuits will have significant theta skills. The Jesuit Fathers will often “spiritually rape” the children by demonic help, causing the child to feel raped even though they were not physically touched (and the Father will feel great lust or pleasure in the practice).

In order to defend themselves, the child will also learn these skills and to “rape” others spiritually.

The children also learn to influence the thoughts of others, and it is not unusual to have a group of older children cause younger children to blurt out inappropriate remarks at meal times, using these skills (causing great laughter at the expense of the victimized child).

The children must also learn to defend themselves from the attacks of their peers; this is encouraged, since it causes the children to utilize their theta capabilities and strengthen them.

Leadership Training

By this time, certain children will also be placed as “class leaders” over their class of 12. This leadership is a difficult position to hold, since the other children, who will have been taught to be very competitive, will attempt to take over leadership by harming or even attempting to kill the class leader. Class leaders spend many wakeful nights due to their knowledge of the disgruntled feelings of the others they lead.

Presentation Training

At age three, the child will also be placed within several host families around the world, since the Jesuits are an international society. The child may grow up with anywhere from four to seven families in different countries, and will spend several weeks, or even a month or two each year, with each family during the next 20 years. School photos are taken, and a cover identity created in the countries which they anticipate the child will be working for them as they grow older into adulthood. The families will be given photos of the child (or a look-alike) in infancy for photo albums.

These host families will have programming to prevent the child and the host parents from bonding with each other, since **the child must always maintain their primary bond with the Jesuit fathers. The true host and core will always only be allowed to bond with the Jesuits.**

An example of host families could be one in Germany, one in France, one in Amsterdam, one in the United States, and even one in Israel. Since the Jesuits hate Israel, and a focus of their intelligence efforts is infiltration of Israeli national security, they will attempt as often as possible to place a child within Israel with a trainer who acts as their “aunt” or “uncle.” The child rotates between these host families and **thus learns to rotate between presentations based upon their current living situation**. The child has already learned to never speak any language but that of the host family (on pain of severe punishment), and has already undergone numerous experiences prior to going to a host family to teach them to not bond with anyone except the fathers.

Detachment Training

For example, at age two, the child will be allowed to interact with and bond with a loving woman, who acts as a mother surrogate to the child who is hungry for nurturing by a woman. After several weeks of loving interactions, at some point, the woman will turn around and begin severely abusing the child, such as by pushing them down stairs, sexually abusing them, or other abuse, laughing at the child’s display of pain at the emotional betrayal. The child must learn the lesson to never trust anyone, or to bond with anyone other than the fathers, or they will be killed.

The host families will also be programmed to reject the child, and/or abuse the child, to ensure that the child does not create a bond that is too strong. **The primary Jesuit bond will always be**

an unconscious one, that the Christian and cult cover presentations are completely amnesic to: a primary Jesuit Father whom they love greatly, since this is the only person they were allowed to love during their early childhood.

MI6 Training

Once the host presentations are in place, the child (by age 3 ½) will undergo training at MI6. MI6 has a special area (known as "Colonel Green's House" after Colonel Green, the founder of MI6) where young children undergo specialized assassin and military training. Again, the child goes there with their class, and is assigned a number. Instead of being called by name, they will be called "42" or a similar number during training and learn to respond to this.

MI6 reserves the Green House for the Jesuits at specific times, and the trainers during this time are all Jesuit trainers that work for MI6. The child will perfect previous skills in using a gun; their delta computer system will be put into place, and their ability to classify intelligence, and store it based upon its classification will be perfected during this time. The ability to use a photographic visual and auditory memory, and download to handlers information obtained while on a mission, is also perfected.

They will perfect basic skills of all operatives, such as following a target, dropping a tail, and blending in inconsicuously in a group.

The terrible punishments used at MI6 (such as the room with walls that move inwards, or the multi-faceted crystal ball in a room with mirrors used when the child is drugged, or the specialized computer system that is used for delta installation) are all used on the child. By the time the child has completed the 3-month training course (which is updated as they grow older), they will have a firm base in military special operations. By age 12, the child will have developed enough skillsets that they will be classified as a military weapon.

Delta Computer Training

Delta training is extensive enough to give it special mention. During delta training, the child will be hooked up to a computer, which it will be taught to emulate while in delta state. The computer speaks with a synthetic, very robotic voice, and the child will do the same. The delta training will encompass high and low delta states, and the child will be taught to classify all cognitive thoughts and experiences according to security levels. Low security levels can be retained as conscious thought; any information classified as mid to high security will be "access denied" to conscious presentation thought, and stored within the deeper delta states of the brain.

The delta computer system will have a ground zero state, with delta controllers and introjected trainers "manning" the computer systems. At ground zero, primary traumas and death state programming are installed, to prevent dismantling of the computer system and to keep the child invested in protecting high-security information.

Theta Controller Training

As the child reaches late preschool and early school age, they will undergo Galileo training (training in remote viewing, mind reading and thought influencing), in order to provide the Jesuits with access to buildings and conversations they would otherwise be unable to reach. During a mission, a child will be asked, for example, to go into an office building, and "read" classified or private documents during the night hours and then share what they have read with their handlers.

The child will also have the ability to introject themselves and images or thoughts into other people's dream states. In fact, part of theta assassin training is learning to have the subject dream of their own death. The head theta controller (such as Nemesis) will oversee the others, including Phobos (fear); Thantos (death) and Chaos (insanity). Theta training is aimed at teaching the child to induce each of these states in others using demonic powers developed.

Theta Assassin Training

Jesuits very frequently induce death in those that cross them. If a child is sent on a mission, they will have sexual relations with the "mark." At a later time (often days later), the child will be sent bac spiritually with a mentor back to the mark, to cause their death while sleeping. This will often begin with a terrifying dream of the individual's death, and many have literally died of fright due to these terrible dreams.

When the Black Pope is "retired" he is actually surrounded by a group of Jesuits, trained in this way, who kill him using theta powers. The new Black Pope always participates in this. Jesuit Fathers who are removed from a position due to betrayal (such as embezzling funds) will also be "retired" in this way.

The Black Pope in Rome has a theta guard composed of Jesuits who have completed their theta training (these guards can range in age from 12 years old to 32). The three guards sit in front of his office, as a warning to any intruders. They and other theta guards stationed throughout the Vatican give immediate notice if an outsider without authorization has entered the Vatican. This includes occultic practitioners who "fly" past the Vatican; these individuals are hunted down in the spirit by the theta guards, and first warned, and later even killed, for trespassing. In the occultic realm, the Vatican is considered a true "no fly" zone for those who travel spiritually.

The Swiss Guard is composed of young Jesuits who have completed their military and theta training, and act as an additional layer of protection.

The newer generations of thetas have highly developed "kill" training in the spiritual realm developed from the first weeks of life in the womb on, and are often mentored by groups of very skilled theta trainers to prevent the children from turning on the trainers and killing them. These newer thetas have poorly developed presentations, and must often live very protected lives away from the public eye.

Secrecy/Amnesia Training

Some of the most important training the preschooler undergoes is secrecy training. The child has bonded heavily to and wants to protect the Jesuit fathers, and so they are told: "If you betray us, we could be killed. The only way to not betray us is to not remember." The child **willingly** agrees to amnesia, in order to protect the people they love most.

In other secrecy setups, a child will complete a setup "mission" and later is asked if they remembered what happened. If the child answers "Yes" a gun is placed to their head, and they are told that if they remember, the Father must kill them. They are asked again if they remember (presenters are asked); until the child is either completely amnesic, or is killed (the Jesuits do not allow children who have any memory traces to live; the gun threat is very real).

Another setup is "remember the flowers": the child is taken to a garden at the monastery where he/she has spent times chatting with their favorite Father in the past. There is a water pool in the middle of the garden, and during this setup, it is filled with corpses of children the same age as the young child (ages 2 or 3). The Father cuts a flower, gives it to the child and tells the child to "remember the flowers" (i.e. the dead children who remembered and told others).

There are many, many examples of such secrecy setups, from being buried alive for a day, and the child being told that they will be buried forever if they ever tell (the child is also forced to watch the burial of a child who "told" and several days later help exhume the corpse, as a visual reminder of what can happen); to being buried in a casket filled with bugs, a rotten corpse, or other objects.

The child may be placed in a box with bees that sting them (after going through several weeks of anti-venom therapy previously) as a reminder that "memories hurt."

They are also forced to view the deaths of "traitors" who betrayed the fathers, including crucifixions (the class is marched every three hours past the three crosses for three days to watch the effect on the dying men); and the torture of others who remembered and "told."

Share this:

Twitter

Facebook

Loading...

Related

III. How are the Jesuits financed?
August 30, 2021
In "mind control"

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)
September 8, 2022
In "healing"

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

Pingback: Vatican Book Part 9 – flashyflasch

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here...

← Interview

Vatican book part 10 →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

svalispeaksagain 8:28 pm on June 11, 2022

Tags: Jesuit (10), mind control (69), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Vatican book part 10

There are many, many examples of such secrecy setups, from being buried alive for a day, and the child being told that they will be buried forever if they ever tell (the child is also forced to watch the burial of a child who “told” and several days later help exhume the corpse, as a visual reminder of what can happen); to being buried in a casket filled with bugs, a rotten corpse, or other objects.

The child may be placed in a box with bees that sting them (after going through several weeks of anti-venom therapy previously) as a reminder that “memories hurt.”

They are also forced to view the deaths of “traitors” who betrayed the fathers, including crucifixions (the class is marched every three hours past the three crosses for three days to watch the effect on the dying men); and the torture of others who remembered and “told.”

Alice in Wonderland Programming

By age five, the child will be taken to a large estate in France for Alice in Wonderland programming. This is an elaborate setup, and occurs over the period of a week. The child enters through rooms that reinforce previous training (“control the children: is recorded and replayed, with pictures of dead children displayed on the walls of the room; mirrors, “remember the flowers” and other triggers). They then enter a “backward world” where everything is backwards (much like the third dimension; this prepares the child for this travel). Alice (representing the presentation main controller who is heavily demonized) guides the child through backwards houses, where people walk and talk backwards (a common cause of childhood dyslexia is the confusion this creates).

They are then taken to a setup street where things are not backwards, but “crooked” or off slightly, which is even more disorienting. The child must walk with Alice through houses where things are insanely wrong, where people talk nonsense, and the floors and roofs may be upside down, to teach the child not to trust reality.

Alice then brings the child at last to a place where they see the white rabbit, and follow him "down the hole" (representing amnesia) to a room where the presentation stays behind, watching a movie (screen memories); the back parts then take the child's body through the rest of the setup. They enter a garden with animated/demonic flowers that at first talk kindly to the child, but later turn on the child and attack them. Wasps come and sting the child, and the large caterpillar (the guardian of the garden) tells the child what to do, and how to escape.

The child then enters a huge maze created from hedges. Soon, they are pursued by the "Jabberwocky" (a demonic presence), and must rely upon their theta skills to run and escape, and even leave the body and fly away. The white rabbit and Alice lead the child to safety, but at times will try to "trick" the child until the child learns to rely on themself instead of these capricious demonic "helpers."

The child sleeps outdoors, trying to get out of the hedge, and runs across the queen of hearts and her court playing croquet (with the severed heads of human children used as the balls). The queen becomes very interested in using the child's head (the child is constantly called "Alice" throughout the setup, to represent the presentations, since Alice in Wonderland is ultimately presentation programming to remain amnesic and rely on demonic help to do so).

The demonic "Alice" and cheshire cat help "rescue" the child, who then goes through the "valley of the shadow of death." In the middle is a cottage; it is now nightime, and the weary child knocks at the door, to be greeted by a kindly woman. The child is fed, sleeps, and is warned to avoid the Jabberwocky, which seeks to kill the child.

During the night, the kindly woman gets up. The child is awake, vomiting from the effects of a mild poison they were given in the food. The woman calls in her familiars (wolves) and tries to kill the child, who cries out for help to "Alice" and the "Cheshire Cat" to rescue her. A mage also comes and helps rescue the child, who continues the journey, meeting other characters. Finally, the child ends up at the palace of the Queen of Hearts, who demands a sacrifice (the child was already told that the last child to complete the Alice scenarios will be her sacrifice). The children who live watch the final child come in and be sacrificed in a ritual. This reminds them to never be slow or tardy when coming to a "party" (ritual). The "parties" in the Alice in Wonderland books are always referring to rituals.

Crazy Alice Programming

A subset of the Alice in Wonderland (presenter) programming is the "Crazy Alice" programming, which is meant to warn the Alice controller over the presentation to never allow memories to come up, or they will be labled "insane" and extreme abuse will occur. This is often the root of insanity fears when a person first starts remembering their past.

In this setup (also in France), the child (now called "Alice") is taken to a mental institution where the inmates are chained, and who rant, rave and curse at her. She is left there for days, with her only food being rancid water and rotten cabbage. The inmates hurl feces at her, verbally abuse her, and the custodians sexually abuse her while she is chained to the wall because of her "insanity" (remembering).

Because she is "sick", and "mentally ill" Alice is taken regularly down to the basement for "treatment" which consists of electroshocks, drowning, and being held over a rat pit filled with hungry rats that are allowed to bite her feet and ankles. The child is told repeatedly that "remembering" or "telling" will have her labeled "crazy" and that she will be taken to the institution, or one similar, for "treatment." This is part of developing the presenter amnesia and vows to never remember (or seek treatment).

Wizard of Oz Programming

This programming is also often done first during the preschool years, when the child can most easily internalize the program. The dark core ("Dorothy") is taken to another dimension, with her goal always to return to the Emerald City (representing ascension and the celestial paradise). The programming represents travel through the dimensions, the dangers involved, and the rewards for "ascending."

The goal of Wizard of Oz programming is to remind the child that they must always contact, or return home; and to create great fear of remembering (or, they will be placed in a coma and never wake up, unlike Dorothy in Oz, who woke up from "death" only after "returning home."

Fantasia Programming

Walt Disney was an avowed Illuminist, and his goal when creating Disney productions was to introduce the general public to the occult, especially young children, and to reinforce programming in those raised in the occult.

For instance, animals often "talk" in Disney films, and people can turn into animals, which are actually mage spells. The images are often dark and demonic in the animated movies, and have become increasingly so in recent years.

Disney's favorite film was Fantasia, in which he took classical music that was used to program young children with, and developed highly occultic themes in the cartoons that accompany it. To the untrained eye, Fantasia seems a bit odd; but the individual in the occult understands that the themes of a mage in training ("the sorceror's assistant) who must turn to his more powerful mentor for help, and the Greek pantheon (in the famous rain sequence), mythology and even the depiction of an occultic ritual and then the famous strains of ave maria (a Jesuit programming tune) end the film.

Fantasia is blatant occultic imagery throughout, and was used extensively in the 1950s through 1970s to program individuals with. It was superseded in recent years by movies such as the Matrix, which depicts high-level programming, Labyrinth, and others.

Helping the Survivor

Because of the early and repeated childhood betrayals, and the fact that the true host and core and core splits will not present early in therapy, the survivor will be very untrusting, and unable to bond normally with, anyone who tries to help them. The most common presentation is "detached", since the parts that can attach are hidden very deeply within and are reserved for the Jesuit Fathers only.

While the survivor will not at first present as "needy", the attachment needs are still there, and will drive recontact programming unless the survivor can learn to form healthy, safe attachments. This will be the challenge for both the survivor, and their helpers, since the wounded, angry parts within will often test those they do bond with again and again, once they feel safe within the relationship.

Theta and spiritual attacks are difficult to bear for helpers, but the survivor will be completely unaware that they are occurring. Gently asking, or even confronting, the survivor with what is happening can help. They will need to learn to pray, and ask inside, to find out what is happening with the parts that they are not co-conscious with yet.

Once co-consciousness is established, and the parts come to Christ and the demonic is renounced, the warfare will usually diminish, much to the relief of the survivor and their helpers.

It will take all of the emotional resources the survivor has, as well as outside support, and a strong walk with Yeshua, to face the original attachment pains, that will go throughout early childhood, infancy and prenatally. This is when praying in the spirit, scripture study, journaling and talking with safe support can help tremendously as the survivor grieves the past, and begins to build a life based upon a new foundation.

Often, Jesuit survivors have never known, or have had very limited contact with, anyone outside of the cult setting until they make the choice to break free. They are literally surrounded from conception on by members of the Order, with their life's work, friendships, host families and marriages all mapped out early on. Their close friends will all be members; their spouses are always members, since they arrange the marriages; and their families are also Jesuits or members of one of the 12 societies.

The jobs they have held will often be at "cult" corporations, with bosses and peers all members. Nothing in the survivor's environment was "left to chance" which is why breaking free is truly a miracle. The person who helps the survivor will often be their first non-Jesuit friend, and it will take time for them to learn to interact in "normal" or non-cult ways.

They will grieve tremendously at giving up their relationships with friends, family, mentors and the Fathers, in spite of the abuse, since this is the only "love" they have ever experienced, and this "love" (trauma bonding) allowed them to psychologically survive childhood. As terrible as the Jesuit Fathers were, they were the only consistent emotional bonds the child was allowed, and so the bonding is strong indeed, as well as the desire to "protect" these loved ones through either loyalty, or amnesia, or both.

The survivor who fears facing their past is one who fears betraying those they love; they are often "held hostage" through the group's control of or threatening to harm someone they love, whether a child, a mentee, a cult twin, or another relationship. To break free, the survivor must be shown, and truly believe, that only the LORD can rescue and keep safe these loved ones.

They must also be willing to count the cost of getting out, which is very high: no contact at all with former family, friends or loved ones, since they will all have been programmed to access the survivor. Few are willing to pay this price for freedom, and it is often the unconscious (unknown) love bonds that draw the survivor back in.

It can help the survivor to understand the true cost of discipleship:

Luke 14:26
"If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.

Even more helpful is the LORD’s promise of blessing to those that do choose to pay this price:
Matt. 19:29
And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name’s sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life
It can help the survivor who grieves the loss of every love relationship they have ever known, to understand that by coming into God’s kingdom, they have actually gained a whole new, safe family:
Mark 3:34, 35
And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, “Here are My mother and My brothers. For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother.”
It is a blessing to know that Yeshua calls the survivor who gets out His brother or sister; and to know that they inherit eternal life.

H. Middle Childhood: Ages 5 – 11

Mage Training

All Jesuits undergo mage training. Mages are considered the “top” of the occultic hierarchy, over witches, wizards and other levels of occultism. They are adept scholars, and study the ancient Babylonian manuscripts (which describe the first contacts between man and the “gods” or “ascended masters” which are actually demonic entities), as well as the Egyptian, Roman and druidic writings.

The oldest manuscripts are considered the most reliable. A young mage is forced to memorize the oral histories and spells contained in these texts. They learn to use books that demonically “come alive” and show scenes when certain spells are cast (much more entertaining than a normal picture book to a 5-year-old). With the help of a mentor, they learn the original names of the animals, in order to call them to themselves, practicing standing in the woods and calling rabbits, deer, birds and other normally shy creatures.

They learn to take the form of an animal, often a bird, or a predator such as a wolf. While this sounds impossible, mages do these things demonically. The focus of mage craft is power and control. The young mage learns to battle in power battles, with the help of demonic forces. While young, their spiritual shielding appears red; then they progress to green, then blue, and the most powerful mages have a bright blue-white emanation, signifyiing extreme demonic ‘protection.” The child travels to the fourth dimension, which is filled with ziggurats, and engages in power battles at first beside their mentor (who protects them from being killed by malicious older mages), and then, as they grow in power, they learn to battle alone.

Mages often “pick battles” with other mages upon meeting them, to determine who is “stronger.” There is a constant positioning for power among these occultists, who have extreme pride.

The mages also learn spells for creating a light; and later, spells and curses to cause illness, death, and the cloak of invisibility, among others. Early in their training, the Fathers help the young (3-year-old) mage conduct rituals and sacrifices; later in their training, the mage does their own, or orders others to conduct them, in order to gain power. The greater the sacrifice,the greater the power, according to mage thinking.

The highest level of mage is the ascended master. This is a mage who has undergone death themselves many times, willingly, in order to ascend to the highest dimension and “learn” from the other ascended masters. This is considered the highest level attainable in the occult world.

Coming of Age Ceremony

When a Jesuit is 12 years old, they undergo their coming of age ceremony, at which time they become a full Jesuit. This ceremony is held at the Vatican for the top classes, and is done every year, as new classes “graduate.” The inner courts of the Vatican are cleared, and golden poles are erected throughout it. The public is not allowed near the Vatican for the week before or after this ceremony, and since there is always a “no fly” rule for aircraft at all times, the ceremony is highly secretive.

The first part involves going to Satan’s Throne at the heart of the Vatican, giving a sacrifice on the black alter there, descending to Satan’s throne in the spiritual realm, and being given a name by Satan himself.

A few days later, the other, more horrific ceremony occurs. Top leadership from all 12 occultic societies that serve the Vatican travel to Rome, and sit in the small coliseum in a designated area under their banner. There are banners representing the Order of the Knights Templar, The Order of the Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Magnificat, The Order of the Rosy Cross, Trinity, the Illuminati, and the other occultic societies that are actually arms of the Vatican around the world. It is considered a great honor to be invited to this ceremony.

The Jesuit class comes out. On 1000 golden poles in the arena are tied infants, toddlers and young children, and one by one, the Jesuit trainees must slaughter them. Around the arena are golden bowls which they use to catch the blood from each victim, which is then offered to Satan. There are also golden bowls filled with wine, which the Jesuit trainees drink from when they are thirsty or emotionally overcome by the horror of what they are doing.

At the end of this ritual (called “the slaughter of the innocents”) the trainee is considered an ascended master and a full Jesuit father. From then on, they are referred to as “Father” by others, and they take off the brown robe of the acolyte and don the black robe of the full Jesuit. Due to the terrible nature of the ritual, some falter and cannot continue; they are killed by the other trainees as instructed. Most of these new Fathers undergo a period of collapse after the ceremony; they are never the same again.

This ritual is the culmination of a lifetime of training in how to slaughter others. By this time, the new Jesuit Father has slaughtered literally thousands over the course of their childhood, including assassinations and rituals participated in. The design of this type of bloodguiltiness is to create a type of insanity and the desire to never remember, which feeds the dissociation. The individual will experience a huge amount of guilt, and believe that God can never forgive them for the innocent lives they took.

Helping the Survivor

The ritual described above creates a demonic stronghold; the new Jesuit truly believes they are unforgiveable by the Christian God (after all, they took the lives of innocents), and so they embrace Satan himself, who welcomes them in this deed and even gives them honor and a high position in his army for doing it.

It takes considerable time, prayer and replacing these lies with scripture and truth to overcome

the lifelong effects of participating in this ceremony. The Jesuit leaving the Order will need to hear, and believe, again and again that the Lord can forgive them for this bloodshed.
This is when sharing scriptures about forgiveness can be a lifeline, since the survivor may initially feel deep shame, and even suicidal, when the memory first comes. They may fear they are going insane (from the weight of the guilt), and will need significant emotional support to process this trauma.

This is not the time to emotionally abandon the survivor. If the therapist is going out of town, there needs to be accountability and prayer support present, and reassurance that they are forgiven (they will ask over and over again, “Can God really forgive THIS?” They will need to seek this answer from the Lord, and hear it from Him to truly believe the truth, but initially may need to hear that they are forgiven from a Christian who can represent the love of Jesus to them in the midst of their guilt and pain.

Over time, they will come to an understanding that they are forgiven, and will feel immense gratitude. It takes patience, but the Lord is faithful to show His mercy for those that have survived this type of trauma – the trauma of inflicting death upon thousands.

Computer Training

The Vatican has trained its operatives since the early 1960s in the use of computers, and the equipment they have available is 50 years more advanced than that used by the general public. They have classrooms within the Vatican that the children go to for training in the different areas that they will be active in. This includes extensive training in all computer languages, and “hacker” training in order to get past firewalls and access information.

They are also trainined in bookkeeping, accounting, and business systems, since the Vatican especially likes to keep itself informed about the financial operations of the organizations it works with, and who work for it. The child will spend many hours on a computer, and will learn every method of downloading and sending on information that is requested.

Political Training

By age 8, the child will undergo political and diplomacy training. The child will accompany their mentor to dinners hosted by powerful political figures, and they will later be asked information, such as “who was the most important person at the dinner? How do you tell? What was the most important information shared during the dinner? Why?”

The child is taught to be charming, and to engage in conversation individuals from any walk of life; and how to gather information without the person they are conversing with being aware of this fact. They are also taught how to “listen in” on other conversations while engaged in coversation themselves.

They may undergo specialized training for placement in a politically prominent position; or they may learn how to engage politically prominent individuals, get close to them, and fulfill their mission regarding them.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Interview	Book available on Amazon	Vatican Book Part 9
February 14, 2022	April 25, 2018	March 21, 2022
In "healing"	In "mind control"	In "healing"

Lita 8:51 am on June 12, 2022

I pray for all those poor children.xxxMay GOD make those suffer who done this to these children.

★ Like

Rita 5:36 pm on June 12, 2022

How many are in a typical graduating class of Mages? How long does the graduation ritual/ceremony typically take to complete?

Thanks for all that you share. Everywhere I go on the internet (in search of how to help survivors) EVERYONE is SO grateful that you share what you know. You are a wonderful, faithful servant of the Lamb of God. Also, I'm always relieved when you post something new, something that sounds like it's authentically you.

Regarding the issues of clones, and twinning, have you written anything about that? If not, would you consider it? I see influencers every day that no longer look like they did in the past, sound like the did in the past, or speak the same lines of reasoning and truth that they did in the past. I understand that all opposition is controlled but at the same time it seems like some people go off script, or off programming. Jordan Peterson is an example. He was a brilliant speaker, teaching independent critical thinking, and individual responsibility vs the hive mind. I don't think that was helping the New Age higher ups bring all people into submission. Peterson was truly helping millions of people, especially young people. Something has happened to him. I know he had a breakdown– but did he? Or did he go in and get cloned/ or tuned up? Perhaps this issue is unrelated to helping survivors, and is more oriented towards helping the general population that is so- so- so deceived. Perhaps I shouldn't be bring it up, but if anyone would know– you would.

I understand if you edit out any of this, or delete it completely. I appreciate you no matter your response, or non-response.

Thanks again for all you do. Much Love always.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 10:44 pm on June 16, 2022

Hi, the mage training is only one of several subjects that children in the group I was in studied; they also studied many other things as well over the years. The training takes years. The graduation ceremony is over several days, since it also includes the other areas studied being celebrated within the group. A typical cohort is 12 in a class, with several classes graduating each year.
I have discussed clones and twins under the genetic labs, where they create clones and twins (same thing, basically, since it creates an infant with identical DNA). In the group I was in, we actually had triplet sets of one girl and two boys, or two girls and one boy. This allows the triplets to “fill in” for one another in their various presentations, and the bonds are very intense between them.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican Book Part 9

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section) →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

- Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
- About
- Contact
- Blog
- Articles
- Book Info

svalispeaksagain 7:56 pm on September 8, 2022

Tags: Christian (24), dissociation (30), healing (43), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45), Vatican (10)

Vatican Book Part 11 (final section)

Note: please be aware that this post mentions programming methods, and Christianity

Recontact Programming

The Jesuit Order has difficult recontact programming to break. This is why very few members of this organization attempt to leave. The recontact programming is based upon two main bases:

The use of infant attachment bonds, and the use of extreme (severe) pain and punishment methods should recontact fail. This is in addition to internal and external reprogramming if these first two fail.

Attachment and Loyalty Bonds

As mentioned previously, the Fathers bond the infant very early on, beginning in the womb when the birthmother rejects the fetus and the fetus comes to believe that the Fathers are the only source of love. This contines in infancy, with the infant being left in a completely dark room, and then "rescued" by the primary Father who gives the infant a bottle, among many other scenarios. The infant, over the course of the first year of life, bonds very heavily to their primary Father, and to Satan himself.

The child becomes extremely loyal to the Fathers, and it literally breaks their heart to think of being taken away. Numerous setups are done during early childhood, of the child being "kidnapped" and later "rescued" by the Fathers, and also of the child being taken away by "traitors" who torture and punish the child, who later escapes to the Fathers. These and dozens of other scenarios are used to reinforce the belief that the child can only be loved, and have their emotional needs met, by the Jesuit Fathers.

The Fathers are the only source of love and bonding the child is allowed to have, since throughout early childhood, all other bonds end up in either betrayal or death. The child literally learns to trust no one other than the Fathers.

Hell Programming

As the child grows older, the recontact program is tied to the internal hell. Recontacting the Fathers is considered a Prime Directive for the system, and failure to comply results in the belief that the system will descend into hell.

The presentation will have no idea that this is occurring. They will feel restless, driven, or even hyperactive when the program is runnning, or may battle tremendous guilt and depression, without knowing why. The programs run unconsciously, and therefore are difficult to identify until enough healing has occurred that the survivor can work with different brain states inside.

Hell programming has nine levels (much like Dante’s inferno). The first three levels will be on one level, the second three on a lower level, with three more at the lowest level, and beneath them all is the abyss (utter darkness). Each level of hell is tied to a prime trauma, as described above.

The first level of hell has individuals chained to poles; demons come and flagellate the victims with whips that have sharp rocks or points attached to them. Since infancy, the young child was taken to “hell” at night to “punish” them for “sins”, and so they have extensively internalized this punishment system. The controllers/guardians for this level originally were punished, then learned to punish others, in this same way, including flogging children and adults to death. They will hold the belief that what they are doing is “right” and that sinners “deserve” punishment, until healing comes and the demonic attachments and rights are broken internally.

The second level of hell involves individuals being chained to stakes and burned alive. Charon is the controller/guardian over this level, and as described above, believe that what he is doing is “right” and that sinners “deserve death,” until this part comes to Jesus and has healing. The presentation will undergo great grieving as these brutal punishers share their experiences, both as an infant, undergoing punishment, and later, as a punisher.

The third level of hell involves a chamber filled with bees that swarm upon individuals and sting them to death. Karydis is the controller for this level, and will have learned to take small children and adults to “hell” where they are swarmed and stung. The controller will have undergone this experience in infancy, first with painful bee stings; then in early childhood, being given anti-venom before being placed where bees would swarm and sting them. The child will have seen traitors tied to poles and stung to death, and will remember these traumatic memories. These memories are reinforced with virtual reality, which recreates the buzzing and the swarming and stinging.

The fourth level of hell involves rats that come and eat at the parts that are trapped there, tied to poles; or the rats will swarm around the parts and chew.

The fifth level of hell involves bugs that bite those within the chamber.

The other levels of hell include crushing, dropping and being torn apart demonically. The deepest level (just above the core) is the abyss, where utter darkness (the primal fear of abandonment described in infant programming) sits.

In addition to “hell,” leadership in the Jesuit Order is often also chained with what is known as :9 by 9″ programming, or one of its variations, which is layered on top of the hell programming.

7 By 7 Programming

7 by 7 involves seven different types of internal pain being placed in through the use of tesla wave and microbursts, as well as ELF and EHF waves. The child is placed within a machine that reads their brainwave activity, creates a specific brain map, and begins entrainment of the brain (over several sessions lasting from 6 to 10 hours, normally, over a period of months with regular reinforcement over the years).

The machine plays harmonic tones that the child has been taught since infancy to “follow” and enter into different brain wave states. As it does so, in one sequence, the brain is taught to rapidly drop brain wave states from high gamma to low delta/death state in less than a second. This causes extreme pain, and even seizure activity. The drops are entrained in over a period of time, with intervals between drops that can last from 4 to 10 seconds, depending upon the person’s recovery rate and pain tolerance. The individual’s infants are put through this sequence, which creates a “startle” reaction and the resulting infant terror.

Another sequence entrained in is a constant oscillating wave form with high-frequency waves that causes headache, extreme heat, and alternating bursts of pain at the limbic level.

Another sequence uses tesla waves, which cause extreme pain throughout the entire nervous system, in synchronized bursts (the sensation is similar to being stung by bees in every nerve at one time).

Another sequence causes a crescendo and decrescendo pounding within the brain, caused by increased intracranial pressure and heating, due to entrainment where microwave bursts hit the brain stem (through the auditory canal).

Another causes the sensation of a hammer pounding within the brain, at 4 to 6 -second intervals (“Vulcan’s Hammer”).

Another sequence is intermittent death: the heart stops and restarts.

When the individual attempts to leave, and stops first physical and then spiritual contact with the Fathers, these sequences are meant to cause the system to “implode” and cause either death or shattering of all systems. The longer the individual goes without contact, the higher the level of pain: there are seven different sequences, each with levels one through seven of pain (hence, the name, “seven by seven”). At peak, all seven programs are running at level seven, which normally results in the heart stopping, and/or core shattering.

The Jesuits consider this program completely unbreakable, since the suicide and psychosis rate for those who try to break it is extremely high. It takes a lengthy amount of time, safety, and significant support to break this, as well as extensive prayer, since the gradual buildup to core shatter level is meant to force the systems to recontact in order to avoid system death.

Experimental Programming

The Jesuits also engage in extensive experimental programming (Protocol I – V programs), which are used for expendable individuals. Protocol V is the classification for endpoint (physical or neurological death as the ultimate result) of the programs. They involve different forms of torture, and the use of new technologies to see the effects on individuals.

The West Coast of the United States has one of the largest experimental theta programming labs in the world; the other four are in Beijing,China (where infants are brought to the center by local contacts), in Russia, in the Ukraine and in East Berlin, Germany. There are other smaller centers that also perform experiments and collect data, including many universities and institutes around the world.

Helping the Survivor

Because of the high level of occultic training that Jesuits undergo, they will experience significant resistance at first from inside parts who feel that they underwent large amounts of pain and death in order to receive high status. These parts will resist giving up this identity, which gave meaning to their pain at the time they were programmed during early childhood, since this was the meaning assigned by their abusers to justify the abuse.

Other parts will resist change, or continue to contact, because they truly believe that by doing so, they are preventing the systems from being shattered, or from going to hell (descension) eternally. These beliefs will be held deep within, at the root of all system controllers, and unconsciously and subconsciously. The parts that hold these beliefs must be willing to come out, and examine the truth, and question what they were taught and programmed to believe. Unfortunately, doing so can cause the survivor to experience tremendous pain and internal pressure, not only from internal conflict and demonic, but from the terrible body memories programmed in to occur if the survivor tries to question old beliefs.

7 by 7 is one of the cruelest forms of programming ever invented. Those who undergo it experience intense, continuous pain until their unconscious mind and parts are able to give up all of the beliefs that drive the program, as well as giving up all spiritual attachments to the program. The top system and master controllers will all be tied to it, along with their infants, and all core splits. Parts are taught to beleive that noone can survive trying to heal from this program.

Breaking it is miserable; and the best helps include prayer, emotional support, the use of medications or herbs that slow brain wave activity (since the pain comes from jumps in brainwave activity that are programmed in, or mini-seizures within the pain centers of the brain). The survivor will always battle suicide programming along with the pain, since core despair is also programmed in; they need to be told, and to believe, time and time again that they can break the program and survive.

V. T**he Goals of the Vatican: Alexis Paves the Way**

The ultimate goal of the Vatican is to prepare the world for the advent of the antichrist, and to usher in the New World Order, which is greatly anticipated. To do so, they have created several mass mind control technologies, under the umbrella of Project Alexis.

Project Alexis

Project Alexis was conceived of in the 1940s, and the earliest forms of implementation in the 1950s were very experimental. It has three arms:

- Security;
- Finances,
- Behavior Modification.

Alexis actually means "without law" and the demonic principality which gave the information to the Jesuits on how to create this project is called Alexis (the spirit of lawlessness).

Security

The security branch of Alexis is involved in the identification of and tracking of every individual in the world. This has already been accomplished today by assigning a numerical code (government ID number or social security number) to individuals, and forbidding them to work for money without this identification number linked to a photo ID and fingerprints.

This branch also involves the development of technologies used to track individuals who might try to "disappear" or not participate in the NWO agenda. This includes the ability to identify and track all individuals through their use of phone (GPS), car (GPS) and online technologies (one reason all laptops today have a camera that can actually show images of the person on the computer and an internal GPS).

Collection and collation software has become extremely sophisticated, and can track within seconds the entering in of data associated with an individual. ATM card use is also used for tracking purposes. The monitoring of phone conversations, emails and all electronic/digital communications of individuals considered "security risks" or antithetic to the agenda of the NWO is routine at this point.

There is no privacy in today's high-tech age, and this is on purpose. Microsoft Windows has background software that automatically collects data on users, integrates with Google and other search engines, and red flags any users with a "high risk" profile. All modern browsers and operating systems (including freeware) do the same. Encryption software does not work for a simple reason: any offered publicly has already had the master key bought by those who ultimately work for the Vatican.

HD television has collation software that also works in the background, and that can record conversations for individuals considered "high risk" and send it forward.

Financial

The financial branch of Alexis has been in effect since the early 1970s, and involves the digitalization of currency, and the campaign to encourage acceptance of first ATM and microcards, and soon, identification chips, for all monetary transactions. This is already nearly in place in Europe (the EEU), and the United States is expected to follow suit soon.

The Vatican founded the World Bank, and it will be the center for finances throughout the world in the future. It already controls currency exchange rates, and helps to determine the rate of inflation in many countries at this time.

Another aim of Alexis is to cause worldwide financial panic, due to severe monetary devaluation, governmental and bank bankruptcy, and extreme inflation. The World Bank will then "step in" to gain control of this financial crisis. It will appear to offer a "solution" to governments and their populations, when in reality, they will gain control of the worldwide currencies.

Mass Behavioral Modification

Another goal of Alexis is mass behavioral modification, in order to prepare the general public to accept the New World Order and its leader. This mass modification was originally conceived of in the 1940s, and crude forms were implemented in the 1950s with the advent of television watching by the general population. Basically, it consists of subliminal images that are displayed at a rate of .03 microseconds, at a rate of 1200 per minute.

The images contain graphics of sexual acts, violence, bestiality, demonic rituals, as well as acts of hatred and brutality directed towards Jews and Christians. Other graphics espouse the coming world leader, and tell people to look forward to his coming. The main image in the graphics is that of Alexis, a composite woman formed by a team of behavioural scientists who studied what images are most pleasing to the most races. Alexis also has a voice, which is slowly being introduced in the background of many television and video shows. When she is finally openly revealed, she will be the "voice of the New World Order" and will appear to be familiar and loved by most, since she has been subliminally fed to the masses for years.

A hologram of Alexis will be used on television to calm people down, and tell them what to do when the NWO is revealed. Her voice tones were again developed by a team of behaviourists, who studied what type of voice appealed to the greatest number of people in all races and ages. Tapes (computerized) of the results have been made over the years. Alexis has already been giving subliminal and background commands to people for many years; they are just not consciously aware of this fact.

Alexis has been fed to the public via television, movies, video games, computer games and the Internet. If an individual watches any of these for more than a second, they will be automatically fed the subliminals. The subliminals tell people that "watching TV is relaxing," "I need to go online, I enjoy it" and other messages to encourage time in these modes, and thus increase the programming. Even early childhood learning games, used in schools, have these subliminals embedded.

Themes of anarchy, rebellion, and violence are embedded in the Alexis modification. A feeling of impending doom and destruction (unless the world turns to the leader who will come and "save" them) is also embedded.

The Hollywood industry was created in order to also fulfill this agenda, and all major studios are funded by members of occultist groups. The top stars are all mind controlled, and the industry has the directive to encourage through the movies made, the acceptance of the NWO/occultist agenda.

VI**. The Current State of the World (2017)**

At this time, the New World Order is in place; it is simply not open. The detention camps and military are already in place, with detailed plans for each section of the world for the coming takeover. The New World Order is not a "future" event, but instead a present reality that is simply waiting for the signal to move into place.

Each country of the world, and continent, has Jesuit military commanders and generals assigned, who will give orders to their well-trained and disciplined armies (these armies train at night at most large military installations and in desert and remote regions throughout the world). The major occultic societies of the eastern and western world all have troops and generals ready to command their area of the nations the individuals are located in.

Crowd control technologies (based on tesla and EHF waves) are already in place. If resistance occurs, these will be used; they can cause extreme pain, unconsciousness, or death within minutes.

Once the takeover is complete, resisters are to be placed inside designated detention camps for either "rehabilitation" or death if resistance is final. Leaders within the Vatican and other occultic armies will assume teaching positions, to help implement the NWO directives within the different nations, and to explain the policies and what they mean.

These liasion ambassadors are fluent in every language, and thus are well-equipped to gain the cooperation of the governments (which are already heavily infiltrated and expected to give in without any resistance). Paramilitary and other groups that might provide resistance have been carefully profiled and infiltrated for years.

The one nation that has tried to resist this infiltration is Israel which is why they engender special hostility. To say that the Vatican and its arms have tried to infiltrate the Mossad and Israeli government over the past 50 years would be an understatement; yet to date, the success rate has only been moderate compared to other nations.

The Vatican has entered into numerous highly secret agreements with the Arab nations over the years, in its desire to destroy Israel. For instance, the U.S. financial families were instructed by the Vatican to pour money into engineering and other resources years ago into developing the oil reserves of the Arab nations. Why? Because the Arabs, like the Vatican, hate Israel, and the Vatican wanted them to modernize and be able to fight the Israelis; plus, oil gives them a method of blackmailing governments which have become highly dependent upon petroleum prices as an index for inflation rates.

Oil really is "black gold" and currencies that are no longer backed by gold standards often float based upon current oil prices. Governments now measure their wealth in large part on their current petroleum reserves, needed to fuel industry, transportation and heating, among other uses. The country that cannot purchase oil will lose its industry; and alternative energy forms (especially renewable ones) have been blackballed for years, since the Vatican WANTS the world dependent upon Arabian oil supplies; this allows them to control policies and encourage anti-Israeli initiatives.

Oil funds have also purchased large amounts of arms for the Arab nations over the years. This was one reason for the influx of foreign geologists into the Sudan region years ago: to quickly develop the oil reserves in order to fund anti-Israeli wars. The Vatican secretly despises the Arabian nations, but they work with them because of their deep hatred for the Jewish race.

The Vatican is also extremely anti-Christian, regardless of the pronouncements of the newest (Jesuit) pope. At its heart, the Vatican is satanic, serves Satan, and wishes to destroy Christianity. While the presenters in its armies may be Christian, the programmed parts will all be loyal to Satan and the antichrist until healing occurs. The anti-christian agenda of the Vatican has been seeded worldwide, with increasing numbers of laws designed to make biblical, authentic Christianity illegal. Within the next 15 years, it will be illegal (a "hate crime") to be a Christian, and many believers will be faced with possible imprisonment for their faith.

The best possible preparation for the unveiling of the new world order is a strong faith in and obedience to the Lord. The Lord has promised that He, not satan, is in control of world history. While the Vatican can attempt to implement its strategies, it will not win. Revelations makes it clear who the true “winner” in the battle for the minds and wills of mankind is: the Lord of Hosts, who will usher in His millenial kingdom.

There is no mind control technology on earth, that can erase the deep down knowledge of the truth. People can be lied to from conception on, but once the truth is known, most will embrace that truth. This is the basis of healing: replacing the lies with truth, and choosing to walk away from lies.

It is important that the Christian Church “wakes up” to the late hour that we are in. As mentioned previously, the NWO is not a theory, but is nearly ready to come forward publicly. This is a time for Christians to be on their knees, and ask the Lord for HIS strategy for dealing with these things, and for the Christian Churches and their members to be willing to help the flood of survivors who will be leaving occultic societies such as the Jesuits during this time of repentance before judgment.

If you help survivors, pray that others will be raised who have a similar heart; that eyes will be opened to the truth and the need. Pray that the Church will no longer turn away from or disbelieve/discredit survivors, but instead will war with them to break the power of the kingdom of darkness. This is one of the best possible ways of putting into practical action the heart of Yeshua for mankind: to deliver those who are oppressed, and set free those who are captive.

Currrently, the Church is slumbering, and mainstream Christianity seems woefully unaware of the actual spiritual condition of our world today. We truly seem to be acting out the prediction of Yeshua, that in the last days, people will be “eating and drinking and giving away in marriage” and completely unaware that the forces of darkness are at work to draw mankind away from our only hope: Yeshua. My prayer is that the church will awaken to the truth, and take an active part in fighting against satan and his forces. This is intercession of the highest form, to work actively for the Kingdom of God and watch the enemy and his strongholds overthrown in the lives of individuals formerly chained to the occult.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Accessing Part 2: How to Prevent It
June 19, 2017
In "mind control"

Exposing the Vatican: Part 5
October 7, 2021
In "healing"

book part 4
September 13, 2021
In "healing"

Amie Martineau 2:25 am on September 9, 2022

Is every Jesuit programmer? And how many children can one programmer have? It was very revealing what you said about the top Hollywood stars being mind controlled that's crazy to me… Just goes to show you how important idols are to people… I was wondering your thoughts on the Queen's passing today just out of curiosity?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 4:44 pm on September 9, 2022

Amie:
All Jesuits have the ability to program others, as in any other large, organized international occult group. Programmers will often work with groups of children of various ages; this will vary with the programmer and their abilities, and the perceived needs of the order. A programmer may simultaneously be working with several infants, several toddlers, and a dozen young children of various ages, as well as several teens and adults. On the Queen: she was part of the British Illuminati, and I pray that it is true that she became a believer at some point. I knew her when I was younger, and she did things that were part of her role in the occult then, so I have mixed feelings on hearing about her passing

★ Like

shurtle 6:26 pm on September 9, 2022

How do we pray to stop this? Do we pray against lawlessness? What can we do to stop this control over us? Get rid of all electronics? Unfortunately we can't do that now. Everything is electronic mostly to accomplish anything. Please advise.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 11:21 pm on September 9, 2022

I believe we need to pray for worldwide revival and that God will change men's hearts. Ultimately history is in God's hands not Satan's and we can pray that God will raise up fearless overcomes and awaken the sleeping church to take authority

★ Like

Alphonse 3:19 am on September 10, 2022

Svali please keep praying for me.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 5:06 pm on September 10, 2022

I will be praying for you

★ Like

Amie Martineau 9:18 pm on September 14, 2022

Can you elaborate at all about your time with Queen Elizabeth? And from what I've read all members of Royal families mind controlled? And also when it came out in the MSN about Queen Elizabeth being very acquainted with Jeffrey Epstein we certainly can't think that she did not know what was going on especially since her son was in the middle of it… Do you think the Maxwell/Epstein story goes a lot deeper? I'm surprised that the MSN would expose something like that… But maybe it's just the games that they play within the firm?

★ Like

fredurez29 11:31 am on September 23, 2022

Hi,

Do you know why every women in show business, celebrities, politics and models are transgenders and if they are under MK Ultra too ?

And if a fake female agent programmed marry to a normal politic, will their children be programmed too ?

For instance Marine Le Pen in France : she is a trans like her mother while her father is a Resistant against new world order and free massonery, he has been candidate 4 or 5 times for presidency. So I wonder if his daughter has been created in an occult centre, since her mother cannot have baby because she is a male

I guess you know about this subject, that every female stars have a male skull, so it means they have been transformed by an organisation

Thank you very much

★ Liked by 1 person

fredurez29 6:32 pm on September 23, 2022

Do the occult orders make transgenders programmed too ? Like models, singers, actresses

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 12:11 am on September 25, 2022

This is a topic that takes time to address and I plan to do so in a future post. The quick response is that there can be numerous causes of transgenderism ranging from genetic engineering for some to social pressure for others, to other causes.

★ Liked by 1 person

fredurez29 3:53 am on September 25, 2022

AWESOME, I can’t wait to read you, this subject is so much important.
I also want to know if you have ever heard about such a CUBE computer that these groups could use for their technology, if yes, where is it ?
This is central and their weak point. Indeed their NWO will be essentially based on 5G, 6G, and crypto-currency, such as it’s already done in China.
The Antichrist will rule the world through this technology.
That’s why we are looking for their damned CUBE.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Vatican book part 10

The Real Anthony Fauci →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

OPERATION MIND CONTROL

Walter H. Bowart

David, Young Air Force Sergeant: He Was One Of The Victims.

"Ever since I got out of the service I haven't been able to give a day-by-day account of what happened to me during those four years. The scary thing is that I still have a horrible fear of talking. I have a tendency to speed up my speech when I'm being pressed on something; and I get very tense when anyone asks me about my service duties.

"Something has happened to my mind. . ."

This expensive gold pin, in which is set a rare white jade, diamonds, and emeralds, was worn on special occasions by a "Presidential Model". Each of the stones as well as the symbol of the butterfly were used in programming the woman who wore it. The pin also served as a signal to handlers. It told them that the beauty who wore it had received the "Monarch Programming" and would fall under the spell of anyone who possessed the codes, cues and triggers. Operation Mind Control was largely a male chauvinist's game.

About The Author

W.H. Bowart was awarded the McMahon Scholarship in journalism to the University of Oklahoma. In 1965 he founded the New York Weekly *The East Village Other*. That same year he founded *The Underground Press Syndicate* which quickly grew to include 200 papers around the world. Since that time he has edited *The Aspen Daily News, The Port Townsend Daily News* and *Palm Springs Life*. He has written numerous articles and several novels under a variety of noms de plume. He is on the Advisory Board of The Freedom of Thought Foundation and, at present is making a documentary based on this book.

Page numbering errata:

Several pages had to be inserted and are marked with"a". For example if a page had to be inserted between this one and the next one it would be marked "4a". There is no page 571 so please don't look for it, or write us asking for it.

OPERATION
MIND
CONTROL

By W.H. Bowart

RESEARCHER'S EDITION

Published by
FLATLAND EDITIONS
P.O. Box 2420
Fort Bragg, Ca. 95437

©1978 by W.H. Bowart
Revised expanded second edition common law copyright 1994 by
International Artists Trust of Eiran

First Edition published by Dell Publishing Company 1978
Revised and expanded Researchers Edition published 1994

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means without the prior written permission of the Publisher, excepting brief quotes used in connection with reviews written specifically for inclusion in a magazine or newspaper.

NOTICE TO COPYMACHINE OPERATORS:

COPY ONLY REGISTERED COPIES, NUMBERED AND WITH THE ORIGINAL SIGNATURE AND SEAL MADE OUT IN THE NAME OF THE OWNER. DO NOT COPY THIS WITHOUT SIGNED AND SEALED SHAREWARE COPYRIGHT AGREEMENT SHOWING ROYALTIES PAID AND THE NUMBER OF COPIES AUTHORIZED TO THE LICENSCEE.

(You will be asked to mail the permits back in an attached self-addressed stamped envelope.)

Cover price: $80

Photocopying of this book is permitted in this way, as shareware, by sending a royalty check for $15.00 per copy to the author, W.H. Bowart, P.O. Box 35072, Tucson, Arizona 85740-5072

Registered owners of this book shall be notified about future Researchers Updates when they occur, and will be sent appendices and additional materials. Researchers are urged to submit their corrections, criticisms and arguments to the author at the above address.

Printed in the United States of America

Second Edition (Research Edition of 500 copies) numbered and printed November 1994

This book is dedicated to the survivors of Operation Mind Control.

Also, this book is dedicated to my best pal,
without whose support it could not have been accomplished.

This is a limited Researcher's Edition of
Operation Mind Control.

Information in this book
differs from information
previously made public.
This book is an inquiry
into the discrepencies.

"I know of no safe depository of the ultimate powers of society but the people themselves, and if we think them not enlightened enough to exercise their control with a wholesome discretion, the remedy is not to take it from them, but to inform their discretion by education."

--- Thomas Jefferson

"In the technotronic society the trend would seem to be towards the aggregation of the individual support of millions of uncoordinated citizens, easily within the reach of magnetic and attractive personalities effectively exploiting the latest communication techniques to manipulate emotions and control reason."

--- Zbigniew Brzezinski, National Security Advisor

"I don't believe the Constitution of the United States gives you the right to commit a crime if you want to; therefore, the Constitution does not guarantee you the right *to maintain inviolable the personality forced on you in the first place -- if and when the personality manifests strongly antisocial behavior. The new behavioral control techniques make even the hydrogen bomb look like a child's toy, and, of course, they can be used for good or evil..."*

--- Dr. James V. McConnell, Professor of Psychology, University of Michigan

"Only puny secrets need protection. Big discoveries are protected by public incredulity."

--- Marshall McLuhan and Barrington Nevitt

Note for the second edition

A WARNING TO SURVIVORS!

This book contains information that will trigger you. Give it to your deprogrammer, rather than try to read it yourself unless you have a thoroughly reintegrated personality. Some of this information is wrong and can be harmful to you. Inevitably it is impossible to weed out the triggers, since programming varies from person to person, from handler to handler. Thus, know that if you have ever been programmed you may be triggered by information in this book

At the end of the book is an information sheet about the Freedom of Thought Foundation which, as of this writing, is an ad hoc committee of survivors, researchers, therapists, deprogrammers, counselors, lawyers, doctors and civil rights activists. We hope that this will, in the short term, evolve into a reliable referral service so that more survivors can be directed to qualified deprogrammers and that more therapists, doctors and counselors can learn the efficient technologies to help victims of classical trauma- based programming. In the long term we hope that it will also become an effective political organization to curb human experimentation and attacks on the human mind on both an individual and collective basis.

In order to protect us all from cross-pollination or contamination, certain specific, but trivial information is deliberately false and has been planted as a sort of "tag". Thus if suvivors start coming up with the planted information we will know that there's a probability that they have been corrupted by this book.

The author, editors or publisher take no responsibility for any triggering that may occur.

Author's Note

This book is an exercise in citizens intelligence. The editorial "we" is used herein literally. This book is the result of a collaboration of many. The author and the majority of those who have contributed to it are private citizens working on their own in a synergistic effort, without major funding or corporate support, without government privilege or "need to know," other than that need cited by Jefferson -- the need for informed discretion in a democracy. Without the help of these many people who, like the author, were motivated by shock and outrage that citizens have been so victimized by their own government this book would not have been undertaken.

Thanks first to the survivors of mind control who had the courage to come forward and tell their stories. Since this book first came out I have interviewed countless more mind control survivors. Alas, while adding much to the content of my files, few have shed new light on the processes involved. The network which produced this book will continue to look for the codes, cues and triggers by which to unlock the multi-personalities -- appropriate states from the past which are moved forward to this inappropriate present -- so that they can join in the life of the whole human being within whom they have been locked.

A number of professional people gave valuable technical assistance and patient explanations. My thanks to Harry Arons, Robert Brauers, David Bruce, Dr. and Mrs. Sidney M. Cohen, Drs. Gary and Gwen Dean, Robert Dunn, Dr. Remo Dicenso, Betty Dumaine, Dr. Milton E. Erickson, Morris Ernst, Bernard Fensterwald, George Griffin, Col. Laird Guttersen, Dr. Corey Hammond, Averell Harriman, Dr. Paul Henshaw, Edward Hunter, Hon. Louis K. Lefkowitz, John MacDonald, Dr. Colin Ross, V.R. Sanchez, Alan W. Sheflin, Dr. Edgar Schein, David Wise, Mrs. E.D. Yeomans, and Col. Joseph H. Ziglinski.

I received a great deal of assistance from a number of researchers and writers around the world. Thanks to David Bareglass, Chip Berlet, Martin Cannon, Steve Bratcher, Nancy Bressler, Jeff Cohen, Loren Coleman, Richard Crowe, David Emory, Edward J. Epstein, William Grimstad, Paul Hoch, L. Ron Hubbard, Trevor Harvey, John Judge, Larry Lee, Charles Maierson. John Marks, Jim Martin, John McGuffin, David McQueen, Sandra Meiersdorff, Janet Michaud, Beverly Ogden, George O'Toole, Kenn Thomas, Wes Thomas, Richard Popkin, Jeff Quiros, Sir William Stevenson, Scoop Sweeny, Civia Tamarkin, Harold Weisberg, David Williams, Cheryl Welsh, Peter Watson, Charles Zeps and the many people who sent me clippings, documents and testimonies over the years.

Mae Brussell kept in contact with me from the time this book was originally released until her untimely death. She illuminated my understanding on Project Paperclip, the cryptocracy's illegal importation of Nazis into the U.S. intelligence systems after WWII, and called my attention to the circumstances of the probable programming of the assassin of John Lennon and the attempted assassins of Gerald Ford and Ronald Reagan.

Other valuable assistance was given by the following institutions and organizations: The Rare Books and Special Collections Division of Princeton University Library, Brain Mind Bulletin, Zodiac News Service, Freedom News Service, Pacific News Service, The Fifth Estate, Network Against Psychiatric Assault, The Assassination Information Bureau, American Society of Clinical Hypnosis, Sanity Now, Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, Center for National Security Studies, Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry, World Wide Photos/ United Press, Library of Congress and the National Technical Information Service.

Anthony Robbins and the staff of Robbins Research Institute trained me in Neuro-linguistics Programming and stuck with me through all sorts of adventures until I earned my certification, finally assimilating what Milton Erickson had been trying to get me to understand in 1976. So-called NLP, was a big Eureka. I saw it as (if applied for the highest purposes) a great tool of liberation, discovery and human achievement. Even though NLP has been a valuable tool of the cryptocrats, there are always many more good guys than bad guys.

My understanding of the intelligence community was molded by exchanges with a number of intelligence and military people. Most of them wish to remain nameless.

Special overt thanks to Colonel L. Fletcher Prouty for his patient accounts and interpretations of the Cold War history which he witnessed from within the fledgling cryptocracy. Thanks also go to Michael Kradz and Alan Bell of Dektor Counter-intelligence and Security who trained me in the use of the Psychological

Stress Evaluator, and Carl F. Boode of Desert Security who made his equipment available to me to examine the stress patterns of those I interviewed..

Tom Miller gave me much of his time and expertise, as citizens counter-intelligence agent extraordinare. His interest in the subject never waned, and research for his own book "The Assassination Please Almanac" (1977, Contemporary Books) uncovered leads for this one.

Kudos to Johanna Moore Gruneck, Martha Sowerwine and my mother, for their patience and support.

Between the first edition and this one, seventeen years have passed. My thanks go to all those who kept demanding that this book be brought back into print. It was their demand which drove the price of the original paperback to a remarkable $250 per fine copy and finally created the market demand for this Researchers Edition.

I owe a special thanks to a number who insist on anonymity. Thank you all for providing the additional research for this expanded edition and, as always, to Richard Condon who gave me early encouragement and offered his valued commentary in the mid 70's, at the beginning of my quest for the truth. Last and foremost I am indebted to my Enid High School journalism teacher, Miss Ruth Scott, who started me on the path of citizens intelligence so long ago.

Walter Bowart

November 11, 1994

Paradise, Arizona

Contents

- Chapter 1 The Cryptorian Candidate
- Chapter 2 Only One Mind for My Country
- Chapter 3 The Mind Laundry Myth
- Chapter 4 Without Knowledge or Consent
- Chapter 5 Holy Acid Wars
- Chapter 6 The Guinea Pig Army
- Chapter 7 The MKULTRANS
- Chapter 8 The Mata Hari of Mind Control
- Chapter 9 The Story of O
- Chapter 10 MINDWAR
- Chapter 11 Project Monarch?
- Chapter 12 Thanks for the Memories
- Chapter 13 Monarch Corroboration
- Chapter 14 Himmler's Guinea Kids
- Chapter 15 Finders, Kidnappers, Nazis
- Chapter 16 May The Force Be With Us!
- Chapter 17 The Slaves Who Buried the Pharoah
- Chapter 18 Brave New World in a Skinner Box
- Chapter 19 A School for Assassins
- Chapter 20 The Four Faces of a Zombie
- Chapter 21 The Lone Nuts
- Chapter 22 The Ignored Confessions
- Chapter 23 Another Hypno-Patsy?
- Chapter 24 Confession by Automatic Writing
- Chapter 25 The Patriotic Assassin
- Chapter 26 Sleeper Agent
- Chapter 27 Deep Probe
- Chapter 28 From Bionic Woman to Stimulated Cat
- Chapter 29 Invisible Warfare
- Chapter 30 Tuned to A Mental Radio?
- Chapter 31 The Warrior's Tongue
- Chapter 32 Cult Control

- Chapter 33 The Fire In Waco
- Chapter 34 Have Buck Rogers Ray Gun - Will Travel
- Chapter 35 Human EM Targets
- Chapter 36 A Satanic-UFO Reich?
- Chapter 37 The COM-12 Briefing
- Chapter 38 Project Greenstar?
- Chapter 39 False Memory Spindrome
- Chapter 40 Dangerous Free Thinking
- Chapter 41 A Repealing Thought

- Shareware order form
- Freedom of Thought Foundation Membership Application

Foreword

by Richard Condon

Author of *The Manchurian Candidate*

The father of Grock the clown, having had his legs broken in eight places by his father for professional reasons broke Grock's legs in eight places to be certain that the child would grow up walking grotesquely so as to ensure his eminence as a clown. The act brought much pain and indignity forever but, Grock's father reasoned, was there not a wholly justifiable element involved? Was not the clowning tradition immortally enhanced by those unnatural legs?

As demonstrated inescapably by W.H. Bowart in this book, our Father who art in the American secret police has endowed hundreds of scientists at American universities to unravel methods for fracturing American minds. That this research in so many great halls of learning has exceeded a cost of untold secret millions of dollars (the only yardstick remaining by which we are willing to measure anything) indicates that this Grockian entertainment being produced by our secret police is a matter of ambitious policy rather than the happenstance of cloak-and-dagger adventure.

In this book W.H. Bowart has proven each step of this official, terminal, government anarchy, even though that appears to be a contradiction in terms. To alter and control human minds is the ultimate anarchy. What is offered by official apologists as a tribute to the deeds of daring-do by romantic spies are acts of hatred and sadism against all people in an insane and degraded determination to extirpate conscience from society.

W.H. Bowart underwent a long and expensive process to assemble the hard facts which comprise this book. Each document attesting to secret police intent had to be ferreted out of government archives by badgering persistence until, page by page, the information was released to him by his right under the Freedom of Information Act. The essence of that law seems to be that one need only write away to a federal agency for information about the general areas in which the citizen is interested. Not so. W.H. Bowart needed to expend large sums of money to employ researchers in Washington and elsewhere in order to discover the precise name, number, and description of the contents of each document toward which he was groping through black streams of informational darkness. Without this it would have been impossible to apply for the transfer of copies of these documents to himself for this book. He had to comb the United States for people from many walks of life who knew, vaguely remembered, or suspected that they had been under the mind control of secret police and military agencies, then had to backtrack again with information gleaned from them to labyrinthine research among thousands of federal archives.

Please keep fearfully in mind that the astonishing information published in this seminal work of investigative reporting, concerning avenues taken to decision and execution by our secret police to fracture or dissolve human minds, then to operate a Yo-Yo, for purposes of counter-intelligence military "efficiency," and the destruction of democratic institutions, was drawn directly from federal records and from official laboratory archives of the highest educational purpose -- as well as from the reviving memories of those who had already undergone the dehumanizing process.

The prostitution of the mind by our secret police preceded the murder of the mind. To attain the advanced techniques now available to "magnetic and attractive" political personalities, it was necessary to turn out the laboratories of science as a pimp turns out his heartless whores upon the winter streets; our hallowed educators, army and navy and air force commanders and personnel, the beloved medical profession, august and inspiring temples of the law, our esteemed statesmen, and all Americans living and dead. Each one of those groups is involved in this dismembering of the mind.

Taxes and the collective conscience make the urination of the secret police upon the human mind possible. "Brainwashing" per se is no news to any of us. Controlled assassins are not known to us only through fiction. Advertising assaults on behalf of poisonous materials to induce us successfully to buy and consume are early on bastions of mind control.

No one -- not anyone -- needs theologians to answer the question: "Where does the soul live?" We know the soul lives in the mind because the soul is the mind in all of its unfathomably intricate individual conditioning. It is the mind of intent, of hope, of purpose, of achievement by the spirit beyond achievement by physical action.

When Grock's father broke his son's legs in eight places there may have been alarm, on the one hand, that a man could do such a calamitous thing to his son but, on the other, the same people responded to Grock's genius to which those hopelessly deformed legs had contributed, and roared with laughter. That was the normal reaction when we were the audience and crazy-legs Grock was the clown. But W.H. Bowart demonstrates to us in this book that we have become Grock. We are the spinning, hobbling, waddling clowns in the eyes of our vividly delineated secret police.

"Oh, no!" (Can you hear the outcry?) Oh, yes, writes W.H. Bowart in this fearful record you now hold in your hands.

Apologists rush in, hired for all such occasions from everywhere, by the secret government crying out, "you are, as usual, like all of your exaggerating kind, making a mountain out of a molehill. While it may (or may not) be true that our secret police occasionally swing the sledgehammer on little minds, it is (or is not) being done as a patriotic act to protect our beloved people." They reel backward, hands clutching chests as the full realization seems to hit them. "My God! Bowart cannot believe that our government of the people, by the people, and for the people would use such loathsome forces against citizens. If such research was done (or was not done) then it would be for purely abstract research reasons -- for the expansion of human knowledge."

W.H. Bowart's book is also a freezing vision of the mutations of the aspirations of science. Scientists, educators, and their leaders, The Great Men, Having stumbled upon the possibility of controlling the human mind, might well have withheld this knowledge from the secret police and brought it forward for all to share, would you not say? If the means are at hand actually to enter and control the mind -- not through the far-off smoke signals of psychiatry and psychoanalysis -- can we conceive of what might be found in terms of medical triumphs, the conquest of pain and of group hatreds, and mental energy released by unraveling the Garden knots of mental perplexity to make one straight laser line that might then pierce the doubts and fears which beset each one of us? In terms of education light-years ahead of the educational means we presently employ, in basic and advanced of cultures, languages, and skills; in short, understanding each other across the face of the world, this development of Mind Control makes the invention of movable type seem like a primordial grunt from the shadows of a rain forest lost in time.

What has been achieved by the secret police in relation to mind control is scrupulously set down in W.H. Bowart's extraordinary book. The question the book puts is this: do you wish this immeasurably important technique to remain as a weapon to be used against you and your children by what Bowart calls the Cryptocracy, or do you wish to use it as a universal key to unlock a thousand new chances that your children will not be murdered in future wars?

In an epigraph to this book, Zbigniew Brzezinski measures the political probabilities of mind control use when he says, "exploiting the latest communications techniques to manipulate emotion and control reason." To day our secret police and our military establishment have demonstrated in Vietnam and elsewhere (examined by Bowart herein), the powers to create assassins out of our children. The expansion of these powers, which are able to turn young men and women into murderous criminals at will, goes on unchecked by the oft-called "investigative" press, by "moral" leaders at the bar, in the pulpits, in high government, and on campuses. Yet the people they call the public have long suspected that it has become government policy to control minds. If there is general information abroad on this subject, then consider that which must be at the disposal of the congressional investigating committees as they bugle their determination to control the powers of darkness within our secret police.

Zombie is a quaint, old-fashioned folklore word which, by its meaning, becomes obscene when our children's minds are being controlled by any one of dozens of federal secret police agencies. Have government agencies perfected methods sustained by the taxpayers to control the minds of the people who shot the Kennedy's, Martin Luther King, and Orlando Letelier, the former Chilean economist and diplomat. Were the assassins programmed to forget they did it or were they programmed to do it? We may never know for they stand bewildered, idiotically grinning for the cameras. Have the technicians developed a model Giant, Economy-Size Government Assassin which can easily be turned out by the thousands?

The murders of a few hundred humans by a few hundred other humans is commonplace enough but, for the flavor of horror and terror, of endless nightmare rampant upon a landscape of what was once American democracy, consider this expansion of the Brzezinski epigraph which cannot repeated often enough: "In the technotronic society the trend would seem to be toward the aggregation of the individual support of millions of uncoordinated citizens, easily within the reach of magnetic and attractive personalities, effectively exploiting the latest communications techniques to manipulate emotion and control reason."

The threatening state of American political leadership over the last fifteen years may seem to murmur that the "magnetic and attractive personalities" might rather not resist the destruction of democratic institutions by "effectively exploiting" these shocking gains into the control of minds. It might even be wise to consider W.H. Bowart's real evidence herein, then do what we can to protect ourselves if that proud right, with the love of freedom, has not been atrophied by "the latest communications techniques."

There is an alternative. We can all forever more be transformed into the image of Grock the clown.

Richard Condon

Kilmoganny, Ireland

31 May 1977

1

THE CRYPTORIAN CANDIDATE

It may have been the biggest story since the atom bomb. The headline, however, was small and ignored the larger issue. "Drug Tests by CIA Held More Extensive Than Reported in '75," said the *New York Times* on July 16, 1977. What it should have said is "U.S. Develops Invisible Weapons to Enslave Mankind."

The testing of drugs by the CIA was just a part of the United States government's top-secret mind-control project, a project which had spanned thirty-five years and had involved tens of thousands of individuals. It involved techniques of hypnosis, narco-hypnosis, electronic brain stimulation, behavioral effects of ultrasonic, microwave, and low-frequency sound, aversive and other behavior modification therapies. In fact, there was virtually no aspect of human behavioral control that was not explored in their search for the means to control the memory and will of both individuals and whole masses of people.

The CIA (and the Pentagon) succeeded in developing a whole range of psycho-weapons to expand its already ominous psychological warfare arsenal. With these capabilities, it was now possible to wage a new kind of war -- a war which would take place invisibly, upon the battlefield of the human mind.

"Literature always anticipates life," Oscar Wilde said. "It does not copy it, but molds it to its purpose." By Wilde's definition, then Richard Condon's ***The Manchurian Candidate*** would appear to be literature.

Condon published his tour de force in 1958. It was the story of an American Army sergeant who was captured by the enemy during the Korean conflict and, in an improbable nine days, was hypno-programmed to murder on cue. The sergeant returned to the United States and was post-hypnotically triggered to kill by the sight of the queen of diamonds in a deck of cards. The sergeant automatically killed several people, among them a candidate for President of the United Stated. After he killed, his memory of the event was forever sealed by amnesia.

At the time *The Manchurian Candidate* was published few people in the world, Richard Condon included, knew that total control of the mind was possible. Condon was writing fiction; he had merely read up on popular Pavlovian conditioning manuals and imagined the rest. He had no way of knowing then that mind control had already been the subject of years of secret research within the clandestine agencies of the U.S. government. The tricks of mind control he described were employed (right down to the queen of diamonds cue) by the programmers of real political assassins who developed foolproof techniques for the control of thought, memory, emotions, and behavior.

The Manchurian Candidate brought the idea of "brainwashing" to public consciousness. Brainwashing is the use of isolation, deprivation, torture, and indoctrination to break the human will. But what the book actually described was something more than brainwashing. It was mind control: a total takeover of an individual's mind by someone else. The someone else in Condon's version was a mad Chinese psycho-scientist.

Always the satirist, Condon brought the Fu Manchu myth up to date. But, ironically, the techniques he described were first perfected and used not by the Chinese or the Communists, but by the United States.

Condon's portrait of POWs during the Korean conflict went against the accepted scientific and medical opinion of the time, which held that a man could not be made to commit a criminal act against his own will or inner moral code by any known means. Although Condon's book was not completely on target about the details of GI mind control, he did accurately describe some of the motives, coercive methodology, and psychological results of real-life mind control.

The psychological techniques described in *The Manchurian Candidate* had secretly become a reality a decade before Condon saw his story set in type. A decade later it appeared was as if Condon's fiction had been used as the blueprint for the creation of an army of hypno-programmed "zombies". Some were assassins prepared to kill on cue. Others were informers, made to remember minute details under hypnosis. Couriers carried illegal messages outside the chain of command, their secrets secured behind posthypnotic blocks. Knowledge of secret information was removed from the minds of those who no longer had the "need to know" -- they were given posthypnotic amnesia.

The fact is, induced amnesia had been used at least since World War Two. In the *Journal of Traumatic Stress*[1] we find the story of a World War two veteran who had been discharged from the service in 1947. According to Karen L. Cassiday and Judith A. Lyonns, the veteran had been treated at a V.A. hospital for Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) since the war and had enjoyed good health and a lasting relationship until he had his first cardio-vascular accident (CVA), known in layman's terms as a stroke. Then he began to recall all the memories of his intelligence service in the Pacific theater during the Second World War. In 1988 he suffered two CVA's that resulted in right side weakness, speech difficulties, loss of motor control, and disorientation to situation, time, and place. These symptoms gradually resolved and he was able to resume psychotherapy in 1989. During therapy he began to recall combat memories and details of his service as an intelligence officer for which he had previously been amnestic.

---

[1] Karen L. Cassiday and Judith A. Lyons, *Recall of Traumatic Memories Following Cerebral Vascular Accident*, JOURNAL OF TRAUMATIC STRESS, Vol. 5, No. 4, October, 1992, p. 627, Plenum Publishing Corp., 233 Spring Street, NYC, 10013.

According to the journal he particularly recalled "being captured and tortured by administration of intravenous hallucinogens. He also recalled being bayoneted in the right side during hand-to-hand combat, thus explaining the scar previously noted. Newly recalled memories depicted the content of many of his nightmares and dissociative episodes... He recalled his escape and military debriefing in which ***he underwent hypnotic procedures to help him forget his combat experiences.*** Although his recall of these procedures is sketchy, he remembers that these hypnotic sessions occurred almost daily for several weeks during which time he was also given medications. These procedures focused upon helping him develop an identity and personal history that excluded intelligence service and traumatic evens... Additionally while hospitalized, (he) had a flashback in which he mistook IV (intravenous) apparatus for being bayoneted. An Asian physician observed him speaking an Asian dialect during this flashback. Collectively, these data led us to conclude that military events occurred as reported and cannot be dismissed as delusions or fabrications."

The authors noted that in this man's case, "it appears that amnesia for traumatic memories was disinhibited... His case indicates that cognitive impairment, such as that due to declining health and aging, may also impair previously successful defenses and lead to delayed PTSD (post traumatic stress disorder)."

Those who led us to believe that the intelligence agencies were searching for a "Manchurian Candidate" have to go back and rewrite their false assumptions. The fact came well before the fiction.

Most of the ordinary foot soldiers who fought in the dirty, televised Vietnam conflict were released to civilian life without debriefing. For them there was no "decompression" from the rage of war. They were released with all the reflexes of trained assassins intact. Those who had been conditioned in the black science of the war of torture, terror, and technology were debriefed with special attention. Their memories like those of the World War Two veteran mentioned in the *Journal of Traumatic Stress* were completely erased before they were turned out of the military that they returned to civilian life with only the minimum, fragmented knowledge of who they were or what they had done. Their memories had been smudged or removed by drugs, hypnosis, behavior modification, conditioned reflex therapy, or some other evil wonder of mind control.

During my 1978 tour promoting this book , a call came to the ***KPIX-TV Good Morning San Francisco Show*** while we were on the air. It was a retired Navy

Commander who spoke of losing his memory after being admitted to a Navy hospital after a lengthy tour of duty in which he and his "black pajama team" had assassinated "charismatic" local political leaders behind a "fixed border in Southeast Asia". In a private phone conversation later, the Commander told me that the "fixed border" was indeed that of China. "I got the flu. Almost everybody on the returning team got this heavy flu. We went to the hospital and came out with cardboard memories," he said. "It's taken me 13 years to remember what we had been doing. I'm not proud of it, and I'm afraid to talk."

I had encountered my first case of mind control in the midst of the Watergate scandal. A young man I'd known since childhood had returned from a tour of duty in the U.S. Air Force, with amnesia, remembering nothing of his service, except having had a good time. He subsequently learned, through intensive private psychotherapy, that he'd been hypnotized and conditioned. His mind had been unmade, then remade: his mind had been controlled.

I was completely fascinated by his story, but naturally, in 1973, I thought it was an isolated, single event. Then, quite by accident, a few months later, I overheard another man in my hometown telling what was essentially the same story: how he figured he'd been hypnotized and had his memory erased at a "debriefing" prior to his separation from military service.

After hearing the second story I began to wonder how many more men had their memories erased. I decided to run the following classified ad: "Researcher/writer interested in contacting anyone with knowledge of the use of hypnosis by the military, including ex-servicemen who have reason to believe they were hypnotized (or drugged) while in the service and subsequently exhibited signs of amnesia or hypermnesia (improved memory). All info held in strictest confidence..."

I placed the ad in *Soldier of Fortune* (a magazine which reports on the activities of mercenaries), a number of small publications aimed at hypnotists, behaviorists, neurologists and other professionals, and popular magazines such as *Rolling Stone*. To my amazement, I received more than a hundred replies to the ad. Many stated that they had amnesia.

Ignoring the obvious crank letters, I followed up on the others and discovered that too many were unable to say just what had caused their loss of memory. In some cases, it was obviously a result of the trauma of war -- what came to be called "the post- Vietnam syndrome." So I concentrated on those who had not seen combat but who either had high security clearances or were employed at the periphery of the intelligence services.

Letter and telephone exchanges narrowed the field down to eighteen persons who fit the pattern of the first two men who had reported their amnesia to me. All eighteen had security clearances -- and could only recall isolated events from their GI experience. I narrowed the field still further to those who remembered enough to have at least some idea, however fragmentary and incomplete, of what had happened to them.

Their stories were believable, but they shed little light on how amnesia had been induced and what behavior had been controlled. To answer those deeper questions I went to the libraries, and after two years of research I was able to find enough scientific reports and government documents to tell the whole story of what I call Operation Mind Control.

Though the documented trail of mind control extends back many decades, it was not always called by that name. The church and the state have always engaged in psycho-theology and psycho-politics, the psychological manipulation of belief, opinion, and actions for political and/or religious ends. But the complete control of the human mind was only managed in the late 1940s by the U.S. government. It had to have existed in a variety of sub-cultures throughout human history.

My research concentrated on the period from 1938 to the late sixties, the period during which I found there was an effort made by the agencies of the U.S. government to develop sophisticated techniques of psycho-politics and mind control in the modern sense (I thought).

The objective of Operation Mind Control[2] during this period has been to take human beings, both citizens of the United States and citizens of friendly and unfriendly nations and transform them into unthinking, subconsciously programmed "zombies," motivated without their knowledge and against their wills to perform in a variety of ways in which they would not otherwise willingly perform. I learn that this is accomplished through the use of a number of various techniques most of which amount to pain and trauma-based classical conditioning.

Mind control is the most terrible imaginable crime because it is committed not against the body, but against the mind and the soul. Dr. Joost A.M. Meerloo expresses the attitude of the majority of psychologists in calling it "mind rape," and warns that it poses a great "danger of total physical destruction..."

---

[2] *Various meditation groups use the words "mind control" to describe meditation, contemplation, and self-hypnosis; all these are usually harmless if not beneficial practices. These techniques might more properly be called "mind self-control," for the individuals who use them seek control over their own minds and bodies to obtain desired effects. The mind control examined in this book is the control of one individual's mind by another, against the target's will and without their conscious knowledge.*

Development of mind control was accomplished largely through the efforts of individual psychologists, psychiatrists, and chemists, working in isolated conditions under government contract. Each researcher or research team was allowed to know only what he or she needed to know to accomplish his or her fragment of the research or testing. The contracts were let through a number of government and private agencies and foundations so that the researchers were, by and large, ignorant as to the intended use of their research.

While the CIA was a major funder of the mind-control research, virtually every major government agency became in some way knowingly or unwittingly involved. While I began my research believing that a "cult of intelligence" was behind the mind-control program, I found that there is, in fact, no single originating force, but several. The operation is too widespread and complex for it to be created by a "cult." If a cult there must be, then it is a cult within a cult, in an interlocking chain of invisible mini-govermnents with unwritten rules, unwritten plans, and unwritten loyalties. It is the plan of a secret bureaucracy -- what I call a cryptocracy -- which conspires against our laws and our freedoms.

"Cryptocracy" is a compound of *crypto*, meaning "secret", and - *cracy*, meaning "rule, government, governing body." The cryptocracy, then, is the secret government whose identity and whereabouts have slowly and reluctantly been hinted at by the Congress through its investigations into Watergate, the CIA, and the rest of the intelligence community.

(The word *cryptocracy* is conspicuously absent from all dictionaries, even to this day. I was told by one source within the cryptocracy that this word alone was reason enough to keep this book off the market, for if, whenever the word democracy is used, the word cryptocracy is placed against it, a powerful propaganda effect takes place. As if one word alone could awaken the U.S. citizenry to the fact that their democracy was overthrown by the National Security Act of 1947.)

While the CIA, near the top of the intelligence pyramid has been drawing most of the fire, the evidence of a cryptocracy clearly implicates the National Security Agency, the National Programs Office, the Defense Intelligence Agency and its subsidiaries in military intelligence, The Federal Bureau of Investigation as well as the Civil Service. The crypto-alliance has extended in an ever expanding network among private contractors and institutions and religious organizations. With the Central Intelligence in the vanguard, the cryptocracy is composed of persons operating within the office of Naval Intelligence, Army Intelligence, Air Force Intelligence, Department of Justice, Department of Health, Education and Welfare, Bureau of Prisons, Bureau of Narcotics, Atomic Energy Commission (Department of Energy), Veteran's Administration, General Services Administration, National Science Foundation, and even major American corporations, especially certain airlines, oil companies, and aerospace contractors.

The cryptocracy invades the privacy of citizens and corporations. It meddles, often violently, in the internal politics of foreign nations, and has hired, trained, and equipped mind-controlled assassins for the murder of heads of state. The cryptocracy may have been involved in attempts to control U.S. elections. It controls key figures in the U.S. and world press.

When CIA Director Robert M. Gates publicly promised "a greater openness and sense of public responsibility" at the intelligence agency in April of 1992, he was acting on the recommendations of a special task force that had studied ways to make the agency more visible, credible and responsive to the outside world. But when "Task Force Report on Greater CIA Openness" was submitted to Gates, it was stamped "Secret." CIA officials refused to disclose any of the report.

After receiving a public scolding at a House hearing, Gates approved the declassification of almost the entire report. Significantly, the report touted the accomplishments of the agency's existing "media program:"

> **PAO (the Public Affairs Office of the CIA) now has relationships with reporters from *every* major wire service, newspaper, news weekly and television network in the nation. This has helped us turn some 'intelligence failure' stories into 'intelligence success' stories, and it has contributed to the accuracy of countless others.**
>
> **In many instances, we have persuaded reporters to postpone, change, hold or even scrap stories that could have adversely affected national security interests or jeopardized sources and methods.**[3]

The story within the story, I discovered, is an astonishing one of a psychological war waged by this U.S. cryptocracy against the American people. The scientific reports and histories place the story in time, and at the government's door. However, the literature of the cryptocracy ignores the very real human factor. There is no written record of the mental anguish, the torture to the soul that comes from loss of memory and the resulting identity crisis. That mental anguish is the story of mind control.

The stories that follow are told by the failures of Operation Mind Control -- failures because the victims remember *something*; for where mind control is successful there is no memory left.

(Due to editorial considerations, many of the stories I uncovered have been left on the editing room floor. Each individual in this book stands for and tells the story of many victims of mind control. In many cases the individuals I interviewed believed their lives or sanity would be in danger if their names were made public. Others wanted their names mentioned. I have, for a variety of reasons, chosen to withhold real names and places whether requested or not. Except in these details, the first-person stories in this book are completely true, and in this edition I have risked committing the literary crime of redundancy so that the researcher can get a more well-rounded sense of the varieties of the mind control experience as described by several individuals. A video documentary is now in progress which shows many heartbreaking moments of abreaction from victims of mind control which could not be included in this book.)

---

[3] *Washington Post National Weekly*, May 3, 1992.

One of the characters in *The Manchurian Candidate* described his recurring dream that resulted from the suppression of memory. "It's not so much that I can't sleep. It's more that I'd rather not sleep. I'm walking around punchy because I'm scared. I keep having the same nightmare..." The nightmare Condon's hero described was actually the memory of having killed on cue. On stage, before an audience of Communist mind controllers, he strangled one of his fellow soldiers with a scarf, and blew out another's brains with a high-powered pistol at point blank range. Several of the men I interviewed had dreams which could have been written by Condon.

Tex was an army sergeant stationed in the Mediterranean area. He came back from service with amnesia. But in his dreams a vivid scene was replayed again and again: "In the dream my buddy -- I know him real well, We've shared things together -- my buddy is taken with his hands behind his back. I'm standing in rank in a line of other soldiers and we are like a firing-squad. I keep thinking I won't shoot my friend, I'll turn the rifle on the commander. But we don't have rifles.

"My buddy is marched into an open area in front of us with his hands tied behind his back. He is blindfolded and some Ay-rab is talking to him or reading to him. Another Ay-rab comes up and hits him behind the knees with a rifle butt and he falls to a kneeling position. "Then, while he's on his knees, one of the Ay-rabs takes a big sword and cuts his head off. His neck squirts blood, but surprisingly little... his head rolls on the ground. His face has a peaceful expression. His body twitches and squirms like a chicken. That's when I always wake up..."

In their sleep, the memories of atrocities surface to vivid awareness among the victims of mind control. Night after night terrible images, suppressed by deeply conditioned responses, emerge as terrifying nightmares. Are they mythological? The stuff of dreams? Or are they recovered memories? Tex's dream is a mere fragment of many thousands of pages of such testimony.

2

ONLY ONE MIND FOR MY COUNTRY

Through the gray waters of amnesia he drifted, coming back from blind coma. First the echoes, like electronically amplified voices speaking from a deep, deep well... then, far off, the dim pink molecules of light...

David's body lay still in the military hospital bed. Only his eyes rolled beneath the lids. For several hours he lay that way, perfectly still -- just eyes fluttering. The fluttering became more intense. Then his eyes opened.

"When I woke up," David said, "I couldn't remember anything. I couldn't remember how I'd gotten there or why I was in the hospital."

He asked nurses and aides why he was there. They told him he'd have to ask his doctor. When David finally saw him, the doctor said, "You tried to commit suicide."

That came as a great surprise to David. He didn't think he was the suicidal type. He asked the doctor ***how*** he'd tried to commit suicide.

"You took an overdose of Sleep-eze," the doctor told him.

David knew that Sleep-eze was a patent medicine, that it was related chemically to an antihistamine, and that it could produce drowsiness; but David also knew it was not nearly as dangerous as a prescription sleeping pill. Although he began to sense that something was fishy, he did not challenge the doctor, nor did he let on that he suspected the story to be untrue. For the next several days he simply lay in the hospital bed puzzling over the odd chain of events that had landed him there.

I interviewed David several times over a period of two years. Each interview produced additional information as David's memory returned in fragmented, isolated bursts. The following is taken from thousands of pages of transcript and has been edited so that the tedious process which uncovered David's memories is absent. It is slightly misleading only in that David did not remember his story in one continuous sequence. Nor did the other victims quoted in this book.

David had joined the U.S. Air Force in 1969. During his high school years the draft had still been in effect, and after graduating on the honor roll, David decided to attend a small community college to get as much education as he could before his name was inevitably called by selective service.

As his induction date approached David realized he could obtain a deferral from the draft because of his high scholastic standing, but he decided instead to take a break from education and fulfill his military obligation as profitably as he could. Although he questioned America's reasons for fighting, he did feel that military service was his duty.

David had not been a part of the sixties "revolution." He had never smoked marijuana nor taken LSD, nor had he demonstrated against the war in Vietnam like so many of his friends. He was a studious, intelligent young man who was not inclined to rebellion. He was described by friends and family as one possessed of unusual common sense. In keeping with his cautious and practical nature he negotiated a "contract" for medical corps service with his local air force recruiter and enlisted for a four year tour of duty, thinking this would help him fulfill his ambition to become a doctor.

After an uneventful in-processing, David was sent to Lackland Air Force Base for the usual six weeks basic training, and then on to a technical school for another six weeks of special training. But when the time came for his job assignment, to his great disappointment, he was assigned to the supply corps rather than the medical corps.

He felt betrayed by the air force, and immediately after receiving his AFSC job assignment number, he retired to his barracks to rehearse a protest to his commanding officer. Moments later, a nonuniformed man entered the empty barracks and asked him to step outside and take a walk. David was puzzled but went along without comment.

When the two had reached a quiet spot on the base, the man told David that he guessed he was disappointed about receiving the AFSC of a "box pusher" in a supply warehouse. David was surprised by the man's knowledge of his situation. Before he could reply, the man told David that the AFSC was just a cover, that he had actually been chosen to work in a sensitive area of intelligence.

The assignment sounded glamorous to David, and lifted his sagging spirits. He immediately decided to go along with the change of plans and accept the special assignment without protest. The unidentified man told David to be patient, and to learn well the special techniques of computer programming he would be trained in while waiting for his security investigation to be completed.

Within a few weeks David was issued a top-secret crypto-security clearance and assigned to the air base at Minot, North Dakota. At Minot, he continued to feed supply numbers into a computer, developing his already excellent memory. He did his job well and soon he received a letter of commendation and was promoted to sergeant.

But for all his accomplishments, he had begun to grow restless. Although he knew his computer programming was just a cover for intelligence work, he was still not satisfied with air force life.

"I was beginning to not like the extreme regimentation and, I suppose, inside myself I was beginning to build up a resentment about being there.

"But after I woke up in the Hospital I was not resentful. I was passive. I lay there thinking, trying to recall the last memories I had before I woke up in that bed. I didn't remember anything. It was like I'd been asleep for my entire life up to that point. Like I was Rip Van Winkle.

"The memories of what had happened I did recover over a period of time. But they were fuzzy at first. It seemed like somebody was violating me -- raping my mind.

"I was strapped down in the bed. I was yelling and screaming about something. I'm not the type of person that cusses that much. I hardly ever use foul language, but I know that I said some pretty foul things to those men who were with me. They were officers, and in the service you can't call a superior officer an obscene name without getting punished. Yet I don't think I was ever reprimanded.

"One guy would ask me questions in an accusatory manner. Another guy would come over and say comforting things. The first guy would come back and accuse me again. Then the second guy would come and pat my arm and be friendly. I could remember their faces and their tone of voice, but I couldn't remember the content of what they were talking about."

David thought about his situation; suppose he had tried to commit suicide. He probably would be kicked out of the service. At best he might be given a medical discharge, so he began to prepare himself for that eventuality. He thought he wouldn't mind getting out of the service under any circumstances, even with a psychological discharge.

It didn't happen. Instead, David was visited by men in civilian clothes who told him that he'd been chosen for a special intelligence assignment. They said the details of his assignment could not be revealed until the proper time, and then he would not be allowed to talk to anyone about it. They said he would be receiving his orders soon.

"I had expected at least to have some stripes taken away for the suicide attempt," David said. "Instead, five different sets of orders came down. They were all typed military orders, regular orders, but they had me going to five different places at once. It was impossible.

"I took the orders to headquarters and told them that somebody had goofed. It was plain to see that somebody had screwed up. The way the military runs, it was not unusual. No one got excited about it. The guys in the office said that they would straighten it out.

"Then I was told that I had two weeks leave coming. They ordered me home to wait while they got my orders straightened out."

Happy to get a break after eighteen continuous months of military life without leave, David went home.

"I was hoping they'd forget all about me, I was praying that this time the computer would completely lose me."

The first evening at home something compelled David to break security. Alone with his mother, he told her that he knew he had not really attempted suicide.

"I suppose that my first duty was to my family, and my second duty was to my country. After I'd discharged my moral duty to my mother, I was free to obey my government's wish and not remember anything about it. That's probably how it worked, in spite of their programming."

After David had been at home for the full two weeks, and was just beginning to think that maybe the computer had lost him after all, a telegram came. There were no written orders, no official seals, just a Western Union telegram ordering him to report to a base in northern California and from there to embark to the Far East on overseas duty. There were numbers on the face of the telegram, but at the time David gave them no special notice. These numbers may have been an assignment authorization, for seldom are servicemen sent overseas on the strength of a telegram alone.

"When I got to the base in California, I showed them the telegram and the air police hustled me to another airplane and flew me to Guam."

On the plane to Guam, David ran into an airman he'd known at Minot. The airman's name was Max. Like David, Max had been attached to the supply wing at Minot, but he had been in a different type of supply operation.

In all the time they were together on Guam, David never learned the details of Max's assignment. Both of them were supposed to be supply men, but David thought Max had some pretty unusual qualifications for a supply man: for instance, he held a fifth- degree black belt in karate.

"Max and I had checked into the barracks when we got there, but after preliminaries we were put on a bus and taken to an isolated place eight miles outside the base. There were six L-shaped barracks set up inside a high electrified fence with barbed wire at the top. Inside the compound there was a movie theater, a store, a barbershop, a chow hall, and a recreation center. There were several hundred guys living in that compound.

"We could leave anytime we wanted. All we had to do was show the proper credentials to the air police at the gate. The compound seemed to be regular air force. The place was called Marbo, and as far as I could tell, there were guys there who had all sorts of different functions in the air force, but nobody really discussed their jobs.

"Several of the guys at Marbo had been in the supply wing in North Dakota. But at Marbo they were working in other areas... In other words, guys who'd been in the supply wing in North Dakota were in the civil engineers or the air police. One air policeman on Guam, I remember, had been shoving around boxes just like other supply men when he was at Minot. Suddenly now he was an air policeman. I couldn't figure it out, and I wasn't about to ask questions.

"I guess we all assumed that we were all on special assignment, and I'm pretty sure that if I'd asked any one about it, they would have avoided an answer. I certainly would have, if somebody had asked me."

David made rank fast in the air force. He was a good airman, a good supply man. Yet anybody he talked to about supply duties didn't know what he was talking about. His duties weren't like the others.

"My air force file shows that the first three digits of my AFSC are 647. A 647 is some kind of a box pusher. Yet, I never pushed a box all the time I was in the air force."

After their tour of duty, Max and David returned home together on the same plane. At the airport Max was called over the intercom and went off to answer the page. Two air police returned for his luggage and David did not see Max until after he was separated from the service for some months. Then it was a strange meeting.

David was walking down the streets of Disneyland and his eye fell on Max walking toward him in the crowd. David was delighted to see his old buddy again, but Max was strangely distant. "He didn't seem very interested in our reunion." David said, "He shook hands with me, and I began to talk, but he seemed kind of passive. I wanted to sit down and tell all the things that had happened to me since we last saw each other, but Max didn't want to talk. He cut me short, said good-bye and left.

"That's something that's always puzzled me. How can a guy who was your constant companion for so many months, a guy who has fought for you and gotten to know you inside and out, not want to talk to you? How could he have just brushed me off like that?

"When I first got out of the service, all I could remember about my four years was that I'd had a lot of fun. I mean, all the pictures I have, and all the recollections I had, were of Max and Pat and I having fun, skin diving, laying on the beach, collecting shells, walking in the jungle. It never dawned on me until later that I must have done *something* while I was in the service."

Pat was a young woman from the Midwest who was assigned to serve as David's secretary. Almost instantly, when they met on Guam, they fell in love.

"Pat was something special. She was everything I would have ever dreamed of in a woman. I suppose she felt that I was everything that she wanted in a man. It didn't take long for us to go to bed after we met, and from then on, throughout my tour of duty Max, Pat, and I were inseparable."

David was not talking about a menage a trois. Max was not attracted to Pat nor she to him. They all held each other to be good friends, but David and Pat's feelings for each other were the strongest.

David now thinks it odd that the three of them got along so perfectly from the first moment they met. Max was David's kind of man, and Pat was David's kind of woman. In the years that have passed since he got out of the air force, David has come to believe that Max and Pat and he were matched up by a computer. "We hit it off from the start. We had the same interests, we were nervous about the same things, and we would laugh at the same kind of jokes. We were three individuals who were very close and where one lacked a quality another had something that filled that lack.

"The air force takes your psychological tests -- your cumes -- the cumulative progress reports which have been kept on just about every individual in the United States from the first grade through high school. These records have your IQ, your aptitude tests, and all the things they accumulate on you through your school years... they give them a complete examination to determine your psychological profile and everything about your likes and dislikes. They feed selected information, any information they are looking to match up, into a computer and run yours with other people's until they have a psychological match.

"In spy books I've read, undercover agents sent to foreign countries are usually teamed with a spy of the opposite sex. Even if two people are both married and have left families at home, the directors of intelligence usually send along someone who can take care of the natural human sexual needs of the other without risking a breach of security. That way, no horny agent is going to have to associate with a prostitute or someone who might turn out to be a double agent or counterspy.

"I'd talk with the other guys in the service and they'd talk about getting laid in Hong Kong or Japan or Korea. I didn't have to talk about anything. I didn't have to brag, I'd just smile at them, secure in my love for Pat."

David said that there were several other women in the barracks who, like Pat, were secretaries but had security clearance. And, as was the case with Pat, many of them also had close relationships with the men to whom they had been assigned.

Two months before their tour of duty was to expire David and Max were sent home. Pat stayed behind on Guam. But David and Pat arranged to meet once they were both out of the service. They exchanged home addresses, but somehow David lost hers and he is strangely unable to remember her last name or even the town from which she'd come. David never saw Pat again.

"Looking back on it, it looks like it was awfully convenient. Pat was a liberated woman, she knew exactly who she was. And that's just the kind of woman I like to have around. She fulfilled every need that I ever had, to such a degree that it's a problem now. I can't meet a girl that's as good as she was. When you've been in paradise, it's hard to find paradise again. You always want to go back.

"I think of her all the time, but I just can't remember her last name. It's a total blank. I just can't remember."

During the entire thirteen-hour flight home David had to debrief himself into a tape recorder while sitting between two air policemen. He doesn't remember what he talked about. No one was "questioning" him; he just talked.

Upon his return, he was assigned to a base in California. Immediately upon reporting for duty, he found that he no longer had a security clearance. His job was to answer telephones on the base and to listen to complaints. He'd take calls from the wives of air force personnel and relay their complaints to the proper channels. That's all he did during his entire last year of service.

"When it came time to get processed out, I wanted to get the medals I earned when I was stationed in Guam. They were actually theater ribbons. I had so many ribbons when I left Guam that the officer I reported to told me not to wear them because I would attract attention to myself.

"During the out-processing they brought out my file. They do that regularly every year anyway. They show you your records and have you go over them and make sure that they're correct. Then you sign a paper that states the records have been approved by you. The last time I was shown my records, they'd been changed. Instead of all the typed, dog-eared reports that were in my file before, there was this clean computer print-out.

"I asked the officer in charge what had happened to the notices of my being awarded those theater ribbons. He told me that since I had such a high security clearance some of the things that were in my files made it necessary to expunge a lot of the information from the record. He said that there was a top-secret file on me which was available to people who had the right clearances. The file he had me approve was the one which would be shown to anyone who did not have the highest clearances. He said that because this was more or less a public record, it could not have anything on it of a sensitive nature. It was very misleading, that report. It looked like I had been a supply man, a box pusher, and I'd done nothing else, except try to attempt suicide. The phony hospital story was in the report -- so deniability was built in.

"Then I went through the normal out-processing and went home. All I can say is that everybody, my folks, my friends, everyone who'd known me before, noticed how changed I was. I was fearful and under tight control."

David decided that he would first reorient himself to the civilian pace of life and then look for a job. But when he began to look for employment, he suddenly realized that he had some deep psychological problems.

At his first job interview, he was routinely asked to fill out the company's job application form. He sat down at a desk and started writing. He wrote his name and noticed that his hands were sweating. As he began to enter his address his heart began pounding so loudly it was audible. He became short of breath and felt like the walls were closing in. He fought to remain calm, but within a few moments he snatched up the form and bolted out the door.

That evening he discussed the strange physical effects that had come over him with his parents. They assured him he was probably just very anxious about getting the job.

The next day he went on another interview. Again he was asked to fill out a job application. This time he got further in filling out the form: he put down his name... address... date of birth... Social Security number... health information... but when he came to the place in the form which required work information about the past four years, the pounding in his ears, the shortness of breath and the terrifying feeling of being confined in a small space came over him again, and he left the building with the form wadded up in his hand.

Over the next few months David applied for many jobs. The results were always the same. He could not overcome the terror that gripped him whenever anyone asked him for information about how he had spent the last four years.

David's parents suggested that he try to get a job working with computers and take advantage of the training that the air force had given him. The mere mention of computers made him fly into a rage. "I still couldn't face whatever it was that was blocking me. To this day, I can't stand the thought of a computer. I'd like to smash them all up. I realize, of course, that is irrational."

David remained hopeful that whatever was causing his anxiety would pass with time. Meanwhile, he decided to go back to college. He had no trouble getting into a major university since his high school and community college grades were high, and no one asked him for details of his service years. But during his first semester he encountered the same blocks that had kept him from getting a job.

"In my psychology course you had to get up in front of a circle of people and talk. You had to bare your soul. I just couldn't do it. I couldn't stand up and be calm and let people question me. They were all harmless questions, but I'd get the pounding heart, the sweaty palms, the shortness of breath and the feeling of claustrophobia again. I'd just clam up and leave the room."

It was then that David understood that he could no longer face the problem by himself. He sought out a psychiatrist who'd been recommended by a friend.

"The first psychiatrist I went to was male. He had used hypnotherapy with me, and he found me to be a very easy subject. I'd go into a trance at the drop of a hat. But whenever he tried to regress me -- saying, 'I want you to go back' -- I'd just bring myself out of the trance, even if it was a deep trance. My heart would be pounding, my palms would be sweating, and I'd feel the same claustrophobia I'd felt whenever I'd confronted those application forms."

David found that he was much more relaxed with his second psychiatrist, a woman named Alice. Alice was also more successful with hypnotherapy. David would go into a trance quickly and deeply, yet whenever Alice tried to regress him to his air force period, he would bring himself out of the trance as he had done previously. But she found that by regressing David to his childhood and approaching the air force period from earlier years, remembering was less difficult for him.

"At first she tried to have me relax. She talked in a very soothing voice, telling me to close my eyes. I felt like I was surrendering to her. It was easy to get me into a light trance. I laid down my defenses and was going deeper and deeper, but as soon as she said, 'Now we're going to go back,' I sat straight up and was wide awake.

"Alice couldn't get over how fast I went under. One time, she said, she was just talking to me and her voice put me completely under when she wasn't even trying. I was highly suggestible.

"But whenever she'd say, 'Let's go back,' all the muscles in my neck would strain, and I would grip the arms of the chair until my knuckles turned white. Once I was holding a piece of paper in my hand, and when I came out of hypnosis, the paper was completely soaked with sweat. Only a minute after she'd said, 'We're going to go back,' I was wide awake.

"Alice never did succeed completely with hypnosis, but something must have been released because of her attempts. As soon as we were able to go back to the usual talking technique of psychotherapy, I started talking about my childhood. I'd never thought that much about it, I guess, but I couldn't remember much of my childhood. For instance, my grandfather had died when I was fourteen and he had lived with us. Everyone says he and I were very close, But I had no mental picture of him at all. That's when Alice started trying to get me to remember my childhood. I don't know if I remembered my childhood before I went into the service or not. It seems like I did, because it wasn't a problem, but to this day, still, I can't remember much, and everything before the age of ten is completely blank.

"Alice and I kept working. At first, the memories we recovered were all painful memories. Alice thought that this was most unusual. Usually people remember the pleasurable things first. Then she tried to get me to remember only painful experiences. And once I'd remembered a lot she started trying to get me to remember the pleasurable ones."

David and Alice continued to work with standard psychiatric techniques and with hypnosis. Finally, after sixteen months of three sessions a week, Alice asked David to make a choice.

"We probably can penetrate the blocks around your air force years and find out how they were planted and why, but it may take a long time. On the other hand, we can work on every other area and get you to function normally without anxiety reactions whenever anyone asks you about those years," Alice said. "Now you have to decide if you just want to function normally, or if you want to unravel the whole mystery and find out who did it, why it was done, and what they have hidden from your own mind."

Since the therapy had nearly depleted his family's savings, David knew what the answer must be. He told Alice he would be content to just function normally. After two more months of treatment, Alice and David had their last session.

"After two hundred and six therapy sessions, Alice and I had one eight-hour session which more or less recapped all the information we had collected. She told me that when I first came in I'd talked in a monotone. I was very, very, controlled, I showed no emotions and had no inflection in my speech. I'd talked to her for the first three months that way. She said there was a wall that she couldn't break down... Alice recommended that I continue working on my own by going to group therapy.

"I went to a couple of sessions, but when I got in front of a group I became fearful again. It was more than just stage fright, it was a horrible feeling. I still have it when I get up in front of a group to be asked questions.

"Alice did not figure out what this was about. I am now beginning to, but figuring something out is one thing, and actually overcoming it is another."

Alice's expert guidance and her deft use of hypnotherapy were helpful. While he did not recover his memory at once, in time David began to remember isolated events. He is now able to reconstruct a picture of at least some of the things he did while in hypno-service to his country.

"One day I had a vivid dream. Then it was like, little by little, memory cells exploding in my brain. I began to remember certain incidents. At first I didn't know if these were real memories or just dreams. Today, I still don't know if they are accurate or not, but they are so real in all their details that I believe they are the truth. Naturally when you've had amnesia you're not really going to trust your memories at first, but if the memories settle in -- if you can recall more and more detail about an event -- you know that you are recalling a true event.

"The most vivid memory I have is about Vietnam. I was standing at a long table on a beach. There were North Vietnamese soldiers sitting on one side and American officers sitting on the other. Everyone was in uniform. Our men were from the air force, navy, and marines. The marines had sidearms , and no one else had a weapon.

"What horrified me was that out in the harbor, off shore at some distance from the beach, was one of our battleships, and another battleship or gunboat. I guess that it was Vietnamese or Russian, but I'm not expert at naval craft identification. All I know is I was terrified because the big guns on the ships were trained, not on each other, but on us... I guess they were prepared to blow us all up should anything go wrong on the beach, or should there be a double cross.

"We had our interpreters, who were air force men. They did the translating and our officers waited for the translations. The discussion was very heated, but for some reason I remember vividly, nothing was being written down. That may have been the reason that I was standing there at one end of the table. I remember that they had been trying somewhere along the line, to get me to have total recall. I can't remember the details, or the progression of events.

"I know that I had memory training. At Marbo, for some reason, I'd get up three hours earlier than anyone else and report to somewhere I can't remember and then go to work at eight-thirty. I remember riding the bus from Marbo to the base on Guam, and I was the only one on the bus. But I can't remember where I went before I reported for regular duty.

"I suspect that the computer work was part of the memory training, but I can't say that's exactly what it was. There must have been more to it. I just don't remember the details. But I have the impression that I was used as a human tape recorder.

"I do know one thing about that beach scene. When I came back from overseas, only three days after I came back it was announced that the North Vietnamese were going to give our prisoners of war back in an exchange. The meeting on the beach might have been an early parley about ending the war and exchanging prisoners. At least that's what strikes me as the best answer to the question of what that meeting was about.

"I might have been a witness. I really don't understand why -- or why the gunboats were pointing at us. I can't remember the date, or anything that places that memory in time.

"The thing that really bothers me about this whole thing is that I can sit here and talk to you, but I still can't sit down and say, 'Okay, I joined the service on such and such a day and this is what happened to me during a four-year period in chronologic ' ~~der~~ ' Ever since I got out of the service I haven't been able to give a day-by-
d to me during those four years.

"Some
led it that,
but it'
g brutal. I
don
mething that
wa
ing.

"I
it. I only have
th
out my folder
ar
e... He's a nut.
H

pposed to be a
s a perfect cover.
t worked out,
, it didn't work
d after a lot of

ading
VETs
Clords
free).

M. 1010 S.

o help them
t's Read and
Mar Vista
n West LA.
am offering
on-one with
and writing.
n. Mar Vista
224-6510
unteer.org>.

Chapter Last
ifornia Clean
h. 10:30 AM.
016.

United

Support Group
The Alexandria House, A House of Hospitality and a Neighborhood Center, conducts regular Thursday night sessions where women can talk over self-esteem, family issues and personal goals. 6:30-8:30 PM. Alexandria House, 426 S. Alexandria Ave, LA. (213) 381-2649.

Political Meeting: LA Coalition in Solidarity with Cuba
Regular meetings every other Wednesday. 7 PM. Peace Center, 8124 W. Third St., LA. (213) 383-9283.

Political Meeting: Three Strikes
Families to Amend California's Three Strikes (FACTS) meets every Monday. Help them amend Three Strikes to apply to violent felonies only. 7 PM. 4167 S. Normandie Ave., LA. (213) 746-4844.

Discussion: Anti-Hierarchical Reading Group
A reading group that concentrates on fun discussions of literature, film, etc. which challenge any forms of hierarchy (political, racial, gender, sexual, economic, environmental, religious, etc.) Regular meetings Sunday nights. 7:30 PM. Los Feliz/ Hollywood area. <antihierarchy@yahoo.com>.

Community Event: Raw Power
A weekly celebration for the aware and conscious with music, positive energy, organic "Raw Power" drinks, dance, performance art and good people. $12 Includes the Raw Power drink. Every Saturday. 7:30-11:00 PM. 1101 Abbot Kinney, Venice. (310) 822-6064.

"Contentious Minds"

Annou
Buy or
Skills
FREE F
membersh
a 10% disc
informatio
<www.geo

Volunte
Human E
informatio

Comm
Site
The Long
site whic
efforts t
<www.r

Class
The Los
this fall.
social ju
activists
They w
informa

Films
A call f
should
bisexu

psychiatric help, which I paid for myself, made the experiment, if it was one, a failure to me.

"I never thought about laying down my life, but maybe I laid down a lot more than my life in service to my country. My soul?"

[Sixteen years later David is still sleeping only two hours a night. He is still having nightmares, hearing voices and seeing shadows. Otherwise he functions normally. Yet, many of his symptoms are identical with the symptoms of those psychiatrists call people with Dissociative Identity Disorder.

I hadn't talked to David in, what, ten years? And now that I'd learned so much more about the survivors of Operation Mind Control, I thought I'd check in to see how he was doing. I found him fascinated with tattoos.

"Every time I see a tattoo anywhere, on anyone, I'm drawn to it," David said. "I've got to look at it. I want to find out if it's a butterfly, a rose or a..." and in 1994 we said the word together "...bluebird."

Dominicans,
s into a true
ommunity is
night Special
anta Monica.

iser honoring
led "Bringing
-2002." With
Vilkinson, Jan
will perform.
shire Blvd.,

ll fest. 10:30
1318 Third
923.

of the Cross:
e growth of
itics. 1 PM.
Promenade,

about two
d with the

documentary about the rough side of Baltimore's drug crime in *"Blue Collar"* and Marjorie Chodorov's portrait of LA own El Vez Robert Lopez in *"El Rey De Rock N' Roll."* 7 PM. Midnight Special Bookstore, 1318 Third Street Promenade, Santa Monica. (310) 393-2923 or (310) 306-7330.

UpComing:

April 3
Talk: "Operation Mind Control"

Walter Bowart author of "Operation Mind Control" talks about his long term meticulous research on the secret government's war against its own people though such programs as MKULTRA. Produced by Gerry Fialka and MESS, (Media Ecology SuperSessions). 7:30 PM. Midnight Special Bookstore, 1318 Third Street Promenade, Santa Monica. (310) 393-2923.

April 7
Political Action: Zapata Rally

The annual March and Rally to commemorate the life and struggle of Emiliano Zapata and support the on-going popular struggle in Mexico. March starts at Five Points (Cesar Chavez and Indiana) and ends at the Stature of Emiliano Zapata in Lincoln Park (Mission and Main Streets). (213) 481-8265.

April 7
Political Meeting: Ethical Culture Society

Regular Sunday meeting of the Ethical Society and Humanist Association. Call for topic. 2 PM. Santa Monica Library

tha.
Holly
Blvds.,

March
Plays:
"One Tit W
breast can
surreal, sc
Laura Bos
and Saturd
Theatre, 2
3363.

March
Discuss
A readers
meetings T
PM. 4234

Plays:
A Green M
two venues
Pico and B
at 7 PM at
(323) 653-4

Volunte

An early U. S. Army test of hypnosis circa 1940. The enlisted man is being guided in a "test" of his trance state. From the physiology of the enlisted man, it would appear that a deeply dissociated state has been achieved. Some experts who have viewed this photo suggest the subject is under the influence of "narco-hypnosis" which was the focus of a lot of the experimentation in the early mind control experiments.

3

THE MIND LAUNDRY MYTH

David's own assessment of his mental confusion after his air force experience was that he had not been "brainwashed." By the time David had his mind controlled, "brainwashing" had become a catchall phrase, but what David had suffered was a much more subtle and hideous form of tyranny.

George E. Smith was a POW during the early days of the Vietnam War. Unlike David, George did not have a good education. It can even be said that he was a little naive, and therefore a good candidate for brainwashing of both the American and the NLF (Viet Cong) varieties. He was one of the first of the Green Berets captured in the Vietnam conflict in 1963.

It was the practice of the U.S. Army in those days to indoctrinate its men with poorly constructed lies, which, it was hoped, motivated them to fight a war in which the U.S. had only dubious legal business and little moral argument. The "credibility gap" existed not only within the confines of the U.S. borders, but also in the far-flung fields of battle, all the way to Southeast Asia.

If brainwashing is making a person believe in lies, then our troops were already brainwashed by their own government. It was a simple job for the Viet Cong to gain the POWs' cooperation by telling them the truth -- truth which was easily documented.

Smith described the attitude which was instilled in the American soldiers by their military indoctrination: "We were arrogant... the army is a separate society; it has its own hierarchy, and I could rise to a stratum in the army that I couldn't attain in the outside world. They'd driven arrogance into us in the Airborne, which is a high level in the army, but Special Forces was the highest level you could reach, the elite of the elite. Elitism was the philosophy they taught at Bragg: 'You are professors of warfare, you shouldn't fight unless attacked. It costs thousands of dollars to train one of you and you're too valuable to send into battle.'

"I believed it. I believed every thing the army said. I never questioned anything they told me until I got to Vietnam, and then things didn't quite fit anymore."

Smith and three other men were captured in a midnight raid which followed a heavy mortar bombardment of their location. The Viet Cong took them deep into the jungles. When they reached the VC compound they were forced to build their own prison out of bamboo. Then, after the primitive compound was completed and the POWs had settled in, the interrogations began.

These were nothing like Smith had been led to expect. They were "friendly chats" with an interpreter Smith called the "Man with Glasses." Every day he would tell his prisoners about the history of Vietnam and the U.S. role in that country. "It was right out of the movies," Smith said. "The prisoner was confronted by his interrogators, who were sitting on a higher level and making him look up to them.

"Look at you," Man with Glasses began. "You are pitiful." It was a typical brainwashing tactic, designed to make the prisoner think poorly of himself, to undermine his self-image. Sergeant Smith, like many others, already had a poor self-image long before he was captured, even before he enlisted in the army. That image wasn't enhanced any by finding that the authorities to whom he had been so obedient had misinformed him.

"We had known interrogation was inevitable and had feared it for so long, but it didn't go the way it was supposed to," Smith said. "The guards were off somewhere out of sight. No one shone lights in our eyes. In fact, I sat in the shade while prevaricator (one of the interrogators) served me tea and candy and cigarettes.

"Man with Glasses did most of the talking, though he encouraged me to say anything I wanted to. He insisted on giving me their side of the story -- why they were there in the jungle and why the NLF had gotten together and was fighting the U.S. and the Saigon regime. 'We are fighting for Vietnam. We do not try to take over your country. This is not in our plans. We are worried about our country. We love it very much. We are proud people, and we want to keep our country.' Didn't I know I was wrong to be part of the United States effort in Vietnam? And if I did, would I write a statement saying so? He talked to me for about an hour, and at the end of the session he gave me a pack of the Cambodian cigarettes. 'For your enjoyment. Take them with you. When you are resting and smoking, I would like you to think deeply of what we have discussed.'

"If sitting in the shade drinking tea while I listened to this old guy talk was brainwashing, then it didn't fit any description I had ever heard. I recalled the stories I'd heard about Korea -- the scene where they hypnotize you, or drop water on your head, or put you in complete stillness -- something that will drive you out of your mind. Then once they've taken everything from your mind they start over again. When somebody says 'brainwashing,' this is what I consider they're talking about -- the classic Korean example. Or the stories that came out of there anyway."[4]

The word "brainwashing" summoned a terrifying image, but like so many other words it became corrupt in usage. It was applied to describe situations in which mere propaganda or influence were used. Indeed, the word may have been corrupt from the very beginning when it was coined by a CIA propaganda specialist, Edward Hunter. In his book *Brainwashing in Red China* he claimed that "Brainwashing, with the even more sinister brain changing in reverse, is the terrifying new Communist strategy to conquer the free world by destroying its mind."[5]

In the words of the noted Yale psychiatry professor Robert J. Lifton, brainwashing was popularly held to be an "all-powerful, irresistible, unfathomable, and magical method of achieving total control over the human mind."[6] It was in fact none of these things. Techniques which seemed to change the beliefs of American POWs and others behind the Iron Curtain employed no hypnosis, no drugs, no new methods for the control of the mind and certainly nothing magical.

Hunter revised *Brainwashing in Red China* and reissued it in 1971. In the introduction of the updated edition he continued his attack on the Communists, much as he did in his psychological-warfare journal *Tactics*.

"Change the word China to Cuba, and this book is a description of communist warfare against the mind -- brainwashing -- in Cuba, as well as in China. This is the world pattern the Communists employ; what might, in military parlance, be called mind attack. It is the new dimension in warfare, added to artillery attack, naval attack, rear and frontal attack, air attack. Brainwashing's dual processes of softening up and indoctrination have been added to the arsenal of warfare, girding the Trojan Horse in twentieth century accoutrements." Though Hunter may have been correct about the Communist use of coercive psychological techniques on its own populations, he never once hinted that the U.S. government might just be establishing practices employing similar techniques of its own.

In 1958, in his testimony before the House Committee on Un- American Activities (HUAC) he continued to present brainwashing as a communist weapon: "Since man began, he has tried to influence other men or women to his way of thinking. There have always been these forms of pressure to change attitudes. We discovered in the past thirty years, a technique to influence, by clinical, hospital procedures, the thinking processes of human beings... Brainwashing is formed out of a set of different elements... hunger, fatigue, tenseness, threats, violence, and in more intense cases where the Reds have specialists available on their brainwashing panels, drugs and hypnotism. No one of these elements alone can be regarded as brainwashing, any more than an apple can be called apple pie. Other ingredients have to be added, and a cooking process gone through. So it is in brainwashing with indoctrination or atrocities, or any other single ingredient.

---

[4] George E. Smith, *P.O.W.* (Berkeley, Ramparts Press, 1971)

[5] Edward Hunter, *Brainwashing in Red China*, 3rd ed. (New York, Vanguard, 1971)

[6] Robert Jay Lifton, *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism* (New York, Norton, 1961)

Given the anti-Communist climate of the Cold War years, Hunter's zeal did not seem excessive, even though few of his conclusions were supported by the eyewitness accounts given by the repatriated POWs. According to them, no drugs or hypnosis were used overseas; they told only of persuasion techniques.

Hunter's *Brainwashing in Red China* was widely quoted. Through front page news stories, the American public became aware, for the first time, that governments (though only Communist ones were mentioned) could control people's thoughts and motivate them against their will and without their knowledge.

Two years later, in May of 1960, Francis Gary Powers was shot down over the Soviet Union and cries of brainwashing again made U.S. headlines. At his public trial in Moscow, Powers apologized to the Russian people for doing them wrong. Even though the CIA had told him that if caught, he could admit everything, the voices of the "soldiers" within the U.S. were quick to brand him a traitor, and those who were inclined to be more sympathetic said he had simply been "brainwashed."

One psychiatrist, William Jennings Bryan, who had been the head of an air force medical survival training program which employed hypnosis to prepare pilots for resistance to brainwashing, went so far as to coin a term for the subtle new technique which he thought the Soviets had developed since the Korean conflict and had used on Powers. The U-2 pilot, Bryan said, had been "Powerized."

Bryan said that Powers' apologetic manner during the Moscow trial, his submissive, almost crippled words of testimony, his trancelike acceptance, all showed an amazing personality change since his capture.

"The pilot's apparent lack of real emotion during the Moscow trial was the most startling evidence that the Russian brainwashing through hypnosis has destroyed the normal, aggressive confidence and the cockiness characteristic of the air force fliers... The big tip-off came," Dr. Bryan said, "when Powers apologized for his American assignment, testified he knew he was wrong and said he felt no ill will toward his country's Cold War enemy.

"It is no longer a secret that Russia uses hypnosis as a powerful instrument to destroy the resistance of individuals she wishes to conquer," he said. "Brainwashing hypnosis as apparently used on Powers is vastly different from the permissive type of medical hypnosis... and the self-hypnosis used by air force fliers in caring for themselves after a crash... Powers exhibited no telltale marks of physical abuse or torture during the Moscow trial, and indeed, he may have even thought himself that he was being treated rather well, but his manner and personality were obviously so unlike the typical American pilot that only a brand new type of other powerful technique could have changed his personality in so short a time."[7]

Francis Gary Powers was returned to the U.S. in 1962 in a trade for Russian spy Rudolf Abel. He wrote in his book *Operation Overflight* (which was withheld from publication by the CIA until 1970) that the tactic he decided upon when captured was in accordance with his CIA instructions. He said, "When questioned, I would tell the truth."

Powers insisted that he did not tell the Russians anything which he thought they did not already know. In fact he often agreed to things they suggested simply to mislead them.

As for sophisticated, "Powerizing" techniques, Powers denied their existence. He even went so far as to suggest that the Russians were actually highly overrated in their intelligence-gathering methods.

"From what I had been taught about brainwashing, I had anticipated certain things: I would be lectured about communism, given only propaganda to read. Food would be doled out on a reward-punishment basis; if I cooperated, I would be fed; if I didn't, I wouldn't. Interrogation would be at odd hours, under bright lights. No sooner would I fall asleep than I would be awakened, and it would start all over again, until eventually I lost all track of time, place, identity. And I would be tortured and beaten until, finally, I would beg for the privilege of being allowed to confess to any crime they desired. None of this happened."

Immediately after Powers crossed the bridge from East Berlin he was examined by a West German flight surgeon under orders from the CIA. The surgeon took blood from his arm. Powers says the doctor told him "the blood samples were necessary to determine whether I had been drugged. This seemed to be the first question of almost everyone to whom I talked: Had I been drugged? They seemed almost disappointed when I told them I hadn't."

Powers was then flown to the U.S. "I still couldn't comprehend that after twenty-one months of captivity I was once again a free man," he said, "which was perhaps best, for though I was yet to realize it, I wasn't quite free, not yet. In a sense, I had been released by the Russians to become a de facto prisoner of the CIA."

---

[7] William J. Bryan III, *City News Service*, (a suspected CIA asset) September, 1960.

The CIA men told Powers they would like to talk to him for a couple of days. The "couple of days" turned out to be over three weeks, in which Powers was thoroughly debriefed by a team of intelligence analysts and psychiatrists. The first question the psychiatrists asked was, again, had he been drugged by the Soviets? The second question they asked was, had he been brainwashed? When Powers answered "no" to both questions he was given tranquilizers, which were the first drugs he had received since his U-2 left Turkey for the overflight of the USSR. Powers noted with some irony, that "Americans are much more disposed to the use of drugs than are the Soviets."[8]

Perhaps even more Ironic was the public disclaimer issued by CIA Director Allen Dulles, which said the U.S. had no use for brainwashing: "What had popularly become known as 'brainwashing,' while of great psychological interest to the West, as it is important to study defensive techniques, is never practiced by us... for the simple reason that we are not interested in converting people to our way of thinking either forcibly or by trickery, which is its main intent. We have never felt, as obviously the Soviets and the Red Chinese and the North Koreans have, that there is much to gain in putting a brainwashed person on the air to denounce his own countrymen. We have enough people who come over to us voluntarily from communism and who need no prompting."[9] Dulles, it seemed, was either a reader of Hunter's or they both had been briefed by the same propaganda section of the CIA.

Brainwashing was the term the psychological warfare unit of the CIA thought up to explain why American POWs cooperated with the enemy in Korea. Brainwashing was explained as severe deprivation of food, clothing, and shelter, during which time a series of punishments and rewards were applied so effectively that a person's fundamental beliefs could be made to change 180 degrees from their original position. This brutal technique was not called torture; there was no propaganda value in something as old as torture.

The CIA thought up the term "brainwashing" to lead people in the Western world to believe that the inscrutable Orientals had again, like Fu Manchu, invented a revolutionary technique controlling the human mind. The word "brainwashing" and the official government explanation of what happened to the Korean POWs was propaganda. It was aimed at fueling a home-grown fear of the Communists upon which the Cold War so greatly depended. Propaganda, of course, was nothing more than artful deception; the careful planting of "misinformation" and "disinformation," Cold War euphemisms for what had been called "the big Lie" in World War II.

Modern propaganda began when Nazi Germany perfected the art of "the big lie." The Soviet Union and other Communist countries took the methods of the Nazis and improved upon them. The United States did not actively engage in wide-scale propaganda until World War II, when the OSS and the Office of War Information started. But then it was well understood that the guiding principles of propaganda were: "When there is no compelling reason to suppress a fact, tell it... Aside from considerations of military security, the only reason to suppress a piece of news is if it is unbelievable... When the listener catches you in a lie, your power diminishes... For this reason, never tell a lie which can be discovered."

---

[8] Francis Gary Powers, *Operation Overflight* (New York, Holt, 1970)

[9] Allen Dulles, *The Craft of Intelligence (New York, Harper, 1963)*

As far back as 1940, American propaganda services had orders to tell the truth. It was a sound premise for effective propaganda, but it was a premise which was ignored by the succeeding generations of Cold Warriors.

Somewhere along the line the CIA's Covert Action Staff lost sight of the value of using the truth as the main weapon. Taking over from OSS, they soon became experts in "the big lie."

This policy surfaced to the attention of the American people during isolated events such as the U-2 incident and the Bay of Pigs invasion of Cuba when Presidents Eisenhower and Kennedy took the blame for what were obviously CIA lies. In the light of recent history it would appear that these chiefs of state were somehow convinced that it was better to issue a false confession that they had lied to the nation than to admit that they had been lied to by their own intelligence agency.

In the years since the founding of the National Security Act in 1947 there were hundreds of such lies and false denials and domestic propaganda campaigns which did not immediately gain public attention.

Since the administration of Lyndon Johnson, the executive branch of government seemed to be following Machiavelli's advice: "If you don't get caught, it can't be wrong." The executive privilege, the legacy of the National Security Act -- the art of falsehood -- lies have left our history strewn with the rubble of uncovered cover-ups and stonewalls. The administrations of Nixon, Reagan and Bush lied, not because they were misled by the cryptocracy -- but because they were part of it. If they hadn't been, they probably wouldn't have been elected.

Few seemed to notice that George Bush was an intelligence agent before he was appointed Director of the CIA. That was before he was elected Vice President of the United States, during which time his hand articulated a mentally impaired puppet, a movie actor playing President, to succeed him after eight years. Through Bush the cryptocracy had its hands directly on the helm of state for twelve highly visible years.

Brainwashing, as planted in the press, was one little propaganda weapon in a vast arsenal. But it was a weapon that was supposed to be effective against communism, cropping up in news accounts whenever it was needed -- whenever the Cold Warriors' domestic covert action arm thought that the public was going "soft on Communism."

Albert K. Biderman, a senior research associate of the Rand Corporation's subcontractor, the Bureau of Social Science Research, conducted a study of the news items published about our POWs in Korea. Biderman's analysis confirmed that this kind of propaganda was "successively dominant in the press during and after the Korean War. During the war, Propaganda focused on prisoner atrocities; when the war had ended, the focus shifted to stories involving the brainwashing of POWs.[10]

"Beginning with exchanges of prisoners," he wrote, "prisoner misconduct received gradually increased attention until, several months after the war, it came to overshadow the other themes."

Throughout the Korean conflict, propaganda and counter-propaganda campaigns on both sides grew in intensity until eventually POWs became the most critical issue of the war, the "stumbling block" in the drawn-out truce talks that delayed the war's termination.

In 1953 some 4000 surviving American POWs became the subjects of another type of propaganda -- propaganda by Americans, about Americans, directed at Americans. According to Biderman, "The theme of this propaganda was that there had been wholesale collaboration by the American prisoners with their Communist captors and that this unprecedented misbehavior revealed alarming new weaknesses in our national character. This post-truce propaganda... was an outgrowth of propaganda activities during the war."

Desperately trying to believe that U.S. propaganda was motivated by good intentions, Biderman suggested that the "brainwashing theme" was pushed at home because the Cold Warriors were "apparently worried that a number of American prisoners would return espousing the Communist view." Biderman noted that "the Defense and State Departments and the Central Intelligence Agency issued a stream of press releases during the days prior to the first prisoner exchanges in Korea to prepare the public for the shock of finding that many of the POWs had been brainwashed. The theme of these releases was that evidence of Communist indoctrination or pro-Communist statements by Americans when they were released would be discounted because the prisoners would have been subjected to the well-known tortures that Communists used to brainwash their opponents."

And just what were these "well-known tortures"? the general principles of the Chinese brainwashing techniques were repetition, pacing of demands, the forced participation in classes of prisoners, propaganda which would insert Communist ideas into familiar and meaningful contexts, punishment, threats, rewards, suggestion, pleas for peace, manipulative tricks, and deprivation of all but the minimum necessities of life. There was little that was new or innovative about the techniques used by the Chinese. They did not use drugs or hypnosis, nor did they invent any mysterious new devices for breaking the mind and will of a man.

---

[10] Albert Biderman and Herbert Zimmer, eds., *The Manipulation of Human Behavior* (New York, Macmillan, 1961)

Actually the Chinese controlled information in their POW camps just as they controlled the mass media in their own country. The system they used in the camps -- propagandizing through lectures, movies, reading, and testimonials -- was based on the same system used on the Chinese population and is not without parallel in Western education and advertising practices.

Nor are the punishment-and-reward techniques used by the Chinese in their interrogations exclusively Oriental. These same practices are employed by Western intelligence agents, police, and more subtly by reporters trying to elicit information from a hostile subject. Confession and self-criticism have been used in religious movements as a basis of conversion, or as a way of perpetuating the faith, from time immemorial.

Dr. Edgar H. Schein of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology was one of many persons who contributed to the army study of the returned POWs. Of the central reason behind the brainwashing propaganda which the army study disclosed, he wrote "When things go wrong, it is far less ego-deflating to say that we have been brainwashed than to recognize our own inadequacy in coping with our problems. A crucial question, however, is whether such changes in our society and such preoccupations represent weaknesses and signal the deterioration of some of our highly valued institutions, or whether they are merely the symptoms of the changing world..."

Is this then to be a continuing trend in the so-called free world?

"...Are we becoming mentally apathetic and hence more prone to totalitarian solutions," Schein continues," or are we finding new ways in which to relate ourselves to our international and internal problems? Many observers of the contemporary scene, among them the novelist and philosopher Aldous Huxley, and Joost Meerloo, a psychoanalyst, feel strongly that we are headed squarely in the *wrong* direction -- that *the combination of certain social forces and the weapons against the mind now available will inevitably lead to the destruction of the democratic way of life and the freedom of mind which goes with it, unless we recognize clearly what is happening and put counter-forces into operation.*" [Empasis added.][11]

In succeeding years, talk of "brainwashing" continued. Usually it was heard that the Communists had "brainwashed" somebody, but on April 7, 1967, presidential hopeful Governor George Romney turned that around. Romney, who had gone to Vietnam believing in the rightness of the U.S. involvement there, came home saying that he had suffered "the greatest brainwashing that anyone can get when you go over to Vietnam, not only by the generals, but also by the diplomatic corps over there, and they do a very thorough job."

---

[11] Edgar Schein, *Journal of World Politics*, April 1959.

Nine governors who had accompanied Romney on the tour disagreed with him. Governor Philip H. Hoff said that Romney's brainwashing statement "tends to be almost incredible." Finding he had no support among his colleagues, Romney quickly told reporters that he had not been talking about "Russian type brainwashing, but LBJ type brainwashing." He said he meant the same thing the press meant "when you write about the credibility gap, snow job, and manipulation of the news."

Webster's Third New International Dictionary gives the second meaning of brainwashing as "persuasion by propaganda or salesmanship," but the press and Public thought that Romney had meant the word in its first sense: "A forcible indoctrination to induce someone to give up basic political, social, or religious beliefs and attitudes and to accept contrasting regimented ideas."

And the public let it be known that it would not vote for a brainwashed presidential candidate. Romney's popularity fell so dramatically in the polls that he eventually dropped out of the race for the presidency. The word "brainwashing" proved to be more charged with emotions that anyone had supposed.

In one of the first mass market books published on the subject following the army's release of the study of the Korean POWs, Eugene Kinkead wrote, "Unfortunately, the distinction between brainwashing and indoctrination is far from clear to the average American. The army defines indoctrination as an effort to change a man's viewpoint while he is still a thinking individual by regulating his thoughts and actions. This falls far short of the effect produced upon some defendants seen in Communist courts, defendants who had obviously been completely broken, and had ceased to be thinking individuals. I am afraid that the general conception has been that Communist techniques of manipulating human beings are so persuasive, so completely irresistible that no prisoner can keep his integrity in the face of them -- and, by analogy, that no people, including ours, can stand against such an enemy. This is what distresses me so much about the popular and improper use of a word like 'brainwashing'..."[12]

Perhaps. But by 1967, when George Romney claimed he had been brainwashed, our own government was already far beyond what Kinkead referred to as "brainwashing." The United States government did not have to stoop to the slow and exhausting process the Chinese and Russians used. In the age of electronic brain stimulation, neuro-psychopharmacology, and advanced methods of behavior modification and hypnosis, the government certainly didn't have to resort to methods as unsophisticated as brainwashing.

---

[12] Eugene Kinkead, *In Every War but One* (New York, Norton, 1959)

The techniques of mind control developed, even by 1967, were making brainwashing seem like the metaphor it was: a washboard and scrub-bucket technique which had little use in a world where the sonic cleaner, with high-frequency sound, higher than the human ear can hear, vibrates the dirt from the very molecules of matter -- or the mind.

Brainwashing was largely a campaign waged in the United States home press. It served as a sharp-edged propaganda weapon and was aimed at the American people to add to the already considerable fear of the Communists. It also covered official United States embarrassment over a seeming rash of defections and collaborations with the enemy, and perhaps most important, offered moral justification for immoral and illegal experiments to scientists working under government contract. They were urged as a matter of patriotism to "beat the Communists in the mind-control race."

It is doubtful that all of the "collaborators" in the Korean conflict succumbed to brainwashing. The eyewitness testimony of air force Col. Laird Guttersen, one of the few heroes of the Vietnam conflict, and a real hero of the mind-control war, would suggest that they didn't.

Guttersen had been in charge of the air force seminar on Korean brainwashing at Maxwell Air Force Base. An expert hypnotist, he later used self-hypnosis to block pain and keep himself alive in a North Vietnamese POW camp where he spent more than twenty-seven months in solitary confinement. He took the time during his campaign for the U.S. Congress to offer me his views on brainwashing and mind control.

As early as 1956 Colonel Guttersen realized that what was called brainwashing was nothing more than psychological indoctrination. "Controlling the mind is one thing," he told me, "but remember, this does not occur with psychological indoctrination. Nor does it occur, normally, with hypnosis. The concept of complete and total mind control was projected by the brainwashing myth, and it was the theme of the book *The Manchurian Candidate*; but mind control is not what happened to the Korean or Vietnamese POWs. What the Chinese, the Russians, the Vietnamese did was mind influence, not mind control."

Guttersen said that while it was generally believed that brainwashing was the result of drugs and hypnosis, to his firsthand knowledge, from the Korean conflict to Vietnam, "there are no documented cases of drug- or hypnosis- induced mind control. Reading the examples of what the POWs stated in both Korea and Vietnam, and what I saw in Hanoi, there are only men saying, 'I couldn't have done those things unless I had been drugged.' There are no specific reports of anyone saying, 'They stuck a needle into me and I did so and so.' or 'They gave me something to eat, and then I did so and so.' There were men who said, 'I acted in a very strange way, just like I was in a dream or something. I must have been drugged.'"

There was a cover-up for a snafu in some of the original Korean briefings of our combatants who, Guttersen said, were told to cooperate if captured.

"I remember a specific briefing, though later it was denied, where a group of us were told that we would be well advised, if we got shot down, to whip out a bottle of vodka and a red flag and start waving it. We were advised to cooperate in any possible way with the enemy because anybody back home would know that we were cooperating under duress. We were told that if we cooperated with our captors, it would not give them an excuse to torture us. That was a specific briefing given to us. Of course, now we know that a good number of our captive men followed that advice and did collaborate on the basis that 'What the hell, nobody would ever be told to collaborate with the enemy again."

The word "brainwashing" became commonplace after the Soviet Union presented evidence before the United Nations that charged the United States with the use of germ warfare in Korea -- a major violation of the Geneva Convention. The Soviet evidence contained the confessions of several captured United States pilots stating both in documents and on film that they had dropped germ bombs on North Korea. By the time these men were repatriated their stories had changed.

Marine Corps Colonel Frank H. Schwable was the first American to sign a germ warfare confession. His confession named names, cited missions, described meetings and strategy conferences. Before a military court of inquiry Schwable said: "I was never convinced in my own mind that we in the First Marine Air Wing had used bug warfare. I knew we hadn't, but the rest of it was so real to me -- the conferences, the planes, and how they would go about their missions...

The words were mine," the Colonel continued, "but the thoughts were theirs. That is the hardest thing I have to explain: how a man can sit down and write something he knows is false, and yet, to sense it, to feel it, to make it seem real."

A CIA memo dated April 11, 1953 addressed to the Chief of CIA's Plans and Preparations, contained a report of an exchange that took place between then United Nations Ambassador Henry Cabot Lodge and an unidentified CIA agent. The CIA agent began to brief Lodge on the germ warfare confessions of Schwable and others when according to the memo, Lodge interrupted expressing "...a profound distaste for the entire matter," adding that "he hoped he would never hear of it again -- it had been a nasty and difficult issue, principally because of the difficulty of *explaining away* the film and the statements of the American fliers..." (Emphasis added.)

The CIA memo continued with the agent reporting. "I said that we fully shared his view that 'the issue was finished in the United Nations,' but that it had been our experience that 'the bug' comes from a very hardy strain and had exhibited appalling vitality. For this reason, I said that I thought it would be a mistake to be too complacent about the matter. To the last statement Senator Lodge replied with a question as to just what explanation we could give of the statements of the American Fliers -- how did we account for this and what could be done about it? I said that our best guess was that the statements had been in one way or another forced out of the captive airmen and that one of the techniques which we thought had possibly been used was the Soviet (and now Chinese) techniques of brainwashing.' Senator Lodge said that he thought the public was very inadequately informed about 'brainwashing' and that in the absence of a much larger quantity of public information than now exists on the subject, the impact of the fliers' statements is terrific. I replied by stating that we shared his view and pointed out that the Department of Defense is expected to issue a lengthy statement..." (Emphasis added.)

Shortly thereafter, the word "brainwashing" was on the front page of every paper in America. We had not used germ warfare, CIA propaganda claimed, the Communists had used brainwashing.

Marine Sgt. Frank H. Schwable was the first American to confess to his North Korean and Chinese captors that the U.S. had dropped germ bombs in the Korean War (which was true). Thus, because of the CIA's successful coverup, he was the first person in the world to be "brainwashed" – a propaganda term coined for the occasion by Edward Hunter.

4

WITHOUT KNOWLEDGE OR CONSENT

"I can hypnotize a man -- *without his knowledge or consent* -- into committing treason against the United States," boasted Dr. George Estabrooks in the early 1940s.

Estabrooks, chairman of the Department of Psychology at Colgate University, was called to Washington by the War Department shortly after Pearl Harbor. Since he was the ranking authority on hypnosis at the time, they wanted his opinion on how the enemy might be planning to use hypnotism. "Two hundred trained foreign operators, working in the United States," Estabrooks told the military leaders, "could develop a uniquely dangerous army of hypnotically controlled Sixth Columnists."[13]

At that time, only a handful of men knew of the government's experiments with hypnosis for the purpose of controlling minds in the interest of "national security." In that decade there had been no concentrated assassinations of presidents, candidates, or civil rights leaders. There had not yet been Watergate, nor any disclosures of government agencies invading the privacy of the United States citizens. The CIA had not yet been conceived, and even its parent, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), did not exist.

It was unthinkable at the time that an agency of the U.S. government would employ mind-control techniques on its own people. Therefore it was natural for George Estabrooks to believe that if Americans were threatened by hypnotic mind control, the threat would be posed by a foreign enemy working within the United States.

So in 1943 Estabrooks sounded his public alarm, and planted the seed for what would become priority top-secret research for the next twenty-five years. Couching his disclosure in hypothetical terms and saying that the hypnotized mind "could be" put to military use, he then portrayed a scene which he said could "very easily take place."

It would be possible, he said, for "the enemy" to plant a foreign agent as a doctor in a hospital or his own office. This "doctor" could, by means of fake physical examinations, place thousands of people under his power over a period of time. Estabrooks projected how, by hypnotizing key officers and programming them to follow suggestions, this "masked maneuver" could enable a lowly first lieutenant to take-over the reins of the entire U.S. Army.

---

[13] George Estabrooks, *Argosy*, February, 1950.

His alternate scenario depicted the General Staff summoning a colonel from Intelligence to an emergency meeting in the pentagon two days after an outbreak of war. Shortly after entering the room where Pentagon "brain trusters" were gathered, the colonel is put into hypnotic trance by an army psychologist and told there has been a change of plans for the defense of major territory. The details of the plan have to be conveyed in absolute secrecy to the pacific command. Since the enemy has been very successful in monitoring U.S. communications, a new highly reliable procedure is needed to slip the message past the enemy. The colonel, under the influence of hypnosis, will carry the top-secret message.

"When you wake up, the hypnotized colonel is told, "you will no longer have the slightest knowledge of the secret information carried in the lower layers of your mind." The colonel is then given instructions to proceed by airplane to Honolulu. He is told that in his normal waking state he will hold the impression that he is on a routine mission and must report after his arrival to General Y.

"He is the only man in the world who can hypnotize you again. Put to sleep by General Y. -- and only him -- you will correctly recall all the details of this conversation and disclose the secret instructions we have just given you."

Estabrooks said later he had given the pentagon episode *only* as a practical example of how the new science of hypnotism *could* be used for military purposes.

Going even further with his alarming predictions, Estabrooks told how disguised techniques of hypnosis could be employed to create an entire army of saboteurs within our own country. "Let us suppose that in a certain city there lives a group of a given foreign extraction. They are loyal Americans but still have cultural and sentimental ties to the old country. A neighborhood doctor, working secretly for a foreign power, hypnotizes those of his patients who have ties favorable to his plans. Having done this he would, of course, remove from them all knowledge of their ever having been hypnotized.

"Next comes a one-month period of indoctrination under hypnosis. By various means, including the offer of substantial rewards and educational processes designed to strengthen their ancestral loyalties, their cooperation is obtained."

Estabrooks explained how individuals so controlled would have no conscious aversion to Americans and would continue to behave as good citizens. Subconsciously, however, they would be saboteurs and agents of the enemy.

"All right you say. This sounds beautiful on paper. But what about the 'well-known psychological principle' that no one will do anything under hypnosis that he wouldn't do when he's awake?" Estabrooks asked.

"My experiments have shown this assumption is poppycock. It depends not so much on the attitude of the subject as on that of the operator himself... In wartime, the motivation for murder under hypnosis doesn't have to be very strong," Estabrooks warned.

"During World War I, a leading psychologist made a startling proposal to the navy. He offered to take a submarine steered by a captured U-boat captain, placed under his hypnotic control, through enemy mine fields to attack the German fleet. Washington nixed the stratagem as too risky. First, because there was no disguised method by which the captain's mind could be outflanked. Second, because today's technique of day-by-day breaking down of ethical conflicts brainwashing was still unknown.

"The indirect approach to hypnotism would, I believe, change the navy's answer today. Personally," Estabrooks concluded, "I am convinced that hypnosis is a bristling dangerous armament which makes it doubly imperative to avoid the war of tomorrow."[14]

George Estabrooks may have greatly contributed to the U.S. government's interest in hypnosis. For during the years that followed, seeking ways both to improve the mind and to control it, various government agencies, many of them with intelligence functions, secretly pursued research in hypnotic techniques.

A number of related events during the 1940s demonstrated the extent of the government's interest in hypnosis. Beyond changing beliefs, they sought ways to motivate people to commit acts which they would not commit in a normal state.

Dr. Bernard C. Gindes wrote of an amnesia experiment he undertook for the U.S. Army in the late forties. "A soldier with only a grade school education was able to memorize an entire page of Shakespeare's *Hamlet* after listening to the passages seven times. Upon awakening, he could not recall any of the lines, and even more startling was the fact that he had no remembrance of the hypnotic experience. A week later he was hypnotized again. In this state, he was able to repeat the entire page without a single error. In another experiment to test the validity of increased memory retention, five soldiers were hypnotized en masse and given a jumbled code consisting of twenty-five words without phonetic consistency. They were allowed sixty seconds to commit the list to memory. In the waking state, each man was asked to repeat the code; none of them could. One man hazily remembered having had some association with a code, but could not remember more than that. the other four soldiers were allowed to study the code consciously for another sixty seconds, but all denied previous acquaintance with it. During rehypnotization, they were individually able to recall the exact content of the coded message."[15]

---

[14] Estabrooks, *Hypnotism*, 3d ed. (New York, Dutton, 1944)

In 1947, J.C. Watkins induced criminal behavior in deeply hypnotized subjects during another army experiment. Watkins suggested a distorted view of reality to his subjects by inducing hallucinations which allowed them to avoid direct conflict with their own moral concepts. He carefully chose his suggestions to be in line with his subjects' pre-existing motivational structures, and so was able to induce so-called antisocial behavior.

Watkins took a normal, healthy army private, a young man whose tests indicated a most stable personality, and put him in a deep trance. Though merely striking a superior officer is a court- martial offense in the army, Watkins wanted to see if he could get his subject to strangle a high ranking officer.

After the subject was deep into trance, Watkins told him that the officer sitting across from him was a Japanese soldier who was trying to kill him. He must kill or be killed, Watkins suggested, and immediately the private leapt ferociously at the officer and grabbed him by the throat. In his waking state, the private would have been aghast at the thought of trying to strangle a superior officer. But under hypnosis, believing the officer was a dangerous Japanese soldier, the young private had to be pulled off his superior by three husky assistants. The officer came within a hairsbreadth of being strangled, as the young man was most persistent in his attempt to kill what he regarded as the enemy.

Watkins repeated this experiment with other subjects. The second time he used two officers who were good friends. One of them was given the hypnotic suggestion that the other was a Japanese soldier and that he must "kill or be killed." the man who had received the command not only made a powerful lunge at his friend, but as he did he whipped out and opened a concealed jack knife, which neither the doctor, his assistants, nor his friend knew he had. Only the quick action of one of the assistants, who was a judo expert, prevented a potentially fatal stabbing.

In both cases, reality was so distorted that the subjects took murderous and antisocial action. If they had accomplished their "defensive" acts, both men could have been convicted of murder, since the law did not recognize motivation through hypnosis as a fact. The courts, in all but a few cases, had adopted the traditional scientific view that criminal behavior cannot be induced under hypnosis. That view still stands today.

To test the premise, which was then widely held, that a normal person under hypnotic trance could not be made to divulge information which would be self-incriminating, Watkins conducted a number of experiments where a monetary bribe was offered to withhold information. Watkins discovered that "when placed in a trance they 'spilled' every time, either verbally or in writing.

---

[15] Bernard C. Gindes, *New Concepts in Hypnosis* (Wilshire Books, N. Hollywood, Cal., 1973)

The subject of one of these experiments was an enlisted WAC in military intelligence. Her commanding officer ordered her not to reveal a list of what were made to appear to be real military secrets. Under hypnosis she "spilled" everything.

Another experiment was discontinued when it was discovered that a research worker in the government arsenal was spilling vital and top-secret war information to the friendly army hypnotist, who did not have a "need to know." He did this loud and clear while in a trance before an audience of 200 military professionals. If the subject had been allowed to continue, the disclosures of information would have resulted in a general court martial, no matter how the doctor might have tried to persuade intelligence headquarters that this was "just a test."

Much of the army's experimentation with manipulation by hypnosis was inspired by the reports of Wesley Raymond Wells, a doctor at Syracuse University. Wells's research, in turn, had been inspired by the fiction of the 1880's and 1890s, which described criminal acts as being induced by hypnosis. Wells was taken by the idea that "the most striking feature in a hypnotized subject is his automatism." Although earlier experiments had elicited no immoral or criminal behavior from subjects under hypnosis, the results of experiments which asked subjects to resist various suggestions indicated to Wells that people might be more suggestible than was generally believed.

In the late 1930s, Wells conducted a simple experiment with a student volunteer. He chose a subject who had stated that he expected he would be below average in hypnotizability and claimed he could not be put into a trance. Before inducing trance, Wells urged him to do his utmost to resist, in every possible way, first going into the trance, and then doing anything against his own moral code.

When the student told Wells that he was ready to begin the contest, the doctor put his hand on the subject's chest, counted to seven, and found that the subject had already fallen into a deep trance! After testing the subject's muscle control and ability to obtain amnesia and hallucinations, Wells proceeded to suggest that the subject get up from his chair, go over to Wells's overcoat which was on a coat rack across the room, and take a dollar from the right-hand pocket. Wells suggested that the subject see the coat as his own, and take the dollar thinking that he had left it in the pocket. When the subject followed all of Wells's suggestions, he then told him to put the dollar in his own breast pocket and return to his chair. As he was about to sit, Wells said to him that when he sat in the chair he would spend the dollar, just as if it were his own.

Afterwards, during the student's recall of his experiences, Wells found that everything had worked according to the hypnotic program he had implanted. This was, of course, a clinical sort of test for amnesia.

"Whether his amnesia would have withstood third-degree methods of the police or the lie detector methods of the psychological laboratory is another question," Wells said. "On the basis of my previous experimental study of posthypnotic amnesia, I would state it as my opinion that hypnotically induced amnesia in the case of so good a subject... would have withstood any possible tests if added precautions had been taken in the hypnotic production of the amnesia."[16]

Wells' report of this experiment, published in a psychology journal in 1941, brought a negative reaction from the scientific community. Milton Erickson was among the first to say that Wells's experiments were at best inconclusive. Erickson reported that after attempting to duplicate similar hypnotic inducements of crime with fifty subjects, he had failed. He concluded from his own investigations that "hypnosis cannot be misused to induce hypnotized persons to commit actual wrongful acts either against themselves or others..." The so-called antisocial acts induced by Wells and others, Erickson maintained, were most likely motivated by factors other than hypnosis or suggestion.

"We know that it is possible, without recourse to hypnosis, for one person to induce another to commit a wrong, a fact we may explain loosely as the influence of one personality upon another," Erickson explained. "To settle this question is difficult, since it involves three inseparable factors of unknown potentialities -- specifically, the hypnotist as a person, the subject as a person, and hypnosis as such to say nothing of the significant influence upon these three, both individually and collectively, of the suggestion and the performance of a questionable act."[17]

But even Erickson conceded that the primitive being, the libido, which dwells in everyone, makes almost any crime possible. When a hallucinatory state has been induced and the subject thinks he or she is acting out of self-preservation, the primitive mind takes over and the killer instinct is unleashed.

{Milton W. Erickson's insights into human behavior were used to develop (with the CIA watching over the scientists shoulders) what is perhaps the 20th Century's most important technology of empowerment or enslavement, a science known as Neuro-Linguistics Programming (NLP).}

In the late 1930s psychologists began grappling with the problem of human will, as the theologians before them had done for centuries. Some maintained that "will" meant conscious volition; others, that it meant nothing but the manifestation of the belief system, that is to say, the result of the earliest conditioned responses. The area of will still lies outside the limits of modern psychology. Many experts are loath even to use the word "will" since it represents a most ill-defined dimension of human nature.

---

[16] Wesley Wells, *The Journal of Psychology*, 1941.

[17] Milton Erickson, *Journal of Biology and Pathology of Interpersonal Relations*, August, 1939.

Summing up a carefully constructed semantic argument, psychologists often say, "A person cannot be made to do anything against his will or basic moral precepts." That statement, taken at face value, is certainly true. A normal person would not wittingly kill a friend. But if he was made to hallucinate that his friend was an enemy, and it was a "kill or be killed" situation, he would initiate a natural response to preserve his own life. In the process he might even take the imagined enemy's life. After the hallucination passed, he would realize he had killed his friend. This criminal act would be considered in one sense, an act of will; but the real cause of the action would not be understood outside the hallucinated state.Only the killer's grief would remain, to attest to his knowledge of what he did, and that ***he really*** did not ***want*** to do it.

Whether or not hypnosis can be used to deeply motivate people to commit antisocial acts despite the call of their own conscience is still an open question in academic circles.

George Estabrooks had evidence which made him conclude that "one in every five of the human race are highly suggestible, at least half are suggestible to a very considerable degree." And he warned, "... mere figures do not tell the story. That one fifth has a power far beyond its numbers; for this type of man, acting under direct suggestion, is no mere average person. He is a fanatic, with all that fanaticism may imply for good or evil... Can this prospective subject -- this one in five individual -- be hypnotized against his will?"

"The answer to this very vital question," Estabrooks concluded, "is 'yes,' though we prefer to say 'without his consent' instead of 'against his will.' We do not need the subject's consent when we wish to hypnotize him for we use 'disguised technique..."[18]

Believing in Estabrooks' logic, pragmatists in the government began to explore the possibilities of ways to change belief and motivate behavior. They let scores of contracts for research into hypnosis, behavior modification, conditioning, and virtually anything that held even a slim chance of being able to give them control over the individual human mind and will.

Meanwhile foreign governments unfriendly to the United States were involved in similar psychological research. But the U.S. government's fear of losing superiority in this new and untested field ran away with it. Intelligence analysts believed a "mind-control gap" existed, and to close it they mobilized "think tanks" to develop a usable program of experimental research, at once.

---

[18] Estabrooks, *Hypnotism.*

From one such think tank, the Rand Corporation, came a report entitled *Are the Cominform Countries using Hypnosis Techniques to Elicit Confession In Public Trials?* Dated April 25, 1949, it helped set the stage for using national security as the rationale for resorting to mind control to motivate criminal acts, both at home and abroad.

The successful use of hypnosis," the report said, "Would represent a serious threat to democratic values in times of peace and war. In addition, it might contribute to the development of unconventional methods of warfare, which will be widely regarded as immoral. The results of scientific research in the field under discussion would obviously lend themselves to offensive as well as defensive applications and to abuse no less than use. It must be assumed that almost all of the scientific personnel in the field of hypnosis are keenly aware of these social implications of their work and that they are interested in limiting the practice of hypnosis to therapeutic applications." That assumption proved to be untrue.

The Rand report recommended "that these moral and political implications of experimental research on hypnosis be explored as fully as possible prior to official encouragement or sponsorship of such research, so as to establish the most effective safeguards against its unintended consequences."

The Rand study dwelt at length upon Soviet experiments in hypnosis dating back to 1923. "At the State Institute of Experimental Psychology in Moscow," the report stated, "it was demonstrated that hypnosis could be used in inducing an innocent person to develop intense guilt feelings and to confess to a criminal or immoral act which he did not commit. In 1932 the experiments on hypnotically implanted 'crimes' were reported (in English translation) by A. R. Luria, who at that time was a professor in the Academy of Communist Education."

Quoting Luria, the report described how hypnosis was used as a device for producing emotional disturbances in order to control behavior. "We suggested to the person under test, while in a sufficiently deep hypnotic state, a certain situation, more often a disagreeable one, in which he was playing a role irreconcilable with his habits and contrary to his usual behavior -- we thus obtained an actual and rather sharply expressed acute effect. After awakening the person under test... we had a subject who was 'loaded' with certain definite affective complexes, which mostly remained unknown to himself..."

Luria described an experiment with a twenty-year-old female college student who was told under deep hypnosis that she was sitting in her home studying when a neighbor child, a boy of six, came into the room. She was told that the child shouted when he came into the room. She asked him to stop, but he did not listen. The young woman was then told that she would get angry and forget herself. She would take a stick and beat the boy, first on the back and then on the head. The boy would cry out from the wounds on his head, but she would keep on beating him. She would then feel very ashamed and would be unable to understand how such a thing could happen, how she could beat up a child. Finally, she was told that she must try and forget the incident altogether.

Luria explained that he had chosen this situation with a definite purpose. Since the hallucinated event was entirely unacceptable by the moral standards of the young woman's personality, it was natural that she would feel repentant. He reinforced her natural desire to forget by suggesting to her that she remove the memory of the event from her mind.

In subsequent trances the subject was questioned about the "beating." With great difficulty she reconstructed the event, but shifted the emphasis on several points so that the imagined event would conform more to her basic moral code. At first she refused to remember that she had "beaten" the child. She then conceded that she had "pulled his ears." Then, finally, she admitted she had "beaten him," but she maintained she had not beaten him with a stick. Luria said that this showed how unacceptable the situation was to her personality. The student said twice, "my conscience has tortured me." Luria said this showed the effectiveness of the hypnotic suggestion.

Of the experiment, Irving Janis, author of the Rand report, observed, "in this particular case, the implanted memory was initially referred to by the examiner as a 'dream' rather than as a real event. But from the detailed reports of other investigators, this procedure does not appear to be necessary for eliciting a false confession: a hypnotized subject will often accept and confess to an implanted memory as a real event in his own past life."

The Rand report itself suggested that this trick of hypnotic suggestion might be used on a defendant awaiting trial. The defendant could be "prepared" in a series of hypnotic sessions to accept guilt about a criminal act he did not commit, and then, if placed in a hypnotic trance while in the courtroom, the prosecutor's interrogation would elicit a false confession.

Fearing the Communists' use of hypnosis, the Rand report warned that hypnosis, once accomplished, is hard to detect. Contrary to reports in the nineteenth century, "a hypnotized subject is not blindly obedient, nor does he act like an automaton when in a trance. Hypnotic suggestions are acted out and elaborated in a way that is consonant with the individual's habitual social behavior and his basic personality traits." The report stated that while often "the hypnotized subject seems literal and humorless... he appears entirely unselfconscious, and very often he acts abstracted, inattentive, almost as if he were insulated against his surroundings," this is not always the case. A number of experienced hypnotists had been able to train their subjects to perform "in such a way that observers could not tell that the subject was in a trance or that he was acting under hypnotic suggestions."

The Rand report outlined the following procedure that would elicit a false confession. "First, make the subject feel guilty about some acts he had thought about or had actually carried out in the past. Second, make him feel guilty about having committed some crime of which he was actually innocent. The implanted guilt would compel the subject to confess when examined by a hypnotist or any one else designated by the hypnotist. Third, train the subject, by means of post-hypnotic suggestion, to go into a trance whenever a simple signal was encountered." The subject would be trained to give his false confession in a normal, convincing manner, so that observers would not be able to detect the trance state.

To induce hypnosis in an unwilling subject, the report suggested any of three possibilities which were then well supported by research findings:

1. As part of a medical examination, talk relaxation to the subject, thus disguising the hypnotic induction. For example, the person could be given a blood pressure test, told that he must relax completely in order to give an adequate test record, and then be given suggestions to go to sleep which would result in a hypnotic trance.

2. Induce hypnosis while the person is actually asleep from normal fatigue. This could be done by simply talking softly into the sleeper's ear.

3. Use injections of drugs to induce hypnosis. the hypnotic drugs would relax the subject and put him in a "twilight state" where the subconscious mind is very susceptible to suggestion.

Subjects who refuse or resist the simple "talking" methods of hypnotic induction could be given a few grams of paraldehyde or an intravenous injection of sodium pentothal or sodium amytal. The appropriate dosage of these drugs invariably induces a state of light hypnotic sleep. During sleep, the subject could then be given suggestions which would produce the characteristic deep hypnotic trance. While in the first drug-induced trance, the patient could be given posthypnotic suggestions to the effect that he would be susceptible to hypnosis thereafter without the use of drugs. Subsequently the subject could be allowed to practice carrying out posthypnotic suggestions. He could then be rehypnotized, still without his conscious cooperation, but this time without the use of drugs.

The report admitted that at the time of its writing there was no certain knowledge of just how successful each of the three methods described might prove to be with individuals "who are on their guard against being victimized by hostile authorities."

"The drug technique," suggested the report, "would probably turn out to be the simplest and most efficient of the three and so it would be the most likely candidate for... hypnotizing defendants against their will."

Another important use of hypnosis for the government the report said, would be the induction of amnesia: "Once a deep hypnotic trance is achieved, it is possible to introduce posthypnotic amnesia so that [a subject] ...would not know... that he had been subjected to hypnosis, to drugs, or to any other treatment."

The report then turned to the problem of producing the deep hypnotic trance essential to post hypnotic amnesia. It stated that, based on research reports of that time, "in about 90 percent of any unselected population it should be possible to produce the deepest (somnambulistic) type of trance. According to numerous authorities, a light trance is sufficient to elicit a 'confession' of actual misbehavior which might otherwise be withheld; but, for carrying out complete posthypnotic amnesia, it is a somnambulistic trance that is required."

The Rand document expressed fear that Soviet investigators had found other techniques which could produce deep hypnosis in perhaps 90 percent or more of all individuals. Anticipating future advances, the report speculated on more efficient ways to develop greater depth in hypnotic trance. It suggested that a subject could be placed in a trance many times each day until a sufficient depth of trance was achieved. It was thought that hypnotizing the subject and then awakening him several times in the same session might speed up the process. This technique of successive and rapid trance induction would, it was hoped make the subject easily susceptible to deep trance in a few days.

To increase speed and depth of hypnosis, special uses of hypnotic drugs were also suggested. "For example, a series of drug-induced trances, as against only one such treatment might serve to develop the majority of cases into somnambules. Moreover, certain unique drug compounds may be especially effective in inducing very deep states of hypnosis." (NLP practicioners have developed ways of reaccessing any drug state, or any state at all for that matter, once it has been achieved. NLP added to that which is described above can exponentially amplify the effects.)

The report then said, "Conceivably, electroshock convulsions might be used as an adjunctive device to achieve somnambulism in a very high percentage of the cases. Many studies have shown that there is a temporary intellectual impairment, diffuse amnesias, and general 'weakening of the ego' produced during the period when a series of electroshock convulsions is being administered.

From my own and others' investigations of the psychological effects of such treatments, I would suspect that they might tend to reduce resistance to hypnotic suggestions. It is conceivable, therefore, that electroshock treatments might be used to weaken difficult cases in order to produce a hypnotic trance of great depth."

In 1958 the Bureau of Social Science Research (BSSR), a subcontractor to the Rand Corporation, issued a "technical report" on hypnosis to the air force that took up where the earlier Rand report had left off. Once again a "think tank' was calling for action in the mind-control race against the Communists.

"To both the lay person and the behavior scientist," the author, Seymour Fisher, wrote in the introduction, "hypnosis has long been regarded as a potentially powerful instrument for controlling human behavior. Undoubtedly, the intelligence divisions of many counties have given serious thought to this potential and have done classified research in various areas of hypnosis... it is conceivable... that these techniques could have been used and covered up so successfully that they might be ***impossible to recognize...*** " [Emphasis added.]

Fisher outlined areas of future research where Americans could advance in the mind-control race. He urged the government to develop test to determine who was and who was not a good hypnotic subject. He urged further research in pharmacology, suggesting that a number of drugs little known at the time might prove to be effective in inducing hypnosis.

He predicted that some drugs would prove useful in reducing the amount of time required to induce complex hypnotic behavior and that others would be useful in reinforcing the lasting effects of hypnotically induced behavior control. He predicted that drugs would be developed which would permit far greater control over autonomic processes. Some drugs, he suggested, would be found to permit control over learning and perception as well. He also predicted that ***new drugs would be discovered which would be capable of inducing deep hypnosis in virtually any individual regardless of his degree of cooperativeness.*** " [Emphasis added.][19]

All of these techniques, involving drug-induced hypnosis and electroshock convulsions, were eventually developed and used to reduce some of our own citizens to a zombie state in which they would blindly serve the government. Regardless of the Constitution and the laws which supposedly protect the individual against government coercion, "zombies" were covertly created to do the government's more unsavory bidding. Such "zombies" asked no questions about the legality of their assignments. Often their assignments were never consciously known. And if they were ever questioned about their own actions, amnesia protected them from self-incrimination.

---

[19] Seymour Fisher, *The Use of Hypnosis in Intelligence and Related Military Situations.*

What had started out a race against the Communists slowly turned into a war against Americans. It was waged by a cryptocracy that had taken over the country once the electorate had been lulled into a hypnotic trance by the techniques it had developed to win the mind-control race against the boogey-men Commies.

In an early hypnosis test circa 1940, the enlisted man with his head back, is in a trance. Holding out his hand at the command of the hypnotist, a match is put to his fingers. While the flesh sizzled, no blisters formed due to the suggestions of the hypnotist.

5

HOLY ACID WARS

In 1951, a former naval officer described "a secret" of certain military and intelligence organizations. He called it "Pain-Drug-Hypnosis" and said it "is a vicious war weapon and may be of considerably more use in conquering a society than the atom bomb. This is no exaggeration. The extensiveness of the use of this form of hypnotism in espionage work is now so widespread that it is long past the time when people should have become alarmed about it... Pain-Drug-Hypnosis is a wicked extension of narcosynthesis, the drug hypnosis used in America only during and since the last war..."[20]

That naval officer was none other than L. Ron Hubbard. Before the war an explorer and prolific science fiction writer he went on to found one of America's fastest growing IFcontroversial religions, Scientology. *(In an exchange of letters, Hubbard told me that he had written a book called* Excaliber *which had been stolen. The information in the book, he said, had all been subsequently published in his many other books.* Excaliber, *was, he intimated, the guts of what would be published as* Dianetics, *a work which takes all the mind control insights Hubbard was exposed to both in his travels in the east and in Naval Intelligence, and applies them to empower the human spirit -- the exact opposite of mind control as it came to be. He was subsequently kidnapped, and of course we know that he, and The Church of Scientology were hounded by the government much as others like Willhelm Reich had been hounded, for spreading the truth about technologies which may have the potential to liberate, rather than enslave. Several years after Hubbard's death, The Church of Scientology was granted, in 1993, official recognition by the Internal Revenue Service. It finally granted them the tax-deductible status which run-of-the-mill religious groups have little trouble obtaining.)*

Hubbard's statement on "Pain-Drug-Hypnosis" was the tip of a vast iceberg of mind-control research using drugs as an aid to hypnotic induction. In the 1950s, under air force (and ultimately CIA) guidance, a series of papers were written defining the limits to which a government (ours or an enemy's) could go "to make persons behave against their will." In the introduction to one of these, the authors stated that the purpose of their study was "to review available scientific knowledge on the use of pharmacologic agents to influence the communication of information which, for one reason or another, an informant does not wish to reveal."

---

[20] L. Ron Hubbard, *The Science of Survival* (Church of Scientology, L.A. Cal., 1951)

They went on to say that, contrary to the alleged necessity for conducting such drug experiments, "no published reports have come to attention... detailing the scientific application of drugs by intelligence agencies of any nation as a means of obtaining information. The methods of Russian interrogation and indoctrination are derived from age-old police methods that have been systematized, and are not dependent on drugs, hypnotism, or any other special procedure designed by scientists."

The report, expressing concern over "proper" drug experimentation, urged that control placebos be administered "silently" so that no one would know who was getting what or when. Also discussed were the effects of drugs on different individuals in various settings, the relation between dosage levels, the effect of food, drink, and other physiological needs, and the effects of individual variables, such as sex, intelligence, medical and psychiatric status, life situation, and so forth, upon drug reactions.

The top priority for testing in mind control were those drugs which were found to induce hypnosis. The administration and effects of barbiturates, amobarbital, seco- barbital, pentothal, and sodium amytal were studied. Nonbarbiturate sedatives and calmatives such as etho-chlorvynol, glutethimide, methyprylon, methylparafynol, captodramin, and oxanimide were also tested. A whole range of amphetamines and their derivatives were discussed as good tools to "produce a 'rush'-- an outpouring of ideas, emotions, memories, and so forth." New drugs such as ritalin, marsilid, and mescaline were thought to hold great promise for mind-control applications. Perhaps the most promising of this last group was a "consciousness-expanding" drug called LSD-25.[21]

Four months after the first nuclear reaction was created in a pile of uranium ore in Chicago, the psychotropic effects of LSD-25 were discovered by a thirty-seven-year-old Swiss chemist working at the Sandoz research laboratory in Basel, Switzerland. On April 16, 1943, Dr. Albert Hofmann accidentally absorbed a minute quantity of the rye fungus byproduct with which he was experimenting. He later filed a report which described history's first LSD "trip."

"I was forced to stop my work in the laboratory in the middle of the afternoon and to go home, as I was seized by a peculiar restlessness associated with a sensation of mild dizziness... a kind of drunkenness which was not unpleasant and which was characterized by extreme activity of imagination... there surged upon me an uninterrupted stream of fantastic images of extraordinary plasticity and vividness and accompanied by an intense kaleidoscope-like play of colors..."[22]

Sandoz Laboratories had actually been manufacturing LSD since 1938, when it was first used in an experiment with monkeys. Their scientists observed then that the substance caused a marked excitation of the animals, but these results did not motivate scientists to follow up with further research. Work with LSD fell into abeyance until the spring of 1943 when Hofmann prepared a new batch for the storeroom, and accidentally ingested some himself.

---

[21] louis Gottschalk, *The Use of Drugs in Information-Seeking Interviews.*

[22] Albert Hoffman, *High times*, July, 1976.

Dr. Hofmann described that LSD experience: "...I did not know what was going to happen, if I'd ever come back. I thought I was dying or going crazy... My first... experiment with LSD was a 'bum trip' as one would say nowadays."

Dr. Hofmann's new discovery was investigated by the European psychiatrists as a possible key to the chemical nature of mental illness. In 1950 LSD was introduced to American Psychiatrists, and interest spread rapidly in the scientific community here.

In 1953, the CIA made plans to purchase ten kilograms of LSD for use in "drug experiments with animals and human beings." Since there are more than 10,000 doses in a gram, that meant the CIA wanted 100 million doses. The CIA obviously intended to "corner the market" on LSD so that other countries would not be ahead of the U.S. in their potential for "LSD warfare." (Later the cryptocrats were to say that they'd merely gotten milligrams and micrograms confused.)

That year Sandoz Laboratories Filled many orders for LSD from the CIA and the Department of Defense. According to Hofmann, they continued to do so up until the mid-sixties. The army would visit the labs every two years or so, to see if any technological progress had been made towards the manufacture of LSD in large quantities. Dr. Hofmann said that he had never been told the reason for the army's interest in the drug, but he assumed, from the large quantities being discussed, that it was to be used for weapons research.

As an employee of the pharmaceutical house, Dr. Hofmann was in no position to warn the army researchers away from the drug despite his belief that it would be extremely dangerous if used improperly and despite his personal distaste for their work.

"I had perfected LSD for medical use, not as a weapon," he said. "It can make you insane or even kill you if it is not properly used under medical supervision. In any case, the research should be done by medical people and not by soldiers or intelligence agencies."

In 1963 Hofmann received a letter from a scholar at Harvard requesting twenty-five kilograms of psilocybin for research purposes. Psilocybin was a psychedelic substance similar in effect to LSD but more subtle and much less powerful. Before the sales department at Sandoz would act on this order for "the extraordinarily large quantity of psychedelic compounds," they asked the scholar to provide them with the necessary import license from U.S. health authorities. He failed to provide it. Later Hofmann Commented on "the unrealistic manner with which he handled this transaction [which] left the impression of a person unconcerned with the regulations of society."[23] The scholar's name was Timothy Leary.

Leary came to the CIA's attention through a drinking buddy at Berkeley named Frank Barron. Barron had guided Leary through the creation of his first book, a supposed landmark in 1956 psychology circles entitled: *Interpersonal Diagnosis of Personality*. Barron introduced Leary to CIA officials and set him up for his role in the "Psychedelic Sixties."

Shortly after Leary entered the circle of the cryptocracy his wife died and he was left with two children to raise. Miraculously he was offered a well-paying job on the faculty of Harvard University. His boss was former OSS official, David McClelland, the editor of the secret service's important work *Assessment of Men,* a book which outlined the framework by which individuals were selected for espionage work during W. W. II.

At Cambridge, Leary launched himself into his work which was funded by Harvard, which in turn was funded by NIMH, which in turn was funded secretly by the CIA's MKultra program. Leary began experimenting with LSD on prisoners in the Concord Correctional Facility in Concord, Massachusetts. On the books, this research was funded by the Uris Brothers foundation in New York City, under the auspices of Harvard. What Leary learned from the Concord prisoners was published in 1962 in his paper entitled *How to Change Behavior*. In it, Leary explained what a powerful tool LSD was for changing ways of thinking and living.

By 1960 Leary had become fascinated by the effects of LSD upon creativity, so he went to Greenwich Village in New York City. There he began to recruit artists as LSD guinea pigs. He claims to have "guided trips" for about 3,000 volunteers among them Allen Ginsberg, Charles Olson, Jack Kerouac, Robert Lowell, Charles Mingus, Miles Davis, John Lennon, Jim Morrison, Aldous Huxley, Arthur Koestler, Alan Watts as well as "swamis, gurus, mystics, psychics by the troop." It was poet Allen Ginsberg who, after experiencing the mystical effects of LSD himself, persuaded the up-tight Dr. Leary to try it. That marks the time when a very different Leary began to emerge.

While Leary had received NIMH grants at the University of California at Berkeley from 1953-56, and while working for the U.S. Public Health Service from 1954-58, at first he denied that any of his psychedelic research projects at Harvard were funded by the government. Yet when I finally sat with him face-to-face after *Operation Mind Control* had been published (1979), and naively asked him if he was "witting" or "unwitting" of his collaboration with the CIA, Leary answered with: "Who would you work for, the Yankees or the Dodgers? I mean, who was I supposed to work for, the KGB?"

---

[23] *Ibid.*

Previous to my interview with Leary I had queried National Institute of Mental Health Director Bertram Brown. Brown said that, although such research at Harvard University was funded by HEW and NIMH grants from the period of 1956-63, "records available for projects supported during that period generally do not go below the major institution level; e.g., awards are identified as being made to Harvard University, but not to departments or centers within that institution..." Here we encounter another example of the government's built-in deniability.

Harvard claimed that its records on Leary's research could not be located.

Leary told ABC Newshack Paul Altmeyer:" The CIA funded and suported and encouraged hundreds of young psychiatrists to experiment with this drug (LSD). The fallout from that was that young psychologists (like himself) began taking it themselves and discovering it was an intelligence enhancing, consciousness raising experience...[24]

"I give the CIA total credit for sponsoring and initiating the entire consciousness movement, counter culture events of the 1960s," Leary said.

The CIA's former chief psychologist, John Gittinger obviously was asked by Altmeyer if the CIA did indeed provide Leary with the LSD which fueled the "Psychedelic Sixties." Gittinger replied on camera:" The countercase that I would make in relationship to that is that, remember the people who were doing the ***research*** were people who would be doing the ***research*** regardless of who was the sponsor; that it was not the CIA who asked these people to work on these. These people were working on it and ***the CIA helped them (emphasis added)*** to do that particular work."

In the spring of 1962 Leary was approached by Mary Pinchot Meyer, wife of CIA executive Cord Meyer. Leary says he looked up from his deck to see a good-looking woman leaning against the door post with her hip tilted provocatively, studying him with a bold stare. "She appeared to be in her late thirties," he said, "...Flamboyant eyebrows, piercing green-blue eyes, fine-boned face. Amused, arrogant, aristocratic.

"'Dr. Leary," she said coolly, "I've got to talk to you.'"

She introduced herself to Leary as Mary Pinchot and told him, "I've come from Washington to discuss something very important. I want to learn how to run an LSD session.

"...I have this friend who's a very important man. He's impressed by what I've told him about my own LSD experiences and what other people have told him. He wants to try it himself. So I'm here to learn how to do it. I mean, I don't want to goof up or something."

---

[24] Timothy Leary, *Mission Mind Control*, ABC-TV News Documentary, Paul Altmeyer, Producer, 1979.

Leary invited her to bring her friend to Massachusetts for a couple of days and he'd run a session with them. But Mary refused the idea, saying her friend was such a well-known public figure that'd be impossible.

"People involved in power usually don't make the best subjects," Leary told her.

"Don't you think that if a powerful person were to turn on with his wife or girlfriend it would be good for the world?" Mary asked.

"Nothing that involves brain-change is certain," Leary said. "But in general we believe that for anyone who's reasonably healthy and happy, the intelligent thing to do is to take advantage of the multiple realities available to the human brain..."

Later, while Leary and Mary were sharing a glass of wine, according to Leary, Mary said: "You poor innocent thing. You have no idea what you've gotten into. You don't really understand what's happening in Washington with drugs, do you?"

Leary admits he said he'd heard rumors about the military.

"It's time you learned more," Mary said. "The guys who run things -- I mean the guys who ***really*** run things in Washington -- are very interested in psychology, and drugs in particular. These people play hardball, Timothy. They want to use drugs for warfare, for espionage, for brainwashing, for control."

"Yes," Leary writes in 1983, describing what he knew in 1962 or before, "We've heard about that."

"...Teach us how to run sessions, use drugs to do good," Mary said.

Leary said he felt uneasy, like "that hit you get from people who live in the hard political world." There was something calculating about Mary.

Still, apparently Leary did turn her on and a couple of days later he put her on the plane back to Washington. Six months passed before he saw her again. With no warning she called him to a clandestine meeting in Room 171 at the Ritz Hotel in Boston.

"...Everything is going beautifully," Leary reports she said. "On all fronts in fact. I can't give details, of course, but *top* people in Washington are turning on. You'd be amazed at the sophistication of some of our leaders. And their wives. We're getting a little group together, people who are interested in learning how to turn on."

Leary repeated his doubts about getting high with "power-oriented" people, but Mary protested, saying that there were a lot of very smart people in Washington those days, but agreeing that power was important to them. "And these drugs do give a certain power. That's what it's all about. Freeing the mind. "...Until very recently control of American consciousness was a simple matter for the guys in charge. The schools instilled docility. The radio and TV networks poured out conformity..." Leary reports Mary saying.

According to Leary, Mary told him that drugs were of the most vital interest to the power elite in Washington. She said that a few years before "they" (she was obviously talking about her husband's employers) had become "absolutely obsessed with the notion that the Soviets and the Chinese were persuading our POWs in Korea to defect by brainwashing them with LSD and mescaline..." (There is yet no evidence that this was true.)

"That's certainly possible, "Leary quotes Leary saying. "With what we've discovered about set and setting, we know that almost anyone's mind can be changed in any direction."

"Any direction?" he says, Mary asked.

"With a minimum of information about the subject's personal life and two or three LSD sessions, you could get the most conventional person to do outrageous things."

"Suppose the person wanted to be brainwashed in a certain direction... wanted to change himself?"

"Easier yet," Leary quotes himself saying. "Our research is conclusive on this. Changing your mind, developing a new reality-fix, is a simple and straightforward proposition. Of course, altering your mind is one thing. Changing the outside world to conform to your new vision remains the difficult problem for us..." Leary says he struggled with the word. "Utopiates."

Mary was delighted. "I told you the first time we met. I want to learn how to *brainwash*."

After talking with Leary about making it a better world, she again asked Leary to teach her how to "brainwash". He said that didn't sound very ladylike and she burst into laughter saying: " If I can teach the use of utopiates to the wives and mistresses of important people in our government, then we can... well shit, Timothy, don't you see what we can do?"

"What?" Leary says he said.

"We can do on a bigger scale what you are already doing with your students -- use these drugs to free people. For peace, not war. We can turn on the Cabinet. Turn on the Senate. The Supreme Court. Do I have to explain further?"

One wonders, who, besides Abbie Hoffman, would have the courage to say something like that in public? The cryptocracy took Hoffman seriously when he threatened to dose New York City's water supply.

Leary says his response was to feel scared. "But come to think of it, it was close to what we Harvardites in our session rooms, lazily architecturing hopeful futures, had spelled out as the goal of psychedlic research.

So Leary told her," What do you want from me? The drugs?"

"Just a little bit to get started. With our connections we'll be able to get all the supplies we want. And all you need too. Mainly I want advice about how to handle sessions. And how to handle any problems that come up," Leary reports Mary saying.

Leary describes giving her a "cram course" on psychedelic sessions, then he drove her to the airport to catch a plane back to D.C.

Tim Leary and Richard Alpert were fired from Harvard in 1963, ostensibly for giving LSD to an undergraduate, but basically because they were giving it indiscriminately to just about anyone who asked, and the news got out. A controversy over the nature of their research exploded into headlines, so Leary and Co. retreated to Mexico, where they attempted to carry on LSD experiments outside the purview of the press, or do-gooders in local government. In June of 1963 they ran afoul of even the notoriously corrupt Mexican government and were expelled from that country for "engaging in activities not permitted to a tourist."

From Mexico they moved to a huge estate outside of Millbrook, New York, which was owned by Margaret Mellon Hitchcock and her sons, Tommy and Billy. (It may have been mere coincidence that the father of Tommy and Billy, Tommy Hitchcock Sr., an Air Ace of W.W.I who lost his life in 1943 over England, was connected to the highest levels of U.S Intelligence. And there are more suspicious circumstances which might be explored at another time which could indicate that the Hitchcocks were very tight with elements of the cryptocracy.) With Hitchcock support, Leary, Metzner, Alpert and company established the *International Federation for Internal Freedom* (later to be called the *Castalia Foundation*). These organizations served as a platform for Leary to propagandize for LSD which, he now claimed, could save the world from nuclear perdition by "blowing the mind."

In late November, 1963, just after Leary had returned from Mexico, a phone call came from Mary Pinchot. With urgency in her voice, she insisted on seeing him.

"Oh, you reckless Irishman," She said," You got yourself in trouble again. It's magnificent, these headlong cavalry charges of yours. *Mais ce n'est pas la guerre.*"

"What'd I do wrong?" Leary says he said.

"Publicity. I told you they'd let you do anything you want as long as you kept it quiet. The plan to set up psychedelic training centers around the country was ingenious from all sides. They would have infiltrated every chapter to get some of their people trained. But they're not going to let CBS film you drugging people on a lovely Mexican beach. You could destroy both capitalism and socialism in one month with that sort of thing," Leary says Mary said.

Leary says he was struck by the brittleness Mary had picked up from (and here Leary knows of what he speaks, turning admirable phrases in the process): "those stern-eyed business-suited WASPs who shuttle from home to office in limousines -- the information brokers, editors, board members, executive branch officials -- youngish men with oldish eyes (faces you used to see around Harvard Square or in the Yale quad), initiated early into the Calvinist conspiracy, sworn to the forever reliable, working for Wild Bill Donovan in Zurich, for Allen Dulles in Washington, for Henry Luce as bureau chiefs and then shuffling from *Newsweek* to the *Post,* manipulators of secret documents, facts, rumors, estimates, arms inventories, stock margins, voting blocs, industrial secrets, gossip about the sexual and drug preferences of every member of Congress, trained to grab and maintain what they can, all loyal to the Protestant belief that the Planet Earth sucks."

Mary was scared. She burst into tears. "You must be very careful now. Don't make any waves. No publicity. I'm afraid for you. I'm afraid for all of us."

Leary tried to calm her, inviting her back to the big house on the estate in Millbrook.

"I know what you're thinking. But this is not paranoia. I've gotten mixed up in some dangerous matters. It's real. You've got to believe me." Leary says she glared at him. "Do you?"

The next call from Mary came the day after the assassination of Jack Kennedy. "I had really been expecting it," Leary says.

He could hardly understand her. He said she thought she was either drugged or "stunned with grief."

Leary says, Mary Pinchot Meyer said, "They couldn't control him any more. He was changing too fast. He was learning too much... They'll cover everything up. I gotta come see you. I'm scared. I'm afraid. Be careful."

That was the last time Leary heard from Mary. He kept waiting for her to call again but she never did. He didn't know what happened to her until he saw an article in *The New York Times:*

Woman Painter Shot and Killed on Canal Towpath in Capital

Mrs. Mary Pinchot Meyer was a Friend of Mrs. Kennedy; Suspect is Arraigned

Mary had been shot twice in the left temple and once in the chest at 12:45 in the afternoon of October 13, 1964. Dressed in a sweatsuit she had been walking alone, along the Old Chesapeake and Ohio Canal towpath in Georgetown. A friend told reporters that she sometimes walked there with her close friend Jacqueline Kennedy.

Mary's brother-in-law was the Washington bureau chief of *Newsweek,* Benjamin C. Bradlee. It was he who identified her body. The article described Bradlee as having been an intimate of the late President Kennedy. The Times article also mentioned Mary's ex-husband, Cord Meyer, Jr., identifying him as a former leader of the American Veterans Committee and the World Federalists, "now a government employee". The CIA, of course was not mentioned.

Police said that the motive was apparently robbery or assault. Her purse was found in her home. The suspect, a black male, was held without bail.

Distraught, over the news of Mary's death, Leary asked his well-connected friend, Van Wolfe, to see what he could find out. Wolfe had been movie mogul Mike Todd's partner in business and his attractive young wife was a Rothchild. Over the years Wolfe had developed an incredible network of friends in high places.

"...Police intelligence knew all about the Mary Pinchot Meyer case," Wolfe said. "Apparently a lot of people are convinced it was an assassination. Two slugs in the brain and one in the body. That's not the M.O. of a rapist. And a mugger isn't going to shoot a woman with no purse in her hand."

Leary says that he didn't find out what happened until he read an article in the *San Francisco Chronicle* some time later. Leary paraphrases it:

"James Truitt, the source for this sensational story, was identified as a former assistant to Philip Graham, publisher of *The Washington Post.* In interviews with *The National Enquirer, Associated Press* and *The Washington Post,* Truitt revealed that a woman named Mary Pinchot Meyer had conducted a two-year love affair with President John Kennedy and had smoked marijuana with him in a White House Bedroom. A confidant of Mary Meyer, Truitt told a *Post* correspondent that she and Kennedy met about 30 times between January 1962 and November 1963, when Kennedy was assassinated. Mary Meyer told Truitt that JFK had remarked, "This isn't like cocaine, I'll get you some of that." Truitt claimed that Mary Meyer kept a diary of her affair with the president, which was found after her death by her sister Toni Bradlee and turned over to James Angleton, chief of CIA counter-intelligence who took the diary to CIA headquarters and destroyed it. According to the Post another source confirmed that Mary Meyer's diary was destroyed. This source said the diary... contained a few hundred words of vague reference to an un-named friend.

"Mary Meyer's sister was quoted by the Associated Press as saying, "I knew nothing about it when Mary was alive.

"The article," Leary says," also revealed that the former husband of Mary Pinchot Meyer was Cord Meyer, Jr., one of the most influential officials in the CIA -- the only agent who had been awarded the Distinguished Intelligence Medal three times."

Leary frequently smoked marijuana and took LSD himself. His speeches, which were (and still are) addressed to overflow audiences, were tailor-made for true believers in the new drug cult. Leary issued many public statements on the benefits of LSD to the individual and society. Always pretending to be politically naive, he predicted that there would come a day when "a new profession of psychedelic guides will inevitably develop to supervise these experiences."

Finally, in the mid-sixties, Leary coined his famous slogan, "Turn on, tune in, drop out," and spoke at college lectures to the legions of young people who had illegally experimented with LSD and other psychedelic substances. Through magazine interviews, television appearances, movies, records, and books, Leary projected himself as the culture hero of a new generation which was fighting for an individual's right to alter his own consciousness -- a right, Leary then maintained, which was guaranteed by the Constitution of the United States.

A declassified CIA memo dated November 1, 1963 features Dr. Leary, Dr. Richard Alpert and their organization which advocated the expansion of consciousness through psychedelic chemicals, the International Federation for Internal Freedom (IFIF). In alarming tones the memo ordered all CIA groups involved in mind control operations to report if any agency personnel were involved with either Leary or Alpert or IFIF. The responses to this in-house memo have not yet been released by the CIA.

By 1968, society seemed to become divided into those who had taken psychedelic drugs and those who hadn't. Eventually LSD, marijuana, and cocaine were available on street corners and schoolyards throughout the land. The cryptocracy *had* covertly supported Leary and associates, and the snowballing effects of their LSD propaganda now caused an apparent reversal of policy, Was it that LSD and the other psychoactive drugs were politically dangerous in that they suspended the conditioning of people, if only temporarily, long enough to see the lies they were being fed? Was it that they suspended the conditioning long enough for people to see through the indoctrination of the government, span the credibility gap, and the government propaganda for the Vietnam War? The "acid heads" began to act with visionary fervor. They started to actively criticize the war in Vietnam and call for many social reforms. The "psychedelic revolution" embarrassed the government at every turn.

But if the government didn't deliberately create the "psychedelic revolution," it certainly was responsible for shutting it down. It did this by controlling the availability and quality of drugs. The very underground LSD labs which the CIA had helped set up were raided. Then it wasn't long before the quality of LSD degenerated and the supply dried up. Several studies have shown that when LSD became illegal (October 6, 1966) *pure* LSD became scarce and the habits of the drug culture changed.

Domestic counter-intelligence agencies began to manipulate the press, trying to overcome all the favorable publicity psychedelics had received. A *Science* article run in 1967 which claimed that LSD caused damage to chromosomes proved to be untrue. The article was picked up and carried by *The Journal of the American Medical Association,* which warned of LSD-induced "malformations, fetal loss and mental retardation." This article was widely quoted, even in the sub-culture press. In 1971 Science ran a survey of all the available literature, and concluded that LSD did not cause genetic damage.

In 1969 Diane Linkletter jumped from a window to her death. Her father, talk-show host Art Linkletter, blamed her death on the effects of LSD. "It was murder," he said. "She was murdered by the people who manufacture and sell LSD. LSD can kill!" Linkletter got a lot of press and a private audience with President Nixon. In 1982, Linkletter told author Jeremy Alderson that there was never any proof that LSD was involved with his daughter's death.

Rumors in the underground press had it that LSD caused "flashbacks". Psychedelic sojourners of the Sixties are still waiting for those flashbacks to happen. *The Journal of Psychoative Drugs* did a survey which showed no more "flashbacks" from those that had taken LSD than from thoses who practiced yoga or other forms of meditation.

But, simultaneous with the negative press about LSD, the supply began to dry up, and large supplies of heroin mysteriously became available. It was strong heroin, imported from the Golden Triangle in Southeast Asia (largely under CIA control). Many young people who had their "consciousness expanded" too far to distinguish between one drug and another turned to heroin. The government-inspired hysteria over drugs led many to think, "Well, they lied to us about pot, they must be lying about heroin." And so when psychedelics were no longer easily obtained, and heroin was, many young people became addicts.

The political visions of the psychedelic generation faded, as many who had "turned on" dropped out of city life and fled to the country. Those who stayed in the cities followed Leary's advice and dropped out from participation in the main stream of the society. Many of them followed an alternate route in the American tradition by living as pushers and bootleggers, making large sums of money from the newly created demand for illegal drugs.

In 1958, Dr. Louis Gottschalk, the CIA's "independent contractor," had prepared a think tank report which suggested that the intelligence agencies might control people through addiction.

Presaging the cunning behind the unwinnable "War on Drugs," Gottshalk's report put it this way: "The addiction of a source to a drug which the interrogator could supply, obviously would foster the dependence of the source on the interrogator. Where the source was addicted previous to the situation, the interrogator might find, already established, a pattern of evasion of laws and responsibilities which the addict had developed to meet his need for the drug in a society which proscribes its use."

The report went so far as to recommend that wounded GIs who had become addicted to pain-killing drugs be recruited from hospitals. It stated: "Where the source had become addicted in the setting as a sequel to the treatment of injuries, the ability of the interrogator to give or withhold the drug would give him a powerful weapon against the source..."[25]

In the late sixties, when it became known that thousands of GIs serving in Vietnam had become addicted to Laotian heroin, the U.S. Bureau of Narcotics tried sending a team of agents to Laos, but its investigations were blocked by the Laotian government, the State Department, and the CIA. While the Laotian government's hostility toward the bureau is understandable, the reticence shown by the American government and the CIA requires some explanation. According to U.S. narcotics agents serving in Southeast Asia, "the Bureau encountered a good deal of resistance from the CIA and the Embassy when it first decided to open an office in Vietnam..." Did this policy bear some relation to Gottschalk's think-tank statement, made some thirty years earlier -- to create an army of drug dependent people who could be controlled by their suppliers -- in this case the CIA?

The CIA also contributed indirectly to the heroin traffic by training men who then turned to smuggling. In the 1974 Pulitzer Prize-winning study of the heroin trade by the staff and editors of *Newsday*, it was revealed the U.S. Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs (BNDD) agents in Miami cross-checked a list of men who landed at the Bay of Pigs against police records. They found that at least 8 percent of the 1,500-man CIA-trained force had subsequently been investigated or arrested for drug dealing.

---

[25] Gottschalk, *op.cit.*

"If it hadn't been for their CIA training," one BNDD agent was quoted as saying, "some of these might never have gone into the [smuggling] business." He added that their training in paramilitary operations, weapons use, and smuggling of equipment and men from one place to another is well suited for illegal drug importing.

The head of the Office of Strategic Intelligence at BNDD, John Warner, said, "The key to heroin trafficking is the principle of compartmentability. It's the same way the CIA operates. Most people don't know what the whole project involves; most just know their particular job."[26]

Former CIA agent, Victor Marchetti was reported as stating "The CIA is implicated in the drug traffic in several countries. The Mafia, thanks to the CIA, has a free hand in the vast opium traffic from Turkey through Italy to the United States."[27]

On July19, 1975, Sen. Charles H. Percy, (R., Ill.) released a letter charging that the CIA had the Justice Department drop a drug case to protect its own involvement in drugs. Percy's letter said that the CIA refused to give federal prosecutors evidence in a case against Puttaporn Khramkhruan, a CIA employee, and one other person. Percy complained that "apparently CIA agents are untouchable -- however serious their crime or however much harm is done to society."

The senator's letter said he had written the Justice Department to find out why charges were dropped against the two men, who were allegedly attempting to smuggle fifty-nine pounds of opium into the United States from Thailand. The reply he received, from Deputy Assistant Attorney General John C. Kenney, stated that CIA Associate General Counsel John Greany had "insisted that there were other considerations at stake and that the material sought by the prosecutors would not be turned over." Kenney said Greany had explained that if Khramkhruan and his associate went on trial, "the situation could prove embarrassing because of Mr. Khramkhruan's involvement with CIA activities in Thailand, Burma, and elsewhere."

The CIA knew that heroin causes no "consciousness expansion." It brings on a physical feeling, a warm, glowing "high," and then dullness and insulation. But the government was interested in behavior control, and heroin, like LSD, was an important tool in gaining such control.

While some clandestine agencies of government were busy distributing drugs to pleasure-seeking underground America, in the laboratories they were studying drugs for their capacities to provide access to the mind for purposes of behavior control. Seeking the perfect "incapacitating agent," army chemists at Edgewood Arsenal came up with a drug known as "BZ" whose effects were ten times more powerful than LSD. Described as a hallucinogenic "superdrug," BZ was said to be so powerful that a person who took it often experienced amnesia for long periods of time afterwards.

---

[26] Alfred W. McCoy, Cathleen B. Reed, and Leonard P. Adams, *The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia* (New York, Harper, 1973)

[27] Victor Marchetti, Freedom News Service, August, 1976.

To test its effects BZ was given to 2,490 "volunteers." Gen. Lloyd Fellenz, former commander of the Edgewood facility, said that the purpose of the BZ experiment was to produce an incapacitating gas (sprayed from the sky as in the film ***Jacob's Ladder***) or drug which could be placed in an enemy's water supply.

Dr. Solomon Snyder, professor of psychiatry and pharmacology at Johns Hopkins University Medical School, had formerly worked at Edgewood. "The army's testing of LSD was just a sideshow compared to its use of BZ," Dr. Snyder said. "Nobody can tell you for sure it won't cause a long-lasting effect. With an initial effect of eighty hours, compared to eight hours for LSD, you would have to worry more about its long-lasting or recurrent effects."[28]

Dr. George Aghajanian, who had also worked at Edgewood, confirmed Snyder's opinion. "With LSD," Aghajanian explained, "you tend to dwell on the experience and recall it and that can lead to flashbacks. But with BZ ***an amnesia occurs afterwards that blocks the experience out.***" [Emphasis added.][29]

Predicting the course of future events, Gottschalk's report stated: "the volume of effort devoted to studying the behavioral effects of drugs has expanded tremendously in recent years and will probably continue to grow. In part, this may be attributed to the ready financial support such activities have achieved. The interest of scientists in employing drugs in research, however, transcends an interest in drug effects, per se. Drugs constitute valuable tools for experimentation directed toward developing basic physiological and psychological knowledge. Work by scientists in several such areas, in particular, will increase knowledge of drugs which may be exploitable by interrogators."

Gottschalk's conclusion was that "drugs can operate as positive catalysts to productive interrogation. Combined with the many other stresses in captivity that an individual may be obliged to undergo, drugs can add to the factors aimed at weakening the resistance of the potential informant... But for many reasons, the use of drugs by an interrogator is not sure to produce valid results. The effects of drugs depend to a large extent on the personality makeup and physical status of the informant and the kind of rapport that the interrogator is able to establish with the informant. Knowing the predominating pharmacologic actions of a number of psychoactive drugs, an interrogating team might choose that chemical agent which is most likely to be effective in view of the informant's personality, physical status and the various stressful experiences he has already undergone..."[30]

---

[28] Solomon Snyder, Zodiac News Service, July 29, 1975

[29] *Washington Post*, July 25, 1975.

This study and subsequent ones verified the fact that a number of drugs could conveniently be used to take over the human mind against the will of the individual. Through the use of drugs, the skilled mind controller could first induce a hypnotic trance. Then, one of several behavior modification techniques could be employed with amplified success. In themselves, without directed suggestions, drugs affect the mind in random ways. But when drugs are combined with classical conditioning and the language of hypnosis, an individual can be molded and manipulated beyond his own recognition.

The government's interest in controlling minds and motivating involuntary behavior was focused not only on individuals but also on large groups. Mass hypnosis and "crowd psychology" were well-known phenomena, and to that end propaganda techniques had already been developed. But mass "narcosis" was a new concept out of which grew the idea of "nonkill" warfare, where vast populations could simultaneously, or in one action, be drugged into submission.

In 1961, in an appearance before the Subcommittee on Science and Astronautics of the House of Representatives, Maj. Gen. Marshall Stubbs, head of the Army Chemical Corps, gave a speech cautioning that "we have not gone far enough in our research on these incapacitating compounds to be confident that they have real potential in warfare. We do not want to exaggerate claims for them to create the impression that we are on the verge of bloodless war."

General Stubbs admitted, "We are attempting to completely separate the incapacitating agents from the lethal agents so that any castigation normally given to toxic agents will not be associated with them, since they do not maim or kill. As a result we hope to have a weapon which will give the commander much freer rein in its use as compared to the toxic agents. It is my hope that through the use of incapacitating agents, the free world will have a relatively clear and rapid means of both fighting and deterring limited war, which has come to the forefront in the international political scene in the last several years. It is one means by which we can maintain some degree of equality in the face of overwhelming manpower superiority of the Communist-dominated nations."

One idea consistently expressed in the utterances of government employees was the idea that "we must beat the Commies to the punch." To that end the army launched a crash program investigating nerve gases, riot control gases, defoliants, herbicides, and biological agents such as anthrax, Rocky Mountain spotted fever, and bubonic plague. It also developed what it called "harassing agents" -- chemicals that cause headaches, vomiting, and severe pain.

---

[30] Gottshalk, *op cit.*

The idea was that one saboteur would be able to carry enough in his pocket to temporarily incapacitate the population of a city the size of New York. A two-suiter piece of luggage could hold enough drugs to disable every man, woman, and child in America. Most of the drugs the government experimented with were odorless, colorless, and tasteless and therefore undetectable. They were easily soluble in water, and only slowly would they lose their potency in chlorinated water supplies. Food which came in contact with these chemicals remained contaminated for days unless thoroughly washed. The inhalation of particles of these drugs suspended in the air produced the same effects as ingestion. Dissolved, they could penetrate the skin and enter the bloodstream without having been ingested.

The army assumed that a city exposed to such chemical attack would cease to function, the inhabitants so confused by the "trip" that the army could march into the city and take over, facing only minimal resistance. And the next day, the populace would return to normal consciousness and be fit to work for the occupying army.

To test their assumption, the army gave a squad of soldiers LSD in coffee without their knowledge. After the drug effects began the soldiers were ordered by their sergeant to perform normal and routine tasks while they were being filmed by a hidden camera. They could not follow even the simplest command nor accomplish the most ordinary task with an acceptable degree of competency. Two of the men simply giggled helplessly throughout the entire afternoon. As the platoon sergeant was not a coffee drinker, he did not receive the drug. Neither had he been told about the test. Accordingly he grew more and more frustrated and perplexed as his men acted more and more erratically.

Further studies indicated, however, that in actual warfare things would not be that easy. Urban populations spend relatively little time out of doors. Since most of these drugs settled out of the atmosphere quickly and did not pass through air-conditioning systems, they would therefore not affect everyone. If the water supply were lightly laced with a psychedelic, an individual would have to drink a pint of tap water before being affected. The concentration could be made heavier, enough so that one would only have to brush his teeth or wash his face before getting "high," but with concentrations that large, even an infant's formula or a cup of tea would be a dangerous poison.

Further, those exposed to minute amounts of these "incapacitating agents" might be able to fight off the symptoms. Those heavily dosed would suffer enormous mental distortions and could become wildly irrational. Mildly intoxicated persons might go about as if in a normal state, unaware that their judgment and motor skills were impaired. The resulting number of accidents would be monumental.

The army pretended to shelve its plans for "nonkill" warfare. But the major obstacle, as they saw it, was only the drugs. It was not that they might kill the enemy, but that as *of yet the army was unable to immunize its own troops against drug effects. Not until 1975 was a reliable LSD antidote developed.*

Timothy Leary's mysterious girlfiend Mary Pinchot Meyer, (far right) former wife of top CIA man Cord Meyer along with her sister, Tony Bradlee (far left) and President John F. Kennedy. Backrow: Leary as he's arrested at JFK International Airport returning from Algeria. Foreground: Leary in more recent times, pensive, enjoying his only addiction. (Montage of photos from the John F. Kennedy Library and Steamshovel Press.)

6

THE GUINEA PIG ARMY

In June, 1975, it was revealed publicly for the first time what many had suspected -- that the CIA and a number of government agencies under its direction had actually been giving behavior-influencing drugs to citizens within the United States for more than twenty years.

I was in Washington at the time, searching the catalogue card files at the National Technical Information Service. A previous search by friends in military intelligence of the M.I. Classified Index had revealed nothing but peripheral references to the object of my study: government research in drugs, hypnosis, behavior modification, and related subjects.

The NTIS file is supposed to contain a complete numerical listing of all government contracts, by contract number, whether or not they are classified. The contract cards were indeed numbered in consecutive order, but the ones I was looking for were missing; the index simply skipped over them and continued on in numerical sequence. Other cards in the index were marked "classified," and I would not have been able to obtain the papers to which they referred. But the reports I was looking for were not even cited in the index, although references to them in scientific journals indicated that they had once existed. Classified or not, these documents had been removed from the record.

That afternoon press accounts of the *Rockefeller Report to the President on CIA Activities* said, "Beginning in the Late 1940s, the CIA began to study the properties of certain behavior-influencing drugs (such as LSD) and how such drugs might be put to use in intelligence activities."

Further, according to the report, "The primary purpose of the drug program was to counter the use of behavior-influencing drugs clandestinely administered by an enemy, although several operational uses outside the United States were also considered."

The Drug program," the report went on to say, "was part of a much larger CIA program to study possible means for controlling human behavior. Other studies explored the effects of radiation, electric shock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, and harassment substances."

As it would do two years later, the press played up the drug angle and ignored the other experiments. The CIA had been actually experimenting with all kinds of mind-control techniques for twenty-odd years.

It gave me little comfort, but it reaffirmed my sanity, to read in the report that "unfortunately only limited records of these drug programs are now available. All the records concerning the program were ordered destroyed in 1973, including a total of 152 separate files."

As I left NTIS, George Orwell's prophecy in *1984* came to mind: "Who controls the past controls the future. Who controls the present controls the past." How long would it be before our society would perfectly mirror that state Orwell envisioned when he said; "All that was needed was an unending series of victories over your own memory. 'Reality control,' they called it... 'double-think.'"

In Orwell's book *1984*, the government continually changed its past by creating new historical fictions to justify its present. In 1975 I was wondering if we hadn't already gone beyond 1984, where, as Orwell said, "truth is falsehood," and "ignorance is strength."

Five days after the Rockefeller Report was released, the public flap began. The children of Dr. Frank Olson were informed by the DIA that their father had been the individual the Report cited as the "employee of the Department of the Army who was given LSD without his knowledge while he was attending a meeting with CIA personnel working on the drug project." Olson had died when he fell, jumped or otherwise exited from a twelfth-floor hotel window in New York, while still under the influence of what was then billed as the most powerful mind-altering drug known to man.

For twenty-two years the cause of Olson's death had been concealed. His family had been led to believe that he had committed suicide because of a mysterious, unexplained "mental breakdown." At no time after Olson's death was his family offered a true explanation of the real circumstances which had caused it.

Eric, the eldest son of Dr. Olson, said, "I'm very angry at the CIA because they let us grow up thinking our father had inexplicably committed suicide," Young Olson said that his family had decided to sue the government, not only out of desire to collect monetary damages but because "we think there's more information involved in this. It's also a way of holding the CIA publicly accountable for what they did."

The Olson family discovered that an individual damaged while in government employ cannot sue the government. But this didn't stop them. They asked the

Senate to vote them a special bill of recompense for the death of the head of their household. On May 18, 1976, the full Senate approved S.B. 3035 by voice vote and sent it on to the House. Senate Bill 3035 specifically authorized appropriations totaling \$1.25 million to be paid to the Olson Family. The House of Representatives, being more conservative at the time, cut the Senate's generous award and the Olson family eventually received only \$750,000. A similar case, tried in civil court, might have brought the Olson family as much as three million dollars.

Months before Olson plunged to his death, Harold Blauer, a professional tennis player, died after being given repeated doses of experimental psycho-chemicals by the army at New York State Psychiatric Institute in New York City. For years the Blauer family had been trying to no avail, to find out the true cause of Harold Blauer's death. In the wake of the Olson scandal, the army relaxed its cover-up and finally surrendered Mr. Blauer's medical file to his daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth Barrett.

The chemical identities of the drugs he had received were not given; the drugs were listed only by number. The numbers were said to represent various hallucinogens, but because of "national security" it has never been revealed what the chemicals were that killed Harold Blauer.

The crucial part of the army's medical report stated: "Prenarcosis: -- apprehensive -- considerable persuasion required-- injection administered at 9:53 a.m.; postnarcosis: -- 9:59, subject so restless has to be restrained by nurse -- out of contact with reality -- arms flailing -- sweating profusely; 10:01, rapid oscillation of eyeballs; 10:11, body rigid all over, 10:15, stimulant administered; 10:20 to 11:45,deep coma; 11:50, artificial respiration administered; 12:15, doctor pronounces subject dead; 12:30, hospital authorities notified; 3:30, body transferred to city morgue."

Harold Blauer died without ever knowing what drug he received. And from the words in the report -- "considerable persuasion required" -- it looks as though he hadn't volunteered, either.

Both Blauer's and Olson's deaths were covered up by the excuse of "national security." Their families were deliberately misled about the cause of death. No monetary compensation was offered except for the pensions or allotments due the families under normal circumstances.

In the wake of these personal tragedies, increasing public pressure led other government agencies to make their confessions. The army announced that since 1956 it had tested LSD on nearly 1,500 unwitting servicemen, and on several thousand more volunteers, a total of 6,940 in all. At the same time the army made this disclosure, it requested permission from the Defense Department to conduct further tests with at least two new drugs -- drugs which were many times more powerful than LSD. Permission was granted with the stipulation that the "guinea pigs" be volunteers only.

Within days of the army's admission of drug testing, the Department of Health, Education and Welfare revealed that it had administered LSD to about 2,500 prisoners, mental patients, and paid volunteers between 1954 and 1968. HEW said further that it had given seven and a half million dollars in grants to more than thirty university researchers who independently ran LSD tests on human subjects.

What was not revealed until much later was that the CIA had used every possible military and civilian agency of government, as well as a number of universities and private research groups, to test LSD and other drugs, plus a whole array of psycho-technologies in an all-out search for reliable methods of controlling the human mind.

But the CIA's record was pretty good; for out of all the thousands of individuals who were given LSD or other drugs without their knowledge, only three are known to have died.

In 1955 a new drug-testing program was begun at the Edgewood Army Chemical Center. Volunteer soldiers were recruited but were not told what drugs they would be given, nor that men had died as a result of similar experiments. They were told they'd suffer only temporary discomfort. Seven thousand soldiers underwent the Edgewood Arsenal's tests. Five hundred eighty-five men were given LSD; the rest were administered other unspecified drugs.

Dr. Gerald Klee was one of the first psychiatrists to work on the drug-testing program for the army. When questioned by television crews as to how the volunteers had been recruited, he said that he didn't really know. They had come from all over the country, believing only that they were going to the Chemical Center to be used as subjects in chemical experiments.

"Most of them were not highly educated, and even if they had been told exactly what they were to be given, they wouldn't have understood it," Dr. Klee said. "The advantage to them was time off to get away from some place they didn't want to be, to be near their family, girlfriends, whatever, and they had a pretty good life while they were there, as a matter of fact. They spent very little of their time in the experiments and had a lot of free time..."

Wendell Queen was an army sergeant in 1964 when he volunteered for the drug experiments at Edgewood. Years later, when the Olson case was made public, Mr.

Queen tried to find out what drugs he had been given. He ran into a wall of security. The army stated that it had no record that he was ever given drugs.

But Sergeant Queen remembers differently. He had been given a drug that penetrated his skin, not through injection but simply by being placed on his arm with an eye dropper. "They just took a small drop and put it on my arm and my arm became inflamed and kinda itchy, something like a bad mosquito bite," he said. He was not told what drug it was. He was told only that the effects would be temporary.

Several hours afterwards, he began to float. "I began to feel kinda happy and the room started turning around," Sergeant Queen related. "I had lost all my senses. I had no sense of balance or sense of the environment around me... Later on that night I really got paranoid and if anybody would come close to me I would think that they were going to kill me..."

Sergeant Queen had "flashbacks" for several months after that experiment when he would relive the states of mind he had experienced on that day.

"My roommate told me later that one night I woke up screaming and hollering 'don't kill me, don't kill me.' He said I became so violent that I began tearing my bed up," Sergeant Queen said.

Sergeant queen remembers that at Edgewood he tried making a joke about being a human guinea pig. The medic administering the test didn't appreciate his sense of humor. "He said that the doctors were the only human guinea pigs around there because they took every new drug first. he said that they always got a bigger dose than anyone else ever did."

According to the army, their LSD testing program came to an end in 1967. An army spokesman promised a follow-up study on the 585 men who had been given LSD, but actually carried it out with only thirty-five officers -- and superficially, at that. Still, the army maintained that there had certainly been no LSD since Olson and Blauer. Once again it was not telling the whole truth.

George Danald, a colonel at the Army Chemical School in Fort McClellan, Alabama, agreed to become a guinea pig in 1959. He believed in progress, and he believed that without experimentation and research there could be no progress. Thus, when the opportunity presented itself to him, he readily submitted to an injection of what was said to be LSD.

Immediately after he took the drug, according to his wife, "his overall characteristics seemed to change, his attitude changed, mannerisms changed, and I'm sure a great deal more that I didn't notice at the time."

A year after Colonel Danald's psychedelic experience he was transferred to Edgewood Chemical Center. Every day it was his habit to pick up his daughter Dawn promptly after school. One day he didn't meet her and Dawn walked to the Officers' Club looking for him. His car was in the parking lot, so assuming her father was inside, she went into the club and asked if anyone had seen him. When nobody seemed to remember that he'd been there that day she went up to their apartment on the floor above and knocked on his door. There was no answer, so she went in. The sitting room was littered with papers. She walked into the bedroom and noticed that the twin beds were apart. When she turned on the lights, she saw her father's body slumped at the foot of the bed.

In shock, she went to her room next door and telephoned her mother, who was at work. "Mommy, I found Daddy," she said. "He's on the floor and he looks awful white."

Colonel Danald had been dead for five hours when Dawn found him. He had taken his own life by putting a .25 caliber bullet through his temple. The pistol was still in his hand.

Colonel Danald did not have a history of mental instability. Until the time of his experience at Fort McClellan, he had never had a depressed moment. The only clue his family had to his apparent mental anguish was that, a few months before he died, he had once threatened to kill himself in a family argument. No one had paid any attention to that since he had been such a stable person in the past.

Mrs. Danald believes that her husband's death was caused by the mind-bending effects of the experiment, but she has so far been unable to prove her case. She and her family have received no compensation except the benefits which would normally accrue to a lifetime army officer.

Mary Ray was a research assistant at a psychiatric hospital which held military contracts to test LSD from 1958 to 1969. She helped doctors conduct experiments on more than 900 people. Some of them were mental patients. In 1966 she offered herself for LSD testing. Her description is typical of a "bum trip."

"I was in a state of becoming the universe. I became objects," she said. "I was no longer a person. Then, I got to a state of absolute terror. The closest thing I can remember being like that was as a child, when I was given ether... it was the feeling like just before losing consciousness."

But Mary was able to bring herself back from the LSD void: "I realized that I was a person, out of this billowing black seething weirdness, this horror...

"I looked down and I saw my arms which were two white rivers with black threads and they were my veins. I realized that, and I felt that if I tried really hard, somehow I could sever the veins. I realized even though I was not really a person that I could end all this living nightmare, this hell, by cutting my veins.

"Then I concentrated on this problem for what seemed centuries, because time did not exist. It was a strange time distortion. I tried desperately to try to kill myself. There is no question in my mind, that if I'd had some sort of sharp instrument, and if I were alone, I would have killed myself..."

The doctors and medics were helpless. "No one seemed to know how to handle the situation. No one knew what to do. It seemed like they were kids playing scientists."[31]

Mary Ray reported no amnesia, and no recurring after-effects. She never felt another overwhelming compulsion to commit suicide, nor any compulsion to keep her experience secret.

In June of 1958, William F. Chaffin was a sergeant in the U.S. Air Force, stationed at Dover Air Force Base in Delaware. He had been a basic training instructor in biological, chemical, and radiological (CBR) warfare earlier in his career and thought, when he read the bulletin offering volunteers a thirty day tour of duty at Edgewood Arsenal, that it would be easy duty. It would be a nice break in his dull routine and a thirty-day leave at government expense. He assumed that he'd be involved in a program much like the one he'd taught in basic military training on chemical and biological warfare tactics and defenses.

On September 10, 1975, before a joint session of the Senate Subcommittee on Health and the Senate Subcommittee on Administrative Practice and Procedure, Chaffin testified to the *lasting* effects of his volunteer tour of duty at Edgewood. He told the committee that upon his arrival at Edgewood, he was placed in a barracks with approximately thirty other volunteers. Daily, some of the volunteers were taken to various points on the base, given gas masks, and used in experiments involving DDT and other relatively mild chemicals. But at first Chaffin was simply ordered to report to a certain station each morning and then he would be released for the remainder of the day to pursue his own interests.

Today Chaffin cannot say with any certainty how long this procedure went on. He can't remember whether he was there for one week, two weeks, or three weeks, before he was actually used in a test.

"At some point around the middle of the month of July [1958]," Chaffin told the committee, "myself and four or five other individuals were taken to a hospital on the base. We were, at that time, taken into a room and a psychologist or psychiatrist -- I cannot remember which -- who I believe was associated with the University of Maryland, informed us that we would be administered a drug or a substance in distilled water. We were further informed that this drug or substance would be odorless, tasteless, and colorless. We were asked to perform certain tests prior to the ingestion of the substance. My best recollection of these tests is that we were simply asked to estimate certain amounts of elapsed time by any means other than a watch or clock. We were then taken back to our various wards and a short time thereafter, I was given a beaker of colorless, odorless, and tasteless substance by an orderly or an attendant.

---

[31] Mary Ray, Documentary "Guinea Pig Soldiers," Granada Television Ltd.

"I have no recollection whatsoever that I was informed of the nature or qualities of the substance. Certainly, no reference was made to any possibility of detrimental psychological or physical effects on myself, or my future family, by taking of the substance.

"I cannot estimate adequately the length of time that elapsed after I took the drug until I first began to notice the effects, but my best recollection is that it was in the nature of one-half hour.

"At that time, I remember being taken back to the psychiatrist or psychologist and again asked to estimate various lengths of time by any means except observing a clock or watch. It is extremely difficult for me to describe adequately what occurred in the next hours of that day. I have to this day, distinct recollections of vivid and colorful events that made no sense whatsoever to me. I have distinct recollections of either myself hallucinating or other individuals hallucinating and imagining that they were seeing certain objects and things. I do not recall if they were in fact hallucinating, or if I was simply imagining they were.

'I was obsessed with a feeling that I can only describe as utter and total depression. I don't think these words adequately convey the meaning of that which I experienced, but I simply do *not* have the words to set forth the occurrences of that day.

"Later, I was released from the hospital. I cannot recall if this was after a period of twelve hours, twenty-four hours, or thirty-six hours or more. It is simply impossible to adequately determine what lengths of time elapsed."

Shortly thereafter, Chaffin returned to his base. His life returned to its usual routine, but for some reason, he found it extremely difficult to talk to anyone. He could not even bring himself to tell his wife about his Edgewood experience.

"Since that time," Chaffin said, "I have experienced what I believe to be LSD flashbacks on at least three separate occasions. The feelings that encompassed me on those three different occasions were again what I can only describe as a total depression accompanied by a nearly uncontrollable desire to take my life..."

(Extensive research has shown that there is no more chance of flashbacks with LSD than with alcohol.)

"After Chaffin's return, his wife became pregnant. In November of 1958, she miscarried. The Chaffins' doctor informed them that in all likelihood the fetus had been deformed. "I do not know at this time if this was attributable to LSD which I was administered at Edgewood, Maryland, or not. We do not at this time know if various other problems which have arisen in one of my children are directly attributable to LSD or not. Conversely, we do not at this time know that there is no relation.

Actually there is no scientific evidence that ingestion of even large amounts of LSD-25 can cause genetic malformation. There is only evidence that if laboratory animals and eggs are saturated with a pure concentration of LSD, chromosomal damage can occur. Dr. Jolyn West did manage to kill an elephant with a huge dose of LSD at Oklahoma University, but that's about as far as the lethal studies ever went.

"After the ingestion of the substance in July of 1958," Chaffin said, "*my personality and behavior began to change* [emphasis added]. After seven years of marriage, I was certainly not an individual that tended to depression. However, after an ingestion of LSD, I have undergone, as I mentioned earlier, several occasions of the same total and extreme depression that occurred when I was given the LSD initially. Additionally, my wife has related to me one incident that occurred and which I have no recollection of whatsoever. This incident involved my actually taking a gun and attempting to leave our home for the purpose of taking my own life."

Then Chaffin told the Joint Committee, "I would like to state for the record that I believe that the United States Air Force was always extremely fair to me in my military career. I enjoyed my military career and consider myself to be a loyal member of the United States Air Force, retired. I must also state that the trauma that I have undergone as a result of being surreptitiously administered this drug is something I consider to be totally out of keeping with my concept of the service. I can only hope that the Committee will take every means available to make sure that the other individuals who were administered LSD receive notification and help."

Army records show that William Chaffin was given a drug known only as EA1729. On August 5, 1975, after the Olson disclosure, Chaffin wrote a letter to the army stating that he thought he might have been given LSD. He requested the medical follow-up the army had promised. Michael V. Johnston of the Army Surgeon General's office responded to his letter. "In checking our records" Johnston wrote, "we find that you did receive LSD in the army research program. Medical consultants in the Office of the Surgeon General are now making plans for a follow-up study of persons who took LSD. You will be contacted within the next two months and invited to be examined..."

Chaffin was called in for a physical subsequently but he feels the examination was inadequate. He has only the army's word that the drug he received was LSD. Probably it was not. LSD is not known for its abilities to induce amnesia, to cause depression, or to place a lock on the tongue. If anything, LSD could be used in interrogation to loosen the mind and the tongue.

Until that day in Edgewood, William Chaffin had always had a firm grip on reality. Either he was given one of several drugs far more powerful than LSD, and with different properties to affect the mind, or he was given LSD and put through some extreme behavior modification procedure which programmed him to remain silent, and later, after his connection with the Edgewood experiment had been severed, to wish to take his own life.

Tennis pro, Harold Blauer on his ass in happier days, before he was "persuaded" to take an "experimental" CIA drug which killed him.

7

THE MKULTRANS

Following the release of the Rockefeller Report, John D. Marks, author and former staff assistant to the State Department Intelligence Director, filed a Freedom of Information Act appeal on behalf of the Center for National Security Studies requesting documentation from the CIA. I filed an identical request at about the same time. Marks and I both requested documentation for the evidence cited in the Rockefeller Report on the CIA's mind-control activities conducted within the United States.

Seven months later, Marks was given more than 2,000 pages of top-secret and "eyes only" documents by the CIA's Information Review Committee. A short time later I began to receive what Marks had gotten. These pages were said to be the bulk of the information upon which the Rockefeller Commission had based its report.

Exempted from release were portions of or entire documents which contained information said by CIA officials to pertain to "intelligence sources and methods which the Director of the Central Intelligence has the responsibility to protect from unauthorized disclosure pursuant to section 102 (d) (3) of the National Security Act of 1947." But in the photo-copied pages obtained was a statement to the effect that within a few hours of his resignation (forced by the disclosures of the Watergate and Church Committees), Director Richard Helms ordered the records shredded and burned.

The remaining documents, which were judged by the CIA to be "safe" to keep for subsequent release were all highly sanitized. They contained few names of participating individuals or organizations and none of the details of the long-range experiments designed to mold and control the minds of American citizens.

In addition to offering a superficial review of the CIA's involvement in research on mind control, the documents Marks obtained gave the Agency's own officially censored version of what had happened to Dr. Frank Olson.

According to the CIA, at a "liaison conference" with Fort Detrick personnel at Deep Creek Lake, Maryland, on the eighteenth and nineteenth of November, 1953, Dr. Olson and seven other men were given LSD in glasses of Cointreau, an orange-flavored liqueur. The unsuspecting "guinea pigs "were told twenty minutes later that they had been given LSD.

Olson suffered "serious aftereffects," and later the same day, he was sent, at CIA expense to New York City with an escort, Dr. Robert Lashbrook. There he was taken to see a psychiatrist, Dr. Harold A. Abramson. After five days of observation and treatment, Dr. Abramson decided that Olson had to be hospitalized. Arrangements were made for his admittance to a private sanitarium near Rockville, Maryland.

Following that consultation with Abramson on November 22, Olson and Lashbrook returned to their rooms at the Statler Hotel and retired for the evening. At 2:30 a.m. the next morning, Lashbrook was awakened by a loud crash. According to the "eyes only" investigation report, he went into Olson's bedroom and found him missing. The window, "glass and all," and the blinds were also missing. Lashbrook assumed that Olson had dived though them.

Before Lashbrook notified the hotel desk he called Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, the chief medical officer of the CIA drug project, and informed him of Olson's fate. Lashbrook then called the desk man who called the police.

When the police from the Fourteenth Precinct arrived, Lashbrook told them that Olson was employed by the U.S. Army. He also told them that he, too, was a government employee and a friend of Olson's, but nothing else. Police, however, found Lashbrook in possession of government identification, including a CIA badge, and made note of this identifying data. The CIA and the Department of Defense quickly took over liaison with the police and succeeded in covering up the cause of Olson's "suicide."

Three months later, CIA Director Allen W. Dulles wrote three notes of reprimand and sent them to the chiefs of the Technical Services Staff, Technical Operations and Chemical division. The "eyes only" reprimand to the Chief of the Chemical Division said, "I have personally reviewed the files from your office concerning the use of a drug on an unwitting group of individuals. In recommending the unwitting application of the drug to your superior, you apparently did not give sufficient emphasis to the necessity for medical collaboration and for proper consideration of the rights of the individual to whom it was being administered. This is to inform you that it is my opinion that you exercised poor judgment in this case." It was signed, "Sincerely Allen W. Dulles, Director."

In 1975, President Gerald Ford apologized to the Olson family on behalf of the government and made a monetary settlement. The Olson case was also the

. subject of congressional investigations and a government-appointed commission. which found that there was no evidence of homicide.

There was no change of operations. The research on mind control continued unabated. The coverup continued. The official story was Olson fell, but the family of Frank Olson always suspected that he was pushed because he had become a security risk. According to his son, Eric Olson, the normally cheeful researcher sank into a deep depression after the CIA slipped acid into his drink. He told his wife he had made a "terrible mistake" and wanted to quit his job. Nine days later he was dead.

Eric Olson, is now a psychologist who has access to any number of people working within the cryptocracy. In 1994 Eric and his brother, Nils, had the 40-year-old remains of their father exhumed. The body was found in a "mummified" condition. The CIA said that it had no reason to think that Olson's death was a homicide, but the sons had the body sent to the nation's top forensic pathologists who would try to determine if Frank Olson was dead before he hit the New York City pavement. "It's been a pressing question for me all the time and the questions certainly were not laid to rest with the CIA story in 1975," Eric said.

"The remains are in exeedingly fine condition and that's attributable to the embalming done in New York and to the container," said James E. Starrs, professor of law and forensic sciences at George Washington University. "We have remains that are in mummified condition. We even have the opportunity to get fingerprints."

Forensic experts analyzed hair, brain tissue, fingernails and bones for injuries not attributable to the fall, Starrs said. They looked for toxins and drugs, including LSD and other hallucinogens. The chairman of the behavioral science department at York College. Dr. John S. Levisky, examined the skeleton.[32]

Starrs found new forensic evidence which suggested that Olson may have landed on his feet shattering both legs and causing massive internal trauma that would have led to death in minutes.[33] But, curiously, Starrs found "so many fractures in the skull that it is not possible that he received this type of injury simply from falling out of a window... It would not be possible unless he were on a trampoline. You don't bounce around like that; when you hit pavement, you hit pavement." Starrs also found no evidence of cuts from smashing through the glass window which were reported in the original autopsy. Starrs characterized the new evidence as "sinister," but decided (as of September 1994) to hold off his concluding remarks pending toxicological results and a final inquiry.

---

[32] Associated Press, *Los Angeles Times*," Body of Man in 1953 LSD Test Exhumed", June 10, 1994.

[33] Terry Allen. *CIA Disposal Problem*, Covert Action Quarterly, No. 50, Fall 1994.

After toxicological results were turned in, in November, Starrs said, "I am exceedingly skeptical of the view that Dr. Olson went through that window on his own."

The CIA issued a hasty statement saying that it "wil cooperate fully" if the case is reopened, saying that if the private investigation has uncovered new evidence, it should be brought to the attention of the authorities.

Starrs singled out the presence of several bruises on Olson's skull that suggested he may have been smashed on the head before he plunged 173 feet at 65 miles-per-hour to his death on the sidewalk below.

The criminal and dishonorable ways of the CIA again surface. Despite Congressional hearings, despite exposure in the press, despite Presidential apologies, Operation Mind Control continued.

According to the documents, the CIA mind-control program was run under four different project names. "In 1949 the Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI) undertook the analysis of foreign work on certain unconventional warfare techniques, including behavioral drugs, with an initial objective of developing a capability to resist or offset the effect of such drugs. Preliminary phases included the review of drug related work at institutions such as Mount Sinai Hospital, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, University of Minnesota, Valley Forge General Hospital, Detroit Psychopathic Clinic, Mayo Clinic, and the National Institute of Health.

"This first project, code-named Project BLUEBIRD, was assigned the function of discovering means of conditioning personnel to prevent unauthorized extraction of information from them by known means. It was further assigned to investigate the possibility of control of an individual by application of special interrogation techniques, memory enhancement, and establishing defensive means for preventing interrogation of agency personnel."

(A number of the "survivors" of Operation Mind Control have been tattooed with bluebirds. Several think that this was a mark of rank , that it meant they had received special "Bluebird" programming and could be accessed with certain triggers. This has not yet been sufficiently tested to my knowledge.)

In August, 1951, Project BLUEBIRD was renamed Project ARTICHOKE, and was subsequently transferred from the Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI) to the Office of Security (OS). OSI, however, retained the responsibility for evaluating foreign intelligence aspects of ARTICHOKE. In 1953, the OSI proposed that experiments be undertaken to test LSD on Agency volunteers. Records do not indicate however, whether or not such experiments were made. According to the information released, OSI's involvement in Project ARTICHOKE ceased in 1956.

The emphasis originally given ARTICHOKE by the OS became focused on the use of drugs such as sodium pentothal in connection with interrogation techniques and with the polygraph. During this period there was an informal group known as the Artichoke Committee which had representatives from OSI, OS, Medical Services, and Technical Services. True to form, only brief records were kept, so that the details of the exchanges of this committee are still secret.

A CIA memo to the Director of Central intelligence dated July 14, 1952, cited a successful application of narco-hypnotic interrogation undertaken by a team of representatives from the CIA. This memo revealed that by that date two successful interrogations had already been conducted using drugs and hypnosis. The subjects were Russian agents suspected of being double agents. The cover was called "psychiatric-medical" (they were admitted to a hospital). The control methods were by narcosis, by hypnosis, and by a combination of both. The subjects were regressed by hypnosis and made to relive past experiences. When the interrogation was completed posthypnotic suggestion succeeded in giving the subjects amnesia of the actual interrogations. The interrogations were regarded by the CIA as being very successful.

"In each case," the CIA memo read, "a psychiatric-medical cover was used to bring the ARTICHOKE techniques into action. In the first case, light dosages of drugs coupled with hypnosis were used to induce a complete hypnotic trance. This trance was held for approximately one hour and forty minutes of interrogation with a subsequent total amnesia produced by posthypnotic suggestion. In the second case (an individual of much higher intelligence than the first), a deep hypnotic trance was reached after light medication. This was followed by an interrogation lasting for well over an hour. However, a partial amnesia only was obtained at this time, although a total amnesia was obtained for a major part of the test. Since further interrogation was desired, a second test was made on this individual in which the ARTICHOKE technique of using a straight medication was employed. On this test, highly successful results were obtained in that a full interrogation lasting two hours and fifteen minutes was produced, part of which included a remarkable regression During this regression, the subject actually 'relived' certain past activities of his life, some dating back fifteen years while, in addition, the subject totally accepted Mr. (deleted) [the case officer and interpreter at this time] as an old trusted, and beloved personal friend whom the subject had known in years past in Georgia, USSR. Total amnesia was apparently achieved for the entire second test on this case."

The memo revealed that sodium pentothal and the stimulant desoxyn were the drugs used to aid the hypnotic trance. The memo continued: "For a matter of record, the case officers involved in both cases expressed themselves to the effect that the ARTICHOKE operations were entirely successful and team members felt that the tests demonstrated conclusively the effectiveness of the combined chemical-hypnotic technique in such cases. In both cases the subjects talked clearly and at great length and furnished information which the case officers considered extremely valuable."

According to the Agency Inspector General Chamberlain, "There is reference in papers in the records held by the Office of Security, of something referred to as an ARTICHOKE Team traveling overseas in 1954, with indications of operational applications to individuals representing a Communist Bloc country. There is no record of the operation or its results."

A summary of a conference on July 15, 1953, offered a clue to other kinds of operations conducted under ARTICHOKE. The report, addressed to the Chief of Security, CIA, said, "Mr. (deleted) then discussed the situation of a former Agency official who had become a chronic alcoholic and who at the present time, was undergoing operative treatment in (deleted) for a possible brain tumor. This individual had called the Agency prior to the operation and warned that when given certain types of anesthetics (sodium pentothal), previously he had been known to talk coherently. The matter was taken care of by placing a representative in the operating room and by bringing the various personnel participating in the operation under the secrecy Agreement. Mr. (deleted) stated that the subject did talk extensively under the influence of sodium pentothal and revealed internal problems of the Agency. Dr. (deleted) added that he was acquainted with the details in the case.

"(Deleted) then commented that this type of thing had been a source of great concern to himself and others in the operations work and stated that he hoped that the ARTICHOKE efforts to produce some method that would perhaps guarantee amnesia on the part of those knowing of Agency operations in vital spots would be successful. He stated that some individuals in the Agency had to know tremendous amounts of information and if any way could be found to produce amnesias for this type of information -- for instance, after the individual had left the Agency -- it would be a remarkable thing. Mr. (deleted) stated the need for amnesia was particularly great in operations work. Mr. (deleted) and Mr. (deleted) both explained that work was continually being done in an effort to produce controlled amnesia by various means.

"Mr. (deleted) called attention to the fact that at the preceding conference, Colonel (deleted) had advanced the idea of testing new methods, new chemicals, and new techniques (and combinations thereof) on certain carefully selected employees of the Agency, probably individuals in the training groups..."

One of the documents John Marks obtained was dated July 30, 1956. Under the heading "Schizophrenic Agent" the memo stated that bulbocapnine, an alkaloid, could cause catatonia or stupor from its affects on the central nervous system and the cerebral cortex. The report stated: "We desire to have certain psycho-chemical properties tested on man, using the bulbocapnine which we were fortunate to obtain from (deleted), a sample being enclosed herewith. More bulbocapnine is available if needed."

Along with the sample was the request that subjects be tested for loss of speech, loss of sensitivity to pain, loss of memory, and loss of will power."

Another memo in 1956 authorized psychiatrists in universities and state penitentiaries (names were deleted) to test these drugs on unwitting subjects.

An even earlier memo said, "it was essential to find an area where large numbers of bodies would be used for research and experimentation. Dr. (deleted) stated that in connection with the testing of drugs, he was quite certain a number of psychiatrists all over the United States would be willing to test new drugs, especially drugs that affect the mind..."

ARTICHOKE evolved to become project MKULTRA which, according to CIA documents, was "an umbrella project for funding sensitive projects... approved by Allen Dulles on April 3, 1953. Cryptonym MKDELTA covered... policy and procedure for use of biochemicals in clandestine operations..."

Besides drugs, MKDELTA and MKULTRA experimented with radiation, electroshock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, anthropology, harassment substances, and what were called "paramilitary devices and materials." Contacts were made with individuals at prominent hospitals and drug "safe houses" under Bureau of Drug Abuse control. Through the Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs (BNDD) and federal institutions such as prisons, drugs could be administered to unsuspecting individuals.

One hundred thirty-nine different drugs, including various amnesia potions, were first tested under laboratory conditions (See Appendix B), then beginning in 1955 the most promising drugs were given to unwitting subjects "in normal social situations" through the informal arrangement made between the CIA and BNDD. The CIA inspector General's report indicates that this part of the mind-control program was terminated in 1963, but that a project to test various drugs "in an inquiry into improvement of learning ability and memory retention" did continue until 1972.

Document 32 in the MKULTRA file, sheds a more direct light on the CIA's involvement in Mind-control research. The "Memorandum for the Record" was written by an unidentified intelligence officer. It is reproduced below in its entirety.

17 January 1975

MEMORANDUM FOR THE RECORD

SUBJECT: MKULTRA

1. The following represents the best of my unaided recollection regarding the MKULTRA program. I was first briefed on it in 1962. At that time it was in the process of a significant decrease in activity and funding. As Chief, Defense and Espionage (C/D&E), I continued to decrease funds significantly each year until the program was phased out in the late 1960s.

2. MKULTRA was a group of projects most of which dealt with drug or counter-drug research and development. The Director Central Intelligence (DCI) and the Deputy Director of Plans (DDP) were kept informed on the program via annual briefings by Chief Technical Services Division (C/TSD) or his Deputy. Most of the research and development was externally contracted and dealt with various materials which were purported to have characteristics appealing for their covert or clandestine administration under operational conditions. The objectives were behavioral control, behavior anomaly production and counter-measures for opposition application of similar substances. Work was performed at U.S. industrial, academic, and governmental research facilities. Funding was often through cut-out arrangements. Testing was usually done at such time as laboratory work was successfully completed and was often carried out at such facilities as the (deleted) and (deleted). In all cases that I am aware of, testing was done using volunteer inmates who were witting of the nature of the test program but not the ultimate sponsoring organization.

3. As the Soviet drug use scare (and the amount of significant progress in the MKULTRA program) decreased, the program activities were curtailed significantly as budgetary pressure and alternate priorities dictated.

4. Over my stated objections the MKULTRA files were destroyed by order of the DCI (Mr. Helms) shortly before his departure from office.

CI OFFICER

By Authority of 102702

As for the unidentified intelligence officer's claim that the experiments "in all cases that I am aware of" were performed on "volunteer" and "witting" subjects, one can only suggest that this man may not have had the "need to know" about the unwitting subjects. Records of court proceedings indicate that many "guinea pigs" in federal institutions were not fully informed of the long-range consequences of drug-enhanced behavior modification.

One such experiment on Human "guinea pigs," conducted at the California Medical Facility at Vacaville, involved the use of the drug anectine, a strong muscle relaxant which leaves the victim totally without involuntary muscle control. The body lets loose its waste, breathing stops, and without proper attendance, death can result.

Whether or not the subject dies, he experiences the feeling that he is dying. According to chief Vacaville psychiatrist Dr. Arthur Nugent, anectine induces "sensations of suffocation and drowning. The subject experiences feelings of deep horror and terror, as though he were on the brink of death." While in this condition a self-styled therapist scolds him for his misdeeds and tells him to reform or expect more of the same. Dr. Nugent told the *San Francisco Chronicle*, "even the toughest inmates have come to fear and hate the drug. I don't blame them. I wouldn't have one treatment myself for the world."

Writing about the anectine therapy program, Jessica Mitford noted that of those given the drug, nearly all could be characterized as angry young men. "Yet some seem to have been made even angrier by the experience. For the researchers said that of sixty-four prisoners in the program nine persons not only did not decrease, but actually exhibited an increase in their overall number of disciplinary infractions."[34]

Experimentation with drugs and behavior modification became so widespread in prisons and mental institutions that in the middle and late 1960s court dockets became crowded with lawsuits filed on behalf of the "human guinea pigs" who were victims of such research. By 1971 the number of lawsuits had reached such proportions that the Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights began an investigation. Three years later, the Senate Committee on the Judiciary, chaired by Senator Sam Ervin, released a report entitled "Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification." It was largely ignored by the press, yet it revealed some interesting information.

Two years before the CIA and its subcontractors owned up to their mind dabbling, a large number of behavior modification projects were already underway. The report disclosed that thirteen projects were run by the Defense Department; the Department of Labor had conducted "several experiments"; the National Science Foundation conducted "a substantial amount of research dealing with understanding human behavior"; even the Veterans' Administration participated in psychosurgery experiments, which, in many cases, were nothing more than an advanced form of lobotomy.

One of the largest supporters of "behavior research" was the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare, and its subagency the National Institute of Mental Health. the subcommitee said that HEW had participated in a "very large number of projects dealing with the control and alteration of human behavior." Largest of all the supporters of behavior modification was the Law Enforcement Assistance Administration (LEAA) which, under the Department of Justice, funded hundreds of behavior modification experiments. All the above agencies were named in secret CIA documents as those who provided research "cover" for MKULTRA.

---

[34] Jessica Mittford, *Kind and Unusual Punishment* (New York, Knopf, 1974)

The subcommittee found that controls and guidelines, where they existed, were at best loose. the poorly organized and loosely accountable research operations included not only traditional conditioning techniques, but also more advanced modifiers such as chemotherapy, aversive therapy, neurosurgery, stress assessment, electric shock, and the well known form of psychological indoctrination popularly call "brainwashing."

Another of the documents released to John Marks was one dated February 10, 1951 entitled "Defense Against Soviet Mental Interrogation and Espionage Techniques." It began: "International treaties or other agreements have never controlled the experimental development and actual use of unconventional methods of warfare, such as devices for subversive activities, fiendish acts of espionage, torture and murder of prisoners of war, and physical duress and other unethical persuasive actions in the interrogation of prisoners."

According to this document, the Technical Services division of the CIA contracted with officials of what was then known as the Bureau of Narcotics to have mind-influencing drugs given to unwitting subjects. The CIA felt that the drugs needed to be tested in "normal life settings," so that the full capabilities to produce disabling or discrediting effects" of the drugs would be known.

With the full approval of Allen W. Dulles, and arrangement had been made with the Bureau of Narcotics whereby the CIA financed and established "safe houses" in which federal narcotics agents could dispense the drugs and record the reactions of those who took them. No CIA men were present when the drugs were administered. The report did not reveal the number of "unwitting" subjects given drugs nor the identities of any but Olson. But it did acknowledge, for the first time, the scope of the cryptocracy's interest in mind control.

The CIA Inspector General, Donald F. Chamberlain, was stimulated by Olson's death to investigate the above cited drug program himself. In a summary dated February 5, 1975, he wrote "Records do not permit a description of such relationships as may have existed between these various activities; it is apparent there was some sharing of information between these various components in the Agency, and some overlap in time, but there also are indications of independent approaches to the problem."

Naturally, the CIA allows itself to be questioned and examined only by loyal employees. But even the in-house inspector general could not avoid reporting that the CIA had a recurring interest in behavioral drugs for more than twenty-five years. The earliest record of this interest dated to the post-World War II period, when the CIA, heir to the OSS mind control research and perhaps the victim of its own motivating propaganda, thought that the Soviets were using drugs and other behavior-influencing techniques.

In 1949, Irving L. Janis of the Rand Corporation, wrote: "Defense against these [mind control] actions will depend largely upon knowledge of enemy capabilities. Reports of experimental and actual use of illegitimate interrogation techniques by the Soviets to obtain intelligence and court confessions against the interrogatee's will indicate clearly the need for medical investigation," the report claimed.

"The implications referred to above embrace several categories. The behavior of defendants in Soviet courts and in those of the satellite countries, together with the whole pattern of Soviet trial procedure, makes it essential for us to consider Soviet use of drugs, hypnotism, hypno-narcoanalysis, electric and drug shock, and possibly the use of ultrasonics."

The report continued, "There is documentary evidence to support the belief that the Soviets have been conducting medical research, have actually used various techniques, and have made provision for large-scale productions of uncommon drugs known for their speech-producing effects..." Only a few drugs with which the Soviets were supposed to be experimenting are named. No hard evidence is presented that they were in fact experimenting with such drugs. The report goes on to point to the trial of Joseph Cardinal Mindszenty, who was accused of collaborating with the enemy (the United States), as an example of the Russians' use of drugs in obtaining forced confessions in court procedure. "Behavior patterns, rapport, symptoms of residual effects of treatments, and the physical condition of the defendants all indicate the use of drugs. Several documents refer to memorized testimony and departures from text, indicating forced false confessions."

It was later learned that the elicited confessions were false. By Mindszenty's own admission, they were not induced by drugs or sophisticated techniques of mind control; they were simply forged, and rather poorly forged at that. Mindszenty's foggy mental state at the trial had resulted from psychological indoctrination, isolation, and interrogation, and generally can be regarded as standard police procedure, for most countries of the world.

The report clearly stated that "the use of these drugs does not usually result in amnesia of past interrogations unless the victim's mental faculties have been destroyed by their effects." Thus, even if drugs were used on Mindszenty, by the CIA's own conclusion he would have remembered getting the drugs and something about the subsequent interrogation sessions. The fact was he remembered neither. It is surely not a coincidence that the CIA "eyes only" report which claimed Mindszenty was narco-hypnotized was issued the same year that Edward Hunter, the CIA "propaganda specialist," released *Brainwashing in Red China.* Most newspaper reporters would never go to press on the kind of sourceless generalized information provided in the CIA report; yet are we to believe the cryptocracy had launched a thirty-odd-year research and development project based on evidence which amounted to hearsay?

Another CIA report uncovered by Marks, "Defense Against Soviet Medical Interrogation," revealed the alarming statistics that "although susceptibility to narco-hypnosis varies from person to person, skilled operators can readily hypnotize about twenty-five (25) percent of a given group of average persons." It added "at least eighty (80) percent, however, would be susceptible following the use of certain drugs..."

This second document also discussed the plan of the CIA's organization of "a Special Defense Interrogation Program." In addition to outlining the use of drugs and hypnosis, the report brought up two other mind-bending possibilities: electroshock and ultrasonic sound.

"Psychiatrists in many nations," the report said, "have used insulin and electric shock as methods of choice under certain circumstances in their psychiatric work. Electric shock is more rapid than any of the above techniques [drugs or hypnosis]. It is instantaneous. It can be applied with or without the recipient's knowledge. Amnesia of interrogations equals that of hypnosis. If the enemy uses electric shock for interrogation purposes and the victim is available after recovery from the shock, highly trained specialists should be able to reveal the past use of electric shock by electroencephalographic analysis."

The report went on to recommend that groups within the CIA, the armed forces, and the FBI be organized and coordinated to give high-level direction to this project. "Civilian capability for solution of some of the problems should be utilized," the report said. "Close liaison between CIA and Armed Services has been established, but it is not as effective as it should be.

Liaison within the Armed Services appears to be inadequate, and they do not seem to be aware of some civilian sources of knowledge. Liaison with the FBI on this subject may be described as 'cooperative,' although somewhat mutually evasive. A satisfactory guiding organization could be set up under high-level direction for the development of an integrated program. If feasible, a committee to accomplish this purpose should be appointed." the report concluded by recommending that "a technical committee should include medical intelligence representatives from the CIA, Navy, Army, Air Force, probably the FBI and *ad hoc* Government and non-Government consultants."

From the first days of Project BLUEBIRD, and throughout all the ensuing CIA projects the goal was the same -- find answers to the following questions:

"Can accurate information be obtained from willing or unwilling individuals?

"Can Agency personnel (or persons of interest to this Agency) be conditioned to prevent any unauthorized source or enemy from obtaining information from them by any known means?

"Can we obtain control of the future activities (physical and mental) of any individual, willing or unwilling, by application of [mind control] techniques?"

Beyond the laboratory and operational research on unwitting subjects, the CIA set up training teams which included polygraph operators, interrogation specialists, hypnotists, and others in what was a long-range, all-out effort to develop reliable mind-control and counter-mind-control techniques. In all, fifteen separate research areas were defined by the CIA planners.

Most of the drug projects came under the operating authority of the U.S. Navy. At Bethesda Naval Hospital, under the direction of a Dr. Gaefsky. The drug project, begun in 1947, continued until 1972. the CIA reports defined the project as one which sought to "isolate and synthesize pure drugs for use in ***effecting psychological entry and control of the individual*** " (italics added).

Also under the navy's direction was a project headed by a Dr. Ellson at the University of Indiana called "Detection of Deception." this project was aimed at determining the physiological changes which occur when a person is engaged in deception. Mechanical and electrical devices were developed to measure these changes.

At the University of Rochester, again under navy direction, a Dr. Wendy investigated motion sickness. The CIA report describes that study as one to determine "the effect of drugs on the vestibular function of the ear and the development of side effects which indicate the possibility of psychological entry and control."

Besides mind-control drugs and techniques, also investigated were tools which might be effective in compromising individuals. One report stated that in spite of the intensive research, as late as 1960, "no effective knock-out pill, truth serum, aphrodisiac, or recruitment pill was known to exist." Towards that goal under the auspices of the U.S. Army Surgeon General's Office, a Dr. Beecher at Harvard University was given $150,000 to investigate, "the development and application of drugs which will aid in the establishment of psychological control."

And, under air force guidance, a Dr. Hastings at the University of Minnesota was engaged to research the effects of LSD on animals. His research area, as defined by CIA, also included the use of electric shock in interrogation, with particular emphasis placed on the detection of prior use of electric shock and the "guaranteed amnesia" it produced.

According to the documents, the investigation of hypnosis as a mind-control tool was kept under the aegis of the CIA. Their prime research interest was the "investigation of the possibilities of hypnotic and post-hypnotic control."

While MKULTRA was the code name for the research and development period of mind control, MKDELTA was the code name for the operational phase, during which all of the techniques of mind control were applied to individuals.

What followed next was the MKULTRANS, acting out their "mindless" roles at the behest of the cryptocracy.

Dr. Frank R. Olson, a former biochemist at Fort Detrick, Md. whose body was exhumed in 1994. While the CIA alleged that Olson had committed suicide in 1953 when he jumped or fell from the tenth floor of a New York building, the 1994 autopsy showed that Olson was dead before his body hit the pavement.

8

THE MATA HARI OF MIND CONTROL

Candy Jones was a sex symbol during World War II. Born Jessica Wilcox, with her catchy stage name and shapely legs she rose to a standing second only to Betty Grable as America's most popular pinup girl. She was a favorite of the troops at the front, and she felt it a duty to entertain them near the battlefields. After her advertised beauty faded and she could no longer serve to raise the morale of the troops with her appearance, she served her country in another way. She served under MKULTRA as a hypno-programmed CIA courier for twelve years.

While on a USO tour in the Pacific in 1945 Candy contracted a case of undulant fever and, shortly thereafter, malaria. On top of that, she caught the contagious fungus known as "jungle Rot." Within a week, her hair had begun to fall out, and her complexion had turned a sickly yellow.

The combination of these diseases sent her to a military hospital in Manila, where she met a young medical officer whom she identifies only by the pseudonym "Gilbert Jensen." Later, he would offer her the opportunity to become a CIA courier.

In 1959 Candy started a modeling school in New York. She rented office space in a modern skyscraper across the hall from an office occupied by the one-time heavyweight boxing champion, Gene Tunney. One night Candy noticed a "cleaning lady" fumbling for keys to open Tunney's door. The next day Tunney reported that his office had been burglarized, but nothing important had been stolen.

Later the same week Candy observed a young couple approaching Tunney's door. She watched as the young man took out a set of keys and went through the same trial-and-error process that the cleaning lady had performed a few nights earlier. Candy went into the hallway and asked the young man what he was doing. He told her that he was supposed to meet Tunney there. Candy informed him that Tunney had left hours before and was not expected back that evening. The couple hurriedly left.

The next day Candy told Tunney about the incident. He was not alarmed nor did he even seem to be interested that a second burglary of his office had been attempted.

One day later, in the lobby of her building, Candy ran into a retired army general she'd known in the South Pacific. The general had not known her well in the past, but now he was more than courteous. He mentioned that he was on his way to have lunch with Tunney so Candy invited him to her office first and showed him around. Then she brought him across the hall to Tunney. Tunney seemed quite surprised that Candy had known the general, and, after a brief conversation, the two men went to lunch and Candy continued with her business.

A few days later Candy was visited by a man who introduced himself as an FBI agent. he asked her about the burglary of Tunney's office, and Candy told him what she had told both Tunney and the superintendent of the building. The FBI man then unexpectedly went over to the window ledge and picked up a microphone Candy had obtained from Allen Funt of "Candid Camera" fame. The agent wanted to know what use Candy had for the microphone. She explained that she used it to tape her models' voices to help them develop their speech. The agent said that he'd been looking for just such a microphone to use in a surveillance job on Fifty-seventh Street. He asked Candy if she would mind if he borrowed it. Flattered that she'd been asked to help the FBI, Candy offered it for as long as it was needed. the FBI man thanked her and left with the microphone.

When he returned a month later, he was accompanied by another agent. After making casual conversation for a few minutes, the FBI men asked Candy if she would allow them to have some of their mail delivered to her office. There would be letters addressed to fictitious names in care of her modeling school. Some of the letters, he said, might be mailed from Europe and addressed to her, or to a specified fictitious man's name. If that happened she was supposed to call a number and report the arrival of the mail. Candy, once again flattered, said she'd be happy to help.

Two weeks after Candy took the job with the FBI, Gene Tunney moved out of his office. The general, however kept in touch with her all during that year. He invited her to several parties, and even sent her a Christmas card.

In the summer of 1960, Candy received a letter at her apartment from the first FBI man, and the next day the general called her at her office. Somehow he knew she was taking a trip to speak at the all-male Tuesday Night Supper Club in Denver, and afterwards going on to San Francisco to attend a fashion show. the general wondered if, since she was going to California anyway, she would mind carrying a letter from a government agency. He told her the letter was to be delivered to a man who would call at her hotel and identify himself.

Again flattered to be called upon to serve her country, Candy agreed to act as a courier. The important letter was hand-delivered to Candy's office a few days after the general's phone call. There were two envelopes -- a large one inside of which were her instructions and a smaller one which contained the actual letter. Candy carried the letter with her to Denver, then on to San Francisco where she waited for her contact.

Within a few days she received a call at her hotel from a man who identified himself as Gil Jensen; it was the same man who had been Candy's doctor in the Philippines.

Jensen invited her to dinner that evening at the Mark Hopkins Hotel. During dinner Candy Brought up the subject of the letter, but Jensen avoided the subject, saying they could talk about it at his office the next day.

Candy protested she had to go back to New York the next day, but Jensen would not take no for an answer. He told her it would be worth her while to stay on for a few days. "There's some interesting work you could do for the Central Intelligence Agency, Candy, without interfering with your business."

He told her that the work could be quite lucrative and since at that time she needed money, she decided to stay and find out what the CIA was offering.

The next day a car picked Candy up at her hotel and drove her across the Bay Bridge to the Oakland office of Dr. Jensen. That was the beginning of what Candy's biographer Donald Bain (who told Candy's story in the book ***The Control of Candy Jones***[35]) described as twelve years of adventure which would eventually take her to the Far East as a covert operative of the CIA.

"She would be harassed, badgered and even tortured." Bain wrote. "Her role was small, a carrier of messages, and the fact that she chose initially to perform such duties, for pay, renders the misfortunes that befell her 'occupational hazards.'

"What Candy hadn't bargained for, however, was becoming a human guinea pig in a secret CIA scientific project in which mind control was the goal.

"She was an unwilling and unknowing laboratory subject for twelve years, and only her chance marriage saved her from the final stage of her adventure -- her own suicide as choreographed by Dr. Gilbert Jensen."

In 1973 Candy Jones married an old friend, "Long John" Nebel, the host of a New York all-night radio talk show. Candy had met John in 1941, at the height of her career, when he was working as a free-lance photographer assigned by a magazine to photograph her. After losing contact with each other for more than a decade, they accidentally renewed their acquaintance and were married twenty-eight days later.

---

[35] Donald Bain, *The Control of Candy Jones*((Chicago, Playboy Press, 1976)

On their wedding night, John noticed his bride was suddenly acting out of character. She had left the bed and gone into the bathroom to look in the mirror. When she returned, John said, "I saw somebody who only *resembled* the woman I'd married." He stressed the word "resembled" because, although the body which walked out of the bathroom belonged to Candy, the being inside it did not. Her voice was cold and distant, and her expression was cruel. Soon the strange bitter mood passed and the warm and loving Candy returned.

The next evening Candy's strange "mood" returned. John naturally became curious about his wife's psycho-history and began asking questions about her past. Candy told him about her contact with the FBI in 1959. She also told him that from time to time she would still have to take little trips for the government.

On June 3, 1973, John and Candy came home early in the morning after doing one of his all-night talk shows. Candy tried to sleep, but found she could not. She tossed and turned and when she complained to John of her sleeplessness, she was near tears.

John told Candy that he'd read that hypnosis could relax insomniacs, and although he never had tried to put anyone into the trance state, he'd read a lot about it and he suggested perhaps they ought to try it. Candy laughed and said, "I can't be hypnotized, John." but a short while after John began to hypnotize her, Candy was deeply asleep.

Although John had no way of knowing it then, Candy was already a highly suggestible subject since she had been hypnotized on many previous occasions by the CIA. Because of this, whenever John sought to induce trance in Candy, she rapidly became relaxed and was able to get a full nights' natural sleep.

One night, while under John's hypnosis, Candy suddenly and spontaneously began to relive her childhood. During these age regressions, she revealed many terrible incidents in what had been, an obviously lonely and troubled past. In dreamlike monologues she related how her father had abused her. Once when she was eleven he'd crushed her fingers, one by one, in a nutcracker because she wouldn't cry when he was about to leave.

Candy's portrayal of her mother depicted a person only a little less cruel than her father. A calculating woman, she often locked Candy inside a closet as a form of punishment.

In several hypnotic monologues Candy revealed how she had developed an alter ego named Arlene to defend her from the blows of her formative years. Later, John was to discover the despicable personality which he had observed taking over his wife's consciousness on their wedding night was the same alter-ego she'd developed in her childhood. John Nebel began tape-recording his wife's hypnotic monologues.

(Bain fails to say whether or not Candy's alter ego playmate was a manifestation of what was then thought to be the rare illness known as Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD). Since 1976 the psychiatric community has come awake to the fact that there are tens of thousands of people suffering from what is today called Dissociative Identity Disorder(DID), but then there were only a handful of cases diagnosed. We now know that DID children were recruited by the cryptocracy which made good use of their many outstanding capabilities.)

One day, while under hypnosis, Candy told John about working with Dr. Jensen in California. She revealed that Jensen worked for the CIA and she did, too, but John was not interested in the CIA story.

John became interested, however, when his wife described how Dr. Jensen had tried to hypnotize her. According to Candy, when Jensen had suggested she submit to hypnosis and she had told him with great certainty that she couldn't be hypnotized, he had agreed with her that this was probably true, judging from what he knew of her personality.

John had read that the best way to deal with a subject who believes he cannot be hypnotized is first to agree with him, then to proceed to demonstrate how a hypnotist might try to induce trance. John's subsequent hypnotic sessions with Candy verified that was exactly what Jensen had done. But he'd gone one step further.

According to the memories dredged up from Candy's subconscious, Jensen had regularly given her injections of "vitamins." John thought these might actually have been hypnotic drugs. Although Candy had probably always been a good hypnotic subject, narco-hypnosis provided access to greater depths in her already pliable personality.

When John began asking Candy about Jensen in her conscious state he found that she could provide little information about him. She could only recall visiting Jensen on that first trip for the CIA. She had no memory of what had happened in his office, nor of the events of her life which immediately followed that visit. John began to fear that the CIA doctor still possessed a hold over his wife's mind.

Over the course of many hypnotic sessions with Candy, John Nebel gathered up her fragments of memory and wove them into a picture of a satanic CIA doctor. But reports Donald Bain, "the major difficulty in dredging up this material is that Candy Jones was programmed by Jensen not to remember, and this programming proved frighteningly effective."

John later discovered that on that first visit, Jensen had obtained from Candy the important piece of information about her imaginary playmate named Arlene. This single fact provided the basis for the methodical splitting of her personality, for it was Arlene that Jensen wished to cultivate as a courier, not Candy.

Candy's willingness to carry messages was the extent of her conscious cooperation with the CIA. But from the first visit to Jensen's office she had become an unwitting victim of Operation Mind Control. Jensen had her sign a security oath which officially made her an employee of the government, and as such she forfeited her right to legal compensation for the harm done her by the ruthless mind-control operation.

Jensen also placed her against a large sheet of paper and traced her silhouette. Then he photographed her and asked her to pick a pseudonym for a new passport. She suggested her actual middle name Arlene.

In answer to Jensen's questions she revealed that her imaginary playmate had spelled her name A-r-l-e-n-e. Jensen said that he didn't care which way she spelled it and asked her to pick a last name as well. Candy suggested the name Grant, which was the last part of her grandmothers's name, Rosengrant and "Arlene Grant" was agreed upon. It would be an easy name for Candy to remember since that was the very name she had given her alter ego in childhood.

As time went on, John found that he was talking more to Arlene than to Candy. In one session John asked Arlene if she thought Jensen had in any way crippled her. Arlene scornfully replied that Candy had not wanted to be programmed, but that "she didn't know what end was up."

John asked Arlene who had developed her, and she replied, "Mother Jensen. He hatched me like a mother hen." Jensen had told her to come through Candy's stomach, she said. He'd say, "A.G.! A.G.!" and Candy would experience a severe stomach pain before Arlene took over her personality. When she refused to come when she was called, Jensen would give Candy an injection, and one day he miscalculated and gave her three injections, which put Candy to sleep for fourteen hours. Jensen had quite a scare because he had a difficult time reviving her.

Under John's hypnosis, Candy revealed that she had been given a number of drugs by Jensen: possibly aminazin, reserpine, and sulfazin, as well as the "truth drugs" sodium amytal and sodium pentothal. She was programmed not to allow any doctor except Jensen to treat her, and never to allow anyone to give her thorazine, the powerful tranquilizer.

The details of Candy's role as a mind-controlled CIA courier were pieced together from hundreds of hours of tapes of her hypnotic monologues. She worked for the CIA under her professional name Candy Jones, under the name Arlene Grant, and under her given name, Jessica Wilcox. She was first ordered to lease a post-office box at Grand Central Station in the none of Jessica Wilcox in August of 1961. She maintained this box until 1968 or 1969 and paid for it herself. Mail seldom arrived at the box, but when it did Candy would take it to her office and hold it for an unidentified man who always made the pickup, or sometimes, a phone call would order Candy to deliver certain letters to various locations around the city.

Slowly it began to dawn on Candy that some of the people she was delivering mail to might be just the kind of people who could kill her for reasons of their own. To protect herself, she wrote a letter to her attorney and put two copies in safe deposit boxes at different banks. The letter stated that for reasons she couldn't disclose she often used the names Arlene Grant, Jessica Wilcox, and Candy Jones. She wanted to put on record the fact that these different names all referred to her. In the event of her death she wrote, whether it was due to accident or sudden illness, whether it happened in the United States or outside the country, there should be a thorough investigation. She wrote that although she was not at liberty to divulge her sideline activities, she was not performing illegal, immoral, or unpatriotic acts.

Candy held that assumption to the end of her days, even after hearing her own voice under hypnosis tell tales of physical torture, of illegal entries and exits from the country, and of the most shocking kind of abuse at the hands of the CIA. Candy probably still would do almost anything out of this hypno-cultivated sense of patriotism.

Eventually John tried to get his wife to see a psychiatrist, but she refused, saying that if she did so she would get very sick and might even have a convulsion. Evidently Jensen had told her this. Even talking about possible therapy gave Candy severe stomach cramps.

Candy had been programmed so that she would not only be protected from foreign intelligence operations, but from *everyone*, the CIA included. Jensen planned to use her for some evil design of his own.

Candy Jones was, in fact, not one, but two zombies, Candy and Arlene, sibling rivals trapped inside the same skin.

They would talk to each other but never about each other to anyone but Jensen. They traveled together on the CIA assignments, Candy Jones being the person who acted within the United States, and Arlene Grant, the alter who took over once the airplane left the country.

Usually when Candy arrived in San Francisco from New York she would immediately go to Jensen's office. There she would change clothes, don a black wig, and pick up her fake passport in the name of Arlene Grant. Jensen would call forth the Arlene personality and send her off to Southeast Asia to deliver her messages. In his book, Donald Bain writes that Arlene often carried an envelope, but he wonders, wisely, if in fact there was any thing in the envelope. The possibility is strong that Candy carried her secret messages within her mind, locked behind posthypnotic blocks which could be released only by hearing the proper cue.

In 1966 she was sent on several missions to Taiwan where three businessmen were her contacts.

On her first mission to Taiwan, Arlene was met at the airport by one of them. She immediately offered him the envelope, but he insisted that she accompany him to his home, which turned out to be a large and institutional-like structure located on an impressive estate twenty miles outside Taipei. In front of the house a long row of trees lined the driveway which circumscribed a lush green lawn. There were other buildings on the property some distance from the main house.

As he escorted Arlene into the house she noticed two Chinese women dressed in lab coats on the lawn. She asked him who these women were, and he explained that they were only household help. During that first three-day visit the man entertained Arlene royally. he took her to extravagant dinners and on an extensive sightseeing tour of the island.

When she returned to San Francisco, Jensen met her at the airport and drove her back to his office. There he gave her an intravenous injection of drugs and restored her to the Candy Jones personality. She turned in her Arlene Grant passport and put her black wig, dark makeup, and clothing in a closet in Jensen's office. On that trip she also turned over to Jensen several rolls of exposed film which she had taken on her sightseeing tour. On her return to New York, she found her staff at the modeling agency very upset because she had forgotten to tell anyone where she was going or how long she would be gone.

A month later, Candy was again summoned to San Francisco. Jensen put her through the same procedure as before, having Arlene Grant emerge and travel to Taiwan. Again, the same man met her at the airport and took her to his country home. Again she stayed for three days. But this time she was not a guest but a prisoner.

Candy recalled, through John's questioning under hypnosis, that she was hooked up to an electric box of some kind and was shocked repeatedly on her shoulders, arms and breasts. The Chinese grilled her about the contents of the envelope she'd just delivered. She protested that she did not know anything about its contents, but that answer did not satisfy her torturers.

When she wouldn't change her story, they turned to questions about Dr. Jensen. Arlene maintained that she did not know Dr. Jensen. Obstinately, she stuck to her programmed cover story, even though she was severely and repeatedly shocked.

Although the real event had taken place almost ten years earlier, the physical impressions revived by reliving these experiences under her husband's hypnosis were so strong that her lymph system responded protectively and pumped fluid to her shin producing blisters in the exact places where the electrodes had been attached.

According to Candy's recollection, the torture stopped only after the Chinese man talked with someone on the telephone. Following his conversation he unstrapped her from the chair and seemed most friendly and apologetic. He told her the electrodes had been used not to torture her but to try and jog her memory. After lunch he drove her to the airport and put her on a plane for San Francisco. She remembers that on the return flight she wore gloves in order to hide the blisters. She also recalls that her hands smelled of sulfuric acid, although she has no recollection of having been burned with it.

At San Francisco, Jensen met her and gave her the customary injection after they reached his office. He told her that the torture had been a mistake, the result of a typographical error in the message she had carried.

In 1968 Candy was again sent to Taiwan. Normally an individual would not knowingly and willingly place herself in a position to be tortured a second time, but Jensen's control over Candy was so complete that she did his bidding without the slightest hesitation.

The final trip to Taiwan brought her into contact with other Taiwanese. She delivered her envelope, this time to a girl in an art gallery. She remembers that after the girl took the envelope from her, she spit in her face. Under hypnosis Candy could not recall any reason why the girl had done so.

After delivering the message, Arlene was picked up by the same man and driven to his home. Again she was tortured with electrodes and questioned about the contents of the message she'd delivered. When she would not or could not answer, her torturers put her hand in a box which contained a scorpion. This apparently was supposed to be a scare tactic, for when the scorpion bit her, the torturers immediately stopped the shocks and gave her antibiotics and administered other medical treatment.

Candy told her husband that on another occasion her thumbnails had been cut to the quick in an attempt to make her talk. She remembered that this had taken place on January 24, 1968. On still another occasion, something had been put in her ears to cause pain. But throughout all this torture, Jensen's programming held. She said nothing.

In another hypnosis session Arlene told about getting dizzy in a Taiwan hotel after having one drink. She began to sweat profusely and went to a bathroom which had a little dressing room and a bed in it. An attendant accompanied her and took her clothes and hung them up since they had become drenched with perspiration. She was given a dressing gown and allowed to lie down. Eventually a doctor came to see her. He gave her an injection and she drifted off to sleep.

After the doctor left the room, the female attendant came over and began to pinch her on different parts of her body, asking her where "the papers" were. When the attendant began to pinch Arlene's nipples, she fainted from the pain. The woman persisted, repeatedly pulling her to a sitting position and severely pinching her nipples.

When the woman finally left the room, Candy remembers, she tried to crawl under the bed to hide. The doctor came back and gave her another injection. The next day when she awoke and dressed, she was courteously escorted to the airport by her torturers as if nothing had happened.

When she got back to Jensen's office, she reported the incident to him. He seemed most concerned about it but when he asked to see her bruises, she refused to show him her black and blue nipples.

On a number of occasions Candy was sent to the Central Intelligence Agency's training ground called "The Farm." Known to the outside world as Camp Peary, it appeared to be an ordinary military installation. There Candy learned how to search a room, and various guerrilla warfare tactics including how to commit undetectable arson. She was taught how to use a poison lipstick to take her own life, and how to use the same lipstick to kill someone else by sticking a pin inside it, then jabbing the intended victim. She learned how to use acid as a defensive and offensive weapon. She learned how to fire various weapons, how to climb ropes, and how to write coded messages on her fingernails and cover them with polish. The training at "The Farm" was known as 3-D: "Detect, Destroy, and Demolish."

At one point Candy told her husband of an especially outrageous incident which took place at CIA headquarters in Langley, Virginia. She had been taken to an amphitheater where more than two dozen CIA men were gathered to witness a performance of Dr. Jensen's stable of zombies. There were eight subjects scheduled for the performance and Candy was the first.

In a deep hypnotic trance, she was made to lie naked on a table. The table was wheeled before the CIA audience and Candy was introduced to the group as Laura Quidnick. She wore her Arlene wig during the entire performance.

Dr. Jensen demonstrated his complete control over the prone, disrobed figure of Candy Jones. He lit a candle and told his nude subject that she would not feel a thing. Then he shoved the burning candle deep into her vagina. Several of the witnesses tried to break through Jensen's control, but they all failed. "Candy is perfect," Arlene told John. "Jensen proved in Virginia how impossible it was to break his control."

Piecing together such fragmented incidents of Candy's secret CIA past, John Nebel discovered that his wife had been programmed to commit suicide once she was no longer useful to the CIA. The self-destruct program was to be activated in Nassau. She was to check into the Paradise Beach Hotel on December 31, 1972. She'd stayed at the hotel many times before on normal business trips, so there was nothing unusual about that. But on this occasion Arlene was primed to spontaneously take over Candy's body upon receiving a phone call from Jensen. She was programmed to walk Candy's body to a steep cliff overlooking the sea and there to make a high dive. This was to be the last dive of Candy Jones' life, for from that location her body would certainly have crashed into the rocks on the beach below.

It was extremely fortunate that Candy married John Nebel on the very day she was supposed to check into the hotel. The marriage, by putting off the Nassau trip, had short-circuited Jensen's program of suicide, which was scheduled for the same month.

Even to the end of her life, despite John's help in countering much of Jensen's programming, Candy was still not completely free of his control over her mind. Still, whenever she looked into a mirror, she felt Arlene struggling to take over her consciousness.

Although Candy told Jensen that she was through working for the Agency in the middle of 1972, more than six months after she and John were married a strange phone call was recorded on their answering machine. The message was: "Japan Airlines calling on the 03 July at 4:10 p.m.... Please have Miss Grant call 759-9100... She is holding new reservation on Japan Airlines Flight 5, for the sixth of July, Kennedy-Tokyo, with an open on to Taipei. This is per Cynthia that we are calling. Thank you."

A check with Japan Airlines disclosed that the number 759-9100 was indeed the reservation number for the airline. There was, however, no record in the airline's computer of the reservation or a record of who made it. Neither was there a reservation clerk named Cynthia, or anyone else at the airline by that name. the "per Cynthia" phrase may have been a code which was supposed to trigger Candy's automatic program, or it may have been a thin disguise for the Agency represented by Cynthia's first and Last two letters.

Candy's controlled mind and John Nebel's sense of patriotism prevented the whole truth of the story from emerging. For some reason John Nebel, Candy Jones and Donald Bain conceal the real names of Candy's programmers. In Bain's book the name Gilbert Jensen is said to be a pseudonym.

Another doctor, who supposedly conditioned to hate and distrust people, is given the name "Dr. Marshall Burger" in the book, though at one point there is a footnote stating that Nebel wondered if Burger wasn't a cover name for the California hypnotist Dr. William Jennings Bryan. (In a samisdat document supposed to have come from a CIA briefing,(see Chapter 37) it was noted that Bryan had been one of the programmers of Sirhan Sirhan.)

Bryan, as noted in an earlier chapter, was the hypnotist and physician who offered the long-distance, instant diagnosis that Gary Powers had been "Powerized" by the Soviets. He was formerly a hypnotist for the air force and has been linked to the CIA. He was also the technical consultant for the film ***The Manchurian Candidate.***

According to the April 22,1969, *Los Angeles Times*, the California State Board of Medical Examiners found him guilty of "unprofessional conduct in four cases involving sexual molesting of female patients." For this offense Bryan was only placed on five years' probation -- the lightness of the penalty might well have been accomplished through his connections with the CIA.

Alan W. Scheflin, and attorney who spent five years researching the subject of mind control for his book *The Mind Manipulators*, said he has evidence which suggests that the Nebels and Donald Bain may be concealing the fact that the "doctor" who programmed Candy is the same doctor who programmed Lee Harvey Oswald, James Earl Ray and Sirhan Beshara Sirhan.

In early 1976 Candy Jones and I both spoke on a KSAN radio special on mind control. I was interviewed via telephone and Candy was interviewed in the studio. We did not meet face to face, but KSAN provided all the participants with duplicate tapes of the program.

On the KSAN program Candy Jones and Donald Bain both insisted, despite my own evidence and arguments, the testimony of Jessica Mitford, and the evidence provided by two other investigative reporters that Candy had been only a human guinea pig used for experimental purposes. The records of the CIA mind-control project clearly show, however, that during the 1960s the cryptocracy's mind control had gone far beyond the experimental stage. On that radio show, Candy herself revealed that Sir William Stephenson (*A Man Called Intrepid*) believed that she was no guinea pig. She reported that Stephenson wrote her that as far back as the early days of World War II he had used zombie agents like her in the service of British Intelligence.

Shortly after the program was aired I called Nebel's office to try and make contact with Candy or John. They had ignored my previous letters and my calls were taken by their producer, who tried to help me but finally had to report that the Nebels were not interested in being interviewed. I subsequently learned that neither would they grant an interview to John Marks of the Center for National Security Studies.

My Attempt to clarify the question of whether or not Dr. William Jennings Bryan had anything to do with programming Candy Jones was also frustrated by his avoidance of me. I persisted in trying to get an interview with him until March of 1977, when Dr. Bryan died prematurely at the age of fifty, allegedly of a heart attack. He was a rather flamboyant man who toured the country holding "conferences" where he would lecture on the uses of hypnosis in police interrogation. He died at one such conference in Las Vegas, Nevada, only months after his name was raised in connection with Candy Jones.

Both Long John and Candy are now moulding in their graves. Among the legacy they left are questions which begged for their answers: What are the real names of the men who programmed Candy? Why weren't they included in the book? What are Candy's and John's personal political affiliations? Why were they not outraged by Candy's manipulation? Why are they attempting to protect the guilty and justify the rape of Candy's body and mind by the "national security" rationale? Why wouldn't they sit still and let me interview them in detail?

In light of Candy's disclaimer, and the Nebels' refusal to clear up these questions, I can only ask the reader to decide whether or not Candy Jones was a courier in a fully operational sense, or only an experimental guinea pig, as she tried to make us believe.

The late Candy Jones, Powers model, CIA courier, Dissociative Identity Disordered by the cryptocracy. (Note her pupils are dilated in the strong light. This could indicated that she was in a drugged state when this photo was taken.) Today Candy is recognized as among the first "Presidential Models" by the survivors of the so-called Monarch Project.

9

THE STORY OF O

Due to the volatile nature of the information contained in her story, I am withholding this victim's identity. The evidence is still being uncovered. Others are coming forward with corroborating information. While details of her testimony is still being checked, we do know, that what she describes in her story is entirely possible, so, from the perspective of students of mind control this story has great value as it is here presented. Future editions may contain more.

We'll call her O. She was born in 1957. Her first memories are of being suffocated by her father's penis in what was to be a childhood of continual sexual abuse. After six years of "deprogramming" with Mark Phillips, O has come to reintegrate her fragmented personality and has gained access to most of the shocking memories of her abuse by, among others, high government officials.

In her unpublished autobiography O writes: "I recall as a toddler being unable to run (I could barely walk) to my mother for help as my instincts demanded..." describing one moment of the lurid details which drove her to a condition many call Multiple Personality Disorder. Instead of helping, her mother abused her.

"Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD)," she explains, "is the mind's sane defense to an insane situation — a way of dealing with trauma that is literally too horrible to comprehend. By compartmentalizing the memory of such horrendous abuse as incestuous rape, which violates primitive instincts and surpasses pain tolerance, the rest of the mind can function "normally" as though nothing has happened. This compartmentalization is created by the brain actually shutting down neuron pathways to a specific part of the brain. These neuron pathways are triggered open again when the abuse recurs, whereby the same part of the brain that is already conditioned to the trauma deals with it again... and again... as needed..."

The results of this childhood abuse left little O unable to recall her father's sexual assaults. Until she saw or felt his penis thrust at her in another attack she remained innocent and open, amnesic of the previous abuses. "As quickly as I felt the terror from conditioned response (to his sexual assault)," she writes, "my neuron pathways opened up instantaneously to the part of my brain that had previously endured the trauma. This part of my mind developed into a personality of its own which belonged to my father... which he rented out and later sold to the U.S. Government."

Her father (through her own investigations) was apparently a multigenerational incest victim himself from a large, poor and "horribly dysfunctional family where his mother earned a living as a prostitute to local lumbermen... My father's brothers and sister," O says, "were all sexually and (occult) ritually abused just as he was, and they grew up to be drug addicts, prostitutes, street derelicts and pedophiles who also sexually abused me and my brothers and sisters." (By occult ritually abused, O means such as in the black rites of Satanism.)

O's case duplicates the mind control effects described by the cases of David, Luis Castillo and Candy Jones. But it goes further because O says she's regained her memory and reintegrated her multiple personalities, remembering the process that she was a courier (like David and Candy) who carried secret messages locked behind posthypnotic blocks, and she muled drugs (mostly cocaine) for the CIA and performed perverted sex acts for a number of leading politicians including two Presidents of the United States while they were in office and one before he came to office. Her father prostituted her to his friends, local mobsters, Masons, relatives, Satanists, strangers and police officers before he entered her into service of the cryptocracy.

Young O and her siblings were used in child porn films by her father and her uncle. As a child she was forced to perform sex acts before the cameras with her Uncle's boxer dog, Buster.

It was her uncle, she says, who informed her father of "the U.S. government Defense Intelligence Agency's mind control operation that was recruiting multigenerational incest abused children with Multiple Personality Disorder for its... mind control studies. I was a prime candidate, a "chosen one", and my father seized the opportunity as it would provide him immunity from prosecution (for the child porn charge he was facing)." Her father, she says was hurriedly flown to Boston for a two week course on "how to raise me for this off-shoot of the MKultra Project, Project Monarch."

When he returned from Boston, she says, he was smiling and pleased with his knowledge of what he termed "reverse psychology." This she describes as puns and "phrases that stuck in my mind like 'You earn your keep, and I'll keep what you earn.'" Her description of her father's newly acquired linguistic techniques include what David called "audio-reversals."

It is slowly coming into acceptance among the psychiatric community that people suffering from Multiple Personality Disorders often exhibit unusual abilities in their different personalities. While the "control" or day-to-day normal personality might be seriously nearsighted, another personality might have 20/20 vision. Quite common is the hypermnesia David described, and the high tolerance to pain we find in Candy Jones' story. O has her own version of these abilities.

"I learned to read at the young age of 4 due to my photographic memory which is a result of MPD. Our government researchers," O says, "knew about the photographic memory aspect of MPD, as well as the increased visual acuity which is 44 times greater than that of the average person, the unusually high pain tolerance, and the compartmentalization of memory, all of which were appealing for military and covert operations development. Additionally, my sexuality was primitively twisted since infancy... which was appealing to perverse politicians who could hide their actions deep within my memory compartments referred to as personalities...

"I had personalities for pornography, a personality for bestiality, a personality for incest, a personality for withstanding the horrendous psychological abuse of my mother, a personality that witnessed my occult father ritually murdering a man, a personality for prostitution, while the rest of 'me', functioned somewhat 'normally' at school. My 'normal' personality provided a cover for the abuse I was enduring, but best of all it had hope — hope that there was somewhere in the world where people did not hurt each other..."

O's young mind was scrambled with the "Project Monarch methodologies", she says, which confused fantasy with reality. Disney stories, Cinderella and the Wizard of Oz were placed at the base of her programming.

When she was 13, with her breasts beginning to swell, she was judged to be "too old" for pedophile perversions. It was then that she was "sold" to U.S. Congressman, Senator Robert C. Byrd (Democrat West Virginia). From that point on, she says, "my MPD existence became more regimented... I was kept physically worn down to the point of exhaustion in order that I be sufficiently receptive to my father's limited hypnotic programming capabilities ...

"My television, books, and music became even more strictly controlled and monitored than before, not only to infringe on my last minuscule freedom of choice, but for total mind control conditioning purposes.

"For example, the annual television of Judy Garland's Wizard of Oz was celebrated as a holiday around my house to prepare my mind for future base programming on the theme that I, like Dorothy, could 'spin' into another dimension 'over the Rainbow.' After all, 'Birds (Byrds) fly over the Rainbow...'

"My father insisted I watch the Walt Disney movie 'Cinderella' with him, paralleling my existence to Cinderella's — 'magically trance-forming from a dirty little slave to a beautiful Princess' — and in typical 'reverse psychology' humor, he referred to pornographic photos when singing 'someday my prints (Prince) will come', or by placing literal sexual emphasis on 'will come.'

"My brother, who was often featured in kiddie porn with me, was not a 'chosen one' for Project Monarch (beyond supplying more children to be dedicated in later years), yet my father figured what was good for me would be good for my brother. He took us to see Walt Disney's "Pinnochio", explaining that my brother and I were his puppets still in the carving stage. The distortions of reality that these and other Disney theme movies provided when coupled with my father's controlling conscious and subconscious influence, began to further erode our ability to discern fantasy from reality. My brother, now 37, remains psychologically locked in to those traumatic childhood years and is obsessed with Disney to this day, decorating his house in Disney memorabilia, wearing Disney clothes, listening to my father's instructions on his Disney telephone, and maintains 'When you wish upon a star' as his favorite song, with no conscious idea as to why..."

Every other Project Monarch "slave" she met, had been programmed along similar lines as she had. "I had to watch such programs as 'I Dream of Jeanie', 'The Brady Bunch', 'Gumby and Pokey', and 'Bewitched'. I could relate to the Genie pleasing her master, who was a Major in the Air Force in 'I Dream of Jeanie.' This served to confuse the reality of my own experiences with the fantasy of the TV production. I told all outsiders that my family was 'just like the Bradys'. Through 'Gumby and Pokey' I was led to believe that I was as flexible as these clay figures, capable of being physically maneuvered into any sexual position. In 'Bewitched' it is the normal next door neighbor that is considered crazy rather than the witches, another reversal that applied to my bizarre existence..."

O says her father took advantage of his new political connections and advanced himself in his work. "Soon he was promoted... due to who he knew within the Pentagon Procurement Office and General Services Administration, and what he had learned about double bind hypnotic persuasion... In true pedophile fashion, he surrounded himself with children by coaching little league sports, chaperoning school and Catechism activities, and becoming involved with the Boy Scouts, all of which made him appear to be a pillar of the community. The illusion was forming..."

Abused by both government representatives and priests in the Catholic church, O says that there are strong "political ties between the Catholic Church and the U.S. government" which was "evidenced by the much publicized relationship between the President and the Pope during the Reagan Administration. But this political relationship was evident to me years before through experiencing... direct involvement in Project Monarch's physical and psychological conditioning" and abuse.

Satanic rituals, she says, were often used to traumatize her in attempts to further fragment her personality. But that, she says, "did not promote the helpless attitude" that was desired. What they wanted, she says, was to make people believe that there was "spiritual warfare" going on which was beyond mankind's ability to stop.

"I knew it was my father, not Satan, that murdered the unsuspecting hunter in the woods during a ritual. And I knew no spirits or demons were being appeased by my Uncle Bob's slaughter of numerous pets, even when Bunny screamed like a woman while being tortured to death. Regardless of my spiritual beliefs. I experienced the 'results' just the same, being subjected to and witnessing trauma so horrible it literally drove me out of my mind, while my body was raped, tortured, and ravaged by men.."

"Whether I was in a military, NASA, or government building, the procedure for maintaining me under total mind control remained consistent with Project Monarch requirements. This included physical and/or psychological trauma; sleep, food, and water deprivation; high voltage electric shock; and hypnotic and/or harmonic programming of specific memory compartments /personalities. The high tech equipment and methods I endured from that time on gave our government absolute control of my mind and life since I had been literally driven out of my conscious mind, and I existed only through my programmed subconscious. I lost my free will, ability to reason, and I could not think to question anything that was happening to me. I could only do as I was told."

In the summer of 1975, O's family drove her from Michigan to the Teton Mountains of Wyoming. There she was introduced to Dick Cheney, Wyoming's Congressman who had become the White House Chief of Staff to President Ford and eventually Secretary of Defense to George Bush.

O says Cheney enjoyed a sadistic ritual called "A Most Dangerous Game." Originally devised to train the military in survival and combat maneuvers, it was used on O as a means of further conditioning her mind to believe that "there was no place to hide," as well as to more deeply traumatize her for ensuing programming.

"It was my experience over the years," O says, "that A Most Dangerous Game has numerous variations of the primary theme of being stripped naked and turned loose in the wilderness while being hunted by men. In reality, the 'wilderness' area was enclosed in military fencing and it was only a matter of time until I was caught, repeatedly raped and tortured.

"Dick Cheney has an apparent 'addiction' to the 'thrill of the sport', and appears obsessed with playing A Most Dangerous Game as a means of traumatizing mind control victims, as well as for his own sexual kink. My introduction to t he game occurred upon arrival, and it physically and psychologically devastated me..."

O says she was so traumatized by the event that after it she stood trembling "naked in his dark hunting lodge office after being hunted down and caught.

"Cheney was talking as he paced around," she says. " I could stuff you and mount you like a jackalope and call you a two-legged dear. Or I could stuff you with this (he unzipped his pants to reveal his oversized penis) right down your throat, and then mount you. Which do you prefer?"

While O stood silently trembling, not knowing what to say, blood and sweat and dirt slid down her legs and shoulders.

"Make up your mind, Cheney shouted," O says. "You don't get a choice anyway. I make up your mind for you. That's why you're here. For me to make you a mind and make you mine/mind. You lost your mind a long time ago. Now I'm going to give you one. Just like the Wizard (of Oz) gave Scarecrow a brain, the Yellow Brick Road led you here to me. You've come such a long long way for your brain, and I will give you one."

When O asked to use the bathroom Cheney's face turned red with rage, she says, and he was on her in an instant, slamming her back into the wall, growling, "If you don't mind me, I will kill you. I could kill you... Kill you... with my bare hands. You're not the first and you won't be the last. I'll kill you any time I goddamn well please."

"He flung me on the cot that was behind me, and finished taking his rage out on me sexually," O says. During that assault Cheney used an electric cattle prod on the young woman.

The following year, O says, she was "dropped off" at the Kennedy Space Center in Titusville, Florida where she was subjected to her first NASA programming. "From then on, I was obsessed with following the Yellow Brick Road to Nashville, Tennessee where she got involved with people in the country music business who were working undercover for the cryptocracy.

"In the early 1980's, my base programming was instilled by US Army Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, who holds a Top Secret clearance in the Defense Intelligence Agency's Psychological Warfare Division (Psyops). Aquino is a professed Neo-Nazi, the founder of the Himmler inspired occult Temple of Set, and has been charged with child ritual and sexual abuse at the Presidio Day Care in San Francisco, Ca. But like my father, Aquino remains 'above the law' while he continues to traumatize and program CIA destined young minds in a quest to create the 'superior race' of Project Monarch mind controlled slaves. I quickly learned that Aquino did not adhere to his profoundly professed occult superstition any more than I did, and that his "satanic power" was in the form of numerous variations of high voltage stun guns, which he used on me regularly. Although Aquino used occultism (blood trauma) as a trauma base, his programming was high tech and "clean" — not muddled in a proverbial witches brew of ignorance. He quickly dispelled the... influence (of her previous programmers), and began programming me according to Byrd's specifications... as his 'own little witch' for sadistic sex and covert CIA drug muling, blackmail and prostitution operations."

"Aquino provided the ancient instructions on how to mutilate me," O says. Silver nitrite and hot exacto knives were used to carve the details of the "witch" on her vagina without any form of anesthesia. The muscles were cut so that when she flexed, they would protrude from her body showing the hideous face. This was done, not only as a "curiosity" but because, according to O, it made her vagina "suited to Byrd's tiny, underdeveloped penis," and made her "Byrd's own little witch" for "which witch is which" programming.

In 1981, Byrd joined Aquino at Huntsville, Alabama during one of the programming sessions. O says, "NASA cooperates with Byrd since it is Byrd's Appropriations Committee that determines how much and/or whether or not NASA receives any government funding. I laid naked on the cold metal table, tranced and photographically recording every word and detail of my programming and every word that Byrd and Aquino exchanged. Byrd was providing Aquino with specific details of certain perversions he wanted me equipped to fulfill or perform. Additionally, they talked about scrambling my immediate memory with two private porn films they were arranging to have produced locally... "How to Divide a Personality" and "How to Create a Sex Slave." These films are the kind NASA became involved in producing for the dual purpose of "scrambling" memory as well as documenting their mind control procedures. The resident pornographers were two local police, one of which was a Sergeant, and this serves NASA and CIA well when cover-up is necessary. I photo-identified the Sergeant and his (jailer) officer in 1990, and my life was threatened as a result of this revelation.

"The 'How to Create a Sex Slave' film depicts the common 'spin' programming, which in essence is the combination to unlocking or accessing a specific programmed act. For example, the compartment of the brain that holds memory of incest is stimulated to open when the abuse occurs again. Seeing my father's penis would 'trigger' specific responses, supposedly opening the neuron pathways of my brain to allow the part of my brain that dealt with him before to deal with him again. With 'spin' programming, the 'trigger of seeing my father's penis is replaced with a combination of specific verbal commands and a specific number of revolutions in turning my body so that anyone with the combination could access that particular part of my brain. The part of my mind originally abused by my father learned to 'like' sex... painful sex. Byrd wanted me programmed in such a way that he could decide if he wanted me to scream and cry when he whipped me, or if he wanted me to become sexually aroused and beg for more. After programming when I met with Byrd, I would 'dance' like a music box dancer, twirling 'round and 'round until Byrd's fiddle 'music' stopped. My brain knew how many revolutions I had made whether I was capable of conscious counting or not, and the desired results were produced (and the appropriate state) accessed.

"This is but one simplified example of sex programming, and I was programmed for more than sex. But this particular incident of programming at the US Army Redstone Arsenal would change my existence entirely and set the stage for my role in covert government operations as a 'Presidential Model.'"

"The majority of my programming," O continues, "was Oz theme based, which meant the combination of codes, keys and triggers to access me were related to L. Frank Baum's Wizard of Oz. CIA cryptic language is a manipulation of the English language in such a way that words have double meaning, much the way people familiar with each other have 'inside jokes.' Since a mind controlled slave exists through their very literal subconscious, which has no way of discerning fantasy from reality, or intended meaning from literal, cryptic language is especially effective. Many CIA covert operations I was involved in occurred in public, and anyone who might have overheard the conversation would have heard something very different than what actually 'trance-spired.' For example, my escort linked arms with me like Dorothy's companions did with her when walking the Yellow Brick Road in the Wizard of Oz, which must have appeared normal or even romantic to outsiders, but signaled me that I had better follow 'directions.' He read the sign on the door 'Service Entrance'... accentuating syllables ever so slightly so that I heard him command 'Serve us. En-Trance.'

"After Aquino instilled my base sex programming, I was often taken... to Youngstown, Ohio to attend the sex slave training camp referred to as 'Charm School,'" O says. Often O was trained "with other CIA/Mob slaves." Whenever 'Charm School' was in session, O says, "there were several girls being tortured and trained at once. I have seen and known numerous girls to go through 'Charm School', but understandably very few are reported to have survived or recovered their minds enough to talk about it."

This so-called 'Charm School', O says, was owned and operated by a member of a prominent banking family, who took the name and role of 'Governor' from the movie 'My Fair Lady' in an attempt to confuse reality with movie fantasy." (In the movie, "Governor" is the cockney title given Professor Dolittle who transforms a female street urchin into a high society lady.) "Additionally, the title of 'Governor" was intended to create a scramble for the real Governor who often frequented the school as though it were a whore house." (The Governor of Pennsylvania at that time was Richard Thornburgh.)

"Charm School," O says, "meant I would be charmed, mesmerized (hypnotized), and programmed to be a high-class prostitute for politicians. I did learn their way to walk. I learned when to talk, how to dress, how to sit, stand, etc... table manners were not taught as they were not needed since slaves endured food and water deprivation when working..." Noticeable in O's behavior is her conditioned way of sitting, walking, talking, and smiling, in a quite charming if artificial manner, not unlike the behavior of sorority girls in the South during the late '50's or early '60's.

A typical three-day course at "Charm School", O says, included the "usual factors of sleep, food and water deprivation, trauma and high voltage programming (aversive conditioning with electric shocks.) "Often experimental drugs or tried-and-proven CIA manufactured 'designer' drugs were administered which produced specific brain wave activity to maximize and/or compartmentalize programs. I usually spent the first day hanging in the dungeon.

Charm School was housed in a historic stone railroad magnet's former residence, in the basement wine celler. "It is dark, damp and musty," O says, "and has been decorated in classic torture chamber fashion complete with hanging chains, stretching rack, whips, alter and animal altars.

"As I hung by my wrists, I could hear and smell the animals in the next cells..." A managerie of animals were kept in the 'Charm School dungeons. According to O there was a black Nubian goat called "Satan", a small donkey named "Nester', and a small white pony called "Trigger" and various dogs, and snakes.

The animals were trained to respond sexually to the smell of urine. As O describes it, "when someone entered my cell and urinated on me, I knew I would soon be released from my chains and led to the animal altar for bestiality lessons, pornography, or to please a perverse onlooker. I was hung by my ankles, stretched on the rack, burned and tortured repeatedly. My feet and hands were chained to a wall for what was termed 'off the wall sex', and I was taught 'Silence!' in Oz fashion since screaming did not produce results anyway. I was repeatedly filmed pornographically, and always taken upstairs to 'the Master's Chambers' for prostitution to various participants..."

Other programming took place at Tinker Air Force Base Near Tulsa, Oklahoma. "At Tinker, the Disney theme of Peter Pan's Never Never Land was cryptically used to further convince my child personalities that reality was fantasy, and that I would 'Never grow up' due to the timelessness of my existence. I was cryptically labeled a "Tinker-Belle", which signaled 'those in the know' that I had endured government military programming consistent with Tinker AFB mind control research and development. My 'Tinker-Belle' conditioning further enhanced my photographic memory through direct control for receiving and delivering government messages — a computerizaton/compartmentalizaiton of my brain, so to speak. I was also trained in covert criminal operations, such as international drug transactions for funding the Pentagon's and CIA's Black Budgets," O says.

She was led to a secret NASA installation at Maxwell Air Force Base in Nebraska. There she experienced what she calls "the 'you can run, but you can't hide' conditioning.

"I was taken underground to a secret circular room where the walls were covered with numerous screens showing satellite pictures from around the world. These satellites are referred to as the 'Eye in the Sky', and an Air Force official explained to me that my every move 'could be monitored via satellite'. On a separate four-screen viewer, he demonstrated what in retrospect was a contrived pre-recorded slide show, with the scenes changing as rapidly as he spoke and typed it into the computer. 'Where will you run? To the Arctic? The Antarctic? Brazil? The mountains? The desert? The prairies? The hills of Afghanistan? The city of Kabul? Devils Tower (Wyoming)? Would you try to run to Cuba and live among our enemies? We can find you there. There is truly no place to run and no place to hide. The US Senate? (The picture was of Byrd) The White House? Or to your own backyard? (My father was waving from his front door, cupping his hands over his mouth saying 'come back' just like Aunt Em in the Wizard of Oz.) The moon? We got you covered. You can run, but you can't hide.' "

This well-produced and tailor-made multimedia presentation convinced O that her every move could be monitored.

O says that her "owner" Senator Byrd prostituted her routinely to other high ranking politicians in Washington, D.C. And when Byrd used her for his own pleasure it was usually with a whip and a pocket knife. O says he "picked up where my mother left off to destroy any self esteem I might have had left... He often threatened me (and told me) that I was considered 'disposable' because, after all, 'The first Presidential Model, Marilyn Monroe, was killed right in front of the public ... and no one knew what happened.'"

"Byrd justified mind control atrocities," O says," as a means of thrusting mankind into accelerated evolution according to the Neo-Nazi principals he adheres to. He justifies manipulating mankind's religion to bring about the prophesied biblical 'world peace' through the 'only means available' — total mind control in the New World Order — because, after all, 'even the Pope and Mormon Prophet know this is the only way to peace... (they) cooperate fully with the project...

"Byrd justified our country's involvement in drug distribution, pornography and white slavery as a means of 'gaining control of all illegal activities world wide' to fund Black Budget covert activity that will bring about 'world peace' through world dominance and total control. 'Ninety-five percent of the people want to be led by the five percent' is Byrd's justification for mass mind control world wide, and he claims this can be proven because 'the ninety-five percent do not want to know what really goes on it government'..."

Literally Byrd's captive audience, O absorbed and remembered information that the "masterminds" behind the New World Order would never have revealed for security reasons. Since Byrd regarded her as his object, a game-piece that could be moved through life as though he were playing chess, he felt it safe to make her listen to his hidden political beliefs.

"Bryd likely would have talked to a post," she says, "and I filled the role as his silent sounding board. To date, I apply much of what I absorbed from his recitations to my survival and ultimately exposure of who is running our government, and the mind control atrocities and crimes proliferating against humanity for ushering in the New World Order..."

O identifies several of the hidden mind control centers in the U.S. One she says is at Mount Shasta California. It is used as a training and operations camp for a variety of paramilitary projects. Among other things, robot soldiers are trained there. Usually this training is done with the highest technology in invisible weaponry even, what she calls, "Star Wars electromagnetic mind control equipment."

She reveals that there is a CIA "Near Death Trauma Center" at Lampe, Missouri, and several more across the country. At these centers 'A Most Dangerous Game' is played. As her discipline and programming took over what was left of her, she was forced to do strenuous exercise for two hours a day and was programmed to "eat like a bird (Byrd)... (to keep a stunning figure.) My public image was a programmed personality that always smiled, looked and talked like the proverbial air-head blonde, and kept outsiders away by socializing only within my controlled environment..." One of the most frequented centers for her programming was MacDill Air Force Base in Tampa, Florida.

"Presidential Modeling" action, for O, consisted in taking cruise ships from Miami, Florida throughout the Caribbean and Mexico muling cocaine. "While I was robotically carrying out transactions as ordered, I was also prostituted to Central and South American drug lords and politicians and often times filmed pornographically... "

In the early 1980's her duties included passing messages to and from Senator Byrd to Baby Doc Duvalier, and Puerto Rican drug lord Jose Busto. "The working relationship between the CIA and Haiti was abruptly concluded with Baby Doc being whisked away from an uprising in Haiti by our government... along with his CIA drug profits.

"The only Drug Wars I ever witnessed in the US, Caribbean and Mexico were those launched by the CIA against its competition... The drug business was booming for the CIA... I brought suitcases of cocaine into the Port of Miami..."

According to O, her mind-controlled existence became more complicated after Byrd introduced her to President Ronald Reagan in 1983 at a White House party. Byrd told her, she says, "When you meet the Chief, imagine him with his pants down. He's most comfortable knowing you are imagining him with his pants down. He doesn't want formality."

Apparently Reagan had seen the videos made at Huntsville: "How to Divide a Personality" and "How to Create a Sex Slave." "He was very pleased with me as though I had participated in them willingly," O says. "Within the first few minutes of meeting Reagan, he was giving me acting tips to utilize in pornography!!"

"When you become your part," O reports Reagan saying, "your performance increases, which in turn increases your ability to do your part... for your country... 'Ask not what your country can do for you, Ask what you can do for your country'... your part." Here was Reagan using one of her trigger phrases.

"Reagan explained to me that the illegal CIA covert activities I was forced to participate in were 'justified' as they funded covert activities in Afghanistan and Nicaragua." O says Reagan said: "America's Freedom Train is spanning the globe and sex is but a sidetrack to the ultimate course of freedom. Our job of procuring and transporting arms is the most difficult part of all. But it can and must be done How can a man with no arms fight?" She says he told her that covert activity was "necessary as American people raise too much hell about violence, and it is better they're not informed of our supporting wars they cannot understand..."

O says that Reagan twisted reality to fit his personal perceptions rather than adhere to Byrd's philosophies of providing rationalizations for what he deemed "the order of things."

"In typical Reagan fashion," O says, " he did not perceive mind control as slavery, but as an *opportunity* for those who otherwise would 'have been nothing in life.'"

"Multigenerational incest abused children like myself," she says, or previously impoverished baseball players from 3rd world countries and slums are provided an opportunity to 'be all they can be' through making a contra-bution to society, our nation, and the world by utilizing their talents to maximum potential and becoming programmed machines. With this attitude, Reagan was proud of the role he played as 'The Wizard of Oz' to Project Monarch slaves like myself," O says.

The night she met Reagan, she says, Byrd acted in the capacity of a pimp and prostituted her to the President. "He informed me that 'Uncle Ronnie doesn't sleep with his mommy', preferring his L.L. Bean flannel sheets, nightshirt and nightcap because 'they're warmer, softer, more comfortable and don't snore.'

"Reagan accessed my sexual programming, and I became 'my part' as a prostitute to 'Uncle Ronnie'." O says he did not move during sex. "After all that was 'my job.' And my job was to please him, whatever it takes... and it takes more time than anything."

She says Reagan never hurt her, but "he made sure someone else did that". "He used this as a bond to the little child personality he always accessed for sex." O says that Reagan's "biggest kink" was bestiality pornography, and his "passion for pornography escalated its manufacture and distribution during his administration. He wholeheartedly approved and encouraged porn for funding covert activity."

Many porn films were manufactured solely for the president's pleasure, sometimes according to his instructions, O says. These were referred to as "Uncle Ronnie's Bedtime Stories."

After meeting President Reagan, O says, she endured additional base programming by Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino. She says this was done largely for security reasons in order to override Byrd's control.

"Since Reagan had been shot," she says, "he took extra precautions to ensure his safety which included directing Aquino as to how he wanted me programmed. Much to Aquino's dismay and embarrassment, Reagan loved the occult role that this Army Lt. Colonel played for mind control traumatization purposes as it fit in with the public promotion of religion Reagan had launched.

"The 'masterminds' behind the New World Order," O says, "wanted to project the illusion that their mind control operatives were 'demon possessed' and that the atrocities people were witnessing were 'biblical in proportion' in order that they would feel helpless to oppose them. Without Christianity, Satanism loses its effectiveness.. but together Reagan, like Byrd, the Pope, Aquino and so many others, believed world peace would be acquired by controlling the minds of the masses through their religion. Aquino's role delighted Reagan, and he demanded that Aquino wear his black robes to a White House party to influence the superstitions of a few South American diplomats. Aquino appeared foolish in the eyes of his peers who knew Aquino's image was only a guise for Psychological Warfare, as it made Aquino look like he believed in his own facade. Aquino paid Reagan back. Minutes before I was prostituted to Reagan that evening, Aquino ordered me into a closed side room of the White House and very quickly had intercourse with me, slapped me on the behind and disrespectfully said, 'Take that to the Chief'."

Later, Reagan instructed Aquino to use O for various military and government installations to provide "Hands on Mind Control Demonstrations of the latest advancements in training." According to O, Reagan said the 'hands on demonstrations' would 'educate our boys in the military to the wonders of the mind control phenomena'. And, says O, "Hands on meant sex... After all 'entertaining the troops is a long American tradition'."

O goes on to describe her programming and use as a "pigeon", one who carries secret messages locked behind post-hypnotic suggestions which must be triggered to be released. O's pigeon act was much more sophisticated than Candy Jones'.

After the Iran/Contra scandal had broken in the news, O says she was the one who delivered secret instructions from the president to Manuel Noriega. She was escorted aboard his yacht by Michael Aquino.

"I was helped onto the back of the yacht by Panamanian military guards who kept me there at gunpoint until I was cleared... " O says. After she was escorted to Noriega, he pressed a baby's ear shell into her hand which triggered the release of the message which was, as she remembers it:

"If you please, Sir, I have a message from the President of the United States of America: The successes we have enjoyed in our shared endeavors are now history in the making, who's (sic) course can not be altered — regardless of the imminent lifting of the veil by well-intentioned do-gooders. As this veil is lifted, it may shed light on you. So you must have your house in order, as does Ollie North, and cease any and all detectable activity. I will do my best to keep you under shield and out of view if you comply with these orders and cease all detectable activity at once."

O says Noriega acted insulted by this message and a moment of "ensuing chaos" reigned during which "Aquino hypnotically waved his hands in front of Noriega and dramatically spread out his satanic black cape which appeared to fill the room." Noriega was apparently a superstitious believer in something like Santeria, a Christian sect which mixes magic with practices which border on Voodoo.

"Aquino's manner was side-show-style rather than the usual somber tones used on Military bases for the Hands On demonstrations," O writes. "General, for your entertainment and in respect and appreciation of your successful enterprising 'Contra-bution', the Chief has sent his Presidential Model to demonstrate the latest technology in mind control advancements. With the flip of a switch, this pigeon becomes a kitten (I began undressing). Quite a different animal."

O says that because of Noriega's superstition, the personality switch frightened him. "Noriega believed whole heartedly in mind control," she wrote, "but could not grasp the concept of Multiple personalities (which he perceived as demonic possession) and therefore did not adhere to the idea of one slave being trained for business and pleasure. Aquino was manipulating these beliefs of Noriega's masterfully, compounded by the notion of Aquino being a 'devil' working for

Reagan. The impact of this demonstration... would prove to be psychological warfare of the highest order administered to force Noriega to be more discrete."

Aquino then ordered her to lie on the bed and he invited Noriega to look closer at what the "Wizard" — "his Chief" — (Reagan) could create, O said. "Noriga stepped closer to see what Aquino was pointing out to him between my breasts. A large, carved baphomet appeared. Aquino had hypnotically regressed me to the time of its making which caused it to seemingly 'suddenly appear' right before Noriega's eyes..."

Noriega jumped back, terrified. "I believe Noriega stayed in the room for the rest of the demonstration simply because he was frozen in fear," O said, "Aquino hit me with a cat-o-nine-tails and I shrieked in pain. Noriega jumped. Aquino hit me with it again, this time activating me to respond sexually as though pain were pleasure — a mind control concept that Noriega more readily grasped. Then Aquino pointed out that the baphomet had disappeared as he cut me with a knife between my breasts using Byrd's hypnotic induction 'In like a knife, sharp and clean. I'll carve out what I want.'

"My trance had been deepened to the extent that my circulatory system was slowed," O said, " and I did not bleed until Aquino hypnotically changed my trance level. Aquino told Noriega that the baphomet carving had 'retreated to the depths of my body and soul, possessing me and evoking the 'heat of hell' as he commanded me to show my vaginal mutilation carving of the baphomet face. As I did, Aquino offered Noriega my sex, which Noriega refused as predicted with his eyes bulging in terror and revulsion. Aquino told him his 'rejection of me had killed me', and I ceased breathing and moving as conditioned. Noriega was dumbfounded as Aquino laughed wickedly and threatened, 'Even death would not permit me escape from the Wizard's (Reagan's) power'. He explained that I was the 'Wizard's own' and 'under his spell' and would 're-energize myself and come back to life.' He handed me the vaginal prod to masturbate myself, pushing the button to electrically jolt myself internally upon command. Noriega's eyes were enormous, he paled to a sickly gray, his mouth fell open and he ran out the door as Aquino assured him that he had 'no where to run, no where to hide from Reagan's powers."

According to O, Noriega interpreted the demonstration as a "threat from the depths of hell, which should have been enough to (make him) heed Reagan's commands to break the drug trafficking ties immediately..."

After I'd made the excerpts from her book I sent a draft to O for corrections. I hope I made them all. She added a few points in her letters to me that I think are worth sharing about the process of deprogramming she experienced with Mark Phillips:

Mark taught me the ins and outs of my own mind within the first 30 days of the process in order that I retrieve my memory myself... free of outside influence. By trancing myself deeper (I was already entranced), I was able to unlock various memory compartments with his knowledge of keys, codes, triggers, formulas, and accurately retrieve memory. I had to logically learn to decipher scrambles from reality. By common definition, MPD is the mind's sane defense to trauma too horrible to comprehend...

Mark's greatest influence on my deprogramming process was to help me deal with reality in order that the "incomprehensible" become comprehensible. Otherwise I would have fragmented further. He accomplished this by teaching me the revivification memory recovery method vs. the commonly used regression/abreaction method. (NLP calls this "triple dissociation".) Rather than reliving the events, I watched them on my mind's screen, deepening my trance as needed for reality checks. I untangled scrambles by using common sense(s)!... smelling the smells, seeing the views, tasting the sweat, etc... *without having to* re-experience the pain...

I am now reintegrated and most everyone who is qualified to judge it clinically speaking and who possesses common sense knows it..

My choice of terminology has been learned since childhood. You must remember that I had a photographic memory and I recorded all conversations going on around me. Like surgeons who don't give thought to the fact that their anesthetized patient can subconsciously hear them as they perform surgery, Aquino didn't give thought to my overhearing him talking with his "understudies" during my programming sessions and/or Hands on Demonstrations..

Mark went to extreme lengths to make sure that I reintegrated and deprogrammed into ME... not him. I had to "follow some long, hard roads" to learn certain things (seemingly) unnecessarily, just because Mark was concerned with my individuality. He could have provided me with "shortcuts" by sharing what he knows... including certain language... but no! He put me through the paces of learning all on my own, stumbling along the way... I respect him and love him all the more for his precautions to ensure he not influence me... especially considering where I have been!

This is personal... but I felt compelled to tell you so that you will better understand this aspect of my individuality and the importance of the Love Factor in the deprogramming process...

10

MINDWAR

In 1981, Major Michael A. Aquino collaborated with Colonel Paul E. Vallely to produce a paper entitled *From PSYOP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory.* The paper was submitted to *Military Review* and *Parameter*, the publication of the U.S. Army War College. It was widely circulated among the psyop community and among mind control researchers without a copyright notice. Finally it appeared in its entirety in Milton William Cooper's *Behold A Pale Horse,*[36] a 1991 work that deals largely with the question of Unidentified Flying Objects. In that this paper has unquestionably been placed in the public domain, and due to its brevity, it is included here in its entirety:

> LTC John Alexander's *Military Review* article in support of "psychotronics" – intelligence and operational employment of ESP – was decidedly provocative.[37] Criticism of research in this area, based as it is on 'existing frontiers of scientific law, brings to mind the laughter that greeted the Italian scientist Spallanzani in 1794 when he suggested that bats navigate in the dark by means of what we now call sonar. "If they see with their ears, then do they hear with their eyes?" went the joke, but I suspect that the U.S. Navy is glad someone took the idea seriously enough to pursue it.
>
> Psychotronic research is in its infancy, but the U.S. Army *already* possesses an *operational* weapons system designed to do what LTC Alexander would like ESP to do – except that this weapons system uses existing communications media. It seeks to map the minds of neutral and enemy individuals and then to change them in accordance with U.S. national interests. It does this on a wide scale, embracing military units, regions, nations, and blocs. In its present form it is called Psychological Operations (PSYOP).
>
> Does PSYOP work, or is it merely a cosmetic with which field commanders would rather not be bothered?

---

[36] Cooper, William, *Behold A Pale Horse,* Light Technology, P.O. Box 1495, Sedona, Az. 86336, 1991

The following footnotes to MindWar are by Vallely and Aquino:

[37] Alexander, Lieutenant Colonel John B., "The New Mental Battlefield:' Beam me up, Spock'" in *Military Review*, Vol. LX, No.12, December 1980.

Had that question been asked in 1970, the answer would have been that PSYOP works very well indeed. In 1967 and 1968 alone, a total of 29,276 armed Viet Cong/NVA (the equivalent of 95 enemy infantry battalions) surrendered to ARVN or MACV forces under the Chieu Hoi amnesty program – the major PSYOP effort of the Vietnam War. At the time MACV estimated that the elimination of that same number of enemy troops in combat would have cost us 6,000 dead.[38]

On the other hand, we lost the war – not because we were out-fought, but because we were out-PSYOPed. Our national will to victory was attacked more effectively than we attacked that of the North Vietnamese and Viet Cong, and perception of this fact encouraged the enemy to hang on until the United States finally broke and ran for home.

So our PSYOP failed. it failed not because its principles were unsound, but rather because it was outmatched by the PSYOP of the enemy. The Army's efforts enjoyed some battlefield success, but MACV PSYOP did not really change the minds of the enemy populace, nor did it defend the U.S. populace at home against the propaganda of the enemy. Furthermore the enemy's PSYOP was so strong that *it* -- not bigger armies or better weapons -- overcame all of the Cobras and Spookys and ACAVs and B-52s we fielded. The lesson is not to ignore our own PSYOP capability, but rather to change it and strengthen it so that it can do precisely that kind of thing to *our* enemy in the next war. Better hardware is nice, but by itself it will change *nothing* if we do not win the war for the mind.

The first thing it is necessary to overcome is a view of PSYOP that limits it to routine, predictable, over-obvious, and hence marginally effective "leaflet and loudspeaker" applications. Battlefield devices of this sort have their place, but it should be that of an accessory to the main effort. That main effort cannot begin at the company or division level; it must originate at the national level. It must strengthen our national will to victory and it must attack and ultimately destroy that of the enemy. It both causes and is affected by physical combat, but it is a type of war which is fought on a far more subtle basis as well -- in the minds of the national populations involved.

So let us begin with a simple name change. We shall rid ourselves of the self-conscious, almost "embarrassed" concept of "psychological operations". In its place we shall create *MindWar*. The term is harsh and fear-inspiring, and so it should be: It is a term of attack and victory – not one of rationalization and coaxing and conciliation. The enemy may be offended by it; that is quite all right as long as he is defeated by it. A definition is offered:

Mindwar is the deliberate, aggressive, convincing of all participants in a war that we will win that war.

It is *deliberate* in that it is a planned, systematic, and comprehensive effort involving all levels of activity from the strategic to the tactical. It is *aggressive* because opinions and attitudes must be actively changed from those antagonistic to us to those supportive of us if we are to achieve victory. We will not win if we content ourselves with countering opinions and attitudes instilled by enemy governments. We must reach the people *before* they resolve to support their armies, and we must reach those armies *before* our combat troops ever see them on battlefields.

---

[38] "Chieu Hoi: The Winning Ticket". MACV Command Information Pamphlet. 6-69, March 1969.

Compare this definition with that of psychological warfare as first offered by General William Donovan of the OSS in his World War II - era *Basic Estimate of Psychological Warfare:*

"Psychological warfare is the coordination and use of all means, including moral and physical, by which the end is attained -- other than those of recognized military operations, but including the psychological exploitation of the result of those recognized military actions -- which tend to destroy the will of the enemy to achieve victory and to damage his political or economic capacity to do so; which tend to deprive the enemy of the support, assistance, or sympathy of his allies or associates or of neutrals, or to prevent his acquisition of such support, assistance, or sympathy; or which tend to create, maintain, or increase the will to victory of our own people and allies and to acquire, maintain or to increase the support, assistance, and sympathy of neutrals."[39]

If the euphemism "psychological operations" resulted from, as one general officer put it in a 1947 letter, "a great need for a synonym which could be used in peacetime that would not shock the sensibilities of a citizen of democracy," then it may have succeeded domestically.[40] On the other hand it does not seem to have reassured the sensibilities of the Soviets who in 1980 describe U.S. Army PSYOP as including: "... unpardonable methods of ideological sabotage including not just flagrant lies, slander, and disinformation, but also political blackmail, provocation, and terror."[41]

The reluctance with which the Army has accepted even an "antiseptic" PSYOP component is well-documented in Colonel Alfred Paddock's brilliant treatise on the history of the PSYOP establishment. Again and again efforts to forge this weapon into its most effective configuration were frustrated by leaders who could not or would not see that wars are fought and won or lost not on battlefields but in the minds of men. As Colonel Paddock so aptly concludes:

"In a real sense, the manner in which psychological and unconventional warfare evolved from 1941 until their union as a formal Army capability in 1952 suggests a theme that runs throughout the history of special warfare: the story of a hesitant and reluctant Army attempting to cope and concepts and organizations of an unconventional nature."[42]

According to present doctrine, PSYOP is considered an accessory to the main effort of winning battles and wars; the term generally used in "force multiplier." It is certainly not considered a precondition to command decisions. Thus PSYOP cannot predetermine the political or psychological effectiveness of a given military action. It can only be used to paint that action in the best possible colors as it is taken.

---

[39] Roosevelt, Kermit (Ed.) *War Report of the OSS*. New York: Walker and Company, 1976, Volume I, page 99.

[40] Letter, Major General W.C. Wyman to Major General Lauris Norstad, 22 July 1947, quoted in Paddock, Colonel Alfred H., "Psychological and Unconventional Warfare, 1941-1952: Origins of a 'Special Warfare' Capability for the United States Army." Carlisle Barracks: U.S. Army War College, November 1979, page 77.

[41] Belashchenko, T., "'Black Propaganda' from Fort Bragg" in *Sovetskiy Voin*, Moscow, June 1980, pages 46-47.

[42] Paddock, *op. cit.*, page 258.

MindWar cannot be so relegated. It is, in fact, the strategy to which tactical warfare must conform if it is to achieve maximum effectiveness. The MindWar scenario must be preeminent in the mind of the commander and must be the *principal factor* in his every field decision. Otherwise he sacrifices measures which actually contribute to winning the war to measures of immediate, tangible satisfaction. (Consider the rationale for "body counts" in Vietnam.)

Accordingly PSYOP "combat support" units as we now know them must become a thing of the past. MindWar teams must offer technical expertise to the commander from the onset of the planning process, and at all levels down to that of the battalion. Such teams cannot be composed -- as they are now -- of branch-immaterial officers and NCOs who know simply the basics of tactical propaganda operations. They must be composed of full-time experts who strive to translate the strategy of national MindWar into tactical goals which maximize the effective winning of the war and minimize loss of life. Such MindWar teams will win commanders' respect only if they can deliver on their promises.

What the Army now considers to be its most effective PSYOP -- tactical PSYOP -- is actually the most limited and primitive effort, due to the difficulties of formulating and delivering messages under battlefield constraints. Such efforts must continue, but they are properly seen as a reinforcement of the main MindWar effort. If we do not attack the enemy's will until he reaches the battlefield, his nation will have strengthened it as best it can. We must attack that will *before* it is thus locked in place. We must instill in it a predisposition to inevitable defeat. Strategic MindWar must begin the moment war is considered to be inevitable. It must seek out the attention of the enemy nation through every available medium, and it must strike at that nation's potential soldiers before they put on their uniforms. It is in their homes and their communities that they are most vulnerable to MindWar. Was the United States defeated in the jungles of Vietnam, or was it defeated in the streets of American cities?

To this end MindWar must be *strategic* in emphasis, with tactical applications playing a reinforcing, supplementary role. In its strategic context, MindWar must reach out to friends, enemies, and neutrals alike across the globe -- neither through the primitive "battlefield" leaflets and loudspeakers of PSYOP nor thorough the media possessed by the Untied States which have the capabilities to reach virtually all people on the face of the Earth. These media are, of course, the electronic media -- television and radio. State of the art developments in satellite communication, video recording techniques, and laser and optical transmission of broadcasts make possible a penetration of the minds of the world such as would have been inconceivable just a few years ago. Like the sword Excalibur, we have but to reach out and seize this tool; and it can transform the world for us if we have but the courage and the integrity to guide civilization with it. If we do not accept Excalibur, then we relinquish our ability to inspire foreign cultures with our morality. If they then devise moralities unsatisfactory to us, we have no choice but to fight them on a more brutish level.

MindWar must target *all* participants if it is to be effective. It must not only weaken the enemy; it must strengthen the United States. It strengthens the United States by denying enemy propaganda access to our people, and by explaining and emphasizing to our people the rationale for our national interest in a specific war. Under existing United States law, PSYOP units may not target American citizens. That prohibition is based upon the presumption that 'propaganda' is necessarily a lie or at least a misleading half-truth, and that the government has no right to lie to the people. The Propaganda Ministry of Goebbels must not be part of the American way of life. Quite right, and so it must be axiomatic of MindWar that it always speaks the truth. Its power lies in its ability to focus recipients' attention on *the truth of the future* as well as that of the present. MindWar thus involves the stated promise of a truth that the United States has resolved to *make* real if it is not already so.

MindWar is not new. Nations' greatest -- and least costly -- victories have resulted from it, both in time of actual combat and in time of threatened combat. Consider the atomic attacks on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. The physical destruction of those two cities did not destroy Japan's ability to continue fighting. Rather the psychological shock of the weapons destroyed what remained of Japan's national will to fight. Surrender followed; a long and costly ground invasion was averted.

MindWar's effectiveness is a function of its skillful use of communications media, but no greater error could be made than to confuse MindWar with merely a greater and more unprincipled propaganda effort. "Propaganda" as defined by Harold Lasswell "is the expression of opinions or actions carried out deliberately by individuals or groups with a view to influencing the opinions or actions of other individuals or groups for predetermined ends and through psychological manipulations."[43]

Propaganda, when it is recognized as such -- and *anything* produced by a "PSYOP" unit is so recognized -- is automatically assumed to be a lie or at least a distortion of truth. Therefore it works *only* to the extent that a militarily- pressed enemy is willing to do what we want him to do. It does *not* work because we have convinced him to see the truth as we see it.

In his "conclusions" chapter to the Army's exhaustive 1976 case-study of PSYOP techniques, L. John Martin affirms this coldly and bluntly:

"What all this boils down to is that if our persuasive communication ends up with a net positive effect, we must attribute it to luck, not science ... The effectiveness of propaganda may be even less predictable and controllable than the effectiveness of mere persuasive communication."[44]

Correspondingly propagandists are assumed to be liars and hypocrites, willing to paint anything in attractive colors to dupe the gullible. As Jacques Ellul puts it:

"The propagandist is not, and cannot be, a 'believer.' Moreover he cannot believe in the ideology he must use in his propaganda. He is merely a man at the service of a party, a state, or some other organization, and his task is to insure the efficiency of that organization... If the propagandist has any political conviction, he must put it aside in order to be able to use some popular mass ideology. He cannot even share that ideology, for he must use it as an object and manipulate it without the respect that he would have for it if he believed in it. He quickly acquires contempt for these popular images and beliefs..."[45]

---

[43] Lasswell, harold D. in Ellul, Jacques, *Propaganda: The Formation of Man's Attitudes*. New York: random House, 1965, pages xi-xii.

[44] Martin, L. Jon, "Effectivenss of International Propaganda" in Department of the Army Pamphlet 525-7-2 *the Art and Science of Psychological Operations: Case Studies of Military Application*, Volume Two. Washington, D.C.: American Institutes for Research, 1976, page 1020.

[45] Ellul, Jacques, *Propaganda: The Formation of Men's Attitudes*. New York: Random House, 1965, pages 196-197.

Unlike PSYOP, MindWar has nothing to do with deception or even with 'selected' – and therefore misleading - truth. rather it states a ***whole truth*** that, if it does not now exist, will be *forced into existence* by the will of the United States. The examples of Kennedy's ultimatum to Khrushchev during the Cuban Missile crisis and Hitler's stance at Munich may be cited. A MindWar message does not have to fit conditions of abstract credibility as do PSYOP themes; its source ***makes*** it credible. As Livy once said:

"The terror of the Roman name will be such that the world shall know that, once a Roman army has laid siege to a city, nothing will move it -- not the rigors of winter nor the weariness of months and years -- that it knows no end but victory and is ready, if a swift and sudden stroke will not serve, to preserve until that victory is achieved."[47]

Unlike Ellul's cynical propagandist, the MindWar operative must ***know*** that he speaks the truth, and he must be ***personally committed*** to it. What he says is only a part of MindWar; the rest -- and the test of its effectiveness -- lies in the conviction he projects to his audience, in the rapport he establishes with it. And this is not something which can be easily faked, if in fact it can be faked at all "Rapport" which the *Comprehensive Dictionary of Psychological and Psychoanalytical Terms* defines as "unconstrained relations of mutual confidence", approaches the subliminal; some researchers have suggested that it is itself a subconscious and perhaps even ESP-based "accent" to an overt exchange of information. Why does one believe one television newsman more than another, even though both may report the same headlines? The answer is that there is *rapport* in the former case; and it is a rapport which is recognized and cultivated by the most successful broadcasters.

We have covered the statement of inevitable truth and the conviction behind that statement; these are qualities of the MindWar operative himself. The recipient of the statement will judge such messages not only by his conscious understanding of them, but also by the mental conditions under which he receives them. The theory behind "brainwashing" was that physical torture and deprivation would weaken the mind's resistance to suggestion, and this was true to a point. But in the long run brainwashing does not work, because intelligent minds later realize their suggestibility under such conditions and therefore discount impressions and opinions inculcated accordingly.

For the mind to believe in its own decisions, it must feel that it made those decisions without coercion. Coercive measures used by the MindWar operative, consequently, must not be detectable by ordinary means. There is no need to resort to mind-weakening drugs such as those explored by the CIA; in fact the exposure of a single such method would do unacceptable damage to MindWar's reputation for truth.[48] Existing PSYOP identifies purely sociological factors which suggest appropriate idioms for messages. Doctrine in this area is highly developed, and the task is basically one of assembling and maintaining individuals and teams with enough expertise and experience to apply the doctrine effectively. This, however is only the sociological dimension of target receptiveness measures. There are some purely natural conditions under which minds may become more or less receptive to

---

[47] Keller, Werner, *The Etruscans*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1974, page 262.

[48] See in particular Bowart, W.H., *Operation Mind Control*. New York: Dell Publishing Company, 1978.

> ideas, and MindWar should take full advantage of such phenomena as atmospheric electromagnetic activity,[49] air ionization[50] and extremely low frequency waves.[51]
>
> At the root of any decision to institute MindWar in the U.S. defense establishment is a very simple question: Do we wish to *win* the net war in which we choose to become involved, and do we wish to do so with minimum loss of human life, at minimum expense, and in the least amount of time? If the answer is yes, then MindWar is a necessity. If we wish to trade that kind of victory for more American lives, economic disaster, and negotiated stalemates, then MindWar is inappropriate, and if used superficially will actually contribute to our defeat. In MindWar there is no substitute for victory.

Within this article there looms layer upon layer of meaning. It's obvious that the authors of MindWar are familiar with the techniques of NeuroLinguistics Programming and/or hypnosis. They argue that a clear future should be suggested, which is a powerful tool of communicating with the unconscious called "future-pacing". They also suggest that the MindWar be waged covertly,

---

[49] *Atmospheric electromagnetic* (EM) *activity*: The human body communicates internally by EM and electrochemical impulses. The EM field displayed in Kirlian photographs, the effectiveness of acupuncture, and the body's physical responses to various types of EM radiation (x-rays, infrared radiation, visible light spectra, etc.) are all examples of human sensitivity to EM forces and fields. Atmospheric EM activity is regularly altered by such phenomena as sunspot eruptions and gravitational stresses which distort the Earth's magnetic field. Under varying external EM conditions, humans are more or less disposed to the consideration of new ideas. MindWar should be timed accordingly. Per Dr. L.J. Ravitz: "Electrodynamic field constructs add fuel to the assumption unifying living matter harmoniously with the operations of nature, postulating that each biologic thing is organized by a total dynamic pattern, the expression of an electromagnetic field no less than non-living systems; and that as points on spectrums, these two entities may at last take their positions in the organization of the universe in a way both explicable and rational... A tenable theory has been provided for emergence of the nervous system, developing not from functional demands, but instead deriving as a result of dynamic forces imposed on cell groups by the total field pattern. living matter now has a definition of state based on relativity field physics, through which it has been possible to detect a measurable property of total state functions." (Ravitz, Leonard J., M.S., M.D., F.R.S.H., "Electro-magnetic Field Monitoring of Changing State-Function, Including Hypnotic States" in *Journal of American Society of Psychosomatic Dentistry and Medicine*, Vol. 17, No. 4, 1970.)

[50] *Ionization of the air:* An abundance of negative condensation nuclei ("air ions") in ingested air enhances alertness and exhilaration, while an excess of positive ions enhances drowsiness and depression. Calculation of the ionic balance of a target audience's atmospheric environment will be correspondingly useful. Again this is a naturally-occurring condition – caused by such varying agents as solar ultraviolet light, lightning, and rapidly-moving water – rather than one which must be artificially created. (Detonation of nuclear weapons, however, will alter atmospheric ionization levels.) See for example Soyke, Fred and Edmonds, Alan, *The Ion Effect*. New York: E.P. Dutton, 1977.

[51] Extremely Low Frequency ELF waves: ELF waves (up to 100 Hz) are once more naturally occurring, but they can also be produced artificially (such as for the Navy's Project Sanguine for submarine communication). ELF-waves are not normally noticed by the unaided senses, yet their resonant effect upon the human body has been connected to both physiological disorders and emotional distortion. Infrasound vibration (up to 20 Hz) can subliminally influence brain activity to align itself to delta, theta, alpha, or beta wave patterns, inclining an audience toward everything from alertness to passivity. Infrasound could be used tactically, as ELF-waves endure for great distances; and it could be used in conjunction with media broadcasts as well. See Playfair, Guy L. and Hill, Scott, *The Cycles of Heaven*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1978, pages 130-140.

End of Mind War Notes

invisibly, which any NLP practitioner knows has more effect than addressing the problem up front, to the conscious mind, which would only lock a state in, bringing forth all sorts of defense responses and making change more difficult.

Aquino and Vallely's footnote referring to the first edition of *Operation Mind Control,* methinks, protests too much, especially since this book does not single out drugs as the main tool of mind control, and a successful psyop of that day was "Just say No" to drugs. Most students of NLP know that negative phrases can be used as effective embedded commands to produce the opposite effect. Most parents know, when dealing with a young child, to try a little reverse psychology. The "just say no" slogan, and the billboards with a photo of a man with a gun up his nose and the slogan "Say No to Cocaine" under it, may have been just part of a successful psyop campaign which got Americans to take more drugs. It's well-known by now that the "war on drugs" is a complete failure. The extent to which the cryptocracy's black funds depends upon the drug trade is also widely noted. George Bush gave the game away, many believe, during one of his televised debates with Clinton when he wiped his nose in an involuntary response after he said the word "cocaine."

The MindWar article is quite revealing even though it is written to appeal to the War College and the community which, it turns out, is the number one target of mind control, the military. The authors of MindWar have a vested interest in playing the old standby "War on Drugs" tune, in the "garbage in/ garbage out" system which makes up not only the standard American education, but especially the standard military education when it comes to the "soft" subjects.

The authors give their Nazi leanings away when they cite Goebbels and Nazi examples, but that fits right in with the large Nazi German contingency which was incorporated into the cryptocracy under Operation Paperclip.[52] "Denying enemy propaganda access to our people", the authors suggest is desirable without so much as a glance at the Bill of Rights which guarantees freedom of speech etc. Goebbels would be proud of them, yet they claim that the "Propaganda Ministry of Goebbels must not be part of the American way of life." Whatever that means -- perhaps an example of good MindWar deniability technique, first you say one thing in a disguised fashion, then you deny that it means what it means. Does this seem all too familiar? And as Paul Wilcher's letter to Janet Reno (in the chapter FIRES OF WACO) indicates PSYOP units have, at least on that occasion, for 51 days, targeted American citizens within the U.S. The authors state that U.S. law does not permit that. But they cleverly deem no recognition of the existence of a cryptocracy which operates above the law.

---

[52] Simpson, Christopher, *BLOWBACK, America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War,* Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York, 1988.

One of the authors, Michael A. Aquino was a disciple of Anton Levey's Church of Satan for ten years. The C of S was among a half dozen Satanist churches and organizations which were influenced by the magical secrets of National Socialism in Germany. A number of radical-right groups had tried to ally themselves with The Church of Satan, including the American Nazi party and Robert Shelton's United Klans of America. Publicly, LaVey had maintained his distance. Secretly, there was reason to believe that a strong bond existed.

As author, Arthur Lyons notes in *Satan Wants You,* "... the historical affinity between occultism and the radical right has been well documented. Both believe and adhere to the conspiracy theory of history -- that is, the events are shaped by the workings of small, elite, but concealed groups -- and both believe in the ability of one man, whether it be a Magus or a Hitler, to alter global events through the sheer force of his will..

"Radical rightists saw an ally in LaVey presumably because of his Machiavellian, power-oriented philosophy and because of public statements he'd made advocating establishment of a "benign police state," not to mention the strong Germanic flavor of some of his rituals..."[53]

A 1971 *Newsweek* article expressed concern about LaVey's political intentions: "If there is anything fundamentally diabolic about LaVey, it stems more from the echoes of Nazism in his theories than from the horror-comic trappings of his cult."[54]

That the cryptocracy hides within the radical-right goes without question. Perhaps through outright rightist patriotism or insidious effects of mind control a number of Nazi and Satanist organizations are funded, guided and controlled by the cryptocracy.

The editor of the Church of Satan's newsletter, Michael Aquino, accused LaVey of selling priesthood's and, in 1975 broke with him to found the Temple of Set (Set being a lesser known name for the Devil himself.) According to one declassified Army Intelligence file (#81-776) the Temple of Set "is a small group but nonetheless has several hundred members and operates on a National level. Aquino is the official head of the organization and rules the organization through a council of nine, who are in fact his chief lieutenants." An 1981 check of files of the FBI by Colonel Donald Press, concerning the Temple of Set "reflected no record of such an organization."

---

[53] Lyons, Arthur, *SATAN WANTS YOU, The Cult of Devil Worship in America*, Mysterious Press, 666 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10103

[54] *Newsweek*, "Evil, Anyone?", Aug. 16, 1971.

While spokespersons for the Church of Set would deny that the Church is politically aligned with Nazism, they admit to a fascination with Nazi black magic. In fact, following the footsteps of SS leader Heinrich Himmler, on October 19, 1992, Aquino held a magical "working" in the Hall of the Dead in the North tower of Wewelsburg Castle. Wewelsburg was conceived by Himmler to be the focus of the Hall of the Dead, and was frequently used in secret Nazi SS rituals to summon the powers of darkness at this "their most powerful locus."

In a paper entitled The Wewelsburg Working, Aquino describes the results of his black magic ritual:

> First, the suction-like impression of the inflow of certain realizations and kinds of knowledge (accompanied by an almost 'electrical' sort of exhilaration), which seemed to have 'remained dormant' pending an 'activating' Working of this sort. Second, an extended 'reverberation' or 'echoing' of the focus of this Working within the Walhalla, culminating in its sending-forth into the material world.
>
> The central features of the various principal occultisms of the 19th and 20th centuries CE ran through my consciousness almost as a pageant. I understood the object of this to be an exposure of contrasts, inaccuracies, and inconsistencies - a vast, spiraling dialectic designed to clear away the debris of sectarianism and superficiality in the search for the key principles of the true Powers of Darkness.
>
> Concepts of 'will', 'intelligence', 'self- consciousness', 'initiation', and 'magic' appeared in turn and fell aside as well... The intelligent mind cannot be 'escaped' so easily. If it is argued, convinced, threatened, hypnotized, drugged, or diseased into non-rational channels, then its self-consciousness will merely reassert itself in some other form. This, I understood in the Wewelsburg, was the 'magical epitaph' of Nazi Germany: that, in fighting against certain features of the mind, it had seemed at first to succeed - but then had thus unleashed other, even less desirable features of that same mind which had previously remained in some rough degree of socially-controlled equilibrium before this ultimately disastrous experiment in 'conscious evolution' was attempted.
>
> The chamber in which I stood, I now realized, was nothing less than an SS laboratory for experiments in 'conscious evolution' - a sort of 'Krel machine' without computerized, science-fiction accouterments. It was not designed to teach or educate, rather to mirror and enhance thoughts and impulses already in existence. Hence its effect on the consciousness could be devastating for better or for worse..
>
> Here in the Hall of the Dead, Heinrich Himmler's Sanctum Sanctorum and 'Mittelpunkt der Welt', was the Earthly focus of that which has been thus symbolized by the Order of the Trapezoid. The reality of this chamber rushed in upon me. This was no Hollywood set, no ordinary room painted and decorated to titillate the senses. 1,235 inmates of the Niederhagen concentration comp died during the reconstruction of the Wewelsburg for the SS. If the Marble Hall and the Walhalla were memorials to a certain unique quality in mankind, they also serve as grisly reminders of the penalty which mankind pays for that quality.."

Lyons offers a chilling quote by Aquino, one which, in light of present developments has the uncanny ring of the prophecy of a cryptocracy insider:

"We are fortunate that the Auschwitz taboo prevents people from looking too closely at... Nazi Germany, or from experimenting with any of its regular governmental doctrines. Because they work. They are the essence of true political power. Anti-Semitism is irrelevant to them... It is ironically true that a right-wing backlash in the United States -- which is what the neo-Nazis are hoping for -- would wipe them out first. If an American Fuehrer does appear, he won't be wearing a uniform with a swastika armband. He will wear a business suit, and he will be calling popular attention to the patriotic virtues in 1776."[55]

One has to wonder, is Aquino himself a victim of mind control? Could he simply be mentally ill? Or both, for as you shall no doubt begin to ask, where does one begin and the other leave off, for the victimizers as well as the victims?

An article in the *National Enquirer*[56] was headlined: "*Devil Worshiper Holds Sensitive Army Post and Top Brass Say 'No Problem.'* Written by Chris Fuller the article said: " A senior U.S. military intelligence officer with a secret security clearance admits he's also the founder and high priest of a satanic church -- and amazingly the Army says "no problem"!

The article quoted Aquino saying: " My religion has been no secret in the Army." It said Col. Aquino served as a psychological warfare specialist in Vietnam and "is now a reserve officer working full-time on extended duty at the Army's reserve personnel center in St. Louis." He admitted satanic terminology is used in his church's rituals, adding: "We are quite proud of that."

"Col. Aquino's satanic church is advertised in the yellow pages in San Francisco, where he was stationed from 1981 to 1986," the article said. "He says most members are in the U.S. and Canada although 'we have a sprinkling of members in places like Western Europe and the Pacific.'

"The Constitution's guarantee of freedom of religion protects Col. Aquino from action by the Army," the article quoted Lieut. Col. Greg Rixon, an Army public affairs officer in Washington, D.C. saying. "'As long as an individual's religious practice remains within the limit of the law, there is no problem."

The 1981 intelligence file previously cited reports: "Allegedly, Aquino has sexual identity problems and is known to frequent prostitutes in San Francisco in order to become involved in various forms of Sadomasochistic sexual activities. It is believed that Aquino is bi-sexual."

---

[55] Lyons, Op Cit., p. 174.

[56] *Lest the reader stick his/her nose up in the air, I quoted the N.E. for its pith. Also see* Amer. J. Ortho-psychiatry *report on child-victims,* S.F. Chronicle *story,* San Francisco Examiner *story, West magazine report ARMY OF THE NIGHT and others supporting same .*

In the November 1987 issue of *Newsweek* magazine tabbed him "the second beast of revelation" in the wake of a criminal investigation by the San Francisco Police Department involving allegation of child molestation. A year earlier, a civilian child day-care worker at the Presidio Army base was charged by police in connection with the alleged molestation of as many as 60 children. The allegations against the day-care worker, Gary Hambright were:

> He had taken children to private homes, including two on army property, where they had been sexually molested.
>
> Other children talked about a 'googoo' game in which they were urinated and defecated on by 'Mr. Gary.'
>
> Pencils were used to doodle on the skin and genitals of the children and were also inserted in at least one child's anus.
>
> A gun was pointed at the head of an adult in front of the children.
>
> There were five confirmed cases among the children of clamydia, a sexually transmitted disease.

All charges against Hambright were eventually dropped. The parents of the children said it was because strong pressure was put on the federal investigators and the San Francisco police.

Then, Aquino's face appeared much older in a 1988 article in the San Jose Mercury News. Bylined Linda Goldston the article read: "Six months after the U.S. Attorney's Office closed the Presidio child sex abuse case, the Army has launched a new investigation of one of the original suspects in the matter -- a high-ranking officer who founded a satanic church, according to those close to the probe.

"Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, founder and high priest of the Temple of Set, has been formally notified of the criminal investigation and had his top security clearance suspended, according to sources. Most of the sources would speak only on the condition that they not be named.

"Neither Army officials nor Aquino would discuss the investigation which revolves around allegations that children were sexually abused at the day care center run by the U.S. Army at the Presidio of San Francisco."

Aquino, 42 at the time, was by then stationed in St. Louis. He had been branded, he said, in the earlier probe by allegations against him and his wife. He called the investigation a witch hunt, and vehemently denied any wrongdoing. No charges were filed against Aquino in the earlier investigation and charges against another man were dropped.

Lt. Col. Greg Rixon, spokesman for the Department of the Army at the Pentagon, said, "It's still a privacy matter until charges are brought... I don't know what will transpire next."

Others "close to the investigation" which was being conducted by the Army's Criminal Investigation Division in Washington -- said that parents involved in the original sex abuse case were being re-interviewed and told about the new probe.

"In our case, we've been told that he's (Aquino) under investigation for kidnapping, sodomy and knowingly and maliciously making false charges against another officer," said Michelle Adams-Thompson whose then-3-year-old daughter first accused Aquino of molestation

Adams-Thompson and her husband, the Rev. Larry Adams-Thompson, the former assistant chaplain at the Presidio, were informed of the new probe Nov. 23 by an investigator for the CID. "He has officially been titled,' said Larry Adams-Thompson.

According to Mary Melanson, spokeswoman for the CID in Washington, being titled under the uniform code of military justice means "we feel there is sufficient evidence to believe a crime has been committed," the article said.

'The closest thing in civilian terms would be a grand jury indictment,' Melanson said.

"The new investigation is the latest move in the case, which began when one boy said he was molested in November 1986 at the day care center, and grew to include allegations that as many as 60 children were involved.

"Charges were filed and withdrawn twice by U.S. Attorney Joseph Russoniello against Gary Hambright, a Southern Baptist minister and former civilian worker at the day care center. Russoniello's controversial decision to formally close the case in June came after an 18-month investigation by the FBI and the Army," the article said.

Russoniello had said he did "everything we could to build a case," but, he said, he thought prosecution would not be successful. In addition to the 60 alleged cases of sexual abuse, investigators looked into two arson fires at the day care center.

They confirmed that five children had contracted chlamydia, a sexually transmitted disease.

"The seriousness of the new investigation is reflected in the suspension of Aquino's top security clearance," sources told the *San Jose Mercury News*. His security clearance had not been suspended during the previous investigation of the same case.

Aquino said in November 1987 that, "I have consistently since 1969 held either a secret or a top secret security clearance."

Aquino first was investigated in August 1987, after the Adams-Thompsons' daughter recognized him and his wife, Lilith, at a store at the Presidio, according to a San Francisco police report. The little girl identified Hambright from a photo lineup and said she had been driven to the Aquinos' San Francisco home by Hambright.

When she was driven to Leavenworth Street by investigators and asked to identify any of the houses she had been to before, the girl identified the Aquinos' home. The child also accurately described some features of the home, including a room with black walls. To police she identified Aquino as "Mikey" and his wife, Lilith Sinclair (aka Pat Wise) as "Shamby."

In statements to therapists and investigators, some children said they were abused at the day care center; others said they were abused while on field trips to private homes away from the center.

Twenty-two families filed $66 million in personal injury claims against the Army in connection with the case. Parents alleged that the Army's negligent operation of the day care center led to the abuse of their children. The Army refused to comment.

Aquino began to fight a media campaign against his persecutors. On February 17, 1988, Oprah Winfrey invited the Aquinos to answer for themselves before a national television audience.

On the show Aquino told Winfrey:" The Army has known about my religion for the entire span of my Army career, which began in 1968, and there was a resonable amount of curiosity, as there has been all the way along, with what exactly is this strange and unusual thing. And I have talked about it, much the same way that I've talked here today on your show about it. And other than that the Army has paid very little attention to it, the same as it would to anybody who's, say, a follower of Hinduism or of Buddhism or any other slightly unusual religion today?"

Continuing from the transcript of the Orah Winfrey Show prepared by Journal Graphics, Inc.:

WINFREY: So you just go about your Army duties and it's fine?

AQUINO: Uh-huh.

Following her usual format Windrey takes questions from the audience:

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: ...How do you apply your fom of Nazi occultism within your brand of satanism? When you review your material, you'll see Nazi occultism reflected through it.

AQUINO: How do we approach the Nazis' attitude towards --

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: How do you apply your form of Nazi occultism into your brand of satanism?

AQUINO: We do not advocate any of the Nazis' political principles, whatever. There was a good deal of occult study that went on during the Third Reich in Germany, and because the records of that exist, we have studied that much the same as we have studied magical records from a great many cultures throughout history. But I think if you have reviewed our literature at all, you will also find that there is a very strong prohibition against the sort of political and social values.

WINFREY: What you're telling us, Dr. Aquino, is that you are a good satanist?

AQUINO: We are indeed.

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: Are you pro-Hitler?

AQUINO: No, I am not pro-Hitler.

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: Are you against Hitler?

AQUINO: I am against Hitler.

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: But when you look in the material that you have, which I have some of it here, you can see the endorsement of Nazism.

MRS. AQUINO: You don't see any endorsement of Nazism. We're talking about occult practices of the Third Reich. We're not talking about their political and their social behavior, their criminal behavior. And that's very explicit in our literature, and it's pointed out in great detail, simply because people will misinterpret it just as you have done.

2ND AUDIENCE MEMBER: I just read it.

MRS. AQUINO: Read it again.

And yet later Winfrey brings on the usual panel of experts, among whom is Johanna Michaelsen, author of *The Beautiful Side of Evil* after one of the audience has said they witnessed the murder of a man when they were a member of the church, and another has brought up the alleged satanic practice of ritually murdering children.

> MS. MICHAELSON: Well, I think that what's important to realize is that, in a sense, Colonel Aquino has a point in that not necessarily every single satanist goup would do that (murder infants). Certainly we can't sit here or Officer Jones can't sit here and say, "Yes, we can prove that Mr. Aquino and his people are doing this." However, it is rather –
>
> WINFREY: Because wouldn't it be hard for him to be a lieutenant colonel in the U.S. Army –
>
> MS. MICHAELSON: Oh, not at all.
>
> WINDREY: No?
>
> MS. MICHAELSON: And in fact I firmly believe that many in the U.S. Army are deeply involved and perhaps have gone beyond what he publicly is willing to admit to going to. I mean, they're not going to sit here and say, "Yes", we murder children...

A short time after that Detective Larry Jones , an investigator of satanism, joins in the discussion.

> DET. JONES: .. We're hearing reports from survivors from across the country there are documentations coming in.The police are educating their own. In the last two or three years we've accepted the firefighters' philosophy that where there's smoke there's fire, and we're getting enough reports, we're starting to believe it.
>
> WINFREY: Of child molestation. You were accused also of child molestation,were you not, Dr. Aquino?
>
> AQUINO: And what he refers to is one of the cruelest examples of persecution that extends not just to people who are acknowledged satanists but to a great many innocent people around this country who are being accused wrongfully of ritual abuse of children on virtually no evidence at all. And to dispute what he has said in case after case after case for years and years, when these have been brought before investigation, where they've been brought into indictments and trials, again and again they've been thrown out because the so-called evidence –
>
> WINFREY: They've been thrown out because nobody believes the children, nobody believes the children...
>
> MRS. AQUINO: There's no evidence.
>
> MS. MICHAELSON: Well, that's exactly right. Who's going to believe in a modern civilized society that people are capable of such horrors? Few of us are willing to deal with it. So that when a three-year-old and a four-year-old or a six-year-old or even an adult survivor comes up and says, "I have seen children murdered, I have been a part of slaughtering little animals. I've been told my family will be killed if I speak up. I was placed in a coffin. I was forced to drink things that are hideous beyond belief," who's going to believe them? Which of you would say, "Oh, yes, this happens every day?" And I think this is one of the things which people, who are

> **indeed expert in brainwashing techniques, as I know you (to Aquino) yourself are a recognized expert in that, would count on that.**

And a few moments later Winfrey is talking in the audience to a man identified only as 3rd Audience Member.

> ***3RD AUDIENCE MEMBER*: With the doctor here, he was mentioning that no one's coming up with the bodies. I'm a criminal investigator; I investigate court-related crimes. And I've been now involved in a number of cases with the last, well, one indiviual, of course, killing his mother and stepfather as well as a Circle convenience store clerk, worshipping before his altar, before he went out to do this, and offering them up in human sacrifice.**
>
> **WINFREY: And Dr. Aquino would say, "Well, where is his card to prove that he is a certified member of the satanic church?"**
>
> ***3RD AUDIENCE MEMBER*: Well, first of all, Dr. Aquino, he's in prison. Okay, that's number one. The second case, which the altar was brought into the courtroom and tried; the body was never found, the legs was found, and he was very much a satanist. Every one of the cases that I've investigated now extending over 200, I have found this particular book that has been there.**
>
> **WINFREY: Which is The Satanic Bible.**
>
> ***3RD AUDIENCE MEMBER*: And I understand that there's traditional satanists, and I focus mainly on the non-traditional or self-stylist satanist. I understand that. But to say that there is no bodies and that these people are not committing crimes is the farthest from the truth.**
>
> **WINFREY: Yes, ma'am? You wanted to say something?**
>
> **AQUINO: Are you in fact a law enforcement official yourself attached with a law enforcement agency?**
>
> **WINFREY: Yes, he is.**
>
> ***3RD AUDIENCE MEMBER*: Yes, I am. I'm a commissioned law enforcement officer as well as with the courts in Logan County.**
>
> ***AQUINO*: I would respond to that, that there may be indeed a number of people with warped personal value systems who, considering the devil to be something evil, might excuse their vicious deeds because of that. But I would deny that that's part of the satanic religion.**

Earlier when Winfrey asked if human or animal sacrifices were performed at his temple, Aquino became indignant. He said that such talk "perverts" the idea of Satan. Aquino said that Satanists work "for the good of humankind," and that Satanism is a distinctive brand of human psychology.

Aquino brought suit against the Secretary of the Army in 1991 seeking to amend the Army report of criminal investigation about him and to recover damages caused by "inaccuracies in the report." Within two months Circuit Judge Niemeyer found: " that the secretary's decision not to amend was not arbitrary or capricious. Finding no reversible error, we affirm."

Judge Niemeyer's judgment went on to reveal that the investigation against Aquino was closed because "all further leads involved adults who refused to cooperate, and the applicable three year statute of limitations had expired in June 1989...

"... The child-abuse charges remained, because 'the evidence of alibi offered by LTC Aquino was not persuasive."

In *The Book of Coming Forth by Night,* written in 1985, Aquino describes a number of peculiar dreams and visions, expressing a consistent interest in mind control. Paraphrasing Crowley's *Book of the Law,* Aquino wrote:

> The Equinox has succumbed to my Solstice, and I, Set, am revealed in my Majesty... I am the ageless Intelligence of this Universe... and from my manifest semblance, which alone is not of Earth. ***Known as the Hebrew Satan,*** I chose to bring forth a Magus, according to the fashion of my word. He was charged to form a Church of Satan, that I might ***easily touch the minds of men*** (emphasis added) in this age they had cast for me.

Aquino is bright and "well educated." He graduated with honors from Santa Barbara High School in 1964 and was the National Commander of the Eagle Scout Honor Society of the Boy Scouts of America in 1965-66. He received a Department of the Army scholarship to the University of California and after graduation served his country as a Psyops officer in Vietnam where he received the Army Commendation Medal, Air Medal, Bronze Star, Vietnamese Cross of Gallantry from the Vietnamese Government, an Oak Leaf Cluster to the Army Commendation Medal, and a second Oak Leaf Cluster in 1980.

Not only is Aquino a citizen in good standing with the U.S. military (now the reserves), he's a member in good standing in academia. He is, in fact, a doctor, having obtained his Ph.D. in Political Science from the University of California, Santa Barbara in 1980. His dissertation was entitled *The Neutron Bomb.* His resume says he's qualified in International Relations, Comparative Politics, American Government and Political Theory. For several years he was a consulting faculty member of the U.S. Army Command and General Staff College at Fort Leavenworth Kansas. He's a member of the National Advisory Board of the American Security Council, a member of the World Future Society and the L5 Society and the Academy of Magical Arts, Inc. (the "Magic Castle" of Hollywood.)

Michael Aquino speaks fluent German as did his mother, the late Betty Ford. His interest in Nazism and intelligence may have been inherited from her. She was a child prodigy who was the youngest writer for *The San Francisco Chronicle*, and one of the youngest graduates of Stanford University. In the 1930's she lived in Germany and became close to a high-ranking SS officer, whom, it is said, she sculpted in the nude. It is not known whether Ms. Ford worked for Axis or Allied

Intelligence agencies. She was certainly qualified for such spy duties during WWII. But perhaps she did no more than pass on unfulfilled interests in intelligence and Nazism to her son.

Other than his hard-core catechisms for the Temple of Set, one of Michael Aquino's resumes cites three books he's written as "future sequels to the film Star Wars: *Secret of the Sith, Pantechnikon,* and *Xronos.* He has been reported as having been identified standing outside the gate at Sky Walker Ranch forcing copies of these manuscripts upon people employed by George Lucas. Since Lucas does not received "unsolicited manuscripts" the manuscripts were returned unopened upon several occasions. One was subsequently published in a monster magazine.

The bizarre theatrical nature of Michael Aquino would appear unbounded. At least, so says more than one eyewitness to some of his more ingenious mind control work.

Satanic U.S. Army Psyops Col. Michael Aquino's religion is protected under the Constitution of The United States of America. Not only does he have the right to worship any god he chooses, a recent Supreme Court ruling found that a soldier in the army had the right to practice satanic rituals. At least one satanic soldier has been buried in Arlington National Cemetary for many years. (Photo courtesy of Linda Blood author of *The New Satanists.)*

11

PROJECT MONARCH?

Project Monarch, according to Mark Phillips[57], is a U.S. Defense Department project begun in the 1960's. Its code name was assigned to a subsection of the CIA's Operation Artichoke which later became Project MKultra. The Oxford English Dictionary might shed some light on why this code name was chosen:

> **Monarch 1**. In early use, a sole and absolute ruler of a title of king, queen, emperor, or empress, or the equivalent of one of these...
>
> **3.** A very large red and black butterfly (*Danais Plesippus*)... The Monarch... is one of the commonest species throughout a great part of North America.
>
> **Butterfly 1.** An insect belonging to any of those diurnal species of lepidoptera, or scaly-winged flies, which have knobbed antennae, and carry their wings erect when at rest.
>
> **2.fig.** A vain gaudily attired person (e.g. a courtier who flutters about the court); a lightheaded, inconstant person; a giddy trifler.
>
> **b.** Applied to something flimsy, like a butterfly's wings. **4.** The guide for the reins on the front of a hansom cab, named from a fancied resemblance to a butterfly with extended wings...

So-called "Presidential Models", the most highly prized products of the Project Monarch mind control factories have a distinct (conditioned) habit of sitting very erect with their legs daintily perched. They serve kings and presidents and high ranking government officials as sex slaves. They are controlled by invisible reins. The Presidential Models have "fluttered about the White House" and European hideaways which, in another day, would have been the "courts." While they appear to be "lighthearted" and "inconstant" sex slaves, they are trained at the art of pillow talk and do, in fact, have memories like human tape-recorders.

---

[57] Phillips, Mark, ***The Top Secret Project Monarch***, Arab, Alabama, 1994.

Phillips says Monarch was spawned from the collected research of top SS Nazi Scientists over the years 1927-1941. The identified leader of this research was Heinrich Himmler who was, as we have learned from Michael Aquino, a master of the "black arts". Fascinated by both occultism and genetic theories, Himmler's team of scientists took a" genealogical approach to transgenerational behavior modification". The idea was, apparently, in Phillips terms, to apply "trauma based" mind control to children for three or more generations so that the psychological aberrations which were conditioned would "breed true"

"The German government Top Secret ("BLACK ARTS") research was originally considered to be a significant "bonus" by-product of the US Department of Defense's Project 63 also known as Project National Interest. Project 63 was dedicated to the secret importation of a group of German Nazi and Italian fascists scientist whose areas of expertise were primarily physics, psychiatry, microbiology and pharmacology. Although Project Monarch has not been declassified... it nevertheless has become a household word among a multitude of Intelligence Community operatives."

Mark Phillips is a respected if controversial figure among researchers. Some think he's telling the truth about his background. Others think that he is a former cryptocrat who had a change of heart and is running great risk telling what he knows. Still others believe that he's still working for the cryptocracy as a disinformation agent. Three of his clients I've talked to sing his praises. All say that he helped them in ways in which the other psychologists or psychiatrists who treated them could not. Amid the swamp of name-calling and suspicion which makes up the "conspiracy underground" one researcher said he thinks that Phillips' most articulate client is a CIA agent and Phillips is under her control. None, however, have come forth to refute the information he gives, or dispute his credentials, so we can do no harm in repeating the information he offers, especially since it's been confirmed by others.

Phillips came by the Project Monarch information, piecemeal, when, as a young man, he was hired by a government sub-contractor (which he does not want to name as a precaution against lawsuits.) His job was in the sales and engineering department of one branch of this firm which had developed through its independent research an array of electronic devices which could be of great use in the cryptocracy's burgeoning mind control research. Through his exposure to some customers (military bases and State mental institutions) that were so sensitive, the government required him to obtain a "Top Secret" clearance from the US Department of Defense.

"I was required to take battery after battery of psychological tests... and when they were through they knew I would keep my mouth shut before I saw or heard anything," Phillips says.

"Then, I saw sensory deprivation tanks, electric grid rooms, harmonics generators, chairs wired for shock and sound, special "helmets" now known as "virtual reality" helmets which allow the wearer to see in three dimensions.

"I heard of formulas for mind altering hypnotic drugs that made LSD look like aspirin. I personally met scientists who were traveling the world, gathering seeds, leaves, roots and herbs from such places as the jungles of Zimbabwe. They were even consulting witch doctors looking for drugs that could affect the human brain and make predictable zombies.

Phillips said he talked to agents who studied with African witchdoctors like Credo Vusa'mazulu Mutwa. The stories of tokoloshe's they told Phillips matched this excerpt from Mutwa's story *MY PEOPLE, Writings of a Zulu Witch-Doctor:*[58]

> A tokoloshe is not a ghostly or supernatural phenomenon. He is a physical human being, and he operates along perfectly scientific lines. Mulundi had used a very small pigmy whose weight he had drastically reduced with a severe diet. He had furthermore turned the little creature into a zombie by a simple interference with his brain. A sharp awl can do the trick. He was posted up the marula tree and along a branch that reached across to the roof of Kambela's hut. With a long thong he lightly descended upon the roof of the hut and wriggled his skeletal little frame through the grass roof. He escaped the same way.
>
> This weird practice has today been perfected into a fine art. Cases are known to me where wizards have arranged the fake death of a particular person whom they have selected for a prospective zombie. The person is actually buried, but exhumed the same night and revived. He is then turned into a zombie and many days or weeks later heavily decorated with parts of other people's bodies, also exhumed from graves, the puppet is induced to pay a particular victim an unexpected visit. The victim simply dies of fright. It is as simple as that. Any chance eye-witness will relate a beautiful tokoloshe story to the police, and the police will dismiss it as so much nonsense.
>
> In later generations the wizards perfected their art of tkoloshe-making and they started breeding tokoloshes from childhood. As recently as 1922 there was a secret tokoloshe farm kept by a gang of wizards in the Drakensberg in Basutoland.
>
> With the arrival of the white man and Christianity, the killing of children who were born cretins and idiots went out of fashion, and these grotesque specimens of humanity grew plentiful. But an idiot is something no one misses should it mysteriously disappear -- the parents least of all – and many of these idiots, particularly female, landed up in the hands of these wizards. They reared them, and when they were adult, they mated with them and kept them in dark caves for their children to be born. Often in Basutoland - the land of ritual murder -- the babies were brought into the world the cesarean way with no concern over the life of the mother. Parts of her body were used for medicines that were administered to her own baby to make it grow up in an atmosphere of deep evil.
>
> The baby was reared by other idiot women who fed it a mixture of the milk of dogs, donkeys and cows, and the blood of raves and vultures. At the age of six months it

---

[58] Mutwa, Credo Vusa'mazulu, *MY PEOPLE, Writings of A Zulu Witch-Doctor*, Anthony Blonde, London, 1969, Penguin, 1971.

> was subjected to specialized treatment for its particular task of the future. it was made to develop a crooked or hunch back by strapping it to a curved piece of wood. The legs too were strapped into attitudes that encouraged their growth into grotesque shapes. At the age of twelve the tongue was damaged to destroy speech. The child was taught to hate the world and idolize its wizard master.
>
> It was then put through a course of queer tricks ranging from tree climbing with its crooked limbs to burrowing underground. It was taught ways to commit murder and to remove all its tracks afterwards. When it had reached the age of about twelve, the wizard had in his hands a lean featherweight puppet-like creature, *an unthinking robot that obeyed every command [emphasis added]* -- a creature worth a hundred head of stolen cattle to the one who bred and trained him.
>
> Genuine tokoloshes are today found only in Basutoland and Nyasaland, where hiding places in the mountains can still be found for them.
>
> With the difficulties in breeding, rearing and keeping this kind of tokoloshe these days, the wizards have resorted to using baboons and monkeys. Their young are nowadays turned into the weirdest monstrosities and can be taught to do considerable damage to their master's enemies.
>
> There is currently a growing market for tokoloshes in South Africa. A trained monkey or baboon tokoloshe fetches as much as twenty-eight pounds.
>
> The tokoloshe is no figment of the imagination. The word tokoloshe means 'a great mysterious evil'. The Bantu will never portray one in a carving. When a Bantu describes something as a tokoloshe, he says 'a mysterious evil' and means 'mind your own business'.

Cryptocrats on both sides of the "Iron Curtain" created modern tokoloshe's. Phillips read the "pinks" (classified documents) which summarized the KGB's progress in selective and mass mind control techniques. To his surprise he found that the U.S. cryptocracy had cooperated with the Soviets and others in their mind control development.

"There was even a Top Secret Soviet weapons system which incorporated yet another "exotic" version of mind control -- electromagnetic directed energy -- the Scalar Weapons System."

One variety of mind control he found to be "hideously simple. It did not require any sophisticated electronics such as Ether Wave (Harmonics)," Phillips said.

This simple mind control technique involves only isolation (incarceration) deprivation of stimulace, clocks, and sleep; controlled intake of food and water; electroshock at precise intervals, high voltage for pain, lower voltage for the induction of implanted suggestions, hypnotic suggestions (often drug induced) all in combination.

"This," Phillips said, "was considered a 'secret weapon'.

"I was told that we tested this 'secret weapon' on captured spies. We found out everything they knew and made them forget how we found out. Then we reprogrammed them to return to their mother country and spy for us, then return when triggered to be reprogrammed.

"It seemed humane enough for the espionage business, but then I heard of 'suicide agents' programmed to perform a task they could not possibly complete without being captured by the enemy. I knew then that our spies no longer needed to carry a cyanide capsule with them on their missions. The use of this 'secret weapon' made it possible that, if a spy was caught, there would be a 'natural' failure of one or more of their organs. Their subconscious mind had been reprogrammed right over the top of their genetically encoded mind to facilitate this self-induced suicide. Better blue lips than loose lips! If they were caught, this program would 'kick in' and they would 'die of natural causes,'" Phillips said.

From the circle of cryptocrats with whom Phillips associated, he heard many bizarre tales. One was that Idi Ami had learned from a book by an obscure Nazi scientist how to somehow facilitate his sudden rise to power by cannibalism -- particularly eating the small walnut shaped pituitary gland and spinal cord of human beings. He heard of "electronic possession" which is created by transmitting voices into the minds of "expendable" individual test subjects via compressed wicrowaves.

"I heard of hideous crimes being committed by members of 'brainwashed' cults," Phillips said. "Serial killings were on the increase 200 fold. Some of the killers blamed Satan for their exploits and crimes, others could not legitimately remember anything. I heard that the leader of one religious cult had been 'educated' at the cost of over 2 million US dollars by a Pakistani secret service agent, who himself was educated by the same US Intelligence unit that President Carter denied existed, the one which trained a Cuban spy, Manuel Noriega, who later became a double agent, formerly of Panama, now a Florida 'resident'-- of one of our best prisons.

"I noticed how Rev. Jim Jones' former lawyer, Tim Stone, was apparently running 'containment' for the CIA in Marin County, California. And I personally knew of this US Army Major promoted to Lt. Col., attached to the Psychological Warfare Division and the Defense Intelligence Agency, who had ingeniously organized a "church", legal under the First Amendment of the Constitution. I learned that this Lt. Colonel, Michael Aquino, had, like Jim Jones, been supported by politicians and the CIA.

"What I didn't know at the time," Phillips said, "was that this operation would encompass every evil known to mankind. Sexual perversion, slavery, tortures of the mind and body, even ritual cannibalism. Age seemed to be no barrier -- children were being used in Satanic rituals, filmed pornographically, and beautiful young women used for Project Monarch, trained to sexually service politicians, bankers, law enforcement officials, and to mule drugs, and carry secret messages locked behind post-hypnotic blocks. These people are now being bought and sold -- specifically programmed to tasks too disgusting to describe."

Phillips is talking about slaves of the cryptocracy, human "butterflies" created by Project Monarch. Many were assassinated after they were no longer useful. They were "thrown from the Freedom Train," Phillips says.

According to Phillips, Project Monarch has four distinct levels of behavior modification named Alpha, Beta, Delta and Theta.

Alpha is considered "'regular programming.' This is actually what would be considered the 'base control personality'. Originally the purpose of Alpha programming was to condition the mind through torture so that Black Ops mercenaries and espionage agents could perform certain difficult tasks. This program also locks in photographic memory and improves physical strength. Visual acuity is radically improved. It develops in the individual a number of almost super-human traits.

"Alpha programming," Phillips says, "is accomplished through deliberately subdividing the victim's personality, which in essence causes a left-brain-right-brain division, which then allows for a triggerable reprogrammed union of left and right through neuron pathway stimulations. Once this is accomplished you have a person who can utilize both sides of their brain at once for any simple task.

"Beta programming deals with the primitive mind's reproductive system and sex programming. It eliminates learned moral convictions and stimulates the primitive sex instincts devoid of inhibitions. This training program is for developing the ultimate prostitute -- a sex machine. This is used most by the abusers knowledgeable of the MKULTRA Project Monarch program," Phillips said. (Apparently there are good guys and bad guys even within the cryptocracy?) "Children of knowledgeable persons are being preconditioned through incest and "sold" into the conspiracy for additional Beta conditioning to eventually satisfy the bizarre perversions of politicians, bankers, drug lords, or anyone deemed valuable."

Phillips says that Delta programming, "was originally designed to train special Black Ops and espionage agents' minds for becoming terrorists devoid of fear and basic self preservation instincts capable of incredible feats of physical endurance and murder. Delta eventually was used to train 'a new breed', one who kills and, if caught, self -destructs. This program is now applied to some Beta prostitutes who double as drug mules – to protect the identity of their owners. If they are caught, they die of 'natural causes' or suicide.

Theta programming is: "Psychic programming which evolved into bio-medical human telemetry and directed target energy involving lasers and/or electromagnetics, the results of which are referred to as 'electronic possession'. It's the ultimate challenge for the 21st century exorcist, providing he works a day job as a skilled CIA supported neurosurgeon."

Theta programming, Phillips said, "involved the surgical implantation of sodium/lithium powered high frequency receiver/transducers coupled to a multi-range discharge capacitor that , when signaled by remote control, would electronically stimulate designated parts of the brain to signal the victim to respond according to his or her hypnotic program.

"These "Delgado" experiments were only partially successful," Phillips said, "with a high mortality and paralysis rate. However, the technical mind control equipment evolution has advanced to levels well beyond the grasp of most people. Non-implanted, non-programmed victims will hold the largest majority since, in the 1990's breakthroughs were made which allow mind control without either implant or trauma base".

The new Theta programming," Phillips said, "operates by computer driven satellite directed energy. Now, anybody can become a target of the new technology.

The original physical apparatus for mind control were, according to Phillips, "rather complex and cumbersome. There were elaborate sound and light-proof sensory deprivation isolation chambers using exotic suspension fluids that could mimic weightlessness. Direct current high voltage and very low amperage electroshock devices, plus designer drugs, were the most important tools of the trade as the brain is electrically and chemically powered.

Voltages ranged from .072 volts to 200,000 depending on application and to what part of the body it was to be administered. There were 'strap on' head and foot devices that could deliver a mild altering shock of an exact duration according to he subject's brainwave activity and/or heartbeat. Other portable handheld stun gun type devices can delivered shocks up to 200,000 volts for the instant control of the human conscious mind.

"A great deal of successful research and development went into the effects of harmonics or inaudible sound waves that affect the RNA covering of the neuron pathways to the subconscious," Phillips said. "Harmonics generators, code named ether-wave, are capable of subconscious mind embedding detailed messages -- commands linked to audible triggers. This is known as electronic programming and is a standard programming device in all forms of Project Monarch. Hence the reason many Monarch survivors (drug mules and prostitutes) recall being taken onto certain US military bases and "Freedom Ranches," that are trauma centers for 'reprogramming.'

"Mind altering drugs, both natural and synthetic compounds," Phillips said, "were discovered and developed which can instantly alter certain brain/thought functions. These were developed from modern medical technology and discovered from ancient shamanic and witchcraft formulas.

"The components list is not immense. A sound proofed burial casket makes a great sensory deprivation chamber similar to the one being used at a Kentucky (CIA) conditioning camp in which Delta, Alpha, and Beta victims are regularly put for 'reconditioning' and 'programming' for drug muling assignments. The only other components needed are devices to hang victims upside down by their ankles, cattle prods -- the cylinder type -- that are inserted deep into the vagina or rectum for a simulated 'orgasm with the devil.'

"High voltage (up to 200,000 volts DC) hand-held law enforcement type stun guns are a must tool for the victim's owner to erase certain memories," Phillips said. "They are used on the muscle area of the victims within two hours of the 'to-be-forgotten' event, and to control the victim's 'insane' fits of rage if they are mistakenly triggered to perform a pre-conditioned task when they are at the moment in the 'wrong personality.'

"The only other component the Beta owner must posses," Phillips said, "are a diary or a damn good memory of their programs, keys/triggers, and a working knowledge of hypnosis. In other words, a small briefcase will contain everything a Beta owner needs to control his slave... completely... forever...

"The formula for Beta programming is the exact same as for Alpha. The only difference is that through a series of specific tortures and commands the Beta victim retreats deeper into their (71 % are female, 100% are MPD's most recently called DID) primitive mind: The results are, you have a person with a child-like insatiable sexual appetite. This re-tapped sexual appetite is 'developed' in the formative years through constant incest with a father figure.

"What begins as unbearable pain to a child's mind," Phillips said, "quickly switches to a sexual desire for the very person who was abusing her -- daddy and/or uncle. This mind-altering phenomena is known now as the Stockholm Syndrome. This reversal is the key to all programming. Pain becomes pleasure, up is down. Hence the reason Colonel Michael Aquino adopted the satanic philosophy of reversing everything including bad is good."

Phillips said the first victims of Project Monarch were captured spies and dissidents from friendly and unfriendly nations. "Unfortunately for the second group," Phillips said, " there weren't enough (victims) caught to properly study the so-called Manchurian Candidate.

"The second group, it is alleged," Phillips said, " were bright aggressive young men who had applied to Officers Candidate School (OCS). These men took entrance exams and psychological tests that revealed whether or not they would become 'candidates' for Project Monarch. If their entrance psychological exams revealed they were victims of child abuse they were most often chosen.

"These eager young men were allegedly told that they couldn't go to OCS for whatever reason but they could 'volunteer' for a career in intelligence and with their Top Secret 'training' they could develop incredible super human physical and psychological abilities. These human guinea pigs volunteered for the destruction of their persona with a 'just sign here.'"

Phillips says he knows the identities of some of the main villains of Project Monarch. They existed, he says, at the top of the U.S. Government. They appear to have focused, he said, "not on recreational sex, but on drugs -- billions of dollars annually in heroin and cocaine muled into the US via cruise ships and private and commercial airplanes, etc., etc., etc.

"The sale of these drugs is allegedly supporting the CIA's illegal covert action habits," Phillips says. "The CIA doesn't have a "Black Budget' like the Pentagon boys. They earn theirs the 'old fashioned way', by importing and selling drugs through elaborate networks of distributors to users that the CIA has decided to cultivate. They also consume a lot of their own product!

"There are drug lords, politicians (federal, state and local) corrupt law enforcement personnel (federal, state and local) big name entertainers who themselves usually own a Beta victim or two which they trade among themselves like livestock.

"When one of the Betas reach 30 years of age or so, they are often used in snuff porn movies, or what is termed 'thrown from the Freedom Train.'" Phillips has passed out a lengthy list of the abusers, many of whom are high on the Washington, DC social register. He hopes the media will eventually wake up and target them with a legitimate investigation.

"Psychological mind control techniques, formulas and equipment, unlike nuclear weapon systems, can be reproduced without exotic and expensive component systems," Phillips said. "In the privacy of one's own home, virtually anyone of average intelligence , a little information and no conscience can create their own mind control slaves.

"Mind control is out of control. It's just as lethal as nuclear war byproducts, however through genetic engineering psychology, the 'evil' seed is passed on generation to generation," Phillips said. "Trauma based mind control promises a world of 'white slavery' for the Chosen Ones of the 21st Century. It could turn out to be the largest 'cottage industry' in the world. Immense in terms of profits, death and destruction of the innocent, unless the trend is stopped and those responsible in government and the private sector are punished and the survivors/victims given rehabilitative psychiatric care."

As has been pointed out, according to Phillips, the majority of Project Monarch victims are female (71%) who have Multiple Personality Disorder aka Dissociative Identity Disorder (100%). They have been or are used in commercially and privately produced pornography (100% interviewed) which is often the "underground" kind containing bestiality, child/adult, child/child, adult/infant, sado-masochistic, satanic/occult films, videos and magazines.

"Older victims were frequently tattooed for easy identification with a so-called blue monarch butterfly, a rose, or both.[59] This practice became more or less abandoned in the early 1970's and was replaced by the victim wearing butterfly hair barrettes, large butterfly earrings, pins, necklaces, bracelets or embroidered insignias to 'advertise' their art of expertise to insiders. This rule applies to 100% of the victims I've interviewed," Phillips said.

"All Monarch survivors were victims of brutal sexual child abuse, who have been found to be multi-generational incest victims whose upbringing seems to cluster around Jesuit Catholic, Mormon or Charismatic Christian believers, or U.S. Intelligence families. Many victims have been adopted. Survivors, once in the standard therapies are usually triggered to possess homicidal and/or suicidal ideations. This has only recently been determined to be the result of the sophisticated trauma based psychological programming.

"Victims almost always possess multiple electric prod (stun gun) scars and/or the resultant moles in the muscled areas of the back, arms, neck and thighs," Phillips said. "Some victims are also vaginally mutilated through 'body piercing' (rings placed in nipples, vaginal lips or clitoris) or through elaborate carving of the vaginal area. Also they often possess branding scars from irons or hot knives over various parts of their bodies."

---

[59] The blue Monarch butterfly, which Phillips says was often tattooed on the "models" bodies in the early days of the project is extinct. The last one was seen in the early part of this century, on the slopes of the San Francisco Bay area not far, he says, from where Michael Aquino made his home.

Monarch witnesses tell of pornographic sessions, tortures and "programming" taking place at the following bases: Papillion, Nebraska; Ft. Campbell, Ky.; MacGill AFB, Tampa, Fla;, Kirkland AFB, Albuquerque, N.M.; Homestead AF; Langley Research Center, Langley, Va;, Panama CIty, Panama; and Redstone, McClellan, Patrick, Grissom and Maxwell Air Force Bases.

Seeing the use of brainwave frequency names to describe types of programming brings us to a couple operating under the name Social Movements Recovery Center (SMRC) out of Boulder, Colorado. Survivors have told me that SMRC may be a "damage control" operation whose purposes are part of the cryptocracy's effort to smudge the memories of the many recovering "Monarch" victims. The two instructors who present SMRC "training to law enforcement personnel on deviant social movements and ritual crime" according to information circulated at their seminars, are Jim McCarthy, M.A. and Cynthia Byrtus. McCarthy holds degrees, their hand-out says, in Philosophy of Religion, Systematic Theology and Comparative Religion, and has "performed doctoral work in Social Psychology through the University of Colorado."

According to the bio circulated, McCarthy has been a research assistant and associate for a research team funded by the National Institute of Mental Health and The Center for the Study of New Religious Movements at the Graduate Theological Union at Berkeley. He was the co-founder and executive director of the "Bethesda Psychealth Institute", a center for research and treatment of "deviant ritual behavior and abuse," in Denver. According to the bio he is also a member of the Institute of Police Technology and Management of the University of North Florida, where he instructs courses for "law enforcement personnel on deviant social movements and ritual crime." He is also an adjunct staff member of the Adanta Group, Behavioral Health Services in Somerset, Kentucky and has served as a consultant for "over two hundred agencies here in the U.S. and abroad." He has defined an alleged "syndrome" which he calls "Marionette Abuse Syndrome". He describes his work as "deprogramming".

McCarthy's partner in SMRC is Cynthia Byrtus, a self-described "survivor of multigenerational intrafamilial ritual abuse (incest, sexual, physical and emotional abuses)." According to the company bio she was diagnosed as having Multiple Personality Disorder in 1980 and has been involved in intensive psychotherapy since that time. In 1989 Cynthia developed an instructional program according to the hand-out "for law-enforcement on MPD and ritualistic abuse. She teaches this program to the expanded class of the Deviant Social Movements course at the Institute of Police Technology and Management in Jacksonville, Florida, and various other police agencies across the country."

At present, the hand-out says, both are "engaged in discussions with professionals who are training and consulting on the treatment model, 'Eye Movement

Desensitization and Reprocessing Procedure' EMDR (which sounds like the source might be NLP) in order to better understand and work with clinicians using this procedure and to possibly recommend applicable integrative aspects of this procedure into our specific areas of expertise."

At first I tried to interview McCarthy who told me that he'd never heard of any government or military programming from any of his clients. That statement contradicted the information published in the SMRC hand-out. A follow-up interview with Byrtus under one of my pseudonyms found a seemingly overly defensive woman who wanted to know my credentials. She said that she knew nothing of Candy Jones, yet Candy's book is cited (the title is wrong) in their list of resources. When I spoke of the mysterious mindcontroller reported by the "survivors", Dr. Green, Byrtus was adamant about his authenticity. She told me that the Dr. Green, or Greenbaum myth was true, as the "survivors" are saying. Byrtus indicated that she had proof that there was a Nazi mind control doctor by that name. She also said that there was a "Project Monarch" and their literature gives a comparative chart which lists Alpha, Beta, Delta, Omega, Theta and Gamma/Epsilon with a different explanation than that supplied by Mark Phillips.

A survivor who has "been around the track of existing treatments", so to speak, attended SMRC seminars, heard their tapes, and received the treatment of Byrtus. The survivor told us that, while Cynthia Byrtus' material includes many of the symbols and systems of programming which she knows are true, Byrtus "puts her ego into the therapy. It doesn't work. It actually suppresses memories. It doesn't unlock them, like Phillips' therapy does." This survivor suspects that SMRC is a government affiliated "damage control" project aimed at keeping the survivors of "Monarch" from remembering too much.

Maybe it's just one survivor's opinion, but this survivor took the trouble to prepare her own paper several years ago on the so-called Marionette Programming:

> **Dr. Green is allegedly a Nazi war criminal who was hired by the CIA and was thus given access to children throughout the U.S. because he traveled to military bases and appeared to have worldwide resources. He is also known by other aliases including Herr Doktor, Faraday, and David. Dr. Green is also associated with Heinrich Muller, head of the Gestapo and Heinrich Mueller, a Nazi doctor who did experiments on animals that were grotesque (survivors believe there is a Nazi Dr. Green -- they saw similar experiments).**

We have other information on the possible identity of Dr. Green but will withhold it from this edition pending further research.

> The goals of the doctor appear to be to train a force to prepare for the return of the antichrist... and overthrow the world in 1999. The callback was to be for 1991 for cults to gain all possible manpower for the final takeover. It also gives a year for reprogramming and retraining for the antichrist's appearance...
>
> There are significant internal names in these marionette systems and include some of the following: Sisters of Light, Mothers of Darkness, Program Director, Master Programmer, Grandmother (with 3 faces), Grand Wizard, Grand Master and others.
>
> At least two parallel program systems which are first implanted in the very young children by teaching them to sing nursery rhymes and through fairy tales. These are built on year after year with hypnotic suggestions so that when the client begins to remember one part of the memory, it triggers many memories.
>
> The following books and tales have been known to be used: Snow White, Alice in Wonderland, Rose White and Rose Red, Lost Horizons, Wizard of Oz, tall book of Make-Believe, Sleeping Beauty, and also the game Candyland. They are often programmed while very young, then let go with a heavy call-back program to return approximately 18-21 years -- beyond the rebellious years.

Something like this is described in O's book.

> There are usually computers within the system. Sometimes there is one in every level, or one in each section of the matrix (depending on the form the matrix takes). The program often used the Greek alphabet.
>
> Split-brain programming is done with a specific kind of torture and/ or hypnosis that leads the survivor to believe they cannot have access to both sides simultaneously without amnesia. There are usually bridges between the sides, and sometimes they are actually alters.
>
> There are common internal images in these survivors. It includes trees; i.e. tree of knowledge, green tree, kabala tree. Doll house (which may hold the computer), vortexes or black holes which can pull alters between levels (a little like booby-traps), hourglass (may be a matrix), ribbons, cords, wires, mirrors, jewels, mazes, alters of the man with glasses, Dr., or Dr. Green, seeds, dots, waves, riptides wind/ocean, daisies, birds, porcelain faces, pits, elevator shafts, worms, glass balls, ships, shells (for silence), and cylinders.
>
> The number of layers has to do with levels of power... The layers may include names like external world, our world, Atlantis, Troy, Heliopolis, Phoenix, the ship, Shangri-La, the computer, etc. Their

> names are often dependent upon the type of rituals that were used (i.e. Satanic, Pagan, Etc.)
>
> Alters can go back and forth between systems and can have no hearts and no faces. There may be clones (robots)-- that is artificial alters that are made of plastic or metal that look like human alters, but have switches or keys on their backs or necks. Some of the programming is done with cricket noises (or a noisemaker that is a clicker).

At the end of this report there is a disclaimer:

> These notes are not to be taken for fact -- they are ideas and clinical observations as shared by survivors. There are probably variables and differences within each marionette survivor, and the accuracy of reporting what's inside is a subjective experience often changed by time and/or severe torture. It is also possible that some of this information is disinformation designed to confuse the survivor or anyone else attempting to help them out of these many hypnotic and torturous suggestions and images.

Another survivor described the coded programming of the "Rainbow" variety:

> I am an intergenerational ritual abuse survivor who is struggling to get to the bottom of cult-related behavior and programming, past and present. At a recent conference on child abuse, with some emphasis on ritual abuse, I heard Cory Hammond and Roberta Sachs speak of Greek letter programming, a rather complex combination of using Greek letters to stimulate certain pre-induced cult-related behavior, in combination with an imaginary computer keyboard in the survivor's brain. The implication was that programming in the ritual abuse survivor had become so complex as to be virtually impenetrable by the therapist trained to deal with "feelings and behaviors." What I left with was a feeling of helplessness and hopelessness, that there was no way for a conventionally trained therapist to deal with this maze of codes, and, therefore, one might as well give up.
>
> I was intrigued by the information, nonetheless, and determined to find a way to manage this information in my own life. In discussing the codes with other survivors, we began coming up with concurrent information about access codes of a simpler nature. I presented the information I had gleaned from these discussions to my therapist, who has been my guide and helper in my painful journey. He has been ever willing to learn from his clients and seemed undaunted by the prospect laid before him, and was willing to listen, learn and assist. In follow-up, I was able to, with his help, abreact situations

> where codes were induced, where codes were used, and where codes were reintroduced due to destroying barriers between certain feeling states in the process of therapy. I have verified this information with other survivors, who have been able to see the use of codes in eliciting behavior on their part, and uncovering memories of code induction and code-related cult activity.

The following is a list of codes used in the life of this survivor (and apparently the lives of other survivors) to obtain certain programmed behaviors:

> 1) CODE GREEN: Used to induce self-destructive or suicidal behavior. Code green usually refers to code induced suicide or self-mutilation. Sometimes survivors associate this code with a Dr. Green. Generally, this program is induced and in place for the event when the survivor begins therapy or therapy has proceeded to such a state that much memory is being recovered. It related directly to the "no talk" code of secrecy. A survivor would rather "die than talk." Sometimes it is necessary to dismantle this code first so that a survivor feels free to remember, and the possibility of self-destructive behavior is eliminated or reduced.
>
> 2) CODE BLUE: Induces freeze mechanism where a victim is essentially unable to move until another code is induced. Code blue acts like a verbal "stun gun."
>
> 3) CODE RED: Used to induce anger and rage and elicits cult-related murderous activity.
>
> 4) CODE YELLOW: Induces jealousy in combination with rage, and an attitude of "get even."
>
> 5) CODE BLACK: Induces participation in rituals; i.e., "put on your black."
>
> 6) CODE WHITE: protective code indicating unthouchability. I am not certain as to its use other than to keep law enforcement at bay when white cars are parked in the vicinity of cult-related activity. I have suspected this to be in use when I see persons heading for a ritual dressed in a "big white shirt."
>
> 7) CODE 911 EMERGENCY: Used to induce superhuman strength or behavior of a self-protective or emergency nature. When used it induces trancing and then deliberate course of action minus any feelings. Sometimes used as protection for cult members who, as they are survivors themselves, have a tendency to freeze or panic or otherwise are unable to act in self-protective manner in an emergency situation, or when they need to "cover" for the group. This code carries with it a resistance to calling the real 911 number when a person is threatened or harassed.

8) CALL YOUR OPERATOR, CODE 911: Used on an answering machine when a survivor is screening calls or is otherwise unable to answer a telephone call. The answering machine automatically answers a phone call, at which time the following recording is played: "If you would like to make a call please hang up and try your call again. If you need assistance, please dial your operator. Code 911." This message is sometimes repeated several times, accompanied by the beep-beep-beep sound of a phone left off the hook, and then by a dial tone. The survivor is pre-programmed to call a certain phone number, "the operator", for further instructions.

HOW CODES ARE INTRODUCED:

These codes are pre-programmed using the usual induction methods of torture, drug-induced trances and accompanied by electroshock. The coding itself requires little time to induce in a person already dissociated, and may not even be seen as "lost time" in an ordinary day's activities. The codes call upon feeling states currently in place, although walled off, and usually are associated with one or two such feeling states per code. They are also sometimes paired with a cult alter with a name and a prescribed role attached to the name. In other words, sometimes it is only necessary for a particular name to be mentioned for the feelings to surface and the code related behavior to be acted upon. Therapists frustrated with the task of "getting at feelings" can use these codes as an indirect approach to helping a survivor see how he/she is accessed (oftentimes currently), and then approach from a feeling level.

EFFECTS OF CODE USAGE ON ADULT AND CHILD SURVIVORS:

I have seen a stepped-up approach to using these codes because of the occult's 1999 (some therapists report the date a multiple of 666 X 3 = 1998, which, following occult numerology, would make the exact day June 6, 1998 – WHB) timetable, and their frustration with so many survivors remembering and attempting to heal themselves. The coding is so often accompanied by current day harassment, reducing the survivor to a child-like state of fear and panic, making them open to further assaults by the group. It is a hideous way of reintroducing trauma into the life of a person struggling to regain control of his/her life.

In my own life, I have been able, with the help of my therapist and my child, to uncover not only the original coded information, but to access memories where the codes have been used not only to access me, but to induce in my child the fear and helplessness necessary to

> control my child so as to give access to me. My child, who is not yet 18, was used to such a degree that we had to move into separate residences, therefore, eliminating from my child's life the presence of a caring, nurturing individual ready and willing to share with my child the pain and suffering of that childhood. This divide-and-conquer mechanism seems to be a last-ditch effort on the part of occult groups to ensure animosity between survivors who would otherwise be of great value in the nurturing, support, and validation essential to the healing process.
>
> RESPONSIBILITY, A TEAM EFFORT:
>
> Understanding of the codes means knowledge that the behavior induced by the codes is subconscious versus conscious. This does not mean that the person induced to perform certain behaviors is not accountable for that behavior. What it does mean, I believe, is that it is incumbent upon each individual to uncover their own particular codes and to make an effort to dismantle them as quickly as possible. To do so does not mean just to know of their existence. It also requires a conscious effort to really "see" the feelings behind the coded material, to nurture the "inner children" and sometimes the inner adults, and to replace the coded behavior with conscious behavior aimed at reducing the code's effectiveness. To inculcate this conscious behavior requires repetition of replacement behavior as the coded behavior does not miraculously disappear once the codes are made conscious. Until feelings are uncovered and dealt with, the codes retain some of their power.

(Note: The above would not be recommended by many therapists. Getting in touch with traumatic feelings can reinforce the trauma. Perhaps something along the lines of the "Six Step Reframe" as explained in John Grinder and Richard Bandler's book *Reframing* would be more effective -- or a "triple dissociation pattern," using the dissociated state to further dissociate from the trauma and, shifting submodalities, to desensitize the survivor from it. Also it is important to communicate a full understanding that survivors are not their behavior, that they can have choice in all future behaviors, once they're free of their programming.)

This gifted survivor issues another stern warning:

> **I would hope that therapists reading this would not dismiss this material out of hand simply because it is not the work of a trained therapist. I would hope that therapists would be open to the possibility that this coding exists in their clients, and they could work with survivors in uncovering previously unconscious coded programs and behavior. Working with the codes does require a**

> **certain amount of caution, as sometimes just saying a particular color will induce code related feelings. Therapists should also be aware that these codes can also be introduced simply by wearing a garment in the code-related color. This is not to introduce an element of hysteria, but an element of caution and concern for the survivor and his/her particular triggers. This material can be managed, and it is a truly exciting process; to become aware of other-directed control. It enables a survivor to regain a large amount of conscious control over situations and behaviors that would otherwise put them at risk for current day access.**

"We adult survivors," this survivor concludes, "need to be aware that much effort was used in our childhood's to program participation in cult activities. As we reach adulthood and uncover buried trauma, the cult has an even greater stake in "helping" us forget. We are lifelong members in their eyes, and every effort will be made to keep us "in control" and "under control." We have a choice as to whether or not we allow this to continue. Remembering our own programs can help put us on our own road to recovery and safety."

NOTE TO SURVIVORS: We would like to collect the codes, cues and triggers you have remembered so that we can map the evolution of this programming over the years in different situations and locations.

NOTE TO THE LAY READER: Until you've seen a survivor of Project Monarch triggered, you may have no idea what all this means. Perhaps our video *Operation Mind Control* will give you some reality on the subject.

Above are some examples of the visuals in Monarch Programming. These could trigger a variety of survivors both Project Monarch and others.

Survivor's drawings of four different types of diagrams used in programming. The one at lower left is the Cabbala Tree, sometimes called the Green Tree, the use of which one of the doctor's describes in Chapter 40.

12

THANKS FOR THE MEMORIES

I met Lois first in Palm Springs, when I was the editor of *Palm Springs Life*. She was sitting, looking pretty, at one of the many events that bear Bob Hope's name, the Bob Hope Classic golf tournament or the Hope Center which houses the Palm Desert opera. Her real name was not Lois and I was not introduced to her, but when I saw her again, several years later, she had come along with a Project Monarch survivor just to watch the interview I was doing with their deprogrammer. I knew I'd seen her before, but at first, couldn't remember where or when.

When I saw her that first time, I knew nothing about her. She was just another of the many "hostess" types that you find working the parties in the Coachella Valley. I did not know she was a (so-called) Monarch survivor. I didn't even know there was such a thing as Project Monarch which took DID'd children and made "patriotic" sex slaves out of them. Now I was looking at her again, in an entirely different context than the one in which I'd met her. A friend who is a psychiatric registered nurse had come along to support me in the interview and she spent a good deal of the time talking with Lois while I interviewed the deprogrammer. It wasn't long before we learned that Lois was a case very similar to O's. When I learned that I asked her if she'd grant me an interview. She gave me a novel she had written which was a fictional account of her story.

Her deprogrammer said the novel was still "full of her programming" and that Lois was not yet reintegrated/fused and therefore still had fiction mixed up with fact in her mind. He suggested that we both wait for an interview until fusion was complete -- after her functional personalities were working together, and after she had better recall of specific events which were now occluded by amnesia from what amounts to classical, trauma-based, conditioning.

After several months I was contacted by Lois. She gave me an entirely new book, "the truer story" she had remembered and written down over the past several months of fusion/therapy. It was a readable account which I've excerpted and edited for presentation here.

Today Lois is 43 years old and recovering from her dissociative disorder. She began to remember small, inconsequential things at first when she was thirty-five. By 1988, six years before she finished her book, she thought she was simply a survivor of ritual abuse. Then, as she began to heal and remember more of her past, she realized that ritual abuse was "merely a mind control trauma base" her paedophile father, among others, had used to condition her for future participation in what she says is "the still active Central Intelligence Agency's white slavery operation, Project Monarch."

"...From my earliest recollections, my father began the rigorous training and torture required to splinter my base personality with the intention of creating many separate and individual personalities for training and use by others as I grew older..."

She was physically, psychologically and sexually abused continually, by her father, his friends, and at Baptist Sunday school at which the Minister and Church Secretary oversaw a planned program of torture and ritual abuse.

"In addition to Christianity," Lois said the church secretary "also practiced witchcraft in her darkened home, isolated and protected from outside intrusion by drape-covered windows. As a toddler, my father would get me up early on Saturday or Sunday mornings and take me and a carrot down the street to 'feed the horsies.' We always did feed the horses but the actual purpose of these outings was to get me out of the house to go see Mrs. M. for what they called 'my training'..."

Lois was raised in the affluent area of the San Fernanco Valley in Southern California. She was abused her entire childhood in many locations in and out of California, including U.S. military bases, where she was subjected to 'high level' use, abuse and programming. The results of many years of trauma intentionally inflicted on her by her father and others, created within her many separate personalities that were amnestic of each other.

"Over time, I became a totally programmed robotic slave that could not, due to electronic programming and abuse, think to tell anyone what happened to me. I was used frequently in child pornography and child prostitution."

By the age of 16, Lois had many separate personalities, several specially trained to be the perfect sex slave. One was a "presidential model" with a photographic memory used to deliver cryptic messages, most often during sexual encounters with top government officials, entertainers, and other world leaders.

From 1988 to 1991, she was in daily therapy in California. She began remembering a complex past that now has been validated, in part, through intelligence community and FBI contacts (active and retired), as well as through investigative journalists and knowledgeable mental health professionals. In her quest for understanding and self-knowledge, Lois also attended graduate school to obtain her Master's Degree in Psychology. In April of 1991, she was forced to leave her home and family in California, due to a threat on her life.

"I fled to Hawaii and began writing a book about my experiences. I began having vivid, detailed memories of being used as a sex slave and/or human computer to some of our nations highest level government officials in and out of the White House -- Lyndon Johnson, Richard Nixon, Ronald Reagan, Gerald Ford, Henry Kissinger, George Bush and many others... including "top entertainment professionals..." Prominent among them was her "owner", Bob Hope.

"My abusers made sure that I was instilled with very complex programming that would insure my death should I begin to remember or tell."

But, despite the programs for her to have an accident, or self-mutilate or kill herself should she begin to remember, today she is healthy, in control of her own mind and has no intentions of hurting herself in any manner.

"I am taking extreme precautions," she says. "That's why I'm publicizing this message. I expect it to encumber these criminals who would stop me from recovering further memories and obtaining expert help."

"In conjunction with the traumas at church and school, my father reinforced my programming by the use of fairy tales. His favorites were from Disney themes and The Wizard of Oz. Sometimes in the middle of the night, my father would traumatize me in order to get me to dissociate, which created the perfect trance state for mind programming. In this state, he would tell me that 'over the rainbow' was a 'bridge to the other world' and that I would walk over the 'rainbow bridge' into the 'other world' and it would remain separate from my everyday world. He told me what happened over the rainbow would feel unreal, like a dream."

Lois was conditioned to forget her most recent covert encounters when she heard the word "home." The trigger phrase began with a phrase from the *Wizard of Oz*: "there's no place like home" and was associated with being back in bed, sleeping, after a night of being used in child pornography, or as a child prostitute and later after being prostituted to mobsters, celebrities, politicians or anyone else her owner directed her to accomodate.

"These words functioned as a way to reorient me back into my everyday world, without carrying the reality of what had happened back with me. I was instructed to 'sleep and wake up at home in bed with the Land of Oz so very far away. That place that felt like a fairy tale -- that I must have made up... was only a dream -- was now very far away.' I was now on the other side of the rainbow and I was conditioned to forget that those experiences ever happened. If I remembered them at all, I remembered them as merely a dream.

"Later, in my teen years, all it took was for my mother or father to say, 'You can sleep all the way home,' and I was conditioned, like Pavlov's dog, to respond to the word home, with total and complete amnesia of what had happened to me that evening."

Lois now remembers that she was taken to military bases around the country for more sophisticated programming. She was hooked up to high tech electronics that performed a variety of functions, interfacing mind and body responses.

"I was put in isolation chambers and left in isolation, sometimes spun, with colored lights, always with only one color at a time. I was placed in sophisticated chairs with electrodes attached to my head and shocked. Sophisticated audio equipment was used. I don't know what exactly they were accomplishing, but I felt tortured by it, " Lois said.

By the age of five Lois was conditioned through torture and by the use of hypnotic techniques to hurt herself in many ways should she ever begin to remember her secret activities.

"Per programmed suggestion," she said, "if I began to remember anything, I would stub my toe or burn myself on the stove, thus removing my focus from the remembered secret experience and diverting my attention to my wound.

"I was instructed in successful ways to cut my wrist in order to take my own life, should I begin to remember or tell. There were also accident programs instilled to insure my death if I remembered. Many programs were installed early in my life that were available for use in suppressing the activities of my hidden personalities for years..."

Over years of torture Lois remembered hearing her programmer say: "If you remember, you will kill yourself. If you tell, people will think you're crazy and lock you up in a mental institution. If you don't obey us, we will kill your family and your dog and cat. If you tell, we will kill you."

Lois had witnessed killings for years therefore she believed they were not kidding.

"I was used in child pornography and child prostitution from the time I was two years old, maybe even before. My father, who was a welder, sold me as a prostitute to neighbors and business contacts... My father had a group of paedophile friends, with daughters my own age. They traded us sexually and each independently participated in filming us pornographically, sometimes including bestiality. I had many personalities trained in both porn and prostitution.

"At age seven I was further trained by older women prostitutes. I was taught 'tricks of the trade,' most of which I already knew from years of sexual abuse and training. The prostitution and pornography was a organized activity.

"There were times when I was a child that I was used to entice and kidnap other children off the street into a black car. The kidnapped children were initially kept in cages in back rooms and then used in pornography and usually killed, sometimes in snuff films. We were all shocked with cattle prods or stun guns for different offenses. I was locked in a room and sold as a prostitute to lots of men. The people in charge always left ropes, whips, and sex toys for use by the people who were paying for sex with me. Pornography was filmed with other children, women, men, and animals. They filmed me in many different secluded locations around Turlock Lake, California, the Colorado River and places my family and family friends went for 'water-skiing vacations.'"

Lois tells of being filmed by friends of her fathers. One man filmed her and his own daughter having sex. Another forced his daughter of the same age to have sex with Lois and animals while they filmed it.

"To all outward appearances, all of these families appeared like normal upstanding citizens of the community. No one would have ever suspected that in secret, all of this abuse was occurring. The mothers kept clean children and clean houses, smiled and acted polite and caring in public, and the fathers acted charming and were considered responsible businessmen in the community. What went on behind closed doors – that no one wanted to believe or hear about, not even my elementary school principal – was the physical, psychological and emotional devastation of many, many children...

"By age ten-and-a-half, I had gone through puberty and was fully developed. This was much sooner than any of the other girls in my class at school. Despite the abuse, I was a pretty good student, with many "school" personalities who helped me act like a 'normal kid...'"

Lois displayed behavior problems in school, often acting out what was secretly going on at home, but her teachers merely passed off her joking and constant disruption as typical mischievous behavior.

"I had personalities who were totally amnestic of any of my abuse and able to function perfectly normal in the school setting. I did the things that normal kids do; I was a cheerleader, performed in the chorus, sang solos in junior high, and won awards for the most beautiful smile and for being the class clown. I was Girl's League President and a member of the Student Council, and I received a number of awards of merit. And my mother had the cleanest house in the neighborhood.

"I started menstruating. This heralded abuse in rituals involving getting raped and impregnated, sometimes twice a year. When the fetuses were two to three months old, they were aborted at rituals and ingested to fulfill the beliefs of the group that it made those participating more powerful. These were devastating, deeply traumatizing and painful experiences that were repressed along with the other traumas. They served as mind control reinforcement, to insure amnesia of my use in pornography and prostitution..."

Lois was taken to her grandfather's house in another state. Her grandfather, a local politician, like her father, was a paedophile and a member of the same organization which practiced ritual abuse. Lois was impregnated several months before they arrived at her grandfather's house, where the first of several forced abortions were performed, Lois said, in a "torturous fashion by a local doctor."

"Although I was raped and made pregnant at a ritual, I was humiliated and shamed for becoming pregnant -- everything was a double bind. I was blamed and shamed for everything that happened, none of which I ever had any control over. My baby, which was not yet old enough to be born alive, was nevertheless, a perfectly formed fetus. My grandfather and my father had a ceremony behind my grandparent's house in which they convinced me that I had killed my own baby (which was obviously born dead), and they ate it and forced me to participate.

"During the rest of the time we were there, I was forced to entertain my grandfather's business and political friends. I danced naked on the table at meetings and performed sexual favors for many of his associates. To demonstrate my programmed abilities, my father prompted the men to use a cigarette to burn me in my vagina as I kneeled down in front of them. My father wanted to demonstrate that I would smile and show no signs of the burns due to (reinforced dissociation) mind control..."

Lois attended junior high school and in the 8th grade (age 14) she met a young man, Clarke, about whom her mother said," He's the boy you will marry."

About that time, President Kennedy was killed. Lois' programmers used the gruesome murder to reinforce her belief in their power over her. They told her, "We are so powerful we can kill the President without anyone knowing, so don't think anyone will ever find out about you."

"Over the next several years Clarke and I were 'bonded' to each other through cross-programming and shared trauma to insure that Clarke was under sufficient mind control to serve as my 'handler.' A ritual at a Presbyterian church I attended regulary, served to seal our bond, and soon other, more sophisticated means of programming were utilized.

"Large vans with men in suits picked us up at a location in Ventura, California. They had specialized equipment in briefcases and other large equipment in the van. They routinely beat Clarke in front of me to show me what a weakling he really was and how powerful and in control of me they were. They would slap me around in front of him to show him how powerless he was to help me, and how much in control they were.

"Electroshock was used on both of us, first by inserting and activating an electric prod in my vagina and then delivering the same to Clarke on his penis. We each had to watch robotically as the other was tortured.

"The bond that was formed by shared trauma was powerful. It created feelings of being in this whole mess together and enforced the feelings that we would never be able to get out. After they had sufficiently worn us down, they would strap us into sophisticated chairs and hook us up to the electrodes. Tones were combined with the electroshock in order to create access cues that gave them quick and easy access to us both later on. Hypnotic suggestions and love songs were presented to us, in order to facilitate our 'falling madly in love...'

"All these conditioning experiences served to 'prepare Clarke to deliver and hand me over to other men, then step aside while I serviced them sexually. It was always his job to make sure I was delivered to the right place, at the right time, to the right person. And for many years, that is exactly what he did.

"Bob Hope was one of the first 'high powered' men Clarke delivered me to. For my 16th birthday present (1967), Clarke surprised me with a trip, by train, to the San Diego Zoo for the day. We boarded the train, and after a while Clarke delivered me to a private car where Bob Hope, U.S. Senator Alan Cranston, and a couple of other men were waiting. Clarke left me with them and robotically went back to his seat. I had sex with each of them as the others watched. They were all ' old men', even in those days..."

Lois' paedophile father went to UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute in Westwood, when she was 16 years-of-age, for what everyone said was 'brain surgery." When he returned home he kneeled on the floor next to his daughter's bed and wept. Lois describes her father saying, "Honey, big things are happening. I've lost control over you." Lois says she didn't know how to react, since her father never cried before. "I couldn't think to question him," Lois said, "or to wonder just what it was he was trying to tell me. So I let it go along with hundreds of other thoughts and questions that any normal, unprogrammed daughter would have thought to ask."

If Lois' recollections are correct, her father sold her to the famous British born comedian, Bob Hope, who promptly began setting his new prize up with the likes of Ronald Reagan. The story she tells about Hope makes you wonder about his connections with British Intelligence in addition to the CIA.

Lois says she met Reagan for the first time at "the small theater that is part of the Motion Picture Country Hospital (MPCH) located in Calabasas, California. The hospital is owned and operated by the Screen Actors Guild.

"I was instructed to watch many movies that were for 'programming purposes' to instill certain preferred attitudes within me. To name a few: *My Fair Lady, The*

Unsinkable Molly Brown and the *Wizard of Oz.* I was programmed to go to the MPCH to watch some of the movies taht played in the small theater on the hospital grounds. At other times, seeing a movie was just a cover for privately meeting with Ronald Reagan.

"...I was told beforehand that I would have 'an important guest' and that I was to 'make a good impression on him, to give him the full treatment.'

"When Reagan and I were alone in the theater... the 'full treatment' consisted of me singing and dancing on the small stage for him and ending with a striptease. After my seductive act, I walked out to where he was sitting alone and climbed, naked, into his lap to recite my program. Following my programmed instructions, I told him that I could satisfy every desire he could imagine, that I came complete with instructions and was referred by his friend Bob Hope.

"He seemed embarrassed (a reaction that would follow him over the years in relation to me) and a bit overwhelmed, but his response to me was, 'I'm sold... tell Bob I'm sold.'

"Having carefully recorded his exact response within my photographic memory as instructed, I slipped out of his lap, collected my clothes from the stage floor and got dressed.

"I had several personalities that were specially created to please Reagan sexually. One was created for total devotion to him over the years.

"I was used extensively on and around 1968 by then Governor Reagan and soon after with United States President, Richard Milhouse Nixon. These top politicians were guaranteed by the Central Intelligence agency that my training in Project Monarch... insured the highest level of security. The level of mind control I possessed guaranteed that I could be used with these leaders who were involved at the highest levels of 'national security', without my own awareness.

"I overheard conversations where the President of the United States and other top politicians were offered the services of 'escorts', the CIA's latest technology -- top secret Project Monarch trained sex slaves. They were encouraged to use them to satisfy their sexual and emotional needs, instead of exposing themselves to outside individuals, because these 'escorts' were guaranteed safe, had passed many tests to insure their security, and were able to provide guaranteed secrecy.

"The presidents and others were highly discouraged from seeking other avenues of sexual indiscretions for fear of public exposure. This fear of political incorrectness, of seeking outside sexual gratification (instilled in these top officials by the CIA), fear of adverse publicity, and other security risks created a heavy demand for the use of this latest human technology."

According to Lois and other survivors, Project Monarch "Beta-trained" sex slaves were called "million dollar babies" referring to the large amont of money each slave would bring in from a very early age.

Lois said, "My father had done his homework, insuring that I had been MPD'd certifiably under complete mind control before I was ready for use by certain individuals in top political and entertainment positions. I was sixteen years old...

"But what many of the CIA may or may not have been aware of was that a powerful group of men, whom I will call The Council, secretly ran the government. The Council was also able to access me and had programmed me to subversively influence top government officials in ways that benefited them. The CIA's latest technology was being used against our own government..

"Our family doctor, had me taking a continuous supply of the antibiotic Tetracycline... to insure I did not infect the government leaders with any social diseases. He also prescribed mood elevators and mild tranquilizers for me during times when I was extremely depressed. These helped to keep me 'happy.' During the times I was being used by others, they accessed personalities that were cheerful and energetic, so my moods were never a problem.

"I was programmed," Lois said, "to stay thin, tan and silly -- a typical dumb blonde..."

"Clarke and I had been going steady since we were fourteen, and, except for a brief one-year break-up in high school, I did not date any other boys. I was unaware that secretly laced into my life was a whole array of discreetly hidden sexual rendezvous with men in influential positions...

"I was filmed pornographically in many locations, including Woodland Hills, Malibu, Hidden Hills, Bel Aire, and other places in the San Fernando Valley. At this stage of my life, the level of pornographic filming was more professional. There were themes, costumes, music, professional make-up, and lighting. Personalities inside of me were taught how to work with the lighting to catch the best poses, and how to move my body so the film crew could get the best shots. Upon completion of the filming, I would go home to my mother and father in Woodland Hills and later might even go out on a date with Clarke, believing that I was an innocent, loyal and loving girlfriend. Due to the mind control I was under, I had no way of knowing that I was leading anything other than a normal life, as a normal teenager, in a normal family in Woodland Hills.

"The extensive contact I had with Bob Hope as a teenager and in my early twenties showed me that Bob was much more than an entertainer. Entertainment was actually just a clever hobby of his. I witnessed his participation as a strategically placed, influential, and integrated part of an underworld group that secretly sought to control the world. He maintained direct ties to the White

House. Through my affiliation with Bob Hope, I was to meet and interact with many powerful businessmen, politicians and celebrities...

"I was often flown into a small airport in Palm Springs to be with Bob and his cronies. I was picked up by a silver limo and taken to his house. The men in suits would meet me and take me to Bob wherever he was -- at home, on the golf course, or in town. They would provide me with clothes, shoes, and jewelry in which to dress.

"One day, I accompanied Bob to the golf course in the (Palm?) Springs. He was dressed casually, in light blue slacks, pastel yellow shirt, white belt and white canvas shoes. There were several other men golfing with him. I was there just to be with Bob. I was 17, thin, tan, blonde and dressed in a tiny white dress, like a tennis outfit with spaghetti straps. I had on white sandals that came up from my toe and met at a strap around my ankle. I wore a gold heart anklet (slave bracelet) on my left ankle. I was not invited to play the golf game, but was instructed to watch and SMILE.

"Bob enjoyed having people around. He would have parties attended by lots of famous people. Usually they were held at his home in Palm Springs. Sometimes I was given as a gift to one or more of his friends for the night, but was programmed to return to his room to sleep. Dolores Hope was usually not around.

"But when she was, it was strange to see Dolores at the parties, knowing that I was having sex with Bob and had accompanied him to different places with his friends and business associates. Dolores never appeared to know exactly WHAT he did!

"Although my programming kept these activities hidden from my conscious mind, I would wake up late in the mornings in my own bed in Woodland Hills, with red eyes, feeling totally exhausted after what I thought was a full night's sleep. I was not able to understand that the exhaustion was actually caused by food, water, and sleep deprivation, coupled with electroshock tortures," Lois said.

"Dolores was already well-along in years when Bob was fooling around with me. She seemed not to like it when I was around and unfortunately, Bob did not offer much of an excuse for my presence, like Reagan did. He could not say I was his secretary or aide, but he did tell her he was needing to spend lots of time with me to 'groom me' for some of the USO Shows for the troops.

"I can remember hearing Dolores' voice, nagging at him one morning after a party while I was still there. He lied and told her I was there with some other man at the party. Not that I did not have sex frequently with many of this friends and business associates, but this time I had not...

"Bob referred to me in the earlier days (my teenage years) as his 'little bunny.' Through his USO involement, he was friends with Hugh Hefner and he came to the parties sometimes. Mr. Hefner always brought at least two women with him -- usually blondes. He never victimized me and I believe he and perhaps others that met me may not have known I was a mind-controlled slave.

"Starlite was a name Bob gave me. Starlite was one of my alter personalities. She was to become his 'starlet". He told Starlite, and other people when I was 'on his arm', that he was giving me a 'leg up' in the industry. At other times, he introduced me to people as his 'favorite niece.' My instructions were that Starlite always wore her hair parted on the side with it combed down over one eye to look sexy. She was to be very sexy. When Bob took me to parties he would tell everyone he was showing me the ropes, and that I had endless talent and great potential in the industry...

"Bob took me to several of Hugh Hefner's penthouse parties in Los Angeles. There were windows all around and at night you could see all the twinkling lights of the city. Bob told me that when I was 'on his arm' for the evening that he was mine, but at other times he was someone else's. Sometimes Bob prostituted me to Sammy Davis Jr., Dean Martin, and others, while Frank Sinatra served as a handler.

"Hefner had bazaar, exotic entertainment at his parties. Naked women who were painted like zebras, appeared to walk through the livingroom fireplace without being burned. Or he would have wild (tamed) animals, like a lion that was 'whipped into shape' by a Playboy Bunny. One time he even had a man dressed like Tarzan whipping a girl dressed like Jane. Everyone said the girl was not really being hurt, that it was just an illusion. I don't know if that was true. It was like that a lot -- a magic sex show..".

Bob Hope took Lois to Hefner's because he wanted her to be "Bunny trained." He asked her to pay close attention to the way the Playboy Bunnies moved so that she could move that way when she "entertained the troops," or Bob and his friends privately.

Lois had been programmed much as David, O, Candy Jones and the others -- to carry secret messages locked behind posthypnotic blocks. She said "the Council" often programmed her to deliver a message to some entertainer, celebrity, or politician at a party they knew she was going to attend. "I don't think Bob even knew some of the messages I was delivering," she said. "I would be told to hold the message until I had zeroed 'in' on the targeted person. Then, when I had made eye contact and had their full attention, I was to carefully 'drop the message,' while maintaining eye contact.

"I was usually very quiet, and when I would deliver these messages, Bob was not aware I was going to speak. He would be caught off guard and would make a joke about loving to be with me because he never knew what would come out of my mouth from one minute to the next.

"He told people that I had natural wit, but I was really programmed by others to deliver cryptic messages, cleverly made for certain select individuals," Lois said.

"It was during these early years that I began being heavily accessed and programmed by The Council, for use with many influential men and women in positions of power. In addition to my use with Bob Hope, and Ronald Reagan, who was then Governor of California, I began being used with President Richard Nixon as a sex slave, and Henry Kissinger utilized my "computerized mind files." (I never had sex with Henry Kissinge or George Bush). My use within government circles was seen as security proof. They felt my programming kept the information I carried from my own awareness and from access by others who did not know the keys to my system. But what those in government did not seem to know was that The Council also had the ability to access me and that they were secretly slipping in their own psychologically tested and carefully researched messages for me to deliver to presidents, governors, senators, foreign leaders, entertainers, and many other people who were in positions of power or public influence.

"The Council studied people's psychological profiles and knew exactly what their likes and dislikes were, their sexual preferences, what perfumes they liked, and any other information that could be used to influence individuals in ways of which they were never even aware. The Council would pre-program me with instructions (all based on careful research of the targeted person) of what to wear, how to act, what type of sexual stance to take... specific words or phrases to say, and the best time to deliver them. The Council always worked up a complete strategy and never sent me to a person unprepared."

In these ways, Lois says, they influenced government leaders, to act in their own favor to pass or veto laws or bills that benefited their corporate holdings, to bring into office people who would be used as pawns, to influence judges and government agencies, and to control people in all walks of life.

"My experience was that The Council's membership was publicly nameless and unknown and their true power and ability to manipulate the masses came from the fact that they were publicly unknown. From my perspective, these individuals acting in the shadows, actually dictate the direction our government takes. They were connected to people like Bob Hope through a secret liaison with me, of which I was programmed not to even be aware. They felt they had their identities and security locked up tight.

"Parties were given in New York at the Rockefeller mansion around Christmas each year. My reliability had been tested for several years and at nineteen I seemed to "graduate" to a higher level of use. What could be higher than the President of the United States? In my experience The Council and certain international individuals like the Rockefeller's were a higher level, standing head and shoulders above the government and mere politicians.

Lois would be flown to New York by commercial airline and met at the airport. She would be taken to get her hair and nails done, then brought back and dressed to be used to 'entertain' top people from all over the world. At the parties, Lois was dressed formally in expensive evening gowns, and often provided a diamond broach or huge diamond necklace to wear. The evening would usually end in a sexual encounter with the targeted individuals.

"Nelson Rockefeller was connected to Bob Hope and many presidents -- Nixon, Ford, Reagan, and Bush... otherwise known as The Republican Party... Yet is wasn't only the Republican Party -- Democrats were not exempt from involvement. There were both Democrats or Republicans involved with The Council...

At these "bi-partisan" parties Lois observed a small group of men who usually met in the back room after the party to discuss world strategies and business. It was not unusual to see some of the guests spend the night from among the select few who were invited to the party.

"I watched the men who literally ran the world. Men who decided when it was profitable and/or strategically important and politically correct to start a war. They even had it planned who would begin the fighting and where. It always added up to big money, power, and control...

"People in America think they elect their presidents but from what I witnessed, they do not. The process of putting someone into office is a controlled and corrupt one. The media is also so controlled that the American people do not get the full and accurate story. The presidents are selected long before they are voted into office. It is no accident that Ronald Reagan or Pete Wilson won by a large majority. It was all rigged through financial, business and political connections from this group, right down to business and political factions and then on down into the public," Lois said.

"They own the press. They own key television stations and famous anchormen. They have key members who own the newspaper companies. They buy magazine companies and own many corporations that allow them to have the leading edge on media exposure, thus allowing them to control the information people see on the news, read in the newspaper, or hear on the radio. They are funded by some of the richest men and corporations in the world who aid them in getting what they want, when they want it, by whatever means it takes to do so. They operate above the law, above the Federal Government.

"I witnessed and recorded in my photographic memory many of these encounters as I was bounced around the globe in the company of varied but influential "people in the know." Lois' book chronicles all the details.

"In my late teens and early 20's, I was taken aboard U.S. Navy carriers when Bob was doing a show on his USO tours. I had several personalities who were specifically trained to sing and dance and several who were expertly trained to dance and strip. Usually Bob and I would be flown into a base and then helicoptered the rest of the way to the ship.

"On tour with Bob there were always large bands, with lots of music and lights set up on the stage. Red, white and blue banners decorated the stage where we performed. The shows were very festive, high energy performances. Sailors would be standing, packed together to watch the show.

"If the media was there, Bob totally controlled what they captured on camera, what segments could be filmed, and when they had to leave.

"What the 'boys' didn't know was that Bob knew how to engage their emotions with certain specific words and phrases and songs. He knew how to 'lighten them up,' get them really 'emotional' and worked up and then he would slip them suggestions, keyed to conditioning, that 'helped them with certain unwanted attitudes.'

"I overheard The Council making jokes about the 'herds' (the troops) and how stupid and easily led they were...

"After shows, I was usually taken to the Commanding Officer's quarters to further 'entertain' him in the privacy of his room. My perception was these officers had big egos and felt inflated about all their medals and ribbons. The Council often 'slipped' messages (embedded commands) to the officers, through me, possibly without the officers' knowledge.

"After the show, some man would put a stun gun to my body and I would totally collapse into his arms. He would carry me over and lay me down until it was time to leave. The sensation inside was white hot, then very cold. This was my reaction to the electroshock.

"The man delivering the electricity also delivered programming to me. Before and after he zapped me he said: 'You are fat and ugly and no man could ever be attracted to you.' I never would have believed I was attractive enough to perform on stage, had I begun to remember it. I was often in poor condition when I was helicoptered away...

"I felt like I was on every naval base in the United States at some time or another to accompany Bob on some of his USO tours or for my own programming. The programming at the bases was torturous. As a child in the late 50's, I was taken to a base where I was put in total isolation. Bright lights were put in my eyes and bands were put around my wrists, ankles, and forehead and I was given electroshock coupled with food and sleep deprivation and whatever other tortures programmers decided to use including being hung upside down for extended periods of time. As I got older, programmers on military bases repeatedly drugged me and inflicted varied physical, sexual, emotional, and/or psychological tortures that assaulted all of my senses. I was put into a large cylindrical chamber, where I was tied by the wrists and ankles ot the sides and left in isolation. There were red, yellow or green lights flashing inside the chamber, but never two colors at once. Other times I lwas left alone in total darkness and stark silence for what felt like an eternity. Drugs, food and sleep deprivation always accompanied the programming and afterwards I felt extremely tired, achy, and nauseated but mistakenly assumed I just contracted the flu.

"With people Bob really wanted to own or use he would take pictures of a rape with hidden cameras. He knew just how to get these people. He would show the man a picture of the rape of a child and say, 'We sure don't want these pictures, or any others like these, to get into the wrong hands and ruin your career, do we?' Then he would simply tell the man what he wanted. It usually had to do with getting another 'friend' of his into a 'key' position in the government, looking the other way when a case came down, or getting a bill passed or vetoed. He knew just how to control these men and they usually complied..."

From 1988-1991 Lois was in therapy seven-days-a-week, during which time, she says, she "uncovered pages of programming from inside." Then, one day, she received a dollar bill in her wallet and on top of it was written:" April 12 -- 2042." Lois knew these were programming numbers and since she had two serious accidents on April 12, 1985 and 1987 she was convinced April was to be her next programmed "accident date". At her next session with her deprogrammer, the doctor told Lois she didn't think she was safe and had better leave Los Angeles.

"A friend came and offered me a place to stay in Hawaii, and I flew to her home on April 13, 1991. She introduced me to a man who helped me deprogram myself. I taught him what I knew and he read some books on MPD and ritual abuse and applied it to the knowledge he already had. I ceased all contact with my husband, Clarke, staying on the island for five weeks, but, then I came home when my attorney told me I would lose custody of my children if I didn't.

"Later," she said, " I discovered that I had been at a 'containment center' for mind-controlled slaves." And Lois would eventually learn that her original lawyer worked as a 'containment asset'.

"I lost custody of my children anyway, and my financial support was very limited, due to being a 'high level' model. My children visited me summers and Christmas on Hawaii. But, even after I thought I was free," Lois said, " I was still being prostituted..."

While now, for the first time in her life, Lois says, she is free "thanks to some unusual therapy with a deprogammer who had the expertise to really help me."

Sadly, Lois believes her children carry on the multigenerational custom, so commonly found with Project Monarch. She believes they are programmed, carrying out their robotic intelligence functions under the control of their father, and the watchful eyes of his 'Council'-appointed handlers.

CALIFORNIA DRIVER LICENSE

MUST BE CARRIED WHEN OPERATING A MOTOR VEHICLE AND WHEN APPLYING FOR RENEWAL

EXPIRES ON
BIRTHDAY IN
1 9 / 8

06 081
L
2 OAK DR
A CA 91 1

SEX HAIR EYES
F BRN HZL 5-04 115 74

DATE OF BIRTH
01-20-51

OTHER
ADDRESS

CLASS 3 3 AXLE HOUSE CAR AND ALL 2 AXLE VEH'S
WHEEL MOTORCYCLE MAY TOW VEH UNDER

SEE OVER FOR ANY OTHER CONDITIONS ☐ MUST WEAR CORRECTIVE

x Mrs

•• DO NOT LAMINATE ••

Through innocent eyes Lois smiles at the camera. One of the many pieces of identification provided by this real life survivor of the so-called Project Monarch. I have eradicated the vital statistics on this driver license so that Lois cannot be identified. Obviously her real name is not Lois. Should anyone care to come forward with further corroboration of her story, contact the author.

13

MONARCH CORROBORATION

A number of friends and fellow researchers couldn't bring themselves to believe the stories of "O" nor Lois. In the beginning, neither could I. Both dropped too many famous names. Both had witnessed too many important events in history. Both told hideous stories of abuse. How could our high government officials fall to such low perversions? Would they violate the human spirit just for lust? Greed?

After a little thought, once one has processed the horror, one realizes that in each case, celebrities and high government officials were controlled by their vices which were fed by the cryptocracy using one of Project Monarch's programmed "presidential models." In each case it was the survivor's remarkable "programmed" gifts, which were the invisible reins of control the cryptocracy held over Senators, Presidents, and Kings. In fact, it looks as if our executive branch of government is now controlled by new innovations in the usual Machiavellian options: bribery, blackmail, threat of death, and/or ultimately assassination.

Then, again come the doubts. Here we are taking the word of a "reintegrated" person who's suffered a lifetime of Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) which is a relatively new idea in itself. One doesn't *want* to believe this.

Sure, we'd all seen the films *Three Faces of Eve* and *Sibyl,* but MPD is new to psychoscience. (And to confuse things more it was renamed DID for Dissociative Identity Disorder in 1994.) In 1980 there were only 200 plus cases of MPD reported to the American Psychiatric Association (APA). In 1990, however, there were 24,000 cases. That doesn't mean they weren't there all the time, it only means that the "mental health industry" has just caught on to how to diagnose it. Based on the testimony we've heard trauma-based programming has existed for hundreds of years, which means there have been programmed people among us with multiple personalities for hundreds of years.

While psychiatrists are still struggling with effective treatments, radical new techniques are emerging such as those adapted from NeuroLinguistics Programming and Ericksonian hypnosis. These and similar techniques can effect quick and complete "reintegration" or "fusion" for people suffering from MPD. As the treatments become more effective, more MPD sufferers are remembering their "core" selves and some are discovering that those "core" selves are stamped "made by the U.S. Government."

A woman whose story is remarkably similar to O's is Victoria Vulpes (another nom de plume.) With the help of therapists in Florida, Texas and Minnesota, Vulpes recovered a harrowing assortment of memories, the first of which was of incest with her father, which came out of a dream she had in 1989. Next she remembered being abused by other relatives, dangled upside down over a cliff, taken to Satanic rituals where a baby was killed and eaten, and subjected to mind-control experiments by the military and CIA.

The owner of an elegant clothing shop, Vulpes sued her uncle (her father was dead) based on the memories she recovered of incest she said occurred 34 years ago. The uncle vigorously denied the charges, and the case was put on hold until the Florida Supreme Court decided that the statute of limitations had expired on this delayed-memory case, thus sidestepping a decision.

In an interview with a local paper, Vulpes would not discuss the lawsuit or her uncle, but she spoke to a reporter for three hours about the other memories she'd recovered. She said she wanted the government to admit its wrongdoing, and release the results of the "Monarch mind-control Project" and compensate its victims. Vulpes said she wasn't interested in naming names or getting anyone in trouble. "I'm looking for a negotiated peace settlement with the government." She said she only wanted to know " the keys to my programming so that I may complete my therapy and healing process."

According to the paper, a CIA spokesman said he wasn't familiar with the mind-control experiment Vulpes described. "It's existence isn't likely," he said. "I wouldn't deny her her memory of her experience, but I would be very surprised to see the CIA involved in any way."

The article said Vulpes points to the fact that she has found three other women who have recovered similar memories. All three women are members of a support group run by a therapist who was a past president of a prominent society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociative Disorders. The therapist, the paper said, "has diagnosed about 30 cases of multiple personality disorder, (and) does not question the accuracy of the satanic-abuse and military mind-control memories.

"I don't think these folks are making it up," the therapist said. "They're too together."

Vulpes was separated from her husband and is the mother of two grown children. She built a thriving business and developed a busy social life, the article said. "She has too much going on to be inventing this kind of fantasy," the therapist said. "Besides, people worldwide describe the same things. It couldn't be a coincidence."

"It's not a coincidence, "said FBI agent Kenneth Lanning, who studied allegations of ritual child abuse by satanic cults and others. He said in a phone interview to the paper that the Monarch Project was "just kind of a myth or legend that's being spread by a small number of people at a variety of therapy conferences."

"Absurd urban legends about the corporate logos of Procter and Gamble and Liz Claiborne being satanic symbols persist in spite of all efforts to refute them with reality," Lanning told the paper. "Just because individuals who never met each other tell the same story doesn't mean its true."

Another person who questions the accuracy of the memories was the attorney who represented Vulpes's 70-year-old uncle.

"It's extremely unlikely for this woman to have suppressed the extraordinary events she alleges occurred to her in her childhood and adolescence," the paper quoted the attorney saying. "This is not just Daddy sneaking into the bedroom. This is torture. Murder."

According to the paper the attorney blames therapists for creating, or at least perpetuating "mass hysteria" through the current fad for repressed-memory therapy.

Vulpes said her father was a Cuban-American who went into the U.S. military and was stationed in Panama, Germany and several U.S. bases, including MacDill in Tampa. She was one of seven children.

In 1959, the paper said, Vulpes's father left the military and returned to Cuba for about a year. Then he was asked by the Cuban government to leave. Vulpes regards this as evidence that he was a CIA agent. During that year in Cuba, her alleged abuse at the hands of her uncle occurred, according to her lawsuit. The accusations included rape, sodomy and unusual sexual practices.

Memories of the abuse by her uncle, as well as others, remained beyond her conscious mind until after her father's death in 1989, Vulpes said. At an intensive four-day session of therapy in Minnesota, she got the idea she might have some kind of sexual-abuse problem but she had no memory of any. Then she had a dream in which her father was chasing her and laughing saying, "You can't get away from me." She said that when she awoke, she knew what the dream meant. It shocked her, she said, "Because this was certainly not the image I had of my father nor that anyone else had of my father."

Other memories came later through work Vulpes did with a number of therapists and on her own working with pen and paper, letting her subconscious take over and instruct her what to write.

Vulpes remembered her father taking her to a satanic ritual in Panama where "Indians killed a small baby and ate it." Her father took her to the ceremony purposely to traumatize her on instructions from his bosses in the CIA," Vulpes said. She said she "split" several times that night, depositing the painful memory with several alter personalities.

"I don't know how many parts of me there are," Vulpes said

Memories of military mind control emerged during treatment at Charter Hospital in Dallas, where she was sent by Dr. Colin Ross, well-known expert in the field of multiple personality disorder. There she was given paper and told to draw. Her memories of programming sessions by her 'controls" grew out of that time, the article said. She was only one of many children who were traumatized and programmed into total obedience, she said.

"I believe these were experiments to see how much you could control human beings," Vulpes said.

Dr. Ross confirmed that Vulpes told him she was a military-programmed multiple personality, the article said. "His take on it? 'It's a very complicated matter, difficult to figure out how much is real and how much is not real. It warrants serious study.'"

Vulpes told the paper "The Monarch Project experiments are still going on." But she declined to discuss current activities because her 'controls' might harm her. She offered a manuscript from a group called "Ritual CIA (Cult, Incest or Abuse) Exposed" in Santa Rosa, Calif. that describes the project pretty much the way she did.

The paper reported that FBI agent Lanning said it's important to note that people who describe memories of Satanic abuse and military mind control often really believe they took place and aren't knowingly lying. "It's possible that something abused them -- not a Satanic cult, not the CIA, but something -- did happen to Vulpes while she was growing up."

"The trouble, though," Lanning told the paper, "is that once she starts talking about her wilder 'memories', she loses credibility in the courtroom."

"That isn't lost on (the attorney)," the article reported. "I don't know which of her personalities is suing," he said. "Due process requires that the real abusee stand up... I'm looking forward to the cross-examination."

Are you laughing ? Mark Phillips isn't. Phillips has been dealing with the victims of Project Monarch for quite a while.

"Serial killings are on the increase 200 fold," Phillips said. "When caught, some of the killers blamed Satan for their exploits and crimes, others could not legitimately remember. I watched the FBI stand firm on their "no such thing" philosophy..." Remind you of what the detective said on the Oprah Winfrey show?

When I managed to get Vulpes on the phone, she talked freely:

"AIDS was known about in 1968, or earlier," she said. "I know three different (Monarch survivors) people. We all got vaccinations -- inoculations against auto immune deficiency. We got it in 1968. AIDS didn't come out until the 1970's. I said then, I'm never going to talk about this. People would say that I'm crazy. So I never talked about it. Then when I did, in the group, three other people said, 'Oh yeah, we were inoculated too.' (A 1953 Artichoke document references the CIA's interest in a synthetic virus.)

"You know how many people died because of aids. I won't sign an affidavit to that affect. They'd kill me. But didn't you ever wonder why the politicians in D.C. don't get AIDS? They had the cure for aids before they let it get out. Now they're going to release the cure because they hadn't anticipated that it was going to cost this much money. They've developed a whole line of racially specific viruses -- they've got things so bad you can't imagine."

We talked about psychic phenomenon as it is seen in patients diagnosed as having Dissociated Identity Disorder (MPD).

Vulpes told of her memories in the realm of the arcane: "I remember a room full of men around a conference table. I was maybe five. They put the chair in the middle of the conference table and had me demonstrate my psychic and intuitive powers. They had me knock the glasses off of some man's nose without moving."

"I will deny I ever said this. I remember being in Area 51. I think that's where it was. They had a room full of men around a conference table. They got a chair and they were having me demonstrate my psychic and intuitive powers.

"They had me pinpoint the person who was the least loyal. Everybody went berserk. I had to tell them what I was doing. I had to get under the table psychically and touch his private parts, so that he'd know he was going to be touched. He jumped when I touched him.

"Did they did a lot of psychic stuff. Yes. It was not unusual."

I asked Vulpes if she'd taken part in any remote viewing experiments?

" I don't remember that. I remember being told by somebody way up in the government -- very high that I was better than Jean Dixon -- an elected official who was not aware of the programming I'd had. I was told what to answer and not to answer. I was only a German girl. I was not allowed to be an American citizen. I performed all sorts of things, read his mind, found hidden objects in the room.

"It's one of the side affects of MPD," Vulpes said. "Then we were trained to use it. The one other female I have the most in common with has also had a lot of training.

"She told me she saw the results of genetic experiments -- a hybrid hermorphadite. Somebody told her that was impossible."

It has become clear that the cryptocracy developed aspects of the human mind of which the psychiatric community would not become aware for many years.

In his book *The Osiris Complex, Case-Studies in Multiple Personality Disorder*[60], Dr. Ross writes: "Why should people who have been abused as children, and who have complex dissociative disorders, also be psychic? In one sense, it doesn't matter if the psychic experiences are real; real or not, this is an important unanswered question in psychology. There is something about the human mind we don't understand, an aspect of experience which has been banished from mainstream psychology and psychiatry... Psychic and extrasensory experiences are so characteristic of people with MPD that they statistically differentiate MPD from other diagnostic groups such as schizophrenia, panic disorder, eating disorders, and temporal-lobe epilepsy. I have met many people with experiences similar to Martha's (the pseudonym of Ross's patient who describes paranormal phenomenon), and all of them have considered their experiences to be real.

"The ability to dissociate and the ability to have extrasensory experiences are closely linked -- I mean psychologically, not genetically, although they could also be linked genetically. I think that the ability to have frequent complex dissociative experiences can be latent in the absence of serious child abuse, and that it often gets activated when there is childhood trauma. Being psychic is not so closely related to having been abused as a child, but this range of human experience is also prone to activation by trauma...

"The relationship between paranormal experience, dissociation, and child abuse is something psychologists and psychiatrists should study. A whole dimension of human experiences is simply left out of modern academic psychology, although it is universally present in religion, folklore, mythology, and literature. Martha and others like her have taught me to think clinically about the paranormal in a way which is not skewed by the ideological biases of twentieth-century psychiatry..."

We know that the CIA funded J.B. Rhine's famous telepathy experiments at Duke University and other explorations of the paranormal. We also can present evidence that the CIA supports public debunking of the paranormal on a full time basis. Adding the reports of the Monarch victims and others to the fifty-year-long body of reports found in Ufology (activities of the Men In Black etc.), you might conclude that one of the cryptocracy's purposes is to disempower human potential through debunking anything that might be evidence of an evolutionary development of human psychic ability, on the one hand, while working in secret to develop that ability for its own dark purpose on the other.

Within the cryptocracy-controlled scientific community, Dr. Ross notes the pattern in a less sinister way: "One of the key strategies of the mechanistic-reductionist philosophy that dominates twentieth-century medicine is to define the reductionist model of medicine as *the medical model*. This is a clever, though unconscious, strategy because it implies that all other models of medicine are-medical: reductionism has claimed a monopoly, in effect, over medicine, and has borrowed the prestige of science to cloak itself in an aura of power, sobriety, and rationality.

---

[60] Ross, Colin A., M.D., *The Osiris Complex: Case-Studies in Multiple Personality Disorder, University of Toronto Press*, Toronto, Ont. Canada, 1994

"Galileo was put under house arrest by the Catholic church for saying that the earth went around the sun. In the late twentieth century, the orthodox scientific establishment ostracizes anyone who considers the existence of demons (or extrasensory perception) to be a serious scientific problem, though it lacks the totalitarian control to implement house arrest. In both cases, what is going on is orthodox dogma suppressing free intellectual inquiry," Ross said.(The deliberate suppression of the belief (both in the scientific and general public) in the innate human psychic ability by the cryptocracy could be the subject of an entire book.)

For some reason, recently the so-called Monarch survivors are recovering their memories. Thousands of alter personalities are coming forth to tell on their handlers. Many are beginning to walk away from their handlers, to drop out of the mind control system. (We've heard professionals guestimate that there could be millions of trauma-based individuals in the United States and probably an equal number or more in Europe.)

"One day, a few years ago I just started to walk, and I didn't know I was walking." Vulpes said. " I figured I was just leading the same life I'd always been leading, but doing real good therapy. But meanwhile in my memories these guys are screaming at me: "What are you doing?"

"It's a very crazy story. I ended up getting together with someone who told me he was an ex-CIA agent. When they're a CIA agent they want to be able to talk to someone. That's why they told me he was 'ex.' We know that you can't stop working for the CIA. There's no ex. It's like working for the Mafia, but that's what he told me.

"He ended up coming very close to me and giving me a little bit of grief. But it was interesting because I asked him, 'What did you do for the CIA?'

"He said,' My job was to go after CIA agents who went bad.' It wasn't until a year later that I realized that was probably the reason he was hanging around me. They considered me an agent that went bad. And I'm saying, meanwhile, I don't even know what's going on around here. Now I'm getting the memories and now I know what they're talking about. But when I started to walk I didn't know I was walking.

"So, then there was a negotiating process. I think that more of us are involved with that than we are aware. You know we all have reporters inside, don't you? And who do you report to? You think you have people from 20 years ago to report to? No.

"And we all report on each other -- unless we've been deprogrammed. And personally I haven't met anyone who's been completely deprogrammed. I think we still report to people. "

I asked her if she thought they were still programming people this way and Vulpes said, "I don't think they do this anymore because it's not necessary. I hope we can be reintegrated.

"At some point the codes, cues and triggers have got to come out. I'm not going to be the one to do it. Let some of the other women do it. I want to live. But, somebody's going to say it. Somebody on their death bed. Somebody with a death wish..."

Vulpes had no sexual mutilations like O. Commenting on that she said: "It depends on how valuable your body was to them. It depends on where you were in the hierarchy. O was used mainly as a body and as a parrot, so this was acceptable. She may not have had the training a lot of us had,

"I remember that there were rules having to do with the handling of me and my body. There could not be any mutilation. I had to be clean -- immaculate. You could not create any dent, any wrinkle, any breaking of bones, any breaking of the skin, nothing that could damage the goods.

I asked if she'd experienced any bestiality like O had?

"That's Satanic stuff. Everybody goes into that. I don't have any specific memories of that but I wouldn't doubt it. I haven't done much of my satanic work, but I know, I remember when I was very young those being the rules, and I told my therapist before I knew what was going on, when I just thought it was only my father abusing me. I said, "these are the rules." I remember them.

I wondered if she had any tattoos or scars or unusually shaped or place moles, since stungun shock points can bring the melanin to the surface and cause unusually shaped moles?

"I have a mole on my right cheek which I do not have in photographs of me as a child. I don't know when it came," She said.

"My service was all in the line of espionage. When I read *The Control of Candy Jones,* I almost collapsed. It was the same story as mine.

"People I've spoken to who've had training similar to mine -- we can hypnotize people. That was one of the things we were trained to do. And it's interesting, I've always known, before I knew I was MPD, if I got into a certain mode I could get anything I wanted from anybody, even if they had just said no to somebody previously.

"Mark Phillips talks about people who've had the military programming -- how they carry themselves erect. Well, that's the way I carry myself, and that's the way

I speak. I don't look that way. I'm feminine. I'm not bad looking, but I carry myself and handle myself in very much of a military fashion. Though I'm not a winsome personality at all. But somebody else can be told ,"no" and I'll walk up, with no charm and get what I want, and not through intimidation, though I know how to intimidate also. That was also a part of my training.

"I must have done good with the language of the unconscious.

"We do all understand that if we talk about these things people won't believe it, so that's why we don't talk about these things. They also spend a good deal of time debunking ESP and things because they don't want people to believe in their own abilities. They don't want everybody to discover that they have strong psychic abilities which could (through remote viewing?) make all their secrets public.

"This is not an integral part of the story -- the psychic phenomena part -- so, if that part of the story is told later on down the line, that's okay.

"They're using us as workers, workers, workers," she said.

"Didn't you volunteer," I asked facetiously.

"I was three years old," she said. "Hello?

"I turned in my letter of resignation four years ago," she said. "They have yet to accept it."

Stating the obvious I said, " So all this happened to you without your consent."

"I never knew a thing. I never had any beliefs in my regular life.

I asked a burning question: "Are you telling your handler what you're telling me?"

"My control has my phone tapped. Everything I've told you they know," she said. "I think they told me not to read your book. I have a mental block about reading your book (a photocopy of the 1978 edition.). When I got it today I just dove into it. I didn't think about it, I got the book and I read it. I have not been able to make myself read it.

"I have a mental block. Normally, when I'm excited about something I rush right through it. But I'm having trouble getting through it. I haven't got past three chapters. I can feel a wall. I know there's something preventing me and it's not me.

"Basically I assume that everything I say gets back to them. I have an agreement with them -- whichever part of me still meets with them and deals with them -- I don't say names, I don't say dates. I'm a real team player. I will never sell anybody down the river. I tell people where I'm coming from. I don't want anybody to die. I just got a life, I don't want to die.

"They already agreed on this two years ago that they would not get prosecuted."

I couldn't believe my ears. "You're telling me the handlers have been given a deal -- a pardon of some kind? What are they trying to do, straighten you guys out and put you on your feet again?"

"I think they're trying to keep it from being a royal mess and ending up in the court system across the land and destroying the country," Vulpes said. "The settlement is not the issue. It's not what they did to us, it's what we did for them -- for the country. They cannot afford to have it land in court. They can't afford to have it land in a mode of anger in the press. I think -- I know they're ready to deal with us.

"They couldn't get any of us to lift our heads up. Everybody was too frightened. I know there's negotiating going on. I know the people who were in control and the people who could have gotten hurt have been told that they were -- from what I understand -- given a presidential pardon by George Bush before he left office. That's what I understand, but there's no proof. But, it doesn't make sense any other way.

"When they started this in the beginning, they never thought it'd come unraveled. They never thought they'd get caught. Never. They thought you could erase a person's mind forever. Now, they know we come unraveled, but they could still fix it.

"I was given electroshock as recently as six months ago. They have a little travel kit. that looks like electric rollers. That's the size of the thing. You plug it in to a regular socket.

"Next time you see it, steal it, so we can figure out the amps and volts," I said, thinking that if one could spend time with one of those who were active, one might be able to stick in enough programming to gather a lot of information and begin to effectively empower these "Monarch" survivors to uncover the whole system. But, it'll probably wait for someone who was a former programmer to begin the deprogramming. Inevitably, I believe, this is what will happen. The robots will turn on their masters.

Vulpes continued talking about the shock equipment: "Whenever I'm near one of those things, I'm never in a good position to do anything. I'm not negotiating when that thing is around. I'm totally a victim when that thing's around. But I have two memories within the last year and one half, and I know it's something everybody's not that familiar with. When it was used on me the first time, the person that I had been dealing with, needed to bring someone else with that apparatus.

"There needs to be some knowledge behind it. Am I right?" she asked me, as if I was expert with shock techniques. Since this interview I've learned a lot more about the process, but we all still have a lot to learn.

"All of us have so much missing time, we don't know what missing time is. When I was first diagnosed they asked, "do you miss time." I said no. It wasn't until a year later that I knew what they were talking about. I never understood what a normal person's concept of time was. I never had a normal person's memory. I never missed any time, because I never had a continuous run.

Vulpes said some things about her background. She was part Cuban, part German she said. Himmler's Lebensborn project came to mind. "Was your dad your real father?" I asked.

"He was my genetic father. I have six siblings who are half brothers and sisters with the woman who raised me. I was the only one who was an illegitimate birth from a German woman," Vulpes said. "I was the only one who was not an American citizen. I got thrown out of Cuba on 24 hours notice. All of a sudden there was an emergency in 1960 and I had to leave the island at age 12. My Dad was Cuban but he was in the U.S. Air Force.

"The story was that he came to New York, got caught in Communist activities and got put on Ellis Island. And I always thought that's where he got recruited there. He ended up in Germany at the end of the Second World War in the Air Force which was his cover for being in the O.S.S. Then I was born and got put in that program. There is no doubt but that I was in a program.

"One of the girls in my group and I talked because she had to go to the dentist. So we talked and compared notes and discovered that we had been sent to the dentist almost every week as kids. I think that was the time they did a lot of the training. My kids today have perfect teeth. We have good genes for teeth.

"I don't think they put us under, I don't remember drugs. I think they traumatized us there. But all we agreed upon was we had too many trips to the dentist," Vulpes said.

Another survivor of the "Monarch" program told me about her vivid memories of having her baby teeth removed so that she could transform secret information in the little tooth cavities -- one at a time. Some tooth fairytale.

"My friend, this girl in my group I'm talking about, did not to her knowledge have military training or military service. She was programmed by her father in the basement. But because her programming is so similar to mine, I believe that her father was trained by the same people who trained the people who programmed me. Mine was done under military circumstances, even though my father had homework that was not done on the base, but these people's parents had nothing to do apparently with the military but they were getting the same kind of training," Vulpes said.

"One of the reasons we have not gone full steam ahead with my deprogramming is that I am still too tightly knit into this. If these guys want to talk to me, I think I want to talk to them. I don't want to make it so difficult so that I end up getting run over. If I happen to get a little off track, I want to know. I hope they give me some warning," Vulpes said.

"I'm totally aware that they have ways of dealing with me without my ever knowing about it. You may know a lot, but I lived it. You're doing a good job, and if you didn't remain once-removed you wouldn't be doing such a good job.

"You have things in this edition of the book that you talk about, some of the Air Force programming of David that made me real uncomfortable when I read it. It triggered me.

"I have accepted the fact that they probably have a camera in every room I have ever been in -- inside my head, inside my car. I have something in my car that buzzes. It's not from the car. It goes on for a minute or so. It used to come from the back, now it comes from under the dash. They had my old car wired, I just can't believe they've wired my new car already.

"I wake up every night in the middle of the night. Do others tell you they wake up at 2:30 in the morning? Why do they do that...?"

"Yes. I've heard that. People say 2:30 - 3:00 in the morning. Maybe they're turning on the brain washing machine? I've heard people say that certain cities have signals that go on at night. People say there's an attempt to manipulate and program a large number of people. What content do the signals carry? I don't know. Work harder, longer, faster?" I said.

"I was told it was going to go down quietly. Everybody knew what they were going to do. I heard that Dan Rostenkowski was one of the mind controllers and they're getting him. (He since was defeated at the polls.) I've noticed a lot of others whose names have come up from survivors are being driven from office," Vulpes said. "I think there were a lot of people who weren't into agreement with this mind control thing. I think there are a lot of people inside the government who were, say, handlers, that didn't know how big this thing got. They didn't know how many others were doing it. Because of the compartmentalization, because of the need to know, the individuals didn't realize they were part of this insidious, all pervading system of mind rape...

"I was a victim of the Cold War. I was victimized in the name of the Cold War. Now we know what a sham it was. There was no war. The Communists had nothing. What's their excuse now?"

"Do we have a Constitution in the United States or don't we?" I asked.

"We have a set of rules that we are supposed to follow and then we have a separate group of people who are doing damned well what they please. I never had a Bill of Rights. I was a U.S. resident who was not a citizen of the U.S. My father was military personnel. I had every right to be a U.S. citizen. I was not allowed to be a citizen. Five years ago I got to be a U.S. citizen and I got the right to vote, but I still don't have the freedom to think for myself. So how the hell can I have free speech.

"The National Security Act, obviously, takes precedent over the Bill of Rights," Vulpes said. "It's main purpose today is to keep secret the criminal activities that first started taking place during the so-called Cold War.

"Now that they've cut the electorate out of the process, they've laid the foundation for the failure of this republic.

"But we're networking now. Things are going well. I'm talking to you and tomorrow I can go to the beach and not get killed. A few years ago, I couldn't have said that.

"I have all the names filed away, so that if anything happens to me, the names get released. I'm taking precautions to protect my life. I was once in real danger, but now, they've settled, and they've gotten a pardon. They were murdering, selling children, white slaving, drug smuggling -- doing whatever the hell they wanted and hiding it all behind mind control. Everybody had their side deals going. None of their wives knew about this. Now they've all gotten a pardon."

"We've found a lot of sergeants, a lot of menial government employees involved in doing the trauma-abused programming," I said.

"Yes," Vulpes said, "There was a guy in Miami who was nobody. He had nothing to say. A Post Office guy, but behind the scenes he was a heavy hitter. He wasn't happy that I began to remember what he'd done. Nothing he did would have been tolerated by his social group. If it was exposed he would have lost his social standing. He would have lost his intelligence capability because he was working under deep cover, and half of the politicians in Miami would have killed him.

"Everybody was playing both sides of the street. They were all double agents, selling to both sides, any sides, people who were on no side. People just feeding their own habits, doing deals with the declared enemy and everybody up the line knows it and doesn't care because they're getting theirs.

"They all knew what they were doing. The stupid people were the American Public. A lot of their stuff is still going on extracurricularly. People who were in the Monarch Project and were supposed to be eliminated and weren't, I think, are now being accessed by the former handlers who have retired from government service and are still doing what they were doing when they were in government service. They're no longer smuggling drugs for the CIA's black ops fund, their smuggling drugs for their own fund, and selling sex slaves and trauma-programming children so that they can have little MPD's to sell as sex slaves to paedophiles and so on... It happened across the board...

"That's how this king and that king was controlled, how this Senator and that Congressman was controlled, how Prince Charles was controlled and interfered with, and manipulated so that he'll never be King of England... It was done with so-called Presidential Models...

"Now, they're getting their cumuppins, I think. There's momentum here..."

Now, we have to remember we're talking with a person suffering from MPD or DID here. And, while they believe what they are saying, it is all accurate and true? Perhaps we should look at what's known about this disorder. In his landmark book, *Multiple Personality Disorder: Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment* Colin Ross tell us[61]:

> ...multiple personality disorder is a little girl imagining that the abuse is happening to someone else. The imagining is so intense and subjectively compelling, and is reinforced so many times by the ongoing trauma, that the created identities seem to take on a life of their own, though they are all parts of one person.
>
> Two basic psychological maneuvers form the foundation of multiple personality disorder. First, the little girl who is being repeatedly sexually abused has an out-of body experience: detached from her body and what is going on, she may float up to the ceiling and imagine that she is watching another little girl being abused. Since that unfortunate little girl on the bed below may have a different name and a different physical appearance, the abuse is not so terrifying and overwhelming because it is happening to someone else, and the child is buffered from the direct impact of the trauma. Second, an amnesia barrier is erected between the original child and the newly created identity. Now not only is the abuse not happening to the original little girl, she doesn't even remember it: this process is reinforced over and over as the abuse continues. Various identities may be created to deal with different aspects of the trauma, resulting in an eventual total of ten, twenty, or more alter personalities. Once the mind is in the habit of creating new identities in this way, alter personalities may be generated to cope with many non-trauma events, tasks, or functions in life, including going to school and dealing with peers.
>
> Adult patients with MPD experience a number of core symptoms that should be inquired about in psychiatric assessments. These include voices in the head and ongoing blank spells or periods of missing time. The voices are the different personalities talking to each other and to the main, presenting part of the person who first comes for treatment. The periods of missing time occur when different

---

[61] Dr. Colin E. Ross, *Multiple Personality Disorder: Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment* , University of Toronto Press, 1989.

> personalities take turns being in control of the body, and are attributable to the memory barriers between the personalities.
>
> MPD patients also experience numerous other symptoms such as those associated with depression, anxiety, eating disorders, substance abuse, sleep disorders, sexual dysfunctions, and psychosomatic disorders, and symptoms that mimic those of schizophrenia. The assessment and treatment of multiple personality disorder must take this large array of trauma-related symptoms and problems into account. The complexity of the patients' symptoms often results in misdiagnosis and the institution of treatments that are not effective. In fact, in two different published research studies, MPD patients were found to spend an average of just under seven years in the mental health system before being correctly diagnosed (Putnam 1989; Ross 1989). During this time, they received many different diagnoses and treatments, none of which took the trauma into account.
>
> Although MPD patients are, by definition, diagnosed as having more than one personality, they in fact don't. The different 'personalities' are fragmented components of a single personality that are abnormally personified, dissociated from each other, and amnesic for each other. We call these fragmented components 'personalities' by historical convention: much of the skepticism about MPD is based on the erroneous assumption that such patients have more than one personality, which is, in fact, impossible[62].

The programmed MPD's such as Vulpes, are a different thing than MPD's who have dissociated from less systematic occurring traumas than those imposed during the trauma-based programming. The education of the mental health profession has just begun. Within the year they will have the tools they need to begin the adventure of deprogramming the survivors of Operation Mind Control.

---

[62] Colin E. Ross, *The Osiris Complex*, University of Toronto Press, 1994.

Victoria Vulpes is a pseudonym for the child shown at right and below. At right is her passport photo as it appeared actual size in the newspaper. When the photo was blown up the butterfly and rose appeared on young Vulpes' blouse much to her surprise. A lot has been written about the butterfly, but Vulpes, at this time is afraid to learn what programming the rose could mean. Her therapy continues.

Military controls my mind, woman says

By
Times Staff Writer

— When you start dabbling in ed ry therapy llir will b a

child. mories incest, ituals.

rent fad for repressed-memory therapy.

said her father was a Cuerican who went into the litary and was stationed in , Germany and several es, including MacDill in She was one of seven chil-

959, said, her father nilitary and returned to about a year, when he ed by the Cuban governleave. She regards this as that he was a CIA agent. alleged abuse at the hands icle occurred during that Cuba, according to her law The accusations include rape and unusual sexual prac-

The name of this survivor the paper and the reporter has been obliterated. This survivor has not yet been reintegrated.

14

HIMMLER'S GUINEA KIDS

Heinrich Himmler's *Lebensborn* program may have been the grandparent of Project Monarch. Monarch sought to create junior Manchurian Candidates with multiple personalities, each trained to perform a specific specialty. The kids were programmed to respond to codes, mnemonic cues, and audio-reversed triggers and tones. They were trained in killing techniques and the rapid assembly and de-assembly of exotic weapons. They were educated about poisons, explosives, languages and computers, then programmed to forget it all or remember only selected areas upon command.

Monarch produced a cadre of child spies who were directed to prey upon high placed military, government and high society paedophiles, sometimes hauling them into blackmail situations. As in the Nazi *Lebensborn* program there is evidence of selected breeding, adoption of the children, and a peculiarly large number of twins among them. There is mounting evidence that the directors of Project Monarch were former Nazis, and that, like Nazism, the Monarch program was interlaced with satanism.

Did this pet project of Heinrich Himmler rear it's head 50 years after the demise of the Third Reich in the cornfields of Nebraska? While the last gavel has yet to fall in the on-going litigation, and the major vein of the criminal conspiracy has yet to be opened in court, it appears that Himmler's dream came home to roost on the Great Plains in the good old U.S.A.

John DeCamp was a Nebraska state Senator for 16 years, during which time he was one of the most effective legislators in Nebraska history. A highly decorated Vietnam War veteran, a practicing lawyer, he's taken time from his demanding practice to write a book, self-publish it and sell it at lectures around the country. *The Franklin Cover-up, Child Abuse, Satanism and Murder in Nebraska,*[63] is a no-holds-barred exegesis of Omaha Nebraska's Franklin Community Federal Credit Union which was raided by federal agents in November 1988. The raid sent shock waves all the way to Washington, D.C. when it was learned that $40 million was missing. The credit union's manager was Republican Party activist Lawrence

---

[63] Decamp, John, *The Franklin Cover-up, Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*, AWT, Inc., Box 85461, Lincoln, Nebraska 68501, 1992.

E. Larry King. Jr. Behind him stood George Bush and other powerful figures in local politics and business, and in the nation's capital.

DeCamp used public records to tell the story. In the face of opposition from local and state law enforcement, from the FBI and powerful *Omaha World-Herald* newspaper, a special Franklin committee of the Nebraska Legislature launched its own probe. "What at first looked like just another savings and loan swindle, soon exploded into a tale of drugs, Iran-Contra money-laundering, a nationwide child abuse ring, and ritual murder", DeCamp said. "The Franklin cover-up followed the ugly precedent of the Warren Commission."

"On June 21, 1991, 21-year-old Alisha Jahn Owen was pronounced guilty by a jury in Douglas County, Nebraska, on eight counts of felony perjury. On August 8, 1991, she was sentenced to serve nine to twenty-seven years in prison," begins Decamp's book. "Owen was indicted for telling a grand jury, before which she testified in 1990, that she was sexually abused as a juvenile, by a Nebraska district court judge, by the Chief of Police of the City of Omaha, by the manager of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union, and others. Alisha Owen also witnessed, she said, the abuse of other children by figures in Nebraska's political and financial establishment whom she named, among them the publisher of the state's largest newspaper, the *Omaha World-Herald*. She testified that she was in a group of Nebraska children who functioned for years as illegal drug couriers, traveling nationwide, for some of Nebraska's wealthiest, most powerful and prominent businessmen...

"If King was involved with CIA money laundering," DeCamp wrote, " that jibes with a report from a member of Concerned Parents: 'I heard from two different black people in North Omaha that King used to send limousines down to Offutt Air Base (home of the Strategic Air Command) to pick up CIA personnel for parties.'

The sometimes expansive Larry King used to talk fondly about his friends. In a Sept. 7, 1988, interview with the *Metropolitan* King said, "I know some of the people I admire aren't very popular. Ed Meese. The late Bill Casey of the CIA. And I love former Chief Justice Burger. Those are the people I really like to talk to. Bill Casey... I just thought so very highly of him...

"Larry King adored Bill Casey," Decamp said, "but what about one of Casey's predecessors at Central Intelligence -- George Bush? Ever since July 23, 1989, when the lead editorial in the *World-Herald* said that "one child... is said to believe that she saw George Bush at one of King's parties." King's connection with Bush has been a frequently asked question about the Franklin case. Anxiety on this account has run especially high in Omaha's black community, where in December 1990, one young lady stood up at the public meeting and proclaimed, 'I think George Bush is involved in this child abuse case, and that is why all these people have been dying.'

"Inside investigators of Franklin, and the Webb case before it, know that Bush's name came up at the very beginning and it came up more than once. The July 1989 *World-Herald* column, in an attempt to discredit this and other victim-witness testimony, attributed the mention of Bush to a person 'under psychiatric care,' meaning Loretta Smith. In reality, the report was from Nelly Patterson Webb.

"Nelly first brought up Bush in 1986," Decamp said," when she told Julie Walters about the sex parties she was flown to in Washington and Chicago. She saw Bush at two of these parties, she said, one in each city...

"Bush's name surfaced again in Lowe's May 1989 review of reports by Thomas Vlahoulis from the state attorney general's office:

> **Sorenson told Vlahoulis that both Kimberly and Nelly brought up the name of George Bush and indicated that they had both met him...**

On June 10, 1989, Lowe received a letter from a citizen:

> **There is a psychologist in Omaha who used to work for the CIA. In response to a direct question by an Omaha psychiatrist regardsing George Bush's private life, this psychologist reported hearing rumors when Bush was head of the CIA, that correspond directly with one of the inferences made by Nelly Webb, and**

"...In August 1990," Decamp said, "Bush appointed Ronald Roskens of Nebraska, to head the Agency for International Development (AID). Roskens had been fired the previous year as chancellor of the University of Nebraska, where Larry King was a member of his 'chancellor's advisory committee.'

"Gary Caradori's daily notes from Feb. 19. 1989 record:

> **I was informed that Roskins (sic) was terminated by the state because of sexual activities reported to the Regents and verified by them. Mr. Roskins was reported to have had young men at his residence for sexual encounters. As part of the separation from the state, he had to move out of the state-owned house because of the liability to the state if some of this sexual behavior was 'illegal.' Upon Roskins vacating the house, he was provided a house by Joe Secrist (sic) of the Lincoln *Journal-Star*.**

"The leadership of AID is the kind of sensitive job -- AID assignments have been used as a 'cover' by CIA agents, for instance -- for which appointees undergo a background check that would have to turn up what Caradori also heard. Nevertheless, George Bush appointed Roskens...

"'What do Ronald Reagan, President George Bush, former CIA Director William E. Colby, Democratic presidential candidate Bob Kerry, billionaire and second richest man in America and now head of Salomon Brothers -- Warren Buffett, and Ronald Roskens, the current ('93) administrator of the Agency for International Development, all have in common?' I asked my close friend and adviser William Colby," DeCamp wrote."'I give up,' former head of the Central Intelligence Agency Colby said. 'What could that group have in common?'

"'Three things,' I replied,' all of them a burden at times for those who have to carry them. The three things are *me* (John Decamp), a case called Franklin and a man named Larry King.

"'Are you serious?' Colby asked.

"'Dead serious,' I responded. 'And I hope that word 'dead' does not turn out to be a prophetic pronouncement, as it has for at least fifteen other Franklin-related personalities.'

"My statement to Bill Colby was not made lightly," Decamp said. "Colby and his wife, Sally Shelton Colby, a United States ambassador under President Jimmy Carter, were at that very moment warning me to get away from the Franklin child abuse investigation, Larry King, and anybody else linked with Franklin, as quickly as possible for the sake of my own life and safety.

"Sally and Bill had never talked to me like this before. They sat me down, made it clear that this was not one of our routine discussions about life and health and happiness, and emphasized to me the serious nature of what and whom I was dealing with.

"'What you have to understand, John, is that sometimes there are forces and events too big, too powerful, with so much at stake for other people or institutions, that you cannot do anything about them, no matter how evil or wrong they are and no matter how dedicated or sincere you are or how much evidence you have. That is simply one of the hard facts of life you have to face. You have done your part. You have tried to expose the evil and wrongdoing. It has hurt you terribly. But it has not killed you to this point. I am telling you, get out of this before it does. Sometimes things are just too big for us to deal with, and we have to step aside and let history take its course. For you, John, this is one of those times,' Bill warned, with Sally nodding her head in affirmation.'

"When a caution of this nature comes from someone of the stature and experience of Bill or Sally Colby, you have to take it seriously, even if you do not want to. I had already had warnings enough, that unless I backed off from the

Franklin situation, I might be looking at life from a pine box six feet underground."

John Decamp couldn't see how he could just lay the issue down and walk away from it. He couldn't see how anybody would want to live in a country where children were being sexually abused and killed by the nation's most respected citizens and business leaders who were also involved in drug dealing and official corruption.

"...Every bone in my body tells me that evil is triumphing and everybody who is anybody is scared beanless to do something about it, for fear of one thing or another?" Decamp said. "If I, or someone like me, do not keep pursuing this, then who will? And if we quit now, then when, if ever, will the truth come out and something be done about this evil and this corruption?"

So, Decamp kept on keeping on. He is a capable attorney and a fearless man who was largely instrumental in bringing the eyes of the world to focus on Larry King and the Lincoln S&L cabal. He gathered the evidence that brought the criminal conspiracy before two grand juries. Without knowing it, he stepped right into the middle of a Project Monarch operation. Happily he's still with us. Here's what happened. In his own words:

"Two grand juries, one local and one federal, had a mandate to consider these and other charges of child abuse connected with the Franklin Credit Union *They indicted the victim-witnesses for perjury instead!* [Emphasis is Decamp's.]

"This is unprecedented, probably in the history of the United States," commented Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, a lawyer, psychiatrist and nationally prominent specialist on child abuse.(Denson-Gerber is an MD who is thought to be a CIA asset. Her husband was on the Warren Commission.) During her visit to Nebraska in December 1990 she said: 'If the children are not telling the truth, particularly if they have been abused, they need help, medical attention. You don't throw them in jail!'

"Both grand juries," Decamp continued, "admitted that Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci, whose testimony extensively corroborated Owen's, had been badly abused. But this was done, they concluded, by persons other than those the young people named. Bonacci, too, was indicted for perjury. Two other victim-witnesses, whose stories buttressed those of Owen and Bonacci, recanted under immense pressure. Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci refused to recant..."

This was the first time the tip of the Monarch iceberg surfaced in public. It is a story which matched with others in all its lurid details -- perverted sexuality, bestiality, ritual abuse, trauma and mind control.

In late 1993 a key Franklin S&L witness, Troy Boner, admitted that the Federal Bureau of Investigation terrorized and forced him to lie for the protection of criminal perpetrators. Boner's coerced testimony was used to discredit the case against the powerful political figures, and to falsely convict for perjury Alisha Owen.

Attorney John DeCamp filed for a new trial for Miss Owen. He also pressed an explosive civil rights suit on behalf of Paul Bonacci who continued to give evidence, against armed forces and intelligence community personnel--and political leaders including former President George Bush.

The existence of Troy Boner's sworn statement, and the application for a new trial for Alisha Owen, were covered in a small detail-poor article Oct. 30, 1993 in *The Omaha World-Herald*, a newspaper which is a central party in the Franklin case. Otherwise, aside from a Nov. 1, 1993 Omaha radio interview with Boner and his attorney Decamp, the new evidence was subjected to a tight press blackout.

After the Nebraska Senate investigating committee found that over 100 children could testify to an international child abuse ring, related to black Republican Party activist Larry King, Franklin's chief executive, the FBI, Nebraska officials, and the news media attacked the legislative committee and its witnesses in an atmosphere of rising violence and intimidation. In the course of this terror, the committee's chief investigator, Gary Caradori, was killed when his airplane unexplainably disintegrated. Troy Boner's brother was found shot to death at Offut Air Force Base. Alisha Owen's brother was found hanged in jail.

In a separate Oct. 27, 1993 affidavit, Troy Boner's mother said "Troy had promised me right after Gary Caradori was killed that he was going to quit lying for the FBI and [attorney Mark] Delman.... He did go and see Senator Schmit.... Sometime after that, my son, Troy's brother, Shawn was killed ... and I am quite certain was executed as a message to Troy that he had better stick with his lies at the upcoming Alisha Owen trial or else."

In his affidavit, Troy Boner said that after Caradori's death he spoke to Caradori's widow "Sandy and told her I had in fact lied to the Grand Jury and that what I told Gary Caradori was the truth and that I only lied out of fear that the FBI and others ... would hurt me or my family."

In a Nov. 1, 1993 KKAR-radio interview, Troy Boner claimed that he had also met with *Omaha World-Herald* reporter Gabriella Stern out of fear for his life. He had sought the reporter's protection so he could "do what was right" by Caradori, to whom he had told the truth. He said he had asked her to get the story out but not to use his name. He was then 23 years old.

The *World-Herald* in fact had carried an article on July 12, 1990 by Robert Dorr and Gabriella Stern, headlined "Caradori's Airplane Broke Up in Flight." The article quoted state Senator Loran Schmit saying the people who wanted to see Caradori dead "got their wish"; and that "Schmit told AP that Caradori recently had been trying to obtain pictures that some alleged victims said were taken of them during the time they were abused."

The article further included the following three paragraphs:

> **A 23 year-old man--who last November gave Caradori a videotaped statement saying he had been sexually abused, but later recanted part of his account--said the investigator's death frightens him.**
>
> **He said Caradori had warned him that people involved in the Franklin investigation could be in danger. The 23-year-old man, who hasn't been publicly identified, said he fears someone might try to harm him.**
>
> **The 23-year-old, who said he had flown with Caradori several times during the investigation, said the investigator was meticulous about checking the plane before taking off.**

Decamp filed suit in the United States court in Nebraska, on behalf of Paul Bonacci, the courageous survivor of nearly two decades of torture. The suit asked damages from:

> **---the Catholic archdiocese of Omaha, relating inclusively to sex abuse at the Boys Town orphanage;**
> **---Lawrence King, Peter Citron, Alan Baer, Harold Anderson, and Robert Wadman for sex crimes, slavery, beatings, and burnings;**
> **---Omaha police officers for harassment in an attempt to prevent Bonacci from testifying;**
> **---and the corrupt Douglas County Grand Jury, its foreman Michael Flanagan, and its special prosecutor Samuel Van Pelt.**

During raids on Peter Citron's home, police seized a large number of videotapes, on which were recorded the degraded criminal acts committed by many elite citizens against Paul Bonacci, Alisha Owen, Troy Boner and other children. These tapes were prized by the perpetrators as pornography--and had great value as well for blackmail.

Paul Bonacci filed an affidavit, detailing the individuals and the crimes on the tapes, and asking for release of the tapes to his attorney John Decamp. Although former *World-Herald* society columnist Peter Citron had been classified as a "mentally disordered sex offender," Citron's attorney Lyle Koenig opposed the release of the tapes to the young man his client victimized, because of the likelihood of "injury to otherwise innocent people.... There will be people in this State whose lives will be in a hopeless shambles as a result of these disclosures."

Since the 1992 publication of DeCamp's book, Paul Bonacci has filed new affidavits and has given extensive interviews to investigators including reporters for *Executive Intelligence Review* and *The New Federalist*. Bonacci's disclosures correlated with evidence supplied by authorities in law enforcement, psychiatry and the intelligence community. The results go a long way to explain the high stakes involved, and the frantic nature of the Franklin cover-up.

"The tight little circle of Nebraska corporate and financial interests," wrote Anton Chaitkin,[64] "intertwined with the Franklin Credit Union defines the first level of national power that is threatened with exposure in the case.

"A clique of freemasons--the chief executives of Union Pacific Railroad, Con Agra, Peter Kiewit and Sons, Mutual of Omaha and the Omaha *World Herald* -- served on Franklin's Advisory Board and conduited funds from their own firms and from the Boys Town orphanage into Franklin's accounts.

"Union Pacific boss Michael Walsh, for example, was chairman of finance for Boys Town. The Union Pacific headquarters office in Omaha is reportedly completely gripped by homosexuality at the executive level."

Chaitkin pointed out that the foreman of the grand jury which indicted the sex-crime victims, Michael Flanagan, was himself employed in the legal department of Union Pacific--a company deeply involved in the Franklin case. The Bonacci suit charged that Flanagan "violated his Grand Jury duties by sharing Grand Jury information with ... lawyers and others he met with on a regular basis almost every day following Grand Jury proceedings at Union Pacific headquarters ... receiving advice and guidance from them on how to proceed in the Grand Jury proceedings and providing them information on the supposedly secret Grand Jury proceedings themselves."

"Flanagan had," Chaitkin wrote, "not long prior to the grand jury sessions, himself been accused of homosexual pandering directed at a young Union Pacific employee, and the company on his behalf had reached a settlement to silence the complaining young man."

In his Oct. 28, 1993 affidavit, Paul Bonacci stated: "The real activity I and Alisha and on occasion Troy Boner ... were engaged in was functioning as drug couriers and recruiters [of children] for Alan Baer and Larry King.... [They] were ... buying and selling large quantities of cocaine into the mid-west and using us as 'mules' (drug couriers) to obtain the goods from the various airports and get the drugs delivered back to Omaha. Other prominent and wealthy Omaha citizens were also involved in this.

---

[64] Anton Chaitkin, *FRANKLIN WITNESSES IMPLICATE FBI AND U.S. ELITES IN TORTURE AND MURDER OF CHILDREN*, The New Federalist, 1993.

"... [T]he sex activities we did and were paid so well for were just tools to blackmail or compromise or pay off some judge or businessman or policeman or politicians generally ... here in Omaha or at Larry King's place in Washington or other places we went."

Now-imprisoned Franklin Credit Union manager Larry King became infamous as the host of child-sex parties held in the seats of power, such as at Republican national conventions. DeCamp's book placed King in the middle of a "national and international organized crime syndicate, engaged in paedophilia, pornography, satanism, drugs, and money-laundering."

Chaitkin wrote: "The use of these crimes to 'blackmail or compromise or pay off' powerful men leads to extremely serious questions of national security."

Larry King's prime Nebraska sponsor and accused sex crime associate, former *World-Herald* publisher Harold Andersen, was chairman of the World Press Freedom Committee which Chaitkin called "a front for the Oliver North 'Project Democracy' faction of the intelligence services, managing political power relations within Eastern Europe."

Harold Andersen's reported best friend in Washington, D.C.was Nebraskan Robert Keith Gray, a shadowy power broker at the Hill and Knowlton political management firm. "Over many years, Gray and his associates in the intelligence community are said to have managed homosexual compromising operations to keep congressmen, judges, military officers, diplomats, and foreign leaders 'in line'," Chaitkin said.

The Franklin Credit Union was (from all the evidence) among the savings institutions used for money-laundering by the CIA and others for Iran-Contra adventures.

"This precisely defines where," Chaitkin said,"Omaha's Larry King showed up in Washington, D.C.--in the bizarre homosexual wing of the Republican Party, which managed financing and public relations for the Iran-Contra guns for drugs trading games."

Paul Bonacci described in detail being dragged to Washington for use as a sex toy for Larry King's clients. Bonacci told investigators he was in one of the private White House tours for young male prostitutes conducted by lobbyist Craig Spence, a close political associate of Larry King in the cloak and dagger Contras enterprise. Spence turned up dead in a Boston hotel room in 1989, soon after his and King's "compromising" business was exposed in a *Washington Times* June

29, 1989 story, headlined: "Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush."

In one instance detailed in *The Franklin Cover-Up*, Paul was taken by Larry King and others to a wooded area in California--identified after publication as the Bohemian Grove. There Paul and another boy were forced to perform unusual sex acts with and to consume parts of a child whom they had watched being murdered by the cultists. The body was to be disposed of by "the men with the hoods." A "snuff" pornography film was made of these events; it was directed by a man the party had picked up in Las Vegas whom Paul identified as "Hunter Thompson"-- the same name as a well-known author.

At Offutt, and later at other military installations, Bonacci said this ring programmed him through torture, heavy drugging, and sexual degradation, instructing him in military arts of assassination. Bonacci's "personal knowledge in these realms," Chaitkin said, "can scarcely be accounted for other than by crediting the indictments he has made."

Larry King, FBI agent Gerry Wall, Alan Baer, Harold Andersen, and former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman have all been reported as collaborators with this Satanic military-based ring. King reportedly told Paul's captors at Offutt, "He's young--but you trained him good." A member of Nebraska's Concerned Parents group reported hearing from two North Omaha witnesses that "King used to send limousines down to Offutt Air Base to pick up CIA agents for parties."

"Psychiatrists who have treated a growing number of MPD cases, victims of Satanic ritual abuse, report an alarming pattern of findings in many of their child patients," Chaitkin wrote. "There is a *structure* to the personalities, conforming to what is evidently a deliberate breaking and reshaping of the mind."

This phenomenon was identified to Paul Bonacci by his tormenters, and to other victims and witnesses, as the 'Monarch' project. At Offutt Airbase, Bonacci was told that what he and other children were being subjected to was in the interests of national security.

"The use of mind-altering drugs, sensory deprivation, and other brainwashing techniques on U.S. citizens as subjects was the admitted practice of the CIA, certain military arms and private institutions joined in the MK-ULTRA, Artichoke, and Bluebird projects beginning in the early 1950s. A national security pretext often cited was the need to keep up with the Soviets in the race to develop a workable Manchurian Candidate human robot," Chaitkin wrote. "With the 'Monarch' project, the idea is extended to the production of a horde of children in whom the soul is crushed, who would spy, whore, kill, and commit suicide.

"Professionals probing the child victims of "Monarch" say there are clearly two responsible elements at work: the government/military, and cooperating satanic (or more exactly pagan) cults. These are multi-generation groups, where parents donate their own children--who are proudly called "bloodline" or simply "blood" cultists--to be smashed with drugs and electric shock, and shaped.," Chaitkin wrote. "Other children are kidnapped and sold into this hell, or are brought in gradually through day-care situations.

"Paul Bonacci and other child victims have given evidence in great depth on the central role of Lt. Col. Michael Aquino in this depravity," Chaitkin wrote. "Aquino, alleged to have recently retired from an active military role, was long the leader of an Army psychological warfare section which drew on his "expertise" and personal practices in brainwashing, Satanism, Nazism, homosexual paedophilia and murder."

"A former director of the CIA (one assumes this was William Colby) was asked directly, 'what about Monarch?' He replied angrily, and ambiguously, 'We stopped that between the late 1960s and the early 1970s.' If a statement of fact, this would presumably relate to official participation of the CIA," Chaitkin said.

The disclosures of Paul Bonacci, which jibe with reports of MPD professionals in other cases, point to several peculiar artificially induced memories common to many Monarch victimized children. Chaitkin said that a number of the victims were recovering "memories of tormenters dressed as space aliens or Mickey Mouse or in Wizard of Oz costumes.

"There are said to be such other personality levels as Master Programmer, Black Master, and different mental levels of *backup* programs," Chaitkin said. "There are reported to be personnel who have large numbers of child-victims' assignments and triggers neatly filed in their little computers. "

Paul Bonacci reported the following "Monarch"-related activities, often involving his "Commander" at Offutt AFB, Bill Plemmons, and Lt. Col. Michael Aquino:

> ---Picking up cash in exchange for drugs at various Tennessee locations identifying several country music personalities as his contacts.
>
> ---Trips on behalf of the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA), the paedophile group now given semi-official status by the United Nations. Bonacci cited travel to Netherlands and Germany carrying child pornography for subsequent "import" to the U.S.A. to avoid prosecution. In Amsterdam, he named "Charles Hester," and the British "Tommie Carter," who had on computer a global list of child pornography users. NAMBLA was also cited for organizing auctions of children.

---Travel to Hawaii, New York, Washington (in connection with Craig Spence) to compromise public figures by performing homosexual pedophile sex with them.

---The trip to California where the boy was ritually murdered, accompanied by "Monarch" contact, Mark Johnson of Denver, Colorado.

---Travel to Mexico for the transportation of drugs, guns, and children. Paul was accompanied by the gangster-figure "Emilio," who otherwise directed the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch of Des Moines, Iowa. Johnny Gosch's parents commend Paul Bonacci as an accurate witness relative to that crime.

---Training under "Captain Foster" (survival skills) at Fort Riley Kansas, under "Lt. Dave Bannister" (intelligence) at Fort Bragg, North Carolina, under "Col. Harris Livik" at Fort Defiance, Virginia, who is said to run a military school and to have housed "Monarch" boys. "Col. Bill Risher" of Bamberg, South Carolina is said to have supplied children for Michael Aquino.

---Travel to Dresden in communist East Germany, where weapons were inspected. There and in the Federal Republic of Germany, the "Monarch" personnel were frequently neo-Nazis. This area, Bonnaci said, was a special project of Lt. Col. Aquino, who was a West European adviser to the U.S. Chiefs of Staff. Bonacci had extensive experience in the Aryan Nation and other White Supremacist cults.

Bonacci told the story of the teenaged concentration camp inmate allegedly named Greenbaum, who had participated with the Nazis, to save himself, came to the United States under Project Paperclip, the secret and illegal importation of Nazi war criminals by the U.S. intelligence agencies. Known later as "Dr. Green," Bonacci said he became a high-level mind controller, and, according to Bonacci is widely represented today in mind control programs which have a distinctive magic theme.

Precise details of all these horrors lie deeply buried in national security archives, perhaps. But this history, as told to psychiatrists, dovetails with what is definitively known about Anglo-American intelligence operations and the German Nazis.

The killers in the Nazi camps were themselves trained and organized by psychiatrists and eugenicists, operating from the "T4" bureau. These psychiatrists had long been the pets of white supremacist British and American financier networks.

"At least some of these Nazi doctors were spirited out of Germany under the supervision of former Bank of England Governor Montagu Norman and Tavistock Institute Director John R. Rees on behalf of the British government," Chaitkin wrote. "Norman, had been chief of a prewar pro-Nazi faction within England, and Rees, organized postwar propaganda and continuing psychological warfare activities, and created 'Orwellian' groupings within U.S. psychiatry and mental health fields."

Much of this criminal history comes together in the person of ***Robert A. Lovett*** (1895-1986). Robert Lovett and his closest associates have run the state of Nebraska during much of this century.

Lovett was the chief executive of the Harriman-owned and Omaha-based Union Pacific railroad, as his father had been. Robert Lovett was a partner in the Brown Brothers Harriman international banking firm, with Averell Harriman and Prescott Bush, father of President George Bush. Chaitkin wrote: "Montagu Norman arranged many of the intrigues on behalf of Hitler and the Nazi Party through the Harriman, Lovett, Bush firm, in which Norman himself had been a hereditary partner."

Under President Truman, Robert Lovett chaired the Lovett Committee, which made the decision that the U.S. should have a central intelligence agency modeled on the British Intelligence Service. Lovett was Secretary of Defense in 1951-53; his attorney, Allen Dulles, then took over the CIA.

"Lovett, Harriman, the Bush family, and a very select group of their associates--owners of drug and defense multinationals, many from Yale's Skull & Bones Society--maintained homes on ***Jupiter Island***, off Hobe Sound north of Palm Beach, Florida. Jupiter Island is the headquarters for the so-called Utopian faction in military strategy, the heavy Anglophiles, as opposed to the Traditionalists typified by Douglas MacArthur," Chaitkin wrote.

Troy Boner, a witness in the Franklin Credit Union case, swore out a new affidavit on October 27, 1993. In that affidavit Boner said:

> ... I, my mother and family, are exhausted from living in fear of death or injury as a result of ... the Franklin matters.... I lied at the Grand Jury hearings and I lied at the Alisha Owen trial.... I lied because I truly believed and still do believe that it was a situation where I must either "lie or die," and at the insistence primarily of the Federal Bureau of Investigation officials ... Mr. [Mickey] Mott and Mr. [Rick] Culver. ...What I told Gary Caradori in the original taped interviews

In my first contact with the F.B.I., [they] ... made it clear to me that ... [they] were only interested in *disproving* everything I had told them. They [took] the position that ... "if you will tell us you are lying then we will let you off the hook but if you insist on sticking with the story you told Caradori then *we* will stick you in prison ... for twenty years each on a lot of different charges of perjury. If you insist on sticking with your story, *you will go down*."

... The F.B.I. in conjunction with my new attorney, Marc Delman ... [made me] say that the truth was a lie and the lies they wanted to tell me were the truth.... I told the Grand Jury what the F.B.I. and Delman wanted me to tell the Grand Jury which is that the story to Gary Caradori was a "hoax." But, as stated, the exact opposite is true.

[Then] ... Gary Caradori was killed. I have no proof but [since] I ... believe[d] he was deliberately killed ... as part of a cover-up and as a result of my lies to the Grand Jury, I immediately called his home ... [and] spoke to his wife Sandy[. I] ... told her ... that what I told Gary was the truth and that I only lied [to the Grand Jury] out of fear that the F.B.I. and others.. would hurt me or my family and [had] promised me they would put me in jail if I did not say what [they] ... wanted me to say....

I also met Senator Berniece Labedz at the Caradori funeral and agreed I would meet her and Senator Schmit for lunch immediately following the funeral [to] ... go over my alleged "recantation" and ... tell her and the Committee all the facts. At the funeral, however, the F.B.I. agents ... made it clear to me thru their actions that they knew what I was up to and gave me the clear impression that I was in "great danger" if I went ahead and met with the Legislative Committee and tried to tell them the truth. So ... I told my mother ... that ... I was going to stick with my lies to the Grand Jury....

[Later,] Marc Delman and Mickey Mott saw Senator Schmit say on T.V. that I had been in his, Schmit's office, and my "recantation" had been false.... Even though Marc Delman knew I had been at Schmit's office and that what Schmit was saying was the truth, he ... asked me whether the conversation had been taped or whether there was any other record of my having been in Schmit's office to talk to Schmit. I told Delman there was no tape or any other record....

[O]n Delman's instructions I publicly lied and denied any meeting or discussion with Senator Schmit and Delman [did too].... Delman's exact words to me were, "It's your word against his ... as long as there are no tapes."

Mickey Mott the F.B.I. man ... [then] ... said something I interpreted ... to have been a direct and personal threat that later came to pass. When I told ... the F.B.I. people ... that Alan Baer and others "could not afford" to do anything to hurt me now because too much publicity was focused on me ... Mott ... told me that they probably would not do anything directly to me, that instead "they will do something to a family member." And ... that is what happened shortly thereafter ... when the F.B.I. and ... Baer and others thought I might break away from them....

I am completely certain ... that my brother Shawn was killed as a message to me ... not to ... tell the truth at the Alisha Owen trial. After Shawn got killed, I had no doubt at all ... that they would do anything and kill anybody to keep the truth contained and to keep me lying for them; and I complied with [their] every request....
Before the Alisha Owen trial I was carefully rehearsed by the F.B.I. as to what I would say....

[T]he F.B.I. ... had actual pictures ... in their possession including ... Alan Baer (1983 picture of he and me [at age 15 or 16] in very pornographic sexual acts) as well as checks from Alan Baer to me. So, they had to absolutely know I had a relationship with him and that they were forcing me to lie when I denied such relationships [in court] ... [T]he F.B.I. had seized photos and tapes involving among others myself and ... and Larry King.... I know from having seen tapes at Peter Citron's house that the F.B.I. had access to tapes which clearly documented [what] I and the other kids had identified....
I know the ... F.B.I. and ... others ... will say [in reply]: "You can't believe ... Troy Boner now. If he lied once, he will lie again. He's a drug addict. He's a sex pervert.... Besides, these kids were ... using the drugs and ... selling their bodies and ... getting paid well for it and they did it all voluntarily."

... Yes, we kids, from early age, sold our bodies. We became drug addicts. We got lots and lots of money from these people. But today we are ruined because of that. And we were turned into sex perverts and drug addicts by these people.... Alan Baer ... was the one who first taught me to mainline and who first ... injected heroin directly into my veins--same as he did to a lot of other boys. He ... made me a prisoner of drug addiction to ... completely control me and use me to deliver drugs or deliver sex or anything else.... Alan Baer ... first injected me with a "speed ball," ... a heroin/ cocaine mix that zips you up ... but brings you down mellow....

> Marc Delman ... claimed that I had not met with Senator Schmit to tell the truth and I followed his instructions in denying it.... This ... can be checked out. There were people who saw me with Schmit [and] with Senator Labedz.
>
> ... I saw the picture the F.B.I. had of me and Alan Baer. Some official sure ought to be able to get this picture to prove who is lying--me or the F.B.I.
>
> ... Lots of kids ... knew about Alan Baer, Larry King and the major drug dealing activity they and other prominent people were involved in. But, as long as they are scared for their lives because of what happened to Alisha and me, they are not going to say anything.... [An] honest prosecutor [should] step in and offer immunity and protection to these kids....
>
> ...[A]sk me ... or any of the other kids ... to take ... lie detector ... tests *side by side on the same questions with the people we are accusing of these things....*

Researcher, writer, producer, Andy Boehm interviewed Paul Bonacci with Decamp's assistant Denise Meyer in 1993[65]. He corroborates the stories of the other Project Monarch victims. (Please note that Boehm as well as Chaitkin question whether "Monarch" is the true code name of the project.)

Paul Bonacci encountered Michael Aquino at Offutt Air Force Base several times wearing an army uniform. "Mainly it was on his trips to... I think it was St. Louis," Bonacci said, "And cause he came here for a couple of different Satanic holidays." Bonacci said Aquino and other members of the Temple of Set dedicated a part of the Old Market in downtown St. Louis to Satan, walking around the area in street clothes, performing the ritual.

"I encountered a lot of things that were with Monarch that were somewhere else," Bonacci said. "We went to different military bases. I went to Ft. Riley, Kansas. I went to the Prisidio out in California for some training... a base in Colorado which is where they did a lot of the 'alien' training. What they would do is have a couple of ships that would look like alien ships, and they would drug you up. Cause I remember doing this to other kids. And they'd use some of the other kids and they would put them in uniforms and they would use LSD which would make you feel like you were already out of it anyway...

"...They would be wearing uniforms and they would do little experiments. They would actually take little metal -- they looked like implants -- and they would let you see what they were doing. Some people would implant them, and then take them out... later on. I know some of them were locators. Because they wanted to know where the person was at all times. I mean they had this little thing. it was on the satellite and they could find that person. The reason they were doing that -- I overheard some of them talking about it -- this sounds weird -- as they had soldiers in action or something in different countries, that they would know where all their men were and they would know what the status of them was, whether they were living or dead, and they would be able, if they were dead, to find their body. So, that's why they were testing them. But on the kids they were using it to make sure they knew where they were..."

---

[65] Boehm, Andy, letter to the author dated February 6, 1994, with attached rough transcript numbered pages 17-45 entitled: *Bonacci on Monarch and Satanism, ©1993 Andy Boehm.* Excerpted with permission.

Boehm to Bonacci: "So aside from Aquino... did you see some ... wherever you were with these Monarch activities... (did you see) some of those people (who were) at the Satanic activities too?"

"Some of them yes," Bonacci said. "The adults were wearing military uniforms when they were training us and so were we... They kept everything at the base... but during most of the training we wore regular street clothes... When we went through the 'alien' programming (we wore street clothes)... The reason that anybody could come out of Monarch (alive) was because they all would be talking about little green men."

Giving some insight into the difficulties all Monarch victims have, Bonacci said," I remember when I first started talking . Everything was so jumbled up and that was their programming. Because people would try and get information out of me and the codes that they would use to scramble everything was the very same thing people were asking me. They were asking me a question, (but) what they were doing is getting everything scrambled up."

When Bohem asked Bonacci where he got the name Monarch, the young man said: "I got the name Monarch because Monarch was the name that was part of a code that was supposed to destroy all my memories of the Monarch activities...' (Another more fully recovered "Monarch" victim says that she doubts if Bonacci ever heard the word Monarch.)

Bonacci explained that when the word Monarch was heard, it "almost started to erase everything I knew..." But, that must not have been the entire code, just the name, because it would trigger enough of his *(sic)* multiple personalities so they'd start coming out in random order, telling everything... " they thought this was deprogramming time, so it's time to start telling everything." But then, Bonacci said, the programmers weren't there to "pull them (the personalities) out one at a time , so it's like each one of them came out, as you know, in different orders..."

Bonacci said that there were two groups of Project Monarch slaves. "Some were put into society," Bonacci said. "They were the ones that went into entertainment, and a lot of them were used for transporting drugs, which is the way they paid for the programming." They used the entertainment industry because they could input their messages for the future. "If they wanted to start a revolution," Bonacci said," they'd put it right in the music and it would go out over the airwaves..."

It was not easy for Paul Bonacci to remember certain things. At the time of Boehm's interview with him he was still in intensive therapy and had not completely reintegrated his multiple personalities.

Boehm asked how they went about planting things in his mind, things which he said would make him sound absurd if he told anyone about them.

"They would play things -- show things on a screen," Bonacci said. "They would have that person sitting there and saying something, but you couldn't really tell what he was saying, yet you'd hear the words real plain, but it might not have been in his voice. Like, he was talking, you could see that he was talking, but the words and the mouth didn't match, but you would put it together" like an actor speaking in a poorly dubbed foreign film.

Bonacci said one part of the training was trying to get him to read other people's minds. "Everybody says I basically read their mind. They'd ask and I'd answer it for them before they got it out. The ones they used for that (extrasensory perception) were the ones they trained in satanism. They trained them as magicians because -- this is going to sound even crazier -- when they trained us we could actually do it, because there are spiritual forces and they do teach you to control -- how to get demons to do stuff for you. I can't say control, because those demons are going to turn on you someday. But having your own demons that would do it. They would be the ones that would do it..."

"So," Boehm said, "You were instructed in that sort of context... not that it was a physical force from ah..."

"Yourself," Bonacci said.

"But, it's actually like a little spiritual," Boehm said. "It's spiritual rather than scientific..."

"Yes."

"Was it always on the negative side," Boehm asked. "Was it a demon rather than God or an angel or a fairy?"

"It was always on the demonic side," Bonacci said, "because that's the only ones that you could work with. And if somebody asked you, you never told them about the demonic stuff... It was always: '*You're* in control. *You* can do it.'"

Bonacci went on describing what sounded like a bad acid trip. "I was able to do a lot of things... Such as, at the time, which I can't do now because I don't have demons under my control. I don't want them. But turning on TV's, turning off lights, blowing things up, like light bulbs or something... We could make tires go flat on people's cars, and we could make them so they couldn't start... this is stuff that I did after I was away from them."

So, far it sounds like there's an army of zombies being trained from a very early age in Satanism, magic and certain skills of psychoscience. That was surprising enough, but it was infuriating to hear that at a very early age Bonacci was trained to hate black people.

"They trained me to hate black people," Bonacci said.

"The Aryan Nations did?" Boehm asked.

"No. The government program. That's why I didn't like Larry King at all. I mean it was kind of like, to me, I hated him from the time I met him."

Andy Boehm said, "Paul says a lot of outlandish things, but despite initial doubts, I now believe that everything he told me is either true, or he sincerely believes it to be true.

"I've seen people like (former FBI bigwig) Ted Gunderson try to lead him into lying and try to test his tales with uncaptioned photos. Paul never comes out having uttered an intentional falsehood.

"CBS lambasted him for having said that years earlier he had seen now-Omaha-Mayor P.J. Morgan engaging in sex with little boys -- or more accurately, he said they were told he was P.J. Morgan. The Mayor heatedly denied this in a CBS special about innocent folks wrongly accused of child abuse, " Boehm said.

"Had CBS bothered to look more deeply into the case, they'd have noted that Mayor P.J. Morgan used to have a son named P.J. Morgan Junior. I say "used to have a son" because Morgan Jr. -- a well known Omaha pederast -- killed himself the day after the kiddie-sex aspects of the Franklin Scandal became public. Right name, right family, wrong guy (or maybe not; some say the Mayor himself has some unusual appetites)."

Bonacci said his Monarch programming started when he was five and continued until he was 22. "Most of the people that they train were probably fairly young, probably 4 or 5... up until the time they were out of high school because as soon as you're out of high school their plan is for you to go into the military..."

One is advised to take Bonacci's testimony as that of a non-integrated MPD. Much of Bonacci's state of confusion might be an example of the adverse affects of "Christian" counseling. The guilt trip laid on survivors by a belief system that places the blame for a mind control victim's behavior on themselves is not helpful. One should not be asked to identify with one's own behavior, unless one has made free choice of that behavior. Apparently the U.S. legal system would not agree. Such is the legal and judicial ignorance of the capability of mind control.

15

FINDERS, KIDNAPPERS, NAZIS

According to a Customs Service memorandum[66], the CIA and FCIA (Foreign Counter Intelligence Agency a distinct and autonomous organization within the FBI) were both involved in a mysterious group with behaviors similar to the one in Nebraska. Known as the Finders, CIA ownership of this organization was kept secret for seven years after local law enforcement uncovered its practice of child abduction, kiddie-porn, ritual abuse, and slavery.

In early February 1987, an anonymous tip to the Tallahassee, Florida police brought cops out like bloodhounds. The caller said two "well dressed men" seemed to be "supervising" six disheveled and hungry children in a local park. The two men were identified as members of the Finders. They were charged with child abuse in Florida. In Washington, D.C., police and U.S. Customs Service agents raided a duplex apartment building and a warehouse connected to the group. Among the evidence seized were detailed instructions on obtaining children for unknown purposes. Several photos of nude children were found, one of which appeared "to accent the child's genitals."[67]

The Customs agents determined that the children may have been enroute to Mexico from Washington, D.C. Customs had been contacted because police officers suspected the adults of being involved in Child pornography and they knew the Customs Service had a network of child pornography investigators in their Child Pornography and Protections Unit.

When the Customs agents came on the scene, police had two well dressed white males, Douglas Edward Ammerman and James Michael Howell. The six children were identified with full names, but we shall use only first names since they are defintely innocent. The children were Mary, age 7; Max, age 6; Benjamin, age 4; HoneyBee, age 3; B.B., age 2 and John Paul, age 2. All were taken into custody.

---

[66] Customs Service memorandum, February 7, 1987, *Customs cooperation/interest in Tallahassee/Washington MPD child abuse investigation,* 12 pages.

[67] Witkin, Gordon; Cary, Peter; Martinez, Ancel; *Through a Glass, Very Darkly – Cops, Spies And A Very Odd Investigation,* December 27, 1993/January 3, 1994, U.S. News and World Report, page 30.

According to the Customs Memorandum: "The children were poorly dressed, bruised, dirty, and behaving like animals in a public park in Tallahassee" when they were taken into custody. The subjects were living in a white 1979 Dodge van with Virginia plates. "When taken into custody, the adult white males refused to cooperate." One of them produced a 'business' card with a name on one side and a statement on the other. The statement indicated that the bearer knew his constitutional rights to remain silent and that he intended to do so.

"Upon interviewing the children," the memorandum said, "the police officers found that they could not adequately identify themselves or their custodians. Further, they stated they were enroute to Mexico to attend a school for 'smart kids.'" The children were unaware of the function and purpose of telephones, televisions and toilets, the memorandum said. "...the children stated they were not allowed to live indoors and were only given food as a reward." One wonders for what?

In the van, the Tallahassee police discovered large quantities of records, computer discs and a U.S. passport. From some of the records the police obtained identification of the two adults, and partial identification of the children. This led to search warrants of two Washington D.C. addresses owned by the Finders group.

An informant gave the police information regarding a "cult" by that name, operating at various businesses, one of which was a "warehouse" for the children. "The information was specific in describing 'blood rituals' and sexual orgies involving children, and an as yet unsolved murder in which the Finders may be involved," the memorandum said. "With the information provided by the informant, Detectives were able to match some of the children in Tallahassee with the names of children alleged to be in the custody of the Finders," the memorandum said.

"During the execution of the warrant at 3918/20 W. St., " the memorandum said, " I was able to observe and access the entire building. I saw large quantities of children's clothing and toys. The clothing consisting of diapers and clothes in the toddler to pre-school range. No children were found on the premises. There were several subjects on the premises. Only one was deemed to be connected with the Finders. Stuart Miles Silverstone was renting space to other tenants. He was located in a room equipped with several computers, printers, and numerous documents.

"Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instructions for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included the impregnation of female members of the community known as Finders, purchasing children, trading, and kidnapping.

"There were telex messages using MCI account numbers between a computer terminal believed to be located in the same room, and others located across the country and in foreign locations. One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact in the Chinese Embassy there. Another telex expressed an interest in "bank secrecy" situations.

"Other documents identified interests in high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under the control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives, and the evasion of law enforcement. Also found in the 'computer room' was a detailed summary of the events surrounding the arrest and taking into custody of the two adults and six children in Tallahassee, Florida on the previous night. There were also a set of instructions which appeared to be broadcast via a computer network which advised participants to move 'the children' and keep them moving through different jurisdictions and instructions on how to avoid police attention..."

At the other Washington address, the customs agent writing the memo was again granted unlimited access to the premises. "I was able to observe numerous documents which described explicit sexual conduct between the members of the community known as Finders.

" I also saw a large collection of photographs of unidentified persons. Some of the photographs were nudes, believed to be of members of Finders. There were numerous photos of children, some nude, at least one of which was a photo of a child 'on display' and appearing to accent the child's genitals. I was only able to examine a very small amount of the photos at this time. however, one of the officers presented me with a photo album for my review.

"The album contained a series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a 'blood ritual.' The ritual centered around the execution of at least two goats. The photos portrayed the execution, disembowelment, skinning and dismemberment of the goats at the hands of the children. This included the removal of the testes of a male goat, the discovery of a female goat's 'womb' and the 'baby goats' inside the womb, and the presentation of a goats head to one of the children," the memo said.

"Further inspection of the premises disclosed numerous files relating to activities of the organization in different parts of the world. Locations I observed are as follows: London, Germany, the Bahamas, Japan, Hong Kong, Malaysia, Africa, Costa Rica and 'Europe. There was also a file identified as 'Palestinian.'

"Other files were identified by member name or 'project' name. The projects appearing to be operated for commercial purposes under front names for the Finders. There was one file entitled 'Pentagon Break-In,' and others which referred to members operating in foreign countries.

"Not observed by me but related by an officer, were intelligence files on private families not related to the Finders. The process undertaken appears to have been a systematic response to local newspaper advertisements for baby-sitters, tutors, etc. A member of the Finders would respond and gather as much information as possible about the habits, identity, occupation, etc., of the family. The use to which this information was to be put is still unknown. There was also a large amount of data collected on various child care organizations.

"The warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens, a sauna, hot-tub, and a 'video room.' The video room seemed to be set up as an indoctrination center. It also appeared that the organization had the capability to produce its own videos. There were what appeared to be training areas for children and what appeared to be an altar set up in a residential area of the warehouse. Many jars of urine and feces were located in this area.

"I should also mention that both premises were equipped with satellite dish antennas."

"U.S. Customs interests," the memo concludes, " now lie in the purpose behind the inquiries into bank secrecy laws, the type and purpose of high-tech transfers outside of the U.S., and the purpose of the organized procurement and smuggling of children across the U.S. international borders. The possibility still exists that the children are being smuggled for a primary or secondary purpose of producing child pornography.

"Other agencies with interest may be the Internal Revenue Service, the Immigration and Naturalization Service, the Department of Commerce, the Department of Defense, and the FBI. The FBI is already involved in the investigation of the transportation of the children already discovered across state lines as it pertains to the Mann Act."

In an attached memo dated April 13, 1987 the cryptocracy's secret unraveled. Referring to the previous memo by date and description, Subject: "Finders", From: Special Agent, this memo reads: " I spoke to a third party who was willing to discuss the case with me on a strictly 'off the record' basis. I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn, advised Metropolitan Police Department that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow, North Korea, and North Vietnam from the late 1950's to mid 1970's.

"The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the activity of the Finders had become a CIA internal matter. The Police report has been classified Secret and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed the police not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired. No further information will be available. No further action will be taken."

An attached Chronology points out that "the CIA made one contact and admitted to owning the Finders organization as a front for a domestic computer training operation, but that it had 'gone bad.' CIA defers all further contacts to FCIA (Foreign Counter Intelligence Agency). FCIA is distinct and autonomous organization within the FBI."

The conclusion of the Chronology reads: "Children discovered in Tallahassee were eventually turned over to individuals claiming to be parents or guardians. No further MPD, FBI or Customs involvement.

"As far as is known, no details of CIA or FCIA involvement ever became public," was the final line of the Customs report.

As best we could determine the Finder's memo was "leaked" to former *People* magazine and ABC News correspondent Civia Tamarkin by a patriotic person or persons she will not name. Tamarkin is a long term investigator of the ritual abuse phenomenon. We telephoned her in Chicago and asked for her opinion on the documents.

"The problem is the whole ritual abuse network is corrupted," Tamarkin said. "The survivors even have a forum on Prodigy. They're cross-pollinating and corrupting the information -- maybe it's on purpose."

"A lot of people in the mental health community would like to fit this all into a neat little package, and it doesn't.

"If I get one more call from therapist who says "I have a Monarch patient," Tamarkin said. "There's no official evidence that Project Monarch exists. So,then you start pushing, 'How did you know it's called this. How do you know this term? You find out someone else gave them the term, and one told another and pretty soon it's the all-encompassing term for mind control..'.

"You gotta be real careful with this stuff. See, the minute any survivor has recall of torture of electroshock, sensory deprivation etcetera there's a tendency to leap on it and say, 'It's mind control, it's MKultra, Monarch and whatever.' The fact is that a lot of it is torture, as simple as that. It's used in the Greek military, the Latin American military... across the board, you name it. There's this tendency -- the minute there's a disclosure about electroshock -- for therapists who say,' Ah ha! Mind control...'

"There were documents about a camp in New Hampshire, six documents. The CIA went out and looked for people who were doing the research that played into what they were looking into, and they funded it.

"There is a perponderance of survivors who claim to have a military background -- their parents do or whatever. I do not believe that all of them were victims of MKultra or some CIA program.

"There was a recent study that came out showing the high rate of domestic abuse among military families. I think that's consistent."

I said," Yeah, that's the fertile field that they farmed, I guess."

"Exactly," Tamarkin said. "That's the fertile field. Along the same lines that there were quid pro quos with known molestors, known perpetrators. There was an attempt to deal with a subject group that had a trauma base...

"Hysteria factors into this," Tamarikin said. There's the tendency to generalize, and, of course, I've been fighting for years this cult stuff. I've heard well-recognized, reputable therapists talk about the cult personality, the cult trying to get the survivor back, the cult...cult, cult when they should be talking about the perpetrators, offenders, sex rings whatever. It has become a catch-all.

"I gave a speech in February (1994) and looked at this group and I asked them 'what's a cult?' Let's count how many we can. You talking about Moonies, Hari Krishnas, what...?

"The point is they use the cult term as a catch-all term.

"Now, what about the Finder's documents?" I asked.

"I had the finders documents for years," Tamarkin says. "I had them back in the 1980's. Everyone jumps at this.

"They don't say the CIA's involved," she said."What they say is,'What we do know is that the Finders group was a CIA front as an information gathering organization.'

"The fact that some of these kids may have been molested by members of the group who are living a communal lifestyle, and the fact that the investigation was scuttled and turned over to FBI counter-intelligence, does not mean anything. People who don't know how this operates have a tendency to lump it together and say, 'This is proof!'

"All it means is that an intelligence operation became vulnerable because members of this group may or may not have been acting irresponsibly and criminally with children. To whit -- there was never any proof by the way.

"They covered it up to protect the intelligence end of it, which is not conclusive in any way. Intelligence communities -- law enforcement at any level use informants, have operatives... and if those operatives go out on a limb, whether it's money laundering, whether it's pornography, whether its drug use -- you name it --- you cover that up because you're protecting your sources. And that's what happened here."

"But if we repeal the National Security Act the way we repealed the Volstead Act, then all of these secrets will come out, huh?" I said.

"Yeah," Tamarkin said. "And all the informants will be known and there will be no plea bargaining any more and people are gonna get fair trials and there's going to have to be a 12 man jury system and the Bill of Rights will be in effect once again...

"How do you feel about that?" I ask her.

(Laughs, as if you say, you must be kidding.) "You know what? They should have done that years ago. This is a shadow government it's not surprising. And that's how this Finders thing has gotten so distorted.

"If you look at the customs agent report, it's not conclusive. I've studied it for years, I've dealt with the agent involved..."

"There was no follow up on it?" I asked.

"Well, they began looking at it again, back in January, 1993, because some of the legislators were making a big stink about it. But nothing ever came of it."

"Was the Finders a computer whiz kid kind of thing?' I asked.

"Sure," she said. " They were involved in transferring money. Yes, but that doesn't mean they were involved in satanism..."

"Certainly looks like they were transporting little kids to Mexico," I said.

"Well," Tamarkin said, "the group that was caught in Florida alleged they were taking these kids on a field trip to Mexico. The two adults were members of the Finders group and they had CIA connections. But, again... given the fact... if one assumes that all that is factual and that they were in fact prostituting kids, or molesting them, it doesn't mean it was a CIA operation..."

I began to get the impression that Tamarkin was stretching things a long way in favor of the cryptocracy. Maybe she somehow believed the National Security Act was a good thing?

"Let me ask you this the," I said. "Back in the 70's during the Vietnam war, there was a big ring smuggling heroin sewn up in the dead bodies of soldiers killed in the war. Three guys were brought to trial. A DOD guy showed up, flashed his ID, took the judge into chambers and said, 'In the interest of National Security you can't prosecute these guys.' The case was dismissed. Who was smuggling the heroin? The three guys or the cryptocracy?"

"We do know," Tamarkin said, sticking to the official records, the crimes that had been uncovered and officially acknowledged, " offshore activities that Congress had prohibited were being funded through heroin trafficking. We know that. Now we know that.

"See, there's a whole lot of percs going down in the intelligence biz," she said.

"Doesn't it look like the same black ops thing hanging over the Finders?" I asked.

"No." she said, because we don't *know* if it was sanctioned by the CIA. We know the heroin trafficking was."

Is this why nobody relies on the newsmedia to keep them up to date -- by the time the cryptocracy confesses, the crime has been over for twenty years? Is this an example of 'playing it safe journalism' or is Tamarkin an asset of the Mossad, as the conspiracy underground whispers? (Why the Mossad? Why not Turkish intelligence?) Or is Tamarkin trying to stay in good with the cryptocrats so they'll throw her a bone now and then? Or was she merely conditioned by media peer pressure --pressure from her peers to not dare use common sense? Pressure from peers in a profession that is, by a former CIA Director's candid admission, thoroughly co-opted?

What kind of country has this one become? What kind of world? What evil infests the land which allows innocents to be corrupted in the cradle? What evil seeks children to torture? What civilization abandons its children, gives them drugs, shocks them, hypnotizes them and harbors sexual assault upon them by their family, their clergy and representatives of their government?

And what kind of people in what kind of institutions are these which encourage such perversions, as if the success of the system depends on providing for sexual deviates? What agency protects the paedophiles, the small-dicked sadists, the satanists, and blood sacrificers who can then be controlled through their carnal desires by the invisible hand of blackmail?

It is a world in which the most decadent and barbaric Romans would feel at home? It is a world in which the Nazis are at home? It is the Fourth Reich by design of the conquering heroes of World War Two? Did the victors, the Allies, become the enemy they fought? Breeding children in a Lebensborn program, or simply to sell as child slaves to paedophiles?

It didn't take long to discover more about Silverstone:

Silverstone turned out to be a recognized expert on desktop publishing and graphics, who had written for leading computer magazines on a regular basis. He also worked as a writer for one of the national news services and in his capacity as a computer whiz, he worked for both the White House and the Pentagon. His main area of expertise was war rooms, which is what the Pentagon hired him to consult on. He traveled to Russia and wrote articles about that country's use of computer technology.

Silverstone was a colleague of Nicholas Negroponte, who runs the ARPA-funded Media Lab at MIT. He studied architecture at MIT and taught there for a while. He had his own key to the most secure areas of the Media Lab and he would take friends there at night. He is a student of futurism, practices meditation, and uses one of the more expensive online services to access Internet. Once he confessed , jokingly, that he worked for the "DIA", which he said was a ludicrous organization called "Dim Idiots Association." Still he did know war rooms and he did have the keys to this defense contractors's most secure areas.

The Finders had communal houses in Los Angeles, San Francisco, Albany and a number of other U.S. cities. In Washington, D.C. they kept two houses. The Finders travel internationally to hot spots around the globe. The profile of their leading members fits well the silhouette of an intelligence asset.

A person once close to the organization told us that the Finders have several people "affiliated" with them who are writers who "function like a loose-knit intelligence agency." They travel to such "hot spots" as Japan, China and Russia.

The Finders are allegedly funded by the earnings of their members and by "donations". Members can often be found working in "service" jobs. They work as carpenters, clerks, resarchers, and in Washington a number of them worked for the Library of Congress, congressional offices, and in corporate offices.

Their leader, Marion Pettie, was thought of as a guru by devoted members who called him "The Student," "The Stroller," "The Game Caller" or "The Pathfiner" and believed that when Pettie lectured them at their Washington house about the "New Age way of living" and Eastern Mysticism, he could peer into their souls.[68]

A series of interviews conducted by John Mintz and Marc Fisher of ***The Washington Post*** revealed that the origanization was completely dominated by the (then) 66-year-old Pettie who lives on a large farm in Virginia.

Pettie was an Air Force master sergeant who retired in 1956 and bought extensive woodland property in rural Madison County, Va. He started the Finders in the late 1960s as a communal experiment which was supposed to look " characteristic of the period." *The Washington Post* said "he sought intelligent, well-educated people who could discuss the latest thought in philosophy, psychology and human development."

---

[68] *RELIGION UNUSUAL CHILDREN ABUSE,* San Jose Mercury New, Feb. 9, 1987.

Since I wrote this I obtained a complete set of the Finder's documents, just as they appeared in the original, with all the names included. Publishing the names of the investigating officers might bring harm to them, or some other innocent parties. If you are an avid researcher, your own *samisdat* network will turn up photocopies of the originals, then you too will know all the names.

With the complete set of documents was the following introduction, which I will excerpt:

> **For many years there has been rumors and hearsay comments by individual law enforcement officers that a certain U.S. government intelligence agency was kidnapping children and using them as sex toys to entrap, blackmail and manipulate politicians, diplomats and other officials. Up until now there has been no clearcut, irrefutable evidence available to the public. But now, finally the public has "smoking gun" evidence of paedophile kidnapping /abuse rings operated by a U.S. government intelligence agency.**
>
> **These official U.S. customs investigation reports are irrefutable evidence of:**
>
> 1. **A case of obvious child neglect/abuse involving child paedophile sexual abuse/child pornography/satanic cult ritualistic abuse wherein the perpetrators were caught directly in the act by law enforcement, arrested on the basis of irrefutable evidence at the scene, and faced serious charges which typically bring sentences of decades in prison.**
> 2. **Whereas, search warrants were obtained for the "Finders" cult office in Washington, D.C. and a complete search was enacted by law enforcement which provided irrefutable pictures, movies and documents of such above abuse/neglect and evidence of access to the confidential arrest reports on the "Finders" cult from the arrests in Tallahasee which occurred only a day earlier (suggesting very high level connections to U.S. intelligence agencies in and of itself).**
> 3. **Whereas, all investigation of the "finders" cult by the FBI, U.S. Customs and local law enforcement was ordered stopped by the U.S. Justice Department on grounds of "National Security" and the matter of the "Finders" cult was turned over to the Central Intelligence Agency as an "Internal Security Matter," since the "Finders" is and has been a domestic and international covert operation of the Central Intelligence Agency.**

4. Whereas any and all investigation of the "Finders" cult was immediately stopped, all evidence was suppressed and denied, the abused child victims were released back to the adult perpetrators who had been arrested "in the act" and the CIA resumed its ongoing covert operation of the "Finders" cult which is used to procure and produce:

> The development of child/assets to be used to entrap politicians, diplomats; and corporate, and law enforcement officials; to sell such child/victims to wealthy perverts to raise money for covert operations, to train some of the child/victims to be professional operatives and assassins of a totally cold, multiple personality, mind-controlled nature.

This most disgusting perversion perpetrated by our government needs to be exposed. To date only one media outlet has dared publish anything about this (U.S. News).

Please, make copies of this packet, give it to all your friends, associates and neighbors. Send it to your local media and demand investigation and coverage. Send it to all your congressmen, senators and state and local politicians and demand investigation. Give a copy to your local police chief and any police officers or government officials you know. Make a minimum of five copies and much more if you can afford it. This information can be distributed as a "chain letter" and can create massive exposure, thus posing a major force to manipulate the CIA to stop the perpetration of these major felony and capitol criminal acts of the most disgusting variety.

In the last few years there have been other "smoking guns" proving that U.S. Intelligence agencies traffic in Children, sell them and abuse them. Some of these covert operations have been tied to long term and massive importation, distribution of narcotics into the USA by the same intelligence agencies.

Write and demand that your Congressman and Senators repeal the National Security Act and destroy the use of the false cloak of "national security", which is frequently and habitually used as a means of covering up the most serious Rico type criminal acts imaginable by U.S. Intelligence agencies and our U.S. Justice Department.

241

OFFICIAL USE ONLY

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

4200-01 (3/7), P&PM (Special Agent Handbook)

1. TECS ACCESS CODE
C-3

2. PAGE 1 OF 2 PAGES

3. CASE NUMBER

4. TITLE
FINDERS

5. CASE STATUS
☐ Initial Report ☐ Interim Report ☐ Disc. Pending ☐ Open & Close ☒ Index & File ☐ Closing Report

6. REPORT DATE	7. DATE ASSIGNED	8. CLASS	9. PROGRAM CODE	10. REPORT NO
04/13/87	02/05/87	I	700	1

11. RELATED CASE FILE NUMBERS

12. UNDEVELOPED LEADS TO
None

13. TYPE OF REPORT
☐ TECS ☐ Search Warrant Executions ☐ Penalty Case Report ☐ Memorandum of Interview ☐ Initial Source Documentation ☐ Source Debrief
☒ Investigative Findings ☐ Subpoena Service ☐ Surveillance Report ☐ Background ☐ Request for Collateral ☐ Other

XXXXXXXX

On Thursday, February 5, 1987, Senior Special Agent Harrold and I assisted the Washington, D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) with two search warrants involving the possible sexual exploitation of children. During the course of the search warrants, numerous documents were discovered which appeared to be concerned with international trafficking in children, high tech transfer to the United Kingdom, and international transfer of currency.

15. DISTRIBUTION
SAC/RAC
SAC/VA Beach
RAC/Tallahassee

CA/SCA

ARC(E)
SE

HQ DIV
E:EO:SD:G

RIB
SE

HQ INT
_:I:S

FILE
RAC/DC

OTHER

16. SIGNATURE (Type Name & Title)
Ramon J Martinez
Ramon J. Martinez, Special Agent

17. APPROVED (Type Name & Title)
L Rountree
LINWOOD ROUNTREE, Resident Agent in Charge

18. ORIGIN OFFICE
Resident Agent in Charge
12310 Pinecrest Road Suite 200

19. TELEPHONE NUMBER
447-0554

16

MAY THE FORCE BE WITH US!

The first evidence of the use of hypnosis as a reliable operational tool of the cryptocracy, according to John Marks,[69] can be found in the work of Morse Allen in 1954. Of course hypnosis itself had been used by shamans and fakirs to manipulate and control people for centuries. Marks explains that Allen's work came at the height of the Project ARTICHOKE explorations in which the spooks attempted to use hypnosis to "programme" an assassin. CIA documents also reveal that in 1959 John Gittinger recommended the use of hypnosis in operational experiments. (Of course our latest evidence shows that Navy Intelligence had been using mind control in the 1940's, at least.)

The CIA files contain a translation of a Soviet research project entitled *Unperceived Manifestations of Mental Processes in Deep Hypnosis*[70] which described the success of their psychoscientists: "We succeeded in programming not only the subject of dreams (I would like to visit Africa in my dream...), but to program color perception (let my dream be blue...), as well as inducing a specific mood after sleeping,"

The CIA's active interest in the use of posthypnotic suggestions is further evidenced in their October 1966 -- confidential *Technical Report -- Hypnosis in Intelligence*[71]. The report states: "Most of the proposed uses of hypnosis in intelligence work, particularly the defensive applications, involve posthypnotic suggestions." They discovered that; "conservatively, a posthypnotic suggestion is believed to remain effective for several months, and beyond this, for years, if periodically reinforced.[72]" The CIA paid equal attention to self-hypnosis and autosuggestion. Of course, one can suspect anything found in any CIA document obtained under the FOIA. The emphasis on these relatively harmless forms of hypnosis is probably just part of the "cover story" planted in the files for persistent researchers to discover. We know from the scientific literature that hypnosis can be used to cause "spontaneous" death, through manipulation of the histamines in the body, control of the respiration (induction of severe asthmatic attacks), and the control of other involuntary functions by post-hypnotic suggestion.

---

[69] Marks, John, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, Times Books, 1979.

[70] V.L. Raykov, *Unperceived Manifestations of Mental Processes in Deep Hypnosis*, Moscow Voprosy Filosofii in Russian No. 4, 1978 pp 107-114, (Article by V.L. Raykov) Translated for the CIA's "Official Use Only."

[71] *HYPNOSIS IN INTELLIGENCE - TECHNICAL REPORT* (Confidential - CIA), October 1966.

[72] ibid

Of course any technology can be applied to harm a person as well as help a person. Whatever can kill can also cure.

In the 1970's, John Grinder stood on one side of the stage and said, "There is no such thing as hypnosis."

Richard Bandler stood on the other side of the stage and said, "Everything is hypnosis."

Grinder and Bandler, the creators of NeuroLinguistics Programming, were both correct in what they said.

Hypnosis is a normal, everyday process. We all go in and out of "trance" several times every day. It's so ordinary, so much a normal part of our life, it doesn't deserve to be isolated from the rest of our everyday mental processes and given a special name. Hypnosis is not sleep, but hypnosis has something in common with sleep -- in both states one accesses one's "unconscious" or "subconscious" mind. If hypnosis (and NLP) is anything it is the art of addressing the unconscious mind.

Go along with me for a moment.

Remember a time when you wore a costume. It could have been to a Halloween party or some costume ball or in a play. See yourself in that costume? Now, what would you do, if you were going to wear the same costume today? How would you improve it? See yourself in the new improved costume.

If you were really letting my words guide, you were looking into your mind's eye imagining what you must have looked like in the past in some particular costume. Maybe you remember a photograph of yourself in the costume and you were looking at that in your mind's eye. At first you were accessing the *remember* part of your visual filing system. Then, when you decided you'd improve it for today, you were accessing a different part of your mind's eye, where you keep the *creative* visual department. In any event what you were doing is the same thing people have done since the days of Anton Mesmer (the inventor of mesmerism), or way back, in the days of the prehistoric shamans. You were enjoying the use of your "trance" state.

You were dissociated from your surroundings momentarily and looking within -- seeing with your "minds eye." You had put yourself into a "hypnotic trance." You might just as well call it "creative visualization." It's a very useful tool, well known to actors and athletes.

Go along with me again

Stand up where you are. (I'm assuming you have enough room to swivel your body from the hips.) Turn around (to your right or to your left, it matters not) and go as far around as you can with your arm extended and your finger pointing. When you've gone as far around as you can go, site down your arm and make a note og something which your finger is pointing at as a marker.

Now come back around to the front. Take a deep breath, then exhale. Close your eyes after you've finished reading this, and in your minds eye, without moving your body, imagine yourself turning around again, the same way you did before, only this time you go far, far beyond where you'd gone before. Now see yourself coming back to the front. Open your eyes. Take another deep breath. Now, when you feel like it, turn around again and see how far you can go.

Your results prove the value of the trance state. And if that doesn't do it, read *Inner Tennis* and *Inner Skiing* and anything about the Feldenkreis technique.

I learned about the power of "creative visualization" in Anthony Robbin's NLP class, and had it reinforced when I interviewed a skyscraper climber, 22-year-old Dan Goodwin[73] who climbed the 102-story John Hancock building in Chicago.

Goodwin told me that he sat down beneath the building a few days before he climbed it, visualizing every inch of the climb. "When I planned the climb, long before... whenever I visualized the building in my mind's eye, I saw water coming down it," Goodwin said.

The day of the climb Goodwin wore a wet suit instead of the Spiderman suit he usually wore. On the 37th floor he found out why he'd worn the wetsuit when an ax shattered the window near him and overzealous firemen tried to knock him off the building by spraying him with a powerful jet of water from a firehose high above.

"They were trying to kill me," Goodwin said. "The Chicago Fire Department wanted to knock me off the building!

"As if a torch had been lit beneath me, I burst into a ball of determined energy, climbing at a rate that would surely have broken the speed records," Goodwin said. "The higher I rose, the stronger the water pressure grew. The frequency of the broken glass and flying axes increased..."

In the end Goodwin negotiated a settlement with the City of Chicago. Charges were dropped in exchange for some autographed photos of the mayor shaking hands with Goodwin.

"I don't think I'd have made it if I wasn't wearing the wet suit. And I wouldn't have been wearing the wetsuit unless I'd seen myself climbing that building soaking wet."

---

[73] *Palm Springs Life,* July 1985.

Such is the power of the human unconscious, and the usefulness of "visualizations".

Here are a couple of exercises that will prove that 1. people are accessible to you and 2. you too can be a "hypnotist," and use the "language of the unconscious" to get what you want, no matter what it is.

Tony Robbins told me this one, and you might want to adapt it to your own situation.

Tony went to lunch with a couple of men he wanted to invest in one of his businesses. He was explaining to them that NLP worked and that it was a tool of communication that would eventually be included in our culture from kindergarten, through family upbringing, military training and so on.

At some point he realized that no amount of logical explanation would get these guys to understand and believe in what he was trying to tell them. Both his companion's attention had been captured by an attractive brunette who entered the restaurant. Following her lunch date, the woman walked past their table to be seated against the opposite wall of the dining room. She sat facing away from Tony but still within his view, and behind his two prospective investors.

After Tony realized it would take too much time to educate his prospective investors, he remembered the language of the unconconscious and decided to apply it to achieve his outcome.

"See that attractive brunette over there?" he said, gesturing toward the woman.

Both men turned around and looked at her.

"If, without saying a word to her, or leaving my chair," Tony said, " I get her to come over here and introduce herself to me, will you invest in the business?"

Both men agreed that it would be impossible for him to do that, but reluctantly they agreed they would invest if in fact he could make that happen.

So Tony went to work. He matched the woman's physiology -- sat the way she was sitting, gestured the way she was gesturing and most importantly he matched her breathing pattern. He could do this easily because she was in his line of sight. The two prospective investors couldn't see the woman and didn't know what Tony was doing.

At one point, when Tony had established a perfect match of the brunette's physiology and breathing, she did as most people do, unconsciously (or otherwise), she "felt" something that made her turn around and look at Tony, whereupon he gave a wave of his hand, the familiar gesture that says "come on over."

All this time, Tony was making small talk with the two prospective investors and enjoying his lunch. They did not notice anything unusual about his behavior. He kept talking about NLP, his business idea, and their investing in the company.

When the brunette's date got up to pay the check, and she was following him out of the restaurant, she passed Robbins' table, stopped and said to him, "My name is Sue Smith. Don't I know you?"

Tony and Sue had an instant rapport. They exchanged phone numbers (Tony was single at the time), and the two men invested in his company.

Vary this story any way you want, but try it yourself. And if you don't understand what I've written here, since it's easier to see it and try it than it is to talk about it, take Tony's class or my class or any NLP class and you'll learn how to "mirror and match."

Or, perhaps you'd prefer to prove the power of your ability to communicate with others through the "language of the unconscious" this way.

How to get a table in a crowded restaurant without having to wait (without bribery)*:*

Approach the person in charge of the waiting list. Notice some attractive visual to which the list keeper is insensitive, something he or she has been looking at for days or weeks and doesn't notice anymore, something which, when it was new, he or she liked to look at -- maybe a grouping of artificial flowers, a new wallpaper, a tablecloth, the cover of a menu. Say," My, that's a good looking ________."

Follow this by noticing some sound, like the high pitched whine of a bearing going out on the ventilation system. Say, "You know that bearing sounds like it needs oil."

And then immediately take notice of an aroma, say -- ribs being bar-b-qued over a mesquite grill. The list taker smells it night after night and so has become consciously desensitized to it, as he or she has become desensitized to the sound of the bearing and the sight of the tablecloth. (The subconscious is alert even when the conscious mind is asleep.) Say," That bar-b-que sure smells good."

Follow these validations (feedback to the sensory awareness of a sight, a sound and a smell) of unconscious input with a positively worded suggestions," *and, since I have to get back to the hospital as there are patients depending upon me, you will put my name at the head of your list and call out (insert your name).*"

Then follow up with a totally irrelevant question such as, "Did it rain here last night?"

The listkeeper's subconscious reacts this way: "Yeah that tablecloth is pretty. He was right about that. I was aware of that all the time... And, yeah, I did hear that squeaking bearing and know it needed oil... And, he's right again. I do think the ribs smelled delicious on the bar-b-que... This guy's right about all three of these sensory inputs of mine, so he must be right when he tells me that I *will put his name at the head of the list.*"

But he or she doesn't remember thinking that. He or she doesn't remember your saying anything because he or she is trying to remember if it rained last night. In effect he or she has amnesia to the embedded command (*you will put my name at the head of the list and call out (your name.)*)

The unconscious mind is like a big dumb machine. It goes where you direct it to go and once it gets going it keeps going off in the direction you've pointed it.

Then you've walked away from the listkeeper. A moment goes by until the listkeeper sees an open table which can accommodate your party and, even though it's against the boss' orders to put anybody at the head of the list, the listkeeper finds herself or himself calling your name, not knowing why he or she unconsciously did it.

These are simple and safe forms of "hypnosis" you can try just for fun. They should prove to you, beyond doubt, that there's untapped power in learning the "language of the unconscious."

The CIA has a school for training its agents in these techniques of communication. And so does the DIA. It's time everybody learned the language of the unconscious.

What follows are categories of behavior that occur in trance[74]:

Dissociation – Known in waking states as "reverie" or "daydreaming".

Catalepsy – A state characterized by uncommon muscular rigidity.

Amnesia – A common phenomenon in everyday life. Like the times when you've had a word on the "tip of your tongue" but can't remember it.

Anesthesia – Related to amnesia, the subject dissociates from feeling in parts of the body.

Age Regression – Reliving or revivifying the past in a present context is yet another form of dissociation.

Negative and Positive Hallucinations – Negative Hallucination refers to the trance subject's ability to delete sensory information at the hypnotist's suggestion. Positive Hallucination is the experience of stimuli that are not present.

---

[74] Lankton, Steve, *Practical Magic, A Translation of Basic Neuro-Linguistic Programming into Clinical Psychotherapy*, Meta Publications, Box 565, Cupertino, Ca. 95015, 1980.

Ideomotor Activity -- This refers to the involuntary capacity of the muscles and nervous system to respond to external stimuli. This is useful in enhancing suggestibility.

Hypermnesia or Memory Recall – In deep trance people can recall events from their past in much greater detail than while in a "normal" waking state.

Time Disorientation or Pseudo-Orientation in Time -- A person absorbed in a good concert will experience the passage of time much differently from someone taking a difficult test.

Post Hypnotic Design – A special kind of Pseudo-Orientation in Time. Programming a subject to respond to some future stimulus in a given way.

According to U.S. Army Psyops Colonel, John B. Alexander[75] "In 1983, the Jedi master (from George Lucas' *Star Wars)* provided an image and a name for the Jedi Project, a human-performance modeling experiment based on neuro-linguistic programming (NLP) skills. Sponsored by a U.S government interagency task force, Jedi used advanced influence technologies to model excellence in human performance. The subjects involved in Jedi were willing to be influenced to acquire desirable skills.

"The Jedi Project grew out of the New Patterns of Influence Program, developed during the early eighties to disseminate NLP skills throughout the U.S. Army, under the auspices of the U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command and, until 1984, the Organizational Effectiveness School...

Col. Alexander told us: "Under the auspices of Major General Stubblebine, a small interagency team (with the U.S. Army as the lead member) was formed to see if NLP modeling technology could be beneficially applied to real-world training problems. Since the U.S. military is the largest training institution in the world, much time and money could be saved by improving techniques for teaching common skills. This team was a part of a large-scale organizational look at training technologies.

"As team members became familiar with NLP capabilities, they started wondering where its boundaries might be. They came to the conclusion that such boundaries existed only in the minds and belief systems of individuals. New and more complex skills will be required of our warriors in the future, and the project was an attempt to adapt training skills to meet these future needs," Alexander wrote.

I had less luck when I was seated next to Brig. General Russ Sutton of the U.S. Marine Corps at a Bob Hope Classic banquet in Palm Springs. I tried to convince the General to get the entire U.S. Marine Corps to walk on fire so that they would have a "winning" resource state to use when they had to go into combat. Alexander named Wyatt Woodsmall as one of the Army's NLP instructors, and since I too received instruction from Woodsmall I can attest to his competency, efficiency and integrity, as I can to that of Anthony Robbins, whom Alexander did not name, but who told us about his involvement in Jedi. (Their politics, of course, might be a difficult thing to attest to.)

---

[75] Alexander, John B., *The Warriors Edge*, William Morrow & Co., New York, 1990.

Alexander makes several mistakes in his book *The Warrior's Edge*. If I had made such mistakes in the first edition of this book, I would never have heard the end of it. He demonstrated a philosophical incongruence, applying the highest ideals to the lowest purposes -- the art of war. He also omitted from his book some of the most important premises of NLP -- premises without which it doesn't really work. He unforgivably misidentified the great hypnotist/psychiatrist Milton Erickson as Erick Erickson, and so on. To say the least, the book is fragmentary, incomplete and error ridden. Still, let's give Alexander and his collaborators Janet Morris (co-promoter of Non Lethal Weaponry) and Major Richard Groller, U.S.A.R, high scores for Jeffersonian effort in making the attempt to enlighten the military industrial complex through education.

One of the Army's students, former Intelligence Officer Julianne McKinney experienced the Army's NLP training: "It was a superficial thing," she said. "Like most of the military education one got it, was geared to the slowest learners. And you usually don't get people that swift in the military, even in the 'intelligence' branches. Military training is second rate education at best. I can't use a bit of it (NLP) today."

Of course, McKinney was trained by the people who trained the people who trained the people... Things do have a tendency to get watered down.

The military as well as major corporations have been very interested in putting NLP to use. The Ford Motor Company, Westinghouse, and the Calvin Klein Fashion House are among scores of major companies that have sent employees for training, according to *The New York Times*:[76] "Kevin Garby, an author and researcher on "New Age" topics in Carlyle, Pennsylvania, cites an army recruiting slogan "Be All that You Can Be" as evidence of what he contends has been the significant influence" of NLP-like disciplines. In the early 1980's, Garby said, "officers at the Army War College in Carlyle, some of whom were graduates of EST, and were former members of The Radical Students For A Democratic Society, conducted a study aimed at creating a 'New Age Army.' The slogan, a derivative of the 'You Create Your Own Reality' orthodoxy of New Age groups, grew out of this work."

The study, the *Times* reported, " according to participants, also envisaged training soldiers in meditation, developing skills in extrasensory perception, magic, and in 'neurolinguistic training,' a hypnosis technique..."

A number of former students of NLP founder, Richard Bandler remember him boasting in class that he could commit murder and use NLP to convince a jury that he was innocent. Some think that's what he may have done in 1987 when he was tried for murder and acquitted.

---

[76] New Age Intelligence, The New York times, Monday, September 29, 1986.

A lengthy article in the San Jose Mercury News[77] began with a quote from Bandler: "I'm going to play some mind-games with you in this seminar, because the brain is my favorite toy."

> He seemed to be at the peak of his form that day, although later people would start to wonder. The room was full of psychotherapists, all laughing at his jokes. It was 1983, four years before the murder.
>
> Richard Bandler was talking about motivation, and how people's attitudes could be changed through therapy. This went to the heart of Neuro-Linguistics Programming, the controversial discipline he'd co-founded 10 years before. NLP, a mixture of hypnosis and linguistics, studied how people influence each other in subconscious ways.
>
> The idea was that covert manipulation could be learned and applied, with beneficial results. Psychotherapists had called it a dangerous form of mind control, but they couldn't get to the seminars fast enough. Neither could doctors, lawyers, corporate executives, salespeople -- anyone who thought a little manipulation could go a long way.
>
> So on this day in 1983, about 15 therapists were sitting in their rented chairs, and Bandler was observing that many attitudes are thought to be hard to change. Most of us, for example, avoid doing certain tasks because we associate them with anxiety or discomfort, and we can't imagine feeling any other way.
>
> He asked for personal examples from the group. A male therapist offered one.
>
> "What would make you do this behavior willingly?" Bandler asked.
>
> "Absolutely nothing," the man said.

---

[77] Kathy Holub, MIND OVER MURDER, *San Jose Mercury News*, November 8, 1987, page 14.

Was he sure?

The man looked sure. "Well, a small-caliber hand gun might do the job," he offered flippantly.

Bandler reached into a pocket and whipped out a derringer.

"Would this do?" He waved the gun in the man's face. "Do you want to change now?"

When he saw the gun, the therapist went into 'deep panic.' The incident was so embarrassing that even now, four years later, he agrees to discuss it only on condition of anonymity. So we'll call him Dave.

"When I saw the gun," Dave says, "I knew he wasn't going to use it, but I did not know for sure that absolutely he wouldn't."

Bandler stared at him. "You don't think I'm going to use this, do you?" he said. He jacked up the gun and walked closer. "Are you sure I won't use it?" Then he walked away.

Bandler kept this up for perhaps 10 minutes, walking back and forth. Every time he walked away, Dave would "intellectualize and dissociate."

Every time Bandler came closer, Dave almost "crapped in my pants and ran out of the room." Dave swung back and forth between the two states of mind, helpless under Bandler's spell.

Others in the room were terrified. "There was no one taking a breath," says one observer.

When it was over, Dave says, he vowed never to use such a technique on his own patients; it was far too aggressive. But a few

> months later, his attitude toward the task he'd mentioned to Bandler underwent a dramatic and positive shift.
>
> To this day, NLP trainers call the incident one of Bandler's most delicate and brilliant pieces of work.
>
> "What was so funny," Dave says, "Is that I made the suggestion myself. I gave him the ammunition. I guess there was a part of me that said, 'It's time to work on this.' But I never in God's world expected him to have a gun in his pocket..."

NLP sessions don't usually involve guns, but the "confusion" technique described above, put Dave into a state something like a trance, in which he was flipping between two states. In the opening Bandler, no doubt, implanted some positive suggestions for change which the article does not describe. Milton Erickson was a master at this very useful technique. What was happening was Bandler was having a conversation with Dave's unconscious mind, which most of the audience and certainly the reporter were not trained to notice.

The article goes on with Bandler's history, telling how he cured people from addictions to alcohol, cigarettes, food, drugs, any craving one could imagine.

> But if Bandler ever tried them on himself, he never mentioned it.
>
> He found new thrills elsewhere. He started working with the U.S. Army and the Central Intelligence Agency, doing projects on post-Vietnam stress syndrome, marksmanship, removing foreign accents from speech. He did some highly sensitive work for the CIA on training potential hostages to withstand torture and interrogation. Kate Wells, a local attorney, remembers sitting in his apartment one day "with the three top CIA agents in the country. They were like this with Richard." She makes a goggling face. "They were in awe of him. The would've done anything to please him. Sitting in this cruddy little living room in Capitol. It was surreal...

Then, could it have been possible for the cryptocracy to frame Richard Bandler for murder?

All we know is that on Nov. 3, 1986, Richard Bandler was charged with killing a woman with a single shot to the head. The victim was Corine Christensen, 31, an alleged prostitute and cocaine dealer. She died in her townhouse in Santa Cruz, a block from Bandler's.

Bandler declared his innocence, hired a lawyer, went to court and was acquitted of the crime. A friend of Bandler's named James Marino, alleged to be a cocaine dealer, who was in the room at the time of the shooting failed to appear in court. He said he "feared for his own safety." After a lengthy discussion with his attorney, Marino was persuaded to surrender.

Marino was the only witness against Bandler. He gave a lengthy, rambling testimony which described how Bandler had shot Christensen through the face with a .357 magnum, which had been found in the waters off the Capitola pier, just where Marino had said it would be.

> When the hearing was over, Municipal Court Judge Tom Kelly spoke frankly. "My mind went back and forth all week," he said, "about which man was guilty. He would order the case to trial, he said, but the evidence so far seemed skimpy.
>
> "The only thing I know for sure, beyond a reasonable doubt, is we had a murderer in this courtroom the last week and a half," the judge declared. "Beyond a reasonable doubt I cannot tell you who that person was."

A caption under a photo in the report reads:

> Bandler and UC-Santa Cruz linguistics professor John Grinder divided people into three broad categories depending on the sensory mode they preferred. Some people are predominantly 'visual,' some 'auditory' and others 'kinesthetic.' NLP was soon being sold as an aid to therapy, business, sales, even law, where it was promoted as a boon to trial work. When critics attacked it as a form of dark magic, Bandler and Grinder retorted that people have been manipulating each other for centuries and they might as well understand what's going on.

The only thing the reader needs to know about this case, for the purposes of our report, is Richard Bandler was tried for murder and found not-guilty by a jury of his peers.

But, a tinge of guns and drugs and the Jedi fantasies of the cryptocracy surround NLP, like a foul-smelling smog. Its name has been so tainted that Anthony Robbins no longer calls it by that name nor do many other masters of the Ericksonian art.

Another U.S. Army Psyops Col, Michael Aquino had an equal if opposite fascination with Lucas' Star Wars trilogy. Aquino's affinity was for the "dark side" of the "force", the Jedi gone wrong -- Darth Vader.

In the diaries and notes of the "Presidential Model" O, Aquino is witnessed wearing his Darth Vader cape to the White House:

> Much to Aquino's dismay and embarrassment, Reagan admired the occult role that this Army Lt. Colonel played for mind control traumatization purposes, as it fit in with the public promotion of religion Reagan had launched. Reagan claimed to believe that the masses were easiest to manipulate through their religion, as were mind controlled slaves like myself.

> While Reagan had Aquino in D.C., he demanded that he wear his black ritual robes to a White House party to reinforce the controlling superstitions of a few South/Central American diplomats. Aquino appeared foolish in the eyes of his peers. They knew Aquino's image was only a guise for Psychological Warfare, but his appearance at the White House in costume made Aquino look like he believed his own facade...

We've already heard a lot about Col. Aquino, but now, let's see if we can find out anything about his personal philosophy. What did this U.S. Army Intelligence Colonel do for relaxation? He wrote fiction. Specifically he used George Lucas' story *Star Wars* to explicate his dark philosophy.

In *A DARTH VADER FANTASY, "The Secret of the Sith"* published in Famous Monsters magazine[78] , Aquino's Darth asks Aquino's Princess Leia: "Who are you to pursue selfish policies of regional prosperity in callous disregard for the damage they may cause thruout (sic) the rest of the galaxy"

A little while later Darth says: "...It would be far more efficient than the Senate but neither my attention span nor my reasoning processes are optimum for the task. Nor is any other organic mind capable of such performance, particularly over an extended period of time on a continuous basis. No, the only solution is to place imperial sovereignty in the hands of a positronicomputer. (*Sound like Delgao's psychocivilization?*) At lower levels there will be increasing latitude for aesthetic opinions, of course, and planetary governments can squabble to their hearts' content. but no individual -- or group of individuals... should have the power to make -- or not to make decisions completely beyond their competence..."

Aquino's Princess Leia tells Aquino's Darth later: "...I find it hard to believe that you have their best interests at heart. You are too far removed from them. Darth Vader; to you they are little more than cosmic gaming pieces which you manipulate not out of affection for them, but out of curiosity to see what you can do with them. Perhaps you are content in such a god-like posture. I would not be..."

Aquino's Han Solo says: "...What point is there to civilization, as you call it, if no one can move on impulse without causing chain-reactions of these dire consequences' you speak of?"

And Darth responds "...As for the constriction of free will, I of all individuals, am opposed to that. I have spent my lifetime strengthening my own will in an absolute sense -- not just as opposed to others. As for impulsive decisions, they were tolerable when they affected only a few words at a time -- altho (sic) you'd find it difficult to argue that they were beneficial even then. The price we pay for commerce and communications across an entire galaxy is the loss of impulse in favor of reason. Bear in mind that the benefits are reciprocal. The decision you make may mean happiness and prosperity for worlds far beyond yours and their decisions may have a corresponding effect upon your home. If you can exist in an environment free from unnecessary misery you will have the freedom to exercise your will in ways that are truly creative. That is what I would prefer..."

---

[78] Aquino, Michael A., *A DARTH VADER FANTASY, "The Secret of the Sith"*, Famous Monsters #148, Warren magazines, October 1978.

> Later in Aquino's story, Darth is apparently killed: " Amidst the wreckage Darth Vader staggered to his feet, then stiffened in shock as a laser-bolt from Leia Organa's blaster struck him full in the back. The force of its impact tore the mask from his head and the protective plates from his chest and Leia and Solo saw with a *thrill of horror* [emphasis added] that the humanoid features beneath were hideously decomposed and disfigured. Exposed to the air, they began to dissolve and gradually Darth Vader's entire body boiled away to nothingness..."

One notes "a thrill of horror" and the body disappearing when exposed to the air -- a metaphor for the cryptocracy perhaps?

Here's a chunk of O's journal I did not previously include. It might shed some light on the Psyops hypnotic techniques and the official government operations with hypno-programmed Americans:

> Death's Door programming, though simplistic in its application, is as complex as the mind of a multiple personality disordered, mind-controlled slave.
>
> As a mind-controlled slave, I had no conscious awareness of my personalities being switched... either from within, or through the deliberate triggering of others. Since I had no ability to logically reason, I had no actual appreciation of time whereby I could not think to notice time had passed "unaccounted for" while in another personality. I existed only in the moment, doing exactly what I was told...
>
> Switching personalities was so absolute that the experiences of a particular personality resulted in particular perceptions. Ocular (eye) pressure changed visual acuity fields whereby depth perception changed. Senses and sensations changed according to exactly which part of the brain was being accessed to function. Dissociation equated to removing myself psychologically from my experience, whereby I 'dis-associated' from my body and the tortures it was enduring.
>
> Prior-conditioning necessary for survival had taught me to retreat so deep into my mind that sensations of torture seemed to be far away as though it were through a long, dark tunnel. Compared to a personality who's non-threatened down-to-earth daily routine

required no such survival skills, the perceptual shift becomes more clearly understood. Therefore, switching personalities actually 'felt' (in retrospect) like a dimensional shift... which is the perceptual, psychological target of Death's Door programmers.

The CIA has numerous 'Near Death Trauma Centers' (NDTCs) for creating seemingly indestructible human slaves much the same way the military *creates* Delta Force soldiers. Mind-controlled slaves such as myself were programmed at such installations since the same high technology, equipment and methods were required. by attaching certain programming to 'natural' MPD survival phenomena, the skills could be enhanced. Slowed blood flow through deep, dissociative trance increased chances of survival (See Laird Gutterson earlier).

Pain could be perceived as pleasure, which furthered the benefits of dissociative 'mind over matter' trance. Accelerated tissue healing could be hypnotically induced and further enhance by switching my personalities whereby I no longer was aware of the tortures the other personality(s) had endured. As a programmed mind controlled slave, I was led to believe that this shifting of personalities was a shifting of "dimensions" to escape the pain.

U.S. Army Lt. Colonel (then) Michael Aquino of the U.S. Defense Intelligence Agency's Psychological Warfare Section instilled Death's Door programming on me at a mind control research facility located on the Presidio Army Base in San Francisco, California. While I was being prepared for programming, I overheard Aquino talking with an understudy pertaining to Death's Door. Aquino's personal belief system and theories were included in the discussion.

He claimed to believe that death is in itself a changing of dimensions, whereby "Near Death" experiences would open doors to even more dimensions. Aquino told his associate that I had been so close to death on numerous occasions that "a wide path" had been worn in my mind towards that end.

"Therefore,' he explained, 'she has increased her ability to enter other dimensions en route to death.'

These 'dimensions' Aquino used as a means of hypnotically scrambling and compartmentalizing my memory of key events, government secrets, and identities. Anchored into the natural timelessness of MPD, I had been repeatedly conditioned to the idea of timeless' interdimensional' travel. Aquino claimed to believe that time existed only in the mind of man and could therefore be manipulated as easily as the mind. He told his colleague, "whether in principal or in theory, the results are the same since the concept of time is in itself abstract." This program anchored in timelessness

> further reinforced my inability to comprehend that time had indeed passed and events occurred.
>
> My scrambled memory of 'interdimensional' experiences would have remained unrecoverable had I not been deprogrammed to realize that my memories were experienced and photographically recorded right here in this dimension. My memory was simply compartmentalized in my own brain, therefore, logically it was accessible...
>
> ...At the Presidio mind control research facility, I was placed in a sensory deprivation chamber. Aquino programmed me with what I suspect were harmonics through the chamber's imbedded sound system. This produced a physical sensation of floating weightlessly through space while the sound seemed to be heard from *within* my head rather than through my ears. Aquino's suggestion that I was in a crematorium was readily accepted, and I could 'feel the flames' intensifying as my brain perceived the event virtually as reality.
>
> Aquino played the role of my 'savior' by leading me 'safely' and 'painlessly' through death's door. I had no alternative but to follow his programming commands, and later carry out the ensuing orders he would embed deep within my autogenic/primitive mind. He hypnotically induced the sensation of my burning alive through affecting my histamine production, then 'shifted dimensions' in my mind in preparation for the orders that I would carry out 'as though my life depended upon it...'
>
> Aquino slowly and hypnotically led me, "...You have deep within you the ability to slip through death's door... an ability encoded in you since the inception of time... since your inception and birth into this world of time... this physical world of matter... the only world where time matters. Only a visitor in this dimension, you have harnessed your ability to come and go as you please once you access the door encoded in your mind. Follow me now while I lead you on a journey through your mind right to the door that will set you free...

I must break the description of the "Death's Door" hypnotic process off at its beginning. This is a particularly dangerous process which could be harmful to those who have been similarly programmed, or adapted by experimenters to their own uses with destructive results. Suffice it to say this hypnotic metaphor fits well into Aquino's fiction, *The Secret of Sith.*

One grows curious about the connection between Aquino, Alexander and Bandler, two U.S. Army Psyops Colonels who say they don't know each other, and a CIA asset who have mastered the art of the metaphor -- *Star Wars* and others.

17

THE SLAVES WHO BURIED THE PHARAOH

The CIA uses thought reform, programming, and indoctrination on its own employees. Patrick J. McGarvey, a veteran of fourteen years in U.S. intelligence service, described the cryptocracy's more ordinary indoctrination procedures in his book *CIA: The Myth and the Madness*. McGarvey said that his indoctrination was carried out in a classroom which was "right out of *The Manchurian Candidate*. It was a cavernous room not unlike a nineteenth century surgical exhibition pit."

That training, he said, consisted of "an admixture of common sense, insanity, old-time religion, and some of the weirdest lectures you can imagine." The most important result of this early training, as far as the CIA was concerned, McGarvey said, "was the attitudes they managed to inculcate" among the recruits.

"Many among us believed in the intelligence establishment simply because we were part of it. This attitude lingered for years among us, and today, in middle age, most of us still talk about the mind-bending job they did on us during the training period. I am convinced that this manipulation of attitudes had been responsible for keeping silent the many men who have since left the craft of intelligence. Because of my indoctrination, I still get a visceral twinge and have qualms of conscience about writing this."

McGarvey was referring to behavior modification when he said, "CIA has a wonderful informal system of rewards and punishments for the faithful and unfaithful."

Other fragments of information have leaked through the memory blocks and security oaths of former CIA employees. They can be found scattered throughout the "true confessions" literature of former spooks. They offer further glimpses of the CIA's interest in mind control -- but they are only glimpses.

"The most impressive part of this initial CIA indoctrination," writes Miles Copeland, "is the attitude toward loyalty, security, precision, attention to detail, and healthy suspicion that it manages to implant in the minds of the trainees... The fact is that this aspect of the indoctrination had been designed by some of the nation's best psychologists, employing the most modern techniques of 'motivational research.' Certainly it achieves its purpose. The psychologists resent the insinuation that they are engaged in 'brainwashing,' arguing that the effect of what they have contributed to the training is exactly the opposite of brainwashing as practiced by the Chinese. Instead of conditioning a person so that he can accept only 'approved' ideas, it sharpens his instincts and critical faculties so that he can recognize specious political reasoning when he encounters it. Also the psychologists believe their course imparts a strong sense of mission, which is lacking in other branches of government."[79]

Despite the CIA psychologists' defense of their reverse "brainwashing," terrible damage has been suffered by the people who have matriculated from the CIA's mind- control projects. Those techniques employed for indoctrination and "loyalty training" of CIA personnel are but the beginning of a mind-control operation which is the most effective security device short of assassination.

Institutionalized secrecy came to America on the eve of World War II. From the beginning, psychology was both the most important external weapon against the Nazis and Japanese and the internal control mechanism for the war time government.

Psychological warfare was used in World War I, but by the beginning of World War II it had taken on a new dimension. Previously the inspiring, depressing, persuasive or misleading messages of propaganda had been delivered to target populations via the printed page or by word of mouth. In World War II, for the first time it became possible through radio to address the entire population of a country at the same time. The effects of propaganda, so magnified, became an important tool in warfare.

After the war, electronic propaganda became the staple weapon for waging the Cold War. Persuasion, argument, propaganda, and indoctrination went out over the airwaves not only to "enemy" populations but to our own civilian populations as well.

The full story of the OSS and the beginnings of the CIA was not known until 1976 when a government report, *The War Report of Strategic Services,* was declassified. In 1940 Gen. William J. Donovan was appointed President Franklin D Roosevelt's special emissary. Upon his return from a Mediterranean tour he reported that "neither America nor Britain is fighting the new and important type of war on more than the smallest scale. Our defenses against political and psychological warfare are feeble, and even such gestures as have been made toward carrying the fight to the enemy are pitifully inadequate." Donovan urged the President to prepare for combat in the field of irregular and unorthodox warfare, as well as in the orthodox military areas."[80]

---

[79] Miles Copeland, *Beyond Cloak and Dagger: Inside the CIA* (New York, Simon & Shuster, 1975)

Five months before the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor, President Roosevelt added one more new bureau to the New Deal Bureaucracy. It was tagged COI, perhaps a fitting acronym for the publicity-shy office of the Coordinator of Information. Its leader was, of course, William J. Donovan.

Donovan has been called "a queer figure who comes off three-quarters Machiavelli and one-quarter boy." According to Anthony Cave Brown, he recruited "Communists to kill Krauts. He feared and distrusted Communists in places where they counted. In Italy and France, he could never quite make up his mind what to do politically; and, since political belief was the clandestine's primary motive, his policies often failed and, even when they succeeded, led to interminable muddles. Likeable, even admirable on occasions, he was in fact an Elizabethan man, swaggering about capitals in beautiful cord, displaying a fine calf for a riding boot, but forever dependent really upon the British for the finesse which that secret struggle demanded."[81]

The British Secret Intelligence Service had developed espionage and intelligence to a fine art during World War I. They were already masters of sabotage, guerrilla warfare, political warfare, deception, crypto-analysis, irregular maritime warfare, technical intelligence, and secret intelligence when World War II began. During that war they took intelligence into the vanguard of psychology, using drugs and hypnosis to program couriers to carry secret messages locked behind posthypnotic blocks.

The British were the first to employ a financing device known as the "Secret Vote," or unvouchered funds. This was money made available without recourse to legislation and accounted for only by personal signature. As Anthony Cave Brown observed, "plainly, almost unlimited opportunity for fraud existed in this arrangement."[82]

Donovan's COI copied the unvouchered funds financing idea, as well as many others, from the British. He put great emphasis on the psychological warfare arm of intelligence. The British had also emphasized "psy-war," but Donovan promoted it to the degree that he made the psychological warfare division the central control organ of the entire espionage agency.

In 1941, after the birth of COI, President Roosevelt asked Donovan to make specific proposals for the implementation of his ideas for psychological warfare and the development of an intelligence plan. Donovan submitted to the White House a paper entitled "Memorandum of Establishment of Services of Strategic Information." In it he clarified his idea of the relationship of information to strategic planning in total war.

---

[80] Anthony Cave Brown, ed., *The Secret War Report of the OSS* (New York, Berkeley, 1976)

[81] *Ibid.*

[82] *Ibid.*

Pointing out the diplomatic and defense inadequacies of the then existing intelligence organization, Donovan said, "It is essential that we set up a central enemy intelligence organization which would itself collect either directly or through existing departments of government, at home and abroad, pertinent information." Such information and data should be analyzed and interpreted by applying the experience of "specialized, trained research officials in the related scientific fields (including technological, economic, financial and psychological scholars)." He emphasized that "there is another element in modern warfare, and that is the psychological attack against the moral and spiritual defenses of a nation."[83]

In June, 1942, the office of Strategic Service (OSS) was created to replace COI. Some time passed between the formation of the OSS and the issuance of its charter. The delay was created by Donovan's controversial idea that the psychological warfare unit should be in charge of the entire intelligence operation. The intellectuals hovering around OSS argued with the Joint War Plans Committee about what exactly psychological warfare was, and who should direct it in the name of the United States of America.

Finally a definition was agreed upon. The official definition of psychological warfare read: "...it is the coordination and use of all means, including moral and physical by which the end is to be attained -- other than those of recognized military operations, but including the psychological exploitation of the result of those recognized military actions -- which tend to destroy the will of the enemy to achieve victory and to damage his political or economic capacity to do so; which tend to deprive the enemy of the support, assistance, or sympathy of his allies or associates or of neutrals, or to prevent his acquisition of such support, assistance, or sympathy; or which tend to create, maintain or increase the will to victory of our own people and allies and to acquire, maintain, or increase the support, assistance and sympathy of neutrals."

And, as Donovan had wished, the Joint Chiefs of Staff decreed that "All plans for projects to be undertaken by the office of Strategic Services will be submitted to the Joint U.S. Chiefs of Staff through the Joint Psychological Warfare Committee for approval. The Joint Psychological Warfare Committee will refer such papers as it deems necessary to the Joint Staff Planners (JSP) prior to submission to the Joint U.S. Chiefs of Staff. The Joint Psychological Warfare Committee will take final action on all internal administrative plans pertaining to the Office of Strategic Services."[84]

The lifespan of OSS was less than three years. During that short period of time it developed psychological warfare into an effective weapon against the minds of civilian and military populations foreign and domestic alike. To wage effective psychological war the OSS needed background information on United States citizens. Thus the burglary of private files was sanctioned. The pattern of extra-constitutional clandestine activities within the United States, which came to the public's attention with Watergate, the Iran/Contra Affair and so on, began in 1945 when the OSS broke into the office of *Amerasia* magazine, an alleged Communist publication. The OSS illegal entry was followed by a legal FBI search three months later, but no evidence that *Amerasia* was engaged in subversive activity was ever found.

---

[83] *Ibid.*

[84] *Ibid.*

Throughout the war Donovan never lost sight of the fact that while OSS was a wartime expedient, it was also an experiment to determine the nature of a peacetime U.S. intelligence structure in the postwar period. Eventually OSS did provide the framework for the peacetime intelligence service through which the United States supposedly continued the bitter moral and territorial struggle against the Communists.

By a small, humorous twist of fate, it was on October 31, 1944 -- Halloween the traditional day for spooks and dirty tricks -- when President Roosevelt once again turned to Donovan for his views. According to the official story, the president asked Donovan to develop a plan for the organization of an intelligence service which would function after the cessation of hostilities. In November, Donovan submitted to the President his proposal for the creation of a "central intelligence service." In his memorandum, Donovan proposed liquidation of OSS once the wartime necessity had ceased. He was anxious, however, to preserve the intelligence functions developed by OSS, so he repeated his original COI concept of a central authority, reporting directly to the President, which would collect and analyze intelligence material required for planning and implementation of national policy and strategy.

"Though in the midst of war," Donovan wrote, "we are also in a period of transition which, before we are aware, will take us into the tumult of rehabilitation. An adequate and orderly intelligence system will contribute to informed decisions. We have now in the Government the trained and specialized personnel needed for the task. This talent should not be dispersed."[85]

On September 20, 1945, OSS was officially terminated by Executive Order 9620. "Research and Analysis" functions and "Foreign Nationals Recruiting" were transferred to the Department of State. The remainder of the OSS functions were transferred to the Department of War. That same day, the new President Harry S. Truman sent a letter to Donovan informing him of the executive order to close OSS, and thanking him for his outstanding service.

The President wrote, in part, "You may well find satisfaction in the achievements of the Office and take pride in your own contribution to them. These are in themselves large rewards. Great additional reward for your efforts should lie in the knowledge that the peacetime intelligence services of the Government are being erected on the foundation of the facilities and resources mobilized through the Office of Strategic Services during the war."

---

[85] *Ibid.*

Hidden behind the President's compliment was the fact that Donovan was shut out from the formation of the CIA because of a major character flaw: he had a strong dislike of organization. Whether Donovan was really the right man for the job of chief of America's first intelligence service is debatable. Success in covert operations depends upon an efficient bureaucracy and good judgment in authority. In many cases Donovan displayed neither. At the heart he was an activist who did not even like the personalities of conventional administrators. Stewart Alsop said that he ran OSS "like a country editor."

"In every respect, OSS was Donovan's child," OSS historian R. Harris Smith wrote. "He nourished the agency in its infancy, and it bore the stamp of his personality."[86] That stamp carried over into the new peacetime intelligence agency, the CIA, the first in American history.

But while Donovan was the grandfather of the cryptocracy, its techniques and much of the rationale behind them were the work of the Dulles brothers. The following review of the Dulles' rise to prominence shows the manner in which cryptocrats form their liaisons.

On the evening of the day South Korea was invaded, President Truman had hastily returned to Washington from his home in Independence, Missouri. He gathered his principal advisors together at the White House to discuss the emergency. Unanimously, his advisors recognized the gravity of the situation and agreed with Gen. Omar Bradley, then the head of the Chiefs of Staff, who said the intelligence reports indicated Russia was "not yet ready for war, but in Korea they are obviously testing us, and the line ought to be drawn now."

Quickly, Truman ordered Gen. Douglas MacArthur to provide military protection for the delivery of arms to the South Koreans and to evacuate American dependents. He instructed the military chiefs "to prepare the necessary orders for the eventual use of American units." On the following day he said he was convinced that "the Republic of Korea needed help at once if it was not to be overrun."

Truman was given CIA reports which indicated that Korea was a repetition, on a larger scale, of the Berlin blockade. The intelligence reports further indicated that North Korean Communists would eventually prove to be a threat to Japan, Formosa, and the American base on Okinawa. It was the first time the "domino theory" was used.

---

[86] R. Harris Smith, *OSS: The Secret History of America's First Central Intelligence Agency* (Berkeley, University of California Press, 1972)

The President, acting on the advice of the CIA, ordered MacArthur to give immediate naval and air support to the South Korean army, without allowing him to order his troops to cross the Thirty-eighth Parallel. (This act of drawing a political rather than a strategic boundary set the precedent in Asia for the use of the same tactic later in the Vietnam campaign.)

MacArthur's zeal and military instinct disposed him to blindness concerning such arbitrary boundaries. His expressed urge to attack China with nuclear weapons eventually led to his unprecedented dismissal by Truman. MacArthur may have had the knowledge and the skill to win the Korean conflict unconditionally, but such a military victory in the light of history did not fit into the long-range war of attrition the cryptocracy supported as a tool of the military-industrial complex, against the Communists.

Domestic politics also served to compound the power of the new cryptocracy, which was then cutting its teeth in Southeast Asia. In 1952, when Dwight D. Eisenhower was elected President of the United States, he appointed John Foster Dulles as Secretary of State, and allowed Foster's brother Allen, who was then the CIA's "deputy director for plans" -- the clandestine operations branch of CIA -- to take over directorship of the CIA one year later.

According to Townsend Hoopes, who served in both the Truman and Johnson administrations, though the seeds were sown by Truman, it was under the Eisenhower administration that the Cold War was "pervasively institutionalized in the United States." He described the Cold War's chief manifestations as "...a strident moralism, a self-righteous and often apocalyptic rhetoric, a determined effort to ring the Soviet Union and China with anti-Communist military alliances, a dramatic proliferation of American overseas military bases, and a rising flow of the American military equipment for foreign armies accompanied by American officers and men to provide training and advice. The posture of imperative, total confrontation," he said "thus came to full development during the Eisenhower period. By 1960, the United States government was not only positioned and determined to restrain the major Communist powers, but also determined -- through an implicit extension of logic and the inertial momentum generated by a large and powerful military/foreign affairs bureaucracy -- to control the pace and character of political change everywhere." [87]

In the chill of the Cold War, few Americans remembered that John Foster Dulles had been pro-Nazi before Hitler invaded Poland. No one thought, either, to question the fact that while John Foster Dulles was running the State Department, and therefore dealing with friendly governments, his brother Allen was running the CIA, which he once described as a State Department for dealing with unfriendly governments. No one seemed at all disturbed by the Dulles

---

[87] Townsend Hoopes, ***The Devil and John Foster Dulles*** (Boston, Atlantic Monthly Press, 1973)

Dynasty, and only a handful of people realized to what extent the Dulles brothers held power in the Eisenhower administration.

Lieutenant Colonel L. Fletcher Prouty (USAF) was the Pentagon's chief briefing officer assigned to the White House during the Eisenhower administration. He worked closely with Allen Dulles in Coordinating military support for the various clandestine political operations undertaken by the CIA. He knew the intimate working arrangements of the Dulles brothers and of the cryptocracy they were building.

In his book *The Secret Team*, Colonel Prouty gave a glimpse of how the Dulles brothers "worked" the President: "That evening, before his usual tennis game on his backyard court, Allen Dulles dropped by his brother's secluded house just off Massachusetts Avenue and discussed the operation [which involved an amphibious plane and Polish pilot to be run under a CIA business cover]. Foster agreed that Eisenhower would go along with it. He walked over to the wall lined with bookshelves and picked up the White House telephone which connected directly with the White House operator. All he said was 'Is the man busy?'

Foster Dulles opened with, 'Boss, how did you do at Burning Tree today?... Well, six holes is better than nothing... Yes, I've been talking here with Allen. He has a proposal he wants to clear with you. He feels it is very important, and it will lift the morale of Frank's boys. [Frank Wisner was then Director of Intelligence Clandestine Operations]. You know, since Korea and Guatemala you haven't had them doing much. Will you see him tomorrow morning? Fine. How's Mamie? O.K. boss, I'll speak to Allen... 9:30... Thank you -- goodnight!'

"There was not much left to do," Prouty said, "the flight would be scheduled."

A relevant analysis of "the brother act" is provided by David Wise and Thomas Ross. "[The Dulles brothers] embodied the dualism -- and indeed the moral dilemma -- of United States foreign policy since World War II... Foster Dulles reflected the American ethic; the world as we should like it to be. While he took this public position, his brother was free to deal with nastier realities, to overturn governments and to engage in backstage political maneuvers all over the globe with the CIA's almost unlimited funds...

"This is not to say that the same two-sided foreign policy would never have evolved had the director of the CIA and the Secretary of State not been brothers. It very likely would have. But the natural friction between the objective and methods of the diplomats and the 'spooks,' between the State Department and the CIA, was to an extent reduced because of the Dulles brothers. There was consequently less of a check and balance."[88]

---

[88] David Wise and Thomas Ross, *The Invisible Government*, 5th ed. (New York, Random House, 1964)

John Foster and Allen Dulles had worked together before coming to government. Foster was the star attorney of the international law firm of Sullivan and Cromwell. He persuaded his partners to take Allen in "to soften up customers," which Allen had a great gift for. Eventually, Sullivan and Cromwell sent Allen to Berlin to negotiate private affairs with the German industrial barons before the war. After the war broke out, he was sent to Switzerland with OSS, where, under cover, he used his former business contacts inside Germany to supply information for his many spectacular single-handed intelligence coups against the Axis.

Though Allen Dulles was more gifted as a diplomat than his elder brother Foster, it was Foster who can be considered the mastermind of the Cold War Aberration. Foster played upon the fear of Communists and implemented the world-policing foreign policy of the Pax Americana which eventually led to our involvement in Vietnam. It was his Cold War Campaign at home that made citizens tremble in fear of Communist attack and their children crouch under school desks in atomic air-raid drills. It was John Foster Dulles, in the company of men like Senator Joe McCarthy and Richard Nixon, who presented the specter of the Communist menace to the American public. They convinced the nation that the communists were about to unleash a global war and even a direct nuclear attack upon the United States.

During Eisenhower's 1952 campaign for the presidency he promised to "peacefully bring about freedom for the captive nations." John Foster Dulles later repeated Eisenhower's promise, omitting, however, the word "peacefully."

Lest we judge John Foster Dulles unfairly by the standards of our own time, it must be said that, to his mind, there must have *seemed* to have been good reasons for invoking the Communist threat. As Senator Frank Church's (1976) Senate Committee to Study Governmental Operations said: "the extent to which the urgency of the Communist threat had become a shared perception is difficult to appreciate."

More likely, there was another, more insidious reason for the Cold War: the economy. A glance at a historical graph of the American business cycle will show that since the Civil War, economic depressions tend to precede and follow U.S. wars. Dulles' generation came to power in World War II after having suffered the longest and deepest depression in American history. It could be considered natural for them to overreact to the recessions of 1945-46 and 1949-50 by fomenting war -- hot or cold -- to feed the military-industrial base of the economy. The research and development of death-dealing technology created the need for unprecedented secrecy. The instrument of keeping those secrets was the cryptocracy.

The Cold War Strategy proved to be economically successful. Without having to risk a full-scale nuclear war and simply by *arming* the world against communism through weapons marketing, propaganda, and the psychological warfare of the Cold War scheme, the United States achieved a capital goods boom unequaled in modern history. In the most simple terms, arms constituted the bulk of United States exports from World War Two to the present and figured as the single most important industry which maintained the United States trade balance.

The central core of the Dulles brothers' American containment policy grew from the CIA's covert operations and propaganda efforts. The mood of those times is reflected in a top-secret report submitted by the second Hoover Commission to President Eisenhower is September, 1954, and made public by former CIA man Harry Rositzke. The report urged the United States to make its "...aggressive covert psychological, political, and paramilitary organization more effective, more unique, and if necessary, more ruthless than that employed by the enemy... We are facing an implacable enemy whose avowed objective is world domination by whatever means and at whatever cost. There are no rules in such a game... We... must learn to subvert, sabotage, and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated, and more effective methods than those used against us..."

According to Rositzke "The next year a National Security Council directive reaffirmed the Executive's commitment to covert operations. It instructed the CIA to continue creating problems for 'International Communism,' to reduce its strength and its control worldwide, and to 'increase the capacity and the will of peoples and nations to resist International Communism. It specifically reaffirmed CIA's authority to develop underground resistance and facilitate covert and guerrilla operations."[89]

Although the Cold War is generally said to date from 1948, with the Berlin Blockade and the Greek civil war, John Foster Dulles contributed to its architecture before he came to office in 1953. He epitomized the fearful gestalt of his generation, took hold of the floundering Cold War strategy, and molded it with his personality. He was fond of quoting Alexander Hamilton, who wrote in the *Federalist Papers,* "safety from external danger is the most powerful director of national conduct." Hamilton's statement, when taken at face value, seems quite innocent. But in the context of John Foster Dulles' materialistic and puritan upbringing, it is not difficult to see how he construed it to mean something quite different than Hamilton intended. Hamilton's thoughts gave Dulles the moral rationale to try to motivate national political, industrial, and economic conduct by posing an overwhelming external danger -- the threat of a nuclear war initiated by the "international Communist conspiracy."

If, at the end of World War II, the growth of our economy, still the strongest and richest in the world, did depend upon the military-industrial complex for sustenance, then Dulles' Cold War saved the U.S. from certain recession. Without the *threat* of communism, what could the free world have armed against? And if the health of the U.S. economy *continues* to depend on that merger of military and industrial interests, then what threat will come to replace the cold war?

---

[89] Harry Rositzke, *CIA's Secret Operations* (New York, Reader's Digest Press, 1977)

In his farewell address to the nation in 1960, President Eisenhower issued his famous warning about the military-industrial complex:

> Our military organization today bears little relation to that known of any of my predecessors in peacetime -- or, indeed, by fighting men of World War II or Korea. Until the latest of our world conflicts, the United States had no armaments industry. We annually spend on military security alone more than the net income of all United States corporations.
>
> "Now this conjunction of an immense military establishment and a large arms industry is new in the American experience. The total influence -- economic, political, even spiritual -- is felt in every city, every state house, every office of the federal government. We recognize the imperative need for this development. Yet we must fail to comprehend its grave implications. In the councils of government we must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex. The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will persist.
>
> We must never let the weight of this combination endanger our liberties or democratic processes. We should take nothing for granted.

And Eisenhower accurately predicted the course of the history of mind control research:

> The prospect of domination of the nation's scholars by federal employment, project allocations, and the power of money is ever present and is gravely to be regarded.
>
> Yet, in holding scientific research and discovery in respect, as we should, we must be alert to the equal and opposite danger that public policy could itself become the captive of a scientific-technological elite."

The Cold War *was* World War III -- a war waged, largely, against the human mind. A war waged largely with words -- the most powerful tool of behavior modification.

In the beginning, the men who had won World War II with advanced weaponry were less artful in the use of the new psychological warfare. As the Cold War escalated propaganda was followed by sabotage, assassinations, "paramilitary" covert operations, and limited "police actions" before the arsenal for waging invisible war (IW) was developed.

America had traditionally been a free and open society. But after the war, U.S. leaders held in their hands an awesome technological superiority. While being the love object of government, the new technologies, especially nuclear energy, made the leaders fearful of losing their monopoly. That fear gave rise to the belief that new secret agencies and operations were needed to guard against technological thefts by foreign governments. the Cold War was a "secret" war in more ways than one.

Psychological warfare, originally waged only against "enemy" countries, eventually came home. Nazi war criminals, experts in the black crafts of mind control, were allowed to immigrate to the U.S. under Project Paperclip. Most were employed by the U.S. cryptocracy. With the Nazi's in place, the psychological war began against the American people. It was waged against beliefs and free thought, by a cryptocracy which is still supported by all the power of the federal government, but which operates outside the chain of governmental command. Often it takes the form of "privatized" government, with the controls appearing to be vested in the ordinary business community. In any event, behind it is a secret bureaucracy become paranoid -- a cryptocracy mad with world power whose most powerful weapons are aimed at the human mind.

Although the Central Intelligence Agency has long been the convenient symbol for all those who have committed atrocities in the name of national security, the secret bureaucracy, the cryptocracy, does *not* consist solely of the CIA. It is as well a vast network of alliances between *individuals* in a number of government agencies normally thought to be outside the intelligence field.

Since the cryptocracy violates every constitutional principle as a matter of course, and commits every crime known to man in the interest of "national security," it cannot entirely rely on the patriotism of its agents to keep its secrets. Therefore, no single individual is told more than he has a "need to know."

The cryptocracy is a brotherhood reminiscent of the ancient secret societies, with rites of initiation and indoctrination programs to develop in its loyal membership the special understanding of its mysteries. It has secret codes and oaths of silence which reinforce the sense of elitism necessary for the maintenance of its strict loyalty. It is automated, organized in the mode of a computer, where all have access to general knowledge and the most obvious aims and goals, but where the individual is isolated by tribal rituals and compartmentalization.

It is a technocratic organization without ideology, loyal only to an unspoken, expedient, and undefined patriotism. Its recruits are schooled in the writings of

Niccolo Machiavelli. Its members are anonymous. Its funds are secret. Its operational history is a secret. Even its goals are secret. It is a degenerative disease of the body politic which has grown rampant, spreading so invisibly that after nearly four decades its existence is known only to a handful of "decision makers."

The cryptocracy is designed to function like a machine. It also has the feelings of a machine -- none at all. but, unlike a machine, it does have ambition. To it, human beings are so much cheap hardware who perform certain set functions which produce certain predetermined results. They are valued relative to cost and efficiency. The cryptocracy is the perfect cybernetic organism -- pure logic at the planning level -- nothing but automatic response in the field.

If a prospective agent cannot be recruited by an appeal to patriotism, he is bribed. If he cannot be bribed, he is blackmailed. If he refuses to be blackmailed, he is "programmed." If all these fail, he is killed, for it must not be known that he had ever been approached -- so important is "national security."

It is sometimes hard to determine whether the cryptocracy is working for or against the interests of the U.S. President, to whom its constituent agencies are supposed to be accountable. Many of its crimes, now a matter of public record, would indicate that it has often worked against the President. It *has*, we know, worked against the U.S. Constitution and the American people. It has needlessly caused the death of innocent people who were working for it, just as it has tortured and murdered those who have stood in its way. Documented atrocities and criminal blunders have been revealed by congressional investigations. Few have been brought to trial. Of those convicted only a paltry amount of time has been served. Little congressional, judicial, or executive action has been taken to limit its power or ferret out its leaders. Figureheads have been changed, but the *organization* and the National Security Act which has bred this cancer remains in essence *un*changed -- *un*challenged by the press, *un*noticed by the people.

The cryptocracy serves big business and spends a good deal of time and energy supplying American corporations with industrial intelligence. These favors, offered only to those companies friendly to the cryptocracy, may be repaid by such things as political campaign contributions to candidates who are either sympathetic to or compromised by favors from the cryptocracy. In the past the cryptocracy has supported both foreign and domestic politicians with such campaign contributions.

The "old boy network" of retired cryptocrats working within major corporations plays an important role in the cryptocracy's international influence. Secret funds are shunted not only from one agency of government to another, but also from agency to corporation and then, under cover of the corporation's legal business activities, throughout the world, wherever expediency dictates.

Through its authorized functions, the cryptocracy controls the United States government. It feeds the executive branch "intelligence reports" which are often slanted and sometimes falsified, so that the policy decisions which result will be those which fit the cryptocracy's game plan.

Like a fifteenth century Machiavellian princedom that has been computerized and automated, the cryptocracy has systematically manipulated the American consciousness. By justifying its existence by citing an exaggerated danger from communism, it has justified its own totalitarianism by convincing key politicians that fire must be fought with fire. The practices of the cryptocracy, once officially sanctioned only in operations outside the U.S., have become internalized. Those practices have included spying, stealing blackmail, and murder, even within the borders of the country it is supposed to protect and defend.

There was nothing hypocritical about the KGB's employment of totalitarian, police-state tactics. The Soviet equivalent of the CIA, the KGB,was an extension of the Soviet political system, which was totalitarian. Neither was there anything hypocritical about the Chinese use of "brainwashing" on American POWs in Korea. The Chinese have "brainwashed" three and a half million of their own people though generally they used techniques less sophisticated than mind control, but no less drastic than starvation, sleep interruption, and isolation. But the U.S. cryptocracy is the ultimate hypocrisy, subversive to its own government's democratic structure. It operates with methods which are not permitted in most democracies and certainly not permitted by the Constitution of the United States.

In war, a successful campaign greatly depends upon the element of surprise. Since the beginning of human disputes warriors have found it desirable to keep their strengths and weaknesses concealed.

The use of new technology has been both the strength and the surprise which so often has determined the outcome of war. The first elephant to be outfitted with spikes and used in battle was as great a terror to the bow-and-arrow warrior as the atomic bomb was to the Japanese.

The cryptocracy has long known the only way it can maintain the upper hand in the global power game is to stay in the vanguard of technology. To that end it has employed all the research and development the federal government can buy.

Since World War II the cryptocracy has used electronic technology to manipulate foreign peoples as well as the American people through a campaign of carefully planned misinformation, disinformation, and propaganda. The cryptocracy's existence depends upon such manipulation of public belief. Since it cannot openly argue its cause, it relies upon persuasion and indoc- trination to accomplish its goals and win support for its ends.

The existence of the cryptocracy also depends upon absolute secrecy. Without it, it is powerless. At present the cryptocracy is trying to control the encryption of data on the proposed "information highway." The cryptocracy is trying to arrange things (supposedly in the interest of national security) so that it will make it easy to wiretap the electronic mail and computer communications between private citizens and businesses alike. The scheme is to ramrod a system which allows no other encryption than the version developed in secret by the National Security Agency. The adoption of this plan would also make it impossible for private citizens to encrypt their own communications and thus not be able to protect themselves against eavesdropping. What appears to be only an attempt to control information at its source -- is actually an attempt to curb freedom of speech. The ultimate target, of course, is the human mind.

It was the CIA which instigated and directed the initial mind control research, and with an invisible hand, kept each group of scientists isolated from the other. Each group researching mind control was kept apart from other groups conducting simultaneous interfacing experiments, so that no one except the Agency would be able to put all the pieces of the puzzle together.

The basis for mind-control techniques already existed in scientific literature, but in a fragmented, incomplete, and unassimilated state. The cryptocracy enlisted the aid of scientists who then developed these fragments into usable techniques. These scientists worked independently, each on only one small part of the overall plan. And, by and large they were ignorant of the intended use of the final product of their research.

Operation Mind Control was not the plan of a mere cult of intelligence; it did not stop at intelligence gathering, but went on to instigate active operations on its own. Those conspiracies against freedom which were revealed by the investigations into Watergate, the intelligence community and multinational corporations are minor compared to the conspiracy of mind control which has developed in this country. Although the first victims of Operation Mind Control were, perhaps, especially suitable personality types for such use, with the advances being made in the psycho-sciences all but a few of us may eventually be victimized.

The power of mind control resides in its use as a superior security technique; as such it is almost as foolproof as that employed by the great Pharaoh of Egypt, who, carried to his final resting place by loyal slaves, had those same slaves killed and buried along with him so that all knowledge of access to the tomb would remain secure for centuries. Mind control arranges that "slaves" of the intelligence community -- witnesses, couriers, and assassins -- are "protected" from their own memories and guilt by amnesia. These "slaves" may be left alive, but the knowledge they possess is buried deep within the tomb of their own mind by techniques which can keep the truth hidden even from those who have witnessed it . It is the ultimate debriefing, the final security measure short of assassination.

The conspiracy of mind control veils the secret of all secrets. It hides the cabal which possesses its power, so even if the CIA and the other intelligence agencies were closed down tomorrow, the cryptocracy would continue to function. For as with the Mafia, "once you are a member, you're a member for life." The power of mind control, and ultimately of the Cryptocracy that uses it, resides with those who have culled the fruits of psycho-science since the late 1930s; they now possess the mature body of knowledge upon which the coercive art is built.

To review the labyrinth of events: Out of the natural fear of technology grew an unnatural reliance on secrecy. Secrecy led to covert control and produced a well-organized institution of national security. Institutionalized secrecy directed covert research and produced Operation Mind Control, the ultimate technology of secrecy and control.

SOFTWARE
WETWARE

18

BRAVE NEW WORLD IN A SKINNER BOX

The cryptocracy's search for reliable mind control methods was one of the most far-reaching secret projects ever undertaken. In addition to research and development in drugs and hypnosis, CIA funds and cryptocracy guidance gave impetus to a number of behavior modification projects carried out in federal prisons and mental institutions. Most of the projects were arranged secretly so recipients of the funds would have no way of knowing that the CIA was backing the research.

Even if they ***had*** known of the CIA's involvement, their interest in behavior modification probably would not have been dampened. Previously called conditioned reflex therapy, behavior modification, in the sixties and seventies, was becoming the most popular tool of psycho science since Sigmund Freud asked his first patient to lie down on the couch.

Behavior modification is based on conditioning, but conditioning is a big word for a simple form of learning in which a reaction is evoked by an outside action. The reaction is called a response; the outside action is called a stimulus.

In 1927 Pavlov won the Nobel Prize for his discovery of a method of making dogs salivate at the ringing of a bell. Salivating dogs were not much good to anyone, and it was not for making dogs drool that Pavlov was so honored. He was honored with the world's most prestigious award for making dogs drool *on cue*. He called his process "conditioning". The dogs' involuntary response, he called a "reflex." Pavlov's discoveries provided the breakthrough which behavioral science needed to begin to control the human mind.

Pavlov had begun in 1906 by seeking a simple model of the activity of the brain. He decided the salivary reflex in dogs could be just such a model, so he raided the dog pound and cut holes in the animals' cheeks to implant measuring devices for the flow of saliva.

By regularly ringing a bell just before feeding the dogs he found that the stimulus -- the sound of the bell -- intrinsically unrelated to food, began to evoke the salivation initially observed when the dogs were eating. His patient studies revealed that the quality, rate, and frequency of salivation changed depending upon the quality, rate, and frequency of the stimuli.

Pavlov's experiments with dogs have been repeated numerous times by different scientists with the same results. Science now agrees that when a hungry dog is given a piece of meat immediately after a bell rings, and when this procedure is repeated a number of times the bell alone will produce the flow of saliva almost as if the bell and not the meat were activating the glands. When the bell rings, not only will a properly conditioned dog salivate but his ears will stand up, he'll turn towards the food source, and even make anticipatory chewing movements. Conditioned reflexes in dogs, however, are a long way from the conditioning of *volitional* thinking in humans.

But Pavlov established the groundwork by which anyone's emotional stability (Pavlov called it "perpetual equilibration") and sanity could be reliably balanced or *unbalanced*. To that end the Soviets and later the People's Republic of China, employed Pavlov's new science for the creation of the totalitarian state.

Marshall McLuhan, writing in *War and Peace in The Global Village*, in 1968 called our attention to an important element of Pavlov's experiment which has been largely overlooked:

"...The work of Pavlov, in revealing the fact of conditioned reflexes, had a totally different meaning for the Russian and the European. Pavlov had been unable to condition his dogs in his experiments until he had completely conditioned the laboratory environments in which they lived. Until precise thermal and auditory controls were introduced into the laboratories the conditioning did not occur. The bell did not elicit salivation. To the European it was not the conditioning of the laboratories but the fact of automatic salivation that created the excitement. Indeed, the ordinary psychological effect makes no mention of the laboratory conditioning. The Westerner lives in a man-made environment, mechanically conditioned and time structured...

"In the new electronic environment," McLuhan said, "we end the Pavlovian laboratory of mechanical civilization and are primitive once more. Living in a man-made environment, extremely specialized and fragmented, the Westerner was as oblivious of his environment as the Russian is oblivious of his tribal environment, which is neither mechanical nor man-made. Western mechanism has not penetrated the Russian psyche, any more than it has the Japanese psyche. Therefore, to the Russian, the exciting event in Pavlov's experiment was not the conditioning of the dogs but of the laboratories. But to the Westerner, the revelation that he was a preconditioned robot, thanks to his own ingenuity and machinations, was a most disagreeable discovery...

"...Pavlov was the man who tipped us off that our old mechanical environment and its consequenes were yielding to a totally new environment created by an antithetic technology," McLuhan said. "The portentous discovery he made was that any controlled environment, any man-made environment, is a conditioner that creates non-perceptive somnambulists..."[90]

While the general public in the West may continue to associate behavior modification with Pavlov's conditioning of dogs, the science is actually an ancient one. In its modern form it has its roots in the works of Descartes who, in 1664, put forward the idea that every activity of an organism is the reaction to an external stimulus. Experimental studies to test Descartes' idea did not begin until several centuries later. Then, simultaneously experimentation began in a number of different countries.

At the same time Pavlov was experimenting with dogs in Russia, John B. Watson was experimenting with humans in the United States. Watson was the founder of the behaviorist school of psychology in the 1920s. His most notorious accomplishment was his series of experiments on an eleven-month-old infant known to history as Little Albert. (Little Albert was Watson's own child, who committed suicide as a young adult.)

Watson showed Little Albert a white rat and the child reacted naturally and tried to pet and cuddle the animal. After Albert had established a playful rapport with the rat, Watson began to adversely condition the lad. Each time the rat would come into Albert's view, Watson would beat the floor with a steel bar and produce a deafening sound. Quite naturally, whenever Albert heard the sound he would jump with fright. Eventually Albert associated the loud sound with the white rat and became frightened of it. Every time the rat came into his view he would begin to cry.

Albert became so adversely conditioned to the rat that he would exhibit fear whenever any small animal came into his view. He became so conditioned that he reacted with equal fear to rabbits, dogs, and a sealskin coat -- in short, to anything with fur.

Quite proudly Dr. Watson exclaimed, "Give me the baby, and I'll make it climb and use its hands in constructing buildings of stone or wood... I'll make it a thief, a gunman or a dope fiend. The possibilities of shaping in any direction are almost endless. Even gross differences in anatomical structure limits are far less than you may think... Make him a deaf mute, and I will still build you a Helen Keller... Men are built, not born."[91]

---

[90] Marshall McLuhan, *War and Peace In The Global Village*, Bantam Books, New York, 1968, p. 66-67.

[91] John B. Watson, *Behaviorism*, rev. ed. (New York, Norton, 1930)

Picking up where Watson left off new evidence suggests that the cryptocracy began recruiting abused and abandoned children to develop as programmed somnambulists.

Watson saw things, as Pavlov did, in physical and chemical terms. He was not interested in anything beyond overt and observable behavior. And Watson was only the first in a long line of American psycho-scientists who were to take the mechanistic path to control of the mind.

Pavlov and Watson's classical conditioning did not, however, go far in producing a reliable science of mind-control. In the late thirties Harvard psychologist Burrhus Frederick Skinner discovered new principles of conditioning which allowed more complete control.

Skinner came up with what he called *operant conditioning*. It was based on the idea that reinforcement (the Repetition of either a positive or a negative response to an action) was at the root of all learned behavior. The distinction between *classical* and *operant* conditioning was made only because different techniques were used to elicit the responses. In essence, the effects of either kind of conditioning were the same.

The three most common methods of modern behavior therapy are operant conditioning, aversion therapy, and desensitization.

Operant conditioning is the reinforcement of certain behavior by reward (usually food), often accompanied by simultaneous sound or light stimulation. Reinforcement is contingent upon the occurrence of the response, and the reinforcing mechanisms are often built into the environment. When rats are used as subjects, the device to be operated is a bar which, when depressed, delivers the reward of food or water. In this situation the behavior which is reinforced is the pressing of the bar. It makes no difference how the bar is pressed, whether the rat presses the bar with its paw, nose, or tail. Once the bar is pressed, the operation has been performed and the animal is rewarded. The dependent variable in operant conditioning is the response rate -- the number of times the bar is pressed. Response rate, or the frequency of the response, is an important factor in judging the success of the operant conditioning.

Aversion therapy is a technique in which an undesirable response is inhibited by a painful or unpleasant reinforcement such as electric shock, noxious odors, or any technique which produces fear and avoidance. It is an ancient form of counter-conditioning, or punishment, which has been widely used in the treatment of homosexuality, stuttering, and alcoholism.

In desensitization the subject is first trained to relax beyond his normal state. He is then presented with images which evoke mild anxiety. At first the images are very mild, and they are repeated until the subject shows no anxiety. Then a stronger image is introduced and the process is repeated. Finally the subject becomes desensitized to even the strongest image. Desensitization has been used to relieve people of phobic fears, anxieties, and in deprogramming conditioned responses.

Skinner began his experiments by building a number of boxes in which pigeons were required to run mazes and press levers to receive the rewards of birdseed. By manipulating the way the reward was given, Skinner found he could control the rate and the style of the lever pressing.

Eventually Skinner was able to get pigeons to bob and weave in prescribed ways. He was even able to get birds to distinguish colors by having them peck only at levers of specific colors for food. He soon learned to obtain just about any kind of behavior he desired from a number of different animals.

Skinner concluded that every action is determined by the environment and that all behavior is "shaped and maintained by its consequences." the behaviorists' mechanistic view of man was summed up by Skinner when he said, "If by 'machine' you simply mean any system which behaves in an orderly way, then man and all other animals are machines."

Skinner's subsequent research, however, showed that behavior which is supported by continuous rewards stops when the rewards are withheld. Further experimentation showed that by shifting from continuous to intermittent rewards, the behavior could be kept going even though the rewards became less frequent. This discovery made behaviorism a practical science, for now it could explain how behavior was maintained in the real world.

With unshakable faith in his own science, Dr. Skinner built a large box with a glass window on one side. It was a soundproof cage, much like the ones he'd used in experiments with pigeons and monkeys. But this box was for children, and into it Skinner put his own child.

This "Skinner box" was about as large as a spacious crib. The temperature of the box was carefully controlled, and Skinner testified proudly that "crying and fussing could always be stopped by slightly lowering the temperature." With the sound proof box, Skinner was "never concerned lest the doorbell, telephone, piano, or children at play wake the baby..." And, he added, "soundproofing also protects the family from the baby."[92]

Apparently Skinner's scheme to produce "socialized" children was not so successful. In the opinion of the kindergarten teacher of Skinner's youngest daughter, who had received the "benefits" of spending her early childhood in her daddy's box, she was not an obedient automaton, but a rather independent and even rebellious child.[93] Somehow Skinner's programming of his offspring must have failed in his own terms, for it would appear from his writings that Skinner's ideas are quite in line with the dreams of the cryptocrats who would seek to control us all.

---

[92] B.F. Skinner, *Beyond Freedom and Dignity* (New York, Knopf, 1971)

In his popular work *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, Skinner wrote: "The problem is to free men, not from control, but from certain kinds of control, and it can be solved only if our analysis takes all consequences into account. How people feel about control... does not lead to useful distinctions."

Skinner is not only concerned with controlling individuals, he desires to build a controlled society, ruled from crib to coffin by behavior modification. "The intentional design of a culture and the control of human behavior it implies are essential if the human species is to continue to develop," he said.

In the '70's and '80's B.F. Skinner was the center of a personality cult. He was the guru and founder of the modern psycho-philosophy which holds that it is morally and ethically permissible to change the behavior of others as well as to modify others' belief. About belief Skinner wrote, "People must believe that what they are doing has some chance of obtaining what they want or avoiding something to which they are averse. But the chances are in the contingencies. The relation of beliefs to other conditions, such as wants and needs, can be easily stated: to say that desires enter into the causation of beliefs is simply to say that the probability of behavior with which a belief is associated depends not only upon reinforcement but upon a state of deprivation or aversive stimulation.[94]

Aversion stimulation was the process upon which the Cold War faith was built. The Cold War faith, in turn loosed the cryptocracy upon the world to murder, maim, or rape the minds of any who posed a real threat to its goals of "defending the free world from communism."

In the words of Lewis Andrews and Marvin Karlins, "The world is, in a sense, one large 'Skinner box'..."[95] And if this is not already true, it soon may be, because there are behaviorists at work in practically every federal and state institution, as well as in the private sector.

Using federal and state institutions for testing purposes provided many benefits to the cryptocracy. They functioned as recruitment centers, where selected criminals were released to the custody of career spooks who could apply their skills in undercover work. Prisons were also valuable testing grounds.

Philip Hilts, describing the attitude prevalent in both the cryptocracy and prison bureaucracies, wrote: "There are three possibilities for criminals. The first is deterrent: Keep them from doing it again. The second is punishment: Knock the hell out of the bastards; they deserve it. The third is treatment: They're defective; let's fix them."[96] Behaviorists who work the prison circuit hold that the last is the only humane way of reducing recidivism. Perhaps. But one also begins to sense in such theorizing a preview of what is to come for the whole society.

---

[93] Interview, Name Withheld by request.

[94] Skinner, *op.cit.*

[95] Lewis M. Andrews and Marvin Karlins, *Requiem for Democracy?* (New York, Holt, 1971)

"These behavioral engineers are growing mightily in numbers and influence, nourished by a law-and-order administration that though riddled by corruption itself, can still deliver the material goods," wrote David Rorvich. "They are not out to change the world but to make man adjust to it; they seek results, not understanding. A thick-skinned lot they are, not loath to admit the crudity of some of their techniques, claiming results that would take the more elegant psychotherapies and social reforms years to attain... What the world needs now in the service of 'curing' its deviant and miserable masses, proclaim the new psycho-technologists, is no more prison reform, urban renewal and nude group gropes but a few well- placed corrective kilovolts in the collective brain."[97]

The California Medical Facility at Vacaville was the center of a number of behavioral research projects funded by various agencies, including the Veterans Administration, HEW, the Bureau of Prisons, private drug companies, and others. Many of these agencies were fronting for the CIA.

In 1973, there was a "flap" in the press over the testing of drugs by these agencies under the guise of behavior modification. It was revealed that tranquilizers, depressants, sedatives, narcotic antagonists, and hypnotics were being tested in the hospitals and prisons (see Appendix B).

Dr. Leo E. Hollister, a medical investigator for the Veterans Administration, defended the practice: "The exemplary Medical Facility at Vacaville is one of the few places in the country where such [drug] studies are possible... at a time when the demands for such facilities are increasing, in response to an urgent public health problem, it would be sad to see them denied to responsible and highly reputable clinical investigators."[98]

It is debatable whether you can characterize the scientists who participated in all the projects as "responsible and highly reputable." It appears from the evidence that some may rather have been, as Philip Hilts playfully suggests, "hunchbacked wart-infested evil scientists..."[99]

Perhaps the greatest danger to freedom of thought and behavior is posed by the breed of Psycho-scientists who call themselves "behaviorists." While most psychologists once concerned themselves with the study of human thought and the rich life of the mind, the behaviorists believe that man's problems can best be understood by studying his actions. What a man thinks, sees, feels, wants and knows -- everything that a man is, behaviorists believe, can be most easily understood in terms of what he *does.*

---

[96] Philip J. Hilts, *Behavior Mod* (New York, Harper, 1976)

[97] David Rorvich, *Behavior Control: Big Brother Comes*, Intellectural DIgest, Jan. 1974.

[98] Leo Hollister, letter to thomas Clauson, July 3, 1973.

[99] Hilts, *op. cit.*

Behaviorism would appear to be a predictable expression of materialistic cultures, East and West, which value externals above all else. You will seldom hear a behaviorist speak of "will" or even "mind." These are considered unscientific, subjective terms. Instead, the behaviorists speak only of "reflexes" which are reinforced by conditioning from the environment. They look forward to the day when they can conclusively prove that conditioning begins at the moment of conception, and that reflexes are ultimately the very stuff of what was once called the soul! The science of behaviorism portrays the human being as mechanistic protoplasm. The most avant-garde behaviorists have developed an unholy alliance with biochemists who together are exploring genetics, hoping to find the key for breeding selected behavioral characteristics. Certainly a person born with all his limbs will behave differently from a person who is born with genetic damage and without limbs. But beyond that, what some behaviorists are looking for is a genetic factor which controls anger, docility, and other personality tendencies. While many new scientific insights have come from behaviorism, so have many new dangers -- especially to the freedom of choice.

"The day has come," said Professor James V. McConnel, head of the Department of Mental Health Research at the University of Michigan, "when we can combine sensory deprivation with the use of drugs, hypnosis, and the astute manipulation of reward and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior." Did Dr. McConnel expressed the sentiments of behavior modifiers who, like cryptocrats, believe that mankind's salvation resides in the control of individual behavior in an engineered society? And engineered by whom?

"...We want to reshape our society drastically," McConnel said, "so that all of us will be trained from birth to want to do what society wants us to do. Today's behavioral psychologists are the architects and engineers who are shaping the Brave New World of Tomorrow."[100]

In the practical American way -- stripped for action -- the psychology profession appears to be turning away from psychotherapy and is becoming dependent upon the time and labor saving practical mechanics of behavior modification depending upon principles developed largely through laboratory experimentation. Voluntary as well as involuntary actions can be conditioned. Once a reflex is trained into a subject, he becomes an automaton, responding to the artificial stimulus to which he has been programmed.

---

[100] James McConnel, *Psychology Today*, May, 1970.

When light shines into the pupil of the eye, it contracts, and when the light is removed, it dilates. This pupillary reflex is involuntary; the individual has no conscious control over it, but it can be conditioned.

C.V. Hudgins demonstrated this by conditioning the pupil to a bell using a light as the unconditioned stimulus. He would turn on the light, which shone directly into the subject's eyes at the same instant he rang a bell. The light made the pupil contract every time just as meat made Pavlov's dog drool.

Hudgins then taught his subjects to use their own hands to operate the bell and light mechanisms. Then he would say "contract" and the subject would press the switch. When he said "relax" the subject would relax and turn off both bell and light. After only a few hours' training, Hudgins found that he could do away with the bell, the hand switch, and the light. He had only to say the word "contract," and the pupil would contract.

A modern apologist of conditioning, Andrew Salter, asserts that hypnosis in essence is the same as conditioning. Salter said that after he had conditioned the reader of his book to contract his pupil, as Hudgins had done, he would take him to an ophthalmologist.

"Doctor," Salter would declare, "here is a splendid hypnotic subject. I control this person so thoroughly that at my command his pupil will contract, and perceptibly."

"Come now," the doctor would say, "you know very well that pupillary contraction is involuntary. You need light for that."

Salter would then tell his conditioned reader "contract," and the reader's pupil would obey every time, and the doctor would be perplexed.

"How do you like hypnotism?" Salter would ask the doctor.

"It's amazing," he would answer, but his interest would diminish after Salter explained how, paralleling Pavlov and Hudgins, the reader's pupil had been conditioned. "Well," he would say, "come back next time when you have real hypnotism."

"Our doctor is wrong," Salter said. "There, in the conditioned reflex, he had seen the essence of hypnosis. (And parenthetically, when we see that the essence of hypnotism is conditioning -- or quite loosely, that the essence of the 'unconscious mind' is conditioning -- we are in a strategic position to develop a sound understanding of the deepest wellsprings of human behavior.) "[101]

---

[101] Andrew Salter, *Conditioned Reflex Therapy* (New York, Creative Age Press, 1949)

The cryptocracy, having discovered the wonders of hypnosis, drugs, behavior modification, and even more revolutionary electronic and sonic manipulations of the brain, learned how to reliably control individual behavior. Whether or not the Constitution protects the individual's free thought and speech, and whether one regards mind control as bondage or a necessary tool for social engineering, one must recognize that the power to control the mind exists – and is being used.

Did Philip Hilts know how close he'd come when he offered his chilling description of the crypto-behaviorists? He wrote: "Suppose a dozen controllers with that incurable twitch for power are meeting, now, in some secret mountain cabin. There, amid piles of rat-behavior charts, rows of cumulative recorders, and reams of human-foibles data, they are designing an environment. They are creating blueprints for a system that would produce the most terrible, violent, and antisocial people possible."[102]

Debbie Skinner in the "Skinner Box" dad designed for her. On the right is Dr. B.F. Skinner. On the left is Mrs. Skinner who is touching both little Debbie and the box with apparent equal affection. Like some other offspring of famous masters of behavior modification, Debbie committed suicide in her twenties.

---

[102] Hilts, *op cit.*

19

A SCHOOL FOR ASSASSINS

The cryptocracy recruited their assassins from among people who had already demonstrated a violent nature, people who had few reservations about taking human life. No homicidal maniacs were recruited because they could not be controlled. The cryptocracy needed killers who would not murder on impulse, but only upon command.

Once selected, the assassin candidates were turned over to the military, where, under the guise of "combat readiness" training, they underwent a complete program of conditioning. Graduates of the program would forever after act with ruthless efficiency. They would eliminate local political leaders in a foreign country, or undertake "search and destroy" missions in violation of national and international laws. They would be given a cover allowing them to enter the Foreign Service; or they would pose as embassy marine guards.

In July, 1975, the *Sunday Times*[103] in London quoted a U.S. Navy psychologist who admitted that U.S. Naval Intelligence had taken convicted murderers from military prisons, conditioned them as political assassins, and then placed them in American embassies around the world. This admission came shortly after the Senate Intelligence Committee had scolded the CIA for plotting a number of political assassinations around the world. From the congressional reports, however, one got the feeling the cryptocracy was being chastised not for the assassinations it had successfully accomplished, but for those which it had attempted, but failed. The attempts on the life of Fidel Castro drew the greatest notice from the congressional committees and the press.

According to the *Sunday Times* story, naval psychologist Lt. Comdr. Thomas Narut was assigned to the U.S. Regional Medical Center at Naples, Italy. When he first made public the navy's part in programming assassins, he was attending a NATO conference in Oslo on "Dimensions of Stress and Anxiety." In attendance at that conference were 120 psychologists of all descriptions and from many countries. Many of them were involved in research on how to improve man's ability to cope with stress, but none of them felt compelled, as Narut did, to discuss their work so fully or so frankly.

---

[103] The full story of Narut and related events can be found in Peter Watson's book *War on the Mind: The Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology* (Basic Books, 1978). Watson was the source of the *Sunday Times* articles. According to my notes, when I met Watson in London in 1978 ,he argued in a conservative fashion that these experiments were limited . He believed that mind control was not a widespread practice, certainly had not gone operational to the extent I knew it had.

The stated objective of the conference was to exchange information on how soldiers and people in difficult jobs could cope with stress. Dr. Narut's talk was on "The Use of a Symbolic Model and Verbal Intervention in Inducing and Reducing Stress." His speech began with a plug for the navy. He knew, he said, that many of the scientists present had often encountered problems in their purely scientific research because of the military's inclination to research that would yield quick and useful results. He sympathized with those who had trouble getting subjects, funds, or both out of the military for their purely scientific research. But things were different *in the navy* he said.

In the navy, Narut bragged, there were plenty of captive personnel who could be used as guinea pigs. In the navy there was a computerized record of each man's background and psychological profile, so a quick selection of men with suitable psychological inclinations for experiments could be made. Navy psychologists not only had access to computerized records, but also to psychological tests and background data on a large number of people. In the navy, Narut said, funds were plentiful, and there were no problems with transporting subjects for study to nearly any place in the world. Narut stated proudly that the U.S. Navy provided scientists with the most advanced research facilities in the world.

A Canadian psychologist at the conference later remarked, "Narut's message was loud and clear -- 'Join the navy and study the world.'"

In his brief discourse, Dr. Narut did no more than hint at the work he had been doing in teaching "combat readiness units" to cope with the stress of killing. Later, however, during private questioning with a small group of listeners (reporter Peter Watson of the *Sunday Times*, a former psychologist, among them), Narut unfolded the amazing story of the navy's programming of assassins on an assembly line basis. In his mid-thirties, Dr. Narut had just completed his doctoral dissertation on the question of whether certain films provoke anxiety, and whether forcing a man to do irrelevant tasks while watching violent films would help him cope with the anxiety they produced.

When pressed by Watson to explain the details of this kind of conditioning, Narut said he had worked with "combat readiness units" which included men being programmed for commando-type operations and for undercover placement at U.S. embassies. These, Narut said were "hit men and assassins" (Narut's words) made ready to kill in selected countries should the need arise. Dr. Alfred Zitani, an American delegate to the conference, was very surprised by Narut's disclosure. "Do you think Dr. Narut realizes what he has just said?" Zitani asked. "That kind of information must be classified."

The conditioning of Narut's assassins was accomplished by audio-visual desensitization, a standard behavior modification process. These men were "desensitized" to mayhem by being shown films of people being killed or injured in a number of different ways. At first the films would show only mild forms of bloodshed. As the men became acclimated to the scenes of carnage, they would see progressively more violent scenes. The assassin candidates, Narut explained, would eventually be able to dissociate any feelings they might have from even the goriest scenes they viewed.

Narut said that of course U.S. naval psychologists would have first selected the candidates for training by their psychological makeup. Those selected for assassination assignments were often from submarine crews and paratroops. Others were convicted murderers from military prisons who had already shown a proclivity for violence.

Still others were men who had been given awards for valor. World War II Medal of Honor winner Audie Murphy was a subject of extensive research.

The best killers, according to Narut, were men whom psychologists would classify as "passive-aggressive" personalities. These were people with strong drives, usually kept under tight control. Such types were usually calm, but from time to time would exhibit outbursts of temper during which they could literally kill without remorse. Narut said that through psychological testing, he and his colleagues were looking for more such men, for further conditioning.

Among the tests used by the navy to determine violent natures was the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, which is used widely by educators and businessmen to determine psychological qualities of students and employees. The tests consist of hundreds of questions designed to measure such personality traits as hostility, depression, and psychopathy.

According to Narut, the men selected by the tests, or by evidence of past violence, were taken for programming to the navy's neuropsychiatric laboratory in San Diego, California, or to the Naples medical center which employed Dr. Narut.

Audio-visual desensitization was the major technique used in programming the assassins. Psychological indoctrination completed the programming by instilling the desired prejudicial attitudes.

The audio-visual desensitization began with the subject strapped into a chair with his head clamped so he could not look away from the screen. A special mechanism prevented the subject's eyelids from closing, as depicted in the film *A Clockwork Orange.*

The candidate was then shown a film of an African youth being crudely circumcised by fellow members of his tribe. The youth was circumcised with a blunt knife, painfully and without anesthetic. This well known film is used widely in psychological experiments to create stress. Afterwards the candidate was asked about details of what he had seen. He was asked, for example, to describe the color of the belt on the doctor's trousers, or the motif on the handle of the knife which cut off the foreskin.

The next film showed a man in a sawmill, where planks were sliced from huge logs. In the operation of the saw the man slipped and cut off his fingers.

As the films progressed in gruesomeness, the reactions of the candidate were measured by sensing devices. Heartbeat, breathing rate, and brain waves were recorded, very much as on a polygraph. If the physiological responses, which might have been great in the beginning, slowed down and resumed normal patterns as the more bloodthirsty scenes were viewed, the candidates were judged to have completed this stage of conditioning.

The last phase of conditioning, Narut said, was to indoctrinate the candidates to think of their potential enemies as inferior forms of life. By this stage, the candidates would have already been selected for assignment to particular countries. They would be shown films and given lectures which portrayed the customs and cultural habits of the foreign countries in a biased fashion. The people of those countries would be portrayed as enemies of the United States and were always spoken of in demeaning terms. They were often presented as if they were "less than human." Their customs were ridiculed, and local leaders were presented as evil demagogues, even if they were legitimate political figures.

According to Dr. Narut it took only a few weeks to indoctrinate susceptible candidates by this process. Those who were not susceptible to the conditioning were dropped earlier in the program and returned to other assignments. Narut admitted he did not have the necessary "need to know" as to where all the programmed men were sent, although at one point in his conversation with Peter Watson, Narut specified that programmed assassins have been installed in the Athens embassy. He said his busiest time was when a large group of men went through such training towards the end of 1973 at the time of the Yom Kippur War.

After the Oslo conference interview, Watson returned to London to file his story. Writing up the details, he found a few points which needed clarification but he could not reach Narut either at his home or in his laboratory in Naples. Watson then asked the U.S. embassy in London to comment on the information Narut had volunteered. The embassy passed the buck to the U.S. Navy.

Within a few days the Pentagon issued a categorical denial that the U.S. Navy had ever "engaged in psychological training or other types of training of personnel as assassins." They also denied any such training had ever taken place either in San

Diego or in Naples. The said they too had been unable to contact Lieutenant Commander Narut, but they did confirm he was on the staff of the U.S. Regional Medical Center in Naples as a psychologist. But Dr. Zitani later offered to testify about what Narut had told him to "appropriate authorities." Watson was also approached later by a psychologist in Los Angeles who said he had seen the Pentagon denials so thought Watson would like to know that he had lent the San Diego psychologists a copy of his film on circumcision which was used in the desensitization conditioning.

A few days later Narut was located. He flew to London to discuss the matter ostensibly with Watson's paper, the *Sunday Times*, but instead he held a press conference saying only that he had been talking in "theoretical and not practical terms." He then flew back to the Naples base.

After his return to Naples, U.S. naval headquarters in London offered the official explanation for Narut's statement: Narut had "personal problems." A few days later Watson was able to contact Narut at the U.S. hospital in Naples, but he refused to elaborate on his disclosure.

During the Oslo conference interview, Narut had said several times that what he was saying about the assassins was "coming out anyway." He was referring to the congressional disclosures about CIA assassination plots. But the fact that the navy had been operating along lines similar to the CIA was not known to the public nor has it subsequently been admitted. The details of the story that Lieutenant Commander Narut related have been strongly and categorically denied in all subsequent queries of the navy.

It came as no surprise to many that the navy had been interested in psychological research to help its men cope with "stress." Several years before, one of the organizers of the Oslo conference, Dr. Irwin Sarason, had been approached by the navy to work on projects similar to Narut's. At the time, the navy had said nothing to him about programming assassins; it said it wanted him to adapt his work for applications to "spies."

In response to that request, Sarason devised a film which showed how successful students asked questions in school. The film was shown to a group of juvenile delinquents for a period of time until they too learned how to pose the right questions. As a result, over the next two years they did much better in their studies and got in trouble less. The control group who had not seen the films did just as poorly in school as they'd always done and were just as delinquent.

Since his "symbolic modeling" study had been successful, Sarason wanted to continue research and applied to the Office of Naval Research for more funding. A few weeks after his application was received, Sarason was called by a navy official who asked him if he would object to having his work classified. Sarason wondered why, and the navy official told him his research would be most valuable to the navy's neuropsychiatric laboratory in California as spies were being trained there to resist interrogation. The naval official said that if Sarason would allow his work to be classified, he'd get all the funds he needed.

But Sarason was interested in the peaceful scientific nature of his work, not its military applications, so he refused to have the project classified. His goal was the exception rather than the rule.

The federal government supports most scientific research in the United States. Enough psychologists and other social scientists haven't asked questions about what their research is to be used for; their main objective has been to get the grant, so they could support themselves and their scientific curiosity. Since too many of them have been politically disinterested or naive, they have been easy prey for the cryptocracy. Lieutenant Commander Narut was therefore but one in a long line of psychologists being employed for psychological warfare and illegal clandestine operations.

Another such operation was the training of security officers at the Washington based International Police Academy by psychologists and sociologists. The officers were supposedly being taught interrogation techniques for Third World countries; actually it was a highly sensitive clandestine operation organized for the training of U.S. spies. Congress closed the Academy on January 1, 1974, after its real purpose was disclosed to the press.

Another, uncovered in the late 1960's, was "Project CAMELOT," purportedly a sociopolitical analysis of Chile, but actually designed to keep Chile free of Communist leaders by discrediting them. Project CAMELOT played an important role in the overthrow of Salvador Allende and his democratically elected leftist government.

In 1975, Congress questioned the navy about its development of a questionnaire to survey attitudes toward death. Congressmen had learned that psychologists were eagerly working on such a questionnaire, known as the "Value of Life" study, that would allow the navy to assess a recruit's willingness and ability to kill from the very first day he entered the service.

In still another government funded experiment, psychologists working for the Human Resources Research Organization in Alexandria, Virginia, had conducted a brutal series of "stress training " experiments in the early 1960's

In one experiment army "volunteers" were taken on an airplane flight. Suddenly, the airplane's engines failed and the plane was forced to land abruptly on a rough airstrip. The soldiers were later tested to see if this incident had caused a fear of flying. In another experiment soldiers were taken out and "lost" in a forest. Suddenly, a huge forest fire engulfed them, so that the men found themselves "off course" and surrounded by fire. These men were tested to see if the experience had given them a fear of fire.

In yet another experiment, soldiers were allowed to "stray" into an artillery target area. Shells were exploding all around them, and they had to get out of the area by keeping cool and following orders. Since artillery shells fired from a distance of twenty five miles away are hard to control, the explosions were created by detonating underground charges triggered by remote control from a lookout point. After the realistic shelling was over the men were tested to see if they suffered any discernible "shell shock."

During all these experiments the men were under visual observation. In some, they also wore telemetry devices which allowed scientists to measure their pulse rate, respiration, and other vital signs to determine the level of stress they were experiencing at the time they were exposed to the dangers.

As this battery of experiments became known to the outside world, public opinion and congressional pressure supposedly brought a stop to them. The military was not deterred, however, from other kinds of cruel and dangerous experimentation; it continued its stress research in spite of the bad publicity.

While military "stress testing" may have developed useful insights into the psychology of warriors, its primary goal, as Lieutenant Commander Narut pointed out, was the programming of assassins. These experiments were most useful in programming those men who were already inclined to kill. Hypnosis was *still* the only effective tool for motivating those who were not inclined to kill, then for erasing the memory of their crimes or eliciting false confessions.

Alarmed by evidence found in the assassinations of John and Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King, Dr. Joseph L. Bernd of the Virginia Polytechnic Institute in 1968 questioned leading authorities on hypnosis about the possible use of hypnosis to motivate assassins.

Bernd wanted to know if political influences could be induced by hypnosis; could people be hypno-programmed to operate unconsciously and take what seemed to be independent action? Could people be influenced to commit political assassination as a consequence of hypnotic influence?

In his query Bernd asked authorities to assume that a skilled hypnotist found a subject who was both a good hypnotic subject and highly capable in the use of weapons. They were to assume that the subject also had a deep hatred for some political personality prominent in the news. Bernd's first question to the authorities was: "Could the hypnotist use hypnotic suggestion to persuade the weapons expert to kill the hated political personality at a time and under conditions suggested by the hypnotist?"

His second question was: "Could the hypnotic suggestion of this action be achieved in a way which could leave the subject assassin unconscious of and unable to recall to consciousness the fact that his violent act was made as a consequence of hypnotic suggestion?"

The authorities who responded to Bernd's questions stated they did think it possible to induce a subject to kill. One expert said, "...I would say that a highly skilled hypnotist, working with a highly susceptible subject, could possibly persuade the subject to kill another human..." Another expert went further, saying it was possible through posthypnotic suggestion to make a subject unable to recall his act. "There could be a conspiracy," one expert wrote, "but a conspiracy of which the principal was unaware."

It may well be that Bernd hit a nerve in the cryptocracy. His report, "Assassination and Hypnosis: Political Influence or Conspiracy," was never published.

But despite all the efforts of the cryptocracy, slowly, the secrets of mind control began to emerge. Soon there surfaced other evidence that there were indeed such things as programmed assassins. One such assassin made bold headlines on the front page of a newspaper in the Philippines.

American Institute of Hypnosis Director, Dr. William Jennings Bryan III, sits before a panel through which he could program three subjects at one time.

20

THE FOUR FACES OF A ZOMBIE

On March 2, 1967, Luis Angel Castillo, age twenty-four, was arrested by the Philippine National Bureau of Investigation (NBI) on suspicion of conspiring to assassinate President Ferdinand Marcos in Manilla. In a series of interrogation sessions, the NBI and Philippine Army investigators gave him truth serum (at his request) and put him under hypnosis. During one of these sessions, Castillo revealed he had been involved in an assassination four years earlier.

Castillo told the NBI, both under hypnosis and truth serum and also in a normal state, that he had been hypnoprogrammed to kill a man riding in an open car. Although Castillo did not know the identity of his target, the scene of his supposed "hit" was Dallas, Texas. The date was November 22, 1963.

After revealing this information, Castillo asked for political asylum in Manila. He was quoted in the *Manila Times* as saying, "I am afraid to go anywhere anyway. I am as good as dead now."

"I don't know how I got into Dallas or how I got out," Castillo told reporters, "but I am sure I did not carry a gun."

The *Manilla Times* story reported that Castillo had arrived in Manila carrying a Philippine passport which identified him as Antonio Reyes Eloriaga, a returning resident who had been expelled from America for overstaying his visa and stealing a car. While in the U.S., Castillo had traveled under the aliases Angelo Rodriguiz, Razo Hernandez, Mario Rodriguez, Ignacio Gonzales Gradjeda, and Antonio Eloriaga.

Castillo told investigators that a woman with a German accent, a Mrs. Kreps, had given him his initial instructions in Dallas. According to Castillo, she was just one of many individuals who worked on him to place him in a deep hypnotic trance for the Kennedy job. Castillo said he had been a private in the Cuban militia, the Segunda Organizacion Defensiva in Santiago, Cuba, when he was initially chosen for training in espionage work. He was subsequently trained by the Defensiva under a Colonel Calma, at a camp located about fifteen miles from the Bay of

Pigs. Among the members of the training cadre, Castillo said, were a communications expert named Karnovsky, along with some other Cubans and a handful of Americans. One American he identified was James Smith, who attended to Castillo's needs both as a civilian in Cuba and later in the United States.

Three years later, on October 2, 1966, Castillo was arrested in New Mexico and charged with driving without a proper auto registration. His arrest was made under the Eloriaga identity. Castillo was brought before New Mexico Justice of the Peace Elmer Bassett and sentenced to four days in jail. "The reason I gave him a jail sentence," Bassett said, "was I figured when a fellow has a hard time remembering what his name is, there's something wrong with him." After serving his sentence Castillo was turned over to U.S. immigration authorities because he had no proof of U.S. citizenship.

Bassett reported that "Castillo said he was from Madison, Wisconsin, but was born in the Philippines. He couldn't show that he *was* from the Philippines or that he *wasn't*."

Bassett also revealed that someone had called him a few hours after Castillo had appeared before him and asked that the man be released." I don't know who it was," Bassett said, "I just told them I couldn't do that."

According to the NBI, Castillo had Antonio Eloriaga's Philippine passport on his person when he was arrested in Manila. Based on information provided by the intelligence service of the Philippine armed forces, the NBI had been searching for him since February. They had evidence that Castillo, in the guise of Eloriaga, had made contact with a guerrilla group which was constantly plotting to assassinate Marcos and overthrow the Philippine government.

The NBI set to work grilling their captured suspect. They knew something of his criminal past. They knew, for example, he had been arrested in 1962 for carrying a concealed weapon; they also knew that two years later he had been sentenced to a state reformatory in Bordentown, New Jersey, for larceny. But nothing prepared them for the shocking story implicating him in the events in Dallas.

They asked Castillo to submit to a lie detector test and were surprised when he said he preferred truth serum. Suspicious of both his strange story and his behavior, NBI officials called in a psychiatrist to examine him. But even after the psychiatrist judged Castillo normal, the NBI investigators still refused to take Castillo's bizarre and contradictory story at face value.

Later, reporters connected with the *Manila Times* were equally dumbfounded by Castillo's strange behavior.

One reporter described him as a "now talkative, now reticent cloak-and-dagger man." He clammed up when he was asked whether he was in the Philippines to help implement an assassination plot against President Marcos. In his truth serum statement, he claimed he had worked with a "cell of Reds" to end someone's life. But during his interview with the press he said, "neither do I admit or deny it." When quizzed about Lee Harvey Oswald, he drew a blank.

As a member of the Warren Commission, Gerald Ford was queried by the Philippine authorities about Castillo's revelations concerning the JFK assassination. Ford said he would not comment on the Castillo story until he had more information. A spokesman for the Dallas Police Department said they had no record on Castillo.

Nevertheless, the U.S. embassy did agree to a closed door meeting between embassy officials and NBI Director Serafin Fausto on the subject of Castillo. After the meeting Fausto refused to comment further on the story, but he did tell reporters that, "although publication of the story had prejudiced investigation of the case, one good thing has come out of it; needed information is coming in from the United States to shed light on the case."

Fausto also made it clear that leads obtained from the U.S. embassy justified continuing the investigation of Castillo's link to the assassination of President Kennedy.

After making an official request for assistance from the FBI, the NBI clamped a news blackout on the story, and nothing further was published in the press. Private investigations later revealed that Castillo was spirited out of the Philippines, but not before a series of hypnotic sessions had taken place, at the request of the FBI.

The FBI wanted to have Castillo, while under hypnosis, place the time of the Kennedy assassination. They wanted to know when Castillo had come to Dallas, what time he arrived at the building, and from what location he was supposed to shoot. They wanted to know the time he left the building, the names of any people involved, and any information which might indicate how the plot was hatched, and by whom.

It came as a surprise to the NBI that the FBI also wanted Castillo questioned about the Boyeros airport, eight miles south of Havana, Cuba. The FBI requested the tightest possible security be kept on any testimony obtained from the hypnotic sessions.

In the last of three sessions requested by the FBI, Castillo was induced into a deep hypnotic trance by the ordinary talking method in an NBI interrogation room in Manila. While in that trance state he was questioned for more than three and one half hours. The hypnotist's report stated, "Initially, the subject indicated an admixture of desired susceptibility to hypnosynthesis but deep seated resistance due to the presence of a posthypnotic block. This block appeared to have been connected with the presence -- nightmarish -- of a Mrs. Kreps. The total removal of this block may pave the way for maximum results."

The hypnotist reported that during the pretrance warm up, he examined Castillo and found little scars on his forehead, chest, stomach, and fingers. Castillo told him the scars were the result of a car accident in the U.S., which happened when some men were chasing him while he was trying to deliver "an envelope of some kind." Castillo mentioned that after the crash he'd awakened in bandages in a hospital bed.

Names which were presented to Castillo in the pretrance interview were repeated while he was under hypnosis. He recognized the names of several individuals who were then gaining notoriety in connection with New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's JFK assassination investigation. But Castillo revealed that he knew some of the people by other names.

Throughout his recollections, Castillo suffered stomach cramps, said he felt a "weight on his legs," and cried out in pain a number of times. Through the manipulations of the hypnotist, he was able to recall that on many different occasions he had been taken to a factory. Mrs. Kreps and Castillo had always driven to the factory in her car, and they had always entered through the front door. Castillo could not remember the exact location of the factory, other than it was located "way outside Chicago." He spoke of a romantic relationship with Mrs. Kreps. But while one moment he spoke of her as "nice" and "kind," in the next breath he said he hated her.

According to the hypnotist's report, one thing was certain. Whoever Mrs. Kreps was, she "controlled the subject's activities and consciousness like a nightmare."

Eliciting information from Castillo was no easy task. Over the course of many interrogations, the hypnotist discovered that Castillo could be taken to four different hypnotic levels. It appeared to the hypnotist that each level came closer to the truth. He labeled these states "Zombie I, Zombie II, Zombie III, and Zombie IV." Depending upon which "Zombie" state Castillo was in, his mannerism and identity changed.

In the first state, "Zombie I," Castillo believed he was Eloriaga, and he told tales of anti-American espionage. During "Zombie II," he took on the identity of a tough talking CIA agent in trouble. While in "Zombie III," again Castillo emerged as an agent whose cover had been blown. At this level, however, he experienced a compulsion to kill himself. On the day he was to have assassinated Marcos, Castillo responded to a program he had revealed in an earlier interrogation. He attempted suicide in his jail cell by swallowing a bottle of epoxy.

The "Zombie IV" state revealed that "Castillo's" true name was Manuel Angel Ramirez, a twenty-nine-year-old native of the Bronx, New York. In this state he had no recollection of his youth, except for a hazy memory of his father, who "Ramirez" believed was a highly placed official at "the Agency."

As "Ramiriz," Castillo said that most of his life had been spent in training with or on missions for the Special Operations Group of the CIA. He remembered one training camp where he learned clandestine and martial arts. Throughout the interrogations the theme of "programmed agent" emerged. Castillo's testimony under hypnosis was that of an individual whose identity had been completely erased and reconstructed several times over.

On May 30, 1967, Castillo spontaneously went from his normal state into a "Zombie" state. In answering Castillo's question about transfer from the hospital to jail, the hypnotist unknowingly said, "That depends entirely on the big chief, you know." Upon hearing these words, a blank look came over Castillo's eyes and all efforts to wake him were at first unsuccessful. The hypnotist then called out a series of phrases from Castillo's notebooks and found the phrases "I will win if I don't lose my nerve" and "I must believe myself or no one else will believe me" awakened him.

The next day was Castillo's birthday. The NBI planned to give him a birthday party as an excuse to get him drunk to see if his behavior changed. Castillo, it seemed, had a huge capacity for liquor. Drunk to the eyeballs, he saluted one of the NBI agents and called him "Colonel." "Where do we fly tonight, Colonel?" he asked.

The agent quickly told him he was to fly the same mission as the last one. Castillo said, "Haiphong," then drunkenly fell into bed. He dug his fingers into his throat and vomited. he cried out for a doctor and between vomit spasms, rattled out his mission to the hypnotist.

He said his real name was Manuel Angel Ramirez, his rank was sergeant, and he was assigned to the Strategic Air Tactical Command in South Vietnam. he said his immediate superior was Colonel Summers.

He was in Saigon in January, 1966, he related, and had flown B-26 missions over Haiphong and Hanoi. He came to Manila, he said, to kill President Marcos in June, when the president would make a public speech. If his assassination attempt failed someone else would get Marcos before the end of 1968, Castillo added.

"I am dying," he groaned, and pleaded again for a doctor. He thought he was dying from a heart attack. "If I die today," he warned, "my secrets die with me."

When the NBI doctor arrived, he examined Castillo and pronounced him fit, except for his obviously drunken state. He tried to give him a shot to calm him down, but Castillo protested violently. The doctor then asked him to take a pill, which he did without resistance.

Two days later, Castillo was given another medical examination by Dr. Alexis Guerrero of the NBI. A series of tests were given to measure his breathing rate, pulse rate, perspiration and other functions. All of these tests were performed in "Zombie" states I, II, and III. The doctor noted that in each state there was a vast difference in pulse rate, and assumed, because of what Castillo said, and the reactions of his heart and respiration, that he was experiencing some emotional agitation.

Sodium amytal was administered while he was in the "Zombie III" state. According to the Hypnotist, Castillo did not even notice he'd been given the injection. Soon he began to talk as he'd done previously while in the drunken state. "I'm Sergeant Manuel Ramirez of the Tactical Air Command," he said. When asked to reveal his base he said, "You'll never know," adding, "I am a pilot. I've flown a B-26."

"The NBI are suckers," he said a little while later. "They thought they arrested me. But there I was, waiting for them to get me. I know of a great plot. I am supposed to expose it, after I'm arrested. I know I will eventually return to my country [the U.S.]. I'll go through the motions of a trial, conviction, and jail as a criminal. After a couple of months I will be released for my next assignment."

Awakened from the "Zombie" state, Castillo was told all about these various states and his strange behavior while in them. the hypnotist explained how he thought Castillo had been programmed. Castillo seemed baffled by this news. He said he was not told by anybody about being programmed. He said that "Papa" didn't even know about the "Zombie" state. He grew agitated, saying that if he were in the "Zombie" state he might even kill "Papa," and then "the Agency would go to blazes. Hell will break loose on the guy responsible for the Zombie."

Asked in trance to identify "Papa," Castillo said that he was not just a "guy," but was his *real* father. He described him as having a mustache and smoking a pipe. He said he was the only one who could send the Agency to "blazes" if he, Castillo, was killed on this mission. He said "Papa's" initials were A.D. and that his first name was "Allen." He said he would personally tell "Papa" about the "Zombie" when he got back.

After more than forty hypnotic sessions lasting from one to five hours each, covering the period from April 3 to June 25, 1967, the hypnotist reviewed the data and summarized it for the Chief of the Defense Intelligence Division of the National Bureau of Investigation. The summary report not only involved Castillo in the assassination of John F. Kennedy; it disclosed Castillo was a hypno-programmed "Zombie" who would kill on cue.

The summary report stated: "The Zombie phenomenon referred to here is a somnambulistic behavior displayed by the subject in a conditioned response to a series of words, phrases, and statements, apparently unknown to the subject during his normal waking state. While under the influence of such a Zombie state, the subject closed his eyes, rose bodily, walked, triggered a pistol, stared blankly, and fell to the floor with no apparent sense of physical pain. As far as could be determined experimentally, the Zombie behavior had for its objective the assassination of President Ferdinand Marcos of the Republic of the Philippines."

The report also added: "Neither the presence nor the discovery of the Zombie states in our subject should be regarded as noble or unique. If anything, the only remarkable character of the Zombie state in our subject is its deeply ingrained and systematic presentation, indicating a certain disturbing degree of conditioning."

In a lengthy summary, the NBI hypnotist and deprogrammer of Castillo recounted the details of exactly how he had uncovered the key that unlocked the programmed assassin's mind.

The letters "XBGUMIDUTYBX" were found scribbled on the white surface of a cigarette package which was in Castillo's possession at the time of his arrest. The paper had been folded carefully and tucked into the back of his watch. Castillo had told investigators that this piece of paper was given him by a man named Luis Mauricio. Castillo said Mauricio also gave him money. Mauricio was known to the NBI as a member of the Huk guerrillas.

Placing Castillo in a trance, the hypnotist called the series of letters on the cigarette package. Castillo did not react. He then tried calling out the letters, pausing at different places. He found that when he paused between the G and the U, saying "XBG,UMIDUTYBX," Castillo would reply with "I am myself to kill."

The hypnotist then tried the letters one at a time, and then in different combinations. While many of the combinations produced no response, the following were significant:

When the hypnotist said "X," Castillo quickly answered "Mauricio."

When the hypnotist said "BGU," Castillo slowly said, "I am myself."

When the hypnotist said, "MI," Castillo answered, "to kill."

In another session the hypnotist experimented with saying "Luis Castillo" as a command. The hypnotist reported, "A pathetic sight takes place after this. The subject turns his pistol to his own temple and squeezes the trigger, as many times as his name is repeated."

Whenever the hypnotist would say, "June 12, 1967, 12 o'clock," " June 22, 1967," "July 4,1967," or "January 1, 1968," Castillo would invariably aim the pistol and squeeze the trigger.

The hypnotist found that after the preparatory command to put him in a trance, if Castillo's eyes were open and he saw a photograph of President Marcos, he would, with no verbal instructions, aim and repeatedly squeeze the trigger of his pistol, following the photo wherever it was taken around the room. If the hypnotist said the word "kill" while Castillo was following this program, he would drop heavily to the floor and remain motionless.

The hypnotist's report also includes Castillo's amazing story about his participation in yet another organized assassination attempt. Under hypnosis, Castillo said the assassination happened "before noon." He remembered being with a man called "Lake," whom he described as a tall man, weighing about 190 lbs., with a hawklike nose, black hair, and Oriental eyes set in a long face. Lake spoke with a foreign accent which Castillo could not identify. He said he remembered meeting Lake along with four or five other men in an airport. They then drove together in a black car to a building. Castillo said he thought the group included both Americans and foreigners, and he thought one man was Spanish.

When the group arrived at the building, Castillo said they climbed to a second floor room which he described after some uncertainty as brown. The room contained packing crates, a short brown table, a typewriter, and two "lift-up glass windows overlooking a street. "Lake opened a black suitcase, which Castillo described as a bowling bag with a zipper and lock. It contained a scope and pieces of a rifle, which Lake assembled. He set the scope at 500 yards and gave the rifle to Castillo. Castillo did not seem certain about the make or caliber of the rifle, but finally said he thought it was Russian.

Lake told him to shoot a man in the back seat of an open car in the middle of the caravan. He said the man would be seated with a lady or another man. A mirror was to be flashed twice from a building across the street, so Castillo would know when he was to shoot. When he saw the two flashes he was supposed to shoot at the next car coming into view. When he was questioned about the identity of the man riding in the open car, Castillo said he did not know who the victim was.

After Lake had assembled the rifle and had given Castillo his instructions, he went downstairs. Later Lake rushed into the room. "They got him already," Lake told him. "Let's get out of here." He then grabbed the rifle away from Castillo, Dismantled it, and stuffed it and the scope into the black bag.

Castillo and Lake rushed downstairs, got into a car with two other men, and drove away from the building. They picked up a bald-headed, skinny man after they turned the first corner. Three or four blocks later the car stopped and picked up another man.

Castillo said he was riding in the back seat between Lake and the man who had joined them at the second stop. As the car drove away from the scene of the crime, the unidentified man gave Castillo an injection while he wasn't looking. He went immediately to sleep and woke up in a Chicago hotel room with Mrs. Kreps.

He and Mrs. Kreps got into a blue car and drove to Milwaukee, Castillo said. While driving there, they heard the news of the assassination of John F. Kennedy on the car radio.

Within a few days after the hypnotist submitted his final report, Castillo was out of the NBI jail and had left the Philippines for parts unknown. It was later uncovered that Castillo was returned to the United States in 1967 and questioned by the FBI, whose spokesman said, "We talked to Castillo and he told us that he'd fabricated his story about the Kennedy assassination. Said he'd made it up in Manila.

The official record says Castillo was sentenced to six years in the Missouri Penitentiary for robbery in June, 1971. On August 1, 1974, he was released after serving thirty-seven months. Castillo's last known contact was with his mother shortly after his release from prison. Since then he has disappeared, from both his family and those researchers who would like to question him further.

If Castillo had indeed "made it up in Manila," as the FBI spokesman claimed, then he must have had a phenomenal memory, an incredibly high tolerance to sodium amytal and alcohol, and virtuoso acting ability. Neither the psychological profile nor the life history of Luis Angel Castillo supports the conclusion that he possessed any of these talents.

Whenever I've projected the image on the right on a screen and asked the audience to identify the person in it, they've shouted back with confidence: "Sirhan Sirhan." I then showed them the image on the left. That is the image of Sirhan Sirhan takend shortly after his arrest. The image on the right is the image of Luis Angel Castillo. Their appearance is similar. They were about the same size, same color. They dressed similarly and some of their peculiar habits were similar.They each kept a diary which strongly suggested that they were both programmed in a similar way

21

THE LONE NUTS

MKULTRA was fully operational when Luis Castillo was programmed. It was active that same decade when events blamed on three "lone assassins" changed the course of history.

In a well executed, mass indoctrination campaign employing all the honor, prestige, and power of the U.S. government, Americans were told over and over again the lives of John Kennedy, Martin Luther King, and Robert Kennedy were all taken by lone assassins -- men operating without political motivation. These three assassins -- Lee Harvey Oswald, James Earl Ray, and Sirhan Sirhan-- conveniently left diaries, underlinings in various books, and other self-incriminating clues to establish their guilt.

The evidence gathered on the assassinations remains fragmented and incomplete. Any event of such magnitude as political assassination is bound to invite a large number of interpretations. While in 1978 when the first edition of this book appeared there was not any conclusive proof of a conspiracy, more than eighty percent of the American public then believed there was a conspiracy. Today, after Oliver Stone's masterful film *JFK*, more than ninety percent of the public believe that John F. Kennedy was murdered by conspirators working with the U.S. intelligence agencies. While Congress did cite Richard Helms for contempt, and declared that the FBI and the CIA did not cooperate with the Warren Commission, the murders of Kennedy, Kennedy and King remain unsolved mysteries in the public's opinion. A string of circumstantial evidence, and a knowledge of the fundamentals of mind control invites further speculation.

In each case the method was the same -- death by the bullet. In each case the circumstances were the same -- murder in a public place in view of many witnesses. All three assassins were men whose personal histories can be interpreted to indicate they were mentally unstable. Evidence suggests all three had been hypnotized at one time or another.

But the similarity in their psychological profiles, and the "coincidence" of each having left a trail of evidence, did not seem suspicious to the government investigators of the assassination. That three assassins, from three different parts of the country, with three different ethnic backgrounds (and three different victims in three different cities), could all have had the same *modus operandi* did not seem improbable to the investigators. Those "coincidences" did not even warrant their notice.

A good detective would immediately have suspected the M.O. of each assassin was a cover laid down by a professional hit team.

The cryptocracy which grew up after World War II was composed of a cadre of professionals, trained during the war. Professional intelligence agents in both the KGB and the CIA are trained to stick to the cover story that works, and use it as long as it does work. Even if the cover story is blown, the agent is supposed to stick to it and, if necessary, die with sealed lips. The "lone nut" theory -- that the assassins of King and the Kennedys acted alone -- and the evidence planted to support that theory, stand out as a typical professional intelligence "cover."

The *modus operandi* or method of a murder is the first of two major clues detectives use to solve crimes. The second clue is the motive.

Those who support the "lone nut" theory point to the fact that no clear political motive could be attributed to any of the three assassins. Yet even to a casual student of history each of the three murders was of obvious political benefit to the extreme right: John and Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King were all independent thinkers who could not be bought off. They worked for expanded civil rights in a manner the right wing interpreted as being Communist, e.g., it involved *government legislation* of civil rights.

The Church Committee investigation clearly showed that J. Edgar Hoover had a personal vendetta against Dr. King, and it has been reported he lost no love for the Kennedy brothers. The Kennedys were not only on the wrong side of Hoover's FBI, they were on the wrong side of the CIA as well. JFK fired several top intelligence officers (he asked for Allen Dulles' resignation) and at the time of his death he was privately talking about reorganizing the entire U.S. intelligence service.

Robert Kennedy, as attorney general, was waging a tireless campaign against organized crime. His campaign cut across the alliance the CIA had formed with gangsters who had lost their gambling and drug concessions in Cuba. Robert Kennedy was a close friend of Dr. King, and one rumor persists that the assassins had issued a dire warning to RFK not to run for president, and that King was sacrificed to show that the group meant business. A similar threat was issued against Ted Kennedy when he was entertaining presidential thoughts. Robert Kennedy's knowledge of the CIA-Mafia link and the CIA assassination teams might have been a motive behind the motive, assuming fanatical right-wing operators were "contracted" for the "Executive actions" against the three.

The obvious results of all three assassinations would indicate the extreme right wing, known to be widespread in the cryptocracy, had the most to gain. By their deaths, the civil rights movement was severely crippled, the conflict in Vietnam escalated, and the corrupt leaders of the cryptocracy stayed in power.

In the late '70's a rumor was put forth by CBS News and others that Castro and/or the KGB were behind the assassinations. That theory smells like more disinformation from the cryptocracy. The motives of the Communists seem much less clear than the motives of misguided patriotic, white, right-thinking Americans. The cryptocracy was in a better position to benefit from the deaths of the three charismatic and humanitarian leaders than were the Communists.

Following the assassination of President Kennedy, his successor appointed a now notorious commission to investigate the crime. Headed by Chief Justice Earl Warren, it included Sen. John Sherman Cooper (R., Kentucky), Sen. Richard B. Russell (D., Georgia), Rep. Hale Boggs (D., Louisiana), Rep. Gerald R. Ford (R., Michigan), former CIA director Allen Dulles, and John J. McCloy.

After nine months of deliberation, the Warren Commission concluded Lee Harvey Oswald acting alone, had shot President Kennedy. Although Oswald was in turn assassinated by Dallas thug Jack Ruby, and although Ruby's connections with organized crime and the anti-Castro movement were well known, the Commission found no evidence of a conspiracy.

The twenty-six volumes of evidence which made up the commission's final report left so many questions unasked that by December, 1976, a Harris Survey concluded 80 percent of the U.S. population did not believe the commission's conclusion.

From the beginning, the investigation was slanted towards proving Oswald was guilty and had acted alone. The commission had proceeded with haste to put to rest forever the question: Was there a conspiracy behind the Kennedy assassination? In its haste it had overlooked key facts and ignored witnesses who did not support the foregone conclusion that there was no conspiracy -- that Oswald was just a "lone nut."

Throughout the Warren Commission hearings there was conflicting testimony about Oswald. There was testimony that Oswald did not drive a car. There was other testimony that he did drive, and very well. Some of his acquaintances said he was a poor shot, too poor to have accomplished the feat of marksmanship in Dealy Plaza. others said he was a fine marksman. Some said, by turns, he was a Communist, a pro-Castro and an anti-Castro sympathizer. His own mother said he performed undercover work for the U.S. government. Out of this mass of conflicting evidence, the Warren Commission simply took what was needed to support its foregone conclusion, and relegated the rest to published transcripts or to top-secret files in the National Archives.

There were so many conflicting descriptions of Oswald that many independent assassination investigators subsequently concluded there must have been at least two Oswalds -- the "real" one and an intelligence double. If, however, one considers that Oswald might have been controlled in the same way as Candy Jones or Luis Castillo -- split into multiple personalities -- another explanation for some of the conflicting descriptions of the assassin becomes credible. He might have been an excellent shot in one zombie state, and in another he might have been blocked so he could not even aim a rifle. In one state he might have had the ability to drive a car, while in another state he might have had a posthypnotic block so that he could not drive.

Oswald said he didn't kill anybody. His statement was recorded in the basement of the Dallas Police Station on the day after the assassination. Captured on film by a local CBS film crew, Oswald told reporters, "I positively know nothing about this situation here. I would like to have legal representation." In answer to an inaudible question from one reporter Oswald said, "Well, I was questioned by a judge. However, I protested at that time that I was not allowed legal representation during that very short and sweet hearing. I really don't know what this situation is about. Nobody has told me anything, except that I'm accused of murdering a policemen. I know nothing more than that. I do request someone to come forward to give me legal assistance."

"Did you kill the President?" another reporter asked.

"No," Oswald answered, "I have not been charged with that. In fact, nobody has said that to me yet. The first thing I heard about it was when the newspaper reporters in the hall asked me that question."

Ten years after Oswald made that statement, George O'Toole applied a newly developed "truth detector," the Psychological Stress Evaluator (PSE), to the soundtrack of the film which recorded Oswald's protestation of innocence. The PSE, unlike the polygraph, does not have to be connected to the body to measure stress. It measures subaudible micro-tremors in the human voice which occur whenever an individual experiences even mild anxiety or stress. The micro-tremors form a distinct pattern on the PSE chart and can then be compared to stress patterns in other parts of the statement. A deliberate lie, especially one which involves personal jeopardy, stands out clearly from the other stress patterns that might represent situational stress or vague anxiety. Oswald was in a situation of high stress that day. He had been grilled for hours by the police. He had been manhandled and accused of killing not only a police officer but also the President of the United States.

Yet the PSE analysis of Oswald's statement showed he exhibited far more stress when he was talking about not being represented by a lawyer than he did when he denied murdering the President or the police officer. George O'Toole concluded, as have many other investigators, that Oswald was innocent. He could not have been consciously involved in the assassination as a fall guy -- a patsy -- or he would have shown stress in his answers to these key questions on PSE.

Posing as a Look reporter, former CIA employee O'Toole conducted and recorded interviews with local police officials and FBI men who were the original investigators in the Kennedy case. Too many of their PSE patterns showed levels of stress which could only be interpreted as having been the result of willful deception. In his book *The Assassination Tapes*, O'Toole offers the details of his PSE analysis, and concludes, not surprisingly, there was a conspiracy behind the assassination of John F. Kennedy.

But what if he had been hypo-programmed so he could remember nothing of his involvement in the assassination plot? Then every lie-detector test in the world would prove him innocent, since consciously he would believe he was innocent. Classical conditioning or deep hypnosis is the only reliable way to defeat a lie detector, whether it be a polygraph or the more advanced PSE.

Among the evidence concealed from the commission was a CIA document obtained under the Freedom of Information Act in 1976, which quoted an unidentified CIA officer reporting to his superiors on Oswald. According to that memo, which had been written only three days after JFK's assassination, Agency officials had discussed interviewing Oswald for intelligence purposes in the early 1960's. The same document revealed that Allen Dulles had secretly coached the CIA on how the Agency should deny having any connection with Oswald. According to one of the memos, Dulles strongly recommended CIA Director Helms deny under oath that the CIA had any material in its files which suggested an Agency relationship with Oswald. Later disclosures revealed Oswald did indeed have a CIA "201 file."

In sworn testimony before the Warren Commission in 1964, Richard Helms applied the artful deception which came from a lifetime of CIA training; he testified the Agency had "never even contemplated" making any contact with Oswald prior to the assassination. That the CIA did make contact with him was never disclosed to the commission.

Despite the attempts of Allen Dulles to steer commission investigators away from other information which linked Oswald to both the FBI and CIA, the rumor that Oswald had been sent to Russia as an intelligence agent persisted.

In an attempt to scotch that rumor, Dulles told the commission it would be impossible for anyone to prove or disprove that Oswald had or had not been an agent or informer. He said, astonishingly, that Oswald could have been a CIA agent without anyone knowing about it!

During one meeting of the commission, Senator Russell asked Dulles, "If Oswald never had assassinated the president, and had been in the employ of the FBI, and somebody had gone to the FBI, would they have denied he was an agent?"

"Oh yes," the ex-CIA chief replied. "They would be the first to deny it."

"Your agents would have done the same thing?" Senator Russell asked incredulously.

"Exactly," Dulles answered.

At another juncture, John J. McCloy said he had received several inquiries about the Oswald-agent rumor. He asked Dulles point blank, "What is there to this story?"

Dulles went in circles: "This is a terribly hard thing to disprove, you know. How do you disprove a fellow was not your agent?"

"You could disprove it, couldn't you?" Congressman Boggs asked.

Dulles replied, simply, "No."

"So I will ask you," Boggs continued, "did you have agents about whom you had no record whatsoever?"

"The record might not be on paper," Dulles said. "But on paper would have been hieroglyphics that only two people knew what they meant, and anybody outside the agency would not know and you could say this meant the agent and somebody else could say it meant another agent."

The discussion then turned to U-2 pilot Francis Gary Powers. Dulles explained Powers was a different kind of agent. He had signed a contract with the CIA.

Alluding to the Oswald-CIA relationship, Boggs asked Dulles, "Let's say Powers did not have a signed contract but was recruited by someone in the CIA. The man who recruited him would know, wouldn't he?"

"Yes," Dulles replied, "but he wouldn't tell."

"Would he tell it under oath?" Chief Justice Warren wondered.

"I wouldn't think he would tell it under oath, no," Dulles replied matter of factly.

"Why?" asked Warren.

"He ought not to tell it under oath," Dulles said, offering Warren a lesson which years of legal training made him incapable of learning: the cryptocracy operates completely outside of the law and, because of the power of the "national security" rationale, it operates completely above the law.

Dulles admitted later, while responding to a question from McCloy, that a CIA operative might not tell the truth even to his own superior.

"What you do," Boggs indignantly said, "is you make our problem, if this be true, utterly impossible because you say this rumor [that Oswald was a CIA agent] can't be dissipated under any circumstances."

"I don't think it can, Dulles admitted, "unless you believe Mr. Hoover, and so forth and so on, which probably most of the people will."

Hoover, of course, had written a carefully worded response to a Commission inquiry about Oswald's FBI connections. He denied all association between Oswald and the FBI.

Also ignored by the Warren Commission was information about the cryptocracy's attempts to assassinate Fidel Castro. Dulles presumably knew about the plots which took place during his tenure with the Agency, but he remained mute. Richard Helms was the only CIA official on active duty to have direct contact with the Warren Commission, and although he provided them with information on a number of things, he volunteered nothing about the unsuccessful plots against Castro -- plots which would have been within the commission's "need to know" since they showed that the cryptocracy had practical experience in assassination planning.

Testifying before the Senate select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, Helms revealed how the cryptocracy evaded and withheld information from the Warren Commission. His testimony illustrated the cryptocracy's contempt for the helpless commission, the American people, and above all the truth.

During the Church Committee's investigation of the CIA's involvement in assassinations, Senator Church asked helms: "Since you had knowledge of the CIA involvement in these assassination plots against Castro, and knew it at the time... I would have thought... that ought to have been related to the Commission, because it does bear on the motives, whatever else."

Helms: "...Mr. Allen Dulles was a member of the Warren Commission. And the first assassination plot happened during his time as director. What he said to the Warren Commission about this... I don't know. But at least he was sitting right there in [the commission's] deliberations and knew about this, and I am sure the same thought that occurred to you must have occurred to him."

Senator Morgan: "You were charged with furnishing the Warren Commission information from the CIA. Information that you thought was relevant?"

Helms: "No sir, I was instructed to reply to inquiries from the Warren Commission for information from the Agency. I was not asked to initiate any particular thing."

Morgan: "...In other words if you weren't asked for it, you didn't give it?"

Helms: "That's right sir."

Nevertheless. despite the denials of Dulles and Hoover, the rumor persisted that Oswald had defected to Russia on a clandestine mission for the CIA. Some believed he had been uncovered by the KGB and subsequently programmed like the Manchurian Candidate to return to the U.S. and act as an unconscious "sleeper agent," a programmed assassin.

Following up on this rumor, J. Lee Rankin, General Counsel to the Warren Commission, wrote a letter to CIA Director Helms requesting all information the CIA had on Russian "brainwashing" capabilities.

In response, Helms claimed there were " major methods of altering or controlling behavior," and the Soviets were interested in both. He said the first was psychological and the second was pharmacological. "The two may be used as individual methods or for mutual reinforcement," Helms wrote. "For long term control of large numbers of people the former method is more promising than the latter.

"In dealing with individuals, the U.S. experience suggests the pharmacological approach (assisted by psychological techniques) would be the only effective method."

Helms told the Warren Commission that while the Soviet drug research was extensive, it ***had consistently lagged about five years behind Western research.*** That was an interesting admission, for in the MKULTRA files which were declassified over a decade later the CIA was using the Soviet success in mind control to motivate our own scientific program.

Helms' memorandum told the commission the Soviets had adopted a multidisciplinary approach to mind control, integrating biological, social, and what he called "physical-mathematical research" in attempts to control human behavior in a "manner consonant with national plans."

But while attempting to tell the Warren Commission what the Soviets were up to, Helms was, at the same time. revealing the cryptocracy's own intentions. His conclusions stated "there is no evidence the Soviets have any techniques or agents capable of producing particular behavioral patterns which are not available in the West." Appended to the memorandum (Commission Document 1113, reproduced here as Appendix A) were several hundred pages of reports on Soviet mind-control techniques and an extensive bibliography on brainwashing, which for some reason remained classified even after the main body of the memorandum was declassified.

The question of whether Oswald had been hypno-programmed was raised in another context when New Orleans district Attorney Jim Garrison began his independent investigations of the Kennedy assassination.

Garrison told an anxious press he was going to crack the Kennedy case wide open: "The plain fact is that our federal intelligence agencies are implacably determined to do whatever is necessary to block any further inquiry into the facts of the assassination.

"The arrogant totalitarian efforts of these federal agencies to obstruct the discovery of the truth is a matter which I intend to bring to light when we have finished doing the job they should have done."

One of the central targets of Garrison's investigation was David William Ferrie, who was both a hypnotist and a CIA operative. Coincidentally, Ferrie had been in a New Orleans Civil Air Patrol group in the fifties with Lee Harvey Oswald. One witness said Ferrie had been the man who had instructed Oswald in marksmanship.

When New Orleans police raided Ferrie's apartment, they confiscated a number of weapons, various drugs, and three blank U.S. passports -- things that any good CIA operative would keep at his elbow. much later researchers realized the importance of some of the evidence obtained in the raid -- several voluminous abstracts on posthypnotic suggestion and a library on hypnotism.

A salesman for the Equitable Life Insurance Company, Perry Raymond Russo, told a New Orleans grand jury that Ferrie's apartment had been the scene of many "parties" where hypnosis had been used as "entertainment." One evening, Russo said, Ferrie hypnotized a young man to whom he apparently had a strong homosexual attraction. Another evening, Russo said, he himself hypnotized a young woman and made her immobile. He stuck pins in her hand and burned her arms just to demonstrate the extent of the control he had over her.

At Russo's request, his story was tested by Garrison's investigators. Under both sodium pentothal and hypnosis, Russo told the identical story he had told to the grand jury. He testified that he had been with Ferrie, a man named Leon Oswald, and a third man named Clem Bertrand in Ferrie's apartment during the summer of 1963. The three had discussed an assassination attempt in which diversionary tactics were to be used.

Russo quoted Ferrie as saying "there would have to be a minimum of three people involved. Two of the persons would shoot diversionary shots and the third... shoot the 'good' shot." Ferrie said one of the three would have to be the "scapegoat." He also said Ferrie discoursed on the "availability of exit," saying the sacrificed man would give the other two time to escape.

On February 23, 1967, a few days before Luis Castillo was arrested by the NBI in the Philippines, Garrison subpoenaed David Ferrie. That evening George Lardner of the *Washington Post* went to Ferrie's for an interview. Ferrie, in remarkably good spirits, told Lardner, "A President is no better than anyone else... If I were killed, I'd expect my death to be investigated just as thoroughly.

Lardner Left Ferrie at 4:00 a.m. Seven hours and forty minutes later Ferrie was found in bed with a sheet pulled over his head. He had been dead for several hours.

On the dining room table was a note which read in part: "To leave this life is for me a sweet prospect. I find nothing in it that is desirable and on the other hand, everything that is loathsome."

Fifteen empty medicine bottles littered the apartment. The medicine bottles had contained a prescription drug for a vascular disorder.

Garrison immediately jumped to the conclusion that Ferrie had committed suicide because of the subpoena. The autopsy, however, revealed Ferrie had not died from an overdose of drugs, but from a ruptured blood vessel at the base of his brain.

Dr. Ronald A. Walsh, Louisiana State University School of Medicine pathologist, stated in his autopsy report that David Ferrie Died of an aneurysm. Several forensic pathologists later concluded such an aneurysm could have been caused by a karate expert inflicting a blow to the back of the head in such a manner that no external damage would be discernible.

A number of Ferrie's friends began to fear for their lives. One, Jack Martin, came out of hiding long enough to suggest that Oswald had been programmed by Ferrie to go to Dallas and Kill the president. Immediately following the assassination, Martin had reported to the Assistant District Attorney Herman S. Kohlman that Ferrie and Oswald had been friends, and that Ferrie had instructed Oswald in the use of a telescope sight on a rifle. But in 1963 no one followed up on Martin's story.

Another of Ferrie's friends was a Reverend Raymond Broshears, who had roomed with Ferrie three years before Ferrie's death. Broshears stated in a television interview: "David admitted being involved with the assassins. There's no question about that."

The Warren Commission must have had *some* suspicions about Ferrie, for in Volume 24, Exhibit 2038, of the *Warren Commission Report*, NBC cameraman Gene Barnes is quoted as saying, "Bob Mulholland, NBC news, Chicago, talked in Dallas to one Fairy [sic]... Fairy said Oswald had been under hypnosis from a man doing a mind reading act at Ruby's 'Carousel.' Fairy was said to be a private detective and the owner of an airplane who took young boys on flights 'just for kicks'..."

Ferrie did own an airplane, and he did work for Guy Bannister, the New Orleans private eye and CIA contract agent.

Bob Mulholland later came forward to say he had been misquoted by the Warren Report. What he had actually overheard were FBI agents saying Ferrie might have been involved in the assassination with Oswald: he had merely relayed that information to his reporters in Dallas.

In any event, there was enough substance to the David Ferrie angle to cause both the FBI *and* the Secret Service to have interviewed him immediately following the assassination. Yet there were no reports, official or otherwise, as to the outcome of that interview.

Those not disposed to believe in conspiracies against the American people by its own government might well ask, "If there is a conspiracy by a cryptocracy, why wouldn't we, by now, have proof of it? Why wouldn't there have been at least one deathbed confession by one of the conspirators?"

Two such confessions to the JFK assassination conspiracy were made and ignored.

David W. Ferrie, 48, a figure in the New Orleans district attorney's investigation of a conspiracy to assassinate President Kennedy, was found dead in bed at his New Orleans apartment. District Attorney jim Garrison said he planned to arrest Ferrie in connection with the case. Ferrie was known to be adept at hypnosis and was an old acquaintace of Lee Harvey Oswald. Ferrie also used to fly covert missions for the CIA.

22

THE IGNORED CONFESSIONS

Only an understanding of the techniques and applications of mind control could begin to bring meaning to the fragmented ramblings of Jack Ruby.

On June 7, 1964, Jack Ruby was questioned in jail in Dallas, Texas, by Earl Warren and Gerald Ford. In that session Ruby continually pleaded for a lie-detector test or for sodium pentothal. He desperately wanted to prove his honesty so Warren and the commission would know he was telling the truth.

Said Ruby: "I would like to be able to get a lie-detector test or truth serum of what motivated me to do what I did at that particular time, and it seems as you get further into something, even though you know what you did, it operates against you somehow, *brainwashes* you, that you are weak in what you want to tell the truth about, and what you want to say which is the truth."

"As I started to trial," Ruby continued, "I don't know if you realize my reasoning, how I happened to be involved -- I was carried away tremendously emotionally, and all the time I tried to ask Mr. Belli [Melvin Belli, Ruby's first lawyer], I wanted to get up and say the truth regarding the steps that led me to do what I have got involved in, But since I have a spotty background in the nightclub business, I should have been the last person to ever want to do something that I had been involved in. In other words I was carried away tremendously. You want to ask me questions?"

Warren asked Ruby to just "tell us what you want, and then we will ask you some questions."

"Am I boring you?" Ruby replied.

He pleaded with Warren to be taken to Washington where he could be questioned in safety. Possibly either his control agent was in the room, or Ruby *felt* that he was, for again and again he hinted to Warren that he had something quite important to say but could not say it at that moment in Dallas.

"Gentlemen, unless you get me to Washington, you can't get a fair shake out of me. If you understand my way of talking, you have to bring me to Washington to get the tests. Do I sound dramatic? Off the beam?"

"No, you are speaking very, very rationally," Warren replied, " and I am really surprised you can remember as much as you have remembered up to the present time. You have given it to us in great detail."

Again Ruby pleaded with Warren: "Unless you can get me to Washington, and I am not a crackpot, I have all my senses -- I don't want to evade any crime I am guilty of." Then Ruby asked that the sheriff and the law enforcement officers leave the room, and after they were gone he said, "Gentlemen, if you want to hear any further testimony, you will have to get me to Washington soon, because it has something to do with you, Chief Warren. Do I sound sober enough to tell you this?"

"Yes, go right ahead," Warren said.

"I would like to talk to you in private," Ruby told him.

Warren seemed to miss the import of Ruby's statement. "You may do that when you finish your story. You may tell me that phase of it."

"I bet you haven't had a witness like me in your whole investigation, is that correct?" Ruby asked.

"There are many witnesses whose memory has not been as good as yours. I tell you that honestly," Warren replied.

"My reluctance to talk," Ruby went on, "you haven't had any witnesses in telling the story, in finding so many problems."

"You have a greater problem than any witness we have had," Warren retorted.

"I have a lot of reasons for having those problems," Ruby explained. Then after another exchange about going immediately to Washington, Ruby said, "Gentlemen, my life is in danger here. Not with my guilty plea of execution. Do I sound sober enough to you as I say this?"

Warren assured him he did sound sober. "From the moment I started my testimony, haven't I sounded as though, with the exception of becoming emotional, haven't I sounded as though I made sense, what I was speaking about?" Ruby asked.

"You have indeed," Warren again assured him. "I understand everything you have said. If I haven't it is my fault."

"Then I follow this up," Ruby blurted out. "I may not live tomorrow to give any further testimony. The reason why I add this to this, since you assure me that I have been speaking sense, then I might be speaking sense by following what I have said, and the only thing I want to get out to the public, and I can't say it here, is, with authenticity, with sincerity of the truth, of everything, and why my act was committed, but it can't be said here.

"It can be said, it's got to be said amongst people of the highest authority that would give me the benefit of the doubt. And following that, immediately give me the lie-detector test after I do make the statement.

"Chairman Warren, if you felt that your life was in danger at the moment, how would you feel? Wouldn't you be reluctant to go on speaking, even though you request me to do so?"

Warren again reassured Ruby that he was making perfect sense. "I wish that our beloved President, Lyndon Johnson, would have delved deeper into the situation, hear me, not to accept just circumstantial facts about my guilt or innocence, and would have questioned to find out the truth about me before he relinquished certain powers to these certain people... Consequently, ***a whole new form of government is going to take over our country*** [emphasis added], and I know I won't live to see you another time. Do I sound sort of screwy in telling you these things?"

"No," Warren said, "I think that is what you believe or you wouldn't tell it under oath."

"But it is a very serious situation," Ruby said, "I guess it is too late to stop it, isn't it? Now maybe something can be saved. It may not be too late, whatever happens, if our President, Lyndon Johnson, knew the truth from me... But if I am eliminated, there won't be any way of knowing.

"Right now, when I leave your presence now, I am the only one that can bring out the truth to our President, who believes in righteousness and justice. But he has been told I am certain, that I was part of a plot to assassinate the President. I know your hands are tied; you are helpless."

Earl Warren said, "Mr. Ruby, I think I can say this to you, that if he has been told any such thing, there is no indication of any kind that he believes it."

When it became apparent that Warren did not realize Ruby had intended to confess to being a part of the plot to kill President Kennedy, Ruby exploded. "I am sorry, Chief Justice Warren, I thought I would be very effective in telling you what

I have said here. But in all fairness to everyone, maybe all I want to do is beg that if they found out I was telling the truth, maybe they can succeed in what their motives are, but maybe my people won't be tortured and mutilated..."

Warren could find no meaning in Ruby's testimony. He merely assured him that neither he nor his family would be tortured or mutilated by anyone. "You may be sure of that," the Chief Justice added.

"No," Ruby answered. "The only way you can do it is if he knows the truth, that I am telling the truth, and why I was down in that basement Sunday morning, and maybe some sense of decency will come out and they can still fulfill their plan, as I stated before, without my people going through torture and mutilation."

Warren assured Ruby that the President would know everything he had said. "But I won't be around, Chief Justice," Ruby said. "I won't be around, Chief Justice," Ruby said. "I won't be around to tell the President."

Then one of the aides asked the first intelligent question of the day, "Who do you think is going to eliminate you, Jack?"

Ruby replied, "I have been used for a purpose, and there will be a certain tragic occurrence happening if you don't take my testimony and somehow vindicate me so my people don't suffer because of what I have done..."

Jack Ruby was subsequently given a polygraph test which proved to be inconclusive due to high levels of stress.

In 1965 syndicated columnist Dorothy Kilgallen interviewed Ruby in his Dallas cell. She was the only major journalist allowed to interview him. She told a few friends that from what Ruby had told her, she was able to obtain evidence which would 'blow the JFK case sky high." Within a few days, Dorothy Killgallen died of a massive overdose of barbiturates combined with alcohol. Her apartment was found in shambles. The transcripts of her interview with Ruby were missing. Her death was ruled a suicide.

In early 1967 Ruby complained he was being poisoned. He was diagnosed as having cancer, but a few weeks after complaining of being poisoned, he died not of the cancer, but of a "stroke" similar to the one that had killed David Ferrie.

Another deathbed confession supports what Jack Ruby was trying to tell the Warren Commission. That confession was made by Professor George de Mohrenschildt, a former intelligence agent who was also a friend or Lee Harvey Oswald.

De Mohrenschildt was born in 1911 in the Ukraine. following the revolution, in 1921 he and his parents fled Russia for Poland. He attended a Polish military academy for a year, and later, in 1938, received a doctorate in international commerce. He emigrated to the United States soon thereafter and, in 1949, became a citizen.

After becoming interested in the exploration and generation of oil, de Mohrenschildt received his master's degree in petroleum engineering. Sometime thereafter he became acquainted with right-wing oil magnate H.L. Hunt. Although the basis of their relationship is unknown, de Mohrenschildt, in an interview with Dutch journalist Willem Oltmans, stated, "I knew Hunt, now the late Mr. Hunt, intimately. For some twenty years I was invited to his parties."

FBI disclosure in 1976 suggested Lee Harvey Oswald was also acquainted with Hunt. And de Mohreschildt knew Oswald. Apparently he had introduced himself to Oswald after hearing about him through a Russian speaking group in the Dallas-Fort Worth area.

Marina Oswald told the Warren Commission: "Lee did not have any close friends, but at least he had -- here in America -- he had a great deal of respect for de Mohrenschildt... He considered him to be smart, to be full of joy of living, a very sympathetic person..."

It was the conclusion of the Warren Commission, after extensive investigation, that de Mohrenschildt had exhibited no signs of subversive or disloyal conduct. The Warren Report stated: "Neither the FBI, CIA, nor any witness contacted by the Commission has provided any information linking de Mohrenschildt to subversive or extremist organizations. Nor has there been any evidence linking them in any way with the assassination of President Kennedy."

It was subsequently revealed, however, that de Mohrenschildt had indeed been associated with various intelligence operations over the years. He was connected with French intelligence during World War II and was also linked to the CIA Bay of Pigs operation.

In late March, 1977, de Mohrenschildt's name was brought before the newly formed House Select Committee on Assassinations. Willem Oltmans told the committee that de Mohrenschildt held the key to the Kennedy assassination; that de Mohrenschildt had privately confessed to him that prior to the assassination he was aware of a conspiracy to murder the President in Dallas. According to Oltmans, de Mohrenschildt was about to have a book published which would reveal the details of his knowledge of the assassination.

After Oltmans' testimony, a spokesman for the House Committee on Assassinations said the committee would investigate his claims and would, if warranted, track down de Mohrenschildt for questioning. He was located a week later in Palm Beach, Florida, but he could not be called to testify. George de Mohrenschildt was found dead the victim of a gunshot would in the head. Local officials termed his death a suicide.

Following de Mohrenschildt's death, his Dallas attorney Pat Russell, supported Oltmans' claims to the Commission. He verified the fact that before his death, de Mohrenschildt had insisted that persons other than Lee Harvey Oswald had participated in the slaying of President Kennedy. The attorney revealed that he had in his possession tapes, a book length manuscript and a photograph which de Mohrenschildt had turned over to him earlier. He said the tapes consisted of ten reels of interviews with de Mohrenschildt about the Kennedy assassination, which, he claimed, were firsthand accounts of the late professor's recollections of Oswald.

Russell said although he did not know if the tapes or the book contained any new evidence, the photograph should be of particular interest to assassination investigators. He claimed that although the photo was similar to a well-known picture obtained by the Dallas police which showed Lee Harvey Oswald holding a rifle and wearing a pistol, what made the photo interesting was it was autographed on the back by Oswald and dated May 4, 1963, approximately six months prior to the assassination.

After de Mohrenschildt's death Willem Oltmans released a portion of his interview with the deceased. Oltmans described him as "Oswald's most intimate friend," and, without offering an explanation, said he had been intimate with Oswald during "the years when Oswald's brain was being programmed toward the murder or the century."

In the interview dated February 23, 1977, de Mohrenschildt told Oltmans "In June, 1976, I completed a manuscript. That's when disaster struck. You see, in that book I played the devil's advocate. Without directly implicating myself as an accomplice in the JFK assassination, I still mentioned a number of names, particularly of FBI and CIA officials who apparently may not be exposed under any circumstances. I was drugged surreptitiously. As a result I was committed to a mental hospital. I was there eight weeks and was given electric shocks and as a consequence I sometimes forget certain details temporarily..."

De Mohrenschildt went on to say that as a result of the drugs and shocks, he could take no more. "I tried to commit suicide five times... One of these days I will put a revolver to my head..."

According to Oltmans, de Mohrenschildt left Dallas in the middle of the night on March 3, 1977, telling him, "I don't want anybody to see me." Oltmans reported that at that time de Mohrenschildt was in a state of panic, constantly worried whether "they" would let him leave the country. "He always felt watched and followed," Oltmans said. "I really cannot see how somebody who does not have anything to his would develop such behavior."[104]

On the day he died, George de Mohrenschildt was being interviewed by author Edward Jay Epstein for his book, *The Legend of Lee Harvey Oswald*. They broke for lunch at one o'clock and Epstein walked de Mohrenschildt to his car. They were supposed to resume the interview at three p.m., and when de Mohrenschildt didn't return, Epstein called his room and heard a distraught maid tell him de Mohrenschildt had taken his own life. De Mohrenschildt's daughter, Alexandra, told Epstein she believes her father took his own life after having had a post-hypnotic suggestion triggered by a voice over the telephone in his room.

The last days of George de Mohrenschildt sound strikingly similar to those of the victims of mind control. Could it have been that when drugs and "electric shock" failed to erase his memory, the final solution was prescribed? Or was he programmed to self-destruct?

---

[104] Willem Oltmans, *Atlas*, ay 1977.

Ukraine born George De Mohrenschildt, oilman, friend of right-wing billionaire H.L. Hunt, took a phone call at his hotel room, put the phone down and fatally shot himself. De Mohrenschildt told a reporter that he had been drugged, committed to a mental hospital and given electric shocks by CIA and FBI officials he knew who were involved in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. His daughter believes that he took his life acting upon a post-hypnotic suggestion implanated by the cryptocracy.

23

ANOTHER HYPNO-PATSY?

On April 4, 1968, Nobel laureate Dr. Martin Luther King was murdered on a second floor balcony of the Lorraine Motel in Memphis Tennessee. Half of the six thousand man FBI force was assigned to the task of bringing the killer to justice.

The FBI should have had an easy job. There was an abundance of evidence left behind on the second floor of a rooming house a block from the Lorraine Motel. There were fingerprints on the window ledge of a bathroom next to a room which had been rented to an "Eric S. Galt." On the sidewalk in front of the house was a weapon, a high powered assault rifle with telescopic sight. Neighbors said they had seen a white Mustang roar away moments after the shooting.

Nevertheless, the killer got away.

A ham radio operator broadcasting from a fixed station posed as a CB operator in a Mobile unit. He broadcast a convincing account of a high speed chase between a white mustang and a blue Pontiac. He reported that the two cars were shooting at each other. While police concentrated their search in the area described by the ham operator, the white Mustang they were seeking sped away from Memphis in the other direction. The ham operator's actions were explained away by authorities as a hoax. Within a few days local police and federal authorities forgot the incident. While the use of a high powered ham radio on the eleven meter CB band and the broadcasting of false emergency information are two clear violations of the Federal Communications Code, the identity and fate of the Ham "prankster" are not known.

The FBI soon discovered the fingerprints left at the scene of the crime belonged to the man who had rented the room, Eric S. Galt. Through a computer search they later found Galt's real name was James Earl Ray.

The day after Robert F. Kennedy was assassinated in Los Angeles, James Earl Ray was captured in London. He was apprehended by British customs inspectors while attempting to leave the country on a passport issued to a Canadian constable.

Ray was quickly extradited to Tennessee for trial. The lengthy search and investigation, billed as "the most complete manhunt in history," was followed by one of the shortest trials in history. On March 10, 1969, less than one year after the assassination, Ray had his day in court, literally. By most standards his was not a trial but a deal. The deal had been arranged by Ray's attorneys, who had urged him to plead guilty so he would get ninety-nine years instead of the death penalty.

Under Tennessee law, even if a defendant enters a guilty plea, a jury is required to attend the plea and to "ratify" the plea and the sentence. In a courtroom sealed by the tightest possible security, twelve jurors heard prosecutor Canale say he would, as required by law, outline the evidence which would have been presented had the case gone to formal trial. Canale then asked the jury if they each could sit as jurors and accept the guilty plea from the defendant. They nodded in unison.

Canale told the jury: "...There have been rumors going all around -- perhaps some of you have heard them -- that Mr. James Earl Ray was a dupe in this thing, or a fall guy or a member of a conspiracy to kill Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

"I want to state to you, as your Attorney General, we have no proof other than that Dr. Martin Luther King Jr., was killed by James Earl Ray, and James Earl Ray alone, not in concert with anyone else. Our office has examined over five thousand printed pages of investigation work done by local police, by national police organizations, and by international law enforcement agencies. We have examined over three hundred physical bits of evidence, physical exhibits. Three men in my office, Mr. Dwyer, Mr. Beasly, and Mr. John Carlisle, the Chief Investigator of the Attorney General's Office... have traveled thousands of miles all over this country and to many cities in foreign countries on this investigation, our own independent investigation, and I just state to you frankly we have no evidence there was any conspiracy involved in this..."

The state had not charged Ray with conspiracy; it had charged him with murder in the first degree. Nevertheless the prosecutor felt compelled to deny that Ray had collaborators.

Though it was not presented at the "trial," Ray's version of the story had already been published. In a series of magazine articles written by William Bradford Huie, Ray had confessed he had been the unwitting pawn in a conspiracy to kill Dr. King.

Stranger still was the reaction of defense attorney Percy Foremen, a man who had never lost a case, to the remarks of the prosecuting attorney. As soon as Canale had finished issuing his disclaimer of conspiracy, Foremen rose and faced the jury. "It is an honor to appear in this Court for this Case. I never expected or had any idea when I entered this case that I would be able to accomplish anything except perhaps save the defendant's life... It took me a month to convince myself of that fact which the Attorney General of these United States, and J. Edgar Hoover of the Federal Bureau of Investigation announced last July, that is, what Mr. Canale has told you -- that there was not a conspiracy."

Just as the jury was about to rubber stamp "the deal," Ray rose to his feet. "Your Honor," he said, "I would like to say something... I don't want to change anything I have said, but I just want to enter one other thing. The only thing I have to say is that I can't agree with Mr. Clark."

"*Ramsey* Clark?" Foremen asked.

The Judge said, "Mr. *who*?"

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover," Ray said. "I agree with all these stipulations, and I am not trying to change anything."

The judge said, "You don't agree with *whose* theories?"

"...Mr. Canale's, Mr. Clark's, and Mr. J. Edgar Hoover's about the conspiracy. I don't want to add something that I haven't agreed to in the past," Ray answered, making sure he didn't blow the deal.

Foremen tried to explain. "I think what he said is he doesn't agree that Ramsey Clark is right, or that J. Edgar Hoover is right. I didn't argue that as evidence in this case, I simply stated, underwriting the statement of General Canale [sic] that they had made the same statement. You are not required to agree with it all."

The judge wanted nothing to sidetrack the smooth proceedings. "You still... your answers to these questions I asked you would still be the same? Is that correct?"

"Yes, sir," Ray answered.

And so the proceedings continued with Canale's presentation of a report of what would have been the evidence had this been a real trial.

After hearing from eyewitnesses that Dr. King had been killed on the balcony of the Lorraine Motel, Canale called experts from the Memphis Police Department and the FBI to testify on how they accumulated physical evidence linking Ray to the scene of the crime.

In the boarding house room which Ray (a/k/a Eric Starvo Galt) had rented, the FBI and police found a green bedspread, a pair of pliers and a hammer, some shaving articles, binoculars, beer cans, a newspaper, a T-shirt, shorts, a transistor radio, and two leather straps for binoculars. The testimony established that the white Mustang was found in Atlanta, Georgia. It had a sticker on it that indicated it had been obtained in Los Angeles, California, as had the T-shirt and shorts. In the bathroom from where the shot was supposed to have been fired, the investigators found scuff marks in the bottom of the tub. They found the window of the bathroom opened and the screen forced off.

"This [window] sill was ordered removed, was cut away and was subsequently sent to the FBI for comparison," Canale said, "and the proof would show through expert testimony that the markings on this sill were consistent with the machine markings as reflected on the barrel of the 30-06 rifle which had heretofore been introduced to you."

If this were a tria,l Canale said, eyewitnesses would be called to testify that Ray had purchased the rifle in Birmingham, Alabama, that he'd stayed at a motel in that city and had checked out on the nineteenth of December and had returned to Los Angeles. Also Dr. Russell C. Hadley of Hollywood, California, would be called by the state to testify that "in his capacity as a plastic surgeon, he did perform an operation on the nose of the defendant under the name of Eric Galt on March 5, 1968."

Canale placed in evidence a photo he said was of James Earl Ray, a photo of a graduating class from the International School of Bartending.

Other evidence Canale said would have been presented in a trial was the expert testimony of FBI fingerprint analyst George Bornebreke. The fingerprint expert would testify that he found a "print of sufficient clarity on the rifle... another print of sufficient clarity for identification of the scope mounted on the rifle... a print on the binoculars... a print on the front page of the April 4th issue of the *Memphis Commercial Appeal...*" and "prints of sufficient clarity" on maps of Atlanta, Birmingham, Texas, Oklahoma, Louisiana, California, Arizona, New Mexico, and Mexico, all of which, it could be proved, were the fingerprints of James Earl Ray.

The entire presentation of the case took just under three hours. There was a recess for lunch, after which Ray was ordered jailed for ninety-nine years.

As soon as Ray began to serve his sentence he renewed his protestations of innocence and began working for a new trial. He fired attorneys Percy Foremen and Arthur Hanes, alleging he had not had a fair trial. He said he'd been "set up to take the rap" for a crime he didn't commit. At Ray's hearing on a new trial, he stated, under oath, "I personally did not shoot Dr. king, but I may have been partly responsible without knowing it."

If Ray's psychological profile made him a likely victim for anyone who might need a fall guy in a murder, he was equally well suited to be a victim of mind control. The crimes for which he had previously been tried and convicted were all robberies in which no one was harmed. They were all remarkable for one thing -- the chase that followed.

Each time Ray committed a crime, he left a trail of evidence. Each time he left the scene in either a footrace or a hair raising car chase, with outraged citizens or police or both in hot pursuit. In each crime, Ray behaved like a little boy who'd just stolen money from his father's pockets and was then daring him to catch and punish him. He was from a deprived family, the eldest of eight children. Many individuals who were once emotionally deprived children learn to seek negative attention since positive attention was unavailable to them in their formative years. James Earl Ray fit that pattern. In the opinion of a psychologist he may have committed his daring daylight robberies not out of a need for money, but out of a subconscious desire to receive love.

The only evidence which cast light on Ray's possible motive for the assassination was an eyewitness report that he had spoken passionately of his hatred of blacks in a Los Angeles bar.

A few days after Ray's sentencing, other evidence came to light which suggested the FBI had a stronger motivation than James Earl Ray to kill Martin Luther King. On November 19, 1975, the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence made public the fact that the FBI had sent a compromising tape recording with an anonymous letter to Dr. King in late 1964 in a crude attempt to blackmail him into silence. Dr. King had thought the tape and letter were an effort to drive him to suicide.

King received the package thirty-four days before he was to receive the Nobel Peace Prize. The tape was allegedly of a sexual encounter of Dr. King and a young woman. It was accompanied by an unsigned note that read, "King there is only one thing left for you to do. You know what it is. You have just thirty-four days in which to do it. (This exact number has been selected for a specific reason.) It has definite practical significance. You are done. There is but one way out for you."

A month after Dr. King received his copy of the tape, a duplicate was sent to his wife. Mrs. King said publicly she and her husband had listened to the tape together and had concluded it had nothing on it that would discredit King.

The Senate subcommittee said that at about the same time Mrs. King had received her copy of the tape, a copy was submitted to FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover. Accompanying that tape was a memorandum written by the FBI Chief of Counter-Intelligence William Sullivan. The memo suggested the FBI discredit King by "knocking him off his pedestal."

The Senate committee disclosed further that the FBI had kept tabs on Dr. King for six years prior to his death. It had instituted sixteen different wiretap operations and had planted eight room bugs in its attempts to catch him in some compromising situation which could be used for blackmail or public discreditation. The shocked Senate select committee members discovered the taps and bugs had produced "thousands of hours of tapes."

In addition, it was discovered that Hoover had ordered some of his men to rewrite reports which had originally indicated King was not a threat to the country. Those officials who were ordered to change their reports readily did so, the committee said, because they feared for their jobs.

After the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence made these facts known, Mrs. Corretta King said what she had feared to say before. She said she believed her husband had been killed by a government conspiracy.

"The way he was documented and followed around by Hoover and the CIA, when he was abroad, it [his assassination] would have to have been attached to the forces of our government that felt he was a threat to the system as it existed," said Mrs. King.

A few days after Mrs. King issued that statement, Maryland private investigator Harold Weisberg used the Freedom of Information Act to obtain previously classified FBI reports. These reports revealed that directly contrary to claims made by Canale at Ray's "trial," the FBI had been unable to find any physical evidence that a rifle had been fired from the window in Ray's rooming house, either on the weapon or in the room from which the assassin had allegedly fired. This was a crucial discovery, in that it was the rifle alone which linked Ray to the killing.

If the rifle was not fired from the second story room, then, no matter how Ray's fingerprints got on the weapon, reasonable doubt existed that Ray was the assassin. No ballistics evidence links the rifle to the bullets in King's body. The FBI's evidence, which was kept secret, had all the while pointed to the conclusion that the rifle could have been planted in front of the rooming house to implicate Ray while the real assassin had fired from a location outside the rooming house.

A few months after Weisberg's find, *Newsday* published a copyrighted story reporting that a top law enforcement official in Memphis had removed one particular black detective who had been assigned to protect Dr. King just hours before he was assassinated. The *Newsday* article suggested that Detective Ed Redditt had been pulled from his post because he had developed a contingency plan to apprehend any assassin who might make an attempt on King's life. Redditt's plan was to seal off a four block area in the event a shot was fired.

Earlier the same week, *Newsday* had revealed that the Memphis Police Department had assigned "provocateurs" to protect King. The paper charged that men who had previously participated in anti-King riots were "protecting" the civil rights leader at the moment he was shot.

The activities of James Earl Ray during the year preceding the assassination could be interpreted to suggest the possibility that Ray was a patsy in the mold of Oswald. Ray had been to Mexico, New Orleans, and Los Angeles, places which had figured prominently in the activities of Oswald and the others who were indicted by Jim Garrison.

Facts which were not presented at Ray's quick "trial" included the following: Ray had escaped from prison one year before the King assassination. Evidence indicated that he had been helped by someone in his escape. During the year he was "on the lam," he received an estimated $12,000 from a source he identified only as "Raoul." He had no difficulty in obtaining a car and several complete sets of identification. Each set belonged to a living individual, something an intelligence agent would prefer if he were to set up a false identity. Ray had no difficulty traveling all over the United States, Canada and Mexico with his fake papers.

The contradictory history of Ray's activities in Los Angeles led private investigators to consider, as they had in the Oswald case, that there may have been two James Earl Rays. One, the James Earl Ray who had been in prison was a painfully shy fellow who seldom opened his mouth and hardly ever raised his voice. Fellow inmates found they had a hard time describing him, since he maintained such a low profile. He had been raised dirt poor, had never graduated from a school of any kind, and there is no record of his ever having expressed a political idea about anyone. In Los Angeles, the "other" James Earl Ray was described as an outgoing fellow. He enrolled in and graduated from bartending school; he became involved in an altercation with a girl in a bar who objected to his making slurs about the black race; he was very conscientious about his appearance and was an impeccable dresser, who even wore expensive alligator shoes; and he was a right-wing politician who conspicuously campaigned for George Wallace.

One other bit of evidence gives unity to the contradictions -- Ray had been hypnotized while in Los Angeles.

It was not mentioned in Ray's "trial," but at the time of his arrest in London, he had in his possession three books on hypnotism: *Self-Hypnotism: The technique and Its use in Daily Living* by Leslie M. LeCron, *How to Cash In on Your Hidden Memory Power* by William D. Hersey, and *Psychocybernetics* by Dr. Maxwell Maltz. Ray had told William Bradford Huie, "I took a course in Hypnosis while in

L.A. I had read a lot about in prison on how it was used in dentistry and medicine."

On November 27, 1967, Ray appeared in the office of Dr. Mark Freeman, a psychologist who practiced in Beverly Hills. Dr. Freeman remembered that Ray, who'd given his real name, asked to be hypnotized because he wanted to sleep better and remember things better.

"This fellow really wanted to improve his mind," Dr. Freeman said. "He had an awe of learning. He had a bent for reading. He didn't fight hypnosis. He learned something."

Dr. Freeman told George McMillan, author of *The Making of an Assassin,* "You've got to keep in mind that I get a lot of angry people around here. A lot of people who come to me want to teach me how to do it. I get a lot of rough stuff around here. I mean psychotic, that stuff. But I couldn't pick up on any of that with Ray. He made a favorable impression on me. He was a good pupil. I'd show him how to go under, and pretty soon he'd be lying on the couch on his back and start talking. I taught him eye fixation, bodily relaxation, how to open himself to suggestion. I gave him lots of positive feelings of confidence."

It may have been that Freeman found Ray so suggestible because he had been hypnotized before. His contact with Freeman and other hypnotists (he told Huie he'd been to as many as eight) may have been prompted by an unconscious urge to undo what had already been done to him -- hypnotically induced multiple personalities, one which was programmed to kill upon command, or merely one which was programmed to run away, following his normal pattern, but this time on command. It's easy to program someone to do under posthypnotic cue what he normally does. And it's a lot easier to program a patsy than it is to program a hit man.

(NY2-April 20)-COULD BE THE SAME MAN-Eric Starvo Galt,sought in the slaying of Dr.Martin Luther King Jr.,is shown at right in picture released by the FBI Wednesday with the eyes painted in by an artist. James Earl Ray,a prison escapee,is shown in the other pictures. The FBI said yesterday that Galt and Ray were the same man. Ray is shown at left in a 1959 St.Louis police photo,second from left in a photo released by the FBI and dated 1960 and second from right in a 1966 Missouri penitentary picture.([redacted])(See AP Wire Stories)(sds70600fls)1968

This strip of photos was cirulated when James Earl Ray was a fugitive/ suspect in the King assassination. One employee of a psychiatrist who specializes in treating DID patients looked at the strip without knowing who it was and said, 'This obviously must be a Multiple Personality Disorder patient."

24

CONFESSION BY AUTOMATIC WRITING

The circumstances of Robert Kennedy's death are well known. On June 5, 1968, at 12:15 a.m., Sen. Robert Kennedy was shot in the pantry of the Ambassador Hotel in Los Angeles. Karl Uecker grabbed the gun, a .22 caliber Iver-Johnson revolver. It was smoking in the hand of Sirhan Beshara Sirhan, a Palestinian refugee.

The Los Angeles police immediately took Sirhan into custody. At first they appeared to be taking every precaution so they wouldn't make the same mistakes the Dallas police had made. They taped every interrogation session with the suspect and kept him under surveillance through a closed-circuit TV camera in his cell. They took every measure to protect the life of this man, the second "lone nut" to gun down a Kennedy.

Trying to avoid anything which would be an infringement on the rights of the alleged assassin, the police carefully informed Sirhan of his legal rights before trying to interrogate him.

Through the first hours of questioning, Sirhan chose to remain silent. For some time, no one knew who the curly-haired, swarthy man in custody was.

It wasn't until the police found a truck in the parking lot of the hotel, and traced it to Sirhan Beshara Sirhan, that they were certain of his identity. Police immediately went to his house and searched his bedroom. On the floor next to Sirhan's bed was a large spiral notebook. On the desk was another notebook. There was a third small notebook, a good deal of occult literature, a brochure advertising a book on mental projection, and a large brown envelope from the Internal Revenue Service on which someone had written, "RFK must be disposed of like his brother was." At the bottom of the envelope was scrawled "Reactionary."

In one of the notebooks there was a page which was used later in the trial to prove premeditation: "May 18, 9:45 a.m. -- 68. My determination to eliminate RFK is becoming more the more of an unshakable obsession... RFK must die -- RFK must be killed Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated... Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated before 5 June 68 Robert F. Kennedy must be assassinated I have never heard please pay to the order of of of of of of of of of of this or that pleas pay to the order of..." Also drawn on the page were spirals, diamonds, and doodles.

While Los Angeles mayor Sam Yorty ignorantly told the press Sirhan was a "member of numerous Communist organizations, including the Rosicrucians," Sirhan's neighbors told a different story. One said he was "very religious." Another reported that he was "just a normal kid." He took cars and bikes apart and put them back together again." Neighborhood kids said he was "nice." When asked if Sirhan was the angry type, a black girl in his Neighborhood said, "He didn't show it." Arthur Bean, another neighbor said, "Someone talked that kid into gunning down Kennedy."

When Irwin Garfinkel, a deputy attorney in the public defender's office, asked Sirhan about the shooting, he said, "I don't remember much about the shooting, Sir. Did I do it? Well, yes, I am told I did it. I remember being at the Ambassador. I was drinking tom collinses. I got dizzy. I went back to my car so I could go home. But I was too drunk to drive. I thought I'd better find some coffee. The next thing I remember I was being choked and a guy was twisting my knee."

George Plimpton, editor of the *Paris Review*, was in the hotel pantry when Kennedy was shot. He was one of the men who wrestled Sirhan down. According to *Newsweek*, Plimpton "offered some eloquent testimony that appeared to some to support the defense's contention that Sirhan Beshara Sirhan had, in fact, been in a 'trance' during the shooting. 'He was enormously composed,' recalled Plimpton. 'Right in the midst of this hurricane of sound and feeling, he seemed to be almost the eye of the hurricane. He seemed purged.'"

The chief counsel for the Los Angeles chapter of the American Civil Liberties union, A.L. Wirin, went to Sirhan's defense within hours of his arrest. On his second meeting with the accused, Wirin brought the local papers with him. Sirhan read the headline "KENNEDY'S DEAD," then he dropped his head in grief. After fighting to control his emotions, he looked at Wirin through tear-filled eyes and said, "Mr. Wirin, I'm a failure. I believe in love and instead of showing love..." Then, Wirin recalled, "he muttered something about having betrayed his own primary beliefs."

That night, Sirhan complained of being sick. He became very dizzy and had severe stomach cramps, just as had Castillo and Candy Jones. For several weeks Sirhan was given a half grain of phenobarbital at night to help him sleep.

The Los Angeles police went through the motions of looking into the possibility that a conspiracy was behind the RFK assassination. They looked for the girl in the polka-dot dress who witnesses said had been standing next to Sirhan, smiling and talking to him just before he began shooting in the pantry. Sirhan also said he'd been talking to the girl after he'd drunk several tom collinses. The girl in the polka-dot dress was not found, and conflicting statements cast doubt on whether there had ever been such a girl. Forty-five "top men" from the Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD) were assigned the job of tracking down all leads to a conspiracy, but incredibly, they came up empty handed.

A bag of women's clothing, which included a polka-dot dress and new undergarments, was found by the LAPD in an alley, but police could not find out who'd bought them or who'd worn them. According to Sirhan's biographer Robert Blair Kaiser, "...The police and FBI hardly did all they could [to find the owner of the polka-dot dress]. They used faulty logic and browbeat witnesses to eliminate the girl in the polka-dot dress."[105]

To penetrate Sirhan's amnesia, the defense decided to call in an expert hypnotist, Dr. Bernard L. Diamond of the University of California. Diamond was the associate dean of UCLA's School of Criminology and a professor of both law and psychiatry. No one knew more about law, psychiatry, and hypnosis than Diamond in those days.

In a prehypnosis interview, Diamond asked Sirhan to tell him about his notebooks, and Sirhan said he couldn't recall writing them.

Diamond asked if he thought what he had done helped things, and Sirhan said, "I'm not proud of what I did."

"What do you mean, you're not proud of it?" Diamond asked him. "You believe in your cause, don't you?" (Sirhan had been contacted by Arab sympathizers and others who insisted the reason he'd killed Kennedy was out of sympathy for the PLO.)

"I have no exact knowledge, sir, that this happened yet. I'm all, it's in my mind, but goddamn it, when my body played with it... I couldn't understand it. I still don't believe it. My body outsmarted my brain, I guess."

"What did your body do?" Diamond asked.

---

[105] Robert Blair Kaiser, *R.F.K. Must Die*, 2nd ed. (New York, Dutton, 1970)

"Pulled that trigger," Sirhan said.

"Does your body remember it, even if your mind doesn't?"

"I don't give a damn, Sir, in a way. Now I don't even care," Sirhan said.

Diamond asked Sirhan if he'd thought about suicide.

"Hell, no," Sirhan said, "I couldn't do that."

Then Diamond expressed a thought which contained a significant "Freudian slip." "Why didn't you turn the gas on yourself, ah, why didn't you turn the gun on yourself after you killed Kennedy?"

Sirhan waved his hand in front of his face. "It was all mixed up. Like a dream."

Diamond hypnotized Sirhan on six of eight visits. At one point, reliving the killing, Sirhan grabbed at his belt on the left side. Until them police had no idea where he'd carried the weapon. Under hypnosis Sirhan also created writings similar to those in his notebooks.

In one session Diamond had Sirhan climb the bars of his cell like a monkey. After he'd been brought out of trance, Sirhan explained the reason for his climb. He said he was only getting exercise. Then Diamond played the tape to prove to Sirhan that he, Diamond, had given the instructions to Sirhan to climb the cage. But Sirhan denied that he'd done it because he'd been hypnotized.

At the trial Dr. Diamond, acting as the director of Sirhan's defense, testified that Sirhan was a paranoid schizophrenic. His testimony was supported by several other doctors who had examined the psychiatric "evidence" obtained from tests, interviews and hypno-interviews conducted by Dr. Diamond.

Dr. Diamond did not consider that Sirhan had been other than self-programmed. Having worked for the Army Medical Corps in World War II, he apparetnly hadn't had the need to know that the U.S. cryptocracy developed mind control and used it to control the political destiny of the nation.

Sirhan was given yet another battery of tests by Dr. Eric Marcus, a court-appointed psychiatrist for the defense. Among the tests was the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI), which contains more than 500 questions requiring true-false answers. Psychologists interpret the answers to the MMPI according to a set of statistical norms. Two of Sirhan's non responses were significant, since usually nonresponses are considered to be more important than the "yes-no" responses. The questions Sirhan did not respond to were: 291. At one or more times in my life, I felt that someone was making me do things by hypnotizing me..." and 293. Someone had been trying to influence my mind."

By the second visit, Dr. Marcus had time enough to familiarize himself thoroughly with Sirhan's notebooks. On one page of the notebooks Sirhan had written: "I advocate the overthrow of the current President of the fucken United States of America. I have no absolute plans yet, but soon will compose some. I am poor -- this country's propaganda says she is the best country in the world -- I have not experienced this yet -- the U.S.-- says life in Russia is bad... I believe the U.S. is ready to start declining, not that it hasn't -- it began in November 23, '63, but it should decline at a faster rate so the real Utopia will not be too far from being realized during the early seventies in this country."

In one of the notebooks the name "Peggy Osterkamp" was written over and over. "I love you, Peggy," in one place and in another, "Peggy Osterkamp Peggy Osterkamp Peggy Osterkamp Peggy Sirhan."

When Dr. Marcus asked Sirhan who Peggy Osterkamp was, he said she was just a girl he'd met a few times at the ranch where he'd worked as an exerciser of horses. Dr. Marcus asked Sirhan if he'd ever dated her, and Sirhan told Marcus the story he'd told the public defender the night of the assassination.

That night, Sirhan said he had gone to a shooting range and practiced with his pistol until the range closed. Then he went with a friend, a foreign student named Mistri, to get a hamburger at Bob's Big Boy Restaurant. While eating, they talked about horses. For some reason Sirhan showed his friend a pocketful of bullets. He then was given a current newspaper and in it he read a news item about a Zionist rally in Hollywood. He became very angry over this and made up his mind to go to the rally. When he could not find that rally, he wandered into the campaign headquarters of Senator Kuchel and there heard there would be a party at the Ambassador Hotel nearby.

When he got to the hotel he was fascinated by the television lights. He went to the bar and ordered two tom collinses. He got dizzy and said to himself that he'd better go home. He was reluctant to drive in his drunken condition and the next thing he remembered was being choked in the pantry of the Ambassador Hotel.

Dr. Marcus didn't buy Sirhan's amnesia. He thought it was only a convenient cover-up, and that Sirhan was a paranoid. In his testimony at Sirhan's trial, Dr. Marcus selected another page from Sirhan's notebook to illustrate his psychological evaluation. On June 2, 1967, Sirhan had written:

> A Declaration of War Against American Humanity... when in the course of human events it had become necessary for me to equalize and seek revenge for all the inhuman treatment committed against me by the American people. The manifestation of this Declaration will be executed by its supporter(s) as soon as he is able to command a sum of money (2,000) and to acquire some firearms -- the specification of which have not been established yet.
>
> The victims of the party in favor of this declaration will be or are now -- the President, vice, etc. -- down the ladder. The time will be chosen by the author at the convenience of the accused. The method of assault is immaterial -- however, the type of weapon used should influence it somehow. The author believes that many in fact multitudes of people are in harmony with his thoughts and feelings.

The conflict and violence in the world subsequent to the enforcement of this decree shall not be considered likely by the author of this memoranda, rather he hopes that they be the initiatory military steps to W. W. III -- the author expresses his wishes very bluntly that he wants to be recorded by history as the man who triggered off the last war...

In mid-August Sirhan's notebooks were analyzed by the FBI crime lab in Washington. The pages were subjected to photo and chemical analysis to establish when each had been written and in what order. The FBI experts concluded that Sirhan had penned the notes in a haphazard fashion, skipping around in the books. The two pages dated June 2, 1967, and May 18, 1968, the lab said, had actually been written on those dates. An overview of the notes shows that Sirhan had been concerned with three things that appeared over and over in the writing: money, the girl Peggy Osterkamp, and a new Mustang, in that order of importance -- as determined by the number of times each was mentioned. Several times he had written, "please pay to the order of...," but when asked about this he could not remember what it meant. He had written, "Today I must resolve to come home in a new Mustang. Today I must resolve to come home in a new Mustang. Mustang. Mustang."

The FBI and the LAPD located Peggy Osterkamp. She was a tall, willowy blonde, the attractive daughter of an affluent dairyman. A horse lover, she had once worked at the ranch where Sirhan worked. She said she knew him only slightly and had been introduced to him at the Pomona Fair in 1966. She said she had never dated him.

On one page of the notebooks Sirhan had written, "Tom, My warmest salutations. I do not know what has prompted you to write to me..." And on another page he'd written, "Hello Tom perhaps you could use the enclosed $." On yet another page Sirhan had written: "11 o'clock Sirhan 11 o'clock Sirhan Sirhan 11 o'clock Sirhan Livermore Sirhan Sirhan Pleasanton... Hello Tom racetrack perhaps you could use the enclosed $."

The FBI guessed that Sirhan had been writing about Walter Thomas Rathke, his first employer at the racetrack. The FBI found him working as a groom at the Pleasanton Race Stables, just east of Oakland.

Rathke told investigators he had known Sirhan, and that they'd compared notes on the occult. He said he'd written Sirhan twice and had asked him if he needed any money. Later it was discovered that Rathke had far more influence over Sirhan than he cared to admit, but the LAPD and FBI dropped him as uninteresting.

In addition to examining the bizarre notebooks, investigators also made note of Sirhan's unusual behavior after the assassination. Sirhan, like Candy, had a "thing" about mirrors. In his cell he'd stare into a little mirror for hours on end. He also practiced concentrating on candle flames, trying to turn them from red to blue to green. And he was apprehensive about drugs.

When asked by his biographer Robert Blair Kaiser if he thought he'd get the death penalty, Sirhan shrugged and said, "A death penalty would only be vengeance. What would it gain?" After another pause he added, "I know I've killed a man. At least, I'm told of it. I have nothing in my conscience about it, but... I'm told I killed a man, so deserve some punishment, but maybe I could serve humanity by working ten years in a hospital to pay my debt you might say." Later Sirhan said flatly, "I don't regard myself as a criminal."

Kaiser reported, "Sirhan talked about Gandhi, and the black revolution." He identified with both. "The Negroes," he said, "can see everything, but they can't get it. Their only solution is to dig in and eat it." Immediately Sirhan added: "I wanted a new car. I always wanted a Mustang.[106] I said, 'All I need is money and how am I gonna get it?' They're not giving Mustangs away." Was Sirhan implying he killed Kennedy for money?

The court ordered that Sirhan be fully tested to see what his mental state really was. They gave him an electroencephalogram to see if by chance his brain had been damaged by a fall he'd taken from a horse two years earlier. The EEG showed Sirhan had a normal brain-wave pattern. Then, just to determine if the alcohol had any effect on the pattern, the doctor, who'd obtained the recipe for the Ambassador Hotel's tom collins, gave Sirhan the equivalent of four drinks and measured his brain patterns again. Still there was nothing unusual in them.

---

[106] *Ibid.*

But even though the EEG showed no unusual brain activity, Sirhan got very drunk and shivered violently for ten minutes. He became irrational, agitated and restless. He screamed out curses.

When someone told him, "Dr. Marcus is here," Sirhan screamed, "Get that bastard out of here!" The doctor ordered Sirhan taken back to his inner cell, and Sirhan seemed confused. "What the hell is going on here?" he asked, then grabbed his throat violently (as Castillo had), and appeared to be choking. The doctor noted that he was in a state of delirium.

Robert Kaiser again asked Sirhan about his notebooks and Sirhan explained everything he could about them. He said that they were writings about the occult, that he had been studying the objective mind in relation to the universal mind. "If you give your subjective mind an intense command by your objective mind, your subjective mind will gather the information to carry out the commands of the objective mind..."

Sirhan said that he'd been sitting in front of a mirror after he'd seen a replay of Robert Kennedy on television reporting in 1948 on the Arab-Israeli war in Palestine. "I concentrated on RFK in the mirror," he said. "I had to stop him. Finally, his face was in that mirror instead of my own. Then I went to my notebook and started writing. It was part of the auto-suggestion necessary to get my subjective mind to get my objective mind moving. I read in the Rosicrucian magazine how if you wanted to do anything you should write it down. It automatically works toward the realization of what you want.

"With that power," Sirhan said with intensity, "I could have been a millionaire! A millionaire! Ohh shit!"

"Why did I not go to the races that day?" Sirhan asked Kaiser. "Why did I not like the horses? Why did I go to that range? Why did I save those Mini-Mags [the high powered bullets used on Kennedy]? Why did I not expend those bullets? Why did I go to Bob's? Why did Mistri give me that newspaper? Why did I drink that night? It was," he said, "like some inner force."

"But you wrote in your notebook 'RFK must die,'" Kaiser said.

"After the bit with the mirror," Sirhan told him, "Forgot it all. The idea of killing Kennedy never entered my mind, sir."[107]

---

[107] *Ibid.*

During Sirhan's trial for murder, the judge refused to authorize the use of lie detectors or truth serum. Sirhan like Ray, was quickly "put away" for life.

There were those, however, who refused to let the matter rest. In 1973, while Sirhan sat in prison, Dr. Edward Simpson, the San Quentin prison psychiatrist, submitted an affidavit to the California courts requesting Sirhan be granted a new trial and the Robert Kennedy case be reopened.

Dr. Simpson testified that the "expert" psychiatric- psychological testimony at Sirhan's trial was full of numerous factual errors and misleading to the jury. "Most of the doctors testifying," Simpson said, "saw their role as proving why Sirhan killed Kennedy, which required a focus on pathology (mental illness) that I found does not exist. They failed to consider the real facts in a more objective light and failed to consider the possibility, clearly suggested by the ballistic testimony and Sirhan's own testimony under close scrutiny, that perhaps Sirhan did not kill Robert F. Kennedy."

"Sirhan's trial," Dr. Simpson wrote, was not handled properly by the mental health professionals. In retrospect, a close study of the trial testimony and my own extensive study of Sirhan leads to one irrevocable and obvious conclusion: Sirhan's trial was, and will be remembered, as the psychiatric blunder of the century."

Dr. Simpson knew whereof he spoke. For six years he had worked at San Quentin Prison and had made a study of men on Death Row. For two years he'd been in charge of the prison's psychological testing program. In 1969 he interviewed and tested Sirhan extensively during twenty weekly visits. After these visits were terminated, Sirhan requested that his family contact Simpson for the purpose of reviewing the psychiatric testimony given at his trial.

After examining Sirhan, and reviewing the "expert" psychiatric testimony, Dr. Simpson discussed his findings with the prison's chief psychiatrist, Dr. David G. Schmidt. Together they concluded their findings did not confirm "but in fact were strictly in conflict" with the findings reported at Sirhan's trial.

"Nowhere in Sirhan's test response," Dr. Simpson said in the affidavit, "was I able to find evidence that he is a 'paranoid schizophrenic' or 'psychotic' as testified by the doctors at the trial... The fact is, paranoid schizophrenics are almost impossible to hypnotize. They are too suspicious and do not trust anybody, including friends and relatives, not to speak of a hypnotist from, for him the most hated race. Psychotics in general are among the poorest subjects for hypnosis. They cannot concentrate, they do not follow instructions and basically do not trust. Sirhan, however, was an unusually good hypnotic subject. Sirhan asked me to hypnotize him, which I did not do, in order not to contaminate my test findings with fantasies. He himself had manufactured a hypno-disk, and was practicing self-hypnosis in his cell, an activity requiring considerable self control which no psychotic has. The fact that Sirhan was easy to hypnotize, as testified by Dr. Diamond, proves he was not a paranoid schizophrenic.

"Dr. Diamond," Simpson continued, "used hypnosis in six sessions out of eight with Sirhan. What was the purpose of it? To plant ideas in Sirhan's mind, ideas that were not there before? To make him accept the idea that he killed Robert F. Kennedy?

"When Dr. Diamond was unable to get Sirhan to admit he wrote the notebooks, he testified '... so I undertook some experiments on possible hypnotic suggestion.' This admission strongly suggests the possibility of hypnosis being used for implanting hypothetical ideas in Sirhan's mind, rather than uncovering facts... A lie detector, not hypnosis, should have been used in finding out whether Sirhan killed Robert Kennedy.

"Why was a lie detector not used' It should have been, as it is much more reliable than hypnosis, which often provided contaminated results... Dr. Diamond's testimony is wrong, as he states: 'I have very little or no faith in the accuracy [of a lie detector].' The truth is, the polygraph exceeds in accuracy certain techniques, such as hypnosis, that tend to fuse and contaminate experiences from past and present and also can be influenced significantly by the operator [hypnotist]; it makes a significant difference who the hypnotist is..."

In 1975 when the California investigation into the RFK killing was briefly reopened, the public learned that crucial physical evidence, such as ceiling tiles from the hotel pantry and bullet fragments, had been destroyed or lost by the LAPD. And, as in the Oswald case, critical testimony had been ignored. [The above testimony, of Dr. Simpson, pointed to the possibility that Sirhan was a hypno-programmed assassin.]

Also in 1975, seven years after the crime, former high ranking U.S. intelligence officer and one of the developers of PSE, Charles McQuiston, analyzed recordings of Sirhan's interview with psychiatrists in San Quentin.

Sirhan said, "To me, sir, he [Kennedy] is still alive... I still don't believe what has happened... I don't believe he is dead. I have no realization still that I killed him, that he is in the grave." McQuiston's PSE analysis showed that on this statement Sirhan exhibited very little stress.

"After analyzing the tapes," McQuiston said, " I'm convinced that Sirhan wasn't aware of what he was doing. He was in a hypnotic trance when he pulled the trigger and killed Senator Kennedy... Everything in the PSE charts tells me that someone else was involved in the assassination -- and that Sirhan was programmed through hypnosis to kill RFK. What we have here is a real live *Manchurian Candidate*."[108]

After examining Sirhan's PSE charts, Dr. John W. Heisse, Jr., president of the International Society of Stress Analysis agreed with McQuiston. Dr. Heisse, who had studied hundreds of people under hypnosis using the PSE, said, "Sirhan kept repeating certain phrases. This clearly revealed he had been programmed to put himself into a trance. This is something he couldn't have learned by himself. Someone had to show him and teach him how.

"I believe Sirhan was brainwashed under hypnosis by the constant repetition of words like 'you are nobody, you're nothing, the American dream is gone' until he actually believed them. At that stage someone implanted an idea, kill RFK, and under hypnosis the brainwashed Sirhan accepted it."

Dr. Herbert Spiegel, who wrote the introduction to *The Control of Candy Jones*, has been billed as one of the country's leading medical experts on hypnosis. Spiegel said of Sirhan's case: "It's very possible to distort and change somebody's mind through a number of hypnotic sessions. It can be described as brainwashing because the mind is cleared of its old emotions and values which are replaced by implanting other suggestions... This technique was probably used with Sirhan. From my own research, I think Sirhan was subjected to hypnotic treatment."

Even in the early days of the investigation, there were those who found it easy to believe the hypno-programming theory. Among them was writer Truman Capote, who had for a long while been a friend of Jacqueline Kennedy and her sister Lee Radziwill. After writing his best seller *In Cold Blood*, Capote was regarded as something of an expert on murder. On the NBC "Tonight " show Capote suggested Sirhan and his accomplices had been intensively trained and brainwashed trigger men. Their purpose, Capote proposed, was to drive the United States to its knees by assassinating all its leaders.

According to Robert Blair Kaiser, "With a little more diligence than they exercised, and a great deal more intelligence than they had, the police might have established links between Sirhan and the underworld, between Sirhan and the right wing, between Sirhan and the left wing, between Sirhan and Al Fatah..."[109]

---

[108] Charles McQuiston, *National Enquirer*, October 20, 1975

[109] Kaiser, *op.cit.*

But neither the police nor the FBI showed any interest in Sirhan's "connections" -- perhaps because there were so many. Like Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan was a contradiction. He could be linked to many different groups, all of which could easily have had a political motive to kill Robert Kennedy. So the LAPD did the same thing the Warren Commission did; it took what evidence it needed to prove its case for a "lone nut" and ignored the rest.

Defense director Diamond, subsequently explaining his tactics in Sirhan's trial, said he was surprised when he first tried to hypnotize Sirhan. "Most people may take an hour or more to go under hypnosis the first time," Diamond said. "A schizophrenic usually takes much longer, if he goes under at all. But it took less than ten minutes for Sirhan to go into a deep authentic sleep."

Sirhan, Dr. Diamond concluded, had obviously had experience with hypnosis before. He found Sirhan was reluctant to speak under hypnosis but that he could easily write without being posthypnotically blocked. "Writing under hypnosis is called automatic writing," Diamond said, "and the term aptly describes the way Sirhan would write like a robot and keep on repeating a word or phrase until I stopped him."

Taking a sheet of a legal pad lying nearby, Diamond asked Sirhan to write his answers to the questions put to him in the hypnotic trance. He showed Sirhan a sample of his diary page.

"Is this crazy writing?" Diamond asked.

"YES YES YES," Sirhan wrote.

"Are you crazy?" Diamond asked

"NO NO," Sirhan wrote.

"Well why are you writing crazy?" Diamond asked.

"PRACTICE PRACTICE PRACTICE," Sirhan responded.

"Practice for what?" Diamond asked.

"MIND CONTROL MIND CONTROL MIND CONTROL" is what Sirhan wrote.[110]

---

[110] Estabrooks, *Hypnotism.*

Perhaps now, looking back, we can understand more about Sirhan from David. David was a good Air Force candidate for mind control: He was an obedient soldier, penitent, and patient. His amnesia, you'll recall, was so total, so complete, that it took years of psychotherapy to restore his memory. This is what he had to say on the subject of forgetting and remembering:

"The air force used hypnosis for opening up my subconscious mind. It's the subconscious mind that remembers everything. That was the way it was explained to me. The subconscious mind must trust the person who is conditioning it. So if a person gets another's subconscious mind to trust them, then that subconscious mind will tell them everything it has seen or heard from the day it was born even back to when it was in its mother's womb.

"So under a voice or word command the information can be brought out once the subconscious has been conditioned to respond to the right command. It might respond to one voice or a group of voices. I'd be given a certain cue and I would remember what I was supposed to remember. I was tested constantly. And then, when the meeting was over, I would be unable to remember, and automatically my subconscious would close.

"The cue command would be at the beginning of a meeting. I don't think you need a dual command. I think you need only a command to start, then once something is finished, the process stops automatically. During the training period I'd do whatever I wanted for a couple of days, then go back and the next thing I knew I was remembering the computer numbers again. A word would be said and I'd just begin remembering. They'd give a command, and if your subconscious has really trusted the person conditioning you, that triggers the memory. I don't know who the person I trusted was, because I was usually only talking to the tape recorder. I was actually thinking I was talking to someone that was very close. That would be the person who'd listen to the tape I guess.

"Really I was talking to myself, but behind this was that person -- no name, no face, just that friendly trustworthy person who had conditioned me. And at the same time it was myself. Who would I trust more than myself?

"They must have told me that after I got out of the service I'd be unable to remember anything of a sensitive nature. I suppose they told me in a way that made it acceptable. But I don't think I ever thought I would have the problems which resulted from loss of my memory... When you can't remember things in sequence about your life, you have no idea what that does to you. It interferes with your whole identity."

Considering the connections between Cuba or Cubans and Lee Harvey Oswald, Jack Ruby, James Earl Ray's Latin accomplice "Raoul," and Luis Castillo's Cuban Intelligence training one cannot help but wonder whether a variation on a scenario written in 1943 by hypnotist George Estabrooks wasn't being played out in the assassinations.

In his book *Hypnotism*, Estabrooks outlined a plan in which suddenly the Cubans had become belligerent and were "building a great naval base at Havana, an obvious menace to our overseas trade." He suggested that a Cuban oil executive be hypno-programmed to spy on the Cuban government. "Neither he nor the group in question (his oil company) need know anything of the arrangements. The instructions to his unconscious in hypnotism are very definite. Find out everything possible about the naval base. He is shown maps of this before he goes and coached as to just what is important. Nor is he ever allowed to submit written reports. Everything must be handed on by word of mouth to one of the very few individuals who are able to hypnotize him... Under these circumstances we may count on this man doing everything in his power to collect the information in question."

Estabrooks explained: "There are certain safeguards if we use hypnotism. First, there is no danger of the agent selling out, but this would probably not be of great importance in this particular case. More important would be the conviction of innocence which the man himself had, and this is a great aid in many situations. He would never 'act guilty' and if ever accused of seeking information would be quite honestly indignant. This conviction of innocence on the part of a criminal is perhaps his greatest safeguard under questioning by authorities. Finally, it would be impossible to 'third degree' him and so pick up the links of a chain. This is very important, for the most hardened culprit is always liable to 'talk' if the questioners are but ruthless enough."

Then Estabrooks expanded his point: "Far more useful than the foregoing purpose, however, would be that for a counterespionage service, built along the same lines. This would require both care and time to perfect, but once working it might prove extremely effective. Here the best approach would probably be through those of enemy alien stock within our own gates. Once again let us choose the aggressive Cubans as examples. In the event of war, but preferably well before the outbreak of war, we would start our organization. We could easily secure (say) one hundred or one thousand excellent subjects of Cuban stock who spoke their language fluently, and then work on these subjects.

"In hypnotism we would build up their loyalty to this country; but out of hypnotism, in the 'waking' or normal state we would do the opposite, striving to convince them they had a genuine grievance against this country and encouraging them to engage in 'fifth column' activities. Here we would be coming very close to establishing a case of 'dual personality.' There is nothing at all impossible in this. We know that dual, and even multiple, personality can be both caused and cured by hypnotism. Moreover, that condition, the Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde combination, is a very real one once it is established.

"They would, as we before said, be urged in the waking state to become fifth columnists to the United States, but we would also point out to them in hypnotism that this was really a pose, that their real loyalty lay with this country, offering them protection and reward for their activities. Through them we would hope to be kept informed of the activities of their 'friends,' this information, of course being obtained in the trance state."

As to the possibility of hypno-programming assassins, Estabrooks wrote: "Strange to say, most good subjects will commit murder. In the writer's opinion there can be very little doubt on this score. They commit a legal, but not an ethical murder, so to speak. For example, we hypnotize a subject and tell him to murder you with a gun. We hand him a loaded revolver. In all probability he will refuse. Frankly for very obvious reasons, the writer has never made the experiment. Corpses are not needed in psychological laboratories."

That, Estabrooks suggests, best be left to the intelligence agencies. And now we know they took up the challenge.[111]

---

[111] Seymour Fisher, *The Use of Hypnosis in Intelligence and Related Military Situations.*

how to
HYPNOTIZE

HOW TO HYPNOTIZE

IT'S EASY TO HYPNOTIZE...

when you know how!

WANT the thrill of imposing your will over someone? Of making someone do exactly what you order? Try hypnotism! This amazing technique gives full personal satisfaction. You'll find it entertaining and gratifying

The Master KEY TO HYPNOTISM shows all you need to know It is put so simply, anyone can follow it. And there are 24 revealing photographs for your guidance

SEND NO MONEY

FREE ten days examination of this system is offered to you if you send the coupon today We will ship you our copy by return mail. in plain wrapper If not delighted with results return it in 10 days and your money will be refunded Stravon Publishers, Dept. HD 113 West 57th Street. New York 19 N. Y

Mail Coupon Today

STRAVON PUBLISHERS

Send **MASTER KEY TO HYPNOTISM** in plain wrapper
☐ Send C.O.D. I will pay postman $1.98 plus postage
☐ I enclose $1.98. Send postpaid
If not delighted, I may return it in 10 days and get my money back

Name ____________________

Address ____________________

City ______________ *State* ________

Canada & Foreign—$2.50 with order

25

THE PATRIOTIC ASSASSIN

All the assassins in the cryptocracy's army of hit men are not, by any means, programmed. There are other ways besides mind control to motivate the commission of murder.

In 1298 Marco Polo returned from his Asiatic travels with a tale of assassins who were motivated by an unusually clever technique. Polo described a fortress he had visited in the valley of Alamut in Persia. He said the valley was the headquarters of a notorious group known as the *Ashishin*, from which the word "assassin" evolved.

Polo's story echoed numerous legends about an "Old Man of the Mountain," named Allahudin, who used subtle and elaborate psychological tricks to motivate simple country boys to undertake fearless acts of murder. The Old Man had created an inescapable valley between two mountains by building up high walls at both ends. He turned the valley into a beautiful garden, the largest and most beautiful that had ever been seen. In this valley he planted every kind of fruit tree and built several elaborate, ornamented pavilions and palaces which were said to be of such elegance they could not be described in words. Everything that could be, was covered with gold. The buildings housed the most exquisite collection of paintings and sculpture in the known world. Man-made streams flowed wine, milk, honey, and water.

Also in the Old Man's garden was a harem of the most beautiful houris in the world, trained to play all manner of instruments, and to sing and dance in the most sensuous and seductive manner. All had also been highly trained in the fine art of lovemaking, and were reputed to know every possible way in which to make a man happy.

The garden was well fortified, and there was no way to get in or out of it except through the Old Man's castle. None were allowed to enter the Old Man's Garden except those who had been selected to be among the *Ashishin*.

Youths from the countryside were attracted to the Old Man's court, lured by tales of the fantastic paradise. They believed that the Old Man was one of God's elect, and that angels did his bidding. Only those ranging in age from twelve to twenty years who displayed a taste for soldiering and were in prime physical condition were admitted to the *Ashishin*.

The Old Man's garden duplicated every detail of Paradise as described in the Koran by the Prophet Mohammed. A young man selected for the *Ashishin* would soon come to believe in the Old Man just as he already believed in Mohammed.

After the proper indoctrination was completed, the Old Man would have his candidate drugged with a mysterious potion that would cast him into a deep sleep. Once asleep, the candidate would be lifted and carried into the garden and would wake up to find himself in a place he was certain must be Paradise.

As time went on, he'd become more and more convinced that he was in Paradise. Ladies offered everything a young man could want, beyond even the wildest expectations of these simple folk. After only a few days in this garden, no young country boy would have left of his own accord.

When the Old Man wanted to send one of his young *Ashishin* on a mission, he would again have him given the mysterious potion, and carried in his sleep from the garden to the castle. There the youth would be dressed in his old clothes and placed into the original position in which he'd fallen asleep before being taken into the Garden.

Upon awakening to "reality" he would experience a great sense of loss at finding that he was no longer in Paradise. Then, as if meeting this young man for the first time the Old Man would ask him where he had come from. Usually the youth would reply that he had just come from Paradise, and in great excitement explain that it was exactly as Mohammed had described it in the Koran. This would, of course, give eavesdroppers an even greater desire to get there, and the strongest among them would, days later, wake up in the arms of the houris of paradise.

When the Old Man wanted a rival prince killed, he would command such a youth who'd just returned from Paradise, "Go thou and slay So-and-so; and when thou returnest, my angels shall bear thee back into Paradise. But shouldst thou die in the process, nevertheless, even so will I send my angels to carry thee back into Paradise."

With this psychological ruse the Old Man would motivate youths to transcend the fear of death. Usually there was no order that a young *Ashishin* would not obey, no peril he would not risk, so great was his desire to get back to Paradise.

In this manner the Old Man got his *Ashishin* to murder anyone he named. He inspired such dread in the princes of other kingdoms that they offered tribute to him in order that they might live in peace.

Marco Polo's story of early mind control has elements which bear a striking similarity to today's modern *Ashishin* of the cryptocracy.

In the 1950's the CIA smuggled a captive Soviet Air Force officer to the United States for interrogation. he was taken from a West Berlin prison to the CIA's Langley, Virginia, "farm" where he was interrogated at length. Once he'd begun to fear for his life, the CIA men showed him clemency. They took him to New York, where he attended a baseball game, and enjoyed a full sampling of the nectar of freedom. He was plied with wine, women, song, and, in the true American tradition, hot dogs.

After a few weeks of high living, the officer was returned to the West Berlin prison, where he was thrown into a dark cell. At an opportune moment he was allowed to escape. After the CIA had established that he was back at his post, flying the kind of aircraft they needed, they placed an ad in a Western paper which was circulated in the underground behind the Iron Curtain. The ad said that a certain group, not identified with the CIA, would pay $100,000 and arrange for political asylum for any pilot who would deliver the specified Soviet aircraft to the West.

A few days after reading the ad, the Soviet officer flew his plane to the West, collected his $100,000, gained political asylum, and entered the "paradise" he had glimpsed for only two weeks.

It should come as no surprise that many men will murder for simple, old-fashioned motives: sex, love, or money. One psychologist found that a sizable percentage of Americans would be willing to kill another human being if they were offered enough money and assured they would never be caught.

In 1976 a Pasadena, California, psychologist, Dr. Paul Cameron, put the murder-for-pay question to 452 persons. Those questioned were divided into groups. The first group included those who had already deliberately killed or attempted to kill another human being -- usually in military service. The second group consisted of those who had never attempted to kill another person.

The question was: "What is the least amount of money you would take to push a button to kill a person inside a black box -- if no one would ever know what you did?"

To Cameron's surprise, 45 percent of those who had killed before said they would be willing to push the black box button for an average price of only $20,000. Twenty-five percent of those who'd never killed said they'd be willing to commit murder for an average price of $50,000, about the price of a house in the suburbs in those days.

Mind control is not needed to motivate assassins; it is however, most useful to protect assassins and their employers from their own incriminating memories.

In the course of researching this book I talked with a number of retired intelligence personnel (from various government agencies) who had either committed assassination or admitted having heard tales of assassins in their work. Few had heard of an assassin being mind-controlled. One man I consulted, however, took a special interest in the stories of David and Castillo. A chemist who had worked for one of the intelligence research labs, he developed new ways for killing quickly and quietly. And he had met several of the killers who were to use his formulas.

Over a three year period I talked with this chemist on a number of occasions. He came to trust that I would reveal no names and endanger no lives in telling the story of mind-control. After hearing details of my research, he offered to introduce me to a man he had met while working at the lab. This man had been a high ranking officer in the military, retired after thirty years of service. He had served as an officer in World War II and Korea. During the Vietnam conflict because of his special knowledge of "black science," he was induced to sign on after he retired from military service as a private contractor for the cryptocracy. During the next eighteen years, he accepted several simple assassination jobs. He told the chemist about some of his friends having come back from similar missions with "holes in their memories."

The chemist had arranged a meeting in a noisy public restaurant in a small New Mexico town. Having promised to take no notes, I had secreted in my pocket the smallest tape recorder made, which allowed me to record three hours of the assassin's talk, amid clanking glasses and the general restaurant noise.

When I finally sat across from him, my heart raced. The retired assassin was a sixty-year-old man, gray haired, but as strong as a man twenty-five years his junior. He had a .44 magnum revolver strapped to his side, as did the man he introduced as his bodyguard. As a cover for the guns, he and the bodyguard both wore National Rifle Association patches sewn prominently to the pockets of their crisply pressed khaki clothes.

The chemist had already informed his friend about the book I was researching. As we sat down and were introduced by first names only, I told the assassin I was especially interested in finding out why men had been returned to civilian life with amnesia.

I mentioned the ad I had placed and the number of people who had responded. I mentioned also that the majority of those who responded, and who had reason to believe their minds had been tampered with, had been enlisted personnel.

Career officers, he explained, were legally bound by security oaths and economically dependent upon pensions and the privileges of rank, but enlisted personnel, while perhaps bound by an oath, were likely to separate from the service knowing more than they needed to know. Somebody had to man the high-technology instruments of war and those who were merely computer fodder had to be protected against their knowledge -- they could not be trusted. Patriotism, especially during the Vietnam era, was a waning motivation. Their memories had to be erased. But, he explained, mind control was not needed to make a killer. Professionals didn't usually need to be motivated. Most members of search-and-destroy or "executive action" teams were already willing to kill -- men, women, or children -- if their superiors ordered it.

I concluded that he meant a career killer didn't need to be debriefed by mind control. When I said that, he contradicted me. "You want to bet?" he said. "They'd all kill, but they might not be able to keep the secret. It would depend entirely upon what activities they were involved in, whether the assignment was combat, mop-up, search-and-destroy, political assassination, or whatever...

"This debriefing is done in such a way, in many cases, as to cause actual memory damage. As things have gone along and progressed, the techniques have been smoothed out, but memory damage still occurs. In certain cases memory recall is so critical that they bend over backwards to be damned sure that you can't remember.

"Many of the things that occur are not as pretty as you'd like the public to think," he said.

"So you've witnessed many atrocities of war?" I asked.

"I don't call them atrocities," he countered. "I call them military actions. There's a lot of conflict of interest there -- the politicians against the military..."

I let him rail a while about the evils of the government and then brought him back to my point of interest. "OK, who killed JFK, RFK, King, and who was behind Bremer?" I asked. He didn't remember who Bremer was, so I explained that he was the man who'd shot Wallace.

"Oh, yeah," he said. "Bremer was just a kook. But whoever got the Kennedys and King probably got a gold medal. (Evidence indicates that Bremmer was programmed at one of the cryptocracy's mind control academies.)

"We were set up to wipe Castro out. Kennedy interfered at the last minute. You want to take a guess at who killed him?... Oswald was just a patsy. I've fired the same kind of rifle Oswald was supposed to have used. You can't rapid-fire that thing like he was supposed to have done. Now who do you suppose killed Kennedy?

"...Don't kid yourself. This country is controlled by the Pentagon. All the major decisions in this country are made by the military, from my observations on the clandestine side of things.

"The CIA's just the whipping boy. NSA [the National Security Agency] are the ones who have the hit teams. Look into their records -- you won't find a thing. Look into their budget -- you can't. For the life of you, you can't find any way they could spend the kind of money they've got on the number of people who are supposed to be on their payroll. Even if they had immense research and development programs, they couldn't spend that kind of money.

"The CIA's just a figurehead. They are more world-wide -- like the FBI is. They're accountants, lawyers, file clerks, schoolboys. They are information gatherers. They've pulled a lot of goddamned shenanigans, I'm not going to deny that, but as far as intelligence goes the NSA's far, far superior to them -- far in advance in the 'black arts.'

"The CIA gets blamed for what NSA does. NSA is far more vicious and far more accomplished in their operations. The American people are kept in ignorance about this -- they should be, too."

"In other words," I responded, "what you're saying is the military is more dangerous to our democracy than the CIA or other intelligence groups?"

"The CIA gathers information, but the military heads the show. Look at how many former officers work for the multinational corporations. Can't you figure it out?"

"What are you suggesting, that there is an invisible *coup d'état* which has occurred in the United States?" I asked.

"OK. There is a group of about eighteen or twenty people running this country. They have not been elected. The elected people are only figureheads for these guys who have a lot more power than even the President of the United States."

"You mean the President is powerless?" I asked.

"Not exactly powerless. He has the power to make decisions on what is presented to him. The intelligence agencies tell him only what they want to tell him. however, they don't tell him any more than they have to or want to.

"You have to wonder at American stupidity. How much does it take to get people to wake up to what has happened? It's public knowledge that the CIA has falsified documents and given Presidents fake intelligence reports so that he can only arrive at one conclusion -- the conclusion they want him to arrive at.

"What people don't know is that the global corporations have their own version of the CIA. Where they don't interface with the CIA, they have their own organizations -- all CIA trained. They also have double agents inside CIA and other intelligence organizations who are loyal to those corporations -- I mean where's the bread buttered? Would you rather take the government pensions, or would you rather work a little for the corporation on the side and get both government pensions and corporate benefits after you retire? Most men retire after twenty years, and they're only in their mid-forties... then they go to work for the corporation they've been working for while they were in government service. They get both the pension and the corporate paycheck that way!

"Together with what the corporations do on their own, they have a worldwide espionage system far better than the CIA's. There is a network of what amounts to double agents -- they do work for the government, and may appear to be government agents, but they are first loyal to the corporations. They report to those corporations on the government and on what foreign governments might be planning which would interfere with those corporations foreign investments. These guys are strictly free enterprise agents."

"You call these guys contract agents?" I wondered.

"Oh, no, no, no... Take, for example -- we develop a new death ray. We've got the best security in the United States on it, which is tied in second place for the best security in the world. Tied for first place are the Russian and Chinese security systems.

"Now even with all this security, before FACI [First Article Configuration Inspection, the government's checking system on the manufacturing of military hardware] on a government contract -- that death ray is up for grabs in every nation in the world. Any amount of military security can't keep it secret."

"What you're saying," I interrupted, "is American people are selling secrets, wholesale, to the highest bidder? That is to say, I assume, if the highest bidder is an American company?"

"And even if it's not," he said. "Usually it is another nation. I've dealt with weapons and usually the nation that wants it most will pay the most for it. Once in a while these companies, these government contractors, will find that someone has stolen one of their secrets and there'll be a big flap. But the big boys in the military are an entirely different ball of wax... the big guys get away with it.

"When one of these companies finds someone inside it selling secrets, they take him on a fishing trip, a boat ride, and get rid of him. It's quite common," he said. "For example, if I was tied in with one of these companies where money is no object, and they wanted me to get rid of you, I'd obtain a passport or a duplicate passport with your smilin' face on it. After I'd obtained it, I'd put whoever's face on it I wanted. Then after we dumped you, that 'someone' whose face was on your passport would take a trip to Australia.

"Later your friends or family would notice you were missing and people would begin to inquire as to your whereabouts. Eventually they'd check with the Australian customs who'd say, yes, this guy entered the country on such and such a date. By then the guy who'd traveled over there on your passport would have already come back on his own, and as far as the best detective could tell you've gone to Australia and you've never come back."

"What do you know about the military or the intelligence agencies' use of pain-drug hypnosis?" I asked.

"They used several different things. I've seen, actually seen, guys coming back with blanks only in certain places of their memory. Let's say that I know positively, not by hearsay, that it's done."

"You've seen it?" I asked.

"You'll never get me to admit it," he grinned.

"Well, how is it done?" I asked.

"They use hypnosis and hypnotic drugs. They also use electronic manipulation of the brain. They use ultrasonics, which will boil your brain. When they use hypnosis, they'll at the same time be using a set of earphones which repeat 'You do not know this or that,' over and over. They turn on the sonics at the same time, and the electrical patterns which give you memory are scrambled. You can't hear the ultrasonics and you can't feel it, unless they leave it on -- then it boils your grey matter."

Unless the assassin had done the same research I had, he could only have known this through firsthand experience. The CIA documents released in 1976 revealed that ultrasonic research was undertaken for a period of more than twenty years. But the documents said the research had stopped, so I asked him about that.

"Yeah. The *research* has stopped. They've gone operational. It ain't research any more. They know how to do it," he said.

"Do you mean that it is your *opinion* that it hasn't stopped, or do you mean that you *know* it hasn't stopped?" I asked.

"I mean I *know* it hasn't stopped," he said. "For example, suppose that a dictator in some South American country is setting up real problems and we try to kick him out. We call in some of my former group and say, 'Look, the bastard has got to have a fatal accident, and it's gotta look good -- like he fell on a bar of soap and broke his neck in the bathtub or something.' So we go down there and get the job done.

"But it could be quite embarrassing if any of the guys were cross-examined about where they'd been and what they'd done... So the guys who were in on the job suddenly have a cold or something, and they are put in a hospital for maybe just a routine checkup. They come out of the hospital in about fifteen days. They're alive. They're well. They're healthy. And they're happy, too. Lots of luck if you question them: ***they don't remember anything.***

"That's one way it's used. The other way is to use it to improve memory -- say, with couriers. You want a secret message carried, outside the chain of command -- there's no need to have it carried by a person if it's a legal message because the military's got a thousand ways of sending messages which are unbreakably secret. But if it's ***outside*** the chain of command, as so many things are these days, if it's an illegal message, and our Constitution doesn't permit us to do much that is legal -- then you have a hypno-programmed guy carry the message. You improve his memory so he can carry an entire coded book of what appears to be gibberish, and when he's got it down you give him amnesia and seal off that message by a posthypnotic code word, and whammo! You got a real good secret courier, because he can be tortured to death but he can't remember. *Unless* the proper cue is uttered.

"Then if the courier's going to operate against the enemy, who might have the techniques of hypnosis down, you give him several layers of post hypnotic command. In the first layer, he'll confess a false message. In the second layer, he'll confess another different false message. Finally, maybe on the fourth or fifth layer is the real message.

"Our guy who is supposed to get the message knows that the first three cues, say, are fake, and he gives the fourth cue and out comes the correct message. If the courier was in enemy hands he could be there for years before anybody will figure out where he was in all those layers... Each identity will probably be that of a real 'cut out' -- a person enough like him, so the enemy will think that they've got the real guy.

"Many of the men in my unit were given assignments, after which they were so 'persuaded' they didn't remember anything. I mean to say, they'd gone in believing the only thing in life that meant anything to them was completing the assignment -- to get it done, and when they got done with it they couldn't remember anything about it."

"Could these guys have been that way without hypnosis?" I asked.

"Well, they could have believed their mission in life was that particular assignment. They usually had no family affiliations, no friends, nothing but their careers. But I don't think they'd have forgotten about those kind of assignments. Not without a little help, let us say."

"What was the conditioning these guys had? Was it drugs, hypnosis, or something else?" I wanted to know.

"Hypnosis, electro-therapy, programming them by tapes, by voice-over earphones, awake or in trance, or asleep. By a number of methods."

"How widespread was this mind control?" I asked.

"Well, I was -- well, that is something I can't really answer. I know of several different groups upon whom it was used. I know it was used in some of the hairier areas of Korea and Vietnam, and it was started in World War Two, but it has been refined far more since then. How much of it was used, I don't know. I know of several groups that I was affiliated with that had it used on them."

"Would you say this kind of thing did not exist before World War Two?" I asked.

"Oh, it did. But it was not in such a sophisticated form. It's as old as man, but now it is refined to an art. Before it was torture and psychological pressure -- that can accomplish a lot. We've been trained to use it in primitive field situations. But now it's done with the idea that the mind can be put under complete control. Just like they used to use rubber hoses at the police stations. They don't do that anymore. Well, rubber hoses still work, but they don't work as well as some other things which the police now have."

Are you saying the police also use mind control?" I asked.

"At the highest levels, yes. The FBI certainly uses it, and they, of course, give a lot of help to the local police. There are certain areas of the brain which control your inhibitions. When they control those centers, then the subject will go on with his assignment, regardless. I've seen men whose mother could be sitting there having coffee, and if they'd been instructed to kill her, they'd walk right in and shoot her, and it wouldn't even upset their appetites for supper. They were conditioned to do it in such a way that they have no guilt. They wouldn't have guilt because after they were through they wouldn't even remember it.

"Let me tell you something: the cheapest commodity in the world is human beings. Most assassins don't need to be programmed to kill. They're loyal to command. They're conditioned, first by the circumstances of their own early life, then by a little 'loyalty training.' The command is their only justification for living. It is also their only protection once they're into it...

"... When I came out of the service and went to work for the government, I had a colonel assigned to me as a bodyguard. When he retired I hired *him*," he said, pointing to his bodyguard. "He's still with me, and that's why we have these..." He pointed to the .44 magnum -- the most powerful handgun in the world -- strapped to his side in plain sight.

"Who are you worried about? The Russians? The Chinese?"

"Well, I'll tell you. You can damned near put a pin in the map anywhere you want. I got into military security before the Second World War. I was just a kid. Over the years I was assigned to thirty-two different countries. So you can draw your own conclusion."

"But what you've been talking about is a political action, not a military one. How, then, as a military security man did you get involved in political actions?"

"Well, suppose there were countries that were doing technological research on things which could be injurious to the welfare of the United States. I'd be one of the guys assigned to destroy those scientists who were involved in the research. That was with friendly *and* unfriendly governments. So, naturally, if they found out I was in on it, even now, they'd come after me.

"In other cases I was involved in knocking off some dictators. Then we'd change the people's voting ideas when they had to elect someone."

I returned to the main thread of our conversation. "OK now, since we have this mind-control technology, what is to keep the guys in the cryptocracy or the military, as you maintain, from programming Presidents as soon as they take office, or immediately after they get elected?"

"I have always wondered about Nixon," he mused. "He was very pro-military. He gave them just about everything they wanted in the world. But he wanted to create a monarchy with himself as king. And, slowly but surely, he tried to take over the military and the CIA through subordinate officers who were loyal to him only.

"All you hear about are left-wing conspiracies to overthrow our government. You never hear about right-wing conspiracies.

"Well, some of these right-wing groups are far more dangerous than the left wing. The left wing's mostly kids with dreams. The right wing is usually retired military. They're hard. They're trained. They've got arms. But if the right wing took over right now, there should be just a military dictatorship, and the military would find its best plans were not upset at all. I'm saying if a dictatorship took over. Hell, we've got one right now, but it ain't overt, it's subtle."

"You mean those twenty men you were talking about?" I asked.

"Yeah... if the people of this country actually knew, they would say 'no' the next time they were asked to go to Vietnam. We need the people behind us to fight a war, and if they knew the true facts, who's running things, there wouldn't be the following we'd need to defend the country. That fact alone keeps the sham of politics and 'free elections' going."

"If that is the case, then the results would be different?"

"Yes. If people knew they had a dictatorship. Have you ever heard of a factory slowdown, a strike? Well, Russia has run up against the problem, and so have we in supporting the foreign dictators we support. The American people like most people, have to feel that they have some right; that they're the 'good guys.' This is the reason we have never lost a war and have never won a peace.

"You've got to maintain the sham of freedom, no matter what. It wouldn't make any difference what party is in charge or whether it was the elected government or what you call the cryptocracy running it; from an operational sense, the government would operate as it presently is. From the point of view of people paying taxes and defending their country, well, we found in Latin America that people won't fight if they think they have a dictator who is just as bad as the enemy who is attacking.

"That's probably why it would be fairly easy to take over the Soviet Union, short of nuclear war. The Soviets could probably be convinced by psychological warfare that their government is certainly a lot more evil than ours. And if we went to war with them we could eventually win... That is until the H-bombs started to fall, then nobody'd be the winner."

Changing the subject I asked, "What area of the military were you involved in?"

"I don't think I ought to answer that. Let's say there was a group which first sought to solve problems politically. If that didn't work, then there was another group which went in and tried to buy solutions. If that failed, then my group was sent in to be damned sure things were accomplished the way we wanted them to be."

"So you were operational, and not research at all?" I asked.

"No I had been in the lab for a long time. The knowledge I developed was very valuable in an operational sense. I was put into the field because of this knowledge."

"You're talking about pretty sophisticated equipment, not commando stuff?"

"Right. For example, I won't say the name of the country, but it was a South American country. We had a leader that we had supported there who suddenly got the idea that he was going to go off on his own. They tried to reason, negotiate, buy off his affections. When all that failed, my team was sent in to correct the situation.

"We went in very quietly and left very noisily. We went in as tourists, but the important material we brought in was the turning point. Let's say we couldn't reason with the man anymore. We were there about six days, and the problem disappeared. Not many bodies, just the important ones."

The assassin was very specific telling about some of the jobs he'd accomplished. Several included actions taken against a well-known political figure -- that, the assassin said, was the only assassination he'd ever "blown." His rifle malfunctioned at the critical moment when he had his target in the crosshairs of his sight.

I cannot say that I had originally believed the assassin's claims, but after running the Psychological Stress Evaluator on all the critical portions of his interview, and finding no areas which unexpectedly or inexplicably produced stress, I believed that the assassin was telling the truth. The newspaper office he had men- tioned was bombed when he said it was, but he could have gained that knowledge from newspaper reports. The target of his unsuccessful hit was subsequently "taken care of" in another way which did not cost him his life.

The assassin confirmed many of my own conclusions which had been based only on research: that an invisible *coup d'état* had taken place in the United States: that the CIA was only the tip of the cryptocracy iceberg; and that ultrasonic, electronic and other sophisticated forms of memory erasure were used to protect "search-and-destroy" operators from their own memories. I've received anecdotal confirmation of this over and over since I did this interview. As I toured the U.S. and then Europe lecturing on this subject I was approached by a number of individuals who confirmed the information I'd heard from this assassin.

Before I interviewed this man, I'd had some indication that the cryptocracy had investigated such techniques (a 1951 CIA document had briefly cited the need for such research), but the assassin's disclosure in 1976 that the cryptocracy had developed invisible forms of sonic and electronic influences of the human brain for mind control sent me back to the libraries.

Here a 1940's beauty, maybe one of the first Monarch "Models", who stays obviously dissociated from the pain while the man (R) measures her blood pressure as she's pierced with a hefty needle (inset) by the man (L). Could the numbers be for programming like survivors describe today?

26

SLEEPER AGENT

Joe called me one day from Australia. I was still working on Grub Street as editor of *Palm Springs Life*. He told me what most of the victims of mind control have told me: "I read your book. You saved my sanity. I know now that I'm not crazy. Thanks so much for writing it."

That was reward enough for doing it, I suppose, but I didn't want to do it again. I wanted nothing more to do with mind control. I was burned out on the subject, so Joe got a polite but disinterested reception from me.

He kept up a correspondence with me anyway from the outback. At first his letters were fragmented, disjointed, mine were polite, encouraging, brief. I couldn't tell where he was coming from, but, what do you expect from a victim whose mind has been scrambled? He began by talking about some missing British Scientists:

During the 1980s at least 25 British Defense Scientists died in extremely unusual circumstances. None came to my attention until early 1987 when a scientist named David Sands did a high speed turn on a main road, drove down a slip road and slammed into a disused 'little Chef' cafe at an estimated speed of eighty miles an hour.

The police apparently thought it was an unfortunate accident, despite the fact there were no skid marks or signs of evasive action, nor any tangible reason for the car to enter the slip road at all. David, badly disfigured by some exploding petrol cans in the boot of the car, could only be identified from his dental records.

When I read the story it was early in the morning and I was sleepy. By the time I finished it, I was wide awake. In January 1986, my Ford Capri 3 liter Ghia had suddenly gone into a high speed spin on a narrow straight ice free road, with perfect visibility, for no good reason.

Later in-depth investigation by expert psychologists using both clinical and hypnotic procedures determined I had attempted a handbrake turn at over seventy miles per hour but had no conscious recollection of the event. The first I knew of the matter was finding myself desperately trying to use skid control techniques to correct the spin; well proven techniques that had got me out of trouble many times before when I worked near the snowbound Alaska highway in northern Canada.

My expertise proved of no use in January, 1986 because unknown to me at the conscious level my cars' rear wheels had been locked solid by the handbrake, making it impossible for the car to respond. I lived to tell the tale but was extremely lucky to survive the vicious impact.

Once again I read the article about David Sands and my disquiet grew. There was an uncanny similarity some where but I did not have the full details. In the end I checked the name of the person responsible for the story, Tony Collins of *Computer News,* promising myself I would call him the following morning.

My own story started in 1983 when I was approached to implement a drilling fluids project in West Bengal by HDF International, subsidiary of a massive American defense contractor. I was told from the outset, the project would be of a tripartite nature involving India, the Soviet Union and lastly myself representing the U.S.A. The fact I was an Australian rather than an American seemed of no concern to HDF International. Initially there were no problems at all. The Indians and Soviets were very friendly, with everything being prepared for the eventual change to the HDF high performance drilling fluid system. Although I controlled the HDF project in India, permission had been refused when I asked to select my own relief engineer who would look after the system if I was away or on rotating leave break. HDF was adamant its US headquarters insisted an American national fill the post. The man in question, Gerald Smith, told me immediately on arrival he knew nothing about the system we were to use...

I encouraged Joe to keep writing, for therapy, if for no other reason. Here are excerpts from another letter:

I recovered with the help of the professors and the Medical Foundation for Torture Victims in London. But they recovered only the relatively shallow 'decoy' hypnotic level induced in Calcutta. True memory-recovery of the deeper somnambulistic hypnotic level did not commence until the end of 1992, and when it did the shock almost killed me[112]... Clearly it would have been impossible to write the book in the first-person during 1991. At that time there were very few memories from 1983-84. ... (There are) savage fiscal penalties imposed on those who are unwittingly targeted with these techniques and then discarded if termination fails after the event. In the case of this family we lost our $175,000 house in England, and we lost my tax-paid annual salary of $105,000 from 1986 to 1994. In all that comes to nearly a million U.S, dollars net, and for the life of me I can see nothing wrong in trying to reverse the damage by selling the only thing available to me -- the truth. The memory-recovery of the deep Mike-Alpha- Delta-3 level came as a hell of a shock at the end of 1992 and was prompted, I think, chiefly by environmental factors.

---

[112] Vials, Joe, Letter to the Author, April 17, 1994

In mid-1991 I started writing articles about George Bush's personal war in the Persian Gulf, though 'war' is perhaps the wrong word to use. Massacre is probably more accurate when you've just slaughtered 72,000 innocent Iraqi women and children. At the time I was writing only about current events, and then the U.N. Security Council shifted its sights across to Libya and I naturally started to write about that as well -- once again in the current sense. Then in mid-1992 for no apparent reason I called the ABC and asked for a copy of all the footage they had on the assassination of WPC Yvonne Fletcher outside the Libyan People's Bureau in London during April 1984. After three requests I finally got the footage, then promptly wrote a comprehensive ballistics report and drew an accurate diagram of the killing zone from memory (?) on an assassination carried out eight years earlier. At that stage it never occurred to me I was doing anything unusual, or that ex-air force personnel don't write ballistics reports at all...

Towards the end of that year (late November or early December 1992) I was sitting quietly in our dining room late at night when I suddenly remembered I wasn't in India between 9 April and 21 April 1984. A few seconds later I remembered a few more details that pushed my blood pressure up to levels which later turned out to be exceedingly dangerous.

My first action that night was to tell my wife I hadn't been in India between those dates. Her (natural) reaction was to tell me that was rubbish - saying there would be company documents and personal letters in our files proving I was in Calcutta. We dragged the files out of storage and, unfortunately, they proved my point completely. There was a void space between those two dates: absolutely nothing in the way of proof that I'd been in Indian at all. However, there was conclusive proof that on 8 April 1984, while in 'transit' at the Holiday Inn in Singapore, I was provided with details of a certain Hughes office building in London, complete with the 24 hour contact telephone numbers of a senior Hughes vice-president.

From that point onwards memory-recovery was intermittent, but when it occurred it was crystal-clear. For a while I became very ill, with conventional drugs proving completely incapable of reducing my staggering blood pressure of 205/135. In the end it came back down to 130/80 with a lot of help from alternative medicine. That was a close call. It seems to me the brain has a 'stress-limiting' facility that shuts the thought processes down (in this case memory-recovery) if the body is under dire threat. That may have happened in my case, because it was not until November 1993 that most of the remaining details emerged. More shock and more high blood pressure, but by then I was learning how to cope with it - more or less.

Viewed subjectively, *all* memories remain intact but are somehow disconnected from each other after a mission -- something like a large roll of cine film cut into its individual frames, which are then scattered across the floor. The data is all there and complete with visual, audio and olfactory effects, but each frame has to be painstakingly put back in the right place for it to make sense. After a certain amount of memory is recovered the process seems to speed up, as though three memories recover three more each, then those nine recovered memories recover nine more each etc. A sort of accelerate 'exponential' effect very difficult to explain adequately in writing.

Seemingly it is quite easy to 'build' a second personality, so stories about induced multiple personalities based on childhood trauma may have been leaked as disinformation, or were simply not used in my case. The selection of appropriate potential candidates may be very important however. In my case I was simply 'locked into' an earlier age, with all details of future life events hypnotically suppressed. For all practical purposes I was 27 years old again and still in the military: a chillingly simplistic approach but devastatingly effective. For further details see *Mike-Alpha-Delta-3*, my novel. I think it highly unlikely that any unbalanced 'macho' individuals have been used on programs such as this, because they would tend to be unreliable. Incredibly, it seems far more likely that balanced, ethical individuals will have been carefully chosen, making detection almost impossible. Without a previous track record of psychotic behavior, most candidates would simply be 'computer-invisible' to police or intelligence service checks.
It may be that the techniques are still being used, though I am drawing a long bow in reaching that (tentative) conclusion...

The last 18 months have been more difficult to live with than the preceding eight years. I now have to live with a sequence of events that appall me, but am powerless to right the wrong...

Joe was having trouble remembering details, but as he began to write the details flowed. It were as if his "fingers" remembered. Still he was blocked, then he started writing his adventures as a "novel" in the third person and his mind freed up some more. Quickly he wrote a 110,000 word manuscript in the third-person. It was essential that he write in third person anyway, because of the assassination of WPC Yvonne Fletcher in St. James Square, London, exactly 10 years before. It was something his terrifying memories told him he was the trigger man on. How could anyone write such a thing in first-person and hope to stay out of jail?

A month later the next letter came from Joe:

Yes the (mind control) facility existed in central Morocco during early 1984, though I have no idea whether it is still there. That said, the accommodation was substantial and King Hassan III is still in the pockets of the US covert people. Why move the facility somewhere else under such favorable circumstances?

As to accuracy, the story is about as accurate as possible bearing in mind that there were periods where memory-recovery would be difficult i.e. when zapped-out by heavy drugs during parts of the process. The data on procedures is correct where appearance and equipment is concerned, but I was understandably never told exactly how the drugs worked in conjunction with the ELF fields, or how in turn they interacted to achieve accelerated learning ability, perceptual distortion, hypnotic control and post-hypnotic amnesia. There is more detail in parts 2 & 3 which provides a broader overview than part 1 alone. part 2 is attached for your own attention, while part 3 is taken from towards the end of the book, when X travels to London. Part 3 is the nastiest bit, a s you might expect.

...Don't stick with the idea that Special Operations specifically programs assassins. It would be more accurate to describe candidates as 'multi-role' i.e. capable of wide-ranging terrorist activity which happens to include assassination.

Number of Joe's? Three if you count the normal waking state i.e. 1. Normal waking, 2 Decoy level, and 3 Operational. But it still comes down to narco-electronic-hypnotic trickery and, at the very worst, a duality of personality based on modified but authentic behavior from a younger adult age. No misleading childhood trauma or other wobbly stuff like that. Hence my claim that 3. most will almost certainly be self-disciplined, well-balanced, ethical individuals with the right background. Certainly not undisciplined psychos from the funny farm, with the resulting extra-high requirements for control and training.

The following are excepts from Joe's "factional" novel, *Mike,-Alpha-Delta-3,* parts of which first appeared in *Nexus* magazine. Reprinted with permission of the author.

Otto Jewell lay strapped to the spotless white operating table while Special Operations technicians checked the electrodes on his scalp, and adjusted the two high-resolution lenses mounted directly above his head, designed to reflect images from the visual-input projector at the foot of the operating table directly onto the retina of each eye. On each side of Otto's head, two extra-low-frequency generators built into special headphones pulsed slowly and smoothly, enveloping both hemispheres of his brain with high-intensity electromagnetic fields.

Off to one side of the room was located the ELF generator control console, and a sophisticated electroencephalograph (EEG) linked to four green computer screens, each displaying one of Otto's four brain frequency groups: Alpha, Beta, Theta and Delta. As the generators pulsed slowly, the delta screen showed a brilliant green trace while the other three remained blank, apart from an occasional brief green 'spike' on the alpha screen. Directly beneath the four green screens a larger color screen was on standby, ready to repeat all data relayed to the retina of Otto's eyes by the visual-input projector.

To the left of the computer bank stood a standard medical array, monitoring Otto's vital signs including respiration, pulse and skin conductivity. All was well in The Terrorist Factory: Otto was sleeping like a baby and programming would continue as soon as the staff were ready.

CIA controller Julia Long nodded to the others and walked out of the climate-controlled operating room into the blazing hot Moroccan sunshine. Although it was still early in April 1984, the sun beat down remorselessly and Julia thought again how unfair it was that the 'special access' facility had to be sited in the middle of Morocco -- a country she personally found far too backward for her tastes. Unfortunately there was little choice as the US Congress had banned experiments on human targets back in 1973, at which point Special Operations had secretly moved the facility to Beirut in the Lebanon. She smiled bitterly to herself. Beirut had been wonderful, and ideally sited until the Russian military had blown more than two hundred US marines apart with a pair of special bombs.

Beirut was also an ideal launching point for her more normal 'clients': Arabs, including Palestinian refugees with a military background, programmed to believe they were operating under the direct orders of the PLO as they bombed their way across Europe, creating mayhem and fanning blind hatred against the nations of the Middle East. Most of the 'patriotic PLO terrorists' were killed during their missions of course, and those who survived could not provide their interrogators with any information at all, even under intense torture. US techniques in manufacturing electro-hypnotic dual personalities had been developed over a thirty-year period and were the very best, totally resistant to expert probing by anyone up to and including the Russian KGB.

It had never occurred to Julia Long that what she was doing was wrong. to her, the end justified the means entirely when spreading the doctrine of CIA 'democracy' across the globe. If a few dozen or a few hundred people had to die in front of television cameras in order to manipulate public opinion, then so be it. Julia was in the business of deliberately generating public anger by staging horrific, obscene operations that shocked the public via the television screen. After seeing bloodied, mangled bodies attributed to the PLO, Shining Path, or whichever group was selected by the CIA as the 'culprit' for the atrocity of the day, the public was happy to cheer the US bombers which then proceeded to blow the 'terrorists' and their wives and children off the face of the Earth. The fact no one would have died at all without the intervention of her small deadly Special Operations group was of no concern. For Julia, the world was run by CIA covert operations, and nothing else was of consequence.

As Julia sat in the hot sunshine smoking a cigarette, she thought briefly of Otto. It was nearly ten years since one of the facility's clients had been subjected to such an intense program although the rationale was inescapable: as an Englishman, Otto had to be word-perfect in every way, in the event he was captured and interrogated during the special mission planned for him in the West End of London.

It was one thing interrogating an Arab who was 'obviously' PLO; quite another interrogating an Englishman with a high-profile professional oil background. British Intelligence would pull out all the stops and try especially hard to break Otto if he were taken alive during or after the mission.

A little grimly, Julia cast a sidelong glance at the smoky Atlas Mountains in the background as she crushed the cigarette under her boot. She would allow no mistakes with Otto: not one. As she opened the door of the operating room, cool air controlled at exactly 68 degrees Fahrenheit swept over her. Taking her seat at the control console and donning a set of headphones, Julia turned with long familiarity and moved two sliding controls. Immediately the green trace on the delta screen started to diminish and the alpha screen came alive slowly with a full-lenth trace instead of the intermittent spikes.

As Otto started to show signs of stirring, Julia flicked a switch across to the 'binaural' position and the electromagnetic fields were thrown out of synchronization, flooding Otto's left and right brain hemispheres with fractionally different frequencies. The effect on Otto was to force his brain to try and 'match' the continually shifting frequencies. Unable to do so, his brain became entrained by the alternating beat. In less than ten seconds, Otto was in a full-blown electromagnetic hypnotic trance.

With high technology at its disposal Special Operations had not used "you are feeling sleepy..." hypnotic techniques for years, though a large team of tame, well-funded academics was held in reserve to assure the gullible public that hypnosis was "quite safe" and "could not be used to make a person act against his own personal moral code." Recalling the tame academics, Julia smiled a slow, sardonic smile: all Special Operations had to do was point a professor at the public, and his hurriedly-composed excuses were instantly accepted without question by citizens and media alike.

Julia swung around on her chair and spoke briefly to the team psychiatrist by the operating table: "I need maximum pupil dilation five minutes from now." With a mute nod, the heavy-set bearded psychiatrist turned to the drip leading into Otto's left forearm and waited as the drug slowly flowed into his vein. The powerful hypnotic drug rapidly reinforced Otto's trance state while a 'cocktail' derived from curare limited the movement of his eyelids. Nodding with satisfaction, the psychiatrist slowly started to administer atropine.

As the atropine started to take effect, the pupils of Otto's eyes grew steadily larger despite the intense overhead lighting and the eye's natural inclination to shut out light under such circumstances. The visual-input projector now had direct and unrestricted access to the retina of each of Otto's eyes. Julia spoke clearly into a special boom microphone positioned less than an inch away from her lips

"Okay, Otto, I am going to take you back to 1970 when you were flying over Oman. Do you remember the mission we talked about before, when your helicopter was covering the fighter-bombers attacking the fort occupied by Yemeni terrorists?'

"Yes," Otto replied tonelessly without moving a muscle.

"Right. You are there again in the cockpit just before the fighters started their attack run..."

* * *

...Ignoring the empty shell cases and black belt-links being ejected into the helicopter slipstream, Otto continued firing carefully spaced five-round bursts, until interrupted by Julia Long:

"Otto, report. Otto, report your current activity!"

"Air-to-ground suppressive fire."

"Good, Otto, very good! Listen carefully to my voice, listen carefully to my voice. I am relaying a new assignment to you from headquarters. You have been requested on an exchange program with Special Operations in Morocco. The security classification is Cosmic International, and you are promoted to the rank of lieutenant colonel. Open your eyes wide Otto, open your eyes wide. You are still flying on operations. You are still flying on operations...."

At the flick of a switch Julia Long turned on the projector at the foot of the operating table, the beam of which was promptly split and relayed directly to the retina of Otto's eyes by the accurate high-resolution lenses above his head. As new images started flickering from the projector, his detailed memories of the mountains of Oman started to shimmer and slowly dissolve, to be replaced by similar scenery passing more quickly.

When Julia increased the alpha field to maximum and decreased delta to minimum, Otto watched transfixed as his Northrop F5 fighter-bomber swooped low over the Western Sahara, firing a burst of 20-millimeter cannon shells at two enemy vehicles trying to escape behind a large sand dune. As the first vehicle exploded, Otto kicked off deflection and fired another burst at the second. With black flecks of soot from the cannon speckling his windshield, Otto pulled back viciously on the controls and slammed the twin throttles through the afterburner gate. For an instant in time, he looked down at the devastation below as green tracer shells weaved lazily around the wings of the F5.

The radio crackled in his headphones: "Good run, colonel, good run! Now get the hell out of there and return to base."

* * *

Still strapped to the operating table, Otto watched obediently as he and his aircraft broke off the action and returned to base. The runway threshold rushed towards him and with a very real screech from its tires the F5 settled gracefully on the tarmac, slowly decelerating and turning at the intersection to head towards the dispersal area and the waiting ground crew. A post-mission flood of adrenaline rushed through Otto, and Julia swiftly adjusted the alpha and delta fields to compensate for his rapidly increasing pulse rate and skin conductivity. After stabilizing his vital signs, Julia Long turned again and spoke once more into her sensitive boom microphone:

"We will now conduct our debriefing, colonel. The mission was a complete success. Listen carefully to my voice, listen carefully to my voice. you are tired from your mission and will be allowed to sleep. When you wake again, you will have forgotten all life events after the age of 27 years. I repeat, when you wake you will have forgotten all life events after the age of 27 years. All you will remember, I repeat, *all* you will remember is that you are a lieutenant colonel on exchange duties with Special Operations, at a classified base in Morocco for multi-role training required for your mission. Congratulations, colonel! Enjoy your sleep."

As Julia moved her controls, the green trace on the delta-wave screen slowly increased at exactly the same rate as the alpha trace decreased. Within minutes Otto lay passively unconscious, his sleep disturbed only by intermittent green spikes on the alpha screen. Once more Julia turned to the psychiatrist waiting next to the operating table: "Put him out for about eight hours please, then have the technicians take him to his room. Put a discreet guard outside, but don't worry, when Otto wakes again he will believe he really is a 27-year-old lieutenant colonel. He will remember nothinga bout his life beyond that point."

Under his busy eyebrows, the psychiatrist's eyes glittered slightly as he prepared the powerful tranquilizer and watched Julia Long as she strolled out of the room. Though in her forties, Julia was a very attractive woman capable of turning many male heads.

As Julia sat down a the table in the officers' mess and slowly stirred her cup of hot coffee, she thought back over the chain of events that had finally resulted in Otto being delivered to the 'special facility' in Morocco. Julia smiled a wan smile.

It was perhaps the height of irony that another Englishman, John Dwyer, had brought Otto to the attention of a retired American CIA operative in Salt Lake City, Utah. For years Dwyer had worked as a sub-contractor for the CIA's African desk, and thought Otto's qualifications might be of use to his masters at the Central Intelligence Agency...

...Discreet CIA inquiries revealed Otto spent much of his spare time at a rifle range near his home, so an 'accidental' meeting was arranged. Earl Haggard, a veteran of the notorious *Phoenix* psychological operation in

Laos, turned up at the range and casually befriended Otto. As the weeks rolled by, Earl became convinced Otto Jewell could be of great use to the Agency. As a top trouble-shooter in the oil field service industry, Otto had immediate and unquestioned access to almost any country in the world. His strong military background was also in his favor, as were his demonstrated lethal skills as a marksman with pistols, rifles and automatic weapons.

The question of how or where Otto might best be used by the CIA was none of Earl's concern, so, after sending a long, detailed assessment of Otto's potential to Langley Headquarters in Virginia, he returned to his favorite golf course and forgot all about the Englishman.

CIA headquarters in Langley showed immediate interest. It was not every day that an Englishman of Otto's qualifications was brought to the attention of its intelligence analysts -- one of whom noted Otto had spent much time in the Middle Eastern countries before carefully circling the single word 'LIBYA' with a bold stoke of his red pen. Otto's background pointed to his obvious use on covert missions under the aegis of Special Operations. Within a week, Otto Jewell's file was hand-carried by special courier to a small low-key CIA facility located in New Orleans, Louisiana, where it was placed in the 'in' tray of one Gordon Novel. From that point forward, only paper files would be kept on Otto: computers were far too vulnerable to researchers leaning on the CIA under the Freedom of Information Act.

Julia Long moved uneasily on her chair in the officers' mess as she thought about Novel, the man legend said coordinated the assassination of President John F. Kennedy in Dallas. Nobel was an animal: a known CIA heavy who took considerable pleasure in breaking limbs and, where necessary, shooting people though the back of the head with a heavy-calibre pistol. Most people in Special Operations were afraid of him and literally jumped to obey his every command. Julia was no exception and had all but sat rigidly to attention when he called her during 1983.

"Julia? Hi!" The voice was deceptively soft when Gordon Nobel spoke on the secure international landline from New Orleans to Morocco. "Listen, I have a new client for you, an oilman with a good, solid military background. Initially we intend to use him on a tripartite drilling operation in West Bengal, then we'll get around to his special mission a little later."

"Fine, Gordon, where is he now?"

"We just had one of Howard Hughes' subsidiary companies hire him as project engineer for a drilling operation near Calcutta. It's an interesting job: the Russians are helping the Indians to drill a deep oil and gas well in the Ganges delta, and our man is going in there to help them drill it with an advanced American fluid system. Or at least he *thinks* he's going to help them. The whole thing is basically a cover for the special mission he'll go on later, but he doesn't know that. We think it's a hell of a deal. We can really screw those Russian and Indian Commie bastards at the same time!"

..."Take your time, Julia. Have a couple of weeks' holiday, then fly to Dakar in Bangladesh. We'll arrange diplomatic cover for you and attach you to the local US AID team. From there you can go in and out of Calcutta as a diplomatic commuter. Your contact will be Louis McCaul at our local Calcutta consulate. He's in deep cover and there are no known documented links between him and the CIA or Special Operations. Louis will arrange for your special equipment to be carried in the diplomatic mail bag. The name of your new client is Otto Jewell, and he'll be staying at the Oberoi Grand Hotel. We've bought a couple of the hotel executives, so, access to Otto's room will not be a problem. Louis will arrange all that. Okay so far?"

Julia thought for a few seconds. "Okay Gordon. What do you want me to do with this Otto Jewell? In other words, what mission are we preparing him for exactly? I want to get the procedures right."

"On this mission we operate 'need to know', Julia. All you need to know at this stage is that you spend the first month or so observing Otto from a distance. Watch his behavior patterns carefully. We'll be doing our bit by screwing the Commies out at his rig site, so Otto will be under plenty of stress trying to figure out what the hell is going on. When you get word from me via Louis, I want you to start building a shallow 'decoy' hypnotic level -- not too easy to break, but not too hard either. Have your Marine technicians rough him up under hypnosis and threaten his children -- you know, the usual things. Make it as nasty as you can Julia, because if he's taken alive on the real mission early next year, that is all, I repeat, *all* that any interrogator is going to sweat out of him: the decoy level you develop in Calcutta. You'll get more orders later.'

* * *

Julia Long sat on the couch in room 352 at the hotel and relaxed with a glass of iced lime juice while looking carefully for tell-tale signs of her

Special Operations 'modifications'. There were none at all. both ELF generators were carefully concealed and had been calibrated so that each would deliver an equal strength electromagnetic field to each hemisphere of Otto's brain as he lay in bed or sat watching TV. The resulting effect was similar to conventional stereo, though these powerful ELF generators emitted no audible sound. The ELF generators sent out fields only in the range of human brain activity, at frequencies between 0.1 and 25 cycles per second. By varying the output of the generators Julia would be able to introduce a 'binaural split', where the electromagnetic fields from each ELF stereo channel sent fractionally different signals to each hemisphere, entraining Otto's brain with an electromagnetic beat frequency and rendering him powerless to resist conditioning.

Julia would only use extra low frequency 2.5 to 1.2 cycle Delta fields on Otto initially, as the program called for a shallow hypnotic trance to be supplemented by drugs. Once he was under basic control the team would be able to enter the room at any time without Otto's knowledge to physically condition him, after which the Delta field pattern would continue to be used every night to stabilize his sleeping pattern. A little later Alpha fields would be introduced, forcing Otto into a relaxed alert state while subliminal data was fed to him via the television.

Julia Long glanced across at the innocent-looking 22" Sony TV in its carved wooden cabinet. It was a state-of-the-art Trinitron model with a revolutionary tube providing far better resolution than other models. Resolution was very important because this particular television would be displaying two entirely different pictures to Otto at the same time: the first clearly visible to his conscious brain, with the second perceived only by his subconscious. As with initial hypnotic induction and post-hypnotic suggestion, special operations was way ahead of the academics. Most visual-subliminal techniques used by academic researchers and the media were based on simple 1/50th second flashing messages woven into the standard television frames: subliminal because they were too fast for the brain to see consciously, but far too crude for special operations.

Special Operations used fast, efficient full-frame color input that was also completely undetectable. In room 350 Julia Long had a series of VHS video tapes that would be used to interrupt the normal video films fed to Otto via the in-house hotel video system. They *looked* the same simply because they had the same film content as those shown in the hotel TV guide. Unfortunately for Otto, each of Julia's tapes had been subjected to a special editing process where ultra low-light images had been overlaid on the magnetic tape. Too dim to be detected by the conscious brain or by sophisticated ultraviolet analysis, every one of the thousands of images would be readily absorbed by Otto's subconscious. The Alpha fields from the ELF generators would force Otto to remain alert but completely relaxed. Experiments had proved full relaxation to be a critical requirement: a single stressful distraction lasting a millisecond could stop the subconscious 'seeing' any subliminal input at all.

As Julia Long finished her iced lime juice and walked out of room 352, she smirked to herself. Though dozens of earnest authors had warned of techniques such as these, the mainstream media had trashed every single one. Fortunately for Special Operations it was beyond the capability of Joe Public to believe that he or she could be influenced in this way, much less be brought under total control within minutes. In fact the ELF fields were quite capable of killing unwitting victims by remote control, as Special Operations had proved on numerous occasions.

There were politicians and scientists out there who persistently refused to heed discreet intelligence community warnings about their behavior, which in turn led to them being found dead in hotel rooms after apparently indulging in bizarre sexual rituals or drinking themselves to death. Too much of the same thing tended to draw attention, so the routine was occasionally varied with a few being programmed to take spectacular flying leaps from tall suspension bridges, drive into buildings at high speed, or hook themselves up to the electrical mains.

With normal targets the procedure was easy enough. When the ELF fields entrained the human brain with a binaural beat it was standard procedure to ensure that the target's breathing was brought under control. If starting in high Beta, slower Delta fields were steadily introduced to decrease the rate of respiration prior to full electro-hypnotic induction. In order to kill a target the silent ELF generators were turned up to full power in binaural mode. Completely at the mercy of the special operations controller, the target's physiology would be manipulated until systolic and diastolic blood pressures became identical, at which point the heart ceased to function and the target died. There was one drawback: powerful ELF fields always increased the level of serum-triglycerides in the target, which could prove embarrassing at post-mortem. It was a simple matter to splash alcohol into the mouth of the target after death, then throw a bottle of booze on his bed or into his car. Basic stuff indeed, but it was enough to fool most pathologists...

* * *

After supper in the hotel coffee shop Otto returned to room 352, showered and then climbed wearily into bed. Within minutes he drifted off into what seemed to be a natural dreamless sleep. It was no such thing. As soon as Otto lay down, Julia Long in room 350 switched on the highly-directional ELF generators, selected Delta band and flooded both hemispheres of Otto's brain with a powerful 2.5 cycle electromagnetic field. Switching to binaural, Julia adjusted the power setting and slowly started to decrease the Delta field frequency. Otto's respiration followed the silent beat and in less than 60 seconds his brain was entrained at the optimum somnambulistic hypnotic induction frequency of 1.2 cycles. Julia listened carefully to Otto's breathing, faithfully replayed to her by the 'pinhole' audio bug drilled into the separating wall between the two rooms.

"OK you two," Julia turned to her marine technicians. "Use the pass key and start the program. Be sure to cough before you approach the bed so I can turn the fields off. We don't want to knock you out as well, now do we?"

It was a rhetorical question. The marines had learned long ago that Julia was not given to idle backchat, so they quickly made their way from room 350 to room 352, Hank switching on a small battery-powered generator in his pocket, connected by concealed wires to an insulated pad stuck to the palm of his right hand. As they approached the foot of Otto's bed Hank coughed discreetly and one second later unclenched his right hand, placing it flat on the exposed skin of Otto's arm. Faster than a striking cobra, the powerful zapper discharged a five-microsecond pulse which temporarily paralyzed Otto's central nervous system, simultaneously destroying his spatial and time orientation.

Not wasting a second, Hank's colleague wrapped a tourniquet around Otto's arm, exposed a vein and swiftly injected sodium pentathol. the two marines were fast. From point of entry the entire sequence was complete in twelve seconds. both had done the same job many times before. Minutes later Julia slipped through the door carrying an aluminum briefcase from which she withdrew a special pair of headphones that the marines placed over Otto's head. The briefcase contained a miniature version of the laboratory equipment, designed to generate powerful electromagnetic fields in the immediate area of Otto's head without endangering the special operations team.

And so it was that Julia Long started to build a 'decoy' hypnotic level into Otto Jewell. In short sessions over two weeks he was trained to revert to a hypnotic trance only if given two complex trigger-words. Most evenings as Otto watched television he was unwittingly bombarded with subliminal films designed to enhance American 'patriotism', desensitize him to violence, and force him to respond immediately to orders presented at the deep subliminal level. His handling by the marine technicians was savage: Otto was beaten under electro-hypnosis and the marines warned him that if he failed to carry out their orders, his two young children would be sexually abused and killed. Slowly but surely, without his knowledge or consent, Otto was forcibly recruited as a lifelong member of Special Operations.

Once past the basic stage of induction Julia Long left Otto in the care of her two marine technicians, but continued to fly in occasionally from Morocco and Dakar to check on his progress.

* * *

The conditioning had gone well. In less than a week, Otto had been transformed from a 41-year-old oilman into a 27-year-old member of the RAF, and then converted into a patriotic 27-year-old member of US Special Operations -- all life events beyond that age being ruthlessly suppressed by electromagnetically-induced, drug-reinforced, post-hypnotic suggestion. There was no question of Otto Jewell being a 'zombie', however. He was a fully-conscious human being with a chronological age of 41 years, but with the memory and reaction times of a 27-year-old. Julia Long considered the new Otto a marked improvement over the old.

Where before conditioning Otto had been slightly hesitant, he was now supremely confident. As with all terrorists manufactured by special operations, Otto believed he was invincible and that nothing could go wrong with his mission. Where in India Otto had been overweight, he was not trim enough to slide easily into a Northrop Tiger. The intense stress induced by sustained exposure to ELF electromagnetic fields and visual-input, burned off weight faster than the most drastic diet ever devised by the medical fraternity. In all, Otto had shed nearly 30 pounds, virtually without moving a muscle. With his graying hair now dyed jet-black to match his own perception of himself as a 27-year-old, "Mike-Alpha-Delta-3" was indeed a new man.

Exactly at the prearranged time, Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 picked up the specially-shortened Heckler & Koch assault rifle from the table. The Heckler & Koch was fitted with a juno muzzle-brake on its stub barrel to muffle the direction of the shots, and a short-range parallax-corrected telescopic sight. He'd been briefed the flush ammunition-clip forward of the HK's trigger-guard held only five high-velocity fragmentation rounds, but they would be enough. Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 had been ordered to shoot for maximum media effect, and needed only three.

Carefully placing his left foot on the low table and cocking the Heckler & Koch with his left hand, he wound his left arm firmly through the sling to steady the weapon, then pressed the fire selector down to semi-automatic with his right thumb. Next, Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 rested the weapon alongside his left knee and took up the slack on the sling to reduce recoil effect. Because he was firing a long way back from the window to avoid detection, there was only a limited field of fire but he knew the killing-zone by heart. Looking through the scope and studying the area, Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 moved the weapon slightly until he could see the exact killing-zone and a small part of the inner pavement and central gardens.

Breathing slowly and steadily, Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 waited for the two quick flashes of light that would tell him the selected target was just about to enter the killing-zone. It was not up to Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 to pick random targets: that job was reserved for his special operations controller. A helmeted man in a blue uniform walked straight through the cross-hairs of his telescopic sight, but Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 ignored him. Then there were two brief flashes of brilliant white light in the upper left quadrant of the scope, and his finger automatically took up the first pressure on the Heckler & Koch's trigger. One second later, a slim, blond woman walked slowly into the cross-hairs of the telescopic sight.

Mike-Alpha-Delta 3's eyes showed no emotion, his strict code of conduct completely destroyed by covert conditioning: the target had to die to protect true democracy for the world as a whole. His trigger-finger a blur, Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 fired three aimed shots so fast, the muzzle blasts blended into a single cacophony of sound that echoed round the square. the first bullet hit the woman in the stomach and she doubled over, her hat flying into the gutter, while the second and third bullets exploded on the inner pavement, hurling shrapnel into the small crowd of demonstrators. Mike-Alpha-Delta-3 turned swiftly away from the table and removed his balaclava. then, as he walked downstairs and closed the back door of 8 St. James Square softly behind him, the carefully precalculated media hype started in earnest:

"This is an urgent news flash. Minutes ago, shots rang out from the Libyan People's Bureau at No. 5 St. James Square..."

And so it was that Julia Long achieved her objective of creating intense public anger by staging an obscene mission that shocked the British public. As the news flashed round the country, millions were outraged by the slaughter in St. James Square, their perception of the Libyans forcibly distorted for all time. Less than 24 months later, US F-111

bombers took off from British bases and headed south to destroy the "terrorists" responsible, and their wives and children.

With the British media pack in full cry, the American bombers launched a premeditated attack on the civilian populations of Tripoli and Benghazi in Libya, and special operations scored a small personal bonus – a token sacrifice for true democracy for the world as a whole. Colonel Al Qadhafi's fifteen-month-old daughter, Hannah, was murdered by a monstrous 2,000-pound laser bomb, guided unerringly to its tiny target by an American F-111 bomber. Listening to the news on the radio, Julia Long nodded approvingly as she lit a cigarette, before turning triumphantly to her two Marine Special Operations technicians. "That should teach the terrorist sonofabitch a lesson, huh?"

* * *

The feedback I've gotten on Joe's description of the programming is: it's close, but not quite exact. Later we'll discuss the various forms of electronic programming and hear from experts and other survivors. No need to split hairs, Joe's book needs to be published. It tells things like they are in the world where the long tentacles of the CIA entwine with the slimy gums of MI-5.

Due to British fear of the Official Secrets Act, no U.K. publisher has yet published Joe Vialls' book, *Mike-Alpha-Delta-3.*[113]" Joe might just be an author of the stature and sales potential of Tom Clancey, but under the curious customs of the Realm, Joe is ignored and banished to the out-back because the Kingdom's fear of officaldom is stronger than the Kingdom's passion for the liberation of the human spirit, for truth, justice and ... say, wasn't England the original home of Common Law? (See the film *Defending The Realm.*)

---

[113] Joe Vials can be reached at 45 Merlin Drive, Carine, WA 6020, Australia; phone: 61 9 246 2029.

If Joe Vialls' story of CIA and British secret service entanglement in a brainwashing conspiracy isn't true, he is either crazy or a brilliant pathological liar. He says he is neither . . . and three of Britain's top psychologists agree with him. This is his story.

MIND GAMES

MIND control through hypnosis, drugs or psychological techniques is generally regarded as being the preserve of spy novels.

Until recently few people would have taken seriously the suggestion that governments might have the technology or desire to control peoples' minds.

But the mysterious and violent deaths in Britain of 22 scientists working on secret defence projects have stirred the public interest. Could so many deaths since 1982 be a coincidence?

One man with a vested interest in that puzzle is Joe Vialls, who returned to Perth with his wife and two children from England in 1988.

Mr Vialls believes the deaths of the scientists and a series of bizarre events that have plagued him may be linked and that US and British secret service agents have tried to brainwash him into killing himself.

MARK THORNTON reports.

JOE VIALLS went to see a psychologist in 1986 because he had suffered a series of blank periods in his memory.

An intelligent, rational man, he could not understand how several hours of his life could completely vanish. He had very black suspicions about the causes but wanted a psychologist to find out.

For three years he bottled up his fears, keeping them from everyone except his wife.

After all, who would believe the psychologist's finding that he had been subjected to intense subliminal psychological pressure designed to make him go crazy or kill himself?

Who would believe he was being persecuted by US agents for supposedly allowing Russian oil specialists access to classified American drilling technology?

Psychologist Raymond Seal put Mr Vialls into a hypnotic trance to try to find what was destabilising his subconscious mind.

He discovered not only that Mr Vialls was unwittingly placed in a hypnotic trance on one specific occasion two years earlier but also that a strong post-hypnotic block was placed in his mind to stop him recalling any details of the event.

"I was at this point convinced that Joe was genuine and that for reasons unknown to me he had been hypnotised unknowingly at some time and very strong post-hypnotic suggestions made which were still affecting his life," Mr Seal said.

Although this revelation was alarming, it was also a relief to Mr Vialls who at last knew there was a reason for his memory lapses and, as it turned out, a series of other bizarre events.

His wife Marilyn naturally shared his relief. She had felt helpless as she watched her husband struggle to understand what was happening. She was under great pressure trying to deal with her own fears for her husband and their two children.

Mr Seal's findings that Mr Vialls' mind had been meddled with prompted Mr Vialls to seek further expert help from some of England's most eminent psychologists.

Then his chance reading of a story about the mysterious deaths of British scientists working on secret defence projects gave further pointers as to what was happening. The story described how two scientists died violently during 1986 and two more died early in 1987.

British journalists later revealed the first suspicious death occurred in 1982 but it was not until 1986, when the frequency of deaths increased, that the pattern emerged. It has now been established that 22 scientists have died since 1982.

Most of them worked on secret projects for the Ministry of Defence but the British Government has consistently denied the deaths are linked.

Yet with so many dead in unusual circumstances and with seven of the men having worked for one defence contractor, Marconi, the Government stance that the deaths were coincidence has been questioned not only by the public but by the US Defence Department.

The US concern arose because a number of the scientists were working on British contributions to the Star Wars program.

Most of the deaths appeared to be suicides but coronial inquiries could not confirm this. In most cases open verdicts were recorded.

Some of the deaths were bizarre: one scientist died after tying a rope around his neck and the other end around a tree and driving off in his car. Another, Brigadier Peter Ferry, killed himself by carefully placing bare wires from an electric socket in his mouth and turning on the power.

But the most dramatic death was that of radar defence systems scientist David Sands.

In March 1987 Sands loaded his car with cans of petrol and drove it at high speed into a disused cafe. The car exploded in a fireball and police were only able to identify his remains from his dental records.

What added to the intrigue about Sands' death was that he did a U-turn at high speed on a main road before driving back to the cafe.

"Why he should choose to do a U-turn one can't explain," said Coroner John Clarke.

Many people, such as Joe Vialls, are beginning to wonder whether the scientists were murdered — were given subliminal hypnotic messages persuading them to kill themselves — by some unknown group.

Mr Vialls believes the theory because he says the same techniques were used on him.

In January 1986, Mr Vialls also executed a high speed U-turn the same way Sands did later. But Mr Vialls lived.

During his examination of Mr Vialls, Mr Seal said he must have been in a hypnotic trance when he began the manoeuvre. He realised what he was doing only after the car was already spinning out of control at 120km/h.

Mr Seal put Mr Vialls in a hypnotic trance and asked him to relive the high-speed turn. Although unable to speak because he experienced intense pain from the recollection — pain caused by a post-hypnotic block — he mimed the manoeuvre.

To this day he cannot repeat the manoeuvre unless he is in a hypnotic state.

While Mr Vialls was not a scientist doing secret defence research, he did have extensive knowledge of classified US drilling fluids systems. These systems can improve well production by up to 50 per cent. He is an international expert in the operational application of "invert drilling fluids" used to enhance deep oil well drilling.

In 1983 the American Hughes Corporation hired Mr Vialls to help provide an invert fluid system for a very deep well in West Bengal for the Indian Government. He was responsible for implementing the system.

At the time he did not know the Americans regarded the system as classified and did not want any foreign power to have access to it.

So when they found he was using it in India, a country known to be friendly with the Soviet Union, and working at a well with several senior Soviet scientists from the Moscow Institute of Drilling Technology, they sabotaged the well, Mr Vialls said.

"The reason for the sabotage eluded me at the time but I was informed that the Soviets were responsible," he said.

"Data I acquired long after the event indicated the USSR does not have such an advanced invert fluids system and would therefore have been more interested in observing rather than damaging it.

"Although I was unaware of it at the time, which was well before glasnost and the thaw in US-Soviet relations, even a 2 per cent increase in Soviet oil production would have been viewed as catastrophic by the West.

"It seems logical to assume after the event that what was probably intended was a carefully planned exercise in disinformation, where the Soviet scientists who were convinced these systems were of huge benefit, would be presented with a visual display of such instability that, certainly to their superiors, the subject and the system would be rejected as unsuitable."

But Mr Vialls reversed the careful sabotage, which was no simple explosion but a planned misuse of certain chemicals in the fluid to stop it working correctly.

He restored the fluid system and got the rig drilling again.

The system was sabotaged again, this time more crudely when 106 barrels of diesel fuel — 16,852 litres — were bled into it. He saved it once more.

In hindsight he believes his persistence made him a target for the American Central Intelligence Agency which began subjecting him to subliminal psychological harassment, an opinion his psychologists confirmed.

He continued to contact the Indian authorities long after he left West Bengal to find out what finally happened to the well. No one would tell him. Even the project managers refused to comment.

During the early months of 1984 he began to feel under extreme pressure even though his workload was not great and the repaired fluid system was working perfectly.

He also started noticing strange audio effects in his room at Calcutta's Oberoi Grand Hotel. One night he left a tape recorder running while he slept and was disturbed the next morning to find a loud pulse on the tape which appeared to control his rate of respiration.

He also suffered irregularly from hallucinations, the most disturbing being one when he saw his wife and children back in England under great danger from a nameless terror. He later realised the hallucinations were more structured attempts to get him to leave India.

In June 1984 he returned to England for some scheduled leave. He contacted police Special Branch and gave them all the information he had as well as the tape of the pulses in his hotel room.

"Clearly Special Branch would have no oil expertise of its own and thus any evaluation of the data, with special reference to the drilling itself, would have almost certainly been obtained from a major British oil company," Mr Vialls said.

"This particular company keeps coming back into the picture in all this intrigue. I believe the company would have been as alarmed as the Americans by any jump in Soviet oil production rates had they learnt the potential of the advanced fluids system."

But he was told nothing of the police probe and returned to India to finish the well.

He later found the police "inadvertently" wiped the tape he [illegible] an enquiry into how it happened through the Police Complaints Authority and was rewarded with a written apology — but the fact remained the police allowed vital evidence to be damaged.

The average person with a healthy streak of cynicism will by now wonder whether Mr Vialls suffers paranoid delusions. It is a natural first reaction. But there is more evidence in his favour.

Back in England he was soon offered lucrative jobs, as expected for a man with his expertise. One was with a small English company and another was with Drilling Fluids Consultants in Holland who offered a $100,000 a year after tax package. He accepted the second offer.

But within a week of being hired as one of the company's most highly paid consultants, blatant pressure was brought to bear through sudden demands for him to appear at rigs when it was impossible to get there in time.

ACCUSATIONS of incompetence followed. Then, in January 1986, he was asked at short notice to see his boss more than 100km away. The interview lasted only an hour but it appeared the man already had the answer he wanted Mr Vialls' response to.

Within a few days he was asked to take another long journey, this time to Aberdeen in Scotland. After his arrival he was kept waiting several hours before being asked one question to which his boss again already had the answer.

At the time he should have been driving north to Aberdeen he had his mysterious car accident. He phoned his boss to say he could not make the appointment but was told to get there or else. He arrived by train, wearing a neck brace because of his injuries.

Bemused, he returned south and changed job locations and began supervising land drilling rig fluid systems operated by another major British oil company. On these rigs he was again subjected to psychological harassment. He was asked to implement procedures which he knew were ineffective and in some cases "downright dangerous".

He said the experiences induced high levels of anger and frustration and within days of returning home on leave he was fired and all his assets were frozen.

It was then he decided to seek psychological help. The problem was he did not even know what sort of help he needed.

● Continued Big Weekend 2

Joe Vialls: unwilling victim of a hypnotic trance. Picture: TONY ASHBY.

Joe Vialls story covered two full-sized newspaper pages in *The Western Australian* in 1988.

Deadly hypnotic conspiracy feared

● From Big Weekend 1

BUT Mr Vialls wanted to know one way or the other whether he was going crazy or if his experiences were the result of a carefully orchestrated campaign by someone with a vested interest in keeping him quiet.

"I asked a clinical psychologist what he thought would be the most likely effect on a person firstly subjected to heavy psychological abuse and then fired without pay. I was told the likely effect would be deep depression and possible suicide."

The first psychologist he saw was Raymond Seal. He specifically wanted Mr Seal to explain how he had a two-hour period of amnesia in his Calcutta hotel coffee shop. It was just one such incident of many but he thought that if one example was proved, he could then take the matter further. After Mr Seal's confirmation that he had been "got at", Mr Vialls began the push to clear his name.

But after he was fired by Drilling Fluids Consultants he found he could not get a job anywhere, despite his qualifications. Later, he took DFC to an industrial tribunal in England and won a damages settlement out of court for wrongful dismissal. In the meantime, he remained unemployed for several months.

He turned to England's Medical Foundation for the Care of Victims of Torture. He felt the experience of the foundation's consultant-psychologists in mental as well as physical torture might be able to shed more light on the unusual pressures to which he had been subjected.

THE INDEPENDENT Wednesday 1 April 1987

Scientists' deaths being linked to work on defence

A British newspaper account of the conspiracy theory after the bizarre death of radar defence systems scientist David Sands in March, 1987.

The foundation arranged for him to see an independent expert, Dr Eric Ward, principal clinical psychologist at Hackney Hospital. After an examination, Dr Ward told Mr Vialls to stop worrying about his sanity — he had every reason to be concerned. What had happened to him was real and certainly not in his imagination.

It was Dr Ward and the foundation's director, Mrs Helen Bamber, who suggested Mr Vialls had much to fear from the US. They advised him and his wife Marilyn not to work for any American company or a subsidiary of a US company. When Mrs Vialls told them the family was planning a visit to Disneyland on the way to Australia, Dr Ward very strongly advised against it.

Mr Vialls now had two experts telling him his personal struggle was justified. He began wondering whether he should tell the media about his experiences and this caused consternation at the foundation.

Mrs Bamber said Mr Vialls should be interviewed by three independent experts — two psychiatrists and one psychologist — and, unless their opinion was unanimous, the foundation could not support his claims. In the event there was both support and scepticism for him.

But even at the foundation Mr Vialls ran into problems. After the early sympathetic hearings and interviews he, his wife and Dr Ward were suddenly confronted by Mrs Bamber who said the foundation's chairman of trustees, Professor Bernard Knight, the Home Office forensic pathologist, was angry about Mr Vialls' theory on what had caused his problems.

It appeared Professor Knight was particularly concerned Mr Vialls might go public with his claims and if he named the foundation as supporting him it could be "smeared" by the media. Dr Bamber said the foundation might take legal action to prevent him using any of its material.

Mr Vialls' reaction was one of horror. He was already under considerable stress and now the very organisation he had turned to for help was putting up barriers.

He later found Professor Knight had performed one of two autopsies on Mr Vimal Dajibhai, one of the Marconi scientists who died in mysterious circumstances. Mr Vialls discovered this piece of information by reading a detailed press report written by Roulston's Press Agency of Bristol on March 20, 1987.

But while the results of one autopsy by a Bristol pathologist were carried by the British press which picked up Roulston's story, Professor Knight's name and the fact he had also performed an autopsy, were not mentioned.

The healthy sceptic will again be wondering whether Mr Vialls' "problems" are delusions, if his seeing conspiracy at every turn is a classic symptom of paranoia, despite what Dr Ward and Mr Seal said. But he had reason for suspicion. All at the foundation had been very helpful until Professor Knight, a senior government official, had intervened.

Fortunately for Mr Vialls, the experts who believed his story stood by him — and still do.

In the meantime, Mr Vialls had been out of work for nearly a year. Then came two job offers at once, both very lucrative. But there was a catch. One of the offers was from a big British company with which he had previously had trouble. Bearing in mind his suspicion about that company, he rejected its offer and within two weeks the second offer was withdrawn.

"Brilliant scientist" David Sands met the Duke of Edinburgh while working as a contractor on a secret three-year project for the Ministry of Defence.

His most prestigious supporter has been a psychologist of world renown, Professor Lionel Haward, former head of the Department of Psychology at Surrey University and author of *Forensic Psychology*, a reference book used internationally.

Professor Haward has now retired. I wrote to him at his home in Chichester, asking him to expand on his report about Mr Vialls.

He wrote back: "I must admit to being disturbed by the lack of objective and tangible proof at first — I really could not see how Joe had the basis for fighting this thing, much as I believed him, and I advised him to disappear to Australia and let the whole thing rest.

"Fortunately, he ignored this suggestion and, although much of what he offers is circumstantial evidence, there is now such an accumulation of consistently supporting facts that the odds against them being unconnected are astronomical."

On the subject of Mr Vialls' mental stability, Professor Haward summarised his clinical examination: "He proved to be a basically stable and robust individual, devoid of psychiatric signs or symptoms, apart from some bulldog-like obsessionality which acts as a drive for the immense tenacity he shows in searching for, and getting to grips with, the sources of the adverse events disrupting his working life in recent years.

"I confidently discounted any paranoid condition and was therefore prepared to accept his account as true — however bizarre it appeared *prima facie*.

"My understanding is that Mr Vialls has two main goals — to protect himself and his family from possible malevolent forces and to expose the nature of the latter so that other citizens may be better able to defend themselves."

In his report to the Medical Foundation, Professor Haward wrote that Mr Vialls was highly susceptible to hypnosis, post-hypnotic suggestion and post-hypnotic amnesia.

THIS means he could be easily hypnotised to do something, even hallucinate with vivid imagery, and obey commands implanted during hypnosis long after — perhaps years after — he was brought out of his hypnotic trance. This could explain the car U-turn and the hallucinations of dangers to his family.

Confirming Mr Seal's findings, Professor Haward wrote: "He develops complete amnesia for selected experiences which are resistant to probing, even by the hypnotist creating the amnesia.

"On the basis of these tests, I have no hesitation in declaring Mr Vialls would be extremely susceptible to clandestine hypnosis and to post-hypnotic suggestions of the kinds (he has) described."

Last year, Mr Vialls discovered a book written by US investigative journalist Walter Bowart called *Operation Mind Control*.

Bowart spent six years researching psychological techniques used by governments, notably his own, to control individuals or groups of people. He spoke to both former and current US and British intelligence agents and obtained hundreds of CIA documents through freedom-of-information laws.

He uncovered a US Government "cryptocracy" with both the will and ability to control human minds. Through hypnosis and drugs, citizens became CIA zombies — human computers, spies and trained assassins with no control over or consciousness of their actions.

Only unexplained memory gaps, or a separate personality which emerged on a given trigger cue, showed the victims that something was amiss with their minds.

Bowart said former CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner confirmed to him the agency had used both drugs and psychological techniques in mind-control experiments. But Bowart found the CIA was amateurish in such techniques compared with the British.

"The Brits are very sophisticated and, in my experience, better craftsmen than the Americans who, after all, have no Official Secrets Act and no tradition of clandestine service," Bowart told Mr Vialls.

He was naturally very interested in Mr Vialls' story because the techniques used against Mr Vialls were exactly those he had discovered during his research. But Bowart said Mr Vialls might be wrong in assuming the CIA was behind his psychological attacks. The British secret service may have been the prime movers in collusion with the CIA.

After his book was published by Collins with an initial print run of 100,000 copies, word got around the "underground" that there was someone on their side.

Bowart told Mr Vialls: "One day a phone call came from someone in the UK. Women were protesting (I think it was the transport of radioactive wastes) near Gatwick Airport. The women were suffering from strange effects — anomalies with their menstrual cycles, retinal burning, inner-ear problems, all sorts of rapidly growing tumours, odd sorts of female troubles such as spontaneous abortions, etc.

"It sounded like 'barrier warfare' microwave technology was being used against them. I suggested they put tinfoil over their tents. This they did and the effects stopped."

Strangely, though Bowart's book sold out, he was not able to find any copies of it for sale. He believed someone who did not like its revelations (the CIA?) bought the lot. And despite the book's best-selling status, Collins refused to reprint it.

When Mr Vialls told Professor Haward about the book, the professor searched England for it without success until he eventually found a copy in the library of an obscure private girls' school.

DESPITE all the evidence to support his case, Mr Vialls has been unable to convince any authorities that his story is true and should be investigated.

He brought his wife and their two children to Perth on the advice of Professor Haward and others, the theory being WA was sufficiently far away from anywhere for him to be a threat to his persecutors so they would leave him alone.

Mr Vialls eventually decided that having his story published in the media would end the saga. Once he was in the public eye he felt it would be difficult for anyone to continue harming him. But, more strongly, he also felt that other people should realise that governments were prepared to use dirty tricks against their own innocent citizens.

He decided to write a book about his experiences and contacted Collins in Sydney. On the first contact, Collins' agent was enthusiastic, offering help. But on a follow-up call several months later, Collins had a complete change of mind, saying the book would not sell and it was no longer interested.

Mr Vialls wondered. Was the change of heart a commercial decision after advice from senior executives? Or was there another reason?

He tried writing the book anyway but found that as soon as he began to operate the keys of his word-processor he suffered intense pain. Yet he could write about any other subject. Only when he tried to write the story of his mental harassment did he feel the pain, suggesting another post-hypnotic block.

Today, he manages to find consulting work on WA drilling projects but nothing that calls for his extraordinary knowledge of invert fluid systems.

He is a man in limbo, not beaten by the system yet neither has he beaten it. But he will not give up. He thinks. He works. And waits …

27

DEEP PROBE

Jose Delgado stood sweating in the center of a bull ring in Madrid. He was sweating from the heat of the sun reflected on the sand. He felt a twinge of natural fear as the door at one end of the walled ring swung open, and a huge black bull lunged forth from the darkness into the *plaza de toros*.

This was a very good bull, one the best *matador* would have desired. It charged as if on rails, straight at Delgado. In front of a ton of black beef, two sharp horns aimed to gore the vital parts of his body.

Delgado stood face to face with the charging Andalusian *toro*. But Delgado was no *matador*. He stood in the ring alone in his shirtsleeves. He wore no "suit of lights" and he carried no cape. Instead of a sword, he held only a little black box.

He wanted to wait until the last possible moment, but he could not contain his fear. When the bull was thirty feet away, he pressed the button on the box. The bull immediately quit his attack and skidded to a halt. *Toro* looked right, then left. Then, as if bewildered, he turned his broad side toward Delgado and trotted away.

From the stands it was difficult to see the metal box between the horns which held that small radio receiver which picked up Delgado's signal and transmitted it as an electric impulse through a probe inserted into the center of the bull's brain. Delgado was not living out the boyhood fantasy of being a *matador*, nor was he demonstrating his bravery. he was demonstrating his faith, as a scientist, in the power of electronic brain stimulation.

Jose Delgado was a neurophysiologist at the Yale University School of Medicine. By 1964, when he made his dramatic demonstration with the bull, he had already been experimenting with electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB) for nearly two decades. His work, supported by the Office of Naval Research, had been inspired by the Spanish histologist Santiago Ramon y Cajal, who said that knowledge of the physicochemical basis of memory, feelings, and reason would make man the true master of creation. Cajal suggested that man's most transcendental accomplishment would be the conquest of his own brain, and upon this premise Jose Delgado began his relentless quest to make his mentor's dream come true.

"From ancient times," Dr. Delgado said, "man has tried to control the destiny of other human beings by depriving them of liberty and submitting them to obedience. Slaves have been forced to work and to serve the caprices of their masters; prisoners have been chained to row in the galleys; men were and still are inducted into the armed forces and sent thousands of miles away to create havoc, take lives, and lose their own.

"Biological assault has also existed throughout recorded history. In ancient China, the feet of female children were bound to reduce their size. In many countries thieves have been punished by having their hands cut off; males have been castrated to inhibit sexual desire and then placed as eunuchs in charge of harems; and in some African tribes it was customary to ablate the clitoris of married females to block their possible interest in other men and insure their fidelity."[114]

The Spanish-born Delgado believed that, thanks to electronic brain stimulation, science was at last on the verge of "a process of mental liberation and self-domination which is a continuation of our evolution." He believed that through the direct manipulation of the brain, society could produce "more intelligent education, starting from the moment of birth and continuing throughout life, with the preconceived plan of escaping from the blind forces of chance."

Delgado believed that by direct influence of the cerebral mechanisms and mental structure it would someday be possible to "create a future man... a member of a psycho-civilized society." He said the needed research could not be "generated by scientists themselves, but must be promoted and organized by governmental action declaring 'conquering of the human mind' a national goal at parity with conquering of poverty or landing a man on the moon."[115]

Delgado insisted that brain research was much less expensive than going to outer space and would produce benefits to society equal to, if not greater than, those produced by space technology.

By the time Delgado's remarks were published, the cryptocracy had already come a long way in developing the techniques to create the "psycho-civilized society" Delgado dreamed of. Delgado himself had been funded by grants from the cryptocracy but, like other researchers, was kept isolated and compartmented. He had no way of knowing about the other government-directed brain control research that was going on simultaneously with his own. A number of government agencies were actually at work on projects similar to Delgado's. Through these projects the cryptocracy had gained the technology for direct access to the control of the brain and through it, the mind.

---

[114] Jose Delagdo, *Physical Control of the Mnd* (New York, Harper, 1969)

[115] *Ibid.*

In 1949, Dr. Irving Janis of the Rand Corporation had recommended the air force undertake a study of the "effects of electricity on the brain." His report said that, in research based on the literature of the 1940's, there were at least some indications that electric shocks to the brain might be conducive to mind control.

Janis wrote: "Many studies have shown there is a temporary intellectual impairment, diffuse amnesia, and general 'weakening of the ego' produced during the period when a series of electroshock convulsions is being administered."

Dr. Janis was not talking about electronic brain stimulation; he was referring to electro-convulsive therapy (ECT), a crude treatment for schizophrenia originated in Hungary in the 1930's which consisted of passing a strong electrical current through the entire brain at once.

Unlike ESB, ECT was not aimed at the microscopic neural centers of the brain. It was just one large jolt of electricity, which produced, rather than a specific neural event, a massive convulsion. Electrical current administered in such a way temporarily affected the electrical properties of all the neurons in the brain. It produced sharp biochemical changes in the levels of glucose, oxygen consumption, protein synthesis, and other functions. It also produced amnesia, sometimes temporary, sometimes permanent.

As biochemist Steven Rosen said, "The [ECT] treatment is analogous to attempting to mend a faulty radio by kicking it, or a broken computer by cutting out a few of its circuits."[116] Often the extreme convulsions induced by ECT produced such strong muscular contractions that the bones of the subject's body snapped like breadsticks.

But Dr. Janis did not seem to think it too severe a treatment for use in mind control. "From my own and other's investigations of the psychological effects of such treatments," he wrote, "I would suspect that they might tend to reduce resistance to hypnotic suggestions. It is conceivable therefore, that the electroshock treatment might be used to weaken difficult cases in order to produce a hypnotic trance of great depth."[117]

Meanwhile, astonishing discoveries were being made which indicated the use of electronic stimulation of the pleasure center of the brain as a reward for performance could be used to enhance learning. Experiments conducted at the end of World War II showed that rats learned to run around mazes and perform in Skinner boxes better after they had received properly applied electronic stimulation of their brains. Repeated experiments showed that when the animals were rewarded with electricity applied to the pleasure center of the brain, they learned much more rapidly than did animals who were conditioned by rewards of food. One Department of Defense project graphically illustrated the use of such pleasure stimulation conditioning.

---

[116] Steven Rosen, *Future Facts* (New York, Simon & Schuster, 1976)

[117] Irving Janis, *Are the Cominform Countries Using Hypnosis Techniques to Elicit Confessions in Public Trials?*

The Sandia Corporation in New Mexico was asked by the Department of Defense to set up a demonstration of ESB and film the results. Sandia produced a striking film which showed electrodes being implanted into the brain of an army mule. After the mule recovered from surgery, a brain stimulator was placed in a pack on its back, along with a prism and mirror which were arranged so that they operated a photocell when the animal was facing directly toward the sun. When sunlight struck the photocell, it turned on a brief burst of electricity which was sent along wires into the pleasure center of the mule's brain. When the mule turned away from the sun, the stimulation stopped. But when the mule faced the sun again, the pleasurable stimulation resumed.

So wired, the mule marched over hill and dale across the barren land of New Mexico, always facing the sun. Finally it came to the boundary of the property, where a scientist was waiting. The mirror was reversed and then the mule retraced its steps by keeping its back to the sun. Mules are not noted for being cooperative beasts, but this electrically stimulated mule traced and retraced its path without deviation, just as long as the stimulation continued.

Sandia's mule film created a great deal of enthusiasm at the Pentagon. Quickly, the officers saw the military significance of the experiment: mules could be made to clear minefields! They could be used to deliver explosives to assigned targets, much as the Russians had used trained dogs to carry explosives against German tanks during World War II! And what mules could accomplish on land, porpoises, with much greater intelligence, could accomplish in the sea!

It soon became clear to the cryptocracy that electronic brain stimulation held the greatest promise for specific, selective mind control. The usefulness of drugs in manipulating human behavior had been limited by the inability of researchers to control either the desired or the undesired effects of the drugs with any precision. ESB, however, used in conjunction with psycho-surgery and behavior modification, offered unlimited possibilities. After experiments on laboratory animals met with success, human experimentation was enthusiastically undertaken in the quest of the most reliable and absolute method of *remote* control of the mind.

Because human behavior is influenced by many more variables, experimentation on humans proved to be more complex than with animals. Experimenters were constantly reaching false conclusions. Often the observed effects of stimulating certain areas of the brain turned out to be only indirectly related to the stimulation.

For example, a fifty-year-old female mental patient was stimulated in what was thought to be her pleasure center. She had been an extremely withdrawn and melancholy person whose expression always seemed impassive and dour. When electronic stimulation was applied at irregular intervals and different times of day, she would laugh or smile. The scientists concluded that they were stimulating a strong pleasure region in her brain and grew confident that they had found a way to cure the woman of her melancholia. They began to discuss their findings openly in her presence, until one day she became angry and told them she did not enjoy the experiments at all. She explained to the scientists that the stimulus was not giving her pleasure, it was creating a rhythmic contraction of certain pelvic muscles. She had smiled and laughed from being tickled!

After many years of experimentation, it is still unknown just exactly which effects of electronic brain stimulation are psychological, which are physical, and which are psycho-physical. For every experiment suggesting that a particular behavior change is due to the direct effect of electricity applied to a center of the brain, there are others which suggest that the effect is a result of some psychological response to the initial stimulus.

From the Brain Research Institute at the University of California came a report by Dr. Mary Brazier that one patient continued to "self-stimulate even after electricity was turned off and there was no more current in the electrode." Others gave similar reports, saying that some subjects continued to press a lever which had rewarded them with pleasurable stimulation long after the current was cut off. These subjects pushed the lever hundreds of times when they were receiving no stimulation at all, and kept on doing it until the experiment was terminated.

Several experimenters reported that ESB elicited sexual feelings and in some cases orgasms. In a report summarizing seven years of research with ESB, Dr. R.G. Heath told of one melancholic patient who had attempted suicide a number of times. When all else failed to elevate his mood, doctors resorted to ESB. An electrode implanted in his hypothalamus was activated and the subject smiled. After the experience he said, "I feel good. I don't know why, I just suddenly felt good." Upon further questioning the patient admitted that there might have been sexual overtones in his experience. He said, "It's like I had something lined up for Saturday night... a girl."

Heath reported that in several instances ESB led to orgasm. While orgasms may have been caused by genital sensations created when certain areas of the brain were stimulated, Heath said he did not believe that genital sensations had to be present for orgasm to occur. He observed that self-stimulation usually stopped after orgasm was reached. He concluded that stimulation of the orgasm center of the brain, if that was what had produced the orgasms, appeared to be no more compelling than masturbation.

From the Soviet Union came a report typical of many of the surprising results of ESB. A thirty-seven-year-old woman suffering from Parkinson's disease was given ESB treatments to alleviate the effects of palsy. The stimulation evoked sexual sensations which eventually led to orgasm. The woman then began to hang around the laboratory. She would initiate conversation with aides and assistants whenever she could. She even waited for them in the hospital corridors and the garden trying to find out when the next session was scheduled. She was especially affectionate toward the doctor who was throwing the switch to activate the probes in her brain. When she was finally told that there would be no more stimulation, she displayed extreme dissatisfaction.

Strangely, the stimulation did not give the woman any sexual pleasure until her menstrual cycle, which had been absent for eight years, resumed as a result of the stimulation. Soviet investigators expressed their belief, based on studies such as this, that the motivational consequences of ESB are subject to conscious control. This conclusion is supported by the results of many experiments in the West as well.

In 1964 Richard Helms reported to the Warren Commission (see Appendix A) that the trend in the Soviet Union was to build "the New Communist/Man" through cybernetics (the use of machines as control mechanisms). Helms quoted an unidentified Soviet author saying: "Cybernetics can be used in 'molding of a child's character, the inculcation of knowledge and techniques, the amassing of experience, the establishment of social behavior patterns... all functions which can be summarized as control of the growth process of the individual.'" The Helms memo indicated that the Soviets did not possess any knowledge which the West did not have, and in some areas even lagged far behind U.S. research. The tone of his memo seemed to suggest that the U.S. cryptocracy was also interested in creating a "new man" -- a cyborg.

ESB has, meanwhile, been strikingly successful in other areas. It has been used to modify mental mechanisms, to produce changes in mood and feelings, to reinforce behavior both positively and negatively. It has been used to activate sensory and motor regions of the brain in order to produce elementary or complex experiences or movements, to summon memories, and to induce hallucinations. It also has been used to suppress or inhibit behavior and experience and memory -- outside of the conscious control of the owner of the brain.

ESB has inhibited the intake of food. It has inhibited the aggressiveness and even the maternal instinct. It has been widely used in medical research to help stroke victims recover from paralysis and to block epileptic convulsions. It has proved to be an aid to paraplegics in controlling their bladders and it has helped certain kinds of paralysis victims to walk again. It has been found to be effective in blocking even the most severe pain.

ESB has been used by psychiatrists to improve mood, increase alertness, and produce orgasm. It has been used as a conditioning tool to "cure" undesirable social behavior. And in 1974, the first victim of Parkinson's disease treated by ESB walked gracefully out of a San Francisco hospital under his own power, thanks to portable ESB. He had a "stimoceiver" implanted in his brain which he could activate from a battery-powered device in his belt. The "stimoceiver," which weighed only a few grams and was small enough to implant under his scalp, permitted both remote stimulation of his brain and the instantaneous telemetric recording of his brain waves.

Ten years before, Dr. Delgado had foreseen the day when a psycho-civilized society would resort to the use of such stimoceivers for control of the masses. He had said, "A two-way radio communication system could be established between the brain of a subject and a computer. Certain types of neuronal activity related to behavioral disturbances such as anxiety, depression, or rage could be recognized in order to trigger stimulation of specific inhibitory structures..."[118] What he was describing was a society kept under emotional control by electronic brain manipulation. Rather than have man control a machine with his brain, Delgado wanted the control of man by machine.

The present state of Western technology enables man to open garage doors, fly model airplanes, and change television channels by remote control. The government communicates via telemetry with satellites far out in the solar system. Medical scientists monitor heartbeats and vital functions of patients in hospitals and astronauts on the moon. And by the late 1960s, the "remote control" of the human brain -- accomplished *without* the implantation of electrodes -- was well on its way to being realized. From the testimony of a number of people we've interviewed it would appear that the techniques have been perfected. Prevalent are reports of hearing voices -- even holding two way conversations, and being eavesdropped on by person or persons unknown. In another day this would have been diagnosed by psychiatrists as schizophrenia. Today scientists are not so quick at making their diagnosis. In a day when all the sympoms of acute mental illness can be induced by remote control, the doctors are beginning to take another look.

A research and development team at the Space and Biology Laboratory of the University of California at the Los Angeles Brain Research Institute found a way to stimulate the brain by creating an electrical field completely outside the head. Dr. W. Ross Adey stimulated the brain with electric pulse levels which were far below those thought to be effectual in the old implanting technique.

In one experiment, Dr. Adey analyzed the brain waves of chimpanzees who were performing tasks that involved learning. He established that there were two very distinct brainwave patterns which accompanied correct and incorrect decisions. Building on this, Dr. Adey attempted to control the rate at which the chimps learned by applying force fields to the outside of the head to alter behavior, moods and attention. Dr. Adey's research indicated his subjects were able to remember new information faster and better with stimulation.

In the vanguard of brain technology, Dr. Adey worried about misuse of ESB when applied to humans. "My personal concern," he said, "is that we do it well. That if we decide this manipulation is feasible, we do it in ways which are socially acceptable."[119]

---

[118] Delgado, *op.cit.*

Eight years before Dorothy Burdick published her book, on February 5, 1974 an article in the San Francisco Chroncile reported that a small computer had been invented that sorts electrical signals picked up from the human brain and sorts them out. Headlines "Brain Waves May Tell What's On Your Mind," the story by Charles Petit read:

> A study is underway at the Langley Proter Neuropsychiatric Institute here to learn if brain waves can reveal a person's natural aptitudes and intelligence -- and possibly a person's thoughts.
>
> Crucial to the study is the use of a small compuer that sorts electrical signals picked up by eight electrodes fastened like a crown around the scalp.
>
> With the computer, researchers can discover where in the brain various types of high frequency, low energy brain waves originate.
>
> Scientists think that brain waves, instead of being non-functional side effects of cerebral electrical activity, may actually be carrying messages form one place in the brain to another.
>
> Dr. Enoch Callaway, a psychiatrist, is directing the research with a grant from the **Office of Naval Research.** (My emphasis.)
>
> The Navy's interest, he said, is mainly to see if computer analysis of brain waves could be useful in determining the aptitudes of new recruits.
>
> During an interview, the 50-year-old Callaway said it was 100 years ago that a German psychiatrist named Hans Berger first discovered brain waves. Berger hoped the rhythmic energies of the mind would reveal the secrets of extrasensory perception.
>
> However, the use of the waves has been largely restricted to electroencephalograms that detect irregularities in brain waves -- a means of diagnosing organic brain disease.
>
> Considerable attention has also been paid lately to the conscious control of low-frequency brain waves, the most obvious example bieng "alpha wave bio-feedback," techniques.
>
> However, Callaway's interest lies deeper in the brain where fleeting, high frequency waves of "electrical potential" flicker in curtains across the brain, often bypassing the neural pathways, usually thought to transmit the mind's internal mssages.

---

[119] Fred Warshofsky, *The Control of Life: The 21st Century* (New York, Viking, 1969)

> Callaway is using computer techniques developed by a partner in research, Peter Harris, a sennior computer programmer.
>
> Other things volunteers are asked to do are stare at flashing lights, or lights that change color, read a book or stare at a picture a while their brains are being monitored, said Harris.
>
> By running tests repeatedly, the computer can pick out which electrical signal always accompany a specific stimulus.
>
> So far, Callaway and others in the field can distinguish between a person looking at a green light and one looking at a red light. They have also found that quickness of response is in some unexplained way related to IQ as measured with standard intelligence tests.
>
> In addition, he has found that concrete, analytical thinking is accompanied by increased electrical activity in the left hemisphere of the brain, while Intuitive and abstract thought brings the right hemisphere into dominance.
>
> What it adds up to, said Callaway, is the possibility of charting areas of dominance in indivual brains and correlating them with mental skills displayed by those individuals.
>
> Further in the future is the possibility of monitoring the actual messages -- if they exist -- being transmitted across the brain. It may then be possible to use electronics to tell what a person is thinking, he said.
>
> Callaway admitted that the Orwellian possibilities "are undeniable." Among the misuses possible, although far in the future, would be government thought control.

The *Los Angeles Times* carried a story on March 20, 1976 headlined: "Sci-Fi Comes True, MIND READING MACHINE TELLS SECRETS OF THE BRAIN. By-lined Norman Kempster, datelined Washington, the story was of a governmnet mind reading machine which could show, among other things, whether a person is fatigued, puzzled or daydreaming.

"If the project lives up to its promise, the machines could be in use in airplane cockpits before the end of this decade to warn a pilot that his mind is wandering and he is failing to perform essential duties," Kempster wrote.

"Since 1973, a little-known Pentagon agency has been studying ways to plug a computer into an indivual's brain waves -- or electroencephalograph (EEG) signals in the scientist's lexicon. The Advanced Research Projects Agency says the $1 million-a-year program has passed its initial laboratory tests and is ready for determination of its military uses."

The story revealed that scientists at UCLA, Stanford, MIT, the Unviersity of Illinois and the University of Rochester and in laboratories "at other facilities" had been able to determine an individual's alertness from their brain waves. They could also tell how they preceive colors and shapes. "But there may come a day when the EEG will be used to perform far more bizarre tasks," Kempster wrote.

"At UCLA," Kempster wrote, "scientists are working on the use of the EEG to control machines. To give it a trivial application, a spiritualist could use thought waves to make a table levitate."

In 1975 a primitive "mind reading machine" was tested at the Stanford Research Institute. The machine is a computer which can recognize a limited amount of words by monitoring a person's *silent thoughts*. This technique relies upon the discovery that brain wave tracings taken with an electroencephalograph (EEG) show distinctive patterns that correlate with individual words -- whether the words are spoken aloud or merely subvocalized (thought of).

The computer initially used audio equipment to listen to the words the subject spoke. At first the vocabulary was limited to "up," "down," "left," and "right." At the same time the computer heard the words, it monitored the EEG impulses coming from electrodes pasted to the subject's head and responded by turning a camera in the direction indicated. After a few repetitions of the procedure, the computer's hearing was turned off and it responded solely to the EEG "thoughts." It moved a television camera in the directions ordered by the subject's thoughts alone!

This "mind reading machine" was the creation of psychologist Lawrence Pinneo and computer experts Daniel Wolf and David Hall. Their stated goal was eventually to put a highly skilled computer programmer into direct communication with the computer. Their research indicated that a nonsymbolic language -- brainwave patterns -- did exist. By teaching computers this language, the time consuming practice of speaking or writing computer instructions could be abandoned. Faster programming would result in an information explosion whose effects could cause a transformation of our civilization unlike anything that has happened since the Industrial Revolution.

Many beneficial effects of the Stanford "mind reading machine" may eventually accrue. Physically handicapped people may be able to use mini computers to interpret signals from their environment and compensate for the loss of some bodily functions. The deaf may be able to hear; the blind to see, the paralyzed to walk.

Military applications of a "mind reading machine" will someday allow faster computer input and output of information, remote control of war machines, and even the creation of animal or human robots to do the bidding of the military.

Norbert Wiener, the "father of cybernetics," once said the human brain, while functioning in a manner parallel to the computer, actually imitates only ***one run*** of it. Rudolph Flesch clarified Wiener's statement, adding that it was the computer which had the advantage since it had the ability to store memory away until needed for the consideration of a new problem. He said that while the machine starts each new problem from scratch, man carries his past with him until he dies.

One young scientist at Rockefeller University, Dr. Adam Reed, worked under a Department of Defense contract to change all that. At a 1976 symposium of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, Dr. Adam Reed said, "Ideally, the computer of the future should be an electronic extension of the natural brain functioning in parallel with some of the existing brain structures and using the same program and data languages."

According to Dr. Reed, within two decades it will be possible to encode and transmit brain waves from a small device implanted inside the skull. It will be linked by radio control to a large computer with a huge memory bank which, he said "will have stored in it everything you might want to know about foreign languages, mathematics, music, history -- and any other subject you would want to add. You'll enjoy instant recall. The information stored in your own memory cells and in your computer will be readily accessible. You won't be able to forget things... You'll also be able to calculate even the most complicated problems with split second speed."

But Dr. Reed admitted there were very real dangers to mental freedom posed by the brain technology now being developed. "It is essential that people be able to use them [computers] for their own purposes rather than for purposes imposed on them by the political structure."

While Dr. Reed conceded it was "conceivable that thoughts could be injected" into a person's mind by the government, he indicated he did not believe it had already been done. "If the political system changes and massive abuses appear likely," he said, "that would be the time to disappear from the society."

Dr. Lawrence Pinneo at the Stanford Research Institute also discouraged the idea of a conspiracy to create a "psycho-civilized," mind-controlled society. When asked if there weren't a real and present danger of government control of the thoughts of citizens posed by brain-computer technology, Pinneo told a San Francisco reporter, "Anything is possible. But government could lock us all up today, so this sort of thing doesn't really change that possibility. It is really up to us to be vigilant against misuse."[120]

Typically, the scientists have not been vigilant enough for the cryptocracy already has developed remote controlled men who can be used for political assassination and other dangerous work, as is the cyborg in the "Six Million Dollar Man" -- but for less noble purposes. Cyborgs -- altered and controlled humans -- are far less expensive than fully mechanical robots. Due to the high cost of technology men are cheaper than machines, and much more expendable.

---

[120] Lawrence Pinneo, *San Francisco Chronicle*, June 28, 1974.

Among the many reports we've received about this invasive technology, the following is worth repeating, since many of the EM-Target victims think it's authentic and say that it fits the phenomena they're suffering. It appeared on August 15, 1993 on the alt.mindcontrol newsgroup on the Internet. The author was Patrick A. Warden, who we could not locate. The e-mail report would appear to be autobiographical:

> From: Newsgroups: alt.mindcontrol Subject:ESPCIA Date: Aug 15, 1993 Organization: PC-OHIO PCBOARD - Cleveland, OH, Patrick A. Warden CompuServe address 73121,1417
>
> Subject: mind cotnrol and mental telepathy
>
> August 1, 1993
>
> In 1969 Mr. Warden scored in the 98th percentile in a standardized, high school intelligence test. He was a National Merit Finalist, and graduated from the University of California at Berkeley with honors. His background is in the liberal arts with an introduction to the physical sciences. He again scored in the 98th percentile in the verbal and mathematical sections of the Graduate Record Exam in 1977. For what he is about to relate, Mr. Warden was hospitalized twice on psychiatric wards for paranoid schizophrenia, first for ten days and then for two weeks, culminating in forced confinement to a state mental institution for eight months in 1986. Today he works as a public relations writer for a non-profit organization providing disability services in Los Angeles.
>
> Circa 1980 he was the subject of a recruitment attempt and an experiment involving mental telepathy, conducted by the Central Intelligence Agency. Shortly thereafter he was contacted by means of mental telepathy, operated by the governments of the United States and other major world powers, in particular, that of the former Soviet Union. The purpose of the contact was, first, to inform him of the true nature of the disembodied voices he had been hearing in his mind that by the medical profession had been ascribed to schizophrenia, and second, to recruit him as a public relations officer for the CIA and the Mental Telepathy System (MTS).
>
> The MTS is operational on the public and involves what might commonly be known as mind control. It is a system of technology that operates apparently by radio and microwaves, and that can broadcast voices and sensations, and affect the autonomic nervous sytem across distances. It is a hardware-based system that involves

transmitters, antennas and amplifying devices. Though in its most primitive form the MTS mimics psychic phenomena, it involves man-made technology as distinct from whatever natural psychic phenomena may have occurred throughout time.

Without their knowledge, many people are under the influence of the MTS, which due sometimes to foreign control, can manifest itself in the bizarre and disturbing psychopathic outbreaks that appear from time to time in the news media. The voices that the Son of Sam serial killer thought he heard from the dog in the backyard of the neighboring apartment building in the mid-to-late 1970's probably resulted from he MTS. The foreign student at UC Berkeley who took hostages at the street cafe around 1991, claiming he was under the influence of government mind control experiments, also probably was affected by the MTS. Events such as David Koresh's control over the Branch Davidian cult in Waco, Texas during 1993 can also fully be accounted for by, and probably were the result of, his being unknowingly influenced by the worst aspects of the MTS.

BACKGROUND

The MTS goes back as far as the time of the Kennedy Administration and the outbreak of Beatlemania shortly after the President's assassination. It's actual origins are unclear, but may have had something to do with Nazi war experiments. In the early 1960's the Soviet Union had the advantage with this technology, and deployed it in western nations in the form of a mood altering broadcast wave that put people under its sway. Known a few years later as the Biofeedback Transponding Crowd Control System, the Soviet mind control technology was installed in places such as Berkeley, California, where it was used for subversive purposes to foment mass demonstrations, and also for international exchange and quasi-diplomatic efforts to promote understanding and sympathy for the Soviets among American people. Mental telepathy technology was the joint and evolving development of the intelligence forces of the United States, the CIA, and the Soviet KGB. Reflecting the international tensions between the two countries, it grew in a manner similar to the competition of the space race, with civilian and military implications. The Soviets, who had the upper hand on the mental telepathy technology, used it in the US for espionage and subversion, trying to gain access to the minds of scientists involved in government weapons research, and to foment civil unrest and pro socialist sympathy among the younger generation of Americans.

Faced with the missile gap of the late 1970's, the advances by the Soviets with their particle beam accelerator, and similar national defense issues, the Reagan Administration came to power and began a concerted push, known as COINTELPRO -- the counterintelligence Program. Through COINTELPRO, the defense buildup and the beginning of the space shuttle program, which was able quickly to put into orbit more of the intelligence and communications satellites that operate the MTS at its upper levels; the US was able to gain the upper hand in the MTS. Truth as we know it in the US won out over the disinformation propagated by the Soviet mental telepathy system, known informally as "Vodka." Since the dissolution of the Soviet Union the mental telepathy wars conducted between telepaths, or mental telepathy operatives, of the CIA and the KGB have come to an end, although why psychopathological outbreaks continue among the population remains unclear

The American MTS, which was influenced and partially operated by the KGB in particular during the 1970's, politically fell under the observation and verification clauses of the SALT I and II treaties. When it because clear that the Soviets were gaining too much influence over the American public, SALT II drew increasing discontent among government leaders and was scuttled. Under the provisions of SALT, the Soviets were permitted to operate mental telepathy in diplomatic colony zones such as Berkeley, also known as "Pacifica." The US essentially was blackmailed into accepting the Soviet proposal of mental telepathy operation in this country, due to their relative superiority in research and development in the field of artificial mental telepathy. COINTELPRO recruited a sufficient number of Americans, however, to develop the American MTS, and the intelligence satellites that play a primary role in propagating it across wide areas, to the point where it effectively could combat the Soviet Vodka telepathy.

Present control of the MTS is improving, with better mental and psychological conditions for the telepaths who are affected by it, because the KGB is no longer intact to propagate its particular brand of psychological mischief and violence; but because the MTS still remains under wraps, the heirs of the Soviets, apparently the Russians and affiliated republics, probably still continue to foment the violence that periodically erupts in the form of serial killers with bizarre and demented notions, and other forms of psychopathology in the news media.

The provisions of the Detente-era treaty governing the MTS and Vodka hold that Russian telepathy will continue in the US until the MTS is operated en pleine jour, or in broad daylight without government camouflage and denial, in the US-or elsewhere in the world of that matter. In other words, the Russians will continue to operate Vodka in the US, though at a more hospitable level, until the government, or someone, "blows the cover" on mental telepathy, and this new technology becomes public knowledge.

Mental health professionals say that there are approximately two or three million people in the US who are affected by some form of schizophrenia or related abnormal mental phenomenon. Many of these people probably hear voices in their minds, and most of them probably are under the influence of the MTS and Vodka. The number of these "subjects" who are fully consciously aware of the MTS, and of the source and the nature of the voices and visual images, or both, that they hear and see in their minds, is unclear. A guess at an estimate places it at from a few to several percent. Thus, there are probably a few to several tens of thousands of people in the US who are conscious telepaths, many of them operating in consonance with the CIA, which is the governmental agency responsible for the MTS. Among the telepaths there is a code of silence that the MTS itself propagates to "preserve appearances" and to maintain one's personal reputation and credibility. Some telepaths seem to make personal contact with one another and to have their experience of the MTS thereby confirmed. Other telepaths operate solely by remote control, as it were, receiving messages and directives only through the voices and visual images in their minds, and never making objective contact with anyone else who can substantiate their experience. Still, the MTS is quite real and apparent to the telepath, and not delusional, because he or she receives other means of verification, such as foreknowledge of events before they occur, because the MTS can and often does orchestrate happenings through other MTS subjects who are influenced by the MTS, but who are not aware of its actual source and nature.

THEORY

The human brain emits electromagnetic waves, known to biofeedback researchers as alpha, beta and delta waves. These fall into the frequency range of from about 10 to 15 Hz. An electroencephalogram reveals these waves in the stylus' trace upon the paper. They have a definite frequency that corresponds to the mood and mental state of the person. Different parts of the brain emits slightly different waves, and when EEGs are made and different traces are obtained from each of the various electrodes pasted to the person's scalp. When a radio receiver is configured to tune into these waves on the order of 10-15 HZ, as opposed to the 100 megahertz that household radios receive, then the brain's activity can be detected.

A wave form analyzer is needed to decode the person's brain waves and correlate them with the person's speech. When the person is put into an excited and energetic state, and prompted to free associate aloud so that whatever words the person is thinking he also is speaking, with no cognitive filtering or gap between the word in thought and the spoken word, then the person's audible speech can be associated with he brain was that are emanating from the speech area on the left side of the brain. A speech synthesizing and recognizing computer is needed to recognize the individual words. As the subject calibrates the system, individual wave forms emanating from the person's brain and scalp for each word he is thinking can be correlated through the wave form analyzer with the audible sound produced from he person's mouth. Each particular wave form for each particular word can then be used by the computer to correlate with the individual words in the computer. Then when a specific word is thought by the subject, the accompanying electromagnetic wave emanating from his brain c an be detect ted and received, and analyzed by the wave form analyzer, and then fed to the computer, so that the computer can recognize in its vocabulary the particular word the subject is thinking. Once the computer recognizes the word it can be output or processed in any way the operators of the computer wish.

The telepathy subject can also receive messages in a similar manner. Once the person is calibrated so that the computer recognizes which wave forms correspond to which particular words, those wave forms can be broadcast tot he subject. Thus, the subject will hear a particular word in his mind when the appropriate wave form is transmitted to the proximity of his brain.

In the MTS, computers govern the speech that passes through the system. Certain words can be propagated with increasing frequency of occurrence, and other words or ideas can be filtered out and disfavored so that they are not often repeated. By limiting the mental telepathy vocabulary, communication is facilitated among a wider range of subjects because they have more n common among their thinking and fewer idiosyncratic and subjective thoughts. The simpler is kept the level of thinking, the easier it is for the system to calibrate the subjects and to foster mental communication among a wider number of subjects. Easier than words are to detect and decode, a person's mood, and agreement or disagreement to a statement or set of circumstances, can be detected. Thus, at a rudimentary level, words can be broadcast to a person by the telepathy computer, and even if that person has not been calibrated, the waves emanating from t he person's brain can be detected and correlated with a positive, or truth, disposition; or with a negative, or lie, disposition. By determining which proposition elicits one of dislike or disagreement, the computer can gain a personality profile of the subject.

While it is fairly easy to understand how electromagnetic waves can be broadcast from different, distant locations to MTS subjects who receive them as words in their minds, it is more difficult to understand how antennas can be brought near enough to the subjects to detect the relatively weak signals emitted by their brains amid the background noise and interference from the preponderance of energy fields in the urban environment. Apparently, power lines, household wiring and telephone lines play a role in receiving the signals from subjects' minds. Since any fluctuating energy field induces a current in a nearby conductor, the household wiring and telephone lines that are seemingly everywhere could also serve as antennas for the subjects' brain waves if they were tapped into by MTS receiver circuits and the extraneous noises were filtered out. Since this naturally involves greater technical difficulty than broadcasting thought waves, it is safe to say that more people receive the MTS signal in their minds than have their thoughts read and received by the MTS computer. Still, by prompting subjects and broadcasting to them thoughts that pretend to be their own, the subjects' simpler states of agreement and pleasure, or disagreement and dislike, can be detected by the MTS; to pick up verbal thoughts of the subject, apparently he has to be calibrated according to something like the above described process.

CONCLUSION

Since the undercover telepathy war between the telepaths of the US and the CIA, and the telepaths of the Soviet Union and the KGB has ended with the resolution of the Cold War, telepathy conditions have improved. While the espionage and subversion aspects of Vodka as operated by the USSR are no longer as serious as they once were, still the incidence of telepathy contact does not appear to have diminished. The level of activity in each telepath's, or subject's, mind may have decreased to a more comfortable level, but there do not appear to be a fewer number of people who feel that something strange is going on in their minds, who have thoughts and mental phenomenon that appear to them as alien to their usual way of being.

With the apparent success of COINTELPRO and the US government's policy of containment toward Soviet telepathy, there still appears not to be any retraction of the basic deployment of the MTS. Under the Detente-era SALT agreements, the Russians continue to propagate telepathy in the US and elsewhere, and the CIA in turn must operate the MTS to counteract Vodka's influence. Lately in the telepathy system there has been reference to the Artificial Intelligence Program

> (AIP). AIP would be the equivalent of the CIA and the KGB or the Russians beating the swords of the undercover telepathy wars between the MTS and Vodka into plowshares. The MTS could be used for peaceful and civilian purposes to foster communication among disparate groups of people. Once it is operated en pleine jour, the Russians would feel that the agreement between our and their governments had been fulfilled, and they would withdraw their telepathy system. The CIA could turn off the MST and free thousands upon thousands, if not millions, of people who have had their lives and their minds disrupted by thoughts that are not their own. From the vantage point of one who has been a conscious subject of the MST for 12 years, and who has been unconsciously under the sway of friendly and enemy telepathy ever since he had his first pseudonervous breakdown at the age of 21, telepathy that is controlled by others beyond one's reach certainly is not any invention to be heralded. Many people have suffered, and a number of innocent people have lost their lives at the hands of hapless psychopaths who stumbled into Vodka's telepathy and were remotely motivated to commit violent atrocities. Still, AIP holds promise for the future, for it the US and Russia can emerge from the Cold War as friends and allies more than as enemies, then the MTS and Vodka will have accomplished something. If AIP were better controlled by its subject telepaths, then it would be a development more positive in its implications than negative. Above all, one's greatest hope should be for freedom from external control and liberty to enjoy a restored privacy of the mind.

Disinformation or the real thing? Put it in the research mill and see what else comes up. Ask some researchers in the former Soviet Union if they've heard of "Vodka",not the liquor, the mental telepathy machine. Which is what makes me suspect this memo, despite its serious tone, could be a joke.

When promoting OMC in 1978 I was on the Gay Bern show in Ireland (a one-a-week Tonite Show format). I managed to hold the well-read Irish audience's interest for 20 minutes, which the producer told me was a difficult thing to accomplish. Following me was John McGuffin who had written *The Human Guinea Pigs* a year before. It tells about the British use of mind control technology in the fields and prisons of Northern Ireland. This time McGuffin was flogging his new book, *Poteen*. It was a well-researched, illustrated tome about the illegal potato liquor which is traditionally made in the bathtubs of Ireland much as Moonshine is made in the Mountains of Kentucky.

"Mind control," McGuffin said, holding up a glass of poteen, "This is mind control." Likewise, I'm told that in Russia Vodka (the alcoholic kind) is the dominant form of mind self-control.

Spanish matador Dr. Jose Delago with a mind-controlled bull (above). He holds only a radio transmitter in his hand behind the cape. When the bull got too close he dropped the cape, (below) and, with bad form, pushed the button on the transmitter. There was no elegant pass of the toro through his cape. The bull simply went into reverse. Though the CIA threw money at Delgado, he was not awarded even a trophy ear for his bullfight performance/demo of ESB

Dr. John Lilly, author of *Center of the Cyclone* and most noted for his work with Dolphins, is shown here preparing a monkey for tests by implanting a stimoceiver into its brain. The movie *Day of the Dolphin* was based on Lilly's dolphin research days.

28

FROM BIONIC WOMAN TO STIMULATED CAT

In 1967 a writer named Lincoln Lawrence published a book which asked the question: Was Lee Harvey Oswald a robot-assassin programmed by a sophisticated technique known as RHIC-EDOM? The letters stood for Radio Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control-Electronic Dissolution of Memory.

Lawrence speculated that Oswald had been behavior-controlled and prepared during his "defection" to the Soviet Union as a "sleeper" agent programmed to return to the United States and murder on cue. It was the Manchurian Candidate theme, with one exception. Lawrence insisted that the Russians had not masterminded the RHIC-EDOM plan. It had been masterminded, he thought, by an international cartel of commodities merchants who sought to make millions by driving the market with the assassination of a president -- any president.

Lawrence wrote, "Lee Harvey Oswald was to be utilized as... (and now you must clear your brain and put aside your preconceived notions of what espionage and sabotage are *today*)... an RHIC controlled person... somewhat like a mechanical toy. An RHIC controlled person can be processed (as Oswald was in Minsk, allowed to travel to any country... and be put to use even years later by the application of RHIC controls. In short, like the toy, he can in a sense be 'wound up' and made to perform acts without any possibility of the controller being detected.

"Under RHIC, a 'sleeper' can be used years later with no realization that the 'sleeper' is even being controlled! He can be made to perform acts that he will have no memory of ever having carried out. In a manipulated kind of kamikaze operation where the life of the 'sleeper' is dispensable, RHIC processing makes him particularly valuable because if he is detected and caught before he performs the act specified... *nothing* he says will implicate the group or government which processed and controlled him."[121]

---

[121] Lincoln Lawrence, *Were We Controlled? The Assassination of President Kennedy* (New York, University Books, 1967)

Mr. Lawrence used as evidence the official Russian records that Oswald had been admitted to the hospital in Minsk at 10 a.m. on March 30, 1961. The records state that he was admitted with complaints about suppuration from the right ear and a weakening in hearing. Lawrence said this was a cover-up for "the real reason" for Oswald's stay -- but there was one oversight. He was hospitalized for eleven days for an 'adenoid' operation. Eleven days for an 'adenoid' removal is, of course, preposterous. In austere Soviet Russia it was particularly ridiculous!"

What really happened, according to Lawrence, was that during the operation a small electrode was implanted inside Oswald's mastoid sinus. The electrode responded to a radio signal which would make audible, inside Oswald's head, certain electronic commands to which he had already been posthypnotically conditioned to respond. (The autopsy report in Dallas noted that there was a small scar on the mastoid sinus behind Oswald's ear.)

In 1967 the idea sounded utterly preposterous. Mr. Lawrence's book, *Were We Controlled*? found only a minuscule audience. Lawrence, on the other hand, may have had much more evidence than he was allowed to present. His credentials indicated he had been "working in liaison with the department of defense."

In 1975 the RHIC-EDOM story surfaced again. This time a Tennessee journalist said he had been given top secret documents by two former CIA officials whom he would not identify. The journalist, James L. Moore, said the papers in his possession described the details of "a military technique of mind control called Radio-Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control--Electronic Dissolution of Memory."

Moore described the RHIC-EDOM file as a 350 page scientific report, which was prepared by the CIA immediately after the murder of President John F. Kennedy. He said it described a way of turning men into electronically controlled robots programmed to kill on command.

According to Moore, in the initial (RHIC) stage of programming the prospective killer is put into a deep hypnotic trance, and conditioned to go into trance at the sound of a specific tone. "A person may be placed under this control with or without his knowledge, programmed to perform certain actions and maintain "certain attitudes" whenever he hears the tone. "Effective for a lifetime," Moore said, "control may be triggered weeks, months, or even years after the first 'hypnosis' and programming."

"Medically," Moore continued, "these radio signals are directed to certain parts of the brain. When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced -- anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old woman, for example. This same emotion of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white hot anger without any apparent reason."

The second part of the process, electronic dissolution of memory (EDOM), Moore said, is more complex. "In the brain is a chemical called acetylcholine, which carries electrical impulses from the eyes, ears, nose, nerve endings etc., to the part of the brain where memory is located. Memory is nothing more than the recording of these electrical impulses, and acetylcholine is the path (or 'wire') that connects the inner brain to the nerves of your eyes and ears... By electronically jamming the brain, acetylcholine creates static which blocks out sights and sounds. You would then have no memory of what you saw or heard; your mind would be a blank."

Moore said that according to CIA documents, this method can be used either to block the memory completely, or to slow it down so events seem to have happened later than they actually have. According to a knowledgeable CIA source, this is what happened in Dallas and later in Los Angeles," Moore stated.

Moore quoted his unidentified source as saying, "That was the first thought to hit us at CIA. It's pretty obvious Ruby was programmed to kill Oswald, even by Ruby's own words... As for Sirhan there is no other explanation; it's a proven fact that his memory has been completely erased."

"The assassination of John Kennedy," Moore said "was carried out by disgruntled CIA and FBI personnel, using Mafia and Cuban exile flunkies."[122]

The claims of James L. Moore would sound fantastic were it not for the abundance of information to support the possibility of their validity.

The Helms memo to the Warren Commission mentioned something called "biological radio communication." Although the term was not fully explained, Helms related it to ESB: "Current research indicates that the Soviets are attempting to develop a technology for control in the development of behavioral patterns among the citizenry of the USSR in accordance with politically determined requirements of the system. Furthermore, the same technology can be applied to more sophisticated approaches to the 'coding' of information for transmittal to population targets in the 'battle for the minds of men.'"

It seems entirely possible that the "radiomagnetic waves" Moore referred to and the "biological radio communication" Helms referred to may be one and the same. Both terms probably describe waves radiated in the electromagnetic spectrum. Both sound waves and radio waves have been studied for their coercive effect on the mind. Ultrasonics are sound waves, traveling in a medium different from the radio medium.

---

[122] James Moore, *Modern People*, August 18, 1975.

A 1951 MKULTRA CIA memo also described what could be related to RHIC-EDOM. "There is no reason to believe that Russia and some the satellites have not investigated the effects of ultrasonics on man, perhaps to the extent of its possible use in the future for interrogation purposes. We have no reports which indicate past use of ultrasonics on prisoners for this purpose, but its possible use should be taken into consideration."

Meanwhile, ultrasonics research was underway. Drs. W. Fry and R. Meyers of the University of Illinois used focused ultrasonic waves to make brain lesions of a very controlled size. Their research, conducted in 1961, demonstrated the great advantage of ultrasonics over the psycho-surgical techniques which implanted electrodes in the brain. By using low-energy sound beams, Fry and Meyers stimulated or destroyed neural tissue at the point of focus of the beams without cutting or drilling into the brain.

A few years later Dr. Peter Lindstrom at the University of Pittsburgh used a single unfocused sonic beam to destroy fiber tracts without damaging the nerve cells next to them. Lindstrom used this "prefrontal sonic treatment" as a substitute for lobotomy, to destroy fiber tracts in the frontal lobes of patients who had either untreatable pain or severe psychiatric disorders.

The cryptocracy's secret funds and guidance directed a number of research projects into the effects on the brain of various vibrations beyond the perception of ordinary human senses. In one experiment recommended by Norbert Wiener, a sheet of tin was suspended from the ceiling and connected to a generator working at ten cycles per second. When large field strengths of one or two volts per centimeter (a very minute amount) were oscillating at the alpha frequency of the human brain, extremely unpleasant sensations were reported by the volunteer subjects.

Scientists at the Brain Research Institute of the University of California took up the investigation of the effects of oscillating fields, subjects showed measurable degeneration in performance of simple tasks.

These and other experiments led the cryptocracy to study the effects of very-low-frequency sound (VLF) --the opposite of ultrasonics -- as an instrument of war. Research revealed there is a natural wave guide between the ionosphere and the earth which could be used to propagate very-low-frequency radiation and guide it to selected locations on the earth. Studies showed this low-frequency sound subtly affected the electrical behavior of the brain in much the same way Dr. Adey's studies had shown.

The alpha-wave frequency of the human brain is from eight to twelve hertz (cycles per second). The ionospheric wave guide oscillates at eight hertz, making it a good harmonic carrier of low-frequency sound (LFS) waves. These are such long waves that they are virtually impossible to detect. Pentagon reports apply LFS to demobilizing the productive capacity of a civilian population in time of war.

Dr. Frank Barnaby, Director of the Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, suggested what the cryptocracy already knew: "If methods could be devised to produce greater field strengths of such low-frequency oscillations, either by natural (for example, lightning) or artificial means, then it might become possible to impair the performance of a large group of people in selected regions over extended periods."[123]

Since Anton Mesmer's early experiments with animal magnetism, Western scientists have known that monotonous rhythms produce drowsiness and open the individual to hypnotic induction. Scientists found that flashing a strobe light at a certain frequency could induce epileptics to have seizures. Subjected to ultrasonic or very-low-frequency sound in harmony with alpha rhythms, an entire population might be lulled into a state of drowsiness by the unperceived waves, and radio and television -- the normal channels of mass hypnosis -- could implant suggestions to control the behavior of entire nations.

Soviet scientists have used electronic fields applied outside the head to induce and enhance the qualities of sleep. Their most widely publicized device is the "electrosone." It permits low frequency pulses to be applied to the cerebral cortex through mild electrical stimulation -- electrical current sent through electrodes placed on the eyelids and behind the ears. The Soviets claim this technique, called electronarcosis, can give the benefits of a full night's sleep in only two or three hours. The sleep is induced rapidly and is so deep the subject wakes up as fully refreshed and invigorated as if he had slept an entire night.

Radiation has also leapt into the vanguard of mind control technology. The Soviets have been studying the effects of microwave radiation since 1933. They have found that, among other things, microwaves can affect the central nervous system. They have also discovered that microwave radiation, even of low intensity, can seriously alter the normal rhythm of brain waves, causing hallucinations and drastic perceptual changes, including a loss of the sense of time. In biological studies, they found that exposure to microwaves causes changes in protein composition and white blood cells. A number of endocrine responses are also altered by microwave radiation, including the activities of the thyroid and other glands. And, lastly, microwaves can cause maternal lactation to cease and in some cases male sterility.

In 1962 when the CIA discovered the U.S. Embassy in Moscow was being irradiated with microwaves, the cryptocracy reacted with silence. For years the U.S. government knew about the Russian research but appeared to ignore it. Perhaps they feared any claim that microwave radiation could affect human behavior would bring great restrictions on the use of radar, microwave relays, and on booming microwave oven sales. But a less obvious reason suggests itself: the cryptocracy did not want to draw attention to its own use of radiation in mind control.

---

[123] Frank Barnaby, *New Scientist*, June 17, 1976.

In May, 1968, General Electric announced it was recalling 90,000 color TV sets which were emitting excessive amounts of dangerous X-rays. This set the gears in motion for Senate hearings on the problem of radiation effects. But the cryptocracy still protected its interests; the Defense Department sent two high ranking medical officers from each branch of the armed forces to assure the senators that safeguards to military sponsored research into the biological effects of radiation had been adequate. They testified that nobody in the armed forces was being exposed to hazardous amounts of radiation.

Meanwhile, the microwave bombardment of the U.S. embassy continued, and the CIA acted as if it knew nothing at all about radiation effects, denying there was even a problem.

Yet in 1964, when Dr. Milton Zaret, an ophthalmologist at New York University's Bellevue Medical Center, published a paper reporting that there were harmful biological and behavioral affects to micro-radiation, the CIA immediately came around to ask Zaret some questions.

They wanted to know whether he thought electro-magnetic radiation beamed at the brain from a distance could affect the way a person might act. Dr. Zaret told the CIA that from what he'd read in the Soviet literature on the subject it seemed quite conceivable that microwaves could produce behavioral changes. On another occasion, Zaret said, a CIA doctor inquired of him if he thought microwaves could be used to "facilitate brainwashing."

In early 1965 the CIA informed Dr. Zaret that the Russians had been irradiating the American embassy. Later Zaret was called to attend a special meeting at the Institute for Defense Analysis in Arlington, Virginia. There he met a number of people from the Defense Department's Advanced Research Projects Agency who were also working on the problem of radiation.

Subsequently Dr. Zaret and others set out to duplicate the conditions of micro-radiation in the embassy. "I remember in one experiment we succeeded in replicating a Czechoslovakian study of behavioral effect in rats, but also observed some unique convulsions in these animals prior to death." When Dr. Zaret relayed that information to Washington he received a telegram from the CIA ordering him not to pursue the investigation any further.[124]

---

[124] Paul Brodeur, *The New Yorker*, December 13, 1976.

In May, 1972, Jack Anderson broke the "Moscow Signal" story, which had been kept secret for ten years: the Russians were bombarding the American embassy in Moscow with micro-radiation. Anderson speculated the CIA had been trying to cover up the fact that the Russians were trying to brainwash American diplomats by microwave bombardment. He implied (probably correctly) the CIA had created the cover-up to protect its own secrets of mind control by irradiation.

After the disclosure, Anderson came under heavy attack from representatives of both the military and industry. There were loud protests from the microwave oven manufacturers, but no one refuted the brainwashing angle of micro-radiation. The story lay dormant until June of 1977, when it was announced that teams of scientists at the University of Utah and the University of Washington had received grants from the National Institute of Environmental Health Sciences to study the effects of chronic low-level microwave exposure. Dr. Om P. Gandhi, professor of electrical engineering and bioengineering at Utah said, "Most U.S. scientists are still quite skeptical of the Soviet studies."

As hypnotists had done over the years, many scientists expressed doubt that electronic, conic, or radiation techniques would ever be used for such purposes.

"The reports of new technical developments for brain stimulation have led to a concern that it will be used as the basis of an 'electroligarchy' where people could be virtually enslaved by controlling them from within their own brains... there is actually little foundation for the belief that brain stimulation could be used as a political weapon," Dr. Elliot S. Valenstein said. "It doesn't make sense. Anyone influential enough to get an entire population to consent to having electrodes placed in its head would already have his goal without firing a single volt."[125]

Dr. Willard Gaylin agreed, saying, "Electrode implantation or surgical ablation of the brain sections as a direct means of political control seems unlikely -- much less a threat, for example, than drugs. Such an individualized and dramatic procedure hardly seems suited to the enslavement of populations or the robotization of political leaders. Drugs, brainwashing by control of the media, exploitation of fears through forms of propaganda, and indoctrination through the sources of education, particularly if preschool education or neonatal conditioning... becomes an approved practice, all seem more likely methods of totalitarian control."[126]

The British biochemist Dr. Steven Rose issued a similar objection: "Unlike ancient maps marked 'here be monsters,' there will not be... brains transplanted into bodies or bottles, thought, memory or mind control, telepathic communication or genetic engineering, artificial intelligence or robots... I believe them impossible -- or at least improbable; more importantly because scientific advance and its attendant technology only comes about in response to social constraints and social demands. Because there are at present no or few social demands in the direction of these lurid potential developments, they do not represent, in a world beset with crises and challenges to human survival, serious contenders for our concern."[127]

---

[125] Elliot Valenstein, *Brain Control*, (New York, Wiley, 1973)

[126] Willard M. Gaylin, Joel S. Meister, and Robert C. Neville, eds., *operating on the Mind* (New York, Basic Books, 1975)

Of course, when science is developed in a piecemeal, compartmentalized fashion, as it is under the direction of the cryptocracy, no social constraints come into play. Where the public is kept ignorant, and where scientists themselves are manipulated by the grant system, the balance upon which Dr. Rose relies is absent.

On the other hand, for every scientist who denies mind control exists or will ever exist, there is one who sees it as a *desirable* form of social control. Social psychologist Kenneth B. Clark appears to be one of those men.

Expressing the fear of the nuclear age, and the group paranoia of the Cold Warriors, Clark said, "Given the urgency of the immediate survival problem, the psychological and social sciences must enable us to control the animalistic, barbaric and primitive propensities in man and subordinate these negatives to the uniquely human moral and ethical characteristics of love, kindness, and empathy... We can no longer afford to rely solely on the traditional pre-scientific attempts to contain human cruelty and destructiveness."

Clark suggested that behavior control requirements be imposed on all "power-controlling leaders," and even those who aspire to such leadership. He would require them to accept and submit to "biochemical intervention which would assure their positive use of power and reduce or block the possibility of using power destructively.

"It would assure," Clark said, "that there would be no absurd or barbaric use of power. It would provide the masses of human beings with the security that their leaders would not sacrifice them on the altars of their personal ego."[128]

But if there were a mind-controlled President in the White house (and there, by now, may well have been one -- certainly Reagan came close), what guarantee would we have that the cryptocracy would not use such access for purely selfish motives? Obviously, submission to any form of mind control by politicians could lead to Clark's "masses of human beings" being sacrificed not on the altars of personal ego but on the altars of national security.

There seems to be a good deal of cultural momentum leading toward a cybernetic anthill society. If we can draw any inference from the numerous predictions made by men of accomplishment in our society, it is that direct brain-computer interface, the cyborg, and the resulting mass mind control are on the horizon.

---

[127] Steven Rose, *The COnscious Brain* (New York, Knopf, 1976)

[128] Keneth Clark, *American Psychological Association Monitor*, October, 1971.

D.G. Brennan, member of the Hudson Institute, mathematician, and expert on national security problems, predicted: "Computers as Sophisticated as the human brain will be small enough to be carried in a shoe box."[129]

Arthur C. Clarke, science-fiction writer, predicted: "The first intelligent computer will be the last machine man will need to make -- and quite possible the last he'll be permitted to make."[130]

Gerald Feinberg, professor of physics at Columbia University, predicted: "It will be possible to tinker with the brain -- to make the human memory more reliable and accessible at the expense, say, of breadth in sensory responses."[131]

Olaf Helmer, founding member of Institute for the Future, predicted: "Slave robots are likely to appear. It may also be possible to devise a way for a disembodied brain to be kept alive so it can give instruction to a robot which will act as its body."[132]

Stephen Rosen, a research scientist at IBM, predicted the unification of physical medicine (like drugs and organtransplants) with behavioral techniques (like biofeedback, cybernetic learning, and psychology).

And there is Jose Delgado, who predicted -- among other things -- the coming of a psycho-civilized society. Delgado also said that the fundamental question of the future would be "who is going to exert the power of behavior control?" And even Delgado, a true believer in ESB, issued a warning that in the future the cryptocracy would have to be curtailed. "It is ...essential that relevant information not be restricted to a small elite, but be shared by all."[133]

Whether created by the use of hypnosis, drugs, behavior modification, electronic or sonic brain stimulation, or through a combination of these tool of psycho-science, the cyborg is stalking us in our dreams. And just as life imitates art, men live out their dreams in their waking state.

The dream, expressed by the prophetic visions of men from all walks of life, is of a time when the machine or the drug will take over and relieve man of his difficult burden of self responsibility. For better or worse, self responsibility -- where each individual acts consciously, and accepts the consequences of his own actions -- is the stuff of which freedom is made.

---

[129] David Wallechinsky and Irving Wallace, *The People's Almanac* (Doubleday, 1975)

[130] *Ibid.*

[131] *Ibid.*

[132] *Ibid.*

[133] Delgado, *op.cit.*

The prophecies of poets, writers, scientists, and futurists express what can be considered a regressive, devolutionary myth. Sprung from the complexity of technological life, where self-responsibility is largely directed by propaganda and indoctrination, where an ignorant rather than an enlightened public is desired, the majority of responsible actions can result only in cultural disaster. This, in turn, adds to the frustration of the individual who, weighing all the facts -- or what were presented as facts -- thought he had made the best choice possible. When these decisions, based on false information, are shown to result in negative effects, the frustration of the individual grows. Weariness eventually sets in, and the individual becomes willing to surrender his self responsibility and eagerly awaits his liberation by some authoritarian figure.

In the past such people as Hitler, Lenin, or Mao Tse Tung were high profile father figures who inspired trust and surrender by the masses. In the modern technological miasma, a nameless, faceless cryptocracy is manipulating world politics.

The cryptocracy supports only those foreign and domestic leaders who are sycophants of secrecy. Of necessity keeping a low profile, the cryptocracy can inspire neither the allegiance nor the surrender which was inspired by the previous exploiters of the cult of personality. Thus, with no human image representing benevolent authority, the masses embrace a substitute father figure -- technology. The dream of test tube babies, genetically engineered children, and electronically controlled parents visits the collective unconscious and manifests itself in the way we see the future and in the mysticism of the day.

Even Uri Geller, the Houdini of parapsychology, seems to be expressing this very myth. His supposedly occult powers, he says, come from contact with beings who present themselves as "deliverers" from outer space. With superior intelligence, they manifest all forms of telepathy, telekinesis, and teleportation, and have told Mr. Geller that they are pure mind, maintained throughout eternity by machines which traverse the universe and transcend time and space.

As the psychologist Erich Fromm said, "A specter is stalking in our midst whom only a few see with clarity. It is not the old ghost of communism or fascism. It is a new specter: a completely mechanized society, devoted to maximal material output and consumption, directed by computers; and in this social process, man himself is being transformed into a part of the total machine, well fed and entertained, yet passive unalive, and with little feeling. With the victory of the new society, individualism and privacy will have disappeared; feelings toward others will be engineered by psychological conditioning and other devices, or drugs."[134]

---

[134] Erich Fromm, *the Revolution of Hope* (Harper, 1968)

Fromm is talking about the new myth, which anticipates a time when the machine or the drug will manipulate the human mind and relieve man of his difficult burden of freedom. From the new mythology comes the public tolerance of the cryptocracy as well as the hero worship of such figures as James Bond, the Six Million Dollar Man, and the Bionic Woman. Everywhere in modern literature and art and in the mass entertainment media, one can see the expressions of the modern myth of the techno-eroticism and the dark shadow of the priesthood of secrecy. There is so much of it in the media, in fact, one has to suspect the American public is deliberately being desensitized to the concept of mind control and the "psycho-civilized" society.

The cryptocracy has gone to absurd lengths to develop remote controlled beings. Victor Marchetti revealed the CIA had once tried to create a cyborg cat. He said the Agency wired a feline for sound in an attempt to use the pet for eavesdropping purposes. The cat was first altered electronically so it would function as a listening device in areas where potential enemy agents would be discussing covert plots.

But problems developed, Marchetti said, and the cat had to be rewired. The cat would wander away from its target area, as cats will, looking for food. The CIA fixed that by inserting wires directly into the hunger center of the cat's brain. The wires were attached to a radio receiver which would suppress the hunger pangs by remote control. But once that problem was solved, the CIA found the cat needed more circuitry in its brain to control its natural urges. After the hunger center was turned off, the cat still would wander away, this time following the sex instinct. The CIA planted more electrodes into the sex center of the cat's brain.

After the electronic feline was at last ready for its assignment, it was turned loose on the street and was followed by a CIA support van loaded with electronic monitoring gear. However, before any conversations could be picked up, Marchetti said, "the poor thing got run over by a taxicab."

The future should come as no surprise. In 1976 *Science Digest* reported that there was a robot population explosion in the United States, with some 6,000 mechanical humanlike machines performing simple human tasks. According to the publication,"within the next thirty years there will be more robot than human workers in America." And the proof that everything has lived up to the timetable is that there are no robots among the breadlines of the homeless. When you see a big clumsy robot holding a cardboard sign that says, "will work for oil..." you'll know that things have changed again.

The typical state of robotdom is still very expensive. Most use television to "see" and to review their work. A number of robots in service are busy building other robots. A Robot Institute of America was in existence in the 1970's. Now, in the '90's micromachines are approaching the size of viruses. Soon entire microscopic factories will be turning out other, even smaller micro-mini-tech factories on the scale of atoms. While definately a boon to the computer industry, this technology will also be injectable into the human body, for better or worse.

Situation comedies and children's cartoon shows embody the cyborg myth and condition the individual to accept the day when wires will enter his brain -- wires hidden inside the skull: clandestine circuitry for covert cyborgs. The most influencial science fiction work today describes cyberspace and "virtual reality." (The real is no longer good enough?)

Bestselling books by writers such as William Gibson, Bruce Sterling and others romanticize a cybernetic reality. Philip K. Dick is enjoying a postumous literary revival. One of his books, VALIS (acoronym of Vast Active Living Intelligence System) is a highly literate description of the things the "survivors" of the so-called MTS are describing. "... A perturbation in the reality field in which a spontaneous self-monitoring negentropic vortex is formed, tending progressively to subsume and incorporate its environment into arrangements of information. Characterized by quasi-consciousness, purpose, intelligence, growth and an armillary coherence...[135]" MTV is running an action adventure series called "*Dead at 21*", about a young man with a microchip implanted in his brain being tracked by the signals it gives off. The hero with the microchip implant is pursued by some corrupt cryptocracy. Does this mean the myth of surrender to control by technology is being glorified as the highest aim of the twentieth century version of the American Dream -- or is it another nightmare erupting into life?

What once was the American Dream is turning into a cybernetic nightmare in more ways than one. As Poet Richard Brautigan said, trying to find hope in this new myth: ... one day we may all be "watched over by machines of loving grace." Of couse you have to take into account that, despite his optimism, Brautigan blew his brains out in dispair.

---

[135] Phillip K. Dick, *Valis*, (New York, 1st Vintage Books, 1991)

Every elderly person who is taken into long term care in either an old-people's home or a hospital is injected with this transmitter. It then transmits a radio wave which penetrates their brains, inducing amnesia, weakening their immune system and in general increasing their vulnerability to disease. **The inhumanity of connecting elderly defenceless people unwittingly to computers has been going on for at least ten years,** the details being published, along with the illustration above, in a book entitled "Den Maktfullkomliga Oförmågan" (The Despotic Incompetence) by Jan Freese. He was director-general of Data Inspection for thirteen years and has a thorough knowledge of this covert development.

From "When the State Rapes", Robert Naeslund, Slipgaten 18, 117-39 Stockholm, Sweden.

After the injection of the transmitter, researchers take over and use these elderly people in experiments which last the rest of their lives. The interaction between human brains and computers is fundamental to the development of the "information society" and is also the most significant of all state secrets. It is, moreover, quite plainly a serious breach of human rights, for such systematic exploitation shows a complete disregard for a person's right to privacy as innocent people are forced to serve as biological material for an excessive and unrestricted research programme. **The advance towards the technocratic society, governed by new social norms that breed inhumanity, goes hand in glove with state hegemony. As a natural consequence, covert surveillance systems able to control the neurological activity of the brain have been developed in secret and beyond public awareness.**

29

INVISIBLE WARFARE

Since this book first appeared in 1978 there has been a rapid acceleration in public awareness about mind control. It has largely replaced the term "brainwashing" in the press, appearing with some regularity on the front pages of your local daily newspaper. If you are laboring under the impression that the Church Committee hearings stopped Operation Mind Control, in these pages you have learned of evidence to the contrary. Instead of halting mind control, a whole new kind of warfare has developed around it. The new technology makes the old "Project Monarch" style classical conditioning obsolete. It is the reason so many survivors are remembering and are allowed to talk. They are no longer needed, and there's a better way to control minds.

Public awareness has been outrun by the progress in mind control technology. It has gone from drugs and hypnosis to the effects of microwaves, ELF waves, gravity waves, and modulated signals of all kinds. The basics are the same in all techniques -- the government programmers sneak into the subconscious mind of individuals and the masses and influence them without their knowledge or consent.

It works the same way hypnosis works, in fact, whether aided by drugs, a variety of signals or waves, the objective is the same, to talk to the 90% of us that is asleep but automatically in charge of our lives most of the time. It is difficult to get a person to change through reason. All the logical persuasion, discussion and argument possible has a small chance of changing a person's core beliefs. But, it is easy to get a person to change by an applied covert use of language spoken to the unconscious.

Certain frequencies make the majority of people suggestible. Modulated frequencies can be embedded behind music as messages which are constructed of ordinary language, carefully chosen, framed in the positive. "You are thirsty. Drink Coca-Cola," used in such a context will show coke sales to be positively affected.

We are bathed in an environment of invisible wave stimulus, from radio waves, television waves, cellular phone waves, microwaves, powerline electromagnetic waves and gravity waves. Who notices? And if the waves act as a carrier for a signal, if part of them is modulated to carry a voice, sensitive individuals will hear the suggestions, but most won't. They'll just act on them.

Invisible mind control weaponry has been *the* most sought after military prize since the days of Ancient China's legendary warlord, Sun Tzu. It was developed in India and refined through succeeding civilizations of Egypt, China, the Mayan Empire, Greece, Rome, Medieval Europe, Nazi Germany, Soviet Russia, Red China and finally in the United States. As early as 1900 the U.S. had access to patents and theories which are just now being understood. Their inventor was none other than Nicola Tesla the man who worked for both the Edison and Westinghouse Companies, the man who invented the famous Tesla coil and alternating current. The man whose inventions laid the groundwork for TV, radio, telegraphy, electronic surveillance, Dictaphones, air purifiers, death rays and even a technology for the solution for our current energy crisis.

Of course technology is neutral, it can be used to enrich and empower the human spirit or it can be used to enslave it. There still is much to learn about the electromagnetic spectrum and its effect on humanity's collective mind and body.

"It may be hard to convince ourselves that something we can't see, hear, touch, taste, or smell can still hurt us so dreadfully," Dr. Robert Becker and/or Gary Selden wrote in the landmark work *The Body Electric.*[136] "Yet the fact must be faced, just as we've learned a healthy fear of nuclear radiation. Certain scientist, some perhaps acting in a program of deliberate disinformation, keep telling the public that we still don't know whether electropollution is a threat to human health. That's simply not true. Certainly we need to know more, but a multitude of risks have been well documented.

"Three dangers overshadow all others. The first has been conclusively proven: *ELF electromagnetic fields vibrating at about 30 to 100 hertz, even if they're weaker than the earth's field, interfere with the cues that keep our biological cycles properly timed: chronic stress and impaired disease resistance result.* Second, the available evidence strongly suggests that regulation of cellular growth processes is impaired by electropollution, increasing cancer rates and producing serious reproductive problems. Electromagnetic weapons constitute a third class of hazards culminating in climatic manipulation from a sorcerer's-apprentice level of ignorance."

That was the firm conclusion in 1985, after ten years of study. Andwhat's the conclusion after ten years of experimentation upon U.S. citizens (or is it subjects now) who, history demonstrates, are thought of as so many "rats" in the cryptocracy's maze?

In the late 1970's, while the military was vigorously denying the very existence of bioeffects from electromagnetic-field exposure, Dr. Robert Becker writes, "such bioeffects were actually being explored as potential weapons -- weapons with the enormous advantage of being totally silent and imperceptible...

---

[136] Becker, Robert O., and Selden, Gary; *The Body Electric, Electromagnetism And The Foundation of Life*, , William Morrow, New York, 1985.

"The EMP [electro-magnetic pulse] concept has been extended through the development of devices that generate EMP pulses without the need for nuclear explosions. Such devices could be deployed for use against enemy command and control centers or against aircraft in order to produce failure in electronic equipment. A derivative of this program is HPM (high-powered pulsed microwave, a system producing intense, extremely short pulses of microwave. Several types, ranging in frequency from 1200 MHz to 35 GHz with powers up to 1000 megawatts, are being tested. These are also being considered for potential use as weapons against human beings.

"A report derived from the testing program of the Microwave Research Department at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research states:

> **Microwave energy in the range of 1 to 5 GHz, a militarily important range, penetrates all organ systems of the body ad thus puts all organ systems at risk." Effects on the central nervous system are considered very important. The testing program, begun in 1986, is divided into four parts:**
>
> **(1) prompt debilitation effects;**
>
> **(2) prompt stimulation through auditory effects;**
>
> **(3) work interference/ stoppage effects;**
>
> **(4) effects on stimulus-controlled behavior.**

The report goes on to state, "Microwave pulses appear to couple to the central nervous system and produce stimulation similar to electrical stimulation unrelated to heat." It appears that HPM is capable of altering behavior in the same fashion as Delgado's electrical stimulation.

"The production of cognitive and behavioral alterations by HPM," Dr. Becker writes, "is a sledgehammer effect in comparison to the subtle alterations produced by ELF fields.

According to an 1982 Air Force review of biotechnology, ELF has a number of potential military uses, including "dealing with terrorist groups, crowd control, controlling beaches in security at military installations, and antipersonnel techniques in tactical warfare." The same report states, "[Electromagnetic] systems would be used to produce mild to severe physiological disruption or perceptual distortion or disorientation. They are silent, and countermeasures to them may be difficult to develop."

Becker's protest is rare among qualified research scientists. "A new class of weapons, based on electromagnetic fields, has been added to the muscles of the military organism," he said. "The C3I [command control, communications, and intelligence] doctrine is still growing and expanding. It would appear that the military may yet be able to completely control the minds of the civilian population."

Exhibiting unusual courage for a man in his position, Dr. Becker cautions: "I have made no attempt here to review in any detail the relationship between military considerations and the hazards of man-made electromagnetic fields. This complex and dangerous situation lies outside the scope of this book, except for an indication of how the political policies derived from it have effectively hampered the public recognition of the hazards. In my opinion, the military establishment still believes that the survival of the military organism is worth the sacrifice of the lives and health of large segments of the American population."[137]

The cryptocracy wants us to call it Non-Lethal Weaponry or No-Kill Warfare. More appropriate is the term Invisible Weaponry or Warfare. It began to be used on the common man in the 70's, after it was announced that the Soviet's were caught red-handed, beaming microwaves at the U.S. Embassy in Moscow. Oddly enough, they'd been doing it for over twenty years, triggering cancer, heart problems, cataracts, and emotional stress among Embassy staff and employees and either nobody cared, or nobody noticed.

It was while sweeping the embassy for bugs, they said, that security personnel detected a microwave beam aimed straight at the embassy in 1962. These sweeps are usually frequent, and technology which can detect microwave radiation goes back to the 40's or earlier. Supposedly, the reports say, the Pentagon and the U.S. Intelligence Community became "alarmed at the possibility of neurological and behavioral effects" this might have on diplomatic personnel, in 1962. Then they took a wait-and-see posture. They kept the knowledge secret from the suffering embassy staff for 12 more years.

It wasn't that the cryptocracy did nothing. The CIA launched *Project Pandora,* which was aimed at understanding the Soviet's motives for the microwave attack. The extensive investigation which was Pandora revealed the Soviet's had been doing research in the area for years, concentrating their studies on the emotional and mental effects of microwaves.

By the summer of 1965, a Pentagon-affiliated think tank, Institute for Defense analysis, convened a special task force to replicate Soviet experiments and analyze the problem. Or so the official history goes. The Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) began experimenting on rhesus monkeys with microwaves at Walter Reed Army Research Institute. The results are still classified Top Secret, but from duplicate studies we have learned that microwaves cause profound effects on the central nervous system and have changed behavior in rhesus monkeys.

---

[137] Becker, Robert O., *Cross Currents*, Tarcher, Los Angeles, 1990.

At a summit meeting at Glassboro, New Jersey during June, 1967, President Lyndon Johnson asked Soviet Premier Alexi Kosygin to halt the Moscow Signal. In 1969, leading microwave scientists gathered at the University of Virginia Medical College at Richmond for a three day symposium on Biological Effects and Health Implications of Microwave Radiation. Microwave authority Dr. Karel Marha of Czechoslovakia declared that microwave bioeffects included pains in the head and eyes, fatigue and overall weakness, dizziness and vertigo, poor night sleep, irritability, fear, hypochondria, tension, depression, inhibition of intellectual functions, and decreased memory. Yet, most of those at the symposium ignored the subject of human bioeffects. Radomline Research biophysicist Dr. Allan H. Frey was more than interested, However. Frey had determined that humans could actually ***hear*** pulsed microwaves at frequencies ranging from 300 to 3,000 megahertz.

But, it was not until Jack Anderson broke the "Moscow Signal" story in 1972 that the public learned the truth about the insidious new possibilities for controlling the minds of millions. Several months after Anderson's microwave column, the Soviets accused the U.S. of irradiating chess wizard Boris Spaasky with electronic devices, causing him to lose a championship match to Bobby Fischer. On February 7, 1976, the *Los Angeles Times* quoted U.S. Ambassador Walter J. Stoessel, Jr., as telling his staff that the microwaves could cause leukemia, skin cancer, cataracts, and emotional illness. Stoessel himself was reportedly suffering from a mysterious illness resembling leukemia which caused bleeding in the eyes and nausea. Two of his predecessors at the embassy died of cancer. According to National Security Advisor Zibnew Brezhinski, U.S. embassy personnel in Moscow suffer the highest cancer rate in the world. We can only assume that the Soviets have now, at least, stopped bombarding the embassy. Project Pandora still remains classified.

The U.S., of course, was not as ignorant about the potential use of microwave weaponry as it appeared. In 1957 the CIA and Pentagon began a project known as *River Styx* which revealed the decade long effort to coordinate various Pentagon, corporations, university and intelligence agencies and at the same time keep the lid on their intentions.

The code name *River Styx*, was taken from Greek mythology. The newly dead souls of ancient Greece had to ford two streams before they were admitted into Hades. The first, the River Lethe, erased all memory of having lived in the minds of those immersed in its waters. The second, the River Styx, baptized the newly deceased Greek, making the soul "dead forever" and admitting it through the gates of Hades.

"Should developments in this type of weapon be undertaken and should they become known to the public, charges from public and foreign sources that this is an atrocity weapon may be made and should be anticipated." Thus, naturally, when the cryptocracy began to leak the fact of their now operational capabilities in the 90's it was in terms of "non-lethal", kindly warfare, anti-terrorist and mob control technology.

But, with ghoulish humor, the creators of the *River Styx* Project had the last laugh. Supposedly the first invisible weapons design, *River Styx* was conceived as a way of stopping the Soviet Cavalry as it launched an overwhelming tank attack against Western Europe. Large microwave dishes mounted on half tracks would be secreted in the woods and would triangulate the advancing Soviet army while on the move or while bivouacked. This, the documents said, would:" grossly degrade bodily functions" of "the brain, the testes, the eyes, and like organs."

Further, the creators of these weapons claimed "there are paraphysical advantages that may accrue to the country and allied nations from the early realization of military applications of these effects." According to one Pentagon study, the Army conducted microwave experiments which produced third degree burns on the "subjects" at the Medical Research Lab at Fort Knox, Kentucky. General Electric, building on its earlier independent developments of antipersonnel microwave weapons, participated in Project COMET which researched the psychological effects of EMR. These projects spanned the EMR spectrum from radiowaves to microwaves.

River Styx, however, may have been just one of the many dummy projects backed by the cryptocracy. As Fletcher Prouty told us: "Whenever the CIA was supporting some important secret project, it would fund a number of dummy projects which looked just like the real one on the surface. They were thinking twenty years ahead, even before the Freedom of Information Act. They knew that they were going to have to 'come clean' on things, and they wanted to have enough dummy projects in their files so that the public would never learn about the real ones."

We learned from a prominent European microwave scientist (employed by NATO at the time of our interview, she asked to remain anonymous) that the supposed River Styx "barrier weaponry" could be defended against simply by covering the body with aluminum foil. At your own peril you might try putting a piece of foil in your microwave weapon and you'll get a graphic if dangerous demo of how microwave's bounce off of metal. The River Styx mircrobeams never would have penetrated the tanks against which they were designed to defend.

"A powerful radio signal that may be affecting human health has been monitored in several Eugene (Oregon) locations and in the air three thousand feet above the city," proclaimed the *Eugene Register-Guard* on March 26, 1978. "The source of the radio signal is unknown." thus came to light news of the first electromagnetic biohazard suffered by a major population center in America.

Shortly before the *Register-Guard* printed that, a middle-aged Eugene man, Walter Deposkey, came down with symptoms remarkably similar to those attributed to microwave sickness. He noted a strange vibration emanating from within his home. He heard voices. He could not sleep. He suffered burning of his cornea. University of Oregon industrial hygienist Marshall van Ert, called to investigate Deposkey's complaints, suffered the same symptoms in the man's home. Disturbed, van Ert recruited several local engineers to investigate. The engineers measured an unusual radio signal they determined was capable of producing potential biohazards. After dogging public health agencies to investigate further, van Ert broke the story to the papers.

The Eugene Signal was described as a radio frequency pulse at 4.75 megahertz, 1,100 cycles per second, recorded within at least two local homes as well as 3,000 feet above the city. The signal's strength was rated at five hundred thousand watts -- ten times the FCC AM licensed limit. The signal extended as far away as the next town, Corvallis.

One-hundred-fifty documented complaints about the signal prompted Governor Bob Straub, Senator Mark Hatfield, and Congressman Jim Weaver to demand an EPA investigation. A data analysis by the State Health Department's Radiation Control Section suggested "probable cause" linking the complaints to the strange frequency. "I was surprised," said Clifford Shrock, a Textronix, Inc. radio frequency analyst who had written CIA and NSA electronics manuals. "I'd never seen anything like it before."

Reactions to the story flooded in from around the world. Calls came in from people telling similar stories about their own distant areas. Several calls came from technicians offering their hypotheses about the signal, suggesting a possible link to secret weapons radiation. The people of Eugene began to learn about Electromagnetic Radiation (EMR) biohazards in a hurry.

No one, however, could get to the bottom of Eugene's problem. The FCC's Enforcement Division Assistant Chief, Richard Smith, laid the blame squarely on a naval transmitter at Dixon, California -- the "Dixon Duck". Van Ert and others disputed this conclusion. The Navy denied it. When the EPA technicians finally arrived, they decided no real problem existed and denied that there was any mystery signal. Van Ert, Shrock, and others strongly disagreed with them. They had *felt* the signal and had measured it. But, after holding a cursory press conference, the EPA investigators returned to their Las Vegas headquarters and dodged reporters. Then the investigation folded.

While some of the citizens of Eugene, Oregon said they continued to suffer from the signal effects, the Eugene Signal remained an official mystery. Marshall Van Ert left Eugene after he began to suffer from the EMR symptoms. YEars later he remained convinced he was victimized by secret IW radiation and a government cover-up.

The people of Eugene weren't the only ones complaining of EMR biohazards in the mid '70's. Similar symptoms were reported in such places as Timmons and

Kirland Lake in Canada. These effects were linked to an alleged Soviet radio broadcast dubbed "the woodpecker" by amateur radio operators. These effects bear a strong resemblance to the biohazards inherent in Invisible Weapons like the electromagnetic pulse (EMP) which was then under development by the Pentagon. Although the people of Eugene didn't know it, both the U.S. and the Soviet military had been working for years to perfect the use of electromagnetic frequencies as psychological weapons.

On October 14, 1976, radio communications throughout the globe were disrupted by powerful radio waves emanating from the Soviet Union. The broadcasts appeared irregularly and varied between very high and very low frequencies. When the U.S., Canada, Great Britain, and the Scandinavian countries protested the broadcast, the Soviets apologized, blaming the disturbance on "experiments." But then the nature of the wavelengths changed and huge electromagnetic standing waves formed, thousands of miles long, penetrating the earth and extending up into the ionosphere.

Due to its characteristic sound, the signal was dubbed "the woodpecker." The sound ham radio operators heard all over the world can be replicated by tapping a pencil on a table at between eight and fourteen times each second. The wavelength was traced to alleged "Tesla generator" experiments in the Soviet cities of Riga and Gomel. The standing waves stretched down both coasts of North America and along the Eastern frontier of the Soviet Union.

The "woodpecker" has been blamed for subsequent shifts in weather patterns resulting from altered trade winds. The change of winds created a drought in the western U.S. with severe effects on farming and the economy that year. Several agencies feared that such standing waves might well have caused the disintegration of ships, including oil tankers in the Atlantic. But their potential effect on human beings caused even greater concern.[138]

---

[138] *On Halloween, 1979, at the Jerome Bar in Aspen, Colorado, I met a man who was a master at "Remote Viewing". (His name is withheld by his request.) When he asked about my life I told him about my adventures promoting this book on a world tour. Most people, in those days, responded to my information about mind control with either disbelief or horror. He was most matter of fact and his response surprised me.*

"A friend dared me to remote view the inside of the supposed NORAD site within, I think it's called Cheyenne Mountain outside Colorado Springs, I've never been there in my body. Now, what I do is something like what has been called 'astral projection' or 'out of body travel'," he explained. "It's apparently different from what Price or Swan did in that government supported remote viewing experiment at Stanford Research Institute.

"Well, I went out of my body and suddenly I was inside the NORAD tunnel inside the mountain. A bell went off and I was frozen, trapped by some ray. All I thought was 'I'm dead! I'll never get back to my body!' I was aware of a lot of activity. Warning lights blinking, sirens blaring, security guards running around with weapons cocked.

"Then this one security chief comes up to me and aims some kind of device at me up where I'm trapped, near the ceiling of this tunnel. He reads the feedback and says, 'Okay. You can let him go. It's just another one of those sleepwalkers.' And suddenly I was back inside my body.

After that I thought about what I'd seen in one room off this tunnel. I'd seen large half orbs stacked on top of each other like diminishing sized bicycle bells. And I realized that these were being used in an experiment which was designed to influence a local election somewhere in Florida. Later I saw a picture of a Tesla generator and it looked just like those stacked up bells.

"I think our secret government has some real Buck Rogers technologies to control us," he said. "I'd like to help you research your second book."

I thought it would be clever to put a number of remote-viewers to work for the Bill of Rights for a change and against the cryptocracy. (Of course I'd still have to do all the follow-up research to prove what they saw.) So, I called Ingo Swan, the famous remote viewer who had participated in the SRI project. I asked him to repeat the view inside the

Former Pentagon think-tank researcher, Lowell Ponte wrote in the late 70's: "The right kind of radio transmissions alter the planet's magnetic field... The giant rivers of wind in the sky, like the jet stream, tend to follow that magnetic field. So, when you bend it or when you begin creating giant standing waves in the atmosphere, as our government knows they've been doing, you bend those wind currents, and where they go the weather goes."

Just as the human body's nervous system operates electromagnetically, so the Earth has an electromagnetic "aura" which, scientists claim, can be altered to produce dramatic weather shifts. In fact the earth's ionosphere oscillates at approximately the same frequency as human brain waves making it a perfect "carrier" off which EMR radiations (in the brain wave range) can be bounced without any change of frequency.

The relationship between the electromagnetosphere and the EM basis of the human body can be exploited as a strategic weapon. Everyone has experienced mental and emotional shifts during changes of weather. Imagine the power open to those who, by flicking a switch, could control the earth's atmosphere and change not only the weather but the brainwaves of entire populations. Cryptocracies around the world know that a strong pattern exists correlating geophysical phenomena and political disturbances, health, and mood swings. For these reasons the "woodpecker" gained a lot of covert attention.

Sounds and even words can be made to appear within the human brain when broadcast from EMR neurological controls at a military base. Brainwave entrainment, coronaries, strokes, and epileptic seizures can also be triggered by remote control. One 1976 DIA estimate was labeled: "*recommended reading material for those consumers who have an interest in the application of microwave energy to weapons.*" An Army report, *Analysis of Microwaves for Barrier Warfare,* describes the use of the microwave band to control populations.

Although few would appear to know it, the French have used invisible wavelengths to control crowds for years. A former U.S. intelligence officer even claims that the Nazi's used a "frenzy machine" to stir up crowds at Hitler's Nuremberg Rallies. The French crowd control "sirens" use various inaudible sounds which throw people into terror and cause loss of bowel control *en masse.*

We must remember that Richard Helms may very well have had such weapons in mind when he testified before the Warren Commission on June 19, 1964. Then Deputy Director for Plans at CIA, Helms warned: "Current research indicates that the Soviets are attempting to develop a technology for control in the development of behavioral patterns among the citizenry of the USSR. in accordance with politically determined requirements of the system. Furthermore, the same

---

mountain. I could hear the tremble in his voice when Ingo said, "They're not all bad. The CIA people are not all bad people."

The second book, The Invisible War, *was outlined, but no publisher was interested. It revealed in 1980 what's now coming out in* The Wall Street Journal, Newsweek and U.S. News *about the supposed "non-lethal weapons" and more.*

technology can be applied to more sophisticated approaches to the 'coding' of information for transmittal to population targets in the 'battle for the minds of men.'" In future chapters we'll examine evidence that the U.S. cryptocracy is advancing along the lines of this supposed Soviet plan.

Since the '50's both the Soviets and the U.S. were covering up their knowledge of invisible weapons. When we originally interviewed the legal counsel for the State Department's Disarmament Agency in 1980, we heard him claim ignorance of such weapons. He furthermore said that such ideas were "speculative and futuristic." History has shown, beyond doubt, that State's counsel was lying and had, in fact, possession of materials concerning invisible weapons. Certainly, he was aware of the Soviet amendment to SALT II which proposed banning of infrasonic and electromagnetic weapons designed to affect biological targets.

There is hope however. Just as with computer hacker's and their demonstrated ability to "outsmart" government systems, an underground physics network acts as a perpetual thorn in the side of the invisible warriors.

In the 1970's and '80's, colorful characters such as Bob Beck of Los Angeles' Biomedical Research Associates flew back and forth from Washington to Eugene to Canada sharing findings and investigating the "Oregon Signal", the "Woodpecker" and other suspected government environmental crimes. Members of this loosely-knit network shared their information freely and were concerned about the debilitating aspects of the invisible war on the mind.

A former military intelligence officer, Lt. Col. Thomas E. Bearden, USAF (Ret.), publishes *Specula*, a magazine devoted to "psychotronics" and "bio-energetics." these two words describe what amounts to the electronic amplification of telepathy and what has heretofore been called ESP. Bearden is not just a concerned amateur, he is an experienced scientist who has several of his psychotronic weapons papers on file at the Defense Documentation Center outside Washington. The story of his fight to publish a book on the subject of psychotronics and bio-energetics, *The Excalibur Statement*, is as full of cloak-and-dagger intrigue as an Ian Fleming Thriller. Bearden's book was due out in 1978, but was "mysteriously" delayed again and again. During the time he was preparing the manuscript for publication, the underground lore says, one by one, the members of his "network" met strange fates.

One member of Bearden's network was Ira Einhorn, an aide to Congressman Rose, Einhorn wrote:

> During the time that Alexander Solzhenitzyn was making the transition from his native land to his fortress in New England, he uttered a prophetic statement about the Third and Fourth World Wars. In essence, he said that the Russians had won the Third World War and that the battle was now shifting from physical combat to

> combat of the mind... the Fourth World War involves the struggle for the human mind itself.[139]

One day police raided Ira Einhorn's apartment. During the search they found the long dead body of his fellow researcher and girlfriend, Holly Maddux, in a locked trunk in his closet. The body had been dead so long it was mummified. While the downstairs neighbors had heard a woman scream several years before, there was no physical evidence to link Einhorn to the murder. But murder charges were filed and he was tried and convicted in abstentia.

While on $45,000 bail, bond of which was posted by a Canadian liquor heiress, Einhorn made an impassioned plea to the press and friends. He claimed that he was being framed by the CIA.. Fearing that he could not get a fair trial, Einhorn disappeared and has been underground for the past fifteen years. Three times he has been seen, in Ireland and Sweden. Each time he escape capture.

Ira Einhorn traveled in intellectual circles. He was definitely "a dangerous free thinker" -- dangerous to someone, and with such a passionate curiosity coupled with a brilliant mind, perhaps dangerous to many. Maybe most dangerous to himself.

He was deeply connected with Michael Murphy of the Esalen Institute as WIlliam Irwin Thompson records in *The Edge of History*[140]. He was friends with physicists, among them, David Bohm, Fred Wolf, Peter Maddux, Fritjof Capra, Heinz Pagels and Jack Sarfatti. He was in fact, Sarfatti and Wolf's literary agent at one point. He counted among his acquaintances Astronauts Buzz Aldrin and Edgar Mitchell, Psychic Uri Geller, writers Martin Gardner, Arthur C. Clarke, Arthur Koestler, Elaine Pagels, Adrija Puharich. George Leonard, and author and publisher Steward Brand, at least one knight -- Sir John Whitmore, radical investment broker Jerry Rubin, actor/author and mariner Sterling Hayden, UFO author and computer scientist Jacques Vallee, filmmakers Steven Spielberg and George Lucas, and EST founder Werner Erhard -- among many of the cognoscenti. In fact he was, as one friend said, "the central network coordinator for all the most radical new-physics ideas. He sent out frequent packets of information, and this was before Internet. One of his netowrk, a leader int he E-zone today, said, "Knocking Einhorn out effectively killed the distribution of the new-physics information."

Einhorn was in the thick of the students of Tesla technology, remote viewers and those who were at the time doing research under a project named SCANATE, a pet project of then President Jimmie Carter. Carter had created the project for remote-viewing of military targets (especially submarines) by psychics and intelligence reports led the executive to believe we were lagging behind the

---

[139] Ira Einhorn, *A Disturbing Communiqué*, Co-Evolution Quarterly, Winter 1977-78.

[140] William Irwin Thompson. *The Edge of History*.

Soviets in such research and development. Everyone was thinking *Invisible* warfare.

To give you the idea of the "dangerous free thinking" that was going on in Einhorn's circle, *SARFATTI'S ILLUMINATI,* appeared on the internet in 1992. It mentions Einhorn prominently. Physicist Jack Sarfatti[141] reports: "If I remember correctly, Brendan (O'Regan, one of the moving forces at Stanford Research Institute (SRI) in that day) and I went with Uri (Geller) to his hotel room where I met Andrija Puharich, Sir John Whitmore and, perhaps Ira Einhorn... I startled Uri by asking him if he could trigger a nuclear weapon by psychokinesis. I later found out from Ron McRae (author of *Mind Wars*) that some of our intelligence people were greatly concerned about that possibility. I may have initiated that concern..."

Later Sarfatti says: " Former Naval Intelligence Officer and Jack Anderson reporter Ron McRae told me that the Navy had been fooled by phony data on remote-viewing of Soviet submarines because someone had leaked the actual data to phony psychics. McRae seems to have omitted this story from his book... Barbara Honegger said that policy decisions on the basing of MX missles were made by the Reagan staff under the belief that remote-viewing worked. Harold Chipman believed that it worked and told me that he had used it successfully in his business..."

At the height of his popularity, while Einhorn was working with Charlie Rose and quietly negociating with the U.S. and Czech governments in an effort to gather their support and collaboration in the creation of a Nicola Tesla museum in the country of Tesla's origin Serbo-Coatia (then Czechoslovakia), while he was at the same time, promoting a movie on Tesla starring Orson Welles, as part of an International Year of Tesla, the dead body of his girlfriend turned up in the large which had her name on it. Einhorn said, she went to the store one day and never returned. In the closet with the trunk were other containers possessing her clothes and personal items.

Holly Maddux disappeared during The International Year of Tesla. The movie *Secrets Of Nicola Tesla* was to have it's premiere in Prague to coincide with the opening of the museum. There would be patents shown that had never been seen in public. Tesla inventions which had never been seen would be built in minature to demonstrate some of the wonderful unknown and miraculous inventions of the Serbo-Croatian. Tesla had practically invented the Twentieth Century single handedly. He'd invented radio, microwave broadcasting, electricity broadcasting, the alternator and the dynamo. And he'd invented the Wheatstone bridge -- Scientology's E-meter and the polygraph's galvanic skin response monitoring device. Tesla invented so many things that when he died during the Second World War, the Secret Service cleaned out his room and the hotel safe of all his belongings. He dreamed things up which have not yet been applied. And he believed that Albert Einstein and all his physics was a dead-end, like Newton's turned out to be. At the end of the Nineteenth Century Tesla knew about an entirely different physics which Einhorn's friends were (and still are) on the verge of discovering. (One must remember that Sigmund Freud's best pupil, Willhelm Reich, was sent to prison, and had his books banned for 60 years, when he stumbled upon something he called "OR")

---

[141] Jack Safatti, *SARFATTI'S ILLUMINATI, (It looks like a highly readable rough book proposal outlining the friends Sarfatti was introduced to by the invisible forces of – what?– the Interdimensional Earth Watcher's Society?)* Wed., 12 Aug, 1992, 20:59, Internet (mondo 2.32.1

Sarfatti says he and his friends were:

> ...channeling the new physics from the future. Our basic themes since the early 70's have been:
>
> 1. Quantum nonlocality essential for a physics of consciousness as well as paranormal. Present-day quantum mechanics is only an approximation for 'dead' matter. Life introduces a really new physics that Penrose in his new book *Shadows of the Mind* calls "OR" physics. Fred Alan Wolf and I explained it as quantum 'star waves' from the future to the present in addition to the more familiar quantum waves from past to present. Quantum waves act within spacetime but exist beyond spacetime and are able to directly connect widely separated events in spacetime. Indeed, such quantum connections between different parts of our brains are needed for ordinary consciousness and for memory as well as for anticipation of future events.
>
> 2. The future causes the past and gives meaning and purpose to the past and to our existence. I call this the "destiny matrix" (the title for my memoirs).
>
> 3. Time travel to the past is necessary for our universe to exist. The fact that latest data from Hubble telescope shows that the universe may be only 8 billion years-old when we see stars that are 16 billion years old tells us that our ordianry ideas about time are in serious trouble.
>
> 4. We are in contact with higher intelligences from the future that use advanced quantum technology that breaks the speed of light barrier to communication...[142]

What would happen if this were the common belief in the early '70's. Nicola Tesla seemed to be in agreement with this kind of thinking. So, what if, suddenly, Nicola Tesla was all the rage? People would begin to re-examine this eccentric hermit's designs and theories. Maybe the Soviets and the Western Intelligence goons flipped a coin to see who would shut Einhorn's folly down. It only cost one beautiful young woman's life. That was cheap, thinking of all the oil that could be pumped one day longer, just one day longer, another drop of oil out of the ground before the new "free" energy device was discovered.

---

[142] Jack Sarfatti, Intercepted e-mail bio from Sarfatti to *Mondo2000 editor* Wes Thomas, Oct 30 - 17:06:55 1994.

That may sound far fetched, but one has to scratch one's head over how many know how little about Tesla. Knowledge of the history of alternating current could be dangerous to the egos of the men I met who were executives of Southern California Edison. They graciously took me on an overnight bus tour of their ingenius nuclear/hydro system in Southern California. It was truly a beautiful adventure. I was amazed to see the lakes near Pine Top being filled by water that only the day before had fallen thousands of feet to a holding lake at the foot of the mountains. the water was pumped up to the top lakes again with the ever constant current of electricity generated cautiously by the atomic reactors at the five San Onofre plants.

The limitation of nuclear power, it seems, is you can't turn it up or down. Once you turn a nuclear reactor on, it produces a constant flow of electricity. So, in order to supply the extra power demanded by Southern California's air conditioners in the summer, water is pumped up and stored as energy in the high lakes, to be released through the long-ago-paid-for hydro-electric stations that used to power Los Angeles, It costs nothing since the nuclear power plants surplus energy was not needed during off hours. This way, at peak demand time, the extra power is there in controllable quantities. The valves are opened and the small turbines begin to generate power from the falling water.

Before I knew all that, on the bus winding its way from the desert floor to the High Sierra's, the Southern California Edison Public Relations flack did what he had to do. He passed out mugs and baseball caps with the SCE logo on them and begged us to watch the mandatory video he had to show us on the history of SCE. Of course the name of the company was Edison, so, it didn't matter to me that when Edison's D.C. systems couldn't keep up with Westinghouse /Tesla's A.C. systems SCE made the switch to the better way. But the video didn't seem to acknowledge that Thomas Alva Edison was the promoter of Direct Current and Tesla the inventor of Alternating Current. Westinghouse backed Tesla's better system and the better system won out in the marketplace. But Edison was remembered and Tesla forgotten. Why?

I asked the tycoons of S. Cal. industry -- the SCE's biggest consumers, all except me, who had been invited on this trip, if they knew about Nicola Tesla. They didn't. I drew blank stares. One said, "Who?" I then asked the director of the tour, the PR guy from SCE, how come he didn't have anything to say about Tesla. And he didn't know who Tesla was.

Could this be why Einhorn had to be put down, smudged, smeared, or framed? Maybe it was so important that people not educate themselves about Tesla that an easy target was taken like so much meat in a trap, to keep Einhorn's mouth occupied with his legal defense, or to lock him away behind bars, where he could not have access to his dangerously free thinking network of friends?

Jack Sarfatti says it more dispassionately than most people who knew Einhorn. Without knowing all the facts, without trying the case. Sarfatti puts it straight and simple, stating the facts, but allowing Einhorn the benefit of the doubt, repeating his former agent's side of things: "Einhorn claimed he was innocent and was framed by the KGB." Others said he claimed he was framed by the CIA. It could have been either or both.

The question remains, was he framed, and if so, by whom? Did Einhorn have a motive to kill Holly? In a preview of the public opinion we've seen with the O.J. Simpson trial, Einhorn was reported as having abused girlfriends previously. He was not known to have murdered any before. To anyone's knowledge he hadn't killed anyone, perhaps even any *thing*, before. One witness said that he was "sadistic" with animals. The "animals" turned out to be one incident in which he tried to persuade someone to take a cat into the shower with them.

So,who else had the motive to kill Holly?

It would have to be a good frame. There would have to be a lot of circumstantial evidence. The shadow of a doubt had be planted to succeed in locking Einhorn up for a good number of years. Even if he eventually proved his innocence, even if someone came forward and confessed to the murder, the charge of murder would be useful to discredit these emerging Yuppie cum New Age Dangerous Free Thinkers who were dabbling in new physicis. If Einhorn was tried for murder, he didn't even need to be convicted, many of these wierdos would be drawn into the testimony.

But, if Einhorn didn't have a moment of homocidal madness, if Holly was killed by someone else -- for the purpose of framing Einhorn and tarnishing the reputation of his whole social millieu, it could have been Soviet, British or U.S. Intelligence agencies.

Einhorn was naive about politics. He was a utopian visionary who hoped for a world with unmetered energy. Toward that end he was freely exchanging information on little known Tesla technology with Invisible warfare potential, He was knowledgable about independent Tesla research around the world. He was hobnobbing with the remote viewers at SRI, and Mossad "agent" Uri Geller who was believed to be capable of erasing computer tapes and to possess other menacing mind-over-matter talents. And he would give patents and diagrams and unpublished technical reports to anyone who requested them. With hindsight, Einhorn told friends, some of the people who requested hard-to-get Tesla papers from him may have been working for foreign intelligence agencies.

Let's leave this to other researchers to examine the documents Einhorn was circulating and the state's case against him. The primary question today might be, what was being suppessed that Einhorn was coming close to? Probably whatever it was twenty years ago is now public knowledge.

Einhorn's name came up recently in conversations with other people who'd known him: Wes Thomas, editor of *Mondo 2000,* and Regie Siberski, a nationally recognized researcher of mind control and non-ionizing radiation. I did not bring up his name, I'd only talked to him once on the phone, nor did I know Einhorn knew these two. When I spoke with them over the summer of 1994, Thomas was in California and Siberski was in Pennsylvania. Both appeared to hold Einhorn in high esteem for his knowledge of Invisible Weapons technology. Both expressed their belief in his innocence even though he had already been convicted in abstencia of first degree murder.

Ira Einhorn remains underground (if he's still alive) and the area of his research, Tesla technology, remains largely underground too. Research of declassified KGB files on Einhorn would now be a timely project as would a thorough roundup of physics and technology reports which add up to Invisible War.

Sarfatti offers more insight into the climate of those times among these brilliant people: At a conference in England, Sarfatti was introduced to a "sprightly Englishman", Dennis Bardens, who said:

> "Dr. Sarfatti, may I take you to dinner?" Fred Wolf was there and he suggested I go with Bardens. We had a good dinner of duck in cherry sauce at the Blue Boa Inn. After dinner, over brandy and cigars, Bardens leaned towards me with a conspiratorial wink and said: "First, I want you to know that I am a cabalist." After a dramatic pause he continued in a more officious tone: "Dr. Sarfatti, it is my duty to inform you of a psychic war raging across the continents between the Soviet Union and your country and you are to be in the thick of it!"

Now, it would appear, with the collapse of the Soviet Union, the whole world is in the thick of this psychic war -- and apparently most of the mind controlling forces are aimed at individuals and the masses. Only a few get to play with the beneficial aspects of the new psychotronic technology.

In late October, 1994 a mission of the space shuttle was flown to "look at the ozone layer," which it was said had a hole in it. About the same time the first HAARP signals were broadcast from Alaska, which pumped radiowave energy into the ozone layer, following Nicola Tesla's fifty-year-old plan.

HAARP[143] stands for High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program, a project which will build the world's largest high frequency (radio) transmitter. Construction began in early 1994. The first stage of completion corresponded with the shuttle mission. From HAARP documents reveal:

> The HAARP is to ultimately have a HF (High Frequency) heater with an Effective Radiated Power (ERP) well above 1 gigawatt (1,000,000,000 watts) on the order of 95-100 dBW, in short, the most

---

[143] Clare Zickuhr, NO HAARP, 5316 Shorecrest Dr., Anchorage, AK. 99515 (907) 248-8189

powerful facility in the world for conducting ionospheric modification research...[144]

The Soviets, operating at higher powers than the West, now have claimed significant stimulated ionization by electron-impact ionization. The claim is that HF energy, via wave-particle interaction, accelerates ionospheric electrons to energize well in excess of 20 electron volts (eV) so that they will ionize neutral atmospheric particles with which they collide. Given that the Soviet HF facilities are several times more powerful than the Western facilities at comparable mid-latitudes, and given that the latter appear to be on a threshold of a new "wave-particle" regime of phenomena, it is believed that the Soviets have crossed that threshold and are exploring a regime of phenomena still unavailable for study or application in the West...[145]

From the DOD (Department of Defense) point of view, however, the most exciting and challenging aspect of ionospheric enhancement is its potential to control (control is underlined) ionospheric processes in such a way as to greatly improve performance of C3 (military abbreviation for Command, Communication and Control) systems (or, to deny accessibility to an adversary).[146]

A key goal of the program (HAARP) is the identification and investigation of those ionospheric processes and phenomena that can be exploited for DOD purposes, such as outlined below:

- Generation of Extrememly Low Frequency ELF waves... to provide communications to deeply submerged submarines.
- Geophysical probing to identify and characterize natural ionospheric processes... so that techniques can be developed to mitigate or control them.
- Generation of ionospheric lenses to focus large amounts of HF energy... thus providing a means for triggering ionospheric processes that potentially could be exploited for DOD purposes.
- Electron acceleration for the generation of IR (infra red) and other optical emissions... that could be used to control radio wave propagation properties.
- Generation of geomagnetic-field aligned ionization to control the reflection/scattering properties of radio waves.

---

[144] Contract spec. no. SS-HAARP-02 dated 3/2/90, section 4.1.1.

[145] Contract specification no. SS-HAARP-02, dated 3/2/90, section 3.1.

[146] Contract no. SS-HAARP-02 dated 3/2/90, Section 1.

> - Oblique heating to produce effects on radio wave propagation at great distances from the heater, thus broadening the potential military applications of ionospheric enhancement technology.
> - Generation of ionization layers below 90 km to provide radio wave reflectors ("mirrors") which can be exploited for long range, over-the-horizon, HF/VHF/UHF surveillance purposes..."[147]

> Although HAARP is being managed by the Air Force and Navy, it is a purely scientific research facility which represents no threat to potential adversaries and would therefore have no value as a military target.[148]
>
> Electromagnetic systems that could be affected by HAARP operations at either of the sites could include high-frequency communications, FM radio, mobile VHF radios, wildlife trackers, citizen band radios, hand held transceivers, UHF communications equipment, VHF radio telephone systems and television.[149]

The final Environmental Impact Statement was dated well after the contract had been awarded to ARCO Power Technologies, Inc. (Elsewhere, we've noted the use of the ionosphere as a "reflector" of brainwave frequency range signals for the purposes of "entrainment" of an entire geo-political group.) Is the meaning of this Tesla technology what Ira Einhorn was about to make public? And what's this really going to be used for? Probably something we haven't yet realized.

There is much to be uncovered about the dark thoughts of the cryptocracy -- broadcast into your mind or not. Investigative journalist, Rita Hill says, "This is a dangerous time. We might need some journalistically nonstandard approaches. We are probably being fed some disinformation. There are also very real possibilities of being mind-controlled or killed. Or, as (Gunther) Russbacher told me: 'Keep in close contact with your networks'." Is it unthinkable that the U.S. cryptocracy would attack a physics network the same way it attacked the civil rights and anti-war movements of the Sixties?"

One would expect to see a lot of bodies piling up in front of the doorway to multi-dimensional space and time, or in front of the safe that keeps the blueprints for a portable cold fusion reactor, or in front of the shoebox that holds the plans for the levitating automobile and transport engine. Remember the slaves that buried the Pharoah.

Anybody who gets their hands on some multi-dimensional thing better watch out! They might rule the world. And God forbid they put it into the public domain so everybody could have one. That would really make this time and place obsolete. Even the metaphor is dangerous. Control mind, control thoughts, control the future. A place for everything and everything in its place -- especially for the undisciplined masses.

---

[147] Contract no. SS-HAARP-02 dated 3/2/90.

[148] HARP FACT SHEET, 11/4/93, page 2.

[149] HAARP Record of Decision, Final Environmental Impact Statement, 10/18/93, page 14.

Clever spychologist and cryptoligarch, Timothy Leary[150] said:

> "There are two aspects of this social conditioning regime which are not stressed by Skinner. To make it work, the government psychologists must have total control over the citizenry and there must be TOTAL SECRECY and censorship.
>
> In order to condition human behavior it is necessary to get control of stimulus early in childhood and to maintain this control throughout life. In the psychological utopia, conditioning would be accompanied by continual psychological testing so that special aptitudes and potential trouble-makers are identified early in the game and special conditioning programs set up, tailored to eliminate individual eccentricity.
>
> Political conditioning requires not only control of reward and punishment, but also secrecy... Psychological conditioning techniques cannot be employed in a democracy where minority groups can campaign against and publicly discuss the techniques being used, and publish the answers to screening tests, where citizens have the right to avoid the conditioners.
>
> Thus the proposals of B.F. Skinner cannot be implemented except in a state where the government has total control of communications...

Omar V. Garrison[151] cut it closer to the bone as early as 1967 when he said:

> In the totally controlled society of George Orwell's nightmarish novel, "1984", the individual had one retreat that Big Brother could not penetrate: "Nothing was your own except a few cubic centimeters inside your skull."
>
> But in America today, even those "few centimeters" of cranial refuge are under siege...

The dangers of psychotechnology are real. They are being applied. We were warned twenty years ago, in 1974, by the U.S. Senate, 93rd Congress, 2nd Session which investigated and published a book which too few have read. It was entitled *Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification:*

> Dr Robert L. Schwitzebel of the Clarmont Graduate School in California, published a book, *PSYCHOTECHNOLOGY: Electronic Control of Mind And Behavior* in which he describes the present and

---

[150] Timothy Leary, *Exo-Psychology*, Starseed/Peace Press, San Francisco, 1977.

[151] Omar V. Garrison, *Spy Government*, Lyle Stuart, New York, 1967.

> potential use of brain implants and radio telemetry to monitor human emotions, location and behavior, and to control behavior in various fields, including law enforcement.
>
> Dr. Barton Ingraham and Dr. Gerald Smith, both recent recipients of Ph.D. degrees from the School of Criminology, University of California, Berkeley, advocated the permanent implantation of radio receiver-transmitters in the brains of parolees (See Issue in Criminology, Fall 1972). they envision the automatic monitoring of parolees by a computer which, if it detected a probability of misbehavior would deliver an electrical shock to his brain and/or by calling the police to his radio-monitored location.

Prisons aren't obsolete, but the thought of hardwiring the mind is. There's no need for it anymore. Why bother with Delgado's neurological plumbing approach when the already existing neurological wiring can be accessed.

Within the cryptocracy, for years, there was much talk of the "LIDA" machine, a Soviet instrument supposed to be used for "medical therapy." It finally surfaced when the cryptocrats of The New World Order thought about using it on David Koresh at Waco. It was reported they decided not to use it since there was nothing but a small lab model in the U.S. at the time.

The LIDA was presented as "an instrument for the treatment of neuropsychic and somatic disorders wherein light, sound and VHF electromagnetic field pulses are simultaneously applied by means of a control unit to the patient's central nervous system with a predetermined rate. The light and sound sources exert an adequate and monotonous influence on the patient's visual analyzers and auditory analyzers respectively." The patent claims beneficial effects in the treatment of "inorganically caused neuropsychic and somatic disorders, such as neuroses, psychoses, insomnia and hypertension."

The LIDA gives off pulsed radio fields which, it is said, can produce strong behavioral effects. The device was developed by L. Rabichev at Kishinev, Soviet Armenia and is covered by U.S. Patent number 3,773,049.[152] The U.S. Navy received a small LIDA instrument under an exchange agreement with the USSR. Dr. W. Ross Adey, Dr. Eldon Byrd, John Richards and Howard Sukenik tested it from July 19, 1982 to July 26, 1983 at the V.A. Medical Center at Loma Linda, California.

Adey, Byrd and company made a preliminary evaluation of the device using animal models. Rabbits were tested first, but they slept most of the time. The scientists then tried the tests on cats with better results. They tried the RF and light and pulsed sound and heat in all combinations and one at a time. From the report it would appear that the LIDA device lulls animals to achieve "sustained" states of sleep. It is apparent that the LIDA might be a good tool of conditioning.

---

[152] U.S. Department of the Navy, *Possible Behavioral Effects Produced by Pulsed RF Fields from Soviet "Lida" Medical Therapy Instrument*, provided through FOIA request to Armen Victorian, March, 4, 1994.

While the Adey/Byrd study was brief and inconclusive the researchers reported their interest and revealed the government's interest in a vast area of mind control research in the electromagnetic spectrum:

> **We regard this study as of great importance in pilot studies of behavioral effects of environmental electromagnetic fields. The principal investigator is continuing data acquisition and analysis with the aid of a part time undergraduate student, Mr. Howard Sukenick, without whose help much already accomplished would remain to be done. Mr. Sukenick is paid from other research sources, but funding for an effective development of this project is essentially nonexistent.**
>
> **It is therefore requested that urgent consideration be given to an evaluation of the importance of this project, with a view to its renewal and expansion, to permit examination of a vast range of potentially important new field parameters not available with the LIDA instrument. Automated data analysis is becoming imperative to permit intercession and intersubject comparisons. Computer facilities for this work are readily available in our laboratory, but require appropriate personnel support...**

Paul Stonehill of the Russian Ufology Research Center in Tarzana, California stumbled along a parallel path.[153] His work in translating UFO and related stories from Russian led him to find a 1991 article entitled "Once More About Psychic Weapons" which was authored by A.V. Kalinets-Bryukhanov who Stonehill calls, simply, K.B.

> **K.B. stated that the first (and only) experimental model of a device to program the human intellect and psyche had been accepted by Soviet authorities back in 1965. It was to be improved, using the K.B. design for a system of "remote operational influence."...**

However, to cover up the device's existence the Soviets did what Col. Prouty says the U.S. cryptocracy routinely does, they ran a group of phony projects that looked like the real one. K.B. revealed that the "much buzzed about psychic weapons do exist." Stonehill said several articles he found reveal that the research was done secretly in a small basement beneath the old botanical gardens of the Odessa State University that was the site of the Bioelectronics Scientific Research Department:

> **Test animal brains demonstrated that when cellular transformation resulted from fields of especially destructive force, manifestations of paranormal abilities like clairvoyance became possible. When the**

---

[153] Paul Stonehill, *Soviet Psychic Warfare*, Fate Magazine, February 1994, p. 70.

> animals were treated with these fields, they could literally see through opaque barriers...

Trouble was the effects were short-term because the brain tissue disintegrated uncontrollably. But in totalitarian societies it's "never mind" -- keep doing the research. Why not try humans?

> ...experiments had been conducted on prisoners sentenced to death. The results were the same.
>
> Later, using the experimental data, the researchers located phrenological zones of the skull, responsible for motivating various actions of the research subjects. The topography of these zones was recorded in special tables. These experiments helped Soviet scientists find the most effective electromagnetic pulse field operating conditions to reproduce cerebral tissue that would create the planned personality characteristic. For example:
>
> Giorgy V. was a draftee in the Soviet Army, assigned to serve in Afghanistan. His health was quite good. After his assignment with the *spetznaz* forces, Girgory became indecisive. He became obsessed with the feeling of near death. He believed that he was not "sufficiently strong spiritually" to enforce his "international duty" (that is how the Soviets described their occupation of Afghanistan).
>
> So, he and a group of other draftees who, like him, had their doubts about service in Afghanistan, were sent to Odessa to undergo the treatment and develop their will power and sense of duty. Magnetic emitters were place on his superciliary arches, the parietal area, the cranial arch, and the cervical vertebrae area. Grigory was treated only once.
>
> Later that year, Girgory took part in a dangerous military mission. His spetznaz unit was withdrawing from a *kishlak*, an Afghan village. the kishlak was surrounded by *dosshmany,* or guerrillas. During a fierce gun battle, Girgory protected the commanding officer with his body. For his valor, the fallen soldier was awarded the highest Soviet military honor, the star of Hero of the Soviet Union.

Stonehill says K.B.'s article ended strangely:

> Having observed the brain as a receiving and transmitting device, the researchers had discovered certain wavelengths. Using them, it is possible to influence various sections of the brain directly, reproduce cerebral tissue, and then provoke unusual changes in the qualities of individual psyches. Then one can program anything into the brains of experimental subjects.

Just like in the movie *Brainstorm?*

In the fall of 1991, Stonehill reports, a two-part *Molodaya Gvardia* magazine ran a story under the heading "psychotronic weapons." The article said:

> The weapons are dreadful. A human being becomes a silent cog in a hellish machine of all-devouring fear. An individual's brain can be suppressed, activities curtailed, and such an individual will submit to any wish of the operator.

Emil Fedorovich Bachurin, the author of the article says that the first experiments to create psi-weapons were conducted by the infamous Dr. Mengele in the Dachau concentration camp. Stonehill says Bachurin is not the only one to mention the Nazi foundation of psychotronic weapons. He writes:

> In July of 1993, Alexander Ryskin, a Russian journalist, published an article in Los Angeles, *(Almanac Panorama)*, in which he claims that the Nazis were able to use such technology to hinder the Soviet offensive in Berlin, in May of 1945.

Ryskin reported that the Soviets captured the results of Nazi research, and brought them to the Soviet Union, but more documentation to substantiate the claim was not presented. Ryskin's anonymous source told him that no serious research took place after World War Two in the USSR until 1979. Stonehill says:

> But Akimov of the CNT (Center for Non-traditional Technologies) indicates that the research started in the early 1960s. This is confirmed by K.B.; 1965 is specifically mentioned.

Stonehill says that several types of *psi-oruzhiye* (psychic weapons) are mentioned in the new open Russian literature. The first is infrasonic radiation (around 7 hertz in frequency) which tortures and kills. The second type, he says, is high powered microwave and ultrasound. These affect the nervous system and induce insomnia. Highly portable weapons of this type have been developed. The third type of psychic weapon involves several systems: chronal emitters, chronal guns, pyramid sets and cavity structures. The destructive effect with these Buck Rogers devices is achieved by their emission of tiny particles, chronos, or *time carriers*. Stonehill reports that such beams can penetrate everything on their way to tearing to pieces the human aura.

> Should the energy circle (aura) around an individual's head be hit, the mental abilities of the targeted person will be affected. Such weapons do not kill, but maim the psyche.

The fourth type, Stonehill says, is the most dangerous for human targets, but unlike some of the others it's safe for the operator.

> It is known as a *psi-amplifier*, and *psi-data unit*. And generators they truly are. What is being generated is electromagnetic radiation that conforms to brain frequencies.

> Such radiation, when directed at the target, can be used to suggest and transmit anything, any feeling -- love, hate, euphoria, anger, anguish, and suicidal thoughts. The psi-generators can be used for remote transmission.

A few decades ago researchers at the University of Southern California and University of Illinois began an experiment to confirm the longstanding theory that the brain stores memories by "hard-wiring" new connections between groups of neurons in the brain. Recently the culmination of the research was announced by Psychobiologists Richard F. Thompson of USC and William Greenough of the University of Illinois. They reported several independent approaches to the question, all of which indicated that memories are hooked up just like ordinary wiring.

In the Summer of 1989, Dr. Michael Persinger of Laurentian University in Ontario Canada announced he'd invented a helmet that could induce UFO abduction experiences. The helmet is reported to be able to send specific frequencies into the hippocampus area of the back brain. During such stimulace, volunteers report UFO abduction experiences, out-of-body experiences, and a wide range of altered states of consciousness.[154]

In the hands of even a well-functioning democratic republic this new arms race of supposed "non lethal weaponry" would be a menace to our freedoms, but in the hands of a cryptocracy it threatens to turn our world into a zombie planet.

We can only turn to global *Cybernetic Samisdats* like the Internet for hope. Eventually the truth shall surface. Will it make us free? Researchers, mount your indexes! Hackers, mount your computers! Journalists, file your FOIA requests!

New hardware will continue to overwhelm us. Perhaps the solution to our human dilemma, like the ultimate solutions in Silicon Valley resides with a thorough understanding of software. Ultimately all problems are opportunities. It's all in our mind.

---

[154] Text File Archive, The Kozmos Computer BBS.

30

TUNED TO A MENTAL RADIO?

Had I not heard this story, in essence, from a half dozen other survivors of this kind of mind control, I would not have included it here. But we video taped a number of credible people talking about these "voices" in their heads. People who experience this are what Martin Cannon referred to in his book *The Controllers* as "wavies." Cannon wrote:

> Every Senator and Congressional representative has a "wavie" file. So do many state representatives. Wavies have even pled their case to private institutions such as The Christic Institute.
>
> And who are the wavies?
>
> They claim to be the victims of clandestine bombardment with non-ionizing radiation -- or microwaves. They report sudden changes in psychological states, alteration of sleep patterns, intracerebral voices and other sounds, and physiological effects. Most people never realize how many wavies there are in this country. I've spoken to a number of wavies myself.[155]

I don't like the term "Wavie." It's a hard-hearted term which does not show any sympathy for the people who are suffering this way. They're suffering just as much as the people who have survived the so-called Project Monarch. I think I'll term them E-M Targets, E-M for electromagnetic spectrum, since the technical possibilities exist that they are experiencing bombardment by ELF, VLF, SHF microwaves, magnetic waves and other radiations of the electromagnetic spectrum which can be modulated so that voices can be heard inside the head, without implants, without speakers.

And of course, this is the hardest thing for public agencies to believe, since, heretofore if you report voices in your head, you would be automatically diagnosed as schizophrenic -- a catch-all term of the past. I must admit that when I listened to Mary, the first E-M Target I met in 1980, I had a hard time taking her seriously. (The biggest secrets are kept by public incredulity.)

But then I heard another and another and now, the E-M Targets would appear to outnumber other types of mind control survivors. One man on the east coast is pursuing his case in the Supreme Court. Another man is one of the best mind control researchers and lecturers around. A woman on the West Coast was driven near death by the voice. Another woman functions very well, but with great difficulty. Many of these survivors keep in touch with each other through The Freedom of Thought Foundation. Every day I read mail from another new person, saying basically the same thing.

---

[155] Martin Cannon, *The Controllers*, Prevailing Winds Research, Santa Barbara, Ca., 1993

One of the survivors sent me this book. I've written to the author, supposedly Dorothy Burdick, through the vanity press who published her book. I tried the phone number and a query on the network. Burdick has dropped out of sight.

I'm going to excerpt enough of her book to give the reader an idea of the kind of thing the E-M Targeted survivors are describing. Burdick describes it very well:

> In the beginning I only had to deal with two Voices at a time," Dorothy Burdick[156] said. "Out back, when I was riding, it seemed that one Voice was using a receiving machine and that the other was projecting to me and watching me at the same time. They were probably trying to make me think that the gadgets involved were simple...
>
> My sleep at night was constantly inhabited by Voices. I had difficulty sleeping. I kept trying to imagine what it was anybody could possibly want with me. I tried to hang on to the idea that I was really alive, comparatively well, and, above all, sane. I was well aware that I might be certifiably insane.
>
> I read in the paper about a volunteer university group who got admitted to well-known mental health centers across the country because they heard voices. They volunteered. Seven were diagnosed as schizophrenics and one as a manic-depressive. Once incarcerated, they convinced psychiatrists that they had recovered and were discharged as schizophrenics in remission. I reflected that of the people who consult psychiatrists about one-third are helped, one-third stay the same, and one third get better on their own. I decided to get better on my own.
>
> During times when I was out riding my horse in the ring the Voices would tell me that they were going to make my horse stumble and then he would indeed stumble. Since he was sure-footed and the ring a good working base, I was reasonably certain that they could reach his nervous system but I couldn't understand how. It seemed like a direct hit. Unfortunately for me, the only way that Shiloh and I could communicate were through our mutual physical actions, his voice, my voice, voice tones and eye contact.

---

[156] Burdick, Dorothy, *Such Things Are Known,* Vantage Press, New York, 1982

One day I was walking from the stable to the house and got such a blow to my solar plexus that it knocked me to my knees. there was nobody around to see me except from the air. Evidently I had displeased someone, or so it seemed to me at the time. I took quite a ribbing from the Voices. As I walked between the house and the stable they would count in cadence to my stride as I marched in my boots...

Looking back on it I find it hard to describe my emotional state. I didn't believe in spirits. I believed in men and their ability to cause harm. It seemed as though someone was out to get me and I thought I knew why. I was thinking in terms of the horse trainer's personal vanity and the locale as a government security situation. I knew the (Linear) Accelerator (which was next door to Burdick's home) was valuable and the most powerful in the world. Seemingly it was wide open to the public and almost anyone could go in there, yet it must have some protection. The United States simply couldn't afford to have it unprotected. The only people that could be seen were so-called groundsmen, who were students, patrolling on their motorbikes. Yet right next door was the source of particle beams and many other things necessary to weapons research.

There was nothing consistent in the approach to my person, or any pattern of events that I could identify. The main purpose at which "they" were succeeding, seemed to be to upset me emotionally and throw me off balance continuously. I felt that I was being put through a course in directed thinking. I never had an opportunity to have a blank mind, and have not since. I was never alone in my mind. I tried to be objective about myself, but I realized that I was so subjectively involved that there was no way that I could get outside the situation to defuse it. I took every stimulus as it came, becoming increasingly apprehensive. I rode on sand in the ring and trod on emotional sand out of the ring. It was heavy going...

...The information I could find indicated that the visual capability of computers was limited (1980's). There is a machine FOCUS (Flexible Optical Control Unit Stimulator) which projects hallucinatory images directly onto the retina of the eye. I felt that I was seen by human eyes because of the quality of the personal remarks I received during previously private routines. At times it seemed as though my own thoughts were bounced back to me, randomly, using different pitches of the same Voice. I read that some efforts had been made to simplify visual images into a primal sketch to cut data processing, and that visual mapping techniques had been applied to auditory, olfactory, tactile and probably emotional states. The brain was referred to as an information sink, and the vocal chords as a transmitting terminal.

Machine voices transmitting signals could be received by human sensory organs.

In physics and biophysics every feedback system became a servo-system. In education the teachers were making flow-charts. No human activity was unaffected by the application of computerese. I was aware that every computer, robot or communications system had to have a human mind programming and making it operate. I knew that the completed program could be automatic and self-correcting. An example is the psychiatrist who invented Parry, a man who bet heavily on horses and was stalked by a vengeful bookie. Psychiatrists at a terminal receiving the program could not decide whether they were interviewing Parry or a live, paranoid patient.

At times I was overwhelmed by feelings of not being able to cope with the information explosion, especially under the circumstances in which I was living. I felt that the machines taking me over were directed by some evil, human enterprise.

At a sophisticated level programmers have to be advanced mathematicians, physicists and electrical engineers. They have been joined by the psychiatric and psychological fraternity. The best academic thinking seems to be that human intelligence is tied to human perceptions. Computers have been responsible for improved medicine and rehabilitation, but they have been developed in universities and think tanks with government money supplied by the taxpayers. The results are often classified.

Machines are tireless, unlimited by a nervous system or emotions. I did not like what I could feel emotionally, sense physically, and understand intellectually. I felt both played upon and outplayed. The whole environment was both personal and terribly impersonal. I had nobody I could talk to except myself, and I was not sure that I was in any condition to take on the job of both internal and external listener and judge. I was demoralized, confused and receiving too many inputs which were activating too many memories. I could not seem to sort my information effectively. I was like the sorcerer's apprentice sweeping faster and faster to stem the tide. I was no computer which could switch through its vast memory to separate accuracy from error. I was a human being lost in a miasma of emotion, imagination, grasping for workable strategies, and all the while the Voices kept telling me. "You're programmed. You're programming yourself. We're programming you." When I put myself to the task of sorting it out, they told me. "You're fucking your head off."

Like most victims, especially those who were experiencing the mental radio effects in the early eighties, Dorothy did a lot of research trying to figure out what was happening to her.

> Mail and phone calls coming into, or going out of, the United States are screened by computer. Until 1976, the government consistently denied intercepting private communications of American citizens. The National Security Agency admitted that this was the purpose of Operation Shamrock in Senate Select Committee hearings chaired by Frank Church in the aftermath of Watergate. Operation Shamrock's immediate purpose was to uncover foreign involvement in the anti-war movement occurring in the Untied States, but this also caused domestic surveillance.
>
> National Security Agency headquarters at Fort Meade Maryland are larger than the CIA's and more modern than the Pentagon's whose computers work with difficulty. NSA has the most powerful computers in the world. Its annual budget is estimated in excess of one and a half billion dollars. Nobody is sure what they spend.
>
> Senate Select Committee hearings brought out the fact that NSA has the capacity to monitor domestic telephone traffic. The bulk of interception and acquisition of information sent by citizens is being done by the intelligence community at selected points in long-lines telecommunication system in this country and around the world.
>
> My husband had been using phone and telex communications for many years. At a later date a woman friend would ask me if my husband had perhaps involved me in the harassment I was suffering. In my ignorance I denied it, but I have come to see that she was wiser than I. Her husband had been involved in RAND, a government think tank...

One of the things E-M Targeted individuals are frustrated with is trying to answer the question "why am I targeted?" One of the survivors brought this out in the documentary inteview we did with him. He said, "It's pointless to try and figure it out. It's where everybody goes wrong. Perhaps one is targeted because they were in the wrong place at the wrong time. You can't figure out why they chose you." But Dorothy, writing at this early date could not help but try to identify her mind watchers.

> ...'They' seemed to be reading over my shoulder. I thought they might be using a new technological toy involving powerful ocular vision or even periscope vision. I was positive that what I was rereading was being read by others concurrently. I was jumpy, but not really frightened...

...The voices did follow me to Foothill (a school at which Dorothy lectured). I was nervous enough facing a class of adults without being heckled by some unknown agency while spouting forth on nutrition. As I tried to concentrate on my notes and illustrate on the blackboard, an insidious male Voice had no trouble penetrating the ear that was nearest to the open doorway. I grasped the lectern securely and gazed into the eyes of my students, and desperately, tried to concentrate on what I wanted to tell them. As a last resort I asked them if there were any questions. They rescued me. In the give and take with the class, I could almost forget that an unknown Voice, unheard by the class, was making indecent suggestions or commenting on my performance in less than complimentary terms. To my great relief, class was finally over. The students even came up and asked some more questions. They seemed to think that everything was normal.

I was angry and militantly decided to try and make a call to the San Mateo Police Department from campus. I used an outdoor booth and then realized that I could be heard by someone outdoors. I went into an office and asked to use their phone. When I reached the police department they wanted to know what I was calling about, and I told them I was being harassed. the woman who took the call seemed excited and gave me a Woodside number to call when she discovered I was a resident of that town. I did not write it down because I was suddenly horrified to realize by their comments that my tormentors were listening to me even indoors on campus. This was a new and terrifying idea to me because although I could accept the fact that the house was bugged, and that my car was bugged, it had not until this point occurred to me that I could be reached anywhere. The action and the emotional tension .

I left the office and still had the presence of mind to walk around the central part of the campus looking for a van that might contain radio equipment. There was such a truck here, but it was closed and I couldn't see into it. The Voice that bugged me during lecture always came from one side or overhead. I had become accustomed to the fact that at home I was living in a goldfish bowl, and that anyone could very easily guess my location from the sounds that issued from the house. I thought an eavesdropper might account for my discomfort, and I knew that there were some that were powerful enough to pick up sound over a mile or so. What puzzled me was whether they actually could see me and how much. I had also considered the whole problem from the point of view of heat sensitivity, knowing full well that at nocturnal temperatures below 98.6 F, I would be warmer than any surface in the house, and that I would be visible in an infrared beam...

> Recently I watched a popular TV program in which people reported receiving phone calls from the dead. How easy it would be for government jokesters using satellite communications to ring their phones and using previously recorded voice prints, manufacture voices to make them think that they were talking to the dear, dead departed. How macabre, but sadly, how possible! The only question the performance raised in my mind was whether this was part of a real government program of disinformation or whether it was just the bored action of some government surveillance team amusing themselves.
>
> ...I wrote my brother, a retired naval officer whom I thought quite knowledgeable in the fields of advanced math and physics. I needed somebody to talk to who wasn't emotionally involved, and I was convinced that there was some kind of surveillance equipment being used, left over or stolen from Vietnam.

Her brother wrote her back saying:

> There were a number of very interesting devices developed in the Vietnam war. Of course, I am not cleared for gossip at this point, so I don't know any details. The business of seeing at night has been around for a long time int he form of the 'sniperscope,' some of which have found their way into surplus. It depends upon an infra red beam, and was refined sufficiently in Vietnam so that it was like watching people in broad daylight. The type of electronic devices you mention are known to exist and have sometimes been mentioned in the press, without any details. I am not sure, but I believe that the operation of some of that stuff is illegal. It sounds like somebody who has access to military or law enforcement type of equipment. What I am saying is that the devices do exist. What I am also saying is that not very many people have access to the more refined ones.""

In another letter her brother offered suggestions we have heard over and over as part of the E-M Target folklore:

> "The next time you hear your friends, wrap your head in aluminum foil. *If it is being carried by ultra high frequencies, the aluminum foil will shield it out.* But if you get no distinct decrease in volume, then you must consider another source. You can even use aluminum foil as a direction finder. If you get positive results, put a piece of aluminum foil in a rack about three by two feet. Then when you hear your friends, hold it alongside your head and rotate. The position of minimum volume indicates the direction of the source."

> This gives you the ability to triangulate. If the source should be fixed, you could drive around in a car and eventually pin the location down pretty well. I don't think that the apparent aural effects as to direction have much significance, if UHF is the source. Of course, you would probably have to have a driver while you were swinging your aluminum kite around.
>
> If the above give positive results, then it may well be time to obtain a field strength meter which operates in the gigahertz range and will detect a field strength of one microvolt per centimeter and doesn't cost too (?) much... The meter will give you a rough estimate on distance with some practice. You would be able to do things like locate places where it was weakest, thereby giving you an opportunity to avoid the nuisance.
>
> If you can do both of the above suggested procedures, and demonstrate records thereof, the chances are that somebody will start to listen to what you have to say. I think that the Go/NOGO bit is important. If you can go to some clown, regardless of status, and tell him, "Look I can shield the stuff out," then all legitimate muttering concerning psychiatrists and psychologists will cease. UHF will tend to have some cornering effect. You may have to manufacture a tin suit to wear, complete with helmet. However the simple use of foil about the head or even putting a bucket on your head would cause a detectable change...

Dorothy said her brother's letters were "daylight in darkness" to her. Typical to what the others I've interviewed say, Dorothy reported:

> I have never been so alone or depressed in my life. At first I assured my husband that I had a great time in Pullman. It seemed easier than telling him the truth. I was exhausted...
>
> Early in May, 1978, I asked my brother what might have the potential of both X-ray and periscope because I seemed to be visible whether in darkness or light, and visible when theoretically I should be invisible to outside eyes. I explained that I was a moving target, and that it was a little like being, in the zoo while being one of the animals. I told him that I thought the point of the whole thing was to make me think that I was Joan of Arc and hearing Voices. I wrote," This is no simple matter. Whomever it is using a device which transmits sound in two directions and is probably very small and portable. It can be aimed at an individual so that the person targeted can hear the sound, but people near them cannot. it is either part of, or used in conjunction with, extremely powerful optics. It may also have a heat sensor, and be used at night, because they follow me in the dark. It is so powerful

that noises can be heard from all over the house, and it can be surmised what we are doing, Very possibly it is only an eavesdropping device, but it's definitely two-way. It seems to have a bent-angle optical capability. It very possibly may have been borrowed or stolen from the Linear Accelerator." I also wrote that it occurred to me that someone on security at the university or the Accelerator might be playing a practical joke, and included the information that all our telephone conversations were heard. I told him that the equipment involved seemed to be something more than you could buy at the local radio supply house.

I had found a report in the paper about a bizarre CIA weapons proposal. It recounted the CIA's search for offbeat weapons designed to stun enemy agents into submission with electric shock. An electronic net sending five shocks a second into the arms of an enemy agent could cause pain, but not kill healthy people. In electrically sensitive subjects a fatal heart attack might occur. The article did not tell whether animal tests took place. I had the feeling that they might have done a little work on this at the university. Everything I could put together kept leading me right back to Silicon Valley, and that great national resource the all-American university. "While I was packing for my trip I got suggestions from the Voices about what to take, what to leave out, what toilet articles to include and a general razzing. They always seemed to be able to tell what I was doing.

In the shower I was blitzed by their comments, generally insulted, and in quality, the kind that the American Legion uses at conventions when they go out on the street slightly smashed and goose girls with electric probes. I did not discuss this with my husband. If he couldn't believe in Voices he could hardly be expected to believe in long distance ray-guns.

My husband drove me to the airport. We had Voice company all the way to the San Francisco terminal although my husband was unaware of it. I thought to myself, 'They must be doing this by car. I just have to last to the airport. Thank God they can't follow the plane!'

A short time after I was settled in my seat I became aware that 'they' seemed to be sitting behind me, toward the rear. I thought they might be playing a tape with added sound effects of ice tinkling in glasses and the usual air travel departure noises. The male Voice and the girl's Voice were discussing me in none to complimentary terms.

'I bet she thought she was going to get away from us at the airport,' he said.

'Then we have a surprise for her.'

He continued, 'There she is trying to act natural and relaxed. Too bad Dorothy. Too sad, Dorothy. You aren't going to get away with a thing!'

...I thought, *This must be costing someone quite a good deal of money...*"

They followed me successfully through the hall to the bathroom and goosed me thoroughly in the shower. They razzed me while going to the john and touched me here and there with light shocks. While cleaning my teeth I got shot bending over, and my teeth and head ached. I felt as though I was in place with my clothes off, or in a shooting gallery with no place to hide. I steeled myself to go back to the bedroom. I knew their stun gun could inflict pain. I had watched them work on the dog, who would yelp and run away biting his behind and looking to see what had stung him. They worked me over from stem to stern. My body muscles seemed to cramp one by one. The sensations started as a tingling and increased in intensity to painful spasm. The more they applied what seemed to be higher voltage, the more cramping and resistance my muscles developed. If they stopped for a minute or two I was so apprehensive that I couldn't relax. I turned my back thinking I could at least protect my viscera with my skeleton. They worked on every muscle in my back until I was tense with pain. I got up and walked around. I lay on my back. I felt hot, and broke out in a sweat. I could feel my blood pressure going up. My heart pounded, and I knew they could kill me. At one point they worked on my head, and a female Voice said, 'You gave me a headache, now I'll give you a headache!"

They left my head and sex organs alone, quite happy with their stimulation of my muscles and circulatory system. At one point I put the mattress on the floor thinking that they wouldn't be able to shoot up at me so easily, or down. I couldn't tell which. I thought they were down in the parking lot because I could hear people walking back and forth, and the Voices seemed to be coming from there.

All the time there was a constant barrage of Voices. "Let her have it." "You think you're so tough." "How's that?"

Like most people who I've spoken with in this condition, Dorothy was driven to take action. Where does one turn? To law enforcement authorities. She had already been laughed at by the locals, so she tried the FBI:

I dialed the FBI office in Seattle, and a very straight-up, square-type Washingtonian answered. I found I was going to have trouble from then on, both speaking and thinking coherently because my

> tormentors began numbing my brain. It was a distinct numbness on the side of my forehead nearest the windows. I had difficulty giving my name and location. My speech, which minutes before had been clear, was slurred. I explained that I thought someone was using classified equipment that had been carried over state lines to harassment, and that the nature of the equipment was such that it raised my blood pressure, caused my heart to pound, and gave me craps in my muscles. The agent who answered told me that he knew of no equipment that could do any of these things, and that I really ought to see a psychiatrist. I did ask him if there was an FBI man in Pullman I could talk to, and he assured me that nobody would talk to me at all. I hung up the phone feeling beat...
>
> Later, I found out that radio waves or electromagnetic energy emanating form one little black box at 388 megacycles causes the recipient to become confused and lose his memory. Prolonged exposure may produce insanity. At the time I had not grasped the idea that the same principle is easily adapted to space technology. I was thinking in terms of local events and people I had seen and a protective government. The whole project seemed designed to keep me earthbound...
>
> After some incidents in the yard and an increasing feeling of being a rather interesting mouse being teased to death by a cat...
>
> I had difficulty accepting the idea that my mind could be read or thoughts anticipated. The whole concept of one's mind being read is hard to believe while it is going on. It's a little like having someone constantly looking over your shoulder. The first reaction is to reject the idea and to tell yourself, "You're imagining things." Then I began to think of ways in which what I was about to say might be picked up by machine, because I tend to articulate thoughts and aspirate before I speak what I'm going to say. Perhaps most people do this. As I considered how my thoughts might be picked up before I uttered them, I realized that I move my throat, my tongue, my glottis and spirate, almost forming the words with my mouth and throat before I speak them. I really struggled to overcome this for a while I finally came to the conclusion that, although all the muscles from my head down to my focal chords were still, what I was thinking consciously was being picked up in some way. This was about the end of April , 1978...

In her notes Dorothy describes some of the most common experiences of an E-M Target:

> I have been fed bad language, obscene suggestions, and alternatively fed a line and had it withdrawn. This is part of the brainwashing techniques, alternating a feeling of love with hate, or feelings of security with insecurity. "The most popular diagnosis of my mental state would have to be paranoid- schizophrenia. The manic state coincided with pleasurable conditioning, and the depressive state with pain, pressure and harassment. I realize that very few people would believe me because (1) the won't believe it possible; (2) they would *prefer* not to believe it; and (3) they do not know that such technical instrumentation is available."
>
> Capabilities: Can be aimed from a great distance accurately. Provides incredible X-ray or sonar location in the whole house. Has stun-gun affect, which slows thought and speech. It raises the pulse rate, blood pressure; can produce palpitations, heal, and seems to stimulate vagina, clitoris, and possibly mental pleasure centers in the brain as well. Can also cause muscle tension and pain."

Another entry noted that she believed that she and her husband had been the target of "very sensitive listening equipment." She continued noting:

> We have been subjected to subliminal conditioning by someone who has used it before, probably in the military. One could be said to be conditioned for exhibitionistic sex due to the fact that I can tell by comments that my husband and I are being watched."

I have accumulated enough testimony to do another volume just on the E-M aspect of mind control.

YOU ARE BEING OBSERVED

Have you ever considered that, when you pick up a telephone and talk to the party on the other end, perhaps others too are listening in to your conversation? Not only this—it may be recorded and analyzed as well!

The biggest Government security agency in the U.S. today screens and then destroys nearly forty tons of recorded phone calls and other messages each day. This agency is neither the CIA nor the FBI, but the NSA (National Security Agency). The NSA's budget is double that of the CIA and its headquarters is in Fort Meade, Maryland. It has no official spokesman and issues no press releases. Its 24,000 employees are forbidden to tell anyone where they work. Created by President Truman in 1952, its existence was not made public until five years later.

Working in secrecy, the NSA electronically records every international phone call and telegram—then analyzes them by computers which check for calls.

The handout of a Fundamentalist Christian group.

31

THE WARRIOR'S TONGUE

John Alexander is a busy man these days, not only is he one of the moving forces behind PSITECH, a company that sells military developed remote viewing skills (RVS) to private enterprise, he is the program manager for nonlethal defense at the Los Alamos (N.M.) National Laboratory, an author *(The Warrior's Edge),* and a practictioner of the gem of mind control arts -- Neuro-linguistics Programming.

Today, after 32 years of military service this retired Colonel has the responsibility of drawing together and nurturing many nonlethal weapons devices which could disable key electronic equipment, blind weapons sensors or shut off the power to a capital city. He has drawn upon a variety of disciplines involving polymer chemistry, microbics, kinetics, acoustics, electrical engineering, materials science and information science, just to "demonstrate their feasibility," in the burgeoning science called Nonlethal defense, at least so said *Aviation Week & Space Technology.*[157]

"As the concept has evolved," Alexander is reported as saying, " we have come to focus our efforts on antimaterial systems. If you can stop the machines of war, you can inhibit the prosecution of conflict."

A Special Forces Army man, Alexander worked on advanced weapons concepts including directed energy devices for most of his career. Now he's employed as a civilian to provide allied commanders with "options to ambiguous situations," including the peacetime problems of counterdrug or antiterrorist operations, through which, many believe, the last vestages of freedom will fall.

Alexander's teams, *Aviation Week* said, are developing scenarios for using the broad range of technologies, while he is pushing for an even greater investment in large-scale modeling and simulations of non-lethal weapons' capabilties and long-term effects. "Each use of nonlethal weapons will depend on the situation, and each situation will need a coherent policy approved by senior leadership."

"The assumptions applied during concept development must be broadened beyond conventional applications of force, Alexander said. "I believe they offer alternatives that go far beyond just being adjuncts to traditional military operations."

---

[157] *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* p. 19-20, January 24, 1994.

"At their most effective," *Aviation Week* reported, "nonlethal weapons would weaken combatants before a situation turns lethal. Key to the success of peacekeeping is the avoidance of casualties and hostage-taking, which can lead to heightened tensions or outright hostilities."

One has to think of them as they will inevitably be used, against the dissident civilian populations of the Allied countries. Of course a number of the non-lethal or invisible weapons would fall under the category mind control.

It makes no difference to Alexander. A psycho-civilized society might be very good for the national security. It doesn't matter how you play the game, the important thing is to win. "In most wartime scenarious we are going to win," Alexander said, "so how you win becomes important." Take Waco for example?

Alexander may represent the lighter side of the Army's long term PSYOPS campaign... if you call psychotronic weapons the lighter side. His current cause celeb is to sell the "Non Lethal Weapons" systems to law enforcement agencies.

Congressman Charlie Rose is quoted as saying, "I 've seen some incredible examples of remote viewing -- (Alexander's specialty) so much so that I think we ought to pay close attention to developments in this field, and especially to what the Soviets are doing. If they develop a capacity to have people mentally view secret centers within this country, we could come to the point where we didn't have any secrets.[158]" Is the metaphor "when information travels at the speed of light there is no secrecy" manifesting?

Ron McRae, author of *Mind Wars* wrote: "Early in 1981, a group of investors asked the congressman's help in securing Pentagon funding for an electronic paranoia inducer. Astronics, Inc., hoped to manufacture the 'psychic neuron disrupter,' which according to the investors, interferes with the connection between nerve cells in the brain and induces temporary paranoia. The psychological effect, they say, is 'similar to that of hallucinogenic drugs such as LSD, but transmitted electronically." The range of the existing device is supposedly limited, but could be extended for military applications. Rose submitted himself to a test of the machine, and he thinks it worked: "We don't know how to build the hyperspatial nuclear howitzer, but we do know how to jam the synaptic connections of the nervous system. It deserves some research money." Depite weeks of negotiations and apparent interest at the Pentagon, no contract was signed. The company folded a year later.

"Rose also tested telepathic hypnosis with the help of Judith Skutch, a wealthy New York patron of psychic research who teaches "A Course in Mircales' at the Army War College. With Rose standing at her side, " McRae wrote,"Skutch and several other psychics associated with the Army War College broadcast psychic

---

[158] Ron McRae,*Mind Wars, The True Story of Secret Government Research into the Military Potential of Psychic Weapons*, (St. Martin's Press, New York, 1984.)

'love emanations' at Speaker O'Neill from the gallery of the House, commanding the unknowing majority leader to turn his head left and right on command, and then, according to one participant, commanding him to favor public works projects in the congressman's district. Skutch claims the same can be done to the Soviet leadership, and Barbara Marx Hubbard, a noted psychologist whom the army consults on psychic developments, hopes to 'bombard the Kremlin with love, not missles.' Rose refuses to comment on the incident."

Steve Bratcher of SKBI Research,[159] suggests that Speaker of the House, Tip O'Neill may have died as a result of "Non Lethal Weaponry."

"I was given a tip by an intelligence agent. He asked me, 'Why don't you see if Tip was killed?'" Bratcher said. "O'Neill was sucker-punched with eletronics more than once,.He was told about it. They turned right around, used it two or three times on him. He knew about it. He knew that it worked. They sucker-punched him again. Who's to say that he wasn't killed by it?"

Whether or not O'Neill was killed by "Non Lethal Weapons" remains to be seen. It is well known that pacemaker's which regulate heart patients can be stopped by microwaves.

For a spook, John B. ALexander has a lot on the record -- even for a spook in the post Cold War era. In *Military Review* Journal Lt. Col. Alexander described psychotronic weapons and telepathic hypnosis. He gazed whistfully into the future, toward a day when the U.S. military would have "the ability to heal or cause disease can be transmitted over distance, thus inducing illness or death for no apparent cause."

He wrote about mind weapons which could: "give psychic ability to personnel so they could read documents at a distance or visualize the geographic layout of an enemy's distant military installation," or "to discern troop, ship, or submarine whereabouts." He forsaw the day when the ordinary human could use their mind to command an enemy to do something he would not otherwise do -- at a distance. Sound familiar?

Alexander spoke of what might be the ultimate weapon of the future. (Some say the government spent a lot of research on Radionic weaponry.) He spoke of "disease projection", a technology by which the U.S. military could induce illness or death "*especially heart attacks and asphyxiation*"(emphasis added). He said, "uncontrollable fright and fear could also be generated by mind power." He postulated that there would come a day when we'd have "mind alteration", which was "the long-distance ability to cause an opponent's mind -- say, that of a president or prime minister -- to grow confused and unable to function."

---

[159] Telephone interview with the author, July 2, 1994.

Some of it would appear to be disinformation -- like when Alexander spoke of "psychokinesis", the ability to move physical objects " through mind power."

One's first impression would be that it all was disinformation, all this stuff about psychotronic weaponry, indeed. However it is known that the cryptocracy has funded fifty years of reasearch into telepathy, hypnosis, and remote viewing. And more than one laboratory experiment has indicated that the mind can move physical objects -- and even erase magnetic tape and interfere with internal computer signals.

Armen Victorian, an intrepid British researcher got on Alexander's case and published his research in *Lobster Magazine*[160] calling Alexander "The Pentagon's Penguin" in the title of his article. From that time forth, Alexander and Victorian were not friendly. Victorian's ariticle began:

> On April 22, 1993, both BBC1 and BBC2 showed on their main evening news bulletins a rather lengthy piece concerning America's latest development in weaponry -- the non-lethal weapons concept. David shukman, BBC Defence Correspondent interviewed (Retired) U.S. Army Colonel John B. Alexander and Janet Morris, two of the main proponents of the concept [161]. The concept of non-lethal weapons is not new. Non-lethal weapons have been used by the intelligence, police and defense establishments in the past [162]. Several western governments have used a variety of non-lethal weapons in a more discreet and covert manner. It seems that the U.S. government is about to take the first step towards their open use.

Victorian disclosed that Alexander was the man behind the thrust to develop "non-lethal weapons." He pointed out that in December of 1980 he'd published the article "*The New Mental Battlefield*" in the U.S. Army's journal, *MILITARY REVIEW* which, he said, caught the attention of senior Army generals who encouraged him Alexander, to pursue what they termed "soft option kill" technologies.

After retiring from the Army in 1988, Alexander had joined the Los Alamos National Laboratories and had begun working with Janet Morris, the Research Director of the U.S. Global Strategy Council (USGSC), chaired by Dr. Ray Cline, former Deputy Director of the CIA [163]. Victorian revealed what he had found by examining the backgrounds of Morris and Alexander:

---

[160] Armen Victorian, *Non-Lethality, John B. Alexander, The Pentagon's Penguin*, Lobster Magazine, June, 1993.

[161] Letter dated 2 April, 1993, to Armen Victorian from Mrs. Victoria Alexander.

[162] The U.S. Army Chemical and Military Police used "Novel Effect Weapons" against the women protesters at the Greeham Common Base.

[163] The United States Global Strategy Council is an independent think tank, incorporated in 1981. iIt focuses on long-range strategic issues. The founding memebers were Clare Boothe Luce, General Maxwell taylor, General Albert

> Throughout 1990 the USGSC lobbied the main national laboratories, major defence contractors and industries, retired senior military and intelligence officers. The result was the creation of a Non-lethality Policy Review Group, led by Major General Chris S. Adams, USAF (retd.) former Chief of Staff, Strategic Air Command [164]. They already have the support of Senator Sam Nunn, Chair of the Senate Armed Services Committee. According to Janet Morris, the military attaché at the Russian Embassy has contacted USGSC about the possibility of converting military hardware to a non-lethal capability.
>
> In 1991 Janet Morris issued a number of papers giving more detailed information about USGSC's concept of non-lethal weapons [165]. Shortly after, the U.S. Army Training and Doctrine Command at Fort Monroe, Virginia, published a detailed draft report on the subject titled "Operations concept for Disabling Measures." The report included over twenty projects in which John Alexander is currently involved at the Los Alamos National Laboratories.
>
> In a memorandum dated April 10, 1991, titled "*Do We Need a Non-lethal Defense Initiative*?" Paul Wolfwitz, Under Secretary of Defense for Policy, wrote to Defense Secretary Dick Cheney, "A U.S. lead in non-lethal technologies will increase our options and reinforce our position in the post-Cold War world. Our Research and Development efforts must be increased."

But Victorian wanted to know "How lethal is non-lethal? And he reviewed the specious arguments put forth by the purveyors of invisible warfare:

> To support their non-lethal weapons concept, Janet Morris argues that while "war will always be terrible... a world power deserving its reputation for humane action should pioneer the principles of non-lethal defense [166]." In "Defining a non-lethal strategy," she seeks to establish a doctrine for the use of non-lethal weapons by the U.S. in crisis "at home or abroad in a life serving fashion." She totally disregards the offensive, lethal aspects become available to "rogue" nations. Despite her arguments that non-lethal weapons should serve the U.S.'s interest "at home and abroad by projecting power without

---

Wedemeyer, Dr. Ray Cline (Co-Chair), Jeanne Kirkpatrick (Co-Chair), Morris Leibman, Henry Luce III, J. William Middendorf III, Admiral Thomas H. Moorer USN (retd), General Richard Stillwell (ret.), Dr. Michael A. Danile (President), Dr. Dalton A. West (Executive Vice President). Its Research Directors were Dr. John Alexander, Dr. Roger Fontaine, Robert L. Katula and Janet Morris.

[164] NONLETHALITY; DEVELOPMENT OF A NATIONAL POLICY AND EMPLOYING NONLETHAL MEANS IN A NEW STRATEGIC ERA - a project of the U.S. Global Strategy Cuncil, 1991, p.4. Other staff members of the USGSC are Steve Trevino, Dr. John B. Alexander and Chris Morris.

[165] The USGSC has issued a wide variety of papers on the Nonlethal Weapons Concept. For example, IN SEARCH OF NONLETHAL STRATEGY (Janet Morris); NONLETHALITY; A GLOBAL STRATEGY -white paper; nonlethality briefing supplement nnO. 1; AND NONLNETHALITY IN THE OPERATIONAL CONTINUUM.

[166] IN SEARCH OF A NONLETHAL STRATEGY, Janet Morris, p.1.

> indiscriminately taking lives or destroying property [167], " she admits that "casualties cannot be avoided [168]."
>
> Closer examination of the types of weapons to be used as non-lethal invalidates her assertions about their non-lethality. According to her white paper, the areas where non-lethal weapons could be useful are "regional and low intensity conflict (adventurism, insurgency, ethnic violence, terrorism, narco-trafficking, domestic crime) [169]." She believes that "by identifying and requiring a new category of non-lethal weapons, tactics and strategic planning" the U.S. can reshape its military capability "to meet the already identifiable threats" that they might face in a multipolar world "where American interests are globalized and American presence widespread [170]."

The inventory of invisible weapons Victorian found in Janet Morris' "White Paper" recommends two types of life-conserving technologies":

> To destroy or impair electronics, or in other ways stop mechanical systems from functioning. Amongst current technologies from which this category of non-lethal weapons would or could be chosen are:
>
> Chemical and biological weapons for their anti-materiel agents "which do not significantly endanger life or the environment, or anti-personnel agents which have no permanent effects [171]."
>
> Laser blinding systems to incapacitate the electronic sensors, or optics, i.e. light detection and ranging. Already the Army Infantry School is developing a one-man portable and operated laser weapons system known as the Infantry Self-Defense System. The U.S. Army's Armament Research , Development and Engineer Center (ARDEC), is also engaged in the development of non-lethal weapons under their program called "Low Collateral Damage Munitions" (LCDM). The LCDM is trying to develop technologies leading to weapons capable of dazzling and incapacitating missiles, armored vehicles and personnel.

When inventorying the supposed "Non-lethal electromagnetic technologies", Morris made no mention of mind control or the well-documented destructive qualities of the electromagnetic spectrum. Victorian remains faithful to Morris' invenntory:

---

[167] NONLETHALITY; A GLOBAL STRATEGY - WHITE PAPER, p3.

[168] IN SEARCH OF OP CIT, p. 3.

[169] Victorian noted that at the siege in Waco, Texas, a "nonlethal" technique projecting subliminal messages, was used to try to influence Koresh - without effect.

[170] NONLETHALITY: A GLOBAL STRATEGY - WHITE PAPER, p. 2.

[171] Victorian cites: The computer data base compiled during the CIA/Army's Project OFTEN, examining several thousand chemical compounds, during 1976-1983, is a most likely candidate for any chemical agents for nonlethal weapons.

> Non-nuclear Electromagnetic Pulse weapons [172]. As General Norman Schwartzkopf has told the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, one such weapons stationed in space with a wide-area-pulse capacity has the ability to fry enemy electronics. But what would be the fate of enemy personnel in such a scenario?
>
> In a joint project with the Los Alamos National Laboratories and with technical support from the Army's Harry Diamond Laboratories, ARDEC are developing High Power Microwave (HPM) Projectiles. According to ARDEC, the Diamond lab has already "completed a radio frequency effects analysis on a representative target set" for (HPM).
>
> Among the chemical agents, so-called supercaustics - "Millions of times more caustic than hydrofluoric acid[173]" - are prime candidates. An artillery round could deliver jellied super-acids which could destroy the optics of heavily armored vehicles or tanks, vision blocks or glass, and "could be used to silently destroy key weapons systems [174] ".

From the covert to the ridiculous, Victorian's article covered the "less lethal aspects" of invisible warfare. It talked about the, now widely publicized use of net-like entanglements for SEAL teams, and "stealthy" metal boats with low or no radar signature, "for night actions, or any seaborne or come-ashore stealthy scenario"[175]. It described as "more colourful concepts" the use of chemical metal embrittlement, often called liquid metal embrittlement and anti-materiel polymers" which are supposed to be used in aerosol dispersal systems, spreading chemical adhesives or lubricants (i.e. Teflon-based lubricants) on enemy equipment from a distance. You can just see the Iraqi tank battallions now, spinning their treads on the crossroads of Kuait.

Was this kind of stuff just to soften us up for the "anti-personnel non-lethal pitch? Janet Morris was not to be the first science fiction writer who had worked for the cryptocracy. Remember there was L. Ron Hubbard, Robert Heinlein, and a host of others in the "Philadelphia Experiment" days.

Janet Morris, co-author of *THE WARRIOR'S EDGE*, was best known as a science fiction writer but had been a member of the New York Academy of Sciences since 1980. She was also a member of the Association for Electronic Defense and was the Research Director of the U.S. Global Strategy Council (USGSC). She was initiated into the Japanese art of bioenergetics, Joh-re, the Indonesian brotherhood of Subud, and graduated from the Silva course in advanced mind control. She had been conducting remote viewing experiments for fifteen years and had worked on a research project investigating the effects of the mind on probability in computer systems. Her husband, Robert Morris, was a former judge and a key member of the American Security Council [176].

---

[172] The British MoD is already developing a "microwave bomb". Work on the weapon is going on at the Defense Research Agency at Farnborough Hampshire. See SUNDAY TELEGRAPH, September 27, 1992, partly reproduced in LOBSTER 24, p. 14. The Royal Navy is already in possession of laser weapons which dazzle aircraft pilots. The Red Cross has called for them to be banned under the Geneva Convention because the could permanently blind.

[173] IN SEARCH OF A NONLETHAL STRATEGY, P. 13.

[174] Ibid.

[175] The U.S. Navy, through its Project SEA SHADOW, has already developed a stealth boat. Like the Lockheed F117A, stealth fighter, it leaves no radar signature -- BBC, Newround, April 28, 1993.

According to Victorian, Morris' inventory of "Non-Lethal Personnel Weapons" included hand-held lasers which were meant "To dazzle," but could also cause the eyeball to explode and to blind the target. She pushed for isotropic radiators -- explosively driven munitions, capable of generating very bright omni-directional light, with similar effects to laser guns, and high-powered microwaves (HPM) - which she revealed the U.S. Special Operations command already had as a portable microwave weapon [177].

Myron L. Wolbarsht, a Duke University opthalamist and expert in laser weapons stated: "U.S. Special Forces can quietly cut enemy communications but they also can cook internal organs [178]."

Victorian said that another "non-lethal weapon" Morris and Alexander waxed poetic over was Infrasound -- acoustic beams. In conjunction with the Scientific Applications and Research Associates (SARA) of Huntingdon, California, ARDEC and Los Alamos laboratories were busy "developing high power, very low frequency acoustic beam weapons." At the same time they were exploring methods of projecting non-diffracting (i.e. non-penetrating) high frequency acoustic bullets. ARDEC scientists were also looking into methods of using pulsed chemical lasers. This class of lasers could project "a hot, high pressure plasma in the air in front of a target surface, creating a blast wave that will result in variable but controlled effects on materiel and Personnel."

"Of course it's public knowledge," Victorian said. "that some governments have used infrasound as a means of crowd control -- e.g. France -- as they have used very low frequency (VLF) sound (20-35 KHz), or low-frequency RF modulations to cause nausea, vomiting and abdominal pains. "Some very low frequency sound generators, in certain frequency ranges, can cause the disruption of human organs and, at high power levels, can crumble masonry[179]."

The CIA had a similar program in 1978 called ***Operation Pique***, which included **bouncing radio or microwave signals off the ionosphere to affect mental functions of people in selected areas including Eastern European nuclear installations** [180](emphasis added).

---

[176] Victorian's taped converstaion with Janet Morris, March 1, 1993.

[177] THE WALL STREET JOURNAL, January 4, 1993.

[178] IN SEARCH OF A NONLETHAL STRATEGY, p. 14.

[179] REMOTE CONTROL TECHNOLOGY, Anna Keller (FULL DISCLOSURE, Ann Arbor U.S.A., 1989) p. 11.

Victorian thought that the non-lethal weapon concept opens up a new Pandora's box of unknown consequences. He discovered that the main personality behind NLW was retired Colonel John B. Alexander. Born in New York in 1937, Alexander spent part of his career as a Commander of green Berets Special Forces in Vietnam, led Cambodian mercenaries behind enemy lines, and took part in a number of clandestine programs, including Phoenix. He currently holds the post of Director of Non-Lethal Programs in the Los Alamos National Laboratories. Alexander obtained a BS from the University of Nebraska and an MA from Pepperdine University. In 1980 he was awarded a PhD from Walden University (20) for his thesis "To determine whether or not significant changes in spirituality occur in persons who attend a Kubler-Ross life/death transition workshop during the period June through February 1979." His dissertation committee was chaired by Elizabeth Kubler-Ross. Victorian said Alexander had "long been interested in what used to be regarded as 'fringe' areas." As an example of "fringe areas" Victorian said that Alexander had while a Captain in the infantry at Schofield Barracks, Honolulu, gone "diving in the Bimini Islands looking for the lost continent of Atlantis. He was an official representative for the Silva mind control organization and a lecturer on Precataclysmic Civilizations[181]. Alexander is also a past President and a Board member of the International Association for Near Death Studies; and, with his former wife, Jan Northup, he helped Dr. C.B. Scott Jones perform ESP experiments with dolphins [182]."

More than just exploring the "fringes" of science, retired Major General Albert N. Stubblebine (Former Director of U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command) and Alexander were both on the board of a "remote viewing" company called PSI-TECH. The company also employed Major Edward Dames (ex Defense Intelligence Agency), Major David Morehouse (ex 82nd Airborne Division), and Ron Blackburn (former microwave scientist and specialist at Kirkland Air Force base).

Victorian said that Alexander's company, PSI-TECH, had "received several government contracts. For example, during the Gulf War crisis the Department of Defense asked it to use remote viewing to locate Saddam's Scud missiles sites. In 1992 the FBI sought PSI-TECH's assistance to locate a kidnapped Exxon executive. [183]

---

[180] Walden University, 801 Anchor Road Drive, Naples, Fl. 33904, USA. Walden University considers itself a non-traditional university and does not offer any undergraduate courses to its students.

[181] The U.S. Army Command and General College, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, issued this on Alexander's career: "Colonel John B. Alexander, U.S. Army Retired, manages Antimateriel Technology at Los Alamos National Laboratories, Los Alamos, New Mexico. His military assignments included; Advanced Systems Concepts Office, Laboratory Command; manager, Technology Integration Office, Army Material Command; assistant deputy chief of staff, Technology Planning and Management, Army Materiel Command; and chief, Advanced Human Technology, Intelligence and Security Command."

[182] Taped telephone conversation with Dr. Scott Jones, Aug. 17, 1992.

[183] Taped telephone conversation with Maj. Edward Dames, June 27, 1992; and THE BULLETIN OF ATOMIC SCIENTISTS, Dec. 1992, p. 6. 24. THE WARRIOR'S EDGE, Col.. John B. Alexander, Maj. Richard Groleir and Janet Morris, (William Morrow Inc., New York, 1990).

PSI TECH's promotional material[184] says that it specializes in "proprietary studies for science and industry on a contract basis." That's the way the CIA often likes it.

The material says that "PSI TECH consists of a select, technically qualified group of professional analysts who provide a unique data collection capability not available anywhere else in the world. We are a team of highly trained Remote Viewing specialists." Remote Viewing is a science, it says, which "has been validated by governmental and private scientific groups over the last two decades. Briefly stated, ***a remote viewer is able to locate and accurately describe things and events distant in time and space (italics are theirs.)***" It says the company has "developed applied remote viewing into a powerful investigative tool," and it can "provide you with reliable information that simply may not be available via any other means!"

Among the "potential applications" the brochure lists:

- **Increase understanding of natural and scientific phenomena**
- **Concept development: describe alternative (often unique) approaches, seed ideas; help focus R&D into high-payoff pathways**
- **Establish cause/effect, connectivity/linkage; discover "hidden variables"**
- **Quickly sort, analyze and project the most promising critical, enabling technologies**
- **Review the key aspects of prior events, re-look accidents, establish the source of device or experiment failure**
- **Penetrate, survey and describe locations that are inaccessible via any other means**
- **Conceptual and detailed subject sketches;target geometries**

Among the attempts at remote viewing for hire, the company advertises:

The Crisis Profile of Saddam Hussein.

A large company with strategic oil interests in the Mid East wanted the remote viewers to look at the Gulf War's effects upon the near and far term price of oil and analyze Saddam Hussein himself. Psi Tech tried to look at his intent, motivation, and emotional and behavioral states, penetrated his war room, gather information concerning his battle plans, operations, force strengths, and possible deception schemes, and to provide a six-month general outlook for the region.

Investigative Report: Hydrogen-based Automobile Power Plant RDT&E

---

[184] *GLOBAL COMPETITIVE STRATEGIES*, PSI TECH, "At Work in the Mind of Science", Box 212, Albuquerque, New Mexico, 87125. 1994.

A major auto company hired PSI TECH to peform a world-wide search for key research and applied engineering work related to hydrogen-powered automobiles. The brochure says: "We located and described engineering projects in North America, Japan, France, China, Germany and the USSR. Our final report placed emphasis upon the most potentially successful of the projects, and included sketches of prototype designs, and descriptions of essential associated engineering features such as turbines, flywheels, hydraulic and electric components,etc. (Interestingly, we determined that the most potentially successful design would not belong to our customer!)"

Projected Key Technologies for Lunar In-Situ Resource Processing

This client was a large engineering company who wanted help in selecting -- or creating -- the "most economical technologies with which to extract lunar elements (primarily oxygen) for intended use as a possible lunar base energy source, and as a source of propulsion for Moon-Mars expeditions. PSI TECH furnished the company descriptions/sketches of actual future lunar mining and resource processing operations, and recommendations with regard to power generation devices."

- Other PSI TECH contracts are only listed by their descriptive title:
- Enigma Penetration: Soviet Phobos II Space Craft Imaged Anomaly
- Projected Technologies: Advanced Deep Space Propulsion Systems
- Cladestine Iraqi Biological Weapons Facilities
- A Relook of the KAL Flight 007 Shoot Down
- Atmospheric Ozone Depletion - Projected Consequences and Remedial Technologies
- Saint-Exupery Crash Site
- A Technical Remote Viewing Survey of Martian Surface Anomalies
- Joint US-Russian Remote Viewing Survey of Titan
- Key Latin American Narcotics Transshipment Facilities.

One source close to the company said, "a number of these attempts didn't bear reliable fruit."

For $3,000 you can take a PSI TECH course and learn how to "remote view" yourself. In a mere 7 days of intensive training in the "Technical Remote Viewing" (TM) Course developed by none other than SRI golden psychic Ingo Swann, you can learn how to acquire a *target* (i.e., person, thing, or event, regardless of location in time-space), set up and initiate a *topical search,* discriminate between target-associated data and imagination/personal analysis (which would probably be the most difficult part of succeeding at this) and learn a system by which you can structure "elaborate target-associated information" and several "analysis-facilitating formats." One would suspect that the processes of NLP are put to good use here.

Should you wish to attend one of PSI TECH's courses, the brochure says, allow an extra day to visit Los Alamos National Laboratory and/or the Santa Fe Institute.

"With Major Richard Groller and Janet Morris as his co-authors, Alexander published THE WARRIOR'S EDGE in 1990. [185] The book describes in detail various unconventional methods which would enable the practitioner to acquire "human excellence and optimum performance" and thereby become an invincible warrior[186]. The purpose of the book, the author's write is "to unlock the door to the extraordinary human potentials inherent in each of us. To do this, we, like governments around the world, must take a fresh look at non-traditional methods of affecting reality. We must raise human consciousness of the potential power of the individual body/mind system - the power to manipulate reality. We must be willing to retake control of our past, present, and ultimately, our future ."

Alexander is a friend of Vice President Al Gore's. Their relationship dates back to 1983 when Gore was in Alexander's Neuro-Linguistics Programming (NLP) training (by Wyatt Woodsmall a student of Anthony Robbins and Richard Bandler.) So, one would assume, most of PSI TECH's customers are government agencies or government contractors.

In his book *The Warrior's Edge,* Alexander said that NLP was "presented to selected general officers and Senior Executive Service members[187]" a set of techniques to modify behavior patterns. [188] Among the first generals to take the course was then Lieutenant General Maxwell Thurman, who later went on to receive his fourth star and become Vice-Chief of Staff at the Army and Commander Southern Command. [189] Among other senior participants were Tom Downey and Major General Stubblebine, former Director of the Army Intelligence security Command. In 1983, the Jedi master (from the *Star Wars* movie) -- provided an image and a name for the Jedi Project. [190] " The Jedi Project's aim was to "seek and construct teachable models of behaviorable/ physical excellence using unconventional means."

According to Alexander the Jedi Project was to be a follow-up to Neuro-Linguistic Programming skills. By using the influence of friends such as Major General

---

[185] Ibid

[186] Ibid

[187] Ibid

[188] Ibid

[189] Ibid

[190] The American Security Council (ASC) BOs 8, Boston , Virginia 22713, USA. ASC is militarist, anti-Communist and right-wing. Formed in the mid 1950s, the Council acts as a right-wing think tank on foreign policy and lobbies for the expansion and strengthening of U.S. military forces. In 1985 the ASC has 330,000 members. See, for example, the entry for the ASC in THE RADICAL RIGHT, A WORLD DIRECTORY, complied by Ciaran O. Maolain (Longman, London 1987.)

Stubblebine, who was then head of the U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command, he managed to fund Jedi. In reality the concept was old hat, re-christened by Alexander.

Victorian wrote: " The original idea which was to show how 'human will power and human concentration affect performance more than any other single factor ' using NLP skills, was the brainchild of three independent people; Fritz Erickson, a Gestalt Therapist, Virginia Satir, a family therapist and Erick Erickson, a hypnotist (sic).'"

The above is incorrect, and is misquoted from Alexander's book THE WARRIOR'S EDGE. But it was incorrect in that too. NLP practitioners, Bandler and Grinder modeled successful therapists who were Fritz Perles (father of Gestalt therapy), Virginia Satir (a remarkably talented family therapist) and Milton Erickson (a victim of polio, genius hypnotist and the true father of the basic NLP breakthrough information = communication is 90% behavioral, 5% tonal and 5% content.

All of Erickson's work is now in print. He was a master of the therapeutic metaphor. I interviewed him in 76-77 while doing my basic research for Operation Mind Control. Anthony Robbins told me about teaching the army how to improve their skills as marksmen and at the training I received from him, Wyatt Woodsmall (mentioned in Alexander's book) taught us some courses, one of which was "Sort Patterns." Alexander's book contains errors such as the above, naming Milton Erickson, Eric Erickson. He also seems to miss one of the most valuable lessons which makes NLP succeed: the person doing the "nulping" must remain unattached to the other person's content, must not second guess their outcome, and must assert their intention toward a win/win situation. This allows the unique power of the creative imagination to surprise the NLP practicioner. It would seem from his writing that Alexander didn't have a clue about this, and like most defensive people, felt quite at home in the defense business.

In a telephone conversation with Victorian, Janet Morris[191] confirmed John Alexander's involvement in mind control and psychotronic projects in the Los Alamos National Laboratories. She told Victorian: "Alexander and his team have recently been working with Dr. Igor Smirnov, a psychologist from the Moscow Institute of Psychocorrections."

Victorian said after Morris visited Russia in 1991, top Soviet mind-controllers were invited to the U.S. Morris was shown a technique which was pioneered by the Russian Department of Psycho-Correction at Moscow Medical Academy. The Russians employ the technique to "electronically analyze the human mind in order to influence it.

---

[191] Taped telephone conversation between A. Victorian and Janet Morris, March 1, 1993.

"They input subliminal command messages," Victorian reported,"using key words transmitted in 'white noise' or music. [192] Using an infrasound very low frequency-type transmission, the acoustic psycho-correction message is transmitted via bone conduction. Ear plugs would not restrict the message. To do that would require an entire body protection system. According to the Russians the subliminal messages by-pass the conscious level and are effective almost immediately."

Another one of Alexander's collaborators, Victorian revealed, was C.B. Scott Jones, the former assistant to Senator Clairborne Pell (Democrat, Rhode Island). Scott Jones was a member of U.S. Naval Intelligence for 15 years, as well as Assistant Naval Attaché, New Delhi, India, in the 1960's. "Jones has briefed the President's Scientific Advisory Committee" and has "testified before House and Senate Committees on intelligence matters," Victorian said. After the navy he "worked in the private sector research and development community involved in the U.S. government sponsored projects for the Defense Nuclear Agency (DNA), Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) and U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command. He has been head of the Rockefeller Foundation for some time and also chairs the American Society for Psychical Research. [193]"

Victorian said the people he mentioned were all "Birds of a Feather." He explained the meaning of that by explaining their code names: "Alexander and C.B. Jones are members of the AVIARY, a group of intelligence and Department of Defense officers and scientists with a brief to discredit any serious research in the UFO field. Each member of the Aviary bears a bird's name. Jones is FALCON, John Alexander is PENGUIN."

The literature of UFOlogy was filled with stories about one other agent of the so-called AVIARY -- a UFO researcher known as William Moore, who was introduced to John Alexander at a party in 1987 by Scott Jones. Moore went public, confessing in front of an audience at a conference held by the MUTUAL UFO NETWORK (MUFON) on July 1, 1989, in Las Vegas, that he was promised inside " information by the senior members of the AVIARY in return for his obedience and service to them." Moore revealed how he participated in the propagation and dissemination of disinformation which had been fed to him by various members of the AVIARY. He also confessed how he had been instructed to target one individual in particular, an electronics expert named Dr. Paul Bennewitz. What made Bennewitz a target, according to Victorian was: he had accumulated some UFO film footage and documentation of electronic signals which were taking place in 1980 over the Menzano Weapons Storage areas, at Kirtland Air Force Base, New Mexico. Victorian said that, "as a result of Moore's involvement, coupled with some surreptitious entries and psychological techniques, Bennewitz ended up in a psychiatric hospital."

---

[192] In 1989 a U.S. Dept. of Defense consultant and contractor explained to Victorian how he was asked to examine the possibility of devising operational methods of transmitting subliminal messages through the TV.

[193] "Will the Real Scott Jones please stand up?" Victorian refers to an unpublished paper by Gerge Hansen and Robert Durant dated Feb. 20, 1990.

Just before the publication of Victorian's first paper unmasking two members of the AVIARY, he says he was visited by two of their members (MORNING DOVE and HAWK) who had traveled to the U.K. with a message from the senior ranks advising Victorian not to go ahead with his expose. Victorian says he rejected the proposal.

Immediately after the publication of Victorian's paper, John B. Alexander confessed that he was indeed a member of the AVIARY. He said his nickname was PENGUIN. The accuracy of Victorian's information was further confirmed to him by yet another member of the AVIARY, Ron Pandolphi, PELICAN. Pandolphi, Victorian said, was a PhD in physics and works at the Rocket and Missile section of the Office of the Deputy Director of Science and Technology, CIA.

In his book, OUT THERE,[194] the NEW YORK TIMES journalist Howard Blum refers to "a UFO Working Group" within the Defense Intelligence Agency. Despite the DIA's repeated official denials, [195] the existence of this working grouphwas been confirmed to Victorian by more than one member of the group itself, "including an independent source in the Office of Naval Intelligence," he said. "The majority of the group's members are senior members of the AVIARY: Dr. Christopher Green (BLUEJAY) from the CIA, [196] Harold Puthoff (OWL) ex-NSA; Dr. Jack Verona (RAVEN) (DoD, one of the initiators of the DIA's Sleeping beauty project which aimed to achieve battlefield superiority using mind-altering electromagnetic weaponry); John Alexander (PENGUIN) and Ron Pandolphi (PELICAN). The mysterious "Col. Harold E. Phillips" who appears in Blum's OUT THERE is none other than John B. Alexander.

John Alexander's position as the Program Manager for Contingency Missions of Conventional Defense Technology, Los Alamos National Laboratories, enabled him to exploit the Department of Defense's Project RELIANCE "Which encourages a search for all possible sources of existing and incipient technologies before developing new technology in-house [197] "to tap into a wider range of exotic topics, sometimes using defense contractors, e.g. McDonnell Douglas Aerospace. Victorian said he had several reports," some of which were compiled before his departure to the Los Alamos National Laboratories when he was with Army Intelligence, which show Alexander's keen interest in any and every exotic subject - UFOs, ESP, psychotronics, anti-gravity devices, near death experiences, psychological warfare and non-lethal weaponry.

---

[194] Howard Blum, OUT THERE, Simon and Schuster, 1990.

[195] DIA's letters to Victorian dated July 12, 1991, July 8, 1992, and December 18, 1992.

[196] Dr. Christopher "Kit" Green, BLUEJAY, has admitted that the CIA has compiled over 30,000 files on UFOs, 200 of which are extrememly interesting. Green was a CIA member in examining the UFO problem for several years, Victorian notes.

[197] Los Alamos National Laboratory, Institional Plan Fiscal Year, 1992. Victorian's notes.

"John Alexander utilizes the bank of information he has accumulated to try to develop psychotronic, psychological and mind weaponry," Victorian wrote. "He began thinking about non-lethal weapons a decade ago in his paper *The New Mental Battlefield*. He seems to want to become a "Master." If he ever succeeds in this ambition the rest of us ordinary mortals had better watch out," Victorian said.

But, Armen Victorian didn't watch out enough. Just before this edition was printed, received a letter from Victorian which read:

> What I am about to tell you is stuff that I always thought would happen to others and not to us, until it did happen. Despite the long research experience of dealing with the dirty tricks orchestrated by various governments to harass and frighten members of the public, I have to confess that at this pint of time myself and my family feel somewhat confused, and if I don't add frightened, I might not be telling the truth.
>
> 1. On June 21, 1994, a rainy day, I was on my way back from our weekly shopping, driving in a busy urban road, where a car parked on the side of the road, without using his indicator veered in front of me (attempting to make a U-turn), as a result I collided with him and my car was written off. I am lucky that no serious injuries occurred to me, and I escaped whilst badly shaken. There were two people in the car, which was an old brown colour Volvo. Immediately after the accident the driver (male) came out and attempted assault on me. His companion, a female, shouted at him, he returned to his car (which was only dented on the side) and drove away. I managed to take his number plate etcetra.
>
> 2. On June 23 (two days later), after returning home with my children from their school, I noticed a red colour car parked in front of our house, with two passengers in it, a male and a female. After we entered, the male passenger (very well dressed) came out, walked to our front window, gazed into our room for a couple of minutes, then he went back to his car. A few minutes later he returned with his female companion and rang our door bell. When I opened the door he addressed me with a very friendly voice (as though he had known me for years) calling me by one of my previous pen names which I have not used for a few years. I told him that I am not the person he just addressed. He produced a card, clinched in his hand which I could not see anything of, and asked if they could come in, which I refused. He then looked at his female companion (who was standing beside him). They then walked away, got into their car and drove away.
>
> 3. On July 14, whilst I was away on business, I received a call from my wife. She was clearly distressed. She told me that the police had

raided our house and had arrested her, taking away some of my research work as well as our personal documentation. At this point the receiver was grabbed from her hand and a male voice introducing himself as a police officer asked me to introduce myself at a certain police station as soon as possible. He told me that he tried to avoid the embarrassment of arresting me by his colleagues at where I was. I drove back to Nottingham and introduced myself to the police station they had named. They were still keeping my wife in custody. Eventually they tried to interview me in front of a solicitor I had asked to be present. I maintained my right of silence throughout. We were both released on bail pending further investigation. The alleged charges which makes me laugh for the heavy handedness they had applied to us is; "obtaining the British Telecom Services with deception". Which we both totally reject. It is to our mind a plan to frame me, using my wife as perhaps a bargain chip.

4. On July 31, 1994 (Sunday) whilst I was washing the dishes after lunch, I noticed some unusual marks on our kitchen window glass. Upon closer examination I noticed that someone had attempted to cut the glass. To us it was just a signal. I reported it to the police. Our house has been burgled on five previous occasions. I have written several letters to the Home Office and other British authorities with no response to date. All my direct and indirect inquiries as to who carries out such surreptitious entries has been either ignored, or responded to with silence. In each occasion only research work and personal and financial documents have gone missing. Furthermore, since 1989 (I have records) my mail has been continuously tampered with. Some mail has been opened, some gone missing. My inquiries to the Royal Mail have born no fruit.

5. On August 4, 1994, I had gone to meet my solicitor (attorney). I parked my car in a multi-story car park in a shopping mall, adjacent to their offices. When I returned, the door on the passenger side was wide open. Nothing had gone missing. Again I reported it to the police.

6. The CIA in a recent response to my PA request has acknowledged that they do indeed keep a file on me.

7. I might have told you that I possess a Memorandum in Confidence, issued by John Alexander where he openly admits that he has approached the CIA, NSA and the State Department in an attempt to "sort me out." He goes further to add that the US agencies in return have been in contact with the British Intelligence about my research work.

8. On July 15, 1994, I went to the office of our local Nottingham City Council for a routine inquiry about our Council Tax. The VDU (computer screen) was facing myself and the clerk. When he punched my name into the computer, to my surprise the computer showed all the details about my arrest. According to the Data Protection Act of 1984, it is ILLEGAL to have any such records on anyone. These records must be kept on the Police National Computer (PNC) ONLY. The police have assured us that even they did not make such an input in PNC, because there have been no charges. The question is who has leaked this information out? I have already filed a complaint against he City Council through the Data Protection Registrar pending its outcome. I don't hold my hopes high.

So, here we are. In a short period of time we have been through the stuff the movies are made of.

If you want to publicize my case you are more than welcome and indeed I would welcome it. In brief we need help. I never thought I am such a thorn in their eyes. I seldom publish anything.
Tell me, if you will, what is your advice.

Armen Victorian
P.O. Box 99
Nottingham, NG8 -3NT
England

One might not give as much credence to Victorian's troubles if Martin Cannon hadn't also had troubles. Both Cannon and Alexander were researching UFO phenomenon and mind control. They both asked a lot of people a lot of questions about John Alexander. They both believe they are targets of harassment or worse from the cryptocratic connections of Alexander.

I listened to the tape recorded tape Cannon provided me. He identified the voice as that of his old friend, fellow UFO research, John Alexander's wife, Vickie. On the tape she told Cannon "John and Ed, are really steamed up over what you've written and they're asking Gordon (Cannon explained he thought Mrs. Alexander meant it was Gordon Novel, a CIA asset alleged to be involved in the Kennedy assassination) to do something about it."

My attempts to interview John Alexander have not succeeded. I've tried to contact him through friends and at his e-mail address. There so far has been no response. I'll say it as the newspaper reporters do: John Alexander was not available for comment at press time.

32

CULT CONTROL

In 1990 spychiatrist Dr. Louis Jolyon West, M.D., Professor of Psychiatry, University of California, pet shrink of the cryptocracy[198] gave a speech on cults. As usual it was soft on fact and hard on the cryptocracy line:

> **It is estimated that there are more than 2500 cults in the United States...**

Now there must be a lot more "cults" than that since, the Oxford English Dictionary said the word cult meant: "1. worship -- 2. a particular form of religious worship; *esp*. in reference to its external rites and ceremonies -- 3. devotion to a particular person or thing..." Some would say that includes the Moose, Elks, Shriners, Optimists, Boy Scouts, certain football teams, religions of all denominations, hang gliding clubs, sky diving clubs, James Joyce reading groups and on and on. But without further argument, West's comments on "CULTS -- PSYCHIATRIC ASPECTS:"

> **Ten different varieties can be identified, but most of them are religious or mystical. All share certain characteristics that differentiate them from religious sects on the one hand, counter-culture communes on the other. Some cults appear to be relatively benign, others harmful, some deadly.**

---

[198] Resume of L.J. West, M.D., includes proudly and overtly notes his service to the Tavistock Institute, Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences, U.S. Army (enlisted), U.S. Air Force (officer), Chief, Psychiatry Service, Lackland Air Force Base, Consultant in Psychiatry, USAF Hospitals, Leo J. Ryan Award from the Cult Awareness Network, Examiner American Board of Psychiatry, Advisory Council Behavioral Sciences Div. USAF Office of Scientific Research, National Consultant in Psychiatry to the Surgeon General USAF, Professional Advisory Council National Association for Mental Health, Consultant US Information Agency (CIA front), Exec. Council Committee on Behavioral Research (Advisory on Disaster Research to the Office of Emergency Planning), National Research Council Consultant USAF Aero-Space Medical Center, Consultant Peace Corps, Consultant Bureau of Social Research, Inc. (believed to be covertly CIA funded), Member USA Medical Research and Development Advisory Panel, Consultant V.A. Health Care Committee, National Research Council Division of Medical Sciences, and so on for 24 pages ending in a Bibliography, the last entry of which is: A Review of *Combating Cult Mind Control*. West's fingerprints are all over some of the Nazi-like ideas and experiments in mind control.

> Under certain conditions, people can be deliberately manipulated, influenced and controlled to a considerable degree, even to their detriment, and induced to express beliefs and exhibit behaviors far different from what their lives up to then would have logically or reasonably predicted. Furthermore, persons in such situations may suffer harm -- psychological, physical, financial and other -- as a consequence of their having been thus manipulated, influenced and controlled.
>
> Such words as brainwashing, thought reform, coercive persuasion, and the more ominous-sounding "mind control" are often employed to account for the domination and manipulation by some cults of their members. Roughly one-third of the people who leave cults, either voluntarily or through the efforts of concerned family members, will exhibit some kind of psychopathology...

Of course West would not dare mention the cult of intelligence, or satanic and pagan cults which have been co-opted by the cryptocracy and utilized as valuable assets.

At the time, there was a rabid anti-cult audience, so West held the easily led "mental health" community in thrall, especially since the public hadn't yet recovered from the biggest cult mass murder in American history -- Jonestown.

The "Jonestown Massacre", as it came to be called, began when Jim Jones ordered his followers to commit suicide. It ended with nine hundred plus bodies rotting in the Guyanese jungle, most of them black. Nearly three hundred children dead, along with three journalists and the first U.S. Congressman assassinated in the line of duty, machine-gunned on the airport runway. The whole story about Jonestown still hasn't been revealed. Too many bodies were buried too fast. Too many "official" lies were told. But in light of the events in Waco, Texas and our knowledge of mind control, it's worthwhile to take another look:

On November 19, 1978, the day after the so-called Jonestown cult suicide I received a call from Mae Brussell. "Jonestown was a mind control experiment," she said in her usual get-down-to-business style. "There was a Soviet base nearby and the CIA was using the place for something -- maybe just a cover, then Ryan got involved and they decided to see if they could trigger a mass program. The ultimate test -- mass suicide -- to test their mastery at mind control..."

Mae Brussell was one of a kind. The daughter of a Jewish Los Angeles judge and the granddaughter of I. Magnin, Mae had devoted her life to research. It was her passion. She was devoted to citizen's intelligence gathering, and was therefore aware, before any other ordinary citizen (I mean, without being one who was an accomplice to the crime) that Nazi war criminals had been admitted to the United

States in wholesale numbers, given citizenship, new identities and put to work for the cryptocracy.

When the first edition of this book was published, Mae went out of her way to meet with me. She congratulated me heartily and thanked me for writing this book. In hindsight, I may have been among the first to confirm (without knowing it) some of her conclusions about a totalitarian cryptocracy which was taking over America.

When we talked in San Francisco, that first time, I had the impression that this tiny grandmotherly woman was suffering from input overload. She talked breathlessly, jumping from one subject to another, swimming in facts, weaving together important pieces of a vast patriot's quilt which covered a "conspiracy to invisibly corrupt the constitution." Now, after almost 17 years, I understand only a fragment of what Mae Brussel knew then, and I hold her on a plateau of respect which has levitated through time.

She called me again when John Lennon was assassinated. "Mark David Chapman, Lennon's killer was one of the CIA sleeper agents, programmed to kill like a Manchurian Candidate", she said. (See *Who Killed John Lennon* [199] by Fenton Bressler). And she called again when Ronald Reagan was shot, telling me that his assailant, David Hinkley was hypno-programmed in the same schools as Lennon's assassin.

Mae never got over Jonestown. She knew all about it. She even called it "Camp Mind Control."And, as it turned out, Mae was often ahead of everybody else, but she was seldom wrong.

To refresh your memory: Jim Jones was the leader of a San Francisco-based church known as The People's Temple Christian Church. A powerful orator, Jones drew to his pews the poor, social activists, Hispanics, and mostly Blacks both young and old. His message was peppered with socialistic philosophy. In fact Jones was "a self-proclaimed Marxist fanatic, a white revolutionary who commanded a huge black following of thousands."[200] If we've learned anything from the revelations of COINTELPRO and other covert FBI political operations, we can assume that Jones captured the immediate attention of the cryptocracy.

He was even assisted in his meteoric rise to become the head of an illegal multimillion dollar empire. Building a network of connections with legitimate politicians, Jones was appointed by Mayor Mosconi as the Director of the San Francisco Housing Authority . He supported from the pulpit, and was, in turn, supported by both Ronald Reagan and Richard Nixon. At the same time he was caching weapons, experimenting with brainwashing techniques, using high voltage shock to program the small children of his parishioners, and building an international presence in South America.

---

[199] Fenton Bressler, *Who Killed John Lennon*, Dell, 1992.

[200] Silverman, Art, *The Unanswered Questions of Jonestown*, Calendar Magazine, San Francisco Weekly, December 1-15, 1988.

Debbie Layton, a former Temple member, told the syndicated TV program *In Search Of:* "Jones wasn't a Christian. He was an atheist. He called Christ, the sky god... He was clever, deceitful and evil. He read all the books on psychology and brainwashing, and he knew all the tricks that would get people to do what he wanted them to do..."

Jones spoke of justice, racial harmony and he spewed fire and brimstone in his criticism of the hypocrisy of this world. At its peak, the Peoples Temple was the largest, richest, and most tightly organized group of self-proclaimed 'revolutionaries' in the entire country. And after gaining such a huge following Jones naturally became the target of the local press.

Jim Jones and his church became the feature of a number of scathing news articles. Jones claimed the negative press attention was motivated by those who opposed his newly-found apocalyptic religion. He used the bad press, especially an 1977 article in *New West,* as an excuse to move most of the members of his church to the 'promised land' in Guyana. But the stories of beatings, kidnappings, sexual abuse and mysterious deaths continued to surface.

Before the events of November 1978, there were no less than a dozen investigations of Jim Jones underway by various law enforcement agencies. Included in these were his alleged involvements in drug smuggling, gun running in the Caribbean, kidnapping, arson, money laundering, customs violations, welfare fraud, illegal broadcast of coded messages, abuse of tax-exempt status, forging trust deeds and even murder. Each of these inquiries was abandoned, stalled, botched, or compromised until it was too late. In several of these cases, classified investigative leads and informants were revealed to Jones. A number of investigative files were found in Jones' cabin in Guyana after the massacre.

All this activity was brought to the attention of congressional members, and Leo Ryan in particular since his electoral district was the bay area, from which most of the complaints against Jones issued. Ryan was not warned about the activities at Jonestown, in fact, it is believed that intelligence agencies intervened with the State Department to limit inquiries and discussions on Jones.

Ryan decided to go to Guyana and investigate the situation for himself. When Ryan and a group of reporters landed on the tiny airstrip at Port Kaituma, briefly visited Jonestown and were murdered as they were attempting to leave Guyana at the airport. Ryan was posthumously awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor, and was the first Congress member to die in the line of duty.

Then followed the "White Night," a supposed mass suicide pact, which was executed by the entire population of Jonestown. Some of the community, made up mostly of Black, women and children, drank cyanide from paper cups of *Kool-Aid* at the urging of Jones. Others refused and were either injected or shot. A modern Masada, children and their mothers died around the main pavilion where Jim Jones allegedly shot himself in the head. For days, the body count mounted from 400 to nearly 1,000. The bodies were flown to the United States and later cremated or buried in mass graves.

Pete Hammill called the corpses, "all the loose change of the sixties." Hammill now wishes he'd never written that.

Mae Brussell's friend and fellow researcher, John Judge saw it differently. In a essay ***The Black Hole of Guyana,***[201] he wrote: "The effect (of Jonestown) was electric. Any alternative to the current system was seen as futile if not deadly. Protests only led to police riots and political assassination. Alternative lifestyles and drugs led to 'creepy-crawly' communes and violent murders. And religious experiments led to cults and suicide. Social utopias were dreams that turned into nightmares. The television urged us to go back to 'The Happy Days' of the apolitical 50s. The message was, get a job, and go back to church. The unyielding nuclear threat generated only nihilism and hopelessness. There was no answer but death, no exit from the grisly future. The new ethic was personal success, aerobics, material consumption, a return to 'American values,' and the 'moral majority' white Christian world. The official message was clear."

One early headline read:" Cult Dies in South American Jungle: 400 Die in Mass Suicide, 700 Flee into Jungle.[202]" Statements of People's Temple members and accounts in the press claimed there were 1,100 people at Jonestown. Eight-hundred-nine adult passports were found there, and there were reports of 300 children being there, supposedly 276 found among the dead with 210 not identified. Almost a week later the "official " Guyanese body count was issued by the American Military. That count came to only 913 bodies. Sixteen survivors were then reported to have returned to the U.S.[203]

Numbers don't lie, so at their first chance Americans claimed that the Guyanese "could not count." Next, the Americans proposed another theory -- the Guyanese had missed seeing a pile of bodies at the back of the pavilion. Then, finally, the Americans gave the "official" reason for the discrepancy -- bodies had fallen on top of other bodies, adults covering children.[204]

---

[201] Judge, John, ***The Black Hole of Guyana, The Untold Story of the Jonestown Massacre, Judge for Yourself,*** Prevailing Winds Research, Santa Barbara, Ca. 1993.

[202] *New York Post*, 11/21/78.

[203] *Guyana Daily Mirror*, 11/23/85.

[204] *The New York Times*, 11/25/78 ("layered," Ridley, Guyana, but U.S. soldier, "only one layer").

"It was a simple, if morbid, arithmetic that led to the first suspicions," John Judge wrote.[205] "The 408 bodies discovered at first count would have to be able to cover 505 bodies for a total of 913. In addition, those who first worked on the bodies would have been unlikely to miss bodies lying beneath each other since each body had to be punctured. Eighty-two of the bodies first found were those of children, reducing the number that could have been hidden below others. A search of nearly 150 photographs, aerial and close-up, fails to show even one body lying under another, much less 500.

"It seemed the first reports were true, 400 had died, and 700 had fled to the jungle. The American authorities claimed to have searched for people who had escaped but found no evidence of any in the surrounding area. At least a hundred Guyanese troops were among the first to arrive, and they were ordered to search the jungle for survivors. In the area, at the same time, British Black Watch troops were on "training exercises," with nearly 600 of their best-trained commandos. Soon, American Green Berets were on site as well. The presence of these soldiers, specially trained in covert killing operations, may explain the increasing numbers of bodies that appeared."

A new phrase was put out in the American press, "Suicide-murder." But was it suicide or was it murder?

Dr. Leslie Mootoo, the top Guyanese pathologist arrived at the scene within hours of the massacre. He turned away the assistance of U.S. pathologist and accompanied the teams that counted the dead, examined the bodies and worked to identify the deceased. While the American press was screaming about "*Kool-Aid* Suicides," Dr. Mootoo was coming to a very different conclusion.

While news reports held that the people of Jonestown died from drinking cyanide laced *Kool-aid*, Dr. Mootoo could find no evidence of cyanide poisoning. In fact, all signs of cyanide poisoning were absent in the Jonestown dead whose limbs were limp and relaxed. The faces showed no signs of distortion, the tell-tale sign death by cyanide.

Cyanide blocks the messages from the brain to the muscles by changing body chemistry which affects the central nervous system. Involuntary functions like breathing and heartbeat get mixed neural signals from cyanide poisoning, the muscles begin to spasm, limbs twist and contort and facial muscles draw back into a deadly grin called "cyanide rictus."[206]

Dr. Mootoo found that 80-90% of the Jonestown victims *had fresh needle marks in the back of the left shoulder blades*.[207] Others were shot or strangled. The gun that reportedly shot Jim Jones was lying nearly 200 feet from his body, not next to it as would a suicide weapon. The Guyanese grand jury investigating the mass death concluded that all but three of the people were murdered by "persons unknown." The grand jury concluded that only two people had committed suicide.

---

[205] Judge, John, op cit.

[206] *A Guide to Pathological Evidence for Lawyers and Police Officers*, F. Jaffe, Carswell Press, 1983.

[207] *Miami Herald, "Coroner Says 700 Who Died in Cult were Slain", 12/17/78, 12/18/78 "Mootoo Shocks American Academy of Forensic Scientists meeting."*

Lt. Col. Schuler, the U.S. Army spokesman for the massacre cleanup announced, "No autopsies are needed. The cause of death is not an issue here." The forensic U.S. doctors who did autopsies at Dover, Delaware later, were not aware of Dr. Mootoo's findings.[208]

Despite the Guyanese grand jury's findings the Guyanese government participated with the Americans in a deep cover-up of the real story. The Americans brought in 16 C-131 cargo planes, planes made for carrying tanks, trucks, troops and ammunition at the same time. The Americans claimed they could carry only 36 caskets out at one time. The removal of the bodies took nearly a week. The bloated and rotten corpses that were eventually returned from the tropics of Guyana were impossible to autopsy.

Thanks to the media blitz (including a movie of the week) that followed the massacre, today 98% of the American population recognize the name "Jonestown" and believe it was the mass suicide of a black cult of religious fanatics led by Jim Jones. But what really happened at Jonestown?

The cite of the massacre was the Matthew's Bridge section in Guyana, originally the site of a Union Carbide bauxite and manganese mine which had earlier been one of seven possible sites chosen for the relocation of Jews after World War II.[209] Once the site had been prepared by a crew of select Temple members, the "parishioners" were loaded into busses in San Francisco, driven to Florida and loaded onto Pan American charter planes which flew them to Guyana. When they arrived at the airport, the Temple parishioners were taken off the plane, bound and gagged.[210]

"The deception had finally been stripped bare of all pretense. The Blacks were so isolated and controlled that neighbors as close as five miles from the site did not know that Blacks lived at Jonestown," John Judge wrote[211]. "The only public representatives seen in Guyana were white.

---

[208] Maguire, *John, Hold Hands and Die!* ,Dale Books, 1978, and Reiterman, Tim, *Raven,* Dutton, 1982.

[209] James G. McDonald: High Commissioner for Refugees, 1933-35" Werner Lib. Bull. #43-44; "Refugee Immigration: Truman Directive," *Prologue,* Spring 1981; *Caribbean Review,* Fall 1981.

[210] Maguire, John, op cit.

[211] Judge, John, op cit.

"According to survivors' reports, " Judge continued, "they entered a virtual slave labor camp. Worked for 16 to 18 hours daily, they were forced to live in cramped quarters on minimum rations, usually rice, bread and sometimes rancid meat. Kept on a schedule of physical and mental exhaustion, they were also forced to stay awake at night and listen to lectures by Jones. Threats and abuse became more common. The camp medical staff under Dr. Lawrence Schacht was known to perform painful suturing without anesthetic. They administered drugs, and kept daily medical records. Infractions of the rules or disloyalty led to increasingly harsh punishments, including forced drugging, sensory isolation in an underground box, physical torture and public sexual rape and humiliation. Beatings and verbal abuse were commonplace. Only the special guards were treated humanely and fed decently. People with serious injuries were flown out, but few ever returned. Perhaps the motto at Jonestown should have been the same as the one at Auschwitz, developed by Larry Schacht's namesake, Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, the nazi minister of economics, '*Arheit Macht Frei*,' or 'Work will Make You Free.' Guyana even considered setting up an 'Auschwitz-like museum' at the site, but abandoned the idea."

By the time Jones moved the parishioners of The People's Temple to Jonestown, he had amassed a fortune. Press estimates range from $26 million to $2 billion, including bank accounts, foreign investments and real estate. Much of this wealth, listed publicly after the massacre, disappeared. Judge says, " It was a fortune far too large to have come from membership alone. The receivership set up by the government settled on a total of $10 million... In addition there are indications that (George Philip) Blakey and other members were supplementing the Temple funds with international smuggling of guns and drugs." (This seemingly random allegation will take on greater significance as you read further.)

John Judge sums up his conclusions of the significance to the Jonestown massacre for the purposes of this study: "To comprehend this well-financed, sinister operation, we must abandon the myth that this was a religious commune and study instead the history that led to its formation. Jonestown was an experiment part of a 30-year program called MK-ULTRA, the CIA and military intelligence code name for mind control. A close study of Senator Ervin's 1974 report, *Individual Rights and the Government's Role in Behavior Modification*, shows that these agencies had certain "target populations" in mind, for both individual and mass control. Blacks, women, prisoners, the elderly, the young, and inmates of psychiatric wards were selected as 'potentially violent.' There were plans in California at the time for a Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, expanding on the horrific work of Dr. Jose Delgado, Drs. Mark and Ervin, and Dr. Jolly West, experts in implantation, psychosurgery, and tranquilizers. The guinea pigs were to be drawn from the ranks of the 'target populations,' and taken to an isolated military missile base in California. In that same period, Jones began to move his Temple members to Jonestown. They were the exact population selected for such tests.

"The meticulous daily notes and drug records kept by Larry Schacht disappeared, but evidence did not. The history of MK-ULTRA and its sister programs (MK-DELTA, ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, etc.) records a combination of drugs, drug mixtures, electroshock and torture as methods for control. The desired results ranged from temporary and permanent amnesia, uninhibited confessions, and creation of second personalities, to programmed assassins and preconditioned suicidal urges. One goal was the ability to control mass populations, especially for cheap labor. Dr. Delgado told Congress that he hoped for a future where a technology would control workers in the field and troops at war with electronic remote signals. He found it hard to understand why people would complain about electrodes implanted in their brains to make them 'both happy and productive.'

"On the scene at Jonestown, Guyanese troops discovered a large cache of drugs, enough to drug the entire population of Georgetown, Guyana (well over 200,000) for more than a year. According to survivors, these were being used regularly 'to control' a population of only 1,100 people. One footlocker contained 11,000 doses of thorazine, a dangerous tranquilizer. Drugs used in the testing for MK-ULTRA were found in abundance, including sodium pentathol (a truth serum), chloral hydrate (a hypnotic), demeral, thallium (confuses thinking), and many others. Schacht had supplies of haliopareael and largatil, two other major tranquilizers as well. The actual description of life at Jonestown is that of tightly run concentration camp, complete with medical and psychiatric experimentation. The stresses and isolation of the victims is typical of sophisticated brainwashing techniques. The drugs and special tortures add an additional experimental aspect to the horror. This more clearly explains the medical tags on the bodies, and why they had to be removed. It also suggests an additional motive for frustrating any chemical autopsies, since these drugs would have been found in the system of the dead.

"The story of Jonestown," writes Judge, "is that of a gruesome experiment, not a religious utopian society. On the eve of the massacre, Forbes Burnham was reportedly converted to 'born again' Christianity by members of the Full Gospel Christian Businessman's Association, including Lionel Luckhoo, a Temple lawyer in Guyana. This same group, based in California, also reportedly converted Guatemalan dictator Rios Montt prior to his massacres there, and they were in touch with Jim Jones in Ukiah.(And they conducted the White House prayer breakfasts for Ronald Reagan.) With Ryan on his way to Jonestown, the seal of secrecy was broken. In a desperate attempt to test their conditioning methods, the Jonestown elite apparently tried to implement a real suicide drill. Clearly , it lead to a revolt and the majority of people fled, unaware that there were people waiting to catch them."

Jim Jones was surrounded by CIA agents or affiliates. He had a long-term friendship with Dan Mitrione, whom he joined forces with in Richmond, Indiana during the 1950's where Mitrione was Chief of Police. Mitrione moved on to the CIA financed International Police Academy, where police are trained in counter-insurgency and torture techniques.[212] Former Green Beret, Charles Beikman was with Jones "to the end." later charged with the murders of several Temple members in Georgetown, following the massacre.

Deputy Chief of Mission for the U.S. Embassy in Guyana, Richard Dwyer was the CIA agent on the scene at the time of the massacre. Present at the camp site and the airport, Dwyer's accounts were used by the State Department to confirm the death of Congressman Ryan. At the massacre site, Jones said, "Get Dwyer out of here" just before the killings began.[213]

Other U.S. Embassy personnel in Guyana, knew the situation well at Jonestown. U.S. Ambassador John Burke, who served in the CIA with Dwyer in Thailand, and was an Embassy official described by Philip Agee as working for the CIA since 1963. was well aware of the situation. A Reagan appointee to the CIA, Burke was employed by the Agency on State Department assignments. Burke made a futile attempt to stop Ryan's investigation of Jones. Also at the Embassy was Chief Consular Officer Richard McCoy who worked for military intelligence "on loan" from the Defense Department[214] at the time of the massacre. He was described as being "close" to Jones.

According to Judge: "The U.S. embassy in Georgetown housed the Georgetown CIA station. It now appears that the majority and perhaps all of the embassy officials were CIA officers operating under State Department covers..."

The State Department concealed all reports of violations at Jonestown from congressman Leo Ryan, yet the Embassy regularly provided Jones with copies of congressional inquiries under the Freedom of Information Act. It is well known that Ryan was no friend of the cryptocracy's. He had challenged the Agency's overseas operations as a member of the House Committee responsible for oversight on intelligence. He authored the controversial Hughes-Ryan Amendment that would have required CIA disclosure in advance to the congressional committees of all planned covert operations. This Amendment was defeated shortly after his death.

Dan Webber, who was sent to the site of the massacre a day later, was also named as CIA.[215]

---

[212] Langguth, A.J., *Hidden Terrors, Pantheon, 1978.*

[213] *New York Times, 11/19/79.*

[214] *New York Times, 12/5,6,13/ 1978.*

[215] *Daily World, 6/23/81.*

"The connection of intelligence agencies to cults is nothing new. A simple but revealing example is the Unification Church, tied to both the Korean CIA (*i.e.*, American CIA in Korea), and the international fascist network known as the World Anti-Communist League. The Moonies hosted WACL's first international conference. What distinguished Jonestown was both the level of control and the openly sinister involvement. It was imperative that they cover their tracks," Judge said.

"The direct orders to cover up the cause of death came from the top levels of the American government. Zbigniew Brezezinsky delegated to Robert Pastor, and he in turn ordered Lt. Col. Gordon Sumner to strip the bodies of identity," Judge wrote.

After the Jonestown massacre, Pastor was promoted to the position of Deputy Director of the CIA. "One can only wonder," Judge wrote, "how many others tied to the Jonestown operation were similarly promoted?

"The ultimate victims of mind control at Jonestown are the American people," Judge said. "If we fail to look beyond the constructed images given us by the television and the press, then our consciousness is manipulated, just as well as the Jonestown victims' was..."

There never has been a full investigation of the Ryan assassination or the Peoples Temple massacre. There were special Congressional hearings held in the aftermath, but these were so flawed as to be farcical. Subpoena power was not invoked to compel testimony. The staff of the U.S. Embassy in Guyana weren't even called. Only a watered-down report was issued, of which 5,000 pages were classified and withheld from release.

The only trial to result from Jonestown was criminal prosecution of temple functionary Larry Layton, who was tried once in Guyana and twice in the United States. The Guyanese acquitted him of murder charges on the grounds that he had been brainwashed. The second trial was held in San Francisco. The charges were conspiring to kill Congressman Ryan. It ended in a hung jury. The third trial saw Layton convicted on conspiracy charges and sent to prison as Jonestown's single scapegoat.

The judge in Layton's case summarily denied defense motions to obtain documents and testimony regarding State Department or CIA involvement with the Peoples Temple. A group of Jonestown survivors and relatives also filed a $50 million civil action against the Federal government alleging such involvement, but their case was thrown out almost immediately on procedural grounds and all subsequent appeals were turned down.

Jim Jones opened his first temple in Indianapolis in the late fifties. He sold live monkies door-to-door to help finance it. He took a sabbatical in 1961-62, living under somewhat mysterious circumstances in Belo Horizonte, a small city on the Brazilian coast. A reporter from the San Jose Mercury News, traveled to Belo Horizonte after the killings. he reported that several of Jones' neighbors from 1961 said a staff car from the US Embassy visited him there weekly.[216]

When he returned to Indianapolis, Jones announced the temple would move to Northern California. "It may very well be just a coincidence," said reporter Art Silverman, "but another man made the same pilgrimage from Indianapolis to South America at about the same time. he was Dan Mitrione, the Indianapolis police chief at the time of Jones' first Peoples temple. Mitrione later became infamous as the US torture instructor -- working for the CIA under the cover of the Agency for International Development -- who was kidnapped, interrogated and finally murdered by the Tumpamaro guerrillas in Uruguay. Mitrione's story was told in Costa-Gravas' film *State of Siege.*

"Did Jones and Mitrione know each other? Here we move into the twilight zone of conspiracy theories and speculations. A number of years ago I called Mitrione's son, Dan Jr., himself an FBI agent, and asked that very question.

"'No,' he said emphatically.

"And," Silverman wrote, "that was the end of it until March 1985, when Dan Mitrione Jr. was in the papers himself. He had just pleaded guilty to federal charges of possessing 90 pounds of cocaine and was about to be sentenced to prison."

"There are still people who believe in Jim Jones," narrator Leonard Nimoy said at the close of *In Search of Jim Jones.* " Some of them still sleep with Jones' picture."

One of John Judges most important sources, Michael Meiers made a thorough study of Jonestown and wrote a book entitled *Was Jonestown A CIA Medical Experiment? A review of the Evidence.*[217] His conclusions are worth repeating:

> ...While living in Brazil, Jones receive his life assignment with the CIA's... MK ULTLRA program... By the time Jones was brought into the program, MK ULTRA was fifteen years old and many of the laboratories had since filed their final reports with the agency before disbanding. The experiments, conducted in university research departments, mental hospitals, and prison medical clinics represented the most authoritative source of information on their assigned subjects within the limits of a laboratory environment. The agency complied a library containing data that needed to be collated

---

[216] Silverman, Art, Op Cit.

[217] Michael Meiers, *Was Jonestown A CIA Medical Experiment? A Review of the Evidence*, Studies in American Religion, Vol. 35, The Edwin Mellen Press, POB 450, Lewiston, New York/ 14092

> into a comprehensive science of behavior modification. The task was assigned to Jim Jones, who would require another fifteen years to complete his findings in a major field test known as Jonestown...

Of course as we've noted in this work, there was a lot of redundancy in the programs. Jones, no doubt knew nothing of the other programs going on at the same time. While he is reported using some of the so-called Monarch techniques (researcher's have raised enough evidence to suspect that Bonnie Malmin/Burnham/Thielmann,[218] "the blonde bomber" may have been a Monarch "model"), it would appear that his focus was on mass control largely through drugs.

> ...While in Rio, Jones was briefed on MK Ultra and took advantage of the locale to study voodoo and the African religion, Macumba, as well as the faith-healing preacher, David Martins de Miranda, who exhibited extraordinary control over his followers who referred to their leader as "The Envoy of the Messiah." This modern-day John the Baptist imparted much of his knowledge to the aspiring Jim Jones.

A lot happened in 1963. In October Britain suspended the constitution of Guyana and the leftist government fell. In November President Kennedy was assassinated, and in December the first of several military coups destroyed any hold the Communists had on the Brazilian government.

> ... (In) 1963, Truman and many others recognized that the executive branch of government was no longer in control of the agency but no one questioned who *was* in control. Everyone assumed that the CIA had gone its separate way under its own power. No one could see that the Nazis who helped establish the agency had used the need to know security system to continue the Third Reich in the United States under the impenetrable cloak of national security.
>
> The Nazis hiding in the CIA were relatively quiet for the first few years after World War II that it required to convince the American public that their true enemy was not fascism but communism. The success of the McCarthy Era propaganda campaign in the early 1950's marked a distinct change in U.S. intelligence. No longer satisfied with merely gathering information about world events, as was their chartered function, the CIA began to create events that shaped history.
>
> With the formation of the National Security Agency in 1952, the CIA was relieved of most of the responsibility for gathering intelligence but even though it had outlived its original function, the agency

---

[218] Bonnie Thielmann, *The Broken God,* David C. Cook, Co., Elgin, Illinois, 1979.

> continued to grow in personnel and budget. They were left with little more to do that play "what if" games; speculative contingency planning like, "Is there a pharmaceutical solution to the growing unrest among Blacks and Native Americans?" The experiment in Jonestown was conceived from just such speculation.
>
> Jim Jones worked for the CIA but that does not exclude the distinct possibility that he only worked through the agency for his true employer, the Nazis. As a youngster he studied the Nazis, later he would employ Nazis in his Peoples Temple that was structured along fascist lines. When the FBI searched Jones' San Francisco office after the massacre they found that half the books in his personal library were about behavior modification and the other half were about Nazi Germany. The odyssey that ended in Jonestown, began some fifteen years earlier in Brazil when Jones received his life assignment, presumably but not necessarily, from his CIA employer...
>
> ...Until 1983, the chief Nazi-hunter in the U.S. government was Allen Ryan, but, by this third year of the Reagan administration, most attempts to identify Nazis in government (and particularly in the CIA) were circumvented by President Reagan and Vice President Bush (a former director of the CIA). Reagan gave the agency sweeping new powers to spy on American citizens at home, operate domestic front companies and prosecute anyone who identified Agency personnel. He increased their budget and approved construction of a new wing on their headquarters. The recent growth of the CIA is indicative of a fascist, right wing wave that is presently rampant in the United States...

Where is the accountability of our government? Itemized accounting shows that Jones received millions of dollars from the federal government which he used to finance the experiment in Jonestown. Even the tractor that transported the assassins to the site of congressman Ryan's murder was "U.S. government surplus." Meiers asks:

> Had Jones only mastered the system and taken advantage of its bureaucratic inefficiencies, or did he have inside help?

As we have heard from the Monarch survivors, sex was used by the cryptocrats to blackmail and reward politicians. Meiers notes this also was the pattern in the People's Temple:

> Sex was also used to reward and blackmail politicians both in California and later in Guyana where Jones would provide a number of Temple women to government officials who were then shown

> photographs of their encounter and be reminded that if they refused to cooperate with the Temple their public careers would be ruined...

And from looking at some of Jones' practices we might assume that we might find them in use by the cryptocracy. Meiers says that Jones required his closest trustees to sign a "self-confession statement" as a test of "loyalty:"

> The three basic confessions, dictated by Jones and signed by the member, attested to child molestation, homosexual acts or conspiracy to assassinate public officials. It wasn't long before the signer realized his confession might be used to blackmail him into Jones' service. This fear helped to blind the subject to the true danger, the "sheet of paper." Jones required his top aides to sign the lower right-hand corner of a blank sheet of paper. It appeared harmless enough in comparison with the self-confession letter, but it was deadly...
>
> The blackmailed aides would become the Temple hierarchy, the ruling elite and, for the most part, the only survivors of the massacre in Jonestown.

Meiers does as one is wont to do, sound the alarm -- our freedoms are endangered:

> For our democracy to survive into the 21st century, Americans need to understand that their lives and freedom are in danger from an enemy that most believe was defeated over forty years ago. We are now only fifty years into Himmler's plan to purify the race of man in the first one hundred twenty-five years of the Thousand Year Reich. It would seem that the plan is still on schedule. Fifty years ago, the Nazis had to manually identify homosexuals and drug addicts, transport them to the death camps that they had to build, pay for the guards, the cyanide, and the disposal of the corpses, all under public scrutiny and the chance that eventually they would have to answer for their genocidal crimes...
>
> ...The Himmlers, Mengeles, Laytons, and Joneses of this world have planned a "war" very different from the nuclear demise that most envision but nonetheless devastating. Just as the Crystal Night began the first Holocaust and the second World War, so too the White Night began he second holocaust and your future. It is very important. Millions of lives are in the balance.

Meiers presents an annotated bibliography of over 30 books written about Jonestown. "Some are government propaganda, " Meiers writes, "others are a defense of the author's or the church's involvement with Jim Jones." He traces the media propaganda and the cover-up that ensued in the aftermath of Jonestown:

> ... the most interesting aspect of the *New York Times'* treatment of the Jonestown subject is not the contributors or distortions but, oddly, the placement of the articles in their newspaper. Most are adjacent to the articles on the CIA and the Nazis. A prime example is the December 4, 1980 edition which included the CIA's ultimate defense. The article, entitled "House Committee Clears CIA of Role in People's Temple Cult" reported,
>
> > The House Intelligence Committee has found "no evidence at all" that the Central Intelligence Agency was involved with the People's Temple commune in Guyana before the mass murders and suicides there in November 1978.
>
> The House Intelligence Committee was responding to Congressman Ryan's staff and others close enough to the story to at least suspect that the CIA sponsored the experiment. Their "no evidence at all" statement was one of the most blatant lies in the post-Jonestown propaganda campaign.
>
> Adjacent to that story, the *Times* printed an article entitled, "CIA Linked to Mind-Control Drug Experiments." Citing documents released a day earlier under the Freedom of Information Act, the story outlined how the CIA had conducted a mind-control experiment on eight Black inmates at the Federal Addiction Research Center in Lexington, Kentucky back in 1963. Previously released documents detailed the CIA's mind-control experiments with LSD at that same facility but these later experiments used a mysterious hallucinogenic called BZ that "is a very long lasting drug which causes marked changes in mental functioning." According to the article, "The Army had a similar program," (presumably within the Army's Chemical Warfare Division under the direction of Dr. Laurence Layton).
>
> It was more than just a coincidence that the CIA would be absolved of any wrongdoing in the Jonestown affair on the same day that they released documents incriminating themselves in a smaller scale experiment. The uncanny timing suggests that the agency's M K ULTRA division was plea-bargaining. Cleared of the major crime, they admitted to a lesser one. An overall study of the *Times'* habit of placing articles on Jonestown adjacent to articles on the CIA and the Nazis raises questions as to their motives. Perhaps they simply recognized that these three seemingly unrelated subjects would interest the same type of reader but there is a strong chance that the *New York Times* recognized the truth about Jonestown but were

> either afraid to print it or censored from doing so. By placing articles on these three subjects together, they implied a connection to the amazement of conspiracy researchers and, no doubt, the irritation of the CIA.

Perhaps we do have *The New York Times* editors to thank for their attempt to say what they were not allowed to say outright. There had been a concerned attempt, Meiers concludes, to suppress information, stifle investigations, censor writers and manipulate public opinion.

> ...The propaganda campaign that assaulted society following the experiment in Jonestown is extremely complex and, in many ways, more difficult to comprehend than the experiment itself. The story is full of agents and counteragents, provocateurs and informants of dubious intention. Some worked for Jim Jones or the CIA, others for themselves as a self-defense of their personal involvement with the Peoples Temple. Those few who worked for the truth were too often misled by their sources. The only conclusion that can be reached with any certainty is that the group of people who helped formulate the public's opinion of the White Night was comprised of various villains and victims.

Meiers' most startling revelation is that Jones and those closest to him escaped after the massacre into Venezuela:

> The Reverend Jim Jones is alive, wealthy, secure and conceivably sipping pina coladas on the veranda as he reads this first published account of his escape from the carnage he created in Jonestown.

It was reported by a number of his followers that Jones had several doubles. Meiers believes the body which was supposed to be Jones' was a double.

> In the aftermath of the massacre, a corpse was discovered in front of the throne among the nine hundred others in and around the pavilion. It was tentatively identified as Jim Jones. Unlike most of the other victims, the body had not been poisoned but shot once behind the left ear. It was presumed that he had been murdered by a disenchanted follower as the gun was found some thirty yards away but this will never be established for certain because nitrate and neutron activation tests were not performed to determine if there were trances of gunpowder on Jones' hands. Such tests are standard procedure in deaths where there is a question as to murder or suicide...

> The corpse, identified as Jim Jones, was allowed to rot in the jungle heat for four days before it was removed. No attempt was made to preserve the remains. The body was not refrigerated (not even in the temporary morgue set up at the Georgetown airport). This may be due in part to the U.S. State Department's original plan to bury all the dead in a mass grave in Jonestown, without identification or autopsy...
>
> ...The FBI was not positive that the body was Jim Jones, only that the body was the same man arrested as Jim Jones five years earlier. There were no other records of Jones' prints. The authenticity of the LAPD files was never questioned and the case was mistakenly closed...

Meiers says that the CIA is not responsible for the Jonestown atrocity, but they are accountable for it. He states the obvious, that any government or agency is only as good or as bad as the people it employs. And he laments the lack of chain of command in the CIA which is not typical of say, military organizations. But methinks he lets the CIA off too easy, at least for the murder of Leo Ryan. One of the first things a homicide dick does in a murder investigation is to establish a motive. The CIA certainly had the motive to lure Congressman Ryan to Jonestown and to certain death.

> ...(Ryan's) interest in the CIA became the dominant factor in Ryan's life in Washington... (his) concern over the CIA's domestic spy operations was legitimate and well founded. It had been reported that there were more intelligence agents illegally operating in Ryan's San Mateo county and the adjacent Santa Clara County than in all other parts of the United States combined; Washington, D.C. included. The area, dubbed Silicon Valley, had evolved to become the center of high technology in the U.S. and boasted the highest concentration of military and industrial secrets in the world...
>
> ...Ryan, who was a member of the Government Information and Individual Rights Subcommittee, accurately perceived the CIA's presence in California as a threat to the rights of the citizenry. The main problem was that many CIA operatives were violating the law in the pursuit of their work. Innocent citizens were being hurt in the name of national security, and Ryan was concerned.

Meiers notes that several factors encouraged the CIA to break the laws of California. There were no detailed instructions to operatives, after all, and too much was left up to the discretion of individual agents. Besides, in a compartmentalized agency where the need-to-know applies, the right hand usually does care what the left one is doing.

> Many agents believed that their secretive work in U.S. security was above the law and their higher purpose gave them license to break the law. Some thought their work was special, others thought that *they* were special. This egotistical attitude remains a problem to this day.
>
> Also, there were agents who used their cover and contracts to further criminal activities they would have pursued even if they were not employed by the agency. This group was the inevitable criminal element found everywhere...

In 1994, one of our sources reported that organized crime was giving large sums of money to help undermine the CIA which "has taken over drugs, prostitution, pornography, and the slave trade." According to this Don, "Now, we work for them, and we don't like it. There's no honor among them."

If Congressman Leo Ryan had lived, things today would have been different. Almost as soon as he got to Washington Ryan authored the Hughes-Ryan Amendment to the National Assistance Act. It would be the only piece of legislation he would introduce in his six years in Congress. It transferred responsibility for overseeing the CIA from the Armed Forces Committee, which too often turned a blind eye to the agency's activities, to the International Relations Committee of both houses of Congress. The CIA fought the Act mightily and would have succeeded in squelching it had it not been for Ryan's impeccable timing -- Ryan introduced the bill at the height of the Watergate scandal.

> The Hughes-Ryan Amendment passed into law, earning Leo Ryan two distinctions; a seat on the International Relations CIA Oversight Committee and a very prominent position on the CIA's list of enemies..

Ryan's new legislation required the agency to account for all the money it spent for covert operations *after* congressional approval. It was as part of his work on the Committee that Ryan discovered evidence to support the contention that the CIA had sponsored several cults that practiced mind control. He was quoted as saying, "Well, *something* has to be done about those people."

Instead, they did *something* about Congressman Ryan.

THOSE WHO DO NOT
REMEMBER THE PAST
ARE CONDEMNED
TO REPEAT IT.

33

THE FIRE IN WACO

Perhaps not since the *Reichstag* fire in Nazi Germany have flames leaped so visibly onto the pages of history. The flames in both Waco and the Reichstag fires were fueled by mind control. At least that's the impression you get when you read attorney Paul D. Wilcher's letter to Attorney General Janet Reno.

Dated May 21st, 1993 the letter begins with no salutation, the phone numbers of Ms. Reno, Justice Department Communications Director Carl Stern, Appointments Secretary Melilssa Muller, Assistant Attorney General Richard Scruggs, and James Kramarsic, Special Ops — CIA. With a typical lawyerly lack of style the letter begins:

> RE: (1) Vital NEW information concerning the conflagration at David Koresh's Branch Davidian compound, "Ranch Apocalypse," outside Waco, Texas, on Monday, April 19th, 1993, which is now being kept from you and covered up — i.e., that what happened was NOT a "mass suicide," but rather a MASS MURDER.
>
> (2) The meaning and significance of this NEW information — particularly with respect to the Justice Department's ongoing Waco investigation, and future indictments and prosecutions — i.e., *you are headed totally in the WRONG direction (italics are shown as underlinings in the letter)* — because Bush Administration holdovers in the Justice Department, along with others tied to the CIA, are preventing you from ever learning the truth about what actually happened in Waco;
>
> (3) The extreme sensitivity of this information, and my specific proposal as to how you should handle it. *The lives of key participants, other witnesses, and even myself are now in grave danger as a result of my passing this information on to you. If you let this information fall*

> *into the hands of the wrong persons, some or all of those who know the truth about Waco and are now prepared to come forward and testify could well be "silenced" (i.e., MURDERED in the very near futur).*
>
> (4) And the extreme importance of this information to the overall quality of justice under the Clinton Administration, to your own place in history as Attorney General, and to President Clinton's very life and personal safety. *This information,* if handled in the manner I have spelled out in detail below, *presents you and President Clinton with a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity to expose, confront, and hopefully root out much of the system-wide corruption which has been at the core of the federal government for at least the past 30 years.*

The letter then reads:" DEAR ATTORNEY GENERAL RENO" in caps.

> The purpose of this letter... is for me to deliver to you extremely sensitive information about the deaths of the 86 men, women, and children who perished at the Branch Davidian compound on Monday, April 19th, 1993, and the truth about how it all happened.
>
> But even more important, my purpose here is to demonstrate how the Waco tragedy fits into a much bigger (and far uglier) picture, and to present my specific, detailed plan as to how you should attack the overall problem at its root causes.
>
> The plan I am offering here is not at all what you might expect, at first glance, for it is far more comprehensive, and deals with far deeper root causes than you have thus far been made aware of (sic). Indeed, although you may not realize it, you are still surrounded in the Justice Department, the FBI, the BATF and elsewhere throughout the government by Reagan-Bush holdovers many of whom are determined that you will *NEVER* learn about the core issues and ugly truths which I have laid out for you here in some detail..."

Full of hope, and apparently not knowing Janet Reno, Wilcher expressed his optimism that Ms. Reno would use her good office to "attack the system-wide corruption which has been at the core of the federal government for at least the past 30 years, and to bring about the most fundamental and far-reaching changes, in terms of restoring basic honesty and integrity, which have occurred in our national government for at least the past generation."

Wilcher then launched into a long section entitled *WHAT IS THE RIGHT THING TO DO?* The prose is filled with citations of law and excerpts from Reno's own rhetoric. Especially noteworthy is where Wilcher quotes Reno saying: "...sometimes doing the right thing is very politically unpopular, Sometimes it will be painful, for it will, of necessity, hurt someone. But with strength and courage, let us face that question unafraid, and together seek justice for all."

The subject of mind control is introduced on page four when Wilcher writes: "David Koresh had an extensive CIA background... he was known in CIA circles as a "sleeper" — someone who had been subjected to extensive CIA "mind control" training and programming..."

Wilcher said that it was not a coincidence that all these events were occurring in or near Waco, Texas —"since Waco is a major center for such CIA "mind control" experimentation and programming — with much of this activity occurring at the *CIA's Leadership Management Institute* in Waco." Wilcher pointed out that "similar CIA-sponsored "cults" are located across the country including in such places as Salt Lake City, Utah; Provo, Utah; Logan, Utah; Boise, Idaho; and San Francisco, California," and that one or all of these other "cults can likewise 'explode' onto the front pages of the press at any time the CIA deems appropriate, in order to accomplish its pre-determined, hidden, right-wing political agenda."

Wilcher indicated to Reno that he knew who had committed the murders, who had ordered them, and who had been part of the chain of command. He then lapsed into more recitation of Disciplinary Rules and Codes of Professional Responsibility from the American Bar Foundation all of which had bearing on ethical considerations for Reno. In fact he was outlining for Reno reasons why she must begin to weed her own garden in the Justice Department as well as within the Federal Bureau of Investigation and the Bureau of Alcohol Tobacco and Firearms (BATF).

Thoroughly covering the details of the lies told by government employees at Waco, Wilcher wrapped up the motivational part of his argument and launched into a background briefing on events leading to the February 28th BATF raid on the Davidian compound:

> 1) To begin with, Vernon Wayne Howell, also known as David Koresh, had connections to the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA).
>
> 2) Indeed, he *and six (6) of the men in his inner circle were known among CIA covert operatives as "sleepers"* — persons whom the Agency had performed mind control experiments on, and who had been preprogrammed to carry out specific pieces of CIA "dirty business" at some point in the future, once a specific cue or signal was given to them by their contact persons or "handlers" within the Agency.
>
> 3) Third, *David Koresh was very much like the Reverend Jim Jones,* in that he, too, was '*a gangster who used a Bible instead of a gun...*'

In a Note, Wilcher remarked: "Jonestown was NOT a mass suicide, any more than Waco was. Instead, *Jonestown,* like Waco, *was a mass murder* — in order to guarantee that there would be NO survivors to tell about the CIA's extensive mind control experiments which had been performed on those mostly-black victims in Guyana.

The letter resumed:

> 4) Fourth, *David Koresh was also very much like Charlie Manson,* in that he, Jones, and Manson all demanded and received total domination over, and total submission from, all of the men, women, and children in his group.
>
> 5) And *like the Reverend Jim Jones and Charlie Manson, David Koresh likewise had received much of his mind control training at the hands of the CIA,* and was a product of their system.
>
> 6) In other words, David Koresh may have been what most people would consider a thoroughly disgusting, and mentally disturbed, megalomaniac. *But he was the CIA's megalomaniac* — or at least someone they were all to happy to use for their devious right-wing purposes if and when the opportunity ever presented itself.
>
> 7) Indeed, David Koresh and these six (6) other men in his inner circle had apparently been pre-programmed by the CIA to become, on cue, *'Manchurian-Candidate- type' robot assassins.*

Here Wilcher inserted another note:

> This is one of the most crucially important pieces of information concerning this entire scenario. *Koresh and his six (6) fellow 'sleepers' were apparently pre-programmed by the CIA to become 'wind up, use once, then throw away' robot-type assassins — much like:*
>
> *(a) Sirhan B. Sirhan,* the man used as the CIA 'patsy' in the assassination of *Senator Robert Kennedy* on June 5th 1968...
>
> (b) *David Hinckley,* the man used as the CIA 'patsy' in the attempted assassination of *President Ronald Reagan* on March 31, 1981...
>
> 8) The CIA has apparently been able to produce *'Manchurian-Candidate-type' robot assassins* ever since the late 1940's, using methods reminiscent of the 'brain washing' we have all heard about in Soviet (and American) prisoner of war camps and prisons — as well as far more sophisticated and sinister techniques which have been developed and perfected over the intervening years.
>
> 9) One of the most important features of this kind of mind control programming of 'brain washing' is the fact that critical segments of

the subject's memory — including most or all of the programming experience itself — are erased (or at least suppressed and deeply buried), with new false 'memories' implanted into the subjects unconscious mind in their place. Indeed, all of this mind, behavior, and memory alteration is done at the subconscious or unconscious level.

Indeed, once the CIA's programming has been completed, memory blocks are installed into the subject's subconscious mind to make it next-to-impossible for him ever to recover these critical mind- and behavior-altering experiences from his internal memory bank.

Therefore, since he is unable to remember what was done to him — or when, where, how, or under what circumstances it happened — he is also virtually helpless to confront and overcome what his CIA programmers have done to him. he is thus at their 'mercy' from then on — though, of course, they have *NO* mercy.

10) Then, at some time in the future, upon being given a specific secret signal — known in advance only to his CIA 'handlers' and his subconscious mind, and which to any untrained person (such as a husband, wife, coworker, etc.) would be overlooked as being totally innocuous — he will automatically revert back to carrying out whatever behavior he has been pre-programmed to perform on cue — nearly always some violent or criminal act against a person or group the CIA has targeted for destruction. At least, that's how such mind control programming is supposed to work.

11) It is also important to note that such mind control programming generally includes one or more pre-programmed 'self-destruct' responses, so that the subject can be ordered by his handlers to commit 'suicide' — again, as a kind of mindless, trance-like, robotic response which he would not even be *consciously* aware he was being ordered to do, or that he was actually carrying out, until it was too late to save him — if and when his handlers ever deem it necessary for him *NOT* to be available for questioning by persons who might be able to uncover the truth about his secret programming and/or what tasks he had been pre-programmed to perform in his trance-like robotic state.

These 'self-destruct' responses would typically be triggered by the subject's handlers once he had successfully performed his preassigned mission, or once that mission had been called off or altered — or under any other scenario under which he would no longer be of any value to the Agency — as a way of protecting his handlers, and the Agency itself, from any exposure, liability or accountability — under what is called 'plausible deniability.'

> David Koresh's psychological profile, however, showed him *NOT* to be a person ever likely to commit suicide.

Wilcher went on to cover the programming of Candy Jones and the death of George DeMohrenschildt, much as it has been covered in this book before. He also devotes a number of pages to the CIA's use of D.C. Police and U.S. Park Service Officers to cover what Wilcher says were CIA covert operations in which six black men were murdered in Pershing Park, two blocks from the White House. These pages are all worth reading, but due to space considerations I have deleted them. We pick up the letter again after that:

> 16) *Mind Control and Memory Blocks to Ease the Consciences of the CIA's PROFESSIONAL killers:*
>
> Thus far, we have been discussing mind control and memory blocks in the context of the CIA's *'Manchurian- Candidate-type' robot assassins* — those low-level individuals — like Sirhan Sirhan, David Hinckley, Mark David Chapman (who assassinated the Beatles' lead singer/songwriter John Lennon), and the six (6) Black men murdered in Pershing Park — persons who are programmed by the Agency to be used only once then 'thrown away' and discarded — i.e., persons who are destined either to be killed or imprisoned for the rest of their lives, once they have performed their pre-ordained secret mission.
>
> In other words, these low-level individuals are highly expendable — particularly when getting rid of them will preserve the *'plausible deniability'* that the Agency had anything to do with their training, conduct, or activities.
>
> In the context of these low-level individuals, the mind control programming we have been discussing is used not only to condition the desired robotic response to a pre-ordained secret signal, but also to prevent the subject from remembering anything to do with their training, conduct, or activities.
>
> In the context of these low-level individuals, the mind control programming we have been discussing is used not only to condition the desired robotic response to a pre-ordained secret signal, but also to prevent the subject from remembering anything about the conditioning and programming experience, so that he is virtually helpless to counteract or overcome it — without many years of deep hypnosis and therapy — as in the case of Candy Jones...
>
> There is, however, a totally different category of covert operatives employed by the CIA — *the real PROFESSIONAL killers* — who are used for multiple high-level, top secret missions, over an entire lifetime. These top-level 'black' operatives are generally men of extraordinary intelligence, education, talent, training, and experience,

> and *it is into their hands that most of the real 'dirty work' of the Agency — including top-level assassinations — is entrusted.*
>
> For example, the Agency will use a low-level programmed robot — like a SIrhan SIrhan or a David Hinckley — to be the 'patsy' for a top-level assassination, or assassination attempt (like the murder and attempted murder of Senator Robert Kennedy and President Reagan, respectively). But they rarely entrust the task of actually pulling the trigger in such a high-profile case to such a low-level 'cut-out.'
>
> Instead, the real work in such top-level assassinations is carried out *only* by the Agency's true PROFESSIONAL killers — persons who are *NOT used* just once and then discarded, but who, instead, are used over and over again, year in and year out, for nearly all of the Agency's most secret and sensitive 'dirty work.'
>
> 'Wet' Ops: Such 'dirty work' is generally referred to, among 'black' operatives within the Agency, as *'wet' operations — operations where one or more persons are to be killed, where human blood is to be spilled.*
>
> *"DEBRIEFINGS AFTER CIA 'WET' OPERATIONS*
>
> The normal procedure is that after each 'black' or 'wet' operation, all persons participating in or connected with the operation are totally debriefed by a special debriefing team sent from Agency headquarters — including a psychiatrist skilled in the various mind control and memory block techniques we have been discussing.
>
> In this debriefing, each member of the 'wet' team is required to recite to the debriefing team exactly what happened during the operation, in a precise, step-by-step, detailed manner. Each member's recitation is generally repeated several times — once normally, once under hypnosis, once with a polygraph, and once under scopolamine — and only when the debriefers are fully satisfied that they have gotten *ALL* the details and that there are no glaring inconsistencies between these different recitations, is the debriefing brought to a close.
>
> Part of the reason for this debriefing process is to provide detailed records and feedback to the Agency concerning all of these top-level 'black' and 'wet' operations — i.e., Precisely what was done? Was the operation a 'success'? Did it go off as planned? What mistakes, if any, were made? And what improvements can be made so that on succeeding operations, the task at hand can be accomplished even more professionally and expeditiously.

Wilcher inserts another note stating that his point cannot be overstated:

> ...this means that deep within the bowels of the Central Intelligence Agency — if you only know where to look — you can find the detailed debriefing records on all of the 'black' and 'wet' operations carried out by the CIA over the past 30 years or so.
>
> *You should subpoena these records immediately, Attorney General Reno.* And once you get them — *IF* you ever get them — you should put them under the tightest security imaginable to protect them from being tampered with or destroyed."

It's hard to believe that someone who could write a letter which contains the information this one does would be so naive as to not understand how successful the cryptocracy has been under the National Security Act. Wilcher appeared ignorant of the extent of the cryptocracy's indoctrination. It has gotten virtually everyone in Congress and the Judicial and the executive to support it so that it can hide behind the tacit agreement among politicians that the security of this nation does not lie with the people, but with a secret government.

Summing up his comments on the "wet" debriefing process, Wilcher wrote:

> Then, at the conclusion of the debriefing, once the debriefers are confident they have gotten *ALL* of the factual details, each operative is put under deep hypnosis, and the psychiatrist in the team implants *memory blocks* into his subconscious memory:
>
> (a) first, to make it far more difficult for him to remember what he and his other 'wet' team members did during the operation — i.e., to block many of the gorey details as to precisely how each of the persons targeted for 'elimination ' was 'taken out' (i.e., murdered) — so that he will be less likely to be troubled by recurring nightmares concerning what he and his team members have just done; and
>
> (b) second, to alleviate the guilt which would otherwise be associated with these memories, and to allow him to justify in his mind, to the extent he is able to remember what happened, that what he and his fellow team members did was 'praise-worthy' rather than highly criminal — i.e., that the person or persons they murdered were a 'menace' to society and deserve to die, and that he was doing this country a valuable service by eliminating these 'targets' from society.
>
> Of course, these memories of what he and his fellows have done on these various 'wet' operations are never completely erased, and can, with work, be fully recovered (barring physical damage to the brain). But at least these mental blocks make it easier for the operative to live with himself and his conscience, and help to keep these vivid

> and gorey images from flooding into his consciousness, and becoming obsessive thoughts and recurring nightmares.
>
> These memory blocks are also a way for the operative to justify his having acted as the targets' accuser, prosecutor, judge, jury, and executioner — all in one fell swoop, without the target's having been given the benefit of *ANY* due process whatsoever — i.e., *NO* notice, *NO* hearing, *NO* right to confront and cross-examine his accusers, *NO* right to put on a defense, *NO* right to testify personally or call witnesses in his behalf, and *NO* right to be tried before an honest judge and a jury of his peers, according to the laws and the Constitution of the United States.
>
> These memory blocks thus help the operative to suppress all these troubling thoughts which might otherwise disturb his waking hours or his restful sleep — thoughts which might otherwise force him to re-examine his calling as one of the CIA's top professional killers, and to consider seriously whether he ought to pursue some other line of work.

In discussing the pros and cons of "wet" operations, Wilcher revealed the extent to which he, himself, had bought into the "myth of National Security." He said that there may be some argument in favor of such 'wet' operations to take out foreign agents. Overlooking the glaring historical reality that whenever a "good" civilization employed ruthless and immoral tactics of an "evil" enemy civilization to fight it, those tactics eventually came to be applied at home against the people, and the "good" nation became as "evil" as the one it was fighting. Islam teaches that the greatest war is always the war one fights within. The result of sinking to the level of the enemy has always been, both in the sphere of geopolitics as well as in the singular life of an individual, self defeat. Or as Pogo said, "I have seen the enemy and the enemy is us."

Wilcher did argue, however, that he could see no excuse for using '"wet" operations to take out innocent American men, women and children such as the 85 who were killed at the Branch Davidian compound.

Returning to the letter at point 17, Wilcher wrote:

> The point to be made here is that *David Koresh and his 6 fellow 'sleepers' were low-level 'Machurian-Candiate-type' programmed robot assassins* — who were scheduled to be used at some point in the future, but who had NOT been used for their pre-ordained secret missions —
>
> Note Well: whereas *the 'wet' team that went in to 'take them out' were some of the CIA's top professional killers.*
>
> The term 'sleeper' in this context connotes:

> (a) that the mind control programming which had been done on Koresh and his inner circle had probably been done a number of years earlier;
>
> (b) that the secret instructions implanted deep into their subconscious memories had lain dormant over the intervening years;
>
> (c) that the CIA now had to arouse Koresh and the other 6 from their 'sleep' — i.e., to reactivate the secret conditioned responses implanted into their subconscious memories — in order to get them to perform their pre-ordained secret missions on cure, wherever the CIA deemed it appropriate; and
>
> (d) that the CIA could also activate the secret 'self-destruct' signal, discussed on pages 20 to 22 above, to cause the robotic 'suicides' of Koresh and his inner circle, one they had been (sic) performed their secret mission, or at any other time the CIA decided they were no longer of any use to the Agency.

Wilcher then went on to discuss Koresh's enormous stockpile of weapons, saying that he believes the arms were accumulated with the apparent knowledge and consent of the CIA over a period of several years. Wilcher believed that Koresh had acquired the arsenal for a specific purpose which was not just self defense, but rather for the purpose of carrying out whatever secret assignments they were to be given by their CIA 'handlers."

He said the reason Koresh was so skilled in controlling his followers was that he and the other five "sleeper agents" in his inner circle had been through such intensive and total mind control programming themselves. It is not clear whether he presumes they had been totally or partially deprogrammed along the way so that they could remember their programming codes, cues and triggers. Without them, and without full recall and extensive deprogramming the fact that they had been through such a process would be of no use to their "conscious" minds.

Wilcher says that the reason behind the original raid by the BATF on February 28th was "*not* to *surprise* Koresh, or to take him *peacefully*. The purpose was to be as heavy handed, and as *UN*subtle, as possible — so that Koresh and his fellow "sleepers' could not possibly miss the message: "Either shape up and get back into line, or 'take you out' — i.e., 'WE WILL KILL YOU."

In the letter to Reno, Wilcher said that the message the cryptocracy wanted to give was not for the six "sleepers" within the compound, but to others who might be getting out of line elsewhere:

"Be prepared to carry out the orders we will give you, exactly as you have been pre-programmed to do, or you and all your loved ones will have hell to pay for your disobedience."

Wilcher makes note of what others were also to independently note, that in the ensuing siege of the Branch Davidian compound there were certain BATF agents who were targeted to be killed. Linda Thompson's video of the Waco siege shows four ATF agents being killed by a fifth agent after they've crawled into a window from the roof.

Wilcher told Reno that Waco was an important tool of a psyops campaign waged against the American people. "The bottom line here," he said, "is that this propaganda we were being fed by the CIA was to ***pave the way for a general acceptance of the imposition of martial law*** when situations like this 'get out of hand' which is the way the CIA wants us to view its 51-day siege of the Branch Davidian compound in Waco."

Maintaining that the main purpose of the Waco attack by the BATF was "to control the subconscious minds and wills of Koresh and his followers", Wilcher told Reno that a variety of technologies were used over the entire 51-day siege following the initial February 28th raid. The news reported some of the psyops aspects of the siege accurately. They made no secret that the FBI was shining high-powered spotlights onto the compound at night and bombarding it with various kinds of sounds like "acid rock music, Tibetan chants, Christmas songs" and so forth. It was obviously meant to annoy and deprive the people inside the compound of sleep. The news accounts quoted the FBI spokesmen as saying that if the sounds worked the inhabitants of Apocalypse Ranch would become more pliable to the FBI's demands to surrender peacefully and there would be no loss of life. Wilcher told Reno the truth was far different:

> ...these incessant loud and obnoxious noises... were merely the cover ... for what was really bombarding the compound and its occupants — *20 gigahertz microwave transmissions,* designed to be as stressful and destructive to the human physiology, inner ear, psyche, and mental stability as possible.
>
> In short, the CIA has perfected the use of such high-intensity microwave transmissions on human subjects to such an extent they are absolutely certain that over time, *such transmissions are beyond the ability of most human beings to endure,* and that sooner or later, *they will drive any normal person crazy — literally* — or provoke him or her to suicide or murder.
>
> One example of the CIA's use of the high-intensity microwave transmissions on a human subject occurred during the U.S. invasion of Panama, when General Manuel Noriega fled to the Vatican Embassy for sanctuary. What the press reported was that the military bombarded the Vatican Embassy with very loud acid rock "music." What they didn't tell us was that ... 'music' was, again, only the mask to cover what was really being beamed at General Noriega — these

> same density microwave transmissions (are) known to be beyond the limits of most human beings to endure — at least over any extended period of time.

"And remember," Wilcher wrote, "that at the Branch Davidian compound, these high-intensity microwave transmissions continued, almost without interruption, day and night, throughout the entire length of the 51-day siege — and that *there were more than 20 children in the compound all this time!*

"No wonder you were concerned about the gross mistreatment of these children, Attorney General Reno!" Wilcher wrote. "But what the Reagan and Bush holdovers in the Justice Department, FBI, and BATF failed to tell you was that *it was our own FBI and CIA who were responsible for mistreating these children — through these high-intensity microwave transmissions bombarding the compound for 51 days!"*

Apparently what no one told Wilcher was, with the cryptocracy in control of the public consciousness there is nothing but "holdovers" from one administration to another. In fact, it doesn't matter whether a Democrat or a Republican is in the White House. Whoever is there, occupies it with the consent of the cryptocracy. This goes for appointees as well, Janet Reno included.

"Also included in these bombarding transmissions," Wilcher wrote, "were Nero-Linguistic Programming (NLP) and other subliminal messages designed to reach the subconscious minds of Koresh and his 6 fellow 'sleepers,' in order to reassert the CIA's mind control over them, and to make them more pliant and obedient to the CIA's commands and domination..."

(The reader is advised to obtain Genie Laborde's landmark book on NLP entitled *Influencing With Integrity*, by Syntony Press, or any of Anthony Robbins works to gain a balanced view of this emerging science.)

Wilcher's letter to Reno maintains that the original plan behind the siege of Koresh's compound (which we assume he got from his informants who were ready to come forward) was to have *"The Delta Force" make* a night raid on the compound. *The Delta Force* is no secret. It is an elite commando style military unit composed of specially trained members of the Army, Navy, Air Force, and Marines, operating under the command of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the CIA. Delta was to apply the elements of surprise and lightning-quick speed for which they are especially trained, to bring everyone out alive except for David Koresh and his six fellow "CIA sleepers."

"Those seven men," Wilcher wrote Reno, *"were to be killed — no questions asked — period."*

"You have reported to the nation, Attorney General Reno," Wilcher reminded her," that you met with President Clinton on Sunday, April 18th, and that after outlining the plan you had given to him, and going over it in some detail, he told you to go ahead — *IF YOU THOUGHT THIS WAS THE RIGHT THING TO DO.* (Wilcher's caps.)

> You have also reported to the nation that having given the ultimate go ahead for the plan, you (and President Clinton) are the ones ultimately responsible for what happened in Waco on Monday, April 19th, 1993.
>
> That, however, is simply *NOT* true, Attorney General Reno. What happened in Waco is *NOT* your fault. Nor is it President Clinton's fault. For, the Reagan and Bush holdovers at the Justice Department, the FBI, the BATF, and the CIA, etc., who carefully planned and orchestrated this disaster, never informed you as to what their secret right-wing political agenda was in all this. Therefore, neither you nor President Clinton had any idea what had actually been planned for this operation in Waco — much less any hint of the secret agenda which was to be served by this mass murder and cover up to protect the criminal machinations of the CIA.

Here, we think ,Wilcher was wrong again in his assumption that the occupants of the oval office and their appointees are not part of the cryptocracy (until the National Security Act is repealed and the cryptocracy weeded out or overthrown).

But to continue with Wilcher's letter in which his "sources" have informed him on the details of events that, if true, only insiders could have known.

On the 18th the Parkland Hospital in Dallas was alerted to be prepared to receive a large number of serious burn victims from Waco the following day.

On the morning of the 19th Delta Force commandos were on alert, ready to carry out the first plan, had it been approved. Wilcher said that this was not just an ordinary Delta team, but a special team of select CIA professional killers trained to accomplish a mass murder so that it could be covered up to look like a Jonestown style mass suicide.

This Delta Force team was composed of 15 men, Wilcher said, headed by a Lieutenant Colonel who was a CIA liaison officer. They flew into Texas on their own C-130 belonging to *"Triangle"*. Of the 15 men there were two 4-man teams, the one which actually made the insertion into the compound and a backup team, which apparently was never used. The team wore black, and looked like all the other FBI officers on the ground.

The nation watched on CNN that morning as the M1-A1 tanks punched holes in the exterior walls of the compound's living quarters. What was not visible was the gas that was pumped into the compound, gas which the press later reported to be tear gas .

> This *tear gas,* had been designed to be used for crowd control — i.e., it was so virulent and irritating that even in a fresh air, *out-of-doors* situation, it was guaranteed to cause people to flee from its presence instantly simply in order to be able to breathe...
>
> Now, it was being used in a *closed, indoor,* living quarters situation where 95 men, women, and children were trapped inside. The logical expectation would have been that all 95 of these persons would have fled out-of-doors *instantly,* just to be able to breathe. But strangely, *not a single person came out of the compound — even after this noisome substance had been poured into the compound in enormous quantities over a period of several hours.*
>
> The logical question therefore arises, *Why?* Why did not *ANY* of these 95 men, women, and children — particularly, the women and their children — instantly flee for fresh air into the out of doors?

The answer given by the FBI spokesman and repeated by the newsmedia was that Koresh and his church members had outfitted themselves with gas masks. Wilcher told Reno that the reason the Davidians inside the compound didn't flee was because the tear gas contained a neuro toxin — "*NERVE GAS* — a virulent poisonous substance like *curare* — which *instantly paralyzed* and rendered totally helpless and defenseless all of the 95 men, women, and children inside the compound — except for those 9, later rescued... For all the others, *they could no longer coordinate their muscles in the effort required even just to get up,* much less to flee to the life-sustaining fresh air outside, only a few feet away."

Wilcher inserted a note after this set off, in wider margins. He wrote:

> This is an extremely serious matter, Attorney General Reno. For it means that here the U.S. military, the FBI, and the Justice Department -- all directed by the CIA -- used nerve gas on innocent men, women, and children in our civilian population -- and then proceeded to murder them in cold blood, as is set forth in detail below. This clearly rises to the level of War Crimes on a civilian population during peace time, an unspeakable human rights violation.
>
> And it was commited by our "intelligence" community against innocent men, women, and children -- simply to bury the truth concerning the CIA's criminal use of mind control programming to "manufacture" *Manchurian Candidate type robot assassins,* whose very existence is an unspeakable outrage, in and of itself.

According to Wilcher, after the tear gas/nerve gas combination had time to do its paralyzing work on the men, women and children in the compound, a four-man "Delta Force" team, some of the CIA's top profesional assassins, made its entry into the compound after they were dropped onto the roof by one of the low-flying, heavily armed military helicopters which hovered overhead most of the day. With TV cameras focused on the tanks, the actual insertion into the building came at approximately 10:25 AM.

> Before they entered the compound... this 4-man team of assassins had received shots of *atropine*, the antidote to the nerve gas, so that they, too would NOT be overcome and paralyzed by it.

Wilcher's letter says that the first thing the team did once it was inside the building was to subdue and kill David Koresh by putting a single bullet in the middle of his forehead about an inch above his eyes. The bullet was fired from about four inches away.

Relevent to this claim is an article in *The Washington Post*, on Tuesday, May 18th, 1993. The article quotes forensic pathologist, Dr. Cyril H. Wecht of Pittsburg, who completed an independent autopsy of the bodies of David Koresh and one of his chief lieutenants, Steve Schneider. Wecht said that the gunshot wound in the middle of the forehead which killed Koresh, and the gunshot wound in the back of the head of Schneider, were "not typical of suicide."

Note also that the FBI's psychological profile of Koresh showed him not to be suicidal. Wilcher points out that the FBI (thorough the CIA) had access to all of the relevant information on him --

> -- dating back to, and including, his programming to become one of the CIA's *Manchurian Candidate type robot assassins.* They must have known, even that early on, that the normal "self-destruct" programmed response implanted into the subconscious psyche of most CIA "sleepers" would not work on Koresh.
>
> Consider also the point made by a teenage girl, on the NBC Nightly News, Tueday, May 4th, 1993, who had been a member of the Branch Davidian cult in Waco until shortly before the April 19th disaster. She stated in this interview that all of the children in the compound were repeatedly girlled by Koresh on precisely how to commit suicide -- either by taking cyanide poison, or by gunshot. But she said *Koresh always insisted that you must put the gun IN YOUR MOUTH before pulling the trigger.* "If you put the gun to your temple, there is always the danger that you might survive (as a vegetable)."

The New York Times, May 5th, 1993, reported that two-thirds of the bodies autopsied had bullet wounds in them which examiners said had been inflicted after the date of the initial BATF raid on February 28th. The same article stated that 17 of the children were killed by means of poisonous injections. Wilcher goes on to say:

> ...Although I have no specific information on that point, all my other information -- including the fact that everyone else in the building, except those 9 who had been targeted to be saved -- were paralyzed by the nerve gas and thus had been rendered incapable of moving at all -- strongly suggests that these children were likewise "taken out" by this CIA "wet" team.

Wilcher went on to say that the fires were fueled by White Phosphorous, one of the most rearsome incendiary devices imaginable, and a favorite of "wet" teams. It ignites instantly, burning immediately with a white hot intensity which consumes everything beyond all recognition, destroying all possible forensic evidence in its path. Wilcher said:

> CIA "wet" teams have also been known to corner their intended targets into a closed quarter, and then throw "Willie Peter" (White phosphorous) into their midst, so that these victims were instantly immolated right before the team's eyes. The fire which "Willie Peter" produces is so intense, and the combustion so complete, that victims -- as was the case in Waco -- can only be identified by their dental records...
>
> ...while the "wet" team did kill many of those inside the compound prior to setting the fires... they apparently did not murder all of the 86 men, women, and chilfen who ultimately died in the tragedy -- meaning that many of those who died were left paralyzed by the nerve gas, unable to get up or free themselves from this disaster in progress, and were thus consigned to being consumed alive in the giant conflagration brought on by the white phosphorous.
>
> And those consigned to this horrible fiery fate -- being burned alive -- apprently included men, women, and children.

Wilcher inserts another note for emphasis, totalling up the number of men women and children (86) murdered in the compound on that Monday, April 19th, 1993 at the hands of 4 Delta Force members. He naively tries to let Attorney General Reno and President Clinton off the hook saying that other "high ranking officials in our government ... including senior Reagan and Bush Administration holdovers in the Justice Department, the FBI, the BATF, the Pentagon, and the CIA -- all knew in advance" that this Waco operation was designed from the start to be a mass murder in which only those few individuals whom the CIA had targeted in advance would be saved.

Pointing out the importance of mind control to the cryptocracy Wilcher wrote:

> ...one of the uses the CIA makes of its mind control sophistication is to implant *memory blocks* into the subconscious memories of its top professional assassins -- in order to allow them to live with what they have done, and *not* to be overcome by flashbacks and nightmares of their "handiwork."
>
> *NOTE WELL:* I have been informed that those *memory blocks are NOT holding very well in this instance* -- and that *some or all of the four members of this particular "wet" team are sickened by what they were ordered to do,* and what they did, in fact, "accomplish," in Waco on April 19th. To these hardened, seasoned, professional assassins, *it was all "too easy." The people inside the compound (*as a result of the nerve gas) *simply "never had a chance."*

It would appear that some of the contacts Wilcher had were among these Delta Force assassins, and twelve others (16 in all) who, were ready to come forward and testify about what happened inside the compound.

Wilcher spoke of a "Shadow Government" which used the CIA to achieve its own ends. He said that it was responsible for the murder of John F. Kennedy and 175 or more key witnesses to his assassination; Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. and a number of witnesses to his murder; Senator Robert F. Kennedy, and witnesses; Malcolm X, J. Edgar Hoover and his close associate Tolson in the midst of the "Watergate" scandal, Martha Mitchell, Senator John Tower, Senator John Heinz, Congressman Ted Weiss and John Lennon. He also said that the attempt on the life of President Ronald Regan was engineered by this "Shadow Government", of which the identity of leader would be revealed to Reno by the sixteen covert operatives who wished to come forward.

Wilcher went on to say that the "October Surprise" caper was "treason by which George Bush, Ronald Reagan, and a select group of present and former CIA covert operatives rigged, and thus stole, the 1980 U.S. Presidential Election on November 4th, 1980. He claimed 50 or so witnesses were murdered over the years, witnesses "who could have testified as to the truth of what actually happened in the "*October Surprise*" and Iran -Contra scandals.

He called this "Shadow Government" "the mother of all corruption. "...for the tentacles of this giant *RICO* conspiracy extend all across our nation and reached into all levels and functions of the federal government." He said:

> ...this "*Shadow Government*" operates those functions of governemnt which it controls in the same manner that organized crime uses to run its myriad criminal racketeering enterprises.
>
> Indeed, that is the whole point here -- that this "*Shadow Government*" conducts the business of government, NOT in an open, honest, legitimate, and forthright manner, according to the laws, Constitution, and democratic principles of the United States, but rather in a secret, clandestine, and utterly illegal manner, as if they were running a criminal racketeering enterprise...

He pointed to the "wholesale theft of billions and billions of dollars from the Savings & Loans Associations and banks of this country by the "Intelligence" community, saying that:

> -- the proceeds of this massive thievery largely (was) used to fund the illegal "black" operations... (which involved) *illegal gun running* (out of this country), *iillegal drug smuggling* (back into this country), *and illegal money laundering* (in both directions) -- all on a massive scale by the "intelligence" community ...

Other than the testimony of Wilcher's client Gunther Russbacher, there is evidence that Koresh was the subject of hypontic programming and used it himself on members of his church. Among other telltale signs of mind control, Koresh's songs and sermons contained obvious phonetic embeds, like those used in hypnoprogramming.

Phonetic embeds are a linguistic phenomenon where words are embedded inside other words in such a way that no one could deny thay are there. Few laymen, however, would admit that these mere words can influence behavior. Professionals however know that, if the subliminal meanings make sense, they can reinforce the surface meanings and produce powerful behavioral effects. As one scholar quipped, "The alphabet creates the infinite regress."

Much of the research done on phonetic embeds has been done by scholars studying James Joyce's *Finnegan's Wake.* David Koresh's letter of January 30, 1987, while hardly equal to Joyce's masterwork in which nearly every word is a phonetic embed, was full of linguistic embeds, like those used in hypnosis:

> I have seven eyes and seven horns. My name is the whirred of God, and I ride on a white, horse. I am here on earth to give you the Seventh Angel's message. I have ascended from the east with the seal of the living god. My name is Cyrus, and I am here to destroy Babylon. I have come in a way that is contrary to preconceived ideas. I will reprove you for your world loving.

> I will scould your daughters for their nakedness and pride that they parade in my Father's house, and by my angels I will strip them naked before all eyes because of their foolish pride. The young men will abuse my kindness. They will take my life but I will arise and take theirs forever more. Your minister's will lament your foolishness. Your lost flock will tear you to pieces. PREPARE TO MEET THY GOD.
>
> -- David Koeresh

Paul Wilcher tried to meet with Attorney General Janet Reno on May 5th, 1993 for a confidential conversation. Unable to see the Attorney General, he was instead seen by assistant U.S. Attorney Zipperstein.

Obviously frustrated by the sluggish bureaucratic response, on May 21st, 1993, Paul Wilcher sent the 105 page letter to Attorney General Reno. TV correspondent Sarah McClendon describe it as "very eloquent". Other than revealing that covert operatives were wanting to come forward with the truth about Waco and other secret government operations, in it was the urgent plea on the first page:

> "...The lives of key participants, other witnesses, and even myself are now in grave danger as a result of my passing this information on to you. If you let this information fall into the hands of the wrong persons, some or all of those who know the truth about Waco and are prepared to come forward and testify could well be "silenced" (i.e., MURDERED) in the very near future..."

Paul Wilcher's body was found on the toilet. He had bled extensively from the colon. An autopsy was performed by a Dr. Kim who declared his findings as: "No cause of death". The morgue called the Washington D.C. Medical Examiner's office. The office sent tissue samples and Wilcher's organs to the Armed Forces Institute of Pathology at Walter Reed Army Medical Center.

Why Walter Reed? Because it is the location of directed energy biomedical research. The body was quickly cremated.

Talk on the *cybersam* was that Wilcher had been targeted by a highly amplified infrasound beam. One report from the scene described Wilcher's blood as "being expelled from the colon while the body was being removed." This description is consistent with internal organ rupture.

Host of a mind control forum on Genie, guerilla journalist Rita Hill informed the world about her friend Paul Wilcher (quoted with permission):

"Attorney Paul Wilcher died where he lived: Washington D.C. His apartment was in a brick building in Northeast Washington in an agreeable neighborhood in a city known for disagreements. In the early afternoon of June 23rd, 1993, a two person NBC video crew arrived at the 637 Third Street N.E. address. White House correspondent Sarah McClendon was on the scene soon after. The body had been removed two hours before, however, and no members of the news media would be allowed to enter the Wilcher home on this Wednesday.

"The Washington D.C. police had contacted the FBI at about noon. Assistant Special Agent in Charge, James Desarno, seven other FBI agents, and a CIA agent would survey the location before dusk. By the next day, the forensic evidence in the apartment, his notes, papers, and the files in his personal computer, had all been cleaned out.

Although more than nine federal agents "investigated" the crime scene, the FBI claimed they were not interested in pursuing the matter. News media coverage was nonexistent, while the Internet ran rife with speculation.

One of Wilcher's clients was none other than Gunther Russbacher, a key figure in the Inslaw scandal.

Hill continued: "Gunther Russbacher had been a "deep black" CIA covert operative and, in 1993, was a prisoner in Missouri. Over the previous three years, Wilcher had become Russbacher's lawyer, and was increasingly confided in by the spymaster.

"In the immoral chess game of international espionage, Russbacher had become Grand Champion. He has been viewed by various people as: a scoundrel, a martyr, a patriot, a traitor, an assassin, a hero, or all of the aforementioned..."

In his letter to the Attorney General, Wilcher had written:

> My client here is Gunther Karl Russbacher, a life-long covert operative for the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence ("ONI") who has operated at the highest levels of both of these super-secret organizations over the past 30 and 25 years, respectively.
>
> Because of his extremely high intelligence,his exceptional physical skills, his extensive training, his fluency in 8 languages, his proficiency as one of the CIA's top pilots and marksmen, and the fact that his father was one of the original founders (along with William Casey, "Wild Bill" Donovan, and others) of the Central Intelligence Agency, back in 1947, Gunther has always operated at the highest levels of these "intelligence" organizations, and has been entrusted with carrying out some of their most difficult, sensitive, and top secret covert operations."

"The best yardstick for a character as complex as Russbacher," Hill continued,"may be the measure of his familiars. Two who are well known are Mikhail Gorbachev and Admiral Robert Inman. The less famous include his wife, Rayelan, expose writer Rodney Stich, and the late Paul Wilcher. All people from different backgrounds, with strong principles, and a willingness to make great sacrifices for those principles. Because of the Iran/Contra scandal, Admiral Inman resigned from the CIA in 1986. This was an unprecedented action for any high-ranking CIA officer, let alone the Director of the Office of Naval Intelligence. It was as unprecedented as Gorbachev's initiatives: Glasnost and Peristroika.

"By the late 1980s, America's intelligence community had become divided by scandals as well as by the Cold War's *raison d'tre* (or lack thereof). As a CIA operative in this new scenario, Russbacher found himself in no-man's-land. In 1989 he married Raye Allan. The widow of Navy physicist John Dyer, she had written newsletter articles critical of the CIA. Gunther was arrested shortly after their marriage, and was incarcerated in one of the many increasingly harsh prisons he would occupy over the next four plus years.

"On the evening of April 30, 1991, Russbacher missed a helicopter flight from Alameda, California to Fort Ord, California. He said someone drugged his coffee, causing him to miss the flight. After the helicopter exploded, he started telling his story.

"Journalists and concerned citizens listened for hours on end, as the darkest secrets of the CIA were revealed in great detail: There had truly been an "October Surprise" deal by the Reagan/Bush people in 1980 to keep 52 Americans hostage in Teheran until Reagan became President. The CIA had indeed participated in the looting of the S&Ls. Yes, the Agency did use directed energy mind control on people it wanted to control. And on, and on, and on.

"For speaking up, Russbacher was tortured while in prison. Talk radio personality Dave Emory[219] relayed one incident: "His cellmate began not only throwing up blood, but defecating blood in extremes," Emory said. "Literally spewing blood out of both ends of his anatomy."

" If that incident had been a warning, it had not seemed to break Gunther's resolve. Later, in Missouri, he endured three separate heart attacks, but kept on talking," Hill said.

"Directed energy weapons can cause both heart attacks and internal organ ruptures," Hill explained.

The January/ February, 1989 issue of *Bioelectro magnetics Society Newsletter* stated that Walter Reed's Department of Microwave Research had acquired the hardware needed to test the biologic effects of high power, pulsed microwaves by 1987. It revealed that such microwave energy "penetrates all organ systems of the body and thus puts every organ system at risk."

---

[219] Dave Emory, *ARCHIVES ON AUDIO*, P.O. Box 170023, San Francisco, Ca. 94117-0023

Under a subheading of "Cardiovascular Effects Research", the report continued: "...the team has obtained evidence that a "non-thermal" effect postulated several years ago does, in fact, occur and must be considered as potentially serious." In November, 1993, Dr. John Brisker, of the U.S. Army Research Laboratory, was slated to make a presentation promoting weapons based on this research. The exhibition was entitled: *High Powered Microwave Technology.*

"Whether or not David Koresh's Branch Davidians were planning to execute a quasi-military operation, as national security spokespeople would have us believe," Hill continued,"the real tragedy of Waco is how these people were set-up. Since at least the 1950s and PROJECT ARTICHOKE, the CIA has had available mind control (brainwashing) techniques as a way to create agent provocateurs. These people would be hypnotized to perform Agency dirty work upon receiving a pre-programmed signal. The intelligence community refers to such subjects as sleepers. In the last two decades, the CIA has increasingly used microwaves, transmitting cues directly into the subconscious minds of their sleepers. The FBI admitted discussing the use of such technology on Koresh. This was published in a July,1993 article in *Defense Electronics* by Mark Tapscott.

" Paul Wilcher heard that Koresh and six others Branch Davidians were sleepers on March 11, 1993," Hill said. "Wilcher's letter shows a high degree of confidence in the information he received about Waco.

"At least one of Wilcher's contacts says that all four members of the Delta Force team have been assassinated, along with many of their family members," Hill said.

"One year after the Waco fire, (at the time of this writing) America's mainstream news media are no closer to exposing what government agencies and/or Branch Davidians were up to, than on the day that the Mt. Carmel Center burned to the ground," Hill said. " If ignorance is the middle ground between lies and the truth, perhaps this is an accomplishment."

Laurette Hern, a listener to one of my radio interviews sent me a page from *Subterranean Worlds* by Walter Kafton-Minkel. It tells of Cyrus Teed who was born in 1839 in New York. He had a vision and believed himself to be the second coming of Christ. He found that his name Cyrus in Hebrew was KORESH. He founded a cult and moved the colony that formed -- several hundred people -- to Ft. Myers, Florida. This Koresian cult bought 6,000 acres of land and were beginning to pose a political threat to the established politicians in the county when a hurricane blew the colony away.

Ms. Hern wrote: " I believe David Koresh was a mind control experiment (by one of our government's 'intelligence' divisions) and Koresh's maniacal programmer used a previously little known religious sect as a model for a fun scenario. I believe the experiment possibly got out of control and had to be terminated. No body could be found for autopsy as it would reveal an implant.

"Another interesting coincidence," Hern wrote, "is that David Koresh named his son Cyrus."

On November 16th and 17th, 1993, a "Non-lethal Weapons Conference" was held at Johns Hopkins University. Here, for the first time, proponents of directed energy, and other exotic weapons, were compelled to present their cases publicly. Many of the participating laboratories were closed in the succeeding year, but many other projects were scheduled at other labs.

The lawsuit generated such unfavorable publicity that Teed decided to carry his teachings to the world at large instead of small towns. So he moved his tiny band of Koreshans, now numbering *four* women, to a flat in Manhattan. Until 1886, the world at large paid little attention to Koreshanity. But in September of that year, the Fates changed their minds about Cyrus Teed.

He was invited to address the convention of the National Association of Mental Science in Chicago, and the speech he delivered was so powerful, and his presence so charismatic, that he was elected president of the association. Before the entire convention, Teed healed a woman who until then had only been able to walk a few steps; she walked all the way home, praising the powers of Koresh. Teed had suddenly found a receptive—in fact adulatory—audience, and his fame spread quickly to both coasts. By the end of the 1880s, in addition to the nucleus of 126 followers Teed had won in Chicago, groups of disciples had gathered in Lynn and Springfield, Massachusetts, Baltimore, Denver, San Francisco, and Portland. With money donated to Teed, the Assembly of the Covenant (as he now styled his church) purchased a huge, ornate mansion in Washington Heights that Koresh christened Beth-Ophra. It served as a cooperative dormitory for the Koreshans, and from its bowels Teed began churning out another newsletter, *The Guiding Star*, which was soon succeeded by a more ambitious publication, *The Flaming Sword*. He also set up a "College for Life" at Beth-Ophra that held courses in electro-alchemy, metaphysics, and mental science.

In the name of humanity,
Koresh,
(Cyrus R. Teed.)

Cyrus Read Teed or Koresh, the "Second Christ."

34

HAVE BUCK ROGERS' RAY GUN - WILL TRAVEL

Not far from the melted sand and globs of green Trinitite at the Trinity site -- beneath the tower that exploded the first atomic bomb, just across the desert sands from the Los Alamos National Laboratories where Invisible Weaponry is being developed at an alarming rate, is a private company, Consumertronics, which specializes in all things electronic. Headed by a "weapons engineer", John J. Williams, the company offers for sale all sorts of VLF, SHF, VHF, ELF devices and designs for devices to produce a variety of waves. It sells both offensive generators and defensive countermeasures "for research purposes only." It is the only company in the world which advertises this kind of expertise. His ads might as well say: "Have Buck Rogers Ray Gun, Will Travel," because Williams will travel to your home with a van full of scanners, meters, measurers and monitors and tell you what your electromagnetic environment looks like 24 hours a day. All it takes is money.

After hearing from a half dozen survivors of EM Targeting about this amazing company, I wondered if Consumertronics could be for real. I read the letters they'd received from Williams and studied his estimates, some of which were as high as $12.000. Then I called to see what I could learn from him directly. Could all this "invisible weaponry" and "electronic mind control" really be happening? If so, would Consumertronics Be able to help the E-M Targeted Survivors?

From the advertising Consumertronics published, it certainly seemed as if Williams was qualified to build defensive countermeasures or an invisible weapon which could defend or zap your mother-in-law. According to his brief resume, Williams holds a Masters of Science in Electrical Engineering. His professional career included four years as a Weapons Engineer for the U.S. Navy and U.S. Air Force and an ongoing period of years as a consultant to departments and agencies he will not mention. He has also served as a Health Physicist for the National Institute of Health, Senior Engineer (in electronics design) for Lockheed Corporation and has taught college level Computer Science for New Mexico State University.

In his copyrighted promotional literature Williams claims that he has worked for decades as a consultant to people exposed to a variety of electromagnetic frequencies. "People," he says, "who were plagued by unexplained manifestations." This, he says, makes him the single professional in the (world known to him) with such a background in "EM, physical and biologic systems as they interrelate to each other, and with the sophisticated and highly specialized equipment and software specially developed for investigating this phenomena."

He is the author of a number of writings on the subject, including, *Killer Watts, X-ray to Death, Heal Thyself, Radionics Manual, Electromagnetic Brainblaster, Bio-Spectrum Analysis* and *Under Attack!* While Williams calls these manuals many of them are only slim papers.

His advertisements look like a page of classifieds and includes an odd list of plans and pamphlets with the following titles: COMPUTER PHREAKING for $39. CRYPTOANALYSIS TECHNIQUES, a manual and a disk for $29. STEALTH TECHNOLOGY fully described for $29. VORTEX GENERATOR plans for $9. THE SILKWOOD, plans for a detector of X- and Gamma Rays and Alpha and Beta particles which fits into your pocket for $14. PHONE COLOR BOXES designed by Phone Phreaks for $29. SECRET AND SURVIVAL RADIO, 70+ pages of circuit plans and tables for $29.

Consumertronics advertises a number of sets of plans for devices which would probably gladden the heart of anarchists and revolutionaries, such as devices which reverse your electric and water meters. But the things which interested me were things which related to Williams expertise as an invisible weapons engineer:

> BIO-SPECTRUM ANALYSIS: Covers entire EM spectrum from DC to the near Infrared (0-300 GHZ) with special emphasis on DC, 50 HZ, 60 HZ, 2.45 GHZ, 3 GHZ, including 6 ELF bands. Cites 100s of studies by researcher, data source, effects and subject types; physical properties and FCC assignment of various bands; and signal intensities, frequencies, durations, duty cycles, waveforms and modulations. Graphical layout of EM spectrum sorted by freqs tested in biologic studies all at your fingertips. $19.
>
> HIGH VOLTAGE DEVICES: HV devices plans: Stun Gun, Taser, Prod, Cane, Flasher, Blaster, Zapper, Audio/RF/Radar Jammer, Jacob's Ladder, Plasma and Van de Graaff Gens., Fence Charger, Geiger Counter, Ozone Gen., Fish Stunner, Plant Stimulator, Kirilian - more! Shocking! $29.

> RADIONICS MANUAL: Exciting electrical, electronic and electromagnetic therapeutic, diagnostic and preventive devices (mostly experimental). History, descriptions, plans (dozens) availability's of Radionics Devices from early to modern. While drugs cost $ Hundreds, electricity costs pennies! $29.

Notice that all the above are either pamphlets or plans or manuals and disks. Consumertronics is selling information, but Williams, the owner also sells his expertise as a consulting service:

> SPECIAL PROJECTS: We design, build, repair, modify, maintain and-or consult on any device, system, process or project - electrical, electronic, computer, phone, mechanical optical, automotive. Invention prototyping. Confidentiality guaranteed. Describe and include $25 pre-engineering free (does not obligate you).Ttime and cost estimates in 7 - 10 days.

And many of the EM-Targeted survivors have sent in their $25. A simple letter won't get you much, except a note written in Williams' unique scrawl or an estimate if you've sent in your $. What interested me most were these items in the Consumertronics catalog:

> **UNDER ATTACK!**
>
> **Electromagnetic Interference (EMI) and Electronic Weapons cause inexplicable manifestations!** While chemical pollution can often be seen and felt, EM pollution - even when severe - is not seen and is seldom felt. Yet, it can cause cancer (particularly leukemia and brain tumors), birth defects, retarded development, psychological and neurological disorders, cardiovascular and immune system failures, hearing and balance dysfunction, etc. The human body consists of many **biologically Closed Electric Circuits (BCECs).** EMI and electronic weapons can be destructive to people, pets, livestock, plant life and equipment.
>
> **Includes actual cases** (Which we have investigated and documented) **of attacks on people by EM weapons!** There are similarities in the specific medical manifestations of these attacks. Some people feel severe medical symptoms - even when those living with and around them feel nothing or little unusual. Medical exam results were almost always wrong or inconclusive. Some are called "foolish," "paranoid" or "crazy." Police often just laughed in their faces - or behind their backs. Also includes how you can tell whether or not you are under an EM

> attack, how you can pinpoint the source of the attack, and specific countermeasures you can take. $29.
>
> **THE EM BRAINBLASTER (EMBB)**
>
> Plans for powerful **Electromagnetic Weapons** and **Lab Devices**. Includes brainwaves and EEGs; behavioral conditioning, mind control, brainwashing and dreamscaping; physiological, psychological, neurological, parapsychological, cytological and histological effects of **EMBBs**; brain anatomy and physiology, positive stimulations (ie: calming, healing, pleasure centers, arousal, automatic learning, biofeedback, etc); stimulation techniques; optimizing waveform, freq. modulation, duty cycle and other factors; biological electrical/magnetic properties, etc. Dozens of photos and illustrations. **Mind Boggling!** $29.

I called the busy engineer to see if he had time to talk. I was surprise that he did. Williams talked while I took notes for about 45 minutes. I identified myself as the author of Operation Mind Control. Williams hadn't heard of the book, so I had to fill him in on what I was doing.

I don't want to put any words into John William's mouth. He talks rapidly and spilled out a lot of general information. But what he didn't say, the way he didn't say it, is as significant as what he did say. So, I'm presenting this pretty much the way it went. The first interview took place on April 6, 1994. The second one took place on November 3, 1994. A few lines were cut because they were garbled, but almost the entire contents of both interviews is reported below:

Q: I've talked with a lot of people who are describing microwaves or ELF or some kind of wave which can read their mind and implant voices. You ever hear anything like that?

W: We have been involved in projects that included devices that were implant devices that had the same density as bone and that were implanted in spaces between bone so that when cat scans or x-rays were taken it would appear indistinguishable from bone. It wouldn't show up.

Q: Wouldn't there have to be some kind of metal in the electronic parts?

W: There would be, but a thin type shell that does not block x-rays and some of the newer devices that we've worked with and have seen others work with are ceramic material. You can't tell them from bone. They used to be fairly large, but about five years ago they reduced them to the size of -- you know what a Chicklet looks like? -- about like that. And now they have special equipment which allows them to mold it into bonelike structures. When you see it on the bench you think you're looking at a piece of bone. And they can actually use this to replace a piece of bone and the bone will bind right to it.

Q: So, you're talking about some kind of implant. Is there no kind of wave phenomenon that could pick up somebody's thoughts and have a two-way dialog go on inside their heads without any implants?

W: There are certain cases where people have developed resonances in certain parts of the body. Particularly well known is teeth filling. They can decouple microwave signals and it acts like a microwave detector in which a person can actually hear radio stations inside his head from the metal in their teeth forming a diatonic type structure. And they could actually hear sounds from a radio station played inside their head. And for some people its been very vivid. And just a few years ago they didn't recognize it. They thought people who had this phenomenon were schizophrenic or crazy somehow or imagining it... but now they have been able to tell that in most of these cases it's actually some phenomenon.

Q: There's so many of these people who don't know each other who are saying the same things...

W: We get calls all the time. Sometimes we get up to four calls a day about this.

Q: How many people would you say you've talked to.

W: Last year it picked up quite a bit -- I'd say probably been close to 400 people in the last year. On the average of more than one a day. Toward the beginning of this year there was a period where we were getting eight to ten calls a day from all over. Ten years ago we got maybe a tenth of that.

Q: So, are you saying that based on the number of calls you've gotten there's some truth to this claim that people are being targeted by electromagnetic waves of one kind or another?

W: We're absolutely sure that it exists because some of our clients -- and I can't discuss with you who they are -- but we have some pretty high falutin clients and they buy our stuff and they don't tell us what they use them for, but some of them, we developed some stuff I've thought, I wish I could show people some of the experiments that were done. You wouldn't believe it unless you saw what we've done.

It works. We're absolutely sure it works. We design these systems all the time. We've put up to $100,000 in research just in the last ten years, and it's always paid for by various entities. It's been one of our major thrusts. And if not a single person reports this to us, we're absolutely certain that it's happening.

Q: Well, how might this be applied if one were going to apply it.

W: There's two basic weapons types. One is low frequency and it's just basically -- I cannot for proprietary reasons tell you the frequencies -- I can give you generalizations -- One is below 20 Hz and it's near field primarily the magnetic component of electromagnetic wave forms is a pretty good sized heavy coil. This has the greatest manifestation and it can literally kill a person or completely make them go insane. There's a small group of waveforms that have devastating effect on people...

Q: I would think that hearing voices inside my head would make me go insane. So, what do you mean 'Devastating effect"..

W: Making a person go into convulsions. We've run experiments and we've demonstrated that you can use electromagnetic waves to scramble a persons brain like it was an egg. I mean completely scramble it. There is, of course, quite a bit of thermal phenomenon involved.

Q: You mean by scramble, confusion?

W: No, I mean physically scramble it. Cook it. Examination of brain tissue shows that the brain was pureed inside the head. You open the skull and just pour the brain out.

That takes a pretty strong field to accomplish that, but it is achievable. And anything less than that from mild confusion and vertigo -- that's just a near field thing.

Q: So what's this called?

W: It's basically low frequency electromagnetic weaponry.

There's another technology that involves very high frequency in the gigahertz range. It's above 800 MHZ. The carrier wave is modulated by certain wave forms which are similar to the native wave forms used in the low frequency. But at the high frequency you get real good directionality and it operates similar to a police radar gun. Same size, same directionality and range. The units are slightly larger than radar guns. The range is about up to a half mile. They're basically silent. They can be aimed from inside a box or bag or purse so that the target doesn't even know it's there. And it too can have an effect similar to the low frequency one, but it's usually not quite as devastating -- but it's a lot more focused too.

With the low frequency one, even the experimenter can't be in the area because you cannot focus it. It just broadcasts it all over in all directions. You have to plant it...

Q: Plant it and run away?

W: Like in a burglar alarm system when you're going away on vacation. Plant it in your sofa, some idiot comes through the window and triggers it and ends up a complete basket case by the time you come back.

But you better not be there though. Ha. ha.

Q: This thing you're talking about. Could it make internal organs explode?

W: It could do that, because it can cause a physical rubbing together of the particles of the tissue. It forces the particles to vibrate against each other, so it can be used to do that. We've primarily tested it on the brain, which is a lot softer than other tissue, so it's a lot more vulnerable to this kind of thing than other organs. But, I guess, if you build them strong enough you could probably affect things like liver or kidneys. We've also tested it on bone...

Q: So, if I was a convicted felon, even though I might not be able to own a gun, I could buy as many of these weapons as I wanted?

W: There's no law. Of course, the kind of clientele we sell to, clearly understand that this is for educational purposes only we sell it to them. But they insist sometimes on telling us what they do with them afterwards.

If somebody came to us and said," Hey, I'm a convicted felon," why, we're not going to do business with them. But people lie a lot... we can't know what a person's final objectives are.

Q: What would happen if you got a two story building and you put this big one below a guy's toilet and you set it up so it's triggered when they go to the bathroom? (I was thinking of what happened to Paul Wilcher.) How quickly would this work?

W: It works within seconds.

Q: Could it work through the floors and tile and plumbing and all that?

W: It is diminished to some extent -- the low frequency one -- if there is some metal structure in the way. But, it's usually strong enough to have some impact.

Q: So, if you wanted to explode somebody's intestines -- rupture their spleen or blow out their colon....?

W: You'd set it on a timer or remotely activate it.

Q: ... But how much time would it take to work?

W: The manifestation time... now you're talking about something that usually, but not always works real fast. There are times, and this is real peculiar with this technology, there are times a person will be exposed and they won't feel the manifestations for minutes, hours, days or even weeks! Sometimes even months or years after the initial exposure and then suddenly they'll get hit by it. And there's other people -- there's other exposures we've done, and I can't tell you specifically what kind of living things were involved -- with what we've been doing -- for obvious reasons, but we know for a fact that one exposure can elicit a bunch of reactions over a long period of time, often there is a delay and the signal can be long gone before the manifestation takes place.

So, there's a group of waveforms that are used and it's type of actual manifestation versus time of exposure has something to do with the waveform that's used and with the environment and the specific characteristics of the target its used on. It's really a very complex relationship. We have a pretty good handle on it after all this experimentation. But I cannot go into details with you.

Q; How many different machines are you talking about?

W: Well, there's two different classes of machines. And of the two classes there's probably dozens of different specific designs if not hundreds. But we don't pretend we've done every design that will work within that range.

Q: How small can these be?

W: The smallest we've seen. The transmitting unit is about the size of a pack of cigarettes.

Q: And how large?

W: We haven't built the largest yet. It's unlimited. It could be as large as, practically speaking, we've built them four to six feet in diameter for the low frequency ones.

Q: Have you ever heard of a device that looks like a few old fashioned bicycle bell shaped things, but with a much larger diameter, stacked up on each other?

W: Some of the antenna structures used for these are half hemispheric.

Q: Have you patented any of these devices you've built?

W: No. We absolutely cannot patent any device we've developed. If we patent it, all somebody has to do is look at the patent to steal the technology. Everything we do is strictly based upon a special agreement with the people that we work with, a trade secret kind of thing. We don't patent anything. That'd be crazy.

It's just something we would never do. Ha ha ha.

Q: You work with the private businesses?

W: We work with all kinds of entities. Private businesses. Individuals.

Q: Government Agencies?

W: Other entities we cannot describe.

Q: Government Agencies?

W: We work with other entities we cannot even begin to describe.

Q: Wackenhut Corporation, maybe?

W: We've worked with different entities from various countries all over the world.

Q: So, you're just an All-American entrepreneur who'll sell this stuff to practically anybody... except convicted felons.

W: Not really to anybody. If a person says or implies he's going to use what we develop for an illegal, or immoral, or unethical use, then we don't sell it to them.

Q: If he says he's just going to use this for experimentation?

W: We have no way of verifying what he's going to do with it. Just like, you go down town and buy a gun from a gun shop, that guy that sells you the gun, doesn't know if you're going to shoot rabbits with it or if you're going to go out and shoot your mother in law. He has no control over what you're going to do with it, nor should he have any.

Q: Can the use of all these devices be detected by monitoring equipment?

W: Some of them can. Some can't. The reason being is that some of these devices send out a signal in the form of a short pulse. If you used like field strength detector it would show a little bit of static on the radio or a little bit of switching noise or something like that, but it would not give the impression that it was an actual signal, or an actual weapon.

We know what to look for. We've developed special equipment for doing it. We do that as part of our consulting work. We know how to distinguish between ordinary static and what is an actual weapon.

Q: I'm going to tell people about this, I'm going to refer you to others and I will give your address and number. What kind of rates do you get?

W: Right now, all expenses and about $250 per hour. Minimum of $1,000 deposit.

Q: I've got an ad here, it's one page.

W: That's our ad, But let me tell you what our policy on publication is. We'll allow up to 10% paraphrasing without special permission. As far as providing publications. The person who's doing the story pays everything up front. We do have certain requirements that our name or address is provided in the piece that they're doing.

Q; We've heard from some survivors things about E.T.'s and UFOs. What about UFO's?

Q: We have an unknown presence detector. Anything that warps the static fields in your environment will show up on this. It doesn't detect the electromagnetic field, it detects the static field. Anything that moves through an area moves the static field.

Q: You've got high voltage devices. What are those?

W: Kirilian photography, spark generators, ozone producers, fish detectors... any number of high voltage.

Q: What's a Blaster or a Zapper?

W: There's a light blaster, it triggers a photoflash on a random basis, there's also an electromagnetic blaster.

Q: You sell stunguns? Tell me about them.

W: That's a high voltage thing.

Q: Bigger or smaller than a taser?

W: Ours have special features.

Q: How many volts?

W: Voltage isn't the consideration. Delivery of energy is. It should be about 200 volts. It can knock somebody down. If the energy were tweaked up, it could kill a person.

Q: How about amnesia producing?

W: Amnesia results from high voltage, yes.

Seven months later, having studied Consumertronic's literature I called Williams back with more questions. We were engaged in interviewing people, not only for this book, but for the video we were doing:

Q: We're making a documentary now and we've interviewed about 40 people who have had your handouts and some of them have had your estimates ranging from a few hundred dollars to $12 thousand.

Now, I don't know what they're telling you, but from my point of view they're all suffering from the same thing. I think maybe you're missing the point by not producing some universal device, some off-the-shelf item that helps them all.

W: We already have those machines. We have produced jammer machines that will produce jamming signals for any kind of electromagnetic wave forms that might be aimed at a person. We have a couple of publications which describe what people can do to minimize the effects. And we've done a lot of special projects for people where we actually investigate their environment.

We have a lot of very specialized equipment. We're about the only people in the world that can help people with things like this. These are not just field strength meters or normal things like a private detective would use. We know what they look like. We know what wave forms they are. We have designed special equipment that detects them. And we can also detect them by being able to read the normal equipment correctly. We know the characteristics of these waveforms.

Basically it's one of those things, we're in great demand and we've already spread ourselves far too thin. We make big money for everything we do, so if somebody wants to hire our service to do it, we have to charge a lot of money. I get paid very well.

Q: But, since most of the people I've found are describing the same thing, there must be some way to adapt equipment or manufacture something that works for all of them cheaper than the $12,000 treatment where you go out to a location and measure and test and all that?

W: The problem is , they may be suffering from similar manifestations, but the type of equipment at use and the motivation of the people using that equipment can be quite varied, that you really need somebody on site to look at it. Some of this equipment is highly directional. It can be aimed at a person thousands of feet away, even up to a couple of miles, if the signal is strong enough...

Q: Some of the people believe they are targeted from satellites...

W: Well there is.... the satellite itself would not probably produce a signal that is strong enough to adversely affect someone. However, it can produce a control signal that would trigger a device on the ground, that could do the same thing.

Q: They've called it the "Mental Telepathy System". And they're complaining about two-way conversations. They're not just hearing voices. The voices are answering their questions and engaging them in dialogue.

W: Well that's one of the common complains I've heard. We know for a fact... Now, I have to be careful what I'm saying here. We have... we do work for all kinds of different entities... and there are certain entities that we do work for both in the countermeasures and the actual production of devices that can do these kinds of things, that we have confidence with so we have to be very careful what we say... but we can tell you for a fact that, there are quite a few people who have implantables. They're being affected by these implantables. They're very small and they're very hard to detect and there's all different kinds. There are some that just transmit data from the person including, it could be biological type data, medical data like heart rate, blood pressure -- or it could be data coming off their nerve system, their muscles, their vocal chords so that anything they say could be picked up and transmitted. Also there could be transceivers. Some of them are fairly complex using computer chips that are highly miniaturized. We know this for a fact and we believe that there are numerous people in this country that have the implants in them. Somewhere along the line they were hospitalized, or they have a period they can't account for in their lives, they took a drive someplace on Monday morning and they came back Thursday afternoon and they don't have the faintest idea of what happened in between -- missing time.

We know for a fact that a lot of this work is done by entities that we have no direct knowledge about ourselves. But from the type of manifestations that are occurring and from other things we have seen, we know that there are certain things that are either being done by people in a highly secretive position in the United States or operating from a foreign country, or maybe E.T.'s for all we know.

Q: I was going to ask about your use of the word "entities." Some of the people who are experiencing this have raised the question about E.T.'s.

W: It's very similar. The devices, however, are quite varied in function and in different positions placed in the body and different lengths of time and duration, most are transceiver type devices, but there are some that are just transmitters and some that are just receivers. The functions they perform are from control type functions to monitoring functions. They're very sophisticated in their transmission. Instead of transmitting in a continuous way where you say something and then it's transmitted, they store the data for some time and they blurt it out in compressed form, and then it's stretched out -- whatever receives it -- stretches it back out. So they're very hard to detect. To the untrained ear they sound like radio static to a field strength scanner it's hard to find them. We do a lot of work. Some of it we cannot even begin to talk about...

Q: Did you ever work for John Alexander at the laboratory?

W: John Alexander? I can't tell you that the name is familiar.

Q: We're making a film and we're looking for things to show. Can you boil a lab animal's brain with a ray gun or something for the cameras?

W: I've got a problem with that because... some of the people I work with... see, a lot of this stuff is not supposed to become well known.

Q: We can stay in one area with you and we can talk about the defensive side of things -- the reason you came up -- countermeasures. The whole area of nonlethal weapons is wide open right now, as you know a lot of it is public knowledge. They're selling these so-called "non lethal weapons" to local police forces.

W: Yeah, but there's certain aspects of the work they don't want us to talk about.

When do you need this? We have some devices here. We have one that will literally scramble the brain. It's a low frequency device which at close range will literally scramble the brain. The trouble is it's omnidirectional, so to operate it you have to be a good distance away.

The problem is, to get this thing to work, you have to use it on a living system, where the nerves actually conduct in the normal way. In a dead system it might raise the temperature a little bit, but it doesn't do anything. But in a living system with the nerves operating normally, with the blood stream running, where the signal couples into the bloodstream and the nervous system then it can cause the brain to literally -- it's an incredible sight...

Q: How far away do you have to be?

W: You can use a telephoto lens and get far away. I would say at least 100 feet at a minimum because it's omni directional.

The problem is, what do we use as a subject.

Q: A rat or something?

W: We have in the past gotten into -- because we do a lot of lab work -- we have in the past received legal threats from people who don't want us to be doing any kind of thing like that -- cooking that precious little rabbit.... You might bring the rat, but it puts us in a bind.

We do demonstrations, maybe three to six a year. The people we select we carefully hand pick. They don't get to film it, but they can see it with high powered binoculars.

Q: You might use this video to sell your product. It'd be a national ad.

W: We got a problem with that too. We've got so much business right now we've had to turn away business. We've had problems with these people because they get on us for killing 'precious animals."

Q: You mean like the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals?

W: I can't tell you exactly, but yeah, I think it's those people, or somebody like them. The problem is, if you show, on the air, an animal which is perfectly live and normal and all of a sudden blood is gushing out of its eyes and nose and ears, then there are going to be people who are going to be upset about it.

There was one film made up in Wyoming a number of years ago. I've seen it. It was pretty graphic. It was shown by one of our clients. You see, we maintain confidentiality with the people we work with, so this might have been for our information only. Like our demonstrations aren't open to the public.

Also, another problem is, some of the clients we've worked for, we cannot obtain too high of a profile. If we get too well known other people start snooping around and it makes our clients nervous if suddenly there are people parked outside our door with videocameras. And that's what always happens. And these people are people one doesn't want to upset, and for a number of different reasons. So I can't do it.

We've been doing this work for quite a bit of time and...

Q: How long have you been doing this?

W: We've being doing the similar type of work for about 15 years now. More intensely over the last ten years. We actually go back to 1971. And basically our sketches of ideas go back that far back.

Q: Why did you settle in Alamagordo? Because the market is there?

W: No. There's no market here. Ninety-five percent of our business is done out of state. We settled in Alamagordo for a good reason , I got a job offer for the Air Force over here. It was the kind of job I really wanted to get involved with because it does have some of this very interesting research to it. We were able to get a job through a special contact through a client. We were in a much more populated area and they wanted us in a much more isolated area so we came down here. It offered a lot more opportunity, both the job and the fact that we were off the beaten trail. So that's the reason we moved over here.

I have to talk to the people around here first. You'll have to send us a proposal of what you want to do in writing...

Q: I couldn't tell you. That'll be up to you to set up. Basically we're interested in mind control.

W: You'd have to be screened by our people. It's very scary stuff and we have to do it in such a way as nobody's going to accidentally wander into it or cause problems with personnel or people who're going to be upset.

This is so far beyond mind control -- it's a wave form that is so great it would cause physical manifestations. Like if you have a 60 HZ power transformer, it will buzz, but at much less power you won't get anything out of it. So at lesser powers these things can cause mind control type stuff, which does not result in any total or physical damage to a person, but when you get it beyond a certain point, you can cause tremendous amounts of problems to people. You can cause injury. And it can cause death.

We know for a fact because we've built equipment like this. It's kind of bulky and heavy, but it's not something we could easily transport.

Q: That radar-type gun you told me about might be interesting.

W: The big one is low frequency the radar-type gun is high frequency. For the type of radar generators that we use -- basically gun diode oscillators -- they don't produce enough power to do any scrambling, but they're really good at causing nausea, all kinds of mind control, automatic learning and things of that nature. They're very good for that, but you're not going to find any permanent physical manifestations. They won't cause a person to drop dead or something

The lower frequency application, which works on a much different principle -- works on a magnetic component of a field as opposed to the electrical component -- that's the one that's really ....

The radar type is highly directional and you can control that a lot better. But the low frequency one is not directional and you can't control that. It's ultra low frequency and it splashes all over the place. You don't want to be in the area when it happens -- that whole area is dangerous. The field, of course, has lobes which are much stronger in some directions than others. But it is present in all directions.

Send us some information in the mail, who you are, your background, tell us what you're going to do in this piece you're doing and I'll run it buy the people here...

Q: How many people you got working there?

W: That's confidential. We don't provide that information.

Q: Is there a laboratory scene with bubbling tubes and wires and oscilloscopes?

W: We have a number of people here and a number in our stable of experts. We have a number all over who we consult with. Basically, however, we don't have a large number of people here doing any work. We have a small number. We do small scale manufacturing and research and development. And we have enough to do the work, but I can't tell you...

Q: Three or four guys at a bench?

W: I cannot tell you that. Whether they're guys or gals. I cannot give you any kind of information like that. I cannot let you film our benches or look at our equipment. We never do that. It's closed to the general public. Basically we're consultants by mail or by phone. We don't even meet the clients. We meet them only over the phone. We never sit down with clients. We never invite them in. They never see what we're producing. Until it's actually produced. Now and then, however, we'll send somebody with the equipment to set it up and demonstrate it for them. And that's only when we really highly trust a special client.

I cannot go any further with this until I get something in writing from you. Include a copy of your driver's license...

Q: Yeah, sure, John.

Although John Williams advertises a novel he's written *Condemned To Extinction (CE),* I didn't get the impression that he was all that eloquent. While his catalog is clean and well written, Williams speaks elliptically and often uses the wrong verb tenses. I got the impression that he was (ironically) an open and honest individual, he is more of an engineer than a storyteller or wordsmith. So, when I saw an ad saying, "dreamscaping" or one that says: "Shocking truth behind UFO and ET sightings, secret, massive, international efforts to communicate with ETs, the New World Order, recent and current visits and probings, and the prospects of large ET visits or attacks on the earth in the near future," it makes me think that Williams knows more than he lets on. He something more than just another techie. Perhaps Williams travels in circles that allow him to glimpse strange vistas that start just on the other side of the National Security Curtain and span all the way to other horizons.

To live up to the agreement I made with John Williams the address and phone numbers of Consumertronics: 2011 Crescent Dr., P.O. Drawer 537 Alamogordo, NM 88310-5037. Phone (505) 434-1778, Fax: 434-0234.

The kinds of weapons Consumertronics sells play a role in mind control in the "low powered" use, as Williams said, but, we learned from a letter from a target, also they can be used in conjunction with the trauma-based programming. Here follows one of the many letters received by The Freedom of Thought Foundation:

> ...It is now about 3:00 A.M and my apartment and me and my children are being bombarded by some type of directed energy. My 8 year-old-son just woke up about 30 minutes ago having wet the bed

> as usually happens when this "stuff" is so strong. Several people suggested that I contact you about possible help for our predicament.
>
> I am a member of Mothers Against Sexual Abuse here in __________. I have tried over the last two years to find out what I could about what is happening to us and how to combat it. I have reached many dead ends. I was told that a Dr. Bob Beck might be able to help us, but the person who agreed to contact him for me said that he wasn't getting involved in any more cases like ours. (That is correct, Dr. Beck is in poor health and no longer is able to work in this area which he pioneered.)
>
> Very briefly, the nightmare puzzle of my life was brought clearly into focus about this time of year in 1992 when a therapist that I had been referred to by MASA board member was able to fit the horrible, scrambled pieces of my children's experience together as ritual abuse. We had known that the children had been sexually molested by their father on unsupervised court-ordered visits and we suspected there was something else... but nothing prepared me for what was finally disclosed.
>
> I don't know why this is happening to us and I don't understand how. It would have helped our court case to protect the children from their father and his group of people if we had been able to show how we are being monitored and manipulated. At times it seemed that just for my own sanity, I needed some type of proof that what I and we are experiencing is verifiable. Now I just want to find out how to more effectively deal with it. My former husband is an electronic engineer who worked for a defense contractor here in _______. One of the women in his group that the children identified as a perpetrator also worked for that same company.
>
> I would appreciate talking directly at your convenience... I am now losing my vision in both eyes to rapidly developing cataracts which the doctors cannot explain. The extreme sensitivity to light which I experience was met with the question of whether I had been exposed to any radiation. I certainly think so, but I can't prove it.
>
> Short of killing me outright, in order to get control of the children, I believe I'm being rendered physically incapable of protecting them. I can't imagine what is next...

I called this woman and suggested that she pack up and leave in the middle of the night. She said she couldn't because she's in court, fighting with her ex-husband, the former electronics engineer. He doesn't have to purchase an ELF or microwave weapon from Consumertronics, he probably could build one himself from his own plans or from Williams.' Since there's no patents on Invisible Weapons the designs are in the public domain anyway.

This woman told me on the phone that, in addition to having the cataracts, she had burns on her shoulders. It sounds as if her ex is turning the beam up too high. If he cared to take the trouble to modulate it he could be giving her subliminal commands. She said that she'd been sleeping under tinfoil, but that it wasn't doing much good. I told her it's hard to defend against invisible weapons unless you know their frequency. I put her in touch with someone who may be able to help. This case, I believe, illustrates the dangers of unregulated (paralegal) so-called "Non-lethal weapons."

Below is an ad for one of the many monitoring devices on the market. Measuring the frequencies and field strength ought to be the first step in defending yourself against the effects of Invisible Weapons.

OPTOELECTRONICS
MODEL 3000A
MICRO HANDI-COUNTER
10HZ - 3GHZ
DIGITAL AUTO CAPTURE
FILTER
CAPTURE
RANGE
INPUT
ARM
STORE
GATE
OFF
CAL

The New Standard in Frequency Counter Performance

The Optoelectronics new Model 3000A HandiCounter™ continues in the tradition of the original Model 3000 as being the world's most highly advanced hand held counter. The A model instruments incorporate all of the original 3000 features and adds a microprocessor to provide advanced features such as digital filtering, digital auto capture, and a serial computer interface.

- **Digital filter mode** *(pat pend)* prevents display of random noise and oscillation
- **Digital auto capture** *(pat pend)* locks counter display on first reading to pass the filter.
- **ARM/STORE button** stores and recalls frequencies from a three register stack.
- **Low Power Consumption** 4 to 5 hour battery operation.

OPTOELECTRONICS

HandiCounter™ 3000A

35

HUMAN EM TARGETS

Harlan E. Girard, one of the most level-headed researchers into the lore of mind control has, himself, been an E.M. target for years. He doesn't like to talk about his personal experiences because he'd rather let others tell their stories, but he admits he still has "handlers" and hears disembodied voices. Like so may of the other so-called "Wavies" Girard is no wild-eyed maniac. He is distinguished, affluent and quietly articulate. The brief abstract printed below sets the overview for this chapter and offers a look at the high quality of the human beings reporting this E.M. Target phenomenon.

I'll introduce Girard to you, the way I met him, through his paper: **OFFENSIVE MICROWAVE WEAPONS: Developments in the Technology of Political Control:**

> The Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) has developed a technology which can make the blind see, the deaf hear, and the lame walk. It will never be used this way because the technology is central to the domestic policy and foreign ambitions of the United States Goverment, whether that government is nominally headed by George Herbert Walker Bush, William Jefferson Clinton, or any possible successor.
>
> The effects of these microwave weapons are many and varied, but the most insidious couple with the central nervous system to produce effects which might be described as Satanic possession. remote motor control of human locomotion and movement (including speech) has become possible. Remote motor control can be used to murder by suicide, "accident", suffocation, asphyxiation and heart attack, or to simply neutralize the victim by making words come out of his/her mouth which he/she had no intention of speaking
>
> In order to evade responsibility for the detention, torture, rape and murder of many tens of thousands of human beings, the CIA has developed in conjunction with the NASA Ames Laboratory what is

> called, generically, a "telepresence surveillance system." This system gives the torturers employed by the CIA the sense that they are in the room with the victim. In other words, the victim can be made to feel, and does feel, as if he/she is in prison, but the victim remains in his/her own home.
>
> Consequently, a situation is created in which the victim appears to be free to uninformed third parties, but at the same time is incarcerated as securely as if he/she had been confined to a maximum security prison. In this manner, human beings can be and are being sadistically tortured in the privacy of their own homes. The bizarre objective of this treatment is to mentally and physically torture the victim until his/her own personality collapses, and he/she becomes something lower than a slave. In science fiction, this computer driven human being is called a cyborg.
>
> At the present time, approximately 300 Americans (and other nationalities) are being clandestinely detained and tortured. Some of the funding comes from behavioral neuroscience research authorized by Congress in Decade of Brain legislation. As with every other interest of the United States Government, the creation of cyborgs had been entered into with reckless enthusiasm, the crudest possible taste, and immense amounts of money.
>
> ...the United States has brought the whole world to the brink of a disaster which is almost beyond human comprehension...

A good example of someone standing at this brink is Glen E. Nichols (47) of Grover Beach, California. Once a psychotherapist and family counselor, Nichol's patients were engineers, scientists and executives, employed by such companies as: Rockwell International, Lockheed Corporation, Rand Corporation, Litton Data Command, Motorola, Rocketdyne, Honeywell Computers, Rockwell Science Center, Lockheed CADAM, Infomatics Corporation, Grumman Corporation, Whittaker Corporation. Hughes Aircraft, Teledyne Corporation, U.S. Navy, U.S. Air Force, U.S. Army, Digital Equipment Corporation, Language Technology Inc., Image Sciences, Tandem Computers, Telos Corporation, Jet Propulsion Lab (JPL), Boeing Aircraft, Electrical Engineering Software, Compucorp, Wangtek, Data Products, GTE, Radian Corporation, ATE Associates, RCA, Exxon, IBM, Northrop Corporation, NASA. Chevron, CBS, NBC, ABC, CNN, Paramount Pictures, Universal Pictures, Lucasfilms, Disney Corporation, Aaron Spelling, Stephen Bochoco, WalMart and others.

Today Nichols will tell you he's been a victim of mind control for most of his adult life. Yet it was only a few years ago he says "awakened" to that fact. Like Girard and O and Lois, he too uses the word "slave" when speaking about his condition. Here follows an excerpt from letter's he wrote over the early months of 1994:

"I am a victim of mind control. I have been mind controlled for my entire life... I have been mind controlled with the typical methods of behavior modification, hypnosis, drugs, electric shock, torture, and lies. I believe that most people who understand the methods of the secret societies would call me a *slave*. I can recall the perpetrators using the above methods on me when I was younger than three years old. As many know, the methods cause amnesia for the conditioning and psychological dissociation of the reality that the person is a slave (to).

Over the years the above methods were frequently used on me, at times daily. Sometimes I would realize my circumstance because some good people would *awaken* me and explain what was being done to me. When I would begin to realize what was being done to me, the perpetrators would find me and intensify their efforts. They often used torture, ether, memory blocking drugs, and electric shock to my head to erase my memories. This would cause me to forget what the good citizens told me.

Apparently, the above very strong methods of mind control were not enough for the perpetrators. I now remember that when I was about twelve (12) years old in 1959, the evil people inserted a temporary radio receiver in my ear. I was told that I had a hearing problem and I had to wear a hearing aid. Apparently, some people around me objected, and they stopped that tactic for a short time. When I was about fifteen (15) years old in 1962, they had miniaturized radio receivers sufficiently that they could insert one in my ear canal without me realizing what they had done. Then they would use very low volume subliminal messages to control me. They would give me post-hypnotic suggestions that I had ear infections and I must not clean inside my ear canals or I would suffer permanent hearing loss. Occasionally, I would clean inside my ear canals and find a metal device, that would be explained away by those around me. The realizations of devices in my ears were then always erased with torture, drugs, and electricity.

The mind control efforts were very intense. I was oblivious to many events around me, and certainly to the reality I was being completely controlled. I had thousands of days and experiences simply erased from my memory by their techniques. Occasionally, with some people's help I would briefly break free from their control. This would enrage them. When I was about twenty (20) years old in 1967, they surgically implanted a miniature radio receiver and transmitter behind my right ear canal and next to my ear drum. I was told I had hurt my ear playing football. Over the next twenty (20) years the receiver-transmitter was replaced a couple of times and another one was implanted behind the other ear. I have several very fine scars above and behind both ears. Apparently, the perpetrators not only would broadcast subliminal commands to me, but had the ability to listen to my conversations, and to electronically track and locate me.

For some reason, in addition to the surgically implanted radio receiver-transmitters, at times additional miniature receivers were also inserted into my ear canals. I can recall having one found in my ear by a California State University, Northridge, health center medical doctor in 1971. I also found another one in my ear in about 1988. Of course, they would immediately erase my memory of what I had found. I assume there had been other times that I have not yet recalled. Why would there be miniature receivers *in* my ear canals in addition to the surgically implanted ones *behind* my ear canals? I can only guess...

There have been many other devices. I can recall having an electrode inserted into my frontal brain through my nostril when I was about thirty-three in 1980. I experienced intense pain, confusion, sand disequilibrium. I was told I had a sinus infection. I explored the source of my pain and found a small bulb stuck to the roof of my nasal cavity. The doctors I contacted said it was an infection and not to touch it. I persisted and removed it myself with tweezers. It looked like a two-pronged electrode, with two sharp wires stuck up into my brain with the bulb hanging down. I took it to the Federal Bureau of Investigation (F.B.I.). They told me it was a transistor that had probably fallen out of an automobile. Then my memory of the event was erased for several years until recently. There are several other such incidents for which I have only very vague memories.

When... I was forty-two years old, in 1989, I began to realize that something was very wrong. I had massive memory loss and some memories I could not explain. I gradually began to realize I was the victim of mind control. I began to recall thousands of conditioning sessions and abuses. I had not yet realized I was also the victim of surgical implantations. When I sought help from "friends," family and medical professionals, they all said I must be psychotic that none of it had happened. They said there are no secret organizations and there is no such thing as mind control, that it is all a delusion. I quickly learned that no one would talk about the abuses. I was threatened that if I talked about it I would be committed to a mental institution for a very long time, or murdered. Of course, the threats are always indirect so they can be denied. My efforts at securing assistance from the F.B.I., police, lawyers, and medical professionals was responded to with a complete denial that such things happen...

I anguished with the reality that over forty-two years I had been a victim of mind control, torture, and slavery. Since I had not yet

> realized that I had surgical implants I tried to continue on with my life. However, in June 1991, when I was forty-four years old, they informed me through t he speakers that I presently had implanted in my skull, that the speakers are there. They just simply increased the volume so I could hear them consciously. They also informed me that I have an electroencephalograph (EEG) transmitter implanted in my brain, and that they use bio-medical telemetry and computers to read the EEG. They indicated that the EEG transmitter was implanted... perhaps in 1970, when I was twenty-three...
>
> ... I was (then) a student-employee and an administrative aide at the Department of Defense Contracts Administration Services in Van Nuys, California... I was taken to several defense contractors' locations (Rockwell, Litton, and Lockheed), and shortly after my memory would be erased. On one occasion I was taken to the Lockheed Corporation in Burbank, California. I was asked to "test" a new pilot simulation chair including the oxygen mask. I was then administered a general anesthetic and some type of cranial operation was performed, and then my memory of the events was erased until recently. A couple of years later, in about 1972, when I was twenty-five, I was directed to "hypnotherapy" by Eric Marcus, M.D., at the Gestalt Therapy Institute in Santa Monica. My memories of those sessions were also erased...
>
> After the realization of my implants in June 1991, and the perpetrators around-the-clock torture of me, I contacted several medical doctors. All of the doctors indicated that I must have nerve damage or a psychiatric disorder, because what I was describing doesn't happen. In August 1991 I was given a Magnetic Resonance Imaging (MRI), it is similar to X-rays, of my brain. The technician happened to mention that the images on the screen were *not* accurate. When I pursued a conversation, forgetting that I am constantly monitored, a man entered the West Hills Regional Medical Center MRI location and told me I had to leave. Of course the doctor, Jeff London, M.D., who ordered the MRI, said the results did not show anything.
>
> I know, and the perpetrators know, that a legitimate MRI or X-rays, radio frequency analysis, or surgery will prove the existence of their diabolical system. However, I also know that they are experts at eliminating evidence, and when they can't eliminate the evidence they simply manage the public, media, and judicial system...

While Nichols insists that he has implants, Girard and others think thats unnecessary and unlikely. So, continuing with his story, Nichols tried to comply with what he called "their code of silence", thinking that would bring him relief from the incessant harassment he was experiencing.

In January, 1992, while they were torturing me with their incessant broadcast, I decided to teach a community college psychology course on stress. I did everything to appear normal. I believed maybe I would receive some help if I did not seem to be a witness against them. I also thought the normal appearance would counter their efforts to discredit me. It took all my effort to conduct the class, somehow I completed the term...

I have radio receiver-transmitters implanted next to each of my ear drums, and an EEG transmitter planted in my brain.[221] They have demonstrated quite conclusively they can read every one of my thoughts. The system is extremely fast and accurate. They inform me of their knowledge of my most minimal thoughts, auditory perceptions, and visual perceptions. The system is also very powerful. I have tried evading the radio signals by hiding in structures and traveling great distances. Unfortunately, they have always been able to receive data from the transmitters, and I have always heard their broadcasts. Nothing has been successful.

...They read every thought, make continual bizarre distracting comments, give constant subliminal commands, and use high pitched sounds against me every moment. They use a combination of extremely demented, vulgar, heinous, and satanic ranting; then alternate this with informing me of the details of thousands of days of experiences for which I have had complete amnesia. They will at times cause me to laugh, smile, and display a lighter mood, while inside I know they are creating an image for a situation and I am actually extremely distressed. I know that they still have complete control of me, even though I am now aware of their system. They like to command me to do different behaviors, then taunt me with I am their toy and robot. They continually remind me that it is impossible to counter their subliminal commands. They call this process of torturing me "icing." They have been controlling and torturing me for my entire life. The perpetrators increased their subliminal broadcast to a conscious level and have been using the speakers and EEG transmitter to torture me continuously since June 1991.

For over two-and-a-half years they incessantly, viciously, and maniacally read my thoughts, make vulgar comments, give me atrocious subliminal commands, broadcast noxious sounds, and disorient me every moment. They even structure my dreams when I fall asleep from exhaustion. They have several times kept me awake for several days, I know I was very near death. They tell me they are the "Illuminate," or "Freemasons," or "Brotherhood;" or the "CIA" or NSA or "U.S. Navy Intelligence," or "U.S. Army Intelligence," or "U.S. Air

---

[221] For audible voices and their uses in intelligence operations see: THE BODY ELECTRIC, Becker. 317.

Force Intelligence;" or a particular corporation like "Rockwell International," or "Lockheed Corporation," or "Northrop Corporation," or "Exxon." Probably each description contains some truth. I just think of them as *The Organization.*

...for about three years no one would even admit to me that any type of mind control existed. I concluded that their terrorism is so effective that no one ever talks about it. Then in August 1992, an anonymous person in a bookstore pointed to a book called *Breaking The Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse (1992), by Daniel Ryder.* I can not concentrate very well, so I only skimmed the book. It presented information about the "Marionette Syndrome," or slavery, and other abuses. It described explicitly some of the mind control techniques, it gave references to other books on ritual abuse, and it listed some organizations that help people.

In August 1992, I began contacting the above organizations. Most of the people with whom I spoke acknowledged that the above atrocities are real and that countless others have been victimized. However, each individual and organization presented some barrier to actually helping me beyond occasionally listening to my anguish. One organization said it sounds like *The Illuminati* or *The Brotherhood* is torturing me. They said they have helped several of their victims. They told me that they would send me some information, and then I should call them back to make arrangements to travel to their location. When I called them again, they said they can help others they just can't help me. The above basic scenario has happened on several occasions. It seems that my circumstance is just too controlled and dangerous, that people are unable or afraid to help me.

...I am not optimistic. *The Organization* here in America seems to have complete dominance of every individual and institution. They boast to me how they are the Eye of the Illuminati, Freemasons, and the secret Greek Society. They say they are a worldwide nation that governs the world. They tell me that no country or organization would dare defy them. They indicate that they are the government behind most governments...

..I know that they are masters of deceit and frequently use a *Trojan horse.* They set up front organization to portray that they are helping victims so that they can uncover any underground opposition. I hope that some people and organizations that seem to be genuinely helping victims are real.

I am very skeptical. For instance, I wonder about *former* intelligence officers based in a suburb of Washington, D.C., that publish information about government abuses. Why does the Association of National Security Alumni publish an expose about microwave

> *harassment* and mind-control *experimentation* when in reality it is not *harassment* or *experimentation*. They are actually *diabolical torture* and *perfected mind control systems*, respectively. Why do they emphasize the beginning of government electronic abuses in 1988 or 1989 when they should very well know the abuses have existed for decades? You would think former intelligence officers would know these facts. Why do they emphasize *microwaves* and *directed-energy* methods, when there are complete *thought reading and mind control systems* using *implanted devices, telemetry*, and *super-computers.?* Why do they present circumstantial evidence with references to records, scars, inconclusive X-rays, and victims' testimonies when there are victims that are known to them, and brain images, frequency analyzers, and surgeries to prove the existence of the devices beyond any doubt? Why is there no reference to the secret societies and fraternities like the Mafia, PII, and Freemasons? Why is there no mention of the prevalence of mind controlled slaves?
>
> ...I will continue to be skeptical and cautious. I know that all legal systems are usurped by *The Organization* and public laws and constitutions are circumvented.

In another letter Nichols said:

> My experience is that all my conscious and unconscious cognitions are detected. Complete conscious and subliminal control of me is exerted with the implanted speakers, electrodes, and brain transmitters. The perpetrators control me to travel to locations, take actions, (Nichols told me in a telephone conversation that includes assassination attempts) speak words, use nonverbal sign language, and it is all precisely coordinated with their objectives. They can insert thoughts and elicit images in my mind and they can describe in detail to me those thoughts and images. As well, they discuss with me the details of my dreams, their contents, and pictorial descriptions of the dreams after I awaken from sleeping. During my waking states, very minimal thoughts and visual and auditory perceptions that I have are discussed in detail by the perpetrators. As extraordinary as it may seem, the perpetrators have essentially 90-100% monitoring and control of me. They virtually have many people 24 hours a day broadcasting to me. They continuously broadcast demented ranting and noxious sounds. They will at times inform me of consultations or activities in which they direct me to be a participant, and then the events were erased from my memory. They also spend an inordinate amount of time redundantly demonstrating to me how they can monitor and control my entire cognitive activity and behavior.

> I know that other methods of mind control can be used, such as extremely low frequency (ELF) radio waves, microwaves, lasers, infrasound, behavior modification and hypnosis. however, the biotelemetry system creates completely monitored and controlled human robots. Personally, it is extremely terrorizing and completely dehumanizing.
>
> I have memories, and the perpetrators have debriefed me about thousands of heinous abuses of me and others, and activities they have devised. Unfortunately, they have also inserted much *dis*information into my memory. I am certain that I have consulted with many government personnel, businessmen, entrepreneurs, and people in the entertainment industry. My incomplete and fragmented memories include improbable and extremely sensitive missions inside the U.S.S.R. For example, one mission I was directly involved with was a covert removal of a very high K.G.B. official to America.

Whether or not Nichols has electrodes implanted in his body has yet to be determined. He says that he has used meters to measure the frequencies of the transmissions used against him, most of which are from 1 kHz to 30 kHz. He has written a number of researchers and psychologists telling them the same things he's told us.

In a telephone conversation with him, when I expressed skepticism about his having implants, he told me he didn't think it was me, because, he said, "Bowart knows this is possible." Mr. Nichols deserves our help and attention and at the moment we have not located the people who will volunteer to 1. take the X-rays of his skull which prove or disprove his claims of implants, 2. the electronic wizards to somehow catch him unaware and measure the frequency and strength of the signals he says he is perceiving, and 3. a deprogrammer willing to set him free from his classically conditioned states. Like so many survivors, Nichols is unemployed and without resources. And, in the United States of America there is little know-how in deprogramming and no mental health system that can provide the services he needs.

On May 28, 1984, *The Miami Herald* carried a story by staff writer Al Messerschmidt, headlined: DRUG PILOT SAYS HE'S CAUGHT IN A CIA PLOT. The subtitle read: "Implants called Part of Plan to Control World:"

> James Pettit, convicted drug pilot, admitted arms smuggler, has told the same story over and over again. Nobody believes him.
>
> Imbedded in his neck, he says, are tiny electronic devices put there by the CIA to control his thoughts. A Federal Judge heard the tale and ordered a psychiatric examination. The psychiatrist said that Pettit is legally competent. The judge ordered a CAT scan, a sophisticated x-ray of Pettit's neck. The test found nothing. When a

Dade circuit judge heard the story, he thought Pettit was trying to talk his way out of an arson charge. The judge ordered new x-rays when Pettit offered to accept a 30-year jail sentence if they turned up nothing. To the surprise of the judge, the prosecutor and even Pettit's attorney, the new test from Jackson Memorial Hospital showed "two foreign objects" in Pettit's neck. Curcuit Judge Howard Gross has ordered exploratory surgery to find out what they are.

"Thoughts that don't belong to me keep appearing," Pettit said during an interview in the Dade County jail. "The only problem I'm having is getting the implants exposed."

"Up until the newest x-rays, there was nothing to give credence to his story", said Pettit's latest attorney, Roy Gelber. I feel that now there is some objective proof of what he is saying."

It is the kind of tale that could become a best-seller. A spy thriller with drug-smugglers, airplanes crashing in flames, organized crime, murders and mind control by the CIA. Sitting in a tiny interview room in the jail, Pettit holds up one, then two x-rays. Each is about the size of a sheet of typing paper. "See the circled areas," he says. "See that thing that looks like a little bottle. That, my friend is an implant. They're not metal, they're quartz. They're like tiny radio receivers.

"I think they were going to use me in a plan to assassinate someone," Pettit says. "I can't prove the CIA put them in there, but there's no way any government agency has the power to do that. You think about it. I can't be the only one implanted."

Physically, James Pettit, 39, is a wreck. Burn 'em Pettit is what Federal Drug agents called him because of the many planes he crashed in his brief career as a drug pilot. Pettit's latest crash in April of 1982, a Lockheed Lodestar carrying qualudes was the worst. When the plane exploded in a Colombia pasture, Pettit was burned over 54% of his body. Eight days later he was admitted to the burn center of the U.S. Army Institute of Surgical research at the Brooke Medical Center at San Antonio, Texas. Hospital spokesman Ray Deary confirmed that Pettit was treated by two doctors at the center until July 2, 1982. Pettit said that while he was at the burn center the implants were put in his neck, face, arms and ears. The CIA program was called Operation Crystal Ball, Pettit says, and he found top secret documents on it in a Key West dumpster in the 1960's. They came from a safety deposit box which was broken into at the former Key West National Bank, he says. The documents described a CIA plan to take over the world's judicial and political systems by mind control by the year 2000, Pettit says. "The crystal ball routine, I'll never be able to prove," he says. His discovery of the documents is one reason the CIA focused on him, Pettit says. The other reason was his search

> to find out why his older brother, Herchel Neil Pettit, died in the Gulf of Mexico in 1978. Pettit says his brother was a "straight arrow". He couldn't believe his brother had committed suicide aboard a boat loaded with pot. "I think he was working for the CIA or the DEA," Pettit says. "I went to New Orleans. I talked to an organized crime family, gave them a list of names. CIA, CIA, CIA. "Don't fool with it," they told me. I put it all together in my head. Smuggling, CIA connected. " James Pettit is obsessed by thoughts that the CIA can control him. In a deposition Pettit asked his ex-attorney in Federal Court, Kathy Hamilton, if she was working for the agency. "No," she said, but the CIA once offered her a job as she was graduating from college. Pettit said Hamilton's fidgeting with her hair and cigarettes were "triggering mechanisms" to control his mind.

In motions filed in court, The Herald story reported, Pettit said it was important to note that his former attorney, Assistant Public Defender James Webb once showed up in court wearing a Duke University ring.

> The year on the ring wasn't the year of Webb's graduation -- a tip-off that Webb was working for the CIA says Pettit. "I accused him of it." Webb says there's no truth to the accusation.

The federal jury that convicted him of drug smuggling in 1983 was controlled by the CIA, Pettit told the *Herald*.

> Defense attorney Hamilton is convinced that Pettit is linked to the agency. "I'll tell you this," she says. "Jim Pettit has worked for the CIA. That has been confirmed. Pettit has told me he worked for the CIA. In addition Charles Mardi has told me he worked for the CIA. That he has had Pettit checked out. That it was confirmed." Mardi, a codefendant in a Federal drug case was to have been a co-pilot on a drug flight with Pettit. In the middle of that trial Mardi's defense attorney Alexander Martoni, asked for a hearing out of the presence of the jurors because he had learned that Mardi had met secretly with the DEA and the CIA. "The CIA tried to get the charges dismissed because of the CIA connection with my client," Martoni told the U.S. District Judge, Jose Gonzalez. "There are letters in their files. I have direct confirmation that Jim Pettit has flown for the CIA said Martoni. Jim Pettit needs some definite help. The government owes him that. He's been impaired as a result of those flights. The U.S. Government has never taken responsibility for what happened to Jim Pettit."

Before Pettit's Federal Trail, Defense Attorney Hamilton asked Gonzalez to order a psychiatric test and a CAT scan of Pettit's head. Dr. Charles Mutter reported that Pettit was competent to stand trial and according to the *Herald* added:

> " It is my opinion that this individual is attempting to contrive a story in order to evade further legal proceedings. Although his alleged belief would represent a psychotic delusion, there is nothing else in the mental status of the man that is consistent with mental illness."
>
> The CAT scan at Jackson Memorial found nothing. Pettit didn't testify. He refused to cooperate with Hamilton. The attorney said nothing about the CIA or implants. The jury convicted Pettit. Gonzalez ordered a 15-year prison sentence, one of the stiffest in the Operation Screamer cases. Pettit's extensive criminal record -- he had served several prison terms -- prompted the judge to order the tough sentence, Hamilton says. Now Pettit awaits trial in circuit court, accused of setting fire to his girlfriend's house after barricading himself inside after DEA agent Beasley tried to arrest him.
>
> The case was scheduled for trial before Judge Gross last week. The day the trial was to begin, hospital officials, responding to a court order, brought copies of the federally ordered x-rays to court. Pettit, Defense Attorney Gelber, and Prosecutor Phil Maniatty huddled in the jury room with Dr. Robert M. Quencer of Jackson's radiology department to examine the x-rays.
>
> The x-rays showed the top of Pettit's head, but didn't show the neck area behind his ear. Pettit, who is representing himself with Gelber as co-council offered to plead no-contest to the arson charge and accept a 30-year sentence if another set of x-rays showed nothing. Judge gross sent Pettit back to the hospital. When Dr. Quencer returned with the newest test, he told the judge that something unexplainable is in Pettit's neck. "I thought he was just fabricating a story to beat the charges said Gross. "The x-rays give me something to think about."
>
> "Until the radiologist came in I thought it was nonsense," said Maniatty. "I don't know what those two things are."
>
> The radiologist said "It could be metal from an accident , but it certainly would be worth checking into, but it has nothing to do with this case."
>
> Tuesday Gross ordered the hospital staff to perform an operation to determine what is in Pettit's neck.

A follow up story written by Bill Looney appeared on June 19, 1984. in *The Miami Herald* headlined: X-RAY SURGERY FAILED TO FIND BUG IN MAN:

> The first CIA operation in Jackson Memorial history ended in disappointment Friday for James Pettit. It was just after 10 a.m. when Pettit, age 38, convicted drug pilot accused arsonists and firm believer that the Central Intelligence Agency has planted electronic

> thought-control devices in his skull rolled into ward D at Jackson in a wheelchair and leg irons. He was clutching a court order for the surgery that would prove his claim, ease his mind and maybe cut his prison time.
>
> "I'm not going to let them put me to sleep," he said warily." Jackson's a damned government hospital."
>
> He needn't have worried. After reviewing new x-rays taken Friday, the Jackson's physicians scheduled to do exploratory surgery and find out just what was in Pettit's head refused to operate above the neck. "I'm not touching that head," said Jackson Professor of Surgery Gerado Gomez...
>
> "I want those things that look like bottles taken out of my head. Any refusal of Jackson Memorial Hospital to follow this court order constitutes in my opinion collusion with the CIA," said Pettit holding the folded order from Circuit Judge Howard Gross as Senior Surgical resident Michael Cotler sewed up his back.
>
> "Tell me doctor, do you work for the CIA?"
>
> "What are you talking about?" Gomez said, laughing uneasily, looking confused. "I don't work for the government."
>
> "I want it known that the doctors at Jackson Memorial Hospital refused to operate on the suspicious area," Pettit said.
>
> "Mr. Pettit wants the court order enforced," Gelber said. He said they would try again in court.
>
> "Since I took this case I've had seven people come to the office asking if I can help them with similar problems," Gelber said. "One said she was John Kennedy's girlfriend and the FBI had put transmitters in her head so she wouldn't get JFK in trouble. Everybody wants to know what those things are in Pettit's head."

Are we witnessing the manifestation of a new cyborg mythology -- a form of cybernetic hallucination which is building toward an eruption from the collective unconscious? Or is the day Jose Delgado was desiring already at hand. Maybe we now live in a Psychocivilized society.

> "We need a program of psychosurgery for political control of our society. The purpose is physical control of the mind. Everyone who deviates from the given norm can be surgically mutilated. The individual may think that the most important reality is his own existence, but this is only his personal point of view. This lacks historical perspective. Man does not have the right to develop his own mind. This kind of liberal orientation has great appeal. We must

> electrically control the brain. Someday armies and generals will be controlled by electric stimulation of the brain...[222]"

And remember that it was the state, through the Public Health Service, the Office of Naval Research, and the U.S. Air Force Aeromedical Research Laboratory, which funded Delgado's work.[223]

The golden tones of Dave Emory's voice made a series of tapes called *Operation Mind Control*. Emory recaps the early version of this book, presenting an "easy listening" way of covering the highlights of the history. Emory and his staff also come up with some good original research, but above all they broadcast the shows live and take calls from a most well-informed audience of regular listeners in California.

On Emory's[224] *Operation Mind Control #5, Tape 2C* a caller says: "Keep up this very good work. It's very important. When you get down to it it's the basis of controlling society. If you get to people's minds the rest is easy."

Emory: "... California is the center of this kind of activity and that Ronald Reagan was Governor he attempted to get something The Institute for The Study of Violent Behavior set up on Southern California. People involved were Louis Jolyn West. He was Jack Ruby's Psychiatrist. He testified that Jack Ruby shot Lee Harvey Oswald because he had psychomotor epilepsy and he had a brief a brief epileptic episode which caused him to pull the trigger and kill Oswald with a single shot, and that is the Warren Commission's thesis as to why Ruby killed Oswald. Also Dr. Earl Bryan, a key official under Governor Reagan. He was involved in massive use of behavior modification techniques in the California prison system, which was used under Reagan as a huge laboratory for the development and refinement of all kinds of mind control techniques, but Earl Bryan was also connected with Edwin Meese and his name surfaced prominently with the scandals that our attorney general ... was connected with some months back..."

Another caller says: It's also good to keep in mind that the sixth anniversary of Jonestown is coming up. It was a CIA mind experiment with very serious, serious fatal consequences.

The message is getting out. Mind control is part of the surge of Invisible Weaponry development. Our elected officials are involved. A third of our national budget is spent on black operations which hide all the secrets. Still, thankfully, the information is getting out to the general public, and since 1980's it been the survivors of EM Targeting, like Harlan Girard who have led the way.

---

[222] Jose Delgado, *Congressional Record*, No. 26, Vol 118, Feb. 24, 1974.

[223] Paul Schrag, *MIND CONTROL*,

[224] Dave Emory, *ARCHIVES ON AUDIO*, POB 170023, San Francisco, Ca. 94117-0023, 1993-94.

So, its appropriate to close this chapter with the voice of Girard from his speech entitled AFFECTS OF GIGAHERTZ RADIATION ON THE HUMAN NERVOUS SYSTEM Recent Developments in the Technology of Political Control, a speech he delivered at the NATO Advanced Research Workshop on Coherent and Emergent Phenomenon in Bimolecular Systems. Held at University of Arizona Jan. 15 - 19, 1991:

> In 1988 the Office of Technology Assessment of the Congress of The United States published a special report entitled: Criminal Justice, the New Technologies and the Constitution. The report surveys the new technologies used in the investigation apprehension and confinement of criminals and " addresses that delicate balance to be maintained between the national interest and individual rights." As welcome as this report is to those of us who are interested in a government of law rather than of men, it manages to omit any discussion of the use of directed energy weapons from the section on "less than lethal" weapons. For instance, a weapon has been developed to paralyze a person at a distance through a brick wall if necessary. This weapon was developed during 1983 and 84 for use in situations where hostages are being held. A variation of this weapon has been purchased by the Marine Corps for confusing and disorienting the enemy. American weapons research has centered on pulse radiation in the gigahertz frequency band for a very interesting reason. In 1972, the Department of the Army researched Soviet and other foreign literature sources and discovered over 500 studies devoted to the biological effects of Super High Frequency Electromagnetic Oscillations (SHF).
>
> "SHF may have potential uses as a technique for altering human behavior. Lethal and non-lethal aspects have been shown to exist. In certain non-lethal exposures definite behavioral changes have occurred. There also appears to be a change in mammals when exposed to SHF, and sensitivity to sound, light, and olfactory stimuli."
>
> The significance of this intelligence document in terms of the medical experiments commissioned by the Central Intelligence Agency since 1976 is that "emphasis in this report is placed on influencing individuals as opposed to groups. Secondly, this report is a trend study and therefore contains statements predicting Soviet knowledge and capabilities for influencing human behavior up to fifteen years ahead, or 1987. It foreshadows the enormous effort put into behavior control experiments employing the use of masers and microwave beam weapons on involuntary human subjects during the Reagan/Bush regime. Thirdly, despite the report titled, Controlled Offensive Behavior USSR., it opens with a chapter describing the use of torture on Catholic prisoners in British jails in Northern Ireland. The

inclusion of this chapter at all and its position at the front of the report clearly is intended to suggest that it is permissible for the United States to torture its own citizens because these methods are being used by our very civilized cousins in Britain and not only barbarians in the Soviet Union.

Fourthly, the report states that "the purpose of mind altering techniques is to create one or more of several different possible states in the conscious or unconscious area of the brain. The ultimate goal of controlled offensive behavior might well be the total submission of one's will to some outside force." After discussion of the possible states short of complete submission, which may be the goal of Soviet research in behavior control, the author states, "since the desired end product of this type of research is some change in the human mind, only the non-lethal aspects are discussed in this report. It should be remembered however, that some techniques have lethal thresholds."

In the current round of American behavior control experiments, no allowance is made for legal thresholds. The use of involuntary human subjects provided by the Central Intelligence Agency precludes the necessity for the researchers to consider lethal thresholds and legal consequences. A curious situation has emerged in which torturers and murderers attend our meetings, address us on the failings of our own research and misdirect us with papers on the benign effects of incubating eggs in 60 hz magnetic fields in order to buy time for their own well paid and frequently lethal experiments on involuntary human subjects.

Of particular interest in light of current developments are two paragraphs in the very last chapter which concern a Boston based, CIA front organization, the Scientific Engineering Institute, which still exists not so incidentally. The SEI was initially established to do research on radar. In the 1960's the SEI added a wing devoted to "life sciences" and hired a group of behavioral and medical scientists.

Lastly I would like to site another defense intelligence agency report also prepared by the U.S. Army. It is titled BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF ELECTROMAGNETIC RADIATION, RADIO, AND MICROWAVES, EURASIAN COMMUNIST COUNTRIES. It was published by the Defense Intelligence Agency in March of 1976.

The importance of this report rests not on its content, much of which seems to remain classified, but in its acknowledgment of a shift in focus in less than four years from a wide range of behavior control interests to just one, electromagnetic radiation. The date of this report is also significant. It was published just as George Herbert Walker Bush became Director of Central Intelligence. Experiments on involuntary human subjects were rapidly authorized by the new director, but outside of the United States because of the wrath of congress at that time.

An experiment was begun in Edmunton, Alberta, Canada under the aegis of an American oil company with which the DCI was on friendly terms. It consisted initially of blasting a man's brain with a microwave analog of sound waves for two to three hours a day. This has the effect of producing auditory hallucinations[225].

A further discussion of events leading up to the present series of mind control experiments will have to wait another occasion in favor of a discussion of the technology of which the United States is now possessed. As I have already indicated, one of the principal features of the weapons system is its ability to produce auditory effects or hallucinations. Using these effects to broadcast defeat into the minds of the enemy was a particular dream of Leonard Peroots of the U.S. Airforce. He hired droves of consultants to tell him how to use a microwave beam to implant ideas in the mind of the enemy and to be perfectly fair, to urge on his own troops to superhuman deeds of valor.

Instead Peroots turned to a man who promised him results. This man remembered the microwave analog audiograms used by Dr. Joseph Sharp to beam auditory hallucinations into his own head at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research in 1973. He promised Peroots that he could talk a human being to death if furnished with the equipment Sharp had used at Walter Reed, a slave and personal security. This was the origin of the medical atrocities which began in Edmonton Alberta in 1976 under the protection of the Central Intelligence Agency and which continue to this day.

By the fall of 1983 experiments had produced some communications equipment which had far exceeded the simple dream of broadcasting defeat into the minds of the enemy. It is not only capable of producing auditory hallucinations, but visual hallucinations as well. The visual hallucinations have been described to me by a German artist on whom this equipment is being used involuntary as having the quality of 35 mm color slides. Besides these sensory hallucinations, the same equipment can be used to block all sensation. It is being used to distort and even to completely block all senses. With it, the ultimate in sensory deprivation experiments can be performed. There's no peeking under the electromagnetic blindfold this equipment creates. I should mention in this context that the CIA now has at its disposal the most evil, the most cunning torture devised by any government in all of human history. It is truly Satanic in its moral or ethical implications. It is a torture which is commensurate with the degeneracy of a nation which is prepared and well on its way to polluting all life on earth into extinction. The torture I am writing of I can only describe as thought deprivation. It is used in conjunction with sensory deprivation but it is in fact sensory deprivation times ten to the tenth power. We're all familiar with the sensation of being exposed to very loud noises. They're irritating and we try to remove ourselves from them. We might say, "It's so noisy in here I can't hear myself think."

---

[225] For an explanation of how audible voices are broadcast directly into the brain, see MICROWAVE AUDITORY EFFECTS AND APPLICATIONS, James C. Lin, PHD, Thomas Springfield, Ill, 1978. Particularly page 176.

Human beings perceive thought as "audible sound". It is something which we "hear". We "listen" to ourselves think. This quality of listening to ourselves think, of hearing our own thoughts, can be extinguished by this device so that it is not possible to hear oneself think. I have no idea how this effect is produced. It may be accomplished by playing a signal into the auditory nerve at such a high power that it does in fact drown out the "sound" of all thought, but I do not believe that is how it is being done. I do not know enough about the physiology of the brain to explain how it might be done, but the CIA can do it with the mind control technology at its disposal. That is the bad news. The good news is one continues to think even if one cannot hear oneself think. Do not panic. There is nothing to fear. On the other hand, our thought process is the thing that distinguishes man from other forms of life. *Cogito ergo sum*. But *cogito* is no longer necessarily possible. Where does this leave *sum*. *(It means I think therefore I am, but if you can no longer think, are you?)* Furthermore this communications equipment is able to produce pain. Enormous amounts of pain. Pain is only another nerve signal. And pain is applied in great quantities in the torture regimen. Sometimes the pain is specific and describable. More often it is general and indescribable. It is very much like being immersed in water only it isn't water, it is pain. The pain surges and laps at one like water. I've also described this pain as being very much like having an electric current passing through one.[226]

---

[226] Harlan Girard, *INTERNATIONAL COMMITTEE FOR THE CONVENTION AGAINST OFFENSIVE MICROWAVE WEAPONS*, POB 5700, Philadelphia, Pa. 19102-8700.

Electronic Measurements

This picture shows the frequencies 18.5 - 18.7 KHz which were sent to a brain transmitter. The chart was created by a printer connected to a radio frequency analyzing computer during measurements from a transmitter in a person's skull.

While measuring other persons, the wavelengths were counted at similar values.

Long wavelengths are always used since they work globally at the speed of light, and the frequencies are usually between 15 - 35 KHz.

The information on pages this page and the next is courtesy of a Swedish group researching mind control: Mediaecco, Box 136, 114-79 Stockholm, Sweden, Fax +46 - 8 - 668 60 66.

This is the fourth transmitter in my head and it was inserted in connection with an appearance at Nacka Police station, just outside Stockholm, on 26th November 1975, ostensibly for interrogation. I was locked up in a cell, but after a short while I fall into a deep sleep from which I emerge to an entirely new life. It is during these hours when the transmitter is implanted, and when, I awake I have a seering highfrequency signal at about 100 dB in my skull. This was to plague me for about 16 hours a day for the past 8 years and completely transform my life. It depressed the functional capacity of my right cerebral hemisphere and altered my personality, behaviour and abilities as if they no longer were part of myself. This torture finally ceased during 1983.

REMOVED

This is the first transmitter implanted in my head: it was inserted during an operation at Söder Hosptial in 1967 under the authorisation of surgeon Curt Strand. A great many Swedish doctors, as well as the Swedish National Board of Health and Welfare (N.B.H.W) have refused the presence of the transmitter in radiographs, yet it was surgically removed at a private clinic in Athens in March 1978.

REMOVED

After having the 1967 transmitter surgically removed in Athens in March 1978, leaving it for analysis to New York University, I returned home in June only to find myself arrested for fraud. After one month of being detained, a fresh transmitter was suddenly activated; it had been placed so low down in my right nostril that it was possible to feel the top with the finger and visible to a doctor with the aid of a nasal specula, an instrument with which one can inspect the nasal passages. This transmitter was surgically removed in Athens, in 1982 but can be clearly identified on other x-ray pictures.

Professor P.A. Lindstrom wrote in one of his statements concerning this and other x-ray pictures; "I can only confirm that some foreign objects, most likely brain transmitters have been implanted at the base of your frontal brain and in the skull. In my opinion there is no excuse for such implantations. I fully agree with Lincoln Lawrence who in his book on page 27 wrote; "There are two particulary dreadful procedures which have been developed. Those working and playing with them secretly call them R.H.I.C. and E.D.O.M. - Radio-Hypnotic Intra-cerebral Control and Electronical Dissolution of Memory..."

This is a detail on an x-ray photograph taken directly from above. In the centre are the nasal passages and the dark semi-circular area are the teeth in the upper jaw. The picture was taken at Karolinska Hospital where all radiographers deny that any foreign object can be identified in this picture. However, there are a number of overseas physicians who testify the obvious fact, that several transmitters can be seen quite clearly.

This is the third transmitter placed in my head and the first which was embedded in my brain. Without doubt it was implanted while being detained by the police in Stockholm 1973; this was my first period of custody and afterwards I underwent considerable personality modification, a process which had already begun in 1967 but accelerated rapidly towards criminality after the implantation of the second transmitter.

This is the second implanted transmitter; this device appeared under rather unusual circumstances on 10th March 1972

This implantation preceded a period of prolonged torture with personality-altering radio signals 10-20 hours a day and they started communicating directly with my brain. It was then I realised that they could dicern my thoughts and, indeed, experience my entire range of cognitive activity. The transmitter ceased functioning almost a decade later and with it the communication with my thoughts and the destructed signals.

36

A SATANIC-UFO REICH?

Operation Mind Control has brought the mental health profession to the verge of a nervous breakdown. Attacked by cryptocratic peers in such organizations as the Cult Awareness Network and False Memory Syndrome Foundation on the one hand and grappling with the techniques of psychiatry and psychology which the cryptocracy has leapfrogged with new technology, the profession can only make the mentally tortured comfortable while it looks desperately for a way to heal them. The healing techniques are in the hands of a few, some of them "deprogrammers" like Mark Phillips who once worked for the cryptocracy and learned the codes cues and triggers and knows practically how the "classical" conditioning-like technology of the cryptocracy comes to work like hypnosis.

The "mental health pros," as we know them, are learning to completely rethink their approaches to healing the victims of the cryptocracy's mind control projects. While insights into what is state-of-the-art of mind control today begins with a study of physics, it is still built upon well-tested patterns of human functions. But, the traditional "let's get in touch with our feelings" kind of therapies are not helpful.

One might begin one's education with a book edited by Karl H. Pribram entitled *Rethinking Neural Networks:*[227]

> Quantum Neurodynamics (QND) provides an explicit, quantifiable model of the mechanisms of consciousness in the higher vertebrates...
>
> At the heart ... is the following rather bold hypotheses: *Consciousness of a stimulus is mediated NOT by the immediate neuro-synaptic activation, but rather by some mediator of nonlinear wave mechanics that allows probability to flow in response to the neuro-synaptic activation field...*
>
> A "personality" is a consistent pattern of responses to stimuli and situations. in QND, the personality of the stochastic filter is

---

[227] Karl H. Pribram, Editor, *Rethinking Neural Networks: Quantum Fields and Biological Data*, Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, 1993 Hillsdale, New Jersey. 1993.

> determined by the locally homotopic mappings of experience onto the neural domain and by the configuration of discontinuities between homotopic domains.
>
> A conscious train of thought consists of a well-formed wave packet propagating within the neural domain in response to a combination of inputs from a number of sources, including the sensory apparatus and the outputs of other domains at various levels of abstraction. Whenever the probability density corresponding to this wave packet produces an expectation that does not compare well with the actual ensemble of inputs, the result is a potential field gradient (or "barrier", if it is sufficiently steep) that deflects the wave packet toward states associated with less prediction error.
>
> Suppose that when the network's personality is being formed, it experiences a deliberately consistent "diabolical" training in which certain common experiences are interrupted with frustrating or painful intervention. QND learning will encode the painful experience on the trajectory so that it will be properly predicted as a consequence of the prior experience. (Incidentally, QND learning models classical conditioning even though it is simple Hebbian, because of the causal dynamics of the Schroedinger equation.) Whenever the common experience subsequently occurs without the intervention of the diabolical agent, the extreme difference between the expected punishment and the benign experience drives the conscious wave packet away from the states where the pain was stored. This "avoidance" has two consequences, one obvious and the other subtle. The obvious effect is that the deflected wave packet will generate an altered behavior pattern. The subtle effect is that the neurons where the painful patterns are encoded will be prevented from receiving enough probability to allow the patterns to be corrected.
>
> Now suppose that the diabolical training is "extensive", both figuratively and literally. That is, suppose that it succeeds in placing other avoidance patterns into a geometry that surrounds and isolates a large cognitive domain from the rest of the neural network. Subsequently, wavepackets that form in that domain will be trapped there, and that domain will then develop a personality that is distinct from the personality of the exterior domain(s). *But the entrapment is not permanent.* Quantum tunneling provides a mechanism for penetration of the barrier, after which another distinct personality emerges...

A fascinating approach to the human mind. The above dovetails with what we know from practical experience works in Ericksonian techniques and NLP processing. The fact is, here is more fruit of cryptocratic research, right here in the library for all to see, and few, if any healers have ever read it. Though you can probably be assured the mind controllers have read it.

The saddest truth of Operation Mind Control didn't really hit me until I heard it said by Dr. Colin A. Ross. A psychiatrist, Ross is one of the western world's foremost authorities on Dissociative Identity Disorder, so when he speaks about the corruption of his peers and his profession it is not spoken lightly. He said it to me one morning, long distance over his cellular phone as he drove to work. I knew the facts. I'd written about them in 1978, but the impact didn't come home until I heard Dr. Ross say it:

> "Virtually every leading psychiatrist in North America between the 1940's and the 1970's was involved in some aspect of the CIA's mind control research."

Dr. K. Obewan (the pseudonym of a gifted clinical psychologist who was targeted for persecution and prosecution by one of the well-endowed and negatively motivated "foundations") showed me a chart which compared the "history of psychiatry," to the "history of the diagnosis of dissociation" and the "history of mind control." (See part 2 of Appendix E.)

It shows the progress of psychiatry beginning in 1883 with the diagnosis and treatment of manic-depressive insanity and dementia praecox, with hysteria being treated by surgical removal and or cauterization of the clitoris in 1885, and masturbation treated by means of circumcision in 1890. In the history of dissociation it shows Janet focusing on dissociation of traumatic memories while Charcot focused on psychological effects of overwhelming experiences. In 1896-97, the chart shows the first UFO wave began. Is it a coincidence that dissociation came along with the first modern wave of UFO's? Is it a coincidence that the secret MKULTRA research shifted into high gear at the same time as the modern UFO "flaps"?

After reading a very rough and earlier draft of this "researchers edition" of *Operation Mind Control* (which is still rough and seeking your corrections and criticism), Dr. Obewan wrote me a series of letters worth excerpting:

> I believe you are on the edge of understanding planetary paranoia. As a result of the MKULTRA program, problems in mental health have catapulted over the past few years. As a result of the atrocities of that program a new industry has been created within the mental health field -- an industry that is reinforcing *craziness.!*
>
> While being caught up in trying to treat the enormous number of victims coming forth over the past 10 years, the mental health field has failed to recognize or even look at the big picture. I believe we

have a psychological warfare Trojan Horse that has been developed out of the MKULTRA research...

I've heard the scenario of "O" and countless others time and time again. The only thing that changes is the name of the person identified as the abuser... The danger is that the hate that one experiences directed toward a government or an authority figure is projected onto the mental health professional who is confronting the scenario of rape, human destruction, torture, etc. The blowback effect of these stories is enormous. Doctors are being sued, harassed, driven out of business. They are losing their friends and families. Some have even committed suicide when they have been brought to confront this Trojan Horse.

What is the big picture as far as the US and tort liability goes?

Victims are coming forward en mass to sue for damages and they're winning. With organizations such as the False Memory Syndrome Foundation providing "expert witnesses" to assist lawyers in convincing juries that the victims of child abuse -- MPD's who may have been used by the intelligence agencies -- could not be telling the truth, the cryptocracy's secrets will remain covered. For when the suits begin in the MKULTRA cases, where will they end?

One of the important messages your book can get across is that there are people who really did get zapped by the government. And if not zapped by the "official" government, zapped by renegades or retired government personnel who have acquired a taste for perversions that have been cultivated allegedly in the interest of national security.

We also have dabblers in ritual crime and the mind control technology (which is being printed in underground papers in the music field, for example) which shows people how to alter another's perceptions and personalities. The cat is out of the bag. Our entire society will soon be having fun "playing with each other's minds" using these methods of mind control developed by our government.

The government's real motive remains unrevealed. Perhaps this new mind control was developed to protect our people from the memories of justifiable atrocities they had to commit in the true interests of national security or merely from memories of terrifying alien encounters. Cults (maybe government cults) sophisticated in mind control have been successful.

It was a shock to all of us to hear what the patients had been saying. Most of us were at a loss until people started publishing reports that these events were being treated under the dx MPD. For years it had been grope and fumble on our own, while the cryptocracy alone had the tools, the codes, the cues and triggers which could heal or enslave the minds of their victims.

I thought a great deal about your book Operation Mind Control and how it helps to understand the massive thought control by the government that Orwell wrote about in "1984". The symbolism between the abductees and the ritual abuse survivors (see part 1 of Appendix E) denotes a conflict between values of the old and values of the new.

Although December 2, 1942 was the beginning of the creation of the first self-sustaining nuclear chain reaction which started the Atomic Age, it took us 3 years to use the destructive powers when we dropped the bomb in 1945 on Hiroshima. One hundred years from 1898, when Madam Curie and her husband Pierre discovered plutonium & radium and literally split the first atom, will be 1998 a year of destruction projected by hundreds of thousands of (cult) people, in that 3x666 will equal 1998, and the beginning of Armageddon.

Projections from abductees since 1947, when UFO data began to emerge on a large scale after the Roswell incident, are that we have destroyed our environment and that a new breed of humanoids needs to be produced so that we don't self-exterminate. How do we know that the hole in the ozone wasn't caused by the Atom Bomb?

With the creation of the CIA in 1947 our government started a process by which destruction, self-doubt, isolating the truth, explaining away truth, became a way of life as mutual mistrust was a key factor in destablizing societies. The CIA labeled people as Crazy, Convicts or Crusaders to discredit them when they were used as witnesses or came forward to testify. However, it is the very group of Crazies, Convicts or Crusaders who have come forward with the wealth of information that essentially is behind this book. (Does that include the professionals too, good doctor?). It is this group as a whole that has been exploited and manipulated to gain control of nations and it is this group that has historically been kept "under control" by discrediting, minimizing and humiliating them.

> However, it appears that we are at a time of crisis when as the bourgeoisie was once overcome by the proletariat, the CCC's are making an effort to overcome the establishment.
>
> It is difficult to oversee massive movements until they have become so enormous and corrupt that it is impossible to stop them. Since the mentally ill have always been a boilerplate for news and defamation, their early victimization by predators has been harnessed and stepped on by psychiatry, the government, the media for decades. Now that dissociation and various traumas related to dissociation have once again emerged and we find an enormous lobby trying to stomp it out. Unfortunately there is a trail of evidence to support how psychiatry and the government have victimized thousands in medical research to ultimately control mankind. Mind Control research proves that existentialism never existed and that generations of evil belief systems have dominated society for centuries.
>
> The government with the most toys, technology and trainees (slaves) wins. The ultimate goal to this is through Mind Control - in the ultimate double think society.

Dr. Ross[228] underlines Obewan's experiences with the mental health environment. In his compelling book *The Osiris Complex* Ross writes:

> "There was always doubt about the reality of the stories Margaret told. For instance, one of her alters had a clear memory of aliens coming into her apartment, impregnating her, coming back some months later to remove the fetus, then returning years later to show her the half-human, half-alien child they were raising among the stars. This alter was mortified when I raised the possibility that the aliens were possibly not literally real: she cried profusely, and said I had ruined the therapy and her chances of recovery forever by doubting her.
>
> "Margaret made this claim before I had heard about the current epidemic of UFO abductions. I did not realize, when I heard Margaret's story that thousands of people in North America have similar memories. Many of these people probably have complex dissociative disorders, but many appear to be otherwise normal. The only lesson I learned from Margaret in this regard is that expressing doubt damages the treatment alliance: whether failing to express doubt reinforces a delusional disorder, I don't know. One's view of this issue will hinge on whether or not one believes in the reality of UFOs, alien abductions, and related phenomena.

---

[228] Ross, Colin A., M.D. *The Osiris Comples, Case-Studies in Multiple Personality Disorder*, Univeristy of Toronto Press, Toronto, Canada 1994.

> "If the abductions are real, it would appear that the human race is being used as breeders, with amnesia for the human participation implanted hypnotically by the aliens. Other alters of Margaret's told me that they had been ritually abused in Satanic cults, and that these cults used women as breeders of babies for sacrifice. According to the current folklore in the dissociative-disorders field, these cults practice mind control and the creation of amnesia, much like the aliens do. Margaret taught me that there is a connection of some kind between UFO abductions and the use of women as breeders for Satanic cults. What is the connection? I don't know.
>
> "In thinking about what was real in Margaret's stories, and what fantasy, it was not easy to determine where to draw the line. I don't want to make the kind of mistake 'good Germans' did who looked the other way and pretended Auschwitz didn't exist, if there is a Satanic Third Reich active in North America today. On the other hand, I don't want to be the dupe of mass hysteria and urban legend. What to do? What to believe? I don't know."

Dr. Obewan further commented on the experience of working in a clinical setting in a California hospital treating MPD patients:

> In general, whenever we called the FBI to report Satanic ritual abuse of someone, there was no interest shown. They'd take a report over the phone. But when we told the FBI that an individual had been ritually abused by a Nazi cult, an agent would be down to get all the details.

Dr. James P. Viken[229], of Minnesota pulls no punches. A psychologist who has been working with "some (mind control) victims of abuse by U.S. Intelligence agencies" he says he "made a number of startling, disgusting discoveries." He discovered that drugs were being brought into the U.S. by government agencies. That there were domestic "Hit Squads" in the Department of Defense, the Department of Justice, the Federal Bureau of Investigation, the Central Intelligence Agency, and the U.S. Customs Service. He has uncovered evidence of the "CIA's and FBI's paedophile kidnapping rings used to compromise politicians, diplomats and corporate CEO's." His efforts to bring this to the attention of the proper authorities so far has come to naught. Dr. Viken writes, "We've tried to talk to the local law enforcement agencies, the FBI and the CIA. Nobody wants to hear anything about any of this ."

Dr. Viken contacted me in hopes that I could verify the authenticity of documents entitled the COM-12 Briefings. (See Chapter 37). Viken's tone was one of frustration and dispair. We compared notes and agreed that maybe Goethe was right when he said, "Danger fosters the rescuing power."

---

[229] Letter dated September 29, 1994 followed up by a phone call to the author on October 3, 1994.

Clinical psychologist Dr. Randy Noblitt[230] was the first psychologist I heard accurately describe the mechanics of the programming he was confronting in his patients. A former Air Force psychologist, Noblitt said that like most students in graduate school he believed that" hypnosis couldn't make people do things they wouldn't normally do." He was trained in hypnosis and used it in his practice which consisted mostly of patients who were diagnosed as having "Borderline Personality Disorder." After the diagnosis Multiple Personality Disorder entered the diagnostic manual, Noblitt realized that a large number of the patients he saw turned out to be MPD's. "When I started," Noblitt said, "I believed that MPD was a crock. It was too bizarre. It had to be something fabricated by patients and spacey therapists. And then I had never seen an MPD person." Noblitt said he was guilty of doing what he's since witnessed so many of his peers do, remain closed minded to MPD. He also said, the MPD phenomenon is so difficult to treat that " ...there is a tendency among therapists to walk away from this."

Noblitt said that it's not uncommon to find therapists suffering from "Secondary Post Traumatic Stress Disorder:"

> It's not unusual when psychologists get together to hear them talk about not being able to sleep. "I don't look at the moon the way I used to. I once thought it was beautiful, now I think it's something evil...". (because many of the cult rituals happen at the full moon)... There are changes that occur when you hear horrible stories day after day. For many clinicians this is something they are unwilling to work with... but it's a burden we all must carry...

After California passed laws requiring psychologists to report whatever a patient tells them which could indicate child abuse, the misinterpretations and systemic failures began to take its toll. Parents were jailed -- innocent or guilty, it mattered not. The patients were not made the better by the law. A top notch psychotherapist who was accused of manipulating a patient by implanting "false memories" wrote us. Her comments illustrate the Post Traumatic Stress Disorder Noblitt describes:

> I sit here shaken and depressed, feeling intimidated and frightened. I have little faith in a system of justice and a system of balances for a world which I once believed in. Friends have told me that my depression is speaking for me. I know that if this is a depression, it is the most hopeless and helpless feeling of dispair that I have ever felt. If this is the feeling that my patients had when they came to me, and they are the hapless victims of external threats and abuses like I have

---

[230] Randy Noblitt, Ph. D., *CULT AND RITUAL TRAUMA DISORDER, Austin, Texas 1993.*

> been, then I too suffer from the same malaise I once tried to help my patients with.
>
> How could this happen in a system of democracy and a system of justice? I was lead to believe that our system was the basis for a free world called America.
>
> Could it be that the person who relegated me to be the contact person within a therapeutic relationship only wanted to show me how bad it really was?
>
> Once these patients reveal an abuse that falls within the "reportable Laws" which include suspected child abuse, the relationship changes. The therapist is always faced with the dillema of whether or not to report the abuse. Should the therapist not report the abuse then they are responsible legally. And, should they report it, they are responsible morally. So, once the alleged abuse is brought out into the open, then it becomes a problem.
>
> If you are accused of abusing your child, by your child, you are protected by several groups and courses of action. But, if you are a therapist who conforms to the law and makes a report on child abuse, the therapist becomes the one accused of wrongdoing. "They hypnotized the patient and put false memories in their heads."
>
> There is something very wrong here becasue there are really no laws to protect the therapist who is wrongfully accused.

There is neither protection for the therapist from the cults or the cryptocrat controllers. In 1992, Dr. D. Corydon Hammond, an advising editor to ***The American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis,*** recipient of the 1989 Presidential Award of Merit from the ***Journal of Abnormal Psychology***, a recipient of a host of degrees and honors and a member of all the prestigious societies, gave a speech originally entitled " MPD: Ritual Abuse." It was known in the ritual abuse lore as "The Greenbaum Speech". I'd heard about it and had tried to purchase it, but it had been taken off the market. I found it years later on the Internet.

I called his office and asked Dr. Hammond if I could reprint the speech since I believed that it was central to the beginning of a real approach to deprogramming the so-called Monarch Victims. I told him I wanted to check the authenticity of the paper I'd found on the Internet. He said, "I own the copyright and I have withdrawn that paper from circulation."

I asked him why he'd done that, and he hesitated a moment before he told me that he didn't want any attention called to him, since, shortly after he gave the so-called "Greenbaum speech" his family, his wife and child, had received serious death threats. (I curbed my presumptuousness. I didn't tell him that kind of thing goes with this territory. I didn't insult him by reminding him that fear is the weapon the cryptocracy uses to divide us from ourselves and each other.)

Then, Randy Noblitt came across the kind of trauma-based programming that the survivors have been describing in this book. He was talking to four patients who had been ritually abused and he mistakenly used the words "deeper and deeper" in a non-hypnotic context. One of the patients objected, telling him not to use those words, but he didn't understand whats he was trying to tell him and he used them again and again and pretty soon all four of, the patients he was talking to were asleep. He tried to wake them up, but they wouldn't wake up. One slept for hours. Everything he knew as a hypnotist that would bring a patient out of a trance wouldn't work with these patients. He talked with them separately the next week and discovered they had been classically conditioned. In an encounter with one patient he pressed her on how classical conditioning was accomplished. She tried to avoid the subject, but when he kept pressing her:

> ...an alter personality came out and said that she remembered being a little girl who had been cut on her wrist. And as they cut her the people were saying, 'deeper and deeper and deeper' with each cut. This was not hypnosis. This was classical conditioning. What they were doing was taking a traumatic experience, which she described as a state of shock or trance, deeper than normally hypnotherapists produce, and then pairing a word with that. Now, if they wanted to, the cult people could even use the word in conversation and this person would start getting trancey.
>
> I asked her then, why was I unable to bring people out of this trance? And she said,' You didn't say it the right way.' There was a specific formula for getting her out of the trance. This was a cult induced trance. You just don't get someone out of it by suggestion, there's a specific formula. And she told me what the formula was.
>
> So then I thought I would go back and cross validate this. I would go back to each patient and see if indeed they did trance if I used this word in my normal conversation -- and there were a couple of other words too. Then, could I bring them out with the formula she gave me. I did not tell them in advance what I was up to because I didn't want to put any ideas in their heads. I went back to each patient... and I said the word in conversation and they each went out. I then used the formula for bringing them back. Well, to me, this was my first inclination that there were mind control techniques I had never heard of in graduate school.
>
> When I was in graduate school people said that hypnosis was not a technique that could make people do things that they would not normally do. And I believed that. I had never seen anyone go out so

> deeply that I thought they would do something their conscious would not normally allow.
>
> Additionally there was a famous psychologist and hypnotherapist named (Ernest) Hilgard who described giving a female student a hypnotic suggestion that he would take her out to a beautiful meal and she would not be able to eat it. He took her out and she sat down and ate the meal anyway. Hilgard used this to prove that hypnosis was really not that powerful. And I believed that. Interesting enough Hilgard is one of the people on the Board of Advisors of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation.
>
> But this (classical conditioning his patients taught him about) was something entirely different. I then began to explore something that the patients and some of the therapists have been calling 'programming.'...Programming can be distinguished from 'hypnosis' and from what has been called 'brainwashing.'

Noblitt went through an elaborate process of 'cross-validation,' which supported his discoveries in a clinical setting. But, according to the research we've done, there is another sort of programming, something that goes far beyond anything Noblitt describes or anything that most therapists are familiar with.

It would appear that the cryptocracy is making rapid leaps in mind control research. But apparently everyone would not agree. Admittedly the following comment is a few years old, but here's a bit of dissent about the possibility of what the E.M. Target survivors are describing. Alan Gevins, (in 1986) the chief scientist of EEG Systems Laboratory in San Francisco is quoted in Judith Hooper and Dick Teresi's book ***The 3-Pound Universe***[231]:

> If anyone could create a brain-eavesdropping device, the EEG systems Lab could. And it can't even if it wanted to. Gevins even objects to using terms like 'decoding' in connection with the dynamic, probabilistic processes of the brain. "I've been asked a bunch of times, Is there a code in the brain for the word *dog?*" He says, "I think people have seen too many spy movies. First of all, the brain probably doesn't work that way. It isn't a deterministic machine with an invariant code; it's statistical, probabilistic. And if the brain *did* work that way, I can't imagine the kind of instrument you'd need to resolve it. If there *were* unchanging codes for the word *dog*, there would be hundreds of them, corresponding to all your different asociations with *dog.* And they might be scattered all over the brain. Do you know how may billions of bits of information would be required *each second* to pick out something like that? And the number of contaminants that would interfere with it...

---

[231] Judith Hooper and Dick Teresi, *THE 3-POUND UNIVERSE, The Brain – From the Chemistry of the Mind to The New Frontiers of the Soul, Dell, N.Y. 1986.*

> "As for all this stuff that gets into the *National Enquirer* -- you know, CIA MAKES NEW MIND CONTROL DEVICE -- people get awfully paranoid about this, because it concerns the mind and the spirit, the last resort of privacy. But it's pretty farfetched. Not that people won't try to, but it won't work. A person can just grit his teeth, and the whole thing is screwed up. Television works much better for mind control than EEG techniques...

But in 1994, there is serious new thinking going on about mind-machine interface. It would appear that there's interest in using computers to help create Dissociative Identity Disorders. Dr. Karl H. Pribam again:

> Analog VLSI Network Models,
>
> Cortical Linking Neural Network Models,
>
> and
>
> Quantum Holographic Neural technology[232]
>
> Quantum neural holography is implemented in a program which bridges the gap between neurophysiology and models of neural network engineering. The thrust of the program is to describe mathematically the neurodynamical functional connectivity of analog association among stimulus-evoked coherent neural wavelets. It represents the basic function of cortical neural network models. Quantum neural holography represents a fundamental change from the standard connectionist models used in Artificial Neural Network (ANN) theory in that it reconciles the linear highly nonlinear dynamical systems aspect of neurodynamics...
>
> ANNs are fascinating objects where many different structures meet with highly interesting applications in machine vision and robotics...

The results of this "theoretical science" could be what we're hearing described by those who are E.M. Targets or "Wavies". Maybe the rescuing power to this technology resides in U.S. Patent # 616-183, June 1, 1984, by H.K. Puharich, "Method and means for shielding a person from the effects of ELF magnetic waves". And maybe this technology will fall into the hands of a group like COM-12. If there is such a group as COM-12 it must be staffed by younger versions of people such as L. Fletcher Prouty, Legion of Merit honoree, a valiant warrior in any age, whose heart was literally broken by petty souls heaping disgrace and dishonor upon the noble American experiment.

Col. Prouty, the "Man X" played by Donald Sutherland in Oliver Stone's film *JFK*, has seen the crytocracy grow from its beginnings in World War Two. Much of his work is described in ***The Secret Team***, a must-read for any student of modern

---

[232] Pribam, Op cit.

U.S. history. In his more recent book, *JFK, The CIA, Vietnam and The Plot To Assassinate John F. Kennedy,*[233] what he writes about the power elite applies to those who are behind the uses and abuses of Project Monarch as well as all the other projects of MKULTRA:

> Men in positions of great power have been forced to realize that their aspirations and responsibilities have exceeded the horizons of their own experience, knowledge, and capability. Yet, because they are in charge of this high-technology society, they are compelled to do something. This overpowering necessity to do something -- although our leaders do not know precisely what to do or how to do it -- creates in the power elite an overbearing fear of the people. It is the fear not of you and me as individuals but of the smoldering threat of vast populations and of potential uprisings of the masses,
>
> This power elite is not easy to define; but the fact that it exists makes itself known from time to time. Concerning the power elite, R. Buckminster Fuller wrote of the "vastly ambitious individuals who (have) become so effectively powerful because of their ability to remain invisible while operating behind the national scenery." Fuller noted also, "Always their victories (are) in the name of some powerful sovereign-ruled country. The real power structures (are) always the invisible ones behind the visible sovereign powers."
>
> The power elite is not a group from one nation or even of one alliance of nations. It operates throughout the world and no doubt has done so for many, many centuries.
>
> These leaders are influenced by the persuasion of a quartet of the greatest propaganda schemes ever put forth by man:
>
> 1. The concept of "real property," a function of "colonialism" that began with the circumnavigation of Earth by Magellan's ships in 1520. A "doctrine of discovery and rights of conquest" was described by John Locke in his philosophy of natural law.
> 2. The population theory of Malthus.
> 3. Darwin's theory of evolution, as enhanced by the concept of the survival of the fittest.
> 4. Heisenberg's theory of indeterminacy, that is, that God throws the dice, and similar barriers to the real advancement of science and technology today.

Add to this list the Alien thesis, that which is reported by the Monarch survivors and explained as mere "screens" and "scrambles" by their deprogrammers, similar to the thesis Zecharia Sitchin[234] gained from the ancient Sumerian texts -- humanity came from the stars, most likely genetically engineered in a time before recorded history, -- or as novelist-cum-abductee Whitley Streiber writes in his four book series starting with *Communion*[235], or as described by the 78-year-old Army veteran who spoke out for the first time in 1994 about his experience of guarding the "airfoil" wreckage at Roswell, New Mexico in 1947 -- what if we actually have been contacted by "little men.[236]" Or, what if we're just being programmed to believe we have made contact -- either because it motivates us to defend ourselves and thus makes us work harder, or we actually have made contact, a long time ago, and we're being spoon-fed the programming so that we won't panic like a herd of skittish antelope.

---

[233] Prouty, Col. L. Fletcher, *JFK, The CIA, Vietnam, and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Birch Lane Press/ Carol Publishing Group,, New York, 1992.

The "mental health industry" is involved in all of the above. But there is brutal infighting and apparent outside intervention in the "industry" so that what once was the domain of pure science is often the battlefield of covert politics.

One part of a person suffering from DID told their therapist all the lurid and traumatic incidents of ritual abuse involving sadistic sex, terror and degradation as a child in the hands of a satanic cult. Another part of the same person told the therapist about being abducted aboard a UFO. In a child's voice the patient told the therapist all the usual things abductees say, there were no light bulbs on the ship, but the room was well lit. The aliens had big heads and big black pupiless eyes. They spoke "telepathically" without moving thier lips and told her that "humans will not be allowed out of their play pen because they don't know how to play with other children. We are handicapped children," the child alter said, "we are not able to hear each other's inner thoughts or feel each other's inner pain. Until we can do that, they will not let us get out of our play pen. When we can feel each other's pain, we will be able to heal each other. Then we can come out and play with the others."

According to Dr. Jim Viken, there's no use turning to law enforcement agencies for assistance, as the cryptocracy's shadow falls even over small towns. And he wonders if, looking at all the advanced technology he's been hearing about, if more advanced alien intelligences aren't leading hypnoprogrammed Delta Forces who is it that will drive humanity over some global cliff in a buffalo-like Armageddon.

Remember what Goethe said: "Danger fosters the rescuing power." If there is a hypnoprogrammed army, it can be controlled by anyone with the codes, cues and triggers. And there would appear to be hopeful signs of rebellion from the citizenry, even within the cryptocracy's ranks. The Internet stories say that the news of a "militia" march on the Michigan State Capitol was suppressed from the national news. On United Nations Day, the "Militiamen" made demands of the governor and took the United Nations flag down from the flagpole upon which it flew. News coverage of similar events which occurred in 11 states has been blacked out. A photocopy samisdat publication circulated by hand carried "briefings" on mind control from a group known as COM-12.

---

[234] Sitchin, Zecharia, *THE EARTH CHRONICLES, The 12th Planet, The Stairway to Heaven, The Wars of Gods and Men, The Lost Realms, Genesis Revisted, When Time Began, Avon, New York, 1976-1994.*

[235] Streiber, Whitley, *Communion, Transformations, Majestic, Contact (working title)*, Putnam's, New York, 1987-1995.

[236] Ecker, Don, *Tale of New Roswell Witness*, UFO Magazine, Sunland, Ca., Vol. 9, No. 5, 1994.

EFFECTS OF MODULATED VHF FIELDS ON THE CENTRAL NERVOUS SYSTEM*

S. M. Bawin, L. K. Kaczmarek, and W. R. Adey

Space Biology Laboratory
Brain Research Institute and Department of Anatomy
University of California
Los Angeles, California 90024

Annals New York Academy of Sciences
% Increase in $^{45}Ca^{2+}$ Efflux
20
10
0
- 5
Control No Field
U
0.5
3
6
9
11
16
20
25
35
Frequency of Amplitude Modulation (Hz)

. Effects of amplitude-modulated 147 MHz vhf fields on the $^{45}Ca^{2+}$ efflux from the isolated forebrain of the neonatal chick. The results, given ± SEM, are expressed as percentage of increase of the calcium efflux, by comparison with control condition, in the absence of fields. *, $p < 0.05$; **, $p < 0.01$.

. The frequency spectrum of the geomagnetic field. The DC component is much stronger than the micropulsations, which stretch from just above DC to about 30 cycles per second. Note that the strength of the micropulsations is greatest between 7 and 10 cycles per second.

37

THE COM-12 BRIEFING

Almost simultaneous with the founding of the modern cryptocracy and the passing of the National Security Act in 1947, if the rumors are to be believed, there came to be a faction working within the secret agencies of government to restore the Constitution. It is claimed that this group has been fighting a resistance from within the cryptocracy against the Nazi group known as the Aquarius Group (AG) which came to cluster around the Gehlen/Nazis taken to the breast of the American intelligence community at the end of World War II. While our sources beg for anonymity, they tell us they have been known as the Guardians of the Eternal Flame or The Rowboat Magicians. To my knowledge, only twice has this group communicated with the general public, then not "officially" but through documents "leaked" or "planted" in the *samisdat*. Then they called themselves Com-12.

In the spring of 1992 they issued a 50-page briefing document entitled: *Mind Control Operations/ Aquarius Group Activities.* Since a large part of this briefing document was based on my original research and John Judge's research and, in essence followed the history which appeared in the first edition of *Operation Mind Control*, I feel I can't go wrong in highlighting the document operating under the assumption that there's at least a slim chance there's some substance behind it.

I must warn you, however, I have found no researcher who will validate it's source, and in fact paltry few admit to ever having seen this document. My single letter which was supposedly passed by hand to parties involved in the Com-12 group got no reply. The *samisdat* is filled with so much garbage and plagiarized information that this document appears, by comparison, well written, if flawed. Names have been changed (deliberately I've been told), for some reason, perhaps to have deniability built in. That is not to say, that cryptocrats can spell any better than bureaucrats, nor do they gather information any better, relying often upon rumor and gossip in their secret reports which your tax dollars purchase.

The Com-12 briefings could be nothing more than a well-thought out round-up of information from open sources circulated by some patriot group who is using this apparently clandestine briefing to make its members think they are on the inside. Or it could be a clever piece of disinformation circulated to give false hope to the belief that there is a group of "good guys" working within the cryptocracy against the Nazi "bad guys." The old saying, "If you're not part of the solution, you must be part of the problem" might apply in this case, since many will believe that the ends don't justify the means -- that anyone who even pays lip-service to any activity committed under the unconstitutional National Security Act takes part in tyranny. Everyone would agree, however, that the document is well thought-out, and as far as is known, is generally accurate.

It does fit the pattern we've seen with so much information concerning the cryptocracy, the pattern which has been so obvious for 50 years with the UFO question. For every bit of information that supports a line of thinking, there's another bit which would be cast down upon it. For every "yes" there's a "no."

Thus you might want to look upon the *Com-12 Briefing* as (take your choice): 1. Authentic confirmation of independent research 2. Validation of some information gathering procedures and sources. 3. Containing some hints toward future activities of the cryptocracy. 4. Disinformation containing cleverly hidden items that will confirm our mistakes and lead us astray from the most vital areas. 5. The complete fabrication of some "patriot group" hoping to curry favor with some audience by posing as if it's "in the know."

The *Com-12 Briefing, Mind Control Operations* begins:

> The information to follow is meant to be an outline to give PSYOP personnel a brief background and introduction into modern PSYOP warfare techniques. Our purpose in briefing COM unit personnel is to educate concerned team members in sources and methods of early Mind Control procedures and the latest projects and operations dealing with Mind Control at present-day capabilities.
>
> Aquarius Group Operations (AGO) is the primary control group of these Mind Control procedures. However, COM Group Operations has developed highly advanced radio, electronic, magnetic, and microwave warfare defense procedures which, in turn, allow for offensive measures which can be activated. While today the methods and modes of operations in our history, there are basic precautions and countermeasures which may be implemented to diminish, obstruct or deflect these offensive measures used on behalf of AGO/CIA personnel units against COM units, personnel or civilian population bases.
>
> Mind Control procedures in their infancy involved rather crude and blatant processes using hypnotic-programming, thereby allowing the conscious mind to be aware of at least the original process of

programming through hypnosis. While greatly successful in some cases, these early methods had a high failure ratio when done in large population bases. The original studies and subsequent operations did allow for the U.S. Army, Navy, Air Force, and related intelligence departments to field test and observe those methods which obtained the highest success levels and to subsequently incorporate them into today's modern Mind Control apparatus.

Through years of field experimentation, a large number of chemical components were utilized in these operations. It was verified that ingestion and/or exposure to certain chemicals and drugs (polypharmaceuticals) greatly enhanced the hypnoprogramming operations. The most successful of these tests are still used even today in some areas of enhancement or, if applicable, elimination of certain memory areas in personnel involved in highly sensitive or "Need to Know" areas of government or contract employment. With the same procedures used to eliminate memory, an individual's memory can be instantly recalled and even enhanced, according to the need of the agency to maintain strictest confidence in a desired area.

The Radio and Electro-magnetic Mind Control procedures are the latest and most effective methods utilized to date. Electro-magnetic, Radio Wave, and Microwave Pulse/ Mind Warfare has great advantages in that a desired subject or population has no knowledge of the procedure being implemented. With no conscious realization of the process being used, there is no subconscious realization of the same. This particular factor is greatly appreciated by agencies involved in areas of Mind Control and Manipulations because there is no risk of physical, person-to-person contact or action between agency personnel and the desired subjects. These procedures are not only much more reliable and successful than earlier methods, but they allow those implementing the manipulation to maintain complete anonymity.

Through years of testing the administration and saturation of certain chemicals and biogens within the world's population bases, these modern methods' ratios of success are almost absolute. Chemical and polypharmaceutical saturation has been achieved over the past twenty years of implementation with this purpose in mind and is achieved through purposeful covert introduction into population areas. In some cases, this is achieved by deliberate overt introduction through exposure or consumption on behalf of the population because of everyday usage of public water supplies, airborne pollutants and chemical agents in a wide variety of foodstuffs.

> The following will outline Mind Control procedures from post-world War II to the present. The objective of this briefing is to make all COM personnel and some population bases in civilian structure aware of projects planned for full implementation between 1990 and 1995. These procedures will allow AGO and other world intelligence groups within the "Circle of Seven" alliance to achieve their goals of an unarmed, docile and compliant world population, if not prevented from doing so.

It is thought that the "Circle of Seven" referred to are individuals much like *Spector* in James Bond films, a group of powerful individuals from the international intelligence community who run a clandestine organization which answers to no one. To call it "organized crime" would not do it justice. "Organized criminal-cryptocracy" might be closer to the truth. A counter-cryptocracy like COM-12, as far as we can tell, are the white knights fighting from within against the black knights of the Aquarius Nazi group.

The briefing document continues:

> In the late 1940's, Dr. Bernard C. Gindes was hired by the U.S. Army G-2 Intelligence Group to undertake an experiment in amnesia. In the experiment, a soldier with only a 7th-grade education memorized an entire page of Shakespeare's "Hamlet" after listening to the passage twice while under hypnosis. When he awoke, he had absolutely no remembrance of the hypnotic experience. At biweekly intervals, he was brought in and given the post-hypnotic suggestion which would trigger complete recall. For six months, he was able to repeat the entire page without even a single error.
>
> In another experiment, half a dozen soldiers were brought in to test the validity of increased prolonged memory retention. The soldiers were hypnotized as a group and were then given a series of 25 words devoid of phonetic consistency. They were allowed 60 seconds to commit the list to memory and were given a "trigger" to recall the list. In the wakened state, each man was asked to repeat the words but none of them could. At that point, all of them were allowed to see the list. None of them could recall any prior knowledge of it even while viewing it in a conscious state. However after 60 seconds of observation, the list was taken away and the "trigger" was given. At that point, each man recited the list in the exact order in which it was given. This was our Mind Control capability in its infancy in the 1940's.
>
> One of the largest projects undertaken by both the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence involved methods which could be implemented to block the previously hypno-programmed behavior from being uncovered by another hypnotist, whether by accidental or purposeful

> means. The necessity of this extensive project was due to an embarrassing situation which developed for the intelligence community when the previous programming of an individual by the name of *CANDY JONES* was uncovered accidentally when her husband took her to a licensed hypnotherapist in an attempt to help her overcome a severe case of insomnia.

This part of the briefing covers in large part that which we've already covered, and what Candy herself told via Don Bain in *The Control of Candy Jones.* What we'll repeat of the Com-12 briefing is only that which expands or elucidates the story as we know it. (Keep in mind the claim of UFO-buff Jim Moseley's that Candy's story is entirely false.)

> During Ms. Jones' sessions with the (CIA) hypnotherapist, it was discovered that some type of heavy hypno-programming had been done on her. A series of sessions to regress Ms. Jones were arranged. These sessions were taped and area the source of the majority of this information. This information took several years to be fully unmasked. When the CIA became aware of her visits to the hypnotherapist, it decided it was no longer in need of her services and, as procedure dictates, it arranged for her to commit convenient suicide. These regression revelations were also what the CIA and ONI experts used as a catalyst to study and develop procedures of hypnoprogramming which *could not* be discovered through hypnosis...

The COM -12 briefing calls Candy's first hypnotist Dr. Groelisch and her second Dr. Brenner. We believe these are not the real names of her hypnotists.

Following the story much as we told it in Chapter Eight, the hypnotist, using the personality of Arlene Grant, sets Candy up to commit suicide in the Bahamas. Skipping the first part of the Q and A which are supposed to be transcripts of actual sessions from the classified CIA files, the briefing comments:

> It is not known to our agency what the exact trigger was, but this is not important. At that time, it is quite likely that a strange phrase (whether in English or a foreign language), music, or tones or coded electrical rhythms was to be used. It *is* known, according to agency files, that the plan was for Dr. Groelsch to make the call himself. It is also known that the trigger would implement a procedure which would have Candy walk from the hotel to a high cliff area located less than a quarter of a mile away. Candy was programmed to then jump from the cliff at that location.

Candy Jones, of course, did not commit suicide. Her control personality overrode the programmed Arlene. The briefing document said:

In review of this briefing, it should be noted by the respective agent, the advantages and disadvantages of this particular type of procedure. The created and enforced personality of Arlene Grant had assumed such a degree of autonomy as a separate personality that Dr. Groelsch had convinced her that she would not die with Candy if the suicide program had been completed. This is a good example of what success an operation can have in developing a completely self-sufficient and determined alternative personality, especially when taking into consideration today's frequency and chemical manipulation.

It was under the Reagan Administrations and Bush Administration that many of these advanced methods were implemented to control the leaks and security breeches in the federal government. The National Program Office (NPO) was very successful in administering such procedures for various intelligence and industrial (military) interests.

In addition to the CIA courier training, it was uncovered during Ms. Jones' de-programming that some additional training of sorts by the CIA had also been given to her. In particular, a type of training which would take a previously non-prejudiced individual and instill in them an absolute hatred for a chosen religious or ethnic personage. This was particularly common in the Mind Control training of assassins and insurgents.

In a de-programming session recorded April 10, 1974, Arlene emerged in an especially angry and hostile mood. Arlene berated Candy for several minutes and also attacked Candy's mother in a verbal tirade which questioned her mother's sanity. Arlene took great pride in relaying how she and Candy had visited Candy's mother in a hospital and how she (Arlene) had succeeded in greatly upsetting Candy's mother by verbally attacking her. During this session, Arlene began to display an obvious dislike toward Jews as she went into a tirade over all the "Kike" doctors which were at the hospital.
After 15 minutes into the hypnotic session, Arlene bragged that Dr. Groelsch had told her all about "filthy Jews". She said it was "thanks to him I was able to realize what Jews are really like."

Candy was also questioned during this session, uncovering other details.

Dr.: "What ethnic groups does Dr. Groelsch consider bad... or dangerous?"

Candy: "Oh... the Jewish people, of course. He called them "kikes." And also the "American Niggers," as he always called them. You know, it was funny... he was a German Jew himself, but he became

> enraged whenever I would remind him of that. He told me there was a difference between some German Jews and other Jews."
>
> Dr.: "Before you met Dr. Groelsch, how did you feel about people of the Jewish faith?"
>
> Candy: "I didn't really feel anything. It wasn't really ever something of personal concern, you know? I mean, before I worked for the Agency (CIA), I had many Jewish friends and business associates."

This information will fall into place as you reread the Monarch Corroboration chapter and the other related chapters.

> ...It was discovered that Candy had made several trips to California to attend some classes of Dr. Brenner's. The classes referred to were classes regarding ethnic cleansing and racial purity. During one of the de-programming sessions, it was also uncovered that Dr. Brenner also held seminars on hypnosis.
>
> Dr.: "Did you attend many of Dr. Brenner's lectures in California?"
>
> Candy: "Yes."
>
> Dr.: Is it a class which teaches ethnic hatred?"
>
> Candy: "It's just his regular lecture. The same thing all the time. He also gives lectures on hypnosis."
>
> Dr.: "What does Brenner generally say in his 'ethnic' group classes?"
>
> Arlene: "I don't know... he said I should be careful in what I say to certain types of people."
>
> In a session recorded on April 13, 1974, Candy, while under hypnotic-regresson made several remarks concerning the fact that she believed all black people had a peculiar smell. It became apparent that this particular early case of Mind Control involved previously unknown or unestablished hates or dislikes against other ethnic races, and developing hostilities where they had not previously existed. The agent or personnel previously involved with Agency operations of Mind Control and Thought Manipulation will be able to identify the operational similarities to some of the M.K. Ultra operation training. During outside testing, Candy had very high ratings on "scent tests" given her. This is largely due to the emphasis which her hypno-programmers for CIA operations had instilled in her regarding the particular "odors" given off by certain ethnic groups.

Additional sessions revealed that the racial prejudice was programmed at the first opportunities with Candy Jones. It was during World War II when both Candy and Groelsch were in the South Pacific. Candy was told that she must be extremely cautious around Jews and Blacks and that they must be closely observed for any clues as to what their true motivations and actions might be.

> The ability of even this type of the earliest Mind Control experimentation should not be underestimated. According to many, (But not all) of the subject files, many people who were chosen without their knowledge or consent, were purposely selected because they showed absolutely no prior prejudices against any particular race, religion, etc. This was done to demonstrate the ability for success of these early programs to therefore encourage future program funding for this area of applied technologies under the auspices of the CIA and Military Intelligence, particularly that of Naval Intelligence and S-Force Operations.
>
> It is quite apparent from agency files that in the Candy Jones operation, she certainly had no ill intent or racially motivated actions prior to the Mind Control operation. This is obvious, among other reasons, because the modeling agency that she owned and managed was one of the first agencies to actively promote and use of Black models. Her close circle of friends included Blacks and Jews and she had lived most of her case life with an open mind to all minority groups. Once the full effect of programming was under way, the success rate in desired reaction of those programmed was higher than anyone had imagined in the earliest stages of this particular mode of PSYOPS.

Candy Jones experienced stomach pains on several occasions during her hypno-interrogations. It was also noted that she had considerable cramping in her legs and feet. The stomach pains were consistent with the involuntary cramps of Luis Angel Castillo.

According to the case file, the COM-12 briefing reports, Candy Jones sat up from a prone position on the bed and shouted, "Whites are not the whores of the Blacks! It's horrible, it's disgusting..." The Q and A that followed revealed that Groelsch had prompted that response from her. She was on the border of Texas and Louisiana in a class which was taught by Dr. Brenner, whom she had met in Chicago years before.

> DR.: Is it (the discussion) about Blacks and Whites?'
>
> Candy: "Blacks, Whites, Yellows -- the whole thing. Integration is one thing but mixed breeding is another."
>
> Dr.: Do you agree with him?"
>
> Candy:" Oh, yes. Absolutely."
>
> Dr.: "Well, what else has he said in today's discussion class?"

> Candy: "He said it is always the minority group that tries to get the majority group to go along with them. It's the Blacks trying to get the whites to go along with them and next it will be the Yellows trying to get the Whites to go along with them and it will just always be that way. Those people are very strong."
>
> Dr.: "Where did you learn that? Dr. Brenner?"
>
> Candy: "Uh huh, and I also read it in the literature that they give you."
>
> Dr.: "What was some of the literature like that they gave you? Can you remember?'
>
> Candy: "World Power... World Peace... Peace is not a color -- or something like that. You go to the back of the room there and they have all the little booklets on the table. It's all free and you can take all the ones you want."

There is more Q and A about the races, then a short break. When Candy began again, her tone and general demeanor took on that of her alter-ego, Arlene. It was militant and degrading.

> Dr.: Is that what the CIA... uh... what Dr. Brenner taught you?"
>
> Candy: "Well, he said that almost everyone knows a person who's going with a Black or a Jew and that it's going to be a really big problem. It's going to be especially tough on their children, so it was decided they should all be sterilized."
>
> Dr.: "I see. And that's the kind of thing that they taught you? Dr. Brenner and the Agency?"
>
> Candy: "Yes. (Becomes vehement) They should all be sterilized. They cannot be allowed to have children. They should stick to their own kind. Tigers don't mate with lions."
>
> Dr.: Does Dr. Brenner work for the CIA?"
>
> Candy (laughs) "Work for the CIA? He is the CIA! He's really important as far as his discussion classes he holds for the Agency. But I don't really know how big he is in the Agency.
>
> This series of interviews is of interest to the PSYOPS and appropriate intelligence teams for obvious reasons. This is a clearly traceable case file in which an average person with no previous mental aberrations or disproportional prejudice was programmed by the Agency to produce an agent known as a "Sleeper". This sleeper's built-in sub-personality and alter-ego could be activated and utilized to carry out the Agency agenda.

> It is also a perfect demonstrative test to the Agency itself to see first hand just what the full capacity of this type of training or programming was back in the early days of the establishment of Mind Warfare. That is, successful alternation of an individual's mind and subsequently conscious action and reaction. This program was a direct result of the saturation which took place within the U.S. Intelligence community by German Intelligence and PSYOPS exports when the OSS/CIA first brought the Reinhard Gehlen organization here from Germany after World War II. The great strides and success that German Intelligence had with similar operations was strongly desired by the CIA in hope that it could duplicate and continue this success in its own theater of operations.

The briefing document goes on to mention Castillo then George De Mohrenschildt. It suggests that the Aquarius Group was behind the psycho-torture and mind control in these cases.

Of Lee Harvey Oswald, the briefing document says:

> (Oswald) an alleged leftist, had only an 8th-grade education. It is therefore very strange that he is also known to have heavily associated with fiercely anti-Communists, white Russians, Nazis and high rollers in the aerospace industry -- a strange set of bedfellows if ever there was one!!
>
> One thing to take special note of is the fact that Naval Intelligence, as well as other agencies involved in the study of Mind Control, was very successful in its work involving telephone cues. Specifically, this involved the capability of triggering a hypnoprogrammed agent or patsy by using a telephoned cue to activate the pre-planted suggestion of action (Projects: Svengali, Echo, High Wire).
>
> The element of Mind Control is extremely prevalent in the assassination of Robert Kennedy by *SIRHAN SIRHAN*...

The briefing delves into Dr. Bernard L. Diamond's hypno-interrogation of Sirhan:

> Diamond then asked Sirhan if he'd thought about suicide. "Hell no!" Sirhan said. "I couldn't do that." Diamond then expressed a thought which contained a significant Freudian slip. "Why didn't you turn the gas on yourself?... er ...why didn't you turn the *gun* on yourself after you'd killed Kennedy?" queried Diamond. This slip is significant because *many* of the subjects under CIA or Naval Intelligence Mind Control Operations were programmed to commit suicide.

Discussing the LAPD investigation of the murder of Robert Kennedy, the document brings up the name of Dan Mitrioni, who was one of the controlling agents in the Jonestown massacre. (See the earlier chapter entitled CULT CONTROL.)

> ...The two top operatives in "Special Unit Senator" (SUS) just happened to be two Los Angeles Police officers named Manny Pena and Enrique "Hank" Hernandez. Both of these men had not only worked for the LAPD, but they had also worked for the CIA in Central and South America. Specifically, they had worked in conjunction with a man by the name of Dan Mitrioni in connection with the Office of Public Assistance. This office was formed, ostensibly, to help modernize the police forces of Latin America, but it was discovered that it was actually teaching torture methods to the Brazilian and Uraguayan governments...

The briefing document calls WIlliam Jennings Bryan III, William Joseph Bryon, Jr. Our sources say the mis-identifications were deliberate. One wonders why, since Bryan was dead by the time this Com-12 Briefing was circulated.

> William Joseph Bryon, Jr. was the individual who hypnoprogrammed Sirhan in the first place to be in the pantry area of the Ambassador Hotel. The Ambassador Hotel was owned by G. David Shine who had been a personal assistant to Joe McCarthy and was with McCarthy when he conducted his now infamous anti-Communist witch hunt in the early 1950's.
>
> Bryon billed himself as "probably the best leading expert in the world on the use of hypnosis in criminal law." He often boasted about being constantly called in on unusual cases by various law enforcement agencies, including the LAPD. The Boston Strangler case was his tour de force and he incessantly mentioned it.
>
> An imposing man with a wrestler's girth, Bryon claimed he was once a drummer with the Tommy Dorsey Band, as well as a commercial airline pilot. During the Korean War, he was able to put his hypnotic skills to use as "Chief of All Medical Survival Training" for the United States Air Force, which basically meant the "Brainwashing Section." After the war, he became a consultant for the CIA in the agency's projects concerning Mind Control and behavior modification. Refusing any and all memberships in traditional medical societies, Bryon started his own medical and hypnotherapy practice on the Sunset Strip in Hollywood, which he named The American Institute of Hypnosis. He used this as an aegis for wide-ranging symposiums on such topics as , "Successful Treatments of Sexual Disorders."

Dr. William Jennings Bryan III was a flamboyant Los Angeles hypnotist who died shortly after we began pestering him for an interview. We believe that he was one of the CIA hypnotists who programmed Candy Jones. Here, COM-12 tells us he programmed Sirhan. According to the late Private Investigator Lake Headley (a close personal friend of Mrs. Bryan), immediately upon W.J.B.'s death, the CIA quickly cleaned out his home office of all files.

> Despite his advocacy of sexual freedom, Bryon was a Bible-quoting Christian Fundamentalist. He belonged to a "fire and brimstone" sect called The Old Roman Catholic Church which had broken away from the Vatican well over a century ago. Curiously, David W. Ferri, a prime suspect in New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's 1967 investigation into the JFK assassination, also belonged to this sect of extreme right Christian Fundamentalists... Bryon claimed to be a descendant of the fiery orator, William Jennings Bryon, who opposed the teaching of evolution in the much celebrated Scopes Monkey Trial. Bryon was a frequent guest of Christian Fundamentalist churches throughout Southern California...

(I was surpised to learn that Bryan was involved with the O.R.C.C. A priest of the O.R.C.C. was used by the FBI's COINTELPRO operation to "steal" the mailing list and otherwise inform on the *The East Village Other* which I edited in N.Y.C. during the late 1960's.)

Reporter Betsy Langman spoke with Bryan in his Sunset Strip office on June 18, 1974. Bryan went on in his puffed-up manor stating, " I am probably the leading hypnosis expert in the world... I can hypnotize everybody in this office in less than five minutes."

When Langman asked if he felt that Sirhan could have been hypnotized, Bryan said, "I didn't hypnotize him." His tone was hostile so Langman told him she was just looking for his personal opinion and Bryan accused her of "trying to find more ammunition to put out -- that same old crap -- that people can be hypnotized into doing all these weird things." According to the briefing document:

> ...He then abruptly left his office, shouting, "this interview is now over!" Somewhat shaken by Bryon's outburst, Langman went across the street to a coffee shop, accompanied by a sympathetic secretary from Bryon's office. The secretary told Langman that Bryon had received an emergency phone call from Laurel, Maryland only minutes after George Wallace was shot. The secretary stated that, while she didn't know what was discussed, she knew the call concerned the shooting. (Governor Wallace was shot and badly injured on May 15, 1972 at Laurel while campaigning for the presidency. His assailant was a man by the name of Arthur Bremmer).
>
> In the spring of 1977, Bryon was found dead in a Las Vegas hotel room. The coroner stated the death was from "natural causes." It

should be noted here that the coroner's statement was made before the actual autopsy had been performed.

Shortly after his death, two Beverly Hills call girls were contacted and interviewed extensively due to the fact they had known Bryon intimately. They had been servicing him on the average of twice weekly for over four years, usually with both of them present. The call girls stated that, during their first meeting with Bryon, they had attempted to stroke his ego by "getting him to tell us about all the famous people he'd hypnotized." Bryon began his list by first telling them of his involvement in hypnotizing Alvert Di Salvo and his role in de-programming him at the request of Di Salvo's attorney, F. Lee Bailey.

Bryon then boasted that he had hypnotized Sirhan Sirhan. The women sensed nothing strange about the Sirhan angle because Bryon later spoke on many occasions of how he had been frequently utilized in his field of expertise by the LAPD on murder cases. The women had no way of knowing that Bryon had had no contact with Sirhan *after* the assassination. In other words, it is obvious that Bryon's hypnosis on Sirhan was *prior* to the assassination -- by his own unwitting admissions.

The two women also remembered that, on one occasion, Dr. Bryon had mentioned James Earl Ray, but could not recall any details. However, both women were certain about his boasts of working with Sirhan Sirhan. These women were also able to independently link Bryon to the CIA. Both women stated that at the outset of their relationship with Bryon, he had instructed them to call an unlisted phone number at this office. If someone besides himself answered, they were both told to say they were with "The Company", (a slang term for the CIA) and that would then be put through to him immediately. Bryon repeatedly confided to the women that he not only worked for the CIA, but that he was involved in "Top Secret" projects with the agency.

Upon Bryon's death, his offices were immediately sealed off to newsmen by his estate's probate lawyer, John Miner. Miner, as a former Deputy District Attorney, had also helped to prosecute Sirhan.

There are a lot of interesting cross-references with these individuals in regard to an assortment of assassinations of political figures. It was another far-right Christian Fundamentalist by the name of Reverend Jerry Owen who drove a pick-up truck to aid in the escape of a second assassin of Senator Robert Kennedy. One of Owen's top religious followers happened to be Arthur Bremmer's sister...

> It is no mystery to certain elements of the Intelligence Community as to why (James Earl) Ray was such an "easy" (hypnotic) subject. As any expert in hypnosis can attest, this was undoubtedly due to the fact he had been the subject of hypnosis before. Ray's Central Intelligence file shows he had actually been subject to hypnosis by seven others in the field of Mind Control as a sub-conscious urge to undo what had been done to him, that is, a hypnotically induced split personality -- one which was either pre-programmed to kill upon command or merely to just run from the scene upon command. This action would be easily achieved via the post-hypnotic cue given at the appropriate time during the operation...
>
> One item which has been a main focus in regard to Mind Control with U.S. Intelligence agencies is the use of various Mind Control techniques to utilize military or intelligence couriers to undertake various operations. These techniques include hypnosis as the earliest form, along with the later use of certain drugs and polypharmaceuticals. The subconscious mind can assimilate a much greater quantity of information than the conscious mind and can maintain full retention.
>
> This technique was highly acclaimed by some divisions of the Military and Intelligence operations because it could be utilized in some unique and highly efficient ways. It would enable a hypnotized courier to learn and carry a much greater quantity of information than a counterpart who was simply operating on the conscious level. In Top Secret and UMBRA classification work, it would enable the concerned agency to successfully block and then recall at will particular elements of an operation or project, or to recall the entire thing.
>
> When utilized with certain polypharmaceuticals and chemical "stews" the information was then impossible to uncover by a regular hypnotic session or even enemy agents of foreign countries. This impossibility was due to the fact that the exact chemical "codes" and formulas were necessary to uncover the information. In addition, the proper series of triggers such as words, phrases, tones, colors or combinations of these would have to be ascertained.

The last sentence redeems this document just at a point when it began to look like the writer didn't know anything about the kind of programming he/she was describing. Still, it's odd that the document makes the same mistake I made originally, it leans heavily upon hypnosis as an explanation -- even narco-hypnosis -- without relating it to classical conditioning. That's what the MPD's like Candy Jones were conditioned with -- classical conditioning using pain, drugs, electroshock, and other things along with anchoring techniques so that the personalities could be fragmented, compartmented, and sealed with amnesia behind which the secrets were hidden.

> In simple field usage, the hypno-programmed courier is able to retain large amounts of information which were completely hidden to his or her conscious mind due to the fact the information is blocked out via the post-hypnotic suggestion. It is therefore impossible, in spite of how forceful methods may become to induce the courier to divulge information, for the information to be released since it is not retained in the courier's conscious mind.

No mention of screens or scrambles either. So, the best we can assume is that the writer of this document is not one of the mind controllers, but has only a field knowledge of the effects of the programming.

The document goes into a long passage about Jolyn West and his CIA work and into the individual agents who worked with the Reverend Jim Jones to accomplish the "mass suicide" which was a racial experiment. Debra Leyton Blakey, wife of George Phillip Blakey, Jones' closest CIA advisors, are tied through Debra's father Dr. Leyton to the U.S. Chemical Warfare Department and ULTRA contracts like those undertaken by "Dr. Green." Mention is made of the Los Angeles riot as a "triggered" race incident.

Operation "Yellow Lodge" the CIA and NSA's covert research and development of mind control, biological warfare, and high impact weaponry on Indian reservations is also discussed as well as the Inslaw case.

Attorney, author, Mark Lane is described as a "Vac" or vacuum, someone who sucks up information from various concerned citizens and public researchers and then supplies details of their information to the particular intelligence agencies contracting him.

> Lane also disperses cover information and "cut-outs", or stories that parrot the basic conspiracy well enough to gain the confidence of the civilian community. The cutout is completed with the insertion of "skids" or elements which are completely fabricated in order to mislead those who seek the truth. [See Agency file on same subject: Mark Lane and Contract Assignment History/CIA Central Files/201]

Now here's a chance to check out the authenticity of this document. However it is doubtful that the CIA would release such a document to anyone but Lane so long as he is alive.

The document notes that Lane was Ray's attorney at the House Select Committee hearings.

> Mark Lane played an important role in this shift of media attention in his convenient dual assignment as People's Temple attorney and the attorney representing Ray. In his successful acquisition of Ray's case at the request of the CIA, Lane managed to gain the confidence of Ray. While creating the illusion of dedication to Ray's cause, Lane was actually sabotaging him in order that Ray would continue to be regarded as the "lone Gunman."

There's more on Jonestown, descriptions of the media manipulation and the "CIA Clean Teams" which administered injections and took care of the rest with small arms fire. Then the briefing turns back to the state of the art in mind control:

> The preceeding briefing is to educate the reader on the Intelligence Community's use of Mind Control and Thought Manipulation that may be implemented today, as well as a few actual case scenarios of successful operations conducted by the Central Intelligence Agency, the Office Of Naval Intelligence, and, in some limited capacity, Intelligence Support Activities units.
>
> The scenarios described in this briefing have been selected for their recognition factor for members of intelligence teams as "well known" events in recent history and for their direct involvement with various U.S. Intelligence agencies and selected operations connected to these events.
>
> These manipulations and degrees of control are easily achieved after years of intensive research by both the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence. The methods cover the range of actual hypno-programming, through either overt or covert methods as utilized by the agency concerned in the use of R.H.I.C., U.S.I.C., E.E.O.M. and E.D.O.M. techniques.
>
> Ultrasound technology is most frequently used by the lesser intelligence agencies in their various theaters of operation. This method is known as Ultrasonic Intra-Cerebral Control. An intelligence unit commonly referred to as Division Five which is directly connected to the FBI, is mainly responsible for the study and subsequent use of this type of mind control procedure.
>
> The three types of procured methods of mind control at its highest performance utilization are as follows:

1. E.D.O.M.	(Electronic Dissolution of Memory)
2. E.E.O.M	(Electronic Enhancement of Memory)
3. R.H.I.C	(Radio Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control)

> RHIC techniques call for the implantation of a micro-sized electronic radio receiver. The implantation most frequently is made by highly

> trained teams within the Intelligence Community. The procedure involves the insertion of the micro-receiver (or transceiver) into the desired areas such as the frontal lobe or temporal lobe of the subject in question.

According to my sources, this technique was state-of-the-art in the 1960's, but is obsolete today. Other, more sophisticated techniques are in use now.

> The device acts as a stimulator which can stimulate a muscle, nerve or brain frequency upon receiving the proper signal and will then initiate a desired response. The receiver generates sensory impulses which are then received through different nerves. These register as sensations which are the basis for perception.

And this simulace can be used to condition any response, turning people into Pavlov's dogs.

> Under projects such as MK DRACO and HATTER, today's receivers are much smaller than the originals. Several types of "encephalators" are used to implant the devices into brain tissue through the nostril of a sedated subject after hallucinatory programming has commenced. The process is painful and, in some cases, may result in permanent damage to the sinus cavity resulting in later ear, nose and throat problems for the subject in question. Another method used by some programs is the use of an oral encephalator to insert the transceiver or receiver through the soft palette of the mouth into the brain tissue. This method is also conducted in concert with hallucinatory program cues.

This certainly fits the description of many of those who have come forward to describe their "alien abductions."

> Another type of RHIC technology which is currently being utilized is a more sophisticated manipulation which utilizes a Personal Radio and Electro-Magnetic Frequency Allocation, better known in some intelligence circles as a "PRIMARY" or "PREMA." This is obtained by a simple "Scan" involving the acquisition of an individual's actual frequency allocation which are as unique to an individual as RNA/DNA codes. Primary Frequency Scanners are today so advanced that the machinery can fit into a normal-sized briefcase. The scanning or Reading Wand -- easily disguised in the confines of a pen or a room's light fixture -- is placed in the desired location to achieve a "reading."
>
> Once the PRIME FREQUENCY or "PRIME FREAK" is obtained, procedures may be introduced which will affect only the individual in question. This is obtained through direct manipulation of this individual's Primary Frequency Allocation.

> Another current RHIC technology in use can achieve manipulation of an individual or large masses of a populace. Without a Primary being established, general manipulation and control is obtained, though not as quickly or completely successfully. This is due to variances in particular geographic locations, certain drugs and food products, ethnicity, and general chemical effect on an individual. This method achieves the desired outcome through radio waves in the 800 MHZ band where the Vital Human Brain Frequency resonation is located. These waves directly affect the subject in the desired way through slow and persistent exposure.
>
> Concerned Special Intelligence Operations personnel should acquaint themselves with PROJECT HIGH TONE and PROJECT XENO. Personnel in OM level Special Projects Operations are already aware of the Human Frequency operations and testing procedures which proved to be a great success on large population based capacities in Los Angeles, Calif. in April, 1992 .

The L.A. Riots took place April 29, 1992.

> This Frequency Wave Manipulation can be utilized to the maximum benefits in a population or among select individuals when required. The benefits to CIA, NSA, Aquarius Group Operations and Aqua Tech Operatives are obvious. Through the ignorance of the general population of the World, the Cellular Wave Frequency Communications facilities may be erected and utilized by the Intelligence Community to sedate, excite or initiate a variety of physical effects and ills to implement population control or elimination at the time it is deemed necessary.
>
> Individuals who have implemented proper meditation methods and training are more difficult to allocate. Individuals who have access to or regularly use marijuana or opiates on any regular basis also represent a problem in control and manipulation. This is due to the reaction and stimulus in the human brain that occurs with the use of these substances, which provides an immunity of sorts to these operation techniques. The federal agencies attempts to eradicate this problem in its War on Drugs is having some success in supply rates of marijuana and opiates. It is interesting that the so-called Drug War has had little effect on the supply of cocaine and methamphetamines as these can only enhance the effects of the manipulation instead of decreasing it as opiates will. However, complete control of the distribution of all undesirable drugs for use in general public population base cannot currently be completely eradicated.

Chemical control bases in public population will be present in 95% of the population base. Those individuals who may not be affected by Frequency Control due to the usage of certain drugs will most likely negate their immunity with the chemical base they have built up over the years in their everyday use and exposure to those agents on the C.B.C.B (Chemical and Biological Control Base) listing.

With a general ignorance through arrogance of most public population in the U.S., the erection of large cellular towers being carried out under HIGH TONE and XENO are largely going completely unnoticed.

These projects are being carried out in private business capacities and therefore in Deep Black Operations cover. however, public populations would be wise to educate themselves in the construction of these seemingly innocent towers in large population areas. The cellular 800 MHZ waves are a constant wave. Due to the great proliferation of towers in key population areas, they will have a devastating effect when utilized by Aquarius Group Operations if the condition persists.(See photos at end of chapter).

Both EEOM and EDOM are fundamentally the same. However, they involve more of the electronic or electro-magnetic charges and responses of an individual. The most basic form of Electronic Dissolution or Enhancement of Memory call for the remote-controlled production of Acetylcholine. This is an ester of choline which occurs in various organs and tissues of the body and is responsible for the transmission of nerve impulses at synapses and myoneural junctions. Enhancement or dissolution is simply controlled by manipulation, causing excessive or deficient amounts of Acetylcholine production in the subject in question. The consequential action at the motor endplates result in either a neuromuscular block or opening which causes the desired effect of either an amplified awareness of stimuli, or a sort of immediate and complete amnesia (depending on technique and desire of the team in the field).

All of these methods have been or are currently being used by Military Intelligence groups to affect Mind Control. The agencies which utilized and still utilize these methods are most notably the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence. The ONI most frequently utilized these methods in recruitment of assassins who were both aware and unaware of the training they were exposed to. These electronic procedures, as well as repeated exposure to films and photographs of an extremely violent nature and orientation, would achieve the desire effect. Eventually, these individuals were and are assigned out to attachments with American Embassies overseas.

> The largest of these Mind Control programs under the auspices of the CIA, ONI and National Security Agency are as follows:
>
> M.K. Ultra
> M.K DRACO
> HATTER
> REACH
> BLUEBIRD
> ARTICHOKE
> M.K XENO
> DANCER
> WATCHTOWER

One source reports that M.K. Draco is the code name for one of the "alien abduction scenarios."

> Jonestown is not unique as a controlled environment which was created under the need for discretion in carrying out the covert operations of the ULTRA program. The fact that the community moved to a foreign country from the U.S. was even more of an incentive for the intelligence groups concerned. The interest in cults spawned many additional programs with other cults and certain religious sects.

The document then goes on to name several so-called cults and even sites Christian Evangelical and Far-Right, "Born Again" groups as being the pawns of the cryptocracy. Instead of risking offense to everyone, let's just say that the cryptocrats know that if a person holds strong and intractable beliefs, those beliefs can be used to manipulate them.

Finally the briefing raps up:

> The operative must be aware of the impact and implications of this method of PSYOP Warfare. Aquarius Group Operations, as part of a current agenda, has been very successful under project REACH and BELFRY in programming and cueing selected individuals who have, in turn, carried out programed procedure and opened fire on other civilians in public areas all across the United States.
>
> It is part of Aquarius operations to bring this about in more of a repetitive pattern over a period of many years in order to increase the callous disregard for human life by others who reside in high population-density zones. Especially targeted are large urban areas where street gangs are prevalent. In the overall scenario of senseless and unprovoked killings increasing as time passes, the Aquarius Operation feels they will eventually condition the public to welcome the eventual confiscation of firearms, setting of curfews, mandatory Bar Code I.D.'s which will be subdermally inserted, and general areas of Martial Law (Refer to files on REX 84, KING ALFRED, CABLE SPLICE and GARDEN PLOT).

> It is felt among many that the erosion of Constitutional Rights will be readily accepted by the majority in return for government promises of elimination of gang killings, mass killing by lone gunmen, and termination of drug trafficking in all areas. Projects WATCHTOWER, POPPY and ULTRA will then also play important roles in sedation of the population through various chemical, biological and radio frequency manipulation in order to achieve the overall goal of a One World ruling structure by the year 2000 to 2003.
>
> These factors, in conjunction with Aquarius Group Operations plans to institute a One World Religion of an extremely right-wing side of Christian Fundamentalism (which is currently increasing in even such countries as China and the Russian Republics), will further add to the destruction of rights and freedoms granted to us in our Constitution and Bill of Rights. This development will also separate the World into two large powers. One will be a Fundamentalist Christian power and the other will be a Fundamentalist Islamic Power. These philosophies, as well as the struggle for decreasing water supplies, will be the future reasons for World conflict.

Curiously enough, the wife of the late top CIA spook, James Jesus Angleton, told me something like the contents of the last two lines of the above paragraph. She said this is the kind of thing that her husband was predicting back in the 1960's, based on the CIA's "best estimates."

The above quoted briefing, as best I could determine, was released in the spring of 1992. On July 4, 1992, a man calling himself Michael Younger appeared at a UFO convention in Arcadia, California, telling people he was a member of the super-secret COM-12 group and a scientist who worked at Groom Lake, Area 51 in Nevada. A stunned audience of 200 people listened to Younger unfold an amazing scenario which itemized a scenario which was to culminate in February or March of 1993 with the assassination of President George Bush. According to Younger, the plan was to make Dan Quayle President and suspend The Constitution of the United States.

Stage 1, according to Younger, was the staging of "race riots" in New York, Chicago, Detroit and other major U.S. cities. These would be preceded by a month of subliminal TV programming.

Stage 2 was code-named "Operation Hot August Nights" during which special agents of the conspiracy masquerading as police would open fire on minorities. Claiming that the L.A. riots were a "test case", Younger said that incendiary bombs would be used in these riots as they were in the L.A. riot. The police would be outnumbered by rioters, which would include "skin heads and other gangs fully armed."

Stage 3 of Younger's described plan would come in September when President Bush would call in U.N. troops to quash the riots and restore law and order. Bush would execute Executive Orders already in effect, which give the UN forces complete rights to enter American homes and confiscation rights.

Stage 4 would come in October when an "official announcement would be carried on TV that extraterrestrial aliens, probably Zeta Reticuli 'Greys' have invaded the Earth, with some actual aliens introduced on the show." Younger said the aliens would be credibly faked. And, Younger said, this would cause the world to mobilize under UN supervision to fight the 'invaders.'

Stage 5 was to take place in December. It was a well-planned 'crash' of the stockmarket.

Stage 6 would come in February of March, 1993, Younger said, when President Bush would be assassinated by the conspirators and Vice President Dan Quayle would take the oval office.

According to Younger the conspirators were from among the 1.6 million Nazis living in the U.S., many high in government and major corporations. In January, 2000, Younger said, the *real* alien invasion would occur, but then the New World Order would have gone a long way to being realized and a real global force would be there to defend us against them.

Was Younger really a scientist who worked at Groom Lake as he claimed? Was there a grain of truth in this, or coming on the heels of the Com-12 document, was it an effort to smudge the truth of the existence of that group and the general accuracy of its information? Or? You tell me.

Label this disinformation? The predictions didn't come true. At least not on time, not yet.

These three photos were attached to the Com-12 Briefing on Mind Control. They show three different towers (apparent cellular phone tower and other unidentified) which are supposed to be broadcasting mind controlling signals at the general public.

Courtesy Derrell Simms, HUFON, Houston, Texas

One of the numerous diagrams of "alien implants" of the type described in the Com-12 Briefing document.

38

PROJECT GREENSTAR?

As early as 1961, advisors to the late President Kennedy recommended that with the threat of nuclear war hanging over the future, civilized nations could no longer risk overt confrontations that would lead to war, since even conventional war could escalate to Armageddon. If war was necessary it would have to be invisible. It was either invisible warfare or peace, and everyone seemed to agree the economy would "suffer" from peace. Without war, it was believed, the economy would falter and depression would be the dividend of peace.

Thus the advisors to the president began to think about what might motivate the U.S. economy as well as war did. They came up with several possibilities, the most fantastic of which was to fake an invasion from outer space.

Lewin says that a task force of 15 men met at Iron Mountain, New York in August, 1963 and by September 30, 1966 (seven days before LSD became illegal) they submitted their final report, known as *The Report From Iron Mountain on The Possibility and Desirability of Peace*[236]. All the members of the task force wanted to keep the report secret except one, Lewin says. This particular individual, Lewin says, contacted Leonard C. Lewin and offered to "leak" the report to him with a view to having it published. Since none had signed a security oath, there was nothing except etiquette to keep the report from being published, and the person who contacted Lewin thought the report was too important to keep secret.

In 1967 Lewin told Paul Krassner that the report was a hoax of his own authorship. He swore Paul to secrecy and Paul never talked until now. (Since when could you trust a journalist to keep a secret, least of all the news hungry editor of THE REALIST? Ironically Paul kept the secret.[237])

---

[236] Lewin, Leonard C., *REPORT FROM IRON MOUNTAIN ON THE POSSIBILITY AND DESIRABILITY OF PEACE,* The Dial Press, New York, 1967.

[237] Paul Krassner knew both Leonard C. Lewin and Herman Kahn. Krassner says he did not talk about *The Report From Iron Mountain* with Kahn.

If Lewin was telling the truth, his hoax was uncannily prophetic. Read it and make up your own mind. "Leaking" to Paul the hoax disinfo would be appropriate if Lewin wanted Paul to spread the news of the hoax -- a common disinformation tactic of the cryptocracy. Many believe it was largely authored by Herman Kahn whose fingerprints are all over the report. Kahn might have been momentarily enlightened by the large jolt of DMT Tim Leary gave him to bring him down from a bad acid trip shortly before the *Report from Iron Mountain* was written.[238]

The Hudson Institute was started in 1961 when Herman Kahn, the owner, decided "to help determine the entire future of the U.S. -- and, time permitting, much of the world beyond."[239] The Institute received its $1.36 million income in 1968 from The Office of Civil Defense, The Office of Secretary of Defense, the Military Services, and according to *Life* magazine, "Other Government and Non-U.S. Government" agencies. On the list of what it calls "Public Members" and "Fellows" the Institute published, ten of the twenty-one of its Public Members were members of the Council on Foreign Relations, as were fifteen of the thirty-four Fellows. Two of the Fellows are very well known: Dr. Henry Kissinger and Dr. Milton Friedman.

Author A. Ralph Epperson[240] informs us that the corporations which created Iron Mountain included Standard oil of New Jersey (Rockefeller intersts); Manufacturers Hanover trust (the Morgan Intersts); and the Shell Oil (the House of Orange,) among others. "The report" writes Epperson, "dates back to at least 1961, when Robert McNamara, McGeorge Bundy and Dean Rusk, all members of the CFR, noticed that no serious study had been made about planning for a long-term peace. Not only were they concerned about the lasting effects of a long-term peace, the also wished to examine the functions, both visible and invisible of war."

Apparently the author Gary Allen made an attempted to locate the authors of *the Report from Iron Mountain*. He concluded that it had been written by the Hudson Institute. He wrote: "There is considerable evidence that the Report is the work of the Hudson Institute and Herman Kahn... There is an Iron Mountain just a stone's throw (literally) from the Hudson Institute near Croton-on-Hudson, (New York.)"[241]

The reader is invited to compare Kahn's style in say, *Thinking The Unthinkable* and the *Report From Iron Mountain.* Lewin was the husband of leftist activist and journalist Eve Merriam. Krassner says he had no reason not to trust Lewin's confession. If Lewin was not trying to get the cry "literary hoax" circulated which would have helped circulation of the otherwise dull book, he might have been taking the blame for Kahn, laying down his reputation as the cover story. "On the other hand," Krassner says, "it could have been a satire. One that was true. There really could have been a group such as Iron Mountain 15, talking about things which were reported. But the book itself might have been a put-on of Hudson Institute style and content." Another satire that came true? Then life does imitate art?

---

[238] Michael Bowen witnessed the event at the Millbrook, N.Y. estate occupied at the time by Leary and The Castalia Foundation. Bowen says Leary injected Kahn with a large dose of Dy-Methel-Tryptamine to "bring him down" from a bad LSD trip he was having. According to Bowen the 400 pound Kahn was running amok, destroying things in an upstairs room of the Millbrook mansion before Leary injected him with the "calming" liquid DMT. Having a Ph.D., Leary, was not licensed to prescribe or give anyone drugs without the supervision of an M.D.

[239] William A. McWhirter, *Life*, December 6, 1968.

[240] A. Ralph Epperson, *The Unseen Hand,* Publius Press, Tucson, Arizona, 1985.

[241] Gary Allen, Msking Plans for a Dictatorship in America," *American Opinion,* April 1971.

Col. Fletcher Prouty was also told by Lewin (in the late 1980's) that the book was a hoax. "But the people at the Hudson Institute, the Pentagon, and the government contractors were talking like this in those days. So it wasn't really exaggerated enough to be satire," Prouty told me. "I'd always believed it was leaked information..."

And in his book *JFK, The CIA, Vietnam And The Plot To Assassinate John F. Kennedy*[242], Prouty wrote: "During the Kennedy years, people within the government and their close associates in academia and industry discussed frequently and quite seriously many of the major questions phrased by Leonard Lewin in *Report From Iron Mountain*. I had been assigned to the Office of the Secretary of Defense before the Kennedy election and was there when the McNamara team of "Whiz Kids" arrived. Never before had so many brilliant young civilians with so many Ph. D.s worked in that office. It was out of the mouths of this group that I heard so frequently and precisely the ideas that Lewin recounts in his 'novel.'"

For example, in National Security Memorandum 68, George Kennon wrote: "We have about 50% of the world's wealth, but only a 6.3% of its population... In this situation, we cannot fail to be the object of envy and resentment. Our real task in the coming period is to devise a pattern of relationships which will permit us to maintain this position of disparity... to do so, we will have to dispense with all sentimentality and day-dreaming and our attention will have to be concentrated everywhere on our immediate national objectives... We should cease to talk about vague and... unreal objectives such as human rights, the raising of the living standards, and democratization. The day is not far off when we are going to have to deal in straight power concepts. The less we are then hampered by idealistic slogans, the better." The "straight power" concepts are what *The Report From Iron Mountain* is made of.

Published in 1967, the report drew immediate attention for its then bizarre suggestions. In a review of the report in the *Washington Post*[243] book section, John Kenneth Galbraith writing under the name Herschel McLandress acknowledged that it might come as a shock to the American public to know that war is considered by these experts to be a highly desirable component of modern society. They believed this to be true because:

---

[242] L. Fletcher Prouty, *JFK, the CIA, Vietnam And The Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Birch Lane Press, New York, 1992.

[243] McLandress, Herschel, *BOOK WORLD*, "News of war and peace you're not ready for", page 5, November 26, 1967,

1. War provides the only dependable system "for stabilizing and controlling" national economics.

2. War is the basis for giving the necessary authority to the government to insure political stability.

3. War is indispensable sociologically for the purpose of controlling "dangerous social dissidence and destructive anti-social tendencies."

4. War serves an indispensable Malthusian function of reducing the population at regular intervals.

5. War is the primary motivational force for scientific and technological progress.

The report was a substantial example of the type of secret "expert planning" which was to become essential in formulating policies in Washington, rather than listening to the expressed desires and aspirations of the American electorate. The ideological attitudes and intellectual tone of these "experts" were as follows:

1. The Iron Mountain experts believed the value of war as an institution should be determined without reference to ethics, morality or other measurements.

2. They said "major industrial advances" could "never have taken place" if it had not been for war.

3. They said defense spending was not wasteful since it stimulates the economy.

4. They said the threat of war was necessary to give political leaders an essential control over the people, *and if no threat exists political leaders should set about creating one.*

5. They said political control could be assured by permanently "institutionalizing" a large segment of "poor" who are dependent upon the politicians and would therefore vote for them and keep them in power: "...the continuance of the war system must be assured, if for no other reason, among others, than to preserve whatever quality and degree of poverty society requires as an incentive (to support the regime in power), as well as to maintain the stability of its internal organization of power."

6. They said the army was needed as a pool for the misfits.

7. They looked upon the army as a "state-supported haven for the unemployable."

8. These "experts" believed that the latest weapons for mass destruction constituted an important factor in "population control." They lamented that conventional weapons, "did not kill enough to reduce the consuming population to a level consistent with survival of the species."

9. They regretted that modern medicine cured so many pestilences and thereby interfered with the natural selection process through survival of the fittest, suggesting that the day must come when human reproduction would be by artificial insemination so as to permit 'direct eugenic management.'

10. They gave detailed consideration to various peace-time substitutes for the essential functions which they attributed to war, but came to the conclusion that war was superior to anything they could suggest as a practical substitute at that time.

After a lengthy discussion of ways to control society and keep it within numerical and economic bounds without war the *Report from Iron Mountain* boiled it all down to a summary entitled:

Substitutes for the Functions of War: Models

The following substitute institutions, among others, have been proposed for consideration as replacements for the nonmilitary functions of war. That they may not have been originally set forth for that purpose does not preclude or invalidate their possible application here.

1. *Economic.* a) A comprehensive social-welfare program, directed toward maximum improvement of general conditions of human life. b.) A giant open-end space research program, aimed at unreachable targets. c) A permanent, ritualized, ultra-elaborate disarmament inspection system, and variants of such a system.

2. *Political.* a) **An omnipresent, virtually omnipotent international police force.** b) **An *established and recognized extraterrestrial menace.*** c) **Massive global environmental pollution** d) **Fictitious alternate enemies** [emphasis added.]

3. *Sociological: Control Function.* a) Programs generally derived from the Peace Corps model. b) A modern sophisticated form of slavery.

> *Motivational function.* a) Intensified environmental pollution. b) ***New religions or other mythologies.*** c) Socially oriented blood games. d) Combination forms.
>
> 4. *Ecological.* A comprehensive program of applied eugenics.
>
> 5. *Cultural.* No replacement institution offered. *Scientific.* The secondary requirements of the space research, social welfare, and/or eugenics programs.

In the evaluation that followed it was decided that the "space-research substitute appears to meet both major criteria, and should be examined in greater detail, especially in respect to its probable effects on other war functions..." Development of "an acceptable threat from 'outer space' presumably in conjunction with a space-research surrogate for economic control, appears unpromising in terms of credibility," the experts decided. Without the foresight of 30 years the experts concluded, "the environmental-pollution model does not seem sufficiently responsive to immediate social control, except through arbitrary acceleration of current pollution trends..."

The Iron Mountain experts proposed the establishment, "under executive order of the President, of a permanent War/Peace Research Agency, empowered and mandated to execute the programs described in (2) and (3) below. This agency (a) will be provided with nonaccountable funds sufficient to implement its responsibilities and decisions at its own discretion, and (b) **will have authority to pre-empt and utilize, without restriction, any and all facilities of the executive branch of the government in pursuit of its objectives** (emphasis added.) It will be organized along the lines of the National Security Council, except that none of its governing, executive, or operating personnel will hold other public office or governmental responsibility..."

> (2) THE FIRST OF THE WAR/PEACE RESEARCH AGENCY'S two principal responsibilities will be to determine all that can be known, including what can reasonably be inferred in terms of relevant statistical probabilities, that may bear on an eventual transition to a general condition of peace...
>
> (3) THE WAR/PEACE RESEARCH AGENCY'S other principal responsibility will be "War Research." Its fundamental objective will be to ensure the continuing viability of the war system to fulfill its

> essential nonmilitary functions for as long as the war system is judged necessary to or desirable for the survival of society...

In the discussion preceding the above, we find the following relevant commentary:

"Credibility, in fact, lies at the heart of the problem of developing a political substitute for war. This is where the space-race proposals, in many ways so well suited as economic substitutes for war, fall short. The most ambitious and unrealistic space project cannot of itself generate a believable external menace. It has been hotly argued that such a menace would offer the "last, best hope of peace," etc., by uniting mankind against the danger of destruction by "creatures" from other planets or from outer space. Experiments have been proposed to test the credibility of an out-of-our-world invasion threat; it is possible that a few of the more difficult-to-explain "flying saucer" incidents of recent years were in fact early experiments of this kind...[244]"

Thirteen years after ***The Report from Iron Mountain,*** and one year after ***Operation Mind Control*** was first published, the astrophysicist, computer scientist and UFOlogist Dr. Jacques Vallee published ***Messengers of Deception***[245]. To my knowledge this was the first book to mention mind control in connection with UFOs and especially the "abductee" phenomena:

"The Manipulators... I have given this name to the agents who cause the UFO contacts and engineer their effects. Everything now centers on their role, their identity, their designs. Who could they be? Alien beings coming from the end of the galaxy? Psychic entities from the "other side"? Automata controlled by some nonhuman consciousness? Holographic nightmares? But perhaps we are looking far away from something which is right under our nose: ***could they simply be human?*** Could they be masters of deception so skillful that they can counterfeit an invasion from space?

"It is not difficult to see that the same themes are running through the whole puzzle. Many contactees, for example, mention Atlantis. If our self-styled "space brothers" need such a prehistoric pedigree, is it reasonable to expect them to come from some far-away star? The real answer is both more mundane and more frightening:

"Beyond the attention of academic science, below the dignity of official history, there are groups, cults, and sects that serve as "leading indicators" of mass movements (emphasis added.)

---

[244] Op cit, p. 66.

[245] Vallee, Jacques, ***Messengers of Deception, UFO Contacts and Cults,*** And/Or Press, Berkeley, California, 1979.

"The myth of contact is such a leading indicator."

Vallee took all his papers one day and drove to the house of a Major Murphy, who had advised him in his UFO research before. Major Murphy and Vallee "quickly agreed that the popular idea of flying saucers from outer space left much to be explained..."

Major Murphy, Vallee said, reported that the U.S. had evidence in 1943 that several countries had been working on circular aircraft which they hoped to develop into secret weapons. The Nazis, he said, were doing advanced research on "controlled electrical discharges" and "controlled lightening" and had tried to combine these things together. Then, when the allies invaded Germany, a lot of the hardware fell into both U.S. and Russian hands. "Then people started seeing the modern UFOs in Sweden in 1946," Vallee reports the Major saying.

"General James Doolittle was sent to Sweden by the United States in 1946, apparently under cover of the Shell Corporation. In fact, he was to investigate the 'ghost rockets' with the Swedish authorities. Whatever came of that?

"His conclusions have never been revealed," Vallee says Murphy said "with a sigh that seemed to say, If only the Pentagon could talk!" This took place a year before Kenneth Arnold named the discs he saw over Mt. Rainier "flying saucers."

"One area where you must realize a lot of research had already been done in great secrecy by 1946," Vallee quotes Major Murphy saying, " concerned mind control and the effects of electromagnetic radiation on the human body."

Vallee asked the Major what that had to do with rockets, UFOs or secret weapons.

"On the surface, if you just look at a few isolated cases, like scientists arguing about UFOs, well, I agree it doesn't mean anything," Vallee quotes Murphy saying. "But suppose somebody had obtained a device by the end of the war, which perhaps wasn't a very effective weapon. Perhaps it couldn't fly very effectively, couldn't carry guns and bombs, but had other properties. For instance, it could emit radiation that caused paralysis and hallucinations as it flew over an area, so that witnesses exposed to it would think they saw the phantasms of their own imagination. Did somebody test that kind of a device in Sweden in 1946, and in the States in 1947, and find it to be ineffective as a flying machine, but very useful as a means of propaganda? Has such a group already understood what UFOs were, and are they confusing the issue by simulating UFO waves? Or is the entire phenomenon under their control?"

Vallee said it was hard for him to believe that techniques could be applied on the kind of scale as was being reported, even in 1979.

"Don't you read the newspapers?" Vallee quotes the Major saying. "Don't you follow publications on mind control? The military has been using this kind of technique for years."

Vallee describes Major Murphy pulling out a file of a series of *New York Times* clippings beginning in 1977 which described part of a U.S. project "which spanned 35 years and involved hypnosis, narcoanalysis, electronic brain stimulation, and the behavioral effects of every physical vibration known to science, from ultrasound to microwaves. He showed me a book entitled *Operation Mind Control,* in which W.H. Bowart describes his meeting with a young man who had just returned from a tour of duty with the Air Force. He suffered from amnesia. Like many UFO contactees, he remembered vaguely that he had had a good time, but couldn't describe in detail where he had been. After many therapy sessions, he began to recall part of his activities. He had served, it seemed, on a military committee in Vietnam... He had been trained for total recall... then his entire memory of these assignments was erased like a magnetic cassette..." etc. (See Chapter Two, *Only One Mind For My Country.)*

"Giving me time to absorb this information," Vallee wrote, "Major Murphy gestured toward the notes I had compiled on the UFO contactees and their sects.

"'You have assembled case histories on rather interesting groups. Don't misunderstand me,' he said. 'I am not suggesting that secret agents are going around the world giving these thousands of people individual suggestions to see UFOs. As we found out when we began developing the science of propaganda during the last war, you don't need to do all that. A few well-placed stories, a well-planned program publicizing sensational incidents, will do marvels. The contactees are being manipulated. And I think we should not look in outer space for the Manipulators.'"

Vallee asked the major where he would look, then for the answer to the riddle of UFOs.

"'Right here on earth,' said the Major, with the satisfied air of a mathematics professor who has succeeded in proving an especially vexing theorem. 'The best place to start looking for them is among some of the occult groups. Such organizations are an ideal place for a clever individual to exercise his influence, because they are ignored by the intellectuals, by those who call themselves 'scientific investigators.' They are afraid of looking silly if they join the Order of Melchizedek: what will the Dean say when he finds out!'"

The same year *Messengers of Deception* was published, Carl Jung's niece, Lou Zinsstag, wrote a book about her friend, one of the first "contactees", George Adamski. [246] In it Zinsstag mentions *Operation Mind Control,* telling how this report of the cryptocracy's operations in mind control helped her understand things about Adamski which had remained inexplicable.

---

[246] Zinsstag, Lou, GEORGE ADAMSKI, THEIR MAN ON EARTH, Photo section and commentaries by Timothy Good, Foreword by Dr. Hans Holzelrl, copyright 1978, published in 1990 by UFO PHOTO ARCHIVES, P.O. Box 117206, Tucson, Az.

Adamski's testimony in his book *Flying Saucers Have Landed (*co-authored by Desmond Leslie) reported that on November 20, 1952 the author encountered a "Venusian" wearing a one-piece body suit and long blond hair somewhere near Desert Center, California. The Venusian told Adamski that he was gravely concerned about recent atomic bomb tests. This message would become a litany of other "contactees."

Flying saucer clubs sprang up. Lecturers earned their living speaking on an international circuit of UFO conventions. The government denied the existence of UFOs and there, apparently, was no physical evidence from them. When there was evidence, UFO lore has it, the "Men in Black" would come and seize it, warning witnesses to keep their mouths shut. Often described as tall oriental men wearing black sunglasses and driving detailed black Cadillac's the men in black were masters of intimidation. Mysterious phone calls and black helicopters often preceded their visits.

Lou Zinsstag asked Adamski about the men in black who had just started to make headlines in Europe. "I was astonished to hear him acknowledge their existence without hesitation, adding '...they are not always in black , and they certainly belong to our own kind," Zinsstag said. "They are well trained and committed to do their utmost in order to scare people away from getting interested in a new kind of cosmic knowledge which is rightfully ours.' He also asserted that '...of necessity they have to be faceless men; you will never catch one.' Asked if they belonged to the CIA., he hesitated a moment and then said 'not necessarily'. But I also remember him telling me that some of them were very well versed in telepathy, hypnotism, trance and other forces 'which can be subtly applied without immediate detection', and that they got their schooling from the CIA."

In Gray Barker's book on Adamski, published after George's death, an undated article was published, entitled *My Fight with the Silence group*[247]:

> ***Shortly after the publication of 'Flying Saucers Have Landed' I was visited by three men, two of which I had met previously, but the third was a stranger. It was he who took the role of authority and directly threatened me demanding certain papers I had, for one thing. Some of these I gave him and was promised their return, but this promise was never kept. Since I did not exactly understand to what he had reference, I did not give him some of my (more) important papers. There is no need denying that I was frightened. Before they left I was***

---

[247] Barker, Gray, *My Flight With The Silence Group, Saucerian, Clarksburg, W.Va., undated.*

> *told to stop talking or they would come after me, lock me up and throw the key away.*

Evidence in Jerome Clark's *The UFO Encyclopedia, Vol. 2*[248], suggests that Barker may himself have been a disinformation asset for the cryptocracy:

> "...Barker was undeniably responsible, along with (James) Moseley, for one of the most notorious **hoaxes** of the 1950s, a December 1957 letter written on State Department stationery by one R.E. Straith and addressed to contactee **George Adamski.** "Straith" claimed that the department knew of the truth of Adamski's reported meetings with Space Brothers and was quietly supporting his efforts..."

It was concluded that the letter had been written on Barker's typewriter, but Moseley refused to publish his manuscript on the subject until after Adamski's death. Then Moseley confirmed the long-standing rumors about the document's "true provenance." An inveterate UFO Convention attendee, Moseley maintains his position of "skeptic" in the crowd of true believers. He has been accused of being an intelligence asset over the years by UFO researchers. (At a 1983 UFO convention he said Candy Jones' manager told him that her story was "just a hoax." That's hard to believe in light of others whose programming is almost identical to Candy's and in the face of "leaked" CIA interrogation transcripts of Candy who apparently did have handlers both inside and outside the agency.)

UFO lore is filled with conflicting information and deception. In fact, it's doubly hard to believe UFOs are real, first because of public incredulity -- peer pressure not to believe, and second because for every plausible explanation of their reality, there's an equally plausible explanation of their unreality. It certainly appears that somebody is waging an artful psychological warfare campaign.

The campaigners would have it that if you want to believe in UFOs you can find enough evidence to present a logical argument for their existence, and if you don't want to believe in UFOs you also can find enough evidence to present a logical argument against their existence. This would be an appropriate intelligence effort if, indeed, this planet were being invaded by an alien race far in advance of our own. Also possible is the scheme of a real UFO "invasion" being manipulated as a shield for high technology research projects.

Either way Ufology is a classic study in "plausible deniability." It is a history of rumors documented by almost fifty years of uncoordinated effort by independent researchers. And, on the other hand, it may be an organized escape valve to mass hysteria, or an ordered presentation of "mass hallucination" created by almost fifty years of mind control -- or both. It is highly likely that at least some of the "abduction scenarios" are being programmed by mind control technology and used as "screens" or "scrambles" to cover something else.

---

[248] Clark, Jerome, *The UFO Encyclopedia, Volume 2, The Emergence of a Phenomenon: UFOs from the Beginning through 1959,* Detroit, MI, 1992.

But Zinsstag said Adamski knew exactly where his opposition came from. "He survived their plots and he refused their money offers. But it looks as if he had not been prepared to counter more subtle or more sophisticated methods which, in the end, were effective in discrediting our old friend. There is some reason to suspect that, for a certain time at least, Adamski was fed false information by some cunning impersonators of spacemen who could have been members of a group of CIA agents...

"I know how outrageous this idea sounds to saucer enthusiasts who are still convinced of the space visitors' infallibility and trustworthiness," Zinsstag said." But I am not so sure any longer...

"Now in 1979... we may well assume that Adamski fell for some of their tricks, as early as in the sixties. He was so right when he wrote that the destruction of his image was their major target -- but he failed to perceive the moment when it came about. He seemed to have overrated not only his faculty for perception but, also, his strength to stay clear of such weird manipulations.

"In one of our private talks," Zinsstag wrote," Adamski had admitted to possess remarkable psychic gifts, such as putting himself and other people into trance and that he was able to hypnotize himself but that he never made any use of it and, as he fiercely added, nobody would ever be able to put him into trance or hypnosis without his own wish or consent. In November 1963, he wrote:

"'*... I was talking to a man well versed in mesmerism and hypnosis. He is visiting here from the Middle West, and he has used both of these in government work. (...) I wanted to know if I was right in my knowledge of it. And this is what he told me: there are people who will not lend themselves to either hypnotism or mesmerism by direct suggestion. He said that I was one who would not, for I make thorough analysis before acting...'*

"I often wondered if this could have been a clever move of a CIA agent with a purpose, wanting to make him careless or to put him at ease. I don't think that Adamski knew, at that time, that there was such a thing as hypnosis at a distance...

"But there was one thing he knew: that with the years the shadowing of his person was bound to grow and that they were slowly *'closing in on him'* as he said. He knew perfectly well that with his first book already he had stuck his head out once and for all times. *'And, until they get me, I am making the best use I can of the freedom of the press in this country and also the freedom of speech.'*

..."When in April 1965, he set out to lecture once more in and around Washington D.C., he must have felt the fear of God in his bones. He knew that not only the CIA was after him; he knew that he had even more formidable adversaries[249].

"Going through my files," Zinsstag said, "I found the copy of my letter to Henk Hinfelaar written in May, 1965:

"...I remember Adamski telling me more than once that he would never enter a hospital in the U.S. if ever he could help it because 'you never know what kind of injection they would make or what kind of drug they would put in my food." And another time he said bluntly, ***'I would rather die in he street than enter a hospital.'***

"'He also told me that, as an exception, he would use a shortened version of his name (-ki being the Polish ending for any male name) when he felt a kind of insecurity while entering a hotel. This, he said, was no falsification of his name and that , in fact, he could have discarded the last syllable long ago; nobody would have objected but that he had always wanted to keep the name he had got from his father.

"With this letter," Zinsstag wrote," Henk received a copy of a UPI report which I had received from an unknown friend, published in an unknown newspaper:

> **'FLYING SAUCER EXPERT IS DEAD**
>
> **Washington, UPI, April 30, 1965**
>
> A man who claimed to have visited other planets is dead. For a period after his death he was, like the flying saucers he studied, unidentified.
>
> George Adamski, 74-year-old resident of Vista, California, who only last month told Washington newsmen he had made several interplanetary trips aboard craft from outer space, died last Friday night in a Washington sanitarium at nearby Tacoma Park, Maryland.
>
> Dr. Beldon Reap, deputy medical examiner for Montgomery County, Maryland, confirmed his death this morning, shortly after Adamski was buried in a private service at Arlington National Cemetery.
>
> He said that Adamski apparently died of a heart attack. -- The hospital indicated the reason his death was not reported sooner , was the original records listed him as Adams rather than Adamski. Authorities finally located Adamski's daughter, Mrs. Alice Wells, Vista.

---

[249] *Op cit*, p.100

About Lou Zinsstag's quote in which the "man well versed in mesmerism and hypnosis had told Adamski that 'there are people who will not lend themselves to either hypnotism nor mesmerism by direct suggestion.'' And , " He said I was one who would not (be suggestible), for I make thorough analysis before acting..." It is a well known trick of hypnotists to agree with those who say they can't be hypnotized. It establishes a rapport with the subject to agree that they can't be hypnotized. Then the hypnotist says something like, "Well, then, just close your eyes for a few moments so I can show you how guided imagery might work."

It is exactly as Adamski reported it. The subconscious "robot" mind responds usually to what might be called 'the language of the unconscious'. If the "influencer" confuses the analytical mind, or occupies it with the process of considering a paradox or a profound problem, and while it searches its various filing compartments (which those skilled in the art of subconscious influencing can tell by the pattern of the subject's eye movements, and other involuntary responses) various linguistic approaches might allow access to setting up an "embedded command" which can be magically effective, in so much as the command appears to be congruent to the subjects desires. These techniques are no secret. This is spelled out in detail in the works of Milton Erickson and others. A complete knowledge of NLP, or the many various "schools" of Ericksonian hypnosis, serve as the only self defense I know of against such invasive "hypnotic" techniques.

As I pointed out in 1978, I will do again in this expanded edition: hypnosis is merely another technology which can benefit or harm. The trick of the unethical influencer is to manipulate the context so that the subconscious mind thinks that by performing on the embedded command it will help the individual achieve his outcome, when in fact he is actually giving the influencer his outcome without knowing it. When an embedded command is followed by a change of subject (magicians call this "misdirection") amnesia sets in and the subject (or in this case "target") forgets the command even after it's triggered.

It is possible that George Adamski was a victim of the MKULTRA program in more ways than one. Whether or not he had seen a UFO or photographed one, his alleged "trip to Saturn" and other adventures which served to debunk his credibility might have been carefully cultivated experiences in his unconscious mind. If this were the case, who can tell what produced the fantastic and apparently "unscientific" descriptions of the solar system and such claims that birds have migrated from one planet to another through space.

Ten years after Vallee's and Zinsstag's books came ***The Controllers, Mind Control and Project MKULTRA, Modern Myth, Mass Manipulation and a New Hypothesis of "Alien" Abductions***[250] by Martin Cannon, a 64 page booklet originally published in installments in the MUFON Journal, the house organ of an alleged CIA co-opted UFO organization.

---

[250] Cannon, Martin, ***THE CONTROLLERS, Mind Control and Project MKULTRA, Modern Myth, Mass Manipulation, and a New Hypothesis of "Alien" Abductions,*** Prevailing Winds Research, Santa Barbara,

Cannon posited that "the abductees have been abducted. Yet they are also spewing fantasy -- or, more precisely, they have been given a set of lies to repeat and believe. If my hypothesis proves true, then we must accept the following: The kidnapping is real. The fear is real. The pain is real. The instruction is real. But the little gray men from ***Zeti Reticuli*** are ***not*** real: they are constructs, Halloween masks meant to disguise the real faces of the controllers. The abductors may not be visitors from Beyond; rather, they may be a symptom of the carcinoma which blackens our body politic...

"...Substantial evidence exists," Cannon writes, "linking members of this country's intelligence community (including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, and the Office of Naval Intelligence) with the esoteric technology of *mind control.* For decades, "spy-chiatrists" working behind the scenes -- on college campuses, in CIA-sponsored institutes, and (most heinously) in prisons -- have experimented with the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, microwave induction of intracerebral 'voices' and a host of even more disturbing technologies..."

Cannon agrees with CIA veteran Miles Copeland who once admitted to Robert Eringer of *Rolling Stone*[251]: "The congressional subcommittee which went into this sort of thing got only the barest glimpse."

Cannon argues that much of the testimony before Congress on the CIA's "brainwashing" efforts was perjury. He says the clandestine research into thought manipulation was not stopped but went operational and, he asserts, any claims to the contrary are cover stories. He presents evidence (as have we) that a number of government agencies, CIA, NASA, Atomic Energy Commission as well as a variety of agencies of the Department of Defense are all involved in research and operations to this day, and that the UFO abduction phenomenon, at least in part, is quite likely a continuation of the clandestine mind control operations.

"Perhaps the most interesting pieces of evidence surrounding the abduction phenomenon are the intracerebral implants allegedly visible in the X-rays and MRI scans of many abductees. Indeed, abductees often describe operations in which needles are inserted into the brain; more frequently still, they report implantation of foreign objects through the sinus cavities. Many abduction specialists assume that these intercranial incursions must be the handiwork of scientists from the stars. Unfortunately, these researchers have failed to familiarize themselves with

---

California, 1994.

[251] Eringer, Robert, "Secret Agent Man", *Rolling Stone,* 1985.

certain little-heralded advances in terrestrial technology," Cannon says. "The abductees' implants strongly suggest a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a 'stimoceiver,' invented in the late '50s-early '60s by a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado."

Addressing the large number of "implants" reported by abductees, Cannon writes:" If we are to take seriously abductee accounts of brain implants, we must consider the possibility that the implanters, properly perceived, ***don't look*** much like the 'grays' pictured on (Whitley) Strieber's[252] dustjackets. Instead, the visitors may resemble Dr. (Joseph A.) Meyer and his brethren..."

Cannon says, Meyer is "perhaps the most disturbing wanderer in this mind-field of the National Security Agency, the most formidable and secretive component of America's national security complex. Meyer has proposed implanting roughly half of all Americans arrested -- not necessarily convicted -- of any crime; the numbers of 'subscribers' (his euphemism) would run into the tens of millions. 'Subscribers' could be monitored continually by computer wherever they went. Meyer, who has carefully worked out the economics of his mass-implantation system, asserts that taxpayer liability should be reduced by forcing subscribers to 'rent' the implant from the State. Implants are cheaper and more efficient than police, Meyer suggests, since the call to crime is relentless for the poor 'urban dweller' -- who, this spook-scientist admits in a surprisingly candid aside, is fundamentally unnecessary to a post-industrial economy. 'Urban dweller' may be another of Meyer's euphemisms: He uses New York's Harlem as his model community in working out the details of his mind-managed system."

Meyer, Cannon suggests, could be one of the top men behind the abductee brain implants, the "scoop marks" and other scars on abductees bodies. "We would also have an explanation for the reports of individuals suffering personality change after contact with the UFO phenomenon."

By all indications, the Iron Mountain report was implemented by the secret War/Peace Research Agency, whatever it may be named. Environmental pollution has accelerated. New "invisible" forms of killing (viral infections) are appearing with increasing frequency. Evidence of experiments with bizarre religious cults, The Unification Church (Moonies), The Branch Davidians, The Peoples Temple and others testify to a secret hand on the pulpit. And now comes the clincher, victims of government mind control remembering enough to begin to testify about their "Alien" programming.

Lincoln S&L conspiracy witness, Paul Bonacci, testified to a number of code names for different programs. Some names matched those given by other victims who did not know Bonacci. There was "Wizard of Oz" and "Alice in Wonderland". One project was code-named "Alien." Bonacci said "the alien program which they used... Alien was mainly under Star Wars..." (This would fit with Aquino's reported penchant to dress up like Darth Vader and it would be consistent with his frustrated literary urge to extend the Star Wars trilogy. Bonacci positively identified Aquino as one of his programmers.)

---

[252] Streiber, Whitley, *Communion*, and *Transformations* are the most well known of Strieber's books. They describe his supposed abduction by what he calls "visitors." (Streiber took great pains in avoiding the claim that his abductors were from another planet.) Streiber was a successful fantasy and horror novelist before topping the bestseller list with *Communion* in 1987.

Satanic activities, Bonacci said, were also a frequent part of the Monarch programming. The Satanic and Alien programs took place "almost always on military ground." Bonacci said. "I said all the alien stuff happened in Colorado, up in the mountains, and also I think they did it mostly where there was hardly any chance that there would be a lot of people around." He described some of the alien programming as taking place in caves underground.

"They took you in the caves which they had set up. Some of them had an alien space ship so you would go into it," Bonacci said. "Even now they keep showing them movies that have alien space ships with caverns in them. If you got away from them and went around these caverns you'd think, well,' man this is just like the movies.'"

Julianne McKinney, Director of the Electronic Surveillance Project of the *Association of National Security Alumni*[253], reports that she has interviewed 125 victims of government mind control. One of them had apparently been part of the "Alien" programming. The woman, now an adult in her 40's, told McKinney of being used in the alien project as a young child because she was small and just the right size for wearing the costume of a "gray", the big-headed alien with big eyes and a skinny neck which many UFO "abductees" sketch under hypnosis.

"The woman was cult connected. She claimed to have played a role in the perpetuation of the UFO abduction myth; i.e., as a member of a DoD-affiliated Satanic cult. As a little girl she was made to wear an ET costume. When describing the costume, this woman said that the head and neck were manipulated by means of electronic gadgetry built into the costume. The ***Babylon Five*** preying-mantis costume -- which also had an elongated neck, and eyes which were situated far above the wearer's head -- is also operated by means of electronic gadgetry built into the costume. The ET costume worn by this woman antedated *Babylon Five*'s special effects costuming by approximately 10 to 15 years," McKinney said.

"Have you noticed how the special effects technologies in science fiction films have evolved at approximately the same rate as the special effects being employed in so-called UFO abductions and sightings? The "flying saucers" reportedly seen by the public during the 1950's were about as sophisticated as those which were portrayed in science fiction films during that same period. By today's standards, both were quite primitive.

---

[253] McKinney, Julianne, Silver Springs, Maryland, letter to the author, dated June 16, 1994.

"The special effects in today's science fiction films have become quite sophisticated, "McKinney said. "Similarly, persons who now claim to have been abducted, or to have seen UFO's, are describing scenes and events which parallel those now being seen in science fiction films in the form of special effects.

"Having been given no reason to believe otherwise, I have personally concluded that so-called UFO abductions, and the events surrounding those abductions and sightings, are a "black" intelligence operation, involving government-sponsored kidnappings, experimental drugs, surgical experimentation, sophisticated electronics and directed-energy technologies, implantable microcircuited devices, experimental aircraft, Hollywood-style special effects, and the exploitation of so-called 'abductees' as sources of ova, sperm and aborted fetuses for use in government-sponsored genetics experiments.

"These reported activities do not require the involvement or intellectual input of extraterrestrials. In fact, given the alleged superior capacities of ETs, these UFO operations come across as being really quite bungled, redundant and primitive. Their failure to out pace Hollywood's development of special effects technologies or DoD's weapons technologies also points to totally human involvement.

"In sum," McKinney continued, " I see these UFO activities as being nothing more than a massive covert-intelligence fraud being perpetrated upon a gullible public -- a lucrative, large-scale mind-control operation, qualifying as an attempt at creating 'The Cult to End All Cults/ The Cult From Outer Space.'"

McKinney says another source told her that there was a project headed by Michael Aquino that involves the programming of so-called "UFO abductees." The source told her that this project is code-named *Greenstar* and is a mind-control operation involving an overlapping of satanic cults, the U.S. military and the UFO Community.

"Michael Aquino," McKinney said, "is alleged under these circumstances, to have his hand in two major types of DoD-sponsored mind-control operations; viz., Satanic cults and, now, UFO abductions."

Other researchers say there could be a long-term narco-hypnotic induction program using costuming and movie sets as covers for implanting terrifying "screen" or "scramble" memories of phony abductions by big-headed short gray aliens, the *editio vulgata* of ufology's abductee memories.

Bonacci described being given drugs in his Monarch programming. One drug they used, he said, was sodium pentothal. "They'd lower your consciousness level just enough that you're aware of what's going on but your mental thinking is blocked..."

Denise Meyer, told us that small children in Nebraska, ages 4 and 5 were beginning to report "alien" encounters to their therapists[254]. " The kids are describing little green men that fit the description of the 'grays'. They also are describing green UFOs. It appears these are screen memories, used to block the memories of something else," Meyer said.

While "guesstimates" project numbers of victims of cryptocracy mind control to be in the tens of thousands, a 1993 Roper Poll has been interpreted to indicate that 6-10 million North Americans have experienced "alien abduction." Somebody must be working overtime.

If you still have serious doubts that mind control could be part of Project Alien (or some such named activity) take a look at this letter from Walter B. Smith, the Director of the CIA. Declassified on 20 April, 1977 the letter is thought to have been written in 1952:

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY

WASHINGTON 23, D.C.

OFFICE OF THE DIRECTOR

MEMORANDUM TO: Director, Psychological Strategy Board

SUBJECT: Flying Saucers

1. I am today transmitting to the National Security Council a proposal (TAB A) in which it is concluded that the problems connected with unidentified flying objects appear to have implications for psychological warfare as well as for intelligence and operations.

2. The background for this view is presented in some detail in TAB B.

3. I suggest that we discuss at an early board meeting the possible offensive or defensive utilization of these phenomena for psychological warfare purposes.

Enclosure Walter B. Smith

Director

Of course TAB A and TAB B could not be found. So much for the value of the Freedom of Information Act.

---

[254] Meyer, Denise, Telephone conversation with the author, June 4, 1994, Tucson to Lincoln, Nebraska.

Many of the survivors of the so-called Project Monarch are remembering alien scenarios, while "ordinary folks" are those reporting their abductions. The thing they both have in common is the amnesia they experienced for so many years after the event.

Without question, most of the effects described by the abductees can be duplicated by cryptocracy mind control "handlers." In fact, one prominent "deprogrammer" suggested that, after working out the appropriate legal documents to protect him from liability, he would ask for abduction volunteers. His idea was to bring the volunteers before an audience at one of his lectures and "perform" the programming (with high voltage shocks) which creates the same "screen" memories and missing time that the "abductees" are reporting.

The most recent reports grow more disturbing and more difficult to explain entirely by what we know of the state of mind control arts. A letter came from a Colorado woman who previously reported to me an encounter she had with what appeared to be an "alien" along with a human male who appeared to be a government "techie". She is in contact with other "abductees" and just before we went to press sent us some e-mail about two other friends who had experienced similar events:

> I have some new testimony which may be of interest to you. this concerns the abduction of two other women. I have requested permission of these two women to share their experiences in the hope that it will generate interest and help demonstrate a connection between your studies and ours. This type of encounter is VERY common in abductions scenarios.
>
> In the words of one: "A few months ago one of my experiences involved a pelvic exam and my asking telepathically "why, why, why" and being told by a rather sarcastic male voice "because you like it so much." I then saw two male human beings. I was told one was CIA and one was FBI and that they were going to make sure I didn't try to leave the country."
>
> This type of experience is NOT a 'classic' abduction experience but is not uncommon to those who have had the sense to begin to study, question and explore this phenomena. Many people do not try to find out what is happening to them but simply follow as sheeple. The 'pelvic' exam is common but the sarcastic male voice is not. There is no gender associated with the telepathic communications in typical abductions and there is no emotion, sarcastic or otherwise.
>
> The next scenario is from memory of a telephone conversation with another contact. I can get it in print in her own words if interested. She said she remembered awakening on her feet and being kind of lead/dragged down a hallway. As she became more aware, she

struggled with humans and was tackled by a very large woman who gave her an injection. She was then rendered helpless and led to a room with metal chairs and was seated in one. A human male in some kind of uniform repeatedly screamed at her: "You will move to Oklahoma and start a community there. You will take your children and go to Oklahoma and start a community there." As she began to recover more physical control, she bolted for the door and was tripped by the chair. She fell very hard on the floor, landing on her hip and experienced considerable pain. She doesn't remember much more then. However, the next day she remembered being injected. She found a needle puncture wound and also a terrible bruise on her hip where she had fallen.

Now, regardless of what has happened to these women and myself, SOMETHING did happen and continues to happen to all of us and many others. It's entirely possible that Martin Cannon is correct in attributing the abduction phenomena to government interest. It's also possible that there are other factors involved. The source is not the relevant point of interest here. What IS vitally important is the complete and total control that is exercised over the humans experiencing this. If it is a purely mental experience, it is externally generated. Who is generating it and why? If it is physical, as the evidence suggests, then there is a technology involved that makes MKULTRA look like kindergarten. Delgado's experiments with remote stimulation seem to be much closer to the technology being seen here. However, I suggest that this technology has surpassed the need for any 'implants' being first placed in the brains of subjects. Then again, this could have been done at almost any point in a persons life if hospitalization is required. Most women are hospitalized for childbirth. But, regardless of the use of implants, the control of the physical bodies and the minds of many people is being reported from around the world.

I had an experience in February of this year (1994) that frightened me more than any other because of the TOTAL control it involved. I left myself proof.

I'll be brief: I awakened at 4:00 am and remembered that at some point during the night there had been 3 'critters' in my bedroom. I remembered telling them that "Ok, You are finished now get the fuck out of my house," as I sat up in bed and pointed towards the back door. This is the only conscious memory I have of that experience. However, after I got up and went into the kitchen to make coffee, I was shocked to see my down parka, which had been in the very back of my closet the night before, laying on my living room floor. Also, my front door was unlocked. No big thing until you understand that I live in a county with 13 local, state and federal prisons. I NEVER leave my door unlocked. The ritual of the door locking extends to my getting out of bed EVERY night for that third check just to make sure I had locked it. At the very least, I was, at some point during the night, compelled to leave my bed, get my parka out of the closet, walk to the living room, unlock the door, drop the parka on the floor and return to bed to 'see' these three critters. The fact that it was February in Colorado suggests that I may have gotten the parka because I was compelled to leave the house on a very cold night. There was no evidence to suggest that I actually left the house. I have never been known to 'sleep walk'.

The above experience was the most profound for me since 1: there was physical evidence of total control of my body, 2: there was almost complete control of my mind including almost total amnesia of the event. I say 'almost' because I feel that I left the parka on the floor as a message to myself and I remembered the 'ending' of the event consciously. One could suggest that I was 'allowed' to leave the coat on the floor and that I was 'allowed' to remember the ending. Once again, regardless of any 'allowance', the control was there. This kind of control is total. It demonstrates an 'ultimate' weapon -- the total control of the human mind.

These experiences are not the product of delusional women and men around the world but are actual experiences. They may be mental or physical, they may be government related or 'other' related. They are, however, generated from an external source and suggest that 'mind control' is not limited to the 'biological' mode previously attempted. I suggest that 'wave' or 'beam' technology is at play here and I find much evidence to support this in the studies of electromagnetics and the effects on the human mind and body, and also in the study of theoretical physics and related subjects.

The examples I have presented to you, now and previously, are but a very few of the many I have in my files. Ufology books are filled with similar accounts that suggest the use of 'wave' technology.

Hopefully, you will be able to glean what I'm trying to convey -- the most important issue that faces our world today. I'm scared to death and fear for my fellow humans. I KNOW that I am an intelligent, rational, logical and analytical person as are most associated with this phenomena. If this can be done to me, and those like me it can be done to all of us...

Ed Conroy, writing in his book *REPORT ON COMMUNION, The Facts Behind The Most Controversial True Story of Our Time*[255], describes the climate in UFO research circles:

---

[255] Conroy, Ed, *REPORT ON COMMUNION, The Facts Behind The Most Controversial True Story of Our Time*, Avon Books, New York, 1989.

"The possibility may indeed exist that by means yet to be developed, some UFO phenomena may one day be 'proved' to be of a truly extraterrestrial origin (whatever that designation might really mean in terms of the physics of interstellar travel), but for the moment it appears that the advocates of the "extraterrestrial hypothesis" are moving more toward the creation of a New Age religious movement founded upon tenets of *irrational belief* than toward improvements of their hypothesis that would make it more testable.

"While such observations concerning the problems of making a religion out of UFO contact may seem obvious to the seasoned reader of UFO literature, they tend to get missed so frequently in public discussion of abduction phenomena that I believe my emphasis is not misplaced," Conroy wrote. " Would it be unreasonable to observe that in the face of the mysteries posed by UFO sightings and apparent visitor experiences, the human imagination rushes in to fill the gaps, created by our own ignorance, aided by plenty of emotional longing for some kind of relief from life's tedium? (Or the ineptitude of human awareness?)"

"The questions opened by considering the relation between visitor abduction phenomena and the human mind are formidable..."

The UFO developments certainly fit one of the ***Report From Iron Mountain's*** requirements for a war substitute: ""***Sociological: Motivational function.*** b) New religions or other mythologies."[256]

There's a growing body of self-published literature that points to the awareness of a mounting (phoney?) alien invasion. William R. Lyne's book *Space Aliens From The Pentagon*[257] tells of the author's own frustration with the U.S patent office and the State of New Mexico which, he says, ran him ragged with litigation and harassment after he stumbled across proof of a Nazi experimental P2 "saucer" flown in New Mexico in the 1930's, which ran on technology invented by Nicola Tesla in the 1890's.

His book, Lyne writes," is the first to expose a BIG LIE mind-control hoax copied from the Third Reich, and covertly implemented through "national security" means, to perpetuate the coercive monopoloy of a corporate-state elite. By stealing, concealing, or suppressing advanced technology, they insure our continued dependency on archaic petroleum and nuclear technology. Through the mass-media we are brainwashed with scientific lies and misinformation, and "indoctrinated" with Nazi-created "parapsychology", designed to "stretch our credulity", so we will indiscriminately accept on *faith,* a "psychic" BIG LIE religion and *Platonist epistemology,* which makes us easier to exploit as a slave people. To this end, flying saucer technology of relative simplicity and phenomenal potential was stolen from Nicola Tesla, and has been concealed from us for over 50 Years."

---

[256] *Op cit, p. 84.*

[257] William R. Lyne, *SPACE ALIENS FROM THE PENTAGON, Flying Saucers Are Man-Made Electrical Machines,* 1993, Lamy, New Mexico 87540.

In 1953, the book says, Lyne and seven others saw a flying saucer at close range. He studied its behavior, and after thinking about it for thirty years, published his book which is a thought provoking piece of folk art. Besides Lyne's caustic rhetoric, the book contains his well executed original drawings of how a saucer works, and photos of a celestial guidance system" from a WWII-vintage Nazi "*Kreisel Teller*" ("*Gyrating Saucer.*") In the last pages, as a final gesture of defiance to the crytpocracy, Lyne gives the designs for his saucer to the public with the proviso:

> ...the purchaser or reader is notified of, and hereby understands and agrees to the following:
>
> 1. That she or he assumes all physical risks of any harm to anyone attendant to the constructing, testing, flying, or attempting to fly, a flying saucer constructed as herein suggested;
>
> 2. that the author assumes no liability whatsoever...
>
> 3. that the purchaser or reader... hereby assumes complete responsibility...
>
> 4. It is hereby agreed and understood that these plans are hypothetical, provided only for the purpose of the investigation and understanding of flying saucer theory, flight and consturciton, and that the author gives no warranty, either express or implied, that a flying saucer constructed according to these plans will work or be safe to the operator or others...

Lyne writes:"The magnitude by which electricity overcomes the force of gravity, is rivaled only by the magnitude by which the lies of our government and the Trilateralists have overcome our rationality. Justice, in redress of these crimes, should be by public punishment of the traitors responsible. They have perverted the instruments of democracy to seduce innocent minds...

"The secret government is... waging a subliminal brainwashing war against us, in violation of our right to government only by our consent. They are using movies, T.V., books, magazines, children's stories, and all forms of propaganda, from the cradle to the grave, to criminally undermine the very epistemological underpinnings of rational existence. We have not "consented" to a fraud of which we are unaware. To cut right through all the baloney, our government...(has) created the whole "alien" scenario to brainwash us..."

Thus spake the common man, who, like most common men, hath remarkable insights.

JANUARY [illegible]

SECURITY
IS NO
ACCIDENT...
IT HAS TO BE
PRACTICED!
WINNER
SECURITY POSTER OF THE MONTH
Poster Designed by

"SELECTED" TO SUPPLY PILOTS' DISPLAYS AND CONTROLS FOR THE USAF ATF
KNIGHTHELM

SHARE OUR VISION.

The Knighthelm helmet from GEC Avionics integrates human perception and electronic sensors. Instead of a Head-Up Display, there's an On-Head Display; with infra-red and computer-generated imagery displayed in perfect focus before the pilot's eyes, and targets selected by the pilot's line of sight.

Knighthelm's missions are clearly defined: night attack, air superiority, reconnaissance. The options range from instrument-compatible night vision, to a display that replaces many of the existing instruments.

Knighthelm isn't science fiction: It's here and now. At GEC Avionics, we don't build on the past. We start with the future, and work back.

GEC

For more information, contact Jerry Fisher at:
GEC Avionics Limited,
Airport Works, Rochester, Kent, England.
UK Tel: (0634) 844400.

39

FALSE MEMORY SPINDROME

Memory is illusive in some cases, vivid in others. A Roper poll conducted in 1993 suggested that up to 20 million people in North America may have memories of "alien" abductions. In 1994 Dr. Colin Ross said that he heard someone on a CBC radio broadcast say that they had evidence that 750,000 babies had been ritually sacrificed. FBI ritual abuse "debunker" Kenneth Lanning in 1992 said that there were 50,000 missing children in the U.S., which law enforcement reports said people believed were " being murdered in human sacrifices..."

Incest and child sexual abuse reached epidemic proportions. The generally accepted statistics in 1993 were as follows:

- One out of three girls and one of of five boys would be sexually molsested before the age of eighteen.
- A child was sexually abused every 2 minutes with over 95% of the abusers being someone the child knows and trusts.
- For every case reported, there were twenty-five cases that went unreported.
- Only 5% of all sexual abuse cases ever went to court. In 50% of those cases the child was returned to the abuser.
- Approximately 97% of child prostitutes were incest victims.
- Child sexual abuse was a major cause of teenage suicide.
- One in ten homes were involved in child sexual abuse.
- A high percentage of abused children develop dissociative identity disorders.

Then, just as the legions of abused children (now grown to adulthood) were beginning to remember satanic abuse, (the ranks of diagnosed cases of Multiple Personality Disorder had reached 25,000 in the U.S.) and Harvard University's Dr. John Mack was enjoying celebrity as the author of a book on alien abductions, and about twenty percent of those diagnosed as suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder[258] (MPD) were being discovered to have military or intelligence backgrounds, a "robust and adroit" public relations effort was mounted against those who were beginning to remember all sorts of details which related to their abuse as children. Groups were quickly formed to debunk such "nonsense." One was spearheaded by a woman who was herself named by her daughter as a child abuser. Her name was Pamela Freyd and her organization was the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) which sprang suddenly up from nowhere.

---

[258] Ross, M.D., Colin, in an interview with the author, Ross estimated that about 20% of his patients at Charter Hospital (which gets a cross-section of referred patients from all over the country) had military or intelligence backgrounds.

Dr. Randy Noblitt, wrote an article in *The Newsletter of The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse*[259] which makes the point well: "There is a long history of abuse of children and a lengthy tradition of denial regarding such practices. Similar denial and minimization of other crimes against humanity include the Holocaust revisionists who deny or minimize the reality of the Nazi death camps. Another even more subtle example of instituionalized denial, in this case by the perpetrators themselves, is reflected in the efforts of a bogus organization called the Italian-American Civil Rights League. Like the FMSF, which does not actually appear to be interested in the broad subject of false memory, the Italian-American Civil Rights League was not really created to promote the civil rights of Italian-Americans, something which would, like the study of false memory, be a worthy cause. Instead, the Italian-American Civil Rights League was primarily devised to deny the existence of the Mafia. This organization (founded by Joseph Colombo who was, at the time, the head of a major New York crime family), was so powerful that it drafted Governor Nelson Rockefeller as an honorary member and reputedly influenced the production of the movie *The Godfather* to omit the word, *Mafia*, from its script. It is unfortunate that organizations which have been created to advocate some unpopular cause (e.g., the protection of alleged criminals and accused child abusers) can legally utilize alternative terminology to describe their actual agendas. However those involved parties in the mental health and related professions may come under fire for violation of professional ethical constraints which prohibit what may be considered to be false and misleading statements."

Rallying a roster of "prestigious names from the therapeutic community", this group was an instantly solvent (it's budget soared to a half million dollars) and most effective organization that put a lot of "spin" on the facts. On its quickly assembled advisory board were psychologists and psychiatrists who were eager to attack therapists of abused children and particularly therapists who were treating people who suffered from MPD recently changed to Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) by the American Psychiatric Association.

Often ad hoc committees form spontaneously to meet a need, but that would not seem to be the case with this group. This politically active group seems to have been spawned by a self-centered individual who was more than a capable propagandist. In fact she was such a good propagandist and had such powerful connections, it is not difficult to wonder if the cryptocracy might have used sociologist, Dr. Pamela Freyd's personal interests against her daughter's therapists as a tool to confuse the therapeutic community and the courts and as a cover-up for the unraveling reality of trauma based mind control. Or, Pamela Freyd, founder of the FMSF, might have known of the cryptocracy's wide-spread use and abuse of MPD children in their "black" arts programs, and used good common sense to recruit her natural allies, the MKultra doctors who filled her board of advisors along with a number of apparent paedophiles.

---

[259] Randy Noblitt, Ph.D., *Multiple Choice: Which of the Following is most false: (A) The Memory, (B) The Syndrome, or (C) The Foundation?*, The Newsletter of The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse, P.O. Box 835564, Richardson, Texas 75083-5564, Vol. 1, Number 3.

The cryptocracy most likely funneled money into the organization and otherwise supported it, probably for the purpose of keeping secrets such as Project Monarch and discrediting mind control "slaves" who knew where the bones were buried. As far as anyone can tell, the FMSF's reason for being was to testify in court against people who were remembering their abuse as children. The FMSF was not interested in discovering proofs and descriptions which would help therapists identify the alleged "syndrome" it had created.

A number of the leading psychoscientists have pointed out that there is actually no clinical entity which is accepted within the community of health care providers by the designation, False Memory Syndrome. According to Richard Lowenstein, M.D., "FMS is a syndrome without signs and symptoms (the defining characteristics of a syndrome)". Lowenstein observed that ""One agenda of at least some members of this foundation seems to be that of creating a standard legal defense for well-to-do individuals who may be sued by their children alleging childhood sexual abuse."[260]

Despite the "extreme skepticism" of the FMSF toward the possibility that ritual abuse does occur, a survey by Perry (1992) showed that 88% of a large sample of therapists across the US do believe that ritual abuse is a legitimate problem in modern times. More and more therapists are catching on to the cryptocracy's access and use of the MPD state for the purposes of organized criminal activity and/or "intelligence" operations.

Pamela Freyd, Ph.D., is a sociologist, the mother of Professor Jennifer J. (J.J.) Freyd, Ph.D., of the University of Oregon, Department of Psychology in Eugene. J.J. went into therapy in December 1990. She began to recover memories of her parent's abuse of her as a child. By fall of 1991, six months after J.J. went into therapy, Pamela Freyd began writing derogatory things about her daughter and protesting her memories as false.

On the NPR evening radio news show in 1992, "All Things Considered," reporter, Wendy Schmelzer, said "For the last year, Dr. Freyd has criss-crossed the country attending similar meetings; each time with the same message for her audience -- 'you are not alone. My husband and I were also falsely accused,'"

---

[260] R.J. Lowenstien, President's message. *ISSMP&D News*, pp.1,2,4., Dec. 1992.

Pamela Freyd's daughter, J.J., a psychotherapist and professor had to defend herself. After a long period of silence she said finally: "I am the daughter they claim has falsely accused them...

"...My mother published her version of being falsely accused under the name 'Jane Doe' and this published story has been circulated widely. Many people learn of the Jane Doe story in such a way that they know it is about the Freyd family; others learn the story without knowing the identity of the characters, but believing the details to be accurate... As one clinician said at a national meeting recently about the FMSF: "there is persuasive evidence that this organization grew out of one family's feud that's overgrown its boundaries and come into the popular culture.'

"...The truth I wish to speak about... pertains to **patterns** of behavior. I will speak about a pattern of behavior my parents have exhibited toward me in my childhood and continuing into the present: a pattern of boundary violation, a pattern of invasion and control, a pattern of inappropriate and unwanted sexualization, a pattern of family and relationship dysfunction, and a pattern of intimidation and manipulation..." J.J. finally said in 1993 in a presentation entitled *Theoretical and Personal Perspectives on The Delayed Memory Debate* which she presented for The Center for Mental Health at Foote Hospital's Continuing Education Conference: Controversies around recovered memories of incest and ritualistic abuse in Ann Arbor Michigan...[261] And after months of keeping silent in the face of her mother's nameless accusations, conservatively, scientifically, then personally, Dr. J.J. Freyd did speak:

"My parents are step-brother and -sister to each other. My mother's mother married my father's father around the time my parents got married... My parents are estranged from myself, my sister, and my uncle (my father's only sibling). My parents' estrangement from my uncle originated almost 20 years ago.

"My parents have severely violated my privacy. They used the Foundation in a personal way. Earlier this year, for instance, my mother wrote a personal letter to my mother-in-law on FMSF letterhead, signing the letter with her title as Executive Director. The letter, which is dated February 17, 1993, was hostile to my husband and me, included the name of my therapist, and implied that my mother-in-law might be "cut off from the grandchildren." This entirely unsolicited letter was deeply upsetting to my mother-in-law, a woman in her late 70s living alone and with no desire to have contact with my parents (she had experienced my father as verbally abusive and had avoided contact with him long before my husband raised the topic of my childhood sexual abuse with her). With her letter, my mother included the FMSF brochure. This is embarrassing and painful to me.

---

[261] Freyd, Jennifer J., Ph. D., *Theoretical and Personal Perspectives on The Delayed memory Debate*, A presentation for The Center for Mental Health at Foote Hospital's Continuing Education Conference: Controversies around recovered memories of incest and ritualistic abuse. August 7, 1993, Ann Arbor, Michigan.

It is as if the weight of a whole Foundation stands behind my mother's frenzied denial of my reality..."

J.J. read sections from an e-mail message from her father dated November, 1992, in which he comments on her rejections of their offer to be on the FMSF advisory board:

"The thing that is requiring a bit of work is preventing news stories in Oregon. We have a lot of members not just from Oregon but with children who are in Oregon involved in rather radical feminist (often lesbian) cult-like groups. We have been trying to hold off coverage. You mentioned that friends are sending you stories from around the country. Please note that these had to be sent to you: there haven't been (at least to our knowledge) any stories printed in Oregon about the FMS Foundation. My guess is that your views of most of the groups in question wouldn't be that different from ours. The best way to control these stories when they appear is to control them. Instead of avoiding them. I think it would serve the interests of all of us if we established some communication about his stuff... I am sorry that you so resent the extent to which we have gone public. I am sorry that it didn't occur to me that you would so resent it. I assumed that you would know what we would do in a case like this: it surely is one of the more predictable things I've ever done. (It would be totally out of character for me to keep my mouth shut; even so, I did just that for over a year.) And when we asked you to become an advisor of the Foundation I actually thought you would agree. I don't mean that I was sure that you'd want your named used (I thought it possible) but that you would want to be on our mailing list.) I still insist on thinking of our Newsletter, indeed the whole project, as being primarily a way of communicating with our daughters..."

J.J. continued by reporting "boundary violations" in this case, actions which would be considered to be a breach of ethics in therapeutic circles: " For example, " she said, "board member Harold Lief was my mother's psychiatrist for many years. He explained to me that he did not believe I was abused because in the early 1980s, when he met with my father once or twice in order to admit him to Silver Hill for treatment for alcoholism, he learned that my father's erotic fantasies were 'entirely homoerotic'. Now, I won't count it an ethical blunder to make the unfounded argument that a man with homoerotic fantasies in a heterosexual marriage is incapable of molesting his prepubescent daughter, but I do wonder about the ethics of telling the daughter of his patient such information -- did I ask to know about my father's sexual fantasies? Most emphatically 'no!' "(FMSF) Board members Orne and Wakefield were also names my parents first mentioned to me in therapeutic, not collegial roles. For instance, Orne was consulted by Lief about my father and I understand that this consultation included sessions with my father. My mother asked me to call (Hollida) Wakefield (who is married to board member Underwager) and discuss with her our family situation. In psychology, at least, there are very specific ethical codes about dual relationships that would seem to be violated in these cases."

What J.J. Freyd did not say was conspicuous among the FMSF's Advisory Board was Dr. Martin T. Orne of MKultra fame was the head of the Office of Naval Research's Committee on Hypnosis and helped develop the coercive use of hypnosis for the cryptocracy. Orne also was the author of Patty Hearst's "brainwashing" defense.

Dr. Orne, M.D., Professor of Psychiatry at the University of Pennsylvania and the Institute of Pennsylvania Hospital in Philadelphia has long been an active spy-chiatrist, a master mind manipulator, author of several CIA supported studies on hypnosis in interrogation and related subjects of cryptocratic interest. (Orne was also on the powerful Controlling Committee of the Council on Scientific Affairs of the American Medical Association. Also on that crucial council were Bernard L. Diamond, an MD who hypnotized Sirhan Sirhan, and there were a number of MKultra psycho-scientists.)

FMSF board members Hollida Wakefield and her husband Ralph Underwager, Ph.D., Director of the Institute of Psychological Therapies at Northfield, Minnesota, gave an interview in a Dutch paedophile magazine, *Paidika*. While Wakefield remained guarded, sticking to the safe line of psychoscience, her husband, Dr. Underwager spilled the beans saying, " Paedophiles need to become more positive and make the claim that paedophilia is an acceptable expression of God's will for love and unity among human beings."

Further in the interview Underwager said: "Of course, I'm not privy to God's will. I do believe it is God's will that we have freedom. I believe that God's will is that we have absolute freedom. No conditions, no contingencies. When the blessed apostle Paul says, 'All things are lawful for me,' he says it not once but four times, 'All things are lawful for me.' He also adds that not everything works."

Underwager is the author of a number of publications on the subject of sexual abuse of children which are frequently cited in legal cases. According to Dr. Randy Noblitt, "One of his (Underwager's) major forensic works was found to have numerous distortions and errors in a study supported by a grant from the New England Commissioners of Child Welfare Agencies."[262]

Not only are there Mkultran crypto spy-chiatrists on the False Memory Syndrome Foundation's founding advisory board, there would also appear to have been paedophiles at its helm.

---

[262] Salter, Anna C., Ph.D., *Accuracy of Expert Testimony in Child Sexual Abuse Cases,A case study of Ralph Underwager and Holida Wakefield*, unpublished monograph, cited by Randy Noblistt,Ph.D. in *Multiple Choice; Which of the Following is the most false: (A) The Memory (B) The Syndrome, or (c) The Foundation, in VOLI., No. 3*, Newsletter of The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse. Fall/Winter 1993-94.

J.J. Freyd continued with the rebuttal forced by her mother's mission to plant the solid belief that "false memories" were the norm rather than the exception:

"I remember dancing nude in front of my father with a friend when we were each 9 or 10 years old. we were decorated as playboy bunnies (little bunny tails pinned to our backs and so on). I remember my father communicating approval of the nude dancing. I remember my father reading my diary. He does not deny this, but claims I 'wanted' him to read it because I left it in sight. I remember my father listening in on telephone calls by lifting another extension of the telephone when my mother was on the phone. I remember my father standing in the doorway watching me kiss a boyfriend. I looked up from my boyfriend to discover my father standing there, still and silent. I remember verbal abuse, often in front of non-family members.

"During my childhood, my father sometimes discussed his own experiences of being sexually abused as an 11-year old boy. He discussed these experiences, however, not in terms of 'abuse' but in terms of precocious sexuality. He called himself a 'kept boy' and explained he later became a 'male prostitute'. He claimed he eventually decided to become heterosexual because it would produce a better life; he emphasized it was a matter of will to change his orientation. My father encouraged me to read Nabokov's *Lolita* when I was of an age that allowed me to identify with Lolita; he then discussed the book with me in the living room.

"One time," J.J. Freyd continued, "when I was visiting my parents house as a young adult their dog started to 'hump' a male visitor sitting in the living room. My father then explained to those of us in the living room that the dog could detect my or my sister's sexual interest in men and she then expressed that by humping those men. More recently, I attempted to discuss this with my father, expressing some of my confusion and feelings of violation about the event. I asked my father why he would say such a thing. He responded by telling me that dogs can in fact detect sexual interest. My father then told me a story about another dog he had owned who clacked her teeth at menstruating women. When I discussed with my parents one of the memories I had recovered, my mother's reaction was that the memory had to be false because if the sexual event I was remembering had actually occurred their dog would have made a lot of noise -- which my mother would have heard -- as dogs always joined, apparently noisily, -- in human sexual events...

"False Memory Syndrome -- Destroying Families," J.J. Freyd said. "For me, and many others, the bitter irony is that the memories -- false or true -- did not destroy healthy families... But my family was not simply a happy, healthy family. It was a deeply troubled family, and its destruction did not begin simply by my entering therapy at the age of 33."

Shifting to the overall picture of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation and its disproportionate clout, Pamela Freyd sheds more light. In an interview with Dr. David L. Calof, editor of *Treating Abuse Today*[263], Freyd denied the veracity of satanic abuse reports and the widespread reports of trauma from""alien" abductions:

"We have been assured in several conversations that evidence of satanic activity of the sort that has become a popular myth in our country simply does not exist. It must be obvious to rational people that accusations based on memories that include satanic ritual are delusions of some sort. For those of us who are only accused of 'run-of-the-mill incest,' this should turn out to be some help. If 'memories' of satanic abuse can be induced in therapy, then so can 'memories' of incest or anything else."

Despite the extreme skepticism of Freyd's FMSF toward the possibility of ritual abuse, a 1992 survey by N.E. Perry showed that 88% of a large sample of therapists across the US believed that ritual abuse is a legitimate problem in modern times. Dr. Randy Noblitt writes: "To ignore the outcries of children and adults would be inhumane; to refuse to investigate their claims would not only be an abandonment of civilized behavior, but it would also be unscientific. in science we are taught to hold no prejudices about the universe nor human nature but simply to gather data until we are able to distinguish genuine empirical relationships from untenable theories. There is an accumulating body of data which points to the reality of ritual abuse. As scientists, as humanitarian people, we cannot afford to abandon this inquiry."[264]

One of the FSMF's board members, Elizabeth Loftus, Ph.D., is a professional "expert witness" in legal matters, who presents the foundations skeptical view of delayed memories of childhood sexual abuse. Judith Lewis Herman, M.D., Associate Clinical Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard and Mary R. Harvey, Ph. D., a Lecturer in Psychiatry at the same university answered Loftus' argument: "Because most child victims do not disclose sexual abuse while they remain under the authority of their abusers, some states have extended their statutes of limitation to allow adult survivors legal redress. Some of these reforms permit action by survivors who experience delayed recall of the abuse after a period of full or partial amnesia. A few highly publicized cases have been decided in favor of adult survivors...

"Several independent large-scale studies have documented the nature and prevalence of sexual assault in the United States," Herman and Harvey write. "In these studies trained interviewers have obtained detailed information from large community samples of adult women, revealing that rape, incest, and childhood sexual abuse -- defined in accordance with prevailing law -- are common experiences. The best study, by the sociologist Diana Russell, indicates that one girl in three is sexually abused by age 18, one in four before age 14. Most abusers are known and trusted people in a position of authority over the child. Many are family members. This abuse is vastly under-reported, because offenders usually succeed in silencing their victims. Probably less than 10% of child sexual abuse cases come to the attention of protective agencies or police...

---

[263] Calof, David L., "A Conversation with Pamela Freyd, Ph.D., Co-Founder and Executive Director, False Memory Syndrome Foundation, Inc., Part I," *Treating Abuse Today*, Vol. 3, No. 3., p 25, Clinical Training Publications Inc., 2722 Eastlake Ave. E., Suite 300, Seattle, Wa. 98102.

[264] Noblitt, Randy, Ph.D. in *Multiple Choice: Which of the Following is the most false; (A) The Memory (B) The Syndrome, or (C) The Foundation, Vol. 1., No. 3.*, Newsletter of The Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse, Fall/Winter 1993-94, P.O. Box 835564, Richardson, Texas 75083.

"The consensus of researchers is that false complaints by children are rare, in the range of 2-8% of reported cases. False retractions of true complaints are far more common, especially when the victim is insufficiently protected after disclosure and therefore succumbs to intimidation by the perpetrator or other family members who feel that they must preserve secrecy..."

Several researchers, deprogrammers and therapists told me that the memories begin to flood in, and recovery begins, after the handler of a Project Monarch survivor dies, or when the survivor (if female) has their first child. Often, the handler is one or both of the parents of the survivor.

"Working with 53 female patients in group therapy, most of whom reported delayed recall after a period of partial or complete amnesia, Judith Herman and Emily Schatzow found that the majority (74%) were able to obtain independent corroborating evidence for the abuse. In some cases their stories were confirmed by other family members or other victims of the same perpetrator. Some found physical evidence such as pornographic photographs or diaries. In several cases the perpetrators unapologetically admitted their actions, and a few even tried to renew the sexual contact. Five women (9%) found evidence that was strongly suggestive but not conclusive. Six (11%) did not try to confirm their memories. Only three (6%) could not find any supporting evidence. Although more research is needed, these results suggest that delayed recall of sexual abuse is as verifiable as any other form of disclosure.." Drs. Herman and Harvey reported.

Partial or even complete amnesia for childhood trauma is well documented. In a follow-up study of 200 children who had been treated for sexual abuse, Linda Meyer Williams of the Family Violence Research Laboratory at the University of New Hampshire found that one in three did not recall the experiences that had been documented in their hospital records 20 years before. "How much is remembered depends on circumstances," Drs. Herman and Harvey said. " In general the younger the child and the more violent the experience, the greater the likelihood and the severity of amnesia..."

Delayed recall of traumatic events after a period of amnesia is also well documented. The most recent example is the widely-publicized case of Father

James Porter, a Catholic priest who, by his own admission, molested more than 100 boys and girls in several states. Many of Porter's victims, including the first to come forward, testified that they had recalled the abuse after a period of amnesia. "In these cases," Drs Herman and Harvey said, " both the fact of the abuse and the phenomenon of delayed recall are beyond dispute.

"The causes of delayed recall are poorly understood. Often it occurs when the survivor is in her twenties or thirties, but we have seen it even later in life. A common precipitant is a change in an intimate relationship. Memories may surface when the survivor begins a sexual relationship, gets married, or has a child, or when this child reaches the age at which the survivor was first abused. Delayed recall may also occur when another victim of the same man discloses abuse, as in the Porter case," Drs Herman and Harvey said. "Sometimes the trauma is recalled only when the aging perpetrator dies, or falls ill and expects the victim to care for him.

"When traumatic memories break into awareness, distress can be overwhelming. Survivors are frightened, ashamed, depressed, and tormented by flashbacks or nightmares. They may feel suicidal or fear they are going crazy. At such times many people seek therapy. In our experience, they are far more likely to see a therapist because they are troubled by new memories than to unearth new memories at the instigation of a therapist. Furthermore, the process of uncovering one's history does not depend on a single memory. New Memories must be gradually blended with old ones and alternative explanations weighed until a coherent and largely verifiable account is constructed. No patient is eager to discover that she was violated by people she loved and trusted. In fact, patients tend to cling to their doubts long past the point where most impartial observers would e convinced. That is why many therapists and self-help books encourage survivors to have confidence in their suspicions.

"Some therapists do try to play detective, making unwarranted inferences about their patients' histories without waiting for the story to unfold. But overzealous, incompetent, or even frankly exploitative therapists do not have enough power or influence over their patients to impose an elaborate form of mind control. Psychotherapy cannot be compared with coercive interrogation; the power imbalance between patient and therapist is not nearly so extreme. Most psychotherapy is collaborative. Therapists often make suggestions, but patients will respond only when those suggestions resonate with their own feelings and experiences," Drs. Herman and Harvey said. "If a therapist is on the wrong track, most patients simply say so. If the therapist persists in pursuing a false hypothesis, therapy is ineffective, and the patient will usually look elsewhere for help.

"Legitimate concerns have been raised about the heightened risk of suggestion when hypnotherapy is used. In our experience, however, most patients recover their memories without using hypnosis at all, and even those who do use it rarely rely on it as their main source of information. In a review of over 200 cases seen in our trauma program this year, we could find only one in which a patient based her belief that she had been abused solely on a trance experience..."[265]

While the False Memory Syndrome Foundation looks to Kenneth V. Lanning, Special FBI Agent,[266] for support in propagating the false belief that recovered memories of child abuse and occult ritual abuse are false, many of Special Agent Lanning's comments go against Freyd and company's grain:

"We now have hundreds of victims alleging that thousands of offenders are abusing and even murdering tens of thousands of people as part of organized satanic cults..." Lanning admitted. But he added, "there is little or no corroborative evidence. The very reason many "experts" cite for believing these allegations (i.e., many victims, who never met each other, reporting the same events), is the primary reason I began to question at least some aspects of these allegations..."

One of the suvivors of ritual abuse I interviewed, Darlene, explained the lack of evidence this way: "We ate it... Human beings taste like chicken, but it depends upon the age of the person and the part of the body you eat. Old people are gamier, of course. They always told me the name of the person I was made to eat. It was more traumatic that way. Even if the person was dead when I first saw them, they told me their name."

Lanning protests: " In response to accusations by a few that I am a 'satanist' who has infiltrated the FBI to facilitate a cover-up, how does anyone (or should anyone have to) disprove such allegations? Although reluctant to dignify such absurd accusations with a reply, all I can say to those who have made such allegations is that they are wrong and to those who heard such allegations is to carefully consider the source..."

"... I am concerned about the credibility of the child sexual abuse issue and outraged that, in some cases, individuals are getting away with molesting children because we cannot prove they are satanic devil worshipers who engage in brainwashing, human sacrifice, and cannibalism as part of a large conspiracy..."

Control the memories of the victims. Keep the secrets buried beneath amnesia and screens and "scrambled" impressions. Control the law enforcement investigators. Keep the healers misled in the dark and under attack by such as the False Memory Spindrome Foundation. Divide and conquer. The recipe for a conspiracy of global dimensions?

---

[265] Judith Lew Herman, M.D., is Associate Clinical Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School and the author of Trauma and Recovery (Basic Books, 1992). Mary R. Harvey, Ph.D., is Lecturer in Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School and the co-author (with Mary Koss, Ph.D.) of *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Interventions* (Sage 1991). Drs. Herman and Harvey are directors of the Victims of Violence Program at Cambridge Hospital, Cambridge, Massachusetts. Comments quoted were taken from the June 1993 issue of American Psychologist, *The False Memory Debate: Social Science or Social Backlash?*

[266] Lanning, Kenneth V., *Investigators Guide to Allegations of 'Ritual' Child Abuse*, Behavioral Science Unit, National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime. Federal Bureau of Investigation, FBI Academy, Quantico, Virginia 22135, January, 1992.

But Lanning did concede that"... Most of these victims are also probably not lying and have come to believe that which they are alleging actually happened..." That was the least one could say, and the PSE quickly showed that, over and over.

And Lanning was correct when he said "...Some of what the victims allege may be true and accurate, some may be misperceived or distorted, some may be screened or symbolic, and some may be 'contaminated' or false..." but what percentages of how many in which categories has yet to be determined. The "mental health" community is just beginning to confront the kinds of cases this book presented 17 years ago. Was the lag engineered, or did it just take that long for the "psycho-scientists" and "spy-chiatrists" to retire or die of old age, so that younger eyes could see the truth of their professional father's ugly creation.

What a legacy to leave? An army of MPD's created by psycho-scientists (the spy-chiatrists) left to their successors to deprogram. A lucrative self-serving Catch-22 of the national security "mental health system."

"...Any professional evaluating victims' allegations of 'ritual' abuse cannot ignore or routinely dismiss the lack of physical evidence (no bodies or physical evidence left by violent murders); the difficulty in successfully committing a large-scale conspiracy crime (the more people involved in any crime conspiracy, the harder it is to get away with it); and human nature (intragroup conflicts resulting in individual self-serving disclosures are likely to occur in any group involved in organized kidnapping, baby breeding, and human sacrifice)." Lanning said. " If and when members of a destructive cult commit murders, they are bound to make mistakes, leave evidence, and eventually make admission in order to brag about their crimes or to reduce their legal liability...."

But with a large, well-organized cryptocracy, which has mind control as its secret to keeping secrets, with law enforcement agencies such as the FBI being part of that cryptocracy, Lanning's argument barely holds water. What would Lanning say about Waco? What would he have to say about The Finders?

"...There are many children in the United States who, starting early in their lives, are severely psychologically, physically, and sexually traumatized by angry, sadistic parents or other adults. Such abuse, however, is not perpetrated only or primarily by satanists. The statistical odds are that such abusers are members of mainstream religions. If 99.9% of satanists and 0.1% of Christians abuse children as part of their spiritual belief system, that still means that the vast majority of children so abused were abused by Christians," Special Agent Lanning says.

"Until hard evidence is obtained and corroborated, the public should not be frightened into believing that babies are being bred and eaten, that 50,000 missing children are being murdered in human sacrifices, or that satanists are taking over America's day care centers or institution," Yet Special Agent Lanning says," No one can prove with absolute certainty that such activity has NOT occurred. The burden of proof, however, as it would be in a criminal prosecution, is on those who claim that it has occurred. The explanation that the satanists are too organized and law enforcement is too incompetent only goes so far in explaining the lack of evidence..."

FMSF director Pam Freyd said," We have been assured in several conversations that evidence of satanic activity of the sort that has become a popular myth in our country simply does not exist. It must be obvious to rational people that accusations based on memories that include satanic ritual are delusions of some sort. For those of us who are only accused of 'run-of-the-mill incest', this should turn out to be some help. If memories of satanic abuse can be induced in therapy, then so can 'memories' of incest or anything else.[267]"

The Foundation circulated FBI Special Agent, Ken Lanning's apology entitled: *Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse*. When you read it you discover it's no wonder the FBI can't find any abuse going on. They won't come to a crime scene when they're called, or they arrest the complainant.

Soon Lanning innocently admitted to a *Vanity Fair*[268] reporter, therapist Leslie Bennetts that he hadn't interviewed one single survivor anyway, keeping his search for evidence "in house" interviewing mostly law enforcement officers and a few therapists. (When the fact of this oversight was pointed out to him, Lanning quickly rushed out and interviewed "several dozen" victims. The results were apparently the same to Lanning -- no evidence of any truth to their reports of ritual abuse.)

Other board members of the FMSF are useful for adding "spin" to the reports of "alien" abduction. Persinger has come up with a number of theories over the years which serve to explain away the "alien" phenomenon as a "natural" occurrence. One of his latest theories is that thousands of close encounters experiencers (abductees) were suffering from an exceedingly rare temporal lobe disorder which caused them to hallucinate the exact same things.

FMSF board member, Margaret Singer was very handy as an expert witness for a particular career Air Force attorney with cryptocracy connections.

The FBI is part of the cryptocracy and according to the victims, one of the major abusers. And since most of the arguments by disbelievers ultimately come down to the question of evidence, the FBI's Kenneth Lanning's litany of denial is invoked: "I have consulted on hundreds and hundreds of these cases in the last 10 years..." and he has failed to turn up any physical evidence of the kinds of intergenerational cult activity alleged by the survivors.

---

[267] Freyd, Pamela, "Dear Friends" letter, February 20, 1992,"

[268] Bennetts, Leslie, "Nghtmares On Main Street," *Vanity Fair*, June 1993, p. 42.

Despite the fictional proofs offered on the Fox network's *X-Files* series, the same is true of the claims of alien abductions. The FBI has turned up nothing ... official.

Prominent on the FMSF advisory board is Dr. George Ganaway, a psychiatrist and director of the Ridgeview Center for Dissociative Disorders in Smyrna, Georgia. Writing and lecturing widely on "alternative hypotheses for ritual-abuse claims," he points out that the patient population of MPD's is a highly suggestible one and therefore susceptible to influence from outside sources like books, articles, sermons, and lectures, movies and television shows, as well as the personal testimony of other alleged cult survivors. But in fact it is no more highly suggestible than the population at large.

"It is difficult for even the most socially isolated individual to avoid exposure to stimulating material that has the potential for contaminating the memories of the individual's personal life story," Ganaway told the American Psychological Association's annual convention in 1991. He had a ready explanation for the occult abuse "epidemic" it was "source amnesia," he said, in which the person "doesn't remember they've read a particular book, seen a particular movie or TV show, or heard a particular story from another patient,[269]" but has nonetheless "absorbed" the material from some outside source rather than experienced it directly.

Dr. Ganaway warned that "hypnosis increases the subject's confidence in the veracity of both correct and *incorrect* recalled material." In her article in *Vanity Fair,* Leslie Bennett wrote, "This argument carried little weight with survivors who have not undergone hypnosis," pointing out that the majority of survivors have remembered most of their crucial scenes of trauma while they were driving a car or in nightmares or flashbacks -- not under hypnosis."

1994 was a landmark year for the FMSF. There was good news and bad news.

First the bad news: In August Kenneth Lanning retired from the FBI. The rumor was that considerable pressure had been brought by local law enforcers on the FBI to put someone more open to the Satanic ritual abuse issue in the office Lanning occupied.

The good news was Dr. Louis Jolyon "Jolly" West would address the conference about his CIA sponsored research on Dissociative Identity Disorder. West was among the group at the University of Oklahoma who were among the first to test LSD on involuntary human subjects. He became famous for killing an elephant with an overdose of LSD. When West was on the Advisory Board of the Cult Awareness Network he told a Satanic ritual abuse survivor that there was no such thing as Satanic abuse. Later, as Director of the Neurophysicatric Institute and chairman of the Department of Psychiatry at UCLA West became the "pet" of Governor Ronald Reagan by proposing a Center for the Study and Prevention of Violence which many believe was to be a cover for unbridled mind control experiments on human subjects. (When asked by reporters how subjects would be obtained who would submit themselves to West's brainwashing techniques, Ed Meese replied, "We'll kidnap them.")

---

[269] Bennetts, Lesie, *op cit.*

West was a part of a network of doctors and scientists who gathered intelligence on hallucinogenic drugs for the MKULTRA program. He had proved himself to be a cryptocracy-safe shrink who had been called upon to examine Jack Ruby, Lee Harvey Oswald's assassin. It was on the basis of West's diagnosis that Ruby was compelled to be treated for mental disorders and, according to the Napa Sentinal "put on happy pills." The West examination had been ordered after Ruby began to say that he was part of a right-wing conspiracy to kill President Kennedy. West was also called upon to express his opinions in public on the mental state of "David Koresh" in Waco, and in secret to consult with Psywar experts who were trying out the latest psychological operations techniques during the long seige of the Branch Davidian compound.

After January 11, 1973, when Governor Reagan announced plans for the Violence Center, West wrote a letter to the then Director of Health from California, J.M. Stubblebine:

> **Dear Stub:**
>
> **I am in possession of confidential information that the Army is prepared to turn over Nike missle bases to state and local agencies for non-military purposes. They may look with special favor on health-related applications.**
>
> **Such a Nike missle base is located in the Santa Monica Mountains, within a half-hour's drive of the Neuropsychiatric Institiute. It is accessible, but relatively remote. the site is securely fenced, and includes various buildings and improvements, making it suitable for prompt occupancy.**
>
> **If this site were made available to the Neurophychiatric Institute as a research facility, perhaps initially as an adjunct to the new Center for the Prevention of Violence, we could put it to very good use. Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental or model programs for the alteration of undesirable behavior.**

> Such programs might include control of drug or alcohol abuse, modification of chronic anti-social or implusive agressiveness, etc. The site could also accomodate conferences or retreats for instruction of selected groups of mental-health related professionals and of others (e.g., law enforcement personnel, parole officers, special educators) for whom both demonstration and participation would be effective modes of instruction.
>
> My understanding is that a direct request by the Governor, or other appropriate officers of the State, to the Secretary of Defense (or, of courses the President), could be most likely to produce prompt results.[270]

Some of the planned areas of study for the Center included:

- Studies of violent individuals.
- Experiments on prisoners from Vacaville and Atascadero, and hyperkinetic children.
- Experiments with violence-producing and violence inhibiting drugs.
- Hormonal aspects of passivity and agressiveness in boys.
- Studies to discover and compare norms of violence among various ethnic groups.
- Studies of pre-delinquent children

The California State Legislature killed the center. Governor Reagan could not understand the Legislature's concern that the project smelled of Nazi psychoscience.

Add West's keynote speech at the December, 1994, FMSF Conference in Washington, D.C. to the history of its board members and the cryptocracy's prints become clear on the FMSF tool.

---

[270] Martin, Harry V., and Caul, David, Fifth in a Series entitled *MIND CONTROL* in the Napa Sentinel, August 13, 1991. On line.

40

DANGEROUS FREE THINKING

In an undisclosed location, at a secret conference, an emergency panel of five psychiatrists and clinical psychologists met to discuss the alarming data they were gathering about mind control, satanic ritual abuse, and alien programming from patients diagnosed as suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) also called Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID). Due to what is, by the standards of a conservative profession, the controversial content of this conference, and due to the fact that many of the doctors have already received the strongest criticism from their peers and threats on their lives, their identities must remain undisclosed -- you'll understand why as you read more.

Although delivered in a conversational tone without footnotes and scientific documentation, there is a lot of technical information in this round-table conference which should be of great use to therapists. For the lay reader a study of the works of Milton Erickson or at least NLP would be helpful in explaining what the doctors are talking about.

The term "bloodline" refers to the practice of satanic ritual abuse which carries on generation after generation under the belief that after several generations of "conditioning" a "genetic memory" or a "blood memory" carries on the information which has been programmed. This belief in "blood memory" can be found in a variety of secret societies and not just in satanic cults. A person who is of the "bloodline" is the offspring of parents who are in the cult, and often the great, great, great, great grandchildren of cult members. Some survivors have reported that the sophisticated form of programming described in this conversation goes back more than 100 years and has been co-opted by the intelligence agencies only within the past fifty-odd years.

Suffice it to know that the assembled doctors, men and women, are among the most qualified in their profession. They are recipients of the top honors, awards and degrees, members of all the most prestigious societies, editors of the most influential journals. Researchers who are aware of the literature may think they are able to identify some of the doctors by the content of their speeches, but it's important that they just ignore any failing on my part as an editor, overlooking any speech patterns which may reveal their identities. For the sake of their safety, and at their request, I have done my best to re-write this transcript -- not for content, but for style -- so that these doctors can never be identified.

After some preliminary remarks the host of the conference, Dr. A, began:

Dr A: I have been looking forward to this exchange for quite some time and I hope we can cut right to the chase and talk specifically about ritual abuse and about mind-control programming and brainwashing -- how it's done, how to get on the inside of it.

Dr. B: Until only recently I didn't believe it. I wasn't willing to discuss it with colleagues such as you before, and I'm still not willing to speak about it publicly.

Dr. C: I have done that in small groups and in consultations, but recently I decided that it's time that somebody started doing something about it.

Dr. D: So we're going to talk about specifics today?

Dr. E: At the international congress I heard about these details for the first time. I thought, "how weird." "Interesting but weird."

Dr. B: I was there. I remember many people listened to an example given of somebody who thought it was so idiosyncratic and rare. Then a number of people came up to the doctor giving the example, saying, "You're treating one, too? You're in Seattle. Well, I'm in Texas!" Then another said "I'm in Arizona!" And another said, "I'm in Florida!" And another said, "I'm in Ohio! and another was in California and so forth...

I didn't know what to think at that point. I didn't understand the mechanism or the meaning of dissociation to the state of mental illness -- all mental illness, and the state of mental health in the nation...

Dr. D: I found my first ritual-abuse patient in somebody I was already treating before we'd even gotten that deep into things. That case made me very curious about the use of mind-control techniques and hypnosis and other brainwashing techniques.

I started studying brainwashing and some of the literature in that area and became acquainted with, in fact, one of the people who'd written one of the better books in that area.

Dr. A: I did a survey of the ISSMP&D [International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation] folks. Picked out about a dozen-and-a-half therapists that I thought were seeing more of it than probably anyone else. I started surveying them.

The interview protocol that I used got the same reaction almost without exception: "You're asking questions I don't know the answers to... "You're asking more specific questions than I've ever asked my patients."

Many of those same therapists said, "Let me ask those questions and I'll get back to you with the answer." Many of them not only got back with answers, but said, "You've got to talk to this patient or these two patients."

Dr. D: I ended up making hundreds of dollars worth of phone calls interviewing therapists. I interviewed just about everybody I could find who would talk to me. I came out of it with a grasp of a variety of brainwashing methods being used all over the country.

Dr. C: I started to hear similarities too. Whereas I hadn't known, to begin with, how widespread things were, I got a feeling that there were a lot of people reporting similar things.

Dr. B: There must be a great deal of communication going on between the clients.

Dr. E: Now it's about time there's an equal amount of communication between the doctors on this taboo subject.

Dr. C: It's not a taboo, it's just the result of scientific skepticism...

Dr. E: Or fear...

Dr. A: Approximately four years ago I had some new material drop into my lap. My source was saying a lot of things that I knew were accurate about some of the brainwashing, but this was new material I had no idea about.

At this point I decided to check it out in three ritual-abuse patients I was seeing at the time. Two of the three had what they were describing, in careful inquiry without leading or contaminating.

Dr. C: I did a telephone-consult with a therapist that I'd been consulting for quite a number of months on an MPD case in another state, I told her to inquire about certain things, after talking with you.

I explained the idea in rough terms, but told her that I wasn't going to relay any specifics because I wanted to take all precautions to avoid any possibility of contamination.

She came back to me a couple of hours later and told me that she'd just finished a session with a patient who said, "I'm so excited that you know about his stuff -- this occult stuff. Now, if you know about this stuff, you know how the Cult Programmers get on the inside. Now our therapy is going to go so much faster.'"

Dr. D: Many of my patients have had a reaction of great anxiety and fear rather than being happy that our knowing about the programming is a wonderful thing.

Dr C: But the interesting thing was that she then asked, "What are these things?" And she listed a number of things the client had told her and they matched, word for word, the same things Dr. A had told me.

Dr. A: I've since repeated that in many parts of the country. I've consulted in twenty states and three foreign countries, giving therapists information. I always warn everyone to be very careful how you phrase it. You have to phrase it in ways so you don't contaminate the answers.

Dr. B: When you start to find the same information in different states and different countries, from Florida to California, you start to get an idea that there's something going on that is very large, very well coordinated, with a great deal of communication between people. What's happening appears to be very systematic, don't you think?

Dr. A: I have gone from being kind of neutral and not knowing what to think about it all to being someone who clearly believes ritual abuse is real...

Dr. E: A poll showed 80% of us do.

Dr. D: The people who say it isn't are naive like people who don't believe the Holocaust happened...

Dr. A: ...or -- they're dirty.

Dr. B: Do you mean they're part of a satanic cult?

Dr. C: We all know the cults love to recruit doctors and lawyers and policemen... or they're part of the government mind control organizations...

Dr. A: For a long time I would tell a select group of therapists that I knew and trusted, information and say, "Spread it out. Don't say where it came from. But here's some information. Share it with other therapists. If you find it's on target, I'd appreciate your feedback."

People were hungry for more information.

Dr. B: Myself, as well as a few others, were hedging out of concern...

Dr. A: ... and out of fear. Therapists began receiving death threats at about the same time we became aware of this mind control system. I finally decided to hell with them. If they're going to kill me, they're going to kill me. It's time to share information.

Dr. E: Wimps! Psychiatrists are generally a bunch of wimps. Worried about the APA, worried about losing their licenses, worried about lawsuits. They're under mind control themselves. Controlled by fear... they're easy to scare...

Dr. C: Especially with law enforcement looking the other way about ritual abuse...

Dr. A: Part of that happened because we proceeded so cautiously and slowly, checking things in many different locations and finding the same thing.

So let's see if we agree. Let's discuss the access routes to ritual-abuse programming. Let's see if we can come up with the essentials to get inside and start working at a new level.

Dr. B: What proportion of patients have this?

Dr. A: I would guess that maybe somewhere around at least fifty percent. Maybe as high as three-quarters, I would guess maybe two-thirds of your ritual-abuse patients may have this.

Dr. B: What do you think the distinguishing characteristics are?

Dr. A: If they were raised from birth in a mainstream cult or if they were a non-bloodline person, meaning neither parent was in the cult, but cult people had a lot of access to them in early childhood, they may also have it.

Dr. D: I have seen more than one ritual-abuse patient who clearly had all the kind of ritual things you hear about. They talked about all the typical things that you hear in this population, but had none of this programming with prolonged extensive reinforcement.

So I believe in one case I was personally treating that she was a kind of schismatic break-off that had kind of gone off and done their own thing and were no longer hooked into a mainstream group.

Dr. A: Here's where it appears to have come from. Before the end of World War II, Allen Dulles and people from our Intelligence Community were already in Switzerland making contact to get Nazi scientists out. As World War II ended, they not only got rocket scientists out, they also got out some Nazi doctors who had been doing mind-control research in concentration camps.

Dr. B: Wasn't this in violation of the Nuremberg Code and national laws?

Dr. A: Yes, but just the same, the group that was to become the CIA brought them to the United States. Among them was a young boy, a teenager, who had been raised in a Hassidic Jewish tradition with a background of Cabalistic mysticism. That appealed to people in the occult -- at least Aleister Crowley had introduced Cabalism into Satanic cults at the turn of the century.

This young Hassidim must have saved his skin by collaborating with the Nazi-satanists. He probably was their assistant in death-camp experiments. He might have been one of their most deeply programmed people, himself the best example of their work. They brought him with them.

He would become the one who developed the mind-control operations for Military Intelligence in the United States.

Like so many of the Nazi doctors, the boy changed his name, Americanized it. He obtained an M.D. degree, became a physician and continued the work that appears to be at the center of cult programming today.

His name is known to patients throughout the country.

Dr. D: What is it?

Dr. A: I'll get to that later.

Dr. D: Okay, so what's the formula. How does this programming work?

Dr. A: What they basically do is get a child about two-and-a-half -- after the child's already been made dissociative. The dissociation programming can start at birth...

Dr. D: I have a case that told me about being dunked into freezing cold, then scalding hot water alternately as probably a very young child...

Dr. A: One way or another they'll make the child dissociative. Not only through abuse, like sexual abuse, but also through things like putting a mousetrap on their fingers and teaching the parents, "Do not go in until the child stops crying. Only then do you go in and remove it."

The programming starts after the child already has Dissociative Identities. It generally starts at about two-and-half. It kicks into high gear, it would appear, at around six or six-and-a-half, and continues through adolescence with periodic reinforcements in adulthood.

In the programming we're tracking to this particular doctor, the child will typically be put on a gurney. They will have an IV in one hand or arm. They'll be strapped down, typically naked. There'll be wires attached to their head to monitor electroencephalograph patterns.

They will be shown a pulsing light, most often described as red, occasionally white or blue. They'll be given, most commonly I believe, Demerol. Sometimes it'll be other drugs as well, depending on the kind of programming.

Dr. D: That means they have this down to a science...

Dr. A: Yes. They've learned to give just so much Demerol every twenty-five minutes until the programming is done.

The patients describe experiencing a pain on one ear, their right ear generally, where it appears a needle has been placed. They hear weird, disorienting sounds in that ear while they're shown photic stimulation which drives the brain into a brainwave pattern with pulsing light at a certain frequency...

Dr. D: Sounds not unlike the goggles that are now available through mail order stores -- mindware, I think it's called.

Dr. A: Right. Then, after a suitable period when they're in a certain brainwave state, they will begin programming, making suggestions oriented to self-destruction and the debasement of their person.

Dr. B: I had a patient who experienced this at about eight years of age. He had gone through a great deal of early programming which took place on a military installation.

Dr. D: That's not uncommon. I've treated or been involved with cases who are part of this original mind-control project as well. They also had their programming on military reservations.

Dr. A: We find a lot of connections with the CIA as well. I have this patient now who was in a private cult school where several of these sessions occurred every week.

She would go into a room, get all hooked up. They would place electrodes on her. One in the vagina, for example, four on her head. Sometimes they'd be on other parts of the body.

They would then begin by saying to her, "You are angry with someone in the group."

She'd say, "No, I'm not" and they'd violently shock her.

They would say the same thing until she complied and didn't make any negative response. Then they would continue: "And because you are angry with someone in the group," or "When you are angry with someone in the group, you will hurt yourself. Do you understand?" She'd say, "No" and they'd shock her.

Then they'd repeat it again, "Do you understand?" "Well, yes, but I don't want to." They'd shock her again until they got her compliance. Then they kept adding to it: "And you will hurt yourself by cutting yourself. Do you understand?" Maybe she'd say yes, but they might say, "We don't believe you" and shock her anyway. "Go back and go over it again." And they would continue in this sort of fashion.

She said typically it seemed as though they'd go about thirty minutes, take a break, then come back. They may review what they'd done and stop or they might review what they'd done and go on to new material.

She said the sessions might go half an hour, or they might go three hours. She estimated that this programming took place on an average of three times a week.

Dr. D: But about this programming with sound. Now how did that happen?

Dr. A: It was programming under the influence of drugs which would maintain a certain brainwave state. Confusing noises were played in one ear and they would be speaking in the other ear, usually the left ear. This is associated with right hemisphere non-dominant brain functioning. It would require intense concentration of the victim. They were made to memorize things upon which they would be tested and shocked if they missed a question...

Dr: D: That's basically how a lot of programming goes.

Dr. A: Some of it'll also use other typical brainwashing kinds of techniques -- isolation, deprivation of food, sleep, and water. There will be very standardized types of hypnotic things done at times.

Dr. D: We know stress and sensory deprivation and starvation increases suggestibility in anyone.

Dr. A: From the research it appears that total sensory deprivation -- isolation tank type deprivation -- the low budget operations and the cult operations lock the victim in a coffin.

Dr. D: I have a patient from an old German family who reports that these techniques go back in her family more than one hundred years.

Dr. A: Well, I know all of us here are trained in Ericksonian methods. And the understanding of that procedure seems to be the key to unlocking this programming.

Dr. E: Probably one of the differences is the anchoring. A lot of therapists don't know the value of kinesthetic anchoring.

Dr. A: That's probably true. But to find out if a client has been programmed this way, I would suggest you inquire asking for ideomotor finger-signals.

After you've set them up say, "I want the central inner core of you to take control of the finger-signals."

Dr. B: Don't ask the unconscious mind.

Dr. A: When you're inquiring about ritual abuse, you're communicating with the central inner core. The core is a cult-created part.

So you might want to say: "And I want that central inner core of you to take control of this hand of these finger-signals. To say yes, let the yes-finger float up.

Then you say, "I want to ask the inner core of you is there any part of you, any part of Mary, if that's the host's name, who knows anything about Alpha, Beta, Delta, or Theta.

Dr. C: If you get a Yes, you might have someone with formal intensive brainwashing and programming in place?

Dr. A: I would then say, "I want a part inside who knows something about Alpha, Beta, Delta, and Theta to come up to a level where you can speak to me and when you're here say, 'I'm here.'"

I would not ask if a part was willing to. Without leading them, ask them what these things are.

Dr. D: Sometimes I've gotten a "Yes" to that. Then as I've done further exploration it appeared to be some kind of compliance response or somebody wanting to appear that they were ritually abused. With careful inquiry, it became obvious that they did not have what we were looking for.

Dr. A: Tell us what these are.

Dr. D: Let's suppose you have a client who has an alter named Helen and one named Mary, and one named Gertrude, and one named Elizabeth, and one named Monica. Every one of those alters may have a program put on it, perhaps designated alpha-zero-zero-nine.

You could say, "Alpha-zero-zero-nine" make some kind of hand gesture to indicate this. By this means you could get the same part out in any one of them even though they have different names by which they may be known.

Alphas appear to represent general programming, the first things put in.

Betas appear to be sexual programs. For example, how to perform oral sex in a certain way, how to perform sex in rituals, having to do with producing child pornography, directing child pornography, prostitution.

Deltas are killers trained in how to kill in ceremonies. There'll also be some self-harm stuff mixed in with that, assassination and killing.

Thetas are called psychic killers...

Dr. B: You know, I had never in my life heard those two words paired together.

Dr. A: I'd never heard the words "psychic killers" put together either, but when you have people in different states, including therapists inquiring and asking, "What is Theta," and clients are saying to them "psychic killers, " it tends to make one a believer that this programming is very systematic and very widespread.

This comes from their belief in psychic abilities and powers, including their ability to psychically communicate with "mother" or their ability to psychically cause somebody to develop a brain aneurysm and die. It also is a future-oriented kind of programming.

Then there's Omega. I usually don't include that word when I ask my first question about this or any part inside that knows about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta because Omega will shake them even more. Omega has to do with self-destruct programming. Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. This can include self-mutilation as well as suicide programming.

Gamma appears to be system-protection and deception programming which will provide misinformation to you, try to misdirect you, tell you half-truths, protect different things inside. There can also be other Greek letters.

I'd recommend that you get the entire Greek alphabet if you have verified that some of this stuff is present and they have given you some of the right answers about what some of this material is. I can't underline enough: DO NOT LEAD THEM. Let them answer on their own, please.

I would take your entire Greek alphabet and, with ideomotor signals, go through the alphabet and say, "Is there any programming inside associated with epsilon, omicron," and go on through. There may be some systematic procedure with some of the other letters.

I've found, for example, in one case that Zeta had to do with the production of snuff films that one person was involved with. With another person, Omicron had to do with their linkage and associations with drug smuggling and with the Mafia and with big business and government leaders.

So there's going to be some individualism, I think.

Some of those are come-home programs, "come back to the cult", "return to the cult" program. Here's the flaw in the system. They have built-in shut-down and erasure codes so if they got into trouble they could shut something down and they could also erase something.

These codes will sometimes be idiosyncratic phrases, or ditties. Sometimes there will be numbers followed by a word.

Dr. D: If we all can get some of these maybe they'll work with different people.

Dr. A: No such luck. It's very unlikely unless they were programmed at about the same point in time as part of the same little group, by the same programmers.

Dr. B: What I've seen suggests that the programmers carry laptop computers which keep track of everything that they did twenty, thirty years ago in terms of the names of alters, the programs, the codes, and so on.

Dr. C: What do you do to get erasure codes?

Dr. A: I always ask, "If I say this code, what will happen?' Double check. "Is there any part inside who has different information?" Watch your ideomotor signals. What I've found is you can erase programs by giving the appropriate codes, but then you must abreact the feelings.

Start by erasing Omega, which is often where I've started because it's the most high risk. Afterwards I will get all the Omega -- what were formerly Omega -- alters together so that we will abreact and give back to the host the memories associated with all the programming that was done with Omega and anything any Omega part ever had to do in a fractionated abreaction. They use the metaphor -- and it is their metaphor -- of robots. And it is like a robot shell comes down over the child alter to make them act in a robotic fashion.

Once in a while internally you'll confront robots. That's what I found from earlier work. So now I speed the process up because I confirmed it enough times. Now I say to the core, "Core, I want you to look -- there's this robot blocking the way in some way, blocking the progress. Go around and look at the back of the head and tell me what you notice on the back of the head or the neck." I just ask it very non-leading like that and what's commonly said to me is that there were wires or a switch. So I'll tell them, "Hold the wires or flip the switch and it will immobilize the robot and give me a yes-signal when you've done it." Pretty soon you get a yes-signal.

"Great. Now that the robot is immobilized, I want you to look inside the robot and tell me what you see." It's generally one or several children. I have them remove the children. I do a little hypnotic magic and ask the core to use a laser and vaporize the robot so nothing is left. They're usually quite amazed that this works, as have been a number of therapists.

Dr. C: Now there are many different layers . This is a problem... What we have up here are innumerable alters.

Dr. A: I'll tell you one of the fascinating things I've seen. I remember a little over a year ago coming in to see some cases -- some of the tough cases at a dissociative-disorder unit. I was accompanied by a couple of the finest of the MPD therapists in this country, who are always part of all the international meetings, have lectured internationally... We worked together and I looked at some of their patients. They were amazed at certain things I did because they had not been aware of this before.

We worked with some of the patients and confirmed some of the things we're talking about today. I remember one woman who'd been inpatient for three years, still was inpatient. Another who had one intensive year of inpatient work with all the finest MPD therapy you can imagine -- abreactions, integrations, facilitating cooperation, art therapy, on and on, journaling intensively for one inpatient year followed by an intensive year of outpatient therapy two or three hours a week...

In both patients we found out that all of this great work had done nothing but deal with the alters on top and had not touched the mind-control programming. In fact it was not only intact, but we found that the one who was outpatient was having her therapy monitored every session by her mother, out-of-state, over the telephone, and that she still had intact suggestions that had been given to her at a certain future time to kill her therapist.

Dr. D: I get the very uncomfortable feeling from my past experience that when we look at this we will find the large proportion of ritual-abuse victims in this country are having their ongoing therapy monitored.

Dr. C: I remember a woman who came in about twenty-four years old, claimed her father was a satanist. Her parents divorced when she was six. After that her abuse would occur only when her father had visitations and he would take her to rituals sometimes up until age fifteen. She said, "I haven't gone to anything since I was fifteen."

Her previous therapist took this at face value.

We sat in my office. We did a two-hour inquiry using hypnosis. We found the programming present. In addition to that we found that every therapy session was debriefed and in fact they had told her to get sick and not come to the appointment with me.

Dr. B: I had a client who was told that I was a member of the cult and that if she came I would know that she'd been told not to come and I would punish her.

Dr. A: If anything meaningful comes out in a patient who's being monitored like that -- from what I've learned thus far, they're tortured with electric shocks -- my belief is, if they're in that situation you can't do meaningful therapy other than being supportive and caring and letting them know you care a lot and you'll be there to support them.

I wouldn't try to work with any kind of deep material or deprogramming with them because I think it can do nothing but get them tortured and hurt unless they can get into a safe, secure inpatient unit for an extended period of time to do some of the work required.

Dr. C: I suspect that when we make inquiries we're going to find that probably greater than fifty percent of these patients, if they're bloodline, meaning mother or dad or both are involved, they will be monitored on some ongoing basis.

Dr. A: So, when you go below the alters, you then have Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta, so on and so forth -- the Greek-letter programming -- and they will then have backup programs. There will typically be an erasure code for the backups. There may be one code that combines all the backups into one and then an erasure code for them, simply one code that erases all the backups.

So I will get the code for, let's say, Omega and for all the Omega backups at the same time. After I've asked "What will happen if I give this," I will give the code and then I will say, "What are you experiencing?"

They often describe computer whirring, things erasing, explosions inside, all sorts of interesting things. I've had some therapists come back and say, "My Lord, I never said anything about robots. She said something about robots vaporizing."

I remember one therapist who'd been with me in several hypnosis workshops and consulted with me about a crisis MPD situation. I told her to inquire about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta. She did.

She got back to me saying, "Yeah, I got an indication it's there. What is it?" I said, "I'm not going to tell you. Go back and inquire about some of this." We set an appointment for a week or so hence.

She got back with me and said, "I asked what Theta was and she said, 'psychic killers.' I asked her what Delta was and she said 'killers.'"

I told her what I've just told you, and she called back later and said, "This seemed too fantastic. I heard this and I thought, 'Has Dr. A been working too hard?'"

She said, "I'm embarrassed to admit it, but this sounded so off in the twilight zone that I really thought you were having a nervous breakdown or something.'" She said, "But I respected you enough to ask about this." She said, "I asked another MPD patient and she didn't have any of this."

This patient started describing things. She described how she worked, for example, with an erasure. She described robots vaporizing and that kind of thing. The therapist said, "I hadn't told her about any of these things."

There are different layers and I think some of them are designed to keep us going in circles forever. They figured we probably, in most cases, wouldn't get below the alters which they purposefully created.

The way you create a Manchurian Candidate is you divide the mind. It's part of what the intelligence community wanted to look at.

If you want to get an assassin to do something, you divide the mind.

Dr. D: I'm fascinated about cases like the assassination of Robert Kennedy. Bernard Diamond, on examining Sirhan Sirhan found that he had total amnesia of the killing of Robert Kennedy, but under hypnosis could remember it. But despite suggestions he would be able to consciously remember, Sirhan could not remember a thing after he was out of hypnosis.

Dr. C: I'd love to examine Sirhan Sirhan

Dr. D: It appears that below this we've got some other layers. One is called "Green Programming" it appears.

Dr. B: Isn't it interesting that the doctor's name is Dr. Green?

Dr A: One of the questions in a way that does not contaminate is -- after I've identified some of this stuff is there and they've given me a few right answers about what some of it is, I ask: -- "If there were a doctor associated with this programming and his name were a color, you know, like Dr. Chartreuse or something, if his name were a color, what color would the color be?"

Once in a while I've had some other colors mentioned in about three or four patients that I felt were trying to dissimulate in some way. In one case I got another color and I found out later it was a doctor whose name was a color who was being trained by Dr. Green almost thirty years ago and he supervised part of the programming of this woman under this doctor.

I remember one woman couldn't come up with anything. No alter would speak up with anything. I said, "Okay," and we went on to some other material. About two minutes later she said, "Green. Do you mean Dr. Green?" We found this all over. There appears to be some Green Programming below that and I suspect that you get down to fewer and more central programs the deeper you go. Well, all Green Programming is Ultra-Green and the Green Tree.

Cabalistic mysticism is mixed in this. If you're going to work with this you need to pick up a couple of books on the Cabala. One is by a man named Dion Fortune who called it "Qabala" with a "q." Another is by Ann Williams-Heller and it's called "The Kabbalah."

I knew nothing about the Cabala. It was interesting. A patient had sat in my waiting area, got there considerably early and drew a detailed multicolored Cabalistic Tree over two years ago. It took me two months to figure out what it was. Finally, showing it to somebody else who said, "You know? That looks an awful lot like the Cabala Tree" and that rang a bell with some esoteric symbols I'd seen in an old book and I dug it out.

Now the interesting thing about the Green Tree is his original name was Greenbaum. What does "greenbaum" mean in German? It means Green Tree, and Ultra-Tree. I've also had patients who didn't appear to know that his original name was Greenbaum, volunteer that there were parts inside named Mr. Greenbaum.

Let me give you some information about parts inside that may be helpful to you if you're going to inquire about these things, because my experience is one part will give you some information and either run dry or get defensive or scared and stop. There are several other parts to ask for. When screening patients throw in a bunch of spurious ones and ask, "Is there a part inside by this name and by that name" as a check on whether or not it appears genuine.

For example. "In addition to the core," I ask, "is there a part inside named Wisdom?" Wisdom is a part of the Cabalistic Tree. Wisdom, I've often found, will be helpful and give you a lot of information. "Is there a part inside named Diana?" I mean I may throw in all sorts of things. "Is there a part inside named Zelda?" I've never encountered one yet! Just to see what kind of answers we get. I try to do this carefully. Diana is a part that, in the Cabalistic system, is associated with a part called the Foundation. You might be fascinated to know that.

Remember the Process Church? Roman Polanski's wife, Sharon Tate, was killed by the Manson Family who were associated with the Process Church? A lot of prominent people in Hollywood were associated with it and then it went underground, the books say, in about seventy-eight and vanished? Well, they're alive and well in southern Utah. There's a thick file in the Utah Department of Public Safety documenting that they moved to southern Utah, north of Monument Valley. They bought a movie ranch in the desert, renovated it, and built additional buildings. The place is carefully monitored so that it's restricted to very few people. It has a different name, of course.

A key word in their name is "Foundation." The Foundation. There are some other words. The Foundation is part of the Tree. So you can ask, "Is there something inside known as The Foundation?" You might ask other things to throw people off. "Is there something known as the Sub-Basement?" Well, maybe they'll conceive of something. Or "Is there something known as the Walls?"

There are a variety of questions you can come up with, to screen things. I've also found that there will often be a part called "Black Master," a part called "Master Programmer," and that there will be computer operators inside.

Dr. C: I've come into a number of clients with computer operators. How many of you have?

(All raise their hands.)

Dr. A: There will typically be computer operators: Computer Operator Black, Computer Operator Green, Computer Operator Purple. Sometimes they'll have numbers instead, sometimes they'll be called Systems Information Directors.

I will ask inside, "Is there a part inside named Dr. Green?" You'll find that there are, if they have this kind of programming, in my experience. Usually with a little work and reframing, you can turn them and help them to realize that they were really a child-part who's playing a role and they had no choice then, but they do now.

You know, they played their role very, very well, but they don't have to continue to play it with you because they're safe here and in fact, "If the cult simply found out that you talked to me, that you had shared information with me, what would they do to you?"

Emphasize that the only way out is through me and that they need to cooperate and share information and help me and that I'll help them. So all these parts can give you various information.

We were going along and a patient was close to getting well, approaching final integration in a non-bloodline and she suddenly started hallucinating and her fingers were becoming hammers and other things like that. So I used an affect-bridge and we went back and we found that what happened was that they gave suggestions, that if she ever got well to a certain point she would go crazy.

The way they did this was they strapped her down and they gave her LSD when she was eight-years-old. When she began hallucinating they inquired about the nature of the hallucinations so they could utilize them in good Ericsonian fashion and build on them and then combine the drug-effect with powerful suggestions: "If you ever get to this point you will go crazy. If you ever get fully integrated and get well you will go crazy like this and will be locked up in an institution for the rest of your life."

They gave those suggestions vigorously and repetitively. Finally they introduced other suggestions that, "Rather than have this happen, it would be easier to just kill yourself." In a bloodline patient then, as I began inquiring about deep material, the patient started to experience similar symptoms. We went back and we found the identical things were done to her.

This was called the "Green Bomb." B-O-M-B. Lots of interesting internal consistencies like that play on words with Dr. Greenbaum, his original name.

Now in this case it was done to her at age nine for the first time. Hers was a suggestion for amnesia. "If you ever remember anything about Ultra-Green and the Green Tree you will go crazy. You will become a vegetable and be locked up forever." Then finally the suggestions added, "And it'll be easier to just kill yourself than have that happen to you, if you ever remember it."

At age twelve then, three years later, they used what sounds like an Amytol interview to try to breach the amnesia. They couldn't. So then they strapped her down again, and gave her something to paralyze her body. Then they gave her an even bigger dose of LSD and reinforced all the suggestions. They did a similar thing at the age of sixteen.

So these are some of the kinds of booby traps you run into. There are a number of cases where they combined powerful drug effects like this with suggestions to keep us from discovering some of this deeper level stuff.

I think that we can move down to deeper levels and if we deal with some of the deeper level stuff it may destroy all the stuff above it. But we don't even know that yet. In some of the patients I'm working with we have pretty much dealt with a lot of the top-level stuff.

We'll erase one system like Omega. Then we will have a huge abreaction of all the memories and feelings in a fractionated abreaction associated with those parts.

I typically find I'll say to them, "Now that we've done this, are there any other memories and feelings that any parts that were Omega still have?"

The answer is usually "No." At that point I will say, "I usually find at this point in time the majority, if not all, of those parts that used to be Omega no longer feel a desire or need to be different, realizing that you split off originally by them and want to go home to Mary (or whoever the executive alter is) and become one with her again."

I use the concept often now -- which came from a patient -- of going home and becoming one with her. "Going back from whence you came" is another phrase I'll use with them. "Are there any Omega parts inside who do not feel comfortable with that or have reservations or concerns about that?"

If there are, we talk to them. We deal with them. A few may not integrate.

My experience is most of the time they'll integrate and we may integrate twenty-five parts at once in a polyfragmented complex MPD.

I think it is vitally important to abreact the feelings before you go on. Also for many patients it hasn't seemed to matter which order we go in, but I've found a couple where it has. If it doesn't seem to matter I'll typically go Omega, then Delta because they have more violence potential, then Gamma to get rid of the self-deception stuff.

What I will do before I just assume anything and do that, is once we've done Omega and showed them that success can occur and something can happen and they feel relief after, I will say to them, "I want to ask the core -- through the fingers -- is there a specific order in which programs must be erased?"

You know, maybe it doesn't matter but most of the time I found "No." There are cases where we found "Yes."

I recommend doing one or two or three of those because they'll produce relief and a sense of optimism in the patient. But then I would recommend starting to probe for the deeper level things and getting their input and recommendations about the order in which we go.

Dr. D: What has been the typical age and typical gender of this type of person?

Dr. A: Most of the patients I know with MPD ritual abuse that are being treated are women, however. I know of some men being treated where we've found this.

A while back I was talking to a small group of therapists somewhere. I told them about some of this. In the middle of talking about some of this all the color drained out of one social worker's face and she obviously had a reaction and I asked her about it and she said, "I'm working with a five-year-old boy who, just in the last few weeks, said something about a Dr. Green." I went on a little further and I mentioned some of these things and she shook her head again.

I asked, "What's going on?" And she said, "He's been spontaneously telling me about robots and about Omega."

I think you will find variations of this and that they've changed it, probably every few years and maybe somewhat regionally to throw us off in various ways but that certain basics and fundamentals will probably be there. I have seen this in people up into their late forties including people whose parents were very, very high in the CIA. I've had some that were originally part of the Monarch Project which is the name of the government Intelligence project.

Dr. B: I'm still not grasping how one starts, how you find out how to erase. How do you get that information?

Dr. A: Because they believe in that kind of thing, I'll use it. Whatever it is. I might say: "I want the core -- if necessary, using the telepathic communication ability you have to read minds -- to obtain for me the erasure code of all Omega programs. When you've done so, I want the yes-finger to float up."

Then I ask them to tell it to me. "Are there backups for Omega programs?"

If they say, "Yes," I ask them, "How many backups are there?"

Let's say it's made up of different numbers. I ask them: "Is there an erasure code for all the backup programs?"

If they say ,"No," I'll ask ,"Is there an erasure code that combines all the backups into one?"

If they say "Yes," I suggest that they obtain that code for me and when they've got it, give me the yes-signal again.

It can move almost that fast in some cases where there's not massive resistance.

Dr. E: Tell us what you know about the risks to the therapist?

[Laughter]

Dr. A: You would have to ask.

Dr. E: I'd like to know that. What kind of data do you have -- given that you've had contact with large numbers of people. Not just threats but also any injury, any family problems that have arisen. A second question is, are you aware of anybody that you've treated -- or others -- with this level of dissociation and trauma that have recovered? Integrated? Are now whole and happy?

Dr. A: I have one non-bloodline complex multiple who had this kind of programming. The programmers had a lot of access to the patient as neighbors. And, by the way, you'll find physicians heavily involved with cults doing ritual abuse and mind control. The cults recruit their own doctors as part of their protection. Some of the doctors are themselves programmed. It's quite common to suspect that the majority of the programmers are programmed.

They encourage their own to go to medical school, to prescribe drugs to take care of their own, to get access to medical technology and be above suspicion. There have been a couple, in fact, who've been nailed now. At least one state I know of has two full time ritual-abuse investigators with statewide jurisdiction under the Attorney General's Office who do nothing but investigate ritual abuse.

So, the FBI or the False Memory Syndrome Foundation says "There's no evidence. They've never found a body," that's baloney. They found a body in Idaho of a child. They've had a case that was convicted on first-degree murder charges, two people before that were arrested where the teenaged girl's finger and head were in the refrigerator and they were convicted of first-degree murder in Detroit.

There have been cases and bodies.

Dr. D: Back to risk.

Dr. A: I know of no therapist who's been harmed. But patients inform us that there will come a future time where we could all be at risk of being assassinated by patients who've been programmed to kill at a certain time anyone that they've told and any member of their own family who's not active. Whether that would come about is speculative. Who knows for sure? I don't think it's entirely without risk.

We've heard the patients say, many, many of them say that the year 1999 is the year the alters programmed to kill will kill their therapists and anyone who knows about them. Some have reported to be programmed to kill people in public places. That, apparently is the year when the satanic New World Order is going to take over in the wake of the chaos created by these, alleged, hundreds of thousands of hypnoprogrammed killers being turned loose on North America...

Dr. C: It seems to me that there's some similarity between this kind of programming and those people who claim that they've been abducted by spaceships and have been physically probed and reprogrammed and that sort of thing. I'm wondering, is there any sort of relationship between this and that?

Dr. E: I've found the alien abduction scenario in a lot of patients. And I'm firmly of the belief that those people are in fact ritual-abuse victims who have been programmed with that sort of thing to destroy all their credibility.

If somebody's coming in and reporting they've been abducted by a flying saucer, who's going to believe them on anything else in the future?

I recently had a telephone consult with Dr. A, who told me, if it were him being with this guy that I'd been seeing for a couple of months, he'd ask for the core to take control of finger-signals and inquire about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta. I proceeded to do all that and found it was just like Dr. A said it might be, there was a part inside named Dr. Green. There was this kind of programming.

Dr. C: What's the difference between this kind of program and cult-type abuse and satanic abuse in the kind of cults with the candles?

Dr. A: This type of programming will be done in the cults with the candles and all the rest. My impression is that this is simply done in people who they have great access to, or to bloodline people, people whose parents are involved so that they can be raised in it from an early age. If they are not bloodline they are the "chosen generation." They're expendable and they are expected to die and not get well.

There will be booby traps in your way if they aren't bloodline people that when they get well they will kill themselves. I'll tell you just a little about that.

My belief is that some people that have ritual abuse and don't have this have been ritually abused but they may be part of a non-mainstream group. The satanism comes in the philosophy overriding all of this.

Dr. C: What's the purpose of it?

Dr. A: My best guess is that the purpose of it is that they want an army of Manchurian Candidates, hundreds of thousands of mental robots who will do prostitution, child pornography, smuggle drugs, engage in international arms smuggling, snuff films, all sorts of very lucrative things and do their bidding and eventually the megalomaniacs at the top believe they'll create a Satanic Order that will rule the world.

Dr. C: You have suggested and implied that at some point at a high level of the U.S. Government there was support for this kind of thing. What documentation is there?

Dr. A: There is some documentation. One of our leading colleagues is writing a book about our peers of the older generation who were involved in it. We have CIA documents declassified which help us figure out who did what. There are "good guys" within the intelligence community who have provided us with leads. We have the identity of some of the key figures. Many are dead, but a few are still alive and very active. But most of the information I've given you today comes from victims who are imperiled witnesses.

The interesting thing is how many people have described the same scenario and how many people that we have worked with who have had relatives in NASA, in the CIA and in the Military, including very high-ups in the Military.

Now let me just mention something about what you may run into later in the process. I know I'm throwing a lot at you in a hurry.

Just ask your patients and you may be lucky to find that there isn't any of this. Then, somewhere at a deep level you may run into some things like this.

Let me describe to you the system in one patient. One patient I had treated for quite a while. It was a non-bloodline person who had done what appeared to be successful work and had reached final integration. She came back to me early last year and said she was symptomatic with some things. I started inquiring. I found a part there we'd integrated.

The part basically said, "There was other stuff that I couldn't tell you about, and you integrated me and so I had to split off." I had done some inquiring about things like Alpha, Beta as a routine part of it and found they were there and I said to this part, "Why didn't you tell me about this stuff?" This part said, "Well, we gave you some hints but they went right over your head." The part then said, "I'm sorry, but we know that you didn't know enough to help us but now we know you can."

So the stuff started coming out. It was interesting. She described the overall system ... a system of alters whose primary purpose was to hurt her including symptoms like Munchhausen's, self-mutilation, other kinds of things.

The part said, "With the exception of me, this one part, you dealt with the whole circle with the work that we did before but you didn't touch the rest of the stuff."

In the middle of all this was still another system consisting of the Cabalistic Tree -- which some of you are aware -- that represented another system. Then once we got past that she implied that this entire thing was somehow encompassed by an hourglass.

I kept thinking we were at final integration then I'd find some other parts.

We started talking and then the part basically said, "It's been programmed so that if you succeed and think you've succeeded, you will fail. They build it in as a way to laugh at you, that if you ever get us integrated, we will die."

This part said, "I'm one of twelve disciples," and I've seen this in others, twelve disciples within this hourglass each of whom had to memorize a disciple-lesson which were basic satanic kind of premises, philosophies of life like "be good to those who hurt you, hate those who are nice to you," and so forth. There may be two or three sentences like that associated with each that they had to memorize.

They said, "We are like grains of sand falling and when the last grain of sand falls, there's Death."

I asked: "Is Death a part?"

"Yes," the part said. "When the last grain of sand falls the Sleeping Giant awakens." The Sleeping Giant was Death, who was then to kill them on the first day or the sixth day after awakening unless certain things were followed. We did those things of course.

We also found Death had a sister as a backup. Mirrors had been used to create the sister part. We had to get past and deal with that too. Death had certain things she said had to be done to integrate.

I started to say, "Oh, come on, they lied to you before."

And she said, "Wait a minute. This is what they said you'd say. They said that no doctor would ever believe that they had to go to these extremes to get us well and that's part of the reason they'd fail."

I said, "Well, tell me, tell me again."

She said, "I have to be dressed all in red. I have to have taken Demerol. A code has to be given and it has to be in a room that's totally dark. It has to happen on Day-One or Day-Six after this part's been awakened."

I said what do we have to lose?

We gave her a little Demerol. We used the code. My office didn't have any windows anyway. It was pretty easy. Oh, and there had to be four, I think, candles lit. Well, fine. So we did it and everything went well.

Then we found another part. There's Death And Destruction, another backup also with a sister that we had to get through. In fact, I think there were two backups there. Interestingly, the very last part was an extremely nice part, made especially that way so that they wouldn't want to lose them because they would be so adorable and so loving and so sweet that no one would want to get rid of them. Then we found that she continued to have these feelings with this last part left now of darkness and blackness inside.

Dr. C: What did we find?

Dr. A: A curtain.

The message was: "There is a curtain behind which are the remaining feelings and memories, but it can't be opened from the middle. It's like a stage curtain. It has to be raised. They assumed that you would try to deal with all the feelings. But what's behind the curtain can't be opened until you've dealt with the last of the parts and they've integrated.

So I found Death and Destruction and the Hourglass in non-bloodline. patients. "The Tree and the Hourglass," this patient informed me, "were made of sand because we were meant to die. We're expendable. We're the chosen generation."

I've heard variously that it's crystals or blood that fills the Hourglass in non-bloodline people. By the way, you can do real simple things like turn the Hourglass on its side so nothing can fall out, so time stands still to be able to do certain kinds of work. Spread the grains of sand on the seashore so that they can't be numbered and the time will not be counted. I got that idea from a ritual-abuse victim who had seen some of this kind of programming done that another therapist was seeing.

So those would be just a few other hints about things that may be helpful or meaningful. We're talking about very intensive things and at deep levels. This gives us two things. One thing it gives to me is hope because it gets to material and it makes progress like nothing else we've ever seen with these people who have it. The second thing it does for me is it demoralizes me because, although five years ago I had a pretty good idea about the extent and breadth of what they'd done to these victims, I had no real appreciation for the depth and breadth and intensity of what they'd done.

Dr. C: How many of them can get well?

Dr. A: We don't know. Of course the more we learn about this, the better are the chances for recovery.

As with most things in the mental health profession we accept the statistics that two-thirds of the patients are going to improve, maybe seventy percent.

I think one of the sad things we have to face is that many of these patients will probably never be well. My personal belief is that if they are being messed with, their only hope of getting well is if they can somehow get out of contact.

Now I know patients who've gone to other states and simply had deep-level alters pick up the phone and call and say, "This is our new address and phone number" so that they could be picked up locally. I mean in an inpatient unit for an extended period of time.

If they are in a cult they are still being monitored and messed with, my own personal opinion is we can't get them well and can't offer more than humanitarian caring and supportiveness.

My own personal belief is few if any with this kind of programming are well in this country yet.

Dr. B: Could you speculate on the relationship between this stuff and the fantasy games that have been proliferating, Dungeons and Dragons and that sort of thing?

Dr. A: Well, there are a lot of things out there to cue people. You want to see a great movie, interesting movie, to cue people? Go see "Trancers II." You can rent it in your video shop. ... One night in sheer desperation for something at the video store, you know? Nine o'clock on Friday night. Everything's gone. I rented a couple of movies and one of them is that. Fascinating. They're talking about Green World Order. Yes, "Trancers II." And who is the production company? Full Moon Productions. I couldn't see much cueing in "Trancers I," but who's the production company in "Trancers I"? Alter Productions.

Some patients have told us that all this spook stuff, horror stuff, possession and everything else that's been popularized in the last twenty years in Hollywood is in order to soften up the public so that when a satanic world order takes over, everyone will have been desensitized to so many of these things. It's also being used to continually cue lots of people out there.

Dr. B: Is that true?

Dr. A: I can't definitely tell you. What I can say is I now believe that ritual-abuse programming is widespread, is systematic, is a very well organized form of highly esoteric information. It has not been published anywhere. The system is not described in any book nor has it been discussed on any talk show. We have collected it from the victims of mind control from all around this country and several foreign countries.

Dr. B: Do you have any techniques for decreasing your level of uncertainty that a patient is or is not being still tampered with?

Dr. A: Ask several of the parts I've inquired about, Core, Diana, Wisdom, Master Programmer, several parts inside. Ask about these sorts of things and keep asking.

Dr. B: I wonder if you've heard or you know of the Martin Luther Bloodline?

Dr. A: I know nothing about Martin Luther Bloodline.

I'll give you one other quick tip. Ask about an identification code. There's an identification code that people have. It will involve their birth date. It may involve places where they were programmed and it will usually involve a number that will be their birth order, like zero-two if they were second-born. It will usually involve a number that represents the number of generations in the Cult, if they are bloodlines. I've seen up to twelve now, twelve generations.

Dr. D: I have seen a lot of the things you've been describing today in several patients. I wanted to ask you a question about the Seven Systems. Are there Seven Systems?

Dr. A: There has been that described in some patients, yes, the Seven Systems.

Dr. E: Have you ever had any evidence where any of these people have been tagged? And how about their body-parts that might be related to this, private parts in particular?

Dr. A: Well, there are certainly people that have had tattoos, and a variety of other kinds of things, some of which have been documented in cases.

Dr. E: It's very courageous of you to meet with us like this, Dr. A. The material you've given us is most helpful.

Dr. A: A dear friend who's one of the top people in the field, has had, like myself, death threats. He struggled for professional credibility in believing in MPD a long time before it was generally accepted. He was harshly criticized for believing in it twenty years ago, but he continued to struggle for his point of professional credibility. In his heart of hearts he knew MPD was real.

Today he knows about this cult programming, this government programming, but he will say things like, "I wouldn't be surprised to find tomorrow it was an international conspiracy and I wouldn't be surprised to find tomorrow that it is an urban myth and legend."

He tries to stay right on the fence and the reason is because it's controversial, because there is a campaign underway saying all these memories -- along with memories of incest and alien abductions and satanic rituals -- are false and induced by "Oprah" and by books like "The Courage to Heal" and by naive therapists using hypnosis. It's controversial.

My personal opinion has come to be if they're going to kill me, they're going to kill me. There's going to be an awful lot of information that's been put away that'll go to investigative reporters and multiple investigative agencies. If I ever have an accident there will be a lot of people pushing for a very large-scale investigation.

I think it's time the mental health professionals stand up as some kind of moral conscience. I have waited until we had gotten enough verification from independent places to have some real confidence that this is real and widespread.

More examples of programming diagrams which survivors have drawn. Top left: A puppet or marionette which depicts the control the abusers have. Top right: a pentagram system related to Satanism.Bottom left: a solometric system related to the Kabala tree system. Botton right: a layered system (3 separate layers).

41

A REPEALING THOUGHT

I watched C-span once again to celebrate the birth of our country. It was the first time I'd watched C-SPAN since the Clinton campaign. I watched just for a couple of synchronistic hours. They were showing programs they'd taped on June 28 and 29. First there was a program called "Project for the Republican Future". On that program the famous "political consultant and pollster, Dr. Frank Luntz told us that his polls showed that the people in the U.S. today believe the quality of life has gone *down* since the previous generation and, the majority believe that the next generation will have even a lower standard of living. He said that the polls showed that the average American believed that there was a moral decline in this country. He said, "For the first time in American history, Americans are pessimistic about their future."

I began thinking about that. I decided the decline started in 1947. What happened in 1947? We were enjoying a steady rise in our standard of living unprecedented in history. We had just won World War Two -- I was eight years old and I was having a great time -- what happened almost fifty years ago, in 1947?

In July 1947 there were headlines all over the world which said that the U.S. Airforce had discovered a crashed flying saucer near Roswell, New Mexico. The Army Air Corps arrested the sheep rancher, Mac Brazel, who'd found the wreckage of the crashed UFO scattered over several acres of his remote pasturelands. By the reports of eyewitnesses the wreckage was made of some kind of metal with a memory. It couldn't be bent, burned or hammered. Brazel was locked in a room on the Air Base in Roswell and interrogated for eight days. All his constitutional rights were violated. He was threatened with a loaded gun. The life of his wife and children were threatened. Finally he was offered a handsome payment if he would sign a security oath. Brazel died with his lips sealed but his family knew that something had changed in him. He told them that if another one of them things crashed, he wouldn't tell anybody. He always looked askance at the U.S. government thereafter. But he cashed their checks.

There were a lot of UFO sightings that year. Whether others had experiences similar to Brazel's is not known. There are a couple of congressional inquiries in the alleged Roswell crash underway at the present time. The Air Force said then that what Brazel found was a weather balloon. Recently it released newly declassified documents. They say that what Brazel found was still a balloon, but a special high tech one.

Two months after Brazel found that "balloon" and was held in violation of his Constitutional rights, Congress quietly passed The National Security Act with little or no debate. That act made it legal to imprison someone without just cause, such as that experienced by Brazel. The passage of the National Security Act was accomplished in two weeks. That's mighty fast for any act of congress almost anytime in history except in emergency of war.

Whether or not the National Security Act had anything to do with the crash at Roswell, nobody knows. If you're looking for a motive -- for something that would motivate the mightiest nation on earth, the victors of World War Two, who lived under the wonderful Bill of Human Rights written by Thomas Paine (included as amendments to the U.S. Constitution) -- if you were looking for some motive that would make the leaders of the nation, at that time patriots all, sell out the Constitution, maybe what they found at Roswell was enough. But maybe not. Could the motive to sell out be merely greed? There are those who believe that's all there is too it. And there are those who believe that there are older and large loyalties than one's loyalty to one's Constitution. Many believe that the corrupting cloud that is occluding our nation's spiritual sun comes from an ancient plot of some secret society like the Illuminati, the Bildeburgers, the Council on Foreign Relations, unnamed global oligarchies, the Seven Sisters (the seven major fossil fuel and natural resource controlling banks)....?

Col. L. Fletcher Prouty was near the top in 1947. He was the man who would be one of the first chiefs of Special Operations for the CIA. He was one of the first warriors in the Invisible War. Before the National Security Act, Prouty says, the climate was one of being afraid of what would happen if the Soviets got the bomb. (History shows that we actually leaked it to them.) I put the questions above to Prouty. I asked him if the quick congressional passage of The National Security Act could have been prompted by what they discovered at Roswell. Prouty talked at length about the UFO question. He said in his work consulting on cryptocracy documents of that period he'd been hired to examine the MJ-12 documents. "They were forgeries," he said. But then he added, "but that doesn't mean that there's not a story behind them."

Prouty then told me about a couple of old buddies of his who were scientists who worked on ultimate secret Manhattan project which developed the atomic bomb during World War II. He said they were both neighbors who, apparently, lived under the regular flightpath of a UFO for a couple of months. At first the old guys didn't believe their eyes, and they thought that they were witnessing some new government secret flying machines. "Naturally being scientists, the third time these things show up and fly silently over their houses, they've got all their instruments out." Prouty said he'd seen the videos they took of the craft and he saw the magnetometer readouts and a lot of the evidence. "These guys concluded," Prouty said, "these things were not ours. The way they behaved defied our known laws of physics."

Flashing back to the question of Roswell being the motive for rushing the National Security Act through congress, Prouty said he didn't believe that's the way it happened. He said "The National Security Act was already in the works for quite terrestrial reasons. It was obvious that someone had been planning it for a long while."

I told the Col. that I found it hard to believe that just a fear of Communism motivated the Cold War. "What intelligent person could buy into that?" I asked.

Prouty assured me that the Psyops worked so well that the majority believed that Communism was a real threat to our way of life. He said he had evidence, before World War II ended that there was a secret plan being followed that would set up the conditions of the Cold War.

Prouty said he had always believed that the National Security Act was a big mistake.

I tried the idea out on Prouty that it must have been the military who sold our constitution and set up the National Security State. But, Prouty assured me he knew the men who'd done it, and he'd known them well. They weren't military men. And the impression I got from him was they were sleazy, greedy, ruthless Ivy League educated civilians who wielded the mysterious power of some corporate dynasty.

Whatever the motive for the creation of the National Security State, it was the beginning of the end of our free society. Prouty reminded me that President Harry Truman mentioned it as the only decision he would like to unmake. After he left office Truman said:

> For some time I have been disturbed by the way the CIA has been diverted from its original assignment. It has become an operational and at times a policy-making arm of the government...
>
> I never had any thought that when I set up the CIA that it would be injected into peacetime cloak-and-dagger operations. Some of the complications and embarrassment that I think we have experienced are in part attributable to the fact that this quiet intelligence arm of the President has been so removed from its intended role that it is being interpreted as a symbol of sinister and mysterious foreign intrigue and a subject for Cold War enemy propaganda...[271]

But, the CIA is only a small part of the National Security State. Harry Truman did not have the perspective to perceive the terminal cancer of the cryptocracy to which he surrendered our freedom., He could not have realized the carcinogenic effect of institutionalized secrecy as it spread into the body politic of what was once the most freedom loving, prosperous and creative nation ever to manifest on the face of planet earth.

Flashback to that C-Span program I watched: Dr. Luntz, talked a lot about Ross Perot and how effective he'd been in the presidential campaign even though he lost. He said that Perot's campaign should serve as an example to the Republicans in the next election. He said that if he was asked what the Republicans had to do to win the 1996 elections he'd "tell the party to let the people speak..."

I thought about the National Security Act again. The Republican Party will really only be able to let the people speak if it repeals the National Security Act. I mean, it's like we're a bunch of children that are at a grown up party. We're allowed to be seen but not heard, and when we ask the politicians to tells us something relevant they either tell us "they don't have the need to know" or "we don't have the need to know." It's like telling a child, you're not old enough to know this right now, come back in forty years and we'll tell you. That's one of the effects of the National Security Act.

The Bill of Rights says freedom of speech is one of our inalienable right. But as an ordinary citizen living in the National Security State you don't *know* anything truly relevant to talk about. If you're being kept in the informational dark, you can't talk about the future. Keeping you secretly in the dark about vital information impairs your thinking. And if your thinking is impaired, your speaking is impaired. That means your freedom of speech *is* impaired.

Remember Thomas Jefferson's remark at the beginning of this book: "there is no safe depository of the ultimate powers of society but the people themselves, and if we think them not enlightened enough to exercise their control with a wholesome discretion, the remedy is not to take if from them, but to inform their discretion by education." The practices of a national security state preclude that. The control has been taken from us. The democratic processes of government today must be just for show -- a feeble attempt to keep the public order.

That's when a simple thought began to form in my mind. My parents generation wanted to drink without sneaking around so they repealed the Volstead Act which prohibited the consumption of alcohol. It ought to be that easy. This generation ought to be wise enough to repeal the National Security Act which prohibits freedom of information, therefore freedom of thought -- and therefore freedom of speech. Since the founding fathers never anticipated the invention of technologies

---

[271] *Washington Post*, December 21, 1963.

that would intrude themselves into a person's private thoughts, even take over and drive his dreams, should we consider adding another amendment to the Constitution which guarantees freedom of thought? One would like to believe that, once the legal debate concluded and all the testimony about the role of language (speech) in thought processes had been established, the Supreme Court would agree that the right of free speech was based upon the presumption of free thought. But there needs to be debate about it now, so that the invisible and uninvited deliberate influences upon the human mind will be mandated illegal by the courts. But you have to wonder if that's enough. Do any of our institutions have any value in this world of "out of sight, out of mind" undocumented government of this cryptocracy.

Things are different now than they were in the 1770's when this country was founded. Today mind control does exist -- it is the linchpin which keeps all the secrets -- it is the lock on the minds of the slaves that buried the secrets... But you don't have the need to know that. Or do you? Since you are interested enough to read this book to the end, you are not one of the "sheeple" who will not work to create a world that works. You are one of the people who count.

Again flashback to the panel of that same C-Span program. There was Lamar Alexander, a Bush-Administration Education Secretary. He told the story about the days when he walked across the state of Tennessee -- for six months-- living with the people of his state, running for Governor. He said the most important thing he learned on the walk was the people "tuned out Washington. They listened to the local news, they read the local papers..."

And Part of that, I thought, was because people *know* what's going on. If it's not conscious yet, they know it intuitively. Few people trust the National Security State which has its head offices in Washington. That's the reason nobody trusts Washington. It's not America, it's the National Security State, and unauthorized institution of lies.

The manager of a small mid-western town, I know, told me about the time Federal Agents came into the City's office and told him what he had to do in a particular situation that clearly should have been a local decision, and which legally was protected from their interference by the body of laws called "State's Rights."

"What States Rights?" he asked. "I either had to do what they told me or my wife and kids would be at risk. They made that very plain. I did what they told me to do because I was afraid." It happened years before, but he still resented it.

While I was thinking all this, scribbling these notes, the C-Span program was continuing and my attention was captured by Jack Fund a reporter for *The Wall*

Street Journal, who was sitting next to Dr. Luntz. He was saying, "...the Republicans talk good, but their biggest problem -- and the problem for the Democrats too, is they talk good but they don't deliver. Talk's not worth much to the American people. There's been too much talk...."

What the politicians talk about is largely irrelevant. They're not talking about any the secrets. That's what we should be talking about. What's wrong with our country is a conspiracy against the future we don't even know about.

Everything I was watching on C-span was irrelevant and could be explained by what we don't know. The politicians ought to be asking questions like: What is it that's classified for forty or fifty years? Who is classifying it? What is the system of accountability that will correct mistakes and punish wrong doers? How can we find out the secrets that are being used to manipulate and control us? Who can we trust?

On February 2, 1994, *The New York Times* carried this editorial:

> Washington's secret war over secrecy has taken a predictable turn. A year ago, President Clinton asked an interagency working group to establish a less secretive system for classifying documents. The working group labored, and came up with a draft executive order last November, which (naturally) was kept secret.
>
> Fortunately, a copy was leaked to the Federation of American Scientists, and lo, the federation found that while suggesting a few modest reforms, the draft order would actually close the shutters tighter.
>
> The draft order proposes, with few exceptions, a maximum classification lifetime of 40 years. As the federation's analysts point out, Richard Nixon set a maximum of 30 years for most classified documents, and Jimmy Carter fixed the limit at 20 years.
>
> This extended period outweighs the hypothetical benefit of a "balancing test" that would allow declassifers to weigh the public interest against national security concerns.
>
> The acting archivist of the United States, Trudy Peterson, made the necessary point in a recent letter to Vice President Al Gore: "In our experience, there is virtually no information over 30 years old that requires continued classification. Most documents of this age are so irrelevant to current security concerns that continued withholding seems inappropriate if not laughable."
>
> Ms. Peterson is custodian of 325 million classified documents, including files dating to World War I. The secrecy establishment

> opposes en bloc declassification, and favors an arduous reviewing process that would take decades. Otherwise, it is said, the genuinely sensitive morsel might fall into the wrong hands.
>
> Granted, that is a risk. But how much greater the danger to democracy is excessive secrecy that denies Americans information essential to accountability.
>
> A more direct approach to weeding out this secret garden is advocated by Rep. Dan Glickman, D-Kan, chairman of the House Intelligence Committee.
>
> Most documents are classified by executive order, without defined standards on who decides what to keep secret. Glickman would open the whole process to debate in public hearings and is drafting a bill that would establish clear rules and fix a 10-year or 6-year limit, wherever feasible, on classified security matters.
>
> Those House hearings might also illuminate another murky front in the administration's avowed war on secrecy.
>
> In 1993, for the third successive year, the Senate adopted a resolution urging disclosure of the now-secret budget of the Central Intelligence Agency. Yet Clinton only a few weeks ago refused again to divulge the aggregate intelligence budget. With the Cold War over, this secrecy is hard to justify.
>
> The case for sunlight was expressed long ago by James Madison: "A popular government without popular information, or the means of acquiring it, is but a prologue to a farce or tragedy, or perhaps both."

Nice to hear that prestigious paper print the above. It ought to start a campaign and print pages of educational material about the National Security Act, truely educate the American public about the real reasons for keeping the secrets as long as possible -- criminal activities. Alas, *The New York Times* has become obsolete without even becoming aware that means it has become an artform -- with all the Shamanic duties thereof.

The Internet is full of talk of this kind. There is hope in the places where people know that newspapers are obsolete. That's where you find the National Security Arc leaking like a sieve. The Internet is a citizen's intelligence network. When information travels at the speed of light, there is ultimately no secrecy.

Whenever something becomes obsolesced, it gets a lot of attention. The human form has obsolesced itself by extending its senses into the electronic realm, into everywhere at onceness at the speed of light. So, there's a sudden consciousness of the body as an artform and we see a lot of tattooing and piercing and bright blue hair and nudity and plastic surgery.

Secrecy has been made obsolete by the technology that is manifesting as the Information Age. That's why there's the attempt by the NSA to push the Clipper Chip on us. And that's why there's so much attention on keeping the secrets. That's because the cryptocracy is obsolete and therefore an artform. The real artists of secrecy, like Whitfield Diffie, are giving the secrecy to everyone. Diffie is the guy who invented the Public Code Program which allows privacy to companies and individuals over the Internet. The NSA tried to stop him, but couldn't. The Information Age (you wanna think of it as a highway?) will probably follow the evolution of CB radio. Out of anarchic chaos it will develop it's own harmonic perfection. The people will develop their own regulating practices. Order will prevail by the simple force of peer pressure -- the group feeling.

Technologies produce environments. They act like the climate in a room. When it's just right, nobody notices it. But when it's too hot or too cold, you give it your attention -- you go over to the thermostat and regulate the temperature until it's invisible again.

The National Security State has become visible. It needs to be regulated until it's invisible again. That's hard to do in the information age. It plays counterpoint to the Information Age. That's why it will go. But not without a fight. The cryptocrats have their jobs to think of. They put so much energy into setting up the National Security State.

The Cold War was just an excuse to get the National Security State going. It was just like terrorism on airplanes was just an excuse to control public air travel, just like gang shootings were just an excuse to disarm the citizenry, just like another "unwinnable" War on Drugs was just an excuse for both illegal searches and seizures, more prisons and SWAT teams, and the high price and perverse interests and availability of drugs -- mostly uppers of the kind the Nazi Blitzkreig ran on. The Nazis went the way of the radio -- the new technology that created Hitler's environment -- it became an artform.

The secrets are coming out. Being obsolesced for a cryptocrat means he feels a great need to confess his secret sins against humanity in order to regain his own. While we may have been a nation of lab rats preyed upon by the cryptocracy, we are no longer. The way I add it up, through one secret program or another, half of the people in this country -- maybe more than 150 million people -- have been the targets of our own government's clandestine experiments. That's no longer a secret. Nothing in this book is secret any longer. (The cryptocracy will release the "official" photocopies that prove what I've said here is generally correct. But there were be carefully forged documents within the stacks meant to mislead on certain crucial points -- to mislead wherever it can.)

If we repeal the National Security Act? A few multi-millionaires may lose a lot of money -- but they'll feel a lot better about themselves in this age of ecological awareness. The Robber Barron view of free enterprise is obsolete but will only come out in the open after the last business secret is revealed. Then, in a "win-win" world there will be more rich people than ever before. Money is information after all.

So what have we average people got to lose by repealing the National Security Act? Probably we've got a lot to gain -- our freedom of thought foremost.

My mother (Born 1910) used to tell me when I was an overly curious little kid asking about adult things, "What you don't know won't hurt you." that was probably part of the mind set that gave us the Great Depression and a couple of World Wars. Now, as an adult, I know that what my mother told me was not true. People have always been the victims of their own ignorance -- individually and culturally.

What will happen when we repeal the National Security Act?

Worse case scenario: After the votes have been counted and the repeal is announced. The voters who worked hardest for the repeal will rush out into the streets to celebrate. They will hear tanks rumbling down the streets, helicopters flying in the night. The communications systems will be jammed by high tech military technology. What happened in Baghdad will happen here. There will be blackouts. The radio and television, when it comes back, will be run by the military dictatorship which will announce that, due to some plausible argument designed to persuade us that this is for our own good, a state of national emergency has been declared. How many of us will laugh at that? The concentration camps have already been built to house those who resist the orders of the mind controlled troops.

Back in the 1300's a Sufi scholar named Ibn Khaldun wrote a book called *Muqahdimmah (Introduction To The History of The World).* Arnold Toynbee called Khaldun the greatest historian who ever lived. He kept things simple and summed up the nuts and bolts of western societies in a single work.

Khaldun said all Western civilizations are motivated by dynasties who consume (and display) wealth. He said the majority of the people are the Bedouins (people who live in the desert and know how to do more with less) and they are the only source of true wealth. They are taxed by the dynasty which must display the wealth to motivate individuals and it must pay the military (or police) to guard the wealth from those who would let their greed overcome them.

This all seems to work no longer than 3 generation or 75 years. Then the Bedouins notice they have been over-taxed because the dynasty lives in fear of the military which it has had to give a raise every year in order to keep it at bay. The dynasty has become so preoccupied with its fear of the military that it's lost sight of the needs of the Bedouins. That's when the collapse begins. Khaldun talks at length about the "group feeling" which is the invisible glue, the *zeitgeist,* of the Bedouins, a mystical force far more powerful than any military has ever possessed. (In Khaldun's time the military had only a primitive knowledge of mind control.)

When the time has come the dynasty collapses one of three ways: 1. It collapses from within and the power goes back to the local dynasties. 2. The military overthrows the dynasty by force. But the military rulership will collapse too, because if an army is a good army it's habits are Spartan and it knows nothing of consuming wealth and displaying luxury -- a requirement, Khaldun says, of a healthy economy. 3. The best thing that can happen is that a leader emerges from the Bedouins who expresses the group feeling, and through the directed force of group feeling the dynasty is overthrown. The leader sets up a new dynasty and the whole cycle begins again. During the first generation of the new dynasty, however, things are at their best.

In the Information age, I would think, there need be no single individual who expresses the group feeling. The consensus evolves through constant feedback. The leader is information. The machine (the system) is information. And the wealth that is produced is information. The free flow of information -- particles at the speed of light -- can be contained only so long as the container is not full. When the container is full, like the crystal in a laser, the information becomes organized, coherent, and powerfully bursts from the weakest point of the container, which hopefully is the deliberately placed weakpoint, and the laser is aimed at the problem which the first burst solves.

Like Khaldun, I am an optimist. We both believe in the inherent goodness of the human spirit. I've not been in many dangers, a big California earthquake and the blackout in New York City in 1965. Both times I witnessed a great demonstration of the best in humanity. It's just as Jeff Bridges said in *Starman* when, playing an alien intelligence hiding in a human body he summarized one of the miracles of the human beauty: "When things are at their worst, you're at your best."

It's not the people with courage who're sneaking around within this cryptocracy -- it's not all the filing clerks and functionaries that make up the CIA, NSA, NRO, NPO, and the rest. The cryptocracy and our military can not all be entirely hypno-programmed. The Delta Force team, yeah. The Seal teams, yeah, a few other small crack cadres, but not the majority of the U.S. military. Not all, not yet.

So, the day after the Repeal I don't think there'll be Regular Army in the streets. After the creation of the right series of worst case pseudo-events (some divide and conquer strategy) in the media, there could be foreign troops in the streets -- a United Nations "peacekeeping force."

It's up to us to read the books on the National Security Act. Learn the lingo, then, armed with the facts, start calling for the repeal of it. At this time it would appear to be unthinkable. The National Security State would appear to be a given, something taken for granted like the air we breathe. But try telling people you're working to repeal it and watch them want to join you.

I tried this in Los Angeles not long ago: I was speaking about the topic of this book and I concluded with something on the order of this chapter which I'd only roughed out. The following speaker was Retired U.S. Air Force Technological Intelligence Colonel Thomas Bearden who was to speak as a physicist on the healthful uses of some of the new technologies he has become expert in.

Bearden walked up the podium as I was trying to ask the many questioners to meet me in the hall outside. I introduced myself to Bearden telling him I'd enjoyed trying to understand his book ***The Exaclibur Briefing***. He smiled and thanked me for the compliment. Then I looked him straight in the eye and said, "Tom, you know we're going to repeal The National Security Act."

He took a step backward as if I'd poked him with the comment in the solar plexus. "But...but... the military... there must be military secrets..." he stammered.

"Of course there does. The military has never had any trouble with that. There's a chain of command. There's honor. There's accountability... The military can have their legitimate secrets..." I told him.

"Well then," he said, extending his hand. "I'm with you."

You'll be surprised at how many alllies you'll find in abolishing The National Security Act.

Senator John Warner, someone told me, was talking about abolishing the CIA in late July or August of 1994. I thought that was a sign. The time had come to open Pandora's box. Even a member of the Senate Intelligence Committee was talking about doing away with the CIA? But when I looked up what Warner said, I found he was only talking about cutting the budget and finding something for the multi-billion dollar agency to do. Maybe he had thought about abolishing the CIA, but that's as far as a man in his political position could go. And maybe he even had some thoughts about abolishing the National Security Act. He's a human being and he's probably privy to some of the ugly secrets hidden behind The National Security Curtain.

This is the information age, and the politicians who discover what that means -- ultimately there will be no secrecy -- will find themselves on the winning side, aligned with the group feeling which will repeal the National Security Act.

Again flashing back to that Fourth of July: following that program on the Republican's Future on C-Span was a program taped at the National Press Club called "Restoring Public Trust." I found it just as fascinating as the previous program. It was another program in which the panelists were trapped, talking in circles in front of the National Security Curtain. Almost everything the panelists said was irrelevant.

Richard Leone, President of the 20th Century Fund lamented the fact that people didn't even trust privacy, any more. He said they didn't think anything of business rights of privacy or attorney/client privileges, or the doctor/patient privileges or the priests secrecy of the confessional. I could not believe that Richard, at the pinnacle of power at the 20th Century Fund, had overlooked this as an obvious effect of living in an involuntary and corrupt cryptocracy.

This panel spent the next hour responding to a paper Tom Rosenstiel, Media Correspondent of *The L.A. Times*, had written. Rosenstiel and his other panelists: Paul Begala, Susan Page of *Newsday*, all agreed that, as Professor Rosen of NYU had put it, "It's not up to journalists to save democracy. All that they can even hope to do is save journalism."

Nobody mentioned the National Security Act. I wondered if they just accepted it as an irreversible fact, or if they were even aware of its effects on information at all? I mean is the press part of the cryptocracy too? Do journalists now have security clearances?

I was hoping I'd hear a quote from Jefferson on the importance of the press to the functioning of the democratic process. We should make sure our kids are taught this quote of Jefferson's, at least: "...the remedy is not to take it from them (classify it), but to inform their discretion by (good journalism?)-- education."

On C-Span, these, supposedly the best journalists, jawed on about press coverage of the White House without seeming to be aware that all there is to cover has already been covered with a TOP SECRET stamp -- what the press should be writing about, instead of O.J. Simpson, are all the secrets behind the National Security curtain.

Jay Rosen, the NYU Journalism professor, wore a blue work shirt and no tie. He did wear a jacket though, as a token of his tenure. He complained about the "visible loss of press authority," saying that journalists were "increasingly unable to persuade their audience that they make any difference in question of politics..." Did it ever occur to Rosen that this is true because of the effects of living in front of a National Security curtain?

Rosen came as close to bringing up the real problem as anybody that day. As clear as he got was to say, "the press has no long-run strategy for addressing its loss of authority..." Which I say, it can do easily, by realizing the problem comes from the National Security Act and the cryptocracy. (How about a Freedom of Speech Club in which every journalist and editor is given a lie detector test asking if she's now or ever been an asset of the cryptocracy?)

Paul Begala, Media Advisor to President Clinton said, "People today view their leaders in a more cynical way than they ever have -- not skeptical, cynical..."

President Clinton probably wouldn't be having all the problems he's having if the National Security Act had ceased to exist by the time he was elected governor. But, had it never existed, he probably never would have gone to Oxford, nor would he have been elected President of the United States. You hear him trying to reform the health care system, but you don't hear him ever speaking of the tyranny which lurks behind the National Security curtain -- and revealing the details of 1/3 of the national budget which funds the black operations of the cryptocracy.

Begala said he'd like to see more "basic mainstream facts from journalists", rather than so much "analysis and speculation" about things. But none of the journalists said, "that's all the cryptocracy's left is, the irrelevant stuff, the obsolete, just yesterday's news..."

Journalism is a rewarding craft. A journalist is someone who is a generalist in a world of specialists. A journalist need know nothing at all, except how to find out anything. It's a wonderful pursuit for the inexhaustibly curious. A journalist is a detective looking for information and her boss is the public -- everyone. The truth shall make you free.

What I'm saying here isn't over the head of the silent majority. It fact, I believe I'm expressing, if not the manifesting group feeling, at least the opinion of the five percent that counts -- the five percent who are communicating, the five percent (which is all it takes to succeed) who will make the positive changes necessary, the five percent who, together, will overcome the inertia of the National Security State.

Then there are those who would ridicule "conspiracy theorists", calling them paranoid. The word paranoia can mean "heightened awareness" or it can mean "irrational fear." The majority opinion on the Internet is aware and concerned. Internet knows what's going on. Without paranoia the people might perish.

We have entered the Information Age. We are extending our senses by electronic technology into the realms of light. The speed of light approaches the speed of thought. There is coming a great simultaneity -- an everywhere-at-onceness -- a form of global consciousness experienced on a personal level.

At the same time there are forces of inertia that need to be overcome. Inertia describes the tendency of a body at rest to stay at rest, while a body in motion has a tendency to stay in motion. So, it's simply a law of physics: the national security body which has stalled on the freeway will be moved out of the way.

We're getting crystal clear feedback from the group feeling. The river of electrons on the Internet is telling us: "Invisible weapons technology will continue to develop, and minds will be controlled at a distance, and dreams will be driven en mass. But the river is telling us that by the very nature of the Information Age (of which most are unaware) we will see the controller become the controlled and the controlled become the controller."

With one foot still in the old, linear, plumbing diagram modality of the Industrial Age where things move in patterns of start, stop and change, there has come an epic time of change. And it would help if this is done consciously. It is happening unconsciously already, and for some, the understanding of what is happening will never come to consciousness. For many there will be no debriefing, and they will simply move to another plateau without leaving a trail of history, without learning how to do it better if something similar comes up in the future.

So, from the platform of my obsolete self, I says, aloud:" Repeal The National Security Act."

Then I hear the echo from the river: "It's already been repealed. There are no secrets. There can be no secrets in the Information Age. Everyone knows everything all at once."

You ask what will happen to the cryptocrats? They will be recognized as the artists that they are. Bob Dobbs explains:

> The best qualified CIA "covert operations" planning executives are to be found among hack paperback novelists and TV dramatists. The credulous neurotic projects reality onto the banal stage and TV screen "productions" because of his strong desire to believe that the

> combination of painted backgrounds, papier-mâché, costume, and montage has such reality. There is no way in which to conceal repeated "covert operations" unless the public wishes to be credulous. Give that public a fantasy of the sort to which it is susceptible, and no amount of mere fact will easily dissuade the majority of such persons from believing in whatever illusion the covert operation is designed to create. The application of the calculated deception of the successful hack novelist and dramatist to the so-called "documentary film" and "non-fiction expose" is the connecting link between outright pornography-writing and the techniques for designing a CIA-type "covert operations" scenario. (If, by chance, a covert operation is "blown", the CIA's obvious remedy is to prompt one of its subsidiaries or sister-agencies to whip up a fresh exposé of the CIA! Give the credulous public a "believable" exposé scenario and the exposé provides a deeper cover than the original plot itself.)[272]

When I last saw Bob, between meetings of a *Finnegan's Wake* study group, he was making an in-depth study of Norman Mailers novel, *Harlot's Ghost,* and trying to explain how he was actually the central character in the book. Shortly after I visited Bob, I visited, Fletcher Prouty. He had read *Harlot's Ghost* and had made a list of character's names beside which he wrote the names of real people he thought they might be. He sent the list to Mailer who wrote back telling him he'd gotten all of them right except one.

There may be more in Bob's brief, dense comment than at first one surmises. There have been a lot of writer's involved as contributors to the cryptocracy. From L. Ron Hubbard back in the 40's to Jerry Pournelle in the '70's. Pournelle is a best-selling SF writer, and columnist who writes on consumer computer technology. In this instance he was the systems operator of a forum on Genie. The topic of the forum discussion Pournelle moderated was the "Clinton Administration." Chuck Zeps posted an article about Clinton's alleged involvement in CIA drug smuggling through Mena, Arkansas -- the real story behind the "Whitewatergate" scandal. He then posted an article published in a LaRouche periodical entitled *Natural Born Killers, Executive Intelligence Review releases study linking British Psychiatry to Assassination,* The article argued that assassins were being programmed, not by the good old U.S. but by the British. Pournelle reacted strongly against Zeps, calling him an "agent provocateur" and stating that he worked for "the other side."

"I thought his reaction was totally out of proportion," Zeps said, " and after reading the 'assassination' stuff from Larouche, I think Pournelle (a trained

---

[272] Bob Dobbs, *Phatic Communion With,* Perfect Pitch Editions, 598 St. Clair Ave. West, Toronto, Ontario M6C 1A6, Canada, 1992.

Psychologist) may be more concerned with his government psychological work coming to light than any 'communist' allegations."

"Flame" is cyberjargon for argument in the restrictive format of the net. And it was what Pournelle and Zeps had. Zeps got in his licks, apparently pushing some invisible buttons of Pournelle's. And Pournelle's best retort was a cliché which former cryptocrats on the net often quote -- from Napoleon Bonaparte (who ought to know): "Never ascribe to malice what can be explained by simple incompetence."

The flame dampened when Pournelle asked the net overseer to throw Zeps off and banish him to America Online.

But maybe Pournelle, by quoting Napoleon, was making an important point -- maybe he was offering us a strong argument for the repeal of the National Security Act. Under this act it usually takes 20 years or more to discover any incompetence. The National Security Act protects incompetents, as well as criminals and those who've just made bad decisions. Could Watergate, Iran/Contra Affair, the assassinations, and so forth, could they all have been just due to the institutionalize incompetence of a cryptocracy?

Okay, let's suppose all this mess has been made by honest mistakes. Then let's declare a period of amnesty for all the criminally incompetence of the cryptocracy. A full pardon will be issued for every cryptocrat who turns in his secrets and promises never to do it again.

Flashback with me again to last Fourth of July on C-Span: the journalists and politicians and pollsters were all really talking about the problems created by the National Security State, yet they never spoke the phrase. It was like they were players in a novel nobody was reading. Perhaps they didn't know the cause of the problems they were discussing. They were acting like they lived in a room which was the perfect temperature. They didn't notice the temperature. The National Security curtain has made half of reality invisible.

Bill Clinton's Secretary of Energy, Hazel O'Leary made big waves by telling the truth. She ordered the Department of Energy to declassify 32 million pages of secret files. That's a pile of papers three miles high. (I'll lead the applause for O'Leary.) But, now Ma'm, there must be another 32 million pages of secrets still left. Let's see those too. How much uranium and plutonium has really been scattered around the planet? How many people have died from radiation effects? What do our secret intelligence reports say on the effects of the Soviet bungle at Chernobyl? How many of the so-called Monarch survivors were also used in radiation experiments? And what's this HAARP tower in Alaska all about?

Ms. O'Leary said: "I've looked into the eyes and faces of people doing battle with their government..."

But, I've got to tell Ms. O'Leary, God bless her -- she declassified the biggest pile of secret documents in U.S. history -- but she's got a lot more eyes and faces to look into before its over. (Using her terms) The battle hasn't even started. She's seen only the radiation guinea pigs.

I've interviewed disproportionately too many "survivors" of the so-called Project Monarch who have had to have their thyroids removed. But, O'Leary isn't the secretary who is going to have to look into the faces of the army of zombies who've been mind-controlled by a half dozen agencies of the cryptocracy. The Department of Energy barely even qualifies as an agency of the cryptocracy. Maybe O'Leary should be appointed to the directorship of the CIA next?

O'Leary announced that cleaning up the radiation dumps around this country are going to cost $300 million. I wonder what the doctors are going to charge to restore peace of mind to the millions of mind control "survivors" that are just now discovering they need psychological help. And what about all those that've killed themselves due to mind control? And what about those that've killed others because of mind control? And what about all those who were killed because they began to remember the dirty secrets that they were programmed to forget -- those whose amnesia finally ran out?

There are six new lawsuits over radiation experimentation and carelessness (August, 1994). That's six more out of 165,000 workers in a 1.5 billion industry. I know of twice that many mind control suits shaped up in the same time.

One thing that the mind control suits and the suits against the DOE or most other agencies have in common (sometimes the DOE is the object of the mind control suits as well) -- all but a few are thrown out of court when the National Security Act is invoked.

See, the National Security Act says that "in the interest of national security" you're not entitled to a fair trial... all your civil rights can be suspended in the "interest of national security". And what is national security? Nobody knows. There's no case law on it. It's anything the cryptocrats say it is, and for some reason, the judges go along with this ... Why? Probably because they're part of the cryptocracy, or they're afraid that the pictures of themselves molesting that beautiful young child will be made public and that'll be the end of their careers. They didn't know that it was the cryptocrats who provided the child and the child is an MPD (multiple personality) who's specially trained to perform some perverted sexual act that serves the judges own paedophilic or bestial tastes... But I don't want to pick on judges, how about Senators, Congressmen, Presidents, Cabinet members, prominent entertainers, the rich and the famous... This is what we're hearing over and over from the survivors of Project Monarch -- which may have been also called Project One Hundred Thousand... (Have you seen anything about that in your local newspapers?)

And journalists are doing a poor job covering the "War on Drugs." I asked one former spook how the "war on drugs" was going. And he said ,"What war on drugs?" It's the CIA's war against their competition in the drugs business." So, here we are again. Without the National Security Act we wouldn't have a drug problem in this country. (As the song goes: "What the government denies, free enterprise supplies...")

Journalists don't report on the lag in technology which would not exist if the National Security Act were repealed and all the secrets revealed. They usually don't report on how cold fusion will make fossil fuels obsolete, and allow the atmosphere to regain its natural purity. They usually don't report on the wonderful powers of the human mind that have been discovered in the mind control research which has spanned fifty years... discovered and hidden behind the National Security Curtain.

Happily, the cryptocracy cannot sustain its secrecy because, to quote McLuhan, "When information travels at the speed of light there is no secrecy.' (And there's no proprietary right either because information is everywhere at once.) Clearly now, we're seeing the effects of the information age. There are leaks in the national security dike. More and more you can find someone telling the naked truth somewhere. Usually it's in the cybernetic samisdat. In *Mondo2000* the group feeling was expressed by this insight of Xandor Korzibsky's:

> "Have you figured it out yet? OK, let me spell it out for all you pathetic autists (as in autistic): They know *exactly* which ELF frequencies, waveforms, and code sequences (brainwave-frequency region pulse-code modulation superimposed widely on power lines, radio, TV, and microwave transmissions) to use and can create any emotion or pathology they please. *You* don't. And you probably don't own a *real* ELF detector! You poor bleating sheep don't even know they're ALREADY using ELF generators in malls, restaurants, and bars to maximize throughput and revenues -- even magnetizing fans in air conditioners and refrigerators to create pulsed ELF waves to zap you. It will all be duly captured by Hillary's SmartCard which will store your brainwaves and monitor all transactions everywhere you go, so the Thought Police can download it any old time via the data superhighway and issue the ultimate ACCESS DENIED...

When Albert Einstein was warning the superpowers about nuclear folly, and after the first explosion of the hydrogen bomb which did not blow up the planet as some feared it might, but merely proved his theories correct, he said that mankind had come to the crossroads at which the human "spirit must again overcome technology."

How long will we be stuck at Einstein's intersection? In the 50's it was the nuclear threat, the big and visible, the loud and devastating, the hot flash of light and the mushroom cloud. Now, it's the insidious, sneaky, "non lethal weapons" technology, ELF, VLF, SHF, microwaves and other waves and rays of an Invisible War against all humanity.

When Hazel O'Leary explained her reasons for releasing the three-mile-high stack of secret Department of Energy (formerly Atomic Energy Commission) documents, she said, "The place needed shaping up. It had to be removed from the shroud of Cold War secrecy..." And so does the National Institute of Mental Health, the Veterans Administration, and all the other "public service" agencies of government -- and so does the whole society. We can all at once repeal the National Security Act, and all the secret agencies under it which violate our Constitutional rights. Why tell the truth one declassified document at a time, or thirty-three million declassified documents at a time? Why not do it all at once by abolishing the National Security Act?

The National Security Act has taken the truth away. We are, in fact, living in a state of Martial Law, a State of National Emergency. They call it national security. Where's the security in it ? Without freedom, without civil rights, what kind of security can a people have? And if the people aren't the nation, then we're gonna have to fix that starting right now. Maybe we don't even need nations anymore? But if we don't, we need the voluntary commitment to whatever is better.
The group feeling will create the change. It's being expressed.

Hear it in some lines from a poem by Diane Di Prima. It's a poem entitled -- Rant[273]:

> **The only war that matters is the war against the imagination.**
>
> **The only war that matters is the war against the imagination.**
>
> **The only war that matters is the war against the imagination.**
>
> **All other wars are subsumed in it.**
>
> **There is no way out of the spiritual battle...**

---

[273] Diane Di Prima, ***Selected Poems 1956-1976***, City Lights Books, San Francisco, Ca.

From
H. Girard

~~SECRET~~ THIS DOCUMENT CONSISTS OF 1 PAG
NO. 1 OF 2 SERIES

~~SECRET~~

UNITED STATES
ATOMIC ENERGY COMMISSION

* 19940000081 *
DOE-OR

4234

April 17, 1947

U. S. Atomic Energy Commission
P. O. Box E
Oak Ridge, Tennessee

Attention: Dr. Fidler

Subject: MEDICAL EXPERIMENTS ON HUMANS

1. It is desired that no document be released which refers to experiments with humans and might have adverse effect on public opinion or result in legal suits. Documents covering such work field should be classified "secret". Further work in this field in the future has been prohibited by the General Manager. It is understood that three documents in this field have been submitted for declassification and are now classified "restricted". It is desired that these documents be reclassified "secret" and that a check be made to insure that no distribution has inadvertently been made to the Department of Commerce, or other off-Project personnel or agencies.

2. These instructions do not pertain to documents regarding clinical or the rapeutic uses of radioisotopes and similar materials beneficial to human disorders and diseases.

ATOMIC ENERGY COMMISSION

O. G. HAYWOOD, JR.
Colonel, Corps of Engineers.

~~RESTRICTED DATA~~

CLASSIFICATION CANCELLED
AUTHORITY: DOE/SA-20
BY H.R. SCHMIDT, DATE:
HRSchmidt 2/22/94

~~SECRET~~

From H. Girard

~~SECRET~~
~~Security Information~~

ER - 3 - 2309

1952?
TABS NOT FOUND

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

OFFICE OF THE DIRECTOR

Declassified by 058375
date 20 APR 77

MEMORANDUM TO: Director, Psychological Strategy Board

SUBJECT: Flying Saucers

1. I am today transmitting to the National Security Council a proposal (TAB A) in which it is concluded that the problems connected with unidentified flying objects appear to have implications for psychological warfare as well as for intelligence and operations.

2. The background for this view is presented in some detail in TAB B.

3. I suggest that we discuss at an early board meeting the possible offensive or defensive utilization of these phenomena for psychological warfare purposes.

Enclosure

Walter B. Smith
Director

14

~~SECRET~~

United States Patent [19]

Stocklin

[11] Patent Number: 4,858,612

[45] Date of Patent: Aug. 22, 1989

[54] HEARING DEVICE

[76] Inventor: Philip L. Stocklin, P.O. Box 2111, Satellite Beach, Fla. 32937

[21] Appl. No.: 562,742

[22] Filed: Dec. 19, 1983

[51] **Int. Cl.⁴** A61N 1/35
[52] **U.S. Cl.** .... 128/422; 178/419 S
[58] **Field of Search** .... 128/419 R, 419 S, 422, 128/653, 771, 732, 741, 746, 791, 804; 340/407

[56] **References Cited**

U.S. PATENT DOCUMENTS

3,490,458	1/1970	Allison	128/421
3,751,605	8/1973	Michelson	128/1 R
3,951,134	4/1976	Malech	128/131
4,428,377	1/1984	Zollner et al.	128/419 R

FOREIGN PATENT DOCUMENTS

893311	2/1972	Canada	128/422
2811120	9/1978	Fed. Rep. of Germany	128/419 R
591196	1/1978	U.S.S.R.	128/419 R

OTHER PUBLICATIONS

Gerkin, G., "Electroencephalography & Clinical Neurophysiology", vol. 135, No. 6, Dec. 1973, pp 652-653.

Frye et al., "Science", vol. 181, Jul. 27, 1973, pp. 356-358.

Bise, William, "Low Power Radio-Frequency and Microwave Effects on Human Electroencephalogram and Behavior", Physiol. Chem. & Physics 10 (1978).

Primary Examiner—William E. Kamm
Attorney, Agent, or Firm—Wegner & Bretschneider

[57] ABSTRACT

A method and apparatus for simulation of hearing in mammals by introduction of a plurality of microwaves into the region of the auditory cortex is shown and described. A microphone is used to transform sound signals into electrical signals which are in turn analyzed and processed to provide controls for generating a plurality of microwave signals at different frequencies. The multifrequency microwaves are then applied to the brain in the region of the auditory cortex. By this method sounds are perceived by the mammal which are representative of the original sound received by the microphone.

29 Claims, 7 Drawing Sheets

MICROWAVE AMPLIFIER BANK 18
OSCILLATOR 1
OSCILLATOR 2
OSCILLATOR N
AMP
AMP
AMP
20
20
20
21
21
21
P1
P2
PN
19
22
23
24
25
26
MICROWAVE RADIATION GENERATOR

Compliments of Harlan Girard

HEARING DEVICE

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

1. Field of the Invention

This invention relates to devices for aiding of hearing in mammals. The invention is based upon the perception of sounds which is experienced in the brain when the brain is subjected to certain microwave radiation signals.

2. Description of the Prior Art

In prior art hearing devices for human beings, it is well known to amplify sounds to be heard and to apply the amplified sound signal to the ear of the person wearing the hearing aid. Hearing devices of this type are however limited to hearing disfunctions where there is no damage to the auditory nerve or to the auditory cortex. In the prior art, if there is damage to the auditory cortex or the auditory nerve, it cannot be corrected by the use of a hearing aid.

During World War II, individuals in the radiation path of certain radar installations observed clicks and buzzing sounds in response to the microwave radiation. It was through this early observation that it became known to the art that microwaves could cause a direct perception of sound within a human brain. These buzzing or clicking sounds however were not meaningful, and were not perception of sounds which could otherwise be heard by the receiver. This type of microwave radiation was not representative of any intelligible sound to be perceived. In such radar installations, there was never a sound which was generated which resulted in subsequent generation of microwave signals representative of that sound.

Since the early perception of buzzing and clicking, further research has been conducted into the microwave reaction of the brain. In an article entitled "Possible Microwave Mechanisms of the Mammalian Nervous System" by Philip L. Stocklin and Brain F. Stocklin, published in the TIT Journal of Life Sciences, Tower International Technomedical Institute, Inc. P.O. Box 4594, Philadelphia, Pa. (1979) there is disclosed a hypothesis that the mammalian brain generates and uses electro magnetic waves in the lower microwave frequency region as an integral part of the functioning of the central and peripheral nervous systems. This analysis is based primarily upon the potential energy of a protein integral in the neural membrane.

In an article by W. Bise entitled "Low Power Radio-Frequency and Microwave Effects On Human Electroencephalogram and Behavior", Physiol. Chemistry Phys. 10, 387 (1978), it is reported that there are significant effects upon the alert human EEG during radiation by low intensity CW microwave electromagnetic energy. Bise observed significant repeatable EEG effects for a subject during radiation at specific microwave frequencies.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

Results of theoretical analysis of the physics of brain tissue and the brain/skull cavity, combined with experimentally-determined electromagnetic properties of mammalian brain tissue, indicate the physical necessity for the existence of electromagnetic standing waves, called modes in the living mammalian brain. The mode characteristics may be determined by two geometric properties of the brain; these are the cephalic index of the brain (its shape in prolate spheroidal coordinates) and the semifocal distance of the brain (a measure of its size). It was concluded that estimation of brain cephalic index and semifocal distance using external skull measurements on subjects permits estimation of the subject's characteristic mode frequencies, which in turn will permit a mode by mode treatment of the data to simulate hearing.

This invention provides for sound perception by individuals who have impaired hearing resulting from ear damage, auditory nerve damage, and damage to the auditory cortex. This invention provides for simulation of microwave radiation which is normally produced by the auditory cortex. The simulated brain waves are introduced into the region of the auditory cortex and provide for perceived sounds on the part of the subject.

BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

FIG. 1 shows the acoustic filter bank and mode control matrix portions of the hearing device of this invention.

FIG. 2 shows the microwave generation and antenna portion of the hearing device of this invention.

FIG. 3 shows a typical voltage divider network which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 4 shows another voltage divider device which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 5 shows a voltage divider to be used as a mode partition wherein each of the resistors is variable in order to provide adjustment of the voltage outputs.

FIG. 6 shows a modified hearing device which includes adjustable mode partitioning, and which is used to provide initial calibration of the hearing device.

FIG. 7 shows a group of variable oscillators and variable gain controls which are used to determine hearing characteristics of a particular subject.

FIG. 8 shows a top view of a human skull showing the lateral dimension.

FIG. 9 shows the relationship of the prolate spherical coordinate system to the cartesian system.

FIG. 10 shows a side view of a skull showing the medial plane of the head, section A—A.

FIG. 11 shows a plot of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number M.

FIG. 12 shows a left side view of the brain and auditory cortex.

FIG. 13 shows the total modal field versus angle for source location.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE PREFERRED EMBODIMENT

This invention is based upon observations of the physical mechanism the mammalian brain uses to perceive acoustic vibrations. This observation is based in part upon neuro anatomical and other experimental evidence which relates to microwave brain stimulation and the perception of sounds.

It is has been observed that monochromatic acoustic stimuli (acoustic tones, or single tones) of different frequencies uniquely stimulate different regions of the cochlea. It has also been observed that there is a corresponding one to one relationship between the frequency of a monochromatic acoustic stimulus and the region o the auditory cortex neurally stimulated by the cochlear nerve under the physiologically normal conditions (tonotopicity).

It is has been observed that for an acoustic tone of a frequency which is at the lower end of the entire acoustical range perceivable by a person, that a thin lateral region ("Line") parallel to the medial axis of the brain and toward the inferior portion of the primary auditory cortex is stimulated. For an acoustic tone whose frequency is toward the high end of the entire perceivable acoustic range, a thin lateral region parallel to the medial axis and toward the superior portion of the primary auditory cortex is stimulated.

Neural stimulation results in the generation of a broad band of microwave photons by the change in rotational energy state of protons integral to the neuron membrane of the auditory cortex. The physical size and shape of the brain/skull cavity, together with the (semiconductor) properties (conductivity and dielectric constant) of the brain tissue provide an electromagnetic resonant cavity. Specific single frequencies are constructively reinforced so that a number of standing electromagnetic waves, each at its own single electromagnetic frequency in the microwave frequency region, are generated in the brain. Each such standing electromagnetic wave is called a characteristic mode of the brain/skull cavity.

Analysis in terms of prolate spheroidal wave functions indicates that transverse electric field components of these modes have maxima in the region of the auditory cortex. This analysis further shows that transverse electric field possess a variation of amplitude with angle in the angular plane (along the vertical dimension of the auditory cortex) and that is dependent only upon the primary mode number.

The auditory cortex in the normally functioning mammalian brain is a source of microwave modes. The auditory cortex generates these modes in accordance with the neural stimulation of the auditory cortex by the cochlear nerve. Mode weighting for any one acoustic tone stimulus is given by the amplitude of each mode along the line region of the auditory cortex which is neurally stimulated by that acoustic tone stimulus. A listing of mode weighting versus frequency of acoustic stimulus is called the mode matrix.

In this invention, the functions of the ear, the cochlear nerve, and the auditory cortex are simulated. Microwaves simulating the mode matrix are inserted directly into the region of the auditory cortex. By this insertion of simulated microwave modes, the normal operation of the entire natural hearing mechanism is simulated.

Referring now to FIG. 1 and FIG. 2 there is shown an apparatus which provides for induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain. This hearing device includes a microphone 10 which receives sounds, an acoustic filter bank 12 which separates the signals from the microphone into component frequencies, and a mode control matrix 14 which generates the mode signals which are used to control the intensity of microwave radiations which are injected into the skull cavity in the region of the auditory cortex.

The acoustic filter bank 12 consists of a bank of acoustic filters F1 through Fk which span the audible acoustic spectrum. These filters may be built from standard resistance, inductance, and capacitance components in accordance with well established practice. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 filters which correspond to the observed critical bandwidths of the human ear. In this preferred embodiment a typical list of filter parameters is given by Table 1 below:

TABLE 1

Filter No.	Center Frequency (Hz)	Bandwidth (Hz)
1	50	less than 100
2	150	100
3	250	100
4	350	100
5	450	110
6	570	120
7	700	140
8	840	150
9	1,000	160
10	1,170	190
11	1,370	210
12	1,600	240
13	1,850	280
14	2,150	320
15	2,500	380
16	2,900	450
17	3,400	550
18	4,000	700
19	4,800	900
20	5,800	1,100
21	7,000	1,300
22	8,500	1,800
23	10,500	2,500
24	13,500	3,500

The rectifier outputs one through K are feed to K mode partition devices. The mode partitioning devices each have N outputs wherein N is the number of microwave oscillators used to generate the microwave radiation. The outputs 1 through N of each mode partition device is applied respectively to the inputs of each gain controlled amplifier of the microwave radiation generator. The function of the mode control matrix 14 is the control of the microwave amplifiers in the microwave amplifier bank 18. In the preferred embodiment thus will be 24 outputs and 24 microwave frequency oscillators.

Connected to each microwave amplifier gain control line is a mode simulation device 16 which receives weighted mode signals from the mode partition devices 14. Each mode simulation device consists of one through k lines and diodes 17 which are each connected to summing junction 19. The diodes 17 provide for isolation from one mode partition device to the next. The diodes 17 prevent signals from one mode partition device from returning to the other mode partition devices which are also connected to the same summing junction of the mode summation device 16. The diodes also serve a second function which is the rectification of the signals received from the acoustic filter bank by way of the mode partition devices. In this way each mode partition device output is rectified to produce a varying DC voltage with major frequency components of the order of 15 milliseconds or less. The voltage at the summation junction 19 is thus a slowly varying DC voltage.

The example mode partition devices are shown in greater detail in FIGS. 3, 4, and 5. The mode partition devices are merely resistance networks which produce 1 through N output voltages which are predetermined divisions of the input signal from the acoustic filter associated with the mode partition device. FIG. 3 shows a mode partitioning device wherein several outputs are associated with each series resistor 30. In the embodiment depicted in FIG. 4 there is an output associated with each series resistor only, and thus there are N series resistors, or the same number of series resistors as there are outputs. The values of the resistors in the mode partition resistor network are determined in accordance with the magnitudes of the frequency component from the acoustic filter bank 12 which is required at the summation point 19 or the gain control line for amplifiers 20.

The microwave amplifier bank 18 consists of a plurality of microwave oscillators 1 through N each of which is connected to an amplifier 20. Since the amplifiers 20 are gain controlled by the signals at summation junction 19, the magnitude of the microwave output is controlled by the mode control matrix outputs F1 through F_n. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 amplifiers.

The leads from the microwave oscillators 1 through N to the amplifiers 20 are shielded to prevent cross talk from one oscillator to the next, and to prevent stray signals from reaching the user of the hearing device. The output impedance of amplifiers 20 should be 1000 ohms and this is indicated by resistor 21. The outputs of amplifiers 20 are all connected to a summing junction 22. The summing junction 22 is connected to a summing impedance 23 which is approximately 50 ohms. The relatively high amplifier output impedance 21 as compared to the relatively low summing impedance 23 provides minimization of cross talk between the amplifiers. Since the amplitude of the microwave signal needed at the antenna 24 is relatively small, there is no need to match the antenna and summing junction impedances to the amplifier 20 output impedances. Efficiency of the amplifiers 20 is not critical.

Level control of the signal at antenna 24 is controlled by pick off 25 which is connected to the summing impedance 23. In this manner, the signal at antenna 24 can be varied from 0 (ground) to a value which is acceptable to the individual.

The antenna 24 is placed next to the subject's head and in the region of the subject's auditory cortex 26. By placement of the antenna 24 in the region of the auditory cortex 26, the microwave field which is generated simulates the microwave field which would be generated if the acoustic sounds were perceived with normal hearing and the auditory cortex was functioning normally.

In FIG. 2A there is shown a second embodiment of the microwave radiation and generator portion of the hearing device. In this embodiment a broad band microwave source 50 generates microwave signals which are feed to filters 52 through 58 which select from the broad band radiation particular frequencies to be transmitted to the person. As in FIG. 2, the amplifiers 20 receive signals on lines 19 from the mode control matrix. The signals on lines 19 provide the gain control for amplifiers 20..

In FIG. 6 there is shown a modified microwave hearing generator 60 which includes a mode partition resistor divider network as depicted in FIG. 5. Each of the mode partition voltage divider networks in this embodiment are individually adjustable for all of the resistances in the resistance network. FIG. 5 depicts a voltage division system wherein adjustment of the voltage partition resistors is provided for.

In FIG. 6, the sound source 62 generates audible sounds which are received by the microphone of the microwave hearing generator 60. In accordance with the operation described with respect to FIGS. 1 and 2, microwave signals are generated at the antenna 10 in accordance with the redistribution provided by the mode control matrix as set forth in FIG. 5. . .

The sound source 62 also produces a signal on line 64 which is received by a head phone 66. The apparatus depicted in FIG. 6 is used to calibrate or fit a microwave hearing generator to a particular individual. Once the hearing generator is adjusted to the particular individual by adjustment of the variable resistors in the adjustable mode partition portion of the hearing generator, a second generator may be built using fixed value resistors in accordance with the adjusted values achieved in fitting the device to the particular subject. The sound produced by headphone 66 should be the same as a sound from the sound source 62 which is received by the microphone 10 in the microwave hearing generator 60. In this way, the subject can make comparisons between the perceived sound from the hearing generator 60, and the sound which is heard from headphone 66. Sound source 62 also produces a signal on 68 which is feed to cue light 69. Cue light 69 comes on whenever a sound is emitted from sound source 62 to the microwave generator 60. In this manner, if the subject hears nothing, he will still be informed that a sound has been omitted and hence that he is indeed perceiving no sound from the microwave hearing generator 60.

In FIG. 7 there is shown a modified microwave hearing generator which may be used to determine a subject's microwave mode frequencies. In this device, the acoustic filter bank and the mode control matrix have been removed and replaced by voltage level signal generated by potentiometers 70. Also included are a plurality of variable frequency oscillators 72 which feed microwave amplifiers 74 which are gain controlled from the signal generated by potentiometers 70 and pick off arm 76.

This modified microwave hearing generator is used to provide signals using one oscillator at a time. When an oscillator is turned on, the frequency is varied about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception by the subject is perceived. This perception however may consist of a buzzing or hissing sound rather than a tone because only one microwave frequency is being received. The first test of perception is to determine the subject's lowest modal frequency for audition (M=1). Once this modal frequency is obtained, the process is repeated for several higher modal frequencies and continued until no maximum acoustic perception occurs.

Another method of determination of a subject's modal frequencies is through anatomical estimation. This procedure is by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull. In this method, the shape is determined in prolate spheroidal coordinance.

Purely anatomical estimation of subject's modal frequencies is performed by first measuring the maximum lateral dimension (breadth) L FIG. 8, of the subject's head together with the maximum dimension D (anterior to posterior) in the medial plane of the subject's head. D is the distance along Z axis as shown in FIG. 10. The ratio L/D, called in anthropology the cephalic index, is monotonically related to the boundary value ξ_o defining the ellipsoidal surface approximating the interface between the brain and the skull in the prolate spheroi coordinate system. ξ_o defines the shape of this interfa ξ_o and D together give an estimate of a, the semi-focal distance of the defining ellipsoid. Using ξ_o and a, together with known values of the conductivity and dielectric constants of brain tissue, those wavelengths are found for which the radial component of the electric field satisfies the boundary condition that it is zero at ξ_o.

These wavelengths are the wavelengths associated with the standing waves or modes, the corresponding frequencies are found by dividing the phase velocity of microwaves in brain tissue by each of the wavelengths.

A subject's microwave modal frequencies may also be determined by observing the effect of external microwave radiation upon the EEG. The frequency of the M equal 1 mode may then be used as a base point to estimate all other modal frequencies.

A typical example of such an estimation is where the subject is laterally irradiated with a monochromatic microwave field simultaneous with EEG measurement and the microwave frequency altered until a significant change occurs in the EEG, the lowest such frequency causing a significant EEG change is found. This is identified as the frequency of the M=1 mode, the lowest mode of importance in auditory perception. The purely anatomical estimation procedure (FIGS. 8, 9, 10) is then performed and the ratio of each modal frequency to the M=1 modal frequency obtained. These ratios together with the experimentally-determined M=1 frequency are then used to estimate the frequencies of the mode numbers higher than 1. The prolate spheroidal coordinate system is shown in FIG. 9. Along the lateral plane containing the x and y coordinates of FIG. 9, the prolate spheroidal coordinate variable φ (angle) lies FIGS. 9 and 10. Plots of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number m are shown in FIG. 11. The equation is

$$E_{transverse}(m,\ \phi)=E_o \sin(m\ \phi)$$

The "elevation view" FIG. 12, of the brain from the left side, shows the primary auditory cortex 10. The isotone lines and the high frequency region are toward the top of 100 and the low frequency region toward the bottom of 100.

The formula I, set forth below is the formula for combining modes from an iso-tone line at φ=φj being excited to obtain the total modal field at some other angular location φ. For this formula, if we let J=1 (just one iso-tone single frequency acoustic stimulus line), then it can be shown that ALL modes (in general) must be used for any ONE tone.

FORMULA I
RMS TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC FIELD IN ANGULAR PLANE, $f(\theta)$

$$f(\theta)=\left[\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(\sin(m\theta)\cdot\sum_{j=1}^{J}e^{-(\theta-\theta_j)/\Delta\theta_m}\sin(m\theta_j)\right)^{2}\right]^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

ϕ=ANGLE (0° LATERAL)
ϕ_j=LOCATION OF j-TH SOURCE (TOTAL NUMBER J)
$\Delta\phi_m$=ATTENUATION LENGTH (IN ANGLE) OF m-TH MODE
m=PRIMARY MODE NUMBER (HIGHEST MODE M)

FIG. 13 shows the resulting total modal field versus angle φ for source location φ at 5.25°, 12.5°, etc. With reference to the set of curves at the left top of this figure. A spacing of approximately 7.25° in φ corresponds to a tonal difference of about 1 octave. This conclusion is based on the side-lobes of pattern coming from φ=5.25°, etc. The total filed (value on y-axis) falls considerably below the top curves for source locations well below 5.25° (toward the high acoustic stimulus end) and also as the source of frequency goes well above 30° (low frequency end). φ is plotted positive downward from 0 at lateral location as indicates in FIG. 11.

Resistor weightings are obtained from the |sin (m(φ−φj])|, Formula I. The scale between acoustic frequency and φ must be set or estimated from experiment. Approximately 5.25±1° corresponds to a tonal stimulus at about 2 kHz (the most sensitive region of the ear) since this source location gives the highest electric field amplitude.

The apparatus of FIG. 7 may also be used to determine values for a hearing device which are required for a particular subject. Once the modal frequencies have been estimated, the device of FIG. 7 which includes variable microwave oscillators may be used to determine values for the oscillators which match the subject, and to determine resistance values associated with the mode partition devices of the mode control matrix.

In FIG. 7 manual control of the amplifier gain is achieved by potentiometers 76. In this manner the amplifier gains are varied about the estimated settings for an acoustic tone stimulus in the region of two thousand Hertz (2 kHz) until maximum acoustic perception and a purest tone are achieved together. The term purest tone may also be described as the most pleasing acoustic perception by the subject. This process may be repeated at selected frequencies above and below 2 kHz. The selected frequencies correspond to regions of other acoustic filter center frequencies of the subject. When modal frequency (oscillator frequency) and gain set values (setting a potentiometer 76) are noted, it is then possible to calculate fixed oscillator frequencies and control resistor values for the adjusted hearing device for this particular subject.

In the event the subject has no prior acoustic experience, that is deaf from birth, estimated resistor values must be used. Also, a complex acoustic stimulation test including language articulation and pairs of harmonically related tones may be developed to maximize the match of the hearing device parameters for those of this particular subject.

Typical components for use in this invention include commercially available high fidelity microphones which have a range of 50 Hz to 15 kHz with plus or minus 3 dB variation.

The audio filters to be used with the acoustic filter bank 12 are constructed in a conventional manner, and have Q values of about 6. The filters may also be designed with 3 dB down points (½ the bandwidth away from the center frequency) occurring at adjacent center frequency locations.

The diodes 17 in the mode control matrix which provide isolation between the mode partition circuits are commercially available diodes in the audio range.

The microwave oscillators 1 through N and the microwave amplifiers 20 are constructed with available microwave transistors which can be configured either as oscillators or amplifiers. Examples of the transistors are GaAsFET field effect transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HFET series or silicone bipolar transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HXTR series.

All the cable between the oscillators, the microwave amplifiers, and the antenna should be constructed with either single or double shielded coaxial cable.

The antenna 24 for directing microwave signals to the audio cortex 26 should be approximately the size of the auditory cortex. A typical size would be one and one half CM high and one half to one CM wide. The antenna as shown is located over the left auditory cortex, but the right may also be used. Since the characteristic impedance of the brain tissue at these microwave frequencies is close to 50 ohms, efficient transmission by commercially available standard 50 ohm coax is possible.

The invention has been described in reference to the preferred embodiments. It is, however, to be understood that other advantages, features, and embodiments may be within the scope of this invention as defined in the appended claims.

What is claimed is:

1. A sound perception device for providing induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain comprising in combination:

means for generating microwave radiation which is representative of a sound to be perceived, said means for generating including means for generating a simultaneous plurality of microwave radiation frequencies and means for adjusting the amplitude of said microwave radiation frequencies in accordance with the sound to be perceived; and

antenna means located in the region of the auditory cortex of said mammalian brain for transmitting said microwave energy into the auditory cortex region of said brain.

2. A hearing device for perception of sounds comprising in combination:

means for generating a signal representative of sounds;

means for analyzing said signal representative of said sounds having an output;

means for generating a plurality of microwave signals having different frequencies having a input connected to said output of said means for analyzing said signals, having an output;

means for applying said plurality of microwave signals to the head of a subject, and

whereby the subject perceives sounds which are representative of said sounds.

3. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a signal is a microphone for detecting sound waves.

4. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for applying said plurality of microwave signals is an antenna.

5. The apparatus in accordance with claim 4 wherein said antenna is placed in the region of the auditory cortex of the subject.

6. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein the subject is a human being.

7. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for analyzing said signal comprises:

an acoustic filter bank for dividing said sounds into a plurality of component frequencies; and

a mode control matrix means for providing control signals which are weighted in accordance with said plurality of component frequencies, having an output connected to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signal inputs.

8. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said acoustic filter bank includes a plurality of audio frequency filters.

9. The apparatus in accordance with claim 8 wherein said audio frequency filters provide a plurality of output frequencies having amplitudes which are a function of said signal representative of sounds.

10. The apparatus in accordance with claim 9 wherein said amplitudes are the weighted in accordance with transform function of the signal representative of sounds.

11. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said mode control matrix device includes a voltage divider connected to each of said plurality of said audio frequency filters.

12. The apparatus in accordance with claim 11 wherein each of said voltage dividers has a plurality of outputs which are connected in circuit to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals.

13. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals comprises a plurality of microwave generators each having a different frequency and means for controlling the output amplitude of each of said generators.

14. The apparatus in accordance with claims 2 wherein said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals comprises a broad band microwave source and a plurality of filters.

15. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said generators each comprise a microwave signal source and a gain controlled microwave amplifier.

16. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said means for analyzing output is connected to said means for controlling microwave amplifier output amplitudes.

17. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein analyzing includes K audio frequency filters.

18. The apparatus in accordance with claim 17 wherein there are N microwave generators.

19. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 including a mode partitioning means which provides N outputs for each of said K audio frequency filters.

20. The apparatus in accordance with claim 19 wherein said N amplifiers each have K inputs from said mode partitioning means.

21. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N amplifiers have K inputs less the mode partitioning means outputs which are so small that they may be omitted.

22. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said mode partitioning output device outputs each include a diode connected to each microwave amplifier gain control to provide isolation between all outputs.

23. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said K audio frequency filters are chosen to correspond to the critical bandwidths of the human ear.

24. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N microwave generators are each adjustable in frequency output.

25. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each N microwave generators is determined by anatomical estimation.

26. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator is chosen by determination of the effect of external microwave generation on the EEG of the subject.

27. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each of said N microwave generators corresponds to the subject's microwave modal frequencies.

28. The apparatus in accordance with claim 27 wherein the subject's modal frequencies are determined by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull.

29. The apparatus in accordance with claim 28 wherein the subject's lowest modal frequency is determined by varying the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception is obtained by the subject.

* * * * *

TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY 1
TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY 2
TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY N
P1
P2
PN
19
MODE SUMMATION
16
17
MODE PARTITION
MODE CONTROL MATRIX 18
ACOUSTIC FILTER BANK
F1
F2
F3
FN
12
10

FIG 1

4,858,612

FIG. 2

MICROWAVE AMPLIFIER BANK 18
OSCILLATOR 1
OSCILLATOR 2
OSCILLATOR N
AMP
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
19
P1
P2
PN
MICROWAVE RADIATION GENERATOR

FIG 2a

50
BROADBAND MICROWAVE SOURCE
52
54
56
58
F1
F2
F3
FN
20
21
19
26
P1
P2
PN

FIG. 5

11
12
13
14
1N-1
1N
FROM F1

FIG. 4

11
12
13
14
15
1N-1
1N
30a
30b
30c
30d
30e
30f
30g
FROM F1

FIG. 3

11
12
13
14
15
1N-1
1N
30a
30b
30c
30d
30e
FROM F1

4858612

FIG 6

64
68
CUE LIGHT
69
60
ANTENNA 10
SOUND SOURCE
62
MICROWAVE HEARING GENERATOR WITH ADJUSTABLE MODE PARTITION
66 HEADPHONE
RF-SOUND SHIELDED ROOM

FIG 7

72
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR 1
74
V
76
70
72
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR 2
76
70
72
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR N
V
76
70

FIG. 8

FIG. 9

η=0
TO η=+1
TO η=-1
y
ξ=1
0
η = CONSTANT
ξ = CONSTANT
η=0
ξ, η, AND φ RELATED TO CARTESIAN COORDINATES x,y,z
y
z
0
x
-z
0
φ

y
z
ξ=0
0
ξ=-0
SECTION A-A

FIG. 10

TRANSFORMATION EQUATIONS

$x = a(\xi^2-1)^{1/2}(1-\eta^2)^{1/2}\cos\phi$ $\quad 1 \leq \xi \leq$

$y = a(\xi^2-1)^{1/2}(1-\eta^2)^{1/2}\sin\phi$ $\quad -1 \leq \eta \leq +1$

$z = a\xi\eta$ $\quad 0 \leq \phi \leq 2\pi$

ID 4858612

1. MODE NUMBER
2. MODE NUMBER
3. MODE NUMBER
16
23
23
16
0°
LEFT
16
23
23
16
180°
RIGHT
φ
1
2
3

FIG. 11
TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC MODES

FIG. 12
PRIMARY AUDITORY CORTEX

P
Z
HF
100
LF
P

5.25°
SOURCE LOCATIONS
12.5°
20°
27.5°
45°
85°
0.5°
0.25°
RMS AMPLITUDE, TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC FIELD (RELATIVE UNITS)
0
1
2
3
0°
10°
ANGLE
20°
30°
MODAL PATTERNS ON AI
25 c/s
50 c/s
100c/s
200c/s
400c/s
800c/s
1600c/s
RELATIVE AMPLITUDE
3
0
0
10
20
30
DISTANCE FROM STAPES, mm
BASILAR MEMBRANE DISPLACEMENT ON COCHLEA

FIG.13

APPENDIX E
PART I

COMPARISON OF SIMILAR AND DISSIMILAR ALIEN ABDUCTION & RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS BY CATEGORY
TABLE 1

ELEMENTS (Inanimate)	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Examining Table	Altar Table
White sheet	White Sheet/Black Rug
Machines: X-Ray/Headgear/Wires/Body Fluid Collecting Devices (sperm/blood)	Machines: ECT/Polygraph/Shockers/ Headgear/Wires/Cattle Prods
Instruments: Surgical/Needles/Implant Instrument	Instruments: Knives/Daggers/Pins/Needles
Symbols: New Space Writing/Symbols	Symbols:Old Writing/Symbols/ Letters Numbers/Religious(upside down)
Emblems: Circles/Triangles	Emblems: Circles/Triangles/Pentagram/Stars
Tracking Devices	Tracking Devices
Clothes Worn: Skintight/Capes/Hoods (grey, white, black)	Clothes Worn: Loose Fitting/Capes/Hoods (black, white, brown)
Bright Light: Initiating Event	Bright Light: To Torture/To Intimidate
Restraints: Clamps	Restraints: Clamps/Chains/Ropes/Belts
Electrical Energy: Experiments to Heal/ To Transfer Information	Electrical Energy: To Torture/To Intimidate/To Eradicate Information
Eyes: Scary/Calming	Eyes: Scary/Demonic

TABLE 2

Elements (animate)	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
"Being in Charge" Others Subservient	High Priest/Priestess in Charge Others Subservient
Aliens/Extraterrestrials/Humanoids	Satanists/Cultists/Humans
Reptilian Creatures (Transformations)	Beasts/Reptilian Creatures/Cartoon Characters (Transformations)
"Men in Black"	"Men in Black"
"Shadows in Mind"	"Shadows in Mind"

TABLE 3

Messages Given	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Told:	Told:
"You are Special"	"You are Special"
"We Will Return"	"We Will Return"
"Do Not Tell"	"Do Not Tell"
"Aliens Are in Charge	"Satan is More Powerful Than God"
"To Breed"	Forced to:
	"Breed" - (Women Breeders in the Cult - Babies for the Group to raise.

TABLE 4

Psychological Sequelae	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Amnestic for Experience: Memory Loss (enforced-use of light, instruments, etc.)	Amnestic for Experience: Memory Loss (enforced-brainwashing techniques, drugs)
Bonding: With Alien	Bonding: With Cult/Coerced
Drugged: Feel Euphoric/Anaesthetized	Drugged: LSD/Anectine/Curare/Atropine/Alcohol/ Belladonna/Heroin/Cocaine/Roots & Herbs
Pain: Medical Procedures/Experimentation "Fee Like I was Being Torn Apart"	Pain: Important for Compliance "Feel Like They Tore My Heart Out"
Felt Trapped: "Nowhere to Run"	Felt Trapped: "Nowhere to Hide"
Paranormal Experiences: Esp/Out-of-Body/Astral Travel	Paranormal Experiences: ESP/Out-of-Body/Astral Travel
Emotions Experienced: Terror/Fear/Anxiety/A "Calming"	Emotions Experienced: Terror/Fear/Anxiety
Paranoia: "They are Coming Back"	Paranoia: "They are Coming Back"
Headaches	Headaches
Sleep Difficulties	Sleep Difficulties (Disrupted Sleep Cycles)
Visual Disturbances	Visual Disturbances
Sexual Disturbances	Sexual Disturbances
Nightmares	Nightmares
Depression	Depression
Humiliation	Humiliation
Obsessive Thoughts	Obsessive Thoughts
Threats: Seen as Caring	Threats: Seen as Abusive
PAS/PTSD	PTSD/MPD/Dissociation
Not Reported	Personality Layering
Self-Mutilation (few)	Self-Mutilation (many)
Suicidal: After Disclosure (feel they are victims)	Suicidal: After Disclosure (feel they are victims)
Deep Painless Wounds	Deep Painless Wounds (dissociates to avoid pain)
Fear of Hypnosis	Fear of Hypnosis
Not Reported	God Phobic, Survivor Guilt

TABLE 5

Locations for Experience	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Inside a Circle: Spacecraft	Inside a Circle: Pentagram
Tunnels	Tunnels
Taken from a Car	Kidnapped: In Car/From Car
Taken from Bed	Kidnapped from Bed
Taken from Field/Forest	Taken to Field/Forest
Taken from Park	Kidnapped from park
Not Reported	Basements/Churches/Schools/Cemeteries

TABLE 6

Personal History	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Age at First Abduction: 5-6 (average reported)	Age at First Initiation: 6 (average reported)
History of Incest Reported by Few	History of Incest reported by Most
History of Physical Abuse Reported by Few	History of Physical Abuse Reported by Most
History of Alcoholism Reported by Few	History of Alcoholism/Drug Abuse/Bulimia/Anorexia/Sexual Addiction
Transgenerational	Transgenerational
Friends Involved Sometimes (witnesses & abductees)	Friends Involved Sometimes (to recruit)

TABLE 7

Timetable	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Random Abductions	Calendar for Rituals
Not Reported	Anniversary Dates (cause great amount of fear for survivor)
Abductions Occur Day or Night	Kidnapping of Survivor to Return to Coven Occur Day or Night
Long Range Study of Abductee	Long Range Exploitation of initiate
Abduction on Birthday Rare	Personal Birthday is Highest Satanic Holiday
Not Reported	Moon Cycles Followed

TABLE 8

Wounds & Scars Observed	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Physical Wounds: Scars/Bruises/Incisions/Burns/Radiation Burns	Physical Wounds: Scars/Bruises (in patterns)/Incisions/Burns/Whip Marks
Implants: Objects X-Rayed (in nose and other parts of body including head)	Implants: Few Cases/ (bones, objects in body including head)
Nosebleeds	Not Reported
Not Reported	Carved Symbols on Body
Not Reported	Missing Digits: L/Hand (little finger, ring finger at center knuckle) Toes/Fingers
Not Reported	Tattoos: Satanic/Coven Symbols
Not Reported	Vagina/Rectal Scars
Missing Uterus Observed by Alien Examination	Missing Uterus
Not Reported	Missing Nipples

TABLE 9

Violations Against Free-Will	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Not Reported	Marriage to Satan or Cult Leader
Not Reported	Ritual Rape (male & female)
Forced Impregnation	Forced Impregnation
Removes Fetus "Missing Fetus Syndrome"	Caesarean Section/Child Taken Before Term
Collection of Sperm Samples	Collection of Orgasmic Secretions (used in rituals)
Not Reported	Forced to Kill
Forced to Memorize Names	Forced to Forget Names
Isolated from Other Humans/Observers	Isolated from Other Humans/Observers
Not Reported	Forced to drink Blood (animal & human)
Not Reported	Forced to Select Who is Killed (extremely traumatic)
None Reported	Pornography/Snuff Films/Prostitution/Drug Trafficking
Not Reported	Programmed to Perform Antisocial Acts (hits)
Shown Films of Destruction	Shown Films of Destruction
Not Reported	"Black Hole" (suspended head first into a dark deep pit) "Black Box"
Not Reported	Rebirth Ritual: Cow or Human Cavity Opened - Child Inserted Left Until End of Ritual (born again to Satan or whatever deity they pray to)
Abduction	Forced Kidnapping: Babies/Adults/Christians (for sale, indoctrination, ritual sacrifices (not necessarily death)
Not Reported	Necrophilia (sex with cadaver)
Not Reported	Cannibalism
Cattle Mutilations	Animal & Other Sacrifices
Nude on table	Nude on Altar

TABLE 10

Philosophy & Beliefs	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Religious Themes	Religious Philosophy Opposite of God (Satan or other Deity is ruler)
Uses Information from Humans to Help Humanoid Development	Uses Power Over Humans to Control & Preserve Belief System
Belief in Ultimate War/Nuclear Disaster	Belief in Ultimate War 3x666=1998/Armageddon
Preparation for Survival of Race	Preparation for Survival of Cultic Beliefs
Belief that Abductee is Protected by Having Memories Blocked	Belief that RA Survivor Will Die if Memories Are Retrieved
Belief that Aliens are Good: Trying to Help Humans	Belief that Satanists are evil: Trying to Destroy Humans (Referenced to Bad People)
Future Important: Survival	Future Important: 3x666=1998
Babies are Important	Babies are Important
Aliens are Superior "Beings"	Satanists/Cultists/Deities are Intelligent to Evade Detection
Not Reported	Prostitution Necessary to Bring Money to Group

TABLE 11

Patterns	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Amnesia Usually Effective Until Abductees Adult Life (or childhood disclosure which has been rare)	Amnesia Usually Effective Until Survivors Adult Life (or childhood disclosure which has been rare up until 1980)
Retractions After disclosure	Retraction After Disclosure
Visit by "Men in Black"	Visits by "Men in Black"
Wheat Field Symbols	Not Reported
Systematic Way to Gain Compliance (Assurance/Calming)	Systematic Way to Gain Compliance (Torture/Fear) Group/Individual Controls
Aliens Give Little Information But Want Information Illness Cured by Aliens	Illnesses Cured by Witchcraft & Magic
References to: Force/Pressure/Presence/Power	References to: Force/Pressure/Presence/Power
Abductees Seem to Know Each Other	Survivors Seem to Know Each Other
Aliens Seem to Know Everything About Abductee & Abductee's Family (shows movies of family and abductees life)	Satanists/Perpetrator Seem to Know Everything About Survivor & Survivor's Family (shows movies of destruction and evil)
Abduction Accounts Seem Like Invisible Epidemic	Survivors Accounts Seem Like Invisible Epidemic
Difficult to Trace Evidence	Difficult to Trace Evidence
"Accommodation Syndrome": Secrecy Helplessness Entrapment Accommodation Delayed Disclosure Retraction	"Accommodation Syndrome:: Secrecy Helplessness Entrapment Accommodation Delayed disclosure Retraction

APPENDIX E
PART I

COMPARISON OF SIMILAR AND DISSIMILAR ALIEN ABDUCTION & RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS BY CATEGORY
TABLE 1

ELEMENTS (Inanimate)	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Examining Table	Altar Table
White sheet	White Sheet/Black Rug
Machines: X-Ray/Headgear/Wires/Body Fluid Collecting Devices (sperm/blood)	Machines: ECT/Polygraph/Shockers/ Headgear/Wires/Cattle Prods
Instruments: Surgical/Needles/Implant Instrument	Instruments: Knives/Daggers/Pins/Needles
Symbols: New Space Writing/Symbols	Symbols:Old Writing/Symbols/ Letters Numbers/Religious(upside down)
Emblems: Circles/Triangles	Emblems: Circles/Triangles/Pentagram/Stars
Tracking Devices	Tracking Devices
Clothes Worn: Skintight/Capes/Hoods (grey, white, black)	Clothes Worn: Loose Fitting/Capes/Hoods (black, white, brown)
Bright Light: Initiating Event	Bright Light: To Torture/To Intimidate
Restraints: Clamps	Restraints: Clamps/Chains/Ropes/Belts
Electrical Energy: Experiments to Heal/ To Transfer Information	Electrical Energy: To Torture/To Intimidate/To Eradicate Information
Eyes: Scary/Calming	Eyes: Scary/Demonic

TABLE 2

Elements (animate)	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
"Being in Charge" Others Subservient	High Priest/Priestess in Charge Others Subservient
Aliens/Extraterrestrials/Humanoids	Satanists/Cultists/Humans
Reptilian Creatures (Transformations)	Beasts/Reptilian Creatures/Cartoon Characters (Transformations)
"Men in Black"	"Men in Black"
"Shadows in Mind"	"Shadows in Mind"

TABLE 3

Messages Given	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Told:	Told:
"You are Special"	"You are Special"
"We Will Return"	"We Will Return"
"Do Not Tell"	"Do Not Tell"
"Aliens Are in Charge	"Satan is More Powerful Than God"
"To Breed"	Forced to:
	"Breed" - (Women Breeders in the Cult - Babies for the Group to raise.

TABLE 4

Psychological Sequelae	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Amnestic for Experience: Memory Loss (enforced-use of light, instruments, etc.)	Amnestic for Experience: Memory Loss (enforced-brainwashing techniques, drugs)
Bonding: With Alien	Bonding: With Cult/Coerced
Drugged: Feel Euphoric/Anaesthetized	Drugged: LSD/Anectine/Curare/Atropine/Alcohol/ Belladonna/Heroin/Cocaine/Roots & Herbs
Pain: Medical Procedures/Experimentation "Fee Like I was Being Torn Apart"	Pain: Important for Compliance "Feel Like They Tore My Heart Out"
Felt Trapped: "Nowhere to Run"	Felt Trapped: "Nowhere to Hide"
Paranormal Experiences: Esp/Out-of-Body/Astral Travel	Paranormal Experiences: ESP/Out-of-Body/Astral Travel
Emotions Experienced: Terror/Fear/Anxiety/A "Calming"	Emotions Experienced: Terror/Fear/Anxiety
Paranoia: "They are Coming Back"	Paranoia: "They are Coming Back"
Headaches	Headaches
Sleep Difficulties	Sleep Difficulties (Disrupted Sleep Cycles)
Visual Disturbances	Visual Disturbances
Sexual Disturbances	Sexual Disturbances
Nightmares	Nightmares
Depression	Depression
Humiliation	Humiliation
Obsessive Thoughts	Obsessive Thoughts
Threats: Seen as Caring	Threats: Seen as Abusive
PAS/PTSD	PTSD/MPD/Dissociation
Not Reported	Personality Layering
Self-Mutilation (few)	Self-Mutilation (many)
Suicidal: After Disclosure (feel they are victims)	Suicidal: After Disclosure (feel they are victims)
Deep Painless Wounds	Deep Painless Wounds (dissociates to avoid pain)
Fear of Hypnosis	Fear of Hypnosis
Not Reported	God Phobic, Survivor Guilt

TABLE 5

Locations for Experience	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Inside a Circle: Spacecraft	Inside a Circle: Pentagram
Tunnels	Tunnels
Taken from a Car	Kidnapped: In Car/From Car
Taken from Bed	Kidnapped from Bed
Taken from Field/Forest	Taken to Field/Forest
Taken from Park	Kidnapped from park
Not Reported	Basements/Churches/Schools/Cemeteries

TABLE 6

Personal History	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Age at First Abduction: 5-6 (average reported)	Age at First Initiation: 6 (average reported)
History of Incest Reported by Few	History of Incest reported by Most
History of Physical Abuse Reported by Few	History of Physical Abuse Reported by Most
History of Alcoholism Reported by Few	History of Alcoholism/Drug Abuse/Bulimia/Anorexia/Sexual Addiction
Transgenerational	Transgenerational
Friends Involved Sometimes (witnesses & abductees)	Friends Involved Sometimes (to recruit)

TABLE 7

Timetable	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Random Abductions	Calendar for Rituals
Not Reported	Anniversary Dates (cause great amount of fear for survivor)
Abductions Occur Day or Night	Kidnapping of Survivor to Return to Coven Occur Day or Night
Long Range Study of Abductee	Long Range Exploitation of initiate
Abduction on Birthday Rare	Personal Birthday is Highest Satanic Holiday
Not Reported	Moon Cycles Followed

TABLE 8

Wounds & Scars Observed	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Physical Wounds: Scars/Bruises/Incisions/Burns/Radiation Burns	Physical Wounds: Scars/Bruises (in patterns)/Incisions/Burns/Whip Marks
Implants: Objects X-Rayed (in nose and other parts of body including head)	Implants: Few Cases/ (bones, objects in body including head)
Nosebleeds	Not Reported
Not Reported	Carved Symbols on Body
Not Reported	Missing Digits: L/Hand (little finger, ring finger at center knuckle) Toes/Fingers
Not Reported	Tattoos: Satanic/Coven Symbols
Not Reported	Vagina/Rectal Scars
Missing Uterus Observed by Alien Examination	Missing Uterus
Not Reported	Missing Nipples

TABLE 9

Violations Against Free-Will	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Not Reported	Marriage to Satan or Cult Leader
Not Reported	Ritual Rape (male & female)
Forced Impregnation	Forced Impregnation
Removes Fetus "Missing Fetus Syndrome"	Caesarean Section/Child Taken Before Term
Collection of Sperm Samples	Collection of Orgasmic Secretions (used in rituals)
Not Reported	Forced to Kill
Forced to Memorize Names	Forced to Forget Names
Isolated from Other Humans/Observers	Isolated from Other Humans/Observers
Not Reported	Forced to drink Blood (animal & human)
Not Reported	Forced to Select Who is Killed (extremely traumatic)
None Reported	Pornography/Snuff Films/Prostitution/Drug Trafficking
Not Reported	Programmed to Perform Antisocial Acts (hits)
Shown Films of Destruction	Shown Films of Destruction
Not Reported	"Black Hole" (suspended head first into a dark deep pit) "Black Box"
Not Reported	Rebirth Ritual: Cow or Human Cavity Opened - Child Inserted Left Until End of Ritual (born again to Satan or whatever deity they pray to)
Abduction	Forced Kidnapping: Babies/Adults/Christians (for sale, indoctrination, ritual sacrifices (not necessarily death)
Not Reported	Necrophilia (sex with cadaver)
Not Reported	Cannibalism
Cattle Mutilations	Animal & Other Sacrifices
Nude on table	Nude on Altar

TABLE 10

Philosophy & Beliefs	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Religious Themes	Religious Philosophy Opposite of God (Satan or other Deity is ruler)
Uses Information from Humans to Help Humanoid Development	Uses Power Over Humans to Control & Preserve Belief System
Belief in Ultimate War/Nuclear Disaster	Belief in Ultimate War 3x666=1998/Armageddon
Preparation for Survival of Race	Preparation for Survival of Cultic Beliefs
Belief that Abductee is Protected by Having Memories Blocked	Belief that RA Survivor Will Die if Memories Are Retrieved
Belief that Aliens are Good: Trying to Help Humans	Belief that Satanists are evil: Trying to Destroy Humans (Referenced to Bad People)
Future Important: Survival	Future Important: 3x666=1998
Babies are Important	Babies are Important
Aliens are Superior "Beings"	Satanists/Cultists/Deities are Intelligent to Evade Detection
Not Reported	Prostitution Necessary to Bring Money to Group

TABLE 11

Patterns	
ALIEN ABDUCTION ACCOUNTS	**RA SURVIVOR ACCOUNTS**
Amnesia Usually Effective Until Abductees Adult Life (or childhood disclosure which has been rare)	Amnesia Usually Effective Until Survivors Adult Life (or childhood disclosure which has been rare up until 1980)
Retractions After disclosure	Retraction After Disclosure
Visit by "Men in Black"	Visits by "Men in Black"
Wheat Field Symbols	Not Reported
Systematic Way to Gain Compliance (Assurance/Calming)	Systematic Way to Gain Compliance (Torture/Fear) Group/Individual Controls
Aliens Give Little Information But Want Information Illness Cured by Aliens	Illnesses Cured by Witchcraft & Magic
References to: Force/Pressure/Presence/Power	References to: Force/Pressure/Presence/Power
Abductees Seem to Know Each Other	Survivors Seem to Know Each Other
Aliens Seem to Know Everything About Abductee & Abductee's Family (shows movies of family and abductees life)	Satanists/Perpetrator Seem to Know Everything About Survivor & Survivor's Family (shows movies of destruction and evil)
Abduction Accounts Seem Like Invisible Epidemic	Survivors Accounts Seem Like Invisible Epidemic
Difficult to Trace Evidence	Difficult to Trace Evidence
"Accommodation Syndrome": Secrecy Helplessness Entrapment Accommodation Delayed Disclosure Retraction	"Accommodation Syndrome:: Secrecy Helplessness Entrapment Accommodation Delayed disclosure Retraction

APPENDIX E
PART II

HISTORY OF PSYCHIATRY & WORLD EVENTS INCLUDING MAFIA DEVELOPMENT IN THE UNITED STATES	HISTORY OF MPD, TRAUMA, DISSOCIATION; NEW CLINICAL SYNDROMES; GROUPS OPPOSING RECOVEDRED MEMORIES	MIND CONTROL RESEARCH; MEDICAL ABUSES & EMERGENCE OF ALLEGED UFO SIGHTINGS, ALIEN ABDUCTION & RITUAL ABUSE PHONEMONA
	1785- Mesmer, F.A. *Report of Dr. Benjamin Franklin and other commissions charged by the King of France with the examination of animal magnetism, as now practiced at Paris.*	1739-40 John Wesley's Journal - first reports of emotional excitement leading to temporary collapse induced by a particular sort of preaching found when an individual had to make a choice between conflicting beliefs.
	1817- Mitchell, S.L. *A double consciousness, or a duality of person in the same person.*	
- Wilhelm Wundt, Germany, first Psychology	1836- Mary Reynolds case was first theoretical case showing relationship between MPD and dissociation (dissociation then described as sleep-walking, somnambulism, nightmares, automatic writing, etc.). Hypothesized in *The Philosophy of Sleep* by R. Macneish. Found a primary state and a secondary state.	
	1880- Shutcliff & Jones (1962) reported MPD as a distinct state of consciousness. Anatomical speculation of Azam (1887) psychological proposals of Janet. (Associationists view - mind/body dualism)	
1883- Manic-depressive insanity & dementia praecox defined in *Textbook of Psychiatry* by Emil Kraepel	1886- Barkworth, T. *Duplex Personality: An essay on the analogy between hypnotic phenomena and certain experiences of the normal consciousness; Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research.*	

1885- Hysteria treated by: (1) surgical removal of ovary/Paris (2) surgical removal of clitoris/London (3) cauterization of clitoris/Heidelberg		
1889 - (Jan 24) First learned of Mafia's existence in New Orleans Black Hand/Italians-Frankie Yale White Hand/Irish-Lovett Jewish Gangs	1889- Pierre Janet focuses on dissociation of traumatic memories/Charcot focuses on generations attention on psychological effects of overwhelming experiences.	
	1890- Alternating personality or changes in personality viewed by William James as direct result of changes in memory. James was attracted by Janet's findings and his writings ultimately bolstered the associationist viewpoint.	
	1890- Alfred Binet *On Double Consciousness* (treatise on dissociation).	
	1890- Richet first to describe a "hidden observer".	
1890- Masturbation treated by means of circumcism-Jonathan Hutchinson, President Royal College of Surgeons.	1891- Hodgson, R. *A case of double consciousness; Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research.*	
	1895- Freud & Bruer *Studies in Hysteria* (all women described had dissociative disorders and most were sexually abused). Freud felt the women were suffering as adults from child sexual abuse. He repudiated the seduction theory a few years after publication because it would be awkward for Freud to state publicly that his patients had been sexually abused as children, when many of the abusive fathers were in his social circle. Later he wrote "return to the repressed".	
1892- Anton Pavlovich Chekhov: "Twelve thousand people are swindled a year; the whole (mental) hospital business is founded, just as it was twenty years ago, on theft, scandal, slander, nepotism, crude charlatanism, and the hospital is immoral institution, exceedingly harmful to the health of the inmates."	1895- Mason, R.O. *Hypnotism & Double Personality* Journal of the American Medical Association.	1896 - Wave of UFO Phenomenon
	1896- Alfred Binet *Alterations in Personality* noted that experimental alters can be produced in high hypnotizable subjects noting that these transient alter personalities were incomplete analogues of full MPD-he viewed the doubling of consciousness as a common clinical mechanism underlying a variety of psychiatric disorders including somatization, conversion & dissociative disorders.	1897 - Wave of UFO Phenomenon
	1896- Mason, R.O. *Duplex personality: its relation to* hypnotism and luciity. Journal of the American Medical Association.	

1905- Masturbation in children treated by cautery to the spine & genitals- Bernard Sachs, prominent NY psychiatrist-*A Treatise on Nervous Diseases of Children*

1911- Eugene Blueler coins term "schizophrenia".

1914- World War I begins

1918- Ernest Jones, pioneer British psychoanalyst, holds "true neurasthenia...will be found to depend on excessive onanism or involuntary seminal emissions."

1919- Underground of Mafia terrorizes controls bling, sports, businesses, prostitution, ography etc.

20th Century- Psychological & Biological become divergent paths in medicine/Janet focuses on integrative approach/Freud dominates on analytic approach.

1901- Mayer, E.E. *A case of localized amnesia.* Journal of the American Medical Association.

1904- Wilson, A. *A case of multiple personality disorder. Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research*

1905- William James *Principles of Psychology* discussed plurality of selves, MPD.

1905- Sidis & Goodhart *Multiple Personality* with dedication to William Sides.

1905- Morton Prince *TheDissociation of a Personality*

1906- Conflicting drives observed by Morton Prince to be a potent etiological factor in the development of the disorder. He noted that Miss Beauchamp had oppositional and frequently malevolent behavior exhibited by one "self" to the other.

1906- Wilson A. *A case of disjointed personality after influenza* Medical Press.

1906- Gordon A. *A double ego.* American Journal of Medical Science.

1907- McDougals W. *The case of Sally Beauchamp.*

1908- Sidis, B. Psychopathological Researches: Studies in Mental Dissociation

1908- Goodhart, S.P. *Multiple personality and the subconscious* American Journal of Clinical Medicine

1910- MPD research begins to decline.

1910- Edward Titchner came to Cornell University (1892)-Started Structuralism (studied nature of mental experiences)- ignored dissociation - his theory flopped.

1912- Hart, B. *A case of double personality.* Journal of Mental Science.

1913-1917- Hyslop, J.H. Comments on Doris Fisher case of MPD.

1914- McWalter, J.C. *A case of double personality.* Medical Times.

1916- Stone, C.W. *Dual Personality* Ohio State Medical Journal

1919- Ladd, G.T. *A case of multiple personality* Yale Review

1904- Pavlov "Nobel Prize" for research in physiology of digestion later he would find conditioning methods and "experimental neurosis". These methods will be used by politicians, police and psychiatry to understand & control behavior. Through drugs in psychotherapy changes of behavior patterns and through historical indoctrination in religious conversion, brain-washing & the like. It is unlikely that Pavlov like most scientists in early discovery would be used as an instrument of Soviet policy, and instrument to indoctrinate, torture and help change the course of free will of mankind.

The most important information found in his studies that we need to examine today is that if an individual is traumatized all conditioned behavior patterns implanted can be abolished and other patterns of behavior can take their place. In the most civilized worlds, given natural traumas or war, civil unrest, rape, family violence, a person is most vulnerable to changes in patterns of behavior. These studies were done prior to the advent of television, subliminal seduction, microwave studies, etc. Simply stated, being flooded by traumas leaves a person vulnerable. If they enter therapy, join a religious cult, join a group, new religions, or begin a new wave of belief, they would be acting normally. If the change was programmed to deliberately change their behavior, then they have been indoctrinated by a means of mind control. In the 1990's this is rampant and out of control due to technology, research and the advent of telecommunications.

1919- John B. Watson-first Behaviorist-programmed his son "Little Albert" to be (phobic) fearful of white rats and furry animals-Little Albert committed suicide in his adult life.

1920- Women's Suffrage-19th Amendment to Constitution enacted.

1920- Prohibition begins

1928- (Aug 27) Pact of Paris - Outlaws War

1929- (Oct 29) Crash of NYSE beginning of Great Depression

1963- Peace will be determined as a precursor to economic disaster in The Iron Mountain Report .

1920- McDougall gave criticism to Morton Prince and speculated that his involvement with Miss Beauchamp which included long and intimate dealings and frequent use of hypnosis may have molded the course of the development of her disorder. (This claim will emerge again 70 years later in 1991 through the FMS society.)

1920- Conspicuous absence of any theoretical explanations and routine reporting of cases.

1920- William Brown suggested that emotional abreaction was often a far more efficient means of curing a war neurotic than simple suggestion under hypnosis. "Suggestion removes the symptoms, but abreaction removes the cause of the symptoms by producing fully adequate re-association." 66

1926- The "monad" hypothesis introduced by McDougall (1926) added significant support to the argument for the inherent multiplicity of the self. The role of conflict in weakening the individual's integrity allowed the "subordinate selves" to gain control.

1920- Behaviorists Domination for next 50 years - Goal is prediction & control of behavi both animals and human.

Their assumptions are:

1. All behavior is caused or determined.

2. The environment molds behavior.

3. Explanations of behavior based on internal causes and mental states are generally useless.

Believed that a stimulus that signals some other event can develop the ability to evoke strong conditioned responses.

1926- James Cameron, M.D. one of the most notorious Psychiatrists of all time began his career at John Hopkins Hospital in Baltimore, Maryland. He used illicit methods of behavior modification in research sponsored by project MKULTRA sponsored by the CIA - Dr. Cameron held the following titles over the period of time that he conducted experiments on humans:
President of The American Psychiatric Assn.
President of Canadian Psychiatric Assn.
President of World Association of Psychiatrists
Founder of Canadian Mental Health Association
Chairman of Canadian Scientific Planning.

31- Marcetti (Godfather in America) killed.

1931- Murder Incorporated (La Cosa Nostra) killers available to underworld.

1933- Adolph Hitler becomes Chancellor of Germany.

1933- Insulin Shock Treatment introduced into psychiatry- U. Cerletti & L. Bini of Rome (large doses of insulin to lower amount of sugar in his blood, thus producing a state of mental confusion and excitement). When used on schizophrenics kept patient in coma for as long as half an hour. Sugar is then administered and he quickly wakes up.

1933- Charles (Lucky) Luciano (New Godfather) made more money than 10 largest corporations in America.

1933- Prohibition ends in America.

1933- Prefrontal Lobotomy introduced into psychiatry- Egas Moniz of Lisbon, Portugal.

1933- Louis Thomas McFadden, Pennsylvania Congressman in a speech to the House of Representatives: "Mr. Speaker, there is no real persecution of Jews in Germany...but there has been a pretended persecution of them..."

1933- Electric Shock Treatment introduced into chiatry- U. Cerletti & L. Bini of Rome, Italy.

1935- Hitler's conversion of German masses to the Nazi faith was helped by meetings where rhythmic chanting, torchlight processions and arousals to states of hysteria suggestibility even before he rose to speak, so the Flagellants, who anticipated his anti-Semitic fury. In Mainz alone, twelve thousand Jews were killed or committed suicide; the arrival of a procession of Flagellants would often be the signal for a massacre.

1936- Social Security goes into effect - people were promised the SS# would be used for nothing other than SS Identification.

1936 - Bugsy Siegel goes to California - extortion rackets controlled screen actors guild/Luciano convicted on prostitution charges.

1939- World War II began,
First Gas Chambers built in mental hospitals/Germany- National Socialist "euthanasia program" begins on Hitler's orders.

1935- *Psychogenic Loss of Personal Identity* commented on by Ables and Schilder based on study of 63 patients with amnesia at Bellevue Hospital. He concluded that amnesia was a self-punishment or suicidal wish and a flight from a disappointing love object. This view contributed to a popularized idea in the late 1930's and early 1940's that MPD symbolized an attempted escape from an unresolved conflict.

1935- Pierre Janet founded cognitive psychology.

1930 - For the next 40 years as many as 70,000 prefrontal lobotomies were performed in the United States & Britain. Walter Freeman, M.D. performed 3,500 alone. (Information predates Egas Moniz introduction in Lisbon, but record found in Government records.) Prefrontal lobotomies were performed during this period on hyperactive boys and attempt to keep police files on them was introduced.

1931- Arthur Koestler's *Invisible Writings* "On all three occasions I had benefited from the well-known phenomenon of a split consciousness, a dreamlike, dazed self-estrangement, which separated the conscious self from the acting self- the former becoming a detached observer, the later an automation, while the air hums in one's ears as in the hollow of a seashell..." 104s His accounts of two conversions into Communism were related to quasi-mystical experiences after stress include a severe alcoholic hangover, a broken-down car, heavy financial loss, a disagreeable sexual entanglement; civil war, capture, threats of sudden death by shooting, and the revival of a childhood panic.

1934- Two years before Pavlov's death he stated "...clinicians, neurologists and psychiatrists, in their respective domains, will inevitably have to reckon with the following fundamental patho-physiological fact: the complete isolation of functionally pathological (at the aetiological moment) points of the cortex, the pathological inertness of the excitatory process, and the ultra-paradoxical phase. (45) What he is saying is that it is necessary to find out what and when the trauma occurred.

1935- Tranquilizer Chair-individual strapped down and spun until they passed out was being used in medical experiments.

1940- Black jazz & singers controlled by Mafia

1940- Mafia leaders are not able to be convicted for murder and extortion, etc., but were convicted on income tax evasion. (History of difficulty of gathering evidence when powerful underground corruption involved. Pattern continues today in the 90's.

1941- George H. Stevenson, President of American Psychiatric Association, declares that "This challenge (to prevent the occurrence of wars) comes to us because of the close relationship between the etiological factors as seen in the individual psychosis and the internal psychosis-war."

1941- (Dec 7) Pearl Harbor attacked
1941- (Dec 8) US declares war on Japan
1941- (Dec 11) US declares war on Germany & Italy
1941- (Dec 11) Germany & Italy declare war on US

1941- The gassing of mental patients in Germany stops and the systematic gassing of Jews in the East starts.

1941- Mafia stole ration stamps -$1.0 million in one deal alone (this behavior continues to this day with underground activities of selling ration stamps.

1942- (Jun 5) US declares war on Bulgaria, Hungry & Romania

1942- Mafia sabotages Normandy-FBI investigated 760 leads - no sign of sabotage - nobody talked...Luciano convinced US Naval Intelligence needs Mafia in war as a result of 121 Merchant ships lost. Navy got a wall of silence when tried to get information. Mob big in sabotage, espionage, terrorism. The Military Operations Underworld & Mafia married. Mussolini cracked down on Mafia so America Mafia disliked Mussolini. Commander Hoffenden in charge of Operation Underworld. May 12, 1942 Luciano transferred to a better prison because of his help with the war then the people were willing to talk on the docks after a long silence. People had code names.

1942- Growing Spy Mania in America

1943- Initiated black market sold American Military Supplies

1943- (Oct 13) Italy declares war on Germany Mussolini regime collapses called Operation Husky.

NEW PATRIOTIC ATMOSPHERE
OF THE COUNTRY

1940- Freud found that affectless memories, memories without any release of emotion, were almost useless; meaning that unless a doctor could get his patients to relive the emotions originally associated with a repressed experience that had caused a neurosis, the mere fact of his remembering the experience would not constitute a cure. Sadler defined "abreaction" as a "process of reviving the memory of a repressed unpleasant experience and expressing in speech and action the emotions related to it, thereby relieving the personality of its influence.

1941- Kardiner attempted to integrate the psychoanalytic tenet that most psychopathology is the result of a childhood intrapsychic conflict between unintegrated understanding of the emotional, cognitive and biological effects of human traumatization.

1940- Drugs used to make patient relive episode of war and then he would have subsequent collapse. Individuals were given "front-line sedation" using same general rule applied to human subjects who had temporarily broken down under battle and bombing stress.

1941- Pavlov's "Experimental Neurosis" published in English after his death. Techniques of human indoctrination, religious conversion, brainwashing were pursued through use of drugs in psychotherapy based on his experiments.

1941- Pavlov's Conditioned Reflexes in Psychiatry helped to understand behavior patterns observed by human beings breaking down under abnormal stress.

1944- First experiment in "falsely implanted memory". Found that falsely implanted memory might create a larger emotional discharge than the real, and induce the physiological effects needed for psychological relief. A technique deliberately stimulating anger or fear under drugs until the patient collapses in temporary emotional exhaustion was finally perfected with the help of Pavlov's findings. Used imaginary experiences to help abreact the emotions of fear and anger "suggested" under drugs.

1944- Alcohol was found by business, journalism and *intelligence service*, as a means to force indiscreet admissions from people who find it difficult to keep a secret. "Catharsis" was found ´ be an abreaction by drinking alcohol and wild rhythmic dancing as a cleansing (the ancient rights of Dionysus).

13- Philadelphia Experiment - Camouflage velopment - Massive Flux Fields The Eldridge vanished - sailors developed wrenching sickness - transdimensional phenomenon - human beings being reduced to laboratory animals.

Log Book of Eldridge Missing - (Used Unified Field Theory) Traveling Magnetic Canopy - Fog Eldridge Hides under this and vanishes.

1943- (July 26) Mussolini regime collapses - Operation Husky. Mafia helped Operation-Local men of respect helped Dons.

1943- (Oct 13) Italy declares war on Germany

1944-1956 Halcyon period (refers to period of peace and tranquility)

1945- Hiroshima (Atomic Bomb)
End of World War II

1945- (Aug 9)-A Bomb dropped on Nagasaki, Japan

1945- Albert Deutsch undertakes "...a journalistic survey of state mental hospitals...and rivaled the horrors of the Nazi concentration camps."

1946- Brock Chisholm, Director of General Medical Services in the Canadian Army during World War II, and General Secretary of the United National World Health Organization: "With the er human sciences, psychiatry must now decide at is to be the immediate future of the human race. No one else can. And this is the prime responsibility of psychiatry."

1946- Day after Christmas Mafia opened Flamingo Hotel in Las Vegas believing that the desert was a place to control gambling and walk n the right side of the law. $6.0 m $5.0 m over budget - closed down after one month. Reopened in 1947.

1947- (June 20) Bugsy Siegel (Mafia Leader in California) assassinated in Beverly Hills, CA

1947- National Securities Act
(CIA) Note that there is a 20 year delay due to secrecy of this act in what can be discussed.

1947- Taft Hartley Labor Bill Passes - over Truman's veto

1947- Al Capone (Scarface) died of Syphilis.

1948- The Nuremberg Code was implemented as a result of judgment in U.S. v. Karl Brandt, Trials of War Criminals Before the Nurenberg Military Tribunals. Experimentation on humans should have ended.

1947- Conflict-oriented theories and associationist view reported to be interrelated by Gardner Murphy. He asserted that associations are not functionally bound by memory alone, but also and more importantly, by tension systems. This led him to believe that conflict of values is the clue to the unity or disunity of the person. Predisposing factors towards dissociation were reported by Murphy to be a conflict between severely morbid superego, exaggerating the normally existing superego-id conflicts. The super-ego was believed by him to effect a regression back to a period of early childhood, prior to the establishment of an identity.

1945- Great Britain and USA interested in neurophysiological research cultivated by Russians since Revolution - to perfect brain-washing & thought control." Found that towards the end of a long period of physical illness, or after a period of severe debilitation (forced fasting), people of "strong character" were known to make dramatic changes in beliefs and convictions. If they may remain true to the new orientation for the rest of their lives. Case histories of people "converted" in times of famine, war, prison, or destitution by their own self-will are frequent. Pavlov's experiments showed that man can be conditioned to hate what he previously loved and love what he previously hated. Military men in "black boxes" once they found the vulnerable point of the servicemen. e.g. fear of snakes then placed in with snake for 64 hours. Learned they would rather die than talk to the enemy under those conditions. *Children and adults emerging in early 80's began to define torture in these boxes and cages.* Found the mechanics of religious and political conversion in human beings suggesting that for conversion to be effective, the subject may first have to have his emotions worked upon until he reaches an abnormal condition of anger, fear or exaltation. Found physiological explanation in terms of local cerebral inhibition caused by fear, stress or shock.

1945- Experiments found that massive excitement aroused under ether, ending a state of transmarginal collapse, could disrupt the whole vicious self-sustaining pattern of behavior and induce a rapid return to more normal mental health.

1946- UFO phenomenon started to be seen in Sweden

1947- Great Britain intensive research on drugs for psychotherapy-Nitrous oxide, methedrine, etc.

1947- (July 4) Roswell NM UFO crash

1947- UFO phenomenon begins to be Formulated Letter from Lt. Gen. N.F. Twining, USAAF, Air Martial Command, Wright Field, Dayton Ohio to Brig. General George Schulgen, Washington "AMC opinion on Flying Discs" "objects reported are real and not imaginary."

1949-Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI) undertook analysis of foreign work on certain unconventional warfare techniques, including behavioral drugs, with an initial objective of developing a capability to resist or offset the effect of such drugs.

1950- Korean War (Referred to at the time as a Police Action).

1950- Between 1950 and 1974 when the United States Federal Government (CIA) sponsored research on medical torture of victims through Behavior Modification, United States Government consulted with, hired and worked closely with top Psychiatrists in America who were contributors to methods of extracting and methods of eradicating memories from individuals brains. These were done on subjects who were no aware that they were being medically tortured or manipulated for the purpose of mind control. A great number of Universities participated in these studies. Some have made public apologies.

One of these organizations was the *Society for the Study of Human Ecology*. Others were panels and groups with the military. Hospitals and Universities in the United States that participated in this research can be found in the books referenced under Mind Control. Survivors that began to emerge into the mental health system in late 1970 described in detail the abuses used for medical research. These victims are part of a programmed group of slaves being used in the underground for pornography, drug trafficking, prostitution, and assassinations.

1951- (Oct 9) WWII formally concluded by US & Germany

1952- Puerto Rico lst Independent Commonwealth

1952- 1st H Bomb Eniwetok, Atoll

1952- Tranquilizing drugs introduced into psychiatric practice; new chemical method for controlling patients in mental hospitals. Belief that the use of these pharmacologic agents lends support to the belief that psychiatric disorders are medical diseases, curable by specific drugs.

1950- Cameron begins medical torture treatment Canada .

1950- A medical directive issued in Russia for reorientation of all Soviet medicine along Pavlovian lines-impressive results obtained by applying Pavlov's research, to political ends.

1950- Morse Allen Agent believed electrosleep machine used to put subjects to sleep without shock convulsions. The machine was being used in a hospital in Richmond, Virginia (Miami News *Brain Washing Tactics.)*

1950- CIA begins attack on mind control (German mind-control research), project to induce amnesia - "intensive polygraph", "sodium amytal", LSD, "picrotoxin", etc. project BLUEBIRD.

1951- (August) Project BLUEBIRD renamed Project ARTICHOKE transferred to OSI continued until 1956.

1951- (April 4) Royal Victoria Hospital-under direction of Dr. Cameron begins experimentation on Candy. Describes headgear, sleep room, drugs, etc. These descriptions will later appear in a population of patients known as RA Survivors and Abductees.

1952- CIA Letter on National Security Implications of UFOs (7 letters to and from CIA regarding UFOs)

1952- Office of Scientific Intelligence has private doctor develop "neurosurgical techniques". BLUEBIRD was rechristened ARTICHOKE, TSS Technical Services Staff took it. ARTICHOKE "..the greater the amnesia produced, the more effective the results." Could "create a fantasy" using narcotherapy or hypnosis. For roughly an hour, the subject had no idea he was not speaking with hiswife but the CIA operatives.."

These experiences will be reported by some RA Survivors and Abductees later.

3- Korean War ended.

1954- U.S. Secretary of Defense announces Special Committee to study how prisoners of war could be trained to resist brainwashing.

1955- Egas Moniz awarded Nobel Prize for Physiology for treatment of Schizophrenia by prefrontal lobotomy (ice picks were used).

1955- J. West, *An Evaluation of Sub-coma Insulin Therapy*, American Journal of Psychiatry

1955- (August) U.S. Secretary of Defense receives report from Special Committee studying brainwashing.

1956- H Bomb Bikini, Island.

1957- Modern Psychiatry is given a card of admission to aid in classifying those who should be held criminally responsible and those who should be treated as psychologically or emotionally disordered. The Durham Charter is a bill of rights for psychiatry.

1957- U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia declares that "If ...(the defendant) has a mental illness hospitalization would serve the dual purpose of giving him the treatment required for his illness and keeping him confined until it would be safe to release him."

'- *Society for Investigation of Human Ecology* ived Cameron proposal. Cameron sent by APA to Nurenberg to evaluate Hess.

1953- Conference July 15th offered clues to kinds of operations under ARTICHOKE. Interrogation techniques, memory enhancement, and establishing defensive means for preventing interrogation of agency personnel.

1953- April 3 ARTICHOKE evolved to become project MKULTRA "...an umbrella project (CIA documents) for funding sensitive projects. Cryptonym MKDELTA covered policy and procedure for use of biochemical in clandestine operations..."

Experimentation on radiation, electroshock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, anthropology, harassment substances. Safe Houses and prominent hospitals under Bureau of Drug Abuse control. Through Bureau of Narcotic and Dangerous Drugs (BNDD) federal institutions such as prisons, drugs could be administered to unsuspecting individuals.

1953- Dr. Frank Olson & 7 men given LSD in glasses of Contreau. Five days later Olson dove through window of hotel and committed suicide. Seen by Psychiatrist Harold A. Abramson. Dr. Sidney Gottlieb Chief Medical Officer of CIA drug project. (Allen Dulles, CIA Director)

1954- Found that ordinary/normal persons have greater powers of adaptation and can be more easily indoctrinated than the abnormal into cults. For this reason some Cults in particular would weed out people with psychiatric history. *Interesting finding in that persons who are traumatized may be less influenced in a therapeutic setting, or political conversion.*

1954- Air Force Regulation No. 200-2 "UFO Reporting Protocols"

1954- Wilhelm Reich, M.D. records "...a full scale interplanetary battle...a battle which would have appeared incredible as well as incomprehensible to anyone who knew nothing about Ea problems or who adhered to the illusion that neither Ea nor Cosmic Energy existed."

1955- Time Magazine records that something of deep significance since 1951 carefully calculated applications of terror and Socialists revolution could be completed on a national scale within about three more years, Quote from Mao.

1955- Project Bluebook

1957- Wilhelm Reich dies in prison. He was placed into prison the year before after the FDA tried on many occasions to shut down his operation of collecting "Orgone Energy". Dr. Cameron who was himself doing medical torture treatment initiated the investigation on Reich. Dr. Cameron was then the President of the American Psychiatric Association. Reich's experiments were of interest to the Government and may have threatened our national security.		1957- William Seargent *Battles of the Mind* - Techniques of Religious Conversion which concluded the truths have nothing to do with the rites of pagan religions or devil worshipers. Successful groups use fasting, chastening of the flesh by scourging & physical discomfort, regulation of breathing, disclosure of awesome mysteries, drumming, dancing, singing, inducement of panic fear, weird or glorious lighting, incense, intoxicant drug, to modify normal brain function for religious purposes. (1839 Wesley - his great success was due to his finding that habits of thought and behavior were most easily implanted or eradicated by a tremendous assault on the emotions. Found that humans addressed to religious emotions rather than intelligence is extremely effective technique of conversion - also used in modern political warfare.
1958- (Jan 31) The first U.S. space satellite, "Explorer I" is launched by Army, Cape Canaveral, Fla. 1958- Satellite "Vanguard I" is launched by U.S. Navy 1958- "Explorer III" is launched by U.S. Army 1958- "Nautilus" & "Skate" 1959- U.S.Navy launches "Vanguard" weather satellite 1958- Edward Hunter testifies before the House Committee on Un-American Activities on communist weapon of brainwashing. See Chapter 3 1959- Jupiter Missile (with Able and Baker monkeys) launched.		1957- William Seargeant reports the voodoo cult in Haiti shows with what ease suggestibility can be increased by subjecting the brain to severe physiological stress...alteration the loudness and rhythms of drums. Reports the best way to avoid possession, conversion and all similar conditions is to avoid getting emotionally involved. He makes reference to Gustaf Bolinder, the *Devil-man's Jungle* describing how West African boys are taken away from their parents to an encampment in the woods, where all their clothes are removed and they are subjected to conditions of severe physical hardship. The procedure is fear-provoking. They are given a medicine which they are told will kill them sooner or later if they ever reveal the secrets of the society or the details of the ceremonies they are about to undergo. Next comes the ritual bath. At dusk they are told to say goodbye to life as they lived it before- then the most frightening mask approaches them- bearded like an old man - horns and feathers a cloak, to the boys it looks like a real demon, they are not allowed to talk, they are laid side by side on the ground, each seized by the demon's assistant, and unconscious- with fright are lifted up between its jaws. They are rescued immediately and given extremely painful ritual tattooing. They feel convinced that the demon has made an end of them, and Poro has raised them to a new life. *Similar accounts will emerge in late 1970's under alleged Satanism indoctrination.* 1959- Orne Experiments on fooling the hypnotist could not be easily determined by experts.

1- John F. Kennedy begins office as US ident

1961- U.S. Peace Corps begins to serve underdeveloped countries

1961- Iron Mountain Project

1961- Constitutional Rights of the Mentally Ill

1961- "Bay of Pigs" - CIA/Mafia connections.

1962- President Kennedy announces USSR has military bases in Cuba.

1962- Supreme Court declares narcotic addiction a disease.

1962- U.S. Supreme Court rules recitation of prayers in public schools is unconstitutional.

1962- U.S. establishes Military Assistance Command in South Vietnam

1963 - Iron Mountain Project starts (Harry S. man Center for Advanced Peace) Hudson up, Rand Corporation & others. Noteworthy is heir interest that movies can promulgate theories - ET then a series of Nightmare movies started around 1978 - also "...the draft could be defended as a control device over unsettling elements of society."

1963- President John F. Kennedy requests a new type of facility to return mental health care to the mainstream of American Medicine. Community Mental Health begins.

1963- President John F. Kennedy announces USSR has military bases in Cuba.

1963- (Aug 28) Mass Civil Rights Rally in Washington.

1963- (Nov. 22) President John F. Kennedy Assassinated

1964- (July 2) President Johnson signs Civil Rights Bill

1963-Shutcliff and Jones restated that MPD is a state of a person trying to escape from the anxieties produced by a harsh superego as an extension of normal behavior. They felt that during the altered state of consciousness the person "acts out" his forbidden id urges. This altered state of consciousness they believed had delusional characteristics. It is interesting to note that they compared this primitive wish-fulfilling quality to that occurring in the normal dream state which in fact in the PTSD and MPD much of the dream state is re-enactment or message from within as to the traumas.

60's THE BEGINNING OF CULT PHENOMENON SPREADING TO NEARLY 2,500 IN 1990. BLAME COUNTER CULTURE REVOLUTION.
Ten different varieties can be identified, by 1990 - most religious or mystical. "Some cults appear to be relatively benign, others harmful, some deadly." J. West, M.D. 1990.

1960- Francis Gary Powers shot down over Soviet Union-William Jennings Bryan, Psychiatrist said he had been "Powerized". Power's book *Operation Overflight* was withheld from publication by the CIA until 1970.

1960- Reports that John F. Kennedy went down to level of rat pack - illicit sex thrilled him, seen in Vegas (American Justice Files)

1961- Transmitters called "endoradiosondes" can be swallowed or implanted internally in man - part of new behavioral modification techniques. Measured physiological variables as gastro-intestinal pressure, bp, temp, bioelectrical potentials.

1961- Electrical stimulation of the brain-implantation of electrodes in the subcortical regions of the brain called "electrophysiology" - part of new behavioral modification techniques. Found that both animals and men will self stimulate at a tremendous rate in order to received stimulation "rewards" regardless of drives such as hunger & thirst. Put a serious dent in the "drive-reduction" theory of operant conditioning.

1961- Robert J. Lifton, Psychiatrist publishes *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism*

1962- (Sept. 28) Kennedy appoints John McCone to head up CIA

1962- (Nov.) John A. McCone finds MKULTRA Project

1963- Cameron paid last check from Society for Investigation of Human Ecology

1963- Mind Control Program terminated (CIA Inspector General's report)

1965- Communist China explodes 2nd A-bomb.

1965- Pope Paul visits US.

1965- U.S. Rocket Ranger 8 crashes on Moon followed by Ranger 9 relaying photographs of lunar surface back to earth.

1965- First commercial satellite launched from Cape Kennedy.

1966- IRON MOUNTAIN PROJECT GIVEN TO PRESIDENT ON DESIRABILITY OF PEACE - RECOMMENDATIONS & CONSIDERATIONS:

1. Economic-a)social welfare program directed towards maximum improvement of general conditions of human life b) giant open-end space research program aimed at unreachable targets c) a permanent ritualized ultra-elaborate disarmament inspection system, & variants of such a system.

2. Political a) Omnipresent, virtually omnipotent international police force b) an established and recognized extraterrestrial menace c) Massive global environmental pollution d) fictitious alternate enemies.

3. Sociological: Control function a) Programs generally derived from the Peace Corps model b) A modern sophisticated form of slavery *Motivational Function a) Intensified environmental pollution b) New religions or other mythologies c) socially oriented blood games d) combination forms.*

4. Ecological. A comprehensive program of applied eugenics.

5. Cultural. No replacement institution offered. Scientific. The secondary requirements of the space research, social welfare, and/or eugenics program.

1966- (Jan 17) H-Bomb lost over Spain in U.S. Air Collision - recovered off Polamares.

1966- Freedom of Information Act - requiring records of U.S. Government agencies be made available to the public.

1966- Lyndon Johnson "...the alcoholic suffers from a disease."

1966- (Aug.) Iron Mountain Project on the possibility and desirability of peace finished.

1966- (Oct. 6) LSD declared illegal.

1965- Orne & Evans demonstrated by hypnotizing college students that the could go to a box in a corner of a room and pick up a poisonous snake - some subjects got so close they had to be restrained at the last moment. Orne and Evans demonstrated that they could tell subjects to pretend to be hypnotized along with hypnotized and then pick up a snake and put into fuming nitric acid. All pretenders did this along with the hypnotized students. The explanation was that they trusted the experimenter: "If he tells me to do something, it can't really be dangerous."

This research may seem benign on the surface but it surfaced as a primary source of victimization of children who almost always trust their abuser and peers.

1966- Invention of Wireless Shocker to treat compulsions, addictions, phobias and learning difficulties uses excuse that cattle prod does more damage. Advertised to shock a child 500 feet away in a playground.

1966- Portable transmitters called Behavior Transmitter-Reinforcer (BT-R) permits tracking of wearer's location.

1966- UFO Abduction phenomenon begins to increase.

1966- Proposal for Scientific Study of UFO- University of Colorado/USAF

1967- Siuh Tsung-hwa, Communist China's foremost neuropsychiatrist: "...Neurosis and psychoses do not exist here, not even paranoia." 1967- Suicide is seen as manifestation of emotional illness.	1967- J. West *Dissociative Reaction; Comprehensive Textbook of Psychiatry*	
1967- American Psychiatric Association declares "Restraints" may be imposed from within by pharmacologic means or by locking the door of a ward." 1967- George Stevenson, former President of the American Psychiatric Association: asserts that..."war behavior results basically from emotional disturbance." 1967- Suicide is seen by Psychiatry as manifestation of emotional illness. 1968- (April 4) Nobel laureate Dr. Martin Luther King assassinated by James Earl Ray aka Eric Starvo Galt. Evidence: FBI attempts to discredit King. 1968- (June 5) Senator Robert Kennedy assassinated by Sirhan B. Sirhan. 1969- 1977 Kohlberg began to look at method of evaluating levels of Moral Reasoning 1969- Willliam Jennings Brian, M.D.,Psychiatrist for Sirhan Sirhan, California State Medical Examiners found Dr. Brian guilty of "unprofessional conduct in four cases involving sexual molesting of female patients." He was ed on 5 years probation. 1970- Presidential commission on pornography proposed that sexually explicit material, (pornography) was not only harmless but perhaps probably had therapeutic relief value for society. (Public bombarded with information on Vietnam, student protests, Paris Peace Talks, Hijacking, Inflation and "Woodstock". Opened door for legitimacy of pornography and Criminal trafficking of Pornography.		1967- Soviet Efforts to Contact Extraterrestrial Life-USAF Historical Archives 1968- (July 29) Symposium on Unidentified Flying Objects - US House of Rep, Congressional hearings before Committee on Science and Astronautics 90th Congress, 2nd session. Panel of 12 scientists. 1968- *UFOs: What to Do?* RAND Document, George Kocher, recommendations for further study. 1968- Ionizing Radiation -Professor Charles Sussking - University of California stated before Congress "Altho ionizing radiation seems to loom largest as a haze, it would not surprise me in the least if non-ionizing radiation were ultimately to prove a bigger and more vexing problem." Extremely low frequencies are called ELFs. Interesting note here: (Elf also means victory and Elf means war- they are derived from old English names.) 1969- Final Report of Scientific Study of UFO - University of Colorado 1969- Project Bluebook- USAF 16 year investigation of UFO's finished. 1969- J.M. Delgado's Professor at Yale University (expert on neuro-behavior research-200 publications) Volume 41 in a series of World Perspectives - Board of Editors Sr Kenneth Clark, Konrad Lorenz and I.I. Rabi. "Physical Control of the Mind" & the subtitle "Toward a Psychocivilized Society"

1970- Chinese Triads- (Chinese Mafia) in the U.S.

1971- Attica prison outbreak.

1971- (Nov 12) Nixon announces he will withdraw 45,000 more U.S. troops from Vietnam by Jan. 1972.

1972- Angela Davis accused of murder, kidnapping & conspiracy is acquitted by all white jury in San Jose.

1972- Death Penalty ruled Unconstitutional by US Supreme Court.

1972- William Kelley, Special Agent assigned by the FBI to investigate the Mafia's interstate transportation of pornography. Kelley states: "Even though obscenity in the U.S. was illegal in practically every state in the U.S., organized crime put millions of dollars into the distribution of obscenity and pornography across the country. Organized crime put millions of dollars into the original creation & production of obscenity distribution throughout the United States. Best example was "Deep Throat" made in Miami, Florida - cost $25,000 made in excess of $50.0 million profit. The tidelwave of pornography brought images of violence to women & children. The victims of these movies began to emerge in the mental health field along with children reporting ritual abuse in the early 1980's. Reports of movies depicting gang rape, explicit oral sex, urination & defecation, nudity, bestiality with women and children. Parents exploited their children by forcing them to participate in underground pornography and sexual exploitation. The President of Focus and the Family reports the movies depicted gang rape, explicit oral sex, urination & defication, nudity, beastiality with women and children. Parents exploited their children by forcing them to participate in underground pornography and sexual exploitations.

1970- Piaget (follower of Janet) Sensorimotor/preoperational/operational stage of child development begins.

1970- Sensory Deprivation experiments begin. Students paid $20 a day to live in tiny solitary cubicles. "Many experienced vivid hallucinations- one student in particular insisted a tiny spaceship had got into the chamber and was buzzing around shooting pellets at him." They were fed propaganda messages by the experimenter - whi had a marked effect on the student's attitudes- an effect that lasted for at least a year after they left the chambers." No follow up study. Propaganda was presented poorly and illogical but still had an effect on them.

1970- Psychosurgery performed on "hyperactive" children (#115) in several countries, 39 of which were under the age of 11. Reports that a number of children 6-9 were give psychosurgery not in the 115 above.

1971- Edward Hunter, *Brainwashing in Red China*

1971- Human Guinea Pig lawsuits reached such proportions that Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights began Investigation. Headed up by Senator Sam Ervin.

1971- Intercept UFO. Renato Vesco, Italian military intelligence officer presents a provocative theory that UFOs since WWII originated from top secret Nazi experiments expropriated by the allies after the defeat of Germany. He cites many well known UFO cases as examples of the technology that has since been defined and used secretly. An important documentation and references that may portend far reaching implications if true.

1972- Defense Intelligence Agency located 500 studies by Soviets devoted to the biological effects of "super-high frequency electromagnetic oscillations" (SHF).

1973- "Stockholm Syndrome" - Hostages develop affection for their captures.

3- Watergate begins-Nixon takes responsibility bugging April 30th.

1973- (May 17) Senator Sam Ervin begins televised proceedings of Watergate affair.

1973- Nixon states White House already bugged by Kennedy & Johnson.

1974- Patricia Hearst kidnapped by terrorist Symbionese Liberation Army.

1974- Assassin kills Mrs. Alberta King., mother of late Dr. King, during a church service in Atlanta.

1974- Privacy Act requires federal agencies to provide individuals with any information in their files relating to them and to amend incorrect records.

1974- Squeeky Fromme (Manson family member) attempts to assassinate President Gerald Ford.

1977- First execution in 10 years Utah.

1977- Hijacking start -

1977- William Jennings Brian dies prematurely of heart attack after his name was raised with Candy Jones.

1979- Three Mile Island - nuclear accident, Pennsylvania -movie "Silkwood"

1974- "A New Clinical Syndrome" presented June 1976, Tampa-St. Petersburg-Clearwater Psychiatric Society (the cult indoctrinee) later to show up in DSM criteria.

1974- 1985- Ralph Allison, M.D. Psychiatrist initiated papers on Multiple Personality Disorder ending several decades of silence..

1972- Russel Sage Foundation - Experimentation with Human Beings, Katz lists nature of offenses and the resulting judgments pp 292-306. p 509 Fed Govt report.

1972- Puerto Rico - Thousands sight space ships in the deepest part of Atlantic Ocean- John Carpenter reports it was real.

1973- Prison Thought Reform Team (brainwashing) - Deliberate changing of human behavior and attitudes by a group of men who have relatively complete control over the environment in which the captive population lives. Created social disorganization and the creation of mutual mistrust.

1973- Brain Research Center UCLA - J. West proposed to Governor Reagon the establishment of a Center for the Study and Prevention of Violence. (community stopped the program)
- Chemotherapy-use of drug Anectine causes cessation of respiration for approx. 2 minutes, sensations of suffocation and drowning and the subject experiences feelings of deep horror and terror as though he were on the brink of death
- Confinement/sensory deprivation
- Forced to suffer maximum irritation

1974- Sam J. Ervin, Jr., Chairman, Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights headed up a committee to investigate behavior modification stating "Recently..technology has begun to develop new methods of behavior control capable of altering not just an individual's actions but his very personality and manner of thinking as well. Because it affects the ability of the individual to think for himself, the behavioral technology being developed in the United States today touches upon the most basic sources of individuality, and the very core of personal freedom."

1975- U.S. Navy Psychologist/US Navy Intelligence admitted to taking convicted murderers from military prisons and conditioning them as political assassins.

1976- Defense Intelligence Agency Adams, R.L. & Williams, R.A. (U.S. Army) *Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves & Microwaves) Eurasian Communist Countries*

1978- People's Temple sect commits mass suicide at Jonestown, Guyana" 911died.

1978- Lin, J.C., *Microwave Auditory Effects & Applications* (how audible voices are broadcast directly into the brain.

1978- W. Bowart publishes *Operation Mind Control-*

1979- John Marks publishes *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate-The CIA and Mind Control* (Marks reports "One veteran recalls a colleague joking, 'If you could find the natural radio frequency of a person's sphincter, you could make him run out of the room real fast.' ").

1980- Child Abuse Reporting Laws (US) influenced by book *Sybil*

1980- DSM-III Includes a new Diagnostic category of Atypical Dissociative Disorder which includes individuals who have been subjected to periods of prolonged and intense coercive persuasion (brainwashing, thought reform and indoctrination while the captive of terrorists or cultists).

1980- Reagan/Bush gain control of senate for first time in 26 years.

1981- Hinckley (programmed assassin?) attempts assassination of Regan 3/31/81-Orne denies his multiplicity in television interview. Hinkley died of leukemia while incarcerated.

1981- Mehnet Ali Agcan shoots Pope John Paul II in St. Peter's Square.

1980- Piaget Dies and leaves a legacy as the most influential theorist on intellectual development in children - demonstrating the experiences influence a person's way of thinking and is dependent on the person's age and previous experience. If a child is brought up from an early age to believe that there is no integrity or trust as a result of violations against them from birth, they would be candidates for social control from the most evil sources if his research is true (need to look at motor responses to sensory stimuli).

1981- *Extremist Religious Cults and Today's Youth*, presented at the International Conference on the Effects on Physical and Mental Health of New Totalitarian Religions, Bonn, West Germany

Hundreds of publications on dissociative disorders begin to emerge from early 1980's and continue on through the 90's. .

1979- Orne showed that hypnotized subjects can see a "double reality" while pretenders cannot. Interesting was the finding that pretenders could not identify a person entering a room but would identify him as someone else while the hypnotized could identify the person. What is interesting abou this experiment is that the hypnotized students could see the person sitting in a chair and see him. also entering the room. Are children pretending to be hypnotized while they are being abused and in this way have difficulty identifying their abuser?

1979- While Orne was the originator of the research on whether college students could pretend to be faking hypnosis and with a cultivated heavy skepticism, he was brought in on the famous Hillside Strangler Case and outwitted 5 other Psychiatrists convincing them that Bianchi was insane or faking. To this date there is still evidence to show that Bianci was suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder that has not been contested. Orne has been an essential figure in arguing against MPD and is Board member of FMS. He has demonstrated well on how to create personalities under Hypnosis. He has a consultant to the MKULTRA project of the CIA.

1980- August 15th *Wiltshire Times* carried a report of first crop circles near Westbury, Wiltshire.

1981- American Institute of Aeronautics & Astronautics (Aspen Institute for Humanistic Studies *Global Implications of Space Activities*

1981- Judgment CAUSv.NSA to release UFO doc.

1984- "Less than Lethal" weapons developed prior to 1984 - for use with hostages. A variation on this weapon purchased by the Marine Corps. for confusing and disorienting the enemy..called a "microwave pulse radar" - rapidly heats the brain.

1984- Tyler, Paul E., Capt. Medical Command, United States Navy. Paper presented at workshop conducted by Air University Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research and Education "The electromagnetic Spectrum in Low-Intensity Conflict" the conceptual basis from which microwave beam weaponry began.

1980-Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, Top Secret clearance in the Defense Intelligence Agency's Psychological Warfare Division (Psyops). Lt. Col. a professed Neo-Nazi and founder of Temple of Set. Charges of child sexual abuse at Presidio Day Care in San Francisco.

1 - AIDS begins to surface.

1982- President Ronald Reagan signed executive order increasing the amount of security-classified material to be released under the 1966 Freedom of Information Act.

1986- (Jan 28) Space Shuttle "Challenger" explodes with teacher aboard.

1986- (April 26) Churnoble incident, Ukraine.

1986- (Sept 11) Stock prices fall biggest drop since 1929

1986- Iran Contra affair - North/Poindexter

1987- Rudolph Hess commits suicide in prison.

1987- (October 19) biggest stock market collapse since 1901.

1987- Reagan/Gorbachev treaty to eliminate nuclear forces in Europe

1987- U.S. Supreme Court ruled criminal defendants may testify about details they recalled under hypnosis.

1987- US Backlash begins patterns to discredit those reporting child abuse.

7- Nash, Lynn, Stanley & Carlson showed that osis does not screen out sensory information altogether. Eventually the information gets to the nervous system and persists long enough to exert some influence on behavior even if the hypnotized person said they deny they heard or saw anything.

1987- Pentagon & Cache - Tim Weiner's investigation into Black Programs of the Pentagon and their implications for our economy and discussion of exotic techniques.

1988- (Feb. 11) 3,280 detainees from re-education camps released in Vietnam.

1988- Raids carried out in Pentagon.

1988- Code of Federal Regulations Title 14, Sec. 1211 - "seizure and detention of anyone who comes into contact with any form of extraterrestrial artifact or thing, or other form of life" and without benefit of hearing on a probable cause.

1988- Office of Technology Assessment of the U.S. Congress published a special report titled, *Criminal Justice; New Technologies and the Constitution.* Addresses the delicate balance between national interest and individual rights.

1985- Becker, Robert D. & Selden, Bary p 317 et seq. *The Body Electric: Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life* explains how intelligence uses audible voices in their operations.

1986- Tyler, P.E. paper *Artificial Electromagnetic Fields*- presented at workshop conducted by the Air University Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research & Education (CADRE) on March 1984. A proposal for funding of terminal experiments on slave labor (which had already begun in February 1976) in paper by Harlan E. Girard presented at the Annual Meeting of the Canadian Association for Security and Intelligence Studies University of Prince Edward Island May 31-June 2, 1992

1986- (April 17) Lifton & growing galaxy of doctors assembled to give evidence that Montreal survivors had been medically tortured. Civil Action No. 80-3163 the CIA was being sued.

1987- *The UFO That Can't be Explained.* UFO sighting by JAL Flight 1628 over Alaska Nov. 17, 1986

1989- Rash of lawsuits begin against Mental Health figures bringing Mental Health Field to its knees.	1984- International Society for the Study of Dissociation/MPD organized. 1984- Society for Study of Traumatic Studies 1984- First Dissociative Disorders Unit-Rush-Presbyterian Hospital-Chicago Bennett Braun, M.D./Roberta G. Sachs, Ph.D. 1988- "A Clinical Syndrome": Patients Reporting Ritual Abuse in Childhood by Satanic Cults (Young, Sachs & Braun)	
1990- Federal Government establishes programs for victims of Political Torture Victims - Defines them as victims not mental patients. American family defined family violence and children treated within mental health system. 1990- American Psychiatric Association Condemns USSR for psychiatric abuses + check on dates etc. 1991- Middle East Crisis - Massive oil well fires (300+) UN Invades 1993- "New Clinical Syndrome" US Military show signs of illness related to Persian Gulf War 1994- US delay in ratification of UN CONVENTION ON THE RIGHTS OF THE CHILD. The Convention provides the legal underpinnings to the goals of the World Summit for Children, held in 1990. It emphasizes the central role of the family in the development of children and guarantees in law minimum rights for children such as equal treatment, regardless of gender, or race or cultural background; expression of opinions and freedom of thought; freedom from violence, hazardous employment, exploitation, abduction for sale; and free and compulsory primary education. It recognizes the special vulnerability of children as individuals with needs that evolve with age and maturity. 1994- President of APA gives statement to NY Times after DSM-IV is published. Indicates studies are are being done with better controls. 1994- Mental Health treatment ignored in master plan for Medical Treatment.	1990- 20+ specialized units throughout the United States and Canada for the treatment of Dissociative Disorders including those alleging to be Ritualistically Abused. 1992- Jacobs, David M., *Secret Life - Firsthand Accounts of UFO Abductions* - claims a new discipline. 1992- "False Memory Syndrome" based on Loftus, Elizabeth research on repressed memories. Research not done on traumatized individuals, done under controlled laboratory conditions. 1994- Studies begin to bring out one mind, one, brain, one soul (Moyer).	1990- EMF Weapon Systems reported to be so powerful that they can scramble and fry the brain. Effects reported to be generalized symptoms as: dizziness, nausea, vertigo, disorientation, confusion, nervousness, irritability, lethargy, sweating, skin crawling, strange sounds (even strange sights), obsessive and compulsive behavior, stinging and pin prick sensations, aches. Long term effects - cancer, birth defects, cardiovascular disease, destruction of the immune system, nervous disorders, etc. 1990- UFOs Over Belgium - From *Wall Street Journal* article on widespread sightings over Belgium. 1990- Reports of over 1,000 crop circles over the world. This phenomenon continues to confuse scientists. 1991- Gordon Thomas book "Enslaved" a chilling report of modern-day abduction and abuse in he global trafficking of men, women & children, perpetrators of all kinds of sex crimes world wide are well organized and are skillful and knowledgeable in law enough to circumvent detection in most cases. If caught, however, they have enough support from the underground to get the allegations dismissed, whether or not they are allegations of sexual abuse, pornography, and/or slavery. By the start of 1991 according to the Anti-Slavery Society, there were at least two hundred twenty million slaves in the world. It is within the borders of this nation that they sell most of the by-products of enslavement: pornographic videos and obscene publications and "photo sets" of young children coerced or inveigled into sexual obscenities with adults. 1992- Abduction Study Conference at MIT-Proceedings still not released as of December 1994. 1993- Satellite Interception of pornography/microwave listening/an age of privacy? 1993- WACO Vernon Wayne Howell aka David Koresh leader of CIA sponsored cult and followers were killed. Waco had CIA's Leadership Management Institute. We learned that mothers cannot be expected to put their children's safety first if their belief system contradicts their instincts.

1994-Republicans win back control of the Senate and House of Representatives.	Massive efforts to publish information on dissociative disorders - MPD changed in 1994 to Dissociative Identity Disorder.	1994- FBI monitors online for Pornography. 1994-(May) Cyber-Psycho's A.O.D. publishes article *Rattling the Cages Part 2* by Arkoff Kapacitor. Article shows how to generate ultrasonics - frequencies audible to young women and persons with exceptional hearing that will produce feelings of panic and fear, other ranges that can cause fear, nausea and headaches and other frequencies that tend to cause headaches, muscle tension and conscious mental effects. Tells how to build a pocket size device no larger than a pack of cigarettes. Discusses that women and children are good targets. Also brags that it is possible to build a pocket-sized device that will produce instant pain in the ears of anyone it's pointed at, so long as they aren't deaf. Suggests taking the item to work in a briefcase to see how people will change their behavior immediately. He claims his information is from Robert E. Iannini's book, *"Build Your Own Laser, Phaser, Ion Ray Gun,* and other working space-age projects"-(1983), Tab Books. This sort of information should be included in Stalking Laws to insure that harassment through non-lethal methods is not used by dabblers in this sort of entertainment.

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
A Repealing Thought (Chapter)	41	1-20
A Satanic UFO Reich? (Chapter)	36	1-16
A School for Assassins (Chapter)	19	1-10
Acetylcholine, role in EEOM and EDOM	37	19
Acetylcholine, role in memory blocking	28	3
Acoustic affectation of RNA covering of neuron paths	11	7
Acoustic beam weapons, high power low frequency	31	8
Acoustic psycho-correction messages with infrasound	31	13-14
Adey, W. Ross, work in low-level brain stimulation of	27	7
Age regression, definition of	30	6
Agent provocateurs, creation of	33	22
Air Force 1982 Review of Biotechnology	29	3
Al Gore, Vice President, as friend of John Alexander	31	12
Alan Cranston, Senator	12	7
Alertness, determination of, from brainwave analysis	27	10
Alexander, Col. John B, and Project Jedi, Psyops	30	7
Alexander, John B., and PSITECH	31	1
Alexander, John B., background of	31	9
Alexander, John B., results of asking questions about	31	18
Alien abduction claims, other viewpoints on	36	6-7
Alien abduction program destroyer credibility	40	22
Alien and Satanic programs on military bases	38	17
Alien paradigm as Iron Mountain war substitute	38	23
Alien thesis, mind control aspect, further thoughts on	36	13-14
Alien training using the Monarch program	14	16-17
Allen Dulles as member of Warren Commission	21	7
Allen Dulles, approval of MKULTRA by, 1953	7	6
Alpha and Beta programming, formula comparison	11	8
Alpha programming of base control personality	11	6
Alpha through Omega programming, additional data	40	11
Alpha-wave frequency of the human brain	28	4
Aluminum foil shielding of UHF signals	16	7
American propaganda about American POW's, 1953	3	8
American Security Council (ASC) military think tank	31	12
Amnesia experiments, early US Army	4	3
Amnesia to embedded commands, technique of inducing	30	5-6
Amnesia, CIA need for in operations work	7	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Amnesia, definition of	30	6
Amnesia, interrogations v. hypnosis	7	12
Amnesia, partial, through the use of drug/hypnosis	7	5
Amnesia, relationship of split-brain programming to	11	13
Amnesia, why military returned to civilian life with	25	4
Anderson, Jack, 1972 breaking of Embassy story	28	7
Anectine, as drug used in CIA work at Vacaville	7	8
Anesthesia, definition as related to dissociation	30	6
Antichrist, training a force to prepare for the	11	13
Aquarius group as the Nazi faction in US government	37	1
Aquarius group operations, COM-12 briefing on	37	2
Aquino, Lt.Col Michael, Monarch participation by	9	6
Aquino, Michael, relationship with Reagan	9	13
Aquino, Michael, Satanic Church of	10	11-19
Army microwave testing programs 1986, aspects of	29	3
Army War College psychic experiments	31	2-3
Assassination and Hypnosis: Political Influence, report	19	8
Association of National Security Alumni, the	38	17
Audio reversal linguistic techniques, Project Monarch	9	2
Audio-visual desensitization processes, Naval	19	3-4
Auditory effects, microwave stimulation and	29	3
Auschwitz taboo as prevention of overt mind control	10	11
Authorization to perform tests on inmates, 1956, CIA	7	6
Aversion Therapy, description of	18	4,6
Aviary, the, discussion of the	31	14-15
Avoidance pattern geometry and neural networks	36	2
Barnaby, Dr. Frank, on mass EM empairment	28	5
Barron, Frank, and Timothy Leary	5	4
Beecher, Dr., Harvard psychocontrol drug study	7	13
Behavior alternation by high powered pulsed MW	29	3
Behavior as shaped by its consequences	18	5
Behavior modification and Department of Labor	7	9
Behavior modification and the LEAA	7	9
Behavior modification projects, government, 1970's	7	9
Behavioral alternatives for criminal treatment	18	6-7
Berkeley Graduate Theological Union, the	11	11
Beta programming of reproduction and sex habits	11	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Bethesa Naval Hospital, drug projects at, authority	7	12
Bethesda Psychealth Institute, deviant behavior	11	11
Betty Ford as mother of Michel Aquino	10	19
Beyond Freedom and Dignity, Skinners work called	18	6
Biderman, Albert K, analysis of Korean Propaganda	3	8
Biochemical production of psychological control	7	12
Biochemicals, use of , Project MKDELTA	7	6
Biological effects of microwaves, US Embassy	29	5
Biological radio communication, Helms statement on	28	3
Black budget CIA funding through drug sales	9	9
Blauer, Harold, death of	6	3
Bluebird, Project, description of	7	4
Body, human, relationship with Earths EM field of	29	9
Bonacci, Paul, disclosures of	14	11
Books and tales used in programming, partial list of	11	13
Boston Psychiatric Hospital, CIA drug research at	7	4
Brain entrainment with ELF fields, binaural data on	26	14
Brain neural pathways, triggering in MPD's	9	1
Brain Research Institute at University of California	27	5
Brain scrambling weaponry	34	11-15
Brain wave alteration by microwave irradiation	28	5
Brain, influencing separate section directly	29	23
Brain, making sounds and words appear in the	29	9
Brainwashing as a Communist weapon	3	3
Brainwashing in Korea	3	6
Brainwashing in Red China, Edward Hunters book	3	3
Brainwashing, Robert J. Lifton comments on	3	3
Brainwaves, detection of, theory behind	27	15-17
British use of electronic weapons on Irish prisoners	35	15
British use of mind control in Northern Ireland	27	18
Brussell, Mae	32	5
Bryan, William Jennings, COM-12 reference to	37	11-13
Bulbocapnine, use as a schizophrenic agent, CIA 1956	7	6
Bureau of Social Science Research	3	8
Bush and Reagan use of EMC to cover leaks	37	6
Bush, George, relationship to Franklin case	14	2-3

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Byrd, Senator Robert, Project Monarch connection	9	3
Byrd, Senator, justification for world mass control	9	10
BZ, Edgewood Arsenal development of	5	15
California Medical Facility at Vacaville, CIA work at	7	7
California Medical Facility at Vacaville, projects at	18	7
California, massive CIA operations in	32	18
Callaway, Dr. Enoch, ONR brain research and	27	8
Cameron, Dr. Paul, murder-for-pay study, 1976	25	3
Candy Jones, mind control experience of	8	1-13
Capacitor, multi-range discharge, neural stimulation	11	7
Cardiovascular effect of HP pulsed microwaves	33	22
Carrying covert implanted messages	25	9
Castalia Foundation, the	5	8
Castillo, Luis Angel, case of	20	1-9
Catalepsy, definition of	30	6
Catholic Church, political ties to US Government	9	4
Cellular Telephone Net and Mind Control	37	18-19
Center for National Security Studies	7	1
Center for the Prevention of Violence, areas of study	39	16
Center for the Study of New Religious Movements	11	11
Chaffin, William F., 1958 drug testing on	6	7-10
Chemical control bases in mass population	37	19
Cheney, Dick, use of Monarch slaves by	9	5
Children and Satanic ritual abuse, discussion of	39	1
Children, abused, MPD, government recruitment of	9	2
Children, conditioning as sex slaves through Monarch	11	6
Children, parallel programs implanted in	11	13
Chinese brainwashing techniques	3	9
Christian groups as pawns of the cryptocracy	37	20
Church Commitee Investigation of CIA assassination	21	7
CIA "Near Death Trauma Centers"	30	11
CIA and National Institutes of Mental Health	7	9
CIA and sponsorship of 1960's consciousness movement	5	5,11
CIA as NSA "whipping boy", military part to play	25	6
CIA authorization of tests on unwitting subjects, 1956	7	6
CIA Black Budget funding through drug sales	9	9
CIA disruption of Middle East peace	26	7

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
CIA drug research at Boston Psychiatric Hospital	7	4
CIA drug research at Mount Sinai Hospital	7	3
CIA drug wars against its competition	9	11
CIA interest in 1953 in a synthetic virus	13	5
CIA microwave operations in Europe 1978	31	8
CIA Mind Control activities in the US, Rockefeller Rpt	7	1
CIA Office of Scientific Intelligence, 1949 research of	7	3
CIA Office of Security, and Project Artichoke	7	4
CIA Office of Security, Proposals to test CIA volunteers	7	4
CIA operations need for use of amnesia	7	6
CIA participation in looting of national S&L's	33	21
CIA paving the way for acceptance of martial law	33	11
CIA Public Affairs Office, media relationships with	1	7
CIA sex slave use by government office holders	12	8
CIA tests of BZ on federal prisoners 1963 Kentucky	32	16
CIA use of dummy projects to conceal real ones	29	6,22
CIA, degenerate nature of the	35	17-18
CIA, Leary admission of work with	5	4
Clark, Kenneth B., mind control as social control	28	8
Climate in UFO research circles	38	22
Clinical settings and MPD treatment modalities	36	7-8
Clipper Chip, NSA monitoring of private lines using	17	15
Code usage effects on Adult and Child survivors	11	16-17
Codes, color, and associated behavior paradigms	11	15
Codes, introduction of	11	16
Codes, use and reintroduction of	11	15
Cognitive alterations through microwave pulses	29	3
Cointelpro recruitment of Americans	27	14
Cold War, the sham of the	13	12
COM-12 Briefing, the (Chapter)	37	1-22
Communication = 90%behavioral,5%tonal,5%content	31	13
Communication, body internal, EM waves and	10	7
Communications media as psychotronic weapon	10	1-6
Communications, gov't control and Skinner paradigm	29	20
Communism focus of 1950's a mask to hide US Reich	32	13
Compartmentalization of memory in MPD's	9	1
Compounds developed to alter brain/thought function	11	8

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Computer driven satellite directed mind control	11	7
Computer recognition and sorting of brain waves	27	8
Computer-brain interface research	27	11
Computerized mind files of Monarch slaves	12	12
Computers, sovereignty in the hands of, paradigm of	30	9
Concord Correctional Facility LSD experiments	5	4
Conditioning to prevent information disclosure	7	4
Conditioning, "You can run but cannot hide"	9	10
Confessions to JFK conspiracy ignored	21	9-11
Consciousness-detection of remote viewer by military	29	9
Consumertronics and John J. Williams	34	1-18
Control by interrogation techniques	7	4
Control of Candy Jones, COM-12 description of the	37	5-22
Control of machines using EEG patterns	27	10
Control of mind,thoughts and future, paradigm of	29	19
Convincing subjects that reality is fantasy	9	9
Corporate role in influence of cryptocracy	17	13
Cortical Linking Neural Network Models VLSI	36	12
Covert criminal operations, training for	9	9
Creative visualization, power of	30	3
Criminal activities hidden under National Security	13	13
Criminal Justice, New Technologies, Constitution, rpt	35	15
Cryptocracy, definition of the	1	6
Cryptorian Candidate, the (Chapter)	1	1
Cue commands and Dual commands	24	13
Cult Awareness Network	36	1
Cult Awarness Network, Dr. Louis Jolly and the	39	15
Cult Control (Chapter)	32	1-19
Cults, psychiatric aspects of, Louis West comments on	32	1
Customs Service probes into child recruitment	15	1-4
Cybernetics, Soviet trend toward, Helms 1964 report	27	6
Cynthia Byrtus and the SMRC in Colorado	11	11
Dames, Ed, and PSITECH, ex-DIA	31	9
Dangerous Free Thinking (Chapter)	40	1-29
DARPA microwave experiments at Walter Reed	29	5
David, USAF memories of	2	1-13
Deaths-door programming	30	10-11

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Deception, psychological changes during, project on	7	13
Decoy hypnotic levels	26	15
Deep Creek Lake, Maryland, 1953 LSD experiments at	7	1
Deep Probe (Chapter)	27	1
Defense Against Soviet Medical Interrogation, report	7	11
Defense Department as a CIA subcontractor	7	9
Defense Intelligence Agency, gov't drug experiments	7	10
Delayed effect from microwave beam weaponry	34	7-8
Delgado, Jose, the work of	27	1
Delta fields and trance induction	26	13
Delta programming of self preservation instincts	11	6
Demonic possession as illusion for mind control	9	13
Department of Health, Education and Welfare, CIA	7	9
Department of Labor as a CIA subcontractor	7	9
Depth of hypnotic trance and Post hypnotic amnesia	4	11
Descartes, 1664 work of, activity and externals	18	3
Desensitization through exposure to violent media	37	19-20
Desensitization, description of	18	4
DIA contract with US Govt, drugs to unwitting people	7	10
DIA recruitment of multi-generational abused children	9	2
DIA report on EM Biological Effects, 1976, review of	35	16
Directed energy weapon use in assassination	33	19-21
Disease projection technology, Alexander mention of	31	3
Disempowerment of human potential through debunk	13	6
Disney films use as control infrastructures by CIA	9	4
Dissociated state, use for trauma dissociation	11	17
Dissociation as process of psychological removal	30	11
Dissociation from surroundings and hypnotic trance	30	2
Dissociation, definition of	30	6
Dissociative abilities and extrasensory experience	13	6
Dissociative Identity Disorders, Candy Jones case	8	1-13
Dissociative Identity Disorders, computer creation of	36	12
Dissociative Identity Disorders, psychic phenomena in	13	5
Division Five, FBI	37	16
Dorothy, voice manipulation case of	16	10
Dreams, programming the subject of	30	1
Drug attributes of society in 1968	5	11

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Drug specific brain activity to maximize programs	9	9
Drug trafficking and Project Monarch	11	9
Drugs as catalysts to productive interrogation	5	15
Drugs inducing hypnosis, mind control	5	2
Drugs, trafficking CIA v. Mob competition	32	19
Duke University, J.B. Rhines telepathy experiments at	13	6
Earth magnetic field alteration by radio transmission	29	9
Edgewood Army Chemical Center, drug testing at the	6	4-10
Edmonton, Alberta, CIA 1976 mind control atrocities	35	17
Effects of Modulated VHF Fields on CNS (Chart)	36	16
Einhorn, Ira, discussion of	29	11-17
Eisenhower warning, military industrial complex	17	11
Election, 1980 Presidential, stealing of the	33	17
Electrical stimulation of the brain, ESB effects	27	6
Electromagnetic bioeffects, DIA 1976 report, review of	35	16
Electromagnetic biohazard indications in the 1970's	29	8
Electromagnetic modulation of auditory impulses	16	1
Electromagnetic Pulse devices	29	3
Electromagnetic pulse weapons, non-nuclear	31	6
Electromagnetic target, common experiences of a	16	12
Electromagnetic weapons and defense, public source of	34	1-18
Electronic cancellation of thought processes	35	18
Electronic Dissolution of Memory EDOM	28	1-12
Electronic Enhancement of Memory EEOM	37	16
Electronic Freedom Foundation	17	15
Electronic possession and compressed microwaves	11	5
Electronic programming of embedded commands	11	7
Electronic technology as essential to US domestic policy	35	1
Electroshock therapy, Rand recommends USAF study	27	3
Electroshock, as part of CIA SD Interrogation Pgm	7	11
ELF field use in conjunction with drugs	26	5
ELF fields interference with biological cue frequencies	29	2
ELF waveforms and physiological disorders	10	7
Ellson, Dr., University of Indiana Navy/CIA drug proj.	7	13
Encounter with an "alien" and gov't "techie"	38	20-22
Entertainment industry use for programming	14	18
Epperson, Ralph A	38	2

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Epsilon programming, Monarch	11	12
Erickson, Milton, comments on Wells experiments	4	6
Erickson, Milton, NLP work of	31	13
Ericksonian methods as key to unlocking programming	40	9
Estabrooks, Dr. George, 1940s warnings by	4	1-3
Estabrooks, George	24	14-15
Eugene, Oregon 1978 4.75mhz, 1100cps, 3000' altitude	29	7
Eugenic management, direct	38	5
Events reproducing memory of previous events	9	7
Excaliber Briefing, Tom Beardens book called	29	11
Exercises to prove people are accessible to you in mind	30	4
Expose providing deeper covers that original plot	41	15
Eye Movement Desensitization and Reprocessing	11	12
False Memory Spindrome (Chapter)	39	1
False Memory Syndrome and ritual abuse	39	2
False Memory Syndrome Foundation	36	4
FBI as one of the major abusers of children	39	14
Federal prison inmate experiments, MKDELTA	7	7
Feldenkreist technique of trance induction	30	3
Ferrie, David William	21	9
Finders, Kidnappers, Nazis (Chapter)	15	1-11
First Article Configuration Inspection	25	7
Foreign Counter Intelligence Agency	15	1
Fort Riley, Kansas and Monarch training	14	16
Fourth World War as combat of the mind	29	11
Franklin Community Credit Union, looting of the	14	1-3
Freedom, the sham of	25	12
French use of infrasound as crowd control	31	8
Frequencies causing confusion at 388 Megacycles	16	11
Frequency and chemical manipulation to cover leaks	37	6
Frequency spectrum of geomagnetic field	36	16
Frequency Wave Manipulation of Populations	37	18
Frey, Allan H., work on human hearing of microwaves	29	5
Freyd, Dr. Pamela, parental abuse memories of, case	39	3-8
Fromm, Erich, on specter of mechanized society	28	10
Future pacing, suggestions placed in subconscious	10	8
Gaefsky, Dr., as head of Bethesda drug project 1947	7	12

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Gamma programming, Monarch	11	12
Gaylin, Dr. Willard, electrode implantation	28	7
Geller, Uri, paradigm of	28	10
General Electric TV recall, 1968, radiation hazard	28	6
Generational conditioning of genetic memory for abuse	40	1
George Bush, indications of programming and	10	8
German associations of Betty Ford	10	19
German discovery of brain waves	27	8
German government Top Secret BLACK ARTS	11	2
German mind control covert influences in the US	10	8-11
Gigahertz effects on the human nervous system	35	15-18
Gindes, Dr. Bernard C., US Army amnesia experiments	4	3
Girard, Dr.Harlan, as EM target of crypocracy	35	1
Gittinger, John, CIA former chief psychologist	5	5
Gottleib, Dr.Sidney, notification of Olsen death to	7	2
Gottschalk, Dr. Louis, report on addiction & control	5	13,15
Government ties to Catholic Church	9	4
Grand Wizard, Marionette Programming subset	11	13
Greek alphabet programming, drug trafficking and	40	11
Greek letter programming	11	14
Green, Dr. (Greenbaum) and Marionette Programming	11	12
Greenbaum, Nazi mind control doctor called	11	12
Hallucinations, postive and negative, definitions of	30	6
Hallucinogens, Intravenous, WWII administration of	1	3
Harmonics generators	11	3
Harmonics, programming while sensory deprived	30	12
Hastings, Dr. University of Minnesota USAF/CIA study	7	13
HDF International	26	2
Hearing microwaves, human ability with	29	5
Heart attacks, remotly generated	31	3
Helms testimony in front of Church Committee	21	7-8
Heroin traffic, CIA contribution to	5	13
High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program	29	17
High frequency weapons, directional nature of	34	6
Hilgarde, Ernest, hypnotic experiments by	36	11
Hippocampus, altered states and EM radiation of	29	25
Histamine production and sense of "burning alive"	30	12

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Hitchcock, Tommy, WWI ace, intelligence contacts of	5	8
Hofmann, Dr. Albert, 1943 LSD experience of	5	2
Hollister, Dr. Leo E., defense of Vacaville work	18	7
Hollywood personalities as Monarch handlers	12	11
Holy Acid Wars (Chapter)	5	1
Hope, Bob, alleged involvement with Monarch slaves	12	9-10,15
Hospitals, 1949, CIA drug research by the OSI	7	3-4
House Committee on Un-American Activities, 1958	3	3
How to Create a Sex Slave, video called	9	7
How to Divide a Personality, video called	9	7
Hubbard. L. Ron, mind control insights of, & gov't	5	1
Hudson Institute, the	38	2
Hughes-Ryan Amendment, CIA operations accountable	32	19
Human disposition to new ideas and EM environment	10	7
Human Electromagnetic Targets (Chapter)	35	1-20
Human Resources Research Organization, 1960's	19	6
Hypermnesia, definition of	30	6
Hypnosis forms you can try for fun	30	5-6
Hypnosis in Intelligence, 1966 report on use of	30	1-2
Hypnosis, Pain-Drug, as extension of narcosynthesis	5	1
Hypnosis, Soviet experiments in, Rand Analysis of	4	8
Hypnosis, telepathic, testing of	31	2-3
Hypnotic design, post, definition of	30	6
Hypnotic induction in an unwilling subject, Rand on	4	10
Hypnotic induction of criminal behavior, Watkins work	4	4
Hypnotic regression and physical manifestation	9	15
Hypnotic suggestion, COM-12 description of early	37	4
Hypnotic trance, people drift in and out daily, data on	30	2
Hypnotically induced accelerated tissue healing	30	11
Ideomotor activity, definition of	30	6
Ignorance of capability of mind control, legal	14	20
Images common to split-brain programming	11	13
Impairment of biological cues by ELF frequencies	29	2
Impairment of cellular growth processes by ELF	29	2
Implanation of transmitters in prisoners, advocates of	29	21
Implantation of all Americans, proposal by Meyer	38	16
Implantation of memory blocks for a "conscience"	33	17

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Implants, sodium/lithium powered HF transceiver	11	7
Imprisonment, electronic forms of, CIA developed	35	1-2
Incest and child abuse statistical analysis	39	1
Incest victims, multi-generational, and churches	11	10
Indian reservations, mind control on	37	15
Individual rights v. National rights, 1988 policy	35	15
Indoctrination procedures, ordinary CIA	17	1
Induction of amnesia to commands, verbal, technique of	30	5-6
Induction of specific mood after sleeping, work on	30	1
Influence of government leaders by The Council	12	12
Information, prevention of unauthorized extraction	7	4
Infrasound and crowd control	31	8
Infrasound subliminal influence of brain activity	10	7
Institute for Defense Analysis Task force on microwave	29	5
Institute of Police Technology and Management	11	11
Institutional denial of abuse of children in the US	39	2
Institutional drug experimentation, 1960's paradigm of	7	9
Institutionalized secrecy comes to US in WWII	17	2
Insulin shock as psychiatric mind control	7	12
Intelligence Support Activities Unit (ISAU)	37	16
International Federation for Internal Freedom (IFIF)	5	8,11
Internet a threat to National Security infrastructure	41	7
Internet article on mind control and telepathy	27	12
Interpretation of brain wave patterns, early work	27	9
Interrogation and drug dependence, Gottschalk and	5	13
Interrogation, narco-hypnotic, Project Artichoke	7	4
Invisible Warfare (Chapter)	29	1-25
Involuntary reflexes, training of	18	8-9
Ionization, atmospheric, and mental reception	10	7
Ionospheric frequencies as carrier for LF sonic waves	28	4
Ionospheric modfication research, HAARP project	29	17
Irradiation of US Embassy in Moscow, discovery of	28	5
Isolation of cognitive domain from neural network	36	2
Jackson Memorial Hospital	35	12-13
James Earl Ray, COM-12 analysis of	37	13-14
Jamming signals for EM waveforms	34	11
Jewell, Otto, the programming of	26	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Jim Jones, body found as a double	32	17
Jim Jones, CIA contacts of	37	15
John Judge, Jonestown interpretation of	32	5
Jones, C.B. Scott, background of	31	14
Jonestown Massacre as CIA mind control experiment	32	2-19
Joyce, James, phonetic embeds in *Finnigans Wake*	33	18
Just Say No Program, opposite effect of the	10	8
Justice Department drug cases, CIA influence on	5	14
Kennedy, Robert, death, LAPD and, COM-12 analysis	37	11
KGB as extension of Soviet political system	17	14
Kilgallen, Dorothy, interview with Jack Ruby	22	4
King, Martin Luther, murder of, and Earl Ray	23	1-8
Klee, Dr. Gerald, US Army drug-testing program and	6	4
Korean brainwashing, analysis of	3	8-13
Koresh as a CIA sleeper	33	9
Koresh, parallels with Cyrus Teed in 1839	33	22-24
Langley Proter Neuropsychiatric Institute	27	8
Language manipulation and double meanings	9	8
Language of the unconscious, word definitions of	30	6-7
Larry King, government relationships of	14	2
Law enforcement and implant telemetry, thoughts on	29	20
Law Enforcement Assistance Administration (LEAA)	7	9
Law enforcement training on MPD and Ritual Abuse	11	11
Lawsuits relative to government drug experimentation	7	9
Layers of programming and levels of power	11	13
Learning models of quantum neurodynamics	36	1-2
Leary and Alpert, firing from Harvard of	5	8
Leary, Dr. Timothy, and LSD scenario	5	4-12
Lebensborn program, Himmler's	14	1
LIDA machine, the Soviet, use and testing of the	29	21-22
Linkletter, Diane, death of	5	12
Little Albert, Watsons experiments on	18	3
Locking personality to one age bracket	26	4
Lois, the case of, Monarch programming on	12	1-16
Lone Assassin paradigm, description of the	21	1-11
Los Alamos laboratories, psychotronic and MC projects	31	13
Los Alamos laboratory, non-lethal weaponry work at	31	5

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Los Angeles Riots, April 29, 1992, EM manipulation	37	18
Lovett Committee, US should model Britain BIS	14	13
Lovett, Robert A., Brown Brothers Harriman	14	13
Low frequency weapons, omnidirectional nature of	34	6
Low intensity conflict, use of non-lethal weapons in	31	5
LSD antidote, US Army 1975 development of an	5	17
LSD experiment involvement of Mary P. Meyer	5	5
LSD experiments on US Army soldiers	5	17
LSD flashbacks, survey on	5	12
LSD media hype, post-psychedelic revolution	5	12
LSD, government experimentation with	5	2-12
LSD, government tests on unwitting subjects	6	4
LSD, repeatable emotional states under	6	9
Luria, A.R., comments on hypnosis and behavior	4	8,9
MacDill AFB, Florida, mind control program at	9	11
Machiavelli, Niccolo, technocracy within paradigm of	17	13,14
Maintaining classified information using mind control	37	14
Manchurian Candidate, Richard Condon's	1	1
Manipulation of Belief foundation of Cryptocracy	17	14
Manipulation of Specific Individuals Frequency	37	18
Marchetti, Victor, CIA revelations of, cyborg tech	28	10
Marionette Programming	11	12
Mark Lane, COM-12 discussion of	37	15-16
Mark Phillips, researcher into Project Monarch	11	2
Mass mind control, paradigm of justification for	9	10
Mathematic expression of neural connectivity	36	12
Maxwell Air Force Base, mind control programs at	9	10
McCarthy, Jim, and the SMRC in Colorado	11	11
McConnel, Professor James V, at U.Michigan	18	8
McRae, Ron, *Mind Wars* author, psychic weapons	31	2
Mechanistic-reductionist philosophy, key strategies of	13	6
Media ownership by The Council	12	12
Memory enhancement, control using, project on	7	4
Memory erasure of military members, survey of	1	4
Memory erasure using stun guns	11	8
Memory flooding after death of abuser	39	9
Memory recall, definition of	30	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Mind altering techniques, the overall purpose of	35	16
Mind conditioning through torture	11	6
Mind control and telepathy, Internet article on	27	12
Mind control as being out of control	11	10
Mind control as desirable social control, paradigm of	28	8
Mind control justified by perception of evolution	9	10
Mind Control Operations, COM-12 briefing on	37	2-22
Mind control perceived as "opportunity for losers"	9	12
Mind control protection from incriminating memory	25	4
Mind control, 1949 Rand analysis of defense against	7	10
Mind control, definition and book premise	1	5
Mind control, first indication of cryptocracy interest in	7	10
Mind control, military as the first target of	10	8
Mind control, overt, Auschwitz taboo prevents	10	11
Mind control, religious, achieving peace through	9	13
Mind Laundry Myth, the (Chapter)	3	1
Mind reading as side effect of MPD	13	5
Mind reading machines, 1976 media headlines on	27	9
Mind weaponry, development of, and John Alexander	31	15-16
Mind, sane defense in an insane situation, MPD as	9	1
Mind-body manipulations and hypnosis	9	15
Minds defense when faced with trauma	9	16
Mindszenty, Joseph Cardinal	7	11
Mindwar (Chapter)	10	1
Mindwar piggybacking on natural EM phenomena	10	7
Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory, the	19	3
Missing children in the US, analysis of	39	1
Missing time as an indicator of mind control effect	34	12
MKDELTA as operational phase of drug mind control	7	13
MKDRACO as code name for alien abduction scenario	37	20
MKULTRA as R&D period of mind control	7	13
MKULTRA File, Document 32 of the, text of	7	7
Mohrenschildt, George de	22	4-7
Monarch controlled persons as "superior race"	9	6
Monarch Corroboration (Chapter)	13	1-16
Monarch program, general overview of	14	1
Monarch programming locations, a list of some	11	11

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Memory scrambling using spin programming	9	7
Memory storage in brain process of hard-wiring	29	25
Memory, compartmentaliztion through MPD	9	1
Mental control over physical abilities by personality	9	3
Mental health industry, involvement in alien scenarios	36	14
Mental institutions, government classified	11	2
Mental Telepathy System (MTS) technology	27	12-18
Mental Telepathy System, hearing two way voices	34	11-12
Messages, embedding in subconscious mind, sonic	11	7
Meyer, Dr. Joseph	38	16
Meyer, Mary Pinchot, brainwashing intentions of	5	7
Meyer, Mary Pinchot, death of	5	10
Microwave analog audiograms and hallucinations	35	17
Microwave auditory effects, Walter Reed research	29	3
Microwave bioeffects, Czech research on	29	5
Microwave bombardment of the Waco compound	33	11-12
Microwave coupling to central nervous system	29	3
Microwave debilitation effects, Walter Reed work on	29	3
Microwave effect on stimulus-controlled behavior	29	3
Microwave effects (Ghz) on the nervous system	35	15-18
Microwave penetration of body systems 1-5 Ghz	29	3
Microwave projectiles, high power	31	7
Microwave radiation, behavioral effect, Zaret, 1964	28	6
Microwave radiation, early 1933 Soviet studies	28	5
Microwave weapon use during the Bush Administration	35	15
Microwaves and cancer and the US embassy in Moscow	29	5
Microwaves, compressed, voice transmission and	11	5
Microwaves, High-Powered Pulsed (HPM)	29	3
Microwaves, human auditory perception of	29	5
Microwaves, use by CIA to affect mental functions	31	8
Military 1968 testimony, "non-exposure" to MW	28	6
Military as first target of mind control	10	8
Military bases, use as reprogramming centers	11	8
Military denial of biological effects from EMF	29	3
Military hardware conversion to non-lethal capability	31	5
Military stress training and observation	19	7
Military turnover of old missle bases to agencies	39	15

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Navy involvement in assassin training	19	1
Navy, U.S., authority for CIA drug mind control proj.	7	12
Nazi camp killers as pets of British and US finance	14	13
Nazi principles and total mind control, paradigm of	9	10
Nazis in US Government, Bush/Reagan concealment of	32	14
Nebraska, child abuse, satanism and murder in	14	1-11
Nervous system, jamming synaptic connections in	31	2
Nervous system, microwave effect on, Army research	29	5
Neural connections, remote interference with	31	2
Neuro-linguistic programming (NLP), premises of	30	8
Neuro-Linguistic Programming, Erickson insights and	4	7
Neurolinguistic programming as used at Waco	33	12
Neurolinguistics program, Al Gore attended training	31	12
Neurolinguistics programming NLP and mind control	31	1
Neuron pathways, shutdown during MPD's	9	1
Neuropsychiatric Institute, UCLA, Westwood	12	7
New Patterns of Influence Program	30	7
Nichols, Glen E., victim of mind control, story of	35	2-9
Noblitt, Dr. Randy, mechanics of programming, data	36	8,11-12
Noises, programming utilizing	11	14
Non-Lethal Weaponry, social use began in 1970's	29	4
Non-Lethal weapons as projection of gov't power	31	5
Non-Lethal weapons, John Alexander's work with	31	1
NORAD, remote view of	29	9
Noriega, mind control demonstrations to impress	9	14-15
Norman, Governor Montagu, and Nazi doctors	14	13
Nugent, Dr. Arthur, Vacaville chief psychiatrist	7	8
O'Leary, Hazel	41	16-17,19
O'Neil, Tip, mind control work done on	31	2-3
O, the Story of	9	1-16
October Surprise, the	33	17
Offensive Microwave Weapons, paper by Girard	35	1
Office of Naval Intelligence, primary role of	37	19
Officer Candidate School and Project Monarch	11	9
Offut Air Force Base, strange activities at	14	11
Offutt Air Force Base, Col, Michael Aquino and	14	16
Olson, Dr. Frank, death of	6	2-3

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Monarch survivor, typical appearance of a	11	10
Monarch, project, as offshoot of MKULTRA	9	1
Monitoring human emotions, location and behavior	29	20
Monotonous rhythms and hypnotic induction	28	5
Moore, James L., RHIC-EDOM researcher 1975	28	2
Moral conviction, mind control elimination of	11	6
Morocco, mind control facility in	26	5
Morris, Janet	31	7-8
Morse Allen, 1954, hypnosis as reliable operational tool	30	1
Mothers of Darkness, Marionette Program subset	11	13
Motion Picture Country Hospital, Calabasas, Calif.	12	7
Mount Shasta, Paramilitary mind control projects at	9	11
Mount Sinai Hospital, drug related work,CIA	7	3
MPD and personality switching, subject unaware of	30	10
MPD constitutes 20% of abducted people (Mack)	39	1
MPD survival phenomena, attaching programming to	30	11
MPD, Multiple Personality Disorder	9	1
Multi-level programming, Castillo example of	20	4-5
Multiple Personality Disorders, discussion of	13	1
Multiple Personality Disorders, unusual abilities of	9	2-3
Murder for pay, 1976 study on public tendencies	25	3
Music personalities in Tennessee and drug dealing	14	11
Mutliple Personality Disorders, clinical aspects of	13	14
Narco-hypnotic interrogation, 1952 CIA Memo on	7	4
Narcohypnosis, percentage of people susceptible to	7	11
Narut, Thomas, and Naval mind control programs	19	1
National Institute of Mental Health and the CIA	7	9
National Program Office (NPO) and mind control	37	6
National Science Foundation as CIA subcontractor	7	9
National Security Act as a cover for cryptocracy	41	17
National Security Act precidence over Bill of Rights	13	13
National Security Act, repeal necessary of the	41	4,9-20
National Security Agency and domestic monitoring	16	5
National Security Agency, formation in 1952 of the	32	13
National Security obstruction of justice, example	15	8-11
NATO Conference on "Dimensions of Stress"	19	1
Naval "value of life" study	19	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Phillips, Mark, Project Monarch researcher	11	2
Phonetic embedded commands, use of	33	18
Photographic memory lock through programming	11	6
Photographic memory, enhancement of, Tinker AFB	9	9
Physical abilities of separate personalities in MPD	9	3
Physical capabilities, reprogramming	11	6
Pinneo, Dr. Lawrence, Stanford Research Institute	27	11
Platonist epistemology, NWO	38	23
Police use of mind control	25	10
Pornographic filming using Monarch sex slaves	12	9
Power elite, analysis of the nature of	36	13
Power, levels of, relationship to program layers	11	13
Powers, Francis Gary, Moscow trial of	3	4-6
Prefrontal ultrasonic treatment	28	4
PREMA, scanning individual frequency signature	37	17-18
Presidio mind control research facility, programming	30	12
Pribram, Karl H., *Rethinking Neural Networks*	36	1,12
Probability density and field gradients in thought	36	2
Programming in the ritual abuse survivor	11	14
Programming of "UFO Abductees" and Aquino	38	18
Programming, theme-based, example of	9	8
Project "Detection of Deception", U.Indiana, Navy/CIA	7	13
Project 63, DoD Importation of Nazi Germans to US	11	2
Project Artichoke Commitee, composition of	4	4
Project Artichoke evolvement into Project MKULTRA	7	6
Project Belfry, controls open fire on the public	37	20
Project Bluebird, description of	7	4
Project Bluebird, renamed Project Artichoke	7	4
Project Camalot	19	6
Project Dancer	37	20
Project Greenstar (Chapter)	38	1
Project HAARP	29	17-19
Project HIGH TONE	37	18-20
Project Jedi, 1983, US Army Psyops, Alexander	30	7
Project MKDELTA, biochemical use in	7	6
Project MKDELTA, experimental areas & scope	7	7
Project MKDRACO	37	17,20

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Olson, Dr. Frank, experiments on	7	1-3
Omega programming, Monarch	11	12
Omega, suicide/death programming	40	11-12
Only One Mind For My Country (Chapter)	2	1
Operant conditioning, description of	18	4
Operation "Hot August Night"	37	21
Operation "Yellow Lodge", MC on Reservations	37	15
Operation Mind Control, 1938-1968 Objectives	1	5
Operation Mind Control, David Emory tapes called	35	14
Operation Paperclip, relationship to cryptocracy of	10	8
Operation Pique, CIA, microwave signals in ionosphere	31	8
Operation Shamrock, NSA	16	5
Oregon, powerful 1978 signal over, data on	29	7
Organizational Effectiveness School, the	30	7
Organized crime, CIA and sex slave training	9	8
Oscillating field research, University of California	28	4
Osiris Complex, Case Studies in MPD	13	6
OSS and beginnings of CIA, description of	17	2-11
Oswald, Lee Harvey, COM-12 analysis of	37	10
Pain perceived as pleasure in MPD dissociative process	30	11
Pain, storage of, connection to conscious processes	36	2
Paranormal ability manifestation from cell transform	29	22
Passive-Aggressive Personalities as best killers	19	3
Past activity review under drug sesssions (Artichoke)	7	5
Pavlov, 1927 work with conditioning	18	1
Pavlov, work of, European and Russian views of	18	2
Peace through religious mind control, concept of	9	13
Pedophile kidnappings, CIA/FBI, evidence for	36	7
Perles, Fritz	31	13
Persinger, Dr. Michael, EM production of ET reality	29	25
Personal Radio Electromagnetic Frequency Allocation	37	17-19
Personality as pattern of response to stimulation	36	1-2
Personality characteristics, using EMF to change	29	23
Personality Disorder, Multiple (MPD)	9	1
Personality switching, MPD unawareness of	30	10
Peter Pans Never Never Land, control theme of	9	9
Pettit, James, victim of mind control, story of	35	9-13

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Radiation experiments, 1994 controversy over	41	17
Radio and television as mass hypnosis devices	28	5
Radio Hypnotic Intra-Cerebral Control RHIC	28	1-12
Rainbow programming	11	14
Rand 1949 recommendation on use of ECT	27	3
Rand analysis of mind control defense in 1949	7	10
Rand Corporation Report on *Cominform Techniques*	4	8-13
Reagan administration ties to Vatican	9	4
Reagan, President, sexual proclivities of	9	13
Recruitment of children for ritual purposes	15	1
Redstone Arsenal, mind control programming at	9	8
Reductionist model, medicine as the medical model	13	6
Reed, Dr. Adam, computer-brain interface work of	27	11
Reinhard Gehlen Organization and PSYOPS	37	10
Remote control of the brain, perfection of techniques	27	7
Remote transmission with manipulative psi generator	29	24-25
Remote viewing use by the US in Gulf War 1991	31	9
Remote viewing, potential military applications of, list	31	10
Remote viewing, use to detect specific research	31	10
Report from Iron Mountain	17	11
Report from Iron Mountain, analysis of report called	38	1-7
Reproduction of cerebral tissue by direct energy beam	29	23
Reproductive problems and EM radiation	29	2
Retraining of criminals as government assassins	19	1
RHIC -EDOM programming stages, description of	28	2-3
RHIC-EDOM, 1951 CIA memorandum on	28	4
RICO conspiracy, shadow government as a	33	17-18
Right wing v. Left wing groups	25	11
Ritalin, mind control applications and	5	2
Robot soldiers, training at Mount Shasta	9	11
Rockefeller Report to the President on CIA Activities	6	1-2
Rockefeller Report, Bowart/Marks evidence request	7	1
Rockefeller University, computer-brain interface work	27	11
Romney, George, brainwashing statements of, 1967	3	10
Roper poll in 1993 and alien abduction reports	39	1
Rose, Dr. Steven, biochemist	28	7
Ross, Dr. Colin A, on Dissociative Identity Disorders	36	3

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Project MKHATTER	37	17,20
Project MKULTRA, evolvement from ARTICHOKE	7	6
Project Monarch (Chapter)	11	1-19
Project Monarch programming, description of	9	5
Project Monarch slaves, two general groups	14	17-18
Project Monarch, as offshoot of MKULTRA	9	1
Project Monarch, four levels of behavior modification	11	6
Project Monarch, victim breakdown profile	11	10
Project National Interest, DoD Project 63	11	2
Project Pandora, CIA program known as	29	4
Project Reach	37	20
Project River Styx, CIA/Pentagon, MW weaponry	29	5-6
Project Watchtower	37	20
Project XENO	37	18-20
Propaganda and the art of disinformation	3	6
Propaganda scheme of the power elite, review of the	36	13
Prouty, L. Fletcher, report on mind control abuse	36	12-13
Prouty,L.Fletcher, background additional data	41	2-3
Pseudo-orientation in time, definition of	30	6
Psi-amplifier and data units, development of	29	24
Psi-weapon experiments at Dachau camp	29	24
Psychedelic revolution, government closure of the	5	12
Psychiatry, dissociation and mind control, historical	36	3-6
Psychic effects under MW attack before brain death	29	22-23
Psychic neuron disruptor, discussion of	31	2
Psychic weapons, Russian, description of	29	24
Psychocivilized Society, Delgado's view of the, 1974	35	13
Psychological entry and control of the individual	7	12
Psychological warfare comes home to America	17	12
Psychological warfare, WWII changes in	17	2
Psychosurgery experiments of the VA, 1970's	7	9
Psychotechnology: Electronic Control of the Mind	29	20
Psychotronic operational weaponry of the US Army	10	1
Pulsing light and sound in programming	40	7
Quantum Holographic Neural Technology	36	12
Quantum neurodynamics as consciousness mechanism	36	1-2
Racial hatred, training in	14	19

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Shadow government, murders committed by the	33	17
Shielding experiments with mind control signals	16	7
Sight through opaque barriers, microwave production	29	22
Sirhan Sirhan and death of Robert Kennedy	24	1-15
Sirhan Sirhan, COM-12 analysis of	37	10
Sisters of Light, Marionette Programming subset	11	13
Skinner's research, nature and results of	18	5
Skinner, B.F, operant conditioning and	18	4
Sleeper Agent (Chapter)	26	1
Slowing of thought and speech by EM effects	16	12
Smith, George E., Viet Cong brainwashing of	3	2
Smith, Walter B, CIA Director, 1952	38	19
Snuff movies, use of Beta programmed people in	11	9
Snyder, Dr. Solomon, Johns Hopkins, BZ commentary	5	15
Social conditioning paradigm, Leary on aspects of	29	20
Social Movements Recovery Center (SMRC), the	11	11
Sodium pentathol, use in interrogation of, by CIA	7	4
Sodium/Lithium powered HF transceiver implants	11	7
Somnambulistic hypnotic induction frequency 1.2cps	26	15
Sonic beam use to destroy neural tissue	28	4
Sonic manipulations of the brain	18	9
Sound induction into the human brain	29	9
Soviet experiments in EM sleep induction	28	5
Soviet scalar mind control weaponry, existence of	11	4
Space and Biology Lab of University of California	27	7
Special Defense Interrogation Program, CIA	7	11
Spin programming, memory manipulation using	9	7
Split-brain programming, procedure of	11	13
Stanford Research Institute, mind reading research	27	10
Star Wars metaphors, adoption by technocrats of	30	13
State Institute of Experimental Psychology, Moscow	4	8
Sterility due to microwave irradiation	28	5
Stimoceiver, use of	27	6
Stimulus-controlled behavior and microwave radiation	29	3
Stockholm International Peace Research Institute	28	5
Stockholm Syndrome, reversal programming and the	11	8
Stonehill, Paul, research on psychic weapons	29	22

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Ruby, Jack	22	1-4
Russbacher, Gunther	33	20-21
Ryan, Leo, Congressman, murder of, reasons for	32	4-5,18,19
S-Force Operations	37	8
Sadistic ritual "A Most Dangerous Game"	9	5
San Diego Naval Neuropsychiatric Laboratory	19	3
Sandia Corporation demonstration of ESB	27	4
Sandoz Laboratories, LSD manufacturing by	5	2
Satanic "reversal" programming	11	8
Satanic abuse reports and connection with alien cases	39	8
Satanic Church, Aquinos, description of	10	11-19
Satanic ritual use to traumatize under Monarch	9	5
Satanism dependence on existence of Christianity	9	13
Satellite driven Theta programming	11	7
Scalar mind control weaponry, Soviet	11	4
Schien, Dr.Edgar, MIT study of returned POWs	3	9
Scientists importation of Fascist, US DoD project	11	2
Scientology, Church of, 1993 IRS recognition of	5	1
Screening of mail and calls coming into the US	16	5
SDI mind control and creation of robot soldiers	9	11
Secondary Post Traumatic Stress Disorder, Therapist	36	8
Secrecy and the Cryptocracy	41	18
Secrecy supports existance of Cryptocracy	17	15
Secret war over secrecy, Washington's	41	6
Secrets of the Sith, Aquino book called	10	19
Sedation of the population, massive program for the	37	21
Self-destructive killers, mind control training of	11	6
Self-induced suicide, subconscious reprogramming and	11	5
Self-stimulation of the brain, U.California work	27	5
Senate Subcommitee on Constitutional Rights, 1971	7	9
Senses, electromagnetic blocking of all	35	17
Serial killings and mind control programs	11	5
Serial killings, increase in number of	13	4
Serum trigiyceride increase with ELF field exposure	26	14
Sexual appetite, programming of child-like	11	8
Sexual feelings associated with brain stimulation	27	5
Sexual programming under Monarch mind control	11	6

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Theta Programming and biomedical telemetry	**11**	**7**
Third Reich in the United States, Nazis and the	**32**	**13-15**
Thornburgh, Richard	**9**	**8**
Thought reading through implants, discussion of	**16**	**11**
Thought train as a propogating wave-packet	**36**	**2**
Thought transfer, "mirror matching" to achieve	**30**	**4-5**
Thought, perception as "audible sound"	**35**	**18**
Time disorientation, definition of	**30**	**6**
Tinker Air Force Base, mind control programming at	**9**	**9**
Trance, interrogation and amnesia, techniques of	**7**	**5**
Transceiver, sodium/lithium HF implantable	**11**	**7**
Trauma-based mind control and the 21st century	**11**	**10**
Trigger, use with specific verbal commands	**9**	**7**
Tuned in to a Mental Radio (Chapter)	**16**	**1-12**
U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command, the	**30**	**7**
UFO abduction experience on hippocampus irradiation	**29**	**25**
UFO experiences, possible relationship to mind control	**38**	**7-24**
Ultrasonic Intra-Cerebral Control UICC	**37**	**16**
Ultrasonic research, CIA, 25 years of	**25**	**8**
Ultrasonic research, University of Illinois, 1961	**28**	**4**
Ultrasonic research, University of Pittsburg	**28**	**4**
Ultrasonics, early 1949 hint of Soviet use of	**7**	**10**
Ultrasound, early part of CIA SD Interrogation Pgm	**7**	**11**
Unconscious, communication using language of the	**30**	**4-5**
Unconscious, language of, word definitions	**30**	**6-7**
Undesirables, Nazi elimination of, WWII and US now	**32**	**15**
United States Global Strategy Council (USGSC)	**31**	**4**
University of Indiana, Naval drug project at	**7**	**13**
University of Michigan, Mental Health Research	**18**	**8**
University of Minnesota USAD/CIA drug control study	**7**	**13**
University of North Florida, IPTM social deviancy	**11**	**11**
US Army drug-based psychological control study	**7**	**13**
US Navy use of its personnel as guinea pigs	**19**	**2**
USAF University of Minnesota psycho control study	**7**	**13**
Vaccinations given to Monarch slaves	**13**	**5**
Vallee, Dr. Jacques, *Messengers of Deception*	**38**	**7**
Vast Active Living Intelligence System (VALIS)	**28**	**12**

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	**CH**	**PG**
Stubblebine, J.M., California Health Director	**39**	**15**
Stubblebine, Maj.Gen Albert, and PSITECH	**31**	**9**
Stubbs, Maj.Gen Marshall, 1961 speech to Congress	**5**	**16**
Stun guns, use in programming of	**9**	**7**
Subconscious mind, personal interaction with the	**24**	**13**
Subconscious mind, reprogramming over genetic mind	**11**	**5**
Subconscious, communication with as "future pacing"	**10**	**8**
Subconscious, existence only through	**9**	**8**
Subconscious, neuron paths to, acoustic effects on	**11**	**7**
Subliminal influence of brain activity with infrasound	**10**	**7**
Subliminal messages with key words in white noise	**31**	**13**
Substitutes for the Functions of War	**38**	**5-6**
Suggestibility of humans, Estabrooks comments on	**4**	**7**
Super High Frequency Weapons (SHF) Army 1972	**35**	**15**
Supercaustic non-lethal weapons, superacids	**31**	**7**
Surrender of self-responsibility, social process of	**28**	**10**
Symbolic modeling study, Office of Naval Research	**19**	**5**
System for production of violent anti-social people	**18**	**10**
Targeting, electromagnetic, rationale for	**16**	**5**
Tattoo, Project Bluebird	**7**	**4**
Tavistock Institute and Nazi doctors	**14**	**13**
Telepathic wars, US and Soviet Union	**27**	**15-17**
Telepresence surveillance system, CIA development of	**35**	**1-2**
Television program use as control infrastructure	**9**	**4**
Terrorists, mind control training of	**11**	**6**
Tesla, gravity technology	**38**	**23**
Tesla, Nicola	**29**	**2**
***The Controllers*, manuscript by Martin Cannon**	**38**	**14-16**
The Council	**12**	**9,12-13**
The Finders	**15**	**1-11**
The Foundation	**40**	**17**
The Guinea Pig Army (Chapter)	**6**	**1**
The Lone Nuts (Chapter)	**21**	**1-11**
The MKULTRANS (Chapter)	**7**	**1**
The Patriotic Assassination (Chapter)	**25**	**1-14**
***The Warriors Edge*, John B. Alexanders book called**	**30**	**7**
Theme-based programming, example of	**9**	**8**

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Wizard of OZ, as programming infrastructure	**9**	**3**
Woodpecker signal, Soviet 1976 detection of the	**29**	**8**
***Writings of a Zulu Witch Doctor*, quote from**	**11**	**3**
Younger, Michael, appearance in 1992	**37**	**21**
Youngstown, Ohio sex slave training camp, CIA	**9**	**8**
Zaret, Dr. Milton, and microwave effects testimony	**28**	**6**
Zombie phenomenon, the	**20**	**7**

Master Index for Researchers Edition of Operation Mind Control

Description	CH	PG
Verona, Dr. Jack, RAVEN	31	15
Very Low Frequency Sonic research	28	4
Veterans Administration psychosurgery experiments	7	9
Vialls, Joe, story of CIA and MI6 brainwashing	26	19-20
Victorian, Armen , CIA dirty tricks on	31	16-17
Video insertion of programming frames	26	13
Vietnam, addiction of US military in	5	13
Vietnam, interesting devices developing during	16	7
Viken, Dr. James O, work on MC victims, discoveries	36	7-8,14
Virtual reality helmets	11	3
Virus, synthetic, CIA 1953 interest in	13	5
Viruses, micromachines approaching size of	28	10
Visual subliminal techniques, television	26	13
Visual triggers, Monarch program, examples of	11	19
Voices in the head, chapter describing	16	1-12
Vulpes, Victoria, case of	13	2-16
Waco as an important tool of psyops campaign in US	33	11
Waco, Attorney Paul Wilchers letter to Janet Reno on	33	1-23
Waco, Delta Force operations at	33	12-13
Waco, nerve gas use at	33	14
Waco, the fire in (Chapter)	33	1-23
Walter Reed Institute Microwave Research Dept	29	3
War on Drugs, production of consumption through the	10	8
Warren Commission, conflicting testimony during the	21	3-7
Watkins, J.G., 1947 hypnotic induction experiments of	4	4
Watson, John B., behavioral experiments of	18	3
Wavie files	16	1
Wells, Wesley Raymond, hypnosis experiments, 1930's	4	5
Wendy, Dr., University of Rochester Navy/CIA drug	7	13
West, Dr. Louis Jolyon, University of California	32	1
Western synthetic environment and structure	18	2
Wiener, Norbert, "father of cybernetics"	27	11
Wilcher, bizarre microwave murder of	33	19
Will, human, and commission of anti-social acts	4	7
William Jennings Bryan III, Institute of Hypnosis	19	8
William Lyne, *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*	38	23-24
Without Knowledge or Consent (Chapter)	4	1

MIND CONTROL BIBLIOGRAPHY

INDEX

BRAINWASHING 1
CULT & MC 1
OPERATION MC 1
BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION 2
DRUGS 2
HYPNOSIS 2
HYPNOSIS & MC 2
BRAIN 2
EEG (ELECTROENCEPHALOGRAM) 3
ENDOCRINOLOGY 3
BRAIN ATLAS 3
BRAIN & MEMORY 4
E.S.B. (ELECTRIC STIMULATION OF BRAIN) 4
ESB --> MAN & THERAPY 10
VISUAL PROSTHESES & E.S.B. 16
AUDITORY PROSTHESES & E.S.B. 17
TRANSNASAL APPROACH 17
BIO-TELEMETRY 17
ELE. HOUSE ARREST 21
NAVIGATION SATELLITE 22
ELE->SCALP-> CORTEX (TRANSCUTANEOUS STIM.) 22
HEAD --> MAGNETIC FIELD (MEG) 23
MIND-READING MACHINE 23
MAGNETIC ---> BIOEFFECTS 23
MSB(MAGNETIC STIMULATION OF BRAIN) 23
MOSCOW SIGNAL 24
MICROWAVE & ELF 24
MW --> AUDITORY 30
ACOUSTICS 31
EM --> HEART 31
MW --> EEG 32
MW --> BBB 32
MW --> CA2+ 32
BIORHYTHMS 33
EM WEAPONS 33
INTERNAL SECURITY EQUIPMENT 34
EM -->! VICTIMS 34
ULTRASONICS 34
SUBLIMINAL 34
TINNITUS 35

BRAINWASHING

Brown, J.R.C. , Techniques of Persuasion : From Propaganda to Brainwashing. London: Penguin Boos, 1963. (from J.Into Madness)
Hunter, Edward (1956) Brainwashing.
Sargant, William , Battle for the Mind, Privately printed edition. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984. (from J.Into Madness)
Sargant, William, The Mind Possessed,, Privately printed edition. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984. (from J.Into Madness)
Sargant, William, The Unquiet Mind, Privately printed edition. Ashford: The Invicta Press, 1984. (from J.Into Madness)

CULT & MIND CONTROL

Barker E (1984) The Making of a Moonie:choice of brainwashing? Oxford, NY (HR 121-A1)
Conydon B & Hubbard LR, Jr., messiah or madman ?, Secaucus, N.J., 1987 (GK445-A12)
L.Ron Hubbard LR (1978) The Science of Survival (see "Pain-Drug-Hypnosis" 1951/W.Bowart, p.74)
Robert Eringer (1985) Secret Agent Man. Rolling Stone û£ĕ¬ÃRæ_

OPERATION MIND CONTROL

Intruders (1966?), see 1966 quoted by Senator Edward V. Long
Bowart,Walter (1978) Operation Mind Control and Operation Mind Control, How the Cryptocracy Willl Psychocivilize You (1994)

Burdick, Dorothy (1982) Such Things Are Known. Vantage Press, NY
Bylinsky, Gene (1969) Mood Control. NY: Charles Scribner's Sons.
Chavkin, Samuel (1978) Mind Stealers (Houghton Mifflin CO., Boston)
Collins, Larry (1990) Mind Control Playboy, January 1990
Horrock N (1977) A dat show: 14 year project on controlling human behavior. New York Times 1977.7.21.
Hunt, Linda (1991) Secret Agenda. NY, St.Martin's Press. [ordered 940217]
Keeler, Anna (1989) Remote Mind Control Technology. Full Disclosure 15: 1-14.
Lawrence, Lincoln (1967) Were We Controlled? University Books, NY
London, Perry (1969) Behavior Control. New York, Harper & Row.
Moore, James (1975) Modern People, Aug.18, 1975 (re : RHIC-EDOM)
Marks, John (1977) The Search for the Manchurian Candidate
Pines, Maya (1973) The Brain Changers - Scientists & The New Mind Control. NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Inc.
Ranelagh, John (1986) The Agency. ISBN 0-671-44318-6
Ronald M. McRae (1984) Mind Wars (NY, St.Martin's Press)
Russell-Mannings, Betsy (1989) Mind Control in a Free Society.
Russell-Mannings, Betsy (1989) The Microwave Deception.
Scheflin A & Opton E (1978) The Mind Manipulators. London, Paddington Press.
Schrag, Peter (1978) Mind Control. NY: Pantheon Books. [Burdick(1981)]
Vankin, Jonathan (1990) Conspiracies, Cover-ups and Crimes (Dell)
Valenstein, Elliot (1973) Brain Control : A critical examination of brain stimulation and psychosurgery. NY, Wiley)
US News & World Report 1994.1.24 & letters 2.21. [drug/ele –>]
Watson P (1978) War on the Nind: The Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology. NY: Basic Books. Inc. [Burdick(1981)]
Weberman AJ (1980) Mind Control: The Story of Mankind Research Unlimited, Inc. Covert Action 9, June. [Burdick(1981)]
Zimbardo PG et al (1973) The Mind Is a Formidable Jailer: A Pirandellian Prison. New York Times Magazine 1973.4.8. [Burdick(1981)]

BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION

Alexander (1975) The search for a general theory of behavior. Behav. Sci. 20: 77-100.
BBS (1984) 7: 4 [B.F.Skinner]
Bijou SW & Ribes-Inesta E (1972) Behavior Modification: Issues and Extensions. NY: Academic Press. pp.157. [review: Fed.Prob. 1974, 38:70]
Camellion R (1978) Behavior Modification. Paladin Press. pp.129.
Citizen's Inquiry on PCJII (1974) The future of parole. The Prison Journal. Spring-Summer 1974.
Hilts PJ (1974) Behavior Mod. NY: Harper's Magazine Press. pp.242. [review: Feb. Prob. 1975, 39: 66]
Holland JG (1974) Behavior Modification for prisoners, patients and other people as a prescription for planned society. The Prison Journal. Spring-Summer 1974. [review: Feb.Prob. 1976, 40: 68. re. START Program]

DRUGS

Collins, Anne (1988) In the Sleep Room. ISBN 0-88619-198-X
Lee MA & Shlain B (1985) Acid Dreams: The CIA, LSD, and the Sixties. Groves Press. [Japanese version, 1992, pp.423.]
Thomas, Gordon (1989) Journey Into Madness (NY, Bantam)
Weinstein, Harvey (1988) A Father, A Son and the CIA ISBN 1-55028-116

HYPNOSIS

Edmonston, Jr.,W.E. (1986) The Induction of hypnosis, Ny. ü£SB 237-A11
Gindes, B.C. (1973) New Concepts In Hypnosis [W.Bowart(78), p.62]
Spanos NP (1986) Hypnotic behavior : a social-psychological interpretation of amnesia, analgesia, and "trance logic" BBS 9: 449-502 (BBS 11: 712-716 commentary)
Spiegel, N., Shor, J., & Fishman, S. (1945) An hypnotic ablation technique for the study of personality development, Psychosom, Med. 7, 273.[Penfield(1952)pp.192]
Zeig JK ed (1982) Ericksonian approaches to hypnosis and psychotherapy. NY. (M15-A6249)

HYPNOSIS & MIND CONTROL

Richard Condon (1958) Manchurian Candidate (McGrow Hill, NY)
Donald Bain (1976) The Control of Candy Jones
Claire Sterling (1983)The Time of the Assasin (NY: Holt, Rinehart and Winston)
Paul Henze (1983) The Plot to Kill the Pope (NY: Charles Scribners & Sons)

BRAIN

Bradshaw JL & Nettleton NC (1981) The nature of hemispheric specialization in man. BBS 4: 51-91.
Brodal A (1947) The hippocumpus and the sense of smell. A review. Brain 70: 179-222.
Calder, Nigel () The Mind of Man. [Akwei vs NSA]
Eccles & McIntyre (1951) Plasticity of mammalian monosynaptic reflexes. Nature 167, 466-468.
Ferguson M (1973) The Brain Revolution: The Frontiers of Mind Research. NY: Taplinger Publishing Co.
Heller, John H. (1963) Of Mice, Men and Molecules. [Akwei vs NSA]
Hooper, Judith () The 3-Pound Universe. [Akwei vs NSA]
Johnson, George () In the Palaces of Memory. [Akwei vs NSA]
McGlone J (1980) Sex differences in human brain asymmetry: a critical survey. BBS 3: 215-263.
Panksepp J (1982) Toward a general psychobiological theory of emotions. BBS 5: 407-467. [incl. commentaries of Delgado, Heath]
Ojemann GA (1983) Brain organization for language from the perspective of electrical stimulation mapping. BBS 6: 189-230.
Psaltis D. et al (1990) Holography in artificial neural networks. Nature 343, 325.
Puceetti R & Dykes RW (1978) Sensory cortex and the mind-brain problem. BBS 1: 337-375.
Restak, Richard () The Mind. [Akwei vs NSA]
Teylor TJ & DiScenna P (1984) The topological anatomy of the hippocampus: a clue to its fuction. Brain Res. Bull. 12: 711-719.
Uematsu S et al (1992) Localization of sensorimotor cortex: the influence of Sherrington and Cushing on the modern concept. Neurosurgery 30(6): 904-913.
US News and World Report 1/2/84 [EM brain stim]
Weiner RD (1984) Does electroconvulsive therapy cause brain damage ? BBS 7: 1-53. [incl. comment. by Health]

EEG

Berger, H. (1929) åber das elektrenkephalogramm des menschen, Archiv. Psychiatr.Nervenkrank, 87:527-570.
Berger, H. (1935) åber das elektrenkephalogramm des menschen, Archiv. Psychiatr.Nervenkrank, 103:444-454.
Berger, H. (1938) åber das elektrenkephalogramm des menschen, Archiv. Psychiatr.Nervenkrank, 108:407-431.
Elul, R. (1962) Dipoles of spontaneous activity in the cerebral cortex. Exp. Neurol 6, 285-299.
Elul, R. (1964) Specific site of generation of brain waves. Physiologist 7, 125.
Elul, R. (1972) The genesis of the EEG, Int. Rev. Neurobiology 15, 227-272.
Empson J (1986) Human brainwaves: the psychological significance of the electroencephalogram, Houndmills, Basingstoke, Hampshir, Mcmillan
Lippold O (1973) The Origin of the alpha rhythm, Edinburgh, C.Livingstones

ENDOCRINOLOGY

Benzinger TH (1969) Heat regulation: homeostasis of control temperature in man. Physiol. Rev. 49: 671-759.
Brown GM & Reeichlin S (1972) Psychologic and neural regulation of growth hormone secretion. Psychosom. Med. 34: 45-61.
Curtis GC (1972) Psychosomatics and chronobiology: possible implications of neuroendocrine rhythms. Psychosom. Med. 34: 235-256.
Daughaday WH (1971) Sulfation factor regulation of skeletal growth: a stable mechanism dependent on intermittent growth hormone secretion. Am. J. Med. 50: 277-280.
Deuguchi Takeo (1979) Circadian rhythms of serotomin N-acetyltransferase activity in organ culture of chicken pineal gland. Science 203, 1245-1247.
Delgado JMR & Hanai T (1966) Intracerebral temperature in freely moving cats. Am. J. Physiol. 211: 755-769.
Frohman LA & Bernardis LL (1968) Growth hormone and insulin levels in weanling rats with ventromedial hypothalamic lesions. Endocr. 82: 1125-1132.
Frohman LA & Bernardis LL (1968) Hypothalamic stimulation of growth hormone secretion. Science 580-582.
Ganong WF, et al (1963) Penetration of light into the brain of mammals. Endocr. i72, 962-963.
Grant L et al (1971) Period of adjustment of rats used for experimental studies. Nature 232: 135.
Hanbury EM (1959) Thyroid function after trauma in man. Metabolism 8: 904-912.
Hardy JD (1973) Posterior hypothalamus and the regulation of body temperature. Fed. Proc. 32: 1564-1571.
Martin JB (1972) Plasma growth hormone (GH) in response to hypothalamic or extrahypothalamic electrical stimulation. Endocr. 91: 107-115.
Martin JB (1973) Neural regulation of growth hormone secretion. N. Eng. J. Med. 288: 1384-1393.
Martin JB et al (1973) Plasma GH responses to hypothalamic, hippocampal, and amygdaloid electrical stimulation; effects of variation of stimulation parameters and treatment with alpha methyl-p-tyrosine. Endocr. 91: 1354-1361.
Mason JW (1968) Overall hormonal balance as a key to endocrine organization. Psychosom. Med. 30(II): 791-808.
Mikolajxzyk H (1972) Hormone reactions and changes in endocrine glands under influence of mws. Med. Lotn. 39: 39-51.
Milroy WC & Michaelson SM (1972) Thyroid pathophysiology of microwave radiation. Aerospace Med. 43: 1126-1131.û@
Moore, R.Y., et al (1968) Central control of the pineal gland: visual pathways. Arch Neurol 18 208-218.
Nir, I. (1978) Non-reproductive systems and the pineal gland. J Neural Transm Suppl 13, 225-244.
Preslock, J.P. (1984) The pineal gland: basic implications and clinical correlations, Endocrine Rev. 5, 282.
Rosenthal SH (1973) Alterations in serum thyroxine with cerebral electrotherapy (CET). Arch. Gen. Psychiat. 28: 28-29.
Schally AV et al (1973) Hypothalamic regulatory hormones. Science 179: 341-350.
Smuckler EA & Tata JR (1971) Changes in hepatic neclear DNA-dependent polymerase caused by growth hormone and tri-iodothyronin. Nature 234: 37-39.
Takahashi Y, et al (1968) Growth hormone secretion during sleep. J. Clin. Invest. 47: 2079-2090.
Wurtman, R.J. et al (1963) Melatonin synthesis in the pineal gland : control by light. Science 142, 1071.

BRAIN ATLAS

Abraira, V., & Handler, P. (1978) Computerized stereotaxic brain atlas. Proc.of the DECUS Congress, 5, 539-541.[Delgado,1981]

Berman, A.L. (1968) The Brain Stem of the Cat : A Cytoarchitectonic Atlas with Stereotaxic Coordinates, Univ. of Wisconsin, Madison. [Liebenskind,et al(1973)]

DeLucchi, M.R., Dennis, B.J., & Adey, W.R. (1965) A stereotaxic Atlas of the Chimpanzee Brain (Pan Satyrus), Univ. Calif. Press, Berkeley, Calif., 78 pp.

Jasper, H.H., & Ajmone Marsa, C.A., (1954) Stereotaxic Atlas of the Diencephalon of the Cat, Nat.Res.Council Canada, Ottawa.[Siegel,et al(1972)]

Matsui, T., & Hirano, A. (1978) An atlas of the human brain for computerized tomography. Tokyo, Igaku-Shoin. [Delgado,1981]

Matsuno H et L (1988) Microsurgical anatomy of the posterior fossa cisterus. Neurosurgery 23(1): 58.

Oka et al (1985) Microsurgical anatomy of the sperficial veins of the cerebrum. Neurosurgery 17(5): 711.

Schaltenbrand, G. & Bailey, P. (Eds.) (1959) Introduction to stereotaxis with an atlas of the human brain. Grune and Stratton, New York, 493 p.

Snider, R.S., & Lee, J.C. (1961) A stereotaxic atlas of the monkey brain (Macaca mulatta). Univ. Chicago Press, Chicago.

Timurkaynak et al (1986) Microsurgical anatomy of the lateral ventricles. Neurosurgery 19(5)

Yamamoto et al (1981) Microsurgical anatomy of the 3rd ventricle. Neurosurgery 8(3)

BRAIN & MEMORY

Clark CR & Geffen GM (1989) Corpus callosum surgery and recent memory: a revew.Brain 112: 165-175.

Drachman DA & Arbit J (1966) Memory and the hippocampal complex. Is memory a multipel process ? Arch Neurol 15: 52-61.

Drachman D & Ommaya AK (1964) Memory and the hippocampal complex. Arch Neurol 10: 411-425.

Heit G, Smith ME, Halgren E (1990) Neuronal activity in human medial temporal lobe during recognition memory. Brain 113: 1093-1112.

Human memory (1987) Human Neurobiology 6(2) cf. Kesner, R.P. (1973) A neural system analysis of memory storage and retrieval. Psychlogical Bulletin, 80, 177-203.

McDonough, Jr., J.H. & Kesner, R.P. (1971) Ammesia produced by brief electrical stimulation of the amygdala or dorsal hippocampus in cats. J. comp. Physiol. Psychol. 77, 171-178.

McGaugh, J.L., & Dawson, R.G. (1966) Time-dependent processes in memory storage.Science, 153, 1351-1358. [–> rat]

Milner, B. (1954) Intellectual fuction of the temporal lobes, Psychol. Bull. 51, 42-62.

Routtenbert, A., & Holzman, N. (1973) Memory disruption by electrical stimulation of substantia nigra, pars compacta. Science, 181, 83-86. [–> rat]

Spanis, C.W. (1981) A.J. Psychiat 138(9) , 1177. [ECT & memory]

Squire LR (1986) Mechanisms of memory. Science 232: 1612-1619.

Squire LR (1992) Memory and the hippocampus: a sythesis from findings with rats, monkeys and humans. Psychol. Rev. 99: 195-231, 582.

Tulving, E., & Watkins, M.J. (1973) Structure of memory traces. Psychological Review, 82, 261-275.ü£ü@1(1):1894.1- Z52-A39

Wilburn, M.W., & Kesner, R.P. (1972) Differential amnestic effects produced by electrical stimulation of the caudate nucleus and non-specific thalamic system. Experimental Neurology, 34, 45-50. [–> cat]

Wyers, E.J., Peeke, V.S., Willison, J.S. & Herz, M.J. (1968) Retroactive impairment of passive avoidance learning by stimulation of the caudate nucleus. Exp. Neurol. 22, 350-366.

Wyers, E.J., & Deadwyler, S.A. (1971) Duration and nature of retrograde amnesia produced by stimulation of caudate nucleus. Physiology and Behavior, 6, 97-103. [–> rat]

ELECTRICAL STIMULATION OF THE BRAIN (E.S.B.)

Adams, D.B, (1979) Brain mechanisms for offense, defense, and submission. he Behavioral and Brain Sciences, 2, 201-241.[Gallistel,1981]

Adams, J.R. & Prout, B.J. (1962) Transistorized R.F.-coupling unit for biological stimulators. J. Physiol., 162, 9P-10P.

Adey, W.R., Kado, R.T., & Didio, J. (1962) Impedance measurements in brain tissue of animals using microvolt signals.Exptl. Neurol. 5, 47-66.

Agnew, W.F., Yuen, T.G.H., Puderz, R.H., & Bullara, L.A.(1975) Electrical stimulation of the brain . IV. Untrastructural studies. Surgical Neurology, 4, 438-448. (from Delgado, Patterson ed., 1981)

Akert, K. & Andersson, B. (1951) Acta Physiol. Scand. 22, 281.[–> cat => sleep]

Akert, K., Koella, W.P. & Hess, R. (1952) Sleep produced by electrical stimulation of the thalamus. Am. J. Physiol. 168T, 260-267.

Akimoto, H., Nomura, T., Matsui, L., Ishikawa, O., Nakagawa, K. & Mitsushita, T. (1954) On the syndrome induced by electrical stimulation on thalamus. [=> man's sleep] Physiological and Clinical Studies on the Diencephalon. Igaku Shoin, Tokyo.

Akimoto, H., Takeuchi, S., Shozuka, K. & Negishi,K. (1955) On recruiting Response induced by continuous electrical stimulation in thalamus of cat. Psychiatr. Neurol. Jap. 56.

Akimoto, H., Yamaguchi, N., Okabe, K., Nakagawa, T., Abe, K., Torii, H., & Masahashi, K. (1956) On the sleep induced through electrical stimulation on dog thalamus. Folia Psychiat. et Neurol. Japon. 10, 117-146.

Alexander, M., & Perachio, A.A. (1973) The influence of target sex and dominance on evoked attack in rhesus monkeys. Am.J.of Physical Anthropology, 38, 543-547.

Alonso de Florida, F., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1958) Lasting behavioral and EEG changes in cats induced by prolonged stimulation of amygdala. Am.J.of Physiol.193, 223-229.

Anand, B.K., & Brobeck, J.R.(1951) Hypothalamic control of food intake in rats and cats.Yale J.of Biology and Medicine, ,Vol.24, 123-140.

Anand, B.K., & Dua, S. (1956) Electrical stimulation of the limbic system of brain (visceral brain) in the waking animals. Indian J. Med. Res. 44, 107-119.

Andrian, E.D. (1921) Journal of Physiology (London), Vol.55, 193.

Anomymous.(1974) Electrical stimulation of the brain.Lancet, 2. 562-564.

Asanuma H & Sakata H (1967) Functional organization of cortical efferent system examined with focal depth stimulation in cats. J. Neurophysiol. 30: 35-54.

Baldwin, M. (1960) Electrical stimulation of the mesial temporal region. In Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain, 159-76 (Ramey, E.R., O'Doherty, D.S., Eds., Hoeber, New York, 423pp.)

Bonazzola, S., & Gualtierotti, (1960) Wireless tele-stimulation of the cat's motor cortex with constant stimulation of the cat's motor cortex with constant stimuli. J.Physiol. 150, 1-2.

Buchwald, N.A., & Ervin, R.R. (1956),Behavioral and action potential responses to stimulation of subcortical structures in the unaesthetized cat, Fed.Proc., 15, 27.

Bursten, B. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1958) Positive reinforcement induced by intracerebral stimulation in the monkey. J. comp. physiol. Psycho., 51, 6-10.

Campbell KSA, Ivans G & Gallistel CR (1985) A microcomputer-based method for physiologically interpretable measurement of the rewarding efficacy of brain stimulation. Physiology and Behavior. 35: 395-403.

Campbell, P.K., Jones, K.E., Huber, R.J., Horch, K.W., & Norman, R.A. (1991) A silicon-based, three-dimentional neural interface: manufacturing processes for an intracortical electrode array. IEEE Trans. BME, 38, No.8, 758-768.

Cannon. B. (1933) A method of stimulating autonomic nerves in the unanesthetized cat with observations on the motor and sensory effects. Am.J.Physiol, 105, 366-372.

Chaffee, E.L. & Light, R.U. (1934) Electrical excitation of the nervous system - ntroducitn a new system of remote control.Science 79, 299-300.

Chaffee, E.L., & Light, R.U. (1934) A method for the remote control of electrical stimulation of the nervous system, I. The history of electrical excitation. Yale J. of Biol. & Med., 7, 83-128. 83;441[coil --> coil]

Chaffee, E.L. & Light, R.U. (1935) Supplementary notes on the remote control of electrical stimulation of the nervous system.Yale J. Biol. Med., 7, 441-450.

Chardack, W.M., Gage, A.A., & Greatbatch, W. (1960) Surgery, 48, 643-654.[heart pacemaker w/o charging from outside]

Clarke, Edwin, & Kenneth Dewhurst (1972) An Illustrated history of brain function, Berkeley, University of California Press,, 154p. û£(SC 364-37) Localisation. 113-148.

Clark, G. & Ward, J.W. (1949) Responses elicited by combined stimulation of pairs of fixed electrodes in the unanesthetized monkey. Am.J.Physiol.,158, 474.

Clark, S.L. & Ward, J.W. (1937) Electrical stimulation of the cortex cerebri of cats: Responses elicitable in chronic experiments through implanted elctrodes. Arch.Neurol.Pshychiat., 38, 927. [small induction coil]

Clark, S.L. (1941) Science, 94, 187.[the first electrode implant by Ewald]

Clark, S.L. & Ward, J.W. (1941) The influence of stimulus strength and duration on the responses from cortical stimulation through i mplanted electrodes. Am.J.Physiol., 131,650.

Clarke RH, (1920) Investigation of the Central Nercous System, Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, Md., pt. I, pp. 1-159, plates I-XXVII. [the stereotaxic instrument,Lilly(1958)]

Cohen BD, Brown, G.W., & Brown, M.L. (1956) Avoidance learning motivated by hypothalamic stimulation. Fed. Proc. 15, 37.

Cooper R (1966) Toxic effects of intracerebral electrodes. Med. biol. Engng 4, 575-581.

Crow, H.J., Cooper, R., & Philips, D.G. (1961) Controlled multifocal frontal leucotomy for psychiatric illness. J. Neurol. Neurosurg. Psychiat. 24, 353-360.

Curry,M.J.,"The effects of stimulating the somatic sensory cortex on single neurones in the posterior group (PO) of the cat," Brain Research, 44 (1972) 463-481.

Delgado, J.M.R., & Livingston, R.B. (1948) Some respiratory, vascular and thermal responses to stimulation of orbital surface of frontal lobe. J. of Neurophysiology, 11, 39-55.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1952) Permanent implantation of multilead electrodes in the brain. Yale J. of Biol.Med., 24, 351-358.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1952) Responses evoked in waking cat by electrical stimulation of motor cortex. Amer. J. Physiol., 171, 436-446.

Delgado, J.M.R., Hamlin, H., & Chapman, W.P. (1952) Technique of intracranial electrode implacement for recording and stimulation and its possible therapeutic value in psychotic patients. Confinia Neurologica, 12, 315-319.

Delgado, J.M.R. & Anand, B.K. (1953) Increase of food intake induced by electrical stimulation of the lateral hypothalamus. Am. J. Physiol., 172, 162-168.

Delgado, J.M.R., Roberts, W.W. & Miller, N.E. (1954) Learning motivated by electrical stimulation of the brain. Am. J. Physiol., 179, 587-593.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1955) Cerebral structures involved in transmission and elaboration of noxious stimulation. J. Neurophysiol.18, 261-275.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1955) Evaluation of permanent implantation of electrodes within the brain. EEG Clin. N. 7, 637-644.

Delgado, J.M.R., Rosvold, H.E., & Looney, E. (1956) Evoking conditioned fear by electrical stimulation of subcortical structures in the monkey brain .J. comp. physiol. Psychol. 49, 373-380.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1957) Brain stimulation in the monkey: technique and results (motion picture). Fed. Proc. 16, 29.

Delgado JMR & Hamlin H (1958) Direct recording of spontaneous and evoked seizures in epileptics. EEG Clin. N. 10: 463-486.û£ôiæ_ê¶

Delgado, J.M.R. (1959) Prolonged stimulation of brain in awake monkeys, J.Neurophysiol., 22, 458-475.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1959) Transistor timing stimulator. EEG clin. N.

Delgado, J.M.R., & Hamlin, H. (1960) Spontaneous and evoked electrical seizures in animals and humans. In E.R.Ramey & E.S.O'Doherty (Eds.), Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain, New York, Hoeber, pp.133-158.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1960) Emotional behavior in animals and humans. Psych. Res. Rep. Am. psychiat. Ass., 12, 259-271.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1961) Chronic implantation of intracerebral electrodes in animals. In D.E. Sheer (Ed.), Electrical stimulation of the brain.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1961) Evolution of repeated hippocampal seizures in the cat.EEG clin. N. 13, 722-733.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1962) Pharmacological Analysis of Central Nervous Action. Oxford: Pergamon, pp.265-292.

Delgado JMR & Hamlin H (1962) Depth electrography. Confin. Neurol. 22: 228-235.

Delgodo, J.M.R. (1963) Telemetry and telestimulation of the brain. In: L.Slater (Ed.), Biotelemetry, Pergamon, New York, 231-249.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1963) Cerebral heterostimulation in a monkey colony. Science 141, 161-63.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1963) Social rank and radio-stimulated aggressiveness in monkeys. J. Nervous and Mental Diseases 114, 383-90.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1963) Effect of brain stimulation on task-free situations. EEG clin. N. Suppl. 24, 260-280.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1964) Electrodes for extracellular recording and stimulation. In N.L.Nastuk (ed.), Electrophysiological methods, Vol. V, Part A: Physical techniques in biological research. New York: Academic Press.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1964) Free behavior and brain stimulation. Int.Rev. Neurobiology, 6, 349-449. û£ôiæ_ê¶èwòõ

Delgado, J.M.R. (1965) Sequential behavior repeatedly induced by red nucleus stimulation in free monkeys Science, 148 , 1361-1363.

Delgado –>!! bull. New York Times 1965.5.17 p.1 & 20.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1965) Evolution of physical control of the brain, New York, Am.Museum of Natural History û£ôiæ_

Delgado, J.M.R. (1965) Chronic radiostimulation of the brain in monkey colonies. Proc. Intern. Union Physiol. Sci. 4, 365-371.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1966) Emotions. Self-Selection Psychology Textbook. W.C.Brown.Cubuque, Iowa, 56pp.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1966) Aggressive behavior evoked by radio stimulation in monkey colonies. Amer. Zool., 6, 669-681.

Delgado, J.M.R., & Mir, D. (1966) Infatigability ofpupillary constriction evoked by hypothalamic stimulation in monkeys. Neurology, 16, 939-950.[Doty&Bartlett,1981]

Delgado JMR (1967) Man's intervention in intracerebral functions. IEEE Int. Conv. Rec. 15(9): 143-150.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1967) Brain Function,5, 171.[Lancet, 1974]

Delgado, J.M.R. (1967) Limbic system and free behavior. In Progr. Brain Res. 27, 48-68.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1967) Social rank and radio-stimulated aggressiveness in monkeys. J. Nerv. Ment. Dis. , 144, 383-390.

Delgado, J.M.R., Mark, V., Sweet , W., Ervin, F., Weiss, G., Bach-y-Rita, G., & Hagiwara, R. (1968) Intracerebral radio stimulation and recording in completely free patients, J.of Nervous and Mental Disease, 147, 329-340.û£ôiæ_ê¶

Delgado,J.M.R. (1969) Physical Control of the Mind (Harper and Row)

Delgado,J.M.R. (1969) "Offensive-defensive behavior in free monkeys and chimpanzees induced by brain radio stimulation." In S.Garattini and E.BSigg(Eds.), Aggressive Behavior. Proceedings of the Symposium on the Biology of Aggressive Behavior, Milan, May, 1968, Excerpta Medica, Amsterdam, 109-119.

Delgado,J.M.R., Bradley, R.J., Johnston, V.S., Weiss, G., and Wallace, J.D. (1969) Implantation of Multilead Electrode Assemblies and Radio Stimmulation of the Brain in Chimpanzees. Technical Documentary Report No. ARL-TR-69-2, Holloman Air Force Base, NM, 19pp.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1969) Radio stimulation of the brain in primates and in man. Anesth. Anlag. 48, 529-543.û£ôiæ_ê¶

Delgado,J.M.R.,and Mir, D. (1969) Fragmental organization of emotional behavior in the monkey brain, Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci., 159 , 731-751.

Delgado,J.M.R. (1970) Multichannel Transdermal Stimulation of the Brain. Technical Documentary Report No. ARL-TR-70-1, Holloman AirForce Base, NM, 24pp.

Delgado,J.M.R., V.S., Johnston, J.D.Wallace & R.J. Bradley (1970) Operant conditioning of amygdals spindling in the free chimpanzee,Brain Research,22,347-362.

Delgado,J.M.R., Maria Luisa Rivera & Diego Mir (1971) Repeated Stimulation of Amygdala in Awake Monkeys, Brain Research, Vol.27, No.1

Delgado, J.M.R. & Bracchitta, H. (1972) Free and instrumental behavioral in monkeys during radio stimulation of the caudate nucleus. Int. J. Psychobiol., 2, 233-248.

Delgado JMR (1972) [re. freewill] The Humanist. 1972. [Camellion (1978)]

Delgado, J.M.R., Obrador, S., & Martin-Rodriquez, J.G. (1973) Two-way radio communication with the brain in psychosurgical patients, In L.V.Laitinen & Livingston (ed.), Surgical approaches in psychiatry, Lancaster, England, Medical & Technical Publishing.

Delgado, J.M.R., Sanguinetti, A.M., & Mora, G. (1973) Aggressive behavior in gibbons modifies by caudate and central gray stimulation. Interntional Research Comunications System Medical Science, Spt., 16-2-32.

Delgado,J.M.R. & et al.(1975) Two-Way Transdermal Communication with the Brain, Am.Psychologist , March 1975.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1975) Inhibitory systems and emotions. In Levi Emotions - their parameters and measurement, pp.183-204 (Raven Press, New York 1975).

Delgado, J.M.R., Delgado-Garcia, J.M., & Grau, C. (1976) Mobility controlled by feedback cerebral stimulation in monkeys. Physiol. Behav. 16, 43-49.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1977) Therapeutic programmed stimulation of the brain in man. In W.Sweet, S.Obrador, & J.G. Martin-Rodriguez (Eds.), Neurosurgical treatment in psychiatry, pain, and epilepsy, Baltimore, MD, University Park Press, pp.615-637.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1977-78) Instrumentation, Working hypotheses, and clinical aspects of neurostimulation. Applied Neurophysiology, 40, 88-110.

Del Pozo, F., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1978) Hybrid stimulator for chronic experiments. IEEE Trans. on Biomedical Engineering, BME-25, 92-94.[Delgado,1981]

Dempsey, E.W. & Morison, R.S. (1942) The production of thythmically recurrent cortical potentials after localized thalamic stimulation. Am. J. Physiol. 135, 293-300..

Dhume, R.A., & Gogate, M.G. (1974) A miniature stimulator for behavioral studies in freely moving cats. Indian J. of Physiology and Pharmacology, 18, 123-125.

Donaldson, N. (1988) Comments on "Efficient transdermal links with coupling-insensitive gain", IEEE Trans. BME, 35, No.4, 280-281.

Doty, R.W. (1969) Electrical stimulation of the brain in behavioral context. Annual Review of Psychology, 20, 289-320.

Duffy, E. (1934) Is emotion a mere term of convenience ? Psychol. Rev. 41, 103-104.

Duffy, E. (1941) An explanation of "emotional" phenomena without the use of the concept "emotion." J. Genet. Psychol. 25, 283-293.

Dymond, A.M. (1976) Characteristics of the metal-tissue interface of stimulation electrodes, IEEE Trans. Biomed. Eng., BME-23, 274-280, July, 1976.

Egger, M.D., & Flynn, J.P. (1962) Amygdaloid suppression of hypothalamically elicited attack behavior. Science 136, 43-44.

ElenfthÀriou, B.E., & Scott, J.P. (Eds.). (1971) The physiology of aggression and defeat, New York, Plenum.[Delgado,1981]

Fender, F.A. (1936) Am.J.Physiol., 116, 47. [radio –> coil]

Fender, F.A. (1937) Prolonged splanchnic stimulation . Proc. of the Society for Exp.Biol.and Med., 36, 396-398.[radio --> coil]

Fender, F.A. (1937) Epileptiform convulsions from"remote" excitation. Arch.Neurol.Psychiat., 38, 259-267.

Fender, F.A. (1941) Arch.Neurol.Psychiat., 45, 617. [radio --> coil]

Flynn, J.P. & Wasman, M. (1960) Learning and cortically evoked movement during propagated hippocampal afterdischarges. Science 131, 1607-1608.

Flynn, J.P., Wasman, M., and Egger, M.D. (1963) "Behavior during propagated hippocampal after discharges. In EEG and Behavior. G.H.Glaser, Ed. Basic Books, New York, 134-148. [Delgado et al (1971)]

Flynn, J.P., Edwards, S.B. & Bandler, Jr., r.J. (1971) Changes in sensory and motor systems during centrally elicited attack. Behav.Sci., 16, 1-19.

Folkow, H. (1952) Impulse frequency in sympathetic vasomotor fibres correlated to the release and elimination of the trasmitter. Acta Physiologica Scandinavica, 25, 49-76.[Delgado,1981]

Fonberg, E., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1961) J.Neurophysiol., 24, 651.[Lancet,1974]

Frits, G., & Hitzig, E., (1870) Ueber die elektrische erregbarkeit des grosshirns. Archives fuer Anatomie und Physiologie, 37, 300-332.

Furman, S., & Schwedel, J.B. (1959) N.Engl.J.Med., 261, 943-948. [the first L-T heart pacemaker] ŭ£îçiå

Galambos R (1961) Fed. Proc. 20: 603-608. [self-stimulation -->?]

Galvani, L. (1791) De viribus electricitatis in motu musculari. Commentarius. Proc.Academia Bologna, 7, 363-418.

Geddes, L.A., & Hoff, H.E. (1971) IEEE Spectrum, 8, 12,, 38-46.[Galvani vs.Volta]

Geddes LA (1984) A short history of the electrical stimulaiton of excitable tissue, including electrotherapheutic applications. The Physiologist, Supp. 2: 1-47.

Gengerelli, J.A. (1948) Stimulation of the brain by means of radiant energy. Amer. Psychol., 3, 340.

Gengerelli, J.A.,& Kallejian,, (1950) Remote stimulation of the brain in the intact animal. J. Psychol., 29, 263-269.

Garattini, S., & Sigg, E.B. (1969) (Eds.) Aggressive behavior. Amsterdam, Excerpta Med. [Delgado,1981]

Geschwind N (1979) Specializations of the human brain. Sci. Am. 241: 180.

Goddard, G.V., McIntyre, D.C., and Leech, C.K.," A permanent change in brain function resulting from daily electrical stimulation," Exp. Neurol., 25, 1969, 295-330.

Gold, J.H., Stoeckle, H., Schuder, J.C., West, J.A., & Holland, J.A. (1974) Selective tissue stimulation with microimplant. Transactions in Ame.Soc.for Artificial Internal Organs., 20, 430-436. [Delgado,1981]

Greer, M.A. & Riggle, G.C. (1957) Apparatus for chronic stimulation of the brain of the rat by radiofrequency transmitssion, EEG clin. Neurophysiol., 19, 151-156.

Greig, J. & Ritchie, A. (1944-45) A simple apparatus for remote nerve stimulation in the unanesthetized animal. J.Physiol., 103, 8P. [radio --> coil]

Harris, G.W., "The innervation and actions of the neuro-hypophsis; An investigation using the method of remote-control stimulation," Philosophical Transactions, 232B, 1946-47, 385-441. [Delgado, 1975]

Herberg, L.J., and Watkins, P.J. (1966) Epileptiform seizures induced by hypothalamic stimulation in the rat: resistance to fits following fits Nature, 209, 295-330.?

Hess, W.R. (1928) Stammganglien-Reizversuche. Berichte Gesamte weber die Physiologie und Experimentelle Pharmakologie, 42, 554-55.

Hess, W.R. (1928) Arch. f. Psychiat. 86, 289.

Hess, W.R. (1929) Arch. f. Psychiat. 88, 813.

Hess, W.R. (1931) Compt. rend. Soc. de biol. 107, 1333.

Hess, W.R. (1932) Beitrage zur Physiologie d. Hirnstammes. I. Die Methodik der lokalisierten Reizung und Ausschaltung subkortikaler Hirnabschnitte. Leipzig, Thieme.

Hess, W.R. (1944) Das Schlafsyndrom als Folge dienzephalen Reiaung. Helv. Physiol. Pharmacol. Acta, 2, 305.[ele -> cat => sleep]

Hess, W.R. (1954) Das Zwischenhirn (2nd ed.).Basel, Schwabe. [Gallistel,1981]

Hess, W.R. (1954) Diencephalon-autonomic and Extrapyramidal Functions. Gune and Stratton, New York.

Hess, W.R. (1957) The Functional Organization of the Diencephalon. Grune and Stratton, New York. [ele --> cat's tha => sleep]

Higgins, J.W., Mahl, G.F., Delgado, J.M.R., & Hamlin, H. (1956) Behavioral changes during intracerebral electrical stimulation. Arch.Neurol.Psychiatry, 76, 399-419.

Hoagland, H.A. (1940) A simple method for recording electrocorticogram in animals without opening the skull. Science, 92, 537-538.

Hochmair, E. (1984) System optimization for improved accuracy in transcutaneous signal and power transmision, IEEE Trans. BME, 31, No.2, 177-186.

Honda, Y., et al (1989) Development of percutaneous intramuscular electrode for multichannel FFS system. IEEE Trans. BME, 36, No.7, 705.

Hunter, J. & Jasper, H.H. (1949) Effects of thalamic stimulation in unanesthetized animals. EEG Clin.Neurophysiol., 1, 305.

Jasper, H.H. (1960) Unspecific thalamocortical relations. Handbook Physiol.,Sect. 1, Neruophysiol. 2, 1307-1319.

Jechorek, W. & von Holst, E. (1956) Fernreizung freibeweglicher Tiere. Naturwissenschaften, 43, 455.

Kaada, B.R., Anderson, P.A., & Jansen, J. (1954) Stimulation of the amygdaloid nuclear complex in unanesthetized cats. Neurology. 4, 48-64.

Kahn, A. & Greatbatch, W. (1974) Physiologic electrodes; in Ray Medical engineering, pp.1073-1082 (Year Book, Chicago 1974).

Kelty, M.F. (1975) Study of the use of psychosurgery in the United States. Information request of the National Committe for Protection of Human Subjects of Biomedical and Behavioral Research. 4th Wld Congr. Psychiat. Surg., Madrid 1975.[Delgado 1977/78]

King, M.B., & Hoebel, B.G., (1968) Killing elicited by brain stimulation in rats. Comm.in Behav.Biol., 2, 73-177.[Alex&Perachio,1973]

Klemm,W.R."Effects of electric stimulation of brain stem reticular formation on hippocampal theta rhythm and muscle activity in unanesthetized, cervical- and midbrain-transected rats," Brain Research, 41 (1972) 331-344.

Kremer WF (1947) Autonomic and somatic reactions induced by stimulation of the cingular gyrus in dogs. J. Neurophysiol. 10: 371-379.

Lafferty, M.M. & Farrell, J.F. (1949) A technique for chronic remote nerve stimulation. Science, 110, 140-141. [radio ---> implanted coil]

Lashley, K.S. (1938) The thalamus and emotion. Psychol. Rev. 45, 42-61.

Leeper, R.W. (1948) A motivational therory of emotion to replace "emotion as disorganized response," Psychol. Rev. 55, 5-21.

Lewandowsky, M. (1903) Arch. Anat. Pshysiol., Lpz., p.129. [remote control]

Liebeskind, John C. et al.,"Analgesia fro electrical stimulation of the periaqueductal gray matter in the cat: behavioral observations and inhibitory effects on spinal cord interneurons," Brain Research, 50 (1973) 441-446.

Lilly, J.C., (1950) A.I.E.E.-I.R.E. Conference on Nucleonics and Medicine (S-33) (American Institute of Electrical Engineers, New York), pp.37-43.

Lilly, J.C., (1950) Electroenceph.Clin.Neurophysiol., 2,, 358.

Lilly, J.C., (1950) Proc. 18th Internat. Physiol. Cong., Copenhagen, p.340.

Lilly, J.C., (1950) Milbank Memorial Fund Symposium: The Biology of Mental Health and Disease, New York: Hoeber, p.206.

Lilly, J.C., Austin, G.M., & Chambers, W.W. (1952) Threshold movements produced by excitation of cerebral cortex and efferent fibers with some parametric regions of rectangular current pulses (cats and monkeys). J.of Neurophysiology, 15, 319-342.

Lilly, J.C., (1953) Fed.Proc., 12, 87.

Lilly, J.C., (1953) Proc. 19th Internat. Physiol. Cong., Montreal, p.564.

Lilly, J.C., (1953) Significance of motor maps of the sensorimotor cortex in the conscious monkey, Federation Proc. 12, No.1, 285.

Lilly, J.C., Hughes, J.R., Alvord, E.C., Jr., & Galkin, T.W. (1955) Brief noninjurious electric waveforms for stimulation of brain. Science, 121, 468-469.û£Z53-A48

Lilly, J.C., Hughes, J.R., Galkin, T.W., & Alvord, E.C., (1955) EEG Clin.Neurophysiol., 7, 458.

Lilly, J.C., (1955) Univ.of Wisconsin Symposium: Interdisciplinary Research in the Behavioral, Biological, and Biochemical Sciences, August 1955, Madison: Univ. Wisconsin Press.

Lilly, J.C., Hughes, J.R., & Galkin, T.W., (1956) Fed.Proc., 15, 119.

Lilly, J.C., Hughes, J.R., & Galkin, T.W., (1956) Proc. 20th Internat. Physiol. Cong.,p.567.

Lilly, J.C., (1956) Science, 124, 937.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) Learning Elicited by Electric Stimulation of Subcortical Regions in the Unanesthetized Monkey, Science, 125, 748.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) Fed.Proc., 16, 81.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) paper presented at the "intern, Symposium on Reticular Formation of the Brain," Detroit, Mich.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) Proc. 1st Internat. Cong. Neurol. Sciences, 4th Internat. Cong. Electroencephalog. & Clin.Neurophysio., Brussels, p.161.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) International Symposium on the Reticular Formation of the Brain, Detroit, Mich., March 1957.

Lilly, J.C., (1957) Conference on Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain, Washington, D.C., June 1957.

Lilly, J.C. (1958) Henry Ford Hospital Intern. Symposium on the reticular formation of the Brain, Boston; Little. [ele –> monkey => self-stim]

Lilly, J.C. (1958) Electrode and cannulae implantation in the brain by a simple percutaneous method. Science, 127, 1181-1182.

Lilly, J.C., (1958) Development of a Double-Table-Chair Method of Restraining Monkeys for Physiological and Psychological Research, J.Appl.Physiol., 12, 134.

Lilly, J.C. (1958) Correlations between neurophysiological activity in the cortex ans short-term behavior in the monkey. In Biological and Biochemical Bases on Behavior, 83-100 (HARlow , H.F., Woolsey, C.N., Eds., Univ. Wisconsin Press, Madison, 476pp.)

Lilly JC (1958) Some considerations regarding basic mechanisms of positive and negative types of motivations. Am. J. Psychiat. 115: 498.

Lilly, J.C. (1960) Injury and excitation of brain by electrical current. In E.R. Ramey and D.S.O'Doherty (Eds), Electrical Studies of the unanesthetized brain, Hoeber, New York, pp.96-105.

Lilly, J.C. (1961) Injury and excitation by electric currents. A. The balanced pulse-pair waveform. In D.E.Sheer (Ed.), Electrical Stimulation of the Brain, Univ. Texas Press, Austin, 60-64.

Lilly JC & Miller AM (1962) Operant conditioning of the bottlenose dolphin with electrical stimulation of the brain. J. Comp. and Physiol. Psychol. 55: 73.

Lilly, J.C.(1978) The Scientist, (Philadelphia, J.B.Lippincott Company)

Ling, F., & Gerard, R.W. (1949) The normal membrane potential of frog sartorious fibers. J.of Cellular and Comparative Physiology, 34, 383-396.[Swett,1981] 'microelectrodes'

Loucks, R.B. (1933) Preliminary report of a technique for stimulation or destruction of tissues beneath the integument and the establishing of conditioned reactions with faradization of the cerebral cortex. J.comp.Psychol, 16, 439-44.

Loucks, R.B. (1934) A technique for faradic stimulation of tissues beneath the integument in the absence of conductors penetrating the skin. J.comp.Psychol.,18, 305.

Loucks, R.B. (1959) The erosion of electrodes by small currents. EEG clin. Neurophysiol. 11, 823-826.

MacDonnell, M., & Flynn, J.P. (1966) Control of sensory fields by stimulation of hypothalamus. Science, 152, 1406-1408. [Alex&Perachio,197

MacLean PD (1949) Psychosom. Med. 11, 338-353. [–> emotion]

MacLean PD & Delgado JMR (1953) Electrical and chemical stimulation of frontotemporal portion of limbic system in the waking animal. EEG clin.N., 5, 91-100.ü£ôiæ_ê¶

MacLean PD, Flanigan, S., Flynn, J.P., Kim, C., & Stevens, J.R. (1955-56) Hippocampal function: tentative correlations of conditioning, EEG, drug, and radioautographic studies. Yale J. Biol. Med. 28, 380-395.

MacLean PD et al (1959) Trans. Am. Neurol. Ass. 84: 105.
[-> septal =>sex] ü£É_i_ê¶ü@82-97, 99-106

MacLean PD, Ploog, D.W. (1962) Cerebral representation of penile erection.
J. Neurophysiol., 25, 29-55.

Mauro, A., Davey, W.L.M., & Scher, A.M. (1950) Central nervous stimulation by implanted high frequency receiver.. Fed.Proc. Balt.,9, 558.

Maurus, M., Mitra, J., Ploog, D.W. (1965) Cerebral representationof the clitoris in ovariectomized squirrel monkeys. Exptl. Neurol., 13, 283-88.

Maurus, M.(1967) Neue fernreizapparatus fur kleine primaten, Naturwissen., 54, 593.

Maurus, M. & Ploog, D. (1971) Social signals in squirrel monkeys: Analysis by cerebral radio stimulation. Experimental Brain Research, 12, 171-183. [Delgado,1981]

Maxim, P.E. (1972) Behavioral effects of telestimulating hypothalamic reinforcement sites in freely moving Rhesus monkeys, Brain Research, 42, 243-262.

Maxim, P.E., & Spelman, F.A. (1975) A radio-controlled constant current biphasic stimulator system for primate studies. Physiology and Behavior, 14, 663-667.

Mayer, D.J., Wolfle, T.L., Akil, H., Carder, B., & Liebeskind, J.D. (1971) Analgesia resulting from electrical stimulation in the brain stem of the rat, Science 174, 1351-1354.

Mazars, G, Merienne, L., & Cioloca, C. (1974) Implantable thalamus stimulators for the management of some types of intractable pain. Neurochirurgie 20, 117-124.

McNeal, D.R. (1977) 2000 years of electrical stimulation. In F.T.Hambrecht & J.B. Reswick (Ed.), Functional electrical stimulation. New York: Dekker, pp.3-25.[Swett,1981] ES therapy for pain by Roman.û£SC71-184

Mihailovic, L., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1956) Electrical stimulation of the monkey brain with various frequencies and pulse dirations. J.Neurophysiology, 19, 21-36.

Moniz, E. (1936) Tentatives operatoires dans le traitment de certaines psychoses. Paris: Masson & Cie. [lobotomy]

Morison, R.S., & Dempsey, E.W. (1942) A study of thalamo-cortical relations. Am. J. Physiol. 135, 281-292.

Mortiner JT (1983) Electrical excitability: the basis for applied neural control. IEEE EMB 2(2): 12.

Moyer, K.E. (1976) (Ed.). Physiology of aggression and implications for control, New York, Raven.

Nakao, H. (1958) Emotional behavior produced by hypothalamic stimulation.
Am J. Physiol. 194, 411-418.

Nathan, Peter (1983) The Nervous System. Oxford New York. Oxford University Press. [Extract RCVD from RN. 1994.2.5]

Neafsey EJ,, Bold EL et al (1986) The organization of the rat motor cortex: a microstimulation mapping study. Brain Res. Rev. 11: 77-96.

Newman, H., Fender, F., & Saunders, W. (1937) High frequency transmission of stimulating impulses. Surgery (St.Louise), 2, 359-362.[radio --> coil]

Olds, J., & Milner, P. (1954) Positive reinforcement produced by electrical stimulation of the septal area and other regions of the rat brain. J.of Comp.and Physiol.Psychology, 47, 419-428.

Olds, J. (1954) A neural model for sign-gestalt theory. Psychol.Rev.,61, 59-72.

Olds, J. (1956) Pleasure centers in the brain, Scientific American, 195, 105-116.

Olds, J. (1958) Satiation effects in self-stimulation of the brain, J.comp. physiol. Psychol., 51, 675-678.[Delgado et al (1971)]

Olds, J. (1960) In Electrical studies on the unanesthetized brain, E.R.Ramey & D.S.Doherty, Eds., Harper, New York, pp.17.

Olds, J. (1962) Hypothalmic substaits of reward . Physiol. Rev. 42, 554.

Olds, M.E. & A.Yuwiler, (1972) "Effect of brain stimulation in positive and negative reinforcing regions in the rat on content of catecholamines in hypothalamus and brain," Brain Research, 36, 385-398.

Olds ME & Fobes JL (1981) The central basis of motivation: intracranial self-stimulation studies. Annual Rev. Psyhology 32: 523-574.

Onard, B. et al (1984) Electrical properties of bioelectrodes. IEEE Trans. BME 31(12):827.

Papez, J.W. Arch. Neurol. Psychiat. 38, 725. [--> emotion]

Patterson, M.M. & Kesner, R.P. (ed.), Electrical stimulation research techniques, NY, Academic Press, 1981, 370p. (SC 364-A3)
Extracellular stimulation (James B.Ranck,Jr.) û¢Intracellular stimulation (John H.Bryne)
Microstimulation technique (Hiroshi Asanuma)
Stimulation of the brain via metallic electrodes (Robert W.Doty and John R. Bartlett)
Depth stimulation of the brain (JosÃ M.R.Delgado)#Subcortical stimulation for motivation and reinforcement (C.R.Gallistee)
Electrical stimulation as a tool in memory research (R.F.Berman and R.P.Kesmmer)
Brain stimulation effects related to those of lesions (Robert L.Isaacson)
Electroconvulsive therapy, who needs it ? (Duane Denney)
Electrical stimulation of peripheral nerve (John E.Swett and Charles M.Bourassa)
Grid and peripheral shock stimulation (Fred A. Masterson)

Perachio, A.A., Alexander, M., & Robinson, B.W. (1969) Sexual behavior evoked by telestimulation. In: Proc. 2nd Internatl. Cong. Primat. H.Hoffer, ed. Karger, Basel, New York, Vol. 3, pp.68-74.[Alex&Perachio,1973]

Ploog, E.W., Blitz, J., & Ploog, F. (1963) Studies on social and sexual behavior of the squirrel monkey (saimiri sciureus). Folia Primatologica, 1, 29-66.

Plotnick, R., Mir, D., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1968) Aggression, noxiousness and brain stimulation in unrestrained thesus monkeys.In Eleftherion, G.F., ed. Physiology of aggression and defeat, pp.143-221. New York: Plenum Press.û£SB51-8

Pompeiano, O., & Swett, J.E. (1962) EEG and Behavioral manifestations of sleep induced by cutaneous nerve stimulation in normal cats. Archives Italiennes de Biologie,, 100, 311-342.

Porter, R.W., Conrad, D.G., and Brady, J.V. (1959) Some neural and behavioral correlates of electrical self-stimulation of the limbic system. J.exp. Anal. Behav., 2, 43-55.

Ranck JB (1975) Which elements are excited in electrical stimulation of mammalian central nervous system: a review. Brain Res. 98: 417-440.

Ray, C.D., (1974) Medical engineering. Chicago, Year Book Med.

Reynolds, D.V. (1969) Surgery in the rat during electrical analgesia induced by focal brain stimulation, Science 164, 444-445.

Roberts, W.W., Steinberg, M.L., & Means, L.W. (1967) Hypothalamic mechanisms for sexual, aggressive and other motivational behaviors in the oppossum, Didiphis virginiana. J.Comp.Physiol.Psychol., 64, 1-15.[Alex&Perachio,1973]

Robinson, B.W. (1962) Localization of intracerebral electrodes.
Experimental Neurology, 6, 201-233.

Robinson, B.W.,Warner,H.&Rosvold,H.E.(1964) A head-mounted remote-controlled brain stimulator for use on rhesus monkeys. EEG Clin.Neurophysiol., 17, 200-203.

Robinson, B.W., Mishkin, M. (1966) Ejaculation evoked by stimulation of the preoptic area in monkey. Physiol. Behav., 1, 269-72.û£ôiæ_ê¶

Robinson, B.W., Alexander, M., & Bowne, G. (1969) Dominance reversal resulting from aggressive responses evoked by brain telestimulation. Physiology and Behvior, 4, 749-752.

Rosvold, H.E., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1953) The effect of the behavior of monkeys of electrically stimulating or destroying small areas within the frontal lobes. Am.Psyhologist, 8, 425-426.

Rosvold, H.E., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1956) J. comp. Physio. Psychol. 49, 365.ele -> monkey => sleep]

Routtenberg, A., Gardner, E.L., & Huand, Y.G. (1971) Self-stimulation pathways in the monkey, Macaca mulatta. Experimental Neurology, 33, 213-224. [Gallistel,1981]

Rubinstein, E.H., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1963) Inhibition induced by forebrain stimulation in the monkey. Am.J.of Physiology, 205, 941-948.

Rugh, J.D. (1971) A biphasic radio-controlled stimulator. Physiol. Behav., 6, 267-269.
Santic, A. et al (1982) Micropower electronic switches for implanted instrumentation, IEEE Trans. BME, 29, 583-589.
Saunders, F.A. Electrocutaneous displays. In F.A.Geldard (Ed), (1974) Cutaneous communication systems and devices, Austin, TX, Psychonomic Society,pp.20-26.
Sawyer, P.N. & Srinivasan, S. Metals and inplants. In C.D.Ray(Ed.). (1974) Medical engineering. Chicago, Year Book Med.,pp.1099-1110.
Schmitt, O.H. (1948) A radio frequency coupled tissue stimulator, Science 107, 432.
Schwan, H.P. (1984) The development of biomedical engineering : historical comments and personal observations. IEEE BME, 31, No.12, 730-736.
Segundo, J.P., Arana, R., & French, J.D. (1955) Behavioral arousal by stimulation of the brain in the monkey. IBJ. Neurosurg. 12, 601-613.
Seligman, L.J. (1982) Physiological stimulators: from electric fish to programable implants. IEEE Trans. Bio-med. Eng. BME -29, 270-284.
Senning , A. (1963) Mal.Cardiovas., 4, 503-512. [implantable heart pacemaker]
Sharpless, S.K., and Halpern, L.M. (1962) The electrical excitability of chronically isolated cortex studies by means of permanently implanted electrodes, EEG. clin.Neurophysio., 14, 244-255. [Delgado et al (1971)]
Sidman, M., Brady, J.V., Boren, J.J., Conrad, D.G., & Schulman, A. (1955) Reward schedules and behavior maintained by intracranial self-stimulation. Science, 122, 830-831.
Siegel,Allan , John Chabora, Raymond Troiano, "Effects of electrical stimulation of the pyriform cortex upon hypothalamically-elicited aggression in the cat," Brain Research, 47 (1972) 497-500.
Silverman, G., Ball, G.G., & Cohn, C.K. (1975) A new automatic constant current stimulator and its biological applications, IEEE Tras.on B.M.E., BME-22, 207-212.
Skinner, B.F. (1938) The behavior of organism. New York: D.Appleton-Century.
Slater, L., (ed.), Bio-telemetry, 1963 (NY: Pergamon Press)
Stachnik, T., Ulrich, R., & Mabry, J.H. (1966) Reinforcement of intra- and inter-species aggression with intracranial stimulation. Am. Zoologist 6, 663-668.
Sterman, M., & Clemente, C. (1962) Forebrain inhibitory mechanism: synchronization induced by basal forebrain stimulation. Exptl. Neurol.6, 91-102.[ele -> cat => sleep]
Sterman, M., & Clemente, C. (1962) Forebrain inhibitory mechanisms: sleep patterns induced by basal forebrain stimulation in the behaving cat. Exptl. Neurol.6, 103.
Stillings, D. (1974) Med. Instru., 8, 334.ū@[ele.acupuncture]
Straw, R., & Mitchell, C.A. (1966) A simple method of implanting electrodes for long-term stimulation of peripheral nerves, J.of Applied Physiology, 21, 712-714.
Symposium on stereotactic surgery. J. Neurosurg., 15, (3).
Szabo, Imre & Peter M.Milner (1972)Self-stimulation in Rats: Tip alignment influences the effectiveness of bipolar electrodes, Brain Research, 48 ,243-250.
Talbert, G.A. (1900) Arch. Anat. Physiol., Lpz., p.195.
Terell, W., & Maurer, D. (1974) Two design approaches to dual channel implantable neurostimulators. Proc.of the 7th Annual Meeting of the Neuroelectric Society.
Testerman, R.L., Hagfors, N.R., & Schwartz, S.I. (1971) Design and evaluation of nerve stimulating electrodes. Medical Research Engineering, 10, 6-11.
Ulrich, R.E., & Azrin, N.H. (1962) Reflexive fighting in response to aversive stimulation. J. Exptl. Anal. Behav. 5, 511-521.
Ulrich, R.E., Wolff, P.C., & Azrin, N.H. (1964) Shock as an elicitor of intra- and interspecies fighting behavior. Animal Behav. 12, 14-15.
Upson, J.D., King, F.A., & Roberts, L. (1962) A constant-amplitude transitorized unit for remote brain stimulation. Electroenceph. clin. Neurophysiol, 14, 928-930.
Valenstein, E.S., Hodos, S. & Stein, L. (1961) A simplified electrode assembly for implanting chronic electrodes in the brains of small animals. Amer. J. Psychol., 74, 125-128. ü£iç
Verzeano, M. & French, J.D. (1953) Transistor circuits in remote stimulation. EEG clin. Neurophysiol., 5, 613-616.
Ward HP (1959) Stimulus factors in septal self-stimulation. Am.J. Physiology 196: 774-782.
Warner, H., (1962) "A remote control brain telestimulator system," Digest, 15th Annual Conf. on Engineering in Medicine and Biology, November 1962. pp.6.
Warner, H., Robinson, B.W., Rosvold, H.E., Wechsler, L.D., & Zampini, J.J. (1968) A remote control brain tele-stimulator with solar cell power supply. IEEE Trans. on Bio-Medical Engineering,15, 94-101.
Wasman, M., & Flynn, J.P. (1962) Directed attack elicited from hypothalamus. Archives of Neurology (Chicago), 6, 220-227.
Wauquier, A., & Rolls, E.T. (1976) Brain-stimulation reward, Amsterdam, North-Holland Publ.
Walker AE (1957) The development of the concept of cerebral localization in the ninteenth century. Bull. Hist. Med. 31: 99-121.
Welker W (1976) Mapping the brain. Historical trends in functional localization. Brain Behav. Evol. 13: 327-343.
Wetzel, M.C., Howell, L.G., & Bearie, K.J. (1969) Experimental performance of steel and platimum electrodes with chronic monophasic stimulation of the brain. J.of Neurosurgery, 31, 658-669.
Wiener, N. (1949) Cybernetics. New York, Wiley.
Willey, T.J., & Freeman, W.J. (1968) Alteration of prepyriform evoked response following prolonged electrical stimulation, Am.J.Physiol., 215, 1435-1441.
Woodworth, C.H. (1971) Attack elicited in rats by electrical stimulation of the lateralhypothalamus. Physiol.and Behav., 6, 345-355
Yamaguchi, N. (1956) Behavioral changes induced by electrical stimulation of the thalamus of unanesthetised dogs. Psychiatr. Neurol. Jap. 58.
Yeomans, John S (1990) Principles of Brain Stimulation. Oxford University Press, NY. pp.182 $35.00. [Library, Neurosurgery 29(3):475]
Young, P.T. (1961) Motivation and Emotion, John Wiley & Sons, Inc. New York, N.Y., 648 pp.
Zeier, H., Tschannen, G., Sietz, H., & Fideler, A. (1968) A device for wireless electric brain stimulation in operant conditioning situations. Physiol. Behav. 3, 587-590.

ESB -- MAN & THERAPY

Adams JE & Rutkin BB (1970) Visual responses to subcortical stimulation in the visual and limbic systems. Confinia Neurologica 32: 158-164.

Adams, J.E., Hosobushi, Y., & Fields, H.L. (1974) Stimulation of internal capsule for relief of chronic pain, J. Neurosurg. 41, 740-744.

Adams, J.E., & Hosobushi, Y. (1977) Technique and technical problems [of ESB].Neurosurgery, 1, 196-199. (from Delgado, Patterson ed., 1981)

Adams, J.E., Hosobuchi, Y., & Linchitz, R. (1977) The present status of implantable intracranial stimulation for pain. Clinical Neurosurgery, 24, 347-361.[—>! pain]

Adams, J.E. (1977/78) Technique and technical problems associated with implantation of neuroaugmentive devices, Appl. Neurophysiol., 40, 111-123.[ele –> chronic pain]

Ajmone Marsan C & Van Buren J (1964) Functional relationship between frontal cortex and subcortical structures in man. EEG Clin. N. 16: 80-87.

Alberts, W.W., & Wright Jr., E.W., Levin, G., Feinstein, B. & Mueller, M. (1961) Threshold stimulation of the lateral thalamus and globus pallidus in the waking human. EEG clin. Neurophysiol.13, 68-74. Alberts,W.W., B.Feinstein, G.Levin & E.W.Wright,Jr. (1966) Electrical stimulation of therapeutic targets in waking dyskinetic patients. [—>! dyskinetic]Ectroenceph.Clin.Neurophysiol., 20, 559-566.

Angeleri F, Ferro-Milone F & Parigi S (1964) Electrical activity and reactivity of the hinecephalic, pararhinecephalic, and thalamic structures: Prolonged implantation of electrodes in man. EEG Clin. N. 16: 100-129.

Babb MI & Dymond AM (1974) Electrode Implantation in the Human body. Univ. California, LA: Brain Information Service/Brain Res. Inst.

Bechtereva, N.P., Kambarova, D.K., Smirnov, V.M., & Shandurina, A.N. (1977) Using the brain's latent abilities for therapy: chronic intracerebral electrical stimulation , In Sweet, Obrador and Martin-Rodriquez Neurosurgical treatment in psychiatry, pain, and epilepsy, University Park Press, Baltimore.

Baldwin M (1960) Electrical stimulation of the mesial temporal region. In: Ramey ER, O'Doherty DS (eds) Electrical studies on the unanesthetized brain. Hoeber, New York

Bancaud J et al. (1994) Anatomical originof deja-vu and vivid 'memories' in human temporal lobe epilepsy. Brain 117: 71-90.

Bates JAV (1953) Stimulation of the medial surface of the human cerebral hemisphere after hemispherectomy. Brain 76: 405-447.

Becker, H.C. & Peacock (1954) Subcortical stimulaation techniques (including stimulation data sheets), in R.G.Heath and the Tulane University Dpt of Psychiatry and Neurology, Studies in Schnizophrenia. Cambridge, Harvard Univ. Press, 201-234.

Becker, H.C. & Peacock (1954) Improvements in teh technique of electrical stimulation, in R.G.Heath and the Tulane University Dpt of Psychiatry and Neurology, Studies in Schnizophrenia. Cambridge, Harvard Univ. Press, 201-234.

Becker, H.C., Founds, W.L., Peacock, S.M., Heath, R.G., Llewellyn, R.C., & Mickle, W.A. (1957) A roentgenographic stereotaxic technique for implantign and maintaining electrodes in the brain of man, EEG clin. Neurophuysiol. 9, 533-543.

Becker, H.C., Peacock, S.M., Heath, R.G. & Mickle, W.A. (1961) Methods of stimulation control and concurrent electrographic recording, in Electrical Stimulation of the Brain, D.E.Sheer, Ed. Austin, Univ. of Texas Press, 74-90.

Bickford, R.G., Petersen, M.C., Dodge, H.W., Jr., & Sem-Jacobsen, C.W. (1953) Observations on depth stimulation of the human brain through implanted electrographic leads. Mayo Clinic Proceedings, 28, 181-187. ûú

Bickford RG, Mulder DW, et al (1958) Changes in memory function produced by electrical stimulation of the temporal lobe in man. Res Publ Nerv Ment Dis 36: 227-243.

Bickford RG, Dedge HW, Jr. & Uihlein A (1960) Electrographic and behavioral effects related to depth stimulation in human patients. In Ramey ER & O'Doherty DS eds. Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain pp. 248-259.

Bishop MP et al (1963) Intracranial self-stimulation in man. Science 140: 394.

Bland BH & Vanderwolf CH (1972) Electrical stimulation of the hippocampal formation. Behavioral and bioelectric effects. Brain Research, Amsterdam 43: 89-106.

Brazier, M.A.B. (1964) Evoked responses recorded from the depths of the human brain. Annals of the N.Y. Acad.of Sciences , 112, 33-59.

Brazier MAB (1966) Stimulation of the hippocampus in man using implanted electrodes. In: Brazier MAB (ed) RNA and brai funciton, memory and learning. Univ. of Calif., Berkeley, pp 299-310.

Brazier, M.A.B. (1971), Modern advances in the use of depth electrodes. In A. Winter (Ed.), The surgical control of behavior, Thomas, Springfield, IL, pp.5-20.

Brickner, R.M. (1940) A human cortical area producing repetitive phenomena when stimulated. J. Neurophysiol. 3, 128-130.

Burke D et al. (1992) Anodal and cathodal stimulation of the upper-limb area of the human motor cortex. Brain 115: 1497-1508.

Chapman WP, Livingston RB, Livingston KE (1949) Frontal lobotomy and electrical stimulation of orbital surface of frontal lobes Effect on respiration and on blood pressure in man. Arch Nerurol Psyhciatr 62: 701-716.

Chapman LE, et al (1967) Memory changes induced by stimulation of hippocampus or amygdala in epileptic patients with implanted electrodes. Trans Am Neurol Assoc 92: 50-56.

Cherlow DG et al. (1977) Evoked response and after-discharge thresholds to electrical stimulation in temporal lobe epileptics. Archives of Neurology 34: 527-531.

Cooper, I.S., (1973) Chronic stimulation of paleocerebellar cortex in man.Lancet , 1, 206. [Lancet,1974]

Cooper, I.S., Amin, I., Gilman, S. (1973) The effect of chronic cerebellar stimulation upon epilepsy in man. Trans. Amer. Neurol. Assn. , 98, 192-196.

Cooper, I.S., Crighel, E., & Amin, I. (1973) Clinical and physiological effects of stimulation of the paleocerebellum in humans. J.Am.Geriatr.Soc., 21, 40-43.

Cooper, I.S., Gilman, S. (1973) Chronic stimulation of the cerebellar cortex in the therapy of epilepsy in the human, in Neural Organization and its relevance to prosthetics. (W.S.Fields, ed.), Intercontinental Book Corp., New York.

Cooper, I.S., Riklan, M., & Snid, R.S. (1974) The cerebellum, epilepsy, and behavior, Plenum Press, New York.

Crandall PH, Water RD, Rand RW (1963) Clinical applications of studies of stereotactically implanted electrodes in temporal-lobe epilepsy. J. Neurosurgery 21: 827-840.

Crow, H.J., Cooper, R., & Philips, D.G. (1963) Progressive leucotomy. In Masserman (ed.), Current psychiatric therapies, vol.3, pp.100-113. New York: Grune & Stratton.

Crow, H.J., & Cooper, R. (1973) Stimulation, polarization and coagulation using intracerebral implanted electrodes during the investigation and treatment of psychiatric and other disorders. Medical Progress through Technology, 1, 92-102.

Damasio AR, Van Hoesen GW (1980) Structure and function of the supplementary motor area. Neurol 30: 359.

Daniel MS et al (1985) Psychological factors and outcome of electrode implantation for chronic pain. Neurosurgery 17(5): 773-777.

Douglas RJ (1967) The hippocampus and behavior. Psychological Bulletin 67: 416-442.

Dow, R.S. (1978) Summary and evaluation of chronic cerebellar stimulation in man. In I.S.Cooper (Ed.), Cerebellar stimulation in man, Raven, New York, pp.207-212.

Dreifuss JJ (1972) The effects of electrical stimulation of the amygdaloid complex on the ventromedial hypothalamus. In: The Neurobiology of the Amygdala. Edited by B.E.Eleftheriou. New York: Plenum.

Earle K.M., Baldwin, M. & Penfield, W. (1953) Incisural sclerosis and temporal lobe seizures produced by hippocampal herniation at birth, Arch.Neurol.Psychiat.(Chic.),69, 27-42.

Ervin, F.R., Brown, C.e. & Mark, V.H. (1966) Striatal influence on facial pain. Confin. Neurol. 27, 75-86. [--> caudate -> carcinoma pain]

Ervin FR, Mark VH & Stevens J (1969) Behavioral and affective responses to brain stimulation in man. Proceeding so fhte American Psychopathological Association 58: 54-65.

Escueta AV,, Delgado-, Walsh GO (1982) The selection process for surgery of complex partial seizures: Surface EEG and depth electrography. Arch Neurol (in press [1982])

Fedio P & Ommaya AK (1970) Bilateral cingulum lesions and stimulation in man with lateralized impairment in short-term verbal memory. Exp Neurol 29: 84-91.

Feindel, W. & Penfield, W., (1954) Localization of discharge in temporal lobe automatism Arch.Neurol.Psychiat.(Chic.), 72, 605.

Feindel W (1982) The contributions of Wilder Penfield to the functional anatomy of the human brain. Human Beurobiol. 1: 231-234.

Feinstein, B., Alberts, W.W., Wright Jr., E.W. & Levin, G. (1960) A stereotaxic technique in man allowing multiple spatial and temporal approaches to intracranial targets. J. Neurosurg., 17, 708-720.

Feinstein G, Alberts WW, Levin G & Wright Jr. EW (1966) Some refinements of stereotaxic therapy for dyskinesia, and results of clinical evaluation. Confin. neruol. (Basel),

Ferguson SM, et al (1969) Similarities in mental content of psychotic states, spontaneous seizures, dreams, and responses to electrical brain stimulation in patients. Psychosom Med 31: 479-498.

Fields, H.L. & Adams, J.E. (1974) Pain after cortical injury relieved by electrical stimulation of the internal capsule. Brain 97, 169-178.

Flanigan HF, Nashold BS, et al (1978) Stimulation of the temporal lobe and thalamus in man and its relation to memory and behavior. In: Wauguier A, Rolls ET (eds) Brain-stimulation reward, Elsevier, NY, pp 521-526.

ûóFox, S.S., & Rudell, A.P. (1968) Operant control of neural events. Formal and systematic approach to electrical coding of behavior in brain, Science, 162, 1299-1302.û£ìç

Glenn, W.W.L., Mauro, A., Longo, E., Lavietes, P.H., MacKay, F.J. (1959) Remote stimulation of the heart by radiofrequency transmission: clinical application to a patient with Stokes-Adams syndrome. N.Engl.J.Med., 261, 948-951.û£ìç

Glenn, W.W.L., Hageman, J.H., Mauro, A., Eisenberg, L., Flanigan, S., & Harvard, M. (1964) Electrical stimulation of excitabel tissue by r adio-frequency transmission. Annals of Surgery, 160, 338-350. [Delgado,1981]

Glenn, W.W.L., Holcomb, W.G., Gee, J.B.L., & Rath, R. (1970) Central hypoventilation, long-term ventilatory assistance by radiofrequency electrophrenic respiration. Ann.Surgery, 172, 755-773.[Swett,1981] 'subcutaneous antenna'.

Glenn, W.W.L., Holcomb, W.G., McLaughlin, A.J., Ohare, J.M., Hogan, J.F., & Yasuda, R. (1972) Total ventilatory support with RF-EPR. N.Engl.J.Med., 286, 513-516. [RF --> ele ->! respiratory paralysis]

Gloor P, et al (1982) The role of the limbic system in experiential phenomena of temporal lobe epileps.. Ann Neurol (in press)

Gloor P (1990) Experiential phenomena of temporal lobe epilepsy: facts and hypotheses. Brain 113: 1673-1694.

Goddard GB et al (1969) A permanent change in brain function resulting from daily electrical stimulation. Exp Neurol 25: 295-330.

Gol A (1967) Relief of pain by electrical stimulation of the septal area. J Neurol Sci 5: 115-120.

Gybels J, et al (1980) Electrical stimulation of the central grey for pain relief in human: autopsy data. Acta Neurochir Suppl. 30: 259-168.

Halgren E et al (1977) Post-EEG seizure depression of human limbic neurons is not determined by their response to probable hypoxia. Epilepsi 18: 89-93.

Halgren E et al (1978) Mental phenomena evoked by electrical stimulation of the human hippocampal formation and amygdala. Brain 101: 83-117.

Halgren E (1982) Mental phenomena induced by stimulation in the limbic system. Human Neurobiology 1: 251-260.

Halgren E, Wilson CL, Stapleton JM (1985) Human medial temporal lobe stimulation disrupts both formation and retrieval of recent memories. Brain and Cognition 4: 287-295.

Halgren E & Chauvel P (1992) Experiential phenomena evoked by human brain electrical stimulation. Ad. Neurol. 65: 87-104.

Hambrecht, F.T. & Reswick, J.B. (Ed.), (1977) Functional electrical stimulation. New York: Dekker[Swett,1981] ES therapy for pain by Roman.û£SC71-184

- McNeal, D.R., 2000 years of electrical stimulation , pp.3-25.
- Gilman, S., et al., Clinical, morphological, biochemical, and physiological effects of cerebellar stimulation, pp.191-226.
- Oakley, J., Preliminary analysis of chronic cerebellar stimulation of the control of epilepsy pp.227-240.
- Penn, R., Cerebellar stimulation for motor disorders, pp.241-250.
- Peports on the cerebellar stimulation panel, pp.251-258.
- Brindley, G.s., & Rushton, D.N., Observations on the representation of the visual field on the human occipital cortex, pp.261-276.
- Pollen, D.A., Andrews, B.W., & Levy, J.C., Electrical stimulation of the visual cortex in man and cat, pp.277-287.
- Collins, C.C., Electrotactile visual prosthesis, pp.289-301.
- Saunders, F.A., Recommende procedures for electrocutaneous displays, pp.303-
- Report of the visual prosthesies panel, pp.311-317.
- Merzenich & White, M.W., Cochlear implant: the interface problem, pp.321-340.
- Mladejovsky, M.G., Eddington, D.K., Brackman, D.E., & Dobelle, W.H., Progress report and future directions of cochlear prostheses, pp.341-351.

Heath, R.G. & Hodes, R. (1952) Induction of sleep by stimulation of the caudate nucleus in Maccacus rhesus and man. Trans. Am. neurol. Ass. 77, 204-210, pp. 50-74.

Heath, R.G. & the Tulane University Department of Psychiatry and Neurology (1954) (Eds.). Studies in schizophrenia. A multidisciplinary approach to mind-brain relationships. Cambridge, MA, Harvard University Press.

Heath RG (1955) Correlation between levels of psychological awareness and physiological activity in the central nervous system. Psychosom. Med. 17: 383.

Heath RG (1958) Correlation of electrical recordings from cortical and subcortical regions of the brain with abnormal behavior in human subjects.Confinia Neurol. 18: 305

Heath, R.G. (1959) Physiological and biochemical studies in schizophrenia with particular emphasis on mind-brain relationships. Int. Rev. Neurobiol. 1, 299-331.

Heath, R.G. & Mickle, W.A. (1960) Evaluation of seven years experience with depth electrode studies in human patients, in Electrical Studies on the Unanesthetized Brain, E.R.Ramey and D.S.O'Doherty, Ed. New York: Hoeber, pp.214-247.

Heath, R.G. & Founds, W.L. (1960) A perfusion cannula for intracerebral microinjections, EEG clin. Neurophysiol. 12, 930-932.

Heath, R.G. & deBalbina Verster, F. (1961) Effects of chemical stimulation to descrete brain area. Am. J. Psychiat. 117, 980-990.

Heath, R.G., John, S.B. & Foss, O. (1961) Stereotaxic biopsy. Arch. Neurol. 4, 291-300.

Heath RG (1962) Common characteristics of epilepsy and schizophrenia: clinical observation adn depth electrode studies. Am. J. Psychiat. 118: 1013-1026.

Heath, R.G. (1963) Electrical self-stimulation of the brain in man. Am. J. Psychiat. 120, 571-577.

Heath, R.G. (1964) Developments toward new physiologic treatments in psychiatry. J. Neuropsychiat. 5, 318-331.

Heath, R.G. (1964) Pleasure response of human subjects to direct stimulation of the brain: Physiologic and psychodynamic considerations, in The Role of Pleasure in Behavior, R.G.Heath, Ed. New York: Hoeber Medical Division, Harper & Row, pp.219-243.

Heath, R.G. (1966) Schizophrenia: Biochemical and physiologic aberrations. Int. J. Neuropsychiat. 2, 597-610.

Heath, R.G. & Krupp, I.M. (1967) Schizophrenia as an immunologic disorder. Arch. Gen. Psychiat. 16, 1. û£îç

Heath, R.G. (1967) Schizophrenis: studies of pathogenesis, in Biological and Clinical Aspects of the Central Nervous System, Symposium of Sandoz Ltd., Basle.

Heath, R.G. John, S.B. & Fontana, C.J. (1968) The pleasure response: Studies by stereotaxic technics in patients, in Computers and Electronic Devices in Psychiatry, N. Kline & E.Laska, Ed., New York: Grune and Stratton, 178-189.

Heath, R.G. (1970) Perspectives for biological psychiatry. Biolog. Psychiat. 2, 81-88.

Heath, R.G. (1972) Pleasure and brain activity. Deep and surface encephalograms during orgasm, Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 154:3-18.

Heath, R.G., Cox, A.W., & Lustick, L.S. (1974) Brain activity during emotional states.
Amer. J. Psychiat. 131, 858-862.

Heath, R.G. (1975) Brain function and behavior: I. Emotion and sensory phenomena in psychotic patients and in experimental animals. J.Nerv. Ment. Dis. 160, 159-175.

Heath, R.G., et al (1976) Stereotaxic implantation of electrodes in human brain: a method for long-term study and treatment. IEEE Trans. Bio-med. Eng. 23, 296-304.

HĂcaen H., Penfield, W. Bertrand C. & Malmo, R., (1956) The syndrome of apractognosia due to lesions of the minor cerebral hemisphere.Arch.Neurol.Psychiat.(Chic.), 75, 400.

Horowitz, M.M., Adams, J.E., & Rutkin, B.B. (1958) Visual imagery on brain stimulation. Archives of General Psychiatry, 19, 469-486.û£îç

Hosobushi, Y., Adams, J.E., & Rutkin, B. (1973) Chronic thalamic stimulation for the control of facial anesthesia dolorosa, Arch. Neurol. 29, 158-161.

Hosobuchi Y, Adams JE, Linchitz R (1977) Pain relief by electrical stimulation of the central gray matter in humans and its reversal by naloxone. Science 197: 184-186.

Hosobuchi Y (1979) Elevation of B-endorphin-like substances and pro-opicortin (31K ACTH) by periaqueductal gray stimulation (PAGS) in humans. In: Hitchcok ER, Ballantine HT, Meyerson BA (eds) Modern Concepts in Psychiatric Surgery. Elsevier/North-Holland Biomedical Press, NY Vol I.

Hosobushi Y et al. (1979) Periaqueductal gray stimulation for pain suppression in humans. In: Bonica JJ (ed) Advances in pain research and therapy, Vol III. Raven Press, New York.

Hosobuchi Y (1980) The current status of analgesic brain stimulation.
Acta Neurochir Supp 30: 219-227.

Hosobuchi Y (1986) Subcortical electrical stimulation for control of intractable pain in humans : report of 122 cases (1970-1984) J. Neurosurg. 64: 543-553.

Iacono RP & Nashold BS (1982) Mental and behavioral effects of brain stem and hypothalamic stimulation in man. Human Neurobiology 1: 273-279.

Ishibashi R et al (1964) Hallucination produced by electrical stimulation of the temporal lobes in schizophrenic patients. Tohoku J Med 82: 124-139.

Jasper HH & Ramussen T (1958) Studies of clinical and electrical responses to deep temporal stimulation in man with some considerations of functional anatomy. Res Publ Assoc Res Nerv Ment Dis 36: 316-334.

Kumar K et al (1990) Deep brain stimulation for control of intractable pain in humans, present and future: a ten-yer follow-up. Neurosurg. 26(5): 7 74-782.

Laitinen LV (1979) Emotional responses to subcortical electrical stimulation in psychiatric patints. Clin Neurol Neurosurg 82: 148-157. Larson, S.J. et al. (1976) Cerebellar implant Studies. IEEE Trans. BME 23 (4) 319.

Levy RM et al. (1987) Treatment of chronic pain by deep brain stimulation : long term follow-up and review of the literature. Neurosurg. 21: 885-893.

Lewin, W. (1961) Observations on selective leucotomy. J. Neurol. Neurosurg. Psychiat. 24, 37-44.

Liberson, W.T., Scoville, W.B., & Dunsmore, R.H. (1951) Stimulation studies of the prefrontal lobe and uncus in man, EEG clin. Neurophysiol. 3,-8.

Libet B et al. (1964) Production of threshold levels of conscious sensation by electrical stimulation of human somatosensory cortex. J. Neurophysiology 27: 546-578.

Libet B et al. (1991) Control of the transition from sensory detection to sensory awareness in man by the duration of a thalamic stimulus. Brain 114: 1731-1757.

Livingston RB et al (1948) Stimulation of orbital surface of man prior to frontal lobotomy. Res Publ Assoc Nerv Ment Dis 27: 421-432.

Loeser, J.D., Black, R.G., & Christman, A. (1975) J.Neurosurg., 42, 308-315.
[ele —> chronic pain]

Lustick, L.S. & Heath, R.G. (1970) Comparative study of intracranial electrodes for stimulation and recording. Biophys. Soc. Abstracts, 11, 165a.

Mahl GF, Rothenberg A, Delgado JMR & Hamlin H (1964) Psychological responses in the human to intracerebral electrical stimulation. Psychosom. Med. 26: 337-368.

Mark, V.H. & Ervin, F.R.. (1970) Violence and the brain (Harper & Row, New York).

Melzack, R. & Wall, P.D. (1965) Pain mechanisms: a new theory, Science 150, 971-979.

Meyer G, McElhaney M, Martin W, McGraw CP (1973) Stereotactic cingulotomy with results of acute stimulation and serial psychological testing. In: Laitinin LV, Livingston KE (eds) Surgical approaches in psychiatry. Medical and Technical Publishing Co.Ltd, Lancaster.

Milner B et al (1968) Further analysis of the hippocampal amnesic syndrome: 14 year follow up stidy of H.M. Neuropsychol 6: 215-234.

Moan CE & Heath RG (1972) Septal stimulation and initiation of heterosexual behavior in a homosexual male. J. Behav. Ther. Exp. Psychiat (In press)

Morgan JT (1982) The first reported case of electrical stimulation of the human brain.J Hist Med 37: 51-65.

Mullan S. & Penfield, W. (1959) Illusions of comparative interpretation and emotion. Arch.Neurol.Psychiat.(Chic.), 81, 269.

Mundinger F, Saldmao JF (1980) Deep brain stimulation in mesencephalic lemniscus medialis for chronic pain. Acta Neurochir Supp 30: 245-258.

Namba S et al. (1985) Sensory and motor responses to deep brain stimulation. Correlation with anatomical structures. J. Neurosurg. 63(2): 224-234.

Nashold BS, Wilson WP (1966) Central pain. Observations in man with chronic implanted electrodes in the midbrain tegmentum. Conf Neurol 27: 30-44.

Nashold BS, Gills J (1967) Ocular signs from brain stimulation and lesions. Arch Ophthalmol 77: 609-618.

Nashold BS, Gills JP, Wilson WP (1967) Ocular signs of brain stimulation in the human. Conf Neurol 29: 169-174.

Nashold BS, Lanford GW (1968) A method for recording ocular reactions during stereotactic operations. Conf Neurol 30: 197-200.

Nashold BS, Wilson WP, Slaughter DG (1969) Sensations evoked by stimulation in the midbrain of man. J Neurosurg 30: 14-25.

Nashold BS (1970) Phosphenes resulting from stimulation of the midbrain in man. Arch Ophthalmol 84: 433-435.

Nashold BS (1970) Ocular reaction from brain stimulation in conscious man. Neuroophthalmol 5: 92-103.

Nashold BS, Wilson WP (1970) Olfactory hallucinations evoked from stimulation of human thalamus. Confin Neurol 32: 298-307.

Nashold BS, Wilson WP, Slaughter DG (1974) The midbrain and pain. Adv Neurol 4: 191-196.

Nashold BS, Slaugher DG, Wilson WP, Zorub D (1977) Stereotactic mesencephalotomy. Prog Neurol Surg 8: 35-49.

Nashold BS Jr, Wilson WP, Boone E (1979) Depth recordings and stimulation of the human brain: A twenty-year experience. In: Rasmussen T, Marino R (eds) Functional neurosurgery. Raven, New Yrok.

Nashold BS (1980) Brain stem stereotaxic procedures. In: Schaltenbrand (ed) Stereotaxy of the human brain. Thieme-Stratton, New York.

Ojemann G, Fedio P (1968) Effect of stimulation of the human thalamus and parietal and temporal white matter on short-term emmory. J Neurosurg 29: 51-59.

Ojemann G, Fedio P, & Van Buren JM (1968) Anomia fro pulvinar and subcortical parietal stimulation. Brain 91: 99-116.

Ojemann GA (1982) Models of the brain organization for higher integrative functions derived with electrical stimulation techniques. Huma Neurobiology 1: 243-249.

Ojemann G et al. (1989) Cortical language localization in left, dominant hemisphere. An electrical stimulation mapping investigation in 117 patients. J. Neurosurg. 71: 316-326.

Oliver A et al. (1987) Depth electrode implantation at the Montreal Neurological Institute and Hospital. In: Surgical Treatment of the Epilepsies. Engel J (ed) NY: Raven Press.

Ommayo AK, Feidio P (1972) The contribution of cingulum and hippocampal structures to memory mechanisms in man. Confin Neurol 34: 398-411.

Orthner H & Roeder F (1966) Further clinical and antomical experiences with stereotactic operations for relief of pain. Conf Neurol 27: 418-430.

Pampiglione G & Falconer MA (1960) Electrical stimulation of the hippocampus in man. In: Handbood of Physiology. Section 1. Neurophysiology, Volume 2. Edited by J.Field,et al., Washington, D.C.: American Physiological Society.

Penfield,W. & E.Boldrey (1937) Somatic motor and sensory representation in the cerebral cortex of man as studied by electrical stimulation, Brain, 60: 389-443.

Penfield, W. (1938) The cerebral cortex and consciousness. Arch. Neurol.Psychiat. 40, 417-442.

Penfield, W. & Erickson, T.C. (1941) Epilepsy and Cerebral Localization.

Penfield, W. & Welch K., (1949), Instability of response to stimulation of the sensorimotor cortex of man. J.Physiol. (Lond.), 109, 358.

Penfield, W. & Rasmussen, T. (1949) Vocalization and arrest of speech. Arch. Neurol. Psychiat. (Chicago) 61, 21-27.

Penfield, W. & Flanigin, H. (1950) Surgical therapy of temporal lobe seizures, Arch. Neurol. Psychiat. (Chicago) 64, 491-500.

Penfield, P.W. (1950) Arch. Psychiat. Nervenkr. 185, 670.

Penfield, W. & Rasmussen (1950)The Cerebral Cortex of Man, MacMillan, New York.

Penfield, W. & Kristiansen, K. (1951) Epileptic Seizure Patterns, Springfield, Ill, Charles C Thomas, Publisher.

Penfield, W. & Welch, K. (1951) Arch. Neurol. Psychiat. 66, 289.

Penfield, W. & Baldwin, M. (1952) Temporal lobe seizures and the technic of subtotal temporal lobectomy, Ann. Surg. 136, 625-634.

Penfield, W. (1952) Epileptic automatism and the centrencephalic integrating system, Res. Publ. Ass. nerv. ment. Dis. 30, 513-528.

Penfield, W. (1952) Arch. Neurol. Psychiat. 67, 178.

Penfield, W. (1952) Memory mechanisms, AMA Arch. Neurol Psychiat. 67, 178-191.

Penfield, W. & Jasper H.H., (1954), Epilepsy and the Functional Anatomy of the Human Brain, Boston.

Penfield, W. (1954) Mechamisms of voluntary movement, Brain, 77, 1-17.

Penfield, W. (1955), Acta psychol. (Amst.), 11, 47.

Penfield, W., & Paine, K. (1955) Results of surgical therapy for focal epileptic seizures, Cand. M.A. J. 73, 515-531.

Penfield, W. (1955) Role of the temporal cortex in certain psychial phenomena, ment. Sc. 101, 451-465.0£îç

Penfield, W. & T.Rasmussen (1957) The cerebral cortex of man - A clinical study of localization of function, NY, Macmillan. [The homunculus]

Penfield, W. (1958) The Excitable Cortex in Conscious Man, Liverpool.

Penfield, W. & Milner B. (1958) Memory deficit produced by bilateral lesions in the hippocampal zone, Arch.Neurol.Psychiat.(Chic.), 79, 475.

Penfield,W. & L.Roberts (1959) Speech and Brain mechanisms, Princeton, N.J., Princeton Univ. Press, .

Penfield W (1959) The interpretive cortex. Science 129: 1719.

Penfield, W. (1961) Activation of the record of human experience. Ann.roy.Coll.Surg.Engl., 29, 77.

Penfield, W. & Perot P., (1963), The brain's record of auditory and visual experience - A final summary and discussion. Brain, 86, 595.

Penfield,W. (1968) Engrams in the human brain," Proc. Roy.Soc.Med.,61: 831-840.

Penfield, W.(1975) The Mistery of the Mind, Princeton University Press. [Jap]

Penfield, Wilder, 1891-1976.(1977) No man alone: a neurosurgeon's life, Boston, Little, Brown.ü£GK478-30

Pool JL, Ransohoff J (1949) Autonomic effects of stimulating the rostral portion of cingulate gyri in man. J Neurophysiol 12: 385-392.

Pudenz RH et al (1975) Electrical stimulation of the brain. III. The neural damage model. Surgical Neurology 4: 389-400.

Ramey, E.R., & O'Doherty, D.S. ed., Electrical studies on the unanesthetized brain, New York, Hoeber, 1960. [Delgado,1975; ele —> therapy]

Ranck JB Jr (1975) What elements are excited in electrical stimulation of mammalian central nervous systems: a review. Brain Res 98: 417-440.

Ray ChD, Burton ChV (1980) Deep brain stimulation for severe, chronic pain.
Acta Neurochir (Supple) 30: 289-293.

Ray CD (1981) Electrical and chemical stimulation of the CNS by direct means for pain control: present and future. Clin Neurosurg 28: 564-587.

Rayport M, Ferguson SM (1974) Qualitative modification of sensory responses to amygdaloid stimulation in man by interview content and context. EEG Clin N. 34: 714.

Richardson, D.E. (1967) Thalamotomy for intractable pain,Confin. Neurol. 29, 139-145.

Richardson, D.E. & Akil, H. (1973) Pain relief by electrical stimulation of the brain in human patients, Abstracts for the American Association of Neurosurgeons Meeting,
Los Angeles, CA, Apr.

Richardson, D.E. (1976) Brain stimulation for pain control.IEEE BME, 23 (4), 304-6.

Roland PE et al (1980) Supplementary motor area and other cortical areas in organization of voluntary movements in man. J Neurophysiol 43: 118-136.

Rosene DL, Van Hoesen GW (1977) Hippocampal efferents reach widespread areas of cerebral cortex and amygdala in the rhesus monkey. Science 198: 315-317.

Sano K (1962) Sedative neurosurgery. Neurologica Medico-chirugica 4: 112-142.

Sano K et al (1970) Results of stimulation and destruction of the posterior hypothalamus in man. J Neurosurg 33: 689-707. [Halgren 1982]

Schaeffler L et al. (1993) Comprehension deficits elicited by electrical stimulation of Broca's area. Brain 116: 695-715.

Schaltenbrand, G. (1965) The effects of stereotactic electrical stimulation in the depth of the brain. Brain, 88, 835-40. [-> man =>speech sounds]

Schaltenbrand G, et al (1973) Vegetative and emotional reactions during electrical stimulation of deep structures of the brain during stereotactic procedures. Z Neurol 205: 91-113

Schechter, D.C. (1972) Background of clinical cardiac electrostimulatio. N.Y. State J. Med., 72, 605-619. ["Can you hear me ?"]

Schwarz JR (1977) Results of stimulation and destruction of the posterior hypothalamus: A long-term evaluation. In: Sweet WH, Obrador S, Martin-Rodriquez JG (edw) Neurosurgical treatment in pssychiatry, pain and epilepsy. University Park, Baltimore.

Scoville W.B. & Penfield, W. , (1957), J.Neurol.Neurosurg.Psychiat., 20, 11.

Sem-Jacobsen, C.W., Petersen, M.C., Lazarte, J.A., Dodge, H.W., Jr., Holman, C.B. (1955) Intracerebral electrographic recordings from psychotic patients during hallucinations and agitation. Amer. J. Psychiat. 122, 278-288.ü£ìç

Sem-Jacobsen et al (1955) Electroencephalographic rhythms from the depths of the frontal lobe in 60 psycotic patients. EEG clin. N. 7: 193-210.

Sem-Jacobsen, C.W., Petersen, M.C., Dodge, H.W., Lazarte, J.A., & Holman, C.B. (1958) Electroencephalographic rhythms from the depths of the parietal, occipital, and temporal lobes n man. Electroencephalography adn Clinical Neurophysiology, 8, 263-178.

Sem-Jacobsen CW (1959) EEG Clin. N. 11: 379.

Sem-Jacobsen, C.W., & Trkildsen, A. (1960) Depth recording and electrical stimulation in the human barin, In E.R.Ramey & D.s.I'Doherty (Eds), Electrical studies on the unanesthetized brain, New York, Harper & Row, (Hoeber), pp.275-290.

Sem-Jacobsen CW (1964) Electrical stimulation of the human brain. EEG Clin.N.17: 211.

Sem-Jacobsen, C.W. (1968) Depth-electrographic stimulation of the human brain and behavior: From fourteen years of studies and treatment of Parkinson's disease and mental disorders with implanted electordes. Springfield, IL, Thomas.

Shealy, C.N., Mortimer, J.T., & Hagfors, N.R. (1970) J.Neurosurg., 32, 560-564.
[implant —> chronic pain]

Siegel RK & Jarvik ME (1975) Drug-induced hallucinations in animals and man. In: Hallucinations: Behavior, Experience, and Theory. Edited by RK Siegel & LJ West. NY: Wiley.

Siegfried J et al. (1983) Intracerebral electrode implantation system. J. Neurosurg. 59:356-359.

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT et al. (1947) Stereotactic apparatus for operations on the human brain. Science 106: 349-350.

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT (1953) Mesencephalotomy in treatment of intractable facial pain. Arch Neurol Psychiatr 69: 1-9.

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT (1961) Stimulation of the basal ganglia and brain stem in man. In: Sheer (ed) Electrical Stimulation of the Brain. Texas Press. Austin.

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT [illegible] Stereoencephalotomy, Vol II. Grune and Stratton, NY

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT et al (1964) Stimulation of Forel's field during stereotaxic operations in the human brain. EEG Clin N. 16: 537-548.

Spiegel EA & Wycis HT (19[illegible] [illegible]nt starus of stereoencephalotomies for pain relief. Conf Neurol 27: 7-12.

Stein L (1975) Norepinephrine reward pathways: role in self-stimulation, memory consolidation, and schizophrenia. Nebraska Syposium on Motivation 22: 113-159.

Stevens JR et al (1969) Deep temporal lobe stimulation in man: long latency, long-lsting psychological changes. Archives of Neurology 21: 157-169.

Strassburg HM, Thoden U, Mundinger F (1979) Mesencephalic chronic electrodes in pain patients. Appl Neurophysiol 42: 284-293

Sweet, W.H., & Wepsic, J.G. (1968) Trans. Am. Neurol. Assn., 93, 103-107.[implant —> chronic pain]

Talairach J, Bancaus J (1966) The supplementary motor area in man. Int J Neurol 5: 330-347.

Talairach J, et al (973) The cingulate gyrus and human behavior. EEG Clin N. 34: 45-52.

Tasker RR & Organ LW (1972) Mapping of the somatosensory and auditory pathways in the upper midbrain and thalamus of man. Exerpta Medica 253-169-187.

Tasker RR & Organ LW (1973) Stimulation mapping of the upper human auditory pathway. J Neurosurg 38: 320-325.

Tasker RR, Organ LW, Hawrylyshyn P (1980) Visual phenomenon evoked by electrical stimulation o fthe human brainstem. Appl Neurophysiol 43: 89-95.

Tasker RR, Organ LW & Hawrylyshyn P (1982) The Thalamus and Midbrain of Man: A Physiological Atlas using Electrical Stimulation. Springfield, Ill.: Thomas.

Tsubokawa T (1964) The relationship between the human cortical recruiting responses and consciousness. Folia Psychiaatr Neurol Jap 18: 327-336.

Tsubokawa T et al (1993) Chronic motor cortex stimulation in patients with thalamic pain. J. Neurosurg. 78(3): 393-401.

Uematsu et al (1992) Motor and sensory cortex in humans: topography studies with chronic subdural stimulation. Neurosurgery 31(1): 59-72.

Van Buren, J.M. (1961) Sensory, motor and autonomic effects of mesial temporal stimulation in man. J. Neurosurg.18, 273-288.

Van Buren, J.M. (1963) Confustion and disturbance of speech from stimulation in vicinity of the head of the caudate nucleus. J.Neurosurg., 20, 148-157.

Van Buren, J.M. (1963) The abdominal aura: a study of abdominal sensations occurring in epilepsy and produced by depth stimulation. EEG Clin N. 15: 1-19.

Van Buren, J.M., Li, C.L., & Ljemann, G.A. (1966) The fronto-striatal arrest response in man. Electroenceph.clin.Neurophysiol., 21, 114-130.

Van Buren, J.M. (1966) Evidence regarding a more precise localization of the posterior frontal-caudate arrest response in man. J. Neurosurg. Suppl., 2nd Symposium on Parkinson's Disease, 416-17 (Nashold B.S., Huber, W.V., Eds.)

Von Holst E & St.Paul U (1962) Electrically controlled behavior.
Sci. Am. 206(3), March, 1962.

Walker AE, Marshall C (1961) Stimulation and depth recordings in man. In: Sheer DE (ed) Electrical stimulation of the brain. Univ. of Texas, Austin.

Waltregny A, et al (1974) Electrophysiological exploration of the anterior gyrus cinguli (area 24) in man (stereotaxic study). EEG Clin. N. 34: 782.

Wilson CL et al. (1990) Functional connections in the human temporal lobe. I. Analysis of limbic system pathways using neuronal responses evoked by electrical stimulation. Exp. Brain Res. 82: 279-292.

Wilson WP & Nashold BS (1973) Evoked photic responses from the human thalamus and midbrain. Conf Neurol 35: 338-345.

Wilson WP & Nashold BS (1968) Epileptic discharges occuring in the messencephalonand thalamus. Epilepsia 9: 265-273.

Young RF et al. (1985) Electrical ctimulation of the brain in treatment of chronic pain. Experience over 5 years. J. Neurosurg. 62(3): 389-396.

Young RF & Chambi VI (1987) Pain relief by electrical stimulation of the periaqueductal and periventricular gray matter. Evvidence for a non-opioid mechanism. J. Neurosurg. 66: 364-371.

Zimmermann M (1982) Electrical stimulation of the huma brain. Human Neurobiol 1: 227-229.

VISUAL PROSTHESES & E.S.B.

Brindley, G.S. (1962) Beats produced by simultaneous stimulation of the human eye with intermittent light and intermittent or alternating electric curretn, J. Physiol. 164, 157-167.

Brindley, G.S., Lewin, W.S. (1968) The sensations produced by electrical stimulation of the visual cortex. J. Physiol., 196, 479-493.

Brindley, G.S. (1970) Sensations produced by electrical stimulation of the occipital poles of the cerebral hemispheres, and their use in constructing visual prostheses, Ann. Rep. Coll. Surg. 57, 106-108.

Brindley, G.S., Donaldson, P.E.K., Falconer, M.A., & Rushton, D.N. (1972) The extent of the region of occipital cortex that when stimulated gives phosphenes fixed in the visual field. J. Physiol. 225, 57-58.

Brindley, G.S. (1973) Sensory effects of electrical stimulation of the visual and paravisual cortex in man, in JUNG Handbook of Physiology, Vol.III/3B, Springer-Verlag, New York, pp.585-594.

Brindley, G.S.,Rushton, D.N. (1974) Implanted stimulators of the visual cortex as visual prosthetic devices. Trans. Amer. Acad. Ophthalmol. Otolaryngol. , 78, OP742-OP745.

Brindley, G.s., & Rushton, D.N.(1977) Observations on the representation of the visual field on the human occipital cortex, pp.261-276.

Brindley, G.S. (1981) Electroejaculation: its technique, neurological implications and uses. J. Neurology, Neurosurgery and Psychiatry 44: 9-18.

Brindley, G.S. (1982) Effects of electrical stimulation of the visual cortex.
Human Neurobiology 1: 281-283.

Button, J. & Putnam, T.J. (1962) Visual responses in cortical stimulation in the blind.
J. Iowa Med. Soc. 52, 17-21.

Campbell, P.K., Jones, K.E., Huber, R.J., Horch, K.W., & Norman, R.A. (1991)
A silicon-based, three-dimentional neural interface: manufacturing processes for an intracortical electrode array. IEEE Trans. BME, 38, No.8, 758-768.

Collins, C.C.(1977) Electrotactile visual prosthesis, pp.289-301.in Hambrecht & Reswick (Ed.) Functional electricastimulation

Dobelle, W.H., Mladejovsky, M.G. (1974) Phospenes produced by electrical stimulation of human occipital cortex, and their application to the development of a prosthesis for the blind. J. Physiol., 243, 553-576.

Dobelle, W.H. et al (1974) Data processing, LSI will help to braing sight to the blind, Electronics, 47, 81-86.

Dobelle, W.H., Mladejovsky, M.g., Evans, J.E., Roberts, T.S., Girvin, J.P. (1976) 'Braille' reading by a blind volunteer by visual cortex stimulation. Nature, 259, 111-112.

Dobelle, W.H., Mladejovsky, M.G., Girvin, J.P. (1974) Artificial vision for the blind: Electrical stimulation of visual cortex offers hope for a functional prosthesis. Science, 183, 440-444.

Dobelle WH, Mladejovsky MG & Evans JR (1976) "Braille" reading by a blind volunteer by visual cortex stimulation. Nature 259: 111-112.

Donaldson, P.E.K. (1973) Experimental visual prosthesis. IEE Proc., 120, 281-298.

Evans JR, Gordon J, Abramov I, Mladejovsky MG & Dobelle WH (1979) Brightness of phosphenes elicited by electrical stimulation of human visual cortex. Sensory Processes 3: 82-94.

Girvin JP, Evans JR, Dobelle WH, Mladejovsky MG, et al (1979) Electrical stimulation of human cortex: the effect of stimulus parameters on phospene threshold. Sensory Processes 3: 66-81.

Livingstone M & Hubel D (1988) Segregation of form, color, movement and depth: Anatomy, physiology and perception. Science 240: 740-749.

Minsky, M. (1971) Development of a facility for visual prosthesis experiments on humans, in Visual Prostheses : The interdisciplinary dialogue, T.Sterling, Ed. New York: Academic, 315-324.

Pollen, D.A. (1975) Some perceptual effects of electrical stimulation of visual cortex in man, in TOWER The Nervous System, Vol. 2, The Clinical Neurosciences, Raven Press, New York, pp.519-528.

Pollen, D.A. (1976) Responses of single neurons to electrical stimualtion of the surface of the visual cortex. Brain, Behav. Evol.

Pollen, D.A., Andrews, B.W., & Levy, J.C.(1977) Electrical stimulation of the visual cortex in man and cat, pp.277-287.in Hambrecht & Reswick (Ed.)

Rushton, D.N., Brindley, G.S. (1977) Short and long term stability of cortical electrical phosphenes, in Physiological Aspects of Clinical Neurology, Blackwell, Oxford.

Saunders, F.A.(1977) Recommended procedures for electrocutaneous displays, pp.303

in Hambrecht & Reswick (Ed.) Functional electricastimulation

AUDITORY PROSTHESES & E.S.B.

Cochlear Implant () IEEE EMB 6(2)

Dobelle, W.H., Mladejovsky, M.G., Stensaas, S.S., & Smith, J.B. (1973) A prosthesis for the deaf based on cortical stimulation, Ann. Otol. Rhin. Laryngol. 82, 445-563.

Doyle, J.H., Doyle, J.B. & Turnbull, F.M. (1961) Electrical stimulation of eighth cranial nerve. Arch. Otolaryng. 84, 388-391. û£îç

House, W.F. & Urban, J. (1973) Long term results of electrode implantation and electronic stimulation of the cochlea in man, Ann. Otol. 82, 504-510.

Merzenich, M.M. et al (1973) Neural encoding of sound sensation evoked by electrical stimulation of the acoustic nerve, Ann. Otol. 82, 486-503.

Merzenich, M.M. (1974) In Proceedings of the First International Conference on Electrical Stimulation of the Acoustic Nerve as a Treatment for Profound Sensorineural Deafness in Man, (M.M.Merzenich, R.A.Schindler, F.A. Sooy, eds.), Velo-Bind, Inc., San Francisco, pp.79-92.[ele —> auditory sensory]

Merzenich, M.M. (1975) Studies on electrical stimulation of the auditory nerve in animals and man; cochlear implants, in The Nervous System, (D.B.Tower, ed.), Raven Press, N.Y.

Merzenich, M.M. & White, M.W. (1977) Cochlear implant; the interface problem.in Hambrecht & Reswick (Ed.) Functional electrical stimulation

Michelson, R.P. (1971) Electrical stimulation of the human cochlea, Arch. Otolaryngol. 93, 317-323. û£îç

Michelson, R.P. (1971) The results of electrical stimulation of the cochlea in human sensory deafness, Ann. Otol. 80, 914-919.

Mladejovsky, M.G., Eddington, D.K., Dobelle, W.H., & Brackmann, D.E. (1975) Artificial hearing for the deaf by cochlear stimulation: Pitch modulation adn some parametric thresholds, Trans. Amer. Soc. Artif. Int. Organs, 21, 1-6.

Mladejovsky, M.G., Eddington, D.E., Evans, J.J., & Dobelle, W.H. (1976) A computer-based brain stimulation system to investigate sensory protheses for the blind and deaf, IEEE Trans. Biomed. Eng., BME-23, pp.286-296, July, 1976.

Mladejovsky, M.G., Eddington, D.K., Brackman, D.E., & Dobelle, W.H. (1977)
Progress report and future directions of cochlear prostheses. in Hambrecht & Reswick (Ed.) Functional electrical stimulation

Parkins CW et al. (1983) Cochlear implant: a sensory prosthesis frontier.
IEEE EMB 2(2): 18-26.

Simons, F.B. (1966) Electrical stimulation of the auditory nerve in man.
Arch. Otolaryngol. ,84, 24-76. û£îç

Simons, F.B. (1967) Permanent introcochlear electrodes in cats, tissue tolerance and cochlear microphonics, Laryngscope, 77, 171-186.

TRANSNASAL APPROACH (IMPLANT THRU NOSE)

Barth JT et al (1984) The effects of prefrontal leucotomy: Neuropsychological findings in long term chronic psychiatric patients. Int. J. clin. Neuropsychology 6(2):120-1233. [thru eye's cavity]

Black PM et al (1987) Incidnece and management of complications of transsphenoidal operation for pituitary adenomas. Neurosurgery 20(6): 920-924.

Griffith HB et al. (1987) A direct transnasal approach to the sphenoid sinus. Technical note. J. Neurosurg. 66: 140-142.

Hardy J (1971) Transsphenoidal hypophysectomy. J. Neurosurg. 34: 582-594.

Hardy, Jules (1990) Atlas of Transsphenoidal Microsurgery in Pituitary Tumors Igaku-Shoin, NY, pp.74. [Neurogurgery 29(3): 478, 30(1): 141]

Kandel EI (1989) Functional and Stereotactic Neurosurgery. NY: Plenum Press, pp.492-500. [transnasal -> pituitary gland

Rabadan A et al (1992) Transmaxillary, Transnasal Approach to the Anterior Clivus: A Microsugical Anatomical Model. Neurosurgery 30(4): 473-482.

Rosenfeld JV (1992) Transnasal stereotactic biopsy of a clivus tumor. J. Neurosurg. 76(5): 878-879.

Watson SW et al (1982) Dental considerations in the sublabial trans-shpenoidal surgical approach to the pituitary gland. Neurosurgery 10(2): 236-241.

BIO-TELEMETRY

Adey WR (1963) Potential for telemetry in the recording of brain waves from animals and men exposed to the stresses of space flight. In Slater L ed. Bio-Telemetry pp.289-300.

Allen, R.T., Hansomn, M.L., & Dresge, D.J. (1964) Biotelemetry in demdicine,
Bio-med. Instru., 1, 15-19, December 1964.

Almond, J.A. (1965) Personal telemetry transmitter system,
Aerospace Med. Res. Labs., Rept. AMRL-TR-65-87, pp.1-23.

Angell, J.B. (1977) Transducers for in vivo measurement of force, strain, and motion. in Physical Sensors for Biomedical Applications, M.R.Neuman et al. Eds., Boca Raton, FL, CRC Press.

Arfel G, et al (1969) Dynamic aspects of electroencephalography. First results of a telemetric study. Revue neurol. 120: 429-430.

Arfel G, et al (1969) Dynamic aspects of the human EEG. First results of a radiotelemetric study. EEG clin. N. 27: 108.

Asaki Y, Iriki M & Kanai H (1980) Design of a two-channel AM-FM transmitter for body temperature measurements in rats. Biotelemetry 7(1): 32.

Atkinson JR, et al (1967) Radio telemetry for the measurement of intracranial pressure. J. Neurosurg. 27: 429-432.

Ax AF (1969) Instrumentation for psychophysiology. Am. Psychol. 24: 229-233.

Barnett GH et al (1990) Epidural peg electrodes for the presurgical evaluation of intractable epilepsy. Neurosurgery 27(1): 113-115.

Barwich, R.E., & Fullagar, P.J. (1967) A bibliography of radio telemetry in biological studies, Proc. ecol. Soc. Aust., 2, 27. [Delgado et al (1970)]

Bement, S.L. et al (1986) Solid-state electrodes for multi-channel multi-plexed intracortical neuronal recording. IEEE Trans. BME, 33, No.2, 230-241.

Bert J, et al (1970) EEG of the mature chimpanzee: 24 hour recordings. EEG clin. N. 28: 368-373.

Bickford RG, et al (1969) Teleprocessing of the EEG from the patient's residence. EEG clin. N. 26: 117-118.

Blanc C et al (1967) Radiotelemetric recordings of the electroencephalograms of civil aviation pilots during flight. EEG clin. N. 23: 580.

Bojsen JJ & Wallevik K (1972) A radiotelemetrical measuring device, implantable on animals, for long-term measurements of radionuclide-tracers. Int. J. appl. Radiat. Isotopes 23: 505-511.

Bornhausen M & Matthes R (1980) Remote control of electrical brain stimulation reward in rats with pulsed infrared light. Biotelemetry 7(1): 29.

Bowden AN, et al (1975) The place of EEG telemetry and closed-circuit television in diagnosis and management of epileptic patients. Proc R. Soc. Med. 68: 246-248.

Bowman, L. et al (1986) The packing of implantable integrated sensors. IEEE Trans. BME, 33, No.2, 248-255.

Breakell CC, Parker CS & Christopherson F (1949) Radio transmission of the human EEG and other electrophysiological data. EEG Clin. N. 1: 243-244.

Brown MW, et al (1971) Laboratory note. A miniature transmitter suitable for telemetry of a wide range of biopotentials. EEG clin. N. 31: 274-276.

Bruner JM (1971) Telemetry in a large hospital - a look at the future. IEEE Trans. BME 18: 325-329.

Byford GH (1965) Medical radiotelemetry. Proc. R. Soc. Med. 58: 795-798.

Caceres, C.A. ed. (1965) Biomedical telemetry, New York,Academic Press.

Caceres CA (1968) Telemetry in medicine and biology. Adv. biomed. Engng med. Phys. 1: 279-316.

Chute FS, et al (1974) Radio tracking of small mammals using a grid of overhead wire antennas. Can. J. Zool. 52: 1481-1488.

Collins, C. (1967) Miniature passive Pressure Transensor for implanting in the eye. IEEE Trans. BME 14, 74-83.

Collins, C. (1967) Evoked pressure responses in the rabbit eye. Science 155, 106-108.

Currie JC, et al (1967) The measurement of intracranial pressure using thepressure endoradiosonde. J. Physiol. 189:22-23.

Danilevicius Z (1974) Telemetry - best detective in tracing CHD. J. Am. med. Ass. 299: 1475-1476.

Davies DG & Roberts J (1972) An evaluation of cortical audiometry. Proc. R. Soc. Med. 65: 367-370.

Erwin CW & Zung WW (1970) Behavioral and EEG criteria of sleep in humans. Comparison using radiootelemetry. Archs gen. Psychiat. 23: 375-377.

Farrar, J.T., Zworykin, V.K. & Baum, J. (1957) Pressure-sensitive telemetering capsule for the study of gastrointestinal motility. Science 126,, 975-976. November 8.

Fonster, F.G., Kupfer, D., Weiss, G., Lipponen, V., McPartland, R., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1972) Mobility recording and cycle research in neuropsychiatry. J. interdiscipl. Cycle Res. 3, 61-72.

Franklin DL, et al (1966) Technique for radio telemetry blood flow velocity from unrestrained animals. Am. J. med. Electron. 5: 24-28.

Fromm, E. (1983) Athick film hybrid implantable telemeter, IEEE Eng. MBM. 2, 38-41. Mar.1983.

Fryer TB (1974) Power sources for implanted telemetry system. Biotelem., 1, 31-40.

Fryer TB (1974) A multichannel EEG telemetry system utilizing a PCM subcarrier. Biotele. 1: 202-218.

Fryer TB & Sandler H (1974) A review of implant telemetry system. Biotele. 1: 351-374.

Fryer TB et al. (1978) Telemetry of intracranial pressure, Biotelem. 5, 88-112.

Fryer TB (1981) Survey of implantable telemetry. Biotelemetry 8: 125-130.

Galbraith, D.C. et al (1987) A wide-band efficient inductive transdermal power and data link with coupling insensitive gain, IEEE Trans. BME, 34, No.4, 265.

Gschwend, S.J., Knutti, J.W., Allen, H.V. & Meindl, J.D. (1979) A general purpose implantable mutichannel telemetry system. Biotele. 6 (3): 107-117.

Geddes LA (1962) A bibliography of biological telemetry. Am. J. Med. Electronics 1: 294-298.

Geier S (1971) Minor seizures and behavior. EEG clin.N. 31: 499-507.

Geier S (1971) A comparative tele-EEG study of adolescent and adult epeleptics. Epilepsia 12: 215-223.

Geier S, et al (1974) A complete EEG radio-telemetry equipment. EEG clin. N. 37: 89-92.

Geier S, et al (1975) Clinical note: clinical and tele-stereo-EEG findings in apatient with psychomotor seizures. Epilepsia 16: 119-125

Giori FA (1967) Remote physiological monitoring using a microwave inteferometer. Biomed. Sci. Instrum. 3: 291-308.

Gofmann SS (1969) Radioelectroencephalogram recording in humans during work activity under industrial conditions. Biul. eksp. Biol. Med. 68: 13-16

Greatbatch W (1984) Pacemaker power sources. IEEE EMB 3(2): 15.

Greatbatch W (1984) Implantable pacemakers - a twenty five year journey 3(4): 24-26.

Gruenberg EL (1967) Handbook of telemetry and remote control (McGrw-Hill, NY)

Guey J, et al (1969) A study of the rhythm of petit mal absences in children in relation to prevailing situations. The use of EEG telemetry during psychological examinations, school exercisses and periods of inactivity. Epilepsia 10: 441-451.

Hanley J, et al (1969) Combined telephone and radiotelemetry of the EEG. EEG clin. N. 26: 323-324.

Hanley J, et al (1972) Automatic recognition of EEg correlates of behavior in a chronic schizophrenic patient. Am. J. Psychiat. 128: 1524-1528.

Hiller PK, et al (1974) Proceedings: an automatic wildlife tracking system. Biomed. Sci. Instrum. 10: 157-159.

Huertas J & Westbrook RC (1970) A system for sensing and transmitting EEG. EEG clin. N. 28: 102-103.

Hughes JR & Hendrix DE (1968) Telemetered EEG froma football player in action. EEG clin. N. 24: 183-186.

Hutten H, et al (1971) A new apparatus for the continuous telemetric measurement of intracranial pressure in man. Biomed. Tech., Stuttgart 16: 170-172

Ikeda K, Watanabe A, Saito M (1980) A new biomedical radio telemetry system employing a rotating magnetic field. Biotelemetry 7(1): 24.

Ikeda K, Watanabe A & Saito M (1980) A radio-tracking system for studies of snake movement. Biotelemetry 7(1): 45.

Itoh I, Morizono T, Okada S, Ishimura H, Iijima N, Kanauchi S, Shoji T (1980) Computerized radiotelemetry of gastrointestinal pressure. Biotelemetry 7(1):17.

Ives JR, et al (1973) Acquisition by telemetry and computer analysis of 4-channel long-term EEG recordings from patients subject to 'petit-mal' absence attacks. EEG clin. N. 34: 665-668.

Jacobson, B. & Mackay, R.S. (1957) A pH endoradiosonde. Lancet 1, 1224. June.

Jeutter, D.C. (1982) A transcutaneous implanted battery recharging and biotelemetry power switching system. IEEE Trans. BME. 29, 314-321.

Jeutter, D.C. (1983) Overview of biomedical telemetry techniques. IEEE Eng. Med. Biol. 2, 17. Mar.1983.

Jeutter, D.C. (1983) Power sources for biotelemeters, IEEE Eng. Med. Biol. 2, 22-23. Mar.1983.

Jobling, D.T., Smith, J.G. & Wheal, H.V. (1981) Active microelectrode array to record from the mammalian central neural system in vitro. Med. Biol. Eng. Comput. 19, 553-560.

Kado R & Adey WR (1968) Electrode problems in central nervous monitoring in performing subjects. Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 148: 263-278.

Kamp A & Van Leeuwen WS (1961) A two-channel EEG radio elemetering system. EEG Clin. N. 13: 803-806.

Kimmich HP & Kreuzer F (1974) Trends in biomedical telemetry and patient monitoring . Eurocon 74: 2/7: 1-2.

Knutti JW et al (1979) Chronically implantable instrumentation for medical research animals. IEEE Trans. BME 26: 539.

Knutti, J.W., Allen, H.V. & Meindl, J.D. (1983) Integrated circuit implantable telemetry systems, IEEE Eng. Med. Biol. Mag. 2, 47-50.. Mar.1983.

Ko WH & Neuman MR (1967) Implant biotelemetry and microelectronics: report on developments in implant telemetry, associated problems, and the potential of microelectronics. Science 156: 351-360.

Ko, W.H. & Hyncek, J. (1974) Implant evaluations of nuclear power source - Beta-cell battery. IEEE Trans. BME 21, 238-241.

Ko, W.H. & Spear, T.M. (1983) Packaging materials and techniques for implantable instruments.IEEE Eng. Med. Biol. 2, 24. Mar.1983.

Kofes A (1969) The possibilities of telemetry of physiological data. EEG clin. N. 27: 628-629.

Kupfer, D.J., Detre, T.P., Fonster, G., Tucker, G.J., & Delgado, J.M.R. (1972) The application of Delgado's telemetric mobility recorder for human stidues. Behav. Biol. 7, 585-590.

Van Leeuwen WS & Kamp A (1969) Radiotelemetry of EEG and other biological variables in man and dog. Proc. R. Soc. Med. 62: 451-453.

Van Leeuwen WS, et al (1967) EEG of unrestrained animals under stressful conditions. EEG clin. N. suppl. 25: 212ff.?

Legewie H, et al (1969) EEG changes duringperformance of varioius tasks under open- and closed-eye conditions. EEG clin. N. 27: 470-479.

Leung, A.M. et al (1986) Intracranial pressure telemetry system using semicustom integrated circuits, IEEE Trans. BME, 33, No.4, 386-395.

Long, F.M. & Weeks, R.W. (1983) Wildlife biotelemetry. IEEE EMB March 42.

Mackay, R.S. & Jacobson, B. (1957) Endoradiosonde. Nature 179, 1239-1240. June.

Mackay, R.S. (1961) Radio telemetry from within the body.Science 134, 1196.

Mackay, R.S. (1963) Radio telemetry from inside the body. New Sci. 19, 650.

Mackay, R.S. (1964) Galapagos tortoise and marine iguana deep body temperatures measured by radio telemetry. Nature 204, 355-358.

Mackay, R.S. (1964) Deep body temperature of untethered dolphin recorded by ingested radio transmitter. Science 144, 864-866.

Mackay, R.S. (1964) Dolphin telemetry. Science 145, 296.

Mackay, R.S. (1968) Bio-Medical Telemetry, Wiley, New York, 388pp.

MacKay RS (1969) Biomedical telemetry: applications to psychology. Am. Psychol. 24: 244-248.

Mackay, R.S. (1970) Bio-Medical Telemetry (2nd ed.) John Wylie & Sons., New York.

Mackay, R.S. (1974) Field studies on animals. Biotelemetry 1, 286-312.

Mackay, R.S. & Dolphin, W. (1982) Monitoring feeding of great whales by ingested acoustic temperature trasmitter. Proc. of 7th Int'l. Symp. on Biotelemetry, Stanford University.

Mackay, R.S. (1983) Biomedical telemetry: The formative years.IEEE Eng. MB. 2, 11-17. Mar.1983.

Manson G (1974) EEG radio telemetry. EEG clin. N. 37: 411-413.

Mark VH, Ervin FR, Sweet WH & Delgado J (1969) Remote telemeter stimulation and recording from implanted temporal lobe electrodes. Confinia neurol. 31: 86-93.

Marko, A., Murray, R.H., Kissen, A.T., & McGuire, D.M. (1967) A new versatile miniature multi-channel personal telemetry system for medical research, Aerospace Med. Res. Labs., Rept. AMRL-TR, pp.152-156.

Marko, A., McLennan, M.A., & Correll, E.C. (1963) Research and development on pulse-modulated personal telemetry systems, Aerospace Med. Res. Labs., AMRL-TDR-64-96, PP.1-19.

Matumoto Goro (1974) Fundamental design procedures of an inductance coil utilizing thin-film IC technique for biotelemetry. Biotelem. 1, 41.

Matumoto G, Tsuchida Y, Yoshikawa T (1980) Measurement of the cat's EEG and ECG with a telemetry system in high DC electric fields. I: Tow-channel modified PDM/FM telemetry system to obtain from small animals. Biotelemetry 7(1): 34.

McAleenan, R.N. (1976) Computer-aided biotelemetry system applied to free-swimming fish. Biomed. Sci. Instrum. 12, 29-32.

McKean, B. & Gough, D. (1988) A telemetry-instrumentation system for chronically implanted glucose and oxygen sensors, IEEE Trans. BME, 35, No.7, 526.

McNew JJ, et al (1971) The sleep cycle and subcortical-cortical EEG relations to the unrestrained chimpanzee. EEG clin. N. 30: 489-503.

Meindl, J.D. (1980) Biomedical implantable microelectronics, Science, 210, 263-267.

Meindl, J.D. (1984) Implantable telemetry in biomedical Research, IEEE Trans. BME, 31, No.12, 817.

Michener MC & Walcott C (1967) Homing of pigeons - analysis of tracks. J. exp. Biol. 47: 99-131.

"mind reading machine by DARPA", National Enquirer, 22 June, 1976. ûó

Neukomm PA (1974) A radio-controlled monitoring system for multichannel telemetry. Biotelemetry 1: 251-263.

Nomura T (1984) Telemeter and tele-control. Trans. IEICE (in Japanes) p.208.

Ohata S, Tanji J, Kato M & Matumoto G (1980) Measurement of the cat's EEG and ECG with a telemetry system in high DC electric fields. II. Applications. Biotelemetry 7(1):

Olsem ER, et al (1967) Intracranial pressure measurement with a miniature passive implanted pressure transensor. Am. J. Surg. 113: 727-729.

Pauley JD, et al (1974) An implantable multichannel biotelemetry system.
EEG clin. N. 37: 153-160.

Pauley JD & Reite M (1981) A microminiature hybrid multichannel implantable biotelemetry system. Biotele. 8: 163-172.

Polg P & Wolfgand H (1974) Telemetry of the EEG and EMG in the cat under the influence of psychotropic drugs. Biotelemetry 1: 264-172.

Porter RJ et al (1971) Human electroencephalographic telemetry.
Am. J. EEG Technol. 11: 145-159.

Raloff, Janet (1991) Science News , Nov. 30, 1991. (the rice the implant)

Reid, M.H., Mackay, R.S. & Lantz, B. (1980) Noninvasive blood flow measurements by Doppler ultrasound with applications to renal artery flow determination.
Investigative Radiology 15, 323-331.

Reite M & Walker SD & Pauley JD (1973) Implantation surery in infant monkeys.
Lab. Primate Newl. 41: 1-6.

Reite M, et al (1974) A system approach to studying physiology and behaviors in infant monkeys. J. Appl. Physiol. 37: 417-423.

Rideout CB (1974) Proceedings: radio tracking the Rocky Mountain goat in Western Montana. Biomed. Sci. Instrum. 10: 139-143.

Robinson BW & Warner H (1967) Telestimulation of the primate brain.
Archs phys. Med. Rehabil. 48: 467-473. û£îç

Robinson BW (1969) Brain telestimulation in primates. Am Psychol. 24: 248-250.

Rokushima, H. (1969) A multi-channel PWM/FM radio-telemetry system for EEG, Proc. 22nd Ann. Conf. on Engineering in Medicine and Biology (Chicago, Ill.)

Roy OZ (1971) Biological energy sources. A review. Biomed. Eng. 6:250-256.

Salcman, M. & Bak, M.J. (1973) Design, Fabrication, and in vivo behavior of chronic recording intracortical microelectrodes, IEEE Trans. BME 20, 253-260.

Seo H & Matsuo T (1989) Manufacture of custom CMOS LSI for an implantable multipurpose biotelemetry system. Frontiers Med. Biolog. Eng. 1(4): 319-329.

Shafer WA (1967) Telemetry on man without attached sensors.
NY St. J. Med. 67: 2832-2837.

Shirer HW & Downhower JF (1968) Radio tracking of dispersing yellow bellied mrmots. Trans. Kans. Aca. Sci. 71: 463-479. û£îç

Simonova O, et al (1969) Correlation between EEG criteria and attentive behaviour.
EEG clin. N. 26: 447.

Simonova O & Legewie H (1969) EEG changes under different conditions.
EEG clin.N. 27: 627.

Simons DG & Prather W (1964) A personalised radio telemetry system for monitoring central nervous system arousal in aerospace flight. IEEE Trans. Biomed. Engin. 11: 40.

Skutt, H.R., Fell, R.B., & Kertzer, R. (1970) A multichannel telemetry system for use in exercise physiology, IEEE Trans.Bio-Medical Eng., 17, 339-348.

Slater, L. (ed.) (1963) Biotelemetry, New York,Pergamon Press.

Smith EN (1974) Multichannel temperature and heart rate radio telemetry transmitter.
J. appl . Physiol. 36: 252-255.

Sperry CJ (1968) Implantable stimulator and transmitter for telemetry of evoked potantials during defensive behavior. Biomed. Sci. Instru. 4: 119-124.

Stalberg E (1969) Telemetric long-term EEG recording. EEG clin. N. 26: 341.

Stevens JR (1969) Localization of epileptic focus by protracted monitoring of EEG by radio telemetry. Epilepsia 10: 420.

Stevens JR, et al (1969) Prolonged recording of EEG by radiotelemetry: an aid to localization and treatment of epilepsy. EEG clin. N. 27: 544.

Stevens JR, et al (1969) Statistical characteristics of spontaneous seizure discharges recorded by radiotelemetry over 24 hour perioods in man. EEG clin. N. 27: 691.

Stevens JR, et al (1971) Ultradian characteristics of sponataneous seizure discharges recorded by radio telemetry in man. EEG clin. N. 31: 313-325.

Stevens JR, et al (1972) Seizure occurrence and interspike interval. Telemetered eeg studies. Archs. Neurol. (Chicago) 26: 409-419

Stong, C.L. (1968) Amateur scientist. Scien. Am. 218, 128-135.

Sudo M et al. (1987) Low suuply-voltage driving telemetering IC for biological signals. Trans. IEICE (in Jap) J70-D(12): 2754.

Takahashi K & Matsuo T (1984) Integration of multi-microelectrode and interface circuits by silicon planar and three-dimentsional fabrication technology.
Sensors and Actuators 5, 89-99.

Takeuchi Y & Hogaki M (1980) Radiotelemetry of fetal and maternal signals for live fetal monitering. Biotelemetry 7(1): 42.

Towe, C.B. (1986) Passive biotelemetry by frequency keying. IEEE Trans. BME, 33, No.10, 905.

Trotter, Robert J. (1974) A Schocking Story, Science News , April 13, 1974. û£îç

Updike SJ, et al (1972) Patient monitoring by radiotelemetry.
J. Ass. adv. med. Instrum. 6: 240-244.

Upson RB, et al (1968) An improved remote brain stimulator and EEG transmitter for small animals. Biemed. Sci. Instrum. 4: 164-170.

van Veelen et al (1990) Combined use of subdural and intracerebral electrodes in preoperative evaluation of epilepsy. Neurosurg. 26(1): 93-101.

Vidart L & Geieer S (1968) Telemetric recording sin epileptic subjects while at work. EEG clin. N. 25: 93.

Vidart L & Geier S (1969) Radiotelemetric EEG study of adult epileptics.

Vidart L & Geier S (1970) From epilepsy to the epileptic: a tele-EEG study of adult epileptic subjects. EEG clin. N. 29: 103.

Vreeland R, Collins C, et al (1963) A subminiature radio EEG telemeter for studies of disturbed children. EEG Clin. Neurophysiol. 15: 327-329.

Vreeland RW, et al (1971) A compact sic-channel integrated circuit EEG telemeter.

EEG clin. N. 30: 240-245.
Walker AE & Marshall C (1964) The contribution of depth recording to clinical medicine. EEG Clin. N. 16: 88-99.
Watson NW, et al (1968) Backpack for free-ranging primates. J. appl. Physiol. 24: 252-253.
Yoshii N, et al (1966) Studies on the nerral basis of behavior by continuous frequency analysis of EEG. Prog. Brain Res. 21: 217-250.
Ysenbrandt et al (1976) Biotelemetry, literature survey of the past decade. Biotele. 3: 145-250.
Zweizig JR, et al (1972) EEG monitoring of a free-swimming diver at a working depth of 15 meter. Aerospace Med. 43: 403-407.
Zworykin VK et al (1961) The measurement of internal physiological phenomena using passive-type telemetering capsules. IRE int. Conv. Rec. 9: 141-144.

ELECTRONIC HOUSE ARREST

Alexander E & Alexander L (1985) Electronic monitoring of felons: threat or boon to civil liberties. Social Theory and Practive 11: 89-95.
Ball RA & Lilly JR (1986) A theoretical examination of home incarceration.
Fed. Probation March: 17-24.
Beck B (1969) Commentary : Issues in the use of an electronic rehabilitation system with chronic recidivists. Law & Soc R 3: 611-14.
Berry B (1985) Electronic jails: a new criminal justice concern. Justice Quartely 2: 1-22.
Byrne et al (1988) Understanding the limits of technology: an examination of the use of electronic monitoring in the criminal justice system. Perspectives Spring: 30-37.
Badigan TP (1991) Electronic monitoring in federal pretrial release. Fed. Prob. 55(1): 26-30.
Carmen RV (1986) Legal issues in probation. Fed. Prob. 50(2): 60-69.
Casady J (1975) The electronic watchdog we shouldn't use. Psychol Tod January: 84.
Charles MT (1989) The development of a juvenile electronic monitoring program. Fed. Prob.53(2): 3-12.
Conrad JP (1983) News of the future: Research and development. Federal Prob. 47: 54-55.
Electronic monitoring devices (1986) Corrections Today 48: 72.
Ford D & Schmidt AK (1985) Electronically monitored home cconfinement.
NIJ Reports, SNI 194, Nov. 1985, 2-6.
Fried C (1968) Privacy. Yale Law Journal 77: 475. [re. Schwitzgebel machine]
Friel CM & Vaughn JB (1986) A consumer's guide to the electronic monitoring of probationers. Fed. Prob. 50(3): 3-14.
Gablle RK (1986) Application of personal telemonitoring to current problems in corrections. J. Criminal Justice 14: 167-176.
Ingraham BL & Smith GW (1972) The use of electronics in the observation and control of human behavior and its possible use in rehabilitation and control.
Crime and Justice 1971-1972, p.363-377.
King DB (1964) Electronic surveillance and constitutional rights: some current developments and observations. George Washington Law Review 33: 240.
Krajick K (1983) Electronic surveillance makes a comback. Police Maganine March.
Krech D (1966) Controlling the mind-controllers. Think 32(July-August): 2.
Los Angeles Free Press (1972) Wiretapping your body. July: 7-13.
Man, Daniel (1987) Beepers in kids' heads could stop abductors,
Las Vegan Sun, October 27, 1987. üó
Marx GT (1985) The new surveillance. Technology Review May-June 45: 43-48.?
Marx GT (1985) I'll be watching you. Dissent Winter: 26-34.
McCarthy BR ed. (1987) Intermediate Punishments: Intensive Supervision, Home Confinement and Electronic Surveillance. Monsey, NY: Willow Tree Press.
Meyer, J.A. Crime Deterrent Transponder System, IEEE Trans. AES ,7, No.1.
Miller AS (1964) Technology, social change and the constitution.
George WAshington Law Review 33: 17.
New York Times (1969) Psychologist tests electronic monitoring to control parolees. September 7, 1969, p.85.
New York Times (1969) Tiny radio monitors prisoner behavior, November 15, p.53.
Notes (1966) Anthropotelemetry: Dr.Schwitzgebel's Machine.
Harvard Law Review 80: 403-421.
Papy JE & Nimer R (1991) Electronic Monitoring in Florida. Fed. Prob. 55(1): 31-33.
Peck K (1988) High-tech house arrest. The Progressive July: 26-28.
Petersilia J (1986) Exploring the option of house arrest. Fed. Prob. 50(2): 50-55.
Renzema M & Skelton DT (1990) The use of electronic monitoring in the United States: 1989 update. NIJ Reports, Nov/Dec. 9-14.
Reubhausen OM & Brim OG (1965) Privacy and behavior research.
Columbia Law Review 65: 1184.
Rogers CR & BF Skinner (1956) Some issues concerning the control of human behavior. Science 124: 1057.
Rorvik D (1974) Behavior control: Big brother comes. Intellectual Digest January: 17-20.
Sanders CW (1994?) The Seven Signs of the Last Days.
Schmidt AK (1986) Electronic monitors. Fed. Prob. 50(2): 56-59.
Schmidt AK (1987) Electronic monitoring : who uses it, how much does it cost, does it work ? Corrections Today 49: 28+.
Schmidt AK (1991) Electronic monitors - realistically, what can be expected ?
Fed. Prob. 55(2): 47-53.
Schwitzgebel RK (1964) A program for research in behavior electronics.
Behav. Sci. 9: 233-238.
Schwitzgebell RK (1967) Electronic innovation in the behavioral sciences: a call to responsibility. Am. Psychologist 22(5): 364.
Schwitzgebel RK (1968) Electronic alternatives to imprisonment. Lex et Scientia 5(3): 99-104.
Schwitzgebel RL (1969) A Belt from Big Brother. Psychology Today 2(11): 45-47, 65.

Schwitzgebel RK (1969) Development of an electronic rehabilitation system for parolees. Law and Computer Technology 2(3): 9-12.
Schwitzgebel RK (1969) Issues in the use of an electronic rehabilitation system with chronic recidivists. Law & Soc R 3: 597-611.
Schwitzgebel RK & Hurd WS (1969) Behavioral supervision system with wrist carried transceriver. Pat. No. 3,478,344. Official Gazette 1969.12 (?)
Schwitzgebel RL and Bird RM (1970) Sociotechnical design factors in remote instrumentation with humans in natural environments. Behaviour Research Methods and Instrumentation 2.
Schwitzgebel, Robert L. & Schwitzgebel, Ralph K., eds. (1973) Psychotechnology. NY, Rinehart , and N.Y. John Wiley & Sons [Monahan, J. (1984) A.J.P.141(1), 10]
Walker JL (1990) Sharing the credit, sharing the blames: managing political risks in electronically monitored house arrest. Fed. Prob. 54(2): 16-20.
Winkler, Max (1993) Walking prisons: the developing technology of electronic controls. Futurist July/August : 34-49.

NAVIGATION SATELLITE

Burgess L & Munro N (1993) Security concerns may hinder GPS expansion.
Defense News Apr 26 - May 2: 4.
Collins Avionics Develops New Hand-Held GPS Unit. (1992)
Defense News Sep 21-27: 18.
Maggs W (1991) Pentagon fears global march of GPS technology.
Defense Week Aug 26: 2.
Navstar system. IDRû@ 7/1981:937, 7/1983:989 [Rockwell contract]
Sundaram GS (1979) NAVSTAR/GPS: a unique US high-precision worldwide navigation system. IDR 7/1979: 1142-1146.

ELE -> SCALP -> CORTEX (TRANSCUTANEOUS STIMULATION)

Amassian VE & Cracco RQ (1987) Human cerebral cortical responses to contralateral transcranial stimulation. Neurosurgery. 20: 148-155.
Amassian VE, Cadwell J, Cracco RQ & Maccabee PJ (1987) Focal cerebral and peripheral nerve stimulation in man withe the magnetic coil. J. Physiol. 390:29P.
Amassian VE, Quirk GJ & Stewart M (1987) Magnetic coil versus electrical stimulation of monkey motor cortex. J. Physiol. 394:119P.
Amassian VE et al (1987) Physiological basis of motor effects of a transient stimulus to cerebral cortex. Neurosurgery 20:74-93.
Amassian VE et al (1988) Suppression of human visual perception with the magnetic coil over occipital cortex. J. Physiol. 398:408P.
Amassian VE et al (1988) Focal magnetic coil activation of human motor cortex elicits a sense of movement in ischemically paralyzed, distal arm. J. Physiol. 403:75P.
Amassian VE et al (1989) Focal stimulation of human cerebral cortex with the magnetic coil: a comparison with electrical stimulation, EEG Clin. N. 74, 401-416.
Amassian VE et al. (1991) Paraesthesias are elicited by simple pulse, magnetic coil stimulation of motor cortex in susceptible humans. Brain 114: 2505-2520.
Ananev MG et al (1960) Anesthesiology 24: 215. [ele –> anesthesia]
Barker AT, Freeston IL, Jalinous R, Merton PA & Morton HB (1985) Magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiol. 369:3P.
Barker AT et al (1985) Non-invasive magnetic stimulation of the human motor cortex. Lancet i: 1106-1107.
Barker AT et al (1986) Clinical evaluation of conduction time measurements in central motor pathways using magnetic stimulation of the humna brain. Lancet i: 1325-1326.
Barker AT et al (1987) Magnetic stimulation of the human brain and peripheral nervous system: an introduction and the results of an initial clinical evaluation. Neurosurgery 20: 100-109.
Cowan JMA et al (1984) Abnormalities in central motor pathway conduction in multiple sclerosis. LaNcet ii: 304-307.
Cowan JMA et al (1986) The effect of percutaneous motor cortex stimulation on H reflexes in muscles of the arm and leg in intact man. J. Physiol. 377: 333-347.
Cracco RQ et al (1989) Comparison of human transcallosal responses evoked by magnetic coil and electrical stimulation. EEG clin. N. 74:417-424.
Day BL et al (1986) Differences between electrical and magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiol. 378: 36P.
Day BL et al (1987) A comparison of the effects of cathodal and anodal stimulation of the human motor cortex thru the intact scalp. J. Physiol. 394: 118P.
Day BL et al (1987) Motor cortex stimulation in intact man. 2. Multiple descending volleys. Brain 110: 1191-1209.
Day BL et al (1988) Diffenrential effect of cutaneous stimuli on responses to electrical or magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiol. 399: 68
Fabian LW et al (1964) Anesth. Analg. Curr. Res. 43: 87. [ele –> anesthesia]
Flach A (1958) Anesthetist 7: 180. [ele –> anesthesia]
Geddes LA (1965) Med. Elec. Biol. Eng. 3: 11. [ele –> anesthesia]
Gedees LA (1987) Optimal stimulus duration for extracranial cortical stimulation. Neurosurgery 20: 97-99.
Hassan NF et al (1985) Unexposed motor cortex sxcitation by low voltage stimuli. In: Morocutti C & Rizzo PA Eds. Evoked Potentials: Neruphysiological and Clinical Aspects. Elsevier, Amsterdam. 107-113.
Hess CW et al (1987) Responses in small hand muscles from magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiol. 388: 397-419.
Hill DK, McDonnell MJ & Merton PA (1980) Direct stimulation of teh adductor pollicis in man. J. Physiol. 300: 2P-3P. [ele - skin ->
Maccabee PJ, Amassian VE, Cracco RQ & Cadwell JA (1988) An anaysis of peripheral motor nerve stimulation in humans using the magnetic coil. EEG clin.N. 70: 524-533.
Marsden CD, Merton PA & Morton HB (1983) Direct electrical stimulation of corticospinal pathways through the intact scalp in human subjects. Adv. Neruol. 39: 387-391.
Merton PA & Morton HB (1980) Stimulation of the cerebral cortex in the intact human subject. Nature 285: 227.

Merton PA & Morton HB (1980) Electrical stimulation of human motor and visual cortex through the scalp. J. Physiol. 305: 9P-10P.

Mills et al (1987) Magnetic and electrical transcranial brain stimulation: physiological mechanisms and clinical applications. Neurosurgery 20: 164-168.

Rosenthal J et al (1967) An anlysis of the activation of motor cortical neurons by surface stimulation. J. Neurophysiol. 30: 844-858.

Rossini PM et al (1987) Mechanisms of nervous propagation along central motor pathways: non-invasive evaluation in healthy subjects and in patients with neurological disease. Neurosurgery 20: 183-191.

Rothwell JC et al (1987) Some experiences of techniques for stimulation of the human cerebral motor cortex through the scalp. Neurosurgery 20: 156-163.

Rothwell JC et al (1987) Motor cortex stimulation in intact man. 1. General characteristics of EMG responses in different muscles. Brain. 110: 1173-1190.

Stephen V (1959) Med. J. Australia 1: 831. [ele --> anesthesia]

HEAD – MAGNETIC FIELD (MEG)

Brenner D, Williamson SJ & Kaufman L (1975) Visually evoked magnetic fields of the human brain. Science 190: 480. [SQUID <-- mf]

Brenner D, Williamson SJ & Kaufman L (1978) Somaticaly evoked magnetic fields of the brain. Science 199: 81-83.

Cohen D (1968) Science 161: 784. [head --> mf]

Cohen D (1972) Science 175: 664. [head --> mf]

Cohen D (1975) IEEE Trans. Magn. 11: 694. [head --> mf]

Cohen D et al (1980) Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. 77: 1447. [human hair--> mf]

Farrell, E.E., Tripp, J.H., Norgren, R., Teyler, T.J. (1980) A study of the auditory evoked magnetic field of the human brain, EEG clin. Neurol. 49, 31-37.û£ðjæ¦û{

Goff GD, Matsumiya Y, Allison T & Goff WR (1977) The scalp topography of human somatosensory and auditory evoked potentials. EEG clin. N. 42: 57-76.

Gutman AU & Morgenshtern AM (1977) Possible mechanism of generation of MEG. Biofizika 22(3)< May/June 1977.

Hughes JR et al (1977) Relationship of the MEG to abnormal activity in the EEG. J. Neurol. 217(2), Dec. 13.

Hughes JR et al () Relationship of MEG to the EEG: Normal wake and sleep activity. Clinical Neurophysiology 40(3)

Reite M & Zimmerman JE (1978) The magnetic phenomena of the central nervous sytem. Ann. Rev. Biophys. Bioeng. 7: 167-188.

Reite M, Zimmerman JE, Edrich J & Zimmerman JT (1976) The human magnetoencephalogram: some EEG and related correlations. EEG clin. N. 40: 59-66.

Reite M, Edrich J, Zimmerman JT & Zimmerman JE (1978) Human magnetic auditory evoked fields. EEG clin.N. 45, 114-117.

Silver AH & Zimmerman JE (1967) Phys. Rev. 157: 317. [SQUID]

Teyler TJ, Cuffin BN & Cohen D (1975) The visual evoked magnetoencephalogram. Life Sci. 17: 683-692.

Taz CA & Thakor NV (1986) Monitoring brain electricaland magnetic activity. IEEE Eng. M.B. 5(3): 11-15.

Zimmerman JE et al (1970) J. Appl. Phys. 41: 1572. [SQUID]

Zimmerman JE (1977) SQUID instruments and shielding for low levelmagnetic measurements. J. Appl. Phys. 48: 702-710.

MIND-READING MACHINE

Caylor, Ron (1976) Government working on machine that can read your mind. The National Enquirer Juen 22, 1976 [Burdick(1981)]

Glenn JC (1989) Conscious Technology: the co-evolution of mind and machine. Futurist Sep/Oct 1989.

Mind-reading computer. Futurist May/June 1992, p.49.

MAGNETIC --- BIOEFFECTS

Alerstam, T. (1983) Role of the geomagnetic field in the development of bird's compass sense, Nature 306, 413.?

Baker, R. (1980) Goal orientation in blindfolded humans after long distance displacemnt: possible involvement of a magnetic sense, Science 210, 555.

Baker, R. (1983) Magnetic bones in human sinuses, Nature 301, 78.

Baker R (RûEâìârâôûEâxû[âJû[) üwÉlè+é¦ò_înè¦èoé¦æµÿZè¦-ÃÑïCé_è¦é¦é_ð]ûx

Becker, R.O. (1963) The biological effects of magnetic fields - a survey. Med. Electron. Biol. Eng. 1, 293.

Becker, R.O., Bachman, CC.H., & Friedman, H. (1962) N.Y. State J. Med. 62, 1169.

Becker, R.O. (1963) Relationship of geomagnetic environment to human biology. N.Y. State J. Med. 63, 2215.

Bell, G.B. et al (1992) Alterations in brain electrical activity caused by magnetic fields: detecting the detection process. EEG Clin. N. 83(6), 389-397.

Blakemore, R. (1975) Magnetotactic bacteria, Science 190, 377.

Gaffey, C.T. & Tenforde, T.S. (1981) Alterations in the rat electrocardiograph induced by stationary magnetic fields. BEM 2, 357-370.

Gould, J.L., et al (1978) Bees have magnetic remanence, Science 202, 1026.?

Gould, J.L. (1993) Magnetic senses: birds lost in the red. Nature 364(6437) 491.

Hays, J.D. & Opdyla, N.D. (1967) Antarctic radiolaria, magnetic reversals and climatic change, Science 158, 1001.

Jafary-Asl et al (1983) J. Biological Physics 11: 15. [nuclear magnetic resonance --> yeast growth]

Keeton, W. (1971) Magnets interfere with pigeon homing, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US 68, 102.

Semm, P. (1980) Effect of Earth strength magnetic field on electrical activity of pineal cells, Nature 288, 607.

Semm, P. (1983) Neurobiological investigations on the magnetic sensitivity of the pineal gland in rodents and pigeons. J. Comp Physiol B Biochem Sys Environ Physiol 76, 683-689.

Semm, P. et al (1984) Neural basis of the magnetic compass: interactions of visual, magnetic, and vestibular inputs in the pigwons' brain . J Comp Physiol A sens Neural Behav Physiol 155, 183-288.

MAGNETIC STIMULATION OF THE BRAIN (MSB)

Barker AT et al. (1985) Non-invasive magnetic stimulation of human motor cortex. Lancet i: 1106-1107.
Benzel EC et al (1993) Magnetic Source Imaging: a review of the Magnes system of biomagnetic Technologies Incorporated. Neurosurgery 33(2): 252-259.
Biomagnetic Technologies: Magnetic Source Imaging (MSI) Magnes biomagnetometer. Neurosurgery 33(1): 166-168. [$2,500,000]
Cohen LG et al. (1990) Effects of coil design on delivery of focal magnetic stimulation: Technical considerations. EEG clin. N. 75: 350-357.
Day BL, Kick JPR, Marsden CD & Thompson PD (1986) Differences between electrical and magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiology 378: 36P.
Day BL et al. (1987) Different sites of action of electrical and magnetic stimulation of the huma brain. Neuroscience Letters 75: 101-106.
Hess CW, Mills KR & Murray NMF (1986) Magnetic stimulation of the human brain: The effects of voluntary muscle activity. J. Physiology. 378: 37P.
Hess CW, Mills KR & Murray NMF (1987) Responses in small hand muscles from magnetic stimulation of the human brain. J. Physiology 388: 397-419.
Kamada K et L (1993) Functional Neurosurgical stimulation with brain surface magnetic resonance Images and magnetoencephalography. Neurosurgery 33(2): 269-273.
Maccabbee PJ, Amassian VE, Cracco RQ et al (1988) Focal magnetic coil sstimulation of human frontal cortex elicits speech related motor activity Soc. Neuroscience Abstracts. 14: 159.
Pascual-Leone A et al. (1994) Responses to rapid-rate transcranial magnetic stimulation of the human motor cortex. Brain 17(4): 847-858
Seki Y et al (1990) Transcranial magnetic stimulation of the facial nerve: recording technique and estimation of the stimulated site. Neurosurg. 26(2): 286-290.
Tokimura H et al (1993) Transcranial magnetic stimulation excites the root exit zone of the facial nerve. Nerosurgery 32(3): 414-416.

MOSCOW SIGNAL

Anderson, Jack (1972) Washington Merry-Go-Round: "Brainwash" attempt by Russians ? Washington Post 1972.5.10
Anderson, J. (1975) Soviets aim rays at U.S. The Paterson News. 1975.5.16.
Berkley C (1976) A new occupational disease? - of diplomats. Editorial. Med. Res. Eng. 12(3) , 3-7.
Gwertzman, B. (1976) Moscow rays linked to U.S. bugging. NYT 1976.2.26. P.1,4
Gwertzman, B. (1976) US radio spying in Sovit suffers: microwaves end usefulness of embassy's listening post in Moscow. NYT 1976.5.2. P.9
Gwertzman, B. (1976) Soviet dims beam at U.S. Embassy, NYT 1976.7.8. P.1,10
Pursglove, S.D. (1966) The eavesdroppers: 'Fallout' from R&D, Electronic Design 14(15):34-49.
Shipler, D.K. (1976) U.S.radiation report worried foreign diplomats in Moscow, NYT 1976.2.11
The microwave furor, Time 1976.3.22,2.23.
Toth, R.C. (1976) Soviet radiation at U.S.Embassy, NYT 1976.2.7 ?
Wren, C.S. (1976) Bugging in Moscow causes Health scare, NYT 1976.2.9 P.4

MICROWAVE & ELF

Adey, W.R., Bell, F.R. & Dennis, B.J. (1962) Effects of LSD, psilocybin and psilocin on tempral lobe EEG patterns and learned behaivor in the cat. Neurology 12, 591-602.
Adey, W.R., Kado, R.T.., & Didio, J. (1962) Impedance measurements in brain tissue of animals using microvolt signals. Exp. Neurol. 5, 47-66.
Adey, W.R., Kado, R.T., Didio, J., & Schindler, W.J. (1963) Impedance changes in cerebral tissue accompanying a learned discriminative performance in the cat. Exp. Neurol. 7, 259-281.
Adey, W.R. & Walter, D.O. (1963) Application of phase detection and averaging techniques in computer analysis of EEG records in the cat. Exp. Neurol. 7, 186-209.
Adey, W.R., Dado, R.T., McIlwain, J.T. & Walter, D.O. (1966) The role of neuronal elements in regional cerebral impedance changes in alerting, orienting and discriminative responses. Exp. Neurol. 15, 490-510.
Adey, W.R., Elul, R., Walter, R.D., & Crandall, P.H. (1966) The cooperative behavior of neuronal population sduring sleep and mental tasks, Proc. Am. Electroenceph. Soc. 86.
Adey, W.R. (1972) Organization of brain tissue: is the brain anoisy processor ? Int. J. Neuosci. 3, 271-284.
Adey, W.R. (1980) Frequency and power windowing in tissue interactions with weak electromagnetic fields. Proc IEEE 68, 119.
Adey, W.R. (1981) Tissue interactions with non-ionizing electromagnetic fields. Physiol.Rev. 61: 435-514.
Albert, E.N. & De Santis, M. (1975) Do microwaves alter nervous system structure? Ann. NY Acad. Sci 247, 87-108.
Baldwin, M.S., Bach, S.A., & Lewis, S.A. (1960) Effects of radio frequency energy on primate cerebral activity, Neurol. 10, 178-187.
Baranski, S., & Edelwejn, Z. (1968) Studies on the combined effect of microwaves and some drugs on bioelectric activity of the rabbit CNS, Acta Physiol. Pol. 19, 37-50
Baranski, S. & Czerski, P. (1976) Biological Effects of Microwaves. Stroudsburg, PA: Dowden, Hutchinson, and Ross, Inc.

Bassett, C.A.L., Pawluk,R.J. & Becker, R.O. (1964) Effects of electric currents on bone in vivo. Nature 204, 652.

Bassett, C.A.L., et al (1974) Augmentation of bone repair by inductively coupled em fields, Science 184, 575-577.

Bassett, C.A.L. et al (1974) Acceleration of fracture repair by em fields. a surgically non-invasive method. Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci. 238, 242-249.

Bawin, S.M., Kaczmarek, L.K., & Adey, W.R. (1975) Effects of modulated VHF fields on the central nervous system, Ann. NY ad.Sci. 247. 74-81.

Becker RO, Bachman CH & Slaughter WC (1962) The longitudinal direct current gradients of spinal nerves. Nature 196: 67

Becker RO & Brown RM (1965) Photoelectric effects in human bone. Nature 206: 1325.

Becker, R.O. (1965) The neural semiconduction control system and its interaction with applied electrical current and magnetic fields, presented at the ZIth Int. Cong.Radiology, Sept.1965.

Becker, R.O. (1974) The basic biological data transmission and control system influenced by electrical forces. Ann. N.Y.Acad. Sci. 238, 236-241.

Becker, R.O. (1985) The Body Electric, (NY, William Morrow)

Becker, R.O. (1985) A theory of the interaction between DC and ELF em fields and living organisms. J. Bioelectricity 4, 133-142.

Becker, R.O. (1990) Cross Currens

ûó "Biological effects of electric and magnetic fields associated with proposed project seafarer," Rep. of the Committee on Biosphere Effects of Extremely Low-Frequency Radiation, Division of Medical Sciences, Assembly of Life Sciences, National Research Council, National Academy of Sciences, 1977.

ûÕ Boffey, P.M. (1976) Project Seafarer: critics attack National Academy's review gourp. Science 192, 1213-1215. [Project Sanguine]

ûó Boffey, P.M.(?) (1976) Science 193, 653-656. [Project Sanguine] û£iç

ûÕ Borth, D.E. & Cain, C.A. (1977) Theoretical analysis of acoustic signal generation in materials irradiated with microwave energy, IEEE Trans. MTT 25, 944-954.

ûñ Brodeur, Paul (1977) The Zapping Of America, (NY, W.W.Norton & Company)

Brodeur, Paul (1989) Currents of Death. Simon & Schuster, New York.

ûÕ Brownell, W.E. et al (1985) Evoked mechanical responses of isolated cochlear outerhair cells. Science 227, 194-196.

Bruce-Wolfe, V. & Adair, E.R. (1985) Operant control of convective cooling and microwave irradiation by the squirrel monkey, BEM 6, 365-380.

û£ Burden, S.J., McKay, R.D. (1990) Quantum mechanics of synapses, Cell 63, 7.É+û{Æå

ûÕ Burr HS & Northrup FSC (1935) The electrodynamic theory of life. Quart. Rev. Biol. 10: 322.

ûó Campbell HJ (1971) Smithsonian Oct. 1971. [Sensory input normally stimulates the pleasure center of the brain]

ûó Cleary, S.F. (1977) Biological effects of microwave and radiofrequency radiation,
CRC Crit. Rev. Environ. Contr. 7, 121-166.

Cleary, S.F. (1980) Microwave cataractogenesis. Proc IEEE 68, 49.

ûó Compilation of Navy Sponsored ELF Biomedical and Ecological Research Reports, Vols. I and II (Feb.1975). Vol.III(Jan. 1977). Bethesda, MD: Naval Medical Research and Development Command,Feb.1975. [available from the National Technical Information Service, Springfield, VA 22161]

ûó Cope, F.W. (1971) Negative temperature coefficients in neurons. Physiol.chemist. phys. 3, 403.

ûó Cope, F.W. (1974) Superconductivity of nerves. Physiol. chemistry and physics. 6, 405.

ûó Cope, F.W. (1975) A review of the applications of solid state physics ceoncepts to biological systems. J.biological physics. 3, 1.

û£ Cox CF et al. (1993) A test for teratological effects ofpower frequency magnetic fields on chick embryos. IEEE BME 40(7): 605-610. [10 micT-> negative effects]

ûÕ D'Andrea, J.A., Gandhi, O.P., & Lords, J.L. (1977) Behavioral and thermal effects of microwave radiation at resonant and nonresonant wave lengths, Radio Sci. 12(6S), 251-256.

ûÕ D'Andrea, J.A., et al (1979) Physiological and biological effects of chronic exposure to 2450 MHz micrewaves. J. microwave Power 14, 351-362.

ûÕ D'Andrea, J.A. et al (1980) Physiological and biological effects of prolonged exposure to 915 MHz microwaves, J. microwave Power, 15, 123-136.

ûÕ D'Andrea, J.A. et al (1986) Behavioral and physiological effects of chronic 2450 MHz microwave irradiation of the rat at 0.5 mW.cm2. BEM 7, 45-56.

ûÕ D'Andrea, J.A. et al (1986) Intermittent exposure of rats to 2450 MHz microwaves at 2.5 mW/cm2: behavioral and physiological effects.. BEM 7, 315-328.

ûó de Lorge, J. (1973) Operant behavior of rhesus monkeys in the presence of extremely low frequency - low intensity magnetic and electric fields: Experiment 2, NAMRL-1179, Pensacola, FL: Naval Aerospace Medical Research Laboratory, Mar. 1973.

ûó de Lorge, J. (1974) A psychobiological study of rhesus monkeys exposed to extremely low requency low intensity magnetic fields, NAMRL-1203, Pensacola, FL: Naval Aerospace Medical Research Lab. May 1974.

de Lorge, J.O. (1984) Operant behavior and colonic temperature of Macaca mulatta exposed to radio frequency fields at and above reasonant frequencies. BEM 5, 233-246.

ûó DelGiudice, S., Doglia, S., Milani, M. et al (1989) Magnetic flux quantization and Josephson behavior in living systems. Physica Scripta. 40, 786.?

ûó Delgado JMR, Monteagudo JL, Garcia-Garcia M, Leal J (1981) Teratogenic effects of weak magnetic fields. IRCS Med Sci 9:42-48.?

Delgado, J.M.R. et al (1982) Embryological changes induced by weak, extremely low frequency electromagnetic fields. J. Anat. 134, 533-551.

Delgado, J.M.R. (1985) Biological effects of extremely low frequency em fields.
J. Bioelectricity 4, 75-92.

ûÕ Diebolt, J.R. (1978) The influence of electrostatic and magnetic fields on mutation i drosophila melanogaster spermatozoa. Mutation Res. 57, 169-174.

ûÕ Dixey, R., Rein, G. (1982) Noradrenaline release potentiated in a clonal nerve cell line by low-intensity pulsed magnetic fields. Nature 296, 253.

ûó Dodge, C.H. & Glaser, Z.R. (1977) Trends in nonionizing electromagnetic research and related occupational health aspects, J. Microwave Power 12 (4), 319-334.

ûó Dƒll, T. & Dƒll, B. (1957) Deutsch. med. Wshr. [magnetic storms -> suicides]

ûÕ Edelwejn, Z. (1968) An attempt to assess the functional state of the cerebral synapses in rabbits exposed to chronic irradiation with microwaves. Acta. Physiol. Pol. 19, 897-906.

ûó Edelwejn, Z., Elder, R.L., Klimkova-Deutschova, E., & Tengroth, B. (1974) Occupational exposure and public health aspects of microwave radiation, in Biologic Effects and Health Hazards of Microwave Radiation, P.Czerski et al.Eds, Warsaw, Poland, Polish Medical Publishers.

û£ Effects of EM Radiation () IEEE EMB 6(1)

ELF: smaller still but not dead yet. IDR 11/1981: 1416-1417. [submarine comm. sys.]

ûÔ Foley, P.B., el al (1986) Pineal indoles: significance And measurement. Neurosci Biobehav Rev 10, 273-293.

ûÔ Fraser, A. & Frey, A.H. (1968) Electromagnetic emission at micron wavelengths from active nerves, Biophys.J., 8,731-734.

Foster KR & Guy AW (1986) Sci. Am. 255: 32. (see also Sci. Am. 1986.12)

û¢ Foster KR (1986) Am. Scientist March/April.

ûÕ Fox SW (1965) A theory of macromelecular and cellular origins. Nature 205, 325.

û£ Fox SW (1968) How did life begin ? Science & Technology Feb. 1968.

Frey, A.H. (1963) Human response to VLF electromagnetic energy, Nav.Res.Rev., 1-8.

Frey, A.H. (1963) Some effects on humans of UHF irradiation, Am.J.Med.Electron., 2, 28-31

Frey, A.H. (1965) Behavioral biophysics, Psychol.Bull., 63, 322-337.

Frey, A.H. (1967) Brain stem evoked responses associated with low intensity pulsed UHF energy," J.Appl.Physiol., 23, 984-988.

Frey, A.H., Fraser, A., Siefert, E., & Brish, T. (1968) A coaxial pathway for recording from the cat brain stem during illumination with UHF energy, Physiol.Behav., 3, 363-365.

Frey, A.H. (1971) Biological function as influenced by low-power modulated RF energy, IEEE Trans. MTT 19, 153-164.

Frey, A.H. & Messenger, Jr., R. (1973) Human perception of illumination with pulsed ultra-high frequency electromagnetic energy, Science 181, 356-358.

Frey, A.H. & Feld, S.R. (1975) Avoidance by rats of illumination with low power nonionizing electromagnetic energy, J. Comp. Phys. Psyhcol. 89, 183-188.

Frey, A.H. & Spector, J. (1976) Irritability and aggression in mammals as affected by exposure to em energy, Program and Abstracts for URSI Ann. meeting, Amherst, MA. 93.1976.

Frey, A.H. & Gendleman, S. (1979) Motor coordination of balance degradation during mw energy exposure. Bull. Psychonomic Soc. 14(6), 442-444.

Frey, A.H. & Wesler, L.S. (1980) Tail pressure behaviors modification associated with microwave energy exposure, BEM 1 , 202.

Frey, A.H. & Wesler, LS. (1982) A test of the dopamine hypothesis of microwave energy effects. JBE 1, 305-312. û£îç

Frey, A.H. & Wesler, L.S. (1983) Dopamine receptors and microwave energy exposure. J. Bioelectricity 2, 145-157.

Frey A.H. & Wesler, L.S. (1984) Modification of the conditioned emotioanl response in rats living in a 60 Hz electrical field, Bull. Psychonomic Soc. 22, 477-479.

Frey, A.H. (1985) Data analysis reveals significant microwave-induced eye damage in

Frey, A.H. & Wesler, L.S. (1990) Interaction of Psychoactive drugs with exposure to electromagnetic fields. J. Bioelectricity 9, 187-196.

Friedman, H., Becker, R.O., & Bachman, C.H. (1963) Geomagnetic parameters and psychiatric hospital admissions. Nature 200, 626.

Friedman, H., Becker, R.O., & Bachman, C.H. (1965) Nature 205, 1050.

Friedman, H., Becker, R.O., & Bachman, C.H. (1967) Effect of magnetic fields on reaction time performance. Nature 213, 949.

Froehlich H (1968) Long-range coherence and energy storage in biological systems. Int. J. Quant. Chem. II: 641-649.

Froehlich H (1975) Evidence for Bose condensation-like excitations of coherent modes in biological systems. Phys. Lett. 51A: 21-22.

Froehlich H (1978) Coherent electric vibrations in biological systems and the cancer problem. IEEE MTT 26: 613-617.

Frohlich, H., Ed. (1988) Biological coherence and response to externa stimuli. New York, Springer.

Fujita, Y. & Sato, T. 1964) Intracellular records from hippocampal pyramidal cells in rabbit during theta rhythms activity. J. Neurophysiol. 27, 1101-1025.

Fukida Eiichi () Ed. BBoard of J. Beioelectricity The Inst. Chemical and Physical Res., Wako-shi Saitama 351, JAPAN

Gandhi OP (1974) Plolarization and frequency effects on whole animal absorption of RF energy. Proc. IEEE 62: 1171-1175.

Gandhi OP (1975) Conditions of strongest em power deposition in man and animals. IEEE Trans. MTT 23: 1021-1029.

Gandhi OP (1990) Biological Effects and Medical Applications of Electromagnetic Fields (Prentice-Hall)

Gaston S. & Manaker M (1968) Pineal function: the biological clock in the sparrow. Science 160, 1125-1127.

Gavalas-Medici, R. & Day-Magdaleno, S.R. (1976) Extremely low frequency, weak electric fields affext schedule-controlled behavior of monkeys, Nature 261, 256-258.

Glaser, Z.R. & Dodge, C.H. (1976) Biomedical aspects of radiofrequency radiation: A review of selected Soviet, East European, and Western references, Selected Papers of the USNC/URSI Annual Meeting (Boulder, CO, Oct.1975), HEW Publication (FDA) 77-8010/8011,pp.2-34.

Gold M (1979) The radiowave syndrome. Science 80(1): 78-84.

Goodman, E.M., Greenebaum, B., & Marron, M.T. (1980-) Bio-effects of extremely low frequency electromagnetic fields: variation with intensity, waveform and indivudual or combined electric and magnetic fields, Rad. Res. in press.

Graf ER & Cole FE (1967) Radiant em energy and life, Recent Adv. Eng. Sci. 4 ,67.

Grissett, J.D. (1980) Biological effects of electric and magnetic fields associated with ELF communications systems. Proc IEEE 68, 98.

Greene, L.A., Rein, G. (1977) Release, storage and uptake of catecholamines by a clonal cell line of NGF responsive phaeochromocytoma cells. Brain Res. 129, 247.

Greene, L.A., Rein, G. (1977) Synthesis, storage and release of acetylcholine by a noradrenergic phaeochromocytoma cell line. Nature 268, 349.

Grundler W & Keilman F (1978) Nonthermal effects of millimeter waves on yeast growth. Z. Naturforsch 33cm 15-22.

Guy, E. et al (1975) Effect of 2450 MHz radiation on the rabbit eye, IEEE Trans. MTT 23, June, 495.

Guy, A.W., Chou, C., Honson, R.B. & Kunz, L.L. (1980) Study of effects of long-term low-level RF exposure on rats: a plan. Proc IEEE 68, 92.

Guy, A.W. (1988) The bioelectromagnetics Research Laboratory, University of Washington: reflection on twenty-five years of Reaearch, BEM 9, 113-128.

Halberg, F., Cutkomp, L., Nelson, W., & Sothern, R. (1975) Circadian rhythms in plants, insects and mammals exposed to ELF magnetic and/or electric fields and currents, University of Minnesota, Aug. 1975.

Hamer, J. (1968) Effects of low level, low frequency electric fields on human reaction time. Commun. Behav. Biol. 2 (A), 217-222.

Hathaway, J.A. (1979) reply to Dr.Zaret (letter to Ed.), J. Occup. Med. 20, 316-317.

Hinton HE & Blum MS (1965) Suspended animation and the origin of life. New Sci.Oct. 28:270.

Holland JG (1957) Technique for behavioral analysis of human observing. Science 125: 348-350.

Hosmer H (1928) Science 68: 327. [the first report of mw --> heat => bioeffects]

Huai, C. et al (1985) Experimental research in China on the biological effects of microwaves. J. Bioelectricity 4, 103-120.

Huang, A.T., Engle, M.E., Elder, J.A., Kinn, J.B., & Ward, T.R. (1977) The effect of microwave radiation (2450 MHz) on the morphology and chromosomes of lymphocytes, Rad. Sci. 12(6S), 173-177.

Hunt, E.L., King, N.W., Phillips, R.D. (1975) Behavioral effects of pulsed microwave radiation, Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 440-453.

Hutchison, Michael (1986) Mega Brain, (Ballantine)

IEEE Transactions on Microwave Theory and Techniques, MTT-19, No.2, Februay 1971. Special issue on biological effects of microwaves 0£11(1):1963.1- (Z53-N415)

Karel Marha,"Microwave Radiation Safety Standards in Eastern Europe,"

Jaffe, R.A. et al (1980) Chronic exposure to 60-Hz electric fields: effects on synaptic trasmission and peripheral nerve function in the rat. BEM 1, 113-118.

Jaffe, R.A. et al (1981) Chronic exposure to a 60-Hz electric field: effects on neuromuscular functio in the rat. BEM 2, 227-239.

Jaggard, D.L. & Lords, J.L.(1980) Celular effects: millimeter waves and Raman spectra - report of a panel discusstion. Proc IEEE 68, 114.

Janchem, J. (1991) Alleged health effects of em fields: misconceptions in the scientific literature. J. m.wave Power 26, 189-195. [Current Death]

Jasper, H. & Stefanis, C. (1965) Intracellular and oscillatory rhythms in pyramidal tract neurons in the cat. EEG Clin. Neurophysiol. 18, 541-553.

Johnson, C.C., & Guy, A.W. (1972) Non-ionizing electromagnetic wave effects in biological materials and systems. Proc IEEE 60, 692-718.

Johnson, C.C. (1973) Research needs for establishing a radio frequency electromagnetic radiation safety standard, J. Microwave Power, 8, 367-388.

Johnson, C.C. (1975) Recommendations for specifying EM wave irradiation conditions in bioeffects research, J. Microwave Power 10, 249-250.

Josephson, B.D. (1965) Advanced physics. 14, 419.

Justesen, D.R., & King, N.W. (1970) Behavioral effects of low level microwave irradiation in the closed space situation, in Biological Effects and Health Implications of Microwave Radiation, S.F.Cleary, Ed., pp.154-179.

Justesen, D.R. (1977) Diathermy versus the microwaves and other radio-frequency radiations: A rose by another name is a cabbage, Radio Sci. 12, 355-364.

Justesen, D.R., & Baird, R.C. Eds. (1979) Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Waves, special issue of Radio Sci. 14, no.65.

Justesen DR, Adair ER, Stevens C & Bruce-Wolfe V (1982) A comparative study of huma sensory thresholds: 2450 MHz microwaves vs. far i nfrared radiation. BEM 3:117-125.

Kaiser F (1978) Coherent oscillations in biological systems. Z. Naturforsh. 33a: 294-304.

Kalmijin, Ad. J. (1982) Electric and magnetic field detection in Elasmobranch fishes, Science 218, 916.

Kaune, W.T. & Gillis, M.F. (1981) General properties of the interaction between animals and ELF fields, BEM 2, 1-11.

Kaune, W.T. (1981) Interactive effects in 60 Hz electric-field exposure systems, BEM 2, 33-50.

Kholodov, Y.A. (1966) The Effect of Electromagnetic and Magnetic Fields on the Central Nervous System Moscow, USSR, Nauka, p.283.

Kim, Y.S. (1976) Some possible effects of static magnetic fields on cancer.
Tower int. Technomed. Inst. J. Life Sci. 6, 11-28.

Kinouchi, Y. et al (1984) Design of a magnetic field generator for experiments on magnetic effects in cell cultures. BEM 5, 399-410.

Kinouchi, Y. et al (1988) Effects of static magnetic fields on diffusion in solutions, BEM 9,159-166.

Korbel, S.F. & Fine, J.L. (1967) Effects of low intensity UHF radio fields as a function of frequency. Psychonom. Sci 9, 527.

Konig, H. (1959) Atmospherics peringster Frequenzen.
Z. Angew. Physik.. 11, 264-274. [earth rhythms]

Konig, H.H. & Ankermuller, F. (1960) Uber den Einfluss besonders niederfrequenter elektrischer Vorgange in der Atmosphare auf den Menschen, Naturwissenschaften, 47, 486-490.

Konig, H.H. (1974) Behavioral changes in human subjects associated with ELF electric fields, in ELF and VLF Electromagnetic Field Effects, M.A. Persinger, Ed. ,New York: Plenum, 81-133.

Korbel, S. & Thompson, W.D. (1965) Behavior effects of stimulation by UHF radio fields, Psychological Reports, 17, 595-602.

Korbel, s. & Fine, H.L. (1967) Effects of low intensity UHF radio fields as a funciton of frequency, Psychonomic Sci., 9, 527-528.

Kritikos HN & Schwan HP (1972) Hot spots generated in conducting spheres by em waves and biological implications. IEEE Tran. BME 19: 53-58. [resonant --> head]

Lai, H. et al (1983) Psychoactive drug response is affected by acute low-level microwave irradiation. BEM 4, 205-214.

Larsen LE et al (1974) A microwave decoupled brain temperature transducer.
IEEE Trans. MTT 22: 438-444.

Lawrence L. George (1973) Electronics and Brain Control. Popular Electronics July.

Leal J, Ubeda A, Trillo A, Monteagudo JL, Delgado JMR (1982) Modification of embryogenesis by magnetic fields.. Neuroscience 7(Suppl.):S77.

Lerner, E. (1984) Biological effects of electromagnetic fields, IEEE Spectrum Mar, 63.

Lerner, E. (1984) Biological effects of electromagnetic fields, IEEE Spectrum May, 57.

Lebovitz, R.M. (1981) Prolonged microwave irradiation of rats: effects on concurrent operant behavior. BEM 2, 169-185.

Lewy, A.J. et al (1980) Light suppresses melatonin secretion in humans. Science 210, 1267-1269.

Lewy, A.J. et al (1982) Bright artificial light treatment of a manic depressive patient with a seasonal mood cycle. Am J Psychiatry 139, 1496-1497.

Liboff A et al (1984) Science 223: 818. [ELF/VLF --> DNA systesis]

Liboff AR (1985) Cell-field interactions at extremely low frequencies.
Bull Am Physical Soc 30: 548a. [cylotron resonace]

Liboff A (1985) J. Biological Physics 13: 99. [cyclotron resonance]

Lilienfeld, A.M., Tonascia, J., Tonascia, S. et al. (1978) Foreign service health status study evaluation of health status of foreign service and other employee from selected Eastern European posts, Final rep. (Contract No. 6025-619073) to U.S. Dep. of State, July 31, 1978.

Lin, J.C. (1975) Biomedical effects of microwave radiation - a review,
Proc. Nat. Electron.Conf. 30 , 224-232.

Lin, J.C., Guy, A.W., & Caldwell, L.T. (1977) Thermographic and behavioral studies of rats in the near field of 918-MHz radiations, IEEE Trans. MTT. 25, 833-836.

Lin, J.C., Meltzer, R.J., & Redding, F.K. (1979) Microwave-evoked brainstem potentials in cats, J. Microwave Power 14, 291-296.

Lisk RD & Kannwischer LR (1964) Light: evidence for its direct effect on the hypothalamic neurons. Science 146 272-273.

Lott, J.R. & McCain, H.B. (1973) Some effects of continuous and pulsating electric fields on brain wave activity in rats, Int. J. Biometeorol. 17, 221-225

Lu, S, Lotz, W.G. & Michaelson, S.M. (1980) Advances in microwave-induced neuroendocrine effects: the concept of stress. Proc IEEE 68, 73.

Lyle DB et al (1988) BEM 9: 303. [60Hz –>! T-cell]

Lyskov, E.B. et al (1993) Effects of 45 Hz magnetic fields on the functional state of the human brain. BEM 14, 87-96.

Mantle, E.R. & Persinger, M.A. (1983) Alterations in subjective evaluations during acute exposures to 5 Hz but not 9 Hz magnetic field devices. J. Bioelectricity 2, 5-14.

Marino, A.A. & Becker, R.O. (1977) Hazard at a distance: effects of exposure to the electric and magnetic fields of high volatge transmission lines. Med. Res. Eng. 12(5)

Marino, A.A. (1985) We need a science court. J. Bioelectricity 4, vii-viii.

Martin, A.H. (1992) Development of chicken embryos following exposure to 60 Hz magnetic fields with differing wave forms. BEM 13, 223-230.

Mather, J.G. (1981) Magnetic sense of direction in woodmice for route based navigation, Nature 291, 152

McAfee RD (1962) Physiological effects of thermode and mw stimulation of peripheral nerves. Am. J. Physiol. 203: 374-378.

McAfee RD (1971) Analeptic effect of mw irradiation on experimental animals. IEEE Tran. MTT 19: 251-253.

McAuliffe, Kathleen (1985) The Mind Fields, Omni Magazine, February, 1985.

McGeer, P.L., McGeer, E.G. (1980) Chemistry of mood and emotion. Annual Rev. Psychology 31, 273-307.

McLaughlin J (1957) Tissue destruciton and death from microwave radiation (radar). California Medicine 86: 336-339. [the first mw victim]

McRee, D.I. (1980) Soviet and Eastern European research on biological effects of microwave radiation. Proc IEEE 68, 84.

Medici, R.G. (1980) Methods of assaying behavioral changes during exposure to weak electric fields, Proceedings of Conference XI: abnormal animal behavior prior to earthquakes (II), US Geological Survey Open File Report 80-453, Menlo Park, CA, 114-140.

Medici, R. (1985) Behavioral studies with em fields: implications for psychobiology. J. Bioelectricity 4, 527-552.

Merritt, J.G. et al (1985) Science and Standards = another viewpoint. J. microwave Power 20, 55-56.

Michaelson, S.M. (1971) The Tri-Service Program, IEEE Trans. MTT 19 (2)

Michaelson, S.M., Houk, W.M.., Lebda, J.A., Lu, S.-T., & Magin, R. (1975) Biochemical and neuroendocrine aspects of exposure to microwaves. Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 21-45.

Michaelson, S.M. (1980) Microwave biological effects: an overview. Proc IEEE 68, 40.

Miller SL (1953) The production of amino acids under possible primitive Earth conditions. Science 117, 528.

Mitchell, C.L. et al (1988) Some behavioral effects of short-term exposure of rats to 2.45 -ûÕ Modak, A.T. et al (1981) Effect of short electromagnetic pulses on brain acetylcholine content and spontaneous motor activity of mice. BEM 2, 89-92.

Moisescu, D. & Margineanu, D. (1970) Electromagnetic emission sources in the active nerve, Biophys.J., 10, 482-484.

Monteagudo, J.l., Ramirez, E. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1984) Magnetic inhibition of bacterial growth. Abstr. in Proc. XXI Gen. Assembly Union Radio Science International, Florence, Italy, August 27-30, 1984.

NORDIC SCIENCE(1992) Nature 360(6404), 1992.12.10.

O'connor, M.E. (1980) Mammalian teratogenesis and radio-frequency fields. Proc. IEEE 68, 56.

O'leary JL & Goldring S (1964) DC potentials of the brain. Physiol. Rev. 44: 91.

Oscar, K.J., et al (1981) Local cerebral blood flow after mw exposure. Brain Rex. 204, 220-225.

Parker LN (1973) Thyroid suppression and adrenomedullary activation by low-intensity mw radiation. Am. J. Physiol. 224: 1388-1390.

Perry, F.S., Reichmanis, M., Marino, A.A., & Becker, R.O. (1981) Environmentalpower-frequency magnetic fields and suicide. Health Phys 41, 267-277.

Persinger, M.A. ed. (1974) ELF and VLF Electromagnetic Field Effects, NewYork: Plenum, 81-133.

Persinger, M.A. & Nolan, M. (1985) Partial amnesia for a narrative following application of theta frequency em fields. J. Bioelectricity 4, 481-494.

Pethig, R. (1983) The Physical characteristics and control of air ions for biological studies. J. Bioelectricity 2, 15-36.

Pittendrigh CS & Minis DH (1964) The entrainment of circadian ossilations by light and their role as photoperiodic clocks. Am. Nat. 98, 261-264.

Pittendrigh CS (1972) Circadian cycles and the diversity of possible roles of circadian organization in photoperiodic induction . Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA 69, 2734-2737.

Polorny, A.D., Mefferd, R.B., Jr. (1966) Geomagnetic fluctuations and disturbed behavior. Ner Mental Dis 143, 140-151.

Presman, A.S. (1964) The role of electromagnetic fields in physiological processes, Biofizika 1, 131-134.

Proc. Ad Hoc Committe for the Review of Biomedical and Ecological Effects of ELF Radiation, Washington, DC: Navy Bureau of Medicine and Surgery, Dec. 1973.

Purpura, D.P. & Cohen, B. (1962) Intracellular recording from thalamic neurons during recruiting responses, J. Neurophysiol. 25, 621.

Ramirez, E., Monteagudo, J.L. Garcia-Gracia, M. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1983) Ovipositoion and development of drosophila modified by magnetic fields. BEM 4, 315-326.

Ramirez, E., Monteagudo, J.L., Medrano, J.C. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1984) Drosophila mutation induced by a pulsed magnetic field. Abstr. in Proc. XXI Gen. Assembly Union Radio Science International Florence, Italy, August 27-30, 1984.

Pandal, W. & Randall, s. (1991) The solar wind and hallucinations - a possible relation due to magnetic disturbances. BEM 12, 67-70.

Reichmanis, M., Perry, F.S., Marino, A.A., Becker, R.O. (1979) Relation between suicide and em field of overheal power lines. Physiol Chem Phys 11, 395-403.

Rein, G., Korins, K., Pilla, A. (1987) Inhibition of neurotransmitter uptake in a neuronalcell line by pulsed electromagnetic fields. Proceedings of the 9th Bioelectromagnetic Society. June 1987.

Rein, G. (1993) Modulation of neurotransmitter function by quantum fields. PACE 6(4) 19.

Reiter R (1960) Meteoribiologie - Und Electrizitat der Atmosphare. (Akademische Verlabsgesellschaft Geest and Potig, Leipzig)

Reiter RJ, et al (1976) New horizons of pineal research. Am. Zool 16: 93-101.

Richardson, A. et al (1951) Experimental cataract produced by three centimeter pulsed microwave irradiations, Arch. Ophth. 45, 382.

Roberti, B., Heebels, G.H., Hendrics, J.C.M., de Greef, A.H.A.M., & Wolthuis, O.L. (1975) Preliminary investigations of the effects of low-level microwave radiation in spontaneous motor activity in rats. Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 417-423.

Rockwell, D.A., et al (1976) Psychologic and psychophysiologic response to 105 days of social isolation. Aviat Space Environ Med i47, 1087-1093.

Rockwell, S. (1977) Influence of a 14,000 Gauss magnetic field on the radiosensitivity and recovery of EMT6 cells in vitro. Int. J. radiat. Biol. 31, 153-160.

Rommel SA & McCleave JD (1972) Ocean electric fields: perception by American eels? Science 176: 1233.

Sadchikova, M.N. & Orlova, A.A. (1958) Clinical picture of the chronic effects of electromagnetic microwaves, Ind. Hyg. Occupat. Dis. (USSR), 2, 16-22.

Sagan, P.M. & Medici, R.G. (1979) Behavior of chicks exposed to low-power 450 MHz fields sinusoidally modulated at EEG frequency, Rad. Sci 14 (6S), 239-245.

Sanza, J.N., & de Lorge, J. (1977) Fixed interval behavior of rats exposed to microwaves at low power densities, Radio Sci. 12(6S), 273-277.

Schmidt,D.E., Speth, R.C., Welsch, F. & Schmidt, M.J. (1972) The use of microwave radiation in the determination of Acetylcholine in the rat brain," Brain Research, 38, 377-389.

Schwan, H.P. (1971) Interaction of Microwave and Radio Frequency Radiation with Biological systems, IEEE Trans. MTT 19 (2)

Schwan, H.P. & Foster, K.R. (1980) RF-field interactions with biological systems: electrical properties and biophysical. Proc IEEE 68, 104

Schwan, H.P. (1982) Microwave and RF hazard standard considerations. J. microwave Power 17, 1-10.

Schwan, H.P. (1984) RF-hazards and standards: an historical perspective, J. microwave Power 19, 225-232.

Scott AC, et al (1973) The soliton: a new concept in applied science. Proc IEEE 61, 1443-1483.

Shamos, M.H. & Lavine, L.S. (1967) Piezoelectricity as a fundamental property of biological tissues. Nature 213, 267-269.

Shapiro AR et al (1970) Induced fields and heating within a cranial structure irradiated by an em plane wave. IEEE Trans. MTT 19: 187-196. [resonant --> head]

Shigematsu et al (1993) 50 Hz magnetic field exposure system for small animals. BEM 14, 107-116.

Silverman, C. (1968) The Epidemiology of Depression, Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press. [SB251-1]

Silverman, C. (1973) Nervous and behavioral effects of microwave radiation in humans, Am J. Epidemiol. 97, 219-224.

Silverman, C. (1980) Epidemiologic studies of mivrowave effects. Proc IEEE 68, 78.

Smialowicz, R.J. et al (1981) Biological effects of long-term exposure of rats to 970 MHz radio frequency radiation. BEM 2, 279-284.

Stenek NH, et al (1980) The origins of US safety standards for microwave radiation. Science 208:1230-1237.

Stenek NH (1983) Values in standards: The case of ANSI C95.1-1982. Microwaves and RF May 1983: 137,141-42,164-67.

Stenek N (1984) Science and Standards - the case of ANSI C95.1-1982.J. mw Power 19, 153-158.

Stenek N (1984) Microwave Debate. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA.

Stern SS et al (1979) Microwaves: Effect on thermoregulatory behavior in rats. Science 206: 1198-1201.

Stern S (1980) Behavioral effects of microwaves. Neruobehav Toxicol 2: 49-58.

Subbota, A.G. (1958) The effect of a pulsed super-high frequency SHF electromagnetic field on the higher nervous activity of dogs. Bull. Exp. Med. 46, 1206-1211.

Szmigielski, S. et al (1982) Accelerated development of spontaneous and benzopyrene-induced skin cancer in mice exposed to 2450 MHz microwave radiation. BEM 3, 179-192.

Takuma et al (1990) A three-dimensional method for calculating curretns induced in bodies by ELF electric fields, BEM 11, 71-89.

Tanner, J.A. (1962) Reversible blocking of nerve conduction by alternating-current excitation. Nature 195, 712. [a.c. --> nerve]

Tanner, J.A. (1966) Effect of microwave radiation on birds. Nature 210, 636.

Tanner, J.A., Romero-Sierra, C., & Davie, S.J. (1967) Nonthermal effects of microwave radiation on birds. Nature 216, 1139.

Taylor, L.S. (1981) The mechanisms of athermal microwave biological effects. BEM 2, 259-267.

Tell, R. (1972) Broadcast radiation: how safe is safe ? IEEE Spectrum, Aug., 43-51.

Tell, R.A. & Mantiply, E.D. (1980) Population exposure to VHF and UHF broadcast radiation in the United States. Proc. IEEE 68(1)Jan. 6.

Tenforde, T.S. Gaffey, C.T. et al (1983) Cardiovascular alterations in Macaca monkeys exposed to stationary magnetic fields: experimental observations and theoretical analysis. BEM 4, 1-9.

Tesla, N. (1904) Transmission of energy without wires. Scientific American Supplement 57, 23760.

Thomas, J.R., Finch, E.D., Fulk, D.W., & Burch, L.S. (1975) Effects of low level microwave radiation on behavioral baselines, Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 425-432.

Thomas, J.R., & Maitlqand, G. (1977) Combined effects on behavior of low-level microwave radiation and dextroamphetamine, in Abstracts of Scientific Papers p.121 URSI 1977 Int. Symp. Biological Effects Electromagnetic Waves, Airlie, VA.

Thomas JR, Burch L & Yeandle SS (1979) Microwave radiation and chlordiazepoxide: synergistic effects on fixed-interval behavior. Science 203, 1357-1358.

Thomas, J.R. et al (1982) Comparative effects of pulsed and continuous wave 2.8 GHz microwaves on temporally defined behavior. BEM 3, 227-236.

Thomas, J.R. et al (1985) Weak low frequency magnetic fields alter operant bewhaivor in rats, Abstracts of papers presented at the Seventh Ann. Meeting of Bioelectromagnetics Society.

Thomas JR, Schrot J & Liboff A (1986) Low-intensity magnetic fields alter operant behavior in rats. BEM 7: 349.

Trillo, M.A., Jimenez, M.A., Leal, J., Ubeda, A. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1983) Alterations and fractional recovery of chick embryos exposed to em fields. Trans. 3rd Ann. Meeting Bioelectrical Repair & Growth Society, San Francisco, CA, October 2-5, 1983, III, 49.

Tyazhelov, V.V., Tigranian, R.E., & Khizhniak, E.P. (1977) New artifact-free electrodes for recording of biological potentials in strong electromagnetic fields, Radio Sci. 12(6S), 121-123.

Ubeda, A., Leal, J., Trillo, M.A., Jimenez, M.A. & Delgado, J.M.R. (1983) Pulse shape of magnetic fields influences chick embryogenesis. J. Anat. 137, 513-536.

Walcott, C. (1979) Pigeons have magnets, Science 205, 1027.

Walker, N.M., et al (1984) A candidate magnetic sense organ in the yellowfin tuna, Thunnus albacares Science 224, 751.

Wallace, R.K. (1970) Physiological effects of transcendental mediatation, Science 167, 1751-1754.

Webb SJ & Dodds DD (1968) Inhibition of bacterial cell growth by 136 Gc microwave. Nature 218: 374-375.

Webb SJ & Booth AD (1969) Absorption of microwaves by micro-organisms. Nature 222:1199-1200.

Webb SJ & Booth AD (1971) Microwave absorption by normal and tumor cells. Science 174: 72-74.

Webb SJ & Stoneham ME (1977) Resonances between 1011 and 1012 Hz in active bacterial cells as seen by laser raman spectroscopy. Phys Lett 63A:267-268.

Webb SJ, Stoneham ME & Froehlich H (1977) Evidence for nonthermal excitation of energy levels in active biological systems. Phys Lett 63A:407-408.

Wehr, T.A. et al (1979) Phase-advance of circadian sleep-wake cycles as an anti-depressant. Science 206, 710-713.

Welker, H.A. et al (1983) Effects of an artificial magnetic field on serotonin N-acetyltransferase activity and melatonin content of the rat pineal gland, Exp. Brain Res. 53. 7.

Wellborn SN (1987) An electrifying new hazard.U.S.News & World Report March 30: 72

Wertheimer N & Leeper E (1979) Am. J. Epidemiology 109: 273.

Wike, E.L. & Martin, E.J. (1985) Comments on Freys' "Data ..." J. m.wave Power 20, 181.

Wilson, B.S. (1988) Chronic exposure to ELF fields may induce depression . BEM 9, 195-205.

Wurtman, R.J. et al (1959) Effects of penealectomy and bovine pineal extracts in rats. Am J Physiol 197, 108-110.

Zaret, M.M., Cleary, S.F., Pasternack, B., et al. (1963) A study of Lenticular imperfections in the eyes of a sample of microwave workers and a control population, Final Contract Rep. for Rome Air Development Center, RADC-TDR-6310125, Mar.15,1963.

Zaret, M.M. (1974) Selected cases of microwave cataract in man associated with concomitant annotated pathologies, in: Biologic Effects and health Hazards of Microwave Radiation, P.Czerski, et al. Eds. Warsaw, Poland: Polish Medical Publishers, pp.294-301.

Zaret, M.M. (1976) Electronic smog as a potentiating factor in cardiovascular disease: A hypothesis of microwaves as an etiology for sudden death from heart attack in North Karelia, Med. Res. Eng. 12(3), 13-16.

Zaret, M. (1978) Human Injury Relatable to Non-Ionizing Radiation. IEEE-ERDA Symposium, The Biological Effects on Electro Magnetic Radiation.

Zoeger, J. (1981) Magnetic material in the head of the common pacific dolphin, Science 213, 892.

MW -- AUDITORY

Adrian, D.J. (1977) Auditory and visual sensation stimulated by low-frequency electric currents. Rad. Sci. 12, 243S-250S.

Airborne Instruments Lab. (1956) Proc. IRE 44. [the first RF sound report]

Borth DE & Cain CC (1977) Theoretical analysis of acoustic signal generation in materils irradiated with microwave energy. IEEE MTT 5: 944-954.

Bourgeois, Jr.,A.E. (1967) The effects of microwave exposure upon the auditory threshold of humans, Ph.D.Dissertation, Baylor Univ., Waco, Tex., Univ.Microfilms 67-2927, [A.Frey (1971)]

Bourgeois,Jr., A.E."The effects of microwave exposure upon the auditory threshold of humans," NASA Sci. and Tech. Info. Svc. N68-23132, 1967. [A.Frey (1971)]

Cain, C.A. & Rissman, W.J. (1978) Mammalian auditory responses to 3.0 GHz microwave pulses, IEEE Trans. BME 25: 288-293.

Cain, C.A. (1981) Biological effects of oscillating electric fields, BEM 2, 23-32.

Chou, C.K., Galambos, R., Guy, A.W., & Lovely, R.H. (1975) Cochlear microphonics generated by microwave pulses, J. Microwave Power 10, 361-367.

Chou, D.K., Guy, A.W., & Galambos, R. (1976) Microwave induced cochlear microphonics in cats, J. Microwave Power 11 (2), 171-173.

Chou, C.K., Guy, A.W., & Galambos, R. (1976) Microwave-induced auditory response: cochlear microphonics, Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Waves, C.C. Johnson et al Eds., HEW publication (FDA) 77-8010,89-103.

Chou, C.K., Guy, A.W., & Galambos, R. (1977) Characteristics of microwave-induced cochlear microphonics, Rad.Sci. 12, 221S-228S.

Chou CK & Galambos R (1979) Middle ear structures contribute little to auditory perception of microwaves. JMP 14(4): 321-326.

Chou CK & Guy AW (1979) Microwave-induced auditory responses in guinea pigs: relationship of threshold and microwave-pulse duration. Radio Sci. 14(6S): 193-197.

Chou, C-K, Guy, A.W., Foster, K.R., Galambos, R., & Justesen, D.R. (1980) Holographic assessment of microwave hearing. Science 209, 1143-1144.

Chou, C.K., Guy, A.W. & Galambos, R. (1982) Auditory perception of RF em fields. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 71(6), 1321-1334.

Chou, C.K. et al (1985) Auditory response in rats exposed to 2450 MHz electromagnetic fields in a circulary polarized waveguide, BEM 6, 323-326.

Flottorp, O.(1953) Effect of different types of electrodes in electrophonic hearing," J. Acousi.Soc. Amer. 25, 236-243. [A.Frey (1971)]

oster, K.R. & Finch, E.D. (1974) Microwave hearing: evidence for thermoacoustical auditory stimulation by pulsed microwaves, Science 185, 256-258.

Foster KR & Wiederhold ML (1978) Auditory responses in cats produced by pulsed ultrasound, J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 63, 1199-1205.

Frey, A.H. (1961) Auditory system response to radio frequency energy. Aerosp.Med., 32, , 1140-1142.

Frey, A.H. (1962) Human auditory system response to modulated electromagnetic energy, J.Appl.Physiol., 17, 689-692.

Frey, A.H. & Coren, E. (1979) Holographic assessment of a hypothesized microwave hearing mechanism. Science 206, 232-234.

Frey, A.H. & Coren, E. (1980) Holographic assessment of microwave hearing. Science 209, 1144-1145.

Frey, A.H. & Eichert (1985) Psychophysical analysis of microwave sound perception, J. Bioelectricity 4, 1-14.

Gournay, L.S. (1966) Conversion of electromagnetic to acoustic energy by surface heating, J.Acous. Soc.Amer. 40, 1322-1330.

Guy, A.W., Taylor, E.M., Ashleman, B., & Lin, J.C. (1973) Microwave interaction with the auditory systems of humans and cats, presented at 1973 IEEE Microwave Symp., (Boulder, CO, June 1973).

Guy, A.W., Chou, C.K., Lin, J.C., & Christensen, D. (1975) Microwave-induced acoustic effects in mammalian auditory systems and physical materials, Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 194-218.

Ingalls CE (1967) Sensation of hearing in electromagnetic fields. NY State J. Med. 67: 2992-2997.

Jaramillo, F. & Markin, V.S (1993) Auditory illusions and single hair cell. Nature 364(6437), 527.

Johnson RB, Lovely RH & Guy AW (1976) Microwave control of behavior: an auditory phenomenon. USNC/URSI Meeting, Amherst, MA.

Joines WT & Spiegel RJ (1974) Resonance absorption of microwaves by the human skull. IEEE BME 21: 46-48.

Joines WT (1976) Reception of microwaves by the brain. Med. Res. Engng. 12: 8-12.

Joines WT & Wilson BS (1981) Field-induced forces at delectric interfaces as a possible mechanism of RF hearing effects. Bull. Math. Biol. 43: 401-413.

Justesen DR (1975) Microwaves and Behavior. Am. Psychologist 30: 391-401. [Dr.Sharp's "voice transmission"]

King. N.W., Justesen, D.R., & Clarke, R.L. (1971) Behavioral sensitivity to microwave irradiation. Science 172, 398-401.

Lebovitz RM (1975) Detection of weak em radiation by the mammalian vestibulocochlear apparatus. Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci. 247: 182-193.

Lebovitz, R.M. & Seaman, R.L. (1977) Microwave hearing: The response of single auditory neurons in the cat to pulsed microwave radiation, Rad. Sci. 12, 229S-236S.

Lebovitz, R.M. & Seaman, R.L. (1977) Single auditory unit responses to weak, pulsed microwave radiation, Brain Res. 126, 370-375.

Lin, J.C. (1975) Microwave auditory effect - a comparison of some possible transduction mechanisms, J. Microwave Power, 11, 77-81.

Lin, J.C. (1976) Microwave-induced hearing : some preliminary theoretical observations, J. Microwave Power vol. II, 295-298.

Lin, J.C. (1977) On microwave-induced hearing sensation, IEEE Trans. MTT 25, 605-613.

Lin, J.C. (1977) Further studies on the microwave auditory effect, IEEE Trans. MTT 25, 938-943.

Lin, J.C. (1977) Theoretical calculations of frequencies and thresholds of microwave-induced auditory signals, Rad. Sci. 12, 237S-242S.

Lin, J.C. (1978) Microwave Auditory Effects and Applications. Springfield, IL, C.C.Thomas.

Lin, J.C., Meltzer, R.J..., & Redding, F.K. (1978) Microwave-evoked brainstem auditory responses, Proc. San Diego Biomed. Symp. 17, 461-465.

Lin, J.C., Meltzer, R.J. & Redding, F.K. (1978) Characteristics of microwave auditory effects : Theory and experiment. URSI Open Symp. Biol. Effects Electromagnetic Waves (Finland, Aug. 1978)

Lin, J.C. (1980) The Microwave Auditory Phenomena. Proc. IEEE 68, 67.

Moeser W (1962) Whiz Kid, Hands Down, Life 1962.9.14

Olsen, R.G. & Lin, J.C. (1981) Microwave pulse-induced acoustic reasoannces in spherical head models, IEEE TRans. MTT 29, 1114-1117.

Olsen, R.G. & Hammer, W.C. (1981) Evidence for microwave-induced acoustical resonances in biological material , J. microwave Power 16, 263-270.

Olsen, R.G. & Lin, J.C. (1983) Microwave-induced pressure waves in mammalian brain, IEEE Trans. BME, 30, No.5, 289-294.

Rissman, W.J. & Cain, C.A. (1975) Microwave hearing in mammals, Proc. Nat. Electron. Conf. 30, 239-244.

Sharp, J.C., Grove, H.M., & Gandhi, O.P. (1974) Generation of acoustic signals by pulsed microwave energy. IEEE Trans. MTT 22, 583-584.

Sharp, J.C. (1979) Some perspectives on research into biological resopnse to non-ionizing electromagnetic radiation. Rad. Sci. 14 (1) 5-10.

Sommer, H.G.& VonGierke, H.E. (1964) Hearing sensations in electric fields.Aerosp.Med.,35, 834.

Taylor, E.M. & Ashleman, B.T. (1974) Analysis of the central nervous involvement in the microwave auditory effect, Brain Res. 74, 201-208.

Tyazhelov, V.V. et al (1979) Some peculiarities of auditory sensations evoked by pulsed microwave fields. Rad. Sci. 14(6S), 259-263.

Los Angeles Herald-Examiner, Nov. 22, 1976. (m.wave --> sounds/voice)

White, R.M. (1963) Generation of elastic waves by transient surface heating, J. Appl. Phys. 34, 3559-3569.

White, R.M. (1963) Elastic wave generation by electron bombardment or electromagnetic wave absorption, J. Appl. Phys. 34, 2123-2124.

Wilson BS, Joines WT & Casseday JH (1976) Responses of auditory nerve fibers to pulses of microwave irradiation: evidence of a direct effect of microwave radiation at hair cells of the cochlear. 1976 USNC/URSI Meeting, Amherst, MA.

Wilson, B.S., Joines, W.T., et al (1980) Responses in the auditory nerve to pulsed, CW, and sinusoidally-modulated microwave radiation. BEM 1, 237.

Wilson BS, Zook JM, Joines WT & Casseday JH (1980) Alterations in activity at auditory nuclei of the rat induced by exposure to mw radiation: autoradiographic evidence using [14C]-2-deoxy-D-glucose. Brain Res. 187: 291-306.

Wilson BS, Kobler JB, Casseday JH & Joines WT (1983) Spectral content of mw-indduced auditory stimuli as demonstrated by [14C]-2-deoxy-D-glucose uptake at theinferior colliculus. Bioelectromagnetics Abstracts 5:46.

Wilson, B.S. & Joines, W.T. (1985) Mechanisms and physiologic significance of m.w. action on auditory system. J. Bioelectricity 4, 495-526.

ACOUSTICS

Anderson AB & Munson WA (1951) Electrical excitation of nerves in the skin at audio frequencies. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 23, 155.

von Bekesy G (1948) Vibrations of the head in a sound field and its role in hearing by bone conduction. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 20, 749.

Bilsen FA & Ritsma RJ (1969/1970) Repetition pitch and its implication for hearing theory. Acustica 22: 63-73. [review]

Bilsen, F.A. & Ritsma, R.J. (1970) Some parameters influencing the perceptibility of pitch. J. Acoust. Soc. Ame. 47, 469-475.

Dallos, R. et al (1972) Cochlear inner and outer hair cells: functional differences. Science 177, 356-358.

Davis H (1935) The electrical phenomena of the cochlea and the auditory nerve. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 6: 205-215. [sound wave --> cochlea potential]

Flottorp G (1953) Effects of different types of electrodes in electrophonic hearing. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 25, 236.

Jones RC et al (1940) Three mechanisms of hearing by electrical stimulation. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 12, 281.

Naftalin, I. (1977) The peripheral hearing mechanism: new biophysical concepts for transduction of the acoustic signal to an electrochemical event. Physiol. Chemi. Physics 9, 337-382.

Ritsma, R.J. (1962) Existence region of the tonal residue I.

J. Acoust. Soc. Amer. 34, 1223-1229.

Schouten, J.F.., Ritsma, R.J.. & Cardozo, B.L. (1962) Pitch of the residue. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 34, 1418-1424.

Stevens SS (1937) On hearing by electrical stimulation. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 8, 191.

Tiitinen, H. et al (1993) Selective attention enhances the auditory 40 Hz transient response in humans. Nature 360(6404)

Zwislock J (1957) In search of the bone-conduction threshold in a free-field sound field. J. Acoust. Soc. Am. 29, 795.

EM --> HEART

Birenbaum L, Kaplan IT, Metlay W, Rosenthal SE & Zaret MM (1975) Microwave and infrared effects on heart rate. JMP 10(1): 3-18.

Blanchi, C., Cedrini, L., et al (1973) Exposure of mammalians to strong 50-Hz electric fields: effect on heart's and brain's electrical activity. Arch Fisiol 70, 33-34.

Chou, C.K. et al (1980) Microwave radiation and heart-beat rate of rabbits, J. microwave Power 15, 87.

Clapman RM & Cain CA (1975) Absence of heart rage effects in isolated frog heart irradiated with pulse modulated mw energy. JMP 10(4): 411-419.

Frey, A.H., & Siefert, E. (1968) Pulse modulated UHF energy illumination of the heart associated with change in heart rate, Life Sci., 7, 505-512.

Frey, A.H. & Eichert (1986) Modification of heart function with low intensity electromagnetic energy, J. Bioelectricity 5, 201-210.

Kaplan IT, Metlay W, Zaret M, Birenbaum L, & Rosenthal SW (1971) Absence of heart rage effects in rabbit during low level mw irradiation. IEEE Tran. MTT 19(2): 168-173.

Liu LM, Rosenbaum FJ & Pickard WF (1976) The insensitivity of frog heart rate to pulse modulated mw enrgy. JMP 11(3): 225-232.

Lords JL, Durney CH, Borg AM & Tinney CE (1973) Rate effects in isolated hearts induced by mw irradiation. IEEE Trans. MTT 21: 834-836.

Olson RG, Durney CH, Lords JL & Johnson CC (1975) Low level mw interaction with isolated mammalian hearts, Symposium Proceedings, Microwave Power, Waterloo, Ontario, IMPI Canada,pp. 76-78.

Sutton CH & Nunnally RL (1973) Exogenous peroxidase activity in the selectively hyperthermic rat brain. Proc. Fed. Am. Soc. Exp. Biol. 32: 859.

Tinney, C.E., Lords, J.L., & Durney, C.H. (1976) Rate effects in isolated turtle hearts induced by microwave radiation, IEEE Trans. MTT 24, 18-24.

MW -- EEG

Adey, W.R. (1974) The influences of impressed electrical fields at EEG frequencies on brain and behavior. In Behavior and Brain Electrical Activity. H.Eltshuler & N.Burch, Eds. Plenum Publishing Co. , NY.

Baranski S & Edelwejn Z (1967) EEG and morphological investigations upon influence of microwaves on central nervous system. Acta Physiol. Pol. 18: 423.

Baranski S & Edelwjn Z (1975) Experimental morphologic and EEG studies of mw effects on the nervous system. Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci. 247: 109.

Bawin, S.M., Gavalas-Medici, R.J., & Adey, W.R. (1973) Effects of modulated very high frequency fields on specific brain rhythms in cats. Brain Res. 58, 365-384.

Caccia M & Castelpiertra R (1985) Electroencephalogram sysnchronization induced by em low frequency field administration in normal humans)preliminary observations).Bioelectrochem Bioenerget 14, 215-218.ũ@ũ£îç

Direnfeld, L.K. (1983) The genesis of the EEG and its relation to em radiation, J. Bioelectricity 2, 111-121.

Gavalas, R.J., Watter, D.O., Hamer, J. & W.R. Adey (1970) Effect of low-level, low-frequency electric fields on EEG and Behavior in MACACA NEMESTRINA , Brain Res. , 18, No.3, 491-501.

Servantie, B., Servantie, A.M., & Etienne, J. (1975) Synchronization of crotical neurons by a pulsed microwave fild as evidenced by spectral analysis of EEG from the white rat. Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247, 82-86.

Takashima S, Oronal B & Schwan HP (1979) Effects of modulated RF energy on the EEG of mammalian brains. Rad. Environ. Biophys. 16: 15-27.

MW -- BLOOD BRAIN BARRIERS

Albert, E.N. (1979) Current status of microwave effects on the blood-brain-barriers, J. microwave Power 14, 281-285.

Frey, A.H., Feld, S.R., & Frey, B. (1975) Neural function and behavior: defining the relationship, Ann. NY Acad. Sci. 247,, 433-439.

Frey AH (1980) On microwave effects at the blood-brain barrier. Bioelectromagnetics Society Newsletter 18 (November 1980): 4-5.

Frey, A.H. (1983) Comments on "Microwaves and the BBB" J. Bioelectricity 2(1), 83-88.

Justesen, D.R. (1980) Microwave irradiation and the blood-brain barrier. Proc IEEE 68, 60.

Merritt, H.H., Chamness, A.F., & Allen, S.J. (1978) Studies on blood-brain barrier permeability after microwave-radiation, Rad. Environ. Biophys. 15, 367-377.

Oscar, K.J. & Hawkins, T.D. (1977) Microwave alterations of the blood-brain barrier system of rats, Brain Res. 126, 281-293.

MW -- Ca2+

Adey, W.R. & Bawin, S.M. (1977) Efflux of calcium and amino acids from cerebral tissues with weak, low frequency electric fields, Fed. Proc. 36, 589.

Adey, W.R. & Bawin SM (1982) Binding and release of brain calcium by low level electromagnetic fields, Rad. Sci. 17(5s) 149.

Bawin, S.M. & Adey, W.R. (1976) Sensitivity of calcium binding in cerebral tissue to weak environmental electric fields oscillating at low frequency, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA 73, 1999-2003.

Bawin, S.M., Sheppard, A.R. & Adey, W.R. (1978) Bioelectro-chem. Bioenergetics. 5, 67-76. [0.1 - 1.0 mW/cm2 -> 45Ca2+]

Bawin, S.M., Adey, W.R. & Sabbot, I.M. (1978) Ionic factors in release of 45Ca2 from chicken cerebral tissues by electromagnetic fields, Proc. of the Nat. Acad. Sci., USA 75, 6314-6318.

Blackman, C.F., Elder, J.A., Weil, C.M., Benane, S.G. & Eichinger, D.C. (1977) Two parameters affecting radiation-induced Ca++ efflux from brain tissue, in Abstrancts 1977 Int. Symp. Biol. Effects Electromagentic Waves (Oct. 30-Nov.4, 1977, Airlie, VA), p.101.

Blackman, C.F., Elder, J.A., Wil, C.M., Benane, S.G., & Eichinger, D.C. (1979) Modulation-requency and field-strength dependent induction of calcium-ion efflux from brain tissue by radio-frequency radiation, Radi Sci. 14, 93-98.

Blackman, C.F., et al (1980) Calcium-ion efflux from brain tissue: powr-density vs internal field-intensity dependencies at 50-MHz RF radiation, BEM 1,277-283.

Blackman, C.F. et al (1985) Effects of ELF (1-120 Hz) and modulated (50 Hz) RF fields on the efflux of calcium ions from brain tissue in vitro. BEM 6, 1-11.

Blackman CF et al (1985) BEM 6: 327. [Earth --> Ca++]

Blackman,C.F. el al (1988) Influence of electromagnetic fields on the efflux of calcium ions from brain tissue in vitro: a three model analysis consistent with the frequency reaponse up to 510 Hz.. BEM 9, 215-227.

Kaczmarek, L.K. & Adey, W.R. (1973) The efflux of 45Ca2+ and 3H-gamma aminobutyric acid from cat cerebral cortex. Brain Res. 63, 331-342.

Kaczmarek, L.K. & Adey, W.R. (1974) Weak electric gradients change ionic and transmitter fluxes in cortex. Brain Res. 66, 537-540.

Rasmussen, H. (1970) Cell communication, calcium ion, and cyclic adenosine monophosphate, Science 170, 404-412.

BIORHYTHMS

Aschoff J (1965) Circadian rhythms in man. Science 148, 1427-1432.

Blackman S & Catalina D (1973) The moon and the emergency room. Percept Mot Skills 37: 624-626.

Brown FA (1959) Living clocks. Science 130, 1535.

Brown FA (1971) Some orientational influence of non-visual terrestrial em fields. Ann. N.Y. Acad. Scie. 188: 224-41.

Brown FA (1972) The "Clocks" timing biological rhythm, Am. Scientist 60, 756.

Lanzerotti LJ (1988) The Earth's magnetic environment. Sky and Telescope Oct. 1988.

Lerner EJ (1988) The Big Bang never happened. Discover June 1988. [magnetic --> universe]

Lieber AL (1978) Human aggression and the lunar synodic cycle. J. Clin. Psychiatry 39: 385-391.

Newell ND (1963) Crises in the history of life. Sci. Am. 205:77. [species extinctions]

Schumann (1952) Z. Naturforsch. 7A, 150

Thiemann W & Jarzak U (1981) Origins of Life 11: 85. [magnetic --> life]

Weller G et al (1987) Science 238: 1361. [present knowledge of the magnetosphere]

Wever R (1973) Human circadian rhythms under the influence of weak electric fields and the different aspects of these studies, Int. J. Biometeorol. 17, 227-232.

Wever R (1975) The circadian multi-oscillatory system of man, Int. J. Chronobiol. 31, 19-55.

Winstead K. et al (1981) Biorhythms: fact or superstition. A. J. Psychiat 138(9), 1188.

EM WEAPONS (&NON-LETHAL WEAPONS)

NBC News Magazine by David Brinkleyû@1981.3.13

Alexander, J.B., Lt.Col.,US Army (1980) The new mental battlefield, Military Rev. December 47-54.

Alexander, J.B. US Army, Ret. (1989) Antimaterial technology, Military Rev. Oct.

Bearden, T. (1978) Soviet Psychotronic Weapons: A condensed background, Specula, March-June, pp.20,27.

Byrd EA (1979) Technology Tommorrow June 1979.

de Caro, Chuck (1987) The zap gap.The Atlantic March 1987. [David fratus(1988)]

Cooper P (1994) ARPA office takes on crime.Defense News 1994.6.27/7.3, p.16

DOD (1988) Soviet Military Power. pp.146.

Electromagnetic-gun competition IDR 12/1982:1748 [not an EM radiation weapon]

Giovanni de Briganti (1994) Lasers, viruses, may rule no-fly zone sky. Defense News Feb.7-13: 1,45.

Holzer R & Munron (1992) Microwave weapons stun Iraqis. Defense News April 13-19: 1,52.

Holzer R (1992) US Navy to study use of laser weapons aboard combat ships. Defense News April 27-May 3

International Herald Tribune 1993.12.23 [Zhirinovsky's secret weapon]

Kiernan V (1993) War over weapons that can't kill. New Scientist 140(1903): 14.

LaMothe JD (1972) Controlled Offensive Behavior - USSR (Unclassified), Defense Intelligence Agency, Washington, D.C.

Lovece J (1994) CIA asked to review 'Buck Rogers' Weapon. Defense Week Jan.18: 6. [sound resonance weapon]

Maire III, L.F. & LaMothe, J.D. (1975) Soviet and Czechoslovakian Parapsycholody Research (Unclassified), Defense Intelligence Agency, Washington, D.C.
Mar, R.K. (1986) Bnad-less tank killer. U.S.Naval Institute Proc. September
Martinez, Thomas and Guinther, John (1988) The Brotherhood of Murder. NY, McGraw-Hill. [The Order -- $.1m -> scientists]
Michrowski A (1980) Covert ELF Warfare, Specula , January-March, p.27.
Morrison, D. (1989) Tactical laser weapons, Lasers Optronics May
Newell, C.R. Lt.Col. US Army (1989) The technological future of war, Military Rev. Oct. 22-28.
One to One: Edward Teller (1992) Defense News May 25-31: 30.
Opall B (1992) Pentagon forges strategy on non-lethal warfare. Defence News Feb.17:1,50.
Opall B (1992) Pentagon units jostle over non-lethal initiative.Defence News March 2: 6.
Opall, Barbara (1993) US explores Russian mind-control technology. Defense News Jan.11-17: 4, 29. [Stonehill,1994]
Opall B (1994) DoD to boost nonlethal options. Defense News March 28-Apr 3: 46.
Opall B (1994) Sound waves may target N. Korean tunnels. DN June 13-19: 1,37.
Polsky D (1992) Livermore plans tiny laser weapons Defense News June 1-7: 22-23.
Slayton, B.F., Mj. US Army (1980) War in the Ether: Soviet radio-electronic warfare. Military Rev. Jan. 1980, 56-68.
Starr B (1993) Non-lethal weapon puzzle for US Army, Int. Defense Rev. Apr. 319.
Starr B (1994) Pentagon maps non-lethal options. IDR 30-39.
Stonehill, Paul (1994) Fate Feb.1994.
Stonehill, Paul (1994) Russians still bent on mind control, UFO 9(3): 16-17.
Tapscott, M. (1993) DOD, Intel agencies look at Russian mind control technology, Defense Electronics July, 17.
Tennenbaum AN & Moore AM (1993) Non-lethal weapons. Futurist Sep/Oct: 20-23.
Tyler PE (1986) The electromagnetic spectrum in low-intensity conflict. In Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology. edited by Lt.Col.David J.Dean, USAF Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research, and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Ala.: Air University Press. ü¢Walter Reed's microwave research Department: its history and mission [Part 1 of two parts]. (1989) in Bioelectromagnetics Society Newsletter Jan/Feb 1989.
Weinschenk A (1993) Non-lethal weaopns group set to form in March.Defense Week Nov.22: 1,14.
Younger SM (1993) AGEX II, the high-energy-density regime of weapons physics.Los Alamos Science No.21: 63.
Zigunenko, Stanislav (1992) Tekhnika Molodezhi Magazine Sept.1992 [Stonehill,1994]

INTERNAL SECURITY EQUIPMENT

Hogg IV (1989) Keeping them out : solutions to perimeter protection. IDR 10/1989:33-37.[mw sensor, etc]
Internal Security Equipment Survey (1980) IDR 8/1980: 1261-1265. [mw sensor, &c]
Internal Security Equipment Survey (1981) IDR 10/1981: 1347-1348. [strobe gun, &c]
Internal Security Equipment Survey (1984) IDR 6/1984: 804. [perimeter protection sys]
Internal Security Equipment Survey (1985) IDR 6/1985: 925-927.[mw sensor,&c]
Israel stun grenade IDR 10/1987: 1386.
Lovece J (1993) FBI used military robots in Waco: standoff but got mixed results.Defence Week May 17: 16.

EM -- VICTIMS

mediaecco Stockholm
(1993) NZ Herald 1993.1.30, 1.31 [Mr. Larry Hammond]
Besly, Kimm (1984) Electro Magnetic Pollution : A Little Known Health Hazard, A New Means of Control ?, Preliminary Report Greenham Common Women's Peace Camp, Inlands House, Southbourned, Ensworthy, Hants, England PO10 8JH, 1984.
Chamberlain P (1993) Frequency assault : the case of the Verneys. OPEN Eye 2: 28.
Farkas K (1991) Psychiatrist testifies at mom's hearing. The Plain Dealer 1991.6.28
Koski M (1981) My life depends on you !
Neal RM (1991) Paralysis by microwaves. MUFON 283: 14.
Rex Niles !<—, Los Angeles Times March 28, 1988.Part II p.1&8 (Z92-176)
Slesin L (1987) Zapped ? The Nation March 14 [the Greeham Common]
SovData DiaLine - Soviet Press Digest, February 15, 1992.
(DELOVOI MIR) (see 1985/Voronezh)
Wade N (1972) Fischer-Spassky charges: What did the Russians have in mind? Science 177: 778.

ULTRASONICS

Ben-Hur, E. & Green, M. (1982) Temperature dependence of ultrasound-induced cell killing: the role of membrane fluidity, BEM 3, 247-251.
Carstensen, E.L. (1982) Biological effects of low-temporal, average-intensity, pulsed ultrasound, BEM 3, 147-156.
Henry GE (1954) Ultrasonics. Sci. Am. 190(5), May.
Young, R. & Henneman, E. (1961) Reversible block of nerve conduction by ultrasound. Archives of Neurology (Chicago), 4, 83-89.[Swett,1981] u.sonic --> frog nerve.

SUBLIMINAL

Bevan W (1964) Subliminal stimulation: a pervasive problem for psychology. Psychol. Bull. 61: 81-99.
Bryce, Susan (1992) Television: Drug of the nation. Nexus 2(10): 11-14.
Clark E (1988) The Want Makers Hodder & Stoughton.
Dixon NF () Subliminal Perception.
Eagle (1959) The effects of subliminal stimuli of aggressive content upon conscious cognition. J. Pers. 27: 578-600.
House of Representatives, Committee on Science and Technology, Subcommittee on Transportation, Aviation and Materials (1984) Subliminal Communication Technology.
Key WB (1974) Subliminal Seductions. Signet Books, NY.
Key WB () Media Sexploitation.
Key WB (1980) The Clam Plate Orgy. Prentice Hall, Sydney.
Spence DP (1967) Subliminal perception and perceptual defence: two sides of a single problem. Behav. Sci. 12: 183-193.
U.S. Patent # 3773049 Nov. 20th 1973

PSYCHIATRY AND MIND CONTROL ... PSYCHOSIS OR MIND-CONTROL

TINNITUS [RN 1994.4.26]
Shulman A (1991) Tinnitus Diagnosis/Treatment. Lea and Febiger, Philadelphia, pp.547, $ 99.50 [Neurosurgery 32(4): 688]

unknown diseases [RN 1994.4.26]

dental filling material [RN 1994.4.26]

computer society [RN 1994.4.26]

[key words: man-machine interaction, man-computer interaction, dataregister, data integrity, data law, information society, cyberculture, future research, artificial intelligence]
Burnham D (1983) The Rise of the Computer State. NY:Rnadom House.
Eden PF (1994) Privacy on parade. Futurist 28(4):1994.7/8, p.38.
Huxley, Aldous () Brave New World.
Marx G & Reichman N (1984) Routinizing the discovery of secret: computers as informants. Am. Behav. Scientist March
Masuda () The Information society. [see letter of RN 1994.1.26]
Orwell, George () 1984.
Rosnak, Theodore (1986) The Cult of Information [Akwei vs NSA]
Warwick DR (1992) The cash-free society. Futurist Nov/Dec. p.19.
Wiener, Norbert () Cybernetics. 2nd ed. The MIT Press.
Zamytian () We.

National Diet Library Code #
Acta Neurochir Suppl. 30:1980- Z54-H260
Acta Physiologica Scandinavica û£3:1942- Z53-D17
Acta psychol. (Amst.) û£1(1):1935- Z52-A27
Acta Physiol. Pol. û£ 19:1968.1- Z53-N390
Acustica 1:1951- Z53-A438
Adv. Neurol. NIL
Adv. physics. û£ NIL
Aerosp.Med. û£31:1960- (Z53-G120)
Aerospace Med. Res. Labs. û£NIL
Am. J. Epidemiol. û£ 81:1965- Z53-D75
Am. J. Med. 34:1963- Z53-C384
Am. J. Med. Electron. .û£2:1963- (Z53-D301)
Am. J. Physical Anthropology û£1:1943- (Z53-B358)
Am. J. Physiol. û£1(1):1898- Z53-D19
Am. J. Psychiat. û£ 107(2):1950- Z53-D588 iç117-136.scan. 137:1980- 1982.12 (147,8 É+û{Æâ)
Am. J. Surg. 139: 1980- Z54-A679
Am. Nat.. 1:1967: Z53-B374

Am. Psychologist ü£4(4):1949.4- (Z52-A28)
Am. Scientist ü£ 30(2):1942- Z53-A7
Am. Zool. ü£ 2:1962- Z53-C145
Anesthesia & Analgesia ü£59(1):1980.1-
Anesthesiology 52: 1980- Z53-X394
Animal Behav. ü£6:1958- Z53-C197
Ann. N. Y. Acad. of Sciences ü£23:1913- (Z53-A134)
Ann. Neurology Z53-X98
Ann. Otol. ü£NIL
Ann. Otol. Rhin. Laryngol. ü£89(2):1980- Z54-B54
Ann. Rep. Coll. Surg. ü£NIL
Ann. roy. Coll. Surg. Engl. ü£1(1):1947- Z54-A675
Ann. Surgery ü£191(1):1980- Z54-A570
Annual Review of Psychology ü£48:1986- Z63-A174 æOè¬SB21-15,150,158-A615
Appl.Neurophysiology ü£38(1):1975- Z53-D68
Arch. Anat. Pshysiol., Lpz.ü@ü@ü£NIL
Arch. Italiennes de Biologie ü£100:1962- Z53-B426
Arch. General Psychiatry ü£Z53-D587
Arch. Neurology (Chicago) ü£37(1):1980- Z53-D586
Arch. Neurol. Psychiat.(Chic.) ü£61(1):1949.1- 81: 1959 Z53-D585 scan. 75: 1956 - 81: 1959
Arch Opththalmology ü£4:1949- Z53-D615
Arch. Otolaryngol. ü£ 49:1949- Z53-D622
Arch. Phys. Med. Rehabil. 34: 1953- Z53-D558
Arch. Psychiat. Nervenkr ü£ 227:1979.7- Z53-W395
Atlantic Z55-A173
Aviat. Space Environ. Med. 46:1975- Z53-G120
Behav. Biol. ü£ 7(1):1972- Z53R80
Behavioral and Brain Sciences (BBS) Z53-W364 scan. 1(1):1978-1994.6 (ex.1991)
Behav. Sci. ü£1(1):1956- Z51-A8 scan. 1964-1982.
Berichte Gesamte weber die Physiol.Exp.Pharmakologie ü£1(1):1920- Z53-D22
Bioelectro-chem. Beioenergetics ü£ 1:1974- Z53-T414
Bio-electromagnetics ü£ 2(1):1981- Z54-C507 scan. - 15(5): 1994 (1987NILüA1989out.)
Biolog. Psychiat. ü£ 1:1969- Z53-S61
Biomed. Eng. 4: 1970- Z53-W478
Bio-med. Instru. ü£ NIL
Bio-med. Instru. Technology ü£23:1989- Z54-A106 (Med. Instru.é¦ēnæ_)
Biomed. Sci. Instrum. ü£ NIL
Biophys. J. ü£1:1960.9- Z53-B461
Biophys. Soc. Abstracts ü£NIL
Biotelemetry and Patient Monitoring ü£ 1(1):1974- 9(4):1982. Z53-W267. scanned all.
Biul. eksp. Biol. Med. nil
Brain ü£1938- Z53-R18 scan. 103:1980 - 117(4):1994.8
Brain, Behav. Evol. ü£1:1968- Z54-C321
Brain Research ü£1(1):1966.1- (Z53-L382)
Brain Res. Bull. 1: 1976- Z53-V263
Bull. Am. Physical Soc. 1:1956- Z53-A409
Bull. Exp. Med. ü£ 51:1961- Z53-B390
Bull. Math. Biol. ü£ 35:1973- Z53-B447
Bull. Psychonomic Soc. 13:1979- Z53-V384
Can. J. Zool. 32: 1954- Z53-C148
Cand. M.A. J. ü£ 88:1963- Z53-C460
Cell ü£ 1:1974- Z53-V215
Clin. Neurol. Neurosurg 82(1):1980- Z54-A686
Clin. Neuropsychol. 3:1981-5:1983 Z54-C436
Commun. Behav. Biol. ü£ 1:1968-6:1971 Z53-R80 [see Behav. Biol.]
Confin. neruol. (Basel), ü£23(3):1963- Z53-D68
Corrections Today 41:1979- Z51-G214
CRC Rev. Environ. Contr. ü£ 10:1980- 19:1990 Z54-A101
Crime and Deliquency in California 1984- (-1983 books) Z61-A216-B
Crime and Justice 1987- (-1986 books) Z61-C225-B
Crime Prevention and Criminaal Justice Newsletter 7:1982-1986 Z51-P290-KO
Crime Prevention Review 1:1973-6:1979 Z51-K258
Defense Electronics ü£ 12:1980.3- Z54-A492
Defense News 7(1): 1992- Z92-505 scan. 1992.1.6 - 10.4, 1993.1-4, 1994.1.10 - 12.5/11
Defense Week 9:1988- Z51-P271 scan. 1988.1-1991.12, 1993.1-1994.8.29
Dissent 1:1954- Z51-B15
EEG Clin. Neurophysiol ü£ 14(1):1962- (Z53-N226) scan. 48(1):1980.1 - 83(6):1993.12 (75-81Ė+û{Æå)
Electro-and magnetobiologyü@ü@ü£ü@Z54-E816 1992- 1993:12(1)
Electronic Design 2:1954- Z53-E464
Electronics ü£ü@ü@(NY) 1:1936- Z53-E462 scan. 1991.6 - 1994.7.25

Endocr. 68:1961- Z53-D61
Endocrine Rev. 2:1981- Z54-B831
Epilepsia 3: 1962- Z53-D357
Exerpta Medica 22:1969-57:1990 Z53-P418
Exp. Brain Research ü£1(1):1965- Z53-M198 scan. 1980 - 43: 1981
Exp. Neurology ü£5(1):1962- Z53-D69 scan..1993.10 --> 1992.11:118(2)
Fate
Fed. Probation 12:1948-46:1982 (1983- Int'l Organ. Data House) Z51-D48-M scan.'70-77,80-91.3.
Fed. Proc. ü£1:1942- Z53-B428
Folia Primatologica ü£1:1936- Z53-P207
Folia Psychiat. et Neurol. Japon. ü£1:1935-39:1985 Z53-D351 (ê+i~JJPN)
Frontiers Med. Biol. Eng. (Japan) 1: 1988 - Z54-G799 scan. 1:1988- 6(1): 1994
Futurist 5(1):1971 - Z55-B295 scan.25(3):1991.5/6 - 29(1):1994.6
Health Phys. 1:1958- Z53-B470
Helvetic Physiol. Pharmacol. Accta ü£1:1943- Z53-D27
Human Neurobiology 1: 1982- Z54-D561 scan. 1982 - 1988
IEEE Eng. Med. Biol. Mag. ü£ 1:1982.3- Z54-D705 scan. 1:1982 - 13(3):1994.6/7 (ex1990-1991)
IEEE Spectrum ü£ 1:1964- Z53-L389
IEEE Int. Conv. Rec. 8:1961- Z53-P160
IEEE Trans. AES (Aerospace and Electronic Systems) ü£ (Z53-M119)
IEEE Trans. BME (Bio-Medical Engineering) ü£11(1):1964.1- Z53-M457
scan. 27(1):1980.1- 41(7):1994.7; îç1985.7-12, 1987.7-12; É+û{Æå 1990.1-12.
IEEE Trans. Magn. 1:1965- Z53-L156
IEEE Trans. MTT (Microwave) ü£ 11:1963- Z53-N415.
Ind. Hyg. Occupat. Dis. (USSR) ü£ NIL
Indian J. Med. Res. ü£51:1963, 71:1980- Z53-C569
Indian J. of Physiology and Pharmacology ü£28(1):1979- Z56-A156
Int. Defense Rev. ü£ 4:1971.2- Z51-J146ü@ü@ü@scan. 1980 - (1994.1-4 NIL) 1994.10
Int. J. appl. Radiat. Isotopes 1: 1956- Z53-B90
Int. J. Biometeorol. ü£ 5:1961- Z53-B493
Int. J. Chronobiol. ü£ 1:1973- 8:1983 Z53-V20
Int. J. clin. exp. Hypnosis 28:1980- Z54-A799
Int. J. clin. Neuropsychol. 6:1984- Z54-C436 scan. 6:1984-12(4):1990
Int. J. Neurol. 13: 1979- Z54-C471
Int. J. Neuropsychiat. ü£NIL
Int. J. Neuosci. ü£ 1:1970- Z53-W446
Int. J. Psychobiol. ü£NIL
Int. J. Quant. Chem. 1:1967- Z53-N92
Int. J. radiat. Biol. 54:1988- Z53-B471
Int. Review of Neurobiology ü¢27:1985- Z63-A100 (æOè¬É}Åæê¦éó) scan. 1985-1993
Investigative Radiology ü@ü£ 14:1979- Z53-X88
IRCS Med. Sci. 9: 1981- Z54-B794
J. Acousi.Soc. Amer. ü£1:1929- (Z53-P26)
J. Am. Geriatr. Soc. ü£1:1953- Z54-Z332
J. Am. med. Ass. 173: 1960- Z53-N157
J. Appl. Phys. 8:1937- Z53-A376
J. Appl. Physiol. ü£1(1):1948- Z53-D28
J. Bioelectricity ü£ 1:1982-10:1991 scan.all Z54-E816 1992- Electro-and magnetobiology
J. biological physics ü£ 9:1981- Z54-D254
J. Cellular and Comparative Physiology ü£1(1):1932- Z53-D30
J. Clin. Psychiatry 41:1980- Z54-B211
J. comp. Physiol. A 154:1984- Z53-C185
J. comp. Physiol. B 154:1984- Z53-Y175
J. comp. Physiol. Psychol. ü£1947- Z52-A55
J. comp. Psychol. ü£ü@1:1921- Z52-A55
J. Criminal Justice 1:1973- Z51-K35
J. Exp. Anal. Behav. ü£ 1(1):1958- (Z53-V324)
J. Exp. Biol. 1: 1923- Z53-B396
J. Genet. Psychol. ü£84:1954- Z53-M295
J. Hist. Med. allied Sci. 1:19496- Z53-C499
J. interdiscipl. Cycle Res. ü£1:1970.5- Z53-S32
J. Iowa Med. Soc. ü£70:1980- Z53-B128
J. Ment. Sc. ü£ => British J. Psychiatry 97:1951- Z53-D353
J. Microwave Power ü£ 14:1979.3- Z53-X292 scan. - 28(2):1993 (excl.24,25)
J. Nervous and Mental Disease ü£ 169:1981- (Z54-B767) scan.-1993.1 (excl.1989.1-1991.6)
J. Neural Transm. 44:1979- Z53-V391
J. Neurol. Sci. 40:1979- Z53-V226
J. Neurophysiology ü£1(1):1938.1- Z53-D71
J. Neuropsychiat. ü£NIL
J. Neurosurgery ü£52(1):1980- Z54-A778 scan. 52(1):1980 - 80(6):1994.6 (ex1991.4-1991.12)

J. Neurol. Neurosurg. Psychiat. ü£1(1):1938- Z53-D352 scan. 1980-48(6):1985.6
J. Occup. Med. ü£ 21:1979.8- Z53-X91
J. Physiol. (Lond.) ü£140:1958- Z53-D32
J. Psychol. ü£1:1935/1936- Z52-A36
Laboratory Animal Science 21(1): 1971 - 42(6):1992.12 Z53-P334
Lancet ü£ 222(5672): 1932.5- ü£Z53-C416 scan 1984 (June & Dec. INDEX)
Laryngscope ü£90:1980- Z54-A412
Life Sci. ü£ 1963- Z53-B399
Los Alamos Science 9:1983- Z54-F230 scan. 1983-1993 (excl. 1991)
Mal.Cardiovas. ü£NIL
Mayo Clinic Proceedings ü£55:1980.1- Z54-A509
Med. biol. Eng. ü£4(1):1966- Z53-D304ü@
Med. biol. Eng. Comput. ü£15:1977- Z53-D304ü@
Med. Electron. Biol Eng. ü£ 1:1963-3:1965 Z53-D304
Med. Instru. ü£ 14:1980- Z54-A106
Med. Progress through Technology ü£1(1):1972- Z53-W401
Med. Res. Eng. ü£5(2):1966- Z53-D301
Metabolism 11:1962- Z53-D50
Microwave News ü£ NIL
Microwaves and RF 21:1982- Z53-F6
Military Electronics Countermeasures 6(6):1980.6-9(4):1983.4 E54-A821
Military Rev. ü£ 36(9):1956.12- Z51-D3 scan.1980-1989.11, 1990.1-12, 1992.5-1994.5
Military Sci. & Technology 2(2):1982.1-2(3):1982.6 Z54-E398
Mutation Res. ü£ 1:1964- Z53-L479
The Nation Z55-A180
Nature ü£1:1869- (Z53-A28) scan.366(6452): 1993.11 --> 360:1992 (6444-6450 ë{ùù/Eå)
Naturwissenschaften ü£7:1919- (Z53-A31)
Nav.Res.Rev. ü£(Z53-A119)
Neurobehav. Toxicol. 1:1979- Z54-C108
Neurochirurgie ü£ 26:1980- Z54-A650
Neurologica Medicochirurgica (Tokyo) 1:1959-18:1978 Z53-M401
Neurology ü£31(1):1981.1- Z54-C89
Neuroophthalmol. NIL
Neuropsychobiology (Basel) 1:1975- Z54-A288
Neuropsychologia 1:1963- Z53-D355
Neuroscience 1:1976- Z53-V202
Neurosci. Biobehav. Rev. 3:1979- Z53-X60
Neurosurgery ü£ 6 (1): 1980.1- (Z54-A464) scan. 1980-1994.6
N. Engl. J. Med. ü£244:1951- Z53-N131 scan.1981.1-8 (6,12 Index)
N. Scientist 52(772): 1971.12- Z53-A35 scan. 1993.12.4-1994.2.12, 1994.5.14-7.16
N.Y. State J. Med. ü£ 42:1942- Z53-C432
N. Y. T. Int. Ed. Z92-442 (City Ed. Z92-2)
N. Y. T. Magazine 1925.1- Z55-A183
Official J. Internat. Soc. Biotelemetry ü£
Origins of Life 5:1974- Z53-P272
Percept Mot Skills 1:1949- Z53-V473
Perspectives 13: 1986- Z51-P230 & others
Philosophical Transactions Ser.B ü£Z53-B445
Phys. Lett. 24:1967- Z53-A387
Physica Scripta ü£ 1:1982- Z54-H114
Physiologist ü£ 4:1961.2- Z53-D36
Physiology and Behvior ü£1(1):1966- Z53-M343
Physiol. chemistry and physics ü£ 11:1979- Z53-W127
Physiol. Rev. ü£ 1:1921- Z53-D34
Planetary Association for Clean Energy (PACE) #
Popular Electronics 6:1957- Z53-F12
Proc. ecol. Soc. Aust. ü£NIL
Proc. IEEE ü£ü@51:1963- Z53-F56ü@
Proc. Int. Union Physiol. Sci. ü£NILü@
Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. USA ü£ 1:1915- Z53-A78
Proc. R. Soc. Med. 55: 1962- Z53-C484
Proc. Soc. Exp.Biol.and Med. ü£28(1):1930- Z53-B438
Progressive 21:1957- 31:1967 Z52-B273
Progr. Brain Res. ü£NIL
Progr. Neurol. Surg. NIL
Psychiatr. Neurol. Jap. ü¢
Psychological Bulletin ü£1(1):1904.1- Z52-A41
Psychological Reports ü£ 10:1962- Z52-A43
Psychol. Rev. ü£1:1894- Z52-A39
Psychol. Today 6:1973-23:1989 Z53-S376

Psychonomic Sci.ü@ü@ü£NIL
Psychosom. Med. ü£ 11:1949- (excl. 22-41) Z53-D591
Quart. Rev. Biol. 1:1926- Z53-P394
Rad. Environ. Biophys. 11:1974- Z53-L144
Radio Sci. ü£ 1:1966- Z53-L8ü@scan 1980-1981.10ü@
Res. Publ. Ass. nerv. ment. Dis. ü£ NIL
Revue neurol. 135: 1979- Z53-V467
Science ü£1:1883- ü£Z53-A48
Science News ü£92(22):1967.11- (Z53-A53)
Scientific American ü£1(1):1859.7.2- Z53-A54
Sensors and Actuators 2:1981- Z54-C646
Smithsonian 6:1976- Z55-C258
Social Theory and Practice 2: 1973- Z51-K140
Surgery ü£ (St Louis) 87:1980- Z54-A596
Surgical Neurology ü£ 13(2):1980.2- (Z54-A694)
Technology Review 59:1957- Z53-C305
Tekhnika Moledezhi 22(2): 1954- Z53-C311
Time 23(1): 1934- Z55-A401
Tohoku J. exp. Med. 1:1920- Z53-C486
Trans. Am. Acad. Ophthalmol. Otolaryngol. ü£NIL
Trans. Am. Neurol. Assn. ü£NIL
Trans. Am. Soc. Artif. Int. Organs ü£NIL
Trans. Kans. Aca. Sci. 64: 1961- Z53-A96
US News & World Report Z55-A188
Yale J.of Biology and Medicine ü£ 22:1949- (Z53-B349)

© 1995 Freedom of Thought Foundation

Application for ©Shareware License

To: W.H. Bowart
P.O. Box 35072
Tucson, Arizona
85740-5072

Dear Bowart,

I'm honest and I want to support the principle of shareware. I want a copy right license to make ______ copies of the Researcher's Edition of *Operation Mind Control.*

My ☐ check or ☐ money order is enclosed for $15 for each copy:___ x 15 = ______
(Orders will be held until personal checks clear your bank.)

Please send my Shareware License to:

Name____
Address____
City__________________ State__________________ Zip__________
Phone:____________________________ No. of copies ordered__________

If ordering a license for several copies please copy this form or otherwise supply the name and addresses of those who will receive the other copies so that they can be registered. All copies will have a registration number and the network of readers will be contacted periodically with updates. This is a limited edition -- extended beyond the original issue of 500 copies, to the limit of your demand, through the shareware system.

"Have we the nerve and the will? Can we carry through
in an age when we will witness not only
new breakthroughs in weapons of destruction, but also a race for
mastery of the sky and the rain, the ocean and the tides, the far
side of space, and the inside of men's minds?"
--- **John Fitgerald Kennedy, 1959**

Volume 2

The Illuminati Formula used to create an UNDETECTABLE TOTAL MIND CONTROLLED SLAVE

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated to the two million Americans and counting who have been programmed with Monarch-type trauma-based mind control.

This book is written to destroy trauma-based mind control before it destroys the human race. It's time for this horrendous secret to end.

It is also written as part of the God's end time work to propel people of faith to the high calling that is prophecied of the Body but cannot be attained without men of faith understanding these things. Humanity's great prophet said he came to heal those whose hearts had been broken--literally split and crushed, and to free those who are captive. That work needs to go forward.

Blood, sweat and tears are associated with this book. The blood of the innocent victims of this mind-control cries out in a single unison, along with the pungent sweat of those who have tried to minister help to the shattered humanity left by the sadistic programmers, and the pools of tears shed as this book was written, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, do you not judge and avenge our blood on earth?"

HOPE

...Thou shalt know that I am Lord: For they shall not be ashamed that wait on Me.
Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered?
But thus saith Yahweh, even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contendeth with thee, and I will save thy children. Isaiah 49:23b-25

WARNING, READ THIS FIRST BEFORE READING THE BOOK.

IF THERE IS ANY CHANCE you the reader have had mind-control done to you, you must consider the following book to be DANGEROUS. If you are consulting a therapist for DID (also known as MPD), it is recommended that you consult your therapist before reading this book. The complications that could result for those under mind control learning the truth--could be fatal.

The co-authors take no responsibility for those who read or misuse this information. The reader's mind is like a garden. It may not be time to plant the truth in your mind. Perhaps you need some weeding or ground preparation, before the garden of your mind is ready. Perhaps the weather is too stormy to plant the truth. Pray to the Lord of the Harvest. The blessings that flow from planting the information of this book in your mind, will require the presence of living waters of love. If you do not have love in your heart, this book is not for you. The information contained in this book is the biggest news-story of the 20th century, and still the biggest secret. It will challenge you, shock you, horrify you and hopefully motivate you to redouble your efforts to humble yourself and seek strength from God Almighty.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION........1

THE 12 MAJOR SCIENCES OF MONARCH MIND-CONTROL

I. THE SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM........9
- A. Genetics & dissociative abilities
- B. Availability
- C. Physical & Mental requirements
- D. List of organizations carrying out programming
- E. 4 foundational steps for programming
- F. STEP 1. Spiritual requirements, Moon Child ceremonies, traumatization in vitro
- G. STEP 2. Trauma by premature birth
- H. STEP 3. Love bombing/love bonding
- I. STEP 4. Severing the "core" of the mind
- J. Further considerations

II. THE TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM........31
- A. A site for torture of children, NOTS China Lake
- B. What trauma does, the creation of PTSD & DID (MPD)
- C. How the torture is carried out, types of trauma
- D. How MPD works
- E. The Core
- F. The Anchoring Experience

III. THE USE OF DRUGS........47
- A. A list of drugs used
- B. A brief history of use
- C. Applications for drugs to control a slave

IV. THE USE OF HYPNOSIS........57
- A. Dissociation, trance, & its historical use
- B. How to program with hypnosis
- C. How to boost creativity of victim with hypnosis
- D. Keeping the mind dissociative
- E. Keeping the mind in a programming state
- F. Hypnotic triggers & cues
- G. Hypnosis in programs & other uses

V. THE SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT........99
- A. Overview
- B. The use of fiction
- C. The use of lies externally, incl. covers and fronts
- D. The use of internal deceptions, incl. the art of hiding things in a system

VI. THE USE OF ELECTRICITY & ELECTRONICS........165
- A. For torture
- B. For memory deletion
- C. For implanting thoughts
- D. Electronic communication & control

VII. ENGINEERING & STRUCTURING OF AN MPD SYSTEM........185
- A. Structuring of MPD worlds

The programming procedures which are described in this book are based on research and consultation with deprogrammers, ex-programmers, therapists, counselors and pertinent literature. To the best of our knowledge the statements made in this book are factual, although they may not reflect the latest or currently accepted methodology among each and every faction of the New World Order which carries out Monarch-type programming. This book tends to devote more emphasis to Illuminati programming, which is the highest level of programming. For individual application in understanding a survivor of Monarch programming, therapists are admonished to use this material with consideration for the Monarch victim's personal case and situation. The authors disclaim any responsibility for therapeutic work based upon this material.

Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler have co-authored *They Know Not What They Do, An Illustrated Guidebook To Monarch Mind Control*. Both Fritz and Cisco bring years of experience in dealing with Monarch programming to bear on the writing of this book. Fritz has researched the Illuminati, while he has worked with victims of its programming. He has authored *The Top 13 Illuminati Families*, and several other books.

B. The creation of roles
C. Building in layered defenses
D. Building backup systems
VIII. BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING **237**
A. Scarring the brain stem
B. Split brain work
C. Medical technologies
D. Histamines
E. The use of body programs
IX. MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP **263**
A. Observing a satanic family conditioning their children
B. Behavior modification, obedience training
C. Isolation
D. Repetition
E. Psychological motivators, incl. pride/needs/wants
F. Neuro-linguistic programming
G. The inversion of pain & pleasure
X. SPIRITUAL CONTROL TECHNIQUES, POSSESSION TRANCES, ETC **273**
A. Using spiritual principles against a person
B. How the Monarch program miniturizes what is done on a large scale
C. Dehumanization
D. Fear
E. The use of guilt, shame, ridicule & anger
F. Teaching that the master is God
G. Portals, Focal Points
H. Vows & oaths
I. The use of demon possession, layering in, etc.
J. The use of "angel" alters
K. The misuse of Scripture
L. Theta programming
XI. INTERNAL CONTROLS **323**
A. Teaching occult philosophies & ideologies
B. Internal computers
C. Internal hierarchies
XII. EXTERNAL CONTROLS **339**
A. Monitoring (Asset control)
B. The art of blackmail
C. Bribes
D. The Control of the Milieu
E. Bonding & twinning
F. Peer pressure
APPENDIX 1. THE PROGRAMMERS **363**
APPENDIX 2. THE PROGRAMMING SITES **379**
BIBLIOGRAPHY **385**
INDEX **391**

Introduction

INTRODUCTION by Fritz

There are many dangers to the human race, some real and some imagined. I believe that the trauma-based mind control which this book exposes is the greatest danger to the human race. It gives evil men the power to carry out any evil deed totally undetected.

By the time the astute reader finishes this book, they will be as familiar with how to carry out trauma-based mind-control as some of the programmers. Ancient and more recent secrets will no longer be secrets.

Over the years, I have spent thousands of hours studying the Illuminati, the Intelligence agencies of the world, and the occult world in general.

The centerpiece of these organizations is the trauma-based mind control that they carry out. Without the ability to carry out this sophisticated type of mind-control using MPD, drugs, hypnosis and electronics and other control methodologies, these organizations would fail to keep their dark evil deeds secret. When one of the mind-control programmers of the Church of Scientology, who has left Scientology, was asked about MPD, he said, "It's the name of the game of mind control."

Research into this subject will never be complete. This book has tried to give a comprehensive view of how the programming is done. The basic techniques were developed in German, Scottish, Italian, and English Illuminati families and have been done for centuries. Some report that some of the techniques go back to ancient Egypt and ancient Babylon to the ancient mystery religions. The Nazis are known to have studied ancient Egyptian texts in their mind control research. The records and secrets of the generational Illuminati bloodlines are very-well guarded secrets. Even when I've learned about the location of secret depositories of some of the Illuminati's secrets in Europe, America, and Asia, their records and secrets are too well-guarded to be examined.

The intelligence agencies, such as MI-6 began investigating these mind-control techniques early this century, but their records have been routinely destroyed and tampered with. There are some survivors and professionals who know that the British used programmed trauma-based MPD (DID) agents in W.W. I. In Jan., 1987, Richard Kluft submitted an article to the *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis* about 8 MPD patients who were between 60 and 72 years of age.

Traugott Konstantin Oesterreich (1880-1949), who was professor of philosophy at Tubingen University, Germany studied MPD and demonic possession and wrote a classic study of it in 1921 entitled *Possession Demonical & Other*, which was translated into english in 1930. His classic work on this subject provides documented cases which reveal that the basic trauma-based mind-control was going on in Germany, France & Belgium long before the 20th century. Although he is unable to put together all the pieces and the clues for what they are, the reader of this book might enjoy reading the 1930 English translation of his classic work after they finish this book. Oesterreich's research in early 1900s was the type of research that the Nazi mind-control programmers were very aware of. In 1921, the Germans such as Oesterreich would describe personality switches, by the term "somnambuliform [hypnotic states] possession" or "demonical somnambulism" or what might be called "Besessenheit von Hypnotismus und bösen Geistern". The ability to study both the spiritual & psychological aspects of mind-control phenomena, is often lacking today. There are exceptions such as Dr. Loreda Fox's book *The Spiritual Dimensions of MPD*.

In the 1920s, the Germans also were aware that the human mind has a variety of ego-psycho-psysiological states rather than one unified mind, which they termed "Subjecklose

Psychologie" or the psychology of having correlated psychological states rather than the concept of a single ego.

The Germans and Italians under the Nazi and Fascist governments began to do serious scientific research into trauma-based mind control. Under the auspices of the Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute in Berlin, Joseph Mengele conducted mind-control research on thousands of twins, and thousands of other hapless victims. Himmler supervised genetic research.

The Nazi research records were confiscated by the Allies and are still classified. A trip can be made from downtown Washington D.C. on a gray-government van which serves as a shuttle to the Suitland Annex where the government's secrets are buried including research papers captured from the Nazi Mind-Control research. Most of Mengele's concentration camp research is still classified. Much of it dealt with mind control. A researcher can visit the top floor, but underground below the top floor are the real secrets. The real secrets are lying in millions of sheets of classified documents hidden behind blast proof doors. There they have vault after vault, and row after row of top-secret files that only a few privileged persons with security clearances above COSMIC--such as with a "C3" or "MJ" security clearance can visit. Everyone with these high security clearances which I have identified is connected to the Illuminati.

Each underground area at Suitland Annex has its own subset of secret access words, known only to the initiated.

Most of the OSS records have been destroyed, a few have been left, the important ones have been misfiled or remade. (This is according to a reliable British intelligent agent.) Also according to reliable inside sources the CIA is working night and day to remake old records, to expunge all the real dirty secrets from their records. The basement of CIA HQ is known as "the Pit". In the Pit documents are being shredded and burned on a round the clock basis. The large remains of these secrets are sold for landfill.

The Illuminati have developed secrecy to a fine art. They train their people in the art of secrecy from the time they are born. Most everything they do, is done orally. They are trained not to write rituals and other things down. There is very little paper trail left by the Illuminati. The creation of slaves with photographic memories facilitates this secrecy.

But this book is not about how they have managed to keep their trauma-based Monarch Mind-Control a secret. They have managed only to keep it a secret to the general public. They have not been able to completely cover-up the millions of wasted lives that their programming has ruined. For many years, they were able to shut-up and quietly discard their programmed multiples by labelling them Paranoid Schizophrenics. But therapists are now correctly identifying these people as programmed multiples and are not only diagnosing them better but giving them better treatment. After Candy Jones's husband deprogrammed her enough that she could participate in writing a book exposing some of what had been done to her, the secret was out. (See *The Control of Candy Jones Hypnotism and the CIA* by Donald Bain.) Ever since then, the intelligence agencies and the Illuminati have been carrying out damage control. Their biggest damage control campaign has enlisted the power of Hollywood and the controlled Media. This campaign is known as the False Memory Syndrome campaign, or as those of us who know the facts like to call it "the false memory spin-drome".

The headquarters of the False Memory Spin-drom Foundation is located at 3401 Market St., Suite 130, Philadelphia, PA 19104. Some of the original founders were doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia. The inside story about these early FMS doctors of the University of Pennslyvannia is that they practiced Satanic Rituals during their work days. What is unusual about this--is that generally satanic rituals are performed at night, but these doctors did their coven work during the day. I know about these men. Now you can see why these men started the FMS! They started it to cover their own sins, because many of them were abusers themselves. In other words many of the FMS people are abusers of trauma-based mind-controlled slaves, or the victims of abuse who are in denial about their own abuse from trauma-based mind-control. Martin T. Orn (the person credited with founding the FMS) had ties to the CIA.

Two members of the FMS advisory board, Ralph Underwager, Ph.D. and theologian, along with Hollida Wakefield, M.A. let the cat out of the bag when they publicly supported pedophilia (that is adults having sex with children). Their support of pedophilia came in an interview with a Dutch magazine *Paidika, The Journal of Paedophilia* (Winter, 1993).

Although the False Memory Syndrome Foundation gets upset at any mention that there might be a conspiracy by the perpetrators of mind-control, because conspiracies supposedly don't and can't happen, they want us to believe that all therapists are conspiring together to implant false memories of abuse into their clients, which could not be further from the truth. Monarch slaves typically run into a great deal of denial by their therapists that anything like this could be happening.

The bottom line is that Multiple Personality Disorder (now refered to as Dissociative Identity Disorder) is a recognized bona fide diagnosis. False Memory Syndrome is not a recognized medical or psychological diagnosis and does not appear in the American Psychiatric Association's Diagnostic and Statistical Manual III-R nor the recently released DSM-IV.

Those who followed Fritz's writings have learned about the close working relationship between the Mondavi's and the Rothschilds (see his article about the Mondavi/Rothschild Napa Valley winery). Guess who got the court precedence which gives the FMS some legal ground to attack therapists? The precidence was supposedly a wife who went to a doctor who told her she had syphilis. The wife assumes she got it from her husband and divorces him. Then she learns she doesn't have syphilis. The husband then sues the doctor. Upon this bizarre case rests the legal precedence for a third party to sue a person who gives advice, such as family members suing a therapist. Upon this weak precidence, an abusive father who worked for Mondavi in a winery in California successfully destroyed a legitimate therapist who was trying to save his daughter who was a programmed Monarch victim. Supposedly the therapist had implanted false memories of rape in his daughter, when the record shows that the daughter's mother told the therapist the girl had been raped by the father.

When a valid case of SRA and repressed memories went to trial in Washington state involving a police officer whose family was MPD, Dr. Richard Ofshe of the False Memory Spindrom showed up to cause mischief. And mischief he did work. The case involved the children of a "Christian" police officer named Ingram who had satanically ritually abused his family for years. The daughter won in court, but Ofshe of the FMS was not above writing a book full of lies and distortions about the case. Lynn Crook, who was the abused daughter in the case wrote up a paper exposing what FMS person Richard Ofshe did to her. The controlled media is giving full license and great coverage to the FMS people.

Rather than fighting the government for scraps of declassified documents which have had their secrets marked out, and which may even be fake documents manufactured by the CIA, I have decided that there is a much better approach to expose the Monarch Mind Control to the world.

If a person could never go to Nepal, he can see pictures of it and believe it exists. If a person can not get into the top secret records of the CIA and Office of Naval Intelligence and MI6, they can be given the **exact RECIPE** for creating a Monarch slave. I believe that by giving the step by step recipe people will see that A. all the ingredients are available, B. it is possible to combine the ingredients, C. all it takes is the motive to do it, and that motive is self-evident. We'll even provide some of the names and places as we go along.

This book will provide the step-by-step recipe for making a Monarch Mind-Controlled slave. It is a trauma-based mind control which programs multiple personalities using **every known technique of mind-control**. Every type of mind-control technique has been combined into a group package which makes the total package almost impossible to break. It is this ability to synthesize all these methods into a group package which is so powerful.

Edward Hunter, author of *Brainwashing In Red China*, testified in **1958** before a U.S. Congressional House Committee on Un-American Activities: "Since man began, he has tried to influence other men or women to his way of thinking. There have always been these forms of pressure to change attitudes. **We discovered** in the past thirty years, a technique to influence, by clinical, hospital procedures, the thinking processes of human beings...Brainwashing is formed out of a set of different elements...hunger, fatigue, tenseness, threats, violence, and in more intense cases...drugs and hypnotism. No one of these elements alone can be regarded as brain washing, any more than an apple can be called apple pie. Other ingredients have to be added, and a cooking process gone through. So it is with brainwashing..." Hunter said brainwashing was a Red Chinese threat. He said that the chinese were the ones using these tactics. In reality, this mind control was being done in the U.S. and Hunter was a pawn to help justify the criminal activities of the programmers should they ever be found out behind their cover of "National security."

The handlers of mind-controlled slaves carry around a black or grey 3 ring notebook or a lap top computer with the access codes and triggers. Some of the programmers and handlers have this all memorized. The deepest parts, core/gems/executive committee, false trinity etc. are charted in esoteric language such as Enochian, Hebrew (which is considered magical), and Druid symbols. I have never gotten the opportunity to look at one of these, although a number of the slaves who I've talked with have while they were being programmed. These notebooks have color-coded graphs showing the arrangement of alters, the structure of the system, the training of the alters, the history of the alters and other details. All the primary tortures carried out on a slave are coded using dates/no.s so that the memories can be pulled up by the programmers.

There is a standard set of hand signals, gestures, and codes that allow a handler to work with someone else's slave, but the accepted code among the handlers is to leave another man's slave alone. As one leading psychiatrist put it, "Different ideologies use the same methodologies of mind control."

The Illuminati have secretly put in base programming that allows them ultimate control over many of the other groups' slaves. This will be described within this book.

For both the ease of reading and the ease of writing, I have dispensed with most footnotes. To provide my sources would double the size of the book, and many of them are confidential. (In the past, when I have attempted crediting information, some people have gotten bruised feelings for having been passed over or for being named. When information comes in from several sources, it becomes difficult to pass out credit.) I have made conservative judgement calls about what material I could use. Most of this information has been verified by several reliable sources. Confidential eyewitnesses are often the only source, when there is such a powerful conspiracy to keep this vast NWO mind control secret. Paper trails were not left or are not available. Programmed slaves who have worked for the military as mind-controlled slaves have witnessed their files expunged and sanitized.

The New World Order in 1981 made training films for their novice programmers. Monarch slave Cathy O'Brien was used to make both the film "How to Divide a Personality" and "How To Create a Sex Slave." Two Huntsville porn photographers were used to help NASA and the NWO create these training films. Undoubtedly, other porn training films exist too. In others words, there is film evidence of the Monarch Total Mind-control but these porn films are kept in very secure sites.

During the last few years, I have visited with ex-programmers, I have visited with hundreds of victims of the Monarch type programming. I have gone to programming sites, I have visited with therapists who work with the victims of this mind-control, and I have met several of the programmers of the CIA/Illuminati face to face in the adventures of trying to save people from their programming. I hope that God gives me the strength and the opportunity to get the information I have learned out to the world in general. When this information gets out, hopefully it will help lift some of the secrecy of the Monarch Programming. The Monarch Programming is a foundation rock of the New World Order that when pulled up, will reveal the most evil two-legged bugs and slimy critters. When their rock is lifted, they will have to scurry to hide.

Because the authors know what the programmers do, they must honestly record several areas of programming that will be controversial. The programmers are very much into demonology. Before therapists close their minds to this subject, the authors would like to point out, that they personally know of cases where Monarch slaves whose Christian personalities & other alters didn't believe in demonology were talked into participating in real deliverance, and the slaves discovered much to their surprise that work they had unsuccessfully tried to do for years with their therapist was accomplished in a day or two. Some prestigious researchers have decided the subconscious doesn't exist because they can't find it--its mysterious. To the man in the street the concept "subconscious" is as mysterious as the concept "demon". Both have been the objects of intense research by U.S./Brit./Ger. Intelligence groups. In fact, many of the concepts in this book have been purposely obscurred by the Illuminati's control over the media and universities. These obscurred concepts include M.P.D. (DID), recovered memories, hypnosis, demonic possession, aliens, mind-control, the subconscious, a conspiracy to bring in a NWO, truth, etc. The smokescreens of controversy will continue; but those who love the truth, if they seek it, will realize the importance of this book.

It's on public record that MK ULTRA, the mind control research which CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner admitted to in 1977 spent millions of dollars studing Voodoo, witchcraft, and psychics. On August 3, 1977, at a Senate hearing the then CIA director Admiral Stansfield Turner disclosed that the CIA had been conducting mind control on countless numbers of unsuspecting victims for years, without their knowledge or consent. These CIA mind-control operations were carried out with the participation of a least 185 scientists and at least 80 American institutions, including prisons, pharmaceutical companies, hospitals, and 44 medical colleges & universities. Many of America's most prestigious institutes of medical research, had cooperated with the CIA, as well as numerous big name corporations. Casey admitted that day that the CIA did mind-control consisting of drugs, hypnosis & electro-shock.

A few of the victims of the Monarch Project were even awarded financial compensation for their misery. But what was admitted was admitted in the spirit of covering up the extent of the full truth. The compensation was actually hush money, because victims were given "gag orders" by judges not to talk about what had happened to them.

It's been a disaster for Monarch victims that so many ministers have ignored those words of their Scripture, "For we are not ignorant of the devil's devices." 2 COR 2:11 This book is a must for those ministers who seriously believe "Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." 2 COR 7:1. In 2 TIM 2:19-21, believers who "nameth the name of Christ" are asked to purge themselves of their uncleanliness (unclean spirits). There are many top notch Christians in the churches today who are under mind-control, incl. many of the Christian leadership.

I would like to remind Christian ministers that Isaiah the great prophet said, "The Lord GOD hath given me **the tongue of the learned** that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning; he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned." Ignorance is not godliness. Isaiah learned to speak with the great learned men of his day, just as Paul the great apostle could speak to the learned men of his time.

One of the character traits of God is that He is all-knowing. WHO says it is godly to be ignorant? The prophet Daniel said Yahweh God "reveals the deep and secret things." (Dan. 2:22a) God's instruments will do this revealing.

Jesus' advice to his disciples was in effect to "Be wise as serpents, and gentle as a lamb". This advice certainly applies in helping the victims of trauma-based mind-control. Paul in his letter to the Thessalonians (1 Thes 5:14) says that in effect that different people need different counseling, but they all need to be treated with patience. The first step in suggesting a cure is to find out what happened. That is what this book is about. This book is about how the Occult Network creates the problem that therapists and a few ministers try to deal with. But the keys to open doors to healthy solutions for the victims of trauma-based total mind control will reveal themselves in this book for the reader as this book reveals the nitty-gritty of how the total mind-control happens.

Christ came to free the captives (Isaiah 61:1). Satanic ritual abuse has a history that is almost as old as history itself. Good King Hezekiah was a victim as a child of SRA. (2 Chr. 29) who got free. Moses confronted the satanic magic of Pharoah's magicians who could create live snakes from sticks. The Apostle Paul had to deal with Simon Magus, a leader of what is now known as Satanism. Solomon, one of the greatest men of faith, backslide and became one of the greatest satanists of all history.

We have "no fellowship with unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them" (as per EPH 5:11). While we have no fellowship with evil, the mind-control programmers are counting on us being so ignorant of their devices that they can hide their control devices behind perversion & filth that many people shy away from. We must be strong enough to face evil and not shy away from it. The victims of mind-control must look evil in the face & not look away to gain their freedom. We, who want to help them, must be courageous & strong enough to do this too. This book is written for that divine goal "till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ." Eph. 4:13 If the body of Christ is to attain fullness, we need this book to weed out the hidden terrible cancer that is consuming the body from within.

This book is written for ministers, secular and Christian therapists, and truth lovers of all kinds. If you love the truth this book is for you. If you see something good in the human race so that our species should be preserved as well as the spotted owl and the sand flea, then this book is for you. **IF YOU LOVE THE TRUTH, this BOOK is for YOU.**

GLOSSARY OF HOW BASIC TERMS ARE USED IN THIS BOOK

For those readers who are not familiar with these basic terms let us introduce you to the definitions under which this book uses them.

Alter--Our usage is trying to follow the programmers usage of this word. A dissociated part of the mind which has a seperate identity and is given cue codes by the mind-control programmers to trigger that dissociated part of the mind to come to the front of the mind. The alter's identity may be a gem, rock, a tape recorder, a poodle, a white kitten, a dove, a horse, or even think of itself as a person or a demon. It all depends on its programming. An alter is different from an alter fragment in that the alter fragment is a dissociated part of the mind which serves only a single purpose. The programmers will give an alter a history, and insure that shadow alters will provide a full range of accessible emotions. Sometimes the distinctions between alters and alter fragments is vague, but examples from the two ends of the spectrum are easy to tell apart. We use the word alter in this book to conform to what the programmers' charts are encoding as alters. A typical main Mengele-created grid would be a grid of 13x13 principal A-coded alters, which is 169 principle alter personalities. In Illuminati systems, ceremonial "alters" will consist of 3 alters placed on a spinning pedistal together into triad goddesses or gods. That means that an A-coded alter on some levels is actually 3 alters spinning together, which must be locked in place to communicate with, and then rotated to communicate to the other two.

Beta--This is the second Greek letter, and it represents the sexual models and sexual alters that the Programmers are creating. The primitive part of the brain is involved in this type of programming. An early sexual abuse event will be used to anchor this programming. These sexual slaves will develop sexual abilities that are far beyond what the public is aware is even possible. They also receive the worst kind of abuse far beyond what most people's imagination can picture. Beta alters generally see themselves as cats.

Councils (Illuminati)--The Illuminati has frequent meetings. Some of these meetings are organized to appear "acephalous" and "accidential" in their meetings, when in reality they are structured and planned. One group, MJ-12 has gone by the following names: the Group, the Special Study Group, the Wise Men, the Operations Coordinating Board (OCB), 5412 Committee, 303 Committee, 40 Committee, PI-40 Committee, and Policy Planning Group (PCG). Some of the formal policy and ritual groups have names that all Illuminati members who have gotten high enough to learn, will recognize:
The Council of 3, Council of 5, Council of 7, Council of 9, The Grand Druid Council, The Committee of 300, and the Committee of 500 (known as Fortune 500). Many of the meetings are conclaves without formal names. The Grand Druid Council is not something fictional, but an actual body of people who formally met and whose membership, we have been trying to keep track of. The groups which make decisions to control this planet are networked together. Each decision has its own origin and route that it takes.

Delta--This is a Greek letter shaped like a triangle which symbolizes change in calculus. It has become a favorite word to use in naming things for the occult elite. Delta teams are 4 person assassination teams which usually are secret teams. Delta Forces is an elite unit that operates under the Joint chiefs of staff that is made up of highly trained total mind-controlled slaves. Delta models are slaves whose sole purpose is assassination. Delta alters are alters within an Illuminati alter system which are programmed to be assassins. These alters are often some of the deepest in a system and in a Genie bottle or with Umbrella programming.

Deliverance ministry--(This book is about HOW the mind-control is done, it is not a textbook on solutions.) The use of the term deliverance ministry in this book connotates any person(s) who via faith in God is able to pray for divine help in a fashion that a victim is helped from demonic activity. A deliverance ministry is a natural outgrowth of a life in harmony and fellowship with Yahweh God. However, this is not to be confused with Exorcism of the traditional Catholic or witchcraft nature in which certain spells and incantations are used in a prescribed method. "Deliverance" connotates divinely inspired faith, exorcism involves ritual. A deliverance ministry might perhaps teach a person about forgiveness, or how they can renounce an oath, or how to apply Jesus Christ's atoning blood to their life. In this fashion, the person finds deliverance through biblical spiritual principles rather than the efficacy of some ritual or hocus pocus spell. This book is in no way meant as a blanket endorsement of every spiritual warfare tactic. If anything, this book suggests that ministers learn more about mind-control, as well as grow stronger in their walk with Almighty God.

Illuminati--The Illuminati are 13 elite bloodlines which have manuevered themselves into control over this planet. They lead double lives, one for society and a hidden one which is based on a gnostic luciferian philosophy which consists of lots of blood rituals.

Monarch Programming--This was a specific Project carried out by secret elements of the U.S. government and intelligence groups. There were, according to someone a few years ago who had access to the computer(s) which contains all the names of active monitored human slaves, 40,000 actively monitored Monarch slaves. However, this book uses the term generically to include all victims who have suffered this type of trauma-based mind-control. In the same way, that a brand name like "Hyster" is used to describe all lifts--when we use the term we use it in its broadest sense. This is the only way it can be used and technically correct, because as of this date, the authors have not seen who is on the active Monarch Program list of slaves.

Multiple Personality (DID)--Multiple personalities or MPD or Dissociative Identity Disorder is the situation where different dissociative parts of a single brain view themselves as separate persons. The DSM-IIIR definition of MPD is the guideline for determining MPD for this book.

New World Order-- The New World Order is the global design for a One-World-Government One-World-Dictator and its constituents. Insiders call themselves the "network" and "the neighborhood".

Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA)--This is used to represent **all** categories of ritual abuse which would be inspired by the desire to rob, kill, or destroy something worthwhile in a person, especially their freedom of thought. Many groups carrying out SRA do not mention Satan by that name. They may make Pacts to Baphomet, and call upon Rex Mundi, or Belair, or Lucifer, or the Father of Light, God, or Kali or even "Jesus" or "Jesus Christ" (there are demons which call themselves "Jesus", who are not to be confused with Yeshua or Yehoshua ben Joseph who is known as Jesus Christ of Nazareth.) SRA is not a value judgement by the authors against some group, the victims themselves on some level know that he or she is being abused.

Switching--This is when one part (fragment) of the mind takes over from another, or in simple terms, this is when one alter personality (or alter fragment) takes the body from the alter which is holding the body. Switching can occur via the Programmers' codes for calling up alters, or by external or internal stimuli that trigger an alter to come out. Switching will usually cause at least a flicker of the eyes, and for outside observers, who know the different personalities, they will observe another personality take the body.

System-- This term is used in several ways. It is frequently used to refer to a victim of total mind control because the victim consists of alters, programming, implant(s), internal computers, and numerous dissociative states which function together as a system. The word is also used in this book to refer to the body's functional physiological units, such as the respiratory system. The word is also infrequently used to denote the established social-economic-political system controlling the world, also known insiders as the Network. Other standard meaning may also occasionally be used for the word.

CHAPTER 1.
SCIENCE NO. 1. THE SELECTION & PREPARATION OF THE VICTIM

THE SELECTION BASED ON GENETICS, DISSOCIATIVE ABILITIES, AVAILABILITY, MENTAL AND PHYSICAL FEATURES.

One of the primary reasons that the Monarch mind-control programming was named Monarch programming was because of the Monarch butterfly. The Monarch butterfly learns where it was born (its roots) and it passes this knowledge via genetics on to its offspring (from generation to generation). This was one of the key animals that tipped scientists off, that knowledge can be passed genetically. The Monarch program is based upon Illuminati and Nazi goals to create a Master race in part through genetics. If knowledge can be passed genetically (which it is), then it is important that parents be found that can pass the correct knowledge onto those victims selected for the Monarch mind-control.

The primary important factor for the trauma-based mind-control is the ability to disassociate. It was discovered that this ability is passed genetically from generation to generation. American Indian tribes (who had traumatic ritual dances and who would wait motionless for hours when hunting), children of Fakirs in India (who would sleep on a bed of nails or walk on hot coals), children of Yogis (those skilled in Yoga, who would have total control over their body in trance), Tibetan buddhists, children of Vodoun, Bizango and other groups have a good ability to disassociate. The children of multigenerational abuse are also good at dissociation. The Illuminati families and European occultists went to India, and Tibet to study occultism and eastern philosophy. These Europeans learned yoga, tantric yoga, meditations, and trances and other methods to disassociate. These skills are passed on to their children via genetics. A test is run when the children are about 18 months old to determine if they can dissociate enough to be selected for programming or not.

Mind-controlled slaves are created for different purposes, hierarchy or non-hierarchy purposes.

The Illuminati create mind-controlled slaves who are to function within the Illuminati hierarchy. These slaves will usually have their genealogies hidden, and will be created to have excellent cover lives to insure that they are not detected. They will be given multifunctional programming, and will usually be used to help program other slaves. The abuse will not be as physically visible as it will be on the bodies of slaves who are not born to be part of the Illuminati elite. Members of Moriah's (Moriah = the Illuminati) Luciferian elite will have undergone as much trauma as other slaves, however the torture scars and the control are better concealed. These children will often receive lavish experiences as well as talks to convince them that they are part of the elite. (By the way, body scars will show up better under black light, that is the same black light as used in clubs.)

The Illuminati and other organizations have also programmed individuals who are simply expendable. These are sex slaves who are used up and killed very early in life, one-time use saboteurs, breeders, soldiers, drug couriers and so forth. The bodies of these people will often show visible torture scars. The expendable are the children of parents who were blackmailed into turning their children over to the CIA. This is all hidden by the power of the National Security Act. These are children, who have been sold by pedophile fathers, or pornographic parents. The programmers/masters program them with the expectation that they will be "thrown from the freedom train" when they get to age 30. (Freedom Train is the code word for the

Monarch trauma-based mind-control. To be thrown from the Freedom Train means to be killed.)

The CIA and the Illuminati are skilled at blackmailing parents to give up their children. They would watch the mail for porn. Pedophile and murderers who abuse their children are warned that they will go to prison for long lengths of time if they do not cooperate by selling their children into mind-controlled slavery. In return for the parent's cooperation, they provide rich financial rewards to the parent(s). It's clearly a case of "if you don't cooperate you lose in life big time, if you do cooperate you win big time." Ministers are often set up with Betas (a sexual model) who then blackmail them. The ministers do not want to lose their status and profession via scandals, so they agree to turn their children over when young to the CIA to work with. The Illuminati like to blackmail these ministers when they are finished with their Seminary schooling and committed to the ministry at about 33 years of age. The idea of having nothing to fall back on after they have committed their entire life to one profession is too much for these weak willed men, and they buckle under the threats. If they don't buckle under, the resulting consequences will remove them from ministry.

The type of father who is most preferred by the Programmers to offer up their children for programming is the pedophile. If a father will abuse his own little baby girl, then the Programmers know that the man has no conscience. This father's involvement in criminal activity (and thereby his vulnerability) can be continually increased. They want men who they believe will not develop any qualms later on in life about what they have done. A man, who waits until his daughter is a teenager to molest her, is usually esteemed to have too much conscience for the programmers.

A big distinction must be made between hierarchy Monarch slaves, and non-hierarchy Monarch slaves. The reason there is such a big distinction is that they are not programmed the same way. Since this book is giving the recipe for how to create a Monarch slave, we will have to cover the distinction between slaves within the Illuminati and those slaves who function outside of the Illuminati hierarchy. It is important to stress that the label "Monarch" is used in this book in a generic sense for the modern trauma-based total mind-control that is taking place. Whether an Illuminati mind-controlled slave is technically in the Monarch records or out of the actual Monarch Program data files kept on computer is merely a technicality.

In my (Fritz's) other writings, I explain about how the Illuminati created the CIA. I know that some of its directors were members of the Illuminati and I strongly suspect that the other CIA directors were probably full-fledged members too. The two organizations need each other. If the CIA didn't have the international backing of the movers and shakers of the world, it would have been exposed and done away with. Likewise, the Illuminati, because it is so secret, needs organizations through which it can work. The CIA is a front for the Illuminati, and the CIA in turn sets up fronts. Some of those fronts, are elaborate well-staffed, well-equipped programming sites, (such as many of the state mental hospitals, McGill Psychiatric Training Network consisting of 8 Montreal hospitals esp. St. Mary's, NASA in Huntsville, AL; the Presideo, CA; and NOTS at China Lake, CA, to name a few. For a more complete list see Appendix B.) The Illuminati couldn't do it alone without its fronts. Satanists within the Network & the CIA took over Boy's Town,NE in the early 1950s, & used that famous orphanage for a constant supply of boys for programming. Boy's Town is perhaps the most famous, but there are whole long list of others.

When the Monarch Programming started, the top men were Illuminati. Originally, Joseph Mengele was the lead programmer. He had already achieved the rank of Grand Master (later Ipssimus) within the Illuminati. He had become skilled in

Preparation

music, in Kabbalistic Magic, in dancing, in abortions, and in torture (by the way, Mengele had a sadistic mother) and programming children. Many of the concentration camp children that Mengele programmed still survive and still love him to this day as "Daddy". Mengele disappeared from Auschwitz in Jan. 1945, several months before the final chaos began in the Third Reich. He disappeared so the Illuminati could smuggle him to the U.S., so that his exceptional knowledge of programming--honed and fined tuned on thousands of concentration camp child victims could be put to use on a grande scale in the U.S. He travelled worldwide but especially in western U.S. doing his programming accompanied by his pair of two black servants.

American Monarch survivors remember his spotless German uniform, his shiny boots which he wore during programming, his thick German accent, his handsome features, his cleft chin, the space in his front teeth, the way he would jab with his thumb while programming, as if he were still saying "links, rechts" to lines of jews coming into the concentration camps. The reason Mengele was so excited to do the selection process of inmates coming into Auschwitz was that he was choosing inmates for his numerous mind-control trauma experiments. He was especially anxious to get identical twins, because his genetic research related to mind control needed persons of identical genetic makeup.

Traditionally, the Illuminati had been having their children inspected by a woman with the rank of Grande Mother. She would determine the fitness of the children and then present them for a formal acceptance ceremony at age 3 to the Grande Druid Council. This procedure didn't change when Mengele came over--the programming just jumped from being an occult science to one that had full access to the Medical, Psychiatric, Judicial, Scientific and Governmental sectors via the power of the National Security Act and the Intelligence agencies. The Illuminati's programming of multiples prior to Mengele's arrival were simplistic, compared to the sophisticated techniques engineered by the Nazi Germans (whose Mind Control research included some non-German nationals such as some Italians.)

Just as a victim who is killed by an 18th century musket is just as much victimized as someone killed by an M-16, so a victim of the pre-1946 programming was just as victimized as those programmed with more sophisticated techniques.

For the Illuminati, the child's programming is planned by the Circle (another name for their organization) before it is born. From the Illuminati's perspective their plans involve generational spirits and positions within the hierarchy. The child is conceived according to their rituals, and the steps that that child will go through follows a well-thought out detailed regimen for programming it. In contrast, the children from foster homes, or pedophiles do not receive the same regimen. Hierarchy slaves will in turn be used to program and train other hierarchy children, while CIA slaves and Mafia slaves and KKK slaves etc. will be discarded. This is why a Presidential Model is "thrown from the Freedom Train [the name of the Monarch Program in the Underworld]". Women and men in the Illuminati will continue to help with the programming their entire lives. The Illuminati is programming such vast numbers of children, they need everyone of their able members to help. Moriah's total membership worldwide numbers in the millions. The Illuminati regimen for their children is far more controlling than the CIA's programming.

Not everyone in the Illuminati gets their mind-split and becomes a programmed multiple. However, everyone does get some type of mind-control. Those who have been spared multiplicity still must participate in a two-week intense mind-control session that might be compared to the Army's Ranger school. Those who participate in this have learned obedience. Those who haven't learned obedience, are forced into ritual gladiator type duels or other punishments to eliminate them. Finally, a traitor's death as pictured on one of the Tarot cards is waiting. Sharon Tate was left hanging in the No. 12 Tarot Card's "hangman position" from the house rafters. The best therapists will quietly admit that traditional therapy is inadequate.

Unless God intervenes, people who are born into the Illuminati don't escape it while alive. This book isn't a mere exercise of academic thinking, but is written with the assurance that freedom is possible, there are viable answers.

Some children live in foster homes, or with adopted parents, or in orphanages, or with caretakers and guardians. Because these children are at the mercy of the non-related adults, these types of children frequently are sold to become mind-controlled slaves of the intelligence agencies.

In review, remember that because many of these organizations are controlled by the Illuminati; an Illuminati slave may often work for one of these front groups, while the Illuminati maintain control over the base-program. The intelligence networks were started by and run by the Illuminati. They are Illuminati fronts. The use of slaves crosses many organizational boundaries within the overall Network.

If a slave is to be used as a Delta model (assassination), they may be selected for strength and dexterity. The Delta Force is the army's elite unit made up of Monarch slaves. If they are to operate as a Beta model (sexual slave), they will be chosen if they can master technique. Occassionaly they might in some circumstances be selected for how pretty the programmers expect the child to become. Some parents have produced good looking children and are actually sought-after to bear children to sell into the Mind Controlled Slavery "Freedom Train" System. However, vastly more important for Beta Sex Slaves are their ability to be programmed to have charm, seductive skills, charisma, and creativity. Beauty is in the eye of the beholder, and the programmers can put almost any kind of body to use as a sex slave. Almost any sex slave can fit somewhere into the script of the Illuminati/New World Order/crime syndicate "porn" movies. (I place porn in quotation marks--because what they call porn doesn't resemble what the public thinks of porn--we're not talking *Playboy* type porn, we're talking ghastly horrible atrocities that are as sick as anything done in the Nazi concentration camps). For instance, it takes little acting ability or beauty to have one's head chopped off while having sex.

There are different types of sexual slaves, but the Illuminati wants to get Beta alters which are sharp, talented, skilled, and resourceful. They will use these Beta alters, such as the Black Widow alters, for espionage and blackmail. To make sure that the child's mind develops properly, the baby will be interacted with so that those areas of the brain that are important to develop will develop to the maximum. It is a well-known fact, that areas of the brain grow according to how much stimulation and use that area of the brain receives. For this reason, Grande Dames, who are involved in programming, will spend time drawing and showing faces to the child and seeing if the child can recognize identical faces. Almost any other item will be used, candy canes with stripes (match the candycanes with the same no. of stripes), trees, or pencils. The child must learn to match identical items very early--even before they can speak. This is so they will be able to build mirror images into their mind. All the senses are trained for building the mirror images; for instance such as silks and cottons can be used for the sense of touch. The child will have to match textures. The Programmer, the Grande Dame, and Grande Mothers will teach the child to have good abilities in copying, reflecting, repeating, echoing, or re-echoing, and mirroring. They will be taught for hours how to re-echo something verbatim. Some of these teaching methods are almost like games.

For instance, 20 pins will be in a box and the small child is given a short time to decide how many pins are in the box.

A certain level of intelligence and creativity is needed for time to be wasted on programming. You can not program a mind which is weak. Most of the people programmed are very intelligent. One study of multiples said that multiples were 130 or above in I.Q. and then mistakenly blamed their multiplicity on their I.Q. Attempts to program people with low intelligence or no creativity were discovered to be a waste of time. Methods are used to greatly enhance the victim's intelligence and creativity. The Illuminati will also work on enhancing their psychic abilities such as telepathy and cliarvoyance.

The head programmers have their own little mottos about building solid structures which they like to express to new trainees. These include, "An unstructured house [mind of the slave] is like unto a house without walls", "A house undisciplined is like unto a house without walls, it will crumble within itself", and "A house divided against itself will not stand." Much of the structuring will be discussed in chapter 7, but the structuring begins at birth for the victim, so this chapter will discuss the first steps.

In order to build a solid good house, one needs to have a solid foundation. In order to build a solid foundation, one needs to know how the land lays and what the weaknesses of the land are--if it is sand or rock or clay, etc. One needs to design one's house to take advantage of the natural lay of the land. Will storms come from this or that direction? Where will the house need extra protection? The very same principles pertain to programming--because a structure is being built.

Many evil geniuses within the Illuminati added their contributions to the Monarch programming. One of the most important was John Gittinger of Oklahoma, because he was the genius who could understand how a little child's mind was when it was in infancy. In order to work with something, you must know what you are working with. John Gittinger, who is no longer alive, worked at programming for years. His contribution was in the mental assessment area.

John Gittinger (b. 1909) was the director of psychological services at the state hospital in Norman, Oklahoma. He got a master's degree at age 30, and joined the CIA's MK Ultra Mind Control in 1950. He was a high school guidance counselor and a Navy lieutenant commander during W.W.II. In the late 1970s, he moved back to Oklahoma. He was heavy set and goateed. Its been said he looked like the actor Walter Slezak. He had an insatiable curiosity about understanding human personality.

When the Illuminati looked around for men skilled in personality assessment to assist the Monarch Programming, John W. Gittinger was one of their men who they selected. Gittinger was not the only researcher into personality that the CIA hired, but he was their top man in terms of the programming of children. From the end of W.W. II until he began with the CIA in 1950, Gittinger was studying how to assess personality. At the Oklahoma State Hospital, he had large numbers of adults who could be studied. After Gittinger started doing personality assessment for the CIA, most of his work became highly classified. The *Rolling Stone* article of July 18, 1974 asked why years of research into personality assessment should be so secret. In fact it was so secret, that Gittinger was not allowed to talk to journalists, even though it was public knowledge that Gittinger did personality assessment work/research. The reason that such an apparently benign science was kept secret is that it plays a major part in the success of the Monarch Programming.

John Gittinger designed the PAS (Personality Assessment System). This is an extraordinary method to evaluate human behavior and predict their future behavior. As far as we know, most of the PAS is still classified SECRET.

The PAS is based on the ability to differentiate different types of people. There are 3 major differentiations (or dimensions). They are called the E-I dimension, the R-F dimension, and the A-U dimension. People are born with their original placement within each of these three spectrums. In other words there are 3 axes that can be graphed to describe a baby's personality. The baby might be graphed-- I (Internalizer),F (Flexible), and A (Role Adaptive). If the baby were graphed this way (i.e. I-F-A), then the Programmers would automatically know this child's mind will become a social or religious reformer. The child's programming charts would then be labelled some suitable occupation such as "Environmental Activist", "Pentecostal church reformer", "Consumer Advocate", or "Activist against Narcotics". The programming for that child then would follow 6 month goals to develop that mind-controlled slave into one of the best in that occupation. (In fact, one of the co-authors of this book, Fritz, is indeed I-F-A, which helps explain why he is trying to reform society and religion with this book. While it took Fritz many years to find his correct nitch in life, programmed multiples are steered in the correct direction very early in life with all the breaks and all the money needed from the Network to open opportunities.)

There are three possibilities for the child in regards to his original personality components. He can express the component, or suppress or repress it. As the child goes through life, he has two periods within which he can change (suppress or repress) his behavior/personality. In the PAS, the first period is called "compensation" and the second is called "modification". The amount of punishment for a personality trait and pressure to change from others will determine the amount of change which the child's mind will perform on its original personality.

The activity level of a person at each point in their life is also measured. The intensity of each of the scores is also rated.

The actual PAS system is far more detailed than the example above, but it serves to give a simplified idea of how it works. The essential dynamics of an entire personality can be written in a short code which might be written for example 12(E-uc Fcu+ A+u+u)H+. However, even that code is shortened E-uc can be written simply i'. The basic 3 dimensions to personality provide 8 basic types. However, the PAS allows for 6 basic positions in each of these 8 basic types which yields 216 discrete basic types. Next, the person can change their predisposed primitive personality initially 5 different ways, and this then gives $(30)^3$ or 27,000 different types. The second change can be done on 4 types of modification which makes for 1,728,000 types. Then the programmers can factor in activity level, their "Normal" level (intelligence base), age, sex, and education, and life experiences. In other words, what appears to be simple has a high degree of calibration to it. The person who was best with the PAS was its brainchild Gottinger himself. His intuition along with his PAS system, gave him an uncanny idea of how a person's mind works now, and how it would work in the future. He sadistically reveled in putting his skill to use programming children.

The actual assessment codes that have appeared on programming assessment charts which the Monarch child assessment teams have used to evaluate, describe, & assess a child to be programmed follow the standard symbols created for PAS.

Some about Gittinger's work has escaped the secrecy of the intelligence agencies. Concerning the Gittinger Personality Assessment System see "An Introduction to the Personality Assessment System" by John Winne and John Gittinger, *Journal of Community Psychology Monograph Supplement No. 38*. Rutland, Vermont: Clinical Psychology Publishing Co., Inc. 1973. See also the *Rolling Stone* magazine article, July 18, 1974, "The CIA Won't Go public". Because so little is known about the PAS test, it needs to be explained some.

Observations in relation to the Wechsler Intelligence Test provided the initial ideas behind the PAS.

The digit-span subtest of the Wechsler Intelligence Test, which rates the ability to remember numbers forms the basic test used for the E-I dimension. What Gittinger discovered was that short order cooks had good number-memory which = Internalizer personality or "I". A high digit span in any person tells much about them. People who don't separate themselves well from their environment are Externalizers = E. The "I" personality was a good baby. The "E" type who prefers doing to thinking is a "too-curious" baby, who will make demands. I's would often be pressured to become more outgoing, and E's are often pressured by parents to be more self-sufficient, and to progress from crawling (which they like) to learn to walk.

Pure Internalizers become more withdrawn after several drinks, and uncompensated Es are more likely to become sloppy drunks, garrulous. Based on the E-I dimension, predictions can also be made for how LSD will affect a person.

This is the E-I dimension.

The block design subtest shows whether a person is a Regulated (R) or a Flexible (F) person. This is the R-F dimension. The regulated person had no trouble learning by rote but didn't understand what he learned. The Flexible person on the other hand had to understand something before he learned it. R children could learn to play the piano easily, but the great concert piano players were F children who had persevered to master what they considered drudgery.

The third dimension is the Role Adaptive (A) or a Role Uniform (U) person. A could be defined as Charisma, while people tend to ignore the U.

The CIA has 40 patterns that a skilled observer looks for, and these then are related to the PAS and Wechsler subtests. Illuminati Mothers-of-Darkness alters trained in observation chart what they see a child do. A child's behavior with certain toys, certain hand responses, and certain social responses can be observed and used to assess how this child would score on the PAS test. EEG (Electroencephalogram) patterns co-relate to the PAS digit-span test. This allowed them to use the EEG patterns to overcome cultural bias in the test. It also gave the Monarch programmers the perfect tool to assess small children before they have verbal skills.

David R. Saunders, at the Univ. of Col. working with the CIA, wrote a paper in 1961 showing the connection between alpha waves and digit span. In 1960, Mundy-Castle wrote about the connections between EEG printouts and Wechsler-Bellevue Test variables. Here is the tip of the iceberg that EEGs were being used to determine pre-verbal personality in children. And Salvatore et al wrote at the Massachusetts Mental Health Center, Boston, Mass. clear back in 1954 about the "predictive potential of Gittinger's theory" in an unpublished research paper. (The Massachusetts Mental Health Center was an early participant in all this.)

The child's guardians must teach the small victim obedience. They must teach the child to keep its eyes open and to hold still. These skills are important, because the child will be subjected to the EEGs in vast amounts. The hospital equipment would be something like an 11-channel Grass EEG machine where 11 electrodes are placed on the child's head, and brain wave patterns are printed out charting such things as background, variability, discharges, background suppressions, sharp waves, etc. The electrodes will have designations such as T3, T4 etc. In special programming sites, a machine with electrodes will be hooked up to the child's head for repeated tests. The newer machines accomodate up to 30 1/2 diameter pads (electrodes) which are attached with electrode adhesive tape or small needled ends to the child's scalp. The child's hair will be parted in an area, and the electrodes will be hooked to the skull. The attendant will tell the child, "Don't move. Keep your eyes open. Look at this point. Don't blink. Don't move your body." Then this procedure will be repeated for 45 minutes to an hour. Eventually hundreds of readout from electrodes clipped to the skull of the child will chart the brain waves of the child. From these brain waves, the programmers can determine what type of personality the child has. This personality assessment criteria and ability is one of the guarded secrets of the programming. Should unexpected behavior crop up, the slave may be hauled in for more EEGs.

The PAS tests would reveal to Gittinger what a person's weaknesses were. The PAS shows what a person wants. And these are called the soft spots of a person's personality. Also the PAS shows mental weaknesses, on where a person will be instable and can be broken down. Certain types of stresses will have a cumulative effect of hurting a person. A stress-producing campaign is run against CIA targets, and by doing this they can neutralize a potential enemy. This information collected from children who are potential victims for the Monarch programming, is essential for knowing how to structure that child's programming. For instance IFU children often are autistic, IRU are schizophrenic children, and IR or IF are fantasy prone. It will be further explained shortly how this aids programming.

An Internalizer personality would be important deep inside an alter system, while an Externalizer would be useful for a front personality. (Internalizers are predisposed to the production of mental fantasy.) By knowing what the child was, the programmers know what they already have, and what they must add or build into the thinking of the alters they will create. Likewise, some alters need to be R and some F. And some need to be A and some U. Regulated (R) personalities like to have narrow limitations on their activity. This makes them suitable for programming. The R's readily accept authority, and will not try to step out of the range of their habits. The R has a marked ability to learn without understanding. They easily learn material by rote, because they do not need to understand it before they will learn it. This is another asset they have that the programmers like. The programmers may or may not want an A (Role Adaptive personality). A future country singer needs charisma--a future computer programmer doesn't.

Without being able to finely determine what is there, the programming could not be fine tuned. If the child is good in math it will have its programming scripts steered in that direction. If it has artistic brainwaves, then the programmer will use art work in programming. The art work of the european artist M.C. Escher is exceptionally well suited for programming purposes. For instance, in his 1947 drawing "Another World", the rear plane in the center serves as a wall in relation to the horizon, a floor in connection with the view through the top opening and a ceiling in regards to the view up towards the starry sky. Reversals, mirror images, illusion, and many other qualities appear in Escher's art work which make all 76 or more of his major works excellent for programming. The use of these kinds of elements will explained later.

Five children each given the same Alice In Wonderland script will each use the script differently during programming. The programmer takes the child's own creativity and works with that unique creativity. The child must create the images itself if the programming is to hold. It won't work if the images are someone else's. The child organizes its internal world to suit his/her own experiences such as castles, boxes, rooms, and dollhouses. The PAS type testing will continue during the early years of the slave's life to make sure the programming has not driven the child crazy or psycho. The child will move down the script decided for it for its whole life, based on these early tests. More about how this works later.

The EEG tests run frequently on children to be programmed also show brain tumors, and medical problems beside just the brain wave patterns. The PAS tests can show how easy a person can be hypnotized. If the testing by the EEG's doesn't reveal a child who can be easily hypnotized, they will be rejected for programming, even though modern drugs and extreme torture in some cases will be applied to "salvage" children they really think they need to program but are clearly not easily hypnotizable.

EEG's can also be used to see what state of consciousness the brain is in.

The Monarch Programming is based on structuring MPD alter systems which is covered in Chapter 7. The success of this structuring (its excellent finetuning) comes from the initial testing, which means programs are properly built on whatever foundation the mind has.

The CIA front Human Ecology Society tested the PAS. In 1962, the CIA moved Gittinger's base of operations to another CIA front on Connecticut Ave., Washington, D.C. called Psychological Assessment Associates. Because Gittinger believed genetic-based differences exist in people, which is one of the bases for the Monarch Programming, his work was not accepted by main stream psychology.

In 1974, Gottinger described the PAS system, "...the Personality Assessment System (PAS): (a) indicates the kinds of internal and external cues to which the individual is most likely to respond; (b) suggests the types of stimuli that are most likely to produce behavioral change; (c) provides an understanding of the inter-, intra-, and impersonal environments in which a person is most likely to function efficiently; and (d) offers insight into what constitutes stress and predicts probable behavioral response to such stress, including maladjustments, should they occur.

"In the area of experience, the PAS offers a method for obtaining specific clues to personality structure and functioning. Thus, the PAS: (a) allows for direct inferences concerning an individual's primary response style: (b) suggests the quality of the compensations and modifications he has achieved in response to social and environmental pressures; (c) provides an understanding of personality development in terms of the interaction of primary structure, environmental pressures, and adaptive tendencies; (d) offers a procedure for evaluating the surface or contact personality developed over time; and (c) makes possible the assessment of the fundamental discrepancies between the surface personality and the underlying personality structure--discrepancies that typically produce tension, conflict and anxiety." Winne, John F. and John W. Gittinger. "*Journal of Community Psychology Monograph Supplement No. 38.* Rutland, Vermont: Clinical Psychology Publishing Co., Inc. 1973, p. 99.

Wow! Gottinger's description of PAS is specifically the needs & goals that the programmers had when they initiate programming the personality splits in tiny 18-month old children!

People associated with the following listed organizations may assist the Network to use their child for trauma-based programming. Children from families where one or both parents belong to the following organizations are often routinely sent off in early childhood for trauma-based mind control. We are now in 3rd and 4th generations of people who are programmed multiples. (And even into deeper generations in some Illuminati bloodlines.) What can't be covered here is the enormous secret drama involved in Moriah finding and implementing control over parents via prescribed or illegal drugs, fear, blackmail etc. so that they will assist them in getting the children programmed. If the motherly instinct is too strong, the mom may be prescribed tranquilizers, so that there is a stable house for the child's front alters to grow up in. Unreliable non-multiple fathers are "debriefed" by Illum. multiples who debrief & then erase their memories of what is happening to their children. Parents may have only a limited view.

ORGANIZATIONS PRACTICING TRAUMA-BASED MIND CONTROL (These groups form what insiders call "the Network." They are the backbone of what is known as the New World Order.)

Air Force Intelligence
Army Intelligence (such as CIC)
Atomic Energy Commission
Boeing
British Intelligence, incl. MI-6, MI-5, & the Tavistock Institute
Bureau of Narcotics
Bureau of Prisons
Catholic Church (incl. Jesuits)
Central Intelligence Agency CIA (aka Agency, Company, Langley)
Charismatic movement
Church of Satan
Church of Scientology
CIRVIS
Club 12 & Club 41
Country Music Industry
Defense Intelligence Agency, DIA
Department of Justice
Federal Bureau of Investigation, FBI
Freemasonry (esp. the Palladium Rite, 33° and above degrees,Quatuor Coronati Lodge, SRIA, and other Masonic affiliated organizations)
GEPAN
German Intelligence (Shaback)
GHG
Hollywood
The House of Saud in Saudi Arabia (which has un-programmed slaves too)
The Illuminati (also known as The Circle, Moriah, Moriah-conquering-wind, Gnostics, Luciferians etc.) at all levels is involved in trauma-based mind control as perpetrators & victims, incl. Frat. Saturni-Orden Fraternitas Saturni, THFS, FOGC, Golden Dawn, AntiC.Lucif. Dyn, etc.
INS
Ku Klux Klan (different KKK groups)
Mafia
Masons (see Freemasonry)
Modi'in
Mossad (Mossad le Aliyah Beth)
Mormon Church
NASA (National Space Admin.)
National Security Agency NSA
National Programs Office
National Science Foundation
Naval Intelligence (ONI)
Neo-nazi groups
Oddfellows
OTO (there are 4 groups)
P.4 (elite MI6 section)
Palo Mayombe
Process Church and its offshoot Chingun etc.
Professional Baseball, such as the L.A. Dodgers
Russian government & intelligence groups (GRU & KGB & KGB's successor, historically an early group known as Spets Byuro #1 called "Kamera" in Russian which means "Chamber" did drug/hypnosis mind control research. The Spetsburo was responsible for assassinations.)
Santaria
Satanic Hubs, Soc. of Dk. Lily, Chdrn of Lucifer (UK)
Temple of Power (previously known as Temple of Set)
Umbanda
US Army--esp. the Delta Forces & the 1st Earth Batt.
USAF
Veteren's Administration
Werewolf Order
some Witchcraft groups besides Satanism & Moriah

If the Illuminati's preferred plan is followed, it has 4 beginning foundational stages to prepare the victim for programming. Let's list these, and then afterwards explain in detail these first 4 stages.

One programmer named the stages 2, 3, 4 as stages 1, 2, 3, but the In utero preparations and preliminary ceremonies actually form an initial first stage.

The first stage is the initial ceremonies & the In Utero traumatization. The second stage is to have a premature birth, the third stage is to provide intense love for the child for the first 18 months by 2-3 selected Illuminati caregivers, and the fourth stage is to pull that love away and split the mind of the child permanently. Not every Illuminati child is born premature--but many are, because that is the preferred method for programming.

Foundation Step 1. PREPARATION OF THE CHILDREN by SPIRITUAL PREPARATIONS & IN UTERO TRAUMATIZATION --

The MOON CHILDREN

The preparation for someone to be programmed also concerns the ability of a person to be demonized. Generational satanic families are sold out to Satan, and their children belong to Satan in a way that non-generational children do not. Because of the generational curses, because of the genetic bent toward the occult, because of the generational demonic forces, the Illuminati children are very good candidates for Monarch programming. Part of the programming includes the layering in of demonic forces, and the participation in blood rituals in order to draw in the most powerful of demons. An indepth review about this important but controversial subject is in chapter 10.

The Moonchild rituals are the rituals to demonize a fetus. However, the demons that are invoked are not the small ones but very powerful ones. In working with victims of this programming, it is clear that high level demons were placed within these people at very early ages, many of them it is believed were demonized before they were born by rituals like the Moonchild rituals. Blood sacrifices and human sacrifices are always required for this level of magic.

Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) was a Satanist who was a 33rd degree Scottish Rite Freemason. He also was a leader in a number of other Masonic rites as well as an OTO leader, a chief in Stella Matutina, and a MI-6 (Br. overseas intelligence) agent. His writings have been important within 20th century Satanism and with black magicians. He wrote *Moonchild* which was first published in 1917. The idea of the Moonchild is that via black magic a perfect soul can be captured. The belief in reincarnation, which is prevalent among the Illuminati and Satanic groups, lends itself to the belief that souls compete for a particular embryo. On page 107-108 of *Moonchild* the idea is expressed, "To produce a man who should not be bound up in his heredity, and should have the environment which they desired for him." This perfect soul in a proper person is called Homunculus. The magical work upon which this is based is said to be derived from Bacon, Albertus Magnus and Paracelsus who were all reported in occult circles to have captured souls and placed them into brass statues.

The Hittites, the people of Asia Minor and Syria have long sought the ability to create a superman and a superwoman. The Illuminati's inside occult history places the Hittites in their ancestry. Clear back in 1917, long before superman appeared in comics and movies, Aleister Crowley was writing about a Superman.

The magical idea is to capture a soul from the 4th dimension. In the book *Moonchild*, the villa used to produce a Moonchild was called "The Butter-fly-Net". The Monarch Project then which is named after the Monarch butterfly is also an allusion to the Moonchild project where Butterflies are an allusion to souls (what Christians call demonic spirits). The actual rituals carried out to create a Moonchild are described in detail in three of Crowley's writings. A vague description of the rituals can be seen by reading the book *Moonchild*.

The ritual took place at a villa nicknamed The Butterfly Net. The villa was really an occult temple laid out in sacred geometrics. It had figures of satyrs, fauns, and nymphs. It had statues of Artemis. Lots of silver objects and crescents and 9-pointed stars were at the villa, because these objects all relate to the Moon in magic. The woman who was pregnant was surrounded by objects related to the moon. The moon's influence was repeatedly invoked. A small triangular silver altar to Artemis was used. There was a sacred spring where the woman was washed. The number 9 which is sacred to the moon was used along with its square 81. Prayers were made to Artemis, and there was the reenactment of the capture of Diana by Pan. The woman was coached to identify herself with what is known as Grandmother Moon (in the book she simply is called the Moon or Diana) by identifying her thoughts and actions with the deities one is wanting to invoke.

The creation of the Moonchildren within the Monarch Project involves high level magic by the circle of Illuminati black magicians involved with a particular individual's programming.

It should be noted that Grande Master and Grande Dame alters will understand demonology, but the sections (levels) of alter above them, are not informed. One of the biggest secrets kept from most of the slave's alters is that their System was demonized while a fetus. First, this would give religious front alters the information they need to get them on the right track towards healing, and it could also adversely affect the programming lies of some of the front alters who don't realize how premeditated all the trauma and torture is. The front alters of victims themselves remember the cover story that the moon children were produced via torture in the cages as little children.

The Illuminati have also planned that every one of the ten commandments of God will be violated in their favor with the child. They prefer the child to be born out of wedlock so that it is a bastard. This breaks God's commandment on adultery, and also gives them more leverage to destroy the child's self-esteem. This entire plan involves generational curses which are spoken and unspoken. During Illuminati ceremonies, Ceremonial pacts which concern having the child out of wedlock to mock God are made. While the Illuminati destroy any godly spiritual foundation, they are creating a solid rock hard foundation of "love" (adoration or idolatry) within the new born upon which they will build the programming. The second commandment is "Do not take the Lord's name in vain". In the Black Mass, the names of God are invoked to get spirits with blasphemous names such as Yahweh Elohim. Most parts of the little child will never even hear the Lord's name--he will only hear the name of his master, who will someday be presented to him as "God". The hand that rocks the cradle rules the world. The child is being bonded to his future programmers. Much later, great attention will be given to set up staged events to insure that the victim being programmed hates God.

IN UTERO TRAUMATIZATION

The formal Monarch Mind-Control project was developed from observations of high level Satanic families. These families had no qualms about the concept of traumatizing the fetus. Italian generational witchcraft is called the Ways of the Strega. These generational occult bloodlines, esp. in Tuscany and Naples, are very much into generational ancestor spirits. These were the ones that Aleister Crowley went to learn how to create Moon Children. Remember, that Italian and German generational Illuminati families were studied by the Italian fascists and the German Nazis to develop a scientific understanding of mind control. The Illuminati families in Germany were secretly and scientifically studied in the 1920s to determine what exactly was happening and how to systematically improve the Illuminati's control over the people they were already programming. Discipline and training has been lavished for centuries upon the children of these elite bloodlines. The contribution of the 20th century was the systematic collection and scientific study of all the various methodologies into one cohesive programming package. This research was begun on a large scale in 1940s, and has been systematically added to since then.

Families who wanted dissociative children learned that dissociative babies could be born if the child in the womb is tortured. Thin needles are inserted through the mother into the fetus to prick the preborn child. Mothers, who are pregnant with children to be programmed, are also severely traumatized during their pregnancy with a whole assortment of traumas, which simultaneously traumatizes the babies which they carry. For instance, the father may purposely abandon the pregnant mother in the middle of a forest, or blast the mother with loud frightening music, and then follow this up with love.

FOUNDATION STEP 2. The TRAUMA OF A PREMATURE BIRTH.

A premature birth is important because the naturally occurring events around a premature birth insure that the child is naturally traumatized.

Studies (such as Fenaroff, 1972) have found that only 7-8% of the live births were premature, but 25 to 40% (about a third) of all battered children were born premature. It appears that the satanic cult involvement with causing premature births may be reflected in this type of statistic.

Some of the Illuminati-induced premature births have made the newspapers, because the preemies set records for being born so small.

Premature labor is induced-the fact that a premature birth happens is not natural, but the traumas that occur to the preemie are. Specialized drugs (not just the exogenous oxytocins normally used to induce labor) are used on a mother to place her in a deeper trance than a twilight sleep. (Remember, that the underdeveloped liver & kidneys of the preemie make it difficult to naturally purge meds from the preemie's body.) The mother will begin the process of delivery at this time. However, the mother must be brought out of this deep sleep in order to push the baby through the birth canal. The baby is too weak to help with the birthing process. This is the hardest type of birth that there is, because the baby is not able to help the mother in the small ways that a full term baby would. The strain on the heart of the mother is extreme. The Illuminati have learned that a mother can usually give 2 or 3 preemie births like this before she risks death to try it again. If this type of birth is repeated too often the woman's heart will fail. This is why the Illuminati will have their breeders give 2 or 3 preemies for programming, and then have their breeders switch to full term babies which are used for sacrifice.

If we describe how breeders and babies are used we must speak in general terms, because each bloodline, each baby, each mother is a separate case. However, there are some patterns that should be pointed out. A bloodline will often want a female's first born male to be sacrificed to their belief system and the Lilith programming which is given the alters who function within the Kabballistic Tree of Life which is built in during Mengele's programming for the deeper sections (levels) of alters which are trained in Illuminati black magic. (This subject will be dealt with later.) The Illuminati breeders may be women who were preemies themselves. Sometimes they skip a generation with the trauma of a premature birth to get a mother with a good sound heart. Some of these breeders have excellent bloodlines, but during their own preemie birth their brains were damaged and they don't have the super-intelligence the Illuminati wants for programming. However, they still need to have had enough creativity to have allowed themselves to become a programmed multiple. When breeders are used by the Illuminati to obtain babies for programming, the Illuminati selects women who are themselves programmed multiples. They are used for breeders, because genetically they have genes for intelligence, even though they aren't brilliant. These women of lesser intelligence will only make the beginning Priestess level of the women and might obtain a rank in that level of High Priestess.

All these women, no matter their circumstances have been made to believe that offering their babies to Satan is the highest honor, so many of them do not have normal qualms about their job.

It is important to interject that the Illuminati are Luciferians, but worship Lucifer/Satan. Satanists are organizationally a separate set up, with a separate history, but both groups have many common practices, including child sacrifice.

(There is a science in how the Illuminati hides bloodlines, sometimes families are used as brooders for other important bloodlines. It will only be mentioned in passing here, because it is relevant to the selection process of how children are slated to be programmed. The Illuminati is fully aware of rare bloodtypes and other genetic properties that run in bloodlines, and breed individuals to get certain traits, and they also take into consideration that certain weaknesses such as weak hearts or AB- negative blood with no RH factor will call for special attention.)

The criteria for non-Illuminati cults for their breeders is much lower. Often these are the cults' leftovers. That is the difference between the good breeding of the Illuminati, and the degenerate thinking of the openly satanic groups. The Satanic groups which are organized into hubs, and some of the lesser occult groups like the KKK, have women which are kept under lock and key to serve as breeders. Breeders are kept from having outside talents that would help them function in the outside world. Some are not allowed to have driver's licenses and other basics.

How does the occult world manage to work things out within a hospital setting? The independent satanic cults may not use hospitals. I have worked with enough first hand information to be familiar with some of the cults which have home births attended by their own midwives. An example is the Satanic cult in Seminole & Garvin counties of Oklahoma where their section houses in the countryside have had unrecorded home births for years. First hand information also confirms that hospitals in Tacoma, Vancouver, Portland, and San Francisco are used by the Illuminati for premature births. By extension, it can be understood that many hospitals across the United States are now staffed with a large number of nurses and doctors who are loyal to the occult world (called by insiders the "Network") headed by the Illuminati. The preemies are attended to by satanic witches who are nurses, many of them multiples themselves. Further on in this book, we will cover how the Illuminati is turning out a great number of pediatricians via programming to insure control over the preliminary programming stages.

If the occult world wants a mother to see her preemie, the occult nurses on night shifts will quietly let cult mothers in to bond with their preemies. There is a lot of corruption that goes on unnoticed too. These doctors and nurses have taken lots of preemies for the Network to use for programming experiments. If the mother is a low income mother, the Freemasons will let them use their network of hospitals for free. Some of these premature children are described as dead and taken with the excuse that "they can't breathe". They then are used for programming experimentation.

The Illuminati, working in conjunction with other occult groups, schemes up methods by which they can get other people's babies. This gives them additional children to work on. By giving low income mothers free births at Masonic hospitals, the occult world can later contrive some reason for stripping a low income mother who is on drugs of her guardianship of her baby. They take these children, some of them drug babies, for programming uses.

The mothers of different animals are examples of how important touch is to any baby. A mother cow, or dog will nudge its offspring soon after it is born. They will also begin to teach the baby immediately after it is born. Studies have learned that most mammals lick their newborn, which has been observed to be critical for the healthy physical development of the baby animal. The Illuminati want the same development for their offspring. Research showed that rocking and stroking preemies helps them develop motor skills and respiratory functions. It takes the place of the licking animals give their offspring. The stroking even helps cardiac (heart) functions during the preemies sleep. Giving stimulus to a part of the brain will cause that part of the brain to grow.

Although the premature child cannot speak, it still craves attention. Even if it hurts, the child wants--even needs-- to be held. The child can be touched, and it will crave that touching even if it hurts. Already the mixing of love and pain is beginning. Their skin will be thin and sensitive to touch. It will hurt to be touched and preemies can even have their skin bruised by a sheet.

A premature birth will create a fighter spirit within the child. If the child does not have a strong instinct for survival, and does not fight to survive the premature birth, then it will not fight to survive during the tortures of the programming. By having a premature birth, the selection process has already started. Which child will be a fighter?

The preemie will be emotionally deprived of getting to suck on a real mother's breast, but will be fed with an eye-dropper or bottle. Often a transdisciplinary team will be created at the hospital to take charge of the preemie. They will run one of the various standard assessments, perhaps the Neonatal Behavioral Assessment Scale (NBAS) or the Bayley Scale of Infant Development. Objectives will then be developed for the short and the long term based on each infant's identified needs. The NBAS will look at a. the ability to shut out disturbing stimuli, b. responsiveness to auditory & visual stimuli, c. muscle tone & motor skills, d. irritability, e. capacity to cuddle, f. skin color, g. reflexes.

Every part of the preemie's body will be violated. A Catheter will likely be put in the little baby's bladder, because preemies' urinary tracts tend to close up, and bed sores must be avoided too. They will also usually be given I.V.s. This will give them more fluid to eliminate. This is healthy for the Preemie to keep their kidneys well. However, it also serves as part of the natural traumatic process.

Some will be given oxygen. The preemie will be adjusting to the light, temperature, sound, humidity and gravity of the new world it has been thrust into.

Their hearts will have problems (some of these like Mitro-valve prolapse may stay with the child for a life-time), and also often difficulties with their lungs.

Studies on preemies have shown that they tend to have a sober affect with few smiles, and then the smiles come only if their eyes are averted from who is in front of them. They are less social and they depend upon the primary person (usually a caretaker at the hospital) to give them assistance and encouragement to interact socially. (Als & Brazelton, 1981)

When the child is born, the Illuminati make sure that its first view is of one of the people who will help program it. Often this is a Grande Dame within the hierarchy, but it might also be a male programmer.

Over the following months, the programmer figure will repeatedly talk to the child in loving cooing tones. The most loving soothing words are all that is permitted at this stage. The child is being naturally bonded to the programmer. Mengele was the best of experts at this type of bonding. The programmers talk to each other in terms like, "this child is a piece of clay." They view themselves as the potters to that clay.

When the Preemie is born it copes with the pain by being dissociative. The soothing voice of the programmer is said and heard in hypnotic tones. The hypnotic voice of the programmer is taking advantage of the dissociative trance-like state of the child in pain. The hypnotic voice is grooming the child from the womb. Hypnotic cues are placed into the child's mind even at this young age. Hypnotic cues use all the senses. In reality, the programmers are even hypnotizing the little babies. Soon the preemie's eyes will open when the preemie senses the presence of the programmer in the room. The preemie's eyes will follow the programmer around as he or she walks around the child's room. The child's eyes are following the voice of the programmer.

Ronald Shor, a respected researcher into hypnotism, wrote in the *Amer. Journal of Psychotherapy*, Vol. 13, 1959, pp. 582-602, "Only in the fetus can one conceive of an ideally pure trance state, that is, a state in which there is a total absence of a functioning reality-orientation. In the developing organism in utero the first momentary experiences exist concretely, independent of any structured background of experience. The only organization that can take place at first is that which is genetically given. But except for this natural, ontogenetically undeveloped state there is always some degree of structuring." In other words, if you want to hypnotize someone, the ideal is when they are a fetus, because the baby soon begins to get a grasp of reality--that reality gives the child something to compare with what the hypnotist is wanting to program in. Notice, also the awareness on Shor's part, that there is some structuring of the mind done naturally via genetics. This again underscores the importance of why the programmers like multi-generational victims--because they pass via genetics some of the mental structuring needed for the smooth programming of the next generation.

By looking into the preemie's eyes and talking, the programmer begins to teach the baby. The preemie learns that its primary caretaker is its controller. The controller controls its access to its bottle and everything else in its life. The Illuminati are teaching the child to view its controller as God from the first second it is born. They want the child to worship the programmer. The programmer is literally saving the preemie's life. By talking & cooing to the child, the programmer's voice becomes more real to the child than itself.

The controllers begin stretching the mind of the child as soon as it is born. The two or three people who control the early baby's life begin teaching it with hypnotic voices as soon as it is born. Subliminal tapes are used to teach the baby immediately. The goal is to teach the child to read and speak much earlier than other children. In the Monarch Program's controlled setting, children who can read at six months, can still be programmed for social skills. In an uncontrolled setting, children taught this earlier tend to have their intellectual skills outstrip their social skills, and they develop serious problems with their peers and schools.

Children can be hypnotized easier than adults, but it has to be done differently, especially if the child is preverbal. Rubbing the child, stroking its head, and patting the child help soothe the child into relaxing. The hypnotist must not make rapid tonal changes in his voice. These are reasons why gentle Illuminati women programmers are such an asset at this stage.

The newborn child is taught obedience. It is allowed to cry to develop its lungs, but at some early point it is taught not to cry. Tape is placed over the child's mouth, and it is told over and over "no" with the index finger gesturing. They get approval if they don't cry. This type of programming is called behavior modification, and will be further covered in a later chapter. The baby is rigidly taught total obedience.

In review of step 3, one tried and often used technique is to have the baby born premature. The baby must undergo lots of trauma, and must learn to be a fighter to survive. Babies have been taken by induced labor or C-Section at premature ages intentionally to insure that the baby will suffer trauma. When the premature baby leaves the comfort of the womb it experiences trauma. By taking the baby prematurely, it also gives the programmers an advanced start on the programming.

FOUNDATION STEP 3. LOVE BOMBING THE CHILD UNTIL ABOUT 18 MONTHS.

The third stage is smothering the child in love. The love is given so that it can be taken away in the fourth stage. Unless love is given so that it can be taken away, there is no trauma. Illuminati children are never spanked in the first year and a half. They are very lovingly controlled. (This pattern of smothering new converts in love called "love bombing" in preparation for removing that love and acceptance to get obedience is done by some cults to new members too.) The Illuminati child learns about their body. Their bowels are allowed to function properly and they are kept meticulously clean. They must be taught to appreciate their body, before the trauma of stripping them of everything they value. Dissociation does not have to be taught to the child, because they have a genetic leaning toward it, and the premature birth has taught them to dissociate. All in all, the child has been allowed only to build a relationship with its programmer(s). The child has learned to trust, obey and adore the programmer during the first 18 months of its life. Its mind is lining up with hypnotic suggestions, cues, and is being obedient.

FOUNDATION STEP 4. FRACTURING the MIND

The fourth stage is built upon the foundation of dissociation created in the first & second stages, and the love created in the third stage. (The demonology of the first step also helps pull in demons associated with programming, tunneling in the mind, and multiplicity, which are used in the fourth foundational step.) Often in the fourth step, the child's mind will fracture along the same dissociation fracture lines that the trauma of the premature birth created.

If the child is not a premature baby, it will need some additional help to want to dissociate. The child can have its senses overwhelmed repeatedly to the point that it learns to react to its surroundings by what appears on the outside as a numbness, and mentally is simply dissociation. Everything imaginable can be used to overwhelm the caged little child's senses and create dissociation. Rotten faul odors of the child's excrement, of amnonia, and rotten food while it huddles in its cage will overwhelm the child's sense of smell. Being fed blood overwhelms the sense of taste. The chanting of the Programmers dressed in Satanic garb, banging noises, rock music and the electric hum, and ultrasonic stimulation overwhelms the child's sense of hearing. The child's natural developing sense of shapes is taken advantage of by spinning the child and making it feel like it is going to fall. The child will also be deprived of sleep and drugged. Together all this will provide the dissociative base for splitting the core.

The fourth stage is to strip the child of everything nice and lovely in the world. The child is caged and tormented by electric shock. The child's senses will be overloaded and they will become numb. Eyewitnesses have described these hundreds of numbed children as "zombies". This stage and the programming put in after the foundational dissociation is created will form the next chapter.

In the fourth step, the child is starved, cold and naked. When they finally see their beloved master or beloved adult caretaker appear after suffering from 42 to 72 hours, they are **excited** and they dissociate the pain of the previous hours of deprivation. Help appears to be on the scene. At that point the programmer/beloved adult shows his/her most vicious side, and the child in order to deal with how this loving caretaker has not only rejected them but is now hurting them dissociates along the same fractures of dissociation created by the trauma of the premature birth. The details of how the mind is split will be dealt with further in the next chapter.

In review of steps 3 and 4, part of the programming is to have the primary initial abuser bond with the child. A close loving bond is needed between a child and the initial abuser so that a clean split is created when the initial mind-splitting trauma is carried out. The clean split occurs when the child is confronted with two irreconcilable opposing viewpoints of someone who is important to them. The child can't reconcile the two extremely opposite views of the same person, one being a loving caretaker, and the other being the worst kind of abuser. The person the child trusted the most is the person the child fears the most.

Some professional therapists have come to realize that this is how the core is split. Jody Lienhart, a multiple herself, in her Ph.d dissertation correctly identifies the double bind of having two extremely opposite views of the most important person in the child's life as the fundamental splitting mechanism. She writes in her 1983 dissertation on p.6-7, "Implicit in each of the studies of childhood trauma is the pervasive nature of paradoxical communication. Frequently, this double bind communication style appears during the formative, preverbal stages of childhood in which the interpretation of these messages is confused. This results in insufficient experimental learning which would allow appropriate translation of the confused messages...

"This study presents the theoretical assumption that multiple personality is developed through early childhood state-dependent learning. [That means that learning is linked to a state of mind.] Furthermore, it is hypothesized that this learning occurs as a result of the hypnoidal effects of childhood trauma such as abuse and sexual molestation. The child, unable to translate the paradoxical nature of the messages he receives, fragments into a trance state. Furthermore, it is suggested that memories incorporated during each of these hypnoidal experiences are similar to knowledge acquired during state-dependent learning.

Lienhart used her own memories as the basis for the type of trauma that suggests in her dissertation could create MPD. That trauma for her was her uncle forcing his penis into her mouth and almost choking her. The child is not in a position to flee, so the mind dissociates. She happened to have experienced a common trauma used to split a core.

In order to split the core, the mind has to be trained to dissociate. The ability to dissociate is obtained by being genetically bred from dissociative parents, by having a premature birth/traumatic birth if possible, and by the conditioning done at the original programming center (between 18 mo. & 3 years) where intermittent electric shock along with the all the senses being overwhelmed, along with sleep deprivation and drugs create a dissociative base to split the core.

The initial sadistic abuse to split the mind, is called "severing the core." Each person's original mind is like an open computer. The original computerlike mind in order to continue working, when confronted with overwhelming trauma, splits a part of the mind off and walls it up with amnesia barriers. From this area further splits can be made.

One of the major technical feats to make computers useable was to figure out how to be able to wall off and protect memory in the computer from being accessed and used. When they succeeded in engineering isolated memory the other problems were minor.

When someone has been traumatized from the fetus on up--there is no single core such as therapists usually look for. The Core for the programmers is the unsplit essence of the mind which drives or provides energy for the System. This Core is not an alter, but is an essence that the programmers hide.

The Core is not an alter. The programmers do not touch the core in the fashion they do alters. They hide the core. Part of the drama that is carried out during the entire victim's life, is that their mind tries to protect this untouched core essense of their mind from being touched. If they think anyone, the therapist or the abuser are going to tamper with it, the mind and its parts will protect that core. As strange as it may seem, when a therapist talks about integration, they often scare the victim's mind that the integrity of the core and its innocence will be violated, and the victim's mind does everything it can to avoid contaminating the integrity of their core, i.e. they sabotage therapy and return to their programmer who understands their safety issue.

Initially, in the 1940s, the Illuminati researched what would happen if the Core was allowed to meet up with the alters, and they discovered that the brain's essence or energy will work to pull the mind back together. Therefore, the Core is separated and hidden from all the alters. In Illuminati systems, it is usually placed in the middle of its first splits, which are also sources of energy and which are well hidden. They are dehumanized parts which function as gems, which are programmed as in the Alice In Wonderland story to change shape and color if they are approached, which rarely happens. These parts will be discussed in other chapters including how a system is structured. A dissociative carousel is also attached around the core. After the core is hidden, the rest of the alters will be programmed not to look for the energy/synthesizing part of the system.

The real "core" or primal part of the unconscious will have an adult representative of it in a Monarch System. This primal part has a Toddler switch upon which all the programming is built. An event(s) in the child's life is used to build the programming upon. The Illuminati know about the various base programs and the foundational traumas, and some of this is kept secret from programmers who come from front organizations of the Illuminati.

There are a number of parts which will be called "cores"--simply because they were early parts, but there is no intact single person who represents all of the mind. All that is left are fragments of the mind, each segment walled off with amnesia. The alters who perceive themselves to be "cores" are alters who have been programmed to think they are the core alter. The mind has a way of knowing the truth, and these alters may realize that their programmed story line is suspicious, but they won't know what is "fishy" about it, so they tend to be in denial about their identity. These substitute or mock cores will often be in denial that they are even MPD.

In some cases, where Scripture was used to program with, the core was told that it would be "blessed by multiplying as the seeds in the stars of heaven and the sands of the sea" if "thou hast obeyed my voice", which is misuse of Gen. 22:17-18. Alters which represent the "sands of the sea" pop up if an alter tries to get to the core. (See chapter 10k about scriptures used in programming.)

THE INITIAL SPLITS

The initial part of a person's mind before splitting occurs is called the core. Theoretically, the core makes parts to protect itself. The initial splitting is called "splitting the core" and there is an art or science in knowing how to split a core.

However, I disagree with the standard "core model". I believe it is more accurate to say that the initial splits are stronger because they somehow are integrated closer to the mind. Later splits made from later splits, are in a sense less connected to the full mind. During a torture session, the initial splits are always the strongest. So when they torture someone and get 20 personality splits, they will use perhaps the first 13 and discard the rest or use them for single task jobs. Discard areas are created in the mind---these are variously called concentration camps, garbage dumps, or whatever. The victim's mind is trained to create these dumping grounds for the splits that the programmers don't want to use. As the programming got refined, so did the methods for discarding unwanted splits.

In children, who receive programming at a very early age, the initial splits may be done in the womb. If the fourth step is carried out in a timely fashion at 18 months after the in utero trauma and a premature birth, then during the first 18 months the mind will never have a chance to pull itself together. If however, the fourth step is not done at around 18 months and no further trauma is maintained, the child's mind will pull back together by the age of two and a half.

The initial splits are the most energetic and the easiest to manipulate. In Illuminati systems these early parts are dehumanized into thinking they are gems and crystals. These gems and crystals then "power" the entire mind-control system that is programmed over the following years into the child's mind. The gems are not perceived as alters, so the proxy core wouldn't integrate with what is perceived as an inanimate object. The proxy core is allowed to want to move toward health with a therapist, it is programmed to move toward healing, but to lead the therapist away from the true core. She or he is programmed to believe it is the true core. The real core & its first splits, which are the gems, are placed hypnotically at the mind's deepest levels--in an area of the mind few therapists ever search.

As outlined above, other initial splits are led to believe they are cores. Part of the reason there is a illusive search on the part of therapists for a core, is that people have not accepted the reality that there is no one person (personality) in charge of a Monarch System who can simply decide to quit coping with life by stopping their MPD. Many therapists want to believe that some person is the "real" person and the rest are simply subordinate alters created to handle the core's trauma. I believe this is an inadequate understanding of what is happening. The elements that make up who a person is--i.e. personality elements such as memories, are fractured. These fragments have in turn often been built up into full-blown personalities with all the elements of full-blown personalities. There is no "real" person, just as if you smash a mirror into a thousand pieces, there is no single piece that is the "real" original mirror but rather simply fragments that can in turn operate as mirrors. However, there is still a primal self.

Early splits are led to believe they are the core. The cult will hide the initial splits beyond recognition. Some of the third wave of splits will be created into what are named Silence alters. They are trained never to talk. (At least some Illuminati alter systems call these early splits "Silences".) These early splits are then hidden and used to blackmail other alters who were created later. The other alters, who are formed after the Silences (who are pre-language alters) are convinced that if they don't behave the Silences will have something drastic happen to them. Some of the pre-talking Silence alters are then placed in places such as Moloch's Temple to keep as hostages. Alters are created down the road to guard the Silences. They guard in the full sense, controlling the Silences, and any access to the Silences. Since the Silences are early splits they are more important for the full integration of the mind, which the programmers want to insure doesn't happen.

Probes are pushed into the brain at the base of the skull, in a very precise and methodical way during the initial core trauma. This is done to create guards for the carousel. For more about the early primal splits see the section on Carousel in Chapt. 7 on structuring, and the next chapter on how the trauma is done.

Because the Programmers will tamper with the alters so much to get the satanic alters and the special purpose alters which they want, they need to use some of the first splits as front alters. They need strong front alters who have a sense of who they are. If they waited until later to get front alters, the alters wouldn't be as strong and would have already lost their identity. The 3rd wave of alters created often will in turn be split to provide alters to build the front section of a System.

The front "cores" which are decoys will be set up with opposites, one alter will love the programmer the other will hate him. One alter will trust the programmer, the other will fear the programmer. Therapists spend all their time trying to reconcile this conflict which is placed out front as a decoy to keep them busy. Meanwhile, the gems along with the rest of the loyal cult alters will have the ability to create whatever is needed within the System. The entire system of alters is always shifting and many of the true alters are in hiding. The person is made to feel like he or she has been sliced like meat much as a bolagna slicer makes slices of bologni. This layering program is very dangerous and severe. Overlays of all kinds, demonic, hypnotic illusion, etc. are layered over real alters so that even the identity of what is a real alter is hidden. The point is that decoys which keep therapists busy are created, while the entire structure shifts and rearranges and restructures itself to keep itself hidden.

Often the Illuminati encourages early front splits to learn about Christ and legitimately accept Him at a very early age. This acceptance will be used as the basis of the trauma to create strong satanic alters. Just as the handler will bond with the child to split it, the handler will allow some early parts of the System to bond with Christ in order to enhance the trauma that "God" will do to the System. This also allows the handlers to have a balancing point. Without the full range of capabilities within a Slave alter system-- a dangerous imbalance toward evil could propel the slave into situations where they don't have the ability to succeed. In many ways, the slave's world becomes a microcosm of the real world, having a mixture of adult and child alters, Christian, secular, and Satanic alters.

Another thing which happens with the first splits is the creation of mirror images. Some of the time, in the early splitting procedures, the child creates extra splits. In the early stages, these strong extra splits are made into mirror images of regular alters. Some of these mirror images are known to be placed into the mind before any splitting occurs.

As long as the victim's dissociation exists, the potential for mischief exists for the programmers. This is why integration can be a positive goal for a Monarch multiple if the deprogrammer knows what he is doing. After suffering decades of the most horrible traumas imaginable and the most severe abuse as slaves, most slaves have minds which are habitually dissociative. These older minds of slaves require a miracle to cease remaining permanently dissociative. It does take a great deal of brain energy to maintain the amnesic walls, and the minds of people in their 70's and 80's will stop maintaining those walls and these elderly will begin to remember. But by that time, they are considered senile, and their memories are discontented.

FURTHER SELECTION CONSIDERATIONS

The Illuminati have their own criteria as to who they select. The preference is that they be blue-eyed blond Caucasians and not to have obvious physical defects or visible scars. The Freemasons also reject physically defective candidates. After they test the child for its intelligence, creativity, and dissociative skills, they will bring the children before the Grande Druid Council.

Formal approval of girls and boys into the Illuminati is done at a presentation by the Queen Mother and the Grand Druid Council at age three. However, the children have already been inspected by the Queen Mother before a formal physical inspection. Sexuality is an important issue for the physical part of the Illuminati inspection of little boys and girls. This is part of the physical criteria, as well as the physical health of the child. Creativity, strength, bloodlines, and intelligence will also be taken into consideration.

The standard Trauma-based mind control which produces programmed multiple personalities is started on children before the age of 6. After the age of 6, it is difficult to follow this type of MPD/DID programming. However, this does not mean people aren't programmed after age 6. Trauma-based personality splits remain isolated in the mind better than hypnotic-based personality splits, but most people can be hypnotized to create alter personalities. Some SRA survivors have programming but don't have alter systems. A rare few do not have systems, but only a few dissociative states, such as a night self, and a day self. A wide variety of approaches have been experimented and operationally carried out. This book will concentrate more on the Monarch Systems which are created by programming infants. This is usually the most devastating, traumatic, controlling, effective approach.

The Catholic Church has long said give

me a child by the age of 5 and they will be Catholic. The Catholic Church is one of the largest parts of the network that carries out Monarch Mind Control. It is a fact, that if the Jesuits can place in their programming--what they call the "Keys to the Kingdom" Monarch Mind Control within a child, they will control his destiny.

One Jesuit priest is on record as stating that there is nothing he can't make anyone do with torture. The Jesuits developed torture to a fine art in the inquisition. Imagine the expertise they have brought to the Monarch Program which begins torturing children at 18 months onward with every sophisticated torture device invented. If the Jesuits brag that they can convince adults to do anything via torture, what about baby children?

While the Monarch programming is done with children, one variety of it is done on adults. Adults who are selected are also chosen on the basis of the ability to disassociate and their availability. There are certain tests given by the branches of the military which identify people who disassociate well. Their "Cumes" --that is their accumulated school records are also examined. This type of person may be singled out and sent to get programming. Some of these persons end up in the various intelligence agencies, where they are trapped for their entire lifetimes. Some of the victims of the programming are war vets, Americans who were POWs, people in mental hospitals, people who just happened to work for Illuminati connected companies, and people going into acting. The intelligence agencies often begin mind-control on adult individuals when an individual joins their organization. If an intelligence or military group can exercise a high level of external control over an individual, they may not need the level of programming that some of the occult cults and the Illuminati need. The Illuminati place their membership among the world at large, and with the requirement that centuries of secrecy be maintained. This secrecy can only be maintained by insuring that strong early programming is done to create fail safe systems with large number of dark alters and heavy layers of demonic forces.

(Many will scoff at the concept of demons being layered in, but whatever name one wants to call these forces, they are being layered in, and exert a powerful force behind the programming. The programming will break down if memories are recovered, so demonic imps are layered in to protect the memories from coming out. The entire phenomena will be gone into great detail and explained in rational terms in the course of this book. No matter how a therapist explains these demonic imps, they need to be dealt with if the memories are not to be protected. There are various methods for controlled memory retrieval--journaling, hypnosis, safe rooms with screens, deliverance etc. which we will not go into at this point, because we are providing the recipe, not the solution.

While most Illuminati victims are in-house from their own occult bloodlines, a certain renegade group of Illuminati programmers have proved to the Illuminati that they can adequately program non-Illuminati children. I am familiar with some of the people involved in this, but will not mention names.

What we have covered in this chapter is how premeditated, deliberate, and precise the plans are by the programmers for the lives of these Mind-controlled slaves. The programming places their lives on very rigid scripts. There are different uses for mind-controlled slaves. What applies to one slave may not apply to another one. Not everyone is a good candidate for programming. Sometimes only part of a family will be programmed. Whatever the particulars about the programming, it will be sufficient to place the individual's mind totally under the control of the handler. We have also given the details of how the candidates are selected, tested, prepared and the programming initiated.

●The next chapter covers more on how trauma & fear serve as the base of mind-control.

TRAUMA

the Cremation of Care 1982

Rod McManigal Director

COVER OF THE PROGRAM OF RITUAL AT BOHEMIAN GROVE IN WHICH A CHILD IS SACRIFICED & A SNUFF FILM IS MADE OF IT.

CHAPTER 2. SCIENCE NO. 2-- THE TRAUMATIZATION & TORTURE OF THE VICTIM

The basis for the success of the Monarch mind-control programming is that different personalities or personality parts called alters can be created who do not know each other, but who can take the body at different times.

The amnesia walls that are built by traumas, form a protective shield of secrecy that protects the abusers from being found out, and prevents the front personalities who hold the body much of the time to know how their System of alters is being used. The shield of secrecy allows cult members to live and work around other people and remain totally undetected. The front alters can be wonderful Christians, and the deeper alters can be the worst type of Satanic monster imaginable--a Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect.

A great deal is at stake in maintaining the secrecy of the intelligence agency or the occult group which is controlling the slave. The success rate of this type of programming is high but when it fails, the failures are discarded through death.

Each trauma and torture serves a purpose. A great deal of experimentation and research went into finding out what can and can't be done. Charts were made showing how much torture a given body weight at a given age can handle without death. Now this is why the Nazis did all those strange concentration camp experiments, where they tested how quickly people would freeze or die from various traumas. It was for mind control!

The abusers are very specific and scientific in their torture. A lab technician with a clip board walks around monitoring the torture for the children when they receive their initial traumas. Heart monitors are closely watched. Still many children died from the programming. The programmers learned that when a child rolled up in a fetal position it had given up the will to live. They learned to time how fast this would occur to get an idea how far to push the child. Parents in eastern United States were taken to Harvard University for training to teach them how much trauma they could give their children at home before they would die. After the children got back from their initial programming they were to receive daily traumas to keep them dissociative.

THE INITIAL SPLITS & INITIAL PROGRAMMING DONE AT CHINA LAKE, CA.

The primary or initial torture for many children in western U.S. was done at China Lake which officially has gone under the designations Naval Ordinance Test Station (pronounced in short as NOTS), Naval Weapons Center, NWC, Ridgecrest (the town nearby), and Inyo-kern (the area). the address of Nimitz Hospital is the code "232 Naval Air Weapons Station". The base was set up to test "new weapons". Evidently, the Navy decided that mind controlled people were an important weapon to test. Most of the "new weapons" created at China Lake were for the most part human robots turned out in large numbers. The Monarch Mind Control was carried out in large airplane hangers on the base which have been able to house thousands of tiny cages just large enough for human babies. Lots of 1,000 babies was a small batch. According to people who worked in the hangers helping program, many batches were 2,000 or 3,000 babies.

Many survivors remember the thousands of cages housing little children from ceiling to floor. The cages were hot wired (electrified on the ceiling, bottom and sides) so that the children who are locked inside can receive horrific electric shocks to their bodies to groom their minds to split into multiple personalities. These cages are called Woodpecker Grids. The victim sees a flash of light when high D.C. voltage is applied. Later, this flash of light is used with hypnotic induction to make the person think they are going into another dimension when they are blasted with high voltage. In the Peter Pan programming, the Programmers tell the slaves that this is "riding the light." One of the popular traumas after the small child has endured the Woodpecker Grid cages for days is to rape it. The rape is intentionally brutal so that it will be as traumatic as possible.

Many of the technical people on the base are civilians. This is in part because part of the research involves mind-control, and Illuminati civilian mind-control experts have come and gone from the base. The California Institute of Technology at Pasadena is intimately connected to China Lake's research (and by the way to the Illuminati). Also much of the work at the facility is for the intelligence agencies and not the military. Intelligence assets are often civilians.

One of the things developed in the California Universities and then implemented at China Lake was color programming, which will be covered later in this book. Red and green were discovered to be the most visible colors for programming. Various colored flashing lights were used in programming at NOTS. Survivors of the programming all remember flashing lights. The use of flashing lights has been introduced into American culture by the CIA. If a person goes into bars and places where bands play, you will notice multi-colored lights flashing. The flashing lights create disassociation, especially in people who are programmed.

HOW CHILDREN ARE TRANSPORTED TO A MAJOR PROGRAMMING SITE

A list of major programming centers is given in an appendix, along with each site's programming specialties. In this chapter, an example of just one of the bases used for early programming is given, the large and very secret China Lake facility in California near Death Valley.

The children are brought into the China Lake NWC (aka NOTS) base by trains, planes and cars. A number of the small airfields which fly these children into China Lake have been identified. One, which is no longer in use for moving children, was a private air strip at Sheridan, OR which was beside a large lumber mill. The lumber mill had an agreement to secretly house the children who had their mouths tapped. Neighbors in the area were bought off, and warned that if they talked they would be in trouble for broaching national security. The area has lots of mills joined by train tracks, which were used to shuttle the children around. Tied into this network was a Catholic Monastery which lies between Sheridan and McMinnville, close to the rail network. The Union Train Station in Portland, OR has underground tunnels where children were temporarily warehoused in cages before continuing on their journey.

The Jesuits were active in this part of the child procurement. Catholic adoption agencies (which are many), nuns who get pregnant, third world parents, and parents who will sell their children were all sources of children for programming. When one thinks about how many corrupt people there are and how many towns and cities are on the West Coast, and how many children are produced by Satanic breeders, illegal aliens and other parents who'd rather have the money than children and the reader begins to realize how procuring batches of 1,000 or 2,000 children was no problem for the Illuminati working through intelligence agencies such as the CIA, NIS, DIA, FBI, and FEMA. The Finders, a joint CIA/FBI group procured children for the Network for years. Some of the children needed for programming are to be used for sacrifices to traumatize those being programmed. (The names of some of the people who work at procuring children for programming/sacrifice have been released in Fritz Springmeier's monthly newsletter.)

The secret FEMA airstrip at Santa Rosa has planes landing and leaving all night. Some of these flights go east and then land at the secret 1800-square-mile China Lake Naval Research Base, and are believed to carry children for programming. This airstrip is called the SANTA ROSA AIR CENTER. When I tried to get FAA information on this airstrip they played stupid as if it didn't exist, yet it is in operation.

Near Santa Rosa is the Bohemian Grove. Southwest of Santa Rosa is this air center which is not used by the public. This airport was recently used by private pilots as a F.B.O. It was built during W.W. II as a training base for P-32 pilots, and deactivated in 1952. After the war, it was leased to private companies (such as the CIA). The paved areas are 4' of concrete and can land the heaviest planes in use. There are no buildings over two stories in the entire area, and no control tower. The FBI have a contingent in the Federal building downtown Santa Rosa, and "FEMA" has a radio station at the airport. The Army reserve also has some buildings in the area. However, there is some highly secret activity going on underground at the airport. 6-7 small planes sneak out of the closed base a day, and for a base of its description that is closed, that is very interesting. The planes take off in the evening and do not turn their lights on until hundreds of feet into the air. *The Press Democrat* of Santa Rosa ran an article on Thurs., Apr. 22, 1993 about the Federal government selling 70 acres of property just to the east of the airport. However, when one reads closely, the land is going to be offered to a host of Federal agencies. The property was "being used by FEMA" (707-542-4534). If one thinks about it, it is unlikely that the radio station is a FEMA transmitter station. The close vicinity of this secret activity to the elite's Bohemian Grove makes this an interesting site for study.

The airport used for the Bohemian Grove visitors is north of Santa Rosa on hwy 101, the Sonoma County Airport. United Express and American Eagle (which flies to and from San Jose) fly into this airport, which has a control tower. In 1964, the airport was reported to have also carried about 600 military operations (either a takeoff or landing) per year. It was around this time that the Federal government made an agreement with Sonoma County Airport to help pay for the runway to be extended, the runway to be strengthened and the airport to be upgraded in numerous ways. The elite from around the world fly into here to go to the Bohemian Grove, which is in the Monte Rio area. Monarch slaves are regularly abused at the Grove for the entertainment of Bohemian Grove members in kinky sex theme rooms, such as the dark room and the necrophilia room. Secret NWO order business is conducted in the small, dark lounge with a wooden sign naming it U.N.DERGROUND. Slaves are hunted in the woods for sport, and occult rituals, including infant sacrifice, are held outdoors in the Grove.

These airfields are described in detail so that the reader can begin to catch on to the network of small planes and airfields the Monarch system uses to transport children.

The children are trickled in from various collection points to China Lake. Monarch slaves, many of them children themselves are used in this extensive child procurement system. Children are also used to entice and kidnap other children. Teenage slaves are used to escort and transport little children on trains, buses, and planes. The triangular-shaped airfield at China Lake has traditionally begun very early in the morning with lots of activity. The night flights from FEMA's Santa Rosa airfield being an example of incoming flights. The airfield connects to the main base area via Sandquist Road. Children are landed at this field, while others are driven through the gates guarded by marines, and others come through via the east-west rail line. The fact that children are driving through the gates is not alarming because inside the military perimeter is a high school, a junior high school and 3 other schools. Some of the adults of the children being programmed stay in military barracks (Quonset huts and one story buildings) while they wait.

A male Monarch victim remembers a large hanger building at China Lake with a concrete floor and row after row of cages suspended from the ceiling filling the large building. One of the Programmers was dressed similar to a Catholic Priest. The electric current that ran to the cages made a hum, like an electric fence. There was a marble slab that served as an altar where black-hooded robed people would take a bone handled knife and sacrifice little children in front of the other children in the cages. (Memories from other survivors about the place will be mentioned later.)

MORE ABOUT THE SECRET CHINA LAKE BASE

Charles Manson, a programmed Monarch slave who received initial programming at China Lake, lived with his cult only 45 miles north-west of China Lake at the remote Myers and Barker ranches. Scotty's Castle in Death Valley, Bakersfield, Edwards AFB, and Papa Ludo's Store & Tavern (with its secret underground programming center) are all in the vicinity of China Lake and have all been programming sites too. Old route 66 went by China Lake, which now is just off U.S. 395. The area's tavern has been named the Hideaway. The building was low, away from the highway, with a large unlit parking lot. Only people who knew how to enter it by the obscure entrance on the side could get in. The Hideaway Tavern has been a local hangout for the CIA men in China Lake. It has served them excellent steaks. The base headquarters is known as the White House, and it looks somewhat like a yacht clubhouse. Northwest of the airfield, at 39-64 & 4-33 E on the quad maps, the government has built a large magical seal of Solomon (hexagram) with each leg 1/4 mile long on the ground.

What was it like for a victim in the early 1950's in a NOTS area programming center? One of the buildings in the area used for programming was described as having a flat roof and a tan exterior. A fence ran around the building. Inside the front door was an old oak reception type desk. A series of 3 doors connected by tunnels were gone through. One entered into a hallway, and then took a left into the programming room. Tunnels connected the different hallways. The programming room was painted a good dissociative color white. In the middle of the room, cages were suspended with chimps. The examining table was metal, which was cold for the victim, but easy to wash for the attendants. The victim was placed in cages and could observe white dots light up in different dot patterns over the door on a panel of lights. The low level shocks to the victim were coordinated with the dot patterns. (Some of this relates to domino programming.) An attendant monitored the entire scenario on charts, while the child was repeatedly traumatized with low-voltage shocks. Needles were poked in the child, the room was made dark and then lit. Voices said, "Love me, love me not." This was part of the love me, don't love me part of programming. "Good girls ride the silvery wings." This was to build the ability to condition trancing by the victim upon electro-shock.

German & British scientists/mind control programmers came to NOTS after W.W. II, including Joseph Mengele (known as Dr. Green, or Greenbaum, and other pseudonyms). The Illuminati's Dr. Black worked out of China Lake also. Dr. White (Dr. Ewin Cameron) worked on the east coast, although he did fly in every so often to the west coast to meet with the other top programmers. Dr. Blue was another of the important leading Illuminati programmers. These top programmers supervised other lesser programmers. If something went wrong, they might fly a child from a programming location to a specialist to get it special help for its programming.

The men and women of the Illuminati helped the top programmers out. The Grande Mothers, and the Grande Masters of the Illuminati participated in helping with the programming. As a child of the Illuminati progressed through its programming, three people had oversight over its programming: its Grande Mother, its Grande Dame, and the Programmer. The Illuminati functions off a chain of command similar to the military. (In fact a big secret is that Satan's realm actually served as the model for military and political structures.)

As a child begins its programming, it is monitored in a fashion similar to hospitals where charts are filled and then these charts are filed. Tests and evaluations are done regularly. Goals are set which are six month programming goals. These will say in effect, we need to accomplish this by doing a, b, c, d in the next six months. This is somewhat similar to an I.E.P. (individual education plan) which the special-ed teachers in Oregon set up for each student. At some point, the strong points and the weaknesses of the child will be identified, and then a decision will be made as to what occupation the Illuminati want to program the person to become. If the young boy is aggressive and has sadistic tendencies, the Illuminati call it "a war monger" and label its chart "This child will be a general." Then they proceed to program it to become a general. Nurses, teachers, and child physicians must be programmed with a gentleness to their System. Other occupations, such as lawyers can be allowed to be ruthless. Many of the children have religious fronts labelled for their programming, and a very popular occupation for Illuminati men is to become clergymen. Religious leaders make up the majority of fathers of Monarch survivors that have sought help. Most Illuminati victims have parents who are important religious leaders, many of them top clergymen in the established churches.

As the reader might expect, some tortures require that the child victim's temperature, respiration, pulse and blood pressure be closely monitored.

WHAT TRAUMA DOES

In recent times, the military and the science of psychology is paying attention to what they call PTSD (post-traumatic stress disorder). PTSD are the psycho-pathic debilitating effects of trauma and chronic nature of reactions to trauma. Intrusive flashbacks of the trauma will occur if the mind doesn't protect itself from reminders of the trauma. The mind creates avoidance patterns to protect itself from thinking about the trauma. Panic symptoms occur when the person undergoes physiological arousal to traumatic cues.

A trauma will create a certain "shatteredness" within the victim. The victim will develop life assumptions about being vulnerable, about having little personal worth, and that life is not fair. They may develop phobias to constantly check their environment for safety and constantly monitor others to make sure they are not mistreated.

For centuries warfare has taken place, and military men have experienced PTSD. However, a full description and investigation into the disorder has been done only in recent history. The U.S. military has prevented any serious counseling for their troops suffering from this. Peer "counselors" and rap groups were allowed, and misled by the army to believe that they would be adequate. PTSD will often lead to outbursts of rage, chronic depression, or borderline dysfunctions. The PTSD in Monarch victims is masked by the MPD/DID and the programming. Then in turn, the programming masks the MPD. When the programming is complete, front alters have been created which can function with smiles and cheerful attitudes, while underneath, the mind is full of shattered hurting alters, who the slave is unaware of. Self-punishment and social withdrawal are natural symptoms of PTSD, and the programmers have no trouble enhancing and programming these functions into their alter systems. Certain alters end up holding the anger, the fear, the social withdrawal, the guilt, and the desire for self-punishment. These are held in check by the programming, and take the body when the slave steps outside of the programmed path.

The bad memories in the minds of men who suffer from PSTD have been noted to recycle and self-perpetuate themselves as they lie unresolved in the memory cells. Bad memories for the victims of Monarch programming are used to hold the MPD, the programming in place and also to keep the victim in compliance.

In 1954, Maslow published his hierarchy of needs, which when applied to Monarchs and PSTD victims means that they can not progress in therapy until their survival and safety needs are met. However, the Programmers/abusers know that it is important to keep the slave away from safety. To this end, the Programmers employ people externally to monitor slaves, and internal alters in the victim's mind to be monitoring alters and reporting alters. Reporting alters can always reach the Network of abusers via 1-800 telephone numbers which change every 2 weeks. They can also call their handler. Reporting alters are very unemotional and serve as tape recorders which mechanically report any developments that might threaten the programming to their handler.

Alters programmed to commit suicide are also built into the Systems. For instance, for a system hacker--an outsider-- to work with the alters of an internal Grand Druid Council (aka Executive committee alters, or judge alters) or a System almost insures 99% of the time suicide of the Monarch slave.

In at least 99% of the cases where Monarchs who have come in for therapy, they still lack safety, which is a higher need than trying to go against their programming. This is why so few people have really gotten free. To undo the programming, the victim needs safety. The programmers know this, and have set up almost fail safe methods where the victim is not even safe from their own system of alters, let alone Big Brother. Therapists call their Monarch victims "survivors" a misnomer, because in reality they are still in the middle of ongoing abuse.

Some therapists may mistakenly think that it is helpful to tell the victim, "These fears you are having are from the past." Deliverance ministries may also try to stop the victim's fears, without understanding the reasons behind the ongoing fear.

Other chapters will deal with the extensive back up methodologies. At this point, it is mentioned in the context of this chapter to establish to the reader that the abuse and torture continue non-stop. Some of this would naturally occur anyway, but the Programmers enhance this naturally occurring phenomena many-fold to insure that the slave will continually abuse themselves. This means as time progresses, some Monarch systems are timed to shatter certain levels & to create new levels. If the Programmers want, they can shatter a front Christian alter level and create a new level of New Age believing alters to replace the original front. The abuse can be done by the victim themselves to themselves, because programming alters are given the ability to pull up horrific memories via codes. Those traumatic memories, which shattered the mind the first time, are still capable of doing it again when they are abreacted (that is relived by the body & mind).

More and more people are experiencing working with someone with multiple personalities. However, very few multiples ever discover more than the front parts of their systems. Very few people, outside of the programmers, have much idea of what an entire system of alters is like, therefore some of the things that this book will describe will seem foreign to those people who have learned a little about multiplicity.

There are several models to describe what happens inside a multiple's brain as it develops multiple personalities. The brain is very complex. Recent brain research confirms

Making someone throw up to cause eating disorder programming. Dislocating shoulders to cause dissociation.

When the child victim's crying is heard, they immediately apply torture so the child thinks it will suffocate. This is behavior modification, & is covered later in chapter 9. This trains the child not to cry.

Around age 3, a Black Mass, a sick evil communion, is performed which is so ugly, that the child hides in dissociation by creating a "locked-up"/or "obscure" child. This early flip provides a base for dark side programming. This locked up child can have a powerful healing (with system wide effects) by being part of a positive love-filled communion.

There are many traumas which can be carried out, which leave no physical scars, but do leave the child with the deepest emotional and spiritual scars. This is often necessary when programming young children who the outside world will see soon after their programming session. Holding one's arms out is a simple torture. Tickling and sensory deprivation are two tortures that leave no marks. Burial caskets, some outside and some at inside locations are often used on slaves. That is why many slaves fear being buried alive. The Programmers place all types of creepy insects in the caskets when they bury the person alive. Another type of sensory deprivation is done by placing the victim in salt water (for buoyancy and weightlessness). Then the victim is fitted with sensitive sensors that shock the person if the victim moves. The shock puts the person back into unconsciousness. The brain is trained to stop all external body movement from the conscious mind. This type of sensory deprivation is used to place in the posthypnotic commands to do something at some future date far into the future. The program is placed into the mind at the same primal level that the mind uses to tell the heart to beat.

One of the "appropriate" tortures is to place a bar between a little girl's legs which spreads the girl's loins for rape. Then the bent spread legs are flapped, while the victim is specifically told she is a "Monarch butterfly". Many victims have created butterflies in their minds while being raped.

The programmers may tell some of their victims that out of caterpillar-worms come beautiful butterflies. While raping the child, the Programmers will describe their sperm fluid as "honey comb", and will cry out "hallelujah" when they come.

It doesn't take long for the child to realize it has no ability to resist what is being done to it. The will of the child victim is destroyed, and in its place remains a pliable slave. If the slave doesn't learn correctly they receive more pain. A fish hook in the vagina is a popular one. Older males have their genitals hurt during additional or reprogramming sessions. They may have to eat the skin taken from their genitals.

The mind of the victim is not only divided from itself, but the very process of torture, makes the victim distrustful of humans in general. On top of this distrust, the programmers will layer in programming to isolate the person from healthy relationships, which in turn increases the victim's feeling of helplessness. They are divided from their own parts (their own self) and the world in general.

For instance, the water, cave and sand tortures make the survivor fearful of oceans. The victim may be traumatized by being lowered on ropes or a cage on ropes into the water from a cliff, or may end up being buried alive in sand and watching the tide come in, or simply being totally buried alive in sand and abandoned. For a while, the Illuminati was big on water torture because they had built into their systems a weakness that water would destroy the clone armies that protected programming, and they needed their slave systems to be fearful of water.

Slaves are frequently lowered into black holes, or pits containing the most scariest things possible. This is a frequent trauma, because the victim when left in a dark hole for hours or days without any contact with the world or water & food will develop deep emotional scars & dissociation rather than tale-telling signs of physical abuse. This torture is used essentially on all Monarch slaves.

Some of the traumas are done for specific medical reasons. For instance, the person is starved by only allowing for instance 300 calories per day for say a small woman of 125 lbs. Sugar & proteins are severely limited, so that the brain is starved into submission. Water deprivation, which is taught to parents who raise Monarch slaves, is used from time to time on slaves to raise the brain's temperature which happens when the brain swells from lack of water. When the brain gets woozy & overheated it hallucinates and has a hard time remembering events. If water deprivation is combined with electroshock it makes it harder yet for the victim to remember anything.

Heavy exercise along with long periods of little sleep (2-3 hours/day) causes an overproduction of endorphins in the brain and victims begin to robotically respond to commands. This was done to co-author Fritz under the pretense of military "training". The other author, Cisco, experienced it as part of her mind-control. The brain under such stress may flip its functions from right to left & vice-versa. Hypnosis is easier when a brain is tired.

Most victims remember being suspended upside down. This was honed to a fine art by Mengele with concentration camp victims, while records were made of how fast blood drained from a child or adult's stomach when they were dunked upside down into a tank of ice cold water. The cold water tests supplied the data on temperature levels as consciousness faded. This information then was used later on in America to help the survival rate of children given the same trauma. Simply hanging a person upside down for one or two hours will begin to play tricks on the mind. The mind will begin to dissociate, and will begin to reverse the primordial brain functions such as pain is pleasure. The person's mind rearranges. This is often done with Beta alters or Beta models to get them to think that the pain of sadistic rape is a pleasure. After this reversal in the mind that "PAIN IS LOVE", the S&M kitten alters will beg their handler to slap them, tie them up, hurt them, etc. They will tease their handler, and tell him he is not a real man if he shows any mercy in how the pain is inflicted.

Fire/burning torture is used in the porcelain face programming. The charismatic branch of the satanic Network (such as the Assembly of God churches) uses porcelain face programming. This is done by using wax masks upon the victim, and giving them fire torture. The person actually thinks that their face has melted. At that point, the programmer pretends to be a god & a hero, and tells the person he will give them a new face, a porcelain mask. These new faces by the way, look like the ones sold in so many stores. The memories of abuse are then hypnotically hid behind the masks. To take off the masks is to abreact & burn again. If anyone touches the faces of alters with porcelain face programming, the alters will feel a burning sensation because their masks are not to be tampered with. This means that these alters have via torture & hypnosis lost their own faces! This is part of the dehumanization process which chapter 10 part C talks about. As long as these alters stay in denial of what has happened to them, they do not have to face the burn torture memories.

Some alters are tortured in a fashion that the eye area is traumatized and they squint the left eye. They look like Baron Guy de Rothschild of France's left eye looks. Guy de Rothschild is a major handler/programmer, but the reason for his drooping eye is not known. Perhaps it was torture.

The ritual aspect of trauma needs to be covered. By traumatizing someone on a specific day--say, repeatedly traumatizing them on their birthday--is far more damaging than just simply traumatizing them. The reason is that every time that person's birthdate recycles they are put back into their memories of abuse. Sexual abuse of a child is more that the brain was far more complex than imagined. In an average brain there are 10,000,000,000 individual neuron (nerve cells). Each of these has 10 with 100 zeros following it worth of interconnections. In other words, an average brain has vastly more interconnections than the total number of atoms in the universe! Often about 1/2 million different chemical reactions take place every minute in the average brain, and the number can be several times that during intense activity. A Monarch's brain has been worked on to be even more active than a normal person's brain. The left & the right side of the Monarch's brain both work simultaneously, and the various personalities are all busy working simultaneously on different tracks. To describe the complexity of what is happening with someone's mind which has been messed with so dramatically for years, means that at times only an approximate model is presentable.

There are several terms which are used in speaking about multiples, which have developed several meanings. Unless these terms are correctly defined, misconceptions about them can cloud an understanding of what happens during Monarch programming.

First, researchers have discovered that deep within a person, the brain truly understands in a pure awareness all about itself. This is true for everyone. This pure awareness has been named various names, including Hidden Observer. If a man is obnoxious and seems to have a total lack of awareness that he irritates people; just know that deep down an awareness realizes exactly what he is and what he does. The multiple's brain at some deep awareness knows what has happened to it. The term Hidden Observer is fraught with danger though. A demonic entity called the Hidden Observer works hand in glove with the programmer to program the individual. The Hidden Observer is able to see everything the System does. The people who control as slave frequently call up the Hidden Observer to ask questions. In this case, it is a demonic entity, and yet it is this Hidden Observer, which each System has, that some therapists are trying to access to understand the System. This Hidden Observer only tells the truth to its Master, because it is demonic.

The next term which is misunderstood is the term "the core". The programmers set up various alters to pretend to be the core, and the core's protector. The real core is quite hidden, and not placed within the regular grid of the alter system's chart. It will take some explaining to convey what happens to the mind, and what the real core is.

THE TYPES OF TRAUMA

One thing discovered by research into the genetic transmission of learned knowledge by humans to their children was that people are born with certain fears. Snakes, blood, seeing internal body parts, and spiders are all things that people are born fearing. The phobias toward these things are passed down genetically from one generation to another. In searching for traumas to apply to little children, the Programmers found that these natural phobias which occur in most people from birth will work "wonderful" to split the mind. Along this line, the following are samples of traumas done to program slaves: a. being locked in a small confined spot, a pit or cage with spiders and snakes. b. being forced to kill, and cut up and eat innocent victims, c. Immersion into feces, urine and containers of blood. Then being made to eat these things. These are standard traumas. Often a slave will experience not only all of the above but many others before they reach 4 or 5 years of age. It is important to traumatize the child early before it has a chance to develop its ego states.

By the way, when the child is placed into a small box with spiders or snakes, they will often be told that if they play dead the snake will not bite them. This carries out two things for the programmers, it lays the basis for suicide programs (i.e. "if-you-are-dead, then you-are-safe" thinking) and it teaches the child to dissociate.

Traumas to split the mind are not just high voltage, or natural phobias, but encompass the full range of the emotional and spiritual being of the victim. The victim is eventually stripped of every spiritual or emotional resource by a variety of traumas, such as "blood orgies" where male and female genitals are cut, torture sessions on all types of medieval torture machines, staged events where actors imitating God, Jesus Christ, police, and therapists curse the victim, reject the victim, and even "kill" the victim in simulated drug deaths. Children are placed in hospitals in captive abusive conditions. Children are tied to innocent children which are systematically and brutally killed while the children are made to believe that they are guilty for the child's punishment. Near death experiences such as drowning have become an art with these abusers. Trained dogs, monkeys and other animals are used to further traumatize the victims. An Illuminati slave will most likely have experienced all of the last few paragraphs above, plus much more.

(Toby, was one of the trained NOTS chimpanzees. He was trained to be sadistic. The other trained chimpanzees at China Lake included "Gabie" or Gabriel, who tickled the victim while they were tied up; Rastice, who had a toy chest with diamonds, bracelets, & a scepter which electroshocked; Zoro, who could do anything mean; Elmore, who cuddled as a mother but ate raw flesh; plus others. An example of something said during programming with the chimps is, "THREE LITTLE MONKEYS IN A CAGE, DO, RE, ME, FA, SO, LA, TE, DO".)

Joseph Mengele, aka Dr. Green, was skilled at using German shepherds to attack people. Mengele got a reputation in the Nazi concentration camps for using German shepherds, before he was brought over to America. He used dogs to help program American children. (The Process Church often uses German Shepherds too.) He was also skilled in abortions, and was involved in weird traumas involved with babies being born, or the simulated births of dead rats (or other gross things) from the vaginas of girls being programmed.

When the Satanic cults tie their victims with wire for rituals, some of these people will lose their toes or fingers from the wire. At times little fingers and the top part of ring fingers are lost in Satanic cult rituals too.

Many of the traumas and tortures are carried out by alters or persons who are sadistic. How does the Network get sadistic men to torture little children? Three different respectable studies (Harrower, 1976/ Milgram, 1974/ & Gibson 1990) show that essentially all human males can be taught to engage in sadistic behavior. There may be a few exceptions, but the point is that sadistic people are not in short supply for programming. Some of the alter systems have extremely brutal sadistic alters. In fact, the Mothers of Darkness alters are an important balancing point to prevent the sadistic male programmers from killing more of the children they are working on. These sadists get a laugh at hurting little children. The more pain, the more charge and excitement they get out of it.

Sadists enjoy gaining total control over a person. In order to do this, they take charge over the little child's basic body functions, such as sleep, eating, and pooping. They enjoy terrorizing the little child, so Monarch slaves end up watching hours of sadistic behavior done to others before they are even 5 years old. The worse the trauma, the more the sadistic programmers enjoy it. Sensory deprivation, forced labor, poisoning, and rape of every orifice of the child are popular tortures by the programmers. The child soon learns that he is at the mercy of crazy people who can only be satisfied by total submission, and the willingness to allow someone else to think for you. The child will be made to eat faeces, blood, other disgusting things, while the programmer eats good meals.

Some of this sadistic behavior is toward a goal. Cutting a person's tongue and putting salt on it reinforces the no-talk programming.

powerful when it is put into the context of demonic magic. The abuser's semen is magic and seals the programming. The ritual aspect of it, and the repetitive nature of the abuse creates several dynamics that accompany the abuse that wouldn't occur in non-ritual abuse. The lie that accompanies such abuse is that this institutionalized abuse is an obligation for both the abuser and the victim. For instance, the mind-control of the Beast Barracks experience at West Point, USMA is an institutionalized abuse that allows the abuser to side step responsibility for sadistic behavior, and sets the stage for the abuse to be continued under the disguise of tradition.

Finally, there is one more category of trauma--those to produce cosmetic looks, for instance, breast implants, or electro-shock to create moles at certain locations for either as a sign telling other handlers the extent of the programming or for a Marilyn Monroe look. A "stage trick" is to use a multi-needle device to scar the tissue. The scar which is made in a pattern, a popular one is the satanic Goat's head of Mendes, can be made visible by hypnotic command. This allows the handler to look powerful to uninformed viewers. (This is further discussed in chapter 8.)This stage trick has been done by the occult world for centuries.

WHAT OCCURS WHEN THE MIND SPLITS

During battles soldiers have been known to wall off horrible events with amnesia walls. Just like the soldier who walls off a traumatic battle scene where he sees his buddy disembowelled by a grenade, so the child walls off trauma. However, the soldier must only endure a relatively small amount of trauma compared to the children who are programmed under the Monarch trauma-based mind control.

A soldier may remember his trauma, by being triggered by something that reminds him of the trauma. Likewise, the child victim will have things that trigger it too.

One way of describing the split, is to say that the child's mind is saying, "This isn't happening to me, its happening to some one else" and a split in the personality occurs. The new split will have the characteristics of what it split from. The programmer will ask the alter being tortured to create something in the mind when the split is created--such as "I want 12 white fluffy kittens." The programmer, demons, and the child's creativity work together with the dissociation to create alters. Those 12 white fluffy kittens will have the characteristics and memories of what they were made from. However, they are separated from each other by dissociation, and they will be given their own script and own separate identity by the programmer. The dissociation between some alters who are co-conscious is not full blown amnesia.

After the Programmer has instructed the child what alters he wants made when he tortures the child, the Programmer will inject a truth serum to determine whether the correct alters were made and the correct amount. The child's creativity is being guided by torture. The Programmer will often also call up the Hidden Observer and ask it what has happened internally in the mind of the victim.

Another better way of looking at what happens is to understand that the part of the brain that records personal memory--that is the personal history memory section, is divided up into little pieces by amnesia walls built to protect itself from the repeated traumas. Each section is walled off from another section by amnesia. Each trauma has an amnesia wall built around it. Each trauma memory is sectioned off. That walled off section is a piece of memory that will be identified, and a hypnotic cue attached by the programmers that will pull it up to the conscious mind. And further, if the programmers so desire, it can be given a history, a name, a job, and developed into a full-blown personality. It's important to grasp that the entire mind is not sectioned off into parts. Some areas of the mind, such as the area that holds skills & talents, is available to all the alters who want to access that talent. The talent doesn't belong to that alter but to the System. Autobiographical memory is remembered differently than simple facts & skills involving primitive parts of the brain. A sense of time & a sense of self are attached to autobiographical memories--these things are stripped of an alter as it functions within the programming. Memory storage is also linked to the brain's state of mind at the time.

Hormones released at the time of an experience will modulate the strength of the memory of that experience. The limbic-hypothalamic system of the brain (which consists of the amygdala, hippocampus, cingulate gyrus, fornix, septum, certain nuclei of the thalamus, and the Papez circuit) has a central modulating part which interacts with peripheral hormones. Peripheral epinephrine will be released if the amygdala is electrically stimulated. The adrenal medulla releases epinephrine that is vital for memory storage. In other words, there are hormones which help the brain remember or not.

A particular talent is not used by every alter. A non-sexual alter (an alter with an asexual identity) is not going to access talents involved in sexual foreplay. This is because memories are both occurrent states & also dispositions, and when a disposition is dissociated, the alter must maintain a different set of dispositions. A three year child alter is not going to access abilities to write. To do so for these alters would mean attacking the amnesia walls which hold horrible memories. They would mean going against the programming with its penalties, and their own understanding of "reality" which is the programmed story line that the alter has been convinced of under penalty of losing its life.

To dissociate a memory and to take on a particular role and identity involves a constant re-interpretation of past events. It may also mean that the alter must contrive an interpretation of present events. The 3 year old may, for instance, see breasts but decide they belong to someone else in the system who they share the body with. This is in part dictated by the necessity of obscuring the pain of the trauma that separates the alter from the rest. Each day that the alter confronts reality, they will face the threat that old memories will not agree with the story line created. For instance, the handler's sexual advances carried out in front of that asexual (nonsexual) alter must be misconstrued so that the illusion of not having been raped is continued. This is why normal life has a way of breaking down the multitude of lies and programming of the deeper alters, which live in a fantasy world created during the programming. The deeper alters have never had the chance to experience life outside of their programming, since they hold the body only at infrequent specialized moments which are disjointed in time. The alters created to be fronts to normally hold the body will be given lots of programming to help them hold onto certain denials, so that they will find it necessary to ignore or reinterpret dreaded associations linked with dissociated memories. For instance, a Christian front alter is sincerely very righteous and holy. The thought that this person (technically the alter's System of persons) could have done the most horrible savage demonic activities is inconceivable. The memories of ritual are safely ignored, because the reality would undermine everything the person is. This phenomena is not just seen in memory dissociation, but also under hypnosis when a person accepts a suggestion which flies in the face of the reality they can see. If a person accepts the suggestion that there is no dog in the room, they will struggle internally to maintain that illusion. If asked to walk on a collision course with the dog, they will unconsciously move around it, and if asked why they stumbled around the dog, they will construct an artificial excuse, which is accepted even though it is transparently implausible. One of the Monarch Programmers Orne called this "trance logic". Trance logic are those ploys and strategies to maintain a dissociative or hypnotic hallucination.

The frontal lobes of the cerebral cortex which are called the Brodmann areas no. 9-12 are responsible for a person's own responses to circumstance--i.e. what some call "personality". When the mind is split, this natural personality is not erased but rather is a collected pool upon which various responses from it are attached to various "personalities". Damage to these Brodmann areas tends to give an overall effect of making the person passive. The programming is not designed to damage these areas, only to control what emotions they contain are linked in memory to the various memory fragments that will be made into personalities.

The reticular formation is the location of the brain's mechanism which determines the state of consciousness all the way from alert, to hypnotic trance, to sleep, to coma. It interacts with the frontal lobes and the rest of the brain. Each memory is a function of several parts of the brain working together. Memory is a function of alertness/state of consciousness (reticular formation), the emotions (Brodmann Areas 9-12), the Thalami (priorities given to memories), and several complicated processes where the brain categorizes and interfiles the info with other remembered data. By building in amnesia walls between Event (personal history) memories, and by producing altered states of consciousness, the memories of a slave can be "nested" as the Programmers call it. "Nested" means that it is hidden behind several "locked doors" when the mind files the memory. Sometimes the person must go back to the altered state to recover a memory. The electro-shock also scrambles the brain's filing of a memory, so that it is filed in bits and pieces. Because of the use of electro-shock, if memories do start surfacing they surface in pieces. Sometimes a complete memory will be held by thousands of parts who the mind must bring together to recover the full memory.

It has been discovered that memory retrieval is best when the environment is identical to when the memory took place. If we memorize numbers underwater, we will recall them better underwater.

Another thing discovered about trauma memories is that they are stored in the sensory motor processes, rather than just in the normal memory sites of the brain. These memories are called body memories, and they do not lie. The False Memory Spindrome is way off base on their attacks, but then all of us who know the real story realize that they are just a coverup damage control scheme of the CIA.

THE CORE

Let's return to describing the "core" or that part of the brain which is intact at the beginning.

If we pause to consider that a non-multiple person will experience struggles in their mind when simultaneous, overlapping but conflicting desires meet in conflict--i.e. "should I lay in bed, go to work, or go fishing today?" A particular part of the brain (a Synthesizing Self) is capable of ordering such a conflict--it transcends all these conflicting ego states. A single Synthesizing Self in the brain is likewise responsible for the de-synthesizing of the ego states. The victim in order to appease the programmers sets up different and opposite alters relative to a single System's needs. The formation of alters is systematically and intelligently guided by the programmers, especially in the early stages. The alters are created to meet the needs of the System that the programmers impose upon it, and not to adapt to an abusive parent. **Some therapists have failed to see that alter formation is not natural, but a maladaptive practice that is guided by the victim's desire to please, and its fear of the programmers.**

The pool of abilities will be shared in different combinations among the various alters. An alter may have an unique ability that consists of subsidiary traits which may not be unique but are shared by other alters.

As a child develops if certain areas of the brain are stimulated, then those areas grow. If they are not stimulated, then the brain will not grow brain cells in the area. In other words, experience shapes the way parts of our brains develop. The way brain cells grow--that is how they make their connections is believed by researchers to be the actual place that memory is held. The growth in connections in their meaningful ways creates meaningful patterns that make up memory. When memory storage occurs, changes in terminals of axons ending on the dendrites occurs. Dendrite spines (which look like trees) develop. One tree (dendrite spine) might look like an oak in winter--another might look like a mass of seaweed. For various reasons, as the brain of a multiple grows--it physically grows different than a normal person's brain. The brain can get around what has been done to it in some ways, but it needs to be borne in mind that we are not dealing with just bad memories--but brains which have had their physical makeup & functioning altered. It is interesting to see how each different alter has a different EEG profile. One of the primary brain areas affected by the torture and programming are the areas which store event (personal history) memory. These areas are the hippocampus and the cortex of the frontal brain lobes which work with the two thalamus. General knowledge is stored in the neocortex (the grey area of the brain or the outer thin layer. The brain has practically no limit to memory. However, it will select what it wants to remember, and it will decide how it will file what it remembers.

Hypnotic suggestions to "forget" something often simply means the person remembers the event--but labels the file "forgotten". Slaves are always under hypnotic suggestions to forget what they have experienced--however, usually the brain in actuality only appears to comply and then secretly records the event. Hypnosis will be dealt with in chap. 4.

How PROGRAMMING is ANCHORED.

All the programming of each & every slave is anchored upon some type of trauma. One of the first fundamental traumas will be watched, filmed, coded & used as an anchor. For instance, the most brutal rape of a girl by her father will be used as an anchor upon which to build the Beta programming. In chap. 1 it was discussed how the primary severing of the core was incest. Extreme psychosis is created within a child trying to deal with the issues created by the incest from the child's most important figure--their father figure. In Moriah's slaves, this is the standard method to sever the core, & create an anchoring trauma. When Mayer Amschel Rothschild (orig. named Bauer) was on his deathbed, he demanded from his sons, that they protect the power of the House of Rothschild through incest. Electroshock can cause pain, but this is nothing compared to the confusion in the mind caused by incest issues. Entire worlds of loyal alters whose only function is loyalty to the biological incestual father are created in the slave. This world of loyal alters may be the Daisy world. The hardest bonding to break within Illuminati slaves is this bond to their incestual father. Non-Illuminati mind-controlled slaves are bonded to other people--the cult leader or programmer. Whatever fundamental trauma is decided upon, all the rest of the programming will be built upon that anchor in the victim's mind. (See chapts. 7 to 9 for further information on how the programming is layered in.) This fundamental trauma **is not** the bottom BEAST computer which sets at the bottom of the subconscious mind. Internal computers are complex. This is simply an anchoring memory that the programmers begin with. In large systems, the programmers will choose an experience that all of the alters are familiar with. When large programmed alter systems come in for a major rehaul, the Programmers will call up section by section with the correct code words until they are all at the front of the mind. When this is done, thousands of alters are pulled up co-conscious & worked on all together. When this occurs it is an exceptionally big surprise for most alters who have lived their entire existence in dissociated isolation from other alters in their system. Why would the programmers do this? For several reasons, speed and the desire to have common anchoring experiences, & common programming imagery.

HOW the OLFACTORY NERVES are TRAUMATIZED

Blood and perfume have been linked together in magic for thousands of years. The magical writing are full of the different concoctions created for ritual smells. Some of these over the centuries were smells which were discovered caused people to go into trance or dissociate. A common wretched smell at Satanic/Illuminati rituals is the smell of human flesh, as flesh is heated to make candles in wooden ritual cups. It is reported that the stench of human flesh burning can cause dissociation. The power of scents was noticed in ancient China by Li Po. The alchemists studied scents very carefully.

The case at Loudon, Fr. (written about in Chapt. 10, pp. 295-296), had nuns going into different dissociative states at the smell of different flowers.

Cinnamon is a widespread scent used in programming deeper parts in a system. The smell of faeces & urine is a trauma to a small caged child. Interestingly, urine also contains An-alpha which is the scent element which triggers the human mind sexually. Moriah knows how to use the various scents, incenses etc. Astral magic uses various perfumes.

WHEN MOONCHILD TRAUMAS MISCARRY

According to someone who has helped with the programming and Moon Child ceremonies, occasionally the child while in the womb when traumatized by the Moon Child rituals, retreats into its mind like a cocoon, and develops autism. Autism is an emotional problem where the child withdrawals from reality and goes into its own private world of altered states. The programmers for many years did not know why some children developed autism from the trauma rather MPD (DID), but in some cases it seems related to high I.Q. and genetics. The programmers are not able to reach such children, and essentially all were discarded into mental hospitals or used in rituals, until about 20 years ago when more and more of them were allowed to survive in public. An article "Altered States", based on the Donna William's autobiographical book *Somebody Somewhere* seems to buttress that autism can be mind-control duds. Williams is both autistic & MPD. Her book reveals that autistic children have acute sensory perception (intelligence) rather than retardation. There are different types of autism, and the authors do not understand the topic well enough to write much more than this. It is quite possible autism may have several causes, some which do not relate to the failure to become MPD (DID), but may be the result of some other cause. However, the increase in autistic children is believed by the authors to be the result of increased trauma-based mind control. MS (multiple sclerosis) is another side effect, which can stem from brain stem scarring.

RITUAL TORTURE DEVICE

Several victims of Illuminati trauma, remember a special ritual torture device that is put inside a person and causes excruciating pain. It is made from only one kind of wood, a special wood, possibly myrtle. It has a painted spider on it, between two satanic symbols.

-sketch used by permission Denny Hilgers-therapist, Pasadena, TX

REVIEW

In review, the elements that make up a single whole personality--family history, personal history and memories of abilities, talents and one's self-image have all been stripped from the child when the mind divides itself up into sections walled off by amnesia walls. When the programmers work with each memory part, they have the option to give it all the elements of whatever personality they want it to have. They can even make it into an animal or an inanimate object, because that little fragment has no chance to contradict what it is being programmed to believe. Although the memory part of the brain (which provides a person's personality) is divided, other parts of the brain function intact.

Much of the elements of Monarch Mind Control are based on things that are observed in normal life--dissociation, mental & chemical dependence, denial, charisma, discipline, personality and torture which have been refined into skilled methodologies for controlling a person and then combined into a GROUP PACKAGE.

UNDERSTANDING THE RITUALS & TRAUMA. Illuminati rituals are based upon the most ancient Mystery religions. The Rothschilds like the ancient Canaanite Mystery rituals, and use Akkadian-Hittite-Canaanite-Babylonian rituals. The rituals from ancient Egypt are also heavily used by the Illuminati. The Collins - Sinclairs-type Illuminati bloodlines and some of the other Illuminati families with a northern European/celtic background, are very much into Druid rituals. Understand that historically, the Druids gave up paganism for the truth of Christ, but that now neo-paganism would have people return to what the Celtic leadership gave up about two thousand years ago.

The following drawings were done by participants in high level satanic ritual. The one participant drew several pictures of hearts which her coven placed into jars. Some illustrations from the *Egyptian Book of the Dead* are included to show that the rituals of keeping hearts in a jar is straight from the *Egyptian Book of the Dead.* The heart was placed in a jar for weighing it for judgment. The twin (mirror-image) goddess Maat at times stands beside the scales, and at the same time Maat is also placed onto one side of the scale. This is similar to Christ judging a person, while also being the standard against which a person is judged against. In the *Papyrus of Qenna* the head of Anubis is on the beam and the ape, wearing disk and crescent, is seated upon a pylon-shaped pedestal beside the balance. Another picture shows Horus holding Maat in his hand, weighing the heart in the presence of the Maat goddesses, and anubis, who is holding the deceased by the hand, is presenting the heart to Osirus while Isis and Nephthys in the forms of apes sit nearby.

The drawing of the ritual stick shows what one type of stick used in Satanic rituals looks like.

Ritual Stick

--Used with permission of David Carrico, minister, Indiana

DRUGS

CHAPTER 3.

SCIENCE NO. 3 --
The USE OF DRUGS

The science of Pharmacology (drugs) has given the Programmers a vast array of mind-altering and body-altering drugs. Some of the drugs are not used to directly alter the mind, but to change the body (make the skin burn), or make the person vomit, or some other reaction that can be harnessed to further their nefarious programming goals. If they want a little girl to develop breasts they might give her hormones.

Neuroscientists are now familiar with chemicals which cause personality traits. If one wants to create raving paranoia, simply provide the brain with too much dopamine in the emotional centers of the brain and too little dopamine in the seat of reasoning area of the brain. Reduce serotonin in the person and the person will be unable to connect disagreeable consequences with what provoked them. In other words, they can't protect themselves from danger.

Thorazine was used regularly at the CIA's Jonestown, Guyana group control experiment. Survivors of Jonestown have testified as to its effectiveness. After this gruesome experiment in mind control came to its end with a massacre, large amounts of drugs were discovered. Just one footlocker at Jonestown alone contained 11,000 doses. The authorities prevented chemical autopsies of the bodies to insure secrecy of this sophisticated concentration camp which was used for medical and psychiatric experimentation by the CIA.

An examination of the drugs that are used in mental hospitals to alter the minds of patients offers a clear indication of what is being used in the Monarch Mind Control programming.

DRUGS USED FOR MIND CONTROL

The CIA/Illuminati programming centers have more than 600-700 different drugs at their disposal. The following is a partial list of the drugs available for their mind-control (aka MK-Ultra Programming). They can make a person feel like he is in heaven, or burning in hell. The drugs are at times used with elaborate light, sound and motion shows that produce whatever effect the programmer wants to produce. They can make a person believe he is shrinking, or that he is double (with mirrors), or that he is dying. Before describing how drugs are used for programming & control, let us list a few which we know have been used. This list comes from CIA documents obtained from the Freedom of Information Act and from what Multiples used as Programmers remember. Many of the new synthetic drugs are known only to the Illuminati/Intelligence community.:

2-CB (aka CBR, this is a strong hallucinogenic which also helps telepathic communication)
2-CT2 (produces dark, earthy visual patterns)
Acetylcholine (for EEOM, EDOM, and for blocking memory)
Adrenalin
Aktetron
Alcohol
Ambien
Aminazin
Amobarbital (hypnotic sedative)
Amobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative)
Amphetamine (addictive)
Amphetamine sulphate
Analasine
Anectine (succinylcholine, a strong muscle relaxant that makes one feel suffocated and drowning. The person feels terror at thinking he is dying.)
Anhalamine
Anhalidine
Anhaline
Anhalonidine
Anhalonine
Anhalonium
Aphrodisiacs (sexual manipulation by programmers)
Aphyllidine
Aphyllin
Aprobarbital (hypnotic sedative)

Atropine (speeds heart rate given with I.V.)
Atrosine
BZ (designer drug ten times more powerful that LSD, produces amnesia)
Bambusa
Banisterine
Baradanga (truth serum which makes people willing to follow any command)
Barbiturate
Belladonna (a traditional drug of witches since the middle ages).
Benzidrene (Benzedrene, stimulant used w/ other drugs)
Benzocaine
Bromoharmine
Bulbocapnine (causes a catatonia and stupors)
Butabarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative)
Butyl-bromallyl-barbituric acid
Caffeine
Caffeine sodium
Calcium Chloride
Cannabidiol
Cannabinol
Cannabis (aka Marijuana, a sedative, change in perception, colors and sounds more distinct, time distorted. This drug is not used much in Monarch Programming because it IMPEDES mind control. It has been experimented with in combination with other drugs as an interrogation tool. The CIA listed it as being used in MK-Ultra, but it served as an experimental drug rather for programming.)
Cannabol
Caramine
Carboline
Carbrital
Caroegine
Chloral hydrate (a hypnotic sedative, the active sedative ingredient is the metabolite trichloroethanol, goes to work in about 30-60 minutes, aka Noctec)
Cocaine (addictive, blackmail, the availability of cocaine may pull up certain alters who are addicted to it)
Coffee
Coramine
Curare (to paralyze the body)
Delvinyl sodium
Demerol (a hypnotic, also given as a reward for good learning after an induced headache, is used in the Scramble programming where the victim must overcome its effect to concentrate on what is being said)
Desoxyn (used with Sodium Pentothal for hypnotic trance)
Dexedrine (amphetamine)
Di benzo pyran derivatives
Dicain
Doral
Dramamine (aka dimenhydrinate, stops motion sickness)
Drobinal (for quick access)
Ecstasy (aka XTC, Adam, MDMA, this is an illegal designer drug, but it's used by the government & cult programmers. Empathogens, like Ecstasy, enhance trust between the recipient & the programmer. It's effect lasts for several hours.)
Ephedrine (stops hypotension)
Ephetamine
Epinephrine (adrenaline)
Ergot
Ergotamine
Ethanol (to inebriate the victim to induce certain behavior)
Ethchlorvynol (hypnotic sedative)
Ethyl harmol
Epicane
Escrine
Estazolam (hypnotic sedative)
Ethclorvynol (hypnotic sedative, effect begins 30 min. after digestion, addictive, aka Placidyl)
Ether
Ethinamate (hypnotic sedative, aka Valmid)
Eucaine
Eucodal
Eukotal
Eunacron
Evipal
Evipan
Evipan sodium
Flurazepam hydrochloride (hypnotic sedative)
Genoscopolomine
Glutethimide (hypnotic sedative, has withdrawal symptoms, aka Doriden)
Halcyn (blocks explicit memory by impairing hippocampal processing)
Haliopareael (tranquilizer)
Harmaline
Harmalol
Harman
Harmine
Harmine methiodide
Harmol
Heroin
Hexacol
Histadyl
Histamine (causes changes in the skin)
Hydractine (or Hydrastine)
Hypoloid soluble hexabarbitone

Icoral
Indole
Indole methyllarmine
Insulin (shock for amnesia)
Ipecac (to induce vomiting for eating disorder programming)
Largatil (a powerful tranquilizer)
Lophop-nine
Lorazepam (sleep induction, may destroy memory of previous day)
LSD-25 (Used to program alters to cut their veins; they want to end their nightmare by cutting what seem like white rivers w/ black threads or other scary delusions. Can cause psychosis & other effects. It's used in small amounts for interrogations. Its active ingredient is psilocybin which can create anxiety & a fear of death.)
Lyscorbic acid
MDA (this is a cross between mescaline and amphetamine speed)
MDMA (also known as Adam, this is Ecstasy, see under Ecstasy for more information)
MDE (aka Eve, puts someone into a strictly intellectual head trip)
Manganese chloride
Mellaril (mood changer)
Methaqualone (hypnotic sedative)
Methotrimeprazine hydrochloride (hypnotic sedative)
Methy-cocaine
Methy-prylon (aka Noludar, helpful for hypnosis, side effects are a hangover & skin rashes.)
Metra-ol
Midazolam hydrochloride (hypnovel, versed, hypnotic sedative which can cause amnesia)
Morphine
Morphine hydrochloride
Narco-imal
Nembutal
Niacin (helpful to stop an LSD trip)
Nicotine
Nicotinic acid (stops LSD drug effect)
Nikthemine
Nitrous oxide
Novacaine
Nupercaine
Pantocaine
Pantopone
Parahyx
Paraldehyde (hypnotic sedative, produces sleep in 15 min., has a strong odor & disagreeable taste)
Pellotine
Pentobarbital (hypnotic sedative)
Pentobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative, if mixed with dextro amphetamine sulfate it will half the stage 1 dream time when REM sleep occurs)
Pentothal acid (helpful for hypnosis)
Pentothal sodium
Percaine
Pernoston
Peyotl (interrogation, hallucinations)
Pheactin
Phenamine
Phenolic acid (injected into expendable children's hearts to kill them)
Pehyl-thio-urethanes
Picrate
Picrotoxin
Procaine
Propranolol (calms the mind so it can function better)
Pulegone-orcinol
Pulegone-olivetol
Pyrahexyl
Pyramidon
Quazepam (hypnotic sedative)
Quinine
Reserpine
Salsoline
Scapalomine S. (good amnesia drug)
Scopolomine (truth serum that makes people willing to do whatever they are told)
Scopolomine aminoxide hydrobromide
Scopolomine-phetamine-eukotal
Secobarbital sodium (hypnotic sedative)
Sodium Amytal (hypnotic sedative that reduces REM sleep time)
Sodium barbital
Sodium dielvinal
Sodium evipal
Sodium pentobarbital (nembutal)
Sodium Pentothal (truth serum for interrogation, can be used with hypnosis, can be used with Desoxyn, given in an IV)
Sodium phenobarbital
Sodium rhodanate
Sodium soneryl
Sodium succinate
Sodium thioethamyl
Somnifen
Stovaine
Strychnine
Styphnic acid
Sulfazin
Sympatol
Synhexyl
Telepathine
Tetra-hydro-cannabinol acetate
Tetra-hydro-harman
Tetra-hydro-harmine
Tropacocaine

Tropenone
Temazepam (hypnotic sedative)
Thallium (confuses thinking)
Thorazine (helps bring one out of an LSD trip)
Tranquility (a designer drug for programming that makes the victim compliant, like Baradanga)
Triazolam (hypnotic sedative, somewhat rapid)
Yageine
Yohimbine sulphate
Zolpidem tartrate (hypnotic sedative)

HERBS. When the victim's body is saturated with all the drugs they can assimilate, they will receive herbs, which often have a drug effect.

Ayahuasca (a vine of Brazil whose alkaloids such as Telapatin are said to produce a telepathic state where the recipient can see through people like glass and read their minds.)
Bayberry (hemorrhaging)
Calamas (part of a cerebral tonic)
Cayenne Pepper (stimulant)
Charcoal (absorbent cleanser)
Caladium sequinum (injected into body parts to cause excruciating pain)
Clove Oil (placed in nose for relief from the pain of dental tortures)
Hemlock (a poison, used more to kill than for programming)
Hops (sleep aid aka Beerflower)
Lady's Slipper (relaxant)
Kava Kava (sedative)
Mistletoe (for dizziness, and lower blood pressure)
Narcissus (anaphrodisiac for males)
Opium (enchanting trip)
Potions (made from roots, powders, dried blood and animal parts are given.)
Rosemary (mild heart tonic)
Saffron (sedative)
Sage (part of a cerebral tonic)
Sandlewood & henbane (when burned the fumes cause convulsions & temp. insanity)
Skullcap (relaxant)
Sunflower Seed Oil (this may be used to help with brain stem scarring)
Valarium Root (works just like Valarium, also helps cramps)
Witch Hazel (hemorrhaging)
Yerba Mate (part of a cerebral tonic)

A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE USE

Religious groups, shamans, medicine men, witches and cults have been using mind altering drugs throughout history. The medieval witches used potions of hemlock and aconite for their flying ointments. These are herbs (natural drugs) which will create delirium. Contemporary witnesses reported that covens during the medieval ages would apply the potion of hemlock and aconite to cause their new witch to go delirious, and then would transport the person to the Sabbat, where they would be told they flew there. The Haitian satanic Vodoun cult, which has been manipulated by the CIA/Illuminati, has sorcerers called bokors. The Vodoun cult in Haiti is being used for trauma-based mind control. One of the items of the cult is to take the plant Datura stramonium and add this plant with other things. The plant is the active ingredient of a potent psychoactive drug, the "zombi cucumber" which produces amnesia and a pseudo-death of the victim. The brain doesn't die, but the mind is shut off. The victim is brought back to life as a zombie--a slave of the bokor. The powder to create a zombi is called zombificant in French-creole. The ceremonies to kill and resurrect the zombie are full of magic and demonology also.

Magic, drugs and demonology have always gone hand in hand. Drugs remove the part of the will that prevents demonic possession. Drugs are considered powerful demonizing substances by the those skilled in Demonology. If demonic possession is seen as part of mind-control, then cocaine, hashish, crack, and some of the other drugs are part of the effort to enslave people. (The power of magic to kill, just as the power of faith can heal, will be discussed in chapter 10.) In Basutoland in Drakersbergs, the Zulu witchdoctors use drugs and trauma to create tokoloshes (mind-controlled zombie slaves). It is said that in recent years, they are using less children and more baboons and monkeys to get tokoloshes. The point is that drugs have been and continue to be used by the occult world for controlling people.

The intelligence agencies working through the U.S. government financed drug research. An example is that Dr. Beecher of Harvard University was given via the U.S.

Army Surgeon General's Office $150,000 to investigate "the development and application of drugs which will aid in the establishment of psychological control." Research into drugs for mind-control began in 1947 at Bethesada Naval Hospital in Maryland. A CIA report described this research as to "isolate and synthesize pure drugs for use in effecting psychological entry and control of the individual." At the California Medical Facility at Vacaville, Dr. Arthur Nugent, conducted research into drugs for mind control under the auspices of the CIA. The Bureau of Narcotics worked with the CIA to establish "safe houses" where drugs which were seized were given to victims. Some other hospitals which began working with the intelligence agencies with dispensing drugs for mind control include Mount Sinai Hospital, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, University of Illinois, University of Michigan, University of Minnesota, Valley Forge General Hospital, Detroit Psychopathic Clinic, Mayo Clinic, the National Institute of Health, and Letterman Hospital in the Presideo, CA.

The military did drug research/programming at the Army Chemical School in Ft. McClellan, AL and at the Edgewood Chemical Center. In 1958, Dr. Louis Gottschalk, working for the CIA suggested that addictive drugs be used to control people. Some GIs who became addicted to pain killing drugs were subsequently blackmailed by withholding the painkillers until they complied with the demands asked of them.

Cocaine has been frequently given to Monarch slaves to get them addicted and give their handlers more control over them. There is spray cocaine, and powdered cocaine, etc. Because the Monarch slaves are used to haul drugs and to launder the drug money, they are right in the middle of large supplies of drugs. If you hear the expression "The snow is falling" it is the Network's lingo for cocaine. Cocaine is reported to give people a feeling of power and to act as an aphrodisiac.

APPLICATIONS FOR DRUGS IN PROGRAMMING

Drugs are used during programming. Although drugs used to assist programming mean nothing to the common person, they each have a specific purpose within a certain type of programming. Some specific uses for drugs during programming include:

a. putting people into trance
b. teaching alters to go deeper into trance to escape drug effects
c. enhancing the trauma
d. producing out of body experiences
e. creating pain
f. creating blood vessels that hurt, a pulsating pain, that runs through the body
g. controlling histamine production
h. helping create illusions such as no hands, no feet, no face, no head etc.
i. teaching alters to stay in position
j. to assist other programming modalities, such as high tech harmonic machines, which implant thoughts. (The machines are used in conjunction with designer drugs.)
k. Hormones, for instance GnRH, which regulates the physiology of the sexual growth, and is given to speed up sexual growth. Other body developments may also be manipulated.
l. to enhance or reduce memory
m. to build the image of the programmer's power

At this point, it is appropriate to point out that the personalities of a multiple do not respond uniformly to the same dose of the same drug. Understanding how a drug will effect particular alters is a science in itself. If an alter is holding the body, it will receive more of the effect of a drug. Let's say Paraldehyde is given to a multiple. A possible reaction would be that some alters will feel no effect, some will be sedated to a drunken stupor, and child alters may be unconscious or hyperactive. Chloral hydrate might put some alters to sleep while others remain wide awake. Sometimes the personality holding the body may fight the influence of a drug to keep the body. Prochlorperazine is sometimes given by therapists to help alters cope with nausea and vomiting. Most alters will be programmed not to accept drugs except from their master. Lithium suppresses alter switching in some systems. An alter to "protect" the system from the therapist's helpful medications may develop "allergic" responses.

Alcohol is a drug. The reaction of an alter System to it will again be varied. Child alters may become unconscious, while the adult alters don't even become inebriated by large quantities of hard liquor. Within males, dangerous violent personalities may take the body.

Within the medical world, often an approximate correct dosage will work. However, with the programming the doses must be extremely fine tuned. Some of the best skilled medical doctors and assistants help with the programming. The Illuminati will initially give the small child a small dose of a drug. They will chart its effect, give it a urinalysis to see how long it stays in the body etc. This is just the testing stage, they are not doing any programming. A number of drugs will be tested, but only one at a time. They clear a child's body of a drug before they give it another one. They prefer not to mix meds. They will start small to insure they don't overdose and then increase the dosage until they notice the correct behavior pattern. This will be charted in detail on the slave's chart. Each child's body chemistry is different, so the suggested dosages are only ball park figures which are not precise enough. If too much of a drug is given, the programmers can easily turn a child into a psychotic basket case.

One of the secrets of the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies is that they have secret antidotes for most medications, which, if they have to give them to a child, then they will. They will use an antidote, for instance, to keep a child from going into heart failure. The Programmers will have some helpful drugs and herbs on stock too. It is reported that Glutamic Acid (1000 mg. 3 times/day) will take care of the intense headaches that alters get from lots of switching. Witch hazel leaves and comfrey root will help internal bleeding.

a. putting people into trance

About 90% of the population can be placed into the somnambulistic (the deepest) hypnotic trance possible simply by giving them hypnotic drugs. The prior list on pages 47-50 gives over 2 dozen drugs that can be used to assist taking someone in hypnotic trance. Special drugs have been designed which will place someone into a deep trance very quickly. If an alter is not being cooperative when they are accessed, they can be locked in place mentally and given a quick shot of a fast-acting hypnotic-inducing drug.

One drug which was popular for programming was demerol, which would be administered intravenously (an IV). It takes about 5-7 minutes to take full effect after administration via an I.V. The dosage can be administered so that the effect remains until the programming session is over. It may be administered about every half hour if appropriate. Children will receive 1 to 2.2 mg/kg dose.

Another drug, a truth serum, also consistently works on people making them totally compliant to any directive. Under Baradanga people will give their bank account numbers and anything else a person might want. These type of drugs are almost sufficient in themselves to get compliance out of a person. If one realizes that these drugs are used in conjunction to torture, elaborate systems of lies and deception, trauma-bonds, and all the rest of the sciences of mind-control used in the programming, it is easy to see how they are producing totally compliant human robots.

b. teaching alters to go deeper into trance to escape drug effects and pain.

Much of the training in this area is based upon the child's horror and fear toward the all powerful master programmer.

When the programmer wants the child's alters to learn to trance deeper, he will give a drug that the alter doesn't like. The child's alter will then be told to go deeper into the mind if they want to escape the effect of the drug. This enforces the dissociative state being trained for the alter. The suggestion or story line that is given to the alter is frequently the picture of a train. The child is told that the conductor is at the front of the train, but he must move to the back of the train through the train cars. The child is taught to count cars when they go by as if they were steps in the mind. This is training the child to descend into deeper levels of the subconscious. The train illustration has been used by programmers when they want the child to remember the drug experience. The programmer wants this experience remembered--at least for a while because it helps increase the child's fear. If the programmer wants the child to forget the drug experience while learning trance depths, then the imagery of a plane taking off and disappearing in the clouds works.

c. enhancing the trauma

Drugs will be used to enhance the spinning effect when the mind is being programmed to have vortexes and to set up traps within the slave's mind.

One particular drug enhances the trauma by 100 times. Drugs can be useful for instance, to enhance a child's terror of the experience of this child being placed in a small box in the fetal position for 24 hours. This helps shorten the programming time, and it also make the programming more intense. The programmers know what antidotes to give to pull the child out of the enhancement. Marijuana enhances perception of color and noise, but it is not used to enhance trauma. The mind does not program well under marijuana. That is why there has been such a big campaign to keep it illegal, even though many studies show it to be safer than alcohol.

d. producing out of body experiences

Various hallucinogenic drugs, LSD included, will produce an out of body experience for the victim, if the drugs are administered correctly. The Programmer will prepare the victim with various information and story lines during the administration of the drug. Monarch slaves are being deprogrammed, they may have a memory where their skin feels inflamed and itchy, like a bad mosquito bite. The experience may also have the sensation of floating in an unreal world. This may well be an LSD trip given the slave during experimentation and programming. The CIA was using LSD beginning in the very early part of the 1950s. Several victims report that some type of potion causes a person to dream while they are awake. PCP which is "angel dust" is one way to disconnect the cortex from the limbic system and go into an altered state.

e. creating pain. This is done with a long list of drugs. Drops of salt water and pepper water are applied to the eyes of victims to make their eyes sting. Another pain in the eye takes place when lights are flashed signalling, "I love you, I love you not." The child is pulled two ways by this message. Dr. Green (Mengele) enjoyed pulling daisy petals while saying these words. If the last petal was "I love you not." the child would be put to death. Surviving children were left traumatized.

f. creating blood vessels that hurt

Blood pressure is raised by drugs and then certain drugs are added which make the veins burn. The alter is taught to cut the burning veins. This is programming which is laid in to control the slave from straying from the script he or she is given. If they stray, then a cutting program is activated which was laid in via a combination of drugs in the method just stated.

g. controlling histamine production

The control of histamine production is an important secret ingredient to the Monarch

Mind Control. The breast implants placed into women help stimulate histamine production, which is used in conjunction with drug-assisted programming (See Chapter 8.)

h. helping create illusions such as no hands, no feet, no face, no head etc.

A programmer working with a hallucinogenic drug can make an alter believe that it has lost a particular body part. Because most of these alters have little memory or no memory and little frame of reference, what they are told while under the influence of drugs seems very real to them.

i. teaching alters to stay in position

Some alters don't like to stay in position. But through the use of drugs, and the side effect of drugs, they soon learn the importance of staying in position. If they are disobedient, the memory of the bad side effects from not staying in position in the mind can be pulled up by a code and the alter can relive the pain from having disobediently moved from position. This is very effective in teaching alters to stay in their little position that is assigned them in the mind.

j. to assist other programming modalities, such as high tech harmonic machines, which implant thoughts. (The machines are used in conjunction with designer drugs.) An example of how drugs can be important is as follows. The neurons in the hippocampus which is part of the memory process use acetylcholine. Drugs that block acetylcholine interfere with memory.

The neurons and the chemical neural transmitters are understood much better today. Where and how a thought is created in the brain is understood by the programmers in detail. No one is in a position to physically prevent the Illuminati and others from taking their children and others to labs where chemicals and harmonics can be used in sophisticated computer guided ways to implant thoughts into the children's minds. As the child's brain is shaped according to its environment, the level of everyday brain chemicals and the shape of the various areas of the brain can be determined by the programmers. This is why a recent article on Prozac (Newsweek, Feb. 7, 1994) uses a quote from *Alice In Wonderland* for its title, "One pill makes you larger, and one pill makes you small". This article (on page 38) quotes brain researcher Restak, "For the first time, we will be in a position to design our own brain." On the previous page in big letters it reads, "Scientific insights into the brain are raising the prospect of made-to-order, off-the-shelf personalities."

Another programming modality assisted by drugs is behavior modification. Aversion therapy using a vomit-inducing drug is used on children.

Another example of drugs helping assist programming is to give someone LSD and then interview the child while it is hallucinating. The hallucinations are then used as programming building blocks by using hypnotic techniques. One way to build on a LSD trip is to tell the child if they ever do a particular thing (such as touch programming, remember programming, and integrate parts, etc.) the victim is to go crazy and hallucinate like they are presently doing. This means that they will be locked up in a crazy house for the rest of their life. Rather than be put in straight-jackets with other crazy people it would be better for the person to commit suicide. By constantly reinforcing this message, some alters will adopt the script "that they are doing the body good to kill it if any alter personality touches the programming," because otherwise the body will be locked up in a crazy house.

Drugs are used in programming to establish a pattern or a script. There must be a pattern of dissociation. Parts can't just dissociate into nothing, otherwise there would be nothing to build on. Drugs will play a major role in the structuring of the alter system, which is covered in chapter 7.

m. The child doesn't know where the effect of the drug is coming from. The programmer will take credit for the power of the drug. Whoever administers the drug has power in the child's mind. The mind wants to be safe.

I am familiar with a recent example here in Oregon of someone who escaped from being sacrificed at a Satanic Ritual. The legal system told the woman she was crazy when she reported to the police that she had escaped from a Satanic Ritual where they were going to sacrifice her. To control her, the judge ordered 3 types of antipsychotics, twice the normal dose of two kinds of lithium carbonate to put her into a lethargic stupor, Paxil as an antidepressant, and Benztropine mesylate as an antiparkinsonian agent. The antipsychotics were Thiothixene, Thioridazine hydrochloride, and Perphenazine which are all addictive. This woman may or may not be a multiple. But this clearly shows the type of mental control via drugs that could be slapped onto someone who dares report Satanic activity to an establishment which has been sadly corrupted from top to bottom.

One victim of government mind control tried to get free. The first psychiatrist the person tried to go to was cooperating with U.S. Intelligence and gave her Stelazine, which aggravated the victim's situation. When the victim spied a general's uniform in the closet of this psychiatrist, she got another psychiatrist, who unfortunately turned out to be an ex-DoD employee. He placed her on Haldol Decanoate, Klonopin, and Benzatropine. The combined effect of these drugs is to erase memory, and create a dissociative disorder. All of the drugs were highly addicted.

Another fleeing victim was given Trazodone by a physician who was cooperating with the Intelligence agencies. This almost gave the victim a heart attack because it aggravated her heart condition. And yet another escaping victim apparently also fell prey to dirty CIA doctors who were practicing in public without warning people of their intelligence connections. This victim was given a combination of Compazine and Xanax, in dosages that the *Physicians Desk Reference* warns against. The doctor, who prescribed this, worked out of an office named after an MK Ultra programmer.

There are other important things to mention about when drugs are used in Monarch programming. Some of the cautions that the programmers are alert to include:

a. watching the heart so that it doesn't stop. Many of the children who have been programmed have died from heart failure. The programmers are very careful to have heart monitors on the victim, and to have paddles ready to revive the body. Because so much of their drugging affects the heart, they accept that they will lose a few to heart failure.

b. making sure that drugs aren't given to children who are allergic to them. The programmers take the time to insure that they have the family histories of allergies to drugs, and they will test the children too, before proceeding with drugs. They not only learn the family & individual responses to drugs, but they can test during programming to determine a drug's blood level in a child. For instance, pentobarbital at a blood level of 5 mcg/ml aids hypnosis, at 15 makes the victim comatose with reflexes, and at 30 makes the person comatose w/ extreme difficulty in breathing. In everyday life, 30 mcg/ml would kill the child. Pentobarbital blood levels can be tested by an enzyme multiplied immunoassay technique. For longer-acting Phenobarbital gas chromatography is used. TCA's are tested by radioimmunoassay, high-perf. liquid chromatography & thin layer chromatography. Some hypnotics are tested by colorimetry, photometry, & spectrophotometry.

c. switching to herbs when the body is saturated with drugs. When the child's body has had all the manufactured drugs it can absorb, the programmers switch to a vast collection of natural herbs.

d. providing the antidote for AIDS. Monarch slaves are routinely given the antidote for AIDS and have been since the 1960s-1970s.

e. knowing how much of a drug each part can take, small young alters can't take as much. Multiples within a single system have varying levels of tolerance toward drugs. A small child alter may be killed by an adult dosage, even though the age of the body is that of an adult. The programmers are acutely aware of how to deal with multiple personalities.

f. providing salt to balance the electrolytes in the mind of a programmed multiple personality. An electrolyte imbalance can cause a multiple personality's mind to go wacky and start spinning. The Multiple could possibly go into shock and die. The programmers are very experienced in understanding the unique requirements of a multiple personality.

g. An important plant extract for watching brain wave activity is the large plant enzyme horseradish peroxidase (HRP).

Perhaps it would be worthwhile to briefly mention that all the major chemical and drug companies are run by the Illuminati. It would take a book to explain who controls what and how they connect in, and this author could write it. Instead, we will try to give a quick over view. Rather than cover 2 dozen large drug companies, three major drug companies have been randomly selected to show a quick view of how all the drug companies are deeply involved with Monarch mind-control programming. Since the purpose of this book is to show how the mind control is done--this sample of names is given only to convey to the reader that the drugs that the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies need are never in short supply. And the labs to develop designer drugs for mind-control are not in short supply either.

ELI LILLY CO.--**Trustee of Eli Lilly Endowment Walter William Wilson** - Illuminati, married to Helen Scudder (of the wealthy powerful Scudder family), prominent partner of Morgan, Stanley & Co. controlled by Henry Morgan also a member of the Illuminati. **Executive Vice-pres. of Eli Lilly Landrum Bolling**, represented Eli Lilly at the secret annual Dartmouth conferences, overseen by the Illuminati. **Chairman of Eli Lilly Richard D. Wood**, dir. of the Rockefeller's Standard Oil, Chemical Bank of NY, and the Amer. Enterprise Inst. for Public Policy Research. **Dir. Eli Lilly C. William Verity**, Jr., dir. Chase Manhattan Bank and assoc. with U.S. intelligence, and works with Mrs. Rockefeller as a member of USTEC. **Dan Quayle** and **George Bush** (CIA director and Monarch handler) have been part of Eli Lilly management too.

MANSANTO CHEMICAL COMPANY--**President Earle H. Harbison, Jr.**-CIA, and director of Bethesada General Hospital where they program Monarch slaves. He is also the president of the Mental Health Association.

STERLING DRUG CO. (an I.G. Farben spinoff)--connected to the Krupp Illuminati family. **Chairman W. Clark Wescoe**, dir of the super secret Tinker Foundation which is a CIA foundation. **Dir. Gordon T. Wallis**, Illuminati, dir. of the Fed. Reserve Bank of NY, CFR, **Director Martha T. Muse**, CIA, pres. of the Tinker Foundation, dir. of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem (Knights of Malta), and dir. of Georgetown Center for Strategic Studies

SUMMARY

As the reader can see, the use of drugs in the Monarch Trauma-based Mind Control is extensive and requires skilled technicians, nurses, and doctors. Because of the long-held control by the Illuminati families over narcotics and drug manufacture/sales, there is no difficulty for the programmers to get large quantities of secret designer drugs. The minor occult cults have to get by with a more limited supply of mind altering drugs, unless they directly connect in with the bigger picture.

The power of drugs to control a person's life is not absolute--although someone who lives with a cocaine addict or alcoholic might disagree--but when coupled with all the other methods in a sophisticated system of mind-control, drugs just further reinforce the absolute power of the Illuminati over an individual.

Hypnosis

Hypnosis

CHAPTER 4.
SCIENCE NO. 4 - HYPNOSIS

UNDERSTANDING THE BASICS ABOUT HYPNOSIS

Dissociation is used as a defense to protect a person from overwhelming pain and trauma. It is a natural ability of the brain.

Hypnosis or hypnotic trance is a form of dissociation.

There are a number of types of dissociation: amnesia, somnambulistic states, localized paralyses, anaesthesias, and hallucinations. Hypnosis can reproduce all of these dissociative states. The mind naturally hypnotizes itself under various conditions. Perhaps the reader has been driving along a familiar road and the next thing you knew you were arriving home, having driven in a trance. Now let's suppose you are driving to a movie and you are discussing next week's plans with your wife. The complex thinking required to drive just happens. You are awake talking to your wife, and yet on another level you were in trance driving the car. You as a subject were both in hypnotic trance (driving) and awake (talking about plans). There are 5 levels to the subconscious that the mind will naturally dissociate to. The other deeper levels require help to access. People naturally can think on two levels. Because people's minds function on multilevels and there is a continua on a spectrum that runs from conscious to unconscious, it is often difficult to pinpoint just exactly what state of mind the brain is in at a certain point, because there is no single answer.

A light trance is where a person is daydreaming about his girlfriend. A moderate trance is where he imagines he is in bed. A deep trance is where he physically feels he is in bed with his girlfriend. Sleep is where one dreams of being in bed. Behavior modification is carried out in the light to deep trances. The deep trance is a very creative level.

Hypnosis appears to affect several areas of the brain--the brain stem is modified into the hypnotic state, and the midbrain centers are inhibited so that other areas--the motor, sensory and memory areas can be manipulated. Further not all hypnosis works the same way. Hypnosis can be used on the intellectual part of the mind, the social-spiritual part of the mind, and the primitive reproductive part of the mind. The skilled hypnotist will decide which area he wants and how to work with that area.

Both Christians and Illuminati members who are skilled in understanding demonology, believe that there is a demonic side to hypnosis also. It should come as no shock to people that in the *World Book Encyclopedia* hypnosis is listed under Magic as a related article, but not under Medicine. Some Christians class hypnosis as a form of divination and enchantment. It certainly can be a form of control. In occultist W.B. Crow's book *Witchcraft, Magic & Occultism*, it lists hypnotism as an occult science. There is open debate whether hypnotism is simply part of the brain's natural abilities or if supernatural elements are part of the process. There is no debate that historically, hypnosis for centuries has been the guarded secret of the occult world.

During shock or stress, the body's limbic-hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal system, releases substances which encode all the internal and external pieces of information being sensed into a deep level of consciousness. These memories often become dissociated from normal states of consciousness. In other words, when the mind-body returns to this state (where it was in during shock/stress) the mind can reaccess those memories. However, until the mind returns to this shocked state, it doesn't pick up the information it has embedded.

The Monarch programmers are acutely aware of how the mind functions, and how information and memories can be trapped in the mind. There are different neurophysiological states. Also there are said to be 12 levels to the subconscious mind. Then on top of this the mind has the ability to create amnesia barriers. Hypnosis is a valuable tool to move the mind to different neurophysiological states and to get the mind to different levels of the subconscious mind. Hypnosis can also play a role in working around amnesia, since both are types of dissociation.

Hyperventilation helps a person induct into a hypnotic trance. Torture, depersonalization, fear and acute anxiety stimulate the body to hyperventilate. So the fear, torture and depersonalization are aids for the hypnotist to help induct a person into a hypnotic trance.

Hypnotic cues can be given to cause the body to go into various dissociative states. This could be a post-hypnotic suggestion that causes hyperventilation and an accompanying trance state.

Hypnotic cues that are tied to every day objects enhance the programming. Everything in life becomes a cue to reinforce the programming. That may seem on the surface to be an exaggeration, but it is only slightly enlarged from the truth. The programmers do in fact examine a person's life, and then tailor their cues to what the person will be around. For instance, the programmer may force the child to smoke and then tell it that every time they blow out smoke they will think about their master. The programmed alters don't dare not to smoke on fear that they will be punished. The smoking in turn reinforces the power of the hypnotist/master. Much of the good that therapy can do is in effect to de-trance or dehypnotize clients. Most of the alters of a Monarch system go their entire lives in trance.

Common objects in a person's life that can be hypnotically given a programming meaning include music, tones, colors, the sight of a book or Bible, the pyramid on the back of a dollar bill, pictures of God, silk scarfs, jewelry, lights, sounds, TV programs, and countless other things. The limit to this is simply the programmer's creativity.

The power of hypnosis is often underrated because the power of the mind is underrated. The mind can decide to control its breathing, heart beat, blood pressure and other things that were once thought to be involuntary. The brain produces a substance which is a tiny peptide molecule called enkephalin which acts just like morphine and reduces pain. The brain can be hypnotically trained to release enkephalin so that the brain doesn't perceive pain. A common hypnotic device for washing away pain is running water. The victim is hypnotically told to go to a waterfall and wash their pain away. (According to a programmer the average healing rate is 3 times quicker under hypnosis than without.)

The fantastic abilities of the mind to control what happens to it are very remarkable (such as its natural healing abilities), but most of this is being kept a National Secret so that it can be used against humanity to enslave us to demonic-empowered power hungry monsters, rather than to benefit humanity. Several people in intelligence agencies quietly bemoan the fact that secret research could be helping humanity instead of controlling it.

The human mind has been found to be like an immense symphony orchestra, each part doing what it does best under the guidance of a director part similar to the conductor of an orchestra. A non-multiple's brain delegates responsibility to parts of his brain yet retains control over the process. His mind will shift from one ego state to another, & still retain its identity. In contrast, the multiple's brain also delegates responsibility and shifts from one ego state to another, BUT doesn't retain a "cohesive selfhood or self-identity. The mental mechanisms are similar, but the experience is vastly different. Rather than an orchestra playing together, the multiple's brain is full of competing isolated parts (instruments so to speak) that are playing in isolation. Out of the chaos of all these independent amnesic parts, the programmer through hypnosis/& fear then becomes the conductor to help bring order out of chaos. If the multiple is to regain a chance to orchestrate their own life again, they must re-establish communication between the different parts of what should have been their own orchestra, and get internal people to harmonize their music of life.

Good programmers do not need to formally induct their victim into hypnosis. However, if they need to, the Monarch slaves are well conditioned to respond to numbers being counted and fingers being snapped.

Hypnosis was a well developed art by the early 20th century. And testing and refining continued all along. For instance, the U.S. military was conducting extensive tests of subjects under hypnosis during W.W. II. In spite of all this, the CIA was still seeking better rapid induction techniques for their slaves during the 1950s. MK Ultra Subproject 128 dealt with rapid induction techniques, especially Subproject 128-1. Some of their drug testing was done at Lexington, KT Detention Hospital.

The ability to distinguish between magic and hypnotism may not exist for the child in situations where they are witnesses to the power of hypnotism exercised by a programmer. This makes the adult programmer, who is a big person look all powerful.

Another danger inherent in hypnosis are complications (side effects) that hit a percentage of those who are subjected to it. Hilgard (1974) discovered 31% of the 120 university students participating in a study of hypnosis had complications that lasted from 5 min. to 3 hours after trance, which included headaches, dizziness, nausea and stiff necks. Fritz is aware of one woman who, after the one & only hypnotic session she was the subject of, developed the complication of having nightmares of snakes crawling all over her. (For further study the reader may want to read MacHovec, Frank. "Hypnosis Complications, Risk Factors, and Prevention" *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*. Vol. 31, No.1, July, '88, p. 40+.

Regular gentle electrical stimulation in many parts of the brain including the lower part of the reticular formation can change the state of consciousness from alert to sleepy. An electrical band attached to a box is sometimes placed on the victim to produce a hypnotic state. There are several ways to alter a person's state of consciousness, but the most popular one by Monarch handlers is to use a combination of drugs and hypnosis.

Drugs are used to facilitate hypnosis. Modern drugs do almost all the work for the hypnotist. They place the person in an altered state and make them willing to take any order. Often survivors remember orange or grape drinks, or something else which they were given, which were used to give the child drugs. One Monarch slave (Cathy O'Brien) wrote about having been given hypnotic drugs via a Grasshopper ice cream drink.

Occasionally, hypnosis must be carried out by the programmers on unwilling subjects. They have 3 major ways to get around this. They can induce hypnosis by disguising what the hypnotist is doing, they can wait until the person is asleep and talk to him while asleep, or they can administer drugs.

Also the Network has some high-tech equipment which stimulates the orgiastic state (sexual ecstasy) part of the brain. By moving the body into this state, the mind opens up all the unconscious states. Then sophisticated brain wave machines program thoughts into the person. A computer disk is put into the electric shock machine and it runs a program that sends electric jolts down six nodes.

The brain's reticular formation serves as the brain's mechanism involved in regulating alertness and awareness. Various kinds of stimuli will enter the brain through its various methods of sensing and learning. With total sensory deprivation (done by placing the victim in a salt water tank with electrodes that shock the body until it stops all movement) the reticular formation will place the mind into a primitive state of consciousness where the programmers can place in post-hypnotic commands to do something on a certain date. The end time programming, that has Monarch slaves doing something at a specific date to create anarchy or to help the Anti-Christ come to power has been put in at this level. As previously mentioned, this level achieved by total sensory deprivation of the Monarch slave is same primitive level as the brain's commands to keep the heart beating.

Depending on what type of signals are coming in to it from the various sensing agents of the brain, the reticular formation will then make a decision what state of consciousness to place the mind in. If the reticular formation does not send out "alert" signals, then the brain will get sleepy. Damage to the reticular formation can cause a coma.

The two thalamus lie just above the brain stem. The right and left thalamus are the brain's selective attention mechanism. That is to say, they decide what it is important for the brain to focus its attention on. The right thalamus is connected to attention to visual shapes and the left to our attention to things describable in words.

Ten to fifteen repetitions at one second intervals are enough to cause the brain to lose interest in something. At this point the neuron's in the reticular formation quit paying attention to whatever it is. For instance, your brain will listen to a clock tick for only 15 intervals before it quits listening to a clock in the room. But the brain's alertness can be reactivated by a strong and sudden stimulus like a loud sound or a flash of light. This is why 3 gunshots or 3 flashes of light are used as standard access triggers for Monarch slaves. Three was also found to be the best number to get the job done.

THE HISTORY OF HYPNOSIS FOR PROGRAMMING

A masonic magazine for higher masonic rites where sex magic is performed entitled *Freemasonry Universal*, Vol. 5, 1929, p. 58 states, "Certain Forces are sent through the candidate's body during the ceremony, especially at the moment when he is created, received and constituted an Entered Apprentice Freemason. Certain parts of the Lodge have been heavily charged with magnetic force especially in order that the Candidate may absorb as much as possible of this force. The first object of this curious method of preparation is to expose to this influence those various parts of the body which are especially used in the ceremony. In ancient Egypt, there was another reason for these preparations, for a weak current of physical electricity was sent through the candidate by means of a rod or sword with which he was touched at certain points. It is partly on this account that at this first initiation the candidate is deprived of all metals since they may very easily interfere with the flow of currents." Long story short, the Masonic lodges have been using hypnotism and electric shock in their initiation rituals for a long time. The combination of fear and hypnotism combine to help seal the lips of an initiate from telling what in some lodges are secrets of criminal activity.

The Brahmin caste in India practice yoga, and other meditations where they regularly go into altered states of consciousness. Centuries ago, the Brahmin fakirs learned about drugs, tortures, and magical methodologies to produce hallucinations and altered states of consciousness. The worship of Bacchus in the west and Shiva in the east were similar, as were the bloodthirsty rites of Kali and Moloch. Occultists in India have also gone to cemeteries for centuries, like the Illuminati to draw spiritual power from graves. When eastern and western occultists linked up they realized they had a great deal in common.

The ancient egyptian writings many centuries B.C. talk about the third eye and temple trances. Hypnosis appears to have been practiced in these ancient temples.

All over the world, altered states of consciousness have been used. The feared Scandinavian warriors called Beserkers were in a mildly-programmed altered state of consciousness which made them fearless.

HOW TO PROGRAM WITH HYPNOSIS

George Estabrooks was the first major hypnotist to publicly recognize the potential for hypnosis. He contacted MI-6 and other military and intelligence groups in hopes he could interest them in the military-intelligence potentials of hypnosis.

What was George Estabrooks connection to the Illuminati? George Estabrooks was a Rhodes Scholar, which is an entry-level group for the Illuminati. For those who haven't studied this, it would be appropriate to give a brief explanation of these things. The Illuminati in 1919 created the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA). The Astor Illuminati family were major financial backers of the RIIA. Waldorf Astor was appointed to the RIIA. The American equivalent to the RIIA is the CFR. The RIIA and CFR set up Round Table Groups (based on the King Arthur myths) which were initially named by Cecil Rhodes "Association of Helpers". High ranking Mason/Illuminatus Cecil Rhodes also created the Rhodes Scholarship to bring select men from several the English speaking world and Germany to learn how to bring in the One World Government that the Illuminati has long had planned. The Cliveden Estate of the Cliveden Astors (of the Illuminati) has played an important role in the preparation of Rhodes Scholars. Bill Clinton and Fred Franz, the late president of the Watchtower Society, are two examples of men selected for Rhodes Scholarships. Bill Clinton went through the program. However, Franz decided not to go to London in order to help lead C.T. Russell's cult as "oracle" after WT Pres. C.T. Russell was ritually killed on Halloween, 1916 and his remains buried under a pyramid. He later served as President himself from 1977-1994. The Watchtower Society leadership is a front for a part of the Illuminati which practices Enochian Magic. The power of Enochian magic is the Watchtowers. A powerful part of Bethel headquarter workers are Multiple Personalities, and have cult alters who speak in Enochian. Some multiples work in the art department and have been secretly placing hidden occult symbology into *Watchtower & Awake!* magazines. Now back to Estabrooks, who was also himself part of the Illuminati.

In his book *Hypnotism*, which came out in 1946, he wrote in his chapter Hypnotism in Warfare (again bear in mind that Estabrooks writes this in 1946 and has been advocating what he writes for perhaps the 15 previous years!) :

> This chapter is not taken from a mystery novel. The facts and the ideas presented are, so to speak, too true to be good, but no psychologist of standing would deny the validity of the basic ideas involved. He might, of course, be somewhat startled at our proposed use of these basic ideas and techniques, for he has never given this matter much thought....
>
> The use of hypnotism in warfare represents the cloak and dagger idea at its best--or worst. Even if we did know the answers to some of the weird proposals in this chapter, those answers could never be given for obvious reasons. The reader must use his imagination for specific outcomes in specific cases have not been made public--probably never will be made public. Any topflight physicist is familiar with the basic laws of atomic fission and he is quite free to discuss those laws. But he may or may not know what is happening on some government research project in this field. If he does know, he is not shouting it from the housetops, probably not even whispering it to his best friend. The same applies to hypnotism in the field of warfare.
>
> Our interest here lies in some of the more unfamiliar sides of hypnotism which may make it of use in warfare. Again, no psychologist would deny the existence of such phenomena....
>
> The only possible way of determining whether or not a subject will commit a murder in hypnotism is literally to have him commit one....
>
> But warfare...undoubtedly will, answer many of these questions. A nation fighting with its back to the wall is not worried over the niceties of ethics [like Nazi Germany]. If hypnotism can be used to advantage, we may rest assured that it will be so employed. Any "accidents" which may occur during the experiments will

simply be charged to profit and loss, a very trifling portion of that enormous wastage in human life which is part and parcel of war....

One in every five adult humans can be thrown into the hypnotic trance--somnambulism--of which they will have no memory whatsoever when they awaken. From the military viewpoint there are a few facts which are of great interest. Can this prospective subject, --this "one-in-five" individual--be hypnotized against his will? Obviously, no prisoner of war will be co-operative if he knows that the hypnotist is looking for military information, nor will any ordinary citizen if he suspects that the operator will use him to blow up a munitions plant.

The answer to this very vital question is "yes", though we prefer to say "without his consent" instead of "against his will." We do not need the subject's consent when we wish to hypnotize him, for we use a 'disguised" technique. The standard way to produce hypnotism in the laboratory is with the so-called sleep technique. The operator "talks sleep" to the subject, who eventually relaxes and goes into a trance, talking in his sleep and answering questions.

Now suppose...we attach a blood pressure gauge to the subject's right arm and the psychogalvanic reflex to the palm of his hand, just to make everything look shipshape. These devices are for measuring his ability to relax. We also point out that, of course, the very highest state of relaxation will be his ability actually to fall into a deep sleep while we are talking to him. We also stress the great importance of the ability to relax in this modern world of rush and worry, promising to show him how to get results as one end of these experiments. All this is by way of buildup. Probably not one of our readers, if exposed to this procedure, would realize that this was preparation for hypnotism, but would co-operate willingly in this very interesting psychological experiment.

We then proceed to "talk sleep," much the same as in ordinary hypnosis, carefully avoiding any reference to a trance or making any tests with which the subject might be familiar, all the while checking on blood pressure and psychogalvanic reflex to keep up the front. Finally we make the test of somnambulism, or deep hypnotism. We see if the subject will talk to us in his sleep without awakening. If this does not succeed, the subject wakes up completely, and in this case we simply repeat the experiment, hoping for better luck next time. But if we do succeed, if the individual belongs to the "one-in-five" club, the subject is just as truly hypnotized as by any other method, and from now on everything is plain sailing. By use of the posthypnotic suggestion...we simply say, "Listen carefully. After you wake up I will tap three times on the table with my pencil. You will then have an irresistible impulse to go sound asleep." The next trance is just that easy to get, and the subject has no idea that it is the pencil which has sent him off."...

But we must go even further than this. Once a person has become accustomed to hypnotism, has been repeatedly hypnotized, it becomes very easy for any operator to throw him into the trance. Obviously this will not do if we are to use hypnotism in warfare. So we plug this gap again by suggestion in the somnambulistic state. We assure the subject that in the future no one will be able to hypnotize him except with the special consent of the operator. This takes care of things very nicely....

We sit down with the subject...We are talking about the latest boxing match when the operator taps three times on the table with his pencil. Instantly--and we mean instantly--the subject's eyes close and he's sound "asleep." While in trance he sees a black dog come into the room, feels the dog, goes to the telephone and tells its owner to come get it. The dog is of course purely imaginary. We give him electric shock which would be torture to a normal person, but he does not even notice it. We straighten him out between two chairs and sit on his chest while he recites poetry. Then we wake him up.

He immediately starts talking about that boxing match! A visitor to the laboratory interrupts him.

"What do you know of hypnotism?"

The subject looks surprised, "Why, nothing."

"When were you hypnotized last?"

"I have never been hypnotized."

"Do you realize that you were in a trance just ten minutes ago?"

"Don't be silly! No one has hypnotized me and no one ever can."

"Do you mind if I try?"

"Not at all. If you want to waste your time it's all right with me."

So the visitor, a good hypnotist, tries, but at every test the subject simply opens his eyes with a bored grin. Finally he gives up the attempt and everyone is seated as before. Then the original operator taps on the table with his pencil. Immediately the subject is in deep hypnotism.

We now add another concept. We can coach the subject so that in the trance he will behave exactly as in the waking state. Under these circumstances we could defy anyone, even a skilled psychologist, to tell whether the subject was "asleep" or "awake." There are tests which will tell the story but in warfare we cannot run around sticking pins into everyone we meet just to see if he is normal.

So rapid can this shift be from normal to trance state [the programming state], and so "normal" will the subject appear in trance, that the writer has used such a subject as a bridge partner. He plays one hand in trance and one hand "awake" with no one any the wiser. [This happens with Monarch slaves all the time. Few people ever catch on that alters are under trance.]

Suppose we deliberately set up that condition of multiple personality to further the ends of military intelligence.

Let us start with a very simple illustration. For example, we can hypnotize a man in an hotel in, say, Rochester. We then explain to him in hypnotism that we wish the numbers and state names of all out-of-state cars parked in the block surrounding the hotel. He is to note these very carefully in his unconscious mind but will have no conscious memory of having done so.

Then we awaken him and ask him, in the waking state to go out and get us a tube of toothpaste. He leaves the hotel and wanders around the block in search of that tube. Finally, he returns, apologizing for his delay, saying that it was necessary for him to go entirely around the block before he noticed a drugstore in the very building itself. This, he says, was very stupid of him but apparently men are made that way. Did he notice anything of interest as he made his walk? "Nothing! Oh, yes, there was a dog fight down at the corner." And he described the battle in detail.

We now hypnotize him. He knows what we are seeking and at once proceeds to give us numbers and states of strange cars, very pleased with the fact that he can recall thirteen. He evidently enjoys the game immensely and is quite proud of his memory. Then we awaken him and see what he knows in the conscious state. "How many cars are there around the building?"

"I don't know."

"What are the numbers of the out-of-state licenses around the building?"

"Good heavens, I have no idea. I think there is a California car near the front entrance, but I have no idea as to its number."

A friend tries his hand.

"Now look here. You were hypnotized half an hour ago and you left this room under posthypnotic suggestion."

The subject gets irritated. "Look here yourself. I'm getting tired of that silly joke. This is the third time today you've pulled it. All right. I was hypnotized and saw pink elephants all over the lobby. Have it your way." And the subject sits down to a magazine, obviously angry that this man cannot find something more amusing to say. Often the hypnotic subject will react in this manner. Push him just a little too far and he becomes irritated, obviously a trick of the unconscious to end the argument and avoid any danger of being found out....

The reader's very natural reaction is, "Why all this rigmarole?"...

There are certain safeguards if we use hypnotism. First, there is no danger of the agent's selling out. More important would be the conviction of innocence which the man himself had, and this is a great aid in many situations. He would never "act guilty" and if ever accused of seeking information would be quite honestly indignant. This conviction of innocence on the part of a criminal is perhaps his greatest safeguard under questioning by the authorities. Finally, it would be impossible to "third degree" him and so pick up the links of a chain. This is very important, for the most hardened culprit is always liable to "talk" if the questioners are ruthless enough.

The Super Spy

In the instance we are about to outline, we may or may not be dealing with multiple personality....

The little experiment I have just cited could be successful with any good somnambulist and would require about ten hours preparation. The example I now cite would work only with a certain number of the very best somnambulists and instead of ten hours preparation, we had better allow ten months....

Perhaps we had better start by defending our position. Is it unethical? Perhaps, but science merely states the facts....

Now let us return to our presentation. We start with an excellent subject, and he must be just that, one of those rare individuals who accepts and who carries through every suggestion without hesitation. In addition, we need a man or a woman who is highly intelligent and physically tough. Then we start to develop a case of multiple personality through the use of hypnotism. In his normal waking state, which we will call Personality A, or PA, this individual will become a rapid communist. He will join the party, follow the party line and make himself as objectionable as possible to the authorities. Note that he will be acting in good faith. He is a communist, or rather his PA is a communist and will behave as such.

Then we develop Personality B (PB), the secondary personality, the unconscious personality, if you wish, although this is somewhat of a contradiction in terms. This personality is rabidly American and anti-communist. It has all the information possessed by PA, the normal personality, whereas PA does not have this advantage....

The proper training of a person for this role would be long and tedious, but once he was trained, you would have a super spy compared to which any creation in a mystery story is just plain weak. [This is what the Illuminati have done. They create good Christian fronts, with Illuminati dark alters who can see what the Christians are doing.]

My super spy plays his role as a communist in his waking state, aggressively, consistently, fearlessly. But his PB is a loyal American, and PB has all the memories of PA. As a loyal American, he will not hesitate to divulge those memories, and needless to say we will make sure he has the opportunity to do so when occasion demands. Here is how this technique would work....[skipping this story and several others, we come to:]

We choose a good subject and then let him in on the plot. We disclose to him that he is an excellent hypnotic subject and we wish to use him for counterespionage. We suspect that in the near future someone is going to try hypnosis on him. He is to bluff, to co-operate to the very best of his ability, fake every test that is made and stay wide awake all the time. The test we fear most is that of an analgesia--insensitivity to pain. So we coach him carefully with posthypnotic suggestions to the effect that even when wide awake and bluffing he will be able to meet every test which may be made here, be it with ammonia under the nose, a needle, or worst of all, the use of electricity, which can be made extremely painful and is easy to use.

Under these circumstances it will be virtually impossible to tell whether this man is bluffing or really in trance.

[The story continues that the master hypnotist thinks he has got a good subject and has hypnotized him deep. Then the subject tells him that he was only bluffing. The whole affair provides a nightmare for any counterintelligence group using hypnotism. They can be totally bluffed, unless they turn to high tech equipment to see what is really happening.]

Estabrooks also explains how a man can be hypnotized and told he is only testing the preparedness of security. He is told he has a fake bomb, but is really given a real bomb. The subject is sent to a location, and blows up with the real bomb. The subject blows up with the bomb so the evidence of the hypnotic lie is lost.

Hypnosis changes the threshold of the how the senses perceive. Sensitivity can be increased or decreased, hallucinations can be perceived even though there is the absence of any appropriate stimuli, and things that exist can go unperceived by the mind. For instance, alters who are used for porn are hypnotized not to see the camera. Alters used for any type of sexual service are hypnotized repeatedly to not see faces. The slave will actually see blurs where people's faces are. The Programmers like to manipulate. Children are set in front of circus mirrors that make them taller or smaller for programming. They are set in front of mirrors which duplicate their image. Here in Oregon, there is a site with a magnetic anomaly which bends light. It is called the Oregon Vortex. The Programmers take small children there for programming. Anything that creates an illusion, seems to be noticed by the Programmers and is put to use somehow. The CIA has employed magicians like John Mulholland to help them create illusions. Magician John Mulholland wrote a manual for the CIA on how to deceive unwitting subjects. Under drugs and hypnosis, when a small child is set in front of a mirror that elongates its body and or then shortens, the reality of the programming script seems real. The programmer can hypnotically call upon the child's mind to totally hallucinate seeing something, or he can support the illusion by handing the child a doll and telling it that it is a child, or handing the child a pencil and telling the child it is a flower. A great deal of acting and props are used during the programming. What child can tell fool's gold from real gold? The bottom line is that generally, no matter which way the Programmers do it, whether by an illusion or an outright hypnotic-suggested hallucination, the event for the child is real. The majority of traumas are real events, but the scripts that are given are after the trauma are fictional.

HYPNOSIS CAN BOOST THE CREATIVITY OF THE VICTIM TO ADOPT SCRIPTS

Creativity is a function of attentiveness, playfulness, anxiety, limitations, relaxation, the trance state, responsiveness and absorption. A good programmer can assist or boost the creativity of the child. The programmer can tell stories and programming scripts in a vivid way, so that the sensory pictures are bold and strong. The child can taste and feel and touch in their minds the script being given them. Besides the language of the programmer other aids such as fear and drugs can enhance a victim's attentiveness. Playfulness comes naturally to children. They naturally pretend and use fantasy in their play. Because children are innately creative they are far easier to program. Researchers have also discovered that creativity needs an element of anxiety and chaos in the person's life. If everything is orderly and in perfect harmony, the creative juices will not flow. The conscious mind and the subconscious mind need to grapple. For creativity to be productive it must occur within limits. For instance, the concerto is created within the limits of a piano keyboard. The programmer, and the Grande Dame and the Grande Mother of the Illuminati victim carefully guide the child's creativity and set limits. The spark of creativity occurs when there is an alternation of intense concentration and relaxation. The programmers must work back and forth between torture and kindness. A light trance will allow the mind to surface creative ideas. That is why writers and composers get ideas when they are in a light trance driving, in a light sleep, or shaving or some other place where a light trance occurs. Receptivity is the willingness to accept a creative idea when it comes. The final part of creativity is one's absorption into the process of creativity. The artist may get so immersed into the portrait that he is painting that the portrait seems alive and real--the actual person. This immersion, where things imagined become real, is important to keep the creative juices flowing. The hypnotist/programmer can enhance the creative process by giving the child positive encouragement to reduce their fears and inhibitions to creativity.

The programmer could say to the older child (a younger child might be told something else), "You take all of your fear of not being creative and put them into a sack. The sack now becomes a bundle of energy. Now imagine you are opening the sack and out of the sack comes a rainbow of energy. It is powerful, it is positive. You are now full of new ideas. You can feel this power surge through your body. Your mind is now clear and focused, focused, you feel confident, sure of your talent and eager to set your new ideas into motion, and you control the energy in your life, you are very successful in controlling the energy in your life...you take a few breaths and relax. You notice the neighborhood around you, there is a beautiful park, you begin to notice how beautiful the day is, and you begin to feel a fresh new energy flowing through your body...the more calm you become the more enthusiastic and creative you become...you will feel free to create, to enjoy your creative talent, to invent, to shape, and form new and wonderful ideas."

This is not to say that the Illuminati programmer or Mother of Darkness assistant will use this type of hypnotic suggestions, but sometimes it does become necessary to teach some children how to dissociate, and how to become creative. If they do not develop these abilities, they may lose their life to the torture.

THE VITAL ROLE OF MOVIES FOR HYPNOTISING SMALL CHILDREN

As mentioned before, the hypnotist will find children easier to hypnotize if they know how to do it with small children. One method that is effective is to say to the small children, "Imagine you are watching a favorite television show." This is why the Disney movies and the other shows are so important to the programmers. They are the perfect hypnotic tool to get the child's mind to dissociate in the right direction. The programmers have been using movies since almost day one to help children learn the hypnotic scripts. For children they need to be part of the hypnotic process. If the hypnotist allows the child to make up his own imagery, the hypnotic suggestions will be stronger. Rather than telling the child the color of a dog, the programmer can ask the child. This is where the books and films shown the child assist in steering its mind in the right direction. If the hypnotist talks to a child, he must take extra precaution not to change the tone of his voice and to have smooth transitions. Most of the Disney films are used for programming purposes. Some of them are specifically designed for mind-control.

SPINNING TOPS

One method for inducting children into a dissociative state is to have them look at a large spinning top, as the colors whirl around. Carousel rides have also been popular to induce trances. A good sampling of optical illusions can be found in Katherine Joyce's book *Astounding Optical Illusions*. NY: Sterling Pub. Co., 1994. The illusion The Temple makes one feel they are in a passageway leading to a small door. The Escalator makes one feel they are going up and down, and could be used for building in an internal elevator. We know that optical illusions have been used, but we are not saying that these particular ones have been. For a programmer to use an optical illusion, he would first submerge the victim into a drugged state with the appropriate mind altering music and sounds and then flash the illusion onto the wall that the victim was facing. With virtual reality the child can really be immersed into a weird head trip.

THE HYPNOTIC VOICE OF THE PROGRAMMER

Programmers will adopt either an authoritarian voice, which is commanding and direct or a permissive soft tone. Bear in mind the slave who has the authoritarian voice used on it, sees the programmer as God with the authority of life or death over its (his or her) body and soul. The heightened expectation from the commanding tone, will increase the suggestions chance for success. However a softer tone, will relax the victim, and the hypnotist and the programming victim become partners in the hypnotic process. The advantage of the softer tone, is that the creativity of the victim is enhanced and participates more in the process. The hypnotic induction become more real when the victim participates more in the process.

The Monarch programmer will either use a monotone voice or a rhythmic voice. Remember, the professor who could lull his students to sleep. He had a hypnotic voice, without knowing it. A singsong or rhythmic voice is comforting. It can also be used by the Programmer. One continuous thread of words strung together are used to close out distractions. After a suggestion or command is given, a pause is made by the programmer in talking so that the suggestion is taken into the mind. Otherwise anxiety is experienced by the victim's mind, and the suggestion will not be accepted as well.

Cisco, the co-author provides an example of how a hypnotic script can go with music, "Close your eyes for your eyes will only tell the truth. And the truth isn't what you want to see. In the dark it is easy to pretend that the truth is what it ought to be.

"Softly, deftly, music shall caress you. Hear it, feel it secretly possess you. Open up your mind, let your fantasies unwind in this darkness which you know you cannot fight. The darkness of the music of the night.

"Close your eyes, start a journey through a strange new world. Leave all thoughts of the world you knew before. Close your eyes and let music set you free. Only then can you belong to me.

"Floating, falling, sweet intoxication. Touch me, trust me, savor each sensation. Let the dream begin, let your darker side give in to the power of the music I write. You alone can make my song take flight. Help me make the music of the night.

"Helpless to resist the notes I write, For I compose the music of the night. Hearing is believing, music is deceiving. Hot as lightening, soft as candle light. Dare you trust the music of the night?"

When the authors have bumped into men who are programmers and handlers for the CIA, they have noticed that many of these men have warm personalities and have a certain trained hypnotic voice which they use even when not programming.

During rituals, the various magical languages used in witchcraft employ repetition, alliteration, nonsense syllables, newly coined words, and ancient words that are chanted or sung in a limited-range that makes the sounds become hypnotic. Sounds like the mantra "a-u-u-m-m" are chanted. Gestures during rituals are also made which intensify the effects. Rituals can not be classified as having nothing to do with programming. There is such a great attempt to secularize and make clinical what the victim experiences, and the idea that witchcraft is part of the programming is an unpopular notion with some. Combining witchcraft with hypnotic language can be powerful with group dynamics. Repetitive sounds, such as a drum beating influences the locus coeruleus part of the brain. Drums can help induce trance.

KEEPING THE MIND DISSOCIATIVE

Illuminati parents (as well as other adults who care for a Monarch child) are given special instructions on how to raise the child to be dissociative. The parents are admonished that their child will have a successful future and so will they **if** they follow the instructions. If they don't follow the instructions, they are reminded their child's life could be forfeited. Here are some of the types of instructions that are given:

a. Spend 15 minutes/day teaching the child to write backwards to develop the brain in a particular fashion.

b. Giving daily doses of prolonged isolation, such as dark closets, dark cellars, the corners of dark rooms. During the prolonged isolation, the child cannot turn on the lights, go to the bathroom, make a noise or anything else. The child will learn to dissociate. The child is also trauma bonded to the abuser because each time the child is let out, it is grateful to the abuser. The child can be drowned in a pool and then resuscitated--and the exact amount of time to keep the child under will be given. The child can be placed in a freezer, and again the exact amount of time can be given to the parent. The child is not to roam about the house freely. The adults' area is off-limits. The child must move with permission.

c. Systematic punishment without provocation with the message--keep secrets. Hear no evil, see no evil, do no evil. This needs to be done several times a week to reinforce the codes of silence and the programming for silence.

d. A needle which is gripped halfway up is stuck into the child a quarter inch deep on the child's muscles, buttocks or thigh to help continue dissociative behavior. On special occasions (birthdays, holidays) the hands and feet which are most sensitive to pain are stuck. When the feet or hands are stuck, they will often stick the needles under the nails. The ears are also on occasion stuck with needles. It also conditions the child to obey the commands of her handlers, who will use needles to access the minds various personalities. Various spots on the body when stuck with needles along with certain codes become access points for certain alters.

e. Anytime a child argues, has a temper tantrum, or gets angry the child is to be slapped in the face. This is a quick trauma. It is to be followed with a lighted cigarette applied to the child to burn the skin the second the child gets submissive from the slap. If a cigarette can't be found, a stove top or some other hot item is to be found. At four years of age, the child begins programming to

burn itself. If there are any bruises showing, the child can be kept home for a day or two.
f. Anytime the child becomes willful it is to have its mouth washed out with soap. The child should be made to chew off a piece and swallow the foam.
g. The child should be raped daily and then tortured. This helps with the sexual programming later, and begins a reversal in the mind that pain is love, and pain is pleasure.

Some of the first memories that female Monarchs recover are their memories of their fathers raping them. This is because the programmers allow these memories to be less dissociated than the later ones where the slave may be sexually servicing an important Monarch slave handler like the Rev. Billy Graham. (Graham is covered in full in chapter 5.) In later situations like that, the kitten alters which do the sexual servicing will be electro-shocked to block their memory as well as given hypnotic cues. The fathers or step-fathers are often not the person who will be their master when they grow up. The abuse of this person will serve as a cover for the programming. If the person's front alters discover they are MPD, the will initially blame their multiplicity on the first abuser they remember, which then serves as a cover.

KEEPING THE MIND IN ALPHA STATE

The entire alter system of a Monarch slave has their sleep patterns controlled. Many alters are programmed not to sleep. They stay awake 24 hours a day internally. Someone has to take the body and sleep--but whichever alters are set up to do it, they are hypnotically commanded to only sleep three hours, to insure that the mind stays in an alpha state easy to program. Because alters which do not hold the body "rest" mentally in a sense--when they take the body they are fresh. In this way, a multiple can function without as much sleep as a normal person, but the price they pay is that their mind stays in an easy-to-program easy-to-hypnotize state.

REM sleep allows the person to harmonize the mind's inner world with its outer environment. The periods of REM sleep lengthen as the hours of sleep progress. By preventing long periods of sleep, long periods of REM sleep are prevented from occurring, and the victim remains in a more controllable state of mind.

HYPNOTIC CODES, CUES AND TRIGGERS

When a Programmer creates something, it will be a reflection of himself to some degree. Just like handwriting and art are a reflection of the person who makes them. Understanding the connections between a Programmer and his creation could take a book in itself.

The following is extracted from the history of an ancient occult sect, still functioning today. It is the type of thing, that the programmers feed their minds on, which in turn provides them the patterns which show up in programming. Here it is: In the ancient occult world, at the gates of palaces the doorkeeper had to be shown "the seals"--the secret names of God or pictures with magical power, and the words "R Akiva". When the person passed this entrance, he comes to the palace of pure marble stones, do not say, "water, water." Then the person will enter into the world or the celestial Garden of Eden or the Realm of the Heavenly Palaces.

The Story of Sinbad, the golden lamp and genie would be another example of an occult story that could be used.

Within the Illuminati, Gematria (which is the cabalistic teachings about numbers) is very important for knowing the codes of the deep darker alters. There are several reasons for why Monarch slaves have lots of codes and structures which come from witchcraft,
a. their programmers are witches and witchcraft is the world view on the mind of the programmer

b. the slaves are reminded of their entrapment to Satan and their cult whenever they hear their codes
c. the alters internally will work magic, even while they don't hold the body, and placing magical structures inside facilitates this internal magic
d. using magical words makes the programming look like magick
e. the internal alters are being inculcated into occult underworld life and doctrine

A rather remarkable book is Aleister Crowley's book *777 and Other Qabalistic Writings of Aleister Crowley*. It is remarkable for the deprogrammer to understand many of the programming code links that the programmers may have used. In *777*'s forward, Aleister Crowley wrote "777 is a qabalistic dictionary of ceremonial magic, oriental mysticism, comparative religion and symbology. It is also a handbook for ceremonial invocation and for checking the validity of dreams and visions. It is indispensable to those who wish to correlate these apparently diverse studies." (Crowley, *777*, p. vii) Later he writes, "The book 777 has for its primary object the construction of a magical alphabet." (p. xvii)

For instance, Crowley gives the Officers in the Masonic Lodges and the hebrew passwords of their grades. In another example of the book, Crowley gives a list of the Hindu chakra points (which is well known), with the Buddhist names, and their ancient Egyptian names. This is the type of occult knowledge that is hard to come by. Crowley's List of Correspondences are perhaps the best one will find printed in the occult world. They show the correspondences that occultists make between things.

For instance, if we want to know what corresponds to the Hebrew letter Dalath. The letter means door. Door corresponds to the letter 14, the Cabalistic Tree of Life pathway between the two top circles on each side of "the crown", sky blue on the Queen scale of color, Aphrodite, Venus and Freya, and the gems Emerald and Turquoise, and the perfume sandlewood. All these things correspond within Cabalistic magic.

For someone trying to understand why a particular color, and name is given to an deep darkside alter Crowley's book is helpful in some Monarch systems.

The Mother-of-Darkness alters (and Supreme Master alters in males) of the Illuminati must do pathworking rituals when they hold the body and participate in Illuminati activities. These Mother-of-Darkness alters are placed internally in the Cabalistic Tree of Life. Crowley's book provides the mystic number that goes to each part (plane, or circle) of the Tree of Life and its Snake positional number. The mystic number of the Sephiroth that corresponds to the number to each of the 22 paths that must be worked is also given. The occult concept is that to achieve divinity one must go on the Tree of Life from being Malkuth to become Kether.

Although it is not the intent to propagate occult doctrine, for those who want to know how Illuminati Monarch slaves get to where they are as adults, and what the codes are in their System, then we need to cover briefly the Kabblalistic Tree of Life. (More will be written about this in chapter 10 on spiritual control.)

Let the reader picture 3 circles in a line. These three circles sit at the top of the Cabalistic Tree of Life. They are the top 3 circles of ten circles which all have names within an Illuminati Monarch slave. The center circle is "the crown" and holds the honored alter who actually is the Bride of the AntiChrist. The AntiChrist is also known as Black Saturn, and other names. Satan himself is known within a Monarch system often by the name Bilair, Bilar, or Bilid which are his cabalistic names. The honored alter who is married to him sits on a pedestal revolving with 2 other alters. In the occult world, goddesses are triune: maiden, mother and crone. The one to the left of center is

Midnight (the Mother figure), and the other is Morning Star (the maiden). Morning Star (Stella Matutina) may be a very young alter, rather than a teenager. On top of the Cabalistic Tree of Life will sit a pyramid. Each of the ten circles (rooms for the alters who live in them) of the Tree of Life is created with a different Illuminati ceremony. Before a Mother-of-Darkness Monarch slave is 16, they will have gone through all the ceremonies involved in the creation of the alters which correspond to the 10 rooms of the Tree of Life. At age 16, the system's demons will then guide the system on a personalized pathway and a baby (the firstborn) will be sacrificed by the System. The blood of this first born is spiritually placed in a box under the Tree of Life. This is in accord with the Lilith story. The spirit Lilith (sometimes with an alter Lilith) will work with the spirits of Zerodieth and Lucifer.

There are several trees which can be placed within a Monarch slave, including the ash, the oak, the ygdrassil, the willow, and the Tree of Evil, which is an evil counterpart to the Tree of Life. These will be dealt with under the chapter on structures.

This chapter will provide the hypnotic codes, cues, triggers or whatever one wants to call these words, noises, and sensory inputs that manipulate these poor victims turned into Monarch robots. Other chapters will explain about the structures these codes go to, and also the spiritual dimensions of these codes and structures. Another way to see things is to recognize that the programmers have created "power words" to which they have attached memory and programming. If a **de**-programmer observes closely the word usage of the victim, you will begin to spot power words of the abuser, for instance, "white rabbit".

A cipher is when symbols are used to represent letters. One can used letter frequencies to break ciphers. Likewise, there are frequencies to codewords. The Illuminati's intelligence agencies have programmed thousands upon thousands of slaves. There are only so many code words to pick from and some of these code words are favorites. From the co-author Fritz Springmeier's experience, **the following are favorite code words that have been used to program slaves with**: CHARLOTTE, CHECKMATE, CHRISTMAS, CLARA, CLOVERLEAF, COURIER, CRAYON, CRYSTAL, DAISY, DAVY, DELLA, DELTA, DEMON, DIANA, DINAH, DIRTY, DIXIE, DOT, DOVE, DRAGON, DUCK, DUMBO, EAGLE, EASY, ECHO, ELAINE, ELEPHANT, ELLEN, EMERALD, EMPIRE, ESTER, EUREKA, EVERGREEN, FAITH, FALCON, FARMER, FELIX, FIREFLY, FIVE BROTHERS, FIVE SISTERS, FLASHLIGHT, FLOSSY, FLYING + [other word], FOX, FREEZE, FRIENDSHIP, FULL HOUSE, GALAHAD, GAMMA, GARGOYLE, GEMINI, GEORGE, GIPSY, GOLEM, GOLDEN + [other word], GOOSE, GRACE, GRANNY, GREEN DIAMOND, GULL, GWEN, HADES, HALF-MOON, HAMMER, HARRIET, HAWK, HAZEL, HELENE, HELIOS, HEN, HERMES, HIGH BALL, HIGH CARD, HOLE-IN-THE-WALL, HOPE, HOPI, HOUNDDOG, HOURGLASS, HUSTLER, HYDRA, ICEBERG, IDA, IMP, INCUBUS, INSECT, IRIS, IROQUOIS, ITEM, JACKASS, JAGUAR, JANET, JANICE, JASON, JASPER, JAVELIN, JENNY, JEZEBEL, JIG, JULIET, JOAN, JOSHUA, JUDY, JUPITER, KANGAROO, KANSAS, KATY, KING, KILO, KITTY, KOMET, LACE, LADY + [other word], LAMP, LAURA, LEAP FROG, LEOPARD, LIGHTNING, LILY, LION, LITTLE + [other word], LOVE, LUCKY + [other word], MAE WEST, MAGIC, MAJESTIC, MAMIE, MANDREL, MARIE, MARK, MARTHA, MAX, MEADOWS, MERCURY, MIGHTY MOUSE, MILLION DOLLAR, MINNIE MOUSE, MONA LISA, MONTE CARLO, MOTHER, MUMMY, NANCY, NAOMI, NAVAJO, NIMROD, NOAH, NORA, NUTCRACKER, OBOE, OCTOPUS, OLD

FAITHFUL, OLIVE, OPAL, OPHELIA, ORION, OSCAR, OWL, OZMA, PACKAGE, PAMELA, PANDORA, PANTHER, PAPERCLIP, PAPA, PAT, PATSY, PEGASUS, PENTHOUSE, PHANTOM, PHOENIX, PINECONE, PISTOL PETE, PLATO, PLUTO, POLLY, PYTHON, QUAIL, QUEBEC, QUEEN, QUEEN BEE, QUEENIE, QUEST, QUICK SILVER, RACHEL, RAINBOW, RAM, RANGER, RASCAL, RAT, RAVEN, REBECCA, RED DIAMOND, RED HILL, RENO, REX, RHUBARB, RITA, ROBOT, ROMEO, ROOSTER, ROSIE, ROVER, RUBY, RUTH, SABRE, SAINT, SAINT + [another word], SALLY, SAN ANTONIO, SAPPHIRE, SARAH, SATURN, SCAMPER, SCOUT, SEA GULL, SEAL, SERGEANT, SERGEANT-DELTA, SHADOW, SHARK, SHENANDOAH, SHO, SICKLE, SIGMA, SILVER, SNOW + (other word), ZEBRA, ZENITH, ZERO, ZYPPER, ZOMBIE, ZULU, ZUNI."

The word FOX is an example of a significant occult code word. F-o-x consists of the 6th, 15th (1+5), & the 24th (2+4) letters of the alphabet, which yield 666.

The reader needs to bear several things in mind. First, the programmers generally have intelligent, well sounding codes, that do form patterns. For instance, a woman's name from the Bible will be used as a code, with subparts or subcodes having other female names from the Bible.

Deeper Illuminati parts will have goddess and god names, and king and queen names for cult alters. These are the names the handler or cult uses--NOT their access codes. The codes for slaves follow patterns.

There are standard and unique codes.

The internal programming alters have the power to change codes if they need to protect the programming. They will have to hypnotically work with alters when they trance out at night. In other words, most of their programming of front alters will be done when a System lies down for "sleep"--more accurately described as "for trance." If the internal alters change many codes, in their efforts to protect the system, they will even make it difficult for the handler/programmer to get into the system.

Ciphers developed rotors that require lines to line up. Some simple schemes using this principle appear in some Monarch systems. This is part of the science of structuring.

Intelligence codes often come from the Bible or popular fiction books. The deeper codes are occult words, often in foreign languages such as Arabic, which is an important language in the upper occult world. Slaves will be given COVER NAMES for ops, and often males receive female names and vice versa.

Very shortly, we will provide the Monarch hypnotic cues (codes) for the multitude of functions that a Monarch's mind must carry out. The type of programming which is placed in a slave varies. For intelligence operations the slave will have to have BONA FIDES, which are codes to allow two people to meet. All slaves are given CONTROL SIGNS which allow them to indicate via a code that they are in trouble. A RECOGNITION signal allows two people to make contact. For instance, the handler might fly his distinctive sounding plane over a slave's house in a pre-arranged signal. It might also be a particular colored scarf, and a particular set of phrases. A GO-AWAY code is a prearranged signal that means it is unwise to make contact. The go-away signal may be simply placing one's hands in one's pocket or turning the porch lights off. A "GO TO GROUND" signal means to go into hiding.

A MAYDAY BOOK exists for Illuminati and Intelligence slaves which allows them to call if they are about to be arrested. A telephone number is left open for just this purpose. Also common universal Illuminati codes can be used by the slave to get set free from police and judges.

Within the Jehovah's Witnesses,

especially their headquarters, the Illuminati uses Enochian language to program with. With Druidic branches Druidic symbols are used. With the Jewish groups, Hebrew is used. Other languages are also used. An Illuminati System can easily have 6 different languages used as programming codes. The foreign language codes will be for small parts of the System only. Special artificial languages are also employed, as well as sign language.

MONARCH MIND-CONTROL CODES

contents:

A. ALPHA (basic)...p.72-78
B. BETA (sexual)...78-79
C. CHI (return to cult)...79
D. DELTA (assassination)...79-80
E. EPSILON (animal alters)...80
F. OMEGA (internal computers)...80-81
G. GAMMA (demonology)...81-82
H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS...82
I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times)
J. THETA (psychic warfare)...83
K. TINKERBELLE (never grow up/alien)83
L. TWINNING (teams)...83-84
M. SOLEMETRIC MILITARY...84
N. SONGS (reminders)...84-85
O. ZETA (snuff films)...85
P. sample alter system codes...86-96
Q. Catholic programming...93
R. MENSA programming...93-94
S. HAND SIGNALS...94
T. Programming site codes (used for slave model codes, etc.)...95

A. ALPHA (basic)

◘ Basic Commands (these basic commands are also found used in many slaves, although there will be exceptions to everything.)

"GET ON YOUR TOES. STAY ON YOUR TOES." means "attention slave" get ready for a command.
"ON YOUR TOES"--is a preparatory command that will be used throughout an entire system.

"IF YOU PLEASE SIR." -From Wizard of Oz, slave says this like "yes, sir."

3-tap code for access.
"FOLLOW THE SNAPS", "LISTEN AND OBEY OUR COMMANDS", "THIS IS FOR YOUR OWN GOOD"
"FIDDLER" = code to take one to Never Never Land

"PUPPET MASTER" -name of master for Marionette or Puppet program
"DADDY" -master "DADDY'S FRIEND"--a user of slave approved by master
"PAPA" -master, "WHITE RABBIT"--master

"YOU'LL SPEAK MY WORDS WHEN I PULL YOUR STRINGS." Puppet programming control of what slave will say.
"SPILL IT" --trigger command ordering slave to speak
"SILENCE" --order means keep quiet

Mr. Rogers Neighborhood's "Land of Make Believe" was used for the programming code script:

"I AM MR. ROGERS
AND I HAVE PUPPETS, TOO
I PULL ALL THE STRINGS
AND I PULL STRINGS ON YOU."

Twinkling of the nose --Bewitched programming to cast spell or order on slave.

"(name of alter), YOU WILL COME FORTH AND OBEY." or "...OBEY AND COME FORTH."
Another basic way of getting an alter would be simply to spin the person and call out the alter's name, or to snap the fingers and call out the name of a front alter.

- Access is accomplished for a number of Illuminati slaves by a message via phone or letter, then a looking glass person takes the system to a location outside of the house, maybe simply to the sidewalk, there the person is picked up. The left hand is then grasp on the soft part of the hand between the thumb and forefinger by two fingers very tightly. This pulls up and alter with an egg in its lap. The egg is then opened via a code and the imps inside the egg to communicate to the ribbons and the computer.

- Access phone calls to slaves may have high-speed codes transmitted that trigger the slave subliminally without their conscious awareness.
- Access to some people is done with computer like jargon "ON LINE" "ACCESS, (then identification), (then color code), (then name)" ", "ENTER", "RUN". Some Systems have their triggers all in computer lingo such as "COMMAND MODE--ALL DISK DRIVES AND HARD DRIVES...ERASE...FORMAT DRIVE...COPY....UNDELETE PURGED MEMORY DRIVE..." Where some of the newer slave programmers are also computer programmers they enjoy transferring their computer lingo to use in controlling their programmed slaves. They may even throw in some FAX lingo such as "DIAL ALL REMOTES...INITIALIZATION - ATSO = OHOaM (HANDSHAKE BETWEEN ALL REMOTES), HANDSHAKE COMPLETED."
- The color of the car to pick up a System may relate to the color coding of the alters to be picked up, such as white exterior, blue interior for a white alter-then blue alter access sequence.

Basic Internal Emergency Color Codes for a System, there are several different "CODE RED"s, etc. not just one in a slave, what follows is not the complete information about the Codes, although it is possible some slaves have a simplified version like this:
"CODE GREEN" --Dr. Green's suicide programming, tied to "no-talk" programming.
"CODE BLUE" --Victim's body freezes in motion and can't move until another code is given.
"CODE RED" --Victim gets angry and violent
"CODE RED" -Another Code Red has the standard Monarch meaning, "serious self-destruct" program
"CODE YELLOW" --Victim gets jealous, angry and wants to violently get even
"CODE BLACK" --Used to get victim's to get on their ritual clothes.
"CODE WHITE" --Code to protect the cult members from arrest. When police see the Code White they treat the people as untouchable. There are code words for Illuminati members to tell police and judges that will automatically get them set free. Masonic handshakes and codes also work well with judges, police & govt. workers.
"CODE 911" --To activate the slave for an emergency calling for superhuman strength. Certain alters will have extra strength.
"CODE 911"--Also used with standard Monarch meaning of "Call your programmer/handler".
"DISARM" (3x)-to get rid of a dangerous alter two snaps + "SHUTDOWN"--to shutdown an alter.

"LET THE KINGS BE KINGS
LET THE BANKERS BE BANKERS
LET THE PRIESTS BE PRIESTS"--saying to justify their Master-slave relationship to the masses of humanity.

The Sun setting the following day was used as a trigger for slave to forget events. For the cat alters a certain word is given to trigger them to go "over the rainbow" after an event in order for them to forget it. "FROM THE RISING OF THE SUN TIL THE GOING DOWN OF THE SAME" --programmed in by using the scripture. "GO INTO THE SEA OF FORGETFULNESS" --a hypnotic structure in the mind to forget. Waterfalls are also used as a hypnotic image to forget pain and memory.

"RETYPE A LETTER" -reprogram, "JEWELS" = programs. "THE CATS & THE FIDDLE NEED TUNED UP"--Slave to handler, I need reprogrammed.

There are three words to trigger a suicide program
1. Bait, 2. [intentionally left out], 3. hook
Another suicide program trigger is when the dominoes fall.
"GO OVER THE BLUFF" (3X)- causes suicide in some alters
SACRED HEART = Catholic/Jesuit suicide program
Some suicide programs are set off with a long tone over the phone along with a code no.

"KERMIT THE FROG" --a type of access code. "KERMIT" may be a code relating to computers, because Kermit is the universal language for connecting computers together. It is a single standard to exchange files between any two systems.

All memories, traumas, and tortures are coded. Body programs are coded. One set of body programs uses Hebrew, Greek, and Druidic letters.

A clone program creates clones of an alter (also called lollipop or lobster program) imagery is that sesame seeds fall off of a hamburger bun and becomes another hamburger.

Codes to all the various basic systems:

Carousel	532342223
Castle System	221435321
Communication	311146623
Double Helix	432443321
Level	211343231
Mensa System	323542321
Pentagram	421136113
Pool of Death	231134421
Puppet	341124321
Solemetric	665421134
Spider Web	321654321
Stairwell	432111132
Quabala	423454334
Tornado	332146444
Umbrella System	314321014

- Alice In Wonderland

The White Rabbit is a programming figure for Alice In Wonderland Programming who will allow you to go to otherwise inaccessible places for adventure. He represents the master. The White Rabbit is an important figure to the slave.

White rabbit gives a wafer (coke-sugar-cocaine) to Alice and says "EAT ME" or "EAT IT AND I'LL TAKE YOU THROUGH THE DOOR" ---takes master into closed part of System, or perhaps over the rainbow.

The Queen of Hearts is also an important figure for commands in the Looking Glass World which the slave enters upon command.
When a deep slave alter is needed to perform they are sent into the looking glass world where a looking glass person carries out the command--but in a way that reality is thought to be a dream. In other words, this is a preparatory command to get the slave ready for abuse.
"USE THE KEY. PUT IT IN THE LOCK. TURN. OPEN THE DOOR...AND STEP THROUGH A WINDOW [or MIRROR] INTO NEVER NEVER LAND."

"SOMETHING IN LIGHTENING TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' RUBY SLIPPERS. CLICK YOUR HEELS TOGETHER AND BE THERE IN A SNAP. (SLAVE CLICKS HEELS) ELECTRIFYING...WITH THE RUMBLE OF THUNDER. BOLTING THROUGH TIME...SO YOU WON'T BE LATE...FOR A VERY IMPORTANT DATE."
(Alice in Wonderland Programming) (This is the wording to use deep alters.)

Cinderella Program. The code word involves something said about the stroke of midnight.

The Melting Pot Program. A very powerful program is activated by melting the slave into his master. The slave will do anything for the master with this program. The melting is the ecstasy that is occasionally experienced when lovers having sex seem to melt into each other. This feeling of ecstasy-melting is programmed to release when the master says these words,
"MELT INTO YOUR MELTED MIRROR
FOR AN ELECTRIFYING RIDE
LOOK DEEP INTO THE BLACK
OF MY MELTING MIRROR EYES.
SEE YOU REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU, REFLECTING ME, REFLECTING YOU...(cont. this several times) UNTIL WE MELT TOGETHER AND SINK DEEP... [words omitted] INTO THE OTHER SIDE."

"MELT INTO MY MIRROR
YOU LOOSE YOURSELF INTO THE POOL OF LIQUID MIRROR
STEP INTO THE LOOKING GLASS, SINK DEEP WITHIN ITS POOL
AND STRADDLE THE DIMENSIONS IN TIME.
I'LL SEE YOU THERE...ALONG WITH MY FRIENDS"

"SEE IT THROUGH THE LOOKING GLASS"-- infinity mirror programming involving mirror image people (alters)

"LOSE YOURSELF IN THE INFINITY MIRRORS."

- Wizard of Oz

The Yellow Brick Road is the script or programmed set of instructions one must follow. It also serves as a runway for alters to take off from their internal world and take the body. "FOLLOW THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD"

There is a code to get through the poppy field (trance state). Some alters to get through the poppy field need to put on a new dress and a new image. The poppy field may be called "the field of forget-me-not". In this way it is linked to the daisies of Dr. Green. To get into the poppy field is easy, it is "SLEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP", see other induction methods on another page.

"THERE'S A PAIR OF MAGIC SHOES TO WEAR WITH YOUR DRESS...SOMETHING IN LIGHTNING...TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' FURRY SLIPPERS."

When the slave is finished being used they return from Never Never Land to Kansas. To do this they are told: "CLICK YOUR HEELS...THERE'S NO PLACE LIKE HOME." They might be reminded "YOU"RE NOW GOING OVER THE RAINBOW TO THE OTHER WORLD."

Tin Man programming-- The Tin Man programming is all purpose versatile program for what ever the master needs done, it means that the slave is a well oiled machine. Sometimes the slave is reluctant to do a job but he is being told that he is a well oiled machine. The exact words may vary with the mission, but the following are exact words,
"LEAVE YOUR SHELL. ACTIVATE: MACHINE. COUNT DOWN ONE TO TIN...."
"SOON WE'LL HAVE YOU PURRING LIKE A WELL OILED MACHINE. ALL OF YOUR MOVING PARTS ARE PIVOTAL AND GLIDING WITH EASE. MELT INTO MY HANDS. TAKE MY COMMANDS. I'LL HOLD YOUR JAW TO KEEP IT FROM SLIPPING WHILE YOU SLIP THROUGH A WINDOW IN TIME."

Program code for slave to shatter their memory of an event (used with electroshock):
"MIRROR MIRROR ALL AROUND
ON THE CEILING ON THE GROUND
SPINNING FASTER ROUND AND ROUND
ARE YOU UP OR ARE YOU DOWN?

ARE YOU DOWN OR ARE YOU UP?
IT REALLY DOESN'T MATTER
BECAUSE WHEN THIS MIRROR BUBBLE BURSTS
EVERYTHING WILL SHATTER."

"GO KEY WEST IS KEY"--several slaves have this code, related to Sen. Byrd & Oz prgmg. GALAXY programming (for the end times) is also connected to the Oz programming.

In upper level Illuminati slaves Dorothy in the Oz story will represent the Mother of Darkness alters, Ozma will represent the Ruler of the Castle, and Glinda will have the Great *Book of Records*. The ring of Glinda (from *Glinda of Oz*, p. 16) gives protection.

- Body Programs

◘ Control program. See Omega Programming- Universal Function Codes for internal system codes for body programs. Sometimes these body programs are filed with a combination of hebrew and zodiac signs. Greek letters are also file no.s of at times of body programs.
Rivers of blood -circulation control program. This program totally controls the circulatory system. The victim may think they are losing lots of blood & go into heart failure.
Octopus- strangulation suicide program

The internal defenses consists in part of body programs that are triggered if the Mind-controlled slave steps out of line. Here is a good list of some of these **body programs each of which has its own codes**:
Auditory problems, Blood flow/circulation, Burning as if on fire, Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, Histamine production, Optic problems, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, and Temperature change.

The suicide programs that can go off include Armageddon, Clowns cutting, Cutter program "Pain is Love", Disembowelment, Drug overdose, Gethsemane, "Hypnosleep", Injection of bleach (poison), Octopus, Red Sea, Shooting Programs (shotgun, russian roulette, shooting family, etc.), War in the Heavens & Wrecking the car.

Along with the suicide programs that can be triggered are programs that jerk the victim's mind every which way, which include: Bee Stinging Program (put in by placing the drugged victim being near large swarms of bees humming & then letting a bee(s) sting the victim), Busy Cleaning Program, Crazy program, Flooding (from Atlantis), Isolate & Hibernate Program, Memory Erasure Program, Pain Programming, Paper Doll Program, Protection by trance, Revolving switching, Scrambling Program, and re-Structuring Programming, Tumbleweed program, Waterjar Shaking program (Ahab stomping the grapes Bible-based program making mush out of the brain.)

Cutting programs are often hidden behind the Bee Swarming program.

Alpha and Omega is a strong program. Sometimes saying "ALPHA & OMEGA" helps alleviate headaches.

- DNA (This uses a lot of number codes.) This is a double-helix which is used as an elevator shaft running down through a system. Numbers are used and the names of cities to go down the elevator shafts. This programming is said to be done in hospitals.

- Card Codes--Regular playing cards have developed from the occult Tarot cards. The four suits correspond to magick, the spades mean the power from the spear of destruction, the diamond means is a double pyramid or demonic power of wealth, and the club is a clover meaning fortune and fate, and the heart means devotion and loyalty. The four suits work well in programming because anything that is broken down in 4's or a multiple of 4 can be coded with cards. Anything that can be broken down into 12's or 13's can be given cards too. Since clocks work off of 12's, card codes work well with clocks. The suits can denote seasons. With jokers one gets 13 cards per suit with four suits gives 365 unique symbols to denote the days of the year. Dominos can also be used on a base 13 code system. The blank will equal 13.

- Carousel System. There is a back side to enter the Carousel.

- Carrier Pigeon (slave's who send coded or uncoded messages) and their contact codes

Birds used for contacts. That is birds in cages are often used as a sign of a meeting place. The contact would say "What did the bird say?" or "A little bird told me..." Then the courier pigeon delivers her message.

"I've come a long long way to see you." words to say by System to John or to person to be met. There is an endless variety of contact phrases to indicate that the right person has met the right person.

Sample Code for passing drugs- "RHINESTONE COWBOY" to which the response from the slave would be "I'M NOT A COWBOY, I'M A COWGIRL."

Emerald ear rings have been the visual signal to customs agents to allow a person carrying drugs through customs.
(SEE D. DELTA for deeper Carrier Pigeon codes.)

- Castle System. May need a special ring worn by and turned by the handler.

- Flower's Program

CSP940YP587 --code to designate a flower tieing 3 generations.
UMBRELLA PROGRAM CODE-- "R x 4 x 5Y58876"

sample correspondences of Gem codes:

1 - Aries - diamond
2 - Gemini - topaz
3 - Cancer - cat's eye
4 - Leo - ruby
5 - Virgo - emerald
6 - Libra - opal
7 - Scorpio - amethyst
8 - Sagittarius - turquoise
9 - Capricorn - black onyx
10 -Aquarius - crystal
11 -Pisces - sapphire

- Potter's Wheel

"STAND IN ORDER ACCORDING TO RANK AND SERIAL NO."- part of a stacking command to get alters in sequence together to work on them. Dominoes and cards are used as part of the stacking cues.

Dr. Star's Programming which places Pentegrams into people uses Sigils as codes--the occult symbols for the various demons, along with a color, a gate, and a number form a complete code.

For example, 1st Gate is the god Nanna, #30, color-SILVER, LADDER OF LIGHTS, GOD OF THE MOON. (see Illustration)

1st Gate

To access a System the abusers often have an object as part of the pickup code, such as a set of car keys, a special coin token, a business card, jewelry, or certain clothes or packages. A Popper liquor drink is knocked 3 times on the table when it is served. (Who would be the wiser that three knocks is an access code?)

- WORD MATRICES

A word-matrix code is where the victim is given two lists of words and then each word on the left list is paired with a word on the right list to form a code.

Randy Noblitt, a therapist, gave an example of a basic pattern for a Word-Matrix. And this is simply quoted from his example to give the reader an idea.

started	xenophobe
between	thoughts
endless	beginning
throughout	forever
get out	trepidation
over	beneath
fun	execute
win	lose
first	then
form	benign
beginning	end
tonight	last morning
thorough	the end

B. BETA (sexual)

■ SEXUAL ALTERS---most of the following codes are for deep sexual alters. In Illuminati Systems these are called Beta alters, in CIA systems they create Beta models whose primary function is to provide sex, usually perverted sex and S&M for the perverts who run our secret government and visible government. BETA models are those who are primary job is sexual, such as service as a Presidential Model (sex slave for a President). These System models are numbered BETA 1, BETA 2...BETA 601, etc

Domino codes for spinners can be 6-3, 6-4, 8-4, 8-5, 10-5, 10-6, 12-7, 12-8. The 13th kitten then would be left blank. Spinner dominos have spinner kittens off of them, when a spinner domino code is used. In this case 6-2 could take you to the Beta level.

"10 LITTLE INDIANS, 9 LITTLE INDIANS...", "1 LITTLE, 2 LITTLE..."--assoc. w/ morse code-call back telephone no.s.
"3 LITTLE KITTENS HAVE LOST THEIR MITTENS..." -The Kitten alters have stepped outside of their programming and need fixed by the Master.

"Hotel California" means a place to have sexual gratification.

Stroking under chin along with "HAVE A BALL TONIGHT" (Cinderella programming)
Stroking under the chin along with "PURR FOR ME KITTEN"
Magic shoes or red slippers are used to switch to get specific sexual alters. The slippers are clicked 3x to get deeper sexual alters.

"COME HERE MY KITTEN, AND LET ME PET YOU. PURR FOR ME NOW...THAT'S A FLUFFY KITTEN. PURR DEEP."
"COME HERE LITTLE ONE."--call for young sexual alter

"PASSION" used 3x with other words as a sexual trigger, such as "SHOW ME YOUR PASSION." Passion is a strong program word for sex.

"RED DOT, SPIN SPIN SPIN, BECOME ANOTHER PERSON." this is said to a mother kitten before she is told which spin kitten to get from her litter. It is a preparatory command meaning "call your spinner".

Spin Kittens "WE GOTTA GET DRESSED...IN 5 MINUTES" along with being spun produces specific sexual kitten.

9 lives of kittens --means 9 sexual alters taken in sequence. When spun in a counterclockwise fashion, the sexual menu is from 1 to 9. With 3 & 5 being oral sex. "Heat of hell" are used as trigger words in this programming. The 10th revolution is to beg to be whipped. "TURN AROUND 10" "SPIN FOR ME." The heat of hell ignites after the 6th spin.

"RIDE PONIES"--means to do sex for both eng. & ger. slaves; "PLAY HORSEY"--sexual games; "MOUNTING A HORSE"--[obvious]
"CAT NAP" --sex; "CAT NIP"--cocaine

Tweedle Dee and Tweedle Dum --S&M programs involving mirror image alters. Not to be confused with Humpty Dumpty self-destruct program.

"SIX IS SEX. SEVEN IS HEAVEN. EIGHT IS GREAT. NINE YOUR MINE."--This means to fall under the master submission, has sexual overtones.

"ITSY BITSY BOOB" --access code pertaining to Betty Boob programming (which is a certain type of female behavior).

For Beta alters the codes may be:
"BETA ONE MARY A=1, B=2, C=3, D=4"
"BETA TWO MARY A=4, B=3, C=2, D=1"
"BETA THREE MARY A=3, B=4, C=1, D=2"
Then these might be said in combination "3412 4321 1234" (x3)
An amer. sys. used w/ Latin Amer. may have a Beta alter activated by the movement of 2 small Mexican flags & a code word in spanish "USTA CA-NATA"(cream).

C. CHI (return to cult)

Chi programming uses a lot of idiosyncratic phrases, and little ditties. Some of the nursery rhymes listed in the song section will be Chi programming. Some of the Chi programming has been listed in the Alpha programming section.

D. DELTA (assassination)

◘ Delta alters --are activated to kill by the following three things: seeing specific clothing, items held in a persons hand, and particular words. Since these items would specific for a particular murder there is no particular specifics that can be given.

◘ Courier Pigeon Alters (In Illuminati systems--these are Delta-Beta alters). "FLOCK" --word meaning the stable of carrier pigeons of DIA

To turn a Genie free, pop a cork: "TURN YOUR GENIE FREE...POP A CORK." An internal controller must activate the umbrella or genie bottle pop the cork program to release a delta or delta-beta alter.

"YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND" I Dream of Jeannie Programming

"YOU-ARE-WHAT-YOU-READ" passbook program. Programming to remember bank numbers and other specific numbers.

"I SENT A MESSAGE IN A BOTTLE."

Distinctive jewelry & clothes.Emerald ear rings used as a signal to others that a message was being carried. Emeralds mean drugs, rubies mean prostitution, diamonds (rhinestones) presidential model work. Red, White & Blue worn sometimes by presidential models.

High level reporting alters forget their messages with "REFILE ##, (name of alter)." Some Systems have one name w/ several different numbers attached to indicate alters within one area and purpose. Sergeant 1, up to Sergeant 60. Or say "Access 1143 Marcy" & then other Marcys are numbered with other numbers. Spaceships & flags are assoc. w/ Sargeant alters.

Delta Black Widow alters have a web, fangs, poison, eggs, and silk strand connectors. Viper is the demon associated with Black Widows, and they are programmed to reconnect their strands if all of the connectors are not taken out.

Index finger pointed at head means russian roulette.

E. EPSILON (animal alters)

These codes aren't known. One method that may be used, for instance, is for the Raven alters who are to tear the body's flesh, the story of Noah's ark where he sent the Raven out will be paired with the word TWIG, and a code formed from TWIG. There are some alters which are to actually act like animals, and their codes somehow tie in with what they are.

F. OMEGA (internal computers)

The Omega programming works along with an Executive Control Board (or Grand Druid Council) and Internal programmers. The Executive Control Board is associated with both numbers of the clock, and precious gems and metals such as "9 O'CLOCK GOLD".

The Beast computer can be accessed with Scripture triggers associated with the Vision of Daniel of the Beast, and its ten toes. The Ten Toes are important part of the code in some models.

UNIVERSAL CODE FOR ACCESS TO INTERNAL COMPUTERS
key manual 33123113211
program computer 22133113332
function computer 11123132221
ren computer 13321321332-55434232312 L\S
55434232312 reenlist
reprogram no.s -2231231; 4432312; 33231223

An input code is 666fff666fff666 the reverse of this code is F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6. One victim's computer ran on code "WAR GAME". Some Beast computers have 666 666 666 as an access code and 999 999 999 as a beast back out and close out code. There are various computers--one on each level. These have some standard codes and some individual codes.

UNIVERSAL FUNCTION CODES
COMPUTER CODE--55434232312 which hold the following codes:

abduction	4511321
anger	4213261
assignment coordinator	1613212
assassination	5332135
bank of lies	3124532
blindness	2566553
brain disorder	6325512
body gesture	1332221
body functions	4311322
call back ritual	6664113
child control	3214441
circle in fields	3332241
confusion	6643252
control	4321341
deaf	3324553
death	1451621
denial	2311444
despair	3223412
distortion	6233322
disorder of bones	4561321
disorder of breathing	5532111
disorder of eating	3342136
division	3211652
false memories	3314532
fear	2665132
fleeing	5613354
game playing	1561321
guilt	4321231
hatefulness	5331241
hopelessness	1112364
illness	1566432
infiltration	2231335
insanity	2144312
inside reporters	1133265
loyalty to group	3364112
mute	2213541

murder	3221456
nonsense	2665443
outside reporters	1132256
reprogram others	4555643
reprogram self	1133432
respond to triggers	4441221
retardation s-	1314555
m-	1314556
sabotage	1135461
seduction	2134121
self body harm	3321343
sex	2116652
shame	3122115
suicide	3113246
trigger	1324652
trigger others	4442211
zombie	3321556

Under each of these codes, other codes may be attached. For instance, under Body Gestures, the following functions are coded and a sample coding scheme would look like this:

talk verbally	3456343
touch chest	2322132
touch hair	3323221
touch mouth	5434232
touch nose	5443232

Rainbow an alter which speaks only in rhymes. Ribbons are in a box with Rainbow. A ribbon might be accessed by several slaps on the face and "Rubicon 2,4,6,8..." (3x)

- Hickory Dickory Dock rhyme is associated with the vortex which is tied to turning the system and also to some death alters.
- Dominoes set off flooding programs to overload the person.
- Program numbers on some slaves are put in by touching the third eye with the index finger and speaking the number.

G. GAMMA (demonology)

In Satan's realm, demons are fathered or split off in families like alters are. There will be a Moloch number 101, and a Moloch 10,321. The victim has alters which are numbered such as Sally 1 and Sally 10. For a better understanding of this area of programming see Chapter 10 section I.

Gamma Programming includes all the demonic activity. In this section one can add the Kabballa's Tree of Life which has alphabet codes, back up programs to regenerate, associated with Greenbaum or Greentree. In the Illuminati slaves, the deeper parts of their system are ritual and the demonology pertains to the various rituals that are done. The following is a sampling of Illuminati rituals. The blood rituals are used to attach demons to possess alters in a particular way. These rituals can't be separated from the programming. They are part of the programming.

Ceremonies:
Assembling of the Quarter Regents
Beltaine with hunts of slaves, fire festivals, and blood rituals
Bride of Satan Ceremony (Mar. 24)
Demon revels
Drawing down the moon
Druid Feast Day on Jan. 1
Duels to the death like gladiators where the heart is cut out and eaten
Grail Mass, the
Grand Climax human sacrifice & sex rituals
Invocation of Hecate as Crone
Lammas sabbat where a female is sacrificed
Pathworking (done before 16 with Cabalistic Tree of Life pathways.)
Rite of Deification
Rod of Light ceremony (consists of text from Cabala, black candles, ram's horn blown, and victim's mother's name sounded)
Sealing ceremony at 19 yrs. for Mothers of Darkness level
Secret ceremony where people paint their faces half black and half white.
Sister of Light rebirthing water ceremony

(victim is bound and then pulled from water and wrapped up in linen, and a green branch is place on the chest)
St. Agnes Eve
St. Bartholomew's Day
St. Walpurgis
Summer Soltstice Orgy

For those who are not familiar with occult terms the following are ritual items: Paten (the holy dish), Athame or Glaive (the knife used to sacrifice with), the wand or sceptre (a ornamental staff which represents authority & usually has an electric shock), and the censer (to distribute burning fragrance).

H. HYPNOTIC INDUCTIONS

"Kaleidoscope eyes" --used in hypnotic induction and spinning

"20, 19, 18, 17, 16, 15, 14, 13,...1"

For many slaves the sign of satan done with the fingers puts them into a trance, and deeper alters come out.

"100, 91, 82, 73, 64, 55, 46, 37, 28, 19, 10, 1."
Touching the head in a particular fashion is done.
"DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER, DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER, DOWN, DOWN, DOWN, INTO THE DEEP, DARK VELVETY MIST, DEEPER AND DEEPER AND DEEPER."

"DEEP, DEEP, DEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP, SHEEP, SHEEP, SHEEP"

"YOU'RE BEAUTY WARMS MY EMBERS. SEE THEM GLOWING DEEP WITHIN THE DARKNESS OF MY EYES...IGNITING INTO FLAME...BLACK FLAME."

Seeing a Hand of Glory (severed left hand) will induct people into Peter Pan programming. (Books describing the occult use of the Hand of Glory in Ireland go back to 1830. It is an ancient practice. Baring Gould's book *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages* describes the recipe for using the hand of glory as a gruesome lantern during the witchcraft of the Middle Ages.)

"I AM THE SAND MAN, AND BLOW SAND IN YOUR EYES" said while simultaneously moving the hand over the face to create the illusion of placing sand in the eyes.

"3-2-1, 3-2-1, 2-1-1, 1-2, 1, You are now relaxed."

Lights, in certain colors and sequences, have been used to trance alters out, for instance a flashing red light may trance certain alters out. Tunnels were used as a powerful hypnotic suggestion. Bear in mind, that people induct a. when phys. or mentally relaxed, b. when their senses are overloaded or sens. deprivation, c. when their equilibrium is disturbed, d. their motion is restricted or e. their eyes are fixated on something.

I. JANUS-ALEX CALL BACKS (end-times)

Main link to a System's programs to ALEX coded 44334223112. Scramble code to ALEX is 34424313221. Individual code to ALEX = 55434232312. Link to JANUS coded 3323432123. Report back- X441062F
Main JANUS tracking/reprogramming code- JAN US 934100569XXY99632 [x3]; its back up code X44420-61F.
(There is a Janis 2 computer at 666 Connecticut Ave. Washington, D.C. Disinformation by the Network is that the PACER computer equipment is called Janus/Janis).
Main AMBASSADOR code 67302986ZZ9861 (suicide/fire)
sub codes- Fire 97643F4200L; Cut 97642C42DIL ; Suicide 97623S4202L; towards violence 97613V4203L
Main EMPEROR - [dot, dot, dot] 79622109MM8611

END-TIME ACTIVATION CODES

Most slaves have end-time programming. When a slave is called in with end-time programming they have pages upon pages of coded messages. A number of Monarch slaves have been de-programmed enough that they began accessing and spewing out pages and pages of these activation codes. Part of a sample of one of these is as follows:

"ISRAEL IS RISING
ACTIVATE 366 UNITED NATIONS
900 BLUE BIRD PILOTS RISE
NATIONS IN PLACE
RED CHINA CALL BACK
COUNT DOWN, ACTIVATE ALEX
3.7 LC
94
CIRCLE FARMS AROUND THE SQUARE
BRITISH SOLDIERS RISE
MOUNTAIN GOAT COME
EASTSIDE OF PEAK
39 ACTIVATE
52 ACTIVATE
42 ACTIVATE
RED CHINA RISE
1.7 ACTIVATE
THE HOUR COMES, A. C. SON
ACTIVATE AFRICA
ARISE IN NUMBERS OF 90..."

A team leader will have a down line of around 4 people--which are coded red ray, yellow ray, green ray, blue ray. When the activation code hits a slave team leader during the end times, they will in turn activate their people, who in turn will have people who are team leaders and have a down line. At least two false callback alarms will be sounded (tested) before the real one.

J. THETA (psychic warfare)

K. TINKERBELLE PROGRAMMING (never grow up/alien)

Capt'n or Cap'n (captain) represents the programmer in Peter Pan programming. Tinkerbelle is a young alter created under Peter Pan programming.

"TRANCE DIMENSIONAL TRAVEL RIGHT FROM YOUR OWN BACKYARD. THE DIMENSIONS OF YOUR PYRAMID ARE TO BE 9 BYE 9 BYE 9 BYE."

Alien programming by NWO (also involves Peter Pan programming)

"RIDE THE LIGHT" -Peter Pan programming meaning to go into hypnotic induction attached to a light that is seen when given a high voltage shock. This is given to make experiences seem like in another dimension.

L. TWINNING (teams)

CROSS PROGRAMMING-- (With for instance a mother and a daughter team)

Two seals are placed on this cross programming, a "seal of cover" and a "seal of rain"

Code: mother - [minus] mother = 3/4 - daughter holds 1/4
daughter - mother 1/4 - daughter holds 3/4

Teams will be given code words for each alter who is part of a 2-System team. One System may serve as a father figure to the other System. Teams will be trauma and sexually bonded, as well as having mirror images with each others names. A leader will have an upline and a downline for the colored rays. A leader will call the different colored rays, to activate their programming.

An Illuminati team ritual to create oneness & open their team boxes up to work together (Illuminati twinning ritual):
the team kneels face to face,
draws a magical circle on the ground,
joins Delta team hands forming a clasp ring.

(Blue is associated with this.)
then they all say,
"Star within a star
Circle within a circle
Mind within a mind
body within a body
Soul within a soul"
Then the team places their hands Palm to Palm, and then speaks 4x,
"Bone to Bone
flesh to flesh
Spirit to Spirit
Forever together- never apart."
Then a 5 pointed star is traced in the air.
To close the Delta team twinning box, the reverse is done.

Then other things are to be said in the joining and opening ritual.

A double deck of cards is used to program an Illuminati team of "twins".

One type of Criss-cross programming involves 1. a flower, 2. the stem, & 3 the root. The root involves blood sacrifices. This programming ties two generations together such as mother-daughter.

M. SOLEMETRIC MILITARY

N. SONGS & NURSERY RHYMES

▪ Songs & Nursery Rhymes Used As Triggers (note all of these songs have been used on other slaves too.)
Songs with Monarch programming meaning & access parts soliciting behavior or thinking include:

NURSERY RHYMES
Brahm's Lullaby
Hickory, Dickory Dock (flips the system)
 "Hickory, Dickory Dock, The Mouse Ran up the Clock [computer], the clock struck one [time for system rotation], The Mouse ran down, Hickory Dickory Dock." "INTO THE MOUTH [vortex] RUNS THE MOUSE, AND FLIPS THE HOUSE [turns the system over)
Froggy Went a Courtin' He did Ride
Hickory, Dickory Dock
I had a little pony
I'm in Love With a Big Blue Frog
Jack and Jill
Mary Had a Little Lamb (call to ritual connotation)
Tones of "Mary had a little lamb" or other telephone created tones, such as high pitched noises to call people to meetings.
Mary Mary Quite Contrary (reminds the slave that abusers are all-seeing)
Old King Cole (Old King Cole was a merry old soul, ...he'd call for his masters 3 [the 3 programmers])
Peter, Peter Pumpkin Eater
Puss in Boots (this story is porn programming)
Ring Around the Rosy
Ten Little Monkeys Jumping on the Bed
Three Blind Mice (omega programming connotation with hour glass)
Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star (Sometimes associated with "I'm dead.")

SONGS (Most of the Beatles' songs were used for programming. Charles Manson was programmed with Beatles' music. The programmers know ahead of time what are going to be the next hits, and they regularly call in slaves and hypnotically make the lyrics to be cues for the slaves before the music comes out. For instance, the lyrics of "Ain't that a Shame" will make certain alters angry. For another slave the lyrics "Everything is relative, in its own way" reminds the person of the cult family & obedience.)----
Angie (popular song for programming)
A Mighty Fortress is Our God
Back in Black
Blue Velvet

Butterfly

The Candyman Can (Candyman represents drug use for Monarchs, plus other things.)

CHRISTMAS CAROLS (Christmas carols were used a lot on Monarchs.)

Country Roads song with the programmed meaning take me [the slave] "home" to a meeting site.

Crazy (to reaffirm loyalty to the master)

Deja Vu

Die Walkure

Fire and Rain

Frere Jacques (Catholic "Father John", sexual abuse connotation)

Get Me A Ticket on a Fast Train (substitute "master" for "baby" in song)

Grandma's Feather Bed

Ghost Riders

Green Green Grass of Home (go home program, slave is not happy 'til they go home to green fields

Greensleves

Hallelujah chorus (many Christian songs like this one are played while the victim is tortured.)

Handel's Messiah

Have Thine Own Way Lord ("thou art the potter, I am the clay, mold me & make me..." Ill. Charismatic slave programming.)

Heartache Tonight (song used to announce a ritual over the radio)

Hotel California (sexual/ritual connotation, the song says, "go to the chamber of the Master's Feast, We are programmed to receive." This song also tells the story of how LaVey started the Church of Satan in 1966.)

I Surrender All

Imagine (John Lennon presents the New Age script for people to be "nowhere people.")

John Brown's Body

Lucy In the Sky with Diamonds

Little Red Riding Hood (song played with hunts of slaves)

Mary was an only child (from Art Garfunkel's Angel Claire album)

Moon River

Over the Rainbow (obvious Wizard of Oz programming)

"Playing with the Queen of Hearts, knowing that it really smarts, the Joker is the only fool who'll do anything with you" (reinforces the warning not to play (tamper) with the programming. The Queen of Hearts is the emergency Mayday signal to a handler. To play with this will really smart-hurt.

National Anthem

No More Mr. Nice Guy

Revolution 9

Rivers of Dreams (by Billy Joel. words are about "walking in the dark, going through a river...turn on the light on your internal world."

Satin Sheets

She's Leaving Home

Sins of the Fathers

Southern Nights (loyalty to the programs--the leaves and trees)

Stairway to Heaven

Teddy Bear (Programmer, helpless teddy bear slave connotation)

Tennessee Waltz (handler is "forced" to prostitute slave)

The Blood Will Never Lose Its Power

Tom Dooley (suicide, "hang down your head Tom Dooley, hang down your and...)

Victim of Love

"When you wish upon a star" song used for programming.

White Rabbit (Alice In Wonderland Theme--made into a triggering Karaoke CD.)

Wooden Heart

Yellow Submarine (drug connotation)

O. ZETA (snuff films)

Zeta is the sixth letter, and it's ancient meaning was a sacrifice.

P. SAMPLE CODES FOR ALTERS OF A HYPOTHETICAL SYSTEM NAMED MARY

These codes are purely a representative model-not any particular real system. **The overall system code at times consists of [birthdate + programming site codes + birth order + number of generations family was in the Illuminati.]** For our hypothetical system Mary we have the hypothetical system code of: 6-13-51- 14 - 02 - 12.

In order to give the codes for a hypothetical alter system we will have to explain some things as we go.

The Programmers have for each slave both medical programming files, and a grey or black binder with the programmed access, trigger, codes & cues, & structure. A typical Illuminati system will be a cube (although spheres and pyramids are also used). The principle alters will be the "a" alters. A typical section of alters will consist of a 13 x 13 grid of alters. These are alters who live in a world together and must function together. A 13 x 13 section will have 13 families of "a" through "m" alters. The "a" alters will be the primary alters that the Programmers will interact with. The Programmer may call up an "a" alter and ask it to go get the "c" alter in its family, rather than directly asking for it.

This initial page of alter codes will be the primary or "a" alters.

If we are dealing with a 13 x 13 x 13 cube of alters, then the initial page has 13 "a" alters of each section. Each of these alters will have an access code which will often include the following components:

AN ASSIGNED COLOR + AN ALPHA NUMERIC CODE + A PERSONALIZED MAGICAL NAME. This will equal 1/3 their access code. These code words must be repeated three times to pull the alter up. However, if an alter is trained well, and hears his master's voice, an alpha-numeric code can pull the alter up. For many of the alters, the reversal of their access code puts them back to sleep. This is an important point, because some alters would be dangerous to leave in control of the body.

The "a" alters are regular alters. Many of them have been hypnotically age advanced to see themselves as teenagers or adults. Sometimes "b" and "c" alters are also aged. The "d" through "m" alters are generally left as they were split and most of them are infantile, with little concept of how old they are. The little ones will be the ones who often remember the programming very well, and know things about the system. The top alters will also sometimes receive personal names from their handler. This is in addition to all their codes. If the alter is responsive to its master, the personal name might pull the alter up too.

Do all of the alters get charted? There are several groups of alters which get charted separate from the rest or don't get charted at all. Because of the competition and distrust between the different programmers, they often place in secret back doors into the person's mind that only they know about. Worlds of secret alters loyal and devoted to the programmer may be built into the system and not appear on the regular charts. The core, and some of the primal splits from the core will not appear on the regular grids. They will be placed on a separate sheet, and their codes will be in some magical language. The Illuminati commonly employs 20 magical languages, and Hebrew, Latin and Greek are also often used for charting the core and its primal splits. Enochian is a good example of a magical language used by the Illuminati. Some alters will be created solely by the slave in order to cope with life. For instance, say the slave is travelling with someone who is not a handler, but who is a dangerous person. This dangerous person murders several people and forces the slave to help. The slave is likely going to have front alters out, and they are simply going to have to create new alters to meet the demands of the situation. These alters made to deal with one-time emergency will just slip into cracks in the system. Lots of odds and ends alters end up in the nooks and crannies within a system just detached and floating. The programmers and the victim work hard at structuring and cleaning up things--but the honest truth is that trauma-based mind-control is messy. Any time you shatter someone's mind into thousands of pieces with horrendous torture, you have a shattered mess, in spite of the good fronts that the programmers are able to construct.

Some of the more elaborate access methods are for alters that are not on the "a" chart. Hour glass alters have entire sentence access codes. Deaf & blind alters need their access code signed on their hands by moving their fingers up and down, etc. End time alters may have access codes that may entail reading an entire page. Reporting alters are often small children, that are hidden in each section, and may require slaps to the face or jabs with a needle to pull them up. Spinner kittens will be accessed via their mama cat, who acts like a Madam in a "cat house". The codes for this was given in the Beta section codes.

The reader will be given the hypothetical codes (which resemble closely the actual codes of an actual scenario) for our hypothetical Mary. A Sample Chart of the "A" alters--these are the primary alters-- has been prepared on the next page in the same fashion as it would appear in the handler's 3-ring binder.

Mary's Core Protector 1 will have a shutdown code of "REVERSAL 1 BEGINNING" and the second Core Protector will have the shutdown code of "REVERSAL 2 CREATION". Of course, these codes are said 3 times. The first three alters on the far left section at the top of the chart are Silences who can be woken up by singing. Also at least one of these, will wake up by a kiss from the prince (programmer) to the third eye area. The first alter can be shut down by "COSMOS 15 31 06 2BAB PINK". One of the groups of alters attached to one of these early alters is "MA.C3.10-53 Rejects (7) 10-53". To shut this alter(s) down just say the reverse of the access code.

A mirror image of each of these alters exists too. The mirror images can be pulled up via a three step process. The birth memory in our example will be coded as A5 11 79. The spider torture memories that are attached to these alters is A5 10 79.

The reader will notice the following on the hypothetical chart on the previous page for the first Section (which is numbered 6 to be deceptive): This section is front alters. Basic code pattern= color + Genesis + no. [1 thru 13] + letter [a thru m]. Individual codes Ist section general-"N.I.F.6", 1st section mother Eve "EV.E5 10 51 ACE" (Eve is the balancing point & the ace code is high or low). The alter Explorer is "EI.G7", Mammy "MI.H8", Angel "Red, AI.I9 Jack Genesis 4" (or it could be done "red, AI.J10 Genesis 4"), George "Silver, GI.K11", Zsa Zsa "gold, ZI.L.12", and Shadow "Clear SI.M13". You won't find on the main chart codes such as: Eve's memory "EI.D5.2.1952 ACE" or the Infant alters-- "1-000 10-49 REJECTS 3-9" The master may say for example: "Green GENESIS 1-A" (3 times) to get this alter which is the balancing point.

Fragments/dead alters were dumped into areas named concentration camps and given the names of the famous german concentration camps. The camps were placed under the Mt. of Olives. Fire or Bomb children are found throughout the system and are triggered to come up by programming. They come up behind other alters and make them burn. Some of this level can be woken up by saying, "It's time to wake up in the morning" (7 times), which is in contrast with most codes which are said 3x.

Another way to look at it, is that the alters are on 4 dimensional structure and they require a 4-dimensional access code. Height, depth, width, and color are the four dimensions. This breaks down for this 1st

6-13-51-14-02-12 MARY

SECTIONS

LEVELS	6	5	4	3	2	1	0	12	11	10	9	8	7
	City of Refuge, silences,core prtctors,fronts	Gatekeeper section in Rubicon	ATLANTIS army section	House of David, entertain ment sect.	PHEONIX reprgram section	1st major cmptr	ShangriLa Mothers sect.3 pt. cd. w/ ring	Grande Mother section 3 pt.cd	Guardians of Vail 3pt.cd	ß-open umbrella	δ-rub genii bottle, # in Ger.	Exec.Council-Grand Druids-Judges	Gems-
6	Pink,Alpha 1, 6-13-51, Cosmos	White, Revelation 1-a	Orange, PTAH 1001-13A	Blue, Reuben 2001-13a	Yellow, Michael 3001-13a	MA, Brown Rainbow 1-13a	Grn,Kaether Letheb, 4001-13a	Purple, Aries 5001-13a	Black, Leviticus, 6001-13a	Red,Love1 a,6+6=6 =18	slvrEnoch 1a,6+13 +51=70	gold, Abilene	clear. מ ש א mond H V H I=26
5	White,Alpha 2, 6-13-51, Universe	Orange, Revelation 2-a	Blue,HORUS 1002-12A	Yellow, Simeon 2002-12a	Brown Gabriel 3002-12a	Green, MA Rainbow 2-12a	prpl,Coch maLetheb, 4002-12a	Black, Taurus, 5002-12a	Red, Leviticus, 6002-12a	silver,Joy1 a,6+6+6 =18	gld,Elijah 1a,6+13 +51=70	clear, Amarillo	Pink ס Emerald
4	Orange, Alpha 3, 6-13-51, World	Blue, Revelation 3-a	Yellow, SET 1003-11a	Brown Levi 2003-11a	Green, Raphael 3003-11a	MA purple Rainbow 3-11a	blk,Binah Letheb, 4003-11a	Red, Gemini 5003-11a	silver, Leviticus, 6003-11a	gold,Peac e1a,6+6+ 6=18	clr,Joel 1a,6+13 +51=70	Pink,Austin	White נ Topaz
3	Blue, Bravo 1, 8-10-53, Beginning	Yellow, Revelation 4-a	Brown AMOUN 1004-10a	Green, Judah 2004-10a	Purple, Raziel 3004-10a	Black, MA Rainbow 4-10a	Red,Chesed Letheb, 4004-10a	silver, Cancer, 5004-10a	gold, Leviticus, 6004-10a	clear,Faith 1a,6+6+6 =18	PnkAmos 1a,6+13 +51=70	White, Beaumont	Orange ל Cat's Eye
2	Yellow, Bravo2, 8-10-53, Creation	Brown Revelation 5-a	Green, HORUS 1005-9a	Purple,Dan 2005-9a	black,Meta tron 3005-9a	MA red Rainbow 5-9a	slvr, Pechad Letheb, 4005-9a	gold, Leo, 5005-9a	clear, Leviticus, 6005-9a	Pk,Longsu ffg1a,6+6 +6=18	whi,Isaia h1a,6+13 +51=70	Orange, El Paso,	Blue י Ruby
1	Brown,Bravo 3, 8-10-53, First day	Green, Revelation 6a	Purple,RA 1006-8a	black, Naphtali 2006-8a	red, Haniel 3006-8a	MA silver Rainbow 6-8a	gold,Tipher eth Letheb, 4006-8a	clear, Virgo, 5006-8a	Pink, Leviticus, 6006-8a	whi,Gentln s,6+6+6= 18	Or,Hagga i1a,6+13 +51=70	Blue Dallas	Yellow, ט Emerald
0	Green, EV.E5, Ace, Genesis 1	Purple, Revelation 7a	black, HATHOR 1007-7a	red, Gad 2007-7a	silver, Uriel 3007-7a	MA gold Rainbow 7-7a	clear,Hod Letheb, 4007-7a	Pink, Libra, 5007-7a	White, Leviticus, 6007-7a	Org,Good ness1a6+ 6+6=18	Blue,Eze kiel1a,A+ B=C	Yellow Ft.Worth	Brown, ח Opal
12	Purple,El.G7, King, Genesis 2	black,Revelati on 8a	red, ANUBIS 1008-6a	silver, Asher 2008-6a ✲	gold,Samu el 3008-6a	clear, MA Rainbow 8-6a	pink,Nizah Letheb, 4008-6a	White,Sc orpio, 5008-6a	Orange, Leviticus 6008-6a	B,Wnderfu l1a,7+7+7 =power	Ylw,Mala chi1a, A+B=C	Brown, Houston	Green, ז amethyst
11	black,Ml.H8, Queen, Genesis 3	red, Revelation 9a	silver, SHU 1009-5a	gold, Issacar 2009-5a	clear, Phoenix 3009-5a	MA pink Rainbow 9-5a	white,Iesod Letheb, 4009-5a	Org,sagit tarius, 5009-5a	Blue, Leviticus, 6009-5a	Ylw,Couns elr,7+7+7 =power✲	Br,Jeremi ah1a, a+b=c✲	Green, Laredo	Purple ו Turquoise
10	red, Al.I9, Jack Genesis 4	silver, Revelation 10a	gold, Nepthys 1010-4a	clear, Zebulun 2010-4a ✲	Pink, Phoenix 3010-4a	MA white Rainbow 10-4a	orng,Mal cuthLetheb, 4010-4a	Blue, Capricorn 5010-4a	Yellow, Leviticus 6010-4a	BnMighty Gd1a,7+7 +7=pwr✲	Green, Jonah, a+b=c✲	Purple, Galveston	Black ה Black Onyx
9	Silver,Gl.K10 TEN Genesis 5	gold, Revelation 11a	clear Typhon 1011-3a	Pink, Ephraim 2011-3a	white, Phoenix 3011-3a	MAorange, Rainbow 11-5a	Blue, Mezla, 4011-3a	Yellow, Aquarius 5011-3a	Brown, Leviticus 6011-3a	Gn,Jehova h1a,7+7+ 7=pwr✲	Purple, Moses1a, a+b=c✲	Black,Waco	Red, ק crystal
8	gold, Sl.L12 NINE Genesis 6	clear, Revelation 12a	Pink, Hermes 1012-2a	white, Mannassas 2012-4a ✲	orange, Isolation 3012-2a	MA blue Rainbow 12-4a	Yellow, Mezla, 4012-2a	Brown,Pis ces, 5012-2a	Green, Leviticus 6012-2a	Purple,I AM1a,7+7 +7=pwr✲	Black, Nathan1a ,a+b=c✲	Red, Corpus Christi	Silver, צ Sapphire
7	clear, Sl.M13 eight Genesis 7	Pink, Revelation 13a	White, Sphinx 1013-3a	Orange, Benjamin 2013-1a	Blue, Isolation 3013-1a	MA yellow Rainbow 13-1a	Brown, Mezla, 4013-1a	Green, Aries, 5013-1a	Purple,Levi ticus 6013-	Black,Virgi nMary,7+	Rd,John theBapt1	Silver,San Antonio	gold, ע Moonstone

section as: COLOR (4th dimension) + Genesis (Section code) + 1 (level) + "a" (depth).

The following message will be used on the phone for this System's recording machine, this example has been used nationally. "IF YOU WOULD LIKE TO MAKE A CALL PLEASE HANG UP AND TRY YOUR CALL AGAIN. IF YOU NEED ASSISTANCE, PLEASE DIAL YOUR OPERATOR. CODE 911." This will cause section 1 or section 2, etc. to call their master. Also, standard Illuminati Hand signals work with Mary.

"ALONE AND CRYING (3X)"- is a code for a few special parts not on the first grid.

Section 2 gatekeeper alters. Basic code pattern=color + Revelation + no.[1 thru 13] + letter [a thru m] In our hypothetical example: "ORANGE REVELATION 4-A" (3X) However a shortcut is "REVELATION 4" and the primary Revelation 4 alter will come up. "ORANGE REVELATION 4 B" would get a small child on the pedestal with Revelation 4a. At times the handler will say "THE DECK IS DOUBLE-DECKED" in order to activate the clone doubles of all alters in a particular area--such as the front area of the system. The clones are tied to the Pink Room of the dollhouse-looking computer. Since alters are also coded to cards, a FLUSH will pull up an entire section. Special alters who skinned men alive are kept in black holes in Section 2. They are special trauma alters created solely by the victim as a safety measure.

Section 2 computer (like all levels) is empowered by an emerald blue light. This power source was deactivated by unscrewing the light to the left (which took it physically out so to speak) and then saying "PEACE BE STILL" (3X). If "PEACE BE STILL" is not said three times then the War in the heavens program kicks in. Also "DAD WEEPS OVER HIS CITY" must be said when deactivating the computer otherwise the "children" (alters) become sick and everything kicks back in--which it does eventually anyway if the deeper computers are not deactivated or taken out.

Section 3 has programmer alters & fragment armies, not to be confused with the clones which hide everywhere. The clones, by the way, can be identified with serial no.s at base of head gear such as 151.00 [system birth date]. This sections has 3 faceless Programmers called the 3 adepts of Atlantis. Each of them has a different color of hair. They may also be the commanders of armies--the commanders of the Egyptian armies have names Ra, Horus, and Set.

Section 4 alters are Entertainment alters. Basic code pattern = Color + double number + a name of a one of the 13 tribes of Israel + the number of the alter again (3x) Example: BLUE 2001-13A REUBEN 1 (3X) However, the color doesn't always need to be said it is a sufficient shortcut to call the alphanumeric code three times.
Second example 2002-12A SIMEON 1 (3X). The numbers of the 2000 code go up while the corresponding number 13 to 1 go down. In other words it is a double code. The Tribal names are arranged according to their Biblical birth order.

Mother Kitten 8, 10 and 12 have ten spinner kittens under neath each of them. To get a spinner kitten, one gets the mother kitten and then has her in the proper position which is the over-the-rainbow mode. The choice of what spin kitten to get is "WE GOTTA GET DRESSED...IN 3 MINUTES." 3 minutes means spinner no. 3. Specific instructions such as "PURR FOR ME KITTEN" gives the abuser fellatio. Tweedle Dee & Tweedle Dum is a S&M program. "5 FIDDLE" and "FOLLOW THE YELLOW BRICK ROAD" are important for the slave to follow instructions. The alters will be sent to never-never land where what they do is unreal. Some kitten alters are keyed to pop out if certain areas of the body are touched, such as the space beside the big toe, or the thighs. A handler will also have standard hand signals for things, such as putting his hands on his thighs to mean "Come here and take care of me, Kitten." "COME KITTEN, TO PAPA COME"

"BLUE TOPAZ" serves as 4 keys. Pisces is associated with Blue Topaz. There are also 4 keys which are: silver shoes, sun bright, birds singing, and yellow road.

Section 2 & 1. Reprogramming sections. At this point, the computer codes given previously apply, SEE OMEGA CODES on previous pages. The first major computer services the top 6 sections and has a red room, a closet, a pink room, as well as other rooms. Actually the computer should be set in at Section 0, which would break up the grid evenly, but since our Mary is hypothetical we put the front main computer at section 1. A system like this will have 13 computers/1 per section and 5 computers which set between pairs of sections, which join a pair of sections together, and then 2 main computers. This means a System like Mary's will have 20 internal computers. With all the codes and a fair understanding of the alters in a section, it is a good day's work to shut down a computer. Before one could possibly get all the section computers shut off, they would reprogram (reboot) themselves back up.

Computer erasure codes include: "FULL HOUSE ACES HIGH. ALL TRUMP. FULL HOUSE ACES LOW." The drawers in the dollhouse can be pulled out with "ROYAL FLUSH"(3X). Another code is "PINK SECTION 5. FULL HOUSE. ACES HIGH. 2 DEEP."

A partial code to a computer is "...8-9 RED."

Our hypothetical Mary might be accessed by a woman who taps on the shoulder and says, "PHOENIX 360 [tel. area code], OUT OF ORDER". The library alter has an important access ring. A "Button Bright" alter type works with the librarian. The dwarfs are accessed by "ISOLATION + no." Judges which sit on the council give warnings to alters "CAT EYE AT THE DOOR." This reflects the programmers' control. The judges have the "Keys to the Kingdom." "MR POSTMAN WAIT AND SEE" indicates a message from the master. Ribbon alters have the names of archangels. Silver cords are attached to the ribbons.

Section 0. Mothers of Darkness alters. basic code pattern= SILVER + LEHTEB [which is bethel or house of God spelled backwards] + [who knows what else] + a blue topaz ring being turned on the master's finger a certain way.

Green is a sensitive color for this System. Some alters may be accessed from certain areas in the System via 4 tones, and others by pin pricks at certain locations in the body, along with their verbal code. The Reporting alter can be accessed by repeated slaps across the face. There is Ultra Green Section tied to the Cabala (Green tree). The Library in the big castle, which is guarded by lions and other big cats, has a passage way in it to a second world. Codes with the Cabalistic Tree of Life involve Cabalistic magic and its symbols. This section is guarded by a hostile entity. Certain rings, topaz, quartz, diamond, ruby, black onyx etc. are used for triggers. Certain rings are needed to get into certain parts of a System, such as the castle. To access the Mothers, the Black Onyx ring must be rotated. The programming of a ring may go something like this, "This ring fills Daddy's house with stars...Catch a falling star, put it in your pocket."

Section 9. Delta-Beta alters. Kept in a genie bottle. Obviously something is rubbed to get them out.

"BUTTON BUTTON, WHO'S GOT THE BUTTON, BUT ITS THE KISS OF DEATH" this code is involved with the "good witch" who kisses upon the forehead. Buttons are on the boxes of Programmer Green and are constructed onto the boxes so they can be used to open the boxes up.

Section 7. This hypothetical system also has a series of codes based on gems--ruby, diamond, etc. which have numbers

7= perfect number=the day God rested

Unfinished Chart showing a sample of how the programmers begin to connect card codes / color codes / alter positions / runways / trance depth

Presenter/Front World-▨

North

X AXIS

clubs/hearts

spades/diamonds

CARD CODE 6-8 7	6	5	4	3	2	1	▨ 13	▨ 12	▨ 11	▨ 10	▨ 9	▨ CARD CODE 8-6 gold 8
8	4-10 7	6	5	4	3	2	1	13	12	11	10-4 gold 10	▨ clear 9
9	8	2-8 7	6	5	4	3	2	1	13	Q-2 gold 12	clear 11	▨ 10
10	9	8	K-A 7	6	5	4	3	2	A-K gold 1	clear 13	12	▨ 11
11	10	9	8	J-3 7	6	5	4	3-J gold 3	clear 2	1	13	▨ 12
12	11	10	9	8	9-5 7	6	5-9 gold 5	clear 4	3	2	1	▨ 13
13	12	Yellow Brick Road runway 11	10	9	8	7-7-7-7 wild cards Jokers 7	clear Major runway for alters 6	5	4	3	Y AXIS 2	1
1	13	12	11	10	9-5 gold 9	clear 8	MIRROR IMAGE WORLD 7	6	5	4	3	2
2	1	13	12	JACK-3 gold 11	clear 10	9	8	7	6	5	4	3
3	2	1	KING-ACE gold 13	clear 12	11	10	9	8	7	6	5	4
4	3	CARD CODE 2-Q gold 2	clear 1	13	12	11	10	9	8	7	6	5
5	C. CODE 4-10 gold 4	clear 3	2	1	13	12	11	10	9	8	7	6
CARD CODE 6-8 gold 6	clear 5	4	3	2	1	13	12	11	10	9	8	7

Gatekeeper rotation

West

East

AXIS

spades/diamonds

South

clubs/hearts

attached to the codes. An Hour glass w/ 12 disciples like grains of sand tied to Jolly Green Giant programming which have sentence access codes. Each sentence is a phrase of satanic philosophy. The bottom level is called the Hell Pit and contains the City of Petra. The City of Petra has an erasure code. "YELLOW - CUTTER ROOM 7 SECTION 7---ROYAL FLUSH--LA CUTTER EGGS" Invisible field section 7. Room 7 -- cards has eggs with demons. Lacutters are like imps and are invisible. They are assigned to guard various things in the system including the cutting programs.

"Dad" "Catch a falling star".

Main computer protected by deaf and dumb alter using a sign language equation as its access code and the reversal of its access code is its shut down code. The Black Master is a Master Programmer.

Each of the 13 sections of 169 alters (a section is a 13 x 13 grid of alters) will then have a computer assigned to it. The computer is made up of dissociated parts of the mind--which are like alters, but have not been given histories or names. Each section has a computer which makes 13 section computers. Section 1 and section 7 (see the grid chart) are main computers. The first is the main computer for the top half, and the second is the main computer for the bottom half of the System. The second main computer is in the hell pit, and has been put in at the lowest level of the mind. Section 6&5 computers are connected by a connecting computer, as well as 4&3, 2&1, 0&12, 10&9. This makes 5 connecting computers. In total then we have 13 section computers, 2 main computers, and 5 connecting computers, for a subtotal of 20 computers. Since things are being built on the basis of the magical number 13, six more computers are installed which are decoy or false computers for therapists to work on. This makes a total of 26 computers (or 2x13).

Since there are 26 letters of the alphabet, this lends itself well, and each computer is assigned a letter of the alphabet. Since the computers are put into the slave when it is a young child, the child has just learned how to count and say the alphabet.

The Illuminati has been using a large dollhouse with 26 rooms using 13 colors of paint, giving two rooms per color. Each room is a computer. In accord with the practice of double coding, each letter of the alphabet is given its sequence number, so the names for the computers are A1, B2, C3, D4, E5, F6, G7, H8, I9, J10, K11, L12, M13--the thirteenth is assigned the 1st main computer.N1, 02, P3, Q4, R5, S6, T7, U8, V9, W10, X11, Y12, Z13. Rather, than use the number 13, the number 0 will be assigned, thus changing things to M0, and Z0. This is simple enough for a child's learning mind, but difficult enough that it serves as a viable code. As codes are assigned, the bottom of the alphabet is assigned the top (front side) of the system. The middle point M0, is the normal access point for all the computers for the handler. The code for this is associated with the name of an airplane hanger, so that the concept of taking off into the sky (trancing can be associated with it.)

Each computer needs an access code to go along with its alpha-numeric name. A deck of cards lends itself well to a code of 13. Bear in mind each computer has a color assigned to it. Colored scarfs and dollhouse rooms were used with electroshock to teach the child his color coding.

When the programming is going on trance depths and runways(mental image for flying off into a trance) and the structure of the System will all be tied together in one neat package. Everything is built on its own x-y axis. Each 13x13 grid has the middle rows both vertically and horizontally set up as runways. The x-y axis also makes up the hourglass lines or the butterfly wings. Both images are used with slaves.

Because thing are set up in thirteens in Mary's system, and things are double coded, thirteen becomes 13-1 and one is 1-

13. This allows us also to link 13-1 and 1-13, so that everything becomes a circle. The circle within a circle, box within a box concept, triangle within a triangle situations makes the slave feel he is trapped in an infinity loop of programming that has no end and no beginning. 13 and 1 make 14. An entire deck of cards can be used in a double code that also adds to 14, such as the 8 of spades and the 6 of diamonds, or the Ace of spades and the King of Diamonds. Here then is the codes for Mary's computers. Two cards from opposite suits that add to 14. Since a deck of regular playing cards came originally from Tarot cards, the playing card used as a code also carry some occult significance to the codes. It is also training the child who is programmed this way to be interested in cards. And everytime the child plays cards they will reinforce at an unconscious level their computer coding.

The computers will then have programs set in on 13 x 13 quadrants. Quadrant 6.6 will have a program such hopelessness. Other quadrants may hold aloneness, recycling, cold, heat, burning, cutting oneself, pulsating loud heart beat, and hundreds of other programs. These programs have the type of codes assigned them that are given in the Universal Function Codes. Many of the functions can receive a standard code, but other items require individual codes. Telephone tones are frequently used to be able to key in (that is access or trigger) parts of the computer program matrix. Dominoes also are used for the computer programming. The dominoes are put in so that the programmers can get a dominoe effect, if they want to set off a series of programs. Dominoes and flashing sequences of lights were used to train the child to automatically respond to a certain pattern of dots.

Our hypothetical Mary will also have hundreds of other codes for all kinds of miscellaneous things such as the following random codes: "RUBY RED LIPS" "TO HAVE POWER" AND "TO BE THE POWER", which are also found in the Tall Book of Make Believe in the Shut Eye Town. Dominoes help with the code: "2-4-6-8 WHO DO YOU APPRECIATE?". More examples are, "I LOVE DADDY." "JACK BE NIMBLE JACK BE QUICK 13-1 12-2..." "PUMPKIN HEAD"--an access code. To go away- "Ta RA RA BOOM-DE-AYE", "CRYING OVER YOU (3X)", "SILKEN GIRDLE"-- a golden caterpillar plays a bittersweet tune. A gold pocket watch with Roman numerals is associated with the words "Eagle on it."

When Mary gets scared and begins to get into revolving switching, sometimes spinning can be slow down by saying,
"10--YOU ARE SLOWING DOWN
9--YOU ARE SLOWING DOWN
8--YOU ARE GETTING SLOWER AND SLOWER..."

A system's coding is a reflection of their programmer. If the programmer is a pilot which many of them are, then they may have pilot lingo in their codes, such as the system may be turned by pitch & degrees. If the programmer is a sailor the system may have nautical codes, such as "RED RETURN RUNNING", "SAFE HARBOR" (for "Home"), and DOWN RIVER (away from "Papa").

Q. Catholic Programming (by Jesuits etc.)

KEYS TO THE KINGDOM = world domination by mind control
VOW OF SILENCE is a keep quiet program activated by "THE WALLS HAVE EARS & THE PLANTS HAVE EYES SO YOUR SILENCE IS TANTAMOUNT TO SUCCESS." This is explained to the victim that the sea shells and the plants have the ability to hear, and that a sensitive occultist (programmer) can psychically pick up what the plants and sea shells hear.
"MAINTAIN IT" --is a command to maintain the Vow of Silence "MAINTAIN IT & LISTEN."-- a command to keep silent and listen to a command.

"ENTER INTER INNER DIMENSION TWO" - this is a standard Jesuit infinity program (2 is a sacred voodoo no.)

R. Mensa Programming (by MENSA)

"17 21 13 46" is an Illuminati code meaning a MENSA layer

Sample Mensa codes:
"727 + E=MC SQUARED + 3.1415962 + PI"
"A+B=C, B+C=A, C+A=B"
"TIC TAC TOE + C CROSS, PI CROSS"

The MENSA codes are sequences of 6 numbers.

S. HAND SIGNALS

misc. common signals

Finger to forehead--
One ring finger bent at 90°--access wave
Rotated pencil--with certain words--rotates the system
finger swung the counterclockwise way closes portals.
Right Fist to forehead--OBEY
Fist with right hand cupping left hand, the left is like the letter c, and the thumb is outward and the fist inside, the left hand then moves 3 times over the knuckle--access signal
Left hand of slave laid on top of handler's hand-sign of submission
Hands behind back of head--I'm master
Right Hand with thumb & index finger making an L shape on chin/check
Hands on inside of thighs by handler--come to me Kitten and service me.
Hands locked folded interwoven backward--you can't break "the circle"
Handshake with index and middle finger held straight out--"You are one of us."
Grip called the lion's paw--access greeting opening and closing the hands or large circles with index finger opens portals.
Palms rubbed together counterclockwise
Kiss on center of head--kiss of submission of slave to handler
Palm of hand touched--sexual access point for some models
Sign of Satan-- Hail Satan! used for Monarch & Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves as an induction. The alter who is holding the body goes into trance, & a deeper one replaces it.
Thumb twiddle--rotating the thumbs around with the two hands clasp--S&M
Touch of center of forehead--access point
Vulcan Peace Sign--Illuminati/occult greeting
Wave with Finger and thumb together-other digits extended
Winks at the system were used to convey meaning.

----LIFE "OVER THE RAINBOW"----

After indexing & rereading this book, the co-authors realized that we had not explained "over the rainbow." Some alters live "over the rainbow" and some do not. Both types will use the term "over the rainbow", but with different meanings attached. For those who live "over the rainbow", they serve their masters in such a deep hypnotic trance that they perceive reality like it's a dream. When their memories surface they are so unlike normal memories that a system in therapy may not know what to do with them. They have been described as similar to the pictures in the old T.V.s when the vertical hold would go out of control. Deeper alters, who live "over the rainbow" experience memories/life in the following fashion: faces & porn cameras are airbrushed out of their memory, distinctive marks in the perpetrators such as scars & wrinkles are airbrushed out, colors & lights are very bright due to the total dilation of the pupils while in deep trance, and there is no sense of time for these alters. These alters are trained to "TRANCE SEND FORWARD THROUGH TIME". By understanding the programming, the codes, & triggers, those alters who lived "over the rainbow" can recover from the mind the full memory, without the distortions created by dissociation.

T. Partially correct PROGRAMMING SITE CODES. The following site codes are not totally accurate. Also, the Intelligence groups use what are called Cryptonyms, which are two-letter digraphs such as the "MK" of MK-ULTRA. The digraph can indicate a type of operation or even a location. An operation may have its cryptonym changed in the middle of its operation.

Programmer	Programming Zone	Area/Code
Armstrong	63	94XCCD
Astor	36	Florida 59XCBB
Bournell-Hightower	19	
Brown	30	59XBMN
Burcham	329	Texas 92XBMM
Gaston	61	Colorado 1XCDF
Haggin	743	Kentucky 47XB0
Harrick	263	Colorado Springs
Johnson	95	
Mannass		
Mentor	21	Colorado 61XBXX
Nathan	56	New Mexico
Owens	963	106XBJK
Pantu	71	Kansas 011X0EG
Patterson	117	Kansas
Savior	49	
Major Strange	14	1Z440x72080020366
Strong	52	81XCBC
Suttenfuss	103	
Colonel Taylor	16	Kentucky
Weir	561	Texas 33XBCB

SAMPLE CODES. The following are shown to display how **disguised** some of the codes appear.

ACCESS CODE	REPROGRAM	Commence Sequence	End Sequence	Result
Wait, wait!	Don't go! Don't leave	Why? I don't know!	I don't know! Oh! Oh!	causes pai
You're mad.	You're Mad. NO, I'm not.//	Yes, you are. I feel it.	No stop assuming you// always know how I feel and you don't. I do./	crazy& /worthlessness

This type of internal programming sequence is carried out by a series of alters, who each have thei little "innocent" phrase to say in the sequence. ◘ What follows is an "**8 BALL INFINITY LOOP**"--"I'm mad I hate you! I hate me! I die. I lie. I'm pie in the sky. I hate you. You're mean. mommy, daddy, sexx, and drugs. Rocks and rolls my bed at night, twiligh child, dark with rage. Sexx is written on my page. My mouth is gross. I hate you dad. I'll chop it off, I hate your guts! I'm lying it's not true. I made up because I'm crazy. I must have some unconscious latent sexual desire for dad so I fantasized this scenario, this movie of lies in my head. I'm dead I'm dead. I'm red in bed. He said, "no way I never! so I crazy, I sick, I cry on dick. Fu-k you dad. I'm sorry."

This is included to illustrate that codes may take on some bizarre appearances.

HYPNOSIS IN PROGRAMS, & OTHER USES

The programmers will begin their programming by extreme torture. After a certain amount of torture the victim is willing to say or believe anything to stop the torture. At this point a thought will planted into the victim's mind. This thought will be linked to a false memory put in via hypnosis or movies, or other method, and it will be linked to a command put in by hypnosis etc. and the original thought, the command, the false memory will be linked by a single emotion which will link them all together. The result will something like this: it is two weeks before Halloween (thought), I must get ready for Halloween rituals (command) because I have always had a habit of going to Halloween rituals (false memory). If I don't I will have a heart attack and die (memory of torture linked to thoughts).

Programming is layered in. Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each alter (personality) of the victim is used as if it is a component of a large system. The result is that no alter (personality) is the whole, but only a cog in a great machine. Can a single cog rebel against the whole machine? It is very difficult for a single component of thousands of components to rebel against the abusers.

Alice In Wonderland Programming--going down the tree, going through the mirror, going under neath something or growing tall

ALICE IN WONDERLAND PROGRAMMING AS IT PERTAINS TO AN ALTER GOING DOWN IN TRANCE FOR INTERNAL PROGRAMMING

The internal programmers (and some other alters) have the ability to send other alters into deep trances. One of the programs for doing this is based on the Alice In Wonderland Theme and it was experienced like this for a level 2 alter who managed to stay in communication with her deprogrammer:

When the alter went down in her mind she went down on the inside of the trunk of a tree (like Alice In Wonderland). At the bottom she saw a keyhole, a table, and on the table was love potion #9. She automatically drank the love potion which shrinks her to a dot and then she goes through the keyhole. So normally this process means she goes through the keyhole. She managed to stay in contact with her deprogrammer during this deep trance. After the key hole she saw thousands of looking glass mirrors. Everything got smaller as she went down the tree. She became a dot. She drinks love potion no. 9 and comes back with it. A tree comes and wraps itself around her and loves her. As she ascends (comes up in trance) she stretches up and enlarges. In coming up out of trance she gets stuck at level 8 due to some interference from deeper alters. She, in accord with her programming, senses her Master's love.

(Normally she would have simply tranced out, and another alter would have taken her place and she would have no recollection of the entire process. The alter has been programmed to have backup amnesia. Backup amnesia means that one doesn't remember that one lost time, one doesn't remember that one forgot, etc. In short it means you don't remember that you don't remember.)

This is an example of hypnosis used internally by the programming and the Programming alters to control other alters. The deepening of the trance was given the imagery of Alice falling down the tree.

In the various stories used in programming, there is some part of the story that can be used as the story line for trance induction, these include:
Wizard of Oz--going into the poppies,
Star Wars--time warp, riding the light
Star Trek--being beamed, replicators etc.

Hypnosis is used to anchor suggestions

about sleep patterns, panic programs, phobias, health healing programs and health problems programs, pain control and pain programs, motivation programs, a suicide program called "hypnosleep", an insanity program, and countless other uses.

Hypnosis is used to steer a person's mind in the direction that they have been labeled. For instance, if they have been selected to become a doctor, they will be programmed for success as a doctor. New patterns of thought, feeling and behavior are inserted to build confidence in the goals of the Illuminati. Positive experiences are used to help boost the person's feelings, and then the new messages are anchored "imagine these messages taking root. Your new messages are growing stronger and stronger."

The Alice In Wonderland programming theme is used in air-water programs and mirror programs which the Illuminati, the CIA, NASA, the Jesuits and others like so well.
The idea is that there exists a mirror world which is a reversal. Along with it is attached the idea that the slave can enter into a timeless dimension of time, or as some refer to it "interdimensional time travel." Later, the victim will be further brought under the spell of this mirror programming by going to locations around the nation, like the Magic Time Machine restaurants in San Antonio and Dallas, TX where mirrors are placed on doors, ceilings, walls, and restrooms of the establishment and programming themes are part of the everything at these restaurants. The handler may tell the slave, "LOSE YOURSELF IN THE INFINITY MIRRORS."

When hypnotically programming in programs, the Programmers place in many types of images and programs. Some examples would be having the concept of obedience equal the fountain of youth. The fountain of youth flows in the victim's mind unless they step out side of their orders. This can be linked to the Shangri-la story, where a woman ages as soon as she leaves her place in Shangri-la. Another example, is the hypnotic imagery involving the formation of an island from a volcano. The story is turned into a programming script to allow the System to be radically restructured. This Volcano programming is a System's turning program. A volcano erupts from deep down, and lava pours into the sea. Mountains are pushing up from deep in the mind. To survive people must cross from the old to the new island on a bridge that naturally forms. Fire births the new territory and destroys the old. The new mountains develop trees which become safe places for the alters to roost upon.

HYPNOTICALLY BUILDING IN STRUCTURES

Later in the book, the art of building structures internally in the mind of the victim will be covered. However, since the process involves hypnotism it would be appropriate to discuss briefly how hypnosis can begin to work a tree structure into the mind of the child. First, the programmer hypnotically suggests that his penis is a growing tree. Later, the programmer might begin, "You know those big trees in the park that look so big and straight and stretch way up toward the sky? Stand up and be one of those trees. Stand up really straight and tall as tall as you can be, and stretch your arms out toward the sky like branches on that big oak tree. Now those big trees have long, deep roots that keep them from falling over. Feel your feet go down down through the floor, just like roots on the big strong oak tree."

Final note: there is no way that this book could give every last song or story that has been used for programming, nor was it the intention to do so. We have wanted to point out the popular story lines used, although we have missed some such as the Chronicles of Narnia and Little Red Riding Hood (which is used in several ways along the lines of you think you're going to Papa's, or Grandma's house & you end up with a wolf). Our list left out many programming songs--all the Rolling Stone's songs, Alabama's Old Flame, etc.

DECEIT

CHAPTER 5

SCIENCE NO. 5- THE SKILL OF LYING, THE ART OF DECEIT

The rule of thumb that the programmers/handlers go by is that they will say anything to get the job done. A CIA handler will tell his agent in the field whatever will work to get the field agent's cooperation on a mission. There is no height nor breadth nor length to these people's deception. They have successfully kept some deceptions active for decades, if not for centuries.

THE USE OF FICTION

The history behind the Wizard of Oz programming is interesting. It suggests that the Wizard of Oz has had an important part in the occult world all along. One of the secrets of the Mystery Religions, especially the Egyptian Isis mystery religion was the ability to use drugs and torture to create multiple personalities. The word Oz is known to have been used by its author as an abbreviation for Osirus. Monarch victims have the "golden penis of Osirus" placed into them.

The Grimm brothers, who were cabalistic jews, gathered the folk occult stories together. Their stories are full of spells, trances, and drugs. Sleeping Beauty is put to sleep, and the trigger to wake her is a kiss on the lips. These are serious hints that the occult world didn't stop programming people with dissociative states and triggers when the ancient Egyptian empires fell. Instead of using modern lingo such as "hypnotize", they would say "cast a spell."

Later in Freemasonry, the Right Worshipful Master would "charge" (meaning hypnotize) an initiate.

The occultist Baum, a member of the Theosophical Society, was inspired by some spirit who gave him the "magic key" to write the *Wizard of Oz* book, which came out in 1900. The book's story is full of satanic activity and satanic thinking. The story was chosen in the late 1940s to be the basis for the Illuminati/Intelligence community's trauma-based total mind control programming. As a way of enhancing the effect of the programming, Monarch slaves are conditioned to place trigger items into their lives. When the movie was made, Judy Garland, who had lived a life touched by the occult world's abuse, was chosen to act as Dorothy. Judy's later husband, Mickey De Vinko was a satanist and the chief assistant to Roy Radin, a rich satanist who worked with the Illuminati, and who controlled the "Process church" covens which had as members mass murderers Berkowitz and Monarch slave Charlie Manson. There are several members of the Carr family, who are also tied into both De Vinko and Radin's Process Church and the Illuminati. With the numerous long term connections between the *Wizard of Oz* books, and movie to the highest levels of the occult world, it is not without reason that one can theorize that the original series of 14 Oz books had an ulterior motive behind them.

The 14 books of the Oz series are: 1) *The Wizard of Oz*, 2) *The Land of Oz*, 3) *Ozma of Oz*, 4) *Dorothy and the Wizard in Oz*, 5) *The Road to Oz*, 6) *The Emerald City of Oz*, 7) *The Patchwork Girl of Oz*, 8) *Tik-tok of Oz*, 9) *The Scarecrow of Oz*, 10) *Rinkitink in Oz*, 11) *The Lost Princess of Oz*, 12) *The Tinman Woodsman of Oz*, 13) *The Magic of Oz*, 14) *Glinda of Oz*. These books are still being sold, and are being read to children who are being programmed with trauma-based total mind control.

The 14 books came out in various editions. The originals came out in 1900 and shortly thereafter. In the 1930s, the 1940's, and the 1950's the words were retype set and given different pages. (When working with a survivor it might help to identify what decade the edition the slave was programmed with, because the pictures and the page numbers varied from edition to edition.) Of course, having good pictures is an asset in programming, because the child will visualize off of the pictures when building its internal world.

In addition to this, large Wizard of Oz theme parks are being built by the Illuminati to provide places to carry out programming and to reinforce the programming which traps the minds of Monarch slaves. The best example of this, is the audacious MGM Grand complex in Las Vegas, although other theme parks around America also use a Wizard of Oz theme.

If you have read Fritz Springmeier's *Be Wise As Serpents* you will know how the Theosophical Society ties in with Freemasonry, Satanism, and Lucis Trust. Several famous members of the Theosophical Society include:

- Adolf Hitler (a Satanist who practiced human sacrifice, & who had HPB's book at his side.)
- Mahatma Gandhi (a Hindu guru considered a god by some of his followers. Gandhi was successful with the British in part because of the Theosophical Society.)
- H.P. Blavatsky (The founder of the Theosophical Society. She referred to herself as HPB. She was initiated by Illuminatus Mazzini into Carbonarism , a form of Freemasonry, illumined by the Great White Lodge in 1856, was part of the Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor, and spent lots of time with the Eddy Illuminati family in Vermont, who were well known mediums. She also was a member of the occult fraternities the Order of the Druses, the Adoptive branch of the Ancient & Primitive Rite of Freemasonry, & the hermetic masonic rites of Memphis and Mizraim. She was trained to handle live snakes by Sheik Yusuf ben Makerzi, the chief of the Serpent Handlers, and she was hypnotized by occultist Victor Michal and to some degree from 1866 under his influence.)
- Alice Bailey (head of Lucis Trust)
- Henry Steel Olcott (an important occultist)
- Elvis Presley (a Monarch slave)
- Manly P. Hall (an Illuminati Theta Programmer, and at least a Grand Master within the Illuminati who sat on the Grand Druid Council.)
- Frank Baum

The man who wrote the book *The Wizard of Oz* was a member of the Theosophical Society. L. Frank Baum lived in South Dakota and created *The Wizard of Oz* book as a theosophical fairy tale incorporating the "ancient wisdom" of the Mystery Religions. The books have so much material from inside the secret world of the Illuminati, that the few who understand the Illuminati wonder if Baum wasn't an insider. The moral of the book is that we must rely upon ourselves, for we alone have the power to save ourselves. This was part of the original lie of Satan in the garden. Satan has simply dressed up the same original lie into different packaging and is distributing it worldwide as the most popular American fairy tale.

L. Frank Baum explained how he came to write the book, "It was pure inspiration....It came to me right out of the blue. I think that sometimes the Great Author has a message to get across and He has to use the instrument at hand. I happened to be that medium, and I believe the magic key was given me to open the doors to sympathy and understanding, joy, peace and happiness." (Hearn, Michael P. ed., *The Annotated Wizard of Oz*. NY: Clarkson N. Potter, 1973, p. 73.)

In Baum's time, the head of the Theosophical Society, H.P.Blavastsky had been putting out her journal called *Lucifer*. In other words, I highly suspect Baum knew what the Theosophical Society was all about, and that he himself was deeply into the occult. The book *The Wizard of Oz* came out in 1900. (It wasn't until 1939 that the movie was made.)

This next section will cover the numerous parallels between the *Wizard of Oz* material and the occult world and the occult world's programming. This is broken up into 3 sections:

PARALLELS BETWEEN
A. THE WIZARD OF OZ BOOK & OCCULTISM
B. THE WIZARD OF OZ MOVIE & ILLUMINATI RITUALS
C. THE WIZARD OF OZ SERIES OF BOOKS AND MONARCH PROGRAMMING

For those readers who are unfamiliar with the occult world, some of these parallels at first may seem stretched. When one sees how many parallels there are, then occult nature of the books begins to sink in. The authors could provide the reader with more parallels between Satanism and *The Wizard of Oz* book, but we believe the following will suffice. (Some parallels may also apply to the movie.)

A. THE WIZARD OF OZ BOOK & OCCULTISM

▪ Auntie Em represents HP Blavastsky's "Mulaprakriti" and Uncle Henry represents HPB's "Unmanifested Logos".

▪ The carnival huckster (later seen as the Wizard) is advertised as being connected to the royal families of Europe. The Royal families of Europe are secret Satanists, from powerful occult bloodlines.

▪ Dorothy is brought to Oz by a cyclone. The word cyclone originally was the greek word cyclone which means both a circle or the coil of a snake. In other words, the snake takes Dorothy to Oz.

▪ Dorothy's three companions represent the mental, emotional, and physical bodies that HPB wrote about. Dorothy acquired these three companions just as Theosophy says we will when we come into incarnation. To quote HPB "There is no danger that dauntless courage cannot conquer; there is not trial that spotless purity cannot pass through; there is no difficulty that strong intellect cannot surmount." (Algeo, John. "The Wizard of Oz: The Perilous Journey", *The Quest*, Summer 1993. Wheaton, Il.: Theosophical Society in Amer.,p. 53.)

▪ In the book, the Tin Woodsman was an ordinary being of flesh, but a wicked witch casts a spell on him. He kept chopping off parts of his body, which were then replaced by a tinsmith, until he became the first bionic man, with a completely mechanic body. Boy, hasn't the Illuminati been trying to do this one!?

▪ In step with Wizard of Oz mind-control programming, the wicked witch & naughty children cannot stand water but dissolve. Robotic clones are created in the minds of Monarch slaves which can only be mentally dissolved by mentally placing water on them.

▪ Dorothy goes questing in Oz. Theosophists (New Agers, Satanists, etc.) go on quests.

▪ Oz is shaped like a Mandala with Emerald City in the center, an impassable barrier, four-sidedness, 4 symbolic colors, the circle and the center. The colors and directions given in Oz may also have other symbolic meanings in the occult. For instance, Emerald City is green and green is the fourth point of the Eastern Star (women's Freemasonry) & Satan's color.

▪ The route that Dorothy follows in Oz has the shape of a T with its 3 points defining an inverted triangle.

▪ The Yellow Brick Road suggests gold, the perfect metal. Gold is considered to be divine & the source of wisdom by the Illuminati. HPB had written "There is a Road, steep and thorny, beset with perils of every kind, but yet a Road, and it leads to the very heart of the universe." This was the yellow brick road that Baum the Theosophist sought to portray in his fairy tale. The book contains a great deal more perils and adventures on the road than the movie.

▪ The article shows that the great teacher is a humbug but Dorothy and her own companions have the abilities to help themselves if they only will realize their own powers through the help of the good witch of the south. This is in line with the Theosophical Society's, the Church of Satan's, and other occult groups teachings which teach that the individual has the capabilities within themselves to achieve anything. One of the Theosophical Society's publications states, "Prepare thyself, for thou wilt have to travel on alone. The teacher can but point the way." ("*The Voice of Silence*" as quoted in "The Wizard of Oz" article, *Quest*, Summer, 1993 p. 54.)

Part of the mind set of Satanism is that reality and fantasy become blurred. This blurring has been part of the brainwashing that is being systematically given to American children. Within Monarch slaves they have an incredibly difficult time trying to differentiate between reality and fantasy because of all the mind programming they have been subjected too. There are several techniques which will determine for Monarch survivors if their memories are real. In the board game called *Illuminati!,* put out by people connected to the Illuminati, the game states, "Don't believe any of this, it is all true." These are the type of double-bind self contradictory statements that Satanists love to spew out. Monarch slaves are programmed full of double-binds.

With the Satanist's penchant for blurring reality in mind, read the following quote where the President of the Theosophical Society admiringly describes the Wizard of Oz, "Part of Baum's joke is that things are never what they seem. Dorothy seems to be a simple and harmless little girl, but it is she who kills the wicked witches of both East and West. The Scarecrow seems to lack brains, but he has all the ideas in the company. The Tin Woodman seems to lack a heart, but he is so full of sentiment that he is always weeping. The Cowardly Lion seems to be a coward, but he takes brave action whenever it is called for. The Wizard seems to be great and powerful, but he is actually a humbug. Oz seems to be a glorious and delightful land and Kansas to be dry, gray, and dull--but Oz is a world of illusion and Kansas is really home. Things are not what they seem, in Oz or Kansas."

B. RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN THE MOVIE & ILLUMINATI RITUAL.

- The close relationship between Dorothy and her dog is a very subtle connection between the satanic cults use of animals (familiars). Those who read Vol. 1, may remember the example written about on how Illuminati Kingpin Alfred I. du Pont's dog Mummy served as Alfred's familiar spirit. Animals are very often used in ritual. This connection is very subtle, perhaps too subtle for it to be worthy of mention, except that those in Satanism will see the significance, even though others won't. What is trivial to one person may not be to the next. A Monarch slave as a child will be allowed to bond with a pet. The child will want to bond with a pet anyway because people are terrifying by this point. Then the pet is killed in porn to traumatize the child. This happens quite frequently.
- The Rainbow--with its seven colors have long had an occult significance of being a great spiritual hypnotic device. Constance Cumbey, in her book *The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow*, which exposes the New Age Occult Movement, correctly writes, "The Rainbow (also called the Antahkarana or Rainbow Bridge). This is used as a hypnotic device."(p.261) The Supreme Council of the 33rd° of Freemasonry has used the rainbow on the cover of their magazine. In a book teaching Druidism (as in Illuminati Druidism), *The 21 Lessons of Meryln*, the Rainbow is described as "A true sign of Magic...it exists in both worlds at once!"
- Elvira Gulch is a woman who owns 1/2 of the county where Dorothy lives in Kansas. She is shown later in the Land of Oz transformed as a witch. Many of the Illuminati elite are rich and lead double lives. People who meet them at a ritual will see the dark side of these rich people. At the rituals, people are tranced from drugs, chanting, and mind control; they are "over the rainbow."
- Professor Marvel uses a crystal ball which he claims was used by the Priests of Isis. Isis and Osirus are both part of the Ancient Egyptian

Mystery religion and modern Satanism.

- Kansas is black & white, Oz is in color. Reality is downplayed in witchcraft and satanism. Make believe is considered more colorful than reality. Also as an escape from this world, Satanists use drugs to enhance their perception of colors. Some of the famous writers took drugs which put them into altered states of consciousness in order to release their creativity.
- Both good and bad witches in Oz carry staffs. In Satanism & the Illuminati, Priestesses also carry similar staffs. Also the idea that there are good and evil witches--white and black magic is straight from the occult, and follows the Illuminati's gnostic beliefs.
- Several scenes involve transference of power via transference of slippers from a witch. In Illuminati ritual, to transfer power, a Matriarch, or Mother of Darkness will kill the person in a position of authority with a strike on the forehead with a special mace like staff, and then put on their slippers. Ruby colored slippers are actually used as a symbol of authority at the Matriarch level in the Illuminati. The shoes are said to be golden at the Mothers of Darkness level in the Illuminati.
- The bad witch uses poison, poisoned apples and poisoned brew. Satanic covens in real life do this same thing.
- The wizard is portrayed as someone who rules and is benevolent. In witchcraft, wizards do rule (even though in some groups wizards are simply called witches.)
- Winged monkeys in the haunted forest, harken back to the pagan cultures which placed wings on various animal idols.
- The trees are alive like animals in the film. The Illuminati believe that the trees have spirits. In one of the Oz films, even the stones have personality and talk. This comes straight out of Druidism.
- The Tin Man is a person which has been part of Illuminati ceremonies. The first initial ceremony that children of the Illuminati may remember is where a Tin Man with an ax watches over their presentation to the coven. If the parent presents the child, nothing is done, but if the parent refuses to present the children, then the Tin Man in the ritual will use his ax to sever the child's head on a chopping block. (The Tin Man will also appear in Tin Man programming, and a Tin Man's Castle may well be built in the Monarch slave's head, but the point here is that the Tin Man is also part of ritual.)
- Dorothy kills the wicked witch of the west by a sharp blow to the forehead with the witch's staff. This is what is done in the Illuminati, when an elderly witch is being replaced. In both cases, whether in the movie or in real life in the Illuminati, when a witch is killed the people have a ceremony. In real life in the secret world of the Illuminati, a scroll is used to certify that the witch is dead both physically and spiritually. (The movie had this in it.) Just one example of the thousands of Illuminati Grande Dames killed in ritual like this is the recent billionairess Dorris Duke, who was ritually killed in 1993 on Halloween, also called All Hallows Eve, in the Beverly Hills, CA area. The Illuminati method for killing a Grande Dame and passing her spiritual power on is done with reverence. No blood is to be spilt out of respect for the elderly woman who gives up her life willingly. At death, the last breath is inhaled by the replacement to transfer the power.

There may be as many as 2,197 Grande Dames at such a coronation. The Grande Mothers (whose Systems are mistresses for Satan and hierarchy leaders) and the next rank, the Grande Dames, are often veiled in ritual and would wear robes with different colored lining. The different colors of linings show the different grades. A typical Grande Mother vestment or robe is a black satin & velvet dress with a draped neckline, and ritual symbols down the center of the robe. After someone like Dorris Duke willingly gives her (their) life, her head is served on a silver platter at a banquet. For the deeper alters of a high level slave, this is part of their way of life; they are told it is their birthright and heritage. Such alters will not be able to identify with the culture at large. To give up their programming, means giving up their magickal powers and their culture, which they have had to work hard for. To leave they would need to see something that they perceive as better. They are locked into their slavery due do to their exposure to only a secret Illuminati culture and value system. Because of their dissociation with the rest of their own System of alters, they don't perceive a need to change their lifestyle anymore than a Bushman would be able to feel a need to wear shoes. Why should the Bushman want shoes, if he has gotten along without them? Why should a high level slave want change, when they have gotten along without it? Experience shows that during deprogramming most of the lower level alters will want to escape their abuse, but the higher level ritual alters are so separated from the abuse they don't want to give up their status and culture.

◘ Throughout the movie, scrolls are used. As stated, Moriah continues to use scrolls for their official ritual functions.

◘ The wicked witch of the west says that her question was not "to kill or not to kill" Dorothy?, but rather HOW to kill Dorothy for "these things must be done delicately." This is exactly the attitude displayed within the Illuminati.

◘ The film has occult items such as crystal balls in several scenes, haunted castles, magic and a benevolent wizard.

◘ At one point the Lion says, "I do believe in spooks [ghosts], I do, I do, I do, I do." (Today, intelligence agents are also called spooks.)

◘ The Lion, Tinman, Dorothy and the Scarecrow must prove themselves worthy to receive the benevolence from Oz. The occult is full of rituals where the participant must prove himself worthy.

◘ The phrase "seeds of learning" is used in Illuminati ceremonies. Staffs like the movie has are used by various occult groups. These staffs often serve as stun guns, so that shocks can be applied during ceremonies. The shocks may be applied so that the victim doesn't remember the ceremony.

C. PARALLELS BETWEEN THE WIZARD OF OZ SERIES OF BOOKS AND MONARCH PROGRAMMING

The following are parts of the Wizard of Oz Monarch Programming, which is a base programming put in when the child is very young. Some of the slaves know portions of the Wizard of Oz script word-for-word.

◘ Dorothy is told she doesn't have a brain if she has gotten into trouble.

◘ Dorothy is looking for a place where there is no trouble which is a place "over the rainbow." To escape pain, alters go over the rainbow. (This is a.k.a. in Alice In Wonderland Programming as "going through the looking glass".

◘ Dorothy becomes unconscious, the world begins spinning, and then she see disjointed pictures. This also happens to Monarch slaves. Later in the film, Dorothy states, "My! people come and go so quickly." This is exactly what happens to the Monarch slave whose multiple personalities come and go. When the multiple personalities switch in and out very fast a spinning process can start which can be dangerous if it doesn't stop. Just like most hiccuping stops on its own, the rapid uncontrolled switching (which can be triggered by stress) usually stops on its own. Systems which subconsciously know they are going to be tortured and used may out of a subconscious fear begin this revolving switching. It is said that the Monarch victim will become comatose if the rapid spinning goes on too long. Personalities are switched in what are called "tornado spins" or "tornado spinning" and personalities called "spin off" personalities come up according to the number of revolutions the slave is commanded to spin. By spinning the slave, the master can choose what sexual perversion he wants as each "spin off" personality has been trained to carry out a different perversion.

◘ Over the rainbow in Oz is for the Monarch slave to be in a trance, and into a certain area of the programming. To be fluctuating at both ends as an observer and not a participant or to go to the other extreme and become a participant. The theme song of the movie goes, "Somewhere over the Rainbow...there's a land where the dreams that you dare to dream really come true." These lyrics are a method to hypnotically confuse the brain to perceive that the "over the Rainbow experience" (which is usually horrible abuse) is a "dream". The dissociative mind is only too happy to call the trauma a dream, which is lived as a reality for a moment, but is nevertheless recorded by the mind as a fantasy. The term for this is cryptoamnesia, which means the process where the proper functioning of memory is hypnotically messed up. The slave's internal world becomes "reality" and the external real world becomes the Land of Oz which is perceived as make-believe.

◘ Dwarfs are used in the internal programming. (Hollywood hired a large number of them for the movie's cast. They are called Munchkins in the movie.) Mengele, known as the programmer Dr. Green, was especially interested in experimenting traumas on dwarfs.

◘ For bona-fides & recognition signals, the Monarch slaves wear diamonds to signify they are presidential models, rubies to signify their Oz programming for prostitution, and emeralds to signify their programming to do drug business. Rings are also used to signify what activity the slave is doing, and what rank or level they are in the occult.

◘ Monarch slaves are taught to "follow the yellow brick road." No matter what fearful things lie ahead, the Monarch slave must follow the Yellow Brick Road which is set out before them by their master. For some slaves used as track stars, their Yellow Brick Road was the track they had to run. The Yellow Brick Road is the runway in which alters were trained to fly off from to exit their internal world and take the body. The Yellow Brick Road also pertains to the assignment that an alter is given. To follow the Yellow Brick Road is to go down the road that has been assigned by command. The Yellow Brick Road programming is placed into the child's mind via the Yellow Brick Road of the Wizard of Oz story. Remember the key words, "Follow the Yellow Brick Road." To get someone onto the Yellow Brick Road you must know the access code to get them through the poppy field. The color codes are important to get an alter through the field of poppies.

"Fiddler" is important word to get to the yellow brick road (it signifies the programmer in the context of "the programmer is here, go over the rainbow") and then the alters eat what is variously called MUSIC or a SCRIPT or A LETTER which are words meaning "instructions".

In the 1900 edition of the book on page 31-32 says (programming cues are in caps), "She closed the door, locked it, and put the KEY carefully in the pocket of her dress. And so, with Toto trotting along soberly behind her, SHE STARTED ON HER JOURNEY. THERE WERE SEVERAL ROADS NEAR BY, BUT IT DID NOT TAKE HER LONG TO FIND THE ONE PAVED WITH YELLOW BRICK. Within a short time she was walking briskly toward the EMERALD CITY, HER SILVER SHOES tinkling merrily on the hard, YELLOW ROADBED. The sun shone BRIGHT AND THE BIRDS SANG SWEET and Dorothy did not feel nearly as bad as you might think a little girl would who had been SUDDENLY WHISKED AWAY FROM HER OWN COUNTRY AND SET DOWN IN THE MIDST OF A STRANGE LAND....The houses of the Munchkins were odd-looking dwellings,...ALL WERE PAINTED BLUE, for in this country of the EAST BLUE WAS THE FAVORITE COLOR...FIVE LITTLE FIDDLERS PLAYED AS LOUDLY AS POSSIBLE AND THE PEOPLE WERE LAUGHING AND SINGING, while a big table nearby was loaded with DELICIOUS FRUITS [the programs] and NUTS, PIES, and cakes, and many OTHER GOOD THINGS TO EAT [scripts to ingest]."

◘ Monarch slaves are threatened with fire, like the Scarecrow. They also see people dismembered like the Scarecrow was dismembered. For them it is not an idle threat. The front alters also have hearts full of pain like Scarecrow.

◘ Certain alters are not given courage and most have their hearts taken from them. The alters who are programmed not to have hearts are hypnotically told the same thing the Tin Man says, "I could be human if I only had a heart." (See Chapter 4, where it discusses hypnosurgery.)

◘ Some alters are taught they are stupid and have no brain. Scarecrow is asked the question, "How can you talk without a brain? Scarecrow answers, "Some people without a brain can do a lot of talking."

◘ Emerald City is used in programming. Emerald City in the programming will be well guarded and hard to reach. Several important things will be placed inside the Emerald City, including the deeper Illuminati alters.

◘ Castles are used in the programming. Lots of castles, either in the mind's imagery or purely demoniac are placed into the slave's mind.

◘ Winged monkeys are able to watch in the movies somewhat as spy satellites. Winged monkeys are used in the programming to create a fear of always being watched.

◘ The Flowers used in the movie and books, are also used in the programming. The witch uses poppy flowers to put the lion and Dorothy to sleep. Opium and cocaine are used to tranquilize Monarch slaves. An alter of a slave will get trancy when they enter the poppy field. (Heroin and cocaine come from poppies.) In the film, Dorothy says, "What is happening? I'm so sleepy." She and the lion get sleepy for no apparent reason very quickly. Monarch slaves do the same thing. Waking up with snow in the movie is nothing less than an allusion to cocaine which is a common substance given to Monarch slaves to help make them dependent.

◘ Dorothy states at one point in the movie that she "doesn't remember". She then follows this up with "I guess it doesn't matter."

◘ Hour glasses appear in the movie in several spots, and they also occur in various contexts in people who have been programmed by the Monarch programming. Some victims of the programming have hour glass configurations each created around a separate axis. The hour glasses have the ability to be rotated which causes certain alters to be brought forward. Monarch slave masters have also used hour glasses to indicate to their slaves that death was imminent and that time was running out. This is the way the wicked witch used the hour glass on Dorothy, who happens to be saved just as the hour glass runs out. Some Monarch slave masters actually have large hour glasses (sometimes 3' high) like in the movie. (In Cathy O'Brien's autobiography of her life as a Monarch slave *Transformation of America* she has a photograph of Sec. of Defense Cheney's hour glass on his desk with him seated. This hour glass was used to threaten her as a slave.) When a Monarch slave sees an hour glass they may switch, but basically it is a reminder that the slave masters have the power to run a person's time out.

One slave was told, "The sand that sifts through the hourglass is a measure of your worthiness to live or die."

The hour glass shape is basically two triangles which touch at their peaks, or an X configuration with the tops of the X having lines. The child's mind is to visualize this configuration as a compass, as the four points N, S, E, W, they are to see the X configuration also as an x,y axis upon which a city is structured upon. The hour glass then is tied to several other concepts which integrate themselves well with the basic X shape of the hour glass. Circles with X's are stacked on top of each other to form the different worlds which contain the alters. The two pie shaped pieces of the hour glass will hold one world, while the hour glass configuration made by the other two adjacent pieces hold the looking glass mirror images of each alter. Each hour glass is called 2 quadrants. To remove 4 quadrants would of course take both alters and mirror images with it. In mathematics, it could be stated that regular alters are in quadrant x,y and -x, -y. And that the looking glass people--the mirror images, early splits made from each alter as a copy, are in quadrants -x, y and x, -y. (See the chapter on how to structure a System)

◘ "Click your heel together and be there in a snap" is both in the movie and in the programming cues. Military Monarch slave models are especially taught to click their heels together. (Joseph Mengele, Dr. Black, Michael Aquino and others also liked to click their Nazi boots together while they programmed children.)

◘ "SILENCE!" is both in the movie and a command of the Oz Programming. This word SILENCE stands for a code of "no talk" which runs deep in the mind of the slave.

◘ As in the movie, certain slave alters will talk to their masters as Dorothy did, "If you please, Sir..."

◘ The keys (and triggers) to control the switching of personalities and to give orders are frequently based on Wizard of Oz material. A Monarch slave owner might use cues based on the Wizard of Oz such as "THERE'S A PAIR OF MAGIC SHOES TO WEAR WITH YOUR DRESS...SOMETHING IN LIGHTENING...TO TRANSPORT YOU FASTER THAN THE OL' RUBY SLIPPERS." (Quote from O'Brien, Cathy. "Operation Carrier Pigeon", Monograph, pg. 2.) A cryptic death threat given to Cathy as a slave by handler Sec. of Defense Cheney to kill her daughter by taking off her daughter's ears was then backed up by the hypnotic command based on Wizard of Oz programming, "I'LL GET HER, MY PRETTY...YOUR LITTLE GIRL."

◘ The programming that is related to the Tin Man produces a monarch slave which is described as "A WELL OILED MACHINE" by the handlers. U.S. Sen. Allen Simpson, one of the perpetrators of the Monarch Program, referred to the Tin Man programming when he told a slave "THESE ARE BUT EMPTY SHELLS OF THE LIFE THEY WERE ONCE POSSESSED. LIKE YOU ARE--EMPTY AND VOID OF LIFE."

◘ Phrases like "troubles melt" can be found in both the movie and in the programming.

Let's now cover what programming is based on the Oz books, that isn't found in the movie. A great deal of the Oz programming comes from the books, of which only the first book was used for the movie. The public is familiar with the movie which is based on the first one, but in general doesn't know the other books exist. We will not go through the scripts of all 14 books--there isn't room for that, but by going through a few of the books, the reader will begin to see the massive amount of material which was used for programming scripts in the Oz books. It is one thing to say, the Wizard of Oz was used as a mind-control programming script, but that doesn't convey the extent of it. Large sections of the 14 books are almost perfect for mind-control. If you take the trouble to read these quotes, you may find yourself startled at what you thought at first glance was a nice child story!

pg. 38 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "That is true," said the Scarecrow. "You see," he continued, confidently, "I DON'T MIND MY LEGS AND ARMS AND BODY BEING STUFFED, BECAUSE I CANNOT GET HURT. IF ANYONE TREADS ON MY TOES OR STICKS A PIN INTO ME, IT DOESN'T MATTER, FOR I CAN'T FEEL IT." This is teaching dissociation. The slaves actually do have pins & needles stuck into them, or toothpicks under their fingernails, etc. If anyone asks the slave a question they can say according to the script, "I don't know anything." The infant slave will be taught words like this "STICKS & STONES MAY

BREAK MY BACK, BUT WORDS WILL NEVER HURT ME, BECAUSE I'M NOT HERE."

pg. 41 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz,* "It never hurt him, however, and Dorothy would pick him up and set him upon his feet again, while he joined her in laughing merrily at his own mishap." This is teaching the programming "IT'S O.K., IT DOESN'T MATTER, NOTHING WRONG HERE" that the slave is taught to tell the world.

pg. 40 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "nest of rats in the straw, ...at the scarecrow." The mice in a Monarch System which control the turning of the quadrant's clock, hide from the scarecrow.
pg. 42 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "fewer fruit trees..." If the slave eats the fruit [code for programs] without permission, the dwarf munchkins will beat the alter with their clubs. Also on this page HOME is called KANSAS, and it is described as "how gray everything was there." In other words, reality isn't as great and colorful as the make believe internal world you can build in your mind to escape this hell we're giving you.

pg. 43 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, The Scarecrow looked at her reproachfully, and answered, "My life has been so short that I really know nothing whatever. I was only made day before yesterday. What happened in the world before that time is all unknown to me. Luckily, when the farmer made my head, one of the first things he did was to paint my ears, so that I heard what was going on." This is the script read to new alters, to help them have a clean slate before programming them with another new script. This is coupled with the Wizard of Oz theme that the Wizard gives brains (what to think) to the Scarecrow. The alters are hypnotically programmed that if they think on their own--then they are empty headed like the Scarecrow. They can only have something in their head if they let the Wizard give them what to think.

pg. 45 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz,* "It was a lonely life to lead, for I had nothing to think of, having been made such a little while before." This is part of the script read a new alter.
pg. 48 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz,* "So the Scarecrow led her through the trees until they reached the cottage, and Dorothy entered and found a bed of dried leaves in one corner. She lay down at once, and with Toto beside her, soon fell into a sound sleep. the Scarecrow who was never tired, stood up in another corner and waited..." This was used to program part of a script for an Illuminati ceremony.

pg. 57 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz,* "So the old woman went to the wicked Witch of the East, and promised her two sheep and a cow if she would prevent the marriage. Therefore, upon the wicked Witch enchanted my axe, and when I was chopping away...the axe slipped all at once and cut off my left leg.

"This at first seemed a great misfortune, for I knew a one-legged man could not do very well as a woodchopper. So I went to a tinsmith and had him make me a new leg out of tin. The leg worked very well, once I was used to it; but my action angered the wicked Witch of the East, for she had promised the old woman I should not marry the pretty Munchkin girl. When I began chopping again my axe slipped and cut off my right leg. Again I went to the tinner, and again he made me a leg out of tin. After this the enchanted axe cut off my arms, one after the other; but, nothing daunted, I had them replaced with tin ones. The wicked Witch then made the axe slip and cut off my head, and at first I thought that was the end of me. But the tinner happened to come along, and he made me a new head out of tin." This is an Illuminati ceremony script done by Dr. Mengele with children at a very young age. It was a blood oath to "Green" that if they let anyone touch the programming they would cut themselves.
pg. 58 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "...splitting me into two halves. Once more the tinner

came to my help and made me a body of tin, fastening my tin arms...But alas! I had now no heart, so that I lost all my love for the Munchkin girl... I had known was the loss of my heart. While I was in love I was the happiest man on earth; but no one can love who has not a heart, and so I am resolved to ask Oz to give me one."

pg. 66 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, The Scarecrow, the Tin Woodsman and Dorothy expect that the Wizard of Oz can give a brain, a heart, and send Dorothy back to Kansas. Under programming the Master as the Wizard can give alters what he wants including sending them back to Kansas (their internal reality).

pg. 77 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "...they could see the road of yellow brick running through a beautiful country, with green meadows dotted with bright flowers and all the road bordered with trees hanging full of delicious fruits." This is used for the imagery of the yellow brick road.

pg. 87 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "Scarlet poppies...their odor is so powerful that anyone who breathes it falls asleep, and if the sleeper is not carried away from the scent of the flowers he sleeps on and on forever. But Dorothy did not know this, nor could she get away from the bright red flowers that were everywhere about; so presently her eyes grew heavy and she felt she must sit down to rest and to sleep." This is an important part of the programming. This is the story line for trancing deep.

pg. 112 Book 1 *The Wizard of Oz*, "Then the Guardian of the Gates put on his own glasses and told them he was ready to show them to the palace. Taking a big golden key from a peg on the wall he opened another gate, and they all followed him through the portal into the streets of the Emerald City." This is helpful imagery in setting up the internal Emerald City and its guards.

BOOK 3. OZMA OF OZ

pg. 20 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "But the wind, as if satisfied at last with its mischievous pranks, stopped blowing this ocean and hurried away to another part of the world to blow something else; so that the waves, not being joggled any more, began to quiet down and behave themselves." Used to create protective programming, notice how the wind is personified.

pg. 23 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "So she sat down in a corner of the coop, leaned her back against the slats, nodded at the friendly stars before she closed her eyes, and was asleep in half a minute." Alters may be trained to trance when placed in a corner.

pg. 27 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "No, indeed; I never care to hatch eggs unless I've a nice snug nest, in some quiet place, with a baker's dozen of eggs under me. That's thirteen, you know, and it's a lucky number for hens. So you may as well eat this egg." This has been used often to get 13 splits when torturing. Many Illuminati Systems were set up on 13 grids.

pg. 30 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Next to the water [programming cue to build Atlantis] was a broad beach of white sand and gravel [programming cue to build Troy], and farther back were several rocky hills, while beyond these appeared a strip of green trees [programming cue to build a green forest] that marked the edge of a forest. But there were no houses to be seen, nor any sign of people [programming cue for alters to be invisible] who might inhabit this unknown land." This page along with others near it, have been used to build the structures in the internal world of Illuminati slaves. In brackets are a sample of how it could be used when building an internal world.

pg. 34 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Why eating live things....You ought to be ashamed of yourself!" "Goodness me!" returned the hen, in a puzzled tone; how queer you are, Dorothy! Live things are much fresher and more wholesome than dead ones, and you humans eat all sorts of dead creatures." This is used to encourage cannabalism.

pg. 35 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "...a large sized golden key." To encourage the imagery of golden keys, which are used frequently in the internal system.

The next chapter "Letter in the Sand" has singing trees in it, which have been popular items for the Illuminati due to their druid beliefs.

pg. 39 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Bye, bye, and bye, when she was almost in despair, the little girl came upon two trees that promised to furnish her with plenty of food. One was quite full of square paper boxes, which grew in clusters on all the limbs, and upon the biggest and ripest boxes the word 'Lunch' could be read, in neat letters. The tree seemed to bear all the year around, for there were lunch-box blossoms on some of the branches, and on others tiny little lunch-boxes that were as yet quite green, and evidently not fit to eat." Boxes are built internally in the slave's mind and a box will contain a program. The food is the programming that the slave is to eat and digest. The programming in the box might be songs, nursery rhymes, or a poem or anything. (On page 41, there is a full page picture of a girl picking a lunch-pail from a tree limb to eat it.)

pg. 40 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "The little girl stood on tip-toe and picked one of the nicest and biggest lunch-boxes, and then she sat down upon the ground and eagerly opened it. Inside she found, nicely wrapped in white papers, a ham sandwich, a piece of sponge-cake, a pickle, a slice of new cheese and an apple. Each thing had a separate stem,..." The lunch-boxes on the tree are the programs which the programmers put in. The stems are what link the programming stories together in the child's mind.

pg. 42 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "I had a pair of silver shoes, that carried me through the air...said Dorothy." In the programming silver shoes are used as cues to go into altered states (i.e. through the air.)

pg. 44 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "embroidered garments of many colors" Color programming for the ribbons.

pg. 47 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "We'll get you in time, never fear! And when we do get you, we'll tear you into little bits."

"Why are you so cruel to me? asked Dorothy. "I'm a stranger in your country, and have done you no harm."

"No harm!" cried one who seemed to be their leader. "Did you not pick our lunch-boxes and dinner pails? Have you not a stolen dinner-pail still in your hand?...it is the law here that whoever picks a dinner-pail without our permission must die immediately." The programming message to all of this is that no one had better touch the dinner-pails which represent the programs or they are to die immediately. Armies like in the story guard the internal programming of the slave.

pg. 51 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, these pages describe a crack in rocks that is a door. This is used for Petra programming.

pg. 52 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "golden key"..."within the narrow chamber of rock was the form of a man--or, at least, it seemed like a man...his head and limbs were copper. Also his head and limbs were copper, and these were jointed or hinged to his body in a peculiar way, with metal caps over the joints, like the armor worn by knights in days of old." These are a System's robots which are said by the programmers to be friends, and which are invisible. You can see other people's robots but not one's own internal robots.

pg. 53 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "This copper man is not alive at all." The clone robots are made to think they are not alive, but just robots. In reality they are little child alters suited up to think they are robots.

pg. 55 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "...back view of the copper man, and in this way discovered a printed card that hung between his shoulders, it being suspended from a small copper peg at the back of his neck." The robots are put in by a combination of several stories. The deep sea divers of 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea, and the Wizard of Oz's Copper Man reinforce each other.

"Extra Responsive Mechanical man fitted with our special clock-work attachment. Thinks, Speaks, Acts, and Does Everything but Live. Manufactured only at our Works at Evna, Land of Ev. All infringements will be promptly Prosecuted according to Law." This huge sign is part of the robotic programming the clone robots receive. Notice that they are drilled into total obedience--all infringements will be promptly Prosecuted. Obey the law that your Master gives you.
pg. 56 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "DIRECTIONS FOR USING
For THINKING: --Wind the Clock-work Man under his left arm, (marked No. 1)
For SPEAKING: --Wind the Clock-work Man under his right arm, (marked No. 2)
For WALKING: --Wind Clock-work in the middle of his back, (marked No. 3)
N.B.--This Mechanism is guaranteed to work perfectly for a thousand years." These instructions were used to build Dr. Green's (Mengele's) boxes and the robots.
pg. 58 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "The words sounded a little hoarse and creakey, and they were uttered all in the same tone, without any change of expression whatever; but both Dorothy and Billina understood them perfectly." This was used to program the internal robots to speak in unison and to repeat themselves.
pg. 60 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Af-ter that I re-mem-ber noth-ing until you wound me up a-gain." The internal robots forget and then are prepared again for war.
pg. 62 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "From this time forth I am your o-be-di-ent servant. What-ev-er you com-mand, that I will do will-ing-ly--if you keep me wound up." This is used to teach the internal robots obedience to their programming.
pg. 67 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Within the pail were three slice of turkey, two slices of cold tongue, some lobster salad, four slices of bread and butter, a small custard pie, an orange and nine large strawberries and some nuts and raisins. Singularly enough, the nuts in this dinner-pail grew already cracked, so that Dorothy had no trouble in picking out their meats to eat." This is given to front alters as the front programming so that they see the programs as only "fruit".
pg. 68 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Do the lunch-box trees and the dinner-pail trees belong to the Wheelers? the child asked Tiktok, while engaged in eating her meal.

'Of course not,' he answered. 'They belong to the roy-al fam-il-y of Ev, on-ly of course there is no roy-al fam-il-y just now be-cause King Ev-ol-do jumped in-to the sea and his wife and ten children have been trans-formed by the Nome King...you will find the roy-al 'E' stamped up-on the bottom of ev-er-y din-ner pail." The Nome King in the programming became the ruler of the demons/system within the Monarch system. Several story lines from a number of sources are overlapped to reinforce the programming scripts. The programmers will use other stories to introduce themselves into the system too. In case readers don't know, a Monarch system will have hidden powerful alters that are made in the image of their programmers, that serve as personal representatives of the programmers.
pg. 79 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "I am only a ma-chine, and can-not feel sor-row or joy, no mat-ter what hap-pens." This is teaching mechanical dissociation, and coincides with Tin Man programming.
pg. 83 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "For the Princess Langwidere is a different person every time I see her, and the only way her subjects can recognize her at all is by means of a beautiful ruby key which she always wears on a chain attached to her left wrist. When we see the key we know we are beholding the Princess."

"That is strange," said Dorothy, in astonishment. "Do you mean to say that so many different princesses are one and the same person?"

"Not exactly," answered the Wheeler. "There is, of course, but one princess; but she appears to us in many forms, which are all more or less beautiful."

Doesn't this sound like MPD! Did Frank Baum know about MPD?

pg. 90 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Princess Langwidere's sitting-room was panelled with great mirrors, which reached from the ceiling to the floor; also the ceiling was composed of mirrors, and the floor was of polished silver that reflected every object upon it. So when Langwidere sat in her easy chair and played soft melodies upon her mandolin, her form was mirrored hundreds of times, in walls, and ceilings and floor, and whichever way..." This is the mirror programming that has been done to so many victims!

pg. 91 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Now I must explain to you that the Princess Langwidere had thirty heads." Isn't this story line convenient for programming?

pg. 94 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, ...Langwidere to a position in front of cupboard No. 17, the Princess unlocked the door with her ruby key and after handing head No.9, which she had been wearing, to the maid, she took No. 17 from its shelf and fitted it to her neck....There was one trouble with No. 17; the temper that went with it (and which was hidden...)was fiery, harsh and haughty in the extreme, and it often led the Princess to do unpleasant things which she regretted when she came to wear her other heads." Does the reader see how this is programming to switch personalities. And personality No. 17 is locked up--which is a common programming methodology. The fiery, harsh anger--those are the demonic imps that the victim is coached to accept as normal which are layered in. (See chapter 10).

pg. 98 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, " 'To hear is to obey,' answered the big red colonel, and caught the child by the arm."

pg. 99 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "...the colonel had by this time managed to get upon his feet again, so he grabbed fast hold of the girl and she was helpless to escape."

pg. 102 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Once a cyclone had carried her across it, and a magical pair of silver shoes had carried her back again."

pg. 103 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Fist came a magnificent golden chariot, drawn by a great Lion and an immense Tiger, who stood shoulder to shoulder and trotted along as gracefully as a well-matched team of thoroughbred horses. And standing upright within the chariot was a beautiful girl clothed in flowing robes of silver gauze and wearing a jeweled diadem upon her dainty head. She held in one hand the satin ribbons that guided her astonishing team, and in the other an ivory wand that separated at the top into two prongs, the prongs being tipped by the letters 'O' and 'Z', made of glistening diamonds set closely together." The way this was used for programming is that guard alters are made out of kittens, who believe they are fierce tigers and lions and other wild cats. Ozma, represents the Illuminati Queen Mother with her crown and scepter.

pg. 104 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, On this page we see Ozma of Oz, the Scarecrow, the Saw-Horse, the Tin Woodman, and soldiers. These characters were used in the programming. Toward the bottom of the page is something that was built into the Systems so that alters would stay in place in their internal world, "...the green carpet rolled itself up again...in order that their feet might not come in contact with the deadly, life-destroying sands of the desert."

pg. 117 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Dorothy took the key to Tiktok from her pocket and wound up the machine man's action, so that he could bow properly when introduced to the rest of the company."

pg. 119-120 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*," 'Let me introduce to you a new friend of mine, the Hungry Tiger."...he displayed two rows of terrible teeth and a mouth big enough to startle anyone.'

'Dreadfully hungry," answered the Tiger, snapping his jaws together with a fierce click.'" This is programming for deeper cats in an alter system. The next page tells how this is used to teach the child alter cannibalism.

" '...the tiger. "For my part, I'm a savage beast, and have an appetite for all sorts of poor living creatures, from a chipmonk to fat babies.'

'How dreadful!' said Dorothy.

'Isn't it, though?' returned the Hungry Tiger licking his lips with his long red tongue. 'Fat babies! Don't they sound delicious? ...If I had no conscience I would probably eat the babies and then get hungry again, which would mean that I had sacrificed the poor babies for nothing....For it is the nature of tigers to be cruel and ferocious, and in refusing to eat harmless living creatures I am acting as no good tiger has ever before acted." This part of the book is used to help teach the child alters which think they are tigers to be cannibalistic and actually participate in eating babies. This is all filmed to be used against the mind-controlled slave.

pg. 130-31 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, " 'No one knows, exactly,' replied the Princess. 'For the King, whose name is Roquat of the Rocks, owns a splendid palace underneath the great mountain which is at the north end of this kingdom, and he has transformed the queen and her children into ornaments and bric-a-brac with which to decorate his rooms.' "

'I'd like to know," said Dorothy, 'Who this Nome King is?' "

'I will tell you, replied Ozma. 'He is said to be the Ruler of the Underground World, and commands the rocks and all that the rocks contain. Under his rule are many thousands of the Nomes, who are queerly shaped but powerful sprites that labor at the furnaces and forges of their king, making gold and silver and other metals which they conceal in the crevices of the rocks, so that those living upon the earth's surface can only find them with great difficulty. Also they make diamonds and rubies and emeralds, which they hide in the ground; so that the kingdom of Nomes is wonderfully rich, and all we have of precious stones and silver and gold is what we take from the earth and rocks where the Nome King has hidden them....the Ruler of the Underground World is not fond of those who live upon the earth's surface, and never appears among us. If we wish to see King Roquat of the Rocks, we must visit his won country, where he is all powerful, and therefore it will be a dangerous undertaking....the furnaces of the Nome King....a single spark of fire might destroy me entirely.' "

'The furnaces may also melt my tin,' said the Tin Woodman; but I am going.'"

'I can't bear heat,' remarked the Princess..."

This is used to program in the dwarfs who mine the jewels (programs). The dwarfs are often demonic imps or gnomes, rather than being real alters. Notice that the story line fits in beautifully with the Hell Pit that the Programmers so often put at the basement of people's minds. The Hell Pit would have programming to make someone burn. If someone approaches where the Dwarfs live (which is deep underground--deep in the mind) they will burn. Notice again the words diamonds, rubies, emeralds, silver and gold which are all parts of programming codes.

pg. 139 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, " 'But I know enough to obey my masters, and to gid-dup, or whoa, when I'm told to." This is teaching obedience.

"Lower down the table were the twenty-seven warriors of Oz." This was used to create alters within the internal world.

pg. 147-148 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, The form was that of a gigantic man built out of plates of cast iron, and it stood with one foot on either side of the narror road and swung over its right shoulder an immense iron mallet, with which it constantly pounded the earth. These resounding blows explained the thumping sounds they had heard, for the mallet was much bigger than a barrel, and where it struck the path between the rocky sides of the mountain it filled all the space through which our travelers would be obliged to pass.

Of course they at once halted, a safe distance away from the terrible iron mallet. The magic carpet would do them no good in this case, for it was only meant to protect them from any dangers upon the ground beneath their feet, and not from dangers that appeared in the air above them.

"Wow!" said the Cowardly Lion, with a shudder. "It makes me dreadfully nervous to see that big hammer pounding so near my head. One blow would crush me into a door-mat."

"The ir-on gi-ant is a fine fellow," said Tiktok, "and works as stead-i-ly as a clock. He was made for the Nome King by Smith & Tinker, who made me, and his du-ty is to keep folks from find-ing the un-der-ground pal-ace. Is he not a great work of art?"...

"No," replied the machine; "he is only made to pound the road, and has no think-ing or speak-ing at-tach-ment. But he pounds ve-ry well, I think."...

"Is there no way to stop his machinery?"

"On-ly the Nome King, who has the key, can do that," answered Tiktok....Meanwhile the giant continued to raise his iron mallet high in the air and to strike the path terrific blows that echoed through the mountains like the roar of cannon." This was used as the script to place in Thor, a giant who protects the programming. Very severe split brain headaches are programmed to occur to the victim, whenever the internal Thor pounds his hammer. If the programming is threatened, Thor and the imps (demons) appear, to protect it. There are an entire series of events using programming and obedient alters that takes place to protect the programming, if it is ever threatened.

pg. 159 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "There was no reply, except that the shifting Nomes upon the mountain laughed in derision.

'You must not command the Nome King.' said Tiktok, 'for you do not rule him, as you do your own people.'

The purpose of this part is to prepare the child's alters to accept that internal Queens and other leading alters do not rule the demons that are placed into their system, and are not to order them around.

pg. 163 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*,

"In the center of this room was a throne carved out of a solid boulder of rock, rude and rugged in shape but glittering with great rubies and diamonds and emeralds on every part of its surface. And upon the throne sat the Nome King.

pg. 167 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, on this page is a picture of the Nome King telling Dorothy and Ozma that, "They belong to me and I shall keep them." In other words, the imps and their jewells belong to the king of the demons. Around his throne are steps with gems, and this imagery was used to build the internal gems in a system, with Satan/the AntiChrist's throne at the top of the stairs.

pg. 170 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Although this army consisted of rock-colored Nomes, all squat and fat, they were clothed in glittering armor of polished steel, inlaid with beautiful gems. Upon his brow each wore a brilliant electric light, and they bore sharp spears and swords and battle-axes if solid bronze. It was evident they were perfectly trained, for they stood in straight rows, rank after rank, with their weapons held erect and true, as if awaiting but the word of command to level them upon their foes."

'This,' siad the Nome King, 'is but a small part of my army. No ruler upon Earth has ever dared to fight me, and no ruler ever will, for I am too powerful to oppose.'

This was to help build acceptance within the child of the layering of armies of demons.

pg. 180, Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "For upon the edge of the table rested a pretty grasshopper, that seemed to have been formed from a single emerald." The next page has a picture of a grasshopper wearing a hat and many shoes. This was used to help the victim take the hypnotic suggestion that their programmer was a grasshopper, a cricket. Mengele used a clicker which helped with this hypnotic suggestion too.

pg. 182-183 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "...the King returned to his throne.... they were greatly disheartened by...the knowledge that she was now an ornament in the Nome King's palace--a dreadful, creepy place in spite of all its magnificance. Without their little leader they did not know what to do next, and each one, down to the trembling private of the army, began to fear he would soon be more ornamental than useful....'Never mind,' said the jolly monarch. 'If he doesn't care to enter the palace...I'll throw him into one of my fiery furnaces.'

pg. 184 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "...twenty-six officers filed into the palace and made their guesses---and became ornaments." Story line used to program parts to become useful ornaments. "...he wore a heavy gold chain around his neck to show that he was the Chief Steward of the Nome King..." Many of the abusers signify their power to the slaves, by wearing a gold chain around their neck.

pg. 186 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, on this page it states that some magical power gave the King the ability to know all that took place in his palace. By crediting their abilities to an occult magical dimension, the programmers enhanced their appearance of power to the child victim.

pg. 192 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, on this page and the surrounding pages, the people who have become ornaments are also assigned colors. The Queen of Ev "are all ornaments of a royal purple color." and "all those people from Oz into green ornaments."

pg. 194 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, 'If I wore the magic belt which enables you to work all your transformations, and gives you so much other power....What color will you make the Kansas girl? asked the Steward. 'Gray, I think,' said his Majesty. 'And the Scarecrow and the machine man?'

'Oh, they shall be of solid gold, because they are so ugly in real life.'

This was the script to bring in the color programming. Color programming is discussed in the Structuring chapter (7) and the Internal Controls chapter (11) dealing with the internal computers, and in chapter 4 where the codes are given.

pg. 192 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, 'What more do you want?' demanded the King.

'A fat baby. I want a fat baby,' said the Hungry Tiger. 'A nice, plump, juicy, tender, fat baby.' When the alters are forced to accept that they are tigers and other cats, then they are encouraged (forced) into cannibalism.

pg. 200 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "So Tiktok touched a yellow glass vase that had daisies painted on one side, and he spoke at the same time the word 'Ev.' ...In a flash the machine man had disappeared,..." This was part of the programming to introduce daisies and switching.

pg. 201 Book 3 *Ozma of Oz*, "Next she touched the image of a purple kitten that stood on the corner of a mantel, and as she pronounced the word 'Ev' the kitten disappeared, and a pretty, fair-haired boy stood beside her." This is teaching the switching of alters and their color programming.

**We will stop our coverage of the Ozma of Oz book here. We have only partially covered only two of the 14 Oz books, all of which were used as programming scripts. There are many more sections in this series of 14 books that served as programming scripts, but the reader has got the basic idea. It is still important to go over how some of the other books were used in programming, so that the reader begins to see how the story lines assist in programming, and how the story lines are so frequently tied together from perhaps 12 different stories to reinforce one alter's programming.

ALICE IN WONDERLAND

Alice Through the Looking Glass

'I can't believe that!' said Alice.

'Can't you?' the Queen said in a pitying tone. 'Try again: draw a long breath, and shut your eyes.'

Alice laughed. 'There's no use trying,' she said. 'One can't believe impossible things.'

'I dare say you haven't had much practice,' said the Queen. 'When I was your age, I always did it for half an hour a day.

Why, sometimes I've believed as many as six impossible things before breakfast."

The chapter "Which Dreamed It" in *Alice Through the Looking Glass* has sexual programming, the Red Queen is purring. The story where Walruses make believe it is oysters is used for programming. Other sexual programming occurs in the chapter "It's my own invention" where the Knight In Crimson (& White) Armor are prisoners which dual for her. Tweedle Dee & Tweedle Dum is used for S&M programming, which has a hand signal involving rotating the thumbs of a clasp hand.

Alters go through the looking glass, and fall down an oak tree by falling into a deeper and deeper trance.

Monarch programming is a reflection of how Satan's mind works. Lewis Carroll's book with its inversion themes fits in with this type of thinking. Lewis Carroll loved the humor of logical contradictions. In the book, Alice wonders if cats eat bats or bats eat cats, and she is told that to say what she means is not the same as meaning what she says. When she eats the left side of the mushroom, she grows large; the right side has the reverse effect. These changes in size are in themselves reversals. A large girl and small puppy end up to be a large puppy and a small girl. In Sylvia and Bruno, we are presented with an antigravity wool that can be placed into a parcel to make it weigh less than nothing, a watch that reverses time, a black light, and a projective plane with outside inside and inside outside. The slave learns that E-V-I-L is simply L-I-V-E backwards.

In the looking glass world, the Red Queen knows of a hill so large that compared to it the hill in question is a valley. Also she knows of dry biscuits which quench thirst, a messenger who whispers by shouting, and Alice who runs as fast as she can to stay in one place. (Sometimes it seems we really do have to run fast to stay in place.)

The King of Hearts thinks its not unusual to write letters to nobody, and the White King compliments Alice on having keen enough eyesight to see nobody at a great distance down the road. Can you see why this book was so good to program us?

In the book *Through the Looking Glass* all asymmetrical objects (that means all objects which can't be superimposed on their mirrored image) "go the other way." There are left-right reversals. Tweedledee and Tweedledum are mirror image twins. The White Knight sings about squeezing his right foot into a left shoe, and there are several mentions of corkscrews. A Helix (a corkscrew) is an asymmetric structure with distinct left and right forms. The book's type of thinking was extended beyond asymmetrical objects to asymmetrical relations of all types. For example, Alice walks backward, in the railway carriage the guard tells her she is traveling the wrong way. The king has two messengers, "one to come and one to go." The White Queen explains the advantages of living backward in time, the looking glass cake is handed around first, then sliced. Odd and even numbers, which are equivalent to left and right or on and off are worked into the story at several points. For instance, the White Queen requests jam every other day.

Going through the looking glass takes us to a world where the ordinary world is turned upside down and backward. Things go every which way except the way they are supposed to go.

Anti-matter is a mirror image. Anti-matter milk will explode Alice, but an Anti-matter Alice on the other side of the looking glass can drink the anti-matter milk.

In Chapter 11 Alice captures the Red Queen. It results in a legitimate checkmate of the Red King, who has slept through the entire live size chess game without moving. The checkmate ends the dream, but leaves open in the story the question of whether the dream was Alice's or the Red King's. The programming has so often been only a dream to us. The outside world was so often just an unreal dream to us. What was real and what was not real? The real world (for other people) was full of contradictions, and the unreal world (our internal world) was consistent. Everything was upside down, forwards and backwards. In the Looking Glass book, one shuttles back and forth mysteriously between real and dream worlds. "So, either I've been dreaming about life or I only dream that life is but a dream."

As a slave breaks away from the programming, life becomes a bewildering confusion as the slave is pulled between two worlds. The internal world has everything the alter needs, the external world is a harsh cold reality that doesn't have much to offer. People in the external world can help make it real for a slave. The handlers will never do this. Alters will need a reason to want to come out of the internal reality which they are programmed to believe in. For so long much of life was seen as a dream. It will be hard to get a grasp on what was real and what was the lie. Many of the lies are more real than the truth. Life was sometimes like the parallel dreams of the Red King and Alice, like two mirrors facing each other.

The TALL Book of MAKE BELIEVE.

This book was published by Harper & Row in 1950 and was indeed tall, the pages being 4" x 9 1/2".

On page 14, the programmer would read the first paragraph of the poem and then say "sleep, sleep, sleep."

"Have you ever heard of the Sugar-Plum Tree?
'Tis a marvel of great renown!
It blooms on the shore of the Lollypop Sea
In the garden of Shut-Eye Town;
The fruit that it bears is so wondrously sweet
(As those who have tasted it say)
That good little children have only to eat
Of that fruit to be happy next day.
Sleep, Sleep, Sleep."

On page 16-17, there is a story about how a child is dragged under the kitchen door and becomes flat. There is a picture of a child being pulled under a door and coming out flat on page 17. This was used as part of the script to make the ribbons for the slaves. The ribbons in a system can go under doors and through the entire system. On page 23, Rosa the flat person (pancake person) is shown again. This is ribbon. The top of the page has a large cricket like creature that was said to the child to be the programmer (Dr. Mengele).

All of the stories in The Tall Book of Make Believe were used one way or the other in programming. We will just touch on some notable points. On page 38 is a poem about a Mr. Nobody. The programmers like to have alters identify themselves as "nobody". On page 39 is a poem/story about "someone" who comes tapping...but it is "only the cricket whistling". This was used to help program in that the 3 taps were the cricket (the cover image for the programmer.) On page 50, is the story of a girl who when she lays down becomes a different person Mrs. Brown. On page 67 is a poem Foreign Lands, where the child sees "the sky's blue looking glass" and then ends up "to where the roads on either hand lead onward into fairyland...and all the playthings come alive." In other words, what is in effect being communicated is: take the hypnotic image of flying into the sky in Papa's silver plane (as the plane goes up the trance goes higher -deeper) and then go into a fantasy land where all your wishes can come true--so that you can escape the hell us programmers are giving you.

On page 79 is the story of a ghost named Georgie who would run home and warn people at home when things were broken. This was part of the "fix me" programming--so that ghost-like alters, known as reporting alters, call "HOME" to "PAPA" if the programming is touched.

On page 84 is the story "How they bring back The Village of Cream Puffs When the Wind Blows it away." This story has several programming words in it, these words and their meanings are as follows: In programming the "Village of Liver-and-Onions" is a code word for "the coven".

"Prairie" means "ceremony site", and in another story "picnic" means "ritual". It's doubtful that most alters would remember these meanings, but they helped the abusers confuse the child. Imagine the victim trying to describe a ritual and telling someone that a village of liver & onions had a picnic.

ALIEN PROGRAMMING SCRIPTS

There are numerous scripts for the Alien programming. Recent novels and Hollywood movies provide a non-ending pool of programming resources for the Programmers. Visual reality headgear and other high-tech methods can easily be incorporated into an "alien abduction" theme. The following are samples of some of the people who the author Fritz has spent time with, who on one level knew they needed help, but didn't know just what they felt uneasy about.

PERSON 1. Had been abducted by "aliens" since she was a small child. Different types of "aliens" took her. Her mother worked for the CIA at Area 51. Her mother was abusive to her. One of her best friends is a Monarch slave. When the "aliens" come a bright light appears and then they abduct her. The "aliens" she works with the most look exactly like people, and in their handwriting show severe abuse. These benevolent aliens have taken her fetusus several times. She has time-travelled to "their planet." She is dissociative. The government authorities are constantly monitoring and tracking her, and have made an effort to besmudge her record, so that it appears like she is looney tunes. This is the type of cases that this book's co-author has spent time working with. Doesn't this sound more like human mind-control than real aliens?

PERSON 2. This person hears aliens within his head (which when described sounds like a case of MPD (DID). The "aliens" would take him and force him to have homosexual activities even though he didn't want to participate. But that was O.K. to him, because they were a superior race and if these benevolent "aliens" which are so far advanced beyond us, want to have sex with him, that is their perogative. This person has a lot of depression. This person wonders why the authorities seem to keep track of him.

PERSON 3. This person worked at Area 51. Has a photographic memory throughout his entire MPD system. He realizes that he is MPD. His best friend claims to be an alien, a god of sorts, and is known by both this person & Fritz to be part of Naval Intelligence. This best friend acts more like a handler than an alien, and this Area 51 worker gives his best friend total alligiance. This man has all kinds of "alien" type stories, which sound in many cases like programming. This person admits that his family is Illuminati, and the front alters say he has "watched Illuminati rituals as an adult, but hasn't participated". He shows signs of severe abuse. He **is afraid** to talk about trauma-based mind-control, but loves to talk about aliens. In fact, all three of the persons discussed on this page shied away from talking about Monarch mind-control, as if it were something not important, but they all love to talk about aliens.

And the list of interesting people like this could go on. When Mind-controlled slaves who have alien programming are being abducted by the intelligence agencies for their use and for programming here are some of the details of how and what occurs:

A bright light is shined into their house. They have been hypnotically conditioned to view this light as a Flying Saucer, whether it is a helicopter or something else. As the NWO does have Flying Saucers, sometimes the real thing is used. Men in Black (just like in SRA cases) are often associated with the abductions. And the slaves frequently speak about "shadows in the mind." The slaves are taken to rooms where examining tables with white sheets and X-ray machines, Headgear and medical equipment is in place. (The alien equipment has gotten more high-tech over the last 40 years. The "aliens" wear suits that are full of occult symbology. The people are restrained with clamps and electrical shock and energy is used on them. They are told that they are receiving information. They are given tracking implants and other implants. All of the 3 above persons, receive information from the "aliens" regularly.

Almost all of the elements of Monarch trauma-based mind-control appear in these abduction accounts, especially in the psychological features of the victim. The victims of "alien" abduction programming feel suicidal after they talk too much. They have headaches, sleep difficulties, nightmares, obsessive thoughts, a fear of hypnosis, trapped feelings, and paranoia. During their abductions the "aliens" use drugs, thought transfers, and painful medical procedures. The "aliens" use language that parallels the messages given to SRA victims, just change the language from "Satan is in charge" to the "Aliens are in charge".

Cattle mutilations where the blood has been drain are associated with abductions. There is documented accounts where cattle mutilations have been connected to Satanic cults using helicopters. The victims of "aliens" are forced to be impregnated and then the fetus is repeatedly taken. The "aliens" are repeatedly telling these victims that a holocaust is soon to come.

Another strange phenomena, that others and this author have noticed is that these victims of "alien abduction" seen to know each other, much in the same way that victims of Illuminati mind-control seem to know each other. And the "aliens" seem to know everything about the victims. The victims have amnesia of their abductions. The memories of their abductions are hidden in altered states of consciousness, that hypnosis sometimes can pull up. Most victims are afraid of hypnosis or can't be hypnotized (they have been hypnotized not to allow anyone else to hypnotize them.)

To give credit where due, Bowart's *Operation Mind Control Researcher's edition*, (1994) has an excellent appendix with charts which compare SRA mind-control victims and alien abduction victims. The charts reveal how similar the two groups are. In preparing these paragraphs, we have used his charts as as a basis for how we wrote these last two paragraphs up. However, the co-authors experiences in working with abduction victims match the findings of Bowart.

Do aliens from another planet exist? They may or may not. It is not a real issue, we have to face what is already on this planet. Fritz has several tapes of "aliens" of different types talking (which were obtained from abduction survivors) and their voices sound demonic and they are saying that they have been alive on this planet for many years. One said something like he's been here on earth 500,000 years. If an alien has lived on this planet for 1/2 million years, when does he get residence status. My! If that is true, he is no alien--we are! But one thing is certain, this planet contains some very slimy evil creatures who are either real non-humans or very deceptive dark humans. The Bible calls them demons and reprobate men.

The four most popular origins of supposed aliens on earth are all star groups relatively close to our solar system. They are: **the Pleiades**, known as the 7 or 9 sisters, because their are 9 stars of which 7 are visible; **Sirius**, the dog constellation; the **Orion** constellation; and the twin stars of **Zeta Reticulli**, which twin stars were amazingly charted by Chinese astrologers in 3,000 B.C.!

Fritz, the co-author of this book kept an open mind on the issue, could there be any benevolent "aliens"? Some abductees believed that their aliens were benevolent, but when they are debriefed the admit that mind-control and sexual molestation is carried out by the aliens. Fritz, has concluded with other investigators on this question, there are no benevolent "aliens", in fact the only aliens that may be around are what have been known as demons. People who have participated in high level Illuminati ceremonies report the presence of creatures that look like the various "aliens". (This whole subject is dealt with in another book by Fritz Springmeier.)

Some points might be briefly brought out. Fritz has amassed a great deal of evidence that the elite have human-built Flying Saucers. Notice how the controlled media always link aliens with Flying Saucers and UFOs? This is an entire book in itself, however, the bottom line is that at least most (if not all) of the alien abductions are simply part of the NWO's mind-control.

It is obvious that for various reasons (including the goals set down in the secret Iron Mountain government report), the government (including cooperating agencies like NASA) decided to use an alien abduction theme rather than a Satanic Ritual Abuse theme to their mind-control programming. The major differences in the programming methodology is that the blood rituals of the SRA are no longer used. The reason why blood rituals are no longer needed is that the high-tech harmonic machines (which implant thoughts-see chap. 6) and other high-tech methods eliminate the need for the blood traumas. The victims of alien abductions are taken at random, where the Illuminati victims are abducted more frequently around ritual dates. The person who believes in UFOs and aliens is going to receive the same type of treatment as those who believe in Satanic Ritual Abuse. The legal system and society at large are conditioned to treat them as nuts. This protects their abusers.

An Illuminati hierarchy member described their magic goal of pursuing "a spiritual path through the finer frequencies of outer time." The alien programming is one way to experience this.

ISLAND OF THE BLUE DOLPHINS

This is a child's book by Scott O'Dell. The people of an island have both an everyday name and a magical name. When the chief gives his magical name to a Russian captain named Orlov, he and his warriors end up being killed in battle. The alters of Monarch slaves have names they can give outsiders and then their access code names which must be kept secret. Part of the story is to stay in line with what one's ancestors have done. Other items in the book, such as the four winds from the four directions fit in with programming too. The book is just one of many that the programmers want the children to hear so that they naturally adopt the correct programming scripts.

THE LORD OF THE RINGS

Some Illuminati survivors are always looking for a ring. Rings play a significant part in the lives and programming of slaves.

One section that is coding/programming found in J.R.R. Tolkien's *Lord of the Rings* is "One Ring to rule them all, One Ring to find them, One Ring to bring them all and in the darkness bind them."

THE MOST IMPORTANT PROGRAMMING SCRIPT--THE LESSER KEY

One of the most important scripts for the Illuminati Mind-control Programmers is the *Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia, The Book of Evil Spirits*. The Illuminati Doctors Green, Black, White and Blue (that is Mengele, Wheeler, Cameron, and Mueller) were fully knowledgeable about *The Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia*. In fact, all those who go beyond the initial levels in the Illuminati are required to study the entire book. It's an important ritual book.

It is very out of fashion to believe in demons. It is in fashion to believe in aliens, in ghosts, in "the internal psychological wizard that guides you", and other things which to those high in demonology secretly know are simply covers for what used to be called demons. Both the high level Illuminati and the alert Christians are saying many of the same things concerning demons.

Is "magical" phenonmena real? Do the programmers really believe in it? In the *Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia* it answers, "I am not concerned to deny the objective reality of all 'magical' phenonmena; if they are illusions, they are at least as real as many unquestioned facts of daily life; and...they are at least evidence of some cause." (p.10)

The author of the *Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia* then points out that all our sense impressions of the universe are dependent upon changes in the brain. Reality is a perception of the mind. So the author states, "...we must include illusions, which are after all sense impressions as much as 'realities' are, in the class of 'phenomena dependent on brain changes.' Magical phenomena, however, come under a special subclass, since they are willed, and their cause is the series of 'real' phenomena called the operations of ceremonial magic."

In other words, when the Illuminati practice ceremonial magic, their magic to them is as real as life, but they do not feel a need to defend its reality. People in the occult encourage children to fantasize. Fantasy is looked at with favor. Whether the power and healing and mind-control of demonology stems from illusion or Jung's autonomous power of the human psyche to attract & manifest archetypes through the human soul or some other source is not an issue for Satanists. They are seeing results, power, healings and the destruction of their enemies by demonology. Within the Illuminati illusion, myth, and perception are all esteemed. Are they alone?

Are they alone? No, they are not alone. The myth that the United States is a democracy is probably a far stronger "reality" in the minds of Americans than the actual reality that it is a tightly controlled secret oligarchy with a republican front. But in this case, which is the greater real reality? The American believes his myth enough that he dies for it. He fights the "war to end all wars" and then the "war to save the world FOR DEMOCRACY" (to quote some popular world war slogans). In the American mind, he achieves victory even though he has fought and died for a myth. And even when the mythical goals he fought for aren't even achieved, he believes he has achieved a victory. The first world war never brought everlasting peace and the war to save the world for democracy ended after "victory" with more of the world under stronger totalitarian rule than before the war began. The bottom line is that myths and illusions make up a large part of the reality of most people's lives. Movie actors have repeatedly found out that they incur their fan's wrath if they try to reveal their real selves to the public.

The point also is that the person practicing ceremonial magic will not be impressed by the average person, even if he be a minister, who has structured his life on myths and illusions, who will tell him that his ceremonial magic is not real. The magician will naturally ask, "Who IS living in a world of reality?" Ceremonial magic is a very strong "reality" to the Illuminati's mind-controlled slaves, because the programmers make great efforts to develop the five "impressions" listed on page 11 of *The Lesser Key*, which are:

(1) Sight. The circle, square, triangle, vessels, lamps, robes, implements, etc.
(2) Sound. The invocations.
(3) Smell. The perfumes.
(4) Taste. The Sacrements.
(5) Touch. As under (1).

These are reflected upon by the person, and these 5 produce unusual brain-changes. Later two more senses are also highly developed. Programmed multiple-slaves have visual and auditory aucuity far beyond the normal person. The *Lesser Keys of Solomon Goetia* goes on to say, "The Spirits of the Goetia are portions of the human brain. Their seals therefore represent methods of stimulating or regulating those particular spots (through the eye)."

"The names of God are vibrations calculated to establish:
(a) General control of the brain....
(b) Control over the brain in detail. (Rank or type of the Spirit)
(c) Control of one special portion. (Name of Spirit.)

The perfumes aid this through smell. Usually the perfume will only tend to control a large area; but there is an attribution of perfumes to letters of the alphabet enabling one, by a Qabalistic formula, to spell out the Spirit's name." (p. 12)

Did the reader grasp that? The most important script for the programmers is to use ceremonial magic which uses the names of God to establish GENERAL, & SPECIFIC CONTROL (via a hierarchial arrangement of demons) over a person's mind. More will be covered about this in Chapter 10.

But while we are on the subject let's go just a little bit farther. "If, then, I say, with Solomon: 'The Spirit Cimieries teaches logic,' what I mean is: Those portions of my brain which subserve the logical faculty may be stimulated and developed by following out the processes called 'The Invocation of Cimieries.' "

And this is exactly what the programmers do. They invoke via many rituals all types of specific demon (or demonic energy) to enhance the particular mental functions they want. For instance, Typhon and Choronzon (also Horonzon) are demons who are essential in building the structure of a programmed multiple. They must be invoked before the early start of dividing the mind.

Michael Bertieaux heads up the Horonzon Club, an unofficial part of Kenneth Grant's OTO. The demon Horonzon (or Choronzon) looks like a grey alien, and was conjured up by Sir John Dee, who was Queen Elizabeth I's genius advisor and court sorcerer. Transyuggothian magic is carried out in order to reach Transyuggothian Space (also known as Trans-Plutonian Space and Universe B). These existence of these dimensions are kept very secret. The ancient cult of the Star Sirius, from which supposedly we are now getting aliens, had rituals to get one into the celebrated Universe B. Sirius B (the binary twin star that exists with the actual Sirius A star) represented the god Ra Hoor Khuit. Sirius A represented the Egyptian devil.

Let's reflect on all this demonic "illusion". As stated, an American will die for the myth that America is saving the world for democracy. This made sense to psychologists at the time. However, if a slave dies for what he sees as the reality of voodoo magic, the psychologist dismisses it as unimportant--a mere coincidence. Since voodoo magic doesn't exist in the psychologist's mind, the psychologist believes that magic carries no threat to its intended victim. Likewise, because the psychologist doesn't believe in demons, demons supposedly pose no threat to the mind-controlled slave. The psychologist is really projecting his perception of reality upon someone else, and it doesn't work.

The Illuminati programmers are counting on the therapists ignoring demonology. In Bowart's in-most-respects excellent book *Operation Mind Control*, (Researcher Edition, Ft. Bragg, CA: Flatland, 1994, p. 249.) asks the reader to self-hypnotize himself by several times "looking into your mind's eye". To Bowart, he sees the trance state as merely looking into your mind's eye. He does not attribute any demonic activity to be involved with such things. No wonder, Bowart writes very disparagingly and critically about Christians who are trying to do demonic deliverances to slaves. But then as far as I know Bowart hasn't freed anyone of their mind-control either, he is just a reporter.

Both ministers and psychologists have contempt for each other's excesses. We must bear in mind that the victims of this total mind-control have their bodies, minds, and spirits enslaved. The body, mind and spirit need to be simultaneously liberated. A great deal of the success of the Programmers is that ministers have rejected the study of the mind (psychology) and therapists have rejected spiritual things. The victim is left without a way to heal both spirit and mind. Partial freedom is still slavery. And not only that but both therapists and ministers seem to feel the actual physical threats to the slave's body to be outside of their jurisdiction, and by default it is left up to the victim to provide. Which again without the body safe and healed, the mind and spirit are not fully free.

There are therapists and others who pontificate about how evil Christian ministers are for trying to deliver mind-controlled slaves from their demonic possession. This is not the problem. The problem is that the Illuminati have skillfully separated the various therapeutic elements both functionally and legally. The answer to the enslavement of body, soul, mind and spirit is a team of people who will address all the issues together. Both the psychologists and ministers see the excesses of each other, but a little humility would go a long way, for both sides to recognize each other's value. God works through all people, even those who resist Him. That is why he can rightly be called Almighty God.

THE USE OF LIES EXTERNALLY & INTERNALLY, THE USE OF COVERS AND FRONTS, & THE ART OF HIDING THINGS IN A SYSTEM

EXTERNAL DECEPTIONS

There seems to be no end to the lies that are involved with the Monarch programming. The old adage that nothing is as it appears, is generally the rule. However, once one catches on to the common tactics of deceptions, the tactics themselves become red flags which can alert a thinking person to what is hidden. This is similar to those Russians who could read between the lines when reading communist propaganda and figure out the truth.

The deception begins with covering up the identity of the slave. Within the Illuminati, the art of hiding genealogies is a fine art. Children are swapped and placed with foster parents. Mothers all of a sudden have babies, when no one has noticed them being pregnant. Investigators like Fritz Springmeier, who have been investigating court house records and other primary documents have seen court house records altered overnight, to cover up genealogical and financial information.

COVERS FOR INDIVIDUAL SLAVES

The individual slave is usually given a good cover. A good cover will be one that cannot be seen through, and still allows the person the freedom to get their job done. When building a cover, the following questions will be asked: how much will this cover allow this person to spend? what kind of people can this person associate with? where can this person go? and what kind of hobby can he or she have? By now, the Illuminati have their secret slaves in so many places that they have their bases covered in all fields. True life examples include: a Monarch programmer who appears to be simply a middle class housewife. A Monarch computer programmer who appears to be a deaf and dumb mute when in the presence of the public, but the deeper brilliant alters work secretly at programming computers during the day. An international spy, who is a programmed multiple, who has a totally different set of I.D. and wigs, so that when they switch to certain alters used for the intelligence agencies--they not only act different, they look different, and have different valid I.D. An apparently dumb blond may be a very intelligent highly trained Monarch slave.

Within the intelligence world Monarch slaves will function as Agent Provocateurs, which are people who join groups with the purpose of leading the group to do things that will cause it harm. The neo-Nazis are full of

Agent Provocateurs as are some of the Patriot groups. Some Monarch slaves are what is called "clean agents"--that is they have never been used in intelligence work, so they have no record of use. Monarchs are great for being used by this or that group on a limited basis without anyone suspecting any connection. The Intelligence term for the elaborate cover histories they give one of their Monarch slaves to operate as an agent is called a "legend". Supporting documents will be placed into the appropriate government files to support the legend. The intelligence agencies may have several intact "legends" for different personalities of a slave.

The intelligence term is NOTIONAL. It roughly means "a fictional entity for the sake of an intelligence operation." Notional organizations are created to steal strength away from sincere organizations. If a church (or non-CIA KKK group etc.) gets too sincere and powerful, a well-financed notional rival will start up, and then later fold under scandal. The net effect is to destroy the entire cause.

At least half of the therapists helping Monarch slaves in the authors' area are programmed multiples themselves! The therapeutic community is heavily infiltrated. The help lines for women in crisis are all dirty. Some of the Christian groups that claim to help SRA victims are really fronts.

One recovering Monarch slave tells about how her father was the mayor of an important city in Pennslyvannia. He was part of the Illuminati and he introduced drugs into his area, and had a monopoly on illegal drugs in the area. As mayor he established the first drug hot line, so that people could inform authorities about drug trafficking. He staffed the drug hot line with his own people and this allowed him to get tips to eliminate his competition.

The intelligence agencies which are using mind-control are hiding their drug trafficking and criminal activities. One of the ways they do this is the so-called War on Drugs. The situation is so bad and widespread that even the controlled media has had news where they reported CIA agents smuggling drugs seized in South America into the U.S. using government channels.

When a slave is being programmed, the abusers will use schools, churches, Big Brothers, Boy Scouts and other activities to carry out the abuse and programming. Children pulled from classes will be given back-up amnesia so that they forget that they forgot. In other words, they are totally unaware that they have lost time when they were pulled out of the classroom. The teacher gives them a test score, and they are told they took a test during the missing time. How can the front alters deny it, when they have been hypnotized to believe it and they can see the test scores? Alter boys and boys at catholic orphanages have a record of being used by dirty priests. Recently, numerous priests have been discovered molesting children, and hundreds of lawsuits are underway, but it is still not coming out that this abuse is connected to trauma-based mind-control.

In the past, if the parents who were part of the Illuminati elite, but were not religious wanted their boy programmed, they could send him off to a military school run under the cooperation of the Catholic church and units such as the 6th U.S. Army, which became one of the primary infiltrated units. The 6th army uses the magical hexagram as its logo. This would provide the programmed child with a religious front. He could say, "I went to catholic school." The programming could be disguised as discipline, etc.

The establishment media have worked propaganda wonders for the abusers of the Monarch Mind-control. Britain is extremely repressive in their information control. If any news medium tries to leak the most simplist of information a secret document called a "D-notice" will be sent at any time of day to them from a D-notice committee, and the media will have to stop whatever reference is deemed a secret. In the U.S. it in effect works as tight, it just is not officially as tight.

The abusers know that they also have an Incredulous Factor that can assist them. Who would believe that a sweet child drinks blood and is cannabalistic? The more that they can do that is far fetched, the less credibility the child has if they do talk. Some children do try to talk. One Monarch slave talked at age five, and her entire family came down hard on her and blamed the child's talking for the death of one of the abusers. What kind of proof can a child bring that adults will accept? In the McMartin Preschool case about 800 children were witnesses whose stories colloborated the SRA and programming that was done, but the media, and the judicial system were able to cover up the abuse and make it look on television that the abusers were the victims! It wasn't until after the case was over and the property sold, that the tangible proof (the secret tunnels with paraphenalia) were found, and then the news media has covered that up too.

The abusers will often wear masks and costumes. Let's say a programmer wears a Mickey Mouse outfit, and the child would remember and tell, "Mickey Mouse hurt me." Now who is going to believe the child? The child has told the truth, but will be reprimanded for telling the truth. It doesn't take long for a severely abused child, who has been programmed to keep silent, to learn that no one wants to hear the truth anyway.

THE USE OF RELIGIOUS FRONTS

A great deal of Monarch programming and slave abuse, (as well as the drug trade) is done under three major covers or fronts: Religious Fronts, the Front of National Security and the Military, and the Entertainment fields, especially the Country Western Industry, the Rock Music Industry and Hollywood. The religious fronts were popular for centuries, especially when groups like the Jesuits, the Assassins, and other groups held immense power. Religious fronts are still being used such as J.Z. Knight, Elizabeth Claire Prophet's CUT church, the Church of Scientology, the Charismatic movement, Jim Jones & Jonestown, and David Koresh's group etc. Billy Ray Moore's Lord's Chapel is entirely a mind-control operation. There is a nondenomination Pentecostal church is southern Washington whose entire membership is Satanists under mind-control. Various overseas "missionary" groups are covers for the CIA & mind-control. It would take a book to explain how these religious fronts are part of the total trauma-based mind-control and how they operate to protect mind-control, however there are publications which go into some of the CIA connections to these groups. It is suggested that interested persons read these publications.

Some of the deceptions such as the lone assassin idea have been used for centuries as a cover for assassinations planned by the occult hierarchy.

If we are going to really reveal how the Monarch Mind-control is done, we will have to explain how the deception is done. If one describes a chameleon only by saying "it is like a lizard", without mentioning the camouflage, then the most important part has been overlooked. Religious fronts are an important part of the Illuminati program for making slaves. In fact, due to their gnostic philosophy of balancing their good deeds with their bad deeds, it is almost essential to have a religious front through which one can do good deeds. Even though adding this section to the book will spur some to blindly lash out at the book, still the whole story needs to come out.

When we, the authors of this book, write that the Monarch-type total mind-control threatens everything this nation stands for, we are not exaggerating. The Monarch Mind-control program has not been used just to program slaves--but it has been part of a much bigger deception. When this deception is realized by this nation, it will shatter the very fabric of trust that Americans have in their institutions. If Americans will begin to understand the power structure behind their institutions, and who controls this structure, they will begin to see **the lies in the scripts that they have been fed since infancy**. And YOU, the reader of this next section in this book, if you love the truth, can help begin the healing process to overcome some of the devastation that is going to rock this nation when the truth comes out.

This next section will help both Christian and non-Christian reader. The therapist can learn about what is happening so that they can better deal with what the SRA survivors are beginning to reveal.

The grooming of the American people to believe massive amounts of lies did work, UNTIL a few loving therapists, ministers, and doctors began to liberate victims of the Monarch trauma-based mind-control. These programmed multiples began revealing a horror story of deception unparalleled in history. For the reader to deal with the next section means courage. It means that the reader will have to muster up some of the same type of love of truth that the mind-control survivors must muster to free themselves of the lies of their satanic programming. What we see and hear can be programming, in the same way SRA victims are deceived.

Everyone in the Illuminati of any significance has participated in grooming the public to believe that Billy Graham is a great man of God. Graham has stood beside each of the Presidents and the Pope. The Illuminati don't just program individuals, they program whole nations. The public has been led to believe in a television image. But what if the secular media's image of Billy Graham is not real? For Christians it means that they can quit trusting in a man, and place their trust fully on God. For secular readers, they can begin to see the extent of how America's institutions have been corrupted by the horrible trauma-based mind-control.

The heart-beat of the Body of Christ is crying out that something is terribly wrong. We will address that. All of us, whether Christian or not, must step out of the lies and look clearly out into the darkness and see every facet of this evil mind-control. When men who worship the god of this world place "In God We Trust" on the Federal Reserve bank notes, we who know the truth must step out of our dream world and realize that they mean Lucifer. (By the way, the Federal Reserve is not a government agency, but a private banking institution of the Illuminati. This has been documented in a number of writings.)

The issue at hand in this next section is to show how the institution called "the Christian church", and the world in general has been deceived by a programmed multiple and this trauma-based mind-control. Secular readers will be shown that the doctrines that Christians want to believe in, have been subtly destroyed under the disguise of building them up. This is no different than the destruction of the positive values which hold any group together.

(After the repeated colloboration by essentially all the Christian churches worldwide in many activities as the NCC, the Billy Graham Crusades, the Promise Keepers and other programs, the Christian churches, Orthodox, Catholic, Protestant & non-denominational can be considered one institution.) The infiltration and control of the Christian religion has been one of the easiest tasks of the Illuminati. The Christian churches are what the intelligence agencies called "SOFT TARGETS."

The DECEPTION of BILLY GRAHAM, A MIND-CONTROL FRONT

In 1992, Billy Graham broadcast all over the U.S. his radio show called Embrace America 2000. In the Louisiana area, it came over the KJAM Lafayette Station. During the show, Billy Graham told the American people "we need to embrace the New World Order." Billy Graham is also on record stating that people can have salvation through paganism (another name for witchcraft). For instance, in *McCall Magazine* (Jan. 1987) Graham stated, "I used to believe that pagans in far-off countries were lost--were going to hell. I no longer believe that. I believe that there are other ways of recognizing the existence of God--through nature, for instance." Pagans believe that salvation can be obtained through nature.

This is not a pleasant story. Billy Graham has been built up to be the most respected popular person in America. Who wants to find out they have been deceived? We will try to give you the facts, or evidence, and may God grant you wisdom as you read this. This section is not propaganda for our own personal views. Years ago, when Fritz set out on his search, he had no final outcome in mind. Fritz isn't concerned with concealing facts one way or the other. There is no desire to stampede our readers any where. We do want to clarify many issues. We do want to help the truth seeker. But the co-authors personally have no battle to win, except that truth be brought forth.

The issues at stake are not trivial. Historically, Billy Graham's deception is one of the "greatest" deceptions that has ever been perpetrated. Some might argue the greatest, making Benedict Arnold, Quisling, and the Trojan Horse pale into insignificance.

Allow us to introduce you just briefly into the world of the Illuminati. All top hierarchy Satanists are required to have covers. The Illuminatus will have multiple personalities, and he or she will have one personality that is particularly shown to the outside world. They (the Programmers, handlers and the Illuminati councils) try to get the best covers that they can. They like to be clergymen, but they are also mayors of big cities, lawyers, doctors, etc.

A Christian psychiatrist who has worked with numerous victims of Satanism and Multiple Personality Disorder wrote this observation after having worked with a large number of ex-multi-generational programmed Satanic multiples, "Some satanists have invaded the church as it is the perfect cover for them. They masquerade as angels of light and gravitate towards positions of leadership in order to have more influence. Because much of what they say is sound doctrinally, they are rarely detected. Most survivors whom I have worked with had satanist parents who were in high positions in churches; many were pastors." (Dr. Fox, Loreda. *The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of Multiple Personality Disorder.* Salida, CO: Books of Sangre de Cristo, p. 196.) Let us repeat what Dr. Loreda Fox said, "**Most survivors** whom I have worked with had satanist parents who were in high positions in churches; many were pastors." She didn't say "some", she said MOST. Independently, we have discovered the very same thing.

People don't grasp that just because a preacher can sincerely preach what seems a "perfect sermon", doesn't mean that he can't also be part of the Satanic hierarchy. What is happening with the Illuminati's ability to create programmed multiples is that we are getting perfect preachers who are secret hierarchy members. Some of their "perfect sermons" are full of slides, such as "the Christian people need to get involved in the voting process." Christians love to hear such things, it tickles their ears, but the truth is that the entire voting process has been captured and corrupted. Voting machines have repeatedly been exposed to have been rigged, and the controlled media and public denial have prevented Americans from giving up their myth that the common man's votes run this nation. (The subject of election corruption is dealt with in Fritz's newsletters, etc.)

In Fritz's *Be Wise As Serpents* book (which exposed Billy Graham as a Luciferian in 1991), it is explained that high level Satanism is Gnosticism which requires that "the Force" of these great satanic magicians be balanced. In other words, in high level Satanism your good deeds must balance your evil deeds. People do not realize that unless someone does "good" deeds they cannot be a high level Satanist. That is why some of the greatest philanthropists are also our leading national satanists. To see Billy Graham do something commendable does not disqualify him from satanism. In fact, it is a requirement if he's been part of the Illuminati, such as ex-insiders/witnesses say he was.

In fact, it wasn't until working on this book that an eyewitness to the mind-control abuse of at the hands of Billy Graham offered to help contribute to this section of the book. In other words, an eyewitness helped write this. This eyewitness account by the Co-author matches what the list of eyewitnesses that Fritz assembled in 1993 have said. But the eyewitness went further and exposed B.G. crusades' skillful use of Monarch slaves to launder drug money.

Several police officers have stated that today, there is for all practical purposes no police training helping police to understand Satanism. They are highly trained in many areas, but Satanism is avoided.

When an SRA case involving multiplicity in Olympia, WA recently happened, the police who investigated the case found that they were treated as international experts in satanism by other policemen. They themselves knew that they knew very little. Where are the experts to teach us about how the Illuminati functions? Where are the experts who know who are in the Illuminati? There is no college open to the public that teaches Advanced Illuminati Studies 401, and gives degrees in Satanism. The expert witnesses are those who have managed to leave the Illuminati and Satanism, and stay alive long enough to talk.

But the other side will argue, how can we verify the testimony of your witnesses Fritz? Remember what happened to over 100 people who had some type of knowledge about the Kennedy assassination? Jim Marrs in his book *Crossfire* on the Kennedy Assassination lists 103 people who were key figures in knowing about the assassination who have died, many in circumstances that indicate assassination. The story we are dealing with here is just as sensitive to the elite as Kennedy's assassination, because it involves their preparations for the creation of a false Christ, called by Christians the AntiChrist, who will be the master handler/programmer.

The LIST OF known & credible WITNESSES

If the authors were to call my list of witnesses up to the witness stand--which I can't for it would be a death sentence to many of them, the list would include:

1 Council of Foreign Relations member, who is secretly against the New World Order
1 National Security Agency person, who is against the New World Order
1 CIA high level administrator
2 Satanists, still in covens, but unhappy enough with the situation to talk
4 ex-Satanists, 3 of which are eyewitnesses, all Christians now
2 ex-New Age leaders who worked with the Conspiracy, both became Christians
1 ex-33° Mason, now a Christian
Various Christians who have worked with Billy Graham, Pastors, etc.
Various therapists working with SRA victims
The man who ran Security at the Sacramento Crusade
Alice Braemer, a woman who worked as a secretary for Jeanne Dixon

None, except for a couple of exceptions, none of these people knew anything about what the other witnesses (sources) had said. The high degree of validation and collaboration that separate testimony by witnesses who have never seen each other and live in different parts of the country is very powerful.

There are several questions that pop up into people's minds who are not familiar with who Fritz is, and are not familiar with these witnesses. The type of worries some readers could be naturally having might be: But how are we, the readers, to know how accurate these people are? Are they trustworthy? Do they have a reputation for honesty? Could they possibly be giving false information to discredit a great man of God? These kind of questions can be natural questions for people unfamiliar with how this information was obtained. But we assure you, that what we pass on from these eyewitnesses can be relied upon. None of these worries have any substance to them, because the manner in which Fritz came to find out about Billy Graham has generally been while he was researching other things related to the Illuminati. The author has not been out to build a case, the case has built itself from numerous detached witnesses who have nothing to gain by telling what they know. These witnesses have not come to Fritz to feed him bogus information. Just the paper trail on Billy Graham is very revealing in itself.

Generally the information of these witnesses has been confided by these witnesses to their trusted friends. Initially, these witness have had no idea that the information they confided in their trusted close associates would go beyond their most trusted friends. These trusted friends then have had permission to let me contact them or find out their information. The reason why these people are believable is that the information they reveal could get them killed, and second, the manner and circumstances of how the information has originally unfolded has never been in any fashion or method that could be construed as an attempt to give false information.

CLARIFYING WHAT IS LOOKED FOR IN PROOF?

Too many people are considered guilty unless proven innocent--which means that a legitimate search for truth has NOT taken place.

On the flip side, we must bear in mind that hidden information that has laid dormant for years may totally reverse our understanding of something. Exceptional circumstances may surprise us. If some item does not lend itself to totally irrefutable, totally unqualified claims, then knowing this, the proper investigator uses words like "almost certainly" and "most likely". If the investigator feels strongly that everything is totally clear, he may declare that something is correct "without qualification." This is the nature of proof. We need to understand the qualifications and reservations that often are attached to evidence or conclusions. But we certainly do want to press our investigations as far as possible to get as many "unqualified" conclusions as possible.

Of course, by the time we write this, we have already done our investigating, and have one conclusion without any qualification: Billy Graham is working for the Satanic Hierarchy. We want to try to introduce the material in such a way that you will get some sense of the search, so that you will not simply accept our conclusion but will make rational spirit-led critically-thought-out decisions about Billy Graham. So for the sake of the reader's investigation, please, let us unshackle ourselves from our prejudices and preconceived labels. Let us suspend our judgment about Billy Graham one way or the other, until we have thoroughly studied, prayed and gained discernment about this.

It might be interesting to get some of the Masons, who casually without realizing what they were saying, have talked about Billy Graham's membership, or other aspects of his Masonic involvement. It's doubtful that such men would be of any value on the witness stand. Their numerous Masonic oaths to lie and conceal Freemasonry under penalties of gruesome death would tend to have more influence on them than swearing on a Bible. (See *Duncan's Masonic Ritual* book, p. 30 for the 1st Degree oath.) This type of witness, because they talked accidently and casually are very valuable witnesses to whoever accidently hears them, but unfortunately they must be assumed to be still loyal to the Masonic Lodge and would be hostile witnesses that will not cooperate.

If this were an actual court of law, depositions of Billy Graham's staff could be taken, so that it could be revealed to the court how many times they have lied. By showing their lies, their testimony would be impeached and Christians would realize that Billy Graham's staff have played a major role in the deception. This article will put forth evidence that impeaches the testimony of Billy Graham's staff.

We must refer readers to the *Be Wise As Serpents* book and other writings of Fritz for more information. Also some other books will be named too. Because these leaders are corrupt, they have been participating in the mass deception of the world about what Billy Graham does and who he is. In fact, if this were a court of law all types of people could be subpoenaed to take depositions, and we might find out many more things than we already know.

THE MOTIVATION OF THE CO-AUTHORS

Many people, who like Billy Graham, have imputed evil motives to anyone exposing Billy Graham. As the Scripture say at one point, "Am I to become your enemy because I tell you the truth?"

The story about Billy Graham and his life-long career for the Illuminati is not an easy thing for us to write. We do not enjoy speaking negative things against people. We do enjoy speaking positive things about people. And yet no man, no servant of God is above reproach. We can personally have an inner peace that what we have done was what we should have done. Something needs to be done to wake mankind up before its too late.

CLARIFYING WHAT IS ACCEPTABLE TESTIMONY

In some subjects, going to the encyclopedia or almanac will settle questions. In dealing with the Illuminati and high levels of the occult world--unless the investigator is willing to listen to eye-witness testimony, he or she will get nowhere. There is rarely any written record of their secret activities.

But how much stock can be put in eye-witnesses? Many people up to now have criticized Fritz for using eye-witnesses. But remember that if we did manage to get some paper trail or books on the subject, that book paper trail would not be acceptable in court, or even if allowed would not be as important as our eyewitnesses. In court, the written records can be introduced along with the person who recorded them. In other words, the personal witness is still important even with written documents.

The testimony of our eyewitnesses expose Billy Graham's mind-control activities.

Still, we want to bear in mind that witnesses have varying degrees of credibility and knowledge. The qualifications of witness in relation to what they are testifying is important. But to simply dismiss all these witnesses because they are not paper is simply to cut ourselves off from many valuable sources of information.

In accumulating evidence, the researcher will come upon two types of information. One is prearranged evidence and the other is called casual evidence. Casual evidence is evidence that has just happened to appear by accident. An actual example is when friends of mine met a total stranger who happens to be a Mason and he offhandedly talks about Billy Graham being a Freemason. Casual evidence is simply evidence that happens without the interested party having anything to do with it surfacing. Finding casual evidence is generally "luck". In this case, Fritz has bumped into a great deal of casual evidence, simply because he had his eyes open and has been investigating this area for several years.

Because of the situation today in this nation, there is little chance to get a proper hearing of this information.

In terms of the future, indeed, the backlash from this book may silence us. The truth will still remain, even if we and the other witnesses don't.

We can draw conclusions about ducks

from studying various types of ducks. I can not draw conclusions about radios from studying ducks. I can generalize about American made cars, but I can't include in my generalization about American cars an ox-cart in India. This may sound basic, and it is, yet people try to generalize by lumping the generational Satanists in with everybody else, and it just doesn't work. They also try to draw conclusions about the Freemasons on the basis of what the Rotary Club they belong to is like and it just doesn't work. In terms of trying to get a proper hearing today, one of the barriers is that people use their own experiences to draw conclusions. People have nothing in their experience to allow them to draw conclusions about the Illuminati programmers/handlers who are moral degenerates and programmed multiples, who will do anything, in spite of their nice fronts.

The policies of DECEPTION by the Billy Graham Crusade staff

In 1992, a Christian named Richard Bennett, a friend of Fritz's confronted the Billy Graham Crusade staff. What he was concerned about was the Billy Graham crusade policy (that has been in place since the 50's) of sending Catholics that come forward back to Catholic churches. Documentation shows that the deception is worse than that, new believers that have never gone to any church are sometimes referred by the Billy Graham counsellors to the Catholic Church. Now, why would Richard and Fritz be concerned about the Catholic Church? Richard Bennett was a priest from Ireland who worked at the Vatican, before giving his life to Christ. He knows how the Catholic hierarchy prevents people from realizing what they have in Christ. For those who have read Fritz's *Be Wise As Serpents* book chapter 2.2 you know that Fritz is very concerned when anyone gives their allegiance to a power structure that is part of the NWO and part of its Monarch trauma-based total mind control.

Not everything about the Catholic church is wrong. Yet, the Billy Graham Crusade could never get the support it gets from conservative Christians if Billy Graham's staff didn't lie about where Crusade converts are sent.

What Richard and Fritz were concerned about was that new Christians would be sent to Catholic churches, which now are teaching Zen Buddhism, New Age things, not the salvation by grace that these new Christians need. Granted the enthusiasm of these new Christians might infuse some life into the Catholic church, but a babe in Christ is defenseless. He needs nurture, and the chance to grow. It isn't meant for new Christians to be thrown to the wolves. Anyway, last Spring and Summer, the Billy Graham Crusade Executive committee was confronted face to face with the evidence of what the Billy Graham Crusade in Sept. '93 was going to do. Actually, more people than Richard did confront them, but Richard is one of the most knowledgeable ministries to the Catholics in this area.

What the Billy Graham Crusade Executive Committee told Richard Bennett was that he had nothing to worry about. That the crusade would never send anyone to a Catholic church, but that if new converts wanted to go there on their own, that was their own choice.

Four Catholic leaders sat on the Executive Committee for the '92 Portland Crusade-- Chancellor Mary Joe Telly, a deacon and two priests.

On the Catholic radio station,(and we have it recorded,) Mary Joe Telly of the Billy Graham Executive Committee along with another Bishop Wall Schmidt told the Catholic listeners not to worry that if they came forward they would be guaranteed that they would be referred back to a Catholic church. They gave the assurance four times in that talk show. They said that the decision to send people who came forward to Catholic churches was firm because it had come right from the very top. This was 6 p.m KVDM Portland station. Our recording of this is a record of just one of thousands of lies that the Billy Graham Crusade people have told Christians over the years. In fact, from the evidence it appears the Billy Graham Crusade people say whatever they have to, regardless of the truth. In the *North Star Baptist*, Nov. 1964 there was article by Japheth Perez, who as a convert in the NY 1957 Billy Graham Crusade and a brand-new Christian, was sent to a Catholic church by the Billy Graham Crusade.

Ian Paisley wrote this comment about Billy Graham's staff: "Dr. Graham did not reply. He never does reply to letters like this. He states he never defends himself. He does have a staff, however, who are paid to defend him and who are never hampered by facts or bothered by ethics or logic in carrying out their duties. One of the group, George L. Edstrom, replied. The Jesuits themselves could not give a finer example of casuistry than his. It is thoroughly dishonest and deceitful, ...However, since this technique of deceit by misdirection, this failure to face up to the issues, this disregard of fact, and this blasphemous attempt to identify Dr. Graham's official connection with infidels and his flattery and endorsement of them with our Lord's ministry to publicans and sinners is so typical of the Graham organization..."

In Fritz's June '93 *Newsletter From A Christian Ministry*, a letter from Graham's staff was reproduced with a point by point exposure of its lies.

Christians are really not well aware of what the Billy Graham Crusade does. We quote a paragraph from a letter sent to Billy Graham clear back in the 1950s by a Pastor who grieved by what Billy Graham was doing to the harvest field.

"Some people say that if you have just one convert in an evangelistic campaign, it is worth the meeting. That is not true. The evangelist, as the pastor and teacher, is given to the Body of Christ. The real test of an evangelistic campaign is not how many people are converted but what kind of a spiritual condition does it leave in a community. Billy Graham is not only failing in the number of people he leads to the Lord Jesus Christ in this day when hearts are hungry and most people are afraid of what may happen in the world and when it is easier to get people converted than it ever has been in my lifetime, but Billy Graham is pulling the limbs off of the evangelistic trees and the orchard is being left in bad condition. As we have often said, the real test of an evangelist is not just how many converts he has but does he leave the orchard in condition so it will keep bearing fruit."

BILLY GRAHAM'S ACTIVE ROLE IN SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE

Before we get into the details, we'll take an overview.

Satanists thrive on power. Satan loves to give his followers power. Satan took Christ to the mountaintop and told Christ that he'd have a "crusade" and bring every one to follow Christ, if Christ would just bow down and worship him. Christ refused. Billy Graham accepted it.

We know a great deal how the Satanists took Billy Graham, the brush salesman and made him into the famous evangelist that he has become. Additionally, we also know from victims of Satanism, that have come out of it, that Billy Graham has been a Satanist himself. How can this be? and how can we know this?

One of the best witnesses is a Monarch program survivor, who has escaped from being a high-level Pentagon slave. This survivor witnessed Billy Graham working for the Illuminati. This survivor also carried messages for the Satanic hierarchy and personally knows that Billy Graham has been carrying messages from the top secret Illuminati to Presidents and heads of state. This person's information has been backed up by independent witnesses.

A second ex-Satanist also remembers Billy Graham as a Satanist.

Still another person, an ex-Illuminati person, who has MPD stood in front of Billy Graham and watched his eyes. This person said that it was very clear that Billy Graham has MPD and that he switches personalities. By happenchance or God's will, Fritz received a report from one of the women who went to church with Billy Graham's wife Ruth. The woman was told by Ruth in conversation that her husband Billy Graham is strange in that he always sleeps with his eyes open. It is characteristic of people who have MPD to sleep with their eyes open.

People who have MPD may have a devout Christian personality and a devout Satanic personality all within a single body. This is not uncommon. In Billy Graham's case, he is fully aware of what he is doing for the enemy in all his personalities, although his Christian personality may not be ecstatic about it all.

Billy Graham's *Decision* magazine has on its front page caption is "Changed From the Inside Out", and displays an infinity loop on the cover. **Many Monarch slaves have had lots of programming around the infinity loop.** This is an important trigger to remind them how they are captured by the unending repeating rebuilding programming. There are countless little things like this, which are evidence that Billy Graham is playing a role in the satanic mind-control of the Illuminati. Dr. Schefflin, a mind-control expert, told me that he saw internal documents from the 1950s teaching Billy Graham's people on how to have a successful revival. These documents instructed crusade counselors on things which were elements of mind-control, such as delaying people from coming forward to confess Christ until the "right" time.

If you've ever wondered how much Billy Graham knows--if the Illuminati haven't told him, a concerned Christian named David Hill, who was an ex-Mafia/ex-New Ager/ex-Mason did. The concerned Christian was a friend of Franklin Graham (Billy's son) and he had lived for two years at Billy Graham's house. He didn't realize that Graham had been sucked into the New World Order until he had confronted Billy Graham. David Hill, who was a ex-Mason turned Christian, who had worked with many of the world's elite, spent 18 hours in a hotel room warning Billy Graham about the New World Order. Billy Graham told David Hill at the end of their two days of talking in this eastern U.S. hotel room that he was "a captive of that [NWO] organization." In other words, after placing himself under the Illuminati's sponsorship in the late '40s, Billy Graham has had the choice of continuing to do his job for them, or being destroyed. Since they created who he is, they can destroy him. And he knows it. David Hill went on to try to expose the New World Order and lost (was murdered) his life just as he finished a manuscript exposing it.

Even a well-informed Christian like David Hill, who tried to warn Billy Graham about the NWO, was unaware of the extent of the deception of the Illuminati's mind control. David didn't know about programmed multiples.

David Hill, who was a high ranking Scottish Rite Freemason and an important Mafia figure before he came to Christ, had even been the go between for Billy Graham and Joe Banana, a Mafia kingpin. It was David Hill, who innocently believing in Billy Graham, arranged the meeting for the two men.

David Hill knew that William Randolph Hearst was part of the Illuminati. He was part of the branch Illuminati-- at what could be termed the 6°. William Randolph Hearst was totally into paganism. That is very obvious by a tour of his mansion in California which has been turned into a museum. It was William Randolph Hearst who financed the first three years of Billy Graham's Crusades.

Stu PAK is associated with the Stewart Title Company. Stu Pak provides funds for Billy Graham and others. The head of Stu Pak is friends with Billy Graham and George Bush. The company has a lot of relatives running it. The Morris family is also tied to it. The people of Stewart Title Company are ruthless.

The Van Duyn Illuminati family in California also helped Billy Graham's ministry

DECISION

Printed in U.S.A.

JANUARY 1995

Changed From the Inside Out

A Message by Billy Graham

Can I Trust the Bible?
by Norman L. Geisler

Setting Goals for the New Year
by Ted W. Engstrom

A Report on the Atlanta, Georgia, Billy Graham Crusade

get started.

One of the ways the Illuminati funnelled money to Billy Graham was through a monthly check delivered to Jeanne Dixon's office, which was picked up every month by Billy Graham's staff. After Dixon's secretary came to Christ she tried to expose Billy Graham's connection to Jeanne Dixon. Jeanne Dixon sells crystal balls with snakes. She is part of the Illuminati. Billy Graham wrote her a letter calling her "a woman of God." Dixon's secretary had a copy of this letter with Billy Graham's signature on it, after she became a Christian.

In 1952, in Paris, Billy Graham and another evangelist had dinner with two prostitutes and each one took one of them home. Billy Graham had a wife and children at home, so the whole affair was totally improper for an evangelist even if Billy Graham didn't have sex with the woman. He told his friend only that the prostitute had taken off her clothes and he'd gotten scared and come back to their hotel room. See Frady, Marshall. *Billy Graham, A Parable of American Righteousness*. Boston: Little, Brown & Co., p.169-170.

In 1954, the man who ran security for the Sacramento Crusade saw a high-priced hooker sneak into Billy Graham's room prior to him going out for the Crusade. Billy Graham and this high priced hooker were alone together in the room. It is this type of thing that has opened Billy Graham up to blackmail. Should Graham ever try to stray from the proper course set for him by the Illuminati, they have plenty of ammunition to blackmail him. (You may ask why would the Satanists from generational satanic families want to intimidate Billy Graham with fear? Why, isn't he from a generational satanic family? The answer is that the whole Satanic system operates off of fear. Intimidation & fear are standard everyday parts of their makeup and actions. Sort of the counterpart to the saying there is no honor among thieves. The Satanic hierarchy are in constant intimidation and power struggles.)

When Billy Graham wanted to, he could call up Henry Kissinger and say, "Tell him to call me the minute he comes in." (Frady, p. 451) Henry Kissinger is right in the middle of what the Illuminati is doing. Another Illuminatus that Graham had a working relationship with is Henry Luce, friend of the Baruchs. Luce and Billy Graham spent several nights staying up talking late into the night.

Knowing how the Illuminati work, it is very safe to assume that they have pushed Billy Graham into further degenerate acts. They have probably done everything they can to pervert Billy Graham, so there is no telling what sexual sins remain hidden. Kissinger is a member of P2 Freemasonry. If we were to assume that Billy Graham were not involved (and that is a big IF since we know that he is), then if one studies P2 Masonic recruiting tactics given in the book *In God's Name*, p. 116, then the reader will grasp that anyone of Billy Graham's stature who associates so freely with P2 Freemasons will be targeted and blackmailed and forced to join. Once they join, new members are forced to compromise other possible targets.

Billy Graham is part of the people who implement the Monarch program (which was a joint Illuminati/CIA total mind control program done to people). We know that he is serviced by Monarch sexual slaves (their kitten alters). It is very easy for the Network to keep these poor victims (Monarch slaves) from talking, and so the full extent of much of what has gone on may not come out in our lifetimes.

Another possible clue about Billy Graham's hidden life comes from Billy Graham himself. Do the readers remember how Jimmy Swaggert would disguise himself with sun glasses, etc. and his staff helped him carry out what he in part confessed? In Hollywood, FL (yes,FL!) Billy Graham said that he "often attends loveins and rock festivals incognito by putting on a false mustache and beard." He also said he found the experience in doing that kind of thing "refreshing." This story was in the *Chicago Daily News*, Dec. 29, 1969. The article's purpose appears to have been to make Billy Graham look hip to today's rock and roll crowds of teenagers.

Billy Graham described his friendship with Alan Dulles, "I make every effort not to let it appear that I favor one party over another. I count Secretary Dulles a friend, but Senator Humphrey is also a good friend of mine, [who he met]...when we were both swimming nude at the YMCA pool in Minneapolis where he was running for mayor." A friendship with Alan Dulles? Alan Dulles, director of the CIA, was one of the biggest perpetrators of the trauma-based mind-control that this book is about. Humphrey also received orders from the Satanic hierarchy. And what is this swimming in nude?

When Billy Graham had his 1954 Crusade, large sums of the money came directly from people in the Illuminati, the Whitneys, the Vanderbilts, the Rockefellers, and Chase Manhattan.

Billy Graham has numerous times attended Hollywood cocktail parties. Just two examples of which are: one given by Debbie Reynolds, and another one which was a cocktail party for Hollywood stars put on by Nixon at his San Clemente,CA home on a Sunday evening. Billy Graham's schedule is filled with activities such as playing golf with people who are in the Illuminati, or are Hollywood types.

The full impact of this constant fellowshipping with darkness is hard for people to grasp, because they picture that Graham is an evangelist and so therefore he must go where the sinners are. There is an expression, show me a man's friends and I'll tell you about him. It's one thing to spend time with evil to give it a chance to repent and come to the light. It is another to fellowship with evil and allow it to remain in darkness.

Let us quote from a neutral source, a group who had been investigating the role of church and state. They were trying to determine for their study whether Billy Graham has had an impact on all the Presidents from Eisenhower to Clinton. This study was not pro or anti Graham. It was simply trying to determine what impact this religious leader is having on political leaders. Billy Graham has spent a lot of time with all the Presidents, so their question was "has Billy Graham had some type of impact?" Their conclusion printed in the *Journal of Church and State* concludes, "...could Graham speak the word of truth - especially when that word may be critical or slashing -to the man in the White House when he is on such friendly terms with him? On the basis of the evidence now available, the answer must be no."

What a person does on his free time is said to be revealing. Christ did spend his time with sinners, but he called them to repentance. In all my study of Billy Graham, I haven't seen any of the Hollywood movie stars or politicians change their lifestyles by their association with Billy Graham. A number of "conversions" have been artificially created, and given widespread publicity by the press.

Pat Boone is the type of close friend of Billy Graham that perhaps typifies Billy Graham. He is someone well-received by the public. Billy Graham has enjoyed using him in Crusades. Pat Boone continued playing in Playboy type night clubs while he was singing at Billy Graham Crusades. Pat Boone who is pro-jewish, may be jewish, because the State of Israel has given him some special positions. There is nothing wrong with having "jewish blood", it just explains some of his connections. The Nugen Hand Bank was a CIA operation that laundered money, and did many illegal activities. Pat Boone was part of the Nugen Hand Bank scandal. Exactly how deep he was involved with the CIA's dirty dealing is unclear. Pat Boone's daughter Debbie Boone made a hit out of the song "You Light Up My Life", the words of the song were written by a woman who worshipped Lucifer and wrote the song to Lucifer.

Billy Graham has placed the emphasis in his Crusades on putting liberals, even Catholic priests, up on the platform with himself. When does Billy Graham ever spend time with solid devout Christians? Every time Billy Graham went to Moscow he tried to avoid the devout Christians of the unregistered churches who unwittingly tried unsuccessfully to meet with Graham. Instead, he would meet with the heads of the Orthodox Church, which, since all the changes in Russia, are now proven to have been KGB agents--although most of us had suspected that all along from the type of things they said and did.

How naive can Christians get? Do they really think that the Illuminati is going to let a legitimately powerful anointed Christian evangelist have regular access to their people? Don't Christians realize that if he was a real threat--someone who might really bring one of the top elite to Christ that they would be assassinating him, not wining and dining him.

--"BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS, WHICH COME TO YOU IN SHEEP CLOTHING, BUT INWARDLY THEY ARE RAVENING WOLVES." Mt. 7:15
--"BEHOLD, I AM SENDING YOU FORTH AS LAMBS AMONG WOLVES." Lk. 10:3

The Apostle Paul warned Christian leaders, "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock." Acts 20:28-29

Bill Clinton, some senators, and Billy Graham's son Ned E. Graham invited the leaders of the Chinese house churches to a prayer breakfast in Washington D.C. Three delegates from the Three Self Patriotic Movement (TSPM) and 3 others from house churches were invited, Lin Xian-Gao, Li Tian-En, and Yuan Xiang-Chen. Rev. Ned Graham visited these chinese in person to extend the U.S. government's invitation. Graham told the chinese Christians that the government would pick up the entire tab for the breakfast. In return the U.S. government wanted the Christians to promise not to speak to the American press or to any Americans comments that might hurt the image of the Red Chinese government. The Chinese government had promised the American government that they would guarantee safe entry and departure for these house church Christian leaders. Then after the meeting, they were invited to Billy Graham's house.

The Chinese christians declined the invitation by Graham. Chinese pastor Lin said, "If I went to the United States, I would tell the truth, not lies. To tell the truth would definitely be considered an act of damaging the image of the Chinese government which would create a pretext for the government to refuse my re-entry into China. But my commission from God is to serve Him faithfully in China only. Therefore, I choose to remain in China rather than to go abroad."

Ned Graham (Billy's son) tried to talk the Chinese into coming, "I know that you surely do love your enemies, why then can you not compromise..." The pastor answered, "Yes, we can forgive our enemies for persecuting or opposing us in their ignorance, but we can never love the false prophets or their heresy." Ned also said, "It is a glorious and dignified thing to be invited by President Clinton. Many people seek it, but cannot obtain it." Fortunately, the chinese did not buy it.(This info and quote comes from *China The Untold Story* by The Voice of the Martyrs,Inc., 1995. pp. 25-31)

BUILDING AN IMAGE

There is another area of Billy Graham that we will only touch on. In one of Fritz's '92 newsletter, Billy Graham is quoted stating that he thought UFOs were angels of God. On either Jan. 28 or 29th (See *Smyrna*, Feb. '93, p.3), Billy Graham was interviewed on television by David Frost. Billy Graham said he believed people in heaven are sent by God to other worlds to help them in redemption of life. This is edging somewhat close to what the Mormons believe, that "Christians" (that is Mormons) will each receive their own planet to be god of. In another show, Graham said he wanted to evangelize other planets. Fritz has repeatedly tried to warn Christians of the many demonic dangers associated with the entire UFO phenomena, and the Satanic Hierarchy's connection to UFOs. Billy Graham's idea that UFOs are good angels is a dangerous idea.

Billy Graham was given the contrived artificial image of being a great anti-Satanist. At the Chicago Crusade, 200 Satanists stood up in the crowds. Mayor Daily of Chicago then said from the stand, Billy we have 200 Satanists that want to disrupt your meeting shall I arrest them? What shall I do? And Billy said, No let's sing a song. The crowd sang a song and the Satanists left the stadium on their own. The whole affair was clearly staged and hokey, but Christians are very naive about Satanism and Billy Graham. This further confirmed to them that Billy Graham was a great anointed man of God. First, hard core Satanists don't show their faces in public. Second, the Mayor of Chicago is not against the Satanists, he works with them, and there are reasons to suspect he is one. Third, Satanists, who do show themselves in public like Anton LaVey, want good publicity and would not carry out something like pretending to want to disrupt a Billy Graham crusade. Fourth, if a real threat had existed, Mayor Daily and the police wouldn't be asking Billy Graham what to do, they would be taking care of the problem. The police don't need to ask for permission to take care of troublemakers at the Crusade. Christians accepted this episode at its face value. Those who did clearly show the common church goer's poor understanding of those who seek to control and destroy the church.

How Billy Graham plays a key role in reprogramming Monarch slaves.

Two different talkative Satanists told sources of mine about 2 different coven meetings here in Portland in the Summer of 1993 where the covens discussed the benefits that the satanists were going to get from the Billy Graham Crusade. I know one of the benefits for the satanists was that Monarch programees who had become Christians and had deactivated the effect of their mind-control programming were to be reprogrammed with Billy Graham's help.

When Billy Graham arrived in town, someone on his Crusade staff had managed to find and send out invitations to many of the survivors of Satanic ritual abuse (SRA) in Portland to come to a special meeting to personally meet with Billy Graham. At this special meeting with SRA victims, Billy Graham personally began saying the buzz words to reactivate these people's programming, especially the Monarch survivors. (This comes from several witnesses.) For a number of years now, the Billy Graham Crusade has been putting messages across the bottom of television screens that has activation codes for Monarch survivors. Those Monarch survivors who have become devote Christians to escape the nightmare of the Monarch mind-control are often not aware of the danger of watching the Billy Graham Crusade on television. When people are activated, special people are in the area and they take the Monarch survivors to what are called Near Death Trauma Centers. These centers are used then to reprogram these poor people. There were five in this area, of which we located 2 and forced them to move their sites.

Religious fronts (denominations, individual churches and certain ministers) are used to hide criminal activity. Billy Graham, who is a programmed multiple himself, is exceptionally adept at managing his Monarch kittens. The drug money laundered through his crusades is carefully handled by many Monarch slaves working in shifts and teams, so that the whole scheme can not be uncovered by catching one person. Billy Graham runs big operations all over the world under the disguise of evangelism. Another of the countless religious covers, that works with the Network's/Illuminati's drug activities involves the Mormon Bishop warehouses, which are used to store cocaine. Monarch slaves are involved with this. Different religious labels hide the same criminal Network. By the way, when giving the Patriarchal Blessing, the Mormon Patriarch if he has a Monarch slave will use hypnosis and triggers to convince the person what their future will be like. One can't say this is happening in every case, but it is very widespread for the Patriarch who give these blessings to be part of the Trauma-based mind-control operations.

Billy Graham also personally delivers messages to the Presidents for the Illuminati, such as when he arrived just prior to Bush's decision to launch Desert Storm. Sometimes the papers even spell out that Billy Graham serves as a message boy, for instance, when he delivered a message in April, 92 from the Pope to North Korea's dictator Kim.

REFERENCES

The following three books were very helpful to me in terms of documenting Billy Graham's activities. All three authors were interested in documenting what Billy Graham is really all about. It may sound strange that I say that, but sadly most of the books that touch on Billy Graham like *America's Hour of Decision Including a Life Story of Billy Graham* are simply part of the deception process of the enemy. However, if anyone wants to know more about Billy Graham the following three books were very helpful for me to document Billy Graham's activities.

BILLY GRAHAM, A PARABLE OF AMERICAN RIGHTEOUSNESS by Marshall Frady. Marshall Frady was a writer for *Life* and *Newsweek*. He has done an incredible amount of research into Billy Graham's life. He doesn't touch on the sinister side of Billy Graham, but by giving an honest report about Billy Graham he tears off the "Hollywood-type mask" so to speak that everyone has seen and believed. Marshall Frady simply wanted to tell the whole story of Billy Graham, good, bad or otherwise. He spent many hours interviewing Billy Graham and many other people involved in Billy Graham's life.

When this book was read by a devout Christian, it totally devastated this person's media-built image of Billy Graham-- for instance, items like Billy Graham going to dinner with a prostitute and taking her home, Billy Graham walking past his wife and not recognizing her, & Billy Graham's New York crusade refusing to allow street people into the crusade because they were dirty. However, another Christian borrowed my copy of it, and said after looking at the book he didn't see anything wrong with Billy Graham in the book. But then he just read portions of the book. Still, unless one has spiritual discernment the book is probably not going to "blast a person out of the water", because it is a biography not an exposé. Until recently, this was the only really good biography that was available for Christians.

Many months before the Billy Graham 1993 Portland Crusade, the advertisements for the crusade and the crusade activity here in Portland began. Pilgrim Discount, which is one of the best Christian bookstores in the Portland area sells both used and new Christian books. They had a used copy of *Billy Graham a Parable of American Righteousness.* I watched for months to see if any Christians would buy the book. Tens of thousands of Christians got involved in the Billy Graham Crusade in the Portland area, but none had the interest to read the only biography of Billy Graham available. Finally, just shortly before the Crusade, a teenage Christian from Washington who had been warned about Billy Graham and who was trying to keep from being forced to attend, bought the book on a trip from Washington. This incident shows what Americans know--and what they want to know about Billy Graham is shallow media-hype. A Christian radio show here had the author of *Billy Graham A Prophet with Honor* on to promote his book, which was done just when the Crusade was days away.

A Startling Exposure- Billy Graham and the Church of Rome by Ian R. K. Paisley. This is perhaps the best book as far as actual documentation. The book is probably rare, and not available. Ian R.K. Paisley has made it one of his projects of his life to expose Catholicism. Because Billy Graham works more with Catholics than Protestants Paisley as a concerned Christian obviously found himself learning about Billy Graham. Ian R.K. Paisley knows first hand how powerful Billy Graham and his establishment backers are. They have a colossal publication strength to discredit any critic of Billy Graham in whatever manner it takes--even if it means outright lies and slander.

Billy Graham Reformer? Politician? Preacher? Prophet? A Chronological Record Compiled from Public Sources By the Church League of America 1951-1982. This book is from Edgar Bundy Ministries. It is a collection of articles that have appeared in the public media on Billy Graham over a period of 31 years. Billy Graham is condemned by his own words and his own actions.

If people only took a look at what Billy Graham is on public record saying it would startle them. Who is Billy Graham working for? Is he trying to build the Christian churches up, or is he trying to lay the foundation for a one-world religion? While some people may on first thought think that it is a great idea to have every one belong to the same religious structure, they need to reflect on the dangers inherent in one single religious body with all-encompassing power. The groundwork for such a dictatorial global religious body is already partially constructed, and is revealed in other writings of Fritz Springmeier.

How many people know that in 1955 and 1956 Billy Graham announced that he had a policy of sending people who come forward at his crusades to the church of their choice whether that church or synagogue is Catholic, Protestant or Jewish. For instance, the *Protestant Church Life* quotes Billy Graham in its 29 Sept 1956 issue, "Referring to the Billy Graham New York Crusade scheduled for May, 1957, Dr. Graham said: 'We're coming to New York not to clean it up, but to get people to dedicate themselves to God and to send them on to their own churches--Catholic, Protestant or Jewish."

There is one other book worth pointing out at this point. It was not a source book for my investigation, but I know the author, and the book came out recently, so it is likely still available. The book is *The Assimilation of Evangelist Billy Graham into the Roman Catholic Church* by Erwin Wilson. The address is Quebec Baptist Missions, Box 113, Compton, Quebec, Canada, JOB 1LO. It's nice that men like Erwin Wilson are noticing Billy Graham's love affair with the Catholic Church. He picked up on Billy Graham's statement about the Pope, "Pope John Paul II has emerged as the greatest religious leader of the modern world and one of the greatest moral...leaders of this century." (*The Saturday Evening Post*, Feb, 1980.) However, several of these anti-Catholic ministries are rejecting the bigger picture. They have strongly resisted learning about mind-control and the exposure of the conspiracy in *Be Wise As Serpents*. Because of this, several of these Christian ministries to Catholics have lots of information about Billy Graham and his close workings with the Catholic Church, but little comprehension of how the Catholic Church fits into the bigger picture, and how the New World Order is actually coming about.

There has been widespread concern about Billy Graham among Christians. Because the controlled media don't report these concerns, people are not realizing the extent of the concerns which have been voiced.

Even before the co-authors got involved in exposing the Illuminati and their control over religion and their plans for a New World Order, there has been a long history of concern by devout Christians over Billy Graham. There has been a growing dissatisfaction among conservative Christians towards Billy Graham.

The introduction to Erwin Wilson's book which is written by Dr. Bob Jones (Chancellor of Bob Jones University) provides an introduction to the concerns Christians have about the man who has been set up by the media and the money elite to be their greatest leader. We quote only a paragraph of what Dr. Bob Jones said, "Some of us who grieved over Graham's first downward steps toward compromise with apostasy and biblical unbelief knew that he was pursuing a direction from which there would be no turning back. While we grieved over him and prayed for him, we had to warn men against his ministry as we had warned Billy against his direction."

The first area is doctrinal concerns by devout Christians, who have been deceived that Billy Graham thinks as they do. Christians usually take for granted that Billy Graham is sound doctrinally. The following paragraph of beliefs of Billy Graham were documented in 1993 by Fritz Springmeier in his June '1993 newsletter, with its large document packet. Main line Christians would be shocked to find out what Billy Graham really believes and is on public record as supporting. This will help show non-Christians, who read this, that Billy Graham is not really the Christian he pretends to be. This is not to preach at non-Christian readers, for some of the non-Christian readers will agree with Billy Graham's stands. These views are written to show how a major Christian leader can have a false public image that has survived mainly because the full public record of Billy Graham's stands are keep low key. If we are big enough to look at the deceptions of our politicians and statemen, we must be big enough to face the deceptions of our ministers.

Some of the areas that Billy Graham deviates from Scripture are as follows.He is on public record supporting homosexuality, abortion, his disbelief in a literal hell, his support and practice of infant baptism to save children, his support for the Catholic church's worship of Mary (yet he calls himself a Protestant). He has repeatedly praised infidels and apostates as great Christians. He actively supported the American government policy to fight the Vietnam War. He would not challenge the idea that the Bible is mythology, when directly questioned. The deception doesn't stop with the Protestants, Catholic supporters have been kept in the dark about his abortion views. The deception goes way beyond Protestant, Catholic beliefs. As a programmed multiple who participates in Satanic Ritual, Billy Graham has deceived everyone.

The second area is concerns about his support for a One-World Church and a One-World-Government. This stems from 1. Billy Graham's public endorsements of the World Council of Churches and the National Council of Churches, 2. Billy Graham's consistent attendance at the World Council of Churches' meetings, 3. that Billy Graham has done more than anyone in the world to bring about the One-World-Harlot church, and he has done more than anyone to unite all the Christian groups into one organization, 4. Billy Graham's support of the Pope and the Catholic church which is the largest Christian religion and one of the pillars of the New Age One-World religious body being set up. 5. The support that the NCC and WCC gives him, 6. The support that the internationalists and globalists give Billy Graham. Billy Graham was first asked to do his Portland Crusade in 1993 by the WCC/NCC representative in this area who is a homosexual, a new ager, and leader of the ecumenical movement.

A third area is concern over the lack of depth that conversions at Billy Graham's crusades have. Some of the details on this are 1. Only 2% of the people coming forward at a

Crusade have never been Christians and are actually giving their life to Christ for the first time, and of these 80% fall away, 2. A great majority of people that come forward are sent to Catholic and extremely liberal Churches, extremely few are sent to solid Bible believing churches., In the *Catholic Standard and Times*, Thursday, July 16, 1992, p. 10, this Catholic paper reported that 1,900 Catholics responded to Billy Graham's call to make decisions for Christ in the Philadelphia Crusade and were referred to about 250 parishes. 3. People that come forward are sent even to Jewish synagogues and New Age churches., 4. Converts are given the impression that Christ wants decisions for him, rather than that Christ wants disciples. 5. The people attending the crusades are almost all Christians, due to the high numbers of Christian counselors and the high number of church people which are always intentionally bussed in, (Frady exposes this, and in 1992 a writer of the *Williamette Week* did a major story for the magazine detailing how she had searched the entire week at the Billy Graham Crusade for an unsaved person and failed to find a single non-Christian. There were a few, but so few she didn't find any. *Williamette Week*, Oct. 1, 1992.) 6. Most decisions at the crusades are for trivial things such as to stop smoking.

Interestingly, Christians with discernment spoke about how hurting the churches were after the Billy Graham Crusade here in Portland. They had been made wild promises of success, they were fleeced of their money, and then given a lukewarm spiritual boost. Their comments reminded me of this warning to Billy Graham clear back in the 1950s as to how he was ruining the harvest field.

Part of Satan's Planetary control is through religious leaders. Christians have been conditioned to believe that Billy Graham is a great prophet of God by the establishment media, who have told us for years that Billy Graham was the most respected man in America. The percentages that the controlled Media have reported for Billy Graham's popularity may have been inflated. There are several studies that show how the establishment uses polls dishonestly to manipulate thinking.

The establishment media is able to create ideas so firmly within the mind of the public that it becomes almost impossible to deprogram people. What people see on T.V. becomes what you believe. The T.V. image becomes real. What actually happens at a crusade is far different from the media image. In Scotland for instance, a poll was taken of church membership one month before the Billy Graham Scotland Crusade, and two months after the Crusade. Church membership had actually declined substantially. So after spending millions of the Christians' dollars, Billy Graham had not even helped the church attendance of the Scottish churches. When Billy Graham holds his crusades, the churches in the area sponsor the crusade. In Poland, in a nation 95% catholic, the churches that sponsored his crusade in Warsaw were Catholic churches and when people went forward they were sent to Catholic churches.

Yet, when the mass media report on Crusades, it is made to sound like thousands of people became new Christians. Many of the devout Christians that have supported Billy Graham haven't thought through what is really going on at the crusades. They have been so caught up with the media image that they are not able to critically comprehend that the crusades are really major spiritual disasters.

The book for counselors at the Billy Graham Crusade here in Portland specifically stated that only Billy Graham was allowed to proselytize, that the crusade counselors were forbidden to proselytize anyone at any time during the crusade, or else they would lose their Crusade badge as a counselor. (See these instructions in *The Billy Graham Christian Life & Witness Course*, Minneapolis, MN: Billy Graham Evangelistic Association, p. 47, Instructions A.6.) But thousands of the Christians in Portland who became counselors for the '92 Crusade never gave it a second thought that only Billy Graham was allowed to proselytize, because they trusted Billy Graham.

Money that could have gone to helping victims of mind-control went toward superficial decisions for Christ. Money that could have gone to doing some serious damage to the evil, has gone for Madison avenue hype and for big shows. On top of this, the large sums that are spent on the Billy Graham Crusades serve as a cover for the Networks money laundering that they do through Graham's Crusade using a series of Monarch slaves in a complex series of money drop offs.

A fourth area is concern over his methodology. A body language expert says that Billy Graham's talks are simply canned. They are simply well-rehearsed canned-body movements and not coming from the heart. His crusade uses Madison-Avenue sales techniques instead of traditional scriptural methods to get converts. Billy Graham crusades always spend great sums of money for bill boards promoting Billy Graham and bumper stickers promoting Billy Graham, the end result is that Billy Graham's name is usually promoted millions of times more often than Jesus Christ. Christianity is consistently watered down and identified with the world and its ways. And a great deal of boasting is done about numbers of decisions instead of real meaningful discipleship.

A fifth area is concern over Billy Graham acceptance of Communism. Although many people feel communism is dead, this area is still relevant. If you think communism is dead go live in North Korea, where Billy Graham went in 1992 full of praise for North Korea. See *Christianity Today*, May 18, 1992, p.55. (By the way, Billy Graham & family have sat on the board of *Christianity Today,* and still control it, so it wouldn't misquote him.) 1. Billy Graham has repeatedly over international mass media claimed that there was no religious persecution under the communists, 2. Billy Graham has praised Mao-Tse-Tung's principles, 3. Graham has praised communist leaders on numerous occasions, 4. Dyed-in-the-wool communists who have been the ones giving orders to torture Christians for some reason feel comfortable spending time talking to Billy Graham.

The actual heritage and name of Billy Graham

There is a connection between Marxism and a group of Satanists called Frankists.

One of the strongest satanic cults to take control over the Jewish population was called Sabbatianism. Jakob Frank assumed the role of leader of this group, and afterward this brand of satanism was called Frankism. (Freud's sexually-obsessed theories came from Frankism.) Frank taught his followers to convert to another religion and hide behind that religion to practice their satanism. (One of several book on the subject of Frankism is *The Contemporary Faces of Satan* by Ratibor-Ray M. Jurjevich.)

Billy Graham's family when they originally came over to this nation were of the Frank family which is related to Jakob Frank. After coming over to this nation, they changed their name to Graham which is a Scottish name. Two groups of people who are over represented in the power structure over the last 200 years are Scots and cabalistic satanic "jews". Obviously, not all Scotsmen nor jews are involved in the NWO.

Several other researchers independently discovered that Billy Graham's heritage was the jewish Frank family. However, Fritz was beginning to suspect that there must be some kind of jewish blood in Billy Graham's heritage, because of the all the things he would stumble upon. For instance, the intimate connections Graham had with Jewish leaders and Jewish Christian ministries. And his assurances to them that they are God's chosen people, a special group. Graham privately told them, that because they are a special chosen group they don't need to come to Christ. (Fritz discovered all this by accident reading Jewish literature.) Further, the paper called "The C-9 Report For internal use only" states on page

11 that Billy Graham's daughters have lived in Israel, and that Billy Graham's son fought with the Israeli army in the Six-Day War.

In the *Be Wise As Serpents* book, chapter 2.1, "The Jewish author Gerald S. Strober in his book American Jews Community in Crisis, p. 110 states that after a resolution in Feb. 1973 at Pittsburgh by the NCC failed to declare the NCC against converting the Jews, that Billy Graham announced the following day a statement that God had a special place for the Jews and rejected "coercive evangelistic efforts." Privately, Graham has assured Jewish leaders he is against converting the Jews to Christianity. Strober also informs his readers (p. 111) that many Christian organizations that are "Jewish Missions" take their marching orders from Billy Graham. This confirms numerous reports..."

So Strober in effect is saying don't worry Graham is with us, and he controls most of the Christian organizations that are supposedly missions to evangelize us. Messianic Jewish groups are strongly pro-Billy Graham. Some of these groups have gained in size and then strangely gone back into Judaism. That kind of thing has been happening here in Portland, not to mention other localities. Now it is clearer why Jews coming forward at Crusades have often been and are being referred by the Crusade people to Reformed Jewish synagogues.

How Billy Graham is a 33° Mason.

This is an important issue, however, even if Billy Graham were not a 33° Mason, there are many things that he is doing that should warn Christians not to support him.

There have been a number of people in casual conversation who have mentioned Billy Graham being a 33° Mason, for instance a CIA leader, a NSA person who is against the NWO, and various Masons. These accidental revelations are what can be considered casual evidence, in that it is accidently heard. Some of the people who have read Fritz's *Be Wise As Serpents* book have been experiencing validation of what was written on Billy Graham by their own casual contacts with people. These types of encounters are very meaningful to the people who experience them, but their significance is hard to communicate to others. Hopefully, readers of this, who are truth seekers, will have their own casual-evidence-validation experience.

One piece of casual evidence came from a Shriner Clown. It turns out the only clowns who were chosen to perform for the Billy Graham 1993 Portland Crusade were Shriner Clowns. There were non-masonic clowns available, even some Christian clowns, but the masons were the only ones Graham allowed to perform for him.

Various people, who have worked in the system for the Illuminati, such as an ex-witch who is now a Christian, an ex-33° Mason now a Christian, and a CFR's person also now a Christian, all testify that Billy Graham is a 33° Freemason. A woman and a man who are ex-satanists and now Christians also have mentioned about Billy Graham's masonic membership. (One has to understand that there is a close working relationship between the Lodge and the Illuminati.) To progress up the ranks in Satanism, they will require you to go through Freemasonry. Freemasonry then teaches people about the symbology of the mystery religions.

The lodges bring in female Monarch slaves for some of their Egyptian sexual-magic rituals.

If the reader were to get up in the morning and your mother, sister, and brother were in the kitchen and said that your mother had just drank a cup of coffee, you would be able to tell from their faces if they were telling the truth, and you would know that your mother had drank a cup of coffee. This is the way it is for us. We know these witnesses know the truth, and we know they are not making it up. But if people don't believe that, then they need to go scrounge up their own witnesses, and risk their own hide in doing the contacting. The material we presented here is not frivolous work. As pearls of value, we hope that this research is not taken and allowed to become pearls given to swine.

Because Billy Graham is such a key person for the Illuminati and the Satanic plan to bring in the Anti-Christ and the One-World-Religion, key parts of Graham's life have been intentionally shrouded. When he joined the masonic lodge c. 1948, they intentionally kept his membership more secret than others. Why? They are secret about their membership in general, but even more so if the person is a key Illuminatus and a big key to their religious control. This is why they have kept the membership of Charles T. Russell, founder of the Watchtower Society quiet. This is why they keep the memberships of the Mormon prophets secret. It has been a consistent pattern by the Masonic Lodge to keep these key people's membership very quiet.

It would be much easier if we had a membership certificate, but for people who don't want to believe no amount of evidence would suffice.

In terms of a paper trail we have the following:

- Billy Graham's books consistently refer to basically only Masons.
- Billy Graham endorsed the Masonic DeMolay program for youth as God's work. This endorsement by Billy Graham is in a Masonic book that is used to educate people about "the craft" (that means Freemasonry). That book is *The Clergy and the Craft* and it says that the people who are quoted in it are Masons. (See Haggard, Forrest D. *Transactions Missouri Lodge of Research, Vol. No. 27, The Clergy and the Craft*, p. 127. where Graham endorses the Masonic youth program.

In terms of witnesses who have put what they have witnessed in writing we have the following:

- Jim Shaw, ex-33° Mason-- the highest ranking Freemason to defect to Christianity, writes about Billy Graham being at his 33° initiation ceremony. Huntington House refused to print his book co-authored with Tom McKenney unless they took out Billy Graham's name on pg. 104, and substituted a general description. (See *The Deadly Deception*, p. 104-105.) Only Freemasons are allowed to attend these initiations. (See *The New Age*, the official organ of The Supreme Council 33°. Wash., D.C., October 1961, p. 30.) Some Christians have tried every thing in their mind to get around Jim Shaw's testimony. And the Masonic Lodge are now claiming that he wasn't a 33° Freemason. There is no doubt that he was a 33° Mason. What we are seeing is how important it is to the Illuminati to keep Billy Graham's membership secret.

Originally, Dr. Morey who wrote a book on Freemasonry told me over the phone that Billy Graham was a 33° Freemason and that he had held his membership file in his hand in the library of the House of the Temple, which is where the Supreme Council of the 33° has their headquarters. However, now he denies it and says that he only was told by the librarians that the file existed, but that he didn't examine the membership file. He wrote a letter to *Christian News* to the editor which was printed. At least, his letter to the editor of Christian News says that the Scottish Rite have a Billy Graham file. Fritz stands by his original statements about what Dr. Morey said, even though he has gone back on his original story and is getting people to think Fritz somehow invented what he told me. There are a great many things that are suspicious about Dr. Morey. His book on Freemasonry claims that Freemasonry started out a Christian organization. His book was printed by a company that uses the Knights Templar logo as their company logo, and whose company head is most likely a Freemason.

If it looks like a duck, quacks like a duck, and walks like a duck--what do you think it is? Long before I actually knew Billy Graham was a 33° Freemason, I felt that was the "most likely" explanation for what I was learning of him. What caused me to think that way? Everything about the man, just shouted Freemason. The way he talks, who he has as friends, etc. etc. This article is not capable of going into depth about small nuances and details, but suffice it to say that the Masons know how to broadcast to other Masons that they are a Mason.

It should be pointed out some of the key people for Billy Graham's staff have been Freemasons. Let's look at a few of the key people helping Billy Graham:

William M. Watson--DIRECTOR OF THE BILLY GRAHAM EVANGELISTIC ASSOCIATION, he is a Freemason, and he is also President of Occidental Petroleum Corporation. Chairman of Occidental was Armand Hammer. Watson is also a member of the development council of the Masonic run Baylor University. Baylor University has participated in the mind-control. (See also the expose of Baylor University in *Be Wise As Serpents*.) He also was a member of the advisory council to the Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary in Ft. Worth which had at least three Freemasons on its board of trustees, and likely more.

David M. McConnell--DIRECTOR OF THE BILLY GRAHAM EVANGELISTIC ASSOCIATION, he is a Freemason. He was also U.S. ambassador to the United Nations (1968-69), business associate with Illuminatus Charles Gambrell, in Belk Stores of Charlotte, North Carolina.

Arthur Lee Malory--CO-CHAIRMAN of the BILLY GRAHAM CRUSADE Advisory Committee for the 1973 St. Louis Crusade--32° Freemason, deacon in the So. Bapt. Church.

Who are some of the primary ministers that had worked with 33° Freemason Billy Graham over the years?

Billy Graham has helped set up other 33° Masons in ministry.

Billy Graham has placed his stamp of approval on almost every well-known apostate Christian out there. When Billy Graham had a crusade in Japan, the Japanese minister that he had up on the platform was a well-known extremely liberal Christian. A conservative japanese was shocked.

Billy Graham is also endorsing many of the books, and ministries of these apostates.

Some of the three biggest ministers in the protestant world, Robert Schuller, Norman Vincent Peale, and Oral Roberts are all 33° Masonic brothers of 33° Freemason Billy Graham. (See Roberts, Oral. *Miracle of Seed Faith*, p.9.) Billy Graham has helped each of these brothers with their ministries.

Robert Schuller taught principles of church growth to Unity School in Kansas City. A Christian, who used to be on staff there, said that Robert Schuller was fully aware that Luciferian Initiations were going on at the school and that he didn't care. Robert Schuller, 33° Freemason, was helped into ministry by Billy Graham. Schuller also participates in the Monarch program and is also sexually serviced by Monarch slaves.

Norman Vincent Peale's form of Christianity called positive thinking is actually only white witchcraft with different names. Peale simply is a "Christian" witch. Norman Vincent Peale, 33° Freemason, his church receive the bulk of people who came forward at the NY Crusade. Norman Vincent Peale is a 6° Illuminatus (Pilgrim Society), and a 33° Freemason. In the magazine *Psychic Magazine* of San Francisco Peale says of occultist Kreskin, "All he's doing is dramatizing what I've been preaching in my writing for years.

Norman Vincent Peale controls the approx. $200 million Presbyterian Minister's Fund. He celebrated the 25th anniversary of the United Nations. He was the keynote speaker at the birthday of the late Mormon prophet Spencer W. Kimball (a secret Mason). Peale praised Kimball as a true prophet of God, and a great man of God. Peale practices witchcraft, and palms it off on unsuspecting

Christians under different terminology. The false unity movement which is so strong today, wants to unite the devout Christian with the likes of Norman Vincent Peale. Peale is a good friend of Billy Graham, and Billy Graham referred the largest number of new converts of the NY Billy Graham Crusade to Peale's church.

Oral Roberts, 33° Freemason, helped into ministry by his masonic brother Billy Graham. Oral Roberts has been seen by witnesses participating in SRA and Mind-control.

Oral Roberts University and the charismatic movement is another important religious front. The Charismatic movement has been infiltrated by multiples since day-one. The history of the infiltration is extensive. Oral Roberts had cherokee blood. According to some things that Oral Roberts has said, some Christians think that he received his healing powers from an old Indian who healed him through indian shamanism when Oral was young. At times, Oral does use the same methods that spirit mediums use to heal with. According to slaves who have been deprogrammed, they were in satanic rituals with Oral Roberts. Christian ministers, who have participated in his ministry are saying that they have seen massive swindle in his healing ministry. His university is being used as a programming center. His basketball team at one time had Monarch slaves playing on it. We do not know if they still do. Under the prayer tower is one of the programming sites. Billy Graham, a handler himself, helped launch Oral Roberts University, and is a friend of Oral Roberts.

From the Illuminati's point of view Tulsa is the Guardian City of Apollo. The City of Faith is to be the center for healing from AEsculapius, a demon related to Apollo. While portraying themselves as Christians, infiltrators within the charismatic movement are carrying out satanic rituals to get demonic healing powers. Tulsa is one of, if the main center for the campaign to infiltrate Christianity via the Charismatic/Pentecostal movement with programmed multiples.

G. Bromley Oxnam, 33° Freemason, was head of the FCC churches, supportive friend of Billy Graham. G. Bromley Oxnam has a long history to him of working for the elite, interested readers can pick up his story in *Be Wise As Serpents* in the chapter that goes into the details about how the Christian churches were organized by the FCC and WCC for the Illuminati.

The NWO is infiltrating the churches via the Earth Stewardship Movement.

An attempt was made at Rio de Janeiro to get an Earth Charter but there wasn't enough time, their were lots of N.O.G. delegates and just in general lots of people to coordinate (4,000 attended). Another Earth Summit was promised, but instead they decided at the end of Sept/Oct of '95 to have a State of the World Forum to be held by/sponsored by the Gorbachev Foundation at the Presidio, CA. The ex-head of the KGB, Gorbachev is now headquartered in the Presideo, a major mind-control programming site. Christian basher Ted Turner was the chairman of the conference. The cost was $5,000 per person and the invitations went out to only select people. There were 100 handpicked politicians who received invitations, along with Billy Graham and Mother Teresa. This was coordinated with the 50th anniversary of the UN which was being celebrated all over the world.

FLEECING THE SHEEP

The charismatic movement claims to have the Holy Spirit in a special way, however, some seem to be lacking in all discernment that the Holy Spirit would give. There are several books exposing the big name Charismatic ministers. One is written by an ex-charismatic Assembly of God minister. He shows a picture in his book of an Assembly of God flier promoting the "Testimony of J. Edgar Hoover". Yes, the Assembly of God promoted the "testimony" of J. Edgar Hoover, while he was known to be a power hungry individual who practiced homosexuality. It was this type of hype that caused this minister to grow disillusioned with the charismatic movement's so called spirituality.

Recently, the spiritual discernment of Billy Graham and many other big time ministries was exposed when these big Christian ministries were conned out of $550 million dollars.

Billy Graham introduced John G. Bennett to thousands of people at a recent Billy Graham Crusade in Philadelphia in 1992. John Bennett gave his testimony at the crusade. Because Billy Graham, John Templeton, and Laurance Rockefeller were apparently supportive of John G. Bennett, big time Christian ministries "trusted" him. John told many of the big Christian ministries that if they gave him millions of dollars, for every million he received he would give them two million back. Many of the big Christian ministries gave Bennett money--in fact he collected $550 million (which he ran off with) from ministries such as Pat Robertson's, Bill Bright's, Chuck Colson's, Luis Palau's, Westminster Theological Seminary, Wheaton College, the Salvation Army and many others.

The reader may have heard of this New Era Foundation scam. That's what it was. Bennett told these "Christian" leaders "Give New Era one million dollars and we'll give you back two million." The donations of hard earned money by many innocent Christian believers were lost. However, the Christian believers are partially responsible because the church has refused to clean house of wolves that set in their pulpits. For instance, when Billy Graham came to the Portland area all the various denominations from the most liberal to the most conservative supported him. Only about a dozen churches did not get involved and only one church actively tried to expose Billy Graham--EVEN THOUGH THERE HAS BEEN A MASS OF DOCUMENTATION EXPOSING BILLY GRAHAM AS A WOLF FOR 30 YEARS. When the church refuses to follow God's Word and supports these men--then they must take some of the blame when these men give their millions of hard earned dollars away to a con artist.

INADEQUATE REACTIONS

When people have been warned about Billy Graham, one of the common responses is to for people to call up the Billy Graham crusade staff. If I ask a biologist a question about biology I can expect to get a credible answer. If I ask a mother about her son I can expect to get a credible answer. But how in the world can someone call up the Billy Graham Crusade staff and expect to get a credible answer to the question "Is Billy Graham a Mason?" The person that answers the phone is likely a secretary, someone who knows Billy Graham no more than the janitor. What does that person know about the Freemasons? Because the Freemasons are a secret society, in general, there are only two basic categories of people--people involved with Freemasonry, and they certainly know what's going on in it but they have taken blood oaths on penalty of death not to talk about it, and those who aren't involved with Freemasonry and don't know anything about it. There are only a few people who are not masons, who are informed about the Masons. The answer of some secretary over the phone to the question, "Is Billy Graham a Freemason?" is of little value, because the secretary or other staff member has not had the opportunity to get reliable information. This is from the standpoint of getting a reliable witness, calling some secretary or staff member is simply not a credible response to all the documentation. No court would view a secretary of a large organization as an expert witness qualified to settle such a dispute. The second catch is that such witnesses are not reasonably unbiased. It is expected that Billy Graham's staff would front for him any questions that could expose him to bad publicity. This last comment is not speculation. There is proof that Billy Graham's staff has consistently lied over the years to prevent negative publicity about Billy Graham.

When Richard Nixon met with his political buddies to decide who to have run with him, the person he asked first in the smoke-filled room was Billy Graham. I have read the account of this is more than one place, but I will quote Marshall Frady's description of when Billy Graham was asked who he thought should run with Nixon as Nixon's vice-presidential running mate. Billy Graham chose 33° Masonic brother (then only 32°) Mark Hatfield. Here is Frady's description. "His assimilation into the Nixon presidency had already been well underway, in fact, at that convention in Miami when, after Nixon's nomination, Graham wound up sitting in Nixon's penthouse suite among the smoggy late-night deliberations over Nixon's vice-presidential selection: Graham himself, whatever initial uncertainty he might have felt to find himself in such a political locker-room session, soon pitched into the proceedings with his own effusive recommendation of Mark Hatfield: "He's a great Christian leader. He's almost a clergyman. He's been an educator, and he's taken a more liberal stand on most issues than you, and I think the ticket needs that kind of balance."

In 1992, Mark Hatfield, along with Prince Hall Freemason Jessie Jackson both were on television in July of last year defending Billy Graham's actions. Mark Hatfield, according to a deprogrammed slave has been a user of Monarch sexual slaves.

NY's Union Seminary is controlled and funded by the Rockefellers. President of Union Seminary was Dr. Henry Van Dusen. Billy Graham made him a prominent person in his crusade and said he was a "classic example" of a mass evangelism conversion. If that is a good example of Graham's conversions, we Christians should shudder.

It is no coincidence that the Southern Baptists of which Billy Graham is a member, is controlled by the Freemasons. Brook Hays, Pres. of the So. Bapt. Convention was a high ranking Freemason as well as part of the CFR. None of the So. Bapt. Convention's Presidents have opposed Freemasonry.

Pres. Bill Clinton, a slave handler, is a member of the Emmanuel Baptist Church which is a Southern Baptist Church in Little Rock, Ark. The late Bill Moyers who promoted the Mystery Religions was a Southern Baptist. Moyers went to the SW Baptist Theological Seminary, the same school run by one of Billy Graham's staff directors. John Buchanan is another Southern Baptist. John Buchanan went to a So. Bapt. Seminary, and then worked as a front man for People for the American Way started by Jewish Norman Lear, an anti-Christian. People might be shocked to learn of some of the New Age teachings and New Age teachers that have been allowed into the Southern Baptist churches. The Southern Baptist youth program is based on Masonic ideas and is very masonic in its ritual.

SUMMARY

The reader is thanked for wading through a lot of difficult material. The reader can see why Billy Graham may well be the greatest deception that has ever been successfully pulled off. But as Abraham Lincoln said, "You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but not all of the people all of the time." Ever since the early 1950s, there have been Christians exposing Billy Graham. But the control of the Christian media and the Christian seminaries is far more extensive than most people realize. The *Be Wise As Serpents* book diagrams out how the Christian religious denominations are being controlled, and how the Masons and Illuminati-connected administrators and trustees have control of most of the Seminaries.

Billy Graham without a doubt works directly for the Satanic hierarchy. But a rational and fair appraisal of what the man is, and what damage he has done to Christianity will probably not be given much of a chance. Nobody, no matter who they are is going to fool Christ. There will be a real evaluation done on judgment day and when that day comes Christ said,

"MANY WILL SAY TO ME IN THAT DAY, LORD, LORD, HAVE WE NOT PROPHESIED IN YOUR NAME, CAST OUT DEMONS IN YOUR NAME, AND DONE MANY WONDERS IN YOUR NAME? And then I will declare to them, I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!" Mt 7:22-23

THE TOP SECRET AMISH FRONT (& HUTTERITES)

It will probably assist the reader to know that both of the authors have first hand experience with the following information about the Amish. Fritz was Amish for several years as a Amish church member in church districts in Kansas, Missouri, and Illinois. He has also visited numerous Amish settlements in the U.S. & Canada, and lived/worked with the horse and buggy Old Order Mennonites (not to be confused with the Old Order Amish Mennonites) in Ontario Canada for half a year. He has a manuscript of a book that he wrote about the Old Order Amish Mennonites, and has gone so far as to inquire with publishers like National Geographic if they would like some of his material. He has also attended a variety of Mennonite churches, including Church of God in Christ, Menn. (Holdeman's), Charismatic Mennonite, Conserv. Menn. and Beachy Amish churches across the U.S. He also knows first-hand that Illuminati slaves, some of who are programmers, have been infiltrated by the Illuminati into Mennonite churches.

Perhaps what may come across as the strangest religious front, and it is certainly one of the biggest secrets of the intelligence agencies is their use of the Old Order Amish Mennonites as a front. The Amish are the most pacifistic people, so the Illuminati/intelligence agencies have placed some of their best programmed assassins behind the front of being Amish. The front is real--they are Amish, well, many of them, some were Illuminati children switched at birth to give the programmers better bloodlines to work from. Some Amish women in cult families have let the Illuminati impregnate them with stronger bloodlines. Many Nazi bloodlines were hidden after WW II under the Mennonite/Amish cover. The Mennonites and some of the more progressive Amish adopt many children.

The Amish in Missouri (Jamestown), Kansas (south of Hutchison), and Oklahoma (Guthrie,OK), Kentucky, Ohio (Holmes Co.,OH), and Pennslyvannia (Lancaster,PA) have been involved in selling their children to the Illuminati. When the Illuminati would buy a child they would send in one of their own midwives to help with the birth and retrieve the child.

Generally, the Amish would sell their children when they realized they were going to have twins. One would be given to the cult, and one would be kept by the Amish parents. Because these children are born outside of the system, and have no birth certificates, they made excellent children to use in porn. They also can be used as expendable children to use in porn. They were often blond haired and blue eyed. The Amish women were not allowed to use birth control, it was forbidden by the church, and they were not allowed to have an abortion, and it was their duty to have sex with their husbands. It is possible that some parents sold their children just to get out of the responsibility of having another child. The Amish farms in Kansas and Oklahoma and in the border states like Missouri and Kentucky are mechanized with tractors, and they don't need the large families that the Amish in other places need. Due to the strong legalism that pervades their church, some have tried to get around the tight spot that the rules place them in by selling a few unnoticed children. However, there is an active witchcraft practicing occult group within the Amish which is like a box within a box within a box. It is very secret.

There are many ways of describing what is going on with the Amish. Let's describe quickly in half a page (it could be a book in itself) what a deep look at the spiritual dynamics of what is going on with their communities. The rise of Satanism within their ranks is simply a natural outgrowth of the spiritual dynamics. There were two trees in the Garden of Eden, one was the Tree of Life and one was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The first meant being transformed by the Creator who made them into the image of the Spirit of God and receiving spiritual life, but the other tree was performance. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil (religion) includes both Law (good) and license (evil). As soon as a group gets legalistic, they fall from grace. They then separate themselves by their performance and say in effect "look at what we're doing" which is a form of pride. God resists the proud, so they through a number of spiritual dynamics lose fellowship with God. This means they must cling to their legalistic traditions even more, because a live relationship with God is gone. (Bible Studies are forbidden by most Amish church distrists, and they don't get new revelation from God, they still are working off of the revelations of the 1600s, when they were traumatized and quit growing. When they split from the rest of the Mennonites, they were like a child alter split which never grows up.)

When a group gets legalism, they also get license, because the two grow from the same tree. Every Amish community has two large groups--the legalistic ones and the license ones. The young people are even split this way. In Lancaster County, the "Groffies" is the nickname of the large license group of young people who fornicate and drink. There is a smaller group of legalistic conservative young people too, who are at the other end of the spectrum. There is one group (gang might be a more appropriate name) called Jamborees who are an unruly and destructive collection of angry wild young people. The Bishops in Lancaster Co. meet twice yearly to keep this large settlement of opposites together. A lot of compromise and looking the other way is done for the sake of peace. "Peace" at any price is the name of the game. Even before a prayer is said in church the minister calls out, "Wenn mer eenich sin, wella mer bete." This translates, "If we are in one accord, then let us pray." Because peace is so important, they are out of balance in getting it. They place peace far above truth. In order to have the appearance that everything is well, secrecy pervades everything like the air one breathes. Because their whole culture is secret, children raised in it aren't aware of how strong it is, it is simply a way of life, like it is for the Illuminati. Legalism values conformity. Conformity perfers robotic obedience over understanding. In fact, one Bishop told Fritz, co-author of this book, "We don't want our young folks to understand why they do what they do, we only want obedience. Understanding is dangerous." Does the reader begin to see how the Amish make both the perfect setting for Monarch Mind-Control, and the perfect cover.

The Amish are a very secret group. During their early history they suffered severe persecution. Their culture teaches them to suffer in silence, which today helps their Satanic abusers infiltrate their culture. In the past in Europe, when the Catholic or Protestant church caught them they were tortured to death. They were hunted as animals and treated worse than animals when caught. This was the trauma, that Satan did to them, and the lie that was then handed them was that if they would cloister themselves secretly in the New World away from everyone else, they would be safe.

The Amish have shut out from outsiders the true flavor of their culture and beliefs. They are silent about their problems.

They tell themselves that outsiders couldn't possibly be interested in their affairs. The Amish themselves are very divided from each other. The divisions between Amish groups is called Zwietract. Zwietract can cover anything from a mild aloofness to a full fledged shunning (called the Meidung). The Amish aren't in general qualified to tell outsiders much in detail about their own heritage, or religion because they are so isolated from the other Amish settlements and have been raised in such an anti-intellectual culture. Most Amish are content to know that the way they do things "was always done this way" and that their elders and forefathers were gifted men who examined things very closely. Their social norms are not intellectually questioned by most Amish, but then American society has been very isolationist in the world and few Americans question their society & norms. Americans even rebel in the prescribed fashion, whatever the elite tell society is the "in" "cool" "hot" stylish way to do things.

The Amish are similar to the Mid-east culture in that they have a very indirect approach to saying things. They do not consider it proper to speak with a negative connotation about anybody. They also instinctively give pat answers to outsiders to blunt questions. These pat answers border on being rigid, prejudiced, and simple. They serve the purpose to deter curiosity.

The early Amish leaders were ex-Catholic priests, but most of the people were peasants who had little formal schooling, had little Bible knowledge, and came from southern Germany and the Rheinland where witchcraft was practiced by the common people. The Spirit of Witchcraft never left the Amish. It has always been with them. The folk witchcraft is called Brauche, and the craft is kept secret by old men who pass the incantations down in secret.

When the Amish moved to Pennslyvannia, they moved in next door to Rosicrucians. When the Rosicrucian settlements fell apart they joined the Mennonites, thus bringing their hermetic magic along with them.

Somewhere within the Amish were some families that were under cover for the Jesuits, and were sent in as spies long ago because they were corrupt. These families have been generational satanists, which practice pedophilia and other crimes in the safety of their isolation. They were placed within the Amish to help the Catholic church destroy the Amish. In Europe that happened under Hitler, when all the Old Order Amish were arrested in 1938 and wiped out of Germany.

Prior to WW II, the Nazi's part of the Illuminati sent over a number of programmed multiples which set up an unnamed cult in upstate New York. This cult was to help Hitler take power in the U.S. when the Nazi's won the war. They did not win the war, but 60 years later this Satanic cult still operates. Now 2nd and 3rd generation programmed multiples are now part of this cult. Somehow this Illuminati mission coordinates with the Illuminati project to get Hitler's bloodline hidden among the Amish, although the authors are aware of Hitler's descendants being in Oregon, and Washington as well as Pennslyvannia. One of them in Portland, Oregon works for the Federal government.

Lancaster County is sometimes referred to as the mother church. This was one of the original counties which the Amish settled in when they first came over to the New World. William Penn invited Rosicrucians, Amish, and other dissident religious groups to Pennslyvannia. The Satanic covens in Lancaster County, PA consist of members from Amish, Mennonite and Brethren churches. They are not simply all Amish.

Lancaster County's Amish will fellowship will all the approximately 200 other settlements of Amish around the country. What is a peculiar phenomena, is that many churches that do not fellowship with one another, will still maintain "communion" with Lancaster out of respect for place in Amish history. However, Lancaster County has some of the most immoral reprobate Amish that there could be. All this is hidden very well from the thousands of tourists, due to the secrecy of the Amish. The Amish do not often pay taxes, do not pay social security because they are exempt from the Social Security program, and send many of their children to Amish schools. They are truly a separate society which maintains rigid secrecy.

If you were the New World Order or the Illuminati where would you want to hide your assassins? The safest place is inside of the most pacifist group in the world, the Amish. Monarch mind-controlled slaves are being created out of Amish children.

During W.W. II, Amish conscientious objectors were forced by the government to do alternate public service in lieu of military service. This was known as Civilian Public Service. Amish & Mennonite conscientious objectors were placed into Mental Hospitals to help. They served at Allentown State Hosp., Allentown, PA; Cantonsville State Hosp., Cantonsville, MD; Cleveland State Hosp., Cleveland, OH; Delaware State Hosp., Parnhurst, DL; Denver State Hosp., Denver, CO; Greystone Park State Hosp., Greystone Park, NJ; Harrisburg State Hosp., Harrisburg, PA; Hudson River State Hosp., Poughkeepsie, NY; Kalamazoo State Hosp., Kalamazoo, MI; Lima State Hosp., Lima, OH; Livermore State VA Hosp., Livermore, CA; Macedonia State Hosp., Macedonia, OH; Marlboro State Hosp., Marlboro, NJ; Mt. Pleasant State Hosp., Mt. Pleasant, IO; Norristown State Hosp., Norristown, PA; Provo State Hosp., Provo, UT; Rhode Is. State Hosp., Howard, R.I.; Roseburg VA State Hosp., Roseburg, OR; Staunton State Hosp., Staunton, VA; Tiffin State Hosp., Tiffin, OH; Wernersville State Hosp., Wernersville, PA; Ypsilanti State Hosp., Ypsilanti, MI. The author, Fritz, believes that the complete story of how the Illuminati got a secret foothold into the Amish community lies in what happened in mental hospitals to the anxious-to-please, compliant, innocent Amish boys, who were assigned to these mental hospitals. Many people do not realize that during W.W. I, several Mennonite/Hutterite conscientious objectors were tortured to death by our government. Not a pretty picture when you find out how sadistic our government was willing to be toward its own citizens. Not only did the Amish boys go to lots of mental hospitals during W.W. II, but **all** of the religious groups that participated in the conscientious objector service (called Civilian Public Service) contributed boys to the Office of Scientific Research & Development (part of the Army), which was still using these boys for experiments until Dec. 31, 1946. What kinds of "experiments" were the Amish boys, who were offered up as guinea pigs, subjected to by the OSRD? We now know that some of these experiments were very dangerous to their human guinea pigs.

I-0 classification was the Selective Service Board's Conscientious Objector classification.

During the Vietnam War, Amish young men went into I-W service (conscientious objector service) at mental and regular hospitals. Their I-W service was for two years. Some of these young men were programmed at these hospitals. One Amish boy after he got home from I-W service committed suicide. The secret satanic families within various Amish settlements also offered up their children. This started a large scale super secret operation by the CIA/Intelligence agencies to set up Delta teams within the Amish. Who would ever suspect an Amishman? They have been expendable assassins for the CIA for years. These young men are strong farmboys. They have no connection between themselves and the outside world where they secretly carry out their missions, and if they die, there is no birth record, and perhaps a dozen other siblings for their family to continue on with.

During the Vietnam War, the Military's Selective Service did things differently than in W.W.II. Any hospital or mental hospital which applied for approval could get I-W (conscientious objector) boys. The Amish put together a Steering Committee to work with the government and the I-W service. In the I-W Steering Committee meetings (and the author Fritz attended one) it was stated by Committee members "The boys do not come back the same [from the hospitals]" and that the I-W service in the mental hospitals was "proving unsatisfactory and harmful."

Some of the mental hospitals which received Amish boys include Columbia Missouri's State Mental Hospital & Hospital complex, Colorado Psychopathic Hospital in Denver, all of the hospitals that got W.W. II I-Ws (as listed above), Central State Hospital, Indianpolis, IND, New Jersey State Hospital, Greystone Park, NJ, Philadelphia State Hospital, Philadelphia, PA, plus numerous others. At any one time, there were hundreds of Amish boys in I-W service. It is suspected that many of these hospitals were involved in mind-control, and it is known that the Columbia, MO complex of hospitals and Mid-Missouri State Mental Hospital, 803 Stadium Dr., Columbia, Missouri and the Veteren's Hospital across the street were involved in mind-control for the CIA.

A mental hospital had to apply to the Selective Service Board for approval to get I-W workers. Then their personnel departments would hire the I-W boys for positions such as nursing attendents. One State Mental Hospital administrator told Fritz that the whole I-W thing was "pretty confidential."

The Amish Steering Committee worked with the Mennonite Central Committee (MCC) which in turn worked for some quasi-religious group which is privately funded called The National Service Board of Religious Objectors (NSBRO) still active in Washington, D.C.

The Amish were slow to act, but by the end of the Vietnam War, they had managed to get some of their farms approved for I-W service and in 1971, the Steering Committee was able to announce that 70 Amish I-W boys were working on Amish farms in 8 states, rather than in hospitals. However, this late change was too late to protect their settlements from infiltration from sophisticated Illuminati mind-control.

HOW IT IS DONE

A programmed Amish boy will likely be contacted by what is called a "CUT-OUT". This is the secret contact person who maintains contact between the Handler and the Amish Delta. CUT-OUT's can either be given several slaves (a BLOCK CUT-OUT) or in other cases only know the up-line handler and down-line person (a CHAIN CUT-OUT). If further secrecy is needed by the handler, he can use "sterile telephones" which the Illuminati/CIA have which cannot be traced, even by the telephone companies.

When an Amish boy is activated and sent out on an assassination mission for the Illuminati/Intelligence agencies he is a professional at what he has been trained and programmed to do. Amish boys, programmed to be assassins, are used in what their handlers call "wet ops". This intelligence lingo means that human blood will run. Wet ops, also called black ops are debriefed by a briefing team. The Amish multiple will have to give a detailed account of the finished operation, once under hypnosis, once with a polygraph, and once under the drug scopolamine (a truth serum). And when the debriefing team, which includes a Mind-control Programmer, is satisfied that all of the inconsistencies between the different accounts have been ironed out, then the Programmer will block out all memory and guilt of the operation. The handler may write a "blind memorandum" which has no file no. or letterhead or name. Then Amish boy's assassination alters will be praised for having done a great service to humanity and to his country. The Amish boy can now be sent home to milk cows and work on his labor-intensive tobacco farm without any nagging guilt or horrible memories surfacing to trouble him (at least in theory). Trained assassins do have memory flashes, as all Monarch slaves have, but they are only bits and pieces.

People also do not realize that the Amish live in many more states than Pennslyvannia. They move all over the United States. If an Amishman was travelling on a CIA mission there are numerous of excuses that could be made for why he could be on the move. There are far more Amish young people away from the Amish settlements than people realize because they dress like the world. Many young people leave with the knowledge that they can go back years later and be accepted back into their community.

What are some of the mitigating factors in all of this? The Amish do their own butchering. They are down-to-earth people who are not afraid of blood. Essentially all Amish children grow up helping with butchering, and seeing life and death played out everyday on their farms. The Amish do not embalm their dead, and have their own cemeteries. The Satanic cult within the Amish can reopen the graves and carry out satanic ceremonies afterward. Their cemeteries are small almost hidden sites with markers hidden in grass. Some of these graveyards blend in with their rural settings.

Elmo, Joseph, and Victor Stoll are some prominent Amishmen. Joseph and Elmo have travelled a great deal esp. to Central America. Joseph wrote a book on Child Training which teaches parents how to break a child's will. This author is supportive of discipline and respect. The book is pointed out, only because it is a paper trail to show that the Amish discipline and the Illuminati's discipline at times can be similar. The only person who might see an Amish boy being disciplined (since they are a rural people) would be the immediate family or an occassional amish guest. An Amishman seeing a father carrying out the Monarch steps to build dissociation would likely not see anything wrong. If the guest did see something wrong (i.e. too strict or mean), the objections would be kept very low key. For sure, no non-Amish would ever hear about it.

The Illuminati families like the Dukes and Reynolds control tobacco production and cigarette manufacturing. In order to keep their lifestyle in Pennslyvannia, the Amish have had to grow tobacco for the Illuminati controlled companies. This author can only speculate what economic leverage that has given the Illuminati over the Pennslyvannia Amish.

HIDING A MAJOR PROGRAMMING CENTER

The blue prints of the Portland Mormon Temple at Lake Oswego, OR which sets over a secret underground programming site, were changed overnight after they were looked at. The original blueprints showed that Lake Oswego had allowed a building code to broken. The blueprint was changed, showing that Lake Oswego's city employees were working along with the Mormon church and the CIA to keep everything running smooth with their high tech secret underground programming center, which has the front of being sacred temple grounds. Three separate Monarch slaves independently described this underground installation, and there are other evidences of it too. In order to gain access to the underground programming tunnels, a person has to have to place their palm on the wall, where a disguised instrument identifies a person's hand. The entrances are disguised using the most sophisticated techniques. One is from the Temple Laundry Building south of the temple and another is from the hotel south of the temple. This hotel has a strange hard-to-find entrance to its parking lot, almost as if they haven't wanted uninvited guests.

Tunnels are widely used at the other various programming sites.

EXTERNAL & INTERNAL DECEPTIONS

There are some stock tools of deception that are used both externally on the world and internally on the slave when their system is programmed and structured. Later in the book we will cover the structuring. Since this chapter covers deceptions, we will discuss them here, but the reader needs to bear in mind, they will be employed in the structuring/programming phases of the slave's life. They are deflection, blinds, slides, Hegelian dialectics, and deniability.

a. Deflection is taking something good and deflecting its purpose. This is a stock tool. For instance, loyalty and obedience can be good virtuous things if given to the correct authority. But deflected to the false sadistic authority, they are disastrous. They use *Deflection* to redirect the power of truth which is opposed to them. Healthy foods, benevolence, ecology, love, acceptance, etc. are all part of the Creator's Christian walk. These truths and other are deflected from their original purpose of glorifying the Creator to glorifying their own programs. Rather than publicly opposing Christianity, they rename their own movements Christian, and then proceed to do very little for Christ, and everything for Lucifer. They are even deflecting worship of Jesus Christ onto worship of a demon named Jesus.

b. The next externally and internally used stock tool is called *"Blinds"*- these are deliberate deceptions placed within their own writings to confuse the uninitiated. H.P.B. gives a good description of the use of these, so do Masonic writers like Albert Pike. H.P.B. writing describes the use of Blinds in *The Secret Doctrine*, Vol. 5 Adyar edition, p. 435. Blinds are used in CIA documents, they are incorporated into the scripts that the alters receive. For instance, the in fetro Moon Child ceremonies are not revealed to the non-hierarchy alters, but they are told that the Moon Children have to do with the cage tortures.

c. Slides are truth that has been warped just slightly to take an investigative person into a dead end. An example of a slide, is that the New World Order is satanic, but that only Nazis and stupid people think that Jews are involved. This is a slide, because then the Rothschilds who hide behind their jewishness, can not be mentioned as suspects without people yelling "Antisemitism." In reality exposing these abusers has nothing to do with Anti-semitism, it's simply that all abusers no matter what good front they have, need to be correctly identified as dangerous. Another example, an alter who pretends to be helpful is placed in the system who says that the door to get to a castle internally is the fifth door on the right in such and such hall. The answer is correct, but the door must be opened using the left side, rather than the right side where the door knob is located. Because the answer doesn't pan out then the idea that the door is the correct door is discarded, and the alter's knowledge is suspect. Lots of psychiatrists are writing papers about MPD with slides. They give some truth, and then they give people a path to go down that will dead end them from ever finding the truth.

d. They use *Hegelian Dialectics*. This dialectic process doesn't happen on its own so it often has to be forced into happening. The idea is that each idea ("ism") called a "thesis", like say Capitalism, naturally by definition has an opposite, an "antithesis". In Capitalism the antithesis is Communism. The conflict between the two produces a synthesis. By controlling both ends of the conflict, one controls the end product, the synthesis. More than not, the One-World-Power can be seen working behind both sides of many conflicts. Indeed, the Secret Societies have been historically shown to be behind all the revolutions and wars in Modern Europe since the American Revolution. In religious conflict, both sides are often being manipulated. Some of the various groups openly admit their strategy is designed to create a synthesis. You will find Hegelian Dialectics has been introduced into the U.S. educational system by the Skull & Bones Order, an Illuminati group. It was adopted in Russia by the Slavophiles in the 19th century.

Communism, Nazism, Fabians, most New Age groups, Liberation Theology, and other parts of the Power use Hegelian Dialectics. Hegel in turn based his system on the ancient Greek atomists especially Democritus. Hegalian dialectics is built into the conflicting scripts that alters are given. Slaves who are twinned to another slave will find Hegelian dialectics employed in their twinning programming. The Hegelian dialectics can be worked in with the double-binds that the programmers love to use.

e. esoteric language.

f. Indirect interference with truthful information getting out. This is done by stealing the impact of the truth, by printing a parallel story with disinformation at the same time, or "leaking" an opposite story with disinformation at the same approximate time. Disinformation leaks can be done through the mass media, or an individual alter.

g. deniability. When orders are given and language is used, it is on purpose vague so that the guilty can deny their guilt.

At this point, it might be appropriate to cover some standard CIA tactics. They use some Monarch slaves as "Live Letter Drops". An LLD is a person who will remail spy letters. They will use "dead drop boxes" which are simply places that an item or message is concealed to be retrieved by some other criminal in the Network. They may give the slave a gift which then has to be passed on. They may protect a written message by writing it on edible paper. Safe houses are used, indicated by things such as 2 lion statues along with prearranged O.K. signals, such as the position of a flower pot.

INTERNAL DECEPTIONS

When building an internal world, the programmers use every trick in the book to hide things. First the abuse has to be hidden in silence, and then the MPD has to be hidden. Next, the real core needs to be hidden. Then, the purpose of a Monarch slave needs to be hidden. All the time that this is going on, the programmers must constantly work at keeping the programmers' identities hidden, and their programming sites hidden. Programmers usually have cover names when programming, and then hypnotically have the victim see them as something else. For instance, Dr. Green had victims see him as a cricket. He even used a cricket noise maker while programming, that clicked. In recent times, the Programmers and handlers are programming their slaves to believe that they are aliens.

The slave will generally be lied to that they have a "twin" somewhere.

Internally, the Programmer will begin making the System with the core related alters and then the front alters. The front alters will be rearranged in a fashion that the structure of the System is confused. The front alters will be given heavy programming, to convince them that nothing ever happened to them, they had a wonderful life. They will be given fictitious stories about the programming, so that almost every item in a System has a cover story to mislead an alter about what is going on.

Many things are placed in boxes. Clowns programmed to cut, are Jack-in-box clowns that pop up when an alter even thinks unapproved thoughts.

Some of the important things in a System may be hidden out front.

An alter on the front may think it is stupid, and yet they have access to internal maps of the entire system--which they can remember only on code. If a person (such as a therapist or nosey alter) goes to look deep in the System for the material he might be frustrated. Under a fanatically un-sexual (asexual) alter, will be a sexual alter. Under a stupid alter, may be an alter gifted in a language or art. Alters are very often hidden behind opposite types of alters.

Important things in the System, and many unimportant things, are all well guarded. Sometimes particular alters have to serve as the guards. Some of these guards are called Gatekeepers. Gatekeeper alters will appear near the surface of a system, and then again deep in the System about level 10, and 12. Gatekeeper alters are alters that the programmer must go through to get to deeper levels. The Gatekeeper alters are very heavily programmed to keep them in place. They will receive intensive lies.

Some of the access triggers which must accompany the verbal codes are kept secret, by virtue of the fact that no person in their right mind would use them, such as needles, electroshocks, or slaps to certain parts of the body to trigger deep alters to take the body.

Items in a System will be disguised, such as the clockmaker alter/demons will make clocks to appear in the system like anything they want. The only way these can be adequately identified is that these clocks are always disguised as gold items.

As the Programmers work, they like to find word games, plays on words and double-binds. They will also put in scrambling programs, deaf alters and foreign language codes to help protect their secrets. The alters who look the least to have programming may have the most.

Duplicate alters of most alters are created, so that even the alters themselves don't know if it is themselves or another alter. These duplicates are called mirrored images & looking glass people (LGPs). Some of the mirrored images may turn out to be demonic entities that have been placed using high level demonology.

Suicide alters, who are trained to have a big smile and be clowns, mask their intention to kill the body when they take the body of a slave.

A popular method for hiding things within the occult world, has been boxes within boxes. A Masonic organization will have a rite, with a secret rite, with a secret group, with an insider clique.

Common everyday items that surround the slave will be given special meanings. The songs the slave hears on the radio, will for instance have code words. The Programmers due to the corruption of the music industry knows what hit songs are coming out, and they will haul their slaves in and program them according to the lyrics of the soon-to-be hits. The lyrics will be written so that programmed meanings can be attached to certain words and lines. Something as innocent as watching T.V., listening to the T.V. or to a sermon may actually be programming a special message into the victim.

Hand signals will even be done over the news or other shows. For instance, Bill Clinton at his inauguration made a satanic signal during the inauguration ceremony. This sign of Satan is a standard hypnotic induction hand signal for slaves.

Clinton waves the sign of Satan with his left hand at his inauguration. This is a hypnotic induction signal for slaves. Although some might interpret this as "I love you" which is handed by the right hand of a deaf person, this left handed signal will induct slaves no matter what some people think the meaning is.

No wise person would knowingly choose to fight their opponent blind and deaf, yet that seems to be the choice which many nominal Christians are choosing. They would like to live in denial and to characterize this book as doomsdayer stuff and then dismiss and ignore this material. They want to eat, drink and be happy.

If people think that by putting their heads in the sand they can escape the future, or even the present difficulties, they may be in for a rude surprise.

The USE of ESOTERIC language.

One method of deception is the use of Esoteric language. Esoteric terms are understood by those deep in the occult, but are misunderstood by the common people. The best example is the term "Saturn."

SATURN

The word Saturn consistently turns up as an important word for the Illuminati and upper levels of the occult. Because Saturn is such an important concept, it should be covered in this part of the book. Therapists may encounter something to do with Saturn in a programmed multiple.

Before Fritz began researching the elite of the occult world, Saturn was merely meant an enormous planet 95 times the size of the earth's mass, the 6th of the solar system in an orbit of 29.5 years around the sun. This means that the co-authors of this book are less than three Saturnian years old. Fritz was also aware that Saturn was the father of all Gods in the mythology of the ancient world.

David M. Talbot in his book *The Saturn Myth* documents how all over the world Saturn has been worshipped even more than the sun god. Saturn has been the secret god of the occult world.

When we read in Deut. 18:9-10, "When thou art come into the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not learn to do after the abominations of those nations. There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch." All of these practices are abominations done by Satanists today and are becoming commoner among Americans. Note that the first item mentioned by Moses in this passage was passing (putting) children into the fire (of Moloch).

A commentary (Keil, Carl F. and Franz Delitzch. *Commentary on The Pentateuch, III*, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1949, p.393.) on DT 18:9-10 is: "Moses groups together all the words which the language contained for different modes of exploring the future and discovering the will of God, for the purpose of forbidding every description of soothsaying, and places the prohibition of Moloch-worship at the head, to show the inward connection between soothsaying and idolatry, possibly because februation, or passing children through the fire in the worship of Moloch, was more intimately connected with soothsaying and magic than any other description of idolatry." The worship of Moloch was the worship of Saturn. There are perhaps various routes one can take to learn this. One route is a very close examination of the Scripture, especially the old Septuagint.

Scriptures actually write of this fact in Amos 5:25-26 and Acts 7:41-43.

Amos wrote, "Did ye bring unto me sacrifices and offerings in the wilderness forty years, O House of Israel? Yea, ye have borne the tabernacle of your king ("siccuth malkecem", or in the Septuagint it reads "skenen tou Moloch"!!), and the shrine (kiyyun) of your images, the star of your God, which ye made to yourselves" AMS 5:25-26

The Christian Stephen quotes these passages of Amos and connects it with the worship of the golden calf (bull or Taurus). His words on this are recorded in Acts 7:41. He further connects it in the next verse with the worship of "the host of heaven". In line with translations like the Septuagint, he states in verse 43 that Amos 5 refers to the cult "of Moloch and the star of the god Rephan".

Hebrew writing consists of only the consonants. The vowels can be added with what are termed vocalizations, which are dots. The Jewish scribes in their contempt for heathen gods placed vocalizations (vowel indicators) on the word Molech (M-L-CH) from a hebrew word for "shame". Because the incorrect vocalization was added out of contempt for the heathen names of abominable gods, the word Molech (Saturn worship) has been mistranslated by some translators. Further, the word Chiun (Kaimanu in Assyria) has been represented by the word Rephan in Acts 7:43. Rephan is Kaivan (Chiun) which is the arabian and syrian way of saying Saturn. Rephan apparently was a very limited or localized way of saying Saturn. The adoration of the calf (bull) in the wilderness was an important act of defiance by the Israelites-- while Moses went up on the mountain to speak to God face to face. This worship of the bull was actually worship of Saturn! Some call this star worship, and the bull was worshipped because at that time the constellation Taurus (the Bull) marked the position of the sun at the time of the spring equinox. The fact that the calf was gold was no accident--gold has many Satanic connotations.

For a modern occult reference connecting the Bull, astrology and gold together see *Esoteric Astrology* by Alice Bailey (Lucis Trust, 1951), pp 378-79.

Various scholars on ancient religion have written that the worship of Moloch was Saturn worship. For instance, Siculus Diodorus wrote, "...there was a brazen statue of Saturn putting forth the palms of his hands, bending in such a manner toward the earth, as that the boy who was laid upon them, in order to be sacrificed, should slip off, and so fall down headlong into a deep burning furnace..."

The ancient Roman circus, like so many public activities in America, was based upon the occult. The circus had 7 circuits, and had a pyramid in the center with 3 alters, one to Saturn, one to Jove, and one to Mars. This is an example of what the common people knew about Saturn.

Moloch, then was the Sun God, during the Zodiac period from Taurus to Serpens and Scorpio which is when the sun is hottest.

The Babylonians referred to Saturn as the "star of the sun". In the Mithraic Mysteries, Saturn was the Sun God. (See Hall, Manly P. *The Lost Teachings of All Ages*. p. facing 21.) In fact, Saturn was the Sun God of many of the Pagan religions, and was the foundation of the Solar Temple. (ibid. Hall tells us on pg. 97, Lower Left, that Saturn is the foundation of the Solar Temple.)

The Ten tribes of the Israelites fell into the ritual sacrifices of Moloch (Saturn worship and sacrifice) which brought them their judgment of Assyrian captivity. (2 KGS 17:16-17) Astrology, witchcraft, and ritual sacrifice were also associated with Saturn worship. Isaiah the prophet tells those who worship Saturn, "Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee." ISA 47:13 Saturn did not save the Israelites from captivity.

Ex-Illuminati members have revealed that Saturn is Satan. Yes, Saturn is Satan. The Satanic Illuminati hierarcy teach the high level students that "those who serve Saturn promote the return of the lost son Saturn."

The religion of Saturn is Saturnian gnosis--which turns out to simply be a rehash of the gnosticism that the high level Satanists believe in. Saturn is severe. Jupiter is mild. The merging of Saturn (severity) with Jupiter (mildness) is the creation of the new Golden Age--according to high level Satanic hierarchy teachings. The earth has been caught in a battle between a bi-polar world--the inner Solar Logos and the outer Saturnian sphere. The trans-Saturnian planets actually belong to Alcyone(!) which eventually gets its planets returned. (This may be the reason, that the Satanic hierarchy has treated us to "good aliens from the Pleiades." Alcyone is a star in the Pleides.)

Saturnian gnostic teachings are that darkness contains the light. What this means is that darkness is necessary for light to exist. And light appears within the matrix of darkness only by the Demiurge Saturnes--the Logos. This is what they teach.

According to Albert Pike in the Masonic Text Book *Morals and Dogma* given to 32° Masons, the work of the Sun is the perfecting (also known as the deification of) man. Christians view that it is Satan's work to teach men that they can be deified (which is rebellion to the one and only true God).

SECRET HIGH LEVEL TEACHINGS

In secret Satanic rituals, the Grande Master has a scepter which represents his authority to wield power through the Lord of this world who is known as Saturn. New Age leaders are calling "Saturn" "Sanat Kumera". A devil by any name is still a devil.

In a dialogue with a Mother of Darkness, this Mother of Darkness alter provides some interesting information. The dialogue went like this:

Mother of Darkness: "Saturn is the gateway that must be opened. For a season God has winked that man might be illuminated. But excessive light destroys. Man must not forget his destiny is concerned with loving regeneration of the earth [Mother Gaia worship] and balance. Soon the other eye of God must open. Those who are illuminated have kept the balance point. The majority of mankind has not. Few seek the ancient seed of wisdom that springs from the brow of Lucifer. Man becomes...forgetful of His spiritual ancestry and destiny....They are Ellyllon. Keepers of nothing. They fill the earth with their passing and crowd the planes with nothingness. They are a waste of the energies. And so the other eye must open. Each man shall receive abundance in what he seeks. Some call it Karma..."

Interviewer: "What do you mean by the other eye?"

Mother of Darkness: "The other eye of God as some would say. Chemosh. Cleansing Fire. The outstreched arms of Molech."

Interviewer: "What has that got to do with Saturn?"

Mother of Darkness: "Everything. This is a most secret thing. Saturn is the gateway. The point at which all thought is fixed. The point at which all feeling shall be projected as the eye opens. Much ritual and preparation has gone into the issuance through the gateway of the ancient ones. There has been a gathering of the elemental essence to clothe them. A strengthened invisible quintessence to hold them in this plane at the time of advent.

Interviewer: "And what will be the result of this advent? What will it mean?"

Mother of Darkness: "A restoring of balance. Those who do not seek wisdom shall cease. Those who are so bound to the earth that they forget the light shall cease....When the other eye opens the dawn shall come. The Golden Dawn shall be upon us and the sun of righteousness shall rise with healing in His wings....The urge to sacrifice others is a gift. It is a liberation from the awful rigidity for at least it permits an awareness of other humans. However badly...treated as a result of that awareness they have served an important purpose. The balance is kept and the light dwells upon the illuminated. The energy is released into the circle and is converted into something powerful and useful....In this way you can see they do not truly die. Light increases. Wisdom grows....Death begets life. The sacred cycle of the ancients. The earth shall regenerate herself when the eye of Molech opens."

There the reader has it, secret teachings from a Mother of Darkness on Saturn.

Gnosticism believes that there is a force (not Almighty God)--the Force as it is called can be used for evil or good. Within the hierarchy of the Satanists (Moriah), their thinking has no problem understanding that Lucifer is the same person as Satan. Satan is what happens when the evil side of the Force is being used, and Lucifer is that person when the good side of the Force is being used.

As in all of the Mystery Religions and in the occult world in general, people are told different things at different levels. Most people don't want to serve evil. They want to think they are good--their pride motivates them to want to be thought of as good and great. They will easily follow Lucifer, but are not going to admit to themselves or anyone that they are following Satan. NO problem--they are allowed to think they are Luciferians. OR if being a follower of Lucifer is too strong a statement, they can be a worshipper of almost thing. Satan in his pride has provided esoteric teachings on the worship of just about everything. There are esoteric teachings about worshipping rock, mountains, trees, the stars, animal spirits, mother earth etc. If one probes deep enough into the layers of hidden meanings all these worships go back to Satan. The five primary interlocked concepts of Satan, are all represented by the Serpent, which are Lucifer (aka Light-bearer or godhood); Search for light or wisdom; sun worship, the Sun god, or energy; fire also called Kundalini force; and the regenerative principle which is phallic and sex worship. These 5 interconnected concepts are represented world wide by snakes (serpents) and represent worship of the supreme serpent Satan.

THE EXTERNALIZATION OF THE HIERARCHY

The big event or operation that is being carried out is the externalization of the hierarchy. Satan's secret hierarchy with its pure Satanists have been around for thousands of years. But the Satanic conspiracy to control mankind is to become an "open conspiracy". The hierarchy is to be externalized. And the elimination of Christians (those who haven't sought worldly wisdom--that worldly wisdom which comes from Satan) --is to pave the way for Satan's appearance. The Satanic occult conspiracy is to leave its secret confines in Masonic Temples and Oddfellow Halls and is to permeate Society in general. This is what has been happening. The real light must go out for the dark side to feel comfortable coming completely out.

The Mysteries, also known as the Mystery Religions are the Mysteries that one is initiated into when one joins Freemasonry. In fact, the very first item any prospective Masonic candidate must do is fill out a form requesting to be initiated into "the Mysteries." The Mystery Religions were actually veiled forms of the worship of Lucifer or Satan. Lucifer is simply Satan dressed up as the Light-bearer. In the Mystery Religions the disciples are taught that the spirits of men are the powdered bones of Saturn. When one learns who Saturn is--it is a rather distasteful idea to think that men are taught that their bodies belong to Saturn. Further, Freemasonry teaches about Hiram Abiff and CHiram. It turns out when we study the Hiramic Legend by Freemasonry's best philosopher that we learn who Santa Claus is. Santa is a scrambling of Satan. Anyway the Hiramic legend goes like this according to Freemasonry great expert on the Mystery Religions, "Saturn, the old man who lives at the north pole, and brings with him to the children of men a sprig of evergreen (the Christmas tree), is familiar to the little folks under the name of Santa Claus, for he brings each winter the gift of a new year."

"Part of the symbols, are displayed...to the initiated, but he is intentionally led astray by false interpretations...Masonry conceals its secrets from all except the Adepts, the Sages and the Elect; and uses false explanations for its symbols to mislead those deserving to be misled." (This is according to the great Freemason Albert Pike in his book *Morals & Dogma.*)

It should come as no surprise that Saturn is one of the items which is mentioned by various Masonic authors. For instance, the Freemason Ragon, who is considered an expert on Freemasonry, wrote, "This is the important phenomenon, the ineffable mystery, the key to nature, which the ancient sages succeeded in discovering, and which they adopted as the basis of Masonic doctrine...It is the subject of Masonic legends. According to this interpretation, the revolting atrocities of Saturn...were considered interesting enigmas, which involve facts worth our notice." (Ragon, *Tyileur General De La Franc-Maconnerie*, p. 219-19 as quoted in Mohr, Gordon. *The Hidden Power Behind Freemasonry*, Burnsville, MN: Weisman Pub., 1990, p. 109)

Alice Bailey's *Esoteric Astrology* states that Saturn is the Lord of Karma (p. 105) Venus and Saturn shall rule men during Aquarius. (p. 148) "Saturn is the planet of discipleship... we stand at the gateway of the new world, of the new age and its new civilization, ideals and culture." (p. 148) The occult book *A Treatise on Cosmic Fire*, pp 1196-1207 states that Saturn is the 5th creative Hierarchy. This is the type of stuff that the Kaballa comes out with.

And American businesses which are controlled by the Illuminati are getting into the act of bringing the occult out into society. Ford called its car Taurus (Bull--the Pleiades), another car is named Aries which is another occult astrological name. Then there is the car named Saturn!!

In conclusion, Saturn turns out to be an occult name for Satan. Santa turns out to be an occult name for Saturn. It also turns out that the name Saturn has been used for Satan for centuries by the occult. The ritual sacrifices to Molech was Saturn worship. The opening of the eye of Saturn is the materialization of hordes of demons taking place during this time period. High level Illuminati, who will gather together in Atlanta in the summer of 1996, under the cover of the '96 Olympics will carry out high level rituals to open up a large hole for the materialization of hordes of demons to complete their push toward a world dictator.

The use of the name Saturn is an example of how Satanism operates under the cover of layers of deception.

Many Christian words also have occult meaning. There is a Morning Star Church in Tulsa which ministers to victims of Illuminati Trauma Based Total Mind-Control. There is also a prophetic magazine named *The Morning Star*, which is very slick and glossy. On the other side of things, the term "the Morning Star"--Stella Matutina in Latin- is another name for Lucifer. Stella Matutina is also the name of a cabalistic black magic lodge which satanist Aleister Crowley led when the Golden Dawn reorganized in 1903. There are Morning Star rituals done by Illuminati members.

One Illuminati slave, who was trained to infiltrate Christian churches and turn them toward the New Age movement, channeled a demon named Jesus. He infiltrated Christian churches for decades, and when he spoke about Jesus, he was referring to the demon he channeled. We know about this because one day, his front alters gave their life to Jesus Christ, and he abandoned his job of infiltration, and sought spiritual help.

People need to understand that almost all Christian terms have dual meanings. Just because a term sounds familiar doesn't mean it is being used in the way that a sincere Christian would understand them.

IN SUMMARY

To summarize, the Illuminati are manipulating technology, language, ritualistic activity, subliminal awareness, fear, lust, human vulnerabilities, and conflicts. These manipulations are external deceptions, which help cover up their trauma-based mind control. They use the best covers as fronts.

They use fiction, the best of religious fronts, travelling entertainment fronts, and the cover of national defense. They use deflection, blinds, slides, Hegelian dialectics, deniability, and esoteric language. They use agent provocateurs, "clean agents", "legends", and safe houses. **The Illuminati have refined the art of deception far beyond what the common man has imagined. The very life & liberty of humanity requires the unmasking of their deceptions. That is what this book is about.**

Electronics

These photos printed in a magazine in the Fall of '81 show electric prod marks on the necks of these two slaves who were used for porn.

These three X-rays, used with the permission of the 3 victims show in the top left x-ray a mind-control implant in the nasal cavity. The bottom left is a transmitting implant in the cortex, and the bottom right are electrodes implanted into the skull when this person was a child in the 1940s.

Drawings of implants by Fritz Springmeier.

IMPLANTS ENLARGED FROM 11 & 7 MM

CHAPTER 6
SCIENCE NO. 6-
THE USE OF ELECTRONICS & ELECTRICITY

Another basic component of the Monarch program is lots of electro shock. Stun guns, staffs with hidden electric cattle prods, and cattle prods are frequently used on the slaves. Electroshock is used to create the dissociation from trauma during the programming, and later it is used to remove memories after the slave has carried out a mission, or to instill fear and obedience in a reluctant slave. Slaves generally carry horrible body memories of excruciating electro-shock tortures to their entire bodies. As the slaves begin a therapeutic deprogramming process they will recover these horrible memories, not to mention many other painful memories.

A slave often shows electro-shock marks on their feet, or back, or buttock or legs after they have been used.

An owner of a slave will ordinarily carry a stun gun. This is perhaps a 120,000 DC volt stun gun to erase & compartmentalize memories, but some of the stun guns go up to 200,000 volts DC to erase the memory of his slave. They will apply their stun guns to the base of the skull. After giving programming instructions they will usually give a high voltage shock to the base of the skull to imbed the instructions deep in the subconscious. They often use hypnotic cues along with the shock. For instance, they will tell the slave they are "now going over the rainbow", and that when the sun goes down they will forget everything, before they shock the body. The shock destroys and scrambles the memory which is still stored in the short term memory section of the brain. They must shock the person within 24 hours, to insure that the short term memory doesn't get into long term memory as a coherent memory. This means that if a slave is being used daily, they get electroshocked daily.

Types of devices used by handlers:

A cylindrical type cattle prod with 3/4" between the contact points is used externally and internally. This is manufactured by Hot Shot Products, Inc., Savage, MN 55378. Model B-12. They have a red or black rubber handle with an overall length of 12". The low voltage is between 10,000-15,000 volts. The medium voltage is 12,000 to 20,000 volts. A bruise on the buttocks will be black and blue spots about 1 1/2" diameter each.

A hand held wand type shock prod which has 2 3/4" between its contact points. It uses a rechargeable battery pack. The prod (wand) is 2 1/2' long, and unwieldy to handle. Various farm supply companies (livestock equipment) sell this. The medium voltage is 12,000 to 20,000.

A stun gun which has exactly 2" between the contacts with a 9 volt battery. This stun gun was created for law enforcement, and is generally regarded as the best device for dropping a victim or for inducing hypnosis, or setting in a hypnotic program. Its high voltage is 35,000 to 120,000 volts. It is a light weight (12 oz.), compact device, 7" x 2" x 1". This device will leave deep red dot ("holes") scars and cancerous moles. The victim will develop moles from the repeated use of this device.

The muscled areas of the victim are preferred. For instance, the muscled area just below the shoulder blade.

Farrall Instrument Co., of Grand Island, NE makes a cattle prod with an adjustable voltage control. Their long distance wireless shocker called Personal Shocker can shoot a shock about 75 indoors and 300 feet outdoors. The control box is hand held, and the receiver is a leather case. The shock can be adjusted from 9 to 800 volts, current is 5 milliamperes, and it lasts 1 to 2 milliseconds. This Personal Shocker was manufactured to be used on people.

An electronic firm in Tujunga, CA makes a shock box used in programming.

An electronic bark collar is used to train Illuminati & other Monarch slaves in silence & obedience. On other occassions, fancy gem studded collars and leather collars are fitted around the necks of female slaves for sex with wolves and fierce dogs, who bite these neck-collars when they mount. Many of the slaves have experienced these various collars for obedience, silence, & bestiality.

In trying to track down who makes the larger electro-shock machines, especially the computer guided ones, we **only got started** investigating. Con-med (315-797-8375) makes medical electrodes for portable monitoring units. Sentry Medical Products, at 17171 Murphy, Irvine, CA 92714 (714-250-0233) makes Skin Mounted Conductive Medical Electrodes for Tense Unit Machines. In Vivo Metric, in Healdsburg, CA also makes silver Chloride electrodes for placement on human skin. Electro-Cap Inter. produces EEG placement systems. Uni-Patch Medical Products, 1313-T Grant Blvd. W, Wabasha, MN makes all types of Electrodes and some of theirs go onto machines for shocking people. Classic Medical Products, 582-T W 19246 Apollo Dr., Muskego, WI make electrodes for diagnostic and shock purposes. Arndt Automation & Assoc., Inc., 17770 Liberty Lane, New Berlin, WI, make electrodes for ECG and EKG machines. And a Colorado company named Biomedical at Evergreen, CO makes medical electrodes.

When a slave is taken to an impromptu programming site--a hypnotic drug is injected into them for a quick induction while a metal band is put around their head and a current of 100,000 volts will be run through for say 5 seconds into their heads. This will cause the body to shake, the eyes to close, sweat to pour out of the body etc. The hands are tied down with restraints. Sometimes the mouth is gagged so that the tongue doesn't protrude. After imbedding the hypnotic commands deep into the mind, the programmers might adjust the automatic timer on the equipment and give the victim another blast of voltage for 10 seconds. The person's body will shake and quiver for a while after this. They may dribble spit. Finally, the person will be brought out of their hypnotic trance, instructed not to remember anything, to feel happy and sent on their way. This entire programming session can last 15 minutes. Programming sites like this can be the back of a van, a back room in a restaurant, or any other place that the equipment can be set up at.

This is why a slave, who has been used recently, may hobble a little, or when they get memories feel a tight headband around their head along with awful headaches & flashes of light. The memory will feel like a robotic state to the slave.

Here is a drawing that one slave made of the electric headband used to program an alter.

The slave handler will also carry a black or grey spiral book with all their own slave's access codes, triggers, cryptic keys and programs. All this will fit into a brief case. A working knowledge of hypnosis is helpful to understand how to deal with the slave in certain instances. Because the slave is under the most powerful combinations of mind-control and is so divided against his or her own self, it is almost impossible to have many problems with the slave if the handler does what he is supposed to do. However, some handlers get drunk or loan the slave to inexperienced people, etc. and problems do develop. Of course the slaves always end up taking the blame for everything that goes wrong. If the slave gets out of hand, because the handler doesn't know what he is doing, a stun gun comes in handy to control the mismanaged slave.

In other words, a brief case with the programming book and stun gun are basically all that is needed to control a Monarch slave for the rest of his or her life. Some of these stun guns are only a few inches long and look like boxes. Other stun guns are imbedded in staffs. The canes and the staffs that Satanists carry around, like Michael Aquino (in public in fact) are actually stun guns to control their slaves. The Queen Mother's staff of the Illuminati has an electric stun gun hidden in it. Children in day care centers are reporting small boxes with wires that electroshock them during programming.

An example is given in Vol. 1, of how the Illuminati bloodlines connect to research about electric shocks to control people. For example, David V. Reynold's research, who wrote, "Neuroelectric Research: Electroneuroprosthesis, Electroanesthesia, and Nonconvulsive Electrotherapy."

Another way of using electricity for torture is to use directed energy (a new technology) on men's genitals. With skillful use of directed energy they can simulate a rape of a man or woman. Artificial sodomy via directed energy was first tested in male prisons. ELF waves will place thoughts into the men's mind as the directed energy make them feel sodomized.

MICROWAVES FOR PROGRAMMING

On Aug. 22, 1989, Phillip L. Stoklin, P.O. Box 2111, Satellite Beach, FL took out a patent --which is Patent Number 4,858,612 which is a device that can be placed in the auditory cortex of the brain. This device allows the following process: someone speaks into a microphone, the microphone then has its sounds coded into microwave, which are sent to the receiver in the brain and the receiver device will transform the microwaves back so that the person's mind hears the original sounds. In other words, a person with this device in their head will hear whatever the programmers send via microwave signals.

Various types of "non-lethal" weapons have been created and are now being used. Directed-energy can be used to sculpt clouds. ELF waves can be used to place thoughts in people's minds without using implants. In 1991, a paper trail began to appear when the CIA connected U.S. government Global Strategy Council came out with a paper entitled, "Nonlethality: Development of a National Policy and Employing Nonlethal Means in a New Strategic Era." Their paper was prepared by Janet Morris.

The USAF School of Aerospace Medicine, Brooks Air Force Base, TX put out a report USAFAM-TR-87-30 entitled "Behavioral response of rats exposed to high-power microwave radiation." High-power,ultra-short pulse-width emitters of microwaves were used to alter the thinking in rats. The report refers to two other reports: one by T. Wheeler, et. al. "Retrograde Amnesia in Rats Produced by Electron Beam Exposure," entitled USAFAM-TR-83-3, Feb. '83. The other report is by R. Bermant, "Classical conditioning of Microwave-Induced Hyperthermia in Rats." Radio Sci. 14 (6S): 201-207, 1979. This is a clear paper trail, that military research has gone on to control the brain via microwaves.

Another institution in Texas, the Texas Dept. of Criminal Justice TDCJ-ID, has been putting high-tech listening implants into the ear canal behind the ear drum which lets them monitor what the ear is hearing--a great way to spy. This is according to an implant victim who with medical help discovered his implant.

The Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (WRAIR) discovered that pulsed microwave audiograms also called analogs of the sounds of spoken words, could be transmitted to a target, and the effect on victim would be to hear voices in their head.

(The next 11 pages are patent no. 4,858,612. After this, we'll reveal the numerous mind-control capabilities of ELF-microwave tech.) ▶

United States Patent [19]

Stocklin

[11] Patent Number: 4,858,612

[45] Date of Patent: Aug. 22, 1989

[54] HEARING DEVICE

[76] Inventor: Philip L. Stocklin, P.O. Box 2111, Satellite Beach, Fla. 32937

[21] Appl. No.: 562,742

[22] Filed: Dec. 19, 1983

[51] Int. Cl.⁴ A61N 1/36

[52] U.S. Cl. .... 128/422; 178/419 S

[58] Field of Search .... 128/419 R, 419 S, 422, 128/653, 771, 732, 741, 746, 791, 804; 340/407

[56] References Cited

U.S. PATENT DOCUMENTS

3,490,458	1/1970	Allison	128/421
3,751,605	8/1973	Michelson	128/1 R
3,951,134	4/1976	Malech	128/131
4,428,377	1/1984	Zollner et al.	128/419 R

FOREIGN PATENT DOCUMENTS

893311	2/1972	Canada	128/422
2811120	9/1978	Fed. Rep. of Germany	128/419 R
591196	1/1978	U.S.S.R.	128/419 R

OTHER PUBLICATIONS

Gerkin, G., "Electroencephalography & Clinical Neurophysiology", vol. 135, No. 6, Dec. 1973, pp 652-653.

Frye et al., "Science", vol. 181, Jul. 27, 1973, pp. 356-358.

Bise, William, "Low Power Radio-Frequency and Microwave Effects on Human Electroencephalogram and Behavior", Physiol. Chem. & Physics 10 (1978).

Primary Examiner—William E. Kamm

Attorney, Agent, or Firm—Wegner & Bretschneider

[57] ABSTRACT

A method and apparatus for simulation of hearing in mammals by introduction of a plurality of microwaves into the region of the auditory cortex is shown and described. A microphone is used to transform sound signals into electrical signals which are in turn analyzed and processed to provide controls for generating a plurality of microwave signals at different frequencies. The multifrequency microwaves are then applied to the brain in the region of the auditory cortex. By this method sounds are perceived by the mammal which are representative of the original sound received by the microphone.

29 Claims, 7 Drawing Sheets

MICROWAVE AMPLIFIER BANK 18
OSCILLATOR 1
20
AMP
21
P1
OSCILLATOR 2
20
AMP
21
P2
19
22
24
26
23
25
OSCILLATOR N
20
AMP
21
PN
MICROWAVE RADIATION GENERATOR

HEARING DEVICE

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

1. Field of the Invention

This invention relates to devices for aiding of hearing in mammals. The invention is based upon the perception of sounds which is experienced in the brain when the brain is subjected to certain microwave radiation signals.

2. Description of the Prior Art

In prior art hearing devices for human beings, it is well known to amplify sounds to be heard and to apply the amplified sound signal to the ear of the person wearing the hearing aid. Hearing devices of this type are however limited to hearing disfunctions where there is no damage to the auditory nerve or to the auditory cortex. In the prior art, if there is damage to the auditory cortex or the auditory nerve, it cannot be corrected by the use of a hearing aid.

During World War II, individuals in the radiation path of certain radar installations observed clicks and buzzing sounds in response to the microwave radiation. It was through this early observation that it became known to the art that microwaves could cause a direct perception of sound within a human brain. These buzzing or clicking sounds however were not meaningful, and were not perception of sounds which could otherwise be heard by the receiver. This type of microwave radiation was not representative of any intelligible sound to be perceived. In such radar installations, there was never a sound which was generated which resulted in subsequent generation of microwave signals representative of that sound.

Since the early perception of buzzing and clicking, further research has been conducted into the microwave reaction of the brain. In an article entitled "Possible Microwave Mechanisms of the Mammalian Nervous System" by Philip L. Stocklin and Brain F. Stocklin, published in the TIT Journal of Life Sciences, Tower International Technomedical Institute, Inc. P.O. Box 4594, Philadelphia, Pa. (1979) there is disclosed a hypothesis that the mammalian brain generates and uses electro magnetic waves in the lower microwave frequency region as an integral part of the functioning of the central and peripheral nervous systems. This analysis is based primarily upon the potential energy of a protein integral in the neural membrane.

In an article by W. Bise entitled "Low Power Radio-Frequency and Microwave Effects On Human Electroencephalogram and Behavior", Physiol. Chemistry Phys. 10, 387 (1978), it is reported that there are significant effects upon the alert human EEG during radiation by low intensity CW microwave electromagnetic energy. Bise observed significant repeatable EEG effects for a subject during radiation at specific microwave frequencies.

SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

Results of theoretical analysis of the physics of brain tissue and the brain/skull cavity, combined with experimentally-determined electromagnetic properties of mammalian brain tissue, indicate the physical necessity for the existence of electromagnetic standing waves, called modes in the living mammalian brain. The mode characteristics may be determined by two geometric properties of the brain; these are the cephalic index of the brain (its shape in prolate spheroidal coordinates) and the semifocal distance of the brain (a measure of its size). It was concluded that estimation of brain cephalic index and semifocal distance using external skull measurements on subjects permits estimation of the subject's characteristic mode frequencies, which in turn will permit a mode by mode treatment of the data to simulate hearing.

This invention provides for sound perception by individuals who have impaired hearing resulting from ear damage, auditory nerve damage, and damage to the auditory cortex. This invention provides for simulation of microwave radiation which is normally produced by the auditory cortex. The simulated brain waves are introduced into the region of the auditory cortex and provide for perceived sounds on the part of the subject.

BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

FIG. 1 shows the acoustic filter bank and mode control matrix portions of the hearing device of this invention.

FIG. 2 shows the microwave generation and antenna portion of the hearing device of this invention.

FIG. 3 shows a typical voltage divider network which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 4 shows another voltage divider device which may be used to provide mode partition.

FIG. 5 shows a voltage divider to be used as a mode partition wherein each of the resistors is variable in order to provide adjustment of the voltage outputs.

FIG. 6 shows a modified hearing device which includes adjustable mode partitioning, and which is used to provide initial calibration of the hearing device.

FIG. 7 shows a group of variable oscillators and variable gain controls which are used to determine hearing characteristics of a particular subject.

FIG. 8 shows a top view of a human skull showing the lateral dimension.

FIG. 9 shows the relationship of the prolate spherical coordinate system to the cartesian system.

FIG. 10 shows a side view of a skull showing the medial plane of the head, section A—A.

FIG. 11 shows a plot of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number M.

FIG. 12 shows a left side view of the brain and auditory cortex.

FIG. 13 shows the total modal field versus angle for source location.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE PREFERRED EMBODIMENT

This invention is based upon observations of the physical mechanism the mammalian brain uses to perceive acoustic vibrations. This observation is based in part upon neuro anatomical and other experimental evidence which relates to microwave brain stimulation and the perception of sounds.

It is has been observed that monochromatic acoustic stimuli (acoustic tones, or single tones) of different frequencies uniquely stimulate different regions of the cochlea. It has also been observed that there is a corresponding one to one relationship between the frequency of a monochromatic acoustic stimulus and the region of the auditory cortex neurally stimulated by the cochlear nerve under the physiologically normal conditions (tonotopicity).

It is has been observed that for an acoustic tone of a frequency which is at the lower end of the entire acoustical range perceivable by a person, that a thin lateral region ("Line") parallel to the medial axis of the brain and toward the inferior portion of the primary auditory cortex is stimulated. For an acoustic tone whose frequency is toward the high end of the entire perceivable acoustic range, a thin lateral region parallel to the medial axis and toward the superior portion of the primary auditory cortex is stimulated.

Neural stimulation results in the generation of a broad band of microwave photons by the change in rotational energy state of protons integral to the neuron membrane of the auditory cortex. The physical size and shape of the brain/skull cavity, together with the (semiconductor) properties (conductivity and dielectric constant) of the brain tissue provide an electromagnetic resonant cavity. Specific single frequencies are constructively reinforced so that a number of standing electromagnetic waves, each at its own single electromagnetic frequency in the microwave frequency region, are generated in the brain. Each such standing electromagnetic wave is called a characteristic mode of the brain/skull cavity.

Analysis in terms of prolate spheroidal wave functions indicates that transverse electric field components of these modes have maxima in the region of the auditory cortex. This analysis further shows that transverse electric field possess a variation of amplitude with angle in the angular plane (along the vertical dimension of the auditory cortex) and that is dependent only upon the primary mode number.

The auditory cortex in the normally functioning mammalian brain is a source of microwave modes. The auditory cortex generates these modes in accordance with the neural stimulation of the auditory cortex by the cochlear nerve. Mode weighting for any one acoustic tone stimulus is given by the amplitude of each mode along the line region of the auditory cortex which is neurally stimulated by that acoustic tone stimulus. A listing of mode weighting versus frequency of acoustic stimulus is called the mode matrix.

In this invention, the functions of the ear, the cochlear nerve, and the auditory cortex are simulated. Microwaves simulating the mode matrix are inserted directly into the region of the auditory cortex. By this insertion of simulated microwave modes, the normal operation of the entire natural hearing mechanism is simulated.

Referring now to FIG. 1 and FIG. 2 there is shown an apparatus which provides for induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain. This hearing device includes a microphone 10 which receives sounds, an acoustic filter bank 12 which separates the signals from the microphone into component frequencies, and a mode control matrix 14 which generates the mode signals which are used to control the intensity of microwave radiations which are injected into the skull cavity in the region of the auditory cortex.

The acoustic filter bank 12 consists of a bank of acoustic filters F1 through Fk which span the audible acoustic spectrum. These filters may be built from standard resistance, inductance, and capacitance components in accordance with well established practice. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 filters which correspond to the observed critical bandwidths of the human ear. In this preferred embodiment a typical list of filter parameters is given by Table 1 below:

TABLE 1

Filter No.	Center Frequency (Hz)	Bandwidth (Hz)
1	50	less than 100
2	150	100
3	250	100
4	350	100
5	450	110
6	570	120
7	700	140
8	840	150
9	1.000	160
10	1.170	190
11	1.370	210
12	1.600	240
13	1.850	280
14	2.150	320
15	2.500	380
16	2.900	450
17	3.400	550
18	4.000	700
19	4.800	900
20	5.800	1.100
21	7.000	1.300
22	8.500	1.800
23	10.500	2.500
24	13.500	3.500

The rectifier outputs one through K are feed to K mode partition devices. The mode partitioning devices each have N outputs wherein N is the number of microwave oscillators used to generate the microwave radiation. The outputs 1 through N of each mode partition device is applied respectively to the inputs of each gain controlled amplifier of the microwave radiation generator. The function of the mode control matrix 14 is the control of the microwave amplifiers in the microwave amplifier bank 18. In the preferred embodiment thus will be 24 outputs and 24 microwave frequency oscillators.

Connected to each microwave amplifier gain control line is a mode simulation device 16 which receives weighted mode signals from the mode partition devices 14. Each mode simulation device consists of one through k lines and diodes 17 which are each connected to summing junction 19. The diodes 17 provide for isolation from one mode partition device to the next. The diodes 17 prevent signals from one mode partition device from returning to the other mode partition devices which are also connected to the same summing junction of the mode summation device 16. The diodes also serve a second function which is the rectification of the signals received from the acoustic filter bank by way of the mode partition devices. In this way each mode partition device output is rectified to produce a varying DC voltage with major frequency components of the order of 15 milliseconds or less. The voltage at the summation junction 19 is thus a slowly varying DC voltage.

The example mode partition devices are shown in greater detail in FIGS. 3, 4, and 5. The mode partition devices are merely resistance networks which produce 1 through N output voltages which are predetermined divisions of the input signal from the acoustic filter associated with the mode partition device. FIG. 3 shows a mode partitioning device wherein several outputs are associated with each series resistor 30. In the embodiment depicted in FIG. 4 there is an output associated with each series resistor only, and thus there are N series resistors, or the same number of series resistors as there are outputs. The values of the resistors in the mode partition resistor network are determined in accordance with the magnitudes of the frequency component from the acoustic filter bank 12 which is required at the summation point 19 or the gain control line for amplifiers 20.

The microwave amplifier bank 18 consists of a plurality of microwave oscillators 1 through N each of which is connected to an amplifier 20. Since the amplifiers 20 are gain controlled by the signals at summation junction 19, the magnitude of the microwave output is controlled by the mode control matrix outputs F1 through F_n. In the preferred embodiment there are 24 amplifiers.

The leads from the microwave oscillators 1 through N to the amplifiers 20 are shielded to prevent cross talk from one oscillator to the next, and to prevent stray signals from reaching the user of the hearing device. The output impedance of amplifiers 20 should be 1000 ohms and this is indicated by resistor 21. The outputs of amplifiers 20 are all connected to a summing junction 22. The summing junction 22 is connected to a summing impedance 23 which is approximately 50 ohms. The relatively high amplifier output impedance 21 as compared to the relatively low summing impedance 23 provides minimization of cross talk between the amplifiers. Since the amplitude of the microwave signal needed at the antenna 24 is relatively small, there is no need to match the antenna and summing junction impedances to the amplifier 20 output impedances. Efficiency of the amplifiers 20 is not critical.

Level control of the signal at antenna 24 is controlled by pick off 25 which is connected to the summing impedance 23. In this manner, the signal at antenna 24 can be varied from 0 (ground) to a value which is acceptable to the individual.

The antenna 24 is placed next to the subject's head and in the region of the subject's auditory cortex 26. By placement of the antenna 24 in the region of the auditory cortex 26, the microwave field which is generated simulates the microwave field which would be generated if the acoustic sounds were perceived with normal hearing and the auditory cortex was functioning normally.

In FIG. 2A there is shown a second embodiment of the microwave radiation and generator portion of the hearing device. In this embodiment a broad band microwave source 50 generates microwave signals which are feed to filters 52 through 58 which select from the broad band radiation particular frequencies to be transmitted to the person. As in FIG. 2, the amplifiers 20 receive signals on lines 19 from the mode control matrix. The signals on lines 19 provide the gain control for amplifiers 20..

In FIG. 6 there is shown a modified microwave hearing generator 60 which includes a mode partition resistor divider network as depicted in FIG. 5. Each of the mode partition voltage divider networks in this embodiment are individually adjustable for all of the resistances in the resistance network. FIG. 5 depicts a voltage division system wherein adjustment of the voltage partition resistors is provided for.

In FIG. 6, the sound source 62 generates audible sounds which are received by the microphone of the microwave hearing generator 60. In accordance with the operation described with respect to FIGS. 1 and 2, microwave signals are generated at the antenna 10 in accordance with the redistribution provided by the mode control matrix as set forth in FIG. 5. .

The sound source 62 also produces a signal on line 64 which is received by a head phone 66. The apparatus depicted in FIG. 6 is used to calibrate or fit a microwave hearing generator to a particular individual. Once the hearing generator is adjusted to the particular individual by adjustment of the variable resistors in the adjustable mode partition portion of the hearing generator, a second generator may be built using fixed value resistors in accordance with the adjusted values achieved in fitting the device to the particular subject. The sound produced by headphone 66 should be the same as a sound from the sound source 62 which is received by the microphone 10 in the microwave hearing generator 60. In this way, the subject can make comparisons between the perceived sound from the hearing generator 60, and the sound which is heard from headphone 66. Sound source 62 also produces a signal on 68 which is feed to cue light 69. Cue light 69 comes on whenever a sound is emitted from sound source 62 to the microwave generator 60. In this manner, if the subject hears nothing, he will still be informed that a sound has been omitted and hence that he is indeed perceiving no sound from the microwave hearing generator 60.

In FIG. 7 there is shown a modified microwave hearing generator which may be used to determine a subject's microwave mode frequencies. In this device, the acoustic filter bank and the mode control matrix have been removed and replaced by voltage level signal generated by potentiometers 70. Also included are a plurality of variable frequency oscillators 72 which feed microwave amplifiers 74 which are gain controlled from the signal generated by potentiometers 70 and pick off arm 76.

This modified microwave hearing generator is used to provide signals using one oscillator at a time. When an oscillator is turned on, the frequency is varied about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception by the subject is perceived. This perception however may consist of a buzzing or hissing sound rather than a tone because only one microwave frequency is being received. The first test of perception is to determine the subject's lowest modal frequency for audition (M=1). Once this modal frequency is obtained, the process is repeated for several higher modal frequencies and continued until no maximum acoustic perception occurs.

Another method of determination of a subject's modal frequencies is through anatomical estimation. This procedure is by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull. In this method, the shape is determined in prolate spheroidal coordinance.

Purely anatomical estimation of subject's modal frequencies is performed by first measuring the maximum lateral dimension (breadth) L FIG. 8, of the subject's head together with the maximum dimension D (anterior to posterior) in the medial plane of the subject's head. D is the distance along Z axis as shown in FIG. 10. The ratio L/D, called in anthropology the cephalic index, is monotonically related to the boundary value ξ_o defining the ellipsoidal surface approximating the interface between the brain and the skull in the prolate spheroidal coordinate system. ξ_o defines the shape of this interface; ξ_o and D together give an estimate of a, the semi-focal distance of the defining ellipsoid. Using ξ_o and a, together with known values of the conductivity and dielectric constants of brain tissue, those wavelengths are found for which the radial component of the electric field satisfies the boundary condition that it is zero at ξ_o.

These wavelengths are the wavelengths associated with the standing waves or modes, the corresponding frequencies are found by dividing the phase velocity of microwaves in brain tissue by each of the wavelengths.

A subject's microwave modal frequencies may also be determined by observing the effect of external microwave radiation upon the EEG. The frequency of the M equal 1 mode may then be used as a base point to estimate all other modal frequencies.

A typical example of such an estimation is where the subject is laterally irradiated with a monochromatic microwave field simultaneous with EEG measurement and the microwave frequency altered until a significant change occurs in the EEG, the lowest such frequency causing a significant EEG change is found. This is identified as the frequency of the M=1 mode, the lowest mode of importance in auditory perception. The purely anatomical estimation procedure (FIGS. 8, 9, 10) is then performed and the ratio of each modal frequency to the M=1 modal frequency obtained. These ratios together with the experimentally-determined M=1 frequency are then used to estimate the frequencies of the mode numbers higher than 1. The prolate spheroidal coordinate system is shown in FIG. 9. Along the lateral plane containing the x and y coordinates of FIG. 9, the prolate spheroidal coordinate variable ϕ (angle) lies FIGS. 9 and 10. Plots of the transverse electric field amplitude versus primary mode number m are shown in FIG. 11. The equation is

$$E_{transverse}(m, \phi) = E_o \sin(m \phi)$$

The "elevation view" FIG. 12, of the brain from the left side, shows the primary auditory cortex 10. The isotone lines and the high frequency region are toward the top of 100 and the low frequency region toward the bottom of 100.

The formula I, set forth below is the formula for combining modes from an iso-tone line at $\phi = \phi j$ being excited to obtain the total modal field at some other angular location ϕ. For this formula, if we let $J=1$ (just one iso-tone single frequency acoustic stimulus line), then it can be shown that ALL modes (in general) must be used for any ONE tone.

FORMULA I
RMS TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC FIELD IN ANGULAR PLANE, $f(0)$

$$f(0) = \left[\sum_{m=1}^{M} \left(\sin(m0) \cdot \sum_{j=1}^{J} e^{-(0-0_j)/\Delta 0_m} \sin(m0_j) \right)^2 \right]^1$$

ϕ = ANGLE (0° LATERAL)
ϕ_j = LOCATION OF j-TH SOURCE (TOTAL NUMBER J)
$\Delta\phi_m$ = ATTENUATION LENGTH (IN ANGLE) OF m-TH MODE
m = PRIMARY MODE NUMBER (HIGHEST MODE M)

FIG. 13 shows the resulting total modal field versus angle ϕ for source location ϕ at 5.25°, 12.5°, etc. With reference to the set of curves at the left top of this figure. A spacing of approximately 7.25° in ϕ corresponds to a tonal difference of about 1 octave. This conclusion is based on the side-lobes of pattern coming from ϕ = 5.25°, etc. The total filed (value on y-axis) falls considerably below the top curves for source locations well below 5.25° (toward the high acoustic stimulus end) and also as the source of frequency goes well above 10° (low frequency end). ϕ is plotted positive downward from 0 at lateral location as indicates in FIG. 11.

Resistor weightings are obtained from the |sin (m[ϕ − ϕj])|, Formula I. The scale between acoustic frequency and ϕ must be set or estimated from experiment. Approximately 5.25±1° corresponds to a tonal stimulus at about 2 kHz (the most sensitive region of the ear) since this source location gives the highest electric field amplitude.

The apparatus of FIG. 7 may also be used to determine values for a hearing device which are required for a particular subject. Once the modal frequencies have been estimated, the device of FIG. 7 which includes variable microwave oscillators may be used to determine values for the oscillators which match the subject, and to determine resistance values associated with the mode partition devices of the mode control matrix.

In FIG. 7 manual control of the amplifier gain is achieved by potentiometers 76. In this manner the amplifier gains are varied about the estimated settings for an acoustic tone stimulus in the region of two thousand Hertz (2 kHz) until maximum acoustic perception and a purest tone are achieved together. The term purest tone may also be described as the most pleasing acoustic perception by the subject. This process may be repeated at selected frequencies above and below 2 kHz. The selected frequencies correspond to regions of other acoustic filter center frequencies of the subject. When modal frequency (oscillator frequency) and gain set values (setting a potentiometer 76) are noted, it is then possible to calculate fixed oscillator frequencies and control resistor values for the adjusted hearing device for this particular subject.

In the event the subject has no prior acoustic experience, that is deaf from birth, estimated resistor values must be used. Also, a complex acoustic stimulation test including language articulation and pairs of harmonically related tones may be developed to maximize the match of the hearing device parameters for those of this particular subject.

Typical components for use in this invention include commercially available high fidelity microphones which have a range of 50 Hz to 15 kHz with plus or minus 3 dB variation.

The audio filters to be used with the acoustic filter bank 12 are constructed in a conventional manner, and have Q values of about 6. The filters may also be designed with 3 dB down points (½ the bandwidth away from the center frequency) occurring at adjacent center frequency locations.

The diodes 17 in the mode control matrix which provide isolation between the mode partition circuits are commercially available diodes in the audio range.

The microwave oscillators 1 through N and the microwave amplifiers 20 are constructed with available microwave transistors which can be configured either as oscillators or amplifiers. Examples of the transistors are GaAsFET field effect transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HFET series or silicone bipolar transistors by Hewlitt Packard known as the HXTR series.

All the cable between the oscillators, the microwave amplifiers, and the antenna should be constructed with either single or double shielded coaxial cable.

The antenna 24 for directing microwave signals to the audio cortex 26 should be approximately the size of the auditory cortex. A typical size would be one and one half CM high and one half to one CM wide. The antenna as shown is located over the left auditory cortex, but the right may also be used. Since the characteristic impedance of the brain tissue at these microwave frequencies is close to 50 ohms, efficient transmission by commercially available standard 50 ohm coax is possible.

The invention has been described in reference to the preferred embodiments. It is, however, to be understood that other advantages, features, and embodiments may be within the scope of this invention as defined in the appended claims.

What is claimed is:

1. A sound perception device for providing induced perception of sound into a mammalian brain comprising in combination:

means for generating microwave radiation which is representative of a sound to be perceived, said means for generating including means for generating a simultaneous plurality of microwave radiation frequencies and means for adjusting the amplitude of said microwave radiation frequencies in accordance with the sound to be perceived; and

antenna means located in the region of the auditory cortex of said mammalian brain for transmitting said microwave energy into the auditory cortex region of said brain.

2. A hearing device for perception of sounds comprising in combination:

means for generating a signal representative of sounds;

means for analyzing said signal representative of said sounds having an output;

means for generating a plurality of microwave signals having different frequencies having a input connected to said output of said means for analyzing said signals, having an output;

means for applying said plurality of microwave signals to the head of a subject, and

whereby the subject perceives sounds which are representative of said sounds.

3. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a signal is a microphone for detecting sound waves.

4. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for applying said plurality of microwave signals is an antenna.

5. The apparatus in accordance with claim 4 wherein said antenna is placed in the region of the auditory cortex of the subject.

6. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein the subject is a human being.

7. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for analyzing said signal comprises:

an acoustic filter bank for dividing said sounds into a plurality of component frequencies; and

a mode control matrix means for providing control signals which are weighted in accordance with said plurality of component frequencies, having an output connected to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signal inputs.

8. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said acoustic filter bank includes a plurality of audio frequency filters.

9. The apparatus in accordance with claim 8 wherein said audio frequency filters provide a plurality of output frequencies having amplitudes which are a function of said signal representative of sounds.

10. The apparatus in accordance with claim 9 wherein said amplitudes are the weighted in accordance with transform function of the signal representative of sounds.

11. The apparatus in accordance with claim 7 wherein said mode control matrix device includes a voltage divider connected to each of said plurality of said audio frequency filters.

12. The apparatus in accordance with claim 11 wherein each of said voltage dividers has a plurality of outputs which are connected in circuit to said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals.

13. The apparatus in accordance with claim 2 wherein said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals comprises a plurality of microwave generators each having a different frequency and means for controlling the output amplitude of each of said generators.

14. The apparatus in accordance with claims 2 wherein said means for generating a plurality of microwave signals comprises a broad band microwave source and a plurality of filters.

15. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said generators each comprise a microwave signal source and a gain controlled microwave amplifier.

16. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein said means for analyzing output is connected to said means for controlling microwave amplifier output amplitudes.

17. The apparatus in accordance with claim 13 wherein analyzing includes K audio frequency filters.

18. The apparatus in accordance with claim 17 wherein there are N microwave generators.

19. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 including a mode partitioning means which provides N outputs for each of said K audio frequency filters.

20. The apparatus in accordance with claim 19 wherein said N amplifiers each have K inputs from said mode partitioning means.

21. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N amplifiers have K inputs less the mode partitioning means outputs which are so small that they may be omitted.

22. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said mode partitioning output device outputs each include a diode connected to each microwave amplifier gain control to provide isolation between all outputs.

23. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said K audio frequency filters are chosen to correspond to the critical bandwidths of the human ear.

24. The apparatus in accordance with claim 20 wherein said N microwave generators are each adjustable in frequency output.

25. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each N microwave generators is determined by anatomical estimation.

26. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator is chosen by determination of the effect of external microwave generation on the EEG of the subject.

27. The apparatus in accordance with claim 18 wherein the frequency of each of said N microwave generators corresponds to the subject's microwave modal frequencies.

28. The apparatus in accordance with claim 27 wherein the subject's modal frequencies are determined by measurement of the subject's cephalic index and the lateral dimensions of the skull.

29. The apparatus in accordance with claim 28 wherein the subject's lowest modal frequency is determined by varying the frequency of the lowest frequency microwave generator about the estimated value until a maximum acoustic perception is obtained by the subject.

* * * * *

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 1 of 7 4,858,612

TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY 1
P1
TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY 2
P2
TO GAIN CONTROL FREQUENCY N
PN
MODE SUMMATION
16
17
19
MODE CONTROL MATRIX 14
MODE PARTITION
MODE PARTITION
MODE PARTITION
11
12
13
14
1N
21
22
23
24
2N
K1
K2
K3
K4
KN
F1
F2
F3
FK
ACOUSTIC FILTER BANK
12
M
10

FIG 1

4,858,612

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 2 of 7 4,858,612

FIG. 2

MICROWAVE AMPLIFIER BANK 18
OSCILLATOR 1
OSCILLATOR 2
OSCILLATOR N
AMP
AMP
AMP
20
20
20
21
21
21
22
23
24
25
26
19
P1
P2
PN
MICROWAVE RADIATION GENERATOR

FIG. 2a

50
BROADBAND MICROWAVE SOURCE
52
54
56
58
F1
F2
F3
FN
A
A
A
A
20
20
20
20
21
21
21
21
26
P1
P2
PN
19
19
19
19

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 3 of 7 4,858,612

FIG.5

FROM F-1
11
12
13
14
1III-1
1III

FIG.4

FROM F-1
11
12
13
14
15
1III-1
1III

FIG. 3

FROM F-1
11
12
13
14
15
1III-1
1III

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 4 of 7 4,858,612

FIG 6

64
68
CUE LIGHT
69
60
ANTENNA 10
SOUND SOURCE
62
MICROWAVE HEARING GENERATOR WITH ADJUSTABLE MODE PARTITION
66 HEADPHONE
RF-SOUND SHIELDED ROOM

FIG 7

72
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR 1
74
76
70
V
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR 2
VARIABLE OSCILLATOR N

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 5 of 7 4,858,612

FIG. 8

FIG. 9

ξ = CONSTANT
ζ = CONSTANT
ξ, ζ, AND φ RELATED TO CARTESIAN COORDINATES x, y, z
φ

SECTION A-A
TRANSFORMATION EQUATIONS
0 ≤ φ ≤ 2π

FIG. 10

4858612

U.S. Patent Aug. 22, 1989 Sheet 6 of 7 4,858,612

1. MODE NUMBER
2. MODE NUMBER
3. MODE NUMBER
0°
LEFT
180°
RIGHT
16
23
φ

FIG. 11
TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC MODES

FIG. 12
PRIMARY AUDITORY CORTEX

5.25°
12.5°
SOURCE LOCATIONS
20°
27.5°
45°
85°
0.5°
0.25°
RMS AMPLITUDE, TRANSVERSE ELECTRIC FIELD (RELATIVE UNITS)
0
1
2
3
0°
10°
20°
30°
ANGLE
MODAL PATTERNS ON AI
25 c/s
50 c/s
100c/s
200c/s
400c/s
800c/s
1600c/s
3
0
RELATIVE AMPLITUDE
0
10
20
30
DISTANCE FROM STAPES, mm
BASILAR MEMBRANE DISPLACEMENT ON COCHLEA

FIG.13

(continued from page 167)

In 1989, James C. Lin wrote *Electromagnetic Interaction With Biological Systems* which deals with transmitting ideas and words via electromagnetic waves.

Brief cases, stereo speakers and boxes are some of the disguises that the CIA has been caught using to hide their ELF microwave emitters that plant thoughts in people. One victim who spent time talking to Fritz Springmeier reported how they had repeated tried to trick him into going to free hotel rooms and other traps, where they tried to bombard his head with the idea that he should sell drugs. He cleverly dismantled their devices which they hid in the ceilings and other locations in these rooms to protect himself from the thoughts they were trying repeatedly to beam into his head. He was on the run as a fugitive to protect his mind.

Naval Intelligence and other groups have conducted research into ELF waves upon the human body and mind. Some of the many things that can be done to the human body and mind with ELF waves include:

a. put a person to sleep
b. make a person tired or depressed
c. create a feeling of fear in a person
d. create a zombie state
e. create a violent state
f. create a state of being sexually aggressive
g. change cellular chemistry
h. change hormone levels
i. inhibit or enhance M(RNA) synthesis/processes
j. control the DNA transaction process
k. control biological spin and proton coupling constants in DNA, RNA & RNA transferases.

Unfortunately for us humans, ELF waves can penetrate almost anything. The U.S. Military has built a Ground-Wave Emergency Network (GWEN) all over the U.S. with several hundred 300-500' GWEN towers that broadcast a very-low-frequency wave (VLF) for mind-control of the American public. A single GWEN tower can broadcast up to 300 miles in a 360° circle. Plus 8 secret powerful ELF transmitters have been established and 3 of them operate on the west coast.

PROZAC AND SLAVES AND MICROWAVE TOWERS

Some of the Monarch slaves are receiving Prozac. Prozac (fluoxetine hydrocloride-a serotonin re-uptake inhibitor) is dangerous for everyone. Prozac is now the second most used drug in the world. Three examples of the ongoing nightmare now happening worldwide:

September 14, 1989--Joseph Wesbecker on Prozac went crazy and got a gun and opened fire in the Standard Gravure Building in Louisville killing eight and wounding twelve others before killing himself. 20 suits against Eli Lilly were filed by victim in this case.

July, 1990--Rhonda Hala of Shirley, NY filed a $150 million suit against Eli Lilly charging that Prozac had driven her repeatedly to attempt suicide.

August, 1990--CCHR called on Congress to ban Prozac and 3 widows in Louisville, KT filed $50 million lawsuits each, charging that a man on Prozac had been driven insane to kill by the Prozac and had killed their husbands. Two other lawsuits were filed in this time period, one from Indianapolis, and one from Chicago from people driven to attempt suicide by Prozac.

Certain brain activities trigger people on Prozac to become homicidal or suicidal. Thanks to research by Illuminati controlled companies, the Network knows exactly how to used ELF waves vectored on a particular person by 3 separate towers to stimulate the Prozac controlled brain to murder. This is being used to increase acts of anarchy and violence in order to help insure anti-gun legislation.

If a slave doesn't comply or needs to be thrown from the Freedom Train they can become a useable statistic. Simply trigger them to murder and then watch the police gun them down. The NWO gains one more statistic and another case to scare the public into accepting gun control.

THE USE OF WAVES & ELECTRICITY TO IMPLANT THOUGHTS

The programmers are always trying to outdo what they've done before. They are not satisfied with the old recipes for scrambled brains, they keep inventing and refining new methods. Anything and everything within their grasp has been tried. They have found that ELF and VLF electro-magnetic waves can be used to control people's thoughts.

Harmonics and sound waves are used to manipulate the RNA covering of neuron pathways to the subconscious. Harmonic generators (code named "ether-wave") are able to imbed detailed commands which are linked to audible triggers. This is one of the standard features of the Monarch program. It allows the slaves to be controlled by trigger words which make no sense or seem to carry no negative connotation to outside listeners.

For instance the words, "Mr. Postman wait and see" (a Marionette command) might set off an access sequence so that a slave living away from its master goes to its master (also called a handler).

The use of harmonics has taken away much of the work of the big programmers. Now harmonic machines can implant the programming and codes that the Programmers put in. It's quicker and perhaps more efficient, although the lesser cult groups have to get by with the older methods. And the Illuminati still have many excellent programmers in full-time and part-time use. According to an eyewitness, their top-programmers are far beyond their 1950-60 predecessors like Mengele.

There are four types of brain waves: alpha, beta, delta, and theta. The four basic models of Monarch slaves have the same names as these four types of brain waves. High level Illuminati models may have programming that includes all of these types. According to one ex(?)-government source, the CIA has been labeling their harmonic-created total Mind-controlled slaves by the following:
Bravo 2 series models are men programmed to run the Beast computers.
Delta series are models for espionage and assassination.
Juliet series are sexual mind controlled slaves.
Kilo 5 series is military espionage.
Michael 1 series slaves are CIA agents under total mind-control.

Operation Greenstar was the Mind-control project to create UFO abductions scenarios.

Much of the high level programming in the 1980s and 1990s is no longer done with human programmers, but is done via programmed machines using drugs, electricity and harmonics.

TRACKING/ I.D. IMPLANTS

A great deal has come out in a whole number of Christian books, as well as secular books about the microchips that are being implanted in both people and animals. These microchips will do many things, depending upon which type of microchip they are, however, some of these microchips emit coded signals which allow satellites with computers to track the exact location of the person or animal carrying the chip. Obviously, a Mind-controlled slave is not going to have the freedom to reject a chip like this. This gives the owner a method for tracking the slave should they ever escape to their exact location. Many of the slaves, CIA agents, and military men have these implants already. Many Desert Shield troops (to make sure they weren't lost in the desert) were required to get the tracking implants. Some county's are making it manditory for pets to get tracking implants.

MONITORING IMPLANTS

As I write this, I have the report "An eight channel micropowered PAM/FM biomedical telemetry system" written by the Space Biology Lab/Brain Research Institute of the UCLA Center for Health Sciences, of Los

Angeles, California 90024.

What they are reporting on is an implant which will electronically report back what is going on with a person's body to whoever is monitoring the person. Their "biotelemeter" consists of a signal conditioner(s), multiplexer (for multichannel systems), and a transmitter. The entire size of the implant is 6.35 cm. by 0.97 cm thick.

EEG monitoring is being done of free-swimming divers by implants. A frequency of 2300 Hz. was used on the first underwater monitoring devices.

COMMUNICATION IMPLANTS

First, we will give an overview of the subject and then we will cover the details of how the technology works.

In the Bible it predicts that in the end of church age that the rulers of the world "These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the Beast." REV 17:13

Robert Muller, a member of the Illuminati, and former Assistant Secretary General of the UN, who has been involved in setting up a "Peace University" in Costa Rica, said in a symposium "Toward a Global Brain, Our Next Evolutionary Step" (Nov. 9-11, 1984, "We are beginning to link together to form one-world, minds and souls. Let go of our own beliefs -crap stuff. We stand now at the threshold of the first spiritualization of humanity..."

The goal of having a single "World Mind" is being advocated by people tied to the Illuminati and the New Age Movement they have created. In the New Age book *Gods of Aquarius* the author advocates, "The only viable solution is to link the brains of all men into one giant super brain. It has been the entire species that have been developing and it must be linked into one super being. A synthesis of human minds in a world brain."

Hollywood put out a movie in 1970 called Colossus-The Forbin Project which shows how the ultimate computer will dominate the minds of men.

Unfortunately, the Illuminati now have the capability via their fronts to implant transmitters that will communicate messages to the human brain that are received via computers. The ability to literally have a single World Brain is within the grasp of the elite. They must now simply figure out methods to accomplish it. All this New Age talk by world leaders like Robert Muller about a single World Mind is not hot air. Unfortunately, the technology is here already. Will humanity stop the secret elite, or will humanity continue to slide into deeper slavery?

CIA programmer/researcher Professor Delgado wrote in *Physical Control of the Mind* in 1969 that, "Brain transmitters can remain in a person's head for life. The energy to activate the brain transmitter is transmitted by way of radio frequencies." The radio frequencies used to transmit to brain implants are usually from 15 to 35 KHz. Radio frequency analyzing computers hooked up to computers have charted the radio frequencies being used to transmit to victims with implants. (See Mediaeko Investigating Reporting Group. *Brain Transmitters What They Are and How They Are Used.* 1993, pg. 8.) The use by handlers of Frequency shift signals, which is a special way of modulating through a given spectrum of frequencies, has been observed and recorded.

Some of the first brain transmitters looked like bullets and were placed into the victim's brain via the nose. In the late 1960s, some of the transmitters were simply swallowed, or carried externally by the victim.

Small wires imbedded behind the ears are one of the implants. Sometimes implants are placed within the pain/pleasure center of the brain, which allows the handler to manipulate what feels great or what feels painful.

The Intelligence agencies have given their implants a whole variety of names. Some of these names for brain implants are:

EDOM -- Electronic Dissolution of Memory

EEOM--Electronic Enhancement of Memory
ESB --Electronic Stimulation of the brain
RHIC -- Radio Hypnotic Intra-cerebral Control

Terms that accompany these techniques include:

PREMA--Personal Radio & Electro-Magnetic Frequency Allocation. This is an individual's personal frequency which is scanned by a hand-held device (such as a Reading Wand).

PRIME FREAK--This is the Primary Frequency of an individual, which the intelligence agencies will obtain and then manipulate to control an individual.

VITAL HUMAN BRAIN FREQUENCY--This is a frequency that is vital for humans, (the 800 MHz band) which is manipulated for mass mind-control.

In 1978, Samuel Chavkin warned in his book *The Mind Stealers* "With the increasing sophistication and miniaturization of electronics, it may be possible to compress the necessary circuitry for a small computer into a chip that is implantable subcutaneously. In this way, the new self-contained instrument could be devised, capable of receiving, analyzing and sending back information to the brain, establishing artificial links between unrelated cerebral areas, functional feedbacks, and programs of stimulations contingent on the appearance of predetermined wave patterns."

Since Chavkin wrote this in 1978, the Network has come a long ways on miniaturization and sophistication of their implants.

One of the most important end times communications systems of the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies is their ALEX system. This will operate on several levels. The electronic end of the ALEX system which stands for Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmission (ALEX) is a method for encrypting electronic transmissions so that a computer which could decode 5 Trillion codes a second would take 2,000 years to decipher one of these transmissions. In other words, when the ALEX system is operating--it cannot be decoded. The ALEX system has 700 Billion Trillion codes! Yes, the intelligence agencies/Illuminati have really outdone themselves with overkill on this one!

By the way, this is very ULTRA secret. The ALEX system intersects with the Monarch Mind Control Programming. The ALEX (also called ALEXUS) is part of the tracking and AntiChrist-Call-Back Programming. Outside computers are able to interconnect with the Monarch Mind Control slave and call them back for AntiChrist activities. In other words, the Council of 9 of the Illuminati has placed an alter by the name of Alex or a similar name in high level slaves and they have either via implants or some other type of programming made these slaves available for programming via electronic communications that tie in with their ALEX computers. (Fritz Springmeier touched on this AntiChrist programming in his "*Chapter 3 Mind Control*" monograph in 1992, when he mentioned Imperial conditioning.) Actually Imperial and Emperor programming are programs that work in conjunction with the ALEX system.

All the police in this nation are to have their communications encrypted by Christmas, 1995 in time for the start of the most intense period of anarchy. The concentration camps, FEMA, FDIC, and the all the rest of the acronym monsters are switching over to the secret operational frequencies which this paragraph will now provide you. This will be 912 meg. to 954 meg. using either or both the ALEX or General Dynamic scrambles. Motorola is providing the hardware. In other words, when the most intense period of anarchy and arrests begins, the New World Order (Big Brother) will have electronic transmission capabilities which will be totally secret. Even police transmissions which can be listened to now by the bad guys will no longer receivable. The Illuminati have been saving their best technology for use during their takeover in the next few years.

Implants within slaves are being used to communicate such thoughts as (actual samples

of things sent):
a. "murder your family"
b. "the government is to blame, murder the President"
c. "you can not get legal redress for what has been done to you by the government"
d. "it is hopeless to fight us"
e. "you want to have sex with the opposite sex"
f. "you want to deal in drugs"
g. "you want to protect your country by being loyal to the CIA"

Since the early 1960s, the Intelligence agencies have been putting two-way radio communication implants into victims. This is called telemetry or remote control. The radio wave enters the implant, the implant transmits it to the brain, and the brain's reaction is then picked up and relayed back to a computer which decodes what the brain waves show the brain was thinking. These implants in the early '60s were half the size of a cigarette filter. A few of victims have managed to escape the control of the System and get x-ray pictures of the implants and then have them removed. One victim in this Portland area has tried for years to find a legitimate surgeon to remove the implant. Liquid crystals are said by some to be used. It is said that the liquid crystals are implanted to function as transmitters. Others say that the liquid crystals were tried and were lethal.

ASSESSORIES

It was discovered that if a strobe is flashed into the eyes at ten cycles/per sec. or 10 hertz (hz), the brain will retuned itself to that frequency. The brain will downshift from a beta state of consciousness down to an alpha or below. The entire cortex is influenced by the strobe light.

Actually, this was just a rediscovery of what some of the ancients had discovered.

Flashing lights have been used by people to go into altered states for a long time. Ptolemy, the famous ancient Greek astronomer built a wheel that would flash sunlight, and people would stare at this contraption and go into an altered state.

As with many inventions, they can be used for good or bad. The following machines are things that anyone can purchase, just like a stun gun or a cattle prod.

An array of mind-altering electronic devices have been created over the last few decades. Personal light-and-sound machines that alter the brain's consciousness that were once $60,000 dollars are now a few hundred. They have goggles that fit over a person's eyes.

The Synchro Energizer, which requires a trained operator to run its control panel, is a machine to electronically alter the brain's consciousness with a sound and light show. Nine lights work via the goggles to give a light show to alter the brain's wave pattern. It is sold by Synchro-Tech of Cleveland via Syncho Energize on Broadway, NY. An operator can start the Synchro Energizer at the brain's high beta waves and then takes the wave pattern downward through the alpha, and then to the theta and sometimes into the delta (the sleep state). There are smaller machines designed to do the same thing, such as the Relaxman, built by Synchro-Tech. Comptronic Device Ltd. has put out a similar but superior machine called D.A.V.I.D.Jr. It can place a person into a deep delta wave sleep. These are just what are available to the public. Imagine what NASA, the NSA, and CIA have. If one needs to work with more than one person, the Synchro-energizer ($60,000) also built by Synchro-Tech will place 32 people at the same time into altered states of consciousness. This machine uses full-spectrum lights to change the brain's state of consciousness.

The Lumatron machine uses strobe lights that can be set to eleven different frequencies. When the light is directed through the retina it is converted to an electrical nerve impulse called a photocurrent. Eventually, the photocurrent passes throughout the entire brain. Genesis is a machine which measures the brain's responses and then matches music to that response. Hospitals and corporations have been purchasing Genesis machines.

The Twilight Learning Device is a biofeedback machine that has an EEG machine hooked up to two tape recorders.

There are dozens of technical articles on a whole host of subjects relating to the implants. This is a vast subject that really needs its own book. FOR FURTHER STUDY of the big SUBJECT of IMPLANTS the reader is directed for starts to the FOLLOWING ARTICLES:

•*Scotland on Sunday*, 2 April 1995, had an article about how U.S. and Swedish scientists have pioneered a method to graft neurons to a computer chip. Stanford University, CA helped with this. A person can now be "hot-wired" to a computer, such as Arnold Schwartzenegger in the film Total Recall.

•*LA Times*, 8/17/94, article about the Hughes Identification Device which is a tracking implant (microchip) which is called SmartDevice. 6 million/per year are planned to be quietly inserted into people during surgery.

•In a recent article "Alien-Human Interactions: the Facts and Propaganda" by Karla Turner, she points out that many alien abductees (like herself) are "monitored and harassed by human agents of some sort and the cases of phone and mail surveillance are only part of the story....He was compelled by some post-hypnotic suggestion...there is strong external evidence that these events have been carried out by strictly human agents and not by aliens giving the illusion of a military presence." She goes on to explain about the implants, wires & tubes that are put in victims of "alien abductions". Karla Turner doesn't know that she is a victim of trauma-based mind control, but she's getting close to understanding what she has been subjected to.

•*The Journal*, Alexandria, VA, Nov. 8, 1995, carried a story "Surgeon, a UFO buff, operated and found..." The story was by Steve Chawkins of the Scripps Howard News Service. The article talks about a Ventura, CA surgeon who has removed implants from abduction victims. The implanted items that are removed from victims, disappear when sent in for tests to determine what they are.>•*Relevance* Magazine-art. on Beh. Mod. implants. >•*Fortean Times* #83, Oct.-Nov. '95 article on Russia's mind control called PIS which is similar to America's.

Barry Karr of the Center for Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal states, "We haven't heard of anything that, without the shadow of a doubt, couldn't have been made here on Earth. Let's see the evidence." It is clear that some people are now realizing that these implants are being placed into people by human slave owners, who simply are hypnotically telling their slaves that they are aliens.

IBM began work on the implantable microchips under the cover of other goals. In the 1960s G.E. took over the development. Honeywell continued the work after they merged. The R2E Division of the cIIi Honeywell Bull in France has then gone on to develop the Smart card. Lithium batteries in implants were secretly being used in the 1960s long before the public got wind. Fairchild has publicly announced several years ago that they have a bio-chip the size of a human hair with 4 times the capacity of the BT952000 project. These are some of the companies who have provided the Network with a large assortment of implantable chips.

IN SUMMARY

Electro shock is used to control a slave and to erase memory. Stun guns are used daily on some slaves. Slaves are under so much control that they will shock themselves if the master wants them to.

Equipment has been developed to alter states of consciousness electronically, and also to track, and monitor slaves.

The most serious development in electronics for mind-control is their ability with high tech equipment to actually place thoughts into a person's mind. Harmonic machines (given code-names) are now being used to do lots of the programming. Powerful individual & mass-mind control can take place via electronic means; our question, who will control the controllers of these electronic means? So far the American & European people have been content to let them get by with what they have done.

Structuring

24
23
22
21
20
19
18
17
16
15
14
13
12
11
10
9
8
7
6
5
4
3
2
1
A
B
C
D
E
F
G
H
I
J
K
L
M
N
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14

CHART BASED ON THE STRUCTURE OF AN ILLUMINATI ALTER SYSTEM.
--drawn by Fritz Springmeier & modified slightly from the original done by a recovering victim of Illuminati mind control.

CHAPTER 7.
THE SCIENCE OF STRUCTURING

A. STRUCTURING OF MPD WORLDS

The purpose of the mind-control is to build a System within the mind that is a human robot. It would do no good to torture the slave and get thousands of pieces (fragments of the mind, alter personalities) if these were not structured. Very few Multiples have ever really gotten to see the deeper parts of their Systems. Many of the early successes of therapists were actually only the integration of the fronts of Systems, while the deeper cult parts were left fully functioning. The integration of the front alters was only a ruse to allow the therapist to think the patient was healed. The Illuminati's organization, whose identity still remains secret to the therapist, can continue to use the "healed" patient. Everyone was happy, therapist, client, and the abusers. Also I might add the book publishers such as those who published Sybil are also happy. Sybil is an occult first name--but the book, movie and therapist give no hint that ritual abuse might be involved in her system's MPD (DID). The victim of When Rabbit Howls (a book & a movie) shows clear signs of having a full-blown highly structured and programmed MPD (DID) system, but the movie doesn't even hint of programming or Satanic involvement. The whole movie was a big slide.

The Illuminati know the details and minutiae of every new direction the therapeutic community decides to take. Indeed, a number of their people are leading the pack, providing leads and misleads. Their first goal is to keep therapists on sideroads, away from the real issues. The second goal is, if they do get onto something, to bring the slaves in, and structure in defenses so that the therapists don't go anywhere. And then when one has success like we have seen, they eliminate front structures and front alters, and turn to massive reprogramming, and skillfully linking primal traumas with the new programs.

Bear in mind, the internal programming alters are also always alert and will restructure the system constantly if alters work against their programming. Restructuring is a process that can continually go on, not something completed when the victim was a child. For instance, new levels of alters can and are created when the victim is in their 30s, either by the internal or external programmers. From observations, it is clear that the most drastic changes are from the external programmers, who can work much faster than the internal programmers.

In the beginning, the programmer must bring order out of the chaos he has created. He must use some type of structure to place worlds. In recent years, these have been solar systems, galaxies, and planets, because they have gone to Star Trek, Star Wars, Alien types of programming. Each planet may have a type of alter--a family, if you will, of alters who are similar. They will not be able to travel to other solar systems, or stars, or galaxies without transportation. Spaceships, and teleporters have now replaced the elevator that the older systems used to go up and down the worlds.

When the programming begins, it must be simple enough that a child can understand it. One game that was excellent to teach internal structures to child victims was Chinese checkers. An innocent game, but a great vehicle to communicate placement of alters and structures. Alter patterns would be placed upon the hexagram board with marbles. A marble would represent an alter. Notice that alter colors (and/or jobs) can be coded by what marble is chosen. A ruby alter can be a red marble. A blue coded alter is a blue marble. Structures which are to be superimposed upon each other in the child's mind, are easy to superimpose. Take one pattern of marbles off, and place the superimposed pattern of marbles over the same place. This is how several different structures can be tied together in one locality in the mind. This is one way structures can be layered in. The Hexagram checker board was called "The House of David" in one victim.

B. THE CREATION OF ROLES INTERNAL, EXTERNAL, DEPENDENCE, ETC.

Many splits in the mind are not developed into full blown personalities. Some are simply fragments which are given a single job assignment. Generally, a System will have about half a dozen alters which frequently take the body and hundreds of alters which only occasionally take the body.

Internally, the System must carry out the following functions:
Protect all information and history that relates to the creation and use of the slave. All the structuring and codes of the System are also secrets and need to be guarded. The programming and the very things that the slave can think about need to be guarded. The slave is meant to be entirely self-governing. The best boss is the boss who gives a directive and can go do something else while the person receiving the order carries it out without input and supervision. The Monarch slave is the prime example of how to delegate authority. The delegation of authority allows both the master and the victim himself to blame the victim for the orders they carry out.

The satanic cults will hide their alters which make money for the cult behind the blood and gore alters. This protects their illegal money making operations.

Alters must learn to function as designed by the Programmer. If they can't work together, the Illuminati will try to get them to work together somewhat akin to a mechanic fixing a car. If the alters can't be fixed, they and their System will have to be thrown away.

The dramatic disparities of all the alters goes hand in hand with what at first seems apparent, then not apparent, and then apparent again--there is a unity beneath the multiplicity. Alter functions and abilities overlap with other alters. No alter is entirely separate from several common pools of intellect and dispositions that are attributable to the entire alter system. Alters are real and separate persons. But the common traits that run through an alter system are also real. One alter system may have a streak of kindness and gentleness that runs through the entire system. There may be a few alters which have been battered enough not to display the trait, but the trait is so pervasive that it characterizes the System.

The programmers are also skilled at building in alters who can serve as balancing points. Unless the system of alters has balancing point alters who are calm, cheerful, and emotionally stable, a system could easily self-destruct with all the shatteredness, pain and craziness that has been intentionally built into the system. Each level or world will have a balancing point.

When the System is being charted during the early programming process, a Mother of Darkness and the Programmer and the Grande Dame will make a decision on how to label the chart. By the time the child is four, the weaknesses and strengths that characterize the alter System have been recorded on charts and the child's destiny in life determined. The chart will read what occupation the child will be made into, and what its function for the overall Illuminati plan will be. This determines what types of programs and alters must be created.

Most people are still unfamiliar with multiplicity and their rigid thinking is challenged by the concept that one mind can have several personalities. On the other hand, they can understand perfectly that a computer can wall off sections of memory, and they can understand perfectly that a single human mind is superior to all the computers in the world assembled together, and yet they can't let go of their basic simplistic foundational understanding of life that one mind has only one personality. They will allow a computer this ability but not the human mind. The creation of multiple personalities also divides responsibility within a person. A person who lives with a multiple, say for instance their handler, will form widely divergent relationships with the different alters.

In terms of programming, each dissociated fragment of the mind may be molded into something. Some fragments lend themselves to be molded into full personalities, and some lend themselves into being molded into single-purpose fragments, and some must be discarded. A part of the mind can be developed into a full-blown independent personality with all the idiosyncracies that any other person has. Bear in mind, that generally the Programmers consider color identification and the coded numbers to be more critical for identifying an alter than a name. A name humanizes the alter. Names are sometimes attached later if needed by a handler. Some handlers simply refer to their sexual alters by their generic name "kitten". Others may have a specific cat name such as "Tabby", "Bast", "Hecat", "Adandara" or "the Lion of Judah" for an alter. Keep in mind, if full blown personalities are created, it happens for both the benefit of the victim AND the programmers.

During the Monarch Programming an average System will have **at least** 1,000 alters, but not all of these will be personalities designed to hold the body. For those who need to get a handle theologically on how to approach this, it is suggested that they approach it as a city of persons. A city has both a unity and a multiplicity about it. It also must carry out certain basic functions if it is to survive. All cities have administrations and city planners, and justice, and police, and garbage collectors, and entertainment, etc. The early Illuminati researchers soon accepted that their victim of multiple personalities is in essence a city of people, and so they used that understanding to construct in the victim's head, using the victim's creativity under torture and drugs to create all the structures and features that accompany a geological land. The map of the Land of Oz in the *Wizard of Oz* books was frequently used for the front parts of a System, with some additions and subtractions. The engineering of the structures within an Illuminati Monarch slave, looks like the original designs were done by engineering specialists--perhaps even Boolean algebra was used to develop the original designs. However, once working models of systems were proven to function without fail, lesser skilled programmers & technocrats could help assemble a Monarch System of alters without fully understanding the engineering and all of the demonology/magic behind it.

Just like in a city, some people have friends and know others, and other people are strangers and enemies, so it is with an Illuminati system of multiples. Some alters may be aware of each other, and some may even hate each other. When building a system, the Programmers take advantage of their knowledge of how multiplicity works. Two alters can have several possible relationships which are:

a. two-way amnesia, where neither alter knows about the other's existence. This is what the Programmers want for most alters. They don't want multiples to even know they are multiples.

b. one-way amnesia, where A alter knows B alter, but B doesn't know A. This can be accomplished by setting in one-way mirrors.

c. co-presence, two alters can come on top of each other at the front of the mind and hold the body together. This produces some strange behavior for the multiple as different alters synthesize their thoughts. When a tough alter comes up behind a Christian alter, the Christian alter may find himself letting loose of a cuss word without knowing where exactly it came from. When a child alter comes up behind an adult, the adult may find itself talking like a child.

d. co-conscious, this is when two alters are aware of what each other is thinking.

As the Programmers structure a System of alters, they build in No-talk walls every so often where all communication and visibility between alters is walled off. These No-talk walls are specifically built structures and not the result of normal amnesia. A 13 x 13 grid may have, for instance, 2 No-talk walls. Other methods will be used to divide all the levels from each other. One method of dividing the levels is the level of trance for level 3 will be different than the level of trance for level 10. This will not hold true across the board, because some deeper alters are not in deep trance.

One Monarch slave, programmed beginning in the '50's, described her System,

Scattered Parts

Broken hearts, divided parts, they all live inside of me. How many times can they divide my mind? Broken hearts with divided parts scattered throughout my mind. How many times can they wipe me out before I come back no more? Can they instill a will in me that is not mine? They broke my heart too many times and divided all the parts, then scattered them through time. Some are good and some are evil. How many times can they split my mind? The lights, needles and pain went on much longer than we can explain. Did these things happen, or is it what they wanted me to believe? Does God exist or is it what I want to believe? Does the store house exist where the computer is? Are there computers in me that help split me? Scattered parts, broken hearts, where do I exist? Is there a castle built inside? If so, what person am I? Lights, needles, and pain goes on today, or is it lies that are made up in a mind split far too many times. Broken hearts, divided minds, scattered throughout time. I don't want to mislead you. Did the experiments work? And they split me too many times? Lights, needles, and pain. They can wipe me out if I try to explain. Butterflies, butterflies, lots and lots of them. I lay down at nights with them. I wrap up in a blanket made of them. I hear their hum as they lead me to the lights, needles and pain. The needles and pain make it so I can not think. I get so sleepy, but I can not sleep. The pain races through my mind and splits it one more time. I have forgotten more than most will ever know. The computer will show how many times they can split the mind, break the heart; divided minds scattered throughout time. How many times before I can come back no more?"--receivd from therapist Denny Hilgers.

Our previous book *They Know Not What They Do, An Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming-Mind Control*, Oregon City, OR, 1995, p. 91. has a good description of how extensive the internal structuring is:

"Many Systems never get to the point of seeing their internal world(s). Further, most alters have only a small spot in which they are to reside, and they don't get to see but a tiny fraction of the entire System. After these structures are built into the mind they continue to work and carry out their function on a subconscious level. Sometimes it takes years of work for a System to begin seeing their internal world. They can begin doing this by turning lights on inside of their worlds. To make a comparison, when a person looks at a clock they see the finished result, the time it shows, but they don't see all the mechanisms. The structures in the mind are part of the mechanism to keep the System of Alters structured in a way that is useful to the abusers, but often all that observers will see is the finished result, the mechanisms stay hidden. But we are exposing those mechanisms in this picture and on this page. A therapist's client may be responding in a way that makes no sense until one realizes the internal structures that they are responding to.

An alter generally must maintain the spot in the mind which it is assigned. To leave that location in the mind, means travelling through a System which is filled with dangers and traps of all kinds. Only a few of our alters ever ventured where they were not to go, and they always encountered many obstacles. However, if an alter gets trapped behind mirrors, the alter should not break the mirrors. If the alter is a Christian they can use the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth to bind and cast out the demons which are in the mirrors. The danger of the mirrors is the demonology involved. Somethings work and somethings don't. We are speaking from our years of experience. The mirrors are deadly and they were everywhere in our System, but they are deadly only if one can't deal with the demonology. The therapist should at least be aware that these images can be worked with just as if they were real to manipulate situations involving them. But if the structures are going to be worked or toyed with, the therapist and survivor need to have an understanding about the structures. If you don't understand the mirrors, or the River Nile, or whatever then be careful what you have the survivor do to them.

The structures (the images) that are built into the mind of the Monarch slave are not trivial. An overview of the structures that are in our System alone will show that they went to a great deal of effort to build all kinds of internal worlds to house our thousands of alters. **A list of the internal structures** that were contained in our System follows: Ant pits, Bee Traps w/ swarms, Black Glass Wall, Black Holes (vortexes), Boxes (Dr. Green's under J.J., boxes have buttons which access certain parts), Candyland, Carpet (Magic), Castles, Castle dungeon (torture chambers), Caves, Clocks (there are several incl. computer clocks), Concentration camp, Cords, Desert, Doll House, numbered Doors by the thousands w/ red hot nobs, Elevators, Emerald City (connected to the castle), Eucalyptus Trees, Fields of "forget me" & island of "forget me not" (JJ's Prgrmg), Firewall, 2 Forests (singing forest with Cedars of Lebanon and Oaks, and a dwarfs forest which has 3 kinds of trees), Fruit Tree (programming tree), Glass, Glass coffin, Golden Keys, Graveyards, Hallways with red doors, Hell Pit or Hell Fire (7 levels--pepperbox. There is a glassy wall before the hell pit.), Hour Glass (matrix), House of David, Icetown, Invisible Countries, Keys (clock key), Libraries, Light side City, Marshlands, Mazes, Mirrors (constructed via access permissions) (One-way), Moat, Mountains, Nursery (glass), Ocean, Paper Trees, Petra Secret City, Playground, Poppy field, Portals (for altars and demons, like the third eye), Rubicon (outer space beyond the stars), Rivers (Nile, Rio Grande, Shenandoah, etc.), Room behind a closet (existence not confirmed), Seeds, Serpent tree, Shafts, Shells, Shifting sands, Shoes (gold, silver, and ruby slippers), Snake pits (traps), Spider chambers, Stairway, Torpedo Town, Tin Woodsman's Castle, Tree with square paper boxes containing Dad's music programming, Trojan Horse w/ armies, Tunnels, Valley of the Dry Bones, Volcano (to destroy & remake the system), Vortices (see Black Holes), Wasteland, Water (Moats), Waterfalls, Wind, Wires, Worms, and a Yellow Brick Road."

In order to use the multiple in different life styles--they divide up a system of alters into worlds of alters which rarely see each other. These worlds are also called cities. The words "city" or "world" are interchangeable when it comes to a Monarch System. Typically, they received names such as Atlantis, City of Refuge, Shangri-la, and Troy. Later, after Candy Jones exposed the programming, there was a major shift about this time, and many of the Systems were programmed with Solar Systems. Each planet had a different group or race of alter or demon. The concept of Star Trek was helpful for this. Some of the Systems programmed in the 1970s, used Star Trek as their basis. The distribution of alters was similar to watching the various episodes of Star Trek.

Alters that were created at the same time and left in an area of the System together are families. The programmers in their efforts to dehumanize these alters will stick to animal names such as referring to them as "litters".

The front level of a System would often be given a cover. The front level might see their world as a basketball court, or several houses, or a dollhouse, or a street. The front world is set up to deceive anyone from discovering the true structure of the system.

The programmers can link and unlink, and move alters around. Eventually they get something neat and tidy on a sheet a paper. A standard Illuminati System is built like a 13x13x13 cube with an elevator shaft running up and down from the bottom to the top. The elevator is constructed as a piece of DNA and alters can ride up and down the elevator (go up or down in trance) to move when allowed.

Most of the alters have no sense of time, and most of the alters do not hold the body very frequently. For various reasons most of the alters never grow up. Obviously, if they don't hold the body very much, and are dissociated from everyone else's memories, they have nothing to stimulate them to grow up. However, the Programmers must have some of the alters who can function as adults. For instance, alters who go into bars must think of themselves as adults. The alters which will hold the body in public will be hypnotically made into adults. The Network likes to leave many child alters, because most of them are pedophiles and they like the pseudo-pedophile experience of making it with an alter that thinks it is four years old. Or just the opposite, sometimes an adult alter will appear within a child victim, and this is a clue that this is an access/reporting alter.

Many of the Illuminati systems, especially Mengele's were set up on a 13x13 grid of alters. The grids are numbered top to bottom and side to side but not in the fashion one might expect. The typical Mengele grid will begin with 6 and proceed 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. However, the structure doesn't have to be a grid, any geometric shape works and has been used, such as a sphere, cube, or pyramid. Dr. Star and his wife, who is an OTO programmer working out of Corpus Christi, TX likes to structure an alter system in the shape of the Seal of Solomon. The Yin-yang symbol is then equated with the entire Seal of Solomon. The all-seeing eye is placed in the center of Star's systems, just like Mengele would put in an All-Seeing Eye. The hidden Sun of Tiphareth is placed into Dr. Star's victim's systems, as well as the four elements, and sulfuric acid. Alters are then placed in the various positions around the hexagram.

Because therapists, (and Christian ministers) are generally unaware of the deeper occult things, they usually miss seeing the occult philosophies behind the structures. For instance, the elements of earth, wind, fire and water are not just part of magic--they are in Druidism considered the four zones (or directions) also called rings which are held together by the fifth ring--balance. This is the basis of Celtic geometric art, metaphysical maps, and ancient Ireland was symbolically divided into four regions with a unifying fifth. This was the bardic view of the universe which is presented in the *Vita Merlini* (written by Geoffrey of Monmouth in 1150). Supposedly England, Wales and Scotland were also divided into 4 regions with a unifying fifth too. And all these four regions Ireland, Wales, Scotland and England are joined again in the U.K. In Druidism, the four magical elements the Sword, Rod, Cup and Shield are unified by the Cord while the four elements are unified by the spirit. Ancient Druid stone statues of triple faced gods and goddesses still remain today. Heads were considered sacred by the early Celts which is why the heads of the top Grand Dames are preserved after they are ritually murdered. If an outsider really wants to understand why Illuminati systems are constructed in the fashion that they are--first understand that there is a great depth of meaning behind what structures are used to build an internal world. An ex-programmer talks about how the programmers would call upon Satan in high level rituals to "Tell me what to do, and I'll do what you want" to gain wisdom in how to design these alter systems.

Within a System, a few alters will be given maps to the System. There will be a structure "map" which takes the system down through its progressive levels down to its fundamental or primal level. There will also be internal world maps, maze maps, or what some call programming maps.

HOW THE SELF OF A MAIN ALTER CONSISTS OF SHATTERED SHADOW ALTERS, A SCRIPT, MIRRORS, & ASSIGNED DEMONS

What really is an alter? An alter is a dissociated part of the mind, which is developed BY the programmers to be a complete personality. We will now explain what an alter is. If you were to look on the programmers' charts found in his grey 3 ring binder, or his lap top computer you would see graphs with alters with access codes. What are these alters? If the programmers didn't invest a great deal of programming and structuring, each alter would not be a complete personality. On the chart, the programmer will have a square on a grid where he will record the cult name, the front name, the alter's alpha-numeric pull up code and its grid number. What seems neat and tidy is really not so neat and tidy. That alter is really an alter with many shadows of itself. This is a family of fragments of that alter which hold parts of itself. There is a particular secret term that only the programmers use for these fragments, but for purposes of discussion we will call these fragments "family fragments" or "shadow fragments." For instance, a Gatekeeper alter will have a shadow alter fragment that holds its fear, one that holds its pain, one that holds its anger, and many that hold its memories of abuse and torture. What appears on the grid as a square is in reality a box holding lots of fragments. The programmers understand how multiplicity works, so rather than chart an alter with 25 fragments coming off of it--they name the whole mess after the main alter they have created for that family of fragments. The main alter really is a fictional persona created by the programmers linked to numerous fragments of the mind.

The mind of the child victim will cooperate with the torture and programming. The programmer will verbally discuss his programming scripts with his close assistants, for instance, the Grand Dame who helps him; but he doesn't record the scripts down. Historically, the Programmers have always individually tailored their story scripts for each child. Because the best are master story tellers, who can make a story come alive, they do not need to depend upon stale written scripts. The Wizard of Oz, and Mother Goose books, etc. are read prior to actual programming session, to enhance the programming session. The final alters are recorded, but not the stories or the lies told them.

After a main alter has been created and shattered, the programmers find this main alter within the mind and give it a personal history (via films, virtual reality headsets, stories, etc.), give it a job within the system, a place to live in the internal world, and its rules and guide lines on how to function within the system. It will be given scripts about the outside world. And shortly, we will explain those.

This doesn't mean that alters don't exist--they are physically part of the mental makeup of a multiple's brain--but an alter's existence is not at all what it sees or what outsiders see. Both the alter and the therapist see only a small part of the picture.

John O. Bearhrs (*Limits of scientific psychiatry, Role of uncertainty in mental health*. NY: Brunner/Mazel, 1986, pp. 86-113.), who did therapeutic work with Multiples, recognized some of the process that we are describing. He wrote about how an alter when confronted with more pain, guilt, and rage will dissociate this mental hazardous waste into alters who function as internal garbage cans. He described a victim who had a jolly front alter Diane with a winning smile. This front alter dumped her pain on a small child alter Mary, who lived in an internal "basement". However, in one particular case Mary didn't want the pain and she passed it to Karl (a 4 yr. old alter), who cried and yelled so loud internally that Danny, a 12 year old alter who was characterized by toughness and courage took the pain. However, the actual situation is more subtle and complex than Beahrs realized. Every alter creates shadow alters of itself to handle the anger, fear, guilt, betrayal etc. The Programmers are totally aware of these shadow alters and they work with them.

If we picture an alter as a point in the mind--a dot or small circle, then we can for the sake of discussion picture the shadow splits off of that alter as rays coming out of that small circle. Now we have an image of something looking like a sun with rays. Actually, in real life, after all the torture, the shadow alters holding memories and all the programs attached are simply one big mess that resembles the branches of a tree with leaves. The Programmers have made a thorough mess of the person's mind--and they need some clean way to deal with this mess they have created. So the Programmers use the imagery that best resembles the mess they have made. The victim is told they have a tree with branches and leaves growing through them. This tree with its branches grows through out every alter. The image of the vine and its branches is also used, because then the programmers can bring in the Bible to make their programming seem to be supported by God's Holy Word. The original alter is told that it is a mote of nothingness (a very tiny circle). The programmers don't chart all the family or shadow fragments of an alter because they understand MPD (DID). The fragments will hold all the memories of abuse, so the alter can function. The fragments will also give the alter the appearance of the full range of emotions. If a main alter gets angry or feels guilty, what is happening, is that it has accessed its shadows to express the full range of emotions.

The Programmers abuse an alter and get the Shadow alters. Then they hypnotically attach a memory cue (which is a code consisting of the alter's name, the date of the memory, and perhaps something else to complete the code) to the main alter so that they can access the memory anytime they want. Then they hypnotically & demonically build a on-way mirror between this main alter and the shadow alters they have just created. These one-way mirrors are like one way windows--the reason they are referred to as mirrors is that they are put in the child's mind via mirrors. Next, they ritually/magickly implant demons to guard the mirror(s) and to guard each memory held by the shadow alters. This separates an alter from knowing itself and its own abuse.

The main alter has dissociated the pain, etc. to its shadow alters of itself. The Programmers then use the memory as blackmail to keep the main alter in line. The main alter has dissociated the pain, but will recover the memory if either one of three possibilities happen: a. the Programmer or handler says the memory code 3x, or b. if an event happens that triggers the main alter to remember, c. the main alter tries to remember the abuse and the programming, and in doing so they will be stepping outside of the circle assigned to them and will "break the circle & break the mirrors."

Remember, how we described a Main alter as a small circle with the rays (shadow alters) split off from it. The shadow or family alters of a Main alter are the true history of an alter. The Main alter is given the script to totally love the Programmer/Master. It should be angry at what has happened to it. The ability to direct that anger is lost with the dissociation, but might be retrieved if the alter remembered, so the programmers transfer it by creating some outside person or object for the alter to focus their hate upon. Elaborate hate scripts are then given to the main alter. The love of the Master now protects the Main alter from having to remember its pain. Very few alters and very few non-multiple people would want to remember such trauma and it is very unpopular in society to remember past traumas (how often have you heard expressions "let bygones be bygones", "the past is past", "don't dig up old skeletons", etc.) As long as the alter loves its Master, it is somewhat safe from remembering its own traumas. And yet for a Monarch slave to regain its own mind, the alters must regain their own memories. That is why to really break down the programming, memory work is need. That Monarch slaves must regain their memories to heal is a hard one for many people and ministers to understand. Most deliverance ministries pray that God would take away their bad memories. Further, the programming holds the lies in place, and the demonology holds the traumas, programs, and memories in place.

A Main alter is really in the middle of special purpose Shadow alters which have been split from itself. The Programmers do a reversal on this and tell the Main alter that it is on the outside looking in. Vagabond Programming (which tells an alter it is a vagabond) is then applied to teach the alter it doesn't belong to the inside world, nor to the outside world. It belongs nowhere.

The Main alter will perceive that it is on the outside looking in at mirrors. The mirrors then guard the inside of the circle. To try to remember the truth is to break the circle of mirrors. The circle of mirrors has magical significance, because it ties in with the witchball or speculum which the witches have used over the centuries to see beyond time and space. The steps that the programmers do, can be explained on many levels. Many of these steps are done for special occult reasons.

One of the first things taught to a child is "DO NOT BREAK THE CIRCLE". This has both the internal meaning "don't go after you own memories" and the external meaning "don't leave the cult--the circle." Special black mats (such as used in wrestling) have been constructed by the Programmers. The first black mat is a circular mat with a 4' radius. The next black mat has an 8' radius (with a donut hole with a 4' radius) so that it can fit over/around the first circle. From there you have concentric donut shaped pieces of mat each four feet wider in radius than the previous, which can all be joined together. Each of the concentric circles will have a different colored circle painted on its edge. The victim child while it is in the crawling stage will be placed onto the middle dot and told to stay. They will be punished every time they move. When they finally can do this obediently, they will be given the 4' circle. Toys will be placed outside of the painted line (which may for starters be a blue line, then perhaps green, and then red). Just off of the mat are interesting things like a full bottle, a blanket, a coat, food, toys, etc. The child is cold, hungry and bored. Will the child obey and stay in its circle? If it doesn't it will be punished by being mildly shocked, or having its head dunked into a toilet, or its hand punished, and it will be set back in the circle until it's will is broken and it learns to submit to the order to stay in the circle. This teaches the victim child several things: don't step outside of boundaries, don't break the circle, it teaches them the colors that will be used in the color programming of the internal world, and it is again traumatizing. What they see, hear and do will now be done in obedience.

Does the reader see how hard it is for the child & its alters to move outside of the scripts?

Alert readers will realize that there are 13 colors in Illuminati systems and that means 13 x 4 feet = the radius of the finished 13-concentric-circled black mat when all the pieces are laid down. This means a large indoor area with a floor space of at least 124' across in needed. Military bases, hospitals, churches, and universities like Oral Roberts University have gyms or auditoriums which the Illuminati use for this stage of the programming. Mother of Darkness alters train the children. The Presideo had a great place for this training.

This is the programming for the "Circle Will Not be Broken" script. The Amish do something similar, to make their children obedient, which is one reason the Monarch programming is easy to hide within the Amish culture. This type of programming is referred to in chapter 5 about the fronts and the Top Secret Amish Front.

Let us briefly mention, that some systems are simply concentric rings (levels of alters) each assigned a different color. Another twist to the color coding--an alter in some circumstances may have two colors. An alter may be coded Black below white, so that when it sees black color below white it is triggered. The sections on a soccer ball, have been colored and used for a programming visual aid.

Various researchers who have tried to identify: What happens when a normal non-multiple subject is hypnotized to not feel pain? Of course, the subject consciously tells the hypnotist that he feels no pain, but researchers such as the Watkins & Hilgards have demonstrated that the subject under hypnotism dissociates the pain to another part of the mind. In other words, hypnosis and MPD (DID) which are both forms of dissociation are much closer in how they function than some people have realized. In fact, some researchers, who are well aware of how close the two dissociative functions are, have defined MPD (DID) as "spontaneous hypnosis" (Beahrs, 1982; Bliss, 1986). The non-conscious area of the mind that hypnotic subjects dissociated to have been labeled "ego-states", "the hidden observer" and "a covert cognitive structural system". The giving away of pain, fear, and other traumas to Shadow parts is similar to what happens when researchers observe a person who is directed in hypnosis to not feel pain, unknowingly giving his pain away to a hidden ego-state.

A hiding place where alters can go, a place of light which gives energy, is created in a System.

The New World Order's One-World-Religion and their Mind-Control is organized on the hierarchal system with a S.P.I.N. front.

The Illuminati and the occult world that they supervise has a strong hierarchial system both world-wide and within the slave. Fritz has spent a great deal of time researching and communicating to other how the hierarchy controls on a large scale, and how it is miniaturized and how this identical hierarchy is placed internally into the slave. However, the big cover for the hierarchial arrangement is the SPIN principal.

WHAT IS THE SPIN PRINCIPLE?

S-P-I-N = Segmented Polycentric Integrated Networks.

If one were to diagram a SPIN organizational chart it would not be a conventional box type configuration such as an army company organization chart. Rather, it would resemble a fish-net with interlocking nodes with groups linked to many other groups and cluster around nodes. There is no center to the network. It is like the brain's electrical connections, with an overlap of functions, so that good cells can take over from damaged sections. A network (one of their buzzwords) is many times more greater than the sum of its parts.

The New Age author Marilyn Ferguson does an excellent job in describing how the Conspiracy's SPIN network functions.

"This is a source of power never before tapped in history: multiple self-sufficient social movements linked for a whole array of goals whose accomplishment would transform every aspect of contemporary life.

"Because SPINs are so qualitatively different in organization and impact from bureaucracies...most people don't see them--or think they are conspiracies. Often networks take similar action without conferring with each other simply because they share so many assumptions. It might also be said that the shared assumptions are the collusion.

"The Aquarian Conspiracy is, in effect, a SPIN of SPINs, a network of many networks aimed at social transformation. The Aquarian Conspiracy is indeed loose, segmented, evolutionary, redundant. Its center is everywhere. Although many social movements and mutual-help groups are represented in its alliances, its life does not hinge on any of them." Ferguson, Marilyn. *The Aquarian Conspiracy*. Los Angeles, CA: J.P. Tarcher,Inc., 1980, p. 217.

---The next 2 pages are charts showing an hour glass & its turning mechanism, & how a section can have various codes, trance depths,

90°
45°
45°
360°
0 alpine Station
270°
90°
180°

NOTE: Earthquakes may be 360° turns of the hour glass.
Spinning like a top.

13
12
11
10
9
8
7
6
5
4
3
2
1

WORLDS

DOMINO
PROGRAM
ARRANGEMENT

SOLEMETRIC STRUCTURE

The programmers enjoy setting up double-binds. One of their tricks is to create alters which are given negative spiritual roles with names to match. An alter may be named "unforgiveness", or "the one who doesn't trust anyone." For such an alter to trust someone, makes the alter feel like it is giving up its name, and therefore its identity. By combining the name with an identity that the alter doesn't want to lose, the programming intend to double bind the alter. The Satan alter within a System will see itself as Satan. The alter Satan feels that he is on the winning side in a war, due to the lies that have been told this child alter when it was created. A girl child alter will be made to think they are the evil male Satan. The point is that the identity of this alter is tied up with their negative destructive role in the system. The Christian therapist has a better chance to show Satan that the Rule of the Victor means that Satan serves Almighty God, than for a secular therapist to try to convince Satan that Satan doesn't exist. And if the secular therapist tries to debunk the Biblical view of things, what positive philosophy or spirituality is the secular therapist going to give this Satan alter to fight with against the inevitable external evil that we all face in life?

STANDARD ROLES WITHIN AN ILLUMINATI MONARCH SLAVE

(Note: that depending upon what the System's occupation in life is, also determines some of the types of alters created. If the System is a politician, they will need special alters to deal with certain secret activities. If the System is a baseball pitcher, they will need alters that are trained to pitch.)

Alien alters for contact, bonding w/ aliens, & acceptance of mock alien invasion
Angel (imitation) alters for divine messages, these may be seen as Spirit Guide alters
Angry alters
Animal alters who are meant to act like animals
Assassination alters (Deltas)
Babysitter alters to look after child alters and keep them from popping out inappropriately
Blackmail alters (Betas, and Black Widows)
Bird alters (used for half a dozen various internal purposes, including ravens for suicide, doves for peace, orks to fly over the internal mazes, owls for wisdom, etc. The dove may be part of a false trinity.)
Child alters
Clockmaker & Clockholder alters (Also the Grim reaper may be associated with the clocks.)
Core related alters to imitate or protect the core from anything
Coven alters to lead coven level meetings
Courier alters (Carrier Pigeons)
Data alters to hold information (this encompasses a wide range of alters, including alters who hold internal system information to alters who hold information for their masters.
Deaf & Dumb alters to prevent the System from hearing non-approved users say access codes.
Death alters to take near death traumas
Element alters (Air or Wind, Water, Earth, Fire) for magick & compliance
Espionage alters
Firechild or Bombchild alters to make body feel like its burning
Flooding alters (often flooding comes simply from Shadow fragments)
Foreign Language alters
Front alters for a good cover
Gatekeeper alters to guard portals and gates
Guard (or Blocker) alters to guard important areas of the System
Justice alters--alters who mete out justice for disobedient alters
Hierarchy alters to take part in Illuminati hierarchy ceremonies (there will be a big demand for many of these alters--different ceremonies and different times of the year are given different alters).

Hunts, alters created for the master's sport of being hunted
Loyalty alters which hold strong love & devotion to the master
Martial Arts alters to protect the System if need be
Mirror image alters, for deception
Monster alters to scare the other alters
Mouse alters to run the clocks (computer, and grids)
Nothing alters, alters who believe they are nobody, or Mr. Nobody, or "no-name".
Observation alters (these deep alters quietly observe all that goes on in an alter system. They may be called Watchers.)
Programmers, Internal (alters cloned after the original programmers to reprogram the System, also known as Internalists.)
Programming alters to help Illuminati program
Protector alters to protect almost everything in the System (essentially nothing is left unprotected in the System.) In some systems, these alters may even be known in the System as Warrior & Infiltration Alters. They may include such titles as Keeper to the Pit.
Ribbon Alters to send messages from computers to System areas
Reporting alters to give the master reports regularly, esp. important to monitor all activity by a therapist
Ruling alters, such as Queens & Kings
Run/return to master alters
Satanic hierarchy alters, to insure that system is controlled by Satan
Sexual alters (kittens for porn, S&M, etc.)
Scrambling alters to prevent alters from hearing
Shell alters (to hide real alters from therapists)
Suicide alters (clowns, Russian Roulette alters, etc.)
Tranced, (alters tranced deeply to move up and trance the body)
Travel alters, which can sleep during travel or be oblivious to where they are going

Next we will discuss how some of these types of alters are created. These will be discussed in alphabetical order. It should be pointed out that generally the Illuminati choose one of the early front Gatekeeper alters to be the alter who knows the entire system as it is made. This often is Gatekeeper no. 3. After the entire structuring is finished this alter will be hypnotically programmed to forget that they know the entire system. By the age of ten, an Illuminati system will have someone who knows the entire system. However, these gatekeepers get heavy programming not to remember.

ANGRY ALTERS

By the time the programmers are ready to create angry alters, the child victim has been well conditioned not to get angry, but to passively accept their abuse. The programmers have to get the child's mind to break with their prior programming to get angry. In order to do this, the child will be tormented without end for several days. This is one of the worst parts of the programming, and many children die in this stage. The Illuminati pick their most gentle Mothers-of-Darkness systems to work with the male programmers. If the gentle Mothers-of-Darkness slaves didn't bring some balance and affection to the child victims, the sadistic programmers would probably kill all of the children at this stage of programming. For more on this see Egyptian Armies just a little further.

ANIMAL ALTERS meant to act like animals

Although a large share of an alter system is dehumanized, there are certain alters which will be created to actually hold the body and act like animals. The alter may even be named "animal." A male or female slave may have dog alters which bark like a dog and get into the correct position to allow a Rottweiler/German shepherd/Doberman to penetrate the slave sexually. This is accomplished by taking menstrual blood from a dog in heat and smearing it on the victim.

Animal alters are created by the standard dehumanization methods, and then shown films of what they are to become. Through hypnosis and behavior modification, the alters eventually accept the role they are tortured and programmed into taking. It's hard telling what roles the programmers have created, it could possibly be any animal, but cats, dogs, donkeys, horses, rats, and mice are common examples.

CHRISTIAN FRONT ALTERS

Most Illuminati Systems have Christian front alters. Some of the early splits around 2 years of age are provided the chance to genuinely accept Christ. From these alters, two things will be done. Front alters who are Christians will be created, and satanic alters. In order to get dedicated Satanic alters, Christian alters are severely traumatized and God is blamed for not helping them. The Satanic alters will be deeply convinced that God has abandoned them. The Christian alters will dissociate all the trauma, and will believe that they are normal--nothing has happened out of the ordinary in their life. Christian alters will also, like all MPD/DID alters, tend to deal with overwhelming problems by dissociation. Many Christian alters will deny such basic things such as that a Satanic conspiracy exists. They often will be far more zealous than the normal Christian, because they do not have conflicting ego-states. If any situation calls for compromise of their religious beliefs they can switch to someone else--and thereby escape having to compromise. There are many programmed multiples leading the Christian churches today. Christian alters are coached via the modern church and their handlers to only "spiritually minded" and not to challenge evil in the natural world. Some walk around believing that God will cure everything, which is true but not in the sense that some of the churches are explaining. That doesn't mean that all Systems will be "Polyanish", but it can happen.

The original Christian alters will be shamed and then hidden by the programmers. The "host" or "presenting" alter which holds the body will often be a Christian. This really helps hide the entire mind-control.

Interestingly, a system of 20,000 alters may have only less than a dozen Christians alters, but the one or two strong Christian alters will exert a disproportionate influence on the System. The Illuminati has had a hard time controlling the Christian alters they allow. In their zeal to infiltrate, control and destroy the Christian churches, they have opened many of their top slaves up to the love of God, which has ended in the slaves trying to break free. Unfortunately, most ministers know too little to help these people escape.

CLONES

The clones are little children who have been put into robot costumes and are trained to attack parts of the system which are not in compliance with the programming. The heads of the clones can be unscrewed. The clones can be taken out by various tactics--but there are hundreds of clones and they each have been numbered. The serial numbers are placed on them. An example of a clone's number at the base of the neck might be 158.00. This may either be a model or actual serial no. but often is tied to the birthdate of the victim, which is generally part or all of the victim's Monarch serial no.

To create the clones during the 1950s, movie scenes of the divers of the Nautilus of the movie 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea were shown. (With later models, such as in Star Wars programming, the robots of these shows suffice.) Some clones kill with a knife as the divers in the movie 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea.

When clones surface and take the body they are cold.

Programming is encased in a clone.

Alters, particularly cult alters, may not be able to see the clones. They may be hidden in almost anything internally, including door knobs and walls. However, there is the possibility for the therapist that a net made of cloth woven of light can be dropped and the lumps will reveal the clones. They may be behind mirrors too.

Water has certain properties that can stop clones, as well as magnets.

Microwaves will take care of the electronics. A little microwave can take out a group of clones. Clones have many shapes--but they do not look like people. They usually have a switch to be activated.

Atlantis may be set up as the world for clones, in accord with 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea programming.

Whatever the style, robots & clones are popular items for programmers to install.

One of the major defects of the first few decades of Illuminati programming, was that the clones were set up so that water would stop them. Therapists could stop the clone armies by applying water on them. Recent models have corrected that deficiency. But when the clones are stopped, and the diver suits are taken off of the child alters, who are inside of the robot suits, then a child alter will be found which is in the same drugged state that it was in when it was being programmed. This child fragment alter will often have an I.V. (wires and needles) in it, and will be very druggy. It will be in its programmed war-like angry state.

In Druidism, a swan was something dirty like a pig in Judaism. Some alters which are assigned to protect, are warned they will become swans. If the Queen of the Clones becomes a swan, the clones will become helpless. The Queen of the Clones (a triad) must do her job or be turned into a swan.

Changing subjects to alter clones, Cloning programs include, for instance, Lollipop & Lobster programs.

DELTA'S

The Delta's are alters trained to carry out special missions resulting in death. The Delta's who are inactive are asleep. They must be activated. The programming to activate them will be triggered if a mission is given or if certain parts of the deeper parts of the system are tampered with. Delta's will work as a team with the Beta's to kill. An Illuminati System will be "magically" twinned during programming to be a Twin with another system's Delta alters. And these two systems in turn are joined in programming with another 2 person team, so that 2 person and 4 person teams can be constructed. This gives the Illuminati more flexibility in what kind of missions it can send its slave out on. 4 person assassination teams are very common. They had 2 four-man Monarch slave assassination teams at Waco, Texas the day that the Waco Branch Davidian building burned up.

HOW THE DELTA'S ARE CREATED

Illuminati Deltas are linked to the moon children, and are the offspring of the moon child alter in the early cage programming.

In the early 1950s, the Illuminati would take a child and force it to watch another child, who they have bonded with, be incinerated alive in a crematorium at high heat which would not only melt the child but turn it to ashes. The form of the child in ashes would stay in the shape of the child until the crematorium door which would have glass in it for viewing would be opened. A small gust of air would cause the ashes to lose their shape. Watching through glass and feeling the fire and hearing the child scream was a trauma for any child. The Presideo and some of the Illuminati-run funeral homes which had this type of crematorium were employed for fire traumas. The fire trauma was done so that the child would visualize melting from heat. This melting trauma would then form the basis of the good witch/bad witch programming where water on a witch makes her melt like in the Wizard of Oz story. The Delta and Beta alters are then to trance into their melted state whenever their programmers want them to function. Their functioning state is the "melted state". The programming is that the witches melt down to NOTHING.

After a few years, the programmers realized that they didn't have to have a real trauma to get the programming done, because they could usually do it with a combination of hallucinatory drugs, hypnotic drugs, and paper dolls. Paper dolls which when cut out are all joined together would be placed on a grid similar to an alter grid on a platform. The right hypnotic suggestions are made, and the child believes these paper dolls are alive and are burned up. If the paper dolls didn't work, they'd go back to using a real child to get the job done.

Later, the lower cat alters are taught how to be hunted and hunt at the "life or death" Beltaine hunts. These hunts helped train alters which are then used to create the Deltas. The Deltas are not completed until later.

To create a trained assassin, the alters were desensitized towards pain and death by being shown gory films with the eyes forced open. Hypnosis was also used. The potential victims were devalued, it is believed the Aryan alters which are very elitist and racist are used for Delta alters. Satanic rituals were also involved in the creation of the Deltas.

Deltas will be trained in hand to hand combat--and know certain vulnerable places to kill people incl. breaking the neck. Training included a great deal of weapons training.

In an early programmed multiple System, which was created and programmed in Nazi Germany in the 1930s, the assassination alters are placed behind a wall of ice. When the wall of ice is melted, these assassination alters are freed and they will go about their assignment to kill by using an ice-pick type needle poked into the heart of their prey. These Systems were infiltrated into the U.S. during the 1930s to build a foundation for when the Nazi's expected to win the war. Later, American Delta alters were taught the art of assassination by poking a needle through the eye of the victim. This kind of assassination is apparently hard to detect.

HOW THE DELTAS ARE ACTIVATED

The access codes for the Deltas are structured different than for the rest of the System, except for the sexual/entrapment/espionage alters who are designed very similar. The Deltas may be black color coded.

When the programmer wants to use these Delta alters, he will call them up from their genii bottle or wherever they are hidden deep in the mind. They will be commanded to melt. When they have melted into the nothing state, then the programmer gives an exact script of everything the Delta alter is to do, just like you would program a computer step by step-- from step a to step z. For instance, the programmer might say, "At a certain place you will be in the melted state until you hear the words, "I'm going to Kansas City, where are you from Miss Ruby shoes?", at that point you will remain in the melted state and do part B of the script." As the programmer continues with the script, a Delta fragment will be given NWO codes, bank account numbers, and major sports numbers (so other NWO folks know who is going to win ahead of time). This fragment will simply be a mental floppy disk. The Delta-Beta alters are habitually lied to by their programmers when they are given their detailed scripts. If they are carrying cocaine they may be told it is soap for needy children. If they shoot someone, then they will be told all kinds of lies about the person they are to kill. They never are really given a chance to step outside of their deep trance and to ever hear the truth about what they are doing. They live their lives in a surreal fantasy world where nothing really makes sense. They don't try to think for themselves, they just follow orders.

Since a mission may call for other alters to hold the body, the programmer must put together his Delta script so that two scripts can be intertwined. The programmer may work out something so that the Delta alter goes into a temporary sleep in the melted state while out on the mission. This way the programmer doesn't have to be present on the trip to bring the Delta alter back into its functioning "melted" state. The Delta alters can't be out too long anyway because they are not used to functioning in the outside world and they get tired fast. Several Delta alters can switch so that they keep having a fresh Delta alter come out, but eventually every one begins to get tired. That is another reason they will work in another script with front alters. The front alters are used to holding the body everyday. The front alters will take a vacation, while the Deltas work on their detailed script of carrying secret messages and maybe killing someone. During an airplane trip, a travel alter will hold the body while the Deltas sleep in the melted state.

Delta alters (who by the way have photographic memories) are given their scripts by programmers, not run-of-the-mill handlers. Everything is too fine tuned in the programming for a run-of-the-mill handler.

Delta alters have an internal hour glass, this hour glass may be a mural in their internal world that they look at. As long as they are obedient, the hour glass sands do not fall. If they are disobedient, the sand begins falling, and their life is on the line. There is no room for mistakes. If the sand runs out, death is to happen. Large hourglasses are often displayed in front of Delta-Beta slaves to remind them that their is no room for mistakes, no slack for disobedience.

Their thinking is buried in fairy tales. They are programmed to see themselves in fairy tales, they are programmed not to see their handlers or anybody's else's face for that matter. Their handlers pretend they are fairy tale characters or aliens. These alters do not have a chance to understand what they are doing.

If the programmers get tired of the slave's programming breaking down--and it does in part due to the severe abuse they get from these sadistic programmers/handlers, then they will simply give the slave an assignment in which the slave will end up dying, i.e. a suicide mission. This type of suicide mission is happening all over the United States with great frequency. An example would be a lady who is getting to wise about the New World Order, so a Delta is assigned to crash their car into the lady, and its written down as "just an unfortunate ACCIDENT with fatalities." A shop owner refuses to pay the Mafia for protection; so a Delta vandalizes and tears up the shop and has a fatal shootout with the police.

FOREIGN LANGUAGE ALTERS

The Illuminati/intelligence agencies realized when they started making slaves with photographic memories that they could create different parts of a slave's mind to operate on different languages. Illuminati hierarchy systems will employ foreign language alters for several purposes: **a. to facilitate the alter working in various situations**, for example French is helpful to work with Catholics in Quebec, and with the Cambodian/Vietnamese criminal syndicate that the Illuminati set up in this nation. A high profile example of this is Bo Gritz, an officer of the Delta Force, who due to his photographic mind (created via brain stem scarring) can speak Mandarin Chinese. Mandarin Chinese is not normally an easy language for Americans. **b. to hide things in a system.** Examples of this include code words attached to Greek and Hebrew letters for body programs. Another example is having latin phrases for accessing deeper parts.

If an entire area of a system is put in a foreign language, and the system is not given any alters capable of translation, then you have very effectively isolated an entire section. For instance, systems are being created in their early teens which are sectioned off into 5 or more languages, say for instance, German, Spanish, French, Italian, and Arabic. Some of the Systems created in the late 1950s, already were employing some of this.

Since the very best Illuminati programmer in the world is European, and speaks several languages you can expect to start to see more and more of this "Tower of Babel" programming (multi-language systems where parts can't communicate.) The reader realizes that such multi-language capabilities are always secret until the person starts breaking down the programming.

The programmers tell alter systems that God wants this programming done, because God confounded all the languages & then spread people into the 4 corners of the world.

GATEKEEPER ALTERS

The Gatekeeper alters are just that. They protect the gates or portals to all System levels. Infrequently, the programmers may also call them "doorkeepers", or "tollmen" & "toll women". The victim may refer to them as guards or blockers, although Gatekeepers are more than guards, they are an entrance or portal to something.

Gatekeepers may often be the alter that was split to get a particular section. Each gatekeeper may be at a deeper level trance than the one before it. When a Gatekeeper is split it creates a natural link to the alters that are created from itself. Then the Gatekeepers are given programming not to see what they have created and what they are natural portals to. These steps create a natural portal for the deeper alters. One-way mirrors are usually installed between the Gatekeeper and the section they guard, so that the deeper alters can see out, but the Gatekeeper can't see in. Besides splitting off entire sections from the Gatekeepers, clown alters will be created from them to keep the Gatekeepers in line.

The first row of doors in a system--which the front Gatekeepers protect are often set up as the "red door(s)". Deeper in the system, other Gatekeepers will be stationed in front of important systems, and these other doors will have a different color code than the first set of doors. To train gatekeeper alters, they are taken to a door and by behavior modification techniques (i.e. severe torture) they are taught not to go beyond the door. They are to hold their place and not step through the door. Then they are strongly programmed via hypnosis to forget the training session, but not the lesson.

The first row of Gatekeepers can have no tie to the cult and no tie to the outside world. They are taught they are vagabonds. The only real tie they are allowed to have is themselves, and they are aren't allowed to know who they themselves are. The standard programming for Gatekeepers is to mess them up with love-hate double binds. Gatekeepers are often very melancholic and if they go against their programming, they or the alters near them can easily commit suicide. The Gatekeepers always receive heavy programming and heavy trauma. Front line Gatekeepers may be near the front of a System, but due to their heavy programming, what they say should be taken with a big grain of salt. They usually provide outsiders with the lies the programmers have so skillfully convinced them to believe.

Illuminati Gatekeeper alters are in 3 parts. The higher numbered gatekeepers have a pedestal which they are rotating on. A cat, a butterfly and a porcelain face are the three kinds of alters which are joined together and rotate. The deeper Gatekeepers on Illuminati models must be locked in place before conversation can ensue. The Gatekeeper alters are non-sexual, and programmed not to see what is below their feet which are the sexual alters. A stacking mechanism has been created to call each gatekeeper alter out and stacked on each like a deck of cards. This command for some systems is "Stand in order according to rank & serial no. [said 3x]." Another stacking mechanism can be achieved to place them all on the potter's wheel according to order with "See no evil, Hear no evil, do no evil" which originally was accompanied by a hand movement of exposing cards.

The NWO's Charismatic branch give their deeper gatekeepers Porcelain Face Programming. Sometimes, the frontline Gatekeepers also get Porcelain face programming. The movie *Ghostbusters*, which has been used for a programming script on some slaves, has a very strong demonic "Gatekeeper" in the show. Janus, the two-faced god, was a gatekeeper, & the 1st month which is the gate to the new yr. (January) is named after him. The Illum. Great Rite ritual has a Gatekeeper (male) and Keymaster (female) to produce an AntiChrist child.

HIERARCHY & DEEPER CULT ALTERS

The deeper cult alters may be placed in a crystal ball and the Cabalistic Tree of Life. The Mother-of-Darkness alters will be set up on the Maiden-Mother-Crone trinity of the occult. Stormy alters, and there may be 60 or more deep level Stormy alters per system, are alters that are to be involved in all the man-made "natural disasters" that are planned for the period of anarchy. Sergeant alters are deeper call back alters who will be commanders of programs for the AntiChrist takeover. The deep front alters of the Mother-of-Darkness, Grande Dames, or Grande Master alters will not be in a deep trance. They need to be fully alert for what they do for the Illuminati. However, since they are only out at special points in time, all they know is Illuminati life and philosophy. Illuminati philosophy will include such things as "Pain is strength. The pain we suffer will give us the strength to conquer." The Sisters of Light (the level before the Mothers of Darkness) will be under the leadership of a Queen Mother. She will direct them to abduct a handsome male for breeding purposes. After the handsome male is used for breeding to get a male child for sacrifice or a female to raise as a Sister of Light, then the handsome male will be sacrificed. The Sisters of Light wear white for this ceremony. Because these alters only know the traditional ways, they don't have a realization of what they are doing.

An Illuminati multiple will carry on ritual functions at a number of different levels in the occult. There will be different alters for different levels and different ritual dates. The back part of a hierarchy system will not be worked until a sealing ceremony involving Egyptian magic at the age of 19 in late Apr.-May. Three keys are given at the ceremony, which is tied to astrological events. The 19 also represents 9+10 doors in the system. Then the back (deeper hierarchy) alters will begin to be used. This back half of the System will be shaped by pathworkings of the Cabalistic Tree of Life.

In the first levels of witchcraft, they will think they are worshipping a male & a female god. By the third level they will be informed they are worshipping one god-Lucifer. Some Illuminati groups, which are Jewish, worship a female god at the coven levels.

The secret Illuminati set of documents that the Bavarian government confiscated in 1784 and published as *Die Originalschriften der Illuminatensekte*, Munich has an accurate organizational chart on p. 32 of these reprinted Illuminati papers. There were 13° or levels. Six of these are functional. Monarch slaves who have internal worlds with 13 levels, with 6 functional and 6 hidden are not much different than the actual hierarchy structure.

In the Illuminati covens, each coven will secretly have a copy of *The Book of Ages*, which is vellum, and is basically a Who's Who of the Illuminati, and a copy of *The Book of Generations*, which explains the 13 bloodlines and what belongs to what generation. A handwritten magickal *Book of Shadows* will also belong to the coven. Only the Keeper of the Books and the coven leader will know about these things. The coven will also have a Keeper of the Seals which pertains to vows and oaths. After Halloween, the coven leader (priest or priestess) will secretly send all the coven records to headquarters in Europe.

It is important to realize that the internal structuring of an Illuminati alter system will correspond to the external structures of the Illuminati. This may not be an exact one-to-one correspondence. Understanding the Illuminati hierarchy ranks, which by the way had remained secret until Fritz Springmeier's recent *Newsletter From A*

Christian Ministry in Jan. '93, is important. Within the male membership in the hierarchy you will find the following positions, Grande Druid, Grande Master, 5-star general (Servant of the Pentacle), Asmodeus, Ipsimus (or Royal Ipsimus), and Supreme Master. Bards are wise men within Druidism. Within the female side, are the Sisters of Light (9 grades), the Mothers of Darkness (11 grades), the Grande Mothers (13 grades), the Grande Dames, and the Queen Mother. Each of the 13 bloodlines have their own governing monarchies, upon which the numerous mob crime families are modelled. This particular arrangement may have developed from Basque witchcraft rather than Druidism. Generational thrones (kings, princes, priests) are very important. The Kings are called Olympians. All of these bloodlines cooperate by having councils. Three groups have been identified as preserving the plans for the world rule by the AntiChrist, the Keepers of the Dawn, the Order of the Quest, and the Order of the Garter.

EGYPTIAN ARMIES

The Egyptian armies are hundreds of fragments which have been programmed to have uniforms and to function as parts of an army. The main gods or spirits of Egyptian magic may be the names of the captains of the armies, such as the following names Isis, Osirus, Horus, Set and Ra. Thoth can be another name. In the Temple of Set, alters with Egyptian names abound, and aren't restricted to fragment armies.

The armies are built to protect various internal structures.

The technique to make these armies are to torment the victim child in such a way that they make the child very angry. At the peak of the child's rage, they split the mind. The result is lots of child alter fragments which are angry. These are collected and shaped into an angry army of little children. When an adult Monarch slave, triggers a protective army the adult alter finds themselves with angry children alters who are like a large crowd of toddlers who are screaming their heads off. There is no way to reason with these child fragments. Imagine trying to reason with a little 2 year who is screaming. Without anyway to reason with them--the adult alter has little defense against such an army.

FLOODING ALTERS

Flooding alters can be used as singles or as a group of alters. There is almost always a number of flooding alters in a system. They are developed by using drugs which lower dissociative barriers. The drugs were used when these alters held the body and the drugs caused all the dissociative walls to come down. These alters hold the memory of this flooding. Drugged alters in weird states can also be pulled up to make a system feeling crazy.

GEMS

The Gem alters are early child splits. These alters are treated as bad as possible. They are literally defecated upon, and pissed upon. They are intentionally dehumanized and taught to think as little as possible about themselves. At some point, these alters who have no self-esteem are told that they are something precious as Satan's gems. But they are warned that if they ever talk to someone on the outside, bombs will go off. Various bomb mechanisms are constructed using other alters and imagery. If these bombs go off, these alters will be so dysfunctional, incoherent and in shock that the therapist will not be able to work with the System again. The Gems are then used to transmit the mind of Satan to the System. Beyond the gems, and the hour glass disciples, there may be a stage which has more memories hidden. If a therapist gets that far, see how to raise the curtain.

LOOKING GLASS PEOPLE

The "Looking Glass Images" is the Illuminati name for mirror image alters, who are split off of main alters in order to confuse everyone but the controller. Sometimes these alters can be spotted because an alter will say, "I don't know if I'm inside or outside, I think I'm inside." As previously mentioned, many alters also have shadow alters created from themselves to take their pain.

It will be appropriate to discuss the overlays that the Illuminati place over real alters. The Illuminati will try to hide real alters with pseudo alters, mirror alters, mirror images and other tricks. Some alters are demons, and others are simply illusions of the mind. Shell alters prevent therapists from talking to the real alters.

MIRROR IMAGES

Mirror images are purpose fragments whose job is to confuse both victim and therapist. When an event happens, the abusers will fragment the alter who participated in the event, and create mirror images of that alter. This means that no one has the full memory. An alter doesn't know if the mirror image is itself or something else. It's very confusing. A triangle is formed by a. an alter, b. its mirror images, c. demonic mirror images. When an alter tries to recover a memory it goes round and round in a vicious cycle and finally concludes the memory is false. If one alter holds a memory, an alter close to it will have no feelings attached to the memory and will find it difficult to accept the memory as its own. It's like wearing someone else's coat, it may fit, but it just isn't your own. Mirror images, & pseudo-alters are layered in, so that it becomes perplexing to identify where an alter starts & where it ends. Therapists may think they have integrated alters, & actually only integrated their mirror images.

Looking Glass People are similar to the mirror images. The Programmers may create a looking glass alter by having a drugged alter(s) of the victim endure the trauma of seeing someone's face peeled. Then the victim's face is also pretended to be peeled--by pulling off something like elmer's glue which has formed a surface on the victim's face. Then the dead person's skin is placed over the victim being programmed. The Looking Glass People are charted on grids and contain lots of the programs. They are confusing to the regular alters, because they appear internally like mirror images.

PROGRAMMER ALTERS

Internal programming alters, which are "clone images" of the 3 primary external programmers will be placed into a Monarch system. Of course the programmers want to remain anonymous, so these programming alters are faceless & wear white robes. They are given vast power in the authority structure of a system, & can move wherever they need to move. When programming is discussed by a victim & therapist, they will appear.

REPORTING ALTERS

These alters are programmed to record everything. They lack an overview of reality. They are child parts that only know their job. The reporting alters will be involved in the recontact cues. Recontact alters are alters which are unaware of the abuse. The programmers may promise these recontact alters favors if they "report to Daddy." For years, many therapists have worked with clients and never realized that the secret and well hidden reporting alters were reporting everything back to the handler.

SCRAMBLING ALTERS

This is one of the hardest type of programs for the victim to master. To make sure that the victim's mind is very alert a drug is given which clouds the thinking. The alters must try exceptionally hard if they are to concentrate and learn what their job is. They will learn how to take something being said and scramble it. When alters are not supposed to hear something, these alters will be called up by the internal programmers & they will sit on top of other alters and scramble everything they hear. These alters are technicians who usually enjoy the mastery they have over their difficult assignment. Therapists can give them a new job scrambling incoming cult messages. Scrambling programs (linked to triggers for scrambling alters) have at times been given names such as "AC DC" & "FLIP FLOP."

SEXUAL ALTERS

The early sexual trauma is designed to familiarize the child with sex, and to access the primal part of the mind. The torture and sexual abuse eventually becomes gratifying to the mind. The mind does a reversal, pain becomes pleasure. At any rate, the programmers are trying to get a type of nymphomaniac. They accomplish this on one level. The sexual alters have no feelings attached to what they do, and their masters never allow them to enjoy sex. They are not to have climaxes, although they may be coached how to fake it. (For punishment if a slave gives trouble, the programmers might even hypnotically or surgically sew up the clitoris to insure the slave receives no gratification. The arab sheiks of Saudi Arabia will cut off--destroy-- the clitoris of their Monarch slaves in the same fashion that the Moslem world does with all their females.) The Programmers have been heard to program their slaves, "Don't be a hustler and don't pick up strays."

The programmers must now "groom" these alters. Little boys begin to be orally sexually molested when they are three. That is the standard age. Females (and some males) need to learn how to appear and act seductive. The programmers understand human nature. They understand that there is a spectrum of female sexuality, where on one end of the spectrum females guard their bodies with their minds, and on the other end they guard their emotions with their bodies. When a woman guards her emotions with her body--she is the type who craves sex for the physical pleasure of sex. There are an entire cluster of behavior traits that go with this type of personality, such as the way they walk, use their eyes, stare at men, the way they dress etc. The sexual groomers and programmers will teach the sexual alters these clusters of behavior. The sexual alters will also pick up lots of expertise naturally during the years of having to sexually service hundreds of abusers in every fashion imaginable. When Roseanne Barr, a Monarch slave, in her recent T.V. interview with Barbara Walters said, "I'm been screwed every possible way," she was not exaggerating. The Gumby Programming is to make the slave think their body is like Gumby and is flexible to move into any position. The slave is repeatedly threatened with their life, if they do not perform perfectly. The sexual techniques of the world have been collected and improved upon by the Illuminati and their intelligence agencies such as MI6, & the CIA. There are techniques to use with old men, for porn movies etc. which the common people aren't even aware of. The intelligence agencies & the military, when they use a male Monarch slave for covert activities, will find a female slave whose personality matches the male and pair them sexually during the period that the male slave is used on covert operations. This is done to insure that the other side doesn't take advantage of the male's sexual desires. Subjects such as how to train alters for espionage & prostitution could be books in themselves. The Illum. have male instructors who teach small classes of females about the power of seduction & how the male brain shutdowns when their sexual organ gets involved. Finishing schools like at Youngstown, OH teach sexuality performance based on fear of death. The male & female sexual slaves usually are highly skilled technicians who don't have emotions attached to what they do.

NAMES

There are some examples in professional literature which will serve to illustrate how the alters in an Illuminati system are named. A therapist in a professional magazine provided the names of a client's alters, which were Karen J, Karen Jo, Karen Ja, Baby Alpha, Middle Alpha, Adult Alpha. One of Frank Putnam's clients, (who had PET scans done showing how different alters have vastly different PET brain scans, which are not exhibited by people who only pretend to have MPD), had a Pam 1, and a Pam 2. These three methods here are common methods for nomenclature. In a 13x13x13 grid of alters, the top 2 sections of 169 each will usually have a quite a number of duplicate names. Our hypothetical Mary, would have a Mary 1,2, 3...11,12,13. She might have Eves 1-13 also. On the charts these would be Eve A, Eve B, Eve C, etc. She could also have a George Ann, a Georgee, a Georgette, a plain George, and a little child George, and several alters attached to these who have no names. Sometimes alters will be set up with first names and a surname, so that a family of alters will all have the same last name (surname). Some alters are not named by their abusers, they must fend for themselves in figuring out what to call themselves. They only have access codes to pull them to the front of the mind.

There seems to be no end to the variety of names of alters. Some are named after the quality they have like a robot named Steel, or a crazy alter being named Dementia, or a animal alter being named Animal. However, a number of names keep popping up in System after System, so for what it's worth here are some popular names that Fritz has seen occurring as alter names: the Adepts, Alexis (or Alex), Angel, Anna, Baker, Charlie (or Charles), Crystal, Death, Jezebel, Lilith, Queen, Sadie, and Samantha. This is not a scientific sampling at all, just an observation based on dozens of alter systems which have shared some of their alter's names.

BOXES & SELF-ABUSE

We will now discuss one method of placing boxes into an alter system. Between the age of 4 and 4 1/2, an Illuminati child would be taken to Scotty's castle, CA for programming. A cedar chest would be placed in front of a table. Two Illuminati children well into their programming would be assigned to guard the chest, which would be called the Doctor's box. They would have "clean slate" alters who knew nothing but their hypnotic commands to guard the doctor's boxes. Expendable children would be coached to come into the room and try to get into the box. The Illuminati children would be given strict orders to kill them if they tried to get into the box. If the children failed in their guard duty, they either got more programming or were in turn expended. The Illuminati children had sharp swords with which to guard the box, which had 3 seals on it. Internally, Mengele would then hypnotically program in countless boxes with 3 seals. Locked up in the boxes would be self-mutilation and body programs, etc. Therapists should know that these boxes are deadly.

After reaching the level of obedience where they would kill for the programmer, the Illuminati children would be placed in a deep well for a well-trauma, and then while deep in the well would be given various orders such as "cut yourself", "probe yourself (electroshock oneself)" and other self-abusive things. The well torture would usually work at teaching the "clean slate" alters to abuse themselves.

During many programming sessions, the victim is told "you must pass a test, will you pass the test?" There is something that is more motivating in these words, than if the truth were said, "you must endure these traumas, for our enjoyment and to become a slave for us." And to quote a line from the film When Rabbit Howls, "The worse things got, the more of us showed up." The mind keeps protecting itself by dissociating the overwhelming abuse.

LAYERING

Programming is layered in. Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each alter or alter fragment is used as if it were a component of a large system. The result is that no alter or fragment is the whole, only a cog in a great machine. Can a single cog rebel against the whole machine? It is very difficult for a single component of thousands of components to rebel against its abusers, when it doesn't even have the ability to realize they are abusers and not the alter's natural order giver.

Besides programs, items are placed into the mind too. Examples include vaults, safes and doors which need combinations & keys.

The Illuminati Programmers see the layering in of programming as demonic. They feel the scripts, and movies are more "fronts" than the actual layering mechanism. They believe, as one ex-Programmer said, "This programming involves an organization system, established by horrendous trauma, for the alter personalities involving internal mental imagery, which is driven by demons, who provide the power. Undoing it requires an understanding of the mental processes involved, the imagery or blueprint used, and the spiritual dynamics." (By the way, some readers will be ignoring this as Christian propaganda. However, this was said, not because this person is a Christian, which this person isn't, but because this person wanted others to be set free. Its also true that the Word of God, the Holy Bible, which was the foundation of Western civilization, does speak about spiritual warfare.)

SYSTEMS

Now we will go into the various systems that are programmed in. The Programmers place into their slaves a combination of the following standard systems to make up the victim's programming: a. Cabalistic Tree of Life, b. Carousel, c. Castle, d. Cave and well, e. Chess Board, f. Double Helix, g. Flowers, h. Helix, i. Hour glass j. the Mensa system, k. Pentagram, l. Pool of Death, m. Potter's Wheel, n. Puppet System, o. Solemetric, p. Spider Web, q. Spiritual structuring, r. Stairwell, s. a Telescoping system, t. Tornado System, and u. Umbrella. Also an internal timing clock (syst.) keeps time according to the rotation of ritual dates, which helps "justify" the SRA, for "it's that time of the year."

Just a quick note: different programmers have different preferences for how they do things. It also may depend on what site they are using for the programming. Drugs and videos are frequently used to get the person to adopt the script they are to accept internally. However, harmonics and electronics are increasingly being used. Ritual and magical ceremonies may or may not have rigid scripts.

A. CABALISTIC TREE OF LIFE

While the Cabalistic Tree of Life means little to most people, it is a very important--essential structure for Illuminati systems. Therefore, in describing how these systems are built it is important to describe this crucial magical tree. The reason all these following items such as Trees of Life and goddesses are placed into slaves is because THESE SLAVES ARE PART OF HIGH LEVEL SATANISM. The slaves are a reflection of the world view of their programmers. You and I wouldn't bother with all this because we are not into magic. That we find ourselves reporting all this, does not mean we endorse any of this. We don't. But the programmers didn't ask us what to place into their slaves. If you have a low tolerance for understanding the Illuminati's cabalism, skip on down to the Carousel system.

The Cabalistic Tree of Life is put into upper level Illuminati slaves. It is a very deep program laid in at about section (level) 11. The Cabala is the basis of a. Freemasonry, b. the magic of the Illuminati Monarch programming, c. the key to the spiritual mysteries of the Scripture (according to Caballists). Because the word Cabala is a word originating in the Middle East it can be spelled with a Q, a QU, a K and a C. All these spellings are O.K. It can be spelled with one b or two, etc.

Golem in the Cabala are ancient medieval mind controlled slaves--are these precursors to what we have today?

WHO liked to program this? Mengele, and Wheeler (Dr. Green & Dr. Black) were skilled in the Cabala, especially Dr. Green (Mengele). Some of the Rothschild

AIN
AIN SOPH
AIN SOPH AUR
1 CROWN
3 Under-standing
2 WISDOM
KNOWLEDGE
5 Justice
4 Mercy
6 Beauty- "The King"
8 Glory In Splendor
7 Victory
9 The Foundation
10 "The Kingdom"
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32

ע
ס
נ
ל
י
ט
ח
ז
ו
ה
ק
צ
ב
ת
ר
פ
כ
ד
ג
א
מ
ש

COMMON STRUCTURES IN A MONARCH TOTAL MIND-CONTROLLED SLAVE'S INTERNAL SYSTEM

"As above...:
...So below"
Black Hole
(light half)
ALBAN ELVED
(Fall Equinox)
LUGNASSAD
(August Eve)
ALBAN HEFFYN
(Midsummer Day)
BELTANE
(May Eve)
ALBAN EILER
(Spring Equinox)
IMBOLC
(February Eve)
SAMHAIN
(November Eve)
21 September
21 December
June 21
21 March

The Black Widow Spider system is installed for blackmail of legitimate Christian ministers.

Double Helix System of alter movement, aka the elevator shaft.

Branches of the tree go throughout the body.

The eternal occult flame of Prometheus burns within the carousel.

The Carousel is interlocked with other carousels to form wheels within wheels.

The bottom side of the Carousel is a sundial, which is a switching mechanism for the system.

The internal clock is based upon the Druid Wheel of the Seasons. Time is measured in the passing of rituals.

Round table with a pentagram inside serves as the table for the Grand Druid Council, who are linked to gems, who link to the main crystal the pyramid.

The Pentagram Pattern

programmers have been too. Mengele learned from the leading Jewish Kaballists, during concentration camp days--Mengele himself was an Ipsimus in Illuminati. Undoubtedly, it is standard programming and many other Illuminati programmers must be doing it too.

WHAT is it? The Cabala is synonymous with Hermeticism or Hermetic magic. The Cabala was jewish-babylonian magic. The jewish black magicians brought it to Europe. It began to get widespread notice in Europe after Enlightenment period. The great pyramid according to the occult is a symbol of the Cabalistic Tree of Life--the branches of the tree form the four streams or lines to the base of the pyramid. Because the Cabala is the basis of their hermetic magic, Illuminati systems will be fairly consistent in the make of a slave's internal Tree of Life and Tree of Evil. A Maiden/Mother/Crone triad goddess will sit at the top of the structure and will be married to the AntiChrist & Satan.

The Cabalistic Tree of Life area of the System may have up to 12 other trees. These are other magical trees.

There are 10 circles or rooms which are joined by 22 lines that make up the Cabalistic Tree of Life called The Cabala for short.There are 4 worlds of the Cabala--3 pillars to the tree which are also given different names to these pillars at different times. As just mentioned, there are 10 spheres of the Tree of Life and they are joined by 22 paths. The Mother-of-Darkness alters (at least some of them) are placed in a Tree of Life, and they do what is called "pathworking". The spheres of the tree (also called rooms) are called "sephiroth" and they along with the 22 paths that join them are the "file drawers of this universal file cabinet." Before the first sphere there are 3 veils of negative existence--the Ain, Ain Soph, and Ain Soph Aur.

Alters in male and female systems in the Tree of Life will consider themselves to be gods or goddesses. Their names will often reflect god or goddess names.

Chesed is a sphere which may be called a "Hall of Masters" or the "Sphere of the Adepts". Geburah is called "Hall of Karma" or "Hall of Judgment". The Illuminati alters of course believe in Karma.

The center of the tree is called Tifareth which means Beauty or Harmony. Understanding of the mysteries of sacrifice may be attached here.

If we think of the Tree as three pillars--the right, center and left pillars, then we start with describing the right pillar from the top room down--an Illuminati system will have Istar/Venus/The Morning Star/Lucifer in the top room. The next room below this will be an alter of destruction, an alter of change, unbinding and freeing. The final right pillar room at the bottom is associated with virtue/white/victory/endurance. In the middle pillar at the top is The Crown. This is the Bride of Saturn (Satan, and the AntiChrist). The room in the middle pillar one down from the top is the Blue Room. Sometimes front Mother alters are in the blue room. Other rooms have other colors assigned, which then tie in with the computer color coding. The blue room is the balancing point, an important room, the center of all things, associated with the twinning. The next room down is the Foundation. This room is the meeting point for the ethereal and the earth. The next and final room down on the middle pillar is the Kingdom. It has the life force of the first male child who was sacrificed by the slave. This is the feet on the earth room. The far left pillar has 3 rooms. The top left is associated with Midnight/the Mother/and water. The next room down is associated with Discipline and control. The next room down is an alter that performed an eating the dove ceremony. Each of these 10 rooms will not only have its own name, but each room's alter will have its own magical name, which is not to be confused with its access code. The alter associated with Wisdom "Chokmah" (and maybe even named Wisdom) is usually full of good information.

In the occult literature, the tree is said to be attached upside down--that is its roots are in heaven. This applies to the internal programmed tree. Malkuth is the top of the tree. Malkuth is the "Gate of Death". There seems to be more gatekeepers at these lower levels. The Lord of the Earth is the power of Malkuth.

HOW it is put in? Our answer applies to Illuminati Mother-of-darkness level systems. Before a Mother-of-darkness system is 16 years old they will have gone through all the ceremonies involved in the creation of the alters which correspond to the rooms of the Cabalistic Tree of Life which is placed in each system. There is one alter assigned to each of the 10 rooms of the tree. Each one is created by a particular Illuminati ceremony. After the age of 16, the System will be guided on a personalized pathway by the system's own demons and the life force of the sacrificed baby under the tree which relates to the story of Lilith.

Lilith is not a single driving force, but the demon Lilith is joined with Zerodieth and Lucifer. Between age 16 and 19 the deep Satanic alters are working on "pathworking." This pathworking will be completed before they are 19. The ceremony at 19 will include the 1,000 points of light ceremony at the super secret Mother-of-Darkness castle of Chateau des Amerois (Castle of Kings) close to the Belgium-French border in Europe and about 20 kilometers as the crow flies west from Luxemburg. This will be a sealing ceremony with the Mothers dressed in black. Guards and heavy forest protect the large castle from view. The people in the nearby spooky village of Muno, Bel. basically belong to the castle. The castle has a cathedral inside with a dome with 1,000 lights. The words 1,000 lights is an Illuminati buzz word. When the President used it to describe the White House's Christmas tree, hierarchy people knew what he was signalling. The cathedral has a great hall with columns on either side, and the Queen Mother's throne will be set up there. Only a single male waving an incense ball and robed in white with a red mantle with gold symbols will participate in 1,000 lights ceremony. Down in the secret basement is where an innocent child is sacrificed everyday to provide blood to write in a hugh book the record of how Satan is bringing his plans to fruition.

The stongman protecting the tree of life is Lilith/Zerodieth/Lucifer spirits amalgamated. Behind the 1st line of the tree are 880 demons, and tens of thousands more are attached to this whole apparatus. For 24 hours after one of the Queen ceremonies, the Queen alter is a queen and can have anything she wishes.

As previously stated, at 19, three keys are given, and the back part of the System begins to be worked. The System has an alter lay on a throne (like in Egyptian days) with a lily. The death, burial and resurrection ceremony also is done sometime in here. There are 9+10 doors to the tree which make up the number 19 (which is the year the system is sealed). This is tied to an astrological event. Note that every 19 years the full moon appears on the Summer Solstice day and this relates to the internal sun dial and what is called "moon swing." The Cabalistic tree needs balance and becomes operational with balance. Special rituals are chosen for each individual, so the rituals from one alter in one system to another will vary. Individualization may actually be a choice from a selection --that is menu of options--rather than actually totally unique. The "Becoming" ritual at 19 begins in the ceremony of inhaling a dying mother-of-darkness's breath. Consciousness of the tree is achieved by balance. The Prana children are attached to the tree and its ceremonies.

Lily became white when Moon child drew down the moon & exchanged herself for the goddess. She then drew down the stars of heaven (milk from the breast of the goddess). The lily she held in ceremony was the female challis to hold this essence or light of light. (this ceremony has sexual tones to it...) As Lily died in the ceremonies--drinking something from a special cup and laying down on an altar with candles at her head and feet) night was born. The liquid was wine with lily essence in it as well as Rue, which is a strong smelling European plant. Two things happen as lily is consumed--one conceives and one dies from poison. Does this death and conception relate to moon cycles? Night=Nuit Noir=Black. She has names in two terms. She is death, permanence which preserves earthly attainments i.e. position, glory, possessions, etc.

WHAT other items are involved with this programming? The rooms of the tree of life have names. Essentially, every Illuminati hierarchy victim, has the Cabalistic tree of life placed in them. This tree lies below the other trees. The circles that make up the internal Cabalistic Tree of Life are called rooms or quads by the various survivors. Alters can use the internal Tree of Life to work magic internally. It also reminds deeper alters of cult control. The circles of the tree are rooms that can be entered into. Mt. Qabbalah is a figurative mountain in the Cabala.

WHAT kind of demonology is programmed in with this? In the Cabala, demonology is important. Ashmedai is Asmodeus which means king demon. Lilith is an important demon in Kaballah and is found in Ill. Mother of darkness systems. Lilith's story from the Cabala about mating with Adam and killing her son, is used in Ill. ceremony and programming. The blood of 1st born is placed in a box in the System under each tree. This according to the programming gives the "eternal life force to the tree." This is in line with occult doctrine of the power of blood, and also serves as a misapplication of the biblical "life is in the blood" concept. Metatron is a lesser top god of the Kaballah, and is receiving lots of Hollywood attention in recent movies. The four mothers of demons are Lilith, Naamah, Agrath, and Mahalath (a.k.a. Rahab). In the Cabala each demon has its own seal. Samuel & Amon of No are important demon leaders in the Cabala.

At least one System of the Mothers (and we can assume others do too) uses the Bilair, Bilar, Bilid cabalistic names for Satan, rather than Satan. The Shekinah rules the Cabalistic Tree of Life. This is not the Shekinah of God Almighty, but from the self-proclaimed "father of light" Lucifer.

There is a "Tree of Evil" said to be below the Tree of Life which is all spirit and not alters. This Tree of Evil has spirits attached to each room rather than alters. In contrast, both alters & spirits are attached to the 10 rooms of the Tree of Life. Various precious stones are attributed to each of the sephiroth rooms, as well as occult archangels. Again if we look at the right pillar at the top is Beelzebub with Chaigidel as assistant. The Knowledge Abyss separates this room from the room below. This next room is Astarte with Gamchicoth as her assistant. The final room on the right is Baal with Hareb Serapel. The middle pillar at the top is Satan & Moloch in joint rulership. Below that is the Daath room. The room below is Belphegor, and the bottom room on the middle pillar is Lilith with Gamaliel as assistant. The far left starts at the top with Lucifuge. Then below that is Asmodeus. And the final room on the left is Addramalech. Finally, below the bottom middle pillar live the four elements of life, air, water, wind, and earth. Note that what is at the bottom is really at the top. On the other end, the pyramid with the all-seeing eye rests on the two Cabalistic Trees.

Ratzkiel is the archangel of Chokmah. The angels which carry out Ratziel's directions are the Auphanim (the wheels), a name full of symbolism and programming possibilities.

Tzafkiel, the Archangel of Binah is the Keeper of the Akashic Records, where all the System's days, lessons, and lessons to learn are kept. Since the library records are spiritual, during deprogramming they will have to be wiped out. However, I'm told that there is someway to retrieve them. Some therapists are using sodium pentothal or whatever to get access codes--but there is another way to recover some of the records.

WHAT ARE THE CODES LIKE? Gematria might play a role in Monarch codes.

Gematria is a Cabalistic teaching about numbers meaning letters. Gematria is used a lot by Moriah. These are the magical numbers that also serve as letters to the Hebrew alphabet. Certain deeper alters are good at working at astral levels. These alters have "ASTRAL" or "CRAFT" codes, and code names, which will include codes from the names of herbs, spices, jewels, and alphanumeric codes. Simple equation codes are also used in the deeper levels.

HOW does this program relate to the twinning? Many survivors have roses incl. red roses. The Red Rose in the Cabala is associated with the Tree of Life. The Red one is assoc. with one part of the tree and the white with the other part. When paired together they make a blue rose which is the Rose of Malkuth. It may be possible that Red Rose and White Rose were used in the twinning and that a Cabalistic blue rose results in such a Monarch twinning. That last statement is only a supposition.

Speaking of roses, Rosemary (the Rose of Mary) is an occult term for a woman who conceives a dark child. It is also associated with a fragrance of the Mint family.

THE WILLOW TREE VS. OAK TREE AS A PROGRAMMING HANGER FOR MORIAH'S PROGRAMMING.

Alters of an Illuminati System, due to programming, will perceive a tree growing in them which has roots in their feet and its trunk and branches extending throughout their body. Upon this tree, fruit (programs) are placed. Illuminati programs may be to cut a "tree" limb off (which is actually the victim's arm), or for a certain part of the body to get hot, or for a certain part of the body to physically change in some way. These are attached via the tree imagery. Both oak and willows are trees are used.

Why might a programmer choose a willow tree rather than an oak tree in the basic programming?

The answer lies in why a tree is used in the first place. A tree is used because of its imagery and because of its magical powers according to Druidism. There are a number of images a tree provides and there are a number of magical powers too. We will discuss the contrasts to develop our answer.

The oak is a well-known powerful Druid item, but the willow tree is also sacred. The oak is so well-connected to the Druids that some of the other sacred trees of the Druids are not quickly recognized as sacred.

Let us look at the intrinsic imagery advantages of the willow and then the magical properties it might contribute. The combination of the two, will then provide us with the complete answer as to why a willow tree rather than an oak tree might be used.

IMAGERY.

The imagery of a tree is used because it has branches, leaves and a root system. These items are manipulated for programming purposes. For instance, in the Alice In Wonderland programming, the girl jumps hypnotically into the tree and falls (hypnotically falling deeper and deeper) into the roots of the tree. The deep root system of the willow is an advantage over the shallow root system of the oak. When a storm comes the willow bends and doesn't break, while the oak is rather stiff and breakable. Since these trees are programmed into a person a flexible tree that can't be broke is an advantage. The wrapping around imagery of the branches gives a great deal of flexibility for programming and a stronger imagery than the oak. The willow draws water from deep below. The tree is "the tree of life" (the programs are the life of the system), and the Bible is used to "validate" the programming. For instance, the tree of life by the river (REV 22) is used.

There are some other images that are important too. During Illuminati rituals the willow branches are used as whips to "cleanse" people the victims of programming. The image of a willow branch could easily trigger the memories of being punished (whipped and being cleansed), and this in turn would help hold the programming in place.

The fruit of the trees are the programs--and some of the fruit can be eaten and some not. Sometimes children's stories about lunch pails hanging from trees or fruit in the trees is used to create a place for the individual programs are hung--or this could be a place for the front programs, and the more important programs are stored away somewhere more secret.

Bear in mind, the trees in the programming sing and are able to wrap themselves around people if they are going where they aren't supposed to go. The willow has that flexibility naturally, so it is easier to imagine it wrapping itself around a person.

MAGICAL PROPERTIES.

Most every thing that is done programming-wise has a dark spiritual significance to it too. The programmers will look for things that serve their purpose both here and in the spiritual realm.

The willow tree is used to make witches wands, and help to make witches brooms. (Birch can also be used.) It is planted around Druid/Celt graves to protect them spiritually. It is believed to also have magical sexual powers. It is possible that some of the programmers might prefer the magical sexual powers of the willow, rather than those properties said to come from the mighty oak.

This is not all of the willow's magical powers. It is connected with February and April in different ways, and magically connected with spring. It's possible that the person receiving a willow tree might be born in this time period. Is it possible that what type of tree is selected could sometimes be related to when a person is born. Some programmers might be into being time appropriate--this would depend upon the beliefs of the programmer(s).

The imagery of the willow's magical sexual properties could be worked into the programming, as certain alters might be asked to make certain brews, or taste of certain things hypnotically. This would be done at such a deep level it might not be known. Just as in the case of the Alice In Wonderland programming, when the person drops clear to the bottom of the tree roots they find themselves small and they go through a door. But when they come back the alter is not going to remember the trip and what they ate on the hypnotic trip down the tree.

Further considerations on the choice of Trees.

It is possible that the we can question the question. That is perhaps the question is not that the oak or the willow tree was used to the exclusion of the other--but that BOTH trees were used in the programming. Generally, this seems to be the case. In one particular case, it is possible that in a double system (with a dormant third system as a final backup), the oak tree being the more obvious Druidic symbol and quite strong was used in the front system, and the totally secret second system has the willow utilized. When the one person attempted to snap the oak tree at ground level in a crude attempt to deprogram themselves, the root system regenerated itself through the first mirror image, and what came back was more spirit and more deadly. Remember, the tree serves as an umbilical cord linking via its roots the person to their spiritual life force (which are the evil spirits which command and drive the system.) However, when the oak tree and its mirror images and the spiritual protectors (hideous spirits) were properly done away with, and then further deprogramming was done, a crack seems to have developed behind the pyramid crystal which allowed the person's original set of alters to experience a new or double system! Since that has happened it seems there has been an increased drawing to willows. In other words, for this particular victim it is conjectured that the front system (the fully operational set of alters) has an oak, and the duplicate set of alters which were each broken off of each of the original set) have a system with a willow tree. The trees roots of course are the umbilical cord to the source (the waters) that spiritually feed it. These relate to the soul ties. These roots have to be dealt with spiritually. They are so interwoven that they tie a person completely up with their roots and programs that are interwoven and wrapped around each other. Other high level Illuminati survivors also have a front tree and a back tree.

Another consideration is that the trees have flowers planted around them. Uprooting the trees are not sufficient for deprogramming, because the flowers are the deeper generational material and will regenerate the trees. Touching Lilith's box under the tree can release owls and monkeys and other animals that are dangerous. A generic code often can be used to take out the flowers.

WHAT are the OTHER TREES?

Other important occult trees are the Tree of the Knights Table, and the Tree of Alchemy. There is such a thing as Tree Magic, which involves many kinds of trees and tree spirits. The Axle tree according to world wide occult belief has the earth revolving about it. Many survivors of course have the oak, willow or ash trees placed in as their principle tree or as their back up tree. The final back up tree in an Ill. System might be the occult Yggdrasil tree (ash tree). The Yggdrasil tree has 3 roots (spiritual, terrestrial, and infernal) and has a cosmic egg attached to it. Generally only one tree is mentioned, but a back up tree exists, and then third tree which is a back-door back-up tree. Therapists should be cautioned that these trees often come in groups of 3.

WHAT are the BACKUPS? Beside the principle tree, the programmers will often plant a flower that represents the generational ties. If the tree is taken out the flower will regenerate the tree. The petals, the flower center, the stem and roots represent different generations of the victim.

Understanding the Maiden-Mother-Crone combination in the Mothers-of-Darkness. Therapists are going to find Illuminati slaves having 3 alters placed together. This is part of how these systems are structured.

The maiden is set up on the pedestal as the "a" alter. The first programming chart which shows all the "a" alters in the system consists only of the young maiden mothers. The mother or second figures are close behind the a's. However, the crone part of the triads is meant to hide in the background. They serve as the power of advice behind the scenes. These Mother of Darkness triads participate in various ceremonies. Their initial initiation ceremonies included water torture with electroshock, which is the death, burial and resurrection ceremony. There are the full range of Satanic holidays for the Mothers and a look at the full range of holidays will provide a person with the type of ceremonies that the Mothers carry out, which include the two solstices. Different Mother-of-Darkness alters participate in different ceremonies. The inside of their black velvet gowns are color coded so that within the ranks of the Mothers are a whole series of ranks (grades). All of these Mother parts have been told they are divine goddesses. The following information will clarify this further.

THE MOTHER OR "A" PARTS

The Mother part of the Goddess Trinity is the high point in all cycles. Traditionally her color is red, the color of life force.

The Mother is associated with adulthood and parenthood. The Mother is ripeness and balance.

Mothers actively work magick. She is a nurturer. She is confident and has no indecision. The Mother knows what she is.

She is the full moon. Summer is the Mother's time of the year, the full moon is her monthly point of power. She is honored by Beltane (May 1), Summer Solstice, and Lunasa (Aug. 1).

As stated before there are certain rituals which call for Mothers rather than a maiden or a crone.

MAIDEN OR "B" PARTS--

The young maiden part of the mothers is the equivalent to the "apprentice" level of the mystery schools and Freemasonry.

The myth holds that the maiden will be eternally youthful. Even with the aging process, the goddess can experience youthfulness in the mind.

The maiden is the creatress of new ideas. She also is the armed hunter of the Mother's laws. She is the Guardian of the Balance. She is aware of her sexuality. She is independent and not controlled by men. She is the Way-Shower, the Keeper of the Keys.

You will find the maiden in the following rituals:

- new beginning rituals
- plans for conception
- the birth of a child
- the first menstruation for girls
- puberty rituals for boys

THE CRONE OR "C" PARTS

These alters rarely show themselves. They stay in the shadows and pass on advice.

The crone aspect of the Triad of Goddesses has been called the Terrible Mothers, the Hag, the Dark Mother, and the Wise One. She is associated with black, death, winter, menopause, wisdom, counsel, reincarnation, and the initiator into the deepest of the Mysteries. The waning Moon is her monthly time of power. The crones number is 9. 9 is a number of wisdom and sacred magick. Nine is also a moon number, which means spiritual completion and wholeness.

The crone has a cauldron. She is the great recycler. She is the ultimate teacher. She contacts the Spirits and is an expert on demonology. She is the Keeper of the Spiritual Records. She is the shadow behind the Mother's throne. According to the occult, she is the elder of unlimited wisdom.

There are certain rituals which call for the crone, such as Winter Solstice.

The crone completes the wheel or cycle of existence of the Mothers of Darkness. She is most likely in the system the most dehumanized of the three that sit on the pedestal.

The following are a sampling of the goddesses you will find. Since the names of these goddesses are not secret, it is possible for people who are not in the occult to track down what the popular goddess names are. Here are a few that are placed into systems:

ASET (Isis) (Maiden)--She dwells in the sky as the silver sheen. Isis or Aset is the best known of the Egyptian goddesses. Her name means throne. She is a ruler. She is the mother of the Anti-Christ figure of Horus. She has a horned crown or a solar crown. She has lots of titles.

BAST (Maiden)--Bast is the mother goddess of all cats. Bast looked like an 18' giant with a cat head. Internally, in the system she will look hugh. Black cats were sacred to Bast. The internal Bast may like obsidian and cats-eye. Bast corresponds to Yesod (the Foundation) on the Cabalistic Tree of Life.

CAILLECH (Crone)--Caillech was the Scotch and Irish Crone figure. She is known as the black mother. A derivative of her name is Caledonia. She was the Spirit of disease. Caillech means an old woman, a hag, or a veiled one. California is named after a version of her name. Some think her name is a derivative of Kali.

HAT-HOR (Mother)--Hat-Hor is also known as Het-Hert. She is the womb of Horus. She is Queen of the Dead, or Queen of the West. In mythology, Hathor, when turned loose on the earth, slew humans until blood ran in the rivers. She is the avenging Mother. She is identified with the heavenly cow who made the Milky Way, and the Nile Goose, who laid the Golden Egg.

ISHTAR (Mother in the swamps)--Ishtar is Lady of heaven, goddess of the moon. Istar had a lion throne and a double serpent scepter. Ishtar went down through 7 gates into darkness and then returned in order to try to find her lover Tammuz. Sometimes Istar is accompanied by dragons. She was originally a Babylonian goddess.

KALI (Crone)--Kali or Kali Ma is the best known Crone goddess. She will be deep in an System. One image of her in mythology is squatting over the dead Shiva devouring his penis while physically eating his intestines. This is an actual Satanic ritual that Mothers-of-Darkness participate in. Kali has both creation-& destruction abilities. Kali's necklace in Indian legend consists of skulls with magical sanskrit letters. Kali was and is worshipped by a great number of people, especially the Hindus. One group of worshippers has been the Thugs, who relate to the Assassins and the Knights Templars. Another group of Kali worshippers are the gypsies who left India in the middle ages and over the next following hundreds of years travelled all over the world. Originally, blood sacrifices of male animals or men were made to her. There is a reported decrease in India of such blood sacrifices from what it was a century ago. The favorite view of Kali is the black Kali named Dakshinakali. She is usually shown black and naked, full-breasted with dishevelled hair and a wild grimace.

KORE-PERSEPHONE (Maiden)--A great mother of Greek myth. Kore means "maiden" in greek. In mythology, she watched the grain grow among the wildflowers, especially red poppies. She became the mistress of the underworld. She guards the chasm that goes into the earth. She marks each spirit of the dead on their forehead with pomegranate juice. Pomegranates are used in ritual.

Kore returns in Spring to see her mother Demeter.

According to Greek legend Kore was raped in Hades. She is also known as the Queen of the Dead. A similar Illuminati ceremony takes place where a male wearing a mask acts like Satan.

Kore makes the journey to Hades by herself without her mother. The Greek mystery schools, which included many great Greek thinkers, have had rituals around Kore.

MAAT--Maat's name means "She whose name is Truth". Her symbol is a red ostrich feather. A ritual vow is "by the Feather of Maat." Maat's presence might explain why a System is infatuated with feathers. Maat is the one in legend who "is the pattern" --the one who "will find a way to weave us back into our proper places in the tapestry."

B. Carousel. The Carousel in real life is used as a device to teach dissociation, and how the alters are to go up and down in trance. Sometimes you will see parents who seem to be so loving having their children ride for long periods on a carousel. They might actually be programming them in dissociation.

An internal carousel is built into an internal system. Mirrors and shadows are placed around and perhaps in it. The carousel spins and moves up and down repeatedly. In the center of the carousel, the Programmers often place something or someone important. They will often put this at the bottom of the DNA double helix and have the double helix elevator shaft coming up the center of the carousel. The carousel's bottom side will set on top of the system's switching mechanism. And the core will sometimes be placed in the center of the carousel somewhat underneath it. The switching mechanism is the main control for turning the system (the Grandfather clock so to speak.) The carousel may have umbrella programming immediately on top of it. (This could be Illuminati Delta alters, which can be one of the deepest things put in.) The carousel must be approached from the back side. At times an internal key, which often looks like an old key is needed to enter the Carousel. Many Illuminati systems are given a key or set of keys, and at times when they enter therapy the front alters give this to their therapist not knowing what the key is, but knowing it is important. The co-authors believe that these keys are carousel keys. A false trinity will be assigned to guard this, which will consist of the False Prophet, The Beast or Dragon, and the Hoofed One. The false prophet and the Beast (dragon) come out of the book of Revelations. The Hoofed One is a rare occult term for Satan, not to be confused with the popular usage of the Horned One in the occult. The two terms are different.

If several carousel are built into a system, then they will have other guards than the false trinity.

In many Illuminati systems, there are 13 silent splits made from the core called silences, and at this time during the splitting process guards are made to the Carousel/core. The method of doing this is to place black covers over the eyes of the victim, and then probes are inserted into the base of the skull, as well as electric shocks being applied body-wide and in the subcortical part of the brain. The victim has their mouth restrained from screaming. The pain from this is about as excruciating as a human can stand.

First, the fear part of the brain is activated. Then the logic part is activated, and the victim is told repeatedly "Be good, obey." Next, the fear is stimulated, and then the pain. The head will have excruciating pain, and so will the body to the point of nausea and sickness. An alter will be created to carry the pain, and one to carry the fear, and one to carry the anger. These will be identified and used to guard the carousel. Six alters will guard the carousel. They will be identified and linked to the most important carousel, which guards the core. To attempt to think about the carousel, on the part of an alter, may bring up these guards, and the system will abreact in memories that are almost unbelievably painful. If a therapist accidently triggers this, get the little child guard to back up or go to sleep. Make sure the heart of the victim, and lungs continue to function. The alters within the victim's system may have "aged" slightly since their primal trauma, and may appear about 2 years of age. Most alters this young do not know how old they really are. Therapists will attempt to associate the memory and provide anchors from the early memory to the present. Association strategies are worked out by the therapist to deal with the particular trauma in relation to what alters are there to help and were involved in the trauma. The association may be done in steps. Older helping alters can help assess the age of the infant alter by answering questions about size, teeth, physical abilities, verbal abilities etc. Verbal abilities of illuminati infants may be advanced beyond norms.

C. Castle. A castle system will contain a moat, drawbridge, turrets, gargoyles, a torture dungeon filled with actual memories of torture, secret passages, lots of levels, & rooms including a library. Child alters are often hidden in the castle. Disobedient alters may be locked up in the castle. Lots of traps are placed around and in the castle. The castle will house some alters and also some deadly programs. When castle alters get stirred up, the victim may internally see the castle lights go on. The castle walls may have a grid on them. The castle may be guarded by monsters.

D. Cave and well. A gatekeeper will guard the cave. Disobedient alters may be put down the well. This system deals with a lot of darkness. Catacombs may be connected to the cave and well. Falling down the well is one way to get to the abyss (see the film Labyrinth). Usually there is only one entrance-exit to this cave.

E. Chess Board. This system utilizes the Alice In Wonderland story. It is put into male slaves. The pieces of the chess board move in various ways setting off different programs. The devil will equal the black king. A program might sound like this: "Black knight moves two spaces and one right. White knight moves two spaces and one left. White knight challenges black knight. Black Queen moves 5 spaces." The victim who receives this programming must be the type of thinker who would play chess reasonably well. The script can be shown via videos while the victim is under hypnotic drugs.

F. Double Helix. This is a very important system. The double helix pattern is used as an elevator shaft running up and down the worlds created for the alters. In general, each world lays at a trance level. The double-helix is put in at programming sites where they have full medical facilities, such as Letterman Hospital, Presideo, CA. The codes up and down the elevator are alpha-numeric with lots of numbers. Because the way the double helix shape twists, one can ride the elevator and get off a level 1, 3, 5, 7, 9 but you have to ride it the other way to get off at 2, 4, 6, 8, 10, 12. Because the double helix is the centerpiece of how the different physiological states of the mind are being layered, taking the victim down to these different physiological states and levels is very risky and by the time it is through it involves lots of blood transfusions for the victim. The Caduceus is a double helix with snakes at the top. The Caduceus is an occult symbol used in ancient Babylon, ancient Hindu India, and by Chinese occultists. Mercury in occult lore carries a staff called a caduceus. Mercury's staff is a cabalistic symbol. William Heller's book on the Kaballah on page 78 states, "Mercury's staff, called Caduceus, and made of intertwined black-and-white twin serpents, heralds more forthcoming splits into duality. Once again, it reflects the ambivalent mind, its conscious, and subconscious states, its waking thoughts and imaginative dreams." So according to cabalistic doctrine, the caduceus represents the various states of the mind.

G. Flower system. This system is attached to other systems, and utilizes the power of peer pressure and generational ties. The flowers will often be bright. The bud of the flower will represent one person, the stem and the flower represent others. This system might be connected to the Umbrella, the Trees, the Triangle and the Star. A flower can regenerate an internal tree because of its generational roots. Flowers are also used as elevator shafts, such as a sunflower. One has to jump into the center of the flower and go down the stem to reach a lower level. Flower fields such as the poppy field are used as a hypnotic trigger to put an alter into deep trance.

H. Helix. This is a simplified version of the double helix.

I. Hour glass. Three hour glassed will be placed around the x-y-z axis in a quadrant. A quadrant consists of a section of alters in a world and their mirror images. The hour glass programming also includes a suicide program. 12 disciple alters will be placed within the hourglass. Each disciple has to memorize a disciple lesson. If something triggers them, they will begin to fall through the hour glass. If each of these 12 disciples falls through the hour glass like sand, then a sleeping giant like in Jack in the Beanstalk will wake up, . When the Giant awakes, he will kill the body. And of course, a mirror image of the Giant alter will be made also to help insure that at least one of the giants get the job done.

J. Mensa. This is a program put into slaves who have photographic memories. It involves lots of numbers and math. It's overall structure looks like a triangular-shaped fish net, with all the nodes or knots of the net containing a triangle. The core is place at the center of the triangle and is surrounded by more triangles. There are circles of alters within circles of alters. Circles within circles. The a circle can rotate and seems never to end. The programming is meant to be non-ending. There are also triangles within triangles. The effect of using a structure like this to house the alters is that they feel trapped in endless circles and mazes of triangles within triangles. The codes in a Mensa system will be equations (sometimes called union force codes), bar codes, and number sequences.

K. Pentagram system. One pentagram system has pentagrams within pentagrams. The geometric lines grow from pentagram to pentagram by lines running in opposite directions. This has the same effect as circles within circles.

L. Pool of Death - One or more of these can be placed into an alter system. They often are found inside the main castle. Dead alters and body parts and torture fragments, are all dumped into these system garbage dumps. The Spirits of Death and Destruction control these pools of Death. Variations of this may be called Lakes of Death, and Waters of Death. In some systems, this is overseen by Taskmaster alters.

M. Potter's Wheel. This is the equivalent to a computer utility program. The way it functions is that the Programmer pulls the alters he wants to work on up on the potter's wheel in order to work on them. When they are pulled up on the potter's wheel, they can be asked to stand in order and rank. Then the alters will come to the front of the mind on top of each other in their prearranged sequence. The Charismatic movement programmer's like to use this, because the Programmer can become god, and the slave becomes the clay. Can the pot talk back to the potter? The Bible verse in ISA 45:9 is used, "WOE unto him that striveth with his Maker! Let the potsherd strive with the potsherds of the earth. Shall the clay say to him that fashioneth it, What maketh thou? or thy work, He hath no hands?" The next verse again repeats its woes upon those who question parents who fashion a child. As is typical of a number of Illuminati programs, at first glance they look like they are merely perversions of the Bible, but a closer look reveals that they are actually ancient occult rituals. For instance, the Illuminati believe "As above, so below." This is druidic philosophy, even though it sounds somewhat like something from the Bible. In the book *Invocation of the Gods Ancient Egyptian Magic for Today*, pg. 203, the book gives a magical invocation that supposedly has been found in ancient Egyptian magical papyri. At any rate this invocation's wording is powerful in English for a Monarch slave. The Invocation is called The Potter's Wheel.

"Hear the sound of the potter's wheel
As it spins! Khnum!
See the clay on the potter's wheel
As it spins! Khnum!
Feel the hand of the Mighty Lord
Form the seed to contain a soul
As it spins.
See the soul, on the Wheel of Life
As it spins! Khnum!
Birth to death on the Wheel of Life
See the soul, on the Wheel of Life
As it spins!
And with death we are born anew
While the vessel that's tossed aside
Will return to the potter's wheel
As it spins!"

This is just one more example of where programming and magic intersect.

N. Puppet System. In this system the body feels totally disjointed and controlled by strings. Mengele enjoyed this program. He would say, "Dance Marionette dance." In other words, to paraphrase, "dance slave for me the controller". Demons are laid in to pull the strings of the puppet. The internal controller may be a demon or a demonized alter. It can be attached to other systems such as the Pentegram system. In a previous part of the book, it was discussed how the victim's body is paralyzed by drugs and then electroshocked in a way that the person seems to be the Programmers puppet. This is put in when the child is very young. This puppet programming is very convincing to a small child, and is a very nasty program for the slave to experience.

O. Solemetric system. This is used for government/business/research slaves who must perform complex tasks and they want their minds to be less fragmented or not fragmented. The mind can be programmed and divided from itself without creating alter personalities. Because the divisions in the mind due to dissociation and programming lies are not as deeply structured, victims who get solemetric systems have strong demonic forces and lot's ritual to hold their systems in place.

P. Spider Web system or Black Widow Spider System. This system is set up just for blackmail and destruction via entrapment of unsuspecting people who are perceived as threats to the Illuminati. This system is found in lots of women coming into churches with decent by naive ministers. The system has a web with connectors and silk strands. A target person will be symbolically placed into the web and then the black widow alter(s) will entrap the victim. This is programming to take down pastors of churches with sexual entrapment. The spirit Viper found in ISA 59:5 is placed into this system to protect it. There will be egg alters which will devour the victim, and Gatekeepers are assigned to guard the system.

Q. Spiritual structuring. The spiritual structuring is not a single structure. A few people have worked with the deeper elements of the programming to help victims and also know what the Illuminati programmers have done and what their agenda is, have come to realize that the spiritual structuring is the most important part of an Illuminati system.

What you will now read is known only to an exclusive few. Spiritual castles (Grandfather, Father, Mother, and Grandmother castles) and spiritual temples (to Moloch and Baal etc.) are constructed internally. Entire spiritual worlds are constructed internally. The most primal parts of the mind, and the key early alters and the core essence are usually taken to spiritual constructs within the Illuminati slave. The gems are empowered by the light of Lucifer (an alter-demon combination). But even more deeper than that are the generational ties. The programmers, who themselves are generational satanists, are part of a plan where the generational legal rights of Satan are accumulated upon an individual. In the Scriptures it says that the sins of the fathers are visited upon the third and fourth generation. This gives Satan a legal right to the generational victim. Each bloodline has its Prince demons attached to it--just like in the Bible the Prince of Persia was both a man & and a demon. Hidden within spiritual constructs such as black diamonds, and diamonds, are further demonic constructs. The thrones of the generational Prince Demons are attached to the primal human part of the victim. This is entirely spiritual--beyond that there are no words to describe it. It is very real to the survivor when therapists get to that point (which is very rare!).

The power of the Illuminati is that it is generational. They build upon that, when they build a system. Some of these genealogies have not been free for many generations. If you want to spoil a structure, one need to bind the strongman. The strongman in an Illuminati system is the generational ties. All ties to the bloodlines need to be renounced. The Programmers will take little Illuminati children to crypts of their ancestors in order to better attach the generational spirits. The womb holding the premature child is used as a temple in the Moon Child ceremonies. After the child is born the womb structure will spiritually serve as a temple for the primal human parts of an Illuminati slave.

Whether the therapist can realize these things or not, in the very least, they are aware of the saying "Father like son", and are aware how traits may skip a generation but how a grandson may mirror a grandfather. The generational aspects to Illuminati slaves are a major role in the Illuminati

R. Stairwell. The stairwell is just as it sounds, it is a stairwell that is placed into a system. The stairwell can be used as a trap for alters who are unwise enough to be lured by programming to go into it. The stairwell system connects various levels. There are booby traps and demonic entities attached to the system. Stairwells may be sealed up with Gatekeepers assigned to protect them. If an alter proceeds down a stairwell to get to other levels they need to realize that they initially will hit "tornado (also called whirlwind) programming" and flooding of memories. The tornados will spin the victim inward and disorient them. The alter holding the body will feel as if it is out of control and going to die.

S. Telescoping. Any telescoping object (such as a telescoping army drinking cup, or a telescoping rod) can be used to give the visual picture for the child to follow when it is being programmed. A telescoping system often has a time level, a function level and an age level. The game of Chutes and Ladders along with Jacob's Ladder have been used to place the story line into children.

T. Tornado System. This is a free floating system that moves around areas that the programmers want protected. When it hits an alter(s) it causes confusion, spinning, and switching, as well as a feeling of losing control. It's part of the elemental back up programs discussed within a few pages.

U. Umbrella. This is associated with military programming. An umbrella protects something, such as the Delta assassination alters. An umbrella must be taken down from the inside and so must this protective shield of the Umbrella program. One Umbrella system had 7 gates to it.

DEFENSES IN DEPTH

What would happen if a slave physically got away from its master or handler? This has happened countless times and the mind-control is so solid that the handlers don't have too much to worry about. Mind-controlled slaves have gone to therapists for years and never gotten free of the mind-control. The therapeutic process that the establishment has schooled them in and then requires them to adhere to, prevents the therapist from doing things that might really set the victim free. Therapists are often loath to give any help in any thing that smacks of spirituality. The spiritual issues in many of these slaves are the most crucial issues facing them. If they don't resolve these spiritual issues, the deeper alters will continue to adhere to their blood oaths of allegiance to their Satanic abusers and their oaths to serve Satan loyally.

Each cult which programs, makes sure that they place in lots of loyal alters, which therapists call persecutor alters because they torment the alters who want freedom. If therapists try to eliminate these persecutor alters, they will fight back with the full tenacity and strength that the survival instinct gives to anyone. Their persecutor role needs to be validated, and then redirected toward productive ends. Many persecutor alters see life simply as following their instructions and that they are protecting the system from greater harm by stopping therapy. During programming that was the case, but if their System has reached a good therapist and has good support team of other people, their fears no longer apply. The cult will attempt to show them that their fears do still apply. Hopefully, the support team for the system of alters will work as hard at protecting as the abusers do to reinforce the fear.

Many of the programmers have been associated with the military. One of the tricks that the military learned is a defense in depth. The Russians employed defenses in depth with great success in 1943 in the big battle of Kursk during W.W. II.

The first defense is that the slave has

no awareness of the MPD (DID) or that they are being used as a slave. Some of the alters will realize that something is wrong, but the mind control is too strong for them to see clearly. Essentially the System is in trance all the time, even the front alters, they do not perceive reality like people who are not in trance all the time.

The next line of defense is that the fronts of an alter System don't have a clue about the abuse or what their system has been designed for. The front alters will have alters which are loyal to the master, and alters who are full of craziness and disinformation. If the victim keeps probing (which many don't) they will discover an occult involvement. Even if they discover that the System is related to the occult world, the programming is still intact.

If the person finds out he is MPD, and finds out that the System was part of the occult world, then he still is captured by all the programming which is intact. Walls, fire walls, mazes, suicide programming, internal armies, programmed craziness and many other tactics sap the strength of the front alters if they try to deviate from the straight and narrow programmed way of behaving. WHEN THE FINAL CALL BACK IS GIVEN--many Monarch slaves are programmed to kill their therapists because the Illuminati will be able to hide/protect them once they leave their place in society and return for the final callback.

Reporting alters hidden well in the System, observe and secretly report back to the Network everything a therapist does. The alters have fix me codes to call for help such as "FIX ME", "QUEEN OF HEART", "THREE LITTLE KITTENS WHO LOST THEIR MITTENS", "THE COWS IN THE CORN, LITTLE JACKIE HORNER WON'T YOU PLEASE BLOW YOUR HORN." The jokers and **internal** programmers will work night and day to stop or reverse any work done toward freedom.

There are so many levels, suicide programs and so many other defenses a person's body is not strong enough to attack the programming head on. There are for instance Bells of Destruction programming, The War in the Heavens suicide programming, the Gethsemane Suicide Programming, the Octopus suicide programming, the Injection of Bleach, the overdose of drugs, the go insane program, just to mention a few. The slave will be given a whole batch of these types of programs which may all go off at once if the slave doesn't comply with keeping the mind control secret.

One internal protective programming line is The Man without a Country story. Another is a water program but in with Scripture from Jer. about Ahab stomping the grapes. Another is for the slave to think they have been turned into a fragile paper doll. The paper doll programming is put in by making the skin very sensitive to any touch, and then attaching that memory to the hypnotic suggestion of being a paper doll. An octopus suicide program chokes the slave if they are disobedient. A mush the brain is triggered by a fanning movement.

If the slave touches the programming, Armageddon programming is activated in those who have Bible programming. The four horsemen on their different horses ride out and bring their different mental tortures to the slave's mind.

Winged monkeys (possibly alter fragments) from the Wizard of Oz story programming are called "watchers". They watch alters.

The slave is conditioned that if any programming or demonology is taken out, it will come back seven times seven stronger. The Bible (MT 12:43-44) is used to put in this programming. Actually, this is more than programming, there is a principle in operation here. Therapists need to be cautious about pulling things out, if they do not understand what the ramifications will be. We want the victim to have hope, not to make the task look harder.

One of the primary protective programs

is the JUDAS PROGRAMMING. Anyone who betrays the abusers is labelled "Judas" and is programmed to go out and act like Judas by hanging themselves. If that mind-control program doesn't happen, the Illuminati warn their people "Remember Tom Collins", who was the son of an Illuminati Grand Mother, who became a Christian, started exposing the Illuminati in churches, and was gunned down in a grocery parking lot. Finally, the members are warned that they will be sacrificed on a cross like Christ in what is termed "a traitor's death."

Usually, mind-controlled slaves will police their own actions and thoughts. The therapist may hear their Monarch client talk about the Dove, fire, Moriah, and water as protectors. They may talk about a little bird dove who is part of protection which flies into the ebony trees.

The basic defensive programming placed into the early Illuminati models was based upon the 4 BASIC ELEMENTS--fire, wind, water, and air. When the programming is touched by anyone, the elements of the earth come alive. For instance, if the programming is touched the following programs based on the four elements come alive:

WATER--victim will freeze like ice, will suffocate like inhaling water, will boil like being placed in boiling water, will feel a drip drip drip on the head, and will flood with memories. This is why some Monarch slaves do not like to swim.

FIRE--Victim will burn inside and outside. The victim will remember fire torture, and perhaps their face melting. This is why some Monarch slaves don't like to light a match or a fire. Slaves will have their programming reinforced with the warning, "If you disobey us, Satan will take your ability to resist burning away, and you will burn in hell." The alters have no way to conceive that God could love them, so they feel if they are to have any chance not to burn in the afterlife of hell they must obey. The fire programs which activate when they disobey reinforce this warning. Often victims report a "Ring of Fire" burning within.

EARTH--the victim will remember being dropped down a well, being buried alive in either hot sand, or a casket. Earth means "life or death". The earth "swallows people up." The victim may feel dehydrated from memories of being buried in hot sand (hot earth). This is why some victims have a fear of being buried alive. In fact, this can be done internally where alters are internally placed in caskets and buried. Alters are also internally thrown into internal wells. The Illuminati programmers say, "ASHES TO ASHES, DUST TO DUST" to mean that the earth will bring death. Sometimes even volcanos erupt (earth and fire) out of the ocean (water) and destroy parts of a system. Internal earthquakes also happen quickly and then the entire system will be shifted and shuffled.

AIR or WIND--Vortexes suck the person down and away, a strong wind takes the alter(s) into the Rubicon of Outer Space and the body dismembers itself as it goes away. The mind doesn't understand why it is being torn apart, only that it is being torn like a tornado. The alter may also go into a bubble and float away.(This effect is put in w/ drugs and hypnosis.) They will dissociate and nothing is real.

How does one place into a child these types of programs? Let's say the programmers want to put in the Tumbleweed Program where the child feels like it has become a tumbleweed & can't ground and get its bearings on anything. Let's say the programmer also wants the child to lose his arms & legs while being blown away. The child is dehydrated so the mind is overheated and hallucinating. Special drugs are also given to the child to make it more delirious, make it more suggestible, etc. The little child by this point has no mind of its own. Heavy fans with hot air are placed upon the child. It is hypnotically told that it has no arms and no legs. The child is too weak to think for itself. It is almost comatose. The child will be left for perhaps 8 hours as a script which keeps repeating itself is played on a voice box. The child will hallucinate the script or the video it is being shown. When the child can give the script back to the programmer exactly like it is meant to be, then the programmers know they can stop. The child alter is to take on the identity of the tumbleweed. If it responds like many Main alters--it will pass this ability on to splits that it creates for this purpose. These splits created for the tumbleweed script will be clean slates for the programmers to manipulate. By the way, smelling salts are used to wake up child victims who are too comatose.

OVERVIEW ON THE PRINCESS PROGRAMMING.

The Omega programs prevent integrating the Multiple personalities, and they hold the body programs, and run the computers. If major tampering is done with the System, which threatens to totally wipe out the Omega programs, then one of the backup programs is the Princess programming.

The princess programming is a back up program. It can be triggered several ways. One method is by astral communication between loyal alters and their Illuminati programmer. However, the main triggering factor is that the System has recognized that serious tampering has been done to the System. If serious deprogramming occurs, the Princess program with "Sleeping Beauty" kicks in. The programming is contained within a box, which is opened up upon the appropriate cues.

The way it operates is that it kicks in when the handler loses control over a system. The princess who is kept sleeping by spiders which bite her in a coffin, wakes up and looks for the prince to come. Daddy demon and the dark princess are now ruling from the castle dungeon.

A System's dwarfs and Thor continue to guard as well as the big guard cats like Bast.

Darkness sets in on all the top sections of alters, and thick walls and pain come, then a webbing much like a body-suit-cocoon will envelope all but alters loyal to the master. It becomes hard to breathe and the alters who had sought freedom from the programming, now find themselves being tranced out. Alters who are cold and in lots of pain are called up by code to torment the body.

The Outer Darkness of a System (sometimes called the Rubicon) gets thicker. If Gatekeeper and Kitten alters have porcelain face programming, then they will get their porcelain masks back as the Omega programming kicks back in. The porcelain masks have cords back to the black princess. The black princess's coffin has cords to Papa. The core will give her energy to the dark side, and alters who want freedom will receive very little energy. They will be very tired.

Those alters who liked the light side and freedom are now under attack. They will be isolated by walls and then incapacitated by a cocoon which leads to death. The alters who do not want to be part of Satanism will be worked over, and they will continue to be worked over until they shatter. If need be, they can be taken to the castle dungeon and played movies of torture which have been coded and entered into the mind via codes. Internal voodoo will be carried out to scare alters into complying. The worlds will reestablish their compasses. The internal BEAST computer along with the dark princess run the show. The box which opens up, sets off the suicide programming.

The primary tool in fighting the suicide programming is the will to fight. If the will to fight is strong, a way to fight through the walls can be found. If the walls are broken down, then a strategy of isolating the castle's programming can be carried out, and eventually the black princess can even be retrieved. Since the princess and daddy demon are running things via spiritual and demon processes, the battle at this point involves spiritual warfare, although there are probably other methods to solve the situation. The castle programming will be isolated by closing the portals, and other safeguards.

The Black Princesses can be turned from their course. The Black Princess can be retrieved. The castle's power can be shut down. The Princess programming can be beat, but it takes hard work. A system must make decisions to continue fighting the programming with all their creativity, strength and will power.

A rebirthing program will go off. This rebirthing program is controlled by a System of clocks. The clocks are the stabilizing heartbeat and are tied to the eternal life force. There are also clocks which control the steps to the Princess Programming. These clocks bring about steps which will take the System down the road to no-return. These clocks can be frozen and by freezing them, one can stop the next step from taking place. In the rebirthing program, umbilical cords and strings run from alters back to the black princess. The black princess is in the torture chamber of the dungeon and the strings carry the torture memories to alters in sections wanting freedom, especially those holding the body. If those alters want to stop the intense pain to the body they need to freeze those strings and stop the torture memories from coming up from the torture chamber. The umbilical cords are "feeding" the alters from the black princess. The Kittens alters, most likely due to programming, will want to protect the core so they do not want to stop the process of control that the black princess is exerting over them. In other words, they will find it hard to save themselves.

Internal Voodoo will come from a dollhouse, and only by dealing with inside the doll house can it be stopped. One option is to create shields to protect alters from the voodoo. Christians have the shield of faith which really can function in real life, and an internal shield of faith has protected and shielded Christians from Voodoo.

The darkness and what people (alters) call "walls" can be flooded with the blood of Jesus, which often drives back the darkness and can give freedom to work. The soul ties that are involved with the princess programming and the masks need to be broken and bound. The System may be able to find someone or some place to get wisdom or understanding about their System. The System also needs to cut their soul ties to their Illuminati programmers.

The rebirthing program is also giving directions to the dark princess. There is an umbilical cord which ties the dark princess to the rebirthing program. The blood of Jesus can stop this tie.

BACKUP PROGRAMMING

One of the backup programs is designed to deal with someone who has a good understanding of a system, and tries to take a system out via spiritual warfare. A camera is designed to reflect an image onto a mirror and the deprogrammer works with the mirror images. The deprogrammer has great success with the mirror images, because the camera can merely shift its view, and the things the deprogrammer is trying to get rid of disappear. However, since the alters that are collaborating with the deprogrammer see all the correct things happen, they sincerely think they are being deprogrammed. When the deprogrammer finishes the alters feel better, see their worlds come together, but the work has only been a sham.

Other backup programs provide the deprogrammer with mirror images and sham alters to talk with. The deprogrammer never talks to the real human elements.

If we try to give a summary of the different backup programs we could include

a. each grid has programs attached to its grid no. and each section has a computer, as well as connecting computers between sections---both the programming and the computers have the power to reprogram themselves.

b. the 4 elements of nature coming alive programs
c. the princess program (based on Sleeping Beauty)
d. a plutonium or atom bomb set up activated by lasers to protect the internal hierarchy.

The Monarch programming creates very complex systems that are as sophisticated as an Apollo spacecraft. There is no way all the possible in and outs can be covered. However, the reader can watch a movie "Labyrinth" to get a good idea of what the end product is like for the mind of the victim. The movie represents what the internal world is like for an alter who is trying to understand its mind. It would be worthwhile to finish this chapter on structuring by covering this movie which illustrates the end product.

The bizarre movie Labyrinth may be shown again on HBO and is available from some video stores. In fact, the video stores have a hard time meeting customer demands for this popular video. One of the co-authors knows a girl who has watched "Labyrinth" twenty times.

"LABYRINTH", A VIEW OF A MONARCH'S INTERNAL WORLD

In 1986, a movie called "Labyrinth" was produced by Cherry McFadden. The movie was Monty Python's "Terry Jones" scripted. The movie is a portrayal of what the internal world inside a Monarch mind-controlled slave looks like. The Monarch slave has an internal world built inside their mind in which the hundreds and thousands of alters must live in. The alters are given a psychotic world of fiction in which they must live in as reality. An alter of a Monarch slave will have two worlds, the external world of reality, and their own internal world which, because of the programming, will seem more real than the real world.

Hogel, a gnome, tells Sarah, "Things are not what they seem in this place." The internal worlds of the slave can be shifted and rearranged by the internal programmers. The internal programmers can change codes, eliminate alters, and carry out extensive deception to other parts of the System.

As in the Monarch programming, the movie's castle reminds one of Emerald City.

The movie Labyrinth seems weird and occultic. Gargoyle elves (similar to coven demons) dance magic and a sweet girl played by Jennifer Connelly moves from one weird scene to another, while an occasional shot gives us the hideous ruler of the Castle played by David Bowie. These demons also guard the baby that represents the innocent core. Monarch slaves very frequently have castles built into their internal world. Some slaves will have a whole series of castles, some are King's castles, some are Queen's castles, and some are castle's shaped liked pyramids with all-seeing eyes in them.

The story line of the movie Labyrinth is that the girl, Sarah, searches for her baby brother, Toby, who is captive in a castle in a dream world. Actually, this represents an alter searching for the innocent core from which it split off from. Often the core (the original innocent child personality which split off personalities in order to remain innocent is locked up in the castle by the programmer who serves as Master of the castle. Often in deprogramming, the core is taken to a castle dungeon in a terrible backup program called the princess program which was just described on a previous page. The princess programming (which is a back up program) functions, when the regular programming goes down (which is rare). When the Princess back-up program kicks in the toad is kissed, the princess core is woke up, etc. etc. Parts of the Princess program seem portrayed towards the end of the movie.

In the movie, David Bowie, who in real life was a satanist & a rock star who committed suicide, plays the part of the Master of the Castle.

The girl soon goes into the dream world (internal world of her mind). She must go through a labyrinth if she wants to get to the castle. Although the movie is fiction, it is close enough to how a Monarch's mind thinks, that an adult Monarch slave might well have his or her programming reinforced if they saw this film. It also would trigger many Monarch slaves and create fear in them.

Monarch slaves have many clocks built into their systems. They have internal clock makers and internal clock keepers. In the movie, clocks pop up everywhere just like in a Monarch's mind. Some Monarch slaves are programmed to see their internal world, and others are programmed not to be able to see their internal world. In other words, many Monarchs may not have the ability to see a great deal at first of this programming due to further programming, and yet these images work in the deep recesses of their minds to keep their minds within the confines of the programming. David Bowie has the magical ability to rearrange time on the clocks. The handlers often mess with the internal and external clocks of a slave, so that the slave is disoriented about what time it is.

Alters within a Monarch system are not allowed to stray from the path assigned to them. If they try to move out of their assigned spot in the mind, then they encounter traps, mazes, tunnels and demons just like in the movie Labyrinth. An internal world of a Monarch's mind will have brick walls, doors and vortex tunnels just like in the movie. When the girl falls into a vortex, she has magician hands all over her. Monarch victims speak of what vortexes are like and they often describe hands coming out of no where.

The movie begins with an oak tree. The oak tree is an important part of the Illuminati programming.

The Master programmer in the castle, wearing a triangle medallion around his neck and looking veracious (David Bowie) sings, "Voodoo...Babes with the power...magic spells...dance magic...slap that baby and make him pay....dance magic, dance magic."

Cobwebs are built into the Monarch minds, and when an alter goes where it shouldn't they often get cobwebbing over them. The tunnels in the movie are full of cobwebs.

As the girl moves forward toward the magic demon-invested Castle she comes across many things--all of which relate to internal items built into a Monarch slave's mind. Some of the things are slightly different in the movie than in a slave's mind--but the concepts are the same. For instance, the actual Thor figure looks like the Iron Man of the Wizard of Oz series rather than the iron robot that they portray. But the match is close enough for the imagery to portray what it is meant to represent.

During programming, bracelets with pieces will be given to the child to teach them how the alters are to revolve. A bracelet like this is owned by the girl.

The girl encounters a dwarf. The dwarfs in the internal world "mine the jewels" (that is the programming). The Jewels are the particular programs that run a Monarch system of alters of an MPD (DID) mind. The dwarf in the movie is told by David Bowie (the Programmer) that he has "lost his Jewels"--that is that he has lost his programming! The dwarf in the movie decides to help the girl. In Monarch programming the dwarf helps an alter by bringing it programming! Some help! The goblin (demon) is asked by the girl to find a portal. The goblin opens a door and it appears to be a broom closet. He opens it again and it appears as a door. This is the exact way the programming is. Portals and doors in the internal world have cover stories. At first they look like one thing--but if the mind can get by the first look--they will turn out in reality to be something else. There is cover programming over everything--so that the slave doesn't trust his own mind. For instance, besides lots of clocks undisguised, clocks are disguised in a System as any object, but they can be recognized by the trained observer because they are gold colored. In the movie, objects are constantly changing.

Many monarch's fear the rocks coming alive--just as they do in the movie labyrinth. In the bottom of the slave's mind--put in at the deepest hypnotic levels possible are the hell pits. The movie shows the hell pit and even calls it the "hell pit." Notice that as she goes into this strange world that the clocks can be turned around. This is true in the programming. The clocks can be turned by the programmer so that the slave can be told it is January when it is December. A cover program can be entered so that the slave has memory of what he was supposed to have done in December. These false memories are laid in with real torture memories and tied to emotions. The false memories lack certain characteristics of real memories--and yet still they can at times be difficult to separate from the true memories, especially if the mind-controlled slave is in programming.

The following is the story line of the movie as it happens in this bizarre movie.

Early in the movie we see a witch with an hour glass. When the girl gets to the castle it is guarded by a mechanical monster that resembles in some ways Thor of the programming.

Notice that portals and holes open up. When they open up another level, protectors attack them and they must run back down their tunnel to save themselves. The Monarch slave will get feelings of being crushed if an alter ventures where it shouldn't in the mind. When the girl asks the dwarf "How can I believe anything you say?" She is told, "What choice do you have?"

Fire demons come out dancing. They take out their eyeballs and eat them. They say "Bad luck down the path." What the fire demons represent are the Gamma programming and the threats that the Gamma programming has upon the victim. The programming tells an alter that it will lose its head or other horrible threat if it doesn't comply with the programming. "Let's take off her head" the fire demons say, as they act out the various programs--decapitation, delimbing, etc. They also want to throw her into the pit of eternal flames.

They go down a chute into the eternal hell pit. It is even called the eternal pit in the movie! The hell pits of a slave will generally smell like sulfur--which is exactly what the movie's hell pit does. A guardian of the pit (looking like a dog) comes out. Guardians within the Monarch's mind are generally far more horrifying than this dog. The guardian must give permission for passage.

Another trap appears--as the slave's internal world is filled with booby traps.

The name of the dog the guardian rides on is Ambrosius, similar to Ambrosia.

A peach with poison is given to the dwarf. The slave is programmed to fear poisoned fruit. (This is another fairy tale turned into programming.) David Bowie is called an "adept" who creates dream bubbles. The slave's mind will have adepts who are the programmers. The movie's adept puts a princess in a bubble. Then she goes by memory back to when she was at a Satanic ball where people wear masks of birds, goats, and pigs. Illuminati ceremonies include balls like this with masks. This Love story is reliving programming of the girl that she is a Queen, that she is married to Satan, and that this is a bonding ceremony. Everyone is grabbing her. People who have been to this Illuminati ceremony will recognize it.

Next, she sees mirrors. When she shatters the mirrors (a no-no in the programming) she begins falling. Generally, if a slave shatters the mirrors in their mind--they fall into suicide programming. She falls into a junkyard. Then a satanic seed comes alive from her fruit. It is a worm.

An old hag gives her a teddy bear. The programmers and parents of slaves frequently give stuffed animals. The teddy bear without hands represents to the victim their helplessness.

The old hag says "like a little bunny rabbit...Don't you...Bitsy Boob" All this is Monarch programming stuff.

Then she sees a book about the labyrinth. The Monarch's mind has libraries and diagrams of their own system but these are kept guarded by the mirrors, the demons, and programming. The girl Sarah finds a book (the files) of how the labyrinth is built. Actually, you can too. If the original programming was Wizard of Oz programming--then when you looked at the front of the Wizard of Oz series books you would find a map that helped build the internal world. Some of the items on that map will likely be found in your Monarch system (but not all). If your Monarch system has Star Trek programming it is possible they will have an internal world similar to the diagrams shown in this book where Star Trek programming is covered. In other words, there are books which do show the labyrinth, just as the movie Labyrinth has Sarah find a book showing the internal world.

But if an alter finds a map, this does not mean the alter can travel freely in its system's mind! In working with a mind-controlled slave, we discovered one methods to get over the Wizard of Oz mazes was to fly with the Orks. However, an alter caught in the mazes was frightened to stay put by the demons that surrounded it. (This is so well portrayed in Labyrinth.) This happens in real life to Monarch alters which stray into the mazes. They are lost and then they can't come out and take the body. They are simply lost in the mind.

The old hag gives her slippers! Slippers are important triggers or cues to go places internally. She is given a horsey and told she loves it. "Take back the child you have stolen."

A ferris wheel is shown. (Carrousels were used greatly in programming.) Then she breaks an hour glass. Hour glasses are internal clocks. Then she encounters levels, doors and tunnels. An Iron robot representing Thor comes out and bangs bangs bangs. The banging is the split brain headaches that the internal Thor causes the victim's mind to experience. A child is placed into the robot. Often during the programming, child alters are programmed to put on a robot like suit and serve with other children as clone solders in a clone army. (The sea divers of the Walt Disney movie "20,000 Leagues Under the Sea" were used to program child alters into how they were to get into robot suits.) These child alters form armies that attack if an alter tries to fight the programming. These children alters are like children screaming--it is impossible to reason or talk to them. Armies of these alters are difficult to stop in the mind.

In the programming, the brave are told they are brave and vice-versa. The character says "I have no courage." But is told "You are a man of courage."

More clocks and a bell appears. A red and blue guardian appear. Perhaps these colors represent the color programming. Rocks and cannons represent the protectors and the earthquakes they cause internally in a Monarch's mind.

When she enters the castle it is a carbon copy of Esher's drawing entitled "Relativity." (See *The Graphic Work of M.C. Esher*, figure 67.) She runs up stairs and gets nowhere. Escher's drawing, according to ex-programmers, are used for programming.

The Master sings, "Everything I've done, I've done for you." David appears everywhere from every angle. This is how the internal programmers, which are clones of the real programmers appear everywhere in the mind of the slave. He sings, "Just as I can be so cruel...look without your heart beat...I must live within you."

She says, "Give me the child [the core]" and the programmer says, "I have been generous...but I can be so cruel...I have reordered time...turned the world upside down...all for you." The internal and external programmers can be cruel. The victim is trauma bonded to them. They are cruel and kind to the victim, just like Mengele was to his thousands of victims. The internal worlds can be turned in a Monarch system, by turning the hour glasses which are on X,Y and Z axes.

The hour glasses are turned with hand signals and codes that are similar to what pilots use to tell their degree positions in the sky.

The programmer sings, "I ask for so little, just let me rule you, and you can have everything you want...just love me, fear me, and do as I say." He tells her that her kingdom is great. Internally alters are given great titles, and are made queens, etc. Their internal worlds give them all they need, and that the real external world will never understand them. She is told repeatedly "Your kingdom is great." "Bow down and worship me, and you get everything." At this point she realizes she has dominion over the demons. When one listens to the programming, it seems that it is powerful and in control.

The movie does a good job of showing how a slave's mind has both an internal and an external world.

A hall appears with daisies. Daisies were used in programming. When she leaves the internal world, she finds that the internal world is right there with her in her external world. She is surrounded by internal cues. Then she embraces and accepts her internal world toward the ending of the movie.

Many systems have an owl in their system which represents the master. In the movie, an owl representing the master appears at various times & then flies away at the end.

Toward the end the Master sings, "Power of Voodoo..."

The internal world is full of goblins, dwarfs, worms, a hat, door knockers, Fury 1,2,3,4,5 and many other things. Ravens are in the movie. In real life, the programmers take alter fragments, which are splits which are not developed into full blown personalities and they program them to have a single task, for instance to think they are a raven and to bite the body when ever they take the body. Whole flocks of demons which take the form of ravens may wait inside the mind waiting for their release to bite the body. When triggered by the internal programmers when an alter crosses the boundaries set down by the programming, a flock of ravens may come forward and "take the body" (as they say in MPD) of the slave and the Monarch slave will bite his or her flesh and viciously tear it with its teeth.

By watching the movie Labyrinth, and using this as a guide, the viewer will begin to understand the horror and control that the internal world holds over the alters of a Monarch slave. Few Monarch slaves ever tell other people what is going on in their minds, now you have been privileged to find out. To learn this much for a Monarch slave comes with a high price. The price is paid by reliving for a second time what has been done to them, fighting off the suicide programs that click on when the slave's mind disobeys. The slave must also fight off torture memories that recycle. These torture memories are activated by the programming when an alter disobeys its programming. As one Monarch survivor described it to me, "This all can be wrapped up by defining it as the raping of the body, soul and spirit."

THE STRUCTURING DONE IN MONARCH STAR TREK & STAR WARS PROGRAMMING

The original Monarch programming often used the Wizard of Oz books and film as the basic programming. The Alice and Wonderland story then was overlaid, along with many other fictional fairy tales to complete the Mind Control of a Monarch Mind-controlled slave. However, in recent years a superior story line has appeared. It has more flexibility and more secrecy. This is the Star Trek series.

In recent years, Star Trek is being used as a basis of programming. Those who are programmed with Star Trek programming can attend annual Star Trek Conventions which are held in New York City since 1972.

The child's mind is tortured until the point they will accept anything. They are told to build certain structures in their mind. These structures may be castles, or rivers or submarines or airfields, etc. In the case of Star Trek programming they have detailed maps and diagrams that have been created to go along with the Star Trek program. (The real reason or the ulterior motive of these Star Trek maps was to create a blueprint for programming. Some pages of these are included for you to look at.) Then particular alters are placed within these structures, and they are hypnotically given cues that will pull them to the front of the mind when the alpha-numeric cue is said. Many of the more secret alters can only be accessed by a combination of several different cues which go to different senses--such as the person must be in a corner contacting 3 points, a certain ring must be turned & a certain code said for the alter to come forth.

The advantages of the Star Trek story line is that a. almost any type of scenario can be fit into the programming script because the Star Trek characters in the series, encounter about anything imaginable, b. have holograms, which can serve as substitutes for mirror images in the programming, c. alien programming can be introduced in order to promote the mock alien invasion being planned by the Illuminati, and d. the Star Trek series has its own language which can be used for trigger codes, which Monarch slaves can study, and learn. The use of this klingon language will make it very difficult for ordinary people to break into the slave's programming.

Michael Aquino, Satanist and Colonel in the U.S. army, has enjoyed using Star Wars for programming. Aquino wrote his own version of the Star Wars, which he uses for programming. The programmer becomes Darth Vader, which then is reproduced as an alter within the victim.

In the Star Trek series, Data was a dehumanized "person" who stored vast amounts of information. Monarch slaves are always created with libraries, and volumes of information. This information is stored in various ways and can be retrieved in a variety of ways. Data of Star Trek lends himself to become the model for an alter of a Monarch system to copy. In other words the child is shown Data, and is steered in the right direction to create an internal person named Data. Any child if it is drugged, tortured, threatened with death if they don't follow directions, with weakened and confused minds will get to the point where the child will create a Data alter in its mind, rather than die. Once in place, the Data alter will think of itself as the movie character. Every time the child sees Star Trek or pictures of Data, it will reinforce the programming.

The transformer room technique of beaming in Star Trek is what magicians have tried to do for centuries and which has been called "bi-location-physical projection" as well as other things. This is said in magic to be mental control over the molecules of the body via demonic power. Whether magicians have ever done this, who knows, some certainly claim the power.

The Illumi**nist** is a power structure placed into some Monarch slaves. It is constructed from parts of numerous demons, rather like a demonic Frankenstein, & is portrayed in Star Trek, the Next Gener. as the crystalline body.

A cartoon series was created for Star Trek. In this series, children watch such things as Kirk in a magical universe of Megas-tu which has a Guardian of Forever. Two other spin-out shows were Deep Space Nine and S.T. Voyager. In other words, a child could watch 5 different Star Trek series. If the child's parents had cable T.V. the child be virtually immersed into the various Star Trek shows. Unfortunately, some of the children who have been programmed with this are doing exactly that.Fritz has personally worked with someone who has Star Trek programming. They sit for hours and immerse themselves totally into all kinds of Star Trek details.

We have two Star Trek Technical Manuals. Fritz's father is an engineer and designed quite a few things. Fritz himself has worked as a manual/computer draftsperson for the Federal Highway Administration as well as for his father off and on over the years. Based on that experience, he realizes the enormous amount of work that went into these Technical Manuals for the Star Trek series is simply mindboggling. One manual is 183 pages and the other is in the neighborhood of 250 pages. The amount of engineering and computer drafting that went into these manuals is astonishing. Why did someone go to such extremes? These manuals are as good as if NASA were planning to build an Enterprise spaceship. The plans are done more professionally than engineering designs that we have seen groups like the United Nations drawing up. Why did all this engineering, design and drafting happen for a fictional T.V. show? To create a book to sell? The books could hardly be best sellers. One originally sold for $13 U.S. and the other for $6.95.

One reason so much work and money was put into these Technical Manuals is that they are used for programming helpless victims of the Monarch Mind-Control.

- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

THE FOLLOWING ARE THE DESCRIPTIONS OF WHY THE EXHIBITS ARE IMPORTANT TO THE PROGRAMMING. The Technical (or Training) Manual pages are coded.

Exhibit 1. Star Fleet Technical Order. (TM:379260-1) This page show codes on the far left that are similar to the type of codes used in Monarch access codes. Alters are trained to take the body upon the proper access code. Also certain activities or programs can be triggered by codes also.

Exhibit 2. Uniform Color Code. (TM:379260-0) In creating a System within the slave's mind, geometric shapes are used. Within these shapes a number of worlds or universes will be created. These worlds can be 3-D. That means when building them in the child's mind they can have height, depth, and width. One system which I have seen several times in slaves has been a 13 x 13 x 13 cube. In order to give another dimension and to give the programmers the ability to tie different things in different parts of the system together--the programmers use color coding. Each alter will receive a color code. I am familiar with the standard color coding program, and how it is put into the child's mind. Dr. Green (Mengele) used a box of colored scarfs and electroshock to program in the color coding into victim's mind. Besides alters, other things in the system may be color coded also. Let's say as Programmers we place hidden observers on each level, system or world. Then we can tie those isolated alters together by color coding them the same. During the programming, computers are built into the mind to operate the programming, and they send their signals according to color coding.

Exhibit 3. MILKY WAY GALAXY MAP. (TM379260-2) This is just one of a number of maps that go with the Star Trek programming. During the programming (which is sophisticated torture of all kinds backed up w/ drugs) the child's mind will be encouraged to psychotically build worlds in his or her mind. These worlds are built with vortexes, mine fields, and in the case of Star Trek programming Radiation zones. If an alter would attempt to wander from its assigned spot in the mind, it will run into Radiation zones, walls, and other barriers. These zones are built into the mind, to insure that the multiple personalities do not contact each other. Aliens and holograms protect certain areas and prevent personalities from freely moving around in the mind. These "aliens" are placed into the victim's mind by high level demonology--in other words they are not aliens--they are demons which have been brought in by high level rituals.

Exhibit 4. 4.1 COMPUTER SYSTEM (p.50) The first thing created are the multiple personalities. Then these personalities are placed into a structured system. To operate that structured system and to insure compliance the Monarch programmer will put in what is called Omega programming. Omega programming consists of computers, wiring, conduits and cords. The most important part are the computers. These computers contain the instructions, and they are controlled by internal programmers who may be alters or who may be high level demons. The aliens (demons) who are placed strategically in the mind to keep the Omega programming intact are put in by sophisticated high level demonology. The high level demonology part of the programming is the most secret and it is termed Gamma programming. This is a diagram which could be used to help build into the child's mind a computer. In the early programming, a little girl while being tortured would be shown a multi-roomed dollhouse. The rooms would each have a separate color. The rooms would be linked in the child's mind to computers. In other words--the dollhouse structure was the structure the computers used. In the Star Trek programming, the modern child simply is given a multi-roomed computer like the one drawn.

Exhibit 5. TM:379260-3 ENGINEERING MAIN BRIDGE SECTION. Various methods of communication and travel within a Monarch system's mind will be built in. Various alters are allowed contact with other alters. Portals and one-way mirrors or one-way windows are built in also. In order to teach an alter to come to the front of the mind, an airplane taking off on a runway might be used as a visual aid to teaching how to leave the alters cubicle in the mind and come forward to take the body. Various internal communication system's can be built into the System. The training manual is full of many possible communication and locomotion devices, and this is just one of a whole number of items that could be incorporated into a Monarch child's mind as it is programmed.

Exhibit 6. pg. 82. UTILITIES. The brain stems are scarred on babies and when the body rebuilds itself it overcompensates and the brain gets an incredible memory. Monarch slaves with scarred brain stems are running the computer systems for the New World Order. If the slave has a photographic memory as many of them do, then a specific chart like this utility chart could function as the blueprint for the mind when it creates its power packs. Power packs, and energy cells (sometimes put in like light bulbs) run the computers which are built into the slave's mind. This is part of what is called the Omega programming.

Exhibit 7. TM:379260-2 S.I.N.S. Base Datum. This is a coordinate system. In the early years the Monarch systems were built with 3 hour glasses each spinning on a x,y, or z axis. The hour glasses could be turned and in so doing the entire system of alters could be turned. Let's say that we have a slave and we have created great Christian front alters. Now, we decide that the time has come to use the dark Satanic alters full time. Since the dark alters are hidden at the bottom of the system, we need to rotate the System 180 degrees so that the Satanic alters are now on top. Now the Satanic alters will receive extra energy to be out holding the body full time. This SINS Base Datum is a way of making a coordinate system for a Monarch System. Certain codes would then be given the System to make a shift when the handler needs to turn a System.

Exhibit 8. Darth Vader cover of Warren Magazine, plus the next two pages. This final exhibit consists of not one but 3 pages which are the first 3 pages of a article written by Michael Aquino. This article is Michael Aquino's own version of Star Wars. It is this version that he wrote and then used to program Monarch Mind-Controlled slaves. Actually to give credit where credit is due, an army colonel (who has since moved to Santa Fe, NM) at the Army's War College worked with Michael Aquino at designing mind-control programming around the Star War's script.

TM:379260-1

STAR FLEET TECHNICAL ORDER

AUTHENTICATED STARDATE 7309.10

TO:01:00:04

SECTION INDEX

TO. NO:	SUBJECT	CURRENT	REPLACES
01:00:00	COMMAND SECTION FLYSHEET	7305.30	
» » :02	FOREWORD	*	
» » :04	SECTION INDEX	7309.10	
» :01:00	STAR FLEET ARMED FORCES - ORGANIZATION	7407.27	
» » :01	SFAF - ORG - MIL. STAFF COMM./STAR FLEET COMMAND	7407.29	
» » :02	» » -FLEET OPERATIONS	7407.31	
» » :03	» » -LOGISTICS/INSPECTOR GENERAL	7408.01	
» » :04	» » -PERSONNEL/JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL	*	
» » :05	» » -SURGEON GENERAL/SCIENCES	*	
» » :06	» » -ENGINEERING/COMPTROLLER GENERAL	*	
» » :07	» » -TECHNOLOGY/COMMUNICATIONS	*	
» » :08	» » -NAV. GEN./PLANETARY REL./GALAXY EXP.	*	
» » :09	» » -TACTICIAN/COSMOLOGIST/ALIENOLOGIST	*	
» :01:20	THE STAR FLEET ACADEMY	7408.05	
» :01:30	STAR FLEET HEADQUARTERS - EXTERNAL ARRANGEMENT	7305.31	
» » :31	SFHQ - TYPICAL CROSS-SECTION	» »	
» » :32	» - TYP. SECTION THRU DOCK	» »	
» » :33	» - TYP. LONG. SECTION	» »	
» » :34	» -GROUND PLAN - BAYS 1 & 2	» »	
» » :35	» - » » -BAYS 3 & 4	» »	
» » :36	» - » » -BAYS 5 & 6	7305.31	
» :03:00	STAR FLEET INSIGNIA AND RANK	7304.28	
» » :10	DUTY UNIFORM - MALE - ALL SFAF	7304.26	
» » :11	N/C TUNIC PATTERN	7308.05	
» » :12	DUTY UNIFORM - FEMALE - OFFICERS SFAF	7304.26	
» » :13	N/C TUNIC AND PANTY PATTERN	7308.05	
» » :14	DUTY UNIFORM - FEMALE - ENSIGNS SFAF	7304.26	
» » :15	N/C TUNIC AND PANTY PATTERN	7308.05	
» » :16	DUTY UNIFORM - FEMALE - MEDICAL SFAF	7304.26	
» » :17	N/C TUNIC AND PANTY PATTERN	7308.05	
» » :16	DUTY UNIFORM - ACADEMY CADET - MALE	*	
» » :19	N/C TUNIC PATTERN	*	
» » :20	DUTY UNIFORM - ACADEMY CADET - FEMALE	*	
» » :21	N/C TUNIC AND PANTY PATTERN	*	
» :04:00	FLEET SHIP CLASSIFICATIONS - SFAF - CLASS I STARSHIPS	7306.03	
» » :10	CLASS I HEAVY CRUISER - MK-IX	7304.15	
» » :11	AUTHORIZED CONSTRUCTION	7306.16	
» » :12	CLASS I DESTROYER - MK-VIII	7306.03	
» » :13	AUTH. CONST.	7306.09	
» » :14	CLASS I SCOUT - MK-VII	7306.03	
» » :15	AUTH. CONST.	7306.19	
» » :16	CLASS I TRANSPORT/TUG - MK-VI	7306.03	
» » :17	AUTH. CONST.	7306.14	
» » :18	CLASS I TRANSPORT CONTAINERS - MK-V AND MK-III	7306.03	
» » :19	» » » » - MK-II AND MK-I	» »	
» » :20	» » » » - MK-IV STARLINER	» »	
» » :21	» » » » - MK-IV DECK PLANS	7306.03	

NOTE (*): NO CURRENT PRINT-OUT FROM MASTERCOM DATABANKS/SFHQ

TM:379260-0

STAR FLEET TECHNICAL ORDER

AUTHENTICATED STARDATE 7407.04

TO:00:10:10

UNIFORM COLOR CODE

STAR FLEET SPECIFICATION

01 SILVER	02 ANTIMONY	03 GOLD	04 BRONZE
05 COPPER	06 WHITE	07 IVORY	08 SAND
09 BLOOD	10 RED	11 ORANGE	12 YELLOW
13 TENNE	14 OLIVE	15 GREEN	16 SKY BLUE
17 ULTRAMARINE	18 BLUE	19 INDIGO	20 MIDNIGHT
21 VIOLET	22 CORN	23 TAN	24 BROWN
25 NUDE	26 PURPLE	27 OXIDE	28 TAUPE
29 PLATINUM	30 GRAY	31 BLUEGRAY	32 BLACK

MILKY WAY GALAXY

GREAT SPIRAL GALAXY - M-O - LOCAL GROUP

VIEW OF THE GREAT EQUATORIAL
DISK OF THE GALAXY

STELLAR POPULATION IS
10 x 10¹⁰ STARS

190
200°
210
180
220
170
230
160
240
150
250
140
260
U
N
K
N
O
W
N
SAFE RADIATION LIMIT
SHAPLEY CENTER
ZONE OF
INTENSE RADIATION
100°
300°
U
N
K
N
O
W
N
SAGITTARIUS
ARM
PERSEUS
ARM
UNITED FEDERATION
UFP
KLINGON
EMPIRE
TREATY EXPLORATION
TERRITORY
ORION ARM
ROMULAN
STAR EMPIRE
60
50
40
30
20
10
000°
390
380
370
360
350
340
0 1 2 3
PC x 1000
0 5 10
L.Y. x 1000

1" x .75"

UFP - UNITED FEDERATION
OF PLANETS
THIS IS A NEGATIVE PRINT.

The main cores are tied into the ship's optical data network by means of a series of MJL junction links which bridge the subspace boundary layer. There is a 12% Doppler loss in transmission rate across the boundary, but the resulting increase in processing speed from the FTL core elements more than compensates.

SUBPROCESSORS

A network of 380 quadritronic optical subprocessors is distributed throughout both ship's sections, augmenting the main cores. Within the habitable volume of the ship, most of these subprocessors are located near main corridor junctions for easy access. While these subprocessors do not employ FTL elements, the distributed processing network improves overall system response and provides redundancy in emergency situations. Each subprocessor is linked into the optical data network, and most also have a dedicated optical link to one or more of the main cores.

The Main Bridge and the Battle Bridge each have seven dedicated and twelve shared subprocessors, which permit operations even in the event of main core failure. These bridge subprocessors are linked to the main cores by means of protected optical conduits, which provide alternate control linkages in the event of a primary optical data network failure. Further redundancy is provided by dedicated short-range radio frequency (RF) links, providing emergency data communications with the bridge. Additional dedicated subproces-

Systems monitor room
Subspace field systems access
FTL nanoprocessor units
Upper core
Lower core
MJL junction link (typ.)

4.1.2 Cross section of typical computer core

ENGINEERING

MAIN BRIDGE STATION - CLASS I STARSHIPS

A
VISUAL INTELLIGENCE DISPLAY
VISUAL INTELLIGENCE DISPLAY
CD
CD
CD
CD
CD
CD
CD
CD
BRIDGE VENTILATION
OPERATOR'S CHAIR
A

FRONT ELEVATION

VIEW A-A:

110° SCAN
CIRCULAR ARC BACK
50%TILE EYE POINT
90° SCAN
CONTROLS CONSOLE
RAILING
MAIN BRIDGE DECK
0 20 40 60 80
CENTIMETERS

NOTE: CD-COMPUTER DATA AND SYSTEMS VISUAL READOUT SCREENS

THIS IS A SLAVE STATION CAPABLE OF HANDLING THE SHIP'S IMPORTANT ENGINEERING FUNCTIONS. ALL PRIMARY CONTROL IS LOCATED IN THE ENGINEERING DIVISION

SEE TO:03:08:01 FOR CONTROLS CONSOLE ARRANGEMENT

OFFICIAL COLORS:

□	PLATINUM	N°SF29UC
▤	RED	N°SF10UC
▨	GRAY	N°SF30UC
■	BLACK	N°SF32UC

7.1.1 Major utilities trunks

Structural integrity gen
Inertial damping gen
Warp drive system
EPS power taps
Impulse drive system
EPS power taps
Auxiliary fusion generators
EPS power taps
Turbolift system
Other systems
EPS power distrib
Computer cores
Optical data network
Major systems
Atmospheric system
Atmospheric distrib net
Redundant distrib net
Water reclamation
Water distrib net
Redundant distrib net
Solid waste recycling
Waste collection
Replicator systems
Beam waveguides
Replication terminals
Transporter systems
Beam waveguides
Emitter arrays
Gravity generation
Field conduits
Reserve utilities
Protected distribution
Reserve supplies

jacked triphase waveguide conduit networks, similar to the SIF network, distribute the field energy throughout the vehicle. Crossovers between the Saucer Module and Battle Section permit field generators in one hull to feed the entire spacecraft if necessary.

- **Synthetic gravity field bleed.** Although the ship's synthetic gravity field is created by the gravity generators located thoughout the ship, a network of forcefield conduits is employed to allow translation of excess inertial potential to other parts of the ship. This process is computer controlled to optimize gravitational stability and subspace field differential. Any inertial potential in excess of system capacity is automatically bled off into the structural integrity field system.

- **Cryogenic fluid transfer.** This refers to a number of insulated piping trunks that provide for intraship transfer of such cryogenic fluids as liquid helium. Oxygen for breathing gas replenishment is transferred to atmospheric processing modules in liquid form by means of the cryogenic fluid transfer system.

- **Deuterium fuel transfer.** Two 45 cm insulated conduits provide for transfer of liquid deuterium between the primary deuterium tank and the impulse propulsion system. Additional insulated conduits connect the primary deuterium tank with the warp propulsion system, and the Saucer Module impulse engines and its associated fuel storage tankage (using a cross-feed conduit connecting the two sections). Smaller 18.5 cm insulated conduits connect various auxiliary storage tanks and the auxiliary fusion power generators.

- **Turboelevator personnel transport system.** This includes the actual turboshaft tubes through which the inductively driven turbolift cars travel throughout the habitable volume of the ship, as well as the dedicated EPS power trunks and ODN links that support the system.

- **Reserve utilities distribution.** This refers to a low-capacity, independent system of atmosphere, power, data, and water distribution networks. These systems serve as backups for use in the event service is disrupted from primary systems. Depending on load factors, this reserve system has a capacity of approximately thirty-six hours.

- **Protected utilities distribution.** Another set of redundant utilities trunks, this system provides limited atmosphere, power, and data to critical areas of the ship as well as

---

Dick Brownfield, Star Trek *special mechanical effects whiz whose work on the* Enterprise *dates back as far as* Star Trek's *first pilot episode in 1964, tells us that some of the conduits and pipes seen on the original* Enterprise *sets were labeled with the term GNDN. Dick tells us that this was a joke with him and set decorator John Dwyer (another veteran of both versions of* Star Trek) *to inform the discerning starship crew member that a dummy pipe "Goes Nowhere and Does Nothing."*

S.I.N.S.* BASE DATUM

IN GALACTIC COORDINATE SYSTEM

Z
+100°
S
b, b"
300°
000°
ASCENT
STBD
200°
PORT
FWD
DESCENT
100°
L, L"
-100°
N

WHERE:

THE SPACE·INERTIAL·NAVIGATION·SYSTEM* IS THE FUNDAMENTAL GUIDANCE BASE FOR THE ONBOARD NAVIGATIONAL COMPUTER COMPLEX. IT IS ACTIVATED AND ACCURATELY ALIGNED IN THE GALACTIC COORDINATE SYSTEM AT COMMISSIONING IN PLANETARY ORBIT AND THEREAFTER MAINTAINS THIS ALIGNMENT WITHOUT ERROR. THE STARSHIP CARRIES THIS DATUM WITH IT (FWD) WHEREVER IT GOES AND MOVES WITHIN THIS REFERENCE FRAMEWORK: TO PORT OR STARBOARD AND UP OR DOWN IN ANY COMBINATION.

b, b" - DECLINATION PLANE
L, L" - AZIMUTH PLANE
N - NADIR AT b, b" -100°
Z - ZENITH AT b, b" +100°

S - SPHERICAL ENVELOPE CONTAINING ALL NUMERICAL COMBINATIONS OF b, b" & L, L"

A WARREN MAGAZINE

$1.75 58380-4

FAMOUS MONSTERS #148

OCT. 1978

DARTH VADER

SPECIAL ISSUE FEATURING THE SITH LORD MENACE WHO HELPED MAKE STAR WARS GREAT!

25
DART
VADE
POSTE
PRIZE
IN OU
NEV
CONTES
SEE PAGE

©1977 Twentieth Century-Fox Film Corporation. All rights reserve
Official Poster licensed and sold by Factors, Etc., Inc.

Today the Death Star, tomorrow—the Stardust & other colossal spacecraft of the Perry Rhodan series?

He's been speeding around the land in his landspeeder for over a year now and hasn't got a ticket yet. (But he sold plenty of them!)

dispatched his copy via time-warp space-o-gram to our present day solar system, Planet 3, Hollyweird, Karloffonia, and I read it with great interest and said to myself, "Why, this is much too unusual an item to simply let languish in limbo like Stuart J. Byrne's Tarzan on Mars," so I am presenting it here as a curiosity from which I believe you will derive an exciting reading experience.

Bearing in mind that these events do not follow the path of George Lucas' history nor the late Leigh Brackett's nor any other authorized historians of STAR WARS but are, as he puts it, "a personal fantasy" of Michael Aquino, READ ON!

Chapter 1
Darth Vader Lives!

As his small ship spun crazily away from the Death Star, Darth Vader fought to regain control. Thru the viewport the pinpoints of light from distant suns became streaks that shot across his line of vision as tho he were passing thru the tail of a comet. Unable to concentrate on the instruments in front of him he touched the switch that lowered the metal shield over the

hen Darth Vader stands, hands on hips, Your Editor knows it's no time for quips!

celebration. As Luke was explaining his attack on the Death Star [for the 30th time] to an admiring group of technicians, C3PO strode up to him and asked him if he would mind joining the Princess and General Dodonna at once in the observation center. Luke and the 'droid went off in search of Han Solo and found him, surrounded by an even larger and more vocal crowd, painting a giant set of targan jaws on the nose of the *Millennium Falcon*. Passing the paint-injector to a particularly-enthusiastic bystander, Luke pulled the protesting Solo to one side and told him of the summons. The two of them set off for the observation center at a brisk pace, leaving the 'droid to follow at its own speed.

They entered the center to see Dodonna and Leia peering over one of the stratospheric scanners. Dodonna pointed at the dot of light on the scanner that indicated a small craft approaching the moon. "What we don't know is whether it's one of ours or one of theirs," he said. "It hasn't responded to communications probes and its approach trajectory is erratic. Unless the pilot can correct his declination, he'll crash. But he's headed towards this complex so at least we'll be able to send out a rescue team."

"Should be approaching visual," said a nearby technician and at a nod from Dodonna he illuminated the large exterior viewplate. The company watched in silence as the tiny ship came into sight, glowing like a meteor as it plunged toward the forest. Finally it vanished into the treetops and there was a flash of light as it impacted. A coordinate was fixed on the crash site and a rescue team immediately dispatched in one of the vertilifts. Breaking the tension in the observation center, Leia asked Luke, Han and the General to join her in a nearby conference room.

"Before we learned of the approaching ship," she said, "General Dodonna and I were discussing the implications of this 'victory' of ours. I think you should hear what he has to say. General?"

Dodonna shifted his position and looked at all of them apprehensively. "I won't waste time telling you what you already know. Whether by skill or by luck, we have destroyed the largest and most powerful military base in the entire galaxy. That will hardly pass unnoticed at the Hub and we can expect that the position of the Death Star was constantly reported to Hub monitors. Hence it is simply a question of time before we are confronted with one or more fleets bent on our destruction. We must vacate this base immediately and seek concealment elsewhere and that means a loss of communications with our allies for an undetermined period. The Council has recommended the planet of Teldo in the Cyluran system." He indicated a chart on the table and they all glanced at it.

"The relocation of this base will commence immediately," said Leia, "but that's not why you're both here. Now that Darth Vader and Tarkin are dead, I have hopes that the Imperial Senate will listen to our appeal before authorizing a further attack. You must take me to the Hub immediately."

As the four of them walked out to the *Millennium Falcon*, an aide rushed up to report that the rescue team had found nothing but the seared remains of an Imperial attack ship. Of an occupant there was no sign so it seemed likely that he had either ejected earlier or been thrown clear of the impact. None of the party noticed the shadow that glided past the unseeing mechanics and disappeared within the *Falcon*.

Han Solo learned to his considerable irritation that Chewbacca would not be allowed along on the trip. "I'm sorry," said Leia, "but Wookies are not cleared for the Hub. There have been too many accidents because of their tempers, and the operations at the Hub are too vital to risk even isolated disruptive incidents." Chewbacca snarled his anger at the news but Solo took him to one side and assured him that the *Falcon* would be returning immediately, leaving the Princess at the Hub. If she were successful in her appeal to the Senate, she would notify the *Falcon* to return for her. If she sent no signal, Luke & Solo would know that her attempt had

Body Manipulation

CHAPTER 8.
THE SCIENCE OF BODY MANIPULATION & PROGRAMMING

A. THE SCARRING OF THE BRAIN STEM.

Early on it was discovered that the brain would overcompensate for scarring on the brain stem. This is a principle similar to weight lifting. By tearing down the muscle fiber by overexertion, the body rebuilds the muscle stronger. By scarring the brain stem, it was discovered that geniuses who had photographic memories could be created. Brain stem scarring was used to create the whiz kids that the NWO needed to run their big computers. For instance, the computers that **just** NASA alone uses require people who can work in ALGOL, BASIC, COBOL, COBOL 74, MULTICS COBOL ver. 4.4, COBOL Cb.4, COBOL CP-6, EOL, EULOR, FLIP, FORAST, FORTRAN, HAL/S, Illiac 4, JASP, JOSS, JOVIAL, /LYAPAS, LISP, LISP 2, /MAP/, NuSpeak, PASCAL, PEARL, /PLACE/, PL/1, PL/1-APAREL, PLANIT, Praxis, SA Machine Language, SEMANOL, SNOBEL, UNIX, WANG, ZBIE. It takes a good memory to remember computer languages and programming. These whiz kids, who were both programmed with Monarch programming and had their brain stems scarred can be seen in some of the University computer departments and the intelligence/military agencies' computers rooms.

For instance, at Ft. Meade, the NSA has 2 buildings which contain a completely self-sufficient intelligence operation. (The complex has its own stores, bank, dry cleaning, dentistry, barber shop, PX, hospital, as well as the normal snackbars and cafeteria that Federal buildings often have.) This complex which is internally guarded by cameras watching all the corridors, has several major computer rooms where whiz kids are employed. Movement by these whiz kids, requires that they have the proper I.D. attached to them. The CIA which has had an ongoing project to create them, has called them "Compu-kids." Some of the elevators are private and operate only with the proper key. The NSA's computers participate in electronically watching the world.

Another example of where compu-kids (slaves with scarred brain stems) work on big computers (incl. a Beast computer) is at Area 51 (Dreamland), NV.

The method of scarring the reticular formation of the brain stem is accomplished electronically. The RNA piles up and breaks the continuity of the signals coming through. Different people's bodies are able to tolerate different levels of abuse. Many of the brain stem scarring victims die, or end up with a pseudo-Multiple Sclerosis. Many children are coming into hospitals and being misdiagnosed as having Multiple Sclerosis when in fact they are damaged from programming and brain stem scarring.

If the victim is successfully given a photographic memory through their entire alter system due to brain stem scarring, then they are often programmed to see what are called "hieroglyphics" (that is the cover name) which is really just the "Intergalactic Language" that NASA developed in the 1960s and then turned around and used to program slaves with photographic memories. Under the cover of research projects like N67-3042 (17 p. 3022) "Language structure and message decoding for interplanetary decoding." in 1967 and N65-32284 20-3414 in 1965 entitled "Symbol science for communication language of humans, animals, and inanimate objects --application to mathematics, cybernetics, and automation." The actual study no. or no.s for the Intergalactic Language is not known, but they should appear somewhere in the voluminous

Scientific and Technical Aerospace Reports that NASA puts out each year. The script of this language was shown in the beginning credits of the strange movie Lawnmower Man. Some of the symbols are similar to Ascii Computer language (which is a language that interfaces with many other computer languages, so that one language can be translated into another language.) The Monarch slaves are told that this is an alien language.

INTERGALACTIC SYMBOLS

THIS IS THE WAY THE SCRIPT OF THE INTERGALACTIC LANGUAGE LOOKS

Another method that has also been used to enhance memory is hypnosis. Estabrooks was able in the 1930s to create Multiple personalities via hypnosis and get incredible mental feats accomplished by those parts which were asked under hypnosis to have photographic memories. Still another method is to place small transceivers into the head or body of the person. These implants have been attached in the neck or other places, and have been connected to various parts of the brain. They have literally created what the movies called "terminal man." This has allowed special intelligence agents to be linked to large computers. The intelligence asset can get continuous information on anything the intelligence agencies have managed to get into their large computers. Brain implants can down load incredible amounts of information to the brain, however, the ability to use this information wisely is still a skill. Having a library of information available doesn't necessarily mean a person is wiser.

For more on slave-computer interfacing see the index for information on ALEX, Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmissions, and UNIX systems which are used to tie the Monarch Mind to computers.

Drugs and torture are also used to enhance memory. Brain stem scarring is not the only method to enhance memory, but it has been a "highly successful" (if one doesn't count all the ruined lives when it's failed) good method. MPD also naturally increases the brain's functioning several fold, and can help give photographic memories.

In review, drugs, torture, hypnosis and MPD all work to enhance memory. Most slaves have some photographic memory capability. The most serious form of memory enhancement is brain stem scarring, which produces a strong system-wide photographic memory.

B. SPLIT BRAIN WORK

The brain is "bicameral" or two-sided. The two-sides (called hemispheres) communicate via a superpowerful connector called the corpus callosum. The left hemisphere is specialized in verbal-linguistic transduction of speech and analytical thinking (logic, math, cause & effect, language, & sequential thinking). The right side plays more of a role in holistic-metaphorical information transduction such as imagery (art, dance, intuition, subjective, spontaneous, holistic, & dream imagery). The primary role of creating imagery is carried out by the right side.

Roger Sperry, a neuroscientist won a Nobel Prize for feeding information to only one side of the brain, and also for feeding simultaneously both sides of the brain different information. His results showed that the two hemispheres could operate separately at the same time. We hate to rewrite history, but the work that won Sperry a Nobel Prize was being done to unwilling human victims before his publicly known experiments. Sperry's research left people wondering if it wasn't possible to have one personality located in one hemisphere, and another person in the other. Psychologist Julian Jaynes wrote a book arguing that mankind used to have two personalities before the two hemispheres evolved an ability to integrate. (His book is *The Origin of Consciousness in the Breakdown of the Bicameral Mind.*)

Before the public had heard about the ability of the two hemispheres to work independently, the Illuminati and MK-Ultra programmers were carrying out split brain programming, by two methods, 1. shutting down one side and communicating only with one side of the brain, and 2. by simultaneously feeding different information to each hemisphere. This is often down by the victim being locked in place with their eyes forced open, and different movies shown simultaneously to both eyes. This creates a form of split brain programming. High speed films will be shown with one hemisphere receiving horror scenes and the other getting family settings. This makes the two hemispheres work separately and the victim feel crazy. The mind feels ripped apart. One hemisphere is trying to dissociate and is having a miserable experience, while the other side is experiencing something just the opposite. When high speed films are shown for split brain programming, the films are shown in 5 minute increments. Front alters may be shown good films to make them believe they live in a perfect world with a good family life. Right side satanic alters may receive horror films shown via the left eye. The right side of the brain doesn't verbalize well, so this is one reason slaves have emotions without the ability to verbalize. A possible third method is to use drugs that block the two hemispheres from communicating. A fourth method in split brain work is to speak into the left ear while giving the right ear confusing noise. This last method is sometimes done to force alters to concentrate when learning scripts.

The split brain programming done by the Illuminati is grotesque. A drug is injected at the base of the skull into one hemisphere of the brain to shut it down, while the other hemisphere is kept awake. Torture is then carried out to split the mind. What this does is create programs and alters which are associated with only half of the brain. The brain is being further divided from itself. Work is done by the Programmers to develop the thinking of alters from one side of the brain to think differently from those of the other side. Split brain programming is not just hypnosis, as some have been led to believe. Split brain programming provides the Programmers one way to keep the left hand from knowing what the right hand is doing. It also gives them the ability to put in body programs or memories which effect only half of the victim's body.

When one hemisphere is dominating in what the brain is doing, the opposite nostril will open and take in air. When the right hemisphere is doing most of the thinking, the left nostril will be doing most of the breathing. Voluntary changes in nostril breathing can help shift the center of brain activity from one side of the brain to the other. When a person lays on his side, the downward side hemisphere will be activated, because the top nostril will breath best. The control of nasal breathing has been part of the Yogi's art to achieve samadhi.

The distinctions between the two hemispheres or two brains are used by the occult world. Moriah values the intuitiveness of the right hemisphere. As one Illuminati mind-control programmer said, "It's the right brain that has an inbuilt propensity for accessing timelessness. There is bound to be some unconscious prompting therefore that alerts us to the imminence of forthcoming disaster, that is, if we are sufficiently sensitive to its message....unless we have the wisdom, the soul age, to affect the use of those additional facilities (to access right brain knowledge) we will find our intelligence sadly limited to the left brain logic of the material world."

While this book is not about occult philosophy, occult philosophy is part of the motivation behind some of the split brain work. In order for the Illuminati to create alters which are highly intuitive and which are able to access the higher demonic spheres, they need to shut down the logic hemisphere. When the left hemisphere is shut down, then the right brain (which controls the left hand and left side of the body, i.e. the left hand path) is able to function without competition. The victim must be able to get in touch fully with his or her intuitive side to go into the "spiritual dimensions" where demons exist. This is very nasty work, because this split brain work involves high level demonology. Most of the deeper Illuminati alters are right brain alters so that they will be very spiritually intuitive.

The Lesser Key of Solomon is an important teaching book of the Illuminati. It states, "An adept enters an abnormal plane and equips himself to 'charge' with magical energy the pentacle and talismans." The training that this takes is called "training of the higher will" and split brain programming is part of how it is accomplished.

C. MEDICAL TECHNOLOGIES

Medical science has been probing the gray matter that makes up the human brain for several hundred years and they continue to probe it. With the use of various new techniques they can look inside the human brain in ways that were not available before. An enzyme called horseradish peroxidase (HRP) which serves as a marker or highlighter allows brain researchers to visually look at brain cells on functioning brains. Researchers such as Frank Putnam, at the National Institute of Mental Health, have taken PET scans of the brains of people with multiple personalities, whose brain scans from one alter personality to another are very different. This doesn't occur in non-multiple people who pretend to have different personalities. The brain scans have shown that brains with multiple personalities are physically different than other people's brains. The different personalities are often in different neurophysiological states. Medical science has helped the programmers put people into different neurophysiological states for programming. Some of these states are dangerous unless trained medical personnel are available to insure the victim doesn't die. Which, according to ex-Programmers, does happen anyway.

Medical science has identified glutamate which is an amino acid as an important neurotransmitter involved with memory storage. However, after countless tests and all types of research, we still do not know completely how the brain stores memory. However, the NWO's Network understands far more than they have let the public learn.

HAVING SKILLED MEDICAL/ LAB TECHNICIANS

Having the medical know how doesn't get the job done in itself. Obviously, the Network has needed to have both hospitals and trained medical personnel.

Having skilled workers is part of the success of the Monarch Programming. For instance, the simple interpretation of Alpha BFT instruments, requires that the operator be able to understand what is background interference. Everywhere the instrument is located there is going to be some amount of background interference. Only the good operators can realize when a pseudo-alpha wave has been produced, perhaps from the child sweating in the location of the electrode, or hair movements, or eye blinks or twitching.

The Illuminati has their own midwifery training program, which will take teenage Monarch slaves and train them. They also begin training their people in programming and observation from infancy up. By the time they are an adult, the programming alters know programming as second nature. They have no shortages of doctors, nurses, psychiatrists, and other well educated people. If they have to save an important Monarch slave, they may fly in a specialist from wherever the right specialist is.

When it comes to research, some of it done by professionals who don't realize how their research is going to be used. Many researchers are great on seeing detail, but not the bigger picture. They usually don't realize how their research is going to be misused, and are very gullible people. The CIA finds that the researcher is quick to justify in his or her mind the moral value of the research they are doing.

Many members of the Illuminati are involved in secret genetic research.

Having control over numerous big hospitals, is an important link in the ability of the Network to program so many people successfully.

Medical personnel are participating in acts that help mind-control. One Christian nurse quit the University Hospital here, because newborns are secretly being given implants. A few years ago, it was discovered that The Upjohn, an American multinational company was involved in placing radiotransmitting material in with their liquid cortisone preparation Depomedrone, which created an implant when medical personnel put Depomedrone into their patients.

D. HISTAMINES

Histamine is a chemical (a particular molecule) which the body uses to defend against alien cells. It also has the ability to lower blood pressure and to flare up the skin.

The auditory sense can effect histamine production via programming. Histamine is a molecule which is part of the immune system. Changes in histamine levels effect moles. It effects skin changes in scars. This is how the abusers can magically make scars appear and disappear, which makes the programming seem even more real to alters. The abusers like to create invisible scars that form patterns and pictures. The most popular is the Baphomet head (which stands for Satan). Upon command they can trigger the skin to make these scars visible.

If one pricks someone's skin with a needle having histamine on the tip, it will cause the skin to flare up red.

Biofeedback has allowed people to mentally talk to their skin. Hypnosis has controlled people's immune system. States of mind effect the immune system. Somehow a combination of these is used to allow the handler upon command to trigger the correct state of mind within the victim to increase histamine production within the skin area.

The bone marrow of the body produces stem cells. The stem cells are capable of growing into many different types of cells. First the stem cells grow into some basic different cells and those in turn grow some more and further differentiate. For instance, a stem cell can become a myeloid, which can become a polymorpho nuclear granulocyte which in turn can become a basophil or mast cell. Both basophils and mast cells are leukocytes and they are part of the body's immune system. Both basophils and mast cells are carriers of histamine. Histamine does several things in the body. Histamine causes dilation of blood vessels, and it allows blood vessels to become permeable (leaky so to speak) which allows other chemicals and fluid to go through the blood vessels into the area between cells and tissues. All CNS (Central Nervous System) cells of the body have receptors that the histamine can attach itself to like a ship docking. When cells are damaged, or alien cells enter the body, the basophils and mast cells release their histamine.

For the body to have more histamine, it must increase the number of basophils and mast cells. This can be accomplished by changing the ratio of stem cells that develop into other types of cells.

The core of the histamine molecule is an ethylamine. Antihistamines are molecules that resemble histamines enough that they can attach themselves to the histamine receptors on regular cells and prevent the histamine molecules from attaching. If the histamine molecules don't attach, the body disposes of them. The point being that histamine remains in the skin only so long before the body disposes of it. Histamine levels in the body can raise IF the cells which carry the histamine are increased.

THIS IS THE STRUCTURE OF A HISTAMINE MOLECULE

It is believed that breast implants have some kind of effect on raising histamine production levels in the body. Whether these breast implants are identical to what all breast implants are, or whether they have something special to agitate the body into higher immune cells' production of the mast cell & basophils type is not known. However, there seems to be some relationship between the Network's need to raise histamine production in their slaves, and the breast implants that they are putting in them. Putting the pieces together leads one to believe that the implants agitate the body's immune system into raising the level of its histamine carrying cells. A number of women who have gotten implants speak about an increase in allergies. The allergic reaction is caused by high levels of histamine. Whether this happens to some or many it not known at the time this is written. The three big Illuminati chemical companies are I.G. Farben, DuPont, and Dow Chemical. Dow Chemical began research with implanting silicon in 1956. After 35 years of studies in which they implanted thousands of various animals with silicon, the company knew exactly what silicon would do in the human body. The FDA had public hearings in 1992 where internal documents of the Dow Chemical Co. were released which showed that the company knew all along that their breast implants were very dangerous, years before they put them on the market.

There is an incredible search going on for a anti-silicon antibody so that they can clean up the mess they have created in millions of people who have silicon implants. The immediate chest wall and area around the breast implant gets highly agitated. The silicon leaks through the membrane, and then causes great difficulties in the body.

Many of the female Monarch slaves have received breast implants.

E. BODY PROGRAMS

Researchers have come along way toward understanding the mind. They have discovered, for instance, that under stress the brain will convert nerve signals into "messenger molecules" who then in turn direct the endocrine system to produce steroid hormones, that can reach the nucleus of various cells and cause them to change how the body's genes are written out. These genes will then direct the cells as to how to make a variety of molecules which are used in growth, metabolism, sexuality, and the immune systems. In other words, the mind can rewrite genetics. This was the secret that helped get the Monarch program off to its scientific foundation. Now the actual mechanics of this have been observed by researchers.

One of the leaders in understanding the mind-body relationship was Franz Alexander.

Black was one of the researchers into how hypnosis can be used to regulate the body and the body's functions such as the immune system. Ken Bowers also worked in this area. Dr. S.M. Lambert of the Rockefeller Foundation studied how voodoo could cause death by creating certain thoughts in the mind. Most of the research in this area was monitored, if not sponsored by the Intelligence agencies under the auspices of the Illuminati.

The Hypothalamus bridges the mind and the body. It works as part of the Limbic-hypothalamic system. This system is a determining center for what state of mind the brain is place in. The immune system communicates directly with the hypothalamus part of the brain with its own "messenger molecules" known as "immunotransmitters". This then is mind-brain link that the Monarch programmers have taken so much advantage of.

Barbara Brown, a physiologist at Veteran's Administration Hospital (in Sepulveda) wrote a book *New Mind, New Body*. Barbara Brown's research was government funded. Her book got the public interested in biofeedback. Because of repeated success at getting patients to control such things as their heartbeat, Dr. Brown is convinced that a person's heart rate, breathing, muscle tension, glandular responses are all subject to a person's will. Those who have worked with victims of U.S. government MK Ultra mind control know that what Dr. Brown writes is correct and was known years before she published her book.

Biofeedback is now required training in some prisons for some inmates.

It is clear from the final results that Monarch slaves have programming which can carry out the following functions:

- control the pulse rate and heart beat,
- control the body's temperature
- control the temperature of individual body parts or sides of the body--such as the right side of the body might get hot, and the left side of the body get ice cold. Fritz has observed this by touching the left and right sides of a victim who was burning hot on the right and ice cold on the left.
- The secretions of various enzymes and histamine production has been trained into the victims and attached to various body programs to keep the slave in line. Histamine production appears to be regulated via surgery carried out on women's breast. It appears, but hasn't been confirmed that the surgery where breast implants are placed into female Monarch slaves plays some role in histamine production & programmed control.
- allow the body to pretend that it is dead, when actually it is in an altered state similar to being comatose.

The internal defenses consists in part of body programs that are triggered if the Mind-controlled slave steps out of line. Here is a good list of some of these **body programs**: Auditory problems, a Bone disorder, Blood flow/circulation, Coma (zombie death sleep which makes victim appear dead), Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, Histamine production, Optic problems such as blindness, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, and Temperature change.

Body programs will be put in across the board for all alters. The same code will work for all alters when the internal programming alters want to trigger a body program.

If a body program is placed into the slave it may be anchored to something, and that might be something as drastic as the heartbeat. One of the programs causes the victim to hear a heartbeat which is reframed in their minds as the "heartbeat of Satan."

Some of the body programs are carried out by creating an alter which has one mental state--such as an alter fragment which is burning or one that was created by ice torture. This alter or this feeling of being hot or cold is then attached to something in the mind. For instance, if the victim moves toward the world, a cold alter or a cold feeling of a memory is hypnotically programmed to come up behind the alter holding the body. Sometimes the sensation of burning can be eliminated by getting a firechild to back up from the front of the mind where another alter is holding the body.

Many feelings, body sensations, and drugged states are attached to programs. When the alter hits a stringer, he will go through a series of memories, false memories, hypnotic commands, and body sensations that have been attached together in stringers. The stringer type of programming is often put in to set in a front program which is to deceive an alter.

The abilities of the human brain to control the body have been seriously underrated by people. Bio-feedback researchers in the 1960s were surprised to find out that if a single nerve cell's activity is placed upon a screen so that the subject can see its activity graphed, the subject will be able to mentally identify that cell apart from any other nerve fiber cell, and will be able to have voluntary control over that single cell apart from any other. Just to show how complex the body is, a single nerve fiber cell will have 600 connections. This mental feat is simply mind-boggling for researchers.

The Mar. 5, 1972 *L.A. Times* reported that patients were being taught how to alter their heart rate without drugs. This had already been happening within the Monarch Programming. The heart is controlled by the mind and works with the emotions of a person. There have been people who have literally died from a "broken heart." This is a historical fact. The Monarch programmers have long been taking advantage of the mind's ability to control the heart's beating.

A tiny little bit of tissue not really visible to the visible eye called the sinus node, sends out electrical signals that regulate and initiate heart beats in an unbroken rhythm. The genetic code concerning the body's metabolism and the genetic code for the sinus node somehow get the entire heart beat generator mechanism started. Two areas of the brain control the changes in heart beats that the sinus node would make. The sinus node sends out the signals but it doesn't change the rate. A very primitive part of the brain stem is one of the control areas, and the other control area along the spine. Both of these areas connect to the higher thinking areas of the brain. The three most frequent events that change heart beat are emotions, sicknesses, and muscle activity. Since the will influences emotions, the higher brain can control the heart beat and its pulse. Alters are programmed so that they will trance out if anyone tries to prove to them that they have a heart--which they have been programmed to believe was taken away from them by the programmer. The occult world learned this ability from the Indian yogis who have been controlling their hearts for centuries. Some have even shown in the scientific laboratory that they can stop their hearts for up to 30 seconds. (See Green of Menninger Foundation's work.)

The yogi's also developed the skill of changing their body temperatures. For instance, Swami Rama in the lab of Dr. Elmer Green could make one side of his palm hot and the other side of his palm cold simply by mental efforts. This type of body control was learned by the Illuminati years ago, and has been applied to the Monarch programming to make the programming lies seem more real to the victim than the outside world. A Monarch slave can get cold on the left side and burn on the right side of his body. It has been well-documented that the mind can control the blood flow to various tissues and in this way change temperature in various different parts of the body. This was first reported to the public in 1978 (Barabasz & McGeorge).

It appears that a combination of yogi type bio-feed back techniques along with classical behavior conditioning is able to account for some of the body programs in slaves. Other body programs appear to be connected to the memories of alters. For instance, if the Programmer wants the body to burn--he has the System pull up an alter which was tortured with fire who comes up behind the alter holding the body, and the body then abreactes and feels like it is burning. As mentioned, one technique is the split-brain programming where the functioning of the two hemispheres of the brain are separated, which allows the patient to feel the "right hand path" and the "left hand path" separately. This type of programming is very powerful in making the programming script seem more real than outside reality.

High blood pressure or hypertension has been found to be largely a function of the mind. However, conventional medicine has ignored this for years, and has a large volume of confusing and misleading research to the opposite. Rather, than admit the cause, the medical establishment has labeled the largest percentage of hypertension cases as "essential" or "idiopathic" which are labels to cover up that they don't know (or refuse to recognize) the cause of the high blood pressure. At any rate the cardiovascular systems (heart and blood vessels, etc.) is so complex that it has been very difficult for researchers to get a grasp on many issues involved in blood pressure such as the release of hormones into the blood, and the result of long term stress on the cardiovascular system. When tests show that the stress of unemployment increases high blood pressure problems among men, it would seem that the medical establishment would begin to see the link that the mind has with controlling blood pressure. Again bio-feedback and classic conditioning have been successfully used to radically change a subject's blood pressure. This along with the ability to go into deep trances, are abilities that the Monarch slave is programmed to have to control their blood pressure. Again the question may be, why would they condition a slave this way? Because, if the Master can call out a hypnotic trigger and change the slave's heart beat and blood pressure, does the reader see how "puppet-like" the slave feels? The slave's mind and body are literally owned by the master. **The slave is not even allowed to control his own body. This is what total mind-control is all about.**

PATHWAYS

The medical profession uses the term "pathways" to describe the ways the mind creates biochemical and physiological changes. In other words, how does the mind consciously decide to change its body? When medical researchers began to understand how the two hemispheres worked, they began to understand better how to facilitate mind-to-body communication so that they could program the slave's mind to control its body.

One of the better books on this subject is *The Psychobiology of Mind-Body Healing* by Ernest Lawrence Rossi. Rossi and Erickson devised a three-stage approach to accessing the person's inner resources for therapy. This type of hypnotic-induced healing is a clue to part of how the Body programs are structured in for body control by the programming. What some use for good, is used by others for evil. During the hypnotic work, Rossi uses what is called the "inner mind" of the person.

For instance, to get a person to stop bleeding indirect hypnotic suggestions are made in the following 3 stages, a. a time-binding introduction of "Why don't you stop bleeding? Now!" b. there is an accessing of state dependent unconscious processes that can control the bleeding, and c. there is a response by the person which ratifies that the inner process of stopping the bleeding has actually happened.

The hypothalamus is a very small part of the brain. It is only the size of a pea, but it contains an immense amount of important tissues which control all types of inner activities of the body, including the endocrine, the immune, the neuropeptide and automatic systems. It is this area of the brain which is manipulated by hypnosis. The limbic-hypothalamic system is in a constant process of shifting what state of mind the brain is in. There are numerous unconscious and conscious states that can be shifted to. These are labeled "psycho-neuro-physiological states" because researchers now realize how a state involves the entire person. All learning is associated and depends upon the state it was learned in!

A new sense organ was discovered, and *U.S. News & World Report*, July 19, 1993, p. 61 reported on it. We do not know when this tiny sense organ, which is located in the nasal cavity, was discovered by the people doing mind-control, but it is already being exploited. This organ responds to chemicals called pheromones, which play an important role in human emotions, such as fear, hunger and love. Human skin gives off odorless pheromones which other people can detect. Basic human drives are controlled by Pheromones. Endorfin is a peptide, of which at least 50 have been charted. By manipulating these chemicals, people can be biochemically put into a different state of mind, and victims have been manipulated by these chemicals.

These chemicals are being used in conjunction with Virtual Reality to control slaves' minds. In the March-April '94 edition of *The Futurist* the author Glenn F. Cartwright, of McGill University announces in his article "Virtual or Real? The Mind in Cyberspace", "Strangely, the developers of virtual reality seem largely unconcerned by the possible dangers inherent in launching individuals into another reality." This is because Virtual Reality is being developed as another tool of mind-control.

Computers can dynamically control and synchronize all that needs to be coordinated to give someone a virtual reality experience. The researchers/programmers are trying to immerse as many of the victim's senses into their virtual reality trip as possible. It becomes almost impossible to distinguish reality from the trip for the victim of this type of programming.

McGill University, Dr. White (Cameron's) old stomping grounds did some virtual reality research.

People are now getting involved with what is called MUDs (multi-user dungeons) where a person via virtual reality can create a parallel life. Some people are spending up to 120 hours a week immersed in their virtual reality second life. In 1992, Internet had 207 such games. Now the programmed slave only needs to hook into Internet to be programmed.

Cartwright's article warns that a person's ego-center can be projected somewhere else via virtual reality, which destabilizes one's actual understanding of where their own identity is. He also warns that Virtual reality will create other personalities. He writes on page 24, "Multiple Identities. If it is possible in virtual reality or cyberspace to enter an altered state, become disembodied, swap genders, create a virtual ego-center, decenter the self, and assume a different identity, then it may also be possible to assume more than one identity at the same time. In this context, the exponential increase in multiple-personality disorders in recent decades may be of more than just passing interest....having multiple, serial, and simultaneous personae in cyberspace may not only be possible, but may even be encouraged as a part of interacting with others."

Virtual reality via the computer Internet has now become another tool of the Programmers.

MUSIC

Dissociated tones, beats and music may accompany hypnotic induction drugs. Pulsing beating sounds in the ears can change the brain's waves.

It is no secret that music will put someone into an altered state. Music will change moods, heart rate, and even one's state of consciousness. In a home church setting, that Fritz participated in, the question was asked of a group what they do to overcome depression. Everyone present listed "listen to music" as one of the things they do to overcome depression.

Sound will change body chemistry, blood pressure, breathing and digestion. (See Jacobson, Steven. "Media Mind Control", *Media Bypass*, Sept. '95, pg.50). To quote Jacobson, "Fast music will speed up the nervous system while slow music will slow it down. Sounds vibrate in different parts of the body. Low tones will vibrate in the higher portions and on into the head. Much of today's popular rock music is built around a heavy bass pattern louder than the melody. These low-frequency vibrations reverberate in the lower parts of the body so that the music 'feels' good. These loud, low-frequency vibrations and the driving beat of most rock music affect the pituitary gland, which controls male and female responses. The repeating sound pattern induces the hypnotic state of mind that is similar to day dreaming, thus clearing the mind of all thought so that the message can be implanted in the unconscious without resistance.

"It is important to note that the lyrics of many rock songs are not clearly distinguishable consciously. When you do not hear the message clearly, you cannot make the conscious choice to accept or reject it. When you cannot make that choice or when that choice is taken away from you, the message is programmed directly to the subconscious, thus circumventing analysis and choice in accepting the content of the message. Sixties rock superstar Jimi Hendrix said: 'You can hypnotize people with music, and when you get them at their weakest point, you can preach into their subconscious whatever you want to say.' "

Long term exposure to the heavy metal themes of sadomasochism, satanism, suicide and drug abuse can only have a negative influence on the minds of the listener. Today's generation of children are being raised on this type of music.

Many of the big rock bands consist of satanists. This statement isn't made flippantly, but from having learned from many witnesses of the rituals these Satanic bands participate in. Some of these satanists, as the reader can already guess, are programmed multiples. For those programmed multiples who participate in heavy rock music, they are simply adding one more type of bondage and mind-control to their already long list.

The spiritual damage done by rock music will be briefly addressed later in cht. 10.

PROGRAMMING DAMAGE to the BODY.

Many of the body programs that activate via trigger codes are simply memories of severe torture. For instance, the victim might be placed naked on a block of ice, which contains the body of a frozen person. (This is a common trauma used in programming.) When this memory is triggered, via an alter or alter fragment, the victim's body abreacts and gets very cold. Another common torture is to stick a ureteric catheter up the external urethral orifice (whose channel is called the urethra). This is painful. Then the urinary bladder is filled so that the victim is in extreme pain, and is made to hold their bladder in silence. This torture to the body is painful. But the long term effects of this torture, which is done repeatedly to slaves to teach obedience, is to seriously damage their urinary bladders. The abreaction of memories of this help blackmail alters into obedience.

The body of many slaves are only kept functioning, because they are given repeated surgery by doctors working under the auspices of the Illuminati. These doctors can be trusted on to keep quiet about the abused bodies they have to keep fixing.

It was mentioned in chapt. 2 that some people suffering from autism are failures in mind control programming. We know of one case where a brilliant autistic teenager who'd not talked during childhood began talking, and shocked his parents because he began talking about his spirit guides (see chap. 10 on spirit guides.) Some people diagnosed as MS are really failures of the mind control's brain stem scarring. Many hundreds of women w/ breast implants are coming down w/ symptoms that look like MS & Lupus. This may be because part of the women w/ implants are programmed multiples. Another disease that is believed by some to be caused by programming failures is lupus (aka lupus erythematosus or systemic lupus erythematosus). Establishment medical science claims that the cause of lupus is unknown. *Modern Maturity* (Ap/My '93) & *Nations Business* (May '93) are examples of magazines that have run articles about Lupus. Ronald I. Carr and the Lupus Foundation of America put out a handbook on the disease in 1986. The director of the Lupus Foundation has been an Illuminati programmed multiple.

The effects of the programming are not just in the mind. It has been scientifically shown that the torture memories are enbedded in the cells of the body. In fact, the Illuminati intentionally wants the body injured by trauma pains & trauma memories, because they want to prevent the possibilities of the sanctification of the body such as written about in 2 TM 2:21. Also, the Programmers intentionally & zealously prevent the deeper alters from wanting to love as 1 COR 13 describes.

PHYSICAL ASPECTS of the human BRAIN.

Neurobiologists and chemists have learned a great deal about the physical aspects of the brain. One has to be careful about simplification. The concept of the split brain has been over simplified, because the best researchers on the two hemispheres know that there is constant interplay between the brain's two halves--unless the Illuminati have tampered with someone's brain. The split brain concept has been replaced with the Penta-Brain (something akin to a pentagram). The Penta-Brain takes the triune-concept of the brain conceived by brain scientist Paul MacClean and adds it to the split brain hemispheres and the duality of the frontal-posterior dimension also. In this process, "mammalian" & "reptilian" brains (those parts of our brains that mammals & reptiles also have) are accessed and worked on in people.

The best description read by co-author Fritz of the intricate chemical changes that happen during Learning and Memory is a Special Report entitled "The Chemistry of Learning and Memory" *Chemical & Engineering News*, Oct. 7, 1991, pp. 24-41, by Karen J. Skinner, Yale Chemistry Ph.D. in '73, Masters from Kennedy School of Govt., Harvard. This is a very technical report. The programmers do not learn this material, but those who want to understand the nitty-gritty molecular-biology of how the complex memory processes work in the mind might want to try to study the report.

In very basic terms, what it is communicating is: Neurons (nerve cells--of which the brain has 10 billion) meet each other at junctions (gaps) called synapses. At the synapses (gaps), neurotransmitters allow them to communicate. There are 60 trillion synapses. As a person gathers information, the brain changes the synapses, in a sense rewires itself. Part of memory is how the brain "rewires" itself, to use a layman's term. Genetics have an important role in the initial hardwiring of the brain. Genetics also determine receptor diversity (at the synapses) which relates directly to learning & memory because it increases the ways neurons can perceive, process and recall information. The Hippocampus has been found to play a role in long term memory storage. The Hippocampus stores memory in the cortex to be encoded into long term memory. Numerous areas of the brain are busy with processing only one type of memory. In a macaque monkey, around two dozen distinct visual areas of the brain for memory storage have been discovered. In other reports, it has come out that memory is stored holographically. German researchers have been trying to figure out at the Max Planck Institute for Brain Research at Frankfurt, Germany what mechanism is used to bind the many various parts of information stored into a coherent recollection. The point that should be made at this point, is that an alter does not exist in one spot in the mind. The mind perceives that an alter does, but an alter in terms of physical change in the brain is actually a multitude of synaptic changes scattered throughout the brain. The brain's concept/image of an alter and the dissociated state can be played with by the programmers, but they really don't kill alters like they pretend to do during programming. Alters can't be "killed" in the mind. As the mind consolidates info, it fires neurons in harmony (in phase) called a "binding" process. Perceptions which are not memories are initiated this way. It is these perceptions that exist without memories that are so important to the programmers. Some have called these perceptions "global unity" of the brain. These are in phase frequencies from 40 to 70 Hz. NMDA receptors can perceive patterned firings from nerve cells that are active at the same time, which allows the brain to strengthen some synapses and let others grow weaker. Synaptic efficacy is called LTP. Interested readers can study LTP's molecular mechanism, etc. in Karen Skinner's Report.

Changing subjects slightly, let's discuss how Moriah fertilizes two zygotes and intentionally kills one of the twins in the womb. Studies have shown that in cases where one twin dies in the womb, the other twin usually tries to lead two lives. This has nothing to do with DID (MPD), except that the surviving twin will later be made into a programmed multiple. The Illuminati doctors have perfected a method to kill a developing twin so that the other engulfs it in the womb. This is skillfully done, and creates some interesting mental changes in the survivor. Moriah also believes that it endows the survivor with twice the spiritual power.

GENETIC ENGINEERING to CREATE PROGRAMMED ASSASSINS

This next section is somewhat of an appendix to this chapter. Readers may want to skip it, if readers are only wanting to just learn HOW the mind-control is done. However, we felt that since genetic engineering went hand-in-hand with Moriah's mind-control that a look at one specific type of military mind-control model would be worthwhile for some readers.

An example of how genetic engineering is couple with the trauma-based mind-control is Amphibious Man, a particular top secret model of Monarch slave. The following section is taken from an earlier article by Fritz on this. As far as we know, this was the first and only article ever written on the subject (not counting classified secret documents).

When the public saw the British Royal Navy locate the sunken Lusitania in 1935 using the Iron Man Diving Suit, the British Royal Navy told the public that it had no interest and no use for the suit. The Royal Navy lied about the Iron Man Diving Suit that, "no use could be made of it as the Navy [had] no requirements for deep diving." The Royal Navy had no use for deep diving! Do you swallow that? That's a bold enough lie to drown on. They had just used it to locate the Lusitania! The lesson here is that when the World Order is using a particular advanced technology, they will tell the public that they have no interest in it.

The British, American and German navies continued after W.W.I to do research beyond what the public knew they were interested in. While the public thought that Aquaman was simply a comic idea--the research went on to develop the ability for humans to swim like fish. When the World Order has discovered a technological breakthrough they pretend that they are still researching the basic concept. Often they prepare the public for their inventions via science fiction novels and movies. The reasons include their need to avoid the future shock that can incapacitate a people.

If the reader has gone fishing, she or he may be familiar with how fish can breathe in the air, they don't die automatically. They have gills which are designed to take oxygen from water, but their gills do absorb some oxygen from the air, enough to keep them alive on land for a while, so that if they are left on the bank after being caught they may jump back into the water and escape. Likewise, people don't automatically die from drowning. Near drown victims have been recovered after 40 minutes of being immersed in cold water. However, normal humans do not survive breathing water as well as fish breathe air. There are some animals though which can breathe both air and water, amphibians.

Over the years, the New World Order has secretly developed the ability to create a subspecies of people who can swim and breathe water.

Recently, the *Oregonian* newspaper (July 28, 1995) *Arts & Entertainment Guide*, p. 22, ran an article entitled "Brave New Waterworld". This is an example of a fictional supposedly futuristic setting for a movie about a technology they already possess. The movie Waterworld is the most expensive film made recently. It is estimated that it cost between $140 million to $200 million to make it. One of the main characters in the movie is Mariner, who is a human who has been genetically changed to have gills behind his ears. As mentioned already, they use movies like this to convince people that their present technology is only something of the future, while still preparing people mentally to accept it. That way the culture is not overwhelmed if they encounter the technology in the near future.

When secret researchers discovered that a particular chemical(s) added to the bloodstream would enable the human lungs to take oxygen and remove carbon dioxide from water, they had the ability to have men swim in water like fish without scuba gear. Now they needed to cover their tracks, so National Geographic Society (which has great respectability in the public's eye) has written about experiments to find a way for men to breathe water. In the National Geographic book *Exploring the Deep Frontier The Adventure of Man in the Sea*, published in 1980, they show a GE experiment on pg. 248. The picture's caption reads, "To dive like a whale and breathe like a fish: Scientists search for ways to increase man's freedom and range in the sea. In a tank at a General Electric research laboratory (right) fish swim past a parakeet separated from their watery world by a transparent membrane. Watertight but porous, the membrane allows oxygen and carbon dioxide to pass in and out. Equipped with artificial gills, man may one day breathe liquid while diving."

The example here is that they cover their tracks when they make a discovery by setting up experiments that are allowed to be published that make it look like they are only beginning to understand the subject. Bear in mind, the Allies captured secret Nazi German records, and the Germans did not research using parrots--they used live but expendable people. The Nazis were not above injecting drugs that induce respiratory paralysis or other responses and testing how the person's body would respond to drowning. I would suggest that they analyzed O_2 contents in the human guinea pigs with mass spectrometers. The paperwork of the secret Nazi research projects that the Navy confiscated at the end of W.W. II, would provide a better picture of what was researched and discovered.

The National Geographic article admitted that they had a membrane through which a parrot could get oxygen via the water around it. Now, logic would tell you that if they have a membrane that will allow a parrot to breathe surrounded by water that the technical difficulties of adapting this to a person can be easily overcome--so the concept of gills for people is quite achievable--however, the ability for humans to directly breathe from water is already achievable due to some other advances they have already used secretly for years.

In order to capitalize on their discovery of how to create Amphibious Man, military minds in the Illuminati went to work trying to think up schemes on how to use men who can swim like fish to their own evil advantages. Here is a discovery that could benefit mankind and yet they are thinking of ways to use it for evil. They basically realized that amphibious man could be used like a glorified Seal team. Seal teams are the navy's semi-secret group of well-trained men, who do primarily land operations after swimming ashore. Monarch slaves are being used in the Seal teams. The Seal teams are being secretly used to carry out assassinations, such as recently they were used to assassinate people in Iraq. They are trained in the ability to land and disguise themselves as natives and carry out illegal assassination work during times of peace. For missions like this only programmed slaves will work, because they need to erase their memories. Seal teams are located around the world, especially in the San Diego HQ area. The Seals were originally given dolphins to train and communicate with via clickers but these were turned over the EOD (the navy's ordinance group) so that the dolphins can be used to disarm mine fields or carry explosives. The comic book scenario of Aquaman with dolphins is not fiction anymore. The Seals use SDV (Deep Vehicles) which are tight fitting 4-person minisubs to submerge deep into the water, before swimming with gear.

The name which is being used world-wide by people familiar with the concept of men swimming like fish is "amphibious man". There are groups secretly world-wide working on the use of this new sub-species of man. They are genetically trying to engineer new skin and other parts of the human body to make people more suitable for living underwater. In line with this, men, like Frenchman Jacques Rougerie, have been designing and building Aqua-cities so that people could live underwater and have industry such as fish farming to sustain themselves economically. Special "geothermal" generators would help generate heat for the Aqua-cities.

Amphibious man is alive and well today. Understand that the people who are being genetically engineered by the Illuminati are also being raised under their mind-control. The structures of their alter systems are very complex on Amphibious Man models, because so much secrecy is riding on these slaves. The internal systems of these slaves are booby trapped every which way so that no tampering can be attempted, plus the design work on these Systems is some of the best. Things are tied together like a jigsaw puzzle.

Fritz's Summer '95 newsletter, revealed for the first time that today, there are genetically engineered Amphibious men who are able to swim underwater without air tanks.

There were a number of difficulties that the elite's scientists had to overcome to create Amphibious man. Scientists had the benefit of being able to make lots of comparisons between various animals. Some animals can use water, some water and air, and some just air. There are many other comparisons that have been used in underwater research. In almost every physical aspect related to animals living underwater there are differences between various animals which can be compared so that the technical feature which allows one animal to do something underwater that another species can't can be identified. Once the feature is identified, then research can begin on how to obtain this feature for human swimmers. For instance, one type of snake (the pelagic yellow-bellied sea snake) which breathes air, can under optimum conditions stay underwater indefinitely. Turtles have an incredible tolerance for anoxia, in comparison to other reptiles, which go underwater. And sea turtles have the best tolerance of all the various turtles. This is the type of difference that lends itself to comparison research.

Underwater comparison research had already begun clear back in 1869, when Paul Bert examined the differences between domestic chickens and mallard ducks. Doing comparisons it is easy to find out that birds and mammals which dive have greater storage in their bodies for O_2 than humans. The

Japanese Ama divers were studied in the early 1930s by German underwater researchers. However, the public has been told that very little research in this area occurred until the 1960s. Kooyman, Gerald L. *Diverse Divers Physiology and Behavior*. Berlin, Ger.: Springer-Verlag, 1989, p. 33 states, "Little further experimental work was done on the subject of gas exchange in human breath-hold divers until the early 1960s." Can you believe that the British, Germans and Americans didn't research such an important underwater subject for 30 years? Yes, they did continue frantic secret research, and they eventually learned how to solve a number of undersea problems facing humans.

First, the regulation of respiration is carried out by what is called the Chemoreceptors which are carotid and aortic bodies which detect the changes in the partial pressures of oxygen and carbon dioxide in the blood. The CO_2 break point mechanism is sensitive to a number of phenomena, which can prevent it from protecting a person. When a person breaths, he has an ingassing and an outgassing of oxygen, carbon dioxide, nitrogen, and other gasses. The levels of each of these gasses and their nature are important factors in how a person's body underwater functions or dies. If the level of CO_2 gets too high, the person can become unconscious. The human circulatory system has to be changed to be able to adapt to the ocean environment.

In dealing with men swimming underwater all the laws of gasses that regular divers have to deal with still apply to Amphibious Man--such as Amonoton's law, Boyle's Law, Charles Law, Henry's Law, and Haldanian's Theory on gas absorption and elimination by body tissues.

Blood glucose is the only source for carbon when humans dive, which forces muscles to rely primarily on anaerobic glycolysis. This means that oxygen depletion is not the only major problem for those who hold their breath and swim. Blood glucose levels must be attained for underwater swimmers that will sustain activity. Breathing water must assure the proper functioning of the circulatory system.

The high salinity of sea water causes **hyper**tonic reactions in the lungs. Fresh water has too little salt in relation to the human blood & it causes **hypo**tonic reactions. Either way, the water (either fresh or salt) causes the alveolar tissue to damage and the body begins leaking proteins out of the mouth.

Secret naval intelligence researchers tied to the Illuminati studied what happens underwater to the heart rate, cardiac output and stroke volume, blood pressure and flow, the various important organs and the human brain, the muscles and bones and venous circulation, the hemoglobin affinity for O_2, the effect of being submersed on blood gases, how oxygen is stored, and how hemoglobin concentrates in the body.

Another advancement was to discover how to manipulate the genetic codes for the growth of skin, so that very dense skin could be created. The genetics for all types of animals have been spliced and diced and all of weird humans and creatures have been created. Many are freaks and serve the NWO no benefit. One of the big underground facilities for genetic research is Area 51, which is also close to San Diego, where the Seal Teams are HQ. Area 51 is also an important mind-control programming center.

Fritz's *June-July-August Newsletter '95* further discussed the underwater bases, underwater supply depots, underwater mining research, undersea warfare systems, Tektite II, the mind-control research during the Conshelf underwater living experiment, the U.S. Navy underwater research ship the Eagle, Scripps Institution of Oceanography and the Physiological Research Laboratory for Naval Intelligence use, underwater research by Rothschild and Bowers, Remote Controlled Vehicles (RCVs), & CURV (cable-controlled Underwater Recovery Vehicle), and special underwater tools such as the hydraulic underwater saw.

Mind Manipulation

This is a picture of one type of collar used in conjunction with behavior modification techniques to teach obedience to slaves. This collar is shown on a female. One effective device used on males is a battery operated apparatus made of leather and steel which fastens around the legs of the male victim and electroshocks the penis in the urethra canal via an electrode. A programmer can stand at a distance and carry out aversion therapy via a transmitter that triggers the excruciatingly painful shock to the victim, until the correct programming is learned.

CHAPTER 9

THE
SCIENCE OF MIND MANIPULATION BY PSYCHOLOGICAL PROGRAMMING METHODS: BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION & NLP

One way to explain how the slaves are conditioned is to relate an episode where the two authors observed a Satanic family carrying out conditioning to reinforce their children's mind control as their family "ate" at a restaurant. After relating this interesting incident, the chapter will cover the various psychological methods used to condition slaves.

OBSERVATIONS OF A SATANIC FAMILY CARRYING OUT MONARCH CONDITIONING ON THEIR CHILDREN.

The husband of the family was about 28 and the wife was about 26. A young man (perhaps an uncle of the children) about 25 also sat at the table with them. The family had 5 children, ranging from about 1 1/2 years old to about 7 years old. During the entire time we watched them, which was over an hour, we never saw one act of love, not one act of nurturing on the part of the parents. Everything was programming, programming and more programming.

The husband had an attitude of control over his children. He was a young somewhat wild cock-sure type. From piecing together things it was clear that he made a good salary and that he and his wife enjoyed profanity. His wife had the most dead looking eyes we have ever seen in a person. She looked every bit the part of a Satanic priestess of the worst type. The young man of about 25 had very large knife hidden on his back that we noticed only by close observation of his movements. Although it was 1 o'clock, the adults were calling their meal "breakfast."

The main male child was about 5 years old. He had an older sister and two younger sisters, and they all had a baby brother. During the entire time that the family was there, the children ate almost nothing. The 5 yr. boy munched on a watermelon rind, trying to draw some sustenance from it. Part of mind control is depriving the body of food. The poor children never once asked for anything; that is a clue that something wasn't normal.

During most of the time that the family was in the restaurant, the mother and father took turns shooting one question after another at the five year boy. The questions were like: What is the capital of Florida? What is the 70th element on the periodical chart? What are the names of the first five presidents? What is the square root of 121? The boy would roboticly answer each question successfully. The questions were not questions but programming and commands. The mother sternly said, "What make of car was that? That's a question." (Actually what she was saying was a command.) Around this time they said, "Wake up, wake up, wake up." (hypnotic command.)

A couple which was in the restaurant was watching how obedient the children were, and they were also overhearing how excellent this little boy could answer difficult rapid-fire questions. They were impressed and the lady came over to tell the parents how wonderful their family was. After oodling for 10 minutes over how great this family was the woman went on to other things. It was difficult for both of us watching to stomach the compliments this stranger was giving to these parents. The natural impulse was to get her to shut up her compliments. She naively made all these compliments little knowing, that these parents were practicing one of the most hideous if not the most hideous type of mind control invented.

Asking questions rapid fire is another mind-control technique. In fact, all of the elements of what Fritz watched at the table that day were practiced on Fritz, the co-author, when he was in Beast Barracks at West Point, USMA.

The little girl was repeating her programming, "I don't have anything inside me." She was actually singing it. One of the girls had different alters coming out and was having a conversation with herself between different alters (personalities). She placed her hand over her temple in scarecrow fashion (Wizard of Oz) programming. Her head movement was a dead giveaway to those of us familiar with Monarch programming.

The parents had chosen the spot to eat because of the large surreal picture above them on the wall with blue & red flowers, water and mountains. The picture was acting as a scrambling-scattering mechanism, when the boy studied the picture, which he did for the longest time in a trance.

The middle girl was dropping crayons into a styrofoam cup and saying "get into the fire." Then she would say "I'm purple." "I'm pink." "I understand your purple." "I understand you're pink." "Get out of here for a minute." What she was doing was giving the crayons personalities. In the Monarch programming, the person is totally dehumanized so that some alters think they are ribbons, some monkeys, some clowns, some dolls, some trees, some lions or tigers, etc. The sexual alters are often programmed to think of themselves as cats and butterflies. While the girl was coloring, her father reached over the table without warning and took her colors, "You don't deserve these colors and I should have taken them away before now." The girl had done nothing wrong. This is part of mind control. The person learns that there isn't a right or wrong only that they must be obedient. The little girl did not even respond when her colors were yanked away.

When the mom talked to them, she said "children"--she never once personalized things.

The parents began another programming session and said something like, "I will spank you. If you don't count then you can be spanked, we will count 20 times." The constant double messages were obviously breaking down the children to think as programmed rather than respond like normal people to the outside world.

The woman turned to her little baby and said, "Tell daddy good-bye". When the child waved good-bye, the woman snapped, "Your not going anywhere." This serves to create confusion. Then she kissed him and said, "Baby, do you want a picture?"

We decided to say something to them, and we did so in the form of a compliment about their children. Neither parent showed any pride in the children when the earlier lady had gushedly complimented the children, nor when we complimented them with a sentence. Instead, when we complimented the children, the father began shooting off a series of difficult questions to the boy. This was simply more programming, but apparently he must have thought that we'd be impressed with the boy's ability to answer difficult questions that seemed way beyond what many teenagers would know.

Two strange things happened during the course of our verbal interaction with this satanic family. First, the waitresses had given the family free ice cream coupons, but the parents gave them to us without the children even batting an eyelid. Second, I asked the father what the age of his children were and he didn't know, or acted like he didn't know. Then he blurted out, they are 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5 years old. His wife knew that that answer must have looked bogus to us, and she reprimanded him, "You don't even know the age of your children." To which he replied, "Yes, they are 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6." He second answer was equally implausible, but his wife didn't protest, and the poor mind controlled children were experiencing just one more element of Satanic mind-control. They are not even allowed to realize how old they are. Dates, and times, and ages are kept very confused in the children's minds for secrecy and control. Not only that, but by giving a hypnotic induction "1, 2, 3..." the father had lowered each of the alters which were holding the bodies of his children into a deeper trance. With these alters tranced, another word from the father could have easily pulled up other alters.

OTHER ITEMS THAT PARENTS DO TO THEIR MONARCH CHILDREN

Double bind communication is commonly given multiples by all of their abusers. Some of these double binds are well thought out and some just occur due to the craziness of the entire thing. For instance, in ritual or programming, the child may have the option to stab or be stabbed. In fighting the programming, if an alter goes toward health, the programmers have set in a booby-trap. Which evil does the slave live with--the lies of the programming or the lies of the external world? How does one tell the truth to a therapist, when the therapist is not capable of hearing the truth, and yet still demands to be told the truth? Yes, double-binds abound.

Another trick is to alternate leniency with harshness. This trick is done in the military also, and has been worked with success by the Chinese government upon the people of Red China. When leniency is alternated with kindness, the effect is devastating and disconcerting because the person looses the ability to predict what is going to happen. Everyone likes to control his or her life. Predicting what is going to happen is part of a person's mind gaining control over their environment. Even that control is stripped from a slave. They soon learn to quit trying to protect themselves, and they quit trying to think for themselves but docilely submit to whatever fate assigns them. The mind can't figure life out, so it quits trying to understand life, and just fatally submits.

Dr. Green (Mengele) was very gentle when drawing blood, and he was very gentle when giving the children X-rays. He would sweet talk them and give candy. But he was very sadistic when he'd follow this up with abuse. The programmers have preferred to be inconsistent with the children like this. Soon the child doesn't know what hate and love are anymore. The person, who claims he loves them, gives them torture or abandons them to be tortured by someone else.

A third trick is to give the victim monotonous tasks, such as chanting or copying long amounts of written material. This helps prod the dissociation, and is a torture that doesn't leave marks.

AN OVERVIEW

All of the elements of mind control are incorporated into the Monarch program. If a person surveys what the everyday cult mind control which is NOT part of total Monarch mind-control looks like, you will find the same elements of everyday cult control also are employed at various places within the Monarch programming of a person's alter system. (This didn't happen by accident either, the Illuminati have examined all these lesser cults to see what they could borrow for their own mind control.)

Some of the elements which the Monarch program shares with **other** typical types of cult mind control are:

1. THE NEEDS OF INDIVIDUALS ARE PROMISED TO BE MET, BUT ARE IGNORED FOR GROUP GOALS.

The Illuminati handler (master) will promise to meet individual needs of alters, but these needs are ignored for group goals. For instance, certain Monarch alters of a person's system may be told they have no faces and no hearts. They are programmed not to see their faces and not to hear any heart beat. If a pulse monitoring machine is hooked up to the alter, the alter will go into a trance. For instance, the handler might promise faces and hearts but will never give them to the Monarch slave when he could. The promise is a control mechanism.

2. ISOLATION FROM THE WORLD, SO THAT THE ONLY REALITY IS THE LEADER'S REALITY. The Illuminati isolates the slave so new ideas are available or allowed except their cult leader's ideas. "Whatever the Papa Bear [master] says is reality." Each alter will only communicate with a few other alters. What this does is divide the person from their own parts. The will and mind is broken so that there is no organized resistance, nor any access to other alters who might know something. The slave will often be denied mother, grandmother, grandfather, aunts, sisters, children, grandchildren, & friends. They will be deprived of all naturally occurring relationships via the mind control. This doesn't they mean exist in a vacuum, it means that the handlers will prevent natural relationships to develop. Isolation is very key→→and parts are made to feel like animals rather than people to isolate them from humanity. No ideas are allowed the slave to confront their programmer's lies. They are programmed to hate Christ and the God of the Bible, so that they are isolated from the true God and His abundant spiritual resources.

3. THE PERSON'S SENSE OF IDENTITY IS LOST. The Monarch slave lose his/her sense of self to the cult and to the person's master. No sense of where I begin & end, and where the Master begins and ends. The Monarch programming goes beyond what many cult have done, the alters are hypnotized to not see their faces, which is part of their identity.

4. ALTERED STATES & HYPNOSIS IS USED. The handlers/programmers use hypnotic techniques. They induce dissociation by songs, chanting, guilt inducing sessions, torture, isolation, as well as using songs, repeating triggers 3X, and lots of hypnosis.

5. A SENSE OF PEACE IS INDUCED, ESPECIALLY WHEN ONE MERGES WITH WHOEVER IS LEADING. THE HEAD OF THE CULT WILL TAKE CREDIT FOR WHAT THE SLAVE IS. They induce a sense of peace leading to the fantasy of merging with leader, often suggested by leader. Then the victim has the abuser placed internally in them. For example, the master may say he was one with the slave and that he "created" the slave. The handler will claim to be God.

6. OUT OF BODY EXPERIENCES. Out of body experiences (O-B-E's) are induced by the torture & Illuminati training, as well as splits.

7. SENSORY BOMBARDMENT & FATIGUE. Sensory bombardment used, such as prolonged sleep deprivation, environmental control, and love bombing. Cages, love bombing of certain alters, and a sterile nursery/toddler room are employed.

8. CRITICAL THINKING AND DISAGREEING WITH THE LEADER IS FORBIDDEN. The slave must suspend ability to think critically or disagree with leader. The slave must never question the Master (also called the handler), never get angry at the handler, or else the slave wants to be punished. The slave must always obey or pay with pain. The alters are splintered from others so can't use their information for analysis.

9. The slave must reorganize reality through identification with aggressor (Illuminati master). Strong identification is created with the master. The slave is programmed to protect the master.

10. Individual sees locus (location) of control with the Master and the Illuminati rather than self. Programming overrules self.

11. Black and white thinking is created by the programming.

Many of the Gnostic cults (see the

Fritz's *Be Wise As Serpents* book for an examination of what a Gnostic cult is) have employed these tactics. People in the Jehovah's Witnesses and CUT, which are Gnostic cults, as well as members of many other groups--such as the CIA will recognize that these methods were used on them. (The CIA is in reality just another cult, and an Illuminati-controlled cult at that.)

ISOLATION

For children who are being taken out of Day Care Centers and programmed without their parents knowledge, they will be isolated from their real parents. The abusers will tell the children that they are actually the "real parents" and that they intend to come and take the child away from its parents later. They will make the innocent child feel like it is cut off and rejected by everyone including the world at large. In a sense, this is true, because the child is expected to endure the most horrible abuse and yet has no one to talk to. Feelings of isolation and despair take control over the child's mind. These ways of thinking are also spiritually enhanced by rituals to bring in demonic spirits that will help insure the child is dominated by feelings of hopelessness.

During the entire life of the slave, the handlers and programmers are always trying to sow distrust in the victim. The programming is often designed to sow distrust in everyone on the outside except the godlike figure the Master. Even the Master is not trusted so much as feared and obeyed by the slave.

The slave is also subjected to isolation as a child being placed into freezers, closets, dark rooms, boxes and isolation tanks. Sensory deprivation is a serious thing, that has been discovered to cause people to hallucinate. The brain goes into an altered state just from sensory deprivation. Polar explorers who see only white for days on end must deal with this danger.

HANDWRITING MODIFICATION

Psychology developed over the years a number of projective, objective and subjective tests of personality. Ludwig Klages (of Germany), H.J. Eysenck (of England), and M.N. Bunker (of the U.S.) are some of the notable researchers who took handwriting analysis out of the occult realm and into the scientific realm. (The co-author, Fritz, happens to be a certified Graphoanalyst through IGAS, who has done Graphoanalysis professionally. IGAS has strict standards not to allow members to do anything associated with the occult, but insists they keep their work on a scientific basis.)

When a person writes, he will use about 200 separate muscles in the hand, arm, and body. The mind coordinates all these muscle movements. A good handwriting analyst has about 800 different things that he can look for in a sample of handwriting, such as how hard did the writer write with his instrument, how big, where did he start on the paper, how did he cross his "t" etc. In other words, the mind in order to write had to make hundreds of decisions within seconds. There are too many decisions to make them all the decisions consciously. This is why document examiners can authenticate signatures. Most of the many decisions as one writes are done subconsciously, and the decisions are influenced by state of mind, personality, the state of the physical body, and the environment.

The good handwriting analyst is able to work backwards. Why was the decision made to make the capital P look like an L? Why did the person start their writing half-way into the paper and waste half the piece of paper? Through scientific studies and observations, a vast wealth of understanding has developed by graphologists about why certain decisions are made. Some graphologists use a wholistic method, others like graphoanalysts, analyze each stroke. Both methods will give the same results if the handwriting analyst is skilled at applying the principles of graphology.

Handwriting analysis has not gotten the credibility it deserves, in part, because it is such a powerful diagnostic tool, the intelligence agencies have wanted to keep it to themselves. However, the nation of Israel, uses handwriting analysis to hire with, and a high percentage of the businesses use it in hiring also. The nation of Israel has had a high rate of success with handwriting analysis.

How does handwriting analysis play a part in the mind control? Several ways. A number of the programmers are skilled in handwriting analysis. They are well aware that the abuse of their slaves will show in the handwriting. Through behavior modification (usually torture) the front alters are trained to write in a fashion that hides the abuse. The abuse will show in the handwriting of most of the alters, so many of them are programmed not to read or write. This is why some of the child alters will have older alters write for them.

The programmers were also aware of how the mind heals/changes itself via handwriting therapy. If the mind will place enough energy into writing a particular way--it will go ahead and put enough energy into becoming what it writes. In other words, if I am lazy, but I get determined enough to focus the brain so that it doesn't make handwriting strokes that indicate laziness, then my brain will also change its lazy attitude in other ways. In other words, I can begin to change a personality trait by working on the handwriting decisions that stem from that trait. The programmers can and do help modify their slaves' personalities this way.

They of course will employ a number of personality changing techniques as a group package. The goal is to bring as much pressure to bear as possible to get the original trait modified. This will be done in accordance with the programming goals for the various alters within a system. Remember, some alters need to be outgoing and other reticent, some melancholic, and others sanguine or choleric. The programmers know what they want and how to modify what they have to get the temperament and personality traits they want.

BEHAVIOR MOD (MODIFICATION)

Behavior modification comes in various packages. One package has been called ELT (Electrolytic Trtmt) developed by H.C. Tien.

One simple version of behavior mod is to find out what someone has done which is good, and praise and reinforce that behavior. Then state the goal. And then continue to reinforce promptly the good things the person is doing. The goal in mind must be measurable. An example of this, might be for a handler to praise his kitten and to purchase it nice things if a client is satisfied with the sexual service he got. The reinforcement needs to be soon, and appropriate.

"Thinking behavior" is a term that behavior mod scientists use. "Adverse conditioning" is another. Anectine, which paralyzes the body and makes one think they are suffocating, can be used for aversion conditioning. The victim is told not to do a particular behavior or else experience discomfort.

When behavior modification is done in programming, you can be sure that there is paper work done to chart the progress. Rather than worry about what a person is thinking, the behaviorist charts a person's behavior and then gives reinforcements of correct behavior (or the opposite adverse rewards of punishment) to modify it. Victims are conditioned to carry out certain behaviors.

If an alter does something wrong, there is an immediate consequence set up for it. Soon it is conditioned not to do what the programmer doesn't want.

The behavior mod scientists believe that creativity can be controllable. When a child creates a new form he is rewarded. Soon the child learns to create.

Illuminati Delta-Beta alters will be trained in espionage. They will be trained to recognize a person's physical identity instantly. One method of training which has been used is to teach people to remember reflexively rather than analytically. Thousands of faces or thousands of license plates, or whatever are flashed on a screen, and when a repeat is shown the person must press a button. If a mistake is made, the slave is treated to a nasty little shock. After a while a person develops the correct reflexes. Slaves are being trained in recognition from the time they are small children, this is important so that they can build their internal worlds with mirror images and other confusing things.

The following "deeper" programming is an example of classical conditioning. The child's hand is cut so that the child goes into a trance of shock, and then each time they use the word "deeper" they cut deeper to enhance the shock/trance state. By pairing the word with this trauma, when they are through, the word "deeper- asleep" will throw some alters instantly into a very deep trance.

PSYCHOLOGICAL MOTIVATION

When a person has been knocked down and degraded, traumatized by poor sleep and little food and water, he is more susceptible to suggestion. He can then be told that he himself is the cause for his own degradation. If he just behaves betters, his treatment will improve. When the person accepts his guilt for the bad situation he is in, then the programmers give a target for the blame--God, country, or whatever the person had depended upon. The programmer then aggravates these hostile feelings, and keeps nurturing them until the person is livid with anger toward the object of blame. The victim is coached to project their blame onto this target of blame. When this is accepted, the conditions for the victim improve. Once the person has targeted their blame, then the Programmer becomes the friend to help one fight the evil target. Anything and everything is rationalized in this "All becomes fair in war." Enemies are easy to create. People readily accept them. The intelligence community has long played on people's fears about communism. People might be shocked to realize that this was one of Hitler's favorite methods to recruit loyalty from people. It is why the Nazi's secretly burned down the Reichstag, and then blamed the communists. The Illuminati are masters at making Christianity the fault for everything from homosexual suicide to the world wars.

NEURO-LINGUISTIC PROGRAMMING

NLP means Neuro-Linguistic Programming, which are practical communication skills. Programmers were using NLP before it became known as NLP in 1976. Some NLP techniques are obvious truths, and some are more subtle truths in dealing with human nature. NLP can be more of an art, than a science.

One of the truths in NLP is "Everyone lives in their unique reality built from their sense impressions and individual experiences of life, and we act on the basis of what we perceive our model of the world." (O'Connor, Joseph & John Seymour. *Introducing NLP*. San Francisco, CA: Aquarian Press, 1993, p.4.) That is why alters have their worlds created by their programmers, and then the occult alters are indoctrinated with satanic beliefs. (Chap. 11 Part A deals with this indoctrination.)

Let's list some other "assumptions" that NLP practitioners believe in without explaining them:

- Almost all communication is non-verbal.
- Knowledge of content is not required to make behavioral changes.
- Our internal representation of the world is not the world but only our own feeble map of it. The map is not the territory.
- People will choose predicates which correspond to what representational system they are using, and which one they choose can be seen from eye accessing cues.

If one studies NLP, one will find that NLP books such as *Basic Techniques Book II* by Clifford Wright, teach people how to create dissociative states which are alternate personalities, and that they teach people how to develop different states of mind, and pseudo multiple personalities. It is difficult to express all the different cross-overs that NLP has with

Monarch Programming, but at different times the concepts of NLP certainly would be helpful to the handlers. However, it must be stressed that **NLP IS NOT Monarch Programming.**

One of NLP's suggestions is that a person assess their "present state" and their "desired state." This simply common sense suggestion is often carried out during programming. The Programmer will tell the victim WHAT KIND of alters they want produced and HOW MANY when they begin the torture. The motivation to do this is also suggested by NLP and is accomplished by the programmers threats to the person's life, and by the person's desire to be free of pain and torture.

Milton Erickson's work on altered states has been picked up by NLP. Likewise, at least part of the programming hypnosis is based on Erickson's ideas.

CLUES FOR OBSERVING A VICTIM

Lateral Eye Movement (LEM) can be a useful skill to the programmer. Monarch victims are sometimes programmed so that the real LEM is not done publicly by the victim, to prevent people from getting visual clues as to what is going on in their mind. A person who is thinking in visual images will generally speak more quickly and at a higher pitch than someone who is not. These types of clues help the Programmers be more skilled, but it isn't a necessity.

ANCHORS

NLP researchers have noticed that people have emotional states in which the entire body will take up a posture in carrying it out. Memories can come into a person that causes the body to take up the negative states again.

The NLP practitioners have developed language which includes such terms as Anchors, emotional states, and triggers. These words are used to describe ideas that have long been in use.

For instance, let's say that when you heard a particular song at some point in your life you were having a good time (emotional state). Now that every time you receive a trigger to that memory, such as the song, you regain that good feeling that is attached to the memory of the song. Every time you hear the song, you feel good, which then in turn, continues to act as reinforcement of the association of a good feeling to the song. A stimulus that is linked to and triggers a physiological state or emotional state is called an anchor.

Our lives are filled with naturally occurring anchors, such as our favorite childhood smells, or the alarm clock. One of the Illuminati kingpins in Germany, a Krupp, liked the smell of manure, and built his house so he could smell horse manure all day.

NLP is the art of building associations with an anchor. A past emotion can be linked to something today. If a person is afraid of public speaking, then a good feeling can be linked to giving talks. The skilled programmer will anchor an emotion with several sense cues--including auditory, visual, and touch.

The person visualizes an emotional state from the past. When the state is reaching its peak, the anchor is placed in. The anchor needs to be unique, distinctive, & easy to repeat in the exact form that it was done. Much of the trauma-based programming is actually setting anchors using extreme trauma. When the anchors are tested (fired), if the emotional state is pulled up, then the anchors have worked.

Firing two separate anchors at once is called collapsing anchors. Two separate states can be fired at once. There is a methodology for collapsing anchors together.

FUTURE PACING

Future pacing can be used to help program a person toward his occupational objective which was charted for the victim when they were small. Future pacing is a mental rehearsal that is practiced in the imagination so that the person can deal with some future challenge. Expectations can often become self-fulfilling prophecies.

NLP also is used to teach people how to learn. It teaches people to learn a variety of methods for a single skill. However, this type of self-help info is not freely given to the slave. It might be used if the programmers needed to develop the person hypnotically in a certain direction.

PACING FOR HYPNOSIS

Because Milton Erickson stands out as a genius among those who have used hypnosis, and people are still trying to figure out fully what he did, it is appropriate to mention his work. We don't know how these ideas of Milton Erickson's are used by the Programmers. We do know that the CIA has paid close attention to his ideas, and that some of the Programmers have some of the smoothest tongues. If there is some way to utilize Erickson's work to help control Mind-controlled slaves, then the Intelligence agencies have no doubt found it. On the flip side, several de-programmers used Ericksonian methods to unlock the programming of the people they want to help. What we describe in this section is just a small sampling of Erickson's methods.

Another type of NLP pacing besides the one just previously mentioned was developed by Milton Erickson. He would gain rapport with anyone by describing to them what they were feeling, hearing and seeing. He would induce a peaceful state by speaking slowly, using a soft tonality, and pacing his speech to the person's breath. Gradually hypnotic suggestions are introduced to lead them into what is called "downtime." He would gently encourage people with gentle suggestions such as, "It's easy to close your eyes whenever you wish to feel more comfortable..." But you may wonder how can anyone know what someone else is thinking? Erickson developed language that was vague enough for people to match their own thinking to what he described. He would use smooth transitional words such as "while", "and", and "as". The type of vague sentences he would say are "It is well known that people can read books and make changes."

Milton Erickson learned to distract the dominant brain hemisphere, and also speak in a complex way that all seven (plus or minus two parts of the conscious mind) would get engaged in trying to figure out what his ambiguous statements meant.

Milton found that he could say anything if he set it up in the context of someone else saying it. He also found that the unconscious mind does not process the linguistic negative. Rather than tell a child "Don't fall" tell it "Be careful."

REFRAMING WITH METAPHORS

Metaphors, some from Druidism or from some other occult teachings, are used by the Programmers. For instance, the seasonal changes that leaves on trees make is an example of a programming metaphor.

For those readers who don't know what reframing is, the following in the book *Reframing, Neuro-Linguistic Programming and the Transformation of Meaning* by Bandler and Grinder (Moab, UT: Real People Press, 1982) is an excellent story to explain it:

"A very old Chinese Taoist story describes a farmer in a poor country village. He was considered very well-to-do, because he owned a horse which he used for plowing and for transportation. One day his horse ran away. All his neighbors exclaimed how terrible this was, but the farmer simply said 'Maybe.'

"A few days later the horse returned and brought two wild horses with it. The neighbors all rejoiced at his good fortune, but the farmer just said 'Maybe.'

"The next day the farmer's son tried to ride one of the wild horses; the horse threw him and broke the leg. The neighbors all offered their sympathy for his misfortune, but the farmer again said 'Maybe.'

"The next week the conscription officers came to the village to take young men for the army. They rejected the farmer's son because of his broken leg. When the neighbors told him how lucky he was, the farmer replied, 'Maybe.'

The meaning of an event depends upon the FRAME we place upon it. Those frames are perceptions. **Occult fairy tales are great for reframing events.** A frog turns into a prince. Rudolf's embarrassing red nose becomes a guiding light to bring happiness to people.

Many of the common things in our everyday life are reframed by the Programmers to have hidden mind-control meanings. The Teddy Bear the child is given by her Daddy is to remind her how helpless she is to prevent him from raping her. The carousel toy is to remind the child of dissociation and the internal carousel built into the mind. Many of the things that parents, who are intentionally raising a programmed child, do, look nice on the outside unless one can reframe what they are doing in the context of total-mind-control based on trauma and fear.

Reframing can be done by collapsing anchors. For instance, the sober part of an alcoholic and the drunk state of the alcoholic are given the same anchor and then these are collapsed together to get the drunk to stay sober. The two states are taken in a process of integration for the reframing to occur. Reframing someone with MPD is almost impossible without integration, but reframing a particular alter with metaphors is not out of reach. The programmers have much more chance to reframe while they program than the therapist, because the programmers set in defensive programs to prevent other's from reframing.

POWER WORDS, REVERSALS, & PUNS

In NLP, 7 senses are taken into consideration. First we see, then we hear, and finally we have the senses of internal kinetics and our emotions. The Programmer also takes into consideration what are called "power words". Those are words which have specific meaning for the person.

The programmers also love to use reversals and puns, for instance in Disney's Ducktales the character says, "I stole 'em fair and square." Other typical reversals are "Life is death, and death is life", "Pain is love, and love is pain." Another example is one used on Cathy O'Brien, where the words "Service Entrance" were used to mean "Serve us. En-Trance." Naming an alter "Allison Wonderland" --a pun on Alice in Wonderland-- is another example of a programming pun. The programmers love to use these types of things.

THE MIND'S NATURAL ALARM CLOCK.

The programmer's have made use of the mind's natural ability to wake itself up like an "alarm clock" if it wants. Slaves may be given the coded message that the draconian enforcer will come by to pick them up at 1 a.m. The slave will automatically wake up in the middle of the night, and in a trance like a sleep walking, a deep LGP alter will take the slave out to the street to be picked up. Many slaves are being used at night without their families suspecting anything.

Sleeping patterns are also related to personality. REM sleep is believed to help restore the effectiveness of certain brain pathways in which norepinephrine is a transmitter substance. By programming different alters to have certain sleep patterns, their personalities can be adjusted. Of course this is done in conjunction with many other aspects of mind control.

The RIGHT BRAIN & the UNCONSCIOUS.

The Programmers are also aware that right-handed people use their left brain hemisphere for highly conscious processess which require good attention, focus & intentional decisions; while their right brain will tend to work on the unconscious & automatic chores. Split brain programming takes this contrast into account.

Spirit Manipulation

THE SPIRITUAL FOUNDATION FOR PROGRAMMING LAID BY THE PROGRAMMERS ARE THE GENERATIONAL SPIRITS WHICH ARE LAID IN THE WOMB & INTRODUCED TO THE CHILD WHEN VERBAL AS THE CHILD'S "FRIEND" & "SPIRIT GUIDE". A CLAN'S GUIDING SPIRIT IS ALSO CALLED A TOTEM. THE KEEPERS OR GUARDIANS PROTECT THE SPIRITS WITHIN AN ILLUMINATI SYSTEM. THERE WILL BE ONE ALTER WHICH KNOWS ALL THE DEMONS WHICH HAVE BEEN LAYERED IN.

FROM THE AGE OF FIVE, THE CHILD'S CULT PARTS WILL BE TAUGHT THE GENEALOGICAL HISTORIES OF THEIR SPIRIT GUIDES. AT THE AGE OF 12, SOME CANDIDATES FOR AMER. TRIBAL CHIEFS HAD TO WAIT IN THE WILD FOR THEIR TOTEM TO GUIDE THEM. THEY MUST REMAIN IN THE FOREST UNTIL THEIR GUIDING SPIRIT APPEARS. THIS IS WHY THE ILLUMINATI STUDY THE XIBALIAN MYSTERIES WRITTEN IN THE POPOL VUH.

An Ordo Saturnus Ritual. Drawing done by Fritz Springmeier based on a drawing done by an eyewitness.

CHAPTER 10
THE 10th SCIENCE - USING SPIRITUAL THINGS TO CONTROL A PERSON.

Saving this chapter for last (of the mind, body, spirit chapters) is like saving the best wine for last. The authors know first hand that the Illuminati fears more than any other information getting out, that the spiritual aspects of programming would be revealed.

This chapter has been organized into the following parts: a. using spiritual principles against a person, b. how the Monarch program miniaturizes what is done on a larger scale, c. dehumanization, d. fear, e. the use of guilt, shame & ridicule & anger f. teaching that the master is God, g. portals, focal points, h. vows & oaths, i. the use of demon possession, layering etc., j. the use of angel alters, k. the use of Scripture, l. Theta programming.

The 10th science includes some of the most secret elements of the Monarch programming, and certainly some of the most controversial. Psychologists and psychiatrists are an unlikely group to delve into demonology, although there have been a number of studies done in this area. Six examples of such studies:

- **Braude, S.E. (1988). "Mediumship and multiple personality." Journal of the Society for Psychical Research, 55, 177-195.**
- **Krippner, S. (1987). "Cross-cultural approaches to multiple personality disorder: Practices in Brazilian spiritism." Ethos, 15, 273-295.**
- **Rodgers, R.L. (1991). "Multiple personality and channeling." Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry, 9, 3-13.**
- **Rogo, D.S. (1987). "The spiritual side of multiple personality." In D.S. Rogo, The infantile boundary: A psychic look at spirit possession, madness, and multiple personality (pp. 243-246). New York: Dodd, Mead, and Co.**
- **Ronquillo, E.B. (1991). "The influence of 'Espiritismo' on a case of multiple personality disorder." Dissociation, 4, 39-45.**
- **Smith, R.D. (1981). "Hypnosis, multiple personality, and magic: A case study." Voices: the Art and Science of Psychotherapy, 17, 20-23.**

The Gamma programming is the secret layering in of demons. However one wants to describe these demons--the victim has to deal with their "reality". The ceremonies to demonize the victim occur even before they are born. Generational spirits are very important to determine how the Programmers program a person. But this 10th science goes way beyond just demonology, because it deals with the fundamental issues that effect our views of God, our fellowship with Almighty God, and our view of the occult sciences of astral projection, ESP, telepathy, etc.

PART A. THE USE OF SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLES TO ISOLATE THE SYSTEM FROM GOD.

In the course of deprogramming Monarchs, and rubbing shoulders with programmers, it became clear that the programmers of the Monarch program are fully aware of the spiritual principles which are in operation for everyone. In 1930, a leader of one of the groups which today carries out trauma-based mind-control, wrote that the occult masters are not interested in uplifting the souls of men, but that "These Masters...have in reality no interest in soul or astral development, except as a means of forming passive illuminized **tools, completely controlled in mind and actions**." The Monarch victims of today are the tail end of centuries of efforts by the Kaballists, Freemasons, and the Illuminati adepts to completely control other human beings.

The following quote comes from a communist manual on how to brainwash a nation. It could just have well been written by Monarch Mind-Control Programmers.

"The first thing to be degraded in any nation is the state of Man, himself. Nations which have high ethical tone are difficult to conquer. Their loyalties are hard to shake, their allegiance to their leaders is fanatical, and what they usually call their spiritual integrity cannot be violated by duress. It is not efficient to attack a nation in such a frame of mind. It is the basic purpose of [mind-control] to reduce that state of mind to a point where it can be ordered and enslaved. Thus, the first target is Man, himself. He must be degraded from a spiritual being to an animalistic reaction pattern. He must think of himself as an animal, capable only of animalistic reactions. He must no longer think of himself, or of his fellows, as capable of 'spiritual endurance,' or nobility...

"As it seems in foreign nations that the church is the most ennobling influence, each and every branch and activity of each and every church, must, one way, or another, be discredited. Religion must become unfashionable by demonstrating broadly, through pyschopolitical indoctrination, that the soul is non-existent, and that Man is an animal."

Later this chapter will describe how a person is dehumanized.

One spiritual principle is that if you can get a person angry at God, you can get that person to commit any sin. Great effort is taken, via staged events to make the victim being programmed certain that God has rejected them. For instance, some victims had someone play God and walk away from them when they needed help in a life & death situation. The 1980 Hollywood movie Altered States, which is about a university professor in the 1960s who experiments with mind-altering drugs and sensory deprivation tanks, shows some scenes where God turns into a goat. Some of the religious scenes in this movie, match some of the anti-God/religious programming of some Monarch slaves. The Monarch slaves are repeatedly warned that God is cruel and judgmental, and that He wants to destroy them for the wicked things they have done. Bible verses that tell of the wrath of God & God's anger are read to the victim.

An example of how the slave is programmed to hate God will now be given. A hypnotic drug will be given the victim when they are about 6 years of age. This will relax the person and allow the programmers to take the child into the deepest trance, so that the programming will be sure to enter into the very fiber of the child's being. After several hours of being in a deep trance, as the drug begins to wear off, the child will be strapped very secure into a tight fitting coffin. A man with long white hair, and a long robe, with sandals, staff and a white robe will present himself before the child, and announce that he is "God the great I AM". Then "God" will look in a big book and announce he cannot find the person's name so he will have to send the person to hell for being bad. The coffin will then be lowered into a deep pit---like a mine shaft, and the victim will be told that when they can no longer hear God's voice that they will be a cat and not human. God can't find them in the book because they have no soul, and are a cat. Deeper and deeper the child is lowered. They are told this is the penalty for having tried to pray to God.

The programmers make sure that the slave is implicated in many gross sins, such as the murder of innocent children, in order to insure that the person is sure that God hates them. Then the victim is told that God is a consuming wrath who hates them. The injustice of God creating a world of suffering is also taught to the slave. All this is to insure that the victim hates God. That hatred toward God will express itself in the victim's system's willingness to do any sin, without conscience.

PART B. THE MONARCH PROGRAMMING IS A MINIATURIZATION OF WHAT WAS BEING DONE TO ENTIRE PEOPLES OR CITIES

Demons are attracted by the "scent" of people. We are made in the image of God, and we are attractive prey to those who hate God Almighty. Cities are magnets for demons.

When demons target a person or people, a common tactic is to make trouble for the person. When a person's problems reach a crescendo, they will be in a state of mind to grab any solution that is passing by. People then make pacts with demonic forces. They sell their souls hoping for relief from their problems. All this is clear as a bell to the spiritually enlightened, but the demonic forces are able to dull the senses of their victims to the point they no longer have the slightest realization that they have sold their souls. People make a choice to accept the falsehood offered by the demons for their relief, rather than stick with the truth which seems to hurt. The demonic lies may be that colds and flues are caused by evil spirits--when in reality they are caused by viruses and bacteria. Or the opposite type of lie may be given--that demonic forces have no influence over disease, that only viruses and bacteria exist. In Africa, modern medicine is often viewed as White Man's magic, because they fight disease with incantations which the demons have taught them to use to cure their problems.

Authority to demons is transferred to them by festivals, ceremonies and pilgrimages. Strong demonic manifestations usually occur around festivals, ceremonies, rituals and pilgrimages which are being done everyday around the world. These ceremonies and rituals are welcome mats for demonic forces giving them the right to rule. Every area of the world has them. And often demonic signs and wonders occur at these rituals and ceremonies.

The power of a lie has to be preserved and fueled by tradition, which is manifested via rituals. Without tradition the power of the lie would die out. If the tradition is being rejected by a people, the demons often augment it with "new" deceptions. The first lie doesn't stand a chance. The pre-existing bondage then is strengthened by new deceptions that seem more appropriate.

If you were asked now, "HOW DOES SATAN ENSLAVE PEOPLE?" you should know the answer because it was just given it to you.

The answer is Satan's control is trauma-based. A trauma is applied to the lives of people. They reach out for some type of answer to the trauma, and the demons offer some type of answer--so many Hail Marys, or so many sacrificed cats, or pray to some idol which is a disguised demon. The lies are turned into myths which the people believe. The myths are a blurring of reality which the people on one level may know are false, but their minds can't break loose of the power of the lie. The power of the myths are fueled by tradition and demonic manifestations and demonic attacks. Anyone who steps outside of the demonic lie is attacked. The people feel they are being personally attacked when their traditions are ignored. Because a people has willingly sacrificed the truth for the falsehood in their need for relief from their trauma, they have chosen to be deceived. This choice to be deceived has a great deal of spiritual power to it. They are no longer truth-lovers. It is not enough to come to these people with the truth. They have rejected the truth. They must at some point will to seek the truth again. These people can have all the proof shown to them about the truth, and they will continue to reject it. Their demonic bondage needs to be broken somehow.

This bondage can be broken in a number of ways. Pointing out the inadequacies of the lies is sometimes sufficient to break the demonic spell over people. But after the lies are broken, they need to be followed by the truth--and the love of truth.

The Monarch Mind Control programming is simply the sophisticated application of what has been done to humanity on a large scale being scaled down and applied to a single human body. Trauma and lies are used in the same way. The different alters sell their souls to the lies in return for their safety. A basic ingredient to the programming of a group of people (or a group of alters) is the same--trauma and fear.

The Land of Oz was ruled by a shadow-leader, the Wizard of Oz. Most countries are ruled by unseen people and unseen powers. The Wizard of Oz story is so representative of how life is for Satan's world. No wonder it is the programming base for so many Monarch mind-controlled slaves.

The solution to Satan's control, was that the disciples of Christ would be so united in love that the world would see the solution. "That they all may be one...that the world may believe." For the Monarch slaves, the therapists have wanted integration. For the world, Christ wanted integration. But there are formidable spiritual strongholds which divide us. These spiritual strongholds are far stronger than most Christians can imagine. The heartbeat of the Body of Christ is to bring all humanity to their Creator God. This can be done by breaking down all the lies and programming that separate the parts of the Body of Christ so that those of Christ are so well integrated in love and spirit that the world believes on the power of Christ.

Each of the programming acts has a spiritual, mental, and physical side to it. The slave has his or her will stripped from them so it becomes unnecessary to think in terms of their guilt--they are slaves who no longer have the freedom of choice. If they kill, or steal, or tell an untruth (lie), they have not done it intentionally. Still the Programmers know that there are spirits involved to spiritually prepare the slave to do these acts. For instance, they implant Spirits of Greed and lust into the victim. An Illuminati value system is drilled into the victim.

Any person who is not taught to dedicate personal rights and possessions to God, will end up with all types of surface forces such as insecurity, worry, anger, envy, jealousy and tension. This goes for multiples or non-multiples. These surface forces will in turn cause all types of surface weaknesses such as lying, stealing, cheating, and arguing. If these surface weaknesses are displayed by anyone, they are evidence that a deeper spiritual problem exists. However, the slave is not being set up to display these vulnerabilities as they will, but ONLY as they are programmed. An Illuminati Beta model can have sex only with who her master allows her to have sex with. Nor is she granted the privilege of refusing to sexually service someone. If the slave is allowed free will, they often will reject the life style programmed into them. The reason they can reject the Spirits of Seduction & Lust that have been layered in to insure that these moral weaknesses exist, is because the will of the alter being programmed was being coerced. There was duress involved. Satan has some claim, but not the stronghold that comes from those whose active will is involved in a sin. That doesn't mean that some slaves don't develop a taste for their perversion.

The point is that the ability to have these personality weaknesses, should the programmers want them, can be spiritually set into the slave by teaching the slave to resist the grace and love of God. It may be shocking to realize that the slaves are specifically programmed to resist God's grace and love, and to hate Him. This is not left to chance, and is accomplished by a number of events in the slave's life.

Another spiritual area that is tampered with is the self-image of the person. They are not allowed to think of themselves as made in the image of God (unless they are front alters created or allowed to be Christian). Instead of allowing the victim to learn about Jesus, the victim is consistently belittled and compared to others. This is in violation of a spiritual principle found in 2 Corinthians 10:12, "For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise." John 5:44 and 2 Cor. 10:17,18 teach how it is to be done correctly.

Fritz, co-author, knows of one programmer who is still programming who is fully aware of these scriptures and how they apply spiritually. When people are not allowed to accept themselves, they end up resisting the will of God. The wrong attitudes are built into the slave, so that they will always resist the will of God. Again if the programmers want a Christian front, they may program the correct thinking into the front alter. To do this doesn't threaten their hold on the system in the least. To have Satanic alters and Christian alters which are diametrically opposed to each other's thinking only insures that if they would discover each other in the mind, that they would reject wanting to learn about the other part, and would go into denial of the part's existence.

The programming and mind-control is being linked to a belief system. Taking this one step further, we can also say that the programming is also a conflict between two faiths, the faith that the alters place when they visualize and create their occult-system, that is their faith in demonism and magic, versus the faith of those who follow the God of the Bible. The method of creating hard-core Satanic alters from traumatized Christian alters is an obvious example of this. Some secular therapists have been slow to admit this conflict. If we look at the Illuminati's brand of Druidism, we will notice that the *Book of Pheryllt* which is a Druidic book for rituals gives four symbols which can be made to evoke the four elemental forces also called the four basic portals. Visualization is said to be the key to the occult, and to opening portals with these four signs. As the deeper parts of a slave are drawn into such activity, they are in reality placing their faith in that belief system. How can you take something away, without giving something in return? An alternative faith in a God and belief system that is not connected to mind-control is an important therapeutic aid.

You can not hate something passionately if you are unaware of it. When two groups are very similar, in order to high light their individual identity they will have a high level of animosity toward each other. In order to create strong Satanic alters who hate God, the Illuminati actually encourage the young two year old victim to understand and accept the love of God. Upon this faith in a loving God will be built the rejection and trauma to create wounded alters, who hate God because they feel rejected. Rejection is a tool of Satan across the board in the world. Rejection creates a sine wave of hills and valleys. (The way of the Lord is made straight leveling these hills and valleys.) When a person (or nation) is rejected they will often shift to one of two extremes: either they try to perform to meet up to expectations or they will retaliate against rejection. Both are extremes (the hills and valleys of the shadow of death) of the what resembles a sine way.

straight & narrow way
rejection
Performance
knowing who one is in Christ
retaliation

Both rejection and retaliation are tools of bondage. The enemy will work a person to get them to feel either rejected or angry. If either side of the sine wave is latched onto by a person (or nation) they will set in motion a dynamic where they will end up with the other side of the curve. This is because the human mind has an inbred desire to balance things out. If we feel rejection, then we may retaliate or try extra hard to perform. This sets up a BONDAGE LOOP.

The Cabalistic Tree of Life is the knowledge of good and evil--performance. The programmer by repeatedly REJECTING the slave, build into the slave a high level of performance. The slave is not allowed to get angry at the programmer--which is the opposite peak of the sine wave. The human mind will naturally try to balance the performance peak with increasing the anger/retaliation peak to match it in opposite intensity. Because the slave can not get angry at their programmer, they turn this anger inward and upward toward themselves and God.

The performance of the slave for the master is a form of false love. Performance love is false love. "If you do this for me, then I'll love you." Christ loved us when we were yet sinners and unlovable. This is the type of godly true love described by Paul in 1 COR 13 which seeks not its own. Self-preservation is a tool of death. That is one reason Christ did not preserve himself--even though he could have called angels--he wanted to show the world true love. Fear gets its root in death. The threat of death of a spouse, of oneself, of one's dreams, of one's identity, or of one's fleshly body creates fear. Death comes from Satan. Life from Yahweh God. Fear is built on a threat of some kind of death. Self-preservation then is actually based upon fear which is in turn based on death. This is why Christ said one must lose their life to gain it. To escape the satanic bondage loop of self-preservation built on fear, we must reach out for the love of God.

Self-justification is not normally seen by people as a bondage loop, but it often is. Only the sureness that Almighty God loves us gives us the strength not to get caught in the self-preservation tactic of self-justification. There is a place for defending the truth, but it must be done in love. Christ and his disciples taught that we are justified by faith in God--not by self-justification. Self-justification can easily be related to the self-preservation bondage loop. We simply have to have an inner knowing that we are made in the image of God, and that He is working in each of our lives. Since we are His work, He will justify us. All of the Monarch slaves, are a work of God. The cult has simply refashioned what God created. The slave needs to recapture the loving view God has of what He created. God doesn't make mistakes. He has placed lots of beauty and value in each person. Each person is His handiwork, isn't the human body fearfully and wonderfully made? After someone has been made to participate in crimes against humanity, the Programmers intuitively have created a situation where the person may fall into self-justification, for example, "They deserved to die." This is a subtle, but dangerous tool of bondage.

Much of the trauma-based mind-control is based on simple fundamental spiritual life-spiritual death issues. The Spirit of the Lord does not give fear. It comes from the enemy. Abductees, who claim to have met aliens, claim that the aliens feed off of human fear. Fear brings spiritual death. To show this dynamic in another way, let's describe a common thought for alters of Monarch slaves. This thought is "If I stay with the programming I'm safe." This is the same thought that society in general is taught via fear of self-preservation. "If I stay with the crowd, if I stay with the system, then I will be safe." This is why peer pressure, which seems safe, can lead many young people into death. All this fear of self-preservation by remaining in the programming (whether individual or societal) will be transferred to loyalty of the AntiChrist--that is the plan.

The Truth shall set you free. Anytime we reject the truth for safety and peace because of our fear for self-preservation, we accept a lie. If the truth sets a person free, then by definition, slavery means to "not to have truth." All lies lead to bondage. They create strongholds. Many religious groups are built upon a collection of truths and lies. The truths are used as the enticing attractive front, the lies are used as the enslaving bondage. This is why there is almost no end to all the lies used to program Monarch-type trauma-based total Mind-controlled slaves.

An important mind-control programming dynamic is the creation of images. This will take some explaining.

One spiritual dimension of humans is that we like to behold our God. This was built into us. Archeologists have noticed that ancient man has always worshipped. It is built into man to worship, and we like to behold whatever we worship--whether that is God, ourselves, or some other image. In other words, worship is image oriented. This is the power of images. One of the most ignored commandments of God, of which Fritz wrote a book about in 1977, was the commandment God gave "thou shalt **not...make** any likeness of any thing that is heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth." EX 20:4 Students of God's Word are warned to "examine everything carefully; hold fast to that which is good." 1 THES 5:21. What is significant is that God's commandments in Ex. 20, which were a distillation of His laws, could have simply stated "Thou shallt not make any graven image", but instead went on to make a big issue in that same passage about **any image of God's creatures** (the word translated "things" has historically been understood as "living things.") In DT 4:15 "pasal" images--that is images formed out of any material with a tool (ax, chisel, or engraving tool) and the "likeness of male or female" and "similitude of any figure" are forbidden. Next, it again forbids the likenesses of living creatures. The word "image" occurs about 100 times in the Bible, and is usually accompanied by judgements such as "I will cut down...destroy...break down...smote." In a number of verses (EC 7:20, PS 106:29, 39), the scriptures speak about how man is always seeking inventions that provoke God to anger. The creation of images of many varieties was a big part of Egyptian magic, and still is. Because the creation of images is so esteemed today, a balanced view/discussion of the spiritual ramifications of images (& their creation) is a rare subject.

"For the invisible things of Him, from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse." RM 1:20. (cf. ISA 6:3) One ex-Programmer has talked at length, that part of the motivation for the many programming images, is so that they can establish a world built by Satan, because they want to insure that there is no testimony about God's power. (By the way, some deliverance ministries are having success in helping heal victims by pointing out that Satanic programmers only build from elements God has already created.)

Mirrors, and lots of them, are important in occult programming because they make images. They create so many internal images one doesn't know which way to go. Images are lies. We often create false images of the people we want to love. Do we love them or their image? Movie stars are loved for their image, and rarely for who they really are. Some of them have acknowledged that they don't feel loved by their fans, because their fans are only worshipping an image. Again, we must remember THE TRUTH SHALL SET US FREE.

What is our real identity? Who are we really in God's eyes? Why did He allow us to be born? What was His real purpose for us? These real questions which are so hard for so many of us, are the reality that we need in our lives. The bondage of images has yet to be understood.

The word "duplicity" is based on the word duplicate. Machiavelli taught the elite how to rule through duplicity--that is to rule via imitation images. This is nothing more than one of the operational principles of mirror images placed within the Monarch Mind-controlled slaves.

Whatever gives life is duplicated in a mirror image by Satan. Life swallows up death, as the Kingdom of God's genuine light gets progressively brighter. The copy of this is that performance must get progressively better--i.e. technology must change to get better if we are to have life. The Amish show that society's penchant for technological progression, does not improve life. The Amish have a very successful life-style free from divorce and crime. Missionaries to Africa have come back at times wondering if the primitive tribe they spent time with didn't have many things which our technologically advanced society had lost. This doesn't mean that an invention won't help mankind--it is that mankind will not get life from technology. Technology must be understood in the entire context of life. If a person catches onto the lie of technology or performance, they may try the opposite lie--platforming. Many troubled people reach out to God, receive help, and then platform by saying, "Thanks for the help God, but I'm O.K. now." God's love is not performance-based, but we still need to continue to press toward the mark of the high calling of God, transforming and renewing our mind, ever growing spiritually. Things which do not grow are labelled dead. How do we grow without being performance oriented? That is the message that Christ tried to bring people. The programmers get their slaves caught in a performance loop. The slaves are not going to get freedom, if a minister of some church traps them into some religious group that is performance-based, rather than unconditional godly-love based.

It is sad to see victims of mind-control free themselves at great cost, only to run from one controlling group to another. If we neglect to look at the spiritual dimensions of mind-control slavery, we then are neglecting to see some of the elements of total mind-control slavery.

IN SUMMARY, SOME OF THE FIRST THINGS ATTACKED.

What is often the first thing which is attacked in individuals and nations in order to control them? It is their sense of identity as a spiritual moral being. Both individuals and nations are targeted to destroy their ethical self-respect. The individual and the nation must be brought to think of themselves as animals.

Another primary tactic or tool is to traumatize the victim who is to be controlled, and then provide relief when a demonic lie is accepted.

Rejection is an important trauma, because it creates a desire for performance and retaliation, and gets people trapped in a bondage loop. Lies put people into bondage. Images are a type of lie, that lead to bondage. This is why so many images and lies are placed into the Mind-controlled slave. These images and lies are inherently bondage-makers. Fear and self-preservation are grounded in death. To preserve ourselves, we will allow ourselves to be enslaved.

(Eventually, Mind-controlled slaves and society in general in order for peace, safety and self-preservation will transfer their allegiance to the master programmer, the Illuminati's AntiChrist.)

PART C. THE DEHUMANIZATION PROCESS

The dehumanizing of a multiple--that is of a fragmented personality--is done to most of the alters, but the front alters are allowed to be human. Because alters take on the characteristics of what they were created from, the front alters have to be some of the first splits so that they have a sense of family and that they are human. That does not mean that the first series of splits can't be dehumanized later--they are, they are turned into gems (crystals).

How do you make an alter into an animal alter? It may not be quite as difficult as some may imagine, because they can create alters with "clean slates"--that is they are the plain tablets that Dr. White (Dr. D. Ewin Cameron) prided himself that he was able to make out of adult minds. When a part of the mind has no reality to reference, and is tortured and told lies, then it will accept what the programmer says is real.

When an alter is created via torture, if you want a cat alter, they will have the child tortured in a cage surrounded by cats of some type. The new alters will be told they are cats. Their programmers will actually kill a little child in the worst way in front of these alters and tell them that that is what happens to little girls and boys. Do they want to be a little girl? No. After watching the horrible things that happen to little girls, they do not want to be little girls or little boys (as the case may be). They want to be a cat, because as a cat they will not be killed and tortured like the children. The alters are forced to eat like cats with cats. They are repeatedly shamed and degraded and repeatedly told they are cats. Lie detector Instruments are hooked up to the child to determine if the alters actually believe they are cats. When the alter can actually state, "I'm a kitten." or "I'm a tiger." and pass the lie detector test, then the programmers know they have succeeded.

But what if the mind resists being told it is a cat? As long as the child is a girl it is given faeces to eat. But the cats are fed wholesome meals in front of the victim. The little girls in the other cages are dirty and tortured and ill fed. Do you want to be a little girl?

A great deal of simple torture is applied to make sure that the correct answers are given. If your life depended upon saying you were a cat, you'd be a cat too. Further, children have a vivid imagination. Normal children can easily role play, and they can easily imagine they are something they aren't, because their personalities and egos have not solidified.

Again nothing is left to chance. A fake blood transfusion of cat blood may be given the child. Very often high speed films of kittens playing and having fun are shown in one eye, while the other eye is forced to few little girls having to undergo the worst of tortures. This viewing is forced upon the child, as its eyes are held open and the child is strapped into a viewing chair.

The dehumanization process will make alters into various types of birds, cats, dogs, aliens, horses, earth elements, gemstones, rocks, and countless other items. They will then place in back up programming to insure that the alters continue to believe they are not human. The ingenuity of the back up programming to ensure that they continue to believe the lies are extensive and ingenious. A great deal of hypnosis, and drug induced states, and drug-hypnosis is used to carry out the dehumanization process.

The programming will be reinforced by a cat alter's environment, because the alter's handlers will always refer to them as kittens or other types of cats.

The painful rape of a child with its legs held in a butterfly configuration is used to get butterfly alters.

To get a puppet, the body is given a drug which paralyzes the child. Then electroshock is applied to certain muscles upon the command of the programmer. The effect is that the child has no control over his body, and the programmer can make the child's body parts jerk and move by electro-shocking the muscles. The child actually becomes the puppet of the programmer. This is a very powerful program. One of the names connected with Monarch programming is Marionette Programming. The child literally becomes a Marionette. This concept appears to have been cooked up by the Germans under Hitler.

An alter System as a child is physically shown that they are a marionette puppet. Their muscles are electro-shocked in such a way as to take advantage of the natural reflexes. When electro-shocked that way, the victim's body parts jerk out of our control at the whim of the programmer to prove to the victim that they are a puppet. At this time, the rules are given and rule number 8 is that the alters are their puppet. Illuminati programmer Dr. Mengele, used puppets in a dollhouse as he programmed. He did skits with his puppets. "Dance Marionette dance," he'd say in his thick german accent. Pinocho's story was used to name the spirit guide Jimney Cricket.

Along with rule no. 8, he taught the following rules at this point:
1. Listen to your instructions., 2. There is no room for error., 3. "The Game Timer"--these were the specifics of how to move, the melted mirror, etc., 4. There is a chain of command,

the King's men., 5. Your Master would chart your course., 6. You will receive orders, what to do, a memorized script to follow and fulfill., 7. The Creator and Master would always own you into infinity., 8. You are puppets on a string. "Dance Marionette dance. You are to speak only those words told to you, and to only speak those words when your string is pulled., 9. There is no room for questions., 10. The controller always plays the role of the White Rabbit.

Dark side alters of a System are taught to know these rules as part of their being.

Dr. Joseph Mengele (known as Dr. Green) carried a violin, which was used during programming. He programmed slaves to respond to the key word "Fiddler".

During programming, the victim will be made to believe that all their insides have been removed and tape recorders placed into them and surgically hooked up. To the child being programmed this is real. This is part of the dehumanization process to protect them from spiritual growth and freedom. The programmers' dehumanization parallels what is done in the army when the drill sergeant yells at the new recruits names such as "maggot" and "worm".

PORCELAIN FACE PROGRAMMING

The Porcelain Face Programming was already touched on earlier in chapters 2 & 7 when the fire tortures and Gatekeeper alters were written about. Fire torture and melted wax is used to make the child victim believe their face has been burned. Then the programmer generously gives the traumatized alters a porcelain mask. The alter getting the Porcelain face may be given a "gem" hypnotically like Jade and that becomes their secret name. There are several different methods that are available to lay in the porcelain face programming. There has been a great deal of porcelain casts made of people's faces and then masks made of them. In fact, when a handler dies, at least in one case the replacement handler wore a mask to look like the previous handler. Human baby skin is used to construct a mask from the victim's facial cast. A mask is worn by the Illuminati victim when they are married to the AntiChrist.

The Porcelain Masks are often part of the Camelot & Shakespeare programming. Another use of porcelain masks which was only experimented with was to place masks on Pawn alters which were used as alters who would guard things by scaring other alters with their fearful porcelain countenances.

This programming has spiritual ramifications, because it is one of the programming methods to steal alters of their faces. The alters getting porcelain face programming will only see a porcelain face in the mirror until the programming is taken down. As long as the computer on their level is operating the programming to that alter will be intact.

HEARTS OF STONE

The programmers leave no stone unturned when they strip the alters of a system of any vestige of humanity they might have.

The programmers make the alters believe that the programmers have surgically removed their hearts & replaced them with a stone.

To reinforce this programming the victim is hypnotized to fall into a deep trance if at any time the victim's deeper alters are hooked up to anything monitoring the heart. If and when someone tried to prove that these alters have a heart by taking their pulse, they may be surprised when these alters trance deep enough that the machine doesn't even read. This is how the programming keeps the lies safe from exposure.

The Programmers will hypnotically take the hearts for a number of reasons. One is blackmail. They will promise to return the hearts, if the victim obeys, returns home to the cult when needed, and is present when the Anti-Christ needs the victim. It is doubtful these alters would get their hearts back by their cult considering all the false promises that are typically made.

The Programmers will give the hearts to a queen mother alter for safekeeping. They may be hidden somewhere like in the Temple of Molech. The Temple of Molech in some survivors is used as a depository for memories of child sacrifices. It is not a place any alter could or would want to go in the internal world.

In return, the Programmers give the victim stones, yes, hearts of stone.

Stone-like protectors will stand guard in the background. Their voodoo doll appearance reflects the voodoo images that are built into Monarch Internal Worlds.

By removing the victim's hearts, it removes any chance that dark alters would have a soft warm spot in their heart for anyone. They will be told that they are incapable of having friends or of loving others. This is quite effective in separating these alters from others. That isolation is a part of the mind control.

Because the alters believe they have no life source within themselves--that is no heart, they have to look to their master. If the master places his hand upon the victim's chest they may feel alive.

Because people need a heart to feel, alters are programmed to believe that they are incapable of feeling and have no feelings. They can not cry during their own suffering, and are encouraged to feel **incapable** of caring for the suffering of others. In spite of all the brutality and isolation of the programming, the alter's humanity will lay in the background, but whether alters will ever acknowledge that humanity is a big question.

If people ask these heartless alters to give their hearts to Jesus, they may be told that they don't have one.

In all covenants, something is given to the cult. In this case the victim's hearts are (hypnotically) given to the satanic Master. There is a Keeper of the Seals who keeps the items given when a vow or covenant is made. If a person is a traitor to a vow, then the cult has an object to carry out voodoo or magic upon to punish the person.

Monarch Mind-controlled slaves know their orders, and are locked into obedience.

HYPNOTIC SURGERY

After the Programmers steal the deeper alters' hearts, their identities, their free will, their real families, and their faces and their humanity, they are kind enough to sew back into the victim's chest via hypnotic surgery black stones. They do all this surgery by hypnosis.

Via hypnosis, the Programmers can heal the victim's wounds after they torture the victim. They can basically make or remake reality to be what they want.

PART D. FEAR

The thing that stands out so vividly for those who have met victim's who are in therapy is the Spirit(s) of Fear that control them. Waves of paranoia roll back and forth through the alters. Everyone needs to bear in mind, that the programmers were sadists, and they didn't get satisfaction from their programming until they could see raw terror in their victims. The primary vehicle for programming was the raw terror that is repeatedly instilled into the victim. To achieve total terror, the sadist programmer gains total control over every aspect of a person, their thoughts, their bowel movements, their life, even the power to commit suicide is stripped from the victim. Nothing that originally belonged to the victim is left untouched.

A realistic fear of most victims, is that they will never be believed. Indeed, many therapists are serving the final insult to these severely traumatized people by denying the authenticity of things the victim experienced himself and even wishes were not true. For a victim to overcome their fear to tell, after all the years of programming not to tell and threats not to tell is an enormous feat. Very few victims, ever get to this point. And yet, when they do overcome this enormous barrier, they must face disbelief. Traditionally, the psychiatrists have treated these victims as if their abuse is nothing but psychotic nonsense. How many fleeing victims have been locked up and told they were Paranoid Schizophrenics?

The fear of losing one's identity within a coven or religious group, say the Church of Scientology, is balanced out by the structured framework that these groups have. Members identify with each other, because they participate in the same rituals and have given their allegiance to the same idealized master.

PART E. THE USE OF GUILT, SHAME, RIDICULE & ANGER

The Chinese and police agencies have been especially good at developing methods to solicit confessions. This is done by a variety of punishment and reward strategies, and the Mutt & Jeff routine. Confession and self-criticism have been used by religious groups, esp. the Jesuits as a method to convert persons to and then perpetuate a belief.

One of the things that the deeper alters will not be taught about is forgiveness. Because forgiveness of oneself and others is such an important spiritual dynamic, to not know about forgiveness cripples many deeper alters from healing from the deep spiritual wounds they have received. Forgiveness is an act of the will. Forgiveness of oneself is usually a major issue with deeper alters who generally don't know how to do this. However, the handlers and abusers will be sure to heap lots of guilt--whether deserved or not onto the poor mind-controlled victim.

It is natural for a person to focus on himself--after all, if a person doesn't think for himself who will? Often a person accepts their strengths, but focus's on their weaknesses hoping that that weakness will somehow be reduced by the focus that is placed upon it. The programmers know how to take advantage of that. They set impossible standards of perfection, and then demean the victim because they have failed to live up to the impossible standard of perfection. Black and white thinking develops in the slave's mind. The programmers will not allow the victim to display natural feelings of anger, sadness or doubt. To do so means that one is a failure and weak. Of course they are natural feelings, so the slave has to do a great deal of repression and self-incrimination for having these natural feelings. The slave learns to turn his or her anger inward. Many of the male slaves end up committing suicide. They beat themselves up with subconscious & conscious guilt.

Anything and everything wrong or bad in the slave's life is blamed upon him. Of course not all things are meant to be remembered by the slave. Guilt can play a natural role in the forgetting of memories too.

If the Monarch slave would remember something terrible, the religious front alters can be made to feel repentant for such terrible thoughts. Then the natural desire to forget can be reinforced by suggesting that the evil memory be removed from the mind. In other words, memories are forgotten because they don't conform to a person's moral code. If good morals are programmed into the front alters, they will take the hypnotic suggestion not to remember what has really happened that they had to participate in. The front alters will only remember a sanitized version. The person may even want to think of the memory as "only a dream" because the guilt associated with believing the reality of it.

If a person is hypnotized to have guilt about something that they didn't commit, then they can be gotten to believe that they did it. For instance, a false implanted memory of the Monarch slave killing a child may be implanted with the command, if you do not obey we will kill more children and you then will be guilty for not just this child but others.

People will tend to justify their abuse by saying "I was bad, I was evil." The programmers take advantage of this natural tendency.

Nothing the slave does is good enough

or worthy of praise. After they sexually please a customer, they are called "bitch" and "whore" to make the slave feel guilty, when all they have done is follow orders. The whole situation causes the slave to work harder for approval which of course is very tentative and fleeting at best. The Master just keeps control, and sets the standards higher if the slave gets close to reaching perfection. The Master must insure that the slave feels guilty and dirty.

Many of the slaves endure a guilt that is common among soldiers and concentration camp survivors--the guilt of having survived when others died. "Why did I live and they die? I was no better than them?"

Any desire on the part of deeper alters to want something for themselves is painted as "selfishness". They will be internally and externally punished for any pleasure. If a sexual alter enjoys a sexual encounter, she is programmed to internally feel some type of severe punishment program. One standard punishment for a female slave who appears to have actually enjoyed a sexual act is to cut them from vagina to rectum, and sew them back up without anesthesia WHILE the slave is forced to watch her punishment in silence without tears or screams.

One form of tormenting a slave is to ridicule the slave as they have to carry out a wretched assignment. Many slaves lose their zest for humor because they end up the brunt of so many bad jokes. Comedians, because they are skilled with puns, and other words games, have often served as handlers or programmers. Bob Hope is the best example of a Monarch slave handler who uses his verbal skills as both a handler and comedian. Bob Hope has a side to him that the public doesn't see. Over the years, Bob Hope has spent millions of dollars on his team of gag writers to keep him well supplied with gags.

ANGER

The use of anger is not haphazard. The spiritual ramifications of anger are very well known to the programmers. They know that anger opens up spiritual portals for demonic activity. Remember, chapter 7 on structuring explained how the programmer purposefully push the victim almost to its breaking point to get angry alters. The use of anger is seen in a number of different areas of programming.

The Gatekeeper alters will be depressed and angry alters to insure that they remain good portals for demons. Gatekeeper alters function as Gatekeepers in several different capacities. Gatekeeper alters will be found to the whole system, often on the second level (section) down. Gatekeeper alters will also be found guarding important sections like the Carousel and Castle.

In review, Anger toward God, anger toward the outside world, and anger toward themselves are all built into a System. Where was God? Where was the outside world, when all these things were happening. Many, if not all, of the victims of Monarch turn their anger on themselves, which is the only safe place to vent it. Most of the deeper alters of a Monarch system will have very low self-esteem and will have lots of guilt and anger toward themselves.

The slave is victimized so much, that when their handlers give them the chance to victimize someone else, some victims find release in assaulting others. Of course the entire process of transference further entraps the victim, and provides more guilt and more debilitating spiritual dynamics. The slave may be given the power of life or death over others, as well as the power of deciding another person's eternal fate. Sometimes this power is addictive. This addiction can be a trap that binds the slave to his source of power. The power that the Illuminati give their slaves is one of the major barriers preventing deeper alters from moving toward freedom when their systems have a chance.

Slaves also turn a great deal of anger in on themselves. The self-image of most alters in a System is extremely low. The anger that alters have becomes a tool of the handler to insure that the slave never thinks highly enough of themselves to do anything about the control over them.

An example of this is Monarch slave Loretta Lynn. Loretta Lynn's handler is her husband Doolittle. Although Loretta has worked (slaved) very long hard hours she credits Doolittle for all her success. Her programming allows her only to give him credit for her successes.

In her "autobiography" *Loretta Lynn A Coal Miners Daughter,* which was written by a professional writer who sat down and worked with her, Loretta says on page 63, "In a lot of ways, it was good for me to marry someone older than me [her husband Doo was a WW II vet/satanist who married her when she was 13], because I could learn from him. But, in another way, it wasn't so good because I went directly from Daddy to Doolittle without ever being on my own. Even today, men are telling me what to do. My husband, my lawyer, my accountant, my personal manager [Ken Riley, her road manager has been her mind-control handler, and Alex Houston & Reggie Maclaughlin have done some of her recent programming]. In a sense, I still don't have complete control over myself. Maybe I never will. But if it wasn't for Doo [her nickname for her husband & handler], we wouldn't have what we have today."

Anger within a System can be dangerous, when one alter directs its anger toward another alter. Sometimes one alter will try to kill another alter. Actually, this happens more often than one might imagine. If the alter succeeds of course, the body will be dead, with the resulting consequence that everyone dies. The programmers enjoy seeing this type of drama, but they don't want it to be carried out to its final conclusion, so they generally, if not always, have alters who can step in and take the body and stop this. If the alter system can't, then alters who understand what is going on can call their master for help, and the master can once again show how dependent they are upon him for life. This is the "divide and conquer" strategy. The divide and conquer strategy is used repeatedly in constructing an alter system.

PART F. TEACHING THAT THE MASTER IS GOD; THE PROGRAMMERS SET THEMSELVES UP AS GODS.

The Programmers and the Handlers are setting themselves up as gods, or Almighty God, or as a being from a superior race of aliens, such as Koldasians or Pleiadians. Interestingly, if one listens, these different alien races make conflicting claims for whatever good the earth has. However, those of us who have followed the Monarch programming know that these aliens are just men who do the Programming. Time-life Publishers (owned by men in the Illuminati) subtly gave this away in their book *The UFO Phenomenon* when they referred to UFO abductions as "the Oz factor." They go on to say that its like Dorothy in the Wizard of Oz on page 71. Then they go so far as to reemphasize the point by showing a picture of Dorothy in Oz. In the TV series on aliens & UFOs called the "X-Files", they begin a show with an "I love you-I love you not" Monarch programming script.

Often the Programmers tell the alters which they have created, that they are their Creator and therefore their God. In a spiritual sense, they took the place of God in every way, including attributing the scriptures about God to themselves. This works well for Illuminati alters, because they are indoctrinated that all humans can be divine. It also works well with non-Illuminati alters as long as they are under mind-control. However, the actions of the handlers are so ungodlike, that should the programming break down, and the alters get a taste of reality, these lies soon are transparent. The lies that the handler is an alien are much harder to refute than the lies that the handler is God. The trend appears to be for the handlers to refer to themselves as a superior race of aliens.

Most if not all of the people seeing aliens, are really just being jerked around by their handlers. This doesn't mean that aliens do or don't exist. It does mean that those of us who have been working with people who have alien contact experiences and who understand Monarch Mind-control have only seen people obviously under mind-control. Fritz has yet to meet someone who has had an "alien contact" who wasn't under mind-control.

In 1992, a book *Exposing The Mystery of Iniquity* was started by Fritz Springmeier showing the connections between so called "aliens" and "demons." Is it coincidence that the demon Sir John Dee conjured for his enochian magic looks just like a small grey alien pictured so often today? People who have participated in high level Illuminati ceremonies speak about guardians which are nephalim (half human-half demon) which are the offspring of mixing humans with demons, and who look like the variety of "aliens" that are so often reported. The subject of nephalim and whether aliens are or are not visiting us is too vast for this book. However, these nephalim guardians are perceived as real by Illuminati members, and they strike incalculable fear within the members of the Illuminati. As one of the big sources of fear, the guardians take their place as part of the control mechanisms to keep slaves in place.

Polls taken by others, have found that 100% of Satanists have had a experience with UFOs, and report some type of "alien" abduction. (The Programmers & upper level hierarchy don't get themselves in polls, and the lower levels are all programmed.) The point is that there is a close relationship between UFOs and the occult world. On the following page are some of the more respectable scripts that persons, who are victims of "alien abductions" see in their heads. Signs of MPD were visible in each of these cases, and these abductee are placing their wills at the command of these "higher beings". Their wills are subservient to the will of the "alien". They receive messages in these scripts in altered states of consciousness. Some of the scripts are blatantly satanic magic scripts and sigils, but the majority are blatantly of human design. It stretches the imagination that most alien scripts would have a language and script that matches the English alphabet, with the same letter frequencies of English letters--that is "a's", "s's", "m's", and "t's" are found in abundance. It stretches the imagination passed the breaking point to think that aliens light years away with different vocal cords or whatever they have, evolved a script that corresponds to English, when our alphabet doesn't correspond to Greek, or Sanskrit, or Ogham that closely. Quite a few abductees have the "aliens" give them more complex versions of their "alien script" as they get older. The simplified version is received as a child, and then it evolves. It appears that there are now numerous programmers, who are simply concocting made-up scripts, and hypnotically telling their poor hapless victim that the script is alien. In this respect, these scripts are really codes--not "alien scripts". They are full of what are called **follows**. Follows are symbols that are similar to one another, which are a variation on a theme. Test results have shown that made-up scripts have many more follows that an actual real historical script.

The occult world are teaching that the Akashic record of all recorded information lies somewhere in the essence of space called the reticulum dei (the network of God). The mind-control victim, who actually gets his automatic writing and his information from deep in his system, is led to believe that he has gotten it from the Akashic record.

The spiritual dynamics of the Programmer setting himself up as God are far reaching. The spiritual world mirrors the physical world. In the physical world, in biology, researchers have found that chemicals that resemble other natural body chemicals can be substituted in for those original chemicals with far reaching effects. For instance, anti-histamines do not destroy histamine, they resemble histamine enough that they steal the places that histamine

text cont. on page 289

The reader has seen the Intergalactic script (Chap. 7), which is given to some Monarch slaves. Let's look at some of the other scripts given to them by their handlers. Many of the "alien scripts" which are given are crude and obviously fraudulent, but the more interesting are given below. One of the reasons there aren't government experts examining "alien writing" is that they know where these scripts are coming from. It is the same source that automatic writing came from earlier in this century.

PERSON A. LINE & DOT SCRIPT
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON B. LINE & DOT SCRIPT
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON C. LINE & DOT SCRIPT
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON D. LINE & DOT SCRIPT
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON E. MAGIC SCRIPT OR SIGIL
Satanic Magic Script given to Monarch slave.

PERSON F. "ANGELIC SCRIPT"
"Angelic Celestial Music Script" in head of BOY

PERSON G.
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON H.
"Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE

PERSON I. This "Alien" writing in head of ABDUCTEE matches 15th–18th cent. magical scripts exactly.

WHITE
BLACK
=

PERSON G. This "Alien formula" seen by Abductee has Alchemical symbols.

-Drawn by Fritz

molecules attach themselves to cells. Because the histamine molecules have had their attachment places stolen, they can't interact with the cells. Within the spiritual realm the very same thing happens.

The Anti-Christ is less of a Christ destroyer as he is a Christ replacement. True spiritual power is replaced within the world by the religious spirit. Within Christendom, the religious spirit has replaced much of the positions that should have gone to true faith. Therefore the power of true faith is destroyed by simply being replaced and its position usurped. The foundation for the religious spirit are fear and pride, which are also foundational pillars for the Monarch programming. The religious spirit can be detected when someone reads an admonishment and can apply it immediately to others and not to oneself. When a person sins, for example Eli in the book of Samuel, the religious spirit will propel them to make a sacrifice to cover that sin like Eli did. However, that religious zeal to cover sin by doing good and giving sacrificially of oneself, stems from the religious spirit not the holy Spirit of God (See 1 Samuel 3:13-14). Religious zeal done to cover sin is not accepted by Almighty God. Eli's sons "despised the offering of the LORD" (1 SAM 2:17).

One of the outgrowths of SRA upon the Monarch victim is that they will generally exhibit black and white thinking. Black and white thinking is actually an element of the religious spirit, which in spiritual terms pervades the Monarch victim. The Monarch victim's system is set up to usurp true faith. Something has to replace true faith, and the religious spirit is a good substitute. Perfectionism or unloving idealism is part of the religious spirit. This perfectionism will demand that if a person can not be perfect, they should give up. The holy Spirit of God gives hope. The religious spirit destroys hope by demanding more than people can give. As long as people are travelling the journey of seeking God, they don't need to have arrived to perfection. Idealism wants people to be at the destination at once or not start the journey. This religious spirit has stopped many victims of Monarch programming from moving forward to real freedom. It is a very powerful type of spirit.

Many people are waiting until they are perfect to help minister to others. Sadly this is an outgrowth of the religious spirit. We do not need to be perfect to help others. The following is an actual account: a Christian man who didn't understand mechanics very well stopped to see what he could do to help an elderly couple stranded on the road. The car miraculously started for the Christian and he was able to have the couple follow him to a repair station at the next town. But the attitude of the Christian was to make himself available to God--not that he was going to fix someone else's problem. The couple was sure they had been visited by an angel.

What is being discussed is how setting oneself up as "a god" or "God" is part of the religious spirit that attracts itself to so many of us. One of the attributes of the religious spirit is that it will notice what is wrong in a person rather than discerning what is right. Unless discernment is based upon love, discernment will be warped. Churches caught up in the religious spirit have mercy on the things that are abominations to God. Likewise, they show unwarranted mercy on the actions of ministers who have mercy on things that are abominations to God. One of the best examples is the religious front this book discussed in detail in chapter 5. Billy Graham, a Monarch slave handler, is on public record endorsing Mao-tse-tung's teachings, abortion, salvation through witchcraft, the One-World-Church in alliance with the world's political power, and many other things. Quite a number of Freemasons, ex- and current members have stated that Billy Graham is a secret Freemason, however, his staff denies this. The religious spirit has ran a campaign to cover up Billy Graham's personal use of prostitutes, many of them Monarch kittens. And some of these Monarch kittens have been able to reveal the facts of their abuse. Billy Graham is a "prophet" who works for the Network. The point is that churches turn a blind eye to these things. Fritz has tried to approach ministers about these things, and there isn't an open ear.

By the way, Almighty God still can step above what Billy Graham is and work in spite of it. Satanists can infiltrate the highest church positions, but they won't stop good from eventually conquering evil, and God's will being done. When we write "God's will", please understand that God has several types of will, including a conditional will, and an ultimate will. His conditional will is let men have what they want. His ultimate will is to see His creation be a wonderful paradise.

The religious leaders in Jesus' day got rid of true prophets. The religious spirit today will do the same.

The religious spirit causes people to flagellate their backs with whips. A Russian branch of the Illuminati, called the Skoptsi, are famous for the self-inflicted tortures including castration that they carry out upon their bodies. The religious spirit causes people to have self-abasement for the wrong motives. Discipline and faith are worthy things to have, but not if they are done out of only love for oneself rather than also love for one's Creator. This is why satanic alters have such a hard time seeing what Christianity has for them. They see the religious spirit of Christianity and they realize that Satanism has a more powerful form of religion. Satanism is based upon legalism (the rituals have to be exactly so), and upon pride, and fear.

To make an analogy, the religious spirit is like a man or woman who dresses to get compliments rather than dressing nice to please their spouse. In other words, the man who wears something that offends his wife, because he wants other men to think he is macho, has a similar motivation as the religious spirit.

The author of the religious spirit is Satan, the author of death. God wants people to choose thing which are excellent and make their lives count for eternity. On the flip side, the programmers, who worship & serve Satan in their invocations, murder their victims in 4 ways of death-- mental, moral, spiritual, and physical death. They program 4 types of ongoing suicide into their slaves. They bring them a. mental suicide, b. moral suicide, c. spiritual suicide, and d. push some alters to physical suicide, and program others to commit physical suicide. They push their slaves into near death experiences--some alters die, and are discarded. Often, there are "dead" alters within a live System. a. To perpetuate mental death, the programmers administer drugs, hypnosis, and false philosophies, and programming to wipe the truth out of the slaves mind. This is mental murder. b. Resistance to evil is the essence of life. By requiring their slaves to engage in the worst moral impurities, these parts lose their spiritual eyes. This is moral murder. (2 PTR 1)

PART G. Portals and focal points.

Within the occult world, the entire study of demonology is wrapped around the geometric shapes that serve as focal points for demons (such as made by crystals and pyramids), and the portals by which demons can enter the human body. A demon doesn't have to be materialized (conjured up) to enter into a body.

Geometric shapes which are believed to attract demons are placed into the internal worlds of slaves.

The will of the person also plays a role in the introduction of demons into the body.

Torture attaches and layers in demons within the body. Sex and blood sacrifices are used to attach powerful demons. According to high level demonology, certain powerful spirits can only be manipulated if there are blood sacrifices. This may seem strange, however, the record (evidence) bears out that generational victims of possession who have had demons placed in via blood sacrifices are definitely controlled by more powerful demonic forces.

All of the chahkra points, and the

orifices to the human body serve as portals. Both the Illuminati and Christian deliverance ministries agree that the mouth, ears, nose, anus, etc. are portals. High influxes of demonic energy into the body is accompanied by a burning sensation. The Mother of Darkness who is assigned to a child who is being programmed has to oil the child periodically to protect it from this burning.

The goal to possess someone of spirits, or to be possessed by spirits has been practiced since the early times of mankind. In Llewellyn's *New Worlds of Mind and Spirit* magazine June/July 1994, issue #943, they write, "The golem of Prague is perhaps the most famous example of 'practical cabala'--the use of cabala for magical cabala." Scholem in his excellent treatise on the Cabala has an entire chapter about the Golem. The golem were mind-controlled slaves created by the magick of the Cabala.

The Cabala, according to the best masonic authorities, including Albert Pike in his famous *Morals and Dogma* book is the basis of Freemasonry. By extension then, it is clear that the goal of having a mind-controlled golem has been the goal of Freemasonry, because that goal is the best example of practical cabala. This is the paper trail, that let's us view the secret goals of the secret world of Freemasonry. There are Cabalistic grades within Freemasonry.

Sexual slaves were used by the higher and more occult Masonic rites in the 19th century. These sexual slaves were subjected to trances and demonic possessions. They were subjected to all types of perverse magical rituals. The Cabala teaches intercourse with demons.

Theurgy is the skill or ability to invoke demons variously called angels of light, genii, spirits of various kinds, such as elemental spirits. Demons come with a price and that price is blood. Satanism and Luciferianism and other similar cults are blood cults that require blood to be sacrificed to pull in certain demons. For instance, blood may be taken from both the tongue and the genital area and mixed in a certain ceremony to invoke a particular demon. Demons are not bought with gold or silver, they are bought with blood.

Some spirits are invoked by placing alcoholic enemas into the child. These children get totally intoxicated with alcohol, some to the point that they even die from the ceremony. This is all done to bring in particular demons.

The Spirit Choronzon and Typhon are critical spirits to place into a person for the Mind-Control to work. The Illuminati do not believe the Mind-control will work without the assistance of these spirits. Typhon and Choronzon do the tunneling and the MPD work.

An example of an important ritual to demonize the victim is the baptism of the child victim to Satan. Satan may be called Set in the ritual. There are variations on this ceremony, so a victim's personal baptism may vary in some or all of the details. This is actual variation of the ritual done to Monarch mind-controlled slaves:

The child is stripped nude and given a purple robe. It is placed inside the pentegram, and an "altar" which is made by a nude woman or child is brought forward. A horse or jackal is inscribed with the inscription "Nebebka" on the neck or forehead. Then the animal is sacrificed to whatever name the group is using for Satan (such as Set or Saman). The abdomen of the beast is split open completely, and the liver removed. The 4 spirits of the 4 watchtowers are invoked. The slave child being baptized is smeared with fat from the dead beast. The Gatekeeper spirit is called by ringing a bell. Then the child is placed into the animal's belly. A part of the raw liver is given to the child and the rest consumed by the group. The child is then baptized in blood. A cut called the Devil's Seal is placed on the child on the left hand, or under the armpit, or on the upper part of the head. This in Cabalism is the Mark of Foundation. The Priest reads out of the *Book of Satan* and the

Book of Names. The victim repeats after the Priest. In this fashion the Priest ritually gives the person a new name. The Dance of Hod (Glory-the sphere on the bottom left of the C. Tree of Sephiroth) is then begun in a circular motion by the cult, to oppose Netsah (Victory-the sphere on the bottom right of the Tree). The Priest of the coven will then dismiss the demon(s) he has conjured. At times this ritual is done with a child sacrifice rather than an animal, & sometimes it is done in conjunction with another ritual, such as All Hallow's Eve.

To empower the Monarch System, special rings which have been dipped in the blood of sacrificed victims, are given to the victim with instructions to wear it faithfully. The rings are used as focal points to insure the continued demonization of the victim. Some examples of this would be a Blue Topaz ring, a Black Onyx ring, or a Diamond ring. Black Onyx is used to capture souls. Whether the therapist believes this or not, becomes irrelevant in view of the fact that the deeper alters in a Monarch System are skilled in demonology and they do believe it, and take consolation that their magical powers are never challenged by therapists. These deeper alters will continue to do much of the demonization of the system for the Programmer, and this delegation of this job, means the Programmer/handler is free to focus on other things.

Our experience is that the Slave Masters within the Illuminati, when they take away the hearts of the alters of a system, they give them a heart of stone and a ring. The ring is important for if they lose this, they think they will not get their hearts back. The slaves will wake up in the middle of the night looking for a ring--but never knowing what ring they are looking for. "CATCH A FALLING STAR, PUT IT IN YOUR POCKET FOR A RAINY DAY" ties in with this story line. The star is magical stardust. During programming the Programmers use "magical star dust." If the slave loses their ring, they are told the Master will never love them. When the Master comes to give his love, then the slave will get to use their magical wand with its star dust. The ring of the Programmer, which has occult power from being used in ritual, is also used as a hypnotic cue. The ring also represents occult power and authority.

PART H. VOWS & OATHS

- The Illum. & generational occult families attach Ancestral & Generational curses (noted about in EX 20:5-6, DT 23:2, 2 KG 5:27, JER 32:18, JER 3:25, LEV 26:40) to the victim.
- The Programmers create soul ties (intermeshment with others in an ungodly way), including intermeshment of spirits. Sex, emotional dependence, anger and love can be tied to this dependence. The spiritual power of the Communion meal--which is a form of the Passover meal (deliverance) & the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (wholeness in heaven) is reversed by Black Mass's symbolism/bondage.
- The Moriah & other occult groups attach curses to a person that are brought on by occult involvement. These curses are the consequences of sinful occult involvement.
- The Monarch programmers force the slave to make blood covenants, contracts, oaths, and to shed innocent blood. Often times the deeper alters feel like they have made these contracts willingly--however, if they could see the whole picture they would realize that they were forced and deceived into accepting these occult practices. To free themselves of these oaths and covenants every alter has to break them, or at least the main alter breaks it for others. What various witchcraft and Illuminati slaves will experience will be Satan drawing blood from their left hand and causing them to write in the slave's own blood a formal contract entering his service. The ceremony has a lasting impression. Their signature in the Great White Book, which is an important Illuminati document, which has everyone's signature will change color, and they will lose their magical power, etc. This creates a double bind, if they keep the System "safe", they can't get out. They need to understand that greater

is Jesus than he who is the world. See COL 2:15 also, which speaks about him triumphing over the principalities and powers. The Illuminati & the Network keeps books which have the signatures of all their membership, including slaves. They tell the slave that if they ever break a covenant with them, that Satan will cause the signature in blood to turn green. In other words, the slave is led to believe and is convinced that if they ever renege on their vows to Satan and the New World Order, they will be instantly found out.

Even the american presidents are reported to be threatened with this type of threat.

The "birthright" of a child born to Illuminati parents is to be allowed into satanic coven level activity. Alters which function at coven levels, will be far removed in a Monarch system from Illuminati hierarchy alters. The coven level will also be called the anarchy level and is represented by an A. One of the early oaths taken by the Illuminati child before the Grand Druid Council is, "Satan the Way and the Light. No one comes to me except through the father of light which is the Anti-Christ. I, [birth name], by my free choice take the following oath. I commit to serve my body and spirit in union with the father of light for the total prosperity and insurance of the victory of Satan and the father of light the AntiChrist. Now within an unbroken circle of spiritual power, understanding and accepting the consequences of breaking the spiritual circle which joins the Mothers of Light (later they learn that they have joined the Mothers of Darkness). with each other and to the father of light. I [Illuminati coven name] with these bonds in place commit to rule within the spiritual union over the principalities of darkness to insure Satan's power and control over the world. I forever take on the seal of the father of light and commit my eternal life to serve Satan as the prince of peace, savior, and spiritual light for ever and ever. I now denounce the truth of the God, the resurrection of Christ and the power of the Holy Spirit." Should the person break this vow, they are programmed to remember torture on a cross, which is designed to cause a seizure and heart failure.

The Final Vows of a Mother of Darkness or a Grand Master will make these cult alters feel like they are bound and trapped in service to Satan. They are almost always unaware that Almighty God doesn't recognize such vows, and will willingly release them from their evil servitude. The black stone is used in the Mothers-of-Darkness vows. The book of Revelation speaks about a white stone with a name written on it. Mothers of Darkness alters get a black stone with their assigned Queen goddess names written on them.

Those who have been on the inside of Satanism know that oaths taken by occult lodges and satanic cults are at times enforced. The oaths describe the type of traitor's death that is to be carried out. An example of the types of penalty these oaths carry can be seen in the following words,

"All this I most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear with a firm steadfast resolution, to keep and perform the same without any equivocation, mental reservation or secret evasion of mind whatever, binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn open, my heart plucked out my body severed in twain, my bowels taken from thence and burned to ashes, should I knowingly violate this my solemn obligation."

The covenants, and vows and threats all work together to keep people in line.

Alters within a Monarch slave are conditioned by their servitude to believe that their life is controlled by Satan, who is stronger than God. Where was God when they needed him? And yet many of the Monarch slaves coming in for therapy have had numerous miracles in their lives that have given them the latitude to reach out for health and freedom. If the Monarch alters can not see the positives of what God has done, they will remain trapped in their perception that Satan rules.

Actually, the survivors of the Illuminati's mind-control were meant to play a big role in helping God upset the detailed satanic script. And because these people sincerely gave their lives to Christ around the age of 2, God will honor that and help them. At any rate, even the informed secular therapist should realize these programmed slaves are in the middle of some power struggles. They are instruments of the Satanic hierarchy to carry out their plans.

The Network goes out of their way to enhance the slave's perception that the occult rules. Along this line, President Reagan insisted the Monarch programmer Michael Aquino wear his black satanic ritual robes to a White House party. (One can read more about that night in *Transformation of America*, p. 129-130.)

Working hand in hand with the vows and the oaths, are the extreme measures the Network goes to, to convince the slave that they are always being watched. This is the "You can run, but you can't hide" programming. Supposedly, the slave is being watched by satellite no matter where they go. For instance, at Offit Air Force Base in Nebraska, an underground viewing room is used to convince Monarch slaves they have no place to hide. There the walls have numerous "satellite pictures" from around the world. The satellites are called "Eye in the Sky." A four-screen viewer pretends to respond to the type-in commands of an air force official who tells the slave, "Where will you run? To the Artic? The Antarctic? Brazil? The Mountains?...We can find you there. There is truly no place to run and no place to hide." This show, which was made to convince the mind-controlled slave of the NWO's prowess, is just a pre-made slide show, it is just theatrics.

However, the computer chips they have been implanting into people do give them the ability to track their slaves. And the intelligence agencies do have spy satellites. The NWO is protected from nuclear attack via the Pentagon's C^3I (pronounced "see-cubed-eye") meaning command, control, communication & intelligence. An important part of C^3I is MILSTAR which is a global central nervous system of 9 satellites and about 3,500 million dollar MILSTAR terminals on the ground. The CIA has among other things, the $300 million Vortex spy satellite and a $500 million Magnum spy satellite which were recently launched.

PART I. LAYERING IN DEMONS

In the *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, two noted psychiatrists and an M.D. from India wrote an article "Multiple Personality in India: Comparison with Hysterical Possession State". The tenor of the article was that in India, the psychiatrists have to deal with demonic possession rather than MPD which is found in the west. They made comparisons of demonic possession in India to the MPD of the west, which are similar but not the same. Later, other articles and letters were written about this article. One of the criticisms was that these Indian psychiatrists were trying to compare their demonic possession to the west's MPD when it was obvious that their cases of demonic possession did not meet all the criteria of MPD. In the experience of the co-authors of this book, demonic possession is not MPD (DID) but it does have many of the same characteristics.

If we understand programming from the Programmers point of view, they believe in both MPD and Demonic possession. From the programmers point of view, they try to create the alters and demonize the alters. Several ex-Programmers have told Fritz that if a person really wants to understand the Monarch trauma-based mind-control, they need to realize that it is fundamentally demonic-based.

Both of the co-authors have had to sit through lectures by secular therapists who dismissed Satanism and the occult as simply as an excuse on the part the abusers to traumatize their victims. According to these secular therapists, demon possession and satanic rituals have nothing to do with therapeutic issues, but are merely games and charades put on by the abusers. We beg to differ with this point of view. Programming and mind-control can not be separated from demonology and occult ritual. Even the "alien programming" uses lots of occult symbols, rituals & spiritual programming.

An example of how ritual & programming overlap is the sabbat ceremony to insure that cult slaves keep silent no matter what, even under torture. On a full moon sabbat, a large oak tree will be used to hold this night ceremony. A Majic cake, also known as a Red or Acacia Cake is made for the ceremony. The demon seer is invoked using the name Shaddai (one of its 9 mystic names). An unbaptized child, who has been taken from Christian parents, is in the middle of the Pentagram, and a live altar consisting of a woman is used. A magic square called Satar formula is carved onto the child with an Eagle or Rooster claw. The child is turned to the 4 directions and then turned face down toward the east. The child must curse and blaspheme God Almighty. Then its mouth is gagged with a purple cloth. Flesh is cut from the child, and mixed with black millet and given to Satan (also called Sheitan). Prayers in Enochian are said. Incense is lit. The child is now sacrificed to Satan, using the ritual athame (perhaps a black handled dagger), while the child is condemned by the cult to hell. This type of ritual is to instill fear of talking and praying into the cult members.

One of the secret ceremonies to invoke demons comes from *The Book of Beasts*. It is an ancient ceremony to summon demons. The ceremony begins with reading the Tetragrammaton Elohim, the Creature of Judgement is invoked, as well as the 9 mystic names of the dead. A child is skinned and sacrificed. *The Book of the Old Faith* is read from. And then the demons are dismissed and a bell rung in the 4 directions. Monarch slaves recall the stench of the demons, and the roar that they make when invoked. To live through a horrifying experience like this does impact the slave, and therapists need to quit ignoring the various impacts that effect the victim of occult ceremonies.

On the flip side, victims of mind-control need to realize that although demonic possession is one of the tools of control, that the diagnosis of "demon possession" should not be used to cover up the many other issues involved with the mind-control including body memories, a lifetime of severe abuse, abandonment issues, safety issues, and all the rest of the garbage that goes with having been a mind-controlled slave. These many other issues need to be addressed too.

When one of the authors of this book, Fritz Springmeier, began working with Programmed Multiples, he was told by several independent of one another that they had problems with spirits, which they called Legion, Beelzebub, Asmodeus, Leviathon and Behemoth. Occasionally Hanan was mentioned. After doing some work, false satanic trinities were found leading these Structured Multiple's systems. Interestingly, other ministers who were working in other areas of the country with Illuminati programmed multiples were finding the same thing. If we comb the rare books of Europe, there is a book in french *Cruels effets de la vengeance du Cardinal Richelieu ou Histoire des diables de Loudun* by Aubin (Amsterdam, 1716, pp. 215 +) and as well as another one, Delacroix, *Études d'histoire et de psychologie du mysticisme*. Paris, 1908, pp. 328-344., which tell the story of the Uruline convent in Loudon between 1632 and 1638. This convent plays a role in the Illuminati bloodlines. What is of interest to us, is that the nuns back in 1632 found themselves "possessed" by demons. These demons made the people act like animals, such as bark like dogs, rave in altered states, go into trances, have uncontrollable changes in personality which they would be amnesiac about. A male voice would appear in a female, etc. The mystic Father Surin, who came and tried to help the convent, himself got possessed for 20 years and had an entire change in personality for 20 years. He wrote that at times he felt like Satan. Seven demons manifested themselves in very different but distinct persons within these nuns. The Catholic priest (an exorcist) could make the different demonic personas take the bodies of the Loudun nun Jeanne des Anges, and her face & body & voice would change from one possession to the other. These seven demons were Asmodée (also called Asmodeus), Léviathan, Béhémoth, Aman (Haman), Isacaaron, Balaam, and Grésil. They also had a false trinity Lucifer-Beelzebub-Leviathon associated with them. French psychologist P. Janet in 1888 noticed that many of his patients found themselves losing control of their body to what they called a demon who would often be named Astaroth, Leviathan or Beelzebub. (P. Janet, *L'Automatisme psychologique*. Paris, 1888, pp. 440 +.) Reports from other areas such as Germany over the years are similar. Is this mere coincidence? It is stretching the imagination to believe that so many separate incidents have commonalities, and identical demonic entities, and yet are not related in some fashion.

By the way, medieval witchcraft, Rosicrucianism, and the Illuminati have all had rituals where people dress with Cat, Lion, Owl, Cuckoo, and Parrot masks. In altered states, these medieval witches may have actually flipped into animal alters who thought they were a cat or owl, etc., which would account for written accounts by medieval craft adepts that witches would transform into animals.

Demonic possession is getting more and more recognition by psychologists.

Some psychologists have discovered that their programmed multiples responded very positively to deliverance of demons, and were able to get more accomplished in a few hours of deliverance than years of psychology. What does this tell us? Well, it is NOT "scientific proof" that demons exist, but it is proof that deliverance can be very helpful. One can debate the exact reasons why deliverance works--perhaps it is merely that the helping person is entering the other person's construct--but the events of successful deliverance strongly indicate that what has happened is an actual deliverance of demons.

Because this book is about HOW the victim's are controlled, and the programmers believe that the primary ingredient in the mind-control is demonology, we will cover demonology. If that bothers some readers, then they need to ask themselves, Are they really wanting to understand HOW the mind-control is done, or simply superimpose and replace the HOW it is done **with what they themselves would do?** Several times psychologists have been heard saying, "We don't know how the programmers think. It would be helpful to know." How many people are really ready to hear the answer? Recently, one of the Programmers (and names could be mentioned) never got excited as long as his slave was in therapy, but when his slave got a deliverance, he came totally unglued. On the flip side, anyone who can read this book entirely to this point and think that Illuminati slaves only have a problem with demons has somehow missed most of the book.

The programmers are so demon possessed that people who have worked with them say that the powerful demons within them try to compete with each other for power. Those who have worked with the programmers know how the programmers themselves have been skilled in conjuring demons with a nine-foot circle with magical phrases like "Bagabi laca Bachabe, Lamac cahi achababe,..." Rituals have been performed at the programming sites. (On the flip side, deliverance ministries can send demons to the throne of Almighty God to get instructions.)

One of the first stories read to a slave may be the *Jungle Book* by freemason & occultist Rudyard Kipling (1865-1936). The story is used to teach the child to have animal spirit guides, such as the bear and leopard spirit guides found in Jungle Book. The main character in Jungle Book is neither animal or human, but in between. Neither world accepts this orphan boy. Slaves are taught that they are not human, but not fully animal, but something that can't be fully accepted or understood by anyone. Jungle Book provides the script for this. A bracelet keeps the boy safe by giving him the power of the gods. The slave is taught to get demonic power from jewelry which is given to them. There are many other features of Jungle Book which are used for the initial programming too, such as the pack of wolves (protectors in the system), snakes in the hell pit, a Boa Constructor snake to guard the castle, the need to pass through the waterfall to get into a wonderful world, a black jungle of death on the other side of the waterfall, castle jewells, caged birds, etc.

Later, alters will be told they are the leader of a pack.

Via the Jungle Book story used as a demonic programming script, the child's alters are taught that they are orphans with no mother or father, and that they must play and have the animal spirit guides as their friends.

HOW THE PROGRAMMERS UNDERSTAND DEMONOLOGY

Demonology is the key to what the programmers accomplish. Some recent efforts to expose the Monarch Mind Control have portrayed the programmers as very cynical about their "magick". While there may be exceptions to the rule, within the Illuminati, demonology is not taken lightly, but is considered to be the real science of the Sciences of Mind Control.

The goal of the Illuminati programmers is stated in their own writings in latin,"Quod superius est sicut quod inferius et quod inferius est sicut quod superius ad perpetranda miracula rei unius..." Meaning that their goal is to achieve the wonders of the "one thing" where "that which is above, is like that which is below and that which is below is like that which is above." In other words, they take the dark spiritual realm of Satan, as the pattern for the world. This latin phrase is also used to support astrology, which influences some of the programming decisions. The concept of astrology was created by reframing God's "event markers" as event controllers. While Americans think of 1776 as independence year, 1776 was originally chosen as the most favorable year to reorganize the mystery religions into the formal Illuminati because 1776 consists of 1100 and 666. 1100 is the Babylonian counting system's number for 666. Babylonian satanism is a foundational part of Moriah's Illuminism. Some of its bloodlines are descendents of the Pharisees who secretly practiced Babylonian satanism at the time of Christ, incl. child sacrifices. It's standard operating procedure in the occult world that- **what you see is not what you get**, double-meanings are the norm.

Those students of Monarch Mind Control who do not want to delve into what the Programmers are doing are limiting their own understanding. Most of what the Programmers do is actually spiritually based and connects to their understanding of demonology. Much of what the victims of the Monarch Programming experience will be understood in the context of the spiritual world. Obviously some is illusion. Obviously some is delusion. However, when the high level programmers teach novice programmers, they will be teaching the spiritual principles you the reader are about to be told. (A few therapists across the U.S.--and their names will not be revealed, have had miraculous recoveries of their Monarch slaves when they addressed these demonic and spiritual issues. These are therapists, who tried the old methods for years, and then in desperation were willing to listen to ex-programmers and other informed people about the spiritual side of the programming.)

Everything in life has a physical and a spiritual side to it. Things in the spiritual effect the physical, and things in the physical effect the spiritual. They are two worlds. The Alice In Wonderland story is highly regarded by the programmers, because it portrays the

situation that exists between the spiritual world & the physical world. When people within the physical look toward the spiritual, it is like looking into a mirror. Initially, they will only see the physical world reflected back. But if they go beyond the mirror, they would see a "mirror image" of the physical exists in the spiritual realm. When Christians pray they say, "Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven." Earth is a mirror image of heaven, not an exact copy, but someday they will be alike, according to Scripture. According to messianic jews who understand the OT well, the ceremonial law is being enacted in heaven spiritually as it's mirror image once was done on earth.

When the programming is seen only in a secular fashion, much of its design is missed. What have witches used to see beyond time and space? Mirrors. Remember the witch saying "mirror, mirror on the wall, who is the fairest of them all"? The idea is magical mirrors, the speculums, which will lead one "through the looking glass mirror" that then allows the victim to magically transcend time & space.

One of the important keys to success with Monarch programming are generational spirits. The cover for this is studies in genetic science. The programmers believe that genetics are important, but the real abilities to program someone come from the generational spirits that are built up in bloodlines. This is why the Illuminati were in part skeptical that non-generational occult bloodlines could be successfully programmed. They have found that they can be (especially with all their high tech equipment), but the best candidates are those with strong generational spirits. The difference could be compared to those who raise race-horses for the Kentucky derby and those who have horses as a hobby. A race horse must have high spirits. The suburban housewife & daughter who ride as an occasional pastime could care less for that quality of horse. The military can produce cannon fodder with the simple mind-control of Basic Training. They don't need sophisticated time intensive mind-control techniques like the Monarch Program for some military positions.

Third world children are being programmed to become baseball players etc. But the highest occult avocational positions will be given to people with exceptional generational demonic power.

Within a Multiple you will find duplicates of a particular name. For instance, you may find thirteen Susies. Susy I may not even be aware of the other Susies. The internal worlds of the Monarch victim are structured along demonic patterns. Within the demonic world the spirit Moriah is not itself in every victim that has Moriah. Moriah # 10,882 may be in victim A, and Moriah # 3,355 in victim B. But the difference is academic because the Moriah in each victim is a member of the same demonic family--the Moriah Spirit Family. They are for all intents and purposes the same spirit. The Illuminati programmers are acutely aware of the generational spirits, who they are, and how they function. The ten commandments warn that a person's iniquity will affect the next 3-4 generations. EX 20:5b

A generational spirit is given "appointment" over a victim at birth. The victim will receive generational spirits from their biological father and mother. Satan can not be the creator of heaven and earth, but he can satisfy his desire to do so, by creating an internal world within the victim, a heaven, earth and hell of his own creation. The armies of spirits which are placed into the infant will cooperate with the programmer and the child to produce the programming. It's like the Father ("Papa" the programmer), son (child) and unholy spirit (demons) work together. The internal creation of worlds within the victim will be the heart beat of Satan.

A Regional territorial commander demon will make weekly rounds in an area, and so the structuring work done with generational victims, combines ideas from the generational spirits as well as the regional commander. The curses and the vows give the Commander the legal right to exercise control over the victim. Within any geographic area, there has been a layering in of demons, much in the same fashion that the programming and demons are layered into a Monarch victim. The most important territorial spirits in an area are the root or original spirits. In the United States these are Indian Spirits. Territorial spirits may contribute ideas as to what will be effective for programming in their area.

There are geographic patterns to spiritual warfare. Each area has its deities and spirits which rule the valleys, homes, and nations. These particular spirits exercise power over the local people. The evangelist is not going to progress, unless he understands the spirits that are ruling what he is trying to liberate people from. The basic territorial spirits are the original ones. In the U.S. these are the Indian spirits. That is why the Illuminati pays such a strong interest in the Indians. The original principalities are the foundation, the bedrock upon which everything else is layered upon. This also is done in Monarch programming. A number of Monarch slaves have Indian shamans and spirits placed in their systems.

Upon the original foundation, the newer ideologies are layered in. In Russia, communism was simply layered on top of the original territorial spirits. In China, communism was simply layered on top of the original territorial spirits. This is one factor why Chinese & Russian communism were never alike.

Traumas and crises will produce strongholds. Our understanding of our blind spots is often weak because we use others as our measuring stick rather than the divine word of God. Blindspots & strongholds may take outside intervention in our lives to eliminate.

How many of us see that Moroni on top of Mormon temples is a ruling demon? How many of us have realized that the rising sun on Japan's flag is the Sun goddess who is a ruling spirit over Japan? If we go to Hawaii we will see some of the "natives" are interested in Pele, the God of Fire. The volcanoes have been used by the demons to entrap the people to Pele, the God of Fire. One of the things that the author's book Ezekiel 6:3 An Inhouse Directory shows is that many of the ritual sites have occult names. Devil's Canyon may well be a canyon for devils. The names people give geographic areas are important. They show the types of pacts that people have been making. When the psychiatrist Karl Menninger of the Menninger Foundation dealt with spiritual issues with people in mental hospitals (i.e. he had them ask for forgiveness of sins), he was able to clear out whole sections, and send the patients home well. (His bro. Roy W. Menninger, an Episc., & also a psychiatrist, worked in Boston State Hosp. while in the military in '52-53.) There is a direct tie between much of the insanity today and demons. Spiritual principles should be studied by Christians to understand how demons operate and what gives them entry rights and power. Certain objects and people are focal points for spirits.

WHO are the experts?

Basically, two types of people involve themselves in studying demonology--those who are involved with performing works of darkness such as magic, or those involved with performing works of godliness such as deliverance ministries. Jesus told his disciples to command the demons to leave. He didn't ask his disciples to let him cast out demons, nor did he ask his disciples to ask the demons to leave. No, the responsibility was placed upon his disciples & they were asked to command the demons to leave.

The Illuminati maintain hidden libraries full of ancient treatises on demonology, which they avidly study. Some of the more important demonology books are the Sixth and Seventh Book of Moses, The Black Raven, The Spring Book, The Spiritual Shield. A whole series of magical books bearing the name of Solomon exist, of which the Key of Solomon is widely known. Clavicula Salomonis or the Clavicle of Solomon is also well known. More and more of the ancient writings seem to be coming to light in these end times, and the hierarchy is getting bolder and bolder in the release of this information. A Cabalistic Jew will study the Talmud until he is 40 or so, and the study of the Cabala is reserved for the only those who have studied a long time. The Zohar and the esoteric teachings are not taught until late in life.

Opposite the Illuminati, are those dedicated Christians who study demonology, not to invoke demons but to free people from them. Each state in the United States contains a few Christians who understand demonology and deliverance from it. The blood of Jesus Christ (Yeshua ha Messiach) is very powerful against demons. High level deliverance can not be done without angelic and the Holy Spirit's help. The Christian who gets into studying and fighting high level demonology needs to learn the significance of getting God's help. Without God's help, the deliverance will back-fire in the face of the deliverer. Members of the Illuminati are bound in servitude to Satan. One of the strong shackles that bind Satanists to Satan is the high level of demonology they are enslaved to.

HOW are the demons organized?

It is very clear that there are different types of demons, and that they are divided up into different ranks, functions, orders, etc. A great deal of time has been spent by both brilliant Christians and satanic Magicians to chart out the names, ranks, and structure of the demonic armies that Satan commands. One accurate method of ranking demons has 365 ranks of demons, with no. 1 being the highest level of demons. The numbers of top level demons are numbered in the trillions, while the lower level imps are incredibly numerous. There is no shortage of demons to carry out the work of Satan on this planet. These demons are sometimes variously referred to as spirit guides, angels, wizards, ghosts and aliens or a number of other disguises. Both early Christians and the occult have often divided up the evil spirits under fire, water, wind, and earth. The power of Enochian magic comes from the Watchtowers of these four elements.

Some common types of Evil Spirits are:

> Spirit of the Anti-Christ (1 John 4:3)
> Spirit of Bondage (Romans 8:15)
> Spirit of Divination (Ezekiel 21:21)
> Spirit of Death
> Dumb & Deaf Spirit (Mark 9:25)
> Spirit of Error (1 JN 4:6)
> Familiar Spirit (LV 20:27)
> Spirit of Fear (2 TM 1:7)
> Spirit of Haughtiness (PRV 16:18, 19)
> Spirit of Heaviness (ISA 61:3)
> Spirit of Infirmity (LK 13:11
> Spirit of Jealousy (NM 5:14)
> Lying Spirit (2 CHR. 18:22)
> Perverse Spirit (ISA 19:14)
> Seducing Spirits (1 TM 4:1)
> Spirit of Whoredoms (Hosea 4:12, and 5:4)

Each of these types of Evil Spirits has a number of specialists. For instance the Spirits of Whoredoms contains spirits which can specialize in the following:

A Spirit of Unfaithfulness
A Spirit of Prostitution (whether Spirit, Soul or Body)
A Spirit of the Love of Money
A Spirit of Idolatry
A Spirit of Chronic Dissatisfaction
A Spirit of Fornication
A Spirit of Gluttony

The Spirits of Bondage include:

A Spirit of Fear
A Spirit of any number of addictions (drugs, alcohol, etc.)
A Spirit of the Fear of Death
A Spirit of being a Servant of Corruption
A Spirit of Compulsive Iniquity

These lower echelon demons are too numerous to keep track of. When a portal is opened which gives a particular demon legal access into a body, they move very quickly into the physical body. When a man lusts after a woman, he will open a portal, such as the mouth through which a demon (spirit of lust), shaped for instance like a frog, will jump in through. This demon will then insure that the evil thought will be acted upon. The principalities and powers exercise dominion over spirits. Further, high level Satanists are well aware of all these things.

When godly people of faith identify, bind and cast out specific demons, they should practice loosening the appropriate good spirit to take its place. If we bind a spirit of Bondage, we loose a spirit of adoption. If we bind a Spirit of Error, then we loose a Spirit of Truth.

There are 3 powerful satanic covens of 21 persons. They are distributed in Monterray, CA, Phoenix, AZ and the third in Idaho. L.A. also has a fourth headquarters for the Coven of the 21st Star. These 21-person-covens are made up of very intelligent, powerful persons. These type of covens attract powerful commander demons. Within the co-author's area, Bend, Portland and Eugene areas in Oregon have powerful covens. The power of these types of powerful covens will be reflected in the spiritual world.

Paul under the Spirit's inspiration wrote, "while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal." 2 COR 4:18 The invisible things are more important that the visible. If we recognize this, the Word of God says that this will help us keep from losing heart! "Therefore we do not lose heart. Even though our outward man is perishing, yet the inward man is being renewed day by day." 2 COR 4:16

Spirits are in a sense a mirror image world. They are placed in the victim first. The programming and the images that are built will be built with their cooperation and guardianship. Spirits are appointed to protect each program and each memory. A spirit commander called a chief executive is set in command of the victim's life. Military command structures around the world are structured on how the demonic command structure exists. Some soldiers have the same function, but are not actually the exact same person. So it is with demons. Victims have their own individual demons, but they are models of what that type of demon is supposed to act like.

The child is exposed to films, books and stories. The spirits interact within the person's mind to lock these pictures in place. The demons in a sense serve as mirrors within the child's mind, reflecting the images the child needs to fix in the mind. As the programmer, child and demons structure the internal world, the demonic spirits will guard these structures. The force or energy behind the structures is the demons. In order to guard things further, demonic castles and temples will exist within a system to guard it. Entire spiritual quadrants will exist, that are entirely spiritual and contain absolutely no alters.

These spiritual worlds can not be seen physically. Only spiritual power and discernment can reveal them. In fact, while the normal person uses 5 senses, the Illuminati teach their alters and people in demonology to use 7 spiritual senses.

The child will be shown films and stories, but will then be programmed to forget them. However, the demonic spirits will guard these concepts. The core is involved in giving energy toward these spiritual programming goals. The willful contribution of energy to these demonic goals must be guarded so the core is hidden. While other children are playing with children, the victim of Monarch Mind-control slavery is being taught to dance and play with internal playmates which are demons. This is to familiarize the child to the spirit world. The child's family becomes its internal world. There are some teachers in public schools and pre-schools that are openly helping children do this.

All the time that the programming is going on, the spiritual world stays hidden in the darkness. Gnomes, sometimes called dwarfs, are one of the four divisions of nature spirits. They know where the gold is within the earth. This is why Joseph Smith, Jr. who was from an important generational occult bloodline which has generational programmed MPDs, did magic to elemental spirits when he was looking for jewels and gold as a young man. In reflection of this, the Gnomes (also known as dwarfs, elves, or minihunes) of the internal world mine the gold and jewels--the programs of the System. Illuminati programmer Manly P. Hall wrote in his classic book The Secret Teachings of all

Ages on page CVI, "...there are many types of gnomes evolving through the subjective ethereal body of Nature. These earth spirits work in an element so close in vibratory rate to the material earth that they have immense power over its rocks and flora, and also over the mineral elements in the animal and human kingdoms. Some,...work with the stones, gems and metals, and are supposed to be the guardians of hidden treasures."

The Disney family and the Disney corporations are part of the occult world. While the names Dopey, Happy, Bashful, Sleepy, Grumpy, Sneezy, and Doc sound like names picked to please children, they are actually the translation from Scandinavian of the demonic dwarfs Toki, Skavaerr, Varr, Duri, Orinn, Grerr, and Radsvid. Note that Disney placed a character with a green mask in a dark mirror, and had in his shows what was called the "Spirit of the Magic Mirror" which was also called The Slave of the Magic Mirror.

The Monarch slaves "most precious programs" are concealed in the ground and are guarded by the gnomes built internally by the programming. These gems have power that is channeled from Satan.

Most of the readers thought Snow White and the 7 Dwarfs was simply a harmless piece of fiction. They most likely didn't realize that it is demonology. An example of the importance of these types of spirits is Findhorn's use of them. Findhorn Institute in Scotland, which has branches by other names in other countries, is like the Vatican of the New Age. It secretly sends out orders to many witches and New Agers. To spell it out clearer, Findhorn, the Vatican of the New Age movement, is one of the channels of communication from the secret Illuminati councils to their people worldwide. The success of Findhorn's community, according to Findhorn is their use of elemental gnome spirits in their gardening and planting.

What is someone who believes in good spirits to do with this information? To recognize that the patterns for the programming are inspired by demons, are held in place by demonic energy and are guarded by demons. The programming can be collapsed upon itself if this demonic "glue" is taken away. But only a few individuals understand the spiritual forces behind the programming. This understanding takes spiritual eyes. If the spiritual is not dealt with, the person can be reprogrammed at will by the demonic entities that still control the victim. This is the "missing piece that has frustrated advanced secular therapists.

Within Illuminati slaves, they will have the All-seeing Eye placed in their system guarded by legions of demons. Within the very eye of the all-seeing eye, the Programmers will place some actual alters. There will also be demons placed within the construct too. The De-programmer must be careful to separate the demonic from the human element and get the alters who are held captive in the eye out. The Programmers do a great deal of mixing demons with alters, and they place alters all over the system in captive or hostage situations so that the System of Alters is literally blackmailed into cooperating if they don't want to hurt parts of themselves. The Programmers do both internal and external blackmail.

Within the Monarch programming, the demons are layered in between the worlds. In the older Illuminati programming, mirrors were placed into the System and the demons were layered behind the mirrors. The mirrors would separate levels within the mind. The demons would protect the mirrors. If a Monarch alter would shatter a mirror, the demons behind it are released and all hell breaks loose in their mind. Therapists who have tried everything for years to deal with the mirrors, have found that a few minutes of correct spiritual warfare accomplished more than years of trying psychological techniques.

In the 1980 models of Monarch slaves, the Programmers began placing a planet of alters, interspersed with a planet of demons, as they would build a solar system. This had the same layering effect as the mirrors. The demons then would be assigned to protect the different levels, in this case represented by different orbiting planets.

Principle demons that are popular to place into Monarch systems are:

Æsculapius--the satanic miracle healer, related to Apollos, in the pagan world he was depicted with his head encircled with rays. In order to show pagans that it was O.K. to worship Jesus, the Catholic church put the golden rays of Æsculapius around pictures of Jesus. He is also at times represented as the sacred snake.
Absolom--, Amon--(various spellings) A marquis of Hell, who has the gift of prophecy.
Apollyon - This demon is over the bottomless pit and is described by REV 9:11. Demon of fear and destruction, who may be a deep part of a System.
Apollo--The AntiChrist's father
Astar (Star, Ashtareth, Ashtaroth, Astarte, Ishtar)-Bible students will find this demon referred in many Bible passages including JDG 2:13 ACTS 20.
Balilo-- witch demon, Beelzebub-- Ruling demon
Beliah--the chief demon, with the name meaning "worthless one". Beliel-- sexual demon, Bes-- Spirit ruling the dwarfs. Blackwell--legion demon, upper rank, to divide the mind. Blood(aka Yahweh Elohim)--dark spirit using God's name & part of Black Mass, conn. w/ early 3-year-old trauma to "locked-up child".
Choronzon--to help with constructing the mind control
Dameon--

Dagon--the fish god over water. The fish sign was adopted by elements of the Catholic church to secretly keep Dagon worship alive. The Pope wears the garb that the Pontiface Maximus wore as leader of the cult of Dagon. One system had a water monster named CTHULHU.
Electra--
Enigma-- , **Geb**--voice behind the earth spirit,
Gerberus--
Guardian angels--the Illuminati may assign guardian angels called Hafaza.
Javen--double-minded demon
Kali--bloody female goddess
Kemosh
Leviathon (Seen as a sea-monster, or Tyrannosaurus Rex, or Dragon-like)-This demon runs up and down the spine. Leviathon is related to the Babylonian reptilian God Tiamet (which looks like the Reptilian aliens portrayed today.) Is tied to the double-helix. It can actually be three spirits. Bible students can read about Leviathon in Job 3:8, Job 41:8, 15, 22, PS 74:14, ISA 27:1
Lilith--a bloody demon, known as the "terror of the night". The occult story is that she was Adam's wife before Eve, and that her offspring with Adam were demonic-human monsters. It might be worthy to mention that in Druidism, the life-force or energy force is considered to be the Dragon. There are several names for this Dragon including Wyvern, nwyvre, or the winged lion.
Mammon--the demon of avarice
Meganosis--
Metatron--Sometimes said to be Enoch.
Moriah-
Moloch (also spelled Molech)--The various satanic-luciferian groups that program offer child sacrifices to Moloch, an internal Temple of Moloch may guard the innocent blood of children sacrificed during ceremonies. Historically, the people in Israel sacrificed children to Moloch at Tophet in the Valley of Hinnom near Jerusalem. Drums (tophim) were beat so the cries of the children couldn't be heard.
Mormo- Important demon placed in Mormon Monarch slaves.
Nanna-
Nemo--Mormon programming
Octopus--blood sucking demon
Orion--placed over Mormon victims, the name Orion is popping out all over the place, **Pan**-protector of woods
Ronwe-Squat--a number of Illuminati Monarchs report that this demon gives them the ability to understand foreign languages, **Shu**--does internal weather magic
Others incl.-Typhon (program tunneling connections in the mind), Verono, Vultar Val (legion), Pan whose depression sends one Rege (drugs), who sends one to Bacchus(addiction) which then starts a bondage loop.

THE JOKERS

The everyday demons who the alters have to contend with if they step out of line, are the Jokers. Jokers can jump out of the mirrors and drag an alter into the looking glass world. Alters going into the system away from their assigned living quarters end up in mazes of mirrors. The mazes of mirrors can't be broken because demons are placed behind the mirrors. However, deliverance methods work well to destroy the power of these demonic protected mirrors.

Many, if not most of the occult world do not view spirits as evil. Illuminati children are taught that these spirits are playmates. Since the child is not allowed real friends, they are happy to have demons to play with inside their mind. One major religion whose adherents publicly seek spirit (demonic) possession--although they again view spirits as being capable of both good and evil, neutral in connotation much like the Greek gods, is Voodoo.

VOODOO (Vaudou)

In discussing how trauma-based mind-control is done, voodoo must be included as a component. Many of the Mind-controlled slaves have had voodoo as part of their trauma, and many had voodoo dolls placed into their Systems. When vows and oaths are made, an object is given to the satanic cult or the Illuminati for the Keeper of the Seals to guard. If the vow is broken voodoo magic can be used against the offender by using the object given in the sealing.

Voodooism came from Africa, where it is called Ju-Ju. A recent book *Blood Secrets* is the true story of demon worship and human sacrifice by a former JuJu high priest Isaiah Oke, who gave up JuJu magic for the Christian faith. The Basuto in Africa call witches "baloi", the Akans say "obayifo" and the Lovedu say "vuloi". There are different names and variances of magical practices, but what most people don't realize is that these are just different styles of JuJu-ism. The JuJu priests (called a babalawo) will rule the religious/magic lives of an African village. JuJu is satanic, and much of it is kept secret by its high priests. The Priests take blood oaths of secrecy.

The West African name for Satan is Esu. A group in Phoenix, AZ claims to be in contact with an alien named Jesus Esu Sananda.

Another word that has come from Voodoo is the word zombie.

Many members of the Illuminati go to the Caribbean and South America to attend Illuminati rituals. Umbanda (Brazilian satanism), which is sometime mistakingly called Macumba, openly has satanic rituals on Copacabana Beach. Many of the elite have made their pilgrimage to Copacabana Beach, incl. european royalty and the Pope. There are 7 bloodlines in Umbanda, and a newcomer must join one of these. If Amer. Illum. slaves have memories of Argentina and other Latin American countries, the memories could easily be true. The Illuminati within the Jehovah's Witnesses' Bethel HQ (which are programmed multiples) have used quiet islands in the Bahamas for rituals. In 1958, it is believed (according to 2 partly de-programmed multiples) that it was Andros Is., Bahamas which they used for their rituals.

In Haiti, Voodoo, called Vaudou, is the religion of the majority of the people, about 90% of the people. This is interesting because it gives us an example of what the situation is like when an entire nation regularly seeks to be demon possessed. Possession behavior in the various black occult groups, such as Umbanda (brazilian satanism), Haitian Vaudou, and the St. Vincent Shakers (also called Zeckeeboom people) is a **learned** behavior. Candidates for mediumship in Sao Paulo Umbanda are given special training in trance & possession. They use dissociation techniques such as focusing on a lighted candle, or turning the person and snapping the fingers to put people in trance. In the U.S., because demon possession seems rare to psychiatrists, they have labeled demon possessed people as "crazy". However, in Haiti, an entire nation regularly conducts rituals to become demon possessed. Since the norm is to be demon possessed, it fails to be abnormal behavior. Many of the other labels and explanations that psychiatrists find easy to give concerning demon possession in the U.S. obviously just don't explain what is happening in Haiti. Some of the explanations given by psychiatrists for demon possession in Voodoo is a. repressed personality is coming to the surface, b. that the voodoo trance is an act to impress a crowd, c. it stems from hysterical nervous disorders, and d. it stems from psychopathy, neurosis, or schizophrenia.

a. In Haiti, demon possession of people can not be a repressed personality because the person being possessed of a demon must behave according to rigorous rules of how each demon is supposed to act. Far from expressing himself, the victim of demon possession tries to personify some mythical spirit whose character on the whole is foreign to himself.

b. In Haiti, most people who go into the demon possessed state are not observed closely because it is the norm for people to become demon possessed. People at the ceremonies may cast absentminded looks at the people being possessed, but the entire scenario gains the possessed person very little attention. Nor does an entire crowd in Haitian Voodoo get possessed, or go into a collective delirium. The excitement is quite varied with the crowds.

c. If explanation c. were true, it would mean an entire nation is hysterical and mentally deranged. 40 years ago it was shown that the Haitian people are not all hysterical, but that demon possession in Haiti was the normal means of communicating with supernatural powers. If demon possession trances were genetic in origin, then why do some groups of blacks from the same gene pool but living in other nations have absolutely little to do with the occult?

d. Investigators in Haiti have had to discount demon possession as a neurosis. According to one investigator the number of schizophrenics and psychotics is very small within cults like Voodoo. "Here the very marked lack of response to the cathartic therapies employed in possession cults in the case of seriously disturbed individuals...is itself a testimony to the robust mental health of the majority of participants....The latter have no difficulty at all in communicating their problems. They operate within a culturally standardized medium of communication. Nor in contrast to the true self-insulated psychotic, do they miss their "cues." They respond in the expected way, and others react equally predictably." A Brazilian psychiatrist said that **no** "frankly schizophrenic person would be able to pass the probationary scrutiny" involved to join this religious group. (These last two quotes come from a study of Black Religious groups.)

Interestingly, studies made of W.W. II war criminals show no personality differences between them and the normal population. Could it be possible that there really is a demonic element in the lives of people that helps move them in the direction of evil?

So`what is demon possession in Haiti's Voodooism? According to the Haitians a spirit which they call "loa" joins a person like a rider mounts a horse. The spirit then controls the person like a rider. The possessed person is called a "chual" which means horse, and the spirit is said to mount or saddle his victim. Blood sacrifices are often associated with the demon, and the possessed person will drink the blood from the sacrificed animal. Polished stones, and herbs, and trance and dissociative states are used to attract spirits.

While the Monarch slaves have trauma-based dissociative states, the practitioners of Voodoo have ritually induced dissociative states. Voodoo rituals will involve chanting, drums, at times handclapping and frenzied dancing to induce the dissociative states. In fact, several features have been identified which bring about dissociative states in the black religions of the Caribbean and South America. First they have dancing to a pronounced and rapid beat. Next, the induction into the dissociative state frequently follows a period of starvation and/or overbreathing (hyperventilation). The beginning of the demonic possession is characterized by a brief period of muscle inhibitions, or a collapse. The person who is experienced at being possessed acquires a specific behavior pattern for the deity that is supposedly controlling it. And finally, the head and limbs may tremor under trance, and the person may become dissociative enough that they can pick up red hot irons. The possessed can be conscious, semiconscious, or unconscious.

Studies made of this situation where an entire nation like Haiti actively seeks demonic possession allows us to discount some explanations and get a better picture of what demon possession isn't. It also helps to understand what is involved in demonic possession.

The first major authoritative work on Haitian Voodoo written in 1884 by Spencer St. John reported on the terror, the blood rites, and the cannibalism of Haitian Voodoo. This has been too much for some people to believe. Still, if people stop to realize how Voodoo came about it, it makes sense. Conservative estimates of the number of slaves brought into the port of Saint Dominque while it was a plantation colony are 900,000. The conditions on the island for the slaves was like a Nazi work camp. The cruelty on the colonial Haitian plantations was beyond comprehension. The Africans brought in as slaves already practiced JuJu. Under the crucible of the severe torture of slavery, the slaves formed Haitian voodoo, which is a conglomeration of African Voodoo, masonic rites, and European magic and Catholic saints and symbols. For 2 centuries, their African vaudou was these slaves only power against their cruel plantation owners, and is partly credited for helping Haiti become the first free black republic in the revolution of 1804.

In Haiti, Cuba, Brazil, Trinidad and other areas of the New World, where JuJuism has transformed itself into black occult religions, the old gods of Africa: Damballa, Erzilie, Legba, Obatala, Ogun, Oshun and others have been equated with Catholic saints and given the names of these saints.

The ritually induced dissociative states of Voodoo are generally accompanied by amnesia, that is lost time. During this lost time, the person acts as if he is a spirit (god). This is a ritual based dissociative state rather than a trauma-based dissociative state. The Illuminati Monarch programming at times attempts to combine the two bases--ritual and trauma--to create a dissociative state. This is why is it difficult to separate out the religious factor.

INDIA

Up to now there have been numerous cases of demonic possession in India, but there has been no case of a true multiple personality. The reason why is that the multiple's in the U.S.-Europe are being cranked out by trauma-based mind-control and the Illuminati hasn't been programming in India like the U.S. & Europe. As the slaves that are being created disperse, within time, we will eventually start seeing multiples in India. In the *American Journal of Psychotherapy*, Jan. 1981, p. 115, it states, "However, so far, no case of double or multiple personality so labeled by a psychiatrist, has been reported from India in the professional literature. Considering that hysterical disturbances in general are quite widespread in the country, this is surprising. On the one hand, it could mean an actual low prevalence of multiple personality in the country."

For those of us who understand what is happening, it is obvious why multiples aren't found in India. The fact that multiples aren't found in India ought to wake up people that multiple personalities is not "demon possession" nor is it simply the result of bad parenting or everyday type of horrendous trauma. Almost everyone has a trauma in their early life, and is somewhat dissociative, but that doesn't make them have multiple personalities, which are programmed and have separate histories and altar names. India has over twice the population of the U.S. and yet no multiples reported. After reading this book, the reader understands why not.

It might be appropriate to point out here that the early American cases of MPD (now called DID) are from bloodlines associated with the Illuminati. The first widely reported American case of MPD was Mary Reynolds in 1811. *The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines* covers the Reynold's bloodline as being a major Illuminati bloodline. Two other earlier Amer. MPD cases are one involving a man from Edinburgh University, Scotland and one found discussed in a letter in 1791 written by a Reverend Joseph Lathrop of Mass. to the President of Yale Ezra Stiles. (See *Letters and Papers of Ezra Stiles, President of Yale College, 1778-1795*. New Haven: Yale Univ. Press, 1933.) Those, who have tracked the conspiracy, or read Fritz's writings, know that Yale founded by the Unitarians has long been important for the Illuminati. The Unitarians have been connected with hermeticism and money from the start.

HOW THE ANTI-CHRIST SPIRIT CONTRIBUTES TO CONTROLLING THE SLAVE

Within the Illuminati hierarchy slaves, the Spirit of the Anti-Christ operates. The Mothers-of-Darkness are only allowed to become Mothers-of-Darkness after they marry the AntiChrist. The entire worldwide collection of Mothers-of-Darkness alters will serve the physical AntiChrist as a private harem when he takes over. They will also serve as an inner elite guard of the physical AntiChrist. They describe the consummation of the marriage with the AntiChrist as being badly burned. Because the AntiChrist, who is alive and well today, will be/is already the master handler and the master programmer a description of him is given in Appendix A.

How does the Spirit of the AntiChrist influence a Mind-controlled slave? Some of the things that this Spirit does to control individuals is to cause them to judge themselves. Another thing done to control the slave's alters to change their focus so they can't grow spiritually, bribe the person with enticing doctrines of demons, and mislead people from true freedom into religious bondage. We will clarify what we mean as we explain these things in the next few paragraphs.

Satan himself spawned the Anti-Christ spirit, as well as leading the demonic angels into their evil. The Spirit of the Anti-Christ has as its purpose the destruction of everything that God has built within the person--their looks, their curiosity of beauty, and their personhood itself. The Spirit of the AntiChrist is attached to the religious spirit when people get Christianity without the Spirit of Life.

Many Monarch slaves with the Anti-Christ spirit are working under the cover of being good Christians. The Bible even talks about them, "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." 2 COR 11:13-15.

The greek word translated "transforming" is also the source of our word masquerade. It means to have a front, with a hidden character behind the front. The words of the apostles warn Christians about "double-minded men" (JS 1:8) and that Satan's key people will masquerade with false fronts.

In contrast, the Scriptures admonish followers of Christ to have their public lives match their private lives.

Satan lavishes the Spirit of the AntiChrist upon his hierarchy. He doesn't lavish his spirit within what he views as the "rabble" of humanity, who do not directly serve him. When the Spirit comes into a person, it comes in as a cold clammy spirit that consumes all hope and all joy in life. Rather than being a fresh breeze bringing joy, this Spirit of the AntiChrist is like a vacuum sucking life. It is like being raped. Victims of this spirit, say they felt like they were raped and defiled by it. The person's own natural feelings of cleanliness will feel violated. This Spirit can touch our lives in different ways and at different levels. When our personal standards are violated, the person will often not forgive themselves. Instead, they judge themselves. This further illustrates how the AntiChrist sets up abusive patterns. By judging ourself, rather than forgiving, we set ourselves up as God, for only God can judge a person, for He is the only one who has a true standard and measuring stick to judge by. Captured by the cycle of abuse of the Spirit of the AntiChrist, a person will continue to beat up upon themselves. At some point we forgive ourselves, and in so doing we are saying that the memory no longer has mastery over us.

As Christ is the incarnation of God in the flesh, the AntiChrist will be the incarnation of Satan in the flesh. (cf. REV 13:4) Satan wanted God's power and glory, but not the character of God. The Spirit of the AntiChrist has a wisdom that it promotes which is "earthly, natural, demonic." (JAS 3:14-15) The Spirit of the AntiChrist will entice people with the Doctrine of Demons. (See 1 TIM 4:1) For instance, "For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that are just escaping from them who live in error. While they promise liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption..." 2 PTR 2:17-19

The AntiChrist Spirit breaks our ability to love God & others.

Satan's original pride came from selfishness. The Spirit of the AntiChrist brings selfishness, but it brings it in a hidden way. The AntiChrist Spirit will cause pain. Heaven, where the Spirit of the AntiChrist is absent--has no suffering. The hidden damage of pain is that it inflicts self-focus. Christ as he hung on the cross was able to continue to focus on others. While most men would have been thinking about themselves in self-pity Jesus was still thinking of others. He said to his mother, "Woman, behold your son." And to John, "Behold your mother." To paraphrase, Take care of my mother. Later he said, "Forgive them for they know not what they do." (See the Gospel of John) Jesus even brought someone to the Lord while he hung on the cross. He was evangelizing. Don't so many Christians look for the ideal situation to lead people to the Lord, yet Christ did it under the worst of conditions.

Self-focus, selfishness and pride are closely related. It is hard to point out where one begins and the other ends. The Spirit of the AntiChrist wants to draw others to its position of pride. So it inflicts pain and suffering, like it did to Job to draw the attention of the person off of Yahweh God and one's fellowman and onto oneself. All the commandments hang on us loving Yahweh God will all our heart, soul, and mind, and loving our neighbor as ourselves, but the AntiChrist Spirit gets our focus off of Yahweh and others and onto ourselves.

Bitterness may develop in us. Bitterness grieves the Holy Spirit. Bitterness will seat itself in our mind, and like a transponder will emit bitterness. A lack of peace and joy results. The Spirit of the AntiChrist has sidetracked the whole maturing process. As a child grows into an adult it learns to shift its focus from itself to others.

Can we go in and focus on our own problems and solve them? If part of the problem is self-focus, then the answer is "no." The answer lies in focusing on the Holy Spirit. Living and walking in the Spirit of Christ is the health we seek. (GAL 5:16; JN 15:1-11) Does it work? Yes. The authors know of many cases, where all kinds of individuals solved all kinds of problems by receiving the Holy Spirit into their lives.

They see the supernatural cleansing that happens, but many times they don't understand the principle behind what they just experienced. When some of their problems persist, do they turn again to focus on the Holy Spirit? Often they focus on themselves, self-pity, bitterness, etc. Counseling today often takes this approach. It is fine to identify the problem, but then following that- the solution is not to focus on the problem but to get out of the path of death.

The process of healing.

Healing may be a process, not an event. We break an arm in a second, it takes many months to heal. We break our capacity to love God and our fellowman, but we expect an instant cure. Anyone who has met the Spirit of the AntiChrist needs to learn how to love again. Love is an action word. One learns to hammer nails by hammering nails. One learns to type by typing. One learns to love by loving. The survivor who has been controlled by the Spirit of the AntiChrist may need to get a teacher of love, a "Loving teacher" so-to-speak.

PART J. THE USE OF ANGEL ALTERS

Many Illuminati models had "angels" or "spirit guides" created that could provide divine messages to the Monarch slave. The Illuminati/Intelligence agencies have been highly successful with controlling people via their religious beliefs by implanting alters who are seen by a Monarch slave as being a messenger from God or the god(s). For someone like, Loretta Lynn, they use spirits of Indians. Another example of this, is someone having 3 Black Angels. The concept is the same though. This works in closely with having demonic guides.

PART K. SCRIPTURES IN PROGRAMMING

An ex-Programmer states that the Illuminati Mind-Control intentionally used verses from every book of the Bible. The Programmers also intentionally used everything Jesus said in one distorted way or another in the programming. A person can pick up a Bible with Jesus' words in red, and get a quick idea of one area of the Bible which was heavily misused. The programmers love to reframe (twist) parables.

Billy Graham, who is a Monarch handler, is very adept at weaving in programming language in with biblical messages. For instance, as this book was being finished, in his 1995 televised Christmas message, given in front of a fireplace with 13 candles lit behind him, he said, "Come home so I can give you a new heart." A little later he activated the Plowshares programming, and a little later he said, "from the cradle to the cross to the ground", which is a phrase any deeper cult alter would have an entirely different meaning for than the person on the street.

Readers, who read chapter 5, will remember what was written about Billy Graham. When Billy Graham was in Portland, his ministry somehow got the addresses and phone numbers to all the Monarch survivors in the area, who he invited to a personal meeting with him. While he had his mind-control survivors gathered, he talked to them and set off their programming with their personal codes. This was observed by several witnesses. His ministry also sends codes via their messages flashed across the bottom of the T.V. screen.

The reader needs to bear in mind that bloody Satanic holidays occur around Christian holy days. The Winter Solstice occurs around Christmas. Every Christmas, the Illuminati covens around the world build mangers with children which the sacrifice. This is worked in to enhance the programming they are doing with their children. Around Easter time, the Illuminati do Death, burial and resurrection ceremonies (traumas). Nothing sacred to Christianity gets overlooked. The method that it is mocked depends on who is in control of that region's ceremonies.

The idea of using Scriptures for programming accomplishes several things:

a. therapists are usually secular and unfamiliar with the Bible. This prevents exposure of the programming cues and triggers and fronts.

b. ministers are usually unable to believe in psychology and mind-control programming and so their Bible knowledge is not of any therapeutic benefit because they are ignorant of Satan's devices. Some Christian ministers are putting out advice that Multiples need to be helped by simply telling "the person" to quit using multiplicity as a way to cop out of responsibility. First, there is no "person" who is using multiplicity as a cop out--the personality of the person has been shattered--and no one person represents the entire mind. Second, the person is not in control of their mind to stop what is happening. They are under total mind control.

c. the last place people would look for understanding Satanic programming is in the Bible.

d. when programmed multiples go to church, they can be used, and programmed by using Christian terms. There are "Christian" churches in Washington, Arkansas, Tennessee, and California and many other places which are 100% cult mind-control operations, such as the "Lord's Chapel."

e. When a programmed multiple tries to set themselves free by taking in spiritual knowledge of God, they find that the Bible is a programming trigger, that sets off programming or brings up some alter. Reading the book of 1 John might bring up the Illuminati's alter named Jesus.

f. The cult which is doing the programming by making a mockery of God, can build their egos and their pride. It may allow them to feel they are more powerful than God Almighty.

g. The victim can be told that "God" is telling them to do something. And who sets himself up as "god"? --the cult programmer.

There isn't anything in the Bible that can't conceivably be misused, but some of the Scriptures and their programming misuse are listed below. Scriptures that lend themselves to double-binds, to obedience or cover stories that seem to justify the programmer and the programming are used. Names of Queens and Kings in the Bible can be used for alter names. The men who wrote under inspiration, knew that scriptures could be misused, in 2 COR 4: 1-2 Paul writes about himself, "Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully..." Clearly, mishandling the word of God deceitfully is an ancient art.

GENESIS--
Genesis Creation Story--cover story for the creation of parts of a slave's System
Tree of Life--used to create an internal Cabalistic Tree of Life for alter magic
Adam & Eve--code words
Garden of Eden--part of the System, usually the early pure part that needs to be guarded by "angels"(demons)
Angels--alters or demons placed into a System. Angles could be a method by which the abuser sends messages to the person, thus giving divine credibility to the programmer's message. Angel names can represent alters and demons placed into a person.
Sodom & Gomorrah--a type of suicide program
Genesis 22:17-18, "That in blessing I will bless thee, [the programmer as god is going to bless the victim with torture] and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;
and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed [all the areas of the system]; because thou hast obeyed my voice." [the programmer's voice]
Melchizedek--a type of occult order or rank
Genesis 38--pledge of a signet, bracelet & staff--trigger cues to open up a System to obey.
Joseph & Esau's birthright--Satanic birthrights emphasized as if sanctioned by God's word.
EXODUS--The 12 (actually 13 with Manassah and Ephraim) Tribes of Israel can be used for the code names of alters and sections of alters.
House of Israel--code name for section/structure of a system
Plagues of Egypt--Program to terrorize a slave.
Oaths and Covenants--their existence in the Bible is used to emphasize the validity to Satanic oaths and covenants. The curses that God says will happen if disobedience takes place are used by the Handlers to instill fear into the victim, that if he doesn't comply, God's curses will fall on them. The Catholic/Jesuit programming relies heavily upon the Bible. The Bible verse ECL. 5:4 "When you make a vow to God, do not delay to pay it...It is better not to vow than to vow and not pay," is used by these Satanic programmers to hold their victims under vows made under duress, hypnosis, or deception. (DT 23:21 also emphasizes keeping your vows.) These Satanic Mind-controlled slave handlers do not tell their slaves that Numbers 30 states that many vows, such as the vows of children are null and void. The first fruits of things belong to the real God of the Bible and can't be vowed away. The Satanic groups like to take the first male child in mockery of what belongs to God. Evil vows, vows made under duress (just like contracts made under duress) are null and void. But the Handlers never tell their slaves these "finer points of the law." Instead, they use the Bible to justify their own goals.
I AM [one of the names of Yahweh]--used as a programming cue or name
EX 15- "I am the Lord that healeth thee". The programmer can apply this to himself as he helps rescue the victim from a manufactured life-threatening crisis.
Ten Commandments with LEV 20--used to belittle the victim to show him that he is rejected of God.
When the Programmer sets himself up as God, he can misapply all the verses calling on people to serve God such as DT 4:29 "Seek the Lord thy God, thus thou shalt find him, if

thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul." See DT 8:18 also DT 11:13, "love the Lord your God, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul." Of course many of the alters have been stripped of their hearts during programming and given a heart of stone. They do not have a real heart to serve God, but they can serve their master with their heart of stone.

OT HISTORICAL BOOKS--1 KG chapters 16-21, The story of Ahab, Jezebel, and Elijah. The Programmers play themselves in the role of Jehu coming to protect what is his. The only admirable thing for Jezebel to do, is to put her make-up on and prepare herself to die. This story is used to make a woman slave think that the only admirable thing to do is to prepare to die like Jezebel. The Vineyard of Naboth is also used as a programming theme.

The show Mysteries of the Bible is an example of how the Bible and television can work together to control a person. This show had an episode about Jezebel, Ahab and Jehu. It must be remembered that Dr. Green's internal alter in some victims is called Jehu, and that another programmer has taken the identity of Ahab and that one of the deep cats is the Grande Dame programmer represented by Jezebel. The effect of the show on one Monarch System was this: Jehu has the power over the gates and to bring judgement upon Ahab and Jezebel. Jezebel in the show Mysteries of the Bible is praised because when she knew she was going to die she got her makeup on and she got herself ready for Jehu and allowed herself to be killed. The System understood the show to mean in paraphrase: "this is a threat, you are to get yourself ready for Jehu or whoever and comply."

PROPHETS--
EZ (Ezekiel) 1:15-17 and the rest of the chapter. This whole chapter is used to build the internal circle within circles of interconnecting worlds of the alter system.
Jeremiah 18:3--When the child is 3 or 4, a utility program called the Potter Wheel is placed in so that the Programmer can work with an entire section of alters if he so desires. When an alter(s) go up on the wheel, they are available to be worked on. They will be asked to "stand in file according to rank and serial no."

EZ 37-The story of the Valley of Dry bones is used as a way of reactivating dead robots--or dead robotic clones within a Monarch system.

JER (Jeremiah) 47:3--in this verse horses show up when a boundary was crossed. This is used to put in protective programming.
Nahum 3:2--the sword=staff
The entire 3rd chapter of Nahum is used to make slaves feel that God has rejected them. They have no heart, because of their evilness.

DANIEL
Daniel 10--the Beast with 10 toes (used for programming in the Beast computer)

GOSPELS--
MT 5:13 "Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savior wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and to be trodden under foot of men." This is used to justify punishment of the slave.

MT 6:22-23 "The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is good, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!" These words are used with a mean programming trick where disobedient alters are pulled up, locked into placed, placed mentally within crystal chandeliers and then the sexual organs, mouth, and side of the brain are shocked in sequence. The "light" does a severe shattering to all the alters which experience the shocks. This shatters the disobedient alters and they are replaced with others.

MK 3:24-25, "And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand." Used to help justify backup programming that will not allow disobedience. The slave's front alters are told to go along with the rest of the System's desires, and if not, then the house (body) will fall (commit suicide). This type of scriptural programming is used in a demonic way to keep the victim from straying from the script of the mind-control.

MK 4:6 "But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away." This is used to make sure the roots of the programming are not uprooted.

MK 4:28-32, "And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God?...It is like a grain of mustard seed...But when it is sown it groweth up and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it." In the programming, a tree is programmed mentally into the victim's entire body. This tree carries the programs, and the birds nest in it. This scripture is used for the imagery of part of that programming.

MK 5--This entire chapter deals with the story about Legion (which is a large number of demonic spirits). The story is also found in MT 8:33. Legion is placed into the person to guard the All-Seeing-Eye.

LK 1:46-52, When a person is traumatized and the Master is allowed to save the victim, he can present himself as Savior and will use this scripture to buttress his authority.

LK 11:9-10, "And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened." This is used to reinforce the knocking triggers that open up a system. MT 7:8 is almost identical to this scripture.

JN 15:4, "As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me." This is used to force the slave to stay within the programming script, so that the fruit (the programs) will not be damaged. The slave has been given lots of alters and demons whose only assignment is to protect that fruit-bearing (the program-bearing) capability of the System. This chapter continues, "If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you....If you keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love." JN 15:7,10 In other words, the Master is telling the slave, if you do what I command, you remain in my love, but I will pull my love away if you don't comply.

ACTS 17:28, "For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring." The slave is bonded totally with their master. His existence is their existence.

PAUL'S WRITINGS--

ROM 1:7, "And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power." The slave is to depend upon the Master called God for all this.

ROM 1:18, "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness." Used by the Programmer/handler to justify their wrathful abuse.

ROM 6:16, "Know ye not, that to whom ye

yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness." This scripture is a good one to use with ROM 13:1 to make the slave think that obedience to the Master's authority is righteousness.

ROM 7:22, "For I delight in the law of God after the inward man." God is the Programmer, and the slave is to delight in the programmer's laws.

ROM 9:20-22, "Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

"Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

"What if God, willing to show his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction."

The programmers teach the alters that the Programmers are the Potter and the alters and their minds are the clay. What right does the clay have to question the Potter. This is a powerful verse used to insure compliance and acceptance of the programming.

ROM 13:1, "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." There is the perfect scripture to be misused to prove to the slave that their master has to be God or at least ordained by God. Who has power? where does power and authority come from? God. This is a favorite verse within the Catholic realms to demand loyalty to authority. To defy their authority is to defy God. It is the perfect double-bind for the slave.

1 COR 3:16, "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are." The slave has a temple built into their System and they are told that their master is God. If they defile that temple (by touching the programming)--their master will destroy them.

1 COR 11:27, "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord." Actual blood and an actual human body are consumed. The person is told they must be worthy of this or else they are guilty.

2 COR 1:22 "God; who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts." Can be applied to the Programmer, who is God.

2 PTR 2:22--Slaves are cursed with the verse and as dogs told to return to their own vomit. During the tortures of eating foul things, the slave doesn't want to vomit--because it is a standard practice to make slaves eat their own vomit.

REVELATION (OR APOCALYPSE)--
The White Stones of REV. 2:17--The deeper alters go through a ceremony where the white stone is taken and a black stone with their name is given.

REV. 6-8. The 7 seals are used for Armageddon Suicide programming. First, the white, second the fiery red, third the black seal, and the fourth is pale, it is death & hades, fifth, is blood and beheading, sixth, is earthquakes internally, and the seventh is golden which is silence.

RV 21--The description of heaven is used to build internal structures and the stones used in heaven are used for access points. "The street of the city was pure gold, like transparent glass." RV 21:21 lends itself to Wizard of Oz Yellow Brick Road programming. The words "Alpha and Omega" are programming triggers. The trumpets and seals of Revelation and the horses of judgement are all part of the charismatic Monarch Mind Control.

THE BIBLE IS OPPOSED TO MIND CONTROL& PROVIDES MANKIND WITH AN ANCIENT WARNING.

The prophets of the Bible warned that mind control would dominate the world in the last days. For instance Paul wrote, "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils." 1 TM 4:1,2 "...the god of this world hath **blinded the minds** of them which believe not..." 2 COR 4:4/ Along this line Jesus the greatest prophet said, "When the Son of Man comes [referring to his own second coming], will he find the faith on the earth?" Lk 18:8

Paul warns "Let no man deceived you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first [from the truth]." 2 THES 2:3,4

He tells us that in the last days people will not endure sound doctrine which means sound teachings. The prophet John warn that the love of the truth was all that would protect people in the end times from the mass deceptions coming. It is this mass mind control and individual mind control which allows the satanic New World Order to carry out a world-wide satanic conspiracy right under the noses of the world's citizenry without the majority of people even being alarmed!

"...The whole world lies in the control of the evil one." 1 JN 5:19

Part L. THETA PROGRAMMING

Theta Programming got its name just as the Alpha, Beta, and Delta Programming in part from the four types of EEG brain waves. Theta waves are frequent in children. The 4 types of waves are rated according to their wave frequencies which are delta- 1-3 cycles/sec; theta 4 to 7 cycles/sec; alpha 8 to 13 cycles/sec; and beta 13+ cycles per second.

Psychic warfare became a branch of the Monarch Programming. This is the Theta Programming. It is the marriage of occult practices with state of the art science. The idea to be able to copy what Elisha did to the King of Syria (2 KG 6:11-12) when he "telepathically" spied on the enemy, discovered their plans, and thereby ruined their chances of success. Today this has been called "ESPionage", and the U.S. Army's term is "psychotronics". Of course, the CIA's position is that they couldn't find anything that worked, but that is simply not true, because the co-authors know of many Theta alters and Theta model systems which have Theta programming which is successful.

Black magicians have been honing their skills on how to deflect magical attacks for centuries. Are their efforts superstition and empty nonsense, or do they really have efficacy? The Illuminati and Hitler believed in black magic. And in recent times, the other groups involved in trauma-based mind-control have also looked into magic based psychic warfare. For those readers who skipped the split-brain programming section, you may want to read that section to find out how the Illuminati create alters via split-brain programming who are very intuitive and capable of interacting in higher demonic spheres such as the occult planes of the magical Watchtowers.

Some of the groups who did research for the Monarch's Theta Programming are:

AiResearch (AI can stand for artificial intelligence) Manufacturing Co., Torrance, CA (such as psychic warfare & ESP)
Biological Dept. of Air Force Research, Baltimore, MD (telepathy)
Bell Telephone, Boston, MS (telepathy)
Defense Intelligence Agency
Duke University Parapsychology Lab, Durham, N.C. (parapsychology, ESP, telepathy)
Garret Air Research Corp., El Segundo, CA. (ESP, ELF)
General Electric, Schenectady, NY
Institute of Noetic Sciences
Maimonides Dream Lab in Maimonides Medical Ctr., Brooklyn, NY
NASA (telepathy and many other things)
National Institute of Mental Health (funneled money to telepathy/clairvoyance projects for the CIA)

Naval Surface Weapons Center and China Lake
Princeton Univ., (ESP, remote perception, telepathy)
Stanford Research Institute
Veterans' Administration Hospitals

Whether the public perceives Psychic warfare as viable or not, billions of dollars have been spent on it, and numerous Theta models produced. Twelve psychics in a room together are said to be able to guide missiles which are fired. There are a number of excellent books that have come out on the subject. The New Earth Battalion and the Delta forces of the U.S. Army consist of Monarch slaves trained in Psychic warfare. (The reader is invited to read for instance John White's book *Psychic Warfare Fact or Fiction? (*Wellingborough, UK: The Aquarian Press.) Col. John B. Alexander has been one of the more visible and prominent military men assigned to training and providing the U.S. Army some elite units of warrior-monks who can fight with both martial arts and psychic warfare. Of course, they picked their elite mind-controlled programmed multiples for this. Col. Alexander's position has director of "the Advanced System Concepts Office" in Adelphi, MD. He has worked with Col. Michael Aquino with Monarch slaves. Upper level martial arts involves the use of the occult. The Ninji are one of the few groups who openly realize that their martial art power comes from demonic powers. A half crow/half man spirit empowers them. The Samurai would kill the Ninji because they used witchcraft in warfare. But the Samurai and many other martial arts also use occult powers, which are actually different forms of witchcraft and demonology, even though they don't recognize it as such. Now American Monarch slaves in the U.S. First Earth Battalion are taught to throw energy balls, to move people during hand to hand combat, and do other things using occult forces. (Yes, these warrior/monk groups are even getting into blood sacrifices.)

In 1987, *The Seattle Times*, ran a front page story on Lt. Col. Jim Channon, who worked with the military Theta models. The story is entitled "The New Army's experiment with 'New Age' thinking". The article says, "So the army tried 'New Age' thinking - the idea that the world can be changed by changing the way people think about it, and that the mind has invisible but tangible powers yet to be tapped. Centers were established at Fort Ord, Calif., and in Washington, D.C., to explore the intriguing idea that mind power plus firepower could either win wars or make them unnecessary. From 1980 to 1982 the proposals were expanded at Fort Lewis by Lt. Col. Jim Channon....The Army began by finding young officers enthused with 'new thought' and combining them with skeptical scientists. The two groups were quickly dubbed **'the butterflies** [an appropriate name for Monarch mind-control men] and the bees.'...One result was an Army think tank at the Pentagon that evaluated the paranormal - unusual psychic or mental phenomena. It brought in proponents of extra sensory perception (ESP), mental spoon-bending, people who 'channeled' spirits and even a helmet designed to unite the left (logical) and right (intuitive) halves of the brain."

Col. John B. Alexander, US Army and part of the Monarch Programming, wrote for *Psychic Warfare*, "Psychotronics may be described as the interaction of the mind and matter. While the concepts may stretch the imagination of many readers, research in this area has been underway for years, and the possibility for employment as weaponry has been explored. To be more specific, **there are weapons systems that operate on the power of the mind and whose lethal capacity has already been demonstrated.**" Some of those systems are Monarch systems of the Theta Model, and many of those in the military are young men of the Illuminati. Some have been seen at NORAD, in Colorado, which helps confirm that Theta models are being employed to bring in the Anti-Christ. (NORAD is a main center for Alex and Janus end-timed programming.)

THE FIRST EARTH BATTALION

The First Earth Battalion is a banner under which the forces of good in the world can unite and find strength in spirit with others who share a common goal. Warrior Monks are guardians of the good, guardians of humanity, nature and the planet. Warrior Monks in the United States Army are already teaching soft tactics. Others in the fields of economics, politics, and international affairs are already searching for new ways to work for the greater good in their own arenas. The modern Citizen Samurai in day to day existence is engaged in moral combat to reorganize and focus personal life to its highest good.

This manual was created from the ideas and teachings of over a hundred groups on the New Age Frontier of the West Coast of the United States. It is a primary tool to assist you in giving and getting the most possible from your experience in a human form in the physical realm of this planet earth. It will assist you in preparing for possibilities and events about which you may presently not even be able to dream. Prepare yourself so you will be ready... Begin your work locally until the call goes out for global action.

D.C.
motto
"Think globally
Act locally."

guidelines

The manual is a self instructional workbook which contains operational procedures for changing old patterns of action into new ones. The reader can benefit by practicing the exercises contained and by reading and studying the manual as a reference textbook.

Awareness training, bodywork, martial arts, and spirit work are included in the manual as well as the advanced tactical ideas of the First Earth Battalion itself. Visual concepts will help the reader grasp many of the multi-dimensional ideas. A bibliography is included for further study. Where possible, names and addresses of various groups are included for the training described.

The ideas included are the most powerful and workable concepts gleaned from visits to over one hundred advanced human performance useful for many to do the work in some detail and then periodically use the pages as "flash cards" to keep their awareness at the highest useful level.

This manual is experimental and will be revised after the first limited edition goes out . . . is critiqued . . . added to . . . and refined for mass consumption. The drawings and verbiage were executed by Jim Channon after each of his visits. The follow-up manuals or supplements promise to continue these reports from the frontier of the third wave world.

THE FIRST EARTH BATTALION

Col. Alexander claims that the ability to transfer energy from one person to another has been proven, that emanations of body energy have been proven and picked up by Kirlian photography, and finally that hypnotic states have been induced telepathically.

The Pentagon and the CIA spent many millions of dollars on ESP, at least $6 million per year. According to the information that has leaked, there are psychic humans, but the ability is not a consistent ability available for all.

In the early 1980s it came out that the Navy had 34 psychics, who they paid $400 a month, to track Soviet subs. The CIA claimed during the cold war that 200 Russian experts were working on telepathy.

Many of the Illuminati's Monarch slaves will speak about learning on the astral plane. One reason it is difficult to deprogram a slave, is because the deeper parts know how to astral project, and can carry out the demonology which helps their master to astral project to them so that the System can be reprogrammed. Whether the therapist believes in demonology or not, if the therapist deprograms a client and then finds out that the deeper parts have undone the work via the astral plane, the therapist should look into how to manage this problem. This type of reprogramming rarely needs to occur because few slaves are ever even partially deprogrammed.

One of the most skilled programmers of Astral Projection is the Programmer B. Bowers. He is known nationally for this skill. He worked with the famous Manly P. Hall, who also had a reputation in the Illuminati for Astral Projection. Astral projection is accomplished by a focused trance where the spirit by demonic power leaves the body and travels to a particular point. Grand Masters within the Illuminati can give lessons to students on the astral plane. Much of their Illuminati occult learning, according to some Illuminati slaves was done on the astral plane. We will discuss several methods on how this is done.

The traditional druidic method (the three stepping stone method) to teach astral projection called "spirit flight" is to get 3 stones, a silver one, a gold one and a black one. Three small stones which are painted would work. The silver represented the female, and the properties of silver. The gold represented male and the properties of gold. And the black stone represented midnight and the unknown and the properties of coal. The silver stone will be placed at a carefully selected location at some distance from the student's house, and then farther out the gold stone will be placed, and still further out the black stone. During sleep the Druidic student will practice seeking out the "three stepping stones" in order.

Telepathy has been developed by the Illuminati, but is a closely guarded secret, which their Illuminati slave alters are trained in. Telepathy is used by Delta teams to coordinate their activity and to sense if one of them is in danger. Duke University (which ties back to the Duke/Reynolds Illuminati bloodlines) has done massive amounts of research into psychic abilities. Only certain people have the ability to be a psychic. A certain type of brain structure is required and the CIA has identified and mapped everyone with this natural ability in the U.S.

However, the Programmers are not above "cheating" in creating psychic phenomena within the slave's mind too. Since slaves can not be consistently given Theta programming, a surgical implantation of a sodium/lithium powered high frequency receiver/transducers coupled with a multi-range discharge capacitor was placed into the brains of Monarch slaves. This gives the handlers the ability to signal by remote signals to the victim's brain. When the receiver picks up the signals they electronically stimulate certain areas of the brain which in turn triggers pre-set programming. Implants are now being placed in a high percentage of the Monarch slaves.

EARTH
BATTALION

be nice to your mother

Thanks friends

THIS INFORMATION HAS BEEN COLLECTED BY DIRECT EXPERIENCE WITH THE TRAINERS OR TRAINING MATERIALS CREATED BY OVER 150 NEWAGE GROUPS, FUTURISTS, PSYCHOTHERAPISTS, THEOLOGIANS, MARTIAL ARTS MASTERS AND A WIDE ARRAY OF PRACTITIONERS BOTH WESTERN AND EASTERN, ANCIENT AND MODERN, AND ORTHODOX AND MYSTIC HAVE GENERATED THESE PRACTICAL RESPONSES TO THE CALL FOR A NEW AGE FOR HUMANKIND. SPECIAL THANKS IS DUE MARILYN FURGESON, LTC FRANK BURNS, OSCAR ICHASO, COL MIKE MALONE, BILL HARVEY, LTC JOHN ALEXANDER, BARBARA MARX HUBBARD, LTC FRANK AKERS, BEA MILLER, JOHN ROGER, OLE NYDAL, GEORGE LEONARD, JOHN DAVIDSON, BILL HELM, PATRICK WATSON, BOB AND LIA KLAUS, LTC BILL WITT, SGT D. SHELA RUHACK, LTC DENNIS FOLEY, ALAN ARMSTRONG, CAROLYN MYSS, DR. JERRY EPPLER, COL HOWARD PRINCE, THE DELTA FORCE TEAM, TERRY DOBSON, THE PACIFIC INSTITUTE, RON MEDVED, THE URANTIA BROTHERHOOD, MICHAEL MEBADON, GRANT RAMEY, THE CENTER OF THE FORM, NANCY GROSSMAN, COL TONY POKORNEY, LTC LEE, LAWRIE DEBIVORT, BART BOYCE, ALAN GIBB, JOE MILLER, JOHN MC NEIL, HELEN AND GEORGE BESCH, A HALF A DOZEN EASTERN GURU'S AND VARIOUS OTHER FOLKS OF QUESTIONABLE ORIGIN. SPECIAL THANKS TO MY FAMILY RITA, PARKER AND BROOKE WHO FROM TIME TO TIME PROBABLY QUESTION MY ORIGIN.

OR ONE OF THESE WRITE ILLUMINATIONS BOX 1000 CAMBRIDGE, MA. 02139

SPECIAL THANKS TO:

LISETTE MEYER .. LAYOUT
CAROL HOSS .. PAINTINGS
ANDERS II. ... FLAGS
GARY ALLEN ... CONCEPTS
JONATHAN ... MUSIC
CHRISTIAN · MARILYN ... PRINTING
LOU TICE ... SUPPORT

Jim Channon
LTC. U.S. ARMY

Note

THE FIRST EARTH BATTALION
MANUAL

Beth says that
his wife says (in 1985)
that he has now

table of contents

The First Earth Battalion
Guidelines
Table of Contents
The Warrior-Monk's Vision

Changing Values 7
Personal Evolution 18
Evolutionary Teamwork 59
Ethical Combat 72
Earthwork 107
Resources 114

THE FIRST EARTH BATTALION

4

HOW OUT OF BODY EXPERIENCES (ASTRAL PROJECTION) ARE DONE

Another method of creating psychic phenomena with the aid of electronics is astral projection using sound waves. This method seems to work fairly consistently, although it is possible it wouldn't work for some people. It was discovered that astral projection occurs at a point that the body is asleep and the mind is awake. Focus 10 is the state of mind where the body is asleep and the mind is awake, and with the proper stimuli the mind can wander off into the astral plane. A few odd people get into the Focus 10 state by themselves, but it is rare. The brain works off of waves that are less than 16 hz. and the human ear can't hear anything below 30 hz. so at first it appears sound waves can't influence the brain. However, if one ear hears 100 hz. and the other ear hears 104 hz. the brain will hear a ghost beat of 4 hz. 4 hz happens to be a theta/delta frequency on the border of sleep and waking that can possibly launch an astral trip. Focus 10 is just the starting point for astral travel. Focus 12, 15, 21 and beyond are the real trip. When a person astral projects it is said to change the EEG pattern to a special pattern called Alphoid.

To stimulate someone to astral project they are induced into sleep, and then just as they lose consciousness, the mind is jolted awake with some high-frequency beta signals. The body remains asleep, and the mind is then free from the body to wander. A hemispheric synchronizer (which was patented in 1975) is used to get both hemispheres working together. Those who want to read more on this subject might start with *Journeys Out of the Body* by Robert A. Monroe, and *Far Journeys*, and D. Scott Rogo's *Leaving the Body: A Complete Guide to Astral Projection*, and *A Traveller's Guide to the Astral Plane* by Steve Richards.

OTHER THETA CONTROLS

ELF (Extremely Low Frequency Waves) are being used to modify people thoughts, implant thoughts, and modify their emotions, such as make a person angry. ELF weapons are being used on civilian targets in the U.S.

High pitched sounds, and helicopter flying with P7 mind control equipment are also augmenting the abilities of the Illuminati/Intelligence Agencies/NWO Network.

TELEPATHY

Essentially all Illuminati slaves have dark side alters who are taught to be telepathic. There will be differing opinions as to whether this is real or imagined. IF it is real, and we will work off of that assumption, then how do the Illuminati do it? Again there are varying opinions about how it mechanically works--it appears that it may involve all or part of the following components:

a. The human nervous system is able to change the gravitational constant in a field surrounding a person. If the sender had a low field and the receiving party had a higher than normal field, thoughts can flow from the sender to the receiving party.

b. Somehow altered states of consciousness influence telepathy. Experiments with two people who simultaneously hypnotize each other, have found that they enter a shared world in which they do not have to verbally speak to communicate.

c. Demonic spirits provide insights to those who are involved in the occult world, as a method to further entrap the occultist. In other words, the person is cooperating with some other intelligence. Although the various occult groups have different ways of explaining telepathy, with Alice Bailey & Lucis Trust (and spin off groups like the I AM movement) it is explained that you are an ascended master. In some groups, telepathy is described as putting on energy and then controlling that energy. It is seldom in the occult world that telepathy is linked with demonology. However, those in the occult world who are skilled in demonology are fully aware that the "energy" that one controls to carry out telepathy are demons. In the occult, the telepathic person must control his demon and then send it to another person. The first person's demon must then control a kindred spirit in that person. High ranking demonology, such as in the high ranks of the Illuminati, would view telepathy as the ability to control demons.

d. An excess of negative ions in the atmosphere has significantly increased telepathic scores in experiments.

When telepathy occurs, researchers have noted that the parasympathetic nervous system is activated, & this occurs along with an increased amount of acetylcholine in the brain.

According to the high levels in the occult, there are 7 points in the Auric Body. These points are not on the physical body, but are on what is called the etheric body (or the body's astral energy) whose location is approximately in the same locality as the physical body, except that it extends for a few inches beyond. The 7 points--(all important demonic portal points) are the top of the head, the third eye, the throat, the chest-heart area, the solar plexus, the lower abdomen, and the genital area. (The back of the head and the spleen make up 2 other points that are not considered as active. There are 21 minor centers, and 49 focal points found on the human body.) Streams of energy called nadis carry the astral energy to where the sender's mind focuses to have the energy taken. The recipient feels this energy in the solar plexus. Another area that is said to be active during telepathy is the throat. The throat area on the etheric body is said to be able to transmit mental thoughts if the sender and receiver are in harmony and rapport, and are dissociated. Intuitional telepathy is said to be a function of the third eye and the throat areas working together to send thoughts. In review, there are several different types of telepathy, all of which use different points of the etheric body.

Whether therapists believe in telepathy or not, if they work with Illuminati slaves who feel comfortable to express themselves, then the therapists will find out that the deeper parts have been trained in mind reading and telepathy.

An Illuminati Monarch mind-control slave will be twinned with another Monarch. If these two persons are in the same room and send forth a glance of love toward each other, they will establish a connecting energy link that allows them to telepathically communicate. When two Multiple personality Systems meet, there will be communication going on dozens of levels as all types of alters seek out their counterparts and begin to communicate.

A drug containing alkaloids derived from the Ayahuasca vine in Brazil is said to place a person into the telepathic state. Canada outlawed it in 1947 after a company sold it publicly in 1946. The U.S. may also have outlawed the drug. Sodium amytal destroys psychic abilities, and caffeine enhances them.

Also a positive intent by the receiver and the correct emotions of both parties helps.

KILLING FROM A DISTANCE

Various methods have been attempted by the military to give their warrior monks the ability to kill by psychic powers. One reported project in the late 1970s, which appears to have tried to link technology with some previous occult ideas, was called Dreamscan. When a person was in his dream state, waves matching brain waves are to be generated by some type of hardware, in order to cause the death of the sleeper. Some intelligence assets in AT&T were said to be involved in this.

IN QUICK REVIEW

The military and the Illuminati are using telepathy, psychic warfare, astral projection and other occult sciences with their programmed slaves. The ability to carry out some of these occult sciences (psychic abilities) can be greatly enhanced by certain drugs, brain wave patterns, training, and demonology. Non-illuminati models may not have these abilities built in, but the deeper alters of Illuminati slaves generally have some alters who are trained in all these abilities.

THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE

One of the major goals of Alchemy was "The preparation of aurum potabile, liquid gold, a sovereign remedy, because gold being itself perfect could produce perfection in the human frame." -quoted from *The History of Chemistry* as quoted by Manly P. Hall in his *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, p. CLV. Gold has long been called the metal of wisdom by the Illuminati. The Illuminati are well aware of the alchemical quest to create the correct type of gold which will bring enlightment to the world. The Rabbi's, who know the Cabala, have considered the secret of white powdered gold the greatest secret of all times.

Somehow the Egyptian Pharaoh's had learned the secret of how to make white powdered gold which when seen up close is transparent--like the gold described in the Bible as making up the streets in heaven. This gold is monotonic (with molecules in a high spin state), and looks like baking flour. It greatly enhances the pineal gland, and a similar substance of iridium greatly enhances the pituitary gland. Regular yellow gold or gold salts will cause the hair of the subject to fall out, but white gold is safe to ingest. After ingesting the white gold for over 9 months, a subject will become extremely psychic and disease free. The person's body will also glow.

Whether the Illuminati discovered this white gold, and have been using it secretly when their adepts went into hiding for months of long training, or whether they were only playing with substitutes we cannot say. (By the way, some occult groups groom slaves in the craft for 24 hours a day for a year.) At any rate, in recent years a man named David Hudson, who is of the Holy Blood line (13th Illuminati Bloodline, of the de Guise lineage), discovered and patented white gold. He named the white gold Ormus, which is the occult name for the Prieure de Sion. Ormus also pertains to gnosticism in the ancient world. Ormus is also the Hebrew words for "golden tree", which David finds appropriate since this white gold is the elixir of life that the sho-bread (& manna) was made from. This is said to be the reason the Priest glowed when he came out of the Holy of Holies, after eating the sho-bread.

David Hudson, told co-author Fritz that he was supportive of the cabalistic goal of Adam Kadmon. Because Hudson knew the cabala very well, it seems likely that he understands what Adam Kadmon is really all about. Monarch slaves of the House of Rothschild have revealed how the Illuminati are able to do what they call Proxying. This is a Mind-Spirit transfer, done by the twinning traumas, channeling, telepathic communication, and astral projection so that all slaves worldwide are being pulled into one single interlinked Demonic One World Mind.

We do not understand how white gold and iridium help the body become a semi-conductor so that the body is highly psychic, but it does. We hope to find out more.

David Hudson has the patent (U.S. patent and some international patents) on white gold. There are a number of scientific studies on white gold which verify the power of white gold on the human body. When the co-author Fritz talked to David Hudson, he certainly knows the occult world exceptionally well, besides being skilled in the Cabala. He claims he has nothing to do with the occult world, and that he stays away from the Illuminati. He says that he took what was occult and turned it into science. The co-author's talk with him left many questions.

David Hudson has given mankind the most important secret that has captivated the best minds of the occult world for centuries, the Quest for the Philosopher's Stone.

FURTHER SPIRITUAL BONDAGE SNARES

There are a number of activities which are snares to entrap people, both Monarch slaves and people in particular, which are not commonly recognized as such. One has to view them in their overall context and the consequences of what these activities lead to.

According to Biblical teachings, Satan is trying to develop man's hidden abilities as well as provide him some extraordinary supernatural power to encourage man's indepedence from God, as opposed to man's faith in, fellowship with and dependence upon his Creator. As man developes these hidden powers that were part of Adam's natural mental, psychic, and physical abilities, mankind increasingly feels more godlike. Man's independence from his Creator Yahweh God, makes him more vulnerable and more dependent upon Satan. (Cf. verses in Scripture about the fall, 1 Cor. 15:4,5,46, how man is a combination of spirit, body, soul in 1 Thes. 5:23, and how Satan's system will do trade in the souls & the power of the souls of men, REV 18:11-13.) Due to the corruption of man, God doesn't want to develop these abilities. For instance, atomic power may make man powerful, but man has not developed spiritually enough for these abilities to be used in a godly fashion. Mankind, according to the Bible, is not ready for these abilities, until mankind is on a higher spiritual walk with God. Today, mankind lacks the authority from God to use occult powers. Mankind's flirtation with occult powers, is similar to the teenage boy who is disobedient to his father's guidelines and uses his new sexual powers before he has learned responsibility and how to use his new power responsibly. We are not to be ignorant of Satan's devices. Understanding about these powers, just as the teenage boy understanding about sexuality in a constructive way, is not the same as the irresponsible use of these powers.

One of the most dangerous, ensnaring spirits, is the Spirit of Gambling. The Illuminati know that if they can get a man hooked on gambling, that gambling will bring in every evil spirit with it. When a man is hooked on gambling he will do anything. Gambling introduces covetiousness, greed and lust. A man with big gambling debts will murder, sell his children, lie, deceive, steal, etc. This is not simply the two authors' opinions, but the experience of the Illuminati in working with human nature. When the Illuminati want to destroy a lineage, they will purposefully try to get a man or woman in that lineage hooked on gambling. That will begin a cycle of evil spirits being passed down for generations. In order, to introduce the gambling spirit into society on a mass scale, they are working off of several traumas. The rejection, abuse, lack of power and lack of respect that the American Indians received from the White man, has opened the American Indians up to accepting the lie that opening gambling institutions on their reservation lands is a good thing. The American Indian is gaining back some power and money, but their gambling operations will actually lead them into further bondage. The state governments are finding it hard to finance projects, and their manufactured hardship is also opening the door to state run gambling. Again we see the trauma, and the subsequent programming lie being done on a mass scale. Once the gambling spirit is entrenched, it will continue to strengthen its control over people and society. These things are well-conceived spiritual operations that are blindsiding Americans because "evil" spirits are no longer politically correct to talk about.

Illuminati Monarch slaves, such as a Mother of Darkness or Grande Master, are given occult powers. They are also frequently connected to gambling--they will have alters who like to gamble. Rather than being activities of power and opportunity, occult power & gambling are really activities that ensnare people. The symbol that the Programmers use to symbolize the bondage loops that they construct is the infinity sign, the same sign that we saw on the front of Billy Graham's *Decision* magazine.

Internal Controls

CHAPTER 11
SCIENCE No. 11- INTERNAL CONTROLS

A. TEACHING OCCULT PHILOSOPHIES

Learning plays an important part in perception. The Programmers try to get their victims to subscribe to philosophies and ideas that will make it hard for them to rebel against their controllers. This is what is termed indoctrination. The same methods of teaching that others find useful are employed. Ways of thinking are incorporated by the slave via handlers, programmers, and the cult they belong to.

Everyone tries in their own way to make sense of life. This is a natural brain function, so that the human mind can understand how to deal with the future. The mind takes raw data, and then applies some type of logic, and comes to conclusions. Once accepted these conclusions can be as hard as nails, and they will defy any attempt to change them, even in the light of new evidence. If the Programmer is smart enough, he can get an alter to logically believe anything. Once the belief is embedded, it will remain there tenaciously.

In the Illuminati, "great" masters and adepts teach "hidden mysteries". The slave feels the authority that emanates from this teacher with special gifts and abilities. The slave is hardly in a position to question the teachings being given from on high.

Circular reasoning, lies, and other tricks are used to convince the person that the occult world is true. For instance, "God abandoned you, therefore you need to cling to us, the only ones who would see any use in you." (The truth is that the cult staged a crisis where their actor playing God abandoned the child to the cult's abusiveness. The whole event was simply cult abuse--with God taking the blame.) "We are trying to fashion a better man, a man with far more capabilities than before, with better genetics. Those who oppose us, are trying to keep humankind back in the dark ages." This is circular reasoning and outright lies. (They are not interested in helping mankind, only destroying it.)

To make occult philosophies more palatable, the occult world attacks the character of anyone whose life would dispute their false claims. They also use a great deal of rationalization, where the end justifies the means. Many slaves have had to sit and listen to their masters rationalize their brutality.

Within the Illuminati, ranks are achieved with much learning and ritual. Within the Temple of Set, a member is required to read certain books. Fritz, the co-author has a list of books a Temple of Set member is asked to read, with the comments attached by the Temple of Set to each suggested title. In their suggested/required reading Category 19 entitled "The Metamind" is *Metropolis* by Thea von Harbou. Their comments are "An Expressionistic portrait of a negative utopia in which humans are controlled by machines...the basis for many electronic/audio-visual ritual techniques employed by the Church of Satan and further developed by the Temple of Set." (p. C21-2) Another is *Physical Control of the Mind: Towards a Psychocivilized Society* by Jose M.R. Delgado. Their comments, "Delgado, Professor of Physiology at Yale University, is one of the most distinguished authorities in the field of Electrical/chemical Stimulation of the Brain (ESB). This book is necessarily dated, but it is so well-written that it deserves to be perused as a preface to more recent works on the subject." (p.C-16?-2) *The Psychology of Anomalous Experience* by Graham Reed. Their comments, "This book addresses unusual, irregular, and puzzling experiences- deja'vu, illusions, delusions, hallucinations, etc.-in terms of the mind's normal psychological processes of gathering, monitoring, processing, and storing information." (ibid.)

This is just a brief look to illustrate to the reader that leaders of groups like the Temple of Set are avid students of mind-control. (An almost complete membership list of this group at one point in time, is provided in Appendix A.) The librarian of the Multnomah County Detention Ctr. shared with co-author Fritz that Sheila, formerly second-in-command of the Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh's commune at Antelope, OR studied, via jail/prison interlibrary loan, books on Hitler's mind-control techniques. Many other examples could be given of how mind-control is being studied and taught by these groups.

One more book on the Temple of Set's reading list would be worthy to point out, *The Psychology of Man's Possible Evolution* by Peter D. Ouspensky. Their comments, "Should be read especially by those members whose magical ability is hampered by flaws in their balance factor....A series of lectures which explain the Gurdjieff approach to the concept better than G. himself was able to do."

There is an important link between Gurdjieff, mind-control, MPD, etc. but the subject is big and needs to be further investigated. Co-author Fritz has been investigating this link, including talking with leaders of the most successful Gurdjieff commune. As with so many groups, what you see, is not what you get.

TEACHING THE IDEOLOGIES OF WAR

One of the ways to control a person is to get them angry and then channel that hate. Wars have been used for centuries by the oligarchies that run things to control their people. Right now, the New World Order is carrying out a Drug War, an Environmental War, and a Bosnian conflict for the express purpose in their own plans to control us. They have a mock-alien invasion planned to further justify more control over our lives. Over the years mankind has created an entire industry around warfare. There are long traditions within military units, that for some reason must be "upheld" by the men who serve in those units. When people buy into the philosophies of war, they can generally be persuaded to give up or do anything to contribute to that war. After all, any sacrifice will be minor compare to the large numbers of bodies that will end up dead. One of the large purposes of the Monarch type of trauma-based mind-control is to produce robotic soldiers who will do anything. Normal military training is usually sufficient for most military needs, so it is clear that Monarch slaves have some ulterior uses that the military doesn't want the public to know about.

VARIOUS DELTA FORCES

The military as well as other groups have created numerous delta teams, delta forces, delta groups etc.

DELTA ASSASSINATION TEAMS

These teams are projects that the Satanic Hierarchy and the CIA collaborated together on. The programming that was placed into people was ingenious and very complex. As the program progressed over the years, the programming became more sophisticated and past mistakes were improved upon. The Delta Teams were programmed to carry out various assignments such as political assassinations. The members of these teams are housewives and other ordinary people who were programmed years ago. The Delta Teams are part of the CIA's psychic warfare bag of tricks. The CIA works so closely with the military that the Delta Force is easily expected to be tied in with the CIA & U.S. intelligence.

DELTA FORCE

The system tapped Frank Burns to create the Delta Force. Frank Burns was a Green Beret. What kind of things did Frank get involved with AFTER joining the military? Hold on. Frank Burns was an SDS (Students for a Democratic Society--an Illuminati organization) organizer. He was also deep into Zen Buddhism, which is the same as mysticism. Frank Burns as an officer also studied under the Esalen Institute. The Esalen Institute is at Big Sur, California and is the American equivalent of the infamous Tavistock Institute. The Esalen Institute created "sensitivity training" programs for the business world under the title "Organizational Development (OD). Esalen people were brought in to Fort Ord where Frank Burns was the commander and began training people. The army promoted Burns to work in the Chief of Staff's office as an "senior organizational effectiveness consultant", which allowed Burns to introduce Esalen programs all through the army. This could not have accidently happened.

Frank Burns in a conversation with a two-star General about the need for "wholistic" soldiers coined the slogan "Be all that you can be in the army." Burns phraseology began the army's recruiting slogan. It refers to the Human Potential Movement that the army has incorporated from the New Age movement.

The army is moving toward becoming an occult fighting force that practices witchcraft with its warfare. Some of the units moving that direction are Psy-Op operations, which has included Satanists within its officers. The Delta Force network of various Generals and other high ranking officers is merely one facet of the drive by the Illuminati to transform the American army into something akin to occultic warriors that will be as fierce as the Nazi Death head units. Bear in mind that George Bush, commander-in-chief of Burn's Armed Forces has come from an Illuminati family/ & the Ill. Skull & Bones chapter that was part of the secret support for Hitler. They have been using as an insignia what they themselves (the Skull & Boners) call "the Death Head". It is not surprising then that support for the Delta Team activities has come from the very top.

Frank Burns set out to create a warrior monk. Lt. Col. Jim Channon, in Delta Forces, also put forward the idea. Channon visited more than 130 New Age groups in California doing what was called "social experimentation." It is an idea that the occult have repeatedly carried out. Hitler's S.S. were an special elite group of warrior monks from which about 3,000 went through religious initiations. (As the war progressed the primary focus of the S.S. shifted from being the Black Order to merely being a reliable military group called the Waffen SS.) There were 3 levels of initiation, the last reserved for the hard-core Satanists at the top. The Nazi initiation seems to have been an attempt to get the force of the Vril. The Ordensburgen (Castles of the Order) were training centers for the elite Nazis, including the S.S. (Having been in the military, I know first hand that the success of the S.S. and Waffen S.S. units in being fierce warriors is attributed by some of our leading military men to their training to be warrior-monks.) One group of the S.S. called Knights of Poseidon volunteered themselves for castration, in an experiment to change them back to the supermen of the mythical and magical Hyperborea. Some of the best Sufi organizations were warrior monks. Burns and his Task Force Delta generated the First Earth Battalion, which is an occult military unit trained in martial arts, and witchcraft. Men who are selected for First Earth Battalion are given an occult initiation which includes the following oath:

"I have the capacity and therefore the duty to contribute to the development of myself, my associates, and our planet, simultaneously now! I take personal responsibility for generating evolutionary conspiracies as a regular part of my work. I will select and create conspiratorial mechanisms that are not costly in time or resources because I am aware of the five channels available to me (such as radio, television, and word of mouth.) I will organize a self-supporting high commando group that will create and perform evolutionary breakthrough actions on behalf of people and planet. One people, one planet. I will then pass this concept on to others who are capable of generating further self-organizing commando teams."

What ever happened to defending this nation? Military units such as the First Earth Battalion although they are supported by American tax dollars are not here to protect America. They are global minded. They are here to protect an occult world government. They are out there actively promoting the New World Order. Several years ago, Egendorf states that $4.5 million (which came from you and I, and other Americans) had already been spent on Delta Force's 80 different projects.

The Green Berets is another organization that has been heavily targeted by the Satanists, to indoctrinate and recruit. The Green Berets are increasingly moving toward being warrior-monk group. Many of them are now programmed multiples.

One man who is being looked up to by many American Patriots and Christian Patriots as the leader to help them oppose the New World Order is Bo Gritz. He was a recent presidential candidate. Bo Gritz was a Green Beret and a Delta Force commander. Bo Gritz is very proud of the fact that he wrote the manual for the Delta Forces. He also worked for the CIA. Bo Gritz is one of the military's best programmed multiples, and perhaps one of the most dangerous. Insiders have told me he IS the most dangerous. Numerous insiders both for and against Bo, have talked about Bo Gritz, and that he is a programmed multiple.

According to Bo Gritz's campaign literature for President he was a commander in Delta Forces. Reproduced on a previous page is Bo's own presidential campaign literature where he states that he is "Intelligence Officer & Reconnaissance Chief, Delta Force." He is also "Chief, Special Activities, U.S. Army General Staff, the Pentagon" and "Principle Agent, National Security Council, Intelligence Support Activity". Under qualifications Bo states that he is a "Security & Counter-terrorist Specialist." Within the government, they are already referring to Christians who are against the NWO as terrorists. Bo is their greatest counter-intelligence counter-terrorist they have. He came in like a storm and took control of the Patriot movement, and it has been like pulling teeth to warn patriots about who he is.

Bo Gritz himself was a Green Beret, and was used to assassinate 300 people. His blood lust caused him at one point during the Vietnam War to shoot 30 prisoners in cold blood. I also heard Bo talk about say being Temple recommend Mormon. That means he was at that time in good standing with the LDS Mormon church so that he could go to the Temple and participate in its rituals. Those who are alert realize that the temple rituals are like Masonic and Witchcraft rituals. Now he is no longer a Mormon. But he still continues in the military philosophy he believes in. Bo Gritz is going around the nation teaching SPIKE training to anyone who wants martial arts skills.

Bo has done an excellent job in identifying for the New World Order every person in the nation who could threaten their plans for a martial law NWO takeover.

Bo Gritz likes to call attention that he is one of this country's foremost counter-terrorist agents. This is true. The New World Order believes patriots and Christians are terrorists, because they stand in the way of the world's acceptance of their world dictator. Bo Gritz has done a great deal to infiltrate and neutralize the opposition to the New World Order. He has been their best counter-terrorist agent.

B. INTERNAL COMPUTERS --PERFECT DELEGATION; INTERNAL COMPUTERS WHICH AUTO-CONTROL A SLAVE

If a master has to constantly spend time whipping and motivating his slave, as well as forever watching that the slave doesn't escape or do shoddy work, or physically or verbally injure the master, then controlling the slave can end up to be a full time job. When the master gets too much involved in the control process, he ceases to be master, and becomes a slave to the control process.

The intelligence agencies knew that they would have to create mind control slaves who could police themselves. If the master has to constantly guard his slave, the slave will be more trouble than he is worth.

Many successful people have gained their success because they knew how to delegate. The most successful supervisor is the one who can delegate the best. The programmers had to find ways to cut their supervisory requirements to the bone if they were to make owning a Monarch slave worthwhile.

The method chosen was to build "computers" into the slave's mind that would internally regulate everything. They do this by taking hundreds of the alters and dehumanizing them and turning them into parts of a computer. For instance, the shutter on the All-seeing eye of the computer, which is seen in the mind like a camera shutter, is a child alter who job is to open and shut. (Another primal part is inside the eye's pupil.) This shutter part knows what goes on in all the system subconsciously but if discovered by a therapist and pulled to the front of the mind will not be able to vocalize about the system. The software for this "computer" could be programmed into it, and all the individual programming of every alter can then be tied back to the computer. In other words, each alter would be programmed on how to view life, to act, to think, and to function in their job. This programming would be linked to a computer. The programmers invented the perfect method to decentralize their control over their slaves and yet still supervise with the tightest of control. Each alter is linked to a computer (internal-not an external one) built from a foundation of fear and trauma.

Since each section of alters was to remain secret, each section of alters for a slave is given its own computer, and then linking computers were built to link the various sections, and then finally a major backup computer is built, and then finally the internal Beast computer. Bear in mind that this is all built internally in the mind of the victim. We are not talking about actual physical computers built out of physical microchips, wires, condensers etc.

If the programmer concentrates on a single point when giving instructions he will get better results. Rather than complicating things for the slave, you gain power over the slave (and any subordinate) if you can give simple clear instructions. For this reason, a large share of the alters in an alter system are given very clear straight forward jobs. Because their jobs are so straightforward, these alters will often remain fragments, rather than alter parts with full blown personalities. The programmers don't cloud the issue. An undeveloped alter will be given one single clear, basic job. By stringing 1,000's of alters together with single tasks, a highly sensitive system of alters can be created. Each piece of the System is separated by some degree of dissociation to make it a separate piece.

By dividing the mind so much, it is incapable of fighting what has been done to itself.

Before we begin describing the technical details of an internal computer, bear in mind that every Monarch System is unique and yet they all follow certain patterns & methodologies. Most of the models for the first few decades follow these patterns, some of the newer ones have more updated imagery.

POWER SOURCES

In an Illuminati System, a computer is created for each section of alters. That computer will be given a "power source", which if unscrewed like a light bulb will go out. The light from one of these power sources might be emerald blue or emerald green or other color.

The reader may want to refer to chapter 4 for the codes to understand the structuring of the various computers and systems.

COLOR CODES & RIBBONS

In a standard 13x13x13 Illuminati alter system, 13 colors were used, and each computer was given a color. These would be pink, orange, yellow, white, red, brown, blue, green, black, purple, silver, gold and platinum, and clear.

Color programming is reported to have been developed at UCLA. Whatever the case, Systems all over the United States have color programming.

The hierarchy of colors in a System is often as follows (from top power down): Platinum, Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, Pink. Clear is also used as a color for secret areas of the system. This hierarchy of color coding can be switched. The internal programmers can reassign colors if they need to, in order to protect the programming. Alters, sections, and parts of the computer are all color coded. The color coding for alters is not the same just because the alters are in the same section.

The color coding within the Illuminati Mind Control is fairly consistent, however a sample of an alternative Illuminati color scheme will also be provided.

A survey of colors is as follows:

CLEAR. Secret or shell alters who can take on any color are coded clear. These are alters who serve as images or as a stage for other alters. This would include "Guardian of the Vail" alters.

GOLD. This color is for the supreme leadership in the System, which includes the Grand Druid Council.

SILVER. This color is for the Satanic alters who perform high level Satanic rituals. The Mothers of Darkness have silver coding.

PURPLE. These alters see themselves as the abusers, rather than the Illuminati. These alters were involved with the programming. They have been taught to forget the abuse and to reframe it in their mind as training.

BLACK. These alters were born out of Satanic ritual, and are Moon children. The Delta and Beta alters are black coded. They do the dirty work for the cult, such as blackmail and assassination.

RED. These altars see themselves as witches. They were born out of witchcraft ritual, believe they have great spiritual power, and tend to deny that they have been abused.

GREEN or EMERALD GREEN. These cat altars recognize they have been abused. They still see themselves as belonging to the cult family, and deny that they have been abused to protect their cult family.

BLUE ALTERS. Clones, armies and the ribbons appear to have blue coding. These alters will go so far as to hurt the body to protect it from leaking information or deprogramming.

WHITE. These are Atlantean alters who have been given Aryan type racial nonsense to think they are superior. They believe in genetic engineering, and a master race.

ORANGE. These special protector alters are scouts who warn of danger from internal or external threats.

YELLOW. These are the strong Christian alters of which there will only be a few in the System. They help serve as a balancing point to control the System as well as to hide what the System is all about.

PINK. These are core related alters. They maintain the true feelings of the true self apart from the cult programming and the cult family's programming. These alters are viewed as weak because they are emotional and often break down and weep. They are fragile emotionally.

An alternative color scheme that is used:

DARK EMERALD GREEN. This color is assigned to the AntiChrist-Satan alter(s). Green is the occult color for Satan and happens to be the most sacred color. Few people outside of Satanists know that Green is more sacred for them than any other color.

LIGHT GREEN. The gods and goddess alters which are triads which function in

Illuminati ceremonies get this color coding.

WHITE. The internal programmers who come around in white robes get this color assigned to them, as if they are doctors or angels of light.

RED. Sexual alters are given the natural color of sex and arousal red.

BLACK. Connecting alters that are Nexus alters between various system parts.

PINK. Reporting alters.

DARK BLUE. Non hierarchy cult alters.

LIGHT BLUE. Alters in charge of the way the system runs, such as the judges.

YELLOW. Alters which are ritually and sexually twinned with alters of other systems.

ORANGE. Guard alters which are heavily programmed for obedience.

VIOLET-PURPLE. Front alters and small child alters placed into boxes.

CLEAR. Shell alters to deceive the outside world.

GOLD. The traumatized alters upon which the programming is built on.

Joseph Mengele and the programmers who worked with and under him, used a large dollhouse with 26 rooms. Each of the rooms were painted with one of the 13 different colors in order to build into the child's mind, the 13 front and the 13 back computers.

The internal computers worked off of color codes, as well as other codes. A dollhouse was used to instill into the child's minds the compartments of the computer. Each room was done up in a different color. One particular room was a secret room, and this represents the secret world of Petra which is hidden behind two large rocks. This secret world is coded the color clear. Besides the special color clear, the following colors appear in the system: Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Blue, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, and Pink. Each color has meaning and a rank. Just as the hour glasses could be turned, the color coding can be switched in rank.

This is why in some systems there is a "Computer Operator Black", a "Computer Operator Green", and a "Computer Operator Purple", etc.

During the programming a black box with needles and wires which attach to the body for electroshock is used. While electro shocking the victim, colored scarfs coming out of a box are showed to the child. The scarfs would help form the imagery needed to build colored ribbons internally. Alters would be created using the *Tall Book of Make Believe* story of the Pancake people. Using this as a base or foundation, the alters would then be dehumanized one step further into thinking they were ribbons--such as ticker tape, which could transmit information from one computer to another area of the mind.

The Ribbons had the ability to travel between the different levels and to transmit messages through the System, especially to the computers. It is believed they could do this because they were spirit.

When a System is accessed by a programmer, one procedure is to obtain a Ribbon alter and then inform the Ribbon what he wants. The ribbons transmit messages to the internal computers. The ribbons on older systems use morse code.

Who are the Ribbons? The Ribbons are the beginning of the Luciferian alter-like demons and alters. They are primarily the message bearers from the computers to the different computers, levels and alters.

The Ribbons might have angelic names (Michael, Gabriel, etc.). The word angel means messenger. The ribbons serve a very similar function. They transmit ticker tape with morse code messages. They are at work most of the time for a System.

A sample cover story for what they guard--which is the main computer with the gems and the core, is that the ribbons guard the System's "Garden of Eden".

Some more of the cover story that may be given is this: Ribbons were supposedly formed out of the dust of the ground and were placed in the Garden of Eden to create every pleasant tree. (See Genesis 1.) The ribbons relate to the Tree of Life. But to eat of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil will cause death. The name of the first river of four in the garden is Pashon. Out of the first river come four heads. The River Pashon has gold, ballium, onyx, rubies, diamonds and precious stones. These gems are the programs the dwarfs mine.

If the System has charismatic programming, the alters will have porcelain face programming. In this case each ribbon's color will match the color of the stones in the masks--that is yellow, white, blue, green, purple, red and black. The colors of the ribbons correlate or match the colors of the Dollhouse rooms.

What do ribbons do? The Ribbons serve the programmers and the computers, who in turn serve the evil master Spirits. Things that the Ribbons do for the computers have been identified as follows:

a. The Ribbons eat from the system's internal "Tree of Good and Evil"., **b.** Ribbon programming consists of several things--where they reside, who they are and what they are to protect., **c.** Ribbons must protect the computers in order to protect their own life. The Ribbons will be programmed to believe that reversing the computer will reverse the Ribbons' life.

The ribbons themselves operate with mechanical hearts (not human hearts).

The cover stories may include the following: All Ribbons are hid behind a little girl, who is a front for them & who tells the creation story. The little girl will tell the creation story which included the Ribbons. Behind her runs a silver cord. The silver cord has to do with heart programming. The silver cord has 3 strands that cannot be broken as per ECL 4:12. This silver cord goes off if the Ribbons are touched. Ribbons are set up so that suicide programming is triggered if they are cut. Actually, french braiding conceals a 4th strand.

In review as stated, during the programming, a box with colored scarfs was shown the child while severe electro-shock was given to the body. A colored scarf represents a ribbon which runs a message from a colored room to a similar colored alter.

In a System which is structured into families and cities and worlds and sections, these "geographically different" structures in the mind of the victim can be connected via the color coding. In other words, the alters are structured into a 3-D cube structure. Then a fourth dimension (the color coding) is added to tie in all of the three dimensions.

A central computer was placed in at the bottom of the mind. Using various techniques the victim is brought to the deepest altered state possible, and a computer is built into the mind via hypnosis and alters. This can be done by freezing the entire body and just keeping the head active. Or it can be done by bringing the body to a comatose state where the heart is beating faintly. This step can only be done under the strictest medical supervision.

The memory storage area for the computers include the Emerald City Library (staying with the Wizard of Oz theme) which contains alters who only function is to memorize & retain with photographic memories pages and pages of information. The layout with codes of the entire system can be stored in a storage bank, so the programmer could access this area if his own records were lost. The libraries contain the historical genealogies of satanic iniquity from early ancient times to present. This ancient occult information has been reported by at least half a dozen Illuminati slaves as being retained internally by demons.

HOW MONARCH SLAVES ARE BEING DESIGNED TO INTERFACE WITH THE UNIX SYSTEM OF THE BEAST COMPUTERS

In line with what is being done by the Illuminati around the world with their network of computers--the computers have access codes similar to 666 666 666, and back out and close down codes similar to 999 999 999. These are the codes that the UNIX universal system uses, and the Monarch slaves are being created with codes that interface with the UNIX system for computers. (On some systems if the computer is shutdown it will request an input code of 666fff666fff666fff666...This can then be reversed F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6F6.) The UNIX system is being used to allow the New World Order's big BEAST computers to communicate with any known computer, including the minds of their Monarch mind-controlled slaves.

In the 1960s, the U.S. Department of Defense began linking computers together into a superhighway now developed into the Internet. Hundreds of thousands of computers around the world are tied in. Like buildings in a city, each computer has its own unique address. Most of these addresses are registered at the Network Information Center in Menlo Park, CA. Individuals can also be registered at the NIC too. The U.S. Military links into the system with their Arpanet and Milnet networks, which tie together such divergent things as MIT computers, West Point computers, NORAD computers, Air Force Systems Command Space Division computers at El Segundo, CA and U.S. Army DARCOM at Seckenheim, Ger. (to name a few). These are all being tied together to form one vast electronic brain.

There are nine secret BEAST computers of the New World Order, at the time this was written. "Big Bertha" is the nickname of the BEAST computer located at the secret military installation called Dreamland at the secret Groom Lake, NV test site facility. Papoose Lake is referred to as S-4. The other super-secret facilities in the area are named S-2, S-6, and S-66. This area has become the Illuminati's prime programming facility for turning out Monarch slaves, and the Monarch slaves which are turned out from this area have turned out to be the worst basket cases. In other words the programming is very severe which is carried out in this area. This area has also been used for the space program, for the U-2 & SR-71, for the CIA's A-12 spy plane, for the Stealth fighters (Lockheed F-117A Attack plane) and bombers, the Aurora, and for the U.S. government's "Above Top Secret" flying saucers. The Big Bertha computer (named after the Illuminati Mother-of-Darkness Bertha Krupp) can be talked to in half a dozen languages and will answer a person back in the language they speak.

On a daily basis, airplanes fly into the Groom Lake facility. The callname of flights bringing workers and people go by the call name "Janet". About 12 Janet flights come into the facility everyday. These flights are usually Boeing 737s and arrive from places like a secure terminal run by EG&G at McCarran Airport in Las Vegas and from the military's Palmdale, CA facility. These 737s are unmarked except for a red stripe running down the fuselage. Large military C-130 arrive with cargo, and Illuminati dignitaries arrive in smaller twin-engine craft. Victims for the programming are brought in via planes, & other routes.

One of the BEAST computers occupies three floors of the headquarters of the European Economic Community building in Brussels, not far from the important Illuminati Mother-of-Darkness worldwide headquarters castle near the Fr.-Bel. border near Muno, Belgium. Another BEAST computer is in Luxembourg.

In observing the operations of the Illuminati, it has been seen that telephone area codes are used as part of a mind-controlled slave's code. We do not understand everything about their codes, but it does tie in with other things that are happening.

Every person in the world has been assigned an 18 digit tracking number, which consists of 3 groups of 6 numbers. The first 3 numbers assigned in the BEAST computer to everyone are 666. The next is one's national code. The U.S. national code is 110. Then the next 3 numbers are you telephone area code, and then finally your 9 digit Social Security number. The code then is 666+Nation code+Tel. area code+social security no.= BEAST I.D. no. for an individual. According to Dwight Kinman's book *The World's Last Dictator*, 2nd ed., (Woodburn, OR: Solid Rock Books, p. 256) VISA has already begun issuing VISA cards using the BEAST 18 digit number.

When an American makes a bank transaction on an autoteller within a matter of seconds the BEAST has been informed of the activity. These computers use UNIX. The particular programs for the economic transactions just described are a worldwide computer network called SWIFT (Society For Worldwide Interbank Financial Transactions). The SWIFT works off of the UNIX system and can communicate with any computer. It was developed by AT&T and uses C language. (Bear in mind that there are dialects of UNIX, such as the standard AT&T UNIX and for instance Berkeley UNIX. The UNIX system uses both timesharing and multitasking. The mind of a Monarch slave also does both multitasking and time sharing.

One of the nice UNIX features, is "protected memory", which is also part of the Monarch programming. A kernal is what the UNIX programmers call a "protected person". It is very similar to the internal "person" (alter) who helps the Monarch slave's programming functions.

The big item about UNIX is that it has permissions granted. This is similar to the Monarch programming. Permissions are granted to 3 types of entities. The Top Programmer or "god" as he is called, of the UNIX System receives what is called the individual permission. The next permission is called group permission, and it is given to insiders who work with the system. The final permission type is the world, which has very limited access. The parallel between this and the Monarch programming is surprising. In some cases the programmers may have matched things on a one-to-one correspondence.

The Monarch program also has a Top Programmer who is called "god" to the System. He has total control over the system. His programming permissions can not be deprogrammed out by others who might want to usurp his power.

Hidden from the casual user of the UNIX system are the Daemons and Demons. The UNIX programmers decided to use the old english spelling for demon= Daemon. These are computer processes which work secretly behind the scenes and are given actual demonic names--some corresponding to actual names of historically known demons, such as Asmodeus. Asmodeus is also a demon which is placed into many Monarch slaves. In the UNIX system these demons are treated like persons in the computer's user director. Demons in the computer system do not have to log onto the computer, but they work behind the scenes and are given the same powers that people users are given. They are set up in the same structure as how the computer treats people.

Permission in the UNIX system is granted using an 8 bit count with 0 through 7. The three kinds of permission are the read, write, and execute permissions.
If no permission were granted in any way the UNIX system would indicate "_ _ _ _ _ _ _ _ _" on the screen which means 000 000 000 or nine 0's. The super user called god is given the code 777 which means super user. However, the permission of 666 gives the user the power to everything the 777 permission gives, except that the 777 permission allows the god the master programmer) to execute not executable programs. The Postmaster Demon is the head demon, and his permission level in UNIX is 666. (In the Monarch Programming "Mr. Postman" is a code word used internationally.)

The most important part of the BEAST system is its communication power. The Electronic Mail System of the BEAST allows it to communicate worldwide, and along with electronic mail comes levels of permission to view or work with the electronic mail. The super user (god) is called Root.

A programmer on the Beast must get permission. His program must get permission. That program that gives permission must also get permission. In other words, there are levels of permission that must be gone through. This is similar to the Monarch program. For instance, the alters personalities which would control the body during Illuminati gatherings have very tight access permission. It is very hard to access these hierarchy personalities.

Both the UNIX system (and the Monarch programming) creates "children" by "spinning". The "child" spins off. When the "child" is finished it is "killed" in UNIX lingo. When the programmers created child processes in the computer, they were having problems with the child processes killing the parent processes. The same type of problems have had to be dealt with in the Monarch programming. The initial programmer is often the biological parent of the child, and this parent is very responsible for extreme tortures being applied to the child who is being programmed--not to mention all of the expendible children, who are killed in front of the child to highlight the reality of the trauma. The natural reaction of the child being created is to hate the programmer. Naturally, the Monarch programming had to overcome that natural tendency, which it does very successfully.

The UNIX system uses an internal clock within its computer system. The UNIX clock is called CRON. CRON checks files to see if the programmer has put in any files to run.

The UNIX system uses data bus lines, which are like the Monarch programming ribbons, which go through the system. These ribbons or data bus lines take information and commands from the computers to other computers.

Within the UNIX system, insiders have revealed that the Daemon (Demon) processes of all the UNIX systems have a security flaw. That flaw is that the Postmaster Daemon has access to them in spite of who the god is of that particular UNIX computer system. So while owners, who purchase UNIX systems think that they have exclusive control over their system, an external Postmaster Daemon coming from the Beast could use its permission levels to over ride the power of the local owner of the system. The Monarch system has a similar feature, the Illuminati programmers know how to access the base or primal anchors to the programming and yank out any programming they want. All the slaves of these lesser groups such as the CIA, Church of Satan, Mafia, etc. can all be reprogrammed rather quickly to serve the Illuminati, if they are not already due to the Illuminati programmers extra knowledge on how to get into the base programming.

In these many ways, the UNIX system serves both real computers and also for the internal computers of some slaves' mind.

The slave's system becomes a computer system. It functions as a series of computers that are connected to the master computer which is sunk into the mind at the lowest hypnotic level, which is a level often placed even below an internal "hell pit". To access the different computers, combinations of cards were used for the codes (numbers are also used. See Chapter 4.). Various parts of a Monarch system correspond to what any computer would have. A microprocessor register has 3 sections on a computer to make it functional. In Monarch Systems, you would find these 3 represented by 1. stored data in the library and alters with photographic memories, 2. an instruction section with codes, and 3. stacking mechanisms. Linked to all this were a crystal, clock, hour glasses, a compass and an entire demonic command structure. The eye in front of the big computer will be protected by legions of spirits. The front big computer runs front quadrants and the back computer runs the deeper quadrants.

The software so to speak for the Omega programming (computer) may be set up to include a stacking program called the

Potter's Wheel. The Potter's Wheel is a misuse of the Bible, and is a type of programming that the Charismatic/pentecostal movement carries out. The Mormons and the Catholics have their own distinctive "software" programs. An initial stacking mechanism would work by telling alters to "Stand in Order according to rank and serial no." Another code along with a hand signal would place the Gatekeeper alters up on the Potter's wheel for their "creator" to work on them. A group of alters could be taught to go up on their Potter's wheel by seeing a pattern of dominoes. It is whatever the programmer decides.

The dominoes were used for coding, but they also had the programming feature of being able to tie alters together so that if the System is tampered with out of sequence, a domino effect would take place. This domino effect is for one program to set off another program to set off another program. Soon the Monarch slave's mind is trying to deal with dozens of suicide programs running simultaneously, along with perhaps other programs such as scrambling programs.

For instance, one story line used is the mice run up and down and open up new levels of programming and are tied to the pendulum/clock mechanism. The mice can activate the hour glass, and a gold-winged green skirted fairy Whisper balances the hour glass on her wings.

If the slave goes toward freedom, the slave's mind triggers programs of all kinds, and the mind ends up not knowing if it was coming or going with all the different programs which activate. A more exhaustive look at all the craziness and activity of the Omega & Gamma programs which activate to defend the Illuminati's Mind Control are given in other chapters. The programming has been designed that if it was taken out improperly, it is to come back Seven times Seven stronger. This is also a clue that the programming is partly a demonic manifestation, cf. MT 12:43-45 et al.

COMPONENTS OF THE CONTROLS

At the center of the System are the mechanisms that control it, such as the Master Computer, the All-Seeing Eye, the Compass, the Master Clock, and the Quadrants that tie in together. The System may have 3 hourglasses spinning on axes. These hour glasses can also be called matrixes, which are on your standard 3 axes, a X axis, a Y axis & a Z axis. The worlds are various sections of these matrixes.

There are backup worlds & mirror image worlds. Occasionally, there will be a double system. Some of the more important alter System are even far more complex than a double System or a double Double System.

Each alter is split so that every alter has another alter created from it. Then there are demonic doubles--demonic mirror images in the System. The double images shown in the picture are very real when describing our System. Some therapists have noticed "Satanic Guardian Angels" which talk to their patients. They do not know what to make of these. Some classify them as hallucinations, because they do not have any room in their belief system for demonology. These are the demons that do control the multiple's mind.

Thor, with his hugh hammer is a painful demon. Thor's image is made of cast iron & carried an iron mallet. Thor is a black strong figure. When his hammer strikes, the slave gets split brain headaches. Programmers can use the story of the Giant with the Hammer in the *Ozma of Oz* book (pp. 141-155) to give the imagery when programming. A special series of sweeping motions with both hands will relieve the split brain programming, but some alters can only tolerate these hand signals being done by the master. By the way, Thor is an important protector in Satanic/occult beliefs, & the religion of Thor now has equal stature/popularity in Germany as the Lutheran church.

The programs are put into a System and given codes. These programs use Greek, Hebrew and Druidic letters (or other esoteric languages) in their activation codes. Actually, these alphabets also are the way these people numbered with, and the Greek, Hebrew & Druid letters were used as numbers. These programs could be called Utility Programs, because they function much like the utility programs of a computer.

Along with all the programming comes cover programming. Generally, front stories cover almost everything in a System.

Dominos have been used in Monarch programming as the basis for what is called a "Mother Board" in actual computers. Telephone tones key in on a slave's computer matrix. At times, telephone tones in everyday life will make slaves accidently wacky.

All computers run off of base 2--which uses the numbers 0, and 1. O and 1 can be represented as on and off. In the programming, they were represented by "He Loves Me", "He Loves Me Not." The Programmers, especially Dr. Mengele, enjoyed taking a daisy and pulling its petals off one at a time. First petal, "I love you". Second Petal, "I love you not." IF the last daisy petal was "I love you not--then the child was dramatically killed in front of other children to be programmed. The Illuminati's method of death--skinning alive--has been developed into a fine art, for both programming and ceremonies. A drawing of this skinning procedure by a witness is on pg. 338. The daisy game, which was scary for a child, heightened the victim's attention. Matrixes were built upon this deadly game.

How did it feel to be programmed with Mengele's "I love you, I love you not" programming? A victim recalls,

"The child was place in a cage exposed and naked. The low voltage wires were rigged to the metal of the cage. The child experienced a continual erratic or sporadic prolonged voltage of shock until the heart would pulsate and the anxiety level of the child became out of control.

"Then the Dr. would enter the scene with his sneering taunting smile while holding a daisy in his hands. The sporadic voltage would continue to flow through the child's body. As the shock continued, the Dr. stood before the child pulling petals off the daisy. His only communication was voiced in these words, "LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT, LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT," while pulling off the daisy petals. This action would drive the child crazy because the child knows full well if that last petal is pulled off it meant death. The child that is not loved is skinned alive before the other children.

"...we can now begin to understand that the expendable children were in other cages placed all around us for the eye to see. They went through the same process as we watched. When the last petal of the daisy was pulled from the flower they were killed. Then the terror of what we had just experienced through the seeing and hearing, let us know we were next, but when? By the time the doctor got to "He loves me not" some children no longer knew fear. Their ashes were taken from the crematorium and used in the garden for fertilizer, as a reminder to all what happens to unloved children.

"In the clinical room, the lights were used to program the day's events. The bright light continually flashed starting with 7 lights, then six dots, then five dots, then four dots, then three, then two dots, then 1 dot. In the blindness of the lights, we could hear the doctor's voice, "LOVE YOU, LOVE YOU NOT." over and over again. A child could have a false trust when the lights flashed 7 dots. By the time one dot was flashing, the child's terror had once again risen. The doctor never pulled the last petal off for us, but we can't forget how he teased us. He smiled and walked away, 'NO, I LOVE YOU.' and walked away."

If we use L=I love you and N=I love you not we can build the following matrix for the internal computer:

L	N	L	N	L	N
1	2	3	4	5	6
2	3	4	5	6	1
3	4	5	6	1	2
4	5	6	1	2	3
5	6	1	2	3	4
6	1	2	3	4	5

This type of configuration can even be tied to color programming, and to dominoes, where the numbers are represented as the dots on a domino. By making numbers into dots--the numbers can be represented by lights in the same patterns of black domino dots. This means that dominos can be used to program a child, and who would suspect anything about dominoes?

Another thing that lends itself well to use as a programming code are a deck of cards. Many slaves have this. It can be tied in with the Alice In Wonderland story. When cards are used, a section (also called a world or city) of alters will be given its own computer. To access that computer, a code consisting of several things including 2 cards can be used.

In review of what Chapter 4 said about codes, often double codes are employed--what is meant by that is that suppose we have 13 important alters in a section. They will designate each of these "A" alters. Then they number them each 1 through 13. But then they will double code them so that as we count up, we also count down. Then they attach a generic level number to them, say 2,000. So putting this together we have Emerald Green 2001-13a for our first alter, then next is Emerald Green 2002-12a, the next is Emerald Green 2003-11a, and so on. Then the magical name of the alter or the Tribal name of the alter can be attached onto this to complete an access code. While it seems perhaps complex at first, all an alter is remembering is a color, a common section no. and their rank no. and their file letter, and their magical name. (The name to pull them up--will not be their name for public use.)

Alice In Wonderland, the *Wizard of Oz* and the *Tall Book of Make Believe* played a fundamental role as "software" in a System. The *Wizard of Oz* stories are often used to show how & what structures to put in the small victim's internal world. The stories even teach HOW to create an internal world and its parts.

Some of the T.V. shows & movies, which served as Monarch programming scripts (i.e. the software) include:

Batman
Bewitched
Bobby's World Cartoons (deliberate triggers)
Dameon/Omen movies
Disney movies (all of them, some with deliberate triggers)
Duck Tails Cartoon (deliberate triggers)
ET (used in alien programming)
Fantasy Island (deliberate triggers)
Ghost Busters (used for "who ya' gonna call" theme)
Love Boat (used for mind control of cruise prostitutes)
My Fair Lady (finishing school for slaves, such as Youngstown, OH)
Star Wars
Steven King Horror Movies
Tiny Toons Cartoons of Steven Speilberg (deliberate triggers)
Wizard of Oz movies

Some of the books which were used as programming scripts, which haven't been mentioned yet, are the *Dead Sea Scrolls*, the *Egyptian Book of the Dead* (satanic rituals follow closely the rituals of the *Egyptian Book of the Dead*), Steven King novels, & Wilbur Smith's. The Mother Goose nursery rhymes were used prolifically for internal codes in slaves.

Now that we have discussed the widely used "soft ware" available to the programmers, we don't want to forget the root program, the tree which was used as a method of organizing the various programs, just like a computer's subdirectories branch out more subdirectories. If the programming is tampered with, the slave will want to cut the tree--however, since the tree is in them, this means they will want very badly to cut their arms, especially their veins. The programming is not guarded as much as the computers. Everything guards the BEAST computer including deaf alters who have to be communicated with using a hand number code system. Such a code might resemble finger signing 1,2,3,4,5,10=15 & following this with a shutdown code which simply reverses the access equation. Surrounding the central All-seeing-eye will be alters & programs with insanity, fear, hopelessness, cutting, burning, aloneness, etc. Strong demonic forces are attached to these alters & programs. They also can trigger the slave to have abusive behavior as punishment.

A System is given a life force which is able to regenerate a system, the jokers who protected the programming, and you have the alpha-numeric codes, the cards, and dominoes (represented by a dice) that formed the access codes to parts of the System. The alters will often feel the heartbeat (which may be an alter) associated with the computer

In the background is a Luciferian blue light. This Satanic light empowers the Joker. It along with the Joker and the internal programmers give a System the ability to regenerate itself. One can shut down internal computers which run programming to the levels of the System using the same codes that the original programmers use, but until one also takes care of the 13 Jokers & the faceless white-coated programmers who control the Omega Programming, then the back up computers can regenerate the programming & rebuild the system.

JOKERS

If the computers are given cards as access codes--it works in well to create Jokers who are wild cards within the system, which can imitate anything.

The Jokers have a Luciferian form. Luciferian is the term that the programmers used. This means that it is spirit. Because the Jokers are Spirit, they can take any form they need to and they can do what they want to do, until they are bound & cast out with the rest of their hierarchy of demons. The Jokers will pop up when a victim tries to study the codes & programming that direct that victim's life.

Around this cult core are the jewels (which are the programs the dwarfs mine). Remember the story of Snow White and the Seven dwarfs? Also swirling around Silence are ribbons which we will discuss later.

TREES. The trees bud at certain times. This is one way the imagery of the tree to connect to the time that rituals are to happen. If the tree is barren of leaves (no programs--i.e. deprogrammed), then the system is to grow more leaves.

C. INTERNAL HIERARCHIES

The programmers build chains of command within the groups of alters that they create. They credit themselves with bringing order out of chaos. When a system of multiple personalities thinks of rebelling, they are in the similar situation as a colony wanting freedom from its mother country. Can we govern ourselves, and what governing structures can we keep--since the structure itself is colonial? Can the mind work together to help itself? The concerns are legitimate questions. And yes, the multiple's mind can function outside of the control of the programmer's hierarchial arrangement, but not without alters taking on different job assignments.

In the slave's hierarchal chain of command, adult alters are assigned to insure that child alters don't get out, unless the abusers want a child alter out. Likewise, commander alters are needed to keep the switching smooth, and to keep things orderly. Subordinate alters are taught to submit to their king, or governor, or queen alter.

Immense power and indoctrination is given to the key cult alters ruling a system. The internal hierarchial arrangement means that the host alter coming into therapy (often a Christian) may not be as completely open as therapists think. They must play an internal game of going toward health while not pushing the buttons of deeper more powerful alters. A lot of internal politics may go on. A front alter may promise a deeper alter secrecy in order to consult with it. This makes for all kinds of triangulation and manipulation within the alter system itself. The entire hierarchy of alters has a lot invested in protecting the core from trauma, which was why the core was split in the beginning. Trad. therapy goes after the core & the multiplicity that protects it, thus insuring resistence from the entire hierarchy incl. front alters, who in MPD systems seeking help are often close to the core. The core self is best not directly pursued by the therapist, but gently encouraged on its own to reconnect.

RESTAURANT PLACE MAT.

3.
4.
5.
6.
8.
9.
11.
14.
16.
18.
17.
19.
Can you get to the center without getting lost ?
HELP DOROTHY & FRIENDS GET BACK TO THE LAND OF OZ.
OZ

pictures that look the same.

DOWN
2. Put into vinegar & brine
3. Favorite side dish
4. Red fruit
5. Type of soup
8. Place to dine
9. Delicious syrup
10. Species of nut
11. Pungent, edible bulb
13. Staff of life
16. Smoked pork
18. _____ thru a straw

ACROSS
1. Pineapple 15. Limburger
6. Lamb 17. Shrimp
7. Sauerkraut 19. Pancakes
12. Ale
14. Lemon

Nail
Board
Skin from skull peeled from face

The art of skinning is used for mind-control programming purposes
--drawn by a witness in eastern U.S., used by permission.

External Controls

"Bo" Gritz National Presidential Campaign Committee
P.O. Box 1327 / Middleburg / FL 32050-1327
(904) 573-0707

Do You Know "Bo"

EXPERIENCE & ACTIVITIES

- Most decorated Green Beret Commander - 62 valor citations
- Intelligence Officer & Reconnaissance Chief, Delta Force
- Commander, U.S. Army Special Forces, Latin America
- Chief, Special Activities, U.S. Army General Staff, The Pentagon
- Chief, Congressional Relations, OSD-ISA, The Pentagon
- Principle Agent, NSC, Intelligence Support Activity
- Four operations into Communist Asia to rescue U.S. POWs
- Four times into Burma's infamous "Golden Triangle"
- Trained Afghan Mujahideen Freedom Fighters—Advisor, Saudi Arabia
- 100 special operations—Vietnam, Cambodia, Laos and Africa
- Recovered U-2 Spy Plane "Blackbox" captured by Communists
- Author of books: *A NATION BETRAYED* and *CALLED TO SERVE*

QUALIFICATIONS

- FAA Commercial Pilot & Flight Instructor, Karate 6th degree Blackbelt, Master Parachutist/HALO, Underwater Demolitions Expert, Combat Infantryman, Special Forces Instructor, Army Ranger & Pathfinder, Nevada Teaching Certificate; MA, (Communications) American U.; Master Mil Sci, USAC&GSC; B.Sci. (Law & Corrections), U. Neb; Certified Hypnotherapist, fluent in Swahili and Chinese Mandarin, Security & Counter-terrorist Specialist.

HONORS

- Featured by General William C. Westmoreland as "The" American Soldier in his memoirs, *A SOLDIER REPORTS*
- Subject of numerous books and articles on Special Forces Intelligence Operations and U.S. POWs. Role model for movies Uncommon Valor, Mission MIA
- Freedom Foundation's - George Washington Honor Medal
- Military Order of World Wars - Patrick Henry Patriotism Medal
- Married to Claudia Jean King - Four Children - Grandson

OBJECTIVE

Restore Constitutional Government. Return our Prisoners of War While They are Still Alive. Win the War on Drugs. Put Accuracy, Accountability, and Integrity into Our Government.

LIFE MEMBERSHIPS & ASSOCIATIONS

American Legion, Veterans of Foreign Wars, Military Order of the Purple Heart, Disabled American Veterans, Special Forces Association, Special Operations Association, National Rifle Association, Kiwanis, AMVETS, Vietnam Veterans of America, Aircraft Owners & Pilots Association, Kentucky Colonels, Retired Officer's Association, National Intelligence Counter Intelligence Association, Boy Scouts of America (Scout Master)

WHAT DOES "BO" STAND FOR?

Christian ethic and Constitutional government under the Declaration of Independence and Bill of Rights. Bo is the only presidential candidate with a positive plan to get us out of debt, balance the federal budget, secure the economy and allow you to keep what you make. Bo gives us a confident preference over the Republicrat "evil of two lessors."

VOTE GRITZ FOR RIGHTS IN '92!

AMERICA FIRST COALITION

VOTE FOR "BO"... PUT AMERICA FIRST

Bo Gritz

FOR PRESIDENT

"We've got one more hill to take --- Capitol Hill! Together we'll win."

What "Bo" Believes For The USA . . .

JAMES "BO" GRITZ

The Time is Now—Let's Take America Back From the "Republicrats" Who Have Brought Our Nation to the Brink of Ruin

Help Return America to Greatness

COL. BO GRITZ'S OWN CAMPAIGN LITERATURE where he indicates that he was the Intelligence Officer and the Reconnaisance Chief for Delta Force, that he is a certified hypnotherapist, that he was a Green Beret and the PRINCIPLE agent for the National Security Council of the secret National Security Agency. The broshure also indicates that he is a "COUNTER-TERRORIST SPECIALIST. He is arguably the New World Order's best counter-terrorist specialist, having taken control of the leadership of much of the NWO's opposition.

CHAPTER 12.
THE SCIENCE OF EXTERNAL CONTROLS

MONITORING (ASSET CONTROL)

Every intelligence service since time began has sought methods of owning people and ensuring they stayed loyal. Two of 13 Illuminati families who are known to have developed extremely well-run bloodline intelligence groups are the Li family and the Rothschild family. The Li's family started its Chinese intelligence back in 1400 A.D. They had already been an ancient chinese aristocratic family for many centuries prior to this. Some of their techniques for their agents were state of the art mind control techniques.

The Rothschild's personal spy network and their own mail service was known to be superior to the national european governments during the 19th century.

Traditional spycraft has involved the ability to recruit and keep agents loyal. The professional spook manipulates his recruits for a living. He becomes adept at controlling people. For thousands of years, spy operations have honed their skills at controlling people. Because they work secretly, they generally have done whatever they wanted. When you combine the resources and centuries of intelligence operations of the Illuminati, along with the credibility of government intelligence agencies supposedly guarding our national security, the combination is horrific. There are no moral or financial restraints on what is being done. If the intelligence groups want to dabble in keeping a severed head alive apart from the body, (or a frozen body with an active head) which they have done, there is no one to stop them.

Handlers of slaves use both natural and contrived cues to convey to the slave that they want obedience. A natural non-verbal threat cue would be brusque movements, and an innuendo in their voice. A contrived cue would be placing both hands behind the head, which is a code for "I AM YOUR MASTER, OBEY ME." Another cue for slaves to obey is when the master makes a fist with his right hand and touches his forehead. This means, "OBEY." Even children, who were multiples, who were being taught to control their mother who wanted to leave the cult, have been observed using the fist to the forehead to try to get obedience from their mother. Staring is one method that the Programmers use. Charles Manson, who was both a slave and a handler, is an example of how a penetrating hypnotic stare is used by the Programmers.

One way to control people is to wear clothes of authority. Dr. Green, Dr. Black, Dr. Star, Michael Aquino and other programmers have worn Nazi uniforms while programming, and at other time have worn Satanic Priestly garb.

A beginning point to control people is understanding human needs, and understanding the individual to be controlled. A good case officer learns everything he can about the asset (person or slave) he is to control. Case officers/handlers have been constantly working at improving their skills of control. Monarch slaves who must function as intelligence officers, who recruit spies, are trained in the art of listening and conversation. Learning to listen without interrupting is a guarantee of success. CIA handlers/ programmers have an extremely personable side to them--and a very deadly animalistic side to them too. They will be trained to look anyone they want to recruit in the eyes and withstand their stare. "Friendship begins with a smile; recruitment with a stare." (This is a quote from the book Suvorov, Viktor. *Inside The Aquarium*. New York: Macmillan, p. 108. During training, men in U.S. Army Intelligence are told to read this book to understand how U.S. intelligence works.)

The entire lives of Monarch slaves are kept on records. Zbigniew Brezinski, and the heads of the CIA, and Sec. of Defense Cheney are just some of the men known about who have access to the computer records that contain records on every active Monarch slave.

Not everyone has a price, but everyone will respond to their needs being met.

James K. Van Fleet, an important military intelligence officer, wrote about how to manage people. In military intelligence, they keep files on people where they identify which subconscious desires of people are important to the person at the time. All this information is kept in SOFT FILES--which are not official files, so these files have never officially existed and are not given up even to Congressional subpoenas. The Intelligence agencies know that if they find out what the person wants above all else in life, they can control the person. The nine areas that are monitored to see if they are important at the moment are:

1. emotional security
2. recognition of efforts or reassurance of worth
3. creative outlets
4. a sense of personal power
5. a sense of roots--belonging somewhere
6. immortality
7. ego-gratification
8. love in all its forms
9. new experiences

Once they monitor these areas and then they determine which needs are priority needs for the person, then they will use what they call "the depth approach" to subconsciously gratify those needs in a way that they gain control over the person.

Modern companies are doing this too. Dough mix isn't sold, but making a family memory with the children is. Soap isn't sold to get dishes clean--but rather soft beautiful hands are sold. Cosmetic companies don't sell an item--they sell you hope or an image. Fruit dealers don't sell fruit, they sell health and vitality. Car dealers don't sell cars, they sell prestige and images. Freezers aren't sold, emotional security from having a full freezer is sold. They have learned to genuinely appeal to the 9 subconscious desires. In intelligence, these desires are called "weaknesses", because intelligence case officers and handlers will attempt to manipulate those desires for their own gain by sincerely helping the person. They set up short-range & long term goals and plans on how manage a person.

For instance, if a Monarch slave's day to day alters want ego-gratification, a creative outlet, and reassurance of worth, the Illuminati may promise the slave that if the alters comply they will give them a singing contract in Las Vegas. If they need to appeal to their emotional security--they can promise a big salary and a nice house. If they need to appeal to immortality they can promise to award them a star on Hollywood Boulevard or whatever religious immortality they can credibly offer. (The slave will get the short end of any deal.)

Anything the slave gets is going to come at a price. The slave will have to do something in return for the Network. Illuminati alters are promised power, honor, glory and wealth. Considering the power and wealth of the elite, they do have the resources to make good on this if they want. However, the price of obedience might be to shave one's head in submission and sacrifice a child.

Another important point is that the abusers want to get the active cooperation of the person being used. This can be accomplished by lies (or facts if they are convenient) which appeal to the person's views of right and wrong. For instance, a pedophile will talk to the child who they are going to rape to get its cooperation.

The CIA handlers will listen to what a Slave needs, and solve it for them. Bear in mind, they will only do this if the slave doesn't live with the handler and is pulling in the wrong direction. For instance, the CIA has lots of sleepers, who are dangerous people just waiting to be set off. In these cases, the CIA has to work with front alters who aren't aware of the mind control. Rather than force an issue with control, sometimes a gentle manipulation will work. Then again some slave alters are under such strong mind control that they simply need an order, and don't need gentle manipulation.

The isolation that the handlers impose on their slave to prevent real relationships with outsiders, and the strong bonding of the slave to its master (trauma bonding, etc.) that is administered via the mind control, actually provides a chance for freedom IF the slave survives its master's death. Most slaves are programmed to die soon after their master dies--the co-author Cisco was. If the slave survives the suicide programming, the Illuminati will have already taken into consideration who the slave will be passed onto. Cisco's system survived their programmer/master's death, and they were not able to break the intense bonds which made the System loyal to that master. Because there is so much secret mind-control slavery going on, if only a small percentage begin to break loose because their loyalty programming backfires on the Illuminati, it has still has given us on the other side a significant break.

Another example of an MPD system becoming exposed when a handler dies, is when Rothschild, the President of Oilfield Scrap & Equipment in Kentucky, committed suicide. He was the handler of a highly functioning MPD slave, who was his secretary, Mary Davis. Mary Davis could not function after his death and sued in court-- Davis v. Oilfield Scrap & Equipment Co., 482 So.2d 970 (La. App. 3rd Cir. 1986)--for worker's compensation because she could not function after her handler's death.

Because the Illuminati have kept their membership secret, people have not seen the connections between the various cases of multiple personality that surface. In Iowa in 1987, a Multiple named Freeman was arrested for stealing a car. In South Carolina in 1990, a Rutherford with MPD was in court. In North Dakata in 1988, an MPD daughter named Johnson tried to sue her abusive father named Johnson for her sexual abuse. In 1984, a Multiple named Hall was hit by a truck and was in court. In 1987, a Multiple named Jones tried to use his MPD to get off of a murder conviction in Washington. In 1988, Marie Moore, a Multiple in N.J. ran a coven which tortured teenagers. The police found a well hidden body in her house, but the corrupt judicial system did not convict her of murder. In 1988, a Ms. Wheeler applied for Social Security disability benefits due to mental impairments such as MPD. In each of these MPD cases: Freeman, Hall, Jones, Johnson, Moore, Rutherford, and Wheeler are all surnames that have many members in the Illuminati. The secrecy of the Illuminati has protected people from seeing their hidden genealogies. Tracking these genealogies would in turn start exposing the extent of their mind control.

As the handlers isolate the slave from mainstream society, they can begin to give them things that will satisfy their long suppressed emotional needs. These are given in a way that they further lock the person in to the control. For instance, the slave has been stripped of power, he craves power--so he is given power over other people's lives. The slave has been stripped of its real family, so he is given roots by a long generational occult bloodline, and a cult family.

Each Monarch slave exists in their own situation, but there are often common features to how they are controlled. For instance, the handlers like to restrict the mobility of their slaves. Some of the slaves will never write their own checks, will never drive anywhere, and will seldom watch television unless it is something like a Walt Disney movie which is mind-control programming. Some slaves are allowed to drive, but only on a limited basis and their sense of direction is stripped from them hypnotically.

In January, 1995, this co-author's newsletter *From A Follower of Christ* had a feature article on Marilyn Monroe. Monarch mind-controlled slaves like Loretta Lynn and Marilyn Monroe lived tightly controlled lives, and were not allowed to drive automobiles. The one exception is that Loretta has been allowed to drive her car around the ranch. The following is some excerpts from the co-author's January '95 newsletter because it gives a good example of how Marilyn Monroe, a mind-controlled slave had her life very tightly controlled.

EXCERPTS

...On a day in October, 1957, a woman named Lena Pepitone was hired to take care of Marilyn Monroe. In 1979, she published her memories of the time she was the primary person taking care of Marilyn

Monroe. I personally think that Lena Pepitone was clean, and didn't know what she was dealing with. She describes in detail her life with Marilyn Monroe. The inside story of life with Marilyn is nothing like people might imagine. Lena's book is such a clear description of how life with a Monarch slave can be--that I decided to use her book as the basis of some articles.

Marilyn Monroe was an orphan, and during her infancy the Illuminati/CIA programmed her to be a Monarch slave. Before becoming an actress, while she was still a stripper, she spent time with the founder of the Church of Satan Anton LaVey. Victims of LaVey have pointed him out as a mind-control programmer. At that time, Marilyn was going by several names including Mona. When they made her a star, Marilyn lived on the 13th floor, in 13E at Sutton Place, NY the world of the rich and famous. That is where Lena came to help her. However, Marilyn's existence was not that of a rich person, but was more like that of an inmate. Marilyn was allowed to have no personal life, outside of the dictates of her programmers and her masters. The programmers and users bore down so hard on controlling Marilyn that they repeatedly came close to driving her insane.

The following format the words in italic are direct quotes from Lena Pepitone's book which is entitled Marilyn Monroe Confidential An Intimate Personal Account, NY: Simon & Schuster, 1979.

- **p.16-** *"Floor-to-ceiling mirrors were everywhere. Even the dining alcove at the rear of the living room had a table with a mirrored top. All these mirrors didn't cheer things up."*

In programming Monarch slaves, mirrors are used a great deal. Within the Monarch slave's mind, countless mirror images are made. The slave sees thousands of mirrors everywhere in their mind. Because Marilyn was so stripped of any personal identity, she decorated her house as her mind looked on the inside--full of mirrors. Although other Monarchs may have some desires to decorate with mirrors, Marilyn is the most extreme case I know of filling one's house full of mirrors.

- **p.25--** *"Marilyn's bedroom was definitely not a queen's chamber...There were no paintings in the cramped, square room, only mirrors."...*

Marilyn's controllers kept her down. Even when she was famous and great, she lived like a slave. She was not allowed to have any self-esteem beyond what she was programmed for.

- **p.29 --** *"May was finally able to call for the chauffeur to take Marilyn away."...*

Marilyn was a captive, she didn't go anywhere on her own, she always had someone drive her.

- **p.32--** *"First of all, Marilyn's life was incredibly monotonous for her. Her doctor's appointments (I later learned these were appointments with psychiatrists) and her acting lessons were virtually all she had to look forward to. She spent most of her time in her little bedroom..."*

Marilyn went out of the house to be either programmed or groomed. Other than that she stayed cooped up in her room. Does the reader begin to see that the woman was a slave with no life of her own?

- **p.33--** *"She [Marilyn] didn't even own a television, never listened to the radio."*

They stripped Marilyn of any contact with the outside world to insure that their mind control would work. They were afraid that something might go wrong with the first Presidential slave that was allowed to be highly visible to the public....

- **p.41--** *[Marilyn says], "Shit. My life is shit," she wept. "I can't go anywhere. I'm a prisoner in this house."* **Marilyn is only telling the truth.**
- **p.43--***"Because Marilyn had no real friends, she concentrated on herself."*

The closest friend Marilyn had is saying that Marilyn Monroe had no real friends. Doesn't that strike someone as strange. Marilyn didn't have any real friends. Almost the only ones in her life were her abusers, and they worked hard to strip her of any personal goals or esteem.

- **p.70--** *"You can go anywhere," I [Lena] assured her. "Anywhere in the world." "Who with? she asked sadly. "Who with? By myself." "Mr. Miller, your friends..." "What friends? I ain't got nobody."*

Many times during the programming, the programmers separate the victim from anyone who could be a support person, they are isolated from having friends and relatives unless the relatives are in the occult.

- **p. 71** *--Marilyn repeatedly calls herself a prostitute. She says, "They laugh at me. What am I ...nothing...a prostitute." Further on the page Marilyn tells Lena that no one has cared about her for her entire life, including her mother....*
- **p.77--** *"Don't take my baby. So they took my baby from me...and I never saw it again." After Marilyn had a healthy baby it was taken away from her and she was never allowed to see it.* **It was very likely sacrificed. Marilyn was too afraid to ask what they were going to do with it.**
- **p.100-- Marilyn loses her baby at the same place that some of her programming was done at. One can speculate that they took the baby for some perverted use....**
- **p.134--***"The operation took place at Polyclinic Hospital where Marilyn had lost her baby the year before...[Marilyn said]"Going back to that hospital's a nightmare....Pain? What's pain?" For her, the only pain was in not having her own child."*

Notice she always go back to the Polyclinic Hospital. Monarch victims have had to endure vast amounts of horrible torture. They learn to survive by disassociation.

insignificant points in people's lives are being manipulated. (Bear in mind the intelligence people are carried away and overdo much of what they do, even over planning some of their ops.)

POINT 4. The chief is given the order to "hit at convenience." They are watching and probing to discover a weak point, and when they find a weak point they will strike at convenience.

POINT 5. Listening devices are installed. (The Illuminati's intelligence agencies are illegally monitoring the lives of Americans with bugs that go up to 2 Ghz. Companies like Tektronics which work with the CIA are selling counters which won't detect bugs at 2 Ghz. In other words, what is mainly sold the public is inadequate, but BK Precision does sell a counter which goes past 2 Ghz. for those who want to know when they are being illegally spied upon. Since MI-6 & the CIA cooperate, the CIA can simply say that their American intelligence information is from MI-6. It may be illegal for the CIA to spy in the U.S.-ha! no one stops them, but British MI-6 can legally spy on American citizens.) The intell. groups themselves use BABBLERS, which are electronic devices that emit noise & chatter & destroy the effectiveness of bugs.

POINT 6. Teams of experts are brought in to brainstorm about the operation. The people called in on a case will be coordinated by a team or teams. One of these teams will consist of various experts whose combined brains will give great ability to plan.

POINT 7. The person will be watched by moving in an observer into a nearby building.

POINT 8. An intelligence woman or man will be sent door to door selling perfume or something else--perhaps they will pose as Jehovah's Witnesses.

POINT 9. The door to door undercover intelligence person will be very personable, very nice to talk to.

POINT 10. The team will take all the surveillance information and spend hours going over every detail, and they will debate and get tense as they hash out the significance of certain intelligence pieces of information as they work out a plan of action.

POINT 11. The Intelligence people will take advantage of the social needs of someone close to their prey. They might give his wife some opportunities for fun things away from the house. They know how to take advantage very quickly & smoothly of the social needs of people who are around a Monarch slave. (They put used car salesmen to shame.)

POINT 12. The intelligence people have the capability to enter without keys.

POINT 13. They practice "motionless following." That means they followed people in shifts. They will follow by tag teams so to speak, and use car phones.

POINT 14. They like to use "trade" occupations as a cover.

POINT 15. The man will give a business card which had an actual office, etc. but which was a front. They will be willing to give a business card--which is a real address, but only a CIA front. The day they realize they are exposed, the phone will quit working. Handlers and men within the Network often use business cards and other cards they carry in their wallets as codes indicating various things.

In intelligence operations, the agents will take their "intelligence"--that is the info they have collected, and put it through 4 steps. 1) "direction", who is going to collect what where. 2) "collection", the actual spying. 3) "processing", analyzing and integrating what they have collected, and 4) "dissemination", distributing (via reports, talks, charts) the analyzed and rewritten reports to their customers. Most of the intelligence groups have a reputation for distorting the truth in the third stage to fit their agency's "party line".

Count St.-Germain (169?-1784) is a good example of an intelligence officer. He was one of the leading Illuminati of his time. He did alchemy for Louis XV, and magic for the Masonic leader Karl, prince of Hesse. He spied for the Dutch and the French, and who knows who else. His fundamental allegiance was to the Mystery Religions of the Illuminati.

Modern day examples are Lord Victor Rothschild, one of the leaders of MI-6, Sir Dick Goldsmith White, Jewish, Mason, & leader of MI-6 from 56-69, Sir John Rennie leader of MI-6 from 69-73 whose son Charles Tatham Ogilvy Rennie was a known major drug runner, Major General Sir John Sinclair, of the Illuminati, MI-6 chief from '53-56.

MI-5 has had a number of Illuminati/Freemasons called Director-Generals (rather than Chiefs) running it too.

Nigel West, a pseudonym for a man who worked for MI-6 devoted an entire chapter in his book MI-5 about how Hugh Astor and Victor Rothschild ran Britain's double agent division. ALL, I repeat ALL of the German agents spying on England during W.W. II were double-agents actually working for the British. If anyone tried to work for the German's secret service who wasn't disloyal, that person could only work for the Germans IF they turned into a double agent for the British. Today, almost every one working against MI-5, MI-6 and the Illuminati's New World Order, is a double agent. This book may be followed by a number of similar books by double agents of the New World Order's Network.

CIA OPERATIONS INVOLVING GEORGE WHITE

George White, working for the MK Ultra Mind Control program supplied during the 1950s a long list of prostitutes to the CIA for study. During the 1950s, the CIA was refining its knowledge of what makes a prostitute tick. How do you use them? How do you train them? How do you teach them to do both espionage and seduction. What are the elements of seduction? All these sciences were refined. For instance, if a prostitute stays longer than she is paid for, she will shock the john, and he will find his ego greatly boosted. With the right methods, the prostitute agent can elicit all types of secrets from the vulnerable male. With the ability to create Black Widow Spiders (deadly seductive Monarch alters), the Illuminati gained one more sure method to control others. Seduction and then blackmail. The CIA, just as FBI J. Edgar Hoover did, keeps detailed files on sexual preferences. It supplies what people want, but the supply comes with a price that the individual is now under blackmail.

B. BLACKMAIL

This dirty game has been honed to a fine art, which is a standard feature of the Illuminati/intelligence groups. The CIA term for blackmail is an "OK FIX." When they use a person's past sins to force someone to do something they refer to this as "biographic leverage." Any weak point in a person can and will be exploited. Sexual entrapment for blackmail is referred to as a "HONEY TRAP". Black widow alters are being trained and sent out for this purpose.

Blackmail of the slave begins when it is beginning to get verbal. At 3, the cults will tell a child they have a bomb planted inside them, that the cult can detonate if they don't obey.

In order to blackmail, or threaten, you have to have something to threaten the person with. Men are frequently entrapped by sexual behavior which is criminal. Sometimes they are also entrapped by murder.

The Monarch slave will be allowed to have children so that they can be blackmailed into complying to save the children or grandchildren. The Monarch slave in turn may be used to blackmail others. Certain alters are trained in this.

A Monarch Beta model is highly trained in seduction and will seduce a man. Then an alter which feigns death will take the body and the man will be threatened for having killed the woman. Many politicians and ministers are operating under blackmail today. When Jimmy Swaggart's ministry fell, over 200 Assembly of God ministers called headquarters and confessed that they had similar problems. The extent that blackmail is being used by the NWO would boggle people's minds.

Porn films are taken of the Monarch victims, so that they can be used to blackmail the

When Marilyn says "What is pain?" she is being accurate in reflecting her response to pain. She could not have pain--because she would disassociate it. Certain alters are created to take the pain, and the other alters don't have to experience it.

- **p.135--** *"I found Marilyn in a small room without any view. It was very depressing, especially since there were no flowers or any other signs that Marilyn had friends who were thinking of her."*

Imagine a great actor like Marilyn is given a room without a view and no flowers or anything to cheer her up.

- **p.137--** *"Marilyn's now almost daily visits to the psychiatrists..."...*

She was closely monitored.

- **p.193-- Marilyn's half-sister tries to come into Marilyn's life. Marilyn says,** *"I have a right to have a family."* **And on the next page,** *"Gee, you're really my sister. My sister....At least you lived with relatives."*

Marilyn's masters did not want her to have any family. They often strip the deeper alters of a Monarch slave from any ties to any non-cult person....

- **p.199--Marilyn orders a $3,000 Emerald green dress to be made. Emerald green is often the most favorite color of Monarch slaves because of their Wizard of Oz programming which is usually the foundational programming.**
- **p.202--** *"Frank...clipped two gorgeous emerald earrings on Marilyn's ears."*

Again we see that emerald green is often used by Monarch slaves.

- **p. 205--** *"Aside from her evenings with Frank [Sinatra], Marilyn's life in California seemed identical to her life in New York. She didn't read, didn't watch television, didn't go anywhere. Although the sun was always shining, Marilyn was as pale as ever. She didn't like to go outside during the day."*

As time goes on the case officer or handler will weave and ever firming ever tightening web of control around his asset. They will often use rapport. Many of the CIA's Monarch programmers are very likable people, they have learned the skill of "B.S." and building rapport. Some of this involves just understanding people and NLP.

The handler will look for telltale signs such as absenteeism, lateness, nervousness, or inconsistency. He will rely on intuition, spies, astral projection or psychic abilities to keep tabs on the asset. Then if a problem develops it will be addressed with appeals to patriotism, greed, ambition, or fear. Whatever works is the motto of the game.

When slaves are picked up, the men picking them up are called Draconian enforcers. Both authors of this book are very familiar with some of these men. They are often big male Monarch slaves. A popular Illuminati access point is to grab the right hand with the enforcers thumb in the area between the victim's thumb and index finger. The pressure will be strong enough to leave a bruise after the access. At different times in different states there have been patterns to what kind of car they drive. They often take the cars from cooperating dealerships, so that there is no license number to trace. They also use stolen license plates on their cars. In 1993, in NY they were using brown volkswagens. In the Oregon area (especially Portland), a full time Monarch slave enforcer named Rex drives his large red pickup or at times someone else's other vehicle (like his Illuminati boss's white pickup truck). He will carry a gun and a cattle prod. The cars in some places have been often red or black. A white or silver car sometimes is used to denote someone of rank. When limousines are used to pick up slaves, they may switch license plates regularly because the plates contain access codes. This was one reason the establishment began allowing people to customize their own license plates!

When one wants to control a group of people, as a leader of a country Machiavelli's book is great. Some of those principles can be scaled down to working with individuals.

Fritz has observed that almost across the board, if slaves are left within a non-cult family, relatives will consistently misperceive what is happening in the slave's life. Switches between personalities are reinterpreted to fit the world view of the observer--the multiple is merely perceived as "moody" and "irrational". Half-way decent cover stories will generally suffice to cover the slave's activities for the mafia, the CIA, and the satanic cult they belong to. The slave merely needs to pull up a good front alter for public consumption, for people want to think the best of everyone. The public will watch the

7-Swans fairy tale where a magical coat turns swans into a princess, never guessing that a news story far greater is happening all around them.

One way to control a person is to identify who the key people are in their life and then influence those people. Some of the work in controlling Monarch slaves goes on behind the scenes, even without the slave ever realizing it. A number of Monarch slaves have been maneuvered into marriages without actual mind-control even being necessary.

One of the items to successfully controlling people is that they know who they are taking orders from. In the military, officers get frustrated because they end up getting conflicting orders from conflicting jurisdictions. This happens with the control of Monarch slaves too, when too many chiefs and not enough indians are around. When a slave ends up serving several handlers within a short period of time they can get really messed up. This is because the slaves receive severe abuse and their programming can be splintered and destroyed if not handled correctly. Of course, the slave takes the blame, but that doesn't eliminate the problem. If a handler wants a better chance of his slave functioning smoothly, the slave shouldn't be tampered with by lots of handlers. This common sense logic of management seems to have been missed by a large number of handlers. One thing can be said, someone who is a common drug dealer had better not tamper with an Illuminati Mother of Darkness alter slave if they want to stay alive. It appears that slaves are seldom tampered with without permission.

Another ingredient in controlling people is knowing what your competition is going to do. Because the cults work with the intelligence agencies, they often know who, what, where, when, and how their enemies are going to challenge them. The authors of this book could write a book on how the Illuminati/intelligence agencies have watched them. People such as therapists and ministers who challenge the Monarch trauma-based programming have nice growing dossiers in CIA files.

A note should be made that the American intelligence agencies tattooed some of their slaves with blue Monarch butterflies, bluebirds, or roses for identification purposes. The bluebird relates to the CIA project name Project Bluebird. Some satanic cults tatoo the "sign of the great Beast" on the heads of victims. They also place scars with occult designs on their victims. The Illuminati slaves, who are hierarchy members of the Illuminati, are not tattooed, although a hard-to-see scar consisting of dots in a triangle on the third eye is done to some members. The prohibition against marking up one's body is not consistently enforced in the Illuminati--it seems this standard is enforced more with the women than the male Illuminati members. CIA slaves have received the Butterfly tatoos from the age of about 11 on up.

PLANNING A TYPICAL INTELLIGENCE OPERATION, or the STANDARD TEXTBOOK TECHNIQUES OF A MODERN INTELLIGENCE AGENCY.

The following points are of a scenario which was developed as follows by the author: Fritz observed how the CIA were carrying out an operation to recapture a Monarch slave who was trying to escape. These activities follow standard spook textbook methods, and for instance, fit the same patterns of an intelligence operation codenamed Operation Sphinx described in detail in the book *By Way of Deception.* By exposing how an operation is put together perhaps it will become clearer how the CIA monitor an asset they fear is escaping.

POINT 1. An event that looked like an accident was planned. The event was impossible to miss. This can include car accidents, people waving one down to tell you that you have a flat tire, etc.

POINT 2. They studied their prey to determine his/her routine. They will watch a residence intently to determine the person's routine and take advantage of this.

POINT 3. Then an insignificant accidental event is planned. Repeatedly, in the many Monarch people the authors have known, the tiniest victim. Monarch victims are forced to commit ritual murders which are photographed and then used to blackmail the poor mind-controlled victim.

Perhaps, one of the cruelest forms of blackmail which is carried routinely by handlers, is the threat to incarcerate the mind-controlled slave in a mental hospital. The co-author Fritz has read a number of books about the situation in America's mental hospitals, and sections of these books will literally make a person vomit from disgust. The legal climate in this nation has made it easy to stick someone else in a mental hospital. Once there, they are routinely given tranquilizers Mellaril, Thorazine or Stelazine so that they can't rebel against the most wretched conditions.

Nadine Scolla was a nurse in a mental hospital who wrote an expose based on her diary while she worked. Her book is entitled *Keeper of the Keys* (Westlake Village, CA: F&J Publishing Corp., 1976) The following are quotes from her account of working in a mental hospital, "How can they allow such places to exist? They really need to reform, but who is going to do it?...We're supposed to be civilized and yet many people are treated worse than the lowest form of animals. Who cares about these patients? (p.15)...Doctors receive one hundred thousand dollars a year starting salary, and the nursing personnel receive the highest pay in the profession, and yet the patients get the worst of care. (p.19)...I could see that the patients had no rights here. (p.27)...[on page 49-50 she reports about a secret hospital grave yard where patients could be buried without anyone knowing]...Do you remember the young rape victim and how they treated her-the girl with beautiful olive skin and long brown hair?...They filled the bath tub with cubes of large ice and dropped her into it. They removed her from that and placed her in scalding hot water. She came out red as a lobster. Her body was badly blistered. This treatment didn't help, so they decided upon shock treatment. 'I never saw anything so awful in all my life. They forcibly strapped her down, tied her hands and legs, stuck the electrodes to her head and placed a tongue blade in her mouth. She couldn't scream, wiggle, or do anything. After the treatment...Tammey was dead. Her body was limp-she was still trapped in the chair. It was more than I could take. I had to go off by myself and cry.' (p.51) I don't understand how our local government can allow these people to be treated worse than a dog in the local pound. At least the animals have their own cubicle and their own food dish. (p.73)"

According to what Nadine Scolla was told, half of the patients in mental hospitals are schizophrenics. A hefty percentage of these "schizophrenics" are really programmed multiples who are being quietly discarded by the system. How many victims of trauma-based total mind-control have ended up sent to mental hospitals? Many tens of thousands, maybe the exact number will never be known.

America's mental hospitals have also played an active role in the programming and the research for the programming.

C. BRIBES

Their skill at bribes is an extension of understanding human nature, and human needs and wants. It works together with blackmail.

D. The CONTROL of the MILIEU

One of the basic ideas of creating a mind-controlled slave, is to control the entire milieu of the slave. This is expressed in *Nexus Seven*. The environment of the slave is designed for what is called "story immersion."

A Monarch slave who has been given the basic Alice In Wonderland and Wizard of Oz programming will see objects connected to these story lines in almost every store. Restaurants in Dallas and San Antonio (The Time Machine Restaurants) which are used to reinforce programming, have mirrors on their walls, doors and ceilings and their waitresses dressed like programming script characters--such as Dorothy of the Wizard of Oz.

It is no accident that one of the leading Satanic singers calls himself Ozzy Ozburn, or that a certain Mexican witch calls herself Oz. It is no accident that recently a witch wrote the book *The Witches of Oz*. It is no accident that the elite have promoted the Wizard of Oz theme with television product advertisements. It is no accident that the U.S. has Oz stamps, that television has Oz cartoons, and Oz characters are appearing all over the place. For a while even Kansas had an Oz theme to their license plates ("Land of Ahs"). Hillary Clinton, (a 6th level Illuminati witch & sadistic Monarch slave handler) received a witch's hat in anticipation that she would be called the wicked witch of the West, and that Mary Matalin (who married Clinton's top campaign advisor James Carville) had a photograph of Hillary Clinton as the Wicked Witch of the West on her wall with the caption "I will get you, my pretty, and your little dog too!" The witch's hat and the caption both are popular with these people associated with the White House because they are so rich in triple and quadruple meanings. The deadliest meaning is that the Monarch Slaves that sexually service Hillary and Bill Clinton have Wizard of Oz programming. Hillary is really the Wicked Witch of the West! to these poor Beta slaves. The constant bumping into Wizard of Oz paraphernalia or pictures of it helps focus the slave's mind onto their Wizard of Oz programming.

MGM Grand recently built a multi-million dollar pyramid complex with a theme park which is based on the Wizard of Oz and the Alice in Wonderland themes. The hotel at the MGM Grand is the world's largest with 5,000 rooms, which shows that mind-control is big business. A team of actors dressed up in the Wizard of Oz theme like Dorothy and her friends (Tin man & Scarecrow) and walked on a yellow brick road constructed in the MGM complex. Emerald City is part of the theme park. The complex cost $1 billion according to the *Las Vegas Review Journal*, Dec. 19, '93 page A1. This complex is given the occult name Luxor, and is at 3900 Las Vegas Boulevard South. It has been advertised as the "Next Wonder of the World." It's a shame that the 1990's big wonder is a programming center.

Another part of the control of the Milieu is labelled "planned spontaneity" by the controllers. The Monarch victim repeatedly finds experiences "just happening." These are the coincidences that are so mystical that people feel there must be a higher significance to the event. Many of these are well-staged events. A slave may try to escape marrying the person they are commanded to marry. The handlers stay one step ahead of the slave, and through a series of coincidences introduce another acceptable person. The slave in an effort to escape grabs the first available substitute who has been coached on how to push all the correct green mental buttons to get the escapee to marry them. The slave jumps from the frying pan into the fire.

Things which validate the programming and the mystical beliefs of the cult will be repeatedly introduced. The skill in introducing these secretly into the life of the slave are amazing. There is no limit to what can be attempted, and some of these staged events are worthy of Houdini.

The occult world has placed their symbols all over the United States. The most esteemed institutions such as Walt Disney are fountains of the occult. Walt Disney movies are steeped in magic, and yet American society is so drowned in the occult, they have been desensitized to how it permeates American culture.

The concept of "Sacred knowledge" versus "profane knowledge" is introduced.

If the slave should escape, the first choice is to send someone who can pick them up. I have heard of slaves escaping from Europe on the plane, only to be picked up by a handler when they land in New York. Mt. Shasta's programming site, accessed by helicopter, specializes in reprogramming escaped slaves. Jerry Lee Lewis has a notorious reputation among the Network as being exceptionally sadistic in reprogramming escapees.

However, if the slave is not needed, and is wanting out--tens of thousands of them have been locked up in mental hospitals as paranoid schizophrenics. In the mental hospitals they can continue to get drugs and electro-shock--the very things that caused their problems in the first place. The insiders have a name for these slaves, they call them "broken butterflies". If the slave tries to go to court, according to some the Non Compos Mentis Law prevents them from testifying against their abusers. At any rate, with or without this law it would not be easy for a victim to get his testimony accorded the respect it deserves. If they get psychiatric help--their therapist can not tell anyone about what they have suffered, and the therapist is hamstrung about what they can do in court for the client. Recently, 15 states have created statutes of limitations on sadistic rape. This is in response to all the Monarch slaves who have begun recovering memories.

The extent that entire culture and society protect the Monarch Programming is enormous. Anyone admitting MPD (aka DID) is in fear of being labelled crazy and losing some of their rights and their job.

Because the conspiracy (the Network) is so vast, an examination of how the Illuminati controls society would be needed to cover the subject of milieu control. This would take an entire book. The reader is encouraged to read some of Fritz Springmeier's other works which expose how the Illuminati's control extends over all levels of society. Most people have settled their minds on this issue without getting the facts. When the real facts are shown, it blows people's minds. Some of the easiest and everyday items to show people, are simply a dollar bill--with its Illuminati symbol on the back, and a can of vegetables which has a bar code on it. Every bar code has 3 secret and non-functional numbers in the bar code, which are 666.

The silent hammer that strikes out at the Monarch slave is that everywhere they go, the occult world is there. Several cars are named after Satan. The name Saturn, and Belair are well-known as occult names for Satan. When Freemasonry's greatest philosopher/Illuminati Mind-control Programmer/Grand Druid Council member Manly P. Hall wrote *Cabalistic Keys to the Lord's Prayer* (Los Angeles, CA: The Philosophical Research Society, 1964, p. 10) he wrote "Saturn = Hallowed be thy name." The men who head these auto manufacturing companies are in the Illuminati. There is no question that they were NOT ignorant of the significance of these names.

Many other occult names of big significance to the Illuminati involving eagles have been placed on cars. Electra is a recent car named after a demon. Viper is a slow and deadly creature, why would one want to use it to name a car? Viper is also the name of an important demon. Viper is found in Black Widow Monarch slaves. Some readers may begin to feel that things are being stretched. The connections of numerous car names to the occult could be exposed, but that is not the purpose of this book. We will quote straight from a company their own explanation for their car's name in this next paragraph, simply to make the point, whether other perceive it or not, the Monarch slaves have to exist in a world full of satanic/occult symbology that ordinary people don't understand.

Mazda's president, Norimasa Furuta, published a book in 1990 which it intended to give to all its employees. The book explains its purpose "...we have written a booklet to explain how MAZDA became the name of our corporation and what it means in order to help everyone who is related to MAZDA enhance their creativity and develop their potential." The book entitled *The Globe: In Search of the Origins of Mazda*, goes on to explain about the founder of Mazda car company, Matsuda Jujiro, who is heralded as a great seer who "believed in himself, in his friends, and in heaven, and he achieved a truly global vision." Mazda company's book *The Globe* then explains that the company name Mazda comes from the god Ahura-Mazda which was the "god of light" and the "god of wisdom" according to the book. Jujiro believed that Mazda represents the "origin of civilization." The "god of light" (Lucifer) is often credited for starting civilization by those who aren't Christians. The name Mazda according *The Globe* symbolizes "unlimited possibility and stimulates people's dreams." Mazda's book puts down in writing their New Age goals to "establish peace for mankind with a global point of view," and "a spiritual foundation" toward which to work toward a "new age." The book further states civilization started in Egypt and that Christianity evolved from the pagan mystery religions.

Another book associated with Mazda cars, is the book *The Meaning of Life* given to everyone who test-drives a Mazda--that was as long as book supplies last. I quote the book "...the time when regions and continents existed keeping a certain distance from each other is a thing of the past....We are eager to transmit the meaning of MAZDA to the children of MAZDA who will create a new MAZDA...With a strong desire for peace and through the production and sale of automobiles and machine tools, **MAZDA has advanced on a course to unite the people of the world"** [bold added] (pp 78-79.)

An adept of the Illuminati is taught about Ahura Mazda. He would know that Mazda was the Persian God of Light who was also known as Ormus--which is another name for the Preiure de Sion, which is a powerful group protecting the 13th Illuminati Bloodline.

Some of the names of cars which could be triggering to SRA survivors include the Demon, the Vagabond, Dodge Ram (Goat of Mendes), Buick's Phoenix, Ford's Cobra, Mercury's Cougar, Eagle Jeeps, the Le Baron Eagle Logo, Navistar Eagle Truck (which may have Eagle mud flaps, and Goodyear Eagle GT tires). For most of us an eagle is a symbol of what is noble and beautiful. Historically, the eagle and the snake have been the logo of the tribe of Dan, considered the "black sheep" of the 12 tribes. The Prophet Hosea said, "Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He shall come as an eagle against the house of the LORD, because they have transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law." (HOS 8:1) And the Prophet Obadiah said, "Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, saith the Lord." (OB 1:4) The co-authors of this book didn't create Illuminati history nor their symbols. We are only reporting on them. We would like the eagle simply to represent what is noble and fearfully made by God. Indeed, in some verses like in Isaiah the eagle has a positive connotation. However, the construct, the reframing that is done by the Illuminati upon these symbols is that the eagle represents Satan's empire. The Assyrian, Roman, and Nazi empires used the eagle. The Illuminati point these things out to their initiates, and ask, "Is this a symbol of Christianity, or the power of our lineages which ruled those empires?"

It is not the co-authors desire to interpret what Hosea and Obadiah meant. Nor is it our desire to dissuade anyone from buying the cars mentioned above. Our only point is that the survivor lives in a world of occult symbols and occult programming triggers. How do you convince someone to quit fearing the power of their abusers when it has its symbols on their money, their canned food, their cars, and their churches? (Yes, there are such things as All-Seeing Eyes in some churches and Masonic logos on others, and other occult symbols. Hislop's *The Two Babylons* is devoted to showing all the pagan symbology in the Catholic church.) Are we exaggerating? Fritz went into one fast food restaurant and the cups and placemats had a wizard throwing occult energy balls with occult symbols, the next fast food place had place mats showing the King Arthur story which is an extremely important myth for the Illuminati (the quest for the Grail!), the next fast food place had place mats giving children instructions on how to hypnotize your parents, the next one had a Wizard of Oz theme, and the next one was selling occult movies. Fritz kept these place mats to use in his talks! This nation is immersed in the occult and so desensitized they don't realize it.

The public thinks nothing of a Gargoyle Coloring/Activity book. This type of thing is commonplace in American society. If one examines Golden Book's *Gargoyle Coloring/Activity book* (1995) still being sold, you will find Gargoyle demons named after geographic locations that the child can color, you will find a Magus with a Book of Spells that the child can color. For activities, the child can duplicate pictures, work codes, match shadows with their figures, match objects and images, and work with robot heads of which several can be placed on one body. All these activities reinforce the type of skills that the programmers want children under mind-control to have. The book has castles, robots, a sentence about a kitten which is a code about a computer disk, and mazes. A perfect book for the programmers to give a child, and the naive public walks by these kinds of books on their store shelves everyday. The Illuminati's mind-control goes on in part right in front of America's nose, and they don't see it.

One of the saddest things for Monarch mind-control survivors is that the Programmers are so systematic in destroying everything of beauty and value in life. Everything conceivable that can be degraded will be. This mind-control has spread like an unseen cancer to every segment of life, and threatens to destroy this nation from the inside out. Imagine that every time you heard your own national anthem that it reinforced your mind-control programming? That is the life of these victims of mind-control.

We wish the American people could realize that George Bush and Bill Clinton are on the same team. Both are descendants of the top 13 Illuminati bloodlines, both are totally corrupt morally, both are into the occult, and both were trained by the same person in subliminal language techniques. The best in subliminal language techniques is said to be Tony Robins, and he is who the elite got to train both George Bush and Bill Clinton.

Monarch Mind Controlled Slaves have been created since the late 1940s. Since the early '60s, Monarch Slaves have been specially created for American presidents. These models are called Presidential Models. There are now living about 600 people (Monarch slaves) who were created into Presidential Models. That is a large harem. Presidential Models fit a particular set of physical standards, not one of the Presidential sex slaves has been black. President Kennedy, Johnson, Nixon, Ford, Bush, Reagan and Clinton have all been slave handlers. Many slaves have some deeper alters who have a realization that their Presidents are in on the corruption, how does that make them feel?

The cults which program pay particular attention to show the child, men in police uniforms and ministers of churches which are participating with the cult. This has the effect of embedding in the mind of the victim that there is no escape--that the entire structure of society is secretly in cahoots with the programmers. Not all policemen nor all ministers are dirty, but because of the Monarch program, the entire structure of American society has been seriously compromised to the extent that all sectors are infiltrated and contaminated. Unfortunately, the worst fears of the victims, are in reality close to the truth. The Monarch victim is further victimized because no-one wants to believe them in how controlled American society has become. The truth is we are on the verge of losing civilization as we know it, and entering into a dark sadistic slave-master society that will make Hitler's Third Reich look like child play.

What part of our lives are not controlled. We go to our jobs--our boss is naturally given the right to control us. For many centuries, the Machiavellian elite have provided the masses with "Bread and Circus". That means "keep the people feed and entertained and they will not rebel." After Americans come home they are kept busy with entertainment. The only exception to their work, and TV watching, are their trips to their churches. Even the various religions are secretly under elite control. See Fritz's *Be Wise As Serpents* book for an 800 page expose of how the various Christian groups and New Age Religions are controlled. The point is that people are kept busy and occupied, and they seldom try to step outside of the path that the elite want them to stay in.

A slave's front system will be a normal busy person for years, while the deeper alters serve their various functions for the elite. There is simply little that occurs that shakes the routine that gets established. If the handler doesn't live with the slave himself, he will often place another slave as the spouse, to oversee the slave. The marriage couple's deeper alters spy on each other.

The schools that the slaves will go to are often controlled by the abusers. Some of the more obvious ones are Groton, a school for the elite's children, and Santa Clara University and Williamette University used by the Illuminati to train their politicians for public office. The Beta Theta Pi is a political fraternity through which quite a few Illuminati politicians have joined. The Jesuit schools throughout the United States are used for abuse and programming. Note, that Bill Clinton went to the Jesuit university in Washington, D.C. called Georgetown University. A number of the military school that parents ship their elementary boys off to are used by the elite for the ongoing abuse and programming of slaves.

The Illuminati foundation, the W.K. Kellogg Foundation, gave the initial funding for the Quest Program for the public schools. The Quest Program is being adopted by various public schools. It also goes by the names Skills for Adolescence, Skills for Growing, and Skills for Living. One of the early editions of Quest had an exercise called "elevator" where the teacher uses visualization and guided imagery. The teacher places her school children in a mild hypnotic trance described in the Quest literature as "a quiet contemplative mood." Then the teacher tells the students, "You are on an elevator." Each button on the elevator represents an age of the child. When the students push a button, the elevator takes them back to experiences at that age.

It is not possible in the scope of this book to cover how every sector of our lives are controlled. Those who are interested need to read some of Fritz Springmeier's other writing including *Be Wise As Serpents*. However, it would be appropriate to cover how television shows and Hollywood are intimately linked to Monarch Mind-Control programming.

A great deal that is coming out of Hollywood is linked to mind-control in some fashion. Some of the hottest entertainers are Monarch slaves, such as Madonna, a Marilyn Monroe replacement. Co-author Fritz was given a catalog to Vidimax, which is an New Jersey occult porn video club by someone wanting to help his research. This cult video club sells actually snuff films. They sell the real life footage of cannibalism, virgin sacrifices, occult rituals, and worse. When Madonna was a teenage slave with the name Louise Chiccone living in NY East Village, a real life film was made of her being raped (a setup), and then her cult family taking the rapist and sacrificing him. Vidimax sells this for $19 to their members. Some of their videos are live footage of how kidnapped people have been tortured into becoming slaves. One of the catalog listing says, "tortured until their wills are broken and they become Olga's submissive slaves!...WARNING EXTREME GRAPHIC VIOLENCE...BACK BY POPULAR DEMAND." By the way, the Illuminati have their own private porn distribution. Many people ask, "Why do they need mind-controlled slaves?" Part of the answer is they need them to make their sick porn.

The history of the connections between the entertainment world and the occult and royalty go far back.

One group of people known for their travelling entertainment, the gypsies, have some interesting parallels with the Illuminati bloodlines. A gypsy proverb is, "If you want to stay survive, you must be a devil." Both groups have kept their bloodlines and their identity. Both are secretive. Both groups live double lives. Gypsy children will be given a secret magical name, and a name to use for outsiders. Gypsy children are often baptized in a magical circle. Both groups are into the occult, such as cannibalism, black magic, the evil eye, and white slavery. The gypsies believe in Charani, a big bird consumed by fire who rises from the ashes. The Illuminati call this the Phoenix. Both groups have a secret code that allows them to do anything to outsiders (who are called "Gadja" by gypsies meaning "enemy"). The gypsies originated in India and migrated west to Iran and Turkey and then to Greece and then into western Europe in the 1400s just prior to an occult revival in Europe. The largest gypsy tribe in

India is Ghor. They follow Durga (Kali). Other tribes also worship Kali under different names such as the Black Virgin for which they make an effigy called "Bibiaca" which simply means "lady". Gypsies made up early groups of travelling entertainers.

Sir Francis Bacon, who wrote under the pen name of Shakespeare, was the founder/leader of the Rosicrucians of his time. (The proof of who Shakespeare was is in several books, for instance, see Alfred Dodd's research in his excellent book *Francis Bacon's Personal Life Story.*)

The previous two paragraphs are offered as examples of how close the occult world and entertainment have been over the centuries. The history of the two worlds coincide for many centuries back, so it shouldn't come as a surprise that today's entertainment industry is still closely linked to the occult world, nor should it come as a surprise that the Illuminati have made sure they have control over the industry.

During W.W.II, the entire country was mobilized for the war effort and Hollywood was recruited so to speak to help with the war effort. For instance, cartoons were created as training films and as war propaganda. The military hired thousands of entertainers for USO Camp Shows, Inc. which was under the Special Services Division of the U.S. Army. Bob Hope, who worked for MI-6, British overseas intelligence, was the leading entertainer for USO tours. After the war broke out he went on 12 major overseas tours which took him and his beautiful troop of stunning knock-out girls to every front of the war--from the quiet fronts like Panama to places like Italy and North Africa. To make a long story short, Bob Hope was used to run messages to programmed multiples for British & American Intelligence. Later, after the war Bob Hope became a slave handler. In some of Fritz's other writings, Bob Hope's connections to the Illuminati are gone into. U.S.O. magicians were found to be the most overall popular USO show. The International Brotherhood of Magicians is intimately connected to the occult world and puts out a magazine *The Linking Ring*. Under the auspices of the USO (controlled by military intelligence) the country western industry's roots developed. The country western industry became a front for drug running, money laundering and white slavery for the Programmers of Monarch total Mind-controlled slaves. The USO also created at least 200 bands, from which came Lawrence Welk's band, Sam Donahue's band, Claude Thornbill's band, and Guy Lombardo's band to name a few.

Over the last 45 years perhaps the most popular place for couriers to be signalled to meet was by someone holding a bird in a cage or at a shop with birdcages. The allusion to carrier pigeons is so obvious. Look at a caption "Speaking of WRENS" with a cartoon from Bob Hope's book I Never Left Home (NY: Simon & Schuster, 1944) written in 1944 during the middle of W.W. II. The cartoon shows Bob chasing a girl with a bird cage and saying, "Tweet, Tweet, Tweet." Hypnotic commands are given 3 times. What seems like a harmless cartoon, is more like a signal telling people that Bob Hope is in charge of a flock of carrier pigeons (couriers), which we know he was. When talking to a group of soldiers during the war, Bob said, "In London the bobbies caught a guy walking around in the fog with a bird cage giving the mating call but the American counsel got me."

TWEET TWEET TWEET

Speaking of WRENS....

Walter Bowart in his researcher's edition of *Operation Mind Control* discusses the case of two W.W. II vets, who had their W.W. II memories erased by the military using drugs, hypnosis and behavior modification, before they were released from the army in 1947. This is found in Cassiday, Karen and Judith A. Lyons.

"Recall of Traumatic Memories Following Cerebral Vascular Accident" *Journal of Traumatic Stress*. NY: Plenum Pub. Vol. 5, No. 4, Oct. 1992, p. 627. The point is that evidence is surfacing from various locations that the U.S. government was carrying out mind-control during WW II. This was done under the auspices of British Intelligence (MI-6) during W.W. II.

When Canada entered the W.W. II with Britain, one of the best british secret agent training schools was set up between Whitly, Ont. and Oshawa, Ont. on Lake Ontario's north shore across from the U.S.-Can. border. The site was called Intrepid Park. Agents called it "the camp" or "the farm". Today, the CIA have their own "farm" (Camp Perry). The official British name for this spy camp was British Security Coordination Special Training School No. 103 & Hydra. STS 103. It was also known as Camp X. British SOE (Special Operations Executive) set itself in NYC. Americans from the FBI and OSS went to Camp X for training, as well as the SOE,SIS, BSC, and the Canadian RCMP. The British were already using mind-control at this stage.

The connections are endless. Edgar Allen Poe, who was into the occult and worked for British intelligence wrote *The Raven*. Vincent Price starred in Hollywood's version of the Raven, and passages of the book have been used as codes for a number of Monarch slaves, who had to memorize portions of the book with their photographic memories.

Warner Communications came out with the book/& movie "Sybil" which is about a woman with multiple personalities. The book and movie "Sybil" are full of mental slides (misinformation detours are called "slides" by the CIA) to prevent people from looking and thinking in the right directions concerning MPD. Structured MPD (DID) like Sybil's, occurs only from very specific trauma-based programming. Even the name Sybil is an occult name, although the idea that occult was involved in creating Sybil's MPD is not hinted at. The chief financial power behind Warner Communications was the Illuminati/Pilgrim Society member Eugene R. Black, retired head of the World Bank. Warner Communications is headquartered at Rockefeller Plaza, and has produced quite a few occult movies and occult books, for instance their movie about a demon "It Lives Again."

When Monarch slaves watch television, the shows they watch can relate to their programming in the following ways.

1. First, many of the shows have code words or programming scenarios which are deliberately in the shows to control the slaves: such as Star Wars, Star Trek, The Wizard of Oz, the Love Boat, Fantasy Island, I Dream of Jeanie (Delta Genie in the bottle programming, and "YOUR WISH IS MY COMMAND" type trigger), The Little Princess, the Miss Universe Contest 1995, Duck Tails (created to control child slaves, with deliberate triggers such as "earthquack"), Bobby's World cartoon, Steven Spielberg's Tiny Toons, My Fair Lady (used in several of the slave finishing schools), ET (for alien programming), etc.
2. Some of the shows which are supposedly pure fiction show elements of actual Illuminati ceremonies, Illuminati history, drug running methods, etc., such Bell, Book & Candle, Burn Witch Burn, Curse of The Voodoo, Equinox, Manos, The Hands of Fate, Witchcraft '70, as Spirits of the Living Dead, Frankenstein, Night of the Living Dead, Bewitched (with actual witches as actors). Raising Cain shows torture and MPD. Hellraiser 3 depicts "gatekeepers."
3. Some of the shows portray the Monarch total mind-control program (!): Telephon, The Manchurian Candidate, Videodrome, Labyrinth, Trancer II, The Attack of the Robots, Dr. Goldfoot & the Bikini Machine, Attack of the Puppet People, The War of the Zombies, Colossus-The Forbin Project, and The Point of No Return starring Jane Fonda's Bridgett, who is connected to the OTO. (By the way, Monarch mind-controlled slaves have been shown the movie "Telephon" to emphasize to them that their minds are controlled by their handlers, and for them not to forget it.)
4. Many of the movies and shows use Monarch slaves as actors & performers: such as Rosanne

kill the old flesh." This is the type of suicide programming given Monarch slaves. He is ordered, "Come to Mickey." Mickey happens to be part of Mickey Mouse programming and one of the nicknames of the programmer Michael Aquino. He is then shown a picture of suicide. Then the hypnotic command, "Come to Mickey" is said three times. "Long live the new flesh." The movie announces, "The battle for the mind of North America will be fought in Videodrome."

TRANCER II

This is also billed as a "cult classic". Who decides what is a "cult classic"? At any rate, this is another film which depicts part of the Monarch total mind-control. We will not take the space to cover indepth, but will touch on a few items here. The main character is McKnowlty which sounds a lot like MK Ultra. Is it a play on words? It could be.

A council like the Illuminati's with lifetime appointments is in the film.

The persons under control in Trancer II bear some resemblance to the Monarchs. Some of the language that is used is lifted from the language handlers use. "FOLLOW MY INSTRUCTIONS, SLEEP, SLEEP, SLEEP" a person is instructed. "RABBIT SPEAKING", "YOU BELONG IN A GREEN WORLD." The movie also has Freeze codes which are a color.

KRULL

This 1983 movie with Ken Marshall and Lysette Anthony is just one more example of hundreds of Hollywood movies which show some aspect of the Illuminati &/or their mind-control.

Krull is an island ruled by sorcery. A prince searches for a magic ornament to save his bride and their kingdom. The film has a poppy field, castles, an All-Seeing-Eye, armies of robots, Satan, and other features that a Monarch internal world will be set up with. A person can turn into a dog, pig or lion.

THE LITTLE PRINCESS

This Shirley Temple movie was just one of many Hollywood films used for programming. The princess has a nice "dream". Slaves are programmed to view their service in the real world as dreams, and their fantasy worlds in their internal mind as reality. The Princess has a scene with hot cross buns and ravens. This scene was used for programming. The Princess sits on a throne. There are fairies and a joker, which are used in programming. The father is said to be dead, but is not dead in this movie---thus creating the type of reversal that the programmers like to work into the minds of slaves. A rich genie helps the princess, and when she finds her Daddy, she wakes him up with a kiss and a song. The girl's name is Sarah, a name which appears within a number of Monarch system's as an alter name.

MISS UNIVERSE CONTEST

The broadcast of the 1995 Miss Universe Contest did a very unusual freeze-framing of the show while it was on. The screen was mysteriously freeze-framed 9 times, this was a trigger for Illuminati Mothers of Darkness alters. A Mother of Darkness type throne was sat upon by the winner of the contest. An all-seeing-eye was flashed up on the screen with the code A MAY ZING written on it. This is the type of puns that the programmers enjoy. The winners of the contest came from INDIA, CANADA, and the USA. The order and names of those countries have to do with end times programming. The names were a code to certain Mothers of Darkness systems. India wore a Mother of Darkness type garment. Canada wore black and white, and USA wore Red. Miss India gave another code during the interviews, "If someone wants to put monkey's on your back, if you stand up they get on your back."

THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE

In 1958, the author Richard Condon had his novel *The Manchurian Candidate* published which describes an American Army sergeant, who is captured and programmed to assassinate on the cue of a queen of diamonds of a deck of cards. Richard Condon's ability to think about the potential of behavior modification and hypnosis, had allowed him to stumble upon what had actually been going for over a decade.

Frank Sinatra bought the movie rights for this book, let the movie out briefly and then squelched the second release of the film.

Frank Sinatra has been a slave handler. He has handled Bob Hope's slaves, when Bob Hope has lent them to the Rat Pack (which consisted of Dean Martin, Frank, Sammy Davis, Jr. Peter Lawford & Joey Bishop). Frank Sinatra spends time with the Rockefellers and the Rothschilds. Both he and Dean Martin have handled slaves. Dean Martin was described by *The Hollywood Reporter* as a "hypnotically attractive, homegrown American monster." In Fritz's previous writings he has exposed how Peter Lawford & Sammy Davis, Jr. were satanists. Dean had the audacity to want to bring out a slave on his T.V. show on a lease in a tiger outfit. As mentioned previously, the sexual alters see themselves as kittens or cats and are given obedience training with the type of collar Dean wanted to bring them out on stage with on television. The television network stopped it.

As Frank Sinatra grew up, his parents always had money. His mother was a cigar-smoking cruel foul-mouth woman, who performed illegal abortions. She got caught once and had to face the penalty on Feb. 27, '39 in a Hudson Special Sessions Court. Frank's hero was Benjamin "Bugsy" Siegel, boss of Murder, Inc. About 30% of the dirty work for the Illuminati is carried out by the Mafia. The Illuminati have their own death squads which are superior to the Mafia, but individuals must approach one of the Illuminati councils for approval to assassinate. Often it is easier for someone in the Illuminati just to put out an unauthorized contract than to go through proper channels. Bugsy associated with all the Mafia heads including Charlie "Lucky" Luciano who controlled mind-controlled slave Marilyn Monroe.

Both Frank Sinatra and CIA mind-control programmer William Joseph Bryan, Jr. (aka William Joseph Bryon, and William Jenning Bryan III, etc.) were members of the Tommy Dorsey Band.

Bryan programmed people while he was with the Air Force as Chief of Medical Survival Training which was the Air Force's covert mind-control section. Later he opened up his own hypnotherapy Institute on Sunset Strip in Hollywood where he programmed some people in the Illuminati who are actors. He also was the person who programmed Sirhan Sirhan to be involved in the Robert Kennedy assassination. He also hypnotised Alvert Di Salvo. After Bryan died in spring, 1977, the CIA cleaned out all of his files including his home files. Bryan was fat, 6' 1 1/2", and a Satanic priest in the Old Roman Catholic church. This is same satanic church that William Schnoebelen was a Satanic priest in, before giving his life to Christ. (Bill Schnoebelen tells his own story in *Lucifer Dethroned*. Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1993.) Schnoebelen was offered a slave but turned down the opportunity to be a handler.

In William J. Bryan, Jr.'s book entitled *The Chosen One The Art of Jury Selection*, Bryan teaches how to use hypnosis on jury members to win one's case. On the back of the book he states about himself, "In addition Dr. Bryan served as an Electronics Engineer in the Navy in World War II, was Director of all Medical Survival Training for the United States Air Force, and a leading expert on brainwashing." William J. Bryan was the technical director for Frank Sinatra's movie The Manchurian Candidate. It was hoped that the movie would scare Americans into thinking that the enemy (the communists) was carrying out mind-control.

THE SIMPSON CARTOONS

There are episodes of the Simpsons which blatantly promote the Freemasons, the Illuminati and even show items of the Monarch mind-control such as "following the Yellow Brick Road." The episodes are quite revealing.

Aspects of Illuminati programming can also be seen in the movie "Spirits of the Dead", where spirit copies of one's abusers are placed into the slave, and the movie "Cat Girl", where a beautiful girl is turned into a killer beast.

Several movies have come out showing the concept of creating robotic people such as the

Barr, Vette Mittler, Marilyn Monroe, Loretta Lynn, Crystal Gayle and possibly Wayne Newton (a child singing protege, who never wrote a check for himself in his life). They also use lots of slave handlers such as Frank Sinatra, Peter Lawford, & Bob Hope. And occasionally the use programmers such as Anton LaVey, Jerry Lee Lewis.

Cisco, the co-author of this book, while in the Illuminati, was given repeated reason to believe that Elvis Presley was also a Multiple programmed by the Illuminati. We know that at times he went by code names, one which is publicly known was John Burrows. His group, called the Memphis Mafia, have talked about his ability to go into altered states of consciousness, even seem dead. Recently, another Illuminati slave, also stated that Elvis was an Illuminati slave. Cisco points out that Elvis' twin brother was dead at his birth, and that Elvis knew that this gave him double spiritual power (according to Illuminati beliefs). The Illuminati will often kill a twin, so that the other will get the power of two souls. From what we understand, Elvis Presley's handler/programmer was a Col. Tom Parker. Elvis belonged to a team of 4 Illuminati men. Elvis is publicly known to have studied yoga, numerology, drugs, and received some new age spiritual training in an academy overlooking Pasadena, CA. He was an active member in the Theosophical Society. After Elvis Presley supposedly died, the Sun International Corp. came out with an Elvis Presley album called Orion, with the winged-sun-disk on its cover. The winged-sun-disk is an important Egyptian magical symbol used by the OTO, Theosophical Society etc. Mae Boren Axton, known as the Grand Dame of Nashville, played a pivotal role in Elvis Presley's life. Elvis & the Beatles were chosen by the Illuminati to introduce rock music to the United States. There is no doubt about Elvis' and the Beatles' musical talent. Elvis' close friend Wayne Newton is highly suspected as also being a slave. Elvis worked with Burt Reynolds and Jerry Lee Lewis who also connect in with the Illuminati's mind-control operations. The authors are puzzled why Elvis' grave, which had millions of dollars spent on its security, has his name misspelled? We are also puzzled why Elvis, who repeatedly stated he wanted to be buried beside his mother, is buried beside his father, who he privately stated wasn't even his real father. Why has no one ever tried to collect insurance on Elvis' death? Once again, it seems, the front stories that the public hears are full of inconsistencies. We believe that some people in the Illuminati know the true story about Elvis Presley. For sure Elvis' mysterious mind-control programmer/handler Col. Tom Parker would know.

STAR TREK, THE NEXT GENERATION

The original series of Star Trek had lost money, but in September, 1987 a new series called Star Trek, The Next Generation was started with $1 million dollars budgeted for each of its 24 episodes. The episodes pushed the Illuminati's agenda in every show. People were being aroused to bombard Paramount with requests for a new Star Trek.

Bob Justman who worked with Roddenberry said, "When I left Star Trek in 1968 it was a disaster. It was a failure as far as the network was concerned." That is because it didn't make money. Hollywood tells us it makes these movies because they are what the public want and that they have to go where the money is--the closer truth is that Hollywood makes movies that push an agenda--Hollywood makes movies that Hollywood wants to make. And since Star Trek was part of the NWO's mind-control, the show and it successors had to go on.

How important is Star Trek? A witness has talked about Boeing workers sneaking off their jobs and hiding in the tunnels underneath the hugh Seattle Boeing plant so they could watch Star Trek shows. This enormous Boeing plant is used for rituals and mind-control. This Boeing building is enormous, for it is where they have assembly lines to build the hugh jets, like the 747s, 707s, etc. An extensive maze of tunnels lays underneath the main building, large enough to accommodate all the tens of thousands of workers on any shift.

It is interesting who was associated with the production of Star Trek: The Next Generation. Script writers for the Next Generation had a Star Trek Bible to write from. These script writers included such persons as Alan Adler, Dennis Putnam Bailey, three Grays, Debra McIntrye, Ronald Moore, Grant Rosenberg, Randee Russell, Bryan Stewart. These are common names within the Illuminati. Coca-cola, an Illuminati-run corporation, was one of the major advertisers for Star Trek, and the god-man Dalai Lama of Tibet, who is a Star Trek fan, visited the cast of Star Trek in 1988 in Hollywood and got his picture taken with members of the cast. Probert who worked with Star Trek productions also worked with Walt Disney's Imagineering subsidiary.

Here are some of the Star Trek scenes:

□ A Wizard of Oz head is shown on a show.

□ Data is a humanoid with an on-off switch who can store vast amounts of data. His memories can be so strong that personalities in those memories fight for control of Data. (See the episode aired 1/23/89).

□ Holodeck creations of people (humans who are mirror images) who are aware of themselves. This is a well-used concept for programming Monarch alters. The first episode with this aired 1/11/88 and got several awards--an Emmy Award, and an award from the George Foster Peabody Award board.

A few other items which will show the reader the occult agenda of Star Trek, the Next Generation and how it fits into the mind-control programming (dates that the show aired are in parenthesis): a Reptilian Race called Tellisians (10/12/87), a Cosmological Egg-from the cabalistic magical world view (10/26/87), a brain scanned by a probe (11/9/87), age regression, reverse aging and memory loss (2/8/88), android duels & a crystalline body (1/18/88), a race of computer operators (2/1/88), an ozone hole in the atmosphere kills a planet (2/15/88), a matriarchal oligarchy--shades of the Mother of Darkness's oligarchy (1/25/88), people who are only holographic projections (4/11/88), a cyberneticist & androids (2/13/89), doubles (mirror images) (4/3/89), half-human half-robot people (5/8/89), clones of people (5/22/89), a holodeck person who doesn't know his last name (6/19/89), Betazoids (11/13/89), and a drug which causes hysterical paranoia (7/17/89).

Colorado is the area where trauma-based alien-theme programming is carried out with a mock UFO. Gaston, one of the programmers in that area, is turning out top secret Monarchs with solometric systems. NORAD and Colorado Springs and several other Colorado locations are major headquarters for end-time call back programming. Interestingly, they have placed the Star Trek Fan Club in Colorado.

VIDEODROME

This recent movie portrays Monarch Mind Control and S&M. Mind-controlled slaves are frequently used to create S&M films. The Illuminati's S&M porn film industry has been booming for over 4 decades. (Compare the name Videodrome with Vidimax mentioned above.)

The porn films done of a particular Monarch slave who is used as a porn star will be coded according to the code name given to the star. Let's say they call the Star "Lily", then the porn movies will be cataloged Lily 1, Lily 2, Lily 3, etc.

This type of porn involves a great deal of real torture, humiliation, and actual deaths of people. This type of porn is portrayed in the Hollywood movie Videodrome.

The main character in Videodrome represents what a mind-controlled slave would see. The main character Max is told, "I want you to open up to me." He then feels intense pain and doubles up and falls down, and submits, "all right." Then he is ordered to "Give us channel 83." He then proceeds under the mind-control to kill two partners, who he has previously liked and with whom he has had no quarrels. He is further told, "You are an assassin for Videodrome. They can program you. They can make you do what they want."

Interestingly, the name of the brand of cigars smoked on the show are named Medicis. He is told, "To become the new flesh you must

1920's movie Golem, the 1966 movie Cyborg 2087, and the movie Frankenstein. According to Illuminati history, the Collins Illuminati bloodline did pre-20th century experiments to create a Frankenstein, and Mary Shelley's novel is actually secretly based on their research. The Rothschilds have carried out successful production of synthetic people this century. This is all in accord with the black magic goal of controlling bodies, whether live or dead. The 90 min. "Night of the Living Dead" expresses the satanic black magic goal to control bodies.

And if the Illuminati can't control their slaves, the final solution, if nothing else works, is to- as the CIA say- "terminate with extreme prejudice" (a.k.a "Executive Action"), like they did to Mary Pinchot Meyer on Oct. 13, 1964, Princess Grace Kelly & countless others.

E. TWINNING & BONDING

Two Sisters-of-Light (the level before Mothers-of-Darkness) will be placed before a many-faced mirror with intense lights and programmed to see each other as inseparable. They become twins, and are programmed to die if the other one dies. They are taught to be one in body, mind, and soul. They are bonded in many ways, including torturing each other, and sexual bonding. The trauma bonding that they undergo will consist of a. being put in life or death situations together, b. given programming scripts which intertwine & fill in to complete each other to make a whole, c. are placed in jobs that require total compliance with the programming in order to survive, d. are bonded together to other people.

The scripture "A house divided against itself cannot stand" (MT 12:25, MK 3:25) is used to program people to stay in line with what the team is doing.

High level four-person female teams and a four-person males team are programmed to work together after the Anti-Christ takes over. These types of teams form the male-female component of a larger 3-part team.

With the advent of advanced medical technology the Illuminati are now able to make quintriplets, implant the eggs in surrogates, and then switch the identical children during their lifetimes. This type of high level subterfuge is going on, and it makes the identities of some slaves complicated to say the least. Readers may want to get some of the articles Fritz has written about the clones, synthetic people, organic robotoids, and double look-alikes that the Rothschilds and the rest of the Illuminati families are engaged in creating. The twinning programming is very complex and detailed. Within the Rothschild bloodlines--the 5 family lines that began with Mayer Amschel's 5 sons going to 5 capitals- network/bond their female slaves together with Gennifer-Sally-Elsie-Sarah-Penelope programming. (The 6th son to finish the red schield hexagram is/was a bastard.) This is all part of a complex satanic world mind that is being created. This is the Adam Kadmon. Twins (& teams) claim to be telepathic with each other, and observations of slaves, has tended to support that claim. Many therapists have failed to take the twinning part of the programming into account. Twins must be deprogrammed together for best results, if one is left out they may try to impede therapy.

F. PEER PRESSURE

At the beginning of the programming, the Programmers are dealing with a small infant who is unable to verbalize to others about their abuse. They are further frightened in every way, and tortured, and given behavior modification to teach them to remain silent. Even without all these strong threats which always exist, the child would not capable of fighting back. The child will naturally think this is the way the world is, and of course, the programmers are reinforcing the idea that this is the heritage or path that the child is supposed to be following. The dissociative parts of the child do not fully comprehend that being sexually assaulted daily by their father is wrong. They are being misled by their abuser that it is correct, that that is their purpose in life. The child is never given a chance to realize that it has a right to refuse. It is conditioned to obedience. The abuse seems to be just another part of things that belong to the world of adults. For children, adults do many things beyond comprehension, at times ridiculous. And they seem to need no reason to do these things, except for the fact that they are adults. Other adults that come and go are also participants in the abuse, so the child doesn't grasp that he can be defended by other adults. The programmers are always doing unexpected things to the child, so the child quits trying to figure life out, and fatalistically complies with what it is expected to do. Children all over the world grow up in an adult world, and are at the mercy of adults.

As the alters begin to experience life, they are generally in situations where the attitudes of the people around them, reinforce their programming.

Boys are told by society in general to take their lumps in life "like a man". They are taught to fight their own battles, and not to whine. Few boys risk the shame that comes from talking about their abuse. Society is not kind to "whiners". Females are permitted to show emotions, without the social sanctions levied on males.

If the child victim of mind-control comes from a family where only one of the parents is a participant in the abuse, then what often happens is that the clean parent, will never even discuss abuse issues with their child. Few adults ever really discuss abuse issues with children. The child is generally isolated from their peers as much as possible by the child's handler's and programmers. They place other children that belong to the cult in the child's life to report on what the child is doing.

When the child victim begins to "stretch their wings" so to speak and meet other people, there are very few people that will threaten the control of the programmers. When the slave does find a good therapist to make friends with, this friendship will trigger all kinds of programming, unresolved issues around adults, trust, etc. The slave feels double-binded. If they move toward health and freedom, it creates many more problems than staying in slavery. They need to see the bigger picture. They need to be given something positive to live for outside of the slavery. Psychiatrists are not permitted by their boards to get personally involved in their clients lives. Traditional therapy doesn't address some of the issues that will stop the slave from wanting to gain freedom.

Internal peer pressure from multitudes of programmed loyal deeper alters, and external peer pressure from cult children the victim is bonded to, begins to exert an overpowering force for the child to stay on the beaten path. Few people ever buck the system, and go against peer pressure. Someone as hurt and docile as a slave is going to want acceptance, and is not likely going to want to step out of line with society and their peers. Until society admits that there is a problem with mind-control, it will be a dangerous thing socially for a child slave to admit to what the victim is actually experiencing every day.

Are there any HAGABARDS or MOSES?

Now the reader has the FORMULA for the mind control. Now what?

These programmed multiples continue to eat away at the moral fiber every one of America's Institutions like an army of termites. On the outside the structures still look strong, but they are being readied to collapse, for the reign of the Illuminati's AntiChrist.

There is a series of books called the Illuminati books which are a fictional account of how the Illuminati run the world. In the novels, the Illuminati run essentially everything--which is actually what is happening. The hero, Hagabard fights against this ancient conspiracy.

Who isn't familiar with the Biblical example of the elite ruler, who leaves his place of royalty to lead a nation in slavery to freedom? this hero's name is Moses. He also frees the people spiritually from the spiritual bonds of their hermetic magical culture. If there are any Hagabards or Moses' or Aarons out there, it is time to buck this World System. "LET OUR PEOPLE GO. LET OUR CHILDREN GO."

Thus saith the LORD, Let my people go, that they may serve Me. (EX 8:1b)

CASTRO'S HUMAN WAVE

Newsweek

September 5, 1994 $2.95

Eeeeeeek!

Disney's Dilemma

Can the Kingdom Keep Its Magic?

When this issue came out, Fritz Springmeier was busy exposing Bo Gritz, and this Newsweek had an article on Bo Gritz. The intelligence agencies send a high percentage of their messages in the newspapers and magazines via codes in media articles and pictures. Could this be a coded message, Can the Monarch mind-cont keep from being exposed? Can Disney programm Keep Its Magic?

September 5, 94
Holgate Branch Library
7905 S.E. HOLGATE BLVD.
PORTLAND, OREGON 97206

#BXBCMDG***CAR-RT-SORT C053
#0004039692600013#JE96 N1-B
HOLGATE BR LIBRARY 003494
7905 SE HOLGATE P00799J
PORTLAND OR 97206-3367

Appendix 1
Programmers

May each & every person listed get right w/ YHWH God before they die.

Short LIST of some addresses of abusers who are part of the NETWORK aka NEW WORLD ORDER. Addresses may not be current but are my last address for them. This information may have mistakes, this is only to display to readers that the veil of secrecy is no longer holding up for the Mind Control Programmers.

AC/DC satanic Rock Band, 11 Leonminster Rd., Morden, Surrey SM4, England
Ade, Henry, CIA & drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 1663 County Rd. 13, Waterloo, IN 46793
Aga Khan IV, H.H. Prince Karim, Satanist & leader of Ismaili Muslims, Aiglemont, 60270 Gouvieux, France
Alabama Country Music group, satanists and Monarch slave handlers, Box 529, Ft. Payne, AL 35967
Baily, John, slave abuser, 1525 Pine St., Office 10, Redding, CA 96001
Barnes, Don, slave abuser & in co. sherriff office, 7309 Grove Rd., Frederick, MD 21701 301-694-2152; 1513 Cedarcrest Ln, Frederick, MD 21702 301-663-8316
Benson, Ezra Taft, satanist/leader of LDS church, Church of Jesus Christ, Administration Bldg., 47 E. S. Temple, Salt Lake City, UT 84415
Bowers, Wilbur D., Ipsimus in Illum. & Monarch programmer & CIA drug dealer, 1735 NE 11th, Bend, OR 97701 ph. 503-EV2-5162 (EV for "evergreen")
Brown, Edmund G. (Jerry), Jr., Illum. satanist & CA politician & slave abuser, 700 S. Flower St., #600, Los Angeles, CA 90017 (phns 415-928-6346, 415-928-5073)
Brown, Charlie, Air Force Intell. & murderer & Monarch slave abuser, Box 8, Greenbrier, TN
Bundy, McGeorge, Illum., 133 East 18th St., NY, NY 10021 Bus. 212-371-3200
Byrd, Robert C., Satanist and mind-control programmer & Sen. from W.VA, 311 Senate Hart Office Bldg., Washington, D.C. 20501
Clinton, Hillary, Illuminati witch & mind-control slave handler, (address besides White House) Rose Law Firm, 120 E. 4th St., Little Rock, Ark. 72201
Cochran, Hank, CIA drug kingpin, Hendersonville, TN, 615-824-7011
Cox, Wayne, Satanic High Priest & Monarch handler & dangerous serial killer, Rt. 1, Box 84, Chatham, LA 71226
Danté, Michael (Michael Vitti), Monarch slave abuser and porn maker, 3485 Canon Drive, Beverly Hills, CA 90212 218-858-9425; Orange, CA 92665, 714637-0590
Day, Brad, slave abuser & coke pusher, 5300 Las Pablanos NW, Albuquerque, NM 87107
Drake, Jim (and son), slave abuser & porn/drug dist., 11173 N. Kendall Dr. #F105, Miami, FL 33176
Fonda, Peter, RR #38, Livingston, MT 59047
Fonda, Jane, c/o Fonda Films, P.O. Box 1198, Santa Monica, CA 90406
Gavoruhk, John, Police chief working for Illum. protects Monarch programmers/handlers, 121 Partridge Circle, Wintersprings, FL 32708 305-699-0618
Grace, J. Peter, business leader & illuminati, CCAGW, 1301 Connecticut Ave., NW, #400, Washington, DC 20036
Grateful Dead satanic cult rock band and Illuminati cocaine distributors, P.O. Box 1566, Main Office St., Montclair, NJ 07043
Greene, Jack, CIA & white slavery & Monarch slave abuser & country entertainer, Box 485A Goodlettsville, TN 615-859-3284
Haggard, Merle, slave abuser & country singer, P.O. Box 536, Palo Cedro, CA, 96073
Hestbeck, Vaugn, Monarch slave abuser & danish cocaine distr., 515 Rhapsody Paquet Cruises, 1007 N. American Way, Miami, FL 33176
Hope, Bob, slave owner and slave handler w/ intelligence agencies, 3808 Riverside Dr., Burbank, CA 91505
Houston, Alex, satanist & Monarch programmer & CIA, 1155 Ridge Hill Rd., Goodlettsville, TN 37072 615-859-3543
Hummell, Ed, Monarch programmer, Cattleman's Steak & Seafood Co., 10260 S.W. Nimbus Ave. Suite M-3, Tigard, OR 97223 503-620-7824 (also Las Vegas?)
Humperdink, Englebert, Castro Valley, CA 94546 510-733-6085
King Juan Carlos I, King of Spain and Illuminati, Palacio de la Zarzuela, Madrid, Spain
KISS satanic rock band, 6363 Sunset Blvd., #417, Los Angeles, CA 90028
Kissinger, Henry, Illuminati & P2 Freemason, 1800 K. St., NW, #400, Washington, D.C. 20006
Kreskin, occultist, P.O. Box 1383, West Caldwell, NJ 07006
Lang, Velton, white slavery & drug running, 264 Bluegrass Dr., Hendersonville, TN 37075 615-824-6076 (also at Twitty City 615-822-3210)
Lewis, Jerry Lee, Monarch slave programmer & musician, P.O. Box 3864, Memphis, TN 37173; 3324 Lynchburg St. Memphis, TN 38134 901-388-1135
MacLaine, Shirley, actress/author/New Age occultist, 8899 Beverly Blvd., Los Angeles, CA 90048
Madonna, satanist & monarch slave, 75 Rockefeller Plaza, New York, NY 10019
Manson, Charles, satanist & monarch slave and monarch slave handler, Corcoran Prison, 1002 Diary Ave., Corcoran, CA 93212
Martin, Diane, CIA drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 45-641 F. Apapane St., Keneoke, HA 96744
McKee, Lloyd, drug dealer & Monarch slave abuser, 6501 Meoqui, Albuquerque, NM, 87107; 3000 Colonnade Ct. NW, Albuquerque, NM 87107 505-345-4194
McQuinn, Mike, slave handler & money launderer, Miami, FL 305-386-1512 & 305-251-5320
Meadows, Hal, dir. of the CIA near death mind-control programming center, Swiss Villa Ampetheater, Box 27, Lampe, MO 65681
Merritt, Jeff, CIA drug runner & slave abuser, St. Thomas, US Virgin Islands, 809-744-4000
Mitterrand, François Maurice Marie, Illuminati & close friend to Rothschilds & Pres. of France, Palais de l'Elysée, 55-57 rue du Faubourg Saint-Honoré, 75008 Paris, France
Nelson, Willie, singer & monarch slave handler, P.O. Box 33280, Austin, TX 78764
Nunn, Sam, Illuminati, 303 Senate Dirksen Office Bldg., Washington, D.C. 20510
O'Brien, Earl, CIA Monarch abuser, 12614 Lakeshore, Grand Haven, MI 49417
Overstreet, Tommy, CIA & white slavery, P.O. Box 41103, Nashville, TN 37204
Parton, Dolly, satanist, Crockett Road, Rt. #1, Brentwood, TN 37027
Pope John Paul II (aka Karol Wojtyla), Illuminati & Freemason, Apostolic Palace, Vatican City
Pride, Charley, slave abuser & white slavery & country singer & CIA, c/o Chardon Inc., 3198 Royal Ln., #204, Dallas, TX 75229
Prophet, Ronnie, Satanist & Monarch slave runner, 1030 17th Ave. N., Nashville, TN 37208 615-321-0539
Queen Beatrix (Wilhelmina Armagard), Illuminati & Qn. of the Netherlands, Binnen Huf 19, The Hague 2513 AA, The Netherlands
Reynolds, Dr. Herbert H., Illuminati & Univ. CEO, Baylor Univ., Waco, TX 76798; 336 Guittard Ave. Waco, TX 76706 817-753-4011
Riley, Ken, CIA & Neo-nazi & Loretta Lynn's handler/road manager, Rt. 3, Rosebrook Ct., Gallatin, TN 37066
Rockefeller, Winthrop, Illuminati kingpin & porn dealer, Winrock Farms, Morrilton, AR 72110 501-727-5481
Rorick, David (aka Dave Roe), satanist & white slavery, 1211 Mallard, Franklin, TN, 37064
Rose, Ivan, CIA & White slavery & Monarch abuser, RR 2, Mt. Pleasant Rd., Spartansburg, PA 16434 814-694-2496
Ryan, Dr. Michael N., one of Illum.'s coverup doctor who patches up slaves, 353 New Shackle Is. Rd., Hendersonville, TN 37075, 615-824-8475, 615-824-8496
Smith, Dan, car & drug dealer & slave abuser, P.O. Box 262, New Martinsville, W. VA 26155
Stevens, Jim, Monarch slave abuser & drug runner, 1726 N. Magnolia, Ocala, FL 32670 904-622-1966 904-622-2139
Tanis, Bob, CIA & Air Force Intell., Monarch abuser & Mafia & pornographer, 7278 N. Lakeshore, West Olive, MI 49460
Train, Russell, Club of Rome, 1803 Kalorma Sq., Washington, D.C., 20008-4021 202-332-5800
Trump, Donald, Illuminati, 725 Fifth Ave. New York, NY 10022
Vanderpool, Darcy, Monarch programmer, 2620 Regatta Dr. #-116, Las Vegas, NV 891 702-242-4222
Walker, Jimmy, Monarch slave abuser/pornographer, 904 Carswell Waycroos, GA 31501 912-285-5594
Warlock, Billy, actor, 9200 Sunset Blvd., #625, Los Angeles, CA 90069
Westberry, Kent, songwriter, satanist, & white slavery, 359 Lee Road, CottonTown, TN 37048
• some of THE ILLUMINATI'S COMPANIES>>>>> Air America, CIA front, works out of Tulsa; Nederland, TX; Berea, OH, & Jackson, MS. The Tulsa addresss is 1419 S. 135th East Ave., Tulsa, OK 74108-4131 918-234-3041
Cargill, Inc., large grain cartell run by Illum., P.O. Box 9300, 15407 McGinty Rd, Minnetonka, MN 55440
Dungeon Master, Desmodus Inc., hard gay porn, s & m publisher, Box 11314, San Francisco, CA 94101
Eli Lilly & Co., Illuminati drug co., Lilly Corporate Center, Indianapolis, IN 46285
Machinery International, Inc., CIA front, 302 Fall Cr Dr., Richardson, TX 75080 214-234-2969
Rothschild Pediatric Group, 4770 S. I 10 Service Rd., Metairie, LA 70001 504-887-1133
Rothschild Pediatric Group, 1970 Ormond Blvd., Destrehan, LA 70047 504-764-6036
Southern Air Transport, CIA front, 6400 N.W. 36th, Miami, FL 33166
Summit Aviation, CIA front, Summit Airport, Middletown, Delaware, 19709 302-834-5400

APPENDIX 1. The PROGRAMMERS

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

For any recipe you need a cook. So who has been cooking up the RECIPE for making Monarch Slaves? The authors felt that after reading the recipe, that some readers would be interested in learning about the master chefs who make human robots using trauma-based mind-control.

According to an ex-Programmer, the Programmers for decades have been treated like royalty whenever they step foot onto a military base, or enter a hospital that carries out mind-control. They are always expected. Generally, the commanding general on a base would met them and escort the programmer in a limo. If the base commander couldn't make it, an important physician might take his place. The programmers have keys, and codes to get into special areas.

After many thousands of Americans died in WW II fighting Nazism, our government's intelligence agencies (incl. the military intelligence groups) in cooperation with the Illuminati and its people in the Vatican, smuggled 10,000 of the worst Nazi-fascist war criminals into this country. This is on public record now. Part of this was under Operation Paperclip. The DoD (Dept. of Defense) also worked at smuggling Nazi mind-control programmers under Project 63. Every W.W. II veteran who fought ought to be angry that **after** putting his life on the line for "democracy" and freedom, and supposedly defeating the Nazis, our government brought in men like the S.S.'s infamous butcher Dr. Joseph Mengele to program American children with trauma-based mind-control like he had in the concentration camps.

In fact, Fritz has worked with an Illuminati victim of Joseph Mengele, who was programmed in Germany in a concentration camp, and then smuggled to the U.S. via Canada by Jesuits working with the Illuminati. Once in the U.S., this person continued to be programmed by Mengele, who went by many names including Dr. Green. He is described in detail in part d. of this Appendix.

We must begin to get beyond the fronts and covers that the programmers have for the world.

Jewish professor Ernst Bergmann, of the infamous Leipzig University, is also surprisingly an strong advocate of Nazism. His main book is *A National Socialist Philosophy of Culture*. He writes, "A new type of mankind is being developed." He is mentioned here so that people stop looking at labels, and start looking at what is really going on.

One of the principle goals of Nazism was to remake mankind. The Ahnerbe of the Nazis was set up to do genetic research and experiments. And one element of that was to be able to create the prefect obedient mind-controlled slave.

A first glance at the lies told us by our press will give one the impression Nazism was anti-communist, nationalistic, & Christian. However, a close look at Hitler and today's Nazi leadership, will reveal that Nazism is Socialism (or Marxism, exactly what communism is about) and that Nazism is not nationalistic, but international in its view. Further, it is Satanic and based on the Nordic mystery beliefs (Odin, Thor, etc.). It is not based on Christianity. The Vril Society was the mother of the Nazi party. "Vril" means the Light Force. What Light force? Lucifer the light bearer's light force. The true nature of Nazism is being concealed.

When Hitler came to plan, he was placed into power in accordance with the Illuminati plan which was spelled out in writing. This plan said, "Nowadays if any state raise a protest against us it is only pro forma (provided in advance) at our discretion and by our direction, for their anti-semitism is indispensable to us for the management of our lesser brethren." Illuminati international bankers brought Hitler to power, and Illuminati kingpins like Rockefeller, Onassis and the King of Sweden traded with the Nazis. Spain stayed neutral during the war to serve as a conduit of supplies to keep Hitler's war going.

Hitler was a participant in rituals where human sacrifices were carried out. He himself killed a number of men by pulling their hearts out of their bodies while they were alive. One Monarch slave remembers his father, who was powerful in the Illuminati, describing how Hitler killed a man in front of him by pulling his heart out. Some of Hitler's key advisors and key men were in the Illuminati. There are also lots of tie ins with the OTO, the Vril Society, the Thule Society, the Society of Green Men. The head of the Tibetan Monks that Hitler imported to help him lead Germany was known as The Man with the Green Glove. The monks were posted in Berlin, Munich, and Nuremberg.

By the way, the NWO is still using Tibetan Monks. Have you ever watched how much travel the Dalai Lama gets in? And did you notice that Tibetan Monks were imported in the Bakaa Valley Colorado by a U.N. leader? The Mishpuka (Jewish Mafia) leader Pritzker who lives in seclusion on Haulon Rd., Libertyville, IL 60048 on a 1300 acre piece of expensive real estate, had the Dalai Lama consecrate a shrine for him. Haulon Rd. has two access points, a northern and a southern. (The road was bought by Pritzker and is guarded. Pritzker has been active in Chicago for the Mishpuka. He is reported to have spent millions renovating his house, where for some reason, dead bodies keep showing up on its estate grounds.)

Our political leaders have been aware that Nazi Mind-control experts were imported after the war. For instance, some of the Nazi war criminals smuggled in became some of Richard Nixon's personal friends. Even the Mossad were fully aware that thousands upon thousands of the worst monsters that the world has known were smuggled into the U.S. for the Illuminati by the Vatican, the Intelligence Agencies, and other groups.

The Rothschilds and Nelson Rockefeller forced the Jewish Zionist leadership in Israel to keep silent about the Nazis who were smuggled into the U.S. after W.W. II. In return for Israel's silence and the Mossad's silence about the thousands of high level satanic Nazis who were brought into the U.S., the nation of Israel was allowed. They made a deal, according to high level insiders. Nelson Rockefeller had enormous power in South America. In June 1945, when the U.N. was being set up at San Francisco, Nelson Rockefeller attended. While Nelson Rockefeller was there, he busied himself with directing the South American delegates. Rockefeller's bloc of 19 Latin American countries had more U.N. votes than Europe's nine members. Rockefeller was a key person, if the Zionist's wanted the U.N. to vote so that the nation of Israel could be established.

The Zionist leadership used what they thought was blackmail, if you don't let Israel be established we will expose how you are smuggling nazi war criminals into the U.S. Of course, the Illuminati wanted Israel to be created--so those in the Zionist leadership who knew the bigger plans of the Illuminati, knew that the Illuminati-run CIA wasn't giving up anything. If anyone asks why the Mossad didn't expose MI-6 and the CIA's extensive hiring of Nazi war criminals, they say today that they were using it for blackmail to get Israel what it needed.

Those in the know, realize that is just an excuse. The Mossad has hired its own share of Nazi criminals, and at some point learned mind-control programming from the CIA, perhaps even from Mengele (Dr. Green).

The Nazis used Croats and White Russians to carry out some of their genocide policies. Not all of the monsters of W.W. II were German, many were White Russian collaborators. Essentially every White Russian War Criminal from W.W. II that survived the war was placed on one NATO payroll or another. The U.S. intelligence even hired German SS administrators. Why? Because U.S. intelligence is controlled by the Illuminati.

The White Russian Nazis were settled in the NY-NJ area, especially in South River, NJ. One of the worst monsters was Stankievich who ended up living in Richmond Hills and working for the CIA. He got a job working for Radio Liberty in NY! Isn't that ironic that "Radio Liberty" has hired such monsters. Does our government put out propaganda or is it really the champion of freedom that it portrays itself to be?

The Nazi mayor of Minsk was brought over by the CIA and given a job at the N.Y. Library of running the Slavic desk. One of the chief White Russian war criminals, the Vor Kommando Moskau chief recruiter was made head over a NY county medical society. John Foster Dulles, brother of the director of the CIA, was trustee of the Rockefeller Foundation. The Rockefeller Foundation was a participant in Nazi mind control research done by Mengele and others for the Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute in Berlin. After the war, John Foster Dulles helped smuggle Nazis into this country, including those who were Illuminati Mind-control experts. Bill Casey, later director of the CIA, was also busy helping bring in Nazi war criminals after the war. He served on the International Rescue Committee in NY which he used to bring Nazis into New York. Prior to the war jewish German scientists were smuggled into New York through the Arnold & Constable Store, which housed the ADL on the top floor.

The South American countries, especially Argentina, ruled by the Perons, was connected to both the Illuminati in Germany and the Illuminati in the states. Many germans went to Argentina, and they simply continued doing what they had done in the past. Satanism working under the veil of Nazism was very strong in Argentina where many of the German Illuminati leaders moved after the war. Another place that the Germans loved to move to was Oregon, especially Portland, OR.

The head of Hitler's intelligence was the brilliant Reinhard Gehlen who worked for the CIA after the war. He is Illuminati. His brother was Doc Winters who lived in Pullach after the war. Mengele, (the Dr. Black of Monarch Programming, who was an Illuminati Grand Master himself) would occasionally visit Doc Winter's Pullach residence.

To renovate the image of Nazi criminals, they became Anti-communist crusaders. A group of fascists from Asia and Europe were taken by U.S. Intelligence and molded into the WACL (World Anti-Communist League). And we of the sheppel (sheep) were given more Hegalian dialectics.

Those of us who still care about humanity's freedom, and that human spirit not to be broken by the elite's total mind control, have got to get beyond labels, and the media's propaganda, and the false fronts.

OUTLINE of Appendix 1.
a. Introductory remarks
b. Understanding the programmers
c. A list of known programmers
d. Dr. Green
e. Dr. White
f. The AntiChrist as a Master Programmer

• Understanding the PROGRAMMERS

Many men have contributed to the research of trauma-based mind control. The men who learned how to torture during the ancient Babylonian days, during the Roman days and during the Medieval days passed their secrets to the rulers of the secret Mystery Religions. Some of the 13 Illuminati bloodlines trace their history back to the ancient times of Babylon.

Because the programmers are driven by the spirit-world, they are very jealous and competitive towards each other. It is a dog-eat-dog world amongst them. The demonic forces within in them are in competition too. Yes, the programmers have had their friction, their jealousies & power struggles with each other. Some of these inner battles have been fought with and over their mind-controlled slaves. When two programmers work on a single slave, they might both put in their own secret back doors to insure that the slave remains loyal to himself rather than other programmer.

There has also been ongoing tension between the half-blooded & full blooded Illuminati programmers.

Because each of the various programming centers specializes in perhaps a dozen types of programming, programmers go to different programming centers. The props for the scripts are often kept at the programming centers. The programmers will dress according to the script they are giving the victims, which might mean they may be dressed as the Wizard of Oz, a Nazi, a doctor in a white coat, a white rabbit costume, a corrigan sweater as Mr. Rogers, or in the nude.

One of the most cruelest evil geniuses in recent times was Dr. Mengele. Dr. Mengele used 3,000 twins during the time of 1943-1944 for research. Most of these twins died. The twins were chosen out of the vast numbers of people who were brought in to the German concentration camps. By the time W.W. II ended, Mengele knew a great deal about how to torture children in order to get them to bond totally with him. Even today some of the survivors of his horrible experiments believe that Mengele loved children. They love him as their father. Mengele also developed the ability to create artificial twinning between two people. Mengele carried his violin with him when he came onto military bases. His violin hid his color bands and probes for color programming.

Other men worked with Dr. Mengele and soon became programmers in their own right. Dr. Cameron of Canada became a Monarch mind-controlled slave programmer known as Dr. White. Another programmer who was not a full blooded generational Satanist was Gog known as Dr. Blue. Heinrich Mueller is known as Dr. Blue. Dr. Blue lived in the northwest area and has two sons--their programming and cult nicknames are Teddy Bear (Theodore) and Robin Hood (Michael). Two programmers known successively as Dr. Black are L.W. and W.B. A protege of L. W. is Ed Hummel who works in states such as Texas and Oregon. Ed was originally from Texas, and W. and B. were originally from Oklahoma before they began working in the Northwest. Two of the most ruthless programmers on the West coast are Jerry Lee Lewis and Michael Aquino. These two men are as cold blooded as they come, ranking right beside Mengele in their ability to torture. Michael Aquino (DOB 10/16/46, 2430 Leavenworth St., San Francisco, plus other addresses), because he was in military intelligence, was in a position to pass on his diabolical programming abilities to dozens of military officers. His wife works with him, and her name is Lilith Sinclair (DOB 4/21/42). Michael Aquino has travelled all over the U.S. doing programming. Michael Aquino used Cathy O'Brien as the star victim in his training video which teaches military officers how to create Monarch mind-controlled slaves. One of the old time programmers (early 1950s-80's) who worked as a psychiatrist in southern California went by the programming name of Sid.

The principle Illuminati programmers were known as Dr. Black, Dr. White, Dr. Green, and Dr. Blue. They oversaw the training of thousands of part-time programmers.

The better programmers are able to get into the mind of the victim much like Colombo (Peter Falk), who is, by the way, in his personal life part of this all.

The reader needs to understand that a victim who is given the Monarch mind-control may have a number of programmers, but the slave will be trained to only respond to the voices of a limited number of users. If someone tries to use a slave and has the wrong voice, it could trigger suicide programming. A human robot may have alters which can rescue the body from a suicide alter, but the message will be clear to the mind-controlled slave that it should stay away from non-approved users or face possible suicide.

We have now entered an era where second and third generation robotic mind controlled slaves are programming. The programmed are now doing much if not most of the programming. This means many of the programmers are men with MPD. Some programmers are hard-core military men who see any type of "discipline" or "training" as good if the end product produces better obeying soldiers. These hard-core military men have lost any proper boundaries on what is O.K. for training. This explains why the whole apparatus to create mind-controlled slaves is turning out new slaves at an alarming rate. The small number of victims who are painstakingly saved by de-programming and therapy is slight compared to the number of new slaves being created. Over two million Americans have been programmed by trauma-based mind control since 1947, & the CIA admitted its Mind Control publicly in 1970, and yet the existence of the mind-control is still secret to the general public.

Doctors such as Dr. Gaefsky, at the Bethesada Naval Hospital and Dr. Beecher at Harvard, under the auspices of the CIA worked to perfect the use of drugs to mind-control people. Dr. Jensen, was the CIA programmer who programmed Candy Jones (birth name Jessica Wilcox, and CIA alias Arlene Grant), the famous sex object of males during W.W. II. Candy Jones was a Monarch carrier pigeon (courier) for the CIA. Candy Jones received some of her programming at The Farm which is the CIA's Camp Peary. Dr. William Jennings Bryan also helped the CIA in programming. Naval Psychologist Lt. Comdr. Thomas Narut contributed his ideas on how to develop mind-controlled assassins. Some of the assembly-line Delta assassination teams are using programming techniques based on Narut's programming research. A Dr. James Monroe also worked for the CIA in Mind Control programming. READERS ARE ASKED TO REMEMBER THAT SOMETIMES SEVERAL PEOPLE MAY HAVE THE SAME NAME. Disclaimer: The readers are asked to check these people/names out for themselves before drawing any final conclusions, maybe the leopard has changed his spots.

MONARCH MIND CONTROL PROGRAMMERS

Morse Allen
Lt. Col. John Alexander
Richard Dabney Anderson
Michael Aquino (program cover name Malcolm, also known to some children as Mickey, Betty Ford is his mother, Illum. bloodline, married to Lilith Sinclair)
Astor
Armstrong
Bill Bennett
Wilbur Bowers (program cover name Billy Boy, a Rothschild)
Dr. William Jennings Bryan
Burcham
Burnell-Hightower
Sen. Robert C. Byrd
Dr. D. Ewen Cameron (program cover name Dr. White)
Sue Carper
Joe Circo
Mark Circo
Wayne Cox
Dr. Bernard Diamond
Michael Delaney (prog. covr name Robin Hood)
Russell G. Frazier
Gaston
Beth George (a Rothschild)
Clair George
Dr. Sydney Gottlieb
Col. Wilson Green
John Gunter (program cover name Little John)
Haggin
Harrick in Denver, Co.
Col. Height (sp.?)
Lawrence Hinkle
Alex Houston
Ed Hummel
Dr. Harris Isbell
Dr. Jensen
Johnson
Steve Kilgore
Kris Kristopherson
Helga LaRouche
Hank Levine
Jerry Lee Lewis
Dr. John Lilly
Col. Manassah
Irby Mandrell
Hal Meadows
Dr. Meiers (program cover name The Jolly Green Giant)
Seward Prosser Mellon (program cover name Governor)
Dr. Josef Mengele (program cover name Dr. Green)
Dr. Joseph A. Meyer
Ted V. Mikels
Dr. James Monroe
Heinrich Mueller (program cover name Dr. Blue)
Theodore son of Heinrich Mueller (program cover name Teddy Bear)
Nathan
Lt. Comdr. Thomas Narut
Dr. Martin T. Orange
Owens
Col. Tom Parker

Patterson
Pete Peterson
Ken Riley
Rockefeller
David Long Rothschild
Guy de Rothschild
Savor
Alden Sears
Dr. Star
Maj. Strange
Strong
Suttenfuss
Col. Taylor
Leo Taylor
Darcy Vanderpool
Weir
Kent Westberry
Leo Wheeler (program cover name Dr. Black, a Collins)
Robert Whitlow
Harold Wolff

◘ SOURCES: *Fritz Springmeier's Newsletters* Oct. 15, 1993; Dec. 1, '93; Feb, '94; Jan., 1995; March-April, 1995; *"Perpetrators"* (Monograph), 1993 by Cathy O'Brien, *Fritz Springmeier's own list of people from Survivors, In Search For the Manchurian Candidate*

COUNTRY MUSIC INDUSTRY PERPETRATORS involved and knowledgeable of Monarch Mind Control

(Most are involved with the CIA's drug running network.)

Henry Ade
Alabama band
Atlanta
Bandana
Lynn Anderson
Jerry Barlow
Boxcar Willie
Ray Burdette
Glen Campbell
Ace Canon
Dee Clark
Roy Clark
David Allen Coe
Pat Corn
Helen Cornelious
Wayne Cox
Dave DeBolt
Penny Dehaven
Charlie Dick
The Drifters
Roy Drusky
Narvel Felts
The Four Guys
Randy and Rudy Gatlin
Jim Glaser
Vern Gosdin
Jack Greene
Merle Haggard
Alex Houston (and Elmer)
Englebert Humperdink
Waylon Jennings
George Jones
The Judds
Merle Kilgore
Buddy Killen
Velton Lang
Hank Levine
Jerry Lee Lewis
Ernest Ray Lynn
Ronnie Lutric
Jack MacFadden
Reggie Maclaughlin
Brent Magor
Marty Martell
George Moffet
Lorrie Morgan
Bonnie Nelson
Willie Nelson
Oakridge Boys
Merril Osmund
Tommy Overstreet
Jerry and Arlene Petty
Ray Pillow
Charlie Pride
Ronnie Prophet
Jeannie Pruett
Giles Reeves
Dave Roe (Rorick)
Dave Roland (and Sugar)
TG Sheppard
Hank Snow
Ronnie Stoneman
Jimmy Sturr
Jimmy Swaggart
Mel Tillis
Buck Trent
Leroy VanDyke
Jim Vest
Mack Vickory
Billy Walker
Charlie Walker
Jim Webb
Dottie West
Shelly West
Kent Westberry
Bobby Whitton

The Wright Brothers

Michael McArthur, a recent convert from Satanism who helped abduct children provided first hand testimony that the following are involved in abductions of children:
"Chucky" (aka "Mike", aka "Peters") --FBI hit man in Div. 5 of FBI, involved also with Inslaw Case
Nichol Harrah --FBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice
Linda Krieg--Satanist working for FBI
Ken Lanning--FBI agent who abducts children for sacrifice while claiming SRA doesn't exist
Nick O'Hara--FBI hit man, satanist, who has covered FBI child kidnapping by murdering witnesses
Kepe Richardson--CIA agent who abducts children for sacrifice

In addition to all this, the following are a few of the CIA people who are both SLAVE HANDLERS and DRUG DEALERS, who haven't gotten their names mentioned yet.
Pat Bowlin
George Bush & son
Sue Carper (not known if she deals drugs). She does dir. CIA operations and the Norwegian Caribbean Lines.
Hank Cochran, a drug overlord
Alan Dulles
Diane Martin of Hawaii
Irby Mandrell who controls other family members who are slaves such as Barbara, Louise, & Iriene.
Jim Maynard, CIA covert ops Belize
Jeff Meritt, St. Thomas, U.S. Virgin Is.
Carl Misel
Jim Mitchell
Earl O'Brien
Linda Scale
Bob Tannis w/ Air Force Intell. in MI

The Temple of Set. The Temple of Set (The Temple of Power) is built upon mind-control. Since most of the members are either victims of mind-control or perpetrators or both, it would be productive to give the membership of this organization. Dr. Flowers, the Grand Master of the Order of the Trapezoid, may well be a programmer. In the least he is a slave handler. Some Total Mind-controlled slaves will have Order of the Trapezoid things internally. If they do, the therapist should recognize that this is Temple of Set (Power) programming.

The membership of the Church of Set has been a closely guarded secret. Here it is.

A few words of explanation are in order. Most of the names in the list are the actual names of people, but some people joined the Temple of Set under aliases. For instance Eddie W. Hands is an alias for Edward Wayne Cox of Chatham, Louisiana. E. Wayne Cox may have chosen this alias because he runs an international business of selling left hands taken from victims of human sacrifice. The left hand is called by these Satanists "the hand of glory."

Although Senator Robert C. Byrd's name doesn't appear on the Temple of Set's formal membership, he properly should be included in any membership list, because it was his legal expertise that helped Aquino set up the Temple of Set so that it would be legally protected by the Constitution. Behind this legal Satanic organization is a large amount of illegal Satanic activity, including sacrifice, slavery, mind control, porn and drugs. Senator Byrd is an example of how evil men can pervert the use of the Constitution for evil.

Another name which is not on the formal membership roster is Jerry Lee Lewis, but Jerry Lee Lewis works so closely with the Monarch slaves of the Temple of Set that he is an integral part of the Temple of Set system.

This secret membership list follows this pattern NAME OF PERSON--POSITION IN THE TEMPLE OF SET (i.e. rank), PLACE OF RESIDENCE, OTHER OCCULT OR SECULAR FACTS ABOUT THE PERSON. Roman numerals are used to identify Setian ranks, I have taken the liberty to abbreviate these roman numerals into our everyday numbers, such as VI° = 6°.

Here is the PAST AND RECENT SECRET MEMBERSHIP IN THE TEMPLE OF SET (a spin-off of the Church of Satan, and recently reconstructed as the Temple of Power.):

Alex, Frank R.--Setian 1°, Illinois
Alleé, John D.--Adept 2°, Mass., editor of satanic newsletter Brimstone. Frank Sinatra fan.
Anderson, Yolanda--Adept 2°, Calif. Adept at Black Magic. Satanic priestess.
Aquino, Lilith Sinclair--Magistra Templi 4°, Treasurer, she founded the Lilith Groto which was the largest and longest-functioning Grotto of the LaVey's Church of Satan. On the T of S's Council of nine. Of the Sinclair bloodline.
Aquino, Michael--The vain Ipsissimus 6° of the Temple of Set, Missouri, Lt. Col. U.S. Army with high level security clearance, in Military Intelligence and army's Psychic warfare battalion, Green Beret, member ACLU, Defense Intelligence College, and prominent teacher of how to create Monarch slaves.
Austen, David--Priest of Set 3°, London, England, Black Magician who studies Crowley
Barrett, Ronald L., Jr.--Priest of Set 3°, Colorado, ex-Airborne Ranger, interested in alchemistry
Bennett, Clifton B.--Setian 1°, Colorado, studies Crowley, medieval Satanism and Kenneth Anger
Berkey, C. Joseph, 3rd--Adept 2°, Virginia, does occult art and practices Enochian Magic
Blood, Linda--Wrote a book about her time with Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set
Blount, Larry D.--Setian 1°, Texas, studies Friedrich Nietzche and black magic
Bozeman, Clayton C.--Adept 2°, Oregon,
Bradley, Curtis A.--Setian 1°, Colorado, Freemason, reads everything on vampires
Browning, Willie--USAR officer in MI
Buckman, Samuel--Setian 1°, Accra, Ghana, West Africa, wants to spread black magic in West Africa
Butch, William T.--Priest of Set 3°, Penn., Lt. Commander of Navy SEALs, studies ancient Egyptian Satanism
Campbell, Adam N.--Adept 2°, Melbourne, Victoria, Aust., satanist interested in politics
Chandler, Kendal T.--Setian 1°, Penn., a musician into heavy metal

music
Clark, Julian R.--Priest of Set 3°, England, practicing hypnotherapist in London, has snakes for pets
Cruse, Roger D. 2nd--Setian 1°, Georgia, interested has studied Clinical Psychology
DeCecco, R. Amn--Magistrer Templi 4°, Maine, on T of S's Council of Nine
DiCicco, Carman J., Jr.--Setian 1°, New Jersey, studies Bruce Lee, Machiavelli, and Anton LaVey, likes Black Sabbath/Ozzy
DuNard-Phillips, Carolyne--Adept 2°, Missouri, Egyptian & Enochian Magic, heads an Egyptian magic Lodge
Egen, Shane M.--Setian 1°, Wellington, New Zealand, interested in Heavy Metal music, martial arts and mind control
Engels, Georges--Setian 1°, Belgium, practices Black Magic
Evans, Larry--Priest of Set 3°, Oklahoma, Sentinel of the Gates of Hell Pylon
Farnsler, William E.--Adept 2°, Texas,
Felczak, John J.--Adept 2°, Calif., has studied a wide variety of occult systems
Ferguson, Rick A.--Setian 1°, Ohio,
Flowers, Nancy K.--Magistra Templi 4°, Texas, Editor of the Scroll of Set, part of the Bull of Ombos Pylon in Austin, TX.
Flowers, Dr. Stephen E.--Magister Templi 4°, Texas, Grand Master of Order of the Trapezoid, expert of Runes and Germanic occultism
Fox, D. Pete--Setian 1°, Illinois, interested in Nazism's occultism
Friedel, Peter--Priest of Set 3°, West Ger., member of the Ordo Saturni (holds a high degree), 30° in the Scottish Rite, member of the Quatuor Coronati Lodge of London, generational satanist of the Illuminati, promotes Satanism's growth in Europe.
Gallo, Walter J.--Setian 1°, New York, former painter, interested in Crowley and Nazism
Gibbs, Cynthia K.--Setian 1°, Calif.,
Goff, Joseph A.--Adept 2°, Mich,
Grady, James S.--Virginia
Gregoire, Raymond A.--Priest of Set 3°, Wash. state
Grisé, Kevin M.--Setian 1°, hypnotherapist & rehab counselor
Guliaeff, Nickolai N., Jr.--Adept 2°, Calif.
Gyori, John G., Jr.--Adept 2°, Texas
Hand, Eddie W.--Setian 1°, Louisiana (See previous art. in Oct. 15 newsletter on Wayne Cox within the list of witch covens.)
Hardee, Bryan C.--Setian 1°, Wyoming, was part of a guild of magicians called the G.T.P.
Hardy, Patty A.--Priestess of Set 3°, Maine, likes to read Robert Anton Wilson
Haywood, Michael T.--Setian 1°, Illinois, (now perhaps in Pittsburg, PA)
Hearty, Marie L.--Setian 1°, Ontario, Can.,
Hinson, Eulit M.--Adept 2°, Black Magician who studies Crowley, Aquino, the Golden Dawn, Nietzsche, vampirism, etc.
Jantschik, Walter--Adept 2°, West Germany, Black Magician who studies vampirism, demonology, fraternal orders
Johnson, James R., Jr.--Adept 2°, Nevada,
Johnson, Lynn (later married W.T. Butch)--high Setian who left to form the Temple of Nepthys
Joyner, James C.--Sec. of the Order of Leviathan, Baxley, GA
Kalivoda, Kurt--Setian 1°, Illinois, studied OTO black magic
Keil, Jeffrey J.--Setian 1°, mmbr Rune-Gild,
King, Stephen P.--Setian 1°, So. Carolina,
Knowles, James L., Jr.--Setian 1°, Minn., has studied Enochian Magic. (The Knowles family is somewhat prominent.)
Laakso, Petri--Setian 1°, Finland, joined T of S as a young man going into the Finish armed forces
Lance, Rebecca C.--Priestess of Set 3°, Calif., member of The Children which is a Satanic band
Lee, John--Setian 1°, Queensland, Aust., interested in Nazism and SS rituals
Lewis, James--Ipsissimus 6°, Council of Nine, Baxley, Georgia, was formerly with the Church of Satan
Lilly, James H., Jr.--Setian 1°,
Lima, Peter J.--Setian 1°
Lynch, Scott C.--Setian 1°, Halifax, Nova Scotia, interested in Neo-Nazism and the KKK
Mahoney, Michael--Setian 1°, Mass.
Mann, Dennis K.--Priest of Set 3°, Order of the Trapezoid, and Order of the Vampire, New York, USAR in MI, propaganda expert and an attorney
Matthews, Lee J.--Adept 2°, Conn., studies the Yezidee Satanists
McGranahan, Timothy L.--Adept 2°, Illinois
Menschel, Robert--Magister Templi 4°, Calif., Member of Mensa, computer whiz kid, editor Ruby Tablet
Moffatt, Robert H.--Magister Templi 4°, Calif., co-fdr of T of S, Council of 9, editor SCROLL, operated Set-Amentet Pylon in L.A.
Moore, Patrick R.--Setian 1°, FL
Neilly, Robert W.--Magister Templi 4°, Ontario, Canada, co-fdr T of S, Chrmn Council of Nine, ESP research
Nielsen, Ruth A.--Adept 2°, WI, ex-Catholic nun, into magic, incl. hermetic magic and computers
Nourse, Andrew--Setian 1°, MA, amateur radio, computer programmer, into massage magic,
Osbourne, Amanda--Adept 2°, CA, likes Stephen King Novels and Star Trek, and love horror films
Page, Richard E.--Setian 1°, MI, into runic and Enochian magic
Parkin, Antony--Adept 2°, Lancashire, Eng., likes Nazi SS things
Pridgen, William D.--Adept 2°, So. Cara., likes the works of Crowley, Lovecraft, Grant, R.A. Wilson, John Wheeler and others.
Radtke, Walter--Adept 2°, CA, experimental artist, interested in Da Vinci, Tesla, Velikovsky
Reichensperger, Peter--Setian 1°, mathematician, Esoteric Order of Dagon, works with computers
Reynolds, Linda--Magistra Templi 4°, Tenn, co-leader of Seshen Pylon, San Francisco
Rietze, Perry A.--Setian 1°, FL, Satanist interested in Satanic Bible, ritual magic, Egyptology, and demonology
Rigby, Michael S.--Adept 2°, TX
Rivera, Peter N.--Adept 2°, Calif., interested in the magical effects of drums and music
Robinson, Robert W.--Priest of Set 3°, UT, interested in snakes, studying the Illuminati, built ritual sites in Death Valley, explores Aztec ruins.
Rowlett, Curtis A.--Adept 2°, GA, interested in Aleister Crowley/Thelema
Rush, Jennifer--Adept 2°, N.S.W. Australia, uses Tarot cards as a hobby
Russell, Diane--Setian 1°, FL, practices Black Magic
Sandling, Frances S.--Adept 2°, Dorset, Eng., interested in John Dee (Enochian Magic), Crowley & LaVey. Does Black Magic rituals.
Sass, James D.--Setian 1°, P.O. Box 666, Daytona Beach, FL 32115, Hard core black magician.
Saunders, Richard--Adept 2°, England, interested in Black Magic and Chaos Magic
Schumacher, Jeurgen--Setian 1°, Germany, works Hatha Yoga, likes Odinism, studies hypno-therapy
Scott, Eardley W.--Setian 1°, NJ, a drummer with a rock/jazz fusion, like Enochian magic & its conversion to Setian symbolism
Shull, Robert W.--Adept 2°, VA,
Snow, Heather L.--Adept 2°, NM, artist
Sobolewski, R. Douglas--Setian 1°, PA, Rosicrucian (AMORC) 8°, amateur astronomer
Spriet, Patrick--Adept 2°, Belgium, interested in Nazism and Egypt, multilingual in 5 languages
Stout, Julie--Adept 2°, TX,
Taylor, Lucifer E.--Setian 1°, MA, Exec. Sec. of Brimstone, a

journal of the Anc. Brotherhd of Satan, 231 Kennedy Dr. #130, Malden, MA 02148
Thompson, Elana--Setian 1°, OR, interested in the occult, science fiction and anthropology esp. the Middle East
Van Van Patten, William P.--Setian 1°, NY, likes Heavy Metal music like Ozzy/Black Sabbath, reads Stephen King, studies Nazism
Watson, Arnold R.--Setian 1°, TX, interested in Egyptology, the Yezidi Satanists, Enochian Magic, and other things.
Webb, Don--Adept 2°, TX,
Weirich, Richard J.--Setian 1°,
Wendall, Margaret A.--Magistra Templi 4°, CA, was a prominent mmbr of Ch. of Satan, founded the Scroll of Set & has been its editor
Whitaker, Colleen G.--Honorary Setian, OH, artist, interested in the Tarot, Councillor & Ex. Dir. for Ch. of Satan
Whitaker, Roger L.--Honorary Setian, OH, a film maker, likes horror films
Winkhart, Roland--Priest of Set 3°, Germany, helps Peter Friedel operate the Black Diamond Pylon in Germany for the T of S
Zajkowski, Marie M.--Priestess of Set 3°, CA,
Zimmer, Brian E.--Adept 2°, OH,

DR. GREEN (Dr. Joseph Mengele)

The most significant programmer, perhaps one could give him the title of the father of Monarch Programming was Joseph Mengele, an ex-Nazi Concentration Camp doctor. Thousands of Monarch mind-controlled slaves in the U.S. had "Dr. Green" as their chief programmer.

Physically the doctor was 5'8", dark-brown hair, greenish brown eyes, and gracefully handsome. He was a Dr. Jekyll-Mr. Hyde character who disarmed people by his kindness. He was gentle and quiet and intelligent, while still having a very sadistic brutal side to him. Joseph Mengele was born into a wealthy Satanic bloodline, and became one of the most powerful Satanists in the world. He was an expert on demonology and the Cabala. He was at least a Grand Master in the Illuminati, but how high he went up the hierarchy ladder is unknown to this author.

Because he was part of the Illuminati and their bodies are not to have visible scars, Joseph Mengele did not take the SS tatoo on his body when he joined the Nazi SS. Mengele became the camp doctor at the famous Auschitz Concentration Camp. Joseph Mengele was in a very key position as the camp doctor at Auschitz. He was able to use countless thousands of people as guinea pigs for experiments. One of the chief items that had to be charted in detail was how much torture various humans could take. The charts were worked up so that the Illuminati would know exactly how much torture and how much nurturing to carry out in creating trauma-based mind-controlled slaves.

After Joseph grew up in Gunzberg with a family noted for their secrecy, and an abusive mother, he studied at Frankfurt-am-Main, which is a satanic stronghold in Germany. He interned at Leipzig, a town known for being the site of modern learning theories. Later he joined the SA and then later the SS.

At the end of W.W. II the United States army took custody of Mengele, and the secret satanists of the satanic brotherhood, got Mengele quietly smuggled into the U.S. Mengele was given a higher profile in South America to lead people to think that he spent his time in South America. Actually Mengele spent a great deal of time travelling worldwide especially to places like Tavistock and China Lake's Naval Intelligence base where Monarch slaves were created from innocent children.

Although Mengele did indeed live in Brazil, Argentina and Paraguay a great deal of misinformation and disinformation has been dumped on the world by the CIA and other groups working for the Illuminati.

Mengele continued to love music and dancing throughout his life. He became a human puppetmaster who used music to program with. He liked both the violin and the piano. He did lots of musical key-tones programming. Some of his proteges also used music to program with. This bent toward using music then contributed to the fact that the American country western industry is an outgrowth of the Monarch program. The country western industry is a cover for the drug running done via Monarch slaves.

Another bent of Mengele's also contributed to a direction that the Monarch program took. Mengele was fascinated by twins and twinning. Mengele experimented on thousands of twins, most of who died from the torture of the experiments. Science experiments need two groups, one of which is a control group. Twins make research easy. Mengele used them extensively. He was developing, along with some German and Italian researchers, the capability to trauma bond people to their abuser to such an extent that the victim would be totally loyal to their abuser. During episodes in the camps when Mengele saved people from execution by the S.S., some of those people remained loyal to him to this day in spite of an awareness of how many people he cruelly tortured to death. Monarch slaves are programmed to think they have a twin somewhere. Many of them have been twinned into 2 person and 4 person teams also.

Mengele was known by people in the camps by his victims as the Angel of Death, Vater (father), Vaterchen (daddy) and Schoner Joseph (beautiful Joseph). Monarch mind-controlled slave victims who were programmed by him know him by names such as Doctor Green, Papa, David and Fairchild. Monarch slaves remember the cadence of his shiny black boots as he marched back and forth while programming them. Whether programming in a lab, or experimenting on humans Dr. Mengele enjoyed reducing people to the level of animals. However, many times his victims were restrained from crying tears.

Mengele is well-known by his Monarch victims for his daisy game programming. He would pull off a daisy and say "I love you." Then he would pull of one and say, "I love you not." When the last daisy petal came out "I love you not", he would then kill a small child in front of the child he was programming.

Mengele was in Dallas during the killing of JFK, which was achieved by trained Monarch slaves. (In fact, the *Beaumont, TX Enterprise* on Mon. April 10, '94 in the Metro Sect. B, on page B cont. to 4b reports that a sworn affidavit exists where a man connects Joseph Mengele with Kennedy's death and to have seen Mengele at the Texas Book Depository.) Luis Angel Castillo was just one of the Monarch mind-controlled slaves sent to kill JFK on Nov. 22, '63. A woman from Germany named Mrs. Krebs, along with a host of other programmers, worked with Mengele on the Kennedy assassination.

In 1956, as part of the ongoing deception (and also showing the audacity of the Illuminati) Joseph Mengele applied and got an Argentinean foreign resident permit under his own name. He even travelled to Europe to various countries in 1956 using his own name.

DR. WHITE (Dr. D. Ewen Cameron)

Dr. White was the cover name for D. Ewen Cameron (b. Dec. 24, 1901-Sept. 8, 1967). He was born in Scotland, was tall, imposing, & blue eyed, liked whiskey, and wore custom-made suits. He called women "Lassie." His favorite book growing up was *Frankenstein*. It is said that *Frankenstein* inspired him to go into psychiatry.

Cameron was president of the powerful American Psychiatric Association, and later the president of the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and then later the first president of the World Association of Psychiatrists. He was chairman of the Canadian Scientific Planning Committee.

Dr. D. Ewen Cameron, of Montreal, Canada was Dr. White when carrying out Monarch programming. Cameron tried to continue some of Mengele's eye color research in Canada. Mengele was trying to discover for the Nazi's how to make brown eyes blue. Cameron received funding from the Illuminati. Cameron also got funding from the CIA. The Rockefeller Foundation gave him $40,000 in 1943 to create the Allen Memorial Institute for psychiatry, an Illuminati front. He began doing programming early in the 1950s.

Cameron had served on the gruesome western front in W.W.I.

As an Illuminati kingpin and programmer, Cameron (Dr. White) was very sadistic and cold blooded. He visited other programmers on the West Coast periodically.

One leading canadian doctor said that Cameron "was not possessed of the necessary sense of humanity to be regarded as a good doctor." The man was able to instill fear into people by looking at them.

He met frequently with Allen Dulles, the head of the CIA. He travelled frequently including making stops in Washington. Many of the Monarch slaves on the east coast were victims of Cameron.

He worked long hours at his mind-control work like a driven man. In 1961, just one of Cameron's institutions administered under his supervision 60,000 electrical shocks to patients. This is just what was recorded at one institution for one year. Who knows how many victims got electrical shocks and programming by this man?

He worked with the Jesuit part of the NWO in Canada.

Leonard Rubenstein was one of his trusted assistants.

Cameron encouraged dissension among his staff in divide and conquer tactics to maintain his power.

Cameron had a big ego that allowed him to steal other people's work and give himself credit for it, in his publications.

• THE ANTI-CHRIST, the chief handler/programmer

The AntiChrist will have both public and private lives.[1] The two will not be the same. Deep in the heart of the AntiChrist he will want to rob, kill, and destroy.[2] He will be a man of war, but his public image will be that he is a man of peace.[3] He will be a winner. The public always likes a winner. This will be a man with a hardened heart, but a man of charisma.[4] Charisma has been noted to develop when a person is a foreigner (novel) and has some feature that causes people to feel sorry for the person --some wound or physical defect (like Gorbachev's red splotch on his head). The AntiChrist will have the public appearance of being a genius, not only a wizard of words, but a commercial genius, a military genius, a diplomat of the highest order, a leader, and an intelligent good looking man.[5] However, this is the public image. Some of this will be created by madison avenue techniques. He will be fearless,[6] a skilled negotiator, a poker face who is capable of crafty deception. In fact deception characterizes the man. He is Satan in human flesh,[7] who will use religion for evil. He will use good for evil.[8]

His lineage is from several directions. He may have Hittite blood,[9] blood from the Tribe of Dan,[10] and blood from Assyria.[11] He may also claim to have Egyptian royal blood.[12] He will be proclaimed the returning messiah for the Buddhists, the Islamic religion, the New Agers, the Christians, etc. Inman Mahdi, the Messiah, etc.[13]

However, the group of people who he will be most connected to, will be the Jews.[14] His sphere of influence will not just be jews, but he will reinstitute blood sacrifices in the Temple in Jerusalem.[15] This may well be the abomination of desolation that the Word of God warns about.[16]

The AntiChrist will arise on the scene like a thief in the night[17] and will surprise people by his rise to fame. He will come from obscurity[18]--but he will have all the correct credentials[19], and bloodlines[20]. All the correct occult signs will occur around this individual.[21] Because of historical precedence, we know that chaos and confusion will set the stage for the grand entrance of this man onto the stage of public attention.[22] Problems will be created, so that this "great" man can pull mankind out of the worst disasters. The world will be trauma-bonded with him.[23] He will be a savior saving mankind from extinction and death.[24]

However, while he promises and provides a new life for humankind, he is actually a merchant of spiritual death.[24] The eternal fate of individuals is determined by how they respond to him.[25] A remnant of true believers will endure to the end[26], but many will succumb to the deception.[27] The AntiChrist will not have to face a hostile church--the church will be in apostasy and will accept him.[28] The AntiChrist will have to face a few John the Baptist types, who he will use his guillotines on.[29] In other words, the AntiChrist will not be antagonistic toward the church--but he will subtly destroy it and cause it to serve only him.

He will disregard the true law of God[30]--the spirit of the law, but he will be a legalist, who wants law and order[31]. He will have both a False Prophet and a another close friend the

Beast[32]. The daily blood sacrifices will become the global correct view, and Christians who oppose these sacrifices will be in trouble.[33]

All the trappings of Rabbinic and Talmudic and Cabalistic Judaism will be revived and flourish.[34] He will pretend to be like Christ--he will be compared to Christ in the media--but he will also be opposed in reality to everything Christ stands for. As so many Satanic cult leaders do, and as is standard within Illuminati rituals--the AntiChrist will be killed and brought back to life.[35] This simulated death will be done in front of the public, and this will give him the appearance of superhuman strength and divine favor--for being able to receive a deadly wound and then to heal and revive so quickly.

Jerusalem will be the religious capital of the New World Order[36]--but there is reason to believe that there will also be both a political and an economic capital, and a computer and a police center[37]. There will probably be 3 public capitals and many other centers[38]. Just as during the Roman Empire there were many religious centers, such as Ephesus was the spiritual center for Diana worship being one of the 7 wonders of the Ancient world. Mt. Olympus in Greece was a sacred mountain in ancient times, with sites for consultations with the Oracles. In modern AntiChrist times, Glastonbury, UK and Mt. Shasta, CA may serve as spiritual centers. The New Age pilgrimages to Mt. Shasta which are covers for the mind control done there may well continue to serve that same function in the AntiChrist's reign.[39] Rome or London could become political capitals. An economic capital could be established almost anywhere. The computers are already being centered in Europe. Once he has taken power, he can enter into Jerusalem like a hero, triumphantly.[40] He will command universal worship via the technological advances that have been made in communication. All the spirits of evil will collect themselves in this one person of evil. He will be shrewd, and will be able to understand dark evil things. He will do things according to his own will. At least some outside of the inner circle will know that he is homosexual, (and bi-sexual).[41] He will have the full force of the world's system behind him, trying to make him look better. He may be born in the Middle East --perhaps in Pakistan like Lord Maitreya (Rahmat Ahmad).[42]

Historically, Satan's AntiChrist spirit has captured a number of men.[43] For instance, Antiochus IV Epiphanes, Caligula, Nero, Ghulam Ahmad and Hitler. However, these have been only partial manifestations. Satan working through secret satanists such as Karl Marx set up Communism. In Russia, Marx, Engels and Lenin were made into a Father, Son and Holy Spirit triad. The picture of the 3 was prominently displayed all over Russia. Lenin was created into a Christlike figure. (The extent of how much communism substituted these men for the trinity hasn't been covered by the controlled Western media.) The men of this false godhood were given the attributes in Russia of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit by state propaganda. I mention all these things, because again this was a partial manifestation of the AntiChrist spirit along with the Beast and the False Prophet. Those who would understand how the AntiChrist will act in public, need to study Machiavelli, Hitler, Antiochus IV Epiphanes, Lenin, and the many other partial manifestations of the AntiChrist spirit, such as the Popes. Most Reformation reformers and early American puritan leaders regarded the Pope as the AntiChrist. He certainly has often been a good example.

The private life of the AntiChrist will be very identical to other Illuminati kingpins. He will participate in Illuminati rituals. He has already been presented to Illuminati councils for approval. All the Mothers of Darkness will serve him as brides, as well as an inner body guard. Like Faust, and everyone else in the Illuminati, the AntiChrist has made many covenants, oaths, and vows to Satan himself. He has been taught that he is a god man. In public, he will proclaim himself divine. In private, he will consider Satan to be his own god. He will strive to do the best job for Satan possible, because he has been taught that he will rule with Satan in hell, and his position in hell will be determined by how good he does his job now. He will be totally turned over to Satan, the Father of all lies. He will feast on the blood of sacrificed individuals, and may well be addicted to drinking blood, like Vice-Pres. Al Gore is.[44] Those who do not have a love for the truth, will come under the spell of the AntiChrist's deception which will be flooded over the television screens, and through the controlled media.[45] He will push all the correct buttons verbally when he speaks, and he will even flatter people.[46] He will be the world's tyrannical but much loved dictator, a father figure.[47]

The AntiChrist will be working on creating "supermen", the genetic wonder man that Hitler was working to create. Instead of using God's approach to perfection, the AntiChrist will have the most superior genetic approach so far. In other words, to the public with their warped thinking, he will look like he is improving the human race genetically, and in every other way too.

The Illuminati are planning to install him as Lord over the earth around the year 2000. Occultists (incl. known Satanic leaders) have been prophesying his coming. Hollywood under the direction and financing of the Illuminati have given us the Damien series and other films on the AntiChrist. David Bauer, a psychic adviser and Baptist minister, has prophesied that the AntiChrist will come in the year 2000. Jean Dixon, who has connections to the Illuminati has prophesied this too. So has the English astrologer Edwin Lyndoe. They declare that this leader will be a savior of mankind. Jeanne Dixon went so far as to say that the AntiChrist was born on Feb. 5, 1962. (See Dixon, J. *My Life and Prophecies*. Fred. Miller, 1971.) The witch Sybil Leek even pointed to a son of a Jerusalem dentist, David Morris as being the man. (Leek, S. Reincarnation: the Second Chance. NY: Stein & Day, 1974). All kinds of people are pointing at the year 2000. Occult prophecies about the year 2000 come from Irene Hughes, Alan Vaughn, Edgar Cayce, Kenneth Odhar and many others. De Sabrato, an occult prophet believes Christ will return in 2003 in the form of an ET Christ.

However, if plans fall apart there are indications that the AntiChrist could arrive later in the 21st century. Henry Kissinger said, "We are going to have a New World Order, if not in this generation, then in the next." One of the men who worked high up in the New World Order, and who had inside information felt that the AntiChrist wouldn't rule until 2047 and that he would be born in New York City and have blond hair and blue eyes. From what the Lord has shown this author, and taking into account the vulnerabilities of the Illuminati's plans, this author would state that the AntiChrist may not arrive until quite a few years from now. On the other hand, there are already candidates who have been presented before the Illuminati councils who are candidates to become the AntiChrist.

The primary candidate for the position of AntiChrist is being kept in a heavily guarded small town near London. Only those who are summoned by him enter into the room where he is located. Individuals who come into his presence immediately want to worship him. He is a Rothschild. The mother of either the NWO's John position or the Christ position was S. E. D. [name may be available on request from Fritz Springmeier] and his name is Alexander Rothschild, Jr. The name Alexander is very important to the Illuminati. Baron Rothschild passed on his spiritual power when he was ritually murdered in 1976. This Rothschild AntiChrist is known as the Son of Apollo.[48] From a reliable source close to Lord Maitreya, he is jewish. The Illuminati have a Mary position, also known as the Madonna position, which are women that are closely connected to the AntiChrist. Within the last few years, all the Madonna-position systems united in ritual in London, Frankfurt, Austria, and Switzerland. The name Queen of Heaven (Seriramis) is also applied to high level women close to the AntiChrist. Programmed multiples, who rise above the Grande Dame level, enter levels designated by a, b, c & d. Guinevere, the name of King Arthur's wife & Lancelot's mistress, designates one of the positions of the 4-female Illuminati teams around the AntiChrist. It is written Gennifer for english speaking systems.[49] Prior to the AntiChrist 2 witnesses are to come to "which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt." REV 11:8. In the past, God has sent his 2 witnesses (Moses/Aaron), (the two to Sodom, see GEN 18:16+) on Nisan 1 (Passover). The orthodox jews expect the return witness of Elijah on Passover. The real 2 witnesses/& or the Satanic 2 false- witnesses may appear around the Passover time. (cf. REV 11:1-3, 7:1-17, 14:1-5, JOEL 2:30-32, & ACTS 2:19-21.) These witnesses and the Illuminati's "John the Baptist" position are some of the prominent people who are slated to die in the end time drama being prepared by the Illuminati who are trying to copy scripture, and by God Almighty who is directing things on a higher level. Readers must bear in mind that Satan knows the Scriptures too, and is a great imitator.

FOOTNOTES

1. This is a universal trait of men with the AntiChrist spirit. While Christ is truth, Satan is deception. Having a facade, being two-faced (like the god Janus) is standard for these men. Judas Iscariot with his kisses for Christ is just one example of thousands of examples. James 3:17 shows that the Holy Spirit is without hypocrisy, but the Evil Spirit is devoid of the Holy Spirit's fruit and is full of hypocrisy.
2. The Spirit of Satan desires to rob, kill, and destroy. Satan's desires will consume the thinking of the AntiChrist. The Word of God indicates that whatever the AntiChrist wills to do, he will do according to Dan. 11:36. In this sense, he will be the master magician, the Adept of Adepts.
3. Scripture indicate that he will bring a false peace to the earth, and that he will be a man with fierce countenance.
4. Scripture indicate he will be worshipped, and the power of the media to make heros out of any actor has been well established.
5. Scriptures indicate he will be considered very intelligent. They also indicate what spheres of influence he will lead, and what roles he will play. Taking these into account, and taking into account what the Illuminati have planned, and taking into account that Satan's world likes to develop certain public images for its heroes, then it is a given that Satan's AntiChrist will appear gifted or well developed intellectually in many areas. While intellectual stature is not important to God, it has always been in Satan's world.
6. Dan. 8:23
7. Scripture, and common knowledge among Satanists is that the AntiChrist will be produced from the seed of Satan and aminated by Satan himself. Lk 22:3 shows that Satan himself entered Judas, how much more so then will the AntiChrist be the embodiment of Satan.
8. The Scripture show that Satan likes to use good things like the Word of God for evil purposes.
9. Illuminati belief is that they are descended in part from the Hittites.
10. Early Christian leader Irenaeus felt that Scriptures and early teachings indicated that the Tribe of Dan would raise the AntiChrist. The Midrash on Gen. 49:14-17 supports his view, and it states that "darkness will come over the world from the Tribe of Dan." Other conspiracy researchers like myself have discovered that the Tribe of Dan's lineage is playing a big role in the Illuminati.
11. Isa. 10:5, 12
12. Jeanne Dixon prophecies that he will be descended from Pharaoh. The Illuminati are making coronation plans at the Great Pyramid in 1999. It is quite possible that the AntiChrist may have blood from a Pharaoh, or at least the pseudo-documentation to make people believe it.
13. The Illuminati are already doing this with Lord Maitreya
14. The Word of God shows that he is accepted by the Jews as being the Old Testament messiah. In order to do that he must have some credentials that look good.
15. Rev.
16. Mt. 24:15
17. The Illuminati have been working hard to keep the AntiChrist's identity a big secret. Cf. Acts 1:7 and Mt. 24:36. God has kept some things secret too. Satan will come like a thief in the night. 2 Ptr 3:10.

18. The Son of Perdition will be "revealed"--2 Thes 2;3-4 "with powers and signs and lying wonders" 2 Thes 2:9.
19. He steals ("cuts off") the worship deserved by Christ for himself. Rev. 13:16, 17, and cf. 2 thes. 2:9. It is clear that the AntiChrist must have credentials that allow himself to be palmed off as a Christ. He will be a genuine imitation Christ.
20. We know he will have an elite generation satanic bloodline because he belongs to the Illuminati, which in itself is the elite bloodlines. He will be the elite of the elite. There are spiritual reasons why Satan needs people from generational satanic families for his leadership. His legal claims over the AntiChrist and his occult powers are increased by the circumstances of being from multi-generational satanic families.
21. This is simply part of being within Satan's kingdom.
22. This is according to the Illuminati's plans, which have been discussed at length with this author by people trying to escape the Illuminati.
23. A common tactic by satanic leaders, there is little doubt that this tactic will also be used by the supreme dictator, the AntiChrist.
24. Satan gives spiritual death, Christ gives life--that is one of the themes of the Bible.
25. Rev. 19:20. Those who take the AntiChrist's mark are thrown into the Lake of Fire.
26. The gates of Hell will not prevail against the church. There will be faith, although it will be as in the days of Noah--it will be a rarity. Various scriptures indicate that Satan will never wipe out the entire church on the earth.
27. Mt. 24:24. He "will break the Holy People." Dan 12:6-7
28. A number of scriptures indicate that there will be a falling away- Christ asks, "Will there even be faith?" This apostate church is Babylon the Great, which is described in Rev. 17- 18. The entire world will worship him. Note how many Christians are united with the ecumenical activities of mainstream Christendom. The majority of churches are now participating in ecumenical activities, even the supposedly conservative evangelicals.
29. Rev. 12:11, Rev. 6:10
30. Scripture call him "the Lawless One" because he hates God's spiritual laws and will try to destroy the sacrifice of Christ by reinstituting blood sacrifices.
31. This is according to Illuminati plans, and also matches what the previous partial manifestations of the AntiChrist have been like. Hitler was always preaching law and order. This is a common theme by the NWO. Satan is always a great legalist.
32. He will deny the Father and the Son (1 John 2:22) and present to the world the False Trinity described in the book of Revelation. (Rev. 13:1)
33. Cf. Jn. 16:2
34. This has already happened. The Temple rituals have been reinstituted, and even the blood sacrifices are secretly being done underground.
35. This is hinted at in a couple of places in Scripture. It is such a standard satanic trick, that it would be amazing if it were not done. Part of anticipating one's enemies actions is to know their thinking. This would be in line with satanic tactics.
36. Cf. Lk. 21:24. When the Times of the Gentiles ends, Jerusalem is to be restored to being a spiritual center. cf. Dan. 11:45-12:1.
37. This is a conclusion by the author after studying plans of the elite, including UN plans, and other activities and statements by those in the NWO.
38. This is a conclusion by the author after studying plans of the elite.
39. This is speculation on author's part, which takes into consideration what is already going on in secret.
40. Illuminati plans. The Jews have long waited for the Messiah (the New David) to enter Jerusalem through the Golden Gate. This expectation was mentioned to the author when he was in Jerusalem.
41. Dan. 11:37. The Illuminati have been promoting homosexuality because they want people to accept the homosexuality of the AntiChrist. In Dan. 11:37 it indicates that "Neither regard...the desire of women."
42. See the *Be Wise As Serpents* book, Chapt. 1.4
43. John 2:18 and 1 John 4:3

44. Two different ex-Satanists have independently provided information on Al Gore's addiction to blood. Illuminati kingpins are often addicted to the Adrenalchrome that pools in the body just prior to a person being sacrificed. Various newsletters give more information on this and related issues.
45. Mt. 24:4,5,11; 2 Thes. 2:10-12 "Because they received not the love of the truth..."
46. Dan. 11:32
47. Rev. 13:3,4, 7, 8, 17
48. This entire paragraph comes from various Illuminati Mind-controlled slaves who were in important positions around the AntiChrist, who have been deprogrammed.
49. This information comes from half a dozen top important Illuminati mind-controlled slaves who are in the process of being deprogrammed.

Appendix 2

Programming Sites

APPENDIX B. THE PROGRAMMING SITES

Some MAJOR MIND-CONTROL PROGRAMMING SITES with explanations of their programming. (Fritz Springmeier originally exposed many of these sites in 1993, so it is possible they have made some changes since they were originally exposed. Most of these operated for years, and may still be operating. We are aware of that some of their programming bases have been moved after exposure.) Besides these major programming sites, there are countless minor ones. For instance, some of the programming sites for water-beach tortures have been visited by the co-authors, but are not listed. The massive Boeing Plant in the Seatle, WA area with its large amount underground tunnels has been used for programming, as well as the ARCO Beaver Valley Plant in Pennslyvannia. So has the chapel at the Coast Guard Academy at New London, Conn. which was built by A.W. Mellon of the Mellon Illuminati family via their Mellon Foundation. This list is not put forth as comprehensive. Without question, this list is only the tip of the iceberg.

29 Palms, CA-

Area 51 (Dreamland, Groom Lake), NV--Area 51 is also known as Dreamland. There are a number of extensive underground facilities in the area. This was one of the first genetic research facilities in the U.S. and perhaps the first major genetic research facility. The people/workers & victims are brought in by airplane and tube shuttle. The worst cases of UFO/alien type of Monarch programming is coming out of Area 51. The eggs from slaves are being harvested and weird genetic creatures are being developed from human eggs which have been genetically mixed with other things.

Bethseda, MD--The Bethesada Naval Hospital

Bingham, UT--A red brick house, which was a closed House of Prostitution. The building was used for KKK programming. Child porn was produced in the basement, and upstairs programmed child slaves serviced KKK members. The KKK activity in the area connects in with the Illuminati controlled Kennecott Copper Co. (aka Utah Copper Co.) Russell G. Frazer, head of Bingham's Klavern & doctor for Kennecott Copper Co. did the electro-shock to split personalities.

Black Forest, Germany--Because the U.S.-U.K. and Germany do so much programming, and some of the people in the U.S. were programmed in the U.K., Germany or Russia, it is worthwhile to mention some of the German programming sites. A number of witnesses report about castles in the Black Forest which are used for programming & ritual. Basal, Sw. on the border with Germany is a important Illuminati center. Frankfurt, Berlin and Zurich are all important programming/ritual sites. The Jesuits and the Catholic churches are very active in programming in Germany.

Boulder, CO--The headquarters for EMC, a type of electra-magnetic mind control that is being broadcast to modify the thinking of Americans, and to control slaves.

Butner, N.C.--Center of Correctional Research, all types of mind control are carried out and experimented with on the inmates.

Camp Peary, VA--The CIA's The Farm is located on a narrow strip of land between the York & James Rivers near Williamsburg, VA, used for programming CIA slaves. It has red brick buildings, and looks similar to a small college. The official crytonym was ISOLATION. People who are brought in who don't know where they are for training are called Black Trainees.

China Lake Naval Research Base (Inyokern), CA--This facility had a country store, and hangers, and a hospital (address for the hospital is the code- 232 Naval Air Weapons Station) which all provided sites for programming. This site has been operational since the early 1950s. Large numbers of children (batches of 1,000 or 2,000 or 3,000 children were run through this facility at a time. This facility did much of the original traumas and mind-splitting tortures that created the MPD. Other facilities then specialized in further programming that was then layered in on top of the original China Lake programming. A great deal of dehumanization in cages was done to large numbers of tiny children at China Lake Naval Facility. Nimitz Hospital did drug testing of the children prior to their programming.

Colorado Springs,CO--The ALEX system programming and end-times Military programming is coming out of Colorado Springs and is connected to

NORAD. One of the Colorado sites is doing alien programming with mock UFOs.

Dillsboro Nike Base--Monarch programming of many kinds

Disneyland, CA--Disneyland has been an off hour site for Illuminati and satanic rituals for years. Programming has gone on using Disneyland as one big prop for programming. Many of the Disney movies are used for programming, and some Disney scripts are especially tailored for Monarch slave programming. The Peter Pan programming can use the ship. The space programming can use the space props. The satanic programming can use the castles. Lots of mirror programming is done at Disneyland, and Disneyworld. There is also Magic Mountain programming, and programming using the Around the World Dolls, and its theme song. Some of Wizard of Oz and the Cinderella programming was also done at Disneyland using costumes. Preverbal children are taken to Disneyland to get them ready for the scripts.

Disneyworld, FL--Disneyworld was created as the eastern counterpart to the Disneyland programming site. One of the rides in Disneyworld plays "It's a small, small world" which is Disneyland developed programming theme.

Ft. Campbell, KT--Base programs are placed in here.

Ft. Detrick, MD--involved with medical/biological experimentation

Ft. Holabird, MD--This site is no longer in existence, but was the Army Intelligence School. CIC used the school. The place was known as "the Bird."

Ft. Hood, TX--programming involving military uses of Delta Monarch slaves was done here.

Ft. Huahuachua, AZ--HQ for Army Intelligence.

Ft. Knox, KT --The 1st Earth Batt. was developed here.

Ft. Lewis, WA--involved with the Psychic warfare part of the Monarch Programming.

Ft. McClellen--

Ft. Meade, MD--The National Security Agency was created on 4 Nov 1952. Its headquarters were Fort Meade, VA. The National Security Agency (NSA) employs tens of thousands of employees and has a budget larger than the CIA. It has also been kept far more secret, while the CIA has been used as the fall guy to protect the National Security Agency's reputation. In the late 1960's, under Operation Minaret and Program Shamrock, the NSA and its British counterpart GCHQ began monitoring much of the communication within the USA and UK. The NSA monitors all american calls via computers using trip words, specific names, specific addresses, specific telephone numbers, etc. NSA has several computer to record all the millions of conversations which the computers have examined and deemed worthy of recording. How the NSA can get any use out of millions of recorded telephone conversations is beyond me? What intelligence agency could adequately process so much information?

These organizations now monitor all communications within both countries.

At least one congressman got upset that his phone was bugged by the NSA. (see David Corn's article, "The case of the bugged senator" in Nation, Feb. 6, '89, p. 152.)

The NSA has developed a fiberoptics network called Internet computer network. An orange book is used to specify some of the NSA's security levels.

An informant in the National Security Agency states that establishment newspapers like the Wall Street Journal and the New York Times are used to communicate secret messages which are placed within want ads, buzz words in editorials, and via other methods. Because of some of what this person told me, I have given some possible examples in this newsletter of how people might be using the papers for secret messages. For instance using Michael Jackson with his hands making some type of sign might be a signal. Manfried Adler and the US Senate Committee investigating the CIA found that 90% of the CIA's secret messages are transmitted via the media, with the aid of coded texts and pictures.

A raised forefinger or two raised forefingers while a speaker is talking means that the message is a masonic message coming from a masonic speaker.

The Illuminati uses code words within the large establishment papers to warn their people what they are going to do with the economy. In this way, people in the Illuminati can take appropriate responses.

Goddard Space Flight Center--NASA mirror-theme programming

Grissom AFB, IND--

Hollywood, CA--One of the programmers/handlers in the Hollywood area is surprisingly Anton LaVey. This is one reason Anton LaVey has followers who will carry out his very wishes. LaVey's children of course were programmed too. His own girls have been participating in the nude in satanic rituals since little children.

Homestead AFB, FL--

Kirkland AFB, NM--

Lampe, MO--This has been the site of a CIA near-death trauma center where slaves are programmed. It is an R&R center for the CIA where they can have any sexual perversion or drug they want. This has been a large cocaine supply depot also. Hal Meadows was director of this center which is deep in the woods surrounded by cabin chalets overlooking a small deep lake. A gravel road leads to the site which is fenced and well-guarded. Hal Meadows address was Box 27, Lampe, MO 65681.

Langley, VA-- Slaves for the wants of intelligence.

Las Vegas (sites in and around Las Vegas), NV--MGM's Grand Hotel and Theme park were built for programming, but there are also some sites outside of the city used. In the general area of Las Vegas in remote sites, the elite gather for slave auctions once a year where Monarch slaves are sold and traded. One of the favorite slave auction sites was 20 miles out of Las Vegas and 10 miles off the main road into the site. The Mob is involved with Monarch slaves in Las Vegas. A blue-eyed 11 year old girl will go for $50,000. Toronto, Canada is another regular site for Monarch slave auctions.

McClellan AFB, CA - Very bad Child and adult porn using Monarch victims is distributed through this base as well as the other bases listed in this list. A T.W. Sanderson worked with Monarchs at this base.

MacDill AFB, FL --Near Tampa, FL

Maxwell AFB, AL --

Montreal, Que., Canada -McGill Univ., McGill Psychiatric Training Network, Allan Memorial Inst., St. Mary's Hosp.- The Zombie Room (Sleep Room) in the basement, the Isolation chamber and the Grid Room at St. Mary's Hospital were used for programming.

Mt. Shasta, CA--Underground facilities around this hugh mountain in the Lake Shasta area are putting out Monarch programming that makes the people think they are in communication with aliens. This facility is for torturing & reprogramming captured runaway Monarch slaves. People are brought into the area via helicopter, plane, or flying saucer. This site is probably the largest mind-control programming center. It is in a remote wooded area. It is heavily guarded, has fences, and a large contingent of black helicopters. Mt. Shasta is equipped with state of the art high tech programming equipment. Mind-controlled slaves who are soldiers are programmed and trained at the Mt. Shasta facility.

Nashville, TN--These sites work with the Country Western Music Industry which is actually a CIA front for moving drugs to finance their dirty black activities. Fiddler's Inn, Nashville fits in with the Monarch Programming.

Papillion, NE--

Patrick AFB,--

Portland (Old OMSI, New OMSI, Bldg. near Monarch Hotel at 8800 SE Sunnyside Rd., Mormon Temple, etc.), OR. The Old OMSI building had a back door on the west side in which slaves were taken in to the bottom floor and reprogrammed. Although security guards aren't visible, they are there with electronic surveillance. The people running OMSI are tied in the Illuminati. The DC-3 airplane outside of the building was used in the programming as a hypnotic trigger. The submarine docked outside of the new OMSI building is also used as a programming hypnotic tool. The new Mormon Temple has an extremely high tech underground tunnel facility for programming built underneath it. Witnesses have collaborated their testimony on this high tech programming site under the Portland Mormon Temple. Although building plans are to be public information, the city of Lake Oswego makes it very difficult to view the temple's building plans. The plans show that the foundation walls are far thicker than any conceivable earthquake would ever call for. The reason is that the foundation helps house an underground arena for the Illuminati & and their guests to watch perverse shows.

Presideo, CA (incl. Alcatraz, San Francisco)-- The Illuminati and various Satanic cults used the Presideo for their programming. Split-brain & other programming was done at Letterman hospital. Fort Point was used for Illuminati ritual & programming, as well as a number of churches, underground gun emplacements and the large circular Greek column art building at the Presideo. Alcatraz, abandoned as a prison, was used for water tortures and other programming. Tunnels connected buildings, and the Mule/Horse buildings and the cemetery also were used. This is one of the older programming sites. Psychic warfare activity also was experimented on in this area. Letterman Hospital has been used for the initial drug testing of the infants before programming. Lots of isolation programming in damp cold places was done at the Presideo. Lots of porn and military programming have also been done here.

Redstone Arsenal, AL--

San Antonio, TX--

Salt Lake City (Mormon Temple)--This underground facility works in conjunction with the Mormon hierarchy who are allowed to create slaves. The Illuminati put in base programming that still gives them ultimate control beyond the control that the Mormon programming has.

Scotty's Castle, Death Valley, CA-Mengele (Dr. Green) programmed in some of his "internal boxes", as well as other Illuminati programming was done at this site. Mengele had a large circular red bed in the castle which he stocked with his little girl slaves, who already had kitten sexual alters.

Scotty's Castle is a castle located in Death Valley, CA. It has a very interesting history.

To reach the castle one is required to drive through many miles of desert. If one drives to Inyo County, CA, the same county that has China Lake Naval Testing Grounds, and Inyokern, and then you drive on Hwy. 190 into Death Valley National Monument (it is not a park or forest, dead valleys are called monuments), next you go north on a road after Stove Pipe for 35 miles.

The man who built Scotty's Castle was Walter Perry Scott (1872-1954). Walter P. Scott was the son of an alcohol distiller and horse breeder in Kentucky. Walter did not get any formal education. He left home and went west where he worked as a mule driver, and a water boy. From there he became a horse wrangler. Because of his talent with horses Buffalo Bill made him the feature rider along with Annie Oakley in Buffalo Bill's family show. The show travelled and Scotty was with it eleven years. During this time, Scotty made many important friendships with men of power and wealth. In 1900, Walter married and left the show. He got a loan from Julian Gerard, a NY banker, to go prospecting for gold which he failed to pay back. Julian Gerard was repeatedly sending people to hassle Scotty to get his money back. In 1905, Walter Scott ("Scotty") scattered gold nuggets and $100 bills from N.Y. to L.A. Where he got all this gold and $100 bills is a mystery, but it wasn't from prospecting. The idea of finding a secret mine was very obviously a cover for however Scotty managed to get his money. Scotty is well-known for his penchant to throw away $20 gold pieces as if they were candy wherever he went. Nobody believed he had a mine, strangely the IRS never got interested in Scotty. Why?

The IRS went after Charles Caughlin who was exposing the elite, the bankers, the Freemasons, etc. in the early 1930's on his radio show. There was no reason to suspect Caughlin of any cheating on his Income Tax, and the audits found the IRS actually owed Caughlin money. However, the national papers printed front page stories of the IRS investigation, and practically ignored that the man was exonerated. Yet, the IRS left Scotty alone. Hmmm.

Although Scotty was married, he became intimate friends with Albert Mussey Johnson (1872-1948), a Chicago millionaire, who was v.p. from 1906 to 1926 of the National Life Insurance Co. Albert M. Johnson was born in Ohio, and lived in Arkansas and Missouri before moving to Chicago. Johnson came out and stayed in Death Valley. The stay helped his health, and he and Scotty remained close friends.

In 1924, construction secretly began on a castle in Death Valley. The best of materials were used and the materials had to be hauled clear out in the desert by truck to Grapevine Canyon where the castle sits. Hundreds of workers were hired.

The castle got its kitchen tiles from Spain. Special rugs were made on the European island of Majorca for the castle. Tiles for the incompleted pool came from the Mediterranean. Many of the furnishing of the castle came from cathedrals and palaces in Spain and Morocco. Draperies made for the castle were hand-tooled in selected sheepskin leather. Sixty hand-carved panels, each of a different design, were installed in the music-room ceiling. A Welte Mignon organ reported to have cost $160,000 --the finest of its kind in Western United States was placed in the music room, even though Scotty could not play the organ. Twelve bathrooms were installed. Several kitchens were installed. Tunnels and secret rooms were built under the buildings. Around $2 million (dollars of that time period) were spent on building the castle, supposedly from Scotty's "gold mine." The castle became known as Scotty's Castle. It is ideal as a Satanic ritual site. It can accommodate numerous people. It is remote. It has hidden rooms and areas, and tunnels.

Tavistock, England--This has been the primary programming center for England. The Rothschild programmers work out of Tavistock. A large number of slaves in America have been programmed there.

Tavistock has been doing mind-control since before W.W.II. Under the supervision of London's W Board & 20 Committee MI6 and MI5's Section BIA ran double agents and mind-controlled spies/couriers during W.W. II. MI6 has had an office at Century House, No. 100, Westminster Bridge Road. MI5 offices have been in part on Curzon St. MI5 has operated behind a number of fronts, incl. their fake travel agency Casuro Holidays. MI-5's address for mail is Room 055, The War Office, London. Special Intelligence Service (SIS) dealt with all types of mind control. Tavistock was under SIS. The British government has had their own telephone exchange with a 222 prefix, which was later linked to another secret exchange YTAN. Outsiders could dial 222 8080 to get into the secret govt. exchange.

Men like mind-control expert/hypnotist Eric Trist worked for Tavistock. A six-man team which wore black berets also helped w/ mind control at Tavistock.

Two people who became terrorists after their visits to Tavistock are Angela Davis and Stockley Carmichael who went to a conference at Tavistock entitled Dialectics of Liberation in 1967. It's main building is a bland 6-story building. The address is The Training Office, The Tavistock Clinic, 120 Belsize Lane, London, UK NWs 5BA. Tel. no. 071-435 7111. The chief exec. is Anton Obholzer. The Chair of Prof. Comm. is Nicholas Temple. Both are skilled in psychology. The Tavistock Clinic was founded in 1920, and in 1946 the Tavistock Institute was created as an independent body to assist the Tavistock Clinic. The Institute does more of the research. The Royal Free Hospital at the University of London works with Tavistock Clinic, as well as the Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU) of Sussex University. A large number of Britian's psychologist, social workers and police get their training at Tavistock. Tavistock has set themselves up as the authority on ritual abuse and MPD (DID). In other words, the primary programming site, **is pretending to be the leading institution trying to solve the problem!** That's a good cover.

Tinker, AFB, OK--Tinkerbell programming is carried out here. This programming makes alters think they are like Tinkerbell in that they will never grow up or age.

Titusville, FL--At the Kennedy Space Center. Mind control testing is done, and base programming such as the Wizard of Oz programming is done here. Also NASA high tech programming is done here.

Tulsa, OK--Believed to have an Alice In Wonderland theme to their programming. Oral Roberts University is used for programming. The programming to infiltrate and capture the Christian church via the healing/charismatic movement has centered around Tulsa and Oral Roberts University.

Utah State Prison--The prison has carried out mind control for over 30 years on their inmates for the intelligence agencies with the help of the U.S. government's power to cover it up.

Versailles, IL--Brain implants are put into Monarchs here.

Washington, D.C. area--The basement of the Pentagon and other facilities around Washington D.C. such as the Jesuit Georgetown Univ. Hosp. are involved with Mind-Control. Presidential Models are moving in and out of Washington, D.C. carrying messages and performing their sexual acts for the lusts of politicians. There is also a NASA Mind-control Programming Center in Washington D.C. Secret tunnels connect the White House to other buildings. These tunnels are used to bring in slaves. Some secret rooms in the lower White House are set aside for rituals.

Wright-Patterson AFB--Near Dayton, OH, Virtual reality programming is carried out here.

Youngstown, OH--The Youngstown Charm School has been run by Illuminatus Prosser Seward Mellon along with a U.S. Congressman named Jim Trafficant. The old stone building originally belonged to one of the railroad elite. This school is for Beta models and gives them advance sexual charm training. This school produces about 6 new Monarch slaves every three days. Mafia deals are carried out on the second floor of the charm school. A slave who is being trained/programmed at the Charm school will take a course that last a few days. The first day may be spent hanging in a dungeon which was once a basement wine celler. The torture dungeon has all the traditional torture devices, a stretching rack, whips, hanging chains, etc. In the dungeon rooms were a black Nubian goat "Satan", a small donkey "Nester", and a small white pony "Trigger", as well as dogs and snakes. The slave is taught silence in the dungeon as they are subjected to bestiality.

- We have just touched the surface of the vast network of programming sites. Two examples of an **entire series** of programming sites--1. the Coast to Coast campground resorts & 2. the Jesuit-run institutions, which are often programming sites incl. Jesuit College, WV. An example of the former is the Park City Diamond Caverns, KT Coast to Coast resort, which has had a sensory deprivation tank, headphones for state of the art harmonic programming, etc. These membership camp sites are used to program children. Nor have we touched upon the large numbers of programmed Russians & Eastern Europeans that are coming into this nation. When this book was written more people immigrated to the U.S. from Russia than anywhere else. Europe is teeming with prgmg sites, incl. the Vatican. Sebulun Zuflucht in Marienheide, Ger. is about the only european attempt at **de**programming.

PHOTOGRAPHS
by
Fritz Springmeier

of
THE PRESIDIO, CA
a Monarch Programming Site for
over 30 years.

copyright© Fritz Springmeier

-CAPTIONS TO PRESIDIO PHOTOS-

1. Fritz Springmeier in Calif.
2. Building near the Presideo used by the Illuminati for Mother-of-Darkness rituals.
3. The 6th Army HDQT at the Presideo w/ its satanic logo on the building. The photo shows the hexagram in a circle logo w/ the anarchy A, which is the logo for the 6th Army. Numerous satanists have held high positions in the 6th Army including Col. Michael Aquino, a mind-control programming and a publicly known satanist.
4. This is the oak tree at the Presideo used hypnotically to build oak trees into the minds of victims.
5. This is a building used for Illuminati ritual near the Presideo.
6. Ft. Point, Presideo. The small rooms and small enclosures were used for torture during non-tourist hours. The forts parade ground and walls were also used for heavily guarded rituals.

1

2

7. Mule barns whose 2nd floo
were used for torture ar
traumatization of victims. Tunne
connected mule barns, and oth
buildings.
8. This immense cemetery at tl
Presideo has seen a lot
Illuminati activity.
9. One of the Presideo
churches where Illumina
activity/rituals took place.
10. This picture is taken lookii
across the bay from the Presid
toward Alcatraz in tl
background. Alcatraz Is. w
used for water torture.

3
HEADQUARTERS
A

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

Mother of Darkness Castle.

Wash building with tunnels connecting it to Mormon Temple.

Entrance to the well-guarded Mother-of-darkness castle in Belgium, where a special large book records daily in blood the activities of the Illuminati to bring in the reign of the AntiChrist.

Wash building which has high-tech secret entrance to tunnels below Portland Mormon Temple, where Illuminati rituals, programming, and porn shows, and gladiator matches occur.

Bibliography

BIBLIOGRAPHY & SOURCES

The co-authors brings lots of experience and study with this subject into the creation of this book. The sources that have contributed to their knowledge would take a book as long as this to list every source that has gotten them to their understanding of the subject.

PRIMARY SOURCES ON PRIMARY SUBJECT--TRAUMA-BASED TOTAL MIND-CONTROL

1. Numerous professional papers.
2. Personal accounts about slaves (published).
3. Unpublished paperwork, tapes, interviews of slaves.
4. Therapists
5. Books on Mind-control.
6. Books on associated topics, such as PTSD, the Mind, hypnosis, drugs, witchcraft, and the various aspects of control.

1. NUMEROUS PROFESSIONAL PAPERS.

Carole Goettman, George B. Greaves and Philip M. Croons put out a reference book *Multiple Personality & Dissociation 1791-1992 A Complete Bibliography, 2nd edition.* (Lutherville, MD: The Sidran Press, 1994). Co-author Fritz has gone through the Bibliography which lists in 150 pages essentially all the articles ever published on MPD and Dissociation, and he has read all that he could obtain via the large research libraries. Dozens of the articles, and many of the books which appear in this complete bibliography have been read. Most of the professional literature on the subject is trash. During the 1970s, Americans got interested in Multiple Personalities, after having lost interest in the subject as W.W. I got started. I believe the therapeutic community was probably nudged by the military/intelligence agencies to lose interest when W.W. I broke out, and that anyone who did get interested got scooped up into the government during W.W. II and the Cold War. Some of the helpful professional papers have been notated in the book itself. A perusal of the index will provide part of the sources for this book.

2. ALL THE PERSONAL ACCOUNT (AUTO-BIOGRAPHICAL ACCOUNTS) THAT ARE AVAILABLE.

The list of auto-biographies (or biographies) of victims which were consulted include the following:

CHASE, TRUDY.

Chase. Trudy. *When the Rabbit Howls.* NY: Dutton, 1987.

DORSETT, SYBIL ISABEL.

Schreiber, Flora Rheta. *Sybil.* Chicago, IL: Henry Regnery Co., 1973.

FORD, SUE.

Taylor, Brice with Patrick Stone. (written as a novel). *Starshine.* Huntsville, AL: The Brice Taylor Foundation, 1995.

JONES, CANDY. (born Jessica Wilcox).

Bain, Donald. *The Control of Candy Jones.* Chicago: Playboy Press, 1976.

LYNN, LORETTA.

Vecsey, George with Loretta Lynn. *Loretta Lynn A Coal Miner's Daughter.* Rockefeller Plaza, NY: Warner Books, 1976.

MONROE, MARILYN.

Pepitone, Lena. *Marilyn Monroe Confidential An Intimate Personal Account.* NY: Simon & Schuster, 1979.

O'BRIEN, CATHY.

O'Brien, Cathy with Mark Phillips. *Trance Formation of America, The True Life Story of a CIA Slave.* Nashville, TN: Global Trance Formation Info, Ltd., 1995. Also Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips put out numerous monographs and a number of articles in the *Contact* magazine, which were also consulted in writing this book.

STRATFORD, LAUREN. *Satan's Underground: The Extraodinary Story of One Woman's Escape.*, 1991.

WHEELER, CISCO.

Wheeler, Cisco with Fritz Springmeier. *They Know What They Do, An Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming-Mind Control.* Oregon City, OR: Springmeier & Wheeler, 1995.

OTHERS VICTIMS:

Casey, J.F. & Wilson, L. *The Flock.* Alfred A. Knopf, 1991.

LaCalle, T.M. *Voices.* NY: Dodd, Mead, & Co., 1988.

Lancaster, E. & Polney, J. *The Final Face of Eve.* NY: McGraw-Hill, 1958.

Schoenewolf, G. *Jennifer and her selves.* NY: Donald I. Fine, 1991.

Sizemore, C. & Pittillo, E. *I'm Eve.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday & Co., 1977.

Smith, Michelle & Lawrence Padzer. *Michelle Remembers: A Story of Satanic Possession.*

Thigpen, C.H. & Cleckley, H. *The three faces of Eve.* NY: McGraw-Hill, 1957.

3. UNPUBLISHED PAPERS, TAPES, & INTERVIEWS WITH VICTIMS.

These sources will have to remain confidential. Over a dozen Illuminati slaves provided notes from what they have found out about their lives and mind-control systems. The co-authors have interviewed and personally known dozens more, who have been visited with. Notes were kept on some of these interviews. Fritz taped some of his interviews, and in more than one case got a computer disk of the person's life story with colloborating evidence.

4. THERAPISTS.

Fritz is appreciative to the following therapists for the help he received:
Dale Calvocade, Ukiah, CA, who helped me understand the religious covers better.
Dr. Carol Clifton, Portland, OR, who helped me understand the value of patience, kindness and listening in helping victims help themselves.
Dr. Loreda Fox, Denver, CO, who helped give a better understanding of the spiritual dimensions.
Catherine Gould, TX, who helped me understand the role of alters within programs.
Denny Hilgers, Pasadena, TX, who helped me understand the deeper codes, and the deeper systems better, and the importance of a person's identity.
David W. Neswald, Irvine, CA, who helped me understand the primal traumas better.
Randy Noblitt, Dallas, TX, who helped give a better understanding of overall picture, and how some of the codes are constructed.
Mark Phillips, Nashville, TN, who opened up a deeper understanding of how the Network operates, and provided some direction for how we should approach dealing with mind control.
Doug Riggs, Tulsa, OK, who helped give a better understanding of the religious fronts, and who helped tremendously understand how this trauma-based mind-control fits in with the Word of God.

5. BOOKS (& LONG PAPERS) ON MIND-CONTROL

Bowart, Walter H. *Operation Mind-Control.* original edition and the totally revised Researchers edition of 1994, which carried the same title.

Chavkin, Samuel. *The Mind Stealers, Psychosurgery and Mind Control.* Westport, Conn: Lawrence Hill & Co., 1978.

Estabrooks, G.H. *Hypnotism.* NY: E.P. Dutton, 1957.

Lockwood, Craig. *Other Altars, Roots and Realities of Cultic and Satanic Ritual Abuse & Multiple Personality Disorder.* Minneapolis, MN: CompCare Publishers, 1993.

Marks, John. *The Search For The "Manchurian Candidate" The CIA & Mind Control.* NY: W.W. Norton & Co. (paperback version), 1991.

Mediaecco. *When The State Rapes, Part 1 & 2.* Gorredijk, Netherlands,

Thomas, Gordon. *Journey into Madness.* NY: Bantam Books, 1989.

White, John. *Psychic Warfare, Fact or Fiction?* (An investigation into the use of the mind as a military weapon.) Wellingborough, Northamptonshire, UK: The Aquarian Press, 1990(?).

De Laurence, editor. *The Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia, The Book of Evil Spirits.* Chicago, 1916.

6. BOOKS ON ASSOCIATED TOPICS.

Both authors have read many books on tangent subjects. The list of books that have been read and researched prior to writing this would take another book to record. The co-author Fritz found himself consulting his own books, *Be Wise As Serpents* (1991), *The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines Vol. 1* (1995), and *Exodus 20:4-5* (1978).

The co-authors purchased and read the 14 Oz books. They also have a number of the other books used for scripts such as, *Mother Goose Rhymes*, *The Tall Book of Make Believe*, Michael Aquino's version of Star Wars, etc., *Snow White & the 7 Dwarfs*, *The Island of the Blue Dolphins*, *Through the Looking Glass*, etc. Fritz purchased his own copy of *The Graphic Work of M.C. Esher*. NY: Ballantine Books, 3rd edition, 1972. in order to have on hand the artwork which contains so many mirror images and inversions and is so often used for programming.

As I, Fritz, sit down to provide the sources for the reader, it is apparent that the task is beyond my time restraints. Knowledge accumulates. A random sample of just two of almost countless references looked at to come to the author's level of understanding would be Jean L. Sutton's workshop book *Ritualistic Abuse of Children Identification and Case Management Strategies* which was used in workshops for teachers and child services division people on Fri. Sept. 11, 1992 at 815 N.E. Davis St., Portland, OR. Another example is *The New Yorker's*, May 24, 1993, article "Remembering Satan--Part II". Neither one was referred to in writing the book, but these two and countless others over the years form the accumulation of understanding that is needed to tackle writing a book on Multiple Personality Disorder (Dissociative Identity Disorder).

To be able to write this book, Fritz, the co-author has studied material, books, newspapers clippings, articles, etc. from the following ASSOCIATED TOPICS with a close estimate of the number of items studied in each area: Aliens & UFOs (40 items), Amish-Mennonite (30 items), Astronomy & astrology (25 items), Behavior Modification (12 items), Black religions in the New World and Africa (6 items), Brain (30 items), Caballa (10 items at least), Computers (25 items), Computer languages (8 items), Crime (25 items), Demonology (30 items), Druidism (20 items), ELF waves (20 items), Fairy Tales (7 items), False Memory Syndrome (5 items), Freemasonry (35 items), Holograms (6 items), Hypnosis (12 items), Intelligence (20 items), Jesuits (6 items), Ku Klux Klan (15 items), Medical technology (15 items), Memory (20 items), Mental Hospitals (5 items), Military (10 items), Mind (25 items), Movies (20 items), NeuroLinguistic Programming (6 items), New World Order (50 items), Particular Individuals such as the Rothschilds, Rockefellers, Collins, Mengele, Cameron, Wheeler, LaVey, Aquino, Elvis Presley, Doris Duke, and many others mentioned in the book (50 items at least), Personality (25 items), Satanic Ritual Abuse (50 items), Spiritual warfare (40 items), Spying (25 items), Underwater research (40 items), Voodoo (3 items), Witchcraft (50 items). Some of the books that would have been cited if every detail had been footnoted can be found footnoted in other writings by Fritz Springmeier.

Also I, Fritz, have spent time examining the Word of God to try to understand what God's written word revealed by His Spirit would teach me about this situation. There are numerous Bible verses that pertain to the information in this book which are not referred to in this volume. The primary issues created by the traumas are a. identity issues, and b. issues concerning fellowship with God. Much of the trauma and programming is cloud the issue of who the person really is, and how they can have a beneficial relationship to God Almighty. The Bill Gothard Basic Youth Seminar which the co-author Fritz has attended 6 times, has been very helpful to him to understand what the programmers do, and how they strip a person of what they need to be spiritually strong. In fact, Fritz knows a number of the programmers have attended the Bill Gothard Seminar themselves, and know how to use beneficial information for evil purposes. Likewise, the Christian can take the occult knowledge of revealed in this book and use it for good instead of the evil that it was designed for. The Institute has a hard volume reference book on *Research in Principles of Life* as well as a workbook. Cisco, the other co-author, has studied MPD, SRA, Bible issues, and occult topics indepth. Her personal knowledge added a depth to the book that could not have been achieved without her.

William Frost of San Antonio, TX was a good friend of a tall lean Texan named David Hill. David Hill had been taken in by Mafia boss Joseph Bonanno, who was as a surrogate father to him. After David Hill became a Christian, he used his first hand knowledge of the Mafia, the occult world such as his Masonic experience to put the pieces together about the NWO. He had just completed a very detailed manuscript for a book exposing the NWO, when he was murdered. After David's murder, William Frost was able to retrieve David's manuscript and sent me a copy. The death was not ruled a murder by the authorities, but men who have written lengthy exposes on the New World Order do not commit suicide before they get their books published. It was keen-minded David Hill who warned Billy Graham for many hours about the New World Order, only to be told by Billy Graham, that Billy was "a captive" (Graham's own words) of the New World Order. The information William Frost gave me about David Hill, was later verified in many ways by Joseph Bonanno's surprising autobiography *A Man of Honor*, Simon & Schuster, Rockefeller Center, N.Y., 1983. It's somewhat unusual for Mafia chiefs to write autobiographies. In it, Joseph Bonanno says he looked up to Billy Graham, and that David Hill joined up with Billy Graham. In 1974, Billy Graham came to Joseph Bonanno's house in Tuscon with David. Graham sent him a Christmas card every year, and called him soon after his wife died to offer condolences. These things are mentioned on page 333 of his autobiography. David Hill's manuscript was encouraging to me, Fritz, because he verified many of the same things that I'd found. His manuscript was quoted in Vol. 1 concerning the top families.

Information about the names of programmers and programming sites and the Temple of Set membership has come from recovering victims of Trauma-based mind-control. Information about Illuminati bloodlines, ritual sites, and important buildings has also come from Illuminati members who are recovering from Illuminati mind-control. Many more witnesses to Illuminati Mind-control will come forward if people learn how to help these people, and to believe the things that have happened to them. Now that this legitimate information is being circulated, it can be expected that "witnesses" with bogus information/bogus memories will come forward to detract from the credibility of this book.

next page Information on Illustrations.

ILLUSTRATIONS

Chapter 2 title page--Reproduction of the cover of the program of the Bohemian Grove Cremation of Care Ritual.
p. 45--Torture device, drawn by a recovering Monarch slave used by permission of Denny Hilgers, Pasadena, TX
p. 46--Ritual stick, drawn by a recovering victim of SRA, used by permission of David Carrico, Evansville, Indiana. Heart in a Jar, drawn by another recovering victim of SRA, used by permission of David Carrico, Evansville, Indiana.
Chapter 4 title page--Hypnotic illusion drawings, adapted from uncopyrighted material.
p. 66--Spinning top, common illusion, adapted from uncopyrighted material.
p. 88--Section Chart of "A" alters, created by Fritz Springmeier
p. 91--Structure Chart, of color codes, alter runways, system structure, created by Fritz Springmeier based on information from a recovering Monarch mind-control victim.
p. 134--Cover *Decision* magazine.
p. 168, 175-178--U.S. Patent 4,858,612, public information, U.S. Patent Office.
Chapter 7 title page--Chart was drawn by Fritz Springmeier, it is based on an actual Illuminati Mind Controlled Slave's system's structure. The chart has modifications from the actual system's structure, but closely resembles it.
p. 195--Chart drawn by Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler of internal hour glass, x-y-z axes.
p. 196--Worlds, domino program arrangement, solemetric--drawn by Fritz Springmeier
p. 210-211-- "Common Structures" Illustration showing various internal systems and their relationships to each other, done by Fritz Springmeier based upon various reports of recovering slaves whose systems match each other.
p. 237-239, 241, 243--Designs, United Nations identity Franz Joseph. *Star Fleet Technical Manual TM:379260.* Ballantine Books: NY, Nov. 1975 (also on title page it states 1st edition STARDATE 7511.01.) The title page to this manual at first appearance seems to indicate that it was really printed by the United Federation & the United Nations, with a stardate year given. The actual dates, and actual publisher are almost camouflaged on the title page.
p. 240, 242-- *Star Trek, the Next Generation Technical Manual.* Given to Fritz by a recovering Assistant Programmer.
p. 244-246-- *Warren* magazine.
p. 248--Intergalactic symbols, drawn by Fritz Springmeier, based on what slaves see in their heads.
p. 252--Histamine molecule, graphics by Fritz Springmeier.
Chapter 10 title page--Top picture drawn by eyewitness Kim Stevens of Satanic Ritual. Bottom picture was redrawn from the original drawing done by a member of the Ordo Saturnus in ritual, a German branch of the Illuminati.
p. 315-317--First Earth Battalion's Training Manual, US Army written by LTC Jim Channon.
Chapter 11 title page--drawing of computer generated by computer graphics and done by Fritz Springmeier
p. 338--Portion of Shari's restaurant place mat with a maze and Wizard of Oz theme.
Chapter 12 title page--Bo Gritz's own campaign broshure during the the 1992 Presidential campaign which gives his biographical information.
p. 361--*Newsweek* cover with caption "Disney's Dilemma Can the Kingdom Keep Its Magic?"
Appendix B title page. Drawing by victim of mind control from eastern U.S. showing the skinning process of person. This skill is put to use for programming purposes.
Appendix B. Photographs of Presideo by Fritz Springmeier, Photographs of Portland Mormon Temple by Fritz Springmeier, Photographs of the Mother's-of-Darkness castle Chateau des Amerois, Belgium by Fritz Springmeier.

ALL ITEMS BY FRITZ SPRINGMEIER, COPYRIGHT BY FRITZ SPRINGMEIER.

Index

SCRIPTURAL INDEX
to
The Illuminati FORMULA for UNDETECTABLE TOTAL MIND-CONTROL

GENESIS
1:*............309, 329
3:*............309
18:16+........376
22:17-18....27, 309
38:*...........309
49:14-17....376

EXODUS
8:16
15:*...........309
20:*...........279
20:4...........279
20:5b.........
20:5-6.........292

LEVITICUS
20:*............309
20:27..........299
26:40..........292

NUMBERS
5:14............299
30:*..........

DEUTERONOMY
4:15............279
4:29............309
8:18............310
11:13..........310
18:9-10.......159
23:2............292
23:21..........309

JUDGES
2:13...........301

1 SAMUEL
2:17............289
3:13-14........289

2 SAMUEL (none quoted)

1 KINGS
CHPTR.16-21...310

2 KINGS
5:27................292
6:11-12...........313
17:16-17.........160

1 CHRONICLES (none quoted)

2 CHRONICLES
18:22..............299
29:*................6

JOB
3:8..................302
41: 8,15,22......302

PSALMS
74:14..............302
106:29............39

PROVERBS
16:18,19.........299

ECCLESIASTES
4:12...............330
5:4.................309
7:20..............279

SONG OF SOLOMON (none quoted)

ISAIAH
6:3.................279
10:5, 12.........376
19:14.............299
27:1................302
45:9................222
47:13.............160
49:23b-25......dedication
61:1...............6
61:3...............299

JEREMIAH
3:25...............292
18:3...............310
32:18.............292
47:3...............310

LAMENTATIONS (none quoted)

EZEKIEL
1:15-17..........310

6:3.................299
21:21.............299
37:*...............310

DANIEL
2:22a.............6
8:23...............376
10:*...............310
11:32.............377
11:36.............375
11:37.............377
11:45-12:1.....377
12:6-7............377

HOSEA
4:6.............
4:12...............299
5:4.................299
8:1.................350

JOEL
2:30-32..........376

AMOS (n
5:*.................160
5:25-26..........159

OBADIAH
1:4.................350

MICAH (none quoted)

NAHUM
3:*..................310
3:2..................310

MALACHI (none quoted)

APOCRYPHA (none used)

NEW TESTAMENT

MATTHEW
5:13................310
6:9-13 (Lord's Prayer)...349
6:22-23...........310
7:8..................311
7:15................137
7:22-23............150
12:25...............359
12:43-44...........225
24:4,5..............377
24:11...............377
24:15...............376
24:24...............376
24:36.............376

MARK
3:24-25...........311
3:25...............359
4:6.................311
4:28-32..........311
5:*.................311
9:25...............299

LUKE
1:46-52...........311
10:3...............137
11:9-10...........311
13:1...............299
18:8...............313
21:24.............377
22:3...............376

JOHN
2:18...............377
15:1-11...........
15:4...............311
15:7,10...........311
16:2...............377

ACTS
1:7.................376
2:19-21...........376
7:41-43...........159, 160
17:28.............311
20:*...............301
20:28-29..........137

ROMANS
1:7.................311
1:18................311
1:20................279
6:16................311
7:22................312
8:15................299
9:20-22...........312
13:1................312

1 CORINTHIANS
1:*
3:16................312
11:27..............312
13:* ....
15:4,5,46.........322

2 CORINTHIANS
1:22................312
2:11................6
4:1-2...............309

4:4..................313
4:16................300
4:18................300
7:1..................6
10:12.............
11:13-15..........306

GALATIANS
5:16................307

EPHESIANS
4:13................6
5:11................6

PHILIPIANS (none quoted)

COLOSIANS
2:15................293

1 THESSALONIANS
5:14................6
5:21................279
5:23................322

2 THESSALONIANS
2:3-4...............313, 376
2:9..................376
2:10-12............377

1 TIMOTHY
4:1..................299, 306
4:1-2...............313

2 TIMOTHY
1:7..................299
2:19-21............6

TITUS (none quoted)

HEBREWS (none quoted)

JAMES
1:*
1:8..................306
3:14-15............306

1 PETER (none quoted)

2 PETER
1:*..................290
2:17-19............306
2:22................312
3:10................376

1 JOHN
2:22.................377
4:3...................299, 377
5:19.................313

2 JOHN (consists of single chapter)
(none quoted)
3 JOHN (consists of single chapter)
(none quoted)
JUDE (consists of single chapter)
(none quoted)

REVELATION
2:17.................312
6:10.................377
CHAP. 6-8.........312
7:1-17............376
11:1-3............376
11:8.................376
12:11...............377
13:1.................377
13:3,4...............306, 377
13:7,8,17..........377
13:16-17............
14:1-5.............376
17:*..................377
18:*..................377
18:11-13...........322
19:20................376
21:*..................312
21:21................312
22:*..................215

PARTIAL INDEX ON SCRIPTURAL MATTERS
AntiGod programming...274
AntiChrist Spirit...305-307
AntiChrist...114, 128, 182, 204, 282, 289, 301, 373-377
AntiChrist's John prophet, A. Rothschild, Jr...375
Bible, Holy, used in prgg...307-313
Bible, counsel for MPD victims...6
Black Widow infiltration...12, 79-80,197,223,346,349
Body of Christ...6, 126, 132, 276
Christ Jesus...6, 28-29, 280, 299, 307
Christian Front alters...199, 328
Christian Help groups, fronts...124
Dan, tribe of...350
Dead Sea Scrolls...336
Deliverance Ministries...7, 123, 296
End Time Programming...82-83, 182
Prophecy about Beast/World Mind...181
Religious Fronts...B.G....126-150...Amish...150-155
Spirit of God...151, 289
Spiritual warfare...228, 298
Ten Commandments...20, 309

MAIN INDEX (for citations from the Bible see Scripture Index)

NOTES: Words have at times in this index been abbreviated in unconventional methods to shorten citations. The geographic locations named Fort have all been listed under the abbreviation Ft. for the readers convenience. In order to simplify things, Cabala is spelled Cabala in the index, but has been spelled various ways in the book so that the reader becomes familiar with its variant spellings.

/LYAPAS computer language, 247
/MAP/ computer language, 247
/PLACE/ computer language, 247

1st Earth Battalion, 18, 315-317, 325, 380
1st Earth Battalion, training manual, 315-317
1st male child, sacrificed, 212
2-CB, 47
2-CT2, 47
2 Witnesses, 376
3 Black Angels, internal, 307
3 Little Kittens..., 225
3 stepping stone method, astral project, 318
4 Elements, 190, 214, 226, 229
4 Elements Defensive Programming, 226
4 Elements, found at btm of Tree, 214
4 Horsemen, internal programming, 225
4 Spirits of Watchtowers, 291
4 basic portals, 277
4 elemental symbols, for invoking, 277
4 magical elements, 190
4 man assassination teams, 200
4 rings, 190
4 zones (aka 4 directions), 190
4th dimension, 19
5 primary interlocked concepts of Satan, 162
5-star general, 205
5th Creative Hierarchy, 163
5th ring, 190
6-man team w/ black berets, Tavistock, 383
6-month Programming Goals, 35
6th Army logo, satanic, photo of, 384,
6th U.S. Army, supervises Mil. Schools, 124
7 Gates, gone through by Ishtar, 219
7 Seals of Armageddon Programming, 312
7 Swans fairy tale, 344
7 Wonders of Ancient World, 374
7 gates, Umbrella programming, 224
7 portal points, 320
7 times 7 program to reprogram, 225
8 ball infinity loop, 95
9 is the crone's number, 218
9 is the moon number, 218
9 mystic names, 295
9-pointed stars, 19
10 Commandments, systematically violated, 20
13 Illuminati bloodlines, ancient history, 365
13th Illuminati bloodline, 321
19 doors in system, assoc. w/ sealg cerem., 204, 213
20 Committee, British Intelligence, 383
21 minor points, telepathy, 320
21 person Satanic covens, 300
22 paths of Cabala's Tree of Life, 212
27 Warriors, script to create guards, 113
29 Palms, CA, 379
32 person Synchro-energizer, 183
33° of Freemasonry, 18
40 Committee, 7
49 focal points, 320
100 dollar bills, thrown by Scotty, 382
232 Naval Air Weapons Station, 31
303 Committee, 7
707s, 355
737s, 355
777 & Other Qabalistic Writings, 69
800 numbers for Reporting alters, 36
1776, significance of no., 297
5412 Committee, 7
1,000 points of light ceremony, 213
20,000 Leagues Under the Sea, 110, 200, 232

"A" alter code sheet, 88
A Mighty Fortress Is Our God, 84
A National Socialist Philosophy of C..., 363
A Startling Exposure- Billy Graham..., 140
A Traveller's Guide to the Astral Plane, 319
A Treatise on Cosmic Fire, 163
A-12 spy plane, 331
AB- blood type w/ no RH factor, 21
AC DC program, 207
ACLD AntiChrist Luciferian Dynasty, 18
ADL AntiDefamation League, 365
Æsculapius, demon, 147, 301
AIDS, antidote given to slaves, 55
ALEX
ALEX Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmission, 182, 248

ALEX programming, 314
ALEX scrambles, 182
ALEX system, 379
ALEXUS, 182
ALGOL comp. language, 247
ARCO Beaver Valley Plant, PA, 379
AT&T, 320, 332
Aaron, Moses' right hand helper, 360
Abandonment, teaching it, 323
Abductees, show signs of MPD, 287
Abduction Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Abide in programming script, 311
Absolom, demon, 301
Abuse issues, not discussed, 359-360
Abuser's sexual menu, 79
Abusers, like pseudo-pedophile experience, 190
Abyss, internal, 220
Acacia cake, 295

ACCESS CODES
Access Codes, 4, 60, 105, 191, 234
Access Codes, kept in a binder or comp., 4
Access codes, binder of & lap-top comp., 191
Access cues, which are combinations, 234
Access methods, draconian enforcers, 73, 343
Access triggers, physically abusive, 158
Access, color of car may match access alter, 73
Access, done late at night, 272
Access, standard triggers, 60
Accidents, planned, 344
Accra, Ghana, West Africa, 369
Acephalous meetings, aren't, 7
Acetylcholine, 47, 54, 320
Aconite, 50
Actors, movie, image to public, 121
Adam, 302, 322
Adam & Lilith occult story, 214, 302
Adam (drug, see Ecstasy)
Adam Kadmon, 321, 360
Adam, original power and abilities, 322
Addramalech, demon, 214
Ade, Henry, 368
Adelphi, MD, 314
Adept of Adepts, AntiChrist, 376
Adept, David Bowie called one, 231
Adepts of Atlantis, 89
Adepts, Illuminati, 321, 323
Adepts, allowed to know secrets, 162
Adepts, months of secluded training, 321
Adler, Alan, 356
Adler, Manfried, 380
Adrenal Medulla, 42
Adrenaline (see also Epinephrine), 47
Advanced System Concepts Office, 314
Africa, 275, 302, 353
Africa, North, 353
Africa, view of medicine, 275
Age regression, 356
Agency, name for CIA, 6
Agent Provocateurs, 123-124
Agents, "clean", 124
Agrath, demon, 214
Ahab, 76, 225, 310
Ahab stomping the grapes script, 225
Ahmad, Ghulam, 374
Ahmad, Rahmat, 374
Ahnerbe, of Third Reich, 363
Ahura-Mazda, 349
AiResearch Manufacturing Co., 313
Ain Soph Aur, sphere of neg. existence, 212
Ain Soph, sphere of negative existence, 212
Ain, sphere of negative existence, 212
Air Defense Programs, internal, 226
Air Force, 331, 358
Air Force Intelligence, 17, 369
Air Force Systems Command Space Div.com 331
Air Force covert mind control section, 358
Air-Water Programs, 97
Akan tribe, 302
Akashic record, 287
Akens, LTC Frank, 315
Akkadian satanism, 44
Aktetron, 47
Alabama band, 368
Alan Memorial Institute, 381
Albertus Magnus, 19
Alcatraz Is., CA, 381
Alchemical symbols, used in "alien" wtg, 288
Alchemists, studied scents, 45
Alchemy, 45, 321
Alcohol, 47, 52
Alcohol, dangerous for male multiples, 52
Alcyone, 160
Alex, Frank R., 369
Alexander, Col./LTC John B., 314, 315, 318, 367
Alexander, Franz, 252
Algeo, John, 101
ALICE IN WONDERLAND
Alice In Wonderland, 336
Alice In Wonderland Programmg, codes to, 74-75
Alice In Wonderland programming, 16, 74-75, 96, 97, 233, 347
Alice In Wonderland story, 297
Alice In Wonderland theme, 383
Alice In Wonderland, quoted by *Newsweek*, 54
Alice In Wonderland, script, 115-117,
Alice In Wonderland, use as script, 16, 220
Alice In Wonderland, used for Chess Sys., 220
Alice In Wonderld prgrmg, use of tree, 215, 216

"ALIEN" TOPICS
Alien Programming Scripts, 118
Alien Programming, uses ET movie, 336
Alien abductions, is trma-bsd mind cntr, 118-120, 184
Alien alphabets, 287
Alien alters, 197
Alien invasion, mock, planned, 197, 234
Alien programming, 118, 185, 336, 379
Alien races, supposedly superior, 286
Alien wtg. scripts, obviously human origin, 287
Alien wtg. scripts, wc evolve as victim ages, 287
Alien, mock invasion planned, 324
Alien, so called, equipment improves, 118
Aliens, 118-120, 278, 286-287
Aliens & Demons, 287
Aliens, feed off human fear, 278
Aliens, handwriting of so-called aliens, 118
Aliens, make conflicting claims, 286
Aliens, recordings of voices, 119
All Hallow's Eve, 103, 292
All-Seeing Eye, 301, 311
All-Seeing Eye, internal, 190, 334
All-Seeing Eye, on TV w. A MAY ZING, 357
All-Seeing eye on Krull, 357
All-seeing eye, on churches, 350
Allen Memorial Institute for Psychiatry, 372
Allen, Gary, 315
Allen, Morse, 367
Allentown State Hosp., Allentown, PA, 153
Allergies, implants, and histamine, 252
Alleé, John D., 369
Allison, patent document, 168
Alpha & Omega Program, 76
Alpha BFT instruments, 250
Alpha and Omega, 312
Alpha codes, section, 72-78
Alpha waves, 313
Alpha-numeric codes for alters, 86-92, 337
Alphoid, EEG pattern, 319
Alter codes, how structured, 86
Alter family, 185
Alter fragments, defined, 7
Alter names which are common, list, 208
Alter names, of those in T. of Life, 212-215
Alter switching, helped by lithium, 52
ALTER-A PARTICULAR ONE
Alter, Adult Alpha, 207
Alter, Alex, 182
Alter, Animal, 208
Alter, Animal, meant to act like animal, 198
Alter, AntiChrist, 212, 328
Alter, Baby Alpha, 207
Alter, Bast, 218, 227
Alter, Black Master Programmer, 92
Alter, Black Princess, 228
Alter, Clockmaker, 158
Alter, Danny, one who took pain, 191
Alter, Dementia, 208
Alter, Diane, 191
Alter, Dove, 226
Alter, Fairy, gold-winged green skirted, 334
Alter, Fire, 226
Alter, Firechild, 254
Alter, Governor, 337
Alter, Grim reaper, 197
Alter, Host, 337
Alter, Jehu, 310
Alter, Jezebel, 310
Alter, Karen J, 207
Alter, Karen Ja, 207
Alter, Karen Jo, 207
Alter, Karl, 191
Alter, King, 337
Alter, Lily, 213
Alter, Locked up child, 39
Alter, Mary, 191
Alter, Middle Alpha, 207
Alter, Mother Kitten, gets spinner, 78
Alter, Pam 1, 208
Alter, Pam 2, 208
Alter, Programmers, 206
Alter, Queen, 337
Alter, Queen Mother, 283
Alter, Queen Mother, safekeeps hearts, 283
Alter, Queen, Queen for a day, 213
Alter, Satan, 197, 212
Alter, Silence, 337
Alter, Steel, 208
Alter, Water, 226
Alter, Wisdom, 212
Alter, book's usage of defined, 7
Alter, burning, 253
Alter, examination of alter components, 191
Alter, mind's perception of vs. brain c., 258
Alter, mouse, 334
Alter, variety of types of identities, 7
Alter, who knows all demons in sys.,Ch.10titlepg
Alter, which feels cold, 253
Alter/demon Moriah, 226
ALTERED STATES
"Altered States", art. *MacCleans* 4/4/94, 45
Altered States, historical use of, 60-61
Altered States, movie, 274
Altered states, 266
Altered states, created by cyberspace, 256
Alternation of leniency w/ harshness, 265
ALTERS-GENERAL CATEGORIES
Alters on Pedestal, 89
Alters, Alien, 197, 281

Alters, Angel, 197
Alters, Angry, 197
Alters, Animals, common types, 199
Alters, Aryan, 201
Alters, Assassination (see also Delta), 7, 79, 197, 200,219, 224, 268-269, 328
Alters, Atlantean, 328
Alters, Babysitter, 197
Alters, Beta (see Beta codes too), 7, 79, 197, 268-269, 328
Alters, Black Widow, 12, 79-80, 197
Alters, Blackmail, 197
Alters, Blocker, 197
Alters, Bomb children, 87
Alters, Butterflies, 281
Alters, Cats (see also Alters, Kittens), 7
Alters, Child, 197
Alters, Christian, 328
Alters, Christian Front alters, 199,
Alters, Clockmaker, 197
Alters, Clowns, 157
Alters, Core related, 197, 328
Alters, Courier, 197
Alters, Data, 197
Alters, Deaf & Blind, 87
Alters, Deaf & Dumb, 158, 197
Alters, Death, 197
Alters, Delta, Assassination alters, 7, 79, 197, 200, 219, 224, 268-269, 328
Alters, Delta, activation of, 200, 201
Alters, Delta, activation to kill, 79
Alters, Delta, method of murder, 201
Alters, Disciples of Hour Glass, 92
Alters, Dog, 198
Alters, Dove, 197
Alters, Duplicates, 158
Alters, Earth elements, 281
Alters, Elements, 197, 281
Alters, Espionage, 197
Alters, Executive Committee, 36
Alters, Fire children, 87, 197
Alters, Firechild or Bombchild, 197
Alters, Flooding, 197, 205
Alters, Foreign Language, 197, 202
Alters, Fragments, 87
Alters, Front, gentle manipulation of, 340
Alters, Fronts, 197, 340
Alters, Gatekeepers, 89, 157-158, 191, 197, 203-204, 224, 227, 285
Alters, Gatekeepers, Stairwell prgrmg, 224
Alters, Gems or Gemstones, 205, 223, 281, 301
Alters, Gems, how made, 205
Alters, Goddesses, 218-219
Alters, Grand Druid Council, 328
Alters, Grande Dames, 19, 204
Alters, Grande Masters, 19, 204
Alters, Guard, 197
Alters, Guardian of the Vail, 328
Alters, Guards to Carousel, how created, 220
Alters, Hierarchy, 197, 198, 204
Alters, Horses, 281
Alters, Hour glass, 87
Alters, Illuminati ceremonial in 3's, 7
Alters, Infiltration, 198
Alters, Internal Programmers,71, 84, 89, 185, 198, 225, 329, 337
Alters, Internal Programmers, clr names, 329
Alters, Internalists, 198
Alters, Judge, 36, 90
Alters, Judges, warning to other alters, 90
Alters, Justice, 197
Alters, Kitten, 89-90, 227, 281
Alters, Looking Glass People (LPGs), 158, 205
Alters, Loyal to programmers, 224
Alters, Loyalty, 198
Alters, Martial arts, 198
Alters, Mirror image, 198
Alters, Monster, 198
Alters, Mother of Darkness, 193, 328
Alters, Mouse, 198
Alters, Nothing, 198
Alters, Observation, 198
Alters, Orks, 197
Alters, Owl, 197, 217
Alters, Pawn, 282
Alters, Primary, sample code sheet, 88
Alters, Protectors, 198
Alters, Rainbow, 81
Alters, Ravens, 80, 197
Alters, Recontact, 206
Alters, Reporting, 36, 79, 87, 198, 206, 225
Alters, Ribbons, 81, 117, 198, 328, 329
Alters, Ribbons, access codes, 81
Alters, Ribbons, script for, 117
Alters, Ruling, 198
Alters, Scouts, 328
Alters, Scrambling, 198, 206
Alters, Sergeant, 79, 204
Alters, Sexual (See Beta alters), 198, 207
Alters, Shadow, 190-193
Alters, Shell, 198, 328
Alters, Silences, 220
Alters, Stormy, 204
Alters, Suicidal, 197
Alters, Suicide, 36, 158, 198
Alters, Supreme Master, 69
Alters, Theta, 313
Alters, Tranced, 198
Alters, Travel, 198
Alters, Warrior, 198

Alters, adult, 337
Alters, age advanced to be adults, 190
Alters, angels, use of, 307
Alters, animal types, how created, 280-281
Alters, called persecutor alters, 224
Alters, can help assess baby alter ages, 220
Alters, children, 187, 337
Alters, clones, 328
Alters, cover stories given, 157
Alters, deaf, 336
Alters, early split, locked up child, 39
Alters, egg, 223
Alters, for hunts, 198
Alters, formed solely by a victim, 86-87
Alters, held hostage and blackmailed, 301
Alters, how constructed, 191-193
Alters, how diff. types are created, 198-207
Alters, how they are named, 207-208
Alters, how they receive a pers. history, 191
Alters, illegal money making alters hidden, 186
Alters, internal programmers, 71, 84, 89, 185, 198, 225, 329, 337
Alters, lack sense of time, 190
Alters, names given to double-bind, 197
Alters, naming of, 187, 197
Alters, need to work together as system, 186
Alters, on pedestals, 217-219
Alters, process in creation, 270
Alters, pseudo, 206
Alters, representatives of ext. prgrmrs, 111
Alters, return to master, 198
Alters, techniques of being hidden, 157
Alters, to lead coven, 197
Alters, types of relationships between, 187
Alters, various ones form diffrnt relatnshps, 187
Alters, which act like animals, 80
Alters, which are not-charted, 86-87
Alters, who try to kill other alters, 286
Alters, with Foreign Language, 158
Alveolar tissue, damage to, 262
Ama divers, Japan, 262
Amalgamated Logarithmic Encrypted Transmssn, 182, 248
Aman, demon, 296
Ambassador codes, 82-83
Ambien, 47
Ambrosius, 231
America's Hour of Decision Incl. Life..., 139
American Eagle Airlines, 33
American Enterprise Inst. for Pub. Pl.R., 56
American Indian Chiefs, training of, Ch.10titlepg.
American Indian, traumatized by whites, 322
American Indians, 322
American Indians, dissociative ability, 9
American Jews Community in Crisis, 144
American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis, 1, 59
American Journal of Psychotherapy, 23, 294, 305
American Psychiatric Association, 372
American navy, 259-262
Americans, seldom question their culture, 152
Aminazin, 47
Amino Acid, Glutamate, 250
Amish Assassination Wet Op outlined, 154
Amish I-W Steering Committee, 154
Amish children, switched at birth, 150
Amish farming methods in KS & OK, 150
Amish front for Monarch slaves, 150-155
Amish life style, lessons from, 279-280
Amish parents, secretly sell children, 150
Amish service in Mental Hospitals, 153-154
Amish witchcraft, box in a box, 151
Amish, Beachy, 150
Amish, Horse & Buggy, 150-155
Amish, do own butchering, 155
Amish, early leaders ex-Catholic, 152
Amish, exempt from taxes, social security, 152
Amish, forbid Bible studies, 151
Amish, graveyards hidden, 155
Amish, graveyards used for cult rituals, 155
Amish, indirect in speech, 152
Amish, secrecy of, 151-152
Amish, tortured by Catholics/Protestant, 151
Amish, traumatized in Europe, 151
Amish, travel of, 155
Ammonia, test with, 64
Ammonia, used in initial trauma, 25
AMNESIA
Amnesia, 31,41-4257
Amnesia walls, a protective shield, 31
Amnesia walls, why they are left intact, 42
Amnesia, during battles, 41
Amnesia, one way, 187
Amnesia, two way, 187
Amnesia, w/ dissociative states, 305
Amnesic walls, deteriorate with old age, 29
Amobarbital, 47
Amobarbital sodium, 47
Amon of No, demon, 214
Amon, demon, 301
Amonoton's Law, 262
Amos, the Prophet, 159
Amphetamine, 47
Amphetamine sulphate, 47
Amphibians, 259
Amphibious Man, 259-262
Amygdala, 42
An Illustrated Guide to Monarch Prog..., 188
An-alpha, sex scent ingredient, 45
Anaerobic glycolysis, 261
Anaesthesias, 57

Analasine, 47
Analogs, of spoken word sounds, 167
Anarchy level, 293
Anarchy, period of, 182
Ancestor Spirits, 20, Ch.10titlepg
Ancestral curses, 292
ANCHORING
Anchoring Programming, 44
Anchoring with hypnosis, 97
Anchors, programming, how to collapse two, 270
Anchors, programming, how to make, 270
Ancient & Primitive Rite, Freem., Adptv., 100
Ancient Brotherhood of Satan, journal, 371
Anders, H., 315
Anderson, Lynn, 368
Anderson, Richard Dabney, 367
Anderson, Yolanda, 369
Android duels, 356
Androids, 356
Andros Island, Bahamas, rit. site, 303
Anecdote, Christian helping couple, 289
Anectine, 47
Anectine, used for adverse conditioning, 268
Angel Claire Album of Art Garfunkel, 85
ANGELS
Angel alters, 197
Angel of Death, name for Mengele, 371
Angel, Christian viewed as one, 289
Angelic Celestial Music Script, 288
Angels, 3 Black, internal, 307
Angels, which are demons, 309
ANGER
Anger Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Anger toward God, 274
Anger, Kenneth, 369
Anger, directed inward by slave, 278
Anger, manipulation of to control, 285-286
Anger, toward God, 285
Anges, Jeanne des, 296
Angie, 84
Angle Dust, 56
Angry alters, 197, 198
Angry alters, how created, 205
Anhalamine, 47
Anhalidine, 47
Anhaline, 47
Anhalonidine, 47
Anhalonine, 47
Anhalonium, 47
Animal alters, 80
Animal body parts, in potions, 50
Animals, protect Lilith's box, 217
Animals, used as familiars & in ritual, 102
Animals, used for traumas, 38
Anoxia, 261
Ant pits, internal, 188
Antahkarana, 102
Antelope, OR, 324
Anthony, Lysette, 357
Anti-God programming, how done, 274
Anti-God programming, similar to movie, 274
Anti-matter, script, 116
Anti-semitism, plan behind it, 363
Anti-silicon antibody, search for, 252
ANTI-CHRIST
AntiChrist, 128, 204, 289, 301, **373-377**
AntiChrist Call-Back Programming, 182
AntiChrist Luciferian Dynasty ACLD, 18
AntiChrist spirit, 306, 374
AntiChrist spirit, destroys ability to love, 306
AntiChrist spirit,false promises of liberty, 306
AntiChrist takeover, alters involved, 204
AntiChrist's father, 301
AntiChrist, Spirit, lavished on Hierarchy, 306
AntiChrist, abilities of, 373
AntiChrist, alter, scripts for throne, 114
AntiChrist, candidates, 375
AntiChrist, dead and raised again, 374
AntiChrist, genetic projects, 375
AntiChrist, goals of, 373
AntiChrist, homosexuality of, 374
AntiChrist, lineage, 373
AntiChrist, marriage ceremony, 282
AntiChrist, master programmer, 305
AntiChrist, must be a generation bldline, 376
AntiChrist, personality of, 373
AntiChrist, primary cand., A. Rothschild, 375
AntiChrist, private harem/bodyguard, 305
AntiChrist, reinstitute blood sacrifice, 373
AntiChrist, ritual for, 204
AntiChrist, spirit of, 305-307
AntiChrist, spirit, sets up abuse pttns, 306
AntiChrist, spirit, sidetracks maturg, 307
AntiChrist, teams for after takeover, 359
AntiChrist, will be a father figure, 375
AntiChrist, will have public/prvt lifes, 373
AntiDefamation League ADL, 365
Antibody, anti-silicon, search for, 252
Antidote for LSD, Niacin & Nicotinic acid, 49-50
Antidotes, kept secret by Illuminati, 52
Antigravity wool, in script, 116
Antimony, color code, 238
Antiochus IV Epiphanes, 374
Anubis, 44
Aphrodisiacs, 47
Aphyllidine, 47
Aphyllin, 47
APOLLO
Apollo Dr., Muskego, WI, 166
Apollo spacecraft, 229

Apollo, Guardian City, is Tulsa, 147
Apollo, demon, 301
Apollo, father of AntiChrist, 375
Apollos, demon, 301
Apostles, false, 306
Apples, poisoned, used by Illuminati, 103
Aprobarbital, 47
Aqua-cities, 261
Aquaman, seemed a comic book idea, 260, 261
Aquarian Conspiracy, 194
Aquino, Col. Michael, 107, 167, 234, 236, 294, 366, 367, 369, 384
Aquino, Michael, address in S.F.,CA, 366
Arabic, 71, 202
Arabic, important language for Illumin., 71
Archangels, attached to Tree of Evil, 214
Area 51 (Groom Lake, Dreamland, etc.), NV, 118, 331, 379
Area 51, genetic research at, 262
Argentina, 371, 303
Argentina, Illuminati ritual at, 303
Arkansas, 308, 382
Armageddon Programming, 76, 225
Armies, internal, 328
Armstrong, Alan, 315
Armstrong, programmer, 95, 367
Army Chemical School, Ft. McClellan,AL, 51
Army Intelligence (see CIC), 17, 380
Army's War College, 236
Army, internal, programming script for, 110
Arndt Automation & Assoc., 166
Arnold & Constable Store, 365
Arnold, Benedict, 127
Around the World Dolls, 380
Arpanet network, 331
Art, celtic geometric, 190
Art, function of right brain, 248
Artemis, 19
Arts & Entertainment Section, *Oregonian*, 260
Artwork, used in programming, 16
Aryan racial indoctrination, 328
As above, so below, 222
Ascii Computer language, 248
Aset (aka Isis), 218
Ash tree, 217
Ash tree, internal, 70
Ashley's heart (drawing), 46
Ashmedai (Asmodeus), 214
Ashtareth, demon, 301
Ashtaroth, demon, 301
Asia Minor, 19
Asmodeus, computer Daemon, 332
Asmodeus, demon, 205, 214, 295, 296
Asmodée (see Asmodeus), 296

ASSASSINATION TOPICS
Assassin alters, 7, 197
Assassin's story of Palace, & Eden, 68
Assassination Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Assassination alters, 197, 200-201
Assassination alters, how created, 200-201
Assassination codes (see also Delta), 79-80
Assassination programming, Nazi Models, 201
Assassination, JFK's & Mengele, 371
Assassination, delta mind contrlld team, 324
Assassins (group), 125
Assassins, worship of Kali, 219
Assembling of the Quarter Regents ritual, 81
Assessment charts, Monarch programming, 14
Assets, intell., nine areas monitored, 340
Assignment Coordinator Univ. Func.Code, 80
Assistant Secretary Gen. of UN, former, 181
Association of Helpers, Rhode's, 61
Assyrian captivity of 10 northrn tribes, 160
Assyrian empire, 350
Astar, demon, 301
Astarte, demon, 214, 301
Astor Illuminati family, 61
Astor, Waldorf, 61
Astor, programmer, 95, 367
Astounding Optical Illusions, 66
Astral communication, 227
Astral energy, 320
Astral magic, 45
Astral plane, 318
Astral projection, teaching, trad. Druid, 318
Astrologers, 119, 160
Astrologers, ancient Chinese, 119
Astrological events, tied to ceremony, 204
Astrology, 297
Asymmetrical objects, 116
Athame, ritual use, 82, 295
Atlanta Summer Olympics, 1996, 163
Atlanta band, 368
Atlanta, GA, 163
Atlantean alters, 328
Atlantis, internal, 189, 200
Atom bombs, internal, 229
Atomic Energy Commission, 17
Atropine, 48
Atrosine, 48
Attack of the Puppet People, film, 354
Attacks, magic, 313
Attention, craved by newborn, 22
Attention, repetitions needed to lose, 60
Aubin, author, 295
Auction site, for slaves, Las Vegas, 381
Auction site, for slaves, Toronto, CAN, 381
Audiograms, pulsed microwave, 167
Auditory Problems, body program, 253

Auditory body program, 76
Auditory cortex, 167-188
Auntie Em, 101
Auphanim, the wheel angels, 214
Auric Body, 320
Aurora planes, 331
Aurum potabile, 321
Auschwitz, Third Reich, 11, 371
Austen, David, 369
Austin, TX, 370
Australia, 369, 370
Austria, site of Madonna Illum. rituals, 376
Authority, when & how given to demons, 275
Autism & MPD, 45, 257
Autism, complication to the ceremonies, 45, 257
Autistic children, identified, 16, 45
Autistic child w/ spirit guides, 257
Automatic Body System, cntrld by Hypoth, 255
Automatic writing, 287
Autoteller machines, hooked to BEAST, 332
Avarice, demon of, 302
Awake! magazine, 61
Axons, 44
Axton, Mae Boren, 355
Ayahuasca vine, alkaloid derivative, 50, 320
Azimuth Plane, 243

BASIC computer language, 247
BEAST COMPUTERS
BEAST Computer, Dreamland, Area 51, NV, 247
BEAST computer, external, codes for everyone, 331-332
BEAST computer, internal, guarded by D&B alter, 92
BEAST computer, internal, 44, 80, 227
BEAST computer, programming script, 310
BEAST computer, protection of, programs, 336
BEAST computers, external, 247, 331-332
BEAST computers, locations of the nine, 331
BK Precision, 345
BSC, 354
BT952000 Project, 184
BZ, 48
Baal temple, internal, 223
Baal, demon, 214
Babalawo, term, JuJu Priest, 302
Babblers (anti-bug device), 345
Babies, mothers honored to sacrifice, 21
Babylon, 365
Babylon Mystery Rel. Rituals, 44
Babylon the Great, 377
Babylon, ancient, 221, 297
Babysitter alters, 197
Bacchus, 60, 302
Back in Black, 84
Back-doors, internal, put in, 365
Back-up Programs for dehumanization, 281
Backup Programming, 228-229
Backup script programming, 311
Backups, flowers, 217
Bacon, Sir Francis, 19, 353
Bahamas, used for Illum. rituals, 303
Bailey, Alice, 100, 160, 163, 319
Bailey, Dennis Putnam, 356
Bain, Donald, 2
Bakaa Valley, CO, 364
Bakersfield, CA, 34
Balaam, 296
Balance, factor needed for magic, 324
Balance, for weighing hearts, 44
Balance, gnostic, goal of Illuminati, 161
Balancing point, needed & created, 29
Balancing points, internal, 186
Balilo, demon, 301
Ballium, internal, 330
Baltimore, MD, 313
Bambusa, 48
Band, metal, around head for shocks, 166
Bandana band, 368
Bandler, author, 271
Bands, 200 created by USO, 353
Banisterine, 48
Bank of Lies Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Bank, at Ft. Meade, MD, 247
Bankers, international, 363
Baphomet head, scar, 251
Baptism, child, satanic ceremony, 291
Bar Codes, used as codes, 222
Bar codes, all have 666, 349
Barabasz & McGeorge '78 research, 254
Baradanga, 48, 50, 52
Barbiturate, 48
Bark Collar, electronic, 166
Barker Ranch, CA, 34
Barlow, Jerry, 368
Barr, Roseanne, 207, 354-355
Barrett, Ronald L., Jr., 369
Baruch family, 135
Basal, Switzerland, programming site, 379
Base 2 numbers, 335
Base Commanders, escort programmers, 363
Base programming, controlled by Illum., 333
Baseball players, slaves used for, 298
Basement, Pentagon, 383
Basement, internal, 191
Basement, of Mother's castle, 213
Bases, underwater, secret, 262
Bashful, dwarf, 301
Basic Techniques Book II, 269

Basophil cell, 251-252
Basque Witchcraft, 205
Bass pattern, music, heavier thn melody, 257
Bast, 218
Bast, alter, 227
Bastard children, planned for, 20
Basutoland, So. Africa, 50
Basuto tribe, Africa, 302
Batman, 336
Bauer, David, 375
Bauer, orig. Rothschild name, 44
Baum, Frank, 99-100
Bavaria, government of, 204
Baxley, GA, 370
Bayberry, 50
Bayley Scale of Infant Development BSID, 23
Baylor University, TX, 146
Be Wise As Serpents, 100, 127, 130-31, 140, 144, 147, 149, 267, 351
Beahrs, study 1982, 194
Beaming, magic technique, 234
Bearhrs, John O., 191
Beast Barracks, USMA, West Point, 41, 264
Beast Computers, (external/or internal) See BEAST Computers
Beast w/ 10 toes, from Daniel, 80
Beast with 10 toes, 310
Beast, the, accomplice of external AntiChrist, 220, 374
Beast, shall be one in mind with world, 181
Beatles, band chosen by Illuminati, 355
Beatles, role of songs, 84
Beaumont, TX Enterprise, 371
Becoming ritual, 213
Bee Stinging Program, 76
Bee Traps w/ swarms, internal, 188
Beecher, Dr., 50, 367
Beelzebub, demon, 214, 295, 296, 301
Beerflower (see Hops)
Bees, the, Army's help for m.c. soldier, 314
Behavior Modification, 268-269
Behemoth, demon, 295
Belair, 8
Belair, term for Satan, 349
Belgium, 1, 370, 387
Belgium, Illuminati HQ castle, photo, 387
Belgium-French border, 213
Beliah, demon, 301
Belize, 369
Belk Stores, 146
Bell Telephone, Boston, MS, 313
Bell, Book & Candle, film, 354
Bell, in Satanic baptism ceremony, 291
Bell, use in ceremony, rung 4 direction, 295
Belladonna, 48
Bells of Destruction Programming, 225
Belphegor, demon, 214
Beltaine Hunts, 201
Beltaine ceremony, honors Mother part, 217
Beltaine ritual, 81
Bend, OR, 300
Bendocaine, 48
Bennet, John G., 148
Bennett, Bill, Sec. of Ed., 367
Bennett, Clifton B., 369
Bennett, Richard, 131
Benzatropine, 55
Benzidrene, 48
Benztropine mesylate, 55
Bergmann, Ernst, 363
Berkey, C. Joseph, 369
Berkowitz, David, 99
Berlin, Germany, 364
Bert, Paul, 260
Bertieaux, Michael, 122
Bes, demon over dwarfs, 301
Besch, Helen and George, 315
Beserkers, 61
Bestiality, 166
BETA TOPICS
Beta Codes, section, 78-79
Beta Model, 12
Beta Model, qualifications, 12
Beta Theta Pi, 351
Beta alters, view selves as cats, 7
Beta domino codes, 78
Beta model, sex restricted to orders, 276
Beta signals, used to induce OBEs, 319
Beta training, 383
Beta waves, 313
Beta, book's usage of term defined, 7
Betazoids, 356
Bethel HQ, Watchtower Society, 61
Bethesada Naval Hospital, MD, 51, 367, 379
Bethesada Naval Hospital, MD, drug research, 51
Bethesada General Hospital, 56
Bethesada, MD, 379
Betty Boob Programming, 79
Bewitched (movie), 72, 336, 354
Bi-location physical projection, 234
Bi-polar world, 160
Bibiaca, effigy of Black Virgin, 353
Bible, Holy, Christian, (see also Scripture Index), 71 192, 307-313
Bible, Star Trek, 356
Bible, becomes a trigger, 308
Bible, calls alien types demons/reprobates, 119
Bible, often used for codes, 71
Bible, reasons for misuse in programmg, 308
Bible, speaks about spiritual warfare, 209

Biblical counsel for helping MPD victim, 6
Big Bertha computer, 331
Big Brothers, programming at, 124
Big Sur, CA, 325
Bilair, name for Satan, 69, 214
Bilar, name for Satan, 69, 214
Bilid, name for Satan, 69, 214
Billina, 111
Billy Boy, cover name for Bowers, 367
Billy Graham A Prophet with Honor, 140
Billy Graham Crusade Exec. Comm., lies, 131
Billy Graham Crusade Staff, 130-131
Billy Graham Crusades financed by Illum., 133, 136
Billy Graham New York Crusade, 139
Billy Graham Reformer? Politician?..., 140
Billy Graham, A Parable of Amer. Right, 135, 139
Billy Graham, witnesses to his Mas. mbrsp, 144
Binah, 214
Binding, in brain, in phase firings, 259
Bingham, UT, 379
Biochip, Fairchild's, 184
Biofeedback, 253-254
Biofeedback, can control 1 single cell, 254
Biofeedback, to skin, 251
Biographic leverage, blackmail term, 346
Biological Dept. Air Force Research, 313
Biomedical, company, 166
Birch trees, use in Druidism, 216
Bird alters, 197
Bird, the, name for Ft. Holabird, 380
Birdcages, as a carrier pigeon signal, 353
Birthday traumas, 40, 67
Birthdays, special traumas reserved for, 67
Birthright, satanic, 293, 309
Bise, William, 168
Bishop, Joey, 358
Bishops, Amish, meet annually, 151
Bitsy Boob, mentioned in Labyrinth, 231
Bitterness, 307
Black Diamond Pylon, 371
Black Forest, Germany, programming site, 379
Black Glass Wall, internal, 188
Black Holes (vortexes), internal, 188
Black Kali, 219
Black King, is Devil, in Chess Progrmg, 220
Black Onyx, 292
Black Order, S.S., 325
Black Sabbath band, 370
Black Saturn, 69
Black Trainees, term, 379
Black Virgin, 353
Black Widow Spider system, 223
Black Widow Spiders, slaves, 346, 349
Black Widow alters, 12, 79-80, 197
Black and white thinking, 266, 284, 289
Black diamonds, internal, 223
Black helicopters, based at Mt. Shasta, 381
Black magicians, defensive magic skills, 313
Black mass, early prgrmg trauma, 39, 292
Black, Eugene R., 354
Black, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Black, hypnotism-body researcher, 253

BLACKMAIL

Blackmail, 51, 135, 223, 226, 301, 346-347
Blackmail alters, 197
Blackmail, about burning in hell, 226
Blackmail, by P2 Freemasonry for membrs, 135
Blackmail, internal and external, 301
Blackmail, internal system for, 223
Blackmail, of wounded G.I.s, 51
Blackwell, demon, 301
Blame and hate, channeled by programr, 269
Blame, shifted onto slave, 284
Blavatsky, Helena P., 100-101, 156
Blindness Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Blindness, body program, 253
Blinds, discussed, 156
Bliss, study 1986, 194
Block Cut-out, 154
Blocker alters, 197

BLOOD TOPICS

Blood & perfume, used for centuries, 44
Blood Flow/Circ. body program, 76
Blood Orgies, trauma, 38
Blood Rites, Voodau, 304
Blood Secrets, 302
Blood Will Never Lose Its Power, the, 85
Blood flow/circulation, body program, 253
Blood glucose, 262
Blood oaths, 224
Blood oaths, in JuJu, 302
Blood of Jesus, tool for helping, 228
Blood pressure, high, 255
Blood pressure, related to hormones, 255
Blood rituals of Illuminati, 7
Blood sacrifice, importance in demonlgy, 290-291
Blood sacrifice, to be reinstituted by AChrist, 373
Blood sacrifices, 19, 290-291, 304, 314
Blood sacrifices, by U.S. warrior monks, 314
Blood tests for drug levels, 55
Blood transfusion, fake, for programmg, 281
Blood, Linda, 369
Blood, a natural phobia, 37
Blood, color code, 238
Blood, name of demon, aka Yahwah Elohim, 301
Blood, drawn from left hand, 292
Blood, fed in initial traumas, 25
Blood, of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, 188
Blount, Larry D., 369
Blue Room, balancing point, 212

Blue Room, in System's Tree of Life, 212
Blue Rose of the Cabala, 215
Blue Topaz, as code, 90
Blue Velvet, 84
Blue, color code, meaning of, 328
Blue, shades of, color code, meaning of, 329
Blueprints, Mormon Tmpl, Lake Oswego,OR, 155
Bob Jones University, 141
Bobby's World Cartoons, 336, 354
BODY TOPICS
Body Functions Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Body Gesture Subcodes, Univ. Func. Code, 81
Body Programs listed, 76, 253
Body Programs, 76, 202, 253, 257
Body Programs, anchor, heartbeat, 253
Body Programs, codes, 74, 80-81, 253
Body gesture Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Body memories, by victims of mind contr, 165
Body of Christ, fruit hurt by Graham, 132
Body of Christ, full stature needed, 6
Body of Christ, heartbeat, 126, 276
Body parts, drug illusion of being gone, 54
Boeing, 18, 355, 379
Boeing 737s, used on most Janet flights, 331
Boeing Plant workers, 355
Boeing Plant, Seattle, WA area, 379
Boeing, rituals & mind control done at, 355
Bohemian Grove, CA, 33
Bohemian Grove, abuse of slaves, 33
Boiling program, 226
Bokors, sorcerers, 50
Bolling, Landrum, 56
Bombchild alters, 197
Bombs, internal, connected to gems, 205
Bona Fides, 71, 77,105
Bonanno, Joseph, 133
Bondage Loop created by Satan, 277
Bondage Loop, Pan-Rege-Baccus, 302
Bondage tools, rejection & retaliation, 277
Bonding, 44, 341, 359
Bonding, melting script, 311
Bonding, trauma to master, 341
Bone disorder, body program, 253
Bone marrow, produces stem cells, 251
Bone-handled knife, used for prgmg sacrifice, 34
Book of Names, the, 292
Book of Pheryllt, 277
Book of Records, internal, in library, 76
Book of Revelation, 293
Book of Samuel, the, 289
Book of Satan, the, 291
Book of Shadows, 204
Book of Spells, 350
Book, *Great White Book*, which records all of
  Satan's achievemts, 213, 292
Book, code book of handler, 166
Boolean Algebra, 187
Boone, Debbie, 136
Boone, Pat, 136
Bosnian conflict, as a control device, 324
Boston Psychopathic Hospital, 51
Boston State Hospital, mental hosp., 299
Boston, MS, 313
Boulder, CO, 379
Bournell-Hightower, programmer, 95
Bowart, Walter, 119-122, 353
Bowers, Ken, 253
Bowers, Wilbur (Bill), 318, 366, 367
Bowie, David, 229
Bowlin, Pat, 369
Box, opens for Princess Progm to activate, 227
Box, under Cabal. Tree of Life, 214
Boxcar Willie, 368
Boxes, internal, 157
Boxes with Programming, 90
Boxes within Boxes, technique, 93, 158
Boxes, Internal, put in at Scotty's Castle, 382
Boxes, how programmed in, 208
Boxes, internal, Dr. Green's, 188
Boxes, internal, deadly, 208
Boy Scouts, programming at sites, 124
Boy's Town, NE, 10
Boyce, Bart, 315
Boyle's Law, 261
Boys, sexual grooming of, 207
Bozeman, Clayton C., 369
Bracelet, as code, 309
Bracelets, used to teach switch sequence, 230
Bradley, Curtis C., 369
Braemer, Alice, 128, 135
Brahm's Lullaby, 84
Brahmin caste, India, 60
Brahmin fakirs, 60
Braiding, French, conceal 4th strand, 330
BRAIN, THE
Brain Research Institute, UCLA, 180
Brain Transmitters, 181
Brain Waves, types of, 313
Brain disorder Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Brain growth according to stimulation, 43
Brain scanned by probe, 356
Brain stem scarring, 247-248
Brain waves, alpha, beta, delta, theta, 180
Brain, "Mammalian", human, 258
Brain, "Reptilian", human, 258
Brain, Cephalic Index, 169, 171
Brain, Limbic-hypothalamic system, 42, 57, 253, 255-
  256
Brain, Reticular Formation (see Ret. Formation)
Brain, abilities to control mind, 254

Brain, ability to run two tracts, 57
Brain, feels like mush program, 76
Brain, frontal lobes, 43
Brain, has a deep & accurate awareness, 37
Brain, molecular aspects of memory, 257-258
Brain, natural alarm clock, 272
Brain, neurons & synapses, 258
Brain, number of chemical reactions/min, 37
Brain, number of neurons (nerve cells), 37
Brain, of a Monarch slave, 37
Brain, personal history memory section, 41
Brain, primitive level for heart beat, 60
Brain, research about it, 250
Brain, reticular formation, scarring of, 247
Brain, semifocal distance of, 169
Brain, split brain work, 248-250
Brain, worked with as if divided in 5/7, 258
Brains, of MPD persons different, 250
Brains, of Multiples, have diff. PET scans than non-mult., 208, 250
Brainwashing in Red China, 4
Brass statues, 19
Brauche, Amish witchcraft, 152
Braude, S.E., 273
Brave New Waterworld, 260
Bravo 2 series models of slaves, 180
Brazil, 273, 304, 320, 371
Brazilian spiritism, 273
Bread & Circus, 351
Breast implants, 54
Breast implants, possible histamn boost, 252
Breast implants, public hearings in '92, 252
Breath, pacing speech according to, 271
Breathing, controlled via biofeedback, 253
Breathing, relationship to actv hmisphr, 249
Breeders, Illuminati, 21
Breeders, KKK, 22
Breeders, Satanic cults, 21-22
Brezinski, Zbigniew, 339
Bribes, 347
Bride of AntiChrist, 69
Bride of Satan Ceremony, 81
Bride of Saturn, 212
Bridge, main and battle, 240
Bridgett, daughter of Jane Fonda, 354
Bright, Bill's ministry, 148
Brimstone, 369, 370
Britain, information control, 124
British Government, private ph. exchang, 383
British Intelligence (see also MI-5 & MI-6), 18
British Scientists, 34
British Sec. Coord. Spec. Traing School, 354
British navy, 259
Brodmann areas no. 9-12, 43
Bromoharmine, 48
Brooklyn, NY, 313
Brooks AFB, TX, 167
Brooms, witches, from willows, 216
Brown, Barbara, 253
Brown, programmer, 95
Brownfield, Dick, 242
Browning, Willie, 369
Bruises, types caused by shocks, 165
Brussels, Belgium, 331
Bryan Stewart, 356
Bryan, Dr. William Jennings, 367
Bryan, William Jenning, III (see Bryan, 358
Bryan, William Joseph, Jr., 358
Bryon, William Joseph (see Bryan, William), 358
Bubbles, dream, portrayed, 231
Buchanan, John, 149
Buckman, Samuel, 369
Buffalo Bill, 382
Bugs, range, 345
Buick, 350
Bulbocapnine, 48
Bumper Stickers, Billy Graham, 143
Bunker, M.N., 267
Burcham, programmer, 95, 367
Burdette, Ray, 368
Bureau of Narcotics, 18, 51
Bureau of Prisons, 18
Buried alive memories, 226
Burn Witch Burn, film, 354
Burnell-Hightower, 367
Burning Program, 76, 226
Burning the hands, foundation for burn prgm, 67-68
Burns, LTC Frank, 315, 324-325
Burrows, John, cover name for Elvis, 355
Bush, Pres./CIA Dir., 56, 325, 351
Bush, George, Jr., 369
Bushman, used in analogy, 104
Busy Cleaning Program, 76
Butabarbital sodium, 48
Butch, William T., 369, 370
Butner, NC, 379
BUTTERFLY TOPICS
Butter-fly-Net Villa, 19
Butterflies, 188
Butterflies, broken, term, 349
Butterflies, how made 39
Butterflies, the, Army's m.c. soldiers, 314
Butterfly (song), 85
Butterfly tattoo, 344
Butterfly torture, 39
Buttons, internal, 188
Butyl-bromallyl-barbituric acid, 48
By Way of Deception, 344-345
Byrd, Sen. Robert C., 367, 369
Béhémoth, demon, 296

C language, 332
C-130s, used for cargo to Dreamland, 331
C-9 Report, 143
C-Section, 24
$C0_2$ Break Point mechanism, 262
C3 security clearance, 2
C^3I, of Pentagon, 294
CBR, 47
CFR (Council on Foreign Relations), 56, 61, 128, 144,149
CHi Honeywell Bull, France
CHiram, 162
CIA (Central Intelligence Agency), 3, 10, 13-15, 18, 32, 43, 47, 51, 56, 97, 99, 124, 128, 136, 179, 183, 267, 271, 294, 313, 318, 326, 331, 343, 345, 346, 364, 380, 381
CIA & False Memory Syndrome, 43
CIA is a gnostic cult, 267
CIA satellites, 294
CIA, A-12 spy plane, 331
CIA, Lampe, MO hideout, 381
CIA, administrator, 128
CIA, drug smuggling, 124
CIA, efforts to use ELF to plant thoughts, 179
CIA, have sophisticated knowledge of sex, 207
CIA, hides its mental assessment research, 13-15
CIA, is Illuminati front, 10
CIA, millions spent on ESP, 318
CIA, uses Ericksonian methods of hypnosis, 271
CIA, uses Media to transmit messages, 380
CIC (army intelligence), 17, 339, 380
CIRVIS, 18
COBOL 74 computer language, 247
COBOL CP-6 computer language, 247
COBOL Cb. 4 computer language, 247
COBOL computer language, 247
COSMIC security clearance, 2
CTHULHU, demon, 302
CURV (cable-controlled Underwtr Recvry, 262
CUT (Church Universal & Triumphant), 125, 267
CABALA
Cabala, 163, 209-215, 321, 349
Cabala, alternate spellings, 209
Cabala, drawing, 210
Cabala, origin of word, 209
Cabala, synonymous with Hermetic magic, 212
Cabala, what it is the basis of, 209
Cabalistic Jew, studies of the Cabala, 299
Cabalistic Judaism, 374
Cabalistic Keys to the Lord's Prayer, 349
Cabalistic Tree of Life, 21, 69, 81, 204, 292
Cabalistic Tree of Life, internal, 209-217
Cabalistic Tree of Life, upside down, 212-213
Caduceus, relationship to Cabala, 221
Caduceus, usage in ancient occult world, 221
Cafeteria, Ft. Meade, MD, 247
Caffeine, 48
Caffeine sodium, 48
Caffeine, aids telepathy, 320
Cages, for programming, 31-33
Cages, programming, 335
Caillech, 218
Cake, called Majic, Red or Acacia, 295
Caladium sequinum, 50
Calamas, 50
Calcium Chloride, 48
Caledonia, 218
Calf, golden, Saturn worship, 159-160
California, 369, 370
California Instit. of Tech., Pasadena,CA, 32
California Medical Facility, Vacaville, 51
California, named after Caillech, 218
Caligula, 374
Call Back Ritual Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Callback, final, slaves will be hidden, 225
Cambodian crime syndicate, 202
Camelot & Shakespeare Programming, 282
Camera, internal, 228
Cameras, observation, Ft. Meade, MD, 247
Cameron, Dr. D. Ewen, 120, 280, 366, 367, 372-373
Camp Perry, CIA, the Farm, VA, 354, 367, 379
Camp X, 354
Camp, the, MI-6, 354
Campbell, Adam N., 369
Campbell, Glen, 368
Canaanite Mystery Rel., 46
Canada, 354
Canada, Miss, 357
Canada, outlaws telepathy drug, 320
Canada, pipeline to states for victims, 363
Canadian Psychiatric Association, 372
Canadian Scientific Planning Committee, 372
Candles, lighted, used for dissociation, 303
Candyland, internal, 188
Candyman, the, 85
Cannabidiol, 48
Cannabinol, 48
Cannabis, 48
Cannabol, 48
Cannibalism, 113, 125, 304, 352
Cannibalism, Voodoo, Haiti, 304
Cannibalism, films of, 352
Cannibalism, forced on child victim, 113
Cannibalism, gypsies, 352
Cannibalism, programming script for, 109, 115
Canon, Ace, 368
Cantonsville State Hosp., Cantonsv., MD, 153
Capitalism vs. Communism, Hegel. Dial., 156
Capitals, NWO, types of listed, 374

Car Keys, used as recognition signal, 78
Car names, occultic, 349
Caramine, 48
Carboline, 48
Carbon dioxide levels in blood, 261
Carbonarism, 100
Carbrital, 48
Card Codes, 76, 89-92, 93, 333, 336
Card Codes & Doll House Rooms, 89-92
Cardiovascular System, 255
Cards, Playing, origin of, 76
Cards, programming, 336
Caretaker, assigned Preemie, 23
Caribbean, 303
Carmichael, Stockley, 383
Caroegine, 48
CAROUSEL
Carousel System, internal, 27, 209, 217-18, 219-220, 285
Carousel System codes, 77
Carousel bottom side, switching mechan., 219
Carousel toy, meaning, 272
Carousel, internal dangers of touching, 220
Carousel, placed around the core, 27
Carousel, sample code to, 74
Carper, Sue, 367, 369
Carpet, magic, internal, 188
Carr Illuminati Family, 99
Carr, Ronald I., 258
Carrico, David, 46
Carrier Pigeon codes, 77, 79
Carrier Pigeons, 197
Cars, used by draconian enforcers, 343
Cartoon, Bob Hope chasing a WREN girl, 353
Cartwright, Glenn F., 256
Carville, James, 348
Casey, Bill, 365
Cassiday, Karen, 353
Castillo, Luis Angel, 371
CASTLE TOPICS
Castle Dungeon, internal, 188, 227
Castle Lights, 220
Castle Programming, 228
Castle System codes, 77
Castle System, internal, 209, 220, 222, 285
Castle System, sample code to, 74
Castle grid, 220
Castle library, 220
Castle of Kings, Chateau des Amerois, Mthr. of Dkns Castle HQ, 213, 387
Castle, at Disneyland, 380
Castle, in Labyrinth like Emrld City, 229
Castle, internal, 90
Castle, main, internal, 222
Castle, on Krull, 357
Castles, Black Forest, ritual & progrmg, 379
Castles, demonic, internal, 300
Castles, haunted, 104
Castles, internal, 188
Castles, spiritual, 223
Casts, of faces, 282
Casual Evidence, the value of, 130
Casuro Holidays, MI-5 front, 383
Cat Girl, movie, 358
Catacombs, internal, 220
Catatonia, drug to cause, 48
Cathedral, in Mother's castle, 213
Catholic Church (some more is under Graham, Billy), 18, 29, 124, 140, 142, 152, 301
Catholic Church part of NWO, 140
Catholic Church subversion of Anabaptists, 152
Catholic Military Schools, rel. fronts, 124
Catholic Orphanages, 124
Catholic Standard and Times, 142
Catholic church & the use of pagan symb, 350
Catholic programming codes section, 93
Catholic saints, added to make Voodoo, 304
Catholic saints, equated with afr.gods, 304
Cats, big, programming script for, 112
Cats-eye stone, 218
Cattle Mutilations, 119
Cattle Prods, types used, 165
Caughlin, Charles, 382
Cauldron, owned by crone, 218
Cave & Well, internal system, 209,220
Cave exit, 220
Caves, internal, 188
Cayce, Edgar, 375
Cayenne Pepper, 50
Cedar Chest, part of programming, 208
Cedars of Lebanon, internal, 188
Cell, Basophil, 251-252
Cell, Mast, 251-252
Cells, CNS Central Nervous System cells, 251
Cells, stem, produced in bone marrow, 251
Celtic geometric art, 190
Celts (see also Druids), 190
Censer used in ritual, 82
Center for Scientific Invest. of Claims of the Paranormal, 184
Center of the Form, the, 315
Central Intelligence Agency, (CIA), 3, 10, 13-15, 18, 32, 43, 47, 51, 56, 97, 99, 124, 128, 136, 179, 183, 267, 271, 294, 313, 318, 326, 331, 343, 345, 346,364, 380, 381
Central State Hosp., Indianapolis, IN, 154
Central, or Beast computer, how put in, 330
Century House, Westminster Bridge Rd., 383
Cephalic Index of Brain, 169
Cerebral cortex, 43-44

CEREMONIES
Ceremonial magic, 122
Ceremonies, dealing w/ Tree of Life, 213
Ceremonies, give demons authority, 275
Ceremony, Illuminati, programming script, 108
Ceremony, Kore raped in Hades, 219
Ceremony, blood frm tongue & genital, 291
Ceremony, eating the dove, 212
Ceremony, reenactment of Kali w/ Shiva, 219
Ceremony, secret Ill. w/ animal masks, 231
Ceremony, white and black stones, 312
Chahkra points, 290
Chaigidel, demon, 214
Chain Cut-out, 154
Chain of command, internal, 337
Chameleon analogy, 125
Chandler, Kendal T., 369
Channon, LTC Jim, 314, 315-317, 325
Chanting, 265, 304
Chanting, Voodoo Rituals, 304
Chaos Magic, 370
Charani, Phoenix bird, 352
Charcoal, 50
Chariot, golden, 112
Charismatic Potter Programming, 85
Charismatic movement, 18, 125, 147, 222, 334, 383
Charismatic movement's programming, 203-204
Charismatic programming, 40
Charismatic programming/infiltration, 383
Charles' Law, 262
Charlotte, N.C., 146
CHARTS
Chart, Unification of Trance, Cds, Clrs, 91
Chart, purported alien scripts, 288
Chart, section, trance depths, codes etc., 196
Charting procedures of slave durg prgmg, 186
Charts, don't show shadow alters, 192
Charts, for a System, 86-92
Charts, of how much torture can be done, 31
Charts, used in behavior mod, 268
Chase Manhattan Bank, 56, 136
Chateau des Amerois, Belg., Mthr's castle, 213, photo 387
Chatham, LA, 369
Chavkin, Samuel, 182
Chawkins, Steve, 184
Chemical & Engineering News, 258
Chemical Bank of NY, 56
Chemical changes, in brain w/ learning, 258
Chemoreceptors, 261
Chemosh, 161
Cheney, Sec. of War Dick, 106, 107, 339
Cherokee blood, 147
Chesed, 212
Chess Board, internal system, 209, 220-221
Chess Programming, 220-221
Chess Programming, script, 116
Chest-heart area, portal, 320
Chewbacca, Star Wars, M. Aqno. progrmg, 246
Chi Codes, section, 79
Chicago Daily News, 135
Chicago, IL, 179, 364
Chiccone, Louise, Madonna's orig. name, 352
Chickens, difference w/ M. Ducks, 261
Chief, Medical Survival Training, 358
Child Control Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Child alters, 197
Child training, Amish book on, 155
Child victim in Adult world, 359
Child, how child builds its intern. wd, 16
Child, locked up in black mass, 39
Children of Lucifer (UK), 18
Children, UNIX term, 333
Children, expendable, used for box prgm, 208
Children, separated from real parents, 267
Children, today, raised on hard rock, 257
Chimps, used for programming, 34, 38
China, 4, 137, 221, 298, 339
China Lake NOTS, Naval Research Base, CA, 10, **31-34**, 313, 371
China The Untold Story, 137
China, Li intelligence service, 339
China, Red, allegations of brainwashing, 4
Chinese House church, 137
Chinese checkers, for programming, 185
Chinese communism, layered over t.s., 298
Chinese farmer, story of, 271
Chinese government,mind control tactics, 265
Chinese occultists, 221
Chinese, mind control using guilt, 284
Chingun, 18
Chiun, 160
Chloral hydrate, 48, 51
Choice, Freedom of, stripped from slave, 276
Chokmah, 212
Choronson, spirit/demon in programming, 122, 291, 301
Christ, Jesus, 6, 28-29, 280, 299, 307
Christ, Jesus, came to free captives, 6
Christ, early alters allowed to accept, 28-29
Christ, message of, 280
Christ, programming of victim against, 266
Christ, warning about secretly evil men, 150
Christian Churches, work together, 126
Christian Front Alters, attitudes & behav., 199
Christian Front Alters, how created, 199
Christian Front Alters, impact, 199
Christian News, 145
Christian alters, 328
Christian help groups, Illum. fronts, 124

Christian words, have double meaning, 163
Christianity Today, 143
Christianity, Mazda says from paganism, 350
Christians,scatterd few undrstd demons, 299
Christmas Carols, 85
Christmas Tree, 162
Christmas message, Billy Graham, 1995, 308
Christmas rituals, 308
Chromatography, 55
Chual, possessed person, 304
Chucky (aka Mike, Peters), 369
Church League of America, 140
Church Universal & Triumphant (CUT), 267
Church of God in Christ, Menn., 150
Church of Satan, 18, 323, 342, 369, 371
Church of Scientology, 1, 18, 125, 284
Church of Scientology, mind control, 1
Church of Scientology, quote ex-prgmr, 1
Church, Morning Star, 163
Church, One World, 289
Church, Presideo, used for Illum. ritual, 386
Church, in apostasy, accepts AntiChrist, 373
Churches, led by multiples, 199
Churches, which are mind-control operat., 308
Chutes & Ladders game, 224
Cigarette burns, to train child, 67
Cinderella Program codes, 74, 78
Cinderella progrmg, 380
Cingulate gyrus, 42
Cinnamon, used to program deep alters, 45
Cipher rotors, 71
Ciphers, 70
Circle In Field Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Circle of mirrors, 193
Circle, the, another name for Illuminati, 11
Circles within Circles, 93, 221
Circles within circles, script for, 310
Circo, Joe, 367
Circo, Mark, 367
Circular reasoning, 323
Circus, ancient Roman, 160
Cities, internal, 189
City of Petra, internal, 92
City of Refuge, internal, 189
Civilian Public Service, 153
Civilians, targets for ELF mind control, 319
Clark, Dee, 368
Clark, Roy, 368
Classes, blackmail & seduction, 207
Classes, children used during class time, 124
Classes, seduction & blackmail, 207
Classic Medical Products, 166
Claude Thornbill's band, 353
Clavicle of Solomon, 299
Clavicula Salomonis, 299
Clean agents, 124
Clean slates, alters with, 280
Cleansing, done with whips of willow, 215-216
Cleansing, supernatural, 307
Clear, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Cleveland State Hosp., Cleveland, OH, 153
Clicking sounds, from radar, 169
Clinton, Bill, 61, 137, 158, 351
Clinton, Bill, gives induction sign, 158
Clinton, Bill, picture at inauguration, 158
Clinton, Hillary, 348
Clitoris, mutilation of, & surgery, 207
Cliveden Estate, of Astors, 61

CLOCK TOPICS

Clock Key, internal, 189
Clock keepers, internal, 230
Clock, master, internal, 334
Clockmaker alters, 197, 230
Clockmaker, demon, 197
Clocks, internal, 158, 188, 228, 230, 231, 333
Clocks, internal, disguises of, 231
Clocks, internal, gold colored, 158

CLONE TOPICS

Clone armies, 328
Clone serial no.s, 89
Clones, can't take water, 200
Clones, how they are created, 199-200
Clones, internal, 101, 89, 199-200
Clones, where hidden, 199-200
Closet, in front of room, internal, 189
Clothes of authority worn by progrmmrs, 339
Clove Oil, 50
Clown Cutting Programming, 76
Clown alters, for suicide, 157, 198
Club 12 & Club 41, Texas, 18
Clubs, suit of cards, meaning, 76
Co-conscious, 188
Co-presence, 187
Coast Guard Academy, New London, Conn., 379
Cobra, Ford's car, 350
Cobwebs, internal, 230
Coca-cola Corp., 356
Cocaine, 48, 50, 51, 139, 381
Cocaine, CIA supplies were kept Lampe, 381
Cocaine, types of, 51
Cochlear nerve, 169
Cochran, Hank, 369
Cocoon, used to isolate rebellious alters, 227

CODES

Code for stacking alters, 203
Code to get System to call handler, 89
Code words, favorite ones listed, 70
Code words, in newspapers, and news, 380
Code words, movies with, 354
Codes to Basic Systems, 74

Codes, Astral, 215
Codes, Craft, 215
Codes, Dominos, 93
Codes, Equations, 215
Codes, Fix-me, 225
Codes, Klingon language, 234
Codes, Mayday, 225
Codes, Mensa has 6 number sequences, 94
Codes, Mother Goose nursery rhymes, 336
Codes, Pilot Programmers use plane lingo, 93
Codes, Programming Zones, 95
Codes, Sailor Prgrmmrs use nautical terms, 93
Codes, Star Trek ranks, ships, etc, 237
Codes, Union Force, 222
Codes, Word-Matrix, 78
Codes, access & backout, computers, 330
Codes, alphabet doubled with numbers, 92
Codes, basic Internal Emer. Color codes, 73
Codes, can be changed by internal prgmr, 71
Codes, cards, 76, 89-92,
Codes, deaf hand signals, 336
Codes, double helix, 221
Codes, for every person in world, 331
Codes, foreign language, 334
Codes, from Tribes of Israel, 309
Codes, how they are chosen, 71
Codes, how they may be disguised, 95
Codes, infinity loop, 8 ball, 95
Codes, math, 221-222
Codes, number sequences, 222
Codes, of Monarch Slaves, section for, 72-97
Codes, programming sites, 95
Codes, sample of a System's, 86-93
Codes, satanic philos. sentences used, 92
Codes, section, trance depths,etc. chart, 196
Codes, sent across TV during Graham Crusd, 308
Codes, slaves, bar codes used, 222
Codes, standard vs. unique, 71
Codes, taken from Poe's The Raven, 354
Codes, to prevent arrest or sentencing, 73
Codes, which are based on FAX lingo, 73
Codes, which are based on computer lingo, 73
Codes, why they use so much witchcraft, 68-69
Coe, David Allen, 368
Coffee, 48
Coffee, analogy, 144-145
Coffin, used in Anti-God programming, 274
Coffin, with Princess alter, 227
Cogs, can't rebel against machine, analogy, 208
Coin Token, used as recognition signal, 78
Cold War, 318
Collapsing anchors, 272
Collar, electronic Bark, 166
Collars, uses by Illuminati on slaves, 166
Collins Illuminati Family, 46, 359
Collins, Illuminati Grande Mother, 226
Collins, Tom, 226
Colombo, 366
Colonel Taylor, programmer, 95
Colonel, U.S. Army, helpd Aquino, 236

COLOR CODING

Color Coding, 4, 194, 212, 235, 328-329
Color Coding, how it is installed, 235
Color ID and Codes, importance of, 187
Color Programming, 32, 193-194
Color Programming, how it was put in, 329
Color Programming, script, 115
Color code, Antimony, 238
Color code, Blood, 238
Color code, Indigo, & Ultramarine, 238
Color code, Nude, & Oxide, 238
Color coded graphs, in *Codebooks*, 4
Color codes, Star Trek, 241
Color codes, computers, 327-329
Color coding, & Tree of Life, 212
Color coding, establishes a 4th dimens., 330
Color coding, two colors per alter, 194
Colorado, 356, 369, 379
Colorado Psychopathic Hosp., Denver, CO, 154
Colorado Springs, CO, 356, 379
Colorimetry, 55
Coloring book, teaches mind-ctrl object, 350-51
Colossus- The Forbin Project, film, 181, 354
Colson, Chuck's ministry, 148
Coma body program, 253
Coma, caused by damage to reticular for, 60
Comatose state, 55
Comatose, programming, 253
Comedians, often are handlers, 285
Commandments of God, 279
Commando groups, of 1st Earth Battalion, 325
Commands, basic, 72
Commentary on the Pentateuch, III, 159
Committee of 300, 7
Committee of 500, 7
Communication System, sample code to, 74
Communication systems, internal, 236
Communion, Christian, reversed by black mass, 292
Communion, Christian, w/ locked up child helpful for system, 39
Communism, 156-57
Communism, types of, 298
Communist manual on brainwashing, 274
Comparing, warning against, 276-277
Compasses, internal, 227, 333
Compazine, 55
Complications, to the torture, 45
Compu-kids, whiz kids, 247-248, 370

COMPUTERS

Computer Core, Star Trek, 240

Computer Depts., Universities, 247
Computer System, 235-236
Computer System, drawing of Star Trek, 240
Computer chips, for "hot-wiring" person to a computer
Computer chips, for tracking, 294
Computer operators, race of, 356
Computer, erasure codes, 90
Computer, internal, input & reverse code, 80
Computer, internal, power sources, 327
Computer, to control minds of men, 181
Computers, Ft. Meade, MD, 247
Computers, assist in virtual reality, 256
Computers, external, 247
Computers, have own addresses, 331
Computers, how they are built into mind, 329
Computers, internal power sources, 89
Computers, internal, ability to reboot, 90
Computers, internal, codes, etc., 92
Computers, internal, connecting, 228
Computers, number within a system, 90
Computers, protected memory, 186
Computers, research to protect memory, 26
Computers, section, internal, 228
Con-Med, 166
Concentration Camps, Nazi, 11, 366, 371
Concentration camps, US, for NWO, 182
Concentration camps, internal, 27, 87,188
Conclusions, how to form, discussed, 129
Conditional will, of God, 290
Conditioning, adverse, term, 268
Conditioning, classic, 269
Condon, Richard, 357
Confession, as a control mechanism, 284
Confusion Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Confusion, how it is used, 264
Congressional House Comm. on UnAmer. activ, 4
Congressman, who did like NSA surveillance, 380
Connelly, Jennifer, 229
Conscientious Objectors, 153-154
Conscientious Objectors tortured to death, 153
Conshelf Underwater experiment, 262
Conspiracy, Aquarian, 194
Constitution, manipulated to protect SRA, 369
Contracts, Las Vegas, used as enticemnt, 340
Control Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Control of self, given to others, 266
Control of the Milieu, 347-359
Control signs, 71
Coordinate System, Monarch, 236, 243
Copacabana Beach, Brazil, 303
Copper Man, 110-111
Copying large amounts of written mater., 265
Coramine, 48
Cord, magical element, 190
Cord, silver, 330
Cords, connection slave to Papa, 227, 228, 330
Cords, internal, 188

CORE

Core, 4, **26-27**, 37, **43-44**, 87, 220, 300, 337
Core Protector Codes, 87
Core related alters, 197
Core, Illum. tests different placements, 26
Core, charted in esoteric language, 4
Core, early traumas, 220
Core, false ones, 27
Core, how it is hidden, 26-27
Core, how its charted & disguised, 37
Core, initial programming, 27
Core, involvement spiritually, 300
Core, portrayed by baby in Labyrinth, 229
Core, represented by an adult in system, 27
Core, safety issues for victim, 26
Core, splitting of, 25-28
Core, system of alters protect the core, 337
Core, victim wants to protect it, 26
Core, what it is, 26
Corn, Pat, 368
Cornelious, Helen, 368
Corner trances, programming script for, 109
Corpus Christi, TX, 190
Corpus callosum, 248
Cortex, auditory, 167
Cortex, role in long term memory, 258
Cosmic egg, attached to Yggdrasil tree, 217
Costa Rica, 181
Costumes, worn by programmers, 366
Cougar, Mercury, 350

COUNCILS

Council of 3, Illuminati reps for False Trin., 7
Council of 5, Illuminati, 7
Council of 7, Illuminati, 7
Council of 9, Illuminati, 7, 182
Council of Nine, Temple of Set, 369-370
Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), 56, 61, 128, 144, 149
Council, Star Wars, M. Aqno. progrmg, 246
Council, on Trancer II, 357
Councils, Illuminati, 7, 127, 205, 358
Councils, Illuminati, described, 7
Counters, for bugs, don't go high enough, 345
Country Roads, 85
Country Western Industry, front for drugs, 353
Country Western Industry, prgmg front, 125
Country Western Industry, roots in USO, 353, 371
Country Western Music Industry, 18, 353, 371, 381
Country Western Music Industry, origins, 371
Courage, asked from the reader, 126
Courage, needed by therapist & victim, 6
Courier alters, 197

Coven alters, 197
Coven leader, 204
Coven level, 293
Coven of the 21st Star, 300
Coven records, annually sent in to Ill., 204
Coven, which tortured teenagers discvrd, 341
Covenants, 309
Covenants, blood, 292-293
Covens, satanic, discuss benefits of BG, 138
Covers & Fronts, external, 123-155
Covers, questions ask in designing cvr, 123
Covers, trade occupations, 345
Cowardly Lion, of Oz, 114
Cox, Wayne, 367, 368
Crack, the drug, 50
Crayons, used in programming, 264
Crazy, 85
Crazy Program, 76
Creativity, components of, 64
Creativity, how to stimulate, 65, 268
Creativity, stimulated by behavior mod, 268
Crematorium, used in programming, 200
Cricket, 114, 117, 157
Cricket clicker, used by Mengele, 114, 157
Cricket noise maker, used in programmg, 114, 157
Cricket, used as cover name for Mengele, 157
Crime Syndicates, Cam. Viet. & Mafia, 202
Criss-cross Programming, 84
Criteria, physical, mental, sexual, 29
Critical thinking, forbidden, 266
Croats, who helped Nazis, 364
Cron, UNIX term, 333
Crone parts of triad goddesses, 218
Cross Programming codes, 83
Cross torture, memory protects vow, 293
Crossfire, 128
Crow, W.B, 57
Crowley, Aleister, 19, 69, 163, 370
Crown, horned, 218
Crown, the, top of middle pillar, 212
Cruels effets de la vengeance du Card..., 295
Crusade documents, B.G., using md cntl, 133
Crusade, B.G., statistics, 142
Crusades, B.G., Madison Ave. techniques, 143
Crusades, B.G., counselors not to prose, 142
Crusades, B.G., help Catholic church, 131-132
Cruse, Roger D., 370
Cryptonyms, 95
Crystal ball, home for deeper alters, 204
Crystal balls, 104, 135
Crystal balls, sold by Jeanne Dixon, 135
Crystal, internal, 333
Crystalline body, 234, 356
Crystals, focal points, 290
Crystals, internal, early splits, 27
Crystals, liquid, 183
Cuba, 304
Cues, for obedience, 339
Cues, made out of everyday items, 58, 158
Cumbey, Constance, 102
Cumes, used to identify adult victims, 30
Cup, Army, telescoping, 224
Cup, magical element, 190
Cups, wooden ritual, for human fat, 44
Curare, 48
Curious Myths of the Middle Ages, 82
Curse of the Voodoo, film, 354
Curses, 292
Curzon St., London, 383
Cut-outs, described, defined, 154
Cutting Program, Pain is Love, 76
Cutting Programs, hidden behind Bees, 76
Cutting the hand, conditioning to trance, 269
Cyberneticist, 356
Cybernetics, 247
Cyberspace, for programming, 256
Cyborg, 359
Cyclone, meaning in greek is snake, 101

D-notice, 124
D-notice Committee, Britain, 124
D.A.V.I.D. Jr, machine, 183
DARCOM, U.S. Army, 331
DC-3 plane, programming prop, 381
DIA Defense Intelligence Agency, 32, 79, 313
DNA internal, 190, 219
DNA codes, 76
DNA transaction process, 179
DOD Department of Defense, 331
DSM III-R, 3, 8
DSM IV, 3
Daath room, 214
Daemons, UNIX term, 332
Dagon, Cult of, secretly kept alive, 302
Dagon, demon, 301-302
Daily, Mayor of Chicago, 138
Daisies, 44, 233
Daisies, Oz programming, 115
Daisies, use of in programming, 53, 115, 335, 371
Daisy Programming, Mengele, 371
Daisy petal torture, 53
Daisy World, 44
Dakshinakali, 219
Dalai Lama, 356, 364
Dalath, correspondences given, 69
Dallas, TX, 97, 347
Damage, programming to body, 257
Damballa, african god/spirit, 304
Dameon, demon, 301

Damien movies, 336, 375
Dan, Tribe of, 350, 376
Dan, tribe of, works with Satan, 350
Dance magic, in Labyrinth, 230
Dance of Hod, 292
Dance, function of right brain, 248
Dancing, rapid beat, Voodoo, 304
Daniel's Vision of 10-toed figure, 80
Daniel, the prophet, 6
Dark Emerald Green, color code, meaning, 328
Dark Mother, the, 218
Darth Vader, 236
Darth Vader, role used by programmer, 234
Dartmouth secret conferences, 56
Data, 356
Data alters, 197
Data bus lines, UNIX, 333
Data, dehumanized information holder, 234
Date programming, how done, 60
Datura stramonium, 50
David, name for Mengele, 371
Davidson, John, 315
Davis v. Oilfield Scrap & Equipment, 341
Davis, Angela, 383
Davis, Mary, 341
Davis, Sammy, Jr., 358
Day Care Centers, electro-shock done at, 167
Day Care Centers, mind control in, 267
Dayton, OH, 383
Daytona Beach, FL, 370
De Sabrato, 375
De Vinko, Mickey, 99
De-programming, 301
DeBolt, Dave, 368
DeCecco, R. Amn, 370
DeMoley Program, 145
Dead Drop Boxes, 157
Dead Sea Scrolls, 336
Deaf & Dumb alters, 197
Deafness Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Death Head, insignia, 325
Death Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Death Valley National Monument, 382
Death Valley, CA, 32, 34, 370, 380
Death Valley, ritual sites by Robinson, 370
Death alters, 197
Death, burial, resurrection ceremony, 213, 217, 308
Death, program to fake being dead, 253
Death, pseudo, created by drugs, 50
Death, simulated, as a trauma, 38
Death, spiritual, 278
Death, types that Programmers give, 290
Debivort, Lawrie, 315
Debriefing, wet ops, described, 154
Deception, stock tools, 155-158
Deceptions, internal, 157-58
Deceptions, some used for centuries, 125
Decision Magazine cover w/ Infinity Loop, 134
Decision magazine, 133, 134
Declination Plane, 243
Dedicating rights to God, 276
Dee, Sir John, 122, 287
Deep Space Nine, Star Trek spinoff, 234
Defense Intelligence Agency DIA, 313
Defenses, in depth, 224-229
Deflection, discussed, 156
Degradation of man important for md.cntrl., 274
Degradation, part of Psyc. Motiv., 269
Dehaven, Penny, 368
Dehumanization Process, 264, 280-283
Dehydration, 226
Deja Vu, 85
Delacroix, author, 295
Delaney, Michael, 366, 367
Delaware State Hosp., Parnhurst, DL, 153
Delegation of authority, internal comptrs, 326-327
Delegation, Monarch is good example of, 186
Delgado, Prof. Jose, 181, 323
Deliverance ministries, send demons to G.'s throne, 296
Deliverance ministry, book's use defined, 7
Deliverance, ministries, attacked, 123
DELTA TOPICS
Delta Assassination Teams, 7, 318, 324, 367
Delta Assassination alters, (See Delta alters)
Delta Codes, section, 79-80
Delta Force, 12, 18, 314, 315, 324-326
Delta Force, the, thanked by Channon, 315
Delta alters, 7, 79, 197, 200, 219, 224, 268-269, 328
Delta alters, assassination method, 201
Delta models or series of slaves, 7, 12, 180
Delta teams, Amish, 153-155
Delta teams, taught telepathy, 318
Delta wave sleep, machine induced, 183
Delta waves, 313
Delta, usages defined, 7
Delta-Beta alters, 268-269
Delusions, 323
Delvinyl sodium, 48
Demerol, 48, 52
Demeter, mother of Kore, 219
Demiurge Saturnes, 161
Democracy, myth of, 121
Democritus, 157
DEMON, see also SPIRIT
Demon Revels Rituals, 81
Demon possession, beliefs of Am. psychol., 303
Demon, Addramalech, 214
Demon, Agrath, 214

Entrance to the well-guarded Mother-of-darkness castle in Belgium, where a special large book records daily in blood the activities of the Illuminati to bring in the reign of the AntiChrist.

Wash building which has high-tech secret entrance to tunnels below Portland Mormon Temple, where Illuminati rituals, programming, and porn shows, and gladiator matches occur.

Mother of Darkness Castle.

Wash building with tunnels connecting it to Mormon Temple.

Double coding schemes, 89
Double look alike program, 360
Double serpent sceptre of Ishtar, 219
Double-agents, British run, 383
DOUBLE BINDS
Double-bind statements, 102
Double-binds, 102, 158, 197, 203, 265, 308-309
Double-binds, love-hate, given to Gatekpr, 203
Double-minded men, warning about, 306
Doubles (mirror images), on Star Trek, 356
Dove alters, 197
Dove, Sally Elizabeth, 375
Dow Chemical, 252
Dr. Black (see Wheeler, Leo)
Dr. Blue (see Mueller, Heinrich)
Dr. Goldfoot & the Bikini Machine, film, 354
Dr. Green (see Mengele, Joseph)
Dr. Jekyll/Mr. Hyde effect, 31
Dr. White (see Cameron, D. Ewin)
Draconian enforcers, 343
Dragon, druid life-force, 302
Dragon, guard of carousel, 220
Drakersbergs, Basutoland, 50
Dramamine, 48
Drawbridge, internal, 220
Drawing Down the Moon Ritual, 81
Drawing, Cabala, 210
Drawing, by victim of electric headband, 166
Drawings, Systems, internal, 211
Dreamland, Area 51, NV, 247, 331, 379
Dreams, *777* handbook for, 69
Dreams, parallel, 117
Dreamscam, 320
Drip, Drip Drip program, 226
Driving, of slaves, limited, 341
Drobinal, 48
Drown victims, extreme times in cd watr, 259
DRUG TOPICS
Drug Companies, run by Illuminati, 56
Drug Overdose Program, 76
Drug War, as a control device, 324
Drug level in blood, tests for, 55
Drug research, financed by U.S. govt., 50-51
Drug running, 371
Drug testing, for prgrg, Nimitz Hospital, 379
Drug war, a sham, 124
Drug, on Star Trek wc cause hystrc.paranoia, 356
Drug, to put into telepathic state, 320
Drugs and demonology, 50
Drugs combined with music, 256
Drugs, assist histamine production, 53
Drugs, create illusions, 53-54
Drugs, disguised in drinks, 59
Drugs, for hypnosis, 47-52
Drugs, history of occult use, 50
Drugs, how Illuminati fine tunes doses, 52
Drugs, how Multiples respond to, 51-52
Drugs, list of types of progrmmg uses, 51
Drugs, power of credited to programmer, 54
Drugs, programming to stop victim's use, 52
Drugs, secret antidotes, 52
Drugs, tested to make sure safe, 55
Drugs, to enhance trauma, 53
Drugs, used by some for creativity, 103
Drugs, used for progrmg modalities, 54
Drugs, used in split brain programming, 249
Drugs, used to create pain, 53
Drugs, used to establish a script, 54
Drugs, used to make veins burn, 53
Drugs, used to separate hemispheres, 249
Drugs, used to silence witnesses, 55
Drugs, used to take down dissociatv walls, 205
Drugs, used to teach alter positions, 54
Drugs, used to teach trance levels, 52-53
Drugs, which cause total compliance, 47-52
Druid Feast Day (Jan. 1), 81
Druid symbols, used to chart deep parts, 4
Druidic symbols used, 72
Druidism, 44, 102, 190, 200, 271, 277, 302
Druids accept Christ, 46
Drums, Tophim, to drown out cries, 302
Drums, Voodoo Rituals, 304
Drusky, Roy, 368
DuNard-Phillips, Carolyne, 370
DuPont chemicals, 252
Duality, symbolized by caduceus, 221
Duels to the death, Illuminati ritual, 81
Duck Tails Cartoons, 336, 354
Ducktails, reversals, 272
Duke Illuminati Bloodline, 155, 318
Duke University, 318
Duke University Parapsychology Lab, 313
Duke, Dorris, 103
Dulles, Alan, 136, 369, 372
Dulles, John Foster, 365
Dummy Pipe, goes nowhere, does nothing, 242
Duncan's Masonic Ritual, 129
Dungeon tortures, Y.Charm School, 383
Dungeon, internal, 228
Dungeon, torture, internal in castle, 220
Duplicity, 279
Durga, term for Kali, 353
Durham, NC, 313
Duri,dwarf, 301
Dwarfs, 105, 113
Dwarfs, in movie and internal, 230
Dwarfs, internal, demons, 227, 300

ECG machines, 166

EDOM, 47, 181-182
EEG, 15-17, 44, 169, 181, 319
EEG & programming, 15-17
EEG Monitoring, from a distance, 181
EEG Placement Systems, 166
EEG machines, new ones w/ up to 30 pads, 15
EEG pattern, Alphoid, 319
EEG profiles, 44
EEG sessions with children, 16-17
EEOM, 47, 182
EG&G's terminal, McCarran airport,Las Vgs, 331
EKG machines, maker of, 166
ELF research, 313
ELF transmitters, 179
ELF waves, for mind control, 179, 319
ELT behavior mod package, 268
EMC, 379
EOD, naval ordinance groups, 260
EOL computer language, 247
ESB Electrical Stimulation of the Brain, 182, 323
ESP research, 370
ESPionage, 313
ET Christ, 375
ET, film, 336, 354
EULOR computer language, 247
Eagle Jeeps, 350
Eagle claw, used in ceremony, 295
Eagle mud flaps, 350
Eagle tires, Goodyear, 350
Eagle, Naval Underwater Research ship, 262
Eagle, occult meaning, 350
Eagle, symbology of, 350
Ear, human, hearing range, 319
Earth Charter, 147
Earth Defense Programs, 226
Earth Stewardship Movement, 147
Earth Summit, 147
Earth spirits, 301
Earth, occult meaning of, 190
Earthquakes, internal, 226
Earthquakes, part of Armageddon Program, 312
East Village, NY, 352
Easter rituals, 308
Eating disorder, drug to program in, 49
Eating the Dove ceremony, 212
Ebony trees, internal, 226
Ecstasy, 48
Ecumenical activities, 377
Eddy Illuminati Family, 100
Edgar Bundy Ministries, 140
Edgewood Chemical Center, 51
Edinburgh University, Scotland, 305
Edstrom, George L., 132
Edwards AFB, CA, 34
Egen, Shane M., 370
Egendorf, 326
Egg, Cosmological, on Star Trek, T.N.G., 356
Eggs, harvested from women for experiments, 379
Ego States, conflicts, 43
Ego-center, shifted by Virtual reality, 256
Ego-states, hidden, take the pain, 194
Egypt, ancient, mention trances, 60
Egypt, use of electrical charge, 60
Egyptian Book of the Dead, 44, 336
Egyptian Magic Lodge, 370
Egyptian Myst. Rel., created multiples, 99
Egyptian Mystery Religion, 44, 99-100
Egyptian Winged-sun-disk, 355
Egyptian armies, internal, 205
Egyptian gods, 205
Egyptian gods used as codes, 89
Egyptian magic, likes images, 279
Egyptian spirits, 205
El Segundo, CA, 313, 331
Elderly MPD patients, 1
Elect, the, allowed to know secrets, 162
Electoanesthesia, 167
Electroencephalograms (EEG) & programmg, 15-16
Electra, car name is name of demon, 349
Electra, demon, 302
Electrical shocks, no. by one hospital, 373
Electro-Cap International, 166
Electro-shock, 165-166
Electro-shock, marks, moles etc., 165
Electrodes, silver-chloride, 166
Electrodes, skin mounted conductive med, 166
Electroencephalography & Clinical Neuro..., 168
Electrolytes, 56
Electrolytic Treatment, Beh. Mod., 268
Electron Beam, 167
Electronic Mail System, 332
Electronmagnetic Interaction w/ Biol..., 179
Element alters, 197, 281
Elements, four, 190
Elements, four, occult meaning, 190
Elements, programming script for, 109
Elements, touched by ceremony & prgrmmg, 121
Elevator, internal, (also k.a. Ele. shaft) (See also Double Helix) 185, 188-190, 221
Elevator, used in Quest visualization, 351
Elevators, Ft. Meade, need proper key, 247
Eli, 289
Eli Lilly & Co., 56, 179
Elijah, 310
Elisha, 313
Ellylon, 161
Elmore, chimp used for trauma, 38
Elves, 300
Elvis, chosen by Illuminati, 355
Elvis, grave misspelled, 355

Demon, Amon of No, 214
Demon, Ashmedai, 214
Demon, Asmodeus (Ashmedai), 214
Demon, Astarte, 214
Demon, Baal, 214
Demon, Baccus, 302
Demon, Beelzebub, 214
Demon, Belphegor, 214
Demon, Bes, 301
Demon, Chaigidel, 214
Demon, Choronzon, 291
Demon, Clockmaker, 158
Demon, Daddy, 227
Demon, Gamaliel, 214
Demon, Gamchicoth, 214
Demon, Gatekeeper, 291
Demon, Geb
Demon, Generational, Ch10titlepg
Demon, Hareb Serapel, 214
Demon, Lilith, 213, 214
Demon, Lucifer, 213
Demon, Lucifuge, 214
Demon, Mahalath, 214
Demon, Metatron, 214
Demon, Moloch, 214
Demon, Naamah, 214
Demon, Pan, 302,
Demon, Prince of Persia, 223
Demon, Rahab, 214
Demon, Rege, 302
Demon, Samuel, 214
Demon, Shu, 302
Demon, Skekinah (not Holy Spirit), 214
Demon, Spirit of Death, 222
Demon, Spirit of Destruction, 222
Demon, Typhon, 291
Demon, Viper, assoc. w/ Bk. Widows, 80
Demon, Zerodieth, 213
Demon, name of car, 350
Demon, regional territorial commander, 298
Demon, spirit Viper, 223
Demonic Imps, 113
Demonic armies, script for, 114
Demonic lies, 275
Demonic possession, India, 294
Demonic possession, dangers of diagnosis, 295
Demonic possession, how people acted, 295-296
Demonic spell, breaking it, 275
Demonization, not told front alters, 20
Demonology, 5, 25, 50, 57, 214, 235, 296-307
Demonology & hypnosis, 57
Demonology and drugs, 50
Demonology and telepathy, 319-320
Demonology, of early programming, 25
Demonology, rejected by therapists, 5
Demonology, researched by Intell. groups, 5
Demonology, who are the experts?, 299
Demons have own seals, 214
Demons sigils used as codes, 77
Demons, Christians are to command them, 299
Demons, Commander, 300
Demons, Generational, 273
Demons, Ribbon, 329
Demons, attracted to human scent, 275
Demons, connections to aliens, 287
Demons, families of, 298
Demons, fire, portrayed in Labyrinth, 231
Demons, generational, have thrones,intrnl, 223
Demons, guarding baby in Labyrinth, 229
Demons, guarding carousel, 220
Demons, internal jokers, 225
Demons, layering of, 30, 301
Demons, lower echelons, 300
Demons, materialization of, 163
Demons, names similar to alter names, 298
Demons, organization of, 299-300
Demons, other names for, 299
Demons, part of puppet programming, 222
Demons, playmates of child victims, 300
Demons, prince demons of bloodlines, 223
Demons, purpose in structuring, 300
Demons, splits and names numbered, 81
Demons, types of, 299-300
Dendrites, 44
Deniability, 157
Denial Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Denial, role it plays for alters, 42
Dental tortures, 50
Denver State Hosp., Denver, CO, 153
Denver, CO, 367
Department of Defense DoD, 363
Department of Justice, 18
Dependence upon the master script, 311
Dependence, emotional, 292
Depersonalization, 264
Depomedrone, used to hide rdiotrnsmtg materl, 251
Depression, helped by music, 257
Deprogrammers, use Ericksonian methods, 271
Deprogramming, difficult due to astral, 318
Depth Approach, the, for meeting needs, 340
Description, of herself by a victim, 188
Desensitization of alters to gore, 201
Desert Shield, troops given implants, 180
Desert Storm, 139
Desert, internal, 188
Desoxyn, 48, 49
Despair Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Details of slave's life planned, 344-345
Detroit Psychopathic Clinic, 51
Devil's Canyon, example of, 299

Devil's Seal, 291
Dexedrine, 48
Dextro amphetamine sulfate, 49
Di benzo pyran derivatives, 48
DiCicco, Carman J., Jr., 370
Diadem, of Ozma, 112
Dialectics of Liberation conference, 383
Diamond, Dr. Bernard, 367
Diamonds, 292
Diamonds, hide demonic constructs, 223
Diamonds, internal, 330
Diamonds, mentioned in Oz book, 113
Diamonds, suit of cards, meaning, 76
Diana worship, 374
Diana, capture by Pan, 19
Dicain, 48
Dice, 337
Dick, Charlie, 368
Die Originalschriften der Illuminaten..., 204
Die Walkure, 85
Digestive Failure Program, 76
Digestive failure, body program, 253
Dillsboro Nike Base, 380
Dimenhydrinate (see Dramamine)
Dimensions to alter codes, 87-89
Dimensions, Demonic, 250
Diodes, on microwave voice device, 170+
Diodorus, Siculus, 160
Directed energy, for torture, 167
Directions for using self, prgmg script, 111
Directions, 4 directions N, S, E, W, 106
Discarded splits, 27
Disciples of Hour Glass, 92
Disembowelment Program, 76
DISNEY TOPICS
Disney Corporation, 301
Disney Family, occult bloodline, 301
Disney movies, 65, 336, 341, 380
Disney movies, for programming, 380
Disney movies, why needed in progrmmg, 65
Disneyland, CA, programming site, 380
Disneyworld, FL, programming site, 380
Disorder of Bones Univ. Func. Code, spl, 80
Disorder of Breathing, Univ. F. Code, 80
Disorder of Eating, Univ. Func. Code, 80
Dispositions, are dissociated, 42
DISSOCIATION
Dissociation (magazine), 273
Dissociation, ability,passd genetically, 9
Dissociation, explained, 57
Dissociation, mechanical, script for, 111
Dissociation, routine trauma to maintain, 67
Dissociation, taught by *Wizard of Oz* bk, 107
Dissociation, taught by carousel, 219
Dissociative Identity Disorder (see MPD
Dissociative state, trauma vs. ritual, 305
Dissociative walls, down by drugs, 205
Dissociativeness, Test for gvn to children, 9
Distortion Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Distrust, created by prgrms/handlers, 39, 267
Divers, Ama, Japan, 261
Diverse Divers Physiology and Behavior, 262
Divide & Conquer strategy, 286
Dividing the mind, demon, Blackwell, 301
Diving, 259
Division Univ. Func. Code, 80
Division, between Christn/Secular therapy, 122
Dixon, Jeanne, 128, 135, 375, 376
Dixon, Jeanne, used to funnel money, 135
DoD, Department of Defense, 363
DoDonna, General, Star Wars, M.Aq.prgmg, 246
Doberman dogs, 198
Dobson, Terry, 315
Doc, dwarf, 301
Doctors, Illuminati, fix/cvr up abuse, 257-258
Doctors, Illuminati, many, 251
Document examiners, 267
Dodd, Alfred, 353
Dodge Ram, name of car, 350
DOLL HOUSE
Doll House, 228, 236, 329
Doll House Rooms, 89-92
Doll House, internal, 188
Doll House, to install computer, 236
Dollar Bill, symbols on, 349
Dolphins, used w/ U.S. Seal teams, 260
DOMINO TOPICS
Domino codes, 334
Dominos, 77, 93
Dominos, link internal programs, 334
Dominos, use in programming, 335-336
Dominos, used for codes, 77, 93
Donahue, Sam, 353
Donkey, Nester, 383
Door Knocker which acts alive, 233
Doorkeepers, 203
Doors, color coding of, 203
Doors, internal, 209
Doors, numbered, internal, 188
Dopamine, 47
Dopey, dwarf, 301
Doral, 48
Doriden (see Glutethimide), 48
Dorothy and the Wizard of Oz, 99
Dorothy, represents Mother-of-Dark., 76
Dots, patterns in programming, 34
Double Helix Programming, 76
Double Helix System, internal, 209, 219, 221, 302
Double Helix attached above carousel, 219
Double Helix, codes, 74, 221

Elvis, mysteries about his death, 355
Embrace America 2000, 126
Emerald City, 106
Emerald City, internal, 188
Emerald Green, color code, meaning of, 328
Emerald green dress, of Monroe's, 343
Emeralds, belong to Undrwd King, script, 113
Emergency, codes for, 73
Emmanuel Baptist Church, Little Rock AR, 149
Emmy Award, 356
Emotional alters, 328
Emotional states, 270
Empathogen, Ecstasy example of, 48
Emperor, programming, end times, 182
Emperor codes, 82-83
End time programming, 182
End-time Activation Codes, 83
End-time Team Leaders, 83
Endocrine System, 252, 255
Endocrine System, contrlld by Hypothal., 255
Endorfin, 256
Endorphins, overproduction for prgmmg, 40
Enemas, alcoholic, 291
Energy Balls, occult, 314, 350
Energy balls, occult, portrayed, 350
Energy, place for, for alters, 194
Engels, Georges, 370
Engineering Main Bridge Section, 236
England, 190
Enigma, demon, 302
Enkephalin, 58
Enlightenment, Europe, 212
Enoch, Metatron, demon, 302
Enochian Language, 4, 72, 295
Enochian Language, used in ceremony, 295
Enochian Magic, 61, 299, 369, 370
Enochian Magic, power of, 299
Entered Apprentice Freemason, 60
Enterprise Spaceship, 235
Entertainment and the occult, 352-353
Entertainment, used as a cover, 125
Entrapment programming, 223
Environmental "war", as a control device, 324
Enzymes, secretions, 253
Ephedrine, 48
Ephesus, 374
Ephetamine, 48
Epicane, 48
Epinephrine, 48
Epinephrine, peripheral, 42
Eppler, Dr. Jerry, 315
Epsilon Codes, section, 80
Equinox, film, 354
Equipment, comp. run, to plant thoughts, 59
Equipment, high tech, makes mental orgasm, 59
Ergot, 48
Ergotamine, 48
Erickson, Milton, 255, 270, 271
Erwin, Wilson, 140
Erzilie, african god/spirit, 304
Esalen Institute, 324-325
Escalator, the, type of Illusion, 66
Escape, of slaves, 348
Escapee from Satanic sacrifice, 55
Escher's drawing "Relativity", 232
Escher, M.C., 16, 232
Escrine, 48
Esoteric Astrology, 160, 163
Esoteric Language, 157,159-62
Esoteric Order of Dagon, 370
Espionage alters, 197
Espionage, training of alters, 268-269
Espiritismo, 273
Estabrooks, George, 61
Estazolam, 48
Esu, name for Satan, 302
Ethanol, 48
Ethchlorvynol, 48
Ethel harmol, 48
Ether, 48
Ether-waves, code for Harmonics, 180
Ethereal, meets earth at Foundation, 212
Etheric Body, 320
Ethinamate, 48
Ethos, 273
Ethylamine, 252
Études d'histoire et de psychologie du..., 295
Eucaine, 48
Eucalyptus Trees, internal, 188
Eucodal, 48
Eugene, OR, 300
Eukotal, 48
Eunacron, 48
European Economic Community building, 331
European Royalty, travels to ritual beach, 303
European occultists learn from Asia, 9
Evans, Larry, 370
Eve (drug, see MDE), 49
Evergreen, CO, 166
Evidence, types of, 130
Evil eye, believed in by gypsies, 352
Evipal, 48
Evipan, 48
Evipan sodium, 48
Evolutionary Teamwork, 316
Executive Comm., internal, how charted, 4
Executive Control Board, 4, 80
Executive action, term, 359
Exogenous oxytocins, 21
Exorcism contrasted with deliverance, 7

Expectations, used to make goals, 271
Experiments, mind control, conc. camps, 371
Exploring the Deep Frontier The Adven..., 260
Exposing the Mystery of Iniquity, 287
Externalization of the Hierarchy, 162
Eye color research, Mengele & Cameron, 372
Eye is bad, script, 310
Eye of God, 161
Eye, left eye squint from torture, 40
Eysenck, H.J., 267
Ezekiel 6:3 An Inhouse Directory, 299

F-117A attack planes, 331
FAA, plays stupid to info request, 33
FBI, Division 5, 369
FBI, dirty, working for Illuminati, 369
FBI, 32, 33, 369
FCC, 147
FDA, Federal Drug Administration, 252
FDIC, 182
FEMA, 32-33, 182
FLIP FLOP program, 207
FLIP computer language, 247
FMS leaders involved in Satanic rituals, 2-3
FOGC Golden Centurium, 18
FORAST computer language, 247
FORTRAN computer language, 247
Fabian Society, 157
Faces, stolen hypnotically, 265-266
Faeces, given to child during prgrmg, 281
Fairchild, name for Mengele, 371
Fairchild, research into comptr chip implants
Fairy alter, 334
Fairy tales, valuable for reframing, 272
Faith, battle between two kinds, 277
Faith, replaced by substitute, 289
Faith, will it remain on earth?, 313
Fakirs, India, dissociative abilities, 9
Falk, Peter, 366
False Memories Univ. Func. Code, 80
False Memory Syndrome coverup campaign, 2-3, 43
False Memory Syndrome not a diagnosis, 3
False Prophet, 220
False Prophet, external, 373, 374
False Trinity, 4, 220, 296, 377
False Trinity, Commun., Marx, Engels,Lenin, 374
False Trinity, in Bible, 377
False Trinity, charted in esoteric lang., 4
False memories, implanted to blackmail, 284
Familiar Spirit, 299
Familiars, use of by Illuminati, 102
Families, of alters, 189
Family fragments, 191-193
Family, satanic, doing mind-control, 263
Family, slave given occult family, 341
Fanning movement, mush the brain prgm, 225
Fans, used in programming, 227
Fantasy, in relation to demonology, 121
Fantasy Island, 336, 354
Fantasy prone children identified, 16
Far Journeys, 319
Farm supply companies, 165
Farm, the, CIA, 354
Farm, the, MI-6, 354
Farmer, reframing example, 271
Farnsler, William E., 370
Farrall Instrument Co., 165
Fascist war criminals, 363-365
Fast food restaurants, paperware, occult, 350
Fatalism, how it develops, 359
Fatalism, taught to slaves, 265
Father Surin, 295-296
Father castles, spiritual, internal, 223
Fauns, 19
Faust, 374
FEAR TOPICS
Fear, 224, 256, 269, 278, **283-284,** 278
Fear Univ. Func. Code, 80
Fear of Self-preservation, trnsfrd to empwr AntiChrt, 278
Fear, Spirit of, 283
Fear, controlled by sense organ in nose, 256
Fear, used to control, 269, 283-284
Fears, of deeper alters for safety, 224
Fears, played on, 269
Federal Bureau of Investigation (see FBI), 18
Federal Drug Administration FDA, 252
Federal Reserve, 126
Federal Reserve Bank of NY, 56
Federal Reserve Notes, 126
Felczak, John J., 370
Fellowshipping with evil, 136
Felts, Narvel, 368
Female god, worshipped by Jew. Ill. group, 204
Fenaroff, study by, 20
Ferguson, Marilyn, 194
Ferguson, Rick A., 370
Festivals, give demons authority, 275
Fetus traumatization, (see also Moon Child topics), 20
Fetus, in ideal hypnotic state, 23-24
Fetus, tortured while in womb, 20
Fiberoptics network, NSA, 380
Fiction books, often used for codes, 71
Fiddler's Inn, Nashville, TN, 381
Fiddler, importance of word, 105
Fiddler, key word, 282
Fields of Forget me-forget me nots",intrl, 188

Files, CIA, 344
Files, FBI, CIA, on sexual preferences, 346
Files, of slaves, expunged, 4
Files, soft, 340
FILM TOPICS
Films, family, used for prgrmg, 249
Films, high speed, used for prgmg, 249, 281
Films, horror used for prgmg, 249
Films, occult rituals, porn etc., 352
Films, porn, how coded, 356
Films, used for desensitization condit, 201
Final Call, Slaves to kill therapists, 225
Finders, joint CIA-FBI oper., 32
Findhorn, Scotland, 301
Finger signals, 94
Fingers, missing, cause of, 38
Finishing School, sexl, Youngstown, OH, 207
Finland, 370
FIRE TOPICS
Fire Defense Programs, 226
Fire Festivals, Beltaine, 81
Fire Torture, 226
Fire and Rain, 85
Fire children alters, 87
Fire trauma, 200, 226
Fire, used as a threat, 106
Firechild alters, 197, 254
Firewall, internal, 188
First Earth Battalion, 18, 315-317, 325, 380
Firstborn, blood of sacrificed, 70
Fish farming, underwater, 260
Fish god, Dagon, 301-302
Fish sign, represents secretly Dagon, 302
Five Little Fiddlers, term used, 105
Fix-me codes, 225
Fix-me programming, 117
Flags, used as triggers for Betas/Deltas, 79
Flag, Japan's, 298
Flagellation, 290
Fleeing Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Flesh, stench of burning, a trauma, 44-45
Floating memories, drug used for, 53
Flooding Program, 76, 81
Flooding Programs, set off by dominos, 81
Flooding alters, 197, 205
Flooding of memories, 224
Florida, 95, 370
Florida, programming code no.s, 95
Flower Program Codes, 77
Flower system, 221
Flowers, Dr. Stephen E., 369, 370
Flowers, Nancy K., 370
Flowers, around the trees, internal, 217
Flowers, internal system, 209, 219
Flowers, uses in program imagery, 221
Flowers, uses of in programming, 106
Fluoxetine hydrochloride, 179
Flurazepam hydrochloride, 48
Flying Saucer, 120, 331, 381
Flying Saucers, built by government, 120, 331
Focal points, forty-nine points, 320
Focal points, demonology, 290-292
Focus 10, state of mind, 319
Focus levels- 12- 15 & 21, 319
Foley, LTC Dennis, 315
Folk stories, collected, 99
Follows, alphabet, freq. in alien script, 287
Fonda, Jane, 354
Food deprivation, 263
Forbin Project, film about, 354
Force, the, 161-162
Ford Motor Co., 163
Ford autos, 350
Ford, Betty, mother of Aquino, 367
Ford, Pres. Gerald (aka Leslie Lynch King), 351
Forefinger, raised, masonic message, 380
Foreign Language Alters, 197, 202
Foreign Language Alters, purposes for, 202
Foreign Language codes, 334
Foreign language, demon to assist learn, 302
Forest, Dwarf's, internal, 189
Forests, internal, 188
Forgiveness, not taught deeper alters, 284
Formal approval of candidate, 29
Fornix, 42
Fortean Times, 184
Fortune 500 group, 7
Foster homes, used, 11
Foundation, 212
Foundational Step 1, 18-20
Foundational Step 2, 20-24
Foundational Step 3, 24-25
Foundational Step 4, 25-28
Foundational Steps, 4 basic to prgmg, 18-28
Fountain of Youth, internal, 97
Fox, D. Pete, 370
Fox, Dr. Loreda, 1
Fox, how the word yields 666, 71
Fracture lines, of early splits, 25
Frady, Marshall, 135, 139, 142, 149
FRAGMENT TOPICS
Fragment alters, 87
Fragment armies, 89
Fragments, discussed in depth, 191-193
Fragments, mirror images, 206
Fragments, shadow, can cause flooding, 197
Fragments, torture fragmts, plcd in pool, 222
France, 1, 184
Francis Bacon's Personal Life Story, 353
Frank Illuminati Family, 143

Frank, Jacob, 143
Frankenstein, 354, 359, 372
Frankenstein, demonic type of, 234
Frankenstein, film, 354
Frankenstein, novel, 372
Frankfurt-am-Main, Germany, 258, 371, 375
Frankists, 143
Franz, Fred, 61
Fraternitas Saturni, 18
Frazer, Dr. Russell G., 367, 379
Freak, genetic, created by NWO, 262
Freedom Train, term defined, 9-10
Freedom, partial is still slavery, 123
Freeman, multiple in Iowa, 341
Freemason, Entered Apprentice, 60
Freemasonry, 18, 22, 28, 60, 100, 131, 209, 218, 358
Freemasonry Universal, 60
Freemasonry, apprentice level, 218
Freemasonry, based on the cabala, 209
Freemasons, promoted by Simpson Cartoon, 358
Freemasons, steal "dead" children, 22
Freeze codes, color codes, on Trancer, 357
Freeze framing, during contest, 357
Freezing Program, 226
French, 202
Frere Jacques, 85
Friedel, Peter, 371
Froggy Went a Courtin', 84
From a Follower of Christ, newsletter, 262, 341
Front alters, 28, 197, 280, 351
Front alters, activities of, 351
Front structures, for systems, 189
Fronts, external, 123-155
Frost, David, 137
Frozen body, head alive, 339
Fruit (program) protection script, 311
Fruit on Trees, programs, script for, 110
Fruit tree, internal, 189
Fruit, in programming script, 108
Fruit, poisoned, an occult tactic, 231
Fruit, used to mean scripts to ingest, 106
Ft. Campbell, KT, 380
Ft. Detrick, MD, 380
Ft. Holabird, MD, 380
Ft. Hood, TX, 380
Ft. Huahuachua, AZ, 380
Ft. Knox, KT, 380
Ft. Lewis, WA, 314, 380
Ft. McClellan, AL, 51
Ft. Meade, MD, 247, 380
Ft. Ord, CA, 314, 325
Ft. Point, Presideo, CA, 381
Ft. Worth, TX, 146
Furgeson, Marilyn, 315
Furuta, Norimasa, 349
Fury 1,2,3,4,5, 233
Future Pacing, 270-271
Future Shock, 259
Futurists, 315

GCHQ, 380
GE experiments in comm. chip implants, 184
GE experiments in underwater breathing, 260
GEPAN, 18
GHG, 18
GRU, 18
GTP Guild of Magicians, 370
GWEN Ground-Wave Emergency Network, 179
Gabriel, chimp used for trauma, 38
Gadja, term, means enemy, 352
Gaefsky, Dr., 366
Gags, in mouth for shocks, 166
Galaxies, internal, 76, 185
Galaxy Programming, 76
Gallo, Walter J., 370
Gamaliel, demon, 214
Gambling, 322
Gambling debts, lead to greater problems, 322
Gambrell, Charles, 146
Gamchicoth, demon, 214
Game Playing Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Gamma Programming, **81-82**, 231, 273
Gamma Programming is deception & demon., 81
Gandhi, (called Mahatma), 100
Garb, satanic priestly, 339
Garbage dumps, internal, 27
Garden of Eden, 151
Garden of Eden cover story, 329-330
Garfunkel, Art, 85
Gargoyle Coloring/Activity Book, 350
Gargoyle elves, 229
Gargoyles, internal, with castle, 220
Garland, Judy, 99
Garment, in contest like Mthr of Darkns, 357
Garret Air Research Corp., El Segunda, 313
Garvin County, OK, 22
Gas chromatography, 55
Gaston, programmer, 95, 356, 367
Gate of Death, Malkuth, 213
GATEKEEPERS
Gatekeeper alters, 157-158, 191, 197, 203-204, 213, 223, 224, 227, 282, 285
Gatekeeper alters, Stairwell prgrmming, 224
Gatekeeper alters, deeper, 213
Gatekeeper, Demon/spirit, 291
Gatekeeper, of Great Rite, 204
Gatekeepers, depicted on Hellraiser 3, 354
Gatekeepers, first line of, 203

Gnomes, 301
Gnomes, demons, 113, 300
Gnostic Philosophy/beliefs of Illuminati,7, 125
Gnostic cults, 267
Gnosticism, 321
Go-to-ground signals, 71
Goat head of Mendes, scar pattern, 41
Goat of Mendes, 350
Goat, nubian, named Satan, 383
God of Fire, Pele, 298
God's Word, misuse of for programming, 307-313
God, Names of, used in magic, 122
God, character of Omniscience, 6
God, plans for Illum. slaves, 294
God, what He creates, 278
Goddard Space Flight Center, 380
Goddess names, used on stones, 293
Goddess trinities, mtr, mdn, crone, 69-70
Gods of Aquarius, 181
Gods, types of worshipped by satanists, 204
Goff, Joseph A., 370
Gog, pseudonym, 366
GOLD TOPICS
Gold, 101, 300, 321 (see citations in this section)
Gold Pocket Watch, internal, 93
Gold nuggets, scattered by Scotty, 382
Gold pieces, double eagles, thrown by Scotty, 382
Gold, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Gold, internal, 300, 330
Gold, like transparent glass, 312, 321
Gold, liquid, 321
Gold, occult significance, divine, wisdom, 101, 321
Gold, said to be metal of wisdom, 101, 321
Gold, transparent, 321
Gold, white, powdered, 321
Golden Age, 160
Golden Centurium FOGC, 18
Golden Dawn, 18, 161, 163, 370
Golden Dawn, Lodges of, 163
Golden Egg, 218
Golden Gate, Jerusalem, 377
Golden Keys, internal, 189
Golden Keys, programming script for, 110
Golden Tree, 321
Golden caterpillar, internal, 93
Golem, 209, 291, 359
Golem, is highest goal of the Cabala, 291
Gorbachev Foundation, 147
Gore, V.P. Al, addiction to blood, 375
Gosdin, Vern, 368
Gottlieb, Dr. Sydney, 367
Gottschalk, Dr. Louis, 51
Gould, Baring, 82
Governor, cover name for S.P. Mellon, 367
Gowns, of Mothers of Darkness, 217
Grace vs. Legalism, 151
Grace, slaves programmed to resist God's, 276
Grady, James S., 370
Graham's announcement in '55, 140
Graham, Billy, 68, **126-150**, 133, 135, 136, 289, 308
Graham, Billy & mafia, 133
Graham, Billy & the White House, 136
Graham, Billy and prostitutes, 135
Graham, Billy clever at uses triggers, 308
Graham, Billy, Christian concerns, 140-141
Graham, Billy, Mas. mmbershp file, 145
Graham, Billy, a multiple, 132-133
Graham, Billy, acceptance of Communism, 143
Graham, Billy, as a brush salesman, 132
Graham, Billy, attends love-ins disguised, 135
Graham, Billy, body language, 143
Graham, Billy, close to Mormon beliefs, 138
Graham, Billy, deviations from Bible, 141
Graham, Billy, endorses Masonic program, 145
Graham, Billy, endorses NWO & Paganism, 126
Graham, Billy, given a contrived image, 138
Graham, Billy, high level Ill. courier, 132-133
Graham, Billy, life has been shrouded, 145
Graham, Billy, manages Kittens slaves, 138-139
Graham, Billy, promotes Hatfield to Nixon, 149
Graham, Billy, reprogramming role, 138
Graham, Billy, satanic heritage, 143
Graham, Billy, secretary uninformed, 148
Graham, Billy, support for World Church, 141
Graham, Billy, support for World Govt., 141
Graham, Billy, warned about NWO, 133
Graham, Franklin, 133
Graham, Ned E., 137
Graham, Ruth, 133
Grail Mass, the, 81
Grand Climax rituals, 81
Grand Druid Council, external, 7, 100, 293
Grand Druid Council, internal, 80, 328
Grand Druid Council, oath said before, 293
Grand Island, NE, 165
Grande Dame Coronation ceremony, 103
Grande Dame, assigned to Preemie, 23
Grande Dame, participation with script, 65
Grande Dames, 35, 103, 104, 190, 191, 205
Grande Dames, attitudes toward change, 104
Grande Dames, used in programming, 12, 23, 65
Grande Dames, why heads are preserved, 190
Grande Druid, 205
Grande Druid Council, 29
Grande Druid Council, internal, 36
Grande Master, Illuminati, 35, 161, 205, 318, 322
Grande Mother, inspects children, 11
Grande Mother, partic. with programming, 65
Grande Mother, typical vestment descrbd, 103
Grande Mothers, 11, 35, 104, 205

Gatekeepers, for Black Widow progrmmg, 223
Gates, 7, umbrella programming, 224
Gatlin, Randy & Rudy, 368
Gayle, Crystal, 355
Geb, demon, 302
Gehlen, Reinhard, 365
GEM TOPICS
Gem alters, 205, 223
Gem codes, 4, **90-92**
Gem codes corresponded with Zodiac, 77
Gem names, 282
Gematria, 68-69, 214
Gems, charted in esoteric language, 4
Gems, early alters, 26-27
Gems, receive Alice In Wonderld progrmg, 26-27
Genders, swapped via virtual reality, 256
Genealogies of children hidden, 123
Genealogies, hidden, 341
Genealogies, of spirit guides taught, Ch10titlepg
General Dynamic scrambles, 182
General Electric, Schenectady, NY, 313
Generals, U.S. Army, back Delta Force, 325
Generational curses, 292
Generational spirit, appointed ovr slave, 298
Generational spirits, 20, 273, 297, 298, Ch10titlepg
Generational ties, 221, 223
Generational thrones, 205
Generator, hearing, 171
Generators, geothermal, 260
Genes, changed by nerve signals, 252
Genesis machine, 183-184
Genesis, book of, programming uses, 309
GENETIC TOPICS
Genetic Engineering, 258-262
Genetic code, for body's metabolism, 254
Genetic code, for sinus node, 254
Genetic codes, of skin manipulated, 262
Genetic creatures, created, 379
Genetic research, many Illuminati invld, 251
Genetic research, of Third Reich, 363
Genetically passed phobias, 37
Genetics, findings show mind can change, 252
Genetics, role in memory, 258
Genie Bottle for Alters, programming, 7, 79, 90
Genie, rich, in The Little Princess, 357
Genii, 291
Genital tortures, 39
Gennifer position, AntiChrist progrmg, 376
Gennifer-Sally-Elsie-Sarah-Penelope Programg, 360
Genoscopolomine, 48
Gentile Times, biblical prophecy, 377
Geoffrey of Monmouth, 190
Geometric shapes, 290
George Foster Peabody Award, 356
George, Beth, a Rothschild, programmer, 367
George, Clair, programmer, 367
Georgetown Center for Strategic Studies, 56
Georgetown University, 351
Georgia, 370
Georgie the Ghost, 117
Geothermal generators, 260
Gerard, Julian, 382
Gerberus, demon, 302
Gerkin, G., 168
German (language), 202
German Illuminati families, 20
German Intelligence, 18
German Mind Control researchers, 371
German Scientists, 34
German agents, all compromised as dbles, 346
German brain researchers, modern, 258
German navy, 259-260
German shepherds, 38, 198
German shepherds, used for trauma, 38
German underwater researchers, 261, 262
Germany, 1, 152, 260-261, 296, 334, 371, 379
Germany Nazi, assassination alters, 201
Germany, Old Order Amish wiped out WWII, 152
Germany, Rheinland, 152
Germany, southern, 152
Gestures, during rituals, 67
Get Me A Ticket on a Fast Train, 85
Gethsemane Suicide Program, 76, 225
Ghana, West Africa, 369
Ghor, gypsy tribe, 353
Ghost Busters, 203, 336
Ghost Riders, 85
Giant with the Hammer, 334
Gibb, Alan, 315
Gibbs, Cynthia K., 370
Gills, artificial, 259
Girls, sexual grooming of, 207
Gittinger, John, 13-17
Gladiator duels of Illuminati, 12, 81
Gladiator type duels, 12, 81
Glaive (sacrificial knife), 82
Glands, controlled via biofeedback, 253
Glaser, Jim, 368
Glass coffin, internal, 189
Glass, internal, 189
Glastonbury, UK, 374
Glinda of Oz, 76, 99
Glinda, has internal record book, 76
Global Unity perceptions of brain, 258
Glove, Green, Man with the Green Glove, 364
Glucose, blood, 261-262
Glutamate, 250
Glutamic Acid, 52
Glutethimide, 48
GnRH, hormone, 51

Grande Mothers, attitudes toward change, 104
Grandfather castles, spiritual, internal, 223
Grandfather clock, switching mechanism, 219
Grandma's Feather Bed, 85
Grandmother Moon, 19
Grandmother castles, spiritual, internal, 223
Grant, Arlene, see Candy Jones, 367
Grant, Kenneth, 122
Grant, occult author, 370
Grapevine Canyon, Death Valley, 382
Graphoanalysis, 267-268
Graphology, 267-268
Grass 11-channel EEG machine, 15
Grasshopper Ice Cream Drink, 59
Graves, Celtic & Druidic, 216
Graveyards, internal, 189
Grays, members of, 356
Great Messianic Feast (Marriage Supper), 292
Great Pyramid, coronation plans, 376
Great Rite ritual for AntiChrist, 204
Great White Book, 292
Great White Lodge, 100
Greece, 352
Greed, Spirit of, 276
Greek alphabet, 287
Greek gods, 302
Greek letter programming, 202
Greek letters, use for in codes, 76
Greek mythology, 219
Greek, use in charting & codes, 86
GREEN TOPICS (Green represents Satan)
Green Berets, 324, 326
Green Green Grass of Home, 85
Green Masked Disney character of mirror, 301
Green, Dr. (see Mengele, Joseph)
Green, Col. Wilson, 367
Green, Elmer, Menninger Found. Researchr, 254
Green, color code, meaning of, 328
Green, occult significance of color, 101
Green, types of, color code, meaning, 328
Greenbaum (see Mengele, Joseph)
Greene, Jack, 368
Greensleves, 85
Gregoire, Raymond A., 370
Grerr, dwarf, 301
Greystone Park St. Hosp.,Greystone Pk,NJ, 153
GRID TOPICS
Grid Room, St. Mary's Hosp., Quebec, 381
Grid programs, 228
Grid, of alters, 7, 190, 191
Grid, of castle, 220
Grids, how set up, 190
Grids, numbering of, 190
Grim Reaper assoc. with clocks, 197
Grimm brothers, 99
Grinder, author, 271
Grips & Handshake signals, 94
Grissom AFB, IND, 380
Grisé, Kevin M., 370
Gritz, Bo, 202, 326, 338
Gritz, Bo, example of brain scarring, 202
Groffies, Lancaster Co. Amish, 151
Groom Lake, NV, 331, 379
Grossman, Nancy, 315
Groton, school of, 351
Ground-Wave Emergency Network (GWEN), 179
Grumpy, dwarf, 301
Grésil, 296
Guard alters, 197
GUARDIAN TOPICS
Guardian, 231
Guardian angels, demon, 302
Guardian of Balance, Maiden, 218
Guardian of Forever, 234
Guardian of Spirits, Ch10titlepg
Guardian of the Vail alters, 328
Guardians of the Gates, 109
Guardians of the Hidden Treasures, 301
Guardians, nephalim, 287
GUILT
Guilt Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Guilt blocked out, after wet op, 154
Guilt inducing sessions, 266
Guilt, 266, 269, 276, 284-285
Guilt, of victims like conc. camp surv., 285
Guilt, use of, 269, **284-285**
Guilt, used as part of Psyc. Motiv., 269
Guinevere postion, Illum., 376
Guise, de, lineage, 321
Gulch, Elvira, 102
Guliaeff, Nickolai N., Jr., 370
Gumby Programming, 207
Gun control, 180
Gunter, John, 367
Gunzberg, Germany, 371
Gurdjieff, 324
Gurdjieff commune, farm nr. Hubbard, OR, 324
Gurus, Eastern, helped 1st Earth Batta., 315
Guthrie, OK Amish Settlements, 150
Guy Lombardo's band, 353
Gyori, John G., 370
Gypsies, 219, 352-353
Gypsies, origins & travels of, 352
Gypsies, worship of Kali, 219

HAL/S computer language, 247
HBO, 229
HFET series, 172
HRP (Horseradish peroxidase), 56, 250

HXTR series transistors, 172
Hades, 219
Hafaza, guardian demons, 302
Hag, the, 218, 231
Hagabard, 360
Haggard, Forrest D., 145
Haggard, Merle, 368
Haggin, programmer, 95, 367
Haiti, 50, 302-304
Hala, Rhonda, 179
Halcyn, 48
Haldanian's Theory, 262
Haldol Decanoate, 55
Half-bloods, of Illum. fight w/ full-blds, 365
Half-human half-robot people, 356
Halifax, Nova Scotia, 370
Haliopareael, 48
Hall of Judgment, Tree of Life, Cabala, 212
Hall of Karma, Tree of Life, Cabala, 212
Hall of Masters, Tree of Life, cabala, 212
Hall, Manly P., 100, 160, 300, 318, 321, 349
Hallelujah Chorus, 85
Halloween, 103, 204
Hallucination, of a script shown, 227
Hallucinations, 57, 227, 323
Hallways with red doors, 189
Haman, demon, 296
Hammer of Thor, script to create, 114
Hammer, Armand, 146
Hanan, demon, 295
Hand Signals, section, 94
Hand of Glory, history of use, 82
Hand of Glory, induction signal, 82
HAND SIGNALS
Hand signal for S&M programming, 116
Hand signal, to place on Potter's Wheel, 334
Hand signals, for slaves, standardized, 4
Hand signals, slave responds just to master, 334
Hand signals, used by children on mom, 339
Hand to Hand combat, training for Delta, 201
Hand, Eddie, 370
Handel's Messiah, 85
HANDLER TOPICS (Also Chapter 12 deals with handler methods, and Appendix A deals with some of the identities of handlers.)
Handler, hand sgnl to get kitten on lap, 89-90
Handler, language reinforces dehumanization, 281
Handlers, leave each other slaves alone, 4
Handlers, pretend to be fairy tale charctr, 202
Handlers, tampering or mismanagement by, 344
Hands of Glory, Cox's business in, 369
Hands, Eddie W. (see Cox, Edward Wayne), 369
Handshake signals, 94
Handwriting analysis, kept secret by Intell., 268
Handwriting analysis, types of approach, 267
Handwriting modification, 267-268
Handwriting therapy, 267-268
Handwriting, how it is done, 267
Hangers, used for programming, 33
Hanging tortures, 40
Hanging, Judas programming, 226
Hangman Position, 12
Happy, dwarf, 301
Harbison, Earle H., Jr., 56
Hardee, Bryan C., 370
Hardy, Patty A., 370
Hareb Serapel, demon, 214
Harmaline, 48
Harmalol, 48
Harman, 48
Harmine, 48
Harmine methiodide, 48
Harmol, 48
Harmonic machines, use for programming, 54, 120,180
Harmonics, 180
Harmony, Tifareth, 212
Harper & Row, 117
Harrah, Nichol, 369
Harrick, programmer in Denver, CO, 95, 367
Harrisburg State Hosp., Harrisbg, PA, 153
Harvard University, trains parents, 31
Harvard University, 31, 50, 367
Harvey, Bill, 315
Hashish, 50
Hat-hor, 218
Hatefulness Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Hatfield, Mark, 149
Hatha Yoga, 370
Haulon Rd, Libertyville, IL, 364
Have Thine Own Way Lord, 85
Hawaii, 298
Hays, Brook, 149
Haywood, Michael T., 370
Head, alive, with frozen or severed body, 339
Headaches Programming, 76
Headaches, split brain, body program, 253
Headaches, split brain, script for, 114
Heads, empty, programming script, 108
Heads, given different no.s in script, 112
Healdsburg, CA, 166
Healing, process, from the AntiChrist sprt, 307
Healing, under hypnosis quicker, 58
Hearn, Michael P., 100
Hearst Mansion, California, 133
Hearst, William Randolph, 133
Heart Failure Body Program, 76, 253
Heart failure, linked to vows, 293
Heart, death from a broken heart, 254
Heart, monitored when drugs administrd, 55

Illuminati, sealing ceremony, 204
Illuminati, secrecy of, 2
Illuminati, secret record depositories, 1
Illuminati, term defined, 7
Illuminati, view Demonology as important, 297
Illuminist power construct, internal, 234
Illusion, in relation to magic, 121
Illusions, 323
Illusions, used by programmers, 64
Imagery, function of right brain, 248
Imagery, tree & vine, 192
Images, 278-279
Images, false, created of famous people, 279
Images, motivation for in programmg, 279
Imagine, song, 85
Imagineering, Walt Disney subsidiary, 356
Immune System, controlld by Hypothalamus, 255
Immune system, and histamine, 251-252
Immunotransmitters, 253
Imperial conditioning (programming), 182
Implants, 181-182, 248, 251, 294, 318, 383
Implants, brain, put in at Versailles, 383
Implants, communication, 181-182
Implants, for comm. w/ a computer, 184
Implants, for tracking, 294
Implants, monitoring, 180-181
Implants, systematically put in newborns, 251
Implants, transceivers, 248
Imps, 113
Imps, scripts for, 112
Imps, used for access, 73
In Galactic Coordinate System, 243
In God's Name, 135
In Search For the Manchurian Candidate, 368
In Vivo Metric, 166
Incense ball, waved by robed male in cere., 213
Inconsistent behavior, by programmers, 265
Incredulous Factor, abusers use, 125
India, 9, 294, 305, 352
India, Miss, 357
India, teaches european occultists, 9
Indian shamanism, 147
Indianapolis, IN, 179
Indians, American, 322
Indigo, color code, 238
Indole, 49
Indole methyllarmine, 49
Induction methods, wording etc., 58, 82
Induction, methods of programmers, 58, 82
Infant, view of programming/programmers, 359
Infiltration Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Infiltration alters, 198
Infiltration of churches, can backfire, 199
Infiltration, of Christian churches, 163
Infinity Loop, 133
Infinity loop, 8 ball, code, 95
Infinity mirror programming, codes, 75
Infinity, slave told he belongs into, 282
Information control, Britain, 124
Ingassing, 261
Initiation, of 1st Earth Battalion, 325
Injection of Bleach suicide Program, 76
Injection to make pain, 50
Insanity Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Insanity, connected to demons, 299
Insanity, temp., herbs for, 50
Inside Reporters Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Inside the Aquarium, 339
Inslaw Case, 369
Institute of Noetic Sciences, 313
Instructions, to parents of victims, 67
Insulin, 49
Integration, 276
Intelligence Officer, Delta Force, 326
Intelligence Service, Li family, 339
Intelligence Service, Rothschild family, 339
Intelligence agencies, invlvd w/killing, 320
Intelligence agents, sex. needs supplied, 207
Interdimensional Time Travel, 97
Interference, indirect, w/ info, 157
Interference, on Alpha BFT instruments, 250
Intergalactic Script, chart of, 248
Intermeshment of spirits, 292
Internal Body Parts, a natural phobia, 37
Internal Computer Codes, 80-81
Internal Computers, 92, 326-330
Internal Programmers, color names of, 329
Internal Programming alters, 198
Internal hierarchy, 229
Internal kinetics, 272
Internal structures, (see also various Systems & Chap. 7), 187-89, 234
Internal structures, geographic, 187-89
Internal world map, internal, 190
Internal worlds, portrayed by Labyrinth, 229
Internal worlds, rarely seen by a slave, 188
Internal worlds, rotation of axis, 233
Internalist alters, 198
International Brotherhood of Magicians, 353
Internet, 256, 331, 380
Internet, origin with DOD, 331
Intrepid Park, 354
Introducing NLP, 269
Intuition, function of right brain, 248
Intuitiveness, valued by Illum., 249-250
Invasion, Mock-alien, planned, 197, 324
Inversion themes, 116
Invisible Countries, internal, 189
Invisible things, importance of, 300
Invocation of Hecate as Crone, 81

Hypnosis, to boost creativity, 64-65
Hypnosis, to influence jury members, 358
Hypnosis, used to deceive subject, 64
Hypnosis, used to heal or pretend surgery, 283
Hypnosis, uses to change perception, 64
Hypnosis, via electric stimulation, 59
Hypnosleep program, anchored w/ hypnosis, 97
Hypnosurgery, 106
Hypnotherapist, Temple of Set, K. Grisé, 370
Hypnotherapy Institute, Hollywood, 358
Hypnotic Inductions section, 82
Hypnotic Plane trance script, 117
Hypnotic Voice, of programmer, 65-66
Hypnotic drugs, 47-52
Hypnotic induction, use of in public, 265
Hypnotic scripts, how to give to child, 64-65
Hypnotic state, induced by repeatg music, 257
Hypnotic suggestion to forget, dynamics, 44
Hypnotic voice, soothing to Preemie, 23
Hypnotism (book by Estabrooks), 61-64
Hypnotism and rings, 292
Hypnotism, where pain goes under hypn., 194
Hypnotism, how to stop bleeding, 255
Hypnotism, of children, need movies, 65
Hypnotism, perc. of good candidates, 62
Hypnotism, to create Multiplicity, 63-64
Hypnotism, to create spies, 63
Hypnotism, tricks to use, 62
Hypnotism, used in Masonic initiation, 60
Hypnovel (see Midazolam hydrochloride)
Hypocrisy, 375
Hypoloid soluble hexabarbitone, 48
Hypothalamus, 255
Hypothalamus, bridge to mind & body, 253
Hypothetical System Codes, 86-92

I AM movement, 319
I AM, code, 309
I Dream of Jeanne, 354
I Had a Little Pony, 84
I Surrender All, 85
I'm in Love With a Big Blue Frog, 84
I-0 Classification, 153
I-Love-You, I-love-you-not script, 34, 286, 335, 371
I-W Service, 153-154
I-W service on Amish Farms, 154
I.D. Implants, 180
I.E.P. (Individual Education Plan), 35
I.G. Farben, 56, 252
I.V.s, 23, 52,200
IBM, 184
IGAS, 267
INS, 18
I Never Left Home, 353
IRS, strange activities of, 382
Ice torture, 253
Icetown, internal, 189
Ichaso, Oscar, 315
Icoral, 49
Idaho, coven of the 21st star, 300
Identification with Master, used in prg, 266
Identities, multiple w/ virtual reality, 256
Identities, of children hidden, 123
Identity, destablzd by Virtual reality, 256
Identity, sense of, taken away, 266
Identity, what is our real identity, 279
Illiac 4 computer language, 247
Illinois, 150, 364, 369, 370
Illness Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
ILLUMINATI TOPICS (The entire book is about Illuminati mind control, some of the individual Orders of the Illuminati, aka Moriah, can be looked up under their own names such as the Order of Skull & Bones, and the Order Fraterntas Saturni, and the Anti-Christ Luciferian Dynasty. The Order of Thanoteros was not mentioned in the book, but is another branch of the Illuminati, as well as the Brotherhood.)
Illuminati Philosophy, 204
Illuminati Plans, 375-377
Illuminati Rituals Listed, 81-82
Illuminati bloodlines, had early MPDs, 305
Illuminati bloodlines, ties to convent, 295
Illuminati books, novels, 360
Illuminati councils, transmit orders to New Agers, 301
Illuminati families, mind cntrl history, 1
Illuminati infiltration into Mennonites, 150
Illuminati libraries, secret, 299
Illuminati midwives, 150
Illuminati narcotics trade, 56
Illuminati rituals, seen by alien victim, 118
Illuminati!, board game, 102
Illuminati, Grande Master, 161
Illuminati, alias' mentioned, 18
Illuminati, collectively prom. Graham, 126
Illuminati, control base programming, 333
Illuminati, encourage childrn in Christ, 277
Illuminati, funding gvn to Cameron, 372
Illuminati, in Argentina, 365
Illuminati, kept Hitler supplied durg WW II, 363
Illuminati, like religious covers, 127
Illuminati, maintain ultimate control, 4
Illuminati, mask ceremonies, 296
Illuminati, mind control greatest danger, 1
Illuminati, operate at several levels, 204
Illuminati, promotion of homosexuality, 377
Illuminati, renegade programmers, 30
Illuminati, rituals, Morning Star, 163

Invocation of the Gods Ancient Egyptn..., 222
Inyo County,CA, 382
Inyo-kern, 31-34
Ions, negative, helps telepathy, 320
Iowa, 341
Ipecac, 49
Ipsimus, 205
Iran, 352
Iraq, md cntrld slaves used against civilns, 261
Ireland, 82, 190
Irenaeus, 376
Iridium, 321
Irish Crone Figure, 218
Iron Man Diving Suit, 259
Iron Mountain Secret Plans, 120
Iron man, 230
Iron robot, 232
Irvine, CA, 166
Isacaaron, 296
Isaiah, 6, 160
Isaiah, could speak w/ learned men, 6
Isbell, Dr. Harris, 367
Iscariot, Judas, 375
Ishtar, 212, 219
Ishtar, demon, 301
Isis (Aset), 44, 102, 205, 218
Island Of the Blue Dolphins, 120
ISOLATION TOPICS
Isolate & hibernate Program, 76
Isolation, 265, 267
Isolation Chamber, St. Mary's Hosp., QU, 381
Isolation devices, 267
Isolation of rebellious alters, 227
Isolation, code word for Camp Peary, 379
Isolation, external, 340-343
Isolation, from normal peers, 360
Isolation, routine for child victims, 67
Israel (modern), 136, 268
Israel, 10 northern tribes, 160
Israel, ancient practice child sacrifice, 302
Israel, uses handwriting analysis, 268
It Lives Again movie, 354
It's OK program, script in *Wizd of Oz* book, 108
Italian, 202
Italian Illuminati families, 20
Italian Mind Control researchers, 371
Italian witchcraft, 20
Italy, 1, 353

JASP computer language, 247
JOSS computer language, 247
JOVIAL computer language, 247
Jack and Jill, 84
Jack in the Beanstalk programming, 221
Jack-in-the-box, clown alters, 157
Jackal, part of satanic baptism, 291
Jackson, Jessie, 149
Jackson, Michael, 380
Jacob's ladder used for programming, 224
Jacobson, Steven, 257
Jade, 282
Jamborees, Lancaster Co.,Amish, 151
James River, VA, 379
Jamestown Amish Settlement, MO, 150
Janet flights, 331
Janet, french psychologist, 296
Janis 2 Computer, Wash., D.C., 82
Jantschik, Walter, 370
January, named after Janus, 204
Janus, 204, 375
Janus programming, 314
Janus-ALEX Call back information, 82-83
Janus-Alex Call Backs, 82-83
Japan's flag, 298
Japanese Ama divers, 262
Jars, used to hold hearts, 46
Javen, demon, 302
Jaynes, Julian, 249
Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry, 273
Jehovah's Witness' Bethel HQ, Illum. mmbrs in, 303
Jehovah's Witnesses, 71-72, 267, 303
Jehovah's Witnesses, disguise of operations, 345
Jehu, 310
Jennings, Waylon, 368
Jensen, Dr., 367
Jerusalem, one of the NWO capitals, 374
Jesuit Georgetown Univ. Hosp., 383
Jesuit Programming, 93-94, 309
Jesuit schools, 351
Jesuits, 29-30, 32, 97, 125, 132, 152, 284, 363, 373
Jesuits, child procurement operations, 32
Jesuits, masters at torture, 29-30
Jesus Christ, atoning blood, 7
Jesus Esu-Sananda, 303
Jesus, a demon w/ this name, 8
Jesus, demon by that name, 163
Jesus, every last word misused in prgrg, 307-308
Jewelry, used for bona fides, 105
Jewels, internal, 300
Jewels, programs mined by dwarfs, intrnl, 230
Jewish Mission, take orders from Graham, 144
Jewish Synagogues, reformed, 144
Jewish synagogues, receive BG Crusade converts, 142
Jezebel, 310
Job, 307
Joel, Billy, 85
John Brown's Body, 85
John, Apostle and Prophet, 313

John, disciple of Jesus at cross, 307
Johnson, Albert Mussey, 382
Johnson, James R., 370
Johnson, Lynn, 370
Johnson, Pres. Lyndon B., 351
Johnson, multiple in North Dakota, 341
Johnson, programmer, 95, 367
Joker (part of song), 85
Joker, The Little Princess, 357
Jokers, demons, internal, 302, 336-337
Jolly Green Giant Programming, 92
Jolly Green Giant, cover name for Meier, 367
Jones, Bob, 141
Jones, Candy, 2, 189, 367
Jones, Candy, as a slave, 2
Jones, George, 368
Jones, Jim, 125
Jones, multiple in Washington state, 341
Jonestown, Guyana, 47, 125
Journal of Church and State, 136
Journal of Comm. Psyc. Mono. Supplement, 14, 17
Journal of Traumatic Stress, 354
Journal of the Society for Psychical Resrch, 273
Journaling, 30
Journeys Out of the Body, 319
Jove, alter to, 160
Joyce, Katherine, 66
Joyner, James C., 370
JuJuism, 302
Judaism, 200
Judas programming, 226
Judds, the, 368
Judge, uses drugs to silence SRA witness, 55
Judicial System, partic. with coverup, 125
Judicial system, let's torturer off, 341
Jujiro, Matsuda, 349
Juliet series of slaves, 180
Jungle Book, 296-297
Jung's autonomous power of hmn psyche, 121
Jupiter, 160
Jurjevich, Ratibor-Ray M., 143
Justice alters, 197
Justman, Bob, 355

KGB, 18, 137, 147, 184
KGB & KGB's successor, 18
KJAM Lafayette, LA station, 126
KKK child porn, 379
KKK programming, 379
KKK slaves, 11
KKK, non-CIA/Illum. groups, challenged, 124
KKK, 11, 18, 124, 379
KVDM radio station, Portland, 131-132
Kaimanu, Assyrian for Chiun, 160
Kaiser Wilhelm Medical Institute, Berlin, Ger, 2, 365
Kalamazoo State Hosp.,Kalamazoo, MI, 153
Kaleidoscope eyes, 82
Kali, 8, 60, 218, 219, 353
Kali Ma, 219
Kali, demon, 302
Kali, rites of, 60
Kalivoda, Kurt, 370
Kamera (Chamber), 18
Kamm, William E., 168
Kansas, 150
Kansas (of Oz book & movie), 102, 103
Kansas license plates, 348
Kansas, or Home in programming script, 108
Kansas, programming code no.s, 95
Karaoke, 85
Karma, 161, 212
Karr, Barry, 184
Kava Kava, 50
Keeper of the Akashic Records, 214
Keeper of the Books, external, 204
Keeper of the Keys, book, 347
Keeper of the Keys, trad. is the Maiden, 218
Keeper of the Pit, 198
Keeper of the Seals, 302
Keeper of the Seals, external, 204, 283
Keeper of the Spiritual Records, a Crone, 218
Keepers of Nothing, Ellylon, 161
Keepers of the Dawn, 205
Keil, Jeffrey J., 370
Kelly, Princess Grace, 359
Kemosh, demon, 302
Kennecott Copper Co., 379
Kennedy School of Government, 258
Kennedy Space Center, 383
Kennedy assassination, 128
Kennedy, John F. & Monarch mind-control, 371
Kennedy, Pres. John F., 351, 371
Kentucky, 95, 150, 382
Kentucky Amish Settlements, 150
Kentucky Derby, analogy, 297
Kentucky, programming code no.s, 95
Kernal, UNIX term, 332
Kether, 69
Key Manual, internal, sample code, 80
Key of Solomon, 299
Key to carousel, 219-220
Key-Tone Programming, 371
Keymaster, of Great Rite, 204
Keys (codes that serve as keys), 90
Keys to the Kingdom Programming, 29, 93
Keys, matrix, telephone tones, 334-335
Keys, often given to therapists, carousel, 220
Keys, set given to a System to keep, 220
Keys, such as Clock Key, internal, 189

Holy of Holies, 321
Home births by the occult world, 22
Home church, Fritz's anecdote, 256-257
Home, or Kansas in programming script, 108
Homestead AFB, FL, 381
Homosexuality, of AntiChrist, 374
Homosexuality, promoted, 377
Homunculus, 19
Honey trap, 346
Honeywell, implant research, 184
Hoofed One, the, 220
Hoover, J. Edgar, 346
Hoover, J. Edgar, promoted by Pentecostals, 147-148
Hope, Bob, 285, 353, 355, 358
Hope, given by God's Spirit, 289
Hopelessness Univ. Func. Code, sample, 80
Hopelessness, instill via rituals, 267
Hops, 50
Hormone to speed up sexual development, 51
Hormones, at time of trauma, 42
Hormones, peripheral of hypothalamic sys, 42
Horned One, the, 220
Horonzon, spirit in programming, 122
Horse, part of satanic baptism, 291
Horseradish peroxidase (HRP), 56, 250
Horses, script for, 310
Horus, 44, 205, 218
Hosea, the prophet, 350
Hospitals, Masonic, 22
Hospitals, help w/ mind control, 5, 22
Hospitals, how their personnel help, 250-251
Hospitals, how they collaborate, 5, 22, 38, 193
Hospitals, known dirty ones listed, 22
Hospitals, use of for trauma/programming, 38, 193
Hoss, Carol, 315
Hot Cross Buns & Ravens, progrmg script, 357
Hot Shot Products, Inc., 165
Hotel California, 85
HOUR GLASS TOPICS (See also related topics like X-Y-Z axes, and Quadrants)
Hour Glass, 92, 106, 189, 221, 329, 333
Hour Glass (diagram), 195
Hour Glass Alters, 87
Hour Glass, internal system, 209, 219
Hour Glass, internal, in Delta alters, 202
Hour Glasses, used to threaten slaves, 202
Hour Glasses, uses of in programming, 106
Hour glass, linked to 12 disciple suicide pgm, 221
Hour glass, matrix, internal, 189
Hour glasses shown in Labyrinth, 232
Hour glasses, & computers, 329
Hour glasses, internal, 333
Hourglass makes a butterfly image, 92
House Divided cannot stand, programmg, 359
House of David, hexagram, internal, 186, 189
House of Saud, 18
House of the Temple, Wash. D.C., 145
Houses, safe, used, 157
Houston, Alex, 286, 367, 368
Houston, Elmer, 368
How to Create a Sex Slave, 5
How to Divide a Personality film, 5
Hub, the, Star Wars, M. Aqno progrmg, 246
Hubbard, Barbara Marx, 315
Hudson River State Hsp., Poughkeepsie,NY, 153
Hudson Special Sessions Court, NY, 358
Hudson, David, 321
Hughes Identification Devices, 184
Hughes, Irene, 375
Human Eucology Society, CIA front, 17
Human Potential Movement, 325
Hummel, Ed, 366, 367
Humperdink, Englebert, 368
Humphrey, Sen. Hubert, 136
Hunger, cntrlld by sense organ in nose, 256
Hunt alters, 198
Hunter, Edward, 4
Huntington House, 145
Hunts of Slaves, Beltaine, 81
Hunts, for slaves at Bohemian Grove, CA, 33
Hunts, song played with, 85
Hush money, given to victims by courts, 5
Hydra. STS 103, 354
Hydractine, 48
Hydraulic underwater saw, 262
Hynosleep Suicide Program, 76
Hyperborea, 325
Hypertension, 255
Hypertension, idiopathic, 255
Hyperventilation, 58, 304
HYPNOSIS/HYPNOTISM TOPICS
Hypnosis & demonology, 57
Hypnosis and espionage, 62-63
Hypnosis and music, 66-67
Hypnosis, and the immune system, 251
Hypnosis, areas of brain affected, 57
Hypnosis, combined with witchcraft, 67
Hypnosis, complications, 59
Hypnosis, control over body functions, 58
Hypnosis, help slave met career goals, 97
Hypnosis, how to build structures, 97
Hypnosis, how to use to make a program, 96
Hypnosis, looks like magic to child, 59
Hypnosis, methods for preverbal child, 24
Hypnosis, methods for unwilling subject, 59
Hypnosis, occult secret for centuries, 57
Hypnosis, research by CIA, 59
Hypnosis, tests by army in WW II, 59
Hypnosis, tests to determine trance, 64

Heartache Tonight, 85
Heartbeat, associated w/ BEAST computer, 337
Heartbeat, control via biofeedback, 253
Heartbeat, reframed as Heartbt of Satan, 253
Heartbeat, stabilizing, internal clocks, 228
Hearts of Stone, 282
Hearts, mechanical, 330
Hearts, of Yogis stopped for 30 sec., 254
Hearts, stolen hypnotically, 265-266, 310
Hearts, suit of cards, meaning, 76
Hearts, taken away, 265-266, 310
Hearts, torn out while victim alive, 364
Hearty, Marie L., 370
Heaven, streets of transparent gold, 321
Heaven, used as structural script, 312
Heavenly cow, creator of Milky Way, 218
Heavy Metal Music, 257
Hebrew Letter programming, 202
Hebrew, use in charting, 4, 86
Hebrew, used to chart deep parts, 4
Hedved, Ron, 315
Hegel, Georg Wilhelm Friedrich, 157
Hegelian Dialectics, 156, 365
Height (sp.?), Col., 367
Helicopters, armed with P7 mind control, 319
Helicopters, used by Satanic cults, 119
Helix, internal system, 209, 219, 221
Hell Pit (aka Hell Fire, Pepperbox,abyss, 92, 189, 231, 333
Hell Pylon, Temple of Set, 370
Heller, William, 221
Hellraiser, film, 354
Helm, Bill, 315
Helmet, for uniting right & left brain, 314
Help Lines, run by Illuminati, 124
Hemispheres, division of activity, 272
Hemispheres, left and right of brain, 248-250
Hemispheric synchronizer, 319
Hemlock, 50
Henbane, 50
Hendrix, Jimi, 257
Henry's Law, 262
Herbs, used after drugs, 50, 55
Herbs, used in Voodoo, 304
Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor, 100
Hermetic Masonic Rites, 100
Heroin, 48
Het-hert, 218
Hewlitt Packard, 172
Hexacol, 48
Hickory Dickory Dock rhyme, 81, 84
Hidden Observer, as a demonic helper, 37
Hidden Observer, sought by therapists, 37
Hidden Observer, used to monitor splits, 41
Hidden Observer, uses of term, 37
Hideaway, the, tavern, 34
Hiding Place for alters, 194
Hierarchies, Internal, 337
Hierarchy alters, 197, 204
Hierarchy ranks, Illuminati, 204-205
Hieroglyphics, intergalactic language, 247
High performance liquid chromatography, 55
High tech facility, under Prtld M. Temple, 381
Highway 101, California, 33
Hilgard, study 1974, 59
Hilgers, Denny, 45, 188
Hill, David, 133
Himmler, Heinrich, 2
Hindism, 221
Hindu Chakra points, 69
Hinkle, Lawrence, 367
Hinson, Eulit M., 370
Hippocampal memory processing, 48
Hippocampus, 42, 44, 54, 258
Hiram Abiff, 162
Hiramic legend, 162
Hislop, Alexander, 350
Histadyl, 48
Histamine, 48, 76, 251-252, 287, 289
Histamine Prod. Body Program, 76, 253
Histamine production, body program, 76, 253
Histamine receptors, 252
Hit at Convenience order, 345
Hitler's Mind Control techniques, 324
Hitler's bloodline, 152
Hitler, Adolf, 100, 152, 313, 325, 363, 364, 374, 377
  Hitler, Adolf, believe in black magic, 313
Hitler, Adolf, participation in rituals, 364
Hittites, 19, 376
Hod, Dance of, 292
Hogel, a gnome, 229
Holdeman Mennonites, 150
Hollywood, 214
Hollywood Boulevard, 340
Hollywood Movie Industry, active in md cntl, 125, 214
Hollywood cocktail parties, 136
Hollywood helps cover up, 2
Hollywood, CA, 2, 18, 181, 380
Hollywood, FL, 135
Hollywood, and the Monarch program, 352-359
Holmes County, OH Amish Settlements, 150
Holodeck mirror images, Star Trek, 356
Holograms, 235, 239
Holograms substitute for mirror images, 234
Holographic projections, 356
Holographic encoding makes memory, 258
Holy Blood line, 321
Holy Spirit, 307, 313
Holy Spirit, via Paul, 300

Kidnapping, using child slaves for, 33
Kilgore, Merle, 368
Kilgore, Steve, 367
Killen, Buddy, 368
Killing, from a distance, 320
Kilo 5 series slaves, 180
Kim, North Korean dictator, 139
Kimball, Spencer W., 146
Kinetics, internal, 272
King Arthur story, 61, 350
King Evoldo, 111
King Hezekiah, 6
King Louis XV, 345
King Roquat of the Rocks, Oz figure, 113
King alters, 198
King of Hearts, 116
King of Sweden, 363
King of Syria, 313
King's castles, demonic, internal, 229
King's men, 282
King, Stephen P., 370
King, Steven, novels and movies used, 336
King, knows all that is going on,script, 115
Kingdom, 212
Kings, Priests, Princes, Illum. bldline, 205
Kings, names of in Bible, misused, 309
Kinman, Dwight, 332
Kipling, Rudyard, 296
Kirk, in cartoon series, 234
Kirkland AFB, NM, 381
Kirlian photography, 318
Kiss signals, 94
Kissinger, Henry, 375
Kissinger, Henry and Billy Graham, 135
Kitten Alters, 89-90, 227
Kittens, Billy Graham's, 289-290
Klages, Ludwig, 267
Klaus, Bob and Lia, 315
Klingon Dictionary, 234
Klonopin, 55
Kluft, Richard, 1
Knight in Crimson & White Armor, 116
Knight, J.Z., 125
Knights Templars, worship of Kali, 219
Knights of Malta, 56
Knights of Poseidon, S.S., 325
Knocking Trigger, script for, 311
Knowledge Abyss, 214
Knowles family, 370
Knowles, James L., 370
Koldasians, human looking "aliens", 286
Kooyman, Gerald L., 262
Kore-Persephone, 219
Koresh, David, 125
Krebs, Mrs., 371
Kreskin, Occultist, 146
Krieg, Linda, 369
Krippner, S., 273
Kristopherson, Kris, 367
Krull, movie, 357
Krupp Illuminati Family, 56
Krupp, (either Friedrich Alfred or Gustav), 270
Krupp, Bertha, 331
Ku Klux Klan, 11, 18, 124, 379
Kundalini force, 162
Kursk, battle of, 224

L'Automatisme psychologique, 296
LGP alters, 272
LISP 2 computer language, 247
LISP computer language, 247
LSD-25, 49, 53, 54
LTPs, brain, 259
La Cutters, 92
LaRouche, Helga, 367
LaVey, Anton, 138, 342, 355, 380
LaVey, Anton, children of, were progrmd, 381
Laakso, Petri, 370
Labor, induced with designer drugs, 21
Labyrinth, film, 220, **229-233**, 354
Lady of heaven, Ishtar, 219
Lady's Slipper, 50
Lake Ontario, 354
Lake Oswego, OR, 155, 381
Lake of Fire, 376
Lakes of Death, internal, 222
Lambert, Dr. S.M., 253
Lammas Sabbat, 81
Lampe, MO, 381
Lancashire, England, 370
Lancaster Co. Satanic coven, PA, 152
Lancaster Co., PA, 151-152
Lancaster, PA Amish Settlement, 150
Lance, Rebecca, 370
Land of Oz, the, 99, 276
Lang, Velton, 368
Langley, VA, 381
Langley, name for CIA, 6
Language, Enochian, 72
Language, Magical, *777* handbook for, 69
Language, Star Trek, 234
Language, for hypnosis, 271
Language, magical, use in charting, 86
Language, multi-language capability, 203
Language, sign, for D & B alter codes, 87
Languages, important one to Illum., 202
Languages, magical, in ritual, 67
Lanning, Ken, dirty FBI, satanist, 369
Largatil, 49

Las Vegas, NV 331, 340, 381
Lasers, internal, 229
Lateral Eye Movement (LEM), 270
Lathrop, Rev. Joseph, 305
Latin, use in charting & codes, 86
Laundry Building, Mormon Tmpl, Lk.Oswego,OR, 155
Lawford, Peter, 355, 358
Lawless One, name for AntiChrist, 377
Lawnmower Man, 248
Lawrence Welk's band, 353
Layering of demons, 297-299
Layering, of programs, alters etc., 208-209
Le Baron Eagle Logo, 350
LeVine, Hank, 367
Lear, Norman, 149
Learning how to learn via NLP, 271
Leaving the Body: A Complete Guide to..., 319
Lee, Bruce, 370
Lee, John, 370
Lee, LTC, 315
Leek, Sybil, 375
Left hand path, programming considerations, 272
Legalism & License, 151
Legalism vs. Grace, 151
Legalism, Satan is great at, 377
Legba, african god/spirit, 304
Legend, biographical misinfo for slaves, 124
Legion, Demon, 295, 311
Legion, demons, script, 311
Leipzig, Germany, 371
Lennon, John, 85
Leonard, George, 315
Lesser Key of Solomon Goetia, 120-122
Letter, a, term used for instructions, 105
Letterman Hospital, Presideo, CA, 51, 221, 381
Letters & Papers of Ezra Stiles, Pres..., 305
Level System, sample code to, 74
Leviathon, 296
Leviathon, demon, 295, 302
Levine, Hank, 368
Lewis, James, 370
Lewis, Jerry Lee, 348, 355, 366, 367, 368, 369
Lexington, KT Detention Hospital, 59
Li Illum. fam., intelligence service, 339
Li Po, 45
Li Tian-En, 137
Liberal Christians & Billy Graham, 137
Libertyville, IL, 364
Libraries, Illuminati, secret, 299
Libraries, internal, demonic, 189, 214, 234
Libraries, internal portrayed, 232
Library, internal, Emerald City, 330
Library, of castle, 220
License & Legalism, 151
License plates, Oz theme, Kansas, 348
License plates, used for codes, 343
Lie Detector Instruments, used in prgmg, 281
Lienhart, Jody, 25-26
Lies, lead to bondage, 278
Life, 139
Life force, internal, 336
Life or Death Hunts, 201
Life, spiritual dimensions, 278
Light & Sound machines, 183
Light Green, color code, meaning of, 328
Light Side City, internal, 189
Light, place of energy, for alters, 194
Lights, bright, UFO, script, 118
Lights, dot programming, 335
Lights, flashed in sequences, 93
Lights, flashing, used for dissociation, 183
Lights, of castle, 220
Lights, used for induction, 82
Lights, used in bars, 32
Likenesses, biblical view, 279
Lilith Grotto, Temple of Set, 369
Lilith's box, danger in touching, 217
Lilith, demon, 213, 302
Lilith, sacrifice of male child, 21
Lilly, Dr. John, 367
Lilly, James H., Jr., 370
Lily, 213
Lima State Hosp., Lima, OH, 153
Lima, Peter J., 370
Limbic-hypothalamic System, 42, 57, 253, 255-256
Limbic-hypothalamic-pituitary adrenal sys., 42, 57
Limits of Scientific Psychiatry,..., 191
Limousine license plates, code words, 343
Lin Xian-Gao, 137
Lin, James C., 179
Lincoln, Abraham, 149
Lion throne, of Ishtar, 219
Liquid crystals, 183
INDEX OF LISTS
List of Body Programs, 76
List of Correspondences, 69
List, Body Programs, 253
List, Illuminati Rituals, 81-82
List, Programming Sites, 379-383
List, Ribbon activities, 330
List, alter names which are common, 208
List, comparing cult tactics w/ Monarch, 265-267
List, dirty FBI men working for Illum., 369
List, groups doing Theta Progrmg Research, 313-314
List, names of CIA drug running network, 368-369
List, names of Country Western perpetratrs, 368-369
List, names of Programmers, 367-368

List, of common demon types, 299
List, of supposed causes of demon possession, 303
List, of systems placed within a victim, 209
Listening devices, 345
Listening, taught as a spy skill, 339
Lithium, 52
Lithium battery, microchip implant, 184
Lithium carbonate, 55
Little Jackie Horner..., 225
Little John, cover name John Gunter, 367
Little Red Riding Hood, 85
Live Letter Drop (LLD), 157
Liver, used in ceremony, 291
Livermore State VA Hosp., Livermore, CA, 153
Llewellyn, 291
Loa, spirit, 304
Lobster Cloning program, 200
Lobster Program, 74
Locked-up child, 39
Lockheed F-117A, 331
Locomotion devices, internal, 236
Lodges, Masonic, bring slaves in for rituals, 144
Logic, Trance, 42-43
Logic, manipulation of, 323
Lollipop Cloning program, 74, 200
Lombardo, Guy, 353
London, England, 369, 370, 374, 376
Look Alikes, 360
Looking Glass People, access code, 74
Looking Glass People, alters, 158, 205
Looking Glass Person, used for access, 72
Looking Glass World, 302
Looking Glass World, script, 116
Looking Glass, use in programming, 104
Lophop-nine, 49
Lorazepam, 49
Lord Maitreya, 376
Lord Of the Rings, used for script, 120
Lord of Earth, power of Malkuth, 213
Lord's Chapel, Billy Ray Moore's, Ark., 125, 308
Loreda, Dr. Fox, 127
Loretta Lynn A Coal Miners Daughter, 286
Los Angeles Dodgers, 18
Los Angeles Times, 184, 254
Los Angeles, CA, 180-181
Lost time, in Voodoo, 305
Lotteries, state, 322
Loudon, France, 45, 295
Louisiana, 126
Louisville, KT, 179
Love Boat, 336, 354
Love Bombing, 24-25
Love You, Love You Not Programming (see I-Love-You...)
Love of God, 199
Love, Christ's, 278
Love, false, based on performance, 278
Love, learning to love via a tchr of love, 307
Love, of God, slaves progrmd to resist, 276
Lovedu tribe, 302
Loyalty alters, 198
Loyalty to Group Univ. Func. Code, 80
Luce, Henry and Billy Graham, 135
Luciano, Charlie "Lucky", 358
Lucifer, 8, 212, 163
Lucifer (journal of Theos. Soc.), 100
Lucifer Dethroned, 358
Lucifer, demon, 213, 214
Lucifer, demon/alter construct, 223
Lucifer, god of light, 349
Lucifer, worship of, 204
Lucifer-Beelzebub-Leviathon triad, 296
Luciferian form, Jokers are in, 337
Lucifuge, demon, 214
Lucis Trust, 100, 319
Lucy In the Sky with Diamonds, 85
Lumatron machine, 183
Lumber mills, Sheridan, OR, 32
Lunasa, honors Mother part, 217
Lupus erythematosus, 258
Lupas Foundation of America, 258
Lusitania, 257
Lust, Spirit of, 276
Lutheran church, 334
Lutric, Ronnie, 368
Luxemburg, country of, 213, 331
Luxor, Oz Theme park and pyramid, 348
Lynch, Scott C., 370
Lynn, Doolittle, 286
Lynn, Ernest Ray, 368
Lynn, Loretta, 286, 307, 355
Lyons, Judith A., 353
Lyscorbic Acid, 49
Léviathan (see Leviathon)

MDA, 49
MDE, 49
MDMA (see Ecstasy), 48-49
MGM Grand Hotel, 381
MGM Grand Wizard of Oz theme park, 348
MGM Grand, Las Vegas, 100, 348
MGM Theme Park, 381
MI-5, 18, 346, 383
MI-5 Section BIA, 383
MI-6, 1,3, 18, 19, 61, 207, 345, 346, 353, 364, 383
MI-6, use of mind controlled slaves, 1
MILSTAR, 294
MIT, 331
MJ security clearance, 2

MJ-12, 7
MK Ultra (See CIA topics for MK Ultra activit.), 5, 13, 59, 253, 357
MK Ultra Programmer, clinic named after, 55
MK Ultra Subproject 128, 59
MK Ultra Subproject 128-1, 59
MK Ultra, exposed in 1977, 5
MPD Multiple Personality Disorder (now called DID)
MPD & Channeling, 273
MPD versus Demonic Possession, 294
MPD work, demonic help, 291
MPD, early cases of, in occult bloodline, 305
MPD, increases brain's use, 248
MPD, long time term for recent term DID, 3
MPD, rare or non-existent in India, 305
MPD, script for many persons-1 body, 111-112
MPD, term defined, 8
MUDs, Multi-user dungeons, 256
MULTICS COBOL ver. 4.4 comp. language, 247
Maat, 44, 219
Maat, is the "pattern", 219
MacClean, Paul, 258
MacDill AFB, FL, 381
MacFadden, Jack, 368
MacHovec, Frank, 59
Macedonia State Hosp.,Macedonia, OH, 153
Machiavelli, Niccolò, 343, 370, 374
Maclaughlin, Reggie, 286, 368
Macumba, 303
Madonna, a victim of mind control, 352
Madonna, position in Illum., 376
Mafia, 18, 133, 202, 343, 358, 381, 383
Mafia slaves, 11
Mafia, Las Vegas, 381
Mafia, help they give the Illuminati, 358
Mafia, uses Youngstown Charm School bldg, 383
MAGIC TOPICS
Magic Mountain programming, Disneyland, 380
Magic Time Machine restaurants, 97
Magic scripts, 287, 288
Magic, European added to JuJu, 304
Magic, ceremonial, 122
Magic, internal, done via the T. of Life, 214
Magic, of trees, 217
Magic, real or illusion, 121
Magic, used to enhance abuse, 40
Magic, white man's, medicine, 275
Magical Alphabet, *777* handbook for, 69
Magical circle, used by gypsies to bapt, 352
Magical name, script to keep secret, 120
Magical names, secret, used by gypsies, 352
Magical star dust, 292
Magicians, Guild of, GTP, 370
Magicians, USO, 353
Magnum spy satellite, 294
Magor, Brent, 368
Mahalath, demon, 214
Mahoney, Michael, 370
Maid-Mother-Crone trinity, 217-219
Maiden Parts of triad goddesses, 217
Maiden parts, rituals they participate, 218
Maiden-Mother-Crone trinity, 204
Maimonides Dream Lab, 313
Maimonides Medical Center, Brooklyn, NY, 313
Maine, 370
Maitreya, Lord, 374, 376
Maitreya is secretly a jew, 376
Majic cake, 295
Major Strange, programmer, 95
Majorca Island, Europe, 382
Makerzi, Sheik Yusuf ben, 100
Malcolm, cover name of Aquino, 367
Malden, MA, 371
Male child, firstborn, sacrificed for Lilith, 70, 214
Malech, patent document, 168
Malkuth, 69, 213
Mallard Ducks, difference w/ Chickens, 260
Malone, Col. Mike, 315
Malory, Arthur Lee, 146
Mammon, demon, 302
Man Without a Country programming, 225
Man with the Green Glove, the, 364
Man, divided into spirit, body and soul, 322
Man, is targeted and degraded for md cntrl, 274
Manassah, Col., 367
Mandala, used as pattern for Oz, 101
Mandarin Chinese, 202
Mandrell, Barbara, slave, 369
Mandrell, Irby, handler, 367, 369
Mandrell, Iriene, slave, 369
Mandrell, Louise, slave, 369
Manganese chloride, 49
Mann, Dennis K., 370
Mannass, programmer, 95
Manos, film, 354
Mansanto Chemical Co. 56
Manson, Charles (Charlie), 34, 84, 99, 339
Mantra sounds in ritual, 67
Manual, 1st Earth Batt., Table of Contents, 316
Mao-Tse-Tung's Principles & teachings, 143, 289
Map, of Oz books used for structuring, 187
Map, of entire system,known to Gtkepr, 198
Maps, Star Trek, 234
Maps, internal, of a system, 157, 232
Maps, of a system, 157, 232
Maps, types of internal maps, 190
Marijuana, 48, 53
Marijuana, reasons it was made illegal, 48, 53
Marilyn Monroe Confidential An Intimate..., 342

Mariner, character in Waterworld, 260
Marionette programming, 222, 281
Mark of Foundation, 291
Markers, for brain cell activity, 250
Marlboro State Hosp., Marlboro, NJ, 153
Marriage Supper of the Lamb, 292
Marriage to the AntiChrist, 305
Marriages, maneuvering of slaves into, 344
Marrs, Jim, 128
Mars, alter to, 160
Marshall, Ken, 357
Marshlands, internal, 189
Martell, Marty, 368
Martial Arts, 314, 325
Martial Arts Masters, 315
Martial Arts alters, 198
Martial arts, connected w/ occult skill, 314
Martin, Dean, 358
Martin, Diane, 369
Marvel, Professor, 102
Marx, Karl, 374
Mary Had a Little Lamb, 84
Mary Mary Quite Contrary, 84
Mary Was an only Child, 85
Mary position, rel. to AntiChrist, 376
Mascaline, 49
Mask, porcelain, programming, 40, 282
Mask, used in AntiChr. marriage ceremony, 282
Masks, porcelain face, gems & colors, 330
Masks, used in ceremonies, 296
Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs, 36
Masonic Doctrine, 163
Masonic Rites, added to Voodoo, 304
Masonic Temples, 162
Masonic Youth prgm of So. Baptists, 149
Masonic hebrew passwords of grades, 69
Masonic logos on churches, 350
Masonic oath to conceal truth, 129
Masons (see Freemasons), 128-129
Mass spectrometers, 259
Massachusetts, 369
Massage Magic, 370
Mast cell, 251-252
Master Clock, internal, 334
Master is Savior scripts, 311
Master of the castle, 229
Master race beliefs, 328
Master, death of, programming around, 341
Matalin, Mary, 348
Matriarchal oligarchy, Star Trek, 356
Matrixes, how built, 335
Matthews, Lee J., 370
Max Planck Institute for Brain Resrch,Frankfurt, 258
Max, character on Videodrome, 356
Mayday Book, 71
Mayday Call, 117
Mayday codes, 78, 85, 225
Mayday signal, Queen of Hearts, 85
Maynard, Jim, 369
Mayo Clinic, 51
Mayor, example of Illum. Mayor in PA, 124
Maze & programming maps, internal, 190
Mazes, 302
Mazes, internal, 189, 197
Mazzini, Guiseppe, 100
McArthur, Michael, convert to Christ, 369
McCall magazine, 126
McCarran Airport, Las Vegas, NV, 331
McClellan AFB, CA, 381
McConnell, David M., 146
McFadden, Cherry, 229
McGill Psychiatric Training Network, 10, 381
McGill University, Montreal, Canada, 256, 381
McGranahan, Timothy L., 370
McIntyre, Debra, 356
McKenney, Tom, 145
McKnowlty, character on Trancer II, 357
McMartin Preschool Case, Calif., 125
McMinnville, OR, 32
McNeil, John, 315
Meadows, Hal, 367
Meadows, Hal, address of, 381
Media Bypass, 257
Media reports on conversions, 142
Media, controlled, used by AntiChrist, 375
Media, controls on it, 124
Mediaeko Investigating Rprtg Group, 181
Medical Files on Slaves, 86
Medical basis of tortures, 40
Medical personnel, hiding rdiotrnsmtg mtrl., 251
Medical personnel, needed for some prgm, 250
Medical supervision, needed to put in Beast comp., 330
Medicis, name of cigars on Videodrome, 356
Mediumship, training, Brazil, 303
Meganosis, demon, 302
Megas-tu magical universe, 234
Meidung, of Amish churches, 152
Meiers, Dr., 367
Melbourne, Victoria, Aust., 369
Melchizedek, rank, 309
Mellaril, 49, 347
Mellon Foundation, 379
Mellon Illuminati family, 379
Mellon, A.W., 379
Mellon, Seward Prosser, of Ligonier, PA, 367, 383
Melted state, 200
Melting Programs, codes, 75
Melting or merging with master, 266
Membrane, transparent, devlpd for breathing, 258

Memorandum, blind, 154
MEMORY TOPICS
Memories, Coded, 4
Memories, Nested, 43
Memories, how concealed, 191-93
Memories, kind that are first recovered, 68
Memories, of Child Sacrifice, hddn under Tree, 283
Memories, photographic, 333
Memories, recycle w/ PTSD, 36
Memory Erasure Program, 76
Memory Shattering Code, 75
Memory blocking, Acetylcholine, 47
Memory cue, 192
Memory deletion, drug for, 49
Memory flashes, 154-55
Memory loss, 356
Memory retrieval, 30
Memory, enhanced via drugs & torture, 248
Memory, enhanced via hypnosis, 248
Memory, explicit, drug to block, 48
Memory, long term, 165
Memory, photographic memory, creation, 247-248
Memory, protected, 332
Memory, retrieval, 43
Memory, scrambled by shock, 165
Memory, short term, 165
Memory, stored holographically, 258
Memory, types of, 42
Memphis Mafia, of Elvis, 355
Memphis, Rite of, 100
Men in Black, 118
Mengele Illum. bloodline, 371
Mengele, Dr. Joseph, 2, 10-11, 21, 34-35, 38, 107, 114, 117, 120, 157, 180, 208, 209, 212, 222, 232, 235, 281, 282, 310, 329, 335, 363, 365, 366, 367, **371-372**, 382
Mengele, Joseph's mother, 11
Mengele, Joseph, 2 black servants, 11
Mengele, Joseph, boxes, 111
Mengele, Joseph, penchant for testing dwarfs, 105
Mengele, Joseph, place at Scotty's Castle, 382
Mengele, Joseph, script for his disguise, 114
Mengele, Joseph, was an Ipsimus in Ill. 212
Mengele, rules for Puppets, 281-282
Mengele, used Cricket as cover, 157
Menninger Foundation, 254
Menninger, Karl, 299
Menninger, Roy W., 299
Mennonite Central Committee (MCC), 154
Mennonite Churches, 150
Mennonites, Amish, 150
Mennonites, Beachy Amish, 150
Mennonites, Charismatic, 150
Mennonites, Church of God in Christ, 150
Mennonites, Old Order, 150
Mensa, 370
Mensa System, sample code to, 74
Mensa programming, 221-222
Mensa programming codes section, 93-94
Mensa system, the, internal, 209,219-20, 221-222
Menschel, Robert, 370
Menstrual blood of dogs used, 198
Mental Assessment, 13-17
Mental Health Association, 56
Mental Hospitals, 153-154, 347, 348
Mental Hospitals, Amish & Mennon. service in, 153-154
Mental Hospitals, conditions in, 347
Mental Hospitals, patients used in md cntl, 30
Mentor, programmer, 95
Mercury's Staff, 221
Mercy, unwarranted, goes with rel. sprt, 289
Meritt, Jeff, 369
Messiah, of Old Testament, 376
Metabolite trichloroethanol, 48
Metaphor, seasonal changes of tree leaf, 271
Metaphors, used for reframing in prgrmg, 271
Metatron, demon, 214, 302
Methaqualone, 49
Methotrimeprazine hydrochloride, 49
Methy-cocaine, 49
Methy-prylon, 49
Metra-ol, 49
Metropolis, 323
Meyer, Dr. Joseph A., 367
Meyer, Lisette, 315
Meyer, Mary Pinchot, 359
Miami Republican Convention, '68, 149
Michal, Victor, 100
Michelson, patent document, 168
Mickey Mouse outfit, used in prgmg abuse, 125
Mickey Mouse programming, 357
Mickey, cover name of Aquino, 367
Microchip implants, 180
Microprocessor register, equivalent internlly, 333
Microwaves, used for conditioning, 167
Microwaves, used to create intrnl voice, 167
Mid-MO State Mental Hosp., Columbia, MO, 154
Midazolam hydrochloride, 49
Middle East indirect approach to subject, 152
Midler (sp.?), Vette, 355
Midnight sphere, 212
Midwifery, Illuminati training program, 251
Midwives, of Illuminati, 22, 150
Mikels, Ted V., 367
Military Command structure, model on demons cmmd struc., 300
Military bases, used for programming, 193
Military schools, used for mind control, 351
Milky Way, 218

Milky Way Galaxy Map, 235
Miller, Bea, 315
Miller, Joe, 315
Milnet network, 331
Mind changing genetics, 252
Mind Control, used by British in WW I, 1
Mind control, warned about in Bible, 313
Mind control research, underwater, 261
Mind control, used to produce soldiers, 324
Mine fields, use of dolphins to clear, 259
Mine, secret gold, myth of Scotty's, 382
Minihunes, 300
Mining research, underwater, secret, 262
Ministers, Christian, bogus advice, 308
Ministers, blackmail methods of Illum., 10
Ministers, ears closed to truth, 290
Ministers, many are blackmailed, 346
Ministry, Morning Star Church, 163
Minneapolis, MN, 136
Minnesota, 370
Minsk, Russia, 365
Mint, 215
Miracle of Seed Faith, 146
MIRROR TOPICS
Mirror Image Codes, 87
Mirror Image World, external, 300
Mirror image alters, 198
Mirror image splits, 29
Mirror images, 206, 228, 297, 334
Mirror images, spiritual vs physical, 297
Mirrors, 236, 302, 342, 359
Mirrors (w/ access permissions), intern, 189
Mirrors, dangers of are demonology, 188
Mirrors, external, use of, 342
Mirrors, in programming, 279
Mirrors, internal, 342
Mirrors, one way, 187, 192
Mirrors, one-way, how put in, 192
Mirrors, portrayed in Labyrinth, 231
Mirrors, programming script, 112
Mirrors, significance to the occult, 297
Mirrors, used for deception, 64
Mirrors, warning to therapists, 188
Misel, Carl, 369
Mishpuka, 364
Misperceptions, by relatives around slaves, 343
Miss Universe Contest 1995, 354, 357
Missiles, guided by psychics, 314
Missionary groups, used as fronts, 125
Missouri, 150, 370, 382
Mistletoe, 50
Mistress of Underworld, 219
Mitchell, Jim, 369
Mithraic Mysteries, 160
Mizaim, Rite of, 100
Moat, internal, 189, 220
Mock UFOs, 380
Mock alien invasion, 234
Mode frequencies, function of sfd & C.I, 169
Model B-12, Hot Shot cattle prod, 165
Modern Maturity, 258
Modi'in, 6
Moffatt, Robert H., 370
Moffet, George, 368
Mohr, Gordon, 163
Molecules, messenger, 252
Moles, affected by histamine levels, 251
Moles, created for cosmetic value, 41
Moloch, 161
Moloch temple, internal, 28, 223
Moloch, demon, 214, 302
Moloch, rites of, 60
Moloch, the fire of, 159
Moloch, vocalizations placed on word, 160
Monarch Code Section, 72-97
Monarch Hotel, Portland, OR, 381
Monarch Mind-Control Codes Index, 72
Monarch Program, computer list of slave, 8
Monarch Programming, book's use defined, 8
Monarch butterflies, know where hatched, 9
Monarch victims, awarded compensation, 5
Monastery, Catholic used for trafficking, 32
Mondavi, Robert, 3
Monitoring Units, portable, 166
Monkey, macaque, 259
Monkeys, protect Lilith's box, 217
Monkeys, winged, 225
Monotonic molecules, 321
Monotonous tasks, 265
Monroe, Dr. James, 367
Monroe, Marilyn, 341-343, 355, 358
Monroe, Marilyn address at Sutton Place, 342
Monroe, Marilyn, type of look desired, 41
Monroe, Marilyn, Programming of her, 341-342
Monroe, Robert A., 319
Monster alters, 198
Monte Rio, CA area, 33
Monterray, CA, 300
Montreal hospitals, 10
Montreal, Quebec, 381
Moon Child, 19, 156, 213
Moon Child ceremonies/rituals, 19-20, 45
Moon Children, 18-20, 200, 328
Moon River, 85
Moon swing, 213
Moon's sacred no.s nine & eighty-one, 19
Moore, Billy Ray, 125
Moore, Marie, 341
Moore, Patrick R., 370
Moore, Ronald, 356

Morals & Dogma, 161
Morey, Dr. Robert, 145
Morgan, Henry, 56
Morgan, Lorrie, 368
Morgan, Stanley & Co., 56
Moriah, another name for Illuminati, 9
Moriah, demon, 302
Mormo, demon, 302
Mormon Church (LDS), 18, 326
Mormon Temple Rituals, 326
Mormon Temple, Portland, OR, 381
Mormon Temple, Salt Lake City, 382
Mormon Temples, 298
Mormon Warehouses and Network Drugs, 139
Mormon programming, 302, 334
Morning Star, 70, 212
Morning Star Church, Tulsa, OK, 163
Morning Star rituals, 163
Morning Star, term, 163
Moroni, spirit/demon/dark angel, 298
Morphine, 49, 58
Morphine hydrochloride, 49
Morris Family, 133
Morris, David, 375
Moses, 6, 159, 360
Moses, Sixth and Seventh Book of, 299
Moses, confronted magic, 6
Mossad, 18, 364
Mote of nothingness, 192
Mother Board, equivalent, 334
Mother Gaia worship, 161
Mother Goose nursery rhymes & stories, 191, 336
Mother Parts of triad goddesses, 217-218
Mother Teresa, 147
Mother castles, spiritual, internal, 223
Mother in the swamps, 219
Mother of Darkness Castle, 331
Mother of Darkness alters (see also Mothers of Darkness below), 193, 204, 217, 291, 374
Mother of Darkness alters, ceremonies, 217
Mother of Darkness secret HQ, castle, photo, 387
Mother of Darkness slave, prtctd by position, 344
Mother of Darkness, dialogue over Saturn, 161
Mother of Darkness, rubs oil, 291
Mothers of Darkness, 205, 293, 305, 322
Mothers of Darkness, all are A.C. bride 374
Mothers of Light (cover name), 293
Motionless following, 345
Motor areas of brain, 57
Motorola, 182
Mount Sinai Hospital, 51
Mountains, internal, 189
Mouse alters, 198
Mouse, flips system, 84
Movement, of child, restricted in home, 67
Movies, internal of tortures, 227
Moyers, Bill, 149
Mr. Nobody, script, 117
Mr. Roger's Neighborhood, 72
Mr. Rogers' type corrigan sweaters, 366
Mt. Olympus, Greece, 374
Mt. Pleasant State Hsp.,Mt. Pleasant,IO, 153
Mt. Quabbalah, 214
Mt. Shasta, CA reprogramming center, 348, 374, 381
Mt. of Olives, internal, 87
Mueller, Heinrich, 120, 366, 367
Mulaprakriti, 101
Mule Barns, Presideo, photo, prgrmg site, 382, 386
Mulholland, John, 64
Muller, Robert, 181
Multi-user dungeons, MUDs, 256
Multiple Personalities, defined, 8
Multiple sclerosis, 45, 257-258
Multnomah Co. Det. Ctr., librarian, 324
Munchkin girl, 109
Munchkins, dwarfs, 105
Munich, Germany, 364
Muno, Belgium, 213, 331
Murder Univ. Func. Code, 81
Murder, Inc., 358
Muse, Martha T., 56
Mushroom, Alice In Wonderland script, 116
Music Hits, cues programmed ahead of time, 158
Music, and hypnosis, 66-67
Music, fast, effect of, 257
Music, for programming states, 256-257
Music, heavy metal, 257
Music, power of, 256-257
Music, slow, effect of, 257
Music, term used for instructions, 105
Muskego, WI, 166
Mute Univ. Func. Code, 80
Mute, deaf and dumb, as cover, 123
Mutt & Jeff routine, 284
My Fair Lady, 336, 354
My Life and Prophecies, 375
Myeloid cell, 251
Myers Ranch, CA, 34
Myss, Carolyn, 315
Mysteries of sacrifice,attched to Tifar, 212
Mysteries of the Bible, show, 310
Mysteries, Hidden, taught to slaves, 323
Mystery Religion, Nordic, 363
Mystery Religions, 46, 149, 162, Ch10titlepg, 365
Mystery schools, apprentice level, 218
Mystical beliefs, spprted by staged event, 348
Mystics, provided info for 1st Earth, 315
Myths, source of power, 275

N65-32284 20-3414 research project NASA, 247
N67-3042 research project, NASA, 247
NASA (National Space Admin.), 10, 18, 97,118, 183, 235, 247-248, 313
NASA Mind-control ctr, Washington, D.C., 383
NASA high tech programming, 383
NASA in Huntsville, AL, 10
NASA mirror-theme programming, 380
NASA's Intergalactic Language, 247
NASA, does Alien programming, 120
NCC (National Council of Churches), 126, 141
NCC Resolution, Feb. 1973, 144
NIS, 32
NLP Neurolinguistic programming, 269-272, 343
NLP and Multiple personalities, 269-270
NLP assumptions, 269
NMDA receptors, 259
NORAD, CO, 314, 331, 356, 380
NORAD, computers of, 331
NOTS, (see also China Lake) 10, 31-34, 313
NSA, 18, 183, 247, 380
NY County Medical Society, 365
Naamah, demon, 214
Nadir, 243
Nembutal, 49
Name, new, received at Satanic baptism, 292
Names of God, 122
Names, cover, 71
Names, gems used, 282
Names, types of names for alters, 208
Naming, methodologies, 208
Nanna, demon, 302
Nanna, demon, code of, 77
Nanoprocessor Units, 240
Napa Valley Opus 1 winery, 3
Naples, Italy, 20
Narcissus, 50
Narco-imal, 49
Narcotics, controlled by Illuminati, 56
Narut, Lt. Comdr. Thomas, 367
Nasal cavity, site for newly discvd sense organ, 256
Nashville, TN, 355, 381
Nathan, programmer, 95, 367
Nation magazine, 380
National Anthems, used for programming, 85
National Board of Religious Objectors, 154
National Council of Churches (NCC), 141
National Geographic Society, 150, 260
National Institute of Health, 51
National Institute of Mental Health, 250, 313
National Life Insurance Co., 382
National Programs Office, 18
National Science Foundation, 18
National Security Act, 9
National Security Agency (NSA), 18, 128, 247, 380
National Security Council, Principle Agent, 326
National Security, used as a cover, 4, 11, 125
National Space Administration (NASA), 10, 18, 97,118, 183, 235, 247-248, 313
National Business, 258
Naval Intelligence (ONI), 3, 18, 118, 179, 260
Naval Ordinance Test Station (NOTS), see China Lake, 31-34
Naval Surface Weapons Center, 313
Naval Weapons Center NWC, (see also China Lake), 31-34
Naval intelligence, secret research of, 260
Navistar Eagle Truck, 350
Navy, psychics of, 318
Nazi Death Head Units, 325
Nazi Mind Control, 1
Nazi assassination MPD systems, 201
Nazi boots, in programming, 107
Nazi empire, 350
Nazi genetic goals, 9
Nazi records, confiscated by allies, 2
Nazi underwater research, 259
Nazi uniforms, worn by programmers, 339
Nazi war criminals, 363-365
Nazi, infiltration of US with slaves, 152
Nazism, 157, 363
Near Death Trauma Centers, 138, 381
Nebadon, Michael, 315
Necklace, of Kali, 219
Needles, used for dissociation, 67
Needs, manipulation of, 265
Neighborhood, NWO meaning described, 8
Neilly, Robert W., 370
Nelson, Bonnie, 368
Nelson, Willie, 368
Nembutal (see Sodium pentobarbital), 49
Nemo, demon, 302
Neo-Nazi groups, 18, 123
Neocortex, 44
Neonatal Behavioral Assessment Scale NB, 23
Nephthys, 44
Nephalim, 287
Nero, 374
Nerve signals convert to messenger molecules, 252
Nested Memories, 43
Nester, name of Donkey, 383
Net, fish net appearance, to Mensa system, 221
Netsah, 292
Network Information Center,Menlo Park,CA, 331
Network, term's meaning described, 8
Networks, how they look, 194
Neural transmitters, 54
Neuro-Linguistic Programming NLP, **269-272**, 343
Neurobiologists, 257-258

Neuron "binding", 258
Neuron connections, 37
Neurons, 184, 258
Neuropeptide System, cntrld by Hypothal, 255
Neurophysiological states, 58
Neuroscientists, 47
Neurosis, 303
Neurotransmitter, Glutamate, 250
Neurotransmitters, 258
Nevada, 331, 370
New Age, 350
New Age Groups, California, 325
New Age Leaders, ex-, 128
New Age Movement, 102, 301
New Age Teachings of Southern Baptists, 149
New Age Thinking, 314
New Age churches, receive Crsd converts, 142
New Age groups, 157
New Age groups, assist 1st Earth Batt., 317
New Age teachings, 131
New Berlin, WI, 166
New Earth Battalion, 314
New Era Foundation scam, 148
New Jersey, 154, 341, 352, 364, 370
New Jersey State Hospital, Greystone Pk., 154
New Mexico, 95, 370
New Mexico, programming code no.s, 95
New Mind, New Body, 253
New World Order, Graham wants it embrace, 126
New World Order, term described, 8
New Worlds of Mind and Spirit, 291
New York, 364, 370
New York Crusade, B.G. 1957, 139, 146
New York Public Library, 365
New York Times, 380
New Zealand, 370
Newsletter From A Christian Ministry, 132, 141, 204-205, 368
Newsweek, 54, 139
Newton, Wayne, 355
Nexus Seven, 347
Niacin, 49
Nicotine, 49
Nicotinic acid, 49
Nielsen, Ruth A., 370
Nietzsche, Friedrich, 369
Night of the Living Dead, film, 354, 359
Nikthemine, 49
Nile Goose, 218
Nimitz Hospital, NWC, CA, 31, 379
Ninja, 314
Nitrogen, 260
Nitrous oxide, 49
Nixon, Pres. Richard M., 136, 149, 351, 364
No More Mr. Nice Guy, 85
No-Talk Programming, 38-39
Noah's Ark, used for programming theme, 80
Noah, as in the days of, 376
Nobel Prize, 249
Noblitt, Randy, 78
Nobody, Mr., script, 117
Noctec (see Chloral hydrate)
Noise, used in split brain programming, 249
Noises, loud used in initial traumas, 25
Noludar (see Methy-prylon), 49
Nome King, 111, 113, 114
Nome King palace, 115
Nome King, is king of the underworld, 113
Nomes, 113-114
Non Compos Mentis law, 349
Non-bloodline children, programming of, 30
Non-lethal weapons, 167
Nonsense Univ. Func. Code, 81
Nordic Mystery beliefs, 363
Norepinephrine, 272
Norristown State Hosp., Norristown, PA, 153
North Africa, 353
North Dakota, 341
North Korea, 143
North Pole, 162
North Star Baptist, 132
Norwegian Caribbean Lines, 369
Notebook, blk or grey w/ access codes, 4
Nothing alters, 198
Notionals, used by CIA, 124
Nourse, Andrew, 370
Novacaine, 49
NuSpeak computer language, 247
Nuclei, of the Thalamus, 42
Nude, color code, 238
Nugen Hand Bank scandal, 136
Nugent, Dr. Arthur, 51
Nuns, dissociated at flower smells, 45
Nuremberg, Germany, 364
Nursery Rhymes trigger/code section, 84
Nursery Rhymes used in Chi progrmmg, 79
Nursery, internal, 189
Nwyvre, druid dragon life-force, 302
Nydal, Ole, 315
Nymphs, 19

O'Brien, Cathy, 5, 59, 107, 272, 366
O'Brien, Earl, 369
O'Connor, Joseph, 269
O'Dell, Scott, 120
O'Hara, Nick, 369
OK Fix, term for blackmail, 346
OMSI buildings, old and new, Portland,OR, 381
ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence, see Naval

Intelligence)
OSS records, 2
OTO (Ordo Templi Orientis, To Ov), 18-19, 122, 354, 355, 364, 370
OTO programmer, 190
OAK TREE TOPICS
Oak Tree, program hanger, 215
Oak Tree, used for Presideo prgrmg, 385
Oak Tree, used in ceremony, 295
Oak tree, internal, 70, 188
Oak tree, portrayed in Labyrinth, 230
Oak, in Druidism, 215
Oakley, Annie, 382
Oakridge Boys, 368
Oath, of 1st Earth Battalion, 325-326
Oaths, 309
Oaths to Satan, 374
Oaths, enforcement, external, 293
Obatala, african god/spirit, 304
Obedience scripts, 310-312
Obedience training by Amish, 193
Obedience training by Illuminati, 24, 193, 264
Obedience, script for, 112
Obedience, training begins at birth, 24
Obholzer, Anton, 383
Objects, common, used in programming, 58
Observation alters, 198
Obsidian, liked by Bast, 218
Occidental Petroleum Corp., 146
Occult Revival, Europe, 1400-1600s, 352
Occult history, stored by demons, 330
Occult leader, states goal of masters, 273
Occult power, a method of bondage, 322
Occultists, European, learn from Asia, 9
Occupational objectives for slaves, prg, 270-271
Occupational programming, 35
Ocean, internal, 189
Octopus Suicide Strangulation Program, 76, 225
Octopus, demon, 302
Odd & Even numbers, Alice In Wndrld script, 116
Oddfellows (IOOF), 18
Oddfellows Halls, 162
Odhar, Kenneth, 375
Odin, 363
Odinism, 370
Oesterreich, Traugott Konstantin, 1
Office of Naval Intelligence (see Naval Intelligence)
Office of Scientific Research & Devel., 153
Offit AFB, NE, 294
Ofshe, Dr. Richard, 3
Ogham writing, 287
Ogun, african god/spirit, 304
Ohio, 370, 382
Oil, needed during prgmg to protect, 291
Oil of Cloves, 50
Oilfield Scrap & Equipment, Kentucky, 341
Oke, Isaiah, 302
Oklahoma, 13, 366, 370
Oklahoma State Mental Hosp., Norman, OK, 13
Olcott, Henry Steel, 100
Old King Cole, 84
Old Order Amish Mennonites & settlement, 150
Old Order Amish, in Germany, 152
Old Order Mennonites, Ontario, 150
Old Roman Catholic Church, 358
Olympia, WA, 128
Olympians, Illuminati kingpins, 205
Olympics, Summer '96, 163
Ombos Pylon, Temple of Set, 370
Omega Codes, section, 80-81
Omega Programming, 227, 236
Omen movies, 336
Onassis, Aristotle, 363
One World Church, 289
One-way mirrors, 192, 203
Ontario, Can, 370
Onyx, Black, 292
Onyx, internal, 330
Operation Carrier Pigeon (monograph), 107
Operation Greenstar, 180
Operation Minaret, 380
Operation Mind Control, Researcher's ed., 119, 122, 353
Operation Sphinx, used as example, 344-345
Operation, planning typical intelligence, 344-345
Operations Coordinating Board (OCB), 7
Opium, 50
Opponents, NWO, most double agents, 346
Optic Problems Body Program, 76, 253
Optical Data Network, internal, 240
Oracles, Mystery Religions, 374
Oral Roberts University, 147, 193, 383
Oral Roberts University, used for prgmg, 193
Orange Book, NSA security levels book, 380
Orange, Dr. Martin T., 367
Orange, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Orden Fraternitas Saturni, 18, 370
Ordensburgen Castles, Third Reich, Ger., 325
Order of Leviathan, Baxley, GA, 370
Order of Skull & Bones, 156, 325
Order of St. John of Jerusalem, 56
Order of the Druses, 100
Order of the Garter, 205
Order of the Quest, 205
Order of the Trapezoid, 369, 370
Order of the Vampire, 370
Orders, need to be clear not conflictg, 344
Ordo Saturni, 18, 370
Oregon, 55, 152, 369
Oregon Health Sciences University Hosp., 251

Oregonian, 260
Organ, Welte Mignon, 382
Organic robotoids, of Illum., 360
Organizational Development OD programs, 325
Orinn, dwarf, 301
Orion Arm, 239
Orion constellation, 119
Orion, Elvis Presley album, 355
Orion, demon, 302
Ork alters, 197
Orks, fly over internal mazes, 232
Orlov, Russian Captain, 120
Ormus, 350
Ormus, meanings of, 321
Orn, Martin T., 3
Ornaments, script for alters to be, 115
Orne, Mr., 42
Orphanages, children from, 12
Orthodox Church, Russia, 137
Osbourne, Amanda, 370
Oscillators, Microwave, 170-77
Oshawa, Ont., 354
Oshun, african god/spirit, 304
Osirus, 44, 99, 102, 205
Osirus, golden organ, programmed in, 99
Osmund, Merril, 368
Ouspensky, Peter D., 324
Out of Body Experiences (OBE's), 266, 319
Outer Darkness, internal, 227
Outer Space, internal, 189, 226
Outgassing, 260
Outside Reporters Univ. Func. Code, 81
Over the Rainbow, 85
Over the Rainbow, term discussed, 105
Overlays of alters, demons, images, 28
Overstreet, Tommy, 368
Overwhelming of the Senses, for dissoc., 25
Owens, Programmer, 95, 367
Owl, 233
Owl alters, 197
Owls, protect Lilith's box, 217
Ox-cart analogy, 131
Oxide, color code, 238
Oxnam, G. Bromley, 147
Oxygen & breathing, 259-261
Oz Factor, the, 286
Oz stamps, U.S. Postage, 347
Oz, means Osirus, 99
Oz, mexican witch, 347
Ozburn, Ozzy, 347
Ozma of Oz, 99, 109-15, 334
Ozma, represents ruler of castle, 76
Ozone hole kills planet, Star Trek, 356
P-32 fighter planes, 33
P.4, elite group of MI-6, 6
P2 Freemasonry, 18, 135
PACER computer, 82
PAS -Personality Assessment System, 13-17
PASCAL computer language, 247
PCP, 56
PEARL computer language, 247
PET scans, 207, 250
PI-40 Committee, 7
PIS, 184
PL/1 computer language, 247
PL/1-APAREL computer language, 247
PLANIT computer language, 247
POWs, used for mind-control, 30
PREMA, 182
PTSD (Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder), 35-36
PX, Ft. Meade, MD, 247
Pacific Institute, the, 315
Pacts to Baphomet, 8
Pacts, ceremonial, to have a child, 20
Page, Richard E., 370
Paidika,Journal of Paedophilia, 3
Pain Program, 76, 97
Pain programming, anchored w/ hypnosis, 97
Pain, caused by torture memories, 228
Pain, created by drugs, 53
Pain, implants to stimulate pain, 181
Painted Faces Secret Ceremony, 81
Paisley, Ian R.K., 132, 140
Palace of Fine Arts, Presideo, Greek Col., 381
Palace of Fine Arts, photo of, 384-385
Palaces, Spain & Morocco, 382
Palau, Luis's ministry, 148
Palladium Rite of Freemasonry, 18
Palmdale, CA, 331
Palo Mayombe, 18
Pan, 19, 302
Pan, part of Moonchild ritual, 19
Panama, 353
Pancake People, 329
Pantocaine, 49
Pantopone, 49
Pantu, programmer, 95
Papa Ludo's Store & Tavern, 34
Paper Doll Program, 76, 225
Paper Trees, internal, 189
Paper dolls, substituted for fire trauma, 201
Paper, edible, 157
Papez circuit, 42
Papillion, NE, 381
Papoose Lake, 331
Papyri, ancient Egyptian magical, 222
Papyrus of Qenna, 44
Parables, reframed for misuse, 308

Paracelsus, 19
Paraguay, 371
Parahyx, 49
Parakeet, used in GE breathing experimt, 259
Paraldehyde, 49, 51
Paralyses, localized, 57
Paralyze, drug to, 48
Paralyzing agent, anectine, 268
Paramount, 355
Paranoid schizophrenics, misdiag. of victims, 284
Parents, episode showg how they help prgrmg, 263
Parents, of slaves, blackmailed, 9
Parents, of slaves, rewarded, 10
Parez, Japheth, 132
Parker, Col. Tom, 355, 367
Parkin, Antony, 370
Pasadena, CA new age school, 355
Pasadena, TX, 45
Pashon River, used in programming script, 330
Passages, secret, internal, 220
Passbook Programming, 79
Passover, 292, 376
Passover, time of, God sends witnesses, 376
Pastors, as witnesses about Graham, 128
Paten (holy dish), 82
Patent No. 4,858,612; , 167-178
Patent, for white gold, 321
Path, right hand & left hand, 255
Pathways, for biochem & physiolgcl change, 255
Pathworking, 81, 213
Patriarchal Blessing & mind control, 139
Patrick AFB, 381
Patriots, American Patriot Movement, 326
Patriots, Christian, 326
Patterson, programmer, 95, 368
Paul, apostle, 300
Pawn alters, 282
Paxil, 55
Peace University, 181
Peace, dangers of overemphasis, 151
Peace, sense of, used by programmers, 266
Peale, Norman Vincent, 146
Pedestal alters, 89, 217
Pedestals, spinning with 3 alters, 7
Pedophilia, 3, 152
Peer Pressure, 278, 359
Peer pressure, danger of, 278
Peer pressure, internal, 360
Pehyl-thio-urethanes, 49
Pelagic yellow-bellied sea snake, 260
Pele, God of Fire, 298
Pellotine, 49
Penalties, to breaking blood oaths, 293
Penn, William, 152
Pennslyvannia, 152, 369
Penta-brain, 258
Pentacle, 250
Pentagon, 318
Pentagram System, sample code to, 74
Pentagram, internal system, 209, 220, 222
Pentecostal, non-denom. no-name,Sat. Church, 125
Pentobarbital, 49, 55
Pentobarbital sodium, 49
Pentothal acid, 49
Pentothal sodium, 49
People for the American Way, 149
Pepitone, Lena, 341-342
Pepperbox, Hell Pit, internal, 189
Peptides, 256
Percaine, 49
Perception, changed by hypnosis, 64
Perceptions, how created, 258
Perfectionism, 289
Performance based religion, 151
Performance, part of bondage loop, 277
Perfumes, used in coded ways, 122
Permissions, for UNIX, 332-333
Permissions, levels of, 333
Pernoston, 49
Peron dictatorship, Argentina, 365
Perpetrators, monograph, 368
Perphenazine, 55
Persecutor alters, so named, 224
Perseus Arm, 239
Persian God of Light, Ahura Mazda, 350
Personal Shocker Cattle prod, 165
Personalities, the creation of by prgmr, 41-42,44
Personality Assessment System (PAS), 13-17
Personality, fracturing & rebuilding, 28
Personality, site held in brain, 43
Peter Pan Programming, 32, 82, 83, 380
Peter, Peter Pumpkin Eater, 84
Peterson, Pete, 368
Petra Secret City, internal, 189
Petra, hidden area, 329
Petra, programming script for, 110
Pets, used to traumatize child victim, 102
Petty, Jerry and Arlene, 368
Peyotl, 49
Phallic worship, 162
Pharaoh, 321, 376
Pharmaceutical co., help w/ mind control, 5
Pharaoh's magicians, 6
Pheactin, 49
Phenamine, 49
Phenobarbital, 55
Phenolic acid, 49
Pheromones, 256
Pheromones, assist in virtual reality, 256
Philadelphia Crusade, B.G., 1992, 142

Philadelphia State Hosp., Phila., PA, 154
Philadelphia, PA, 169
Philanthropy, why Illuminati do it, 128
Philosopher's Stone, the, 321
Philosophy, occult indoctrination in, 323-326
Phobias, which are genetically passed, 37
Phoenix, AZ, 300, 302
Phoenix, Buick's car, 350
Phoenix, bird, 352
Photocurrent, 183
Photographers, Porn used by NASA, 5
Photographic memories, 221
Photographic memory, creation of, 247-248
Photographic memory, helped by MPD, 248
Photometry, 55
Photons, microwave, 170
Photos, Clinton, 158
Photos, Electroshock hotshot marks, Ch6titlepg
Photos, Presideo, 384-386
Physical Control of the Mind, Towards...181, 323
Physical criteria, 29
Physicians Desk Reference, 55
Physiological Chemistry, 169
Physiological Research Lab, Naval Intell., 261
Picnic, meaning of ritual, 118
Picrate, 49
Picrotoxin, 49
Picture, used as a scrambling device, 264
Pigs, considered dirty in Judaism, 200
Pike, Albert, 156, 161
Pilgrim Society, 146
Pilgrimages, give demons authority, 275
Pillow, Ray, 368
Pilots terminology, 233
Pineal gland, 321
Pink, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Pit, bottomless, 301
Pit, or hole tortures, 39
Pit, the, CIA Langley HQ basement, 2
Pit, used for Anti-God programming, 274
Pittsburgh, PA, 144, 370
Pituitary gland, affected by music, 257
Plagues of Egypt, program, 309
Plane, hypnotic trance script, 117
Planets, internal, 185, 301
Planned spontaneity, 348
Plans for AntiChrist reign, 205
Plans, made for slave's life by 4 yrs., 186
Platforming, spiritual, 280
Playboy, 12
Playboy type night clubs, 136
Playground, internal, 189
Playing with the Queen of Hearts, 85
Pleiades, the, 119, 160, 163
Pleiadians, human looking "aliens", 286
Plutonium bombs, internal, 229
Poe, Edgar Allen, 354
Point of No Return, film, 354
Pokorney, Col. Tony, 315
Polar explorers, 267
Police training, Satanism avoided, 128
Police, Chicago, 138
Police, lack of help for SRA survivor, 55
Police, participation in mind control, 351
Police, receive ALEX system by end '95, 182
Police, use guilt, 284
Policy Planning Group (PCG), 7
Politics, internal, 337
Polyclinic Hospital, NY 342
Polygraph, used to debrief, 154
Polymorpho nuclear granulocyte, 251
Pomegranate juice, 219
Pontiface Maximus, 302
Pony, Trigger, 383
Pool of Death, internal system, 209, 220, 222
Pool of Death, sample code to, 74
Pool of abilities, common, of MPD mind, 43, 186
Pope John Paul II, 139
Pope, travels to ritual beach, 303
Pope, viewed by many as AntiChrist, 374
Popes, Roman Catholic, 374
Popol Vuh, Ch10titlepg
Popper liquor drink glass, 78
Poppies, scarlet, used for trance prgrm, 109
Poppy Field, internal, 105, 106, 189
Poppy Fields, into & out of codes, 75
Poppy field, on Krull, 357
Porcelain Face (masks) Programming, 227 203, 282, 330
Porn, 352
Porn alters, 198
Porn films of slaves, 5
Porn films, used for blackmail of slave, 346-347
Porn of NWO, 12
Porn, Illuminati distribution network, 352
PORTALS
Portal, in Labyrinth, 230
Portal, third eye, 320
Portals, 189, 203, 228, 277, 285, 290-292, 300, 320
Portals, for alters & demons, internal, 189, 300
Portals, how they work, 300
Portals, natural created, 203
Portland Crusade 1993, B.G., 131-32, 141
Portland, OR, 32, 300, 308, 365, 381
Portland, OR favorite site for nazi crimnls, 365
Portland, OR programming sites, 381
Portland, OR woman searches for help, 183
Possession Demonical & Other, 1
Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder PTSD, 35-36
Postmaster Computer Daemon, 332-333

Potion, makes people dream while awake, 56
Potions, example of ingredients, 50
Potter Wheel Invocation, 222
Potter and the Clay, 222
Potter's Wheel codes, 77
Potter's Wheel, internal program/system, 209, 220, 222, 310
Potter's right over clay script, 312
Power Words, 70, 272
Power given to slave, barrier to freedm, 285
Power of Life or Death, addiction to, 285
Power packs, internal, 236
Power sources of Computers, 89
Power, honor, glory & wealth, promised, 340
Power, slave given power over others, 341
Powers, dark spiritual, 293
Prairie, meaning of ceremony site, 118
Prana children, 213
Praxis computer language, 247
Pre-language alters, 27-28
Pre-programming training of child, 12-13
Precedence, legal to attack therapists, 3
Preemie, health difficulties, 21
Preemies, Illuminati, make newspapers, 21
Preemies, have high level of abuse, 20-21
Pregnancies, false, as a cover story, 123
Pregnant mothers, traumatized, 20
Premature birth, advantages for progmmg, 20-23
Presbyterian Minister's Fund, 146
President Bush, 1,000 points of light, 213
Presidential Model Slaves, 11, 78, 79, 341-342, 351, 383
Presidential Model, 1st public one, 341-342
Presidents, signature color change threat, 293
Presideo, CA, 10, 147, 193, 200, 381
Presideo, fire traumas, 200
Presley, Elvis, 100, 355
Presley, Elvis, on a 4-man Illum. team, 355
Presley, Elvis, programmer Col. Parker, 355
Presley, occult training of, 355
Pride, 307
Pride, Charlie, 368
Pridgen, William D., 370
Priest, Catholic, exorcist at Loudun, 296
Priestess Level, Illuminati, 21
Priests of Isis, 102
Priests, part of Programming Network, 124
Prieure de Sion, 321, 350
Primal part, script for guarding, 309
Primal programming foundation, 27
Primal trauma, dealing with it, 220
Primal traumas to core, 220
Primary Alters, sample code sheet, 88
Prime Freak, 182
Prince Karl, prince of Hesse, 345
Prince, Col. Howard, 315
Princess Backup program, 227-228, 229
Princess Langwidere, 111, 112, 113
Princess, black, 228
Princeton Univ., 313
Principalities, 293, 298
Principles, spiritual, 273-274
Principles, spiritual, give deliverance, 7
Prisons, Amer., help w/ mind control, 5
Prisons, require biofeedback, 253
Prisons, used to test artif. sodomy, 167
Pritzker, Mishpuka leader, 364
Problems, deep spiritual, 276
Problems, in forming outside relationshps, 360
Problems, surface, 276
Procaine, 49
Process Church, 18, 38, 99
Prochlorperazine, 52
Professional Baseball, 18
Program Shamrock, 380
Program, Don't cry, how its done, 39
Program, Plagues of Egypt, 309
Program, Eating Disorder, how created, 39
PROGRAMMER
Programmer alters (see Pr...,internal), 206
Programmer, best, European, 202
Programmer, discusses scripts w/ Grande Dame, 191
Programmer, ex-, describes programming, 209
Programmer, external, UNIX, top is "god", 332
Programmer, his voice, 65
Programmer, plays role of Darth Vader, 234
Programmer, rescues from mock-crisis, 309
Programmer, upset at deliverance of slave, 296
Programmer, who knows Chrstn principles, 277
Programmers, Illuminati, demonism important, 209
Programmers, can have a likable exterior, 343
Programmers, clothes or lack of durg prgrg, 366
Programmers, dual nature of, 265
Programmers, external, 5, 35, 39, 65, 67, 157, 180, 190, 202, 206, 234, 265, 273, 277, 296, 309, 332, **363-377** (check other references too.)
Programmers, external, duplicate tmselv, 206
Programmers, face to face w/ authors, 5
Programmers, internal, 71, 84, 89, 185, 198, 225, 337
Programmers, internal, work during "sleep", 71
Programmers, know Christn spir. principles, 273
Programmers, language during rape, 39
Programmers, needed for Delta missions, 202
Programmers, personalities of, 67
Programmers, power struggles, 365
Programmers, pray to Satan for designs, 190
Programmers, pretend they are aliens, 157
Programmers, ritual to conjure demons, 296

Programmers, set themselves up as gods, 286-290
Programmers, systematic in destroyg all of merit, 351
Programmers, today's, 180
Programmers, top ones, reg. meetings of, 34
Programmers, treated like royalty, 363
Programmers, under Hitler, 281
Programmers, who are 3rd-4th gen. robots, 366
Programmers, who are military men, 366
Programmers,hierarchy prgrmg assistants, 35
PROGRAMMING
Programming Site codes section, 95
Programming Site, Under Mormon Temple, 155
Programming Sites, 10, 95, 166, 379-387, all of App.2
Programming Sites, impromptu site, 166
Programming Sites, moved after exposure, 379
Programming Zone Codes, 95
Programming acts, effect body, md, spirit, 276
Programming alters to help program others, 198
Programming assessment teams, 13-17
Programming centers, specialization of, 366
Programming script, to keep alters in, 112
Programming, AntiChrist Call-back, 182
Programming, Camelot & Shakespeare, 282
Programming, Color, 32
Programming, Illum., prior to Mengele, 11
Programming, Imperial, 182
Programming, Jesuit, 309
Programming, Lilith, 21
Programming, No-talk, how created, 39
Programming, Peter Pan, 32, 82, 83
Programming, Porcelain Face, 282, 330
Programming, Puppet, 281
Programming, Split Brain, 248-250
Programming, a major rehaul of programs, 44
Programming, building the foundation, 12-13
Programming, collapsible, 301
Programming, dates in future, how done, 39
Programming, do not break the circles, 193
Programming, done at local settings, 124
Programming, for complex tasks, 223
Programming, good witch/bad witch, 200
Programming, holds the lies in place, 192
Programming, how constructed & layered, 96
Programming, how one is hidden, 155
Programming, is miniaturization of macro, 275-280
Programming, linked to a belief system, 277
Programming, loyalty, backfires, 341
Programming, of non-generational ppl, 297
Programming, porcelain masks, 40
Programming, primal anchors, 44
Programming, reflection of Progrmr's mind, 68
Programming, self-mutilation, how done, 208
Programming, suicide, cues for foundat., 38
Programming, to hate God, 20
Programming, to prevent moving to ex.wd, 253-254
Programming, to stop use of helpful drg, 52
Programming, unified into cohesive pack, 20
Programming, use of scents, 45
Programming, vagabond, 193
Programs, back-up, for dehumanization, 281
Programs, internal, linked w/ dominos, 334
Programs, put in via touch to third eye, 81
Project 63, 363
Project Bluebird, 344
Prolate spheroidal wave functions, 170
Promise Keepers, 126
Proof, discussion what constitutes, 129
Propanolol, 49
Prophecy, about the Beast & World Mind, 181
Prophet, Elizabeth Claire, 125
Prophet, Ronnie, 368
Prophets, true ones eliminated, 290
Prostitutes, studied by CIA, 346
Prostitution, used in espionage, 207
Protected person, UNIX, Kernal, 332
Protected utilities distribution, 242
Protecting alters, 198
Protection by Trance Program, 76
Protection, internl, against sp. warfare, 228
Protectors, Stone like, 283
Protectors, portrayed in Labyrinth, 231
Provo State Hosp., Provo, UT, 153
Proxying, 321
Prozac, 54, 179
Prozac, dangers of, mind-control uses, 179-180
Pruett, Jeannie, 368
Prunning Tree program, 336
Pseudo alters, 205
Psilocybin, 49
Psy-Op operations, 325
Psychiatrist, uses drugs to erase memory, 55
Psychiatrists, in India, 294
Psychic Warfare Fact or Fiction, 314
Psychic magazine, 146
Psychic warfare, 313, 314, 380
Psychics, mapped by CIA, 318
Psychics, working for Navy, 318
Psychological Assessment Associates, 17
Psychological Motivation, 269
Psychologists, limitations by boards, 360
Psychotics, 303-304
Psychotronics, 313
Ptolemy, 183
Public, naive, 351
Pulegone-olivetol, 49
Pulegone-orcinol, 49
Pullach, Germany, 365
Pulse, stolen hypnotically, 265-266

Punishment, standard, for enjoyg sex, 285
Puns, 272
Puns used in programming, samples of, 272
Puppet People, film about, 354
Puppet Programming, how done, 281
Puppet System, internal, 209, 220-21, 222-223
Puppet System, sample code to, 74
Puritan leaders, 374
Purple, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Purring, how used in codes, 78
Puss in Boots, 84
Putnam, Frank, 207, 250
Pyrahexyl, 49
Pyramid, MGM Grand, Las Vegas, 348
Pyramid, how related to Tree of Life, 212
Pyramid, internal, 70
Pyramidon, 49
Pyramids, as focal points, 290
Python, Monty, 229

Quabala system, sample code to, 74
Quadrants, internal, 93, 221, 334
Quatuor Coronati Lodge, London, 18, 370
Quayle, Dan, 56
Quazepam, 49
Quebec, 202, 140
Quebec Baptist Missions, 140
Queen Elizabeth I, 122
Queen Mother's throne, Illum., 213
Queen Mother, Illuminati, 29, 112, 204, 205
Queen Mother, staff of, 167
Queen alters, 198
Queen of Clones, 200
Queen of Ev, 115
Queen of Hearts, Mayday code, 85, 225
Queen of Hearts, figure in programmg, 74
Queen of Heaven, position in Illum., 376
Queen of the Dead, 218
Queen of the Dead, Kore, 219
Queen of the West, 218
Queen's castles, demonic, internal, 229
Queen, in *Alice In Wonderland*, 115-116
Queens, internal, script to obey Satan, 114
Queens, names of in Bible, misused, 309
Queensland, Aust., 370
Quest Program, public schools, 351
Questions, used for mind-control, 263-264
Quests, taken by occultists, 101
Quinine, 49
Quintriplets, secretly born, & switched, 360
Quisling, 127

R Akiva, 68
R2E Division of cHi Honeywell, Fr., 184
RCMP, 354
REM sleep, 272
REM sleep, limited, 68
RHIC, 182
RNA synthesis, 179
Ra, 205
Ra Hoor Khuit, 122
Rabbi's, trained in Cabala, 321
Rabbit, white, costumes, 366
Radiation Zones, 235, 239
Radin, Roy, 99
Radio Liberty, 364
Radio Science, 167
Radioimmunoassay, 55
Radiotransmitting material hidden, 251
Radsvid, dwarf, 301
Radtke, Walter, 370
Ragon, masonic author, 162
Rahab, demon, 214
Rainbow alters, 81
Rainbow, codes to go over it, 75
Rainbow, hypnotic device, 102
Rainbow, occult significance, 102
Raising Cain, film, 354
Ram Horn blown in Ceremony, 81
Ramey, Grant, 315
Ranger School, Army, 11-12
Rape, of males & females by drctd energy, 167
Rape, of victim, during programming, 281
Rape, routine to keep child dissociative, 68
Rape, sadistic, new statutes of limitatns, 349
Rastice, chimp used for trauma, 38
Rat Pack, 358
Rationalizations, of handlers to slaves, 323
Ratzkiel, archangel of Chokmah, 214
Raven alters, 80
Raven, demons, 233
Rays, Colored, for call-ups, 83
Rays, golden, of Apollos put on Jesus, 301
Re-Structuring Program, 76
Reader, is called upon to help nation, 126
Reading & speech taught early, 24
Reading Wand, PREMA, 182
Reagan, Pres. Ronald, 294, 351
Reality, Is it a dream?,confusing script, 116
Reality, blurred by satanists, 102, 116
Reality, unique for everyone, per NLP, 269
Rebirthing program, 228
Receiver, sodium/lithium implants, 318
Receptor diversity, brain, 258
Receptors, NMDA, 258
Recognition signals, 71, 77, 78, 105
Records, computer, on all active slaves, 339-340
Red Ostrich feather, symbol of Maat, 219

Red Poppies, 219
Red Queen, purring, script, 116
Red Rose of Cabala, 215
Red Sea Suicide Program, 76
Red cake, 295
Red doors, gatekeepers, 203
Red, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Red, color of Mother parts, 217
Redstone Arsenal, AL, 382
Reed, Graham, 323
Reeves, Giles, 368
Reformation leaders, 374
Reframing, 271
Reframing to help alcoholics, 272
Reframing, Neuro-Linguistic Program..., 271
Rege, demon, 302
Regional Territorial Commander, demon, 298
Reichensperger, Peter, 370
Reincarnation, the Second Chance, 375
Rejection, G.'s, used to build strong satanic alter, 277
Relationships, taken away, 266
Relativity, drawing of Esher, 232
Relaxman equipment, 183
Relevance Magazine, 184
Religion, to be discredited, 274
Religion, used as a front, 125-155
Religious Centers, NWO, 374
Religious spirit, 289-290, 306
Remote Controlled Vehicles (RCVs), 262
Rennie, Charles Tatham Ogilvy, 346
Rennie, Sir John, 346
Repentance, as a memory barrier, 284
Rephan, star of, 160
Replication Terminals, 242
Reporting alters, 79, 87, 198, 206, 225
Repression, of feelings, by slaves, 284
REPROGRAMMING
Reprogram Others Univ. Func. Code, sample, 81
Reprogram codes, sample, 80
Reprogram self Univ. Func. Code, sample, 81
Reprogramming Sections, 90
Reprogramming abilities, 229
Reprogramming cues, 73
Reprogramming, activated astrally, 318
Reptilian Race, 356
Research, Mind Control, under Nazis, 2
Research, underwater breathing, comprsn, 260
Reserpine, 49
Reservations about proof, discussed, 129
Reservations, Indian, 322
Reserve utilities, 242
Respiration, 260
Respiratory Problem Program, 76
Respiratory failure, body program, 253
Respond to triggers Univ. Func. Code, 81
Restak, Dr., 54
Restaurant, episode w/ satan. family, 263
Restaurants, back rooms for programming, 166
Restrictions, on slaves' lives, 341
Restructuring, ongoing process, 185
Retaliation, 277
Retardation Univ. Func. Codes, 81
Reticular Formation, 43, 59, 60
Reticular formation, Brain scarring, 247
Reticulum dei (network of God), occult, 287
Reversal in mind, pain is love, 68
Reversal of pain-pleasure, 40
Reversals used in Programming, 272
Reversals, samples of, 272
Revolution nine, 85
Revolution of 1804, Haiti, 304
Revolving Switching Program, 76
Rex Mundi, 8
Rex, Oregon draconian enforcer, 343
Reynold, David V., 167
Reynolds Illuminati bloodline, 155, 318
Reynolds, Burt, 355
Reynolds, Debbie, 136
Reynolds, Linda, 370
Reynolds, Mary, 305
Rheinland, Germany, 152
Rhode Is. State Hosp., Howard, RI, 153
Rhodes Scholarship program, 61
Rhodes, Cecil, 61
Rhymes only alter, Rainbow, 81
Ribbon alters, 81, 198, 328, 329
Ribbons, garment script, 110
Richards, Steve, 319
Richardson, Kepe, 369
Richmond Hills, nr. JFK airport, NY, 364
Ridgecrest, CA, 31-33
Ridicule, 285
Riding the light, 32
Rietze, Perry, 370
Rigby, Michael S., 370
Right Worshipful Master, Freemasonry, 99
Riley, Ken, 286, 368
Ring Around The Rosy, 84
Ring of Fire burning, 226
Ring, to rule with, 120
Rings, 105, 292
Rings, dipped in sacrificed blood, 292
Rings, types used for focal pts., 292
Rings, with gems, 90
Rinkitink in Oz, 99
Rio Grande, internal, 189
Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, 147
Rising Sun, represents Sun Goddess, 298
Rite of Deification, 81

Rite of Memphis, 100
Rite of Mizraim, 100
RITUAL TOPICS
Ritual Site, Scotty's Castle, 382
Ritual sites, Death Valley, by Robinson, 370
Ritual stick, 46
Ritual vow of Maat, 219
Ritual, "becoming", 213
Ritual, murder to transfer power, 103
Rituals, 275
Rituals, Birth of Child, 218
Rituals, Conception, 218
Rituals, First Menstruation for girls, 218
Rituals, New Beginning, 218
Rituals, Puberty for boys, 218
Rituals, Satanic, done by some Rock groups, 257
Rituals, at Disneyland, 380
Rituals, for maiden parts of triad goddess, 218
Rituals, individualized, 213
Rituals, language and sounds used in, 67
Rituals, role they play in programming, 295
Rituals, song to announce, 85
Rituals, to instill hopelessness, 267
Rituals, use pomegranates, 219
River Nile, internal, 188, 189
Rivera, Peter N., 370
Rivers of Blood Program, 76
Rivers of Dreams, 85
Robe, purple, part of satanic baptism, 291
Robert Kennedy assassination, 358
Roberts, Oral, 146, 147
Roberts, Oral, witnesses of his sat. act., 147
Robertson, Pat, 148
Robin Hood, pseudonym, 366, 367
Robinson, Robert W., 370
Robots, 199-200
Robots, armies of, on Krull, 357
Robots, dead, 310
Robots, programming script for, 110, 111
Rock Music Industry, progmg front, 125
Rock bands, have lots of Satanists, 257
Rockefeller Foundation, 253, 365, 372
Rockefeller Illum. Family, 136
Rockefeller Plaza, 354
Rockefeller family, 149
Rockefeller's Standard Oil, 56
Rockefeller, John D., Jr., 363
Rockefeller, Mrs., 56
Rockefeller, Nelson, 364
Rockefeller, programmer, 368
Rockefellers, visit with F. Sinatra, 358
Rocks, internal, alive, 231
Rod of Light Ceremony, 81
Rod, magical element, 190
Rod, used in Masonic initiation, 60
Roddenberry, Gene, 355
Rodgers, R.L., 273
Roe, Dave, 368
Roger, John, 315
Rogo, D. Scott, 273, 319
Roland, Dave, 368
Roland, Sugar, 368
Roles, System, determined by occupation, 197
Roles, how alters carry them out, 42
Rolling Stone magazine, 13, 14-15
Roman Catholic hierarchy, 363
Roman Circus, 160
Roman Empire, 350, 374
Roman Empire, time period, 365
Rome, It., 374
Romulan Star Empire, 239
Ronquillo, E.B., 273
Ronwe-Squat, 302
Rooms, of the internal Cabalistic Tree of Life, 70, 212
Rooster claw, used in ceremony, 295
Root program, 336
Root, term, 332
Roots, of trees in a victim, 215
Rorick, Dave, 368
Rose of Mary, 215
Roseanne (Barr), 207
Roseburg VA St. Hosp., Roseburg, OR, 153
Rosemary, 50
Rosemary, mother conceiving dark child, 215
Rosenberg, Grant, 356
Roses of the Cabala, 215
Rosicrucianism, AMORC, 370
Rosicrucianism, mask ceremonies, 296
Rosicrucians, 152, 353
Rossi, Ernest Lawrence, 255
Rotary Club, 131
Rothschild desc. Beth George, programmr, 367
Rothschild family, 44, 359, 364
Rothschild programmers, 209, 382
Rothschild, Alexander, Jr., 375
Rothschild, Baron, 375
Rothschild, Baron & Baroness Phillipi de, 3
Rothschild, Baron Guy de, 40, 368
Rothschild, David Long, 368
Rothschild, House of, 44, 321
Rothschild, Mayer Amschel, 44
Rothschild, Lord Victor, 346
Rothschild, Pres. of Oilfield Scrap..., 341
Rothschild, underwater research, 262
Rothschilds, 5 family lines of Amschel, 184
Rothschilds, 6th line is bastard line, 184
Rothschilds, intelligence service, 339
Rothschilds, mail service, 339
Rothschilds, visit with F. Sinatra, 358

Rottweiler dogs, 198
Rougerie, Jacques, 261
Round Table Groups, 61
Route 66, old, California, 34
Rowlett, Curtis A., 370
Royal Free Hospital, Univ. of London, 383
Royal Institute of Inter. Affairs RIIA, 61
Royal Ipsimus, 205
Royal Navy, british, 257
Royal families of Europe into Satanism, 101
Royal family of Ev, Wizard of Oz progrm, 111
Rubenstein, Leonard, 373
Rubicon of Outer Space, internal, 189, 226
Rubies, internal, 330
Ruby Key, programming script, 111
Ruby Tablet, periodical, 370
Rubys, belong to Underwd King, script, 113
Rudolf the Red Nose Reindeer, 272
Rue, used in ceremony, 214
Rule of the Victor, 197
Ruling alters, 198
Rumack, Sgt. D. Shela, 315
Run/return to master alters, 198
Runaway slaves, taken to Mt. Shasta, CA, 381
Rune-Guild, 370
Runway, for trances, Yellow Brick Road, 105
Runways for leaving internal position, 236
Rush, Jennifer, 370
Russell, C.T., 61, 145
Russell, C.T., buried under pyramid, 61
Russell, C.T., ritual murder of, 61
Russell, Charles T., masonic membership, 145
Russell, Diane, 370
Russell, Randee, 356
Russia, 18, 156, 298, 318, 379
Russia, programming in, 184, 379
Russia, telepathy work on, 318
Russian Roulette Suicide Programming, 76, 80
Russian Roulette alters, 198
Russian communism, layered over t.s., 298
Russian government, 18
Russian military, 224
Rutherford, multiple in South Carolina, 341

S&M alters, 198
S&M porn, 356
S&M programs, 78-79, 116
S-2, Dreamland, 331
S-6, Dreamland, 331
S-66, Dreamland, 331
S.I.N.S. Base Datum, 236, 243
S.S. administrators, hired by U.S. govt., 364
S.S., Nazi, 325
S.T. Voyager, Star Trek spinoff, 234
SA Machine Language, 247
SA, Sturm Abteilung, Nazi, 371
SDV (Deep vehicles), 261
SEALs, Lt. Commdr. satanist, 369
SEMANOL computer language, 247
SIS, 354, 383
SNOBEL computer language, 247
SOE, 354
SPIKE training, of Bo Gritz, 326
SPIN organization, 194
SR-71 plane, 331
SRA, MPD training given at Tavistock, 383
SRA, term defined, 8
SRIA Societas Rosicrucia In Anglia, 18
SS, Nazi, 371
SW Baptist Theological Seminary, 149
SWIFT, Soc. For Wdwide Interbank Fin. Trans., 332
Sabotage Univ. Func. Codes, 81
Sacramento, CA Crusade 1954, 128, 135
Sacred knowledge, 348
Sacrifice, of unbaptized Christian child, 295
Sacrifices of Humans, rituals listed, 81
Sacrifices, blood, to Kali, 219
Sadism of Programmers vs. M-of-D help, 38
Sadism of programmers, 38-39, 283
Sadistic programmers, how obtained, 38
Safe Houses, 157
Safe rooms, mental, for memories, 30
Safes, internal, 209
Safety issues for victims, 36
Saffron, 50
Sage, 50
Sagittarius Arm, 239
Saint Dominque, port for Haiti, 304
Salsoline, 49
Salt & Pepper water, 53
Salt Lake City Mormon Temple, 382
Salt lost, good for nothing, script, 310
Salt, given for electrolyte balance, 56
Salvation Army, 148
Salvo, Alvert Di, 358
Sam Donahue's band, 353
Samadhi, 249
Sample Alter System Codes, 86-93
Samuel, demon, 214
Samurai, 314
Samurai, U.S. Army, 317
San Antonio, TX, 97, 347, 382
San Clemente, CA, 136
San Diego HQ for Seal teams, 260, 261
San Diego, CA, 261
San Francisco, 366
San Jose, CA, 33
Sanat Kumera, 161
Sand Flea, 6

Sand Man, figure used for induction, 82
Sanderson, T.W., 381
Sandlewood, 50
Sandling, Frances S., 370
Sanskrit, 287
Santa Clara University, 351
Santa Claus, 162
Santa Fe, N.M., 236
Santa Rosa Air Strip, FEMA, secret activ., 33
Santa Rosa, CA, 33
Santaria, 18
Sao Paulo Umbanda training, 303
Sao Paulo, Brazil, 303
Sarah, character in Labyrinth, 229
Sarah, character in The Little Princess, 357
Sass, James D., 370
Satan, 69, 132, 214, 290, 293
Satan & Christ on the mountaintop, 132
Satan is Sanat, and Santa, 159-162
Satan is Saturn, 159-162
Satan made Graham a deal, 132
Satan's original lie, 100
Satan, 5 primary interlocked concepts, 162
Satan, Nubian goat, 383
Satan, alter, 212
Satan, army of, 299
Satan, author of death, 290
Satan, heartbeat of, 298
Satan, his devices need to be understd, 6
Satan, incarnation of, AntiChrist, 306
Satan, legal rights on generations, 223
Satan, names of, 69
Satan, on Krull, 357
Satan, spawned the AntiChrist spirit, 306
Satan, therapeutic approaches, 197
Satan, transformed into Angel of Light, 306
Satanic Ritual Abuse, 8
Satanic breeders, 32
Satanic control, solution, 276
Satanic hierarchy alters, internal hier., 197, 198, 204
Satanic hubs, 18
Satanists, ex-, witnesses, 128
Satanists, witnesses, 128
Satar Formula, 295
Satellite Beach, FL, 167
Satellites, spy, 294
Satellites, threat of observation by, 294
Satin Sheets, 85
Saturday Evening Post, 140
Saturn, esoteric meaning shown, 159-162
Saturn, father of all gods, 159
Saturn, planet, 159
Saturn, term for Satan, 349
Saturn, the car, 163
Saturnian gnosis, 160
Satyrs, 19
Saudi Arabia, 207
Saunders, Richard, 370
Savage, MN, 165
Savior, programmer, 95, 368
Saw-Horse of Oz, 112
Scale, Linda, 369
Scandinavia, 61
Scapalomine S., 49
Scar, Baphomet head, 251
Scarecrow, 115
Scarecrow Programming, 264
Scarecrow, in script, 108
Scarfs, used to put in color programmg, 329
Scarring, brain stem, 247-248
Scars show under black light, 9
Scars, body, 9
Scars, made visible by histamine, 251-252
Scars, made visible on command, 41
Scattered Parts, description by slave, 188
Sceptre, 82
Schefflin, Dr. Alan, 133
Schenectady, NY, 313
Schizophrenic children, identified, 16
Schizophrenic, false label to incarc.slaves, 347
Schizophrenics, 303-304
Schmidt, Bishop Wally, 131
Schnoebelen, Bill, 358
Schoner Joseph, name for Mengele, 371
Schools, finishing, for slaves, 336
Schuller, Robert, 146
Schumacher, Jeurgen, 370
Schwartzenegger, Arnold, 184
Science (magazine), 168
Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU), 383
Scientific & Tech. Aerospace Reports, 248
Scientists, German & British, 34
Scolla, Nadine, 347
Scopalamine, 154
Scopolomine, 49
Scopolomine aminoxide hydrobromide, 49
Scopolomine-phetamine-eukotal, 49
Scorpio, 160
Scotland on Sunday, 184
Scotland, 1, 142, 190, 372
Scotland B.G. Crusade, 142
Scott, Eardley, 370
Scott, Walter Perry, 382
Scottish Crone Figure, Caillech, 218
Scottish Rite, Freemasonry, 19, 133, 370
Scottish participation in NWO, 143
Scotty Castle, Death Valley, CA, 34, 208, 382
Scout alters, 328
Scramble program, drug for, 48

Scrambles, radio, Gen. Dyn. & ALEX, 182
Scrambling Alters, 198, 206
Scrambling Program, 76, 158
Scrambling-scattering mechanism, 264
Scripps Institution of Oceanography, 261
Scripps Howard News Service, 184
SCRIPTS
Scripts to love master, 192
Scripts, for Delta missions, 201
Scripts, magic, 287
Scripts, of programmer only verbal, 191
Scripts, repeated mechanically, 227
Scripts, seen as only part of what happens, 209
Scripts, to hate outside world, 192
Scriptures about God, applied to prgrmr, 286
Scriptures, misuse of for programming, 307-313
Scriptures, reasons for misuse, 308
Scroll of Set, newsletter, 370
Scrolls, use of, 104
Scuba gear, not needed, 260
Scudder Family, 56
Scudder, Helen, 56
Sea Shell programming, 93
Sea of Forgetfulness, internal, 73
Sea turtles, 261
Sea water, reactions to by lungs, 261
Seal Teams, used programmd slaves, 261
Seal of Solomon, built by govt. at NOTS, 34
Seal of Solomon, used by Dr. Star, 190
Seal teams, 261
Sealing Ceremony at 19, Mthr-o-Dkns lvl, 81, 213
Sealing ceremony, Illuminati, 204
Seals on Cross Programming, 83
Seals, of Demons, 214
Seals, script for, 312
Sears, Alden, 368
Seckenheim, Ger., 331
Secobarbital sodium, 49
Secret Societies, behind European wars, 156
Section Computers, 228
Section Houses, satanic, 22
Security clearance ratings, 2
Seduction Univ. Func. Code, 81
Seduction, science of, 346
Seed, multiplied script, 309
Seeds of learning, term discussed, 104
Seeds, internal, 189
Segmented Polycentric Integrated Ntwks, 194
Selective Service Board, 154
Self Body Harm Univ. Func. Code, 81
Self-criticism, as a control mechanism, 284
Self-esteem, low, 285
Self-focus, inflicted by AntiChrist spirit, 306-307
Self-hypnosis, 57
Self-image, of slave, 276-277
Self-justification, 278
Self-preservation bondage loop, 278
Self-preservation, spiritual dimensions, 278
Selling methods, using needs, 340
Seminole County, OK, 22
Sense of space/shapes, initial traumas, 25
Sense organ, newly discovered one, 256
Senses, 7 spiritual senses, by Ill. slave, 300
Senses, overwhelmed to create dissociation, 25
Sensitivity training, Esalen Institute, 325
Sensory Bombardment, 266
Sensory Deprivation, 39, 59-60, 267
Sensory Deprivation Tanks, 274
Sensory areas of brain, 57
Sensory channels, work differently w/ Autistism, 45
Sentinel of the Gates, 370
Sentry Medical Products, 166
Sephiroth, 212-214
Septuagint, 159
Septum, 42
Sequences, of flashing lights, 93
Sergeant alters, 79, 204
Sergeant, Amer. army, character in Manchrn Cnddt, 357
Sergeants, Drill, language of, 282
Serial numbers, on clones, 199
Serotonin, 47
Serpent tree, internal, 189
Servant of the Pentacle, 205
Seshen Pylon, San Francisco, 370
Set, 205
Set-Amentet Pylon, L.A., 370
Seven times seven reprogram program, 225, 334
Sex Univ. Func. Code, 81
Sexual alters (see Alters, Beta), 198, 207
Sexual alters, kittens, of Mengele, 382
Sexual behavior, spectrum, protectg emotion vs prtctg body, 207
Sexual programming, anchor, 7
Sexual, phys.-sex. criteria of candidate, 29
Seymour, John, 269
Shaback, 18
Shadow alters, purposes for, 191
Shadow fragments, 191-193
Shadows in the mind, reports of, 118
Shafts, internal, 189
Shakespeare, 353
Shamans, Indian, demons, in slaves, 298
Shame Univ. Func. Code, 81
Shangri-la programming, 97
Shangri-la, internal, 189
Shapes used for a System, 86
Shapley Center Zone of Radiation, 239
Shaw, Jim, 145
She's Leaving Home, 85

Sheepskin leather, 382
Sheiks of Saudi Arabia, 207
Sheila, Bhagwan's right hand lady, 324
Shekinah (but not the Holy Spirit), demon, 214
Shell alters, 198, 328
Shelley, Mary, 359
Shells, internal, 189
Shenandoah, internal, 189
Sheppard, TG, 368
Sheridan, OR, 32
Sheridan, OR, private air strip, 32
Shield, magical element, 190
Shields, of faith to protect alters, 228
Shifting sands, internal, 189
Shirley, NY, 179
Shiva, 60, 219
Sho-bread, 321
Shock, Future, avoided by movies, 259
Shoes, slippers, internal, 189
Shooting Programs, 76
Shor, Ronald, 23-24
Shorting REM, drug to shorten it, 49
Shriner Clown, Portland Crusade, 144
Shu, demon, 302
Shull, Robert W., 370
Shut-Eye Town, script, 117
Siegel, Benjamin "Bugsy", 358
Sigils, 287
Sigils used as codes, 77
Sign Language, needed for Deaf & B alter, 87
Sign of Satan, induction method, 82
Sign of the Great Beast, tattoo, 344
Signal, forefinger, 380
Signature, color change threat, 292-293
Signet, as code, 309
Signs & wonders, demonic, 275
Signs, handler looks for, 343
Silence alters, 28
Silence, command, 107
Silence, taught at Charm School, 383
Silence, taught by society at large, 359
Silences, early splits, 220
Silicon implant research, 252
Silver shoes, programming script for, 110
Silver, color code, meaning of, 328
Simon Magus, 6
Simpson, U.S. Sen. Allen, 107
Sinatra, Frank, 343, 355, 358
Sinatra, Natalie (Dolly) Della Garavante, 358
Sinbad, story of, 68
Sinclair Illuminati bloodline, 46, 369
Sinclair, Lilith, 366, 367
Sinclair, Maj. Gen. Sir John, 346
Singing Trees, programming script for, 110
Sins of the Fathers, 85
Sinus node, 254
Sirhan Sirhan, 358
Sirius, 119, 122
Sirius A, 122
Sirius B, 122
Sirius, Cult of, 122
Sister of Light Rebirthing Ceremony, 81
Sisters of Light, 204, 205
Sisters of Light, ceremony of male sacrif., 204
Sisters, the 7 or 9, Pleiades, 119
Six-Day War, Israel-Arabs, 144
Sixth and Seventh Book of Moses, 299
Size of programming batch of children, 31
Skavaerr, dwarf, 301
Skills for Adolescence, curriculum, 351
Skills for Growing, curriculum, 351
Skills for Living, curriculum, 351
Skin, of baby's used, 282
Skinner, Karen, 259
Skoptsi, Russian Illum. group, 290
Skull & Bones Order, Illum. order, 156, 325
Skullcap, 50
Slave of the Mirror, 301
Slave to external computer interfacing, 330-334
Slave, of Mengele's brought to states, 363
Slavery, white, partic. in by gypsies, 352
Slaves, elimination of, killed by police, 179
Slaves, misused by handlers loaning out, 167
Slaves, purposes of, 9-10
Slaves, used on Seal Teams, 260
Slaves, used on cruises as prostitutes, 336
Slaves, who try to escape, 224
Slavophiles, 156
Sleep Deprivation Program, body program, 76, 253
Sleep deprivation, initial traumas, 25
Sleep of slaves, 68
Sleep, limited in slaves, 68
Sleeping Beauty, 99
Sleeping Beauty Program, 227
Sleeping Program, body program, 76, 253
Sleeping patterns, use of for programmg, 272
Sleepy, dwarf, 301
Slides, deception tactic, 127, 156, 354
Slides, defined, and discussed, 156
Slides, used in sermons, 127
Slides, used on many MPD prof. papers, 156
Slippers, gd, slvr, ruby, internal, 189
Slippers, how used in Illuminati, 103
Slippers, how used in codes, 78
Slippers, shown in Labyrinth, 232
Smart card, 184
Smart device, 184
Smell, used in prgmg & magic, 121
Smelling salts, used for comatose victim, 227
Smells, to cause trance, 44

Smith & Tinker, of Oz, 114
Smith generational occult bloodline, 300
Smith, Joseph Jr., 300
Smith, R.D., 273
Smith, Wilbur, books used, 336
Smoking, used to reinforce loyalty, 58
Smuggling, of Nazis, 364-365
Smuggling, of persons after W.W. II, 364
Snake pits, internal, 189
Snake positional no. of Tree of Life, 69
Snake, pelagic yellow-bellied sea snake, 261
Snakes, a natural phobia, 37
Snakes, represent Satan, etc., 162
Sneezy, dwarf, 301
Snow White and Seven dwarfs, 301, 337
Snow, Hank, 368
Snow, Heather, 370
Snuff films, 352
Soap discipline, 68
Sobolewski, R. Douglas, 370
Soccer ball, colored, used as visual aid, 194
Social pressure to forget traumas, 192
Social security no., part of trackg no., 332
Societas Rosicrucia In Anglia SRIA, 18
Society of Green Men, 364
Society of the Dark Lily, 18
Sodium Pentothal, 214
Sodium Pentothal, 48
Sodium Pentothol, 49
Sodium amytal, 49
Sodium amytal, destroys telepathy, 320
Sodium barbital, 49
Sodium dielvinal, 49
Sodium evipal, 49
Sodium pentobarbital, 49
Sodium phenobarbital, 49
Sodium rhodanate, 49
Sodium soneryl, 49
Sodium succinate, 49
Sodium thioethamyl, 49
Sodom and Gomorrah programming, 309
Sodomy, artificial, 167
Soft target, refers to churches, 126
Software, Internal programming of slave, 333
Solar Plexus, portal, 320
Solar Systems, internal, 185
Solar Temple, 160
Solar Temple, foundation is Saturn, 160
Solemetric Military code section, 74, 84
Solemetric System, sample code to, 74,
Solemetric, internal system, 209, 221, 223, 356
Solomon, 122
Somebody Somewhere, 45
Somnambulistic states, 57
Somnifen, 49
Son of Apollo, name of AntiChrist, 375
Son of Perdition, 376
Songs used as triggers, section, 84-85
Songs, how hits are known ahead of time, 84
Songs, how used for programming, 84-85
Sonoma County Airport, CA, 33
Soul ties, 228, 292
Soul ties, to programmrs need to brkn, 228
Sound waves, used for OBEs, 319
Sound, used in prgmg & magic, 121
Sounds, high pitch, 319
South America, 303, 304, 365, 371
South American delegates to UN & Rockefeller, 364
South Carolina, 341, 370
South Dakota, 100
South River, NJ, 364
Southern Baptist Church (Convention), 146, 149
Southern Baptists, have Youth Pgrm based on Masonry, 149
Southern Nights, 85
Southwestern Baptist Theol. Semin., 146
Soviet subs, 318
Space Biology lab, UCLA, 180
Spaceships, internal, 185
Spades, suit of cards, meaning, 76
Spain, tiles from, 382
Spanish, 202
Spanking, not done to baby, 24
Special Services Division, U.S. Army, 353
Special Study Group, 7
Specialists, who assist endangered slaves, 251
Spectrophotometry, 55
Speculums, 297
Speech, how to talk for hypnotism, 271
Speed (drug), 49
Speilberg, Steven, 336
Sperry, Roger, 249
Spets Byuro #1, 18
Spetsburo, 6, 18
Sphere of the Adepts, cabal. Tree of Life, 212
Spider Web, internal system, 209, 221, 223
Spider Web, sample code to, 74
Spider chambers, internal, 189
Spiders, internal in coffin, 227
Spielberg, Steven, 354
Spies, sexual needs taken care of, 207
Spinner Kittens, 87
Spinner kittens coded w/ domino spinner, 78
Spinning, 104
Spinning, UNIX term, 333
Spinning, caused by electrolyte imbal., 56
SPIRIT TOPICS
Spirit Cimieries, 122
Spirit copies placed in person, film, 358
Spirit flight (astral projection), 318

Spirit, generational, CH10titlepg
Spirit guides, internal, 297, 307
Spirit medium methods, 147
Spirit of Adoption, 300
Spirit of Bondage, 299, 300
Spirit of Bondage, types of, 300
Spirit of Chronic Dissatisfaction, 300
Spirit of Compulsive Iniquity, 300
Spirit of Death, 222, 299
Spirit of Destruction, 222
Spirit of Divination, 299
Spirit of Error, 299, 300
Spirit of Fear, 283, 299
Spirit of Fear of Death, 300
Spirit of Fornication, 300
Spirit of Gambling, 322
Spirit of Gluttony, 300
Spirit of God, 151, 289
Spirit of Greed, 276
Spirit of Haughtiness, 299
Spirit of Heaviness, 299
Spirit of Idolatry, 300
Spirit of Infirmity, 299
Spirit of Jealousy, 299
Spirit of Lust, 276, 300
Spirit of Prostitution, 300
Spirit of Prostitution, subtypes of, 300
Spirit of Seduction, 276
Spirit of Truth, 300
Spirit of Unfaithfulness, 300
Spirit of Whoredoms, 299
Spirit of Whoredoms, types of this spirit, 300
Spirit of Witchcraft, 152
Spirit of being a Servant of Corruption, 300
Spirit of the AntiChrist, 299, 374
Spirit of the AntiChrist, descrpt.of pr, 306
Spirit of the AntiChrist, purpose, 306
Spirit of the Lord, 278
Spirit of the Love of Money, 300
Spirit of the Magic Mirror, 301
Spirit, AntiChrist, 305-307
Spirit, AntiChrist, purpose, 306
Spirit, Chief Executive, 300
Spirit, Deaf & Dumb, 299
Spirit, Lying, 299
Spirit, Perverse, 299
Spirit, Religious, 306
Spirit, Seducing, 299
Spirit, channeling, in New Age army, 314
Spirit, half crow-half man of Ninja, 314
Spirit, religious, 289-290
Spirits called Butterflies, 19
Spirits of Indians, alters/demons, 307
Spirits of the Dead, movie, 358
Spirits of the Living Dead, film, 354
Spirits, Generational, Ch10titlepg, 273, 297
Spirits, Amer. Indian, 298
Spirits, Territorial, contributions, 298
Spirits, appointed to guard memories, 300
Spirits, earth, 301
Spirits, elemental, 291, 300
Spirits, evil, *Lesser Key* guide, 120
Spirits, nature, 300
Spirits, of trees, druidic belief, 103
Spirits, seducing, 313
Spirits, unclean, need to be purged, 6
Spirits, which protect the trees, 216
Spiritual constructs,hide primal parts, 223
Spiritual structuring, internal, 209,221-22, 223
Spiritual warfare, 228, 298
Spiritual warfare, geographic patterns, 298
Spiritual world, mirrors physical, 287
Split Brain Programming, 248-250, 255, 272, 313
Split brain headaches, 114, 334
Split brain research & mind-to-body comm., 255
Split brain, helmet to unite 2 hemispheres, 314
Split brain, over simplification of, 258
Split-brain programming site, 381
Splits, 13, programming script for, 109
Splits, how the are developed, 186
Splits, how the number is controlled, 41
Splits, which are discarded, 27
Spontaneity, Planned, how carried out, 348
Spooks, term discussed, 104
Spoon-bending, 314
Sports events, 201
Spotted Owl, 6
Spriet, Patrick, 370
Springmeier, Fritz, IGAS certification, 267
Springmeier, Fritz, at Beast Barracks, 264
Springmeier, Fritz, is I-F-A, 14
Springmeier, Fritz, trip to Jerusalem, 377
Springmeier, Fritz, was once Amish, 150
Springmeier, Fritz, work for Fed. H. Ad, 235
St. Agnes Eve ritual, 82
St. Bartholomew's Day ritual, 82
St. Germain, Count, 345
St. John, Spencer, 304
St. Louis Crusade, 1973, Advis. Comm., 146
St. Mary's Hospital, 10
St. Thomas Is., U.S. Virgin Islands, 369
St. Vincent Shakers, 303
St. Walpurgis ritual, 82
Stacking code, 203
Stacking mechanisms, 333
Staff, as code, 309
Staffs, 103
Stage, internal, behind Exec. Council, 205
Stage, secret, for live porn shows, 381
Stairway to Heaven, 85

Stairway, internal, 189
Stairwell System, sample code to, 74
Stairwell programming, 224
Stairwell system, internal, 209, 222
Standard Gravure Building, 179
Standard Mengele Cubed shaped system, 189-90
Standard Oil, 56
Standard Roles In Illum. Slave, 197
Stanford Research Institute, 313
Stanford University, CA, 184
Stankievich, Stanislav, 364
Star Fleet Technical Order, 235, 237
Star Trek, 354, 356, 370
Star Trek Bible, 356
Star Trek Conventions, annual, 234
Star Trek Fan Club, 356
Star Trek Programming, 233-243, plus other pages
Star Trek Programming, advantages of, 234
Star Trek Structuring, 232
Star Trek Technical manuals, 234-242
Star Trek cast, picture w/ Dalai Lama, 356
Star Trek, The Next Generation, 355
Star Trek, cartoon series, 234
Star Trek, useful for structuring, 189
Star War Programming, 96, 185, 236
Star Wars, 336, 354
Star Wars, Michael Aquino's versions, 234
Star, Dr., programmer, 77, 190, 368
Star, Falling, code, 292
Star, demon, 301
Stardust spacecraft, 245
Stare, hypnotic, used by handlers, 339
Stares, used for recruitment, 339
Starvation, Voodoo, 304
State of mind, determined by L-H system, 253
State of the World Forum, 147
States, psycho-neuro-physiologcl states, 256
Staunton St. Hosp., Staunton, VA, 153
Stealth fighters, 331
Steering Committee, Amish, I-W, 154
Stelazine, 347
Stella Matutina (cult org.), 19
Stella Matutina alter, 70
Stella Matutina, term, 163
Stem cells, 251
Stephen, first Christian martyr, 159
Sterile Telephones, 154
Sterling Drug Co., 56
Steven King Horror Movies, 336
Steven King novels, 336, 370
Steward, of Oz, 115
Stewart Title Company, 133
Stiles, Ezra, 305
Stoklin, Phillip, 167
Stoll, Elmo, 155
Stoll, Joseph, 155
Stoll, Victor, 155
Stone statues, ancient Druid, 190
Stone, black, 293
Stone, white, 293
Stoneman, Ronnie, 368
Stones, polished, 304
Stones, precious, attachd to Tree of Ev, 214
Stormy alters, 204
Story Immersion, 347
Stout, Julie, 370
Stovaine, 49
Stove Pipe, CA, 382
Strange, Dr., 368
Strange, Major, programmer, 95
Strega, the, Ways of, 20
Stress points, identified by progrmmrs, 16
Stringer, how created, 254
Stringer, programming, 254
Strobe light for dissociation, 183
Strober, Gerald S., 144
Strong, programmer, 95, 368
Strongholds, spiritual, 276, 298
Strongman of system, generational, 223
Strongman, amalgamation of 3 spirits, 213
Structure map, internal, 190
Structures, front ones in Systems, 189
Structures, internal, geographic, 187-89
Structures, method to superimpose, 185-86
Structuring spiritual, 223
Structuring, design criteria, 186
Structuring, use of demons to help, 122
Strychnine, 49
Stu PAK, 133
Students for a Democratic Society SDS, 324
Stun gun, 165, 167
Sturr, Jimmy, 368
Styphnic acid, 49
Subconscious mind, 12 levels, 58
Subconscious mind, 5 levels of nat. diss., 57
Subconscious, controversial concept, 5
Subdirectories, 336
Subjektlose Psychologie, 1
Subliminal messages, music, 257
Submarine, programming prop, 381
Subprocessors, internal & Star Trek, 240
Succinylcholine, 47
Suffocating, drug to induce, 47
Sufism, 325
Sugar-Plum Tree, script, 117
Suicide Missions, 202
Suicide Programs, 73, 80-81
Suicide Programs Listed, 76
Suicide Univ. Func. Code, 81
Suicide alters, 36, 158, 197, 198

Suicide cutting, drug to put in program, 49
Suicide program, Jack In the Beanstalk, 221
Suicide program, linked to Hour Glass, 221
Suicide programming, 227, 366
Suicide, programming, sample of script, 357
Suicide, song to set off, 85
Suicides, types that the Programmers give, 290
Suitland Annex, 2
Suits of Cards, meaning of, 76
Suits of cards, how used for codes, 77
Sulfazin, 49
Sulfur, smell of, 231
Sulfuric acid, 190
Summer Solstice Orgy, 82
Summer Solstice, honors Mother part, 217
Sun International Corp., 355
Sun goddess, of Japan, 298
Sun of Tiphareth, 190
Sun, going down, used as cue w/ e-shock, 165
Sunflower Seed Oil, 50
Sunset Strip, Hollywood, 358
Sunset, used as a trigger, 73
Superman, goal of creating, 19
Superwoman, goal of creating, 19
Supply depots, underwater, secret, 261
Supreme Council of 33° Freemasonry, So. Rite, 102, 145
Supreme Master, 205
Supreme Master alters, 69
Surgeon in CA taking out implants, 184
Surgery, Hypnotic, 282, 283
Surgery, hypnotic, to remove insides, 282,
Surveillance, by abusers, 344
Surveillance of all communication,in US/UK, 380
Survivor, misnomer for ongoing victims, 36
Sussex University, 383
Suttenfuss, programmer, 95, 368
Suvorov, Viktor, 339
Swaggart, Jimmy, 135, 368
Swami Rama, 254
Swans, meaning in Druidism, 200
Swedish scientists, 184
Switching headaches helped by Gltmc Acd., 52
Switching, defined, 8
Switching, rapid uncontrolled, 104
Sword, magical element, 190
Sword, used in Masonic initiation, 60
Swords, used in box programming, 208
Sybil, movie and book, 185, 354
Sylvia & Bruno, in Alice 'n Wndrld script, 116
Symbols, Masonic, are to mislead, 162
Symbols, occult, widespread, 348
Sympatol, 49
Symposium, "Toward a Global Brain...", 181
Synapses, brain, 258
Syncho Energizer, Broadway, NY, 183
Synchro Energizer, 183
Synchro-Tech, Cleveland, OH, 183
Synchro-Tech. Comptronic Device Ltd., 183
Synhexyl, 49
Synthesizing Self, part of brain, 43
Synthetic people, 360
Syria, 19
System code scheme, 86
System layout and codes stored, internl, 330
System, internal, double or double-double, 334
System, internal, of Amphibious Man, 259
System, of alters, compared to a city, 187
System, sample of a System's codes, 86-93
System, self-governing, 186
Systemic lupus erythematosus, 258
Systems, size of average Illuminati one, 187

TCA's, 55
THFS Theosoph. Ordr of Frat. Saturni, 18
TIT Journal of Life Sciences, 169
TM379260-2, 235, 239
TM: 379260-0, 235, 238
TM:379260-1, 235, 237
TM:379260-3, 236, 241
TV entertainment, 351
TWEP, terminate w/ extreme prejudice,term, 359
Tabs, methods to keep on slave, 343
Talismans, use of, 250
Tall Book of Make Believe, The, 93, 117-118, 329, 336
Talmudic Judaism, 374
Tammuz, 219
Tampa, FL, 381
Tanks, isolation, 267
Tannis, Bob, 369
Taoist story, example of reframing, 271
Tape Recorders, hypnotically placed in, 282
Tapes, Subliminal used with baby, 24
Tarot Cards, 12, 76
Tarot Cards, No. Twelve, 12
Tasks, monotonous, given to slave, 265
Taste, used in prgmg & magic, 121
Tate, Sharon, 12
Tattoo, Mengele did not take SS tattoo, 371
Tattoos, by abusers for I.D. of slaves, 344
Taurus, 163
Taurus, is Saturn worship, 160
Tavistock Clinic, 383
Tavistock Clinic, address of, 383
Tavistock Institute, England, 18, 325, 371, 382, 383
Taylor, Col., programmer, 95, 368
Taylor, Leo, 368
Taylor, Lucifer E., 370

Teachers, of occult philosophies, 323
Team Leaders (Colored Ray Down Lines), 83
Team Ritual, 4 person team, 83-84
Teams, Illuminati, 83-84, 359
Teams, Illuminati, assassination, 200
Teams, intelligence, to brainstorm, 345
Teams, multi-talented, needed to deprgm, 123
Teams, to deprogram needed, 122-23
Technology, the deceptions of, 257-258, 279-280
Teddy Bear, stuffed animal, 85
Teddy Bear, cover name for son Theodore, 366, 367
Teddy Bear, given in Labyrinth, 231
Teddy Bear, meaning, 272
Tien, H.C., 268
Tektite II, 261
Tektronics, 345
Telapatin (see Ayahuasca), 50
Telemetry Sys., 8-chnnl PAM/FM biomedcl, 180
Telepathic state, drug for, 50
Telepathine, 49
Telepathy, 47, **313-321**
Telepathy, drug for, 47
Telepathy, how it works, 319-321
Telephon, film, 354
Telephone Tones, as codes, 93
Telephone area codes, used as slave codes, 331
Telephone numbers for Reporting alters, 36
Telephone tones, as matrix keys, 334-335
Telephone, high speed subliminal codes, 73
Telephones, all monitored, 380
Telephones, prvt. government network, 383
Telephones, sterile, 154
Teleporters, internal, 185
Telescoping system, internal, 209, 222, 224
Television shows,abusers appear like victims, 125
Tellisians, 356
Telly, Mary Joe, 131
Temazepam, 50
Temperaments, of alters, 268
Temperature change, body program, 76, 253
Temperature, body, controlled by Yogis, 254
Temperature, of body, hot-ri, cold-left, 253
Temperature, of body, mind can control, 253
Temple Sacrifices, already reinstituted, 377
Temple of Moloch, internal, 283, 302
Temple of Nepthys, 370
Temple of Power (see Temple of Set)
Temple of Set (aka Temple of Power), 18, 205, 323-324, **369-371**
Temple of Set, reading requirements,list, 323
Temple, Mormon, Lake Oswego, 155
Temple, Nicholas, 383
Temple, Shirley, 357
Temple, don't touch, script, 312
Temple, the, type of Illusion, 66
Temples, demonic, internal, 300
Ten Commandments, *Bible*, 309
Ten Commandments, systematically violated, 20
Ten Little Monkeys, 84
Ten northern tribes of Israel, 160
Tennessee, 308
Tennessee Waltz, 85
Tense Unit machines, 166
Terminal man, 248
Terrorist, offcl intllgn word for Christ, 326
Terry Jones, scripted for Labyrinth, 229
Tests (see specific names of tests)
Tests for drug levels in blood, 55
Tests, psyc., proj., obj. & subjective, 267
Tetra-hydro-cannabinol acetate, 49
Tetra-hydro-harman, 49
Tetra-hydro-harmine, 49
Texas, 369, 370, 371
Texas Book Depository, 371
Texas, programming code no.s, 95
Thalami, 43-44
Thalamus, 60
Thallium, 50
The 21 Lessons of Meryln, 102
The Annotated Wizard of Oz, 100
The Aquarian Conspiracy, 194
The Assimilation of Evangelist Billy..., 140
The Attack of the Robots, film, 354
The Billy Graham Christian Life & ...., 142
The Black Raven, 299
The Blood Will Never Lose Its Power, 85
The Book of Ages, 204
The Book of Beasts, 295
The Book of Generations, 204
The Book of Old Faith, 295
The Candyman, 85
The Children, satanic band, CA, 370
The Chosen One The Art of Jury Select.., 358
The Clergy and the Craft, 145
The Contemporary Faces of Satan, 143
The Control of Candy Jones, 2
The Deadly Deception, 145
The Drifters, 368
The Emerald City of Oz, 99
The Farm, CIA, 379
The Four Guys, 368
The Futurist, 256
The Globe: In Search of the Origins of..., 349
The Graphic Work of M.C. Esher, 232
The Group (aka MJ-12), 7
The Hands of Fate, film, 354
The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow, 102
The Hidden Power Behind Freemasonry, 163
The History of Chemistry, 321

The Hollywood Reporter, 358
*The Infantile Boundary...,*273
The Journal, Alexandria, VA, 184
The Land of Oz, 99
The Lesser Key of Solomon, 250
The Linking Ring, 353
The Little Princess, 354, 357
The Lost Princess of Oz, 99
The Lost Teachings of All Ages, 160
The Magic of Oz, 99
The Manchurian Candidate, 357-358
The Manchurian Candidate, film, 354
The Meaning of Life, 350
The Mind Stealers, 182
The Morning Star, 163
The New Age, 145
The Origin of Consciousness in the ..., 249
The Patchwork Girl of Oz, 99
The Press Democrat, 33
The Prince, by Machiavelli, 343
The Psychobiology of Mind-Body Healing, 255
The Psychology of Anomalous Experience, 323
The Psychology of Man's Possible Evol.., 324
The Quest (Theosophical magazine), 101
The Raven, 354
The Road to Oz, 99
The Scarecrow of Oz, 99
The Seattle Times, 314
The Secret Doctrine, Vol.5, Adyar ed., 156
The Secret Teachings of All Ages, 300-301, 321
The Simpson Cartoons, 358-359
The Spiritual & Clinical Dimensions of, 1, 127
The Spiritual Shield, 299
The Spring Book, 299
The Tall Book of Make Believe, 117-118
The Tinman Woodsman of Oz, 99
The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines, 167, 305
The Two Babylons, 350
The UFO Phenomenon, 286
The Upjohn, Amer. co., 251
The Voice of the Martyrs, 137
The War Office, London, 383
The Witches of Oz, 347
The World's Last Dictator, 2nd ed., 332
The Wright Brothers, 368
Theme Park, Wizard of Oz, 348
Theodore, son of Heinrich Mueller, 366
Theologians, provided info for 1st Earth Batt., 315
Theosophical Ordr of Frat. Saturni THFS, 18
Theosophical President, 102
Theosophical Society, 99, 100, 355
Therapeutic community, infiltration of, 124
Therapeutic community, tabs kept on it, 185
Therapeutic issues, rituals need recog., 295
Therapists, don't know present dangers, 36
Therapists, give victim final insult, 283
Therapists, info gvn to help undrstd clients, 126
Therapists, restrictions on testimony, 349
Therapists, thanked for helping victims, 126
Therapists, trigger systems' defenses, 337
Theta Models, 314
Theta Programming, 313-320
Theta alters, 313
Theta code section, 83
Theta waves, 313
Theurgy, 291
Thinking Behavior, Behav Mod term, 268
Thinking, black and white, 266
Thinking, types, shown by LEM, 270
Thioridazine hydrochloride, 55
Thiothixene, 55
Third Reich (see also Nazi topics), 11, 350
Third eye, 189, 320
Third eye, portal, 320
Third wave alters, 28
Thompson, Elana, 371
Thor, figure of Nordic Myst. Religion, 363
Thor, internal, 227, 230, 334
Thor, religion of, 334
Thor, script to create, 113-114
Thorazine, 47, 50, 347
Thornbill, Claude, 353
Thoth, 205
Thoughts, sample of those transmitted, 183
Three Blind Mice, 84
Three Self Patriotic Movement (TSPM), 137
Throat area, telepathy, 320
Throne, Queen Mother's, 213
Throne, of Nome King, script for Satan, 114
Throne, shadow behind Mother's throne, 218
Thrones, of generation demons, 223
Thugs, worship of Kali, 219
Thule Society, 364
Tiamet, reptilian god, 302
Tibet, 9, 356
Tibet, teaches european occultists, 9
Tibetan buddhists, dissociative ability, 9
Tibetan monks, 364
Tice, Lou, 315
Ticker Tape, internal, 329
Ties, generational, need to be renouncd, 223
Tifareth, 212
Tiffin State Hosp., Tiffin, OH, 153
Tiger of Oz, 112-113
Tik-tok of Oz, 99,
Tiktok, 111-112, 114
Tillis, Mel, 368
Time Machine Restaurants, 347
Time, can be rearranged on intrnl clock, 230
Time, magically transcending it, 297

Time-Life Publishers, 286
Timelessness, feature of right brain, 250
Times of the Gentiles, 377
Tin Man, 103
Tin Man castle, 103
Tin Man programming, 103, 107
Tin Man programming codes, 75
Tin Man, character at Oz theme park, 348
Tin Woodsman, 101-102
Tin Woodsman's castle, 189
Tinker AFB, OK, 383
Tinker Foundation, secret CIA fndtn, 56
Tinkerbelle programming, 383
Tinkerbelle, 83
Tinkerbelle code section, 83
Tiny Toons Cartoons, 336, 354
Titusville, FL, 383
Tobacco industry & Amish, 155
Toby, character in Labyrinth, 229
Toddler switch, 27
Toddler's sterile room, 266
Toki, dwarf, 301
Tokoloshes, mind-controlled slaves, 50
Tokyo, Japan, B.G. Crusade, 146
Tolkien, J.R.R., 120
Tollmen & Toll women, 203
Tom Dooley, 85
Tones of telephone used as trigger, 84
Tones, used in dissociation, 256
Tones, used to set off suicide programs, 74
Tones, vibrations, effect of, 257
Tongue, cut to scare victim, 38-39
Tools, special underwater, 261
Topaz, blue, 292
Tophet, Israel, child sacrifice site, 302
Tophim (drums), 302
Tops, Spinning, used for dissociation, 66
Tornado System, internal, 209, 222, 224
Tornado System, sample code to, 74
Tornado spins, 104
Tornado, internal, 224
Torpedo Town, internal, 189
Torrance, CA, 313

TORTURE

Torture Memory Codes, 87
Torture chamber, internal, 188, 228
Torture device, ritual, of spcl wood, 45
Torture to destroy alters, 310
Torture, ancient art of, 365
Torture, attaches demons, 290
Torture, by directed energy, 167
Torture, by electric shock, 167
Tortures, coded, 4
Tortures, fire, 282
Tortures, memories, coded with triggers, 227
Tortures, scarless, 39
Total Recall, movie, 184
Totem, term, Ch10titlepg
Touch, how it is important to preemie, 22
Tower Intern. Technomedical Institute, 169
Tower of Babel programming, 203
Towers, GWEN, 179
Tracking Implants, 180
Tracking implants, required of some pet, 180
Tracking number, 18 digit, 331
Trade occupation covers, 345
Tradition, 275
Tradition can disguise abuse, 41
Trafficant, U.S. Congressman Jim, 383
Training films, for making a slave, 5
Training of the higher will, 250
Training, Illuminati, midwifery, 251
Training, to get child used to demons, 300
Traitor's death, 226
Traits, how they survive genrtnal skips, 223
Trance Logic, 42-43
Trance Programming, Alice In Wndrld the, 96
Trance themes, from various storylines, 96
Trance, conditioning victim to, 269
Trance, light, 57
Trance, protects hearts of stone prgrmg, 282
Tranced alters for trancing body, 198
Trancer II, film, 354, 357
Trances, caused by smells, 44
Tranquility (drug), 50
Trans-Plutonian Space, 122
Trans-Saturnian, 160
Transactions Missouri Lodge of Research, 145
Transceiver implants, 248
Transdisciplinary Team for Preemie, 23
Transducers, implants, 318
Transferases, RNA, 179
Transformation of America, 106, 294
Transforming, term explained, 306
Transistors, HXTR series, 172
Transistors, silicone bipolar, 172
Transmitter Station, Santa Rosa Air Ctr, 33
Transyuggothian Space, 122
Transyuggothian magic, 122
Traps, around castle, 220
Traps, internal, 188, 230, 231

TRAUMA

Trauma, fire, 200
Trauma, to olfactory nerves, 44
Trauma, types of, 37-46
Trauma-based Mind control, list of organiz., 17-19
Traumas, done to nations & peoples, 275
Traumas, filmed and coded, 44
Traumas, original, many done at NOTS, 379
Traumas, primal or early ones, 220

Travel alters, 198
Trazodone, 55
Tree Magic, 217
Tree imagery, used by programmers, 192
Tree of Alchemy, 217
Tree of Evil, 212, 214
Tree of Evil, spiritual, internal, 70
Tree of Knowledge of Gd & Evil, 330
Tree of Life, 22 paths, 212
Tree of Life, Cabala (see Cabalistic Tree of Life), 21,151, 212, 227, 309
Tree of Life, Cabala, pillars of, 212
Tree of Life, internal, creation of, 213
Tree of Life, tied to Garden of Eden, 329-330
Tree of the Knights Table, 217
Tree programming script, 311
Tree root, power to regenerate, 216
Tree w/ square paper boxes w/ music,int., 189
Tree, dormant third one, 216
Trees, 337
Trees, imagery of different ones, 215-216
Trees, other types in programming, 215
Trees, perceived as singing, 216
Trees, used in programming, 215
Tremors, at being possessed, 304
Trent, Buck, 368
Triad goddess parts, explained, 216-217
Triangles within Triangles, 221
Triangulation, internal, 337
Triazolam, 50
Tribe of Dan, 350, 376
Trigger Others Univ. Func. Code, 81
Trigger Univ. Func. Code, 81
Trigger, Pony, 383
Triggers, 270
Triggers, of trauma memories, 41
Trinidad, 304
Trinity, Maid-Mother-Crone, 204
Trinity, false, (See also its representative Council of 3), 220
Trinity, false, internal, 197
Trinity, goddess, at top of Tree of Life, 212
Triple-faced gods and goddesses, 190
Trist, Eric, 383
Trojan Horse, hist., 127
Trojan Horse w/ armies, internal, 189
Tropacocaine, 49
Tropenone, 50
Troy, internal, 189
Trumpets of Revelation, used as script, 312
Truth serum, 41, 52
Truth serum, used to monitor splits, 41
Truth, acceptance, love, or rejectn of, 275
Tube Shuttle, into Groom Lake, NV, 379
Tubingen University, Germany, 1
Tujunga, CA, 166
Tulsa, OK, 147, 163, 383
Tumbleweed Program, 76
Tumbleweed program, how laid in, 226
Tunneling/MPD work, Demonic help, 291
Tunnels, Programming Site, Lk. Oswego,OR, 155
Tunnels, at the McMartin Preschool, 125
Tunnels, internal, 189
Tunnels, internal portrayed in Labyrinth, 230
Tunnels, secret at Scotty's Castle, 382
Tunnels, underneath Boeing Plant, 355
Tunnels, used for induction, 82
Turkey, 352
Turner, Admiral Stansfield, admits, 5
Turner, Karla, 184
Turner, Ted, 147
Turning the internal worlds, 233
Turrets, internal on castle, 220
Turtles, 260
Turtles, Sea, 260
Tuscany, Italy, 20
Tweedle Dee & Tweedle Dum, 116
Twilight Learning Device, biofeedbk mch., 184
Twilight sleep, 21
Twin research, 366
Twinkle, Twinkle Little Star, 84
Twinning, 359
Twinning code section, 83-84
Twinning, Monarch, 215
Twinning, how done, 359
Twins, death of one gives spir. power, 355
Twins, experiments on, 371
Twins, research on, 11
Twins, sometimes a lie, 157
Tyileur General De La Franc-Maconnerie, 163
Typhon, demon, 122, 291, 302
Tyrannosaurus Rex, 302
Tzafkiel, archangel of Binah, 214

U-2 plane, 331
U.N., San Francisco meeting, June '45, 364
U.N., South American delegates to, 364
U.N.DERGROUND lounge, Bohemian Grove,CA, 33
U.S. Ambassador to the U.N., 146
U.S. Army, 18, 234
U.S. Army DARCOM, 331
U.S. Army General Staff, 326
U.S. Army Intelligence, (See CIC), 339
U.S. Army Surgeon General's Office, 51
U.S. Army, 1st Earth Battalion, 315-317
U.S. Army, Chief of Staff's office, 325
U.S. Army, Psychic warfare battalion, 369
U.S. Army, Special Services Division, 353
U.S. Army, War College, 236

U.S. Army, Warrior Monks, 315-317
U.S. Army, slogan, Be All You Can, 325
U.S. Army, tries New Age Thinking, 314
U.S. Cong. House Comm. on UnAmer. activ., 4
U.S. Highway 395, California, 34
U.S. Military, Basic Training, 297-298
U.S. Postage, Oz stamps, 347
U.S. intelligence, 364
U.S.-Canada border, 354
U.S.O. magicians, 353
UCLA Center for Health Sciences, L.A., 180
UCLA, developed color programming, 328
UFO abduction operation, CIA name for, 180
UFO, mock used in programming in CO, 356
UFOs, 120, 137-138, 287
UFOs, all satanists have experienced, 287
UFOs, built by government, 120
UFOs, connection to occult world, 287
UN plans, 377
UNIX computer language, 247, 248, 330-334
UNIX, dialects of, 332
US Senate Committee, investigating CIA, 380
USA, Miss, 357
USAF, 18, 167
USAF School of Aerospace Medicine, 167
USAFAM-TR-83-3, 167
USAFAM-TR-87-30, 167
USO Camp Shows, Inc., 353
USTEC, 56
Ultimate will, of God, 290
Ultramarine, color code, 238
Ultrasonic stimulation, initial traumas, 25
Umbanda, 18, 303
Umbilical cord, tree serves as, 216
Umbilical cords, internal, (See also Cord, silver) 227, 228, 330
Umbrella System, 224
Umbrella System Code, sample, 77
Umbrella System, sample code to, 74
Umbrella programming for Beta & Deltas, 7
Umbrella system, internal, 209, 222
Underwager, Ralph, 3
Underwater EEG remote body monitoring, 181
Underwater mind-control research, 260-261
Underwater, special tools, 261
Underworld King, is all powerful, script, 113
Unemployment, raises blood pressure, 255
Uni-Patch Medical Products, 166
Uniform Color Code, 235, 238
Union Force Codes, 222
Union Seminary, NY, 149
Union Train Station, Portland, OR, 32
Unitarians, 305
United Express Airlines, 33
United Federation of Planets UFP map, 239
United Kingdom, 190
United Nations, 146
United Nations, drawings cmprd to UN's, 235
Unity School, Kansas City, 146
Unity in multiplicity, 186
Universal Codes, Internal Computers, 80-81
Universal File Cabinet, spheres & paths, 212
Universal Function Codes, 93
Universe B, 122
University Hosp. OR Health Sciences U.Hosp., 251
University of Illinois, 51
University of London, London, Eng., 383
University of Michigan, 51
University of Minnesota, 51
University of Pennslyvannia, 2
Unmanifested Logos of HPB, 101
Urantia Brotherhood, the, 315
Ureteric catheter, 257
Urethra, 257
Urethral Orifice, External, 257
Urinary bladder, torture of, 257
Uruline convent, 295
Utah State Prison, 383
Utilities, programs, internal, 222, 236, 242, 335
Utility program, equiv. Potter's Wheel, 222
Utopia, negative, 323

VISA cards, 332
VLF waves, 180
Vagabond programming, 193, 203
Vagabond, name of car, 350
Valarium Root, 50
Valley Forge General Hospital, 51
Valley of Dry Bones script, 310
Valley of Hinnom, child sacrifice site, 302
Valley of the Dry Bones, internal, 189
Valmid (see Ethinamate), 48
Van Dusen, Dr. Henry, 149
Van Duyn Illuminati Family, 133
VanDyke, Leroy, 368
Van Fleet, James K., 340
Van Patten, William P., 371
Vanderbilt Illum. Family, 136
Vanderpool, Darcy, 368
Vans, can be used for programming, 166
Varr, dwarf, 301
Vaterchen, name by victims for Mengele, 371
Vatican, 363, 364
Vaudou (Voodoo), 302-305
Vaughn, Alan, 375
Vaults, internal, 209
Veiled One, is Caillech, 218
Veils, of Grande Mothers & Grande Dames, 103
Veins, how cutting the veins prgm put in, 336

Velikovsky, 370
Ventura, CA, 184
Venus, 212
Verity, William, 56
Vermont, 100
Verono, demon, 302
Versailles, IL, 383
Versed (see Midazolam hydrochloride)
Vest, Jim, 368
Veteran's Administration Hosp.,Sevulved, 253
Veteran's Administration (VA), 18
Veteran's Administration Hospitals, 313
Veteran's Hospital, Columbia, MO, 154
Vibrations, acoustic, 169
Vickory, Mack, 368
Victim of Love, 85
Victim, of CIA efforts w/ ELF, 179
Victim, problems with therapist, 360
Victims, not allowed to know their age, 265
Victoria, Australia, 369
Victory in W.W., myth of, 121
Videodrome, film, 354, 356-357
Vidimax, porn video club, 352
Vietnam War, 154, 326
Vietnam War, I-W service, 153-154
Vietnamese crime syndicate, 202
Village of Cream Puffs, script, 117
Vine imagery, used by programmers, 192
Vineyard of Naboth, used as script, 310
Violet, color code, meaning of, 329
Violin, of Mengele's, 282, 366
Viper, car name is name of demon, 349
Viper, demon assoc. w/ Bk. Widows prgrm, 80, 223
Virgin sacrifices, films of, 352
Virginia, 369, 370
Virtual Reality for programming, 256
Virtual Reality, asstd by pheromones, 256
Virtual reality, 66, 218, 256
Visual Intelligence Display, 241
Visual reality headgear, 118
Visualization, 277
Vita Merlini, 190
Vital Human Brain Frequency, 182
Vodoun cult, Haiti, 50
Vodoun, dissociative abilities of mmbrs, 9
Voice, hypnotic voice of programmer, 65-66
Voices, the creation of in victim head, 167-179
Voices: the Art & Science of Psychoth..., 273
Volcano programming, 97, 226
Volcano, internal, 189
Volcanoes, external, 298
Vomit, dogs return to, 312
Vomit, what happens to slaves, 312
Vomiting, drug to help multiples with, 51-52
Von Harbou, Thea, 323
Voodoo, 5, 50, 122, 233, 253, 283, 302-305, 354
Voodoo Magic, dismissed by some, 122
Voodoo No. used in Jesuit Programming, 94
Voodoo dolls, internal, 302
Voodoo, Haiti, 50
Voodoo, dissociative states, 304-305
Voodoo, in Labyrinth, 230
Voodoo, internal, 227, 228, 283
Voodoo, studied by CIA's MK Ultra, 5
Voodoo, used against traitors to Illum, 283
Voodoo-like protectors, internal, 283
Voodoun, manipulated by CIA/Ill., 50
Vor Kommando Moskau, 365
Vortex spy satellite, 294
Vortex, Gold Hill, Oregon, 64
Vortexes, internal, 230, 235, 239
Vortices (aka Black Holes), internal, 189
Vortices, internal, 226
Voting machines, rigged, 127
Voting process, rigged, 127
Vow of Silence Programming, 93
Vows & Oaths, 204, 292--294
Vows, final, Mother of Darkness, 293
Vows, satanic are improper & null, 309
Vows, spurious to God, 293
Vril Society (Vril Gesellschaft), 363, 364
Vril, the, 325, 363
Vultar Val, demon, 302

W Board, London, 383
W.K. Kellogg Foundation, 351
W.W. I, 153, 372
W.W. I, post WW I era, 258
W.W. I, slogan of, 121
W.W. II, 33, 153, 169, 224, 286, 346, 353, 358, 363, 367, 383
W.W. II vets, 353
W.W. II, Illum. kingpins supply Hitler, 363
W.W. II, slogan of, 121
W.W. II, trauma-bsd md control, 353-354
W.W. II, war criminals, 304
WACL World AntiCommunist League, 365
WANG computer language, 247
WCC (World Council of Churches), 141, 147
WRENS, Bob Hope cartoon, 353
Wabasha, MN, 166
Waco, TX, Delta teams, 200
Waffen S.S., 325
Wait upon orders, script, 311
Wakefield, Hollida, 3
Wales, 190
Walker, Billy, 368
Wall Street Journal, 380
Wallis, Gordon T., 56

Walls, internal, 228
Walls, no-talk, 188
Walruses, in Alice In Wonderland script, 116
Walter Reed Army Institute of Res.WRAIR, 167
Walters, Barbara, 207
Wand, 82, 292
Wand, reading for PREMA, 182
Wands, witches, from willows, 216
War College, U.S. Army, 236
War In the Heavens Programming, 225
War Monger label, 35
War criminals, 304
War criminals, W.W. II, brought to states, 363-365
War in the Heavens Suicide Programming, 76
War industry, 324
War of the Zombies, the, film, 354
War on Drugs, a front to elim. competit., 124
War, as a control device, 324
War, ideology of, 324
Warehouses, Mormon Bishop, 139
Warfare Systems, underwater, secret, 261
Warfare, hypnotism used in, 61-64
Warner Communications, 354
Warren Magazine, 236
Warrior alters, 198
Warrior monk, 320
Warrior-Monk's Vision, 316
Warrior-monks, of U.S. Army, 314, 324-326
Washington state, 152, 308, 341, 370
Washington, D.C., 2, 137, 314, 372
Washington, D.C. area, 383
Wasteland, internal, 189
Watchers, internal, 225
Watchers, the, 198
Watchtower Society & Illuminati, 61
Watchtower Society Art Dept., 61
Watchtower Society, Bethel HQ, 61
Watchtower magazine, 61
Water (moats), internal, 189
Water Defense Programs, 226
Water Program from Jeremiah, 225
Water tortures, 39, 381-382
Water tortures, Alcatraz, 381-382
Water, occult meaning of, 190
Waterfalls, internal, 189
Waterjar Shaking Program, 76
Waters of Death, internal, 222
Waterworld, film, 258
Watkins & Hilgards, 194
Watson, Arnold R., 371
Watson, Patrick, 315
Watson, William M., 146
Weaknesses, surface, 276
Weapons, non-lethal, 167
Web, part of Black Widow programming, 223
Webb, Donn, 371
Webb, Jim, 368
Webs, of Black Widow Programming, 80
Wechsler subtests, 15
Wegner & Bretschneider, 168
Weir, programmer, 95, 368
Weirich, Richard J., 371
Welk, Lawrence, 353
Well Trauma, for programming, 208
Wellington, New Zealand, 370
Welte Mignon Organ, 382
Wendall, Margaret A., 371
Werewolf Order, 18
Wernersville St. Hsp.,Wernersville, PA, 153
Wesbecker, Joseph, 179
Wescoe, W. Clark, 56
West Point, Computers of, 331
West, Dottie, 368
West, Shelly, 368
Westberry, Kent, 368
Westminster Theological Seminary, 148
Wet op, amish, outlined, 154
Wheaton College, 148
Wheel of Existence, 218
Wheel, that flashed sunlight by Ptolemy, 183
Wheeler, Cisco, clues about Elvis, 355
Wheeler, Cisco, survives death of master, 341
Wheeler, John, 370
Wheeler, Leo (Dr. Black), 107, 120, 209, 366, 368
Wheeler, Ms., applied for benefits, 341
Wheeler, T., 167
Wheelers, in Oz series, 111
Wheels, angels, Auphanim, 214
When You Wish Upon a Star, 85
When Rabbit Howled, film, 208
When Rabbit Howled (book & movie), 185, 208
Whipping, uses Willows, 215
Whips, 290, 383
Whips, used at Y. Charm School, 383
Whirlwind, internal, 224
Whitaker, Colleen G., 371
Whitaker, Roger L., 371
White House, HQ, at China Lake, NWC, 34
White Queen 116
White Rabbit (song), 85
White Rabbit, controller is always, 282
White Rabbit, importance in programmg, 74
White Rose of Cabala, 215
White Russians, 364
White Stone, 293
White Stones, 312
White robed alters, programmers, intrnl, 206
White, Dr. of McGill Univ., 256
White, George, 346
White, Sir Dick Goldsmith, 346

White, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Whitlow, Robert, 368
Whitly, Ont., 354
Whitney Illum. Family, 136
Whitton, Bobby, 368
Whiz kids, 247-248
Wigs, used to hide different alters, 123
Wilcox, Jessica, 367
Will to fight, important to fight backup, 227
Will tree, internal, 70
Will, of God Almighty, 3 kinds of will, 290
Willamette Week, 142
Willamette University, 351
Williams, Donna, 45
Williamsburg, VA, 379
Willow Tree, program hanger, 215
Willow, in Druidism, 215-216
Willow, magical sexual properties, 216
Willow, months connected to, 216
Wilson, Robert Anton, 370
Wilson, Walter William, 56
Wind Defense Programs, 226
Wind, internal, 189
Wind, occult meaning of, 190
Winds, as progrm protection, 226
Wine, with lily essence & rue, 214
Winged Lion, druid dragon life-force, 302
Winged idols, 103
Winged monkeys, 103, 106, 225
Winged-sun-disk, 355
Wink signals, 94
Winkhart, Roland, 371
Winter Solstice, 218, 308
Winter Solstice, calls for Crone, 218
Winters, Doc, 365
Wires, internal, 189
Wisconsin, 370
Wisdom, of AntiChrist spirit, 306
Wisdom, sphere, 212
Wise Men, the, 7
Wise One, the, 218
Witch Hazel, 50
Witch, good/bad witch programming, 200
Witch, in Labyrinth, 231
Witchcraft '70, film, 354
Witchcraft, Magic & Occultism, 57
Witchcraft, levels of, 204
Witchcraft, medieval, 296
Witchcraft, some are involved in prgmg, 18
Witchcraft, white, 146
Witches brooms, from willows, 216
Witches wands, from willows, 216
Witnesses, two, prior to AntiChrist, 376
Witt, LTC Bill, 315
Wizard of Oz, 191, 276, 312, 336, 354
Wizard of Oz (book), 99-109
Wizard of Oz Programming, 75-76, 96, 99-115, 232, 264, 343, 347, 380, 383
Wizard of Oz Theme Parks, 100
Wizard of Oz head, shown on Star Trek, 356
Wizard of Oz programming codes, 75-76
Wizard of Oz progrmg, movie, books, 232
Wizard of Oz theme ads, 347
Wizard of Oz, the, 286
Wizard, internal, psychol., cover for demon, 120
Wizard, use of term, 103
Wolff, Harold, 368
Wolves among sheep, 137
Womb, used as a temple for demons, 223
Wonders, lying, 376
Wood, Richard D., 56
Woodpecker Grids, cages for programming, 31-33
Word games, 158
Word of God, long history of misuse, 309
Word of God, misuse of for programming, 307-313
Word of God, reasons for misuse, 308
Word-Matrix, 78
Words, Power words, 70
Worker's Compensation, asked for, 341
World Association of Psychiatrists, 372
World Bank, 354
World Book Encyclopedia, 57
World Council of Churches (WCC), 141
World Mind, 181
World, controlled by Satan, 313
Worlds, internal, 189
Worlds, internal, demonic, 300
Worm, satanic seed, portrayed in movie, 231
Worms, internal, 189
Worship of Kali, 219
Wrecking the Car Suicide Programming, 76
Wright, Clifford, 269
Wright-Patterson AFB, OH, 383
Writing, programming not to write, 268
Wyoming, 370
Wyvern, druid dragon life-force, 302

X-Files, 286
X-Y axis, 92, 106
X-Y-Z axes, 221, 232, 236, 334
X-ray machines, 118
X-rays, 265
X-rays, made of implants, 183
XTC (see Ecstasy)
Xanax, 55
Xibalian Mysteries, Ch10titlepg

YMCA pool, Minneapolis, 136

Yageine, 50
Yahweh (actual name of God Almighty, also written YHWH in the book)
Yahweh Elohim, evil spirit w/ God's name, 301
Yale College, 305
Yale University, 258, 305, 323
Yale, President of, 305
Yehoshua ben Joseph, name for Jesus, 8
Yellow Brick Road, 75, 105, 109, 189, 312
Yellow Brick Road, functions of, 75
Yellow Brick Road, how the slave uses it, 105
Yellow Brick Road, in Simpson Cartoon, 358
Yellow Brick Road, internal, 189
Yellow Brick Road, programming imagery, 109
Yellow Brick Road, significance, 101
Yellow Submarine, 85
Yellow, color code, meaning of, 328, 329
Yerba Mate, 50
Yeshua, actual name of Jesus, 8
Yesod, 218
Yezidi Satanists, 371
Ygdrassil, internal, 70
Yggdrasil tree, 217
Yggdrasil, has 3 roots, 217
Yin-Yang symbol, internal, 190
Yoder-Hutchinson Amish Settlements, KS, 150
Yogis, 249, 254
Yogis, ability to control their heart, 254
Yogism, 254
Yohimbine sulphate, 50
York River, VA, 379
You Light Up My Life, 136
Youngstown, OH, 383
Youngstown, OH, Slave sex. Finishg Charm School, 207, 383
Ypsilanti St. Hsp., Ypsilanti, MI, 153
Yuan Xiang-chen, 137

ZBIE computer language, 247
Zajkowski, Marie M., 371
Zeal, religious, to cover hidden sin, 289
Zeckeeboom People, 303
Zen Buddhism, 131, 324
Zenith, internal & Star Trek, 243
Zerodieth, demon, 213
Zeta Reticulli 119
Zeta code section, 85
Zimmer, Brian E., 371
Zionist leaders, in Israel, 364
Zodiac and Gems corresponded, 77
Zodiac signs, used in codes, 76
Zodiac, the, related to Saturn worship, 160
Zohar, studies of, 299
Zollner, patent document, 168
Zolpidem tartrate, 50
Zombi Cucumber, 50
Zombie Death Sleep body program, 253
Zombie Room, St. Mary's Hosp., Quebec, 381
Zombie Univ. Func. Code, sample, 81
Zombie, term, 303
Zombie-slaves of Zulu witchdoctors, 50
Zombies, creation of, in Haiti, 50
Zombies, film about, 354
Zombies, used as description of chldrn, 25
Zombificant, 50
Zoro, chimp used for trauma, 38
Zulu witchdoctors, 50
Zwietract, Amish, 152

WHY JOHNNY CAN'T COME HOME

Kidnapped while delivering Newspapers......
Forced into

Pornography
Prostitution
Mind Control
Espionage

Noreen N. Gosch

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 03931 9519

REA

WHY JOHNNY
CAN'T
COME HOME!

HELP FIND
JOHNNY GOSCH

By... Noreen N. Gosch

JUL 6 2001

Copyright - November 2000
Noreen N. Gosch & The Johnny Gosch Foundation

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photo copying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from thepublisher.

Published by:
The Johnny Gosch Foundation
1258 Office Park Rd. Ste. 2
West Des Moines, IA 50265
Email: JGoschFoundation@aol.com
Website: www.johnnygosch.com
Contact the above for permission to excerpt larger sections of this book for magazine and other forms of reproduction.

As a citizen of the United States, I have the constitutional right under the First Amendment to disseminate the autobiographical account of my eighteen year journey to find my son and solve the case.My detailed account is accurate and totally documented. Law enforcement ignored court documented evidence and did not assume their responsibility in this case.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 00-093298

ISBN 0-9705195-0-8

First Edition: November 2000

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

ONE OF THE MOST FAMOUS KIDNAPPING CASES IN THE NATIONS HISTORY

Gosches charge W.D.M. police with negligence

By FRANK SANTIAGO
Register Staff Writer

Noreen and John Gosch, in a complaint to the West Des Mo Council, have charged the Moines Police Departme gence in the investigati pearance of their son.

"This case was no

Letters plaint we 1009 F beau, Dia an

Child kidnap-murder rings myth, police say

By FRANK SANTIAGO
Register Staff Writer

The most chilling of all theories to explain how America's children mysteriously disappear is that some are stolen, then sold into an underworld for sex, and finally murdered.

It unfolds way: Children photograph schoolya tures ca dren, ma ger fro

JOHNNY GOSCH

believes her son, who disappeared Sept. 5, 1982, when he was 12, was kidnapped and sold to pedophiles.

Police officials said, however, that witnesses reported seeing somethi on the car seat but could not positiv identify it.

The FBI and Canadian polic no such organized child-a have been found. The ne little to calm gr y, among them ren Are Re D), that iles

Papers in U.S., Canada aid in search for youth

By FRANK SANTIAGO
Register Staff Writer

From the Turtle Mountain Star, a weekly newspaper in Rolla, N.D., came this note: "We're off the beaten path, but who knows, maybe we can help."

Alma Hughes, the advertising manager of the Pratt (Kan.) Tribune, wrote: "My prayers will be with you. . ."

The Reposi Cant

Boomerang to the Turtle Mountain Star.

Scores of leads have come back to Des Moines — either to the police, family, or The Register — as a of the ads. None, ho unlocked a crucial Gosch's dis myst

Kidnapped boy alive?

'Please help me'

Mrs. Gosch said a woman on March 2 saw two men chasing a boy down a street in a large city that investigators have asked this newspaper not to identify. She added:

"The boy ran up to the woman and said, 'Please, lady, help me. My name is John David Gosch.' At that point, one of the man

"I have mixed emotions now," said Mrs. Gosch. "Yes. I heard he was still alive. But I also heard the men grabbed him a second time. And my thoughts are, what did they do to him for trying to get away? You lie awake in the middle of the night and you wonder, what have they done to him by now?

of disturb- triggered feature reporters, handed the notices told to develop

Mom's plea to son's captors

en months ago, a boy was kidnapped streets of Iowa. ch,

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated:

To my son, Johnny, who has suffered the pain of being kidnapped abused and tortured. May he know that I tried with all my strength to find him, to solve the case and finally bring his story out before the public. May he know his family loves him and he is not forgotten.

To the countless other kidnapped children may they not give up hope

To the parents of kidnapped and murdered children .... May this book give you hope to go on, when the pain is so great and the world looks bleak.

THEY HAVE NO CRIME....
I HAVE NO SON !!!!
THE FIRST TWO YEARS

My story really begins on Sept. 3, 1982; we had attended a Valley High school football game to watch our older son play. Johnny asked if he could buy some popcorn, as he walked down the bleachers toward the concession stand, a policeman approached him. They visited briefly, my husband then went down and asked Johnny to stand near the playing field, so we could see him from where we were sitting. Johnny obeyed and stood by the railing, the policeman had followed him and continued their conversation.

A few moments later, I looked down and Johnny was no longer by the railing. Again, my husband went down to locate him, he discovered him under the bleachers in the darkness talking to the policeman once again. John brought Johnny up to sit with us. A short time later the game was over and on the way out of the stadium, Johnny pointed to the policeman and said… " He was really nice, maybe I should think about being a policeman when I grow up." We went home. I thought at the time this was very unusual behavior on the part of the policeman and as we left the stadium, I turned around and memorized his face. This incident became very important in the days to come.

The following day, Saturday, September 4, 1982, Johnny went to a movie in the afternoon with his friend Mark. That evening, my daughter and her boyfriend came from college, our older son was also home, I fixed a nice dinner. It was so nice to have all of them home at the same time. We had what I call "the last supper." I remember how much fun the kids had that night, joking with each other, laughing, and enjoying being together. About nine thirty p.m., Johnny jumped up saying "I am going to bed, I have to do the paper route in the morning before we go to the lake". Before saying good night to everyone, he asked "Can I do my paper route alone tomorrow morning"? His Dad said, "I guess it would be okay.". I immediately said "No, your Dad will go with you like always, it is so dark at six a.m. and I don't want you out on the street alone." Johnny said "good night", gave everyone a hug and went upstairs to bed. A few moments later, Johnny was back in the kitchen standing next to me as I was cleaning up after dinner. He gave me another hug and said "Mom, I will always love you… you are the best "! He then went to the stairs, turned looked at me, smiled, and then disappeared up the stairs. This was to be the last time I would see my son for over fourteen years. (5,293) days.

Early on September 5, 1982, our phone rang, I looked at the clock and it was one thirty a.m. My husband took the call saying, " Yes, alright, yes, alright, okay" and then hung up. I asked him who it was and he replied, " It was a wrong number." I remember thinking it was very odd; we had been receiving calls like this every Sunday morning at the same time… for the past four weeks. Never before had my husband spoken to anyone until this call but he always said they were just "hang up calls."

A few hours later, our phone started ringing again, the neighbors were saying they did not receive their Sunday paper and wanted to know if Johnny was running late. I got up to check if Johnny had overslept, he was not in his room, I went downstairs and noticed Johnny's wagon was also gone. My husband said "he is probably running late.. I will go help him. Why don't you start breakfast, then we can leave for the lake when we are finished." It was a beautiful Labor Day weekend and we had plans to go boating at the lake. I began to fix breakfast and suddenly, I felt something was very wrong. I walked to the refrigerator and put all of the things back, which I had taken out for breakfast and sat at the kitchen table.

John, Johnny's father burst through the door yelling "**JOHNNY IS GONE… HIS WAGON IS SITTING TWO BLOCKS AWAY FULL OF NEWSPAPER, CALL THE POLICE SOMETHING HAS HAPPENED TO HIM**". By then the phone was ringing off the hook, everyone wanted their newspapers, I told the neighbors something had happened to Johnny, the papers would be delivered as soon as possible but we had an emergency. One man said, "We just want our paper". I immediately called the West Des Moines Police Dept. While a neighbor helped my husband deliver the papers. We waited 45 minutes for the police to arrive (we live 10 blocks from the police station)! I telephoned our daughter at college anc our other son at his job, asking each of them to come home immediately I knew it was serious and I wanted my family all together.

I then telephoned Johnny's, District Manager at the Des Moine: Register to ask for the names of the other boys, picking up newspapers a the corner paper drop. She came right to the house after hearing wha had happened. I made phone calls to the other news carriers, they eacl told me a man was seen talking to Johnny, he was driving a blue car anc stopped him for directions, as he walked away towards the corner to picl up his bundles of papers. Johnny continued to walk with our little dog Gretchen towards the corner and did not at any time go over to the cai The driver then made a U-turn in the street and followed Johnny back t the corner, where the other children were also folding newspapers. Sooı an attorney, John Rossi arrived to pick up newspapers for his children, h also talked to the driver of the blue car.

Mike Seskis, a paper carrier, 16 yrs old at the time told me, "Johnn said quietly this guy is weird, something is wrong with him, I am scare and am going home." Johnny started to walk away; suddenly the drive of the blue car started the engine, backed up and drove away from th scene. The attorney had left while Mike remained on the corner. Mik reported "just before the driver pulled away ... he flicked the dome ligh on and off in his car 3 times." Just then, Mike saw a man come out fror between two houses and follow Johnny down the street, around the coı ner and out of sight. He watched until he saw Johnny turn the corner ou of sight. The second man followed Johnny around the corner, he also sai "I heard your dog growl, but nothing else seemed wrong at the time" an continued folding his papers.

At that moment, the two Bosen brothers were approaching th area, also pulling their wagon on the way to pick up their newspaper: They reported seeing Johnny sitting on his wagon slumped over, but th boys were in a hurry and went on. Seconds later, all of the witness's hear the slamming of a car door, screeching of tires and the car leave the are at a high rate of speed, running the stop sign and traveling North on 42 street towards the Interstate. Another neighbor, P.J. Smith also heard th car door slam, looked out his bedroom window as the car pulled awa All that was left on the sidewalk was Johnny's wagon still full of newspa pers... Johnny was gone.

The police finally arrived to make out a missing persons report. had collected all this information from witness's before they arrived. answered all the entire questions; the police officer then looked at me an said, "Has your son ever run away before?" I couldn't believe what I wa hearing, after sharing all of the information from the witness's.... ho could he even ask such a question. I replied "my son has never run away.... not in the past and not now"! The officer acted unconcerned as if this was normal, just another runaway in his mind. He left the house and we heard nothing from the police department for the next eight hours.

While waiting for the police to contact us again, I telephoned friends and relatives all over Des Moines area to let them know what happened, giving them the description of the car, asking for help in a search. We started searching the immediate neighborhood and then expanded the search. Large groups of people were beginning to form, helping us search parks, near the rivers, any secluded area, which might be a crime scene. I stayed near the phone handling all the calls, which were coming in and telephoning police departments in other areas. I soon discovered no one outside our area knew Johnny was missing. The West Des Moines Police had not sent out any report to other areas. Approximately three thirty p.m., two detectives returned to the house and requested a picture of Johnny, asked a few questions and left.

I called the parents of the witnesses again, they told me two police men came to their home, listened to the report but had not brought a clip board or a piece of paper to write anything down. These parents were very upset with the police, they knew nothing was being done to help us locate Johnny and reported it to me.

Soon the word began to spread that a child in West Des Moines was missing and reporters appeared on the front porch wanting pictures and a story. We handed out photos of Johnny, telling them we would appreciate it if they would publicize his picture and ask for any information possible. The police meanwhile were not doing anything... They were using their legal right at that time to not take any action on the case for 72 hours. It would be two years before a law was passed in Iowa to force the police to act immediately when a child is missing for whatever reason. Johnny was clearly kidnapped and we could not get any type of police investigative action for 72 hours. We had to get friends, relatives and neighbors to form search parties to look for Johnny.

The police chief Orval Cooney instructed us not to talk to the media but to sit in our house and not to even participate on searches. We of course did not listen to him, continued to search throughout the entire night all wooded areas, along country roads, ditches, any place a crime might have taken place. We feared the worst and kept our eyes trained to look for a body. The evening news carried Johnny's pictures and our phone was ringing constantly. It was complete bedlam at the house. We were in shock that the police were treating this so lightly and we could not get any kind of help for Johnny.

As darkness fell, it started to rain, our relatives soon began arrivng during the long night to help in any way they possibly could and to show support. Most of them lived several hours from Des Moines. We simply could not believe something like this could happen two blocks from our home. Johnny had never gone on the paper route alone, his father always went with him, until that one morning. Why! Johnny's older brother had gotten up early to go to work and knocked on Johnny's door to be sure he was up. Johnny had always come in to wake his Dad to do the route together. We do not know to this day why he went by himself. It all happened so quickly, our son was gone, we knew he had been kidnapped from the reports of the five witnesses and here we are alone, the police would not help. What were we going to do?

The phone rang again, it was a representative of the Des Moines Register, Johnny's employer… they wanted us to find a replacement for him to deliver the papers.. There was very little consideration from the Des Moines Register. At this point, I lost my temper and called the editor James Gannon, reported to him what had happened to our son and how the circulation department of the paper had treated us. I then told him exactly what he could do with their typewriters, press and paper. The lack of response by the police and Des Moines Register was about more than I could take. Mr. Gannon apparently made some calls and called back shortly to tell me that the newspaper was going to offer a reward of $5,000 for information.

No one slept the first night, as all of the relatives gathered to show support, I said "we are going to leave the **porch light** on… one of my children isn't home yet." The porch light was to remain on for eleven years. The next day, more than 1,000 people arrived at the police department volunteering to search for Johnny on foot. A call was placed to Governor Robert Ray to ask for use of the National Guard helicopters for an aerial search. His response was " you have to prove it is life and death, then there would be a fee of $750 per hour to use the helicopters…. And a fee to be paid to the pilots". It was simple… we did not have the money.

As the people searched throughout the day, the police were not helpful in any way in organizing the search or directing it. It was a "do it yourself project". One search team after another would return to the house to give us a report. The report was the same at each search site… the police chief would arrive use a loud speaker and say to the crowd "Go home folks, the kid is probably just a damn runaway." I was stunned and couldn't believe what I was hearing. Why was this man behaving this way, was he drunk or just stupid? My little boy was gone; he had done nothing to anyone. Johnny was only twelve years old.

Our Police Chief, Orval Cooney had a reputation as the town drunk, only a few months before the kidnapping; he had beaten a man in a local bar while intoxicated. It was quite a news item for a while, but Mayor George Mills allowed the man to keep his job. There had been a full-scale investigation of the West Des Moines Police Department after twenty of his own officers filed reports of negligence, among other charges. It was evident that we were working with a police department incapable or unwilling to handle a crime of this magnitude.

After hearing these reports from the search teams, I made another trip to the police station. Orval Cooney and Gene Meyer. Dept. of Criminal Investigation were sitting in the chief's office, when I arrived at the station. I confronted the Chief about his remarks to the search teams, Gene Meyer interrupted by saying "We do not consider Johnny to be in danger, until you (his parents) prove his life is in danger." I asked them if they had begun any type of investigation on the vehicle, as one witness had given a partial license plate number, the name of the county and state on the plate. Both the Chief and Meyer reported they were not going to make a decision to do a motor vehicle license search for at least another day. The Chief then said, "We have never had a case like this, we aren't sure what to do." I replied "I don't fault you for this, but please call other police departments for assistance." The chief told me" he would not do that because they wanted to handle it themselves!

Again, I couldn't believe what I was hearing.... My son's life was at stake and the Police Chief had an ego problem. I returned home, frustrated, angry and made the decision to call the media. I scheduled the first of what was to be hundreds of television interviews. It was Sept. 7th and the police continued to wait another day to begin an investigation. I later learned from three Sheriff's departments in neighboring counties... they had sent men to assist in the search for Johnny, and were told by the Chief "go home, we do not want your help." He was refusing any type of help for our son.... What is wrong with his man? Is he a lunatic or just stupid or was he protecting someone?

During the first TV interview, I made a "plea for my son's life, to beg his kidnappers to contact us and we would meet their demands, we wanted our son and loved him very much". I also included a special message to Johnny to remember he is loved and try to stay strong until we find you. Following the news showing the interview, every nut in the city began calling our home and driving by our house. Although there were some people, who were very sympathetic, others were cruel and said, "your son is dead and begin laughing, then hang up the phone". Some called to criticize me for not crying on television.

The most unbelievable expressions of humanity began to surface. Due to the interviews, we began to receive leads and would call the police to report them. Each time, the police would say "it is probably nothing."

It was evident by their lack of professionalism that they were not investigating this case. I had no choice but to become my own investigator, checking out all these calls one by one. Many of them were a dead end but everything had to be checked, just in case it might yield a clue. The ground searches continued for one more day... people then had to go back to their jobs, the long holiday weekend was over. Our relatives had to also return to their own lives. The reality began to sink in "Johnny was gone and no one but his family was going to do anything about it."

A few other business's contributed to a reward fund which had been started to find Johnny, which had been started by the Des Moines Register, we added $40,000, the equity in our home, to the $20,000 already being offered. We stipulated our portion of the reward was "for the safe return of Johnny".

I knew it was necessary to create a missing persons poster to send them out. But I didn't know how to begin this project. I assumed the police departments assisted parents with this... they informed me that wasn't their job. There were no Missing Children's organizations to turn to at this time. Many were created following Johnny's kidnapping. The FBI was nowhere in sight... why were they not involved? Kidnapping is a Federal Crime....if you are wealthy enough, apparently we weren't!

My heart was heavy, I felt, I was going to completely fall apart but knew if I did, there would be no one to help Johnny, certainly not the local law enforcement. Our family had never experienced a violent crime, nor had any problems with the police in our lives. This was all new to us, it seemed there was nowhere to turn.

The media did continue each day to call us, doing interviews with updates, new pleas to the kidnappers and reports on the growing reward fund. The media became more instrumental in our case than the police department. At least they were helping us to circulate Johnny's picture locally and to other areas of the state.

I made another trip to the police department to plead with the police chief, while I was at the station, I overheard an officer say "Why does that stupid family leave the porch light on for a kid that will never come home". The officer saw me standing there.... Why such cruel remarks? But this was just the beginning as I was about to discover.

By Sept. 8th, the police now wanted to ask questions. They asked if we had threatening phone calls, anything unusual happen in the week prior to Johnny's kidnapping. I reported to them the phone calls in the middle of the night prior to the kidnapping and about the policeman at the football game on 9/3/82...I was told neither was important. This concerned me, as the man at the football game resembled the description from witness's of the driver of the blue car, kidnapping Johnny. However, the police chief would not pursue the matter and told me to forget it.

During this most tragic time of our lives, suddenly we were forced to be investigators, fund raisers, do interviews on television, and continue to keep our jobs and our sanity. How are we going to do it? I had no training in these things.

The Police Chief kept telling me that the FBI would not be entering the case. I decided to call the local FBI office and request an agent to come to my home. They sent Special Agents Ed Mall and David Oxler. When they arrived they sat down at the table and told me they would not be entering the case because, in their words "WE HAVE NO CRIME." I responded, "I have no son, he was kidnapped, you have all the information from the witness's, kidnapping is a Federal Crime." The agents informed me the Police Chief, Orval Cooney had briefed them telling them there was no need for them to enter the case… That he could handle the situation. I could not believe what was happening. It seemed the world had gone completely nuts. A little boy was kidnapped off the street and the FBI would not enter the case. I grew up watching the FBI Story with Effram Ziembalist Jr. and really believed that they entered kidnap cases and set up a command post in the homes of the families. NOT TRUE…. It is nothing like TV … not one thing in this case would I consider to be a real investigation.

It seemed all hope was gone, then someone called and suggested about Child Find in New York, I called them and arranged to have all the material sent for registration for Johnny. I sent the check for the initial fee and in the following months, continued to receive requests for more money, we had finally over the months sent several hundred dollars. Each time, Child Find would tell us that it was for printing and distribution costs on our son's case. And that just as soon as Johnny's picture was placed in their national book it would be distributed all over the country. Unfortunately, they over estimated their ability to help or their budget, because it was over eighteen months before my son's picture finally was printed in their book and distributed….it to dentist's offices and doctors offices etc. There was no way Johnny would be in a dentists office to have his teeth cleaned and be recognized. It was a complete waste of our money and our time. At that time their organization was set up to help victims of "parental kidnapping."

I was scheduled to be at a school board meeting to discuss the kidnapping. At that time, we took turns covering the telephone at home. The police instructed us to tape record phone calls and let them know where we were at all times. I reported to them, I was attending the meeting. The police then telephoned John at home, saying they wanted to see him at the police station right away to go over material on car license plates. They sent the Police Chief and Gene Meyer to the house to cover the phone while John was gone. I happened to come home early and discovered both of these men searching our home without a search warrant...I asked them to leave my home. I never received an apology for their conduct or deception.

The following day... I made a trip to the police department....The Police Chief said "you people are so straight, we couldn't find anything wrong or illegal about you when we looked through your house." He sounded positively disappointed. I then told him that the case needed more concentrated investigation, he replied "They were actually going to put the case on the back burner because it was becoming very quiet and nothing was happening....the phones just aren't ringing."

It was only three weeks after the kidnapping at that point. I took care of that immediately, upon returning home, I called a number of friends and asked each of them if they would call four friends, asking each to call the Police Chief and demand to know what was being done in the Gosch kidnapping case. Soon the police were flooded with calls and they could not put the case on any back burner.... It had suddenly come "alive" once again.

The week of September 24th, a small article appeared in the Des Moines Register, an attempted abduction of two young children in a small town just outside of Des Moines. The man arrested was from Omaha, Neb. and was connected to a pornography ring. I took the newspaper clipping to the Police Chief, Orval Cooney, asking him to investigate and call the Police Chief in Omaha, Robert Wadman. Our Police Chief refused saying, "I don't have a feel for this so I am not going to do anything." I then went to the FBI office and was told once again "they did not intend to enter the case, because the Police Chief told them he didn't need their help." In desperation, I called a press conference and raised "holy hell" releasing the information that neither the police nor the FBI would investigate my son's kidnapping.

Within four days of my press conference, I received my first of many death threats. A male voice on the phone said "Stop making waves or you will die." What I did not realize at the time was that I was knocking on the back door of what became the Franklin Credit Union Investigation conducted by the Nebraska Legislature. John DeCamp, a longtime Nebraska State senator detailed it in a book, The Franklin Cover-Up on "child abuse, Satanism and murder, which went far beyond the confines of Nebraska. Police Chief Wadman from Nebraska was implicated. It is no wonder our police chief would not investigate this matter. I was so close to discovering what happened to my son within three weeks after he was taken, they had to find some way to stop me.... The death threat and the refusal of authorities to investigate severely limited me in trying to find my child.

The West Des Moines Police Chief was considered an authority in Johnny's case and was being invited to speak at a number of civic organization meetings. It was reported to me that Orval Cooney began spreading a story that Johnny was not our child but adopted and ran away to find his parents. I had to produce his birth certificate publish it in the newspaper to prove Johnny was my son. This ludicrous behavior by professional law enforcement official was hurting our chances of having public support to locate our son. I could not understand why he would behave in this manner when a child's life was at stake. Looking back on it today, it is perfectly clear why the Police Chief did not pursue an active investigation to find Johnny. You will read why in later chapters of this book.

It became clear that we would receive more help from a private detective than the police. I began collecting names of investigators to be interviewed. I had also contacted a number of national TV shows - 60 Minutes, 20/20, Mike Douglas, Phil Donahue, Nightline programs to tell them what was happening here. They were very nice but told me to submit the story in writing with clippings. This was their policy but it takes longer.

I made the decision to tell the police we were hiring a private detective. When I told Police Chief Cooney, he became outraged. He began yelling and threatening me. He shouted: "You have no right to bring in an outsider!" I replied, "You cannot tell me what I can or cannot do to find my son. I will hire a private detective...If you have a problem with that ... stick it up your ass!" I walked out of the police station and returned home. I made arrangements to travel to Omaha Nebraska the following day to interview a private detective.

At four p.m., the same day our doorbell rang. There stood the Police Captain, Bob Rushing, with his hat in his hand, saying the Police Chief now wanted us to take a polygraph test. He told me: "They would try make an effort to keep it out of the press, so as not to embarrass us." I couldn't believe what I was hearing! My son is gone. They handled the case negligently from the beginning and now just after I announced hiring a private investigator.... they were demanding a polygraph test. That conversation ended by my asking the Captain to stay, while I called the media and arranged a press conference to announce; We were being harassed by the police, simply because we had planned to hire a private detective. He could not stand the heat and left before the press arrived. I did the interview and received many calls of support from people in the community.

The following day, I traveled to Omaha, Nebraska to interview and hire Dennis Whalen, a private investigator. He was recommended to me because he had solved a case of a missing child in Carter Lake, Iowa. He located Todd Bequette who had been kidnapped, held for two years by a man who repeatedly sexually abused him. In order to pay the retainer fee, I used all the cash value in my life insurance policies and money in savings for the children's education. We made all the arrangements with Dennis to come to Des Moines and begin work within a few days.

I returned home that evening, the phone rang. It was Good Morning America asking us to be on their show October 11, 1982. I accepted and made plans to travel to New York. This was to be the first of over 50 network appearances through the years. It was wonderful to have this opportunity to show our son's picture on Good Morning America to millions of people. I lived in hope that there would be one solid lead, which would give us the answer. It would help us solve the case and find Johnny.

On October 9th, the night before I was to leave for New York, I received a phone call from a man asking for $10,000 ransom. I notified the West Des Moines, who again said "it is probably nothing". This call was not investigated by any law enforcement.

The following morning, I left for New York and the Good Morning America program. We arrived in the city, as I rode in the tax, I kept looking out the window thinking Johnny could have been taken to a large city such as New York. The hotel accommodations were very nice but I kept wondering why they allowed all of the horses along Central Park to "poop" all over the place. This was the first trip to New York and I was somewhat surprised by the "aroma". It is called the "city that never sleeps", I felt fortunate to have this opportunity. That evening, I did find a little time to unwind, as it had been non-stop stress from the moment Johnny was kidnapped, I was operating on very little sleep. I went down stairs in the hotel and had dinner just observing all the people who were no doubt living a "normal life"…. something, which was taken from me. I no longer had anything that resembled a normal life.

The following morning, I got up, got ready to go to the studio, there was no way I could even think about eating food. As I was waiting in the lobby for the limo to arrive, a woman sailed in from the dining room, introducing herself as Kristin Cole Brown from Child Find in New York. She was to appear on the program with me. I kept my distance from her as I could remember all of the checks I had written to Child Find and my son's picture had still not appeared in their book. I knew that Child Find primarily worked on "parental kidnappings" not "stranger" so perhaps that is why they were not effective in Johnny's case. However they continued to ask for money until I shut off the spigot.

Kristin was just too bubbly for the occasion, she chirped in the limo about how her make up would look on TV that day. I remember thinking at the time, my son is gone, I am turning inside out here and this woman is concerned about her eyeliner. However, when we got to the studio and we were called into the make up room, they had to do an "overhaul on Kristin and the make up artist said to me "your make up is beautiful Mrs. Gosch, what products do you use? We don't have to add a thing … you are ready to go on the air. " I hadn't done anything special… just got ready for the day as though I were going to work.

Finally, I was escorted to the studio and introduced to David Hartman. He is a very tall man, extended his hand to shake mine and made me feel welcome immediately. We were seated on stage; the soundmen were installing microphones on us. David continued in a very kind sensitive manner to ask more details about Johnny, the case and asked to see the photo I brought with me. He took it in his hands shaking his head, looked back up at me and said, " I am so sorry this happened to your son." The show began, I was able to give the entire description of the kidnapping, show Johnny's picture and answering questions that David Hartman asked concerning the case.

Kristin Cole Brown was then brought on stage with us and she gave information to the public about Child Find and all they do for parents of missing children. I did not get another opportunity to set the record straight about the difference between parental and stranger kidnappings….and that this organization primarily worked on parental. They may have changed their format by now.

As I walked out of the studio, I decided to not take the limo back to the hotel. Instead I walked and about twenty people came up to me, who had seen the program. They were so kind, telling me they were praying for my son. It was surprising to me in a city that large that people would take the time to share their kind comments with me.

When I returned home from New York, the local media reported on the Good Morning America appearance…they gave it good exposure. A number of people called saying they were happy we had the opportunity to show Johnny's picture on national TV and hoped it would bring results. The down side of this (and there seems to always be a down side to everything) some in the city called to say, "You looked too good on the show, your make up, your outfit … how can you be suffering?" Two friends who owned beauty shops also called to tell me the topic of discussion in the shops for a few days was "How Noreen Gosch looked on TV… she looked too good… she can't be suffering… she is in this for just the publicity".

Those that gossiped and criticized me did not understand that I would always present my "best foot forward", in case my son would see the show. I wanted him to see a positive reinforcement, to hear that his mother was working very hard to find him and would not give up. On a network show you are only given a few precious minutes to tell your story. I wasn't going to waste it by sitting there crying and being unable to speak, nor would I go in looking like I just crawled out of bed.

On October 13, 1982, I spent the day with the private detective. My husband left for a business trip, my mother, older son and private detective were all talking over details of the case. Shortly before, midnight the same man, who had called two days earlier with a ransom demand, called again and "told me to drive to a phone booth at the corner of Hickman Road and Merle Hay Road, that I would find the ransom demand there. He told me, I only had a short time to comply with the demand or I would not see my son again." My private detective told me to grab a pair of gloves to handle the note and off we went. I didn't know if there would actually be a note or if it was a hoax but I had to check. When I arrived at the phone booth, I got out of the car, slid my gloved hand across the top of the booth and sure enough there was a note. I ran back to the car, got in and we could see the note was addressed to Mrs. Gosch. I drove home and called the FBI after reading the instructions.

I first called the West Des Moines Police; they of course said it was nothing. I then called FBI demanding an agent come to my home, reporting we had received a ransom demand. Agent David Oxler, at first refused to come to the house, saying "it is probably nothing!" I explained what the note contained and he finally agreed to come to the house. When he arrived, he took one look at the note and said, "this does not pertain to Johnny and we are not going to do anything". How could he say that... the note was addressed to me and they talked about Johnny in the note? I couldn't believe or accept what he was saying, **THE FBI REFUSING TO ACT ON A RANSOM DEMAND**.

I couldn't think of anything else to do so I grabbed a piece of paper and "asked Agent Oxler to sign it, date it and state that he was refusing to act on this ransom demand and we would all sign as witness's, my mother, Dennis Whalen (private detective), my older son and myself". Then if my son were killed due to his refusal to act, I would file charges against the FBI for negligence.

Agent Oxler then said "if you put it that way, we will check it out but you will have to drive your own car to the area, we will not put one of our agents in to drive it." It was a very bad section of town, there had been a gang murder there just ten days prior. And now the FBI would not send anyone with me for protection nor allow our private detective to go along. The private detective told Agent Oxler " he was going with me regardless!"

Just then the phone rang ... I turned on the tape recorder and answered the call. It was the police chief, Orval Cooney, asking for Agent Oxler. I handed him the phone, after they finished talking he walked back to the table and sat down. I noticed the tape recorder was still running, I had forgotten to shut it off. So I reached over and turned it off. Agent Oxler got up and threatened to arrest me for tape-recording their conversation. I told him, "it was not intentional and I had been instructed by the police record every incoming call. " He wouldn't listen, grabbed me, shoving me into a wall, taking the tape recording out of the machine and put it in his pocket. To this day, we have never recovered it, I am sure it contained off color remarks about me that they did not want me to hear.

At 1:45 a.m. the FBI called and told me to proceed over to the address in the ransom note and make the money drop. The result of the ransom demand was a disaster the police & FBI waited so long to get into formation. Just before I left the house, the man called back to tell me time was up...**we had waited too long!** Nevertheless, I followed instructions drove to the location, dropped the bag on the corner but the man never surfaced to pick it up. Dennis Whalen and I returned home to wait the rest of the night. The despair that followed this episode was unbelievable. I had always believed that the FBI would handle these cases that they would respond to a ransom demand. I was so disappointed with every aspect of this case and how it was being handled. The true victim here was Johnny and no one was doing their job.

The only conclusion, I can arrive at for survival in this time and place, is the fact that from the beginning; I was plagued with people placing obstacles before me. I literally had to fight to go over, around or through them for Johnny's life. I had never been through anything like this in my life... having to fight for everything. There was no time for "pity parties" or falling apart even though I felt so badly. Johnny was the victim and I kept that focus. My heart actually hurt; there was actual pain in my chest, which never went away, day or night. The pain remained with me for four years, three months and twenty-six days.

Years later, I began working with the Polk County Victims Association, giving talks for their support group meetings. I learned that all of the other victims, who had lost a loved one to violent crime, also shared the same physical pain in their heart area that I had experienced. The counselors at the Association explained to me that it is very common for victim survivors to have the pain in the heart region, lasting from the onset of the crime up to ten years. They were very interested in the actual time my pain was present before waking up one morning to discover it had vanished. I looked it up in my daily journal and I had recorded the day, I woke up without my pain. Which was four years, three months and twenty-six days after Johnny was kidnapped.

The following day, the story was all over the media in Des Moines, television, radio, and newspaper that there was a ransom demand. During the interviews I shared with the public that the FBI refused to help on that night. The usual public uproar took place, which amounted to dozens of phone calls to our home once again. The phone rang every fifteen minutes day and night. Some people were praying for me and others wanted to criticize. The law enforcement then began to harass our private detectives, refusing to work with them.

The police forced our investigators to come in to the department, saying them they would not accept their P.I. licenses because they were from the state of Nebraska. This caused us a delay. Our investigators had to find a P.I. in the state of Iowa who would issue them a license under his agency. This was also another outlay of money, which we could ill afford. The detectives were able to finally begin working.. The first morning they were doing a "stake out" of the kidnap scene to determine times, lighting, and distance of the cars from the witnesses. The West Des Moines police drove up and once again forced our detectives to come into the station to explain what they were doing on the street corner at 5:56 a.m. This was a continued type of harassment by the West Des Moines police. They were not willing to investigate the kidnapping but it seemed they were not about to let us do it either.

THE BIG "DO IT YOURSELF" PROJECT

I continued with our massive flyer program and to finance all of this and private detectives, it was suggested that we sell **"WORLDS FINEST CANDY BARS"**, with Johnny's name on the candy wrapper. Many children's groups have used this kind of fundraiser at some time to raise money. In the history of this company it was reported to me that The Johnny Gosch Foundation sold more candy bars than any other group in the United States. Over a three year period, we sold 400,000 candy bars, which we received fifty cents profit per bar. That did raise $200,000 to help pay for private investigators and the additional expenses, which accompany a kidnapping and search for a missing child.

I chose November 12, 1982, Johnny's 13th birthday, to have our first meeting of the Johnny Gosch Foundation. Twenty volunteers came, some were old friends, but many new acquaintances that were dedicated to helping us find Johnny and change the system for the positive. We elected a board of directors, Bill Hornbostel, an attorney to file for incorporation/non-profit tax-exempt status and Bob Duitch volunteered his services as an accountant to handle all money incoming and outgoing. We kept all of this as a separate entity. John and I had absolutely nothing to do with the finances other than to work with all the volunteers at the fundraisers. The board of directors managed the Foundation.

Word began to spread throughout the country via the media ... JOHNNY GOSCH'S PARENTS ARE SELLING CHOCOLATE TO RAISE MONEY TO FIND THEIR CHILD. For a time it became quite a human-interest story, but for a very touching reason. A reporter for the Washington Post wrote a very compelling story about a set of parents "selling chocolate to save their son." We had candy bars in 80 stores; weekly volunteers from the organization would pick up the money and replenish the candy supply. Candy bars were being sold in other parts of Iowa, Illinois and Minnesota. Many people realized that we were average working people, who could not withstand the expense of an ongoing private investigation alone. I borrowed all the money I could from my life insurance cash value, our families helped as much as they could. Our resources could only go so far but it was imperative, we had to keep the private investigation going otherwise we would never know what happened to Johnny.

I made a decision to go public with our case for several reasons:

1) To find Johnny
2) Educate parents throughout the country.
3) Bring positive change in legislation forcing police to treat "stranger" kidnap cases with priority.
4) To give other parents hope – to convey the idea of "not giving up on your missing child".
5) To help other parents cope with the tragic loss of their child.

When it was first suggested that we sell candy bars and then Johnny Gosch bumper stickers.... I was upset to think that in this country of wealth and waste a parent would have to do this in order to recover their kidnapped child. **KIDNAPPING IS AGAINST THE LAW. BUT WHERE WAS THE LAW? IT IS A FEDERAL CRIME!**

It is difficult to convey sometimes to others how desperate a parent feels when they do not receive the assistance from law enforcement. In our community, it was as though people found this to be unpleasant and preferred not to talk about it. A West Des Moines City Councilman told me " I was embarrassing the city on national TV!" I was treated as "modern day leper" for some time. No one thought it could happen to them, that the Johnny Gosch case was an isolated incident. Readers Digest reported in a article that there are as many as 100,000 children kidnapped in the United States each year. What makes people in this area think it couldn't happen to them?

Due to all the publicity, I received the biggest break of the entire case; Ken Wooden called our home after reading articles about Johnny and wanted to visit with me. He had been at Iowa State University doing a week of being a "guest professor". He suggested Perkins Restaurant near the airport. When I arrived Mr. Wooden and Professor Colson of Iowa State University were waiting at a table. We sat down to talk, when suddenly Mr. Wooden asked me "Do you really want your son back or is this all an act?" I was so stunned, I just stood up and said, "I am not sure where that came from but I do not have time to talk with you" and prepared to leave. He quickly said Professor Colson "I like her.... She has spunk."

He asked me to sit back down and explained that he had worked for ABC and CBS as an investigative reporter. He done a great deal of research on pedophiles, how they molest and kill children. He also wrote the "Children of Jonestown" the story of Guyana and the massacre that took place. He had been following the progress of the case through the media as well as many others in the country. He told me "IT WAS TIME TO ENTER THE NATIONAL ARENA!" He said "Johnny is probably no longer in the state of Iowa." He also said he wanted to see how strong and determined I was....

He asked me to go forward with an awareness program, telling the truth of what is happening to our children and to fight for better legislation on both a state and federal level. He said he would help me every step of the way, share information with our private detective and me to make an impact in this country. He reported to us the grim statistics of other families destroyed by this tragedy and crime. The divorces and the suicides which so common among the parents. He had asked me to speak for so many of the children, whose parents could not do it.

The day I met Ken Wooden was one of the best days I had experienced since the kidnapping. A man from outside of Iowa, who actually cared enough about our son to really give me some "hands on advice."

He said, "it might get rough, the public and press will doubt you, laugh at you and try to discredit you, because the truth you will bring out will be difficult to accept." Then he looked at me and said "are you willing to fight for you son?" I agreed to do what ever was necessary in order to find my son. I had no idea of the roller coaster ride that was ahead of me. All Ken warned me about and then some was about to begin. I have never had to fight so hard for anything in my life up to this point.

It was through Ken, I learned about the organized aspect of these kidnappings and how children were used. Organizations such as

NAMBLA....North American Man Boy Love Association, The Rene Guyeon Society and others. The first targets sex with little boys, the second sex with little girls. Both their motto's seem be "sex before eight or it is too late." It was very difficult for a time, to cope with this new information. It made me feel ill knowing someone has taken my son to be used in the same way. But when I would weaken, I would look at Johnny's picture and remind myself **"HE IS THE VICTIM, THIS IS NOT THE TIME TO CRUMBLE."**

Ken took time to teach me how to write a press release, which would be noticed when it was sent to a radio or television station or program. He did not forget about Johnny after he left Des Moines, he continued to work very closely with me. Both in an effort to find Johnny but to also achieve progress in this country. He was a turning point in this case and in my life.

Ken sent me the names of every producer to contact on the entire big network TV shows. I began the long process of letter writing and sending packages of materials to these producers, in hopes of being selected for the shows. Within six months, I began receiving invitations to appear on the talk shows, magazine shows and special productions.

One day, as I neared the elevator in the building where I worked, a man approached, shook hands with me and said "Hello, I am Terry Branstad and I am running for Governor". I replied, " Hi, I am Noreen Gosch, my son was kidnapped and I need to talk to you." With that I hopped on the elevator with him and his press secretary/campaign manger. I told him, I needed help and had ideas for legislation. He said to his press secretary..."make a note for me to get in touch with Noreen after the election." Terry Branstad was elected Governor of Iowa and he didn't forget what he said in the elevator that day. Soon after the election was over and he got settled in office, I was able to schedule an appointment with him to discuss legislation changes concerning not only Johnny's case but also abused children needed for the state of Iowa

The next big event that shaped our investigation on a national level was being chosen for an **HBO Documentary Movie** called **"Missing."** Dave Bell Associates was the filming company hired to do the project. The filming was to take place during Thanksgiving week in November of 1982. The producer Terry Meurer Dunn, the film crew, and soundmen ... the entire entourage came to West Des Moines. This was a documentary film and we were to play ourselves. They did use local people to reenact the kidnapping of Johnny. Our interview lasted five straight hours, it was exhausting... They showed how hard we worked to raise money to find him and also the never-ending faith we displayed that someday we would see Johnny again.

They filmed all types of day-to-day activities. The producers and crew planned to stay with us through the "first Thanksgiving without Johnny," showing how we as a family coped.

The producer wanted to film me shopping for the Thanksgiving turkey at the local HyVee grocery store. They chose the busiest time of the day, with many customers in the store. So much controversy, speculation and publicity had taken place, that I felt as though I were on public display. I grabbed for a 24-pound turkey, hoisted it up to the cart, it slipped out of my hands and bounced along the floor, drawing even more attention to the scene. At that point, there was nothing to do but have a good "laugh"…. something I probably needed…..comic relief. The film crew, producers and I stood in the aisle at the busy grocery store laughing till tears ran down our cheeks. I am sure the other customers thought we had lost our minds.

They recreated the crime scene, interviewed many people in the Des Moines area, including the Police Chief Orval Cooney. Cooney stated in his interview **"the Goschs are damn stupid people".** The producer Terry Dunn was so stunned the police chief would utter such a crude comment, that she gave us the "sound bite" on a tape to prove his remark. I couldn't understand why a public official, one who was supposed to be looking for my son would say such a hurtful remark about us.

Terry Dunn, the Producer asked the police chief if they had any finger prints of Johnny Gosch? His response was..."Mrs. Gosch wanted us to fingerprint her son's room but it makes such a hell of a mess, we decided not to do it".

The HBO film "Missing" aired for the first time in June 1983. Many people having missing children began to contact The Johnny Gosch Foundation for help after seeing the film. They wanted to know how to begin a search on their own cases. By going public with our case, it was the beginning of an increased awareness for families. Many will search indefinitely for their children and probably, will never have an answer. It began a movement in this country, which was heard from coast to coast. An awareness of the danger to children falling prey to pedophiles, either in a sexual abuse situation within their community or being kidnapped from their hometowns all across the country.

Today you cannot pick up a paper anywhere in the country without seeing an article of someone sexually abusing a child. Seldom do you see an article about kidnapped children. Yet it continues to go on between stranger and parental kidnappings numbers over a half a million per year. An added situation today is the throw away children which add another half a million to the number.

Our organization had become very active in fund raising and awareness programs. I was asked to be a speaker at many schools. I developed a comprehensive program with films to be shown to parents and children, called **"IN DEFENSE OF CHILDREN"**. Ken Wooden assisted with information and statistics, I could share in my talks. During my programs, I gave parents the profile of a pedophile enabling them to see more clearly those who might be abusing children in their communities. In many communities, following one of my programs there would be arrests of pedophiles, which had been operating in secrecy for many years. This program was very necessary and also enabled us to qualify for the non-profit classification as we were providing a very needed service with in our state for all children.

Our detectives advised us to find a good composite artist to do a sketch of the kidnapper. I called the Des Moines Art Center; they were very kind and recommended a fine young artist. He worked with each of the witness's separately, then all together to create and refine the composite picture of the suspect. This is another area, which Police failed to complete. As soon as the composite drawing was finished, I again called another press conference to release the picture. As soon as our sketch was released, the police then did a composite drawing also and it resembled a **"MR. POTATOHEAD!"** Even the witnesses said it did not look like the driver of the car, the suspect. We added this picture to our missing persons posters, which have numbered into the millions sent out with across the country.

I decided to make an appeal to the Des Moines Register editor... James Gannon, only to make someone aware of things the police were not doing in the investigation. I had made repeated efforts to gain cooperation between the police and our detectives from the beginning of the case. They simply would not.

The result of my letter pleading for help was another disaster. Mr. Gannon published it on the front page of the paper and allowed the police to dissect it in print and make crude remarks. The letter was never intended to be used for publicity ... only as a plea for help for my little boy. It was another blow to our family, the impact left me shell shocked, unable to sleep, severe loss of weight because I simply could not eat under all of the stress.

I was afraid to open up the newspaper each morning, because I didn't know who would be attacking us next. Nor could I understand "why!" I kept asking this question daily how could they do this and why ... what was their motives? Why would Gannon, the editor of the Des Moines Register encourage and assist in the attacks against parents to find their child. Today, we know many important people in business and in government are themselves pedophiles or for one reason or another are sympathetic to those who are. Pedophiles can be in any walk of life, male or female teachers, coaches, scout leaders, politicians and police at all levels.

I felt a deep commitment to establish new legislation regarding the "period of time" in which the police wait in a missing person case. Most often they wait 72 hours as they did in Johnny's case. This is valuable precious time in the missing person's life. I gathered all of my materials on legislation for my appointment with Governor Terry Branstad. I worked with an attorney, telling him of the ideas I had for a bill, he helped me write it in the proper language. When I presented all of my ideas and suggestions, I was so pleased to discover Governor Branstad, a kind man who listened. He had an open mind and said, "He would read it over and do what he could to help." We did meet again later with a revised edition of the bill after the Governor and his legislative staff had an opportunity to look it over. It was decided that a bill would be drafted.... it was to be called THE JOHNNY GOSCH BILL.

At first, no one wanted to sponsor the bill... they all felt it would be too upsetting to law enforcement, but I continued to talk to both Senators and Representatives, eventually Vic Stueland, from my home town, who knew me from the time I was a baby, sponsored the bill in the House. A short time later the Senate sponsored the bill.

I was then informed by well meaning people, that if I really wanted the bill to be passed, I would have to wine and dine the legislators. Just as the lobbyists do. I refused to do it that way; I had a full time job, a part time job and the search for my son... I didn't have time or money to wine and dine legislator I did another press release to this effect. This launched the most hectic schedule for the next full year, as the Johnny Gosch Bill did not make it out of committee the first year and we would have to begin all over again on the following session of 1983/1984.

Speaking engagement invitations were coming every part of the state of Iowa and other states. I was booked every night of the week and weekends. My program, "In Defense Of Children" gives a very in depth presentation, on prevention but also the Profile of a Pedophile and how they operate in a community. Not only for the kidnapped child but the many who are molested and the cases never resolved. I worked closely with our private detective and Ken Wooden in gathering material for this project.

Each morning, I would go to work, as soon as I got off work, I would be on the road to present another program. I was blessed to have volunteers in the Johnny Gosch Foundation, who took turns traveling with me and handling the literature table. I had a number of brochures and information for the parents to take home to educate their children on safety. We had huge operating costs the first few years, due to the amount of printing for all our literature and legislation material. So we always carried a supply of Worlds Finest Candy Bars to sell at the programs to help defray the cost of printing.

Then came a devastating blow in April 1983. Another boy from West Des Moines was reported kidnapped. Immediately the FBI were called in.... very different than Johnny's case, when they stated "THEY HAD NO CRIME". It was the son of a very wealthy man in West Des Moines, a very prominent family. Listening to the news reports was like reliving Johnny's kidnapping all over again. The FBI solved the case in 36 hours. They did pay a call to our home at eight a.m. the following day. As they entered our home, Special Agent Herb Hawkins, in charge of a five state region, stated **"WE REALLY HAD TO MOVE FAST ON THAT CASE, THERE WAS A HUMAN LIFE AT STAKE." I couldn't take it anymore and said to Hawkins..."WHAT DO YOU CONSIDER OUR SON..... DOGFOOD?"**

Herb Hawkins was sitting in Johnny's chair at the table drinking coffee and replied,"Mrs. Gosch, there is something you don't understand... the other boy kidnapped.... their family is more prominent, their son was worth more money, we had to act fast". Again, I couldn't believe what had just been said to me. In essence " the rich and influential... the FBI will work to find, but sorry you are out of luck."

I completely lost my temper, after many months of this type of treatment, they finally told me the truth....***"JOHNNY DIDN'T MATTER BECAUSE WE WERE NOT RICH AND PROMINENT IN THIS COMMUNITY".***

I honestly do not remember throwing my cup of coffee across the table and just missing the head of Special Agent Hawkins by half an inch. The FBI quickly left our home very quickly after the flying coffee cup. I realized, I needed a new plan; I had to do something different ... because nothing was working. At that moment, I didn't think I would ever be all right again. I decided after that blow... to pack a bag and leave town for several days. I did not tell anyone where I was going and traveled several hundred miles away, checked into a hotel to rest, I needed it so badly.

The police called the house to talk to me and couldn't reach me. They then called my husband saying, "They would put out an alert because there were concerned something had happened to me and I might be missing." My husband told them, "You can't put out an alert, she isn't missing, she is over 21 and it hasn't been 72 hours yet." Essentially their 72-hour rule was being reversed on them.

During the time away from Des Moines, I did rest but more importantly all alone in that hotel... ***I HIT BOTTOM AND GUESS WHAT....***

I SURVIVED. I had never felt such dispair...I wasn't sure what to do next. That FBI Agent actually did me a favor, even though it was cruel on his part to say such a thing. He had given me the "tools" to create national interest in Johnny's case.

The night I returned home from my short "rest", the phone rang; it was Ken Wooden. He had heard about the coffee cup incident in Washington D.C., while at a dinner meeting with William Webster, Director of the FBI. Mr. Webster said, "Some crazy lady in Des Moines Iowa, threw a cup of hot coffee at one of my agents." Ken Wooden asked Mr. Webster "what was the woman's name?" Webster replied "that newspaper boy's mother, that Gosch woman". Ken replied to Webster "If Noreen Gosch threw a cup of coffee at your Agent, he must have done something horrendous... because she has displayed tremendous courage and control throughout this entire nightmare." In his call to me, shortly after his dinner with Webster, Ken said to me "The next time you throw a cup of coffee at an FBI agent... I don't want to hear that you missed".

Ken suggested I send all of this information once again to all of the talk show contacts and he would do what he could on the situation. I began receiving invitations to CBS Morning Show, Hour Magazine, Phil Donahue, ABC Morning and Nightly News, and many more. The story about the coffee cup became public with my appearance on Donahue. I related the entire story on national TV. In a newspaper article, Agent Hawkins first denied it, and then said, "Mrs. Gosch is mistaken", then finally "admitted he had said every word". He no longer is in this part of the United States. He was moved to another area and has nothing more to do with our case.

Within six months of the kidnapping, a young man identifying himself as Paul Bishop contacted me by phone. He told me an international kidnapping/pornography ring had taken my son. I asked, "How do you know that to be true, can you prove it!" He replied, " I work for a government agency which is investigating pedophile organizations. And there are indicators in your case that suggests your son was taken by such an organization. We feel he is being used for pornography and prostitution." All clues were pointing to the kidnapping being organized and not that of a "lone criminal". I found it difficult to believe and accept that my son could have been targeted by such an organization. It was only in later years, I was to learn the possible reason Johnny was selected

Again it was brought to my attention that Orval Cooney; police chief was continuing his tirades against our family. He was constantly making derogatory remarks about Johnny, our family and me. In desperation, I telephoned several members of the West Des Moines City Council, on a Friday afternoon. I told each of them I was filing a 20 million dollar lawsuit against the city on Monday morning, naming the Police Chief as being negligent in my son's case.

Stunned, the city council called an emergency unpublished meeting on Sunday evening, in the basement of the police department. The following morning, it was announced the police chief would retire, as he was too ill to continue in the job, he went out on medical leave, it was the only way he could keep his pension. Finally, he was no longer making negligent decisions on Johnny's case. I never intended to file the lawsuit but I wanted them to think so. Approximately three months after he left office, Orval Cooney was arrested for shoplifting at a Target Store; he took videotape and some molly plug screws for hanging plants from the ceiling.

We had the State director of DCI (State Police) Gerald Shanahan followed for two months by detectives and then a little list was presented to his superiors as to his activities during this time. A short time later, he tendered his resignation. During the first 18 months on our case, several people were removed from their positions, which gave fresh people to the case. This eased the frustration level of having to deal with the people, who treated my son's case with such little regard. We hoped the new people in these positions would have more of an open mind.

We received an invitation to speak at the "10th National Conference of Juvenile Justice Judges & District Attorney's Assoc.", in Hilton Head, North Carolina, sharing the podium with Ken Wooden. Due to the collective talent and contacts in our audience this resulted in much more publicity all over the country. It gave me the opportunity to work on Federal legislation, which was the Missing Children's Act of 1983. The audience of judges and district attorneys numbered to three hundred. It was an excellent opportunity to become more visible concerning Johnny's case and also convey what we were trying to accomplish in Iowa and on the national level. It was also the first time I was introduced to John Walsh, father of Adam Walsh kidnapped and murdered in Florida in 1981. John was working on federal legislation and he mentioned that our "paths would cross again to work together."

In December 1983, Ken Wooden invited me to testify before the Justice Department at Sam Houston University in Houston Texas. Parents of missing children gathered and were asked to tell their story on video camera, naming names and sharing what went wrong in their cases. I met John Walsh for the second time, he came to share his story about his son Adam, who was murdered a year before my son was kidnapped. While I was there I met many people from all over the country, all carrying the same burden pain. It seemed apparent that in every case, the police reacted very slowly or not at all. The families were left with the frustration of not knowing what happened to their child.

All of the video taped testimonies were taken to Washington D.C. and a few months later the Justice Department appropriated the first ten million dollars to start the Center for Missing and Exploited Children. I was invited to the White House for the dedication of the new Center for Missing Children. It was a huge success to have this Center created; it meant that parents had for the first time a place for help, support and guidance when their child was taken. The Center was designed to act as a liaison between law enforcement and the families, to help create and distribute missing persons posters, and an 800 number for calls on sightings of missing children ...1-800-843-5678. They had people to handle the caseloads and keep in communication with the families. This was important so parents did not feel so isolated and alone in their tragedy, as we had before the creation of the Center.

The Johnny Gosch Foundation was constantly growing and the speaking engagements were continuing. Over a period of six years, I presented seven hundred programs, all over the country.

A very special young couple came to meet with us; he was the editor of the Ankeny Press Citizen in a neighboring town. They joined our organization and he began to write a series of articles on Johnny's case, telling the true story. Ron and Luann Sampson, played a very large role in shaping this entire investigation.

The Des Moines Register was ignoring any kind of helpful publicity (no one could understand why.... (Johnny worked for them), so we worked with other forms of the press, in and outside our state. I received a phone call in the spring of 1983, a woman saying, she worked at the Des Moines Register in the newsroom.... She reported, "Shortly after the kidnapping, the editor at that time, came into the newsroom and announced ...all articles written about the Gosch boy WILL be slanted against the family and for the police." She would not give me her name... she was afraid of losing her job. I now knew what was happening but didn't understand "why"!

Ron's articles really began to shake people up and finally for the first time, they were made aware of how our family had been treated. We had an avenue of communication on our case, which was fair. We spent many hours together formulating this project; later Ron became the President of the Johnny Gosch Foundation. I felt such gratitude for all of the people who helped us, prior to and following this series of articles. It made me more determined than ever to continue to work towards a safer environment for all children

As I traveled, giving speeches throughout Iowa, I collected legislative contacts in every community. I circulated a clipboard to my audiences asking everyone of voting age to sign their name, if they were interested in being a "legislative contact". I explained a "legislative contact", would be called if we had a bill being held hostage, if we needed them to call their legislator to put pressure on them to vote for a certain bill for children. We would also ask them to call as many people as possible for them to do the same. Many times bills are held "hostage" in a committee. Logic would seem to dictate that any bill concerning the welfare of children should be a top priority instead of being used as a "pawn" in a political catfight. In all, I collected nearly a thousand names, with the help of Teresa Burriola, a volunteer in the Johnny Gosch Foundation, who worked for a lobbyist. The names were sorted and placed in folders according to their counties/districts with the names of their Representative and Senator.

Word reached Governor Branstad office about my legislative contact project. On a number of occasions the Governor called and asked me to activate our massive telephone tree, we could generate over 500 calls to legislators within an hour and did so many times. Putting pressure on the Senator or Representative, deliberately holding a bill hostage.

My work with Governor Branstad proved to be very rewarding; he is a fair and honest person. We created many positive legislative changes in the state of Iowa, which have been copied in other states. Finally in the second year 1984, the Johnny Gosch Bill passed into law. It felt like such a victory. It had made all of the late nights, driving, speaking and work worthwhile. At the signing ceremony on July 1, 1984, the Governor said to me quietly "I had an extra pen done for Johnny, if he is found, I want him to have it. None of this would have happened if it hadn't been for the tragedy of his kidnapping and all of your work".

Those words meant a great deal to me, the Governor had gone out of his way many times on a personal level to assist me with kindness. It is refreshing after all of the other difficulties and obstacles. The police now have to begin an investigation immediately when a child is missing. IT IS THE LAW. Needless to say a few policemen in the state did not care for the idea but a surprising number appreciate having it in black and white on paper.

Despite the victory of the Johnny Gosch Law being passed, there were several disgruntled lobbyists and legislators who said to me… "You got your bill passed but now who will provide the money to enforce it… we are on the finance committee and we are not going to allocate dollars for this…" I reported these comments from the lobbyists and legislators to the Governor's office and said it was necessary for this law to be enforced the next time a child was taken. Little did I know that only a month from that day, another paperboy would be kidnapped from Des Moines?

THE SECOND KIDNAPPING

I received a phone call from Sam Soda, local private investigator. He claimed to have valuable information for me and wanted to meet as soon as possible. We arranged to meet at his office the evening June 13, 1984. This was another of the tons of calls from people trying to help, I had no idea if his information was something I could use or not. Many of the leads turned out to be nothing. But I accepted the meeting with him.

I brought a tape recorder along and placed it on the table. Sam raised no objection to being taped. During this meeting, he disclosed information about a "second kidnapping in Des Moines". He claimed this came from his informant. The kidnapping was to occur on the second weekend in August, on the South Side of Des Moines and that it would be another paperboy. I thought it strange that he would be telling me this and not the police. When I questioned him on this point, he claimed that I should be the one to take the information to the Des Moines Police, as it would be their jurisdiction. I thanked him for the information and left. I thought that if this information were on the level… it would be a chance to prevent another kidnapping. I believed him but still questioned why he told me and not the police.

I went the very next day to the Des Moines Police Dept., asking if I could play the tape of the meeting with Mr. Soda for them. The uniformed officer at the front desk would not allow me to talk to a Detective, he insisted, "If they felt my information was of importance they would call me". Repeatedly, I told him that I had a tape recording and in a couple of months, there would be another paperboy kidnapped. They treated me as though I had lost my mind and didn't want to be bothered with me. I was shocked, my son was kidnapped and they were rejecting information to prevent another crime.

When I left the Police Dept., I contacted WHO, WOI & KCCI TV station program managers. I did speak to each of them and relayed the information, telling them I also had a tape recording of this conversation. I was shocked to find out that even though they listened to me, no one wanted to listen to the tape.

I was very uneasy about the whole situation and felt that Mr. Soda had given me important information. Someone needed to take it seriously. I contacted Frank Santiago, Des Moines Register reporter, who had been assigned to Johnny's story since the beginning. He was the only one who really listened to the information. He asked if I had been to the police. I told him "yes and to the TV stations". He showed concern and then thanked me for the information. But the Des Moines Register did not do any type of article on this new information. A couple months, later after Eugene Martin was kidnapped, I went back to the Des Moines Police

Department and asked if they were "ready to talk to me about the contents of the Sam Soda tape." I was told "no, they had too much to do with the new kidnapping to investigate and for me not to talk to the press or the Martin family about the contents of the tape". One officer also said " We can get a gag order placed on you if necessary!"

DEEP THROAT

Just as in the movie "All the President's Men", Des Moines also had its "Deep Throat". It became increasingly important to have certain information released in the press at precise times. I knew that if I approached them.... the information would not be taken seriously or have the impact as if it came from an anonymous informant who was accurate. I hired a man to make the phone calls, supplying the reporter with accurate information. I knew the clock was ticking closer to the date in August, which was predicted for the next kidnapping of a Des Moines Register paperboy.

When I had information to be released, I would call Deep Throat; he would go to a pay phone, placing a call to the "newspaper reporter", giving him the information, with the facts for him to verify everything. Within a couple hours, I would receive a phone call from "the reporter" saying " that his anonymous informant had just given him new information and that every word of it was true because he was able to confirm it." There would then be a story, which followed in the newspaper.

At these times, it was imperative that information be released strategically to obtain a desired effect from the "guilty parties" involved locally in the case. It was then and then only, I would know if I was on the right path of investigation. To some people it might seem or sound a bit "calculating" but I was up against many powerful people. When your child is taken and you are forced to do your own investigation, you do what you have to do.

After a succession of appearances on Good Morning America, The Today Show, CBS Morning & Evening News, Charles Kuralt Sunday Morning, Phil Donahue, Inside Edition, ABC Morning & Evening News, NBC Morning & Evening News, and 48 Hours, where I was able to share my story about my son and alert the public to the ever-present and growing danger of child kidnapping. I received a call from Karen Burnes, a producer with ABC's 20/20 in July of 1984, asking to present Johnny's story.

This was the beginning of a long relationship with not only Karen Burnes but also ABC's 20/20. The show depicted the effort I had to make to cope with the loss of my son, which required me to become a public speaker, fundraiser, detective and "thorn in the side of police, FBI and political bureaucrats." It seemed the only way to get anything done on Johnny's case was to shout long and loud on any forum I could find.... from the stage of a church or school, newspaper, magazines to a radio or TV studio. Plans were made with Karen Burnes to film Johnny's Story with 20/20, on the second weekend in August.

Paul Bishop, made another short trip to Des Moines, July 31, 1984. It was at this time, he reported the name of the man who was the "spotter".... in Johnny's kidnapping. Paul explained that a spotter is the person who secures a photo of a victim prior to a kidnapping. Years later in 1991, I learned from Private Investigator Roy Stephens, that Paul Bonacci, (who participated in Johnny's kidnapping) positively identified a photo of Sam Soda as the man, who brought photos of Johnny to the kidnappers, who stayed in a motel room in West Des Moines, on September 4, 1982, the night before the kidnapping.

When Paul spoke his name, I said, "Paul, you need to listen to this tape." I played recording of my meeting with Sam Soda. He listened...I then told him of my attempts to share the information with the police department and media. Paul was not shocked at what he heard on the tape and paid a visit to Sam Soda, questioning him concerning the source of the information on a second kidnapping. Sam was not too cooperative, became annoyed with Bishop, asking him to leave his office. There is indication today that these two individuals knew each other prior to this time.

Before Paul left Des Moines, he created a very intricate map of the Johnny's crime scene, indicating time sequence of each aspect of the kidnapping. Paul dated and initialed the map using GPB (George Paul Bishop)

After Paul flew back to Washington, I began to hear from Sam Soda on a regular basis. He wanted to be the investigator for Johnny's case. He asked for a bank account to be set up for him to draw upon for a salary. I explained to him, we already had a private investigator and could not afford another. He continued to attempt to be involved in any way he could on the case.

I think this suggests how intricate are the manipulations of those involved in the kidnapping and exploitation of children like Johnny. Eventually, I had reports from not only Paul Bishop but also Paul Bonacci (See Bonacci chapter) implicating Sam. What better way for them to keep track of my progress in this case than to plant someone in our very midst? To this very day no police agency has ever conducted a thorough investigation of Sam Soda's alleged participation in Johnny's case.

During this time, I had also been working with Senator Grassley from Iowa, he had been particularly helpful in facilitating with the FBI. A short time later, I received my invitation to testify in Washington D.C. before Senator Arlan Specter's Hearing on **Organized Crime and its Re-**

lationship to Kidnapping. Senator Grassley's office made all of my arrangements

I was instructed by Senator Grassley's office to Federal Express a copy of my testimony and to carry a copy on the plane when I flew to Washington D.C. In testifying before Congress or State Legislature, you are required to prepare a written presentation of your testimony. Paul Bishop met the plane and escorted me to the hotel. I checked in and then he took me on a tour of Washington, followed by showing me some of the blighted places in D.C. Where children as young as ten years old, hang out on the streets late at night. Today those blighted areas include places like the White House Mall at night. Even Congressmen are not safe on the steps of the Capitol.

Later that evening, Paul and I spent time going over every word of my testimony. I wanted to be sure that when I presented my information the following morning that it was clear to the committee, "an Organized Pedophile Group" took my son. Again and again, I have met with denial on the part of individuals and organizations that any such groups could exist in this country. For my protection, two men, dressed in suits were posted outside of my hotel room door all night. A major disturbance occurred downstairs in the lobby during the night, the police were called and arrested the man causing the problem. I have no idea if it was related to me.

The following morning, Paul Bishop, accompanied by two men arrived at the hotel to drive me to the Capitol for the Hearing. The bodyguards accompanied us always a few steps behind us. They were dressed well but business causal rather than suits. Paul looked very polished wearing a dark brown suit. As I entered the room, I noted there were reporters everywhere from ABC, NBC, CBS television, radio, newspaper and magazine. I recognized Special Agent Kenneth Lanning, a member of the Behavioral Science Unit of the FBI Training Division at Quantico, VA, I walked towards him, saying, "Hello, I am Noreen Gosch", extending my hand to shake his.... he pulled back and said, "We know who you are". With that statement there was a definite chill in the air. It was as though the FBI resented me being asked to testify.

Paul sat beside me at the table, the two bodyguards blended into the background, as I testified to my knowledge of the slave auctions in the U.S. During my testimony, Senator Specter asked a number of questions about my son's kidnapping and the investigation. I explained the FBI refused to enter the case, because they wanted me to prove my son's life was in danger. The lack of response from the local authorities created the need for private investigators.

At this hearing were books made available by the FBI showing children in a mail order type catalog, and offering them for sale. How much more needed to be proven about the existence of organizations national and international that were buying and selling children. This book was spiral bound about seventy five to a hundred black and white pages, with six or seven children's pictures on a page. Below each child's picture was offered details about the child, hair and eye color, weight etc. The question that must be asked is that with this information in the hands of the FBI and the Senate, clearly indicating that an organization capable of not only photographing children around the U.S. but offering them for sale and kidnapping to order, why is this still unknown to the majority of Americans. I have made repeated attempts to obtain copies of this catalog, which would prove beyond a shadow of a doubt the existence of an organization or organizations that do buy and sell children.

Councilwoman of the City Council of Philadelphia, Joan Specter stated " I found it rather shocking to hear there was a book "How to Have Sex With Kids", and I decided to verify the fact that it was indeed obtained at the book store. I called the bookstore and asked if they had a pamphlet of how to have sex with kids. They said, "let me check", they returned to the phone and said, "we did have the pamphlet and are out of it but we can reorder it." I said thank you and hung up. And then the pamphlet was delivered to my office. I looked at the pamphlet and saw that it was a How To Do It Pamphlet. It described how to find children, how to go to playgrounds, how to get baby sitting jobs, and then it described how a man who is over 200 pounds can have sex with a child.

It seemed to me that if you have a pamphlet available in a bookstore, which was not a pornographic bookstore, and someone goes in and buys that pamphlet, there is a sense that there is nothing wrong with having sex with kids. Because, after all, here is the book in a regular book store available to anyone who comes in. This is taken from the minutes August 8, 1984, (the same hearing where I testified) of the Organized Crime Hearings and it's Relationship to Missing Children

Senator Specter asked Paul Bishop of his relationship to the case, to me and did he know this to be true. Paul indicated he was an investigator and that every word of my testimony was accurate. Paul remained by my side during the hearing; answering questions asked by Senator Specter, these were the only words he spoke. This struck me as very unusual but then I had never been in this arena before to observe how a CIA man would conduct himself. At no time did Paul ever identify himself as CIA during the hearing or afterward during the interviews with the Washington Press. He withdrew from the view of the cameras. All attempts on my part to obtain photos from the hearing were unsuccessful.

Following the hearing, I requested from one of the staff members a copy of Mr. Lannings testimony and the pedophile material that was displayed on the table, including the catalog. She asked " Mrs. Gosch would like a copy of the material presented by Mr. Lanning" and an FBI Agent told her "This is the property of the FBI and it was acquired from a pedophiles lair, it cannot be given to anyone".

It was appalling to me to me that with all this material in the hands of the FBI, presented by Ken Lanning to Senator Specters committee and examined by the National media, that there is ever any question today in the year 2000, about the existence of national and international kidnap organizations. Today children are a commodity used in TV commercials and magazine ads in a sexually provocatively manner. Is it any wonder that children are no longer safe in our schools because the pedophiles have managed to become their teachers, coaches, and become mentors to young children.

My own private investigator attended a slave auction with naked children paraded on a stage. Paul Bonnaci, who assisted in kidnapping my son claims to have attended many auctions. Everyone from psychiatrist to policemen report talking to people who have attended or been a participant in such auctions. If there is any doubt that Slavery is alive and well in America in the year 2000, there should not be. I examined the same FBI evidence in August 8, 1984, that Senators and the entire news media present examined.

Is there a plot to conceal this from the America public? FBI and countless witnesses such as myself have repeatedly presented ample proof before the U. S. Congress. Yet the average America thinks you are crazy if you declare Slavery exists and is a well-guarded U.S. Government secret. I have a book in my possession, which identifies various members of the U.S. Congress as compromised by having had sex with children, or owning slaves themselves. Paul Bonnaci who participated in the kidnapping of Johnny also stated, he was repeatedly sent to Washington D.C. to have sex with Massachusetts Representative Barney Frank. The Washington Times published a front page story stating a child prostitution ring was being run out of his D.C. apartment

It has now been sixteen years since Senator Arlen Specter has been given these materials. To my knowledge, no major report was given to Congress about the growing and influential pedophiles operating throughout the United States. What happened to the new media who immediately surrounded me following the hearing anxious for more details about Johnny? They had the same access to that catalog that I did. Why hasn't it become a major national story? I testified that slave auctions were being held in the U.S. The catalog clearly confirmed my testimony.

My schedule was so tight, I flew immediately back to Des Moines to meet with the crew from ABC 20/20. The following day, Karen Burnes and the film crew from 20/20 arrived in town. It was a beautiful Saturday and the second weekend in August. They filmed locations around Des Moines and West Des Moines, including the site where Johnny was kidnapped. Later when we arrived back at our home. I decided to share the information regarding a second kidnapping, supposed to occur the following day. I played the Sam Soda tape recording for Karen and shared how I had been to the Des Moines Police Dept., telling her of the reaction I received.

I had hoped they would at least patrol the paper drop areas on the South Side of Des Moines. I also told Karen, I had given the information to the News Directors at the local TV stations. She showed great interest in the information.

After we finished filming for the day, the crew went to the airport and flew back to New York. Karen remained in Des Moines and stayed at the Marriott hotel. The next morning began with the shock of the phone ringing very early. It was a reporter at the local ABC TV station, telling me "the second kidnapping had just taken place". He kept saying, " It happened just as you said it would Mrs. Gosch".

I asked the reporter, how he knew what I had reported, as I only talked with his manager. He replied "they spread it around the news room ...everyone thought you were nuts!" He informed me the police were calling it a kidnapping immediately and the FBI were bringing in twenty-two agents from Quantico, VA to assist in the investigation and search. The young boy kidnapped was Eugene Martin, a newspaper carrier, preparing to deliver his papers on the South Side of Des Moines.

In Johnny's case, the FBI refused to enter the case, the reason they verbally gave me in my home was that "they had no crime and it was my responsibility to prove my son's life was in danger". Why now with Eugene Martin's kidnapping under identical circumstances was the FBI coming forward with a bevy of FBI agents. Could it be that somewhere during the months of Johnny's kidnapping ......the law enforcement here learned something?

Based on this phone call alone, I called Karen at the hotel and told her the "second kidnapping had just happened", exactly as Sam Soda had told me on June 13, 1984. She immediately swung into action contacting her network and arranging for a film crew to come back to Des Moines, when the crew arrived, they went directly to the Des Moines police department.

The police department was in a state of confusion; Karen placed, put, shoved a microphone in the police chief's face and demanded the answers to the following questions. Are you bringing in FBI Agents for this case? They didn't for Johnny Gosch! Are you going to use canine search teams? They didn't for Johnny Gosch! Will you do an aerial search? They wouldn't for Johnny Gosch! The Police Chief had no comment about the Johnny Gosch case and stated the department would do everything in their power to solve the Martin kidnapping. The police went all out using FBI, SWAT Teams, Canine Searches, and Aerial searches but like Johnny, Eugene Martin was probably quickly taken out of the immediate search area. This case appeared to be a duplicate of Johnny's kidnapping.

Karen stayed in Des Moines for several days, interviewing and gathering information on this latest tragedy. The story about Eugene Martin and Johnny appeared immediately on ABC news. Karen and I continued to keep in touch as the years rolled by.

After the Martin kidnapping, I expected the Des Moines Police Dept, to contact me and want to discuss the information I received from Sam Soda. Despite the fact that my information proved to be valid, the police never asked to listen to the tape. Sam Soda knew another boy was going to be kidnapped. Shouldn't the police have asked how did Sam Soda know? Who did Sam Soda know? Did Sam Soda also have the information that would have solved or prevented this crime?

Instead... I was warned not to talk about it to the press and certainly not the Martin family. I could not believe what I was hearing. But it certainly can be explained; they had the opportunity to prevent the second kidnapping, due to the advanced information. Instead of listening to the information, I tried to give them; I was treated like a "nut" and dismissed. If the newspaper drop points had been patrolled, Eugene Martin might not have been taken. If the local media would have created pressure about the tape, police might have been forced to take action. But neither the police nor the media wanted to listen to the tape recording. Where the kidnapping of children is concerned it is difficult to arouse the social conscious.

Suddenly an apathetic law enforcement body.... And The Des Moines Register, who now had **TWO KIDNAPPED PAPERBOYS**, began to act. We continued to pay for our own investigation. Money was donated to reward funds. The newspaper printed thousands of missing person's flyers to distribute all over the United States. We printed and paid for distribution of our son's posters. The change of attitude was amazing.

Jim Gannon, the same newspaper editor, who smugly ignored our case except to do damaging articles and instruct the staff to slant articles against us... wrote an article **"MAD AS HELL THAT TWO CARRIERS WERE KIDNAPPED"**.

President Ronald Reagan telephoned Jim Gannon to tell him what a good job the Des Moines Register was doing publicizing these kidnappings. I questioned why did it take two children kidnapped to shake the social conscience of this newspaper editor? How tragic and sad for the children.

We were still selling candy bars to pay for all of our flyers, watching this same newspaper rollover and do it for another family was very painful. I am glad that all of our work had brought this kind of awareness and progress but at the same time, my heart ached for my son. Going through the first few days of the second kidnapping was like reliving Johnny's. Every bit of the pain was still there and had not lessened.

I thought my life was busy before but after the second kidnapping the speaking engagements and public appearances mushroomed. People felt threatened... would their child be next?

A few days later, NBC Today Show contacted me, asking if I could get in touch with the Martins, as they had been unsuccessful. It seems the FBI (was this the Efrem Zimbalist Jr. from the FBI TV Show, I had been waiting for) had more or less set up a command post in the Martin home and calls were being screened. The Today show wanted to interview both the Martins and us the following day. I called the Martin home, an FBI Agent answered the phone, I posed as a relative and asked to speak with either of the Martins. He handed the phone to Don, Eugene's father. At that time, I identified myself, told Mr. Martin "They want us on the Today Show ... tomorrow!" We then made the plans to do the Today show from the local WHO-TV studio in Des Moines, the NBC affiliate. When I met them at the TV studio, the Martins told me "The FBI told us not to talk to you!"

In a total reversal Sam Soda, began to contact the Des Moines Police telling them that Paul Bishop (my CIA contact) had been in Des Moines a short time before the Martin kidnapping and was somehow involved. Sam must have bent the ear of some influential people because shortly afterward a Federal Grand Jury Hearing was scheduled; Paul Bishop was subpoenaed to testify.

He returned one more time to Des Moines. Following the hearing, Paul took a taxi to my home. He had been questioned about Eugene Martin, what he was doing in Des Moines, who he talked to in Des Moines for over six hours. While he was sharing the details of the hearing; the phone rang a number of times. It was Sam Soda each time wanting to know if Paul Bishop was there. He became very agitated, when I told him Paul was not there. He claimed, he needed to talk with Paul and could not find him. We felt it best for Paul to change his travel plans, I made arrangements with friends for Paul to stay the night at their home. He flew back to Washington D.C. a couple of days later, under different name. I received two more phone calls from Paul in the following week that was to be the last time I saw or spoke with Paul. The phone number to call Paul at Langley Air Force Base was no longer working.

Shortly after that visit, Paul Bishop or Robert LaVeck vanished without a trace. What happened to Paul Bishop, we have never been able to discover. Paul used to call me "Mom." He was a young person in his twenties and I sometimes wonder, had he been used in some manner by the very element that took my son? Was he sent here to share with me the threads of truth, which would unfold later? It was years before the CIA was revealed as a part of this problem of missing children in our country and the world.

A reporter asked me to describe in a few words one time something positive about this experience, if there was such a thing. I said, " I have had the opportunity and privilege to meet so many fine people... together we have made a difference in this country. People, I would not have met otherwise and it is sad that it had to be at the expense of a child's life. I feel that all of what I have accomplished has been done in Johnny's name, so that his kidnapping did not happen without any progress in our country. I just hope in some way he is able to know we did everything possible to save him. If I had not fought hard to save him, I would not be able to now look at myself in the mirror or at his picture."

The first sound of the words still echo in my mind from the Police and FBI...."Mrs. Gosch, we have no crime...." My reply has always been "But I have no Son... Kidnapping is a Federal Crime!"

Johnny is not the only case in this country but we certainly worked against the odds to overcome and go on. If anything this was the biggest "do it yourself project had ever encountered." Most parents do not realize that much of the search for their child will be up to them. If they drop the ball so to speak... there goes their child's case.

Some in the country have called me a "nut or troublemaker" and have said, "I should just shut up and quit." Would they quit if it were their child missing? It is easy to judge when it hasn't happened to you. I have learned to live with all the elements that go with this tragedy...from the pain of losing a child in a violent crime to living in a fishbowl.

My entire world was shattered on the morning of September 5, 1982 and yet some how I received the energy, support and guidance to go on with my life, rising above the tragedy to accomplish many things, which will last for others.

KIDNAPPED

JOHN DAVID GOSCH

Taken 81/82 School Year

Composite Of Suspect

5'9'', 175 lbs., dark eyes, black eyebrows, older, early to mid 40's, black hair, combed back, full in back, black mustache, heavy beard or unshaven appearance, Latin appearance.

This man may be driving a two tone blue car, real dark top and light blue bottom -mid size - 79 to 81 model -clean inside and outside - no vinyl top -plush interio -Iowa plate.

DESCRIPTION: Age: 13 years old, D.O.B.: Nov. 12, 1969, Ht.: 5'7'' Wt.: 145 lbs. Hair: light brown, Eyes: blue, Complexion: medium Teeth: gaps between front teeth, Shoe Size: 9½-10, Marks/Scars: freckles, large birthmark upper left chest, horseshoe shaped scar on tongue, large lower lip. Stature: At 13 years old, John has the physical appearance of a boy 15 or older.

John David Gosch was last seen on Sunday, September 5, 1982 at approximately 6:06 A.M. He was believed to have been kidnapped when starting his paper route at 42nd and Marcourt Lane in West Des Moines, Iowa.

John was believed to have been wearing a white sweat shirt with the words KIM'S ACADEMY on the back of it along with black warm up pants and blue rubber thongs. Missing also with John is his yellow paperbag and wire cutters.

REWARD

A $90,000.00 REWARD has been offered for the safe return of John David Gosch in addition to a $10,000.00 REWARD for information leading to his whereabouts.

Anyone having information to John's whereabouts, please call: LOCAL F.B.I OFFICE or INVESTIGATIVE RESEARCH AGENCY, INC. (312) 745-1111 or John's parents JOHN and NOREEN GOSCH at (515) 225-7456.

Type of car in Gosch case

Below: One of the many "candy bar"
fund raisers ...

cole
Help Find Johnny
HELP
HOME
Candy Bars $1
Mints $1.50
Donations taken

Fund-raising

Search for Johnny Gosch continues

KIDNAPPED

JOHN DAVID GOSCH

ken 81/82 School Year

Composite Of Suspect

5'9", 175 lbs., dark eyes, black eyebrows, older, early to mid 40's, black hair, combed back, full in back, black mustache, heavy beard or unshaven appearance, Latin appearance.

This man may be driving a two tone blue car, real dark top and light blue bottom -mid size - 79 to 81 model -clean inside and outside - no vinyl top -plush interior -Iowa plate.

Sam Soda

"I think I was entitled to them"

Composite Of Suspect

5'9", 175 lbs., dark eyes, black eyebrows, older, early to mid 40's, black hair, combed back, full in back, black mustache, heavy beard or unshaven appearance, Latin appearance.

This man may be driving a two tone blue car, real dark top and light blue bottom -mid size - 79 to 81 model -clean inside and outside - no vinyl top -plush interior -Iowa plate.

This poster was sent anonyously to me and a number of others in Des Moines ... Shortly after Eugene Martin was kidnapped...1984

HAVE YOU SEEN EITHER OF THESE YOUNG MEN?

Both of these young men disappeared while delivering the Des Moines Sunday Register. John Gosch has been missing since Sept. 5, 1982. Eugene Martin disappeared on Aug. 12, 1984. If you have information concerning either boy call the Des Moines, Iowa, Police Department Hotline

COLLECT 515-246-9988.

John Gosch was 12 years old when he disappeared on Sept. 5, 1982, while delivering newspapers in West Des Moines, Iowa. He was described as 5 feet, 7 inches tall, weighing 140 pounds, with blue eyes and light brown hair.

Eugene Martin of Des Moines, Ia. is 13 years old and disappeared on Aug. 12, 1984. He is 5 feet tall, 105 pounds, thin, with dark brown hair, brown eyes and a dark complexion. He was wearing blue jeans, a gray midriff shirt with white stripes and red sleeves, and blue Trax tennis shoes with white diagonal stripes.

$94,000 REWARD

$25,000 offered by The Des Moines Register for information leading to the recovery of either of these missing persons.
(Additional reward money being offered by businesses, friends and relatives.)

Ken Wooden researched and wrote this guide as an outgrowth of his work as an investigative reporter for ABC News 20/20 and as the founder of the National Coalition for Children's Justice and the National Child Victim Computerized Network. The information is based on interviews with convicted child molesters and murderers—the experts.

Ken Wooden has authored three books which center on the injustices suffered by children. *Weeping in the Playtime of Others,* a best-seller, served as the basis for three "Sixty Minutes" segments. *The Children of Jonestown* is the culmination of his investigative work for *NBC News* and the *Chicago Sun-Times;* it garnered a Pulitzer Prize nomination. His third book, soon to be published, *Prey-Missing and Murdered Children,* is the result of five years of investigative work.

Wooden's articles and books have prompted Congressional inquiries and legislation dealing with interstate commerce of children, the child pornography industry, foster care reform and, most currently, the problem of missing and murdered children.

HAPPY DAYS
JOHNNY, ME AND NEPHEW

Survival.... A way of life for Noreen

I had the benefit of growing up in a home filled with love and being instilled with the "right stuff" from the beginning. I was the oldest of six children, growing up on a farm with my five brothers, we learned about the simple pleasures of life as well as the "work ethic". I never heard a harsh word spoken between my mother and father. They were the most loving and devoted couple/ parents I have ever seen to this day. When I was fifteen my father died of cancer. He suffered tremendously and was bed ridden for many months. During this time, we cared for him at home, while pulling together as a family to with the tremendous job of running the farm.

At my high school prom, a young man, who had just returned from the Air Force, a former graduate of our school, came just to see all the decorations in the gym that night. He came to the school with his younger brother and my younger brother, who were friends.. As they were sitting in the bleachers, he saw me on the dance floor with my date and asked his brother; "Who is that girl in the pink dress?" My brother replied "that is my sister, Noreen." . Later that night when he went home, he told his mother " I have just seen the girl I am going to marry". I am sure his mother was a little shocked to hear such a revelation.

I was graduating from high school at seventeen, it was only about a week later that Bob came to my home to see me and asked me for a date. I had never dated anyone that much older than myself.... He seemed nice and I was impressed by the fact that he was interested in me. We did start dating... within a year Bob asked me to marry him and gave me a diamond. All caught up in the whirlwind of planning a wedding, it seemed that time stood still and flew by all at the same time. Soon we were married and settled in our home.

The following year, I was expecting our first child. It was only a few months after she was born that Bob became ill, he went to the doctor and they ran some tests. Surgery was recommended.... The verdict came back cancer..... colon cancer. He was operated on at the University of Iowa Hospitals in Iowa City. It was 1963 and there was very little they could do other than surgery. Bob recuperated quickly and returned to work. I was both surprised but pleased a few months later to discover I was expecting our second child. Towards the end of my pregnancy, Bob returned to Iowa City Medical center for a check up. When he got home, he told me they discovered a reoccurrence of the cancer and he would have to go through more surgery.

I was terrified for him, our little family and me. Our second child was born with in a few weeks and then leaving both children with my mother, we went back to Iowa City for more surgery. The day of surgery, I was told by hospital staff that Bob would be in surgery and recovery for many hours; that it would do me good to take a break from the hospital and to come back later. I did as they suggested and went to visit my sister in law in a nearby town. While there I took a nap before going back to the hospital. I had a dream while resting, in my dream, *I was driving into the hospital parking lot and there was a parking space right as I turned the corner. (Extremely rare at that hospital) I went into the hospital, got on the elevator. When the doors opened, I was greeted by an orderly who said" Please come with me, Dr Crowley wants to see you right away". I followed him to a long narrow, room, with green walls and white furniture. Dr. Crowley walked in and took my hands and said " I am sorry but we had to close your husband back us, there is nothing we can do for him. He is full of cancer and will not live, much longer.*

I woke up with a start, telling my sister in law about the dream, she said " just take it easy, you have been under a great deal of stress, just had a new baby and haven't fully recuperated yourself yet". So I thanked her and headed back to the hospital. As I pulled into the parking lot.... *I saw the parking space right there (just as my dream), I took it, went into the hospital.... Got on the elevator... when the doors opened, there was the same orderly as in my dream, asking me to go with him to meet Dr. Crowley I followed him to a long, narrow room with green walls and white furniture.* I knew what was about to come. The doctor entered the room and took my hands and then told me *"I am sorry but we had to close your husband back up, there is nothing we can do for him.... he is full of cancer and will not live, much longer."*

I couldn't believe my ears and yet, I knew he was telling the truth. I had been given the information hours earlier to prepare me for this shock. I was alone, just nineteen and I didn't know what to do. Bob was still in recovery and I couldn't see him. I made a phone call to my sister in law; she had three young children at home and said her husband would come to the hospital.

Before he arrived, I was permitted to see Bob, as I walked towards his bed, I saw all the tubes he was hooked to but something looked strange, one tube was bright red. I pushed the button for the nurse and she came, I showed her what the tube looked like, she pushed me out of the way, yelled for help and told me my husband was bleeding to death. It was all too much for me and I fainted. When I woke up I was in a hospital bed, my husband was in the other bed in a private room, with my brother in law sitting on a chair. He had been told what took place. He had also donated blood for Bob as they were the same blood type.

Bob pulled through and was sent home, he did recover somewhat for a short time from the effects of the surgery.... And he didn't LOOK SICK.... That was the part that amazed everyone, he looked the picture of health and yet he was dying. The months went very quickly and he began to go down hill very rapidly .. It seems that once there was the surgery the cancer began to spread like wildfire.

The doctors told me he would never feel "good again" but they would do everything they could to make him comfortable. Soon Bob was unable to work, he was too weak. We were living in a home on acreage close to his parents and mine. The baby was not quite a year old and his sister only two and a half, when our world exploded one night. Each day was a struggle, a worry, I tried to keep the spirits up for Bob, who was worried about leaving his family. It had been very hot, on September 21st, 1965; we went to bed that night trying to get some sleep

During the night, I was awakened by what sounded like a freight train roaring overhead but yet right though our home, we did not live near a railroad track. Everything was black, except for occasional lightening out side with tremendous thunder. The whole house was shaking, I tried to get up to make my way to our sleeping children, down the hall in their room. When I got up, I was hit in the ribs and in the face with the dresser drawers which came flying out .... I blacked out, when I awakened, I was laying in the field next to our home, rain hitting me, I got up and had searing pain in my chest and face. I started digging though the rubble to locate my babies. I found my daughter, unconscious, laying face down in broken glass. I picked her up, just then she started to scream, I kept telling her I was there and everything would be okay...while I looked for my baby son. I pulled one of the doors up from the house and saw through the lightening, rafters from the ceiling in the house had pierced through the end of the baby crib and into the mattress like harpoons. I looked all over and couldn't find him. He came crawling out from under some rubble, he looked to be just fine, scared and crying but not injured.

I began to look around only to discover that large sections of the house had landed on both cars and the roof of each car was flattened. I don't know how we managed but we got into the one car with over half the roof flattened with no windshield and drove to Bob's parents home. We were lucky to be alive. We suspected and it was later confirmed that it had been a tornado. It destroyed our home and both cars. We all went to the hospital emergency room. Both of the kids checked out okay but Bob and I were injured. I had broken ribs and had spears of glass embedded in my face. I was fortunate I still had my eyesight. Bob in his weakened state was banged up badly after being tossed around in the storm, his condition only worsened after that storm.

Within days there were insurance adjusters to work with as our home was a total loss as well as both cars. They were very kind and did help us speed up the process. We continued to stay with Bob's parents until we had another home we could move to. Most all our belongings were either destroyed or blown away. The kids toys such as teddy bears, plastic toys all had to be thrown away because they were riddled with glass. Clothing and shoes had to be thrown away as the tremendous force of the wind drove the glass spears through the fibers of the clothing and the shoes. I had never seen such destruction in my life.

I got us moved into another home, Bob was so sick and weak, he laughed when he walked in carrying his box of pills/medication, saying that is all he had the strength to carry. Within a short time, his health had taken a turn for the worse. He was in so much pain. Both of the children were still so frightened from what they experienced in the storm they couldn't sleep at night. The days were exhausting but so were the nights, I rarely got more than three hours sleep. The doctor gave me Morphine. The visiting nurse taught me how to give the injections to Bob for pain. There was no money for us to place Bob in a hospital, as he waited for the cancer to take him. He also wanted to be near the children for as long as possible.

Bob made the statement; he was going to "live long enough to see his son walk". Approximately ten days later, the baby pulled himself up and walked from the coffee table to the couch… that night, I had to call for an ambulance. Bob lapsed into a coma and was taken to the hospital, where he died a few hours later. We had only been married three years, three months and two days.

Bob died about thirty days after the tornado destroyed our home, took everything we had. I was just 22 years old, with two children and had to learn how to start completely from scratch.

I felt so grateful that my children were alive, they could have been killed in that terrible storm. I knew we would make it.... we had each other. I watched as everything I owned was destroyed and taken from me, I had to borrow a dress for his funeral, as I no clothing to wear, it had all been destroyed or blown away but realized at that young age how important, precious and fragile "LIFE" is.....

I learned how to be a survivor, from this experience. I learned how to start over with nothing. I viewed life much differently than any of my family or friends after the twin disasters.... destruction and death. Little did I know. ...these terrible events would prepare me for what was to lie ahead in the years to come.

By this time I was faced with raising two children, no husband and no job. I thought it couldn't get any worse but it did. One day shortly after Bob's funeral, a little man knocked on my door. He identified himself as being with our insurance company. I let him in.... he sat down and began to explain that "unfortunately because Bob died just four days short of the waiting period for cancer patients, that I would not receive any of the insurance benefit." He was sorry but also said "it is too bad you couldn't have kept him a life a little longer." Gads, the things people will say sometimes.

I realized that I had to go to "Plan B", unfortunately I didn't have one yet. I needed a job, so I began to scour the ads for job opportunities. I found one, applied and got the job, it was in an insurance agency. My mother agreed to watch the children, while I worked. I really liked my new job and it was all working out.

Two months after my husbands death, I was in the bedroom of our home, I heard someone knocking at the door. Before I could get there my little daughter of two and a half, opened the door, thinking it was her Grandfather. Instead, it was a stalker, a man was standing in my living room, I had no idea who he was. He told me he saw my name in the obituaries... and thought we ought to date. I quickly told him, I was very busy that night but could I have his phone number and I would call him later. I wanted him out of the house and away from my children without incident. He was satisfied with that and left. Within a few minutes, a friend of ours stopped... I immediately told of the "unusual visitor" who had just left. He immediately called his friend who was the Sheriff, giving him the mans name. We learned this man had preyed on "young widows" for years and was well known to the police and Sheriff's department. He was warned to stay away from me.

I didn't realize this man had been stalking/watching me for weeks.

He would follow me to work, sit across the street and watch my office, where I went to lunch, etc. Following the Sheriff warning him to leave me alone, he continued to position himself across the street and follow me to the restaurant at lunchtime. He did not approach me after that but it took a few more weeks before he lost interest.

That winter I had everything from frozen pipes in my home to power outages. I was really looking forward to spring. When the beautiful weather arrived, so did tornado season again in Iowa. One day in June, the sky turned black, the wind started to blow, I knew another tornado was coming, I piled my children and dog into the car and droved to my mothers. I pulled into their driveway, lawn chairs, tree branches and debris was blowing everywhere. I stopped the car, put it in park, just then my Stepfather John came running out of the house and yelled "Get the hell out of there". I shoved the car into drive, stepped on the gas, just in time to miss a building blowing over on that spot. This was one night I would have been safer at home.

Nearly a year had passed since Bob's death. My dear friend Peggy, called me saying "why don't you come to dinner next week and this time leave the kids with a sitter." At first I was offended, why didn't she want me to bring the kids? She knew I didn't go anywhere without them. (I was terrified to let them out of my sight after almost losing them in the tornado). But I reluctantly agreed to go to dinner. When I arrived at her house, I was wearing jeans, a shirt....Looking very casual. When Peggy opened the door she shrieked "my God, look at you, we have a man coming here to meet you tonight... get in this house and hurry we have to do you over before he gets here." I said "what you set up a blind date.... Why did you do that... I am not ready to date". She replied "I knew you would say that so I didn't tell you ahead of time."

She took me into her room, opened her closet and said, "pick out an outfit... I will do your hair, (she was a hair dresser)" I hurriedly selected a different outfit, she did my hair and within minutes the door bell rang. There stood her husband, Jim and a friend of his named John Gosch. They had served in the Marine Corp. together and this was my "blind date".

We all managed to get through a nice dinner, the food was good and conversation kept light. After a few hours, I said I needed to get home, so I prepared to go to my car. John asked to walk me to the car. Once we got outside, he asked me for a date the following evening. I looked at him and said "look, I am a widow with two young children, if that scares you... you had better pass". He smiled and said " I already know you are a widow with two small children, Jim and Peg told me. Now would you like to go to dinner with me tomorrow night?" I accepted and that is how my life with John Gosch began.

We dated for over a year and were married in 1967, Johnny was born in 1969. We had built a new home, John had a good job and we had a wonderful little family. I thought we had a happy life but I learned many years later, John had been unfaithful to me multiple numbers of times, while he traveled the country as a salesman.

Only weeks before Johnny's kidnapping, John Gosch phoned me from North Carolina, while on a business trip. He told me he was going to commit suicide. Obviously he did not but from then on things were never the same.... (see John Gosch chapter)

Living with the stress and grief of Johnny's kidnapping, coupled with the increasingly bizarre behavior of my husband. My weight dropped from 115 to 89 pounds. I looked like a walking skeleton. I had to keep going, no matter what.... Johnny's life depended upon it. There was not time to sleep, eat or rest. I was holding down my job, the speaking engagements, fund raisers, public appearances for the coming years. I sometimes wonder where I received the strength to go on. I know the support and prayers of many people had to help but there was also a little voice inside of me telling me.... "don't sit on a pity pot.... Keep moving... you are not the victim... your son is! "

THE SPEAKING TOUR

During the eighteen years Johnny has been missing, I gave over seven hundred speeches to all types of groups, churches, schools, big companies, police departments, open to the public, and private groups. The name of my program was "In Defense of Children", it was an awareness program which gave the "profile of a pedophile". The program explained to both parent and child information to recognize those in our society who would molest a child.

All of the programs were rewarding but there are two, which stand out in my mind.

One night, I was traveling very late from a speaking engagement in Boone, Iowa to Minneapolis. I had to be in Minneapolis early the next morning, I got as far as Mason City and decided to take a break. I pulled in at Hardee's, it was about eleven p.m. The place was packed; it must have been after a game, as the place had loads of kids. I went to the ladies room before ordering food, as I went in there were two teen-age girls putting on their lipstick in the mirror. They glanced at me and went back to primping. I was using the "facilities" when I heard them leave the restroom… just moments later I heard "HEY EVERYONE, GUESS WHO IS IN ON THE TOILET…. NOREEN GOSCH!" I thought … "Oh God, what am I going to do now… there is no back door". I waited a few minutes, collected myself and walked out with my head held high and said "hello folks, how is the food here?"

Sometimes people stare, point or take the time to talk to me. It is something that I had to become accustomed to "living in a fishbowl" due to the enormous press coverage Johnny's case received. I knew it came with the territory but at times it has been uncomfortable. I had given my word to Ken Wooden, I would continue to speak out publically, as an advocate for the protection of children.

I know the work I have done has made a difference, many people have contacted me thanking me for the information I have shared from all the stages. It helped to prevent kidnappings and some sexual abuses to children. Due to my programs the parents and children knew what to look for and what to do, if the child found themselves in a bad situation. Hearing that made it all worth it.

In Garner Iowa, there was a full auditorium, nearly a 1,000 people. The crowd was very receptive to the information; I was talking about the need to "hug your child every day". As I talked I noticed a little boy with big brown eyes in the second row watching every move I made. He had a chocolate bar he was munching; he was about four years old.

After the program, a crowd gathered around me to talk, and this little boy made his way through the crowd to me and wrapped his arms around my legs, he looked up at me and wanted me to pick him up. When I reached down and scooped him up had chocolate on his face…. He threw his arms around me and said, "he knew I didn't have my little boy at home any more to hug me", I was covered with chocolate and didn't care. I just smiled through my tears…. Realizing that this little boy heard what I said and understood … Johnny was gone from our home, let me know I was reaching the little ones. God often speaks through the mouths of babes.

“OWLS” vs. “TIGERS”

HELP FIND JOHNNY GOSCH

Benefit Basketball Battle

See the

WHO “OWLS”
take on the
VALLEY “TIGERS”
STAFF

Valley High School Fieldhouse
Tuesday, January 4
7:30 P.M.

Johnny Gosch did not spend his 13th birthday at home with his family; he didn't get to celebrate Christmas at home, either....because early on the morning of Sunday, September 5, 1982, as he began deliveries on his newspaper route, he was abducted by some person or persons unknown. No trace of him has been found since that time.

HELP FIND JOHNNY GOSCH, INC....
...is an organization formed by relatives, friends and concerned citizens to raise funds to pay for the services of private detectives working on this case. None of the money raised goes to the family; it is all used by the HELP FIND JOHNNY GOSCH, INC. organization to finance the search for Johnny. Everyone involved is grateful for the support of people in the area - but more is needed to help "Bring Johnny Home"

ADMISSION: ONLY $1.00!!!!!!

3-10-85

Gosch filmed for Japanese documentary

A Japanese film crew paid a visit to the John and Noreen Gosch home last weekend to film part of a television documentary they are making entitled "America's Missing Children." Seated on the left of the couch is Noreen Gosch, mother of missing newspaper boy Johnny Gosch, being interviewed by interpreter Chris Carniglia of California and Kinio Kurita of Nippon A-V Productions, Tokyo, Japan. In the foreground is the Japanese photographer photographing the interview for the television production. Photo by Mary McLain.

by Mary McLain

A Japanese film crew was in the West Des Moines area last weekend filming the Gosch and Martin families who have each had a teenager kidnapped while delivering newspapers.

The two men are from Nippon A-V Productions in Tokyo, Japan and are accompanied by an interpreter from California since neither of the men speak English.

The television documentary will be entitled "America's Missing Children" and while in the area this weekend, the film crew interviewed and photographed both the Gosch and Martin families in their homes. They had earlier filmed a family on the east coast who also has a missing child and before returning to Japan will film a west coast family whose child is missing.

Through the interpreter, Kunio Kurita said Japan does not have the same problem with kidnapped children as does the United States. *In Japan few children are kidnapped and those that are come from wealthy families where they are taken for ransom. They do have problem cases of run away children and children taken in divorce custody cases, as does the United States.*

TIMES-REPUBLICAN, Marshalltown, Iowa, Saturday, April 7, 1984

Central Iowans Turn Out To Hear Gosch Story

By ROSE KODET
(T-R Correspondent)

CONRAD — Approximately 400 men, women and children crowded into the BCL High School's 300-seat auditorium Thursday night to hear Noreen Gosch tell about the Sept. 5, 1982, abduction of her son Johnny and explain to both parents and children how they could avoid a similar experience.

The Gosches have been speaking to capacity crowds throughout the Central Iowa area in the past few weeks. Earlier this week, she spoke in Marshalltown and has made other appearances in Hubbard, Zearing, Ackley and Alden.

Future appearances in the area include Nevada on Monday, Ames on April 16 and in New Providence on April 27.

Gosch stated that the type of person who abducts and/or molests children is "not the dirty old man on the corner with a bag of candy. This is 1984 and it's much more sophisticated than that."

With television camera lights blazing and all eyes glued on Gosch, she recounted what she and her

Noreen speaking to a group in Conrad, Iowa

USA TODAY

10/14/88

NOREEN GOSCH
Guest columnist

'Forget our son? How dare they?'

WEST DES MOINES, Ia. — Johnny Gosch got up as usual at 5:30 a.m. on Sept. 5, 1982, to deliver his Sunday newspapers. On his way to the paper drop, a man in a car stopped him to ask directions.

Minutes later, a second man on foot approached Johnny from out of the shadows and walked him down the block. A short while later a car door was heard to slam, and a car was seen running a stop sign.

By 6:05 a.m. Johnny was gone. My husand and I were awakened by people who had not received their newspapers. It was then our entire world shattered. Our son was gone — kidnapped. Four witnesses reported the events to us and the police. We found Johnny's wagon full of newspapers on a corner two blocks from our home.

We immediately called the police. Our son was 12 years old. It was the policy of the police department to fill out a report and then wait up to 72 hours to see if the missing child was a runaway. We begged the police chief to act and to bring in extra assistance. He refused, saying he wanted to solve the case himself.

The chief had been investigated six months earlier for negligence and alcoholism on the job. We knew what we were up against. We contacted the media, did interviews, distributed Johnny's picture, posted a reward and called surrounding police departments to be sure they knew about Johnny — only to find that they knew nothing. Our police department had not told them.

We then hired a private investigator. To pay for it we sold candy bars and had garage sales and benefit dances. They say money isn't everything, but it becomes everything when your child is kidnapped.

Noreen Gosch is a secretary, yoga teacher and mother of three.

In this country we have foundations to save baby seals, whales and battleships. But there's no help for missing children and their parents. It is the burden of the parents alone.

Johnny had been entered into the computer as "missing." We struggled for a year to have him reclassified as "abducted" — a vital difference, since it changes the way police pursue leads. Not until another newsboy in our area vanished under the same circumstances was our demand finally granted.

> "We have foundations to save baby seals ... But there's no help for missing children"

But it should have been automatic. We should not have had to beg. The police were negligent. We filed a complaint with the U.S. Justice Department, only to be informed that due to the age of our son, the way police respond is a judgment call; they presume the child is a runaway.

Our son is a victim of a very sick crime. Yet one law enforcement officer had the gall to say to us, "Why don't you have another baby and forget about this whole thing?"

Forget about our son? Forget about finding him? How dare they. He may be alive. For many weeks the police told us, "We have no crime." But we still have no son.

Help for missing children. Illinois State Representative Lane Evans (left), Illinois Congressman Paul Simon (center) and Noreen Gosch of West Des Moines, mother of missing newspaper boy Johnny Gosch, held a press conference last week to announce a new legislative effort to help find missing and abducted children.

Noreen speaks to over 2,000 people in Alden, Iowa

Noreen Gosch — In Defense of Children

A crowd estimated at over 1,000 people — part of which is shown in the photo above — packed into the Nevada Junior High Fieldhouse Monday night to hear Noreen Gosch, mother of missing paperboy Johnny Gosch, give a program entitled "In Defense of Children." Gosch told of efforts to strengthen laws concerning missing children, and also gave tips on ways to prevent child abductions. The photo at right shows Gosch talking to interested parents after the program concluded. The Nevada chapters of Beta Sigma Phi sponsored the program. Journal photos by Brad Williams

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY ON THE SCENE - 1983

From being a working mother, I was suddenly immersed into the world of James Bond. Before Johnny was kidnapped, I 'd never heard the word **pedophile**, now I use the word many times a day. A year after my son's disappearance, I was a **CIA ASSET.**

Within six months of the kidnapping, a young man calling himself Paul Bishop contacted me by phone. He began to tell me that an international kidnapping/pornography ring had taken my son. I asked, "How do you know that to be true, can you prove it!" He replied, " I work for a government agency which is investigating pedophile organizations. And there are indicators in your case that suggests your son was taken by such an organization. We feel he is being used for pornography and prostitution." All clues were pointing to the kidnapping being organized and not that of a "lone criminal". I found it difficult to believe and accept that my son could have been targeted by such an organization. It was only in later years I was to learn the possible reason Johnny was selected.

I didn't know there was an organization like North American Man Boy Love Association or the Rene' Guyeon Society. The first targets little boys, the second little girls. Now most Americans realize that highly connected businessmen, lawyers, judges, politicians and police are involved in pedophile activities. We have only to look at newspapers in our local area to find teachers, clergy, scout leaders, coaches, arrested and charged with child molestation. What we do not see is the **important politician,** judges etc. charged with similar crimes. These **important individuals** seem to be above the law. Children who make claims against important people are either dismissed as liars or imprisoned for perjury.

We maintained telephone communication for months, in April of 1983; Paul made the trip to Des Moines. He called me when he arrived and asked that I meet him at Shakey's Pizza Parlor on Hickman Road at noon. Shakey's was an extremely popular restaurant at the time. I arrived at eleven forty five and found only two cars in the parking lot. Strange, I thought to myself.... This lot should have been filled.

As I stepped inside I was as nervous as hell, there sat one young man in a booth, he rose to shake my hand and said "I am Paul Bishop", he stood about six foot three, dark brown eyes, medium brown hair, well built, very handsome face.
I would never have thought that this man would one day call me "Mom". He could not have been more than twenty-three years of age at the time.

We sat down; he lifted to the table a large very worn, brown leather briefcase. I noticed a three ring binder type of book all enclosed by a zipper. To the left of the booth, stood a man, approximately forty years old, looking as though he were standing "at attention" in some type of military pose with his hands clasped behind his back. He didn't speak, nor acknowledge me at all. It felt strained and almost eerie at first because, we were the only people in the establishment. I wondered what I walked into! Who had the clout to take over a popular restaurant and turn away all its regular noontime customers? Why hadn't they chosen a more quiet or isolated setting? They must be very powerful people and wanted me to recognize that fact.

Paul began talking about my son, telling me an international kidnapping/pornography ring took Johnny and that my son was very much alive. He claimed Johnny was being used in pornography, prostitution and perversion. I kept asking him how he knew this, just as I did many times over the months of phone communication, prior to his visit to Des Moines.

It was not until then that Paul Bishop revealed himself as being with the CIA, he claimed he worked as an **"Agency Asset"**, he opened his wallet, producing a government identification card with his photo but it did not say CIA. I looked at it and said "anyone could have one of those made". I told him I had never heard of an Agency Asset. He then began to explain that they are put into situations to gather information, affect certain types of action and they are chosen carefully. He told me he was also known as Robert LaVeck. I remarked that he looked so young and how could he be in that kind of position. He then explained, Assets are people who will blend in to achieve a certain goal. So the Agency will use many people in different walks of life. Today we know the CIA has used clergy, doctors, journalists, and housewives as **Agency Assets.** I didn't realize that I was about to become one of those assets.

As I sat there listening to all of this, my mind was spinning, so many thoughts were going through my head, how could I trust this person. Who is he really and what was he doing in Des Moines Iowa, talking about my son's case? I just sat there half numb for a long time, trying to gather as much information so I could ask intelligent questions.

He stated, " We wanted your help." I asked, "how can I help you? What does the CIA want with me?" He replied, "We need one stable parent in this situation to act, when directed to speak out to the public as to what happened to your son".

I doubted who he was, I could not grasp why they would want me. To convince me, he carefully unzipped the three ring binder laying on the table. Slowly he rotated it and pushed it across the table to me. It was a complete dossier of my entire family, including those who have died. Noticeably absent was any reference to Johnny's father.... John Gosch. He allowed me to read through these pages, I was amazed and shocked that anyone would or could amass so much information on any one individual and here were pages of it involving my whole family. There were things I had not thought of in twenty years, which were detailed in these documents. I was not only shocked but frightened!

I realized this young man was definitely part of an powerful organization, which has the ability to gather extremely detailed intelligence data on ordinary people. So I listened intently to what he was proposing. He explained that I would be asked to supply information, give frequent press conferences to keep Johnny's story alive, so they could continue to pursue the investigation (supposedly?) He asked to travel, giving presentations about the case and sharing information from private investigative reports. How ironic the local police and the FBI were not interested but the CIA was. He claimed the CIA was in the process of investigating a very large organization, responsible for kidnapping children in our country and internationally (See The Finders). I agreed to assist but wasn't sure what I was agreeing to at that point. However this seemed to be the only game in town.

Paul came to my neighborhood and asked questions of many people in the area, writing everything down in a notebook. After spending a number of days, Paul had concluded his initial assessment and prepared to leave Des Moines. He told me that he had a code name of "Firefox", I was given a phone number to reach him. I later learned the number was at Langley Air Force Base, CIA Headquarters.

For months we continued to be in daily contact by phone, I would telephone him when there would be developments on the case and to report information supplied by our private investigators. Other times, he would call me with directions to release certain information to the media.

All of the information was regarding leads being investigated on the case. Many times I wondered, what is this all for? What purpose is it to share information with the media? He would explain that there was a need to keep Johnny's case alive in the media, otherwise people would forget about it and the case would be buried forever.

Paul began to give me names of people he suspected as being involved in the kidnapping. Some were unfamiliar to me but then he gave names of people living right here in Des Moines— some of them extremely wealthy members of this community. Hearing of local involvement didn't surprise me, I asked him what we were going to do about it, the police were still not willing to explore any aspects of the case. He said he would make another trip to Des Moines in a couple months.

I followed all that I was required to do, many times not really understanding the need. However, each time there was a burst of publicity, more leads would come to us. Everything from "sightings of Johnny" to information about possible suspects. As they would come pouring in, I would in turn give them to our private investigator. Time and money were very necessary to properly follow up on each bit of information. I exhausted myself trying to find ways to raise funds. Parents of a missing child cannot afford the luxury of not checking out everything, one never knows when a piece of information might be the piece of the puzzle which would lead to solving the case.

I had been kept very busy doing speaking engagements, people all over the country wanted to hear the Johnny Gosch Story. My audiences ranged from several hundred people to over three thousand. I traveled every evening of the week, telling the story and sharing safety tips with parents and children. When I began this there was not awareness that children were not safe in their own front yard. But today despite the tremendous awareness of kidnapping children continue to disappear.

Sam Soda, local private investigator called me claiming he had valuable information for me and wanted to meet as soon as possible. He said it concerned " a second kidnapping in Des Moines." I made arrangements to meet him at his office on June 13, 1984. I brought a tape recorder along and placed it on the table.

During this meeting, he shared information that there would be a "second kidnapping in Des Moines". He claimed this came from an ***informant.*** The kidnapping was to occur on the second weekend in August, on the South Side of Des Moines and that it would be another paper carrier. I thought it was strange that he would be telling me this and not the police. When I questioned him on this point, he claimed that I should be the one to take the information to the Des Moines Police, as it would be their jurisdiction. I thanked him for the information and left. This was to begin an association with Mr. Soda, which lasted a number of years. Years later, Paul Bonacci who participated in the kidnapping of Johnny identified Sam Soda as the man who brought pictures of Johnny to the kidnappers, in a motel room in West Des Moines, on September 4, 1982, the night before the kidnapping.

I did go to the Des Moines Police Dept., asking if I could play the tape of the meeting with Mr. Soda for them. The person at the desk would not allow me to talk to a Detective, he kept saying if they "felt my information was of importance they would call me". Repeatedly, I told him that I had a tape recording and in a couple of months there would be another paperboy kidnapped. They treated me as though I had lost my mind and they didn't want to be bothered with me.

When I left the Police Dept., I decided to at least talk to the TV station program managers. I did contact each of them and relayed the information, telling them I also had a tape recording of this conversation. ***I was shocked to find out that even though they listened to me, no one wanted to listen to the tape.*** I was very uneasy about the whole situation and felt that Mr. Soda had given me important information. I also called Frank Santiago, Des Moines Register reporter who had been assigned to Johnny's story since the beginning. He was the only one who listened to the tape. He verified my story when a police detective lied about my ever bringing the tape in to the police.

I received a call from Karen Burnes, a producer with ABC's 20/20 in July of 1984, asking to present Johnny's story. Plans were made with Karen Burnes for Johnny's Story by 20/20 to be filmed on the second weekend in August.

Paul Bishop returnedto Des Moines, July 31, 1984. It was at this time, he gave me the name of the man who was the "spotter"….in Johnny's kidnapping. Paul explained that a spotter is the person who secures a photo of a victim prior to a kidnapping.

When I heard the name, I said "Paul, you need to listen to this tape recording". He listened…I then told him of my attempts to share the information with the police department and media. Paul was not shocked at what he heard on the tape and paid a visit to Sam Soda, questioning him concerning the source of the information on a second kidnapping. Sam was not too cooperative, became annoyed with Bishop, asking him to leave his office.

Before Paul left he created a very intricate map of the crime scene, indicating time sequence of each aspect of the kidnapping. Paul dated and initialed the map using GPB (George Paul Bishop)

After Paul flew back to Washington, I began to hear from Sam Soda on a regular basis. He wanted to be the investigator for Johnny's case. He asked for a bank account to be set up for him to draw upon for a salary. I explained to him, we already had a private investigator and could not afford another. He continued to attempt to be involved in any way he could on the case. I think that this suggests how intricate are the machinations of those involved in the kidnapping and exploitation of children like Johnny.

I had been working with Senator Grassley from Iowa, he had been particularly helpful in facilitating with the FBI. Many times Paul Bishop would call me from Senator Grassley's office, when finished speaking with me he would hand the phone to one of Grassley's aides who I was familiar with. She informed me there was a Senate Hearing scheduled in August 1984 and I would be invited to testify. A short time later I received my invitation to testify in Washington D.C. before Senator Arlan Specter's Hearing on Organized Crime and its Relationship to Kidnapping.

I was instructed by Senator Grassley's office to Federal Express a copy of my testimony and to carry a copy on the plane when I flew to Washington D.C. In testifying before Congress or State Legislature, you are required to prepare a written presentation of your testimony. Paul Bishop met the plane and escorted me to the hotel. I checked in and then he took me on a tour of Washington, followed by showing me some of the blighted places in D.C. where children as young as ten years old, hang out on the streets late at night. Today it is not safe even on the White House Mall at night.

Later that evening, we spent time going over every word of my testimony. I wanted to be sure that when I presented my information the following morning that it was clear to the committee, "an Organized Pedophile Group" took my son. Again and again I have met with denial on the part of individuals and organizations that any such groups could exist in this country. Paul not only approved of what I had written but was to back me up during the hearing. For my protection two men were posted outside of my hotel room door all night.

Paul Bishop, accompanied by two young men arrived at the hotel the next morning to drive me to the Capitol for the Hearing. As I entered the room, I noted there were reporters everywhere, television, radio, newspaper and magazine. I recognized Ken Lanning of the FBI, I walked towards him, saying, "Hello, I am Noreen Gosch", extending my hand to shake his. He pulled back and said, "We know who you are". With that statement there was a definite chill in the air. It was as though the FBI resented me being asked to testify.

Paul sat beside me at the table as I testified to my knowledge of the slave auctions in the U.S. During my testimony, Senator Specter asked a number of questions about my son's kidnapping and the investigation. I explained the FBI refused to enter the case, because they wanted me to prove my son's life was in danger, the lack of response from the local authorities and the need for private investigators.

There were books made available by the FBI showing children in a mail order type catalog, and offering them for sale. How much more needed to be proven about the existence of organizations national and international that were buying and selling children. This book was spiral bound about seventy five to a hundred black and white pages, with six or seven children's pictures on a page. Below each child's picture was offered details about the child, hair and eye color, weight etc. The question that must be asked is that with this information in the hands of the FBI and the Senate, clearly indicating that an organization capable of not only photographing children around the U.S. but offering them for sale and kidnapping to order, why is this still unknown to the majority of Americans. I have made repeated attempts to obtain copies of this catalog which would prove beyond a shadow of a doubt the existence of an organization or organizations that do buy and sell children.

Senator Specter asked Paul Bishop of his relationship to the case and to me and did he know this to be true. Paul indicated he was an investigator and that every word of my testimony was accurate. At no time did Paul ever identify himself as CIA during the hearing and afterward during the interviews with the Washington Press. He withdrew from the view of the cameras. All attempts on my part to obtain photos from the hearing were unsuccessful.

Following the hearing, I requested from one of the staff members a copy of Mr. Lannings testimony and the pedophile material that was displayed on the table, including the catalog. She asked, " Mrs. Gosch would like a copy of the material presented by Mr. Lanning" she was told by an FBI Agent " This is the property of the FBI and it was acquired from a pedophiles lair, it cannot be given to anyone".

I was appaled with all this material in the hands of the FBI, presented by Ken Lanning to Senator Specters committee and examined by the National media, that there is ever any question today in the year 2000, about the existence of national and international kidnap organizations. Children are a commodity used in TV commercials and magazine ads in a sexually provocatively manner. Is it any wonder that children are no longer safe in our schools because the pedophiles have managed to become their teachers, coaches, and mentoring programs.

It has now been sixteen years since Senator Arlen Specter has been given these materials. To my knowledge, no major report was given to

Congress about the growing and influential pedophiles operating throughout the United States. What happened to the new media who immediately surrounded me following the hearing anxious for more details about Johnny? They had the same access to that catalog that I did. Why hasn't it become a major national story? I testified that slave auctions were being held in the U.S. the catalog clearly confirmed my testimony.

I flew immediately back to Des Moines to meet with the crew from ABC 20/20. The following day Karen Burnes and the film crew from 20/20 arrived in town. It was a Saturday and the second weekend in August. They filmed locations around Des Moines and West Des Moines, including the site where Johnny was kidnapped. Later when we arrived back at our home. I decided to share the information regarding a second kidnapping, supposed to occur the following day. I played the tape recording for Karen and shared how I had been to the Des Moines Police Dept., hoping they would at least patrol the paper drop areas on the South Side of Des Moines. I also told her that I had given the information to the News Directors at the local TV stations. She showed great interest in the information.

We finished filming for the day, the crew went to the airport and flew back to New York. Karen announced she was staying over another night.... wanting to see if the "prediction of the second kidnapping" would take place.

The shock of the phone ringing early the next morning with a reporter at the local ABC TV station, telling me "the second kidnapping had just taken place" was like reliving Johnny's kidnapping.

He kept saying "It happened just as you said it would Mrs. Gosch". He also informed me the police were calling it a kidnapping immediately and the FBI were bringing in agents from Quantico, VA to assist in the investigation and search.

The young boy kidnapped was Eugene Martin, a newspaper carrier, preparing to deliver his papers on the South Side of Des Moines. He had only had his paper route three weeks.

In Johnny's case, the FBI refused to enter the case, the reason they verbally gave me in my home was that "they had no crime and it was my responsibility to prove my son's life was in danger". Why now with Eugene Martin's kidnapping under identical circumstances was the FBI coming forward with a bevy of FBI agents.

Based on this phone call alone, I called Karen at the hotel and told her the "second kidnapping had just happened", exactly as Sam Soda had predicted on June 13, 1984. She immediately contacting her network and arranging for a film crew to come back to Des Moines, when the crew arrived, they went to the Des Moines police department.

The police department was in a state of confusion; Karen asked the police chief....Are you bringing in FBI Agents for this case. They didn't for Johnny Gosch? Are you going to use canine search teams? They didn't for Johnny Gosch. Will you do an aerial search? They wouldn't for Johnny Gosch.

The police chief had no comment about the Johnny Gosch case and stated the department would do everything in their power to solve the Martin kidnapping. The police went all out using FBI, SWAT Teams, Canine Searches, and aerial searches but like Johnny, Eugene Martin was probably quickly taken out of the immediate search area. This case was a duplicate of Johnny's kidnapping.

Karen decided to stay Des Moines for several days, interviewing and gathering information on this latest tragedy. The story about Eugene Martin and Johnny appeared immediately on ABC news, a tremendous advantage for any victim of kidnapping.

After the Martin kidnapping, I expected the Des Moines Police Dept, to contact me and want to discuss the information I received from Sam Soda. Despite the fact that my information proved valid the police never asked to listen to the tape.

Instead I was warned not to talk about it to the press and certainly not the Martin family. It was difficult for me to understand how they had the opportunity to prevent the second kidnapping, due to the advanced information and chose to ignore it and me. Instead of listening to the information I tried to give them, I was treated like a "nut" and dismissed. If the newspaper drop points been patrolled Eugene Martin might not have been taken. If the local media had taken action, the police might have been forced to take action. It seems that where the kidnapping of children is concerned neither media or police show much interest.

I can understand how at first someone might think, the information wasn't accurate but when there is a possibility of a childs life at stake. I feel it calls for investigation.I felt terrible that this kidnapping had taken place ... I tried to get the attention of the people here but no one would listen. I took the responsibility and went to the authorities despite the fact I was treated like a nut.

To this day, there are some who refuse to admit that I brought the information. The parties I shared it with... know I am telling the truth and played the tape for them. As for the rest, may God forgive them for ignoring this and allowing another child to be taken from our community.

A few days later, NBC Today Show contacted me, asking if I could get in touch with the Martins, as they had been unsuccessful. It seems the FBI had more or less set up a command post in their home and calls were being screened.

The Today show wanted to interview both the Martins and us the following day. I called the Martin home, an FBI Agent answered the phone, I told him I was Don's sister and wanted to speak to him. The agent handed the phone to Don, Eugene's father. I said "Don, this is not your sister... it is Noreen Gosch.....The Today Show wants us tomorrow.... can you do it." We then made the plans to do the Today show from the local WHO-TV studio in Des Moines, the NBC affiliate.

Sam Soda, in a total reversal began to contact the Des Moines Police telling them that Paul Bishop (my CIA contact) had been in Des Moines a short time before the Martin kidnapping and was somehow involved.

Sam must have bent the ear of some influential people because shortly after ward a Federal Grand Jury Hearing was scheduled and Paul Bishop was subpoenaed to testify. He returned one last time to Des Moines.

Paul was detained at the hearing for hours. Following the hearing Paul took a taxi to my home. While he was sharing the details of the hearing; the phone rang a number of times. It was Sam Soda each time wanting to know if Paul Bishop was there. He became very angry and agitated, when I told him Paul was not there. He claimed he was looking for him and could not find him. We felt it best for Paul to change his travel plans. I made arrangements with friends for Paul to stay the night at their home. He flew back to Washington D.C. a couple of days later. That was last time I saw or spoke with Paul.

Shortly after that visit, Paul Bishop or Robert LaVeck vanished without a trace. Suddenly, the phone number at Langley was no longer working. We have never been able to discover what happened to Paul Bishop.

For some reason Paul always called me "Mom." He was a young person in his twenties and I sometimes wonder, if he had been one of the boys we now know as "lost". Had he been used in some manner by the very element that took my son? Was he sent here to share with me the threads of truth, which would unfold later? Paul gave me the first pieces to this puzzle. He knew things about this case which were revealed and documented years later in 1992. Below is the last communication I had with Paul Bishop, in a letter dated August 3,1985.

PAUL'S FINAL LETTER TO ME

Dear Mom,

Although almost all of our previous communications have occurred over the phone, I felt that just this once maybe a letter would be more appropriate. Even though the active search and related investigations into Johnny's abduction have ground to a standstill., a spark of hope remains burning within me, that one day we can have an answer. Quite frankly and painfully, my personal opinion on Johnny's ultimate fate is that he will or has been murdered. If there truly is a greater power, then I earnestly pray for his intervention and that Johnny is spared

The most difficult task for me personally, has been, to be able to search within for the courage, fortitude and love to be emotionally strong, when you had your periods of crisis, grief, hurt and turmoil. This task was especially tough, since I wanted to convey to you, that I personally cared about you, your other son and daughter, even John without appearing to be one of the jackals examining your personal life under a microscope.

In a final review, you and I with much help from many caring individuals, won many a victory over a system of law enforcement, legal, political and public opinion that just doesn't work. Johnny may be a martyr, but we won. The war goes on, but thanks to you personally, great strides forward have been made.

Never let the bastards get to you and hope that the cup of coffee you pitched at the system never lands. Instead, let it lubricate the wheels and cogs so that future generations can be safer from the horrors of what occurred to your son and family.

My only regret throughout this nightmare is creating an enemy of your husband. I believe that all conditions aside, had he listened to me and received my active personal support...much of the ugly shadows and family disintegration might have been averted. Based on the sketchy information and data, I still think John was molested as a boy, a traumatic experience from which he never fully recovered. When the full impact and realization *of his son's situation hit him, John lost himself there for a period of time based on observations, he may be still processing. However, as I have stated, things will never be the same again.*

What has always amazed me is the amount of inner strength you have shown during this tragedy, of course, you truly are not of this world & plane of existence. Remember, your family has so much love, care and support to offer you, utilize them when necessary to get you through future dark times. And should you and John be able to re-establish your marriage based on your mutually changed personalities, egos, and talents, draw upon each other's resevoirs.

If when you were growing up you dreamed of a life of adventure, needless to say, you got it. The cost though was way too high.

Please sit down someday with your family, if you will, and explain to them the in's and out's of my involvement, so that they have a better understanding of our relationship.

In the meanwhile, my thoughts and prayers go with you.

Paul

JOHNNY IN 1984-1985...
SKETCH SUPPLIED BY PAUL BISHOP

OPPOSITE PAGE:
MAP OF THE KIDNAP/CRIME SCENE
PREPARED BY: G. PAUL BISHOP
(SEE INITIALS)

Ⓐ
5:54AM
ASHWORTH
PAPERDROP
Ⓑ
6:01AM
JOHNNY'S PROBABLE DIRECTION OF TRAVEL
E W N S
CHURCH
(HEDGE)
SHRUBS & BUSHES
Ⓒ
6:03AM
SPEED LIMIT 25 SIGN
BIRGE RESIDENCE
SKIP 3 HOUSES
RENTAL PROPERTY
4 HOUSES
42ND ST
48TH ST
(NOT TO SCALE)
STOP SIGN
Ⓔ
6:05AM
MARCOURT LA
OR NORTH
WAEON
STREETLIGHTS
SMITH RESIDENCE

CAR STOPS, DRIVER REACHES ACROSS, ASKS JOHNNY FOR DIRECTIONS, JOHNNY TURNS TO FRIENDS & STATES "THAT GUY IS WEIRD, I'M DOING MY PAPERS"

AT POINT Ⓒ 2ND SUBJECT LEAVES SHRUBS & FOLLOWS JOHNNY INDICATED BY BLUE LINE UP & AROUND CORNER.

AT POINT Ⓔ PJ SMITH SEES CAR ROUND CORNER

6:03→04AM TWO PAPERKIDS NOTICE

SCENE 82SEPT5

GAB 84JUL31

JOHN GOSCH...JOHNNY'S FATHER

I was married to Johnny's father for twenty-six years... In all that time most people think they would know everything about their partner in life. That wasn't the case with... John, he was very silent about a lot of things in his growing up years

John grew up on a farm in Northwest Iowa; he has thirteen brothers and sisters. In school, John was football jock, the whole nine yards.... He was suddenly whisked off to a Seminary to complete his senior year of school. The Crosier Fathers Seminary in Hastings, Nebraska for his senior year.

John claimed to have been thrown out of the seminary somewhere near the end of the senior year... for what I have no clue...but showed up at home one night at dinner time. His sister told me ... "Mom and Dad were very upset to see him come home." Approximately a week later he was off into the Marine corp.

After he returned from the Marine Corp in 1966, I met him through some friends.. Nearly a year had passed since the death of my first husband. I was alone raising two small children.

My dear friend Peggy called me saying " why don't you come to dinner next week and this time leave the kids with a sitter." At first I was offended, why didn't she want me to bring the kids? She knew I didn't go anywhere without them. But I reluctantly agreed to go to dinner. When I arrived at her house, I was wearing jeans, a shirt....Looking very casual. When Peggy opened the door.....
she shrieked "my God, look at you, we have a man coming here to meet you tonight... get in this house and hurry we have to do you over before

he gets here." I said "WHAT… you set up a blind date? Why did you do that? I am not ready to date". She replied "I knew you would say that so …I didn't tell you ahead of time."

She took me into her room, opened her closet and said, "Pick an outfit… I will do your hair, (she was a hair dresser)". I hurriedly selected a different outfit, she did my hair and within minutes the doorbell rang. Her husband, Jim answered the door, there stood a friend of his named John Gosch. They had served in the Marine Corp. together and this was my "blind date".

We all managed to get through a nice dinner; the food was good and conversation kept light. After a few hours, I said I needed to get home, so I prepared to go to my car. John asked to walk me to the car. Once we got outside, he asked me for a date the following evening. I looked at him and said, "look, I am a widow with two young children, if that scares you… you had better pass". He smiled and said, " I already know you are a widow with two small children, Jim and Peg told me. Now would you like to go to dinner with me tomorrow night?" I accepted and this began my life with John Gosch.

John and I dated about a year then got married. We built a home in Eldridge, Iowa. Most things in our life seemed very normal, just like other people down the block in anywhere USA. We were thrilled when we found out a year later that I was expecting a baby. Everyone was adjusting to our new life together.

Johnny was born on November 12, 1969; he was such a good little guy, just like the other kids were as infants. It was a time of happiness in our lives. Within two years, a job transfer came through for John and we moved our family to Albert Lea, Minnesota. It was a beautiful little town and we loved our home there. We lived close to the lake and it was a very peaceful time in our lives. John's job required some travel, so we adjusted to the new schedule.

Several years later, the company John worked for transferred us to Des Moines. It was a big adjustment for all of the kids, they had started to form close friendships in Minnesota. But everyone adjusted, liked their new schools and found new friends. For years life was pretty calm and normal for the Gosch's. Nothing earth shattering took place. Not until early in 1982…

BEFORE THE KIDNAPPING

A great many strange things began to happen in the months prior to Johnny's kidnapping. John, my husband at that time had never been really a close father to the children, but his treatment of them became not only unfair but also cruel many times. He seemed to have a hatred, which was boiling over into our family life, and he would take it out on the kids. He began to treat my older son, with unkindness and ridicule daily. He was a good kid and had not done anything to deserve this treatment. The same was true with our daughter and Johnny.

June of 1982, John wanted to take our son's Joe and John on a fishing trip, to Lake of the Ozarks in Missouri. He explained, "it might be his last or only opportunity to do so", I thought it was a strange remark. They did go on the trip and it was uneventful. Although after returning from the trip the boys said his depression was really becoming apparent, as though he is operating with another personality, I couldn't understand what was happening to him.

In July of 1982, John left on a business trip to North Carolina, he called me from Raleigh, N.C., one evening and said "I am going to kill myself, I can no longer live with it", then hung up the phone. I was home with the kids in West Des Moines. I had no way to reach him; whenever he traveled he did not give me any kind of itinerary or a way to reach him in the event of an emergency. I telephoned the Raleigh N.C., police department and told them of what had just happened, that he would be staying close to the airport, as he had reservations going out the next morning to return home and that he was driving a rental car. The police located him in a motel and made him phone home to let me know he was fine. When he returned home, he gave no explanation of his words or actions. But rather became very agitated and angry when I asked questions.

August 1982, John insisted on taking Johnny with him on a business trip, they went to Omaha, NE. One of the places they toured was Offutt Air Force Base, which was a highlight for Johnny, as he loved planes. He was so excited as he talked about it when he returned home. It was strange; as Johnny described their trip he could only remember parts of the days he was gone with his father. I attributed it to a young boy only remembering the highlights, which were the airplanes.

Following this business trip, we began to receive hang up phone calls every night, usually about one a.m. or two a.m. John always answered the phone; it was located on his nightstand.

One evening in August, John was late coming home from work, when he arrived, he began to rant and rave that "he was dying and had a terminal illness", he named the doctor who had told him. I called the doctor the following day only to be told that John had not even been in for an appointment, he was not even a patient. When I asked him about it, he denied ever telling me that he was dying. He had said this in front of all three children, they looked at each other and at me ... all of us were puzzled. Again, I couldn’t understand what was going on or producing this unusual behavior.

The end of August came and the kids started school Johnny was enrolled at Indian Hills Junior H.S. It would be his first year there. The first week of school was a short week, as Labor Day Weekend was the first holiday. It was Friday night, the first football game of the season. John, Johnny and I went to the Valley High School Football game. During the game, Johnny asked if he could go to the concession stand to get something to drink. I said “okay” but to come back to the seat afterwards. I waited for a while and he didn’t come back; so I went down to investigate. He was under the bleachers talking to a man in a police uniform. I called him to come back and he did so. After the game was over, we were walking out of the stadium and the same police officer was standing there, Johnny waved to him and then said to me “Mom, I think I would like to be a policeman when I grow up”. We then went home.

The following day, Saturday, Johnny went to a movie in the afternoon with his friend Mark. That evening, my daughter and her boyfriend came from college and I fixed a nice dinner for all. It was so nice to have all of them home at the same time for dinner. After they ate, the kids all were laughing and having such a good time visiting. Johnny jumped up and said, “I need to get to bed”. He wanted to get up early the next morning, to do his paper route. Johnny had a paper route for the Des Moines Register on Sundays and also delivered the evening paper on weeknights. He had been doing the route for a year and had a perfect service award for each month. A record he was proud of… it meant that he had always been on time with deliveries since he took over the route.

The night before the kidnapping, our whole family was home for dinner, which I now call **“The Last Supper”,** we had a wonderful time together. Johnny got up from the table, looked at the clock and said he had to get to bed. He had to get up early the following morning to do his paper route. Before he left the kitchen Johnny said, “Dad, why don’t you stay home tomorrow, I can do the route alone”! John said, “Well I guess it would be okay!” It worried me, as it was so dark at that hour of the morning they had to start deliveries. So I said, “no, John, our agreement is that you would go with him on Sunday mornings. John finally said, “No, Johnny, wake me in the morning and we will do the route together”.

Johnny gave everyone a hug and went upstairs to bed. A few moments later, he was back in the kitchen standing next to me as I was cleaning up after dinner. He gave me a hug again and said “Mom, I will always love you…. You are the best!” He went to the stairs, looked at me, smiled and then went up to bed. Little did I know at that moment… It would be the last time; I would see my son for nearly fifteen years.

We received a phone call at 1:30 a.m., every Sunday morning from the beginning of August, until September 5th, the morning, Johnny was kidnapped. My husband, John would pick up the phone and say "You've got the wrong number", and hang up. On the morning of the kidnapping, Sept. 5, 1982, at 1:35 am, the phone rang, he answered, I woke up to hear him saying "alright...alright...okay, " then he hung up. I questioned him about the call and he just kept insisting it was a wrong number. He seemed nervous at the time but it was late and I drifted back to sleep, not realizing the worst was about to happen.

Johnny had a paper route for the Des Moines Register on Sundays and weeknights. He had been doing the route for a year and had a perfect service award for each month. A record he was proud of... it meant that he had always been on time with deliveries and since he took over the route.

The next morning our world was blown apart by the phone ringing ... neighbors were complaining they hadn't received their newspapers. I leaped out of bed, ran down to Johnny's room, he was gone. I assumed he was out working on the route and was running late. I thought it strange John was still asleep in bed, as he had told Johnny he would go with him that morning. John got up and said he would go help Johnny. Moments later he returned to the house, his face was ashen... yelling, " call the police, Johnny is gone, his wagon is full of papers at the corner, something has happened to him.

It is said that everyone reacts differently to any situation. I believe that but what I experienced following Johnny's kidnapping.... I was not prepared for at all. Of course, the kidnapping was a tragic blow to all of us that knew and loved Johnny. Personalities are changed by the events that happen in our lives.

Following the kidnapping, there was unbelievable turmoil and chaos at our home. The phone was ringing every ten minutes, our home was transformed into a command post for the searches which were taking place daily. So I guess, I didn't interpret the subtle changes taking place as "red flags". We were all stressed to the max and to just function each day became an "art form".

John began to take issue and argue with every decision, which had to be made concerning the case. It was almost as if he was trying to place obstacles before me and I didn't understand why. Stress, pain and worry seemed the logical answer at first.

Within ten days after the kidnapping, we both had to return to our jobs, taking turns manning the phones at home so that it would be answered 24 hours a day. Life had to return to some kind of organization. John's job involved travel over several states. So much of the time, he was on the road. When I would ask him for an itinerary... phone numbers, motels where he would stay... he told me "no". I certainly didn't understand this at all. We had a kidnapped child and I was left to handle every decision.

I was not able to reach him when things happened and decisions had to be made. Unfortunately, that also placed me before the public doing a "solo act". Soon the rumors and normal talk took place in the city...most of it attacking me for demanding answers on the case. There should have been a more aggressive investigation from day one. Instead, the West Des Moines Police classified Johnny as a "runaway" for several months. I tried and tried to get John to stand with me and go to the police to make changes. He simply would not. Instead he would say he had to go out of town. I then took over and did what had to be done.

I used to hear things like.... Poor John, his son was kidnapped but Noreen is such a "bitch". This used to hurt me tremendously; I couldn't understand why people would make such judgments when I was trying to fight for my son's life.

John began to change very rapidly, he would get up in the middle of the night and prowl... the neighborhood... walking, walking, walking. One day, I received a call from a neighbor telling me to "keep my husband at home". The neighbor went on to say "they had been away from home the previous evening, leaving their seventeen-year-old daughter home alone. John stopped at their home, ringing the doorbell around one a.m. The girl answered the door, he asked if he could come in. She let him in ... feeling sorry for him, thinking he just needed to talk. Once inside the door, John began telling her how much he needed some hugs and kisses. The girl became very upset, irate and told him to leave or she would call her parents. He took off and walked home". My neighbor was furious but said in view of the tragic loss they would not press any charges against him and cause me any further pain. I talked to John about this when he returned home the next day. His comment was "the girl is a slut'. This girls isn't, wasn't and never will be a "slut". She is a wonderful person and I could understand how the mother felt. She had been a friend of mine but that quickly ended the friendship and within three months the family moved from the neighborhood.

After this incident, John was very quiet for a couple days. One morning, I was on my way to work, I had this terrible feeling come over me and knew I needed to go back home. I made a "U-turn" in the middle of Woodland Ave. and drove home as quickly as possible. I walked in through the garage door being very quiet. When I opened the door to the kitchen ... John was seated at the kitchen table loading a pistol. I walked in and asked him if he was "going hunting". He replied, "I can't live with this any longer, the stress is too great, I am going to kill myself today". I thought carefully because I felt he meant it and was going to do it. (I knew if I could make him angry he would momentarily take his focus off the gun) I looked at him and said ***"Well for the love of God don't shoot yourself in the house and leave the mess for me to clean us...go somewhere else and do it".*** He said, "you are sure mean, telling me to do it somewhere else". He put the gun down and stood up, walking away from the table. I made a dive for the gun and got it.... Asking him to sit down while I called someone, to talk to him. He surprisingly did as I asked. I called the police department and asked if there was someone, who could come over to assist me by talking to him. They did send a detective. Later the detective told me "John needs counseling".

Later after things had calmed down, I told him in order to survive this we should go to trauma counseling together. He refused, saying he didn't need it. I did seek out a trauma counselor to talk over the things, which were happening. I had one child missing and two other children to think about. One of us had to remain stable and I guess that was me.

Everything and everyone increasingly agitated John. He was cruel to our other children, telling them, he wished the kidnapper had chosen them instead of Johnny. He was horrible to the private investigators, who were working very hard to give us the answers we so desperately needed. Again, I attributed it to stress. **WRONG!**

There was the obvious need to raise money to pay investigators. It was suggested we sell "Worlds Finest Candy Bars" and I should accept speaking engagements. John threw a fit about the candy bars, although it is a legitimate fundraiser. When I would leave home to travel to speech, he would throw things at me, yelling.... Calling me filthy names. I would think, why wouldn't he help instead of trying to destroy every avenue of progress. I again thought stress was causing him to change so drastically but something else was emerging. John's entire personality would switch.... much like I witnessed years later with Paul Bonacci. Paul suffered from MPD (Multiple Personality Disorder).

Nearly eighteen months had passed, I was still working my job, teaching my Yoga classes, and accepting every speaking engagement offered to me. It was August of 1984, approximately a week after the Eugene Martin kidnapping. We were invited to attend a dinner. We were staying at a motel in Davenport, Iowa, not far from my family home. Things were going well but then someone asked how the case was going and if we had any other children. I looked over at John, he was suddenly playing with his food, looking all around, like a five year old. His whole facial expression had changed again.

I knew we had to get out of there and quick before there was an incident. Each time I had seen that expression on John's face previously, he had caused a scene in our home. I didn't want one in this restaurant. We got outside, were in the car and driving out of the parking lot. Suddenly, he doubled up his fist and began hitting me in the face. I tried to jump from the car to get help, he threw the automatic locks on the car and sped away from the parking lot. Over the course of the next two hours, I thought I was going to die. He drove me around for two hours, stopping the car to beat on me, then speeding up again and driving like a wild man. Finally, I could see a familiar area, I quickly pushed the automatic locks forward, unlocking the doors and jumped from the moving car, rolling into a ditch filled with mud and water. I laid there in the darkness until I heard his car leave the area.

My foot was hurting badly, as I climbed up on the street from the ditch, I had lost one of my shoes. As I was standing alone by the side of the road, a dark colored van pulled up, the door opened and a man took a snapshot of me, using a flash on his camera. They too sped away.

I could see the motel in the distance so I began walking, by now my foot was hurting so badly I knew it had to be broken. When I got to the motel, I walked into the lobby, the desk clerk looked at me strangely, I asked him for the key to my room. He handed it to me; I hobbled down the hall, going into my room. Once inside, I looked in the mirror, I was covered with mud, blood, my face was swollen, my jaw wouldn't come together, and it appeared to be dislocated. I looked down at my foot it was swollen twice it's size and turning blue. I knew I needed some medical attention.

I called my brother, telling him that John had snapped, beat me and I was hurt. He said he would be right over. He arrived with my sister in law and Sam Raley, Scott Country Sheriff's Deputy (now retired). They began asking me lots of questions; within a few minutes there was a knock on the door. Three more of my brothers were standing there, (I have a big family… nine brothers and two sisters), they all came to help me. It was decided, I needed medical attention but they didn't want to take me to the emergency room due to publicity. The reporters would be on it immediately. They contacted a doctor in the area and he agreed to come to the motel to treat my injuries.

The detective stayed for a long time asking questions, made some phone calls to other law enforcement. They caught up with John driving around in the area. I kept telling everyone there that John seemed like he had "snapped into a different personality without warning and he began beating on me". I didn't understand it. (please see the Sheriff's Deputy report later in this chapter)

It was August 1984, just after the kidnapping of Eugene Martin. The publicity was raging about Eugene Martin and Johnny's case. I decided not to add any fuel to it by pressing charges against John. Instead, I contacted my attorney, he talked to John telling him, he would have to move out of the house and leave me alone for a time or I would press charges. He did take up residence for a time at a nearby motel. He could only use the house while I was gone. I had my attorney draw up divorce papers, he did so but also warned me that this was the worst possible time to proceed with such an action. That I should try to wait till the publicity died down, thinking it would be better later. My attorney gave the advice he thought was best but it was the wrong choice for me.... I should have filed for divorce at that time.

John was eventually allowed to return to the house and live. He traveled most of the time, away most of the week. He would only come home to repack his suitcase. Most people thought I was divorced years before I actually filed, because they always saw me alone.

My nine brothers also took him aside and told him to "never hurt their sister again or there would be dire consequences." From that time on John ignored life, our marriage and me. There was no life together. I realized in 1984 the marriage was over.

John became very secretive and made many trips to Lincoln and Omaha Nebraska, spending a lot of time there. Here again, no phone numbers or itinerary was ever furnished to me. I had no way to reach him when he traveled if there was an emergency or anything urgent on Johnny's case.

I was working many hours, still on the speaking circuit, so I tried not to notice his absence. I felt it was probably better in the long run. It wasn't long before, I would get phone calls from men in town, saying, "Keep your husband away from my girlfriend or wife". I received many of them. John had his own life separate and apart from mine.

Johnny's case had come to a very quiet period, not too many leads coming in, my speaking schedule was still very active. Network TV shows continued to invite me to go on and tell Johnny's story. I was doing everything I could to keep the story alive.

I was at work in July of 1991, when a friend called me to say "there is a young man who has confessed to kidnapping Johnny", it is all over the news. I had known about Bonacci for only about a week. I had been told to keep it quiet by Private Investigator Roy Stephens from Omaha, Nebraska. So I was surprised it was all over the news. All the TV stations were reporting it... The FBI came marching through the door of my office to question me. I told them I didn't have much more information than they did and they should check with Mr. Bonacci's attorney, John

DeCamp, whom I had never met.

It was upsetting to have it released to the media in this way and the FBI charging into my office. I was anxious to talk to John when he got home from work. He didn't come home that night. Finally around five a.m. he came walking in the door. When I asked, "Where were you all night"? He replied, " It is none of your business." I asked if he had heard the news about Paul Bonacci? He said " Hell yes, I knew about Bonacci... for over two years and didn't tell you"! This was a shock, I had no idea he had been keeping all of this information from me or WHY. Why would a man, a father keep something so important from the mother of their son? I had a thousand questions, which were not being answered. Not by John anyway! I knew in time I would find the answers and that became my focus.

The press went crazy with the news of Bonacci, some believed him, some thought he was a nut. I didn't know what to think because I had never met him. It was several months later, when I was able to go to the prison to interview him myself. I contacted WHO TV and asked them to go along and record it all on film, so there would be a record of anything Bonacci told me.

I asked John to go with me to the prison....HE REFUSED, SAYING HE WAS TOO BUSY! At the time I thought this most odd, strange and it disappointed me...this was about our son.

All the publicity was seen and heard nationally, within a few weeks a call came from America's Most Wanted. They wanted to do Johnny's story and include all the information about Paul Bonacci.

In 1992, America's Most Wanted filmed Johnny's story, this unleashed a great deal of publicity, the case seemed more active than ever before. The hundreds of calls, which were generated, brought us many good leads and information.

There was a very strange outcome of one of the leads, involving John Gosch. The lead was about a man near Sioux City, Iowa, which Paul Bonacci had identified as "Charlie" and a being part of the kidnapping. It seemed Charlie owned the house on a farm, where they took Johnny after he was kidnapped. It was there he was molested repeatedly on film. Charlie's house was a "safe house" so to speak, a "way station" for the kidnapped children. Before they were sold off to their "pedophile buyer/ owners". Many kids had been brought there over the years. Who would suspect in a small town, on a farm?

I worked with the Country Attorney in that part of the state. Surveillance was set up to watch this man. The County Attorney felt they had enough evidence to arrest Charlie. He told me the day they were to make the arrest. During conversation in our home, I told John about the call from the County Attorney and the date for the arrest. I told no one else.

On the day scheduled for the arrest, the County Attorney called me, he was "livid", he was screaming over the phone, "why would your husband deliberately sabotage 10 months of police surveillance work?" I had no answer for him. I asked what he was talking about. He reported " the officers and detectives were in place ready to move into make the arrest, when John drove up, went to the front door, knocked....Charlie answered the door, John said "I am Johnny Gosch's father, I want to talk to you" Discussion followed between John and the man. John then went inside of Charlie's mobile home he kept on the property. Apparently the police had a listening device because they reported to me the conversation between John and Charlie. This was the only warning the Charlie needed and the cover of the investigation was "blown". After John left his home, Charlie packed a bag and took off in his truck for weeks.

I couldn't blame the County Attorney,he had a right to be angry. I was angry too. Why would the father of a kidnapped son, jeopardize, sabotage the only possible arrest we had the opportunity to make in years on this case? At that point in time, it made no sense to me. Needless to say, the County Attorney washed his hands of it and stopped all investigation. Who could blame him on this one? He had been so very kind to me through the whole thing.

At that point, I knew I could no longer stay married to a man, who would deliberately sabotage the investigation. Nothing made sense about the behavior that John was exhibiting. It seemed he wanted to stop the investigation at any cost. I began making my plans to file for divorce.

In 1993, I filed for divorce; never dreaming it would take so long or be so disruptive. The decision to leave was one I thought about for a long time. It is never easy to end a long relationship, partly because of shared memories and living in a routine of life, fear of the unknown. But our life together had deteriorated to the point that it was not a marriage. I could no longer overlook the secrecy, infidelities, beating and finally the sabotage of Johnny's case. I guess that was the last straw for me. None of it made any sense until a few years later.

The divorce was not final until 1995; I continued to work and struggle with Johnny's case, doing it alone as I had for so many years prior, I was just doing it from a different residence. The search and investigation went much slower due to the change in income. I worked extra jobs when ever possible in addition to my regular daytime job in order to have the money to continue the search for Johnny.

I was subjected to more than normal harassment during and following the divorce from John. For a man who didn't want to be a part of the marriage, I couldn't understand why he didn't just "let it and me go". My divorce attorney told me he had never seen anyone try "to destroy another human being with such vengeance in all his years as an attorney." That made me feel great… but he was right. It was during the divorce, all my video tapes and many records on Johnny's case were taken by John out of spite.

Johnny's case had gone for another 10 months without any solid leads of information. I prayed one night that I would be able to know one way or the other if my son was alive or dead. If he was alive, I would find the energy and the money to continue, if he was dead, I wanted to know.

I was invited to go to California to the Leeza Gibbons show, I told them I didn't think I could make the trip this time due to my heavy work schedule, and it was almost Christmas time. They pleaded with me to come back on the show because of the tremendous response there had been when I was on two months earlier. So I agreed. During that show, Leeza asked me to give a special message to Johnny. I looked at the camera and said "Johnny, I know you are alive, contact me, I will help you. I still live in West Des Moines in an apartment. I no longer live in our old house, I am divorced from your father"!

The Leeza Show was about well-known psychics; Dorothy Allison and Cheri Mancuso who work on kidnap cases with police departments. While I was on stage, they were able to give some very accurate predictions about the case. Both ladies were very talented and extremely kind in the way they shared information. Things, which were about to be discovered. Dorothy Allison asked to see me in the dressing room privately. After the show, I met with her and she reported to me "To believe a young man who had confessed in the case, because he was telling the truth and it would later be proven in court. She also warned me to be very careful, because there was a woman "impersonating me" making public appearances. She then told me … Johnny is alive and will appear at your door when you least expect it"!

I flew home after the show, taking the late flight out of California, thinking about the experience, wondering if Johnny heard my message. I accepted what the psychics told me on this show but had my doubts about the "imposter". Little did I know what was ahead for me.

I remember the night as though it were yesterday. I had just come home from a family reunion and unpacked the car; it was March 18, 1997. I had gone to sleep fairly early that night but was awakened by a persistent knocking at the door. When I went to the door and looked out the security glass, I saw him…. it was Johnny. I asked who it was and he answered, "it is me Mom, it is Johnny." At first I thought this…isn't real but as I looked through the glass, I knew it was my son. I opened the door; he came in and gave me a big hug. Johnny told me he saw me on the "Leeza Show" and knew he could come to me and I would help him. (Please see the detailed account of Johnny's visit in "Why Johnny Can't Come Home)

Life changed drastically after Johnny's visit home. I had to find a way to help him bring out this story and at the same time protect him. You will see as you progress in the book the legal steps I took to protect my son and myself.

Within months, I did some more network TV shows. One of them was Inside Edition, they did a fine story and this led to ABC 20/20 calling me to do another update of the story. My long time friend Karen Burnes, a producer for 20/20 was the one to do the show.

After meetings with her in New York, we decided on a film schedule and dates to begin in November of 1997. The ABC crew arrived in Des Moines to begin filming. One of the things they wanted on film was a meeting with John DeCamp, Bonacci's attorney and me. I had never met John DeCamp.

Karen, the producer, the film crew, George and I all met at John DeCamp's office in Lincoln, Nebraska. As we walked in, John DeCamp took my hand and said "Noreen, it is so good to see you again"! I looked him rather puzzled and said, " I have never been here before, I have never met you." Silence fell like a rock.... Everyone looked at one another not knowing what to say. Then everyone looked at me like I had lost my mind.

DeCamp said "well sure you have been here, with your husband, John in 1989, we went out to the prison together to see Paul Bonacci". I repeated again, that I had never been there. He finally called in his assistant and office manger, Jan, saying to her "Jan, didn't John Gosch come here in 1989 and introduce his wife to us, then we went to the prison?" Jan said "yes you sure did but it wasn't this woman (as she pointed towards me)". Needless to say we were all dumfounded. None of us knew what to do or say.

Jan, Decamp's assistant, immediately went to get records they had of all phone calls which came in she kept them by year.... She looked through them and found many entries of a woman also telephoned asking for records on Bonacci, saying it was Noreen Gosch.

Decamp and Jan also remembered John Gosch giving them a phone number in Des Moines for them to use but they were instructed to "NEVER CALL THE GOSCH HOME AND DISTURB NOREEN".

This was just the beginning of the unraveling of yet another part of the mystery of Johnny's kidnapping. Why would John Gosch have an imposter … posing as me? Why would he introduce her as me, take her to the prison, to speeches in Colorado and numerous other public appearances? These were questions none of us could answer.

Reverend Morrow of Lincoln, Nebraska and part of the Nebraska Leadership Foundation did the same thing when introduced to me. He shook my hand saying it "was good to see me again". I had to explain to him I had never met him before.

In a conversation by phone with Dr. Judienne Denson Gerber concerning Bonacci, I said to her " I hope one day we can meet in person". She responded, "Noreen, we did meet in 1989 in Nebraska, you were there with your husband many times. You were in court during the Bonacci hearings years ago". I then had to explain to her that there had been an imposter. She was as shocked as I was when it was discovered.

I was so afraid to meet anyone new, because I thought they would tell me they had met me before. To date there are twenty-five people of importance on Johnny's case and the Franklin Investigation, who all dealt with the "other Noreen Gosch… thinking it was me".

Early on a Sunday morning, I received a phone call from a woman in Omaha Nebraska, saying, " Did you know you have a double"? There had been an article in the Omaha World Herald that morning about Johnny's case and it had my picture. This was my stroke of luck, the woman knew the name of this woman but did not have any idea she was impersonating me.

Once she told me the name of the woman, I began investigating, I found out she had been a private investigator for a short time. I telephoned her former boss and gathered some more information. Another coincidence (or was it) , this woman knew and had worked with a man, John Gosch had secured to interview Paul Bonacci concerning his information about Johnny.

I kept hearing she looked like me from so many people. John DeCamp suggested I call the Secretary of State's office, a friend of John's, and explain the situation. I did… the man was so patient on the phone, he put me in touch with the Private Detective department, where I related the whole story once again. That man told me "this is your lucky day, we keep photographs of everyone who has ever applied for or gotten a license". I will search for it in our archives. If I find it …. I will send it.

In about a week, in the mail came a package containing the photo. Yep…you guessed it! She did look like me. Her hair was styled very similar to the way I wore mine in 1989 ….she looked enough like me to pass for me.

I kept hearing reports about the woman appearing in Colorado giving a speech with John … posing as me. I did a little more digging and eventually found someone who had taken a photo of them together. I am not releasing this woman's name at this point, as it might be a very important at later date, if I decide to take legal action. I am placing the pictures in this section of the book.

It was brought to my attention that John had telephoned ABC, Karen Burnes assistant, and told her not to telephone me any longer because I wasn't able to take the stress. Nothing was farther from the truth, it appeared he wanted to prevent me from discussing the case with the media.

As this all unfolded, I remembered the predictions of the psychic, Dorothy Allison on the Leeza Show, telling me "someone has been impersonating you during this case." Dorothy was right about many things but most certainly about the impersonator.

Other than the absurdity of this whole situation the questions should be asked: Why would anyone impersonate me? What possible reason could there be? What benefit to anyone to have this imposter?

I have not seen John Gosch since the divorce was final... We had attended a friends wedding. He came over to me and said, " I wish I could be more like you". I said, "Why would you want to be like me, you were so mean to me". He replied " You aren't bitter and hateful to people. I know it hurt you when Johnny was taken but you didn't treat other people badly because of it. I did and have destroyed every relationship I ever had". I said to him... " It isn't too late for you to get counseling ... you can still have a life."

In this chapter, it was important to relate certain facts surrounding the case, John and our life together. I have no feelings of bitterness towards him or anyone else. Elements within this chapter are very important to this case. I have spent nearly twenty years of my life putting the pieces together on this case. It is time for it to come out. Johnny deserves that much consideration.

May 9, 1999

To Whom It May Concern:

My name is Sam L. Raley, I live at 948 Cimaron Drive 52804, Davenport, Iowa. I am a friend of Ron Hesse of davenport, Iowa, the brother of Noreen Gosch. The following is the events of August 17, 1984.

At about 7:45 p.m. Ron Hesse called me at my home and stated the following: Ron's Sister Noreen Gosch had just called him from a motel and was crying and wanted Ron to come right away. She stated that she was at the Ramada Inn on Brady St. in Davenport. Ron knowing I was a law enforcement officer called and asked me to go with him. I asked Ron if his sister had called the police and he said she had. I then said, I would go with him.

Ron picked me up at about 8:00 p.m. and we drove to the motel. At the motel, this is what we found. We went into Noreen's room and she was crying and in a mess, the right side of her face was marked, her right eye was turning black. She had finger bruises on her arms and neck. Her face was bloody, hair messed up. She had blood all over her clothes and many other marks on her body. There was a girl who worked at the motel there with her, her name was not known to me.

Ron asked her who had done this and she stated her husband, John Gosch. By the time we got there, as far as I know, he had left the area. She stated that " he began beating her in the car on the interstate". When he pulled off the interstate, she jumped from the car and landed in the ditch ... then walked back to the Ramada Inn on Brady Street in Davenport and called her brother, Ron.

At approximately 9:00 p.m. the Davenport police arrived. Officer Mike Wyatt Davenport P.D. stated to us they had been busy and therefore there was a delay in responding to the call. The officer took her statement. We left the motel shortly after the Davenport PD arrived, as two other brothers arrived to help her.

Sam L. Raley

Sam L. Raley
Scott County Sheriff Deputy
Retired officer

Will the "REAL" Noreen Gosch
please stand up....

KIDNAPPED

JOHN DAVID GOSCH

Taken 81/82 School Year

Fair Photo '82

Composite Of Suspect

5'9", 175 lbs., dark eyes, black eyebrows, older, early to mid 40's, black hair, combed back, full in back, black mustache, heavy beard or unshaven appearance, Latin appearance.

This man may be driving a two tone blue car, real dark top and light blue bottom -mid size - 79 to 81 model -clean inside and outside - no vinyl top -plush interior -Iowa plate.

DESCRIPTION: Age: 13 years old, D.O.B.: Nov. 12, 1969, Ht.: 5'7" Wt.: 145 lbs. Hair: light brown, Eyes: blue, Complexion: medium Teeth: gaps between front teeth, Shoe Size: 9½-10, Marks/Scars: freckles, large birthmark upper left chest, horseshoe shaped scar on tongue, large lower lip. Stature: At 13 years old, John has the physical appearance of a boy 15 or older.

JOHNNY DOESN'T LIVE HERE ANYMORE

November 12, 1985, it is my son Johnny's sixteenth birthday. My thoughts of him is stronger on special days. Where is he? What is happening to him? He always loved the excitement of birthdays in the family, especially his own. He would have requested his favorite "German Chocolate Cake... triple layer of course". And always those "relighting candles", that produce so much smoke, it would set off the smoke detector in the hallway.

Just like any young boy today, he would want his drivers license and begin to use the family car just as his friends were doing. Each passing birthday is another reminder of how much of his family's life is missing. What kind of pain and suffering is he going through at the hands of his kidnappers? Would he even know it is his birthday today? I would buy a little gift and card, putting it in his room; in hopes that one-day he would be home with us again.

We kept his room just as he left it with his electronic game sat on the night stand, his bulletin board had all of the perfect service awards from each month he had the paper route. He had thirteen awards in all. On the other side of the room sat all of the models of rockets that he so carefully built. Each time he would earn a little extra money, he would ask to be driven to the hobby shop at the mall, where he would purchase more "rocket supplies". He was very interested in the space program and would buy anything connected to it. With the change he would receive at the store, he would run upstairs to the floral shop and buy a single rose for me. They would wrap it for him and he would have it all tucked behind his back, out of sight, when I would meet him to drive home. Then he would whip it out with a big smile on his face and say, " this is for you, Mom".

From the time Johnny was five years old he would tell everyone that he wanted to be an "architect". People would smile because he was barely able to pronounce it properly and most little children that age didn't know what an architect was or did. He continued with that dream, asking for a drafting table and supplies for Christmas this coming year.

Passing by Johnny's room had both a comforting and painful effect upon me. At times it would be so painful I would have to keep the door closed. Yet at other times, I would go in there and sit quietly praying for inspiration to keep the story alive, not knowing what to do next to try and save his life. I never for one moment believed that Johnny was dead. I felt his presence.

At first we didn't allow anyone in Johnny's room, thinking the police department would want to dust for fingerprints. However, the police chief, Orval Cooney said that they would not be taking prints because it "makes a hell of a mess in the house"! Later, when reporters would ask if they could photograph his room, we then allowed them in for a short time. Many of them would walk out saying they felt something in that room, almost as if they were connected to him in some way. I was not the only one to feel his presence in his room.

I will never forget the reporter who came out of Johnny's room. His face was as white as a sheet; he asked me " Have you noticed anything unusual in that room?" I replied "Like what "? He stammered then said " Electrical shocks were hitting my face and body as I stood in the middle of the room, I have never experienced anything like this before"! That was the first time I knew I was not the only one that felt something in that room.

I had talked to other parents of missing children who were reunited with them. They shared how important it was to buy the gifts and cards so the child would see they were never forgotten on birthdays and holidays. In 1985, the Ankeny Press Citizen newspaper asked me to write a letter to Johnny for his birthday and they would print it. So their readers would be able to understand what it is like to not know where your child is, whether he is alive or dead and face another birthday without him.

I was about to leave the house for an appointment in the afternoon, when the phone rang; it was a woman by the name of Donna Chapel. She is a long time Country Western and Gospel singer. Donna at that time had recorded three albums in Nashville and was planning the release of her fourth album. From her life on the road as a singer, to the dark side of Nashville, to life on the farm, to love of a mother for her child, Donna explained that she expresses her emotions in music just as her family had done for generations. In 1936 Donna's three aunts, the Amburgey Sisters, were pioneers in the country and gospel field with the first all female string bands in history. From the coalfields of Kentucky they rivaled the famed Carter family.

In October of 1985, Donna had made an appearance in Washington D.C. at the Farm Aid program. As she was walking through the airport, she saw a huge picture of Johnny hanging on the wall. It really began to bother her, wondering how she would feel if someone would take her son, almost Johnny's age. After she boarded the plane, she was inspired to write another song, "Johnny Doesn't Live Here Anymore" in tribute to my son Johnny. The song serves as a memorial for all parents who have lost a child and suffered this pain in their lives. She then decided it was time to call and talk to me about the song.

We hit it off immediately on the phone, as she explained how her thoughts and prayers had been with me and how seeing my son's picture in the Washington D.C. airport affected her. She asked, "Could I meet her at one of her performances to hear the song". I made arrangements to meet Donna on November 23, 1985 in Sioux City, Iowa (ironically I learned five years later that this is where Johnny was taken within hours of the kidnapping). She wanted me to hear it before she sang it at the show; this was to be the first time the song was sung publicly. We took a few private moments for her to sing it for me. As I sat listening to the words, I felt heartbreak and comfort. It is difficult to describe how both emotions can be felt at the same time. Donna had captured the feeling of emptiness in our home. He was no longer would coming home after school, saying "Mom what's for supper. No longer bringing me a rose and all the normal things we take for granted on a day-to-day basis

I knew that in a short time the song would be sung again. This time before hundreds of people and it would be difficult to keep my composure. I was touched by the words in the song and also by the love and kindness of Donna. Who was moved to write a tribute to my son. To have people you do not know remember him and do something extraordinary such as this made me feel so very thankful. That night was the beginning of a loving friendship, which has lasted for many years between Donna Chapel and myself.

Since that night, when we met for the first time, Donna has continued to sing Johnny's song at each and every performance throughout the United States. Donna requested a picture of Johnny; I furnished her with a very large framed picture of him. On stage with her at all times is the picture of Johnny on the first day of his paper route. When people see this picture and hear the words to the song there is not a dry eye in the audiences. The song brings a great deal of heartfelt emotion from everyone. Many people can identify with the words and how they might feel if their son or daughter would be taken from them.

The first day of his paper route, we took a picture of Johnny. He of course like most children, did not want his picture taken. Little did we know that this photo would become the "publicity picture" used by all forms of media for years and years following the kidnapping?

As I look at this photo today, I realize that more than half his life has been away from his family and friends. If I had it to do over again, I would have never allowed him to carry the Des Moines Register.

We discussed recording this song in Nashville, how soon the song could be released, as well as the remaining details. This was an area so new to me. Donna made all the arrangements for the recording and traveled to Nashville early in 1986. We kept in touch by phone and letter as to the progress of the recording. We made a decision to present the song in a meeting with our Iowa Governor Terry Branstad, on April 29th, 1986, the release date for the song nationally. Country radio stations all over the country were sent copies; it was received well by the public.

As I travel around the country for speaking engagements, TV and radio interviews I would play this song before each event. It always gave me an uplifting feeling and strength of my resolve to let every man; woman and child know what was happening to the millions of Johnny Gosch's around the world.

Johnny Doesn't Live Here Anymore

v.1: He'd get up before sun-up, throw the news by the door,
and that day was no different-like many times before, and his

pillow still showed the print of where he laid his head, but
now Johnny won't be sleeping in his bed.

v.2: His life had just begun, he had everything to live for, he
was slowly turning into a man, his smile would brighten up my
day, now that's all taken away, and I know Johnny doesn't
live here anymore.

CHORUS: He doesn't live here anymore. He won't walk right
Through that door, and say "Mom, what's for supper", and throw
His books down on the floor. And the hardest part of all, I don't
know
Where, I don't know why. We didn't even have the chance to say
goodbye.

v.3: As time goes by, I miss him more. Things aren't like they were before. We send our love up to the stars, for they must know just where you are. We'll always wait and love you more, and keep the light on by the door, but now, Johnny doesn't live here anymore. I know my Johnny doesn't live here anymore.

DEAR FRIEND	(2:57)
MY LOVE IS WITH YOU	(2:50)
FILLED WITH HIS SPIRIT	(4:42)
TAKE ME AWAY	(3:56)
ON THE ROAD	(4:07)
IMITATE THE MAN	(2:36)
TOO OLD TO DIE YOUNG	(3:04)
BARNEY JOHN	(3:45)
COUNTRY MAN	(2:56)
JOHNNY DOESN'T LIVE HERE ANY MORE	(3:22)
CAREN'S SONG	(3:57)
MUSIC CITY MADNESS	(3:22)

All Songs Written by Donna Chapel and published with Metro Country Music Publishing, BMI, with the exception of "Too Old To Die Young."
"Too Old To Die Young" written by John Hadley, Kevin Welch, Scott Dooley, Sony ATV LLC DBA Tree Pub. BMI, Sony Tunes LLC DBA Cross Keys ASCAPP.

Recorded at Bitten Moon Studio
Produced by Donna Chapel and Lana Chapel
DONNA CHAPEL – acoustic guitar, harmony and vocals
LANA CHAPEL – guitar, bass, mandolin, harmonica and harmony vocal assist

To Order: Donna Chapel Productions, PO Box 30, Bridgewater, SD 57319 or
www.donnachapel.com

DONNA, ME AND GOVERNOR BRANSTAD
APRIL 29, 1986

Donna Chapel presented the first copy of the song "Johnny Doesn't Live Here" to Governor Branstad. She was inspired to write the song after seeing Johnny's picture at the Washington D.C. airport. Donna still sings Johnny's song at ever performance while holding a large picture of him.

Check www.donnachapel.com to see the story of Johnny and a link to www.johnnygosch.com

The Cedar Rapids Gazette: Tues., Nov. 20, 1984

Branstad to seek tougher laws child abuse, kidnapping

By Judy Daubenmier
Gazette Des Moines Bureau

DES MOINES — Strengthening laws to prevent exploitation of children will be a priority of Gov. Terry Branstad during the upcoming legislative session, the governor said Monday.

Branstad said reports of sexually abused or missing children are increasing and must be stemmed.

"These sorts of things are happening all across the country," he said.

"They're happening too often. I believe we need to respond," he said.

Branstad told reporters he is looking at proposals to require background checks of people working in jobs dealing with children, such as in day-care centers.

Branstad also said he is considering legislation to allow the Iowa Department of Public Safety to disseminate information about missing children.

The department is now involved in a lawsuit over its refusal to give the news media names of children who are missing.

Branstad also said he may propose tougher legislation regarding the use of children in pornographic movies.

Gov. Terry Branstad

'We need to respond'

"There's a great deal of concern about children," Branstad said.

"We've had a 100 percent increase in the sexual abuse of children over the last three years in this state. We have two newspaper carriers that are missing and presumed to have been kidnapped. There is great concern about the exploitation of children.

" . . . I intend to make dealing with this issue one of my personal priorities, and one of my recommendations to the Legislature will deal with substantial changes in our state laws to be more effective in improving the safety and security of our children in this state."

The governor said he hoped sympathy for missing Des Moines newspaper carriers Johnny Gosch

The kidnapping of Johnny Gosch is still an unsolved crime. Thanks to the courage and tenacity of his mother, Noreen Gosch, dramatic changes have been made in Iowa law and federal law to help missing and exploited children and their families. It took the "chutzpah" of a Noreen Gosch to accomplish these dramatic changes in public policy. This book tells her story!

Terry E Branstad

....BILL

My Mother told me **"when things get so bad.... they have to get better."** I would ask her **"what time will that happen, Mom?"** She was amazing through the kidnapping of Johnny, always a positive support for me. Helping to keep me bolstered with the principles I was raised with my whole life. My Aunt Rita would call me on a regular basis ... telling me ***"No situation merits a disturbed attitude... you can handle anything that comes to you..."*** Meaning .... No matter what happens keep a cool head, keep calm, think before acting or speaking. It is true, no matter what situation happens in our life, the situation will always remain the same... it is how we happen to IT that makes the difference".

Trying to live that... is a tall order when your son is kidnapped and you begin to see how the system doesn't work. There were many times when I felt things just couldn't get any worse. Then something would happen which would renew my hope of finding Johnny and getting answers.

In October 1982, a tall man walked into my office, I couldn't believe how much he resembled the actor, Clint Eastwood. I didn't recognize this man and thought he was there to talk to my employer. Instead he pulled out a business card, handed it to me and said "When you get tired of what the police are NOT doing, give me a call, I can help you!" He then turned and walked out of the office. I wasn't exactly sure of what just took place but I put his card in my wallet.

As with a roller coaster ride, the ups and downs come at you fast.... they did on Johnny's case too. I felt I was at the end of my rope one day; the private investigators we hired were trying to do their job. Each time they would be working on a lead, not causing any problems to or for the police. The West Des Moines Police would arrest them ... which would put a temporary stop to the investigation. It appeared to me that it was deliberate. But who am I... just the Mom seeing it all through my eyes.

I finally decided to call this man who offered his help. I had no idea what kind of help or how but I thought "what the heck, I can't lose anything". I called him ...he said "lets have a cup of coffee". I met him after I got off work that day. He was a very kind man, seemed caring and interested in the case. I was so nervous, not knowing what to expect.

He started by explaining " there is a lot you don't know about the kidnapping of your son. He was taken by an organized group, who kidnaps kids for sex and profit. I have a friend, whom I have known for years in business, he is a very powerful man and has offered to help you. " I asked " in what way can he help"? He responded, "You will only be allowed to contact him through me, I will then reach him, relaying to him any request you may have at the time. Unfortunately, we cannot return your son to you, they have him so hidden and we cannot get close to him. What I can offer at this time is information at any time you need it. Protection for you and your family should it be necessary."

I told him I was afraid and didn't have anything in which to give them in return for their help. He then smiled and said "we know that, we know you are struggling, we also know you are getting a bum deal, it is time you had a break." I finally said, "Okay I will be most grateful for any help you can give me." He told me to call him whenever I had a request for information or protection and he would do his best to have an answer for me within twenty-four hours. If I have information for you in the mean time, he would call me and say, "Lets have a cup of coffee".

I call him "Bill", I have never revealed his real name to anyone and never will. I was given help above and beyond my expectations at the time of our first meeting. When I needed information concerning a suspect in Johnny's case I would receive it within a very short time. It seemed they could locate almost anyone.

One time, I needed information on a particular suspect, I had given it to the Police as well. Bill called me back within two hours; it took almost two weeks from the police. One of the detectives from the police department said in front of me "I wish I had her connections and could get information that quickly". I didn't want to know how he they got the info so quickly, I just appreciated getting it.

It might sound small to some people but when the chips were down and there wasn't the ongoing investigation with the Police, I had to take charge using private investigators and use any means possible to get the truth.

Bill's men provided protection for family members and me a number of times when there were death threats made against us. If it hadn't been for their help, I know for certain I would have lost another loved one. I was up against powerful people in this kidnapping and they did not like it that I was pushing for an answer on the case. Most of the time, my family was unaware that I had men posted near them round the clock until situations were stabilized.

I do not know to this day the identity of Bill's friend. Bill once mentioned he was the head of a powerful "family"!

As we progressed through years on the case, I had to call upon Bill many times, each time, I would think... "Well maybe he is getting tired of this and will say ...no this time." But not once was I ever told "no". Instead, I was met with as much cooperation as possible.

When Paul Bonacci surfaced in the news... July 1991...Bill called me and said, "Lets have a cup of coffee". We met... "he told me Paul Bonacci was telling the truth about Johnny's kidnapping , the pedophile/porn ring and people Bonacci named." Bill also named several men from Des Moines involved with the same ring." He warned me to be very careful what I would say publicly concerning Bonacci or local involvement. He then said, "there is a woman who has impersonated you... I want you to wait several months before going to the prison to meet Bonacci." I didn't totally understand his reasoning on that one but I agreed to trust him, as he had been accurate with everything since we first met.

Bill was always there when I needed him, but there were periods of time when the case dormant. As the Bonacci story faded only to be revived by America's Most Wanted, there were times I called Bill to check out pieces of information. Leads coming in from the show.

The one thing Bill kept telling me was.... Johnny is still alive. He has not been killed. He also provided support and strength because there were times the information he had to give me was not exactly pleasant.

On the personal side, a man living in Des Moines got the wild idea to harass me, which he did quite thoroughly. He broke into my apartment, would telephone me up to 40 times a day, keyed my car on 4 occasions. It didn't matter where I parked it. He would find it. The man was a "nut ball" who was operating without any sense of moral judgment. It was finally through "surveillance" which Bill provided ... that I learned the identity of the man. Once I knew who he was, I could give information to the police and they could do something about it. It took approximately another year before there was enough evidence for an arrest.

In 1997, After Johnny had been here to see me, I told no one Johnny had been here, not even Bill. I couldn't and still keep my promise to my son. I knew he was living on an Indian reservation but there are hundreds in the U.S. and Canada. I had been to the Indian College in Lawrence Kansas to get the list. I had planned on contacting each one personally but thought there might be a better way. I called Bill asked him to meet me… I told him Johnny was alive but I didn't know where he was living. Bill suggested I go to WHO TV in Des Moines, ask them to do a "PSA (public service announcement) taped interview" speaking directly to Johnny, to broadcast regionally in the United States. WHO was very helpful, did the promo tape and began broadcasting in the area Bill suggested. Within 48 hours we had a phone call, people recognized Johnny's picture. Bill sent his men in…. Johnny had lived there for a time, worked but moved on to another location… the people either didn't know or wouldn't say.

We then broadcast in the second regional area…. Bingo… we got another call, someone recognized his picture. I called Bill and he sent his men right away. Then the day came….September 18, 1997… Bill called me and said, "Lets have a cup of coffee". His voice sounded different than ever before, I asked, "do you have good news" he replied, "yes I do".

I could hardly wait until it was time to meet him… when I got to the coffee shop, I sat down and said "well what do you have", he smiled and said "we found him, he is okay, safe and working", Bill gave me the name of the Indian reservation where he was living. I told him I wanted to go right away… he cautioned me to wait a little while then we would plan it a bit more carefully. Meanwhile, I would receive a weekly report on Johnny, where he went, who he was with, the times he was at the trading post buying his groceries, I knew my boy was at least safe for the moment.

When It was finally decided that I would go to the reservation and would be meeting Karen Burnes of 20/20, Bill told me to guard what I said to the Police Chief Willie Strong, because he was some how connected to criminal activity. When I arrived at my hotel, the cell phone rang, it was Bill, saying he was glad my trip was safe and he gave me the name of the hotel. If I had ever doubted his ability to watch someone it was removed with that phone call. The visit to the reservation is detailed in other chapters in the book.

I returned home from the trip, Bill agreed to continue a weekly report to me on Johnny's activities. A couple months later, Karen Burnes and the P.I. ABC hired went to the reservation on their own. Bill called demanding to know" Why are they there without you? Why didn't you go with them? Johnny heard some strangers came to the reservation and talked to the Indian Council, he is afraid, he took off. He is on the run now, looking for another safe place to live." This was definitely a "misstep" on the part of ABC to go there without me. It caused Johnny to bolt for safety.

Within a day or two Bonacci called me to tell me the same thing, Johnny was again running for a safe place to live. The best of intentions went wrong. It was certain both Bill and Bonacci were in their own separate ways able to know Johnny's movements.

It was only a short time later; Police Chief Willie Strong was removed concerning drug charges being filed against him. He had been very helpful to me when I was there.

Bill became ill and has died recently, I will be forever grateful to this man who walked into my office ... handing me his card and saying "call me I can help you." Without his help, I would not have had some of the pieces to this puzzle.

When one prays for help... you never know what in what "form" it might be. I have been blessed in many ways during the investigation.... Just the right person at the right time.

ON THE AUCTION BLOCK

Two months after my son was kidnapped, Dennis Whalen, our private detective called, asked me to meet him in a public place. I met him at Village Inn restaurant, in West Des Moines.

Whalen began by telling me that he had "contacts on both sides of the law!" I knew what he meant and didn't ask any further questions. He explained that he received a call indicating there was to be an auction of children. I was shocked this could be happening ... in America. The thought of children being sold on the auction block made me feel sick. As the years passed, I heard again and again that auctions of kidnapped children were being held in many major cities across the country.

I knew from what had already taken place, that my son's kidnapping was not a random act but one of an organized pedophile ring. I later learned that they were international in scope. You will find a chapter in this book called "The Finders" all evidence we have obtained indicates this group is run from Washington D.C. under the sponsorship of the CIA.

I asked how Dennis Whalen how he could smuggle himself into such a slave auction without detection. He explained "his underworld contacts were able to get him as a perspective buyer."

My private investigators took great personal risks to try and find what had happened to Johnny. The preparations to attend this auction were very intricate.

Whalen was told to drive to the old Kansas City Airport, park his vehicle and then walk to the end of one of the runways. He was instructed to wait in the darkness until a small aircraft would land, pick him up and they would be on their way. Whalen wanted to know how much he could bid for Johnny. In other words, how much money could I raise in a hurry. I told him $50,000. He told me he would do his best and be in touch with me. I was instructed not to talk to anyone about it. That if we were able to recover Johnny, I would only be able to report to authorities and media, that I paid a ransom demand with out the assistance of law enforcement.

Whalen drove to Kansas City; I waited nervously for several days until I heard from him again. Finally, one night he came to the house, he reported the following to me:

He boarded a twin-engine turbo prop airplane. He was blindfolded immediately even before take off. He knew only that they were in the air for a long time, approximately two and a half hours. He had no idea what direction they were flying until he overheard the control tower giving landing clearance to the pilot. At that point, he knew they approaching Houston, Texas. Gunderson has also indicated Houston, Texas is one of the locations where slave auctions are held.

He was taken from the plane, put into a car and driven approximately forty-five minutes. When they stopped and his blindfold was taken off, he was outside warehouse type building. He commented it looked like an "industrial park" housing lots of buildings for business and storage. He could see the lights of the city in the distance.

Once inside, he saw a number of men, some looked to be foreign buyers, they were wearing turbans. Soon the children were paraded out on to a stage. The auction began. He looked at the children, noticing how dazed they looked. Each boy was wearing a thin rope around his neck suspending a "number". They were only wearing underwear. All the boys seemed to be between the ages ten to thirteen years old. Johnny was not among them. I later learned from Paul Bonacci, Col. Michael Aquino had purchased Johnny, directly from his kidnappers within two weeks after he was taken.

As Whalen described the auction, I felt sick for a number of reasons:

1. How horrific this was to auction children
2. That Johnny wasn't among them
3. Wishing Johnny had been, so he could have been "bought back"

Whalen's contact told him the auctions take place all over the country; they move them, so as not to be detected. He also reported that a "blue eyed blond 13 year old boy could sell for as high as $50,000". Whalen was not able to go to any more auctions. They had discovered he was not a "real buyer". His cover was blown.

Once I had all of this information, I documented it, but who was I going to tell? I knew that in December of 1982, no one would believe me. I knew at sometime in the future all of the information I was storing, would become very important. I knew that others would eventually stand up to help confirm what is happening to children.

Ted Gunderson, FBI, who has spent more than 20 years investigating crimes against children, at great risk to his own life. He has multiple verifications of the existence of such auctions. He names Las Vegas and Toronto Canada as two other locations for these auctions. He suggested they take place in most major cities in this country.

Dr. Judienne Denson Gerber, Psychiatrist and expert witness on child abuse, also states auctions of this type take place in Baltimore MD. Paul Bonacci has personally attended many such auctions.

October 13, 1990
Report by Robert Hansel to Franklin Credit Union/Investigation
This investigator took over following the mysterious death of Gary Caradori, July 11, 1990.

" At approximately 2:00 PM, this writer proceeded to Donna Owens, (Alisha Owen's mother) residence, at which time, we discussed information regarding Paul Bonacci's diary. It is a synopsis of incidents that occurred to him. One incident took place in September of 1982, an account of a man named Amelio (Emilio), who took Paul to a farmhouse in Iowa and he saw two boys that were locked in a room with no windows and only one door which was bolted shut. One of the boys was approximately nine years old, 4 feet tall, 80 pounds, blonde hair, and one blue eye and one brown eye. He also had a scar on his left leg approximately nine inches long. He also had a mole on his chest. He cried for his mother a lot and according to Paul his name was Mark.

The other boy was approximately 5'5" in height, 130 pounds, blue eyes, and brown hair. The boy was wearing black jogging pants and had a dirty shirt on that had the name of Kim's Academy on it. At that time, Mr. Bonacci asked if this was Kim's Karate, which he never did get an answer. The boy was approximately 13 years of age and he found out later that his name was Johnny and he couldn't recall his last name. The boy was from Des Moines, Iowa. The other boy was from some town in Minnesota possibly.

This information had been circulated around Nebraska, two years before I learned about Bonacci. Caradori out found about Johnny as early as 1989, he called our home and once again John Gosch took the call and didn't tell me. According to the records, I learned Caradori was trying to share information concerning Johnny... they thought it odd that Johnny's mother didn't respond, since I had been so active on the case. It was simple.... I had not been told.

Bonacci declined to go on some of the kidnappings but his (forensically authenticated) diary of 1982-83 indicated that such kidnappings were routine for Emilio. He describes going to another farmhouse in Nebraska where a number of boys were being held, one night two men came and bought two boys.

In the chapter, called the Finders the customs investigator describes finding on the computer an evacuation order to move the children from safe house to safe house before the arrival of investigators. Paul states that warning usually come from "friendly" informants in law enforcement. July 17, 1991, Ted Gunderson on the Jan Michaelson show over WHO Talk Radio Des Moines described it exactly the same way.

There is no way, Paul Bonacci writing in 1982-83 could have known that a customs officer would find the same information on a computer in 1986. We know about it only because Gunderson salvaged reports that were ordered to be destroyed.

Bonacci told me, that in October 1989, he received a letter from "Mike"... telling that Emilio and "Charlie" had gone to "Minnesota to get another kid", It was just a week later Jacob Wetterling was kidnapped. After learning this, I telephoned Patty Wetterling to give her this information. I felt she would want to know and thought it might be something they would want to investigate. She was gracious but wasn't interested in this information at all. I left no stone unturned in Johnny's case. No matter what information came to me, I investigated it. Remembering in my mind the words of a very wise detective who told me... "Just because you don't believe something doesn't mean .... It isn't true".

Repeatedly women have surfaced claiming they were "mind control slaves" of celebrities, politicians and VIP's. Sue Ford, in writing her book "Thanks for the Memories" under the name Brice Taylor, states " Elitists in the market for mind control slaves, attended auctions that appeared at first like children's fashion shows and then progressed to strip tease acts. At this particular show where Bob Hope bought me, there were lots and lots of little girls and boys competing. They said these children were what they called "sponsored", if they were chosen. They said it was better to be chosen early because the sponsors (owners) could mold you the way they wanted you. There was a modeling ramp where all of us children were displayed. I modeled casual clothes, then sophisticated evening clothes, and then sensual/sexual attire and finally appeared totally naked.

I won first place at this show and was sold to Bob Hope on the open market. They put a white cape around my naked body and Bob

Hope came up and stood with me, while everyone in the audience cheered."

How many thousands of children writing their stories will it take before we believe?

Perhaps the man, who has heard more sad stories from children, Father Bruce Ritter, founder of Covenant House in New York. A refuge for street kids. Covenant House began as a one-man operation in 1972 and continues yet today with branches all over the country. In his book, "Sometimes God Has A Kid's Face", Ritter describes, a young man who hitchhiked across the country to tell him that he, "Mark", had been sold to a "Fortune Five Hundred Company."

Mark described how at fourteen he was a throwaway kid. "I ran away when I was fourteen, my mother and father were alcoholics. I met this guy he gave me a lot of affection and a place to live. I needed the affection real bad. He taught me a lot about sex and I guess, he put me to work. I was young and pretty, so he sent me out to my customers dressed like a girl – transvestite. I lived with fourteen other boys in this big house. We were all pretty young and pretty scared; he made us all watch, a kid get beaten with a wire hanger. It was bad. That is what happened when you tried to leave. The next time you are dead.

When I turned seventeen and got some muscles, and my beard began to grow, I went butch... they made me join another group ... Man–to- Man... It was a "call service," pretty high-class customers.

Then the Fortune Five Hundred Company bought him. Ritter states, " You would recognize the name"

Mark continued, " I had a company car and an apartment and took care of corporate clients. They would fly me all over the country. The Corporation had a representative that would take a portfolio of the kids in their stable, both boys and girls to their clients. We didn't have any clothes on in the photographs. The clients could pick anyone they wanted."

Mark told Ritter that he had hitchhiked halfway across the country so he couldn't be traced. The next morning he had disappeared.

Ritter comments in his book, that there was a club near Time Square, where children could be bought anytime for drugs, for guns or for money.

In Readers Digest, October 1993, an article titled " Asia's Shocking Secrets" describes how men who want to have sex with children while traveling in foreign countries..... Are facilitated by top NAMBLA members in making arrangements to have a little boy or girl for their pleasure. NAMBLA was making the same arrangements within the United States for pedophiles but at a much higher price.

Johnny was considered the "Golden Boy or Celebrity Boy" due to all the publicity which circulated about him. This unfortunate title given to him, meant his captors could get more money for his services but it was also a reason to keep him alive.

UNESCO in recent reports sites AIDS, as a major contributor to the increasing number of children who are being sold into slavery world-wide for sexual purposes. The molesters of children consider them to be safer than prostitutes on the streets, since they would have little or no sexual experience prior to being kidnapped into slavery.

Issue Price $3.00 (Tax Not Included)

Media Bypass

THE UNCENSORED NATIONAL NEWS

VOL. 8 #2 • FEBRUARY 2000

Have You Seen Me?

Composite Of Suspect

5'9'', 175 lbs., dark eyes, black eyebrows, older, early to mid 40's, black hair, combed back, full in back, black mustache, heavy beard or unshaven appearance, Latin appearance.

This man may be driving a two tone blue car, real dark top and light blue bottom -mid size - 79 to 81 model -clean inside and outside - no vinyl top -plush interior -Iowa plate.

Above: Noreen and Roy Stephens - Faith Daniels Show
Below: John DeCamp and Noreen - Leeza Show
Why do parents have to plead for investigations of their missing children on talk shows?

THE FRANKLIN COVER-UP

On Jan 10, 1989, the Nebraska State Legislature created the Franklin Investigative Committee. It's chairman is Senator Loran Schmit, good friend of John De Camp, who was to play a major role in the Franklin Investigation.

As fellow Republicans, they had worked together in the Legislature, after DeCamp left; he became Loren Schmit's lawyer, business partner in developing and selling farmland around Lincoln. Schmit had earlier closed his ears to stories (rumors really about children being abused). It didn't fall within the purview of his investigations.

It turned out to be more than a simple investigation of another mismanaged savings and loan. In the end there would be evidence of Iran/Contra Money Laundering and an organization called the North American Man Boy Love Association, who put five million in the credit union as the nonprofit Church of the Beloved Disciple.

In early February 1989, Senator Schmit, received an intimidating phone call from Omaha Chief of Police Robert Wadman saying "I've got something on all of you," less than a month after the committee was formed. He states other phone calls followed all suggesting he shut down the committee,

When Schmit met with King on February 19th, 1989, King seemed more interested in warning Schmit he had powerful friends than discussing the failed credit union. King said "Harold Anderson, publisher of the Omaha World Herald called him all the time." He stated: "A large number of blacks in the Omaha Police Department and the FBI are related to him. And that Omaha Chief of Police Wadman was "a dear friend", whom he had offered the use of his Washington D.C. house. Wadman later denied knowing King

Loren Schmit said when he first heard the allegations of child sexual abuse connected to the Franklin Credit Union, he dismissed them.

"My job is to follow the money!" he declared, dismissing the other matters. His job he said was to find out for members of the black community in Omaha, what happened to their money and their credit union, which Larry King ran.

His early statements about following the money were misinterpreted by Foster Care, other organizations and individuals as a declaration that he was abandoning the children. It raised a firestorm of protest and he went to see John DeCamp. They both were to be discredited in a relentless campaign by the news media.

Schmit is an old time farmer and crop duster who came late in life to the Legislature and served 21 years before he was unceremoniously dumped. On Aug 21, 1989, he hired Gary Caradori, as Chief Investigator for the Franklin Committee. Because of his decision Schmit was once more threatened and within a short time the deaths began.

On November 4, 1989, Kathleen Sorensen died in a car accident on the way home from filming the second episode of two Cable Access programs that dealt with her uncovering the satanic abuse of her foster children. Although Geraldo Riviera did a two part series on Satanism in America. The program singled out the Omaha area as one of the centers for Satanism. Sorensen was one of the guests on Geraldo's program. Geraldo has since refused to do any further programs on Satanism.

A few courageous individuals like Kathleen Sorensen took their complaints to Foster Care, which were being ignored by the Attorney General Robert Spire. Foster Care Director, Carol Stitt, stated in "Conspiracy of Silence" that she put a "foot high pile of documents before the Attorney General".

An informant later claimed that the car accident, which killed Sorensen, had been pre-arranged with a satanic suicide driver. (See Gunderson Chapter). It is almost impossible to prove an auto accident was deliberately caused yet it offers often a sure fire way of getting rid of the problem. (See Rusty Chapter)

A little more than a month, after the death of Kathleen Sorenson, Caradori began the first of a series of interviews with kids regarding sexual abuse on the part of Larry King and others. Sexual abuse and satanic activity were intimately involved as was the military and the FBI.

On December 27, 1989 videotaped testimony was given to the Attorney General Robert Spire and U.S. Attorney Ron Lahners. On the same day, John De Camp accompanied Loren Scmit, at Schmit's insistence to the office of the FBI.

From "The Franklin Cover-up" DeCamp says; **"I agreed to go, but on the condition that he first meet one-on-one with the regional head of the FBI, Nick O'Hara.**

He did meet with O'Hara for about one hour. Then I was called into the room. It was only at that time, through discussion, that I learned that the individual in question was former Omaha, Police Chief Robert Wadman.

In brutal language and with the most somber demeanor possible, O'Hara made it clear that probably his closest friend in the world was Police Chief Robert Wadman, and anyone who would dare to accuse Robert Wadman of impropriety had better realize that in accusing Wadman, they were effectively taking on Nick O'Hara and the FBI.

When we left the FBI offices, I said to Senator Schmit "Wow, did I make a mistake. Anybody who dares to investigate this is going to get him or her buried by the FBI, if they start making any accusations against Wadman or anybody associated with him. "

I had no idea how prophetic those words were (Curator's death is linked to the FBI). See Rusty Chapter

On January 18, 1990, Decamp wrote a memo to World Herald Reporter Bob Dorr. In it, he mentions the papers Publisher Harold Anderson, Larry King, former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman, OWH Reporter Peter Citron, and Alan Baer as central figures in the Franklin Investigation.

Schmit found that the tapes Caradori had made which were given to the FBI had been leaked to the News Media. Pam Vuchetich, attorney for Alisha Owens one of the witness on the tapes turns confidential information over to the FBI, and compromises her client's position by making statements to the press. It was reported, she was having an affair with FBI Agent Mickey Mott.

The FBI Agent in charge claimed, "Stories of Child Abuse do not stand up to our scrutiny".

Less than a month later, a U.S. Magistrate Richard Kopf orders a "mental evaluation" of Lawrence E. King Jr. On March 29,1990, King is ruled incompetent to stand trial.

The next day, the media carried a story that two of the male victim witnesses failed a FBI lie detector test. No tests were ever taken by them. The following month, Troy Boner openly recants his testimony. On April 22, 1990, a World Herald article talks about the young people manufacturing "a carefully crafted hoax".

On May 15, 1990, former Omaha World Herald Entertainment Columnist, Peter Citron, found guilty on two counts of sexual assault of a child. Less than a month, before Omaha Mayor Morgan testified before a Douglas County Grand Jury that he was "outraged" at accusations that he had attended parties.

FBI begins harassment of Senator Loren Schmit's eighty-eight year

old blind mother, Accuses Schmit of having mob connections.
From "The Franklin Cover-up"

"It was only after Caradori's first tapes had been turned over to law enforcement agencies, that leaks of what was on them began reaching the public and became the subject of widespread discussion. Articles began to appear in the Omaha World Herald aimed to discredit the witnesses and intimidate any other potential child victim-witnesses from testifying or coming foreword with information.

As the stories proliferated, Gary Caradori expressed to Senator Schmit his concern for the safety of the victim-witnesses who allowed them to be taped. Schmidt sought DeCamp's legal advice again."

Schmit stated: "These kids need protection or they are going to end up dead, or become afraid to continue to tell the truth. The committee has to do something to guarantee their protection."

The Legislature did not succeed in protecting children that came to them to plead for help in prosecuting their sexual abusers. Alisha Owens, who would not back down on the sexual abuse charges, received up to 25 years in prison on nine counts of perjury. Former Senator DeCamp made it clear that this was a gross violation of her constitutional rights.

The Legislative report agreed that indeed Satanism did exist in Nebraska and yes, they did use and abuse children and adults. In the satanic chapter it states that 100% of those involved in Satanism were also involved in drugs.

The Franklin report states: The most frightening thing about cult (satanic) abuse is the tendency to pass perversions, aberrations, and other psychic and physical injuries on to the children"

The report quotes an opinion of the US Court of Appeals for the Fifth Circuit, in upholding a drug dealer's life sentence without parole.

> **Except in rare cases, the murderer's red hand falls on one victim. Only, however grim the blow: but the foul hand of the drug dealer. Blights life after life and like the vampire of fable, creates others in its owner's evil image—others who creates others still, across the land and down our generations, sparing not even the unborn.**
> **Terrebone v, Butler, 848 F.2d 500, 504 (5th Cir. 1988) (en banc),**

The report then launches into a discussion of Satanism, as it exists in the country **"The purpose of this report is not to deny people the right to worship Satan if they so desire. The purpose of the report is to discuss some of the problems that may be concomitant with Satanism, some of the indicia of satanic abuse, and some of the dangers that may arise in connection with satanic worship. Law enforcement personnel frequently respond to homicides, child abuse, arson, and other criminal activities that are done in connection with satanic activities...."** How very different is this from the report of Ken Lanning of the FBI Web site claiming there is no criminal activity associated with Satanism.. A comparison between his theories and the facts are to be found in the chapter on Satanism.

The sad result of this report is that there were none. Despite the recommendations of Dr Judianne Densen-Gerber, psyciatrist and lawyer, Lee Orr, Kansas City Homicide Detective and Ted Gunderson, FBI Retired . Despite the death of Gary Caradori, the Legislature's Chief Investigator and of Kathleen Sorenson, a foster parent, who testified to the satanic rituals and murders her children had been involved in. Nothing was done.

Dr. Desen Gerber admonished the Committee: "I know that there have been extraordinary pressures on both the Committee as a whole and on individuals. I know the type of power that has been brought to bear. So I am not here to in any way criticize the Committee. I want to say one thing. I would not want the Committee to disband. I think that it is not in the best interests of the average Nebraska citizen ...I would also not want the material turned over to any other Committee, because it takes two to three years for the average person to get through the automatic denial that goes along with this kind of material.... I've got documents and I've got cases and I've got police that can tell you these are the things they've seen". She stated that Bonacci had witnessed or participated in five satanic sacrifices four in Nebraska and one in California. That he had performed necrophilia by having sexual intercourse with a dead child on film. He said there were two doctors present, who worked with the cult. She warned of increasing AIDS especially in younger children and stated that Bonacci also belonged to a Nazi cult. All cult sites usually show some homage or salute to Hitler.

The Franklin Investigation came to an ignominious end. The report issued from this investigation indicated that much more could and should have been done. But those involved were too important to be brought down by the rape and in some cases murder of children.

The report is entitled **"Cult Abuse and the Safety of Children"** unfortunately it went nowhere, not the FBI, not the Governor, not the

Attorney General acted on its proven points. Information was given to various members of the Iowa Legislature, even while the investigation was going on. This information including reports from the police and others, indicated the same things were going on in Iowa as well. All information was ignored, completely unacknowledged.

Franklin Investigation Final Report:

"The Franklin investigation proceeded in ways that were at times surprising to the Committee members and their counsel. From the outset, members of the Committee, and various people acting as counsel or investigator to the Committee, were often thwarted in our attempts to gain information directly from the principle parties involved in the Franklin failure. There were individuals who, on the advice of counsel, would not communicate with the Franklin Committee at all. There were various agencies of a fact gathering variety, who felt free to pick and choose among the Franklin files as to what they did or did not wish to use, or follow up on, but who determined that the flow of information would be so one-sided. **In view of these obstacles, it is perhaps surprising that the Franklin committee amassed the pure quantity of information that we did.**

Although the Legislature had given the Franklin Committee a broad mandate as to activities that were to be investigated, it was finally the public that largely determined our agenda.

There were many people in the State, who believed that the Franklin Committee would provide their last resort, or perhaps their only opportunity, to discuss matters that concerned them.

It was, finally, citizens who came forward with the hope of giving or receiving assistance, which determined what, was and was not "Franklin related."

One of the issues that various citizens brought forward again and again was the matter of ritual abuse. People were concerned about cults, and the possible danger that could arise in connection with various cults.

There were witnesses, who claimed to have been victimized by unlawful activity, and there were other witnesses, who were concerned about what appears to be the proliferation of harmful cult activity throughout the country in general, and in Nebraska in particular.

The initial response to allegations regarding occult behavior is of course one of disbelief.

In a recent case in San Francisco, a pentagram had been carved in the victim's chest, and his body had partially been drained of blood during a ritual. Candle-wax dropping were found in his right eye. During closing arguments, prosecutor Paul Cummings described the proceeding as a "voyage into an underworld we don't want to admit exists in our society."

The report goes on to discuss a satanic cult uncovered in 1986 in Rulo, Nebraska. During the trial counsel brought in a witness named Priscilla Coates, from New York, who represented the Citizens Freedom Foundation, a support group of former cult members.

Continuing the report "She describes cults as destructive groups that are a problem on an international basis. She testified extensively about cults, and other destructive groups, (including Jonestown), in which children were constantly abused for purposes of cult discipline. She testified that she had information on cults encouraging people to commit numerous crimes ranging from prostitution to theft to selling drugs.

She stated that information regarding Rulo, in terms of forcing cult members to have sexual relations with their children and with each other, was not uncommon, and that bestiality (making people have sex with animals) was also not uncommon.

The members of the Committee are fully aware of the fact that people do not want to hear about cult activity, and are fully aware of the fact that to discuss Satanists is to risk being the subject of ridicule and even hostility.

The various horrifying experiences of the people at Rulo need not be set forth in this report...

The main concern of people who have been in contact with the Committee has been ritualistic abuse of children. Child abuse is intolerable both from the standpoint of the law, and from the standpoint of society in general. The problem with ritualistic child abuse is that many times it is difficult for children to communicate what has happened to them....

Our society is admirably aware of the problems of sexual abuse of children, and frequently a parent or professional will be on the lookout for evidence of child sexual abuse, but ritual abuse is almost never suspected, and often becomes apparent only after children act out, and discuss bizarre activities. Children will sometimes speak of people in scary costumes, make references to body painting, or have unusual bruise patterns on their bodies. Such children often play in an aggressive, sadistic way, and are destructive and intent in hurting of other children. Abused children often act out mutilation on their toys, threaten other children in bizarre and shocking ways, engage in play that is not appropriate to their age or normal experience of children that age.

Loren Schmit echoed the words of William Colby, former director of the CIA, when he said; **"Children have been harmed and even killed, but too many important people are involved and "My God, I think they are going to get away with it!"**

RECOMMENDATIONS FOR LEGISLATION

Sadly the warnings given to Senator Loren Schmit would be carried out (See Conspiracy of Silence video transcript). The Committee was shut down literally around him. He was removed from posts on other committees that he had been on for years.

Even more sadly the deaths that occurred before, during and after the investigation would go unpunished. (The Report issued by the Legislature cited Dr Judienne Densen-Gerber, lawyer and psychiatrist who examined Paul Bonacci.) She reported the association of Satanism to multiple personalities, and Satanists who are involved with cannibalism.

It also states "It is instructive to hear of some of Mr. Orr's experiences". (A Kansas City, Kansas homicide detective), who had been investigating satanic homicides around the Midwest. The report matter-of-factly states: "He once met the leader of a cult that believed that the power of ever lasting life was gain by consuming the internal organs of dead people"

This document that was never widely circulated...certainly not reported on by the Nebraska news media has a chilling effect because of the apathetic manner in which it presents, human sacrifice, blood drinking, cannibalism, mother, child, and baby sacrifice.

Dr Densen-Gerber told of the Antichrist cults, that are the more vicious because they contain breeder mothers, who have been "married to Satan", between the age of 8 and 13, and in which the young girl is tied to an altar, and a man dressed as the devil would rape the child, and there are numerous other disgusting practices such as blood letting, and the fetal Eucharist.

Dr Densen-Gerber's recommended satanic investigative teams inside the police departments of Nebraska and the Nebraska State Troopers. To deal with child sexual abuse, child pornography, child trafficking (euphemism for kidnap/slavery), and the use of illegal drugs by underage persons."

Nothing in the report would indicate this abominable conduct was being done by important politicians, businessmen and military both in Nebraska and Washington D.C.

Nothing in this report was ever acted upon by the Nebraska Legislature, no laws were passed.

Nebraska State Senator
Loren Schmit
Chairman of the
Franklin Credit Union Investigation

Paul Bonacci

AMERICA'S MOST WANTED

PAUL BONACCI

If Paul Bonacci were your child, you would shrink in horror to hear what he has gone thru since the age of three. I can tell you that Johnny Gosch went thru some of the same tortures by the same men who tortured Paul.

If you have not seen that Hollywood movie 8 MM, then you cannot begin to understand what is going on in Iowa, America and the World. The movie is about a detective who is hired by the wife of a dead millionaire because his wife has found a film locked in his secret safe after his death. All she wants the detective to do is find out if the murder of a young girl is faked or real. Money is no object the widow says. He swims in the sewers of porno stores—pays $5,000 for a fake "snuff film" but eventually he finds the girls mother and the one who killed her. They kill his friend, burn the film and try to kill him. He escapes tells the widow it was real, she commits suicide and now he has no proof that the film exists, so in true Hollywood fashion he finds and kills the "snuff film" makers.

That was Hollywood and now the truth. The above film 8MM can be found in any video store, but so can "snuff films" There is a series of films called "Faces of Death." A part of the film was shown by Kansas City Homicide Detective E. Lee Orr at their meeting in Lincoln, Nebraska. A hundred and fifty members of the audience recoiled in horror at what they saw—a documentary of a Satanic cult from California who cuts open and eats the heart and liver of a young girl who has supposedly just committed suicide for the benefit of the ceremony.

This film was available in video store after video store all across America. According to Lee Orr this video documentary is a prime indicator that satanic activity is in the area. Orr spent the final five years of 25 years on the Kansas City police force investigating satanic homicides. He was amazed at how many satanic homicides he investigated that were later called drug related homicides.

You will learn here in these pages that Paul Bonacci participated in the making of snuff films in which the other child was killed. Paul Bonacci claims to have been with the head of the North American Man Boy Love Association in New York City and that he was sent frequently to Washington D.C. to warm Congressmen Barney Franks bed. He also participated in satanic cult human sacrifice, but refused to eat the eyes, according to Dr Judi-Anne Densen-Gerber, psychiatrist. Gerber specializes in NAMBLA and Satanism, and was brought to Nebraska by the Nebraska Legislature to determine if he was a Multiple Personality and if he was telling the truth. Densen-Gerber wrote a special report to the Nebraska Legislature in which she found him entirely credible and incapable of lying. She also stated that as a much abused multiple personality he belonged in treatment not in jail. Yet her expert testimony and the effort of his lawyer John DeCamp did not succeed in getting him freed. It would be years before Paul Bonacci was finally released.

Paul Anthony Bonacci was born on August 3, 1967 to Marilyn May and John Angelo Bonacci. The father was of Italian decent. Bonacci's parents were divorced while he was but a baby. His father never claimed him until he was almost 19, Bonacci's mother remarried, but it didn't last long. She divorced soon afterwards because of physical abuse by her new husband. She then married Jack McCoy, who treated her with love, honor and respect. Paul loved his new stepfather, but was, mysteriously never able to tell him. Bonacci remembers when he was four years old and his mother would go to work, he would try to follow to the bus stop. Bonacci recalled a couple up the street who gave him cookies. "A weird guy lived close to us who would take me home, too, but he started to harm me," Bonacci recalled. Down in the "weird neighbor's" basement Bonacci saw a wooden altar. Then Bonacci recalled a hideous, but vivid memory. "He had this little boy that was down there. He was probably about 2 years old, and I was about 4. He made me have sex with the boy. And as I was doing it, he started cutting the boy. He was telling me that he was putting the boy's spirit in me and then afterwards he told me that the boy wasn't really hurt, and that it was all just a game. That's how Alec was formed because Alec is only about two years old and doesn't talk or speak. He's a baby person. He kind of represents the boy that was killed.

When Paul speaks of Alec, he is describing only one of many "personalities" that live inside him. Paul Bonacci has been diagnosed as having multiple personality disorder.

Paul continued to recall the horrible tale: "He took the boy's skin off and then put it on me. That's why I want to take five or six showers per day. I'm washing my hands but I can't get the blood off. I always see it. It's right there!

When Bonacci was 5, he was molested by a baby sitter. When he was 6, he had a friend named Jeremy (a pseudonym) who was 13. Jeremy took Bonacci to his fort where they played a game called "truth or dare' (just like in the new Madonna movie). One thing led to another and they ended up performing fellatio on each other. At age 7,Jeremy introduced Bonacci to anal sex. Bonacci was small and Jeremy protected him from other boys, so Bonacci considered him like a big brother. Jeremy told Bonacci not to tell anyone and he didn't – not for a long time. He did finally ask his best friends mother about it, but she said it was normal and not to worry about it.

In the latter part of 1975, when he was 8, Bonacci started going with a friend after school to Sacred Heart Church. He recalls, "Even though I was not a Catholic, my friend introduced me to the priest. My friend only called him "Father."

In February of 1976, Bonacci went to the church around Valentines' Day. "The priest took me into a room where he began to play with me and said I was very pretty for a little boy. He kissed me on my cheeks and lips and told me it was a blessing to have a priest kiss you. He told me to come back the next day and he'd show me something real nice.,"

"The next day I came back again he took me into the room. As far as I could tell, he and I were the only ones in the church. He had a collection of football cards, which he said his father had given him as a kid. Most of the cards were real old. While looking at them, he came up behind my chair and put his arms around me. He then started undoing my pants. At first I told him not to do that. He told me I would go to hell if he didn't touch me and bless my whole body. I was scared and couldn't say anything. He picked me up out of the chair and began to pull down my pants and my underwear. He then laid me on the table and began to fondle my little penis. Then he kissed me and licked my penis, saying he was blessing me. I left when he finally let me go. I asked my friend if the priest ever did that to him. He told me the priest did it to him 10 times and that, " it's his way of blessing you!

"I was again molested by this priest who did the same thing to me on at least two dozen different meetings. This is the main reason for my dislike of the Catholic Church. I have been sexually molested by at least

10 other fathers or brothers in the Catholic Church.

"About July 4 of 1976, I met a man named Walter Carlson, while in Hanscom Park in Omaha. My family was having a picnic or reunion. I was by myself near the tires when he and two boys came over and began talking to me and asking questions. We played for a while and when he got ready to leave, he asked me if I'd like to come to his house sometime and play with his nephews. I said yes. I gave him my address and phone number."

"When I first went over, I played games with other boys who were there. This went on for several weeks,. All we'd do is play games or watch cartoons. Some of the boys were sexual with each other and with me, which didn't bother me since we were all kids.

"After awhile he started showing regular movies to us. Then the movies started having men and women engaging in sexual activity. Within six months, it was movies with adult men and boys engaging in sex. It was then that Carlson began touching me, at first on the outside of my clothes, then he undid my pants and fondled me and put his mouth on my penis! He also had me perform oral sex on him. He had us performing anal sex on one another while he watched or took photos of us."

Bonacci's recollections continue, "It was through Walter Carlson I met about two dozen other adult men, many of whom I knew by first names although some only by nicknames. Carlson also asked me to perform sexual acts with other boys and men for several men, who filmed the sex and sold the photos as kiddie porn."

"I honestly never learned the last names of all the boys I was with. Most of them were older than me and had been involved for several years more than me. Carlson and several men referred to us as pets and used us any way they wanted to use us. I had oral sex with four men whose names were Todd, Albert, Joe and also a guy named Tank.

"In 1977, I met most of the men at parties either at the Carlson's home or at Joe Burke's house. (Bonacci had met Burke in December of 1976. He didn't like him because "he tried to get me to do disgusting things with him and others." In early 1977 he met Kent Bruner.)

"I had been forced to have oral sex with adult men including Carlson almost every week. There was a man who's name was Anderson who is not the Harry Anderson whom I also met at Carlson's home in 1978. I only had oral sex with that Anderson one time, unlike Harry Anderson.

"I traveled with Walter Carson and several boys to Adventureland in Des Moines in the summers of 1977, 1978 and 1980 I went with him to Worlds of Fun in Kansas City, Missouri. Mr Carlson was a pro and knew how to keep everyone quiet without a lot of threats.

"In 1979, I started going around with Carlson and the men connected with him much less and hung out on The Milk Run and around the old Diamond Bar and the Stagedoor and the Cave (all bars). About the only reason I went to Carlson's was to take part in parties or in kiddie porn movies which were filmed at several different places."

"Over the next few years I went out with Carlson less and less and then he vanished altogether for a while. I have seen him since then at the Leavenworth Café in September or October of 1989, though I didn't say anything to him. He's out now running around looking for more young boys to molest. He was with one the last time I saw him.

It is noteworthy to point out here that Walter Carlson and Joe Burke were among 13 men arrested in Omaha in connection with a large pornography/pedophile case. Joe Burke had a library of 2,000 videos and 10,000 photos, which were confiscated. Convicted in December of 1985, Carlson was paroled in February of 1989. This was referred to in a 12/20/85 article in the Omaha World Herald.

Noreen meets Paul Bonacci

I first learned about Paul when Private Investigator Roy Stephens from Omaha Nebraska called to tell me that a prison inmate had confessed to the kidnapping of Johnny. It was March 1991. Roy brought a dozen tape recordings from his meetings with Paul Bonacci. As we sat listening to them, I was annoyed at the reaction of John Gosch Sr. He seemed less than interested, almost bored. He finally fell asleep and slept through the remainder of the tapes.

Roy explained it was very important to not talk to anyone about Paul Bonacci, he wanted the opportunity to check out the information Paul had given him. So I agreed with him and did not talk about it to anyone. Roy stated he wanted me to go to the prison and talk with Bonacci. I told him I would but wanted to wait until I could go and not display any anger or frustration with him. Paul has Multiple Personality Disorder and information came out very fragmented as he changed from one personality to another. I knew that if I showed emotion in his presence that he would clam up. Roy said, "he was counting on the shock value of having Johnny's mother come to see him, thinking that it would cause Paul to release even more information about his part in the kidnapping." I told Roy I would let him know when I could go to the prison. Upon hearing all the details of the kidnapping and sexual abuse of my son, I wanted the time to process this information.

It was only a few weeks later that I received a phone call from a friend, telling me that WHO-TV our NBC station was running a story about "THE INMATE IN NEBRASKA WHO CONFESSED TO KIDNAP-

PING JOHNNY GOSCH". I couldn't believe it, no one had called me nor had I talked to any TV station. With in two hours of the TV news report, I received a visit from the FBI, two agents arrived to question me as to Paul Bonacci's claims of his helping to kidnap Johnny.

The FBI agents would not accept the fact that I did not have a great many details concerning Paul Bonacci. They went into their "MUTT AND JEFF" style questioning. No doubt, the FBI had already contacted the Omaha Field Office and knew exactly all of the details about Bonacci and their visit to me was simply to harass me. I finally told them to leave my office that I had no more information to give them and suggested they call John DeCamp, Bonacci's attorney and ask him questions. I had never met or spoken to John DeCamp.

Later I returned home to fix dinner. John did not come home that night. Finally around five a.m. the next morning, I heard him coming in the door. I went downstairs and asked "Where were you all night?" He didn't reply. I asked again "Where were you all night? Did you hear the news? Someone released the story about Bonacci! Did you know the FBI came to question me?" He turned around and with a smirk on his face he said "Hell, I knew about Bonacci for almost two years and kept it from you. I have been to the prison to interview him!" My mouth fell open, I could hardly believe what I was hearing from John. Why would a father keep information so important about his son ..... From his mother? John would not say any more, I knew he was hiding something but he became almost withdrawn every time the name Bonacci was mentioned.

I didn't learn until 1997 that John Gosch did go to John DeCamp's office, bringing another woman who looked like me, he introduced her as his wife, Noreen Gosch. Together they all went to the prison to interview Bonacci for the first time. John Sr. felt that he was telling the truth and called in Roy Stephens a private investigator to begin the long process of questioning Paul Bonacci about the kidnapping of Johnny.

I called Roy Stephens to let him know that the TV coverage was everywhere concerning Bonacci. He decided to drive to Des Moines. When he arrived, I confronted him with the information I had just learned about Bonacci, John Gosch and the visit to the prison. Roy acted very "sheepish" and kept looking at John Sr. for an answer. I knew there had been some type of collusion between them but neither one of them would talk about it.

Meanwhile, there were many local and network TV stations covering the story. This appeared to be a big break in the Johnny Gosch Case and people were very happy for us. However, around the next corner came the big slap in the face, one I was not prepared for .....Law enforcement considered Paul Bonacci a NUT because he had Multiple Personality Disorder. The West Des Moines police refused to interview him, saying he was not credible. The FBI refused to talk with him. Every word of Paul's confession had been hand carried to the FBI Headquarters in Omaha Nebraska.

I wasn't sure what was going on but it was beginning to look like the FBI was covering up something. Their refusal to talk to Paul, coupled with their visit and harassment of me directly after the first news report of Bonacci's confession. We had problems with the FBI from the beginning of Johnny's kidnapping but I would have thought this was different... we had someone actually confessing and giving details of the kidnapping.

During the months, Roy Stephens continued to work on the Bonacci information he was able to confirm details of Bonacci's repeated connection to Johnny over the years. He also gave us the names of the other people who participated in kidnapping Johnny. How they took him. Where they took him. What they did to him after they arrived at their destination. Who purchased Johnny and where he was taken after the first two weeks captivity. For the first time in all these years, we knew "WHO... HOW....WHY Johnny was kidnapped! Our first decent break and **LAW ENFORCEMENT REFUSES TO TOUCH IT!**

I contacted Roy Stephens three months later and told him I was ready to go to the prison and to set up an appointment with the warden. I decided to call WHO-TV and ask Jim Strickland, a reporter who had covered Johnny's case extensively to go to the prison with me and record on video all of Paul Bonacci's statements. I wanted a video record of this meeting. I also asked John Gosch to go to the prison with me.... He refused saying he was much too busy and couldn't make it. Again, I thought this was very strange because it was also his son who was kidnapped and yet he seemed so disinterested in following up with Bonacci.

The morning came to drive to the prison; it is about a three-hour trip to Lincoln Nebraska. Jim Strickland and the camera crew were to meet me in Lincoln outside the prison. Roy wanted to meet me at the Denny's Restaurant, leave my car and ride with him to the prison. When I arrived at the restaurant, Roy was waiting for me. I hopped into his car and off we went to the prison. As we drove up, I thought to myself .... I wonder what it is like to be behind bars, unable to have any freedoms. It must be awful.

As we entered the lobby area of the prison office, we were told that we would have to walk through maximum security .... This was a very frightening experience, the male prisoners were lined up against the bars and would yell sexually explicit jeers at me. I guess it had been a while since they had seen a woman. Finally all of the men in our group circled around me and I walked with them but inside of this protective circle, until we passed through the maximum-security area.

There was a very large room in which we were told to wait. Jim Strickland and his cameraman were busy setting up their equipment. I looked across the room and made eye contact with Paul Bonacci as the guards led him into the room in chains. At that moment, I knew for certain that I was about to hear exactly what happened to my son once again but this time the man would be sitting across from me at the table. I did something I have never done before throughout this case .... I fainted.... collapsing on to the floor behind the table, the camera man saw me begin to faint and ran to cushion my fall so I would not hit my head against the concrete wall. Both he and Jim helped me on to a chair as I collected myself to meet Paul Bonacci. WHO TV was gracious not to show my collapsing when they aired this story on Paul.

The guards removed the chains and Paul was brought to the table. Roy Stephens introduced Paul to me by saying "Paul, this is Johnny's Mom". Paul immediately broke into tears saying, "I am sorry... I am so sorry". I told him that " I don't blame you, please tell me what happened to my son". At that point, Paul hesitated and stammered but slowly began to tell me how the kidnapping took place. He talked about a man named Emilio who was the driver of the car and also had identified a composite drawing done by an artist I had hired based on the statements from witnesses. Paul said Johnny had been photographed about two weeks before the kidnapping. Those photographs were brought to a motel the night before the kidnapping to show Emilio who they were going to kidnap the next morning. The man who brought the photo was identified as Sam Soda. Paul had earlier chosen Sam's picture in a photo line up of twenty-five pictures.

He explained he had been ordered to lay in the trunk of Emilio's car along with Mike another boy brought along to help with the kidnapping. After Emilio made his first contact with Johnny by asking for directions, then leaving the area, only to turn around and go back to where Johnny was sitting in his wagon, preparing to deliver his papers. Paul and Mike were told to get into the back seat, lie on the floor and cover up with a blanket and to wait until they heard Emilio begin to speak to Johnny again. They did as they were told. Paul said Emilio had placed the barrel of a gun in his mouth and told him he would shoot him if he did not do as he was told.

When they pulled up along side Johnny sitting in his wagon, Paul and Mike started to talk to him to lure him over to the car. They opened up the car door, Paul said a man named Tony had been told to come from behind Johnny and push him into the car. Paul and Mike held Johnny down and placed a cloth with chloroform over Johnny's face, as the Emilio ran the stop sign and turned left onto 42nd street and headed towards the Interstate 80.

There actually had been three vehicles in the area. The car Emilio drove, a van parked several blocks away and a green station wagon on the street north of the kidnap site. Sitting at a vantage point and being able to see the entire kidnapping. The green station wagon had the type of rear door which opened from the top and the side hinge. It was a Ford product, only available for certain years. After learning the description of the car, I telephoned the Motor Vehicles Dept. asking for a list of vehicles owned by "Sam", the man identified by Paul Bonacci. Bingo.... Motor Vehicles had the entire list of vechicles owned by "Sam" and one of them was a Ford station wagon, green with the type of rear dor which opened from the side or top.

The plan for the kidnapping was to grab Johnny, Emilio to meet with the driver of the van which was Tony and they would transfer Johnny's body to the van. Then all three vehicles would leave West Des Moines in different directions and rendezvous at a farmhouse just outside Sioux City Iowa. A man named Charlie Kerr owned the farmhouse.

Johnny was kept in a room in the basement. The room was long and narrow, it had a dirt floor in that part of the basement, windows were boarded up with only slits of light coming through. The walls were painted a very dull medium green shade. He was kept bound and gagged most of the time. They administered drugs to Johnny. Paul and Mike were instructed to have sex with Johnny while Emilio, Sam and Charlie stood by watching and snapping pictures.

Paul told me "he and Mike talked to Johnny telling him that if he behaved and did what they told him to do..... he would live." He reported Johnny was very upset and kept crying wanting to go home.

Paul said, "They worked on Johnny making him feel guilty for what had happened to him. Telling him his parents didn't want him. He would be killed if he tried to escape from them."

They kept Johnny there for nearly fourteen days. There were numerous occasions of sexual abuse during this time. After this period of time a man that Paul called "The Colonel " who paid Emilio (the driver of the car) $15,000 cash for Johnny. The "Col" took Johnny to Colorado. He no doubt ordered his kidnapping. Paul did not see Johnny again until

1983 and 1984 in London Ontario Canada at an "encampment" where they kept kids being used by this pornography/prostitution ring. Paul last saw Johnny in 1986 in Colorado at an orgy held at a ranch owned by the "Col". Johnny had been renamed "Mark" and his hair was dyed black.

Johnny told Paul at that meeting "He tried to get away down the mountain but was tracked down by the men who were always at the compound/ranch and beaten then "branded with a hot branding iron". They often did this to kids who tried to get away. Telling them they would always be able to track them down due to the brand, which would always be on their body. Most of the boys were branded on their shoulder, hip, thigh or calf of the leg.

The Rocking "X" Brand

The brand used on Johnny and many other children. The brand was located as a Registered Brand in the state of Colorado by our Private Detectives. The Brand Registry Office would only tell us that the brand had been used but was not now in use by any ranchers in the area

A number of years later, Paul received letters from two friends saying that Johnny had been taken to Mexico by "the Col." he had surgery and went back to being a blond.

The television coverage Jim Strickland did was in the form of a series on Paul Bonacci. This was fed to the networks; as a result we received a phone call from America's Most Wanted. They were interested in doing Johnny's story and of course wanted to include all the information about Paul Bonacci's confession. I had the first of many conversations with Paul Sparrow, the producer who came to Des Moines to do preliminary interviews and line up all the details for the filming of the show.

They were to come to Des Moines and spend days doing the reenactment of the kidnapping, using actors and actress's to do all the scenes, even a little dog like Johnny's was hired. The day they did the actual kidnap scene, it was necessary for the dog "to bark on cue". The lady who owned the dog stood off camera and turned on a "dust buster" which the dog was afraid of and would then bark on "cue".

Paul Sparrow contacted Sam Soda and they created a scene in which Sam was giving me the details of the second kidnapping which was to come. All Paul would say to me about his discussion with Sam was that .... Sam is an unusual guy. The following day I received a phone call from Sam, he was all upset and nervous. He was almost out of breath and kept saying "America's Most Wanted thinks I had something to do with Johnny's kidnapping." I thought it interesting to say the least, that this would unnerve Sam to the point that he would call me after all these years. It had been almost seven years since I had talked to him.

Paul Sparrow and all of the entourage of people who accompany America's Most Wanted, then left Des Moines and went to Omaha Nebraska to interview Paul Bonacci, John De Camp and Roy Stephens. They were in Nebraska several days, returned to Des Moines to do a little more follow up filming in the area. Paul Sparrow came to our home the night before he left to go back to Washington and said to me "is this whole story real or is it some CAREFULLY CRAFTED HOAX!" I was outraged and informed him I didn't have to take that kind of remark from anyone. He later apologized for his remark but that he wanted to see just how committed I really was to solving this case.

The Nebraska Leadership Conference had published a small book called "A Carefully Crafted Hoax"

The title was misleading, it told in very matter of fact detail about a cover up of child sexual abuse, child porn, Satanism, and murder, that was being investigated by the Nebraska Legislature. The book debunked the Omaha World Herald stories that portrayed the investigation as a carefully crafted hoax. It became obvious that people in high places can triumph over children who had the backing of the Nebraska Legislature

The day came when America's Most Wanted were about to air the program. I received another call from Paul Sparrow saying "The FBI contacted them and told them to **KILL THE GOSCH STORY.**"

In other words, the FBI did not want Johnny's story aired by America's Most Wanted. John Walsh and Paul Sparrow stood up to the FBI and told them they were going ahead with our story no matter what they said or did. The FBI evidently backed down and didn't interfere any further because the show aired in November 1992. The show received more telephone calls from the public than any other show in its history. Leads were coming from all over the country concerning Emilio and Charlie.

One of the many leads, which came in from the program, was a letter addressed to "Johnny's family". It arrived at our home with no street address or zip code..... It just said "Johnny Gosch's Family... Des Moines, Iowa."

The letter was from a young man, calling himself Jimmy. He described being involved in a prostitution/pornography ring. This ring also kidnapped children. Jimmy had been a runaway and was grabbed after he had taken to the streets. His parents suffered through other runaway episodes with him and hadn't searched too hard for Jimmy this time. In his letter, he went on to say that he not only knew my son but had spent many years with him. He told me he, Johnny and another boy stole a car to get away from the people, who had held them captive for years.

Jimmy sounded pleading and pathetic in his letter, saying he wanted desperately to meet with me and he would be in touch soon. Within a few weeks, I had received four letters from him, no return address on any of the envelopes. The final letter indicated he would call me when he decided to come to Des Moines.

Late one night in January 1993, I received a phone call, when I answered a voice said, "well I am here". I looked at the clock it was almost one a.m. I responded by saying "you are where". He said, " this is Jimmy and I am at the train station in Osceola, Iowa... can you come and get me?" Then he said "oh by the way, do you have any warm clothing, someone my stole coat while I was sleeping on the train." I didn't bother to check the weather, temperature or road conditions... I just bolted for Osceola.

I got up, hurriedly got dressed, ran to the basement to get some warm sweaters, gloves, hat and coat. Off I went into the winter night. It was not only cold but snowing heavily. Osceola is nearly an hour's drive from Des Moines. When I got to the train station, there he stood on the platform, huddled with a blanket wrapped around him.... all alone. Jimmy was about five foot five, brown hair, square shaped face, brown eyes and slight build. He looked to be about 22 or 23.

I pulled up and he jumped in the car. He knew who I was due to television and he was the only one there in the middle of the night. I felt safe in assuming that he was "Jimmy." When he got in the car, he said he almost froze to death waiting for me to get there, because the train station was locked up and he had nowhere to go till I arrived. I suggested we go to the restaurant/truck stop on the edge of town and get something hot to eat and drink. That sounded pretty good to Jimmy as he was tired, cold and hungry.

As we sat there talking, he related to me how these boys had been used sexually, by wealthy, politically connected pedophiles in this country. He said they kidnapped many children throughout the years. He also had with him some maps of the United States. He had enlarged copies of Arizona, New Mexico, Colorado and Utah, he showed me the areas where they had "safe houses." Places in remote areas where the kids would be kept and it was too far to ever walk out. Some of the boys had tried and were dealt with severely, usually beatings and torture as an example to the others not, to try the same thing.

As I sat there listening, I thought to myself, I wonder if this kid is on the level, anyone could tell these stories. I asked him a few questions about Johnny. He then said, " I want to show you something".... With that he leaned over and pulled up the pant leg of his jeans. When I looked over I was horrified to see a scar of a "brand" on his leg. It spanned approximately five inches in height and three inches in width. It was the same brand Paul Bonacci had shown me. The Rocking "X" Brand. He explained that most all the kids had the brand somewhere on their body. The men told the kids, this was one way they could always track them.

Jimmy went on to tell me, I had created an insurance policy for Johnny with all the publicity over the years. He was known as the "golden boy or celebrity boy and the perpetrators could get more money for his services, so it kept him alive." It wasn't what I wanted to hear! But it did tell me that all the efforts counted for something. It kept my boy alive until he could break free.

After they escaped, Jimmy said, "Johnny and the other boy had gone with him to his parent's home and stayed for several days." Jimmy's parents gave them food, some warm clothing and a place to stay. After a few days, Johnny and the other boy left, saying they were going to live somewhere and would be in touch with Jimmy soon.

Jimmy later learned an Indian tribe had taken them in and given them shelter on a reservation. He explained there was no way any of the boys would contact their parents nor go to the police, they were too afraid. I asked why Jimmy felt he could go home to his parents. He replied that his dad only thought he had run away, he had no idea anything worse happened to him. I accepted his answer because I didn't want to challenge him, while he was in the mood to talk.

Before I knew it…. The sun had come up and it was morning. I asked Jimmy if I could call a private detective to come and visit with him. He said it would be "okay". I telephoned Roy Stephens in Omaha, Nebraska; he said he would be there as soon as he could. Roy arrived a couple hours later; Jimmy repeated the whole story for Roy as well. Then he showed him the brand; Roy had seen this before on Paul Bonacci.

Jimmy agreed to stay in the area for a while, so we could sort out some of the information. It was decided, he would return to Omaha with Roy. He could find him a place to stay. Once there, Jimmy was introduced to Paul Bonacci, John DeCamp and others. Much of what Jimmy told us matched the information we had gotten from Paul, a couple years earlier.

Jimmy told me his father was a CPA in a nearby state and I could talk to him if I wanted to do so. When I did hear from Jimmy's father, he told me about the night the boys came to his home, they were cold, tired and hungry.

After the two boys left, it was then Jimmy's father saw the America's Most Wanted show and realized one of the boys he helped was Johnny Gosch. Jimmy's father said he felt so badly and urged Jimmy to write the letter to me so I could learn more about Johnny. Not knowing for sure whom I was talking to on the phone, I sent a private detective to that city to check out the man. We did verify that he had a CPA firm and was indeed Jimmy's father.

During the time Jimmy was in Omaha, America's Most Wanted followed up on the story and what leads we had received. When I told Producer Paul Sparrow of Jimmy, he said they wanted to fly back out to the Midwest and do another update of the story. Plans were made for them to come the following week. When they arrived in the area, they interviewed me, Paul Bonacci, Jimmy, Roy Stephens and John DeCamp. Jimmy and Paul kept telling everyone there was a safe house located in the mountains in Colorado and they could take the film crew to it.

They set off on a trip to Colorado, Jimmy, Paul, Paul Sparrow, Roy Stephens and the crew. Once in the mountains, Paul Bonacci led them to the house. In the basement were cages where the boys had been kept when the adults were away from the site, to prevent the boys from "wandering away". It was all filmed and shown on America's Most Wanted in the updated show, in February 1993.

I intended to show these pictures in this book and repeatedly requested copies from America's Most Wanted. At first, they said they would send me the copies. I have waited over six months, with repeated requests. THEY NEVER SENT THE PHOTOS. I am not sure, if it is merely an oversight or someone didn't want these pictures shown again in this country.... perhaps the FBI stepped in once again. Is someone afraid that showing pictures of cages where kidnapped children were kept would be too much for the American people?

Despite the fact the information appeared in the updated TV show, no action was taken by any law enforcement. The FBI works very closely with America's Most Wanted .... Why was there no action taken?

After returning from Colorado, Paul Sparrow and Roy Stephens reported to me that every time the crew passed by a phone booth, Jimmy would yell, " I need to stop and make a call." He would jump out of the vehicle and run to the phone booth, make his call, acting very secretive. If anyone walked near him he would stop talking immediately.

Jimmy did not have a pocket full of quarters, nor a phone card of any kind...We can only assume, he was calling someone collect. He appeard to be reporting the every move of this expedition to someone. Roy Stephens told me he felt Jimmy was definitely working for someone and was sent here for a purpose...... to disrupt the investigation.

After three months, Jimmy left the area, returning to Wisconsin to live. Once there, he would call me "thirteen times a day", telling me that Johnny wanted to talk to me and would be showing up at my door unannounced, when I least expected it.

By spring of 1993, Jimmy faded from the scene. No one heard from him again. Only shawdowed pictures of him exist, he would never allow any other photo's to be taken. He insisted on having his face blacked out when he did the interview with America's Most Wanted.

"Jimmy"
The way he appeared in
America's Most Wanted

BONACCI DOCUMENTS

When John DeCamp, former Nebraska State Senator, began to represent Paul Bonaci, he received from Paul, diaries and various written records. DeCamp then turned said documents over to the Nebraska Legislature. To avoid the allegation that they had been fabricated/written all at one time. They were sent for forensic studies, which determined that they were prepared over a period of time. The result of the forensic study confirmed various inks and papers could be dated back to the 1980's. Bonacci wrote these diaries in order to try to keep his multiple personalities straight. Imagine, a dozen people inside one body all trying to communicate with each other. One deliberately created to add confusion, one to cause destruction.

Monarch? When? How? Why?

"I chose to write this as a very separate account aside of all other issues involved. This is, I believe, the most accurate and detailed writing on my total involvement with Monarch and any of it's programs, I was directly involved with."

... Paul Bonacci

Project Monarch was an outgrowth of Operation Paperclip. It brought Nazi scientists into this country with all of the technology they developed, by experimenting on prisoners in the concentration camps. Monarch was one of 149 sub-projects involving 23,000 victims in drug and mind control. It was the worst known misuse of governmental authority for illegal medical experiments to occur outside of the Nazi death camps...... Congressional Record

It all began to my best belief sometime in 1970. My family lived in South Omaha and my mother and father had divorced. My mother had also already gone through her second marriage. Sometime during this time period my mother had a girl baby-sit me and my brothers and sister. This girl whom I do not recall had an older man who was in the Air Force and lived close by and took me to his house when my mother was at work. This man had another man who had long dark hair and a beard and mustache do sexual things to me and to two other boys. I was about 3. The boys I believe named Gary or Greg and John were both about 8 to 10. This man would have anal sex with these two and have them have anal sex with me. These boys I discovered later were involved in the Monarch Program.

The man with the long hair would tell me he would kill me when he'd make me put his penis in my mouth. He was a very mean man and sometimes slapped me.

This man was also into Satanism and sacrificed a boy, I believe named Alec. This was I believe about Halloween time in 1970. I've told about this but since the last integration (Paul is speaking of communication with his alternate egos. He may have as many as 20) more things have become clear. So I'll write this and many events again simply to set things right.

That night I was taken to the house and was taken to the basement. The boys Gary or Greg who I'll refer to as simply Gary and John were both there. Also the Airman who was wearing a red and black robe and a girl maybe 13 years old was also there. The boys Gary and John took me in a room, undressed me and put me in a red robe, with a a funny band around me with weird symbols

on it. They also put on Red Robes and we had nothing on underneath them.

Bonacci goes on to describe in minute detail what was done to this child!

"This man then with my hands on the knife started stabbing the boy. He stabbed the boy in his stomach and both sides and then in the chest. When he did that the boy stopped moving altogether. He used my hands the whole time. After this they took me to the room again where I saw the men and girl eating the boys flesh. The man with long hair grabbed me and put the boys skin on me.

"At Offutt Air Base Monarch training was conducted. As an Air Force Historian, I knew this to be the number one Strategic Air Command Base in the Country. If The Soviet Union was to be bombed this is the Command Air Base that would launch major nuclear attack bombers against the Russians. Yet from the evidence of the treatment of children it would seem they were the one that should have been bombed. On such a base a civilian does not gain entry unless sponsored."

.....John Zielinski

At the Air Base we met the Doctor who was one of my commanders who I called Major. Both Gary and John were now about 11 or 12. This was during 1972 and 1973. Other kids I met there were Dave—Kelly—Matt—Brian—Jeremy-Tony-Bradley-John and -Cindy. There were total 10 boys in our group. Cindy was the one we were forced to beat up during our training.

During this time they would drug us and scare us with use of (demons-monsters) Men dressed in costumes most likely, they also had men have sex with us. When they would do different types of sex they would tell us a code and number.

The Doctor always came to protect us and he'd say that well for example Beta 1... etc. etc.
Gamma 107, which would have been for giving a guy b____ job. **Almost every military alter was begun as a sexual one. This was to destroy any worth they could feel to fight off things they did not feel right in doing."**

This training that Bonaci and other boys were undergoing even took precedent over school. He describes how he would be picked up and the school notified that he would not be there that day. The reader should understand that this activity was taking place on a high security Air Force Base. Dozens if not hundred of airman had to be knowledgeable about what was going on. This kind of activity was still going on at least into the 1990s if not at present. It is possible to investigate the facts of "government ritual child abuse" records must exists—witnesses are available. What is lacking is the will on the part of "big government" to investigate itself. What happened to checks and balance? What happened to justice? . It is not something to be found in the America government today. Any attempt such as Bonacci to report they have participated in a government program results in the total dismissal of the witness by all levels of government, local, state and federal.

Bonacci recalls, "During a trip to the house which was on the Air Base, I saw a Black man whom I believe now was Larry King, (this was fifteen years before the Franklin Credit Union was closed) I heard many times while at the house, my commander say that some big shot from somewhere was coming and he wanted two blond boys about 10. Or a thing like the Senator likes girls about 12 and wants them clean and smooth, which was pre-pubescent, no chest and virgin if possible. And I heard him say he wants a group of boys between 5 and 15 and he'll have friends to join the party. I heard him refer to congressmen, Generals, Colonels, Senators, governors and big businessmen, the owner of Brandies was mention several times, bankers, even diplomats from other countries. We boys were never told anything about anyone. I do know the bedroom most of the sexual activities took place had hidden cameras and microphones in it since they would show us boys how to get the men into positions so they could film sexual activities better or clearly...

What follows is a description of sexual acts they were forced to perform on various men. Bonaci writes my commander, and sometimes my handler, our handler as he refers to those in control of him.

"The training the Major did with us was in several areas. He and other trainers taught us to use sex as an instrument to gain control over others. We were taught that we were the greatest servants to our country by using our bodies to help gain control of the government in order for it to be strong. That we were hero's to give all we had. In other words they made us feel good about doing a disgusting job.

They used all kinds of codes and games to teach us things. They showed us how to make, bombs, traps, shelters. How to develop pictures and how to make gases and drug powders, weapons. How to use weapons, how to kill animals and showed us pressure points and karate. They never taught one alter very much, so they would use drugs or hypnosis which they taught us in order to create sub alters who were part of a more mature one but had separate functions which that alter did not know.

Writing as another of his alternate personalities Bonnaci said: They showed us how to build little bombs and how to make things to knock out people. Such as Chloroform." He was learning these things at Offutt Air Base, when he was five and six and seven years old. He was fourteen years when he placed chloroform over John Gosch's face. His techniques both sexual and violent, he learned at the top Air Force Base in the country.

"I also remember seeing Larry King at Offutt talking with my commander and other men, who worked with my commander, who I called or was told to call Major. I was never told his name and around us kids he never wore a tag. I learned pressure points and how to paralyze people.

The nature of the Bonnaci documents as explained by Paul Anthony Bonnaci present a thirteen and fourteen year old trained at Offutt AFB, SAC command trained as soldier and prostitute from the youngest age.

***Entry Log 10A300-61992 400-1600 Hrs PAB**

This notebook's first section is to be used for Military information and information that West Lee will be providing. Some information may be spread out but all information will be relayed exactly as originally stated with only spelling word corrections. Entries will be done as neatly as possible and no waste of paper will be made.

End entry Paul Anthony Bonnaci 10A300

***Entry Log 10A301-61992-405-1600 hrs**

The following information has been gathered thru several talks and from information provided from West Lee. In discussion with West Lee "I asked him the following questions 1. Why he was created and by whom? 2. Why he is needed to censor information 3. Why he has chose to disobey by protecting me.

His answers were direct and straight out. 1. He was created to block entry into a sensible store of information. Also to promote confusion and to jumble information. The person who created him was one of the men involved in Monarch. No name was ever given to him outside the code name. Alpha-Charlie-666-Delta. He also heard some men call him Gerry no last name available. 2. He was not to censor but more so keep certain sensitive information outside my realm of knowledge. He was to make reality-fiction 3. Because I had saved his life one time when he almost drowned when a man tried to drown him. He says I hit the guy with a board and helped him get away and run from the man.

The reader must understand that Paul and West Lee occupy the same body. West Lee was being conditioned when his main alter surfaced and hit the man with a board. Then together they ran.

West Lee then asked me to tell the following story about him. He is completely aware of all of my life as Paul or any other alter, who has lived in my outward appearing life. He has tried to help me thru Mikey, who when I thought we had integrated, he was actually helping Mikey get things put together: West Lee is very bright with a IQ of a Genius (unless he has to spell words). He can use most any object as a weapon and can create deadly or harmful chemicals out of common household chemicals.

He does not like to harm people but is trained in assassination skills and tactics.

West Lee then proceeds to tell Paul how to poison someone with a mushroom, how to use chloroform to disable a human, and how to make napalm using aluminum salt, laundry soap and gasoline, he lists poison after poison... such as uses for mustard gas. At the time this document was done Paul was around 14 to 15 years old. He had participated in satanic sacrifices, murders of a children, the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch and had received two special tours of the White House for his services. (See Conspiracy of Silence)

The Courier

Paul Bonnaci lived thru hell. In granting him a million dollar judgment against an imprisoned Larry King. Judge Urbom declared, "He has suffered burns, broken fingers, beatings of the head and face and other indignities over a period of eight years. He gave up a desired military career and received threats on his life. He is a victim of multiple personality disorder, involving as many as fourteen distinct personalities.

Judge Urbom stated: "the plaintiff was subjected to repeated sexual assault, false imprisonment, infliction of extreme emotion distress, organized and directed satanic rituals, force the plaintiff to "scavenge" for children to be a part of the defendant King's sexual abuse and pornography ring, forced the plaintiff to engage in numerous sexual contacts with the defendant King and others and participate in deviate sexual games and masochistic orgies with other minor children".

This is a judgment for Paul Bonacci, Memorandum of Decision by United States District Court Judge Urbom on Feb 22, 1999. Note that he does say Bonacci participated in satanic rituals (many that resulted in the death of an adult or child). Remember Judge Urbom states Bonacci is truthful.

If Bonacci's statement concerning the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch is truth, and the satanic murders are truthful.... Why then has the West Des Moines Police, FBI and Governor Vilsack of Iowa chosen to ignore this information. Could it be Vilsack's close connection with former Governor Bob Kerrey of Nebraska? Could it be the WDMPD is protecting someone? Is the FBI negligent or criminally involved? This is clearly new evidence in the Johnny Gosch case and should have been investigated immediately following the ruling of Judge Urbom on February 22, 1999.

Bonacci telephoned me late one night, in March 1999, telling me that "Mike" one of the boys, who acted as "a courier", would be traveling through Omaha within 48 hours.... If I wanted to send a message to Johnny, I needed to overnight something the following day.

I did write a letter to Johnny and sent some family photos it was a few days later, Paul called me to tell me the message had been picked up at the drop point. He said it might take weeks before there would be a reply. Along with my letter, I had sent some family photos, thinking it might bring a response faster. I had also asked Johnny to designate a meeting place somewhere in the country and I would be there. It was at the time 20/20 was finishing their filming and they had pressured me to get him on film either through a video or photo… they felt it would be more compelling to have him tell a part of the story. It was explained that I could video him and yet not reveal his location.

I received a verbal response through Paul, telling me that they (the boys) had a meeting and it was decided they would all remain in hiding. They felt even though they could and would trust me, it was too much of a risk to their lives, as I would have no doubt been followed. There was then a statement …commenting on something in one of the family photo's I had sent, which told me Johnny had seen the message and it was really him responding through Bonacci.

Paul Bonacci had the attributes of a leader. The other boys looked to him. Johnny Gosch and others communicated with and thru him. In one of the letters he had shown me, it said; J.G. had plastic surgery in Mexico and went back to being a blonde. What follows is a letter from one of those who escaped what we suspect is Project Monarch and has found refuge with Kansas City Satanists. It is postmarked from Kansas City, Missouri Aug 20, 1992 and sent to Bonacci in Nebraska with no return address.

The post office stamped: "All mail must have a full name and return address Per DCS Rule, etc. It begins:

Dear Paul:

I wanted to let you know I am doing well. I am with friends here in Mizzou. They got Dicky and almost Lester, but Lester got away. Ricky is so doped he can't get away.

Our friends MC and MT both are well. They travel lots and so it's tough to spot them. Your nemesis Reme ask Jamy. Jamy is dying in some foreign hospital of aids. MT want's Jamy to get you his letter from a few years ago.

I know you as Paul, Pablo, Jamy and Mikey, or Poppy the Jungle Boy. Ask Mikey about Poppy (referring to one of Paul's alters apparently)

That stuff I gave C was heavy to get all those cruds. They won't get me that's sure enough. I can't write my name or address since I'm moving around all the time.

We will come to you when it's safe. It's safe for you because they are more scared of you if you're killed. Strange, right!

You will have to ask Jamy to decode this letter since I use int. I work doing odd jobs and get paid under the table. I don't even exist to anyone. I as Jamy knows was raised to be sacrificed (see The Finders) Born in a house so if no one can trace me that's why. My parents are protected by the FBI who works inside the Church of California, LaVey's group. They are planning to get a child from the Chicago area in September for the fall Solstice. They will take anyone now, so it may end up a street boy. I am a victim and so is MT and MK. They tried to get a kid from Omaha for the summer solstice. They didn't though. They got one from someplace in the south. I think a couple gave up to the police, they wouldn't say it was a sacrifice thought I bet.

Well I got to go for now. I will write more when I get something new.

Your Friend

P.S. Enclosed is a bad photo of me at 9. Bet you didn't know my hair was brown. A friend of mine got me this picture. The back was torn off, O, well. (Probably identification—many of these kids do not know who they are or where they came from)

At times Paul is able to send messages to Johnny Gosch and other communicate thru him. Note that his friend thinks the publicity is what has kept Paul alive.

FEDERAL FORENSIC ASSOCIATES, INC.
Post Office Box 31567 · Raleigh, North Carolina 27612 · (919) 848-3696

January 14, 1991

Barbara J. Erickson
Handwriting Examiner
P.O. Box 1618
Scottsbluff, NE 69363-1618

RE: 1983 Appointment Book - Ink Examination

Exhibits

A 1983 Appointment Book with the months January and February removed and the printed numbers changed.

REPORT OF LABORATORY EXAMINATION

A chemical and physical examination was performed on the written entries of the referenced exhibit with the following results.

1. A total of five (5) different ink formulations were found in the exhibit. Three (3) blue ball pen, One (1) black ball pen and One (1) black Non-ball pen.

2. All of the above referenced ink formulations, except for the black non-ball pen, are similar to standard ink formulations which were available in 1983. The black non-ball pen ink formulation is similar to one manufactured by the Papermate Pen Co. and availalbe as the Accupoint Pen. The first availability date of this instrument is being researched at this date, but is believed to be in the mid-1980's. For this reason the fact that the days in the exhibit have been altered to reflect the days of 1985 is significant. Results of this inquiry will be forwarded at the earliest possible moment.

3. A relative aging examination was performed between several entries of the exhibit and known dated writings of the same ink formulations maintained in this laboratory. Results of this examination were either inconclusive in nature or indicated that the exhibit was not prepared within the last 1.5 years. A more specific determination of preparation date could not be made.

Bonacci grieves for all the other children who were kidnapped, raped and abused for the Monarch program/MKUltra.
He has done his best at great risk to right the wrongs.

A Man Called Rusty

It is hard to believe that even as we complete this book actions are being taken to silence those who have knowledge of the Franklin Affair and the kidnapping of Johnny. Phones are ringing, faxes are faxing. The Internet is alive with new information on Rusty Nelson?

If one picture is worth a thousand words then Rusty is the man to turn to because he has been the chief photographer for Larry (Lawrence King). King ran a child prostitution and blackmail ring. King's connections are to the highest officials in this land and to Craig Spence identified by the newspaper "The Washington Times" as CIA connected. Spence dabbled in child kidnapping, to supply the needs of his many customers, which included CIA's once highly secret MK Ultra/Monarch Project. The July 29, 1989, The Washington Times front-page article screamed. "Call Boys Given Midnight Tour of White House"

The Times said all kinds of investigations were going on. The FBI, the Secret Service, the Washington Metropolitan Police all were involved. Toward the end of the story, the paper stated: "It is suspected that children are being kidnapped off the streets of America and forced into prostitution and other perversions."

According to Paul Rodriguez who co-authored the above article, the paper eventually did sixty stories. " Rodriguez: We were able to do it thru the mother lode provided us of credit cards receipts and cancelled checks. And then lists of the clients. The prosecutors had all this stuff... there was possibly 20,000 documents. They sealed the entire record by court order." All material gathered by all branches of law enforcement were also sealed. Rodriguez describes for the viewers of "Conspiracy of Silence" how this was done.

Here's how Ted L. Gunderson, former Senior Officer in Charge of FBI operations in California sees this situation.. Since his retirement, he has been relentlessly tracking down those who abuse children whether in the name of Satan/CIA, the North American Man Boy Love Association, or like Larry King for fun profit and blackmail.

"Russell (Rusty) was a central character in the original Franklin Credit Union scandal, which occurred approximately ten years ago. Since then, he has had in his possession large amounts of physical evidence, including photographs, that implicate prominent law enforcement and political figures in crimes of child abuse, child pornography, and kidnapping, drug smuggling, money laundering, and illegal campaign financing. This also appear to be tied to the Iran Contra drugs for arms affair and illegal activities by the FBI and CIA. In Rusty Nelson 's statement of June 22, 2000, He also implicates some of the highest political figures in this country.

Over the years, much of his evidence has been confiscated from Rusty Nelson and never returned. Some of it remains hidden.

Rusty Nelson was on probation from Oregon and working in Nebraska since February 7, 1999 when he testified in Nebraska on behalf of Paul Bonacci in a civil suit against Larry King, a central figure/perpetrator in the above activities. (Bonacci was awarded 1 million in damages)

In May 2000, Rusty Nelson was taken into custody for a "probation violation" with no explanation as to the nature of violation. On June 19, 2000, an extradition hearing was heard at Columbus, Nebraska. Neither the persecuting attorney nor the public defender were informed of the details of the probation violation. Rusty Nelson was not present during the hearing. John De Camp, Rusty's lawyer, reports that the hearing was initially scheduled for July 6, 2000, but it was moved up to June 19 without notifying interested parties. The outcome of the hearing was that Judge Frank Skorupa, Platte Count Court in Nebraska ordered Nelson returned to Oregon."

This was part of a report entitled "Russell Nelson…Waiting to Be Killed published on the World Wide Web. On June 28, 2000, while John DeCamp was out of the country when authorities shipped Rusty back to Oregon.

Larry King minced no words on those around him and told them he could have them killed and it would be declared a suicide. Both Alisha Owens and Troy Boner lost brother's to so called suicides after they spoke out too loudly of the sexual abuse the had endured and observed.

In the United States we never think of an individual as a "political prisoner". But Russell Nelson and a number of other witnesses connected to the Franklin Credit Union investigation certainly fit that category. It was significant that the officials chose to move Rusty while DeCamp was out of the country. DeCamp has been the only defender for Rusty in Nebraska.

In 1988, John DeCamp, received a call from a detective in the Oregon State Patrol, who advised him they had arrested Rusty Nelson. Nelson, they said had in his possession thousands of pictures of children and other items, which the detective described as pornographic.

After several trips to Oregon and a great deal of paperwork, De Camp succeeded in arranging for Rusty to be placed on probation in Oregon, then permitted to return to Nebraska... where on February 5, 1999, he testified as an expert witness as to the involvement of Larry King with Paul Bonnaci.

The pictures taken by Rusty Nelson and obtained from authorities in Oregon were presented in evidence in the civil suit. The judge ruled that De Camp could view them, but that he could not make note of them in any way. The judge then placed a gag order on him...stating he could never reveal their contents under pain of disbarment. The judge stated the pictures could not be made public, as they would destroy the reputations of respectable citizen in the community. After they were reviewed by DeCamp they were permanently sealed by order of the court.

I hope the question is in the reader's mind. If these "respectable citizens" of Nebraska and Washington D.C. were caught in the act of having sex with children, are they indeed a "respectable citizen " who deserve every protection the court can give them. Or are they dirty perverts whose station in life renders them immune from prosecution no matter what their crimes"

Americans know little of the books that are censored due to "national security" or videos which are never bradcast as with "Conspiracy of Silence" or ABC 20/20...The Johnny Gosch Story..

In the Lincoln/Omaha area alone 80 children were identified as part of Larry King child prostitution ring. In Washington DC and other major cities in the country many children are involved in similar circumstances. In March 18, 1999, Rusty was featured on the Richard Boyden Talk show in Kansas City, Mo. KCXL 1140, a talk radio station. Here he discussed former Governor and now U.S., Senator Bob Kerrey's involvement and noted that King also ran a Day Care center in Washington D.C.

John De Camp reported that Rusty's testimony is consistent with that of Paul Bonacci. Bonacci had been used and abused since he was a small child, by priests, by Satanists and by politicians. He has admitted and detailed his participation in the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch in September of 1982. In the "Conspiracy of Silence" video Bonacci reveals that he was given a midnight tour of the White House once in 1981 and again after Johnny's kidnapping. It was arranged by Craig Spence, a so-called lobbyist, whose man service was furnishing young boys to anyone in Washington, who could pay with cash or his government expense account.

Rusty stated as a private photographer for Larry King, his duties included taking photographs surreptitiously of specific people. It was his job to make sure to photograph certain people if they "got together". In his testimony, John De Camp asked Rusty Nelson, "Who was at these parties?"

Nelson replied:" Politicians, dignitaries, wealthy business people... young people and Larry....

Nelson testified that he not only took pictures for King, but secretly kept rolls of film, which he mailed "home to himself. Rusty testified, he secretly also took other incriminating documents, including audiotapes, computer disks, and paper copies of documents including ledgers, without King's knowledge. He testified that he often mailed the documents back to his home, again secretly.

Rusty explains his attempt to retain these documents in his possession for years was insurance that he stayed alive. He testified that Larry King "flat out told me" that he had "taken out a man" named Charlie Rogers and made it look like a suicide; "This was another deal, I believe, through Wadman (then Omaha Chief of Police}" Nelson testified to one direct threat on his life by Larry King, and in the ensuing years, many threats conveyed with symbols that Larry King used to mean: "Drop it. Or you're going to get burned. He testified that he was shot at twice each time following the symbolic message. And in a statement from his cell, he indicated in writing on June 22, 2000, that he had been shot at for a third time.

Gunderson and DeCamp have made it clear that the extra legal maneuvers against Rusty were designed for only one thing... to put Rusty away before he can expose any more important figures in Washington D.C.

It was Rusty Nelson, who gave pictures and other documents to Gary Caradori July 11, 1990, the day of the fatal flight, which killed Caradori and his eight-year-old son A.J.

Caradori called Senator Loren Schmit and told him he had "the smoking gun." Caradori told the Senator, he would fly home that night but his plane exploded in mid-air. The wreckage was spread over nearly a mile of cornfield, near the town of Aurora, Illinois. Coincidentally, where Wadman, former Omaha Police Chief, had become the new Chief of Police.

A farmer witness said he saw a fireball then heard an explosion. Caradori's brief case and the rear seat of the plane vanished, but according to Sandy Caradori, her son's backpack came thru virtually intact. She said "the FBI seized the backpack, containing A.J.'s camera, finally after weeks, it was returned to her. The FBI had gotten the pictures developed from the camera " They apparently wanted to verify A.J.'s camera had not been used to take any incriminating photos.

A sheriff's deputy on site began picking up photographs given to Caradori by Rusty.... reportedly of recognizable politicians with children. It was reported there were "porn pictures scattered in the field". The deputy stated the FBI, who told him to leave, snatched the photos from his hands and to keep his mouth shut. The deputy left but did not keep his mouth shut. Less than a year later, he was severely injured in a car crash that killed his wife. He can no longer work. He is not inclined to talk.

The wreckage of the plane was examined on a military base rather than at a location under the control of civilian personnel. The crash was ruled an "accident" by government officials and not an act of sabotage.

June 30th, 2000,Ted Gunderson received a phone call from Pam Purdie, Rusty Nelson's fiancée, acting as John DeCamp's assistant, received daily reports from Rusty by phone. He was only allowed to phone his lawyer or someone associated with is lawyer. Rusty was transported from Columbus Nebraska to Omaha, Nebraska on June 29th. In route from Columbus to Omaha, his record sheet for taking medication disappeared and authorities were giving him the wrong epileptic medicine at the wrong time.

Purdie reports, he had an epileptic seizure the night of the 29th and injured himself quite seriously but was ignored by authorities. He stated they refused to give him a clean towel to clean up the blood. Rusty believes they transferred him to Omaha because he refused to take a Tuberculosis test. John DeCamp, an attorney assisting Rusty had advised him not to submit to any medical tests or shots. DeCamp feared Rusty might be poisoned or infected.

Pam Purdie stated, that Rusty told her his bed was not even five feet long, (Rusty is over six foot tall), he was fed lunch meat that evening which was green. He was fed pancakes with a white powder on top, he was told it was powdered sugar, but when he ate it, he began vomiting repeatedly and not able to even keep water in his stomach. Gunderson suggested in his report that he may have been given a substance, which is a "slow acting poison". I suspect that even dogs were being fed better than Russell Nelson.

Rusty who suffers from epilepsy was subjected to "sleep deprivation techniques", a bed, which was too small, and the guard knocked on the door every 30 minutes so his sleep was constantly disturbed. Any interruption or change in routine in addition to medication being withdrawn can bring on epileptic seizures.

July 3rd, Pam Purdie, informed Ted Gunderson that Rusty had suddenly been moved from a cell with a five-foot bed to a cell with an eight-foot bed and his meals were much better. They were providing him with his proper medication on schedule. Rusty asked Pam "What is going on…what happened to make this difference in my treatment? All hell broke loose here, all the guards are talking about this case".

Pam Purdie explained to Rusty that… "On July 2nd, Noreen Gosch drove from Des Moines Iowa to Omaha, Nebraska and hand delivered a 53 page report to the Douglas County Detention Center, informing them they were in violation of Rusty Nelson's Civil Rights. The report was prepared by Ted Gunderson." This formal complaint was sent to the White House and to Attorney General Janet Reno, FBI Office Washington, and any other concerned law officer or civil rights advocate, as well as the press and other concerned citizens. In each cover letter to the concerned citizens of this country, we urged them to send this report on to as many people as possible to begin a huge "letter writing campaign" to help keep Rusty alive.

Within 48 hours Rusty Nelson was moved from Omaha, Nebraska to the Correctional Corp. of America, Leavenworth Kansas. Immediately upon hearing of the transfer, Ted Gunderson, contacted Warden Stolc and informed him of the situation. Warden Stolc requested a copy of the 53-page report, it was emailed to him. The Warden specified that Ted should telephone him at seven a.m. Central time in Kansas, which meant Ted had to be up at five a.m. to place the call Pacific time in California. Warden Stolc, reported to Ted Gunderson, that he was shocked at this whole story and assured Ted that Rusty would be watched over and no harm would come to him. Warden Stolc paid a visit to Rusty's cell and assured him of the same. Within a few short days, the treatment of Rusty had once more deteriorated.

Pam Purdie reported, that Rusty had been given fermented oatmeal, which bubbled like beer, and he was once again being deprived of his medication to control epileptic seizures. He began to suffer seizures, which were lasting twenty minutes each, several times a day. He was running a very high fever and vomiting. Rusty believes these seizures occurred because his medication had been changed for an unknown reason. He is being given Dilantin for his epilepsy of Neurontin, the medicine prescribed by his personal physician, Dr. Anderson, of Columbus, Nebraska. During these seizures, July 10th, he fell to the floor, injured himself and was bleeding. He said a nurse came and checked him and was kind to him. Since his medications were changed, Russell Nelson reports hearing a high-pitched sound in his ears and that he can barely see and cannot focus his eyes. These conditions continued at this facility until he was transferred and moved to Oregon on July 13th.

On Saturday July 15th, 2000, John Zielinski made a visit to the facility where Rusty was being held. When he arrived, he was confronted by the head of security, James Perry, showing him a folder with Rusty's name and ID# CCA16582047 ... US Marshall ID#64659065 and asking for Russell Nelson. He was told there was no such prisoner there... they had never heard of him. When he presented his Media ByPass Photo ID, they immediately changed the story to: He was here but he is gone now, therefore we cannot talk about him. Gunderson stated this is standard procedure.

Days went by with no contact or word from Russell "Rusty" Nelson. Ted Gunderson said that in his experience, as an FBI agent it was highly unusual to transport a non-violent, low risk prisoner by car half way across the United States to Oregon. It was as if they wanted to make sure that Rusty didn't contaminate any other prisoners with his information.

I sent letters to everyone from the President to the Pope stating; Russell Nelson is a key witness Franklin Cover Up and my son's (Johnny Gosch) kidnapping case. Due to the information he possesses... his life is danger within the prison system of this country. What is happening to Russell is both tragedy and a travesty of justice as was explained in the report by Ted Gunderson.

In his July 12th, Urgent Report on Russell Nelson; Gunderson states these matters need to be brought to the attention to anyone in authority who might be able to assure that Russell Nelson receives proper medical treatment and to prevent him being suspiciously killed through seizures, poisoning, ill ness caused from neglect, bad food, " accident", "suicide" or otherwise. If Russell Nelson dies of suspicious circumstances, these letters from concerned citizens will be evident that the appropriate authorities were notified and their level of response well documented.

It is only through the efforts of concerned citizens that we can preserve our freedom.

The Shadow Knows—Russell Nelson

Lawrence E. King, President of the Franklin Credit Union of Omaha, Nebraska was a man of importance. Not just in Omaha, not just in Nebraska but also all across America from sea to shining sea.

But Larry King knew how to hustle, soon he was laundering money for the CIA's Iran-Contra operation and by furnishing plenty of boys to NAMBLA, who forked over $5,000,000 to the credit union. Such glorious activity could not go unrecorded so when Larry King met an aspiring young photographer, he immediately made Rusty Nelson his shadow. Where Larry King went...Rusty with camera in hand also went.A four foot photo of Larry King with President Ronald Regan graced the entrance to the Franklin Credit Union.

What do you need Senator, Congressmen, Governor, Judge. A little boy? Nebraska Boy's Town provides an ample supply for the discerning pedophile. Coke, Heroin, Speed Balls. Or perhaps a little girl?

His parties were the talk of Washington D.C. He rented a $5,000 a month mansion on embassy row where Rusty had his own room....a room that allowed him to photograph all activities. Rusty was 23, when he was introduced to King but he was more than that as he explained in the testimony of Feb 5, 1999 "I was taking pictures at a bar called The Max on 79th Street, in Omaha Nebraska. After a drag show, I had gotten to know pretty much everybody who were regulars like Ron. I was having some financial problems and you know, I needed to find a decent job... Ron goes...I know somebody who could use a good photographer. ...All of a sudden here's Larry King, I had no idea who he was, this, that and the next thing. I went and next thing I know I'm on a private jet to Washington, D.C. I sat in Larry's office at the credit union, sat in the meetings he'd have with the people. Seen him make payoffs to people. I watched as King handed over a briefcase full of bearer bonds to Col. Michael Aquino.... in a motel suite... The Ritz in Minneapolis, Minn (Iran Contra Payments) Very quietly.

"I went out and took pictures at his mansion on Embassy Row, where he held the parties"...He wanted me to do porn, kiddie porn and gay porn. (Alisha Owens identified Larry King as the photographer when she was being sexually abused.) I wanted no part of it. And he went to the extent of insisting on my wearing certain clothes, my hair had to be a certain way. They went as far as to take me out, supposedly it was Nancy Reagan's hairdresser doing my hair. It was permed, everything, totally changed my appearance.

Now Rusty goes on to describe another man, who was also a photographer, Larry shorter. He added: "It was just a fluke that I saw him." He went on to say this other man was passing himself off at times as

Rusty Nelson, whose appearance was almost identical to his except he was shorter.

Nelson: Yes, I was told to disappear!

DeCamp: Who told you that he was three to four inches shorter.

DeCamp asked him: Are you aware of the fact that in testimony before the legislative committee various witness, investigator for the state and others effectively denied your existence.

On Feb 25, 1999, Attorney John W DeCamp, who had represented Paul Bonnaci for ten years issued this challenge in a To Whom It May Concern Letter, accompanied by the transcript of the trial.

I believe the U.S. Attorney has no choice but to either CHARGE THE WITNESSES WITH PERJURY HAVING TESTIFIED UNDER OATH IN A FEDERAL COURT ON VERY MATERIAL MATTERS (from Murder to Bribery to Perjury to the most vile corruption involving young people) OR, THE U.S. ATTORNEY HAS AN OBLIGATION TO INVESTIGATE FURTHER INTO THE FRANKLIN SAGA AND REOPEN MATTERS. This time there ARE PICTURES. This time RUSTY NELSON exists and testified completely contrary to Chief Wadman's (Omaha Chief of Police) testimony under oath to the legislature.

Let us repeat DeCamp: This time there ARE PICTURES!!! But where are the pictures... Judge Urbom has sealed the photos, the audio and videotapes. He has honored the request of Larry King from his jail cell in Colorado, that releasing the photos and tapes would cause harm to the Nebraska community. Who is he kidding.... we would have a mad rush by members of congress to resign. Congressmen Barney Fag would not beat this rap.

DeCamp concludes his letter saying: "If my witnesses in Court on February 5, 1999 are telling the truth... then Alisha Owen is also. If Alisha Owen is LYING as a jury said, then my witnesses are lying. It appears to me to put the U.S Attorney, Nebraska Attorney General and Judicial System on the horns of a dilemma and failure to act would to me at least appear to be a deliberate obstruction of justice at minimum." The pictures which were not are sealed by Judge Urbom .... Have been confiscated by the FBI.

To understand what is going on here you must realize two things. The so-called checks and balances of one branch of government acting as watchdog for the other two branches is no longer true. At both the state and the federal level the Executive, Legislative and Judicial Branch now constitute a gang. A gang sworn to defend each other on pain of death. Like the Mafia anyone who squeals is a marked man. Unlike the Mafia, who used to sink their defectors in cement shoes and drop them the river, the ruling elite prefer blacklist. It often means, they will never work again in their chosen professions. More than a few whistleblowers have gone from six-figure jobs to being homeless and on the street.

What about the bill of rights, both state and federal, which grants an individual the right to "due process"? These rights have been replaced by the law of "judicial sovereignty" any judge may rule for his friends regardless of evidence presented. If the opposing attorney objects—at worst he will be disbarred and best him, might have to find a job at McDonalds to help support his family.

There are many people who claim: "Well at least America is better than other countries." Not so. The murder rate in America is 73 times higher than the murder rate of any other country in the Western World. Nine out of ten children murdered anywhere in the Industrial world are murder in the U.S. Children in Northern Ireland are far safer in school than those in Chicago."

RUSSELL "RUSTY" NELSON

RESERVED
930AM-630PM
DIPLOMATIC
CARS ONLY
MONDAY - FRIDAY

Sign outside Larry King's house in D.C.

The house Larry King rented on Embassy Row....
where he held all of his "parties". This is where
Rusty was stationed to photograph all the
"Activities' at the parties.
And the parties "after the parties.

THE RALSTON RECORDER, JANUARY 10, 1985

Caradori Story Published, "The Ralston Recorder, Jan 10, 1985, shows Caradori to be an excellent investigator with world wide connections. FBI Agent Says "Caradori work suspicious June 11, 1991"......states The Omaha World Herald.

For private investigator Gary Caradori, the mean streets aren't in Lincoln. They're in Chandler's L.A. and Mickey Spillane's New York City—places where the hostile exterior only masks an even more violent interior.

The 35-year-old Caradori, born and raised in Ralston and a 1967 Ralston High School graduate, specializes in finding people....stolen kids, lost adults, in particular, teen-age prostitutes, and bringing them home. The consequences of his work could be fatal.

"They would kill you. Those young gals are worth a lot of money. That's their hardware. It's hard for people to understand that living here, "Caradori said. *"In some places in Los Angeles, Detroit or Florida, there are people out there that would cut your throat"*

When you start running around the streets of New York, in the Harlem area, in a lot of areas. I could name a hundred towns, don't think you're not thinking about those things. It's a lot different than going to a movie here in town

Leave Yourself and Out.

"You don't try to come on strong. A good investigator will blend in. The idea is no one will really know you're here. You just kind of slip in get done whatever you have to do and get out." Caradori said, "You go with whatever you're working with. You won't do anything people will want to remember."

Caradori said he's been roughed up a few times by both cops and cons, but unlike the TV operative, he's never had to shoot his way out of a jam.

"A couple of times I thought: "Maybe I'll have to use it (a gun) to get myself out of a situation. But I never have. That just comes from common sense and trying to leave yourself an out."

Good Investigative Techniques

Most detective work boils down to good investigative techniques. Although he couldn't share trade secrets or discuss specific cases, Caradori described how he and his partner, Mike Weatherl, go about their work.

We have a set of items we go through when we start out looking for somebody. Some of it pans out and some of it doesn't," he said "We do a complete psychological background on an individual before we even start, to get their makeup and pattern.

You have to put yourself in that individual's condition prior to leaving, trying to determine where they might go and what their thinking was.

We have built a network of contacts all over the country. Those contacts are worth their weight in gold that really helps. You don't just walk in or fly in to some location and people just give you things. It comes with the rapport you've made with those individuals; it comes with your professionalism with certain individuals.

The bottom line is to have the ability to look in all directions and not have tunnel vision. Never assume anything and never take no for an answer. So you rely on your investigative knowledge and you really come to rely on yourself and you always try to leave a way out. Leave the door open so you can get the hell out."

Made ABC News

When it comes time to get the person out of town, particularly in the case of the young prostitutes, the key is to move fast and be very mobile, Caradori said. "In some cases, two or three vehicles and airplanes have been necessary to stay ahead of the game."

Caradori has been successful making ABC news five months ago for finding two children, who disappeared 11 years ago. In another widely reported case, Caradori found a woman's father in East Germany 39 years after they were separated.

Home is a Sanctuary

The risk of being hurt is real, Caradori said.

"People sometimes they want to get back at you. Last year, I had a guy threaten to kill my kids. I guess that goes with the territory. However, that doesn't mean you don't take the necessary precautions to prevent that and you certainly don't want to look for it." Caradori said. "We try not to take those kinds of cases where we live. It's kind of a rule with us. You don't want to look over your shoulder every time you turn around."

For that reason, only about 20 percent of Caradori's business is in Nebraska...primarily corporate security, while most of his missing person's work is out of state. That makes it possible for him to return home, away from the mean streets, to relative safety and security of Nebraska.

"People don't even lock their doors here, so there's a lot to teach them about security. Lincoln is a good community to live in. Who wants to hassle with the crime problems of Detroit and L.A.?

"It's always good to get home. This is like a sanctuary," the investigator concluded.

This was more than four years before he was hired by the Nebraska Legislator to investigate the Franklin Credit Union Franklin. He learned that Lincoln and Omaha had mean streets as well. He and his son would pay with their lives for trying to help the child prostitutes of Nebraska. He told his wife Sandy, just before his death, "I know what happened to Johnny Gosch!"

Above: Sandra Caradori
Below: Her son A.J. (eight years old)

The death of Gary Caradori and his son, A.J. sealed the fate of the Franklin Investigation. "There were a lot of people who wanted to see Gary dead"....said Sen. Loren Schmit.

JOHN DECAMP... RELUCTANT HERO

It is hard to say what John De Camp is most proud of—his 16 years as a Nebraska State Senator or his life since his downfall—trying to protect eighty sexually abused young people and awaken a sleeping nation to the corruption he uncovered.

John DeCamp is not your usual kind of hero... in his present life he appears unassuming, and yet out of desperation and the need to survive, he has written a book to awaken ***the conscience of the nation.*** "The Franklin Cover-up" now in its second revised and expanded printing is a labor of frustration and of necessity. It was friend and mentor Colonel William Colby, his one time boss in Viet Nam later head of the CIA, who inspired this book.

It was undoubtedly DeCamps suggestion to state Senator Loren Schmitt that they hire Colby to determine who or what caused the death of Legislative investigator Gary Caradori and his eight year old son A. J.. DeCamp in the forward to the first edition of "The Franklin Cover-up" quotes Colby:

Colby said, " What you have to understand, John, is that sometimes there are forces and events too big, too powerful, with so much at stake for other people or institutions. That you cannot do anything about them, no matter how evil or wrong they are or how much evidence you have...that is simply one of the hard facts of life you have to face. You have done your part. You have tried to expose the evil and wrongdoing. It has hurt you terribly. But, it has not killed you up to this point. I am telling you, get out of this before it does. Sometimes things are just too big for us to deal with, and we have to step aside and let history take its course. For you, John, this is one of those times."

Although this Colby statement would seem to be preaching John DeCamp, to forget it! Decamp sets the record straight in the revised edition of his book in the Chapter "In Memoriam Bill Colby."

"More than once, I was determined to put Franklin behind me and write it off as a horrible experience that I could do nothing about. Often, I would ask myself, "Why should I have any responsibility to do something, when others in positions of power and government responsibility do nothing? I know that Senator Schmit...felt the same way. I told Bill one time "I have done all I can do and have been burned badly—financially and credibility-wise—and, I am sure politically. I think it's time to just let it drop."

It was at those times that Bill Colby kept encouraging me and Senator Schmit, kept pushing us, almost forcing us to keep going, and to keep the press apprised. To quote his exact words: ***"This case is so much bigger than you think. It goes to the very highest levels; we have to keeping pulling the strings."*** His idea was not to investigate further—which he repeatedly warned me could be very dangerous—as to shine the sharp glare of publicity onto what had already been discovered to create the possibility of a real investigation.

It is a story of our government at both state and federal levels running amuck ...child sexual abuse, Satanism and murder...is this what any Governor or Congressmen should be about? If they are not directly involved, they are willing to go to almost any length to cover it up.

DeCamp points the finger at Nebraska Governor Bob Kerrey, who became U.S. Senator. DeCamp reports in his book, The Franklin Cover Up that Kerrey was not only involved in the cover-up but may well have been involved in the crime. Kerrey in turn helped Iowa's Democratic Governor Tom Vilsack become elected. To return the favor, Kerrey sister Jessie Rasmussen, in charge of the Nebraska Department of Health and Human services from 97-99 was hired to run the Iowa Department of Human Services.

John De Camp served 16 years as a Senator in the Nebraska Unicameral, some of the time side by side with State Senator Bob Kerrey. At one time, De Camp considered him a friend, they were fellow Viet Nam veterans, but DeCamp began to find him less than honorable. There is an old saying: "If you are not part of the solution, then you are part of the problem." Bob Kerrey is not just a corrupt politician covering for his peers, he himself is directly involved according to Larry King's photographer. Rusty Nelson photographed him at the punch bowl full of white powder. Who knows what other recreational activities Kerrey participated in at King's house on embassy row in Washington D.C.. (See A Man Called Rusty) King maintained a stable of child prostitutes both boys and girls. While his business partner, Craig Spence reported to be with the CIA, supplied young men, some aged fourteen years old, for a discerning clientele in D.C. especially Congress, the White House and the Pentagon.

Because of the enormous growth of AIDS in children and reports of Satanism in Nebraska. Was Rasmussen's job in part to hold the line and not let the information become public? Her performance is under scrutiny in Iowa. The politicians behind Project Monarch aimed to dissolve the American family. What better way to do it than to control state by state the Department of Human Services, which is supposed to aid and protect children.

During August and September of 2000 one only needs to read the local Des Moines papers to see children dying or being badly injured because the DHS didn't do its job. Rasmussen cries for more money while paying consulting fees of $5,000 a week to have her department evaluated.

September 17th, 2000, Des Moines Sunday Register reports nine children have died, all cases of abuse had been reported to DHS, prior to their deaths. Serious questions are being raised about the policies of DHS under its current director, Jesse Rasmussen. Brent Siegrist, Speaker of the Iowa House, called for further investigation of the conduct of DHS and Rasmussen in handling child abuse cases in Iowa. DHS director, Jesse Rasmussen has just asked the State Legislature for additional millions to properly protect children.

John DeCamp is a lawyer and an honest man—a patriotic man. Among those who despise lawyers, there is an old joke. Two men are walking in a graveyard when one spots a head stone. Here lies a lawyer and an honest man. Look said the other; they buried two men in the same grave. John DeCamp is an exception—he really cares for his God his country and its people.

DeCamp has taken up the causes of street kids, because he once was one. DeCamp has exposed the sexual abuse of children at Boy's Town because he once lived there. At thirteen his parents divorced. In his own words: "I split." He headed for Minneapolis where he was living on the streets. Police picked him up and a judge offered him two choices the Crosier Fathers or reform school. He took the priest and stayed with them over two years. Returning to Nebraska, he was still to young to be on his own and ended up in Boys Town.

He went to college and graduate from Law School before going to Viet Nam. Despite the fresh law degree, he requested a combat assignment. DeCamp spent 1969-1970 as a Combat Infantry Captain in the Mekong Delta. DeCamp was detailed to work directly under Ambassador William E. Colby, who was actually CIA Chief for S.E. Asia. Colby and DeCamp both Caltholics, sharing similar views became friends. Colby was to be his mentor and friend over the years. Colby later became director of the CIA under President Nixon and later Ford.

Disillusioned with how the war was being fought DeCamp became a minor celebrity when in an open letter, from the battlefield "Let Us Win or Get Us Out" demand. The World Press picked up on it and it became the campaign slogan that allowed him to successfully campaign for the Nebraska Senate seat, from the rice paddies of Vietnam.

In 1975, as Saigon was collapsing and the North Vietnamese Communist were invading, Senator DeCamp again made military and political history. DeCamp boarded a plane, returned to Viet Nam and organized what would be called "Operation Baby Lift" a humanitarian rescue mission in which 2834 half-American, half Vietnamese orphans were brought to this country.

For this work, Senator DeCamp was honored and decorated by the President at the White House and was named one of the Eight Most Outstanding Vietnam War Veterans by the Veterans support group. DeCamp always a veterans' advocate is one of two Nebraska Attorney licensed to practice before the U.S. Court of Veterans Appeals.

DeCamp had a stellar career in Nebraska. He was a delegate to the 1988 Republican Party convention. He had no idea that Larry King was there with an entourage of children to satisfy the desires of politicians and fellow delegates. A $100,000 party is given under the auspices of the Council of Minority Americans formed in May of 1988 with Alexander Haig, Jack Kemp, and Former Pres. Gerald Ford on its committee.

Back in Nebraska, Carol Stitt with the Foster Care Review Board is giving information to the Nebraska Attorney General Robert Spires relating to child sexual abuse. She had specific instructions from Nebraska Governor Orr, to pursue further investigations, which include not only foster care abuse but Boy's Town., the Girls Town.

What John De Camp did not realize was that the seeds of his own downfall were being sown around him. He had gone from a much touted (by the News Media of Nebraska) successful politician to a successful lobbyist but all this was about to change, and he would lose eighty percent of his business and must consider it lucky, that he did not lose his life in the process.

On Nov 4, 1988, the FBI and IRS raided the Franklin Credit Union of Omaha run by Larry King, who despite his $17,000 a year salary managed to throw frequent elaborate parties in Washington D.C. On December 25th, 1988 the State Foster Care Review Board turns over to the Executive Board of the Nebraska Legislator, a foot high pile of reports of sexual abuse of children. Two seemingly unrelated items were to unite and create the greatest explosion that ever hit Nebraska.

THE INDICTMENT AND CONVICTION OF ALISHA OWEN FOR PERJURY

Is It Constitutional? Is it Legal? Is it Valid?

There are 3 main points of law that would indicate a justification to set aside the guilty verdict of perjury, in the recent court case of Alisha Owen. Perjury is legally defined as: "willful lying under oath".

The FIRST point of Law being Amendment V of the U.S.Constitution. The Operative phase being "nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself." Alisha was under the compulsion of a subpoena and Neb. State Law 1977 LB 38 156, to testify as to her knowledge of child abuse in connection with the Franklin Credit Union Case. 2. Alisha was not advised of her rights prior to testimony before the Grand Jury.

The second point of Law being: Nebraska State Law 1977, LB38 156 28-711 "When any physician, medical institution, nurse, school employee, social worker, or other person has reasonable cause to believe that a child has been subjected to abuse or neglect or observes such child being subjected to conditions or circumstances which reasonably would result in abuse or neglect. He or she shall report such incident or cause a report to be made to the proper law enforcement agency.

Under this statute, on the basis of what Alisha saw and experienced herself and of what she had seen other children experience, Alisha had reasonable cause to believe that she herself, and other children were being subjected to child abuse.

Nebraska State Law 28 716 declares that any person making such a report or participating in an investigation shall be immune from civil, or criminal liability for making maliciously false statements. Alisha should have been granted immunity for her testimony.

28-717 Violations: Penalty. Any person who willfully fails to make any report required by the provisions of sections 28-710 to 28-717...shall be guilty of a class III misdemeanor. Alisha could have been liable under this law for failure to tell what she knew about child abuse in the Franklin Case.

The third point of Law being: The Douglas County Grand Jury was charged to specifically make a determination whether there was enough evidence to support an indictment of the individuals named as perpetrators in the allegations from the 'victim witness' reports of child abuse in connection with the Franklin child abuse investigation. The Grand Jury did not have legal jurisdiction to indict the witnesses to this case. The powers granted to grand juries are very specific and limited for good reason.

The grand jury in any case failed to offer any evidence of perjury by Alisha. The Grand Jury speculated that there may have been some business arrangement between Alisha Owen, Mike Casey and Gary Caradori (Investigator hired by the Franklin Committee). This alleged motive has no basis in fact or evidence. The grant jury is charged with the duty of finding evidence to indict for the crime.

THE EVIDENCE IS:

1. **Alisha has never contracted with any firm or person for the purpose of "selling her story."**
2. **She has never granted ANY interviews to ANY reporters or ANY magazine, television or newspaper.**
3. **It is not proven that Alisha had any relationship but one of casual acquaintance with Mike Casey. (Sometime local freelance writer)**
4. **Paul Bonacci made the same types of allegations against the same people in 1986. This was 3 years prior to the formation of the Franklin Committee. Paul made these allegations to the Omaha Public School, Omaha Police Department and Nebraska Psychiatric Institute. These are some of the institutions named in his civil suit for deprivation of civil rights and negligence, because of their alleged lack of attention to his allegations. This supports Alisha's testimony and also shows that her testimony was not initiated because of some corroborative effort between Alisha and Mike Casey, the legislative committee, and Gary Caridori.**

It appears evident, that it was a violation of Alisha's Fifth Amendment Rights to be charged with perjury as the result of her compelled testimony before the Grand Jury. It is unheard of in the United States to bring an indictment of perjury against a victim witness of a Grand Jury, **and much more bring that indictment on the basis of a compelled testimony to that Grand Jury.**

Secondly, the Douglas County Grand Jury was charged to specifically make a determination whether there was enough evidence to support indictment of the individuals named as perpetrators in the allegations from the victim witnesses" reports of child abuse in con-

nection with the Franklin Child abuse investigation. Never before in the history of Nebraska has a Grand Jury attempted, or much more, succeeded in bringing an indictment against someone who did not fall under the scope of their charge of duty.

Thirdly, we believe that she should have been granted immunity under LB 28-716 we believe that a person in her situation is just what this law was created for. ***The public needs to know that never before in the history of Nebraska has such a travesty of justice occurred.*** *Perhaps that is because in Nebraska the courts have followed the rule of state and federal constitutional law.*

This travesty of justice certainly gives credence to the thought that perhaps the Douglas County Grand Jury was manned as an instrument to punish and silence the victims of these terrible crimes and to protect prominent and powerful alleged perpetrators, as well as, send a message to any other victims. This message has been heard very loud and clear.

John DeCamp is a man who has faced the ultimate frustration. The laws of this country and his birth State of Nebraska have failed the very people they are designed to serve. The actions of the courts, of the Governors, Legislators, U.S. Senators, Representative, FBI, police and sheriffs departments have made a mockery of his years of service to his country, in the military and to the State of Nebraska in 16 years service in the Legislature.

The people he sought to serve were cowered and manipulated to imprison the very children who were being harmed while the very guilty sexual perverts and deviants were being celebrated almost as heroes for the ability to beat down and jail their accusers. In the words of William Colby " there are forces and events too big, too powerful with so much at stake for other people or institutions, that you cannot do anything about them, no matter how evil or wrong they are and no matter how dedicated or sincere you are or how much evidence you have."

If there is a Nebraska Hall of Fame, an honor roll of heros, then John DeCamp deserves that special high place among them. In more than 12 years he has done battle with the corrupted system of Nebraska. He has often been knocked down but like Rocky Balboa, he never failed to get up and continue to fight..

William Colby

The following materials are excerpts from:
"Secret Agenda Operation PaperClip - Linda Hunt

"Blank Check: Pentagon's Black Budget" p-132-33 - Tom Weiner

William Colby entered John DeCamps life, while he was in Viet Nam serving as a Captain in Military Intelligence. Colby was chief of CIA's far eastern division from 1962-67. Since the 1950s Colby had been involved in CIA clandestine operations.

Quoting from Tom Weiner's book: "He took time out only to run the Phoenix program, a civilian led counter-insurgency operation that had led to the death of more than 20,000 Vietnamese." In reality this was a joint military/CIA operation that made the Mafia Murder Inc. look like child's play. I have personally talked to ex-soldiers, marksmen, who had a civilian CIA man, stand behind him with a cocked pistol saying: "See that old man in the village below. Kill him or I will blow your brains out!" This was Project Phoenix in action. Anyone who was remotely suspected as a leader in the small villages in Viet Nam was marked for death by execution from afar. According to Wiener the number in which the CIA acted as judge, jury and executioner was at least 20,000.

No war before Viet Nam has produced the number of post-traumatic stressed syndromes, as has the Viet Nam war. The number of those killed in Viet Nam exceeded 50,000. The number of Viet Nam vets, who have since committed suicide exceed to the number killed in action.. A company clerk in Vietnam, who handled the personnel files, reported, the CIA scoured records looking for psychos, which were put into a special division. The clerk remembers the CIA co-opting the printing presses used to make up multiple copies of new directives etc. When he returned, he found in the trash discards with satanic symbols on them. He was forced to accompany a group of soldiers once, but he remembers nothing of it except leaving and coming back. But he does know that the psycho units murdered and pillaged, did not hesitate to bash in the head of children before raping the mothers and then killing them.

These were part of the CIA operations that William Colby commanded during part of that war. They were part also of Captain John DeCamp's job. How then was this a counter-insurgency movement, which suggests Vietnamese killing Vietnamese? They might indeed have had a part in it but it was the CIA that acted as judge and jury, and then supplied the executioner. There is no record of how many men were killed rather than be forced to kill from ambush, civilian.

Here is Tom Weiner's description of Colby "Colby was a graduate of Princeton, Princetonian in his demeanor and speech: proper, almost patrician, in bearing; mild manner but capable of being cold blooded...

Colby's family background was military and devoutly Roman Catholic; both facts are clue to his apostasy. He would follow any legitimate order."

It should be noted here that like all employees, he was subjected to a mild form of mind control propaganda, which suggested that even dirty deadly deeds were possible in the service of country for the protection of national security. It was the National Security Act of 1947, that allowed the CIA to begin using any or all of the American population as a kind of laboratory animal preserve for trying out various means of mind control, both individual and in groups.

The CIA and another secret covert operations behind the government have infected whole towns with airborne virus designed to test the ability of infrastructure to sustain itself. Author Leonard Horowitz in his "Aids and Ebola" book produces documentary evidence that individuals and organization—including Universities under government contract produced the AIDS virus and set about disseminating it to promiscuous homosexual before including it in a hepatitis B vaccine and inoculated half of Africa.

In April 1971, Richard Helms, Director of the CIA gave a speech to the Society of Newspaper Editors. In which he declared "take it on faith that we too are honorable men." Four years later it fell to then Director Colby to admit that Helms had lied to Congress. From this point Colby was no longer well respected in the Intelligence community. He had committed the unpardonable sin, he told Congress the truth.

WILLIAM COLBY... FORMER DIRECTOR OF THE CIA
SHOWN IN "CONSPIRACY OF SILENCE"
A BRITISH DOCUMENTARY...BANNED IN AMERICA

THE FRANKLIN COVER-UP

Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska

by John W. DeCamp

SECOND EDITION with NEW, STARTLING REVELATIONS
Franklin addition included bedroo
'Sen. Schmit Told of Pressure to Halt P
Franklin
may include
of homicide, Satan
Feds say Franklin unaudited for 4 yea
'aradori's Airplane Broke Up in Flight'
Omaha World-Herald
Grand Jury Says Abuse Stories Were a 'Carefully Crafted Hoax'
Schmit Rejects Report, Defends

THE FRANKLIN COVER UP IS AVAILABLE AT:
AWT, INC.
P.O. BOX 85461
LINCOLN, NE 68501
EMAIL: decamplegal@inebraska.com
$9.95 plus postage/handling $3.25

DLS
DECAMP
LEGAL SERVICES, P.C.
LEGAL • LEGISLATIVE • LOBBYING

Above: John DeCamp at his office in Lincoln, NE
Below: DeCamp with Paul Bonacci, outside the
White House...
See Conspiracy of Silence

TED L. GUNDERSON, FBI
SPECIAL AGENT IN CHARGE
LOS ANGELES, RET.

TED GUNDERSON – MAN WITH A MISSION

The Real FBI Story

Ted L. Gunderson retired from the FBI in 1979 after 28 years. He was head of the Los Angeles Bureau of the FBI at the time, covering not only L.A but also a large section of California. Ted looked foreword to forming a lucrative Private Investigative Practice and bouncing his grandchildren on his knees. Instead 21 years later, some regard him as a kook and crazy conspiracy theorist. Gunderson chose to put his time and energy into investigating the unthinkable that in America women and children were victims of Satanic and pedophilic abuse. Pursuit of the truth has cost him a great deal!

For those of you who are old enough to remember Efrem Zimbalist Jr. in The FBI Story, which aired in the late 60s early 70s, you have a perfect picture of FBI Man Ted Gunderson. His job was to preserve and protect the public not to protect high ranking political pedophiles.

When Gunderson retired in 1979, he formed Ted L. Gunderson and Associates, of Santa Monica, California, an international security consulting and investigation firm. World-renowned trial lawyer F. Lee Bailey often hired Gunderson's firm. Bailey describes him as "a person whose investigative skills are unsurpassed by anyone I know or have known."

In 1979, just after his retirement U.S. Attorney General Griffin Bell appointed him special consultant to the Pan America Olympic Games, San Juan, and Puerto Rico. He was a consultant on international terrorism and security matters. In 1981-82, he was appointed by California Governor Jerry Brown and later became a consultant on terrorism and security for the Los Angeles Olympic Committee in 1984.

His service record was exemplary. Yet he has been removed from the Retired FBI Association, primarily because he does his job too well. In his first 9 years, he was in counter intelligence/espionage. But before his retirement, he was the senior agent in charge of Nashville, Dallas and finally in Los Angeles.

Gunderson is author, lecturer and radio broadcaster. E.P. Dutton published his: "How to Locate Anyone Anywhere Without Leaving Home." He has lectured and published numerous reports and articles on Satanism and missing children. His investigation includes the Oklahoma Bombing and the CIA Drug smuggling.

A retired FBI Man investigating the CIA is not exactly healthy. Gunderson has been forced to go underground and eventually lost his business while trying to avoid a series of murder attempts. Gunderson has no difficulty understanding how such death threats could have been lodged against Noreen Gosch. Gunderson has come to realize that the government eliminates its foes...by discrediting or death. Here are his words:

"For the last 20 years, there have been numerous stationery and moving surveillance's of me. When I see stationery surveillance, I strap on my gun and confront the individual or individuals. On two occasions, I chased the subjects out of the neighborhood. One ran a red light to get away from me. The individuals involved are probably contracted employees for the CIA, members, I suspect, of the "shadow government". They discontinued the stationery surveillances in 1993. Since then they have periodically entered my automobile, usually at night, and turned on the directional signal to let me know they have been in my car and are watching me.

On several occasions, they entered my condominium in Las Vegas, at night while I was sleeping and took files from my cabinet. From May 3 to May 10, 2000 while I was in Philadelphia, my condominium was burglarized. There was no forced entry. The suspected CIA burglars took four of my storage boxes of documents, which contained sensitive material and research. I have since been able to replace these. They also stole my FBI memorabilia, cherished items commemorating the days when I worked with my fellow agents on clean operations.

I have been photographed and videotaped on numerous occasions from automobiles and on one occasion on the golf course and on another occasion, at a picnic in a public park. I suspect the individuals taking these pictures are CIA contract employees. I have also received numerous threatening and hang up phone calls. Their favorite phone calls involve the sound of a phonograph needle at the end of a record. I have also received numerous phone calls of individuals chanting on the line. I have recorded these calls. My mail has also been opened and I filed a formal complaint with the postal inspectors.

In May 1993, while driving from Omaha, Nebraska to Lincoln, Nebraska, at 75 miles an hour, my right front wheel came off. I was in

Nebraska working on the Franklin case. I called the Nebraska Highway Patrol. The Patrolman, Officer Lamb, told me the lug nuts on the right front wheel had been loosened, which caused the accident. Fortunately, I was able to control the car. The Repairman later told me that some of the lug nuts on the left front wheel were also loosened, but apparently the intruder was interrupted while loosening the lug nuts, as the others were intact.

ATTEMPTS TO FRAME TED L. GUNDERSON FOR A CRIMINAL VIOLATION

Between March and August 1983, the FBI and DEA attempted to frame Ted Gunderson (this writer) through a girl named Pam Fawsett, an FBI informant. In August 1983, Fawsett called me and said she wanted to meet with me. She told me of her assignment by the FBI, a plot that involved a series of recorded telephone conversations between her and me. She furnished a hand-written note by an agent, which listed the questions; she was to ask in one of the phone calls. The agent carelessly forgets to retrieve the note.

During the 6 months she was working with the FBI in an attempt to frame me, she was paid $2000 and had access to the FBI Modesto, California office. She even had her own coffee cup. She then furnished a series of three signed statements, and for documentation, the hand-written note the agent failed to retrieve. When I asked Pam Fawsett, why she came over to my side, she told me, "Ted, I woke up the other morning and realized you were the only honest son of a bitch I have talked to in 6 months".

The last time I talked to Pam, she said she was going into hiding because she was on a "hit" list. Pam was heavily involved in drugs and had numerous contacts in the drug community. Up to that time, I had worked a number of cases involving drug activity; among those was the Dr. Jeffrey R. MacDonald case. This case involved a major drug cover-up involving the transporting of drugs from Southeast Asia in military planes in plastic bags in the body cavities of dead G.I.'s coming into the United States (Time magazine, January 1, 1973). It is very possible that this planned "hit" is due to her involvement in this case.

WIRETAP ON GUNDERSON

In April 1985, I learned there was an illegal telephone tap on my office line at 1100 Glendon Avenue, Suite 1200, Los Angeles, CA. I filed a lawsuit and subsequently received an out of court settlement from GTE. I was placed in a position of taking the settlement rather than pursuing the lawsuit because I could not afford an attorney and could not locate one who would take the case on a contingency basis.

I learned that the tap was administered by a telephone answering service known as Answer All Answering Service, on W. Pico Boulevard, in Los Angeles. I visited the site and noted approximately 150 wires coming into the building that appeared to have been abruptly cut. The occupants apparently left in a hurry with their equipment.

Prior to filing the lawsuit with the phone company, I was tipped by a confidential source inside the phone company and was able to obtain photographs of automobiles parked in the area and people coming and going from that location. These photographs are in safekeeping.

TED GUNDERSON, CIA FILE

In July of 1999, a confidential source advised me, this writer, that my CIA file at Langley, Virginia is the thickest he has ever seen. Despite attempts by the "Shadow Government" to wipe out my documentation through burglaries, my file on CIA-FBI corruption is also the thickest one I have ever seen, except for the copies securely hidden in a number of places (recall Rusty Nelson), which are about the same size of the original, give or take a stolen box here and there."

Gunderson has continued to fight for the lost souls in America, who fall between the cracks, mostly because the public is asleep or busy listening to the propagandist, who run most of the major media. In his late 70s, Gunderson is flying, faxing, phoning and fighting in every way to restore law and order to this country, to restore a Constitutional form of government.

July 6, 2000, Ted Gunderson was on the phone at 5 a.m., to save the life of Rusty Nelson marked for extermination. Rusty was imprisoned because he had taken photographs at parties by Larry King, implicating some of the nations leading politicians. After more than 10 years on the run Rusty Nelson was jailed for taking pornographic pictures. Paroled from the state of Oregon, in the custody of Nebraska Attorney John DeCamp. Judge Urbom ordered all files and photos sealed, claiming that it would ruin many of the outstanding citizens of the state of Nebraska. Why would a Federal Judge consider people who had sex with children outstanding citizens?

Rusty took the pictures, Rusty had the negatives, so suddenly it became imperative that he be put back into prison and if possible die quickly. Gunderson has mounted and Internet campaign with hundreds of copies of a 50-page report fired off to Bill Clinton, Janet Reno Al Gore—

anyone and everyone in any authority in this country.

Noreen Gosch droved to Omaha Nebraska to personally hand deliverd the report to the prison where Rusty was being held. The abusive treatment included withholding epilepsy drugs.

Gunderson wrote the foreword to the book "The Mystery of the Careful Crafted Hoax". The book was published by the Nebraska Leadership Conference to refute the Omaha World Herald campaign branding the Franklin Investigation as a hoax. Gunderson explains, how he became involved in investigations cases that the FBI would not touch…or as he came to realize later that the FBI deliberately covered up even to resorting to murder (see FBI Friend or Foe).

Gunderson states "After I retired in March, 1979 as Senior Special Agent in charge of the FBI in Los Angeles, California, I was contacted by friends of Doctor Jeffrey R. McDonald, the former green beret, who had been convicted of murdering his wife and two children at Fort Bragg, North Carolina in February of 1970. McDonald, as well as a group of close personal friends, claimed that he was innocent of the crime.

After hundreds of hours of investigation he interviewed Helena Stoeckley, who had become a suspect in the murders. In 1978, Stoeckley had contacted the FBI to make a full confession. The FBI, refused to talk to her. She had told others that she was part of a "satanic cult" that had only meant to frighten McDonald because he was identifying soldiers who OD'd on drugs to hospital officials. The cult was in charge of moving the heroine from Fort Bragg to the eastern market. It was being smuggled in the body cavities of dead soldiers

Gunderson states: "In October of 1989, my associate and I convinced Stoeckley that it would be in her best interest to confess. She then gave us a signed statement in which she admitted her satanic cult had murdered McDonald's family. Stoeckley's admission was ignored. The Dept of Justice attorneys, and the FBI, stuck to their theory that McDonald committed the crimes. Despite the evidence of innocence, Jeffrey McDonald is still serving two life sentences. All efforts to secure another trial have failed.

At the time, Gunderson says, he had heard about satanic cults but didn't truly believe in their existence. But during the past 21 years, he has had contact with hundreds of adult survivors of satanic cults. These include former law enforcement officers, and politicians along with ordinary people. "I have talked with psychiatrist, psychologist and sociologist. I have developed confidential sources and informants who have had direct contact with cult members. ***Unfortunately 44 of them have been killed in the course of investigations.*** I have received and gathered hard evidence from journalists, who have written stories about the numerous "satanic murders" in America (Gunderson was always a field agent, Ken Lanning, who claims to be an analyst for the FBI at Quantico claims there is not one incident of satanic murders that he knows about).

Gunderson goes on to explain: I have helped gather information for books such as "The Ultimate Evil" by Maury Terry's and "Cults that Kill" by Larry Kahaner. I have been a guest on numerous radio and television shows. Today, I am regarded as an expert in the area of satanic cult crime"

Despite the fact that 20/20 secured boxes of police file documents on Satanism and child kidnapping from Gunderson, which they have now misplaced. They also regarded him as "a conspiracy nut". Why would they bother to gather these documents if they regarded him as such a "nut"?

Without hesitation Gunderson declares: **"I can state without hesitation, that there is, indeed, a national cult network—including satanic, witchcraft, pedophile and occult groups—which is operating at full throttle within our society today. The activities of these groups (It is, in reality, one group which operates on many levels) including the kidnapping and molestation of children, as well as the torture and murder of human beings. Their favorite victims are children and newborn babies, the young the better.**

The cult lives, indeed thrives on drug sales, pornography and prostitution. The cult network is largely responsible for the recent rash of "snuff" films, which are sold at high prices to people who crave this sick, degenerate material. Children kidnapped and literally "owned" by the cult are sold on the open market to the highest bidder. These children are taken right off the streets of our cities, and traded through a national pedophile network."

If you check the Chapter on Satanism, you will see two sides of the government involvement in the deepest level of Satanism. Aquino became a Satanist high priest with under Anton LeVay, who created the Church of Satan in California. Aquino rose in the rank from Lieutenant to Lieutenant. Col. military. Despite the fact he was accused at the Presidio Military base of molesting children.

Aquino later founded Temple of Set in the military. Satanism through his efforts is now a recognized religion in the military. He continued to receive the best military training ranging from the Command and Staff College at Fort Leavenworth, (School for Generals) to the War College in Washington D.C. National Security Agency documents indicated he was engaged in mind war experiment "creating for the government the perfect "Manchurian Candidates." Ken Lanning…supposedly an expert in Behavioral Science at Quantico, he and others in this department create profiles of cannibals, serial killers, Satanists and pedophiles. However, Lanning continues to assure everyone who logs into **www.fbi.org** that there is no satanic crime in America. This totally contradicts thousands of police reports.

Gunderson continues: The cult guards its secrets and controls its people primarily through the use of fear. They have an intricate system of reward and punishment. They also deal in disinformation, intimidation, blackmail and murder. My investigations have revealed that the satanic cult network has even set up preschools across the country, which they use as a source for kiddy-pornography and child prostitution. They have successfully infiltrated the public school system as well. (In the Chapter "A Man Called Rusty" Russell Nelson claims to have been beside Larry King on a Lear Jet, flying into Washington D.C., when King called Ronald Reagan about re-opening the pre-school. He claims he recognized Reagan's voice and the pre-school was re-opened by the time they landed in Washington) Several tabloids and the Franklin Cover-up book have shown pictures of Maureen Reagan draped over Larry King. The picture by its very nature suggests a close relationship. King sang the National Anthem at the 1988 Republican Party Convention.

Through out this country Gunderson has met with the media and shown them mountains of police reports, newspaper clippings that clearly indicate there is an epidemic of satanic human sacrifice and cannibalism. Rusty Nelson can confirm this with photographs; Paul Bonnaci was witness to it and participated in human sacrifice and snuff films.

Due to his relentless investigation of Satanic crime, sexual abuse of children and drugs. "Two confidential and reliable sources advised Ted Gunderson (this writer) in July, 1982, that there were two contracts on my life, one by the Israeli Mafia (on an unrelated matter) and the other by "the satanic cult" out of Florida and Houston, Texas.

My landlady advised me that on the first Thursday in July of 1982, at 1:30 a.m., when she was parking her car, she noticed two men sitting in an automobile across the street from my front door. One of the men got out of the car, walked over to her and asked if she knew where Ted Gunderson lived. I had previously told her, if anyone asks about me to tell them she didn't know me. She told the man she didn't know Ted Gunderson. She went into her apartment and watched from her window until 1:45 a.m. until she saw them leave. By divine intervention, I did not go home that night but was visiting a friend.

I successfully eliminated the Israeli 'hit' almost immediately through one of my confidential contacts. It took me a year and a half to eliminate the satanic cult 'hit.' Because I had to go undercover, I was not able to work openly during this year and a half and lost my private investigation business.

A third attempt on my life, occurred on May 19, 1987. By divine intervention, I stayed at my daughter's home and did not go return that evening to my business partner's home, where I was living. My business partner was out of the country; his wife and 12-year-old son were home. The next morning, when I met my partner's wife at work, she told me that at 11:00 p.m. that past evening, she heard an intruder come in the front door, on the first floor. She was on the third floor and locked herself in the bedroom. She went to the telephone extension located in the bedroom, but the phone was dead. She laid awake in bed terrified from 11:00 p.m. till 2:00 a.m., when the intruder left.

The next day, I contacted an informant, who advised me that Bill Mentzer, known in the satanic cult/sex/drug network as Charles Manson, II, was the individual who was waiting for me to come home the previous night."

Gunderson has indicated that over four hundred individuals, who are knowledgeable about the CIA's involvement in drugs and other criminal activities have been marked for death

Although Ted Gunderson is now nearly 80, he continues to travel... to investigate. One day his in Las Vegas, then Canada, Washington State, New York and Connecticut. Often times, he is running on a shoestring financially. His investigative business was forced to shut down, after he had to go into hiding to avoid yet another attempt to kill him.

In 1996, Gunderson thru his hat in ring, as a Presidential Candidate in the Democratic Party. Gunderson got himself on the primary ballot in New Hampshire. He was scheduled to take part in the debates. He had videotape, which he felt went a long way toward explaining why he was getting involved. On a Friday, a TV station told him it would cost five thousand dollars to put the program on and had agreed to air it. On Monday, they had decided that someone on the sales staff had misspoke and the price was actually $25,000. Not only was this beyond the budget, but also shortly before flying east to take part in the debate, he was notified he had been dropped.

No one who knows Ted would doubt that he is.... a man with a mission. He has watched in horror as the FBI, where he served for 28 years, turned into a Gestapo, who harass witness and victims of satanic sexual abuse. He has viewed Ken Lanning's findings, on the FBI Web site, as a disservice to the America public. When Gunderson served in the 50s-thru the 70's, when protecting the public, was the FBI's job!

Gunderson is like John DeCamp, a reluctant hero, who fights on today long past the age of retirement. Those who know him feel that if an honest President by some miracle could be elected, Ted L. Gunderson could make an ideal and honest head of the FBI.

The Finders: CIA Kidnappers

The Finders are a CIA front established in the 1960s. It has top security clearance and protection in the assigned task of kidnapping and torture-programming young children throughout the U.S. Members are specially trained government kidnappers known to be sexual degenerates, who involve the kidnapped children in Satanic sex orgies and slaughter of animals. They use a fleet of unmarked vans to grab targeted children from parks and schoolyards. In doing so, they use children within their organization as decoys to attract the victims close to the vans where they are grabbed by the adults. They transport the children to a series safe houses to keep them from being found.

They are then used in their Satanic ceremonies, for body parts, as sex slaves and some are auctioned off at various locations in the Northern Hemisphere. In the past, the Finders have auctioned off children, in a location near Las Vegas, Nevada, and Toronto, Canada.

Marion David Petite, the leader of the cult, is an identified homosexual, pedophile and a CIA officer. His son was an employee of a CIA proprietary firm, Air America, which was notorious for smuggling drugs destined for the U.S. out of the Golden Triangle into Saigon during the Vietnam War.

...Ted Gunderson,

Published in Media By-Pass Magazine February 2000

On July 17, 1991, Ted Gunderson was interviewed by Jan Michaelson's WHO - 1090 talk radio show in Des Moines. John M. Zielinski had arranged for a panel of experts including Lee Orr, K.C. Homicide Detective, expert on Satanic homicide, Dr Judienne Ann Densen-Gerber, psychiatrist and lawyer and expert of Satanism and North American Man Boy Love Association. And Noreen Gosch, mother of kidnap victim Johnny Gosch. When Michaelson asked how it was possible that these camps could be kept secret? Gunderson explained, that they usually had inside connections and if some branch of law enforcement planned a raid. The children would then be moved before anyone could mount a search. This was exactly the way it happened with the Finders.

WHO-TV cameras were rolled into Michaelson's studio. Major news coverage resulted from this interview. Michaelson has since declined to reply to any letters or phone calls from July 17,1991 to the present. Gunderson was later able to state that the Des Moines area had one of the safe houses. A local private investigator with friends inside the Des Moines Police and Polk County Sheriff's office confirmed the same information.

HOW THE FINDERS WERE UNCOVERED

An UPI story from the Arizona Republic, Phoenix Arizona, February 1987. Dateline: Tallahassee, Fla: Police said six filthy and confused young children, taken from two men charged with child abuse, had been given away by their parents as part of a Satanic cult ritual.

Authorities in Tallahassee and Washington were trying today to learn the identities of the six children, locate their parents and learn more about an, unidentified "satanic cult" apparently based in Washington.

The men were arrested in a city park Wednesday after someone called police about two well-dressed men in a blue van watching over six "filthy" children. A police spokesman, Scott Hunt said "It is our belief these kids were not, kidnapped, but that their parents gave them away because one of the rites of passage into this Satanic organization is that you have to give up your rights to your children."

The Washington Post reported today that the U.S Customs Service is helping with the investigation. Pictures, found at a Washington D.C. warehouse, linked to this group include those of children engaged in what appeared to be "cult rituals."

The newspaper said the group was known as The Finders and was made up of about 40 people, who lived in the District of Columbia and on a farm in rural Virginia; the remains of a popular 1960s hippie refuge that evolved into a Satanist society.

Hunt said a 6-year old girl in the group showed signs of sexual abuse. The children—four boys and two girls ranging in age from 2 to 6—were put in state custody.

Hunt said the children, who had not bathed in days and were covered with scratches and insect bites. They told police they had not eaten in 24 hours. He said, they had "bizarre" names like "Benjamin Franklin, "Honey Bee" and B.B.

The men initially told police they were taking the youths to Mexico to begin a school for brilliant children. When they could not explain the children's condition or name their parents, Hunt said, the men refused to answer further questions.

The children told police, they had not seen their mothers since before Christmas. One girl said the men fed them mostly fruit and all of them had been sleeping in the van or in a tent.

A U.S. Customs Document signed by Walter F. Kreitlow II, Special Agent and Frederic D. Haiduk, Resident in Charge concluded that it was no customs case, but that both the Washington D.C. Metropolitan Police Department and the Tallahassee Police Department were investigating child sexual abuse.

CUSTOMS AGENT - MARTINEZ REPORT

Customs agent, Ramon J. Martinez determined that the children ranging in age from seven to two were unaware of the function and purpose of telephones, televisions and toilets. The children had stated they were not allowed to live indoors and were only given food as a reward. These children were raised much like chickens or hogs.

Detective Jim Bradley, from the Metropolitan Washington Police, had been told by an informant in December of 1986 of the Finders, who where operating various businesses out of a warehouse located at 1307 4th St., N.E.. and were supposed to be housing children at 3918/3920 W St., N.W. "The information was specific in describing "blood rituals", sexual orgies involving children, and an unsolved murder, in which the Finders may be involved. With the information provided by the informant, Detective Bradley was able to match some of these children in Tallahassee with names of children known alleged to be in the custody of the Finders. Search warrants were obtained for the two locations.

Martinez writes: I was able to observe and access the entire building. I saw large quantities of children's clothing and toys. The clothing consisting of diapers and clothes in the toddler to pre-school range. No children were found on the premises. There were several subjects on the premises. Only one was deemed to be connected with The Finders. He was identified as Stuart Miles Silverstone, DOB/061941, U.S. Passport No. 010958991.

Silverstone was located in a room equipped with several computers, printers, and numerous documents. Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instruction for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included the impregnation of female members of the community known as Finders, purchasing children, trading, and kidnapping.There were telex messages using MCI account numbers between a computer terminals believed to be located in foreign locations. One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact in the Chinese Embassy there. Another telex expressed an interest in "bank secrecy" situations. Other documents identified interest in high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under the control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives, and the evasion of law enforcement.

Also found in the "computer room" was a detailed summary of the events surrounding the arrest and taking into custody the two adults and six children in Tallahassee, Florida on the previous night. There were also a set of instructions which appeared to be broadcast via a computer network which advised participants to move "the children" and keep them moving through different jurisdictions, and instructions on how to avoid police attention.

On Friday, 2/6/87, I (Martinez) met Detective Bradley at the warehouse on 4th Street, N.E. I was again granted unlimited access to the premises. I was able to observe numerous documents which described explicit sexual conduct between the members of the community know as Finders. I also saw a large collection of photographs of unidentified persons. Some of the photographs were nudes, believed to be of members of the Finders. There were numerous photos of children, some nude, at least one of which was a photo of a child "on display" and appearing to accent the child's genitals. I was only able to examine a very small amount of the photos at this time. However, one of the officers presented me with a photo album for my review. The album contained a series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a "blood ritual." The ritual centered around the execution of at least two goats. The photos portrayed the execution, disembowelment, skinning and dismemberment of the goats at the hands of the children, This included the removal of the testes of a male goat, the discovery of a female goat's "womb" and the "baby goats" inside the womb, and the presentation of a goats head to one of the children.

Further inspection of the premises disclosed numerous files relating to activities of the organization in different parts of the world. Locations I observed are as follows: London, Germany, the Bahamas, Japan, Hong Kong, Malaysia, Africa, Costa Rica. There was also a file identified as Palestinian.

He continued to narrate that other information he got from Metropolitan police indicated that they had files on private families not related to The Finders and they had undertaken a systematic response to local newspaper advertisements for babysitters, tutors, etc.. A number of the members of the Finders would respond and gather as much information as possible about the habits, identity, occupation, etc of the family. The use to which this information was to be put is still unknown. There was also a large amount of data collected on various childcare organizations. (Larry King, director of the Franklin Credit Union in Omaha Nebraska, owned a day care center in Washington D.C.)

The warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens, a sauna, hot tub, and a "video room". The video room seemed to be set up as an indoctrination center. It also appeared that the organization had the capability to produce its own videos. There were what appeared to be training areas for children and what appeared to be an altar set up in a residential area of the warehouse. Many jars of urine and feces were located in this area. I should also mention that both premises were equipped with satellite dish antennas.

Martinez ran into a stonewall, when he attempted to pursue the matter a month later. He tried to contact Detective James Bradley who was unavailable; he spoke to a third party who was only willing to discuss it off the record.

Martinez wrote concerning the passports of the men arrested, "I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn, advised MPD that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow, North Korea, and North Vietnam from the late 1950's to mid 1970's." At least two were considered off limits according to U.S. law.

Martinez continued: "The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the activity of the Finders had become a CIA Internal matter. The MPD report has been classified secret and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division, had directed MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired."

What has been said quite clearly by Ted Gunderson and others is that The Finders was and is a CIA operation, therefore could not be touched. The matter was closed from 1987 until 1994.

U.S News & World Report of Dec 22,93/Jan 3, 1994.
THROUGH A GLASS DARKLY

"The case is almost seven years old now, but matters surrounding a mysterious group known as the Finders keep growing curiouser and curiouser. The more the police learned about the Finders, the more bizarre they seemed: There were suggestions of child abuse, Satanism, dealing in pornography and ritualistic animal slaughter."

The article described several photographs of nude children, what Martinez recorded was hundreds if not thousands of photos. A photo album illustrating animal slaughter. Instructions for kidnapping and selling children, there was strong indication that they were marketed around the world It is a wonder the article made it in at all!

A ranking official for the CIA describes allegations of links with the intelligence agency as "hogwash".

U.S News reports Marion David Pettie, the leader of The Finders, says his group was never connected to the CIA and had never been involved in child abuse, pornography, Satanism, animal slaughter or anything of the kind. And who can dispute them since the CIA declared the evidence collected secret. Petite says the group numbers 20 and they engaged in freelance journalism, and research for a variety of clients and live as a communal, holistic living and learning arrangement.

To Ted Gunderson's best knowledge, The Finders continue to go on as before, rumors of further investigation by the Justice Department in 1994 are much exaggerated Gunderson has a complete bound report with all police and newspaper documents on the Finders.

Do you understand why Johnny Gosch can't come home?

Ted L. Gunderson has compiled a series of bound
reports on illegal activities in America.
See the opposite page
"The Finders Report"
complete with "secret documents"

These reports may be ordered from:
Ted L. Gunderson
750 Royal Crest Circle
#252
Las Vegas, NV 89109

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

FINDERS

An Actual treasury department report describing a world wide network of child kidnappers involved in Satanism and sexual exploitation of children. See how the CIA has covered it all up under National Security.

YOU MUST READ THIS!!

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION CONTINUATION

1. PAGE 2 OF 2
2. CASE
3. REPORT NUMBER 1

DETAILS OF INVESTIGATION:

On March 31, 1987, I contacted Detective James Bradley of the Washington, D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD). I was to meet with Detective Bradley to review the documents seized pursuant to two search warrants executed in February 1987. The meeting was to take place on April 2 or 3, 1987.

On April 2, 1987, I arrived at MPD at approximately 9:00 a.m. Detective Bradley was not available. I spoke to a third party who was willing to discuss the case with me on a strictly "off the record" basis.

I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn, advised MPD that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow, North Korea, and North Vietnam from the late 1950's to mid 1970's.

The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the activity of the FINDERS had become a CIA internal matter. The MPD report has been classified secret and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired.

No further information will be available. No further action will be taken.

ACTION TO BE TAKEN BY LESD/TECS:

No action to be taken on the basis of this report.

1307 4th St. N.E., Washington, DC 20002-7001

N
S
E
W
0
300m
900ft
U St Ne
Todd Pl Ne
T St Ne
Seaton Pl Ne
S St Ne
Randolph Pl Ne
R St Ne
Eckington
Quincy Pl Ne
Q St Ne
Porter St Ne
P St Ne
O St Ne
N St Ne
M St Ne
N Capitol St Nw
N Capitol St Ne
Temple Ct Nw
1st St Ne
2nd St Ne
3rd St Ne
4th St Ne
Abbey Pl Ne
5th St Ne
6th St Ne
7th St Ne
8th St Ne
9th St Ne
10th St Ne
New York Ave Ne
Florida Ave Ne
Morse St Ne
Lincoln Cir W
Lincoln Cir S
Orleans Pl Ne
Morton Pl Ne
L St Ne
K St Ne
I St Ne
Brentwood Pkwy Ne
Brentwood Park
Okie St Ne
Craig St
Draper Dr
Switzer Dr
Gallaudet University
W Virginia Ave Ne
Montello Ave Ne
© 1999 MapQuest.com, Inc.; © 1999 Navigation Technologies

A CIA internal matter meant no further investigation of the Finders and the police reports were declared "secret." The map above shows with a star the exact location of the warehouse.

FBI statement on Johnny Gosch: "WE HAVE NO CRIME.!"
NOREEN replies: "I have no son, he was kidnapped ......
Kidnapping is a Federal Crime.!"

FBI Friend or Foe?

September 5, 1982, Police Chief Orval Cooney kept telling me that the FBI would not be entering the case. I called the local FBI office and request an agent to come to my home. They sent Special Agents Ed Mall and David Oxler. When they arrived they sat down at the table and told me they would not be entering the case because, in their words "WE HAVE NO CRIME." I responded, "I have no son, he was kidnapped, you have all the information from the witness's, kidnapping is a Federal Crime." The agents informed me the Police Chief, Orval Cooney had briefed them telling them there was no need for them to enter the case... That he could handle the situation. I could not believe what was happening. It seemed the world had gone completely nuts. A little boy was kidnapped off the street and the FBI would not enter the case.

I grew up watching the FBI Story with Efrem Zimbalist Jr. and really believed that they entered kidnap cases and set up a command post in the homes of the families. NOT TRUE.... THEY DON'T!

.... Noreen N. Gosch

I used to be disturbed by the fact that media, police and FBI were not doing the job of finding my son or the people who took him. But it seemed that they were determined to place as many obstacles in front of me as they could.... I felt like a one armed fireman jumping from fire to fire.

My life was worse, when I didn't know why…THEY were trying to stifle the investigation and any hopes of my seeing my son alive again. They did not investigate my son's case ... DELIBERATLY! I believe my son and I were pawns in a much bigger game than I could even imagine.

Every time a clue or lead surfaced indicating Johnny might be alive…. the FBI…. The same FBI, who said "We Have No Crime", would gallop in and suck up all information, never to be seen again. I always referred to them like a huge "vacuum cleaner"…. Information and dirt goes one way…

In 1985, I received a letter from a woman in Sioux City, Iowa, she sent me a dollar bill she received in change at the grocery store. The dollar bill contained a hand written message from Johnny. It said, "I am alive…Johnny Gosch". The handwriting looked like samples I had of Johnny's. I immediately contacted a hand-writing expert to verify the signature…. He said it was definitely Johnny's handwriting and the approximate time frame the signature had been applied. It meant my son was alive.

I did not tell the authorities until I had the opportunity to contact Iowa Senators Charles Grassley and Tom Harkin asking their help in this matter. They put me in touch with someone from the U.S. Treasury Office in Washington, D.C. It was at that time I learned the "travel route" of this dollar bill. I learned that a dollar bill generally only travels in a short radius of the area it is released and it has a very short life. We think of a dollar bill as turning up on either coast etc, they do but the local area is more often the case.

I called back to Senators Grassley and Harken, telling them I wanted to do a "press conference" from the Nation's capitol to show the dollar bill and appeal to the kidnappers to return my son. Both Senators cooperated and did their part in setting up a date, time and place in the Capitol for the press conference. I took care of the rest. I sent packets of material to all of the people I had worked with in the media to that point. I gave them the location, date and time of the press conference.

When I arrived in Washington D.C., I was treated most graciously by both Senators and the men from the Treasury Dept. We discussed the plan for the press conference and the continued investigation of the "dollar bill".

While we were riding the "inter-building tram" from Grassley's office to the Capitol, Senator Grassley leaned over and said "Now please do not be disappointed if you only have a few reporters show up…. The Washington Press is very independent." I smiled and said "thank you". When we walked up to the Capitol, into the room for the press conference, the room was filled with press nearly a hundred from newspapers.

television (both local and network) and radio. Senator Grassley looked at Senator Harkin and said "My God how did she do this, I can get this many people to come to one of my press conferences."

The FBI by now had heard of the existence of the dollar bill, they no doubt saw the press conference. When I arrived home, the FBI paid a visit to my home and demanded "the dollar bill." I had made plenty of copies of it, verified it was my son's signature by experts and conferred with the U.S. Treasury Dept., so at that point, I turned over the dollar bill to the agents. The dollar bill has never been seen again.... It went up into the huge FBI Vacuum cleaner.

Kidnapped children are being kept alive and transported around the country... evidence such as the dollar bill in our case supported the fact Johnny was still alive. The case of the girl in Florida, whose picture was found in a convenience store parking lot, showing her tied and gagged in the back of a van. She is originally from Arizona and yet three years later, photos of her are found in Florida. I have spoken a few times to her mother and the photo was validated as "current". Did the FBI investigate this? Did they do any investigation on the dollar bill? I did my own investigation. I have learned the hard way that if you want something to be done....you have to do it yourself.

It has been more than 18 years since my son was kidnapped. I have relied upon my private investigators, who have been able to supply me with the evidence of not only what happened to Johnny but that he is still alive.

According to former Mayor of West Des Moines, George Mills; " Orval Cooney, West Des Moines Police Chief was a friend of Omaha Chief of Police Robert Wadman." In a recent conversation with George Mills, he quickly stated he had only met Wadman one time but he was "really Orval's friend".

Robert Wadman according to Senator Loren Schmit and the Nebraska Franklin Investigation was a major figure in pedophile activity in the Omaha area as well as a major figure in the cover up. Shortly after the legislature had formed the Franklin Investigative Committee, Schmit received a threatening phone call from Wadman stating "I've got something on you."

When evidence mounted in the investigation that led Loren Schmit to believe it was beyond the boundaries of the legislature, he sought out friend and legal representative John DeCamp to accompany him to the FBI offices. The Regional Head of the FBI, Nick Ohara, informed DeCamp and Schmit that Wadman was his close friend and a friend to the FBI. When the scandal ran Wadman out of town, he apparently had the assistance of the FBI in securing the job of Chief of Police of Aurora, Il. This was suspiciously near the site where Chief Investigator for the Nebraska Legislature, Gary Caradori's plane crashed, killing him and his eight-year-old son A.J.

A phone call from Caradori to Senator Loren Schmit, the night before the crash, stating; "I have the evidence to put them away," this might have jeopardized Caradori's life. Schmit and others involved later agreed the telephone lines must have been tapped. The question is .... Who has the capacity to tap the telephone lines to the Nebraska Legislature?

DeCamp states; "mystery surrounded not only the crash of the airplane, but Caradori's whole trip." The Lakefront Hotel in Chicago where Caradori stayed, the management of the hotel claimed they had no record of him. However, both his wife and business associate had made phone calls to him at the hotel.

Ted Gunderson, FBI Retired, in a report made public on the Internet, June 28, 2000, stated that the investigation of the crash was conducted on a military base.... This is unheard of in the investigation of a civilian plane crash.

Ten years ago, Paul Bonacci, a prisoner in the Lincoln Nebraska Federal Prison confessed to his participation in the kidnapping of my son. Bonacci's attorney, John DeCamp had the confession transcribed and it was hand carried to the FBI office in Omaha Nebraska, in 1989. That confession contained information about the kidnapping of my son Johnny.

The FBI did not act upon this information. Does the FBI have any obligation to notify parents when new evidence surfaces? The answer is "NO, the FBI operates much like a vacuum cleaner.... All information and debris goes one way." In this instance, the FBI had a vested interest to. ...Ignore and disregard any information concerning Johnny Gosch, which connected to the Franklin Scandal.

I did not learn of Bonacci until March 1991, although Johnny's father, John Gosch had not only received the information from DeCamp. But had been to the prison with a woman impersonating me to interview Bonacci. He made the decision to keep this from me. I found out following massive press coverage. Both the FBI and the West Des Moines Police announced they "were not interested in talking to Bonacci " Detective Gary Scott of the West Des Moines Police also stated in a TV interview "We do not want to try an reinvent the wheel."

The West Des Moines Police were shown viewing Bonacci's video taped confession, shrugging their shoulders and looking bewildered during the interview. When I watched it .... I kept wondering what kind of "wheels" were they trying to not reinvent.... And what did wheels have to do with it anyway"? It was such a dumb statement.

Battling the FBI in Nebraska

Over a ten-year period, DeCamp repeatedly filed a Civil Rights Law Suit on behalf of Paul Bonacci was indeed telling the truth, concerning his abuse by Larry King but also **the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch.** It had been rejected year after year until February 1999, when Bonacci was allowed to go before Judge Urbom, in Federal Court. Following the hearing, Judge Urbom awarded Bonacci one million dollars in punitive damages to be paid by Larry King. The ruling by Judge Urbom was the catalyst of new information to be used in Johnny's case.

Following this hearing, the FBI made no comment what so ever. The West Des Moines Police stated "we still do not consider Bonacci credible, despite the Federal Court Ruling!" What on earth does it take for Bonacci to be considered credible in Des Moines, when the Federal Court has ruled?

Governor Vilsack, when contacted for his assistance said; "This is not my concern.... Take your problem to the Dept. of Public Safety!" President Harry S. Truman stated, "The Buck stops here." Obviously not with Governor Vilsack. In Nebraska, the last four Governors, including Vilsack's friend Bob Kerrey, ignored even their own legislative investigation, which uncovered massive sexual abuse of children.

The Governor should have referred it to the Department of Criminal Investigation ...The DCI, as this was new damning evidence in kidnapping of my son. The DCI is the proper investigating branch of law enforcement. It raises a question about Vilsack's knowledge of State government. It was very obvious by the response I received, the Governor is not that concerned about what happens to children in this state or in solving the kidnappings of Johnny or Eugene Martin.

When Johnny was first kidnapped, the DCI was involved. One DCI Detective, Chuck Wood was sent to my home on a number of occasions. He and a detective from the West Des Moines Police always worked as a team. During interviews as they would ask me questions and I answered...Wood would look at me and always say, "If what you are saying is true.... And I doubt that it is!" That became his refrain each time we met his message was clear .... he was not only belittling me but also trying to intimidate and discourage me.

There were numerous times I had to be in meetings with Detective Wood, I had finally, instructed my attorney to tell Wood, that he would have to submit his questions in writing. I would only answer them in writing, if he was going to continue his intimidating behavior. The very last time I saw Wood, was at a "summit meeting with authorities, my private detective and me". I brought my knitting along... As we discussed the case, I kept on knitting, it finally unnerved Police Chief Cooney, he raised his voice: "WHY THE HELL ARE YOU KNITTING, WHY WOULD BRING KNITTING TO A MEETING LIKE THIS?" I replied "Knitting keeps me calm and it will stop me from acting on the temptation to smack the hell out of you...for your **OUTRAGEOUS** behavior towards me and my son's kidnapping." Cooney was taken back that I would respond in that manner, however, I had decided I would take no more of the rude remarks from these men.

It doesn't matter if remarks come from local law enforcement or the FBI, the impact is still the same. Why should I be surprised! The FBI still not investigating the case. What has changed in eighteen years? NOTHING! I have talked to countless parents of missing and murdered children over the eighteen years. The report is always the same.... **THE FBI DID NOT HELP US AT ALL.**

When you finish reading this chapter, there will be no question in your mind, if you can accept the truth of what is being said....

Call up the worst gangster movie you have ever viewed, consider Marlin Brando, in the Godfather as J. Edgar Hoover, The Director. In his book "Will" G. Gordon Liddy comments that Adoph Hitler was called: Der Fuhrer, and J. Edgar Hoover was "The Director". Liddy confides in his book, I killed people for J. Edgar. One assassination that they discussed was the killing of Political Columnist Jack Anderson, since some of his columns had annoyed Hoover.

In the book "Act of Treason" Mark North presents undeniable proof the Hoover learned of the plot to kill Kennedy by September of 1962. Not only did Hoover do nothing to stop it but actually worked to make sure that it would be successful. This book, which came out in 1991, was widely circulated It is the largest and most detailed of a series of books and television programs that presented the dead Hoover as less than a good and unbiased leader. Kennedy intended to remove Hoover. A PBS broadcast of "Frontline" identified Hoover as a homosexual with pedophile tendencies, claiming that he had actually been arrested in New Orleans for soliciting sex from a sixteen year old. All records were later expunged

It is easy to blame a dead leader for what was wrong with the FBI, but the problems have continued over the last ten years. The FBI has been portraying more of a Mafia Godfather image.

In Nebraska, the FBI raided of the office of Gary Caradori investigator for the Nebraska Legislature, who uncovered information on the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch and the sexual misuse of young children. The FBI confiscated Caradori's files the day after his death....those records have never been released.

On the old Geraldo Riviera Show, a woman told of Filming on Super 8 camera the death of Kennedy. She said, "I saw a bucket of blood coming out the back of his head." The next day two men identifying themselves as FBI asked for her film, promising it would be returned. She never saw them or the film again. She correctly identified the two agents when given a book filed with photographs of Dallas businessmen and law enforcement personnel. A woman from Geraldo's audience asked why it had taken her 28 years to tell the story? She replied she had been telling this story for 28 years, indicating it had taken this long for someone to listen.

Johnny Gosch was kidnapped! Eugene Martin was kidnapped! Jacob Wetterling was kidnapped! Is it possible that the FBI has had the job of covering the tracks of any kidnappers working in conjunction with the CIA?

Paul Bonnaci comments that Emilio, who was in charge of the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch, bragged "The FBI lets me do whatever I want with children."

Arrogance and apathy prevails in our country to the highest level. People see a Johnny Gosch case here and there but as long as it doesn't affect "me or mine", then people can turn away, as though it never happened. Arrogance on the part of law enforcement officials.... Apathy on the part of the public and media.

Stories of the FBI

J. Edgar Hoover forced William C. Sullivan out of the FBI in 1971. Sullivan was his number three man, assistant to Hoover himself and operational in charge of the Bureau's criminal, intelligence, and espionage investigation.

"When I left the bureau we employed over three hundred full time informants who reported from all over the country. Most of them were involved in crimes like hijacking, bank robbery, murder, and kidnapping. But some were members of the Black Muslims, the Black Panthers, the Ku Klux Klan, and the Minutemen, we heard about everybody, right across the board. During the late 1960s and the early 1970s the bureau must have spent a million dollars maintaining informants in the antiwar movement.

Sometimes an informant can become an agent provocateur who ends up participating in, perhaps instigating and even leading the activity he was paid to report on.

The FBI seems to have played a major role in the Nebraska Cover Up as early as 1982 – 83. An investigation had uncovered what was termed "male prostitution ring was identified in Omaha." An FBI press release in the Omaha World Herald in October 1983, stated "this thing is so big and involves so many prominent people around this state." It was suggested that was the motive for covering up the ring then, as it is today.

Two days after the death of the chief investigator of the Nebraska Legislature, Gary Caradori …before Caradori's body had been delivered home, the FBI presented a subpoena to Caradori's wife, Sandy for all his investigative notes, documents, receipts and files.

Once again the evidence is sucked up into the FBI Vacuum cleaner, never to be seen again.

The FBI then proceeded to launch several investigations of Franklin Committee Chairman Senator Loren Schmit. Several spurious lawsuits were filed against Senator Schmit over the period of a year, in an attempt to break him financially. At least one of the lawsuits was almost certainly instigated by an FBI agent.

The careers and families of members of Senator Schmit's investigative committee, whom Schmit frequently described as " three farmers, a plumber and a 70 year old grandmother" have all been threatened

Dear Mr. Gosch,
I'm very interested in knowing if this is his signature. I would appriciate hearing what you find out. I pray this is not a sick yoke.

Jeanette M.
14th St
Sioux City Iowa
51103

Johnny and other kidnapped kids, traveled a circuit which brought them back to Sioux City, IA on a regular basis.

14th St.
Sioux City Iowa
51103

SIOUX CITY, IA 511
(PM)
13 JUN
1985

USA 22

John Gosch
1004 45th St.
West Des Moines Iowa
50265

ST. PAUL PIONEER PRESS AND DISPATCH

THURSDAY, JULY 11, 1985 P☆/

Associated Press

Noreen Gosch display dollar bill at press conference with the words "I am alive, Johnny Gosch."

$400,000 offered for return of boy

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
THIS NOTE IS LEGAL TENDER FOR ALL DEBTS, PUBLIC AND PRIVATE
I AM
ALIVE
Johnny
Gosch
H68074316A
H68074316A
WASHINGTON, D.C.
H
8
8
8
8
1
1
1
1
ONE DOLLAR

Before dying of AIDS, Thorstad watched his organization grown from one in 1978 that had $600 in the bank and a handful of subscribers to a multimillion-dollar organization.

NAMBLA

The North America Man Boy Love Association was formed in 1978. According to the minutes of the meeting they had six hundred dollars in the bank and about 225 member subscribers to their publication. Ten years later, when the Franklin Credit Union in Omaha was raided, it was discovered that this Credit Union had five million in NAMBLA money.

They have vehemently denied charges that they had anything to do with the creation of a whole new subclass of pornography. They absolutely denied that they vigorously recruited run away and throw away child not to mention kidnapped children and even young infants being in kiddie porn.

Paul Bonacci, a young man who detailed his part in the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch so thoroughly, that Noreen Gosch totally believes him. In February 1999, a Federal Court Judge in Lincoln, Nebraska ruled that Bonacci had been repeatedly sexually abused. If this court ruling makes Bonacci absolutely creditable then he should also be believed when he says he went to Washington D.C, to have sex with U.S. Representative Barney Frank. He traveled to New York to become a "boytoy" for Peter Thorstad, head of NAMBLA.

Bonacci has MPD/DID and one of those personalities is based on Thorstad. He personally heard Thorstad speaking of Dr Judi-Ann Densen Gerber, a psychiatrist who was called "Public Enemy No. 1," by NAMBLA. She exposed NAMBLA, who promote their civil right to have sex with children. Thorstad said: "I'm going to have to get rid of that bitch." It has been established that Paul possesses a photographic memory, which allows him to recall every person he has been with, every location he has seen and describe it in detail.

Under the control of Larry King, Bonacci made snuff films and had sex with the corpses, made child/child and child/adult porno films...was routinely sent around the country to have sex with over 1000 men. How then was NAMBLA not related to what was going on? How then did NAMBLA increase its bank account from six hundred dollars to five million in the Franklin Credit Union in ten years?

Under Thorstad's leadership NAMBLA was the first American member of the International Lesbian and Gay Association granted consultative status to the United Nations Economic and Social Council. According to the American Family Association on July 30, 1994 the United States and 21 other nations voted to approve this status.

NAMBLA has grown since it first reported membership of two hundred to a worldwide organization with members in Europe and Asia. Robert Rhoades, NAMBLA's former membership secretary, is a government employee with the U.S. Veterans Administration, Roy B. Radow worked as the school psychologist at the P.S. 75 school in Queens, and Peter Melzer has held a teaching position at New York City's prestigious Bronx High School of Science. It is certain that Catholic priests have actively participated in recruiting boys for NAMBLA's organization.

NAMBLA defends sex between men and young boys. They favor abolishing all age-of-consent laws designed to protect minors. In 1993, the Constitution and Position Papers claim that they engage in no activities that violate the law. But in the next paragraph they proclaim: "We support the rights of youth, as well as adults to choose the partners with whom they wish to share and enjoy their bodies. We encourage young people to rebel against the anti-sexual prohibitions imposed on them by authorities: parents, school officials, so called 'moral' crusaders, the church, the law, the news media and the state." They further declare: "We oppose age of consent laws.

On December 29, 1982, on a nationally televised show, Thorstad was asked by the Host of the ABC talk program, The Last Word, if a boy as young as nine would give consent to have sex with a man. "Of course",Thorstad replied: "They do it all the time.!"

This was confirmed by anyone reading the NAMBLA Bulletin, where one man described receiving oral sex from his six-year-old brother. And a writer from Nebraska stated his first lover turned out to be a boy of seven and a half

American Family Association Journal states "Realizing the incredible public relations disaster pedophiles represent to their cause, homosexual leaders have consistently tried to keep NAMBLA "out of sight".

The "Overhauling of Straight America" which the journal describes as "the landmark playbook for homosexual strategy, they quote an old Arab proverb: " First let the camel get his nose inside the tent and only later his unsightly derriere...the masses must not be repulsed by premature exposure to homosexual behavior itself."

Today Chicago and other cities believe that any child in the third grade is old enough to know how homosexuals have sex. Years ago, most kids were too busy playing baseball and roller-skating. Why do children this young need to be educated in pursuing "alternate life styles"?

NAMBLA INVESTIGATION

From "The Survivor Activist" publication, summer 1998. Survivor Connection web site http://www.angelfire.com/ri/survivorconnection. Angel fire network has a whole series of website dealing with the sexual abuse of children. For example ri is for Rhode Island, 52 Lyndon Rd., Cranston, RI 02905-1121 (401) 941-2548.

This is a statement made by Larry Echols.

"From July 3, 1997, to October 27, 1997, I was a paid informant working under FBI Special Agent Richard K. Lack of the Monterey, C.A., FBI Field Office (408/375-3123) under the code name "Pedbuster" During that time, I personally handed Agent Lack over 200 original letters from members of the North American Man/Boy Love Association (NAMBLA) which had been given to me by a NAMBLA member-turncoat. The authors of those letters detailed their sexual lust for and in some cases their actual rapes of young boys...and approximately 30% of those letters contained the writers" real names, addresses, phone and fax numbers, e-mail addresses, and other personal information.

In late July of 1997, I introduced Agent Lack to a gay, prominent member of NAMBLA, who is not a pedophile or pederast and Lack hired him as a paid undercover informant to work for the FBI. From July until late October, I was the principal conduit for providing NAMBLA informant's intelligence and evidence of criminal sexual activity involving children to Lack, including Internet posts, e-mails, and other Internet communications between the mole and NAMBLA members and BoyChat participants as well as some photographs of self-identified child rapists and their victims, some of them boys as young as eight.

Remarkably, this arrangement was necessary because the Monterey (CA) FBI office had no Internet connection, and the San Jose (CA) FBI office…the one responsible for Silicon Valley…had but one computer with access to the Internet.

Repeatedly the NAMBLA mole suggested to the FBI that he be wired for his frequent in-person meetings with sexually active NAMBLA members and other pederasts. But, much to Agent Lack's chagrin, this never happened because FBI Headquarters in Washington refused to approve it.

On October 23, 1997, at the FBI's Monterey office I met with FBI Assistant Director George Martinez, FBI Internet Child Sex Predator Task Force (i.e., "Innocent Images" in Baltimore, Maryland) Supervisor Linda Hooper (301/572-5400), San Francisco FBI Administrator Lillian Zillias, and Agent Lack. At that meeting, I brought examples of extremely egregious Internet child pornography featuring totally naked and sexually-aroused boys as young as eight which I had recently downloaded from the Internet and handed to Martinez, Hooper, Zillias, and Lack, and asked them if this was sufficient evidence for them to begin investigations.

I had thought that Agent Lack would get angry with me for downloading and bringing this material; however, his ire was directed instead at Martinez and Hooper when they pointed out to him that…even though such pornography was illegal…they would not authorize his or any other FBI Agent to investigate such pornography because U.S. Attorney General Janet Reno had instructed U.S. Attorneys around the United States not to prosecute such cases.

Four days later, Agent Lack called me into the Monterey office and told me that Martinez and Hooper had ordered him to terminate me. However, he said that the NAMBLA mole would continue to work with the FBI. But in late December, the mole was totally disrespected by a FBI polygraph examiner to whom Lack was required to send him…a bigot who accused this courageous man of "f_____little boys" totally contrary to the mole's past, including his criminal history—and at that the mole resigned from working with the FBI.

On November 17, 1997, I went to the U.S. Customs Service and from then until January 8, 1998, I was a paid informant under U.S. Customs Special Agent Robin Sterzer (408/535-5149) of San Jose, CA, with the code name "Alex Cole". During those seven weeks I provided both she and an unpaid informant, a California Department of Justice Special Agent Robert DeMiguel (415/351-3374) of San Francisco with their own sets of the aforementioned NAMBLA letters, as well as hundreds of downloaded pages of evidence of Internet activity by child sex predators and child pornographers which included copies of posts from BoyChat, e-mails, IRC communications, and even detailed photographs of child sex predators and some of their victims.

On December 19, 1997, I asked Special Agent Sterzer to reimburse me for over $1,000 in out-of-pocket expenses which I had incurred in my work for U.S. Customs, but she delayed doing so until Jan 8, 1997, at which time she told me that Customs would not reimburse me "Until we can give you a polygraph conducted by one of our examiners; but we don't have any in this part of the country and we don't know when we will have."

I refused to go along with this duplicity and also due to the continuing failure of the California Department of Justice to even reimburse my expenses, I ended my undercover work for law enforcement.

What will it take to get Janet Reno and the Justice Department to conduct a thorough investigation of the conduct of NAMBLA members? Surely the evidence indicated here proves that NAMBLA members are perverted criminals.

NORTH AMERICAN MAN/BOY LOVE ASSOCIATION

The North American Man/Boy Love Association (NAMBLA) is an organization founded in response to the extreme oppression of men and boys involved in consensual sexual and emotional relationships with each other. Its membership is open to all individuals sympathetic to man/boy love in particular and sexual freedom in general. NAMBLA is strongly opposed to age-of-consent laws and other restrictions which deny adults and youth the full enjoyment of their bodies and control over their lives. NAMBLA's goal is to end the long-standing oppression of men and boys involved in any mutually consensual relationship by:

1) building a support network for such men and boys;
2) educating the public on the benevolent nature of man/boy love;
3) cooperating with the lesbian, gay, and other movements for sexual liberation;
4) supporting the liberation of persons of all ages from sexual prejudice and oppression.

If you are interested in more information about NAMBLA, our regional meetings, national conferences, political actions, and publications, please send $1 to:

NAMBLA
P.O. Box 174
Midtown Station
New York, NY 10018

nambla BULLETIN

june 1983
vol. 4 n. 5
$2
VOICE OF THE NORTH AMERICAN MAN/BOY LOVE ASSOCIATION

We have received reports that the FBI has visited members of NAMBLA, asking about John Gosch (see elsewhere in this issue).

If accosted or visited by the FBI, do not think you are dealing with reasonable people interested in determining the truth. You are dealing with the American equivalent (in methods and ethics) of the Soviet KGB. Since the emphasis is on the justification of thus-far squandered taxpayers' money, agents' salaries, etc., rather than on the finding of the truth, beware!

Be firm! Protect your right to privacy by cutting such encounters short. DO NOT SPEAK, EXCEPT FOR A REFUSAL TO SPEAK. REMEMBER, REFUSING TO TALK TO THE FBI IS NOT A CRIME, IT'S YOUR CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHT.

Read guidelines and detailed instructions in another part of this issue.

JOHN GOSCH - PHONE HOME!

NAMBLA has received an inquiry regarding the whereabouts of a missing Iowa youth, John Gosch, whose disappearance has generated considerable media attention. John is a 13- year-old youth of West Des Moines, who disappeared on September 5, 1982, while delivering newspapers.

NAMBLA firmly believes that youths should be allowed to determine whom they shall live with. At the same time, the request for our assistance has come in a unique form: a polite phone conversation between Brian McNaught (Boston mayor Kevin White's liaison to the gay and lesbian community) and NAMBLA spokesperson Brian Quinby.

The idea that NAMBLA would be well informed on runaways is both wrong and being used by the FBI against us. However, if anyone does know any runaways, suggest to him that he call the National Runaway Youth Hot Line (1-800-231-6946) to relieve anxiety at home and resolve the question about the conditions under which leaving occurred. The Hot Line is confidential and young people who use it can do so without being pressured into divulging any more information than they choose to.

december 1982

nambla
BULLETIN

VOLUME 3, No. 10

VOICE OF THE NORTH AMERICAN MAN/BOY LOVE ASSOCIATION

NAMBLA HERE TO STAY!

NAMBLA HOLDS PRESS CONFERENCES ● ATTRACTS WORLDWIDE ATTENTION

NAMBLA's first-ever news conferences, held within an hour of each other in New York and Boston, propelled our four-year-old organization into the newspapers and on to the airwaves across America. By revealing the source of the picture alleged to be that of missing Etan Patz, NAMBLA quashed reports that members David Groat and Brett Portman, whose Wareham, MA house was raided on December 3rd, were in any way connected with the disappearence of Patz. The existence of the picture was confirmed by Nassau County Police the next day, clearing NAMBLA of any involvement in the kidnapping. The conferences served also to refute the sensationalized press coverage that declared NAMBLA to be a pornography and sex ring that accepts major credit cards and delivers hapless lads via Learjet.

The Boston news conference began at 9:15 on Tuesday, December 29th. Held at the Glad Day Bookshop, the thirty-minute conference attracted

continued on page .

NEW YORK POST
FINAL
lice release
ssing photo
nd ask ...
Is this Etan Patz?

Photo the FBI and the local police allegedly found in a cottage in Wareham, Mass., where members David Groat, Brett Portman and Harold Baker III were arrested. Conveniently construed as a photo of Etan Patz, a 6-year-old boy missing from home since 1979, it was passed along and used in the uninformative, gutter-snipe style of the sensationalist press to defame NAMBLA, "a bizarre sex club," with quasi-allegations and innuendos of having kidnapped Etan Patz. The effort to destroy the legitimacy of the Organization failed...

JANUARY
1968

...When, thanks to the efforts of NAMBLA, the source of the photo and the identity of the model were revealed in press conferences held simultaneously in Boston and New York.

Published in the Boyhood Calendar dated 1968, it is the photo of a model who now must be in his late twenties. The FBI has declined any comment to the press, except for an occasional "it was thought, at the time... ." NAMBLA maintains the FBI knew all along of the falsehood of the accusations it was leaking to the press.

Division of Criminal Investigatio

Iowa Department of Public Safet

Iowa Sex Offender Registration

Not all of these registrants will appear on this web site's searchable database.

The searchable database only contains information regarding persons who have been assessed as "at-risk" to reoffend, and who were convicted of an offense requiring registration after July 1, 1995, and who were previously notified that electronic access would be part of their public notification. A registrant who has not been assessed as "at-risk" and not been the subject of public notification will not appear in this file.

10
7
15
13
11
4
9
6
5
6
7
20
10
18
7
6
51
16
9
21
18
19
6
7
10
6
5
9
19
15
189
5
9
7
69
17
15
7
173
21
14
105
8
11
18
10
25
49
52
22
28
234
54
11
46
9
4
4
11
24
474
55
19
12
120
11
214
117
7
4
17
19
24
32
15
18
37
8
9
1
16
4
8
15
59
23
92
10
61
6
32
2
4
7
6
13
1
10
40

Out of State = 403

Number of Registrants by County

http://www.state.ia.us/government/dps/dci/isor/sorstats.htm

Iowa Sex Offender Registry Statistics

Adair	4	Adams	1	Allamakee	7	Appanoose	13	Audubon	4	Benton
Black Hawk	173	Boone	25	Bremer	9	Buchanan	21	Buena Vista	19	Butler
Calhoun	7	Carroll	18	Cass	7	Cedar	11	Cerro Gordo	51	Cherokee
Chickasaw	9	Clarke	4	Clay	18	Clayton	15	Clinton	46	Crawford
Dallas	24	Davis	1	Decatur	7	Delaware	14	Des Moines	61	Dickinson
Dubuque	105	Emmet	13	Fayette	19	Floyd	16	Franklin	6	Fremont
Greene	10	Grundy	7	Guthrie	11	Hamilton	17	Hancock	6	Hardin
Harrison	9	Henry	92	Howard	5	Humboldt	7	Ida	5	Iowa
Jackson	11	Jasper	55	Jefferson	23	Johnson	120	Jones	54	Keokuk
Kossuth	11	Lee	40	Linn	234	Louisa	10	Lucas	8	Lyon
Madison	17	Mahaska	32	Marion	24	Marshall	52	Mills	8	Mitchell
Monona	8	Monroe	15	Montgomery	9	Muscatine	37	O'Brien	10	Osceola
Page	32	Palo Alto	7	Plymouth	21	Pocahontas	6	Polk	474	Pottawattam
Poweshiek	19	Ringgold	4	Sac	9	Scott	214	Shelby	4	Sioux
Story	48	Tama	22	Taylor	2	Union	16	Van Buren	10	Wapello
Warren	19	Washington	18	Wayne	6	Webster	69	Winnebago	4	Winneshiek
Woodbury	189	Worth	9	Wright	10					

Iowa Sex Offender Registry Home Page

Iowa Division of Criminal Investigation | Iowa Department of Public Safety Home Page

State of Iowa Home Page

SATANISM IN AMERICA
A Reality.... Not a Myth

CURRENT RITUAL ABUSE

A recent study by Bennett Brown, a University of Chicago Psychiatrist, involved with 37 adult ritual abuse survivors. These individuals did not know each other and were interviewed from differing locations around the U.S. The results of this study revealed 10 common factors of ritual abuse experience. They are as follows:

97% talked about the use of drugs in the cult
100% were sexually molested
100% were tortured
100% witnessed animal mutilations & killings
72% talked about coffins, graves & being buried alive with dead bodies.
100% had death threats
83% witnessed sacrifices of animals, children and adults
78% of women had stories of marriage ceremonies
60% of the women had stories of sacrifice of their own children and were impregnated for this purpose (breeders)
81% were involved in cannibalism and consumption of human body parts.
....Nebraska Leadership Conference

We have heard it all before. I don't believe you. This can't happen in America. You are just trying to scare us. People shy away from those trying to get the message out, as if carrying a warning about Satanism was akin to being a small pox carrier.

Two men have surfaced in the debate over Satanism, Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino (Satanist and mind control specialist in the military) and Ken Lanning, a supposed FBI specialist who monitors groups. Lanning's statement that Christians have done more harm than Satanism ever did has lead many to call him a Satanist. Lanning has definitely used the power of his position with the FBI to "claim that there is no satanic crime wave" in total contradiction to police reports by the thousands. An entire issue of "The Journal of Psychohistory" documents tens of thousands of cases being brought to the attention of psychiatrists and psychologists.

The editor, Dr. deMause states: It was not, however, until word began to get around the psychotherapy community that I was editing an issue of my journal on "Cult Abuse of Children" that I began to realize the full extent of cult activity in America today. Phone calls from all over the country poured into my editorial office from psychotherapists, who told me that they would like to read the cult abuse issue because they had treated cult abuse victims. When I then asked them if they wished to contribute somehow to the issue, they often said they couldn't...they were afraid to talk in print about their clients, even anonymously, because the cults had threatened them or their families with violence. Phone threats, dead cats on doorsteps, burning crosses on lawns and other convincing communications made them understandably reluctant to write anything about cults."

DeMause continues that one psychiatrist wrote him, after he learned the psychiatrist had given a paper on treating cult abuse victims, but he declined the invitation to publish his paper, stating:

"As you may know, there is some risk attached to treating satanic ritual abuse victims. A recent study by Dr. Nancy Perry indicates that as many as 10% of therapists treating such patients have been threatened or attacked by the groups to which their patients formerly belonged.

DeMause went on: In fact, even that therapist who had agreed to write about their clients for the cult issue often had second thoughts. Most promised articles but then didn't send them in. After I heard one psychiatrist give...a detailed account of his patient being sexually abused by a cult, I requested he write an article, which I published in this issue as it was written, attributing the increase in cult reports to "the contagious nature of group hysteria"...but without a single word about his own cult-abused patient!"

Dr deMause goes on to say that authors of false memory books also turned out to be pedophile advocates. Paul and Shirley Eberle's book "The Abuse of Innocence: The McMartin Preschool Trial" taken seriously by reviewers and widely quoted in magazine articles as authorities, were actually producers and publishers of kiddie porn.

Sgt. Toby Tyler, a San Bernardino deputy sheriff, who is a recognized expert on child pornography stated: "I have seen articles they have published such as "I Was a Sexpot at Five " and "Little Lolitas" included illustrations of children involved in sodomy and oral copulation and featured pornographic photos of the Eberles."

Yet when Ted Gunderson , recently retired head of the FBI in California and a team lead by an archeologist uncovered the tunnels at the McMartin Day Care, Gunderson could not get the L.A. Times or other major media to run the story. The tunnels contained satanic objects and were as the children described them.

Dr. deMause also comments on FBI's Ken Lanning, who says he has "been unable to find one murder of anyone by two or more people following typical satanic ritualistic prescriptions." Lanning ignores all kinds of convictions for cult abuse that are in police and court records, while others who have actually done ritual abuse investigation work for the FBI are ignored by the press. "

Dr deMause concludes: The more I dug into the literature; the "curiouser and curiouser" seemed the claims that investigation of cults are only witch hunts.

There is a group called the Cult Crime Impact Network, which estimates that as many as 50,000 human sacrifices a year are being performed by a nationwide covert network of satanic cults."

From Kenneth V. Lanning, M.S. Supervisory Special Agent National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime, FBI Academy, Quantico, Virginia come a series of pronouncement. A selection from his outline will give you an idea of what he is trying to debunk.

He saves the "Big Conspiracy theory for last "which implies that Satanist are responsible for such things as Adolph Hitler, World War II, abortion, pornography, Watergate, Irangate, and infiltration of the Department of Justice, the Pentagon and the White House" (All these connections surfaced in the Nebraska Franklin Investigation)

Add to that "Organized, Traditional, or Multigenerational satanic groups involved in organized conspiracies, such as taking over day care centers, infiltrating police departments, and trafficking in human sacrifice victims. (Proven in Nebraska)

About music: Lyrics, symbolism, and influence of rock and roll, Heavy Metal and Black Metal music. Teenage suicide by adolescents dabbling in the occult. Lee Orr, Kansas City Homicide detective and satanic cult investigator said, "Omaha youth were carpooling to Kansas City to buy Death Metal. Which feature the sacrifice of mother and baby real or simulated?

Although Lanning does his best to explain away each and ever step of the "Big Conspiracy Theory." The exception is leaving out the major drug trafficking connections that bind the DIA/CIA to the Satanist drug traffickers. He has given a perfect outline of what is going on. A Chicago University survey of Satanic activity around the country revealed that 100% of the cult survivors were using drugs.

Lanning writes: What is Ritualistic Crime?

Lanning smoothly explains. "Ritual can refer to a prescribed religious ceremony, but in its broader meaning refers to any customarily repeated act or series of acts. The need to repeat these acts can be cultural sexual, or psychological as well as spiritual. Cultural rituals could include such things as what a family eats on Thanksgiving Day.

What Lanning fails to mention is the thousands of reported cultural ceremonies involving satanic murders with the child's hand involved ...held firmly in the grip of an adult to kill a playmate, or a child snatched off the streets. At least hundreds of convictions are in the courthouses of America. Tens of thousands of complaints have been filed from every corner of America. No amount of false memory manufactured covers these stories.

Charles Highams two books "Trading with the Enemy " and "America Swastika " shows how the Nazi worked in America before, during and after WW II. One factory even manufactured ball bearings for German fighter planes while telling the U.S. government it lacked the proper metals. He wrote of how Nazi war criminals found a place for themselves in America after Germany was literally destroyed.

"The Plot Against the Peace" published in 1946, revealed how the Nazi began training schools in 1943 for agents whose job it would be to carry on the Reich at the end of the war along with Teutonic Satanism. They were given new names and new passports, often of dead eastern Europeans and told to wait out the end of the war and apply for political asylum, fleeing communism. Switzerland was fully cooperative in this venture and the monies for the new Reich were held safe in "neutral" Swiss banks.

Col. Michael Aquino has long been claimed to be in charge of a Mindwar project for the U,S Military. He is the illegitimate son of a Nazi SS officer. As a young lieutenant, he joined the Church of Satan founded by Anton La Vey, a former circus barker, who found a new stichk. He was the sensation of the Men's magazines of the 1950s, conducting his satanic masses with the likes of Jayne Mansfield and with such followers as Sammy Davis Jr. Rising to the rank of High Priest did not seem to hinder Aquino's military career, even charges of molesting children did not stop his rise. What better place to molest them, than in the military. They are the largest provider of day care in the world. Day Care centers at West Point, New York and Fort Leavenworth, Kansas have carefully been dealt with so another fall guy took the rap for higher ups.

Ken Lanning, the so-called specialist in cult crimes claimed there are no Satanists. Although Aquino was on trial at the Presidio in California for molesting children as a High Priest of LaVey's Church of Satan. Aquino broke away and founded in the military the Temple of Set.. Satanism now has a place on an America soldiers dog tags just like Catholic, Protestant, Jew, Moslem and Witch—yes Witch

Lanning, would have you believe that no such groups exist or if the do they are of little significance. Yet police throughout America are reporting more and more cases of satanic connections to murders and disappearances of both children and adults.

According to Johnny Gosch and at least three others. It was Aquino, who picked him up and paid for him in Sioux City weeks after he was kidnapped. Referred to as the "Col.," ...Reports have connected him to Johnny Gosch, Eugene Martin, Jacob Wetterling and other Midwestern boys. All kidnapped to participate in a government program designed to create the perfect vessel for sabotage for blackmail and for murder. To accomplish this. ...They had to be subjected to satanic programming which created MPD or DID (Multiple Personality Disorder or Dissociate Identity Disorder) which provided more than just Doctor Jeykle and Mr. Hyde but a series of personalities suited to a variety of assignments.

Directly from Lt. Colonel Michael Angelo Aquino's own website comes the information that he was in Military Intelligence. During the time of Johnny's kidnapping he was with the Defense Intelligence Agency and attended the Foreign Service Institute at the Department of State. From 1981 thru 84 , he was in Washington D.C. If Cathy O'Brien can be believed, he regularly attended White House functions and hobnobbed with George Bush and Cheney. His last course attended was Joint Intelligence Operations Course at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas in 1990. He had graduated from U.S. Army Command & General Staff College in 1979 on the Commandant's List, like the Dean's list in college it meant he was in the top ten per cent of his class.

Paul Bonnaci states, he met Aquino. Rusty Nelson narrates for the federal court record his picking up bearer bonds from Larry King in a Suite at the Ritz in Minneapolis, allegedly Iran-Contra money. John Gosch identifies him as the man who picked him up and paid for him two weeks after he was kidnapped.

The record is established that he was in military service during the time of the kidnapping. He was then a Major writing from "Psyops to Mindwar" describing mind control techniques and their use in the military.

At the conclusion of the report of the Nebraska Legislature and the Franklin Investigation they did not shrink from reporting on Satanism, unfortunately absolutely nothing came of it.

Many Nebraskans remember the horror of the occurrences in Rulo, but there is a temptation to think of the murderous cult behavior in Rulo as an aberration. Or to think of Satanism, witchcraft, and other cult activity as being things that happen elsewhere than Nebraska. (On July 17, 1991 John M. Zielinski on WHO Talk Radio Jan Michaelson show challenged the Iowa Legislature: "To walk down the hill to the Des Moines River, up past the Botanical Gardens and have a look under the bridge over University. 'Missing Children our Dead' 'Satan Rules' An off duty police intelligence officer showed Zielinski this site in daylight saying, "After midnight, we do not come here. When the Satanist meet... they have guards with AK-47." (This officer also talked about local shoot outs that were in police reports but never made the Des Moines Register.)

The report introduces Priscilla Coates, from New York, a representative of Citizen's Freedom Foundation, a support group of former cult members. "She describes cults as destructive groups, that are a problem on an international basis. She testified extensively about cults, and other destructive groups, (including Jonestown), in which children were constantly abused for purposes of cult discipline. She testified, that she had information of cults encouraging people to commit numerous crimes ranging from prostitution to theft to selling drugs. She described the cult at Rulo, Nebraska as being somewhat typical, in terms of isolation, group paranoia, excessive discipline and demands for obedience, etc.

She discussed how destructive groups prepare customized versions of the Bible, so that they can use biblical authority to influence people. She testified that many of them have no life experiences to which they can return, and she discussed the difficulty in rehabilitating children, who had been subjected to cult abuse. She stated that information regarding Rulo, in terms of forcing cult members to have sexual relations with their children and with each other, was not uncommon, and that bestiality (making people have sex with animals) was also not uncommon,

The members of the Committee are fully aware of the fact that people do not want to hear about cult activity, and are fully aware of the fact that to discuss witchcraft and Satanism is to risk being the subject of ridicule and even hostility.

We understand this.

Nevertheless, because Satanism and witchcraft, and other forms of cult abuse demonstratively do exist, it is our duty to report our findings and discoveries, in the hope that perhaps the public may be made aware of such dangers as may exist.

The report states: "Because under the First Amendment... Congress may make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, or abridging the freedom thereof, there is a satanic church which functions as a legitimate organization.

After declaring Satanism as a Constitutional protected religion, the report continues: Their practices include 1) sexual child abuse: 2) prostitution; 3) incest; 4) orgies; 5) physical abuse; 6) homicides; 7) brainwashing towards suicide.

What in the above paragraph can be considered protected under the First Amendment? Quantico based, FBI Man Ken Lanning claims there is no satanic crime!

Kathleen Sorenson, Foster Mother

Attorney John DeCamp, like Ted Gunderson and Noreen Gosch stands ever ready to present the stories of the men, women and children who were abused and murdered to cover up the satanic activity that is rampant in Nebraska, Iowa, Minnesota, etc. From "The Fatima Crusader this account of Kathleen Sorenson, who lived and died trying to do right by the foster children she took into her home.

Sorenson appeared on the Geraldo Rivera's national televised special on Satanism. What follows is a transcription of an interview she gave on Christian TV in 1989, shortly before her death. It was based on her experience with over 30 children who spent months or years in her home.

"We got involved and learned about this subject because we were foster parents and worked with a number of children. And several years back, several of the children began, after a period of time and building up trust, to talk about some very bizarre events that had happened in their past and they were frightening and very confusing.

I really didn't know what to think. We went to the police, and we went to social services and there was really nothing anyone could do. (Or would do). These children we worked with are now adopted, in safe homes, and probably would never have talked had they not felt able to trust the people they were living with.....

There are certain things that are in common in the children's' stories when we talk about devil worship...There are things that come up in every single story, such as candles. They all talk about sex. Sex is without a doubt a part of every area of this, all sorts of perverted sex. This is what you will hear, about the sex, about the incest, and it is so hard to believe. But once, we get that, we have learned that we can go on and ask and find out...and it will involve pornography. Part of the reason, is that they use it to threaten the children. "We have pictures we will show the police if you talk." It makes the children feel that they are in great danger, and they are all very frightened of the law. They talk about the garish make-up that the people in the group wear, they talk about the singing that they didn't understand. Obviously that is chanting, and that has come up in every one of these stories, and none of them call it chanting. There will be dancing. Most often that will involve sexual acts. There will always be a leader and they will be very frightened of the leader.

The children, from a very young age, and I am talking about children who came out of birth homes, the family they were born to, worshipped the devil.

The children, I have talked to have all had to murder before the age of two. That is something beyond anything I could comprehend. But in some way, whether with the help of an adult's hand over theirs, by having them practice, by getting them excited to be part of the adult scene, they do murder.

They are told, they will never get out, no one will ever believe them, that there is no freedom that the law will get you. They are hopeless before they get someone willing to listen. They are threatened with death. Every time a child is killed in their group, they are told, If you tell, this will happen to you....They believe that these people know everything they are doing, everyone they're talking to. One teenager told me that she had been told, that if she ever got married, that they would fool her, it would be one of them. They set them up to fail in every area.

It is very prevalent in the Midwest... Iowa, Nebraska, and Missouri. Some people speculated that these states are headquarters....

As you listen to us talk about these things, there will be a natural part of you, which will deny much of what you hear. Believe me, we did too. I would like to share this with you, partly in the children's words, so that you can hear the things that they said that nobody could make up, that no child could know. That's what eventually convinced me, along with the deep emotion.

The grieving, screeching damage and hurt that they cry out as they talk. They are today (1989) between the ages of 5 and 17. We are talking about children forming consciences at that time, learning right from wrong. These children do not know. They come out and do not know what is right. They are confused, and most often they have been in multiple placements, they will go to a home, they will steal, they will lie, they will hurt animals. One little guy would sharpen pencils and try to stab people. I don't mean poke, I mean stab. People don't like that in their homes. Many are sent to psychiatric hospitals, where they are labeled psychotics, schizophrenics, and who would want them...

I will begin with the first stories that we heard, which will seem horrible to you, but are very mild to me, because we have progressed and heard far worse things. The first story is about two little boys, who were 7 and 9 when they told about sexual abuse at one point, and were very grieved. We talked about good and bad touching and we thought, we really had gotten to the bottom of it. Then one afternoon the little one began to cry, and when we couldn't get the answer from him, the older brother said,: "He is probably crying because he was in the room, when they killed his friend".

That was the first one we knew about. They talked about that particular victim being brought into a room, hands and arms tied, mouth tapped, and how there had been x's marked on his body, on his vital organs. That was bad enough. Within a very few weeks, we learned that it was not the adults who had killed that child. It was this oldest boy, who was talking.

The next person that we talked to was a little boy, who was very borderline mentally. He had language problems; it was very hard for him to explain himself. And when he began to come out of it, everyone was startled by the way he talked. We were really sure; we knew he had not been around these other children and heard anything.

"The part which made me believe this child's story, he talked about different babies being killed, but this particular one being stabbed, curled up in a fetal position. He was 9-years old when he was telling the story. His eyes became glazed as he said: 'They cooked that baby on the grill' And I thought, he has really flipped out. And he said "Oh, gross, it smelled like rotten chicken, or rotten deer.'

He then went on to tell us how they would cut out the heart, or cut off the sex organs, and save them in the refrigerator. A very typical thing that these kids talk about. They worship the sex organs. They kept it for another ceremony. I asked him where the bodies went. Eventually they talked about throwing babies in the fire.

And I asked them: You mean they were dead when they threw them in the fire?

And the littlest on said: "NO NO...Them was alive and them threw them." By this time we were really freaked out. How can you help these kids? Where do you find a therapist who can deal with this?

The next child I will share about, and I am going sort of by categories here with the types of killings. This little girl is 11 today, she was 9 when, she first talked. It was a very painful thing when she first started to share the sex things. The sex things are so harmful to children...She began to draw pictures of cats, and the cats all had tails that were on the other side of the page, or their leg was someplace else. She said she had to kill a pregnant cat. She had to kill the cat.... with a knife.

It progressed, the next time she had to kill a baby, the same way....The baby was alive and he was screaming. That child heard that, to this day, she has nightmares and flashbacks. They cut the baby open and they ate him. They do this, so there are no bodies left. They burn what is left and grind up the bones. And she talked about that, pouring gasoline on the bodies and burning them in the back yard.

We know there are mortuaries involved, to cremate the bodies...

The most horrible story about fire is extremely disturbing. She was a little girl when it happened and a teenager when she was telling me. She was describing a barn where they used to go to have their meetings. They used to gather outside the barn, and there would be chanting. Then as they went inside the barn they would split into different groups. She was never with any of her family. They all went to different places. I asked her where she had to go and she said, "I was always in the burning room."

They would take in children, probably pre-schoolers, and they would hang them from the rafters in this barn. There would be as many as five or ten hung in a row. This particular group was full clothed, which was unusual, because frequently they were naked. The children, like this girl, were all given candles.

You can picture the ceremony as she described it. The candles were lit. Then the adults would go forward and would pour liquid from a cup on each of the children's clothing, which was obviously gasoline or kerosene. Then they would give a signal and the others would have to go forward and set the children on fire. When they were done they would cut them down. The first child that this girl had to kill was a cousin, a little cousin.

What does that do to you? But you couldn't object... because the children who objected were killed. Frequently, she said, people would come in families, not knowing that their child would be sacrificed. She described the screams when they realized that their child had been killed...

A child, about two years ago, just fell to the ground at Christmas time; everyone thinks that Christmas is such a wonderful time. She confessed that she hated Christmas; she couldn't wait until everything was put away, because all she could hear was babies crying. Christmas is the time when the most babies die. She covered her ears and cried for 2 hours. She screamed.... Stop it... stop it... stop it! Talk to God and make Him stop it! All she could hear is the screams and the babies crying...

Christmas for the children has been one of the worst times. I have had three children tell me about a very similar ceremony. I will kind of merge and tell you how it went. They were taken to a church (three different children, three different churches). It is a very festive occasion. They are taken to the front of the church. A small child is now brought in. Two of them talked about babies and they put them on a platform. The adults are all celebrating, dancing and singing. The children are getting into the spirit of it. What they are doing is forming a circle around the child. The child represents the Child Jesus, and they begin mocking, spitting, and calling names. They encourage the children to begin doing it and you can imagine how it gets out of control. At some point they hand all of the children knives and then they are all hacking, and slashing until the baby is dead. And then they all celebrate because the Child Jesus is dead.

DeCamp comments. Kathleen Sorenson was aware that it was dangerous to tell the public what she did. She appealed to friends, "Pray for me." She was killed in a head-on car crash in October 1989. Ted Gunderson evaluated the accident and believes Sorenson was killed by a satanic contract suicide. The other driver didn't die, but well could have. In satanic lore, a person who loses his life in such a contract murder/suicide will be reincarnated with more power granted by Satan. Both the young woman driver and her husband had prior arrest records for cruelty to animals, a common marker for Satanism.

Not long after Sorenson's death, a teenager in a youth care facility told a worker, "You better watch out or we will get you like we got that lady from Blair." The youth went on to describe a ceremony of drawing lots for the privilege.

DeCamp concluded: "A few years ago if anyone had recounted something like her testimony, I would have recommended that they be hauled off to the loony farm. Today, I have no doubt that much—maybe all of it is true. I have been confronted with documentation of a world, I did not know about or believe existed."

Ted Gunderson has estimated that human sacrifice practicing Satanist group in U.S., Canada and Mexico number between three and three and one half million.

LETTER FROM A MURDERER

By David (Son of Sam) Berkowitz
From his private correspondence
Secured by Ted Gunderson

...You asked about Satanists. I'm not talking of thrill seekers, who hang onto and join every anti-establishment group that comes along. I'm not talking about those who remain on the fringe of such groups. My letter is in reference to the elite and dedicated hardcore members of Occult groups.

You see, these people cannot be taken lightly. Please try to understand their philosophy of life and society. They have no fear of man-made laws nor the laws of God. To them, murder comes easy. Being anti-God, they love nothing better than a good kill.

These people will stop at nothing in order to fulfill their desires. They have the complete ability to elude the police and to cover their tracks complexly.

Many members of these hidden and secret groups are participating of their own free wills. Others aren't. Yet, they are there to obey every command and complete every task without question...lost souls, half-mad zombies they are.

There is a very important key that cannot be overlooked...it ALL ends in tragedy! So many people, who have followed the Left Handed Path (black magic) have met either sudden death via accident, suicide or murder. Or they have suffered financial loss, the ruination of their reputation, or they just ended up totally insane. It is the same story!

John and Michael (fellow members of his coven, and fellow murderers) are dead. My life is ruined, too. And I also came close to death several months ago.

Personally, I think it is best if you leave all this alone,,,you or whoever started this investigation. Just drop it! It's for your own good...Look; there are people who are a fearless lot. They HATE God! I'm not talking about common criminals. You know who I am talking about.

There are people who will follow a "Chosen Lamb" throughout the ends of the earth. If they feel that this person is the "next one"...well, they have money. They have brains and hate.

They will even kill in a church. Do you think I'm joking? Do you think I'm just bending your ear? I'm serious about all this. There is no reason why I shouldn't be. Sir, Satanists (genuine ones) are peculiar people. They aren't ignorant peasants or semi-illiterate natives. Rather, their ranks are filled with responsible citizens. They are normal on the outside, at least.

They are not a careless group who are apt to make mistakes. But they are secretive and bonded together by a common need and a desire to mete out havoc on society. It was Aleister Crowley who said. "I want blasphemy, murder, rape, revolution, anything bad." Surely you will agree that death literally followed Crowley's footsteps.

Do you still doubt me? You know damn well that these Satanists cover their tracks pretty good. You are aware of their intelligence (businessmen, doctors, military personnel, professors, etc) Cults, as you know flourish around college campuses. They flourish around military bases, too. Drugs flow all over these places (universities and bases). Young service men and young college students are involved in sexual relations. So mix the two of them up. Put them near each other and what do you have? You've got a pretty wild, dedicated and nasty bunch of zealous, anti-establishment devil worshippers. And what a deadly mixture it is...

Above: Michael Aquino & wife Lilith
Below: Lt. Col. Michael Aquino

PROJECT MKULTRA, THE CIA'S PROGRAM OF RESEARCH IN BEHAVIORAL MODIFICATION

JOINT HEARING

BEFORE THE

SELECT COMMITTEE ON INTELLIGENCE

AND THE

SUBCOMMITTEE ON HEALTH AND SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON HUMAN RESOURCES
UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

AUGUST 3, 1977

Printed for the use of the Select Committee on Intelligence
and Committee on Human Resources

U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
96-408 O WASHINGTON : 1977

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C., 20402
Stock No. 052-070-04357-1

AND YE SHALL KNOW THE TRUTH
AND THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE
John, VIII: 32

(Inscribed on the marble wall of the main lobby at
CIA headquarter, Langley, Virginia)

George White who started with the OSS and continued in the CIA, dying of cirrhosis of the liver, wrote: "I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape and pillage with the sanction and bidding of the All-Highest."

MIND CONTROL, MONARCH & MK ULTRA

If you asked the average thinking citizen: Do you believe the government? Do you believe the government lies? Remember the Warren Commission. Kennedy was the victim of a lone assassin –Lee Harvey Oswald. The finger of evidence points to the CIA as a major player in the Kennedy's assassinations, with totally co-operation of J. Edgar Hoover and the FBI, and the Media.

The President, shaking his finger: "I did not have sex with that woman!

Over the past twenty years at least two books have been done with the word: Whistleblowers in the title. Who are these whistle blowers? They are individuals in government, industry, congress, CIA, FBI, military who see something that is at the least morally wrong, against the law or at the worst horrifyingly evil.

The United States government has conducted human experiments on a level with the worst human experiment conducted by the Nazi before and during WW II. Those same doctors and scientists were brought to this country by the hundreds to continue their mind control and drug experiments. Ex-CIA authors such as Phil Agee has implicated the CIA and other covert government operations to the genocide of at least 9 million people as the Covert Community sought to exercise its control outside the United States.

CIA man Terry Reed wrote in his book "Compromised" the Bush/ Clinton Connection going back to a time when Clinton was governor. It involved using the Mena, Arkansas National Guard Base to fly in planes loaded with drugs and fly them out carrying arms for the Contras, drug dealers, and drug revolutionaries. Other whistleblowers writing about the people the CIA has put in power evil men who have caused the death of at 30 million people. If the Moslems call America "The Great Satan" it is because of the CIA manipulation and murders around the world. They have toppled hundreds of democratically elected leaders and replaced them with the military or a repressive dictator.

Yes, many of those Nazi doctors guilty of the worst atrocities were cleared of criminal charges brought to this country and allowed to go on with their experiments. None was more deadly; none more harmful to the young people of this country than the MK Ultra program and it's many branches

Mark Philips told the listeners of KCXL a Kansas City area radio station. "There are now hundreds of books in print that describe the involvement of the CIA in drugs and mind control. To follow this story you only need to go to the largest library and start looking. Or you may find hundreds of sites on the Internet about drugs, about slavery, about mind control, about Satanism and the all lead back to the government or someone connected to the government."

Under the terms of Operation Paperclip there was cut throat competition among the Armed services to see who could secure the best Nazi scientists and engineers. "For its part, the US Navy was equally eager to snare its measure of war criminals. One of the first men picked up by the navy was a Nazi scientist named Theodore Benzinger. Benzinger was an expert on battlefield wounds, expertise he gained through explosive experiments conducted on human subjects during the waning stages of World War II. Benzinger ended up with a lucrative government contract working as a researcher at Bethesda Naval Hospital in Maryland. Quoted from "Whiteout: The CIA, Drugs and The Press by Cockburn and St. Clair

---

Mark Philips worked for NASA as an independent contractor supply monitoring equipment for behavior modification in what he assumed were animal experiments. Astronaut Gordon Cooper reveals that at least 54 of those experimental animals were children. He refers to them as NASA children and they were subjected to drug and centrifuge experiments which were supposed to give them "out of body" experience and improve the ability to communicate telepathically with "aliens" Gordon doesn't explain what aliens!

As with all whistle blowers, there have been major efforts to discredit Philips. Philips told Interviewer Richard Boyden: "MK Ultra is not an experimental program but an active program, which has been underway for at least two decades. It is a trauma based program. This program was a direct result of our importation of Nazi/fascist scientist under "Operation Paper Clip. President Truman attempted to put a stop to this in 1949 but was unsuccessful"

Mark Philips speaks first hand because he rescued a Monarch Mind Slave called Cathy O'Brien. The book they authored together "Transformation of America" is almost beyond belief—except that Paul Bonnaci and other children went thru much the same thing. More than 80 children were identified in the Omaha/Lincoln area. They in turn talked about hundreds of others in major cities across America, especially in Washington D.C. The investigation of the Nebraska Legislature turned up evidence of a mind control project run at Offutt Air Force Base near Omaha.

Johnny Gosch when he visited his mother Noreen in the middle of the night told the same story. He asked his mother to do something about the congressmen, the generals, the governors, and the DIA, CIA and FBI men, who had participated in his torture and the torture of thousands of other children. Johnny was able to talk only because he escaped along with a group of other young men from their handlers—using the very training they have been given to escape their captors. Both Johnny and Paul have been trained to drastically change their appearance, dying hair and skin to pass as an Indian or becoming a blond

Mark Phillips calls this a "U.S. Defense Intelligence Agency project for radically modifying human behaviors through MIND CONTROL Mind Control was begun by are importation of the Nazi/fascist scientists into this country—supposedly for the research involving propulsion and rockets. Actually of the 900 initially brought over in 44 in only 200 were involved rocketry, the other 700 were psychiatrist and doctors who had participated in experiments to control the human mind."

Mind control literally began in earnest under Adolph Hitler in the late 1930s. He assigned Heinrich Himmler, Gestapo Chief, the task of researching multi-generational incest families in Northern Europe. Hitlers early background in the Satanic and Occult provided the impetus for this examination of occult trained individuals who could be totally obedient to a strong leader, even unto death..

Philips continues: "These families were the basis of all mind control research because Adoph Hitler believed, like many of our so called leadership in this country believed, that nuclear war and nuclear proliferation was not the viable answer. There would not be anything left, no spoils for the victor. So Hitler thought it best to be able to control the minds of his subjects. They began by developing what Hitler and Heinrich Himmler called "The Chosen Ones" (See also "Plot Against the Peace" 1946 which details this operation which trained 8,000 agents designed to carry on the Reich after Germany lost the war)

These chosen ones were the children of the multi-generation incest abusing, psychological and physically abusing families (see Satan Ch). They had developed a peculiar psychiatric malady, dysfunctional identity disorder DID. Many years ago it was referred to as multiple personality disorder, which is a misnomer since they barely had any personality at all. The personality was fragment literally from abuse that began at birth. The father substitutes his penis for the mother's nipple and it goes down hill from there. (In a statement to the Nebraska Legislature Dr. Judi-Anne Densen Gerber told of a baby 8 months old being diagnosed with gonorrhea of the throat.}

The DID individuals develop some really strange traits, for example, they develop visual acuity 44 times that of you or I Adolph Hitler envisioned using these so called chosen ones. He would put them in positions of extra-ordinary control and power like heads of state. He would use them in "special forces" and upon certain cues, codes, keys and triggers, these people would act autogenically, and just an automatic response to whatever their program consisted off. The program was quite sophisticated even in the 1930s when it was actually in an experimental mode and after Project Paper Clip took over this scientist brought all the information with them. And we placed them in our institution of higher learning (Kinsey Sex Research had Nazi data). In military complexes and with corporations with a fair number of them going into NASA.

These scientists were developing according to a number of congressional hearings project that were abused human rights and abused the field of psychiatry. The 95 Presidential Hearings revealed the MK Ultra name and I am sure it has evolved into another unnamed program by now. Under the MK Ultra Umbrella there were many MK Ultra sub projects. Many of these involved tracking the same kind of multi-generational satanic/incest involved families in the United States and Canada, some of them even descendants of the original groups that Hitler had studied. .

Some of these children would end up being programmed robotic human beings that were used in special forces that were used in drug mule operations, money laundering, were used in the field of computers. There have been people surfacing in "legitimate" psychiatric facilities who were able to prove some of their background. They had been used for the sheer pleasure of some and to help fund the "Pentagon's Black Budget Operation". I am sure many of your listeners regard the drug problem as one that is separate from the government, when in fact the United States Government is the world's largest drug dealer."

In this radio program, Philips roundly condemns the psychiatric community for its failure to stand up and be counted. When Phillips rescued Presidential Mind Slave Cathy O'Brien (yes, Presidential) he sought help from psychiatrists to help deprogram her. Whether they were simply frightened by the consequence or already knew too much is the question.

The Monarch Project was a code name assigned to a new brainwashing formula, which was originally called "Bluebird." It was an outgrowth of Nazi experiment utilized by intelligence personnel in the U.S. Army during the 1950s. Unlike the Chinese who used something ancient like water torture, the U.S military resorted to drugs to gain control of the human mind.

In total violation of the Geneva Convention and the Nuremberg Laws they transported Chinese and North Korean prisoners to Japan. There they were subjected to LSD and a whole plethora of drugs designed not merely to elicit information but to turn them in to mind control slaves. In the next 50 years nearly 150 drugs would be tried on every one from inmates in prison to fellow co-workers at corporations to students in Universities.

Most of the American people can recite many of these drugs without prompting. Cocaine, heroine, amphetamines, marijuana, date rape drugs, etc. For all we know Viagra might have been developed out of these experiments. There were drugs that would render the subjects incapable of judging right from wrong, drugs that would turn them on sexually and prey on whatever weakness they showed.

Thus experiments, which began with the "enemies of America", were gradually administered to the people of America. In a brilliant move, the ruling elite decided to sell them they very drugs that would enslave them. The CIA bought at one time enough LSD to have drugged one quarter of the US population. FBI man Gunderson claims one drug proved to be capable of causing a heart attack within a half hour of being administered and was untraceable. Is this what happened to CIA Director William Colby?

While the military worked on prisoners of war, the CIA and FBI were experimenting with Candy Jones, a model turned modeling instructor, whom they turned into a secret (even from herself) undercover agent. British Secret Agent Intrepid, Sir William Stephenson told her she a "zombie" Agent. He stated to her that he had been able to use such agents during WWII, if captured their surface personality knew nothing.

Philips & O'Brien talk of the refined "zombie" drug, which made Cathy totally unaware of her past and indeed who she was in the present. If she were told she was Marilyn Monroe, she would from that point introduce herself as such until another command gave her another identity. Cathy was a Presidential model zombie and had far more scientific know how and care applied to her training than that Paul B, or Johnny G. had. Although one of Paul's alters is totally fluent in German. There is no record of his ever leaving the country, although he can describe Hotels in Cologne, Germany.

For the next 15 years, the new-formed CIA took control from the U.S. Army Ultra secret Monarch project, now code name MKI and MKII. Project Monarch was declared stopped by then President Gerald Ford. The CIA did stop experimentation but all records, equipment developed and under development were secretly handed over to the U.S. Defense Intelligence Agency. The DIA then secretly and illegally re-assigned the Monarch Project experiments right back to it's original founders.... The U.S. Army. Now it was cloaked under TOP SECRET U.S. Army Psychological Warfare Division.

The DIA used the excuse that it was for safekeeping. The discoveries detailed how to seize total control, undetected of a human mind for any "patriotic" purpose. The formula was so simple that even a person of average intellect and no moral foundation could successfully enslave almost anyone for any purpose. See the movie "Telefon" starring Charles Bronson for the best dramatic portrayal of how it worked. Although the film points a finger at the Russians, the adviser was said to have been from the U.S. governments mind control program.

Again the words of Mark Philips: " The DIA is a politically governed/operated U.S. government intelligence gathering agency whose responsibilities, progress, and assignments are "monitored" by the intelligence committees of both the House and Senate. This equates to politicians having access to ultra secret, ultra dangerous information.... which they could and HAVE USED against innocent US. citizens for their perverse pleasure and profits...undetected.

The original purpose of Monarch was to be used to "deprogram" captured espionage agents and to determine just what they had learned, second to make them "forget" what they had learned so they could be traded to their country in exchange for our agents.

The next step was to program the captured agent with a "cue" from one of our in place agents to retrieve secrets from them.

The Russians out did us by devoting billions of dollars to research and development of a new method...a complex formula of precisely timed and orchestrated physical and psychological tortures that were administered to "young recruits" (in the U.S. it became government authorized kidnapping and child breeding), children over a long period of time. These normally above average in intellect children were chosen due to their intelligence and genetics for being "conditioned" as the new generation of "super spies".

The U.S. aggressively began pursuing more exacting methods of super spy development. Michael Aquino, who had joined Anton LaVey's Church of Satan in California, broke off and formed the Temple of Set in the military, quickly winning both military approval and promotion. (Every indication suggests Bonacci, Johnny Gosch and others is that Aquino spearheaded the acquisition of new young Aryan type recruits.)

They were programmed to perform a variety of super human tasks with an incredible success rate. Meanwhile, Jimmy Carter signed another Presidential Executive Order, which supposed halted the remaining Mind Control experimentations. This was the second false "death blow" to Monarch Project aka MKI, MKII, and MKIII. It was business as usual at the DIOA and the U.S. Army Psychological Warfare "

Mark Phillips states: "At this point in time, this writer was no longer associated directly with the intelligence community and therefore have no espionage statistics other than hearsay (which I will not repeat) except for the following;

The New Revised Monarch Project was now under the direction of a U.S. Army Major (now Colonel) Michael Angelo Aquino...who would put a new dark twist into the Monarch Project...Satanism. Colonel Aquino says he himself was sexually abused as a child and is a sociopath....with a lot of political friends. Ronald Reagan a proponent of mind control since he was governor of California, insisted Aquino attends White House parties in his satanic regalia. According to Cathy O'Brien he resented this and considered Satanism only a means to an end, but he reluctantly complied with Reagans wishes."

What follows in the next ten pages of the report is a list of the kind of mind control programs, Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta. Children are buried alive with spiders or snakes. Cattle prods or high voltage law enforcement type stun guns are used to command instant obedience. If they are order to have sex, or to kill the obedience must be made a reflex. See Bonnaci Documents Ch..

The Theta program, which involved mind reading and out of body experiments ultimately evolved into electronic possession. Using the proper electronic high frequency broadcaster, they can make a room full of people suddenly decided they all need to use the bathroom at once. Individual with implants and the right stimulation can go from nice guy to crazed killer in a matter of minutes.

The first victims were captured spies, from friendly and hostile nations. “The second groups were bright aggressive young men who applied to Officers Candidate School. After a battery of tests, these eager young men were allegedly told, they couldn’t go to OCS, but they could “volunteer” for a career in Intelligence where they would be given TOP SECRET training, James Bond “007” stuff. This true, but very misleading, information created powerful patriotic images in their minds. They envisioned being “special” espionage agents in just months instead of the years of OSC training.”

The final recruits were a little younger than the college types, more like two or three years old. Some were given by fathers, who got caught sending kiddie porn through the U.S. Mails, others got caught having sex with underage boys or girls. CIA agents offered them money, business favors, and protection from prosecution.

Some fathers were educated at government expense on how to precondition their little girl with tortures of the mind and body and with sex... which would give this child a “gift of insanity” an MPD/DID super child.

Some fathers became manufacturers to Uncle Sam producing dozens of children for the New Monarch project. Organized crime bosses dealing in child/adult porn, opened Day Care Centers to create a virtual “kiddie smorgasborg” When some of the occult conspirators got too sloppy as in the Franklin Legislative Investigation, the McMartin Day Care Center it could be taken care of .

West Point, N.Y., Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, Presidio, California—all military day care centers—all had incidents of child sexual abuse...all covered up.

Mark Phillips concludes: “Mind Control techniques/formulas unlike nuclear weapons systems can be reproduce without exotic and expensive component systems...in the privacy one’s own home by anyone of average intelligence and absolutely no conscience. "Mind Control, "states Phillips" is just as lethal as nuclear war."

He predicts the Mind Control, he also termed "white slavery" will be the largest "cottage industry of the 21 Century. The U.S. now has nuclear regulatory agencies which oversee everything from nuclear weapons to nuclear power plants. But Mind Control thanks to corrupt U.S. Government officials...is out of control.

Before 1980, when Aquino took over Monarch, there were reported only 200 cases of MPD/DID one of the most rare diagnosed psychiatric disorders. Today there are 24,000—which could mean from a quarter to half a million undiagnosed DIDs waiting around to explode with rage as a serial killer, child abuser, or mass murderer.

He concludes while, we're waiting for the answers, another child is being raped, mostly by the very person biologically designed to protect them...their father. Any one who reads a newspaper or listens to the local news will be struck by the amount of child abuse and murder. Recent headlines are filled with mothers and fathers, or stepfathers, or boyfriend/girlfriend who kill their own children, or step children.

Psychiatry: The Ultimate Betrayal

Bruce Wiseman, U.S. National President of the Citizens Commission on Human Rights and former chairman of the Department of History at the John F. Kennedy University. Wiseman in writing his book "Psychiatry: The Ultimate Betrayal" indites the entire psychiatric community in this country for its cooperation with the CIA drug experiments. Government records show the CIA ordered LSD by the ton from a midwestern drug manufacturer It was handed out to doctors and psychiatrist like a "candy" cure all for mental illness, when in fact it did far more harm than good.

This drug was not only dispersed to military bases but to many psychiatrist and doctors throughout the University communities who tested it on student "volunteers" One psychiatrist, Dr Ewen Cameron, former president of the America Psychiatric Association, used LSD in combination with electric shock to "depattern" the minds of paying patients. Wiseman state." It is ironic that Camerion, who was a member of the Nuremberg tribunal hearings of Nazi war atrocities, would later work for the CIA and violate the Nuremberg Code for medical ethics by sponsoring experiment on unwitting and unwilling subjects."

Wiseman's experiments were conducted in Canada with the financial backing of the CIA. Those patients are the only ones to successful sue the CIA and win—perhaps because they were Canadian and could not be blocked by invoking the National Security Act. These experiment and the subsequent lawsuit were dramatized in a made for TV mini-series shown in the U.S..

An Iowa City newspaper "ICON" exposed the University of Iowa Hospitals participate in such experiments. Later, information revealed that University Hospital also participate in radiation experiments in which mothers and new born babies were given radiation pills as vitamin supplements. The government needed to test the effects of radiation on human beings

Psychiatrist Louis Jolyon West created the greatest misstep in LSD experiments when he overdosed an elephant. The animal immediately fell over in a stupor. All attempts to revive the animal failed. Most of the animal experiments at Universities were conducted on two legged animals. Some students were paid a dollar for each time they took part in experiments.

Tens of thousands of soldiers from the 50s thru the 80s, were used without their knowledge. They were sometimes told they were taking part in a flu medicine development. These experiments on soldiers went far beyond LSD, hypnosis combined with drug cocktails were designed to create "a Manchurian Candidate".

Wiseman stated by the late 1950s, psychiatrist who administered LSD were all the rage. Cary Grant was among those who promoted the use of the drug and soon psychiatrists who used LSD in therapy were inundated with clients. Yet in the years to come the use of LSD would come to be known for its bad trips and its ruined minds. LSD was first discovered in Switzerland and was first probably used by the Nazi's who exercised control of Switzerland during WWII

Where was mind control going?

The CIA for over 50 years has been developing a mind control technology, a technology designed to alter the basic mindset of a people. Its purpose is to devise operation techniques to disturb the memory, to discredit people through aberrant behavior, to alter sex patterns, to elicit information and to create emotional dependence.

Its goal is to program individuals to carry out any mission of espionage or assassination even against their will even against such fundamental laws of nature as self-preservation.

The newspapers have been full of stories of mind control victims who have gone on to commit crimes. Sirhan, Sirhan with the assassination of Robert Kennedy. John Hinckley in the attempted assassination of President Ronald Reagan. In each instance these people have appeared dazed and out of it afterwards. Lee Harvey Oswald did have a memory and information he could have called upon. Therefore, had to be killed. The other men remembered nothing. It was safe then to put them away in a jail or a mental institution.

It is interesting that Walter Bowart was born in Omaha, Nebraska; the center for the only real investigation of mind control conducted by other than a do nothing Congress. The reason for the "Franklin Credit Union" investigation was the missing forty million dollars. It lead to CIA/Satanism and FBI/NAMBLA connections, which in the end brought forward the Paul Bonacci's and the Johnny Gosch. Both who later talked about mind control, Monarch and MKUltra. (see Bonaci Documents)

Walter Bowart in his book "Operation Mind Control" states in his author's note that the book is an exercise in Citizens' Intelligence and that the majority who contributed to it were private citizens working on their own efforts. Like the author they too were shocked and outraged at the many citizens of this country, who have been victimized by their own government.

Published in 1978, this was well before the information surfaced about the black men who were allowed to die of syphilis in order to study its long term effects, or those mothers and babies who were given radiation pills in order to study radiations effect on the human body.

Bowart describes the circumstances surrounding the four-year enlistment of David, described as a young Air Force Sergeant. "Ever since I got out of the service I haven't been able to give a day-to-day account of what happened to me during those four years. The scary thing is that I still have a horrible fear of talking. I have a tendency to speed up my speech when I 'm being pressed on something: I get very tense when anyone asks me about my service duties. ...Something has happened to my mind."

David joined the service in 1969. David had not been part of the 60s revolution he had not smoke pot or used LSD. David had hoped to be a doctor and, therefore, sought something in the Air Force related to this field. He was put instead in supply but told it was a cover for an Intelligence Operation; he was to be a part of it. But weeks past and he was still making supply entries in a computer.

Next he woke up in a hospital and was told he had tried to commit suicide. He has no memory of this. Interrogation and drugs followed, then suddenly he is granted and two week leave home. After his leave he is shipped to Guam. Instead of remaining at the main base, he is shipped to a small facility eight miles away. Here things were different. He was suddenly paired up with a woman, Pat, who throughout his stay would be wife and companion. They planned on meeting when they got out.

Yet afterward David could not remember her last name and had misplaced her address. Moreover when he applied for jobs that asked what he had done the past four years, he would break out in a sweat and flee the office.

David spent years under psychiatric care. He was finally asked to make a decision, did he want to spend the next 18 months unraveling the mind block, and so he could remember what he did in the Air Force. Or did he want to concentrate on functioning normally in his life today. He chose today and decided to forget his past. How many military personal walk around America with blank spots in the memory?

A "flashback" caused by a remembered incident the causes of "a rage" that under the write circumstance can lead to death. And in less trying circumstances to loss of job or marriage. America's future rests with coming to a true understanding of what happened in our past. A lone gunman did not kill Kennedy! Did Franklin D. Roosevelt know about the bombing of Pearl Harbor in advance? Do you have a blank spot in your memory bank where you cannot remember what happened for days, months of years as David has?

Do not be afraid to ask questions. I talked to a young lady a recent high school graduate working in a department story. When she had heard part of the story of what went on in Nebraska, she said: "My parents told me that if we criticize this government, they will come and arrest us!" Are we like the little old lady who fears to look under the bed for the burglar and instead covers here head and hopes he will go away?

Where are "The Manchurian Candidates?

Richard Condon author of the fictional "The Manchurian Candidate" wrote a Forward to "Operation Mind-Control" Condon writes: "As demonstrated inescapably by Walter Bowart in his book: Our Father who art in the American secret police has endowed hundreds of scientists at American universities to unravel methods of fracturing American minds... In this book, Walter Bowart has proven each step of this official, terminal, government anarchy, even though that appears to be a contradiction in terms. To alter and control human minds is the ultimate anarchy. What is offered by official apologists as a tribute to the needs of daring-do by romantic spies are acts of hatred and sadism against all people in an insane and degraded determination to extirpate conscience from society."

No better explanation can be made of what has gone on in Nebraska and to some extent in Iowa. When the investigation of the Nebraska legislature began revealing almost every person in positions of power were and are more interested in maintaining their position than respecting either the laws of man or God. In Nebraska sadistic pedophiles have been taken under the wing of protection of both the Republican and Democratic parties. Nebraska Governor, after Governor simply says: "Its not my responsibility". Although governors, legislators and all elected officials take an oath of office. "I will uphold the Constitution of the United States and the Constitution of the State of Nebraska.... Iowa, etc."

What happened to Johnny Gosch. We know from both Johnny and Paul Bonacci that immediately after he was kidnapped, he was repeatedly raped and molested while being photographed for pornography purposes. He was kept locked in a boarded up basement room. This was only the beginning of his journey for survival. Bonacci reported, Johnny was later taken by Col. Michael Aquino to Colorado, to begin his life of terror. Noreen Gosch has said of her son. He is no longer the same Johnny...not the boy who wanted to be an architect.

David entered the service because he faced being drafted but Johnny was not drafted.... he did not choose to serve his country at the age of 12. Those who saw him, as another kind of guinea pig gave him no other choice. Johnny came to his mother seeking justice, for himself. He wanted to live as a free man. "The Lost/Missing Children" posters are mounted on the walls of every Wal Mart in the country.

Ray Bilger writing in an article from **www.davidicke.com**

"I lived with Gail for a very stormy year and a half. She died in January of 1996, MDP (DID) and involvement in MK Ultra; pictures with Ronald Reagan, pictures at the Hefner Mansion, or was that her twin? And much more, I sit on quiet evening, maybe sipping a little Chardonnay... I speculate on what more I could have done ...to help "put Humpty together again." She committed suicide.

Jim Gentry on the same site replied: "My best wishes to all in this ongoing tragedy, even to the MK Ultra Handlers, those master behaviorists, with all the codes, keys and triggers. Guys, I wish you would all get religion: realize that your pet robots are real people, and defect: come over to our side. We need your skills to help heal what you have wrought over these many years."

A Doctors Boast

"I can hypnotize a man—without his knowledge or consent—into committing treason against the United States," boasted Dr. George Eastabrook in the early 1940s. This was the beginning of what would later be called Mind Control. Eastbrook actually conducted experiments on U.S soldiers to prove his point. One of the experiments involved placing a normal, stable private in a deep trance. He was told the officer was actually an enemy soldier who was going to kill him. When brought out of the trance he leaped for the officer's throat. The cardinal sin in the military is to attack a superior officer.

In 1958, Dr Louis Gottschalk, the CIA's "independent contractor" had prepared a think tank report which suggested that the intelligence agencies might control people through addiction. It was recommended that GI's newly discharged from hospitals would make subjects worth study since their need for pain medication made them easy to control. So our government began a series of experiments using a variety of drugs to control the people.

In a report from the U.S. Senate, August 3, 1977 entitled: "Project MKUltra, The CIA's program of research in behavioral modification. Behavioral modification sounds so pristine, so medical, it amounted to experiments to modify individuals, especially children, so they could be "Manchurian Candidate" assassins, human computers with photographic memories, drug couriers, and prostitutes. What they discovered thanks to the Nazi scientists is that one individual could be all of the above without their main personality knowing anything about it..

Here is an Excerpt

"3. The Surreptitious Administration of LSD to Unwitting Non-Volunteer Human Subjects by the CIA After the Death of Dr. Olson." (Understand that today the use of all kinds of drugs is the number one problem in America)

Much violent crime in this country is due to the need of the drug addicted, to get more money to buy drugs. Drugs also destroy the reasoning power and the brain, hence robberies of gas station, quick food places often result in killing of the clerks for what is often a few dollars to a few hundred dollars.

The government report continues: "The death of Dr Olson could be viewed, as some argued at the time, as a tragic accident, one of the risks inherent in the testing of a new substances. It might be argued that LSD was thought to be benign (Note: human experiments of a new drug were being conducted without the knowledge of the subject that he or she was being drugged). After the death of Dr. Olson the dangers of the surreptitious administration of LSD were clear. Yet the CIA continued or initiated a project involving the surreptitious administration of LSD to non-volunteer human subjects. This program exposed numerous individuals in the United States to the risk of death or serious injury without their informed consent, without medical supervision, and without necessary follow-up to determine any long-term effects."

A letter to Richard Helm, then Director of the CIA, in 1954 suggested:

"We intend to investigate the development of a chemical material, which causes a reversible non-toxic aberrant mental state, the specific nature of which can be reasonably well predicted for each individual. This material could potentially aid in the discrediting individuals, eliciting information, and implanting suggestions and other forms of mental control."

This report made it quite clear that although the CIA and other covert governmental agencies used and continued to use a variety of drugs to discredit individuals. In Bowart's book there is an incident described of how an agent slipped a drug into the drinking glass on the podium. The speaker made a complete fool of himself because he was so disoriented. Any reader who gets the idea that this was done only to "foreign" individuals better think again. Anyone who attempts to expose bad conduct an even murderous practices would becoming a potential target for chemical warfare Following the bad behavior, due to being drugged, an article would be written about the speaker, by a CIA asset, further discrediting him or her.

One of the most cited books on mind control is John Marks "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate." A declassified memorandum, from the Deputy Director for Science and Technology, to Deputy Director of Central Intelligence, comments on John Marks FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) request. Notes the difficulty in finding records

"Dr Gottlieb retrieved and destroyed all the MKULTRA documents he was able to locate, it is not surprising that the earlier search for MKULTRA document was unsuccessful. The purpose of establishing the MKULTRA mechanism was to limit knowledge of the sensitive work being performed to those with an absolute "need to know basis." If those precepts had been followed, the recently found B & F files should have contained only financial and administrative documents." Instead of these there were documents which could give the outside reader, the outside reporter the feeling that they had uncovered experiments worthy of Dr. Frankenstein. It allowed Joseph Mingle similar experiments by the same Nazi doctors who had worked for him...perhaps even by Mingle himself, under Cold War Secrecy Acts and under the umbrella of National Security.

What U.S government documents reveal is that not only were mind controlling type drugs developed and used on people without their knowledge, but they also developed Shellfish toxin for the purpose of poisoning the enemy were developed and retained in the face of a Presidential Directive that they be destroyed. Marks obtained 20,000 documents relating to mind control under the FIOA.

In the 1970s, CIA Director Richard Helm ordered all files relating to the CIA Mind Control experiments destroyed. A few years later a small number of them surfaced and were review by the Senate. One surviving document bears an uncanny resemblance to the circumstances surrounding the assassination of Robert Kennedy. The document dated 1954, describes efforts to find a way to induce an individual "**to perform an act, involuntarily, of attempted assassination against a prominent politician or if necessary, against an official**" It suggested that the subject be "surreptitiously drugged through the medium of an alcoholic cocktail at a social party." Sirhan last memory was of pouring coffee for a pretty girl wearing a polka dot dress. When Sirhan was taken from the assassination scene, patrolmen shined a flashlight in his eyes and stated that Sirhan's eye didn't react. The officials of the LA Police department lost Sirhans blood test and the policemen could not recall his earlier statements.about Sirhans eyes.

Witness Sandra Serrann claimed she saw Sirhan with a "Latin" man and a girl in a polka-dot dress just prior to the shooting. Los Angeles Police Department polygraph operator Sgt Enrique Hernandez harassed/intimidated/ridiculed her attempting to get her to change her story. Hernandez apparently had ties to the CIA.

Congressional records show that the CIA continued to perform experiments on a psychiatric patient and later lobotomized him. The list of atrocities performed on captive patients is only matched by the chemical warfare experiments performed on whole small communities.

Everything from chemical warfare to mosquitoes infected with yellow fever. The experiments were successful, many people died.

Perhaps one of the greatest mistakes made by any President made was Harry Truman when September of 1946, he signed permission for "Operation Paper Clip." Truman expressly excluded anyone found "to have been a member of the Nazi party and more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazism or militarism" The first set of scientists were rejected by the State Department as "ardent Nazis."

Director of the War Department's Joint Intelligence Objective Agency, Bosquet Wev wrote a scathing memo warning the State Department "the best interests of the United States have been subjugated to the efforts expended in 'beating a dead Nazi horse." In reality, we learn from a host of books that the Nazi party only restructured beginning in 1943's. "The Plot Against the Peace" outlines how the Nazi's realizing they were losing the war began to plan for the peacetime continuance of the Nazi party not in Germany but in the World at large.

Nazi's trained at several centers, were given new identities and new backgrounds, especially speaking German eastern European countries and told to await the end of the war. Then apply for asylum in various free world countries. The excuse being they were fleeing communism.

At the same time, Allen Dulles, then CIA director was meeting with General Reinhard Gehlen, a Nazi general who had run the spy network inside what became the Soviet Union. Dulles promised Gehlen that his spy network was safe inside the CIA. Dulles had the scientists dossiers re-written to eliminate incriminating evidence that tied them in to the most severe atrocities against both Jewish and Gentle prisoners.

Allen Dulles' efforts opened a whole host of projects stemming from Nazi Research. Unfortunately for America... MK Ultra/Artichoke, Bluebird and other projects were brought forth under the umbrella of protected the CIA afforded them

Truman virtually opened a Pandora box of ills for this country and the world; because he did not realize that power hungry members of the military establishment would lust after the information on mind control experiments. Although Warner Van Braun and others experimenting with military rockets, planes, and weapons were brought into this country, they numbered only about 200. An additional 700 psychiatrist and other scientists who had been working on mind control were brought in and ordered to begin experiments all over again with the American military and finally an unwilling and unknowing American public.

In 1985, Linda Hunt writing in the Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists examined 130 reports on Project Paperclip subjects. Every one "had been changed to eliminate the security threat classification." This may have sparked the interest which eventually lead her to complete in 1991 "Secret Agenda: Operation Paperclip" a damning indictment of Allen Dulles and those who conspired not only to alter the dossiers of scientists who fit the description of Nazi War Criminals, but promoted them in position of power in the academic community and war industries.

The Occult in Mindwar

"Satan Wants You" declares author Arthur Lyons. His books links the in the occult to the psychedelic revolution. With the likes of Timothy Leary touting LSD as a religious experience, Lyon claims it only lead to interest in the occult. Today with the knowledge the Leary worked for the CIA, the connection becomes clearer.

From Christopher Simpson book "The Splendid Blond Beast" "Friedrich Nietzsche called the aristocratic predators who write society's laws "the splendid blond beast" precisely because they so often behave as though they are beyond the reach of elementary morality. We can imagine them returning from an orgy of murder, arson, rape and torture, jubilant and at peace with themselves as though they had committed a fraternity prank."

Anyone who examines the way CIA Agents were recruited and indoctrinated would recognize that it was very similar to the way the SS trained their soldiers. For the service to the fatherland (for the matter of national security) nothing was beyond the scope of an agent (like James Bond) was licensed to kill, not just the guilty. The CIA judged and executed, but the innocent who might have exposed "a plot" and therefore had to be eliminated.

Philip Agee, CIA, who became disgusted with the murderous ways of the CIA was accused of treason for "revealing their secrets". He escaped several attempts to kill him. President Ronald Reagan declared him a traitor and removed his citizenship. Today Agee is a man without a country. Agee has no passport and no country will give him citizenship because of the pressure from the U.S. government. Agee's life may be an extreme example but many "whistleblows" both in government and in industry have found themselves ostracized in their profession and often vilified by the news media.

What most people have not realized is that the DIA/CIA and other covert "government" have infiltrated into all walks of life. Today there are five branches of Government, Executive, Legislative, Judicial, Media and Clergy. And examination of newspaper, magazines and books will reveal that members of the clergy and journalist are CIA assets, the work for and guard against a public being informed.

"If people truly want to combat this phenomenon, it must be brought out into the public; it must be brought out into the light of day, and it must be done so very publicly so as to protect the people coming forth. It cannot be combated just on a national level, because it is international in nature. Governments work in collusion with other governments throughout the world; people who want power work in collusion with others; they use each other to gain social, economic and political power."

Dr. Green (A programming alter)
Quoted from: Thanks For The Memories.... By Brice Taylor

Brice Taylor is one among many of the Presidential Mind Control Slaves, who have courageously come forward to tell their story in books, videos, Television and talk radio. The following is a quote from her book, in which she describes in detail the creation of a Mind Controlled Slave.

THANKS FOR THE MEMORIES
BY
BRICE TAYLOR

"MANUFACTURING THE MIND CONTROLLED SLAVE"

I would like to define some terms that you will hear when learning about people with "multiple personalities." Dissociation is a key term that refers to the ability of the mind to "cut off" a part of itself from conscious awareness. An every day example of this ability, which we all have in varying degrees, is the experience of driving down the freeway and missing the exit you take everyday because you are thinking about something else. You " come to" an exit or two late and realize you missed your exit, even noticing that you "saw" the exit sign but it didn't "register" within you to take it! Part of your mind was dissociated, or separated from, the real world around you while you focused on internal thoughts. Another example is reading every word on a page in a book, and then realizing you had not comprehended a single word, because you were thinking of something else. All of us have these experiences.

This ability of the mind to detach from itself is a brilliant coping mechanism that the mind uses in situations of extreme threat as a way to protect itself from the full awareness of a traumatic situation. You may recall reading about Vietnam veterans, who had amnesia for their war experiences, but would have difficulty coping with life. They would fee detached or estranged from others; they would have difficulty feeling any kind of feelings, except for outbursts of anger; they would have difficulty concentrating, would feel anxious and on edge without knowing why, and would have an exaggerated startle response (over-responsive to stimuli). These are all characteristics of the diagnosis "Post Traumatic Stress Disorder" or PTSD. In addition, these veterans would have sudden memories of the horrors of war. These memories would be "triggered" by something that reminded their unconscious mind of the war experience) for example, the sound of a car backfiring, reminding them of gunfire). In these sudden memories, they felt as if they were actually re-living the experience, smelling, tasting, felling, hearing and seeing in vivid detail everything they went through during an actual battle. These memories, complete with all the sensory memories, are called flashbacks. During those flashbacks, the veteran would be out of touch with the reality around them; they would no longer know it was 1985 and they were in America; they would think it was 1968, and they were in the jungle, reliving a particular battle. They were totally dissociated from reality, and were reliving a past reality that was now only in their minds. Later, in processing these experiences, the soldiers would report that during the actual battle, they would feel very detached, even numb, from what was happening, even though they may have been wounded themselves. At times, they reported feeling as though they were standing outside of themselves, observing themselves going through the trauma of the battle, but not feeling anything. They were dissociated from their reality. But their brain was recording all of the experience, exactly as it occurred, and those "mind and body" memories were being re-experienced during a flashback.

When someone is exposed to a "psychologically distressing event that is outside the range of usual human experience... is usually experienced with intense fear, terror and helplessness,: (DSM III) then dissociation usually occurs as a way for the mind to process the event without overwhelming the person. Parts of the experience (either knowledge of what happened; the emotional feelings associated with the event; the sensory experiences of the event, or the behaviors expressed during the event) become separated from one's conscious awareness. The more frequent the trauma, the more dissociation occurs. This phenomenon is why children who have been severely sexually abused and tortured, are amnesic for those events. In a landmark university study by Linda Williams hundreds of children were brought into a hospital emergency room who received medical confirmation of sexual abuse, were contacted at intervals throughout a 20-year period. Only one-third of these children, when reaching adulthood, retained conscious memories of the sexual abuse—all others had repressed, or dissociated, those awful memories. Such is the power of the mind to block out painful experiences.

During times of torture and extreme pain, the mind is in an altered state, as it dissociates itself from reality. But there are other ways to alter the mind state, for example, by sensory deprivation, or meditation, whereby one focuses internally, with sensory stimulation from the outside minimized or eliminated. You may recall in the 1980's that "float tanks" were popular. In a float tank, you are floating on very heavily salted water; you are enclosed in a totally darkened metal tank, and you float for an hour without any sensory stimulation. Many people felt claustrophobic, and couldn't take it. But if you could stand it, you would eventually report having a euphoric experience. If you had been hooked up to a brainwave machine (EEG), your brain would no longer be producing beta waves (the brain state associated with usual waking activity). Instead you would be in a theta state, the state associated with deep relaxation, as when you are just about ready to fall asleep (the twilight state).

In this state, the pain produces lots of endorphins, the body's natural "feel good" chemicals that give you a profound sense of well-being. It is important to note then this twilight state is associated with the ability to rapidly absorb and learn information. Without the "filtering" mechanism of the conscious waking mind, information seen or heard "pours" into the subconscious mind.

Biofeedback expert Thomas Budzynski of the University of Colorado Medical Center reports "We take advantage of the fact that the twilight state, between waking and sleep, has these properties of uncritical acceptance of verbal material, or almost any material it can process; it is in such "altered" states of consciousness that a lot of work gets done very quickly." (For much more information about brain research and technology associated with producing altered states, read the fascinating book Mega Brain, by Michael Hutchison) Other methods used to alter brainwave states include, but are not limited to, rapid flashing lights, drugs, phased sound waves, negative ions (electromagnetic energy fields), electroshock, alterations in gravity in the cerebellum (spinning) , microwave emitters, and lasers.

It is vitally important to understand about dissociation, because in learning about how someone's mind can actually be controlled by someone else, you must understand how it is possible to program the human mind as you would a computer. "Programming" is fairly recent term in history of mind control (and is of course associated with computer technology). Perhaps you'd recognize it better as "brainwashing."

In the POW camps, captors would refer to "freezing," a term used to destroy the person's identity. Using food and sleep deprivation, isolation, torture, chronic assault on a person's values, and instilling total dependence on the captor's for survival, a person's whole sense of self would be destroyed. They would be totally helpless, broken, with no will of their own left. They would then be ready for the "brainwashing," or "refreezing" whereby a new value system and a new identity would be put in through reward and punishment, conditioning or "programming" that person to believe or do only what the captors wanted them to believe or do. (For more information on brainwashing, including USA and Canadian government experimentation, read: Brain Control by Elliot Vallenstein; Deep Self by John C. Lilly; Inside the Black Room by Jack Vernon; In Search of the Manchurian Candidate by John Marks; Journey into Madness by Gordon Thomas; I Swear by Apollo (author unknown; published by Canadian publisher).

Just as it is possible to break down a person in order to create someone you can control (by getting them to do anything you want them to do), so it is possible to program a part of a person's mind (a dissociated part that is split off, by trauma or other means, from connection with reality). You can "teach" that part of the mind to do what you want it to do without the part of the mind that is conscious and aware knowing what's going on. Hence, people with multiple personalities report that they "lose time," whereby they don't remember where they have been or what they have been doing.

TECHNIQUES ON "CREATING" NEW CHILDREN

"Daub fingertip size glob of Vaseline or K-Y jelly on pressure points – wrists, inner elbows, behind knees, under ears. Take ends of 2 wires (black and red are easiest, negative/positive easier identified) with mental attachments (round, copper, holes in center) and tape with surgical tape on top of Vaseline. Calibration – watch for muscular reactions, eye glazing, sweating, involuntary loss of bladder control, bowel control. Want to give enough of a current w/o being too much. Want child to remain alert. Words, cords given. Assignments given. "Yes, one finger, No, raise two; Confused – raised right hand." Clarify instructions. If still confusion, time to stop, take a break. Do not allow any contact between patient and others until cycle is completed. Do no, under any circumstances, offer juices, snacks, etc. which could be construed as a "reward" until the cycle is completed. Check carotid pulse for significant elevation in blood pressure. ? Do not wish to affect a heart attack. Heart attacks can occur in children. (Children are outfitted with diapers before the sessions begin, are also taken to the bathroom beforehand. Keeps down unnecessary interruptions). Keep voice on same level at ALL times. Not hurried, not raised or lowered. Same pace at all times. Droning, hypnotic effect. Helps to stabilize heart rate.

When instructions given to child, and received, then are only then give reward of name for identification purposes. Code phrases – "well done," "very good," or "you did real good." Avoid hugs, touch, and any other forms of physical contact. Eye contact necessary, stabilizing. Allow alter-state to form place of safety within, encourage alter to describe internal surroundings. (All is taped, voice-activated, recorded later in the computer records for others to refer to). "

In March of 1995, before a Presidential Hearing in the United States the horrific radiation and mind control experiments, performed on unwitting subjects, was ONCE AGAIN brought to the U.S. Government's attention. At the conclusion of the hearing the Committee recommended further exploration of the mind control experimentation, however NOTHING FURTHER WAS DONE.

So, in 1997, a group of fifteen survivors and professionals, organized by ACHES-MC (Advocacy Committee for Human Experimentation Survivors—MIND CONTROL) came together and testified in regard to their own experiences of mind control atrocities. This was recorded on video by Wayne Morris (CKLN Radio out of Canada) and sent with a letter to President Clinton requesting further investigation. To this very day nothing has been done and the pleas for investigation into these matters has been completely ignored... one has to wonder why?

The United States declared the 1990's as "The Decade of the Brain" In 2000 and beyond, let us join together to do whatever it takes to insure the express right and freedom of our brains and insure the freedom of our minds. Putting fear aside, let us join together in **TRUTH AND LOVE**

As we face the year 2000, are we going to allow this most precious human asset, OUR MINDS, to be abused, used and harnessed by ANYONE?

It's bad enough to think that any individual would interfere with these basic freedoms, but to know that the perpetrators are some of the most influential people in the world is unconscionable. Many are our World Political Leaders, Corporate Business Heads, Sports and Entertainment figures, World Banking Leaders, plus a group of publicly nameless puppet masters who work strategically from the top, and are pulling the strings

...... Brice Taylor
Thanks For The Memories

To order: Thanks For The Memories

Brice Taylor Trust
P.O. Box 655
Landrum, SC 29356

SECRET AGENDA
A. RUDOLPH
RUDOLPH, Arthur
male
THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT, NAZI SCIENTISTS AND PROJECT PAPERCLIP, 1945 TO 1990
LINDA HUNT

The single most important book to detail how Nazi experiments became Project Monark/MKUltra

NATIONAL SECURITY ACT CREATES CIA MONSTER

By the mid-1950s, former president Harry S. Truman realized that the U.S. government's intelligence community and particularly the CIA, was out of control. He stated in a number of letters that he made a mistake in signing the National Security Act of 1947. This law made it possible for CIA, and the later created Defense Intelligence Agency (all Armed Services Intelligence Agencies combined.}to do covert operations without informing congress. Dwight D. Eisenhower, who followed Truman as President concurred on the CIA. It might even have been a veiled remark about the CIA's machinations when he warned, near the end of his Presidency: "Beware the military industrial complex. "

It is certain today, a combination of the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) along with the CIA who run this country for those who ever pulls their strings. Johnny Gosch was simply one of many pawns in the game as were and perhaps our thousands of children. What has made the difference in Johnny's case is that he had a Super-Mom, who would accept no barriers in her search for the truth

One of those barriers is the National Security act, which has stifled again and again attempts by Mind Control victims to expose in the federal courtrooms of this country the damage the mind control victims have suffered. Evidence is constantly suppressed under the broad ban of "a matter of National Security." Time and again when most victims have brought a civil rights action in a federal court it dismissed because it involves secret issues. The issue of mind control experiments, biological warfare and drug trafficking all fall under that umbrella of "national security"

More is known and said about the CIA than any other covert operations. Yet all the military are involved in Mind Control programs. Offutt Air Force base played a role in Johnny case and Paul Bonacci was trained there. But Bonacci was also part of war games in Fort Riley, Kansas (Army) while he was still a child.

Anyone who takes the time to read even a few books will find that the CIA operates within all military services. There are detailed descriptions in a number of publications of the use of soldiers, sailors as experimental animals, who were not volunteers to the MK Ultra program. They were often deceived into taking part in experiments that ruined their lives. The Chapter on Monarch and Mindwar only begins to touch the surface of the information uncover in the more than 18 years of investigation.

President Eisenhower objected to a directive of the National Security Council, which gave the CIA extreme powers and unlimited support for paramilitary operations, allowed the CIA to call on other agency, Army, Navy, Marine, Air Force and other secret agencies to do their bidding. What made Eisenhower uncomfortable outraged the Kennedys. President Kennedy did not like what the CIA was about and threatened, "scatter to the winds", the CIA operation. It wasn't long before Kennedy was dead and anyone who views the Abraham Zapruder film, especially the new computer enhanced version will see that Kennedy lacked Secret Service, which should have surrounded his car. What needs to be made clear is that any President who dared challenge the CIA and other covert operations would find themselves dead on the street or otherwise eliminated.

Nixon's so called peace with honor resulted in the loss of South Vietnam, Laos, and Cambodia, resulted in the genocide of millions of Asians and the desertion of American Prisoner's of War. The North Vietnamese in return for the promised repatriation funds that were to help Vietnam rebuild was holding MIA's whom the CIA knew.

Monica Jensen Stevenson, an Emmy winning 60 Minutes Producer was removed from her job for producing a piece which clearly said "secret agencies" had information that as many as 3,000 American prisoners were still alive in Asia. Her book "Kiss the Boys Goodbye" could not be found in the U.S. It was published by a Canadian Publisher in hardcover and a paperback from England by Penguin.

Who is a Domestic Terrorist?

You had best look in the mirror. If you in any way oppose or question local, state or federal government, you may find yourself declared a trouble maker, a "kook" and finally or a crazy who belong in a psychiatric hospital. You may be a house wife or working mother like

Noreen Gosch, but if you object to a dump being planned on property next to yours, or a new chemical plant being contemplated in you county and you object, you may have earned yourself a place on the "domestic terrorist" roster.

What has become clear in the wake of an 18-year investigation is that organizations such as the CIA and FBI are not there to preserve and protect an American way of life. They are definitely not defending a Constitutional form of government that guarantees freedom of speech and due process.

As incredible as it may seem you need not be a member of the Unorganized Militia or some militant religious group to be considered subversive. Any public official who sees wrong doing, criminal activity going on within his department of government is liable to find himself fired, blacklisted, vilified and even sentenced to jail on some trump up charge, or put in a mental institution..

President Ronald Reagan thru extensive use of Executive Orders sanctioned the use of CIA in domestic surveillance and disinformation. They had actually been involved in since the days of the student protest of the Vietnam war in the late 60s. It clearly substantiated that the CIA's experiments with LSD suddenly went beyond the bounds of the Universities Scientific studies and suddenly gave birth to the "Flower Children." Ann Arbor, Michigan and Berkley, Calif had been centers for the CIA funded University experiments involving LSD and suddenly this was available on every major campus across this country. Today drugs and booze are two of the most widely used CIA tools used to keep students away from any thinking or reasoning.

FREEDOM OF INFORMATION ACT

On July 4, 1966, President Lyndon B. Johnson signed Public Law 89-487, the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) which was to go into effect the following year July 4, 1967. The President stated: "I signed this measure with a deep sense of pride that the United States is an open society in which the people's right to know is cherished and guarded. "Attorney General Ramsey Clark said: "If government is to be truly of, by, and for the people, the people must know in detail the activities of the government. Nothing so diminishes democracy as secrecy"!

The FOIA did not fling the door of government wide to public. It had nine exemptions which has lead to endlessly legal wrangling and for the most part there is no response to "a citizens" request. If you are a powerful D.C. connected individual, you stand a much better chance of receiving information in a reasonable time. Author of "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate" John Marks met with no success in gathering documents on the CIA's mind control projects until he did retain a D.C. law firm. He was eventually to get 20,000 documents that he successfully used to give us what has been regarded as the most definitive book to date on the government's mind control experiments using military personnel, college students, and kids kidnapped off the streets of America. See the Mind Control Chapter.

I am sure that both directors of the CIA and FBI will shake their fist and muttering under their breath when they survey the contents of this book. National Security is considered the biggest exemption and we have gotten around their attempts to cry "national security reasons" for not revealing document. Months have now gone by since I submitted a FOIA to the FBI request thru an attorney for the Johnny Gosch and Noreen Gosch files. So far no response could it be that those files would reveal too much of both agencies personal involvement with this kidnapping case?

Bonacci had reported to me that Aquino had been the one to take Johnny from the house near Sioux City, Iowa to Colorado, after paying the kidnappers for doing the job. June 6, 2000, I requested a copy of a Military report written by then Major Michael Aquino (he was later promoted to Lt. Col.) from the National Security Agency. It was called "From Psyops to Mindwar: The Psychology of Victory". This document is an outline of how to turn a "soldier" into a "mind controlled fighting machine", by using mind control techniques. The same techniques used on Paul Bonacci and my son Johnny.

On June 16th, 2000 a letter from the National Security Agency indicating my request "does not fall within the purview of this agency and a search for records responsive to your request would not be productive.

The National Security Agency was established by presidential directive in 1952 to provide signals intelligence and communications security activities for the government. Since then the NSA has gained the response for information systems security. In other words..."keeper of the secrets."

In 1974, a series of needed amendments were added, because of what Senator Edward Kennedy termed "hostile bureaucracy" L.G. Sherick in his book "How to Use FOIA"...Federal agencies maintain billions of classified papers, running the gamut from sensitive national security information to detailed reports on unsuspecting citizens placed under the eye of Big Brother because they attended protest marches, political rallies and radical or not so radical activities.

New York Representative Bella Abzug requested her own information from the CIA. To her amazement she found that for 22 years the CIA had been monitoring her activities as a lawyer and politician, despite the fact that the CIA was charged with gathering overseas intelligence concerning national security, not domestic intelligence..

Thanks to one of the exemptions President Reagan, in an Executive Order authorized them to spy domestically and authorized them to withhold that information from Congress. Executive Orders have been authorized since George Washington and were to be used in case of a National Emergency. Congress may override them within 30 days of the President's signing them. But in the last few years, they have chosen to ignore them and let them pass into law.

If we actually had an existing U.S. Constitution, the President could override it with an Executive Order, which is precisely what President Franklin D. Roosevelt did in 1933. He declared a state of National Emergency. Many writers about Constitutional government have stated that each President has extended the national emergency, which has effectively suspended the Constitution. What has passed for a Constitutional government is simply word games.

There is no better example of how the National Security Act works than an examination of "The Franklin Cover-Up" by John DeCamp. Nebraska State Senator, Captain in the military, friend of the head of CIA William Colby, once considered a political powerhouse in his own state was later ridiculed by his peers and dismissed by Washington D.C.

Within this framework of quasi-laws and regulations various covert agencies have struggled to gain supreme power. To do so, they have not hesitated to use child prostitution. They used mind control victims to compromise every one from the President on down. We must suspect that even Monica Lewinsky could have been placed where she would catch President Clinton roving eye. No politician, judge, businessman or officer in the military is too low or too high to be controlled by blackmail.'

For those of you who need further convincing of the role of the CIA, FBI and other covert agencies in domestic espionage against the citizens of this country read "Dangerous Dossiers" by The New York Times cultural correspondent.

The FBI tried to discredit Hemingway because he had once called the agency "American Gestapo" They barred John Steinbeck from U.S. Army service because they doubted his loyalty.. The notebooks, manuscripts and books of Carl Sandburg were seized and he was declared "a well-known communist in Chicago." All of these authors had achieved national and international recognition. Yet our covert agencies did not hesitate to go after them for real or imagined slights.

Under the FOIA I applied thru my attorney for the documents on myself and Johnny Gosch has been ignored. It is obvious that without major intervention by An Iowa Congressmen or Senator the FBI will simply ignore the request, or if challenged will claim that they have not received them.

What will it take for the FBI to reply under the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA). I challenge .... The Washington Post, New York Times, Washington Times, The Des Moines Register and all other major media sources in this country.... to demand the documentation from the FBI on myself and the Johnny Gosch case.

Conspiracy of Silence by Yorkshire Broadcast

In Nebraska over eighty children came forward after the Franklin Credit Union of Omaha, Nebraska was closed. Their charge…they had been used and abused by Larry King to satisfy the perverted sexual desires of politicians and businessmen in Nebraska, in Washington, D, C. and elsewhere around the country.

The ten-month investigation by a team of reporters from England uncovered the Washington D.C. and White House connection to child prostitution, pornography and the virtual enslavement of minor children for sexual purposes. Although a number of similar investigations had surfaced across the country, they were at a much lower level than the Nebraska State Legislative Investigation. This involved the governors, state senators and U.S Congressmen and Senators. This too had been shut down amid murders. Although Committee Chairman Loran Schmit protested long and loud, no one besides close friend and colleague, former State Senator John D. Camp spoke out. DeCamp finally produced in two editions "The Franklin Cover-up" book.

It was the first and considerable shorter edition, which contained a statement by William Colby, former head of the CIA, that "too many important people and too many important governmental agencies were involved in this." Indeed, Yorkshire TV insisted that William Colby speak out on this videotape, which he did. Perhaps this cost him his life! America's Intelligence community cannot abide squealers.

In mid-1993 John DeCamp's "The Franklin Cover-up" had been circulating for almost a year—all major U.S. Media had ignored the book.

In fact, the only major national news media that had covered the case was "48Hours" which bypassed the investigation DeCamp and Nebraska Legislative Committee Investigation and framed the entire story as "A Carefully Crafted Hoax." This denial of an ongoing investigation by a state legislature in favor of interviewing the accused pedophiles is unprecedented in the annals of television journalism.

Troy Boner states: "Marc Delman wrote my script for the program 48 Hours....I claimed that the entire story of myself and the other kids was a "hoax". He promised me ten or fifteen thousand for this. I got virtually nothing. 48 Hours told me that they had paid my attorney." It is incredible that 48 Hours should have paid either Troy Boner or his attorney to script and present a lie.

The 48 Hours program was aired just before the jury began their deliberation; this was a major breach of journalistic ethics. There is no doubt that 48 Hours program declaring the Nebraska situation "HOAX" had it's influence on the local media and the Douglas County Grand Jury.

The following program was the result of ten months of effort by the British, not the result of a weekend of filming as with 48 Hours. Troy Boner told an entirely different story in this documentary.

In 1993, Yorkshire TV in England contacted DeCamp and sent said DeCamp "a top notch team of investigators." Yorkshire had a contract with the Discovery channel to produce a documentary about charges of sexual abuse in Nebraska. They spent months in Nebraska and also traveled the country from one end to the other interviewing, filming and documenting piece by piece the Franklin story. They reportedly spent between a quarter and a half million dollars on their efforts. DeCamp states in his book: Over the year that I worked with them, I was amazed at the team's ability to gather new documents and witnesses which kept opening up new and frightening facts about Franklin. They were a crack team. In the final weeks that they were in Nebraska they expressed their certainty that they would win awards for this documentary horror story of government sanctioned drug running involving children; government-sanctioned abuse of children; and government protection of some of this country's most powerful businessmen and politicians, who had been the chief actors in the Franklin story.

Finally, the big day came. Their documentary was to air nationwide on the Discover Channel on May 4, 1994. It was advertised in TV Guide and in newspapers for that day. But no one ever saw that program. At the last minute without explanation it was pulled from the air. It was not to be shown then, and has never been broadcast anywhere since in the U.S.

In late 1995, John DeCamp was mailed a bootleg/work copy of the program. He gradually pieced together the story of the programs demise.

When Yorkshire TV sent the broadcast tape to the United States, customs officials seized it as "pornographic material." The attorneys for the Discovery Channel were able to get the documentary release. Then the lawyers went thru the film for month making this change or that deletion and finally declared it safe to broadcast.

In the meantime, Congress began debating major legislation that would affect the cable industry. Messages were delivered in no uncertain terms from key politicians involved in the Cable TV battle, which if the Conspiracy of Silence were shown on the Discovery Channel as planned, then the industry would probably lose the debate.

An agreement was reached Conspiracy of Silence was pulled, and with no rights for sale or broadcast by any other network: Yorkshire TV would be reimbursed for the costs of production: the Discovery Channel itself would never be linked to the documentary: and copies of Conspiracy of Silence would be destroyed. Now in the following pages you can read the text along with some of the pictures. A version of it is available at this WEB site: www.johnnygosch.com on the Internet and is available on VHS.

Troy Boner, who had been the spoiler in the 48 Hours program, became a major witness in the Conspiracy of Silence. This happened only after he had passed a rigorous set of lie detector test insisted on by the producer of the program. He reveals a systematic torture he went thru at the hands of the FBI, the Omaha County Attorney's office and the Omaha Police. Today Boner has disappeared of his own accord or because his information could pinpoint too many people, no one knows.

The following is a transcription of the video with only enough narrative description to give you an idea of what you were not allowed to see. Supposedly all copies of this program had been destroyed.

Narrator: The financial crime is only half the story. This is the true story of Lawrence King It is the story of a cancer at the heart of America and its continual cover up at the highest levels. One man is attempting to uncover the full story—John De Camp is among the most highly decorated Viet Nam veterans...a former state senator of the state of Nebraska. He is now a lawyer fighting Lawrence King's abuse of power.

DeCamp: It's a web of intrigue that starts in our holy of holies Boy's Town of Omaha, Nebraska one of the most respected institutions in the United States. And spreads out like a spider web to Washington D.C. right up to the steps of the nations capitol—the steps of the White House. Involves some of the most respected and powerful and richest businessmen in this United States. of America. The center piece of the entire web is the use of children for sex and drug dealing and drug curriers …the compromising of politicians, the compromising of businessmen, but worst of all the corruption of key institutions of government that have the duty and responsibility to make sure these things never happen.

NARRATOR: For John De Camp the trail starts in a unique town just outside Omaha Boy's Town. Made famous by an Oscar winning film, Boy's Town is America's favorite children's charity. It was found in 1917 by a Catholic priest Father Flanagan.

Flanagan: "The saddest spectacle in our social life is the neglected and unwanted and unloved boy who has become a series problem in our society."

FATHER HUPP: It started out to be a home for orphans right after WW I, but since then society has changed and the problems of boys have changed and so now it is a question of taking care of homeless, abandoned, neglected, abused boys and now girls also.

NARRATOR: Boy's Town has been granted the privileges of an incorporated town. A Catholic Diocese and a school district for 500 children.. Boy's Town has cash reserves of 500 million dollars but still raises up to 35 million annual solicited from the public by begging letters and promotion videos

Father Val Peter: Caretaker of Father Flanagan's Dream and Executive Director of Boys Town. Does Boy's Town really exist people ask me. You bet it does!

Narrator of Video within Video: Located in the heartland of America. Boy's Town youth have come from many backgrounds and locals. When the graduate they shall seek new adventures and head for new places, but always they shall carry with them the spirit of boys town. If you'd like to help Boy's Town send your tax-deductible gift to Boy's Town, Nebraska 68010.

DeCamp: Boy's Town for me was the first thing I ever heard of when you think of institutions that you respect. Believe it or not, I was there for a while when I was a young boy. When an institution like that gets contaminated would it be any better if you did something about it at least get it cleared up.

NARRATOR: John De Camp blames the contamination of Boy's Town on the one time leader of the National Black Republican Council Larry King.

De Camp: Larry King was the fastest rising black star in the entire Republican Party in the United States during all of the 1980s. And he was also one of the most evil individuals in this country in terms of being a dealer of children. In terms of being a thief…40 million they documented he stole in terms of abusing, compromising and corrupting one after another politicians.

NARRATOR: The base of his network was the Franklin Federal Credit Union a people bank in Omaha, Nebraska. Larry King was its general manager.
Larry King: This is especially and exciting day for me (newsreel footage of opening of credit union)
Unidentified Spokesmen for Credit Union: Mr. King was a very charismatic person. When he came to the credit union, he was brought in because it was actually failing. He did everything to build the credit union.
NARRATOR: King courted the leaders of Omaha's wealthy business district. Banks industries and charities placed millions of dollars in King's hands. From 1979 Larry King developed close commercial ties to Boy's Town. Boy's Town Youngsters were sent to work for his companies
Unintended Spokesman: Boy's Town had quite a few accounts at the Franklin Credit Union. Those were considered very valuable accounts they were handled exclusively by our bookkeeping department. But on the average of once a month or once every two months, we always seemed to incorporate a person from Boy's Town
NARRATOR: But King used Boy's Town not just as a source of young boys for his business, he prostituted them at sex and drug orgies. Paul Bonacci was a victim of King's abuse. He was also sent by King to lure Boy's Town youngsters off campus.
Paul Bonacci: We used to just drive around Boy's Town in a scavenger hunts for boys. I would grain their confidence become friends with them for a while. Start inviting them to the parties, the kids were ten years old or older.
NARRATOR: In 1986, King's plundering of Boy's Town was reported by staff to Father Val Peter its Chief Executive. Subsequent testimony proves that he carried out his own investigation but that King's victims refused to talk to him. Monsignor Hupp now blames himself for its association with Larry King
Monsignor Hupp: In retrospect I regret having any association with Larry King. Had I known at the time it would never have happened?
Reporter address Hupp: Could you understand why a very detailed report from a social worker inside Boy's Town identifying children and identifying their alleged abusers never saw the light of day. Nothing happened with that.
Hupp: I can understand that...if I'd know that I wouldn't put up with that! Did something like that happen? I don't know?
Social Worker: Carol Stittt: Nebraska has a very clear statute that child abuse allegations should be reported to authorities. This shouldn't be reported to the principal of a school, director of a facility they should be reported directly either to child protective services or law enforcement.

NARRATOR: And so Larry King remained free to feed his pedophilic parties with child victims. In 1988, a routine review brought kings involvement with Boy's Town youth to the attention of the Nebraska State Foster Care Review Board.

Carol Stittt: The information presented to the Foster Care Review Board either via the telephone reports, the personal reports or the reports we reviewed Larry Kings name was consistently present as someone the youths were making allegations against.

I would say we handed over at least a foot high amount of material to authorities. And nothing happened.

NARRATOR: Omaha Police now accept that Larry King may have been abusing children. But the most senior officer claims the evidence was not conclusive.

Attorny Gen. Spiro: It is certainly possible that Mr. King was involved illegal acts with children, If there was sufficient evidence of those types of allegations he would have been prosecuted by the county attorney office.

Carol Stittt: For me it was very clear. That the case was not investigated and not pursued because of the alleged perpetrators.

NARRATOR: Those perpetrators named by the children were some of the richest and most influential citizen in positions of power in the state. Men prominent in Industry. Politics, the Media even the police.

We can only name the ringleaders. Besides Larry King. There were the Department Store millionaire Allen Baer and the celebrity columnist of Omaha's only newspaper the World Herald Peter Citron. With the judicial system apparently paralyzed, Larry King spent Franklin's money on courting political influence. Ten million dollars went on jewelry. Flowers and private planes. He cultivated contacts in the inner circle of Ronald Regan's white House at his palatial homes three in Omaha and one in Washington D.C he held extravagant parties for the influential and powerful. His lavish spending bought him a protected life.

De Camp: Larry King was constantly heralded (cheered) applauded in the news media as the great businessman that's helping the poor—the black community of Omaha.

NARRATOR: But King's extravagance attracted the Internal Revenue Service as a result on April the 11th 1988. The Franklin Credit Union was raided and closed by the FBI. King was arrested and a federal investigation showed that he had stolen 40 million dollars from Franklin, Documents we possess reveal the FBI interviewed many of the victims of Larry Kings sex ring...but no action was taken. In November 1988 Nebraska's state government set up a parallel investigation into Larry King...a legislative committee was formed. Its chairman was the Republican head of Nebraska's banking committee corn farmer and State Senator Loren Schmit.

Immediately anonymous threats began.

Loren Schmit: I received a phone call on the floor of the Legislature. The caller did not identify himself but he said Loren you do not want to have an investigation of the Franklin Federal Credit Union! And I asked who was I speaking too. He said: That doesn't matter. But you shouldn't have that investigation. And I said: Well, why not?" And he said: "It will reach to the highest levels of the Republican Party. And we're both good Republicans.

NARRATOR: Undeterred the committee began their investigation and the money trail led quickly to the original allegations of child abuse Caroline Stittch was one of the first to testify.

Carol Stittt: The night before we testified before the legislative committee I did receive a phone call at home that said "if you speak you won't live to regret it."

NARRATOR: To protect the inquiry, Schmit's Committee hired special legal council and full time professional investigators Gary Caridori and Karen Ormiston

Schmit: I said to Gary Caridori we do not want you to bring to the committee rumors that can not be backed up my facts.. Bring to a committee that which we can take to a prosecutor.

NARRATOR: The investigators found new victims of King's pedophile network. Many on the streets of Omaha. The picture they built up was a large ring of rich and powerful pedophiles. Many named the same men as those involved in the Boy's Town three years earlier.

Ormiston They were telling us about prominent people in Omaha and elsewhere that were abusing children at parties

Schmit: The prominent citizen names originally came up were of concern to me because I know they many of the individuals and frankly I was shock to have those names show up on the list.

NARRATOR: To provide the committee with hard evidence recorded their new witnesses on videotape Paul Bonacci had been a victim of abuse since he was eight. He was present at many of Larry King's sex parties. Caradori traced him to the county jail. He had been convicted of fondling his young cousin.

Caradori: Who are some of these people who would come to these parties?

Bonacci: Larry King, Peter Citron and others.

NARRATOR: Media personality Peter Citron procured some of his victims from Boy's Town.

Bonacci: He liked them mainly around the age of eight to 13. He fondled and had oral sex with them, he did have some anal sex but he usually did that with the older kids.

NARRATOR: The parties involved ever more sadistic abuse.

NARRATOR: Millionaire Alan Baer hosted parties for a large number of sophisticated pedophiles. Paul Bonacci suffered at their hands.

Carradori: When you were tied up was anyone there besides Peter Citron.

Bonacci: Alan Baer sometimes. And sometimes other kids were performing sex on me.

NARRATOR: Troy Boner was found by the investigator and his video taped testimony taken on road.

Boner: I was shocked when I walked into the room. There was this kid about 15 in the middle of the room He was bent over with one man in front another reaching under him to play with his tits. And a third putting beads up his ass. Jeff (King) told me later that guy was a cop.

NARRATOR: Boner named Alan Baer as the man who introduced him to the sex parties.

Boner: Allan Baer was a sick f__k, didn't care… wanted sex nasty. I don't know if you can even call it sex. Everything, I mean, from just touching to a fruit a huge squash that big around stuck into to you into your ass. Heat… heat things… hot things poked at you stuck in you.

NARRATOR: But the center of the child sex ring was Larry King

Boner: Larry King was the same kind of sick f__k Alan Baer was except Larry King was more violent, more sure of himself. You know. I got these scars on my arm on night were Larry King said, he wanted to see how strong a men we were or something, he had us put our arms together. He'd light cigarettes and as soon as they get burning he drop them down between our arms. Let it burn. They made us stand their naked and touch each other by holding our arms together and burnt cigarettes there. It's on film someplace. You know they filmed it. I mean I would see him f__k a ten year old boy in the ass until he bled, pull out, stop push him down then go out and meet with decent people.

NARRATOR: King would also provide under age girls for abuse. Alisha Owens told the investigators she was 15 when she attended her first party introduced by a Boy's Town Boy. Caradori discovered her in jail where she was serving a sentence for passing bad checks.

Alisha Owen: I met some boys from Boy's Town and they invited me to a party. It was at that party that I met Larry King, although at the time I did not know where he was,

NARRATOR: Larry King and Alan Baer frequently hosted the child sex parties in penthouse at the Twin Towers luxury block In Omaha

Owen: A lot of the time, I was in handcuffs with my hand behind my head and my feet tied and someone would be sitting on my face. Larry King took quite a lot of pictures

Caradori: Alisha, you're a victim. Just take a deep breath

Ormston: We were appalled, I don't know if it comes across to you from the video, they way it came across to us in person. It was incredible! It's incredible what these kids went thru. I think.

Caradori: Troy Boner would tie you up?

Owen: Yes, sobbing

Boner: Drugs were a part of how they got control of the some of the kids, because that's what some of the kids were there to get. They would do the sexual action and be provided with cocaine or whatever type of drug they wanted. Heroine that's my drug of choice to this day I remain an addict.

Owen: We met there in Pasadena. I was almost certain that the three boys were from Boys Town.

Caradori: Were they graduates of Boy's Town?

Owen: No, they were currently at Boy's Town.

Caradori: How did they get away from there?

Ormiston: Larry King was, I would say the center of transporting the children around the country. But the airplanes were usually in his name, leased in his name. They were paid for by Larry King

Caradori: Did King ever threaten you?

Owen: Those of us who didn't want to be a part of it were threatened. King said, I can find somebody to kill you or someone in your family if you talk.

Schmit: Boy's Town came up frequently in the investigation, but we found it very difficult to get information about Boy's Town. I was not able to find out any information. I went up there. Mr. Caradori could not get any information either.

NARRATOR: Boy's Town today remains unwilling to discus its involvement with Larry King. We were banned from filming at Boy's Town and its public affairs officer refused any interviews.

Telephone Public Affairs Officer: "I would have to give you a flat no. I'm just going to tell you at this point that we will not participate with you we have no interest in talking to you folks. It's something we do not even care to delve into. Phone slammed down.`

NARRATOR: by the spring of 1990 the evidence of an organized child abuse ring convinced the Nebraska state committee. Its chairman Loren Schmit sought the advice of his lawyer John DeCamp. On his advice, Schmit turned over all the sworn evidence to the FBI. But immediately the video taped testimony was leaked to a hostile local media.

ORMISTON: The media immediately started discrediting the witness. The witnesses came across in the media in the Omaha World Herald especially, as the criminals.

Carol Stittt: The press, particularly in the Omaha World Herald, demolished the last three-victim witnesses. The paper never looked for information that would support any of the allegations. The whole purpose of the story was to destroy any credibility these youths may have.

BONACCI: I heard people say that Gary Caradori coached me that he told me what to say. But the fact was I didn't meet Gary Caradori, till way after I had already talked to the Omaha police about the abuse and had named all the same people.

NARRATOR: Paul Bonacci maintains that neither the FBI nor the Omaha police took his allegations seriously.

Bonacci: They didn't ask me very much about Larry King or even Alan Baer at all. They treated allegation about the people who abused me almost like a joke.

ATTORNEY GENERAL: The stories were of such significance that the investigators first wanted to prove the accuracy of the stories. They set about the investigation of the three, then a fourth person, who were telling the stories. As the investigation developed, it became obvious to the investigators that the information was not accurate. It was an entire conspiracy of allegations none of which had any truth to them.

Schmit: I was very disappointed with the way the FBI and law enforcement treated the victims. They had in fact turned them into the offenders, so to speak. And instead of taking the evidence that was delivered to them by the victims and interrogating the person whom the victims identified. They seemed to bear down and try to get the victims to change their story.

NARRATOR: It seemed to the investigators that the establishment of Omaha was closing ranks. Then Troy Bonner was brought in for questioning by the FBI.

Boner: The FBI's attitude was just "no" ....these kinds of things just don't happen. In the first interview when I went and I realized they don't believe a f__king thing I'm saying. You know, they are they were just appalled but I realized what that look in their eye was back then. It was fear...it was fear, you know, I had witnessed you know first hand things that would destroy this city. People in a position...its not going to be believed, you will not be believed. You will be found guilty of perjury and they weren't telling me maybe. They were saying there's no way. You go on with this story you're going to jail. That was said to me direct.

NARRATOR: Troy Bonner agreed to withdraw his video taped testimony. The FBI used Troy in an attempt to pursued fellow witness Alisha Owen into abandoning her evidence against Larry Kings nationwide network of powerful pedophiles. We have obtained a recording of a phone call made by the FBI on March the 9th 1990. It is significant evidence for John

De Camp.

FBI: This is special Agent Michael F. Mott following will be a consensually recorded telephone call between Troy Boner and Alisha Owens.

Boner: Hello!

Owen: Hi!

Boner Hey, what's going on?

Owen: I'd like to ask you that!

Boner: Talk to me

Owen : No you talk to me! I don't understand why you're lying. Why are you lying.

Boner: What are you talking about? You telling me I'm lying. You concocted this whole thing Alisha.

Owen: Your full of shit

Boner: Either tell me what's going on (she repeats) Hey, look!

Owen: Who do you have listening on this line?

Troy lies: I have nobody listening to me. I'm listening to you and I'm hoping you can give me some f__king answers.

Owen: I'll be honest with you. I don't know what kind of game your playing.

Boner: I'm not trying to play a game. I'm not going to go to jail for you. And that's what is going to happen.

Owen: Why would you go to jail? Jail for telling the truth?

Boner: No, jail for lying.

Owen: What have you lied about?

Boner: I haven't lied.

Owen: Okay then, but

Boner: Listen! Shut up! Listen to me. You not out here being talked to by them every day. The pressure is kind of hard!

DeCamp: You literally have to have bricks for brains to take on the FBI in this country and that's exactly what you would have to do, to do this properly. They now in my opinion…in my investigation are the architects of the cover-up.

NARRATOR: We asked the FBI in Omaha for an interview about its investigation of the Franklin scandal

MURRAY HOMEQUEST: Murray Homequest with the FBI here. We feel it would be inappropriate for us to comment. We worked this with the Omaha police department and we just don't feel it would be appropriate for use to make comments (Phone was hung up)

NARRATOR: As the investigators sought out new witnesses, they found themselves under constant threat.

ORMISTON: Gary was threatened several times. His vehicles were tampered with. I would think whoever tampered with them. It was a scare tactic because it was so obvious that they were being tampered with.

Gary's brother: Gary got one piece of evidence that he even said, "he got ahead of them this time." He talks about this book ...it was like addresses, telephone numbers, names...he said if they knew he had it they would kill him.

NARRATOR: On July the 11, 1990 Gary Caradori and his eight-year-old son A.J. were flying home from Chicago in his light aircraft. They had watched the all star baseball game and Caradori had been pursuing new leads.

NEWCAST: Investigators from the National Transportation Safety Board are in Harold Cameron's cornfield trying to determine what caused this private plane to crash killing it's two occupants.

NARRATOR: The bodies of Gary Carodori and eight year old A. J. were found in the wreckage.

NEWSCAST: National Transportation Safety Board investigators say wreckage is apparently strewn over a three quarter to one mile long stretch in this field..

Investigator: The fact that the wreckage is scattered over such a large area certainly demonstrate that it did break up in flight. The exact mechanism of break up is still unknown.

NARRATOR: The federal investigation was never able to discover what tore the plan apart.

Orminston There are things missing from the plane...pieces missing. I think the plane was sabotaged. There's no doubt in my mind!

NARRATOR: Within 24 hours of the tragedy the FBI impounded all Caradori records. Gary's widow Sandy is still unable to come to terms with her loss.

Sandy Caradori: As a mother, I don't want to ever think that somebody murdered my child let alone my husband. But I think if you ever talked to any parent be it mother or father who's ever lost a child. I mean the worst thing you can think of is that somebody would want to murder a child.

Caradori Brother: I really feel that somebody killed my brother (Repeat) I know somebody killed him. If there is someone out there who could help us out if they know something.. May God help those who did that to him and his family?

Ormiston: The effect of Gary's crash on the investigation I think that put an end to anybody else coming forward. There are many victims—there are more. There are more...they are still out there. They're afraid to come forward.

Carol Stittt: That's when I was finished; because I figured out if they murdered Gary and his son there was nothing that would stop them. There is no piece of paper; there is nothing we could come up with that was going to get anything done.

NARRATOR: But Gary Caradori's death pricked Troy Boner's conscience. He promised Sandy that he would tell Senator Schmit and Senator committee about the FBI's pressure that lead him to lie.

Boner: I set the record straight. I was going to do it and would…the truth would come out…and someone would be held accountable for his death. But then at the funeral, I met FBI guys and they looked at me. Well, I was supposed to meet Senator Schmit and Senator Orback for lunch afterward. That's when I decided, I told my mom we're not going to do the lunch. We're going to get out of Lincoln now.

NARRATOR: Troy Boner claims that pressure from the FBI and with the assistance of the county attorney's office in Omaha, led him to swear a new statement claiming that he and Alisha Owens had concocted the entire child abuse story. He told this story to the Grand Jury formed to bring any charges. On July the 23rd 1990, the Grand Jury issued a bizarre and contradictory report. It indicted Larry King for fraud ,embezzlement and ruled that he had paid young men for sex but dismissed allegations about his sex ring. It indicted Alan Baer for the serious offense of pandering for sex, but rejected evidence linking him to King or to Citroen., who it noted had been convicted of separate child molestation charges. It accepted Troy, Alisha and Paul Bonacci had been abused, but not by the people they identified. And for refusing to withdraw her evidence, it charged Alisha Owens with perjury………..Loren Schmit Legislative Committee issued a report denouncing the Grand Jury. Schmit acknowledges that the system failed both the victims and him.

Schmit: I think I've got as distinguished a record as anyone can put together in 24 years. I was told that would be curtailed and it was. I was told I would have financial problems and I did. That certainly was not lost on most of the politicians in Nebraska. I think the great majority got the message, that if they ever tried to conduct such a thorough investigation again the same thing will happen. It has shaken my faith in the institution of the government. I used to be a firm believer that the system would work that people who did things wrong would be punished. We discovered victims who claimed to be abused and even acknowledged that they had been abuse but they did not try to find out who abused them. Instead they convicted Alisha Owens of perjury indefensible in my view.

NARRATOR: The trial took place in July of 1991. Troy Boner testified that the child abuse story had been all invention. As a result Alisha Owen was sentenced to between 9 and 25 years in prison.

DeCamp: I can't find a case in the history of this country where some kid got sentenced to 25 or 30 years in prison for something like this. If you were going to pick, what I call a tell sign, something that says something's fishy about the whole thing, it was in the sentencing itself. For some reason, they had to send a signal to every kid who was a potential witness my opinion again, a signal so loud and clear, if you dare to come forward, if you dare to talk... watch what happens.

NARRATOR: Alan Baer was fine $500 after pleading no contest to a reduced charge of adding and abetting prostitution. Peter Citron served two years of a three to eight year sentence. Thanks to Troy Boner's lies Larry King never faced child sex charges. For the 40 million dollar fraud he was given a 15-year sentence...ten years less than Alisha Owens.

Boner: I felt really sick. I should be taken out and shot. And if that was too happen, I would go willingly.

NARRATOR: John De Camp former state senator and Viet Nam veteran is now the only man fighting to help Larry King's victims. He is the lawyer trying to overturn Alisha Owens conviction and to expose the cover-up.

De Camp: I live in Nebraska, hell... I was born here, raised here. I have four kids growing up here like it or not it is my heritage, you know. If it is a dirty cesspool so that I got to live in it or look back on that I left. That isn't good.. The real cost to my family has been the fear and intimidation it has put in some of the kids. A couple of the kids are really frightened and really had some sleeping problems. That's been the real concern I've had.

NARRATOR: John has received anonymous threats and has turned for advice to his one time boss, former head of the CIA William Colby,

DeCamp: Old Bill Colby told me better than anything the one thing the bad people can afford right now is publicity and knocking you off right now or doing something obvious to your kids would bring them more trouble than its worth.

COLBY: You have to consider the possibility of not only some danger to your reputation but to your person. There are people, who do react rather violently to some kinds of charges particularly if they are true. There's more apt to be a negative reaction. Than if they're false. If they're false charges, they can be reacted to in a normal way. Libel suit or whatever, if there's truth in it there can be a danger, we've seen that happen in other cases.

NARRATOR: John arranges to meet Troy Boner, the young man he sees as the key to the cover-up.

DeCamp: He's in great danger. He carries the great secret so to speak. He served his purpose for the FBI and others by committing the lies that put the seal on the cover up.

NARRATOR: He knows that Troy's evidence will be crucial to Alisha

Owens case. And Troy wants to tell the truth despite very real fears.

Boner: My feelings are, you know, I'm not going to be believed again. It's just going to be a whole other kind of exploitation. Like it was last time and I'm afraid that's going to happen or I might end up dead or a loved one might end up dead.

NARRATOR: Troy has an overriding reason for putting the record straight.

Boner: I want this to go forward and have something done, so that all those other kids a lot worse has happened to.... can come forward and see that action can be taken..

DeCamp: You have to, if you want to protect yourself, your life and your families life...both now and particular in the future, to use the institutions of government that have been set up to protect you and make them work. That means you go into federal court, you go after the people that have done this cover up and you expose it so there is no longer any percentage on their part... in eliminating you because the secret is out.

Boner: That's why we are here today. To let it out.

NARRATOR: John's advice to Troy to tell the truth puts him at risk for prosecution by the county attorney office.

DeCamp: Potentially they could decide to charge him with perjury because now he is telling that the forced him to lie. I did lie at Alisha's trial. I did lie before the Grand Jury... I did lie because the authorities were forcing me to do it.. And I was scared for my family. Potentially they could charge him with perjury this time.

NARRATOR: Troy's appearance in court will keep Alisha Owen out of prison. She on bail while DeCamp appeals against her perjury conviction. As her hearing approaches vital new evidence emerges. Alisha claims that some of Troy's video taped testimony was withheld from the Grand Jury, which indicted her.

Owen: The tapes that were shown to the Grand Jury had been edited. Everything that matched Troy's statements were left in....everything that matched mine were edited out. I think maybe one of the things we want to do, is show the judge specifically what had been edited out, where these little five minute segments were.

NARRATOR: But to obtain the tapes DeCamp must approach some of the various officials he has accused in court of being involved in the cover up. The county attorney's office, which ran the Grand Jury.

DeCamp: The old Alisha Owen case. 127 – 194 tapes and transcript.

NARRATOR: Robert Siegler is the prosecuting attorney, who is trying to send Alisha Owens back to prison. After lengththy negotiations DeCamp emerges with the tapes the grand jury never saw. For more than two hours, Troy Boner details trips across America on behalf of Larry King and Alan Baer. Trips for drug deals and sex. It corroborates Alisha evidence

Boner: Tape playing, he mumbles I was sent from Dallas to Los Angeles to service Larry Kings customers along with Alisha Owen.

NARRATOR CONTINUES: For John DeCamp this is the proof of the King sex ring for which he has been waiting.

DeCamp: Here is the smoking gun. They could go out and verify…the corroboration …in other words the linkage to King that was denied. Cover-up, organized planned deliberate cover-up.

NARRATOR: The courthouse in Wahoo, Nebraska. The hearing begins. Alisha Owens ready to testify. So is Paul Bonacci. But there was no sign of Troy Boner. DeCamp discovers the Robert Siegler has sent the young man a subpoena, fearing arrest for perjury… Troy has gone into hiding. DeCamp is without his most vital witness. In court Alisha case is adjourned. The county attorney office begins to search for Troy Boner. But County Attorney Siegler will not say why. (County attorney confronted but refused to answer)

DeCamp: Every victim witness who stepped forward in any way or even was a potential witness that somebody has heard about has either been killed, put in jail under some theory or another, terrified or run out of the state, discredited. Every perpetrator…every perpetrator even a convicted one have been treated as conquering heroes.

NARRATOR: Peter Citron still lives in the same house were he abused many of his young victims. Alan Baer lives in the most exclusive part of Omaha, he recently bought a downtown shopping mall. Many of the other abusers named by the children have risen within the Nebraska's state government and legal system and within the Republican Party.

DeCamp: Obviously the FBI was protecting something a lot more significant than a bunch of old pedophiles having improper relationships with little boys. They were protecting something a lot more significant than bunch of drug peddlers. There are protecting, in my opinion, some very prominent politicians, some very powerful individuals associated with those politicians and the political system up to and including the highest political people in this entire county.

NARRATOR: In search of the men that protected Larry King, John DeCamp goes to Washington D.C. to investigate King's connections in the Republican party and on Capital hill.

NARRATOR: Paul Bonacci provides him with evidence that King threw wild child sex parties at the rented $5000 per month house.

Bonacci: I was about 14 in 1981. I first came about three or four times the first year after that it was about once a month. Some of the parties when they started off were straight political parties...no sex. When some of the politicians had left... the ones that had planned on engaging in some type of sexual activity, that would come after the party...stayed! The party with the kids was usually held downstairs, where if they acted up or the started freaking out because of the drugs they were on they could put them in a room that they couldn't get out of and they would lock them in.

DeCamp: What kind of drugs?

Bonacci : Anything you want cocaine, heroine, speed balls.

DeCamp: You are telling me that these are the parties where you had Larry King and prominent politicians and drugs? Where they readily available at the party?

Bonacci: At the party... after party, they were readily available to anybody. Before hand they did it more upstairs. Kind of in the back room.

De Camp: Where any attempts ever made that you know of to expose this situation?

Bonacci: As far as I know nothing has ever been done. And as far as I know most people who were in there had already been compromised

NARRATOR: King's partner was Washington Lobbyist Craig Spence. Spence took youngsters including Paul Bonnacci on midnight tours of the White House.

DeCamp: So you were in the White House then? How did you gain access?

Bonacci: I came down with Larry King, but Craig Spencer is the one that arranged the trip for us. It was a kind of gift for services we were doing..

DeCamp: How many times where you on this kind of trip?

Bonacci: I came to it two times.

DeCamp: Two times.

Bonacci: Yeah

DeCamp: Were you used for sex on those occasions?

Bonacci: Not till after we left.

DeCamp: After you left the White House?

Bonacci: Yes

DeCamp: What time at night?

Bonacci: It was usually after midnight. It was really weird being in the White House at that time at night. Even going to places that they told us no one else gets to go to. We were seeing rooms in there I hadn't even heard about. Craig Spence and Larry King had a couple of groups, one was called Bodies by God and the other call boys started by Larry King which was called The Golden Boys which was kids who usually were under the age of approximately ten.

NARRATOR: reporter Paul Rodriguez of "The Washington Times" investigated Spence's callboy network in 1989

Paul Rodriguez: We have uncovered a series of allegations from some minors that lead me to a callboy operation

DeCamp: It sure fits with Paul Bonacci . He tells a tale being brought to the White House on occasion kind of as a reward for the kids.

Rodriguez: Craig Spence is dead. Apparently committed suicide. He had advanced stages of AIDS and was an AIDS carrier and he killed himself. This is the thing that always bothers me. They claim it's the largest male prostitution ring in the city (Washington D.C) that they ever had uncovered, a million dollars business a year minimum and yet the only ones prosecuted was the operator Henry Vincent and three of his lieutenants as it were. They never went after any of the Johns—the clients. This operation claimed to have clients that ran from the White House to Capitol Hill, the State House to the Churches, and within the Media.

DeCamp: This is exactly what Paul describes as the people he was with.

Rodriguez: And a lot of the stuff led there but we couldn't quite nail it in all cases. To accuse someone of high stature. We were able to do it thru the mother lode provided us of credit cards receipts and cancelled checks. And then lists of the clients. The prosecutors knew all this stuff there was possibly 20,000 documents. They sealed the entire record by court order. We have attempted on several occasions to unseal that and we've been told it will be a cold day in hell before those records ever get unsealed.

DeCamp: It makes you wonder what is in those records.

NARRATOR: John DeCamp believe the legal system is still being subverted and that the people protected are still at the heart of the America establishment. He hopes that this program will expose a serious miscarriage of justice but the opposition is formidable.

Nebraska Attorney General: It's beyond belief that arguable the most powerful person in the world, the President of the United States in the form of Richard Nixon could not prevent the investigation of Watergate. Or that President Regan could not prevent the investigation of Iran Contra. And yet somehow this group of unnamed, unknown, anonymous individuals in Omaha,Nebraska have such power they can control and protect all of these people from being investigated. Those allegations are ridiculous

DeCamp: Well, first of all Nixon did cover up Watergate. Number 1. Bush did cover up Iran Contra at least officially; And Omaha has successfully covered up this situation. In each case it was the Press that exposed the problem it was no institutions of government –they had been corrupted they had been compromised—they were the ones doing the cover up.

NARRATOR: The attorney general is now involved.. DeCamps evidence has been passed by William Colby to a senior lawyer in the Justice Department.

COLBY: He did say that the Attorney Generals office would be very sensitive any charges of abuse of children, this was a matter of considerable priority to this department that this sort of thing no take place and that they would assign and officer to look into the case.

NARRATOR: For John DeCamp the story of Larry King's corrupt empire holds a dire warning for all America.

DeCamp: If you can control three or four key elements you can totally own a state. You can make right wrong. You can make truth falsehood—falsehood truth. If you control the media, if you control the justice department, if you control the police—you own the system.

THE END

It should be noted that within a year after Colby's submission of DeCamp material to the U.S. Attorney General office, he was dead of a claimed heart attack supposedly brought on by canoe in the Potomac...suffering a heart attack and falling overboard. Both his wife and his friend John DeCamp found the circumstances suspicious. Colby apparently left supper unfinished on the table and his computer on. Yet those who knew him said he would have completed his supper and turned off the computer before ever deciding to go canoe.

A Greek chorus of the new media eulogized Colby and his role as head of the CIA while accepting unconditional the heart attack and falling overboard. The reality is Community of Covert Activities, he was consider a pariah because he had spokeN to openly to Congress of violations of law and Constitution done by Secret Organization that considered their view of National Security allowed them to committee whatever crime they deemed necessary.

DeCamp reveals in his revised edition of "Franklin Cover-up" that it was Colby who urged both Loren Schmit and himself to persist in their efforts to bring this child prostitution/child kidnapping to light. For his efforts on their behalf, which included radio and television appearances in Nebraska, he was sentenced to death by the powers that be that control this country.

We may no longer have a draft but our teenagers may be selected by elements of the government to do special services for the country as prostitutes, drug mule, and blackmailers and assassins. Please note... it is the very elements of government the FBI, DIA, CIA, who are supposed to help protect this country who are undermining all law and order in this country...blackmailing U.S. Senators and Congressmen with child prostitution and ones they cannot blackmail they intimidate.

MEDIA CORRUPTION

What responsibility does the media have to tell the truth? .... To properly report the news and keep the public informed? Author; John C. Behrens in the book The Typewriter Gorilla.. Closeups of 20 Top Investigative Reporters

"The perfectly honorable pursuit of old Lincoln Steffens had fallen into disrepute in the eyes of many editors, (muckraking) who considered it an unseeingly, at times unsavory, often unsafe pursuit which might cost newspapers credibility, reporters, sources in government, and publishers dollars in legal fees.

Young reporters ... and I was one of them seem to trust the government more in those days; indeed, the American people trusted them more."

The New York Times recently published an unprecedented apology to the American people in the case of Wen Ho Lee, after government officials declared him to be involved in one of the biggest espionage incidents ever to hit this country. After more national publicity than any other such case in American history and after Lee had been imprisoned for nine months, all major charges were dropped. Lee was released for time served on a very minor charge of transferring classified material to an unclassified computer. The Times has promised to check the stories coming from the Justice Dept., FBI and other governmental agencies rather than taking their word as "gospel."

In the days of Watergate, journalists were considered heroes. They brought down President Nixon and upheld our countries ideals of truth and justice. But according to Howard Kurtz, media reporter for the Washington Post and author of Media Circus… "Today's reporters are seen as a petulant, sleazy and haughty bunch."

Kurtz's ventures into America's newsrooms to show how newspapers have bungled so many important stories of recent years; while Behrens book of two decades before talks about muckraking reporters giving Jack Anderson the #1 spot but today he is no longer recognized as a major investigative and political reporter.

My experience with the media has been both good and bad. In chapter one of this book, the good experiences have been depicted. It is important however to relate the opposite side, the reason being …… to show how "unpopular stories" are reported "unfairly" and with "absence of malice"

My son's kidnapping was needless to say a very traumatic event to our family. As the media gathered to report the story, we were treated with kindness for the most part. The reporters for each TV station represented in the interviews were asking questions they needed for their story. I understood this from the beginning. They were sent out on assignment. They had to bring back the filmed interview for their program managers.

When the Des Moines Register reported the kidnapping for the first time, their description of our home and surroundings were that we lived "in a very affluent neighborhood". We didn't, but that statement gave the impression to the public that we were "bucks up" in the world and could afford most anything.

I agreed to do the interview with the Des Moines Register, if they would put a photo of Johnny in the article. The reporter and photographer were more interested in photos of my family and me. One morning, very early, the doorbell rang, I opened the door to be greeted by yet another Des Moines Register reporter and photographer, telling me that their editor was demanding photos of Johnny's parents. I was on the front porch talking with them and the photographer actually tried to chase me to get the photo… I thought at the time, why is this guy being so horrible to us? He was demanding these photos of us, when it was Johnny who was missing.

Within a few days of Johnny's kidnapping, I received a call from a woman who worked at the Des Moines Register stating: "I just overheard the editor giving the orders to every reporter in the newsroom to slant all stories about the Gosch kidnapping against the family." That female reporter was afraid to give her name! She was shocked by what she heard and felt I should know.

Over the next six months many of the stories were very negative and disparaging towards me. Then Ron Sampson from the Ankeny Press Citizen stepped in and began to write a series of articles telling the truth about the kidnapping. No only did he write them over a period of months but then compiled them all together into one special edition.

A great many reporters in this country discovered what Jack Anderson talked about in a speech before attorneys and judges that it was increasingly difficult to get any good investigative pieces into their paper. About this time the Internet appeared and stories, which Anderson spoke of, as going in the "trash can" suddenly found a place on the Internet. The Internet has proven a valuable tool for research for this book.

Jack Anderson was once considered the top political columnist in America, a mantle he inherited from Drew Pearson who challenged and brought to a halt the excessive of Joe McCarthy and McCarthyism.

Jack Anderson gave a speech on December 2, 1986 to the National Conference of the American Tort Reform Association in Washington D.C. Excerpts of the speech were printed in Americans for Legal Reform, HALT as it is called, along with Judicial Watch have attempted to bring to the attention of those both within and without the legal system that we are experiencing major failure in law, as judges and journalists are empowered to rule for their friends and attack their enemies or the enemies of their friends.

An excerpt reads:

"Thomas Jefferson said, that the people would be better off with no government at all than with a government without a watchdog, because government, by its nature, tends to oppress those it has power over.

I can say this much for my profession: the investigative reporters in this country have never been intimidated before. Our government has jailed them; they have been dynamited by gangsters; they've had acid thrown in their faces by mobsters; they have been kidnapped; they have been killed. And none of this has stopped them from telling the truth, as they understood it.

What all of the dictators and gangsters...have failed to do, lawyers are now succeeding in doing.

You see, in newspaper offices across the 50 states, stories are being thrown in the wastebasket; facts that should be spread across the front pages are being suppressed.

Editors who once championed reform are saying to their reporter: "Let someone else take the chance...

Anderson cites an example of running a story about an already convicted Mafioso who filed a libel suit against Anderson from his jail cell. The judicial system allowed this to go forward and before the suit

was won, Anderson had spent several hundred thousand dollars. Since this time Anderson has vanished as a major political columnist.

Defrauding America... the headline screams in this third edition of an Encyclopedia of Secret Operations by the CIA, DEA, and other Covert Agencies. Rodney Stich the author began his career in aviation as a Navy Pilot during WWII, an airline pilot flying both domestic and international routes and final an inspector-investigator for the Federal Aviation Agency. He has been a crusader against high level government corruption since 1962 and has appeared on 2,500 radio and television programs in both the U.S. and abroad. The information in his 750-page Encyclopedia strikes a cord with the Johnny Gosch case and what was uncovered by the Franklin Investigation of the Nebraska Legislator. Stitch speaks of federal judges who became key players in cover-ups and the obstruction of justice and do not hesitate to persecute and prosecute whistleblowers.

Stitch further states..."The CIA has many media personnel on its payroll to plant stories or discredit charges against it. The Agency secretly pays out large sums of money for articles and books to be written on the CIA's behalf. Its control over the media is like a Wurlitzer, orchestrating and manipulating all segments of the written or broadcast media. The CIA uses taxpayer funds to control reporter and publishers of newspapers, magazines and books."

The media is itself implicated in the criminal activities through years of cover-up.

The media is infiltrated with CIA money, paid to prevent exposure of the activities.

The media is staffed by CIA assets who are ordered to prevent these exposures.

Stitch points to the stories by Gary Webb, in the San Jose Mercury in 1996, which described the CIA's link to drug smuggling in the San Francisco and Los Angeles area, especially targeting the black community. The Washington Post, New York Times and Los Angeles Times ridiculed these articles. Rumors were also started that Webb's earlier journalism awards were to be revoked.

A very courageous Seven Stories Press brought out the full story in "Dark Alliance "

Published in 1998. This is the same publisher, who for years has been issuing a series of the most "Censured" stories of the year. Few Americans realize that America has more censorship than any other country in the world. Any journalist who dares write the truth may quickly find himself or herself without a job.

"Blue Grass Conspiracy" a book about high level drug trafficking in Kentucky, which implicated two governors. A family who took former a TV news anchorwoman into their home, paying all her expenses for a year, made the book possible. A daredevil member of an aristocratic Kentucky family parachuted to his death, with bags of cocaine strapped to his body. Pursuit of this individual had cost the TV anchorwoman her job as well as that of the top law enforcement officer investigating this case.

Won't Look, Won't Tell

The news media in America today claim under the First Amendment their right not to examine evidence or tell the story —if it is too risky.

If you are an important businessman, judge, lawyer or politician, you have the tacit protection of the news media. In Omaha, a state legislative investigation turned up the name Harold Anderson, Publisher of the Omaha World Herald. When the information leaked out, the paper not only launched into denial but also literally began attacking Senator Loren Schmit, who was chairman of the Franklin Credit Union Investigation.

William Colby, former head of the CIA, encouraged Schmit to persist. Colby made a radio broadcast and a special appearance in a video "Conspiracy of Silence." He stated, that he presented the evidence of child sexual abuse to "a high ranking official" in the Justice Department. The video which was aired in England by Yorkshire Broadcasting was confiscated and destroyed before it could be shown in the United States, on the Discovery Channel May 4, 1994... after it was advertised in TV Guide.

William Colby insisted that Loren Schmit continue the investigation until the Nebraska Legislature literally shut the investigation down around his ears. Although Schmit had served for 21 years and had a remarkable scrape book from the media praising his legislative career., his final two years were in disgrace..."according to the local media." Schmit's career came to an abrupt end, when he began investigating pedophile activity connected to important businessmen and politicians both in Nebraska and Washington D.C.

The Nebraska Legislature brought William Colby into the investigation after the death of Gary Caradori the local investigator hired. Colby determined that the decision to kill Caradori and his eight year old son had come from Washington D.C. A little more than a year after he submitted the information to the Justice Department he was dead under mysterious circumstances. The media portrayed his death as a heart attack and drowning in a boating accident. However, there was no evidence of water in his lungs.

If you are a little old lady bilked by an HMO... A mother whose child has been molested by an important man, the news media reserves right to do a take out piece on you. Some unscrupulous editors will do anything to discredit the person or the truth.

If you oppose the lies, deceptions, the innuendos and insinuation, you might get them to run a retraction to the front-page story ...on the bottom of the eighth page. Or in many cases, if you have don't have enough clout ... they laugh at your letter, explaining their mistakes and throw it in the wastebasket. So sue us they say. If you don't have a half million or more you don't stand a chance.

NOT JUST NEWSPAPERS AND MAGAZINES

"One of the things that offends me the most is the CIA's literary efforts...its domestic book publishing efforts. Books have appeared regularly in this country that have been subsidized and financed by the good old Central Intelligence Agency. In 1967 Praeger Publishers admitted to have published "fifteen or sixteen: books for the CIA."......"Undercover: 35 Years of CIA Deception"

by Darrell Garwood in his book

The CIA believed that it was not enough to be immune from congressional or judicial control. The agency felt it was also imperative that anti-CIA sentiment, and leftist leaning in general, had to be defused and combated on every front. To this end, the CIA infiltrate red the groves of academe, the missionary corps, the editorial boards of influential journals and book publishers, and any other quarters were public attitudes could be effectively influenced.

Garwood book is one among hundreds that echo the same theme "Our mainstream media betrays us...because it has been so thoroughly infiltrated by vast amounts of CIA drug derived money. You do not say bad things about the CIA in the mainstream media, while nothing good is said of them in the alternative media, including the Internet.

The Des Register and other influential publications are infiltrated. Editors and reporters are paid to write disinformation and discrediting any individual or group get too near the truth.

No better example exists than the Des Moines Register that absolutely refuses all form of investigation if that investigation would question any one in authority. We suggest a citizen committe to be formed to discuss "Media Corruption" and bias.

NEBRASKA LEADERSHIP CONFERENCE

The people of the United States have been ill served by the news media of the country. Reporting has been largely exchanged for public opinion molding. This is accomplished by selective reporting that only permits one viewpoint to be expressed and where facts are at odds with the media's position, out and out deception and lying are substituted.

Nebraska suffers probably more than most from this dearth of news accuracy and factual reporting because the only two major newspapers in the state both engage in the above-mentioned practices as well as in cover up techniques that enable the unelected power elite to escape prosecution and retain their stranglehold on the state. Worse yet, these two major newspapers own or control many of the smaller formerly independent newspapers in the state. This sounds like strong language and it is; but it is easily verifiable by anyone willing to do a little research.

One small example is an article that appears in the Omaha World Herald stating that the Nebraska Leadership Conference was an organization set up to make some people a lot of money. This is utterly ludicrous! The Omaha World Herald published a totally fabricated story as fact.

We have seen Gary Caradori, an honest hard-working investigator who was admired by all who worked with him, vilified by the press. Strange business... attacking a man after he is dead and cannot defend himself.

.....Nebraska Leader .. August 16, 1992

Ed Weaver's job for most of his life was to fill your stomach not your head. He was President and owner of the Weaver Potato Chip factory of Lincoln, Nebraska. But Ed has always been a man concerned with his community and his country. When stories began coming to him about Nebraska children being prostituted in his state and beyond, he began to take a sincere interest in what was going on in Nebraska's Unicameral Legislature. Nebraska is the only state that has only one house and all who serve it are senators.

Ed did not just listen and shake his head. He put his money where his mouth was...he decided to do something about the very biased news coverage being given the Franklin Investigation and the Franklin child victims by the Lincoln Journal Star and the Omaha World Herald. (Elsewhere in Paul Bonacci's journal you will read about Omaha World Herald Publisher, as a sexual pervert who wanted sex with little boys, the authenticity of these journals was determined by forensic examination of the paper and ink...in other words they were not faked all at one time to support a "carefully crafted hoax" as the Omaha World Herald suggested.)

The Nebraska Leadership Conference was formed by Ed Weaver to bring the truth to the people of Nebraska and America. Denise Meyer became the editor and main writer for the newsletter that finally was sent not only all over Nebraska, but over the U.S. and finally around the world.

The newsletter combined what was going on in Nebraska with similar situations going on around the country and each issue contained offers of video and audio tapes of those who had participated in the investigation "The Mystery of the Carefully Crafted Hoax" written by a local minister who chose to remain anonymous details how the children's stories of horrible sexual abuse was twisted by the media and the legal system to make them the offenders.

Carefully Crafted Hoax

The Nebraska Leadership Conference made a mistake in titling a book they issued "The Mystery of the Carefully Crafted Hoax" which on its cover seems to indicate that there was a "hoax"... Anyone who reads the book will realize that detail-by-detail, they have debunked the proposition first published in the Omaha World Herald that it (Satanism and child sexual abuse) was merely a hoax perpetrated by a handful of young people in order to blackmail prominent businessmen and politicians of Nebraska.

This little book step by step takes every charge and destroys them with fact after fact. There is no question that these children have told the truth. This is no HOAX!

Fact No. 1, Paul Bonacci went to the Omaha Police Department with his story in 1986 and was ignored. Other complaints came to the attention of Foster Care Director Carol Stitt who characterized reports she and other filed as a "foot high" pile of paperwork. The Omaha Police Department, the Nebraska State Police, and the FBI ignored these reports on child abuse. Later the information was turned over to the Governor and the Attorney General Spire. Again no action!

An example from the book:

Other names mentioned as being as involved in Satanism, where Larry King and a man named Doctor Khage (aka...Lord Bevins), who was the high priest. Also, a group mysteriously known only as The Shadow (Considerable information concerning the Satanic group called "The Shadow" was gathered in the course of Caradori's investigation.) **At one time, the group was the subject of an OPD investigation due to information provided by the family of a former member. One of their main meeting places was a vacant building at 9700 W. Dodge, Omaha Nebraska. When a TV story aired on channel six, the realtor elected to tear the building down because of its controversial nature. No notice was** given of the demolition. "There were dead things attracting flies before the warehouse was torn down but it is all gone now!"

During 1991 the Nebraska Leadership conference mobilized and galvanized a citizen group with a series of conferences which featured speakers with a broad experience and background beyond Nebraska about what was happening to our children. Among the featured speakers, E. Lee Orr was a Kansas City Homicide detective, who displayed all the satanic items he had gotten from various Satanist and satanic murders in Kansas City. He talked about students from Lincoln/Omaha carpooling to Kansas City to buy death metal. Heavy metal music, which featured the torture and death of human (Orr believed to be real).

Orr stunned the entire room into petrified silence when he showed a section of the "Faces of Death" documentary movie, which can be found in almost every video store in the country. Everyone believes that such horrifying fair would only have been found under the counter in some porno store.

Instead it was well displayed in the documentary section in most major video stores.

It was remarkable for its programs and remarkable because of what it lacked, any participation by any member of Nebraska law enforcement. The NLC produced audio and videotapes of these programs and supplemented with other books published on Satanism.

The Nebraska Leader (NLC Newspaper) also contains excerpts ripped from the headlines of the day taken from Associated Press Headlines:

U.N. Warns AIDS hikes traffic in young virgins:

The opening paragraph: The fear of AIDS is driving some customers to demand much younger prostitutes contributing to the global growth in the sale of children, the author of a U.N. report said Tuesday." In the body of the story he reports and increase in child prostitution in Africa, North America and Europe.

The New York Post, Oct 17, 1990 also quoted in the newsletter: "If America is a sick society, it is because we drink daily of the polluted waters of a popular culture into which Hollywood and an artistic avant-garde continues to dump their filth.

We have placed Satanism, witchcraft, Christianity and a variety of cults and sects on the same level….

Dr Judienne Densen Gerber, a New York City psychiatrist, whose patients ranged from Geraldo Riviera to the Elizabeth, Queen of England…began her practice taking care of drug-addicted children. She founded Odyssey House, which eventually had branches around the world. She discovered the majority of young drug abusers had been sexually abused including satanic sexual abuse.

She met with The Franklin Committee of the Nebraska State Legislature, on December 29, 1990. Dr Densen Gerber volunteered her services to interview Paul Bonnaci and found his answers entirely consistent with someone involved in Satanism, and human sacrifice. Bonacci exhibited MPD, multiple personality disorder (now called DID) brought on by his participation in satanic ritual killing and snuff films. Among the multiple personalities, Bonacci exhibits is one based on Peter Thorstad, head of the North American Man Boy Love Association and head of the Church of the Beloved Disciple. This organization deposited five million dollars in the Franklin Credit Union.

The Nebraska Leadership Newsletter of the same date May 29, 1991, summarizes that doctors testimony which stated that Nebraska has a MONSTROUS problem of child abuse from pedophile activity, child prostitution, child pornography production, incest and ritual child abuse. The newsletter also offers the complete text of her recommendations to the state legislature. Recommendations that were never followed as the Franklin Investigation was shut down. The very laws of Nebraska altered to conceal the evidence that had been gathered, at the cost of Gary Caradori's life and his son A. J. No one in Nebraska doubts that the orders to eliminate Carodori came from Washington D.C.

The Nebraska Leadership Conference and newsletters were produced in tens of thousands of copies—contributions never came anywhere near the expenses of maintaining office and staff. The money for the project came from the pockets of Ed Weaver. The newsletters received a tremendous response...they then expanded distribution around the country... but they never gained the necessary support to bring about change. But what Ed Weaver and Denise Meyer did during its more than five years of publication, left a lasting impression with people that horrible things were being covered up...by the media, by the politicians and by businessmen.

The Nebraska Leadership Conference did not survive to see the day when the Internet became the playground for pedophiles.... offering them websites with child pornography and chat rooms to entice new victims.

WHO ARE THOSE WEIRDOS?
SA T SKUNKS
SAVE THE WHALES
BABY SNAILS
SAVE OLD TRAILS
PROTECT TURTLE EGGS

HELP STOP RITUAL ABUSE OF CHILDREN
HELP PREVENT CHILD ABUSE

EDITORIAL COMMENT

By: Ed Weaver,
Member of Nebraska Leadership Conference

THOUGHT CONDITIONING AND THE OMAHA WORLD HERALD

For approximately the past three years a black cloud has been spreading over our land. It is the evil black cloud of satanism and it can be called evil without contradiction because of the heinous, evil practices in which satanists engage. To be sure these people have always been around, especially since Aleister Crowley arrived upon our shores, but in recent years their numbers and activities have shown a dramatic increase. One reason is they have seduced our children in increasing numbers. Much of this has been possible because parents and churches have not made children aware of the danger, nor taken measures to protect them.

When approached, many people reject the information, saying they do not believe in satan. However, whether they believe in satan or not makes no difference, the people who worship him do and they commit horrible acts when worshiping their god. The satanic activity has become so prevalent there are numerous books written about it; many witnesses testifying to either being victimized by satanists or having been involved in their activities and somehow been able to come out of it. Virtually every talk show on radio and television has had discussions concerning satanism and there are a number of people spending full time investigating and verifying what the satanists are doing.

In spite of the mountains of evidence piling up everywhere, it is difficult to find a law enforcement agency that will seek to investigate and prosecute such cases, and we find the Omaha World Herald continually saying such things do not exist. All we have to say is , "they protest too much!" The question is, why? On examination we find they have many to protect and much to cover up. Peter Citron got caught molesting children and producing child pornography and they either could not or would not save him but they have gone to the point of absurdity ad nauseam in journalism covering up for other employees, former employees and stockholders. The prosperous, pompous, and powerful are having their day, BUT THE DAY WILL COME WHEN THE PEOPLE WILL AGAIN OBTAIN JUSTICE, AND GREAT WILL BE THE FALL OF THOSE WHO USED AND ABUSED.

DANGEROUS DOSSIERS

Exposing the Secret War Against America's Greatest Authors

HERBERT MITGANG

The New York Times Cultural Correspondent Herbert Mitgang, reported the fifty year espionage campaign waged by the CIA, FBI and other intelligence agencies against famed American writers.

LOCKED UP AT ABC

After a succession of appearances over the years on Good Morning America, The Today Show, CBS Morning News, Charles Kuralt Sunday Morning, Phil Donahue, Inside Edition, 48 Hours, sharing my story about my son and alerting the public to the ever-present danger of child kidnapping. I received a phone call from Karen Burnes, a producer with ABC's 20/20, July of 1984, asking to present an in depth report on Johnny's story. This began a long time relationship between ABC, Karen Burnes and myself. Karen had been the producer over the years, as they had done a number of updates when new information would surface.

Their previous shows depicted the search for Johnny and the effort I had made to cope with the loss of my son, which required me to become a public speaker, fundraiser, detective, and "thorn in the side of police, FBI and political bureaucrats". It seems the only way to get anything done on Johnny's case was to shout long and loud on any forum I could find from the stage of a church or school, newspaper, magazines to a radio or TV studio. To this day, I work two and more jobs to cover the expenses connected with this investigation. While Bill Clinton asked the American public to pay the 52 million in expenses for his "MonicaGate"!

Before I knew it, fifteen years passed and Inside Edition contacted me wanting to do the "15 year anniversary story", I agreed. I announced my son was still alive and presented a computer-enhanced photo of my son at age 27, saying only to the media "that this came from a reliable source." Following the Inside Edition program. I received another call from Karen at 20/20, she saw the Inside Edition show. We talked for a long time, catching up, then she asked me to come to New York to discuss doing another update on Johnny.

She wanted this update to depict the "my journey of fifteen years searching for my son". We made arrangements for me to fly in and to meet at her office within a few days.

I flew to New York to meet with Karen, I decided to trust her with the secret that Johnny came to my home in the middle of the night on March 18, 1997. I had been afraid to share this with anyone up to that point.

I described how .....He knocked on the door, I was awakened, shaking, made my way to the door, looked out the security hole and I knew it was my son when I saw his eyes, but I asked anyway "who is there", he replied "Mom, it is me, Johnny". I opened the door, hugged him. He told me he could only stay a short time. He was asking my help.

No matter how much my son had changed over the years, I remembered that there was one identifying birthmark, which would have been impossible for anyone to duplicate. To make absolutely certain that this was my son, I asked to see this "birthmark in the shape of South America, which covered a large area on his chest". Johnny and I both a similar skin type and both tan so darkly that we can pass for Indians.

Johnny as I last saw him, is brushing six foot two, about 175 pounds, and had black hair. His hair is naturally a light brown, but he had darkened it ... his skin was also very dark, with the combination he did look Indian. I remarked about his new appearance, he then told me he had been living on Indian Reservations, and in hiding over the past few years.

He had a male companion with him that night, who remained silent during the entire visit. I asked his name but it was not given to me. Both he and Johnny appeared very nervous ... when I asked which Indian Reservation they had been living on, Johnny turned to his friend and the friend "shook his head, no!" It was as though Johnny needed approval from this other person before he could answer some of my questions.

Johnny told me many things about the kidnapping, including the names of people involved locally and that he was taken from Iowa by Col. Michael Aquino. Paul Bonacci had reported the same information... that the "Col" had taken Johnny to Colorado almost two weeks following the kidnapping.

Aquino, then an officer in the military reputedly in charge of Mind War for the U.S. government. I obtained a copy of the originally top secret document "From Psyops to Mindwar.... The Psychology of Victory" written by Major Michael Aquino.

Karen Burnes became excited when I told her of Johnny's visit to my home. During our lunch meeting, she suggested that ABC 20/20 do a big update on Johnny. It would be an hour long special called " The Johnny Gosch Story." This would depict, at that time the 15 year journey, I had traveled in my search and intensive investigation to not only find my son but solve the case.

We rushed to her office, we spent the next three days researching information, and names of people involved. ABC has a fantastic data base which they can enter names of people, it will give detailed information on people such as: addresses of property they own and owned, names of friends, names of business associates, money transactions etc. I was awed by the capability of this software program, to pull up this amount of information on people without having to leave an office. I thought to myself as I watched all this take place... this would be a wonderful piece of software to own if I ever decided to become a private detective. Lord knows I have had enough experience in detective work after working on this case all these years.

We then decided upon filming dates to begin in November of 1997 when Karen and the film crew would travel to Des Moines to begin shooting this one-hour special. They brought in an enormous film crew. Due to the nature of this story, Karen reported to me that she, the associate producer, and the film crew all had to sign a "hold harmless clause" absolving ABC of any liability if any of them were to be killed in the process of telling this story. Never before had this producer and crew been forced to sign such an agreement. The upper echelon of ABC obviously realized that this story was going to completely expose not only what happened to Johnny Gosch but many other children in this country.

She filmed a riveting four-hour interview with Paul Bonacci, who shared every detail of Johnny's kidnapping, as well as his own abuse. He explained how this powerful organization operates. It appeared to be comprised of Defense Intelligence Agency, CIA, NAMBLA, and various Satanic organizations. Karen also learned that Bonacci had participated in another hour long documentary "Conspiracy of Silence", produced by Yorkshire Television, Yorkshire England, which was not only prevented from airing on the Discovery Channel but also all copies were ordered to be destroyed.

I did not learn this documentary even existed until early in the year 2000. Information had been kept from me concerning this show, no doubt because it would have substantiated all of the information Paul Bonacci had much earlier given in his confession, regarding his connection to Johnny's kidnapping.

In the process of her investigation, Karen Burnes uncovered 45 other victims of the same abuse, some of whom knew my son and were with him on many occasions. These individuals have all shared their

story on film. Even though the victims were kidnapped in the same manner as Johnny, the common denominator among all of them was intimately knowing Michael Aquino and participating in ritual abuse and the MKUltra Mind War program. Karen had traveled all over the United States, meeting with victims, following leads and capturing it all on film. This project exceeded the budget and Karen was forced several times to stop and do other projects before ABC would allocate more money for the budget for Johnny's story.

I met Karen on one of the trips, which was to an Indian Reservation. Johnny was located on that Indian reservation by Bill (see the chapter on Bill and his connections to the Family). I got more help from the Mafia than I did from the FBI). His people had located Johnny and observed him for months before we traveled there. I drove all night and arrived in time to meet Karen's plane

We called the priest, on the Reservation, asking him if we could meet with him and the Police Chief, Willie Strong. The priest agreed to set up a meeting. I had brought along a tape recording from me to Johnny, a letter and some family photos in a packet to give to my son. The priest greeted us warmly, he made coffee for us and we began to try to explain this very complicated situation to him I showed him pictures of my son, clippings to help connect the story for him.

Soon there was a knock on the door, the priest opened the door and in walked Police Chief Willie Strong, a seven foot tall Indian, who looked amazingly like the one in the movie "One Flew Over the Cuckoos' Nest"

At first he was kind but reserved. I began to explain the story to him. He said, "How do I know you are Johnny's mother and are not someone coming here to hurt him?" I dug in my purse and got out all of my forms of identification to prove to him that I was Johnny's mom. He seemed satisfied with the information. He went on to say "how can I help you?"

I told him I had information that my son was living on his reservation and I wanted to see him. He replied "you can leave your package with me and I can see that he gets it. Will you be in the area for a few days and where are you staying? I have to get back to my office now." I told him we were staying in the next town and would be in the area for the next two days, giving him the number of the motel.

Willie left and returned within a twenty minutes, in his hand was big manila envelope. He said "please take this, it is a list of logging camps in our area where our people work… this will help you!" Then with tears streaming down his face, he stepped forward, towering over me, took both my hands in his massive hands and said "No one should have to go through the pain that you have suffered!"

Karen and I said goodbye to the priest, as we walked out of the house, the wind was blowing leaves off the trees, I noticed the gray/white building across the street and felt the same sensation I had when we drove through the gates of the reservation.... I knew we were being watched as we walked to the car and my son was nearby. Willie Strong was as helpful as possible while still being protective of Johnny. I wondered how many other young kids have taken refugee on reservations and were being protected on a sovereign state.

The first trip to the reservation had some success but I was not permitted to see my son. Willie Strong gave me clues in the packet of information. It was apparent we needed more investigation. Karen suggested bringing a private investigator in to investigate further. She placed a call to a Colorado Investigator, whom she had worked with in the past.

He began doing background work, in phone calls to me, he stated, " he was working for ABC and would not give me reports of his investigation." I consulted with Karen Burnes on a weekly basis.

I received a call from Karen, stating it was important for "us" to make a trip to the reservation once again, to attempt to see Johnny. It was Thanksgiving weekend 1998; I was to wait for a phone call then proceed with travel arrangements, to join the detective and Burnes at the reservation. I waited and waited... no call from Burnes. However, I did receive a phone call from "Bill" (see chapter on Bill) stating, that the detective and Burnes had gone to the reservation with out me, met with the Indian Council. Johnny heard of it and took off... he was on the run again. A few days later, Bonacci telephoned me saying the same thing... Johnny is on the run again... his cover was blown! Apparently, Johnny did not feel threatened when I went the first time to meet with the police chief but when Karen and the detective arrived it frightened him enough to take off.

It wasn't until two days later that I received a phone call from Karen and the detective saying they were at the "reservation". I told them "I already know, I got two reports telling me so". They were shocked that I already knew... I then explained it frightened Johnny and he was now on the run looking for another place of safety in which to live.

Despite this disappointing "misstep, " I continued to work with 20/20 and Karen. It was very unfortunate but the one-hour special was soon to be aired. This was the fourth and final episode of exactly what happened to Johnny Gosch...and thousands of other children, who have disappeared off America's streets in the last 30 years.

Readers Digest suggests that a hundred thousand children were taken in 1982 in the stranger abductions.... others protest there were only hundreds. But does it matter whether it is thousands or hundreds... children are still being kidnapped.

The Johnny Gosch Story was scheduled for airing in April of 1998, but was postponed and postponed four different times. Little did I know during the process of filming that this show was doomed as was the "Conspiracy of Silence." The "powers that be" ....in this country felt it was unwise to allow people to see what happened to my son and to many other children.

I received word Karen Burnes was very ill, she had contacted me in an email and asked me if I thought, "someone had done something to make her sick?" Her illness was of unexplained origin; she was tested for many, many things, none of which proved to be the cause of her declining health. She was confined to a hospital for a length of time and was out of communication with me. Some months later, I was able to reconnect with her and she has had to take a "medical leave of absence from ABC" as she is too ill to with stand the pressures of a work environment.

During the long investigation and filming Karen secured records and videos from the files of John DeCamp, Ted Gunderson and my private investigative reports all pertaining to the Franklin Cover Up and the connection to Johnny's case. This story was to my long journey of fifteen years, Karen was carefully putting together this story so the viewer would see how it evolved ..... The struggle of a mother searching for her son. After Karen became ill, took the medical leave from ABC, I was informed by Ira Rosen, Senior Producer of 20/20 that all of the many boxes of records, tapes, videos belonging to DeCamp, Gunderson and myself, had been misplaced or lost and they did not know where they are located. I find this unbelievable that a television network such as ABC could lose that much material, which represented nearly $400,000 worth of expenses. Even for them it doesn't represent good business.

Ira Rosen, Senior Producer of 20/20 declared it could not be aired, and the show would be put on hold indefinitely. Which in their language means "sorry Charlie... no show".

I found Ira Rosen to be a very rude little man, who seemed to relish in the fact that he could be very short and snippy with people and not treating anyone with respect. After hearing the show was put on hold indefinitely, I asked if there could be someone at ABC who could finish the project in Karen's absence, as she was not coming back to work. Courtney Bullock, also of ABC, who did a show called "Vanished", had contacted me. She wanted to do the Johnny's story. However, when she inquired with her Senior Producer after hearing the Johnny Gosch Story was put on hold, she was told "she was not allowed speak to me, to stay away from the Johnny Gosch story, as it was "classified and belongs to 20/20." I asked her "who gave the initial order to not communicate with me", during a phone call, she replied the order came from "Ira Rosen". She went on to say that she "could get into trouble for having the conversation with me." To me, the word "classified" generally means something to do with the military or national security, why would they be using it in reference to this show?

After a long hospital stay, I finally received a phone call from Karen Burnes, she told me she had asked Frank Snepp to help investigate, do leg work that she was unable to do because of her illness. She still believed that after a time, Johnny's story would eventually air. She explained Frank Snepp was a former CIA agent, was a friend of hers and could be trusted. She told me to expect a phone call from him in the near future and that Frank would work with me and "keep me in the loop".

A few days later, I received my first phone call from Frank Snepp . He seemed nice enough, asking me a great many questions about the case and at times asking me to get information for him to evaluate. A few days later, Frank called and claimed the story had no validity, that Paul Bonacci was not credible. I reminded Frank that Paul had won a million dollar judgment in a Civil Rights Case against Larry King, the man who abused him, by Federal Court Judge Urbom in February of 1999. In a very caustic manner, Frank said "none of that mattered and I would have to develop a new line of information to connect Johnny with the faction who took him".

Frank also claimed to have read ever document concerning Johnny's case and knew more about it than I did. (Could Snepp have had access to the CIA Files on Johnny's case for some time?) I told him "if he had truly read all the documents, he wouldn't be making such stupid assumptions." Snepp then told me that "unless my son was turned over to "them" for Congressional protection, this story would never go on the air and that I was not allowed to speak to anyone at ABC." In essence, he wanted me to hand over my son to who ever "them" represented and I suspect it was CIA. At this point, not knowing who is connected to whom, I would not trust the safety of any member of my family to the CIA. Snepp warned me not to contact anyone at ABC, that he was in charge at this point.

I have not allowed anyone to tell me that "I cannot talk to whom ever I please concerning my son's case," so I placed a phone call to Ira Rosen, the Senior Producer. When I reached Rosen, I told him of Frank Snepp's involvement and all that he had said to me. Rosen became outraged and began shouting on the phone, saying who brought Snepp into this and what is he doing? I told Rosen what I knew... he then told me he would get back to me in a few days.

Rosen returned my call two days later, saying " he been unable to reach Snepp." I then told Rosen that I was coming to New York within a week and wanted to schedule an appointment with him. He said "he would much rather I just call him from the airport when I arrived." Even though it was against my better judgment, I could see that Rosen wasn't going to do it any other way…

A week later, I arrived in New York to film the Sally Jesse Raphael show, I telephoned Rosen from the airport. I reached his secretary; she informed me "Mr. Rosen is going to be out all day". Hmm, I thought this is odd, he knew I was arriving that day and would be calling. It appeared as though he was dodging me. It made me more determined than ever to meet this man. To see what exactly I was dealing with… I wanted to look this man in the face and see how he reacted upon being faced with the mother of a child who had been subjected to such abuse.

My hotel was located just a few blocks from the ABC building on Columbus Ave, I decided to go to ABC anyway, even though Rosen was said to be out of the office. It was a nice day, so I decided to walk. As I neared the ABC building, I felt something hit me; I looked down and saw big white, slimly blobs of stuff all over my jacket, my dress and handbag. I wasn't sure if it was "bird poop or if someone had hurled from a tall building".

I looked around and spotted a dry cleaning shop on the corner, I ran in and looked at this Oriental woman, I said, "is this bird poop or what". She grabbed a hold of my lapel and said, "It sure looks like bird poop to me." She motioned to the man working there to get something from the back room, he returned with a spray bottle and she immediately started to work to clean up the mess. Within a few minutes, I was back on my way towards ABC, very indebted to the nice Oriental lady, who had been so kind to me. Little did I know I was about to be "shit upon at ABC within minutes !"

I walked into ABC and went to the information desk, to ask for Ira Rosen, the guards told me to feel free to use the house phone to call his extension. Before dialing Rosen's extension, I buzzed Courtney Bullock, who does the Vanished program. She said for me to come to her office. I told her I was going to buzz Rosen then I would be up.

I dialed Rosen's extension and to my surprise, he answered… (His secretary had told me he was going to be out all day and he couldn't see me). I said, "Ira, you are in today," He replied…"yes I am, who is this?" I said "This is Noreen Gosch and I am in the building too. I guess your secretary lied when she told me you weren't going to be in and could not see me today. I think under the circumstances you could spare 20 minutes to talk with me." He reluctantly agreed to meet me. I told him to meet me in Courtney Bullock's office. I arrived first in Courtney's office; she was very gracious and explained to me that she had been forbidden by Rosen to do anything with Johnny's story. She had been told to have no communication with me but knowing I had traveled all this way to come their office she agreed to meet with me.

A few minutes later, the door opened and in walked a short little man all dressed in black, he was instantly rude and unpleasant to me. I sat there and wondered why is he being so nasty, I had never done anything to him. I had followed correct business procedure to set an appointment to discuss the project of Johnny's story. I had merely caught him in a lie when I dialed his extension on the house phone and he answered personally. I suppose he didn't like it when he got "busted."

He proceeded tell me that he had finally reached Frank Snepp and that Frank denied ever speaking to me. I looked at Rosen, got up off my chair and walked directly towards him until I was two inches from his face. I said to him, "hmm, you sounded much taller on the phone the many times I talked to you." First of all, why would you treat me in the manner you have when I have done nothing to you people? If you did not plan to do Johnny's story after spending $400,000 on it, why didn't you say so, instead of yanking me up and down like a yo- yo!" Your behavior is inexcusable! By using those statements, I wanted to make him lose control and become the raging, shouting little tyrant that he had exhibited on the phone towards me. I wanted him to do it before witnesses. I had not gone to ABC alone, I had my Press Manager with me.

It worked, he popped like a cork from a bottle of champagne, losing his temper and I doubt whether he has found it to this day. I told Rosen ....

" You will continue to treat people in this nasty manner because it is your nature, but you will never have another opportunity to treat me this way." Rosen said " I was under an agreement with ABC 20/20 and could not take my story to any other form of media." I suggested a place "where they could put their agreement where it would never see the light of day. And that I would take my story to any other show I chose."

The agreement did not involve any money but an "exclusivity agreement" Rosen did not want any other network to have access to the entire Johnny Gosch story. This was only in effect until the story would air but they delayed it numerous times, still trying to enforce their agreement; I felt I had waited long enough.

Rosen, Senior producer for 20/20 released me from any obligation and suggested I could take my story elsewhere... the catch... they will release none of the information and film compiled by Karen Burnes. She had worked over two years gathering the material.

I have gone on now to do two talk shows, Leeza Gibbons and Sally Jesse Raphael but the clout of a 20/20 or 60 Minute; one hour special might have resulted in Congressional Hearings. Or might aroused enough public anger, so that we the people might stop the abuse and experimentation with the worlds children. If the children are the future, do we want them maimed and crippled by what the current generation is doing to them?

As this book goes to press, NBC's Today Show and Dateline have already scheduled me to tell Johnny's story. Johnny asked me to go public with his story, the night he came to see me, fourteen years after the kidnapping.

During the months, which followed, John DeCamp, Ted Gunderson and I have requested all of our files, records, videotapes etc, which were given to Karen Burnes used for research in this story be returned. ABC has informed us all that these items have been misplaced and simply cannot be located.

How could ABC not do this story in the time frame planned, when they learned of the 45 other victims, who reluctantly shared their stories with Karen Burnes, they too have lived in fear for many years. Do not the upper echelon of producers and executives at ABC have children, know a child or were once a child themselves?

It makes an average citizen wonder at the level of responsibility, which simply does not exist for our fellow man, woman or child. The time, effort and money which was put into this project is enormous, it would have completely uncovered what has happened to Johnny and countless other victims of this sick, perverse, highly organized group of Pedophile Satanists.

Frank Snepp...CIA Spoiler

Frank Snepp is supposedly an ex-CIA man turned journalist. There are those who claim he is a CIA "spoiler," a plant whose job is to discredit those who would discredit the CIA or those connected to CIA.

Richard Brenneke, was real estate manager and arms dealer from Portland, Oregon.... He claimed, he was in Paris with the CIA team that arranged arms for Iran in exchange for keeping the hostages until Reagan was elected.

The book "The Mafia, CIA & George Bush" by Pete Brewton, got his book in print despite the fact that his original publisher, Simon & Schuster declined to publish. They had given him a $100,000 advance, but told him to take his book somewhere else. SPI books a division of Shapolsky Publisher, Inc., made the book available before going bankrupt. Perhaps they went bankrupt because they published a book with the name George Bush in the title. They also published "The Crimes of a President."

According to Brewton..." Snepp exposed in a story for the Village Voice that he supposedly lied about being in Paris during the alleged meetings." I think it significant that the author emphasized the word exposed. Snepp also convinced Brenecke not to talk to ABC's "20/20, which was preparing a program on the Houston Post's stories (I believe the ones Brewton was fired for writing). Brennecke's refusal to go on camera was a major factor in 20/20 decision not to air the story.

"So it goes in the world of CIA contract agents (is he referring to Snepp)...journalists must cling particularly fast to the first rule of reporting. If your mother tells you she loves you, check it out!" Snepp's name seems to surface wherever there is trouble for the CIA. Especially where it is connected to George Bush and Iran Contra.

This is how a "spoiler" operates... they bring out information which contradicts information already disseminated. Whether it is true or not, makes no difference. If it is repeated often enough...."lies are accepted as truth".

VALIANT ATTEMPT

Karen Burnes and her associates made a valiant attempt to bring out the truth on Johnny's case. It would have solved the cases of many other kidnapped children in America. Unfortunately, when there are powerful people at the top making the cutting decisions... in order to protect their political friends. It is then riveting stories become "locked up."

WHY JOHNNY CAN'T COME HOME.....

The night before the kidnapping, our whole family was home for dinner, which I call "The Last Supper", we had a wonderful time together. Before he left the kitchen Johnny said, "Dad, why don't you stay home tomorrow, I can do the route alone"! John said, "Well I guess it would be okay!" It worried me, as it was so dark at that hour of the morning they had to start deliveries. So I said, "no, John, our agreement is that you would go with him on Sunday mornings. John finally said, "No, Johnny, wake me in the morning and we will do the route together".

He gave everyone a hug and went upstairs to bed. A few moments later, he was back in the kitchen standing next to me as I was cleaning up after dinner. He gave me a hug again and said "Mom, I will always love you.... You are the best!" He went to the stairs, looked at me, smiled and then went up to bed. Little did I know at that moment.... It was the last time; I would see my son for 5,293 days... fourteen and one half years of trying every means to find out what happened to him. Fighting the system all the way.

Prior to the kidnapping....at the same 1:35 a.m., we would receive a phone call every Sunday morning from the beginning of August, until September 5th, the morning, Johnny was kidnapped. My husband, John would pick up the phone and say "You've got the wrong number", and hang up. On the morning of the kidnapping, Sept. 5, 1982, at 1:35 am, the phone rang, he answered, I woke up to hear him saying "alright...alright...okay, " then he hung up. I questioned him about the call and he just kept insisting it was a wrong number. He seemed nervous at the time but it was late and I drifted back to sleep, not realizing the worst was about to happen.

Johnny had a paper route for the Des Moines Register on Sundays and weeknights. He had been doing the route for a year and had a perfect service award for each month. A record he was proud of… it meant that he had always been on time with deliveries and since he took over the route. Before I knew it, over fourteen years had passed.

I had returned home from my family reunion, which was held over the weekend, exhausted from my drive, I went to bed early that night. During the night, a knock at the door woke me up, I looked at the clock and it was approximately 2:30 a.m. Then there was a second knock, I was so frightened as I made my way to the door, and there had been so many threats throughout the years. I mustered the courage to look through the peephole. Standing in the hallway under the light, were two young men, one was in clear view and he looked like my son Johnny. The face of the other young man wasn't completely visible; I could only see his shoulder.

I stood there just shaking, wondering if I should open the door. In all these years, I dreamed of the moment that I would be face to face with my son. There was no mistake, the young man on the other side of the door is my son Johnny, and it has been fourteen and a half years since I have seen him.

Thoughts were racing through my head. Is he here because he needs me, should I be afraid, not knowing all that he has been through and exposed to over the years? Has he been told lies about me.. I said "who is it", he replied, "It is me Mom… it is Johnny". I unlocked the door and he came into my apartment with the other young man. It felt strange at first, we both looked at each other, as if to see what changes the years had made in each of us. We reached out and gave each other a hug… It felt good but at the same time strange, this was my son and yet there were so many years, which are missing for each of us. He had been gone for over half of his life and now finally we were sitting in the same room together.

I asked them both to sit down; Johnny did not volunteer the name of the person with him. They both seemed nervous and looked at each other a number of times when I asked questions. When we talked, he began to tell me as much as he could recall about the first few days of his kidnapping, being grabbed off the sidewalk, forced into a car, then blacking out. He woke up bound and gagged in the basement of a house. Frightened, crying, he was approached by a young man, who he later learned was Paul Bonacci. He kept saying, " just do what they tell you and it will be alright. He did not want to talk about the types of sexual abuse that he had endured; I felt he was trying to spare my feelings and embarrassment to himself.

He asked about other family members, told me he had missed us all so very much, but knew I had worked very hard to locate him. I asked how he found me, and he replied "he had seen TV shows I had appeared on but in December 1996, he watched me on the Leeza Gibbons show, in which I had sent a message just to him, telling him I still lived in the same town, but in apartment and that my name/address/number was in the phone book and that I would help him". He said it was a difficult decision to make to come here and see me, because he had been told repeatedly during his captivity, "if you try to contact your mother, we will kill her". He explained " that is why he just came to my door in the middle of the night instead of a phone call and was concerned at the same time that just arriving would frighten me."

As he began to unfold part of the missing years, he talked about a program called MKUltra, explaining how it was a mind control program, used on himself as well as others, to program them to compromise influential businessmen, politicians. I had never heard of this and I sat there in shock, hearing what my son was relating.

He said he "needed help", that he was free of the people who initially took him but was living on the run, hiding out, living more or less hand to mouth. If he were ever to be safe to walk as a free man, then people would have to be arrested. He asked me to "do something" to bring these men to justice.

I asked if I could call someone to come and listen to what he was sharing. He became very upset, fearful and said, "if you call anyone, I will have to leave"! He then added "Mom, you can't tell anyone I have been here it isn't safe for you or me." I felt the urgency in my son's voice and saw it on his face", he was terrified. He then begged me "not to tell his father he had been here". I told him I would do everything in my power to help him and keep silent as long as possible about him being here.

I then asked, "Where he was living"? He started to answer but then looked to his friend and he shook his head "no", as to indicate Johnny should not tell me. I did not pursue it.

Our visit lasted about an hour and a half, as we drew to the end of it, I could see that both young men were becoming nervous... I asked as many questions as I could think of in a short amount of time ... Then all too soon, it was time for them to leave. Johnny gave me a hug... and said he would contact me when he could see that it was "safe" and that something had been done on the case.

After they left, I felt so stunned and in pain all over again after hearing the hardships my son endured for so many years. It is very difficult for a parent to imagine the kinds of things he and so many other young people suffered at the hands of the guilty.

In the days that followed, I didn't know where to begin. How could I help my son? Who should I contact and yet still be able to honor his request of not revealing he had been here to see me? The stress of all the years and the feeling of frustration over this new situation, took its toll, I became very ill for several weeks. Friends and relatives had no idea what was wrong in my world, and I could not tell them.

I realized that I could give an accurate description of Johnny's appearance, so I contacted the National Center for Missing Children. I explained that I had positive proof that my son was alive and a new description. They agreed to have their composite artist, Steve Loften work with me to create the new image of my son. We did several drafts of the picture before it was exact. Each time Mr. Loften sent me a draft, we would talk, making any changes necessary and within a few days, we had the "exact image" of what Johnny looked like the night he came to see me. I was still unable to tell anyone Johnny had been here. Mr. Loften was so kind, patient and does incredible work. I was so pleased with the final result.

I first contacted a criminal attorney for advice in this situation. He suggested I make an appointment with the County Attorney, John Sarcone to share information. It would then make it impossible for anyone to ever "charge me with .... Withholding evidence in a criminal case."

I then contacted the County Attorney, John Sarcone, to schedule a meeting with him. I had asked Gordon Gratias, a local Private Investigator and family friend to accompany me to the meeting. During this meeting, I explained to Sarcone, that my son was still alive and that I had information from a reliable "informant". (The informant was my own son, Johnny, but I had promised him I would not reveal that he had been to my home.) Sarcone naturally had many questions; I answered them as best I could but requested a meeting with the Police departments from Des Moines & West Des Moines, DCI (Dept. of Criminal Investigation), FBI and Sarcone. He told me, he would contact me as soon as he could reach everyone. Soon, I heard from Sarcone and the date for the meeting was scheduled for July 12, 1997.

Again, Gordon Gratias, accompanied me. Des Moines Detectives, West Des Moines Detectives, DCI, and John Sarcone's office were represented; apparently the FBI declined or were busy. I distributed packets of information to each of the men, which contained the new photo of Johnny and some of the facts in writing, which had been given to me by Johnny.

Sarcone conducted the meeting, asking me to explain the materials I had handed out. I slowly gave the men the complete story of what my son shared with me during our visit... Calling him only "the informant". Sarcone, said "you will have to turn over your source to us". I replied that I was unable to do so and I asked him "would you turn over the name of a reliable source to anyone, if you were asked not to do so?" Sarcone shook his head indicating that he would not reveal a source either.

Each of the men had a number of questions about Johnny, I explained how Johnny escaped from the men who had held him, and sought the safety of living on an Indian Reservation. I restated information about a kidnapping of a second newspaper carrier to occur in Des Moines on the second weekend in August, on the Southside of Des Moines, given to me by Sam Soda, a former Private Investigator, (I had made a tape recording of this meeting) on June 13, 1984, just weeks prior to the Eugene Martin kidnapping.

I explained I had taken this tape recording to the Des Moines Police Dept, in June of 1984, that no one wanted to listen to it. Sarcone, at that point, asked the detective, what he did with the information I had given to them. The detective lied and said "Noreen Gosch never came into the police dept with any information or tape".

Sarcone looked at me and said "Ms. Gosch, is there any other reputable person on this planet you shared this information with ...." I replied "Yes, I took it to all TV Stations in the Des Moines Area, Frank Santiago, Reporter for the Des Moines Register and Karen Burnes with ABC 20/20.... You may check with any of them." (I later found out that Sarcone's department did check with Frank Santiago and he verified everything I had said to be true."

I demanded to know why Sam Soda was not under any kind of suspicion, his information was not only correct but Eugene Martin's kidnapping occurred on the very weekend he had predicted. It was the second weekend of August 1994, early on a Sunday morning, as he was preparing to deliver his papers.

Note: Paul Bonacci identified a photo of "Sam" from a line up of 26 photographs, saying "he is the man who brought Johnny's picture to the kidnappers the night before and said .... This is the kid we are going after in the morning. We all called him Soda Pop." John DeCamp, Bonacci's attorney confirmed the report of this identification.

IT IS NOT MY RESPONSIBLILITY

Today in America these are the most uttered words by any public official. For more than ten years a handful of responsible citizens have attempted to present documentation on the CIA connection to drug trafficking, child kidnapping, child prostitution and murder. "It is not my responsibility is the mantra that flows from the mouths of governors, U.S, Senators, Congressmen, everyone up to and including Presidents.

Evidence has no value as long as there is no organization, no individual in government who can demand an investigation. "We were only following orders!" There is no doubt today that agencies and individuals from the state to federal level are guilty of obstruction of justice! If an individual does nothing wrong but he covers for another, he can be deemed an accessory.

I first heard it from the FBI. Sorry, we can't search for your son because "We have no crime". It took the courage of a Nebraska Senator Loren Schmit and friend, Nebraska State Senator, John DeCamp, and myself to bring the details of what happened to Johnny Gosch to light. Their attempt to help sexual abused children has been completely unsuccessful. While the Iowa and Nebraska Legislature cowered and denied the existence of evidence.

Alisha Owens and Paul Bonacci were threatened with perjury charges for speaking out. In securing help for a handful of young people with the courage to raise a cry against pedophiles. Former CIA William Colby, himself has said he placed the information before the highest people in the justice department. We have his own-videotaped words.

It was John DeCamp, who first contacted the Gosch's, indicating Paul Bonnaci, his client participated in the kidnapping of their son.

John Zielinski, an author/publisher in Iowa, contacted me. He published a series of newspapers exposing the drug trafficking in the state. One day, he received an anonymous package, containing information about the Franklin Investigation. It revealed child prostitution, kiddie porn and seemed to indicate that an organized ring of pedophiles was kidnapping children. John first contacted Senator Loren Schmitt to verify the facts in this material. Schmitt confirmed everything in a 45-minute conversation, saying, "I think they are going to get away with it." Schmitt told me he was under tremendous pressure to shut down the investigation. John immediately took the information to his Iowa City Senator and Representative Minette Dodeder (who said " I cannot get involved! " John watched as Senator Richard Varn sneered and dumped the documents into the trashcan.

This episode led John to contact Noreen Gosch and produce an hour video called "America's MIA Children" (Missing In America... Murdered In America)

....John M. Zielinski

American Civil Liberties Union

Let us suppose you were Johnny Gosch and you had just escaped from the slave handlers who had been using you. Where could you turn for help? You already know that FBI and other law enforcement agency either collaborated or looked the other way. You tried to escape dozen times before you and a group of boys succeeded by stealing a car.... Then contact your Mother....

Who do you turn to? Who can you trust? Most certainly not the American Civil Liberties Union or Iowa Civil Liberties. Purporting to be supporters of Constitution Rights. Paul Bonnaci's lawyer John De Camp sought help for Paul and Alisha Owens. Alisha was sentenced to a longer prison sentence than the man who abused her and stole 40 million dollars. What are the Nebraska and Iowa Civil Liberties doing, soliciting money from you to protect you liberties?

In a book titled "Trial and Error" by George Grant: "The focus of justice was not fixed on the criminal and his sundry vices but on the community and its welfare. The ACLU has managed to bury this remarkable legacy under the dust heap of litigation and adjudication. It has succeeded in practically reversing the emphasis of American justice...the organization has for all intents and purposes become an advocacy group for organized crime, for teenage street gangs, for pornographers, for corrupt lawyers and for illicit drug dealers.

The investigations in both Nebraska and Iowa of child pornography, kidnapping etc. certain seem to bear out Grant's conclusions.

Do you see now why Johnny Can't Come Home. He is not safe, his mother is not safe. But it is not alone Johnny's story or Eugene Martin story. In page after page of this book, we have given you document after document, fact after fact. We have also pointed out that the FBI confiscated and "lost" countless other documents. The documents the FBI didn't take care of... the judges have...by permanently sealing the records.

The battle to tell this story was a long one. Some of the answers, as to what happened to Johnny surfaced over ten years ago with the Franklin Investigation. Yet they have been suppressed. But if you pick up a newspaper today, or watch the local news, you will be bombarded with yet another child being kidnapped, molested and murdered.

A recent Maury Pouvich program showed problem kids who were into to drugs and prostitution. Some were as young as age 11. They were shown a morgue room where cardboard box after cardboard box was filled with the bodies of young John and Jane Does.

A number of years ago, a group of ministers in an Ecumenical council were told the story of Johnny Gosch, the Franklin Cover-up and local Satanism. They were given the name of a local deputy sheriff, who had explored the connection between drugs and Satanism in their community. He had agreed to give programs in the churches. At the end of the hour, they stampeded from the room, like scalded apes, ignoring a newspaper handout with details of the situations that were presented. Only one church ever asked the deputy to speak. When questioned later the minister knew nothing. He had not attended the program.

Four ministers stayed behind to discuss the situation further. At the end of an hour, three decided that it was dangerous for their church and their family. One a lady minister said, I believe you, and I will take your newspaper and pass them out.

A Midwestern congressman was given some of the same materials. Although, he was deeply moved by what he read, he carefully stated: "Congressmen have families, too." In other words, it is too dangerous, it might cause harm to my family, and sorry... I can't help America's children.

We are at war. Every child in America faces WWIII every time he or she leaves the house, or goes to school. It is not just the Columbine's, it is the Internet with its child pornography sites and its pedophiles in the chat rooms and on our streets. They are the most dangerous predators in our world to day

What can we do? You ask! How can we hope to do anything where Congressmen have failed! The Answer is: "Take this book to your neighbor, take it to you minister. Organize local parent groups. There is an old saying: If you are not part of the solution, you are part of the problem.

Remember we are at war. If you put this book down and do nothing, the war is lost. Children have no hope.

A single pebble rolling down a hill may cause a landslide; a loud noise may cause an avalanche. Let your voices be heard!

JOHNNY NOT THE FIRST.... NOT THE LAST

In the Paul Bonacci chapter, Jimmy Gibson's final letter gives us a list of initials, three of which are easily identified as Johnny Gosch, Eugene Martin, and Jacob Wetterling but we haven't a clue as to the identity of the other three boys. Gibson proved that the kidnapping of kids wasn't just a random act but indeed the work of an organized pedophile network. We need only to examine the newspapers from the early 1980's in the Iowa, Nebraska area to be uncovering other stories of missing, near missing and murdered children.

On September 18, 1983 in Bellevue Nebraska.... Danny Joe Eberle parked his bike against the chain link fence at the home of a Bellevue dentist, while he was delivering the Omaha World Herald Sunday Paper. Danny's body was found three days later, three miles away, and just a few feet off a country road. It appeared said one investigator that it had been thrown there from a car.

Airman John J. Joubert, who served at Offutt Air Force Base, killed Danny. Danny's father was also a retired Air Force enlisted man.

Judy, Danny's mother reported the Omaha police refused to release autopsy results on Danny.

Danny's mother, Judy visited Joubert a number of times in the Lincoln Nebraska prison prior to his execution. He was defiant and bragging of his knowledge in the legal field and that while in prison he was giving advice to members of a biker gang of how to operate and remain, just "inside the law" so as not to be arrested.

He discussed at length the existence of the "underground occult network" in Omaha Nebraska and was a part of this group. This continues to substantiate the investigative work of Gary Caradori, Private Investigator hired by the Nebraska Legislature. Paul Bonacci who identified Offutt Air Force Base and one of its Airmen who first molested him.

John Evans, assistant director in charge of the Iowa/Nebraska FBI Office in Omaha, said " information gathered in Iowa during the search for Johnny Gosch.... Including investigative techniques.... Was to be used in the search for Eberle." According to the Des Moines Register account of Eberle's murder; West Des Moines Police Lt. Lyle McKinney, a key investigator in the mysterious disappearance more than 15 months ago of West Des Moines Newspaper boy, Johnny Gosch, age 12, emerged from the hunt to say, "there is no connection with the Gosch case by any stretch of the imagination."

Every indication is that there is a direct connection between Offutt Air Force Base and the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch. Paul Bonacci revealed in his diaries that Offutt Air Force Base was used for Project Monarch, which has deep Satanic connections to the kind of "mind war training given to these children."

In a grim twist, the counter of the police department has a stack of flyers of Danny Joe Eberle asking "CAN YOU HELP, and within a few feet of the counter, pinned to a bulletin board where it has hung for months, is a poster of asking help in finding Johnny Gosch."

In both Nebraska and Iowa, following the kidnappings of Johnny Gosch and Danny Joe Eberle many newspaper carriers quit their routes and turned in their newspaper bags.

After Eberle's kidnapping and murder there were two other separate attempts to kidnap a child. An Omaha World Herald carrier told police he was assaulted but escaped his assailant. Details were sketchy but the boy told police he was delivering his papers in Omaha when a man grabbed him from behind and forced him into his car. The boy said the man was hitting him with bricks, but he was able to grab a brick and hit the man on the head. Then, the boy said "he ran to a nearby Seven Eleven store and called the police."

Sarpy County Sheriff Thomas said his officers were also out checking on a possible abduction attempt involving an eleven-year-old girl who delivers the Omaha World Herald in the North West section of Sarpy County. According to Thomas the girl told officers that a man in a small newer model red hatch back car, pulled along side of her on September 21st, 1983, he motioned for her to come to his car. She said she refused and the man motioned again, at this point the girl dropped the bicycle she was pushing and ran to a nearby house where residents called police.

December 2, 1983, Christopher Paul Walden, put on his coat, said goodbye to his mother at 8:30 a.m. and stepped out of the door to go to school. His school was only ha half mile away. When he didn't return that evening, his mother went out looking for him. When she failed to find him she called the Sarpy County Sheriffs department. Police quickly descended upon the area. At least three witnesses reported seeing a youngster who looked like Walden with a man. The two were seen in several locations, in and out of a car. There was no indication the boy was being held by force. Walden is an only child of a Lt. Col. at Offutt Air Force Base

How did 20 year old, John J. Joubert, an airman from Offutt Air Force Base become a serial killer of little boys? This 5'6", 135 lb. Airman was a Boy Scout leader from Portland Maine, graduate of a Catholic high school, attended the University of Northfield Vermont, a military school. He kidnapped and murdered two young boys Danny Joe Eberle and Christopher Paul Walden

Their bodies were found punctured by stab wounds some of which according to one source who asked to remain anonymous were "surgically cut into the muscles to prevent the victims from using their arms and legs". Another report circulating locally neither confirmed nor denied by investigators was that Walden may have been sexually molested and that some of the marking on his chest formed a "design". That design could have been a "pentagram" associated with Satanic rituals.

Richard Chadek III was last seen alive March 23 1986 on a Sunday evening, from Omaha. He had been coached about avoiding strangers and recently he discussed the subject with his mother. They sent us a notice home from school about someone trying to pick up kids, said Teresa Chadek. I made Rick read it... I read it out loud and then we discussed it. We talked about how to act in case you get snatched..."don't fight it, relax, and try to keep cool". And the minute get half a chance run like heck I hope that is what he is thinking about right now… Her conversation took place three days before his disappearance. Police were looking for a blue pick up truck with wooden sideboards, possibly bearing Iowa license plates

MARCH 28, 1986

A mysterious book on abductions was sent to my mother. It was a wrapped package and with the note "To Noreen with Love". My mother sent it to me. The book was about the kidnapping of a boy by a serial killer in which the boy had been murdered. He was located after the killer placed a call to the parents and the call was traced. The book was given to the FBI, which was investigating the murder of Richard Chadek III, who had been killed earlier this week. It was thought the book might contain some message concerning the murder of the Chadek boy. The FBI never returned the book to me.

DES MOINES NEWSPAPER CARRIER ESCAPES FROM ASSAILANT

A man wearing a camouflage poncho and hood attacked a newspaper carrier on the west side of Des Moines, during a rainstorm, on July 10th, 1986. Jim Pollack, 15, a newspaper carrier with the Des Moines Register said the man grabbed him while he was delivering papers. Pollack couldn't see his face because the hood of the poncho concealed it. He kicked the man in the shins and escaped.

Des Moines police say they will not rule out the possibility of a connection with the unsolved cases of missing Des Moines Carriers Johnny Gosch on Sept. 5th, 1982 and Eugene Martin August 12, 1984.

These are only a few of the cases that occurred in the Des Moines and Omaha areas within a two-year period, 1982 – 1984. All of the boys were near the same age and similar description; three of the four were newspaper carriers. Later came the murder of Richard Chadek III in 1986. How many other children disappeared from other areas across the country during this same time period. This was done just to give the reader an idea of what was taking place in a two hundred mile radius… in "Leave It To Beaver Country…. the quiet Midwest".

The most recent age progression
of Johnny's picture

Johnny

I have tried to put forth all the information in a chronological order to cover what has happened to you and countless other victims. All information was taken from personal journals, reports from our Private Investigators, victims (including yourself), and numerous other sources that have come forward.

During the months its taken to put this together the pain and stress of reliving this horrible tragedy on a daily basis was overwhelming, but knowing it was directed to help you and the countless other victims, I kept moving forward. Please don't think that now that this is out and made public…. that I will stop pursuing or push back on continuing to help you and the others victims. I promise I will not stop until you and the other victims have a chance to come forward and identify the perpetrators and be able to walk the streets without fearing for your lives.

There have been many positive changes in my life since your visit, but there is still the hurt and pain of not being able to have you come for dinner or pick up the phone and see how your doing. There are many ways in which I can be contacted and I hope that another opportunity arises in the near future.

Together we will overcome the obstacles put in front of us. Please take care of yourself and may God Bless you.

Love,

Mom

To Other Victims Or Those Who Have Lost Them

I know you are out there…. Many of you! If you read this book, please know that you are not alone. There are those of us who are trying to wake up America, so that others will know your plight and suffering.

I invite anyone who would like to communicate and share with others to write to the Johnny Gosch Foundation… at: JGoschFoundation@aol.com or www.johnnygosch.com or snail mail:

Johnny Gosch Foundation
1258 Office Park Rd. Ste. 2
West Des Moines, IA 50265

GRIEF BY LOSS OF A CHILD

By

Noreen N. Gosch

Someone you love is the victim of a kidnapping, possible homicide or some other tragedy has taken your child. This tragedy is sometimes more terrifying for the survivors than the actual victim. Your anger, frustration and pain will be extensive and it will take a great deal of hard work to recover. This chapter was prepared for you by someone who has lived through the kidnapping.

SHOCK

Our minds are marvelous instruments, in that they take on only what we can handle. In the beginning, you will notice numbness. You will continually say to yourself, "this can't be real". Some liken it to being in a fog". In a kidnapping case, it is very important to become active in your child's search immediately. Time is precious for your child and every moment wasted is a moment of their life. Despite the pain and suffering you are enduring - get involved in your child's search.

Hopefully the law enforcement will act quickly on your case... but in any event it is important for you to remember **"YOUR CHILD IS THE VICTIM,"** It will not help your child if you sink into depression at this time. They need you more than ever before. Most parents are not alone in the possibility of a murder and they may never find the child. Unfortunately there are still some police departments that will not enter an investigation immediately. Work is being done in many states to correct this error.

Be prepared for the possibility that the police department may suspect you in your child's disappearance. Your pain is so intense for your child and the possibility of being considered a suspect destroys a great many parents. Try to remain as calm and strong as possible. ... Your child's life may well depend on it. This is not the time to be passive but rather move as quickly as possible... following the steps to assist in the search for your child.

The "fog" referred to earlier may last from three to six months. This numbness allows us to handle arrangements of many kinds and to deal with the initial loss of your loved one.

COPING WITH DISTANCE

Sooner or later... you come to realize, after the ground and air search has been completed, that your loved one may have been transported out of your county, state or even our country. This creates panic in the hearts of the parents. What chance do we have now? This is not the time to fall apart - continued your efforts for publicity and searching for that child and working with your police department. We now have agencies to help parents – in past years the parents stood alone. For many parents coping with the possibility of distance in a kidnapping is the worst reality.

FRIENDS

When we hurt we turn to the people who have always been there, our friends. These are the people who came that awful day or night They sat with us, answered our phone, made us eat and remained close if we needed anything.

During the search they were assisting with ever aspect needed and if you did have to face a murder, your friends were there to assist with funeral arrangements, etc. but where are they now, a month, six months or a year after the tragedy? They have gone back to their lives but you need to talk. If you bring up the kidnapping or murder there are those who will change the subject, simply because **"THEY CAN'T DEAL WITHT THE DETAILS OF THE TRAGEDY"**. They can't bring themselves to talk about **"IT"**.

REVENGE

Most of us are incapable of murder. Its something that we perhaps in a joking way said "Oh, I could kill you for that"! It's no longer a joke. For the first time in your life you may be devising ways in your mind... revenge toward another human.

Understandably, some people are disturbed by this emotion. You may feel you are losing your mind. You aren't you are normal. Almost every person experiencing this emotion after a kidnapping or murder... does not act upon it. Our hearts go out to anyone experiencing, this we know your pain.

There will be those who will tell you that wanting revenge is unhealthy and that the only way to find peace is to forgive. If forgiveness is in your heart, fine, but do not allow these people to place unnecessary guilt on you. Chances are they have never been where you are. Could they forgive so easily? It is doubtful.

FAMILY

Each of us is an individual. We like different foods, clothing, and select lifestyles unique to ourselves. It stands to reason that at the most painful time in our lives, we would also grieve in our own way. How we choose to grieve is determined by three things... our personal view of the crime and the loss, how society views our, and individual personalities.

When a kidnapping or murder happens to a family, we sometimes expect that it will pull us closer together. This is not always true. It is not unusual for us to see families separate, both physically and emotionally. After the loss of a loved one, some in the family may resent the rebuilding of your life. Each of us recovers from grief in our own time frame. We can't expect any member of the family to completely understand the sense of loss of another.

Family members become possessive of one another and are also possessive with the relationship each had with the lost loved one. Each member of the family is attempting to comprehend the loss of this person in their life. The loved one represents something different to each individual. After a kidnapping or homicide the personalities of the family members may change drastically. Some people find the need to block the horror of the crime with over-indulgence in drugs or alcohol.

Often we see families argue about who hurts the most. For instance, a mother who cries easily may feel her husband, who doesn't cry, didn't really care about the victim because he shows no outward signs of grief. Or it may be the other way around – perhaps the mother shows more strength than the father.

In addition to experiencing the loss differently, families also become very protective – they have already lost one loved one and you may feel your own "potential mortality" and that of other family members. It has happened to us!

One must also consider the parent/step-parent situation. It is difficult for a stepparent to feel the intensity of the parent's grief. The serious student who performed well in school prior to the kidnapping or murder may be failing in grades, dropping out and running away. The mother whose child has been abducted or murdered may be come paranoid about allowing her remaining children out of her sight. The children caught in this situation, in time may feel stifled and may rebel or be socially inhibited. Communication at this time is very important. Express the fears you have and discuss ways that one can protect oneself and still enjoy an active social life.

HOLIDAYS

Holidays are an accumulation of traditions. Traditions are habits made by families to be shared with family members. When a member of the family is no longer there to share the tradition that was once cherished it becomes a painful reminder instead of a thing of joy.

The first time we celebrate each holiday after a violent crime, it becomes a nightmare. Christmas gifts that once were ripped open immediately sit for days. Thanksgiving is hollow, "What do I have to be thankful for"? shouts a survivor. New Years Day "How can I begin a new year when I can't even get out of bed to start a new day"?, or birthdays, a celebration of another year of life is another reminder of your loss. You may find the need to develop new traditions. For some a trip out of town at Christmas time is beneficial. A birthday can be observed by donating to a charitable organization or do something meaningful to you. There is no rule to follow on how to "GET THROUGH" a holiday. You will grieve. Allow yourself that, you deserve it.

SOCIETY

A general lack of understanding in our society about the impact of a kidnapping or homicide is often compounded by poor communication. One ten-year-old sibling responded to a reporter's question, "How do you feel about all of this?" by saying, " Well now I have a room to myself". Society views this child's response as cold and cruel, when actually what the child was doing was denying the death of his older brother.

One mother of a homicide victim found, when speaking of her daughters violent death that those whom she was addressing reacted with immediate withdrawal. What most people didn't realize was their rejections resulted in additional distress for the mother.

One couple after the kidnapping of their child, developed programs and legislation and became national leaders in children's safety, only to be met with cruelty in their home community. The community was uncomfortable because now it was a reality.... If it has happened once it may happen again. There is an element of our society, which hides behind anonymity. They can possibly be more damaging than those who ignore us. They are the ones who call on the phone or write a letter condemning you for the loss of your loved one. Statements such as "If you were a better parent your child would still be here today", or in some cases actually accusing the survivor of committing the crime, even if there is no evidence to support the accusation.

Many people blame the victim for their own tragedy. We have been told, "Had they not been walking on that street at that time of the morning, this would not have happened!" The victim must be at fault for his own violent crime. If not, it could happen to anyone. Society simply cannot accept that this has happened to you, because if it happened to you, it could happen to them.

GUILT

In the beginning, after the kidnapping and during the long hours of waiting for an answer, many parents experience misplaced guilt. They deny themselves the normal, simple needs in life... because their child may be without these things. Perhaps they blame themselves because they were not there to protect and prevent this crime.

In the case of siblings, "If I hadn't run, my brother would still be here." Each survivor lives with the "What if's". What if I had been there.... This would not have happened." This is a very normal reaction. Unfounded, but normal. Please remember no one can predict the future or what might have been. We can't change the events that took place and to continue berating ourselves will only be destructive.

Misplaced guilt brings about anger, which may be vented on the very people you love and cherish.

ANGER

It is not uncommon to be angry at God. Do you ask, " Why does a just God allow this ugly thing to happen?" or "If there is a God, he would have prevented this from happening." Many people, prior to a violent crime had strong faiths and how they find going to their place of worship too painful. Some have been able to rebuild their faith, perhaps with a different cornerstone.

Before completely turning your back on God, I suggest reading the book, "When Bad Things Happen To Good People", by Rabbi Harold S. Kushner. It has helped others; I hope it will help you.

You may find that the majority of your anger is directed at the criminal justice system. Sometimes the system lacks sensitivity and understanding to the plight of the victims and their families. Consider the anger of the mother, whose daughter was murdered by a man who has been sentenced to die 8 years before her daughter was born. The criminal justice system failed to protect this young girl from a man who had previously committed murder.

Another family, their child kidnapped, no one would look, no one would work on the case... they did not consider the child's welfare or that it was a serious matter.

Victims see the aid and consolation given to the offender and his/her family. Churches often go into the prisons to comfort the offender and turn around and tell the victim he must forgive. Most churches do not provide long term support and services for the victims of violent crime. They will however, stand by an offender who continues committing one crime after another. A victim's anger stems from being treated indifferently by all facets of society.

Your anger is understandable and those of us who have been through this trauma care... you are not alone.

CRIMINAL JUSTICE SYSTEM

Are you angry with the criminal justice or another authority system? You are not alone! Most victims initially are naïve to the working of the criminal justice system. As we progress through the various stages we become angry and frustrated because the preconceived ideas of the justice system are false. We find that justice does not prevail. The guilty are released on technicalities and the only one serving the life sentence is the victim.

The criminal justice system, better known as "the victims' injustice system", can prolong your grief. Many kidnapping/murder cases are never solved, even when the identity of the offender is known. The family that seeks justice done through a timely resolution are more fortunate than those who never to trail or those that must wait for years to be resolved.

Plea bargaining often contributes to the miscarriage of justice. Families of the victims find plea bargaining dilutes the actual crime committed and leaves them dissatisfied with the criminal justice system.

Through the appeal process the unsuspecting survivors may find themselves going through the trial process two or more times. The additional trials may be more painful than the original trial because of the "shock or fog" which may have been protected the survivor's emotions during the earlier events is no longer there. Years after the crime you life is more stable. A retrial disrupts that stability and may very well destroy the progress you have made. Once again, you relive the horror of the crime on a day-to-day basis. Most kidnapping/homicide cases are automatically appealed, however, only a fraction of those find their way back to court.

A number of years ago, survivors were merely a piece of evidence to be used in a trial. At last there is hope for the victim in a system designed for the offender. Today, many prosecutors and district attorney's offices have started victim/witness units. The individuals running these programs are there to assist you, the victims. Contact your local prosecutor's office to see if there is such a program. In Seattle, they are fortunate to have not only a program in the prosecutor's office but also an excellent program is available through the Seattle Police Department. If you have no programs available... contact the Seattle Police Dept. or prosecutor's office about starting a program in your area.

CLICHES

Clichés are used by well meaning people, who don't know what else to say to you. Clichés, in early grief and beyond, bring more aggravation and pain than comfort. Things people say and we wish they wouldn't are:

It is God's will.
He will not have to suffer again.
She's better off, had she lived, she wouldn't have been the same.
He's happier in heaven.
Aren't you lucky to have your remaining children?
You will have another child.
Give up the search... He is probably dead anyway.
Aren't you over that yet, it is time to get on with your life.
Time heals all wounds.
Life goes on.
You were chosen... because you are strong and you would bring progress out of this tragedy.
It is part of God's plan.
Don't cry, It's okay.
What is the matter with you? Why don't you cry (Don't you have feelings?
I don't know how you can be so strong, if it were me, I couldn't survive.
It is divine to forgive.
You look too good, you can't be suffering.

These statements may both anger and hurt the survivors of violent crimes, It makes our road to rebuilding or recovering our loved one that much more difficult. To some parents, it cripples progress – for others it provokes angry reactions. It is the worst time of our lives and we desperately try each day to survive. The time does not heal this wound – a violent crime leaves a mark that is not experienced in the passing of a loved ones by other circumstances.

THE DEATH CLAUSE

The subject is often neglected and not considered. When you are dealing with a kidnapping case, it is possible that your crime may never be solved. This leaves you and your family wondering "is he or she still alive" for the rest of your lives. In addition to the obvious pain this creates, it can also create some legal difficulties. Some states in their legislature deal with the kidnapping in terms of a missing person and the length of time before declaring that person dead, and others do not have any legislation, which addresses this situation. Some states address only the "missing in action or prisoner of war" – laws, which were written when our country had been at war. This is not helpful in your situation. You need the advice of an attorney, in terms of your will and arrangements to provide for your family. Insurance policies on the victim cannot be resolved until a death certificate is issued.

This is a dreaded and painful ordeal to face. It brings you to the reality all over again.... "WE WILL NEVER KNOW WHAT HAS HAPPENED TO OUR CHILD",,. This is an area where you need correct information and advice.

With the growing number of kidnappings and unsolved cases, many parents for the first time in our country's history are having to face this legal technicality. The experts tell us it has never come up before. It is time we address this now, to afford the bet legal protection, which is possible for not only the victim but also the surviving family.

If this situation pertains to your case, contact the legal professionals in which you place your trust and listen to their advice.

EPILOG

The rest of your life is the epilog. Recently a survivor of a violent crime, said "my life has been altered, I must rebuild it". A true statement. Everything in your life will be changed. You will see things differently now.

Incidents that were once catastrophe will be minor aggravations because you have already survived the worst. Your belief in your God may be shaken, you find trusting anyone impossible. You have found that the laws you thought were designed to protect you are really designed to protect the guilty. Listening to people define the rights of the offender, your mind will shout. **"BUT WHAT ABOUT THE RIGHT OF THE VICTIM TO LIFE, LIBERTY AND**

THE PURSUIT OF HAPPINESS?"

There is still happiness left in the world for you. You can laugh again, the first time it happens, you will be shocked for a moment at how good it feels. You can again feel warmth on a beautiful sunny morning. You will find for every negative, unkind person there are those who will stand by you and give you the support you need and deserve. You may find sensitivity for others you never realized you had and be moved to get involved with some type of activity which would bring progress and purpose out of tragedy. If you are a survivor, you have something to share with another who may be going through it. You will find joy in the memories you have been left with – the good memories, the quirks unique to your loved one. The special things they have said will leave a lasting imprint in your senses.

You may rediscover your mate – a marriage goes through a unique trauma during the tragedy of this nature. Sometimes we find couples reporting "THE ONLY THING HOLDING US TOGETHER IS OUR GRIEF AND IT IS NOT ENOUGH". It is true the divorce rate is very high among parents after a kidnapping or murder of their child. Each of you undergoes a transformation; you become different people due to this tragedy of a violent crime. No one else can understand how much you miss your child, too.

Some couples feel they need a marriage counselor and perhaps this will help. But the primary need is for someone to assist in the dealing with the crisis before you can progress to the marriage. Arriving at the reality… that nothing will ever be the same again is a huge step. One can not redo the past… we can only try to build and improve the future. If past hobbies or entertainment once enjoyed are too painful, try something different until you can derive some type of enjoyment together. It takes time and no one has a magic guarantee – but it is worth striving towards. The unique qualities, which attracted the two of you perhaps, have been altered and perhaps attempting to get acquainted with the new personality and accept that person at that level will be a way to begin rebuilding a very important relationship.

For some the need to be apart is greater and necessary. There are times when one partner becomes violent and it is no longer safe to remain in the home and the marriage. Appropriate measures and decisions must be made to insure the safety of yourself and if there are other children in the home.

This was written to offer help and hope to those who are suffering by someone who has been through the stages of grief.

RECOMMENDED READING:

Multiple Journeys To One
Editors: Judy Dragon/ Terry Popp
Dancing Serpents Press
P.O. Box 8115
Santa Rosa, CA 95407
Email: danserpents@juno.com

Thanks For The Memories - Brice Taylor
Brice Taylor Trust
P.O. Box 655
Landrum, SC 29356

The Franklin Cover-Up - John DeCamp
AWT, Inc.
P.O. Box 85461
Lincoln, NE 68501
Email: decamplegal@inebraska.com

Check your local library for titles on Mind Control and the CIA. Inter-library loan will often bring titles from surrounding states,should your library not have it.

ORDER FORM

WHY JOHNNY CAN'T COME HOME

Use your Visa, MasterCard or Discover Card

You may FAX this form to: 1-515-457-8686
To order ONLINE visit: www.johnnygosch.com

OR ORDER BY MAIL

Fill in your credit card information below or
include a check or money order to:

The Johnny Gosch Foundation
Attn: Noreen N. Gosch
1258 Office Park Rd., #2
West Des Moines, IA 50265

Please send # _____ copies of
"Why Johnny Can't Come Home"

$19.95 plus $4.95 for shipping and handling.
Please add $2.00 postage, plus the cost of the book for
each additional book.
Iowa residents add 5% sales tax.

Card #: ______________________________ Exp. Date: ____________

Signature: ____

Name: ____

Address: ____

City: ____________________ State: __________ Zip Code: __________

$19.95

"This case is *SO MUCH BIGGER* than you think. It goes to the very HIGHEST levels; we have to keep pulling the strings."

– William Colby, Former Director of the CIA,
Investigator of The Franklin Cover Up

"I can state without hesitation, that there is, indeed, a national cult network including satanic, witchcraft, pedophile and occult groups, which is operating at full throttle within our society today. The activities of these groups include the kidnapping, molestation, torture and murder of children. Their favorite victims are children and newborn babies: the younger, the better.

The cult thrives on drug sales, pornography and prostitution. The cult network is responsible for the recent rash of "snuff" films, which are sold at high prices to people who crave this sick, degenerate material. Children are kidnapped and literally "owned" by the cult and are sold on the open market to the highest bidder. These children are taken right off the streets of our cities, and traded through a national pedophile network."

– Ted L. Gunderson, FBI Special Agent, Los Angeles *(Retired)*

"*America's Most Wanted* was about to air the Johnny Gosch Story. I received a call from Paul Sparrow saying "The FBI contacted them and told them to KILL THE GOSCH STORY." In other words, the FBI did not want Johnny's story aired by *America's Most Wanted*. John Walsh and Paul Sparrow stood up to the FBI and told them they were going ahead with our story no matter what they said or did. The FBI evidently backed down because the show aired in November 1992. The show received more telephone calls from the public than any other show in its history."

– Noreen N. Gosch

ISBN 0-9705195-0-8
51995>
9 780970 519504